

by Twelve-Winged Dark Seraphim

LET ME GAME IN PEACE

WEBNOVEL

Information

Table of Contents URL: https://novelfull.com/let-me-game-in-peace.html

Author:

Twelve-Winged Dark Seraphim, □□□□□□□□

Alternative names:

□□□□□□□□□

Genre:

Fantasy, Sci-fi, Action, Xuanhuan

Source:

Webnovel

Status:

Ongoing

1 drop of blood = 1-Up

Other people game overnight, I game overnight and bleed.

Ever since the dimensional storms descended upon Earth, numerous dimensional zones have appeared, bringing with them all kinds of dimensional creatures—Immortals, Buddhas, Devils, Angels, Elves, etc.

Yet, all these strange dimensional zones can turn into dungeon instances on my phone. Other people risk their lives adventuring, I spend all my time gaming.

Monsters drop dimensional crystals that boost stats, imbue new skills, and join me as Companion Beasts. These Companion Beasts fight alongside me or alone, augmenting me with their skills and strength. Rare monsters in real life? I'll just restart the game with a drop of blood to grind it.

I really need a blood transfusion.

Chapter 1 - Abandoning Himself to Vice

Chapter 1: Abandoning Himself to Vice

Translator: CKtalon **Editor:** CKtalon

“After the dimensional storms decades ago, multiple dimensional zones appeared across the world—gods, immortals, ghosts, monsters, angels, devils, elves, etc. All kinds of legendary dimensional creatures were discovered. Via hunting these dimensional creatures, humans acquire their powers…” As the grizzled Yu Qiubai lectured, he would occasionally cast his gaze to the corner seat at the back of the classroom.

The other students were listening attentively, but the boy in the corner had his textbook in front of him while sleeping with his arm lay outstretched on the table. From time to time, one could hear faint snoring.

Yu Qiubai shook his head indiscernibly as he sighed inwardly. *So what if you are talented? What can you accomplish if you falter from a single setback? Although the setback from that failure was big, not recovering from it really doesn’t make him live up to the former principal’s approbation of him.*

Yu Qiubai recalled what the former principal had said to him before his retirement. Looking back at the boy sleeping soundly on the table with drool hanging from the corner of his lips, he couldn’t help but shake his head and sigh.

“Qiubai, I’ve seen many geniuses in my life. In summary, there are two types of geniuses.” The former principal back then had very bright eyes.

“What are the two types?” Yu Qiubai had asked curiously.

“One type of genius is called Zhou Wen, the other type is the other geniuses.”

The former principal’s words left a deep impression on Yu Qiubai, but the student who was given heaps of praises by the former principal was now a degenerate, one who had no intention of improving himself. All he did was sleep in class. After class, he would be gaming on his cellphone.

Yu Qiubai had attempted to bolster Zhou Wen’s confidence in the past, hoping that he could rally him up. But despite the numerous pep talks, Zhou Wen remained the same. He continued sleeping in class and gaming out of class. He didn’t focus on cultivation as though he had lost all sense of enterprise.

Ring!

With the bell ringing to mark the end of class, Yu Qiubai saw Zhou Wen sit straight up, having awoken from his sweet slumber. Without even turning back, he grabbed his phone and rushed out of the classroom. This only disappointed Yu Qiubai as he muttered with a sigh, “Principal, I’ve tried my best. Unfortunately, Zhou Wen is a hopeless case.”

Zhou Wen jogged the entire way and soon left the building before coming to a secluded corner in the school compound.

He wasn’t oblivious to the strange looks his teachers and schoolmates gave him, but he didn’t take it to heart.

Others believed that Zhou Wen had wallowed in self-misery because he had failed to handle the setback, but he knew very well that he had never taken the defeat to heart. The

reason he was “abandoning himself to vice” was due to an incomprehensible reason that even he couldn’t explain.

After unlocking his phone, with great familiarity, Zhou Wen launched a game program called “Ant Nest”. Soon, the phone’s screen revealed the dark interior of an ant nest. The meandering paths had countless black ants crawling about.

After ensuring that no one was looking at him, Zhou Wen pricked his finger and dripped a drop of blood onto the screen.

A strange scene happened the next second. The drop of blood seeped into the screen as a blood-colored avatar appeared in the game screen of Ant Nest. Beside the blood-colored avatar was a stat window.

Zhou Wen

Age: 16 years

Lifeform level: Mortal

Strength: 9

Speed: 5

Constitution: 8

Primordial Energy: 4

Primordial Energy Art: Ascetic Meditation

Primordial Energy Skills: None

Primordial Energy Pet: None

Ever since the dimensional storms, all sorts of dimensional life forms had appeared. They were roughly categorized as Mortal, Legendary, Epic, and Mythical. Humans stood at the bottom of the totem pole as Mortals. By cultivating in Primordial Energy Arts, they could raise their constitutions and evolve to higher life forms.

However, simply cultivating in a Primordial Energy Art to hone one's body and evolve was extremely slow. Hunting dimensional creatures and robbing them of their dimensional crystals for one's own use allowed accelerated evolution.

Pan-dimensional creatures lurked in dangerous places. Other than the zones where humanity had explored, the other zones were almost a sure ticket to death. Not everyone was willing to risk their lives.

Furthermore, Earth's federation had clear rules—underaged youths were forbidden entry into the dimensional zones.

The Ascetic Meditation, which Zhou Wen had cultivated, was also a Primordial Energy Art. It solely relied on arduously tempering one's body to cultivate Primordial Energy without the reliance on external forces.

In the federation, there were plenty of sixteen-year-old geniuses who could produce Primordial Energy from cultivation, but few people on Earth could do it simply by cultivating Ascetic Meditation and tempering his body to produce Primordial Energy, especially without any external help. He was the only one capable of doing so in the history of the small town of Guide City [1] .

Shortly after, every teacher and student in Guide High School believed that Zhou Wen would achieve great things

in the future. Then, one day a transfer student came to Guide High School and challenged him. To everyone’s surprise, the transfer student defeated him in one strike. Furthermore, it was done by a girl.

Zhou Wen stopped cultivating arduously after that. He appeared to abandon himself to vice. People imagined that he was mentally weak and couldn’t suffer the setback, but Zhou Wen knew very well that his change had nothing to do with the failure. It was completely because of the mysterious phone in his hand.

Zhou Wen looked down at his phone as he kept controlling the blood-colored avatar on it to slay the black ants in an Ant Nest.

“Killed Mortal creature, Vigor Ant… Killed Mortal creature, Vigor Ant… Killed Mortal creature, Vigor Ant…”

Notifications quickly flashed past as he killed every ant.

Ding!

After killing countless Vigor Ants, he suddenly heard a crisp sound as a special notice appeared on the screen: Killed Mortal creature, Vigor Ant. Discovered Primordial Energy Crystal.

Zhou Wen focused his gaze and saw a crystalline body resembling a diamond that appeared after a Vigor Ant was killed. On it was the number five.

He was delighted as he hurriedly controlled the blood-colored avatar to pick up the Primordial Energy Crystal. The moment the Primordial Energy Crystal touched its fingers, it immediately transformed into a strange aura that drilled into the blood-colored avatar’s body.

Simultaneously, Zhou Wen felt strength surge into his body from his phone as though he had been struck by lightning. It caused the Primordial Energy within him to be rapidly replenished.

The Primordial Energy entry in the blood-colored avatar’s stats went from four to five.

After killing a dimensional creature, there was a chance that various kinds of crystals would drop. The most common crystals were Strength, Speed, Constitution, and Primordial Energy Crystals.

The usage of Strength Crystals enhanced the Strength of humans, while using Speed Crystals increased one’s speed. The other crystals had similar effects.

But in reality, crystals didn’t have numeric displays. Humans couldn’t see their own stats and only knew that their Strength increased after using a Strength Crystal without knowing the exact quantitative increase.

The mysterious phone in Zhou Wen’s hand not only allowed him to obtain dimensional crystals that others had to risk their lives in dimensional zones to obtain, but it also allowed him to see the numeric values of the dimensional creatures, himself, as well as the dimensional crystals.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 2 - Ant Nest

Chapter 2: Ant Nest

Translator: CKtalon **Editor:** CKtalon

Ever since he had obtained that phone, Zhou Wen had spent nearly every moment grinding on it with a game. In turn, he received all kinds of dimensional crystals.

In the past, his Strength was 7, Speed was 4, Constitution was 7, and Primordial Energy was 1. After receiving the dimensional crystals from grinding, he had raised all these values in slightly more than a month. If it were in the past, it might have taken him years to even develop so quickly.

After using large numbers of dimensional crystals, Zhou Wen realized a set of rules. No matter which dimensional crystal it was, as long as its value was higher than his, using it would result in his stats directly rising to the same value as the said dimensional crystal.

But if the dimensional crystal’s value was lower or the same as his, it could only replenish some of his energy. Then, by cultivating the Primordial Energy Art, he could raise his own stats instead of a direct raise.

This also meant that the higher the dimensional crystal’s value was, the better. Its effects on Zhou Wen would also be amplified. However, having killed so many Vigor Ants in the Ant Nest, the highest Strength Crystal he had seen was a 9. The highest Constitution Crystal was only an 8. Speed Crystals were all low in value. Primordial Energy Crystals were extremely rare. The 5 he had received today were the highest valued he had seen to date.

Zhou Wen had considered the possibility that it had something to do with the Vigor Ants' natural makeup. They were outstanding when it came to their Strength and Constitution, but their Speed was lacking. This was also why the Strength Crystals that he received were relatively high in value, while Speed Crystals weren't much to speak of.

However, even low-valued dimensional crystals could be used as energy supplements, allowing Zhou Wen to quickly cultivate Ascetic Meditation; thus, it wasn't completely useless.

The only regret was that the crystals that dropped in the game were directly absorbed upon contact with the blood-colored avatar. They couldn't be brought to the real world; otherwise, just the sale of the low-valued crystals he had no use for would be enough to make him quite a wealthy person.

There were many ants in the Ant Nest, and whenever they discovered Zhou Wen's blood-colored avatar, the number that gathered only increased.

After killing over a hundred Vigor Ants, another dimensional crystal dropped. Unfortunately, it was a Strength Crystal 3 and could only be used for energy replenishment.

The drop rate of dimensional crystals wasn't high, and most of them were valued at 3 or lower. The higher-valued ones had extremely low drop rates, so Zhou Wen could only rely on massive amounts of grinding to raise the chances of him getting them.

This was also the reason he often slept in class and stopped cultivating—apart from classes, he spent the rest of his time grinding, even at night. He didn't have the time or energy to cultivate or pay attention in class.

Even so, the rate at which he strengthened himself was incomparable to the past. If he had only cultivated Ascetic Meditation like before, the time it took to raise his Primordial Energy to 5 would have been several times or even dozens of times longer.

As the number of Vigor Ants increased, Zhou Wen was beginning to feel overwhelmed. Before long, the blood-colored avatar was inundated by Vigor Ants, and the screen went black.

Zhou Wen had no choice but to restart the game by dripping a drop of blood onto the game's screen. His blood was akin to a 1-Up in games—one drop of blood was a life.

With the game launched, he embarked on his grinding again, killing one Vigor Ant after another. However, Zhou Wen wasn't too lucky this time. Not a single dimensional crystal dropped despite killing over a hundred Vigor Ants.

Since Zhou Wen was a sedate person and not quick-tempered, he continued to patiently grind in the Ant Nest.

Suddenly, he saw a somewhat special Vigor Ant amidst the hordes.

This Vigor Ant was blood-red in color as though it was completely covered in blood. It stood out among the other black Vigor Ants, and its head was slightly bigger. Zhou Wen noticed it immediately.

Upon noticing the red Vigor Ant gearing for a charge, Zhou Wen cautiously probed it and found its Strength and Speed was far greater than other black Vigor Ants. However, it was still manageable for him.

After positioning the blood-colored avatar several times, it managed to hit the red Vigor Ant, but only dealt minor damage to it. He had failed to slay it.

However, there was still clear progress—the red Vigor Ant's health bar was slowly dropping. Perhaps about a hundred strikes were needed to slay it.

Thankfully, the red Vigor Ant was only slightly faster than the typical black Vigor Ant. The blood-colored avatar had enough time to position itself and dodge, so killing it was only a matter of time.

However, the black Vigor Ants were increasing in number. The development worried Zhou Wen because, at this speed, he might be swarmed by the ant horde before he successfully killed the red Vigor Ant.

However, no idea came to mind for the time being. Zhou Wen could only do his best to control the blood-colored avatar's speed to deal damage to the red Vigor Ant.

Just as the red Vigor Ant's health bar almost depleted to zero, the surrounding Vigor Ants increased, giving the blood-colored avatar no space to circle around the former.

Crack!

The blood-colored avatar failed to dodge in time and was bitten by a black Vigor Ant. Instantly, its health bar was almost halved.

Zhou Wen knew that he was at the end of the rope. All he could do was to use the blood-colored avatar to deliver one final strike with all its might at the red Vigor Ant.

Boom!

When the punch landed, the red Vigor Ant’s vital spot was struck. Its final bit of health was depleted and its red carapace instantly exploded. Two crystals burst out from its carcass.

Zhou Wen didn’t have the luxury to see what type of dimensional crystals they were. His blood-colored avatar was in a critical state as the two crystals were picked up.

Moments after the blood-colored avatar picked up the two dimensional crystals, it was swarmed by the Vigor Ant horde, and before long, the screen went black.

Zhou Wen looked at the two notifications that appeared on the screen. He heaved a deep sigh of relief for he had had similar experiences. As long as he could pick up a dimensional crystal before dying, the effects would be applied.

“Killed Mortal creature, Vigor Ant. Discovered Primordial Energy Crystal.”

“Killed Mortal creature, Vigor Ant. Discovered Vigor Ant Crystal.”

Upon seeing the two notifications on the screen, Zhou Wen couldn’t help but be taken aback. He had seen a Primordial Energy Crystal drop plenty of times, but a dimensional crystal named after Vigor Ants was a first.

After a brief pause, Zhou Wen reacted. Although he had never seen such dimensional crystals, he had heard of their existence. In textbooks and videos on the Internet, people had used similar crystals. However, they weren’t Vigor Ant Crystals, but crystals of other dimensional creatures.

Could it be that this is one of those legendary dimensional crystals? While Zhou Wen was feeling exhilarated, he felt a strange force from his phone spread through his body.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 3 - Vigor Divine Fist

Chapter 3: Vigor Divine Fist

Translator: CKtalon **Editor:** CKtalon

A force surged through Zhou Wen's body like a bolt of lightning. He was no stranger to such a feeling for it was the feeling he received when absorbing Primordial Energy Crystals. However, this absorption was far more intense than anything he had previously felt. It was many times more intense than his past absorption of the five-valued Primordial Energy Crystal.

What's the value of this Primordial Energy Crystal? Why is it so intense? As Zhou Wen reeled in delight, he felt another force surge into his body.

Unlike the Primordial Energy Crystal, this force surged through his body like an electric snake, opening up his originally sealed meridians, opening up a strange new path.

It's true... The Vigor Ant Crystal is a Primordial Energy Skill Crystal as spoken in legends... However, I wonder what this Vigor Ant's Primordial Energy Skill is... Zhou Wen was filled with anticipation.

As the electric snake-like force flowed through his body, Zhou Wen's Primordial Energy was being stirred as it began circulating in the newly opened pathways.

Zhou Wen was surprised to discover that with the circulation of the Primordial Energy, his hands turned blood-red with a metallic sheen. Furthermore, he had a strange swollen feeling. Although his palms didn't increase in size, it made him feel that his hands contained an immense strength, one that was eager to blast out his palms.

Now, Zhou Wen had the urge to deal a punch, but he ultimately held back. He was on campus, and it wasn’t in his best interest to cause a commotion. Furthermore, any damage to public property required him to pay compensation.

Nearly twenty minutes later, the swelling feeling gradually subsided. His hands recovered to normal as the Primordial Energy in him stopped circulating. However, Zhou Wen knew that this Primordial Energy blast skill had been imprinted deep in his body and soul. It had seemingly become innate to his body, something he could not forget no matter how he tried.

Zhou Wen couldn’t wait to look at his phone. The game interface had already gone black. He immediately restarted the game and dripped a drop of blood in. When his in-game avatar appeared, he immediately checked his character stats.

Zhou Wen

Age: 16 years

Lifeform level: Mortal

Strength: 9

Speed: 5

Constitution: 8

Primordial Energy: 9

Primordial Energy Art: Ascetic Meditation

Primordial Energy Skill: Vigor Divine Fist (Rank 7)

Companion Beast: None

—

Zhou Wen was overjoyed. His Primordial Energy had risen all the way to 9. It meant that the Primordial Energy Crystal he had absorbed was valued at 9. And the Rank 7 indicated behind Vigor Divine Fist was similar to seven-valued stat crystals. Without any cultivation, Zhou Wen's Vigor Divine Fist had reached a rather high rank.

As Primordial Energy Skills were relatively rare, they were rather expensive. However, after receiving this Skill, he would make use of it. He could greatly enhance his various abilities, unleashing combat strength that far exceeded his normal standards. It gave him the important means to protect himself and kill enemies. No one would dislike having too many Primordial Energy Skills.

In the past, Zhou Wen had lacked the finances to purchase Primordial Energy Skill Crystals and with him fully focused on cultivating Ascetic Meditation, he lacked the time and energy to practice the Skills. This Vigor Divine Fist was his first Primordial Energy Skill, and from its name and effects, it was likely a skill that enhanced the strength of both his fists.

Indeed, the Ant Nest in the game is identical to the dimensional zones in the real world. Does this mean that the game will also drop Companion Beasts? Zhou Wen felt slightly pumped.

As he began grinding again in the game, his avatar was similarly able to use Vigor Divine Fist. Eagerly, Zhou Wen made his avatar use Vigor Divine Fist to see its might.

Boom!

The blood-colored avatar struck a Vigor Ant, bashing its head into its body. Then, its body exploded due to the immense pressure. Its flesh, blood, and carapace splattered everywhere, reducing it to a blob.

Zhou Wen was alarmed and delighted upon seeing this. The blood-colored avatar was equivalent to a clone. If it could produce such might, it also meant that he could do the same in reality.

In the past, he had needed several strikes to kill a Vigor Ant, and that had needed him to strike a vital spot. Vigor Divine Fist could ignore the Vigor Ant's carapace's defense and directly blast them apart. Its strength was frighteningly potent.

However, although Vigor Divine Fist was powerful, this punch expended 4 Primordial Energy. With Zhou Wen's maximum Primordial Energy at 9, he could only deliver two strikes before he was drained.

Although Primordial Energy could recover on its own, it happened rather slowly. Zhou Wen took an hour to recover one point, so it was sorely insufficient to keep up with his expenditure.

Of course, he could also use Primordial Energy Crystals to quickly recover Primordial Energy. To most people, this was an extremely extravagant act.

Although he had received a Primordial Energy Skill, he could only use it as a trump card for now. Zhou Wen continued patiently grinding as before, hoping that a more magical drop would appear.

Grinding was undoubtedly dull and boring. However, for a person who could hone his body and cultivate Primordial

Energy through Ascetic Meditation before the age of sixteen, this boredom was nothing.

While Zhou Wen was holding his phone and engrossed with grinding, he suddenly sensed someone approaching him. Looking up, he saw a tall girl in a high-school uniform walk over.

Zhou Wen turned to look around her. Students typically didn't come here, and it was the same at present. He was apparently the only person around for dozens of meters, and it was for this reason that he chose this spot to game.

Don't tell me Fang Ruoxi is looking for me? Zhou Wen looked at the girl walking straight towards him, and in response, he could only put away his phone for he didn't wish for anyone to see what was on it. Otherwise, it could invite huge trouble for him.

Fang Ruoxi was tall, standing at a height of 1.75 meters. At this age, she wasn't short among men and would stand out among women.

Although she was tall, her body proportions were excellent. Together with her slender body and constant training, she didn't seem too big in size. Her long, slender legs and exaggerated curves gave quite a strong visual impact. She had a primal charm of a feral nature.

Fang Ruoxi's name was quite a demure name for a girl, but it didn't match her character. She was a rather proud girl. Before An Jing transferred over, Fang Ruoxi and Zhou Wen were considered the two most illustrious geniuses in Guide High School.

However, the two of them weren't in the same class. They both had asocial characters, and as Zhou Wen spent most of

his time focusing on cultivating Ascetic Meditation and honing his body, the two never had much interaction other than the polite greeting from time to time.

Fang Ruoxi was clearly here for Zhou Wen. It left him perplexed, unsure why she was looking for him.

“Zhou Wen, I wish to invite you to join my team for the combat test at the end of the graduation exams.” Fang Ruoxi came before Zhou Wen and said those startling words to him.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 4 - Fang Ruoxi's Invitation

Chapter 4: Fang Ruoxi’s Invitation

Translator: CKtalon **Editor:** CKtalon

The cultivation of Primordial Energy Art already played an important role in the Earth Federation’s physical education system. Apart from the ordinary subjects tested at the college entrance examinations, there was a special combat test.

As combat tests were dangerous, not every candidate needed to participate, and the results weren’t included in the overall score of the entrance examinations. It was completely voluntary to participate, but to apply for some special schools, the results of a combat test was necessary for standardization purposes.

In the past ten years, more and more famous schools used the results of the combat test as one of the standards for student recruitment.

Of course, to get a job involving dimensional zones, the results on the combat test was a very good prerequisite.

Although Zhou Wen could obtain dimensional crystals from the phone without him risking his life to enter dimensional zones, he still planned on taking the combat test and enter a school focused on cultivation. This would aid him in getting a job related to the dimensional zones in the future.

If Zhou Wen didn’t involve himself in any dimensional zone work, he wouldn’t have the sources or channels to obtain dimensional crystals. This would make it difficult for him to explain his rapid growth or any Companion Beasts he might receive in the future.

By hiding in plain sight he would not garner the notice of others, just as a diamond would be lost in a sea of crystals.

Zhou Wen didn’t wish to risk his life at the dimensional zones, but he needed to have a job involving such matters. At the very least, he needed a channel to obtain dimensional items. This way, he wouldn’t be suspected when he used large numbers of dimensional crystals in the future.

The combat test wasn’t a solo affair. Instead, it was carried out in a team of four. Apart from one’s individual combat prowess, teamwork, leadership, and other traits influenced the final results.

If one were to be the final man standing in the combat test, with the other teammates dropping out ahead of time or an accident happening, one’s score would be greatly affected, even if the individual did very well to receive high individual scores.

Zhou Wen had quite a good reputation in Guide High School in the past. He was an ideal teammate, but in the past month or so, his image and reputation had drastically declined. There were also significant doubts about his abilities.

It was still understandable if an ordinary student were to team up with him, but for Fang Ruoxi who had a chance of coming first in the Guide City combat test, there wasn’t a good reason for her to recruit him.

Zhou Wen had been famous because of his cultivation of Ascetic Meditation. But when it came to actual strength, there were a few sixteen-year-olds in Guide High School who had cultivated Primordial Energy. However, they were not like Zhou Wen who simply relied on honing his body to

cultivate Primordial Energy. They had more or less absorbed Primordial Energy Crystals to supplement their cultivation.

“Why are you recruiting me?” Zhou Wen asked Fang Ruoxi with piqued interest.

Fang Ruoxi and Zhou Wen locked gazes. Her eyes were clear and untainted like a mountain spring.

“I want to do my best to get a high score on the combat test, so I need a strong teammate. And you have that strength,” Fang Ruoxi said calmly.

“You are referring to me from a month ago, right?”

Fang Ruoxi’s glimmering eyes stared at Zhou Wen intently as she said firmly, “From what I see, Zhou Wen is Zhou Wen. He has never changed. You are still the only person in Guide High School that I view as my match.”

Zhou Wen was slightly taken aback. He was rather surprised that Fang Ruoxi thought so highly of him. He couldn’t help but feel some indescribable, odd feelings.

“What’s An Jing if you say something like that?” Zhou Wen said in a self-deprecating manner. Although he wasn’t concerned about his defeat under An Jing’s hands, he had to admit that she was much stronger than he was.

Fang Ruoxi sighed. “I said the only person in Guide High School. An Jing was never one of us. Also, she will not be participating in the college entrance exams here.”

“What do you mean?” Zhou Wen was taken aback.

“Don’t you know? She has already transferred out.” Fang Ruoxi paused and continued, “Although I don’t know An

Jing’s origins, I’m certain that she has exceeded the Mortal stage. To reach such a stage at her age, she must have quite a remarkable background. And with that strength of hers, it was completely unnecessary to challenge you. Furthermore, her arrival and departure happened so suddenly. It gives the feeling that she just came here to beat you up. I even imagined that you were acquainted with her and had crossed her somehow.”

Zhou Wen had never thought too much about it previously. Now, on careful thought, it did seem to be the case. He could, however, be sure that he had never met An Jing before, much less have crossed her.

“How is that possible? I’ve never met her before. How could I have crossed her?” Zhou Wen tried carefully recalling, but couldn’t figure out how he could have had bad blood with her.

“Perhaps I was just overthinking it.” Fang Ruoxi didn’t continue on the topic as she looked at Zhou Wen and asked, “So, what’s your answer?”

“Since you are willing to team up with me, I naturally don’t mind cozying up to someone powerful,” Zhou Wen said with a shrug.

“Then it’s a deal. I’ve already found the other two teammates. Starting today, the four of us will train together during cultivation classes in the afternoon. We need to ensure that we have the necessary teamwork and coordination during the combat test.” Fang Ruoxi looked at her wristwatch and turned to say to Zhou Wen, “Come on. Cultivation classes are about to begin.”

When Li Zhi and Tian Xiangdong watched Fang Ruoxi return with Zhou Wen, they were quite surprised. They knew that

she had gone to find their fourth teammate, but weren’t aware of who she had in mind.

Now, upon realizing that it was Zhou Wen, they felt puzzled. They all knew of Zhou Wen’s antics over the past month.

Cultivation was in an ever-regressive state, especially combat. Even frequent practice made it difficult to seize fleeting opportunities in battle. The lack of practice for a few days greatly slowed down one’s reflexes. Considering how Zhou Wen hadn’t practiced for over a month with him completely engrossed in gaming, to the point of looking pale and sickly, it was almost a certainty that his combat abilities had drastically fallen.

It was just like a professional boxer. They needed enough time to recover and train after a period of zero practice to compete in matches again. No one could become stronger doing nothing. They only became weaker.

They weren’t that far off from the college entrance exams, and even if Zhou Wen made a comeback like a prodigal son, it would be very difficult for him to recover his original combat prowess.

“Ruoxi, don’t tell me the fourth teammate is Zhou Wen? Is this a joke!?” Tian Xiangdong rubbed his nose and said in an exaggerated manner.

“I’m not joking. Zhou Wen will be our fourth teammate,” Fang Ruoxi said in all seriousness.

Tian Xiangdong looked at Fang Ruoxi and then at Zhou Wen. He habitually rubbed his nose and said, “Ruoxi, all of us know how talented and capable Zhou Wen is, but he hasn’t been training for more than a month. Even if he were to restart his training now, it will be difficult for him to recover

his former standards. Our goal is to be first in Guide City’s combat test. I don’t think Zhou Wen is the best candidate? Why don’t we do this? I have some ties with Zheng Yi. If you feel uncomfortable asking him, I’ll do the invitation. How about that?”

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 5 - Strength Test

Chapter 5: Strength Test

Translator: CKtalon **Editor:** CKtalon

Tian Xiangdong's words were clearly directed at Zhou Wen, but the latter wasn't angered.

The combat test at the college entrance exam was key to the latter half of an average person's life. Anyone would hope to do their best and not have others affect their own results.

Whether one could attend a reputable school, find a decent job after graduation, or even have the chance of entering high society, was highly tied to the test.

Furthermore, the strength of a teammate affected one's safety. No one wished to use their lives as a joke.

Even Zhou Wen had aimed for a reputable school before he obtained the mysterious phone. This gave him more opportunities to become stronger and not let his talent go to waste. Therefore, Zhou Wen could fully comprehend Tian Xiangdong's rationale for saying such things.

After Tian Xiangdong said his piece, he stopped looking at Fang Ruoxi and stared at Zhou Wen.

Fang Ruoxi looked at Zhou Wen and said, "Zheng Yi might be outstanding as well, but I think Zhou Wen is the best candidate."

By the side, Li Zhi thought and said, "We know you have an eye for talent, Ruoxi. Zhou Wen is indeed outstanding, but the combat test results are very important to all of us. We

have to treat it with utmost seriousness. Let’s do this. If Zhou Wen doesn’t mind, we can do a simple test. Once the results of the test are out, it will be obvious if Zhou Wen suits our team.”

“Li Zhi’s right. I agree,” Tian Xiangdong said immediately.

“What kind of test?” Fang Ruoxi asked.

“Wouldn’t that be simple? I’m the weakest among the three of us. Let Zhou Wen fight me in combat. As long as he wins me, he will naturally be qualified to join our team. You wouldn’t call that bullying, right?” Tian Xiangdong hurriedly said.

Fang Ruoxi didn’t say a word and looked at Zhou Wen.

Zhou Wen knew that he needed to voice his opinion at such times; otherwise, it would be difficult for him to join the team. Although he wasn’t too interested in joining this team, he still wished to get good results for the combat test. Fang Ruoxi’s team was likely considered the strongest team at Guide High School, so there was definitely no harm in joining them.

“I’m fine with that. However, actual combat has risks. It would be terrible if anyone gets injured,” Zhou Wen said with a nod.

Tian Xiangdong laughed in response. “Zhou Wen, I know you’ve been cultivating Ascetic Meditation. Your Constitution and Strength must be extraordinary, but your Speed must be lacking. I won’t take advantage of your weaknesses. Why don’t we determine the winner through a Strength competition?”

Fang Ruoxi couldn’t help but frown when she heard Tian Xiangdong.

Tian Xiangdong cultivated Lightning Art and it was also a Primordial Energy Art that primarily unleashed massive bursts of strength. Tian Xiangdong had also coupled Lightning Art with a Primordial Energy Skill, Lighting Fist. Tian Xiangdong’s Lightning Fist had only reached Rank 1, however, among typical high school students, the chances of them coming into contact with a Primordial Energy Skill was rather low. To grasp one Primordial Energy Skill, especially one that matched their Primordial Energy Art, was very rare.

Fang Ruoxi didn’t know Zhou Wen’s family background, but from the way he cultivated a Primordial Energy Art like Ascetic Meditation, without ever purchasing any supplementary Primordial Energy Crystals, it was highly likely that his family wasn’t well-to-do. If he couldn’t even afford Primordial Energy Crystals, how could he have the money to buy the expensive Primordial Energy Skill Crystals?

Furthermore, in his battle with An Jing, he hadn’t used any Primordial Energy Skills.

Fang Ruoxi’s lips quivered, but she didn’t say a word. She thought inwardly, “Let’s see how Zhou Wen will handle this.”

Zhou Wen looked at Tian Xiangdong and asked, “How do we compete in Strength?”

“Although the school has a Strength-measuring device, those lifeless numbers don’t mean much. Let’s exchange blows. Whoever retreats loses. How about that?” Tian Xiangdong said with squinted eyes.

“I think it’s better we use the school’s Strength-measure device,” Zhou Wen said after some thought.

“Why? Are you afraid of me injuring you?” Tian Xiangdong said, curling his lips.

Zhou Wen smiled without a word. He was more afraid of killing Tian Xiangdong with one punch.

Tian Xiangdong’s Primordial Energy Skill, Lightning Fist, wasn’t a secret at school. Just relying on strength alone probably couldn’t beat him. Therefore, if Zhou Wen used Vigor Divine Fist, he was afraid that a single punch would obliterate Tian Xiangdong’s arm as well as his body.

“Alright. Since you’re afraid, let’s use the Strength-measuring device,” Tian Xiangdong said, feeling some regret.

For the past three years in high school, all the teachers and students had claimed that Zhou Wen was the number one genius of Guide High School. Tian Xiangdong naturally wasn’t very accepting of this accolade and had long wished to prove himself by defeating Zhou Wen.

This was a tiny wish many top students at the school had. After Zhou Wen was defeated by An Jing’s single blow, this desire subsided significantly.

However, since there was a chance to defeat him, Tian Xiangdong still held some anticipation and excitement. After all, Zhou Wen was once honored as Guide High School’s number one genius.

The only thing that left Tian Xiangdong regretful was that he couldn’t personally defeat Zhou Wen as An Jing did. All he

could do was defeat him with numbers on a Strength-measuring device.

Now that it was lunchtime, the device room didn't have any students. As always, Yu Qiubai was inspecting the various devices personally, checking to see if there were any problematic ones that could receive timely repairs.

Just as Yu Qiubai sat inside a spacecraft-like Primordial Energy-measurement device, he heard someone push open the door. Following that there were footsteps.

It's lunchtime. Who would come here? Yu Qiubai looked out the observation hole from inside the device and discovered that it was Fang Ruoxi, Tian Xiangdong, Li Zhi, and Zhou Wen. He couldn't help but be somewhat surprised.

These four students could basically be considered the top elites of Guide High School's graduating class. Apart from Zhou Wen's wallowing in self-misery, the other three were highly anticipated to do well.

For the four to come to the device room, including Zhou Wen, left Yu Qiubai curious. He had no idea what they were doing here.

Four… Could these four be forming a team to participate in the combat test… But with Zhou Wen's current state… How could Fang Ruoxi and the rest be willing to form a team with him? Yu Qiubai's heart stirred as he remained inside the Primordial Energy-measuring device. He was curious as to what they were up to.

"Who's going first? You or me?" Tian Xiangdong walked to the Strength-measuring device and turned to look at Zhou Wen.

“Anything works,” Zhou Wen said indifferently.

“Anyway, everyone gets three tries. The highest one shall count. Since it doesn’t matter who goes first, I’ll do the honors first,” Tian Xiangdong said as he walked in front of the device.

Tian Xiangdong took a deep breath as he circulated his Lightning Art and gathered his strength before smashing his fist into the pressure board on the Strength-measuring device.

The pressure board was made up of a metal alloy with hydraulic machinery behind. Based on the different amount of strength delivered, the board would jerk back and produce a figure onscreen.

When Tian Xiangdong threw the punch, a series of numbers lit up on the display one after another. It only stopped when it reached 7.

Tian Xiangdong hadn’t used Lightning Fist and had only relied on pure Strength. With regard to that, he was rather satisfied with the value of 7.

For the average high-school student, a Strength value of 7 was undoubtedly head and shoulders above their peers.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 6 - Inch Punch

Chapter 6: Inch Punch

Translator: CKtalon **Editor:** CKtalon

Tian Xiangdong having 7 for his Strength surprised Zhou Wen slightly.

The Strength-measuring device's value was slightly different from the Strength stat in the game on the phone. However, the difference wasn't that much. They could basically be considered as sharing the same unit.

Before Zhou Wen received the mysterious phone, his Strength was only a 7 as well.

"It's your turn," Tian Xiangdong took a step to the side and said to Zhou Wen.

Zhou Wen stood in front of the Strength-measuring device as the trio's eyes landed on him. All of them wanted to know how much strength this former number one genius of Guide High School had left.

Inside the Primordial Energy module, Yu Qiubai shared the same sentiments. After spending more than a month as a wastrel, how much more strength did Zhou Wen have?

Although Strength wasn't something that declined as quickly as one's reaction in combat, having it was one thing, and delivering it was another.

Skills to deliver Strength required plenty of practice before one could perfectly release one's Strength. Over time, one would get rusty; therefore, even if one still had Strength, they could hardly release it completely.

Zhou Wen stood in front of the pressure board, taking on a pose to deliver an Inch Punch. It wasn’t a Primordial Energy Skill, but an ordinary combat skill. It was part of the school’s normal teachings.

However, Inch Punch was easy to pick up but difficult to master. It was used to deliver the greatest amount of strength at the shortest distance and was one that needed plenty of practice to achieve a certain level of mastery. Furthermore, it was delivered at short distances, so Inch Punch didn’t have any beautiful or cool poses. The typical student was more willing to practice something that showed its effects quickly and punching techniques that appeared domineering.

Of course, even more students chose to train in weapons. After all, the damage from weapons in actual combat was far greater than one’s limbs.

Upon seeing Zhou Wen nearly plaster his fist to the pressure board, Fang Ruoxi and company realized that he was using Inch Punch.

Tian Xiangdong curled his lips and said, “The explosive strength delivered by Inch Punch is very strong indeed, but it’s not something easily mastered without years of strenuous training. Let’s hope Zhou Wen doesn’t end up overshooting his mark.”

Although Tian Xiangdong’s words weren’t pleasant, Yu Qiubai agreed. Inch Punch wasn’t easily mastered. Zhou Wen didn’t seem to practice much and in the recent month, he had engrossed himself in gaming. Therefore, to use Inch Punch for a Strength test might end up giving him worse results.

Bang!

As the quartet was still in thought, they saw Zhou Wen’s fist tremble at an extremely fast speed. It was so fast that they might have imagined themselves seeing things if not for the explosive bang from the pressure board. It was as though Zhou Wen’s fist had never moved.

Their eight eyes quickly looked towards the screen. They wished to know the results of Zhou Wen’s punch.

The gap’s too tiny! The same thought came to the minds of Tian Xiangdong, Fang Ruoxi, and Li Zhi simultaneously.

The distance he threw his punch from was too tiny. Although Inch Punch is about delivering the most amount of Strength with the shortest distance, it’s very difficult to deliver any Strength when the gap is too tiny, just like a person can jump higher when squatting down or retracting an arm to deliver a more powerful punch. Inch Punch goes the whole way. Only true Inch Punch experts can deliver that much Strength at such short distances… Yu Qiubai had a lot more going on in his mind.

When all of them saw the number on the screen, their eyes widened immediately.

They saw one number after another light up, and soon 10 was lit up. Zhou Wen’s Inch Punch had delivered 10 points of Strength.

10! It’s a 10! How is this possible? Yu Qiubai was pleasantly surprised.

Yu Qiubai had been teaching for years.The thought of a high-school student delivering a punch with a Strength of 10, without using any Primordial Energy Skills, was terrifying.

Even if the typical student had Strength Crystals to use, it was very difficult for them to reach such levels during high school. This was because typical Strength Crystals were limited when it came to enhancing one's Strength. Beyond 7, using a typical Strength Crystal was practically useless.

One couldn't have their Strength improve unless one had extremely high-quality Strength Crystals; otherwise, they could only cultivate a Primordial Energy Art to constantly hone their bodies to slowly grow their Strength.

But that was just too difficult. Before evolving to the Legendary stage, it was very difficult for the typical human to have Strength reaching a value of 10. Most humans were at 7–8 at the Mortal stage.

Zhou Wen was clearly still in the Mortal stage; yet, he could deliver Strength valued at 10 with just his muscles alone. This was considered extremely rare even in the entire League. It was probably not an exaggeration to call it one in a million.

Could it be that Zhou Wen didn't wallow in his self-misery? The reason he's constantly sleeping in class is because of the fatigue from training himself even more excessively? The more Yu Qiubai thought about it, the more he was convinced of his theory. The look he gave Zhou Wen was mixed with approbation and cherishing, as well as relief. It has to be the case. The former principal knows better indeed. I had mistaken him. To have 10 Strength at the Mortal stage is not something anyone in Guide City can match. Even among all the high school students on Earth, he will still be top-class... What a good child... It must have been hard on him...

The more Yu Qiubai thought about it, the more he fondness he felt for Zhou Wen. He felt that not only was Zhou Wen talented, but the latter also had a good temperament. Ever since he was defeated by An Jing, many people had been wagging their tongues at him. Under such immense pressure, he hadn’t tried to defend himself but had actually managed to cultivate such an impressive step in a short period of time. Such a state of mind and talent was very rare among high school students.

“No way? Delivering 10 without using any Primordial Energy Skills? Don’t tell me this fellow is hiding at home daily and honing his Strength?” Tian Xiangdong couldn’t help but gulp. To deliver 10 Strength at the Mortal stage was just too shocking. It was rare for a tiny city like Guide City to produce such a person.

Li Zhi and Fang Ruoxi looked at Zhou Wen with odd looks. Although Fang Ruoxi never believed Zhou Wen to be someone who would wallow in self-misery and that he had trained arduously in private, she had never expected him to attain such progress.

From the looks of it, the numbers from the Strength-measuring device are a little different from the game. In-game, my Strength is 9, but in the real world, it’s 10. Zhou Wen thought to himself.

“To be able to deliver 10 Strength, you do live up to your reputation as the number one genius of Guide High School. However, if you believe that you have defeated me, you’re wrong,” Tian Xiangdong said as he looked at Zhou Wen.

Upon seeing Zhou Wen’s result, Tian Xiangdong was already willing to let the former join their team.

Although Tian Xiangdong could deliver more than 10 Strength with Lightning Fist, it was something that expended Primordial Energy. At this present level, he could only deliver one punch in a short period of time, preventing him from using it for long.

As for Zhou Wen, he had delivered 10 Strength. He could engage in combat for long periods of time, a huge boon to the team. It was even more useful than Tian Xiangdong's Lightning Fist.

Another reason was Zhou Wen's Inch Punch. To be able to use that, it was obvious that Zhou Wen hadn't given up on himself. He must have been secretly cultivating and hadn't suffered from being rusty with his skills.

However, Tian Xiangdong wasn't willing to admit defeat. He still planned on defeating Zhou Wen before magnanimously voicing out his acceptance of Zhou Wen into the team.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 7 - Destroying the Machine With One Punch

Chapter 7: Destroying the Machine With One Punch

Translator: CKtalon **Editor:** CKtalon

“Xiangdong…” Li Zhi was just about to say something when Tian Xiangdong waved his hand to cut him off.

The benefits were obvious if a person with Strength 10 could join their team. Li Zhi believed that since Zhou Wen had shown enough of his prowess, there was no need to continue. Making things ugly was not beneficial to any party.

If Tian Xiangdong were to use Lightning Fist to defeat Zhou Wen; thus, causing him to leave. It would be a loss for them.

Upon seeing Tian Xiangdong walk to the pressure board, Li Zhi had wanted to say this but was stopped by Fang Ruoxi.

“Is this really fine?” Li Zhi looked at Fang Ruoxi and said.

“It’s fine. That fellow has already accepted Zhou Wen. He just doesn’t want to lose,” Fang Ruoxi said softly.

Li Zhi was slightly taken aback before he was enlightened. He cursed in amusement before falling silent, “That fellow just can’t bear to play second fiddle.”

Tian Xiangdong began the second round of Strength tests.

Tian Xiangdong’s expression was heavy as he stood in front of the pressure board. He slowly lifted his fist as veins protruded from it. Lightning bolts seemed to mesh together, making it look ferocious and terrifying.

Bang!

The fist slammed heavily into the pressure board. The special metal alloy pressure board jerked back obviously as the numbers on the screen rapidly lit up, eventually stopping at 11.

“How’s that?” As he reeled from expending all his Primordial Energy, Tian Xiangdong secretly wiped sweat from his brow.

His Strength was only a 7. And with a Rank 1 Lightning Fist, it could raise his Strength by about half. It wasn’t extremely stable, allowing him to dish out 10 or 11 randomly. He had done pretty well today, allowing him to defeat Zhou Wen.

“That’s impressive.” Zhou Wen was indeed a genius when it came to cultivation. However, he wasn’t a sensitive person. He didn’t notice Tian Xiangdong’s emotional changes and was caught up with the notion that he couldn’t join the team unless he defeated Tian Xiangdong. Therefore, he walked towards the Strength-measuring device again.

However, Zhou Wen didn’t immediately throw out his punch. Instead, he began studying the Strength-measuring device.

“What are you looking at? Just tell us if you can’t do it. It’s not embarrassing losing to me.” Realizing that Zhou Wen wasn’t delivering the punch, Tian Xiangdong was imagining that Zhou Wen lacked the confidence and was hesitant about delivering the punch.

Zhou Wen looked at the Strength-measuring device and asked worriedly, “The school won’t ask me to pay for it if I break it, right?”

The moment Tian Xiangdong heard Zhou Wen, he burst out in exasperated laughter. “Bro, nice bragging. This is a

Strength-measuring device. It’s specially made for Strength-measuring. Although it’s only a low-end model meant for high schoolers with an upper limit of 20, few high schoolers can hit the limit, much less destroy it. Let’s do this. If you really destroy it, I’ll pay for the damages.”

“Makes sense.” Zhou Wen nodded. The device did seem rather solid, so it was unlikely it be damaged.

Zhou Wen didn’t hesitate further as he raised his fist. The skin on his fist gradually turned red with a metallic sheen. It looked like it was wrapped in a red metallic membrane.

“Primordial Energy Skill… So Zhou Wen has already learned a Primordial Energy Skill…” Tian Xiangdong was instantly somewhat disappointed.

Without a doubt, with Zhou Wen’s Strength, the knowledge of a Primordial Energy Skill—no matter how weak it was—could dish out Strength that was far greater than Tian Xiangdong’s. Therefore, the latter knew that his loss was a certainty.

Fang Ruoxi and Li Zhi were somewhat surprised that Zhou Wen knew a Primordial Energy Skill. It enabled them to earn higher points at the combat test.

Bang!

Zhou Wen slammed his fist heavily into the pressure board and as though it was hit by a sledgehammer, it jerked back. The numbers on the screen kept lighting up, instantly surpassing 11.

I wonder what his final score will be through the use of a Primordial Energy Skill, Fang Ruoxi thought, but she saw the numbers lighting up at a blisteringly fast rate. In a blink of

an eye, all of the numbers were lit up as her expression changed.

Boom!

Before the spectators could have any thoughts, the Strength-measuring device produced a strange sound. At some spot, the back of the device cracked as pale yellow liquid spewed out like a fountain.

Tian Xiangdong and company widened their mouths into an O shape as they stared blankly at Zhou Wen and the liquid-spewing Strength-measuring device. There was silence.

Yu Qiubai's eyes widened as well, eager to rush forward to personally determine if the Strength-measuring device was really broken.

He naturally wasn't wanting payment from Zhou Wen, but that he was filled with disbelief that a high schooler's Primordial Energy Skill could be this strong.

Tian Xiangdong trembled. At the thought of the punch's might, he couldn't bring himself to imagine what would have happened if he had battled Zhou Wen in a Strength test.

The upper limit of the Strength-measuring device was 20, but it didn't mean that it could only withstand Strength 20. In fact, to burst the hydraulic mechanism needed Strength that far exceeded 20.

Even with Strength 10, Zhou Wen probably needed a Primordial Energy Skill at Rank 8 or 9 to deliver such damage.

If he hadn’t learned of Zhou Wen’s background from the former principal, he would even have suspected that Zhou Wen had used high-level Primordial Energy Skill Crystals; otherwise, it would have been impossible for him to possess such Strength.

However, with Zhou Wen’s background, it seemed impossible for him to possess such high-level Primordial Energy Skill Crystals.

If he had truly mastered a Primordial Energy Skill to such a level by himself, that’s way too terrifying! Yu Qiubai couldn’t help but recall the former principal’s evaluation of Zhou Wen: *“There are two geniuses in the world. One type of genius is called Zhou Wen, the other type are the other geniuses.”*

“You said that you’d be paying if it’s damaged. You’re a man of his word, right?” Zhou Wen was taken aback as he looked at Tian Xiangdong.

He hadn’t expected Vigor Divine Fist to really be vigorous enough to destroy the Strength-measuring device.

He was poor and really didn’t have the money to compensate the school if it really pressed him for damages.

“Yes, I’ll pay for it. Bro, any problem that can be solved with money isn’t a problem. We are old classmates and a team. Leave this to me,” Tian Xiangdong said with a beaming smile as he came round.

Tian Xiangdong came from a rich family and could easily afford it. However, a second teammate like Zhou Wen was probably impossible to find in a small city like Guide City.

With Zhou Wen joining the team, Tian Xiangdong believed that perhaps they weren't only able to obtain first at the combat test in Guide City, but that they could even raise their targets.

Li Zhi and Fang Ruoxi were in a good mood as well. Having a powerful teammate like Zhou Wen join the team brought them one step closer to their goals.

This fellow is more interesting than I imagined. Fang Ruoxi narrowed her eyes as she looked at Zhou Wen.

With Zhou Wen officially joining the team, the four submitted an application form for the combat test. Many of the teachers and heads in the school were rather surprised to see Zhou Wen's name on the list.

The teachers of Fang Ruoxi, Li Zhi, and Tian Xiangdong had even spoken to them privately, openly and covertly trying to get them to select another teammate. They didn't want Zhou Wen to be a burden on them. However, the trio refused, adamant about having Zhou Wen in their team. It left their teachers vexed.

Only Yu Qiubai drank his tea calmly. He knew very well that Zhou Wen was the strongest among the four.

Just wait and see. After the test, we will know who's the burden. Yu Qiubai drank his tea as he thought.

Zhou Wen was his student, so he was naturally displeased that the other teachers spoke ill of him behind Zhou Wen's back.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 8 - Zhou Lingfeng

Chapter 8: Zhou Lingfeng

Translator: CKtalon **Editor:** CKtalon

Zhou Wen didn’t think too much about it. The thoughts of others had nothing to do with him. All he wanted was to score well at the combat test during the college entrance exams. From that, he could enter a reputable school before focusing on gaming. After cruising through college and graduating, he could then get a job related to the dimensional zones.

However, there was one thing that Zhou Wen took notice of. Fang Ruoxi’s mention of his defeat under An Jing’s hands had made him realize something was amiss. It was something he hadn’t thought too deeply about previously.

An Jing was about his age and was perhaps a little younger; yet, she was very likely already a Legendary stage expert. Although they were just separated by one stage, it was a night and day difference between the Mortal and Legendary stages. It was almost impossible for someone at the Mortal stage to defeat a Legendary stage expert.

The clearest indicator of a Legendary stage expert was the opportunity to obtain a Companion Beast. And at the Mortal stage, it was very difficult to obtain Companion Beasts. Even if one did get a Companion Egg, they lacked the Primordial Energy to carry out the incubation.

There were also many opaque differences. For example, after a human advanced to the Legendary stage, they would awaken their Legendary Life Providence, greatly augmenting

their constitutions. It also widened the gap between Mortal stage and Legendary stage.

Unless there was any reason that prompted action, the typical Legendary stage expert found it beneath them to attack people at the Mortal stage. For An Jing to challenge him, a student at the Mortal stage, and then transfer out of the school shortly after the challenge, it appeared as though she had specially come to beat him up.

“I’ve never left Guide City all my life. How could I have offended someone like her? Could it be Dad…” As Zhou Wen thought about it, he came up with one possibility.

Zhou Wen’s mother had passed away during childbirth, causing him to be brought up in a single-parent family. As for his dad, he was an unreliable man.

Zhou Wen’s father was named Zhou Lingfeng. Like the word ‘feng’ symbolizing ‘wind’ in his name, he was like a gust of wind. From the age of five, Zhou Wen learned to be independent. He had to do simple cooking, laundry, and the management of household matters, as well as do groceries.

And in the words of his unreliable dad, this was to nurture his survivability as a man. It would also be the foundation on which he would use to get a wife.

Although his dad was very lazy, there was something that left Zhou Lingfeng slightly relieved. Zhou Lingfeng had never missed out on paying his living expenses.

As a polyglot, Zhou Lingfeng did translation work. When Zhou Wen was young, his father often translated documents from home. However, with the improvement in technology, translation software became much better and Zhou Lingfeng’s work reduced as a result.

When Zhou Wen grew a little older, he became more independent, so Zhou Lingfeng took on interpretation work. He often went out of town for a week or even as long as a few months.

The latest instance was more ridiculous. Zhou Wen hadn’t seen his father in half a year. If it wasn’t for his monthly living expenses being transferred into his account, he would have been worried his father had died.

This was because Zhou Lingfeng often went to relatively remote places. The reception conditions there were often terrible, so it was common for him to be uncontactable. Zhou Wen was used to it.

Even if he wasn’t used to it, it wasn’t as though he could do anything about it other than waiting for Zhou Lingfeng’s return.

Their home was made up of two men. Zhou Wen had no chance to offend a figure like An Jing, so he was highly suspicious that his dad had offended her. Failing to find him, all she could do was to vent her anger on his son.

Zhou Wen had zero confidence in his dad. He was the kind of person that indulged in pleasures. He was also someone who often spent time at bars. He had often hit on chicks in the past, only to be beaten up by the woman’s male partner.

Luckily Zhou Wen was able to fend for himself. If not, he wondered if Zhou Lingfeng would even have had the ability to raise him.

As he thought about it, his phone suddenly rang. With his mind wandering, Zhou Wen jumped. After taking out his ordinary phone, he realized it was from his father, Zhou Lingfeng.

Speak of the devil. Zhou Wen hurriedly picked up the call. Just as he was about to say something, he heard Zhou Lingfeng's voice: "Son, I'm getting married. Will you be coming to my wedding?"

Thankfully, Zhou Wen wasn't drinking any water; otherwise, he would have spewed it all out.

"You're getting married? To who?" Zhou Wen wasn't against Zhou Lingfeng getting married. After all, he had been single for so many years, so it was very normal for him to find a partner. Besides, he might become more reliable after his marriage, so it could be a blessing in disguise.

"I'll send Sweety's photo to you," Zhou Lingfeng said. Before Zhou Wen said a word, the phone hung up and a photo was sent.

Zhou Wen glanced at the photo and saw Zhou Lingfeng with a young woman. The woman looked to be in her thirties at most. She was elegant and beautiful, and she had a rather good presence. She looked different from the so-called beauties on the Internet. This lady had a sensual aesthetic and a unique presence that could hardly be described with words.

"How's it? Your new mom isn't too bad, right? Her name is Ouyang Lan," Zhou Lingfeng called again and said smugly.

"Not bad, but she's not my mom," Zhou Wen said.

Although he didn't mind Zhou Lingfeng getting remarried, he didn't plan on acknowledging a new mother at his age. After all, Zhou Lingfeng wasn't home most of the time and he was already accustomed to living alone. It was also not necessary that the lady would like baggage like him, so it would be quite nice if they led their own separate lives.

“My wife is naturally your mom. That’s an undeniable fact. By the way, my wedding is in a few days. You have to come, alright?” Zhou Lingfeng said indifferently, as though he took nothing to heart.

“Where is it? When is it?” Zhou Wen asked.

“Luoyang. In a week,” Zhou Lingfeng said.

“I’ll be taking the college entrance exams in a few days. The period you mentioned happens to clash with the combat test which I plan on participating in. I won’t be able to go even if I wanted,” Zhou Wen said helplessly.

He was willing to participate in the wedding, but he really couldn’t go.

“Wow, time passes so quickly. You are already having your college entrance exams.” Zhou Lingfeng clearly didn’t remember this as he made a poignant comment.

Zhou Wen didn’t expect his father to know it, but he was still somewhat disappointed hearing him say that. Perhaps Zhou Lingfeng had even forgotten that he was graduating from high school this year.

“Dad, do you know that metal biscuit tin inside our wardrobe?” Zhou Wen suddenly asked.

“Biscuit tin? What biscuit tin?” Zhou Lingfeng asked in puzzlement.

“The one that’s about thirty centimeters long. It’s a biscuit tin that’s squarish and made of metal. It has a picture of a cartoon bear…” Zhou Wen described the biscuit tin’s characteristics in detail.

“Oh, that bear biscuit tin. I often ate from it when I was little. However, that brand of biscuits isn’t sold anymore. The one we have at home was probably left behind. Why are you asking about it?”

“Inside that bear biscuit tin is a cellphone. Did you put it in?” Zhou Wen’s heart raced slightly. That cellphone was the mysterious phone he was using.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 9 - Mysterious Phone

Chapter 9: Mysterious Phone

Translator: CKtalon **Editor:** CKtalon

“Cellphone?” Zhou Lingfeng was somewhat puzzled. Only after quite some time did he suddenly say, “Is the phone you’re talking about one with a completely white metal case and a black screen without any buttons. About five to six inches big?”

“That’s right. Is that phone yours?” Zhou Wen asked in surprise.

“No, it’s your grandfather’s. I’d have already forgotten about it if you hadn’t mentioned it,” Zhou Lingfeng said with a laugh. “That phone was your grandfather’s baby.”

“Grandfather’s baby? Where he did get it from?” Zhou Wen seemed to notice something amiss with Zhou Lingfeng’s tone as he pressed on.

Zhou Lingfeng recounted the phone’s origins, leaving Zhou Wen quite surprised.

Zhou Wen’s grandfather was a carpenter years ago; however, he wasn’t a carpenter who made tables or chairs. He could do those, but his focus was on building wooden buildings that mimicked ancient structures.

In the past, when Guide Ancient City was being rebuilt, they needed to preserve the ancient city’s former state, so the construction of many wooden buildings in the ancient style was needed. Zhou Wen’s father had taken the job and spent more than a year in the City.

During this period, an ancient dried well was excavated from the ancient city’s site. It was the graveyard shift, so there weren’t any outsiders around. Only Zhou Wen’s grandfather and a few workers were present.

When the ancient well was dug out, there was a glow that emitted from below. Imagining that they had dug out treasure, the workers came to an agreement and headed down to dig for it, hoping to strike it rich.

After they went down the well, they discovered an ancient rotting wooden case. The case had almost disintegrated, and there were many holes in it. It was from these holes that the light shone out.

The few workers brought the case up, imagining that there was some treasure in it. With just a few of them, they could split it and end up living in the lap of luxury for the rest of their lives.

To their surprise, it was a cellphone. Although cellphones had just become widespread back then, it was no longer anything rare.

Furthermore, the phone was still lit in the beginning. After they took it out, the screen went black as though it had lost power. There weren’t any buttons on the phone, nor was there any charging port.

Zhou Wen’s grandfather and company were greatly disappointed, imagining that it was a prank. Since it looked broken without any value, everyone lost interest in it. Eventually, Zhou Wen’s grandfather threw it into a tool bag.

Later, it was brought back home. Zhou Wen’s grandfather didn’t throw it away and kept it in the storeroom. When Zhou Lingfeng was young, Zhou Wen’s grandfather had

even told him the story. However, it was recounted like a horror story; thus, leaving quite a deep impression on Zhou Lingfeng.

“That crappy phone can’t even be turned on. When I was young, I took it to a phone repair shop, hoping to sell it for a few packets of cigarettes, but the boss said it was worthless. So I just threw it into the biscuit tin. Don’t tell me you plan on selling it for money? Cellphones have such a short lifespan and they aren’t considered antiques. Old models aren’t worth anything,” Zhou Lingfeng said.

Zhou Wen thought to himself, *Thankfully, you didn’t manage to swap the phone for cigarettes; otherwise, me crying would be an understatement.*

“The phone has never lit up before?” Zhou Wen asked further.

“How could it? It’s been sitting there for years. Ignoring the fact that it’s broken, even if it isn’t, it would have long run out of charge.” Zhou Lingfeng cut off Zhou Wen and said, “Alright. I have many things to tend to over here. Since I’ve already informed you, it’s up to you to come to the wedding.”

With that said, Zhou Lingfeng hung up.

Something dug up from Guide Ancient City? Unfortunately, that place has already become a dimensional zone. Ordinary people have no way of going close. However, Guide City’s combat test is inside Guide Ancient City. I wonder where that ancient well is or if I have a chance of heading over to take a look. Zhou Wen thought about it but was without any clues.

Just as Zhou Lingfeng had said, phones were something that were made in the last few decades. It was impossible for them to be antiques. Even if they were antiques, they couldn’t possess any mystical power.

“Damn it. I forgot to ask dad if he had offended anyone.” Zhou Wen was planning on calling again, but after some thought, he decided against it.

Since An Jing was gone and hadn’t really done anything to him, there was no point in raising it now the matter was already over.

Taking out the mysterious phone, he opened the Ant Nest app and once again started his grinding.

The ants were killed by the blood-colored avatar as his in-game character behaved like him. Zhou Wen received all the experiences and lessons learned from combat.

Now, Zhou Wen was getting more experienced at killing Vigor Ants. He lasted much longer and could now kill four to five hundred Vigor Ants with just one life. In the past, he would usually succumb after killing about a hundred.

Unfortunately, his luck today was nothing to speak of. Two Strength Crystals and a Constitution Crystal dropped. Furthermore, they were low in value and could only be used for energy replenishment. He wasn’t able to upgrade himself directly with them.

As he was getting pumped from the killing, he suddenly saw a red Mutated Vigor Ant appear. Delighted, he controlled the blood-colored avatar to rush over.

Before he had mastered Vigor Divine Fist, killing Mutated Vigor Ants was somewhat difficult, but this time, he

delivered one Vigor Divine Fist immediately, blasting its head apart. Following that, he threw out another punch to blast its body apart.

Ding!

A crisp sound was heard as a dimensional crystal dropped. Unfortunately, there was only one.

“Killed Mutated Vigor Ant. Discovered Constitution Crystal.”

Zhou Wen took a careful look and saw that it had a value of 9, delighting him.

His Constitution was at 8, and with this Constitution Crystal, he could improve once again.

Constitution involved a person’s resilience and endurance. Only with high Constitution could someone fight prolonged battles without becoming exhausted. One would also be able to better withstand blows. The Ascetic Meditation he cultivated in mainly strengthened his Constitution and Strength.

Picking up the Constitution Crystal with the blood-colored avatar, a strange force was transmitted from the phone, instantly spreading across Zhou Wen’s body. It made every cell in him seem to come to life.

As he watched his in-game Constitution change to 9, Zhou Wen felt his body become significantly tougher. When ordinary Vigor Ants bit at his blood-colored avatar, the amount of health he lost was much less.

Zhou Wen continued grinding and discovered that such Mutant Vigor Ants occasionally appeared in the nest, but its

spawning spot was random. Furthermore, they didn’t always drop dimensional crystals.

Later, Zhou Wen encountered two Mutated Vigor Ants again, but nothing dropped.

Time quickly passed amidst his grinding. Nothing changed. He slept through his classes and gamed after classes. Only during cultivation classes did he hone his teamwork with Fang Ruoxi and company.

However, over the past few days, Zhou Wen often felt that Yu Qiubai looked at him strangely. The latter was often smiling at him with narrowed eyes, creeping him out.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 10 - Companion Egg

Chapter 10: Companion Egg

Translator: CKtalon **Editor:** CKtalon

Tian Xiangdong was training his fist techniques on the field, but from time to time, he would sneak a glance at Zhou Wen who was under a tree. He had been training for nearly an hour while Zhou Wen had spent the same amount of time gaming on the phone.

“It’s really exasperating to compare. We spend so much effort training, but that fellow just games.” Tian Xiangdong felt more depressed the more he looked.

After the past few days of training, Tian Xiangdong had learned something. The reason Zhou Wen was considered the best genius in Guide High School wasn’t solely because of his cultivation talent.

Tian Xiangdong had originally thought that cultivation akin to sailing against a current was suitable for all humans since humans weren’t machines. It was very easy to regress if one didn’t train daily.

It was especially so when putting theory into practice in actual combat. Some level of deviation would affect the timing of opportunities and distance placement.

But Zhou Wen was different. As long as he learned something, regardless of whether he trained or not, he appeared very skilled and natural when actually putting it to practice.

Over the past few days, Zhou Wen would join them when the quartet trained together. But when it was time for individual

training, Zhou Wen would run to the side to game.

If it wasn't because Zhou Wen's performance was impeccable when cooperating with the rest and, in fact, was the most outstanding one among the four, Tian Xiangdong might have taken on a teacher's responsibility to teach the former a good lesson, inculcating in him the importance of daily practice and improvement.

But now, all Tian Xiangdong could do was sneak glances at Zhou Wen sitting there gaming while he had to engage in strenuous training.

"Where are you looking at? Focus. Your actions aren't right," Li Zhi said as he walked over.

Tian Xiangdong glanced at Zhou Wen who was just gaming and said in envy, "How nice it would be if I had talent like Zhou Wen. Cultivation is so miserable. Who doesn't want to just game daily?"

Li Zhi said with a laugh, "Do you think Zhou Wen is really just gaming all day?"

"Isn't that so? He has so much fun gaming daily. It's obvious for us all to see," Tian Xiangdong said.

Li Zhi shook his head and said, "We can only see him when he's in school. We have no idea what he does after school."

"Are you telling me that he's cultivating hard at home after school?" Tian Xiangdong understood what Li Zhi was getting at.

"There's no free lunch in the world. A person like Zhou Wen might appear harmless as though he cares about nothing, but deep down in his bones, he's extremely prideful. He

suffered such a terrible defeat under An Jing’s hands, and although there might be extenuating circumstances for his defeat, with his character, he probably couldn’t accept it. He must have worked very hard at cultivation. This can be seen from how adept he is in actual combat. He’s definitely just putting on a farce that he’s decadent and engrossed in gaming,” Li Zhi said with a severe countenance.

“Then why does he act so decadent in school? There’s no need for him to do so. Isn’t it better to spend time gaming than on cultivation?” Tian Xiangdong was doubtful.

Li Zhi shot a glance at Zhou Wen and said, “I believe that he suffered quite a psychological setback when he was first defeated by An Jing, causing people to mistake him for wallowing in self-misery.”

“But that doesn’t explain why he games in school?” Tian Xiangdong was still puzzled.

“Think about it. If everyone believes you to be trash, and you end up scoring shockingly well on the college-entrance exams, taking first place in the city, wouldn’t it feel awesome to look back at the naysayers with a beaming look of success?” Li Zhi said.

“Holy sh*t, Zhou Wen has such nefarious thoughts? That scumbag…” Tian Xiangdong instantly came to a realization as he nearly exclaimed. Thankfully, Li Zhi cupped his mouth in time.

Zhou Wen obviously wasn’t as Tian Xiangdong imagined. Gaming similarly allowed him to grow stronger. Furthermore, the in-game character was equivalent to another him. When the in-game character was in combat, he would acquire the experience and skill familiarity from combat; therefore, he had no need to train.

“Mutated Vigor Ant!” Zhou Wen was grinding happily when he saw a blood-red Vigor Ant appear.

Over the past few days, he had killed more than ten Mutated Vigor Ants, but the outcome wasn’t anything desirable.

Apart from the first Mutated Vigor Ant dropping two dimensional crystals, the subsequent ones dropped dimensional crystals at a much lower rate. Their qualities were also worse.

Ignoring the Primordial Energy Skill Crystal, even dimensional crystals with a value of 9 were rare. They didn’t appear even after about ten Mutated Vigor Ants were killed.

Now, Zhou Wen wasn’t as excited as before when he saw Mutated Vigor Ants. He very calmly controlled the blood-colored avatar to proceed forward and deliver two Vigor Divine Fist strikes to kill it.

Ding!

He heard a familiar chime. Something had dropped this time.

Zhou Wen wasn’t too excited. Even if a dimensional crystal dropped, it was useless even if it was valued at 7 or 8, unless they were Speed Crystals. They could only replenish his energy expenditure.

However, when Zhou Wen identified the item that dropped, he was slightly taken aback. It was because the word “Crystal” wasn’t in the name of the item.

“Killed Mutated Vigor Ant. Discovered Companion Egg.”

A game notice popped up at the bottom left of the screen. It left Zhou Wen surprised and delighted.

Having a Companion Egg drop meant that he had a chance of possessing a Companion Beast. But based on what he knew, it was very rare for Companion Beasts to appear at the Mortal stage. One could usually only have one after reaching the Legendary stage.

It could be said that Companion Beasts were a manifestation of one’s strength and status. Humans that would take their Companion Beasts on the streets were basically experts at the Legendary stage or higher. They were respected and envied by others.

The reason people at the Mortal stage lacked Companion Beasts was that Mortal stage dimensional creatures almost never dropped Companion Beasts. Even Legendary stage dimensional creatures had a relatively low probability of dropping one. Furthermore, Legendary stage Companion Eggs required one to provide Legendary stage Primordial Energy to incubate it. Therefore, even if Mortal stage humans obtained a Companion Egg, they had no means to incubate it.

Companion Beasts that hatched after incubation would live and die with their masters. It was very difficult for them to be transferred. If a forceful transfer was made, an extremely huge price needed to be paid. The typical person had no way of achieving that.

In a tiny city like Guide City, Zhou Wen had never seen a human at the Mortal stage have a Companion Beast.

The Companion Egg was about the size of the fist of the blood-colored avatar. It was completely milky-white and

translucent. It was oval in shape and inside some red lights were flickering. It looked mysterious and beautiful.

Zhou Wen eagerly made the blood-colored avatar pick up the Companion Egg. The moment it made contact, Zhou Wen felt a jolt through his body. As though extracted by a needle, his Primordial Energy instantly flowed towards the phone.

And in-game, the blood-colored avatar’s Primordial Energy instantly went from 9 to 0.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 11 - Mutated Vigor Ant

Chapter 11: Mutated Vigor Ant

Translator: CKtalon **Editor:** CKtalon

Zhou Wen felt exhausted as though he had been sucked dry. The color in his face instantly drained as beads of sweat oozed out of his forehead.

In-game, the Companion Egg's red stream of light brightened after it absorbed the Primordial Energy, dyeing the entire Companion Egg red, making it look like a blood crystal.

Crack!

It cracked open and a blood-colored Vigor Ant's light projection flashed and entered the blood-colored avatar's body.

At this moment, Zhou Wen felt an odd force surge into his body. It was as though the force had a life of its own. Although it was indescribable, it was transmitting information to Zhou Wen in a magical manner.

"Pledge my life to follow you… Pledge my life to follow you… Pledge my life to follow you…"

As the voices sounded in Zhou Wen's mind, the force in him gathered towards the back of his left hand. Slowly it formed a blood-colored ant symbol like a tattoo made from blood.

Zhou Wen subconsciously pulled his sleeves down and shrank his left hand in to prevent others from seeing the ant symbol on the back of it.

Companion Beasts had an extremely mystical existence. They were like parasites that live on humans, living and dying with their masters.

Zhou Wen took a look at the in-game information. Indeed, there was an additional entry of Mutated Vigor Ant at Companion Beast. Then, he took another look at the Mutated Vigor Ant’s stats.

Mutated Vigor Ant: Mortal

Strength: 9

Speed: 5

Constitution: 9

Primordial Energy: 9

Talent Skill: Vigor Divine Fist (Rank 9)

Companion Form: Boxing Glove

—

Zhou Wen was delighted seeing this. A Mutated Vigor Ant’s stats could match a top Mortal stage human and it had a Rank 9 Vigor Divine Fist. If he summoned it out, it was equivalent to having another hatchet man as strong as him. It could even be more ferocious than Zhou Wen since his Vigor Divine Fist was Rank 7 while it was at Rank 9.

Zhou Wen was eager to immediately summon the Mutated Vigor Ant to see what it looked like in real life, since all he saw in-game was a Mutated Vigor Ant drawn in a cartoon style. He had no idea what it really looked like.

However, with him being in school, Zhou Wen could only resist his desire.

A Mortal stage Companion Beast would probably attract plenty of attention if he summoned it in school. Furthermore, Zhou Wen didn’t have any good explanation for the Mutated Vigor Ant’s origins.

Tian Xiangdong couldn’t help but sneakily size up Zhou Wen. Upon seeing him, he said in a depressed tone, “Look at Zhou Wen. He’s gaming until he’s pale and breaking out into a cold sweat. He looks so frail. If I hadn’t seen his Strength and Primordial Energy Skill with my own eyes, I would really think that he was a sickly fellow.”

Little did he know that the reason for Zhou Wen’s sickly look was because he had been using his blood to revive himself in-game over the past month. Although one drop of blood each time wasn’t a lot, the numerous times he did so still caused him to lose a shocking amount of blood. This made Zhou Wen look somewhat pale and weak as though he was malnourished or suffering from anemia.

This was also one of the reasons why Yu Qiubai and the others believed that he was being decadent. That pale face was like a perfect example of someone wallowing in self-misery.

After returning home from school, Zhou Wen drew the curtains. Only then did he summon the Mutated Vigor Ant in his living room.

The symbol on the back of his hand burst out in a resplendent sanguine light. The symbol’s blood color seemed to come to life as it turned into a stream of blood that flowed over his palm and soon enveloped it within, turning it into a boxing glove that was neither gold or jade.

On the back of the boxing glove was the symbol of a Vigor Ant.

Zhou Wen looked at the boxing glove on his left hand. He felt an explosive force fill his left fist as though he could blast apart a tank if he threw it out.

Indeed, it's just like the livestreams on the Internet. Companion Beasts provide an augmentation effect in a companion state. A Vigor Ant augments Strength, right? Unable to test the augmented effects of the boxing glove at home, Zhou Wen could only put it away and switch to summoning the Mutated Vigor Ant.

As the Mutated Vigor Ant symbol on the back of his hand shimmered, a strange blood-colored projection appeared in front of him. The projection gradually materialized, turning into a blood-colored ant the size of a racehorse.

A Mutated Vigor Ant in real life was in no way as adorable as the cartoon version in-game. Its blood-red carapace appeared to be cast from metal. Its physical contours seemed to contain infinite explosive strength. Its long, slender ant legs were like saws. The feelers on its head looked like resilient steel pieces.

Ignoring being pierced by its leg, just being slammed by its body would probably result in fractures and debilitation.

It left a strong impact on him when he observed it up close. It had a dangerous beauty that looked somewhat demonic. While it left one shuddering in fear, it also prompted one to subdue it.

The game's depiction really can't be counted on. Such a ferocious killing machine actually looks so cute in-

game. Zhou Wen swung himself onto the back of the Mutated Vigor Ant and made it circle the living room.

Unfortunately, the living room was too small, making it difficult for the Mutated Vigor Ant to turn around. He didn't experience much of a thrill as a result.

I'll try riding you out when I next have a chance. Unless necessary, Zhou Wen didn't plan on letting others know of the existence of the Mutated Vigor Ant.

Although Mortal stage Companion Beasts were rare, they were much weaker than Legendary stage Companion Beasts. It was pointless showing it off.

However, the dropping of the Companion Egg made Zhou Wen more diligent. He continued striving hard with the phone, hoping to see what other drops he could get from the Ant Nest.

With the college entrance exams approaching, Zhou Wen went into school earlier, hoping to sleep in class. The moment he reached the school's entrance, he saw Tian Xiangdong standing there with an odd expression.

Seeing Zhou Wen walk over, Tian Xiangdong hurriedly came forward, wearing an odd look on his face. He gritted his teeth and said, "Zhou Wen, I'm sorry. My friend invited me to join his team. I can't be in the same team as you."

With that said, Tian Xiangdong didn't wait for him to say another word before running off.

Zhou Wen was slightly taken aback, unsure what was wrong with the fellow. The test was about to begin, yet here he was switching teams.

I wonder if Fang Ruoxi has any backup plans for Tian Xiangdong quitting the team. It's not easy to find another teammate this late. Zhou Wen walked into the school as he thought about the matter only to find Li Zhi standing in front of him.

"Li Zhi, do you know about Tian Xiangdong quitting the team?" Zhou Wen asked.

Li Zhi was taken aback before he looked at him with an odd expression. "I'm sorry. For some reason, I can't take the combat test with you either."

Zhou Wen looked at Li Zhi and felt an ominous feeling rise in him.

"Why?" Zhou Wen looked at Li Zhi and asked.

"Don't ask. It's my bad." Li Zhi wore a look of guilt and bowed before quickly walking away.

When Zhou Wen saw Fang Ruoxi, he could tell from the look on her face what she was about to say.

"I'm sorry, Zhou Wen. I can't take the combat test with you." Fang Ruoxi came in front of him and remained silent for a long while before speaking.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 12 - The Influence of One Sentence

Chapter 12: The Influence of One Sentence

Translator: CKtalon **Editor:** CKtalon

“Why?” Zhou Wen stared into Fang Ruoxi’s eyes and asked.

Fang Ruoxi’s gaze dodged his, unwilling for their eyes to meet. She shook her head slightly and said, “Don’t ask. In short, it’s my fault.”

Zhou Wen smiled and reached out to press onto Fang Ruoxi’s head. He ruffled her hair and said, “I should be the one apologizing. Someone is out to get me; thus putting you, Tian Xiangdong, and Li Zhi in a difficult position. Now that there’s still time, get another teammate. Make sure to do well, or I’ll feel uneasy. Also, help me apologize to Tian Xiangdong and Li Zhi.”

Fang Ruoxi stared at Zhou Wen blankly. Her face wore a complicated expression. It was a lost, guilty, confused look with a hint of abnormality.

“Alright, move along. I need to work hard as well.” Zhou Wen retracted his palm as he left with a smile.

Fang Ruoxi stood there watching his back and after he had walked quite a distance away, she said with her body trembling, “Zhou Wen, I’ve no idea who you offended, but that person wields great power. You have to be careful.”

Zhou Wen didn’t say a word. All he did was turn his head and smile at her before briskly walking away.

Zhou Wen knew that he didn’t have much time left. Li Zhi’s family was ordinary, but Tian Xiangdong belonged to one of the most powerful families in Guide City. Furthermore, Fang Ruoxi’s family was even better. Rumor had it that her father was a high official in the city and someone with plenty of power.

Someone who had the ability to influence; all three must wield extraordinary power.

Zhou Wen couldn’t figure out who he could have offended, but connecting it to An Jing’s transferring to fight him had clues left behind.

Coming to a spot devoid of anyone else, Zhou Wen took out his phone, thinking of asking his father if he had offended anyone.

However, there was only the voice message that the phone was not in service. He didn’t know what Zhou Lingfeng was up to for him to not even switch on his phone in the day.

After hanging up, Zhou Wen contemplated his subsequent plans.

The most important goal now is to find three students who are willing to join me in the combat test. Zhou Wen frowned in thought.

The combat test was different from the other subjects in the college entrance exam. As it was held in the dimensional zone and although humans had already obtained control over the dimensional zones, reducing the dangers involved, there were still a number of casualties from the yearly test. Therefore, the combat test needed to be voluntary and the team formed freely.

Zhou Wen didn’t know what method of testing the League government would choose for the test. Every year, the result of casualties would result in a massive debate, but the combat test still continued every year. There weren’t any signs of the League changing the situation.

Zhou Wen didn’t mind danger. With his present strength, even if he were to join the combat test alone, he was still bound to receive stellar results.

However, it was a rule by the League government. It required four students from the same school to participate. Therefore, before the application deadline, he needed to find three students who were willing to form a team with him.

I’m still a few days away from the college entrance exam. The students who are willing to take the combat test probably already have their own teams. How am I to find people to form a team? Zhou Wen was rather vexed.

In the beginning, all he wanted was to apply to a reputable school and find a stable job. Then, he could game in peace, but someone didn’t seem willing to give him his peace. They were bent on messing things up.

“Zhou Wen, follow me.” Just as Zhou Wen reached the classroom, Yu Qiubai called out to him.

He had a nasty expression as he took Zhou Wen back to his office. After closing the door, he looked at him and with a grave expression, asked, “Zhou Wen, do you know Overseer An?”

“Who is he?” Zhou Wen asked blankly.

“Overseer An is an honorific title that also includes his rank. His real name is An Tianzuo. Do you really not know him?”

Yu Qiubai asked Zhou Wen again with glaring eyes.

“No.” Zhou Wen shook his head firmly.

Noticing that Zhou Wen didn’t seem to be hiding anything, Yu Qiubai revealed a look of puzzlement. “That’s strange. If you do not know Overseer An, why did he criticize a high schooler like you when he came to inspect Guide City?”

“What kind of background does An Tianzuo have?” Zhou Wen got a rough idea about the reason Fang Rouxi and the rest had quit the team. It was likely to do with An Tianzuo.

Yu Qiubai wore a bitter smile. “I’m only a teacher. I have no chance of coming close to a figure like that. I’ve only heard the principal mention a person like that. Earth’s League is split into four districts—north, south, east, and west, and Guide City is just a tiny city in East District. Although Overseer An Tianzuo is young, he comes from an illustrious family. In his twenties, he enjoys a high rank and is a high official in the East District’s military. He wields plenty of power and is an impressive figure.”

“Sir, are you implying that An Tianzuo is targeting me?” Zhou Wen asked with a frown.

“Perhaps not, but he said one sentence criticizing you. However, the people who were trying to be cozy with him are free to think and do many things,” Yu Qiubai said helplessly.

“As a high official, doesn’t he know that a mere sentence is enough to destroy the future of a high schooler?” Zhou Wen said coldly. “Could this Overseer An be related to An Jing?”

“From the looks of it, probably. As for what the exact relationship is, I’ve no idea either.” Yu Qiubai thought for a

moment and said, “We can figure this out later. It’s imperative we find you a team to participate in the combat test. The day after tomorrow is the deadline. We don’t have time to spare.”

Zhou Wen said helplessly, “At this point in time, the students who are willing to take the combat test already have their teams. How am I to find others? Besides, even if I found one, can’t the dismantling of my team happen a second time?”

“Therefore, the teammates you will be finding this time must not be ordinary students.” Yu Qiubai appeared to already have a plan.

“Not ordinary students?” Zhou Wen was slightly taken aback, confused as to what Yu Qiubai was getting at.

Yu Qiubai pondered for a moment and said, “The combat test requires four students to freely form a team. This rule has a huge loophole, but the League has insisted on keeping it without changing it for decades. Under such rules, many students who aren’t too strong but have extremely powerful teammates have obtained results that don’t match their ability.”

After a pause, Yu Qiubai continued, “Our school has a student named Li Xuan. If you are willing to form a team with him, and as long as he’s willing, I doubt anyone will make it difficult for you. However, you have to ensure that he receives good results in exchange. Furthermore, he needs to be the one doing the best on the team.”

“Are you telling me I’ll be carrying Li Xuan?” Zhou Wen wasn’t a fool, so he naturally understood what Yu Qiubai was getting at.

“Under normal circumstances, you naturally wouldn’t have to do so. But in the present circumstances, although you won’t get first in the team, you will still receive quite remarkable results. You just won’t be first. This will be much better than not being able to participate at all.”

Zhou Wen wasn’t a stubborn person. Without any hesitation, he said, “Sir, I’ll be troubling you to help me then. However, does our school really have a student named Li Xuan?”

If Guide High School really had a student with such a striking background, there was no reason for him not to know.

“Although Li Xuan is a student at our school, he has never come to school except on matriculation day. It’s normal that you don’t know him. Even amongst the teachers, few of them know of him,” Yu Qiubai said with a smile. “In short, let’s get over this obstacle first. You can leave any considerations to the future.”

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 13 - Step-Siblings

Chapter 13: Step-Siblings

Translator: CKtalon **Editor:** CKtalon

After leaving Yu Qiubai's office, Zhou Wen took out his phone and tried to call his dad, Zhou Lingfeng. No matter how he thought about it, it was impossible for him to offend a figure like An Tianzuo.

For An Tianzuo to know him, a high schooler from a tiny city, and then criticize him by name was truly inexplicable.

This time, the phone call connected as Zhou Lingfeng's voice sounded. "Son, missing daddy so soon?"

Zhou Wen was already used to Zhou Lingfeng's character. Unmoved, he directly asked, "Dad, do you know a person named An Tianzuo?"

"Tianzuo? Of course." Upon saying that, Zhou Lingfeng exclaimed in surprise. "Hey, how do you know that Tianzuo is your elder brother? I don't think I've introduced the two of you."

"My elder brother?" Zhou Wen was left somewhat stunned.

"That's right. Tianzuo is Little Lan's son. I married Little Lan, so he's naturally your stepbrother. By the way, you also have a stepsister named An Jing…" He had slipped effortlessly into addressing his fiancée by an affectionate diminutive.

Zhou Wen didn't manage to hear the rest of what Zhou Lingfeng had to say. It was because he was so shocked. The development had exceeded his imagination. Zhou Lingfeng had actually married such a woman.

“Dad, how’s your relationship with An Tianzuo?” Zhou Wen tried probing.

“Great. Tianzuo and Little Jing honor me greatly. We have a very good relationship,” Zhou Lingfeng answered without much thought.

Zhou Wen understood his father’s character. It was unlikely that he was lying. However, he couldn’t help but feel bitter deep down. If An Tianzuo and An Jing really have a good relationship with Zhou Lingfeng, why would they be treating me this way? Could it be that they aren’t agreeable to dad’s marriage with Ouyang Lan?”

Zhou Wen could sense Zhou Lingfeng’s good mood and how happy he was about his impending wedding. He didn’t wish to affect Zhou Lingfeng’s wedding because of his matters, much less be a burden on him.

If An Tianzuo and An Jing had treated him that way because they didn’t want Zhou Lingfeng to marry Ouyang Lan, he didn’t want his problems to affect Zhou Lingfeng’s wedding. Otherwise, he would fall into their plans.

Although he hadn’t met An Tianzuo before, nor did he know what motives An Tianzuo had, Zhou Wen had a terrible impression of him.

Regardless of how powerful the An family is, it has nothing to do with me. I have no plans on benefiting myself through the An family. This family is really going too far. Although Zhou Wen now knew the underlying reasons, it was meaningless.

It wasn’t as if he could tell others that An Tianzu was pissed off because his dad had hit on her mom, thus also making him a sore sight to An Tianzuo, right?

Not only couldn’t he say it, but even if he said it out loud, it wasn’t going to change the situation he was in.

An Jing was able to defeat me with one strike. An Tianzuo’s one sentence nearly made me lose the qualification to take the combat test. At the end of the day, it’s because I’m too weak. I can only be bullied when I lack strength. If I were an Epic stage expert, would they dare do this to me? Zhou Wen wasn’t someone to bemoan his fate. He quickly put the matter aside and focused on grinding on the mysterious phone.

Guide High School’s former principal once commended Zhou Wen for being the most focused person he had ever met.

Focused sounded like a very ordinary commendation, but to truly be focused was an insurmountable feat.

Humans weren’t saints. They had all kinds of desires and emotions that made them prone to enticement and disturbance. Even gods were no exception. Buddha suffered the temptation of Mara the demon, so what chance did mere mortals have?

Many people claim studying to be difficult, but that was because they were unable to fully focus on their studies, nor did they have the ability to maintain that focused state.

However, Zhou Wen was different. No matter what he did or no matter what the environment was, it was very easy for him to enter a focused state as he put a hundred percent into it. It was very difficult for him to be influenced by external factors; thus, the reason the former principal had made such a remark about Zhou Wen.

In-game, Zhou Wen summoned his Companion Beast, the Mutated Vigor Ant. Although it also had 9 for Constitution,

this fellow’s carapace was hard and its defense was much stronger than Zhou Wen.

The blood-colored avatar rode on the Mutated Vigor Ant, storming through the Ant Nest. Even a horde of Vigor Ants besieging him was no longer a worry.

When the Mutated Vigor Ant struck with its front pincers, it killed ordinary Vigor Ants with one strike. With its hard carapace, it remained invincible amongst the hordes.

“If only I had a spear.” Zhou Wen discovered that by riding on the Mutated Vigor Ant’s back, the blood-colored avatar could hardly hit the Vigor Ants around it due to the distance. It had to jump off the Mutated Vigor Ant’s back and fight alongside it.

Ever since he had obtained the mysterious crystal, Zhou Wen had never had such a good time grinding. The man and ant basically wiped out everything in their path as they stormed through the map. Whenever they met Mutated Vigor Ants, they could quickly kill them with their combined forces.

In the past, Zhou Wen was only able to grind in the opening area, dying before he could reach deeper. Now, he was able to storm all the way in, quickly allowing him to enter areas he had never entered before.

With so many Vigor Ants killed, two dimensional crystals dropped, but they were of very low values. Zhou Wen only replenished some of his energy after absorbing them.

Ding!

After killing another Mutated Vigor Ant, Zhou Wen heard a familiar sound. On careful look, he was delighted. This time,

it was a dimensional crystal—a Vigor Ant Crystal at Rank 9.

Zhou Wen got the blood-colored avatar to pick it up, instantly feeling a jolt of electricity surge into his body as it blasted through his circulation.

His Vigor Divine Fist instantly rose from Rank 7 to Rank 9.

His Vigor Divine Fist might raise once again at Rank 9. However, the amount of Primordial Energy drained increased as well. Each usage expended 5 Primordial Energy. With only 9 Primordial Energy points, he was unable to use Vigor Divine Fist twice in short periods of time.

With this new addition, Zhou Wen lost himself to grinding. The man and ant slaughtered through the Ant Nest, leaving a wake of destruction as they forged deep into the nest.

The Ant Nest was like a huge underground maze. After nearly two hours of killing, he finally saw its end. The cave ahead seemed to become broader as the passageway became wide as though he was entering a large warehouse.

As he was storming through the horde of ants, he suddenly saw a silver glimmer of light. All Zhou Wen saw was a strange ant with silver wings sweep above the blood-colored avatar, and the next second, the latter’s head flew into midair. The game screen then went black.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 14 - Li Xuan

Chapter 14: Li Xuan

Translator: CKtalon **Editor:** CKtalon

A silver ant that can fly. Could it be a Legendary stage dimensional creature? Zhou Wen thought.

He had planned on reviving the blood-colored avatar and heading for the area where the silver flying ant had appeared, but with noon almost approaching, Zhou Wen could only put it on hold.

Although Yu Qiubai had tacitly allowed him to skip classes, he had arranged for Zhou Wen and Li Xuan to meet at noon. Therefore, Zhou Wen needed to make the trip.

Zhou Wen originally imagined that they would meet in school, but to his surprise, Yu Qiubai drove Zhou Wen out of school after morning classes and arrived at a private club east of the city.

“Li Xuan is quite someone with an ostentatious character, but he’s not a bad person. You are only here for the test, so don’t take anything else to heart.” Before entering the club, Yu Qiubai exhorted Zhou Wen with deep underlying tones.

“Sir, don’t worry. I know what I should do,” Zhou Wen said with a nod.

Although Zhou Wen was already mentally prepared, he was still somewhat surprised when he saw Li Xuan inside a luxurious private room.

A teenager who looked about sixteen was sitting on a huge sofa. His shirt was untidy and frivolous and around him were

beauties.

“Lao Yu, come and have a drink,” the teenager raised his glass of alcohol when he saw Yu Qiubai, slipping effortlessly into addressing him by an affectionate diminutive.

“There’s no need for that. I still have classes this afternoon.” Yu Qiubai seemed accustomed to this. As though not noticing the sexy ladies, he pointed to Zhou Wen and introduced, “Li Xuan, this is the Zhou Wen I mentioned before. He’s very capable and should be of some help for your test.”

“Lao Yu, don’t worry. On your account, I’ll let him join me. Getting a pretty good result won’t be a problem,” Li Xuan downed his alcohol and said indifferently.

“Hearing you say that puts me at ease. I still have lessons so I’ll be heading back to school. Have a discussion with Zhou Wen about the combat test,” Yu Qiubai said.

“Lao Yu, are you really not going to have any drinks? The alcohol and women here are really good.” Li Xuan said with a chuckle.

“Thanks for the offer. I still have classes, so I’ll be heading back.” Yu Qiubai waved his hand and said to Zhou Wen, “Leave the application to me. Stay here for the next few days to familiarize yourself with Li Xuan and the rest. It will be good for you during the combat test.”

“Thank you, Sir.” Zhou Wen was rather moved.

Yu Qiubai had no ties with him; yet, he was helping him at the risk of offending An Tianzuo. It left him feeling very grateful.

“By getting into a reputable school and having a decent future is a way to not let me and the former principal down.” Yu Qiubai patted Zhou Wen on the shoulder and said with a smile, “Alright, I’ll be heading back. Have a good discussion with Li Xuan about the details.”

After Yu Qiubai left, Zhou Wen looked at Li Xuan who was reveling amidst the embraces of the beauties. He asked, “Do we get the other two teammates here and do some teamwork training before the test begins?”

Li Xuan narrowed his eyes and said to Zhou Wen, “Zhou Wen, right? I’ve heard of you, the number one genius in Guide High School.”

“Just some random rumors. Don’t treat it seriously,” Zhou Wen said.

“That’s right. In a small city like Guide City, how can there be a real genius? If you were really a genius, you wouldn’t have been defeated by An Jing’s single strike,” Li Xuan said languidly. “There’s no need for any teamwork practice. I’m allowing you to join my team solely because of Lao Yu. When the time comes, make sure you follow obediently behind us and not give us trouble.”

“That works,” Zhou Wen said, unfazed.

“Do you drink? If you can finish this bottle, I’ll let you choose from them.” Li Xuan placed a bottle of alcohol in front of Zhou Wen.

“I don’t drink.” Zhou Wen shook his head.

“Up to you.” Li Xuan found Zhou Wen boring and ignored him as he began having fun himself.

Zhou Wen found a corner to sit down and began gaming on his phone, continuing his grinding fest.

He wasn't interested in staying here, but since Yu Qiubai had requested he stay behind, he didn't think it was right to leave. Therefore, he just stayed behind to game.

Seeing Zhou Wen sitting motionless in the corner gaming, Li Xuan had a feeling of contempt for him. *To wallow in self-misery just because of a little setback. For this good-for-nothing, Lao Yu had to beg me. It wasn't worth it.*

Suddenly, Li Xuan's heart stirred. He whispered to a sexy girl beside him.

"You're naughty." The girl jokingly snapped back as she walked towards Zhou Wen with her hips swaying.

Zhou Wen was busy grinding, eager to rush back to where the Silver-Winged Flying Ant was. He wanted to know what level the dimensional creature was.

Just as he was getting into it, he suddenly felt a softness touching his arm. Then, a sweet voice rang in his ear. "Hey Handsome, what's this game? Is it fun?"

"Yes." Zhou Wen continued grinding without looking up. After all, even if they saw the game, the cartoon-styled ants and the interface made it difficult for one to connect it to the dangerous dimensional zones.

Besides, Zhou Wen had never heard of a dimensional zone that was an ant nest.

When the girl saw Zhou Wen ignoring her, she subconsciously bit her lip. Then, she reached out to caress his cheek. She slightly used some force as she turned Zhou

Wen’s head towards her as she leaned into his ear and breathed out. “What’s so fun about the game? Why not play a game with me?”

As Li Xuan drank, he watched Zhou Wen’s reaction with piqued interest. He thought to himself, *Zhou Wen is such a gaming addict. He probably has never touched a woman’s body, much less a woman as coquettish as Xiaoya. Will he end up with a nose bleed as a result?*

Xiaoya had only thought of turning Zhou Wen’s face slightly. Under such situations, men would automatically look at her, but despite doing so, Zhou Wen’s face was unmovable, like a rock. His eyes were still peeled to the phone screen.

A little peeved, Xiaoya exerted some strength, and forcibly turned Zhou Wen’s head. As she used too much strength, Zhou Wen’s cheeks were a little deformed from the squishing.

Zhou Wen was grinding and was unwilling to be unfocused. The blood-colored avatar was amidst a horde of Vigor Ants, so any moment of distraction led to possible death—the loss of one drop of blood.

Over the past month, Zhou Wen had been using his blood to game. With so much blood being expended, he was beginning to suffer from anemia; therefore, he didn’t even wish to lose one drop.

Although Zhou Wen was facing her because of her twisting, Xiaoya realized that his eyes were still diagonally peeled to his phone screen. Enraged, she reached out her other hand and held his face with both hands. She turned his head even more, making Zhou Wen have no choice but to look at her. Then, she revealed a mesmerizing smile and said sweetly, “Stop gaming. Let’s have some drinks, alright?”

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 15 - Don't Disturb My Gaming

Chapter 15: Don’t Disturb My Gaming

Translator: CKtalon **Editor:** CKtalon

When Zhou Wen’s gaze was forced away from the phone screen, he immediately frowned.

He had just seen a Mutated Vigor Ant rush over and if he didn’t control his blood-colored avatar to take on the battle, it could easily lead to a “GAME OVER.”

Without having the luxury of time to think, Zhou Wen only wished to shift his gaze back to his phone. He instantly extended his hand and pressed it against Xiaoya’s face. With a slight nudge, he said, “Don’t disturb my gaming.”

Zhou Wen didn’t use much of his strength, but he had forgotten how substantially his Strength had increased recently. Xiaoya hadn’t cultivated at all, so her physical constitution was inferior to even the typical high schooler.

This casual push ended up pushing Xiaoya entirely backward as she plopped to the ground.

“Pfft!” Upon seeing Zhou Wen pushing Xiaoya to the ground with a look of contempt, Li Xuan spewed out a mouthful of alcohol as he choked and coughed.

The room instantly fell silent as the eight sexy girls looked at Zhou Wen as though he was a monster.

Xiaoya was half-slumped on the ground as she wore a look of disbelief. She next felt aggrieved and furious. As she got to her feet, she cursed, “Why resort to violence? Serves you right to be single!”

Zhou Wen was focused on killing the Mutated Vigor Ant and hadn’t noticed her rage. He ignored her and continued rapidly firing commands into his phone.

Upon seeing Xiaoya’s aggrieved look, Li Xuan was amused. *This punk’s quite interesting!*

Xiaoya was a headliner at this private club. Although her demeanor was inferior to the top escorts in the big cities, her figure was unparalleled. Even Li Xuan found Xiaoya excellent in everything other than her demeanor, speech, and actions. She left him rather mesmerized.

However, Zhou Wen’s look of contempt when he pushed her amused him greatly.

If it isn’t because this punk is a naturally insensitive man, there’s a high chance that he has gynophobia because of the beating he suffered under An Jing, a woman. Li Xuan thought without any ill intent.

Zhou Wen sat there gaming the entire time. Li Xuan quickly lost his interest in him and began reveling in fun again.

The entire club’s top floor had been reserved by Li Xuan. There was everything one needed. Li Xuan’s ignorance of Zhou Wen was something the latter enjoyed as well. He could keep grinding in-game.

After storming the Ant Nest for an hour, Zhou Wen once again arrived at the area he had previously spotted the Silver-Winged Flying Ant. Indeed, it had grown a pair of silver wings and its entire body was silver like the typical flying ant.

It was extremely fast and even though Zhou Wen was prepared, he wasn’t able to last long against it. Soon, he had

his chest impaled by the Silver-Winged Flying Ant as it flew across the sky.

It was extremely fast and it was very agile in midair. It was able to change trajectory like a bat, causing Zhou Wen's Vigor Divine Fist to be of no use against it. He couldn't hit it.

Although the Silver-Winged Flying Ant is powerful, it's unlikely to have reached the Legendary stage. Killing it isn't impossible, but I need to make careful plans. Zhou Wen thought.

From his observations, the Silver-Winged Flying Ant's Strength and Constitution were not weaker than that of the Mutated Vigor Ant. Furthermore, its speed was much faster than the Mutated Vigor Ant. This was also why it was so difficult to beat.

Rank 9 Vigor Divine Fist was likely capable of injuring the Silver-Winged Flying Ant, but without being able to touch it, no amount of Strength mattered.

Also, the ant horde's influence on Zhou Wen was significant. Although Zhou Wen and his Mutated Vigor Ant weren't afraid of a huge group of Vigor Ants, it severely restricted his freedom of movement, making him unable to dodge the Silver-Winged Flying Ant's attacks in the confined space.

From the looks of it, to kill it, I need to deliver the attack at the moment it approaches. However, it's not easy to grasp the opportunity. Zhou Wen entered the game again and as he stormed towards the area where the Silver-Winged Flying Ant resided, he considered how he could seize the opportunity to deliver a counterattack.

After about an hour, Zhou Wen once again arrived in front of the Silver-Winged Flying Ant. At the instant the latter

charged and appeared above the blood-colored avatar, Zhou Wen threw out Vigor Divine Fist in a bid to kill it.

However, the Silver-Winged Flying Ant's body did a bizarre twist when it was less than half a feet from Zhou Wen's fist. While dodging the Vigor Divine Fist, its blade-like claws decapitated the blood-colored avatar from the back.

Zhou Wen made repeated attempts, but all of them ended with failure. The Silver-Winged Flying Ant was just too nimble and his Vigor Divine Fist just couldn't touch it.

The only time he hit the Silver-Winged Flying Ant was when he used Inch Punch. He threw out the punch when it was extremely close to him and had successfully hit it.

However, Inch Punch wasn't augmented like a Primordial Energy Skill. It wasn't too effective when hitting the Silver-Winged Flying Ant and failed to seriously damage it.

If only Vigor Divine Fist can deliver strength just like Inch Punch. That way, I don't have to waste so much time swinging my arm. I'll then have the chance of releasing my strength instantaneously when it's in close proximity to kill it. Unfortunately, Vigor Divine Fist is an in-game technique... That's not right... The in-game character is no different from me. If I'm able to use Vigor Divine Fist like Inch Punch, I'll be able to deliver explosive strength at short distances. As such, my in-game character will also be able to do it... Realizing this, Zhou Wen put away his phone and began experimenting with how he could deliver Vigor Divine Fist using the principles of Inch Punch.

Vigor Divine Fist was a very open and showy move, a Primordial Energy Skill that delivered a critical strike. When delivering it, he had to make some huge retracting moves, somewhat different from Inch Punch. Clearly, to modify Vigor

Divine Fist’s delivery to be similar to Inch Punch’s was very difficult.

Zhou Wen made repeated attempts and although it was very difficult, he wasn’t willing to give up.

Li Xuan woke up from his nap and saw Zhou Wen throwing out punches again and again in the corner as if he was practicing punching.

He didn’t pay much notice at first, imagining that Zhou Wen was tired from gaming and was simply stretching his body. However, when he realized Zhou Wen was still punching two hours later, he couldn’t help but observe.

This is Inch Punch? But the way strength is delivered and the magnitude of the movement is too much. It’s terrible. Li Xuan lost interest after watching for a moment. Zhou Wen’s punches weren’t anything worth watching.

Two days before the college entrance exams, Zhou Wen kept trying to fuse the Vigor Divine Fist and Inch Punch together. He had a brief inkling of what was needed but was unable to fully master it.

Time quickly passed and the college entrance exams began. The first three days were ordinary high school subjects. After Yu Qiubai came with their candidate passes, Zhou Wen and Li Xuan headed for their exam centers separately and completed their own examinations.

On the fourth day, Zhou Wen came to the combat test venue and met up with Li Xuan.

The combat test was held in a dimensional zone. As every dimensional zone was different, there were some differences in the combat test across districts.

Guide City’s combat test was held in Guide Ancient City. In the dimensional storms decades ago, a dimensional rift opened, turning the area into a dimensional zone.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 16 - Downloading

Chapter 16: Downloading

Translator: CKtalon **Editor:** CKtalon

The vegetation outside the ancient city was abnormally luxuriant. The moat's banks were lined with willow trees, all more than ten meters tall. Even the normal grass on the roadside was half an adult's height.

The moat's surface was filled with lotuses the size of boats. The lotus flowers were the size of a face washbasin and they presented a strange redness as though they were dyed in blood.

Due to the influence of the dimensional zone, the nearby animals had experienced different levels of mutations. However, the mutations weren't as serious as those inside the dimensional zone.

Stationed outside the ancient city were armed soldiers with tanks patrolling the area. Without an entry pass, no one was allowed into the ancient city.

There were even surface-to-air missiles installed in the vicinity. However, Zhou Wen had never seen those missiles launch.

In fact, the threat firearms had on dimensional creatures was highly limited. Little damage would be incurred even if a nuclear bomb were to explode inside a dimensional zone. It would lead to more dimensional creatures absorbing the radioactive energies and mutating to become more terrifying.

Ordinary bullets were even more useless. When shot at dimensional creatures, they would be devoured and fuse with them.

Only bullets made from special materials could generate damage on dimensional creatures, but those materials were very rare to begin with. Making such expendable bullets was wasteful, so they were typically made into melee weapons like swords and sabers.

Firearms were not very useful against dimensional creatures, but they still dealt plenty of damage on humans. These days, the main usage of such weapons was solely to maintain order in human society.

Zhou Wen didn’t have an entry pass, but his candidate pass could be used as one. During the combat test, these passes allowed a single entry into Guide Ancient City via the north gate.

Guide Ancient City had four gates at the four directions. It wasn’t a small city, and circling the entire city didn’t even cover more than five kilometers.

However, after the dimensional storms, Guide Ancient City became a dimensional zone. The space within became several times bigger than it originally was. To date, humans had yet to completely explore the whole of it.

Entry via the different gates allowed one to encounter different dimensional creatures. The creatures encountered from the north gate were the weakest. Typically not much danger, as long as one didn’t venture too deep.

As the candidate pass only allowed four people to enter together after a verification process, Zhou Wen could only stand outside the ancient city’s gate to wait for Li Xuan and

the two other teammates who Zhou Wen had never met. Luckily there was still some time before the entrance closed.

The ancient city’s north gate was ancient and mysterious. Its bricks were mottled and worn, with many spots having signs of weathering.

However, Zhou Wen had heard of stories in which the troops had bombarded Guide Ancient City with massive amounts of ordnance for more than ten minutes. Yet, not a single tile, from the seemingly desolate ancient city, shattered.

Above the city gate was a board with the words “Guide City” written in traditional text. They had an ancient and vigorous flair with a lingering charm that went back a thousand years.

Zhou Wen’s gaze finally fell onto the strange symbol at the end of the gate’s board.

The symbol looked like a palm-sized indentation left by a baby’s palm. However, inside the mark was an engraved pattern that looked like a bulb of garlic or onion.

Guide Ancient City naturally hadn’t had such a symbol in the past. Legend had it that this strange symbol appeared after the dimensional storms, but no one knew the meaning of it. Nor did anyone know who had engraved it.

Zhou Wen was studying the symbol when he suddenly felt the phone in his pocket vibrate.

Believing that Yu Qiubai or Li Xuan was looking for him, Zhou Wen reached into his pocket to take it out. But he was left momentarily stunned.

This was because the phone inside that pocket wasn’t the phone he usually used. Instead, it was the mysterious

phone. It didn’t have any calling functionality, nor had it ever vibrated. So why would it suddenly do so now?

Seeing no one around him was looking, Zhou Wen took out the phone from his pocket and saw that the screen had automatically lit up. A camera icon was flashing on it.

Why didn’t I see this camera app in the past? What use does it have? Does it want me to take a selfie? Zhou Wen was puzzled as he tapped the camera icon.

Like an ordinary phone, it entered photography mode. However, it wasn’t taking a picture of Zhou Wen. The rear camera had been activated.

Thankfully, the ancient city didn’t restrict photography. Therefore, the soldiers didn’t approach to stop him despite seeing him taking out his phone to take a picture.

Zhou Wen raised the phone and pointed it at the vegetation beside him in an attempt to figure out the uses of the photography function.

He quickly realized that it was apparently broken. There was no way for him to press the shutter button to take the picture.

The phone still wouldn’t take a picture of the scenery despite Zhou Wen’s finger tapping the screen. There wasn’t any reaction.

What exactly is it? Zhou Wen raised his phone and waved it around. When the city gate’s tiny hand symbol appeared on screen, there was a beep. Surprisingly, the phone responded.

Zhou Wen was alarmed as he took a careful look. He realized that there was a green box that appeared on screen that locked onto the strange palm symbol above the city gate.

After three consecutive beeps, the palm symbol was zoomed in. The ancient city in the background gradually blurred and the words beneath appeared: “Loading…”

Could it be… Zhou Wen looked at his phone with the loading screen as a thought flashed across his mind. This thought gave him a fright as he found it unbelievable.

But before long, the phone proved that his guess was correct. The loading completed and the hand symbol turned into an icon that appeared on the phone’s home screen. It was right beside the Ant Nest logo, with the three words: “Ancient Imperial City.”

It’s really become a game dungeon? Zhou Wen was pleasantly surprised as he held back his excitement and tapped the Ancient Imperial City icon.

Indeed, the screen displayed the familiar loading screen of the game. After a while, the interface changed into Guide Ancient City’s north gate. Unlike reality, the door to the ancient city was already open.

Zhou Wen dripped a drop of blood on the screen which manifested into the blood-colored avatar that directly walked through the gates.

The sights that welcomed him were ancient stone pavements and antiquated old wooden buildings. Although Zhou Wen had never entered Guide Ancient City, he had seen videos of its interior on the Internet. It was identical to what he was seeing.

Before Zhou Wen could do a comparison, a ragged-clothed skeleton holding a bone club appeared on the streets. It ran straight for the blood-colored avatar.

Zhou Wen had seen this creature before in the videos. It was none other than Guide Ancient City’s dimensional creature, Skeleton Soldier.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 17 - Ancient Imperial City

Chapter 17: Ancient Imperial City

Translator: CKtalon **Editor:** CKtalon

Skeleton Soldiers were rather weak dimensional creatures. They had slow Speed, medium Strength, and weak Constitution. They had been taught in school how to deal with them. A typical high schooler who wasn't too terrible at cultivation had no trouble dealing with one or two Skeleton Soldiers.

Although Zhou Wen had never fought with a real Skeleton Soldier before, he could tell that they were much weaker than Vigor Ants. He didn't know how much Strength or Constitution it had, but its Speed was at a max of 3.

Controlling his blood-colored avatar to rush over, Zhou Wen met the Skeleton Soldier as it struck down with the club but due to its extremely slow speed, it was reduced to scattering bones by the blood-colored avatar before it could even land a hit.

Ding!

Amidst the pile of broken bones, a dimensional crystal dropped. Upon scrutiny, it was a Skeleton Soldier Crystal.

Zhou Wen was pleasantly surprised. The chance of a Primordial Energy Skill Crystal dropping was very low. To have one drop almost immediately meant he was very lucky.

Unfortunately, the Skeleton Soldier's Primordial Energy Skill is supposedly Skeleton Palm. It can only boost some Strength and its effect isn't very strong. Besides, it's typically a low Rank 1 Primordial Energy Skill. Zhou Wen

recalled the information he learned from school and felt somewhat disappointed.

Getting the blood-colored avatar to pick up the Skeleton Soldier Crystal, caused it to instantly transform into a gray stream that bored into the blood-colored avatar's body.

Zhou Wen also felt a cold aura go from his phone to his palm. Then, it circulated through his body, forming a strange Primordial Energy circulation path.

Obtained Primordial Energy Skill: Skeleton Palm (Rank 1). Expends 1 Primordial Energy.

Skeleton Palm expends 1 Primordial Energy per use. It uses much less than Vigor Divine Fist but is much weaker. It should be one of the weakest Primordial Energy Skills. Zhou Wen knew that typically, the stronger the Primordial Energy Skill, the more Primordial Energy it used. Something that only expended 1 Primordial Energy was definitely weak.

Since it wasn't convenient to test the might of Skeleton Palm, Zhou Wen made the blood-colored avatar continue walking deeper into Ancient Imperial City.

Zhou Wen didn't know why Guide Ancient City would be renamed as Ancient Imperial City in-game. Based on what he knew, Guide City was an ancient city with a long history. In ancient times, it had the names of Yingtian and Shangqiu, and its history traced back to the mythical times of the Three Sovereigns and Five Emperors.

Emperor Zhuan Xu of the Five Emperors had once set up his capital here before moving it to Diqiu. The leader of the Three Sovereigns, Suiren was born here. Likewise for Emperor Ku of the Five Emperors and his son, Xie of Shang.

A name like Emperor Ku was probably unfamiliar to the average person, but Emperor Ku was the underlying archetype in which Emperor Dijun was depicted in the classic text of mythic creatures, Classic of Mountains and Seas.

These were all myths and no one knew if they truly existed. However, after the dimensional storms, Guide Ancient City became a dimensional zone, and to date, it hadn’t been fully explored.

A few years ago, powerful humans at the Epic stage stormed deep into Guide Ancient City, never to return. From that moment forth, no one dared to venture deep into it.

Over the past few decades of evolution, the strongest human was only at the half-step Mythical stage. In fact, that only meant the peak Epic stage. The disappearance of such an expert spoke volumes of how terrifying the deep depths of the ancient city were.

Thankfully, the dimensional zones seemed to have powerful restrictions, making it difficult for the dimensional creatures to rush out of the zone’s confines. Otherwise, human society would probably be in pandemonium, and wouldn’t be as calm as it was.

Summoning the Mutated Vigor Ant, he charged deep into Ancient Imperial City with it. From time to time, Skeleton Soldiers would charge up to him only to be easily slain by him and the ant.

However, apart from the first Skeleton Soldier encounter, no other crystals dropped. The drop rates of Skeleton Soldiers were lower than Vigor Ants.

In the game, Zhou Wen tried the might of the Skeleton Palm, and unsurprisingly, it was much weaker than Vigor Divine Fist. It boosted his Strength by about 10–20%, making it significantly weaker than Tian Xiangdong's Lightning Fist.

However, there was a pro to Skeleton Palm. It had a mildness to it, and the amount of motion required when delivering it was minimized. It was agile and quick, unlike Vigor Divine Fist which required open and exaggerated actions.

Skeleton Palm is more suitable for fusing with Inch Punch. However, Skeleton Palm is too weak. Even if I fuse it, the damage against the Silver-Winged Flying Ant will be limited. As Zhou Wen was in thought, he sensed someone walking towards him.

There were quite a number of students gathering for the combat test. However, Zhou Wen had chosen a corner, so anyone who walked over was highly likely to be looking for him.

Thankfully, there weren't many Skeleton Soldiers, so the Mutated Vigor Ant was more than sufficient to handle them, making it possible for Zhou Wen to divert his attention. He looked up and took a glance.

Believing that it was Li Xuan, Zhou Wen was surprised when he identified the person. It was An Jing who he hadn't seen since she had defeated him in one move.

An Jing was a girl who didn't have the modern interpretation of beauty. She didn't have a sharp chin, double eyelids, or a high nose. She looked more like a classic beauty with a petite nose and a slight chubbiness to her face that wore a sharp, masculine air. She had feline-like eyes and her gaze was firm and forceful.

She was taller than Fang Ruoxi and was almost Zhou Wen's height. To men, a woman this tall exuded a suppressive feeling. It was especially so with An Jing's demeanor that automatically warded off strangers. Boys with slightly weaker willpower might not even dare to look her in the eye.

An Jing walked straight to Zhou Wen and, without waiting for him to say a word, she threw a USB drive at him.

"What's this?" Zhou Wen caught it and asked An Jing in puzzlement.

"Uncle Feng got me to give this to you." An Jing glanced at the phone Zhou Wen was holding and said in a seemingly mocking tone, "However, I think Uncle Feng's painstaking actions were for nothing. Anything, no matter how good it is, is a waste when given to someone who wallows in self-misery."

Before Zhou Wen could say a word, An Jing turned and walked a few steps before pausing. Without looking back, she said, "In the future, don't you say that you're from the An family. Our family does not want such a weakling like you."

With that said, An Jing walked off without turning back. Once she had left the warning zone, she left in a car with a military license plate.

Zhou Wen stared blankly as the military vehicle left. Only then did he shake his head and mutter, "I'm not from your family to begin with. Neither did I plan on rubbing off some of your family's glory. Perhaps you guys are overthinking things."

Placing the USB drive into his pocket, Zhou Wen continued grinding the Ancient Imperial City dungeon and kept killing

Skeleton Soldiers.

Even if nothing good dropped, it allowed him to familiarize himself with the environment inside Ancient Imperial City.

Although the school had provided them with the information and a map of the ancient city, the map was only limited to the vicinity around the northern city gate. On the one hand, the map wasn’t complete and on the other hand, it was to prevent the students from venturing too deep into the ancient city for fear of any mishaps.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 18 - Skeleton General

Chapter 18: Skeleton General

Translator: CKtalon **Editor:** CKtalon

If Zhou Wen didn’t have the phone or the game dungeon, he wouldn’t have ventured deep into the ancient city either. It would be risking his life for nothing and there was no need to do so.

But things were different now. He could venture deep into the game dungeon and figure out the situation inside. When he later entered the ancient city, he would naturally be familiar, reducing his risk.

It was quite similar to the information and maps given by the school. The region in the vicinity of the north gates had some Skeleton Soldiers. These Skeleton Soldiers were slightly stronger than adult men who had never cultivated. Against high schoolers who had cultivated, they were only in for a beating. Unless one courted death and charged into a horde of Skeleton Soldiers, it typically wouldn’t be too dangerous.

Without much holding him back, Zhou Wen made the blood-colored avatar ride on the Mutated Vigor Ant and storm in. Even if he encountered Skeleton Soldiers that formed a group of a dozen or so, the Mutated Vigor Ant was easily able to kill the horde. It wasn’t something Zhou Wen needed the blood-colored avatar to take action on.

Soon, Zhou Wen rushed outside of the map given by the school.

The ancient city’s interior was filled with stone-paved streets and ancient buildings. The further he ventured, the more

ancient the style of the buildings.

Zhou Wen only dared to proceed along the streets and avoided the ancient buildings that lined them. In the education curriculum, it had been repeatedly mentioned that it was best that one didn’t enter the buildings of dimensional zones. Many buildings were connected to dimensional rifts, so entry might lead to getting lost in a different dimension.

The drop rate of Skeleton Soldiers was extremely low. He had killed more than two hundred, but other than his first Skeleton Soldier, nothing else had dropped.

Zhou Wen wasn’t surprised by this. He had previously heard that Skeleton Soldiers seldom condensed dimensional crystals because of their low level.

Although Skeleton Palm was weak, it was really rare to obtain a Skeleton Palm Crystal.

While in thought, he suddenly saw a group of Skeleton Soldiers on the street up ahead. There were about twenty to thirty of them. This was the biggest horde of Skeleton Soldiers he had seen since he had stepped in.

Unlike the Skeleton Soldiers from before, this horde of Skeleton Soldiers was surrounding a skeleton horse. Riding it was a Skeleton General wielding a bone spear.

The Skeleton General on the skeleton horse was clearly taller and stronger than the typical Skeleton Soldier. It was at least one head taller. Furthermore, its skull was especially thick. It wasn’t the ordinary grayish-white color as it had an ivory sheen to it.

The armor he wore was ragged, but he wore a dark red cape over his back. Although it was somewhat old, it was complete.

The bone spear was about two meters long and its surface was rough. Its tip was sharp like a thorn and it was barbed. If one was stabbed by the spear, it would probably lead to incessant bleeding.

When Zhou Wen saw him, the Skeleton General had also seen the blood-colored avatar and Mutated Vigor Ant controlled by Zhou Wen. However, he wasn’t like the typical dimensional creature who immediately charged forward. Instead, he continued riding on his skeleton horse as though he loathed the idea of attacking. It was the horde of Skeleton Soldiers that charged forward like savage tigers and wolves.

The Mutated Vigor Ants front claws sliced like Death’s scythe and in one revolution, cleaved through the Skeleton Soldiers, killing around ten of them.

The fellow on the skeleton horse finally couldn’t put up with it and it roared into the sky, letting out a harsh, terrifying cry before charging forward.

The skeleton horse’s speed wasn’t something the typical Skeleton Soldier could compare with. It even took Zhou Wen by surprise for it was faster than the Mutated Vigor Ant and the blood-colored avatar. It swept over like a tornado in no way slower than the Silver-Winged Flying Ant.

In the blink of an eye, the skeleton horse landed in front of the Mutated Vigor Ant. Zhou Wen commanded the Mutated Vigor Ant to meet the enemy with its claws, hoping to hold back the bone spear before the blood-colored avatar leaped up to strike at the enemy’s head.

But to his surprise, the bone spear accelerated, turning into a blur in Zhou Wen's vision as though it had vanished for a moment.

By the time Zhou Wen could see again, the bone spear had penetrated the Mutated Vigor Ant's claws, stabbing straight into the blood-colored avatar's chest.

Boom!

Blood spewed out as the blood-colored avatar was thrown off the back of the Mutated Vigor Ant. The game screen instantly went black. Clearly, he had died an instant death.

That powerful? Zhou Wen felt a little delighted. Challenges were meant to be met and overcome. Killing the ordinary Skeleton Soldiers was meaningless as they didn't drop anything fancy.

Just as he was about to restart the game, he saw Li Xuan walking over with two similarly aged youths.

Zhou Wen had never met them before. They didn't appear to be students of Guide High School, and there was a high chance that they were like Li Xuan, being a student of Guide High School in name, but had never schooled there.

"When we enter the ancient city, you don't have to do a thing. Just follow by my side, leave the rest to them." Li Xuan didn't introduce Zhou Wen to the two youths. All he did was give a casual warning.

"Alright." Zhou Wen nodded in agreement. Since he could easily pass the combat test, he had no plans on stealing the limelight.

With the two youths having no intention to greet him, Zhou Wen was happy to be free of the small talk. He stood by the side as he continued gaming.

While the two youths discussed the combat test with Li Xuan, they kept assuring him, claiming that with them around, Li Xuan was definitely getting first on the Guide City combat test.

Their tone made it seem as though obtaining first in the Guide City combat test was as easy as drinking water.

“That may be so, but you have to do it well for me. Nothing must go wrong. I have to be first in the Guide City combat test at all cost,” Li Xuan said.

“Brother Xuan, rest assured. What kind of true experts can there be in a small place like Guide City? Ignoring the fact that I’ll be joining forces with Jiang Hao, just me alone would be able to guarantee that you get first,” Xu Miantu said without any concern.

Seeing Li Xuan frown slightly, Jiang Hao hurriedly said, “Brother Xuan, rest assured. We will do our best. We guarantee you that nothing will go wrong.”

“Good.” Only then did Li Xuan nod slightly.

Xu Miantu was still about to say something when he saw someone walking over.

The four turned their heads over. It was a tall beauty who easily lit up the eyes of others.

“Zhou Wen, it’s great that you can find a team,” Fang Ruoxi came in front of Zhou Wen as she said in relief.

Zhou Wen smiled and said, “That’s all thanks to Li Xuan. I’m able to join the combat test thanks to him.”

Fang Ruoxi didn’t know Li Xuan, nor did she know Xu Miantu and Jiang Hao. However, she felt a weight lift off her chest that Zhou Wen was able to participate. She said with a smile, “I thought I could still try my luck at first, but with you around, I guess first is impossible.”

Xu Miantu wasn’t too happy when he heard that. Fang Ruoxi’s words sounded as though them teaming up with Zhou Wen was them taking advantage of him.

“Babe, with Zhou Wen joining us, you can be at ease. Although he has no hopes of getting into the top three, it’s still easy to guarantee that he gets fourth thanks to the team,” Xu Miantu said to Fang Ruoxi with a grin.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 19 - Entering the Ancient City

Chapter 19: Entering the Ancient City

Translator: CKtalon **Editor:** CKtalon

Fang Ruoxi glanced at Xu Miantu before ignoring him. She continued looking at Zhou Wen and said, “Zhou Wen, what school do you plan on attending?”

“I haven’t thought about it yet,” Zhou Wen said.

Fang Ruoxi nodded and said, “That’s right. With how capable you are, you can attend any school you wish. There’s no rush. That’s good too. I’ll try my best to complete this test. I hope my results aren’t too far from yours.”

With that said, Fang Ruoxi waved her hand at Zhou Wen, turned around and left. From beginning to end, she had ignored Xu Miantu.

Xu Miantu was displeased with this treatment, but it wasn’t the right place to flare up. All he did was shoot a glance at Zhou Wen and said to Jiang Hao and Li Xuan, “People from small cities really have limited horizons. What a waste of her good looks, too bad she lacks brains and eyes.”

Jiang Hao didn’t say a word, but Li Xuan’s interest in Zhou Wen was slightly piqued. He asked Zhou Wen, “I heard that you were once Guide High School’s number one genius. From the looks of it, that’s true. That chick seems to hold you in high regard.”

“It’s just encouragement between fellow students. She’s excellent herself and no way weaker than me. Placed anywhere, she will be one of a handful of cultivation geniuses,” Zhou Wen said.

Xu Miantu could naturally tell that Zhou Wen was rebutting him. He said in disdain, “If you were really excellent, why would you need us to carry you?”

Li Xuan hadn’t informed Xu Miantu and company about Zhou Wen. All he had said was that he was helping a friend to take a student along with them for the participation of the combat test.

Zhou Wen didn’t defend himself, finding an argument with Xu Miantu beneath him.

Li Xuan cut off Xu Miantu who still hadn’t said his piece. “Enough, cut it out. It’s about time we enter. All of you are to focus.”

With Li Xuan saying so, all Xu Miantu could do was swallow the words he was about to say. He gave Zhou Wen a pissed look.

The examiners were already verifying the students’ candidacies. With four people a team, they each brought their candidature passes to a verification machine. They gathered their fingerprints, scanned their passes, and checked the items on them. Only when they were confirmed to be the candidate in question and that they hadn’t brought any item that aided in cheating, were they allowed entry into the ancient city.

Most of the students weren’t nervous. Instead, it was the family who came with them who were almost fainting while standing beyond the warning line. They watched helplessly as the students entered the ancient city, some almost having a cardiac arrest.

Zhou Wen and his team lined up to go through the inspection, passing through a secured passage, before

arriving in front of the ancient city.

The gates to the ancient city had already opened, but everything inside seemed to be a blurry mist. There was no way to discern the interior.

Guarding the ancient city’s gates, the soldiers who were armed to the teeth urged, “Stop looking and enter quickly. There are plenty of people lining up behind you.”

Zhou Wen followed Li Xuan and company to walk towards the ancient city’s gates. With the trio walking into the ancient city, he followed closely behind them. However, when they passed through the gates, he realized he couldn’t see them.

He hurriedly walked through the blurry gates and felt a strange giddiness overwhelm him as he got goosebumps all over him.

But with just one step, the scene before Zhou Wen’s eyes opened up. The mist inside the ancient city was gone. He could clearly see the stone-paved streets and ancient buildings with blue tiles and red walls lining the streets. Li Xuan and the other two were right in front, just a few steps away from him.

Those scientists have theorized that the dimensional zones are equivalent to another spatial dimension. It does seem to make sense from the looks of it.

After most students had entered, they curiously sized up the ancient city just like Zhou Wen.

Although they had watched some of the footage inside Guide Ancient City from the school’s video material, to truly step in here gave them a different feeling. The antiquity and

feeling that seemed to span the entire gamut of human experiences were things that video footage couldn’t capture.

The examiner gathered the batch of candidates and mentioned a few key things to take note of. When that was done, the combat test officially began.

All the students who participated in the test rushed for the ancient city’s streets and alleys, hoping to kill the most number of Skeleton Soldiers to obtain a better result.

Of course, there were people who had the hope that a few dimensional crystals would drop during the test. That would make things even better.

The Earth League had made it clear that any dimensional crystals that dropped during the combat test were the property of the students themselves.

However, the examiner had also made it clear that the student was to be responsible for whatever happened during the test.

According to the League’s laws, after reaching the age of sixteen, one could freely choose to take the combat test. The responsibility was theirs to undertake. Even if death was to occur, the League wouldn’t provide a single cent of compensation.

Compared to the other subjects in the college entrance exams, only a few hundred students from the city actually participated in the combat test. Inside the transformed ancient city, they appeared inconspicuous.

Zhou Wen and Li Xuan headed deep into the ancient city. In the beginning, there were plenty of students, so the Skeleton Soldiers that appeared weren’t enough for them to

kill. Li Xuan and company didn’t intend to snatch the mobs with the other students, so they circled around the battlefields and ventured deep into the ancient city.

Xu Miantu and Jiang Hao took point and every Skeleton Soldier they encountered was taken down with one strike. Mobs of Skeleton Soldiers were nothing worth mentioning due to the huge disparity in strength.

Amidst the skeleton of the Skeleton Soldiers, there was a bone the size of a rice grain. Each Skeleton Soldier only had one of those, and one’s score in the combat test was determined by the number of bones that had been gathered.

However, the number of bones could only determine a team’s ranking. The ranking within the team was determined by the number of dimensional crystals.

Perhaps it was a coincidence, but the direction the quartet was heading in happened to be the one Zhou Wen had attempted while in-game. As they stormed their way through the ancient city, all the scenery was identical to the one in-game.

It wasn’t only the ancient buildings in the ancient city. Even the number of Skeleton Soldiers that appeared was identical to the game.

Does this mean that we will be meeting that fellow on the skeleton horse? However, Zhou Wen quickly had another idea. That area had exceeded the confines of the test, so it was unlikely Li Xuan and company would risk entering.

But things exceeded his expectations. Xu Miantu and company stormed their way through without stopping when they reached the boundary of the test. They went straight out of the test’s boundaries.

“Li Xuan, we have already left the test boundaries. Should we be heading back?” Zhou Wen said to Li Xuan.

Before Li Xuan said a word, Xu Miantu said in contempt, “The area of the test is so tiny. The number of Skeleton Soldiers is extremely limited. Even if we could get all of them, how many can we get? If you’re afraid, just wait here until we return. There’s no need for you to follow us in.”

Li Xuan also said with a smile. “Don’t worry. We have the complete information of Guide Ancient City. All we will encounter for the next ten to fifteen kilometers are Skeleton Soldiers. There won’t be any Legendary stage dimensional creatures appearing. The test’s area is rather conservative because they do not wish for students to get into accidents. Just as Miantu said, with that small number of Skeleton Soldiers in the test area, it’s not enough for us to get a high score. It’s almost necessary that we continue forward.”

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 20 - Persuasion

Chapter 20: Persuasion

Translator: CKtalon **Editor:** CKtalon

Upon seeing the trio's expression, Zhou Wen knew that his persuasion was completely useless.

He did have the intention to stay behind, ignoring whatever the trio might encounter. However, his results would be severely impacted if they were to die inside. He might even be removed from the list of candidates from the top schools.

Also, Yu Qiubai had introduced him, so he had the responsibility to help Li Xuan attain good results. Although Li Xuan didn't think so, Zhou Wen didn't wish to see Li Xuan sending himself to his death. That would affect Yu Qiubai's reputation and it was highly likely that the Li family would blame it on Yu Qiubai.

Let's hope they don't venture too deep. As long as they don't approach the area where the Skeleton General is, there shouldn't be much of a problem. Zhou Wen thought without saying another word as he followed Li Xuan and company.

Seeing Zhou Wen silent, Xu Miantu imagined that it was because Zhou Wen didn't dare be alone. He scoffed in contempt. "When one's a burden, one should realize that. Just follow us obediently and cut the nonsense."

Zhou Wen didn't have the interest or time to bother with him. Taking out his phone, he secretly dripped a drop of blood before entering the Ancient Imperial City game dungeon.

He wanted to venture ahead to test the Skeleton General's strength. It was best if he could find a way to kill him, and even if he failed, he could at least find a way to ensure his survival in front of him.

After all, Jiang Hao and Xu Miantu were taking point, killing all the Skeleton Soldiers that rushed at them. There was nothing Zhou Wen needed to do.

The danger was nonexistent. Even if a Skeleton Soldier were to rush at him, he could easily finish it off with his present strength.

Zhou Wen kept walking behind, unafraid that they would see his screen since they were unlikely to recognize it.

The game interface followed a cartoon style, making it very disparate from real life. The typical person wouldn't make the connection.

Li Xuan was like Zhou Wen; he had nothing to do. When he saw Zhou Wen taking out his phone to game in such an area, he quipped, "You are really a gaming addict. You still feel like gaming in here?"

"It's not like I have anything else to do, so I'm just playing games to kill time," Zhou Wen replied without looking up. His eyes were peeled to the screen as he controlled the blood-colored avatar, blazing a trail while riding the Mutated Vigor Ant.

The ordinary Skeleton Soldiers were unable to block the Mutated Vigor Ant at all. Their bodies scattered from the impact and they weren't as fast as it was.

Zhou Wen also couldn't be bothered to kill them. All he wanted was to rush to the spot where the Skeleton General

was.

“That’s right. I shall game as well,” Li Xuan said as he took out his phone. He tapped on the screen; the game he played a mystery.

Li Xuan’s gaming could be ignored, but Zhou Wen was also playing. This pissed off Xu Miantu.

“What the hell? Is this the number one genius of Guide High School? He’s like a gaming nerd,” Xu Miantu cursed under his breath in great displeasure.

Although Xu Miantu and Jiang Hao were powerful, they were still made up of flesh and blood. They were still susceptible to fatigue and injury; therefore, when they encountered relatively large hordes of Skeleton Soldiers, they had to be very careful. This slowed down the speed of their advancement.

As for Zhou Wen, he was charging the entire way in-game. His rate of progress was far faster than their progress in real life. In just half an hour, he arrived at the spot where he had met the skeleton horse-riding Skeleton General.

Like the last time, that fellow immediately charged when it saw the blood-colored avatar and Mutated Vigor Ant. Its speed was terrifying, in no way something Zhou Wen and the Mutated Vigor Ant could compare with.

This time, Zhou Wen was fully focused. He was thinking of ways to deal with the spear attacks, but when he saw the bone spear thrusting at him, he failed to dodge it. He didn’t have the opportunity to extend his hand to block the attack before being penetrated in the chest.

That was fast. This spear attack must be some type of Primordial Energy Skill. Zhou Wen could already confirm that the spear attack was a Primordial Energy Skill; otherwise, it was impossible that he had failed to even react.

A speed-type Primordial Energy Skill? This fellow is more difficult than the Silver-Winged Flying Ant. However, that Silver-Winged Flying Ant apparently never used Primordial Energy Skills. As Zhou Wen pondered over the matter, he revived the blood-colored avatar, rode the Mutated Vigor Ant, and charged into the depths of Ancient Imperial City.

As Zhou Wen rushed over, he carefully recalled the details of his previous two deaths. He hoped to find a strategy to deal with the Skeleton General by studying the details.

By doing so, he came up with a few possibilities. However, their viability needed him to test them out to know if they worked.

When he saw the Skeleton General charge at him again, Zhou Wen deliberately dodged the skeleton horse's direct charge. He wanted to know if the Primordial Energy Skill was only capable of a frontal thrust.

The facts proved that he was wrong. When the blood-colored avatar dodged to the side of the skeleton horse under Zhou Wen's control, the bone spear tip swept a crescent arc like a stream of light, instantly decapitating the blood-colored avatar's head. It was no doubt an instant kill.

Making mistakes wasn't a terrifying problem. What was terrifying was the lack of opportunity to amend strategies. However, the mysterious phone was what gave Zhou Wen this opportunity for amendments.

His Primordial Energy Skill is not only a thrust, but it's also capable of side cleaving. This makes it difficult. Zhou Wen wasn't discouraged; instead, he secretly dripped another drop of blood on the phone's screen.

Perhaps it was because of his severe loss of blood in the past month or so, Zhou Wen felt a little giddy.

I need to think of means to replenish my blood in the future. If this continues, I might really end up dying from anemia. Zhou Wen felt a slight headache, but he couldn't think of a good solution.

With the first experiment failing, all Zhou Wen could do was switch methods. Thankfully, he was only making attempts in-game. If it happened in real life, there was no way he would do something beyond his means. After all, he only had one life. He couldn't just bet on it.

While Zhou Wen made his attempts, Xu Miantu and company were continuing their push forward.

The dimensional creatures in the dimensional zone were nearly endless. As the zone was connected to dimensional rifts, even if the creatures were wiped out, the area would be occupied again by new creatures. There was no way of killing them all.

However, the dimensional rifts weren't stable. Pan-dimensional creatures didn't appear at random, so after clearing an area, there wouldn't be any Skeleton Soldiers appearing for a short period of time. Xu Miantu and company's advancement was still pretty good.

The chances of Skeleton Soldiers producing dimensional crystals were quite small, with one Strength Crystal being

dug out from the Skeleton Soldiers' bodies every two to three hundred Skeleton Soldiers.

Unfortunately, this wasn't a game. They could only roughly identify the Strength Crystals, but had no idea what their values were.

The Strength Crystal was naturally Li Xuan's. In fact, as long as he had one, he would be first in the team.

"We've already hunted enough Skeleton Soldiers. We are very far from the determined region of the test. We need to rush back before the end. Can we not continue proceeding forward?" Upon noticing that they were approaching the Skeleton General's region, Zhou Wen said once again to Li Xuan.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 21 - Unexpected Development

Chapter 21: Unexpected Development

Translator: CKtalon **Editor:** CKtalon

Before Li Xuan could say a word, Xu Miantu said, “It’s still early, and the number of bone beads we have isn’t enough to guarantee us first place. We naturally need to proceed forward.”

Jiang Hao also looked at the map and said, “Based on the map, this area is still the safe zone. We can proceed another ten kilometers without encountering much danger.”

Li Xuan opened up the map on his phone and nodded after taking a look. “Based on the information, there aren’t any Legendary stage creatures in the vicinity. It should be ok if we proceed forward a little. We need to obtain enough bone beads to be the bona fide winners of Guide City. We cannot afford otherwise.”

Zhou Wen knew that he needed to dissuade Li Xuan and company from proceeding forward; otherwise, the death of any one of them when they encountered the Skeleton General would drastically affect his results.

Although Zhou Wen didn’t have any plans to enter high society via the university he attended, he still wished to enroll in a reputable university.

If any of the four of them died, the chances of entering a top reputable university became extremely slim. No matter how well he did in his other subjects, he would only be able to enroll in a first-rate university. That wasn’t something Zhou Wen wanted.

“Li Xuan, do you believe in the sixth sense?” Zhou Wen pondered for a moment and asked Li Xuan.

“What are you getting at?” Li Xuan didn’t directly answer as he asked with piqued interest.

“I find my sixth sense better than most people. Since I was little, I would have a vague feeling just before encountering danger. This feeling leaves me very uncomfortable. Although I’m not sure if it’s a premonition for danger, I usually encounter trouble soon after.” Zhou Wen continued, “And I just had a very uncomfortable feeling.”

“Just admit to being afraid. Why use sixth sense as an excuse?” Xu Miantu spoke with contempt.

Li Xuan sized up Zhou Wen for a moment before casting his gaze at Jiang Hao.

Jiang Hao thought and then said, “The bone beads we have at present can’t guarantee us first place. It might be a little inappropriate if we were to head back now.”

Clearly, Jiang Hao was supportive of continuing forward.

Seeing Li Xuan somewhat persuaded, Zhou Wen hurriedly said, “Li Xuan, please trust me. Although this feeling of mine doesn’t happen every time danger rears its head, great trouble is certain once I have this feeling. If I’m just a coward, I could have just retreated to the entrance and waited for you guys. There isn’t a need for me to tell you this.”

After a pause, Zhou Wen continued, “Just as Xu Miantu said, Guide City is a small city. There aren’t many high schoolers who are that strong. I doubt many high schoolers will dare to venture past the designated zone to kill Skeleton Soldiers.

We have already obtained a sizable number of bone beads and can always return to the designated zone to kill more. First place is practically guaranteed without taking any risks. After all, we only have one life. There's no harm in being cautious."

"What you say makes sense." Li Xuan seemed to be moved by Zhou Wen's words as he nodded. "Let's do this then. We shall head back before heading elsewhere to hunt Skeleton Soldiers."

"Come on, there's no need for that." Xu Miantu grumbled but didn't dare disobey Li Xuan's decision. He turned around and headed back with the team.

Jiang Hao also followed and walked by Li Xuan's side.

Obviously, Zhou Wen had already turned around to head back, but after taking two steps, he suddenly heard Jiang Hao exclaim. "What's that?"

He gave everyone a shock as they turned to look. They found him looking at an ancient building with a bewildered look as though he had seen something most terrifying.

Zhou Wen, Li Xuan, and Xu Miantu subconsciously turned their heads to look when a glint flashed in Jiang Hao's hands. A strange jade dagger appeared in each of his hands.

The jade dagger in Jiang Hao's left hand struck like a venomous snake's tongue, instantly stabbing Li Xuan. The foot-long blade plunged into his waist completely.

This sudden development happened so abruptly that Xu Miantu didn't even realize what was happening when the other jade dagger in Jiang Hao's right hand swiped at his neck.

Xu Miantu had retreated quickly but had failed to avoid being injured. Although none of his arteries were severed, his neck was instantly dyed red with blood.

“Jiang Hao… What are you doing…” Xu Miantu wore a look of alarm as he covered the wound on his neck, shouting as he retreated. He was filled with disbelief over what had just happened.

Jiang Hao ignored Xu Miantu as he clenched the pair of jade daggers with both hands, staring intently at the wound on Li Xuan’s waist.

He was responsible for the wound and he knew what kind of effect such a wound would have; however, the flesh and fat at the wound seemed to possess a certain force that exerted pressure on the wound. The tiny amount of blood that had seeped out was nearly impossible for a wound this deep.

“I never expected that the promiscuous third scion of the Li family would have mastered something that would require being a virgin—the Invincible Connate Divine Art,” Jiang Hao said slowly as he glared at Li Xuan.

Zhou Wen was similarly alarmed when he heard “Invincible Connate Divine Art.”

Primordial Energy Skills and Companion Beasts could be obtained by hunting dimensional creatures, but Primordial Energy Arts weren’t things that could be obtained by dimensional crystals.

Legend had it that Primordial Energy Arts stemmed from ancient arts like Chinese *qigong* , *battle qi* , or Japanese *ninjutsu* . However, due to the lack of Primordial Energy Crystals in the past, those arts lacked the support of

Primordial Energy, preventing them from expressing their true might.

It was only when the dimensional creatures appeared, allowing humans to absorb dimensional crystals, that these arts grew in use, gradually developing into present-day Primordial Energy Arts.

Primordial Energy Arts had significant effects on humans. Absorbing dimensional crystals allowed humans to grow stronger and evolve, but this wasn’t sufficient at advancing between stages. Instead, it was Primordial Energy Arts that possessed the power to allow a breakthrough of such restrictions.

For instance, if Zhou Wen wanted to advance from the Mortal stage to the Legendary stage, simply absorbing dimensional crystals would be insufficient. He would need to advance Ascetic Meditation to a whole new realm before his body would evolve to the Legendary stage.

However, Primordial Energy Arts had their differences. Ascetic Meditation could, at best, advance Zhou Wen to the Legendary stage—the maximum it could go. It was unable to advance Zhou Wen to the Epic stage no matter how much more he cultivated in it.

Among the known Primordial Energy Arts, there were fewer than twenty that allowed humans to advance to the Epic stage. Invincible Connate Divine Art was one of them.

Furthermore, Invincible Connate Divine Art had a strange cultivation requirement. It required the cultivator to be a virgin.

Once one was no longer a virgin, the Invincible Connate Divine Art would become ineffective, losing all of its original

might.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 22 - Legendary Companion Beast

Chapter 22: Legendary Companion Beast

Translator: CKtalon **Editor:** CKtalon

Due to the strange cultivation requirement, the Invincible Connate Divine Art was also known as a Virgin Divine Art. It was the least cultivated among all the Epic stage-capable Primordial Energy Arts.

Firstly, Invincible Connate Divine Art could only be cultivated by men. Women who took up slightly more than half of the human population were incapable of cultivating it. Furthermore, with the requirement of being a virgin, even fewer people cultivated in it.

No matter how potent the Invincible Connate Divine Art was, to become useless the moment one lost their virginity was a fatal flaw.

Of course, the typical person didn’t have the chance to acquire it, so they had no chance of cultivating it even if they wished to.

Zhou Wen wouldn’t be too surprised if someone else had cultivated in it, but Li Xuan was a man who found himself swimming amongst women daily. Therefore, it was truly unbelievable that he had managed to master the Invincible Connate Divine Art.

Li Xuan didn’t look at the wound on his waist. In fact, due to the compression and suppression of his muscles, the wound had basically stopped bleeding.

“Did my second brother send you?” Li Xuan glared at Jiang Hao as he asked. He didn’t wear the blank, ignorant look that Xu Miantu wore.

Jiang Hao nodded and said, “I originally thought that it wasn’t necessary for him to take such actions, but from the look of it, your second brother has quite a discerning eye. For you to maintain your virginity, despite swimming in pussy daily, you are truly an incredible genius. You will definitely be a thorn in his side.”

“Jiang Hao, are you mad? You are actually helping Li Mobai kill Brother Xuan? Do you not know that if Brother Xuan dies here, there will be no way we can answer to Godfather. Don’t forget how much we owe Godfather for his kindness. He also dotes on Brother Xuan the most, so how can you bear to make him sad?” Xu Miantu said as he held his wound.

His injury was a lot lighter than Li Xuan’s, but unfortunately, he hadn’t cultivated in the Invincible Connate Divine Art. The blood that he had lost was enough to make his head spin.

Jiang Hao ignored Xu Miantu as he gripped his dangers tightly, staring intently at Li Xuan like a ravenous wolf.

Xu Miantu still wasn’t done when he was interrupted by Li Xuan. Li Xuan looked at Jiang Hao and said, “I’ve never fought Brother for anything since I was little. To prevent him from second-guessing me, I spent all my time with women and never paid attention to any Li family matters. Yet, he still is unwilling to let me off.”

“Two tigers cannot share one mountain. A family can’t have two heads. If there’s anything to blame, it’s that you only acted like a pig instead of being a real one. Otherwise, none of this would be necessary,” Jiang Hao said.

“Jiang Hao, do you really believe you can kill me?” Li Xuan said coldly.

“By telling you this much, it shows how determined I am to kill you. Your mastering of the Invincible Connate Divine Art has indeed exceeded my expectations, but unfortunately, you are only at the Mortal stage and have yet to advance to the Legendary stage. Your death is a certainty today,” As Jiang Hao spoke, he tore off his left sleeve, revealing his entire left arm.

There was a spiraling blue-green tattoo that nearly covered Jiang Hao’s entire left arm—a coiled snake.

The snake tattoo was shimmering with a demonic green-blue glow as though it was alive. Green-blue scales surfaced and enveloped Jiang Hao’s entire left arm and hand, making his arm appear like a bizarre venomous snake exuding extremely uncanny vibes.

“Explosive Scaled Snake, a Legendary stage Companion Beast… Impossible… You are only at the Mortal stage… How could you incubate a Legendary stage Companion Beast? Don’t tell me that you have already advanced to the Legendary stage? To reach the Legendary stage at sixteen… That’s impossible…” Xu Miantu stared at Jiang Hao’s left arm as he exclaimed, a look of horror plastering his face.

Jiang Hao shook his head slightly. “I haven’t advanced to the Legendary stage. I’m just capable of using the Explosive Scaled Snake.”

“How is it possible to incubate one without advancing to the Legendary stage? The Primordial Energy needed by an Explosive Scaled Snake is enough to suck dry anyone at the Mortal stage. It’s impossible to incubate one…” Xu Miantu still found it unbelievable.

Li Xuan harrumphed and said, “Brother sure went for broke in order to kill me. There’s only one way to possess a Legendary stage Companion Beast at the Mortal stage without incubating it yourself—it’s to let a Legendary stage expert with a Legendary stage Companion Beast transfer it to the person at the Mortal stage, even at the cost of their lives, ”

“You are indeed smart. Unfortunately, you will have to die today.” Jiang Hao no longer hesitated as he rushed towards Li Xuan. Meanwhile, his arm that resembled a snake slashed down with the jade dagger.

He was exceedingly fast as his snake-like arm seemed to phase away. It was almost impossible for one to use the naked eye to capture its trajectory. As an uncanny green-blue stream of light, it flashed across Li Xuan’s neck.

It was at a speed so fast that it even exceeded the Skeleton General’s spear attack. It gave Zhou Wen the impression that Li Xuan was doomed.

But to his surprise, he heard a clang. Li Xuan had gripped the lightning-fast jade dagger, holding it right in front of him.

Li Xuan’s hand holding the dagger, or perhaps it should be said that most of his body, was enveloped by black iron armor.

“Black Knight, a Legendary stage Companion Beast. So you have also used the same method to obtain a Legendary stage Companion Beast at the Mortal stage. It’s no wonder you held no fear.” Jiang Hao instantly recognized what the black iron armor on the Legendary stage represented.

“No, you are wrong. I don’t have to use such a cruel method to obtain a Legendary Companion Beast. Nor do I have such a need to.” Li Xuan exerted strength, immediately snapping the dagger in his hand and leaving Jiang Hao to retreat rapidly with the remnants of the jade dagger.

“The Invincible Connate Divine Art is the Primordial Energy Art that has the most amount of Primordial Energy amongst its peers. Even though I’m only at the Mortal stage, I still have the chance of incubating a Legendary stage Companion Beast despite them being the weaker ones and me needing to take on some risk. However, it’s more than sufficient when dealing with your Explosive Scaled Snake.” Li Xuan had a sharp glint in his eyes as he approached Jiang Hao.

“It’s no wonder Second Brother views you as a threat. Such talent is indeed terrifying,” Jiang Hao said as he retreated. After saying that, he turned around and ran deep into the Ancient City.

Li Xuan didn’t hesitate as he immediately pursued him.

“Don’t chase after him!” Zhou Wen hurriedly yelled to stop Li Xuan when he saw Jiang Hao fleeing in the direction of the Skeleton General.

However, Li Xuan was bent on killing Jiang Hao. There was no hesitation in his huge strides.

The two probably had Speed valued at 8 or 9, making it too late for Zhou Wen to catch up with them. Soon, they vanished around a corner.

Zhou Wen slowed down his pace without continuing his pursuit. Instead, it was Xu Miantu who handled the wound on his neck before chasing after them.

“What are you waiting for? Why aren’t you chasing after them to help Brother Xuan?” Xu Miantu yelled at him when he saw Zhou Wen stop.

Zhou Wen held his phone and launched the Ancient Imperial City dungeon as he said to Xu Miantu, “After you.”

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 23 - You Have Two Minutes

Chapter 23: You Have Two Minutes

Translator: CKtalon **Editor:** CKtalon

“Coward,” Xu Miantu cursed under his breath before ignoring Zhou Wen. He immediately continued his pursuit.

Zhou Wen didn’t mind really. He wished to help Li Xuan, but heading over was of zero use.

Jiang Hao and Li Xuan had Legendary Companion Beasts, while he had none. Death was a certainty for him when facing the Skeleton General. It was probably more beneficial for him to find the means of dealing with the Skeleton General in-game.

The reason Zhou Wen wanted to help Li Xuan was that deep down he knew that Jiang Hao would silence him and Xu Miantu after he had successfully killed Li Xuan to ensure his own safety.

Jiang Hao’s attack on Xu Miantu had already revealed this thought of his. If Li Xuan was successfully killed, there was no way he would spare Zhou Wen.

Therefore, Zhou Wen was inevitably helping himself by helping Li Xuan.

However, any help he rendered was useless. The might of a Legendary Companion Beast was not something he could equal at present. Be it against Jiang Hao or the Skeleton General, the chances of him being killed was extremely high.

As Zhou Wen proceeded forward slowly, he controlled the blood-colored avatar and stormed deep into Ancient Imperial City.

He didn’t know what kind of developments might happen after Li Xuan and Jiang Hao encountered the Skeleton General; therefore, he needed some preparation.

Before encountering the Skeleton General with his blood-colored avatar in-game, he heard a blood-curdling roar coming from deep within the ancient city. “Pledge my life to defend the city… Pledge my life to defend the city…”

Zhou Wen’s expression changed slightly. This voice was clearly not from Jiang Hao or Li Xuan. However, he had not heard the Skeleton General speak while gaming.

With a mere thought, Zhou Wen had composed himself as he continued focusing on his game.

His surroundings were unable to influence his line of thought. Soon, the blood-colored avatar found the Skeleton General in-game and after repeated failed attempts, Zhou Wen had a general understanding of the Skeleton General’s strength and Primordial Energy Skill.

He knew very well that his strength was insufficient to resist the Skeleton General, especially when it came to Speed. The difference was too disparate, making it difficult for him to even dodge.

The Skeleton General is stronger than me in every aspect. There’s a high chance that he’s a dimensional creature at the Legendary stage. It’s definitely impossible for me to fend him off. However, he’s not without flaws. His bone spear is too long, making it unconducive for him to fight in close-range. Furthermore, the skeleton horse he’s sitting on

would affect his attack trajectory beneath the waist. This results in an offensive blind spot… Zhou Wen controlled the blood-colored avatar and approached the Skeleton General once again, trying to put theory into practice.

When the Skeleton General charged over, Zhou Wen advanced instead of retreating with the blood-colored avatar. With a forward roll, he rushed under the skeleton horse’s belly.

Zhou Wen grasped the opportunity perfectly. Despite the Skeleton General having the Strength and Speed, he was unable to attack due to the skeleton horse’s obstruction.

After the Skeleton General raised his spear and stabbed downwards again, Zhou Wen had already rolled over to the other side of the skeleton horse’s underside.

The skeleton horse was not part of the Skeleton General, making it difficult for them to act perfectly as one. This gave Zhou Wen a slim chance of survival and several possibilities.

Unfortunately, the Skeleton General was just too strong. Zhou Wen had to constantly circle around the skeleton horse to avoid being stabbed by the bone spear. He had no means to launch a counterattack.

Even so, this lasted less than thirty seconds before the blood-colored avatar was stabbed by the Skeleton General on the ground. Blood immediately splattered as the avatar died on the spot.

As he watched the screen go black, Zhou Wen carefully recalled the battle.

He soon heard shouts and clashing sounds. Going around a bend, he immediately saw Li Xuan and Jiang Hao fighting

each other on the other end of a stone-paved street.

And in real life, the Skeleton General was around as well. He wore a cape and the skeleton horse he sat on was tall and mighty, its body akin to jade. The bone spear had terrifying barbs and there were blood-colored flames flickering in the skull's eye sockets. He looked formidable.

This was a completely different existence to the comic-version of the Skeleton General in-game. Zhou Wen nearly failed to recognize him.

What left Zhou Wen even more intrigued was that the Skeleton General was charging everywhere with the skeleton horse, but his target was ultimately fixated on Li Xuan. He ignored Jiang Hao, never attacking him even once.

Odd. Why would the Skeleton General only be attacking Li Xuan? Seeing the miserable Li Xuan, who kept retreating with his body covered in injuries, Zhou Wen couldn't help but frown slightly.

However, when Zhou Wen's gaze carefully observed Jiang Hao, he immediately came to a realization.

On Jiang Hao, there was an additional bone breastplate. The grayish-white ribs penetrated out of his clothes, protecting his chest and back, making him look odd.

From the looks of it, the reason the Skeleton General isn't attacking Jiang Hao stems from the bone armor he's wearing. Zhou Wen knew that it was likely a manifestation of a Companion Beast, but the type was unknown to him.

Although Xu Miantu had a nasty tongue, he didn't seem to have a bad character. He rushed over to help Li Xuan when he found the latter in trouble.

But the outcome was nothing surprising. Upon clashing, he was sent flying by the Skeleton General, tumbling far away across the street and stopping only when he hit a wall.

Xu Miantu bent his back like a shrimp, his hands clasping his abdomen. His mouth was filled with blood and there was cold sweat covering his forehead. The grimace he wore spoke volumes of the pain.

“Be patient. Once I kill Li Xuan, I’ll send you off to hell,” Jiang Hao said coldly, as the dagger in his hand stabbed at Li Xuan’s vital spot.

Li Xuan was fighting two adversaries alone, and he wasn’t even at the Legendary stage. By relying solely on the Legendary Black Knight Companion Beast, it was taxing on him to hold out in battle. The black armor that encased him was damaged in multiple places and blood seeped through.

However, he was a tenacious person. Despite such a perilous situation, he was still able to maintain clarity in thought and avoided most of the lethal strikes.

Unfortunately, he just wasn’t a Legendary stage expert. He was already a stage lower than the Skeleton General and with Jiang Hao taking opportunistic jabs at him, every second placed him in extreme peril. If not for the potent defensive capabilities of his Black Knight armor and the Invincible Connate Divine Art’s ability to slow down the deterioration of his injuries, he would have long been killed.

After watching for a moment, Zhou Wen suddenly shouted at Li Xuan, “Li Xuan, if I can help you distract the Skeleton General, how long will it take for you to finish off Jiang Hao?”

Zhou Wen’s words shocked the trio. In this battle, it was no longer something that a person at the Mortal stage could

interfere in, much less that of a regular high-schooler.

Xu Miantu imagined that Zhou Wen was mad, but unfortunately, he didn’t have the energy to say a word. Otherwise, he would definitely have ridiculed Zhou Wen.

Jiang Hao didn’t share the same thoughts, he didn’t believe Zhou Wen was capable of the proclaimed feat. He believed that Zhou Wen would be sending himself to his death if he really rushed over to help Li Xuan.

“Two minutes. I need that much time,” Li Xuan said as he fought for his life. There was no hesitation in his voice.

“Alright. Then, I’ll give you two minutes.” Zhou Wen put away his phone and headed for the battlefield.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 24 - Who the Hell is He

Chapter 24: Who the Hell is He

Translator: CKtalon **Editor:** CKtalon

Zhou Wen picked up his pace and entered the battlefield in a most ingenious manner, appearing behind the Skeleton General.

The Skeleton General keenly noticed Zhou Wen’s appearance and gave up attacking Li Xuan. It struck backward, transforming the bone spear into a cold beam that stabbed at Zhou Wen’s head.

Without waiting for the Skeleton General to raise his spear, Zhou Wen crouched down and lunged for the underside of the skeleton horse. This prevented the bone spear from locking onto him; thus, resolving the Skeleton General’s thrust.

Xu Miantu struggled to his feet as he looked at Zhou Wen with a look of disbelief. Zhou Wen had actually managed to hold back the Skeleton General!

Zhou Wen oscillated between the skeleton horse’s sides, occasionally tumbling to the ground. It looked extremely pathetic, but his actions worked.

Xu Miantu knew how difficult it was. He had the same idea as Zhou Wen earlier, hoping to hold back the Skeleton General to give Li Xuan time to finish off Jiang Hao.

However, he had been swept away the moment he approached the Skeleton General and nearly died from severe injuries. It made him deeply realize the huge

differences between the Mortal stage and the Legendary stage.

Zhou Wen was likewise at the Mortal stage, but he had managed to hold back the Skeleton General. It might look pathetic, but he remained unharmed the entire time. It left Xu Miantu amazed.

Thinking back to his mockery of Zhou Wen, his originally pale face blushed an abnormal red.

Jiang Hao was alarmed to see Zhou Wen hold back the Skeleton General. Despite all his plans, he had never expected a Mortal stage high-schooler to be capable of holding back a Legendary Skeleton General.

In fact, Jiang Hao long knew of the existence of the Skeleton General in the vicinity. He had planned on taking Li Xuan nearby and letting the Skeleton General finish him off.

Unfortunately, this plan had been foiled by Zhou Wen. Jiang Hao had no choice but to take action himself, but he ultimately failed.

While Zhou Wen was holding back the Skeleton General, Li Xuan had already rushed towards Jiang Hao. He unleashed a barrage of punches that shimmered like shooting stars at him.

He knew that it wasn’t pragmatic to expect a Mortal stage hold back the Skeleton General for extended periods of time. He had to finish off Jiang Hao before Zhou Wen was killed by the Skeleton General.

Jiang Hao now truly realized how terrifying this intemperate scion, Li Xuan, was. Despite using similar Legendary

Companion Beasts—even with him having two—he was still completely overpowered by Li Xuan.

“I don’t believe I can’t last two minutes. We are both at the Mortal stage and are using Legendary Companion Beasts!” Jiang Hao battled Li Xuan with gritted teeth.

Bang!

In less than twenty seconds, Jiang Hao was hit on the left elbow by Li Xuan, snapping the bone armor in two.

The color in Jiang Hao’s face drained as he rapidly retreated. However, upon seeing Li Xuan pursue him like a leech, his eyes flashed with a ruthless glint. With a swing of his left arm, the Explosive Scaled Snake tattoo shimmered as a brightly-colored blue-green venomous snake tore out from his arm, coiling towards the pursuing Li Xuan.

Seizing this opportunity, Jiang Hao pushed his speed to the limit, allowing him to traverse four to five meters. He was attacking Zhou Wen from behind with a dagger!

“Ah!” This sudden development caused Xu Miantu to cry out.

Zhou Wen was already in a perilous situation while holding back the Skeleton General. Now, with Jiang Hao sneaking an attack on him, death seemed inevitable for him.

Li Xuan was alarmed and furious as well. However, with the Explosive Scaled Snake blocking him, he didn’t have the time to rescue Zhou Wen.

While the bone spear thrust around at lightning speed, a dagger stabbed at Zhou Wen’s waist from the back. At this critical moment, Zhou Wen exerted strength into his legs, allowing him to do a sharp turn. A powerful twisting force

erupted from his waist muscles as his body twisted at an odd angle.

Zhou Wen’s feet were still facing the Skeleton General’s side, but his torso had already turned to face Jiang Hao.

The bone spear stabbed at Zhou Wen, just brushed past his cheek. This left a faint wound on Zhou Wen’s cheek, but he remained stoic. Without even blinking, he threw a punch at Jiang Hao’s dagger.

A look of mockery flashed in Jiang Hao’s eyes. Although the Explosive Scaled Snake had left his body, he still had the bone breastplate protecting him. It was also a Legendary Companion Beast and, although it wasn’t a Strength-type, it augmented his Strength a little. It wasn’t something a typical Mortal stage human could withstand.

Furthermore, the jade dagger was made of special materials. Not only did it have the ability to kill dimensional creatures, but it also had a terrifying sharpness to it.

“Die!” Jiang Hao steeled his heart as he exerted all his Strength, gathering it at the blade tip. He wanted to slice through Zhou Wen’s fingers.

“Dodge! You can’t handle it!” Li Xuan cried out in panic.

Xu Miantu spewed another mouthful of blood—a result of his anxiety, not his injuries.

At the instant the fist and blade met, a sanguine glow shimmered across Zhou Wen’s fist. The red carapace instantly wrapped around his fist, condensing like a dark red boxing glove.

“Companion Beast!” Jiang Hao’s eyes constricted as an ominous feeling arose in him.

As Mortal stage Companion Beasts were rare, he had subconsciously imagined the Companion Beast to be at the Legendary stage. This alarmed him greatly.

However, the distance between the fist and blade was just too narrow. Just as the thought came to Jiang Hao, Zhou Wen’s fist had already struck the blade of the jade dagger.

Crack!

The mighty force tore through the blade as cracks rapidly extended, shattering the entire dagger, turning them into countless fragments.

Bang!

Zhou Wen’s punch didn’t pause as it struck Jiang Hao’s dagger-wielding fist. It smashed the bones in his hand and arm.

The fractured bone tore out of Jiang Hao’s flesh as blood gushed out. Without the protection of the bone armor, his arm popped like popcorn. He flew out with a tragic cry.

All of this happened in a split second. As Xu Miantu watched, he glared with a wide-open mouth, momentarily speechless.

Li Xuan was thrilled. Ignoring the Explosive Scaled Snake that embroiled him, he charged forward and smashed open Jiang Hao’s head in midair. There were no more chances for him.

Zhou Wen was calm. After destroying Jiang Hao’s arm, his body twisted around like a loach and, using the momentum, lunged for the skeleton horse’s back. This made the Skeleton General miss once more.

Everything happened with such fluidity, as though it had been practiced countless times. It was a beautiful sight.

“Who the hell is he?” Xu Miantu snapped to his senses as his mind was filled with puzzlement. He refused to believe that Zhou Wen was merely an ordinary high-schooler from Guide City.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 25 - Weakness

Chapter 25: Weakness

Translator: CKtalon **Editor:** CKtalon

Jiang Hao's death signified the dissipation of his Companion Beast. The Explosive Scaled Snake and the bone armor Companion Beasts exploded, turning into bits of Primordial Energy that scattered across the land.

Li Xuan didn't have the luxury of time to entertain nonsensical thoughts like Xu Miantu. After finishing Jiang Hao, he rushed straight for the Skeleton General. At the same time, he shouted, "Zhou Wen, I'll attract his attention. Try to find an opening to deliver the lethal strike."

"Alright." Zhou Wen retreated. Just as the Skeleton General was about to chase after him, Li Xuan had already delivered a punch to the skeleton horse's head.

This contained the Strength of a Black Knight, but all it did was cause the skeleton horse's head to flinch and its feet to stagger for a moment.

"Pledge my life to defend the city…" The Skeleton General was enraged as the glow in his eyes burgeoned. He let out a furious roar as he charged at Li Xuan with his spear.

Li Xuan could barely kite the Skeleton General with the Black Knight's powers, but he was completely suppressed. He had no means to counterattack.

Zhou Wen circled around the skeleton horse without giving the Skeleton General a chance to attack him. From time to time, he would deliver a Vigor Divine Fist at the horse's legs

or body. It affected the skeleton horse’s mobility, giving Li Xuan a breather.

The two besieged the Skeleton General, but everything remained in a tizzy.

The Skeleton General in-game doesn’t seem this powerful? Zhou Wen was quite puzzled. He was certain of his judgment.

It wasn’t only aspects like Strength or Speed, most importantly, the Skeleton General in-game was rather uniform in his attacks. It was obvious he was a NPC [1] in a game. But in real life, the Skeleton General was clearly more intelligent and autonomous than in-game. His combat experience seemed to be honed from multiple battles, making him completely different.

Zhou Wen hadn’t seen this phenomenon on the ordinary Skeleton Soldiers. Be it in-game or in real life, the Skeleton Soldiers shared the same rigidness.

What’s the reason? Zhou Wen was momentarily unable to figure out the reason.

Bang!

Li Xuan was sent flying by the Skeleton General’s spear sweep, but he managed to stop himself after tumbling about eight meters.

He got to his feet and charged forward once again while enduring the pain. Meanwhile, he shouted, “This Skeleton General is a little odd. He appears to be getting stronger!”

If any other Mortal stage were to suffer such injuries, they would probably be dead, even if they had a Legendary

Companion Beast protecting them.

However, Li Xuan's Invincible Connate Divine Art was indeed formidable. It allowed him to continue battling with full force.

Zhou Wen had heard of how potent Epic stage Primordial Energy Arts were in the past, but it was only today that he realized how disparate things were.

The Ascetic Meditation he cultivated had similar benefits to the Invincible Connate Divine Art. They were Primordial Energy Arts that strengthened one's Constitution, but the differences were huge when a comparison was made. If he had suffered injuries as terrible as Li Xuan's, it would be unlikely that he could get back on his feet.

As expected, I need to cultivate in a top-grade Primordial Energy Art. But where am I to get one? These things aren't like Primordial Energy Skills that can drop from the game. Zhou Wen was slightly vexed.

In the schools of Earth's League, especially in university, different Primordial Energy Arts would be taught. However, they were capped out at the Legendary stage. There weren't any Epic stage Primordial Energy Arts to be taught. Zhou Wen had no chance of cultivating in such Primordial Energy Arts even if he wanted to.

"Bro, stop daydreaming. Help me finish him quickly!" Li Xuan was running about yelling while being pursued by the Skeleton General. The black armor that encased him had nearly shattered.

Zhou Wen had no intention of helping. Instead, he said, "It's useless. My Strength isn't enough to injure it. I think it's better we flee."

“Don’t you have a weaponized Companion Beast?” Li Xuan exclaimed.

“It’s only a Mortal Companion Beast. Although the augmentation to Strength is great, it wouldn’t be very effective against such a Legendary stage dimensional creature,” Zhou Wen explained.

“Mortal Companion Beast?” Li Xuan immediately felt speechless.

The higher the grade of a dimensional creature, the easier it could condense a dimensional crystal. The chances of producing a Companion Egg was also higher. Therefore, it was the low-grade dimensional creatures that could hardly produce Companion Eggs.

Therefore, a Mortal Companion Beast could be more expensive than his Black Knight Legendary Companion Beast, but at this juncture, money meant nothing.

“That’s bad. Although my Black Knight also augments my Strength, it mainly augments my defense. It’s not great when it comes to Strength… Damn it… I should have learned a few Primordial Energy Skills with potent destructive forces… Or I should have incubated a Strength-type Legendary Companion Beast…” Li Xuan said in regret.

“If not for your black armor protecting you, you would have died a couple of times. Having a Strength-type Legendary Companion Beast is useless,” Zhou Wen said with a shake of his head.

Li Xuan no longer had the time to chat with Zhou Wen for the Skeleton General almost stabbed him in his thigh.

The Black Knight Companion Beast didn’t enhance his Speed, so Li Xuan was unable to dodge the Skeleton General’s thrusts. All he could do was rely on the black armor to resist the blows. It seemed quite tragic for it appeared as though he would be stabbed to death at any time.

The skeleton horse was too fast and, with Li Xuan not being at the Legendary stage, there was no way of escaping.

“Zhou Wen, I beg you to save Brother Xuan.” Xu Miantu struggled to get up as he pleaded with Zhou Wen.

At this moment, Xu Miantu no longer had the arrogance from before. Instead, he treated Zhou Wen as a pillar of support.

Deep down, he no longer treated Zhou Wen as a higher schooler from a small city. Just the Mortal Companion Beast was not something the typical person could possess. From his point of view, Zhou Wen definitely had an extraordinary background.

And his previous actions made Xu Miantu believe that the former could save Li Xuan if he so wished.

Zhou Wen pondered for a moment and said, “It’s not completely impossible, but I’m not sure if it will work.”

“We have to try it regardless,” Xu Miantu said.

Zhou Wen nodded slightly as he observed the Skeleton General but was thinking about the Skeleton General in-game.

He had fought the Skeleton General several times in-game. It wasn’t without any benefit because through his

observations, he had noticed a weakness on the Skeleton General.

However, Zhou Wen wasn’t certain if the weakness in-game was the same in real life. After all, the Skeleton General was a lot more powerful in real life.

But at this moment, Zhou Wen could only give it a try.

Seeing Li Xuan being pursued by the Skeleton General, Zhou Wen silently circled to the back and gradually approached to await an opportunity.

Without needing Zhou Wen to say a word, Li Xuan knew that he needed to create a window of opportunity for Zhou Wen. Li Xuan gritted his teeth and used his black armor to envelope the left area of his abdomen to take on the Skeleton General’s thrust.

When the sharp tip plunged into the black armor, it ripped apart Li Xuan’s flesh. However, before the spear could be retracted, he gripped the stone spear tightly.

Without any hesitation, Zhou Wen leaped up and jumped onto the Skeleton General’s back. He rode on the skeleton horse just like the Skeleton General while reaching out his hand at his target’s neck. Lodging the head up to the sky, he used his other hand which wore the Vigor Ant’s boxing glove, slamming it heavily at the Skeleton General’s eye sockets.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 26 - Sun Strafe Art

Chapter 26: Sun Strafe Art

Translator: CKtalon **Editor:** CKtalon

Bang!

With the combined forces of Vigor Divine Fist and the Vigor boxing glove, the Skeleton General's eye sockets cracked as Zhou Wen's fist plunged straight in. The sanguine flame scattered immediately like splattering blood.

The Skeleton General, who had been retracting the spear with all his might, came to an abrupt halt. The next moment the bone spear fell to the ground, as all his bones scattered around him. Even the skeleton horse crumbled to a pile of rotting bones.

And inside the skull which Zhou Wen had collapsed, there was a slight red glow.

Zhou Wen flipped the skull around and saw the red Companion Egg. It was the size of a goose egg, its entire body crystalline, like jade. Blood flames seemed to burn in it.

"A Companion Egg? Your luck ain't bad. Unfortunately, you don't have enough Primordial Energy to incubate a Legendary Companion Egg. Besides, that Skeleton General was a little odd. It's best you don't incubate it randomly." Li Xuan was covered with wounds, but regardless of their sizes, they were beginning to close up and stop bleeding. It was clearly thanks to the Invincible Connate Divine Art.

"Don't you want it?" Zhou Wen asked Li Xuan.

Li Xuan shook his head. “If it wasn’t for you, Miantu and I would be dead. Also, what use is a Companion Egg? Besides, I don’t really take a mere Legendary Companion Egg to heart. You should take it for yourself.”

Zhou Wen nodded without any intention of standing on ceremony. He directly stuffed the Skeleton General’s Companion Egg into his pocket before looking at Jiang Hao, whose head had ruptured. “Jiang Hao deserved this, but his death will definitely affect our results. It will probably be difficult for us to get into a reputable school.”

Li Xuan laughed when he heard that. “Rest easy. Once we leave, apply to any reputable school you like. I guarantee you your admission..”

Xu Miantu suffered grievous injuries and, although Li Xuan’s wounds didn’t worsen, they weren’t trivial either. He was also in need of medical attention. The trio stopped hunting Skeleton Soldiers and left Guide Ancient City directly after gathering all the bone beads.

After the invigilator inspected the number of bone beads and dimensional crystals, he sent Li Xuan and Xu Miantu for treatment. As for Zhou Wen, he headed home alone on public transport.

On the way back, he used his phone to enter the Ancient Imperial City dungeon once more. He wanted to confirm that the Skeleton General in-game was weaker than the one in real life.

As expected. It’s not an illusion of mine. The Skeleton General in-game is much weaker. It’s no wonder I suspected that he wasn’t a Legendary creature.

But even so, without Li Xuan to divert the Skeleton General's attention, Zhou Wen was only capable of circling around the Skeleton General in-game. Killing him by his strength alone was almost impossible. The blood-colored avatar that Zhou Wen controlled had zero chance of getting close enough to smash through the Skeleton General's eye sockets.

However, Zhou Wen didn't mind. He continued circling around the Skeleton General with the blood-colored avatar. Since Zhou Wen knew the Skeleton General's weakness, a solo-kill was just a matter of time. He just needed to do the best he could.

Back home, Zhou Wen continued his daily lifestyle. Apart from sleeping, he would be gaming even while eating or using the bathroom.

After repeated attempts, he finally relied on a perfect positioning to kill the Skeleton General.

Although the Skeleton General in-game didn't drop a Companion Egg, it gave Zhou Wen a pleasant surprise—a Speed Crystal valued at 13.

Zhou Wen absorbed the Speed Crystal and immediately felt a jolt run through his body. It made him feel as if he was on cloud nine.

After a while, the feeling gradually dissipated. When Zhou Wen looked at his in-game stats, he was stunned.

He had absorbed a Speed Crystal valued at 13, so logically speaking, his Speed should have risen to 13. However, his Speed had only increased to 9, much lower than he expected.

After some thought, Zhou Wen roughly understood why this was happening.

I was taught that although the effects of absorbing Legendary stage crystals are good at the Mortal stage, that doesn't allow one's body to rise to the level of a Legendary stage. Only by raising one's Primordial Energy Art to a new realm would the absorption of a Legendary stage dimensional crystal raise one's stats. From the looks of it, this is the reason. Zhou Wen couldn't help but frown when he thought of this.

He originally intended on relying on Ascetic Meditation to advance to the Legendary stage, but after witnessing how formidable the Invincible Connate Divine Art was, it was apparent to him that advancing to the Legendary stage with Ascetic Meditation wasn't the best choice.

But if I don't use Ascetic Meditation to advance to the Legendary stage, how am I to obtain an Epic stage Primordial Energy Art? Zhou Wen was at a loss.

…

A few days later, the examination results were announced. Zhou Wen's results in his various subjects put him amongst the top. He got second on the combat test, one spot below Li Xuan. He was ranked even higher than Xu Miantu, so it did seem that Jiang Hao's death hadn't affected his results.

While pondering over the matter, his phone suddenly rang. It was an unknown number.

Picking up the call, Li Xuan's voice sounded over the phone. "Zhou Wen, have you seen the results? I should have given you first place, but I have some special use for being first

place. So please forgive my shamelessness in taking first. I'll make sure to compensate you in the future."

"We agreed on being fourth, so getting second is good enough. I don't really care for my placing as long as it doesn't affect my university enrollment."

"Let's not talk about that. I owe you one, so I have to repay you one day." Li Xuan paused before continuing, "I'll be studying at Sunset College in the future. Are you interested in joining me there? We can take care of one another as friends."

"Sunset College?" Zhou Wen revealed a pensive look.

Sunset College was one of the top schools in the East District of the League. At the very least, it was ranked within the top ten. And there were dimensional zones inside Sunset College; therefore, students of Sunset College could enter them during their college years for actual combat. This was a boon compared to the typical university.

Entering Sunset College wasn't a bad choice. The only thing that held Zhou Wen back was that Sunset College was located in Luoyang City and the An family was in Luoyang as well.

Zhou Wen didn't wish to have close ties with the An family; thus, leaving him hesitant about choosing Sunset College.

Li Xuan did his best to persuade Zhou Wen to attend Sunset College, but all Zhou Wen said was that he would consider it.

After hanging up, Zhou Wen recalled something. An Jing had given him a USB drive, claiming that it was given to him by Zhou Lingfeng. Zhou Wen had been spending the past few

days trying to take down the Skeleton General, so he had forgotten all about it. He had no idea what was on it.

After finding the USB drive, he inserted it into his computer and opened it. There was only one folder in it, labeled—Sun Strafe Art.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 27 - Elder

Chapter 27: Elder

Translator: CKtalon **Editor:** CKtalon

Zhou Wen was slightly alarmed. He had heard of Sun Strafe Art. It was a Primordial Energy Art that reached the Epic stage and was in no way inferior to the Invincible Connate Divine Art when it came to fame. However, in comparison, the Sun Strafe Art was far more precious.

After all, the Invincible Connate Divine Art's cultivation requirements were excessively harsh. In contrast, the Sun Strafe Art didn't have that many requirements. As long as one was willing to work hard at it, even the most mediocre person could attain certain levels of achievement.

Furthermore, Sun Strafe Art was an extremely potent offensive Primordial Energy Art. It was far more popular than the Invincible Connate Divine Art that only strengthened one's Constitution.

However, based on what Zhou Wen knew, the Sun Strafe Art was an exclusive Primordial Energy Art of some bigwig in the League. Apart from this bigwig's descendants, no one else had the chance of obtaining it.

How did Dad get the Sun Strafe Art? It's most likely obtained thanks to the An family, right? Zhou Wen had a guess in mind.

He didn't reject the Sun Strafe Art because of this guess. Since Zhou Lingfeng had given it to him, he must have paid the corresponding price even if it was thanks to the An family. Zhou Wen naturally didn't have any reason to reject

it and couldn’t ignore Zhou Lingfeng’s well-meant intentions.

After all, the number of things that Zhou Lingfeng had given him since he was young—apart from his living allowance—was limited to a handful.

He actually remembers that he has a son. Zhou Wen didn’t immediately look at the Sun Strafe Art. Switching off his computer, he pulled out the USB disk and prepared to get some food.

Cultivating a Primordial Energy Art wasn’t something that could be done in a day. Even though he had a 9-valued Primordial Energy as a foundation, making it faster for him to cultivate other Primordial Energy Arts, it still wasn’t something that could be mastered in a month or two. There wasn’t any rush.

Opening the fridge, he found nothing inside. Looking at the cardboard boxes in the corner of the living room, there wasn’t a single packet of instant noodles left.

Zhou Wen hesitated for a moment and gave up the thought of getting a delivery. He washed his face, changed his clothes, and prepared to head out to get something to eat. He could also buy some food to stock up on the way.

At almost nine in the evening, there weren’t many pedestrians on the street.

Zhou Wen had heard from his grandfather when he was young that before the dimensional storms happened, even a small city like Guide City was lit up for the entire night. However, such scenes were very rare these days.

The dim street lamps left Zhou Wen a little uncomfortable. His anemia was also getting worse.

He had lost too much blood recently. Thankfully, he was young and sufficiently strong. If he were an elderly man, the amount of blood he expended was definitely something his body's self-replenishment wouldn't be able to keep up with. Things would have deteriorated much earlier.

"I'll head to the supermarket to buy some brown sugar and make it into a syrup for drinking. Let's hope this old wives' tale can help in replenishing my blood," Zhou Wen muttered to himself.

He also knew, deep down, that it wasn't going to be of much use. Even if he visited the doctor, it was unlikely to resolve the problem.

The only way to resolve the excessive loss of blood was to prevent his blood-colored avatar from dying frequently in-game. As long as it didn't die, he wouldn't need to waste his blood.

Cough! As Zhou Wen was walking, he heard a man cough in front of him. Looking up, he saw an elderly man walking over with a hunched back. He had his head bowed, holding one hand to his mouth as he coughed from time to time.

Zhou Wen didn't think too much of it as he continued proceeding forward. But to his surprise, the elderly man collapsed to the ground when he was less than three meters away from him.

"Uncle, are you alright?" Zhou Wen walked over to check on the elder.

The elder seemed weak as he sat on the ground without getting up. He said feebly, “I’m fine. Old age is getting at me. I’ll be fine after resting for a while.”

“Let me help you to the side.” Zhou Wen saw that there was a bus stop nearby which had benches for commuters to sit on.

With the elder nodding, Zhou Wen reached out, held him by the arm and helped him to the bench.

He observed the elder from the side and guessed that he was in his seventies to eighties. His hair was gray and his face was covered in wrinkles. However, from his thin face and facial features, this elder had probably been a handsome man in his prime.

Zhou Wen felt some pity for him. An elder at this age was truly from the most tragic generation.

When the dimensional storms descended upon the world, it created pandemonium. That decade or two was the most chaotic and darkest period of human history.

And the source of this chaos wasn’t the terrifying dimensional creatures, but humanity itself.

Most dimensional creatures were unable to leave the dimensional zones; therefore excluding those zones, humans in the other zones weren’t in too much danger.

However, when humans realized that they could have superpowers with the help of dimensional crystals, those who obtained these powers revealed the darkest side of humanity.

In this dark era, many vile and ambitious people who struck fear into people were produced. The number of deaths that arose among humanity’s infighting could be said to be awash with rivers of blood.

At the elder’s age, he was a person who had survived the dark era but he was also beyond his prime for cultivation during the same period. Back then, there weren’t any systematic education or resources available. Most men his age had never cultivated. And even if they did, their achievements were extremely limited.

To be lucky enough to not die in that dark and chaotic era and live to this day wasn’t something worth being happy about either.

Humans nowadays who cultivated from a young age not only had a strong immune system that made them less prone to falling sick, but the speed at which they aged was reduced. They also experienced an extension of their lifespan, something incomparable for the elder from that era.

Now, most people in their forties and fifties looked no different from the twenties or thirties of yesteryear.

Even if one grew old in the future, they wouldn’t be so frail like this elder in front of him.

“Uncle, if you’re fine, I’ll be taking my leave.” Seeing how the elder’s condition had improved, Zhou Wen planned on leaving.

“Lad, it’s a lucky coincidence that we meet other. Why don’t you have a chat with me?” the elder looked at Zhou Wen with his turbid eyes as he spoke with his feeble voice.

“I’m not good at chatting.” Zhou Wen wasn’t declining the elder’s request. He really wasn’t good at chatting.

“It’s fine. Let me ask you a few questions.” The elder smiled, only to break into a coughing fit a moment later.

“Go ahead,” Zhou Wen said and stood in front of the bench.

He usually only gamed and seldom communicated with people. Therefore, it didn’t seem like a bad thing to have someone willing to chat with him.

Of course, this was under the premise that the elder didn’t ask questions that stumped Zhou Wen.

“Do you like women with big or small breasts?” The elder’s question left Zhou Wen taken aback.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 28 - Jing Daoxian

Chapter 28: Jing Daoxian

Translator: CKtalon **Editor:** CKtalon

Zhou Wen was still a pure and innocent virgin who had never been in a relationship before. Furthermore, always being focused on cultivation, he had never considered this problem.

The elder's question was somewhat odd, but Zhou Wen answered after some serious thought, "Women with smaller breasts."

The elder was delighted to hear that as he said with a smile, "That's exactly what I think too. Only women with smaller breasts are beautiful. What's so nice about big-breasted women? They are no different from cows. Only babies who still suck on their mother's tit will like cows."

Although Zhou Wen didn't agree with the elder, he didn't think it worth arguing with him. He chose women with smaller breasts because having big breasts made it unsuitable for combat. It would affect one's sense of balance.

The elder's complexion seemed a lot better once he broached the topic of women. He continued asking in excitement, "Lad, let me ask you another question. Do you like gentle women who are docile and obedient or women who are shrewd and unreasonable?"

This old man sure is odd. Does he have a screw loose? Who wouldn't like a docile and obedient woman and instead like an unreasonable shrewd?

Zhou Wen had the intention of answering that he preferred docile women, but he felt that choosing this would only excite the elder even more. There would then be no end to the conversation. Besides, Zhou Wen had no interest in continuing his chat with the elder.

“I like shrewd and unreasonable women,” Zhou Wen swallowed the words he wanted to say and spoke against his will.

To his surprise, the elder smacked his thigh before Zhou Wen could even finish his sentence. He said in great excitement, “Not bad! Not bad! It’s only when women are shrewd and unreasonable that they are cute and fun. Those docile and obedient women are no different from dead fish. What’s so fun about that? I never expected a young lad like you would have such refined taste in women…”

The way the elder treated Zhou Wen as though he was a confidant left him bewildered. He was momentarily at a loss for words.

He’s a lunatic indeed. Zhou Wen was increasingly convinced that the elder wasn’t mentally sound. Otherwise, how could he have said such inane stuff?

If Zhou Wen had chosen honestly, he definitely wouldn’t have chosen unreasonable shrewd women.

“Uncle, where do you live? Do you need me to take you home?” Zhou Wen really didn’t want to be caught up here. All he wanted was to send the elder off and find somewhere to eat so that he could return to his gaming.

The elder ignored Zhou Wen and continued rambling, “Lad, you have exquisite taste when it comes to women. You are a genius. However, you don’t look good and your body

condition isn’t great. One’s body is crucial when hitting on chicks. If you don’t have a good body, you will be lacking in the strength needed, despite having good taste…”

What the hell? You call this good taste? Zhou Wen regretted agreeing to the elder’s request for a chat.

Having said that, the elder groped around before pulling out a tattered diary. “You are quite a fine lad and are rather compatible with me. Written in here is a Primordial Energy Art. If you cultivate it, it will be beneficial for you. As long as you can master it, you will have the strength to deal with any problematic women in the future.”

A dark cloud hovered over Zhou Wen. The elder seemed to be implying that the cultivation of Primordial Energy Arts was meant to deal with unreasonable shrewd women.

“Uncle, thanks for the offer. However, I’ve already cultivated in a Primordial Energy Art. I don’t need any others.” Zhou Wen already had the Sun Strafe Art, so he naturally wasn’t very interested in other Primordial Energy Arts. Furthermore, he doubted that the elder’s Primordial Energy Art was anything impressive.

The elder glanced at Zhou Wen and said in contempt, “Although this Skyfiend Treatise isn’t a top-grade Primordial Energy Art, it’s not anything your crappy one can compare with. Useless Primordial Energy Arts like Ascetic Meditation are meant for trash. You are a lad with exquisite taste. You shouldn’t be cultivating in such a trashy Primordial Energy Art.”

“How do you know I cultivate in Ascetic Meditation?” Zhou Wen was alarmed.

The elder curled his lips. “Although you don’t look well, there’s a yellow jade-like luster suffusing your skin and flesh. Your eyes are spirited and your bones are huge. Clear signs of cultivating Ascetic Meditation. However, it’s also at the beginner level. It’s good that you are still a beginner; otherwise, cultivating such a trashy Primordial Energy Art would have been a waste of your youth. It would have ruined your entire life.”

Zhou Wen sized up the elder. He hadn’t noticed before that this sickly old man was so keen.

As though reading his mind, the elder said, “Dazed? This Skyfiend Treatise is hundreds if not thousands of times better than Ascetic Meditation. It’s stronger than any Epic stage Primordial Energy Art at present. As long as you master it, you would definitely amount to much in the future. Although it wouldn’t make you invincible, it wouldn’t be difficult for you to advance to the Epic stage.”

“Thank you. I can’t accept something this valuable from a stranger. I’m very grateful for your kind intentions, but if there’s nothing else, I’ll be making a move now.” Zhou Wen didn’t know about the authenticity of the elder’s Skyfiend Treatise for he had never heard of such an Epic stage Primordial Energy Art.

Regardless if it was one, Zhou Wen already had the Sun Strafe Art. There was no need for him to cultivate in the Skyfiend Treatise of unknown origins.

With that said, Zhou Wen turned around as he prepared to leave. With the elder’s queer actions, he didn’t wish to attract more trouble. It was best he left as soon as possible.

“Stop right there.” Just as Zhou Wen turned around, he heard the elder’s cold bellow.

Zhou Wen wanted to ignore him and leave, but just as he opened his stride, he felt as though his body was being grabbed by a huge invisible hand. It yanked him back, turning him around to face the elder.

The elder’s turbid eyes were shimmering with a fearsome glint that resembled light bulbs.

He sat on the bench as he coughed slightly with his hand over his mouth. However, Zhou Wen could only stand motionless in front of the elder due to the invisible hand.

“I, Jing Daoxian, have reigned supreme for decades and no one has ever lived to say no to me.” The elder glared at Zhou Wen as he spoke coldly.

He found the words “Jing Daoxian” familiar; however, it was only when he matched this name to a memory did his expression change drastically.

When the dimensional storms first happened—in the period before the League government was established when it was the most chaotic period in human history—there had been a vile and bloodthirsty people. The most terrifying and evil of them all was named Jing Daoxian.

The legends of Jing Daoxian’s cruelty was enough for a novelist to write an epic tale, spanning ten million words or more.

Jing Daoxian was most infamous for storming the League government’s office, killing twenty-seven Epic experts. The rest of the lower-stage experts were too numerous to count. He had turned what represented the highest authority of the League into a river of blood.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 29 - Lost Immortal Sutra

Chapter 29: Lost Immortal Sutra

Translator: CKtalon **Editor:** CKtalon

Many of the history books in the League had depicted that battle, the Day of the Fiendish Calamity. As for Jing Daoxian, he had the nickname of Fiend King. The number of Epic experts back then weren't as numerous as the number these days, so to kill twenty-seven Epic experts basically meant slaughtering most of humanity's strongest experts. It set back humanity's strength by at least ten years.

Zhou Wen stared at the elder in front of him, finding it difficult to put this sickly old man with the terrifying Fiend King of legends.

"You are Fiend King Jing Daoxian?" Zhou Wen didn't feel horrified because of his restrainment. This was because he knew very well that it didn't make a difference.

"Do you now want it?" Jing Daoxian said to Zhou Wen with a faint smile.

"Yes." Zhou Wen didn't hesitate in answering for he had no intention of dying at the hands of this devil.

When Jing Daoxian heard Zhou Wen's reply, he narrowed his eyes and said, "You may say so, but you don't want it deep down. Even if you take it, I'm afraid you wouldn't cultivate in it."

Is this guy nuts? Zhou Wen thought. "I'm naturally not going to cultivate in it. If that Skyfiend Treatise is really a Primordial Energy Art of yours, wouldn't the League's

government believe that I’m related to you if I were to master it? I would also be wanted.”

Jing Daoxian fell silent for a moment before his eyes lit up as though he had thought of something. Putting the notebook away, he took out something else.

It was a violet, metal box that resembled copper. However, it didn’t have the luster of copper with its dark, brushed-metal texture.

Looking small and exquisite, the metal box was squarish, about the size of a cigarette case. Carved on it were strange and messy patterns with three words written vertically in the middle.

“Lost Immortal Sutra!” Zhou Wen recognized the three words but didn’t understand what they meant.

The elder held the tiny box in front of Zhou Wen before lifting the lid. At this moment, Zhou Wen realized that it wasn’t a box but pieces of violet metal sheets that were connected to one another. They were like violet metal name cards.

There was a total of thirteen extremely thin, violet sheets. Each one was engraved with words the size of a fly’s head. Due to the tiny text, Zhou Wen wasn’t able to read the words on them.

Jing Daoxian didn’t look at the words on them. After opening it, all he did was wave the sheets in front of Zhou Wen before stacking them back together, turning them back into the violet metal block that resembled a cigarette case. Finally, he stuffed it into Zhou Wen’s hands.

“A Primordial Energy Art is written on it. It’s rather interesting, so take your time to cultivate it.” Jing Daoxian gave an odd smile, revealing his white teeth. It gave Zhou Wen the creeps.

Jing Daoxian stuffed the Lost Immortal Sutra into Zhou Wen’s hands before walking away amidst coughs with his back hunched. Soon, he vanished from the dark street.

Only then did Zhou Wen feel the invisible force around his body dissipate. Having regained control of his body, he glanced at the direction in which Jing Daoxian had vanished. Unable to see him, he hurriedly looked down at the metal slab in his hand.

The history books speak of Jing Daoxian as having an eccentric and unreasonable temperament. He does things as he pleases. It’s really an apt description. Legend has it that Jing Daoxian was capricious, killing people in a way no different from having his meals. He had no sense of morals. Zhou Wen didn’t believe that Jing Daoxian was nice enough to give him a high-grade Primordial Energy Art due to a lucky encounter.

Zhou Wen observed the metallic slab but failed to find anything special about it. Without opening it, it looked like a metal cigarette case.

After some thought, Zhou Wen didn’t check the Lost Immortal Sutra’s contents. He had the mysterious phone and Sun Strafe Art that destined him to become an expert. There was no need for him to take the risk of cultivating a Primordial Energy Art given to him by Jing Daoxian.

Hesitating for a moment while holding the metallic slab, Zhou Wen carefully placed it in his pocket.

Firstly, he was afraid that Jing Daoxian was watching nearby. If he were to throw it away, he was afraid that Jing Daoxian would flare up into a rage and kill him.

Secondly, Zhou Wen didn’t know if there were any harmful traps in the Lost Immortal Sutra. He wasn’t sure if others would be harmed if he just threw it away.

Looking in the direction that Jing Daoxian had vanished, Zhou Wen turned around and headed for the supermarket.

At the moment he turned around, Jing Daoxian, who was standing on another street, curled his lips. He sneered with an odd expression. *I originally wanted to give you an opportunity for catching my fancy. Who knew that you are such a philistine. No one can live comfortably in this world after rejecting me. You’ll die regardless of whether you cultivate the Lost Immortal Sutra. If there’s anything to blame, blame it on yourself for not knowing better.*

Suddenly, Jing Daoxian frowned slightly. *Did they catch up that quickly?*

With that said, Jing Daoxian walked towards the other end of the city, quickly vanishing from the city’s landscape.

Before Zhou Wen walked far, he saw people running toward him from the street ahead. They were wearing black uniforms that resembled a police uniform, but there were some differences. Despite carefully looking at it, he failed to recognize the uniform.

There were men and women in the group, with all of them looking to be in their twenties or thirties. The person leading them was a man in his thirties. He was clean-shaven other than the thin mustache above his lips. He was thin, with a hooked nose, and his eyes were as sharp as a blade.

“Hey there, did you see an elder in his seventies or eighties when you came from there?” The person ran past Zhou Wen without giving him a second glance. However, before they went far, the man who led the group stopped and turned to ask Zhou Wen.

“I think there was one. He headed in that direction.” Zhou Wen pointed in the direction where Jing Daoxian had left.

The man observed Zhou Wen for a moment before he nodded and said his thanks. Then, he led the group of uniformed personnel in the direction Zhou Wen had pointed.

Zhou Wen waited until they were a distance away before he turned around and briskly walked off. He really didn’t wish to embroil himself in such trouble. He sought a life of gaming in peace while schooling.

This time, he finally arrived at the supermarket without any mishap and bought plenty of food. Like always, Zhou Wen headed home and continued his grinding fest.

He gamed past one in the morning before he forced himself to put down the phone and go to bed.

Zhou Wen’s sleep quality had always been good. This might have something to do with his talent in being able to get into a focused state when learning something. It was the same with sleep. He could fall asleep within three seconds of lying down.

Zhou Wen imagined that he would be able to sleep till daybreak, but he felt something amiss while sleeping in the middle of the night.

In the past, Zhou Wen was able to sleep the entire night unless roused up by someone. But today was different. The

room was so silent that one could hear a pin drop; yet, Zhou Wen woke up.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 30 - Sleep Paralysis

Chapter 30: Sleep Paralysis

Translator: CKtalon **Editor:** CKtalon

Badump! Badump!

Zhou Wen felt his heart beating like a drum as it raced faster and faster. It gave him a feeling that his heart would literally leap out of his chest.

Could this heart arrhythmia be a result of my frequent loss of blood? Zhou Wen had never experienced this before. He intended to open his eyes and get up to ease the discomfort.

However, he could neither open his eyes nor sit up. He wasn’t even able to move his fingers. The feeling was akin to the desire to urinate while dreaming, but being unable to get up.

What’s happening? Zhou Wen felt an ominous feeling rise up in him. He was certain that he wasn’t dreaming for his mind was extremely lucid.

What made him feel worse was that he felt as though something was pressing down on him. It was growing in weight, leaving him stifled. He could hardly breathe.

Even so, Zhou Wen still couldn’t open his eyes. Nor could he move. It appeared as though he couldn’t wake up from his dream.

Could this be the ghost oppression that Grandfather was speaking of when I was little? He thought.

As Zhou Wen’s father was very busy with work and he lacked a mother, he was brought up by his grandfather from a young age. Every evening, his grandfather would tell him stories to coax him to sleep.

As for his grandfather’s stories, they were mostly ghost stories. Perhaps one of them was the story of the mysterious phone. However, Zhou Wen was still young back then, so he didn’t remember most of them. Only a few especially frightening ones had left a deep impression on him until today. One of them was about ghost oppression.

Zhou Wen felt that his present situation was very similar to the ghost oppression his grandfather had spoken of. His mind was very lucid, but he couldn’t wake up or move.

It felt as though a heavy object was pressing on him as his heart raced. It left him extremely uncomfortable, to the point of retching. Yet, he couldn’t do so.

This feeling continued from the middle of the night until just after six in the morning. Only then did Zhou Wen recover the control of his body. He instantly got up, ran to the bathroom, and vomited into the toilet.

Even as he was about to vomit his bile, he remained somewhat in discomfort.

What’s wrong? It couldn’t be as simple as food poisoning, right? Zhou Wen suddenly thought of his encounter with Jing Daoxian last night. He couldn’t help but be alarmed. *Don’t tell me it has to do with Jing Daoxian?*

Zhou Wen washed his face before heading to the living room. He picked up the stack of violet metal sheets he had stored away in a drawer.

It hadn’t experienced any changes and the words were clearly engraved on the metal, neither too deep nor too shallow.

Jing Daoxian is known for being capricious. He definitely wasn’t up to any good by giving me the Lost Immortal Sutra after I rejected him. Perhaps the problem stems from this metal slab. Could it be that he poisoned me? Zhou Wen suspected that Jing Daoxian had placed some form of hallucinogen on the violet metal slab that could seep into the body through contact.

He had learned such general knowledge in school, and he did pretty well in his studies. Using tweezers, he placed the violet slab in a glass container and did a simple test. However, he didn’t find any poisonous reactions.

There isn’t any poison? Or could the poison be relatively special and prevent ordinary methods of discovering it? Zhou Wen frowned slightly.

With all of that done, Zhou Wen felt that his body had recovered. His heart had calmed down and he no longer felt nauseous.

He suspected a case of food poisoning, so he took some digestive medicine. His body seemed to fully recover and there weren’t any further abnormalities.

As he took note of his body, he began grinding in-game. Now, Zhou Wen was already capable of singlehandedly killing the Skeleton General in-game. He just required quite a bit of time, taking nearly an hour to kill the Skeleton General once.

Nothing dropped when he killed the Skeleton General in-game a second time. It left him somewhat disappointed.

Unwilling to waste his blood to restart the Ancient Imperial City dungeon, he decided to venture deeper into it.

The ancient buildings were connected like a massive maze. Zhou Wen had the intention of heading into one of the ancient buildings to take a look, but he was afraid of dying, making it a waste of blood.

The deeper he headed into Ancient Imperial City, the more Skeleton Soldiers he encountered. Towards the end, he had encountered tides of Skeleton Soldiers that he couldn’t clear no matter how hard he tried. Yet, there was no sight of a Skeleton General.

This continued late into the night and the streets were filled with endless numbers of skeletons. Giving up, Zhou Wen stormed out of the area and chose to quit the game.

He hadn’t had a good night’s sleep the previous night, so his fatigue was getting to him. He decided to sleep early to spruce himself up for tomorrow’s continued efforts.

It didn’t take him long to fall asleep, but not long after, he snapped awake again. He was suffering from sleep paralysis again.

His heart raced as something heavy pressed down on him. He felt extreme discomfort.

Damn it… It’s definitely not as simple as food poisoning… It must have been Jing Daoxian… Zhou Wen had the urge to curse.

He had no grudge with Jing Daoxian. He had just declined Jing Daoxian’s offer of the Skyfiend Treatise and this was the outcome. He was truly loathsome.

After enduring through the night, the feeling vanished at dawn. Roughly at the same time as the day before, Zhou Wen once again regained control of his body.

He got up again and rushed to the bathroom. The vomiting was worse than yesterday, making him feel as though he was about to vomit out his stomach.

Like yesterday, the discomfort quickly vanished. If it wasn't because of the excruciating pain from before and his vomit still in the toilet, Zhou Wen would have thought that his discomfort was nothing but an illusion.

He was very certain that the problem was likely a result of Jing Daoxian.

To seek him out was clearly unpragmatic.

The entire League had Jing Daoxian on a wanted list for decades but had failed to apprehend him. It was nearly impossible for a higher schooler like Zhou Wen to find him.

Even if he were lucky and ended up finding Jing Daoxian, Zhou Wen didn't believe that he possessed the means to redress this injustice.

After some thought, he took out the Lost Immortal Sutra slab. Without any hesitation, he flipped through it and read its contents.

Jing Daoxian had told him that it recorded an interesting Primordial Energy Art that he should cultivate in. This made Zhou Wen believe that the resolution to his problems lay in the Lost Immortal Sutra.

Although this thought didn't seem to hinge on anything reliable, Zhou Wen was without options. All he could do was

first figure out what Lost Immortal Sutra was before making a decision.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 31 - Unmemorable Sutra

Chapter 31: Unmemorable Sutra

Translator: CKtalon **Editor:** CKtalon

Thirteen violet metal sheets were connected to each other like a mini-comic book. Its contents were viewable the moment he opened it. There were tiny words densely packed on every page and on both sides.

Zhou Wen began reading from the back of the first page. It was indeed the opening of a typical Primordial Energy Art. It mentioned things like the human magnetic field and Primordial Energy Art. As he read it, Zhou Wen suddenly felt hungry. Recalling that his favorite salted eggs were among the food he had bought yesterday, he put down the Lost Immortal Sutra and peeled one to add it to a bowl of instant noodles.

After he had finished eating, he returned to read Lost Immortal Sutra, only to realize that he had forgotten his reading progress.

Zhou Wen frowned slightly. He was confident in his memory and although it wasn’t a photographic one, he wouldn’t forget anything he read for a couple of years.

Yet, in less than ten minutes, he had forgotten the few lines he had just read.

Reading the Lost Immortal Sutra again, he was astonished to realize that it wasn’t as simple as forgetting his reading progress. When he read it from the beginning, he found the content equally unfamiliar as though it was the first time he was reading it. He had apparently forgotten all the content he had read just minutes ago.

There’s indeed something odd about this! Zhou Wen continued reading before finding himself feeling hungry again. He needed some more food.

This moment of distraction was enough to make him forget his reading progress in Lost Immortal Sutra. When he read from the beginning, he found the content he had just read unfamiliar once more. He had forgotten the content again.

Zhou Wen refused to have his beliefs shaken as he picked up his phone, opened its notes app, and began recording the content he read from the violet sheet.

However, whenever Zhou Wen memorized a sentence and turned his gaze to the phone, he would find his thoughts a blank when he tried to input the content. He couldn’t recall the line he had just memorized.

After attempting to memorize the Lost Immortal Sutra again, Zhou Wen quickly discovered that he could clearly remember the content when reading it, but once he moved his gaze away in a bid to record it, everything would be forgotten.

Zhou Wen attempted to write as he read, but it was useless. Just any level of distraction was enough to wipe his memories of Lost Immortal Sutra’s content.

He tried using his phone to snap pictures of the Lost Immortal Sutra, but after taking a few pictures, he found that the pictures only showed the metal sheet being a uniform violet color without any engravings.

This Lost Immortal Sutra is indeed odd. Not only can’t I divert my attention to read it, but I’ll be affected by the text within when focusing, getting distracted by my various

emotions. It's truly bizarre. Zhou Wen thought as he looked at the Lost Immortal Sutra engraved on the metal sheets.

Unbeknownst to him, this Lost Immortal Sutra wasn't only simple but bizarre. He just experienced distractions in the beginning, but towards the end, it escalated to something far more fatal.

Many Epic stage experts in history had died because of reading of Lost Immortal Sutra. Even if they were lucky to survive, they would go crazy and become no different from an idiot.

Even Jing Daoxian wasn't able to finish reading Lost Immortal Sutra after obtaining it. He closed it after reading it midway without daring to continue. If it wasn't because the Lost Immortal Sutra had a magical connection to its owner, making it impossible to forcefully abandon it, Jing Daoxian wouldn't have kept it on him.

If it wasn't because of the influence that Lost Immortal Sutra exerted on him, Jing Daoxian wouldn't have been injured inside a dimensional zone. He had originally planned on finding a way of disposing of it.

When Zhou Wen declined Jing Daoxian's Skyfiend Treatise, the latter was insistent that Zhou Wen cultivated in the Primordial Energy Art he had given. Not only did he want Zhou Wen to cultivate it, but he also wanted Zhou Wen to suffer for his actions. He even wanted him to die a tragic death. This was the reason why he had given the Lost Immortal Sutra to him.

His vile nature was absolutely nothing the average person could compare with. He was truly a devil.

Due to the strangeness of the Lost Immortal Sutra, Zhou Wen didn’t continue reading. He even wanted to experiment if anything would happen to him if he distanced himself from the metal slab and the Lost Immortal Sutra.

…

In a hotel suite in Guide City, a few people were sitting around a table, discussing something. If Zhou Wen were around, he would have recognized them to be the uniformed personnel he had met that fateful night.

“We let Jing Daoxian escape once again. Damn it,” a man said angrily.

It hadn’t been easy for them to acquire clues of Jing Daoxian’s whereabouts. Furthermore, the latter was heavily injured, giving them their best chance of apprehending him. Yet, they had still failed to catch up to him.

“Despite being so heavily injured, how did he break through our blockade and escape without us realizing it,” a woman said, perplexed.

“Regardless of how injured he is, he is still Jing Daoxian nonetheless. We shouldn’t take it to heart. If we had locked down all of Guide City in the beginning, we might have stood a chance of finding him.”

Everyone exchanged their views, except for a man who remained silent. At the seat of honor, he rhythmically tapped the table’s surface as he hung his eyelids low, seemingly in thought.

“Minister Qiao, what’s your take on this?” a blonde, green-eyed lady gave the man a teasing look as she asked with a coquettish voice.

Qiao Siyuan looked up slightly when he heard her question. Stopping his tapping of the table, he swept his gaze across everyone.

“How long did Jing Daoxian spend in Guide City, from the moment he entered until he left?” Qiao Siyuan didn’t reply to the lady’s question and returned with a question.

The woman switched on her tablet and said after taking a look at the information. “For a person like Jing Daoxian with extremely powerful perception, it won’t be easy for cameras to capture any traces of him. Thankfully, the Eye in the Sky is a rather well-refined system. There are certain areas that make it impossible to escape surveillance. From the video feed we have at present, we can determine that Jing Daoxian entered Guide City at approximately 8:30 p.m. and left at 9:20 p.m., spending a total of fifty minutes in Guide City.

After Qiao Siyuan heard this, he picked up his pen and drew out a red line on Guide City’s map. “This is the path we took while pursuing Jing Daoxian. Based on the information we have at present, he has suffered grievous injuries, so he can’t advance too quickly. In addition, there are no reports of him using any transportation.”

“Based on the snapshots occasionally taken by the Eye in the Sky, that’s indeed the case. Jing Daoxian didn’t walk very quickly, reaching the square’s vicinity at approximately 8:55 p.m.…” the lady briefed him in detail.

“Then, did you notice that the distance between Xiangjun Road to Changjiang Road only takes up less than 5% of his entire trajectory in Guide City. Yet, he spent nearly ten minutes there. Can someone tell me why?” Qiao Siyuan glared at everyone as he asked.

“Perhaps he needed to tend to his wounds?” a young man suggested.

Qiao Siyuan said stoically, “Does anyone of you remember our encounter with a high-schooler on that stretch of road?”

Everyone took some time to recall. When the lady realized what he was talking about, she hurriedly said, “The youth who you asked about Jing Daoxian’s direction of escape?”

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 32 - Sunset College's New Discovery

Chapter 32: Sunset College’s New Discovery

Translator: CKtalon **Editor:** CKtalon

Qiao Siyuan nodded gently. “That’s right. He’s the one.”

“Minister, do you think that youth is in cahoots with Jing Daoxian?” the blonde, green-eyed lady asked Qiao Siyuan.

Qiao Siyuan focused on the laid-out map on the table before saying, “No. He’s likely an ordinary high-schooler. However, since he met Jing Daoxian in that period of time, perhaps we might be able to understand why Jing Daoxian had spent abnormal amounts of time in that area through him. Think of a way to find that high-schooler.”

Everyone exchanged looks. They hadn’t especially taken note of the youth that passed them by. Furthermore, it was in the evening and the youth hadn’t worn anything that made himself stand out. To seek him out without a clue left them somewhat at a loss.

“I’ll sketch up the youth for you. To appear in that vicinity at that time while wearing home clothes means that he lives nearby. Check the nearby cameras to see if they managed to capture him. Bring him back as quickly as possible,” Qiao Siyuan said.

…

With the Lost Immortal Sutra in hand, Zhou Wen originally had the intention of leaving it somewhere far from home. However, the moment he left his doorstep, he saw a car

parked along the street. Li Xuan was inside the car, waving at him.

“Is there something wrong?” Zhou Wen walked over and asked.

“Get in the car first.” Li Xuan opened the door and moved inside, gesturing for him to get in.

Zhou Wen thought for a moment and got in.

Li Xuan closed the door and rolled up the window. Then, he unlocked his phone and handed it to Zhou Wen. “Take a look at this.”

Zhou Wen gave him a suspicious glance and discovered that there was a picture shown on the screen—a document.

As the text was too tiny, Zhou Wen had no choice but to swipe across the phone’s screen to zoom in. Only then did he see what the document was about.

It appeared to be a draft, indicating that a new dimensional zone had been found in the vicinity of Ancient Inlet. Furthermore, Companion Beasts in the form of organs had been discovered inside. The report then provided some data and analysis.

“Why are you showing me this?” Zhou Wen asked Li Xuan with a perplexed look.

Li Xuan answered in excitement, “Ancient Inlet is inside Sunset College. This newly discovered dimensional zone will be Sunset College’s in the future.”

“So what?” Zhou Wen still didn’t get Li Xuan’s excitement.

“So what? It means that students of Sunset College will have the opportunity of entering this newly discovered dimensional zone in the future. They will have a chance of obtaining organ-type Companion Beasts.”

Seeing Zhou Wen’s unfazed expression, Li Xuan continued, “Companion Beasts in the form of organs are extremely rare. You might not have heard of them, but I can very responsibly tell you that those things are a lot more precious than the typical Companion Beast. Let me put it this way. If your heart were to be wrecked by someone or if you were on your deathbed with a heart disease, having a Companion Beast in the shape of a heart means it could fuse with your heart and replace your original heart. It would enhance your heart’s functionality…”

“It does sound useful.” Zhou Wen finally had a chance to speak after listening for a period of time.

“It’s far from useful. Let me ask you. Do you know how many elderly people in the League die a year from heart diseases? And how many people die from tumors in their organs? Organ-type Companion Beasts can be sold for astronomical prices. Besides, even if you don’t sell it and keep it for yourself, it will be equivalent to having an additional life when you adventure in dimensional zones…”

Li Xuan droned on before ending with one statement. “The benefits of that dimensional zone producing organ-type Companion Beasts is something only members of Sunset College can enjoy. Don’t hesitate any further. Follow me to Sunset College. Delay any further and it will be too late. If this piece of news is officially announced, all the top students across the country will swarm to apply at Sunset College. That special admissions quota won’t be enough.”

“Alright. I’ll head back and do the registration.” Zhou Wen didn’t hesitate and agreed to it.

Although he didn’t wish to have ties with the An family, he also didn’t wish for the An family to affect his normal life. Since applying to Sunset College brought about so many benefits, there was no reason for him to give it up, much less give it up because of the An family.

“Fill in the application on the Internet before handing me your identification card. Leave the rest to me,” Li Xuan hurriedly said.

In fact, after Zhou Wen had his college entrance examination results, all he needed to do was apply at Sunset College’s official website and await admission.

With Zhou Wen’s results, it wasn’t a problem for him to be admitted under ordinary circumstances. However, things were no longer the same. Once the discovery of organ-type Companion Beasts had been announced, competition for the limited number of spots would become intense. Zhou Wen might not be admitted as a result.

Li Xuan took Zhou Wen’s identification card and planned on using some of his connections to get him admitted to Sunset College.

Zhou Wen didn’t speak further. After registering on the website with his phone, he gave his identification card to Li Xuan.

“That should be it. I’ll be heading back to Luoyang. If there’s nothing else for you here, pack up and head with me to Luoyang. I’ll take you around to familiarize you with Luoyang and Sunset College’s campus,” Li Xuan said as he put away the identification card.

“Alright. Wait a moment.” Zhou Wen got out of the car and headed home to pack up.

“Wait? I’ll help you with the packing.” Li Xuan got out of the car and followed Zhou Wen home.

Zhou Wen didn’t have much to pack to begin with. After packing up some of his daily necessities and clothes, he left Guide City with Li Xuan.

Guide City wasn’t too far from Luoyang. Before the dimensional storms happened, it took about three to four hours by car.

However, many areas these days had turned into dimensional zones. Circling around them doubled the journey time at the very least, so it took them more than ten hours to get there.

Li Xuan had wanted to have a good chat with Zhou Wen, but to his dismay, Zhou Wen began gaming the moment he got into the car. His eyes stayed peeled to the screen, leaving Li Xuan somewhat depressed.

Is this guy for real? Does he have such skills despite being so obsessed with gaming? Li Xuan was very experienced when it came to acting—especially when it came to playing the pig to prey on tigers.

But regardless of how he looked at it, Zhou Wen didn’t seem to be acting. He truly looked obsessed with gaming.

Li Xuan sat there watching Zhou Wen game for quite a while before becoming extremely bored. Wasn’t it just the constant grinding of some monster ants? Such repetitive and boring games had lost favor decades ago.

“Zhou Wen, is that game so fun?” Bored after watching for a while, Li Xuan asked.

“It’s fun,” Zhou Wen said without looking away from the screen.

As he was afraid that Li Xuan had noticed something, he didn’t enter the Ancient Imperial City. Instead, he kept grinding at the Ant Nest.

After obtaining the mysterious phone, Zhou Wen had already looked up most of the dimensional zones on Earth. Although there were a few dimensional zones that resembled the Ant Nest, they were different from the one in-game. Vigor Ants didn’t exist either.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 33 - Undistracted

Chapter 33: Undistracted

Translator: CKtalon **Editor:** CKtalon

Li Xuan found it boring as he closed his eyes to circulate his Primordial Energy to begin cultivating his Invincible Connate Divine Art.

As for Zhou Wen, he controlled his blood-colored avatar and stormed towards the Silver-Winged Flying Ant.

Although he had the experience gleaned from killing the Skeleton General—a Legendary stage creature—he found his ability falling short when facing the Silver-Winged Flying Ant. He was killed after a few clashes.

This Silver-Winged Flying Ant seems more difficult to deal with than the Skeleton General. It's faster and it has the ability of flight. It's unrestricted due to the lack of the skeleton horse. Zhou Wen frowned slightly. He originally thought that he had improved significantly over the recent period of time, but after a clash with the Silver-Winged Flying Ant, he realized how small the improvement was.

If I can incubate the Skeleton General's Companion Egg, I should be able to kill the Silver-Winged Flying Ant using the Skeleton General's strength to fight it. Unfortunately, as I don't have the Invincible Connate Divine Art, it's almost impossible for me to incubate a Legendary stage Companion Egg at the Mortal stage. As Zhou Wen thought over the matter, he went back to his original thoughts of combining Inch Punch and Vigor Divine Fist.

However, he didn't have the means to practice while in the car. Having reached a bottleneck in-game and unable to

make any progress, he felt that it was pointless continuing for it was a waste of his blood.

Seeing Li Xuan enter a cultivation state and with the driver not taking a look back at the situation, Zhou Wen took out the Lost Immortal Sutra and planned on reading the contents within.

The Lost Immortal Sutra had the ability to perplex the mind. Even a terrifying expert like Jing Daoxian was unable to focus fully to finish reading the text.

However, Zhou Wen was different. As the former principal of Guide High School had mentioned, Zhou Wen could be absolutely focused on anything if he so wished. This was the main reason for his excellent studies and fast cultivation.

Now, with Zhou Wen’s mind completely settled, he read the Lost Immortal Sutra without any distractions. The power of the text that could perplex the human mind failed to distract Zhou Wen at all.

The focused Zhou Wen just wanted to finish reading the contents; his brain didn’t have any capacity for second thoughts. So even though the textual power of the Lost Immortal Sutra was extremely bewitching, the thoughts failed to distract him.

No one had ever been able to read Lost Immortal Sutra from cover to cover; yet, Zhou Wen managed to do so without any incidents occurring. Zhou Wen was completely engrossed as he finished reading it.

Humans had a plethora of emotions that could cause them to be enticed by various things. Even Buddha found it difficult to remain unmoved. So although it wasn’t the case

that there wasn’t anyone who could finish reading the Lost Immortal Sutra, there was only a handful.

People like Zhou Wen, who could dedicate himself once they made up their mind to be truly focused, were an extremely small minority in the League. Even Epic stage bigwigs whose strength far exceeded Zhou Wen couldn’t achieve this focused state of mind.

Even the immortals of heaven would be lost to the enticement, giving Lost Immortal Sutra its name.

Zhou Wen managed to read it from cover to cover without being perplexed by the textual power. The Lost Immortal Sutra which had never been read by others finally appeared in Zhou Wen’s eyes in their entirety.

When Zhou Wen had finished reading the final word of Lost Immortal Sutra, he suddenly felt his body quake. Primordial Energy in his body began automatically flowing at some point in time.

In the past, Zhou Wen had cultivated years of Ascetic Meditation, so once his Primordial Energy did a circulation, it would circulate in the Ascetic Meditation’s trajectory. However, this time, the Primordial Energy’s trajectory followed a strange path that Zhou Wen had never seen before. It nearly coursed through his entire body in constant circulation.

Based on what Zhou Wen knew, any kind of Primordial Energy Art had a beginning and an end.

For example, Ascetic Meditation’s beginning point was in the dantian’s sea of energy. When the Primordial Energy flowed out of it, it would follow his meridians and ultimately return

to the sea of energy after completing one circulation. The sea of energy was the reservoir of Primordial Energy.

Most Primordial Energy Arts were the same. Certain special Primordial Energy Arts would forge an extremely special sea of energy in particular regions, or multiple ones. However, they were ultimately meant as a reservoir for Primordial Energy.

Now, Zhou Wen's physical situation was a little odd. The Primordial Energy in his body kept flowing repeatedly without stopping. There wasn't anywhere he could store his Primordial Energy or for it to stop. It was like a perpetually moving train on a circular track.

Zhou Wen was somewhat alarmed as he attempted to circulate Ascetic Meditation to redirect the out-of-control Primordial Energy back to a proper trajectory. However, he quickly realized that the Ascetic Meditation he had been cultivating for years was helpless. The Primordial Energy didn't listen to his instructions.

He didn't panic as a result. He carefully sensed the trajectory of his Primordial Energy circulation and quickly discovered that the trajectory followed the Lost Immortal Sutra's circulation trajectory.

Eh, I actually still remember the Lost Immortal Sutra? Zhou Wen was somewhat taken aback when he thought of the Lost Immortal Sutra. After all, he had been thinking about other things, but at this moment, he still remembered it clearly. He could recall each and every word of the entire Lost Immortal Sutra. There weren't any signs of forgetting them as he had previously.

If the narrow-minded Jing Daoxian were to know that Zhou Wen hadn't died from reading the Lost Immortal Sutra in its

entirety, to the point of gaining a basic mastery of it, he would probably throw up blood in anger.

Unable to stop his Primordial Energy from circulating, Zhou Wen could only take the risk to cultivate in the Lost Immortal Sutra. Once he tried, he felt his Primordial Energy immediately course in delight, answering to the call of the Lost Immortal Sutra.

He originally intended to read the Lost Immortal Sutra's content once, but to his surprise, he actually ended up mastering it after he had finished reading. He had no idea if it was a boon or bane for him.

Zhou Wen entered a cultivation state without realizing that the thirteen violet metal sheets had gradually turned to dust and vanished when he began cultivating the Lost Immortal Sutra.

After cultivating it, he found several points of interest. It really didn't have a concept of a sea of energy. His Primordial Energy would constantly circulate around his body unceasingly, like the blood that coursed through his veins.

Zhou Wen's circulation of the Lost Immortal Sutra allowed him to control the speed of the Primordial Energy flow, but he wasn't able to completely stop it.

Even if he didn't circulate the Lost Immortal Sutra, his Primordial Energy would continue circulating slowly, following the Lost Immortal Sutra's pathways.

With the circulation of the Lost Immortal Sutra, Zhou Wen felt his entire body abruptly become light. It felt as though his body had its shackles unlocked, giving him an indescribable sense of freedom and comfort.

But other than that, there was nothing special. He hadn’t advanced to the Legendary stage and it was still slowly circulating.

Zhou Wen realized that he didn’t need to deliberately cultivate in the Lost Immortal Sutra. When he opened his eyes to move about, he found that the Primordial Energy would continue to circulate automatically. His actions didn’t influence it at all.

I have to cultivate even if I don’t wish to. Zhou Wen sighed secretly.

Without needing to deliberately cultivate Lost Immortal Sutra and with nothing else to do, Zhou Wen picked up the mysterious phone and used the hidden needle in his ring to stab his finger, dripping a drop of blood onto the phone’s screen.

This time, Zhou Wen wasn’t in a rush to enter the game dungeons. He first took a look at his stats in-game.

Zhou Wen

Age: 16 years

Lifeform level: Mortal

Strength: 10

Speed: 10

Constitution: 10

Primordial Energy: 10

Primordial Energy Art: Lost Immortal Sutra

Primordial Energy Skill: Vigor Divine Fist, Skeleton Palm

Companion Beast: Mutated Vigor Ant (Mortal)

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 34 - Murmuring

Chapter 34: Murmuring

Translator: CKtalon **Editor:** CKtalon

Zhou Wen was slightly surprised. He hadn't advanced to the Legendary stage, but all his stats had risen by 1 point, from 9 to 10.

This increment of one point left Zhou Wen somewhat amazed. This was because 9 seemed to be the limits of the Mortal stage. If one didn't advance to the Legendary stage, absorbing dimensional crystals with values of 10 or more was useless.

This had already been proven when he absorbed the 13-valued Speed Crystal. However, the appearance of the Lost Immortal Sutra had broken that limitation.

What kind of Primordial Energy Art is Lost Immortal Sutra? The moment he thought of it, he realized that the thirteen violet metallic sheets had vanished at some point in time.

Beside him, Li Xuan was still in cultivation while the driver ahead was isolated from them by a transparent bullet-proof glass. It was impossible for them to have taken the Lost Immortal Sutra away.

Zhou Wen searched everywhere for the Lost Immortal Sutra's violet metallic sheets to no avail.

How odd. Zhou Wen frowned slightly, unsure if the loss of the Lost Immortal Sutra was a good or bad thing.

But since he couldn’t find it, Zhou Wen didn’t force it. Seeing Li Xuan still cultivating his Invincible Connate Divine Art, he raised his phone and began gaming. However, killing ordinary Vigor Ants and Mutated Vigor Ants were of little meaning. He quit the game after playing for a while, leaning into his seat and sleeping.

If the typical person wanted to sleep, it wasn’t something that could happen at will. However, Zhou Wen was different. If he wished to sleep, he could quickly fall asleep anytime, anywhere. Even if perilous situations were all around him, he could still fall asleep.

This was a type of talent that not everyone was capable of.

The reason Zhou Wen decided to sleep now was to figure out if he would still suffer from sleep paralysis after mastering Lost Immortal Sutra.

Badump! Badump!

Shortly after he fell asleep, Zhou Wen felt his heart race again. He felt stifled in the chest as though something was pressing down on him.

Damn it, here it comes again! Zhou Wen was stumped. He had already cultivated the Lost Immortal Sutra, but the anomaly of sleep paralysis remained.

Not only had it not been removed, but it had appeared to have worsened. Zhou Wen could vaguely hear strange murmurings by his ears. They didn’t sound like they came from the mortal world, appearing in an oxymoronic manner of being extremely far and extremely near. He couldn’t figure out what was being said as they sounded like the ravings of devils in hell.

In this turbid half-sleep state, Zhou Wen snapped awake from the abnormal state of sleep paralysis only when Li Xuan nudged him awake.

However, unlike the last two instances of sleep paralysis, Zhou Wen didn't have the discomfort of having the urge to vomit. He had only broken out into a cold sweat. He felt refreshed when the wind blew on him, giving him a better state of mind.

"Sunset College follows the management model of a partially-restricted state. After we matriculate, we will have to stay in dorms. Even I'm no exception. Before that, why don't you stay at my place?" Li Xuan got out of the car and took Zhou Wen to a villa.

After the dimensional storms, due to Luoyang being rich in pan-dimensional resources, it quickly became a first-tier city of the League's East District. This area was also the most flourishing area in the city, so every spot was worth its weight in gold. People who could live in such villas were both rich and noble.

Zhou Wen wasn't surprised that Li Xuan could live in a place like this. What left him surprised that apart from Li Xuan's driver, this massive villa didn't have a single servant.

"Don't tell me you clean such a huge place alone?" Zhou Wen asked while sitting on the sofa.

"There were a few servants in the past, but I managed to get rid of them. After all, I don't want outsiders to know of certain matters." Li Xuan took out a beverage can from the refrigerator and threw it at Zhou Wen. He then continued with a smile, "Besides, I seldom return here. As a profligate scion, I naturally have to spend my nights out. That matches my persona. As for you, feel free to stay here. After school

begins, I'll think of a way to get the school to assign us the same dorm."

"Aren't there any single-person dorms in school?" Zhou Wen frowned slightly. He had been used to living alone from a young age. Besides, he needed to game, so it would be better if he lived alone.

"No. The League has always been thinking up means to nurture our teamwork. Be it in the combat test of having four people a team or the team assignments during university, it's all built on this premise. It's especially so for Sunset College which has a military background. The management style is also partially militaristic. It's impossible to get a single room. Even An Jing has to live in a group dorm," Li Xuan said.

"An Jing has also entered Sunset College?" Zhou Wen was slightly taken aback.

"Definitely. Her elder brother is Overseer An Tianzuo, one of the military brass. She definitely will attend Sunset College which has a militaristic background."

Having said that, Li Xuan looked at Zhou Wen with a cheeky smile. "Bro, tell me. How the hell did you offend An Jing? She even especially transferred to Guide High School to beat you up. An Jing would never have done something like that in the past."

Zhou Wen thought and asked Li Xuan, "Do you know Ouyang Lan?"

"Of course, if one doesn't know Ouyang Lan in a place like Luoyang, they would have lived here for nothing," Li Xuan said with a smile. "Don't tell me you offended Ouyang Lan?

Then you are truly unlucky. It’s no wonder An Jing came over to beat you up.”

Zhou Wen shook his head. “I didn’t offend Ouyang Lan.”

“Then why did you mention her?” Li Xuan looked at Zhou Wen, baffled.

Zhou Wen asked again, “Has something happened to Ouyang Lan recently?”

“Yes. Who in Luoyang City doesn’t know that Ouyang Lan has remarried? However, there wasn’t any grand wedding. Only a few close relatives and friends were invited for a gathering. Outsiders don’t even know what kind of man Ouyang Lan has married. I heard it’s a translator with the surname Zhou…” Having said that, Li Xuan’s eyes widened. He looked at Zhou Wen and asked, “Your surname is Zhou as well… Don’t tell me that there’s some relationship between the two of you?”

Zhou Wen shook his head without a word. Li Xuan felt his curiosity itching at him but was helpless with Zhou Wen refusing to speak.

After Zhou Wen took up residence in Li Xuan’s place, he went to his room and immediately called Zhou Lingfeng.

Zhou Lingfeng was his father, not his son. It wasn’t his prerogative to question Zhou Lingfeng’s decisions. Therefore, Zhou Wen had never delved deep into his thoughts before.

In fact, Zhou Lingfeng had never overturned Zhou Wen’s decisions. He hadn’t even participated or given his advice on something as major as attending university. This had

seemingly become something tacit between the father-son duo.

Zhou Wen called Zhou Lingfeng to inform him that he was in Luoyang and would be attending school at Sunset College.

“Son, you’re done with the college entrance exam? How did you do?” Zhou Lingfeng’s voice sounded over the phone, sounding lethargic.

“Not bad. I applied for Sunset College. If nothing surprising crops up, I’ll be attending school at Sunset College in the future,” Zhou Wen said.

“Sunset College? Isn’t that in Luoyang? Come over and live with me then,” Zhou Lingfeng said.

“There’s no need to. I’ll be staying at a friend’s place for the time being. I’ll be living on-campus once I matriculate.” Zhou Wen didn’t wish to have any ties with the An family.

Zhou Lingfeng didn’t force him. “Alright then. If there’s anything, just tell me. I’ll make sure to help you. You are already in college, so you aren’t young anymore. I’ll give you a bit more living allowance in the future.”

Zhou Wen didn’t reject it but asked, “Dad, where do you obtain the Sun Strafe Art from?”

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 35 - Ashen Palm

Chapter 35: Ashen Palm

Translator: CKtalon **Editor:** CKtalon

“What Sun Strafe Art?” Zhou Lingfeng asked in surprise.

“Didn’t you get An Jing to send me the Sun Strafe Art?” Zhou Wen was also taken aback.

“It’s not like you don’t know that I have zero interest in cultivation. I don’t know much about such matters,” Zhou Lingfeng said.

Zhou Wen fell silent in thought. If the Sun Strafe Art wasn’t given to him by Zhou Lingfeng, then why did An Jing claim that it was given by Zhou Lingfeng? Matters had seemed to become somewhat complicated.

What is An Jing up to? Is the Sun Strafe Art real or fake? Zhou Wen was momentarily unable to figure things out.

Zhou Wen had no means to figure out the authenticity of the Sun Strafe Art. The average person had no means of coming into contact with the Sun Strafe Art, so it was even more impossible to determine its authenticity.

Meanwhile, Zhou Lingfeng continued, “If it was given by Little Jing, it might be some well-meant. Just keep it for now. I’ll ask her when I meet her again.”

“Alright.” Zhou Wen didn’t continue. Zhou Lingfeng’s impression of the An family siblings seemed pretty good, so it was pointless to say anything else until he figured out the truth.

Everyone had their independent thought processes. It was impossible to force someone to view things from your own point of view, even the person closest to you. Only reality had convincing power. Zhou Wen had understood this reason from a young age.

After hanging up, Zhou Wen composed himself. He didn't game but instead began practicing his palm techniques.

He had tried many times but had failed to use the force-exerting principles of Inch Punch on Vigor Divine Fist. Therefore, he went for second best in a bid to fuse Skeleton Palm and Inch Punch together as a reference.

With complete focus, he used the techniques of Inch Punch when delivering Skeleton Palm.

Skeleton Palm's uniqueness was indeed compatible with Inch Punch. This process was a lot smoother than Zhou Wen imagined. The first few palm strikes were somewhat rough as he failed to fuse the two together correctly.

However, it didn't take long for Zhou Wen to grasp the trick. The fusion of the two attacks became increasingly better.

After striking out about ten times, Zhou Wen's Primordial Energy was completely drained. All he could do was go in-game to grind on Vigor Ants to use the Primordial Energy Crystals that appeared to replenish his Primordial Energy for further practice.

Shortly after he entered the game, Zhou Wen was astonished to discover that his Primordial Energy had already recovered a little before a Primordial Energy Crystal dropped.

Back when he cultivated Ascetic Meditation, it would take him about an hour to recover one Primordial Energy point. Now, only a few minutes had passed for him to recover one point of Primordial Energy. The speed at which the recovery far exceeded his imagination.

Is this the outcome of Lost Immortal Sutra? Zhou Wen felt the Primordial Energy slowly coursing through his body as he felt some delight.

To achieve such Primordial Energy recovery speeds at the Mortal stage was unprecedented according to what Zhou Wen knew.

Ignoring whether the Lost Immortal Sutra had any other uses or not, just this one trait alone was sufficiently shocking.

While grinding in-game with the blood-colored avatar, the mysterious phone was purely controlled by a touch-screen. However, the control of the blood-colored avatar didn’t require any contact with the screen. Most of the time, just thinking was enough to control it. There was some psychic connection between the two.

Thoughts and feelings were synchronized, so all the battle experience the blood-colored avatar received in-game was shared with Zhou Wen.

Upon seeing a Mutated Vigor Ant crawl over, Zhou Wen controlled his phone’s angle and used his thoughts to control the blood-colored avatar. He wanted to attempt to see if he could fuse Skeleton Palm and Inch Punch together.

When the blood-colored avatar struck the Mutated Vigor Ant on the head with its palm, the carapace on the Mutated Vigor Ant’s head remained undamaged. However, after

lunging forward a few steps, the Mutated Vigor Ant staggered before collapsing onto the ground.

On the left corner of the phone's screen: Killed Mortal Mutated Vigor Ant.

The first line wasn't of anything to take note of since Zhou Wen had seen it countless times. Besides, this Mutated Vigor Ant hadn't dropped anything.

It was the second line that left Zhou Wen somewhat surprised.

"Acquired Skeleton Palm's high-level skill. Skeleton Palm has evolved into Ashen Palm."

Zhou Wen glanced at the blood-colored avatar's stats and found that the Skeleton Palm in the Primordial Energy Skill row had vanished. Replacing it was a Primordial Energy Skill known as Ashen Palm.

Primordial Energy Skill: Vigor Divine Fist (Rank 9)

Primordial Energy Skill: Ashen Palm (Rank 10)

Rank 10? Wasn't Skeleton Palm a Rank 1 Primordial Energy Skill? How did it become Rank 10 after it evolved into Ashen Palm? Zhou Wen was somewhat puzzled.

Ashen Palm at Rank 10 required expending 5 Primordial Energy points with each use. Its cost was the same as the Rank 9 Vigor Divine Fist.

From the Primordial Energy cost, a Rank 10 Ashen Palm likely has the same potency as a Rank 9 Vigor Divine Fist. Zhou Wen had the intention to test the potency of Ashen Palm, but ordinary Vigor Ants and Mutated Vigor Ants

were unable to withstand this single strike. It didn’t matter if it was Rank 1 or Rank 9.

After some thought, Zhou Wen decided to leave the Ant Nest dungeon and switch to entering the Ancient Imperial City dungeon.

As long as the blood-colored avatar didn’t die, leaving a dungeon and re-entering or switching dungeons didn’t require him to waste blood.

However, if the blood-colored avatar didn’t die, the game dungeons wouldn’t refresh, so the creatures in the dungeons wouldn’t be refreshed either.

The blood-colored avatar had previously died in the Ant Nest, so after entering Ancient Imperial City, the dimensional creatures in Ancient Imperial City had already reappeared. The blood-colored avatar rode the Mutated Vigor Ant as it stormed ahead and soon found the newly spawned Skeleton General.

Like previously, he made the blood-colored avatar jump off the Mutated Vigor Ant and charge at the Skeleton General.

Using his positioning techniques to circle around the skeleton horse, it took him less than twenty minutes to find an opportunity. He got the blood-colored avatar to leap up and ride on the skeleton horse’s back, sitting right behind the Skeleton General.

However, this time, Zhou Wen didn’t get the blood-colored avatar to strike the Skeleton General’s weakness—the eye sockets. Instead, he directly struck at the back of the Skeleton General’s skull with his palm.

This palm didn’t injure the Skeleton General’s head at all. However, the blood-colored flames in the skull seemed to splatter out like a crushed watermelon.

Due to the momentum of the strike, the Skeleton General lunged forward on the skeleton horse before his bones scattered, turning into a pile on the ground.

“Killed Legendary Skeleton General. Discovered Skeleton General dimensional crystal.”

Zhou Wen looked at the dimensional crystal that had dropped in-game, feeling a pleasant surprise.

Ashen Palm could destroy the Skeleton General even without striking its weakness. Its potency was clearly above the Rank 9 Vigor Divine Fist.

A Rank 10 Primordial Energy Skill is indeed powerful. I wonder if Ashen Palm has a chance of killing the Silver-Winged Flying Ant. Zhou Wen had the urge to immediately storm to the Silver-Winged Flying Ant to give it a try.

Vigor Divine Fist was too slow when it came to throwing a punch, preventing him from touching the Silver-Winged Flying Ant. However, Ashen Palm didn’t have such a weakness. It was extremely fast when delivering a palm strike

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 36

Chapter 36: Making up the Numbers

Translator: CKtalon **Editor:** CKtalon

The blood-colored avatar picked up the Skeleton General's crystal and immediately, a potent Primordial Energy surged into Zhou Wen's body like a boring drill that opened up a brand new path.

After this force slowly disappeared, a notification popped up on the game screen: Absorbed Skeleton General Crystal. Learned Legendary Primordial Energy Skill—Penetrating Pierce.

Zhou Wen had already been prepared to suffer damage, but he was surprised that everything had happened rather smoothly.

With a Mortal stage body, one could only fuse with Mortal Primordial Energy Skill Crystals under normal circumstances. If one forcefully fused a Legendary Primordial Energy Skill, their bodies would suffer an immense impact. The consequences ranged from damaged meridians to instant death.

Zhou Wen had relied on his body being far stronger than the typical Mortal stage, and with no fear of death in-game, this gave him the courage to absorb the Skeleton General Crystal. Everything went smoothly and other than the pain of having a Primordial Energy passageway open up in him, there wasn't any damage dealt to him.

"Is this the case when played in-game or is this an effect of Lost Immortal Sutra?" Zhou Wen couldn't be sure of the reason, but ultimately, it was a boon for him.

After glancing at the provided information in-game, Penetrating Pierce was a Rank 1 Legendary Primordial Energy Skill. However, Penetrating Pierce was a Primordial Energy Skill that required a spear-type weapon to deliver maximum force.

“Li Xuan, come out here!” Zhou Wen was planning on switching dungeons to try his chances at killing the Silver-Winged Flying Ant in Ant Nest when he heard a woman’s voice sound at the villa’s entrance. At the same time, the doorbell kept ringing.

Li Xuan probably wasn’t home and he was the only one inside.

Although Zhou Wen heard the doorbell, the visitor had come for Li Xuan. Since the latter wasn’t home, he didn’t have any intention of opening the door. He continued gaming while sitting on the sofa.

“Li Xuan, I know you’re home. If you don’t come on out, don’t blame me!” After pressing the doorbell for quite some time, the woman still refused to give up.

Zhou Wen completely ignored her and pretended not to hear her shouts. The doorbell’s ringing didn’t disturb him in any way, so he continued gaming.

Zhou Wen imagined that the woman would leave quickly, but to his surprise, the woman stopped after yelling for a while. Then, two seconds later, there was a loud bang followed by two thuds. The door had been kicked open!

The woman dashed into the villa and saw no one in the living room, so she headed straight upstairs.

She appeared to be very familiar with the place, rushing straight for Li Xuan’s room. Without knocking, she kicked the door open.

“Li Xuan, there’s no hiding today!” Seeing the room empty, the woman headed down the corridor and kicked open one room after another.

When she reached the second room, she saw Zhou Wen gaming while leaning on the bedhead.

Seeing a person, the woman was delighted. However, she immediately wore a look of disappointment when she realized that it wasn’t Li Xuan. She glared at Zhou Wen and asked, “What’s wrong with you? Didn’t you hear me screaming?”

“I did,” Zhou Wen answered as he gamed, not even looking up at the woman.

“Why didn’t you answer when you heard me?” the woman said, peeved.

“You were looking for Li Xuan, not me. What should I say?” Zhou Wen answered in passing.

The woman was instantly at a loss for a rejoinder. She glared at Zhou Wen fiercely and asked, “Where’s Li Xuan?”

“He’s out.”

“I know that he’s out. I’m asking you where he is.” The woman didn’t feel that there was any need to be polite in front of this fellow.

“I’ve no idea,” Zhou Wen answered very succinctly because he really had no idea.

Just as the woman was about to say something, her phone rang. She picked up the call, said a few words, and prepared to turn to leave as though there was something pressing.

But after taking a few steps, the woman seemed to think of something. She rushed back in front of Zhou Wen and yanked him up by the arm. “Follow me. Count it as helping me. At the very least, you can make up the numbers.”

“Who are you? I don’t know you.” Zhou Wen frowned slightly, wishing to free himself from the woman’s grasp.

“For you to stay here, you must be one of Li Xuan’s trashy friends. How can you not even know his elder sister? You enjoy life with Li Xuan all thanks to him. Is there a problem helping his sister with something?” The woman seemed anxious, pulling Zhou Wen as she walked out.

Zhou Wen was immediately rendered speechless. He wasn’t a trashy friend as she described, but it was true that he was living at Li Xuan’s place at his expense.

“Let me go. I can walk on my own. What help do you need from me?” Zhou Wen thought about it and felt that if it wasn’t anything serious, he could always help as payment for rent.

The woman didn’t loosen her grip upon hearing that. She continued speaking as she walked. “Don’t worry. I’m only getting you to make up the numbers. I don’t have any hopes of you doing anything. Just don’t screw things up.”

Without even knowing the name of Li Xuan’s sister, he was pulled out of the villa.

A motorbike was parked at the villa’s entrance. After throwing the helmet that hung on the handle to Zhou Wen,

she got on and said, “Come on up.”

When he saw her tall figure in a pair of short boots, t-shirt, and jeans, with black curly hair freely cascading down, he found a heroic vibe to her. She was very different from the women Zhou Wen had previously met.

However, Zhou Wen didn’t have any other thoughts about it. After putting on the helmet, he sat behind Li Xuan’s sister.

“Sit tight.” As there was only one helmet, the woman naturally didn’t have one to wear after giving it to Zhou Wen. When the engine roared to life, her curly hair began flailing in the wind, sweeping across Zhou Wen from time to time.

On the streets of Luoyang, one could occasionally see experts riding all kinds of dimensional creatures. In contrast, this was rarely seen in Guide City.

Vehicles and Companion Beasts followed their own paths looking somewhat bizarre and harmonious.

Companion Beasts were taking on an increasingly important role in the League. Work that many humans and machines were unable to complete required the help of Companion Beasts.

With powerful Companion Beasts, not only did it strengthen oneself, but it could also provide service to all of humanity.

The woman drove extremely fast, swerving through traffic in a harrowing manner. However, she was surprisingly stable, without showing any signs of emergency braking.

Zhou Wen sat behind her, with his hands still on his phone gaming. The journey didn’t affect his ability to game.

After riding for quite a while, Li Xuan’s sister—Li Weiyang—impression of Zhou Wen improved after not feeling any hands placed around her waist.

She had never had a good impression of Li Xuan’s bad company. If she wasn’t in a rush to get Zhou Wen to make up the numbers, she wouldn’t have brought him along. She originally had imagined that Zhou Wen would hug her waist to take advantage of her while riding on the bike, but none of that happened. Even his body hadn’t made any contact with her, as though he was deliberately keeping a distance.

I never expected Li Xuan’s friends to show some manners, Li Weiyang thought as she subconsciously looked back at Zhou Wen. It would have been fine if she hadn’t looked back, but with that one look, all her favorable impression was gone.

She originally imagined that Zhou Wen was being a gentleman, but when she looked back, she realized that Zhou Wen was still gaming on his phone, having the time of his life. From the way he was engrossed in it, it looked as though he wished to be in the game itself.

From the looks of it, I was overthinking things. How could any of Li Xuan’s friends be a gentleman? Li Weiyang thought to herself in a self-deprecating manner.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 37 - Vying for the Companion Egg

Chapter 37: Vying for the Companion Egg

Translator: CKtalon **Editor:** CKtalon

Li Weiyang stopped inside a Companion Beast Arena with Zhou Wen. A few girls who had been waiting outside rushed over and began breaking out into a cacophony.

After listening for a while, Zhou Wen had a rough idea of what was happening.

Li Weiyang and the few girls were students of Sunset College. They were his future seniors.

These girls and another girl had entered a dimensional zone to slay dimensional creatures and were lucky enough to have a Mortal Companion Egg drop.

It was an Ancient War Steed Companion Egg. Furthermore, it had apparently dropped from a Mutated Ancient War Steed.

Mortal Companion Eggs were rare to begin with, so to have one drop was a really lucky event. Furthermore, it had dropped from a Mutated Ancient War Steed. This meant that its stats would be extremely high, making it priceless.

Companion Beasts of the same level varied drastically in terms of stats. Mortal Companion Beasts' four main basic stats typically varied between 1–9. As for Legendary Companion Beasts, their basic stats varied between 10–18.

The importance of basic stats was obvious. The higher the stats, the more powerful their innate abilities were. After

becoming a Companion Beast, the augmentation they provided their owners was boosted as well.

Mutated Ancient War Steeds were top-notch when it came to Strength and Speed at the Mortal stage; therefore, they definitely weren’t inferior in Companion Beast form. To be able to drop such a Companion Egg was definitely a great thing to happen.

However, the owner of the Companion Egg became the reason for the strife.

As a team, they should have split the spoils of war equally, but the girl who had obtained the Mutated Ancient War Steed Companion Egg claimed that she was the one responsible for killing the Mutated Ancient War Steed and digging out the Companion Egg. Therefore, she should have sole possession of it.

The other girls naturally disagreed. However, the girl, Su Mei, forcefully snatched the Companion Egg thanks to her boyfriend being quite a force to be reckoned with in school. She didn’t even intend to provide any compensation.

The girls were infuriated and as one of them had a close relationship with Li Weiyang, she got her to stand up for them.

After Li Weiyang had heard of the ins and outs, she originally intended to mediate the situation and get both parties to compromise. Su Mei could take the Companion Egg, but she needed to compensate the rest.

But to her surprise, Su Mei wouldn’t compromise at all thanks to her boyfriend’s standing. The situation became worse as both sides decided to battle at the Companion

Beast Arena. The winner would then be able to take the Mutated Ancient War Steed away.

Su Mei's boyfriend was a senior student at Sunset College named Gao Yang. Li Weiyang also knew him and how strong he was. Therefore, she wanted Li Xuan here and have him bring more people to stand by them in the event Gao Yang went back on his word after losing.

But to her dismay, she wasn't able to get Li Xuan on the phone. Unable to find him at home, all she could do was bring Zhou Wen along.

"Sis Weiyang, what do we do without Li Xuan being here?" The girls wore a look of worry.

Although Li Xuan had just been admitted into Sunset College, his infamy as a prodigal son of the Li family was well known in all of Luoyang. The girls were no exception.

Furthermore, they had often seen Li Xuan visiting Li Weiyang.

"What's there to be afraid of? I'm around?" Li Weiyang said.

"But Su Mei's boyfriend, Gao Yang, is a fourth-year senior. I heard that he's very…" a girl said, trembling.

"So what if he's a fourth-year? He's still at the Mortal stage. I have confidence in beating him and getting back the Companion Egg," Li Weiyang said.

Zhou Wen found it odd. Since Li Weiyang was Li Xuan's sister, it meant that she was the eldest daughter of the Li family. Why wasn't she able to settle such a trivial matter, to the point of having to settle it with a battle at the Companion Beast Arena?

He was automatically ignored by the girls because although he had a good build, he looked pale due to his loss of blood. He looked sickly and looked incapable of fighting.

After entering the arena, they came to a ring. From afar, there was a group of young men and women. Not only were their numbers far greater than Li Weiyang's side, but they were also mostly stoutly men.

Leading them was a tall and handsome man who was hugging a girl's waist by the side of the spectator stand. Upon seeing Li Weiyang walk over, he said with a laugh, "Li Weiyang, you actually have the guts to come?"

"Why not? Defeating you won't be difficult. I'll definitely get back the Companion Egg," Li Weiyang said.

"I've heard of your capability, but you are no way my match. Besides, I'm a fourth-year senior. It's really not nice bullying a junior like you," Gao Yang said with narrowed eyes.

"Gao Yang, what are you getting at?" Li Weiyang had an ominous feeling.

"I never bully others, so I've deliberately found a second-year junior like the rest of you. As long as anyone of you can defeat him, I'll return the Companion Egg on a golden plate. Of course, it needs to be a student at Sunset College. Outsiders don't count," Gao Yang said as he clapped his hands.

On a seat on the spectator stand behind Gao Yang, a figure stood up.

"Gu Dian!" When Li Weiyang and the other girls saw the figure, the color in their faces drained. The more timid one nearly burst into tears out of fear.

Zhou Wen was also alarmed as he stood by the side and sized up the man.

He had never seen a person look this fierce all his life.

Ugly and fierce-looking were two completely different concepts. This person didn’t look ugly, but he exuded vibes like a devil that left one shuddering. Timid people would probably be frightened to death if they met him in the middle of the night.

Zhou Wen never believed that looks alone could frighten someone to death. However, Gu Dian really left chills running through one’s heart, making one not dare look at him straight.

“Gao Yang, how despicable of you. You actually got Gu Dian to represent you. How much of a sore loser are you?” Li Weiyang said with an ugly expression.

Although she was very confident in her strength, Gu Dian was no ordinary student.

Gu Dian was nicknamed The Devil at school. Not only was it because of his muscular body, that stood more than two meters tall, or his fierce, devilish looks, but that he had unfathomable strength. His abnormal strength made him nearly invincible among those at the Mortal stage.

Gu Dian was probably the first and only person to beat up a senior on the first day he was admitted into Sunset College.

Although Li Weiyang had never fought Gu Dian, the latter had once pummeled a fourth-year senior whose strength almost equaled her with a few punches. Li Weiyang knew that her chances of victory against Gu Dian weren’t high.

Su Mei, who remained leaning on Gao Yang, mocked, “Li Weiyang, there’s something wrong with what you say. Gao Yang got a second-year because he just doesn’t want to bully a junior like you. So how can you say something like that? Besides, didn’t we already agree that the battle shouldn’t involve any outsiders? Only students from our school can participate in the battle. Isn’t Gu Dian a student of our Sunset College? If you think your strength is lacking, you are free to get help. We aren’t stopping you.”

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 38 - Are We Continuing?

Chapter 38: Are We Continuing?

Translator: CKtalon **Editor:** CKtalon

Li Weiyang was rendered speechless. It wasn't that there weren't any students that were stronger than Gu Dian in Sunset College. Those that ranked in the top twenty in the school's internal examinations were basically at the Legendary stage. They were naturally stronger than Gu Dian.

However, Li Weiyang didn't have any close ties with those seniors. They weren't necessarily going to provide their help without any reason if she recruited them. Furthermore, with the battle about to begin, it was too late.

Gao Yang and Su Mei had never mentioned letting Gu Dian fight. Clearly, by letting him step forward now, it was to prevent Li Weiyang and company from having the time to find more reinforcements.

"Sis Weiyang, what do we do now?" A girl looked at Li Weiyang worriedly.

Li Weiyang clenched her teeth. "At this juncture, I can only try my best."

"Sis Weiyang, perhaps we should just forget it. We don't want the Companion Egg. Gu Dian is so terrifying. It won't be good if he flares up and injures you," a girl said.

Although the girls were somewhat unwilling, they persuaded her to relent.

“We can’t let those two f*ckers, Gao Yang and Su Mei, walk off with all the benefits.” Li Weiyang just couldn’t let it go seeing Gao Yang’s and Su Mei’s smug looks.

After taking off her denim jacket and throwing it to a girl, Li Weiyang walked over to the ring with a heavy expression.

The fighting ring of the Companion Beast Arena was actually meant for Companion Beasts. This was because combat had many indeterminable factors and was extremely dangerous. Therefore, the League didn’t promote private battles.

However, battles between Companion Beasts were greatly encouraged. Every city had numerous Companion Beast Arenas—facilities that allowed human experts with Companion Beasts to use their companions for battle.

Companion Beast competitions had already become a huge industry in the League. Many humans with powerful Companion Beasts had become celebrities with an influence that far exceeded those entertainment celebrities of yesteryear.

After all, having strong companions meant powerful strength for themselves. They were genuinely the best among humanity.

Although Zhou Wen didn’t pay too much attention to Companion Beast competitions, he also knew several Companion Beast celebrities due to the advertisements that were everywhere.

For example, the number one Companion Beast in the world was the Epic stage Verbis Diablo Holy Angel that was known by all. The person who owned her had naturally become a top celebrity.

Of course, this ranking of first place only included those who participated in Companion Beast competitions. There were definitely powerful Companion Beasts who had never participated.

Zhou Wen heard that when Legendary experts went on expeditions in the dimensional zones, they would mostly fight with their Companion Beasts. Unless necessary, no one wished to engage the battle in person. After all, they only had one life. The death of a Companion Beast wasn't the end, but it wasn't the same for humans.

Furthermore, a person could control multiple Companion Beasts. This made them far stronger than fighting alone.

Li Weiyang got into the fighting ring and stood opposite Gu Dian. Although Li Weiyang stood at 1.7 meters, making her rather tall among girls, she appeared petite in front of Gu Dian.

"Gu Dian, can you not intervene?" Li Weiyang glared at Gu Dian and asked.

"No," Gu Dian answered very directly without any hesitation.

Li Weiyang wasn't one to drag things out. Without a word, her long legs produced terrifying strength, appearing in front of Gu Dian in a few steps. She leaped up and exerted immense strength with a twist of her waist, throwing out a kick. It struck out like a bolt of lightning, hitting Gu Dian in the neck.

Zhou Wen nodded secretly. Li Weiyang was indeed pretty good, far stronger than Xu Miantu. Furthermore, her kick was clearly a Primordial Energy Skill. That strike alone was enough to snap a human-sized tree.

However, Gu Dian didn’t react, despite being hit by such a kick, allowing Li Weiyang to cleave down at his neck with her long blade-like leg.

Bam!

There was a loud thud and everyone was alarmed. Gu Dian remained standing there, having received Li Weiyang’s strike. Yet, his neck didn’t even move.

Although Gao Yang and Su Mei knew that Gu Dian was strong, they never expected him to be this terrifyingly strong. Faced with Li Weiyang’s Primordial Energy Skill kick, he had taken on the blow without dodging. His body hadn’t even trembled once.

Li Weiyang was equally shocked, but she didn’t hesitate. Clenching her teeth, she turned her body and did a back kick, throwing out four kicks from her long, but strong, legs like a butterfly.

Gu Dian stood there like a tower, taking Li Weiyang’s four kicks without defending or dodging. From beginning to end, he stood there motionless without Li Weiyang injuring him at all.

When Li Weiyang was about to kick the fifth time, Gu Dian finally moved. His hand shot out like lightning and grabbed her leg in midair.

The next moment, Gu Dian held up Li Weiyang’s leg and, like throwing a sandbag, smashed Li Weiyang onto the ground.

With a loud thud, Li Weiyang’s body bounced half a foot in the air after hitting the ring and then fell.

Although the ring’s surface was covered with a special rubber material that provided powerful dampening force, it still didn’t stop Li Weiyang from spewing out a mouthful of blood. She didn’t manage to get up immediately.

“Gu Dian, you really don’t know how to go easy on girls. How can you treat such a beauty in this way?” Su Mei said gloatingly.

Gu Dian ignored her and asked Li Weiyang, who was struggling to get up, “Are we continuing?”

“Yes. Why not? I haven’t lost.” Li Weiyang struggled to her feet, the corners of her mouth stained with blood. Her arm had been dislocated from the throw, but she continued speaking stubbornly.

“Sis Weiyang, stop it. We don’t want the Companion Egg…” A girl was on the brink of tears.

However, Gu Dian didn’t care. Just as Li Weiyang made it clear that she could continue, he dashed towards her like a tank. Grabbing her by the head, he pressed her down onto the ring.

Bang!

Li Weiyang’s face hit the ground and although the rubber surface provided some dampening, Gu Dian was just too strong. By exerting some force, he made her nose bridge and brow ridge crack. Blood began flowing everywhere.

“Are we continuing?” Gu Dian looked at Li Weiyang and continued asking.

Li Weiyang’s face was covered with blood. She propped herself up with one hand on the ground, making several bids

to exert strength to stand up, the look in her eyes tenacious.

A timid girl was about to cry. Zhou Wen could tell that Li Weiyang would continue based on the look in her eyes.

Why is this woman so stubborn? Zhou Wen frowned slightly.

He hadn’t had any intention of bothering with this matter, but he couldn’t bring himself to watch Li Xuan’s sister being brutally tortured having received free board and lodging from him.

“Wait a moment,” Zhou Wen said before Li Weiyang could even reply.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 39 - Porcupine Skill

Chapter 39: Porcupine Skill

Translator: CKtalon **Editor:** CKtalon

Everyone was reeling with anxiety. Even Gao Yang and Su Mei were shocked.

Although they had gotten Gu Dian, none of them expected him to be this ruthless. If Li Weiyang were to really suffer any serious injuries, it would only escalate the matter.

Although she was an illegitimate daughter of the Li family and was never allowed inside the Li family's house, she ultimately had the Li family's blood coursing through her veins. It would be impossible for them to ignore it if something really happened to her.

When Zhou Wen's voice sounded, it immediately provided a vent for everyone's tense feelings. Even Li Weiyang and Gu Dian looked over at him.

"Schoolmate, did you say that we can enter the ring as long as we are students of Sunset College?" Zhou Wen asked Su Mei.

"That's right. What do you wish to say?" Su Mei didn't know what Zhou Wen was getting at.

"I've just been admitted into Sunset College, but I haven't matriculated. Am I allowed to enter the ring?" Zhou Wen asked.

He imagined that if Su Mei said no, he could use this opportunity to pull Li Weiyang from the ring and return home early to game.

Upon hearing that, Su Mei guffawed. “So you are our Sunset College’s junior. I can’t tell that you are a man who knows how to cherish women. But as your senior, I’m giving you the chance to be the hero to rescue the damsel in distress. Go on up if you wish to, but don’t blame me for not warning you if you get injured. University and high school aren’t the same.”

Gao Yang and company jeered. Anyone that could be admitted into Sunset College was an elite. There were plenty that came first or second in their own cities.

But so what? After stepping into the college, won’t they all schooled? High school geniuses only lined the bottom at Sunset College. The ones who could really stand out were few and far between. Most ended up drowning in a sea of talent.

It was especially so for the top students in small cities. Most of them gradually became mediocre once they arrived at Sunset College. It wasn’t that they weren’t outstanding, but there were just too many people who were more outstanding than them.

Gu Dian happened to be one who stood out from his peers. For a rookie who hadn’t even been matriculated to actually dare challenge Gu Dian because of Li Weiyang was, in their opinion, blinded and driven by lust.

Gao Yang said with a cheeky smile, “Junior, you do resemble me from a few years ago. It’s fine. Go on up if you want to. As your senior, I’ll give you a chance to show off in front of the beauties.”

As he said that, he thought to himself, *Gu Dian doesn’t know how to hold back. It’s definitely not good to injure Li Weiyang. So it’s good that she can be swapped.*

The girls on Li Weiyang's side looked at Zhou Wen worriedly. They were afraid that his sickly body would just die from a single punch from Gu Dian.

"Senior Weiyang, let me," Zhou Wen said as he flipped himself into the ring.

"Don't mess around. Go down." Li Weiyang had only pulled him here to add to the numbers. She had zero intention of getting him to fight.

Furthermore, Gu Dian was just too strong and he didn't hold back. based on Zhou Wen's sickly look, it was really possible that he could die from a single punch. As students, they might not be able to extricate themselves from his death, nor could Li Weiyang bear the responsibility.

Zhou Wen couldn't be bothered to speak further. He just wished to settle this matter so that he could game in peace.

Without waiting for Li Weiyang to speak again, he reached out and lifted Li Weiyang up.

Li Weiyang's arm was dislocated and she was heavily injured. Unable to put up any resistance, she was lifted up by Zhou Wen.

"What are you doing? Let me go!" Li Weiyang was embarrassed and enraged.

Zhou Wen ignored her and directly leaped out of the ring with her. After handing her to the girls, he returned to the ring.

"We are students of the same school, not some archenemies. There's no need for us to fight to the death. No one can shoulder the responsibility if an accident happens. Why

don’t we change the criteria for victory?” Zhou Wen sized up Gu Dian and said.

“How so?” Gu Dian spoke very succinctly. His voice didn’t sound like a college student. It was low, gruff, and forceful—akin to a man in his thirties or forties.

Matched with his fierce looks, Zhou Wen really couldn’t believe that he was a college sophomore if it wasn’t for the Sunset College uniform he was wearing.

“You let me punch you once. If you take less than three steps back, count me as the loser. Otherwise, I win. What do you think of my suggestion?” Zhou Wen had only said it randomly. Clearly, this disadvantaged Gu Dian.

However, finding a Strength-measuring device was just too much of a waste of time. Therefore, Zhou Wen had given the suggestion.

To everyone’s surprise, Gu Dian said coldly without any thought, “Sure.”

Somewhat surprised, Zhou Wen said with a smile, “Then let’s begin.”

Gao Yang curled his lips and said, “This rookie even thinks that he has taken the advantage. If he knows what Primordial Energy Skill and Primordial Energy Art Gu Dian cultivates in, he might be crying, much less laugh.”

“Brother Yang, what Primordial Energy Skill and Primordial Energy Art does Gu Dian cultivate?” Someone beside him was intrigued.

“It’s not my place to mention what Primordial Energy Art he cultivates in. However, I’m sure all of you have heard his

Primordial Energy Skill before.” Gao Yang deliberately acted mystifying.

“So what Primordial Energy Skill is it?” Su Mei couldn’t hold back her curiosity as she wheedled and nudged Gao Yang’s arm.

Gao Yang chuckled. “Have you heard of dimensional creatures known as Needle Porcupines?”

“Brother Yang, are you kidding me? We’ve obviously heard of Needle Porcupines. Although they are at the Mortal stage, they are especially thorny. Not only are their carapace tough, but they are also covered with quills. Unless it’s those Legendary stage seniors, we have to circle around them,” a male schoolmate said.

“Gu Dian’s Primordial Energy Skill came from a Porcupine Skill from a Needle Porcupine Crystal. If he were to use it, not only will his body be as hard as steel, he will also have the ability to deal thorns[1] damage,” Gao Yang said.

“No way. I heard that Needle Porcupines very rarely drop Primordial Energy Skills, and even if it drops, with the powers of a Needle Porcupine, it will be a Rank 1 or 2 Primordial Energy Skill. How strong can it be?” Su Mei said in disbelief.

“That’s why people call Gu Dian terrifying. Not only did he have exceedingly good luck to have the Porcupine Skill drop, he even managed to cultivate a Rank 1 Porcupine Skill all the way to Rank 9. Furthermore, he didn’t rely on Primordial Energy Skill Crystals to increase his rank. Isn’t that sick or what?” Gao Yang paused before sneering. “When it comes to Rank 9 Porcupine Skill, I’ve once seen a fourth-year use a Primordial Energy Skill strike Gu Dian, only to

have his palm riddled with countless bloody holes as though he had been stabbed by countless steel needles. His hand was almost crippled. It’ll be fine if that rookie doesn’t use any Primordial Energy Skills, but if he does, he’s in for a bad time.”

Su Mei was delighted when she heard that. She naturally didn’t want Zhou Wen to win, much less hand over the Mutated Ancient War Steed Companion Egg.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 40 - Strength Clash

Chapter 40: Strength Clash

Translator: CKtalon **Editor:** CKtalon

“Sis Weiyang, is he ok?” The few girls asked worriedly, as they helped Li Weiyang up.

Li Weiyang obviously had no idea. However, since Zhou Wen was Li Xuan’s friend and based on the kind of company the latter mixed with, the former was definitely not someone they could rely on.

However, Li Weiyang couldn’t say it out loud. All she could do was say something assuring. “Since he dares to enter the ring, he should be somewhat capable.”

Instead of saying that to assure her companions, it was more to assure herself.

Zhou Wen stood in front of Gu Dian. He wasn’t short among men, but in front of Gu Dian, he was a head shorter.

Gu Dian’s body was extremely brawny. Not only was he tall, but his muscles were taut, exuding vibes that he had explosive strength within. There was nothing clumsy about him.

During Gu Dian’s battle with Li Weiyang, Zhou Wen had already noticed that the former cultivated in a high-level defensive-type Primordial Energy Skill. Otherwise, it would have been impossible for him to withstand the strike from a Primordial Energy Skill no matter how strong his physical body was.

Gu Dian glared at Zhou Wen with his cold eyes like the devil. In a chilly manner, he said, “Come. Don’t waste any more time.”

“You have to be careful. This punch of mine has great Strength,” Zhou Wen warned him before slowly raising his fist.

Su Mei was amused when she heard Zhou Wen. She said in mockery, “It’s great if you have great Strength. Gu Dian loves that. Use more of your strength, lest you disappoint him.”

Su Mei’s words sounded like a joke, but they hid extreme wickedness. Gu Dian’s Porcupine Skill possessed terrifying thorns damage, so the more Strength Zhou Wen used, the greater the damage he would suffer.

Although Gao Yang didn’t say a word, he waited to watch the spectacle.

Sunset College had many powerful students, but at the Mortal stage, no one was Gu Dian’s match.

“If you aren’t afraid of death, feel free to strike.” Gu Dian’s expression remained unperturbed, but it was already extremely terrifying.

Zhou Wen didn’t speak further as he threw out his right fist, producing immense strength with Vigor Divine Fist. It caused his fist to swell up to a whole new size as though it was a hammer.

Gu Dian’s eyes narrowed as he stood firmly on the ground. An abnormal redness flushed through his body as though he was lit aflame.

Knowing that this was a trait of Porcupine Skill, Gao Yang's smile became more obvious.

When Li Weiyang saw the anomaly on Gu Dian's body, she immediately recalled something. Ignoring her injuries, she hurriedly yelled at Zhou Wen, "Don't throw out that punch! It's Porcupine Skill! It will rebound…"

Bang!

Unfortunately, Zhou Wen's fist had struck Gu Dian's abdomen before she could finish her sentence.

This was a spot Zhou Wen had deliberately chosen—it was an area that could resist relatively more impact; thus, reducing the chances of death.

When the hard-as-steel fist struck at firm muscles, there was a loud thud with the slightest hint of a metallic clash.

Zhou Wen's and Gu Dian's eyes narrowed simultaneously as Gao Yang and Su Mei watched in disbelief. Gu Dian's gargantuan body curled slightly like a shrimp as his feet slid across the ice, stopping only after he retreated nearly four meters.

Two nearly four-meter-long black marks appeared on the rubber surface like skid marks left by a car's emergency braking.

Li Weiyang stared at Zhou Wen with a blank look, finding his strength unbelievable. He had managed to send Gu Dian retreating about four meters despite the latter using Porcupine Skill.

The other girls had already broken out into cheers. This wasn't just three steps, but three to four meters! It was

probably as many as eight steps!

“Gao Yang, can I take your word?” Zhou Wen retracted his trembling fist and asked.

He had sent Gu Dian retreating with one punch, but he wasn’t too good either. His fist was trembling uncontrollably.

Gao Yang didn’t say a word as he looked at Gu Dian who said coldly, “I’ve lost.”

Gao Yang nodded as he looked at Su Mei. “Give the Companion Egg to them.”

Su Mei immediately stood up and yelled, “What right do they have? The agreement was between them. I didn’t agree that a loss would be counted if Gu Dian retreated three steps. It’s completely unreasonable. Besides, Gu Dian’s feet didn’t even more. It can only be considered one step. Let him fight Gu Dian. If he can trounce Gu Dian, I’ll count it as his win. Besides, he isn’t a student of Sunset College yet…”

Smack! Before Su Mei could finish her drivel, Gao Yang slapped her in the face, leaving her stunned.

“Do I need to say it a second time? A loss is a loss. I, Gao Yang, never go back on my word. Do you think that a Companion Egg of yours is more important than a promise of mine?” Gao Yang glared coldly at Su Mei.

Su Mei was much aggrieved, but she didn’t dare say another word. Unwillingly, she took out the Companion Egg from her bag and handed it to Gao Yang with gritted teeth. Then, she turned around in anger.

Gao Yang ignored Su Mei and walked to Zhou Wen with the Companion Egg in hand. Throwing it to the latter, he stared

at him. “What’s your name?”

“Zhou Wen,” Zhou Wen replied calmly.

“Zhou Wen? I’ll remember you. Since you will be a student of Sunset College in the future, we’ll have plenty of time to spend together soon,” Gao Yang said coldly before he turned around and left with the group of students.

Gu Dian glanced at Zhou Wen, but didn’t say a word. He then left, following behind Gao Yang and company.

“Zhou Wen, I sure couldn’t tell that you had such Strength when you look like such a pretty boy,” Li Weiyang walked over and said as she sized him up.

“Zhou Wen, are you really our junior?”

“Are high-schoolers these days so strong?”

“Junior, you used a Primordial Energy Skill, right? How impressive. What is its name?”

The few girls circled around Zhou Wen as they asked him all kinds of questions. Their interest in him seemed to exceed the interest in the Companion Egg he had snatched back.

“My victory was all thanks to luck. That devil-like fellow was truly terrifying. If we had really engaged in battle, it would be hard to tell who would have won.” Zhou Wen handed the Companion Egg to Li Weiyang before raising his injured fist. There were dense, needle-like holes on the back of his hand which were beginning to ooze a tiny bit of blood.

“Are you injured?” Li Weiyang was alarmed when she saw the wound on Zhou Wen.

Without waiting for his reply, Li Weiyang handed the Companion Egg to the girls and got them to leave. Then, she pulled Zhou Wen outside. “Let’s go. You need to check on your injuries.”

“There’s no need. It’s just some superficial wounds. It didn’t injure my bones,” Zhou Wen hurriedly said.

“You need to have a check-up, otherwise it will be a problem if it leaves some side effects.” Li Weiyang dragged Zhou Wen to the medical room without listening to his protests.

The Companion Beast Arena had dedicated medical facilities. By the time they arrived, Zhou Wen’s wounds had already healed and produced scabs that were fine after some treatment. Instead, Li Weiyang was the heavily injured one. She had dislocated her arm and the wound on her face needed treatment. It was Zhou Wen who had to run around to do all kinds of medical paperwork for her.

Li Weiyang lay in bed, looking at Zhou Wen and his staid, gentle face as he ran around. With mixed feelings, she thought, *I never expected Li Xuan to have such a friend.*

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 41 - Companion Beast Fusion

Chapter 41: Companion Beast Fusion

Translator: CKtalon **Editor:** CKtalon

It was quite an ordeal for Zhou Wen to finally return home and be able to game in peace. But just as he sat on the sofa and launched the game dungeon, Li Xuan rushed home.

“Your door was kicked down by a woman who claimed to be your sister. Her name is Li Weiyang,” Zhou Wen immediately made things clear, afraid that Li Xuan would blame him for damaging his villa.

However, Li Xuan didn’t heed that at all. In excitement, he asked Zhou Wen in a mysterious manner, “Are you interested in visiting the dimensional zone I previously mentioned?”

“Are you talking about the dimensional zone that produces organ-type Companion Beasts?” Zhou Wen asked.

“Bingo. Are you interested?”

“But we haven’t matriculated! Can we enter now?” Zhou Wen looked at Li Xuan suspiciously.

“The average person obviously can’t, but I’m no average person,” Li Xuan said as he languidly slapped his chest.

“Alright, let’s head over.” Zhou Wen was quite intrigued, but it wasn’t that he wanted to enter a dimensional zone. Instead, he wanted to know if the dimensional zone could be installed on his phone just like Guide Ancient City.

“Bro, can you show me some excitement? I really can’t feel a sense of achievement with that face of yours,” Li Xuan said gloomily.

“Wow! You’re awesome!” Zhou Wen cried out in a very perfunctory manner as he continued gaming on his phone without looking up.

“Forget it.” Li Xuan became even more depressed. However, he cheered up almost immediately. Pulling Zhou Wen out, he said, “Pal, I’ll be broadening your horizon today.”

When they arrived in the yard, Zhou Wen saw a white tiger sprawled outside the villa. It was even bigger and muscular than an ox.

“Legendary Jade-Eyed White Tiger. How cool is that? I incubated it just today. It was such a harrowing experience…” Li Xuan bragged as his saliva splattered about.

“With such flaunting, you have no plans on acting any further, right?” Zhou Wen asked curiously.

Li Xuan’s face sank. “In the past, I wished that things wouldn’t turn nasty among the family, so I didn’t compete with him. Since he doesn’t even want to spare my life, there’s no need for me to stand on ceremony with him. From now on, I’ll become the Li family’s genius, Li Xuan. What should be mine will be mine, nothing less.”

Zhou Wen gave Li Xuan the thumbs up. Indeed, a genius like Li Xuan didn’t deserve to be hidden. However, he was curious. Li Xuan cultivated in the Invincible Connate Divine Art, so was he to stay a virgin his entire life if he continued cultivating in it?

“Let’s not touch on such matters. Come on up. Let’s go a joyride. This Jade-Eyed White Tiger is extraordinary. If I use enough resources on it, it has a chance of advancing to an Epic King of White Tigers. That would make it truly terrifying,” Li Xuan said as he jumped onto its back.

Zhou Wen knew that certain Companion Beasts could evolve, but they were in the minority. Furthermore, evolution required special dimensional materials and very strict criteria.

Currently, the League was doing research in this respect. There were less than four hundred on the official list of evolvable Companion Beasts. The rest were still being studied.

Riding on a Companion Beast didn’t feel good in any way. The trembling was intense due to the lack of a suspension. Zhou Wen would rather ride in a comfortable sedan car.

However, Li Xuan was thrilled. He dashed down the road riding the Jade-Eyed White Tiger, whistling and waving to beauties he passed on the street.

This fellow’s foppish character sure doesn’t appear to be an act. Zhou Wen suddenly thought of a problem. He whispered into the Legendary stage’s ear, “Li Xuan, what are the criteria needed to incubate a Legendary Companion Egg for those at the Mortal stage?”

Li Xuan said, “You wish to incubate that Skeleton General, right? I’m warning you not to mess around. Don’t try it just because it seems it’s easy for me to incubate one. Let me tell you seriously that people with such thoughts mostly end up either crippled or dead.”

After a pause, Li Xuan said smugly, “To incubate a Companion Egg, the most important criteria is to have sufficient Primordial Energy. A typical Legendary Companion Egg needs more than ten Primordial Energy to incubate it. The typical human at the Mortal stage doesn’t have that much Primordial Energy. After being sucked dry of their Primordial Energy, one’s vitality and essence would be drawn in place of Primordial Energy. When that happens, it’s either death or disability. The reason I can incubate a Legendary Companion Egg is because my Invincible Connate Divine Art has cultivated to 9 points of Primordial Energy. Furthermore, I have plenty of vitality and essence that I’m not afraid of being drained. Even so, I had to specially select Legendary Companion Eggs that require relatively fewer Primordial Energy points. Only then can I succeed and survive. It’s almost impossible for others to succeed, unless you aren’t afraid of death.

“Give up, man. I’m unique,” Li Xuan added smugly.

What Li Xuan had said served as a warning for Zhou Wen. The latter was obviously afraid of death, but the blood-colored avatar in-game wasn’t. Perhaps he could use the blood-colored avatar to incubate a Legendary Companion Beast.

Unfortunately, I have no way of taking the Companion Egg into the game. To make an attempt, I can only wait until a Companion Egg drops in-game. With this in mind, he was quite tempted.

The phone’s camera feature is able to download dimensional zones. I wonder if it can be used on Companion Eggs? When Zhou Wen thought of this, he took out the Companion Egg and phone from his pocket.

He was sitting behind Li Xuan and, with him in the way, no one else could see what he was doing. Zhou Wen then attempted to open the mysterious phone's camera function and aimed it at the Skeleton General Companion Egg.

Beep!

To Zhou Wen's surprise, the camera function was usable. When the camera was pointed at the Skeleton General Companion Egg, a green box appeared on the screen, and with a beep, it focused on the Companion Egg. At the same time, many text and numbers appeared.

Skeleton General Companion Egg: Legendary

Life Providence: Oath of City Defense

Strength: 15

Speed: 13

Constitution: 16

Primordial Energy: 18

Primordial Energy Skill: Penetrating Pierce (Rank 3)

Companion Form: General Bone Armor

Zhou Wen looked at the Skeleton General's stats in surprise. It wasn't because the stats were surprising, but that no one was able to run tests before a Companion Egg was incubated; thus, making it impossible to know how good a Companion Beast would be before incubation.

With just a snap, the phone could list down detailed numbers. It was amazing.

The same Companion Beast type all had different stats. The higher they were, the better they were naturally. It was especially so with Primordial Energy Skills. The higher the Rank, the more valuable the Companion Beast was.

Beep!

While Zhou Wen was looking at the Skeleton General's stats, his phone beeped again. At the same time, a notification popped up on the screen.

"Skeleton General and Mutated Vigor Ant have a compatibility score of 47%. Fusion has a success rate of 47%. Proceed with fusion?"

A 'yes' and 'no' option popped up on the screen. Without any hesitation, he chose 'yes.' Then there was a clicking sound—the sound of a camera's shutter.

The phone snapped a picture of the Skeleton General, simultaneously making the Skeleton General Companion Egg in Zhou Wen's hand vanish into thin air.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 42 - Underground Buddha City

Chapter 42: Underground Buddha City

Translator: CKtalon **Editor:** CKtalon

As the phone screen presented the Skeleton General Companion Egg, Zhou Wen's Mutated Vigor Ant appeared beside it.

A notification popped up on the screen again: 'As the Mutated Vigor Ant has already finished incubating, the Skeleton General Companion Egg will be used as supplementary material. Proceed with fusion?'

Zhou Wen chose 'yes.' Since he was unable to incubate the Skeleton General Companion Egg and there were chances for him to obtain Mutated Vigor Ants again in the future, there was no harm trying.

With Zhou Wen making the choice, the Skeleton General Companion Egg flew towards the Mutated Vigor Ant. After infusing into the Mutated Vigor Ant, the screen immediately turned into a spiraling chaos.

Ding!

After a while, the game screen finally returned to normal. At the same time, there was a notification sound as the following line appeared: 'Fusion successful. Mortal Mutated Vigor Ant has evolved into Mortal Mutated Skeleton Ant.'

Zhou Wen was somewhat depressed when he heard that. The outcome was still a Mortal Companion Beast after fusing with a Legendary Skeleton General. It felt like a terrible loss.

When he carefully studied the Skeleton Ant after the successful fusion, he saw that its originally red carapace had turned dark red. Furthermore, the carapace's texture had changed. It now seemed like bone that had been dyed red. Even its feelers and claws had the same texture.

Furthermore, its claws had turned sharp, covered with razor-like barbed bones. It looked ferocious and terrifying, especially its two front claws. They looked like two strange sickles.

Although it had evolved to something rather strong, it was still at the Mortal stage. No matter how much it evolved, it had no way of competing with a Companion Beast at the Legendary stage.

Tapping on the Mutated Skeleton Ant's stats to take a look, Zhou Wen was immediately taken aback. Compared to the Mutated Vigor Ant, its stats had changed tremendously.

Mutated Skeleton Ant: Mortal

Strength: 10

Speed: 9

Constitution: 10

Primordial Energy: 9

Talent Skill: Skeleton Pierce (Rank 10)

Companion Form: Bracer

Strength and Companion Beast has increased to 10. Same for the talent skill… Zhou Wen was alarmed. He had never heard of Companion Beasts having Rank 10 talent skills.

In fact, Zhou Wen always believed that Rank 9 was the limit to Primordial Energy Skills. Only when his Ashen Palm reached Rank 10 did he realize that there was such a thing.

Zhou Wen had the urge to summon the Mutated Skeleton Ant to see what it looked like. After all, it was drawn in a cartoon style in-game. There were bound to be differences in real life.

Unfortunately, he was sitting on Li Xuan’s Jade-Eyed White Tiger. This wasn’t the best time to summon it.

Despite his arrogance, Li Xuan put away his Companion Beast at the entrance to Sunset College. He then walked in with Zhou Wen without the pompous attitude.

Sunset College was a new college that was established after the dimensional storms. It was very close to the Dragon Gate Grotto—the biggest dimensional zone in Luoyang to date. To this day, humanity had not finished exploring it in its entirety. It was even said that humans had only managed to explore a very tiny area.

Apart from the Dragon Gate Grotto, there were several dimensional zones found inside Sunset College. It could be said that Sunset College took most of the dimensional zone resources in Luoyang.

Due to it being a partially-restricted school, the students still had to wear uniforms despite being university students. It was a little like military wear.

It was still the holidays, but there were plenty of students on campus. Li Xuan and Zhou Wen were stopped by the guards at the door.

The guards of Sunset College weren’t security guards but real soldiers. In fact, the dimensional zones in Sunset College were guarded by real military troops.

Li Xuan took out two special passes before being permitted to enter.

As Li Xuan led Zhou Wen in, he explained, “Luoyang was home to thirteen Chinese dynasties., Ancient cities had been built on this piece of land for millennia, but for all kinds of reasons, these ancient cities had been destroyed and lost to the rivers of time. It could be said that the ground that Luoyang sits on is piled up from multiple ancient cities. Ever since the dimensional storms, many dimensional zones were formed underground. The deeper one goes, the more terrifying the zone becomes.

“People from Luoyang are accustomed to calling the underground dimensional zones dungeons. At present, the explored dungeon has four levels. There’s definitely more, but no human expert can get any lower. This time, an entrance to a new dungeon was discovered at Ancient Inlet, and new dimensional creatures and organ-type Companion Beasts were found inside…”

Zhou Wen listened attentively to Li Xuan’s explanation. Sunset College was just too huge. After walking for nearly an hour, they finally arrived at Ancient Inlet which Li Xuan had mentioned.

Ancient Inlet was, in fact, a marshland. Rumor was that it was once a river mouth of the ancient Yellow River which once brought disaster to this area by drowning the ancient cities. Later, the Yellow River moved and stopped flowing over this region.

In this former riverbed, a new dimensional zone was discovered. When Zhou Wen looked at a stele inside the marshland, his eyes lit up.

The stele stood in the middle of the marsh at a height of over ten meters tall. There was a sitting Buddha engraved on it with fairies circling him.

Amongst the various engraved symbols, Zhou Wen found a tiny palm symbol. It was rather inconspicuous amongst the fairies and Buddha palm symbols, but to Zhou Wen, it was extremely familiar.

On the city gates of Guide Ancient City, Zhou Wen had seen a similar symbol. Furthermore, he had focused his mysterious phone on it to download the Guide Ancient City game dungeon.

However, this tiny palm symbol was a little different from the one he had seen at Guide Ancient City.

The palm in the Guide Ancient City's symbol carried something akin to an onion or garlic. But here, engraved in the middle of the tiny palm symbol was a blooming lotus flower.

I'll try to download this game dungeon now. Zhou Wen took out his phone and turned on the camera before aiming it at the tiny palm symbol.

Beep!

A green box appeared on the screen as it focused on the tiny palm symbol. After the light beep, the familiar 'Installing' word appeared.

It really works. Zhou Wen was pleasantly surprised.

Imagining that Zhou Wen was snapping photos, Li Xuan said, “This stele looks to be in the style of the Northern Wei dynasty. Back then, Buddhism thrived…”

Zhou Wen wasn’t listening to what Li Xuan had to say. The phone had finished installing as a lotus icon appeared on his phone’s home screen. Beneath it were three words: ‘Underground Buddha City.’

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 43 - Buddha Heart Lotus

Chapter 43: Buddha Heart Lotus

Translator: CKtalon **Editor:** CKtalon

The bottom of the stele was the entrance to the dimensional zone where military troops were standing guard. Li Xuan took out two entrance passes before they entered.

Going down the blue-tiled stairs beneath the stele, they ventured deep underground. Zhou Wen finally knew why the people of Luoyang described dimensional zones as dungeons.

In an underground space tens of meters deep, a dilapidated ancient city connected as one with the underground world. All sorts of blue-tiled ancient architecture made it appear like a maze.

At fixed distances, oil lanterns hung on the blue-tiled walls for lighting purposes. The dim yellow light made the already dark and humid ancient dungeon appear even older.

Zhou Wen and Li Xuan were on a street. The buildings that stood on either side were engraved with several symbols related to Buddhism. Even the blue-tiled roofs were engraved with flying fairies.

“Trading 8-valued Strength Crystals for 8-valued Speed Crystals. Grab it if you want it!”

“One Buddha Heart Lotus Crystal. Only trading, no selling…”

“The most complete and detailed Buddha City map. With one map in hand, Buddha City is your oyster…”

There were several youths dressed in school uniforms setting up stalls along both sides of the street. Clearly, they were seniors of Sunset College.

Zhou Wen had wanted to buy a map but was stopped by Li Xuan.

“Buddha City was only recently discovered. The students here can only explore the vicinity. What value can their maps have? I have here the latest map released by the military. It’s much more useful than theirs. Let’s head over to the Lotus Pond to try our luck. Let’s see if we can find the Buddha Heart Lotus,” Li Xuan said as he walked with a map in hand.

“What’s a Buddha Heart Lotus?” Zhou Wen asked.

“It’s a kind of plant-type dimensional creature. Didn’t I mention that organ-type Companion Beasts were found here? Buddha Heart Lotus is one of them. Buddha Heart Lotus in Companion Beast form is the heart,” Li Xuan explained.

Li Xuan held the map and navigated the dark dungeon with Zhou Wen in tow. Perhaps a result of the dimensional creatures having been wiped clean, they didn’t encounter a single one.

After walking for nearly an hour, the scene before them opened up. They saw a large swath of green lotus leaves appear in their sights. They were as green as jadeite and they shimmered with a green glow.

This huge underground lotus pond was several acres in size. The glimmering green light dyed the entire underground world with a green hue and at spots relatively far from the bank, one could see huge white lotus flowers blooming.

“Is that the Buddha Heart Lotus?” Zhou Wen stared at the huge white lotus and asked.

“That’s right. That’s the Buddha Heart Lotus, a plant-type dimensional creature. However, those Buddha Heart Lotuses are too far from the bank. Unless one can fly, there’s no way of getting near them,” Li Xuan said.

“Can’t you swim over?” Zhou Wen looked at the water in the pond. It was a transparent green and resembled crystals.

“Definitely not. The water here can even melt steel beams. Humans will be reduced to nothing instantly,” Li Xuan hurriedly said.

“If that’s the case, what’s the point of coming?” Zhou Wen frowned slightly.

“That’s why I said we are trying our luck. If a Buddha Heart Lotus happens to bloom near the bank, we have a chance.” Li Xuan rubbed his nose and said, “But it seems we aren’t having much luck. There isn’t a Buddha Heart Lotus blooming by the bank.”

Just as he said that they heard galloping sounds coming from behind them. They turned their heads and saw a white horse bolt over with a cold-eyed man sitting on it.

The white horse was extremely fast, allowing him to arrive in front of the lotus pond almost instantaneously. However, the man had no intention of reining his horse in and it didn’t drop in speed at all. It rushed straight into the lotus pond.

In the next second, Zhou Wen was astonished to find a pair of snow-white wings grow out from the white horse’s sides. It leaped into the air and flew above the lotus pond.

“White-Winged Flying Horse at the Mortal stage. A very rare Companion Beast. That’s presently the only one in Sunset College. Its owner is Sunset College’s sophomore, Luo Xuan. He’s been called one of the four most handsome hunks of Sunset College. I don’t like him; he’s very arrogant,” Li Xuan said as he looked at the White-Winged Flying Horse in envy.

His Jade-Eyed White Tiger was far faster than the White-Winged Flying Horse, but it couldn’t fly. Naturally, he wasn’t able to ride on a white horse and leap across the lotus pond as coolly as Luo Xuan.

Luo Xuan rode on his white horse and approached a Buddha Heart Lotus. When he was about ten meters away from it, he suddenly saw the petals of a Buddha Heart Lotus close up on itself, turning into an oval. When the petals suddenly spread open, a green lotus seed was shot out, seemingly blasting Luo Xuan with a cannonball.

With a stoic expression, a flash appeared at Luo Xuan’s waist, halving the green lotus seed. Only then did others notice a sword in his hand.

“What a fast move!” Zhou Wen was somewhat astonished.

“The Luo family are swordsmen. The Azure Star Sword Anthology is a rather famous sword art. It’s not surprising that he’s fast with his sword,’ Li Xuan said, feeling sour grapes.

It wasn’t that he was jealous of Luo Xuan’s sword techniques. It was just that the White-Winged Flying Horse drew too much attention. Although it was at the Mortal stage, it was cooler than his Jade-Eyed White Tiger.

Zhou Wen was envious as well. Although the Mutated Skeleton Ant was strong, it had a frightening look. In terms

of looks, the White-Winged Flying Horse was on a completely different level.

Of course, Zhou Wen didn’t care about looks. It was simply that the White-Winged Flying Horse’s ability of flight made it extremely useful.

The White-Winged Flying Horse swept across the white lotus pond as Luo Xuan swept his sword, slicing off the huge white Buddha Heart Lotuses.

Li Xuan and Zhou Wen could only watch in envy as the Buddha Heart Lotuses were harvested by Luo Xuan.

“If I had known, I would have tried to obtain a Companion Beast that can fly,” Li Xuan said through gritted teeth.

“Forget it. Let’s head elsewhere to take a look. There should be other dimensional creatures apart from Buddha Heart Lotuses, right?” Zhou Wen asked.

“The area ahead has dimensional creatures, but it’s a little odd there. When the military explored the area, many people died for no reason. It wasn’t an exception even with Legendary experts. It has already been labeled a restricted zone. Ordinary students cannot approach the area,” Li Xuan said as he looked at his map.

Intrigued, Zhou Wen asked Li Xuan, “How did those people die?”

“If the cause of death was known, it wouldn’t be called odd. They just died while walking. No dimensional creature was sighted, nor were there any wounds. Even when the corpses were taken back for an autopsy, it was discovered that their organs had failed and they had shriveled terribly,” Li Xuan said.

“Other than these two places, is there nowhere else in Buddha City with dimensional creatures?” Zhou Wen frowned slightly.

“There’s definitely more in the deeper areas of Buddha City. However, even the military hasn’t explored the area, so how would the typical student dare to venture in? It would only be courting death. We can’t risk our lives for adventure, right?”

After a pause, Li Xuan added, “In fact, the military has offered a reward. If anyone can crack the mystery of the deaths, the military will reward them with a Legendary Companion Egg. Furthermore, they will be awarded perpetual rights to entering Buddha City.”

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 44 - Blood-Patterned Buddha Heart Lotus

Chapter 44: Blood-Patterned Buddha Heart Lotus

Translator: CKtalon **Editor:** CKtalon

Zhou Wen had wanted to say something when he heard a splash. It was as though a bomb had exploded in the water.

The duo turned their heads and saw a wave rise up from the lotus pond like an erupting undersea volcano. Amidst the wave, a gigantic lotus flower with a diameter exceeded ten meters emerged.

The lotus flower was different from the normal Buddha Heart Lotus. Ordinary Buddha Heart Lotus had petals that were pure white, but this Buddha Heart Lotus had blood vessel-like patterns on their white petals. The patterns were faint, outlining a sitting Buddha's silhouette. It appeared as though a blood-colored Buddha was sitting on each petal.

Luo Xuan rode on his White-Winged Flying Horse as he dodged the splashes in midair, but some still managed to splattered onto his steed.

The White-Winged Flying Horse neighed in pain as its snow-white hide began corroding away, turning into a bloody, gaping hole. It looked extremely terrifying.

Luo Xuan wore an ugly expression as he struggled to steer the White-Winged Flying Horse towards the bank. If they were to fall into the water, they were doomed.

Real life wasn't a game. Be it a human or a Companion Beast, death meant death. There were no second chances. It

wasn’t like Zhou Wen’s game, which could be repeated after dying.

Luo Xuan wished to escape, but the strange Buddha Heart Lotus had no intention of sparing him. It shot out a lotus seed the size of a basketball that tore through the sky and headed for the White-Winged Flying Horse and Luo Xuan.

Typically, lotus seeds shot out by Buddha Heart Lotuses were green in color, but this lotus seed was like crystal blood. It appeared instantly in front of Luo Xuan.

The White-Winged Flying Horse could no longer dodge in time. Luo Xuan drew his sword and cleaved, sending a beam that sliced through the blood-colored lotus seed. However, before his sword could fully slice through the blood-colored lotus seed, his expression changed.

Almost instantly, Luo Xuan retracted his sword as he tapped his toes on the White-Winged Flying Horse’s back, jumping nearly three meters back like a hawk.

Bang!

At the same time, the blood-colored lotus seed exploded, turning into bloody rain that enveloped the White-Winged Flying Horse.

Following that, Zhou Wen and Li Xuan saw a horrifying scene. The blood landed on the White-Winged Flying Horse like red-hot metal hitting snow. It instantly melted away the White-Winged Flying Horse’s flesh.

In just seconds, the White-Winged Flying Horse’s flesh was completely gone, revealing its white bones. All it could do was let out a tragic neigh before plummeting into the lotus pond. There was zero hope for it.

“Little White…” Luo Xuan yelled out in anger and sadness but to no avail. He was still in danger.

He was at least five hundred meters away from the bank. With the White-Winged Flying Horse dead, he had no means of flying. The lotus pond was no different from the rivers of hell.

Zhou Wen and Li Xuan wanted to help, but they were helpless. They didn’t have any Companion Beasts capable of flight, nor did they have invulnerable bodies. All they could do was stand at the side and watch, unable to do a thing.

As the duo believed that Luo Xuan was doomed, they saw him tap a toe on a lotus leaf, soaring back up as though he was weightless as he stepped towards the next leaf.

“Hey, this pretty boy has quite some skills. He even has a Primordial Energy Skill that imbues alacrity,” Li Xuan exclaimed.

When Zhou Wen saw Luo Xuan leap up from the lotus leaf, he was delighted to see the frail lotus leaf tremble slightly instead of being crushed by him.

“In the dimensional zones in Sunset College, are there places that drop Primordial Energy Skill that imbues alacrity?” Zhou Wen asked Li Xuan.

“Obviously. The most famous one is Dragon Gate Grotto.”

Zhou Wen began planning to visit Dragon Gate Grotto when he had the chance. If he could download the game dungeon at Dragon Gate Grotto, he could grind for one without any worries. Such a Primordial Energy Skill would be extremely useful. Even if he was no match for his enemies, he could always use it to escape.

Boom! Boom!

Luo Xuan used the lotus leaves to leap into the sky, but before he got far, two salvos were heard. More than ten blood-colored lotus seeds enveloped the area, sealing off all of Luo Xuan’s exits, leaving no room for him to dodge.

Although he still had half a sword left, it was useless against the blood-colored lotus seeds. After slicing them apart, their explosive might would only grow stronger.

Gritting his teeth, the clothes on Luo Xuan tore apart, revealing a blue ox tattoo. The next second, it tore out of his body, taking on the form of a blue ox Companion Beast. It appeared in front of Luo Xuan and blocked the blood-colored lotus seeds.

With the blue ox as a shield, Luo Xuan finally found a chance of survival. At that split second, he rushed out of the lotus seed bombardment.

However, his blue ox Companion Beast had taken the hit. Once the seeds exploded, splattering the blood within them onto it, its flesh and blood began corroding. It then plummeted into the pond with a tragic cry.

“That pretty boy, Luo Xuan, sure has plenty of expensive stuff up his sleeves. He actually has two Mortal Companion Beasts. Unfortunately, it still won’t be easy for him to survive. He’s just too far from the bank,” Li Xuan said with a shake of his head.

Zhou Wen ignored Li Xuan as he stared at the lotus pond.

The White-Winged Flying Horse and the blue ox had their flesh corroded, reducing them to a pile of bones as they fell into the pond.

This terrifying scene made Zhou Wen recall his Mutated Skeleton Ant.

The lotus pond and the Buddha Heart Lotus's bloody liquid seemed to be only capable of corroding flesh. Bones weren't corroded, so was it possible for the Mutated Skeleton Ant who was already reduced to bone to survive in the lotus pond?

At this thought, Zhou Wen summoned his Mutated Skeleton Ant and commanded it to approach the lotus pond. Then, it extended one of its claw tips into the water.

When the Mutated Skeleton Ant flew out of the back of his hand, it seemed to be made out of blood-stained bones. Its body was filled with bone spikes and it was much bigger than before its evolution. It looked like a skeleton tank, much more ferocious and terrifying than in-game.

"Holy sh*t. What Companion Beast is that?" By the side, Li Xuan jumped in fright from the appearance of the Mutated Skeleton Ant. Then, he realized that it was Zhou Wen's Companion Beast.

"Skeleton ant," Zhou Wen answered without much thought as he made the skeleton ant extend one claw into the lotus pond.

"What are you doing?" Li Xuan jumped in fright.

Soon, Li Xuan realized that the skeleton ant was completely fine, despite extending its claw into the water. It hadn't been corroded by the lotus pond's water.

Only then did Zhou Wen confirm that his theory was right. The Mutated Skeleton Ant, which was all bone, wasn't afraid of the lotus pond's water.

With a command from him, the Mutated Skeleton Ant slowly entered the lotus pond. Nothing happened despite its body being soaked in the water. Clearly, the pond water had zero effect on it.

Zhou Wen was originally worried that the Mutated Skeleton Ant couldn’t swim, but he was immediately relieved when he saw it paddling its claws on the surface of the water and the lotus leaves like a water spider. It crawled at a rapid speed, in no way different than it was on land.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 45 - Elites Gathering at the Lotus Pond

Chapter 45: Elites Gathering at the Lotus Pond

Translator:CKtalon

Editor:CKtalon

When Li Xuan saw the Mutated Skeleton Ant crawling across the water at a rapid speed, he turned agape.

Luo Xuan hopped across the lotus leaves with great speed, but the Buddha Heart Lotus shot its second round of lotus seed bombardment. He had nowhere to hide.

Furthermore, even if he could dodge the second salvo, his Primordial Energy could hardly support his continuous use of his Primordial Energy Skill with alacrity traits. He would still die if he were to land in the lotus pond.

Suddenly, he heard a voice from the bank. "Luo Xuan, jump on that ant's back!"

Luo Xuan had no idea who was speaking, nor could he process it. He tried his best to avoid a large portion of the blood-colored lotus seeds, but there was one he couldn't dodge completely. All he could do was grit his teeth and block it with his sword.

Although he knew that this action was meaningless—the blood-colored lotus seed would explode once it struck his incomplete sword, reducing him to a pool of blood—he still chose to do so due to his survival instinct.

Before his sword hit the blood-colored lotus seed, Luo Xuan suddenly saw a blood-colored figure flash above him. A huge, ghastly ant had leaped over him, slamming into the lotus seed.

The blood-colored lotus seed exploded on the ant's head, splattering it all over with its contents. However, the ferocious-looking ant seemed unfazed by it. It landed on the water surface as it began moving its six claws rapidly, turning to crawl towards Luo Xuan.

Luo Xuan was alarmed, imagining that the ant was about to attack him. However, upon recalling the voice and how the ant had blocked the seed, he immediately understood what was happening. He exerted strength on the lotus leaf and jumped onto the Mutated Skeleton Ant's back.

The Mutated Skeleton Ant crawled swiftly across the water surface, much faster than Luo Xuan's hopping about. By the time the Buddha Heart Lotus produced its third salvo, the ant had already escaped beyond its reach.

The Mutated Skeleton Ant rushed onto the bank and stopped in front of Zhou Wen.

Luo Xuan jumped off the ant's back. Even if he were dumb, he could tell that the Mutated Skeleton Ant was Zhou Wen's Companion Beast. The one who had shouted was likely Zhou Wen.

"My name is Luo Xuan. I'll definitely repay you for saving my life. May I know your name?" Luo Xuan said.

"I'm Zhou Wen. He's Li Xuan. We are fellow schoolmates. It's nothing, so don't take it to heart," Zhou Wen said casually.

"Zhou Wen. I'll remember you." Luo Xuan sized up Zhou Wen's looks before turning around to leave.

"That fellow is already in such a pathetic state, but he still wears that cocky look. He pisses me off," Li Xuan couldn't stand Luo Xuan.

But moments later, Li Xuan was happy again. He chuckled. "Without the White-Winged Flying Horse, let's see how he can act cool in school in the future."

Zhou Wen ignored him as he sized up the gigantic Buddha Heart Lotus in the middle of the lotus pond. He guessed that it was a Legendary stage dimensional creature.

"Zhou Wen, this skeleton ant is quite impressive. It seems to be the Buddha Heart Lotus's nemesis. Why don't you send it over and try eliminating that Buddha Heart Lotus? If you succeed, you might even get something good," Li Xuan said as he looked at it.

"Forget it. That Buddha Heart Lotus is odd. I only have this Companion Beast. It's best I don't take risks." Zhou Wen planned on returning to grind the Underground Buddha City dungeon. In-game, his Companion Beast could be revived unlike in real life. There was no need for him to take such huge risks here.

"You are good at everything except that you lack the spirit and fervor of a young man. What's there to be afraid of? It's only a Companion Beast. You can get another one in the future. If you can kill that strange Buddha Heart Lotus now, who knows if a special Companion Beast will drop. Wouldn't

you make a killing that way?" Li Xuan commented in dejection.

"I don't like betting." Zhou Wen shook his head as he turned around and headed back.

Li Xuan could only helplessly follow Zhou Wen to head back. It wasn't easy for him to get two entry passes, and now they were returning without even killing a single dimensional creature after coming to Underground Buddha City.

"Why don't we visit that bizarre place where everyone dies mysteriously?" Li Xuan suggested as he was unwilling to leave empty-handed.

"You have a Legendary Companion Beast to protect you. I don't. Besides, I don't wish to bet my life." Zhou Wen walked off without even turning back.

"You have zero spirit of adventure." Li Xuan shrugged before leaving Underground Buddha City with Zhou Wen.

Li Xuan grumbled the entire way about how timid Zhou Wen was, but the latter completely ignored him. After returning to Li Xuan's place, he went straight to his room and launched the Underground Buddha City dungeon.

When the blood-colored avatar entered, it looked identical to what Zhou Wen had seen of Underground Buddha City. He then used the map from Li Xuan and used it to find the lotus pond in-game.

Unlike reality, where the Buddha Heart Lotuses near the bank had been sliced clean by students, leaving only Buddha Heart Lotuses deep inside the lotus pond, the game was filled with Buddha Heart Lotuses everywhere across the

pond. However, there wasn't a gargantuan Buddha Heart Lotus.

To prevent the blood-colored avatar from dying, Zhou Wen didn't let it enter the lotus pond. He summoned the Mutated Skeleton Ant and got it to rush towards a Buddha Heart Lotus situated near the bank.

The Mutated Skeleton Ant's sharp front claws sliced through the green lotus seeds that shot out as it didn't hesitate to slice through the Buddha Heart Lotus.

"Killed Mortal dimensional creature, Buddha Heart Lotus."

The system's notification appeared, but nothing dropped.

Zhou Wen ordered the Mutated Skeleton Ant to storm into the lotus pond, slicing any Buddha Heart Lotuses he saw. After killing more than thirty Buddha Heart Lotuses, a dimensional crystal finally dropped.

However, Zhou Wen realized that it was a Constitution Crystal with a value of 2. All it could be used for was replenish some of his expended Primordial Energy.

While Zhou Wen was mindlessly killing Buddha Heart Lotuses, the news of the gargantuan Buddha Heart Lotus's appearance had spread across Sunset College.

Many students who hadn't left campus during the school break rushed to the lotus pond when they heard. There was no lack of powerful Legendary stage students.

Everyone wanted to slay the gargantuan Buddha Heart Lotus. When a Legendary stage student released a Legendary Golden-Eyed Condor Companion Beast in a bid to slay the Buddha Heart Lotus from the air; to everyone's

surprise, it was struck down. It nearly fell into the pond and almost all its feathers dropped off.

Thankfully, the Golden-Eyed Condor's owner was quick to react and made it return early. However, it barely escaped with its life. To make it receive a full recovery was not easy.

Many Legendary stage students tried various methods but failed to make much progress. After all, Companion Beasts capable of flight were relatively rare. And with a place like the lotus pond, humans didn't even dare do the deed themselves, relegating it to their Companion Beasts.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 46 - Small Buddha Temple

Chapter 46: Small Buddha Temple

Translator: CKtalon Editor: CKtalon

Ding!

In the Underground Buddha City dungeon of the game, Zhou Wen slew countless Buddha Heart Lotuses before a Buddha Heart Lotus Crystal dropped.

He was somewhat disappointed. After spending the entire night grinding—with the dawn approaching—not a single Buddha Heart Lotus Companion Egg had dropped. The dimensional crystals he obtained were useless, with only the Buddha Heart Lotus Crystal being of some use.

Li Xuan hadn't informed Zhou Wen what Primordial Energy Skill the Buddha Heart Lotus had. However, from the lotus seeds it shot out, it was likely a projectile-type Primordial Energy Skill.

Mortal stage Primordial Energy Skills basically didn't have the ability to project their Primordial Energy outwards. This was limited to a small number even at the Legendary stage.

Even for a projectile-type Primordial Energy Skill, only the use of a physical projectile could be used at the Mortal

stage. There was no way to condense the Primordial Energy into a projectile.

Zhou Wen directly absorbed the Buddha Heart Lotus Crystal and quickly a strange force traveled from his phone into his body.

The force of the Buddha Heart Lotus Crystal was different from the crystals he had previously absorbed. Its force was extremely mild like a spring's warm water infusing his body. It slowly flowed through his body before gushing into his heart. It strengthened his heart, making it beat with greater strength.

'Absorbed Buddha Heart Lotus Crystal. Attained Primordial Energy Crystal Heart Meditation (Rank 7).'

Zhou Wen tried using Heart Meditation and found a warm stream flow out of his heart into every corner of his body. Other than giving him a warm and fuzzy feeling, there was nothing else.

No wonder Li Xuan only said that Buddha Heart Lotus Companion Beasts are awesome, but he didn't mention the Buddha Heart Lotus's Primordial Energy Skill. It's really useless. Zhou Wen didn't mind as he continued ordering the Mutated Skeleton Ant to slay the Buddha Heart Lotuses.

As he was having a great time killing them, he suddenly heard a boom. The pond water nearby spewed hundreds of feet high as a gargantuan Buddha Heart Lotus with petals having a sitting Buddha tore out of the water.

Before the Mutated Skeleton Ant could react, the blood-colored Buddha Heart Lotus had shot out more than ten blood-colored lotus seeds at it.

Knowing that the Mutated Skeleton Ant wasn’t afraid of the corrosion, Zhou Wen ordered it to rush forward against the torrent of seeds.

When they struck the Mutated Skeleton Ant, they blasted open, releasing the blood within. They flowed everywhere across its body but failed to deal any damage.

The Mutated Skeleton Ant dashed towards the blood-colored Buddha Heart Lotus and when it was about six meters away, it leaped up, inward slashing its razor-sharp claws at the flower bud.

Based on Zhou Wen’s observations, the Buddha Heart Lotus itself wasn’t very powerful. Even if it was a Legendary stage creature, the Mutated Skeleton Ant had a chance of cleaving off its bud based on the Strength and talent skill it had.

With the Mutated Skeleton Ant right in front of the Buddha Heart Lotus, the Buddha Heart Lotus suddenly spread its petals open like a bizarre mouth and devoured its aggressor. The petals then contracted, turning into a closed bud.

Almost at the same time, Zhou Wen saw the system’s notification of the Mutated Skeleton Ant’s death.

Indeed, when the petals spread open again, the Mutated Skeleton Ant was nowhere to be seen. There weren’t any remnants of its bones.

What a terrifying Buddha Heart Lotus. Zhou Wen couldn’t help but sigh.

Without the Mutated Skeleton Ant, Zhou Wen lacked the ability to enter the lotus pond to attempt killing the Buddha Heart Lotus. Although his Companion Beast could be revived in-game, it could only be revived together with the blood-

colored avatar. This also meant that when Zhou Wen revived the blood-colored avatar with a drop of blood, his Companion Beast would also revive.

But as the blood-colored avatar was still alive, sending it to its death for nothing would be quite a waste.

Looking at the map Li Xuan had given him, he controlled the blood-colored avatar and sent it to the restricted zone carved out by the military. Since death was required, he might as well visit to figure out the mystery.

In the ancient, dark, and moist Underground Buddha City, there were crumbling walls everywhere. There was also plenty of sand and gravel that tumbled across the ground.

Zhou Wen saw a stone bridge when he approached the restricted zone on the map.

Typical stone bridges had flowers, grass, birds, or beasts patterned on the bridge railings. But this bridge had several colored, flying fairies.

They were in the form of young women as their clothes fluttered in the sky while they danced. It was a staggeringly beautiful sight.

Comparing it to the map, Zhou Wen quickly confirmed that the restricted zone was just after the bridge. The soldiers had died mysteriously on the other side of the bridge.

Zhou Wen was only gaming, so he naturally didn’t have many apprehensions. He controlled the blood-colored avatar to step onto the bridge.

He didn’t discover anything abnormal, it seemed an extremely normal stone bridge. The blood-colored avatar

easily crossed and arrived at the other side.

Across the bridge, it’s original appearance could no longer be identified. Boulders filled both sides, leaving a narrow path among the rock that was enough for a single person’s passage.

There was a faint flickering of flames at the end of the rocky path. It was likely an illumination object such as a fire torch or oil lamp.

Zhou Wen carefully observed the path but didn’t discover anything abnormal. He then controlled the blood-colored avatar to walk in and head toward the light.

The passage gradually headed up and it was then that Zhou Wen realized that there were stone steps at his feet. However, due to the mud and rubble, the steps had been hidden.

After walking for a while, he saw the stone steps exposed outside.

He didn’t encounter any danger despite walking hundreds of meters. However, he didn’t let down his guard as he kept observing the stone walls and the steps beneath him.

But nothing happened at all. Instead, the flaming light gradually turned clear. With it, he could barely make out a grandiose entrance.

The entrance had a plaque that was rather old and damaged. The red paint had mostly faded and the text was already very blurry. At this distance, it was impossible to see what the words were.

Zhou Wen controlled the blood-colored avatar to approach the entrance. Shortly after, he finally saw the words: ‘Small Buddha Temple.’

What’s Small Buddha Temple? Zhou Wen was somewhat surprised. He had heard of Grand Buddha Temple, but he had never heard of Small Buddha Temple.

While he was in thought, he suddenly saw the game screen turn black—clearly, the blood-colored avatar had died.

How did it die? He couldn’t help but frown. He had been staring at the blood-colored avatar the entire time, but he didn’t see how it had died.

After dripping his blood to revive, he sent the blood-colored avatar to the Underground Buddha City. He made the first stop at the lotus pond and spawned the blood-colored Buddha Heart Lotus, only to have the Mutated Skeleton Ant killed again.

The blood-colored avatar then headed to Small Buddha Temple, but it once again died mysteriously at the stone steps in front of the entrance. Zhou Wen had watched very carefully with widened eyes, but he failed to see how the blood-colored avatar had died under his nose.

However, Zhou Wen shared the same feeling when the blood-colored avatar died. At that instant, he felt all his organs suddenly contract.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 47 - Reunion Meal

Chapter 47: Reunion Meal

Translator: CKtalon Editor: CKtalon

Of course, this was the feeling the blood-colored avatar had given Zhou Wen. None of his organs really contracted.

Strange. I didn’t see any dimensional creatures appear. There wasn’t even a strand of grass in the stone rifts. What could have caused the blood-colored avatar to die? It’s no wonder the military are helpless. This place is indeed quite odd. Zhou Wen was thinking of trying another round at the lotus pond and Small Buddha Temple when he heard knocking on the door.

“Zhou Wen, are you up?” Li Xuan’s voice sounded.

Only then did Zhou Wen realize that the sky had already lit up. He had unknowingly gamed for the entire night. Time passed way too quickly.

“It’s unlocked,” Zhou Wen said.

Li Xuan pushed the door open and saw Zhou Wen gaming. Furthermore, he had dark circles under his eyes and his hair was disheveled. He couldn’t help but exclaim, “Don’t tell me you gamed the entire night.”

“Tell me if there’s something interesting. Otherwise don’t disturb my sleep,” Zhou Wen said as he put down his phone.

He still planned on having a short nap. Sleep was a form of repose for him in the past, but now, he found sleep torture.

The feeling of sleep paralysis was terrible. Furthermore, he often heard devil-like murmurs that went on throughout the entire night.

It was only because Zhou Wen was capable of completely focusing that he could ignore these soul-crushing murmurs and withstand the pressure. If any other person were to suffer such torture daily, they would probably have gone mad.

Subconsciously, Zhou Wen didn’t wish to sleep. It was also why he gamed with such obsession without realizing it.

“Sunset College’s matriculation day is earlier than the average university. School will officially begin in a few days. If nothing surprising happens, we might have a chance to watch a good show play out after we matriculate,” Li Xuan said with a chuckle.

“What good show?” Zhou Wen asked.

Li Xuan said mysteriously, “I heard that many Legendary stage students ranked in the top twenty of Sunset College have gone to the lotus pond, hoping to slay that gargantuan Buddha Heart Lotus, but not only have they failed, but some have even lost their Legendary Companion Beasts. Now, they are all actively purchasing Companion Beasts capable of flight. We should be in time to watch a grand battle play out.”

“Sunset College and the military have Epic stage experts. Why don’t they just mobilize them to vanquish that Buddha Heart Lotus?” Zhou Wen asked, perplexed.

“If every problem is resolved, how are they to nurture the younger generation? The League has rules that reserve

these resources for us, the future seedlings. Unless it's something special, the military or school will not interfere."

Pausing, Li Xuan continued, "I was planning on having breakfast with you, but looking at your present state, you probably want to have some more sleep. I'll have breakfast alone."

After Li Xuan walked out, Zhou Wen slept. As always, he quickly fell asleep. The sleep paralysis happened once again as the devil-like murmurs kept sounding in his ears like a fly that he couldn't chase away.

Zhou Wen ignored the discomfort and noise as he focused his mind on sleeping. However, he was unable to sleep as soundly as he used to.

After about five hours of sleep, he was woken up by his phone ringing. He felt his mind a lot clearer.

"Fang Ruoxi?" Zhou Wen saw the caller's number and was surprised that it was Fang Ruoxi.

"Zhou Wen, long time no see. I heard you applied to Sunset College. Is that true?"

"Yes."

"Great." Fang Ruoxi seemed to exhale in relief.

"What do you mean?" Zhou Wen didn't know what Fang Ruoxi was getting at.

"It's nothing. I still have something else to do. Bye." Fang Ruoxi's voice sounded a lot happier and she hung up after saying goodbye.

She’s crazy! Zhou Wen looked at his phone, having been rendered speechless.

Just as he put his phone down, it rang again. This time, it was Zhou Lingfeng.

“Dad.” Zhou Wen picked up the call.

“Son, are you in Luoyang now?”

“Yes. What’s up?” Zhou Wen had an ominous feeling.

“Little Lan wishes to treat you to a meal. Let’s have a reunion,” Zhou Lingfeng said with a smile.

“I’m having it pretty good over here. It’s probably good over on your side, so there’s no need to force a meeting, right?” Zhou Wen said with a frown.

“No matter what you say, we will be a family in the future. It’s only right to get to know one another. Besides, Little Lan really wishes to meet you. Come have a meal on account of your dad.” Zhou Lingfeng didn’t show any intentions of giving up.

Zhou Wen thought for a moment before saying, “Alright then. What’s the time and place?”

“It’s not easy to find the place. Where are you? I’ll get someone to pick you up.”

Zhou Wen gave an address. he didn’t mention that it was Li Xuan’s place and only said a nearby street’s name.

“Alright. Wait there. I’ll get someone to pick you up.” Zhou Lingfeng hung up once that was said.

Zhou Wen didn’t know when his ride would come. So all he could do was get out of bed, wash up, and head out. He got to the designated street and, when he saw no one, he crouched by the side of the road to game.

This time, Zhou Wen didn’t continue grinding at Underground Buddha City. Instead, he chose the Ant Nest. He wanted to see if he now had a chance of killing the Silver-Winged Flying Ant.

Before he found it, he heard the sound of a vehicle stopping beside him. It was a jeep.

Zhou Wen saw a long snow-white leg extend out of the car when he looked up. Then, he saw a familiar face.

“An Jing?” Not expecting Zhou Lingfeng to get An Jing to pick him up, he was somewhat taken aback.

An Jing looked at Zhou Wen’s phone and couldn’t help but frown when she saw the game running on the screen. She then sized him up and coldly said, “You didn’t cultivate the Sun Strafe Art?”

“I was about to ask you. I asked my dad and he said he didn’t give me the Sun Strafe Art,” Zhou Wen said to An Jing as he controlled the blood-colored avatar to a safe corner before quitting the game.

“I gave you the Sun Strafe Art to harm you,” An Jing said with a cold expression before getting into the car. Without looking back, she asked, “Aren’t you getting in?”

Zhou Wen never expected An Jing to be so direct. He was momentarily unsure if she was speaking the truth.

However, since she was here and he had agreed to meet, there was naturally no reason for him to turn back. Zhou Wen pulled open the car door and sat at the passenger’s seat.

“I’m returning this to you.” Zhou Wen handed over the USB disk with the Sun Strafe Art.

After cultivating the Lost Immortal Sutra, no other Primordial Energy Art could work in his body. Regardless of its authenticity, it was already meaningless to him.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 48 - Stepmother?

Chapter 48: Stepmother?

Translator: CKtalon Editor: CKtalon

Driving forward without turning her head, An Jing said, “I never take back things I give away. If you don’t want it, you can delete it and throw it away.”

Zhou Wen placed the USB disk deeper into his pocket. It wasn’t worth much, so there wasn’t any need to return to An Jing. Although he didn’t know the veracity of the Sun Strafe Art inside, it was just as An Jing said; he could just delete it.

The entire journey was silent, and soon, they had reached their destination.

Zhou Wen had found Li Xuan’s villa extremely luxurious, but when he saw his destination, he realized what luxurious meant. It was like a garden itself.

An Jing drove the car passed an elegant and beautiful garden. There was no lack of modern style buildings, but they fused perfectly with the surrounding gardens. The contrast was perfectly balanced, clearly the work of a meticulous designer.

In front of a three-story building, An Jing stopped the car and took Zhou Wen straight into the building by the main door.

As he entered the foyer, he saw a mature, elegant woman sitting on the couch with Zhou Lingfeng.

He sized up the woman and found her resembling the photo that Zhou Lingfeng had sent him. She was likely Ouyang Lan, but she looked more beautiful with a greater disposition in real life. She looked as though she was only in her thirties.

“Hello, Auntie,” Zhou Wen greeted. Firstly, he didn’t wish to put Zhou Lingfeng in a difficult position. Secondly, he wanted to make it clear that he didn’t treat her as his mother.

“Little Wen, you’re here. You look more handsome than your photographs. Your complexion just doesn’t seem too good. We happen to have cooked some ginseng soup. You should have some later. It helps.” Ouyang Lan stood up and pulled Zhou Wen’s hand, bringing him to the couch.

“Thank you, Auntie.” Although Zhou Wen had low EQ, he wasn’t foolish enough to reject Ouyang Lan’s well-meant intentions. He just needed to prevent making it awkward for everyone. All he wanted to do was to finish this meal before returning to game. He wanted to see if he could kill that Silver-Winged Flying Ant.

Ouyang Lan clearly was a person with very high EQ. Even though it was their first meeting, she made him very comfortable as though they had known each other for ages.

Zhou Wen originally imagined that Zhou Lingfeng was someone who had the gift of the gab, but when with Ouyang Lan, his father appeared somewhat wooden. It surprised Zhou Wen.

“These are some fresh persimmons that were delivered earlier. Little Jing, you like them the most, so try them. They’re sweet.” When Ouyang Lan seemed to realize that she had given An Jing the cold shoulder, she personally offered An Jing a succulent, enticing persimmon.

An Jing took it, peeled it open and took a bite. It was really sweet.

“Here, have another one.” Seeing An Jing finish eating it, Ouyang Lan offered her another one.

An Jing took the persimmon and deliberately shot a glance at Zhou Wen. Although she didn’t say a word, he could read her mind.

That’s what you call a real mother. An Jing seemed to say because Ouyang Lan hadn’t offered any persimmons to Zhou Wen who sat beside her.

Zhou Wen didn’t mind. Ouyang Lan was An Jing’s mother to begin with. Doting on her was only normal, so there was no reason for him to be jealous. Furthermore, he had no plans on becoming a part of the family, so there was even less reason for him to mind.

While Ouyang Lan and Zhou Wen were chatting, a butler came over and informed her, “Madam, the meal is ready.”

“We’ve waited for so long. You must be hungry. Make sure you have plenty.” Ouyang Lan pulled Zhou Wen into the dining room, making him sit beside her. An Jing could only sit somewhere farther away.

Upon seeing the table of dishes that were impeccable in smell and appearance, he realized that he had never seen some of the dishes. However, he was able to identify the huge lobster among them.

Ever since the dimensional storms, most of the sea had turned into dimensional zones. The creatures in them mutated, so seafood had become much rarer.

Lobsters were things that Zhou Wen had only read about in history books, biological textbooks, and on the Internet. He had never seen one in person before, much less eaten one. It was especially so in Guide City which was landlocked. There was almost no chance of eating seafood, not to mention such a huge lobster.

“This lobster was delivered by air this morning. I prepared it myself. Little Jing loves such lobsters the most,” Ouyang Lan said.

As there was only one lobster, Zhou Wen imagined that Ouyang Lan had said so as a hint that he shouldn’t fight An Jing for the lobster.

When An Jing heard that, she felt touched. Her icy look finally produced a smile as she looked provocatively at Zhou Wen again.

However, the next second, Ouyang Lan said with a wistful look, “However, seafood like lobster cannot be eaten with persimmons or it will cause diarrhea. In serious cases, it might even cause food poisoning. An Jing has just had persimmons, so Little Wen, you should have the lobster. Have a taste of my culinary skills.”

With that said, Ouyang Lan served the lobster to Zhou Wen.

Instantly, An Jing, who was prepared to take the lobster for herself, became petrified. Zhou Wen also wore a look of shock.

It was deliberate, definitely deliberate… Zhou Wen was convinced that Ouyang Lan had deliberately made An Jing eat persimmons. It was clearly a trap.

It was no wonder Zhou Wen found it weird. With Ouyang Lan having such high EQ and there being so many persimmons on the plate, there was no way An Jing could finish them alone, so why wouldn’t the former offer him one?

Is she really An Jing’s mother? As Zhou Wen looked at the elegant Ouyang Lan with her beautiful features, his mind filled with questions.

Regardless, Ouyang Lan treated him very well. If one didn’t know them, one would imagine that Ouyang Lan was Zhou Wen’s real mother while An Jing was the stepdaughter from her husband’s previous marriage.

An Jing’s expression fell, but it was obvious that she had been brought up well. No matter how aggrieved she was, she didn’t stomp off in a fit. She waited until the end of the meal.

However, her mood was rather terrible, leading her to have a poor appetite.

Today, Zhou Wen acutely experienced what it meant to feel at home as a guest and the feeling of returning home.

Even though he was slow and distant when it came to social relations, he had to accept that it was difficult to feel irked by Ouyang Lan. He even felt willing to deepen his relationship with her.

“Little Wen, I heard that you’ve been admitted into Sunset College. It must have been tough, right? It’s not easy for foreign students to be admitted into Sunset College. I have nothing much I can offer you, so treat this as a meeting gift.” After the meal, when Zhou Wen was preparing to bid farewell, Ouyang Lan handed a card to Zhou Wen.

He originally imagined that it was a credit card or something similar. Just as he was about to decline it, he heard Ouyang Lan say, “This is a dormitory room card for Sunset College—the single room kind. I heard from Lingfeng that you enjoy some peace and quiet, so I got the principal to prepare one for you. After you matriculate, head to the dormitory according to the card number. You have to accept this tiny gift of mine. Don’t make me feel that I didn’t put too much thought into this present, alright?”

“Thank you, Auntie. I like this gift a lot.” Zhou Wen thought about it and accepted the gift. Since it was Ouyang Lan’s gesture of goodwill, he wasn’t willing to be antagonistic about it. A dormitory card wasn’t much and a single room was indeed very useful for Zhou Wen.

Ouyang Lan’s gift increased Zhou Wen’s impression and favorability of her. Even her gift left him feeling good. She was truly a thoughtful person.

“By the way, don’t call me ‘auntie’ in the future. Am I that old? Just call me Sis Lan in the future,” Ouyang Lan said with a faint smile.

Zhou Wen could sense that she had enunciated the word ‘auntie’ rather clearly, making it clear that she minded such an address.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 49 - Silver-Winged Flying Ant

Chapter 49: Silver-Winged Flying Ant

Translator: CKtalon Editor: CKtalon

After leaving the An family, a chauffeur took Zhou Wen home. He didn’t see An Jing again.

Why would Ouyang Lan deliberately try to win my favor? With the An family’s power, there’s no need for her to do so. Zhou Wen saw that the An family’s compound had proper soldiers guarding it. This was a treatment few families in Luoyang enjoyed.

He wasn’t convinced that Ouyang Lan was simply trying to build better ties with him just because of Zhou Lingfeng.

After all, Zhou Lingfeng left him to his own devices, so there was no need for her to do something as troublesome as this.

Completely perplexed at this development, Zhou Wen decided not to vex over the matter. After all, he was just a poor kid and Ouyang Lan likely couldn’t benefit much from him no matter how she schemed.

After returning to Li Xuan’s villa, he found it empty. Over the past few days, he seldom saw Li Xuan at home.

Zhou Wen sat on the sofa and took out his phone to launch the Ant Nest dungeon once more. As he had only quit the game and the blood-colored avatar remained alive, there was no need for him to waste a drop of blood to enter the game.

The blood-colored avatar appeared at the spot he had quit where there were a number of Vigor Ants crawling around him. Zhou Wen summoned the Mutated Vigor Ant and got the blood-colored avatar to ride on it before storming off.

The Mutated Vigor Ant was just too powerful. Not even Vigor Ants posed a threat, even Mutated Vigor Ants could be cleaved apart with one swipe.

After leaving a wake of destruction and slaying a Mutated Vigor Ant, Zhou Wen heard a notification sound. Originally imagining that a dimensional crystal had dropped, through observation he realized it was only a Mutated Vigor Ant Egg.

“Discovered Mutated Vigor Ant. It has a compatibility score of 73% with the Mutated Skeleton Ant. Proceed with fusion?”

Zhou Wen chose no because the last fusion hadn’t brought about any excellent effects. He had no idea if a fusion might end up making the Mutated Skeleton Ant weaker; therefore, he chose not to.

After choosing ‘no,’ the Mutated Vigor Ant Egg automatically entered an incubation mode. In turn, Zhou Wen felt his Primordial Energy flow towards the Companion Egg.

This time, the incubation was very successful without having his Primordial Energy drained. He took a look at his stats in-game and realized that he still had two Primordial Energy left.

After the Mutated Vigor Ant had finished incubating, it turned into an ant tattoo that appeared on the back of his right hand. Perhaps due to the Mutated Skeleton Ant on his left hand, this new Companion Beast had chosen the right.

Mutated Vigor Ant: Mortal

Strength: 7

Speed: 4

Constitution: 7

Primordial Energy: 2

Talent Skill: Vigor Divine Fist (Rank 2)

Companion Form: Boxing Glove

This Mutated Vigor Ant's stats are far worse than the first one. It's not of much use to me. Unfortunately, I can't take out things that drop in-game. Otherwise, I could sell them for money. Zhou Wen felt a little depressed.

Despite so, he was still happy that something had dropped. After all, this was rare to begin with.

Due to having his Primordial Energy expended, Zhou Wen didn't head straight for the Silver-Winged Flying Ant. He first circled the region and killed large numbers of Vigor Ants, using the Primordial Energy Crystals that dropped to replenish his Primordial Energy.

After refilling his Primordial Energy to 10, Zhou Wen headed for the spot where the Silver-Winged Flying Ant was.

When he saw the Silver-Winged Flying Ant from far away, it flapped its wings and flew over, its speed so fast that it left behind after-images on the screen.

Without hesitation, Zhou Wen summoned the Mutated Vigor Ant and made it deal with the nearby ordinary ant horde. As for the Mutated Skeleton Ant, he had summoned it out as his Companion Form.

Blood-red bones appeared on his left arm as though he had an exoskeleton. It enveloped his entire left arm, including his hand, turning into a fearsome bracer.

The bracer could not only serve as protection, it even had quite a number of bone spikes that made it even more terrifying.

Almost at the instant the bracer took form, he felt a force pump into his left arm, condensing its Strength and making it more robust. He had the feeling that his single punch could blow through a mountain.

The Silver-Winged Flying Ant arrived at the next instant. Its silver transparent wings rapidly flapped, streaking a curve across the air like a silver bolt of lightning. Its claw stabbed towards the blood-colored avatar’s chest.

Zhou Wen had fought the Silver-Winged Flying Ant multiple times, so he knew it very well. Upon seeing its actions, he knew where it was attacking. Without waiting for it to complete the attack, he took a sidestep and turned his body, using his left hand, which was protected by the bracer, to deliver an Ashen Palm strike.

At this close distance, with Ashen Palm’s explosive speed, Zhou Wen imagined that it was in the bag. To his surprise, silver streams of light shot out from above the Silver-Winged Flying Ant’s four transparent wings.

The Silver-Winged Flying Ant, which was already exceedingly fast, had its speed increase significantly. At such close proximity, Zhou Wen’s Ashen Palm failed to keep up with his opponent’s speed. He was just a sliver short of hitting its body.

Instead, the Silver-Winged Flying Ant's claw directly stabbed into the blood-colored avatar's chest in that fluid motion. There was no chance for the latter to even struggle as it died on the spot.

"A flying-type Primordial Energy Skill?" Looking at the blackened screen, Zhou Wen was excited instead of being sad.

The Silver-Winged Flying Ant had never used Primordial Energy Skills before. However, he had managed to force it to use it, meaning that Zhou Wen felt that he had a chance of defeating it.

After all, Primordial Energy Skills required Primordial Energy. The Silver-Winged Flying Ant couldn't keep using it. As long as he figured out a way to stall for time, it wouldn't be impossible for him to slay it.

Furthermore, since the Silver-Winged Flying Ant had a flight-type Primordial Energy Skill, this was undoubtedly good news for him. They were relatively rare and were very useful.

With something to look forward to, Zhou Wen worked even harder. He used a syringe to draw some blood and dripped it on his screen, reviving the blood-colored avatar and immediately sending it do battle.

When he came in front of the Silver-Winged Flying Ant again, Zhou Wen lasted an additional three seconds. The third time he fought it, he used positioning and Ashen Palm that threatened the Silver-Winged Flying Ant, successfully dodging its use of the Primordial Energy Skill twice.

Zhou Wen exchanged the repeated deaths for combat experience as he slowly approached his goal of killing the Silver-Winged Flying Ant.

Finally, he confirmed that the Silver-Winged Flying Ant could only use its Primordial Energy Skill twice. This was its limit. As long as Zhou Wen could dodge the greatest threat twice, he would have the chance of defeating it.

During his seventh encounter with the Silver-Winged Flying Ant, he successfully dodged the two critical instances and found an opportunity to deliver Ashen Palm, striking at the thin waist of the Silver-Winged Flying Ant.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 50 - Incubation Failure

Chapter 50: Incubation Failure

Translator: CKtalon Editor: CKtalon

The Silver-Winged Flying Ant’s thin waist didn’t snap. It didn’t even show signs of being injured. However, after it flew several meters away, its waist suddenly seemed to bend. Its upper body drooped down as though it lacked the strength to prop it up. After staggering for a while, it collapsed to the ground due to a lack of balance.

Zhou Wen was delighted to see this. He immediately controlled the blood-colored avatar to rush over to deliver another Ashen Palm strike, hitting the Silver-Winged Flying Ant’s head.

After this strike, Zhou Wen’s Primordial Energy was completely drained. He was unable to use Primordial Energy Skills again, but the effects of this strike were very evident. With the augmentation of the skeleton bracer and Ashen Palm’s cold, explosive might, it blasted apart the Silver-Winged Flying Ant’s head. Immediately, it began going in circles as it flapped its wings.

Seeing it still alive, Zhou Wen threw a few more punches. However, without any Primordial Energy left, he was unable to use Primordial Energy Skills. He relied only on his Strength and the augmentation of the skeleton bracer. However, he only managed to leave the Silver-Winged Flying Ant tumbling around without dealing any serious injuries to it.

However, the two Ashen Palm at full might were lethal. After the Silver-Winged Flying Ant slammed around randomly, it slowly stopped moving.

“Killed Legendary creature, Silver-Winged Flying Ant. Discovered Silver-Winged Flying Ant Companion Egg.”

Zhou Wen was taken aback, having never expected a Companion Egg to drop. Although the chances of a Companion Egg dropping were significantly higher for Legendary creatures, it was still a relatively low probability.

To have a Companion Egg drop on his first kill of a Silver-Winged Flying Ant was sheer good luck.

However, with this happening, Zhou Wen could only make a bet. A Legendary Companion Egg required plenty of Primordial Energy during incubation. He wasn’t necessarily capable of incubating the egg successfully.

Zhou Wen’s only advantage was to use the game character to incubate. Even if he failed, it only led to the game character’s death and nothing to do with him. However, he didn’t know if the Companion Egg would still exist in such circumstances.

Can’t this darn game have a backpack? Let me store the Companion Eggs or dimensional crystals that I pick up in an inventory instead of having to use them immediately. Zhou Wen’s grumblings were in vain. He still got the blood-colored avatar to pick up the Companion Egg. Otherwise, the Companion Egg would no longer be there once the dungeon refreshed if his in-game character were to die.

However, he didn’t pick it up immediately. He did some grinding on the Vigor Ants and used the dropped Primordial

Energy Crystals to replenish his Primordial Energy. Only then did he pick up the Silver-Winged Flying Ant Companion Egg.

‘Silver-Winged Flying Ant and Mutated Skeleton Ant have a compatibility score of 21%. Silver-Winged Flying Ant and Mutated Vigor Ant have a compatibility score of 11.1%. Proceed with fusion?’

They are all ants, so why is the compatibility so low? The system’s notification left Zhou Wen speechless.

Without having the intention to change his mind, Zhou Wen chose ‘no’ before letting the Companion Egg enter the incubation mode.

Hum!

Zhou Wen felt all his meridians tremble vigorously as his Primordial Energy was instantly drained, leaving not one bit behind. He felt as though he was about to die.

He felt a burning pain that seemed to come from an explosion across his back and couldn’t help but spew out a mouthful of blood.

Boom!

Without any surprises, the blood-colored avatar in-game exploded to its death, turning the screen black.

Indeed, even with a 10-valued Primordial Energy limit as a Mortal, using that to incubate a Legendary Companion Beast is still too demanding. Besides, the Silver-Winged Flying Ant isn’t an ordinary Legendary. Zhou Wen felt a little stifled. He had long steeled himself for the worst possible outcome, so he wasn’t too disappointed.

When he dripped a drop of blood and relaunched the game, he couldn’t help but widen his eyes when he looked at the stats of the blood-colored avatar.

The other stats hadn’t changed, but in the Companion Beast entry, there was an additional “Silver-Winged Flying Ant.”

It actually managed to be incubated… Zhou Wen was overjoyed. He hadn’t held any hope, so he was surprised to see the Silver-Winged Flying Ant appear in his Companion Beast entry.

He hurriedly checked on the Silver-Winged Flying Ant’s stats. He was rather expectant of it. Other than having a slightly weaker Constitution, it was unlikely to have any other weakness.

More importantly, the Silver-Winged Flying Ant’s body shape could perhaps be used as a mount.

Also, with the Silver-Winged Flying Ant as a Legendary Companion Beast capable of flight, he could now attempt to kill the blood-colored Buddha Heart Lotus.

However, when Zhou Wen saw its stats, he was taken aback. He took quite some time to recover.

Silver-Winged Flying Ant: Legendary (Larva State)

Legendary Life Providence: King of Low Altitudes

Talent Skill: Silver Wing Flash

Companion Form: Wings

Strength: 12

Speed: 14

Constitution: 10

Primordial Energy: 11

Ignoring everything else, its stats were clearly too weak. Among Legendary Companion Beasts, it was the weakest kind. It was even inferior to the Skeleton General and could even be said to be much worse.

The Silver-Winged Flying Ant shouldn’t be this weak. Could it be because it couldn’t finish the incubation? Does this Larva State mean that it still has room for growth? Zhou Wen thought about it as he summoned the Silver-Winged Flying Ant.

A silver glow appeared on the back of the blood-colored avatar before a silver flying ant flew out. The moment it appeared, Zhou Wen saw how different it was.

This Silver-Winged Flying Ant he had incubated was at least half the size of the Silver-Winged Flying Ant he had killed.

The Silver-Winged Flying Ant was bigger than a Vigor Ant to begin with and about the size of a Mutated Vigor Ant. But now, it was only about half the size of a Vigor Ant.

This size was definitely unsuitable for riding as it was just too small.

Zhou Wen tried turning the Silver-Winged Flying Ant into its Companion Form and saw a silver light flash. Four silver transparent wings appeared on the back of the blood-colored avatar.

However, the wings looked a little too small, extremely disproportionate to the blood-colored avatar’s size. It left

Zhou Wen wondering whether such small wings could lift the blood-colored avatar.

He made an attempt and the four silver wings actually managed to allow the blood-colored avatar to fly. The speed was not bad and allowed for nimble maneuvering. However, the wings didn't allow him to fly high. Its maximum height didn't surpass twenty meters.

Zhou Wen then had a serious look at the Silver-Winged Flying Ant's Life Providence's and Talent Skill's introduction.

King of Low Altitudes: Has tremendous air superiority, but can only fly at low heights. A king when it comes to low-altitude flight.

Silver Wing Flash: Significantly boosts flying speed for a short period of time.

Silver Wing Flash was as Zhou Wen expected. However, the Legendary Life Providence title of King of Low Altitudes left him depressed. This creature couldn't fly high.

From the looks of it, I can only count on the Silver-Winged Flying Ant maturing. Otherwise, with such stats, it's unlikely to hold much of an advantage over any Legendary creature. I shouldn't even pin my hopes on it to kill the blood-colored Buddha Heart Lotus. I'm just curious what needs to be done to allow the Silver-Winged Flying Ant to mature, Zhou Wen thought.

While Zhou Wen was pondering over the matter, the Silver-Winged Flying Ant's Companion Beast interface produced a system notification: Silver-Winged Flying Ant is currently in a hungry state. Proceed with feeding?

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 51 - Companion Beast's Food

Chapter 51: Companion Beast’s Food

Translator: CKtalon **Editor:** CKtalon

Zhou Wen chose ‘yes’ out of curiosity. He had no idea how feeding was done, nor did he know what Companion Beasts ate.

Although people would use dimensional crystals to strengthen their Companion Beasts in real life to expedite their evolution, the situation with the Silver-Winged Flying Ant was somewhat different. It wasn’t evolving but growing up.

‘Two foods available: Mutated Vigor Ant and Mutated Skeleton Ant. Please select the food for feeding.’

The food is actually Companion Beasts? Zhou Wen found it extravagant. The price of any Companion Beast could feed an ordinary person for half a year; yet, this fellow was actually eating them.

Thankfully, Zhou Wen had no way to sell the Companion Beasts that dropped in-game. For instance, the Mutated Vigor Ant was no longer of much use, so using it as food wasn’t something to be sad about.

He didn’t hesitate as he chose the Mutated Vigor Ant as food and fed it to the Silver-Winged Flying Ant.

The Mutated Vigor Ant which had been selected transformed into a swirl of light that flew towards the Silver-Winged Flying Ant. There was nothing apart from a silver flash after it had infused the Silver-Winged Flying Ant. It allowed the latter’s hungry state to disappear.

Having killed the Silver-Winged Flying Ant, the ordinary Vigor Ants and Mutated Vigor Ants couldn’t stop the blood-colored avatar and the skeleton ant. Zhou Wen stormed forward, hoping to see what hid deeper in the Ant Nest.

The Mutated Skeleton Ant was like a tank. It left a wake of destruction through the ant swarm, but the swarm was like a terrifying tidal wave. Despite spending half an hour, he only advanced a few hundred meters.

Zhou Wen’s heart stirred when he saw the underground area widen significantly. He summoned the Silver-Winged Flying Ant and four transparent wings appeared behind the blood-colored avatar, allowing the blood-colored avatar to fly up.

Although it could only fly about ten meters high, it was sufficient to prevent the Vigor Ants from touching him. Besides, they were underground, so there wasn’t that much space for him to fly.

In fact, even if he flew higher, it wouldn’t help as there were ants crawling on the ceiling. Zhou Wen didn’t allow the blood-colored avatar to get too close.

The Silver-Winged Flying Ant’s Life Providence as King of Low Altitudes made things easier. It flew very agilely at low altitudes and even if Vigor Ants were to pounce off the ceiling towards him, he was able to easily dodge them.

Zhou Wen had hopes of encountering other Silver-Winged Flying Ants as he flew or other higher-level dimensional creatures since he was no longer satisfied killing ordinary Vigor Ants.

The cave became wider as he ventured deeper. Before long, the game screen suddenly opened up. An underground cavern appeared; huge beyond imagination.

And in that underground cavern, there were ant nests stringed together like a gigantic underground city.

However, these ant nests were different from human buildings. They looked like stone spheres of varying sizes with huge stone strips in between them, covering nearly half the underground space.

Around the ant nests' periphery, there was a swarm of black-winged flying ants circling the area. Zhou Wen could only see the center where there was a huge spherical ant nest. Furthermore, there was a strange golden glow emitting from it.

The next second, Zhou Wen saw a swarm of black-winged flying ants charge at him. The blood-colored avatar didn't even manage to put up a struggle before being overrun and dying.

Upon seeing the black screen, Zhou Wen quit the game. He believed that he had no means of exploring the ant city for quite some time.

"At the very least, I'll have to wait until the Silver-Winged Flying Ant grows up before I have a chance of exploring the ant city. I wonder what that golden glow in the middle of the ant nest is. It doesn't look like an ant." Zhou Wen hadn't had much time to observe it and since it was too far, he hadn't managed to take a good look.

He happened to be hungry, so he headed to the kitchen to look for some food. He realized that Li Xuan's fridge was empty. The only thing there was leftover pizza—moldy pizza.

Isn't it a waste to have this huge refrigerator switched on all the time with nothing inside? Zhou Wen decided to buy

some food. They were still a few days away from the first day of school, and he needed food for those days.

…

Inside a hotel suite in Luoyang City, Qiao Siyuan was carefully reading through a document.

A blonde, green-eyed woman, Liz, reported as she held a tablet in hand, “That youth’s information is all in here. His name is Zhou Wen, a student of Guide High School. He graduated this year and scored pretty highly. He came in second in the city for the combat test. He has already been admitted into Sunset College. His father is Zhou Lingfeng, a translator. He doesn’t have any background worth mentioning, but interestingly, Zhou Lingfeng recently remarried and his new wife is the An family’s widow, Ouyang Lan.”

“An Tianzuo’s mother, Ouyang Lan?” Qiao Siyuan was taken aback when he heard that as he looked up at Liz.

Liz smiled with a nod. “Yes, Overseer An’s mother. According to the intel, An Jing had once specially transferred to Guide High School to beat up Zhou Wen.”

Qiao Siyuan fell into deep thought after hearing that. He glared at Liz and asked, “Does Zhou Lingfeng really not have any background?”

“I’ve already had his background investigated. For three generations, their family has been poor. Zhou Lingfeng’s father was a carpenter. He didn’t enjoy physical labor from a young age, and due to his aptitude in language, he chose to be a translator,” Liz said as she took a look at her summary.

“Could it be possible that Zhou Lingfeng had made contact with people overseas?” Qiao Siyuan asked.

“Unlikely. Although Zhou Lingfeng has some aptitude in language, he’s quite a frivolous person. He’s gluttonous and lazy and quite lustful, often spending his time in bars. His cultivation is terrible and he only barely entered the Legendary stage a few years ago. I doubt such a person will catch the fancy of those fellows overseas, right?” Liz replied.

“That’s strange. Why would a woman like Ouyang Lan like such a man?” Qiao Siyuan frowned.

“Women like a bad boy. Perhaps Ouyang Lan likes a pretty boy like Zhou Lingfeng?” Liz suggested.

Qiao Siyuan firmly shook his head. “Ouyang Lan definitely isn’t such a woman. The An family went into turmoil following An Datong’s death. An Tianzuo was only fourteen when he inherited the An family’s business. Countless important figures in the League crave what the An family has. Even members of the An family have their sights on these things, a classic case of domestic trouble and foreign invasion. For An Tianzuo to keep the family business secure to this day at such a young age, who do you think was responsible for it? With a woman as powerful as Ouyang Lan, even if she’s remarrying, why would she randomly choose such a useless man?”

“But we’ve already checked very carefully. The Zhou family really doesn’t have any background. Zhou Lingfeng is clean, so it’s unlikely he has any relationships with those overseas,” Liz said.

“Don’t underestimate those people overseas.” Qiao Siyuan thought and said, “Is Zhou Wen living at the Ans presently?”

“No. As he had teamed up with Li Xuan for the college entrance exams, they seemed to build up quite a good relationship. Therefore, he has been living at his place since he arrived in Luoyang. We failed to find him in Guide City previously because Li Xuan had brought him to Luoyang early,” Liz said.

“Bring Zhou Wen here. Remember not to alert anyone, especially the Ans,” Qiao Siyuan said in a deep voice.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 52 - Liz's Plan

Chapter 52: Liz’s Plan

Translator: CKtalon **Editor:** CKtalon

Zhou Wen left Li Xuan’s place and walked along the road. It was a really nice neighborhood, but there weren’t any large-sized supermarkets. Zhou Wen navigated using his phone and discovered that the nearest supermarket was about a kilometer away.

Everything around here is nice except the distance needed to buy stuff. Zhou Wen wasn’t averse to walking, but he didn’t wish to waste time on walking.

He believed that wasting time was no different from wasting life, so he took out the mysterious phone and gamed while walking.

Liz, who had received Qiao Siyuan’s orders to bring Zhou Wen back, had already dispatched men to watch Li Xuan’s place.

Upon seeing Zhou Wen leave the house, a subordinate whispered, “Director Liz, shall we head over and take him away?”

Liz rolled her eyes. “Zhou Wen enjoys a special status. We mustn’t allow others to discover that he was taken by us. And there are cameras everywhere in that upscale neighborhood. We’d be exposed if were to directly take him away?”

“Then what should we do?”

Liz impatiently waved her hand. “Head back now. Leave this to me.”

After chasing away all her subordinates, Liz combed her wavy blonde hair and thought, *With my charm, won’t it be a piece of cake dealing with his kid?*

Liz wasn’t in a hurry. She waited until Zhou Wen left the upscale neighborhood before she started her red convertible sports car. When she saw a stretch of road without any cameras, she drove over.

She deliberately stopped her car beside Zhou Wen, and flicked her blonde hair, exposing the snow-white, supple skin of her shoulder. She then shot Zhou Wen a glance with an expectant and alluring look.

That kid will be groveling at my feet seeing a sports car matched with a beauty like me. Having this thought, Liz’s look and posture became even more seductive as she wore a faint mesmerizing smile.

But soon, her smile froze. Zhou Wen walked as he gamed on his phone, his head lowered. He didn’t even look at her and walked past the car, wasting all of her efforts to present her beauty.

Darn loser! Liz fumed with anger, but she still maintained her mesmerizing pose. She then shouted with a voice that could make any man swoon, “Handsome, mind giving me a hand?”

As she spoke, Liz blinked her eyes, preparing to send his heart into a flutter. As long as Zhou Wen looked at her, she planned to sweep him head over heels.

Liz maintained her coquettish pose while waiting for Zhou Wen to turn around. However, he didn’t even hear her. He continued walking forward without any intention of turning back.

“Handsome… Handsome…” Liz resisted the urge to pull Zhou Wen back and beat him up. She deliberately shouted charmingly a few times.

However, Zhou Wen was completely engrossed in his game, ignoring Liz completely. He didn’t know that Liz was shouting at him since he hadn’t heard his name.

Liz finally realized that her strategy had failed when she saw Zhou Wen extending the gap between them.

This loser… Liz gritted her teeth, adamant about not giving up. She floored the accelerator, taking the sports car in front of Zhou Wen again.

This time, Liz didn’t make the same mistake. She got out of the car, stood in Zhou Wen’s way, putting one hand on the car. Her other hand twirled her hair as she posed in a most charming and alluring manner, accentuating her exquisite curves to the fullest.

Zhou Wen had no choice but to move his gaze from the phone when he realized that something was in his way. He saw Liz when he looked up.

“Handsome, can you help me?” Liz asked, blinking her eyes.

Yes, take it in and appreciate my charm. You’ll pay in a while. Liz thought hatefully, having already prepared her lines. Once Zhou Wen answered her, she would invite him to get into the car and take him back with her.

“No.” However, Zhou Wen’s single-word answer instantly left Liz’s words stuck in her throat.

After speaking, he bowed his head and stared intently at his screen. Then he circled around Liz and walked past her.

The corners of Liz’s eyes twitched as flames nearly spewed out of her eyes. Plumes of fiery anger nearly tore out of her busty chest.

Darn loser… He actually dared ignore my charm… You’re dead… Liz thought hatefully as she turned around slowly and sat back in her car.

Hum!

The sports car’s engine roared like the rage in her heart. The red sports car was like an unbridled mare on the plains as it drove straight for Zhou Wen who was by the side of the road.

Since soft tactics didn’t work, Liz decided to switch tactics. She planned on taking Zhou Wen back with her by creating an accident.

Controlling the strength and spot to hit with a car was nothing for a peak-Legendary like Liz. If she wanted his left leg broken, there was no way his right leg would be broken.

I planned on having you comfortably return with me, but you just insisted on doing it the hard way. Liz floored the accelerator pedal as strange patterns surfaced over her skin. Faint swirls of light extended from her body and enveloped the car.

Her eyes flickered with excitement. She didn’t believe that she would miss; given the close distance, the car’s speed, her maneuvering, and Zhou Wen’s engrossment in his game.

Zhou Wen didn’t seem to notice. He remained gaming, even when the sports car was very close to him. However, when the car ramped up the curb, Zhou Wen finally reacted and saw the sports car slamming towards him.

It’s too late to notice it now. Liz floored the accelerator in hate as she slammed over with the car.

Just as she was about to succeed, Zhou Wen’s back suddenly grew four transparent silver wings and a silver stream of light flashed over the silver wings. Zhou Wen’s figure instantly retreated in violation of the ordinary laws of physics, dodging the sports car.

Bang!

The sports car missed Zhou Wen and collided with an electricity pole by the side of the road. While the pole snapped, the car’s head was dented. Components were left flying everywhere.

“Hello? Is this the traffic police? There’s an accident here…” Zhou Wen took out his ordinary phone and called the police hotline.

Liz glared at Zhou Wen viciously and reversed the car onto the road. Then, she sped off in a blink of an eye.

What’s the brand of that car? The quality is so good. How can it still be driven after such a collision? Zhou Wen watched in astonishment as the sports car vanished from his sight, leaving a gloomy look in his eyes.

Clearly, the sports car was targeting him instead of just having an accident. Furthermore, he had already recognized the female driver. On the night he had met Jing Daoxian, she was one of those pursuing the latter.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 53 - Early Matriculation

Chapter 53: Early Matriculation

Translator: CKtalon **Editor:** CKtalon

Who are these people? Since they were pursuing Jing Daoxian, it makes them either League civil servants or soldiers. But why would they drive a car to knock over an ordinary League citizen?

Zhou Wen secretly frowned as he thought, *I didn't have any relationship with Jing Daoxian. Could it be that those people know that Jing Daoxian gave me the Lost Immortal Sutra and have treated me as his accomplice?*

The more he thought about the matter, the more he found it serious. From the actions the woman had taken, those people wouldn't stop at anything.

Without managing to buy his items, Zhou Wen directly turned back and gave Li Xuan a call.

"Zhou Wen, how rare it is for you to call me," Li Xuan teased. The phone call was affected by the noisy din—a result of loud music and shouting.

"Find somewhere quiet. I have something to say to you," Zhou Wen said.

"Wait a moment. Don't hang up." After a while, the phone turned silent. Li Xuan's voice then sounded. "You can tell me what's up now."

"Is there a way for me to be matriculated now?" After racking his brains, Zhou Wen believed that matriculating was the only viable solution.

After the dimensional storms, the institute was different from the universities of the past. It was especially so with Sunset College. It had close ties and history with the military and was considered a ministry department. In a law-by-law situation, it was impossible for one to enter Sunset College to apprehend someone.

Sunset College was a partially-restricted school. As long as he didn't leave campus, outsiders were unable to drive into him like today.

Furthermore, with the other party being so fearless, he believed that there was a chance of implicating Li Xuan if he continued to stay at his place.

"No problem. I'll settle it immediately. Can you tell me what happened? Just pretend I didn't ask if you can't."

Zhou Wen had no intention of hiding the matter as he explained all that had happened, apart from his conversation with Jing Daoxian and how the Lost Immortal Sutra had been forced on him.

"Holy sh*t, you actually met Jing Daoxian?" Li Xuan exclaimed.

"I wish I had never met him. I've attracted so much trouble simply from meeting him once," Zhou Wen said with a bitter smile.

Li Xuan pondered for a moment before saying solemnly, "Wait at home for me. I'll head back immediately. It's best we don't talk about certain topics over the phone."

After hanging up, Zhou Wen returned to Li Xuan's place and waited for him to return.

“If my guess isn’t wrong, the woman who was pursuing Jing Daoxian, and attempted to run you over in the car, likely comes from the Special Inspector Bureau.”

“What department is the Special Inspector Bureau? Does it come under the military or the police?” Zhou Wen had never heard of such a department.

“Neither,” Li Xuan said with a shake of his head. “This department specializes in special cases. It has great authority and autonomy, so they often carry out operations that do not come under the legal process. It can almost be described as unscrupulous. It does many sordid things that get covered up. There’s a lot of disagreement regarding the existence of this department in the League with many people hating it. They call the people in the department hyenas.”

Zhou Wen wore a heavy look. From the name ‘hyenas,’ he knew what kind of people this department comprised of.

Hyenas were the most scheming, filthy, dirty animals in the natural world. To achieve their goal, they did anything, not releasing their grip once they bit down hard. Furthermore, they always appeared in packs.

“It’s a good idea to matriculate early. Although the Special Inspector Bureau has great authority, they are unable to flout the law openly. They can only covertly do certain deeds. It won’t be easy for them to deal with you when you stay on campus. However, there’s a need to resolve this matter ultimately. Otherwise, they will keep biting down on you and something bad will ultimately come out of it.”

Li Xuan thought before continuing, “Stay on campus now. I’ll discuss it with my father. He should be able to find people from the Special Inspector Bureau to figure out why they are

targeting you. If it’s nothing too serious, we can try to think of means to resolve this matter once and for all.”

Zhou Wen didn’t reject Li Xuan’s offer for help, but he didn’t place all his hopes on him.

Strength. I need greater strength. If I was as powerful as Jing Daoxian, would I be afraid of a mere Special Inspector Bureau? A cold glint flashed in Zhou Wen’s eyes.

He could sense that the woman didn’t want his life. However, the outrageous attempt to run him over was something he wouldn’t forgive even if the Special Inspector Bureau were to close the case.

Li Xuan quickly finished the matriculation procedure. He claimed that since he had nothing better to do at home, he decided to matriculate early with Zhou Wen.

However, Li Xuan wore an odd expression when he told Zhou Wen about the matter. “I originally wanted to pull strings so that we could get allocated to the same dorm. But the school’s side said that your dorm has already been assigned —Four Seasons Garden.”

“Is there something wrong with Four Seasons Garden?” Zhou Wen had guessed that it was the dorm that Ouyang Lan was referring to. However, he had no idea why Li Xuan wore such an odd expression.

“Four Seasons Garden is a place where special admissions students live. They are quite different from the typical student. You were admitted just like me and not a special admit, so why were you allocated Four Seasons Garden?” Li Xuan chuckled. “From the looks of it, you have quite an extraordinary relationship with the An family. Can you help me get one at Four Seasons Garden?”

“If you wish to live there, can’t you just live with me? But, how are you certain that it has to do with the An family?” Zhou Wen asked in puzzlement.

“Don’t tell me you aren’t aware? Sunset College was originally spearheaded and established by the An family. Although it’s a public school in name, the An family has greater say than the League President inside Sunset College.”

“Really?” Zhou Wen never expected that Sunset College had such a connection with the An family.

“You actually weren’t aware? Then what relationship do you have with the Ans?” Li Xuan looked at Zhou Wen with a suspicious look. If Zhou Wen really had a close relationship with them, how was it that he didn’t know about it?

Feeling that there was no point in hiding this matter from Li Xuan, Zhou Wen said, “Zhou Lingfeng is my father.”

Pfft! Li Xuan spewed out all the water that he had just drunk as he widened his eyes and looked at Zhou Wen. “You are Zhou Lingfeng’s son? That makes Overseer An your stepmother. An Jing and An Tianzuo are your step-siblings? Holy sh*t, you have a huge backer with the An family or Overseer An. Why are you afraid of the Special Inspector Bureau? Once you live with the An family, even if the minister of the Special Inspector Bureau were to come, he wouldn’t even dare touch you.”

“That’s them. I’m me. My surname isn’t An, so we aren’t considered family. I only wish to coexist with them peacefully. It’s best if we each mind our own business.”

“You’re too stubborn. If I were you, I’d wheedle my way into Ouyang Lan’s good books. When that happens, I’d have

whatever I want,” Li Xuan joked.

“However, Four Seasons Garden is nice too. It will be difficult for the Special Inspector Bureau to deal with you if you were to live there,” Li Xuan said, feeling relaxed.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 54 - Raise it High

Chapter 54: Raise it High

Translator: CKtalon **Editor:** CKtalon

“I ordered you to bring back Zhou Wen secretly without alerting anyone. But what did you do? You tried to run him over with a car! Have I been too lax on all of you recently that you’ve forgotten how to abide by the rules?” Qiao Siyuan said calmly, but his eyes were rather cold.

Liz trembled as she quickly stood up and bowed. “Sir, I was derelict in my duty. It was thankfully not detected by the Ans. Please give me another chance. I’ll definitely bring Zhou Wen back.”

“Not detected?” Qiao Siyuan placed a document dossier on the desk and said calmly, “Take a look at this.”

“This is?” Liz opened the dossier in puzzlement and was alarmed when she read its contents. “How is this possible? It’s impossible, right? Sir, is the information in here real?”

Qiao Siyuan shot a look at Liz and said slowly, “I had a feeling that Ouyang Lan’s marriage with Zhou Lingfeng was odd. I felt that it might be connected to that matter, so I deliberately requested my teacher to help me investigate the An family’s candidate. This was the outcome my teacher gave me. Do you think it could be wrong?”

“Naturally not!” The alarmed look on Liz’s face became more pronounced. “But isn’t the An family’s candidate An Jing? Why did it turn into Zhou Wen? He has zero blood relations with the An family and isn’t even half a son. Why would the An family give such a huge opportunity to an outsider?”

“That I do not know, but I can be sure that after Zhou Wen was admitted into Sunset College, the An family indeed changed their candidate’s name from An Jing to Zhou Wen. And based on the regulations, the An family only has one chance of changing their candidate. Even if Zhou Wen were to die, it would be impossible to change it to anyone else.”

Having said that, Qiao Siyuan glared at Liz with a burning gaze. “Do you still believe that the An family is completely unaware of your little accident with Zhou Wen?”

Liz broke out into a cold sweat as she bowed her head. “Sir, I’m aware of my mistakes. I’m fully prepared for any punishment.”

She knew very well how important Zhou Wen now was to the An family. It was impossible for them not to know of such a person being hit by a car in Luoyang. If they really were so oblivious to such developments, they would have long been cleanly devoured by others.

“Considering how you were only recently transferred to the Special Inspector Bureau and aren’t aware of how we run things here, I’ll let this pass. Don’t repeat this a second time,” Qiao Siyuan said.

“Sir, please give me an opportunity to make up for my mistakes,” Liz requested.

“Not now. Zhou Wen has already headed for Sunset College early. If there’s no reasonable excuse, it won’t be that easy to invite him over. I have other arrangements, so stay out of this matter,” Qiao Siyuan said with a wave of his hand.

Liz said with an odd expression, “I really find it unbelievable that the Ans would switch their candidate to Zhou Wen. Even if Ouyang Lan were blinded by love and couldn’t be

bothered about the opportunity for her daughter, how could they be agreeable to giving this opportunity to Zhou Wen? How is it possible for An Tianzuo to agree? This opportunity should belong to the Ans!”

“There’s no need to waste your efforts trying to understand something you don’t. Just do what you’re supposed to do. You are dismissed.” Qiao Siyuan waved his hand, an indication that Liz should leave. He then picked up the dossier and muttered to himself while reading it, “What’s the An family up to? How’s it possible for them to give such a huge opportunity to an outsider? Could it be that Ouyang Lan gave away this opportunity because she doesn’t want her daughter to take the risk? But with An Jing’s talent, the chances of her succeeding is rather high. It wouldn’t be considered risky. Is Jing Daoxian’s encounter with Zhou Wen, and the way he abnormally remained in the vicinity, purely coincidental?”

After Zhou Wen and Li Xuan had completed the matriculation paperwork, the latter chose not to stay in Four Seasons Garden with Zhou Wen. Therefore, Zhou Wen headed to the specially designed region like a park, alone, with the dormitory card Ouyang Lan had given him.

There were rows of two-storied buildings which weren’t too big. They were minimalistic and simple and each building came with a tiny yard.

The yard didn’t have any walls. They were just surrounded by a white wooden fence that was half an adult’s height, allowing people to clearly see into their neighbors compound.

702. It should be this one. Zhou Wen stood in front of a small building by following the dormitory card. He looked

around and realized that this was the last row in Four Seasons Garden. There were three buildings in this row, and his building was in the middle. The building on the left seemed uninhabited and the right building's yard had some plants grown with the soil still moist. It was likely inhabited by someone.

Zhou Wen thought of pushing the door open to enter when he heard the door open on the building to his right. Then, he saw a figure walk out.

An Jing? Zhou Wen was taken aback when he identified the figure.

An Jing was equally taken aback, clearly not expecting to meet Zhou Wen here.

However, she instantly understood what was happening. Biting her lip, she ignored Zhou Wen and left her yard.

Since An Jing had ignored him, Zhou Wen didn't plan on being chummy with her. Without a word, the two pretended as though they hadn't seen the other.

After entering the building with his dormitory card, Zhou Wen found the place excellent. Although the layout and renovations were simple, they were very suitable for cultivation. It even came equipped with Strength-measuring devices and other useful tools.

A new beginning. Seems pretty good. After Zhou Wen surveyed the entire building, he planned on buying some necessities first.

Although the building was furnished, it didn't come with blankets or other personal belongings. It still required Zhou Wen to buy them himself.

Previously, Li Xuan had taken him to the entrance of Four Seasons Garden. However, attempting to walk out himself, he realized how ridiculously huge Sunset College was. Although it wasn't big to the point of getting lost, Zhou Wen still took several detours due to the inaccurate navigation on his phone.

Furthermore, he wasn't aware of where he could buy daily necessities on campus.

As he walked, he found himself in an increasingly remote and isolated area. Just as he was about to ask around for directions, he realized that he was surrounded by old, dilapidated buildings—likely old teaching buildings that had been abandoned.

How is the GPS tracking so ridiculously wrong? Zhou Wen looked at the map on his phone in exasperation.

Just as he was about to turn back, he heard voices from a bend ahead.

I should ask for directions. Zhou Wen took a few steps forward, planning to ask the talking person about the location of the on-campus supermarket.

"Little Mei, you have to be good. Work hard in the future." Zhou Wen heard a man's voice around the bend and found it somewhat familiar. However, he wasn't able to immediately put the voice to a face.

As he was thinking, Zhou Wen turned the corner and saw in the corner of a dilapidated building nearby, a towering figure. He had his hands raised high, raising a petite and adorable kitten. His eyes wore a warm look as he suffused a smile. However, that face still looked as ferocious as a devil

despite smiling. It left anyone who laid their eyes on him afraid.

Gu Dian? Zhou Wen was momentarily left rooted to the ground. He couldn’t put Gu Dian with this man who was warmly smiling and raising a kitten high up.

Likewise, Gu Dian noticed Zhou Wen. When his eyes locked with Zhou Wen with him raising the kitten, the atmosphere between them immediately became odd.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 55 - Heart Meditation’s Use

Chapter 55: Heart Meditation’s Use

Translator: CKtalon Editor: CKtalon

Only when Gu Dian put the kitten aside did Zhou Wen see another three cats on the grass patch to the side. Two of them were kittens and one of them was an adult. Clearly, this group of four was a family. The mother cat was sunbathing in the sun with her three kittens.

By the side of the grass patch were two bowls. One of them had water in it and the other had cat food. It was obvious that they had been prepared by Gu Dian.

After putting down the kitten, the look in Gu Dian’s eyes turned extremely cold. He glared at Zhou Wen like a devil and coldly said, “You’re dead if I hear any rumors spreading.”

His devil-like looks and bone-chilling voice would probably frighten Zhou Wen at any other time. However, the scene of Gu Dian raising the kitten high kept flashing across his eyes. Zhou Wen just couldn’t bring himself to feel any fear.

“Don’t worry. I’m not a gossipy person.”

“That better be the case,” Gu Dian said coldly. Ignoring Zhou Wen, he bent down and picked up the two bowls. After

taking another glance at the four cats who were frolicking on the grass, he turned and left.

After taking a few steps, Gu Dian stopped and said without turning his head. “Also, don’t you attempt to harm them; otherwise, you’re dead.”

After saying that, Gu Dian took huge strides and left.

Li Xuan said that not only does Gu Dian look fierce, but that he’s extremely bad. It’s said that he’s willing to do anything awful as long as he’s paid. Now from the looks of it, he might not be as bad as the rumors say. To be so close to cats which are naturally wary of others, to the point of letting him get so close to the kittens, he’s probably not as evil as the rumors say. Zhou Wen glanced at the four cats and thought to himself.

In present times, animals like dogs and cats were no longer as cherished as in the past. After all, they were only for aesthetics. In contrast, Companion Beasts had magical powers. People were more willing to spend money on them.

In the past, all kinds of valuable pet cats and dogs had mostly turned into strays. They were no longer doted on by humans.

With the time changing, many things changed as well. In the past, figures who could fly or have tremendous strength were extolled for being capable of becoming Legendaries. Their tales were spread to this day because few humans in the past had such powers.

But in this day and age, it wasn’t difficult to have tremendous strength if one could advance to the Legendary stage. Now, almost everyone could become as legendary as those people from the past since the Legendary stage was

no longer rare. As long as one cultivated hard, they would definitely advance to the Legendary stage as long as they weren’t without any aptitude.

However, to advance from the Legendary stage to the Epic stage wasn’t simple. This required talent, Primordial Energy Arts, resources, and the combination of all kinds of factors. It wasn’t achievable simply through hard work.

After all, those people who had their names put into the annals of history to be extolled in poems and songs were basically close to mythical existences.

Back when Zhou Wen cultivated Ascetic Meditation, he had planned on advancing to the Legendary stage during college. Such a speed made him a genius among humans.

However, his Ascetic Meditation had already been replaced by the Legendary stage. To advance to the Legendary stage with the Lost Immortal Sutra wasn’t a simple endeavor to begin with.

Zhou Wen had been repeatedly studying Lost Immortal Sutra recently and he discovered that it was very different from the typical Primordial Energy Art.

In typical Primordial Energy Arts like Ascetic Meditation, advancement was in fact breaking one’s shackles. Humans had the limits of their Strength, Speed, Constitution, and Primordial Energy shackled, so consuming no amount of supplements was of any use. The stats just wouldn’t continue rising.

Only after breaking those shackles would a human’s upper limits be unlocked. While being able to continue raising one’s stats, one would also obtain a Life Providence that was

related to one’s aptitude. It was commonly known as Legendary Life Providence.

However, after Zhou Wen’s repeated studies of the Lost Immortal Sutra, he didn’t see any descriptions regarding the breaking of those shackles.

Therefore, Zhou Wen still hadn’t figured out how he could use the Lost Immortal Sutra to advance to the Legendary stage.

After going through quite a hassle to find the on-campus supermarket and buying the daily necessities he needed, he returned to his dorm to unpack it. Once he was done with all of that, he then began grinding.

Since it was unlikely for him to have any progress with Ant Nest any time soon, Zhou Wen chose to enter the Underground Buddha City.

He spent some time grinding the Buddha Heart Lotuses at the lotus pond, but not a single Companion Beast dropped. Instead, his Mutated Skeleton Ant was devoured by the gargantuan blood-colored Buddha Heart Lotus.

Zhou Wen then controlled the blood-colored avatar to Small Buddha Temple. Before climbing up the stone steps, Zhou Wen got the blood-colored avatar to activate his Primordial Energy Skill—Heart Meditation.

The stretch of road in front of Small Buddha Temple was extremely bizarre. Death seemed to be the only outcome no matter how he traversed it. He still hadn’t found the reason why that was the case.

Using Heart Meditation was a last-ditch effort. He felt that since Heart Meditation came from the Buddha Heart Lotus, it

was possible that using it worked.

To Zhou Wen’s surprise, the blood-colored avatar, which would usually die once it arrived at a spot where it could see the Small Buddha Temple’s signboard, didn’t die this time. It could still move higher and progress forward.

Does Heart Meditation really work? Even Zhou Wen was surprised.

He made the blood-colored avatar proceed forward and indeed, nothing happened the entire way. However, Heart Meditation was a Primordial Energy Skill which expended Primordial Energy while it was in use, at a rate of two points a minute.

By climbing up the stone steps in such a way, there was still quite a distance from Small Buddha Temple before his Primordial Energy was completely drained.

The moment Heart Meditation wasn’t in effect, the blood-colored avatar collapsed to the ground and the game’s screen went black.

Since he knew that Heart Meditation worked, Zhou Wen eagerly revived the blood-colored avatar and made it come in front of the Small Buddha Temple’s stone passageway.

Zhou Wen activated Heart Meditation and made the blood-colored avatar run towards the Small Buddha Temple at full speed. However, it died once again when its Primordial Energy was drained about ten meters away from its destination.

With my present speed, the time Heart Meditation can be in effect isn’t enough for me to rush into Small Buddha Temple. Do I have to wait until I’ve advanced to the Legendary stage

and have plenty of Primordial Energy before I can rush in with Heart Meditation? But I’ve no idea how long it will take before I advance to the Legendary stage…

Primordial Energy Skills like Heart Meditation that continuously expend Primordial Energy expend less Primordial Energy at higher ranks. I wonder if it’s the same with Heart Meditation? Currently, Heart Meditation is at Rank 7. If I can grind a Rank 8 or Rank 9 Heart Meditation, perhaps I might have a chance of entering Small Buddha Temple.

Since he had nothing else to do, Zhou Wen continued grinding Buddha Heart Lotuses with a try-and-see attitude, hoping to receive something.

After repeated grinding, Zhou Wen realized a pattern. The blood-colored Buddha Heart Lotus was always submerged underwater in the beginning. Only after Zhou Wen cleaved some of the Buddha Heart Lotuses around the middle of the lotus pond would the blood-colored Buddha Heart Lotus rise above the water surface in rage.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 56 - Silver-Eyed Golden-Feathered Hawk

Chapter 56: Silver-Eyed Golden-Feathered Hawk

Translator: CKtalon Editor: CKtalon

With the Silver-Winged Flying Ant's wings, Zhou Wen flew directly above the lotus pond to battle the blood-colored Buddha Heart Lotus. Although he died plenty of times, it wasn't without return.

Zhou Wen was rather familiar with the few moves available to the blood-colored Buddha Heart Lotus—knowledge he had gained from repeated deaths. Although he was temporarily unable to slay it, he knew of a way to kill it. He just wasn't powerful enough; thus, preventing him from actualizing his strategies.

"Zhou Wen, quickly get up. It's great that we matriculated early. Otherwise, we would have missed a great show." Li Xuan called him on the phone early in the morning.

"What great show?" Zhou Wen put down the phone and stretched before asking.

"Didn't I mention that the Legendary stage students are purchasing powerful Companion Beasts capable of flight? They plan on slaying the blood-colored Buddha Heart Lotus today. Let's head over to take a look," Li Xuan suggested.

“Alright.” Zhou Wen was also interested in watching battles at the Legendary stage.

He got out of bed, washed up, and headed out, meeting Li Xuan at the entrance of the Four Seasons Garden.

Li Xuan had clearly been waiting for a while, pulling him to head for Ancient Inlet the moment he saw Zhou Wen come out. As they ran, he said, “Quick! We’ll miss the show if we are late.”

Zhou Wen learned from Li Xuan that the person who planned on killing the blood-colored Buddha Heart Lotus was a famous third-year senior in Sunset College, Yang Lie. He was a mighty figure who had advanced to the Legendary stage.

Apparently, he had spent a large sum of money buying Legendary Companion Eggs and had tried means to speed up the incubation in order to slay the blood-colored Buddha Heart Lotus. As soon as that was done, he rushed for the lotus pond.

After the two entered Underground Buddha City, they rushed to the lotus pond, where there were many students surrounding the pond. They had clearly heard the news and were here to watch Yang Lie battle the blood-patterned Buddha Heart Lotus.

Just as the duo arrived, a man ran over.

“Brother Xuan, Brother Wen!”

“Xu Miantu, you also applied for Sunset College?” Zhou Wen recognized the person.

Xu Miantu scratched his head in embarrassment, seemingly unable to verbalize his reasons. By the side, Li Xuan scolded him in a bemused state, “Dude, just say it. It’s not like it’s something disgraceful. In fact, Xu Miantu should have been matriculated last year. However, to help me in the examination, he deferred his application to Sunset College by one year.”

Xu Miantu chuckled and said, “A genius like Brother Xuan didn’t even need my help. I was just ignorant.”

Just as the trio began having a conversation, they heard an uproar.

“An Jing’s here.”

“An Jing from the An family?”

“Who else could it be? Tsk, she indeed lives up to the rumors. She’s really a beauty.”

“I heard that she advanced to the Legendary stage at the age of thirteen. She’s extremely talented and she comes from a formidable family. She has the money, the talent, and the looks. It’s like the Creator favored her when creating her.”

Zhou Wen traced the students’ gaze and looked over. Indeed, he saw An Jing arriving on a white horse. However, it didn’t have any wings, so it wasn’t a White-Winged Flying Horse.

Yang Lie, who had been surrounded by people, walked over to An Jing.

This gave Zhou Wen a chance to see him. He stood at more than 1.80 meters. His sword-like brows and starry eyes made

him look sharp. Beside him was a black leopard with one eye, making it look extremely odd.

“An Jing, you came just in time. Regardless of what drops today when I slay the blood-patterned Buddha Heart Lotus, I’ll be giving it to you as a matriculation gift,” Yang Lie said with a spirited look.

Many students revealed a teasing smile when they heard him. It was obvious that Yang Lie was expressing his interest in An Jing.

However, Li Xuan said in contempt, “Although the Yang family is rather famous in Luoyang, it’s not of the upper class. Besides, they have many businesses that rely on the An family’s power in Luoyang. This punk is probably up to no good by expressing his interest in An Jing. However, it’s probably in vain. No matter how blind the An family is, they wouldn’t fancy the Yang family.”

“Brother Xuan, I believe you are the only one qualified to be with An Jing in all of Luoyang,” Xu Miantu said with a chuckle.

Li Xuan spat at that thought and said, “An Jing is an arrogant woman. She also has a bad temper. That cold demeanor of hers isn’t fun at all, so it’s useless no matter how beautiful she is. Only an idiot will marry a woman like her.”

With that said, Li Xuan glanced at Zhou Wen and said with a mysterious, furtive smile, “Besides, I understand the rationale of not hitting on a friend’s sister.”

Zhou Wen couldn’t be bothered to refute and he pretended not to hear it.

Xu Miantu had no idea of Zhou Wen’s relationship with the An family, so he failed to understand what Li Xuan meant. Puzzled, he looked at them blankly.

An Jing sat on the white horse with no intention of getting off. She said in a calm tone, “I don’t need any gifts. Besides, you won’t be able to slay the blood-patterned Buddha Heart Lotus either.”

Yang Lie wasn’t angry when he heard that. Instead, he guffawed and said, “Then let’s have a bet. Why don’t you accept my present if I succeed in slaying the blood-patterned Buddha Heart Lotus?”

“No,” An Jing replied without any hesitation.

“You’re afraid of losing?” Yang Lie said provocatively.

“You won’t be able to slay the blood-patterned Buddha Heart Lotus, so the bet can’t even be established. There’s no need for it.” After An Jing said that, she rode the white horse to the side of the lotus pond.

Yang Lie felt embarrassed, but due to her extremely special identity, he didn’t dare flare up at her.

“Alright, I’ll show you that I’m capable of slaying the blood-patterned Buddha Heart Lotus,” Yang Lie said. He spread his arms and two Companion Beasts were summoned out by him.

They were two Silver-Eyed Golden-Feathered Hawks, but they were much larger than the typical hawk. Their wingspans reached more than ten meters and with a flap, they shot out like a golden beam of light. They then spiraled above the lotus pond like two golden clouds.

A Silver-Eyed Golden-Feathered Hawk swooped down and extended its claws like a phantom, instantly grabbing a Buddha Heart Lotus.

“Silver-Eyed Golden-Feathered Hawk. And there’s two of them. This fellow sure is willing to make the investment,” Li Xuan curled his lips and said.

Silver-Eyed Golden-Feathered Hawks were rare Legendary Companion Beasts. They were only found in the dimensional zones of the Heavenly Lake of the Heavenly Mountain. However, there were many dimensional zones in the Heavenly Mountain’s vicinity, so it wasn’t easy to reach the Heavenly Lake itself. Furthermore, Silver-Eyed Golden-Feathered Hawks were rare in number. They also lived on cliffs, making it difficult to kill them and have a Companion Egg drop.

If one’s luck wasn’t good, even experts at the Epic stage would return empty-handed.

Seeing the students look at his pair of Silver-Eyed Golden-Feathered Hawks in envy, Yang Lie felt slightly pleased with himself. Without any hesitation, he ordered the hawks to attack the blood-patterned Buddha Heart Lotus.

When they rushed at the blood-patterned Buddha Heart Lotus from the flanks, the latter sensed the threat and shot out twenty to thirty blood-colored lotus seeds that hurtled towards the two hawks.

As the blood-colored lotus seeds were about to hit the hawks, they showed no intention of dodging. They continued flying forward and released a golden glow over their feathers as though they were emitting light themselves.

Boom! Boom!

When the blood-colored lotus seeds exploded on the golden feathers and splattered into bloody water, they rolled off as if the golden feathers were nonstick. The hawks weren’t damaged at all.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 57 - Quarrel

Chapter 57 Quarrel

“As expected of Silver-Eyed Golden-Feathered Hawks. They are truly extraordinary. It appears this blood-patterned Buddha Heart Lotus will likely be slain by Yang Lie,” Li Xuan said.

Zhou Wen shook his head and whispered, “Not necessarily. The blood-patterned Buddha Heart Lotus can’t be slain by just two Silver-Eyed Golden-Feathered Hawks.”

Zhou Wen’s research on the blood-patterned Buddha Heart Lotus was nothing these students could compare with. He was acutely aware of how powerful the blood-patterned Buddha Heart Lotus was. It was impossible to slay it with just two Legendary Companion Beasts capable of flight.

Perhaps intentionally or unintentionally, An Jing happened to shoot Zhou Wen a look when he said those words.

Li Xuan was just about to ask why when the lotus pond experienced an anomaly. One of the Silver-Eyed Golden-Feathered Hawk rushed right in front of the blood-patterned Buddha Heart Lotus and was swallowed by the latter’s petals that opened like a gaping mouth.

Just as the other Silver-Eyed Golden-Feathered Hawk was about touch the petals with its talons that were glimmering in gold light, the blood patterns on the petals-a sitting Buddha-shot out beams of sanguine light. What seemed like a fragile petal remained undamaged after clashing with the hawk’s talons.

When the blood-patterned Buddha Heart Lotus opened its petals again, the Silver-Eyed Golden-Feathered Hawk which had been devoured was reduced to bone. Furthermore, the bones were rapidly melting.

The students watching this battle gasped. It was shocking that the blood-patterned Buddha Heart Lotus could devour the Legendary Silver-Eyed Golden-Feathered Hawk and instantly corrode its bones.

It even managed to resist the Golden Halo Talons of the Silver-Eyed Golden-Feathered Hawk, a Primordial Energy Skill. It was quite shocking.

Flower-type dimensional creatures typically were rather weak in Constitution. Amongst dimensional creatures of the same stage, their Constitution usually lined the bottom.

However, the fact that this blood-patterned Buddha Heart Lotus was able to withstand a powerful Legendary Primordial Energy Skill like Golden Halo Talons made it terrifying. It overturned the average person’s understanding of flower-type creatures.

Yang Lie’s expression was livid. He didn’t dare order his Silver-Eyed Golden-Feathered Hawk to continue attacking as he summoned the surviving one back.

All the students looked at the blood-patterned Buddha Heart Lotus with fear and greed. It clearly had more than one Primordial Energy Skill. If it dropped as a Companion Beast, they could possess a Companion Beast with more than one Primordial Energy Skill.

However, the chances of Companion Beasts dropping were low to begin with. Furthermore, with Yang Lie’s two Silver-

Eyed Golden-Feathered Hawks suffering a defeat, it meant that no student could currently kill it.

“How did you know that the two Hawks weren’t a match for the blood-patterned Buddha Heart Lotus?” Only then did Li Xuan have the chance to ask the question that was eating at him.

“It was obvious to the eye.” Zhou Wen shrugged, preparing to leave the area. It was unlikely that the students could kill the blood-patterned Buddha Heart Lotus anytime soon. This lotus flower was probably a top existence among Legendary creatures. Unless one had even more powerful Companion Beasts or was capable of targeting its weak points, even a siege against it wouldn’t be of much use.

“Brother Wen, since you were able to tell that the Hawks weren’t the blood-patterned Buddha Heart Lotus’s match, doesn’t that mean that you have the means to kill it?” Xu Miantu’s eyes lit up as he asked Zhou Wen.

Xu Miantu wasn’t much to speak of. He wasn’t a bad man either, but he was someone who shot his mouth off. He hadn’t suppressed his voice, allowing people around them to hear him.

Yang Lie was already in a bad mood, so when he heard Xu Miantu, he turned his head and saw that it was Li Xuan, Xu Miantu, and an unfamiliar youth, he immediately felt even more infuriated.

Li Xuan was well known to be a foppish person in Luoyang. Together with an adopted son of the Li family, Xu Miantu, Yang Lie naturally knew how much they amounted to. It could even be said that he viewed them with contempt.

Yang Lie often imagined that if he were Li Xuan and had all the resources of the Li family, he would be able to achieve so much **more.**

Xu Miantu's unintentional question sounded like a mockery to Yang Lie.

"To be able to tell at a glance that the hawks aren't the blood-patterned Buddha Heart Lotus's match. Not a bad eye. Might I know how you should be addressed?" Yang Lie held back his anger and asked Zhou Wen as he sized him up.

Although he was angry, he wasn't willing to offend students with significant backing. After all, the students of Sunset College were the elites of East District. Many of them had strong backers.

Zhou Wen didn't say a word, but Xu Miantu drummed up support for him. "Zhou Wen got second in the combat test of Guide City. He's the number one genius of Guide High School. He's Brother Xuan's buddy!"

Xu Miantu didn't brag emptily but was trying to use this opportunity to make Zhou Wen known to all, making students of Sunset College know of his existence.

This brought about plenty of benefits. In the future, when they formed teams to enter dimensional zones to complete the missions handed out by the school, other strong students would be willing to team up with Zhou Wen.

Otherwise, if Zhou Wen was unknown to everyone, how would those strong students be willing to team up with him? It was already a very common way of societal thinking for the strong to ally together.

However, those who heard Xu Miantu looked at him and Zhou Wen with a look of mockery. It wasn’t only Yang Lie, but all the other students as well.

Many students in Sunset College had the accolades of being the number one genius of so-and-so high school or first in the combat test of so-and-so city. Furthermore, Zhou Wen had only gotten second place. Others weren’t even interested in who got first place, much less second place.

If it were first place in places like Beijing, people might have paid some attention. However, a tiny city like Guide City wasn’t worth paying any attention to.

When Yang Lie heard that Zhou Wen had come in second at the Guide City’s combat test, he knew that Zhou Wen likely didn’t have much of a background. Otherwise, he would have obtained first place. Only those who obtained the first place of a city could receive certain privileges and resources from the Sunset College. This was also one of the reasons why Li Xuan needed to get first.

“Second place. That’s pretty impressive,” Yang Lie quipped. “In that case, I would like to know what amazing strategy you have to kill that blood-patterned Buddha Heart Lotus.”

The other students could naturally tell that Yang Lie was being sarcastic. They were freshmen and only at the Mortal stage. They weren’t even close to the Legendary stage, so it was obvious that they didn’t have the qualifications to kill top Legendary creatures like the blood-patterned Buddha Heart Lotus.

Xu Miantu couldn’t tolerate the treatment as he curled his lips and said in disdain, “Are you a fool or do you think of us as fools? Why should we tell you the strategy we’ve come up with?”

Ever since the battle at Guide Ancient City, Xu Miantu was truly impressed with Zhou Wen. He strongly believed that Zhou Wen had the means to kill the blood-patterned Buddha Heart Lotus. Since it was a given, he naturally wouldn’t tell others of the strategy.

But his words only amused Yang Lie. “Alright. There’s no need to tell me. Don’t you have the strategy? Isn’t being second in Guide City impressive? Fine then, slay the blood-patterned Buddha Heart Lotus. Please broaden our horizons.”

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 58 - The Opportunity to Slay the Blood-Patterned Buddha Heart Lotus

Chapter 58 The Opportunity to Slay the Blood-Patterned Buddha Heart Lotus

Xu Miantu didn’t dare make the decision as he cast his gaze at Zhou Wen. There was a fervent look of encouragement in it.

Zhou Wen could only smile wryly in secret. Xu Miantu had thought too highly of him. He didn’t have the strength to kill the blood-patterned Buddha Heart Lotus at present. All he could do was slightly shake his head at Xu Miantu.

However, Xu Miantu had full confidence in him. Believing that Zhou Wen was only being humble, he continued encouraging him. “Brother Wen, there’s no need to be overly humble in a place like Sunset College. You have to showcase your absolute strength. This will give you the opportunity to obtain more resources.”

Zhou Wen felt a little depressed. He did wish to slay the blood-patterned Buddha Heart Lotus, but he really wasn’t capable of doing so at present.

Seeing Zhou Wen show a stumped look, Yang Lie sneered and said, “One needs to have the strength to actually showcase it. Otherwise, they will only be a joke.”

After saying that, Yang Lie ignored Xu Miantu and turned to walk to An Jing.

From Yang Lie’s point of view, he would only disgrace himself if he continued embroiling himself with Xu Miantu, Li Xuan, and Zhou Wen.

Although Xu Miantu didn’t wish to let it go, he was helpless when he saw Zhou Wen remain silent. All he could do was watch the supercilious look Yang Lie had while turning around.

Yang Lie came in front of An Jing and said in a very gentlemanly manner, “I lost the bet. If you have anything you need me to do, I’ll definitely give my all. However, I’m curious why you knew that the Silver-Eyed Golden-Feathered Hawks weren’t the blood-patterned Buddha Heart Lotus’s match? Could it be that you’ve already fought it before?”

“First, I’d said that the bet was completely meaningless. Neither do I have anything I need you to do. I am equally capable of doing what you are capable of. If I can’t do it, it only makes it impossible for you to do it. Second, those who are truly in the know do not need to engage in a fight to know who’s stronger.” An Jing wore a calm look, but every word she said was biting.

Zhou Wen suspected that with her vicious tongue, she might have been beaten up by many if she hadn’t been born into the An family.

Indeed, Yang Lie wore a rather embarrassed look. His face oscillated between blue and white. He was a student who wasn’t even twenty years old, so he wasn’t thick-skinned enough.

“Well said.” Xu Miantu took this opportunity and cheered. This only made Yang Lie glare at him hatefully.

An Jing ignored him and rode her white horse, brushing past Yang Lie’s shoulder. She headed for Zhou Wen.

“Your sister is coming over,” Li Xuan whispered as he nudged Zhou Wen with his elbow.

Zhou Wen shook his head, gesturing to Li Xuan to cut the nonsense. However, before he could say a thing, An Jing had already arrived in front of him.

When Yang Lie and the other students saw An Jing standing in front of Zhou Wen, all of them cast their gazes over, curious as to what she wanted.

An Jing stared into Zhou Wen’s eyes and asked, “Do you have the confidence in slaying the blood-patterned Buddha Heart Lotus?”

“It definitely won’t be a problem. An Jing, let’s work together to slay this blood-patterned Buddha Heart Lotus. Brother Wen will definitely not let you down.” Xu Miantu didn’t know the relationship between An Jing and Zhou Wen. Imagining that An Jing was interested in Zhou Wen, he believed that Zhou Wen might be able to sweep her off her feet if he did well.

Furthermore, this beauty’s family was extraordinary. She was the daughter of Luoyang’s An family. She was practically a princess in Luoyang.

“Is that right? Brother Wen?” Xu Miantu nudged Zhou Wen as he winked at him while his back was facing An Jing. His meaning was clear-he wanted Zhou Wen to do a good job.

Although Zhou Wen knew that Xu Miantu had good intentions, he really couldn’t do it. All he wanted was to game in peace and he had no intention of stealing the

limelight here. Involving himself with An Jing was the last thing he wished to do.

“You really have wild ideas. If An Jing really wants to kill the blood-patterned Buddha Heart Lotus, would you have even have a chance?” Yang Lie already detested Xu Miantu, so he couldn’t help but shoot off a snide remark. He vented all the pent up anger he had thanks to An Jing on Xu Miantu. “A dog is a dog. It only knows how to threaten others thanks to its master. However, you have to at least take a good look. Is that really your master?”

When Yang Lie said that, not only did the expression on Xu Miantu’s face change, even Li Xuan and Zhou Wen were no exception.

Li Xuan coldly said, “Yang Lie, who did you say was the dog? I dare you to say it again.”

Yang Lie sneered and said, “Who in Luoyang City doesn’t know that your patriarch enjoys adopting sons. To put it nicely, it’s an adopted son, but at the core of the matter, it’s just a lapdog reared by your Li family. This is known by all, so what did I say wrong?”

The look in Li Xuan’s chilled. Just as he was about to flare up, he was held back by Xu Miantu. Surprisingly, Xu Miantu wasn’t angry. He grinned at Yang Lie and said, “That’s right. I’m a dog of the Li family. I even feel proud and honored being the Li family’s dog. The Li family is my benefactor and I’ve benefited from them. It’s not like someone who yearns to be the dog of the An family, but they can’t even be bothered to spare him a glance. Something that’s worse than a dog isn’t worth mentioning.”

Xu Miantu’s words hit Yang Lie where it hurt. It was true that the Yang family was trying to cozy up with the An family, but

the An family’s attitude was rather vague. It had never truly accepted the Yang family.

Therefore, Yang Lie’s expression changed drastically once he heard that. His face was extremely livid. His eyes stared viciously at Xu Miantu as a look of killing intent flashed through them.

“Does a dog of the Li family only know how to bark? If you’re as impressive as you say you are, slay the blood-patterned Buddha Heart Lotus; otherwise, quit the barking,” Yang Lie said with a cold look. If they weren’t in public, he would have immediately taken action and slaughtered Xu Miantu.

Xu Miantu was about to snap back when he felt a hand on his shoulder. Then, he heard Zhou Wen whisper, “If you wish to kill the blood-patterned Buddha Heart Lotus, we can do it together.”

“Brother Wen, really?” Xu Miantu was delighted as he hurriedly asked.

Zhou Wen nodded slightly and said seriously, “As long as you aren’t afraid of sacrificing your Companion Beast.”

Xu Miantu had started the conflict because of Zhou Wen and Yang Lie, so naturally, he couldn’t sit idly as Xu Miantu was being ridiculed by Yang Lie. However, his claim of being able to kill the blood-patterned Buddha Heart Lotus wasn’t just a spur of the moment.

Zhou Wen really couldn’t kill the blood-patterned Buddha Heart Lotus in-game, but this wasn’t the game. He didn’t need to face it alone and he still had Xu Miantu and Li Xuan to help him.

Zhou Wen had carefully run through the Companion Beasts they possessed. If they controlled them well and no mistakes happened, he believed he could slay the blood-patterned Buddha Heart Lotus based on his understanding of it.

“There’s nothing to be afraid of. Let’s do it,” Xu Miantu turned to say to Yang Lie. “Heard that, Yang? We’ll be slaying it right now. Open your eyes and watch it well. Don’t blame us for not teaching you.”

“I’m looking forward to it,” Yang Lie said with a sneer.

From his point of view, it was fool’s talk that the trio could kill the blood-patterned Buddha Heart Lotus. Even two Silver-Eyed Golden-Feathered Hawks weren’t a match for it, so it would be ridiculous if three freshmen at the Mortal stage could slay it.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 59 - Besieging the Buddha Heart Lotus

Chapter 59 Besieging the Buddha Heart Lotus

Li Xuan and Zhou Wen were amongst the first group of people who had discovered the blood-patterned Buddha Heart Lotus. Zhou Wen had been thinking up a strategy to slay it in-game. Likewise, Li Xuan hadn’t been slacking off either. He had also tried all kinds of means to obtain Legendary Companion Beasts capable of flight, hoping to slay the blood-patterned Buddha Heart Lotus.

However, Legendary Companion Beasts capable of flight were rare. Those with considerable strength weren’t easily acquired. Furthermore, Li Xuan was only at the Mortal stage, so the Legendary Companion Beasts he incubated needed more time and effort than those at the Legendary stage.

At this point in time, Li Xuan had only incubated a Legendary Sky Conch.

Xu Miantu was also at the Mortal stage. He didn’t have the Invincible Connate Divine Art, so he wasn’t capable of incubating a Legendary Companion Beast. However, he had always been Li Xuan’s right-hand man. He had also contributed when Jiang Hao betrayed Li Xuan.

Therefore, Li Xuan had gotten a Mortal Dragon-Scaled Turtle Companion Egg and given it to him. Although it was only at the Mortal stage, it lived in Black Dragon Pool, so it had extremely high resistance against corrosive liquids.

Li Xuan had prepared a Dragon-Scaled Turtle to kill the blood-patterned Buddha Heart Lotus, so it was perfect to have Xu Miantu control it.

Zhou Wen knew of this, so after taking into account all the Companion Beasts they had, he had the confidence that the three of them combined could kill it.

“To kill the blood-patterned Buddha Heart Lotus, apart from letting our Companion Beasts engage in battle, we will need to enter the lotus pond as well. Only then will we have a hundred percent chance of killing it. Are you certain that you want to enter?” Zhou Wen looked at Xu Miantu and Li Xuan, confirming with them with great solemnity.

“Buddha needs incense, and a man needs self-respect. I’m bent on killing that blood-patterned Buddha Heart Lotus,” Xu Miantu said loudly.

“Zhou Wen, how confident are you?” Li Xuan asked Zhou Wen with a serious look.

“Follow my instructions, 100%. However, there mustn’t be any mistakes in our cooperation or it will be very dangerous. It’s especially so for Miantu who has to control the Dragon-Scaled Turtle. You mustn’t make any mistakes or both you and I will be in grave danger,” Zhou Wen said as he looked at Xu Miantu.

“Don’t worry. I’ll make sure nothing happens to you even if I were to die,” Xu Miantu said as he slapped his chest.

“Alright. Let’s do it,” Li Xuan locked eyes with Zhou Wen and said with a nod.

“Then let’s begin. Listen to my every command. Miantu, release your Dragon-Scaled Turtle…” Zhou Wen softly

informed the other two of his plan.

The trio made their own preparations. Xu Miantu released the Dragon-Scaled Turtle and a turtle the size of a tiny boat appeared on the lotus pond. Not only did it have a turtle shell, but it also had black scales on its shell, making it look very odd.

The average Companion Beast would immediately be reduced to bone upon contact with the lotus pond's water. Yet, this Dragon-Scaled Turtle was completely fine. It floated in the lotus pond like a tiny black boat.

Xu Miantu and Li Xuan jumped onto the turtle's back. Zhou Wen was about to jump onto it when he suddenly heard a cold, clear voice. "Good intentions might not result in good outcomes. At times, good intentions might even kill."

Zhou Wen turned his head and looked over to see An Jing sitting on her white horse with a cold expression. She had been the one who had said that sentence.

Zhou Wen shot a look at her and smiled before jumping on the turtle's back.

The Dragon-Scaled Turtle waded through the lake and the green lotus leaves, rapidly approaching the blood-patterned Buddha Heart Lotus. When it was nearly twenty meters from the blood-patterned Buddha Heart Lotus, Zhou Wen got Xu Miantu to stop the Dragon-Scaled Turtle.

"Miantu, stay here to wait for us. Make sure to constantly take note of Li Xuan's landing points. Follow the plan. Make sure nothing goes wrong," Zhou Wen told Xu Miantu again.

"Brother Wen, don't worry. As long as I'm not dead, I guarantee you that nothing bad will happen to the two of

you,” Xu Miantu guaranteed with a slap of his chest.

“Okay.” Zhou Wen nodded and looked at Li Xuan. “Act according to plan.”

After uttering a confirmation, Li Xuan summoned his Legendary Companion Beast, the Sky Conch.

The Sky Conch resembled a conch that was found in the sea, but it had a pair of wings. Its body was about the size of a Volkswagen Beetle. It was extremely stable while flying in midair. Although it flew very slowly, it was good at being able to glide in the sky for long periods of time without needing to land on the ground to continue its flight.

“Legendary Sky Conch? How is it possible? Isn’t Li Xuan at the Mortal stage? How is it possible for him to incubate a Sky Conch?” One of the students on the bank immediately recognized the Sky Conch and couldn’t help but exclaim.

“Aren’t you making too much of a fuss?” Li Xuan chuckled as he summoned Black Knight and Jade-Eyed White Tiger.

Black Knight transformed into an armor that encased Li Xuan’s body. As for the Jade-Eyed White Tiger, it turned into a Tiger Soul Saber. Its cold glimmers stirred one’s soul. Embedded in the saber’s handle was a gem resembling a tiger’s eye.

“Black Knight and Jade-Eyed White Tiger. They are both Legendary Companion Beasts… Heavens… Isn’t Li Xuan at the Mortal stage? What’s going on? Is this fellow really that prodigal son of the Li family?” The students widened their eyes as they looked at him in disbelief.

Li Xuan felt a little pleased with himself. Wearing the black armor and holding the Tiger Soul Saber while riding a Sky

Conch, he flew towards the blood-patterned Buddha Heart Lotus with tremendous pomp.

Zhou Wen seemed to pale in comparison. He summoned the Mutated Skeleton Ant and stood on its back without any weapons or armor. The Mutated Skeleton Ant waded across the water surface to another side of the blood-patterned Buddha Heart Lotus.

“Miantu, pay attention to Li Xuan more. Make sure he doesn’t fall into the water,” Zhou Wen looked at Xu Miantu urging him again.

“Don’t worry, Brother Wen,” Xu Miantu said with a slap on his chest.

Zhou Wen didn’t speak further. The Mutated Skeleton Ant and Sky Conch closed in on the blood-patterned Buddha Heart Lotus from both sides. With Li Xuan’s speed faster than Zhou Wen’s, the latter had apparently deliberately stayed a little behind.

Boom! Boom!

More than ten blood-colored lotus seeds shot at Li Xuan, instantly blanketing him and the Sky Conch, sealing off all routes of retreat.

With a loud roar, Li Xuan slashed the Tiger Soul Saber at the blood-colored lotus seeds. The saber was so fast that the seeds didn’t explode when they were halved.

The seed only exploded when both halves had flown out further than a meter.

“Is that really the Li family’s foppish Third Young Master Li Xuan?” Yang Lie watched in astonishment as Li Xuan showed

his prowess. He sliced through all the blood-colored lotus seeds and charged at the blood-patterned Buddha Heart Lotus.

And while Li Xuan was handling the blood-patterned Buddha Heart Lotus’s attacks, Zhou Wen took the chance to order the Mutated Skeleton Ant to rush towards the blood-patterned Buddha Heart Lotus at full speed.

When he was less than three meters from the blood-patterned Buddha Heart Lotus, Zhou Wen ordered the Mutated Skeleton Ant to jump. And it was at this moment that the blood-patterned Buddha Heart Lotus spread open its petals in a bid to devour the Mutated Skeleton Ant. If the latter had been one bit slower, Zhou Wen and the Mutated Skeleton Ant would have been devoured.

“Right now!” Zhou Wen roared.

Li Xuan didn’t hesitate to jump from the Sky Conch, slashing down at the blood-patterned Buddha Heart Lotus with two hands clasping the saber.

A blinding-white saber beam blasted out of the Tiger Soul Saber, instantly cleaving the blood-patterned Buddha Heart Lotus’s petals. The petals shot out a red luster that attempted to resist the Tiger Soul Saber’s strike.

However, the saber beam was just too sharp. Combined with Li Xuan’s saber-type Primordial Energy Skill, the Tiger Soul Saber sliced through the petals.

The petal was cleaved open, revealing the black lotus receptacle. Crouching on it was a pitch-black toad covered in black venomous warts. It opened its mouth and spat a mouthful of venom at Li Xuan.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 60 - Atonement

Chapter 60 Atonement

Li Xuan’s strength was used up by the time his cleave tore through the Buddha-patterned flower petals. Furthermore, he wasn’t able to dodge in midair. The Sky Conch was too slow at flying, making it unable to keep up with Li Xuan. It was still gliding at a relatively high altitude and the direction in which it was heading wasn’t towards Li Xuan.

Suddenly a fist appeared beneath Li Xuan’s feet, striking his soles. Zhou Wen had come flying over!

Li Xuan exerted Strength in his feet as he stepped onto Zhou Wen’s fists and used this as an impetus to soar high into the sky. Zhou Wen ended up plummeting rapidly, allowing them to dodge the toad’s venomous shot.

Li Xuan used his momentum to leap onto the lotus receptacle and cleaved down at the venomous toad’s head. After the saber beam flashed by, Li Xuan flew back in retreat, jumping out of the lotus receptacle.

Bang!

The venomous toad exploded like a bomb, splattering venomous liquid in every direction like flying arrows, covering a massive region.

Li Xuan was already unable to dodge the attack while in midair, but the Sky Conch which had been constantly in the sky arrived in the nick of time, putting its body in between Li Xuan and the venomous liquid.

Zhou Wen also landed on the Mutated Skeleton Ant before leaping up once again, jumping back tens of feet to dodge the range of the venom’s splash.

The venom was extremely terrifying. The Sky Conch’s body was immediately corroded like snow touching ember. With a tragic cry, it fell straight into the pond.

When Zhou Wen landed, the Mutated Skeleton Ant had already stopped beneath his feet. On the contrary, Li Xuan was plummeting straight into the pond without having any place to land his feet.

The Dragon-Scaled Turtle, which was meant to catch Li Xuan, was still a distance from Li Xuan under Xu Miantu’s flustered commandeering. It was apparent that he wasn’t going to arrive in time.

Zhou Wen had just landed on the Mutated Skeleton Ant and it was already too late for him to command it to rush over when he saw this scene. He stomped on the Mutated Skeleton Ant and flew across the pond for Li Xuan, pulling him up just as his back was about to touch the water.

However, Zhou Wen’s leap was ultimately limited. He soon began falling.

“Miantu, what are you waiting for? Quick catch us!” Li Xuan, who had been pulled up by Zhou Wen, shouted at the nearby Xu Miantu.

Xu Miantu watched Zhou Wen and Li Xuan fall from about three to four meters away. He was likely to able to reach the two of them if he extended his arms while getting the Dragon-Scaled Turtle to speed up.

However, he stood there motionless. He clenched his teeth in silence as his forehead’s veins throbbed. Ultimately, he chose not to do a thing

“Xu Miantu, why!?” Li Xuan wore a grimace. At this stage, it was already obvious to him that Xu Miantu had deliberately thrown him and Zhou Wen into a trap.

From the initial provoking of Yang Lie to turning a blind eye to their peril, everything was a deliberate ruse by Xu Miantu.

The only person who was capable of doing this had to win the trust of Li Xuan and to know everything about him-Xu Miantu.

However, Li Xuan could do nothing. All he could do was stare intently at Xu Miantu as the duo were on the brink of falling into the pond.

There were exclamations on the bank. After all, they were still students. Even if they didn’t like Zhou Wen or Li Xuan, none of them wished them dead.

With Li Xuan and Zhou Wen about to fall into the pond, Xu Miantu’s face read, I had no choice. Don’t blame me.

Am I really such a failure as a friend? Li Xuan, who had been staring at him, could read his lips. He couldn’t help but feel a dreary sadness. The people he thought were his friends-Jiang Hao and Xu Miantu—had both betrayed him. It left him downhearted.

Just as Zhou Wen and Li Xuan were about to fall into the water, a white and silver beam shimmered above the lotus pond.

Silver light swirled behind Zhou Wen as four transparent wings appeared behind him. They were rapidly flapping as they pulled him and Li Xuan up, allowing them to escape certain doom.

Impossible… How do you have a Companion Beast capable of flight? Xu Miantu looked at the flying Zhou Wen, feeling alarmed and afraid. His expression was distorted beyond description.

With Li Xuan in tow, Zhou Wen landed on the Dragon-Scaled Turtle's back. He looked at Xu Miantu and said, "I kept giving you an opportunity, but unfortunately, you still did

it."

"Have you always suspected me? So you deliberately hid the fact that you own a Companion Beast capable of flight?" Xu Miantu stared at Zhou Wen in alarm and

anger.

"If it weren't the case, how would I be able to test if you really treat me as a friend?" Zhou Wen said indifferently. "I'm cool-natured and do not know how to be nice to others, so when others are nice to me, I suspect if they have any ulterior motives. Although I also wish that you really had treated me as a friend, the facts have unfortunately proven that this world is as cruel as I imagined."

Having said that, Zhou Wen glanced to the side of the lotus pond. He saw a beautiful girl floating in the sky with a pair of pure-white wings. This beautiful and holy beast was shockingly the legendary angel Companion Beast.

This angel Companion Beast had flown over and across the lotus pond almost at the same time that Zhou Wen had

summoned the Silver-Winged Flying Ant.

“Thank you.” Zhou Wen looked at An Jing riding the white horse’s back. Zhou Wen had understood An Jing’s warning; he had just feigned ignorance to test Xu Miantu.

At the instant the angel Companion Beast appeared, even if Zhou Wen didn’t like An Jing as a person, he felt that he needed to thank her.

“I was afraid you wouldn’t die and wanted to make your death a clean one. From the looks of it, I don’t have an opportunity,” An Jing said with a deadpan expression as she reached out her hand to withdraw her angel Companion Beast. She then rode the white horse away.

“Xu Miantu, give me a reason to let you live,” Li Xuan said to him with a cold glare.

“Brother Xuan, I’m sorry. I was really forced. I was forced by your brother… Please, spare me…” Xu Miantu plopped to his knees as he hugged Li Xuan’s legs to beg for mercy.

“You’ve once risked your life for me. I can choose not to take your life, but you tried not only to harm me but Zhou Wen as well. Your life isn’t enough to atone two lives.” Li Xuan kicked Xu Miantu away and turned around. With his back facing Xu Miantu, he said, “Scram. If you can leave Luoyang alive, I’ll spare your life.”

Xu Miantu wore a livid expression. He was from the Li family and knew what it was capable of. As long as Li Xuan was unwilling to spare him, there was no way he could live Luoyang alive.

In his despair, a look of hatred flashed in Xu Miantu’s eyes. He pounced at Li Xuan with all his might, roaring with a

ferocious look. “Then let’s die together!”

Just as Xu Miantu was about to pounce on Li Xuan, the latter took a sidestep to dodge him as though he had eyes on his back.

Unable to stop himself, Xu Miantu fell into the lotus pond.

“Ah!” Xu Miantu struggled and cried in the water. His flesh was corroded as bloody bubbles emerged. It looked extremely tragic and horrifying.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 61 - Qualifications

Chapter 61 Qualifications

Due to Xu Miantu’s death, Zhou Wen and Li Xuan were investigated by the school, but they were quickly released.

“What kind of person is your brother?” In the dorm, Zhou Wen leaned against a chair and asked Li Xuan.

Li Xuan casually sat on the floor, holding a can of beer and downing it slowly. Then, he said, “My family has three brothers. My eldest brother was a genius. He was good at everything, believed to be a super genius on par with An Tianzuo in Luoyang City. He was the most talented of our Li family. Unfortunately, he died young.”

Downing another mouthful of beer, Li Xuan continued, “My second brother, Li Xiubai, was promising at a young age. Although he wasn’t as illustrious as An Tianzuo. He’s a Li family genius known to all and he has a very good reputation outside. At home, he’s a figure who can discuss the Li family matters with the other uncles. He’s a lot stronger than a foppish scion like me. Most of my old man’s adopted sons look up to him as their leader.

“But you can see that my childhood friends, Jiang Hao and Xu Miantu, people who had the strongest relationships with me in the Li family betrayed me one after the other. They spent no effort to help my brother kill me. It was especially so for Xu Miantu. I’m certain that he wasn’t working for my brother before he returned to Luoyang. But in a few short days, he turned his back on me. You should be able to guess

what kind of character and means my brother has.” Li Xuan crushed the beer can upon saying that.

“Why? Aren you vying for the Li family’s business? Just to be safe, he’s willing to do this to his younger brother? Doesn’t your father care?” Zhou Wen found it somewhat unbelievable.

“No, it’s not because of the Li family’s business. If it was only that, we wouldn’t have reached this point,” Li Xuan said with a shake of his head.

“Then what’s the reason?” Seeing Li Xuan silent, Zhou Wen said, “Forget it if you can’t

say.”

Li Xuan shook his head slightly and sighed after a long period of time. “The higher the levels of dimensional creatures, the greater the difference in strength. Just like Legendary creatures are almost no match for Epic creatures, with the gap between the Epic stage and the Mythical stage even larger, it can be said that even a hundred humans at the Epic stage might not be able to kill a Mythical creature. It might even lead to their complete wipeout.”

“I’ve learned that from the textbooks.” Zhou Wen felt that Li Xuan was saying the obvious.

Li Xuan continued, “Then have you thought about how humans were able to kill the first Mythical creature considering the huge difference in strength?”

“Legend has it that the few founders of the League combined forces to kill it. It’s also the Six League Heroes as taught in the textbooks.” Zhou Wen knew that Li Xuan definitely had more to tell

“Then do you know how they killed the Mythical creature?” Li Xuan asked with a smile.

“The books say that they had a difficult battle that lasted three full days…” Before Zhou Wen finished his sentence, Li Xuan interrupted him.

“Don’t believe in the books’ nonsense. If they were really only at the Epic stage, even sixty people wouldn’t be able to kill a Mythical creature, much less six,” Li Xuan said in disdain.

“Then how is one killed?” Zhou Wen asked out of curiosity.

“It’s because they had Mythical Companion Beasts,” Li Xuan said.

“Isn’t what you say contradictory? Without killing the first Mythical creature, how will one have a Mythical Companion Beast? This doesn’t adhere to logic.”

Li Xuan laughed in reply, “Of course it doesn’t adhere to logic. It’s because their Companion Beasts weren’t obtained by killing Mythical creatures. Instead, someone gave them to them. Although they can’t be considered real Mythical creatures and can only be called larva of Mythical creatures, it’s already enviable.”

“This still doesn’t adhere to logic. If someone gave them Mythical Companion Beasts, then the person who gave them must have killed Mythical creatures before,” Zhou Wen said with a frown.

“No one can answer this question. At the very least, not me. I only know that there’s such a department in the top brass of the League that does such matters. Some humans can obtain the qualifications just like the Six League Heroes. And

my Li family has such a qualification. Then, the person who might be able to obtain a Mythical Companion Beast might be me. Only with me dead will this opportunity have a chance of landing on my brother. It's because I was appointed by my old man," Li Xuan said in a teasing tone.

"So that's the reason. In that case, isn't your old man going to rein in and do something about your brother?" Zhou Wen asked, puzzled.

If it were him, he definitely wouldn't kill his younger brother over such matters. However, everyone was different. Zhou Wen didn't believe that his thoughts represented everyone. In fact, he always felt that his character and thoughts were in the minority.

"Rein in? How? Beat him to death? Or get me to give up the Mythical Companion Beast qualifications? At this point in time, I can only compete with my brother," Li Xuan said with a glint in his eyes. He didn't seem afraid and was even excited.

"You have to be careful." Although Zhou Wen had never met Li Xiubai, he had a deep impression of him after what had happened to Jiang Hao and Xu Miantu.

"I will soon advance to the Legendary stage, then I'll have nothing to fear. Instead, it's you that should be careful. You have foiled my brother's plans twice. With my understanding of him, he will definitely not spare you," Li Xuan said very solemnly.

Zhou Wen nodded slightly. He didn't believe that Li Xuan was being an alarmist. It was something very possible.

Although the campus didn't permit private fighting, even Xu Miantu dared to take action in a dimensional zone under Li

Xiubai’s scheme. It was difficult to guarantee that a second or third Xu Miantu wouldn’t appear on campus.

“Thankfully you live alone in Four Seasons Garden. The situation there isn’t as complicated as the ordinary dorms. It makes it a lot safer. Speaking of which, I recall that the An family also has the qualifications to obtain a Mythical Companion Beast. Unfortunately, you aren’t born into the An family; otherwise, you might have a chance to vie for it from An Jing,” Li Xuan joked.

“Why would it be with An Jing? Didn’t you said that An Tianzuo was the genius? Shouldn’t the An family’s Mythical Companion Beast qualification be his?” Zhou Wen asked with a frown.

“That I’m not sure. While my old man was telling me about the Mythical Companion Beasts, he had mentioned in passing that the An family had likely chosen An Jing. In Luoyang City, only my Li family and the An family has the qualifications,” Li Xuan said with great certainty.

Li Xuan was in a bad mood, so he drank plenty. In his drunken stupor, he vomited and collapsed in Zhou Wen’s bed.

Zhou Wen had no choice but to sit on the chair to game since he had no intention of sleeping.

Although the Li family’s matters had nothing to do with him, it was as Li Xuan said; Li Xiubai-in his displeasure-might even want him out of the way, so he needed to be wary.

But no matter what he did, nothing was as effective as being strong himself.

After today’s experience and the battle with the blood-patterned Buddha Heart Lotus, Zhou Wen was quite inspired. He wanted to see if he could kill the blood-patterned Buddha Heart Lotus alone. Although this was a crazy idea, Zhou Wen could already see its viability.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 62 - The Storm Approaches

Chapter 62 The Storm Approaches

Shortly after Zhou Wen entered the game, he saw a notification before he arrived at the lotus pond: Silver-Winged Flying Ant is currently in a hungry state.

The notification quickly disappeared, but Zhou Wen took no notice of it. He continued forward, only to receive automatic notifications from the system every ten minutes.

This fellow feeds on Companion Beasts, but Companion Eggs aren’t easily produced. Zhou Wen felt a little depressed and could only ignore the notification.

If Zhou Wen were rich, he could purchase Companion Eggs to feed the Silver-Winged Flying Ant, but he wasn’t rich. The living allowance Zhou Lingfeng gave him was only enough for his usual expenses, leaving nothing left for him to buy Companion Eggs.

It’s best I am self-sufficient. I should grind more. Zhou Wen controlled the blood-colored avatar as he stormed into the lotus pond.

At this moment, a video remained at the top of the school’s Intranet trending searches-a video of Zhou Wen and Li Xuan

combining forces to strike at the blood-patterned Buddha Heart Lotus.

It was unknown which student on the bank had recorded the video. From a bystander's angle, the entire process had been recorded in high definition.

However, the video had clearly been edited. The entire video only reached the point when Zhou Wen summoned his silver wings and flew up with Li Xuan in tow.

"What the f**k. Isn't Li Xuan that prodigal of the Li family? How is he this strong? He summoned three Legendary Companion Beasts at the Mortal stage and even slew the blood-patterned Buddha Heart Lotus that many Legendary seniors at school couldn't?"

"Li Xuan is too cool!"

"The other freshman isn't bad either. Although he's slightly weaker, he also has two Companion Beasts. They're just quite unfamiliar ones. I've never seen them in the past. Are they at the Mortal stage or Legendary stage?"

Li Xuan went completely viral. Due to him hogging the spotlight, Zhou Wen wasn't noticed by many.

This video also appeared on the desktop computer of Qiao Siyuan. He sat in front of his computer watching it several times with his arms crossed.

"Noticed anything?" Qiao Siyuan asked Liz.

"Li Xuan is very strong. This fellow is rather interesting. He really acted the part well in the past. All three brothers of the Li family are real pieces of work. It's only because the eldest brother died early that the An family's standing in

Luoyang has not been shaken.” Liz watched a few times, but with Qiao Siyuan silent, she was already growing impatient.

Qiao Siyuan shook his head gently. “I’m not talking about that. Did you notice Zhou Wen?”

“Naturally. Although Li Xuan is very strong, the one giving instructions was Zhou Wen,” Liz said.

Qiao Siyuan stared at the computer screen as his eyes glowed. “No, I’m not talking about that. Look carefully. Zhou Wen did three consecutive jumps at full strength. Such a jump would probably be difficult even for you to accomplish without special Primordial Energy Skills or Primordial Energy Arts to support you.”

Liz was taken aback as she watched again carefully. A look of surprise emerged as she said, “Indeed. Without a Primordial Energy Skill or Primordial Energy Art to support that, the human body can hardly complete three consecutive jumps under gravity. He clearly didn’t use any Primordial Energy Skills. That must mean that his Primordial Energy Art is extraordinary…”

“Wasn’t it written in his dossier? He cultivates in Ascetic Meditation and has cultivated it for years,” Qiao Siyuan said.

“But Ascetic Meditation is a Primordial Energy Art that’s good for Strength and Constitution. It doesn’t equip one with the characteristic of such repeated bursts. From the looks of it, Zhou Wen has hidden his cards well. He likely doesn’t cultivate in Ascetic Meditation,” Liz said.

Yet, Qiao Siyuan said with great certainty, “No, I’m very certain that Zhou Wen cultivated in Ascetic Meditation. At the very least, he was definitely cultivating in it before we met him in Guide City.”

“Why?” Liz was confounded.

“Didn’t you size him up carefully when you encountered the youth that appeared out of the blue? Back then, his skin was slightly yellow and there was a dark gold luster at the bottom of his eyes. That’s the characteristic of long-term cultivation of Ascetic Meditation. Back then, he must have cultivated it for years, but now, I don’t see those traits.

“But it’s only been days since our meeting with him in Guide City. Even if he were to switch Primordial Energy Arts in such a short period of time, he wouldn’t be able to completely replace Ascetic Meditation which he cultivated for years, right? At the very least, there should be signs of retrogression of those traits. It shouldn’t vanish in such a short period of time.

“That’s where the problem lies. Zhou Wen encountered Jing Daoxian and shortly after that, the Ascetic Meditation he cultivated for years was replaced by another Primordial Energy Art. And shortly after that, the An family changed the nomination from An Jing to Zhou Wen. Is there some connection in this matter?” Qiao Siyuan rapped his fingers on the table and said slowly.

Liz trembled. “Sir, do you mean that the An family and that devil, Jing Daoxian, have some kind of relationship?”

“No, I didn’t say that. However, there’s indeed something abnormal about Zhou Wen. Perhaps something happened between him and Jing Daoxian. Only a handful of people in the League can change the Primordial Energy Art that they have been cultivating for several years in such a short timespan, and Jing Daoxian happens to be one of them,” Qiao Siyuan said.

“If that’s the case, doesn’t it mean that Zhou Wen is in cahoots with Jing Daoxian? We should do our best to bring him back for questioning as soon as possible.” Liz’s eyes lit

up.

“There’s indeed such a necessity, but we are in Luoyang, not at our headquarters in the capital,” Qiao Siyuan said with a sigh.

“We can request the higher-ups for an arrest warrant. The Sunset College wouldn’t dare stop us from arresting someone,” Liz said.

“Sunset College might not, but one person would,” Qiao Siyuan said indifferently

“An Tianzuo? No way, right? Would he dare openly defy the League’s laws?” Liz asked with a frown.

“Yes, he will,” Qiao Siyuan said with great certainty.

After some thought, Qiao Siyuan added, “However, it will depend on An Jing’s and An Tianzuo’s attitudes. They are likely displeased that Zhou Wen took away the nomination that originally belonged to An Jing. Otherwise, would the great Overseer An deliberately criticize an ordinary high-schooler during his inspection of Guide City? An Jing wouldn’t have specially transferred to Guide High School to beat Zhou Wen up.”

“Sir, what are you getting at?” Liz probed.

“Immediately apply for an arrest warrant, then bring back Zhou Wen as quickly as possible. You have to be fast. When that happens, even if the An family receives the news and tries to rescue him, we should have already asked

everything we would like to know. Besides, An Tianzuo might not necessarily want to save him," Qiao Siyuan said lightly.

"Yes, sir. I'll apply for an arrest warrant as soon as possible. Once he's brought back, I'll definitely interrogate him personally." Liz's eyes flashed a burning flame.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 63 - I'll Give You Three Months

Chapter 63 I'll Give You Three Months

The weather was pretty good today. Zhou Wen brought a chair over and rested in the courtyard, suntanning while gaming.

As school hadn't officially started, there weren't any training or missions assigned yet. Zhou Wen led a rather pleasant life.

He had been constantly trying to slay the blood-patterned Buddha Heart Lotus alone, but he had failed.

Thankfully, all his efforts had not been in vain. He managed to have an ordinary Buddha Heart Lotus Companion Egg drop, but it was quickly fed to the Silver-Winged Flying Ant.

The typical Companion Beast only needed to depend on its master, absorbing the Primordial Energy that emitted from its master's body for survival. It could also slowly recover from its injuries without needing to eat anything. At best, it would absorb some Primordial Energy Crystals, allowing it to quickly recover Primordial Energy.

However, the Silver-Winged Flying Ant needed to swallow Companion Eggs or Companion Beasts or the game would constantly notify him that it was in a hungry state. In the

beginning, Zhou Wen ignored it, but later, the game indicated that the Silver-Winged Flying Ant would vanish in twenty-four hours if it remained in a prolonged hungry state.

Therefore, Zhou Wen had no choice but to feed it the Buddha Heart Lotus Companion Egg to alleviate the pressing matter at hand.

Zhou Wen gamed in the yard, half leaning back. His neighbor, An Jing, had finished morning cultivation and had walked out of the cultivation room to the balcony on the second floor. Hoping to look far into the distance to relieve stress before continuing her cultivation, her gaze subconsciously swept towards the courtyard beside hers. Immediately she saw Zhou Wen gaming in the courtyard while sunbathing. Immediately, her mood turned foul.

Even if it’s as Mom said, that his talent is better than mine, so what? A person’s talent cannot decide his achievements. What right does a person who has engrossed himself in games to avoid reality-even after suffering a tiny setback-have to fight me for the Mythical Companion Beast? Besides, his talent might not be better than mine. An Jing watched for a while before heading downstairs, muttering to herself, “Mom, watch and see. I’ll prove that I’m better than Zhou Wen. I totally have the ability to fight for the right to possess a Mythical Companion Beast by myself. There’s no need for Zhou Wen.”

“Zhou Wen.” Zhou Wen was having a great time grinding when he suddenly heard his name. He turned around and saw that someone was standing quietly in the other courtyard by the fence, staring at him.

“What’s the matter?” Zhou Wen gave An Jing a look before lowering his head to continue staring at his game screen.

“That Sun Strafe Art is real. You can cultivate it.” An Jing paused for a moment before saying, “If you don’t believe me, give a call to Uncle Feng. He will help you verify its authenticity.”

Zhou Wen was unconcerned about the authenticity of the Sun Strafe Art as he could no longer cultivate it anyway.

“Why did you give it to me?” Zhou Wen asked as he gamed.

An Jing looked at Zhou Wen and said, “You must feel indignant about losing to me last time, right?”

“Not at all. You beat me fair and square,” Zhou Wen said in passing. He really didn’t want to have any connection with An Jing. It was best if they could be like strangers.

The words An Jing had originally prepared were swallowed. Feeling a little uncomfortable holding it, she bit her lip and said, “I’ll give you three months to cultivate the Sun Strafe Art and advance to the Legendary stage. With your foundation, three months should be enough. We will then fight another match. If you still haven’t advanced to the Legendary stage within three months, I won’t show any mercy.”

After pausing for a moment, she added, “Don’t say that I’m bullying you. I’ll get someone to deliver you Primordial Energy Crystals and other cultivation necessities. Whatever Primordial Energy Skills you need can be given to me as a list. I’ll try to get them for you. Remember, you only have three months.”

Zhou Wen felt that An Jing was being unreasonable. He frowned and said, “I admit defeat. You win. There’s no need to go through so much trouble.”

He neither wanted to take advantage of the An family nor did he want to waste time competing with An Jing again. It was meaningless to him and defeating her brought him no benefits.

“You have to fight. Remember, I’m only giving you three months. I definitely won’t show you any mercy when the time comes.” After saying that coldly, An Jing turned around and left. She was afraid that she wouldn’t be able to hold herself back from beating Zhou Wen with how detestable he looked.

“Why must you fight with me?” Zhou Wen felt puzzled. If An Jing hated him because of Ouyang Lan’s remarriage, she could have beaten him right there and then without going through all that trouble.

“I want to prove that I’m better than you.” After finishing her sentence, she walked into her dormitory without looking back.

Zhou Wen was somewhat baffled. When it came to who was better, Zhou Wen only had a little fame in Guide City. However, An Jing was publicly known as a genius in Luoyang. She had advanced to the Legendary stage at the age of thirteen and Zhou Wen still hadn’t advanced. The difference between the two was almost unbridgeable.

Do all people from noble families have such odd tempers? Li Xiubai can scheme to kill his younger brother for a qualification. An Jing is likewise ridiculous. Zhou Wen shook his head slightly.

He had no intention of fighting An Jing, much less cultivate the Sun Strafe Art. As for advancing to the Legendary stage in three months, he was still working hard towards that. Of course, he wished to advance to the Legendary stage within

three months, but the Lost Immortal Sutra was somewhat weird, making it difficult to make any prior estimates.

An Jing returned to her small building and couldn’t help but head for the balcony on the second floor. She secretly shot a glance at Zhou Wen and saw that he was still sunbathing and gaming. He didn’t seem to feel any sense of urgency after what she had said or any intention to work hard. She couldn’t help but bite her lip.

After An Jing finally left, Zhou Wen didn’t manage to game for long before someone came to his door. Furthermore, there was not one but four people.

Zhou Wen looked up and saw four people, three of which he didn’t know. One of them was Gao Yang who had a grudge against him because of Li Weiyang.

Zhou Wen originally imagined that Gao Yang and company were here for revenge, but to his surprise, Gao Yang greeted him with a smile when he saw Zhou Wen sitting in the yard. “Zhou Wen, still remember me? I’m your fourth-year senior, Gao Yang.”

“Why are you looking for me?” Zhou Wen continued gaming, having no intention of inviting them in.

Gao Yang didn’t get angry as he continued chuckling. “You really don’t become close unless you fight. What happened wasn’t a big deal. If I had done anything wrong, I’d apologize to you today. Let’s ignore who was right or wrong and just bury the hatchet, alright?”

Gao Yang naturally wouldn’t make up with Zhou Wen for no good reason. The typical student who watched the video of Li Xuan and Zhou Wen battling the blood-patterned Buddha

Heart Lotus would feel that Li Xuan was formidable; thus, overshadowing Zhou Wen.

However, those who were truly keen knew that Zhou Wen’s role in the battle far exceeded Li Xuan’s.

Li Xuan was indeed strong, but there were still other students at Sunset College that were as strong as him. After all, Li Xuan hadn’t advanced to the Legendary stage and there were many students at the Legendary stage. They could replace Li Xuan’s role in the battle.

As for Zhou Wen, no other student could replace him.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 64 - Invitation

Chapter 64 Invitation

“Okay,” Zhou Wen said with a nod.

Since he hadn’t suffered any losses the last time, as they were borne by Gao Yang and Su Mei, there was naturally nothing that was irreconcilable.

Gao Yang was very happy when he heard that. He pushed the door open and entered the yard, speaking as he walked. “I came here today for one other matter. Let me do the introduction. These three are students at our school. They are also your seniors. This is Hui Haifeng. You just matriculated, so you might not have heard his name. However, you’ll definitely learn of his name once you familiarize yourself with the campus.”

“Zhou Wen, hello there.” Hui Haifeng reached out his palm in a friendly manner.

“Hello. I’m gaming, so just get straight to the point.” Zhou Wen was controlling the blood-colored avatar to battle in the Ant Nest. There were Vigor Ants everywhere swarming around him. He couldn’t divert his attention to shake hands with Hui Haifeng, so it wasn’t because of any disrespect.

Gao Yang and the other two showed their displeasure, but Hui Haifeng thought nothing of it. He said with a smile, “I’ve watched the video of you and Li Xuan fighting the blood-

patterned Buddha Heart Lotus. It was truly impressive, your judgment and commanding left me surprised. It’s like you could predict the future. The only thing that’s a pity was that one of your teammates was problematic, preventing you from slaying the blood-patterned Buddha Heart Lotus.”

With Zhou Wen not having the intention to answer him, Hui Haifeng continued, “I came here hoping to invite you to our team to kill the blood-patterned Buddha Heart Lotus.”

“Not interested.” Zhou Wen was already rather familiar with the blood-patterned Buddha Heart Lotus. He believed that it wouldn’t take long for him to slay the blood-patterned Buddha Heart Lotus in-game, so there was no need for him to take any risks.

Gao Yang tried persuading him. “Zhou Wen, consider it. Hui Haifeng is a lot stronger than Li Xuan. These two are Legendary experts that rank in the top twenty in school. Killing the blood-patterned Buddha Heart Lotus with them is almost guaranteed. There won’t be many risks and it can be said that there are only benefits to it.”

“Sorry, I’m really not interested.” Zhou Wen shook his head again.

He was doing his best grinding the Ant Nest dungeon, hoping to drop Companion Eggs to feed the Silver-Winged Flying Ant. For this reason, he wasn’t even visiting the lotus pond and chose to head to the Ant Nest where there were more dimensional creatures. He didn’t have the time to kill the blood-patterned Buddha Heart Lotus with Hui Haifeng.

However, on second thought, Zhou Wen felt that what Xu Miantu said previously was right. In a place like Sunset College, showcasing one’s strength allowed one to gain more opportunities.

However, Zhou Wen didn’t need the opportunities as they would affect his gaming and become a distraction.

Gao Yang was slightly displeased. He thought differently of Zhou Wen only because Hui Haifeng appreciated Zhou Wen. He himself didn’t think Zhou Wen was that strong.

Hui Haifeng patted Gao Yang on the back, indicating him to swallow his words back. Then, he said to Zhou Wen, “Let’s do this. I’ll hire you to help us slay the blood-patterned Buddha Heart Lotus. If you have any requests, raise it.”

Zhou Wen was just about to reject him and send them off so that he could game in peace when a thought flashed in his mind. He looked up and asked Hui Haifeng, “Any condition?”

“That will depend on whether it’s worth it,” Hui Haifeng said with a smile.

“You can hire me. But I want a Legendary Companion Egg.” Zhou Wen gave his condition immediately.

He had grinded an entire day at Ant Nest, killing countless Vigor Ants and only with good luck could a Companion Egg drop. Otherwise, nothing would drop, making it difficult for him to rear a Silver-Winged Flying Ant.

If he used a Legendary Companion Egg to feed the Silver-Winged Flying Ant, perhaps it could grow faster and no longer suffer from hunger that quickly.

Gao Yang wasn’t willing when he heard that. “Zhou Wen, aren’t you being exorbitant? We are killing a blood-patterned Buddha Heart Lotus, so the chances of a Companion Egg dropping isn’t high. By wanting a Legendary Companion Egg, aren’t you being difficult?”

“That’s my price. If you want it cheaper, you are free to hire others,” Zhou Wen continued gaming as he said without looking up.

Gao Yang wasn’t done, but Hui Haifeng cut him off. “A Legendary Companion Egg, no problem. What kind do you want?”

“Any kind will do.” Since Zhou Wen was only using it as food, he didn’t have any special requests.

“Alright. I can give it to you tonight. Shall we head to the lotus pond tomorrow?” Hui Haifeng said without hesitation.

Zhou Wen finally looked up at Hui Haifeng and said, “Sure, I still have another request.”

“Zhou Wen, don’t push it,” Gao Yang said unhappily.

“No worries. Go ahead.” However, Hui Haifeng was unperturbed as though he didn’t care about it.

“If I am to go, everyone has to follow my commands. Before taking action, I also need to understand all the Companion Beasts you will use in detail. If you are also participating in the battle, I’ll also need to know your combat standards and Primordial Energy Skills”

“No problem,” Hui Haifeng replied immediately.

“Also, I will not join the battle myself like the last time. I’m only in charge of giving commands,” Zhou Wen added.

“It’s your commanding ability that caught my eye. I don’t need you to take risks,” Hui Haifeng said with a smile.

“Deal. When will you send my Legendary Companion Egg to me?” Zhou Wen lowered his head and continued gaming.

Hui Haifeng thought for a moment before giving a time. “Eight in the evening.”

After discussing the specifics, Hui Haifeng and Gao Yang left. On the way, Gao Yang said unhappily, “Haifeng, I really can’t tell how Zhou Wen is as important as you describe him to be? I’ve watched the video of his battle with the blood-patterned Buddha Heart Lotus numerous times. We are already very clear about what needs to be done. With our strength, we should be able to kill it by ourselves. Why must we spend so much to hire him?”

Hui Haifeng shook his head slightly. “Seeing and doing are two completely different matters. Besides, we only saw a portion. We still have no idea what other capabilities the blood-patterned Buddha Heart Lotus has.”

“We might not know, but neither will Zhou Wen. What use is he?” Gao Yang still couldn’t get his mind around it.

“I have a nagging feeling that Zhou Wen is somewhat different. Just treat it as buying some insurance,” Hui Haifeng said with a smile.

At eight that evening, someone sent a Legendary Companion Egg over. At the same time, a contract was included. Zhou Wen read through it and signed it after checking that it was fine. He then accepted the Legendary Companion Egg

Closing the door and returning to his cultivation room, Zhou Wen took out the Legendary Companion Egg from the box. At the same time, he summoned the Silver-Winged Flying

Ant, hoping to see how it would eat a Companion Egg in real life.

Once the Silver-Winged Flying Ant saw the Companion Egg, it flew over and opened its huge mouth, biting onto the Egg and sucking at it. Soon, all that was left of the Companion Egg was its outer skin.

The next second, Zhou Wen saw a silver swirl around the Silver-Winged Flying Ant’s body with a red hue within.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 65 - Growth

Chapter 65 Growth

The Silver-Winged Flying Ant’s silver and red light intensified and enveloped its body like a massive flame.

When the flame gradually died down and revealed the Silver-Winged Flying Ant’s body, Zhou Wen’s eyes lit up.

It was now twice its former size, about the same size as the Silver-Winged Flying Ant which Zhou Wen had killed. However, its exterior wasn’t exactly the same.

On its body were some additional red-ringed stripes that alternated with the silver patterns. They made the lower half of its body appear like a hornet.

More strangely, the tip of the ant’s bottom had grown a silver spike that resembled a hornet’s tail.

Is this growth or mutation? Zhou Wen was astonished seeing this. He remembered that the person who delivered the Companion Egg mentioned that it was a Fire Hornet’s Companion Egg. From how it looked, the Silver-Winged Flying Ant had apparently obtained some of the characteristics of the Fire Hornet.

He quickly checked the in-game stats and found that the Silver-Winged Flying Ant’s stats had changed drastically.

Silver-Winged Flying Ant: Legendary (Adult)

Legendary Life Providence: King of Low Altitudes

Strength: 17

Speed: 20

Constitution: 16

Primordial Energy: 19

Talent Skill: Silver Wing Flash, Magical Needle

Companion Form: Wings

Zhou Wen was pleasantly surprised and delighted seeing this. With such stats, the Silver-Winged Flying Ant could be said to be a pinnacle existence among Legendary Companion Beasts, especially its Speed. Typically, the stats of a Legendary maxed out at 18. 20 points was described as an Overdrive.

Although the Primordial Energy was lower than Speed, it was also an Overdrive value.

What surprised Zhou Wen, even more, was that the Silver-Winged Flying Ant had an additional Magical Needle Primordial Energy Skill. It had become a Companion Beast with two skills, making it an excellent Companion Beast.

Although compared to the blood-patterned Buddha Heart Lotus which had many skills, two skills weren’t many, the Silver-Winged Flying Ant was already considered rather rare when most Companion Beasts only had one Primordial Energy Skill.

Zhou Wen was even more delighted when he saw the information regarding Magical Needle. It was a long-range

Primordial Energy Skill. The Silver-Winged Flying Ant could release a Magical Needle and attack a target from afar.

With this Silver-Winged Flying Ant, I don’t have to worry about killing the blood-patterned Buddha Heart Lotus. Without a second thought, Zhou Wen ended the summoning of the Silver-Winged Flying Ant and chose to enter the game dungeon.

Zhou Wen headed straight for the Underground Buddha City. With the Silver-Winged Flying Ant’s present size, it was big enough for him to sit on it. Zhou Wen got the blood-colored avatar to ride on the Silver-Winged Flying Ant and quickly fly to the lotus pond.

A Speed of 20 was much faster than Zhou Wen could run himself. It was almost the difference between a horse carriage and a sports car. It didn’t take long for him to fly to the bank of the lotus pond.

The blood-colored avatar jumped off the Silver-Winged Flying Ant’s back and watched the ensuing battle from the sidelines. Without any hesitation, the Silver-Winged Flying Ant flew towards the blood-patterned Buddha Heart Lotus in the middle of the pond.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

More than ten blood-colored lotus seeds shot at the Silver-Winged Flying Ant as it flapped its four wings, leaving behind afterimages in the sky, easily dodging the attack range of the blood-colored lotus seeds.

A Speed of 20 was just too fast. In a blink of an eye, it arrived in front of the blood-patterned Buddha Heart Lotus, to which the latter’s petals contracted in a bid to devour the former.

Just as the Silver-Winged Flying Ant was about to be devoured, silver light swirled from its back. Like a rocket, it blinked several meters away, dodging the petals. At the same time, it slashed at them with its blade-like claws.

The blood pattern on the petal shimmered, producing a halo that blocked the claws.

Although the Silver-Winged Flying Ant's Strength was already one of the best amongst Legendaries, it was unable to slice through the petal without the augmentation of any Primordial Energy Skills.

The petal wasn't slashed through, but it opened by itself, revealing the venomous toad which opened its mouth and spat venom at the Silver-Winged Flying Ant.

While the Silver-Winged Flying Ant easily dodged this, a silver light flashed at its tail, shooting a silver beam through the toad's forehead.

Bang!

The toad exploded, splattering its venom everywhere. However, the speed of the venom couldn't catch up with the Silver-Winged Flying Ant's Speed.

After the toad was killed, the lotus receptacle was completely exposed. The lotus seeds that resembled blood crystals exposed their tips as they suffused a sanguine luster.

The Silver-Winged Flying Ant didn't stop as its silver tail flashed, shooting another Magical Needle at the lotus receptacle.

Magical Needle’s attack range was less than twenty meters. Although its range was limited, it was potent. The blood-patterned Buddha Heart Lotus closed its petals, blocking with the blood-patterned Buddha Glow, but ended up being penetrated by Magical Needle.

At the instant the Magical Needle impaled the lotus receptacle, a blood-colored explosion erupted like a volcano. Twenty to thirty blood-columns spewed out, turning into bloody rain that covered twenty meters of the area. Whatever touched the bloody rain was liquefied. Even the other Buddha Heart Lotuses and lotus leaves living in the pond were no exception.

The blood-patterned Buddha Heart Lotus’s petals were corroded by the bloody rain as they became riddled with holes.

Thankfully, the Silver-Winged Flying Ant was fast enough and dodged most of the splash; otherwise, it would have been reduced to a pool of blood.

After the bloody rain finished its attack, Zhou Wen ordered the Silver-Winged Flying Ant to fly forward. At this moment, the blood-patterned Buddha Heart Lotus was no longer capable of putting up any resistance. It didn’t take long for its lotus receptacle to be sliced open.

‘Killed Legendary creature, Mutated Buddha Heart Lotus. Discovered Dimensional Crystal.’

A dimensional crystal from the Mutated Buddha Heart Lotus dropped. It almost fell into the pond, but Zhou Wen was quick enough to command the Silver-Winged Flying Ant to grab it.

Mutated Buddha Heart Lotus Crystal! Zhou Wen studied the text on the dimensional crystal carefully and was immediately exhilarated. He was originally a little depressed that no Companion Egg dropped, but after reading the text, he instantaneously felt better.

Although a Mutated Buddha Heart Lotus wasn’t as valuable as a Companion Egg, it was possible that this Mutated Buddha Heart Lotus’s Primordial Energy Skill was able to help him enter Small Buddha Temple.

The Primordial Energy Skill of ordinary Buddha Heart Lotus is Heart Meditation. But a Mutated Buddha Heart Lotus has several Primordial Energy Skills. I wonder if Heart Meditation will be obtained by absorbing its Primordial Energy Skill? Zhou Wen wasn’t sure either.

The Silver-Winged Flying Ant brought the Mutated Buddha Heart Lotus back to the blood-colored avatar’s side. The moment the latter touched the crystal, the energy within surged into its body.

Almost simultaneously, Zhou Wen felt a burning strength surge out of the phone. It instantly filled his body, making his body feel like a furnace. His body perspired profusely as though he had been scooped out of the water and was now being baked.

After quite some time, the heat gradually subsided and he felt a refreshing coolness emerge in his body.

It was especially so for his heart. It felt an indescribable comfort. It had a miraculous feeling of tranquility and coolness. At the same time, plenty of magical information surged into Zhou Wen’s brain.

‘Absorbed Mutated Buddha Heart Lotus. Attained Blood Meditation (Rank 9).’

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 66 - Charging into Small Buddha Temple

Chapter 66 Charging into Small Buddha Temple

Zhou Wen took a look at the blood-colored avatar's stats and saw that the Heart Meditation in the Primordial Energy Skill slot had vanished. Replacing it was Blood Meditation.

Zhou Wen attempted activating Blood Meditation and immediately a cool aura emerged from his heart. That aura went to every part of his body by coursing through his veins, making Zhou Wen feel an indescribable comfort.

As for his skin, it suffused an abnormal ruddiness that made him look a little odd.

It felt a little different from Heart Meditation. Furthermore, the Primordial Energy expenditure was much slower. One point of Primordial Energy lasted almost three minutes. With 10 Primordial Energy, Zhou Wen could use Blood Meditation for almost half an hour.

If Blood Meditation is like Heart Meditation, half an hour should be enough to counter the Small Buddha Temple's mysterious force. It's enough for me to make a few trips to the stone staircase in front of the temple. Zhou Wen didn't waste any time and immediately got the blood-colored avatar to ride the Silver-Winged Flying Ant and fly for Small Buddha Temple.

As he expected, Blood Meditation and Heart Meditation had the same effect. After activating Heart Meditation, the blood-colored avatar ran all the way up the stone stairs until it arrived in front of Small Buddha Temple without any accidents.

Small Buddha Temple was dilapidated. The sign on the door had already faded and the walls surrounding the temple were crumbling in many places.

Pushing open the dust-covered door, Zhou Wen saw the interior laden with dust. However, he was slightly taken aback.

He was prepared to battle a powerful dimensional creature, but he didn’t see any dimensional creature in the yard. There was only a stone monument in the middle of the yard.

Small Perfection of Wisdom Sutra? Zhou Wen couldn’t help but be somewhat perplexed when he identified the biggest words on the stone monument.

Large Perfection of Wisdom Sutra was well-known to many. It was a theoretical foundation of the Great Vehicle Buddhism. After the dimensional storms, a Buddhist figured out a Primordial Energy Art from it. Along with the Agama, it was ranked as the two greatest Primordial Energy Art in Buddhism. They were Primordial Energy Arts capable of the Epic stage, in no way inferior to the Li family’s Invincible Connate Divine Art.

However, Zhou Wen had never heard of the Small Perfection of Wisdom Sutra. This name sounded like a joke.

After getting the blood-colored avatar to approach it and carefully look at its contents, he immediately felt his mind groggy, with his head almost exploding.

This sutra is odd! Zhou Wen was alarmed. Just as he was about to cast his gaze away, he suddenly felt the Primordial Energy in his body slow down.

Ever since Zhou Wen cultivated the Lost Immortal Sutra, it would constantly flow without him needing to deliberately cultivate

it.

Now, the sudden slowdown of the Lost Immortal Sutra’s automatic circulation speed was unprecedented. However, after it slowed down, Zhou Wen felt his splitting headache seem to alleviate.

When Zhou Wen looked at the Small Perfection of Wisdom Sutra again, he no longer felt the discomfort.

He was surprised as he continued reading the sutra. He realized that the more of it he read, the slower the Lost Immortal Sutra’s circulation became.

There was just too much text on the monument, so before Zhou Wen could finish reading it, the screen went black—the blood-colored avatar had died.

Ah! Only then did Zhou Wen recall that he had Blood Meditation activated the entire time. By reading the sutra for an extended period of time, Blood Meditation had expended all his Primordial Energy and stopped circulating.

From the looks of it, Small Buddha Temple is just like the stairs. It has an odd force blanketing it. Without Blood Meditation to protect me, means death. If I had known earlier, I wouldn’t have read the Small Perfection of Wisdom Sutra, Zhou Wen thought.

Dripping a drop of blood and entering the Underground Buddha City dungeon again, Zhou Wen first headed for the lotus pond, planning to kill the Mutated Buddha Heart Lotus. It was best if a Companion Egg dropped and even if none dropped, a Primordial Energy Crystal was appreciated.

However, to his dismay, after spending plenty of effort, all that dropped was a 14-valued Strength Crystal when he finally killed the Mutated Buddha Heart Lotus.

When the blood-colored avatar picked up the Strength Crystal and absorbed it, its Strength stat didn’t grow. It remained at 10.

From the looks of it, even if I cultivate the Lost Immortal Sutra, the bottleneck of my realm remains. I’m unable to exceed the limitations of 10 points at the Mortal stage. Zhou Wen felt somewhat disappointed.

After killing all the Buddha Heart Lotuses and finally replenishing ten points of Primordial Energy, Zhou Wen headed for the Small Buddha Temple.

This time, Zhou Wen didn’t waste time at the stone monument. After entering the temple, he headed straight for the grand hall’s entrance.

The grand hall was already in a shambles. Its roof had mostly collapsed and its door was slanted, about to topple at any moment. There wasn’t any sign above the door, so the name of the hall was unknown.

The blood-colored avatar pushed the door, causing it to creak and fall into the hall. With a thud, it sent dust flying into the air.

Looking at the dust-laden hall, his eyes first noticed a Buddha statue.

Although the game had a cartoon version of a Buddha statue, it still shocked Zhou Wen. Buddha statues typically had genial looks and stately bearing. Only a few guardians had furious glares.

However, those kinds of deities would never be consecrated in the middle of the main hall. Yet, this Buddha statue wore a devil's expression. Although it didn't have a furious expression, it made Zhou Wen shudder. It seemed to be staring at him coldly.

Boom! Zhou Wen only managed to take one look because the blood-colored avatar exploded the moment it took a step into the hall. It reduced to a pool of blood and the game screen went black.

Zhou Wen broke out into a cold sweat. Small Buddha Temple sure is odd. Just one look can kill. Thankfully, I didn't head there with my real body; otherwise, no amount of lives could keep me alive. I wonder how those predecessors explored dimensional zones. Perhaps plenty of lives were sacrificed to attain what we have today.

Although Zhou Wen knew of stories of the tragic sacrifices when soldiers explored dimensional zones while in school, it was nowhere as shocking as experiencing it himself.

Zhou Wen then had another thought. After entering the hall, even Blood Meditation is useless. However, the temple has a stone monument with the Small Perfection of Wisdom Sutra. Perhaps it might be of some use. However, there's clearly a Primordial Energy Art and I've already cultivated Lost Immortal Sutra. I can't change my Primordial Energy Art and

this Small Buddha Temple is so odd. Who knows if that Primordial Energy Art has any problems.

After some hesitation, Zhou Wen decided to first memorize the sutra when entering the Small Buddha Temple.

As for taking pictures, that could be struck off. Ordinary phones couldn’t take pictures of the screen of the mysterious phone, so all Zhou Wen could do was memorize it himself.

The sutra was very long, but thankfully, it wasn’t like the Lost Immortal Sutra which made memorizing untenable. Zhou Wen memorized a few paragraphs each time and left Small Buddha Temple whenever the time was almost up. He would then head back in once he recovered his Primordial Energy.

After he had memorized the entire sutra, he realized that the sky had lit up. He had stayed up the entire night again.

Just as Zhou Wen remembered the last line of the sutra, Lost Immortal Sutra, which had nearly stopped circulating, suddenly circulated crazily.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 67 - Sudden Shackles

Chapter 67 Sudden Shackles

However, the circulatory path wasn’t that of the Lost Immortal Sutra, but a brand new one. It seemed as though he had completely switched Primordial Energy Arts.

Small Perfection of Wisdom Sutra? Zhou Wen immediately recalled that the Small Perfection of Wisdom Sutra he memorized followed such circulatory methods.

With the Primordial Energy’s circulation, Zhou Wen felt the cells in his body seem to come to life. His body burned and itched as though countless worms were crawling under his skin.

He resisted the urge to scratch himself, but in fact, he didn’t dare move. When the energy flowed into him according to the Lost Immortal Sutra, he could move freely, but the Small Perfection of Wisdom Sutra was different. The turbulent flowing of Primordial Energy made Zhou Wen afraid of moving, afraid that it would branch out wrongly.

After sitting on the sofa for quite some time, Zhou Wen felt his body jolt as though some shackle had been cleaved apart. His body relaxed indescribably as the hot and itchy feeling vanished.

Zhou Wen could sense that he had achieved initial mastery of the Small Perfection of Wisdom Sutra.

Opening his eyes and planning to look at his phone, Zhou Wen got a fright when he looked at his hands.

They were covered in lumps of peeled skin. He ripped off the skin without feeling any pain. In fact, it felt awesome.

Soon, Zhou Wen realized that it wasn’t just his hands. His entire body had shed a layer of skin. Large amounts of dead skin could be easily peeled off by him.

He had no choice but to head for the bathroom and soak himself in hot water. The dead skin on his body peeled off, revealing supple new skin that had a milky luster to it.

He looked at himself in the mirror after taking a bath. There weren’t any intrinsic differences other than he now looked more refreshed and cleaner.

Returning to the living room, he once again lost himself to gaming. After he saw the stats of the blood-colored avatar, he couldn’t help but be alarmed.

After cultivating the Lost Immortal Sutra, his four stats were at 10. It didn’t improve even if he absorbed dimensional crystals.

But now, his Constitution had raised to 11.

Zhou Wen subconsciously looked at the other stats which hadn’t changed. Even the listing of Primordial Energy Art remained as Lost Immortal Sutra. It didn’t have the addition of the Small Perfection of Wisdom Sutra.

What happened? Why didn’t the game indicate my mastering of the Small Perfection of Wisdom Sutra? Could it be that the game is unable to identify this kind of Primordial Energy Art? Zhou Wen felt puzzled as he attempted to circulate it and found it circulating as he wished. Clearly, he had gained some initial mastery of it.

He attempted to circulate the Lost Immortal Sutra and his Primordial Energy immediately circulated according to its pathway just as it had before without any changes.

Odd, what’s happening? Zhou Wen made a few more attempts and realized that he could freely switch between the Lost Immortal Sutra and Small Perfection of Wisdom Sutra without any difficulty.

Zhou Wen seldom heard of people cultivating two Primordial Energy Arts at the same time. Many Primordial Energy Skills could be learned, but Primordial Energy Arts involved too many things. Typically, the higher the grade of the arts, the more conflict they had, making it difficult to cultivate two at the same time. It was especially so with arts capable of the Epic stage. If one were to cultivate both, it was possible to suffer a deviation and end up dying

To be able to switch freely between two Primordial Energy Arts was something Zhou Wen had never seen before.

He was just about to attempt using the Small Perfection of Wisdom Sutra to enter the temple when he heard his phone ring.

“Zhou Wen, it’s about time. Let’s meet at the lotus pond,” Hui Haifeng’s voice sounded over the phone.

“Got it.” Zhou Wen looked at the time and realized that it was almost nine. Although he hadn’t taken a wink of sleep

the entire night, he was in no way tired.

He rushed to Underground Buddha City after packing up.

“Zhou Wen, you sure made us wait,” Gao Yang said in displeasure.

“I don’t think I was late, right?” Zhou Wen looked at the time. It was ten minutes to the agreed-upon time.

“Let’s not talk about that. Here’s the information on our Companion Beasts. Have a look.” Hui Haifeng handed Zhou Wen a tablet computer.

The information included the details of the four people’s four Companion Beast, including Hui Haifeng. There were even videos of the skills their Companion Beasts could release. It made it easy for Zhou Wen to understand what abilities they had.

After carefully taking in the information, Zhou Wen looked up and asked Hui Haifeng, “You plan to kill the blood-patterned Buddha Heart Lotus with the four Legendary Companion Beasts without joining the battle, right?”

“We only have one life after all. It’s best if we don’t take risks.” Hui Haifeng looked at Zhou Wen and said, “If four Companion Beasts aren’t enough, I can still think of other solutions.”

“As long as your control isn’t too poor, these four Companion Beasts should be enough. However, I have to make it clear. All of you have to obey my instructions. If any problems arise due to the disobedience of my instructions, I will not be responsible for anything. I will not refund the Companion Egg either,” Zhou Wen said.

“No problem. We’ll leave it all up to you.” Hui Haifeng was rather obliging.

“Alright then. Let me go through the detailed plan. However, a plan is ultimately a plan. When the actual battle happens, follow my orders.” Zhou Wen informed them of his plan.

Hui Haifeng and company didn’t raise any objections after hearing it. One of the girls named Nana looked at Zhou Wen with piqued interest and asked, “If we follow your instructions in battle, but end up failing to kill the blood-patterned Buddha Heart Lotus or have any losses, what will you do?”

“I’ll make compensation,” Zhou Wen said casually.

“Alright.” Nana was very pleased with his reply.

Zhou Wen pointed at the blood-patterned Buddha Heart Lotus and said, “If there are no other problems, let’s begin now,”

Hui Haifeng and company summoned their Legendary Companion Beasts—three of them were birds while Nana’s was a vine. According to the detailed information, this was a Water Wisteria at the Legendary stage. It could resist the lotus pond’s corrosive nature and could move in the water. It was a plant-based Companion Beast that was excellent at water combat.

Under Zhou Wen’s command, the four Companion Beasts charged into the lotus pond.

Many students were watching this battle. Although the battle involving Zhou Wen and Li Xuan was interesting, they had failed to kill the blood-patterned Buddha Heart Lotus.

This time, with Hui Haifeng participating, many students believed that there was a high possibility of slaying it.

Not far away, two of the university’s teachers were looking at the lotus pond.

“Miss Wang, do you think Hui Haifeng and the rest will succeed?” Liu Zhengyan looked at the four Companion Beasts rushing into the lotus pond and asked in passing.

“Zhou Wen and Li Xuan nearly succeeded the last time. This time, Li Xuan has been swapped with the stronger Hui Haifeng. The chance of victory is naturally higher,” Wang Fei said.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 68 - Commanding

Chapter 68 Commanding

“I don’t think so,” Liu Zhengyan said with a smile.

“Why?” Wang Fei asked, looking perplexed.

Anyone who had seen the video of Zhou Wen and Li Xuan’s fight with the blood-patterned Buddha Heart Lotus knew that they had the means to kill the blood-patterned Buddha Heart Lotus and were just short of the final strike.

Now, with four stronger people, it made no sense that they wouldn’t succeed.

“Watch this now.” Liu Zhengyan unlocked his phone and played a video.

“This is the blood-patterned Buddha Heart Lotus? It doesn’t seem to be the same one?” Wang Fei gave the video a look and immediately saw a few soldiers fighting the blood-patterned Buddha Heart Lotus via their Companion Beasts.

Liu Zhengyan said, “This is a blood-patterned Buddha Heart Lotus found by the military elsewhere in Underground Buddha City. They used five Legendary Companion Beasts but ended up with tragic losses. They were almost wiped out.”

“I didn’t know that.” Wang Fei was somewhat alarmed.

Liu Zhengyan skipped to the end of the video and let Wang Fei watch carefully. The final scene had twenty to thirty jets of blood spew out from the lotus receptacle.

Once they were hit by the blood, the flesh melted off the five Legendary Companion Beasts, plummeting them into the lotus pond amidst cries. None of them survived with an intact body.

“I never expected the blood-patterned Buddha Heart Lotus to have such an ability. Should we stop Hui Haifeng and the rest?” Wang Fei frowned after finishing the video.

Liu Zhengyan shook his head and said, “If we were to warn them now, who can warn them when they head to some unknown dimensional zone in an expedition? Cruel reality is the best teacher. Today, they will pay for the experience using only a few Companion Beasts. In the future, it might save their lives.”

Wang Fei nodded slightly. Liu Zhengyan was right-in school, the dimensional zones they encountered had all been explored by the military. The level of danger wasn’t too high, causing some students to think little of dimensional zones. It was also good to let them suffer a little.

“Mr. Liu, what’s your take on Zhou Wen?” Wang Fei’s gaze landed on Zhou Wen who was overseeing the battle.

“To be honest, although his performance with Li Xuan was very exciting, I still think more highly of Li Xuan when it comes to potential. After all, to go far, relying on talent and hard work isn’t enough. Besides, I’ve heard that Zhou Wen is engrossed in gaming. He might not amount to much.” Liu Zhengyan paused and looked at Wang Fei. “You are the teacher in charge of Zhou Wen’s class, right? I’m afraid it will be hard for you.”

Wang Fei nodded as she looked at the distant Zhou Wen with a deep, meaningful look. She muttered to herself, “I don’t think so. This Zhou Wen might be quite an interesting fellow.”

Under Zhou Wen’s commands, the four Companion Beasts besieged the blood-patterned Buddha Heart Lotus. Hui Haifeng and the other three followed his instructions and were good at controlling their Companion Beasts. Soon, they tore open the blood-patterned Buddha Heart Lotus’s petals and defeated the venomous toad.

After the toad exploded, the four controlled their Companion Beasts to charge at the blood-patterned Buddha Heart Lotus, hoping to slay it.

“Windchime Bird, Blood Raven, retreat ten meters. Water Wisteria, retreat fifteen meters. Crow Tengu, head left seven meters and shoot Crow Feathers,” Zhou Wen instructed.

Seeing that victory was at hand and that the blood-patterned Buddha Heart Lotus was about to die, the boy controlling the Blood Raven said in excitement, “Let me finish the final strike. Blood Raven, cast Blood Feather Storm!”

Hui Haifeng and Nana had followed Zhou Wen’s instructions and retreated the Companion Beasts they controlled. As for the boy, he didn’t make his Blood Raven retreat and instead launched the final strike.

Everything had gone too smoothly, so smoothly that he felt he could complete everything without the need for Zhou Wen.

As the blood feathers hit the lotus receptacle, it immediately riddled them with wounds. It seemingly cracked open as the

boy felt a sense of smugness when he heard a boom.

The lotus receptacle suddenly exploded as blood splattered out, instantly raining down.

The Companion Beasts of Hui Haifeng and the other two had already retreated according to Zhou Wen’s instructions. They reacted with great composure, retreating out of reach of the blood rain’s range in a timely fashion.

As for the Blood Raven, it was too close to the blood-patterned Buddha Heart Lotus since it hadn’t retreated ahead of time. It had no time to escape and it was drenched by the blood rain.

Gu!

The Blood Raven cried out tragically as most of its feathers rotted. It fell straight into the lotus pond, leaving all the other students drawing a cold gasp. The boy’s expression also turned nasty.

Zhou Wen didn’t say a thing as he continued commanding, “Windchime Bird, cast Primordial Energy Skill attack to attack the flower stalk. Crow Tengu, use Crow Feathers as cover. Water Wisteria, prepare to catch the lotus flower.”

Under Zhou Wen’s command, the trio successfully slew the blood-patterned Buddha Heart Lotus and dragged the damaged lotus flower out.

“Junior, not bad,” Nana said with a smile.

“Blood Raven’s death wasn’t my responsibility. I’m not making compensation,” Zhou Wen said.

The boy who controlled Blood Raven blushed as he said in embarrassment, “You don’t have to. I’m sorry, I was just too anxious. Zhou Wen, you were impressive. How did you know that the blood-patterned Buddha Heart Lotus still had such an internecine attack?”

“Faced with any dimensional creature, one has to view it with a sense of fear and reverence. Otherwise, you might end up paying with your life. I was only trying my best to prevent any accidents.” Zhou Wen randomly gave an excuse.

“I have to thank you or we would have really suffered terribly,” Hui Haifeng said with narrowed eyes. He didn’t mind the losses, but Zhou Wen’s performance had garnered his interest.

“I was paid so it was part and parcel of my job. If there’s nothing else, I’ll be heading back.” After Zhou Wen said that, he turned and left. The only thing on his mind was to head to Small Buddha Temple’s main temple and figure out what was inside. He really didn’t have the mood to say anything else.

Gao Yang watched Zhou Wen leave with mixed expressions. He always felt that Hui Haifeng’s hiring of Zhou Wen was superfluous, but now, he realized that without Zhou Wen, it was very likely that all four Companion Beasts would have died. It was better to lose a single Companion Egg

Liu Zhengyan also wore an odd look. “Strange, could it be that he has a relationship with the military and has seen that video?”

Wang Fei smiled and said, “Don’t you know that Zhou Wen’s staying at the Four Seasons Garden was arranged by the An family?”

“I see. No wonder.” Only then was Liu Zhengyan enlightened.

However, Wang Fei narrowed her eyes as she watched Zhou Wen leave. She still had something she didn’t say: Although Zhou Wen’s ties with the An family aren’t to be dismissed, this is definitely not obtained from the An family. How did this fellow do it? What an interesting chap. From the looks of it, I should delve deeper and treat it as helping Little Lan.

Zhou Wen returned to his dorm and eagerly launched the game on his phone, entering Underground Buddha City.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 69 - Strange Temple Hall

Chapter 69 Strange Temple Hall

Zhou Wen was already very familiar with Underground Buddha City. He rode on the Silver-Winged Flying Ant to the lotus pond at full speed before killing the Mutated Buddha Heart Lotus.

For others to kill the Mutated Buddha Heart Lotus, they needed to wait for one to travel through the dimensional rift; however, Zhou Wen simply needed to revive his blood-colored avatar and refresh the dungeon, allowing the game to reproduce a new Mutated Buddha Heart Lotus. He could practically kill it an infinite number of times.

Killing the Mutated Buddha Heart Lotus was extremely easy for Zhou Wen now. After following a standard set of steps, it was killed.

Ding! An item dropped out of the lotus accompanying the crisp, melodic chime.

A Companion Beast! Zhou Wen was overjoyed for he never expected it.

However, he was currently unable to incubate Legendary Companion Beasts. The thing he could do was use the blood-

colored avatar’s death to create an incomplete one just like the Silver-Winged Flying Ant.

There was little meaning to doing so. Zhou Wen already found it difficult enough to rear a single Silver-Winged Flying Ant, so another one would probably bankrupt him.

When the blood-colored avatar picked up the Buddha Heart Lotus, the system gave the fusion notification.

‘Mutated Buddha Heart Lotus and Silver-Winged Flying Ant have a compatibility score of 3%. Mutated Buddha Heart Lotus and Mutated Skeleton Ant have a compatibility score of 5%. Proceed with fusion?’

Fusion my ass. Zhou Wen felt depressed. The compatibility score was so low that the chance of a successful fusion was no different from striking the lottery. There was no need for him to take the risk.

If only I could take the Mutated Buddha Heart Lotus out of the game. Zhou Wen spent some time studying if it was possible, but there was no such function to be found.

However, Zhou Wen also realized that he couldn’t sell it if he brought it into reality. It would be difficult to explain how he had obtained a Mutated Buddha Heart Lotus Companion Egg.

Using the mysterious phone’s function, Zhou Wen directly checked the Companion Egg’s stats.

Mutated Buddha Heart Lotus: Legendary

Legendary Life Providence: Turbid Waters Clear Lotus

Strength: 15

Speed: 13

Constitution: 12

Primordial Energy: 18

Talent Skill: Blood-Patterned Buddha Aspect

Zhou Wen felt somewhat disappointed after seeing that. The Mutated Buddha Heart Lotus wasn't too terrible in stats compared to the typical Legendary Companion Beast; however, compared to how potent a Mutated Buddha Heart Lotus was, this Companion Beast's stats were nothing laudable.

It was especially so for the talent skills. The Mutated Buddha Heart Lotus should have four Primordial Energy Skills, but this one only had one. Clearly, these weren't the stats an excellent Companion Beast should have.

Zhou Wen had been somewhat hesitant in the beginning, but he no longer had any doubts now. He chose not to proceed with the fusion and fed the Mutated Buddha Heart Lotus to the Silver-Winged Flying Ant.

He originally imagined that the Silver-Winged Flying Ant wouldn't need to be fed after becoming an adult, but he soon realized that he was wrong. The Silver-Winged Flying Ant not only needed food, but it needed more than before.

After feeding the Mutated Buddha Heart Lotus to the Silver-Winged Flying Ant, there weren't any obvious changes other than the slightly hungry notification disappearing.

I can always wait till I have an excellent-grade Mutated Buddha Heart Lotus drop before incubating it. Zhou Wen

naturally wished to have a Mutated Buddha Heart Lotus Companion Beast with maximum stats.

After all, he had plenty of time to grind the Mutated Buddha Heart Lotus in the future, so getting one was only a matter of time and luck.

After slaying all the Buddha Heart Lotuses in the pond, he didn’t obtain any ordinary Buddha Heart Lotus Companion Eggs and headed straight for Small Buddha Temple.

After entering Small Buddha Temple, Zhou Wen switched his energy circulation from the Lost Immortal Sutra to the Small Perfection of Wisdom Sutra. Then, he controlled the blood-colored avatar to head into the temple hall.

The Buddha statue still wore a ferocious expression as it stared at the blood-colored avatar, but this time, the latter didn’t immediately die.

I’ve succeeded. The Small Perfection of Wisdom Sutra is really related to this temple hall. Zhou Wen was delighted as he continued proceeding forward with the blood-colored avatar. Finally, he saw what was inside the temple hall.

The temple hall had many Buddhist murals; however, they were different from the murals Zhou Wen had seen in the past. The murals here looked like scenes from hell.

There were ox-headed demons being thrown into boiling oil as well as bird-headed and human-bodied monsters having their tongues pulled out. There were also imps who were sawn into two. The entire temple appeared creepy and terrifying as though it was a punishment chamber in hell.

And the Buddha statue was very different from the typical one. Other than its ferocious face, it also had two other

faces.

It had three faces on one head, with the one facing Zhou Wen looking ferocious. As for the faces on the sides, the left one looked similar to the ordinary Buddha statue with a benevolent look and smile.

However, the right face was even stranger than the front-facing face. It was a crying face with bloody tears at the corner of its eyes. There was a sliver of melancholy amidst the ferociousness.

What Buddha is that? Zhou Wen was alarmed and puzzled, he had never heard of any three-faced Buddha in the little he knew of Buddhism.

The temple didn’t have a sign, nor were there any signs indicating the name of the Buddha statue. The entire hall was empty except for the Buddha. There weren’t any dimensional creatures either.

Amidst Zhou Wen’s puzzlement, he saw the Buddha statue’s six eyes light up with a golden glow. Then, the statue which appeared to be carved from stone slowly suffused a golden halo, making it appear gilded.

Zhou Wen was alarmed as he tried to get the blood-colored avatar to retreat. There was definitely something sinister due to the anomaly. Although death in-game wasn’t true death, Zhou Wen didn’t wish to waste a drop of blood.

However, before Zhou Wen could retreat out of the hall, the six eyes shone out like a torchlight, illuminating his body. Then, he saw the Buddha statue speak.

However, the words said were soundless. Instead, they appeared onscreen in text form.

‘My pious child, a Buddhist representative that walks the land, you shall earn the grace of Buddha. You can choose one of the three Buddhist-type creatures as your guardian.’

As the text appeared, the two arms of the Buddha statue’s gilded body raised up slowly. In his palms, swirls of light condensed and gradually formed three Companion Eggs.

The three Companion Eggs were resplendent with golden light as though they were emitting a strange Buddhistic glow.

That nice? A Companion Egg is given directly? Is it the same for the Small Buddha Temple in reality? Zhou Wen was alarmed as he carefully sized up the three Companion Eggs.

They were glowing with golden light as though protected by the Buddhistic glow. The only difference was the size, making it obvious that they were not the same Companion Beast.

Zhou Wen tried to use the phone to check the three Companion Eggs’ stats, but failed. All he could do was try his luck.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 70 - Three Choose One

Chapter 70 Three Choose One

With the naked eye, the three Companion Eggs were golden in color, but the three types of gold were different.

As this was in-game, Zhou Wen wasn’t able to tell how big the three Companion Eggs were. Using the blood-colored avatar as a comparison, the biggest Companion Egg was about half a person’s height. Not only did it have a golden Buddha glow swirling around it, but there was even a scarlet hue amidst the golden glow. Although its temperature couldn’t be felt, the huge egg seemed to be scorching hot inside.

The leftmost Companion Egg was the smallest. It was about the size of the blood-colored avatar’s fingertip. It was also golden, but the Companion Egg was crystalline like a golden opal.

The middle Companion Egg was about the size of a soccer ball. It looked like it was tempered with gold and its outer shell was filled with rugged patterns. They looked like Buddhist scriptures that Zhou Wen couldn’t understand.

Which one should I choose? Zhou Wen sized up the three Companion Eggs, having been thrown into a dilemma.

Although he could sense the same sensory feelings as the blood-colored avatar, he wasn’t able to tell which was better from its vision.

‘My child, choose by following your heart. There’s no need to hesitate.’ The strange three-faced Buddha spoke again. And again, it appeared in text form.

Zhou Wen thought for a while and realized that there was nothing to be hesitant about. He had never heard of the three Companion Eggs before and had nothing to base his judgment on. He might as well choose one that caught his fancy and leave the rest to fate.

With this in mind, Zhou Wen didn’t hesitate further. He got the blood-colored avatar to reach out to grab the smallest of the three Companion Eggs.

The small Companion Egg appeared like a golden crystal in the blood-colored avatar’s hand. Immediately, the Buddhistic glow emitted.

‘Obtained Mythical Companion Egg, Truth Listener. Automatically incubating…’

“F**k… You are going to kill me…” Zhou Wen immediately cried out as he threw the mysterious phone out of his hand.

A Mythical Companion Egg was very strong and impressive, but Zhou Wen knew himself. With his Primordial Energy, just incubating a Legendary Companion Egg was enough to suck him dry, much less a Mythical Companion Egg.

Unfortunately, Zhou Wen wasn’t fast with the throwing. A terrifying force surged out from the phone and instantly sucked dry Zhou Wen’s Primordial Energy.

11 points of Primordial Energy was pathetic. Zhou Wen instantly felt drained and that wasn’t all. His blood seemed to be sucked by a water pump, gathering towards his ten fingers.

The tips of his fingers burst as ten spouts of blood spewed onto the phone, and instantly, the phone sucked it clean.

I’m doomed. Am I going to be the first college student in the new era to die gaming? This thought flashed across his mind, but the suction force from the phone vanished the next second.

Zhou Wen’s fingers finally regained their freedom. They no longer had blood gushing out. At the same time, a strange golden pattern appeared on his left ear.

The golden pattern resembled a symbol that tattooed itself on the back of his left concha. It gave him a warm, fuzzy feeling in his left ear.

I actually incubated a Mythical Companion Egg? Zhou Wen couldn’t believe the outcome for it was too unbelievable.

A Legendary Silver-Winged Flying Ant Companion Egg was enough to kill the blood-colored avatar, but the Mythical Companion Egg didn’t blast it apart. It only sucked dry all of Zhou Wen’s Primordial Energy and a portion of his blood. This didn’t seem to match the status of a Mythical Companion Beast.

After Zhou Wen incubated Truth Listener, the two other Companion Eggs in the three-faced Buddha’s hands disappeared. The resplendent Buddha statue that emitted a Buddhistic glow also slowly converged its glow and was restored to its original stone form. It no longer spoke or did anything.

Zhou Wen hurriedly checked Truth Listener's stats to confirm whether it was really a Mythical Companion Beast.

Truth Listener: Mortal (Evolvable)

Strength: 11

Speed: 11

Constitution: 11

Primordial Energy: 11

Talent Skill: Truth Listener, Indestructible Golden Body, Evil Warding, Nine Extremes

Companion Form: Earring

Zhou Wen's eyes nearly popped out. Truth Listener wasn't at the Mythical stage but at the Mortal stage. However, Zhou Wen had never really heard of a Mortal Companion Beast with 11 for all its stats.

Furthermore, it had four talent skills. This was already the maximum number of talent skills a Companion Beast could have.

The system's notification said that it was at the Mythical stage, but why is the incubated result at the Mortal stage? Could it be related to the evolvable trait? But how do I evolve it? Don't tell me it's like the Silver-Winged Flying Ant-evolving by eating Companion Eggs? Zhou Wen didn't dare to stay in the temple any longer, worried that something bad might happen.

After leaving, he circled Small Buddha Temple and realized that it lived up to its name-it was really small. Apart from the

temple hall, there weren’t any other temples, but it was possible that the collapsed rubble had covered the other areas of the compound.

Zhou Wen didn’t find anything after circling Small Buddha Temple once. The three-faced Buddha didn’t react when he entered the temple again.

All he could do was leave and quit the game. Only then did he dare summon Truth Listener.

Small Buddha Temple was just too odd. Even in the game, Zhou Wen didn’t dare mess around in there.

Zhou Wen wasn’t a stranger to the name Truth Listener’; in fact, he knew it well.

In Buddhist myths and legends, Truth Listener was the mount of Kṣitigarbha Bodhisattva. Legend has it that it was manifested from a white dog and had the ability to know all that happened in the world. It was also extremely loyal.

In Journey to the West, the six-eared Macaque had impersonated Sun Wukong and no deity was able to distinguish between them. Although Truth Listener could tell them apart, it didn’t dare speak it out loud.

Don’t tell me this fellow is really the legendary Truth Listener? Zhou Wen felt somewhat expectant.

However, after Truth Listener was summoned, Zhou Wen was left somewhat depressed. It wasn’t a white dog but a golden-silk monkey the size of a palm.

Its golden fur resembled golden silk and its eyes resembled two golden gems. It looked extremely adorable, but it was just too small.

This fellow is Truth Listener? Zhou Wen found it somewhat unbelievable.

This mini-figure stood at opposite ends with those terrifying stats. They didn’t seem connected at all.

Zhou Wen tried Truth Listener’s companion form and immediately, it turned into a golden earring behind Zhou Wen’s left ear.

He felt his ear quiver suddenly as though whatever blockage in his ear had been pulled out. His hearing became clear, many times sharper than his normal hearing. What he couldn’t hear before could now be heard very clearly.

“Uh!” A woman’s moan suddenly sounded in Zhou Wen’s ear, making him feel somewhat odd. When he glanced at the direction it came, he realized it was from his neighbor.

And his neighbor was that proud and cold, somewhat crazy, An Jing.

That’s not right. The buildings here should have special soundproofing features. Even those with hearing Primordial Energy Skills can’t hear things through the walls, so how am I hearing what’s happening next door? Don’t tell me that Truth Listener boosts my hearing ability this much? Zhou Wen thought.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 71 - Sick

Chapter 71 Sick

Painful moaning kept sounding from next door. Zhou Wen frowned slightly as he hesitated whether to take a look.

But when he considered how An Jing was an unreasonable person, he decided it was best not to have anything to do with her. Besides, they were on campus with the most advanced hospital attached to it. If An Jing really was in trouble, she was a phone call away from having a doctor rush over to rescue her.

Zhou Wen was just about to take off the Truth Listener earring when he heard a thud as though something heavy had fallen to the ground.

When the sound reached Zhou Wen’s left ear, a blurry scene of An Jing falling to the ground from a great height appeared in his mind. The scene vanished almost as quickly as it came when it was silent next door.

Don’t tell me that something really happened to An Jing? Although Zhou Wen wasn’t too concerned with An Jing, he didn’t have a blood feud with her. On the account of her mother, Ouyang Lan, he couldn’t just watch as she died.

After some hesitation, Zhou Wen decided to head next door to take a look.

Washing his face and walking out of the building, he jumped over the low wooden fence and stood in front of An Jing’s door and pressed the bell that came equipped with a

camera.

Zhou Wen believed that if An Jing could reply, it meant that she was okay. He could then return to gaming.

However, if no one replied, it definitely meant that something had gone wrong. He couldn’t just sit idle; after all, he had a basic sense of compassion. He would call emergency services even for a stranger.

After pressing the doorbell once, he didn’t hear any response as the building was silent. Zhou Wen used the ring on his left ear to listen carefully, but still failed to hear any sounds inside. There weren’t any footsteps either.

Don’t tell me something really happened? Zhou Wen frowned slightly. To make sure, he repeatedly pressed the doorbell, but silence was the only response.

From the looks of it, something really happened. Without any hesitation, Zhou Wen began looking carefully at the building.

The door had a keypad door lock and it was made of special materials. It wasn’t easy to smash through the door. If he couldn’t enter, he planned on reporting it to the school.

Shifting his glance up, he realized that the special tempered glass sliding door on the second-floor balcony was closed but not locked. He leaped up to the balcony, opened the sliding door and entered the building.

The buildings in Four Seasons Garden were identical. Zhou Wen rushed straight for the bedroom with great familiarity.

Fortunately, the problem happened in the bedroom. If something untoward had happened in the cultivation room, I'll probably have to report it to the school authorities. I wonder if they will be in time to save her though. Zhou Wen opened the unlocked door and entered.

What welcomed him was An Jing in bed, her face shockingly pale. Her eyes were closed as she gritted her teeth tightly. She was profusely sweating and her body appeared stiff. She didn't look like she was in a good condition.

"What's wrong with you?" Zhou Wen walked forward and crouched down beside An Jing. He then pinched the bottom of her nose.

However, An Jing wished she were dead. Due to her physique, she had been diagnosed with a strange illness. She had periodic relapses that would leave her body in excruciating pain. In serious cases, her entire body would go numb and she would remain motionless.

Thankfully, this strange illness was like a woman's period. It came rather punctually and An Jing could expect when it would happen. During those periods of time, she would stay in her room to silently endure the pain until it

was over.

Today, she had planned to stay in bed to silently endure the pain just like she usually did. But this episode was worse than normal, so she couldn't help but let out a soft, painful moan. This was heard by Zhou Wen wearing Truth Listener as an earring.

Due to the pain, An Jing fell from the bed while rolling about. The fall made her body stiff and motionless, but she remained lucid.

She had also heard Zhou Wen pressing the doorbell. She believed that he would leave without any response, but to her surprise, he had barged in by jumping into her balcony.

An Jing felt deep regret for not locking the sliding door.

In fact, she wasn’t to be blamed. They were in Sunset College after all. Only students were admitted inside and there were surveillance cameras everywhere. Since no one knew of her physical problem, they wouldn’t dare barge into her room.

When Zhou Wen walked towards the bedroom, An Jing kept enduring the pain while praying that he wouldn’t enter. This was because she was only wearing a nightgown.

A symptom of each episode was profuse sweating, so there was a need to change her clothes. To reduce the trouble, she changed into a nightgown.

Furthermore, An Jing’s current position was rather unbecoming due to her fall. Having received etiquette lessons from a young age, she couldn’t accept others seeing her in that pose, especially Zhou Wen who she treated as her enemy.

He clearly didn’t think too much about it. He treated her as a patient and asked while pinching her nose. “Can you hear me? Can

you?”

An Jing opened her eyes and glared at Zhou Wen, but that was all she could do. At this moment, her pain had already reached its climax. Her body was stiff and her entire body was trembling. Even her teeth were chattering, so she had no strength to speak.

“Don’t worry. I’ll call the doctor for you.” Zhou Wen felt relieved when he saw her open her eyes. Since she wasn’t dead, there was likely a chance of treating her.

He didn’t hesitate and took out his ordinary phone and called the school’s emergency number to get the hospital to send a doctor over.

As a student of Four Seasons Garden, the perks they enjoyed were pretty good. They also had the best medical facilities.

An Jing fumed with anxiety when she saw him about to call the hospital. Her ailment wasn’t something an ordinary doctor could treat, so visiting the hospital was pointless. Otherwise, with the An family’s resources, she would have received the best treatment from the best doctors and hospitals in the League.

What made her feel most unacceptable was that she wore a nightgown that only covered half her thigh. Also, her hair was disheveled. She couldn’t accept letting other students see her in this state if she were carried out by the medical team.

Although she knew that he was doing it out of goodwill, An Jing couldn’t help but grit her teeth in anger.

With Zhou Wen about to make the phone call, An Jing tried hard to regain control of her body. With immense willpower,

she shouted through chattering teeth, “D… Don’t call… I’m fine…”

An Jing was drained of all her strength by the time she said those words. Her face was even paler and her voice was intensely trembling. She almost couldn’t hear what was being said.

Thankfully, Zhou Wen was wearing the Truth Listener earring and could hear her clearly. However, he looked at her painful expression in a doubtful manner and said, “You don’t seem fine. If you’re sick, you need treatment. You shouldn’t hide your ailment and not take medical advice. Relax and leave the rest to the doctors…”

An Jing was in despair. Thankfully, her pain had already climaxed and she was now feeling a lot better. Enduring the stabbing pain, she said harshly, “I’m really fine. Leave.”

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 72 - Blood Replenishment Tea

Chapter 72 Blood Replenishment Tea

“You don’t look fine.” Zhou Wen thought and said in enlightenment, “Are you afraid that I’ll take this opportunity to seek revenge? Don’t worry. Although I don’t think too highly of you, I wouldn’t harm you on account of Sister Lan and my dad. I’m just calling for a doctor.”

With that said, Zhou Wen continued calling the emergency hotline.

An Jing burned with anxiety and embarrassment as she shouted once more, “There’s no need. Really, there’s no need. I… I… I was having menstrual cramps… I’ll be fine after some rest… Leave… Don’t disturb my rest…”

An Jing had given that reason because she couldn’t think of anything else. She just wanted him to leave.

“I see. I’ve heard that women can be in great pain a few days a month, but I never expected it to be this bad.” Zhou Wen had lived alone from a young age and he didn’t have a mother Thus, he had little contact with women. When he was a little older, he began cultivating and hadn’t ever had a girlfriend. He knew almost nothing about such matters.

Although he remained suspicious, Zhou Wen believed that it was unlikely that she would play games with her life.

“I’m really sorry. I’ll leave now,” Zhou Wen said in embarrassment before he turned to leave An Jing’s room.

An Jing heaved a sigh of relief when she saw him leave. The pain she was experiencing also seemed to lessen significantly.

“Women sure have it tough. Fortunately, I’m a man. I don’t have to endure such pain every month,” Zhou Wen mumbled to himself as he returned to his residence.

However, on second thought, he realized that he had it tough as well. He had endless noise blaring into his ears like an irritating chant when he slept. He also had to lose large amounts of blood daily. It was especially so this time. To incubate Truth Listener, he had lost at least 500-600 cc of blood. He didn’t have it good either.

I bought some brown sugar and wolfberries last time, and I’ve no idea if it will work. I might as well cook some to give it a try. My anemia has been pretty terrible recently. Zhou Wen scratched his forehead and thought to himself.

Returning to his room, Zhou Wen forgot the matter of making the blood-replenishment drink as he continued grinding.

This time, Zhou Wen entered the Ancient Imperial City dungeon. After killing the Skeleton General, he had a Skeleton General Companion Egg drop.

However, the stats weren’t comparable to the first one in every aspect. Zhou Wen directly fed it to the Silver-Winged

Flying Ant. As for Truth Listener, as there weren’t any hunger notifications, Zhou Wen didn’t know if it needed to be fed.

Switching to the Underground Buddha City, he no longer had any need to explore the Small Buddha Temple again since he had finished covering the area. He had slain the Mutated Buddha Heart Lotus in the lotus pond and it hadn’t spawned again.

Zhou Wen skipped the lotus pond and ventured deep into Underground Buddha City.

In the midst of his travels, he saw a few lotus ponds, but not every one of them had a Mutated Buddha Heart Lotus. After spending an entire day, only one ordinary Buddha Heart Lotus Companion Egg dropped.

Although the stats were relatively ordinary, it was a heart-type Companion Beast. Zhou Wen incubated it, planning on using its companion form to temporarily allow his heart to continue functioning if it was ever damaged.

After so many sleepless nights, Zhou Wen finally couldn’t take it. He switched off his phone and slept through to the next morning. Only then did Zhou Wen get up to cook the supplements, making a pot of brown-sugar, wolfberry tea.

“Zhou Wen, are you up? Today is matriculation day. Come on out and walk around.” Just as Zhou Wen finished brewing his tea, Li Xuan called.

“What’s there to see?” Zhou Wen asked curiously.

“Today’s the matriculation day for the freshmen. Many clubs in school are recruiting freshmen. We can also take a look,” Li Xuan said with a chuckle.

“I have no interest in joining any clubs.” Zhou Wen poured a cup of blood-replenishing tea and drank it.

“You don’t have to join one. You can take a look at all those beautiful female juniors and seniors.” Li Xuan revealed his true motives.

“Not interested.” Zhou Wen still planned on exploring Underground Buddha City.

“Don’t be so cold. There are benefits. The school will assign missions and most of them need to be completed by a team. The seniors already have their own teams. If we want to make a new team, we will have to recruit from the freshmen. To walk around now is also to prepare for the future…”

Li Xuan gave plenty of reasons that irritated Zhou Wen so much that he agreed to walk around campus.

After drinking a huge bowl of tea, Zhou Wen filled up a thermos and walked out of his place.

It just so happened that An Jing walked out at the same time. She couldn’t help but grit her teeth when she saw him. However, she was slightly taken aback when she saw the glass thermos in his hand.

She recognized it. There were wolfberries and other supplements in it and it was obvious that it was brewed with brown sugar. Her servants had previously prepared it for her.

Do you think you can bribe me with a cup of brown-sugared water? Men almost never drank this and after what happened yesterday, An Jing imagined that he had brewed it for her, hoping to warm up his relationship with her.

Although she had this in mind, the look in her eyes softened. She found Zhou Wen rather thoughtful and sensitive.

When Zhou Wen walked out of his yard, An Jing came out as well. He needed to walk past her to leave the compound.

She watched as Zhou Wen walked over, wondering if she should accept it if he were to give it to her.

Amidst her thoughts, he arrived in front of her and saw An Jing looking at him. He nodded at her gently as a greeting.

An Jing imagined that Zhou Wen was about to give her the tea when he nodded at her. She turned her head away slightly, waiting for him to hand it over.

To her surprise, Zhou Wen just walked past her with the thermos in hand. He had no intention of walking towards her. Furthermore, he even drank a mouthful while walking off.

“It seems to be a little too sweet,” Zhou Wen muttered to himself after taking one mouthful.

An Jing’s face burned as her eyes nearly spewed flames.

Zhou Wen hadn’t paid any attention to her and walked straight out of Four Seasons Garden.

Why don’t you die from an overdose drinking something like that! An Jing clenched her teeth hatefully as she looked at his departing figure.

Today was matriculation day. However, Sunset College was unlike the typical school. There wasn’t any welcome ceremony or many decorations. Apart from the crowds, it didn’t seem any different from usual.

On the two sides of the road, there were two rows of tables neatly placed. There were banners and signs placed in front of themrecruitment notices of the school’s clubs.

Sunset College encouraged them to set up clubs, hoping that it could increase cooperation between students, especially when they entered dimensional zones to complete missions.

“Zhou Wen, I’m here.” Just as Zhou Wen was looking around, he heard Li Xuan’s voice from a particular club’s recruitment booth.

He looked over and found Li Weiyang and Li Xuan standing together, the former waving her hand at him.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 73 - Matriculation Day

Chapter 73 Matriculation Day

“Zhou Wen, are you interested in joining the Weiyang Club?” Li Weiyang winked at him. “Members of our Weiyang Club are basically all women. Many of them are beautiful female seniors.”

Zhou Wen didn’t reply as Li Xuan yelled, “Sis, that’s not fair. How can you snatch him from me? However, it’s useless even if you try. Zhou Wen and I are establishing a new club. He won’t join your Weiyang Club.”

Li Weiyang curled her lips and said, “That depends on whether Zhou Wen is willing to establish a new club with you. Sisters, let’s show our Weiyang Club’s strength to our junior.”

The row of female students behind-all contending in beauty and fascination-began putting up all kinds of sexy, mesmerizing, and adorable poses. They were like flowers in full bloom.

“A honey trap!? Sis, that’s against the rules!” Li Xuan protested as he salivated.

“It’s called the reasonable usage of available resources.” Li Weiyang ignored Li Xuan’s protests as she smiled at Zhou

Wen. “How about it? Consider joining the Weiyang Club. I won’t treat you shabbily.”

Zhou Wen shook his head. “I’ve already told Li Xuan I’d set up a new club with him.”

Li Weiyang was somewhat helpless after he declined her invitation. “Alright then, but I hope that your new club can ally with our Weiyang Club. We can always complete missions together if an opportunity arises.”

“No problem. Absolutely no problem,” Li Xuan agreed immediately, his gaze wandering across the bodies of the female students of Weiyang Club.

“What are you looking at? Little Virgin?” Li Weiyang mocked Li Xuan. After saying bye to Zhou Wen, she led the girls to recruit other freshmen.

Li Xuan chuckled and said, “Zhou Wen, you missed an excellent opportunity. The Weiyang Club usually only recruits female students. You almost became their only male member. You missed a chance of being an emperor.”

However, Zhou Wen thought nothing of it. He looked around and said, “When can we establish the club? Can we begin recruiting members now? If we don’t do it now, the better freshmen might all be taken.”

The other clubs were recruiting freshmen, but Li Xuan didn’t seem prepared at all.

He said helplessly, “This is also beyond our control. Freshmen can only apply to set up a club one month after matriculation. Also, you will need to have at least five students before you can make the application. The typical student will choose to join existing clubs, so it will make it

quite difficult for us to set up a new one. However, we wouldn’t be under the mercy of others or care about other older members.”

Zhou Wen nodded. That was one of the reasons he hadn’t joined the Weiyang Club.

If possible, he’d rather not join any club. Gaming alone in peace was much better than joining any club.

Zhou Wen looked at the freshmen entering from the school’s main gates when he was suddenly taken aback. He saw two familiar figures.

One of them was a tall girl and the other was a boy of medium stature. They were none other than Fang Ruoxi and Tian Xiangdong.

The duo also saw Zhou Wen. They walked over with backpacks. Tian Xiangdong even greeted him in a rather triumphant manner. “Zhou Wen, you never expected to see us here,

right?”

“I never expected the two of you to be admitted into Sunset College.” Zhou Wen was really surprised. The League had plenty of universities and Sunset College wasn’t the best choice. Yet, the duo had chosen to study here.

Fang Ruoxi looked at the clubs around and asked Zhou Wen, “Zhou Wen, have you chosen a club?”

“Babe, Zhou Wen and I plan on setting up our own club. Join us. I’ll make you vice chairwoman.” Li Xuan posed handsomely and hit on Fang Ruoxi.

“Alright,” Fang Ruoxi replied with a smile.

Li Xuan never expected her to answer so quickly, leaving him stunned. Then, he said bashfully, “However, we are all freshmen. We will only be able to apply for the club in one month. Babe, if you are in a rush, you can always take a look at the established clubs.”

Li Xuan might speak bombastically, but he was a genuine virgin. Furthermore, he was a virgin who didn’t dare lose his virginity.

“There’s no need. I’ll wait till your new club is established,” Fang Ruoxi said firmly as she stole a glance at Zhou Wen.

“Zhou Wen, you sure are fortunate,” Li Xuan patted Zhou Wen on the shoulder and said with a smile.

He naturally could tell that Fang Ruoxi was only joining because of Zhou Wen.

“Zhou Wen, I’m really sorry about what happened. Please believe me that nothing like that will ever happen again.” Fang Ruoxi was naturally referring to her sudden quitting of the team during the college entrance exams.

“No worries. It wasn’t your fault.” Zhou Wen didn’t take it to heart.

He always believed that since Fang Ruoxi and Tian Xiangdong were unrelated to him, it was only normal for them to quit.

Tian Xiangdong hurriedly said with a smile, “That’s right. We really had no choice. Now that we are at Sunset College, we have a promising future. We don’t have to worry that much

anymore. We guarantee you that nothing like that will happen again.’

Zhou Wen didn’t speak further. Things were always unpredictable. No one knew the future, so any guarantee now was without meaning.

“Since we are all former schoolmates, I’ll take you to the matriculation booth,” Li Xuan introduced as he walked. “Sunset College is different from the other schools. There are very few protocols and ceremonies. There aren’t any welcoming ceremonies or matriculation ceremonies for freshmen. Just register at the matriculation booth and be assigned to your dorm. Classes start tomorrow. By the way, I forgot to tell you, the first class of the first day at Sunset College is a combat test. Freshmen will be sent into dimensional zones to hunt dimensional creatures. Make sure you are mentally prepared.”

“Where will be the test? Buddha City?” Zhou Wen asked in surprise.

“Of course not. Buddha City was only recently discovered. It isn’t fully under control, so they won’t send freshmen to take risks. Based on past experience, they will go to one of the four relatively safer dimensional zones on campus. Every freshman just needs to kill one dimensional creature to complete the mission. The more killed, the better the results,” Li Xuan said.

“What’s the point in that?” Zhou Wen asked.

“Count it as a way to benchmark. Although you can be admitted into Sunset College and everyone is a top student in their various high schools, everyone’s abilities are varied. Such a test allows the teachers to understand their true

strength. Secondly, it’s also to create a ranking of the freshmen,” Li Xuan explained.

“What’s the freshmen ranking?” Tian Xiangdong asked out of curiosity.

“A results ranking. The higher the ranking, the more resources the school will provide. Consider it a reward system.” Li Xuan looked at Zhou Wen and continued, “If this were in the past, Zhou Wen would have had the chance to enter the top three, but there are just too many strong freshmen this year. Just An Jing alone, who advanced to the Legendary stage two to three years ago, makes her a definite first in the rankings.”

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 74 - Dimensional Forum

Chapter 74 Dimensional Forum

After Fang Ruoxi and Tian Xiangdong had finished matriculation and were taken to their dorms, Zhou Wen returned to his. He wasn’t too interested in such activities.

Just as he reached Four Seasons Garden, he saw a few students walking in with their luggage in tow. Clearly, the special admissions students had arrived and were beginning to move in.

Zhou Wen wasn’t interested in them. He naturally didn’t care what they looked like. He walked to the row of buildings at the back of Four Seasons Garden with his head bowed.

Just as he reached the last row, he saw a girl standing in front of the other building, opening the door with her dorm key.

“Hello there. My name is Wang Lu. You live next door, right? We will be neighbors in the future,” the girl greeted Zhou Wen in a friendly manner.

“I’m Zhou Wen.” Zhou Wen replied before entering his dorm.

This guy is odd. As expected of special admissions students. Do all of them have such a character? Wang Lu was curious.

Zhou Wen returned to his room and used his phone to enter Ant Nest.

Previously, he had encountered a bottleneck at Ant Nest. After entering, his strength hadn’t allowed him to progress deeper. Now with the Silver-Winged Flying Ant evolving to an adult state, he planned on giving it another try.

Ant City was identical to before. It looked mysterious and bizarre. The ants were coming in and out of their nests and many of the black-winged flying ants were flying around.

He controlled the blood-colored avatar and stayed far away from the City, sending Silver-Winged Flying Ant to fly over alone.

The adult Silver-Winged Flying Ant’s stats made it a pinnacle existence among Legendary Companion Beasts. With a flap of its four wings, it flew directly towards Ant City.

The black-winged flying ants immediately discovered it and rushed at it while flapping their black wings. The black swarm looked rather frightening.

The Silver-Winged Flying Ant moved like lightning as it used its stinger to shoot Magical Needle, tearing through the head of the black-winged flying ant that charged headfirst. It then plummeted.

The Silver-Winged Flying Ant didn’t stop as it shot into the ant swarm like a silver bolt of lightning

‘Killed Black-Winged Soldier Ant. Discovered dimensional crystal.’

Zhou Wen saw a dimensional crystal drop due to the black-winged flying ant’s death, but he was unable to pick it up

due to the distance.

If the blood-colored avatar were to rush into the Ant City’s vicinity, it would suffer an attack. With his present strength, it would be difficult for him to survive the black-winged flying ant swarm.

He kept watching as chimes kept ringing. Many dimensional crystals dropped, but Zhou Wen didn’t dare pick them up. He felt quite depressed as a result.

mo

The Silver-Winged Flying Ant could hardly move amidst the black-winged flying ant swarm. Although he slew a lot, there were just too many of them. The Silver-Winged Flying Ant was constantly in peril with the chances of it being overwhelmed by the ant swarm at any time.

Damn it. There are too many ants and they are Legendary creatures. The Silver-Winged Flying Ant can’t rush in at all. Zhou Wen thought of getting the Silver-Winged Flying Ant to rush out, but it was already too late. Surrounded, it could only fight the black-winged flying ants that inundated it, the injuries it suffered increasing.

Ding!

Another black-winged flying ant was killed, dropping a black-winged flying ant dimensional crystal-a black-winged flying ant’s Primordial Energy Skill Crystal.

I’ll risk it! Zhou Wen looked at the copious numbers of dimensional crystals strewn across the ground. He could hold back, but upon seeing the Primordial Energy Skill Crystal, he couldn’t hold back any longer.

He sent the blood-colored avatar to rush to the periphery of Ant City without any hesitation, summoning the Mutated Skeleton Ant and Truth Listener to distract the swarm.

The black-winged flying ants quickly noticed him. Before he could arrive near the dimensional crystal, massive numbers of them rushed over.

The Mutated Skeleton Ant tried to lead a number away, but it was only a Mortal Companion Beast. It died almost instantly under the Legendary creature horde.

Using this brief moment, he leaped up and rushed towards the spot where the dimensional crystal dropped. He had his eyes fixed on the black-winged flying ant crystal.

The Silver-Winged Flying Ant also died at this moment from the barrage of attacks. Its bleeding carcass fell and large numbers of black-winged flying ants turned around and rushed for the blood-colored avatar.

Let me pick it up! Zhou Wen controlled the blood-colored avatar and used his greatest Speed and Strength to grab that black-winged flying ant crystal.

However, when its fingers were two feet away from the crystal, a large swarm of black-winged flying ants had rushed over, drowning it.

Thankfully this is in-game. If I had done that in real life, death would have been a certainty. Zhou Wen looked at the black screen and wore a bitter smile.

Dying without gaining anything in return was something Zhou Wen was already used to. Recently, he seldom died, unlike the period when he had first obtained the mysterious phone.

Dripping a drop of blood to revive himself, Zhou Wen entered the game once more. However, he knew that his strength was still lacking if he wanted to charge into Ant City. Therefore, he headed for Underground Buddha City.

Zhou Wen wished to visit Small Buddha Temple and see if he could make the selection again with the dungeon refreshed, hoping to get another Mythical Companion Egg.

However, he was disappointed when he entered. Even though Small Buddha Temple had been respawned, he wasn't able to trigger the scene with the three-faced Buddha.

From the looks of it, I can only obtain one Mythical Companion Egg in-game. I wonder if visiting it in real life will allow me to trigger the three-face Buddha's gift of a Companion Egg. Although Zhou Wen was somewhat tempted, he didn't wish to take the risk and finally eliminated the thought.

To obtain the three-faced Buddha's Companion Egg, I apparently need to first master the Small Perfection of Wisdom Sutra or death is certain. Those soldiers do not know this secret, so I'm afraid there will be many sacrifices. Zhou Wen had the intention of telling this secret to the scouts who explored Underground Buddha City; thus, reducing their losses. However, firstly, he didn't have the chance to interact with these soldiers and secondly, he had no way of explaining how he knew that.

Suddenly, Zhou Wen's eyes lit up as he muttered, "Since I can't tell them directly, I can post the strategy guide of Underground Buddha City on the League's Dimensional Forum. This way, I can receive the official's reward and also prevent those soldiers from making sacrifices in vain."

The League had always been encouraging its citizens to write out their thoughts and experiences regarding dimensional zones. For this, it had specially set up a server and an official Dimensional Forum.

Posting dimensional zone strategies on the forum could be set as paid articles. It was even possible for the officials to buy the rights and use it as teaching material in textbooks.

To ensure that the poster didn’t have any hesitation in writing these, the Dimensional Forum used a completely independent server and high-security measures. Unless it was voted by Congress, no one could check the data of the Dimensional Forum.

For this, the League had clearly set up a guarantee by law. It was to prevent experts who didn’t wish to expose themselves to freely write their strategies on the forum.

The League had many powerhouses who had the habit of browsing the Dimensional Forum. The typical citizen also treated it as a resource database.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 75 - Fire God Platform

Chapter 75: Fire God Platform

Translator:CKtalon

Editor:CKtalon

Zhou Wen didn't rush to post on the Dimensional Forum; instead, he first took a look at the other threads on it.

The threads mainly had three different kinds of monetization methods.

The first kind was a thread that provided a free strategy. Such threads didn't require payment when reading. According to the number of clicks, the officials would pay a certain number of Dimensional Points in a particular ratio.

Of course, if the reader count was very low, one wouldn't be able to earn many Dimensional Points. 10,000 clicks were probably only enough to earn 1 Dimensional Point.

Dimensional Points was the point system of the Dimensional Forum. It couldn't be spent like money or be withdrawn. However, it could be used to exchange items at the Dimensional Forum's official shop. Dimensional crystals and Companion Eggs were options for exchange and different items required a different number of points.

Exchanging for an item only required a mailing address. Receipt of the goods was done with a password without any need for identification.

The second kind of thread was monetized threads. Such threads could be read by paying. The price was determined

by the poster and was also purchased with Dimensional Points.

Of course, threads posted by unknown people on the Dimensional Forum basically didn't have many people paying to read. One had to have a certain level of fame before people considered the purchase.

The third kind of thread was official threads. An official guide and strategy was provided and could typically be read at very cheap prices. Furthermore, the authenticity of the content could be guaranteed.

Zhou Wen registered a Dimensional Forum account which only required a bank account number, password, and alias without any other agreements.

The entry of a bank account number and password was relatively simple. As for aliases, there were many which were duplicated. It was difficult to find a unique name.

Zhou Wen couldn't be bothered to think of one. He randomly tapped on the keyboard and pressed space, immediately having a few words appear in the alias field.

Zhou Wen didn't know what he had written, but on careful inspection, he realized that autocomplete had filled it in as "Poison." Zhou Wen subconsciously pressed confirm and realized that it could be used. The registration succeeded immediately.

Zhou Wen didn't care about his alias and directly used this account to log in and post his first thread.

When posting, Zhou Wen chose monetization. Firstly, he was really poor and wished to earn something to buy Companion Eggs to feed the Silver-Winged Flying Ant.

Secondly, there were too many threads on the Dimensional Forum. Ordinary threads very easily sank to the bottom and in comparison, monetized threads were rarer. They stayed longer on the monetized boards.

After seeing the forum shop's prices for Legendary Companion Eggs, Zhou Wen set the price for his first thread to be 20,000 Dimensional Points. This was the price of two Legendary Companion Eggs.

Soon, a monetized thread named "Small Buddha Temple Stone Steps Strategy" appeared in the monetized board.

Ordinary monetized threads ranged from a few points to a dozen points, and the more expensive ones were about a hundred points. For a thread to cost more than a thousand Dimensional Points, meant they were usually professional strategies usually written by some bigwigs on the forum.

Yet, the Small Buddha Temple mentioned in the thread was almost unheard of. Even the alias which was used to post the thread was rather unfamiliar.

"This must be a nutcase. 20,000 points? Only an idiot will read it."

"This must be a scammer that's hoping someone gives him Dimensional Points."

"The rules on the forum need to be more comprehensive. Such scams need to be held legally responsible."

...

Wang Fei was also browsing the Dimensional Forum when she suddenly saw the thread. She couldn't help but be astonished.

This was because Small Buddha Temple was in Sunset College's Underground Buddha City. This secret wasn't known even by ordinary teachers of Sunset College, but Wang Fei, who had an official position, knew very well what kind of place it was.

Since the person who wrote the thread knew of Small Buddha Temple and wrote the keywords "stone steps," it meant that they knew something.

Could it be just some nonsense? Wang Fei felt hesitant seeing the price of 20,000 points. However, if the thread really held the method of entering Small Buddha Temple, then 20,000 points was nothing.

With so many lives sacrificed on the stone steps, each one of them was worth far more than 20,000 Dimensional Points.

Gritting her teeth, Wang Fei paid and opened the thread. When she saw the content inside, she revealed a look of disbelief. *The Heart Meditation Primordial Energy Skill at the Mortal stage can crack the oddness of the stone steps? Is this possible?*

The soldiers responsible for exploring the stone steps were at least at the Legendary stage. Even if they had obtained the Buddha Heart Lotus dimensional crystal, none of them would be interested in a low-grade Primordial Energy Skill. To her surprise, such a puny Heart Meditation was able to resist the stone step's mysterious powers.

The thread had little content. That was all it said. Finally, it warned that one was not to enter the temple or death was a certainty.

Zhou Wen had posted the thread out of goodwill, but he also had some selfishness.

He only had one life, so he was worried about risking his life heading for the Small Buddha Temple in reality. If reality was different in-game, he could at least get the military to scout it out. If they could safely enter Small Buddha Temple, he wouldn't hesitate any further.

After all, the military didn't know the secret of the Small Perfection of Wisdom Sutra. Even if they did, cultivating it wasn't something that could be done in a short span of time. Zhou Wen could beat them in entering the temple hall in the real world and visit the three-faced Buddha.

Of course, he had to confirm that reality's Small Buddha Temple was identical to the game. Only with him being able to safely enter would he personally visit it.

After Wang Fei saw the thread, she immediately made a phone call and informed the military department she came under.

Before long, Wang Fei received feedback from the military. They had already sent a soldier who had cultivated Heart Meditation to attempt ascending the stone steps. He ended up entering the compound of Small Buddha Temple without dying like all the soldiers from before.

*The thread is real! Who's that Poison? How does he know about Small Buddha Temple?*Wang Fei was shocked.

Zhou Wen discovered that he had two clicks on his thread which also meant that two people had purchased his thread. Immediately, he had 40,000 Dimensional Points deposited into his account.

*That's some easy money.*Zhou Wen was delighted.

However, he soon discovered that no one else purchased his thread beyond the two clicks.

*If I had known, I should have set the price even higher.*Zhou Wen stopped paying attention to the thread and entered the Ancient Sovereign City dungeon.

After killing the Skeleton General, Zhou Wen continued exploring. With the Silver-Winged Flying Ant leading the way, the large horde of Skeleton Soldiers could do nothing against him. He stormed all the way in.

After several kilometers, a platform obstructed his path. From afar, he saw the words—"E Bo Platform."

Zhou Wen wasn't a stranger to this name. E Bo was one of the sons of the Five Emperors in Chinese mythology, which was also the founding ancestor of the Shang clan. He had the title of Fire God, so E Bo Platform was also known as Fire God Platform, a star observatory that E Bo used.

However, in the history books, Zhou Wen remembered, Fire God Platform wasn't inside the ancient city, but southwest of it.

Amidst his thoughts, he saw the fire on Fire God Platform burgeon. A scarlet flame soared into the sky, turning into a firebird that charged at the blood-colored avatar.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 76 - Wang’s Man

Chapter 76 Wang’s Man

The firebird was extremely fast. Silver-Winged Flying Ant dodged the firebird’s charge with Silver Wing Flash, but the blood-colored avatar didn’t have the same speed. It was already too late to summon the Silver-Winged Flying Ant to turn it into wings.

Since he couldn’t dodge, Zhou Wen struck out with Ashen Palm.

However, when the palm made contact with the firebird, it felt like he had struck air. There was no corporeal entity to direct his force and by then, the firebird had already charged into the blood-colored avatar’s body.

Bang!

The next second, the blood-colored avatar exploded like fireworks, turning the screen black.

Unwilling to accept this, Zhou Wen dripped his blood and revived the blood-colored avatar. He charged straight for Fire God Platform and before long arrived there. This time, he was prepared. He first turned Silver-Winged Flying Ant into its companion form. Four translucent silver wings appeared behind the blood-colored avatar.

Indeed, the firebird flew out from the top of the Fire God Platform once more. Zhou Wen used the flight obtained from

silver wings to face off with the firebird and, although he couldn’t shake it off, the firebird was unable to catch up to him.

Ignoring the firebird, Zhou Wen controlled the blood-colored avatar to fly towards the Fire God Platform. He wanted to see what was on top of it.

The Platform was squarish in shape like a gigantic chimney. It was a thousand feet tall and although he wanted to fly to its peak, his silver wings only allowed him to fly a dozen meters or so. He wasn’t able to reach higher altitudes.

The Life Providence as King of Low Altitudes allows the Silver-Winged Flying Ant to be extremely agile at low altitudes, but it can’t fly too high. This is a damning weakness. Zhou Wen landed on the stone steps of the Fire God Platform and seeing the firebird about to chase up to him, he summoned the Silver-Winged Flying Ant and shot Magical Needle at it.

The firebird didn’t dodge and allowed it to rush straight at it.

Bang!

Magical Needle was useful as it exploded the firebird; however, the system didn’t indicate that he had killed a dimensional creature.

Zhou Wen was delighted. Just as he was about to rush up to the Fire God Platform, he saw another flame soar into the sky from the top of the platform. This time, two firebirds swooped down.

Zhou Wen continued rushing up the staircase and before long, the two firebirds came to him. The blood-colored avatar gained the silver wings and faced off with the two

firebirds again. After taking painstaking efforts, he finally slew the two firebirds. But this time, four firebirds flew out.

Zhou Wen didn’t dare kill them. All he could do was try his best to escape the firebirds’ pursuit and head to the top of the Fire God Platform as quickly as he could.

Unfortunately, Zhou Wen was wrong. Even if he didn’t kill the firebirds, the top of the Fire God Platform sent out eight firebirds when he reached a certain height.

Zhou Wen was already doing the best he could, but he wasn’t the firebird’s match. Soon, the blood-colored avatar had a firebird charge into his body and exploded to its death.

However, from where it stood, he could already see some of the Fire God Platform’s peak. There was a stone monument erected on it, but Zhou Wen was only able to see the tip and vaguely made out the word: ‘Imperial.’

The game screen went black, but he didn’t immediately revive again. Instead, he recalled his past experiences.

After killing the firebird, there wasn’t any indication of me killing dimensional creatures. This means that they aren’t dimensional creatures. If they aren’t, it means they are a type of Primordial Energy Skill. But why didn’t the dimensional creature at the top of Fire God Platform release large numbers of firebirds at the very beginning but instead slowly double them up?

Zhou Wen then thought of something. In real life, the ancient city is clearly Guide Ancient City, but the game dungeon’s name is Ancient Imperial City. That Fire God Platform has a stone monument with the word “Imperial” on it. Could it be related?

Unable to figure things out immediately, Zhou Wen decided to take a rest and calm his mind.

Pouring himself a cup of blood-replenishing tea, he sipped at it as he checked if there was any new income from the thread he had posted on the Dimensional Forum.

He was left disappointed as the clicks remained at two. However, he had received a private message on the forum.

Zhou Wen saw that the message was posted by a user named “Wang’s Man.” He clicked it and gave it a look.

“Dear Sir, might I discuss Small Buddha Temple with you?”

“Discuss?” Zhou Wen replied.

Wang Fei always had the forum open on her phone. Although she hadn’t received a reply after waiting for quite some time, she had continued waiting patiently.

The discovery of Small Buddha Temple was too astonishing. After using Poison’s method, the military had finally rushed into the compound of Small Buddha Temple and discovered the stone monument with the Small Perfection of Wisdom Sutra.

This discovery astounded Wang Fei and the military top brass. Such a stone monument had been discovered in other mysterious dimensional zones in the past. People had mastered the Primordial Energy Art on the stone monument and earned a mysterious Companion Beast.

However, Wang Fei and the military top brass knew very well that although the Primordial Energy Art was potent, it wasn’t something that anyone could cultivate. One needed the

corresponding special physiques to cultivate the corresponding Primordial Energy Arts.

Although they saw the Small Perfection of Wisdom Sutra, no one dared to cultivate it. A volunteer attempted to memorize the Small Perfection of Wisdom Sutra on the stone monument, but a few words were enough for him to clasp his head and cry out in pain. He then died with blood gushing out of his seven orifices.

A general had personally visited the stone monument before ordering all soldiers to leave Small Buddha Temple. Furthermore, all news regarding Small Buddha Temple was made top secret.

Wang Fei contacted Poison on the general's orders.

"Have you mastered Small Perfection of Wisdom Sutra?" Wang Fei hurriedly asked.

"What has that got to do with you?"

"I'm willing to pay large sums of money to buy information from you." Sensing the other party's tone to be somewhat impatient, Wang Fei got straight to the point and indicated her motives.

"What information? Tell me."

"Do you know what special physiques are needed to cultivate in the Small Perfection of Wisdom Sutra?" Wang Fei hurriedly replied.

Zhou Wen was slightly taken aback. He had no idea what physiques were needed. However, on second thought, he immediately came to a realization.

I was wondering why the three-faced Buddha called me his child. I thought it had to do with my cultivating of the Small Perfection of Wisdom Sutra, but from the looks of it, it’s not that simple. But I don’t seem to possess any special physique. If Small Perfection of Wisdom Sutra requires one to cultivate, how did I succeed? With this in mind, Zhou Wen’s eyes suddenly lit up. Could it be the Lost Immortal Sutra?

He recalled that his brain felt extreme discomfort when he began reading the Small Perfection of Wisdom Sutra. After the Lost Immortal Sutra took effect, he was able to finish reading the former in its entirety and mastered it.

From the looks of it, it’s most likely Lost Immortal Sutra.

Wang Fei waited for quite a while, but there was no reply. She couldn’t help but feel a little uneasy, but it wasn’t appropriate for her to send another message to rush the person. All she could do was continue waiting, with every second feeling like an eternity.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 77 - Matriculation Test

Chapter 77 Matriculation Test

Wang Fei didn’t receive a response after waiting all day. Her message was like a rock sinking into the ocean. Finally, she couldn’t help but send another message, but once again, she didn’t receive a reply.

Unbeknownst to her, Zhou Wen had already closed the forum and was gaming away.

He didn’t know what physiques were needed to cultivate the Small Perfection of Wisdom Sutra, so he naturally wasn’t able to answer her. However, he didn’t wish to let the other person know that he was clueless. He decided to not answer for there was a chance he could learn more from the other party in the future.

But this only served to torture Wang Fei. This was because the Dimensional Forum didn’t have any indication of online status, nor was there any way of checking. Therefore, she didn’t know if Zhou Wen was online or not. All she could do was continue waiting.

Wang Fei immediately picked up her phone when it suddenly sounded and she saw the number flash up.

“Little Fei, did you figure out Poison’s identity?” A man’s voice sounded over the phone.

“Sorry, General Shen. There was no response from him. I’m also temporarily unable to figure out his identity,” Wang Fei said after a pause. “General Shen, can we figure out his geographical location through the forum?”

“The Dimensional Forum is under the Zhang family. You know what they are like. Unless Congress passes it through a vote, there’s no way we can get the information from them. It’s impossible. The Zhangs won’t even entertain me,” General Shen thought for a moment before continuing, “Since Poison knows about Buddha City and Small Buddha Temple, as well as the secret of the stone steps, it means he must have been there. This place is a recently discovered dimensional zone, so not many people have been there. Apart from our military personnel, there are only the students and teachers of Sunset College. Investigate it from this angle. You have to find Poison no matter what.”

“Yes.” Wang Fei hung up and thought about how she could begin.

Quite a number of students and teachers had entered Buddha City, so it wasn’t an easy task to find out who they all were.

Early in the morning, Zhou Wen and Li Xuan reported for class.

Sunset College used an education system that followed half-restricted military practices. It was different from the typical university. Here, there was no distinction between electives and compulsory classes. They only needed to attend the lessons of one teacher. They could attend the classes of other teachers based on their own interests.

Li Xuan and Zhou Wen happened to be assigned to Wang Fei's class, and she was in a rather unhappy mood today. After entering the class, she saw all the freshmen looking languid. She pursed her lips before curling the ends of her mouth slightly.

"Students, from today, I'll be your counselor. Let me introduce myself. My name is Wang Fei." Wang Fei wrote her name on the board.

When the students realized that she was in her late twenties, exuding a mature lady's sexiness by wearing a gray professional blazer matched with stockings, something that the female students were unable to compare with, some of the bolder students cheered.

Li Xuan was clearly one of the bolder ones. He called out, "Miss Wang, are you taken? If you aren't, you can consider me."

Upon hearing Li Xuan's words, many students laughed out. Many students also made catcalls.

Wang Fei seemed used to such situations and thought nothing of it. She shot Li Xuan a look and said, "Of course. But you have to first be able to graduate while under me. Alright, this is Sunset College. The word 'Sunset' is a warning to us that time is precious. Our school's purpose is to cherish time. Now, I'll be assigning you your first matriculation homework. It will also be your first test. Kill a Demonized General within ten days. Each team is only allowed a maximum of four people. The kill has to be done within ninety seconds. If you fail to complete the test, you will be expelled from school. You can then seek out other opportunities for yourself. The school will also arrange for you to apply to other ordinary schools."

The noisy classroom instantly fell silent.

Students who were admitted into Sunset College weren’t to be trifled with. Before arriving on campus, many of them had gained an understanding of Sunset College via various channels.

To have a test on the first day of classes was a tradition of Sunset College. It wasn’t much of a surprise.

However, to slay a Demonized General within ninety seconds in a group of four, it was quite demanding

Sunset College had many dimensional zones, so the typical matriculation test was to kill a certain number of Mortal dimensional creatures, but a Demonized General was a Legendary dimensional creature.

Although the students here were all elites, most of them were at the Mortal stage. Killing a Legendary dimensional creature through the combined forces of four students at the Mortal stage wasn’t simple. Furthermore, Demonized Generals didn’t appear alone. They would have plenty of Mortal stage Demonized Soldiers around them, increasing the difficulty.

Most students probably were incapable of killing one in ninety seconds as a group of four.

“Miss Wang, we just matriculated and have learned nothing. Isn’t it too demanding for us to kill a Demonized General?” a student raised his doubts.

“Didn’t I give you ten days to learn? As long as you are willing to put in the effort, ten days is sufficient. If you don’t have the will, a hundred days would be useless. This is Sunset College. It doesn’t have that much time for you to

waste. Kill a Demonized General in ten days or study at another university. Your fates are in your hands. Alright, this will be the end of the administration matters before class starts. You can officially begin attending lessons. As for the classes you would like to attend, it's up to you to decide. The timetable has the various counselors' lesson timings. You can choose the subjects you would like to learn more about." Wang Fei handed out passes before she left, leaving the room filled with dumbfounded students.

"College life seems to be a little more interesting than I expected. Killing a Demonized General in ninety seconds in a group of four probably isn't easily accomplished, much less ordinary students," Li Xuan whispered to Zhou Wen.

The other students either lamented or grumbled. Their test was the hardest among all the matriculation tests in previous years.

"What kind of dimensional creature is the Demonized General?" Zhou Wen held the pass he had received and studied it. On it were the words: Tiger Cage Pass.

Li Xuan said, "Tiger Cage Pass is a dimensional zone east of campus. In ancient times, it was called Sihui Pass. After it became a dimensional zone, large numbers of Demonized General and Demonized Soldiers appeared. Among dimensional creatures of the same level, Demonized Generals and Demonized Soldiers are middle to upper tier. Some Demonized Generals even reach the level of pinnacle Legendary. They are very difficult to deal with. Such a matriculation test is really difficult for newly matriculated students."

"Let's visit Tiger Cage Pass then," Zhou Wen said with piqued interest.

His other dungeons had reached a bottleneck. He was unable to reach the top of Fire God Platform and he couldn’t break into Ant City There wasn’t much to be discovered in Underground Buddha City, so it would be a good development to have a new dungeon.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 78 - Demonized General

Chapter 78 Demonized General

“Ms. Wang, you shouldn’t have used the test meant for the special admissions students of the previous two years on ordinary students, right?” Liu Zhengyan told Wang Fei inside the school office.

“These imps are filled with arrogance; if they aren’t taught a lesson, it might not be easy teaching them in the future. Mr. Liu, rest assured. I know what I’m doing,” Wang Fei said with great confidence.

Wang Fei naturally wouldn’t expel her students. She had prepared a strategy for killing the Demonized General. As long as these students worked hard to look up information on it, they would discover the strategy she had specially written.

By studying the strategy completely, it wasn’t difficult to slay the Demonized General within ten days.

The average student did research in school, but Zhou Wen was clearly an exception. Without doing any research, he and Li Xuan headed straight for the Tiger Cage Pass dimensional zone.

Tiger Cage Pass was similarly underground. After receiving a temporary pass from the school, Zhou Wen and Li Xuan were able to enter it.

The pass had to be returned in ten days, so it wouldn’t be easy for them to enter Tiger Cage Pass again after that time.

It wasn’t that the school wasn’t willing to open Tiger Cage Pass to everyone, but it had too few resources available for all. Real life wasn’t a game where dimensional creatures would keep respawning after being killed. One had to wait for new dimensional creatures to come out of the dimensional rift, and this process was much slower than in-game respawning.

Therefore, dimensional zones like Tiger Cage Pass that were specially prepared for students were typically opened up to them for fixed periods of time to ensure that there would be sufficient dimensional creatures in it.

Outside Tiger Cage Pass, Zhou Wen discovered the familiar palm symbol, but it was a symbol with a tiger-headed gate.

Before entering, he used his mysterious phone to snap a picture of the palm symbol and indeed, he successfully downloaded the Tiger Cage Pass game dungeon.

Since he was here, he entered with Li Xuan to take a look. Several students from the same class had come as well. They too were here to take a look at Tiger Cage Pass’s situation.

In the underground ancient battlefield, Demonized Soldiers were wandering in groups. They wore ragged clothes and had blood-red eyes. Their dark skin suffused a metallic luster.

There were also different types of Demonized Soldiers. Most of them carried lances while others held knives and shields. A few of them had bows and arrows.

Most of the students were geniuses of their various high schools, so dealing with the typical Demonized Soldier wasn't difficult. However, there were no signs of Demonized Generals anywhere in the vicinity.

"Shall we head in and find a Demonized General so that we can complete the test today?" Li Xuan asked with a smile.

"Another day perhaps. It's best we head back and study the information regarding Tiger Cage Pass." Zhou Wen didn't wish to underestimate any dimensional zone. It was equivalent to dancing on the edge of a blade.

Although he now had the capability of killing Legendaries, Legendary creatures were varied in their abilities. No one could guarantee that nothing would go wrong.

"You're just too careful. Without strength, we can just be over and done with by storming in," Li Xuan said with a laugh.

Zhou Wen ignored him and headed out. After returning to his dorm, he first launched the school's official page and looked up the information regarding Tiger Cage Pass.

Wang Fei had deliberately stuck to the strategy, so Zhou Wen naturally found it at a glance. When he loaded it, there was a detailed introduction to the strategy and how it could be used. As long as one cooperated well with one another, killing a Legendary Demonized General wasn't difficult.

However, it had pointed out something—the Demonized Generals mentioned in the strategy were typical Demonized

Generals. If one were to encounter a Demonized General with engraving on their helmets, one was to immediately stay away from them.

After studying the information available, Zhou Wen launched the game dungeon and entered Tiger Cage Pass.

The game’s graphics were nearly identical to Tiger Cage Pass, other than the fact that it was cartoonish. It didn’t look as bloody and terrifying

With Zhou Wen’s strength, killing ordinary Demonized Soldiers was easy. Even small groups of them didn’t pose any threat. He stormed his way and headed in the direction of Tiger Cage Pass’s gate.

The Silver-Winged Flying Ant slew the ordinary Demonized Soldiers as if it was dicing vegetables. This went on for kilometers until he suddenly saw a Demonized General rushing over on a Demon Horse.

The Demon Horse was entirely red in color. It looked like a cloud of flames and its speed was astonishing. It arrived in front of the Silver-Winged Flying Ant almost in the blink of an eye.

The Demonized General on the horse was abnormally stocky. It wore black armor and a helmet, and the weapon in its hand looked extremely odd. It looked like a spear, but the two sides of the spear tip had two crescent blades. It was more than three meters long and looked a little like the trident of the mythical Poseidon.

The raven-black spear suffused a red glow and although it was drawn in a cartoon style, it still gave one the feeling of ferocity and dominance.

Zhou Wen’s gaze swept across its helmet and saw a circular groove. Engraved in it was the word “Paper.”

Boom! The Demonized General raised its spear and thrust it at the Silver-Winged Flying Ant. Burning flames spewed out of the spear tip, making the strange spear appear like a flaming wyrm that swept towards the ant at blistering speed. Clearly, it was a Primordial Energy Skill.

Under Zhou Wen’s control, the Silver-Winged Flying Ant used Silver Wing Flash to dodge the Demonized General’s thrust. At the same time, it moved its stinger and shot out Magical Needle, aiming right at the Demonized General’s eyes.

“Roar!” The Demonized General let out a roar as its body produced fiery ripples that resembled lotus flower petals. It had surprisingly withstood Magical Needle as it threw the strange burning spear right at the Silver-Winged Flying Ant in midair.

Zhou Wen hurriedly made the Silver-Winged Flying Ant fly higher, hoping to use the distance of height to prevent the attack from

hitting.

The Silver-Winged Flying Ant flew to a height of more than ten meters, a height that Zhou Wen imagined the strange spear wouldn’t be able to reach.

But to his surprise, the Demon Horse, the Demonized General was riding, leaped up and jumped more than ten meters into the sky, instantly closing the distance between it and the ant. The strange spear in the Demonized General’s hand again swept at it like a fiery wyrm.

The Silver-Winged Flying Ant lived up to its name as King of Low Altitudes. As it flapped its four wings, it dodged the attack like a silver bolt of lightning. However, a shocking scene happened the next second.

The Demonized General aimed one hand at the Silver-Winged Flying Ant in midair and sucked at it. As though space was collapsing towards its palm, the Ant which was at least two meters away was pulled towards the Demonized General. No matter how hard it flapped its four wings, it was unable to escape the suction.

Crack!

The strange spear cleaved down, immediately lopping off the motionless Silver-Winged Flying Ant's head. Zhou Wen turned around and retreated, but the blood-colored avatar did not have enough strength to fend off a pinnacle Legendary creature.

Zhou Wen had ultimately retreated too late. Without even pursuing him, the Demonized General sat on the Demon Horse's back and threw the strange spear over.

The flaming wyrm tore through the sky and without being able to dodge in time, the blood-colored avatar was pinned to the sandy ground in the battlefield. The screen went black.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 79 - Crazy Grinding

Chapter 79 Crazy Grinding

How terrifying! Zhou Wen didn’t feel depressed. Instead, his eyes lit up as he felt pumped with excitement.

The stats of the Silver-Winged Flying Ant were already considered top-notch among Legendaries. Yet, it had been butchered by the Demonized General. Such a powerful existence made Zhou Wen eager to obtain it.

Be it the Demonized General Companion Beast or the Demonized General’s Primordial Energy Skill, they were both of extreme value. It was especially so for the skill that could pull the Silver-Winged Flying Ant over. It was practically godlike.

Without any hesitation, he dripped his blood to revive the blood-colored avatar. He then chose to head for Tiger Cage Pass immediately.

The typical Demonized Soldiers held little meaning to him. He stormed all the way in, leaving a wake of destruction behind him. Soon, he encountered the Demonized General who came riding on a horse.

However, this Demonized General was somewhat different from the one he had previously encountered. Although it wore the same black armor and helmet, there wasn’t any engraving on its helmet. Furthermore, it was riding a black horse and it was slightly shorter. The weapon it wielded was an ordinary spear.

Upon exchanging blows, Zhou Wen realized that this was the ordinary Demonized General as described in the school's strategy. It was completely different from the word-engraved Demonized General he had seen.

Although an ordinary Demonized General was rather strong, it wasn't the Silver-Winged Flying Ant's match. After about ten minutes of battle, it was slain and had dropped a Primordial Energy Crystal.

A 15-valued Primordial Energy Crystal didn't help Zhou Wen break through his limits. Apart from his Constitution at 11, his other stats peaked at 10. He was unable to exceed the limit.

Zhou Wen continued controlling the blood-colored avatar as he stormed towards Tiger Cage Pass. The nearer he was to it, the more Demonized Soldiers there were. He did encounter two Demonized Generals, but they dropped nothing of note.

When the city gates of Tiger Cage Pass were in sight, Zhou Wen wanted to continue charging forward when he heard the twang of a bowstring. An arrow shot out from Tiger Cage Pass like a bolt of lightning, instantly killing the blood-colored avatar.

What the hell? Zhou Wen was able to hear the bowstring's twang thanks to the Truth Listener earring, but he hadn't managed to see who had shot the arrow, nor was he able to dodge it in time.

Such an outcome clearly didn't satisfy him. He dripped his blood and entered the game again, but this time, he didn't enter Tiger Cage Pass but first entered Ant Nest, Ancient Imperial City, and Underground Buddha City. After killing the Silver-Winged Flying Ant, Skeleton General, and Mutated Buddha Heart Lotus once, he headed for Tiger Cage Pass.

He failed to encounter a word-engraved Demonized General again and only encountered two ordinary ones. After killing them, he was killed on the spot by the arrow as he tried to approach Tiger Cage Pass. He still failed to identify who had killed the blood-colored avatar.

Without immediately entering the game, Zhou Wen headed online to check the school’s online database and studied in detail the information regarding Tiger Cage Pass.

There was plenty of information, but little regarding the word-engraved Demonized General. It was only mentioned that they were occasionally encountered outside Tiger Cage Pass and were very rare, with one not even appearing for a month or two.

Furthermore, there were many bigwigs who had their sights on word-engraved Demonized Generals. It was said that their Primordial Energy Skills were very valuable, but Zhou Wen didn’t manage to find any information regarding that.

As for what was inside Tiger Cage Pass, an Epic stage expert had once rushed in but ended up escaping with grievous injuries. To date, humanity hadn’t yet cleared the Tiger Cage Pass dimensional zone.

The area twenty-five hundred meters outside Tiger Cage Pass was considered a forbidden area. Typical students and teachers were forbidden from entry and they had only themselves to blame if an accident were to occur there.

Without finding the word-engraved Demonized Generals’ detailed information, Zhou Wen tried again. He dripped his blood again to revive himself in the bid of encountering one outside Tiger Cage Pass.

However, before heading to Tiger Cage Pass each time, he would kill the Silver-Winged Flying Ant, Skeleton General, and Mutated Buddha Heart Lotus. A Legendary Companion Egg did drop and ordinary Companion Eggs dropped as well. They were all given as food to the Silver-Winged Flying Ant and Truth Listener.

Truth Listener also needed food, but it was picky. It only ate Companion Eggs and had no interest in incubated Companion Beasts. This made it different from the Silver-Winged Flying Ant.

Ding!

For the next few days, Zhou Wen continued grinding crazily. After he slew a Mutated Buddha Heart Lotus once more, a Mutated Buddha Heart Lotus Crystal dropped-a Primordial Energy Skill Crystal.

This was even rarer than a Mutated Buddha Heart Lotus Companion Egg. He had already had three of them drop, but the Mutated Buddha Heart Lotus’s Primordial Energy Skill Crystal only had one drop.

I already have Blood Meditation. I hope it isn’t the same one this time. Zhou Wen carefully looked at the Primordial Energy Skill Crystal’s

stats.

Mutated Buddha Heart Lotus: Lotus Flower Buddha Body (Rank 9)

Zhou Wen’s eyes lit up as he didn’t hesitate to let the blood-colored avatar fuse with it.

Lotus Flower Buddha Body was the blood-patterned Buddha Heart Lotus's protective Primordial Energy Skill and furthermore, it was Rank 9. Zhou Wen couldn't ask for more.

Thankfully, the Buddha-type Primordial Energy Skill was relatively mild. Although it was at the Legendary stage, it didn't excessively burden Zhou Wen's body. It allowed him to successfully obtain the Rank 9 Lotus Flower Buddha Body.

When Zhou Wen attempted to circulate it, faint blood patterns immediately suffused his skin. They covered his entire body with flower petals as though a Buddha's aspect was hidden within.

Lotus Flower Buddha Body expended one Primordial Energy point every second, therefore, only allowing him to use it for ten seconds. This was under the condition that he didn't use any other Primordial Energy Skills.

This Primordial Energy Skill is good in every way, but its expenditure is just too high, Zhou Wen thought with an insatiable desire.

He entered the game to try his newly mastered skill and realized that he had basically achieved invulnerability against the attacks of Demonized Soldiers at the same Mortal stage. His defensive strength was indeed pretty good.

It could also defend the attacks of ordinary Demonized Generals if they didn't use Primordial Energy Skills. If they were to use one, the Lotus Flower Buddha Body wasn't able to defend against it, but it still prevented him from being killed instantly.

Of course, this was under the condition that the ordinary Demonized Generals could hit the blood-colored avatar. In fact, with the silver wings formed by the Silver-Winged

Flying Ant, ordinary Demonized Generals were incapable of touching the blood-colored avatar.

As for the arrow that shot out from Tiger Cage Pass, it was still able to penetrate his body. Lotus Flower Buddha Body's defensive powers were like paper mache that didn't show any obvious effects. Even Silver Wing Flash didn't help him in dodging it.

The one shooting the arrow from Tiger Cage Pass is likely an Epic dimensional creature. Zhou Wen no longer dared to approach Tiger Cage Pass and only sought Demonized Generals in the periphery.

He grinded Tiger Cage Pass countless times, and one time, he encountered a red horse dash towards him shortly after he arrived near Tiger Cage Pass. The Demonized General riding on it was stocky and tall. Its strange spear, resembling Poseidon's trident, was eye-catching. There was a word engraved on its helmet, making it the word-engraved Demonized General which Zhou Wen had been trying hard to find.

However, upon careful inspection, he was stunned. This was because the word engraved was different from the one he had previously seen.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 80 - Battling the Demonized General Again

Chapter 80 Battling the Demonized General Again

The last time Zhou Wen saw the Demonized General, it had the word Paper engraved on the helmet. This time, it wasn’t Paper but Blade.

It was Paper and now it’s Blade. Don’t tell me the next one is Rock? Although he didn’t know why they differed, he still followed his plans. He fused the Mutated Skeleton Ant, Silver-Winged Flying Ant, and Truth Listener into the blood-colored avatar and prepared for a full-power skirmish.

Although the Demonized General was strong, the Silver-Winged Flying Ant wasn’t weak, especially when it came to Speed. It was definitely not weaker than any Legendary dimensional creature.

The Demonized General’s attack was identical to the one he previously encountered. The strange spear in its hand swept over with blazing flames, but Zhou Wen managed to dodge it by flying

He didn’t rejoice when he dodged the strange spear’s attack. He continued staring intently at the Demonized General’s left hand.

Indeed, after the spear missed, the Demonized General raised its left hand just as Zhou Wen had expected.

However, to his surprise, the Demonized General didn’t suck the blood-colored avatar over. Instead, it transformed its

palm into a blade and waved it at it.

The faint red blade aura tore out like a thin thread, instantly cleaving the blood-colored avatar’s waist, an attack that even the silver wings were unable to dodge.

The blade aura flashed past the blood-colored avatar’s waist, slicing it into two. It then plummeted from the sky and the screen turned black

Zhou Wen was confused when he saw the black screen. The left-hand technique of Paper is suction, while Blade has a blade aura that’s as fast as lightning. If there’s Rock, would it be a powerful punch that strikes from afar?

He didn’t immediately revive the blood-colored avatar to try again. He carefully considered the battle and quickly realized that he was unlikely to defeat the Paper Demonized General with only the Silver-Winged Flying Ant. However, he had a chance of defeating the Blade Demonized General.

The suction force of the Paper Demonized General’s palm was something the Silver-Winged Flying Ant couldn’t avoid. However, the extremely fast Blade aura of the Blade Demonized General could be avoided if Silver-Winged Flying Ant was used properly. This also meant that Zhou Wen had the chance of killing a Blade Demonized General.

This was if the Silver-Winged Flying Ant fought alone. If it fused with the blood-colored avatar as a companion form, there was zero chance.

This was because, in its companion form, the Silver-Winged Flying Ant was unable to use its talent skills. And since Zhou Wen hadn’t had the Silver-Winged Flying Ant Primordial Energy Skill drop, he wasn’t able to use such flight-capable

skills. Therefore, he ended up losing his advantage after fusion.

Heavens, show your grace on me. Let me encounter a Blade Demonized General again. Zhou Wen entered the dungeon once more, but luck was clearly not on his side. After repeatedly grinding, he didn’t encounter any word-engraved Demonized General outside Tiger Cage Pass.

He spent several days in his dorm grinding without attending class. Li Xuan visited him a few times, hoping to invite him to complete the test at Tiger Cage Pass, but Zhou Wen would decline with some excuse.

Wang Fei constantly monitored her students in secret and discovered that most students had diligently done their research and formed teams to attempt slaying the Demonized General at Tiger Cage Pass.

Li Xuan and Zhou Wen were the only ones in class who didn’t do a thing. Excluding their first visit to Tiger Cage Pass, there had been no sight of them again.

n no

I can ignore Li Xuan, but what’s Zhou Wen doing? Why didn’t he head to Tiger Cage Pass to complete the mission? Wang Fei was rather curious about Zhou Wen.

She had a good relationship with Ouyang Lan and knew how proud and doting she was as a mother. Even a woman like Ouyang Lan had given Zhou Wen an extremely high appraisal and had even given the rights that should have been An Jing’s to Zhou Wen. This had piqued Wang Fei’s curiosity.

Zhou Wen had showcased impressive potential back in his participation in the slaying of the Mutated Buddha Heart Lotus, so this deepened her curiosity.

She wouldn’t have thought much about it if Zhou Wen had completed the mission at Tiger Cage Pass without any fuss, but there was nothing from him for several days. This just intrigued her even more.

Wang Fei clearly wasn’t a patient person. Since she was curious, she decided to visit Zhou Wen at his dorm to see what he was doing.

And in a room in a particular part of Luoyang City, Liz excitedly came to Qiao Siyuan with an arrest warrant. “Minister Qiao, the arrest warrant has been granted. Shall we take immediate action?”

Qiao Siyuan nodded slightly. “Take some men to Sunset College. However, don’t use the arrest warrant. Get the school to bring Zhou Wen over under the guise of getting him to aid in investigations. If he’s cooperative, bring him back. If not, you’ll have to use the warrant. Try not to garner the notice of too many people when you do it, especially the An family.”

“Minister, rest assured. I know what needs to be done. I’ll definitely bring Zhou Wen back,” Liz said confidently.

“Go then. Come back quickly. We don’t have much time. We have to get what we need to know before the An family sends someone, so it has to be fast,” Qiao Siyuan exhorted once more.

Liz obeyed the order and took men to Sunset College. Then, in the name of needing Zhou Wen to aid in investigations, she met the school’s managing vice-chancellor.

If they were ordinary police, they probably wouldn’t be able to meet the managing vice-chancellor. However, being in the Special Inspector Bureau allowed Liz a meeting.

In the League, the Special Inspector Bureau was feared and hated by everyone. Although the vice-chancellor didn’t wish to involve himself with Liz and company, he had no choice but to talk to them.

The entire League knew of many high-ranking officials that had their reputations ruined after entering the Special Inspector Bureau. If one was targeted by this bureau, severe loss or even death was certain.

“Chancellor, rest assured. We just wish to invite a few witnesses to provide us with some information. It won’t take too much of these students’ time,” Liz said with a smile.

There was a name list on the managing vice-chancellor’s desk, one with a total of six names. They were all Sunset College students, but five of them were just a ruse. Zhou Wen was the person she really wanted.

“Alright then.” The managing vice-chancellor didn’t wish to offend the Special Inspector Bureau because of such trivialities, so he got his secretary to summon the students on the list.

Zhou Wen was gaming in his dorm when he received the notice to head to the school’s administrative building. He had no idea why the chancellor was summoning him.

Knocking on the door and entering the office, he instantly saw Liz who was sitting there drinking tea. He immediately knew that things weren’t good, but he knew that escape was futile. All he could do was pretend to not recognize her and walk in calmly.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 81 - Stalling For Time

Chapter 81 Stalling For Time

“This female officer wishes to ask you a few questions. Just answer truthfully,” the vice-chancellor said to Zhou Wen and company.

Liz didn’t look like she was targeting Zhou Wen. She asked all six students some questions and treated him the same as though she didn’t know him.

“Officer, will that do?” the vice-chancellor asked after Liz was done with her questioning.

“The other students can head back now. However, I would like to invite Mr. Zhou Wen back to assist us in our investigations.” Liz waved her hand, permitting the other students to leave the office as she scrutinized him as though speaking casually.

The vice-chancellor frowned slightly but soon smiled. “Officer, you naturally can get our students to assist in your investigations, but as you know, Sunset College is considered half a military school. These students can be considered part of the military reserve force. If you wish to take him away, you will need to go through the procedures. If you are in a rush for time, I can do the paperwork for you now.”

“There’s no need. This is an arrest warrant. Take a look at it. I’ll only be taking him with me to assist in our investigations. We will bring him back unharmed, so you don’t have to worry,” Liz said with a sneer as she took out the arrest warrant, placing it on the desk in front of the vice-chancellor.

How could she not be aware that the vice-chancellor was a sly old fox? Despite speaking pleasantly, he was probably planning to head out to inform the An family. Sunset College has been set up by the An family to begin with, so if anything were to happen, they wouldn’t sit idle even if they didn’t like Zhou Wen.

The vice-chancellor looked at the arrest warrant carefully and immediately, his expression changed. He glared at Liz and asked, “What law did our student break? To actually use an arrest warrant of this level?”

He could already tell that Liz was here for Zhou Wen. Whatever excuses previously used had been solely to get Zhou Wen here.

“No comment,” Liz said as she gestured for her man to apprehend Zhou Wen.

She knew that she couldn’t waste any time. She needed to take Zhou Wen away before the Ans came.

Zhou Wen was the An family’s only candidate, one that couldn’t be changed. Ignoring his importance to the An family, to request they hand him over without any concrete evidence was something they would definitely disagree with.

Interrogation of Zhou Wen under the An family’s supervision was nearly useless. It was basically telling Zhou Wen that

they couldn’t do a thing to him, so how could they get anything out of him?

Furthermore, Qiao Siyuan also suspected that the An family was involved in this matter. This was also one of the reasons he needed to take Zhou Wen back for interrogation.

As for killing Zhou Wen, not only was Liz fearful of doing so, but even Qiao Siyuan wouldn’t do so. The An family had Zhou Wen as their only candidate, so killing him was equivalent to crossing them. Qiao Siyuan didn’t wish to completely offend them; at least he wouldn’t do so until he had concrete evidence.

Of course, if he could obtain actual evidence from Zhou Wen that the An family was involved with Jing Daoxian, that would be a whole different matter.

The possibility was very small to begin with; therefore, Liz didn’t really have much hope of obtaining such evidence. She only wanted to take Zhou Wen back and question him about the things that Qiao Siyuan wanted to know before the An family arrived.

Zhou Wen immediately hid behind the vice-chancellor’s back. He had heard Li Xuan describe the modus operandi of the Special Inspection Bureau-a place that was enough to figuratively skin a person no matter who they were. For them to have spent so much effort to come all the way to Sunset College to arrest him, he clearly wasn’t going to be released after a simple interrogation.

Furthermore, Zhou Wen felt guilty. After all, he had cultivated Jing Daoxian’s Lost Immortal Sutra. If the bureau were to believe that this Primordial Energy Art was related to Jing Daoxian, wouldn’t that make him his accomplice?

Zhou Wen didn’t know that Jing Daoxian hadn’t cultivated in the Lost Immortal Sutra himself because it wasn’t his. Even if others were to recognize the Lost Immortal Sutra, it was impossible to connect him to Jing Daoxian.

Furthermore, no one in the League had ever mastered the Lost Immortal Sutra, so it was almost impossible to recognize.

“Officer, you should know that Overseer An shows great concern about Sunset College. Shouldn’t you inform him of this?” the vice-chancellor said with a frown.

Liz said in all seriousness, “The League’s laws are supreme. I don’t care where this is or who’s here. I’m duty-bound to do what needs to be done. It doesn’t matter who comes. Chancellor, are you implying that Overseer An is greater than the League’s laws?”

“You are taking me out of context. On this matter, our Sunset College will definitely seek an explanation from Congress.” The vice-chancellor’s face was livid.

“Feel free to do so.” Liz knew that she couldn’t waste any more time. She had to leave immediately with Zhou Wen, so she gave her men the signal.

Two men moved like phantoms as they tried to take Zhou Wen away by force.

“Don’t touch me. I can walk by myself.” Zhou Wen knew that the school was powerless against them since the vice-chancellor didn’t stop them.

“Alright, move along.” Liz wasn’t afraid that Zhou Wen could do much. She waved her hand, giving the silent order to her

subordinates not to touch him and let Zhou Wen walk by himself.

She didn’t wish to blow matters up if things could be done in a furtive manner.

Zhou Wen didn’t resist as he obediently walked out. The two men walked behind him, prepared to immediately restrain him if he did anything abnormal.

“Chancellor Ya, goodbye for now,” Liz said and directly walked off.

Zhou Wen didn’t dawdle as he directly walked towards the school’s entrance.

He was lacking in EQ, but it didn’t mean he was dumb.

Liz had tricked him and was now eagerly taking him away. Although she spoke in an overbearing manner, he could tell that there were things holding them back. Their eagerness was apparently because they were afraid of something.

Every second I stall counts. Zhou Wen didn’t have the opportunity to send an SOS message. From the moment he entered the room and saw Liz, he knew that he wasn’t able to do so under Liz’s nose. Therefore, he hadn’t made any attempts to prevent himself from being taken into custody immediately. It might even cause his mysterious phone to be confiscated.

However, believing that the vice-chancellor would have already sent out the news, all he needed to do was stall for time to have a turnaround.

Under normal circumstances, it was clearly impossible for someone at the Mortal stage to escape from a few Legendary

officers.

Zhou Wen kept walking towards the school’s entrance without acting out of place. Nor did he take any detours. He made Liz and the officers believe that he had stopped resisting and was returning with them.

In fact, even high officials of the League wouldn’t try anything funny if they were under the bureau’s control, much less a student.

Zhou Wen walked normally as though he had resigned himself to fate. But when he arrived near a forest within the campus grounds, he suddenly exerted full force and dashed into the woods. As he ran, he said, “I need to pee. Wait a moment.”

By passing through the forest, he was already close to the entrance of Underground Buddha City in the real world. As long as he could escape into it, he could use the Small Buddha Temple’s mysterious forces to stall for time.

Although doing so was risky as he still didn’t know if Small Buddha Temple in the real world was identical to the game, he no longer had the luxury of choice. He had things on him he absolutely couldn’t expose.

If he were to be taken away for interrogation, all the items on him would be scrutinized—the mysterious phone would thus be exposed.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 82 - Escape

Chapter 82 Escape

Upon seeing Zhou Wen escape, Liz watched with a teasing look without any intention to take action.

The bureau arrested and pursued people daily. If a student at the Mortal stage were to escape under their noses, they could forget about staying in the bureau.

Without needing Liz to give the word, the two officers behind Zhou Wen reached out their hands to grab him. Speed at the Legendary stage emerged as four hands seemed to lock onto Zhou Wen’s arms like phantoms.

But in that split second, a silver glow flashed behind Zhou Wen. Four silver wings extended and with one flap, he flew seven to eight meters high. He was incredibly fast and unexpectedly dodged the officers’ attacks, successfully rushing into the forest.

“A Legendary Companion Beast capable of flight… Chase after him…” Liz was slightly taken aback, but she immediately led the chase after snapping back to her senses.

They originally imagined that it would be impossible for Zhou Wen to escape from the Legendaries even with his Legendary Companion Beast, but to their surprise, Zhou Wen was like a nimble bat. He flapped his four wings and

darted through the woods, using the trees to conceal his motion. He cut off their attempts to encircle him as he rushed out of the woods.

“I want to see how far you can go!” Liz was alarmed and infuriated. She chased Zhou Wen at an unimaginably fast speed.

Without the woods concealing his actions, Zhou Wen was unable to pull open the distance between them. All he could do was rush towards Ancient Inlet, that wasn’t too far away, at full speed, rushing into Underground Buddha City before Liz and company could catch up to him.

Zhou Wen showed his pass and directly entered Underground Buddha City. However, Liz and company were stopped by the soldiers who were guarding it. After they revealed their identification as bureau officers, they were permitted into Underground Buddha City to continue the pursuit.

Zhou Wen didn’t even turn his head as he ran towards Small Buddha Temple at full speed. Liz and company chased him relentlessly and were closing up to him despite the Speed he obtained with the wings obtained from the Silver-Winged Flying Ant.

“Zhou Wen, do you know what crime it is to resist arrest? We originally only required you to return to assist us with our investigations. Now that you’re escaping, that will compound the crime. It’s still not too late for you to stop now,” Liz shouted as she chased.

Zhou Wen completely ignored her as he dashed forward at full speed.

Liz knew that she couldn’t waste any more time when she saw Zhou Wen running in silence. Gritting her teeth, she summoned an azure sword and slashed it towards Zhou Wen.

An azure sword beam appeared immediately, traversing several meters as it headed straight for Zhou Wen’s back.

Zhou Wen heard the sound of wind as he hurriedly dodged with a sidestep, barely dodging the sword beam’s slash. Without another word, he continued running forward.

He originally only had the thought of finding an opportunity to hide the mysterious phone, but with Liz’s tight pursuit, they weren’t giving him a chance to do so. All he could do was desperately escape in the direction of Small Buddha Temple.

“My name isn’t Liz if you escape me today!” Liz was infuriated and couldn’t care less. She slashed out with her sword repeatedly.

Although the sword beams weren’t aimed at Zhou Wen’s vital spots, it was enough to grievously injure him.

Due to him dodging the sword beams, Zhou Wen’s speed immediately dropped. This allowed the other officers to catch up to him. They didn’t stand on ceremony as they cast several Primordial Energy Skills at him.

They were experienced veterans and attacked viciously in a non-lethal manner. It was solely to heavily injure him so that he could be taken back.

A huge burst of blood shot out of Zhou Wen’s thigh as Liz’s sword beam sliced across it. The blood continued gushing out of the laceration.

Zhou Wen continued dashing forward in silence, but the injuries he suffered kept increasing. Although they weren't lethal, his wounds were extremely horrifying.

Liz was also alarmed. Although Zhou Wen was augmented by a Legendary Companion Beast and he was flying very quickly, he was ultimately at the Mortal stage.

Under their relentless attacks, he only suffered injuries without succumbing. Although he looked seriously injured, he had avoided having his vital parts injured. He hadn't suffered any serious damage.

This definitely had to do with Liz and company having no intention of really killing Zhou Wen, but he had been able to avoid any injuries that were enough to put him out of combat.

Many times, Zhou Wen was able to dodge an attack at the final moment even without taking a look. It was as though he had eyes in the back of his head. This shocked Liz greatly.

This Zhou Wen is so calm in battle. Even when injured, he chooses to allow himself to be injured to minimize the overall damage. He's terrifyingly calm. It's unbelievable that he's only sixteen. Liz looked at the bloody Zhou Wen flying off with a resolute look in his eyes. Her heart stirred as she thought, It's no wonder the An family chose him. It's probably not just because of the relationship between Zhou Lingfeng and Ouyang Lan.

Zhou Wen fought as he retreated. After his body was injured, his Lost Immortal Sutra automatically switched to Small Perfection of Wisdom Sutra. What further surprised him was that his wound pulled together to exert compression and prevent blood from gushing out just like Li Xuan.

I never expected the Small Perfection of Wisdom Sutra to have such ingenious uses. Zhou Wen was quite surprised.

The Small Perfection of Wisdom Sutra allowed Zhou Wen's Constitution to exceed 10—the only stat that reached 11. Therefore, it definitely boosted Constitution, but he had no idea what it did.

The Small Buddha Temple's stone staircase was already in sight. It had a metal fence barricading it with a forbidden zone sign to prevent students from accidentally venturing in.

Small Buddha Temple didn't have troops guarding it because it was unnecessary. If someone was really able to enter Small Buddha Temple and master the Small Perfection of Wisdom Sutra, the military would be very happy.

There were all kinds of similar, mysterious places in the world, but less than 10% of them had been completely cleared.

Zhou Wen rushed to the fence as his left arm conjured the skeleton bracer. He tore a huge hole through the fence and immediately crawled through it.

Liz and company weren't from Luoyang, so they knew little about the recently discovered Buddha City. Although they saw the forbidden zone sign, they continued their pursuit.

Firstly, Liz needed to capture Zhou Wen as soon as possible. Secondly, with Zhou Wen in front of them, he would end up bearing all the dangers first. Therefore, she didn't hesitate to rush in with her men.

In the narrow rock passageway ahead, the space that allowed him to dodge decreased. Liz managed to slash a

beam on Zhou Wen’s back, causing him to trigger the Lotus Flower Buddha Body skill. However, a long bloody gash cleaved open on his back as he was thrown forward. He spat out blood when he slammed onto the stone steps high above.

Liz approached Zhou Wen with a sword in hand as she said coldly, “Zhou Wen, you’re cornered. Stop having illusions that you can escape. Returning with us to assist in the case will only benefit you,”

Zhou Wen shot a look at Liz and company who had managed to catch up to him. Wiping away the blood that trickled from the corner of his mouth, he said indifferently, “Why would I be escaping? You are the ones who should be escaping.”

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 83 - Stalemate at the Stone Stairs

Chapter 83 Stalemate at the Stone Stairs

“Madman.” Liz ignored what Zhou Wen had said. She gestured with her hand for the officers to head over and apprehend the heavily injured Zhou Wen.

She had already wasted too much time, far more than she had originally planned. It was already hard to tell if they could take Zhou Wen away before the An family came. She couldn’t afford to waste any more time.

The few officers lunged forward. By heading higher, the stone stairs had broadened. They were no longer as narrow as before, allowing them to rush up together.

But this time, Zhou Wen didn’t immediately run. He sat at the top of the stairs, striking forward at the officer that led the charge.

This strike seemed soft and powerless as though he hadn’t exerted a sliver of strength. The officer was nearly two meters away, so not even his sleeves were touched.

Liz and the few officers naturally didn’t believe that Zhou Wen had the ability to strike them from a distance. Skills that could project Primordial Energy was considered a minority even at the Legendary stage, so it was impossible

for someone at the Mortal stage to master such a skill. Even if there was one, someone at the Mortal stage didn’t have the Primordial Energy needed to support the expenditure.

However, with Zhou Wen’s gentle strike, the officer silently collapsed to the ground. It instantly shocked the rest.

Zhou Wen remained unperturbed as he repeatedly struck the air. In response, the remaining officers collapsed in the zone as though their souls had been dissipated.

Liz was stunned and bewildered, nearly unable to believe her own eyes. The few Legendary officers had clearly stopped breathing; yet, she couldn’t tell how they had been killed by Zhou Wen. Her eyes flickered with a glint of shock and puzzlement. Momentarily, she didn’t dare approach him.

Yet Zhou Wen knew very well that they hadn’t been killed by him. Instead, it was the mysterious force of the stone stairs and Small Buddha Temple that robbed them of their lives.

However, no one knew this mysterious force better than Zhou Wen. He had accurately estimated the moment of the officers’ death and just posed with a strike. It was simply to scare them off.

What puzzled Zhou Wen was that Liz wasn’t affected by the stone stairs’ force; otherwise, she should have been lying dead.

Strange, don’t tell me Liz possesses a Primordial Energy Skill similar to Heart Meditation? That’s why she hasn’t been killed by that mysterious force? But that’s not right. Even if she has something like that, she doesn’t know the secret of this place. She wouldn’t be using it ahead of time… What’s happening?

Zhou Wen was puzzled, but he didn’t show it. He continued sitting on the stone stairs with a leisurely look, looking down at Liz with an air of superiority. “I didn’t want to kill, but why did you have to force me?”

His words were half-truths. If Liz hadn’t forced him, he definitely wouldn’t wish them dead, much less make people from the bureau die.

He didn’t know if he could explain their deaths clearly in the future, with the possibility of the League putting him on a wanted list.

But even so, Zhou Wen didn’t wish to expose the secret of his mysterious phone.

At most I’ll be a fugitive, escaping into dimensional zones that aren’t within human control. As long as I have the mysterious phone, the dangers of the dimensional zones are nonexistent to me. Zhou Wen made up his mind that if he were truly cornered, he would have to become a wanted fugitive.

“Don’t try to act all mysterious. Do you think you can fool me?” Liz didn’t believe that a student like Zhou Wen at the Mortal stage could possess such terrifying power.

However, she was unable to instantly tell how the four officers had died. This hesitance made her lack the courage to directly rush forward.

“You can give it a try if you don’t believe it. Let’s see if my Formless Divine Palm is capable of killing you,” Zhou Wen said with a deadpan expression as though he had everything in the

bag.

However, Zhou Wen was lamenting inwardly, I've already stalled for so long. Even without Heart Meditation's protection, no matter how strong Liz is, she should have died on the stone stairs. Why is she completely fine?

"What Formless Divine Palm? I've never heard of it." Liz kept staring at Zhou Wen and the four dead officers in an attempt to figure out the reason for their deaths.

"The Formless Divine Palm is colorless and shadowless. It kills people in an invisible manner, a Primordial Energy Skill Ouyang Lan gave me. It was meant to protect me, and I usually wouldn't readily use it. If you hadn't cornered me today, I wouldn't have used such a vile Primordial Energy Skill." Zhou Wen spoke nonsense, but he was considering how he could escape.

He didn't believe he could really scare Liz. She hadn't rushed up because she hadn't figured out how her four colleagues had died and was unwilling to take the risk.

Liz was doubtful of Zhou Wen's words. It was true she couldn't tell how the deaths occurred because they didn't seem to have any injuries at all.

Suddenly, an idea came to Liz. She recalled the forbidden zone sign she had seen and immediately came to a realization. She sized up her surroundings and sneered. "Then, let me try and see how your Formless Divine Palm can kill me!"

As she spoke, Liz summoned a Companion Beast.

It had pure-white wings and supple skin and was dressed in a white gown. It resembled the mythical angel but had one thing that was different. This angel Companion Beast didn't have a head. It was empty from the neck up.

“Headless Angel!” Zhou Wen immediately cried out when he saw the headless angel.

Headless Angel was very famous as a Companion Beast. Although it came from the League’s West district, its name had already spread across Earth’s League.

Headless Angel wasn’t a true angel, but a figure in western legend.

Legend had it that a pious nun believed in God with the purest heart, hoping that she could one day ascend to heaven to serve God as an angel.

Every person who saw the nun believed that she was the purest and most flawless person in the world. Therefore, everyone who knew her believed that she was bound to ascend to the heavenly kingdom after her death, becoming an angel who would serve God.

Perhaps the nun’s devotion moved God. One day, God descended before the nun and cast a divine light down on Earth, purifying the nun’s body into that of an angel’s.

Just as the nun’s body was being transformed into an angel’s body, she saw a prisoner on death row piously praying and confessing to God.

Hence, the nun asked God, “That prisoner is so pious. Can you absolve him of his sins?”

God answered, “I can, but his sins need to be burdened by someone. If you agree, you can replace the prisoner at the guillotine and bear his sins.”

After hearing that, the nun resolutely chose to bear the sins for the prisoner. Hence, with a flash of divine light, the

prisoner at the guillotine was switched to the nun who was quickly transforming into an angel. Before her body could completely turn into an angel’s, her head was chopped off.

was

Although her head had been chopped off, the other parts of her body were already that of an angel. It was an unaging and immortal body that didn’t die because of a beheading.

However, the head wasn’t able to recover due to it not being angelized. Therefore, the nun became the legendary Headless Angel in western legend.

Although the name was terrifying, a Headless Angel was synonymous with purity in the West district.

After the dimensional storms, inside one dimensional zone in the West district, a Headless Angel dimensional creature appeared. It was later slain by humanity and its Companion Egg obtained.

As such, the Headless Angel at the Epic stage became famous across Earth’s League. She wasn’t the greatest at combat strength but she was great for protection.

With the protection of a Headless Angel, all kinds of evil forces like curses and hexes were unable to harm her master. It was to date, the strongest defensive Companion Beast in the West.

The master of Headless Angel relied on her defensive powers to explore dimensional zones amidst many mysterious dangers-ones that humanity believed were forbidden-returning safely every time.

Hence, the fame of Headless Angel intensified. But based on what Zhou Wen knew, there was only one Headless Angel Companion Beast, and its owner wasn’t Liz.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 84 - Headless Angel

Chapter 84 Headless Angel

Headless Angel wasn’t a Companion Beast with offensive traits. Its body appeared like a holy halo that floated in front of Liz.

Liz extended her hand and beckoned, causing the Headless Angel’s body to quickly transform into a white crucifix that landed in Liz’s palm.

The crucifix suffused a holy glow that made Liz appear like a goddess with it in hand.

Zhou Wen finally understood why Liz hadn’t been killed by Small Buddha Temple’s mysterious force. It was likely due to the Headless Angel’s protection.

He didn’t hesitate to turn around and flap his wings to fly towards Small Buddha Temple.

The wings the Silver-Winged Flying Ant manifested gave Zhou Wen Speed that was in no way inferior to a pinnacle Legendary. He instantly rushed to the entrance of Small Buddha Temple at the end of the stone stairs.

Zhou Wen originally didn’t wish to risk entering Small Buddha Temple in real life, but now wasn’t the time to consider that. All he could do was enter to seek refuge.

“Continue running and I’ll cut off your legs.” Liz’s voice was cold as she held the Headless Angel’s crucifix. Like a panther, she chased after Zhou Wen with a sword in her hand. She then slashed it at Zhou Wen’s thigh like it was a whip.

Liz had previously held back due to her qualms with regards to the An family.

However, the death of the four officers had triggered Liz’s rage. All she wanted to do was take Zhou Wen back alive. She had zero other scruples.

The strike was exceedingly fast as the sword beam instantly arrived behind Zhou Wen.

Summoning the Silver-Winged Flying Ant with clenched teeth, he made it watch his back as he rushed into Small Buddha Temple.

At the same moment Zhou Wen rushed into Small Buddha Temple, he heard a creaking sound behind him. When he looked back, he saw the Silver-Winged Flying Ant’s two foreclaws cleaved apart by Liz. Even its forehead had a bloody gash that was seeping blood.

Reality wasn’t a game, so the Silver-Winged Flying Ant couldn’t be revived if it died. With a thought, Zhou Wen summoned it back as he continued running into the temple hall at full speed.

Without the Silver-Winged Flying Ant’s wings to help him, his speed was much slower.

The environment inside the Small Perfection of Wisdom Sutra was identical to the game. The first thing he saw when he entered the Small Buddha Temple’s compound was the

stone monument with the Small Perfection of Wisdom Sutra inscribed on it.

In reality, the stone monument looked even more ancient and spartan as though it had suffered the ravages of time. The mottled exterior made it look even more rugged as if there was an indescribable charm to it.

Zhou Wen couldn’t be bothered with it. He circulated the Small Perfection of Wisdom Sutra as fast as he could before rushing into the temple hall.

Liz followed closely behind as she slashed her sword at Zhou Wen’s thigh again without any hesitation. It was as though she wanted to lop off both of his legs.

Even without turning his head, Zhou Wen was able to know that the sword beam was already behind him, due to Truth Listener.

He leaped without any hesitation towards the temple hall.

In midair, he felt the bottom of his feet become chilly. His sports shoes were made of high-tech cloth and had their soles sliced off. Even some of the flesh on the sole of his feet wasn’t spared. The bleeding of his soles was rather harrowing.

However, Zhou Wen had finally rushed into the temple hall and landed on the stone panes.

Buddha, please watch after me. Let the forces in this temple be effective against that woman; otherwise, that mad woman will definitely lop off my legs. As Zhou Wen retreated inside the temple, he prayed silently.

Under the Headless Angel crucifix's protection, the forces of Small Buddha Temple seemed to lose all its original mystery, being completely useless against Liz.

Liz held the crucifix in one hand and sword in the other, dashing straight inside the temple hall.

However, at the instant one of her legs breached the temple hall's interior, the three-faced Buddha statue inside suddenly widened its eyes.

Bang!

The holy crucifix's glow instantly exploded like a red-hot metal piece being shattered by a sledgehammer. The glow of the crucifix seemed to splatter like liquid and instantly became dim. It even seemed incomplete.

As though she had suffered a tremendous blow, her body flew backward and slammed into the stone monument, her mouth spewing out blood.

Liz struggled on the ground and failed to get to her feet.

Zhou Wen was delighted and surprised by this, almost to the point of giving the statue a thumbs up and expressing his deepest feelings: 'You're awesome.'

Without thinking further, he summoned the injured Silver-Winged Flying Ant—its front claws had been sliced off and its head injury was serious. Thankfully, it hadn't died.

Zhou Wen instructed it to conjure Magical Needle and shot at Liz.

At this stage, if he could retain everyone, Zhou Wen would still have the time to escape from Luoyang and into the

unknown dimensional zones.

However, if he allowed Liz to escape and gather more people for a second wave of attacks, he probably wouldn’t have a chance of escaping

Liz could hardly move due to her serious injuries, but she was able to summon a Companion Beast that resembled both a tiger and a lion. It picked her up and dodged the Silver-Winged Flying Ant’s Magical Needle before rushing out of the temple.

Zhou Wen immediately carried out his pursuit, but the Silver-Winged Flying Ant was too injured and unable to maintain its companion form. Hence, he wasn’t able to catch up with her.

When he rushed to the stone staircase, the Legendary Companion Beast had already run far away with Liz.

Despite seeing that he couldn’t catch up to her, he continued pursuing while giving Li Xuan a call, explaining the entire situation to him.

He didn’t hope that Li Xuan could help him resist the bureau; he only hoped to get some suggestions from him.

Zhou Wen was still a student, so he had limited horizons. Furthermore, he knew little about the bureau and wasn’t sure what was his best option.

Liz was enraged as she endured her injuries, rode the Companion Beast out of Underground Buddha City and headed for the school’s entrance.

Zhou Wen resisting arrest was already a serious crime. She believed that she now had every right to mobilize the forces

of the bureau to openly capture Zhou Wen without worrying about the An family.

“Immediately inform the Minister…” As Liz rushed out of the school gates, whilst trying to order the bureau officers outside the school to contact Qiao Siyuan, she suddenly stopped, stunned.

She saw the officers who often appeared high and mighty standing silently by the roadside with their heads bowed. Beside them were a row of soldiers aiming their rifles at them.

And on the road opposite them, there was a black sedan car. Beyond the rolled-down windows in the backseat, she saw a handsome man sitting there. He was looking straight at her.

“An Tianzuo!” Liz couldn’t help but tremble when she saw the man.

Back when she was in the vice-chancellor’s office, she had claimed that she didn’t care if he came and would continue carrying out whatever she needed to do. However, when she actually saw An Tianzuo, everything was different.

This ridiculously young man had authority in the League that made even her uncles steal glances at him. Although she was about the same age as him, their level of accomplishment was on completely different levels.

“Overseer.” Liz endured her pains and came off the back of her Companion Beast, bowed at An Tianzuo, and forced a smile.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 85 - The An Family Has A Mine

Chapter 85 The An Family Has A Mine

“Who gave you the guts to dare harm the students of Sunset College on its campus?” An Tianzuo asked Liz while sitting inside the car.

“Overseer, I’m Liz from the Special Investigation Bureau. I am under orders from Congress to arrest people related to Jing Daoxian…” Before Liz finished her sentence, she suddenly heard a bang.

She felt an intense pain and burning feeling coming from her left thigh. While crying out loud, she couldn’t help but fall to the ground on one knee as a bloody, gaping hole appeared on the side of her thigh. There were burn marks on her wound.

Besides the sedan car, a man in military uniform and white gloves holstered his pistol and said, “Answer whatever the Overseer asks, and nothing that he doesn’t ask.”

“How dare you fire at me? You…” Before Liz could finish her sentence, she heard another bang. A bullet had shot through her other leg, causing her to collapse to the ground with blood pooling around her.

“As the adjutant to the Overseer, I am obligated to remind you once more that you only need to answer the Overseer’s questions. If you say anything wrong or utter any unnecessary nonsense, the next thing to be crippled won’t be your legs,” the white-gloved man said gently with a smile.

If it wasn’t because he had crippled Liz’s two legs, anyone would have mistaken him for a kind man who couldn’t bear to kill even a mosquito.

However, Liz’s forehead was breaking out into a cold sweat. It wasn’t just a result of the excruciating pain in her legs, but more a chill that came from deep down in her bones.

Upon seeing the white-gloved man raise his gun again and aim it at her head, Liz snapped to her senses and, ignoring the pain in her legs, shouted, “It was Minister Qiao Siyuan who sent me.”

At this moment, she had forgotten the status that she had always been proud of and her family’s standing in the League. She only knew that if she didn’t immediately answer the question, the seemingly harmless man would immediately blow her brains out.

Liz didn’t hesitate that the bullets within the gun had such might. Typical bullets could hardly injure her, but that didn’t include bullets made of Primordial Gold.

Very few materials could damage dimensional creatures on Earth, but Primordial Gold was one of them. And the An family controlled the biggest Primordial Gold mine in the League. The reserves it had covered more than 70% of the entire Earth League’s reserves. Wealthy tycoons who could extravagantly use Primordial Gold in bullets weren’t unheard of, but the An family was probably the only one to actually issue them to one’s troops.

“Call Qiao Siyuan,” An Tianzuo said mildly again, but it was a tone that didn’t permit any doubt.

The white-gloved adjutant handed a phone to Liz.

Liz didn’t hesitate and reached out to call Qiao Siyuan.

Qiao Siyuan was feeling uneasy, having a nagging feeling that something was about to happen. Just as he was frowning in thought, he heard his phone ring.

It was an unknown number. Seemingly realizing something, he picked up the call and said, “I’m Qiao Siyuan. Who’s this?”

“I’m giving you five minutes. If I do not see you, all those who dared cross Sunset College will be executed by firing squad.” A male voice with a magnetic charm sounded from the phone.

“H… Hello…” Qiao Siyuan broke out into a cold sweat. He wanted to say something, but the phone emitted a loud beep, an indication that the call had already been disconnected.

What has Liz done? I clearly told her to be quick and bring Zhou Wen back before the An family arrived. Now, even An Tianzuo is there. Qiao Siyuan immediately felt his head ache, but he didn’t hesitate. He didn’t even put on the coat on his chair, he rushed straight out of the office, heading for Sunset College.

He was long aware of An Tianzuo’s style of doing things, but he never expected him to be so domineering to even dare execute a Senator’s daughter.

The League’s Congress was split into the Senate and the House. They were all representatives of the various areas of the League and were voted in by the citizens of each jurisdiction.

The Senate was different. There were perpetually six Senators, with only people from six families qualified to have a seat. They were the families of the Six League Heroes.

The Senate had veto rights for any bills the House proposed. It could be said that the entire League's government was in fact controlled by these six families.

Every League President was also selected from one of the six families.

And the Special Investigation Bureau that Qiao Siyuan was from came directly under the Senate. Under the insistence of the Senate, agencies like the Special Investigation Bureau, which were hated by all, continued their existence in the League.

Liz wasn't considered a smart woman, and her work ethic had never left Qiao Siyuan assured. However, as she was a daughter of a Senator, he had no choice but to keep her by his side.

If Liz was really executed by An Tianzuo, Qiao Siyuan didn't dare imagine what the outcome would be. He didn't know if An Tianzuo would die as a result, but he knew that his death was a certainty. There was no question about it.

Outside Sunset College, the nearby road had been sealed off by the soldiers. The students and passersby didn't know what was happening and could only circle around it.

"How long has it been?" An Tianzuo looked at the sky outside and asked casually.

"4:43," the adjutant looked at his watch and politely replied.

An Tianzuo didn’t say a word as he waved his hand. Immediately, a row of soldiers raised their rifles, aiming their black muzzles at the back of Liz’s and other officers’ heads.

Liz was trembling. She had never felt this afraid before because she could tell that An Tianzuo really had no scruples about killing her.

She really wished to say that she was a Senator’s daughter and declare her identity, but she was afraid that the moment she spoke, the seemingly harmless and perpetually smiling adjutant would blow her brains out.

“Overseer, it’s time,” the adjutant turned and politely said to An Tianzuo after looking at his watch.

“Then, proceed with the execution,” An Tianzuo said indifferently.

“Overseer Sir, please wait.” A voice suddenly sounded from the sky as a figure flapped two wings and rushed down from the sky.

The person who landed on the ground with his clothes soaked in sweat was none other than Qiao Siyuan. He had rushed over at such speed that he nearly had a heart attack. Thankfully, he had arrived just in time.

Upon seeing Liz’s crippled legs, Qiao Siyuan’s heart was filled with agony.

“You’re Qiao Siyuan?” Although An Tianzuo sat in the car, making his eye level much lower than Qiao Siyuan’s, the way he looked at him was as though he was looking from high above.

Qiao Siyuan walked to the car and said politely, “I’m Qiao Siyuan from the Special Investigation Bureau, Overseer Sir. Can we have a private chat?”

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 86 - Heaven is on the Right

Chapter 86 Heaven is on the Right

“There’s nothing that needs to be hidden. Just say it straight,” An Tianzuo said indifferently, without looking at Qiao Siyuan.

Qiao Siyuan’s heart skipped a bit, aware that there was likely no way of conciliating the matter today.

“Overseer, Liz and the rest were just acting under orders from our people higher-up. This matter has nothing to do with them. Can they be sent to the hospital?” Qiao Siyuan drew a deep breath and said.

“Who are the people higher-up,” An Tianzuo continued asking with the same expression.

“Overseer, you should have heard of Jing Daoxian, right?”

“The League’s vilest criminal.”

Qiao Siyuan continued, “Jing Daoxian slaughtered many high-ranking members of the League at the League government office. It halved our League’s strongest combat strength and set back our overall strength by ten years. The Senate has always placed the utmost importance on Jing Daoxian. Over the years, the League has been trying all means to pursue him. Our Special Investigation Bureau has also been putting in great efforts towards this cause. Just a few days ago, we discovered that Jing Daoxian had interacted with Zhou Wen.”

“Oh, so are you implying that Zhou Wen is in cahoots with Jing Daoxian?” An Tianzuo shot Qiao Siyuan a look.

Qiao Siyuan shook his head and said, “We are still unable to confirm if they are in cahoots; therefore, we wanted to invite Zhou Wen back to assist in our investigations. Overseer, you are of noble birth, but the responsibilities you bear are unimaginable to the typical person. It’s not easy for you nor the An family. Why should you burden yourself with nagging tongues because of a huge problem like Jing Daoxian? Besides, didn’t you once criticize Zhou Wen and say that there was a problem with him?”

“So are you saying I should thank you?” An Tianzuo asked.

“Not at all. Overseer, I’ll just be extremely grateful if you can understand where we are coming from.” Qiao Siyuan felt more and more uneasy as he forced a smile.

An Tianzuo looked at Qiao Siyuan with a faint smile. “I did criticize Zhou Wen and I do find him a sore sight. But how I criticize or bully him is down to my whims, did I say that any Tom, Dick, and Harry could bully him?”

Qiao Siyuan’s expression instantly changed. He forced a smile and said, “Overseer, you’re absolutely right. We’ll definitely change for the better. We will definitely inform you of any operations that involve the An family in the future.”

“Not a bad attitude. Alright, I’m not an unreasonable person. Since you have said this much, I’ll spare their lives,” An Tianzuo said.

“Thank you, Overseer. I’m truly grateful. Feel free to issue me orders if there’s anything you need of me,” Qiao Siyuan quickly said.

“They can be spared from death, but not punishment. Otherwise, wouldn’t any Tom, Dick, and Harry come to Luoyang to do as they please? Are the League’s laws to be flouted?” An Tianzuo spoke another sentence, one that was completely different from the previous one.

Qiao Siyuan long knew that An Tianzuo wouldn’t let this matter rest easily as he grumbled inwardly, You are the one who’s best at flouting the League’s laws.

“You can take them back with you, but cripple them of their cultivation to prevent them from using it to run amok,” An Tianzuo said casually.

Liz was horrified when she heard that as she yelled crazily, “No… No… You can’t cripple me of my cultivation…”

Qiao Siyuan’s expression changed drastically as he said through gritted teeth, “They were just obeying orders and there’s nothing wrong with that. Overseer, if you were to punish them, what does this make of the Senate? You should also know the League’s present situation. The President and the Senators have spared no effort dealing with matters regarding Jing Daoxian. If you were to implicate yourself in this matter, wouldn’t it give a great opportunity to those people who are watching you and eyeing the An family’s Primordial Gold mine? Liz’s father is Senator Cape. If you give Liz a chance, Senator Cape and the entire Cape family will be very grateful. In the future, he will definitely help the An family at congressional meetings. A thought separates heaven from hell. Overseer Sir, you must think about it carefully.”

An Tianzuo looked at Qiao Siyuan in contempt and said, “Qiao Siyuan, do you know why my name is An Tianzuo?”.

“I’m afraid not. Please tell me, I’m all ears.”

“As the saying goes Heaven[1] is on the right, and Hell is on the left. And I incline towards the left[2],” An Tianzuo said indifferently.

“Ah!”

Liz let out a painful cry as the adjutant drew an exquisite knife, stabbing into her Primordial Energy sea. Blood stained the hand holding the knife, turning the white gloves red.

“Remember, Luoyang belongs to the An family.” An Tianzuo looked forward as his car windows wound up, slowly hiding his face.

At this moment, Zhou Wen was hurriedly sneaking out of Sunset College via the back door. Li Xuan had given him two suggestions. One was to head to the An family to seek their help in settling this matter. The second suggestion was to immediately hide in unknown dimensional zones, never to appear again.

Zhou Wen never wanted to have any relationship with the An family; therefore, he decided to flee into the dimensional zones. With the mysterious phone, unknown dimensional zones weren’t too dangerous for him.

He planned on escaping to the nearest, Dragon Gate Grotto. There were many dimensional zones in its vicinity that humans had yet to explore to date.

However, just as he left Sunset College’s back door, he saw a young, refined-looking military officer standing there in a military uniform and white gloves.

“Young Master Wen, Madam has gotten Overseer to take you home for dinner.” As the young officer smiled, he revealed

two rows of neat, white teeth, emitting a warm, comforting glow like the sun in spring.

When Zhou Wen sat inside the car, beside him was the person whose name he knew but had never met before-An Tianzuo.

They had never met and had no ties in the past. But now, there was a particular relationship between them, making the mood rather delicate.

“You must hate me, right?” An Tianzuo suddenly asked.

Zhou Wen never expected him to say this. However, he wasn’t someone with a high EQ, so he replied, “I wouldn’t call it hate, but I definitely ain’t fond of you.”

“Very good. This is what I want to say to you. I have never believed that you have the qualifications to replace Little Jing. It has been that way in the past, the present, and will be so in the future,” An Tianzuo’s gaze was peeled to the front as he spoke without expression.

“You are talking about An Jing? How did I replace her?” Zhou Wen asked with a frown.

An Tianzuo didn’t reply but said indifferently, “I really don’t understand why my mom believes you are better than Little Jing. A man who only knows how to escape reality when encountering something doesn’t have the right to be called a man, much less be better than Little Jing.”

“I think you should visit a doctor and check if you have a screw loose in the head.” Zhou Wen felt that An Tianzuo was definitely crazy as he spoke in a completely baffling manner.

The adjutant, who was driving the car, couldn’t help but twitch when he heard Zhou Wen.

(1) Tian in An Tianzuo’s name can be interpreted as heaven.

[2] Zuo in An Tianzuo’s name is a homophone to left.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 87 - Special Physical Condition

Chapter 87 Special Physical Condition

This was Zhou Wen’s second time at the An family home. Although An Tianzuo didn’t like him, what had that got to do with him?

Zhou Wen sat beside Ouyang Lan and focused on eating. He had a great time chatting with Ouyang Lan.

An Tianzuo and An Jing sat opposite him and focused on eating as well as though they couldn’t see him.

After dinner, Zhou Wen planned on bidding them farewell and leaving when Ouyang Lan pulled Zhou Wen’s hand and said, “Don’t be in a rush to leave. Have a walk with me.”

Zhou Lingfeng got up and was about to accompany them when Ouyang Lan said with a smile, “It’s rare for Tianzuo to return. Help me nag him to get married and have children so that he can carry on the family line. Also, teach him how to coax women. You are the best at that.”

Zhou Lingfeng said with a bitter smile, “Can you not sully my reputation when you’re getting me to help?”

“This is me praising you,” Ouyang Lan said with a giggle as she headed out while holding Zhou Wen’s hand.

The An family home was really big and beautiful. As they walked on the stone trail inside the garden, Ouyang Lan said, “Little Wen, there’s something troublesome that I took the liberty of pushing the matter on you. Can you help me?”

“What is it?” Zhou Wen asked in surprise.

Ouyang Lan sat on a bench by the side of the lawn and said in thought, “When you were in school, you must have heard of the story of the Six League Heroes, right?”

He nodded. “It’s how humanity first slew a Mythical creature. It was also them who established the League government and ended the darkest and most chaotic period of humanity.”

Ouyang Lan said with a smile, “Establishing the League government is real, but it’s not necessarily true that darkness and chaos were ended.”

Zhou Wen’s knowledge of this was limited to his textbooks, so he waited silently for Ouyang Lan to continue.

“Currently, the League appears to be stable and flourishing, but there are dark undercurrents surging. Something can happen anytime that develops into a cataclysm for human society,” Ouyang Lan said with a sigh.

“Is the cataclysm related to dimensional creatures?” Zhou Wen asked.

“The dimensional zones restrict the region of activity of dimensional creatures, but no one knows how long such restrictions can last. However, this isn’t the most pressing cataclysm at the moment.”

Ouyang Lan paused before continuing, “In fact, the greatest cataclysm now is humanity itself. The Six League Heroes established the League and on the surface, it promotes democracy and freedom, but in fact, the ones in true power are the Senate and President. And the selection of these people comes from the families of the Six League Heroes. Therefore, the League is in fact no different from an autocracy.

“And an autocracy needs absolute central power. But in this era, to have absolute rule clearly isn’t an easy task. At the very least, the families of the Six League Heroes do not have the absolute strength to control all of the Earth League. Even though they have been working hard for a number of years, it’s noticeable from the outcome, that their control over the League is constantly weakening. Currently, the League is more of a fragmented nation with rival factions.”

Upon saying that, Ouyang Lan cast her gaze on Zhou Wen and asked with a smile, “Do you know why the League remains stable and doesn’t completely collapse despite reaching such a state?”

“I don’t,” Zhou Wen said with a shake of his head.

“That’s because, in the League, only the families of the Six League Heroes have experts at the Mythical stage.”

Zhou Wen was surprised. “Isn’t it said that no one in the League has broken through to the Mythical stage?”

“If one relied on themselves, it’s true that no one has been able to break through to the Mythical stage, but there’s a shortcut that allows humans to first obtain Mythical Companion Beasts and then by nurturing them, use their powers to advance to the Mythical stage. That’s why

Mythical experts are born amongst the families of the Six League Heroes," Ouyang Lan said.

"Then what's the shortcut?" Zhou Wen asked curiously.

"You were chased into Small Buddha Temple by the Inspection Bureau. You should have seen the stone monument and temple hall. Engraved on the stone monument was a Primordial Energy Art. If you can master it, you can enter the temple hall and directly receive the mysterious powers from the dimension; thus, obtaining a Mythical Companion Beast."

"Really? Then as long as Small Buddha Temple is controlled, wouldn't we be able to obtain a Mythical Companion Beast just like the families of the Six League Heroes?" Zhou Wen said, feigning surprise.

Ouyang Lan shook her head. "It's not that simple. To master the Primordial Energy Art on the stone monument, one needs a special physique. And people with such bodies are one in a billion. In a place like Small Buddha Temple, there are far more than one or two that have been discovered in the League. However, the number of people who can truly master the mysterious Primordial Energy Art is a pathetic number.

"The six heroes all had special physiques. Furthermore, they found the mysterious lands that matched their bodies and mastered the mysterious Primordial Energy Arts, obtaining their Mythical Companion Beasts." After a pause, Ouyang Lan continued, "However, the special physiques of their bodies weren't innate, but obtained from a mysterious dimensional zone. There are still mysterious creatures inside it that can make other humans obtain special physiques like

the six heroes; thus, obtaining a chance to acquire a Mythical Companion Beast.”

“With such a place, the hero families probably do not wish to share it with others, right?” Zhou Wen asked.

Ouyang Lan curled her lips. “If they have the strength to suppress the entire League, they naturally won’t share it with others. Unfortunately, even if they have Mythical experts, it’s only limited to a few people. To suppress the massive Earth League is impossible. Besides, there are terrifying enemies overseas, beyond the League’s jurisdiction. The hero families can’t just put all their efforts on their own members.”

“Enemies overseas?” Zhou Wen was puzzled.

“The Earth League only controls the land. Overseas, there are other human factions in existence. I’ll tell you about them in detail in the future. To prevent the League from fracturing, the hero families have given the bigwigs of the various lands certain candidate spots, allowing the descendants of these bigwigs to have a chance of entering such mysterious lands. They will vie with the descendants of hero families for the chance to obtain special physiques. This temporarily stabilizes the League’s peace on the surface. As for the An family, it possesses one such spot.”

“Don’t tell me you gave me the spot?” Zhou Wen suddenly realized something as he looked at Ouyang Lan in disbelief.

She nodded and said, “That spot was meant for Little Jing, and with her talent and capabilities, she had a very high chance of obtaining a special physique. Unfortunately, she was born with an ailment. As her mother, I don’t wish for her to take further risks. Therefore, I wish for you to replace

Little Jing in this competition and obtain the special physique, thereby obtaining a Mythical Companion Beast.

“I will need to ask for your forgiveness for changing our nominee to you without obtaining your permission. Furthermore, it can’t be changed again.” Ouyang Lan patted Zhou Wen on the head and said with a smile, “You don’t have to feel too pressured. I never planned on sending An Jing to begin with, so this spot would have been a waste. That’s why I changed it to you. So don’t worry if you aren’t willing to go.”

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 88 - Entering Tiger Cage Pass Again

Chapter 88 Entering Tiger Cage Pass Again

“Why didn’t you give the nomination to An Tianzuo?” Zhou Wen asked after some thought.

Ouyang Lan said with a smile, “Because he’s too strong. It’s useless sending him.”

Zhou Wen didn’t understand what Ouyang Lan meant. However, he had a general idea. Perhaps the obtaining of a special condition limited one’s evolutionary level.

“Why did you give me the nomination?” Zhou Wen wasn’t silly enough to believe that this nomination would be for nothing.

Even if An Tianzuo and An Jing couldn’t do it, the An family could use this nomination to exchange for immense benefits. Many famous and noble families would be very interested in this nomination spot.

Taking ten thousand steps back, the An family could always give the spot to another collateral relative. It was a big family clan, so it would be easy for it to find someone suitable.

Ouyang Lan looked at Zhou Wen and said, “Little Wen, whether you believe it or not, since I’ve married Lingfeng,

we should accept each other's children. I'll treat you as my own child. Of course, Tianzuo and Little Jing are my children, so my feelings for them go far deeper than yours. If all three of you were to encounter danger together, I'd definitely prioritize saving them. But other than that, I'll do my best as a mother."

"There's no need for you to do that." Zhou Wen was actually quite fond of Ouyang Lan's style.

She said, "You don't have to feel psychologically burdened. This is just a thought of mine that I won't force on you. If you wish, this family's door is forever open to you. If you aren't willing, I won't get others to disturb you. Everything is up to you to choose."

"Do you really believe that I can obtain the special physique?" Zhou Wen still found it inexplicable why Ouyang Lan was so confident in him.

Even someone as outstanding as An Jing wouldn't have absolute confidence, and with Zhou Wen not yet having advanced to the Legendary stage, he was far inferior to An Jing to others.

Ouyang Lan smiled as she raised her phone and opened the Photos app. She opened up a photo that had a refined, bespectacled old man on it.

"Do you know him?" Ouyang Lan pointed at the elderly man in the photo and asked.

"He's the former principal…" Zhou Wen said in surprise. Back in Guide High School, he had been very taken care of by the former principal.

As Zhou Wen spent most of his time living alone, he seldom returned home when he was in high school. He even spent the weekends arduously cultivating.

Whilst doing this, he would often encounter the former principal. Over time, they built up quite a relationship. The former principal had even invited him over to his place for meals.

Later, the former principal had to retire early due to his ailing physique. Back when he left, Zhou Wen had planned on sending him off, but the former principal refused. He claimed that he hated such scenes the most.

Ever since then, Zhou Wen never met him-it had almost been a year.

“It was he who told me that you’re excellent, far better than Little Jing. Although I’m not fully in agreement with that, you must be excellent since he says so,” Ouyang Lan said with a smile.

“What’s your relationship with the former principal?” Zhou Wen looked at Ouyang Lan and asked politely.

“He…” Ouyang Lan blinked craftily before saying, “is my father.”

“Ah!” Zhou Wen widened his eyes as he looked at the photo and back at Ouyang Lan. They did share some resemblances.

After Zhou Wen returned to the school’s dormitory, he still found it incredible. The woman his father had married happened to be the former principal’s daughter.

Ouyang Lan told him not to worry further. The Special Inspection Bureau wouldn’t find fault with him in the future under the premise that he didn’t leave Luoyang.

She also told Zhou Wen that he could attempt cultivating the Sun Strafe Art that An Jing gave him.

The Sun Strafe Art also came from a mysterious land; however, it had been modified to a simplified version that could be cultivated even without special physiques. In fact, the famous Primordial Energy Arts, like the Invincible Connate Divine Art, all had similar origins.

However, the simplified versions were inferior to the original versions. They lacked the capability of obtaining Mythical Companion Beasts.

Although the simplified versions were a lot weaker than the original versions, they were still far stronger than the typical Primordial Energy Art. Ouyang Lan hoped that Zhou Wen could master the Sun Strafe Art to increase his chances when he vied for the special physique and Mythical Companion Beasts.

Even if he wasn’t concerned about these two factors, cultivating such a high-level Primordial Energy Art only brought benefits.

Zhou Wen didn’t make his decision on whether he would be vying for the special physique, but he did plan on taking a look at the Sun Strafe Art.

It wasn’t that he didn’t wish to cultivate the Sun Strafe Art, but since the Primordial Energy Art came from lands of mystery like the Small Perfection of Wisdom Sutra, Zhou Wen wished to know if the Lost Immortal Sutra had any effect on these Primordial Energy Arts.

Having had the USB drive in his possession for so long, this was the first time he was seriously reading the contents. The Sun Strafe Art was indeed a high-level Primordial Energy Art, far greater than Ascetic Meditation.

After reading the entire Sun Strafe Art, nothing happened to the Lost Immortal Sutra in him. It wasn't like when he had read the Small Perfection of Wisdom Sutra in which the Lost Immortal Sutra would automatically switch to the Small Perfection of Wisdom Sutra's circulation method.

Could it be that I need to see the original scriptures for it to be of use? Zhou Wen guessed inwardly.

Zhou Wen put away the USB drive and was about to use his phone to grind the Tiger Cage Pass dungeon when Li Xuan came to him.

"The An family has settled the problem for you. The Special Inspection Bureau won't dare come again. You can rest easy now. Isn't it about time we complete the test mission Counselor Wang gave us?" Li Xuan said with a grin.

"Alright," after some thought, Zhou Wen agreed. After all, they didn't have much time left. It wasn't a bad idea to complete the test mission now.

Although Wang Fei had said that they could kill the Demonized General in a team of four, Li Xuan and Zhou Wen had no intention of recruiting others. Just the two of them were good enough.

Sunset College was so large that news of yesterday's ongoings on hadn't spread to the others. Those who knew Zhou Wen and what had happened were even fewer. Amongst those students, they didn't react differently when they saw Zhou Wen either.

Zhou Wen and Li Xuan were walking towards Tiger Cage Pass when they suddenly heard a commotion up ahead. Then, they saw many students running back.

A few of them were running and shouting, “Run! There’s a word-engraved Demonized General ahead. It’s rushing over here.”

As the strategy had specially mentioned that even Legendary stage experts were not necessarily able to defeat word-engraved Demonized Generals, none of the freshmen dared to take risks. All of them fled for the Tiger Cage Pass dimensional zone’s exit.

“We sure have bad luck. To think that a word-engraved Demonized General would appear. Let’s head back now and wait until the school eliminates it before coming back.” Although Li Xuan was arrogant, he knew where to draw the line.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 89 - Blade Demonized General

Chapter 89 Blade Demonized General

Zhou Wen naturally didn’t mind. Word-engraved Demonized Generals were extremely powerful, pinnacle existences among Legendaries. He was only confident of killing Blade Demonized Generals among the word-engraved Demonized Generals. If he were to encounter a Paper Demonized General, death was certain, so there was no need for him to take the risk.

Just as the two were prepared to leave, they saw the stocky Demonized General riding over on a red horse with spear in hand. A few female students were too close to it and were about to be caught up by it.

“Sis!” Li Xuan took a careful look and immediately, the color in his face drained. He summoned the Jade-Eyed White Tiger and rushed over against the escaping crowd.

Zhou Wen also saw Li Weiyang among the students being pursued by the Demonized General. However, he did not rush over immediately. He was too far away and couldn’t see clearly what the engraved word on the head was.

If it was Blade, he was confident that he could help Li Xuan rescue Li Weiyang. It was even possible to kill it in passing and he might obtain something good.

However, if they had encountered a Paper Demonized General, Zhou Wen would only be sending himself to his death if he rushed over. It would be meaningless.

Li Weiyang had the Legendary Companion Beasts, Black Knight and Jade-Eyed White Tiger. Even if they weren't a match for the Paper Demonized General, they were enough to rescue Li Weiyang by sacrificing them.

"Isn't Li Xuan your friend? Why aren't you going to help him?" Zhou Wen was trying to make out the word engraved on the Demonized General's helmet when he heard a familiar voice.

He turned around and saw An Jing standing beside him with a deadpan expression. She had walked over at some point in time.

Her tone had a clear hint of mockery. He glanced at her before ignoring her. He turned his head back to scrutinize the Demonized General's helmet, trying hard to figure out what the word was.

Although Zhou Wen was quite fond of Ouyang Lan, it did not mean that he had a favorable impression of everyone in the An family. At the very least, he didn't have a favorable impression of An Jing and An Tianzuo, so he didn't want to have any interaction with them.

Zhou Wen wouldn't vent his anger on Ouyang Lan because of the An siblings, but he wouldn't extend his fondness to them just because of her.

An Jing didn't say anything else. She also knew that it was unrealistic for a Mortal stage student to fight a word-engraved Demonized General. It wouldn't be a heroic act but a suicide.

However, for some reason, An Jing just found Zhou Wen a sore sight. Even if he did the right thing, she just couldn't help but poke fun at him.

Although she said that, An Jing's eyes were peeled at the Demonized General. She was prepared to summon her Companion Beast to engage it in combat.

Firstly, it was because An Jing wouldn't allow her fellow students to be killed by the Demonized General and secondly, the probability of a word-engraved Demonized General's appearance was very low. Once it appeared, it became the target of the best students in school.

The Companion Beast and Primordial Energy Skill that the word-engraved Demonized General dropped were extremely rare and very useful.

The Companion Beast needed no explanation. It was a Legendary Companion Beast with exceptional strength and could even be of certain use in battles with Epic creatures. It was a top-grade Legendary Companion Beast that was extremely rare.

The word-engraved Demonized General's Primordial Energy Skill was also very useful. The Paper Demonized General's Astral Suction Palm, the Blade Demonized General's Astral Slash Blade, and the Fist Demonized General's Astral Fist were all rare top-grade Primordial Energy Skills among Legendary ones.

Astral Suction Palm could suck things across space. Astral Slash Blade had a blade beam that was as fast as lightning. Astral Fist's explosive might was unparalleled. All of them were Primordial Energy Skills that Legendary experts yearned for.

Unfortunately, there were too few word-engraved Demonized Generals. The drop rate of Companion Beasts and Primordial Energy Skill crystals were just too low. It had been years since the discovery of the Tiger Cage Pass

dimensional zone, but the number of people with word-engraved Demonized General Companion Beasts and Primordial Energy Skills was few in number.

Inside Sunset College, if one could possess a word-engraved Demonized General Companion Beast, or possess a word-engraved Demonized General's Primordial Energy Skill, they would be envied by everyone.

It was easy for An Jing to get Companion Beasts and Primordial Energy Skills, but to obtain a word-engraved Demonized General Companion Beast wasn't an easy endeavor. There were just too few of them and there was practically none on the market for sale.

Furthermore, a Companion Beast that dropped from one's kill gave one a better sense of achievement than buying one.

Just as An Jing was prepared to take action, she saw Zhou Wen suddenly dash forward like a released arrow as he headed straight for the word-engraved Demonized General.

An Jing was taken aback as she hurriedly rushed over.

Although she found Zhou Wen a sore sight, she didn't wish to see him die here.

She believed that she could easily catch up to him since she was already at the Legendary stage while he was only at the Mortal stage.

However, shortly after she chased him, she saw Zhou Wen with four translucent silver wings behind his back. Instantly, his speed was elevated significantly and was in no way inferior to a Legendary. He was even faster and prevented An Jing from catching up to him.

A Legendary Companion Beast? An Jing was puzzled. Zhou Wen was only at the Mortal stage which usually meant the impossibility of incubating a Legendary Companion Beast unless Zhou Wen cultivated in Primordial Energy Arts like the Invincible Connate Divine Art.

However, An Jing knew him pretty well. She knew that he only cultivated in Ascetic Meditation which made it impossible for him to incubate a Legendary Companion Beast at the Mortal stage.

Furthermore, she had never seen the Companion Beast he was using. This was quite astonishing to her, considering her background as a member of the illustrious An family.

Even if he has a pinnacle Legendary Companion Beast, it’s impossible to fend against a word-engraved Demonized General. An Jing knew how powerful they were, so she didn’t stop and continued rushing forward.

However, she didn’t plan on overtaking him this time. She wanted to know how strong Zhou Wen currently was. She could take action when he was in danger.

Zhou Wen didn’t think too much. The moment he saw that the Demonized General’s helmet was a Blade, he had rushed forward.

Since he had the ability to help, there was no reason for him to idly stand by. Furthermore, word-engraved Demonized Generals had a low probability of spawning even in-game. Zhou Wen was already hoping to find a Blade Demonized General, so encountering one here was a boon.

Just as Li Xuan had said, he had summoned the Jade-Eyed White Tiger and Black Knight to stop the Demonized

General, protecting Li Weiyang and the other girls as they retreated.

The Black Knight rushed right in front of the Demonized General and slammed forward by relying on its heavy armor.

Bang!

The Demonized General’s strange spear thrust out powerfully with roaring flames, stabbing the Black Knight’s helmet right into the breastplate. Half of the Black Knight’s body was slammed into the ground like a wooden column.

Meanwhile, the Jade-Eyed White Tiger had leaped up, flashing its claws at the Demonized General’s neck. However, before it arrived in front of the Demonized General, the left hand slashed out with a faint, thin blade beam, splitting the Jade-Eyed White Tiger into two.

Li Xuan felt his heart ache. Although Legendary Companion Beasts weren’t much to him, the Jade-Eyed White Tiger was quite a rare Legendary Companion Beast, so finding a second one wasn’t going to be easy.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 90 - Annihilating the General with One Palm

Chapter 90 Annihilating the General with One Palm

After killing the Jade-Eyed White Tiger, the Demonized General didn’t cease at all. It raised the strange spear in its hand and the crescent-like side blades swept across the Black Knight’s waist with terrifying flames.

Half of the Black Knight’s body was buried in the ground and it was unable to move at all. If it was struck, it was likely to have its head separated from its body.

“Leave quickly.” Li Xuan didn’t have the luxury of time to moan over his Companion Beasts. The Blade Demonized General was just too fast and powerful. The speed at which it killed the Jade-Eyed White Tiger and Black Knight had far exceeded Li Xuan’s expectations. If they didn’t pull open a distance quickly, it would probably chase after them again.

Suddenly, a figure flew over Li Xuan, arriving above the Demonized General in a blink of an eye. Then, it was split into two.

Zhou Wen had summoned the Silver-Winged Flying Ant and was riding on its back, rushing straight for the Demonized General’s head.

The Demonized General waved its left hand, shining out a lightning-like blade beam that moved at an inconceivable speed. The instant it smashed down, the beam had arrived in front of the Silver-Winged Flying Ant.

The Silver-Winged Flying Ant spread its four wings and phased away with silver, dreamy light. Its speed was instantly raised to a terrifying level, allowing it to dodge the Demonized General's blade beam.

An Jing, who was prepared to take action, was stunned. The Blade Demonized General's Astral Slash Blade was famous for being fast, accurate, and mighty. Yet, that Companion Beast had managed to dodge it. It truly caught her by surprise.

To have a non-avian Companion Beast that has a flight Primordial Energy Skill is rather rare. An Jing stopped in her tracks as she watched the battle.

When the Demonized General missed the Silver-Winged Flying Ant with its blade, the strange spear in its hand swept flames up into the sky, hoping to sweep the Silver-Winged Flying Ant and Zhou Wen down.

However, the Silver-Winged Flying Ant agilely changed directions in midair, dodging the Demonized General's strike. At the same time, its stinger shot out Magical Needle at the Demonized General's head.

However, before it reached the Demonized General, it was cleaved apart by the Astral Slash Blade it sliced out with its left hand.

Zhou Wen controlled the Silver-Winged Flying Ant as he battled the Demonized General. Using its speed and flight

capabilities, and Silver Wing Flash, he dodged all of the Demonized General's attacks.

"Old Zhou, that Companion Beast is awesome. Where did you get it from? Help me get one in the future." Li Xuan's eyes glimmered as he slipped effortlessly into address Zhou Wen affectionately.

To use speed to dodge the Demonized General's attacks made the Silver-Winged Flying Ant a pinnacle speed-type Companion Beast.

An Jing, Li Weiyang and company also noticed the value of the Silver-Winged Flying Ant, but An Jing was able to figure out more.

That strange flying ant is a top speed-type Companion Beast at the Legendary stage, but to be able to dodge the Blade Demonized General's attacks so perfectly isn't something that can be done with speed alone. Zhou Wen's control and predictions are all excellent. An Jing didn't let her hatred for him affect her own judgment. She could tell how formidable Zhou Wen really was.

With Zhou Wen fighting the Demonized General, Li Xuan finally seized the opportunity to get the Black Knight to escape from the ground. Just as he was about to order it to help, he saw Zhou Wen jump off from the Silver-Winged Flying Ant's back.

"Holy sh*t, Old Zhou, what are you trying to do?" Li Xuan jumped in fright. For the Mortal Zhou Wen to lunge at the Demonized General looked no different from courting death.

Li Weiyang and the other students had their hearts pounding nervously as though they were about to leap out of their chests. Even An Jing's breathing sped up.

From An Jing’s point of view, Zhou Wen’s actions were too rash. Furthermore, there weren’t any substantial effects.

He was only at the Mortal stage. With Strength at the Mortal stage, even if it was boosted by Primordial Energy Skills, striking a Demonized General’s helmet probably didn’t deal it much damage.

Zhou Wen wore a stoic expression as his body rapidly plummeted. He swung his arm that had been enveloped by the skeleton bracer, striking straight at the top of the Demonized General’s head.

This leap looked like a risky move, but in fact, Zhou Wen had already simulated it hundreds of times in his head. Ever since he had fought the word-engraved Demonized General, he had been thinking of a way to kill them.

The only possibility was to first kill the Blade Demonized General. As for the Paper Demonized General, he temporarily had no means of killing it.

This leap had been calculated by Zhou Wen countless times before he deduced the opportunity.

Back when the Silver-Winged Flying Ant kept flying, it had made the Demonized General run through all its moves. Its Primordial Energy Skills had all been used and it couldn’t immediately use them again. All those powerful moves prevented it from instantly retaliating against Zhou Wen.

Bang!

Zhou Wen leaped down headfirst as his palm struck the Demonized General’s helmet.

If it were only an ordinary Mortal Primordial Energy Skill, it wouldn’t be able to tear through the helmet’s defense with the skeleton bracer’s augmentation.

However, Zhou Wen’s Ashen Palm at Rank 10 was different. This was a palm with a cold, explosive might. It could generate a penetrative effect at short distances.

Although this palm looked like it had smacked the helmet, its force had already penetrated into the Demonized General’s head, striking its brains.

With the success of the attack, Zhou Wen pressed down on the Demonized General’s helmet and used the reactionary force to retreat several meters. The Silver-Winged Flying Ant was already waiting there for him as he somersaulted and landed on its back, his eyes staring intently at the Demonized General.

As he had never attempted it in-game, he wasn’t sure of the effects of this palm strike.

An Jing, Li Xuan, and the other students were also staring at the Demonized General. They felt that the palm didn’t seem to have much of an effect as there wasn’t any mark on its helmet.

But the next second, the Demonized General looked up and spewed a mouthful of blood before collapsing from its horse. The red horse neighed as it exploded, scattering its flesh and blood everywhere.

He had managed to slay a word-engraved Demonized General! When An Jing saw the horse explode, she knew that the Demonized General was definitely dead.

Li Xuan yelled, “Did anyone do a recording? Did anyone record that battle? How long did he take?”

The school’s test missions required video proof. Although he didn’t know how long Zhou Wen had taken, it didn’t feel like he took more than ninety seconds.

“I did,” a girl beside Li Weiyang said meekly.

The few of them had come to complete a test mission, so they had a video recording the entire time. They had also recorded the battle that had just finished.

Li Weiyang got the girl to play the recording as they looked over. He had taken 79 seconds.

“Old Zhou, you took 79 seconds to kill a word-engraved Demonized General. You are really awesome!” Li Xuan yelled at Zhou Wen.

Zhou Wen was in no mood to care about the numbers. He ran straight to the dead Demonized General, hoping to find a dimensional crystal or Companion Egg from its corpse.

Pulling apart the Demonized General’s helmet, he saw red and white fluids flow out. Amidst that was a resplendent object.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 91 - Astral Slash Blade Beam

Chapter 91 Astral Slash Blade Beam

Li Xuan and company noticed the egg-sized crystal that Zhou Wen pulled out.

The crystal looked dreamy with a glow flickering within it. The glow had the appearance of the Demonized General, making it a Primordial Energy Skill Crystal.

“The Blade Demonized General’s Primordial Energy Skill. I wonder which one is it. He’s really struck it rich if it’s Astral Slash Blade,” Li Xuan said as he approached to take a look at the crystal.

As the Blade Demonized General had several Primordial Energy Skills, with Astral Slash Blade being one of them, the chances of it dropping were extremely low even if a Primordial Energy Skill Crystal were to drop.

By the side, An Jing suddenly said, “The Demonized General figure inside the crystal has a faint red glow on the word engraved on top of its head. This Primordial Energy Skill Crystal is Astral Slash Blade.”

“It’s really Astral Slash Blade! Old Zhou, your luck is really unparalleled!” Li Xuan said in excitement, “If you wish to sell this Astral Slash Blade skill, just sell it to me. I’ll quickly advance to the Legendary stage, so I’ll be able to use it.”

Zhou Wen shook his head slightly and placed the Primordial Energy Skill Crystal in his pocket.

The average person couldn’t withstand the surge of Primordial Energy Skills at the Mortal stage. Any forceful absorption would damage the body, and in serious cases, might even lead to death.

However, Zhou Wen was different. If he could take the Primordial Energy Skill into the game and let the blood-colored avatar attempt to absorb it, he himself wouldn’t be in any danger.

Zhou Wen had already tried absorbing Legendary Primordial Energy Skills in-game and all of them had happened without a hitch.

Zhou Wen’s news of killing the word-engraved Demonized General quickly spread across campus. To kill one in 79 seconds was unheard of even amongst special admissions students.

However, the topic of conversation was the Silver-Winged Flying Ant. Many people believed that it was due to it that Zhou Wen was able to slay the word-engraved Demonized General. Such Speed and ability of flight made it a top Speed-type, flight-capable Companion Beast among those at the Legendary stage.

After Wang Fei saw the recording of Zhou Wen slaying the word-engraved Demonized General, she gave Zhou Wen a very high evaluation, believing him to be a talent worth nurturing

Even An Jing, who always found him a sore sight, viewed him in a different light. She believed that Zhou Wen would once again get back on his feet, turning back into the genius he once was.

However, Wang Fei and An Jing quickly realized they were wrong. After killing the word-engraved Demonized General, Zone didn’t come out of his dorm at all. He didn’t enter the dimensional zones to train himself, nor did he attend any classes.

An Jing often saw Zhou Wen lying in the yard, holding his phone gaming while sunbathing. He gamed for several hours at a time without even changing his pose.

After he obtained the Astral Slash Blade Primordial Energy Skill, many students tried to buy it from him through different means, but they were all rejected by him.

Although Zhou Wen already had the ability to kill Blade Demonized Generals and could always slowly grind one in-game, that would take him too much time. He didn’t wish to waste any time for just some pittance of money.

On the day he returned home with the Astral Slash Blade Crystal, he had tried using the mysterious phone to snap a picture of it. It instantly pulled it in-game and allowed him to successfully master the Astral Slash Blade Primordial Energy Skill.

What left Zhou Wen perplexed was that Astral Slash Blade was somewhat different from the typical Primordial Energy Skill. This was because it didn’t have a rank and the amount of Primordial Energy it expended wasn’t fixed.

Either 1 or 10 points of Primordial Energy was enough to release Astral Slash Blade, but the unleashed force was different. The more Primordial Energy used, the stronger the Astral Slash Blade’s beam was.

Zhou Wen had tested the might of the Astral Slash Blade in-game. When using 10 points of Primordial Energy, it could

instantly cull the Legendary Silver-Winged Flying Ant in midair. It was fast and ruthless, giving him the exhilaration of killing someone through empty space. It was something Ashen Palm and Vigor Divine Fist couldn’t compete with.

Over the past few days, Zhou Wen had been grinding Tiger Cage Pass in a bid to encounter Paper Demonized Generals. He wanted to see if Astral Slash Blade could crack the Primordial Energy Skill of the Paper Demonized General.

Unfortunately, his luck was terrible. After repeatedly grinding Tiger Cage Pass, he only encountered one word-engraved Demonized General. It wasn’t a Blade Demonized General, but a Fist Demonized General.

When Astral Slash Blade and Zhou Wen’s other Primordial Energy Skills hit the Fist Demonized General, its body would flash a golden light as though it was layered in gold. Even the Astral Slash Blade’s beam couldn’t leave a scratch.

Finally, the blood-colored avatar was slain by the Fist Demonized General with one charge, leaving him rather disheartened.

However, he was used to such outcomes. Compared to others being capable of encountering one word-engraved Demonized General in a timespan of two to three months, his efficiency was considered a lot higher.

Just as he was preparing to continue grinding Tiger Cage Pass, he heard his phone ring. He still picked it up despite it being an unknown number.

“Is this Zhou Wen? You have a delivery.” A man’s voice sounded from the phone.

I don’t think I bought anything on the Internet recently. Who would deliver something to me? Zhou Wen thought for a while to no avail. However, he went to the door to take receipt of the parcel.

The parcel wasn’t very big. Zhou Wen looked at it carefully and saw that the sender had the word “principal” written on it.

The former principal mailed me something? Zhou Wen found that the most probably.

Previously, Ouyang Lan had mentioned to him that the former principal had been invited to a mysterious dimensional zone and hadn’t returned to date. That was because the magnetic fields there were abnormal, preventing any communication devices to be used. Even Ouyang Lan didn’t know his present situation.

After returning to his dorm, Zhou Wen opened the parcel and couldn’t help but be shocked when he saw the thing inside.

The parcel wasn’t big to begin with. Stuffed inside it were several old newspapers, but the only thing of note was a name card.

It was a real name card. The owner of the name card was the owner of a dimensional crystal shop. His name was Qin Xiyuan. On the back of the name card was the address and contact number of the shop.

Apart from that, there was a string of numbers that were handwritten at the bottom. It was just underneath the telephone number, so it looked like an additional number to call.

Is this name card really from the former principal? Zhou Wen felt puzzled, unsure why he would mail this to him.

He picked up the delivery notice and tried calling the sender’s number, but he only received the notification: “The number you called is not in service.”

What’s going on? Zhou Wen couldn’t help but frown. He took a look at the sender’s address and saw that it was a place in the East District named Zhuolu County. There wasn’t an exact street or unit number.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 92 - Excellent-Grade Companion Egg

Chapter 92 Excellent-Grade Companion Egg

Zhou Wen studied it for quite some time before figuring out what the name card meant. On it was a string of handwritten numbers that didn’t seem like a telephone number.

Typical cell phone numbers were 11 digits with landlines being 7. However, this number had 10 digits, so it clearly wasn’t right.

It didn’t seem right either that certain digits of a cell phone number were missing. This was because the string of numbers started with a 5 while cell phone numbers typically started with 1. Most people usually wouldn’t write the first digit wrongly.

What does this string of numbers represent? Zhou Wen had the urge to ask the former principal if it was from him, but he didn’t have his contact details.

Although he could return to the An family to ask Ouyang Lan, he didn’t wish to have too much interaction with them, nor did he wish to head to the An family home again.

Ouyang Lan was nice, but Zhou Wen wasn’t fond of the An siblings, much less wish to have much to do with them.

After some thought, he put away the name card. If this item had really been mailed to him by the former principal, it was likely that he would contact him in the future.

After packing up, Zhou Wen continued gaming

Wang Fei’s mood was terrible. Her opinion was that Zhou Wen was a genius. For him to slay the Blade Demonized General single-handedly, that level of combat skill was enough to shock Sunset College even if one didn’t consider his cultivation talent.

Wang Fei believed that if he was properly nurtured, his future was limitless. Furthermore, Ouyang Lan had also requested her to take good care of him.

No matter how good his talent is, it will all go to waste if he keeps gaming. I have to place him back on the right track. Wang Fei believed that she was obligated and responsible for teaching Zhou Wen well.

Even without Ouyang Lan, she didn’t wish a genius like Zhou Wen to let his talent go to waste.

How can I get Zhou Wen to quit gaming and reestablish his values towards life and the world? Wang Fei frowned in thought.

The harm games brought about was a serious societal issue before the dimensional storms. Countless parents and teachers did their best to stop students from being obsessed with gaming, but this problem wasn’t solved at its roots.

After the dimensional storms, due to the change in society and the collective consciousness, the number of students who gamed had reduced significantly. However, there were still many who were obsessed with gaming.

Wang Fei felt that Zhou Wen mustn’t have fallen too deep. After all, he had been a diligent student in the past. He was

only using games to escape reality after suffering a heavy setback.

However, from the two battles Zhou Wen engaged in after coming to Sunset College, his foundation was excellent. He had to be a very diligent and assiduous student. As long as his confidence and values towards life were established again, he could quit his gaming addiction.

After some thought, Wang Fei's eyes suddenly lit up. He that hides can find. Since Zhou Wen lost his confidence and is escaping from reality after his defeat by An Jing, wouldn't defeating An Jing allow him to reestablish his confidence?

The more Wang Fei thought about it, the more viable she found it to be. To get Zhou Wen to defeat a genius like An Jing was also a challenge and accomplishment for a teacher. This would only make it more interesting.

Wang Fei steeled her resolve to complete this plan of hers. She wished that a student she mentored could defeat An Jing who the An family treated like a treasure. Even her body heated up in excitement.

Zhou Wen didn't know that he had become a gaming addict youth in Wang Fei's eyes. He had even become a target for receiving plenty of help. At this moment, he was still focusing on grinding

Having lost count of the number of times he grinded Tiger Cage Pass, Zhou Wen finally encountered a word-engraved Demonized General. From a distance, Zhou Wen was delighted because engraving on the Demonized General's helmet was "Paper."

He sent the blood-colored avatar charging at the Demonized General for he was already very familiar with its series of

attacks. With the Silver-Winged Flying Ant's Speed, it wasn't difficult for him to deal with it.

When the blood-colored avatar dodged the strange spear's first strike, the Paper Demonized General used its Astral Suction Palm. It widened its left palm and aimed it at the blood-colored avatar.

The blood-colored avatar seemed to be bound by a potent, invisible force and was yanked towards the Paper Demonized General.

With a thought from Zhou Wen, the blood-colored avatar's left palm exploded a faint beam that resembled a blade. It instantly sliced through the invisible force beyond his body.

The Astral Suction Palm's strength was like a piece of paper that was sliced through by the sharp blade beam. The thin silk-like blade beam then cleaved into the gap between the Paper Demonized General's helmet and breastplate, beheading it with one strike.

Zhou Wen was delighted. Although he guessed that Astral Slash Blade could counter the Paper Demonized General's Primordial Energy Skill, he never expected it to be this strong. He had expended 10 points of Primordial Energy for the Astral Slash Blade, and it ended up beheading the Paper Demonized General.

'Killed Mutated Demonized General. Discovered Dimensional Crystal.'

However, what left Zhou Wen depressed was that the Paper Demonized General didn't drop a Primordial Energy Skill or Companion Egg. All it dropped was a Strength Crystal valued at 18.

If Zhou Wen had advanced to the Legendary stage, such a Strength Crystal was naturally the best. He would instantly have his Strength stat rise to 18. Unfortunately, he was still at the Mortal stage and his Strength’s limit couldn’t be broken. Having such a high-valued Strength Crystal was useless.

Rushing in the direction of Tiger Cage Pass, he was shot to death once again. It was equivalent to him committing suicide but he had no way of having the dungeon respawn its monsters without him dying.

When he entered the game again, Zhou Wen killed the Skeleton General, Silver-Winged Flying Ant, and Mutated Buddha Heart Lotus once more.

As the chances of a drop were too low, Zhou Wen’s repeated grinding didn’t reward him with anything good. However, with a massive number of grinding instances, anything with a low probability would eventually drop.

This time, after killing the Mutated Buddha Heart Lotus, a Companion Egg dropped. When Zhou Wen saw its stats, his eyes lit up. He nearly kissed the Companion Egg.

Mutated Buddha Heart Lotus: Legendary

Legendary Life Providence: Turbid Waters Clear Lotus

Strength: 18

Speed: 15

Constitution: 17

Primordial Energy: 18

Talent Skill: Blood-Patterned Buddha Aspect, Lotus Bullets, Venom Toad, Buddha Lotus Rage.

A Mutated Buddha Heart Lotus with four talent skills. Its Strength and Primordial Energy are considered at max level. Even for a flower-type Companion Beast with weak Constitution, it’s at 17. This Mutated Buddha Heart Lotus is an excellent one! Zhou Wen drooled as he looked at the Mutated Buddha Heart Lotus Companion Egg.

But in an instant, Zhou Wen felt vexed. He couldn’t bear to feed such an excellent-grade Mutated Buddha Heart Lotus to Truth Listener and the Silver-Winged Flying Ant.

However, if he were to incubate it, his lacking Primordial Energy might create new problems.

I can only risk it. Zhou Wen saw that the Mutated Skeleton Ant and Mutated Buddha Heart Lotus’s fusion success rate and decided to fuse them together.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 93 - Lotus Ant

Chapter 93 Lotus Ant

The game system gave a compatibility score of 34%. This also meant that the chance of a successful fusion was at about a third. It was quite a low probability.

However, the Mutated Buddha Heart Lotus was so excellent that Zhou Wen couldn’t bring himself to feed it to Truth Listener. He had no way of taking it out of the game after all.

As for the Mutated Skeleton Ant, although it was quite a good Mortal Companion Beast, it was limited by its Mortal stage. After having the Silver-Winged Flying Ant, there was a decreasing need for it. Even if he didn’t fuse it now, it would gradually be eliminated in the future.

Therefore, after plenty of thought, he decided to risk it to fuse the two Companion Beasts together.

After Zhou Wen chose to proceed with the fusion of the Mutated Skeleton Ant and Mutated Buddha Heart Lotus, the game system immediately gave a notification: ‘As the Mutated Skeleton Ant is an adult, the Mutated Buddha Heart Lotus will be treated as a supplement for fusion. Proceed with fusion?’

It was identical to the previous time. Zhou Wen was already mentally prepared, so he instantly chose ‘Yes.’

The Mutated Buddha Heart Lotus Companion Egg and Mutated Skeleton Ant bloomed with light as the former flew to the latter. As the two blobs of light merged into one, it

caused the entire phone screen to light up. Instantly, nothing could be seen.

Zhou Wen waited for quite some time until the phone's screen dimmed. Then, he heard a chime.

'Fusion successful. Obtained Legendary Companion Beast, Mutated Lotus Flower Ant.'

Only then could Zhou Wen see a Companion Beast on his screen. It didn't look much different from the Mutated Skeleton Ant from before. It still had a white bone exterior and its body seemed to be bigger. On its head, there was a budding blood-colored lotus flower.

After opening the stats of the Mutated Lotus Flower Ant, Zhou Wen was overjoyed by what he saw.

Mutated Lotus Flower Ant: Legendary

Legendary Life Providence: Turbid Waters Clear Lotus

Strength: 19

Speed: 17

Constitution: 18

Primordial Energy: 18

Talent Skill: Skeleton Pierce (Rank 10), Blood-Patterned Buddha Aspect (Rank 9), Lotus Bullets (Rank 5), Venom Toad (rank 8), Buddha Lotus Rage (Rank 9).

Companion Form: Bracer.

The Lotus Ant had inherited the Mutated Buddha Heart Lotus's Life Providence-Turbid Waters Clear Lotus. It was a

pretty good and pragmatic one that made it immune to venomous liquids and corrosion.

Amongst the four stats, only Speed was 1 point short of maxing out. As for Strength, it was an Overdrive at 19, having exceeded the limits of a typical Legendary maximum. It was considered the best among the best.

Even crazier was that the Lotus Ant had retained all the Mutated Skeleton Ant's and Mutated Buddha Heart Lotus's skills, becoming one with five Primordial Energy Skills. Furthermore, it was a terrifying existence with rather high Primordial Energy Skill ranks.

If such a Legendary Companion Beast was put on sale, just the fact that it had five Primordial Energy Skills was enough for it to be sold at an astronomical price. If there was an overall Legendary Companion Beast ranking, the Mutated Lotus Ant would definitely rank high.

In his joy, Zhou Wen summoned the Mutated Lotus Ant and saw a horrifying tank-sized ant appear in front of him. Its body was covered in terrifying bone spikes that made it look ferocious and terrifying.

But on its head was a red lotus flower. It was connected to the top of its head with a flower bud. It made its terrifying looks appear rather adorable.

As the Mutated Lotus Ant crawled, the lotus flower on its head would bob up and down, making it rather interesting.

Just as Zhou Wen was admiring the Mutated Lotus Ant, he suddenly heard the doorbell ring. After dispelling the summon, he opened the door and was astonished to see Wang Fei.

Sunset College’s education methods were very simple. One counselor led a class and was responsible for giving class homework and missions. Under normal circumstances, they wouldn’t be directly involved in the education of students.

Students could select which teacher’s classes they attended based on the mission they had. They could then learn the knowledge and techniques they needed.

Therefore, although Wang Fei was Zhou Wen’s counselor, there weren’t many opportunities for him to meet her. She typically wouldn’t request a meeting with her students before the ten-day deadline of the last mission.

Unless a student encountered problems and sought her help, a counselor typically didn’t interfere with a student’s usual studies.

“Zhou Wen, pack your things. Let’s have a walk,” Wang Fei said directly before he could even speak.

“Miss Wang, what do you want me to do?” Zhou Wen asked, feeling somewhat unhappily.

Wang Fei said with a smile, “Professor Chen has a project that requires a student to be his assistant. I think you are very suitable for it, so I recommended you to him.”

“Is that a homework mission?” Zhou Wen frowned slightly. He had no intention of being an assistant.

He had long heard of the benefits that came from being a professor’s assistant as it allowed one to interact with many high-level objects and broaden one’s horizons while also gaining some pointers from a professor. It was an opportunity many students wanted.

However, Zhou Wen didn’t like having such an opportunity. Although it was beneficial, it required him to sacrifice his time to work for the professor.

To other students, such work was a way of honing themselves, a type of improvement. But to Zhou Wen, it was a waste of time that would eat into his gaming time.

“It’s not a homework mission. I just find you very suited for it, so I recommended you. Professor Chen has great achievements when it comes to nurturing Companion Beasts. In Sunset College, he’s an authority in such matters. Furthermore, he has done a great amount of research on melee-fighting Primordial Energy Skills. I believe it will be very beneficial to you if you were to learn from him.” Wang Fei was feeling rather pleased with herself.

Professor Chen was a famous old fogey. Getting anyone to convince him to take in another student as an assistant was practically impossible. In Sunset College, not more than three people could get Professor Chen to agree to such a request.

Zhou Wen wasn’t able to see Wang Fei’s face as he said directly, “Miss Wang, if it’s not a homework mission, I hope to decline the offer.”

Wang Fei’s smile instantly froze. Imagining that Zhou Wen wasn’t aware of what was happening, she explained, “Professor Chen Qishan isn’t just an authoritative figure in Sunset College, but in the entire League. By being his assistant, you can come into contact with several high-level Companion Beasts and learn of their characteristics and powers. This will be of tremendous help to your future exploring of dimensional zones. Furthermore, Professor Chen is…”

Before Wang Fei could finish, Zhou Wen said firmly, “Miss Wang, thank you for your kind intentions. I still wish to decline. My usual homework missions give me enough stress. I need time for studying and revision. I really do not have enough time, so if it isn’t a homework mission, I wish to decline.”

Wang Fei felt as if she had been doused in cold water. All her excitement and glee instantly turned to nothing. It left her mood extremely nasty.

“Are you sure you are declining?” Wang Fei asked Zhou Wen with a glare.

“Yes, Miss Wang.” Zhou Wen clearly wasn’t good at reading people as he nodded.

“Alright.” Wang Fei turned and left, her teeth grinding angrily.

As Zhou Wen’s counselor, one who had paid special attention to him, Wang Fei knew that he hadn’t attended any teacher classes for the past few days, so what did he mean by studying and revision? Apart from slaying the Blade Demonized General, he likely spent most of his days in his dorm gaming.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 94 - Unwinding Monument

Chapter 94 Unwinding Monument

Wang Fei clearly didn’t plan on giving up just like that. Regardless of her being a counselor or Ouyang Lan’s good friend, she believed that she had the obligation to rescue Zhou Wen who was a gaming addict who had excellent talent.

Since you have no intention of improving yourself, I’ll make you realize the importance with the help of external forces. Wang Fei’s eyes darted about as she came up with an idea.

However, her idea couldn’t be carried out immediately. She needed to wait for the Demonized General slaying mission to end before she could use a new homework mission and force Zhou Wen to face the difficulty.

In the next homework mission, it appears I need to get that little fellow to make a trip to Jingshi Mountain. Wang Fei’s eyes flickered with excitement.

Jingshi Mountain was also known as Mount Laojun. It was the main peak in the of the Funiu Mountain Range that spanned 400 kilometers. Legend had it that this was the place the founder of Daoism, Li Er, had hidden himself. Although the legend’s veracity couldn’t be confirmed, Mount Laojun also became a dimensional storms zone after the dimensional storms. Furthermore, it became rather strange.

The other dimensional zones were fraught with danger with dimensional creatures extremely ferocious. However, Mount

Laojun’s dimensional creatures wouldn’t attack humans without reason. They almost never injured anyone.

Mount Laojun’s Golden Peak had many Daoist temples, but to date, no one had been able to conquer the Golden Peak.

Beneath the Golden Peak was a Wordless Monument. Although there were no words engraved on it, whoever viewed it would feel inspired and refreshed. They wouldn’t be frustrated by trivialities of the human world. Therefore, the Wordless Monument was named Unwinding Monument.

However, looking at Unwinding Monument for a while was good, but if one looked at it for too long, one’s mind would be so stimulated that not only couldn’t they sleep, they would even be in a hyperactive state, as though they had infinite energy and were eager to do something.

Some people who looked at Unwinding Monument for too long would begin boxing with all their might for three full days. Others would begin running until they were exhausted and unable to crawl.

In short, as long as one looked at the Unwinding Monument, they would become extremely inspired and diligent no matter how lazy they were.

The amount of time one looked at Unwinding Monument had to be controlled. If one were to stare at it for too long, they might die from overstimulation. It was something that had happened before.

Although Mount Laojun was in Luoyang, it wasn’t inside Sunset College. Therefore, Wang Fei planned on leading the class to Mount Laojun after the Demonized General homework mission was over.

Zhou Wen continued grinding in his form, but he wasn’t just mindlessly grinding.

He had planned on rushing into Ant City, Fire God Platform, and Tiger Cage Pass to see if there were any places similar to Small Buddha Temple. Unfortunately, he met with repeated failures.

Zhou Wen had a suspicion that the reason the Lost Immortal Sutra couldn’t advance him to Legendary had to do with his mastery of the Small Perfection of Wisdom Sutra in Small Buddha Temple.

Due to the Small Perfection of Wisdom Sutra, Zhou Wen’s stat had broken through to 11 points while the other stats remained at 10.

Therefore, Zhou Wen believed that the Lost Immortal Sutra allowed him to master other Primordial Energy Arts and they also could perhaps raise his other stats to 11.

He didn’t know if the Lost Immortal Sutra had such a feature, nor did he know if he could advance to the Legendary stage when all his stats reached 11. However, it brought him some hope, far better than not having any clue at all.

It was a pity that Zhou Wen didn’t find any places similar to Small Buddha Temple. There was a monument above the Fire God Platform, but there were firebirds protecting it, preventing him from rushing up and seeing what the monument with the word “Imperial” engraved on it was.

Truth Listener is said to be a Mythical Companion Beast, so all its beginning stats are at 11. Perhaps the value 11 has some specialness. Zhou Wen thought about rushing to the Fire God Platform again, but before he could rush to its peak, he died under the ever-increasing horde of firebirds.

From the looks of it, I need to obtain a Primordial Energy Art that imbues alacrity. It’s impossible to reach the top of Fire God Platform by simply relying on the Silver-Winged Flying Ant. Zhou Wen switched off the phone and began researching on the school’s website.

Currently, his phone had Ant Nest, Ancient Imperial City, Underground Buddha City, and Tiger Cage Pass. None of these dungeons produced Primordial Energy Skills that imbued alacrity. Therefore, Zhou Wen had to find new dungeons.

The school’s data was very comprehensive. When he searched for Primordial Energy Skills that imbued alacrity, he quickly found an **answer.**

Sunset College had many dimensional zones that produced such skills. And the most famous one was at Dragon Gate Grotto.

There were two from Dragon Gate Grotto. One of them was the Mount Dragon Gate’s Fish Dragon Transformation while the other was the Dragon Gate Grotto’s Dragon Gate Fairy Skill.

Mount Dragon Gate’s Fish Dragon Transformation stemmed from the legend of carps jumping through a dragon gate to transform into a dragon. It was a Primordial Energy Skill that allowed one to soar straight up to a height of hundreds of feet as though one was flying in the sky.

However, a single leap of Fish Dragon Transformation was enough to drain all of one’s Primordial Energy. Such massive expenditure wasn’t one that Zhou Wen needed. Furthermore, Mount Dragon Gate wasn’t in Sunset College.

Dragon Gate Fairy Skill was the complete opposite of Fish Dragon Transformation. It was a long-lasting Primordial Energy Skill that imbued alacrity. It used one's changes in motion to fly and dance in the sky like a fairy. Although it needed a point to leverage upon, making it not true flight, it was good enough.

However, obtaining the Dragon Gate Fairy Skill wasn't simple. This was only produced by the Lotus Flower Cave in Dragon Gate Grotto. Furthermore, the drop rate was very low. People could spend more than a year inside without having it drop.

Firstly, Dragon Gate Fairy Skill's drop rate was very low and secondly, there were very few dimensional creatures in Lotus Flower Cave.

Zhou Wen naturally didn't have any qualms about that. All he needed to do was head to Dragon Gate Grotto and download the dungeon before being able to grind it infinitely. He didn't need to worry about not having dimensional creatures to clear.

Of course, that was on the premise that he had enough blood to support such an action.

Thinking of how great his recent blood loss was, he drank a mouthful of his self-brewed blood replenishing tea. Although it didn't seem to be of any use, it gave him a placebo effect.

He was about to head to Dragon Gate Grotto and see if he could download it, but to his surprise, just as he left his building, he saw the young white-gloved military officer standing at his yard's entrance, instructing two soldiers to carry a crate in.

Zhou Wen recognized the young military officer. He was An Tianzuo’s adjutant and driver who he had met before.

Zhou Wen didn’t know why he was here. Just as he was about to ask, the adjutant said, “Young Master Wen, Madam has requested me to bring this crate to you. Please acknowledge receipt.”

Zhou Wen frowned slightly and walked over to the crate and opened it up a little. Immediately, he saw all kinds of dazzling dimensional crystals inside.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 95 - Dragon Gate Grotto

Chapter 95 Dragon Gate Grotto

“What’s the meaning of this?” Zhou Wen asked with a frown.

“Young Master Wen, this is your allowance for this month. If it’s not enough, you can always request more from Madam. She had actually planned on preparing a few Companion Beasts that would be suitable for you, but after recognizing the fact that you would be advancing to the Legendary stage soon, they weren’t made. There will be more choices and useful ones when the time comes,” the adjutant said.

“Sis Lan really gave this to me?” Zhou Wen asked the adjutant.

“Yes,” the adjutant answered with great certainty.

“Then help me thank Sis Lan. I appreciate the gesture, but I don’t need it,” Zhou Wen said as he lowered the lid.

The adjutant looked at Zhou Wen in surprise. “Young Master Wen, this is your allowance, just like Miss Jing. It’s what you deserve.”

“That’s what An Jing deserves, not me. I have no need for it either. Please return and tell Sis Lan. I respect her, but my surname isn’t An,” Zhou Wen said.

The adjutant looked at Zhou Wen but stopped trying to persuade him. He just took out a pen and paper to write down a cell phone number and handed it to him with both hands. “Young Master Wen, I’ll take the items back. This is

my number where I’m contactable any time of the day. If you have any requests, feel free to give me a call.”

“Alright. Thank you.” Zhou Wen took the paper slip and saw the number. There were the words “Ah Sheng” written behind the number, perhaps the name of the adjutant.

However, the name looked more like a nickname or pet name. It didn’t seem like a real name.

As though he noticed Zhou Wen’s doubts, Ah Sheng said, “I was picked up by Overseer An in a dimensional zone. I had suffered serious injuries to my head and lost all my memories. Overseer An hopes that I can be reborn from the flames, which is why he gave me the name “sheng” representing life. I also took on his surname as An. Young Master Wen, you can just call me Ah Sheng.”

“Alright, thank you Ah Sheng. Please help me take the things back.” Zhou Wen put away the paper slip and after sending Adjutant Ah Sheng off, he headed straight for Dragon Gate Grotto.

Ah Sheng returned to the An family with the items; however, he didn’t take them to Ouyang Lan but to An Tianzuo.

“Why did you bring the items back?” An Tianzuo looked at the crate with a frown.

“Young Master Wen wanted me to bring them back,” Ah Sheng said.

“Did you tell him that they were from my mom?” An Tianzuo asked.

“Yes, Young Master Wen said to thank her. He appreciates her gesture, but he doesn’t want the items,” Ah Sheng

replied truthfully.

“Then put them away,” An Tianzuo said after some thought.

“Overseer, I think Young Master Wen must have guessed that these things weren’t from Madam,” Ah Sheng added.

“Why so?” An Tianzuo asked with piqued interest.

“Just a feeling without any basis.”

“You aren’t a woman, so what feeling is there to speak off.” An Tianzuo paused and said, “This Zhou Wen has quite a backbone. However, one cannot be successful with backbone alone. If he wishes to cultivate the Sun Strafe Art, it’s a mystery how long it will take for him to advance to the Legendary stage without enough Primordial Energy Crystals. We can’t have Little Jing waiting for him all the time, right?”

“Overseer, I have something I’m not sure if I should say,” Ah Sheng said with some hesitation.

“Cut it out. When have you held back?” An Tianzuo said with a grunt.

Ah Sheng said, “Miss Jing’s body isn’t good, so Madam preventing her vying for the special physique is for her own good, but why must she compete with Young Master Wen for supremacy?”

An Tianzuo said lightly, “I know Little Jing’s personality all too well. She doesn’t care about the nomination, but she wants to prove to Mom that Zhou Wen isn’t as excellent as Grandfather claims him to be, and definitely not better than she is.”

Zhou Wen followed the navigation and headed for Dragon Gate Grotto.

As Dragon Gate Grotto was just too huge, Sunset College actually covered a tiny area of it. Most of it was outside the campus.

After Zhou Wen arrived, he realized a serious problem.

Places like Ancient Imperial City, Underground Buddha City, and Tiger Cage Pass had a small palm symbol that allowed him to see it at a glance, thereby successfully scanning it and downloading the dungeon.

However, Dragon Gate Grotto was a kilometer-long stretch. There were countless stone monuments and stone sculptures here, but there was nothing that resembled an entrance like a city gate. There was no obvious spot to find the small palm symbol.

There were many caves that could be entered in Dragon Gate Grotto. The dimensional zones inside formed an infinitely extensive area. For instance, the Lotus Flower Cave which Zhou Wen wanted to go to was just one of many.

Without the palm symbol, Zhou Wen could only follow the river, carefully taking in everything around him—the Buddha statues and stone sculptures. He hoped to find the palm symbol and download the dungeon into his mysterious phone.

The Dragon Gate Grotto had about a hundred thousand Buddha statues. The tallest one reached nearly twenty meters and there were more than fifty caves. The masonry numbered thousands. After the dimensional storms, every cave had a huge number of dimensional creatures appearing in their interior.

Zhou Wen looked around as he walked, making extremely slow progress. However, he didn’t find the palm symbol.

“Zhou Wen?” As he was searching for the symbol along the river, he suddenly heard someone call his name.

Zhou Wen turned and realized that the person who called out to him was the girl, Wang Lu, who lived next door to him.

“Zhou Wen, have you come to Dragon Gate Grotto for cultivation as well?” Wang Lu asked with a smile.

“I’m just here to take a look. I don’t plan on entering,” Zhou Wen said.

“Since you’re here, it’s a shame if you don’t go in. I heard there have recently been dragon roars inside Old Dragon Cave. There’s also a treasure-like glow that appears at night. It’s very strange. Why don’t you go in with me to take a look?” Wang Lu invited.

“The stranger it is, the more dangerous it is. It’s better I do not enter,” Zhou Wen said as he continued walking ahead.

Wang Lu stuck her tongue out and headed for Old Dragon Cave.

Dragon Gate Grotto was just too huge and there were too many carvings. To find a small palm symbol clearly wasn’t an easy task. Zhou Wen was very patient, but despite scouring every inch, he ultimately failed to find the tiny symbol.

Could it be that not all dimensional zones can be downloaded? Zhou Wen began having doubts, but he continued searching.

Outside Dragon Gate Grotto was a rather popular place as many Sunset College students came here for cultivation and to kill dimensional creatures.

There were some people from Luoyang who weren’t students who entered via the north entrance. He also saw many people setting up shop by the caves, some selling the dimensional crystals and Companion Eggs that came from the respective cave.

Upon seeing those stalls selling Companion Eggs, Zhou Wen suddenly had a thought. The mysterious phone can download a Companion Egg into the game via taking a picture. Then, can I take the Companion Eggs of others in-game by snapping a photo? The phone shouldn’t be smart enough to tell who the Companion Egg belongs to, right?

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 96 - Rock Qilin Companion Egg

Chapter 96 Rock Qilin Companion Egg

Zhou Wen wasn’t the kind of person who would rob for no good reason. Although he thought of doing so, he didn’t actually do it.

However, he still used the phone’s camera app to aim it at a Companion Egg placed on a stall but he didn’t press the shutter button.

Although he didn’t snap the photo, the phone’s screen still showed the Companion Egg’s stats.

Stone Warrior: Legendary

Life Providence: Stone Contract

Strength: 16

Speed: 13

Constitution: 16

Primordial Energy: 12

Talent Skill: Stone Blast Punch

It was a Legendary Companion Egg with very ordinary stats and nothing outstanding. However, the mysterious phone’s feature delighted Zhou Wen.

Dimensional crystals did not have numbers in real life, but technological methods could be used to roughly measure

their power. This allowed them to roughly tell the level of dimensional crystals.

However, Companion Eggs could not be measured at all because the same type of Companion Eggs gave almost the same figures even when measured using a device. To get a Companion Beast with excellent stats depended on luck.

With the mysterious phone's feature, he could directly see the Companion Egg's stats. That way, he didn't need to count on his luck and directly choose a Companion Egg with excellent stats for incubation.

The Companion Eggs sold at Dragon Gate Grotto were basically at the Legendary stage and were few in variety. Most stalls only sold two types.

One of them was a Stone Warrior and the other was Stone Qilin. Other than those, it was rare to see other types.

"Boss, are there any other Companion Eggs besides the Stone Warriors and Stone Qilin?" Zhou Wen asked curiously.

The boss shook his head impatiently and said, "No, Dragon Gate Grotto produces plenty of these. The other Companion Eggs have an extremely low chance of dropping. They are almost unobtainable. Even if someone obtains one, they won't sell it cheaply."

Before Zhou Wen could ask further, he heard someone beside him say, "The Stone Warriors and Stone Qilins are the most common dimensional creatures in Dragon Gate Grotto. The probability of them dropping Companion Eggs is also very high. In Luoyang, those at the Legendary stage will have two Companion Beasts but don't think little of them just because they are common. In fact, excellent-grade

Stone Warriors and Stone Qilins are rather powerful and useful Legendary Companion Beasts."

Zhou Wen turned his head and realized that the person who spoke was Wang Lu.

Wang Lu continued, "An excellent-grade Stone Warrior is top amongst its peers in terms of Strength and Constitution. They are just a tad slower. However, the might of its Stone Blast Punch is very powerful. It's a Companion Beast with extremely strong offensive ability. A Stone Qilin is even stronger. A typical Stone Qilin has a Primordial Energy Skill that can harden one's skin by turning it to stone, but if one can obtain a Stone Qilin that has Qilin Dominance Body, they will be a powerful existence among the top-ranking Legendary Companion Beasts.

After Wang Lu said that, the stall owner gave her a thumbs up and said, "This young lady is an expert. She even knows about Qilin Dominance Body. That's right, Stone Qilin with Qilin Dominance Body are indeed excellent among Legendaries, but despite the numerous Stone Qilin Companion Eggs, the number with Qilin Dominance Body are one in a thousand. They are just too rare."

With that said, the boss chuckled and pointed at a stone egg on his stall's counter. "I only have one Stone Qilin Companion Egg. Lady, do you want to try your luck?"

Wang Lu smiled and shook his head. "Although Stone Qilins are strong, they don't look very cute. It's not the type I'll like, so I think I should forget it."

Out of interest, Zhou Wen used his phone's camera to take a look at the Stone Qilin Companion Egg. Then, he was surprised to discover that the stats of the Stone Qilin egg had the talent skill of Qilin Dominance Body.

Is it that coincidental? Zhou Wen found it unbelievable. He carefully took a closer look and indeed, there was the Qilin Dominance Body Primordial Energy Skill. Furthermore, the other stats were pretty good. It was likely one of the most excellent Stone Qilins.

“How much is a Stone Qilin Companion Egg?” Zhou Wen asked.

“If you are paying in cash, 150,000 and you have yourself a deal.” When the boss saw that Zhou Wen was a student of Sunset College, he expected him not to have any high-valued dimensional crystals, so he only reported the price in terms of the League’s currency.

Zhou Wen shook his head with a wry smile. It was useless even if he knew that the Stone Qilin egg was an excellent-grade egg. He didn’t have the money to buy it even if he added up all the money in his accounts since it didn’t even reach 10,000.

Wang Lu suddenly said, “Zhou Wen, if you want this stone Qilin Companion Egg, why don’t you make a deal with me? Do me a favor and I’ll help you buy it.”

“What deal?” Zhou Wen asked, puzzled.

“I saw the video of you killing the word-engraved Demonized General. You were really impressive, so I hope that you can help me complete my homework mission,” said Wang Lu.

“Do you still need to spend money to hire someone to help with your homework mission?” Zhou Wen looked at Wang Lu in puzzlement.

Wang Lu was a special admissions student at Sunset College, so she was definitely not weak. She could even be

said to be an extremely strong person amongst her peers. It was hard to believe that a special admissions student like her, needed help in a homework mission.

Wang Lu smiled and said, “If it’s just a simple homework mission, I naturally don’t need your help. However, I want to get first place in class and even break the records. This requires

you.”

“What is your homework mission?” Zhou Wen asked after some thought.

“It’s to kill a Fairy in Lotus Flower Cave with a party of fewer than four people. There is no time limit, but the previous record is 56 seconds,” Wang Lu said.

“How much time do you have left?” Zhou Wen asked again.

“There are still six more days.” Wang Lu counted with her fingers.

Zhou Wen nodded and said, “Alright, deal.”

Wang Lu’s goal was exactly the same as his. Zhou Wen had to go to the Lotus Flower Cave anyway. It was best if he could download Dragon Gate Grotto as a game dungeon; otherwise, he had to enter the Lotus Flower Cave and kill a Fairy himself. He wanted to see if he could get the Dragon Gate Fairy Skill’s Primordial Energy Skill Crystal. Making a trade with Wang Lu in passing wouldn’t affect his plans.

Wang Lu was very straightforward. Upon hearing Zhou Wen agree to the trade, she directly bought the Stone Qilin egg for 150,000. She didn’t even blink her eyes or ask for a

discount. It delighted the boss so much that he couldn’t even contain his joy.

Zhou Wen didn’t stand on ceremony either. After receiving the Stone Qilin egg, he placed it in his backpack.

“Do you want to head to the Lotus Flower Cave now?” Zhou Wen asked. He felt extremely responsible when it came to mercenary jobs.

“I’d like to make a trip to the Old Dragon Cave first. If you have nothing to do, why don’t we go take a look together?” Wang Lu invited.

“I’ll pass. This is my phone number. Call me before going to the Lotus Flower Cave.” Zhou Wen gave Wang Lu his phone number.

Wang Lu was somewhat taken aback. It was her first time seeing such an insensitive man as Zhou Wen.

This person is really interesting. Wang Lu didn’t mind and turned to head to the Old Dragon Cave.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 97 - Mobile Game

Chapter 97 Mobile Game

Zhou Wen circled the nearby stalls and used his mysterious phone's camera to take a look at all the Stone Qilin Companion Eggs. As Wang Lu and the boss said, there were very few Stone Qilins that possessed the Qilin Dominance Body, so he didn't discover a second one.

It was common for students to use their phones to take photos. Zhou Wen's actions were not out of the blue, nor did he attract the attention of others.

The mysterious phone's functions are impressive, but unfortunately, I'm too poor. Even if I can discover excellent-grade Companion Eggs, I wouldn't have the money to buy them. Zhou Wen felt vexed.

It was impossible to sell the Companion Egg to earn money because although he knew that the Companion Egg was an excellent-grade egg, others didn't know that. It was impossible for others to buy an unknown Companion Egg at the price of an excellent-grade Companion Beast.

The dimensional crystals in the game could not be used, so they could not be exchanged for money.

Zhou Wen realized that unless he sacrificed some gaming time, it would be difficult for him to obtain money.

“Hey there, hey there, you are a freshman this year, right?” As Zhou Wen walked, a stall owner held him back.

Zhou Wen realized that the stall owner was about the same age as him and was wearing Sunset College’s uniform. He was also probably a student from Sunset College, so he asked, “I’m a freshman who recently matriculated. What’s the matter?”

“Junior, you came to Dragon Gate Grotto right after you matriculated. It’s obvious that you are a diligent student. However, dimensional zones are dangerous and you don’t know much about the dimensional zones in Dragon Gate Grotto. Entering like that is extremely dangerous. I have something good here that can allow you to understand the dimensional zone before entering,” the student-like stall owner said.

“I’ve already seen all the information available from the school.” Zhou Wen prepared to continue walking forward.

Upon seeing Zhou Wen about to leave, the young stall owner hurriedly peddled his service. “Junior, don’t leave. It’s useless just reading that information. Those things are dead after all. No matter how much you read them, it doesn’t imbue you with deeper memory from experiencing it yourself. I have something here that can make you faster than others. You will be able to understand the situation inside deeply before entering.”

“What is it? Show it to me.” Zhou Wen sized up the young stall owner curiously.

Seeing Zhou Wen’s interest, the young stall owner hurriedly took out his cell phone and opened a game app on his phone. Then, an extremely simple game interface appeared.

“Junior, this is a mobile game app I created. Don’t write it off just because of its graphics. The map and monsters here are designed according to Dragon Gate Grotto’s actual terrain and dimensional creatures. After playing this mobile game, you will have a full understanding of the Dragon Gate Grotto dimensional zone…”

The graphics of the mobile game were very simple, but this student’s creativity made Zhou Wen’s eyes light up.

“Senior, did you make this game yourself?” Zhou Wen asked as he looked at the game interface.

“That’s right. A person’s time and capabilities are limited after all, so it’s a little crude. However, I can guarantee that the content is absolutely real. They are places that I have personally been to. Those dimensional creatures were also seen with my own eyes.” The young stall owner came close to Zhou Wen and said, “Junior, download it. It’s absolutely beneficial for you. You can download it from the official app store. It’s only a hundred bucks.”

“Alright, I’ll download it to take a look. What’s your name, Senior?” Zhou Wen found the game app on the app store according to the name he was told.

“My name is Huang Ji. Junior, you have good taste. Work hard.” Seeing Zhou Wen download his game, Huang Ji was overjoyed.

Zhou Wen launched on the game and played. He realized that the controls were smooth and the graphics were crude. The avatars’ and dimensional creatures’ actions were stiff like robots.

“Senior Huang, can you improve this game and make it more real?” Zhou Wen asked as he played.

“Of course I can. However, that requires a professional team and a large amount of money. I don’t have that much time or money right now, so I can only make it like this for the time being.” Huang Ji said regretfully.

“If given a professional team and funding, what level of development could you push it to?” Zhou Wen asked.

He was really interested in this game. If such mobile games became popular in the future, then no one would be suspicious of him if he kept gaming on his phone.

Huang Ji said, “The technology these days is actually very mature. However, gaming is gaming after all. It’s different from real battles. The officials haven’t invested too much in this area. If a person wants to do it, the amount of technical support and resources needed is too much. It’s especially so when it comes to funding. The average person would find it difficult to obtain the huge sums needed. Furthermore, even if one really developed it, they wouldn’t be able to provide precise information to the experts who could venture deep into the dimensional zones. That would make the game meaningless as it would be better to just watch videos.”

Zhou Wen pondered for a moment before asking, “Senior, if I can obtain a large amount of funds, are you willing to make this game better?”

“Do you have money to invest? How much can you invest?” Huang Ji’s eyes lit up as he asked Zhou Wen.

“I don’t have money for the time being,” Zhou Wen said as he shrugged.

“Then let’s wait until you have money.” Huang Jing was very disappointed.

Zhou Wen thought that it made sense. He didn’t have any money, so there was no point in saying anything. All he could do was ask Huang Ji for a contact number before seeking him out when he had money.

After separating from Huang Ji, Zhou Wen continued walking forward in search of the tiny palm symbol that might exist. However, he failed to discover it despite nearly reaching Lotus Flower Cave.

“Zhou Wen, why haven’t you reached Lotus Flower Cave?” Wang Lu called him and urged him to meet up at the entrance.

“Didn’t you go to Old Dragon Cave?” Zhou Wen asked casually as he continued walking forward slowly.

“I waited inside Old Dragon Cave for quite some time, but I didn’t see any treasure light, nor did I hear any dragon roars. I had no choice but to head to the Lotus Flower Cave now. Come quickly,” Wang Lu said.

Zhou Wen wasn’t far from Lotus Flower Cave, so as he walked he carried on searching. Soon, he arrived at the entrance of Lotus Flower Cave and saw Wang Lu waiting for him outside.

There were soldiers guarding outside Lotus Flower Cave, preventing ordinary people from entering. Wang Lu took out two passes before leading Zhou Wen inside.

“I don’t have the same counselor as you. Is it really fine for me to participate in your homework mission?” Zhou Wen asked while examining the situation inside Lotus Flower Cave.

“No problem, as long as it’s a student from our school,” Wang Lu said nonchalantly before continuing. “The record for Lotus Flower Cave was maintained by a fourth-year named Huang Ji. We have to break his record this time, so I need to ensure that all the steps are done well. I’ll leave the recording to you later. You must do a good job filming me…’

“What’s the name of the senior that maintained the record?” Zhou Wen asked with a frown.

“Huang Ji,” Wang Lu repeated.

It couldn’t be the same person, right? Zhou Wen recalled Huang Ji who had used rather pushy sales tactics to promote his game app. He felt that it was probably just two people who shared the same name.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 98 - Fairy Monkey

Chapter 98 Fairy Monkey

There were no real lotus flowers inside the Lotus Flower Cave. Instead, there was a huge lotus stone sculpture carved on the ceiling. Around the stone statue were many graceful flying fairies.

According to the school database, the gigantic lotus flower sculpture was where a dimensional rift was located. Occasionally, a dimensional creature would burrow out of the dimensional rift, looking as though it had flown out of a lotus flower.

Dimensional creatures that appeared in the Lotus Flower Cave were currently limited to creatures known as Fairy Beasts. However, they were different from the fairies in the murals. Dimensional creatures called Flying Beasts didn’t look beautiful. Instead, they were like monkeys, so Fairy Beasts were also known as Fairy Monkeys.

The Dragon Gate Fairy Skill that Zhou Wen needed was a Primordial Energy Skill Crystal that dropped from Fairy Monkeys. However, there were very few Fairy Monkeys. The chances of it dropping a Primordial Energy Skill Crystal were even lower.

Before the dimensional storms happened, the Lotus Flower Cave had been an individual cave, but now, there were many caves that connected to it. Each cave had a lotus

flower ceiling and fairies. There were also many sculptures of Buddha, Bodhisattva, Malla, and monks.

Lotus Flower Cave had been sealed for a period of time, so it would have accumulated quite a lot of Fairy Beasts. However, the numbers were only enough for special admissions students. Therefore, every special admissions student only had two chances. If they couldn’t obtain their ideal results after killing two Fairy Monkeys, they were not allowed to continue killing them.

Zhou Wen followed Wang Lu through the different lotus flower caves and finally found a Fairy Monkey.

The Fairy Monkey was somewhat different from what Zhou Wen had imagined. Zhou Wen’s impression of a monkey was an animal with brown fur, but it was actually covered in white fur. Its eyes were bloodshot with a pair of white wings on its back.

When the Fairy Monkey noticed Zhou Wen and Wang Lu, it immediately bared its teeth and charged over.

“Do you know how to use this? Help me take a good shot. You have to keep up with my speed. Make sure that I look good in it.” Wang Lu handed a special camera to Zhou Wen.

“Don’t tell me you hired me just to film you?” Zhou Wen said as he took the camera.

“That’s right. What other reason would there be?” Wang Lu said as she charged at Fairy Monkey.

Rich people are really willful! Spending 150,000 bucks for a videographer? Zhou Wen couldn’t understand the thought process of rich people.

However, he quickly learned why Wang Lu was hiring.

The Fairy Monkey’s Speed was extremely fast and it was good at flying. It moved like a ghost in the sky, making it impossible for an ordinary person to keep up with it.

Wang Lu changed her movement technique as a pair of butterfly-like wings spread open on her back, allowing her to actually keep up with Fairy Monkey’s speed.

If it were any ordinary person to do the filming, they would only be able to shoot from afar. They wouldn’t be able to follow Wang Lu’s figure. Zhou Wen summoned the Silver-Winged Flying Ant and kept filming while riding on its back. He could barely keep up with Wang Lu.

Before long, Wang Lu’s saber beam flashed as the Fairy Monkey was struck down. It fell to the ground and died.

“How long did it take?” Wang Lu asked Zhou Wen without looking at the Fairy Monkey’s corpse.

“One minute and five seconds.” Zhou Wen looked at the time of the camera and gave an accurate account of the time.

“Did I take that long? It’s still quite a distance from Huang Ji’s record.” Wang Lu frowned slightly. Clearly, her results were not satisfactory.

However, Wang Lu only had two chances, so she wasn’t in a rush to find another Fairy Monkey. She called out to Zhou Wen and they left Lotus Flower Cave together.

“If I want to break the record, it looks like I still need a more detailed plan. Let’s end it here for today. Let’s do it again

next time.” Wang Lu took back the camera and watched her battle with the Fairy Monkey.

“Call me when you need me,” Zhou Wen said.

“Of course, you only have to help me do the filming.” Wang Lu had no intention of letting Zhou Wen help her. She had to break Huang Ji’s record alone, or it would be meaningless.

After separating from Wang Lu, Zhou Wen continued following the stone stairs and looking around Dragon Gate Grotto, hoping to find the tiny palm symbol.

There were many palm imprints within Dragon Gate Grotto. The Fairies, Buddhas, Malla, and Monks had different palm symbols, but they were different from the ones Zhou Wen remembered.

Zhou Wen was beginning to wonder if the Dragon Gate Grotto didn’t have any tiny palm symbol when he suddenly felt his mysterious phone vibrate. He took it out and switched on the camera. Soon, he found a tiny hand symbol in some inconspicuous spot on the mountain wall. It then locked onto the symbol.

I’ve finally found it! Zhou Wen was overjoyed when he saw the tiny palm symbol.

The position of the tiny palm symbol was very inconspicuous. It wasn’t as beautiful and eye-catching as the other Buddha palm imprints. It simply extended its five fingers and held a picture of a sitting Buddha.

If one took a closer look, one would realize that the Buddha pattern in the hand was very similar to the biggest Buddha statue at Dragon Gate Grotto. However, it was just several times smaller.

Zhou Wen used the camera function and aimed it at the tiny palm symbol. Indeed, a scene was locked onto it.

In that case, I can grind Lotus Flower Cave without any qualms. Zhou Wen only wished to obtain Dragon Gate Fairy Skill and then attempt to rush up Fire God Platform.

Very quickly, Dragon Gate Grotto was downloaded onto his phone, forming a Buddhist icon.

Zhou Wen tapped on the Dragon Gate Grotto's icon. This time, he didn't enter the game like before. Instead, many options appeared.

Ancient Yang Cave, Myriad Buddha Cave, Old Dragon Cave, Lotus Flower Cave, Inferno Cave. There were plenty of options.

After he chose the Lotus Flower Cave, the blood-colored avatar entered the game interface of Lotus Flower Cave. Inside the cave filled with mysterious colors, a gigantic lotus flower sculpture was situated in the middle of the dome, surrounded by symbols of Fairies, Monks, and Malla.

A Fairy Monkey burrowed its head out of the stone lotus flower and pounced at the blood-colored avatar while screaming with its teeth bared.

Zhou Wen controlled the Silver-Winged Flying Ant to face the Fairy Monkey. Instantly, the two dimensional creatures—which were equally outstanding at flight-began having an aerial battle in Lotus Flower Cave.

Finally, the Silver-Winged Flying Ant took nearly ten minutes to slay the Fairy Monkey, but nothing dropped.

Zhou Wen continued walking deeper into the Lotus Flower Cave with the Mutated Lotus Flower Ant summoned. He hoped to test it to know how strong it was after becoming a Legendary through the fusion.

Seeing a Fairy Monkey charge at him, the lotus flower on the Mutated Lotus Flower Ant's head suddenly bloomed, revealing a venomous toad. It spewed venom at the Fairy Monkey, instantly drenching it.

The Fairy Monkey yelled as it rolled on the ground, its fur and skin corroded as blood gushed out.

The Mutated Lotus Flower Ant charged forward without any hesitation and stabbed at the Fairy Monkey with its bone-spiked front claws, impaling its head and chest.

47 seconds! Zhou Wen looked at the time. From the beginning of the battle to the system's indication of the Fairy Beast's death, it took a total of 47 seconds. He had already broken Huang Ji's record.

The Mutated Lotus Flower Ant is really powerful! Zhou Wen was delighted. The more he looked at it, the more adorable it looked.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 99 - Ancient Imperial Sutra

Chapter 99 Ancient Imperial Sutra

Although the Mutated Lotus Flower Ant was very strong, its own Primordial Energy was limited. It wasn’t able to keep using Primordial Energy Skills. However, even if it didn’t use any Primordial Energy Skills, the Mutated Lotus Flower Ant and the Silver-Winged Flying Ant could easily kill a Fairy Monkey.

Fairy Monkeys often produced dimensional crystals, but they were mostly Speed Crystals. Occasionally, it would drop some Primordial Energy Crystals, allowing Zhou Wen to replenish the Mutated Lotus Flower Ant’s Primordial Energy.

Now, Zhou Wen believed that the Primordial Energy Crystals were rather useful. He only had two Companion Beasts at the moment, but he already needed plenty of Primordial Energy Crystals to replenish his Primordial Energy. In the future, with more Companion Beasts, the Primordial Energy Crystals would be even more useful.

Unfortunately, there’s nothing like a storage bag in the game. Otherwise, I could store up the Primordial Energy Crystals and use them when needed. Just as Zhou Wen was thinking about it, he heard a chime.

After a Fairy Monkey was killed, a dimensional crystal dropped. Zhou Wen took a closer look and saw that it was a crystal with the words Fairy Monkey on it. He was delighted.

Fairy Monkeys typically only had one Primordial Energy Skill, which was Dragon Gate Fairy Skill. He had never heard of

there being a second Primordial Energy Skill. Now that a Primordial Energy Skill Crystal dropped, it was definitely Dragon Gate Fairy Skill.

Zhou Wen controlled the blood-colored avatar to pick it up.

Wisps of white light floated out of the crystal and drilled into the blood-colored avatar's body. Zhou Wen also felt a strange power surge from his phone into his body. It opened up a strange aura circulation path that allowed him to feel light as though he could fly at any moment.

As Zhou Wen had expected, this was the Dragon Gate Fairy Skill's Primordial Energy Skill Crystal. The information regarding it also surged into Zhou Wen's brain at the same time, giving him deep knowledge about the Dragon Gate Fairy Skill.

'Attained Dragon Gate Fairy Skill (Rank 6)'

With Dragon Gate Fairy Skill, I can attempt to storm Fire God Platform. Zhou Wen was delighted. As he was about to leave Dragon Gate Grotto, he suddenly saw a dimensional creature burrow out of the lotus flower situated at the Lotus Flower Cave's ceiling.

Zhou Wen originally imagined that a Fairy Monkey had appeared and planned on killing it before leaving, but upon careful inspection, he realized that it wasn't a Fairy Monkey, but a female fairy with fluttering clothes.

The fairy had a graceful figure, and her silk ribbons were dancing in the air. Although she did not have any wings, she was able to spiral and fly in midair, completely defying the laws of physics.

Is this a real Fairy? Zhou Wen looked enviously at the beautiful Fairy. There was some discomfort using wings to fly, so it was better to fly freely like a Fairy.

The Fairy spun a few times before flying towards the blood-colored avatar.

Zhou Wen hurriedly controlled the Mutated Lotus Flower Ant and the Silver-Winged Flying Ant to charge forward in battle. However, the beautiful Fairy waved her hand gently, sending a ribbon to sweep over like a white python. Even the Silver-Winged Flying Ant's Silver Wing Flash failed to dodge the ribbon that resembled a living creature. The blood-colored avatar and the two Companion Beasts were soon coiled together.

The Fairy in the air pulled and tightened the grip on the ribbon, rupturing their bodies and causing the game screen to instantly darken.

What a terrifying Fairy! Zhou Wen marveled inwardly.

He didn't continue gaming as he put away his phone. He planned on returning to his dorm before dripping blood and making a trip to the Fire God Platform. He wanted to see if he could rush up Fire God Platform with a Rank 6 Dragon Gate Fairy Skill and see what was engraved on the stone monument.

After returning to his dorm, Zhou Wen eagerly launched the Ancient Imperial City dungeon. He dripped his blood to be reborn and rode the Silver-Winged Flying Ant towards the Fire God Platform.

This time, Zhou Wen was fully prepared. He rushed up the stairs on the Silver-Winged Flying Ant's back, dodging all

the firebirds without killing them. The higher he charged, the more firebirds appeared.

Previously, Zhou Wen could only rely on the Silver-Winged Flying Ant's flight, but now, the Dragon Gate Fairy Skill had also given him a pretty good ability that allowed him to hover in midair.

Just as a firebird was about to hit the blood-colored avatar, the blood-colored avatar leaped up in the air and spiraled in midair like a giant bird. It circled around the firebird and avoided its attack before landing on the Silver-Winged Flying Ant's back.

Although the Dragon Gate Fairy Skill didn't allow for true flight, it could allow one to hang in midair for a short period of time, making one look cool and elegant.

Boom!

With the blood-colored avatar rushing past the furthest he had reached last time, the Fire God Platform's flames surged into the sky as flocks of firebird-like clouds descended upon him, their numbers inestimable.

I'm dead! Zhou Wen knew that no matter how agile he was, it was impossible for him to charge through the dense flock of firebirds. All he could do was try his best.

The lotus flower on top of the Mutated Lotus Flower Ant's head exploded like a bomb, turning into a rain of blood that killed many nearby firebirds. Taking the moment when the pressure of the firebirds lessened, the Silver-Winged Flying Ant charged into the sky and broke through the firebirds' encirclement.

However, there were too many firebirds. They immediately gathered together and blocked their path.

The Silver-Winged Flying Ant spread its wings and charged towards the firebirds, colliding with the firebirds at the head of the flock. As for the blood-colored avatar, it leaped up under Zhou Wen’s control and circled above the sky like an eagle.

One firebird after another was dodged by the blood-colored avatar as it reached an unprecedented height. Through the holes in between the firebird flock, he saw half of the stone monument.

Zhou Wen’s sharp eyes immediately saw that the largest three ancient characters on the stone monument were “Ancient Imperial Sutra.” And when he saw the three words clearly, a ball of fire seemed to rise within him.

However, the moment he saw those three words, the blood-colored avatar was inundated by the flock of firebirds. The game screen quickly turned black.

It’s impossible for me to rush up with a technique that imbues me with alacrity. However, I can now see a part of the stone monument. If my movement skills are better, I can hold on for a longer period of time. I’ll then be able to memorize parts of the monument’s content. This way, I don’t have to reach the peak. Zhou Wen held his phone as he thought.

He felt that this idea was feasible, but his movement skills were still lacking. He wanted to last longer and see more of the content, so he needed a higher ranked movement skill.

After some thought, Zhou Wen decided to continue grinding the Lotus Flower Cave. Peeking at the Ancient Imperial Sutra

could wait until he first grinded a Rank 9 Dragon Gate Fairy Skill.

While Zhou Wen was trying his best to grind Fairy Monkeys, the first homework mission that Wang Fei assigned finally came to an end. Although some students were unable to complete their homework mission, they were not expelled. They only had some homework points deducted.

Wang Fei convened a meeting with all her students and announced her second homework mission. It was for them to visit Mount Laojun to look at the Wordless Monument.

When the mission was announced, Wang Fei gave Zhou Wen a meaningful glance—this mission had originally been prepared for him.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 100 - Wordless Monument

Chapter 100 Wordless Monument

Mount Laojun wasn’t in Sunset College. Zhou Wen originally didn’t wish to go that far, but he had to complete the school’s homework missions. Otherwise, he couldn’t graduate so it was practically compulsory.

As for Li Xuan, he was very excited as he sat on the bus and continually explained Mount Laojun to Zhou Wen.

“A place like Mount Laojun can be said to be the safest dimensional zone. Although there are many dimensional creatures, they won’t attack humans without reason. As long as you don’t annoy them, there’s no danger at Mount Laojun. The only thing to take note of is that our homework mission is to visit the Wordless Monument. It’s also known as Unwinding Monument. No matter how strong a person’s will is, they can’t look at it for more than half an hour or things will turn fun…”

Zhou Wen sat by the window, grinding the Ant Nest dungeon while listening to Li Xuan’s detailed explanation of Mount Laojun.

“What’s so fun?” Zhou Wen asked.

“That thing is very sinister. Although it doesn’t kill people, it will make people excited and make them constantly wish to do something,” said Li Xuan with a chuckle.

Mount Laojun was in Luoyang, so it wasn’t long before the bus arrived.

It was different from what Zhou Wen had imagined. Mount Laojun wasn’t too tall, but it had many peaks with pine and cypress trees winding around them. There were ancient buildings erected above the mountain, making it a picturesque scene.

From afar, Mount Laojun looked like a classic ink painting of landscapes.

Wang Fei did a headcount before taking the students up the mountain.

There were rabbits, squirrels, and other small critters on the mountain, as well as groups of immortal cranes flying in the clouds. They showed no fear of humans and only curiously observed the students from Sunset College.

Zhou Wen kept searching for the palm symbol, but he hadn’t discovered one. However, he wasn’t worried as the mysterious phone could automatically lock onto the tiny palm symbol if it was close enough.

The most mysterious thing about Mount Laojun was the Golden Peak. There were many mysterious ancient buildings there, but no human could ascend to the Golden Peak.

Legend had it that people once saw countless animals crawling out of the mountain, such as snakes, worms, rats and insects. The black mass of creatures covered the entire Mount Laojun as they prostrated for three full days in front of the Golden Peak before dispersing.

It was almost taboo to spill blood on the land around Mount Laojun. There was once someone who attempted to carry out a massacre and kill those gentle dimensional creatures.

Just as that person had killed a dimensional creature that resembled a white rabbit, his expression changed drastically for some reason. He turned around and ran down the mountain like a madman.

When his friend went to look for him the next day, he wouldn’t have been able to recognize him if not for his clothes and personal items.

That person was covered in rabbit fur, and his mouth had turned into three lines like a rabbit. His eyes were red and he was sprawled on the ground eating grass like a rabbit. He couldn’t be stopped from doing so no matter how hard his friend tried. He became a lunatic for the rest of his life.

Since then, no one dared to kill on Mount Laojun. Even the spilling of blood was taboo.

Legend had it that an Epic expert didn’t believe in the rumors and started a killing spree on Mount Laojun, but the outcome was equally tragic.

This was all the knowledge taught in school, and Zhou Wen didn’t know how true it was. However, as he walked up Mount Laojun, he indeed felt very serene. There seemed to be a magical power here that calmed one’s mind.

Wang Fei led the students to a platform on the mountainside and pointed to a stone monument at the end of the platform, saying, “That’s the legendary Unwinding Monument. Although it doesn’t have a word on it, it has magical powers. Your homework mission is to sit in front of the Unwinding Monument for half an hour and stare at it. Not one second less and not one second more.”

The stone monument was only two to three meters tall. It looked old and dilapidated, and there was nothing out of the

ordinary about it. It stood by the edge of the mountainside, looking like it accompanied the rosy clouds of dawn. Its solitude had an indescribable feeling to it as though just staring at it would placate any irascible feelings.

“Line up, ten people in a row. Sit down in front of Unwinding Monument. Wear the sunglasses I gave you. Listen to my instructions before taking them off. Zhou Wen, Li Xuan, don’t just stand at the back. Come to the first row.” Wang Fei arranged for a group of students to sit in front of Unwinding Monument, and, when she saw Zhou Wen and Li Xuan at the back, she immediately called them to the front.

The closer one was to the Unwinding Monument, the stronger the effects. Wang Fei had steeled her heart to help Zhou Wen regain his drive.

Zhou Wen didn’t mind where he sat. Anyway, there wasn’t any risk looking at the Unwinding Monument as long as one didn’t exceed the time limit.

The only things that left Zhou Wen a little disappointed were his failure to find the tiny palm symbol, and that the mysterious phone hadn’t vibrated.

Could it be that Mount Laojun’s dimensional zone is at the Golden Peak? Zhou Wen looked at the mountaintop as he secretly made plans.

Seeing how Zhou Wen was still looking around, Wang Fei thought to herself, After you look at the Wordless Monument, you won’t be as half-hearted as you are now.

“Alright, take note. Take off your sunglasses. Everyone is to begin looking at the Wordless Monument. The time limit is half an hour. If you get up before half an hour, it will be a failure and you will have to look at it for another half an

hour.” Wang Fei wore the sunglasses without any intention of taking them off. All she did was start the stopwatch in her hand.

These sunglasses were specially made. Wearing them to look at the Wordless Monument decreased its effects significantly. However, one still couldn’t keep looking at it because with prolonged staring at it, even the sunglasses were useless.

Zhou Wen and the rest of the students took off their sunglasses as their gazes landed on the Wordless Monument.

It was strange. Initially, many students felt nervous. However, after looking at the Wordless Monument, their nervous feelings vanished instantly. They relaxed entirely and their spirits became extremely tranquil.

However, this feeling of tranquility became a little odd as time passed.

Although one’s mind remained calm, energy seemed to surge in their bodies. It made the students feel like they were filled with Primordial Energy. They yearned to immediately get up and begin carrying out a series of boxing moves or fight someone. This irascible feeling that came from within stood in strong contrast with the tranquility their minds generated.

The students naturally didn’t dare to stand up. They had only sat down for less than three minutes, so standing up now would mean the failure of their homework mission. All they could do was sit there and bear with it.

This feeling was like a person who was hyperactive but had to sit there and not move an inch. It was not something a

person could usually understand.

Zhou Wen also felt the same stirring feelings, but he only felt them a little bit at the beginning. Just as his body began to stir, the Lost Immortal Sutra that was circulating at a normal speed gradually slowed down. It made Zhou Wen’s body feel strange as the irascible feelings slowly vanished.

Why is this happening? Zhou Wen was alarmed. The last time the Lost Immortal Sutra did such a thing was when he was reading the Small Perfection of Wisdom Sutra.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 101 - New Primordial Energy Art

Chapter 101 New Primordial Energy Art

Just like the last time, the Lost Immortal Sutra's circulation increasingly slowed down. After some time, it was as if it was about to stop.

At the instant the Lost Immortal Sutra came to a complete halt, Zhou Wen felt his body suddenly come to a halt, as though there was a crisp sound of a lock being turned.

The last time, Zhou Wen had been rather slow to react and didn't have too strong a feeling. Now, after carefully sensing it, he realized that the ceasing of the aura circulation wasn't the only thing. His entire body had come to a halt and even his heart had skipped a beat.

This pause only lasted for an instant. In the next second, Zhou Wen felt his Primordial Energy rapidly circulate. However, this circulation pathway was completely different from the Lost Immortal Sutra's Energy. It also wasn't that of the Small Perfection of Wisdom Sutra, but a different Primordial Energy Art that he had never cultivated before.

This Primordial Energy Art had a strange feeling of having his body fuse with the world itself. It was as though his entire being had become a part of the universe. His heart and the breathing of the universe was happening at the same frequency.

Zhou Wen did not see a single word on the Wordless Monument, but he could sense the Primordial Energy Art came from it. It was a very strange feeling that was indescribable.

Wang Fei constantly observed her students to prevent any accidents happening from staring at the Wordless Monument.

However, Wang Fei's attention was mostly focused on Zhou Wen. She wanted to see him change. She wanted to see him turn from a loser obsessed with gaming to a diligent genius.

But soon, Wang Fei felt something amiss.

The other students were all sweating profusely, trying their best to hold back their irascible emotions as they wore heavy or ferocious expressions. Even the extremely resolute students were frowning and looking as though they were struggling to cope.

However, Zhou Wen was completely different. He naturally looked relaxed as he sat there languidly, as though he was sunbathing. It was as if he didn't feel any pressure.

Could it be that Zhou Wen is so disheartened that even the Unwinding Monument's power can't help him? Wang Fei naturally didn't believe this. She only believed that Zhou Wen hadn't been exposed for long enough.

As time passed, the expressions of the other students worsened. The students who had weaker self-restraint started to move around as if their bodies were crawling with worms.

However, none of them stood up. They were the top students from every high school, so they naturally had their pride.

None of them wanted to lose to their classmates, so they had to endure it.

Li Xuan’s condition was slightly better. One could tell that his will was extremely firm. He sat there motionless without any changes in expression. However, the sweat on his forehead indicated that he was not having an easy time.

As for Zhou Wen, he was still languidly sitting beside Li Xuan. His expression hadn’t changed from the beginning to the end. Furthermore, he appeared more and more relaxed. If not for Wang Fei’s requirements for them to sit, he would likely be lying on the ground.

Strange, how did this happen? Wang Fei was alarmed.

She had also stared at the Wordless Monument before, so she naturally knew how powerful it was. Zhou Wen was only at the Mortal stage, even Epic experts would be influenced by the power of the Wordless Monument. It was absolutely impossible to be this relaxed.

It has already been ten minutes, but he hasn’t reacted at all. Could it be… Wang Fei’s heart skipped a beat when she thought of a possibility.

Someone had previously guessed that there was a mysterious Primordial Energy Art engraved on the Wordless Monument, but was invisible to everyone.

If a candidate with a suitable physique placed their eyes on the Wordless Monument, perhaps it would reveal the Primordial Energy Art on it.

Could it be that Zhou Wen has a special physique that has an affinity with the art on the Wordless Monument? Wang Fei believed that the chances of that happening were extremely

low, but Zhou Wen’s present performance was somewhat odd.

She planned on observing further. If Zhou Wen truly had a special physique that had an affinity with the Wordless Monument, she would have to reevaluate Zhou Wen’s future achievements.

If that’s the case, Sis Lan has really picked up a treasure. She got a free son from her marriage, one who has a one-in-a-billion special physique. That would be incredible. Wang Fei looked at Zhou Wen with mixed emotions as countless thoughts ran through her mind.

Zhou Wen was feeling extremely relaxed. After completing one circulation, it was already enough for him to use it, just like the Small Perfection of Wisdom Sutra.

At the same time, he felt that his body was filled with Primordial Energy. It was as though every breath he took could draw Primordial Energy from the world into his body.

Although he couldn’t make attempts, Zhou Wen felt that his Primordial Energy recovery was much faster than before.

Now, he wished to switch on the game to see how his stats had changed. But in the present situation, it was inconvenient for him to take out his phone to game. All he could do was hold back his desire and continue staring at the Wordless Monument.

After waiting for quite a while and seeing Zhou Wen maintain his languid expression with no special changes to the monument, Wang Fei began thinking about her previous idea.

Could it be that Zhou Wen doesn’t have a special physique, but that he’s born with that expression? Wang Fei was puzzled as she looked at Zhou Wen’s languid look.

Half an hour quickly passed, but that was only for Zhou Wen. To the other students, half an hour felt like a century.

When Wang Fei announced that the mission was over, all the classmates leaped up at the same time. Some were running at full speed, while others were exerting all their strength to strike out a set of moves. Some were constantly somersaulting.

There were also some students who were quieter. Although they did not engage in any intense activity, they also circulated the Primordial Energy Art they had cultivated and quickly circulated it again and again.

As for some irascible fellows, they even used their Primordial Energy Skills to deliver a barrage of fists on the mountain rocks. It was as if that was the only way they could vent their infinite energy.

Li Xuan was an especially energetic fellow, but he didn’t strike the rocks. Instead, he was sprawled on the ground doing push-ups as though he had an electric motor installed in him.

Wang Fei was very satisfied with her students’ performance. Although the power of the Wordless Monument was strange, as long as she used it well, it would be a great boon in educating them.

However, when her gaze landed on Zhou Wen, her good mood immediately vanished.

She saw Zhou Wen sitting on a rock beside the stone wall as he quickly took out his phone. He held the phone in his hands and was tapping away his fingers at a dazzling speed. Without looking at his phone screen, it was obvious that the fellow was playing a game.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 102 - Three-Eyed Antelope

Chapter 102 Three-Eyed Antelope

Zhou Wen secretly dripped a drop of blood on the phone screen. Although the blood-colored avatar was still alive, he still did the same

thing.

This was because this blood could represent his present physical condition. The blood-colored avatar condensed from the previous blood drop had stats of his previous self.

Zhou Wen

Age: 16 years

Lifeform level: Mortal

Strength: 10

Speed: 10

Constitution: 11

Primordial Energy: 11

Primordial Energy Art: Lost Immortal Sutra

Primordial Energy Skill: Vigor Divine Fist, Ashen Palm, Blood Meditation, Penetrating Pierce, Dragon Gate Fairy Skill

Companion Beast: Truth Listener, Silver-Winged Flying Ant, Mutated Lotus Flower Ant

My Primordial Energy has risen to 11. My Primordial Energy Art is still Lost Immortal Sutra without any new Primordial Energy Art appearing. Zhou Wen looked at his stats as countless thoughts ran through his mind.

The game displayed Lost Immortal Sutra as his only Primordial Energy Art. It meant that he had not mastered any others, but he could freely switch modes to the Small Perfection of Wisdom Sutra or the Wordless Monument's Primordial Energy Art. It was truly fascinating.

Seeing the other students desperately venting their energies without paying attention to him, Zhou Wen put away his phone and planned on walking around Mount Laojun to see if he could find the tiny palm symbol.

Since he had mastered the Small Perfection of Wisdom Sutra the last time, he had obtained Truth Listener that was suspected to be a Mythical creature. Perhaps, the Wordless Monument's Primordial Energy Art had similar benefits too.

Legend had it that no one could ascend Mount Laojun's Golden Peak, so perhaps there was an existence akin to the three-faced Buddha inside.

Of course, Zhou Wen wasn't planning on walking straight to Golden Peak himself to verify his theory. All he wanted was to find the tiny palm symbol to download Mount Laojun's dungeon and try it out in-game.

He had only taken a few steps when Wang Fei appeared in front of him. She stared at him and asked, "Where are you going?"

No matter how she looked at it, Zhou Wen didn't look like he needed to vent his energy. He was still as languid as usual, but he looked much better than before.

“I have an inexhaustible amount of energy all over my body. I need to run to release it.” Zhou Wen’s insincere words were so obvious, that they nearly made Wang Fei laugh out in exasperation.

“You want to run? Very good. Run twenty times from the foot of the mountain to the stone bridge in front of Golden Peak. I’ll be here watching you. Not one round less,” Wang Fei said angrily.

“Yes, Miss Wang.” Zhou Wen didn’t even try to defend himself. Keeping his arms close to his torso, he jogged upwards.

The Wordless Monument was the boundary of Mount Laojun. Any further up allowed one to see true dimensional creatures. And from that point onwards, there would be animals from Earth that had mutated.

Zhou Wen ran up the stone stairs and saw a white antelope standing by the edge of the cliff. It was eating from a blade of grass that grew out of the cliff.

The antelope was snow-white in color with curved horns on its head that looked like carved white jade. It was obvious that it was not an antelope from Earth. On its forehead, there was a vertical eye that was half-open. One could vaguely see a holy white light shimmering within.

In between its four hooves, there was a faint stream of white light swirling about, making it look as though it was walking on the light.

Although Zhou Wen didn’t know the level of the dimensional creature, he could tell that it was definitely extraordinary.

The antelope also saw Zhou Wen, but it ignored him. It continued eating the grass on the mountain cliff.

The grass grew among the rocks, its leaves withered and yellow. It did not look eye-catching but the antelope was enjoying its meal as though it was delicious.

Mount Laojun’s dimensional creature didn’t harm others, so Zhou Wen wasn’t worried that the antelope would attack him. He approached it curiously and carefully observed the withered yellow grass growing from the cliff.

The grass was split into five leaves. A leaf was only the length of a middle finger. It was yellow and withered as if it was about to die.

But in the middle of the leaf, there was a white flower. It was about the size of a fingernail and looked as if it was carved from jade.

The antelope bit down on the withered grass and flower and chewed repeatedly before swallowing them down. Its face was filled with bliss as though it was extremely satisfied.

The antelope was only able to eat withered grass that was relatively close to the steep cliffs. Zhou Wen looked at the mountain cliff and saw that there wasn’t much withered grass. An idea couldn’t help but come to him.

He leaped up and stepped on the mountain cliff with his toes, swirling around like a huge bird. It was none other than the Dragon Gate Fairy Skill he had just learned.

He grabbed a withered yellow grass in midair and yanked at it forcefully; however, it remained motionless. With Zhou Wen’s Strength, he was surprisingly unable to pull the grass out.

Zhou Wen held onto the grass with one hand while his body hung in midair. He turned his head and glanced at the antelope and saw that it had no intention of attacking him. As it chewed on the withered grass, it looked at Zhou Wen, with a rather odd expression as though it was mocking him.

Zhou Wen made two more attempts with all his strength, but the withered grass remained motionless. The leaf didn’t show any signs of tearing. It was hard to imagine its tenacity.

This withered grass is actually so tenacious. I’m afraid there’s something odd about it. Zhou Wen had learned from textbooks that many dimensional zones had strange plants with various magical powers.

Some plants could cause instant death from consuming them while others could increase a human’s physical fitness greatly by eating them. They could even break through and evolve to a different level.

Since the three-eyed antelope was eating such withered grass, it meant that it wasn’t poisonous. As for whether humans could eat it or not, Zhou Wen didn’t know.

Seeing that he couldn’t pluck out the grass, Zhou Wen changed his mind and summoned the Lotus Flower Ant’s bracer. Pieces of bone that resembled lotus flower petals wrapped around Zhou Wen’s left arm, forming the razor-like blades along his arm as his fingernails became as sharp as a blade,

raz

came

Zhou Wen thrust his fingers forward as though he was cutting tofu and stabbed into the stone cliff. He hurriedly dug a few times and snapped the rocks around the grass and dug it out.

Upon landing back on the stone stairs, Zhou Wen was unable to make head or tail. He had no choice but to put the grass back into his backpack. When he turned his head, he realized that the remaining withered grass had already been devoured by the three-eyed antelope.

He was only curious at first, so he didn’t think much of it as he continued running up the mountain.

Mount Laojun was known as the safest dimensional zone and as long as he didn’t cross Golden Peak’s gates, there wouldn’t be any danger. Even if a human wanted to kill Zhou Wen, they typically wouldn’t choose a place like Mount Laojun.

Zhou Wen jogged as he surveyed his surroundings but failed to see any tiny palm symbol.

As he ran, Zhou Wen suddenly felt his back tighten as though someone was pulling him from behind. He couldn’t help but be alarmed as he hurriedly turned his head and saw the three-eyed antelope biting his backpack.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 103 - Revenge

Chapter 103 Revenge

Zhou Wen could tell that the three-eyed antelope wasn’t using much force. Since its bite could chew through the tenacious withered grass, his backpack would have been torn to pieces if it exerted a little strength. It wouldn’t remain in one piece as it was now.

The antelope bit on the zipper in an attempt to unzip it. It most likely had its sights on the withered grass that Zhou Wen had dug up.

Zhou Wen took off his backpack and carried it as he continued walking up the mountain with his back facing the three-eyed antelope. After all, Mount Laojun’s dimensional creatures weren’t violent, so he wasn’t afraid it would do something to him.

The antelope clearly wasn’t giving up as it circled Zhou Wen and attempted to reach its head into his backpack.

Zhou Wen could only constantly move his backpack around to dodge the antelope’s head. Without trying, its speed was surprisingly fast. The moment Zhou Wen failed to focus, it had pulled open the zipper of his backpack.

This three-eyed antelope is no ordinary mortal. If it wants to eat the withered grass so much, the grass must be

extraordinary. With this in mind, Zhou Wen hurriedly hugged his backpack tightly and pressed down the hole.

The three-eyed antelope didn’t give up either. It buried its head deep into Zhou Wen’s embrace, steeling its heart to eat the grass in his backpack.

Although the three-eyed antelope didn’t use brute force, its strength, speed, and reflexes were much better than Zhou Wen’s. Unable to tussle against it, the three-eyed antelope was close to succeeding.

Zhou Wen felt indignant, but ignoring how violence was not allowed on Mount Laojun, wouldn’t have dared fight the antelope even if he could

The withered grass had already been revealed. Just as the antelope was about to bite onto it, Zhou Wen suddenly thought of something as he spat at it.

Saliva sprayed onto the withered grass, covering its surface with spots of foamy saliva.

The antelope, who already had its mouth open, was taken aback. It looked at the withered grass covered in saliva before looking at Zhou Wen, its expression extremely odd.

“Do you still want it? I’m taking it away if you don’t want to eat it.” Zhou Wen spread open his backpack generously, but the antelope didn’t react at all. All it did was look at the withered grass with a conflicted look.

Seeing no response from it, Zhou Wen zipped up his backpack, slung it on his back, and ran up the mountain.

The scenery of Mount Laojun was truly impressive; unfortunately, Zhou Wen didn’t see the palm symbol.

Although the antelope didn’t eat the withered grass, it didn’t leave either. It slowly followed behind Zhou Wen without any intention of attacking him. He didn’t know what it was up to.

Mount Laojun wasn’t very high, but after the dimensional storms, the space on the mountaintop seemed to be dilated. Despite the mountain looking short, Zhou Wen ran for quite some time before he gradually approached the mountaintop.

From afar, he could see the scenery of the mountain peak. There were ancient buildings of various heights dotted on it. Although the buildings weren’t majestic, they were built on the peak of the mountain with clouds clinging around them. They resembled the immortal residences as spoken of in myths.

At the end of the stone stairs, there was a wooden structure that resembled a gateway. On it were the words “Central Heaven Gateway.”

In front of the gateway was a stone statue-an elderly man riding on the back of a stone cow. His gaze was trained towards the firmaments, but the stone cow had its head turned towards the horizon.

Zhou Wen had read the information on Mount Laojun before coming. He knew that the stone statue was likely the founder of Daoism, Li Er.

Before the dimensional storms, although Mount Laojun was a scenic spot, it wasn’t developed too well. This resulted in few tourists. Instead, it was common for locals to scale the mountain to see the sunrise over the sea of clouds from Golden Peak.

From the information, the stone sculpture had been recently sculpted, so there was likely nothing odd about it. However,

when Zhou Wen approached it, the mysterious phone vibrated.

Zhou Wen hurriedly took out his mysterious phone and activated the camera function. Soon, he locked onto the stone cow's forehead. There was the familiar palm symbol.

I've finally found it! Zhou Wen was overjoyed.

Before coming to Mount Laojun, Wang Fei had repeatedly exhorted everyone not to cross Central Heaven Gateway. If they did, they would have to bear the consequences themselves.

Zhou Wen wouldn't have dared venture deeper if he couldn't find the palm symbol.

The phone screen showed that he had finished downloading the Mount Laojun dungeon. Just as Zhou Wen was reeling in delight, he suddenly felt a force slam into his back. He involuntarily flew up.

The force was immense, making it impossible for Zhou Wen to control his strength. However, the force was extremely strange. Although it was heavy, it didn't injure Zhou Wen's muscles or bone. All he could do was fly involuntarily towards Central Heaven Gateway.

In midair, Zhou Wen turned his head to take a glance, only to see that the three-eyed antelope was standing watching. It was giving him a nefarious smile.

Holy sh*t. Wasn't it said that Mount Laojun's dimensional creatures are docile? To think that the three-eyed antelope holds such grudges, taking revenge in a blink of an eye. One really can't believe in rumors. Zhou Wen thought unhappily.

He had always been wary of the three-eyed antelope, but he hadn’t heard any sound before he was sent flying.

Zhou Wen slammed through Central Heaven Gateway and when he landed on the ground, he immediately bounced to his feet and attempted to rush out.

However, he was taken aback when he looked back. He had clearly crossed the gateway with the words “Central Heaven Gateway,” but when he looked back, he realized that the gateway, along with the stone sculpture and stairs were gone. He was by the side of a hanging cliff with clouds swirling around.

Is this an illusion? Zhou Wen carefully headed to the edge of the cliff and looked down. A gust of the mountain wind blew and nearly blew him off the edge.

“Meh!” A goat’s cry sounded from nearby. Zhou Wen was alarmed as he hurriedly turned his head and saw the three-eyed antelope standing on a nearby boulder, looking at him mockingly.

In this day and age, you can’t even offend an antelope. Zhou Wen licked his lips and ignored it before glancing at his phone.

He finally understood what was happening. The three-eyed antelope didn’t dare harm him on the mountaintop, so it had struck him, throwing him onto Golden Peak, hoping to use its forces to finish him.

Zhou Wen made up his mind not to head forward. He stood there and waited. Then, he used his phone to scout the way to see what oddities lay ahead on Golden Peak.

There was no more downloading notice on the phone screen. On its home screen, there was an icon of a stone cow. On it were the words “Mount Laojun.”

Zhou Wen was just about to click on the Mount Laojun icon when he felt something amiss.

The hair follicles in his pores began to grow thicker and longer. They even sprouted leaves, turning him into a humanoid grass field. It left him alarmed.

No good! Zhou Wen was alarmed as his mind raced. He instantly thought of the new Primordial Energy Art he had learned from the Wordless Monument and quickly switched from the Lost Immortal Sutra to it.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 104 - Three Talismans

Chapter 104 Three Talismans

The moment the Wordless Monument's Primordial Energy Art was activated, the grass sprouting on Zhou Wen immediately stopped growing. Furthermore, it gradually began to recede. Soon, Zhou Wen's body returned to normal.

The three-eyed antelope wore a look of surprise when it saw this. It stood nearby and sized up Zhou Wen.

Thankfully, the Primordial Energy Art of the Wordless Monument works. Zhou Wen heaved a long sigh of relief. He turned his head and saw that the area he came from remained a steep cliff and not the gateway he came from.

Forget it. I'll find a way out in-game. Since there's the Wordless Monument's Primordial Energy Art, there shouldn't be too much danger as long as that antelope doesn't find trouble with me. Zhou Wen's heart jumped for joy when he subconsciously looked at the antelope.

The antelope who had been standing nearby just moments ago was nowhere to be seen.

"Meh!" A bleat sounded from behind Zhou Wen, causing him to break out into a cold sweat. Turning his head, he indeed saw the antelope standing behind him, its eyes sizing him up.

That was not all. As it sized him up, it circled around him as though he wanted to take in every inch of his body clearly, unwilling to miss out any detail.

Zhou Wen didn’t know what it was up to. He went on full alert for he wasn’t going to just sit back and do nothing if the antelope really wanted to harm him even if he knew he was no match for it.

However, it had no intention of taking action. It circled Zhou Wen a few times as the puzzlement in its eyes intensified.

“Brother Antelope, let’s negotiate. I’ll wash that blade of grass and return it to you. Why don’t you live and let live?” Zhou Wen carefully said to the three-eyed antelope.

If he knew that the antelope would be so vengeful, he wouldn’t have dug up the grass.

The antelope ignored him as it moved closer and nudged him to walk inside with its head.

The antelope had great strength, so much so that Zhou Wen felt that his strength couldn’t put up any resistance. Being pushed by that force, he couldn’t help but walk in.

Countless thoughts flashed through Zhou Wen’s mind, but he ultimately didn’t risk his life by fighting with the antelope.

The ancient buildings on top of Golden Peak were extremely large. They were connected by stone bridges. Beneath the stone bridges was a swirling sea of clouds and walking over them made one feel like they were walking in the sky.

“Brother Antelope, where are you pushing me? Can’t I walk on my own?” Zhou Wen asked.

The three-eyed antelope seemed to understand what he said and stopped nudging him with its head. It bleated at him before walking off.

Zhou Wen knew that his Speed and Strength were inferior to that of the antelope as it was likely an Epic creature, so it wasn't realistic for him to escape under its nose. All he could do was follow it.

The antelope led him through the ancient buildings, passing under many stone bridges before arriving at a Daoist temple. Zhou Wen focused his gaze and saw that the signboard had the words "Great Pure Temple."

Zhou Wen had a superficial knowledge of Daoism, but he didn't know that Great Pure One was one of the Three Pure Ones— Jade Pure One, Supreme Pure One, and Great Pure One. Among them, the Great Pure One was the most famous, also known as Taishang Laojun. It was probably a name everyone in East District was aware of.

This Daoist temple's name was Great Pure Temple, so it was definitely meant to consecrate Taishang Laojun.

Don't tell me that Taishang Laojun is still living here? When Zhou Wen recalled his encounter at the Small Buddha Temple, he couldn't help but increase his circulation speed of the Wordless Monument's Primordial Energy Art.

The antelope came to the entrance of the Great Pure Temple but didn't enter. With a flash of its figure, it was already behind Zhou Wen and, before he even realized what was happening, it had pushed him into the temple.

Zhou Wen was already mentally prepared so he wasn't surprised. The antelope definitely wasn't taking him to sightsee when it led him here.

Standing firm, Zhou Wen studied the situation within. Beyond the door was a compound that looked rather old.

The ground was covered in dust and fallen leaves. It was as though no one had stepped foot into it for a thousand years.

In fact, what Zhou Wen knew was that before the dimensional storms, Great Pure Temple enjoyed plenty of incense offerings. And that was only decades ago.

“Since you are a disciple of my Daoist school. You can choose any of the Three Pure Talismans on the table.” An ancient voice rang out from an unknown location, resounding inside Great Pure Temple as though it came from every direction. It was impossible to tell where the source came from.

“Yes, Master.” Zhou Wen didn’t dare hesitate. After bowing, his gaze landed on an offering table in the yard.

After he passed through the door, he saw three talismans on the offering table. They looked completely different in material. One was like flawless white jade, while the second was made of metal, and the last one was carved from wood.

The three talismans were the size of a palm with similar appearances. However, the runic patterns on them were different.

Zhou Wen couldn’t read the runes since he had a limited understanding of Daoism. He could only make half-baked guesses. Small Buddha Temple’s three-faced Buddha made me choose a Mythical Companion Egg, but I’m made to choose talismans here. I wonder which one is useful. This is Great Pure Temple, so logically speaking, the three talismans should be related to Taishang Laojun. However, that might not be the case. Daoism’s Three Pure Ones were one embodiment to begin with, so the three talismans might represent the Three Pure Ones.

If my guess is correct, then the jade talisman represents the Jade Pure One, Lord of Primordial Beginning. The wooden talisman has something to do with nature, so it likely represents Taishang Laojun. As for the golden talisman, it should represent the Supreme Pure One. Which one should I choose? Zhou Wen was just making random guesses, so it wasn't as though he knew if he was correct.

However, from an aesthetic point of view, he would have taken the jade talisman. But upon realizing that he was at Great Pure Temple, he hesitated for a moment before taking the wooden talisman.

The instant Zhou Wen picked up the wooden talisman, he saw the projection in front of him, transform. Like a dream, Great Pure Temple dissipated. When Zhou Wen's vision returned to normal, he realized that he had already returned to the spot beside the stone sculpture of an elderly man riding on the back of a cow.

If it wasn't for the wooden charm in his hand, Zhou Wen would have wondered if he had been dreaming.

"Meh!" A bleat sounded. Upon seeing the three-eyed antelope, Zhou Wen confirmed everything that had happened was no illusion.

He didn't dare stay here any longer. Although Mount Laojun's Golden Peak wasn't as strange as Small Buddha Temple, it left Zhou Wen apprehensive as he ran down the mountain with the wooden talisman in hand.

When he reached the halfway point and saw Wang Fei and his classmates, Zhou Wen heaved a sigh of relief.

"Zhou Wen, I told you to run. Were you off merrymaking?? Why did you bring an antelope back?" Wang Fei frowned

when she saw Zhou Wen.

He turned his head and saw that the three-eyed antelope had followed him down. However, the vertical eye on its forehead had vanished. Apart from its whiteness, it looked no different from an ordinary white antelope.

Wang Fei originally imagined that it was an Earth animal that had mutated on Mount Laojun, not expecting it to be a dimensional creature. After all, dimensional creatures weren’t able to step past the Wordless Monument.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 105 - The Antelope That Just Won’t Leave

Chapter 105 The Antelope That Just Won’t Leave

At the Special Investigation Bureau’s dedicated hospital.

“Liz, answer me honestly. Is there anything you exaggerated in the report you submitted?” Qiao Siyuan asked with a grave expression.

“Minister, I’ve been strictly trained in intelligence. I know the importance of correct intelligence. I can guarantee that the report I wrote has no exaggerations or falsehoods. I can be responsible for every word in it.” Liz struggled to get up as she was pushed down by Qiao Siyuan.

“You have just received treatment. Only by recuperating and being able to move can you have what it takes to continue fighting.” Qiao Siyuan placated Liz and flipped through her report. “I have already done thorough investigations and have confirmed that there’s a mysterious stone tablet in Small Buddha Temple. It’s like the other lands of mystery. No one can master the Primordial Energy Art on the stone monument unless that person possesses the special physique that matches

it.”

“In that case, that Zhou Wen…” The mere thought of Zhou Wen made Liz immediately clench her teeth.

If it weren’t for Zhou Wen, she wouldn’t have been injured, much less have her sea of energy destroyed.

Qiao Siyuan nodded slightly. “According to your report, he was able to enter the temple hall without being harmed. As for you, you had Headless Angel to protect you; yet, you were nearly killed. This means there are only two possibilities. First, it’s that he has a guardian Companion Beast that’s stronger than Headless Angel, protecting him from harm. The other possibility is that he possesses a special physique that matches Small Buddha Temple, preventing him from being attacked. I’m inclined towards the latter.”

Liz said hatefully, “The An family must have known that Zhou Wen had a special physique. That’s why they view him in a different light and gave him An Jing’s candidacy at all costs. If by a stroke of luck, he has obtained another special physique, having two talents on him, it won’t be impossible for him to have a chance to break through to the Mythical realm. The An family has really made their plans. I think Ouyang Lan and Zhou Lingfeng’s marriage was probably just a transaction.”

At the thought of the An family, Liz also gritted her teeth in hatred. She was the daughter of a Senator after all; yet, An Tianzuo had her sea of energy crippled. She had to have her revenge.

Qiao Siyuan said plainly, “The impact dimensional zones have in various parts of the world is growing more obvious. It results in the barriers between territories growing, therefore impeding movement. The factions from these territories

have always been trying to use this opportunity to extricate themselves from the League's control. The An family is filled with ambition and they have a Primordial Gold mine while they have been nurturing their army. They are also using all kinds of means to seek out a way to break through to the Mythical stage. Their ambition knows no bounds."

"Minister, we can't let the An family continue. We have to nip Zhou Wen in the bud. As long as the An family doesn't have a Mythical expert, they will have scruples and won't easily betray and abandon the League," Liz said excitedly.

"Calm down. You haven't recovered from your injuries." After placating Liz's emotions, Qiao Siyuan continued, "Let's not talk about whether Zhou Wen was intentionally nurtured by the An family, just the fact that he has a special physique implies he needs to come under the League's service. He cannot become a private tool of the An family. However, Luoyang is ultimately the An family's territory. After what happened the previous time, they will definitely enhance their protection of him. It's probably impossible to touch him in Luoyang."

"Are we just going to watch the An family do whatever they want?" Liz said angrily.

"Of course not. However, everything depends on the ways and methods employed. The League needs the An family's supply of Primordial Gold Ore so we can't touch them for now. However, since Zhou Wen obtained a nomination, he will definitely be sent to our League's holy grounds and lose the protection of the An family. From there, it will be a lot easier for us to bring him back," Qiao Siyuan said indifferently.

“We let him off. He can live for a few more days,” Liz said hatefully.

Qiao Siyuan exhorted again. “For now, don’t tell anyone about Zhou Wen’s special physique. It’s best if there aren’t any external complications.”

“Minister, don’t worry. I understand what needs to be done.” Liz nodded slightly.

Having a special physique had wide implications. Even in the Senate, there were different voices. The various factions also treated special physiques seriously. If other factions knew that Zhou Wen possessed a special physique, it would likely be impossible for them to control the situation’s development, something Liz and Qiao Siyuan least wanted to happen.

Qiao Siyuan was thinking about work, but Liz only wanted to finish off Zhou Wen personally.

In the Four Seasons Garden dorms, Zhou Wen sat on a chair and stared at the white antelope.

This antelope had been following him ever since he returned from Mount Laojun. It even squeezed into the college bus and returned to the college with him.

Zhou Wen really wished to chase the creature away, but he knew how terrifying the antelope was. If he forcefully chased it away, it was possible that it would explode with rage and slaughter someone. When that happened, not only would it affect Zhou Wen, even his fellow classmates and teacher would be down on their luck.

Therefore, even though Zhou Wen wished to chase away the antelope, he didn’t forcefully drive it away.

Thankfully, it was normal for students to use Companion Beasts at Sunset College, so it wasn’t too shocking for Zhou Wen to bring one back. However, Li Xuan and the other students didn’t cease mocking him on the way back.

“I say, Zhou Wen, your luck is pretty good. A pet automatically recognizes you as its owner. Unfortunately, this is only an antelope that mutated on Mount Laojun and not a high-level dimensional creature. If this fellow was an Epic dimensional creature, that would be awesome. It’s really a pity.” Back when Li Xuan said those words, it was naturally a jibe at Zhou Wen.

However, Zhou Wen knew very well that the fellow definitely had powers at the Epic stage.

“Brother Antelope, I’ve washed your grass. Eat it with ease. I’ve used green, natural, uncontaminated cleaning fluid to wash it more than ten times. It’s clean. Quickly finish it and go on your merry way. A place like school has too much dust and the pollution is terrible. There are all kinds of people here and there’s all kinds of noise pollution. It’s nothing comparable to a place like Mount Laojun. It must be hard on you living here. It’s best you return.” Zhou Wen placed the withered grass on the table in front of the antelope as he persuaded it sincerely.

Glancing at the withered grass on the table, it didn’t even sniff it but turned around and walked to the couch. It then lay on the couch and squinted its eyes comfortably.

“Brother Antelope, although you are indeed impressive, you should know that this is Sunset College. Many Epic experts are stationed here. If they discover that you are a feral dimensional creature, I’m afraid…” Zhou Wen had planned

on reasoning with it when he realized that emotional appeal didn’t work.

To his surprise, the antelope had fallen asleep on the couch as though it hadn’t heard Zhou Wen at all.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 106 - Entering Mount Laojun Again

Chapter 106 Entering Mount Laojun Again

Zhou Wen felt a little troubled, but he couldn’t think of a way to chase the antelope away. All he could do was let it occupy his couch.

I’ll take my time to think of a solution. Zhou Wen returned to his room and closed the door before lying in bed. Only then did he take out his mysterious phone and open the Mount Laojun dungeon.

He wanted to see if he could enter Great Pure Temple in-game again and choose another talisman.

The last time he entered Small Buddha Temple in-game, he got Truth Listener from it. Later, he went to Small Buddha Temple in real life, but he didn’t discover anything. He did not even awaken the three-faced Buddha.

Zhou Wen believed that it was likely that the three-faced Buddha had sensed Truth Listener on him, so the chance to choose wasn’t given.

Therefore, Zhou Wen first placed the wooden talisman he had chosen to the side and locked it up in a box. Only then did he turn on his phone and enter the game dungeon of Mount Laojun.

The environment of the game’s Mount Laojun dungeon was identical to the real Mount Laojun. But the dungeon started

directly from the spot with the cow statue which had the elderly man riding on it.

The moment the blood-colored avatar entered the game, it stepped through the Central Heaven Gateway.

Zhou Wen didn’t switch to the Wordless Monument’s Primordial Energy Art in the beginning. Instead, he used the Small Perfection of Wisdom Sutra, but once he entered, grass grew crazily on him with nothing capable of stopping it.

He hurriedly switched to the Wordless Monument’s Primordial Energy Art, allowing the blood-colored avatar to gradually return to normal.

It indeed shares the same logic with Small Buddha Temple. One has to master the corresponding Primordial Energy Art to enter as they please or death awaits them. Zhou Wen had roughly understood the rules of the mysterious lands.

Unbeknownst to Zhou Wen, people with Buddhist and Daoist physiques could enter Small Buddha Temple and Mount Laojun unscathed without practicing the respective Primordial Energy Arts.

The reason Zhou Wen needed to master the Primordial Energy Art to come and go freely was that he didn’t have a special physique. It was solely because the Lost Immortal Sutra’s power confused those terrifying existences, allowing Zhou Wen to retrieve the benefits that only people with special physiques could obtain.

Furthermore, the real difference between Zhou Wen and those with special physiques was that those with special physiques, like a Buddhist body, could only enter a place like Small Buddha Temple. They were no different from

ordinary people when entering Mount Laojun, so there were no benefits to be reaped.

The Lost Immortal Sutra’s powers allowed Zhou Wen to mimic all kinds of physiques and obtain the benefits he couldn’t otherwise obtain.

The Mount Laojun pavilions in-game were above the clouds, making them look like a heavenly palace.

Zhou Wen didn’t just casually walk around. His memory was pretty good, so he still remembered the path that the antelope had taken while leading him. He followed the route according to his memories.

However, he had only walked a short distance when he saw an immortal crane with a red top. The immortal crane was standing on a rock railing by the side of the bridge, its snow-white feathers seemingly engraved from jade. It suffused a glittering divine glow, an obvious indication that it wasn’t an ordinary creature of Earth.

The game seems a little different from reality. I didn’t see any other dimensional creatures when I followed the antelope! Zhou Wen looked warily at the immortal crane, unsure if it would attack him.

While Zhou Wen was pondering over it, reality gave him the cruelest answer. The immortal crane opened its mouth and sucked at the blood-colored avatar.

Zhou Wen hurriedly controlled the blood-colored avatar to summon its Companion Beasts to engage in battle, but he had no chance. The blood-colored avatar and its Companion Beasts were sucked into the immortal crane’s mouth before the game screen went black.

The immortal crane is probably a top Epic creature, right? Zhou Wen helplessly put down his phone. The immortal crane was simply too powerful and Zhou Wen’s present Strength was insufficient for him to challenge it, or rather, he was unqualified to fight it. Making another trip was useless.

I’ll do some research and see what uses that wooden talisman has. Zhou Wen had already given up on entering Mount Laojun. There was no way he could gain anything from that area before he advanced to the Epic stage.

Taking the wooden talisman out of the box, it felt warm to the touch. It was as if a refreshing energy was emitting from it, jolting his mind.

How do I use it? Zhou Wen attempted to circulate the Wordless Monument’s Primordial Energy Art before injecting his Primordial Energy into the talisman.

When using the item forms of his Companion Beasts, this was typically how it was done. All Zhou Wen could do was give it a try.

However, the moment his Primordial Energy entered the wooden talisman, the runes on it lit up. Then, Zhou Wen felt like the wooden talisman had turned into a huge pump that was draining his Primordial Energy as it flowed to the wooden talisman.

Boom!

Zhou Wen felt pain all over his body as his mind nearly exploded. In an instant, his Primordial Energy was completely drained.

Zhou Wen was too familiar with this feeling. It was the feeling of incubating a Companion Egg.

Could it be that… The wooden talisman is actually a Companion Egg! Just as this thought surfaced in Zhou Wen's mind, the wooden talisman in his hand transformed into a sliver of refreshing energy that imprinted on his palm.

The excruciating pain vanished at that moment as Zhou Wen slumped to the ground, panting heavily.

Although it was only for a brief moment, Zhou Wen felt the fat in his cheeks disappear and his eyeballs were almost tearing out of his sockets.

Thankfully, he recovered a lot faster after cultivating the Wordless Monument's Primordial Energy Art. Even if he didn't use Primordial Energy Crystals, his Primordial Energy would recover quite significantly after some rest. It made Zhou Wen feel a lot better.

When he raised his palm, he saw a leaf tattoo. The leaf was green and looked like jadeite. There were some crystal-clear white veins in it that looked like they were formed from frost.

Zhou Wen already had information about the Companion Beast appear in his mind. This information was typically only obtained after contracting a Companion Beast. Based on the very vague information, he had no way of understanding the Companion Beast in detail.

Thus, he still took out his mysterious phone and dripped a drop of blood onto the screen before looking through the blood-colored avatar's stats.

Indeed, there was an additional Companion Beast on the blood-colored avatar's stats.

Banana Fairy: Mortal (Evolvable)

Strength: 11

Speed: 11

Constitution: 11

Primordial Energy: 11

Talent Skill: Grand Yin Wind

Companion Form: Fan

Its stats are the same as Truth Listener, but why is there only one talent skill? Truth Listener at least has four. For a Companion Beast of the same grade, there should be at least two or three, right? Zhou Wen was somewhat disappointed.

Although this Companion Beast could evolve to the Mythical stage in the future, who knew how long it would take to nurture it. Its present stats were still more important. A single skill was clearly inferior to having four skills in terms of usefulness.

With this in mind, Zhou Wen summoned the Banana Fairy to see what kind of Companion Beast it was.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 107 - Banana Fairy

Chapter 107 Banana Fairy

A green light flashed as an adorable palm-sized, green-dressed girl appeared in front of Zhou Wen. She sat on a jadeite-like banana leaf floating in mid-air like a boat swaying above the lake under the moonlight.

Why are all Mythical Companion Beasts so small in size? Zhou Wen extended his hand and beckoned to Banana Fairy. The girl, along with the banana leaf, flew over and landed in Zhou Wen’s hand, turning into a petite green fan.

The fan was only the size of Zhou Wen’s palm and the leaf was crystalline-like jadeite. Its design was also extremely exquisite and beautiful, but it was a little too small.

It’s so tiny. Isn’t it a joke to use it as a weapon? Zhou Wen looked around and felt that using the tiny fan as a weapon wasn’t suitable at all. Furthermore, he had never learned how to fight with a fan.

However, he soon realized that Banana Fairy and other Companion Beasts were somewhat different. Typical Companion Beasts couldn’t use their talent skills when they were in their companion form, but a Banana Fairy actually could.

Zhou Wen held the tiny fan and flapped at a sandbag meant for training. Immediately, an invisible gust of wind blew over, shaking the sandbag left and right.

Is that all? Zhou Wen was somewhat disappointed. Although the winds were strong, they were not considered fantastic. They didn’t seem to have much destructive force.

Zhou Wen reached out to press down on the swaying sandbag and was slightly taken aback. When his fingers touched the sandbag, he realized that it was covered in a layer of frost. The spot his fingers had touched was ice-cold.

Grand Yin Wind has wintry effects, but such coldness isn’t enough to kill an opponent, right? With this in mind, Zhou Wen suddenly thought of something. Grand Yin Wind is a wintry wind, so will it be able to repress the Fire God Platform’s firebirds? If so, wouldn’t I be able to reach its peak?

Zhou Wen didn’t have much hope regarding his random thought. After all, the Banana Fairy was only at the Mortal stage. Even if she advanced to the Mythical stage in the future, her standards now weren’t comparable to top Legendary Companion Beasts.

As for the firebirds, each of them had strength at the Legendary stage.

Despite having such thoughts, Zhou Wen still launched the Ancient Imperial City dungeon on the mysterious phone. He planned on testing out his theory by heading to the Fire God Platform. If the Grand Yin Wind could really suppress the firebirds, he wouldn’t do it as all he needed to do was nurture her to the Legendary stage. By then, scaling Fire God Platform wouldn’t be a difficult task.

Zhou Wen had been grinding at Ancient Imperial City countless times. He had once again arrived in front of Fire God Platform and ridden the Silver-Winged Flying Ant up the stairs. Soon, a firebird flew down from the Fire God Platform.

Seeing a firebird fly down, the blood-colored avatar clenched the banana fan tightly, aimed it at the incoming firebird, and produced Grand Yin Wind.

A gust of cold wind blew at the firebird, making it look like a fire plume that fell into the water. It instantly extinguished, leaving no trace behind.

Zhou Wen stared with his mouth agape. He couldn’t help but hug his phone and give it two kisses. What a treasure. The Grand Yin Wind is so effective against firebirds. I have a chance of scaling the Fire God Platform.

Another two firebirds flew down from the Fire God Platform. Zhou Wen ordered the blood-colored avatar to flap the fan, again and again, using the same Grand Yin Wind skill.

However, before the Grand Yin Wind appeared, the game system notified: ‘Insufficient Primordial Energy to release Grand Yin Wind.’

Holy sh*t, does Banana Fairy’s Primordial Energy only have enough for one use of Grand Yin Wind? Zhou Wen hurriedly controlled the blood-colored avatar to rush down Fire God Platform. Without the Grand Yin Wind, there was no way he could rush up using the blood-colored avatar’s capabilities alone.

After finding a safe spot, Zhou Wen began researching the Banana Fairy and Grand Yin Wind skill. Indeed, the former’s Primordial Energy had been expended, leaving nothing behind.

After grinding a round of Skeleton Soldiers and having their Primordial Energy Crystals drop, Zhou Wen filled up the Banana Fairy’s Primordial Energy and got her to use Grand

Yin Wind once. Indeed, her eleven points of Primordial Energy were depleted immediately.

Zhou Wen made the Banana Fairy turn into a fan, attempting to infuse his Primordial Energy into it to see if he could use the Grand Yin Wind.

He was able to use it, but his 11 points of Primordial Energy were instantly drained, leaving not an iota behind.

With my Primordial Energy, I can only use the Grand Yin Wind twice in a short period of time. Can I rush up the Fire God Platform only relying on two uses of Grand Yin Wind? Zhou Wen frowned in thought.

The Grand Yin Wind is an area-of-effect Primordial Energy Skill. If I can lure the firebirds into a certain range, it's not impossible to get rid of a large number of firebirds at once. If used properly, I might be able to rush to the top with just two uses. Zhou Wen inwardly made plans.

With the hope of ascending Fire God Platform, Zhou Wen didn't hesitate to try it. With the help of the Silver-Winged Flying Ant's Speed and flight and Zhou Wen's Dragon Gate Fairy Skill, the blood-colored avatar charged all the way up while consciously luring the firebirds in a particular direction.

This was because Banana Fairy was only at the Mortal stage, greatly limiting the range of the Grand Yin Wind. To eliminate the firebirds as best as possible, he had to try his best to bunch them in a certain spot.

More than ten firebirds were led to a spot by Zhou Wen. Almost reaching his limit, Zhou Wen no longer hesitated. He ordered the blood-colored avatar to hold the banana fan and gently fan the firebirds.

The firebirds were instantly extinguished by the Grand Yin Wind. Only two firebirds that were not within the Grand Yin Wind's range, managed to survive.

Zhou Wen was delighted as he controlled the blood-colored avatar to continue charging up Fire God Platform.

With more than half the distance traversed, a firebird horde erupted from Fire God Platform, blotting out the sky as they charged down like a fiery cloud.

The blood-colored avatar once again activated its Grand Yin Wind skill and fanned the fiery cloud. Immediately, a large hole was blown through the cloud with the Grand Yin Wind. An unknown number of firebirds were blown to nothingness.

Using this opportunity, the Silver-Winged Flying Ant spread its four wings and passed through the hole and continued charging up. The firebird horde behind it swept back and closed the hole, chasing after the Silver-Winged Flying Ant.

The Silver-Winged Flying Ant wasn't able to fly at a high altitude in one fell swoop. When it reached its apex, the blood-colored avatar jumped on its back and leaped up in the sky like a hawk hovering above Fire God Platform with the Dragon Gate Fairy Skill.

This time, Zhou Wen finally saw the complete Fire God Platform. Apart from a stone monument with the Ancient Imperial Sutra, there was a stone furnace in front of it. The flames in the furnace flickered as the firebirds flew out of it.

At that moment, a large flock of firebirds shot out from the furnace. Zhou Wen ignored them as his gaze landed on the Ancient Imperial Sutra's stone monument, trying to memorize a few words.

After memorizing about eight words, the flock of firebird had surrounded him and the game screen quickly went black.

With seven or eight words each time, I wonder how many times it will take for me to memorize the complete Ancient Imperial Sutra. Zhou Wen dripped his blood and revived himself as he entered the game once again.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 108 - Xiyuan Crystal shop

Chapter 108 Xiyuan Crystal shop

Wang Fei had been in a bad mood recently. Based on her plan, Zhou Wen should have been motivated to diligently cultivate after staring at the Unwinding Monument.

However, although it was true that Zhou Wen was motivated, it was towards gaming and not cultivation.

You clearly have such great talent. Why do you want to be a loser that is obsessed with gaming? Wang Fei was completely perplexed by Zhou Wen’s thoughts.

From the looks of it, relying on external forces won’t do. I have to give him some stimulation. Wang Fei thought about how to inspire Zhou Wen and make him get back on his feet again.

However, after much thought, she was momentarily unable to think of a good solution. Wang Fei knew that one couldn’t rush or force education. To change a student’s mindset would require a suitable opportunity.

Hence, she planned on observing for a period of time and waiting until Sunset College’s first comprehensive test before making any plans.

There was a single comprehensive examination that every student had to take, regardless of seniority, one month after school began. All the students in each class and grade would have to take part in the exam. The test was uniform and it determined a student’s ranking in school.

Wang Fei felt that Zhou Wen might be inspired if he were to see the true strength of the college's top students.

Zhou Wen's life was ordinary and fulfilling. He crazily grinded daily at dungeons before committing suicide at Fire God Platform to memorize a few words of the Ancient Imperial Sutra.

By now, Zhou Wen hated its length. Despite the numerous times he went up, he had only memorized half of the sutra. It was unknown when he would finish it.

The antelope took up residence in Zhou Wen's dorm, eating and drinking for free, showing no signs of leaving.

Zhou Wen could have just eaten anything without especially heading to the cafeteria, but after this fellow came, it required fresh vegetables daily, forcing him to have no choice but to head to the cafeteria to think of a solution.

Zhou Wen wanted to ignore it, but as long as the fellow didn't eat anything, it would stay by Zhou Wen's side. It didn't do anything out of line except circle around Zhou Wen, nudging him with its head, giving him no peace. It was even more impossible to play games, so this forced him to prepare food for it.

Zhou Wen originally imagined that his life would continue like this, but Ah Sheng's arrival had shattered his peaceful life.

"Young Master Wen, Madam has asked me to take you over there." Ah Sheng was always so humble and polite. Even a person with a fiery temper would not flare up at him.

"Is there a reason why Sis Lan is looking for me?" Zhou Wen asked with a frown. If there wasn't anything important, he'd

rather not visit the An family again.

“Madam wanted me to tell you that she’s waiting for you at the shop in the city district. She has something private that needs your help,” Ah Sheng said.

“Alright.” Zhou Wen nodded slightly. Since he wasn’t going to the An family and he didn’t mind Ouyang Lan, he didn’t find making the trip too aversive.

Ah Sheng drove Zhou Wen out of Sunset College. Usually, after school started, students couldn’t leave unless it was a holiday. However, people that Ah Sheng wanted to pick up were clearly not on this list.

After the soldier guarding the door saw the pass Ah Sheng took out, he directly let them through.

Ah Sheng didn’t lie—they really didn’t head for the An family home. Zhou Wen originally imagined that Ouyang Lan would meet him at a restaurant or a cafe, or perhaps a clothing or jewelry shop.

However, when the car stopped, Zhou Wen realized that they had come to a dimensional crystal shop named “Xiyuan.”

He found the name of the dimensional crystal shop a little familiar. After some thought, he recalled that in the delivery package the former principal had sent him, the owner of the name card was the owner of the Xiyuan crystal shop, Qin Xiyuan.

As there hadn’t been any other related incidents since he had received the delivery, Zhou Wen ignored the name card. He only recalled the name card now when he saw the signboard of the Xiyuan dimensional crystal shop.

I wonder if that string of numbers was casually written on Qin Xiyuan’s name card or if it has anything to do with Qin Xiyuan. Many thoughts flashed through Zhou Wen’s mind.

It was impossible for him to show the name card to Qin Xiyuan. Without figuring out what the number on the card meant, Zhou Wen had no intention of letting anyone see it.

“Little Wen, come over quickly.” After the car came to a stop, Ouyang Lan, who was dressed in sports attire, stood on the steps of the shop and beckoned to Zhou Wen.

Zhou Wen alighted and approached Ouyang Lan. He politely asked, “Sis Lan, how may I help you?”

Ouyang Lan smiled and said, “It’s almost Little Jing’s birthday and I want to give her a Companion Beast as a gift. I want you to give me some advice.”

“Sis Lan, you must be joking. Your understanding of Companion Beasts is definitely greater than mine,” Zhou Wen said.

Ouyang Lan thought nothing of it. She hooked her arm around Zhou Wen and walked into the shop. “This is a birthday gift, not a piece of equipment used to kill enemies on a battlefield. There’s no need for pragmatism, just aesthetics. To let my Little Jing love it at a glance, I believe young people like you will do a better job than me. So give me some suggestions.”

Zhou Wen never guessed Ouyang Lan’s important matter would be this, but since he was already here, he couldn’t just turn around and leave. Besides, Zhou Wen wanted to see what kind of place the Xiyuan crystal shop was.

The staff seemed to know Ouyang Lan and the manager came over personally to greet her.

“Don’t mind us. We are just taking a look,” Ouyang Lan said with a smile.

The manager and salesperson knew better and retreated to the side. Only Ah Sheng maintained a distance behind Ouyang Lan and Zhou Wen.

Zhou Wen was rather puzzled that they were the only customers in such a huge store. With such terrible sales, it was a miracle how the store managed to continue operating.

As though reading Zhou Wen’s mind, Ouyang Lan said, “Although Xiyuan’s store is not the biggest in Luoyang, it is the store with the most excellent products. It often has trinkets that give one a pleasant surprise. My father and the boss here were childhood friends. He often brought me here when I was young. Before I advanced to the Epic stage, many of my Companion Beasts were bought here. Many of them were also given by Uncle Qin. Back then, the Xiyuan shop wasn’t that big. Every time Father brought me here, Uncle Qin would close the shop by hanging the “on a break” sign before taking my father around to see his latest collection.”

With that said, Zhou Wen roughly understood what Ouyang Lan was getting at. It wasn’t because the business here was bad, but that Ouyang Lan’s arrival made the Xiyuan shop temporarily closed for business.

“However, since Father left Luoyang, I haven’t been here in a long while.” As Ouyang Lan spoke, she walked to a row of lockers and entered a string of codes. She opened one of the lockers and took out a bunch of keys.

Zhou Wen didn’t peep at the codes Ouyang Lan had input, but due to Truth Listener on his ear, his hearing was much better than before. When he heard Ouyang Lan enter the code, he knew how many numbers she had entered.

A ten-digit code? Zhou Wen was slightly taken aback as he subconsciously looked at the locker. He thought, Could the string of numbers on the name card be a storage code here?

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 109 - Choosing a Companion Egg

Chapter 109 Choosing a Companion Egg

Zhou Wen looked around and found two rows of lockers nearby. There were at least forty to fifty of them.

Ignoring the fact that he didn’t know if the ten numbers on the name card were a locker’s code, even if they were, he had no idea which locker the code belonged to.

Ouyang Lan held the bunch of keys and said, “In the past, Uncle Qin would always leave the spare key in this locker. If my father came when he wasn’t around, he could use the key to access the Companion Beasts and Companion Eggs. I never expected Uncle Qin to keep this habit despite all these years. Even the code is the same.”

“Did the former principal use a particular locker in the past?” Zhou Wen asked casually.

“Of course, the lockers here are all old-fashioned safe deposit boxes. They aren’t like the public lockers that are popular these days. As long as a code is set, apart from the setter, even Uncle Qin can’t open them. Therefore, the lockers here cannot be used by anyone. Those who can use them are typically old customers or Uncle Qin’s friends.”

As Ouyang Lan spoke, she walked to a locker numbered 42. She said with great nostalgia, “This locker is the one my father uses every time he comes.”

Zhou Wen’s gaze immediately landed on the locker as he thought to himself, Could that string of numbers be Locker No. 42’s code?

While Zhou Wen was deep in thought, Ouyang Lan had already reached out her fingers and tapped on the code pad a few times. Then, Locker No. 42 opened.

Ouyang Lan had only pressed six digits. Only then did Zhou Wen realize that the codes weren’t necessarily ten digits. It was likely that everyone had their own habits.

There were only a few miscellaneous items inside Locker No. 42, such as white gloves and masks.

Ouyang Lan took out a pair of gloves and a mask and handed it to Zhou Wen. “Put it on. Although most Companion Eggs and Companion Beasts aren’t afraid of contamination, there are some exceptions. This is my father’s habit.”

Zhou Wen silently took the gloves and mask and put them on. Ouyang Lan also wore one set herself before taking Zhou Wen in the elevator and going down to basement one.

“The three levels above are all kinds of dimensional crystals and materials. Basement one is filled with Companion Beasts and Companion Eggs, with most of them at the Legendary stage.” As Ouyang Lan spoke, the two of them reached basement one.

Zhou Wen immediately saw many glass cages in the hall of basement one. There were all sorts of Companion Beasts some he had heard of and others he had never heard of.

“These Companion Beasts were placed here by their owners. It’s not easy to buy them. This is because their owners have

to pay a huge price to transfer them so the transfer cost is much higher than buying a Companion Egg at the same level.” Ouyang Lan was very knowledgeable as she introduced all the Companion Beasts they could see, allowing Zhou Wen to broaden his horizons.

When they came to the Companion Egg area, the numbers clearly increased. Rows of Companion Eggs were placed behind tempered glass. The colors, sizes, and shapes were all different, making them look like dazzling gems.

Besides each Companion Egg was a sign. On it was some information on the Companion Egg. There were even portraits of the beast after the egg hatched.

“Little Wen, what do you think of this Butterfly Fairy Companion Egg… This Ice Moon Fox seems pretty good too…” Ouyang Lan seemed to be enjoying it as she kept asking for Zhou Wen’s opinion.

“As long as it’s from you, I believe An Jing will be happy receiving it,” Zhou Wen said.

“That may be right, but I still wish to give her something that she will truly like. You are all young people, so your aesthetic standards are similar. Give me more opinions,” Ouyang Lan said while choosing the Companion Eggs.

Zhou Wen didn’t say anything else as he thought to himself, As a man, my aesthetic sense is naturally different from women. If I were to give my opinions, the Companion Egg chosen will probably not be something An Jing will like.

However, since Ouyang Lan kept asking for his opinion, Zhou Wen couldn’t just keep silent. After some hesitation, he asked, “Sis Lan, can I take pictures of the Companion Eggs here?”

“Not for others, but it’s no problem for you. Feel free to take pictures. Later, I’ll take you downstairs. There are some Epic Companion Beasts there which you can take pictures of. If you meet them in dimensional zones in the future, you will be able to recognize them.” Ouyang Lan even pointed out some relatively important Companion Beasts and got Zhou Wen to take more pictures.

Zhou Wen took out his mysterious phone and pretended to take photos. After taking pictures of the Companion Eggs, he immediately saw their information and data.

He wasn’t afraid of being recorded by the surveillance cameras because he had already tried many times using modern tools like cell phones or cameras to capture pictures of the mysterious phone’s screen to no avail. All that was snapped was a blur that prevented anything from being discerned.

He really couldn’t give any suggestions regarding beauty, but with the feature of the mysterious phone, he could give Ouyang Lan some suggestions of the pros and cons of the Companion Egg’s stats.

“No matter how I look at it, I still find the Butterfly Fairy and the Ice Moon Fox most suited for my Little Jing. Little Wen, what do you think?” Ouyang Lan finally decided on the Butterfly Fairy and Ice Moon Fox, but she was in a dilemma with which to choose from.

“You can buy both,” Zhou Wen said.

With Ouyang Lan’s wealth, buying two Legendary Companion Eggs was just a drop in the bucket. There was no need to fret over it.

However, Zhou Wen had used his mysterious phone to look at the two Companion Egg. They had very average stats.

Ouyang Lan shook her head and said, “Giving one gift reveals one’s sincerity. Giving two would only backfire. It will make Xiaojing think I’m just patronizing her.”

Zhou Wen felt a little envious of An Jing. He had never had a mother. His father wasn’t a person who was good at taking care of children, so no one had celebrated his birthday for him, let alone give him birthday presents.

Ouyang Lan’s thoughtfulness towards An Jing made Zhou Wen suddenly realize that if his mother hadn’t died from a miscarriage, she would probably have loved him just like Ouyang Lan loved An Jing.

However, this thought only lasted for a moment. Zhou Wen was already used to living alone. He might end up feeling uncomfortable if he really had a mother like Ouyang Lan.

“Little Wen, what’s your take? Don’t be bothered by my choice. If it were you, which Companion Egg would you want?” Ouyang Lan asked again.

Zhou Wen pointed at a pitch-black egg that was about the size of a pigeon’s egg as he said, “If it were me, I would probably want that Venomous Caterpillar Companion Egg,”

“For real?” Ouyang Lan looked at Zhou Wen in astonishment.

Venomous Caterpillars were not powerful Companion Beasts. Although they were at the Legendary stage, their various stats were lacking. The talent skill they had—Vile Venom — was also extremely useless.

Such venom would only show its effects on places that the Venomous Caterpillar crawled over. However, its crawling speed was relatively slow. Even certain Mortal creatures were faster than its crawling, much less Legendary creatures.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 110 - Chained Companion Beast

Chapter 110 Chained Companion Beast

Key to everything was that Venomous Caterpillars were really ugly. Furthermore, they even emitted a foul smell when summoned. Typical girls didn’t like such Companion Beasts.

“Yes, very,” Zhou Wen said with a nod.

He had already used his mysterious phone to look at most of the Companion Eggs here. That Venomous Caterpillar’s stats were indeed one of the best Legendary Companion Eggs he had ever seen.

Other than having nearly full stats, it also had a rare three skills. One of them was basically the godliest skill of a Venomous Caterpillar.

Butterfly Transformation was a skill that could transform Venomous Caterpillar into a venomous butterfly, allowing it to gain powerful flying abilities. Its originally weak Speed then became its strongest aspect.

The Vile Venom skill also underwent some changes after the Venomous Caterpillar became a Venomous Butterfly. Just touching the Venomous Butterfly’s venomous powder was enough to poison someone.

This rare Venomous Caterpillar with three skills was considered one of the best excellent-grade Legendaries. If

Zhou Wen had the money, he would probably be tempted to buy it.

Of course, it was just a passing thought of his. It was useless even if he bought it. Firstly, it was difficult for him to incubate a Legendary Companion Egg. Secondly, his Mutated Lotus Flower Ant and Silver-Winged Flying Ant were not weaker than Venomous Caterpillar and were perhaps a little stronger. There was no need for him to waste time and energy on it.

Even if he really bought it, he could only use it as food for his Companion Beasts or for fusion.

“Your taste is really unique…” Ouyang Lan seemed to think of something as she narrowed her eyes and mumbled to herself, “Perhaps this is a good choice. I’m just unsure if Little Jing can recognize the Companion Eggs of a Venomous Caterpillar. If not… I can tell her that this is a Black Jade Butterfly’s Companion Egg… And when she incubates it… Haha…”

While Zhou Wen was flabbergasted, Ouyang Lan had already used her key to open the glass case and taken out the Venomous Caterpillar Companion Egg

Ouyang Lan called Ah Sheng over and said, “Ah Sheng, take this Companion Egg and pay for it. When the invoice is issued, get them to write it as Black Jade Butterfly. The packaging needs to be done nicely. Why don’t you do it yourself.”

Ah Sheng seemed to be accustomed to Ouyang Lan’s random and unconstrained ideas. He didn’t wear a look of surprise as he took the Companion Egg and left.

“Little Wen, let’s head down and take a look. There are quite a number of interesting Companion Beasts there. They aren’t commonly seen.” Ouyang Lan led Zhou Wen downwards.

After reaching basement three, they saw all kinds of independent special rooms. Each room had a Companion Beast. Although no one was guarding them, there was a powerful security system; every room needed a different key to open it.

Any entry to take a look at the Companion Beasts here actually required Qin Xiyuan to personally escort them. However, Ouyang Lan had his key, allowing her to directly open the room and broaden Zhou Wen’s horizons.

“Most of the Companion Beasts here were left behind by veterans. Companion Beasts are their partners and comrades, so they do not wish for Companion Beasts who have a limitless lifespan to die with them. Therefore, many veterans choose to transfer their Companion Beasts over here before their passing. Although there are some that do it because of financial reasons, it can’t be denied that the feelings soldiers have for their Companion Beasts far exceed those of ordinary people,” Ouyang Lan said.

Zhou Wen had always felt respect for soldiers. During the early days of the dimensional storms, countless soldiers used their lives to save ordinary people and explore dimensional zones.

At that time, the number of sacrificed soldiers were so many that it decreased the global military forces by a third.

“I wonder if that fellow is still around…” Ouyang Lan said as she walked forward and stopped in front of a door.

After searching the bunch of keys for a while, Ouyang Lan finally found a key and opened the heavy metal door that looked like a vault.

Zhou Wen looked into the room and was stunned when the scene before him turned clear.

This room also had a Companion Beast, but it was different from other Companion Beastsit had shackles on its body.

As the Companion Beasts were placed here by their owners, they did not need to worry too much about them hurting others. Nor was there any need to worry about them escaping.

The reason they were locked in rooms was that they were afraid that people would forcefully take them away or harm them. This also prevented others from pulling any tricks due to ulterior motives.

However, the Companion Beast in the room had shackles and cuffs on all limbs. Chains were bound around its body and behind the chains was a metal slab the size of a millstone.

Ouyang Lan walked into the room and looked at the Companion Beast as she said, “When I was young, my father would visit him whenever he came to Uncle Qin’s place. It’s been so many years, yet he’s still here.”

Zhou Wen also sized up the Companion Beast. He looked very much like a human, but his muscles were extremely thin as though he was just skin and bones. Even his ribs could be seen clearly.

However, his body was dry but not withered. His skin emitted a silver metallic luster. On the skin of his upper

body, there were many strange silver tattoos.

His long, silver hair cascaded down and covered his face and parts of his body. It was hard to see what he really looked like sitting there. It was even difficult to tell his gender.

“Sis Lan, what Companion Beast is this?” Zhou Wen had seen a few humanoid Companion Beasts in his textbooks, but they had traits that were different from humans. But, Zhou Wen didn’t notice anything obviously different on the Companion Beast in front of him.

“I don’t know. I asked my father when I was young, but he didn’t answer me or tell me about the Companion Beast. However, he would come here every time he came to visit Uncle Qin.” Ouyang Lan clearly had some interest in this Companion Beast. She sighed and continued, “I later asked Uncle Qin, but he said that he has no idea what Companion Beast it is. It was put here by my father, and he hasn’t told Uncle Qin anything about it.”

Zhou Wen was somewhat curious as he sized up the Companion Beast. Suddenly, he saw a nine-key pad on the metal piece that chained it up. It looked very similar to a keypad for passcodes.

Don’t tell me the numbers the former principal sent me are for this? Zhou Wen had a thought.

However, upon further thought, he felt that something was amiss. The former principal had his daughter and granddaughter, and Qin Xiyuan was his close friend. There was no reason for him to send the passcode to Zhou Wen.

Furthermore, if Ouyang Lan hadn’t brought Zhou Wen here, he wouldn’t have had the chance to see the strange

Companion Beast. It was useless for the former principal to send the passcode to him.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 111 - Entering the Lotus Flower Cave Again

Chapter 111 Entering the Lotus Flower Cave Again

What perplexed Zhou Wen the most was why the former principal had sent him such a name card. Or perhaps it was not sent from the former principal at all.

But if it wasn’t from the former principal, who could have sent it to him?

Zhou Wen’s mind was filled with questions, but an answer eluded him. He wanted to try the number on the name card to see if it could open the Companion Beast’s chains, but he didn’t dare to do so because of the unknown consequences.

It would be fine if he couldn’t open it, but if he did, he couldn’t imagine what might happen.

As Zhou Wen was pondering over it, he suddenly felt a chill down his spine. Cold sweat instantly oozed out of his back as though he had been targeted by a ferocious ghost.

His gaze froze as he looked at the chained Companion Beast. Due to the silver hair covering the Companion Beast’s face, Zhou Wen couldn’t see his eyes or facial features. However, he had a nagging feeling that a pair of eyes were staring at him from behind the waterfall-like silver hair.

Unsure if it was an illusion, Zhou Wen even felt that the face behind the silver hair was smiling strangely at him.

“It’s almost time. Let’s get something to eat before I get Ah Sheng to take you back. We can’t affect your studying.” Ouyang Lan led Zhou Wen out of the room and locked the door.

Standing outside the door, Zhou Wen watched as the metal door slowly closed and slowly hid the Companion Beast’s figure. However, Zhou Wen still felt that he was staring at him and smiling

Zhou Wen originally wanted to return to school immediately, but Ouyang Lan didn’t want to hear anything of that. She had a meal with him before getting Ah Sheng to take him back to school.

During the meal, Zhou Wen asked about the former principal. Ouyang Lan shared plenty of information with him, allowing him to gain a new understanding of the constantly smiling former principal.

In the past, Zhou Wen felt that the former principal was kind and had taken good care of him, but he didn’t care much about the administrative matters. Back when he was the principal of Guide High School, he didn’t really deal with matters. Everything was left to the vice-principals while he spent his days planting flowers and taking care of his grass. He looked especially relaxed.

However, from Ouyang Lan’s recount, Zhou Wen learned that the former principal was a very famous historian and had experienced the era of the dimensional storms.

The An family’s previous generation and the old principal were sworn brothers and even closed their ties through marriage. However, life was harsh on Ouyang Lan’s ex-husband and he died too early.

Although he learned quite a bit about the former principal, this wasn’t of much help to him. The only information that helped him was when Ouyang Lan said that the former principal had indeed been invited to a dimensional zone in Zhuolu County.

As the magnetic interference was too overwhelming, it rendered electronic communications almost useless. It had been a long time since Ouyang Lan had received news from the former principal.

Although such things happened often in the past, Ouyang Lan was worried as there was nothing she could do.

After returning to his dorm, Zhou Wen saw the antelope still sleeping on the couch. This left him disappointed.

Lying in the bed, he took out his phone and continued grinding the dungeons. Like before, he first wiped out the various mini-bosses before committing suicide at Fire God Platform.

When he arrived at Tiger Cage Pass, Zhou Wen saw a word-engraved Demonized General appear. Delighted, he closed the distance and realized it was a Paper Demonized General.

Although the word-engraved Demonized General was powerful, Zhou Wen had the Astral Slash Blade that restrained it. Soon, he killed the Paper Demonized General and heard a chime—a dimensional crystal dropped.

Primordial Energy Skill Crystal! Zhou Wen was delighted when he saw the crystal’s name.

He impatiently picked up the Primordial Energy Skill Crystal and the blood-colored avatar successfully absorbed it.

‘Absorbed Paper Demonized General Crystal. Attained Astral Suction Palm.’

Zhou Wen had longed for the Paper Demonized General’s Primordial Energy Skill and now with his wish answered, he couldn’t help but use it immediately.

He reached out and sucked at a Demonized Soldier at Tiger Cage Pass. The Demonized Soldier’s body was instantly sucked towards the blood-colored avatar’s palm, unable to escape no matter how hard it struggled.

The blood-colored avatar waved its other palm and slashed down at the Demonized Soldier’s head with Astral Slash Blade.

It’s truly a godly skill! The importance Zhou Wen placed on the Astral Suction Palm was higher than the Astral Slash Blade.

Although Astral Slash Blade was powerful, it was only an offensive measure. Even without it, Zhou Wen still had other offensive means. However, this was the only Primordial Energy Skill he had that could force an enemy to change trajectories.

After studying it for a while, Zhou Wen gained a general understanding of the Astral Suction Palm. It was just like Astral Slash Blade, a Primordial Energy Skill that didn’t have fixed Primordial Energy costs.

The further the enemy was or the greater the weight, the more Primordial Energy that Astral Suction Palm expended.

With the amount of Primordial Energy Zhou Wen had at present, he could easily absorb creatures like Demonized

Soldiers from about two meters away. In turn, Legendary creatures like a Demonized General would be more difficult.

However, being unable to draw an enemy didn't mean it was useless. The suction force would still affect the Demonized General, causing its actions to deviate from its intentions.

A clash between experts lasted for an instant, so any deviation was fatal.

The more Zhou Wen studied Astral Suction Palm, the more satisfied he was with it. In the future, after he advanced to the Legendary stage, his Primordial Energy upper limits would increase; thus, raising the might of his Astral Suction Palm. It would be an ever-green Primordial Energy Skill.

Among the three word-engraved Demonized Generals, only the Fist Demonized General hasn't been killed. I wonder if the Astral Suction Palm palm can withstand the Fist Demonized General's skills. Zhou Wen couldn't be sure.

Now that Zhou Wen had the Silver-Winged Flying Ant and the Mutated Lotus Flower Ant, he was still unable to defeat the Fist Demonized General.

It was not that the Fist Demonized General was much more powerful than Paper and Blade Demonized Generals, but that its main skill was just too ridiculous. When used, it seemed to gain an invincible body that the Mutated Lotus Flower Ant and Silver-Winged Flying Ant's Primordial Energy Skills were unable to injure or kill.

Now, all Zhou Wen could do was place his hopes on Astral Suction Palm. Since Astral Slash Blade countered Astral Suction Palm, it was possible that Astral Suction Palm countered the Fist Demonized General's skill.

However, encountering a Fist Demonized General solely depended on luck. Zhou Wen constantly grinded the dungeon before heading to the Fire God Platform to read the Ancient Imperial Sutra. This continued as the days passed.

“Zhou Wen, I’m ready. Come to Lotus Flower Cave with me again.” Wang Lu, who he hadn’t seen in days, shouted for Zhou Wen from the neighboring yard. Today was the deadline for her homework mission.

Zhou Wen had been paid, so he naturally had no reason to reject her. He had to accompany her to the Lotus Flower Cave.

“This is my last chance. Today, I will definitely break Huang Ji’s record.” Wang Lu was filled with confidence.

Zhou Wen declined to comment. All he did was film Wang Lu from behind with a camera. After they entered the Lotus Flower Cave, they searched for Fairy Monkeys in the stone cave.

After exploring several spots in the stone caves, they finally discovered a Fairy Monkey. However, before Wang Lu could make a move, the Fairy Monkey was killed by someone else.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 112 - Swift Saber Heavenly King

Chapter 112 Swift Saber Heavenly King

It was a boy of Zhou Wen’s age. He held a purple narrow saber in his hand, and his body flashed like a ghost. With a few clashes with the Fairy Monkey, he slew it.

The entire process took less than twenty seconds, and the speed at which it happened was terrifying

Zhou Wen sized up the boy in astonishment. He found it amazing that the boy’s Speed was faster than a Fairy Monkey’s. It was extremely rare among students.

His saber skills were even faster than his physical movement techniques. Fairy Monkey’s Speed and movement techniques were top in class amongst Legendary creatures, but for it to fail to dodge a single saber strike implied how terrifyingly fast this saber was.

The boy wiped the blood from the saber and looked at Zhou Wen and Wang Lu. Soon, his gaze landed on Zhou Wen.

“Are you Zhou Wen, the one who killed the word-engraved Demonized General?” the boy stared at Zhou Wen and asked.

“I’m Zhou Wen. Who are you?” Zhou Wen asked.

“What a pity,” the boy said without rhyme or reason before leaving with the saber.

Zhou Wen felt a little baffled, but he couldn’t be bothered to think too much. With the camera, he prepared to continue forward.

Wang Lu, however, looked in the direction of the boy’s departure and said, “I didn’t expect Feng Qiuyan to actually come to Sunset College. Why didn’t I see him among the special admissions students?”

e rec

“Do you still want to break the record?” Zhou Wen asked.

The boy from before had clearly broken Huang Ji’s previous record. Furthermore, the time he took significantly broke the record at below twenty seconds. Wang Lu might be strong, but to slay a Fairy Monkey within twenty seconds was clearly impossible.

“What record? With that fellow around, no one can be faster than him.” Wang Lu paused and explained, “That fellow is called Feng Qiuyan. You might not have heard of his name in a place like Luoyang, but where I come from, his fame is at the level of Luoyang’s An Jing. They are all considered invincible, cream of the crop. Rumor has it that his Legendary Life Providence is Swift Saber Heavenly King. At the same stage, no one can be faster than his saber. You saw it too. Even the Fairy Monkey couldn’t dodge his strike, it’s obvious how fast his saber is. It’s completely impossible to compete in speed records,” Wang Lu said with a bitter smile.

“Swift Saber Heavenly King? Is this a Life Providence that augments his swift saber?” Zhou Wen asked out of curiosity.

“Probably. A Life Providence is a secret for everyone, so people wouldn’t usually tell others. I only know that his Life Providence is known as the Swift Saber Heavenly King that

significantly augments anything to do with sabers.” After a pause, Wang Lu continued, “Do you know there’s an organization that especially rates Life Providence? The Feng family has a senior that works at that organization. When evaluation of Feng Qiuyan’s Swift Saber Heavenly King Life Providence was made, the rumored result was an S-grade talent.”

“Isn’t it said that the ratings of that organization aren’t accurate?” Zhou Wen had also heard of the organization. However, it was only a grassroots organization and wasn’t created by the League’s officials. Therefore, its ratings were greatly limited.

“Indeed, it can’t be confirmed as the Life Providence they evaluate is firstly based on how much it boosts one’s combat ability. As a result, the combat-based Life Providence ratings are usually higher, but in fact, many Life Providence might not boost one’s combat strength too significantly while still remaining very useful. However, to be rated as an S-grade means the Swift Saber Heavenly King Life Providence is undeniably powerful.” Wang Lu didn’t deliberately belittle that organization.

I wonder what my Life Providence will be in the future? Typically, a Life Providence is related to a person’s physique and the Primordial Energy Art one cultivates. My physique isn’t bad and the Primordial Energy Art I cultivate in isn’t weak. I don’t think it will be difficult to obtain a powerful Life Providence. I just have no idea what kind it will be. It’s best if it’s a combat-style Life Providence. Zhou Wen felt some anticipation for his Life Providence.

However, advancement with the Lost Immortal Sutra was much more difficult than the average Primordial Energy Art. Even the Primordial Energy Arts on the mysterious stone

monuments weren’t as difficult to cultivate as the Lost Immortal Sutra.

“With Feng Qiuyan around, there’s no hope of breaking the record. I can only blame myself for my bad luck.” Wang Lu was slightly depressed

Although she didn’t really care about this record, to be doused with cold water after preparing for so long and being at the brink of success would leave anyone depressed.

“It’s not difficult to break his record,” Zhou Wen said after some thought.

“You have a solution?” Wang Lu’s eyes lit up as she looked at Zhou Wen. She surprisingly didn’t have any doubts over his words.

“There is a solution, but it’s not part of my job,” Zhou Wen said.

“Speak. What conditions do you have?” Wang Lu saw through Zhou Wen’s thoughts and curled her lips.

“Money, how much can you pay me if I help you break the record?” Zhou Wen wasn’t materialistic and didn’t spend much money. However, to invest in Huang Ji’s game required a huge sum of money.

Zhou Wen didn’t have the time or means to earn money. All he could do was start with trivial matters and save up whatever he earned.

A rich person like Wang Lu, who could pay 150,000 bucks for a videographer, likely valued help to break a record at 150,000 bucks or more.

Wang Lu sized up Zhou Wen and asked, “Are you that short of money?”

“Yes, very.” Zhou Wen nodded.

“What do you plan on doing with the money? How much do you need?” Wang Lu asked

again.

“I have no idea how much money I need. A senior from our school is making a mobile game. I wish to invest in him, but I don’t know how much I need to invest. However, I believe plenty is needed.” Zhou Wen didn’t hide the fact that it was an investment in a game. He was planning to invest in Huang Ji’s game to make others know of it. The more people who knew it, the better.

“You’re really a gaming fanatic. In this era, there aren’t many people who are addicted to games like you anymore.” Wang Lu thought for a while before saying, “But the scale of making a game has quite a range, so the amount of money spent will be highly variable. If you only wish to make a simple game, a hundred to two hundred thousand bucks would be enough. I can give you that immediately, but if the game you wish to make is grander in scale, the money I give you will be a drop in the bucket. You might as well write up a proposal. If I think it’s feasible, I can invest in both of you.”

“We’ll talk about investment in the future. It’s best you give me the money for helping you break the record,” Zhou Wen said as he extended his hand.

Wang Lu fiercely swatted away Zhou Wen’s hand. “You can have the money, but first you have to break the record for me. How do I know if you can really help me break the record or not?”

Zhou Wen didn’t say another word. He began searching for a Fairy Monkey in Lotus Flower Cave with Wang Lu. Breaking a record needed them to first find a Fairy Monkey.

Zhou Wen was rather confident about breaking Feng Qiuyan’s record. He had been grinding Fairy Monkeys recently and had quite some experience killing them. It could be said that Zhou Wen was the person who understood Fairy Monkeys the most in Sunset College.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 113 - Performance

Chapter 113 Performance

Wang Lu was actually quite doubtful about Zhou Wen's ability to help her break the record. Although he had a pair of Legendary wings and powerful movement techniques, that level of movement and speed was definitely capable of dodging Feng Qiuyan's saber.

The saber speed which Swift Saber Heavenly King Life Providence brought about made Feng Qiuyan's strikes far exceed the speed of peers at his level. Furthermore, Zhou Wen hadn't advanced to the Legendary stage-he was one level lower than Feng Qiuyan.

Compared to someone who had the Life Providence of Swift Saber Heavenly King, even Wang Lu did not have the confidence to beat him in speed.

"How are you going to help me? Although the homework mission permits a four-person team to complete it, I do not plan on joining forces with others. If that's the case, defeating Feng Qiuyan would be meaningless," Wang Lu said to Zhou Wen as they walked.

"When you encounter a Fairy Monkey later, I'll first demonstrate it to you. All you need to do is remember my steps. With your strength, you will be able to kill Fairy Monkeys in less than twenty seconds." Having been in charge of filming Wang Lu's combat, he had a good idea of her strength. It was also why he dared to help Wang Lu break the record.

“You’ll be demonstrating?” Wang Lu sized up Zhou Wen and asked.

“We have no choice. You only have one chance left, and I’m afraid you won’t be able to grasp the crux by just verbally explaining it to you,” Zhou Wen said honestly.

His method of slaying Fairy Monkeys was from the experience he had gained from killing countless whilst in-game. Every step had been calculated to extreme precision. He could not afford any mistakes if he wanted to kill one in the shortest time possible.

If Zhou Wen were to do it himself, it wouldn’t be a problem even if he made a mistake. However, Wang Lu didn’t have that much experience fighting Fairy Monkeys. She only had the theory from the college’s information and videos.

In fact, the information provided by the school wasn’t as logical or pragmatic as Zhou Wen’s designed plans. After all, there were too few Fairy Monkeys and no one had the chance of killing many, so it was naturally impossible for them to have a deep understanding of them.

After traveling through several caves, they finally found a Fairy Monkey. Just as Zhou Wen was about to charge forward, Wang Lu suddenly thought of something. She hurriedly said, “By the way, after the Lotus Flower Cave is sealed by the college, students are not to hunt Fairy Monkeys without permission. Our class was given the homework mission, and we can only kill two. You aren’t a student of our class, so you didn’t receive the homework mission that allows you to kill a Fairy Monkey.”

“I know, so I have no plans to kill it.” Zhou Wen didn’t stop as he charged at the Fairy Monkey.

This time, Wang Lu became the videographer. She aimed the camera at Zhou Wen, curious to see how he could kill the Fairy Monkey faster than the Feng Qiuyan.

Wang Lu was still a little apprehensive. Zhou Wen had Primordial Energy Skills that she definitely knew couldn’t be identical to hers. If he used some special skill which she lacked, then even if Zhou Wen’s method was much faster than Feng Qiuyan’s, she would be unable to use his method.

However, Wang Lu quickly realized that her worries were completely unfounded. This was because Zhou Wen hadn’t used any Primordial Energy Skill or Companion Beast. All he did was rush towards the Fairy Monkey.

If it were anyone else, Wang Lu would have believed that he had a death wish, but she knew Zhou Wen’s strength and character quite well. It was impossible for him to do something so foolish.

She adjusted the camera to ensure that she could record Zhou Wen’s every move, while her gaze never left him.

The Fairy Monkey bared its teeth as it charged down. Its pair of wings made it abnormally agile, swooping down like a bird of prey while its claws swiped at Zhou Wen’s head with a sharp beam.

The Fairy Monkey was much faster than Zhou Wen, but he seemed to have expected it. He slightly tilted his body to dodge the claw beam as he clung close to the Fairy Monkey’s left.

The Fairy Monkey’s wings flapped as his body warped. Its claws once again thrust out at Zhou Wen’s heart with a sharp claw beam.

This time, the Fairy Monkey was closer to Zhou Wen, and its claw beam was even faster and sharper. However, Zhou Wen's body moved slightly to the side again, dodging the attack in what seemed like an impossibility.

Wang Lu stood to the side and watched. Zhou Wen didn't use any Primordial Energy Skills, not even anything related to movement techniques. With his absolute Speed deficiency, he leisurely managed to dodge all the Fairy Monkey's mighty attacks.

Zhou Wen gave Wang Lu an odd feeling. It was as though he was the stronger party-not the Fairy Monkey who was at the Legendary stage.

Zhou Wen's every move was calm and composed, but he had the feeling of clairvoyance, emitting a pressure as though the Fairy Monkey was dancing in his palm.

It may have felt slow, but in fact, it all happened very quickly. In just ten seconds. Zhou Wen had nimbly moved to the Fairy Monkey's back and easily struck the back of its skull.

Pa!

It looked like it didn't use much strength, but the Fairy Monkey appeared to be struck by lightning as it fell from the sky. It fell to the ground and twitched, unable to get up immediately.

Wang Lu's eyes widened when she saw this. A Mortal-stage fellow had only relied on his Strength and Speed. Without the help of his Primordial Energy Skills and Companion Beasts, he had knocked out a Legendary-stage Fairy Monkey.

More importantly, slightly more than 10 seconds had passed, without even exceeding 11. Wang Lu was afraid that none of her classmates would believe her if she told them.

“How did you do it?” Wang Lu asked as she glared at Zhou Wen who was walking back.

“You can do the same if you observe and study more.” Zhou Wen pointed at the Fairy Monkey on the ground who still couldn’t get to its feet due to its stupor. “It’s a little groggy from the strike. It will quickly regain consciousness, so let’s leave now. Find a spot and watch my demonstration video a few times. Remember my positioning and the timing of my attacks. It probably wouldn’t be difficult to squeeze it within 20 seconds. Also, the spot I struck should be precisely where you hit during your final strike. It will result in a death blow; otherwise, it will be a waste of time.”

Wang Lu and Zhou Wen came to an empty stone cave before the former carefully watched Zhou Wen’s video.

“How did you figure out such positioning and the Fairy Monkey’s weakness?” Wang Lu found it inconceivable the more she looked at it. Even the college’s strategies were not as simple and effective as Zhou Wen’s.

“I carefully watched the videos I recorded for you the other day. I studied them for a long time before I could achieve such results. Selling it to you for 150,000 isn’t expensive, right?” Zhou Wen asked.

“Not at all.” Wang Lu nodded with affirmation.

Such experience could not be measured with money. If they were in a real battlefield, it could save one’s life.

Wang Lu practiced Zhou Wen’s positioning for more than half an hour before mastering the crux. Her talent in martial arts wasn’t to be underestimated, allowing her to live up to being a special admissions student.

Then, Wang Lu found the Fairy Monkey again and killed it according to Zhou Wen’s method. The process was rather relaxing. Although the positioning was a little rough, she obtained good results in 17 seconds. It was probably a little faster than Feng Qiuyan.

Although the record had been broken, Wang Lu wasn’t happy. Others might not know, but she knew very well that Zhou Wen had a more ridiculous result. It was just that his results would not appear in the school’s record.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 114 - Gym Training

Chapter 114 Gym Training

Inside an office, Qiao Siyuan stood respectfully in front of his desk with his head lowered, wearing a humble look.

“Have you found the thing I asked you to find?” A man sat behind his desk. As the only light in the office was the table lamp, the man’s face couldn’t be seen clearly. Only a blurry silhouette could be seen.

“Sir, apart from the An family, I’ve searched everywhere I can. I didn’t find the thing you were talking about.” Qiao Siyuan lowered his head and replied cautiously.

“Why didn’t you go to the An family?” the man asked indifferently.

“We had sent people to infiltrate them, but Ouyang Lan keeps the An family tightly under wraps. The people we sent didn’t have the chance of getting close to where Ouyang Lan and the rest live. They were only able to do miscellaneous chores in the yard.” After a pause, Qiao Siyuan continued, “In the name of pursuing Jing Daoxian, I had tried using Liz to test the An family’s attitude. An Tianzuo was very unyielding, and he didn’t care about the Senator by maiming Liz’s energy sea. It’s not simple to enter the An family to search for it.”

“If everything is that easily solved, what do I need you for?” the man coldly asked.

“Yes, sir. You’re right. I will think of another solution.” Qiao Siyuan bowed slightly before continuing, “Sir, I don’t think Professor Ouyang left the thing at the An family home.”

“Why do you say that?” The man sitting behind the light lit up a cigarette with an old lighter.

“According to my investigations, Professor Ouyang may be close friends with the An family, but he did not agree to Ouyang Lan’s marriage into the An family. Because of this matter, they had a falling out. Since then, he hasn’t entered the An family home and wasn’t even present when An Tianzuo and An Jing were born.”

Seeing no response from the man, Qiao Siyuan continued, “It’s also because after that person’s death in the An family that Professor Ouyang and Ouyang Lan’s relationship improved. However, he’s only visited the An family a few times and never stays there for more than an hour, much less stay overnight. With Professor Ouyang’s relationship with the An family, I don’t think he will leave something so important there.”

“Then, where would Ouyang hide the thing?” the man flicked away some cigarette ash before asking

“Sir, do you think Professor Ouyang could have taken it with him?” Qiao Siyuan probed.

“Impossible. That thing can’t enter dimensional zones or it will only spell trouble. Ouyang often needs to enter dimensional zones, so he won’t be so stupid. He must have hidden it somewhere.” The man paused before saying, “Regardless, you must find the thing at all costs. Do not dismiss the An family’s residence. Who knows if their poor relationship was just an act Ouyang deliberately created.”

“Yes, sir.” Qiao Siyuan bowed.

“We don’t have much time left. We need to retrieve it as soon as possible. Those ignorant fools outside think that time can be squandered, but they have no idea that the disaster is already hanging above their necks like a guillotine blade. It can fall at any time. Once the dimensional zones’ restrictions are gone, humanity will usher in the apocalypse. Therefore, we need to have that item in our hands to prevent that from happening,” the man said.

“Sir, is that thing really that important?” Qiao Siyuan asked the question on his mind.

“Back when humanity entered the Holy Land, there weren’t just six heroes. In fact, there were a lot more, but most of them ended up dying inside, their names unknown to people. Besides the six heroes, some also left the Holy Land alive and brought certain things out. Jing Daoxian was one of them. Likewise for Ouyang. The thing he has was something I saw him take out the Holy Land with my own eyes. It is of grave importance. We need to gain control of it,” the man said.

“Sir, I think there’s a coincidence over a matter, but I’m not sure if it’s problem,” Qiao Siyuan said after some thought.

“Speak.”

“Back when Jing Daoxian was seriously injured and under our pursuit, he actually stayed in Guide City for nearly ten minutes,” Qiao Siyuan said.

“You’ve already written this in the report. It’s related to that youth named Zhou Wen, right?”

“That’s right. Later on, I investigated Zhou Wen in detail. Other than being Zhou Lingfeng’s son, he has a rather good relationship with Professor Ouyang. When Professor Ouyang was principal at Guide City, he often invited Zhou Wen to eat at his placea treatment that other students and even teachers didn’t receive. Now, Ouyang Lan has married Zhou Lingfeng. I just find it too much of a coincidence. I’m thinking of the possibility that Professor Ouyang gave the item to Zhou Wen or Zhou Lingfeng.”

“Impossible. The power of that thing isn’t something a Mortal-stage can withstand. It’s impossible to even hold it. You can continue investigating Zhou Wen, but you have to place your focus on the An family. The only ones with the capability to commandeer that item in the An family are An Tianzuo and Ouyang Lan.”

“Yes, I understand.”

Feng Qiuyan wasn’t in a good mood. He originally thought that he would definitely be first in class for the homework mission, but he never expected Wang Lu to be faster than him by nearly a second.

As expected of Wang Lu. She already has such power even before advancing to the Legendary stage. After Feng Qiuyan saw Wang Lu’s video for the homework mission, he realized that he had lost fair and square. Wang Lu’s comprehension and control over her positioning had reached an extremely high level. This was something that he lacked.

After Wang Lu advances to the Legendary stage, I will definitely fight her. Before that, I still need to train myself and make myself stronger. Feng Qiuyan quickly walked to the school gym.

Feng Qiuyan believed that he had to be focused on everything he did. Quality was demanded for everything, so he only practiced his saber techniques. He hoped to make his saber techniques faster and stronger, allowing him to reach the peak of the world.

Hence, after arriving at the gym, Feng Qiuyan immediately walked towards the training court where the ball launcher was. It was the most suitable machine for him to practice his saber’s

speed.

However, when Feng Qiuyan got to the ball launcher court, he frowned when he realized that someone was occupying the grounds in practice.

On careful look, he realized that the person was someone he knew—the freshman who had killed the word-engraved Demonized General, Zhou Wen.

There was only one ball launcher, so Feng Qiuyan didn’t wish to waste any time waiting. Therefore, after some thought, he walked straight into the court and picked up a rubber training saber from the rack before walking towards Zhou Wen.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 115 - Unable to Touch the Balls

Chapter 115 Unable to Touch the Balls

Zhou Wen felt that having his strength constantly increase despite staying in his dorm gaming all day seemed a little too eyebrow-raising, so he planned on some outdoor activities. At least, he had to let others know that he was cultivating arduously.

After circling the gym once, he had planned on choosing a simple strength training machine to train his legs, allowing him to free his hands and continue gaming.

But to his surprise, the gym was filled with people. After searching for a while, he discovered an empty training court.

In the past, Zhou Wen had never used a ball launcher. After seeing the demonstration on the screen, he knew what kind of machine it

was.

The ball launcher was similar to the pitching machines used in baseball practice. Balls were shot out of the machine and the trainee aimed to hit them.

It was just that the launcher would be shot in random directions in a wide area. Furthermore, it could also shoot

multiple balls simultaneously. This was slightly different from a baseball pitching machine

There were many practice weapons on the racks-sabers, swords, poles, spears, whips, etc. They were all made of rubber.

Zhou Wen casually picked up a short pole and turned on the ball launcher. He was too lazy to study how he could adjust the launcher's difficulty, so he simply switched it on.

A ball shot out from the launcher's barrel like a cannonball. Zhou Wen took note of the distance and swung his short stick, easily striking the ball and sending it far away.

Soon, Zhou Wen realized that the launcher was rather simple. He could use one hand to strike the balls while using the other for gaming.

Some training like this doesn't seem too bad. As Zhou Wen gamed, he didn't need to look at the balls with his eyes to strike them. The listening ability that Truth Listener imbued him allowed him to hit the balls accurately.

Furthermore, Zhou Wen discovered that practicing Truth Listener's hearing ability was very helpful to his hearing.

There were all kinds of dimensional zones, many that had a great effect on one's vision, causing people to sometimes fight blind. All Zhou Wen originally wanted to do was to get some exercise, but after practicing for a while, he found such training very beneficial.

At that moment, Feng Qiuyan arrived at the training ground.

He walked onto the court with a practice saber in hand, but when he saw Zhou Wen gaming while striking the balls, he

couldn’t help but frown.

Looking at the balls’ trajectory and speed, he knew that this was the lowest level of difficulty. It wasn’t even a challenge for ordinary high-schoolers who had cultivated, much less students of Sunset College.

From Feng Qiuyan’s point of view, Zhou Wen’s training was an insult to the word “training.”

Therefore, Feng Qiuyan decided to kick Zhou Wen out. Rather than let Zhou Wen waste the school’s resources, it was better for him to train more.

Of course, it was beneath Feng Qiuyan to chase someone away, nor did he want to nag at Zhou Wen like a woman.

Feng Qiuyan had his own ways of doing things —in a masculine manner.

He approached Zhou Wen with a practice saber in hand and Feng Qiuyan stood there silently without moving as he stared at the ball launcher’s muzzle.

Feng Qiuyan’s idea was very simple. It was like playing basketball. As long as he snatched away all rebounds, preventing Zhou Wen from touching the balls, Zhou Wen would naturally find it pointless and leave.

Feng Qiuyan was confident he could snatch all of Zhou Wen’s balls, preventing him from even touching a single ball.

Pong!

With a compressive blast emitted from the launch, a ball was shot out as it flew towards Zhou Wen at high speeds.

“Right now.” Feng Qiuyan’s heart stirred and was about to swing the wooden saber in his hand.

He was confident that as long as he brandished his saber, there would be nothing left for Zhou Wen. The speed at which he drew his saber was not something any ordinary student could match. Even if Zhou Wen stood in front of him, Feng Qiuyan was confident he could gain the upper hand.

However, when Feng Qiuyan raised the practice saber in his hand and was about to brandish it, his hand paused in midair. He had ultimately failed to complete the slash as he watched Zhou Wen send the ball flying with his practice pole.

Is it a coincidence? Feng Qiuyan frowned as he looked at Zhou Wen. He had his back to him, one hand still holding a pole, the other hand gaming on his phone.

However, just as Feng Qiuyan was about to attack, he felt that Zhou Wen was standing in the most appropriate position, blocking all the trajectories of his saber slashes. It prevented him from slashing at the ball.

It was like a rebound in basketball. Zhou Wen stood in the spot where the basketball landed. Although the others could jump higher than him, it was difficult to snatch the ball if they weren’t in the right place.

The position Zhou Wen stood in had given Feng Qiuyan such a feeling, preventing him from having any chance of striking.

It’s probably just a coincidence, Feng Qiuyan thought to himself as he stared at the ball launcher’s muzzle.

There were a total of thirty-six launching muzzles. They were split into six rows, covering a length and height of twenty meters. Each muzzle had a small range of movement and direction, allowing for different trajectories in the balls it shot out.

As it was set to the lowest difficulty level, it only shot out one ball at a time. However, where the ball shot out from and its direction was unpredictable.

Feng Qiuyan focused and planned on finding the ball's landing spot before Zhou Wen could. He wanted him to have a taste of what it felt like to not be able to hit the ball.

Pong!

Another ball shot out. Feng Qiuyan trained his gaze at the ball's direction and position. Just as he raised his foot to rush over, he saw Zhou Wen already walk over. He was already one step too slow if he took the step now. Even if he rushed over, he would lose the optimal spot, failing to snatch the ball from Zhou Wen like before.

If you want to play, fine! I'll be serious this time. Feng Qiuyan imagined Zhou Wen was competing with him.

Furthermore, Zhou Wen's attitude of gaming while striking the ball made it obvious to him that he thought nothing of him. This made Feng Qiuyan vexed.

However, Zhou Wen wasn't thinking too much about it. He did hear someone beside him, but he didn't know that the person was Feng Qiuyan, nor did he know that Feng Qiuyan wanted to chase him away. He originally imagined that the training court allowed multiple people in, so he thought nothing of it. He just struck the balls relying on his hearing and senses.

The inclusion of Feng Qiuyan was also a form of practice for him.

Zhou Wen was still grinding Ant Nest-a dungeon he usually grinded when in public with other people around.

Another ball shot out. Feng Qiuyan was already fully focused, but just as he took his step, he realized that Zhou Wen was one step ahead of him, happening to walk to the optimal location before him again.

Pong!

The ball was sent flying by Zhou Wen again. Feng Qiuyan had failed to touch three consecutive balls. He didn’t even strike out at all.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 116 - How Did You Do It?

Chapter 116 How Did You Do It?

At first, Feng Qiuyan had deliberately suppressed his Speed, trying his best to maintain it at the Mortal stage to compete with Zhou Wen.

However, with the passage of time, Feng Qiuyan subconsciously increased his Speed after repeatedly failing to beat Zhou Wen to the punch. He began competing with Zhou Wen with Speed at the Legendary stage.

This only served to alarm Feng Qiuyan even more-Speed at the Legendary stage was still inadequate. Although his Speed was really much faster than Zhou Wen’s, with Zhou Wen standing in the middle of the court which was about twenty meters wide, he only needed to cover ten meters.

Due to the short distance, he wasn’t able to manifest his Speed advantage.

That was not the main reason either. Although the advantage of a short distance wasn’t too obvious, an advantage was still an advantage. Under normal circumstances, he would definitely grab an advantageous spot ahead of time.

Even if he couldn’t take that spot, with his saber speed, he could still strike the ball before Zhou Wen.

However, it was like Zhou Wen was prescient. Before the launcher shot out the ball, he had already begun moving. It was too late for Feng Qiuyan to move by the time he saw the ball. Having faster Speed was useless and this left Feng Qiuyan extremely aggrieved.

What was even more unacceptable to Feng Qiuyan was that Zhou Wen had been gaming with his other hand the entire time while snatching the ball away from him.

At first, Feng Qiuyan thought that Zhou Wen was deliberately insulting him and wasn't really focused on his gaming.

However, Feng Qiuyan later discovered that Zhou Wen was truly gaming. His eyes were peeled to the screen, having never left it once. It was as though snatching the ball was something that he did in passing.

This fellow… He's formidable… Sweat began oozing out of Feng Qiuyan's forehead as he stared at Zhou Wen's back. The contempt he had for him previously vanished completely. Zhou Wen's figure seemed to grow in size, turning tall and mighty. It was like an uninvadable city wall.

Zhou Wen wasn't paying attention to him at all, lost to his new discovery.

The Truth Listener earring gave him tremendous hearing, enough to make him hear the ball launcher in operation clearly. Therefore, he knew which muzzle the ball would shoot out ahead of time, allowing him to know the ball's trajectory and landing spot before Feng Qiuyan.

However, this wasn't the biggest surprise for Zhou Wen. What truly surprised him was his train of thought.

Zhou Wen was an extremely focused person. In the past, no matter what he did, he could be fully focused without being disturbed by anything. Therefore, others might find him dull due to his lack of reaction no matter what they said to him.

In fact, it wasn’t because Zhou Wen was dull and silly, but that he was too focused to the point of not being able to hear what others were saying to him.

Now, Zhou Wen realized that he could still be focused on what he was doing, but at the same time, he seemed to be able to handle other matters as well. This feeling was rather indescribable.

If an analogy had to be made, Zhou Wen’s thought process could be analogous to a computer processor. In the past, Zhou Wen’s brain was a single-core processor, but now, it was a dual-core, allowing it to handle multiple programs at the same time.

Of course, this was only an analogy and was limited in its accuracy. However, it was a fact that Zhou Wen could hit all the balls while gaming. There didn’t seem to be any interference between the two activities.

At the same time, Zhou Wen keenly discovered that while he was gaming and striking the balls, the Lost Immortal Sutra’s circulation became especially fast. It was more than twice as fast as usual.

It appears this is the result of the Lost Immortal Sutra. Zhou Wen increasingly found the Lost Immortal Sutra extraordinary. However, he couldn’t figure out why Jing Daoxian had given him such a powerful Primordial Energy Art for no reason. It didn’t seem to make sense if it was simply because he caught his fancy.

Zhou Wen didn’t know the origins of the Lost Immortal Sutra, so he naturally didn’t know how terrifying it was. If not for the extraordinary focus he was born with, he would have long been killed by it. Even if he didn’t die, he would go mad.

Even now, Zhou Wen could hear the murmuring voices resounding in his ears when sleeping at night. It would be difficult for a normal person to endure such harassment. Even if he didn't go mad, he would become extremely irascible; yet, Zhou Wen didn't suffer from such effects.

As Zhou Wen indulged in the thrill of his new discovery and training, Feng Qiuyan's expression became increasingly ugly.

He had already done his best, but couldn't snatch the ball from Zhou Wen. Although summoning a Companion Beast would give him a chance of defeating Zhou Wen, Feng Qiuyan's pride prevented him from doing so. He continued relying only on his physical prowess to compete with Zhou Wen.

When Zhou Wen felt that he had enough practice today, he stopped and rested. Just as he was about to return, he turned his head to look at Feng Qiuyan.

He couldn't help but be taken aback by what he saw.

He recognized Feng Qiuyan, but he looked drastically different from before. He was covered in sweat as he panted heavily. His eyes were glaring at him with eyes as red as a rabbit's eyes. This look like he could devour him at any moment gave Zhou Wen a fright.

Feng Qiuyan wasn't truly exhausted but was suffering from immense mental stress. With his physique at the Legendary stage, he had lost to a Mortal-stage fellow. Furthermore, he had been badly defeated. He had failed to snatch a single ball despite Zhou Wen gaming with one hand. The stress was simply unimaginable.

If it weren’t for Feng Qiuyan’s determination, anyone else with a slightly weaker well would probably have already lost their confidence.

The more Feng Qiuyan wanted to win, the greater the stress he was under. The mental fatigue he suffered exceeded his physical fatigue.

When Zhou Wen imagined that Feng Qiuyan would lunge at him and bite him, Feng Qiuyan glared at him and suddenly asked, “How did you do it?”

“What do you mean how?” Zhou Wen was slightly taken aback.

“How are you able to predict the landing spot of the ball without looking for it?” Feng Qiuyan asked the question burning in his heart.

He was stronger than Zhou Wen in everything, but he had lost to him on this point.

“Because of this.” Zhou Wen pointed at his ear before picking up the coat on the chair and left.

Zhou Wen was referring to the Truth Listener earring he was wearing, but Feng Qiuyan clearly misunderstood Zhou Wen’s words. He believed that Zhou Wen was referring to his ear and instantly, he fell into thought as he muttered to himself, So that’s how it is. So he wasn’t really gaming, but using the game to divert his sight and only use his ears to listen out for the ball. So there’s actually such a training method. From the looks of it, the rumors of him being a gaming fanatic aren’t as simple as they seem. He’s more hardworking than anyone. Even gaming is a form of cultivation.

Clearly, Feng Qiuyan misunderstood Zhou Wen. In fact, gaming was his main goal and practicing his listening skills was just something he did in passing.

Seeing Zhou Wen walk out of the court, Feng Qiuyan suddenly snapped to attention as though he had awoken from a dream. He chased after him and called, “Zhou Wen, wait a moment.”

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 117 - Please Be My Coach

Chapter 117 Please Be My Coach

“What’s the matter?” Seeing Feng Qiuyan chase after him, Zhou Wen could only stop and turn his head to look at him.

Feng Qiuyan stared at him and enunciated each and every word as he said, “I want to hire you as my personal coach. Help tailor a training plan for me.”

“You want me to be your personal coach?” Zhou Wen pointed at his nose and asked in surprise.

He did not believe that he had the talent to make training plans. His own plan was to game after gaming, ad infinitum.

“Please don’t reject me. If you have any conditions, feel free to raise them. Money isn’t a problem.” Feng Qiuyan was quite sincere.

Zhou Wen had already opened his mouth, prepared to reject the offer, but upon hearing the words “money isn’t a problem,” he swallowed the words he was about to say.

“Are you sure you want me to be your personal coach and tailor training plans for you? I’m only a Mortal-grade student.” Zhou Wen looked at Feng Qiuyan and confirmed it once again.

“Your level is not a problem. I just want to know your training methods. If you find it troublesome, you don’t have to deliberately plan one for me. I just need to train with you. I’ll do whatever you do,” Feng Qiuyan said with all seriousness.

Feng Qiuyan clearly misunderstood Zhou Wen, believing that he, who could think of using his sense of hearing to train his strikes, definitely had plans for targeted training. Therefore, he wanted to hire Zhou Wen as his personal coach.

He wanted to know how Zhou Wen had trained to his present standards. Perhaps, it could aid him in his cultivation, allowing him to break through his recent bottleneck.

“I’m very expensive.” Zhou Wen didn’t think too much about it. Since there was a chance for him to earn money, there was no reason not to.

“I’ll pay you what it costs to hire the most expensive personal coaches on the market. The payment can be made monthly or per class. If you have any other requests, you can tell me now,” said Feng Qiuyan.

“It’s best we settle it according to class, so a payment for each class.” Zhou Wen thought for a moment and realized that he didn’t have much to teach. He decided to teach a lesson first and if he really couldn’t handle it, he wouldn’t keep scamming Feng Qiuyan-one class would be all.

“Alright.” Feng Qiuyan agreed without hesitation. He paid Zhou Wen for one class and eagerly asked, “Coach, what kind of training do we have for the first class?”

Zhou Wen thought for a moment before asking, “You use the saber, right?”

“That’s right. I train to push my swift saber to the pinnacle and I pursue extreme speed.” Feng Qiuyan looked at Zhou Wen with anticipation. He hoped that Zhou Wen could give him some special training method to aid his breakthrough.

Zhou Wen pondered for a while when he heard that. He suddenly realized that he didn’t know any saber techniques, nor had he practiced any of them. The only thing he knew that had anything to do with sabers was Astral Slash Blade.

However, Astral Slash Blade was a Primordial Energy Skill that resembled a blade beam. It did not have any technique to speak of, as it was cleaved out directly without any need for cultivation.

Despite thinking all day, Zhou Wen couldn’t think of a training plan tailored to Feng Qiuyan’s cultivation.

Suddenly, an idea flashed in Zhou Wen’s mind as he thought of the word-engraved Demonized General in Tiger Cage Pass.

The word-engraved Demonized General had three different types. The Blade Demonized General’s Astral Slash Blade was fast and ruthless, but it could only suppress the Paper Demonized General and was useless against the Fist Demonized General.

Although a swift saber was formidable, there were also ways to counter one.

In any case, I don’t know any saber techniques yet. I’ll make Feng Qiuyan practice his saber in a diametrically opposite manner. When the time comes, he’ll find something amiss

and won’t come looking for me again. Realizing how quick Feng Qiuyan was to pay him, he found him quite a nice guy and didn’t wish to scam him further.

“Feng Qiuyan, have you ever heard of the principle of extreme Yang gives birth to Yin?” Zhou Wen asked Feng Qiuyan.

“Are you referring to how things develop in an opposite direction when they go to the extreme?” Feng Qiuyan asked after some thought.

“It’s almost the same. The ancients say that true wisdom sounds foolish and great skill looks clumsy. It’s possible to have the opposite effect once you reach an extreme. You practice in the swift saber, then perhaps one day, if you feel slow drawing your saber, it might mean that your saber techniques can improve further,” Zhou Wen said in a cursory manner, hoping that he could satisfy Feng Qiuyan for now, so that he wouldn’t seek him out again.

Feng Qiuyan took Zhou Wen’s words seriously as he asked, “Then, how do I train to reach the realm of the slow saber?”

“Some things require you to figure it out yourself. No matter how well others explain it, that’s still someone else’s insight. Only something you figure out is yours. I have already given you direction. As for how you should do it, it will require you to think about it.” Although Zhou Wen was bullsh*tting Feng Qiuyan, what he said was truly what he believed in and understood. It wasn’t complete nonsense.

After managing to get rid of Feng Qiuyan with great difficulty, Zhou Wen jogged back to his dorm and lay comfortably in bed as he took out his mysterious phone.

Perhaps it was his luck. This time, while he was grinding the Lotus Flower Cave, although he failed to obtain a Rank 9 Dragon Gate Fairy Skill, he managed to obtain a Fairy Monkey Companion Egg

Fairy Beast: Legendary

Life Providence: Pet of Air

Strength: 15

Speed: 18

Constitution: 15

Primordial Energy: 14

Talent Skill: Dragon Gate Fairy Skill

Companion Form: Wings

The Fairy Monkey's stats were clearly incomparable to the Silver-Winged Flying Ant, so he directly fed the Companion Egg to Truth Listener.

In the past, Truth Listener didn't react much after eating a Companion Egg. However, after swallowing the Companion Egg this time, a system notification appeared.

'Truth Listener has obtained the evolution requirement and is beginning to evolve.'

Zhou Wen saw Truth Listener's figure appear on the screen. It was a tiny beast in the shape of a golden silk monkey. At this moment, Truth Listener was glowing with resplendent golden light, as though it was a golden Buddha statue. It was so blinding that it filled the entire screen with golden light.

After feeding it for so long, it’s finally evolving. Zhou Wen was delighted.

Truth Listener at the Mortal stage was not of much use. However, it would definitely be very useful after advancing to the Legendary stage.

After a while, the golden light on the screen gradually faded away, revealing its true looks. At the same time, a system notification popped up on the screen: ‘Truth Listener’s evolution completed.’

However, Zhou Wen didn’t seem to notice much of a change. Its body was still small, only slightly bigger than his fingers. It was covered in golden fur and its eyes were sparkling with golden light.

No, it’s still a little different. Zhou Wen realized that Truth Listener was indeed somewhat different. It originally resembled a golden silk monkey with just a pair of ears, but now it had another pair of ears. It now had four ears.

However, its ears were very small. They were neatly placed on both sides of its head without making it look ugly at all. If one didn’t look closely, one would not notice that it had four ears.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 118 - Heaven’s Senses

Chapter 118 Heaven’s Senses

Truth Listener: Legendary (Evolvable)

Life Providence: Heaven’s Senses

Strength: 21

Speed: 21

Constitution: 21

Primordial Energy: 21

Talent Skill: Truth Listener, Indestructible Golden Body, Evil Warding, Nine Extremes

Companion Form: Earring

In the past, Zhou Wen thought that the maximum stats for Legendaries was 18. He later found through the Mutated Lotus Flower Ant and Silver-Winged Flying Ant that 18 wasn’t the limit, but he had never seen 21.

Mythical creatures are really different. Even if they haven’t evolved to the Mythical stage, their stats aren’t something ordinary Companion Beasts can compare with. However, I have no idea what exact use Heaven’s Senses has. Zhou

Wen read Truth Listener’s stats carefully and saw that there was an additional note regarding the Life Providence: Prying into the secrets of the world using ears instead of eyes.

When he summoned Truth Listener, it still looked petite. It was glowing with golden light as if it was a piece of golden silk monkey art carved out of gold.

From its appearance, it did not seem powerful at all. The Legendary Mutated Skeleton Ant that shared its level looked many times stronger than it.

Getting Truth Listener to turn into an earring before wearing it, Zhou Wen closed his eyes and focused. He immediately felt that the Truth Listener earring had augmented his sense of hearing in a way that was much better than before.

Although he had his eyes closed, everything around him appeared like a three-dimensional figure in his mind. It was as though Zhou Wen could see everything around him. The only difference was that the three-dimensional figure in his mind was black and white instead of the colored world he saw with his eyes.

Zhou Wen knew that he wasn’t really seeing anything, but the ability brought by the Truth Listener earring

He originally believed that he had no way of hearing a still object no matter how good his hearing was. But now, he realized that what he believed was wrong.

No object existed independently. Although some objects were still, the movement of other objects would similarly affect them. As long as his hearing was powerful enough, he could replace his eyes with his ears to see still objects.

The flow of air and the sound waves produced feedback the moment they touched a still object. The average person couldn’t hear such feedback, but the Truth Listener earring allowed Zhou Wen to hear it clearly. Furthermore, it outlined a three-dimensional figure in his mind, as though he was looking at it with his own eyes. There were even more details than could be seen with open eyes.

Within twenty meters, even if there were obstructions, Zhou Wen could still see everything behind the walls with his ears. It was as if he had x-ray vision. Other than the lack of colors, everything else was no different from normal vision.

With this strange sense of hearing, Zhou Wen could clearly hear everything in the two buildings beside him. The sound-proofing was completely ineffective against him.

While Wang Lu wasn’t in the dorm, An Jing happened to be in the bedroom near to Zhou Wen. He didn’t have a fetish for invading privacies, so just as he was about to retract his hearing, he heard An Jing say, “Zhou Wen still hasn’t cultivated in the Sun Strafe Art. Was the harm I dealt him last time that great? Did I really go too far?”

Zhou Wen was slightly taken aback. If he hadn’t identified that the person speaking was clearly An Jing, he would have believed that he had heard wrongly.

His impression of An Jing was always one that was haughty and aloof as if she viewed everything in a condescending manner. It was hard to imagine that these words came from her mouth.

Zhou Wen couldn’t help but feel curious. He wanted to hear what An Jing would say, so he didn’t put away the Truth Listener earring and continued listening to the commotion next door.

The usually cold and arrogant An Jing was now sitting on the bed with a teddy bear in hand. It was as if she was speaking to the bear. “I didn’t really want to hurt him. I just wanted to prove myself. I just want to let Grandpa know that Mom’s choice was wrong. Her child is the best, far more excellent than the genius described by Grandpa. I know Zhou Wen is innocent and this matter has nothing to do with him, but apart from defeating him, I didn’t have any way of proving to Grandpa that I’m better than him. I really didn’t want to set him back.”

“Bear Bear, what do I have to do to make him stand back on his feet?” An Jing paused before adding, “It’s not that I care about him. It’s just that if he can’t get back on his feet and advance to the Legendary stage, my defeat of him will be meaningless. It still wouldn’t prove to Grandpa that I’m better than him. So I must first help him establish his confidence and then help him advance to the Legendary stage. I’ll defeat him when he’s at tip-top shape. This will let Grandpa know that his daughter’s child is the best. Mom’s decision to marry Dad was right.”

Upon hearing this, Zhou Wen stopped listening and put away the Truth Listener earring.

Now, he finally understood why An Jing was targeting him. It was not because of Zhou Lingfeng and Ouyang Lan’s marriage, nor was it simply because of that special physique.

However, Zhou Wen wasn’t concerned that An Jing was upset with him. He only hoped that An Jing would not disturb him in the future. It was best if they minded their own business.

Now, all Zhou Wen wanted to do was game in peace. The fewer things he had to do, the better.

As usual, he first killed all the mini-bosses in the dungeons before heading to Fire God Platform to memorize the Ancient Imperial Sutra. Just as he was doing it the second time, the doorbell rang.

Zhou Wen opened the door and saw that it was Li Xuan, who he hadn't seen in days.

Li Xuan wore a smug look as he patted Zhou Wen on the shoulder. "Brat, I'll be protecting you in the future. If there's anyone who dares bully you, just give them my name."

"You aren't sick, are you?" Zhou Wen swatted away Li Xuan's hand and sat down on the couch. He poured himself a cup of blood-replenishing tea and slowly drank it.

Li Xuan smugly sat down beside Zhou Wen and wrapped his arm around his shoulder. Suppressing his excitement, he deliberately whispered, "Old Zhou, I finally succeeded in advancing to the Legendary stage. Guess what my Life Providence is?"

"I'm not guessing. I'm not interested." Zhou Wen continued drinking his tea.

However, Li Xuan still said excitedly, "I doubt you can guess it anyway. Let me tell you, my Legendary Life Providence is Immortal God of Combat. Isn't that impressive? Just the sound of the name makes it freaking awesome. I'm not bragging, but this Life Providence pretty much means invincibility-an immortal body, a supreme Dominance Body. People like Yang Lie will be exhausted to death beating me while I stand there, completely unmoved…"

When Li Xuan said this, he stood up and jumped onto the couch. He made an arrogant pose, his eyes filled with contempt as though he was looking down on everyone in the world.

But as soon as he finished speaking, he was kicked down by the sleeping antelope.

The antelope had already treated the couch as its bed. For Li Xuan to have the guts to hop on its bed in his shoes, there was no way it was going to be friendly with him.

Bang!

Li Xuan fell to the ground, his sternum sinking in with the shape of a hoof while he spewed out blood from his mouth.

“Isn’t… Isn’t that an antelope?” Li Xuan sprawled on the ground as he looked at the languid antelope in astonishment, his face wearing a look of disbelief.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 119 - Providence Palace

Chapter 119 Providence Palace

Li Xuan had always believed that the antelope was a mutated animal from the bottom half of Mount Laojun. However, the power of its hooves made him realize that it was not only a dimensional creature but an extremely high-level one.

His Immortal God of Combat Life Providence had greatly augmented his Constitution. Although calling it an immortal and indestructible Dominance Body was an exaggeration, it wouldn’t be easy for mere Legendaries to injure him.

The antelope had severely injured him with a casual kick of its hoof. This was already beyond the strength of a Legendary level. It was highly likely an Epic stage existence.

“I’ll take you to the hospital.” Zhou Wen was also given a fright. Although the antelope had been staying at his place and refusing to leave, it had never hurt him.

Now, with this strike, it had severely injured Li Xuan, who had just ascended to the Legendary stage. It also confirmed Zhou Wen’s previous speculation that the antelope had terrifying strength.

“There’s no need. This small injury is nothing to me. The Immortal God of Combat Life Providence still means something.” Li Xuan shook his head and propped himself up, using the coffee table to stand up.

Li Xuan seemed to be enduring a great deal of pain in the beginning. Even breathing seemed to be unbearable, and his face was ghastly pale.

However, after taking a few deep breaths, his complexion gradually improved. The injury on his chest seemed to be slowly recovering.

“The Immortal God of Combat has a powerful self-recovery ability. As long as I’m alive, my injuries can slowly recover.” Li Xuan did not forget to boast about his Life Providence.

“Your Virgin God of Combat Life Providence sure is nice.” Zhou Wen was slightly surprised. This Life Providence was really impressive-it could be considered a life-saving skill.

“What Virgin God of Combat… It’s Immortal God of Combat… Cough…” Agitated, Li Xuan pulled at his internal injuries, causing him to cough out a lot of blood.

“It looks like your self-recovery powers won’t restore you that quickly. Let me take you to the hospital now.” Zhou Wen helped Li Xuan out.

Li Xuan originally wanted to say no, but when he saw the antelope on the couch, he shivered and left Zhou Wen’s dormitory with his neck shrank back.

“What’s with that antelope? Isn’t it a mutated animal from Mount Laojun?” Li Xuan asked in a suppressed voice after Zhou Wen helped him out of the building.

“I’m not too sure either. It’s been following me all this time, but it hasn’t injured anyone before. It’s the first time today,” Zhou Wen said honestly.

“I… Forget it… I’ll just blame it on my luck… There’s no need to go to the hospital. Let’s find a place to rest. I still have something to tell you.” Li Xuan felt depressed.

Zhou Wen sized Li Xuan up and asked, “Is your injury really alright?”

“It’s just a flesh wound and I’m not internally injured. Even if we don’t go to the hospital, it will only take a few days before I recover. It’ll be troublesome if we go to the hospital, but you be careful in the future. Don’t end up getting kicked to death by that animal,” Li Xuan said.

The two of them sat down on a long bench on the lawn. Li Xuan’s complexion was much better now, having appeared to have returned to normal. From the looks of it, he wasn’t just bragging. The Immortal God of Combat was indeed impressive.

It’s not bad to have a life-saving Life Providence like Li Xuan’s, Zhou Wen thought.

“The school’s first comprehensive test is almost here. How’s your preparation going?” Li Xuan asked after taking a few deep breaths while on the long bench.

“What preparation?” Zhou Wen knew about the monthly comprehensive test, but he had no idea why he needed to prepare for it.

Li Xuan rolled his eyes at Zhou Wen speechlessly. “Let me guess. You didn’t read the syllabus for the comprehensive test?”

“No, has it been announced?” Zhou Wen shook his head slightly.

Li Xuan complained, “You really don’t know anything about the outside world. All you focus on is gaming. Every year, the first comprehensive test is the same. There are a total of four subjects—fishing a coin from a pot of oil, crossing a paper bridge, lifting stone tripod cauldrons, and sucking in the mountain and rivers. You need to pass two of these tests to pass. If you were to fail three of them, you would be dismissed from school.”

“Why do these names sound like acrobatic performances of the past?” Zhou Wen laughed.

“The names are indeed tacky, but they really aren’t easy. These tests are real tests of ability and not some sleight of hand used by acrobats on the street. Fishing out a coin from a pot of boiling oil uses real oil. To fish one out with one’s physical body is definitely impossible. Your hand will be crippled the moment you put it in. You need to have a Primordial Energy Skill covering your hand or have a protective Primordial Energy Skill to fish the coin out. Crossing the paper bridge is the easiest test to fail. It’s a paper bridge spanning a hundred meters. The bridge’s surface is made of thin calligraphic paper and tearing it when stepping over it will be considered a failure. Without a Primordial Energy Skill that imbues you with alacrity, there’s no way to cross it.

“The lifting of the stone tripod cauldron is easy. As long as you have enough Strength, using some Primordial Energy Skill that enhances Strength will allow you to pass. It’s not difficult to devour the mountain and rivers either. As long as you have 9 points of Primordial Energy, you’ll basically pass. These are the basic requirements Sunset College sets. You should be fine for the latter two, but you need to prepare the first two. If you don’t have the type of Primordial Energy

Skills required, I can lend you a few Primordial Energy Skill Crystals," Li Xuan said.

"There's no need. I have my ways of passing." Zhou Wen had Lotus Flower Buddha's Primordial Energy Skill, so it shouldn't be a problem to fish out a coin.

As for crossing the paper bridge, he also had Dragon Gate Fairy Skill. It wouldn't be difficult for him to cross the bridge.

However, Zhou Wen didn't plan on completing all the tests since he could pass as long as he completed two tests. There was no need for him to participate in all four of them.

However, Li Xuan said, "Don't take this matter lightly. If you can squeeze into the top ten in the comprehensive test, you can get a chance to enter Providence Palace. Besides Sunset College. That's an awesome place unique to Sunset College that you can't find elsewhere."

"Providence Palace?" Zhou Wen was surprised.

Zhou Wen had heard of this name before. Providence Palace was actually the royal palace in the era of the Sui and Tang dynasty. Back then, Luoyang City was the capital and center of politics of the country and Providence Palace was the political center of Luoyang.

Later on, Providence Palace was later buried in history and was destroyed during a war. However, after the dimensional storms, its ruins formed a dimensional zone.

Zhou Wen had heard a lot of rumors about the Providence Palace's dimensional zone. It was a relatively special dimensional zone without much danger inside; yet, it was possible to obtain great opportunities inside.

In the past, when he was in high school, there were rumors of a certain student obtaining a particular treasure in Providence Palace and ended directly shooting to stardom, advancing to the Legendary or even the Epic stage.

Of course, they were only urban myths. The Providence Palace’s dimensional zone had always been under Sunset College’s control and had never been open to the public. Only a handful of Sunset College students had the qualification to enter. As for what benefits lay within, Zhou Wen really did not know what it was.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 120 - Providence Palace’s Treasures

Chapter 120 Providence Palace's Treasures

"I've already found out that there aren't many areas in Providence Palace that have been cleared. We can only walk to the main entrance and can't even enter the city gates. In fact, people do not even consider entering Providence Palace," Li Xuan said.

"If we can't even get in, why are we heading there?" Zhou Wen asked puzzled.

"Don't be anxious. Listen to me slowly." Li Xuan acted all mysterious and continued, "Usually, the doors of Providence Palace are sealed shut. Even the most famous Epic experts would not be able to enter, much less us. That's why no one knows what's inside to date. However, one day every year, the city gates to Providence Palace will open. Many strange and magical items will appear from everywhere as though they are dragged by invisible ghosts, lining up to fly inside."

"I heard that there are all sorts of treasures in there. There are rare antiques, weapons and armors, gemstones and jade, and all kinds of precious treasures. However, they are practically no use to us. True treasures are the Companion Eggs and dimensional crystals. Rumor has it that a senior once obtained a Companion Egg which was an Epic stage angel. You definitely know of angel Companion Beasts. They are dimensional creatures that only appear in the West District's dimensional zone. Logically speaking, we shouldn't

have any angel Companion Eggs here," Li Xuan said in a tone of mystery.

"Is that true?" Zhou Wen found Li Xuan's words getting more and more outrageous as he found it unbelievable.

"Why would I lie to you? Someone from our Li family has already entered, but they didn't pick anything good," Li Xuan said.

"According to what you've said, since there are so many good things in Providence Palace, why don't they invite more people to head in to take them out? Why do they only allow the top ten in the comprehensive test in?" Zhou Wen still found it unbelievable as Li Xuan's account didn't make sense at all.

"Do you think anyone can choose what they want? When they first discovered the Providence Palace dimensional zone, they discovered ten tokens. On that day, only a person with a token had the right to choose one of the items to bring back. Those without the token couldn't even touch anything inside. Those with a token could only choose one object, nothing more," Li Xuan said in apparent seriousness.

Although Li Xuan's words were bizarre, Zhou Wen knew that there was no need for him to lie. Instead, he was a little curious about Providence Palace.

Li Xuan smiled and said, "It's useless to think too much now. If I want to choose something from Providence Palace, I'll have to enter the top 10 at the comprehensive test or it's useless. There are all kinds of experts in Sunset College, so even though I've advanced to the Legendary stage, I don't have the confidence of squeezing into the top ten. Old Zhou, you haven't even advanced to the Legendary stage. It will only be harder for you to enter the top ten. Ignoring

everything else, there's Huang Ji, Hui Haifeng, Wang Lu, Feng Qiuyan, and that sister of yours. Those five people will definitely enter the top ten, occupying five spots. The remaining five spots have many powerful fellows vying for it. I'm sure I can enter the top ten given a year or two, but now, it's a little hard to say."

Zhou Wen didn't know many students at Sunset College, but he knew all of the people Li Xuan mentioned.

"There's nothing wrong with the rest, but Wang Lu hasn't advanced to the Legendary stage yet, right? How do you know that she would definitely be able to take up a spot?" Zhou Wen looked at Li Xuan suspiciously.

"Do you really not know it or are you faking it? The Wang family's Wang Lu cultivates in the Youth Rejuvenation Divine Art. If she can't take the spot, who else can?" Li Xuan said.

Zhou Wen was confused by what he heard. Seeing that he did not know anything, Li Xuan explained in detail to Zhou Wen.

The Youth Rejuvenation Divine Art was the Wang family's Primordial Energy Art which few outsiders knew much about. After cultivating this Primordial Energy Art, the first breakthrough would result in someone regaining their youth.

The youth here didn't mean age, but the drop of one's stage to the Mortal stage. At the same time, one's physique and talent would improve tremendously. Not only was advancing quick, but one's attainment was higher when redoing the cultivation.

Wang Lu's first advancement to the Legendary stage happened when she was about the same age as An Jing. However, after the advancement, the effects of the Youth

Rejuvenation reduced her back to the Mortal stage. She needed to cultivate and advance to the Legendary stage again, but she wouldn’t suffer a repeat.

However, after Wang Lu advanced to the Epic stage, she would experience the effect of Youth Rejuvenation again. She would still drop to the Mortal stage and have to cultivate again.

“Wang Lu definitely must have taken a liking to the opportunity of Providence Palace by choosing to study at Sunset College. Before the comprehensive test, she will definitely be able to advance back to the Legendary stage,” Li Xuan said with great certainty.

“I see.” Only then did Zhou Wen realize that Wang Lu actually had such a story.

“Anyway, I’ve already informed you. Think about it yourself. Call me if you need anything.” Li Xuan rubbed his chest and got up to leave.

His Invincible Connate Divine Art Life Providence and Invincible Connate Divine Art could heal his body quickly, but the pain didn’t lessen one bit.

After Li Xuan left, Zhou Wen had been thinking about the comprehensive test.

If it was only a competition for placement, Zhou Wen definitely wouldn’t have wanted to vie for it. However, the items in Providence Palace were quite attractive to him.

Even if the other students were to compete, they could only choose one at most. However, Zhou Wen was wondering if he could download Providence Palace to his phone and choose multiple items.

To verify this thought, he had to download Providence Palace first. However, if he didn’t enter the top ten, he wouldn’t have the chance to get there and naturally wouldn’t have the chance to download the dungeon.

It looks like I’ll have to try for this spot. Zhou Wen made up his mind to vie for it, but he wasn’t sure if he could get the nomination.

The four projects tested the students’ Speed, Strength, Constitution, and Primordial Energy respectively. Zhou Wen’s four attributes were stronger than anyone else of the same level, but compared to those at the Legendary stage, he was still very much inferior.

“Fortunately, the comprehensive test allows the use of Companion Beasts. It’s not like I don’t have a chance at all.” After Zhou Wen returned to his room, he began crazily grinding again.

In the past few days, Zhou Wen’s luck had seemed pretty good. When he was grinding Lotus Flower Cave, another Fairy Monkey Companion Egg was dropped. Furthermore, its attributes were extremely high.

Zhou Wen couldn’t bear to use it as food. Finally, he steeled his heart and fused the Fairy Monkey Companion Egg with the Stone Qilin Companion Egg.

If he could get an excellent-grade Companion Egg with two skills, Zhou Wen decided to take the risk to incubate it.

However, with a 65% compatibility score, the fusion failed. With a loud bang from the phone, the two Companion Eggs vanished.

Although Zhou Wen was already mentally prepared for failure, he still felt depressed when he saw the two Companion Eggs disappear.

Gambling is indeed a terrible thing. Zhou Wen sighed and could only continue grinding.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 121 - Untouchable Stone Saber

Chapter 121 Untouchable Stone Saber

“Overseer, there’s news from the League that a dimensional creature broke out from the sea and has infiltrated the East district. It might be coming to us,” Ah Sheng said as he held a document that had just been faxed over.

“What level is the dimensional creature?” An Tianzuo frowned and asked.

“I’m not too sure yet, but from the description of the document, it didn’t easily break through the coastal defenses and even suffered some injuries. It should be an ordinary Epic stage creature,” Ah Sheng looked at the document and said, “However, after it charged through the coastal defenses, the League hasn’t been able to track it. They occasionally discover its traces and from its trajectory, it might pass through Luoyang. The League wants us to cooperate in stopping it. Overseer, what’s your take on this?”

“Strengthen the defenses and distribute the newly researched Primordial Gold bullets. Even if you can’t kill it here, you can’t let it do as it pleases in Luoyang,” An Tianzuo said.

“Yes, Overseer.” Ah Sheng received the order and left.

With the help of the Legendary Truth Listener earring, Zhou Wen felt like a fish in water. A few days later, he finally managed to remember all the content of the Ancient Imperial Sutra.

The moment he finished memorizing the Ancient Imperial Sutra, he felt as if every cell in his body was igniting. His entire body became extremely hot, almost to the point of burning

As for the firebird horde that charged towards the blood-colored avatar, they retreated and returned to the furnace in front of the stone monument.

Just as Zhou Wen thought his body was about to explode, the Lost Immortal Sutra came into effect, causing his body to turn completely still.

In the next second, his Primordial Energy began circulating again. However, it was no longer the path of the Lost Immortal Sutra. It became the Ancient Imperial Sutra that Zhou Wen had just memorized.

The Ancient Imperial Sutra could be described with one word-overbearing. Wherever Primordial Energy flowed, Zhou Wen felt as though all his cells had turned into explosives that could explode with unparalleled power.

That searing, potent, and oppressive power was something Zhou Wen had never experienced in any of the other Primordial Energy Arts he cultivated in.

However, this overbearing power made him feel brimming with energy and vitality instead of destruction.

When the Ancient Imperial Sutra completed a cycle, Zhou Wen felt a strange change in his body. It was as though a casual punch could cause a rupture in the world.

Looking at the blood-colored avatar’s stats, he discovered that the values of the four attributes had changed from 10

to 11 points. Now, Zhou Wen had three stats at 11, leaving only one stat at 10.

As he had mastered the Ancient Imperial Sutra to a basic level, the blood-colored avatar could stand near the Fire God Platform without firebirds appearing to attack him.

Zhou Wen controlled the blood-colored avatar to walk up to the Fire God Platform. The flames inside the furnace flickered but did not spew out any firebirds.

He originally thought that Fire God Platform would give him a Companion Egg, but he was ultimately disappointed. There was only a stone monument and a stone furnace on Fire

1 Platform, nothing else; hence, there was no one to give him a Companion Egg.

So not every place has a Mythical Companion Egg to give! Zhou Wen didn’t feel disappointed as he carefully observed the stone monument and furnace.

He had already noted down the words on the monument. Furthermore, he had already gained a basic mastery of the Ancient Imperial Sutra, so there was nothing special about it.

On the contrary, the stone furnace was rather strange and Zhou Wen couldn’t help but be even more meticulous studying it.

There were many firebird symbols on the outside of the stone furnace, but upon closer inspection, he realized that they were not firebirds but fire plumes of different shapes.

There was something in the furnace that was burning with scarlet flames.

Zhou Wen looked at it for a while before identifying it as a stone saber. It was in the furnace flames that burned vigorously. This only allowed him to make out its blurry outline.

Is the stone saber in the furnace also a Companion Egg? Zhou Wen’s heart skipped a beat as he made the blood-colored avatar attempt to remove the saber from the furnace.

Since it was only a waste of a blood drop if the blood-colored avatar were to die, Zhou Wen was not stingy with making such attempts.

After circulating the Ancient Imperial Sutra to its limit, the blood-colored avatar’s palm reached into the stone furnace. The flames in the furnace automatically parted, as though they were welcoming his hand.

The flames split apart, revealing the stone saber stuck in the middle of the stone furnace. Zhou Wen could now see it clearly instead of a blurry outline.

The first impression that he had of the stone saber was that it was rough. It was ground from black stone with many rough edges and uneven pot marks. It was nothing perfect or exquisite.

However, this stone saber gave Zhou Wen an extremely oppressive feeling. It was as though it was the only thing that could claim to be supreme in the entire world as an ancient and desolate aura inundated him.

On one side of the stone saber, there was a bloodstain. The blood-red color coupled with its shape made it look like a blood-red bolt of lightning

Without any hesitation, he controlled the blood-colored avatar to grab the handle, hoping to pull the stone saber out of the furnace.

However, when the blood-colored avatar's palm touched the stone saber, Zhou Wen was stunned. The blood-colored avatar's palm seemed to pass through an illusion and did not touch it.

Why is this happening? Zhou Wen tried a few more times, but the result was the same. The stone saber did not seem to exist at all as though it was only an illusion. It was futile no matter how the blood-colored avatar tried to grab it. Time and again, its palm would pass through it.

Zhou Wen spent a long time studying the situation on Fire God Platform without figuring out what was going on.

Could it be that the stone saber is really just an illusion? Zhou Wen stared at the stone saber in the game, but it didn't look like an illusion at all, because the aura of the saber was just too potent. How could an illusion have such an aura?

Now, Zhou Wen had the urge to immediately return to Guide Ancient City and scale the Fire God Platform in reality. He wanted to see if there was a stone saber in the furnace.

That was just an impulsive thought after all. It was impossible for him to return to the Guide Ancient City, so he could only give up on his plan of obtaining the stone saber and leave the Ancient Imperial City dungeon.

My three stats have already reached 11 points, so how can I find a Primordial Energy Art to increase my Speed to 11 points? Zhou Wen only wanted to quickly advance to the Legendary stage.

Being at the Mortal stage was just too weak. He would be slaughtered if he encountered true experts. Furthermore, only by advancing to the Legendary stage could he incubate Legendary Companion Eggs without any worries.

Armor, weapons, necklaces, and other Companion Beasts were very helpful in improving his strength.

After careful consideration, Zhou Wen headed to the college library. He wanted to see if there were any other mysterious dimensional zones in Luoyang that had Primordial Energy Arts.

Unfortunately, he didn’t find anything similar to Small Buddha Temple or Mount Laojun. At least in Luoyang, there was no place like that.

Zhou Wen browsed through the other dimensional zones in the League. He made some decent discoveries through this search.

Boom!

As Zhou Wen was checking the information, he suddenly heard a loud boom. The entire library was shaking violently as a large amount of cement fell from above.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 122 - The Library Incident

Chapter 122 The Library Incident

Zhou Wen immediately activated his Lotus Flower Buddha Body. At the same time, he extended his silver wings and retreated more than 10 meters. His left hand, which was wrapped by the lotus flower bracer, shattered the large piece of concrete steel that came crashing towards him.

Boom!

Amidst the splattering dust and plaster, Zhou Wen saw a huge green-scaled snake falling down from the hole in the roof. It shattered the bookshelf and the wood fragments flew everywhere as the ground opened up into a huge crater.

A large number of fragments smashed onto Zhou Wen. Thankfully, he had already activated Lotus Flower Buddha Body, so none of the flying rubble harmed his body.

The green-scaled snake was extremely large, spanning more than a hundred meters long. It was as thick as a water barrel and on its back was a pair of gigantic wing-like fins.

The students in the library dodged and screamed as they ran out. Although Zhou Wen didn’t know what was going on, he knew that he couldn’t stay here for long. Just as he was about to flee the library, he saw the huge snake open its enormous mouth in a bid to devour a student.

The student was too close to the spot where the snake had landed. A flying fragment of a steel slab had pierced through

her calf and her body was pinned to the ground. She could not free herself to escape.

Zhou Wen took a look and realized that the student was Fang Ruoxi. With a thought, the Silver-Winged Flying Ant immediately separated from him and transformed into a silver stream of light, pulling her out before the snake could devour her.

The Silver-Winged Flying Ant carried the injured Fang Ruoxi and flew back to Zhou Wen’s side. The enraged snake lifted its neck and opened its mouth, wanting to lunge towards him.

Zhou Wen was just about to flee when he suddenly heard a series of gunshots. A large number of soldiers jumped down from the hole and held their assault rifles in their hands. They fired unceasingly at the snake.

Typically hot weapons had limited impact on dimensional creatures even with nuclear bombs, much less bullets. They might even accelerate the mutation of dimensional creatures.

However, when the soldiers’ bullets hit the snake, they pierced through the scales and caused it to bleed. The snake began to twist its body and cry out as it tried to escape.

However, it was already too late for it to escape. The soldiers continued firing at it. In just a few seconds, the gigantic snake had become riddled with holes. The snake’s blood was everywhere.

“Young Master Wen, are you alright?” A young man who looked like an officer rushed over and sized Zhou Wen up before asking anxiously.

“I’m fine.” Zhou Wen recognized the officer to be An Tianzuo’s adjutant, Ah Sheng.

“It’s good that you’re fine. Young Master Wen, you can go back now. There are still some matters to settle here.” Ah Sheng called two soldiers over and asked them to escort Zhou Wen and Fang Ruoxi out of the library.

Fang Ruoxi’s calf was injured and the steel slab was still piercing through it. Thankfully, the injury was not serious. The moment they left the library, the medical team rushed over with a doctor to treat Fang Ruoxi.

“Thank you Zhou Wen. You took the risk to save me even though I treated you badly in the past,” Fang Ruoxi said to Zhou Wen. She had been brooding over the fact that she had failed to form a team with Zhou Wen.

“It’s nothing. It wasn’t much of a risk. If it were any other student, I would also have saved them. You don’t have to think too much.” Zhou Wen turned around and left.

The middle-aged female doctor who was treating Fang Ruoxi’s wound almost burst out laughing when she saw the disappointment on Fang Ruoxi’s face. She said, “Young lady, there’s no loss missing out on such insensitive men. It’s how he acts that makes him single. It will save you a lot of woe in the future.”

Fang Ruoxi blushed. “We’re just ordinary classmates, don’t think too much.”

The incident at the library caused quite a commotion on campus. The students were all discussing this matter.

The college also gave an official account that a criminal was escaping with a Companion Beast and ended up entering

the college accidentally under the military’s pursuit. The criminal and the Companion Beast were both killed on the spot by the military.

Zhou Wen had seen the gigantic snake with his own eyes, but he didn’t feel that it was a Companion Beast with an owner. It resembled more of a feral dimensional creature.

Zhou Wen himself also felt that it was impossible. After all, feral dimensional creatures weren’t able to leave their dimensional zones. However, when he thought of the antelope in his dorm, he felt that it wasn’t exactly possible.

If all dimensional creatures can rush out of their dimensional zones, what would the human world become? Zhou Wen could not help but shudder when he thought of this possibility.

The number of human experts had increased over the past few decades and Epic experts were no longer rare. But compared to those dimensional creatures, they were still far inferior.

Ignoring everything else, just like the three-faced Buddha in Small Buddha Temple and the expert who didn’t even show his face at Mount Laojun, they were probably existences that few humans could match.

Furthermore, there were many places like this on Earth.

If there really comes a day when dimensional creatures are able to rush out of the dimensional zones, it would be the end of the world for humans. One must be strong enough to survive. Zhou Wen felt that the day wasn’t too distant. The examples of the antelope and the snake made his sense of danger tingling.

I still need to increase my strength. Zhou Wen felt the urgency to improve his strength-he needed to have the ability to survive in such a disaster.

After returning to his dorm, he decided to take a shower and change out of his tattered clothes and dirt-covered clothes before taking a shower to continue gaming.

However, when he removed his clothes, he realized that there was a clamshell the size of an egg on the inside of his shirt.

The clamshell’s rainbow colors made it extremely beautiful. Zhou Wen casually pulled it off and was about to throw it away when he noticed something while holding it in his hand.

Inside the clamshell was filled with blue seawater. Even if the clamshell was facing downwards, not a single drop of seawater stirred, it all remained inside.

Zhou Wen was a little surprised to suddenly see waves rise up from the seawater. Ripples spread out and something slowly floated up in the middle.

He was alarmed as he quickly threw away the clamshell. At the same time, he summoned his Companion Beasts and fused with them to prepare for battle.

However, the clamshell that Zhou Wen threw was floating in mid-air. A petite, beautiful figure emerged from the rippling seawater.

It was a mermaid-like creature with a head of golden wavy hair. However, her ears looked like fish fins and her eyes were blue like the sea, seemingly possessing an indescribable charm.

Is this a mermaid or a siren? Zhou Wen frowned slightly. He was now sure that this was definitely a feral dimensional creature.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 123 - The First Order of Chaos

Chapter 123 The First Order of Chaos

Without much hesitation, the moment he saw the siren-like mermaid appear, the transparent wings on Zhou Wen’s back vibrated and he slammed his feet on the ground, wanting to rush out from the balcony.

There were too many unknown and terrifying existences in this world. Regardless of his chances of defeating a siren, Zhou Wen was unwilling to risk it.

But just as he moved, a large amount of seawater burst out from the clamshell behind the siren. The egg-sized clamshell spewed out seawater like a waterfall that engulfed the entire living room.

Zhou Wen’s body collided with the waterfall formed by the seawater and immediately felt his body being pushed back into the living room like a wave.

“Keke, foolish human. When standing before the Queen of the Sea, resistance is futile. Your only option is to become my slave and be used by me.” The siren’s body gradually walked out of the clamshell and gradually grew in size, becoming as big as an ordinary human.

Zhou Wen gathered his Strength and repeatedly slammed into the waterfall formed by the seawater. He was repelled every time. Even Astral Slash Blade left a tiny crack when he slashed down on the waterfall before the hole disappeared in the blink of an eye.

“It’s useless, foolish human. Stop doing such foolish acts and become my slave.” As the siren spoke, a strange light shone in her blue eyes, exuding an indescribable charm.

Zhou Wen’s gaze landed on the strange pair of eyes and his eyes immediately lost focus. As though in a trance, he dazedly walked towards the siren.

“Yes, that’s right. Come into my embrace and be my slave. It’s a great honor for a human…” She spread out her arms and embraced Zhou Wen like a mother. At the same time, she was about to plant her pale-blue lips on his forehead.

Zhou Wen continued walking towards the siren in a daze, as though he was unaware of everything. All that was left in his eyes was the reflection of the siren’s strange eyes.

The siren’s hands were already on Zhou Wen’s shoulders and her lips were about to be planted on Zhou Wen’s forehead when his originally dull eyes turned clear and limpid. His left hand which was wrapped in a lotus bracer rose up as his palm brought a Astral Slash Blade beam, slicing it straight at the siren’s abdomen.

With the augmentation of the lotus bracer, the Astral Slash Blade beam that combined 11 points of Primordial Energy violently struck the belly of the siren, leaving a mark on it. This act stunned the beautiful face of the siren.

Perhaps it was overconfidence or that she didn’t expect Zhou Wen to remain clear-headed under her gaze, the siren failed to react completely as she looked at Zhou Wen in disbelief.

However, Zhou Wen didn’t hesitate at all. His entire body rose up in an instant. He rained down his fists and knees like a thunderstorm, attacking the vital spots of the siren.

The Mutated Lotus Flower Ant and the Silver-Winged Flying Ant were also summoned by Zhou Wen. They surrounded the siren on both sides, trying hard to severely injure the siren in the shortest time possible so that she wouldn’t be capable of counterattacking.

Bam! Bam! Bam!

Zhou Wen watched as the arm of the siren moved. Then, he and his two Companion Beasts retreated at the same time, slamming into the seawater waterfall before bouncing back and falling onto the ground.

The siren stared coldly at Zhou Wen, her fingers touching the wound on her abdomen. The wound had strangely healed, not leaving any scars behind.

“Humans are despicable. They do not heed well-meaning advice, forcing me to take action myself.” The siren stared coldly at Zhou Wen and swung its tail towards him.

Bam!

The moment the siren finished speaking, a hoof fell from above, knocking her down along with the clamshell. This caused the seawater waterfall, enclosing the living room to collapse, restoring the living room to its original appearance.

Zhou Wen saw that the siren was slumped on the floor and could not stand up no matter how hard she struggled. On her back, the white antelope was standing leisurely with its hooves stepping on her. It was as if it wasn’t stepping on a terrifying dimensional creature, but a block of wood.

Zhou Wen didn’t say another word as he immediately changed the Mutated Lotus Flower Ant into a bracer and sliced at the siren’s neck.

The siren was most likely an Epic creature. No matter what dropped from killing her, it would fetch a good price. This was undoubtedly very tempting for the broke Zhou Wen.

Of course, the main reason was to resolve any possible problems. He couldn’t allow such a dangerous dimensional creature to continue living. This was too dangerous for Zhou Wen and his classmates.

“Don’t kill me! As long as you’re willing to let me go, I can share a huge secret with you,” the siren hurriedly shouted.

However, Zhou Wen ignored her and slit her neck with the edge of the lotus bracer. However, it only left a faint red mark on her fair neck. All he managed was a slight laceration.

Zhou Wen was a little shocked. The lotus bracer was already considered a top-notch weapon amongst Legendaries, but it could only tear open a tiny part of her skin. It was probably that this siren was a top existence among Epic creatures.

“Brother Antelope, why don’t you help me get rid of her?” Zhou Wen said as he looked at the antelope on the siren’s back.

Unless Zhou Wen’s Primordial Energy was restored, allowing him to use Astral Slash Blade matched with his lotus bracer, it wouldn’t be easy for him to kill this siren.

Upon hearing Zhou Wen’s words, the siren hurriedly exclaimed, “I really have a huge secret to share with you. I’ve obtained the First Order of Chaos from the primordial god, Chaos. If you are willing to let me go, I can share it with you.”

“What First Order of Chaos?” Zhou Wen’s heart stirred as he looked at the siren on the ground and asked.

Zhou Wen had heard of the name Chaos before. It was a primordial god in Greek mythology. It was the first god to be born in Greek mythology.

It was just that this god was not well-known in the world, but his descendants were famous, ones that many knew.

For example, the third generation god-king from Chaos’s family line, Zeus of Olympus; Sea King, Poseidon; the Goddess of Wisdom, Athena; and Sun God, Apollo, were descendants of this god.

Some people said that Chaos was one of the celestial gods of Time, Space, and Space-time. Others said that Chaos was chaos itself. In any case, the status of this god in Greek mythology was akin to the Chinese myth of Pangu’s splitting of the primordial egg.

When the siren mentioned this name, Zhou Wen was rather surprised.

Zhou Wen had heard that in some of the dimensional zones in the West District, many dimensional zones related to Zeus and the other gods were found. There were even second-generation Titans found in some dimensional zones. However, he had never heard any news about Chaos.

“The First Order of Chaos is the source of Lord Chaos’s power. To you humans, that is Lord Chao’s Primordial Energy Art,” the siren hurriedly said.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 124 - Crystal Ball

Chapter 124 Crystal Ball

“Did you bring out the First Order of Chaos? Is it the original version?” Zhou Wen didn’t really believe that the siren could obtain the original version of Chaos’s Primordial Energy Art.

Although to Zhou Wen, the siren was very powerful, she was definitely not a top-notch expert among dimensional creatures. There were too many dimensional creatures that could kill her.

For something as valuable as Chaos’s Primordial Energy Art, it was possible if the siren had taken out a copy, but the original copy was probably something not even Mythical experts would move around casually, let alone a mere siren.

However, a copy was useless to Zhou Wen. The Lost Immortal Sutra needed the original version of the Primordial Energy Art to do its magic.

The siren said, “Of course it’s the original version. Don’t look down on me. Although I’m not strong, Lord Chaos’s blood runs through my veins… there’s that tiny bit… After getting the First Order of Chaos, I escaped to the East.”

“Then where is the First Order of Chaos? Show it to me now. If it’s really useful, I can spare your life,” Zhou Wen said.

“I can show you the First Order of Chaos, but you have to swear that you will return it to me after you see it and that you will let me leave safely.” As the siren spoke, it glanced sideways at the antelope.

The antelope seemed to have some interest in the First Order of Chaos that the Sea Demons mentioned. It bleated out twice as if urging the siren to take it out quickly.

“You don’t have the right to bargain. Show me the item. If it’s real, I can spare your life,” Zhou Wen said coldly.

“Alright.” The siren hesitated for a while before clenching its teeth. It reached into the clamshell and pulled it out and handed it to Zhou Wen.

Zhou Wen looked over and saw that the siren was holding a crystal ball, but it was different from an ordinary crystal ball. Within it were constantly changing light and shadows.

Night, day, fire, lightning, wind, clouds, sun, moon, and stars kept flashing and disappearing. As they flashed, Zhou Wen could see the characters changing into words, vanishing when the light and darkness crossed each other.

However, he didn’t know what those words meant. They were different from the language he had learned in the League-probably an ancient language that predated the League.

Although he couldn’t read it, Zhou Wen was shocked to discover that his gaze was still attracted to the words in the crystal ball. He couldn’t even look away as his body and mind changed along with the changes in the crystal ball.

It felt as if he had entered the world within the crystal ball, feeling his body assaulted by all kinds of things, burned by flames, and struck by lightning. He shivered in the darkness and sank into the sea.

It wasn’t only Zhou Wen. Even the antelope which was also staring fixedly at the crystal ball seemed to suffer from

dementia.

Upon seeing this, the siren was delighted as a sinister smile appeared on her face. How can fools like you be able to withstand Lord Chaos’s divine powers? Without the bloodline of Lord Chaos, reading the First Order of Chaos in the chaos space is simply courting death.

The siren struggled to get up, hoping to kill Zhou Wen and the antelope who were entranced by the text in the crystal ball.

However, with the antelope’s body on her, it was like a mountain. Despite exerting all her strength, there was no way to break free.

Dammit, how is this antelope so strong? Although I was injured before I escaped, I shouldn’t be so weak that I can be suppressed by an Epic creature… The siren wasn’t anxious despite not being able to break free.

The siren knew very clearly that as long as they spent more time looking at the First Order of Chaos, they would be assimilated very quickly, and would be thrown uncontrollably into the chaos space. All she needed to do was wait patiently for the time to pass.

After waiting for a moment, a look of doubtful shock flashed in the siren’s eyes. Zhou Wen was clearly a Mortal stage student, which gave him an upper limit of less than a minute before he should be pulled into the chaos space and be trapped inside.

However, two to three minutes had already passed, and Zhou Wen was still standing there looking at the chaos space. He had no intention of walking forward.

This human is really strange. Thinking back to how her eyes had failed to entrance him, she couldn’t help but examine him.

For a Mortal stage to perform as such, she believed that he might have some treasure on him. Otherwise, it would be difficult to explain why he was able to resist her eyes and be able to look at the First Order of Chaos for so long.

As for that antelope, she had already determined that it was an extremely powerful existence. It was not surprising that it could persist for so long.

Thus, an extremely bizarre scene happened in the two-story living room of Zhou Wen’s building. An antelope was standing on a mermaid, while a human and antelope were staring intently at the crystal ball held by the mermaid.

Time ticked by. Half an hour later, the siren was certain that Zhou Wen must have an extremely powerful treasure when he still didn’t walk towards the crystal ball.

God really watches over me. Not only was I lucky to get the First Order of Chaos, but I actually have a powerful treasure to deliver itself to me. The siren was delighted and wished to immediately free herself from the antelope and search Zhou Wen’s body for the treasure.

Suddenly, the antelope on her back moved and slowly walked towards the crystal ball.

“They’re finally moving.” The siren was overjoyed. She threw the crystal ball into the air, causing it to float far away from her, making the antelope slowly walk towards it, getting off her in the process and giving her freedom.

She had not thrown the crystal ball at the antelope earlier because she was afraid that with it pressing down on her body, it would also pull her into the crystal ball.

The siren didn’t take back the crystal ball immediately to deal with the antelope but instead headed straight for Zhou Wen.

Even a powerful creature like the antelope was attracted by the words in the First Order of Chaos, walking towards it involuntarily; yet, Zhou Wen managed to be unfazed by it, affirming her belief that he had a powerful treasure on him- one not weaker than the chaos space.

The siren wriggled her tail impatiently and swam towards Zhou Wen, but at that moment, Zhou Wen, who was standing there like a wooden pole, suddenly moved.

The silver wings behind him spread out like a silver bolt of lightning and flew up into the air, lunging in the direction of the crystal ball where the chaos space was.

The first reaction of the siren was that Zhou Wen finally couldn’t withstand the power of the First Order of Chaos and was being attracted over to it.

However, she immediately dismissed such a thought. How could people who were attracted by the First Order of Chaos use Primordial Energy Skills and Companion Beasts?

Zhou Wen was very close to the crystal ball to begin with. Therefore, with the siren’s hesitation, he managed to grab onto it with one hand.

“You have a death wish!” The siren didn’t panic as she looked at Zhou Wen and sneered.

Without a Chaos bloodline, touching the chaos space would cause one to be sucked into it and be trapped inside forever.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 125 - Chaos Space

Chapter 125 Chaos Space

Even the siren with some of the Chaos's bloodline couldn't easily touch the chaos space at first. Only after cultivating some of the First Order of Chaos could she use her hands to touch it before fleeing to the East.

However, at the moment Zhou Wen grabbed the crystal ball, the expression of the siren changed.

When he held it, it actually retracted its brilliance and everything within it vanished. The text of the First Order of Chaos naturally vanished as well.

Seeing Zhou Wen play with the chaos space that had lost all its glow in his hands, the siren was dumbfounded.

"Impossible… How is this possible… You are an Eastern creature… You can't possibly have the blood of Lord Chaos…" The siren spoke incoherently, unable to accept the fact that Zhou Wen had control over the chaos space.

"Meh!" With the crystal ball controlled by Zhou Wen, the antelope immediately sobered up. It flew into a rage as it glared at the siren and let out an angry bleat.

The siren shuddered and turned to flee. Unfortunately, it was too late.

The third eye on the antelope's forehead opened and a blinding white light shot out and hit the siren. The latter

didn’t even let out a cry before it was sucked into the vertical eye of the antelope.

The antelope closed its vertical eye and its mood changed for the better. It had been too careless and thought that nothing would happen with its strength. Yet, it fell for the siren’s scheme and almost got sucked into the chaos space.

If it wasn’t for Zhou Wen, it would really have perished.

Zhou Wen didn’t notice the expression on the antelope’s face as he fiddled with the crystal ball in his hand.

It wasn’t very big-about the size as a billiard ball. In the beginning, Zhou Wen had indeed been affected by the First Order of Chaos.

Fortunately, after being influenced, the Lost Immortal Sutra slowly stopped its circulation and when it restarted, it had turned into a brand new Primordial Energy Art circulation method-naturally the First Order of Chaos.

In fact, Zhou Wen had already regained his clarity of mind. However, he wasn’t a match for the siren and with the crystal ball in her hands, there was no way he could snatch it away from her, much less save the antelope.

Without rescuing the antelope, he still wasn’t the siren’s match when she regained her freedom, so he could only wait for a chance.

After the siren threw out the crystal ball, Zhou Wen knew that his opportunity had arrived. He snatched the crystal ball and controlled it with the power of the First Order of Chaos Primordial Energy Art, allowing the antelope to regain its lucidity.

This crystal ball was indeed very strange. When Zhou Wen used the power of the First Order of Chaos to control it, he found that its interior was a huge space that could contain infinity.

If he hadn’t cultivated the First Order of Chaos, this crystal ball would only allow entry just like a huge prison cell that didn’t allow escape.

However, after cultivating the First Order of Chaos, he could control it freely. It wasn’t difficult for him to extract something from the chaos space.

Isn’t this equivalent to a huge storage space? With a thought, Zhou Wen injected the power of the First Order of Chaos into the crystal ball, causing it to shrink according to his will and it soon became the size of a bean. However, it didn’t shrink any further.

Zhou Wen was naturally in a good mood after receiving such a magical crystal ball. However, although the Lost Immortal Sutra had helped him master the First Order of Chaos, it didn’t increase any of his attributes. His Strength, Constitution, and Primordial Energy were still at 11 while his Speed remained at 10.

He thought for a moment before carefully taking in the power of the First Order of Chaos and guessed a probable reason.

From what Zhou Wen sensed, the First Order of Chaos obviously had an effect on strengthening his Primordial Energy. However, his Primordial Energy attribute had already been enhanced by the Wordless Monument, so when cultivating a relatively similar First Order of Chaos, it wasn’t of much use. He just had an additional Primordial Energy Art to call his own.

If my theory is correct, then I have to cultivate another Primordial Energy skill that improves Speed, to raise my Speed attribute to 11 points. Zhou Wen felt a slight headache.

It was already very difficult to find a Primordial Energy Art, and it had to be one that focused on increasing Speed. The difficulty had increased quite significantly.

The information I found in the library did mention lands of mystery similar to Small Buddha Temple and Mount Laojun, but how can I confirm that the Primordial Energy Arts in that particular land of mystery will increase Speed? Zhou Wen was a little vexed.

Those lands of mystery weren’t in Luoyang to begin with, and now there was such a limitation. Zhou Wen was momentarily at a loss where to find the Primordial Energy Arts.

I’ll wait until after the comprehensive test. Zhou Wen couldn’t leave the college now. So even if he had a target in mind, he wasn’t able to go.

The antelope sized up Zhou Wen and finally slumped back on the sofa, looking rather listless.

Zhou Wen returned to his room and closed the door. He then took out the crystal ball that was about the size of a soybean and attempted to put things like teacups inside before retrieving them.

It went very smoothly. Be it small items like teacups and spectacle boxes or bigger items like blankets or chairs, they could easily be put inside and retrieved. It was like a particular robot cat’s pocket.

However, after Zhou Wen mastered the complete First Order of Chaos, the mysterious light, shadows, and text in the crystal ball didn’t appear again. It lost the ability to attract other creatures to enter by themselves.

When Zhou Wen tried putting the mysterious phone into the crystal ball, he realized that it couldn’t fit.

“

After studying it for a while, Zhou Wen put away the crystal ball and went online to search for items like jewelry or accessories.

In the past, all sorts of gemstones, jade, and diamonds were expensive. But now, the prices of those items were very cheap, and ordinary people could buy them.

Especially the price of diamonds, they weren’t much more expensive than natural crystals now.

Firstly, it was because diamonds weren’t worth much with artificial diamonds capable of replacing the demand for natural diamonds. Furthermore, in this era, people were more willing to spend money on Companion Eggs and dimensional crystals. This caused the price of diamonds to naturally drop drastically.

Now, an increasing number of high-level jewelry was made with dimensional crystals. Anyone who had a bit of money wouldn’t wear ordinary diamonds.

Zhou Wen was trying to hide the crystal ball inside an accessory. It was easy for others to suspect a single crystal, but it was difficult to feel any problems when the crystal was surrounded by several inlaid crystals similar to it. After all,

the chaos space crystal ball usually looked no different from ordinary crystals.

After some choosing, Zhou Wen chose a silver bracelet made of natural crystals and diamonds.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 126 - Bracelet

Chapter 126 Bracelet

As Zhou Wen had deliberately chosen a seller in the same city, the silver bracelet he had bought over the Internet was delivered the next afternoon. When he went to the school gates to get the delivery, he saw Ah Sheng driving up.

“Young Master Wen, Madam has ordered some dishes at a restaurant and wishes you to have a meal with her.” Ah Sheng was so polite that it was embarrassing to reject him.

Zhou Wen thought for a moment. Since he was going to the restaurant and not the An family’s residence, there was no harm in him going.

The bracelet didn’t take up much space, so Zhou Wen didn’t return to the dormitory first and got into Ah Sheng’s car.

“Young Master Wen, rest for a while. It’ll take about half an hour before we reach the place,” Ah Sheng started the car and said to Zhou Wen as he drove.

“Aren’t you An Tianzuo’s adjutant? Why do you always work for Sister Lan?” Zhou Wen asked curiously.

Ah Sheng smiled and said, “I’m the Overseer’s adjutant. Other than my usual duties, I’m also in charge of taking care of the Overseer’s life as well as the safety of the An family. You can think of me as half a butler of the An family.”

Zhou Wen nodded and didn’t say anything more. As half an hour was just too long, he thought for a moment and opened the accessory box and took out the silver bracelet.

The bracelet looked beautiful and exquisite. On it was quite a number of diamonds and crystals. Zhou Wen had only bought it after looking at the dimensions, so the size of the crystals was basically the same as the chaos space crystal ball.

Zhou Wen carefully removed one of the crystals and then embedded the chaos space crystal ball. It looked perfect, and he couldn’t see any flaws.

With the diamonds forming a contrast, the crystal ball wasn’t eye-catching. Most people wouldn’t purposely take note of the crystals on

it.

After trying it on his wrist, he found a problem. The Space Crystal Pearl was indeed inconspicuous, but wearing this bracelet on a man’s wrist seemed a little too conspicuous.

The silver is a little too shiny and it’s not hard enough. It breaks easily so I think I’ll buy another bracelet made of carbide later, Zhou Wen thought to himself and took the bracelet off and put it in the box.

The box was a little too big to permit him to put it in his pocket, so Zhou Wen could only hold it in his hand.

When he arrived at the restaurant, he realized that An Jing was also there.

“Little Wen, come over quickly. The dishes have already been ordered. We’re just waiting for you.” Ouyang Lan

pulled Zhou Wen to sit beside her naturally.

Although Zhou Wen didn't have a good impression of An Jing, he didn't care too much about it. Since he was already here, he might as well sit down and accompany Ouyang Lan and leave after the meal.

An Jing sat on the other side of Ouyang Lan. She glanced at Zhou Wen but didn't say a word. She had an arrogant and cold expression.

Ah Sheng had already ordered the staff to serve the dishes. Before they were served, Ouyang Lan saw the box in Zhou Wen's hand and asked, "Little Wen, what are you carrying?"

Zhou Wen thought to himself, It's not a bad idea to let Ouyang Lan take a look too. If she doesn't notice anything, it would be even harder for others to notice anything amiss.

"I bought a bracelet. Sister Lan, take a look." Zhou Wen handed the box over to Ouyang Lan.

Ouyang Lan took the box and opened it to take a look. It was a silver bracelet worn by a lady. Although it was not an expensive item, its design was quite unique.

"Little Wen, I didn't expect you to be so thoughtful. Is this a birthday present for Little Jing? I didn't plan on telling you that it's her birthday today and just wanted to invite you to a meal. I never expected you to get her a gift." Ouyang Lan really imagined that Zhou Wen had bought a present.

If not, why would a man like him bring a female bracelet here?

Zhou Wen was stunned when he heard that. He didn't know that he had bought a female bracelet since he only bought it

because the dimensions for embedding the chaos space crystal ball was perfect.

If Ouyang Lan hadn’t told him, he wouldn’t have known that this was a female bracelet.

An Jing also thought that Zhou Wen had really bought this bracelet for her. She felt a little ashamed in her heart. Zhou Wen is quite a nice person. I went a little overboard in the past. Should I find a chance to apologize?

Just as An Jing was thinking about this, she suddenly heard Zhou Wen say, “Sis Lan, I didn’t know it was An Jing’s birthday today. This isn’t a gift for her.”

An Jing’s expression froze. For a moment, she had mixed, conflicted feelings.

Ouyang Lan hurriedly changed the topic and said, “You bought such a pretty bracelet. Is there a girl you like?”

Zhou Wen shook his head and said, “I bought the wrong item. I bought a male bracelet myself and ended up buying a female one. I’ll have to return it later.”

This little rascal, he’s like an impervious rock. Zhou Lingfeng is so good at reading people, so how did he give birth to such a brat? Ouyang Lan felt a little despondent hearing Zhou Wen’s words. Since you bought the wrong item and have no intention of giving it to someone else, can’t you just give it to An Jing? It’s not like a bracelet costs much.

How could Ouyang Lan know that there was a chaos space crystal ball embedded in the bracelet? How could Zhou Wen give it to An Jing?

This meal was very awkward. Ouyang Lan didn’t have a solution either. After quickly finishing the meal, she got Ah Sheng to take Zhou Wen back first.

After Zhou Wen returned to the dormitory, he immediately ordered another bracelet online. This time, Zhou Wen was more careful and confirmed that it was a male bracelet. He even specially chose a carbide bracelet.

After Zhou Wen received the new bracelet, he embedded the chaos space crystal ball into it and found it very suitable. Even if he looked closely, it was difficult to distinguish the chaos space crystal bead from the diamonds and natural crystals.

Moreover, most people wouldn’t be able to see him wearing a bracelet with his sleeves usually covering it.

After much effort, Zhou Wen finally managed to settle the bracelet. The date for the comprehensive test was already nearing.

“

He had not seen Li Xuan for days, perhaps a result of him working hard to improve his strength. He had the Li family backing him, so he had endless numbers of dimensional crystals and Companion Eggs. Raising his stats and contracting powerful Legendary Companion Beasts wasn’t a difficult task. It was expected that his strength would soar extremely quickly.

Only on the day of the comprehensive test did Zhou Wen realize how many students Sunset College had. The dense horde of people probably numbered more than ten thousand.

There were four special zones on the field. In one area, there were about a hundred pots with scorching hot oil. Blue smoke emitted from them as though it would ignite at any moment.

In another zone, there was a hundred-meter-long bridge made with thirty-centimeter-wide calligraphic paper. It was probably the testing venue for crossing the paper bridge.

The other two testing venues were quite far from Zhou Wen, he could only see a few stone tripod cauldrons and nothing else.

“Old Zhou, how were your preparations? Are you confident of entering the top ten?” Li Xuan came to Zhou Wen’s side and threw his arm around his shoulder.

Upon hearing Li Xuan’s words, one of the group of female seniors beside them said with a laugh, “Juniors, you guys are really amusing. You want to get into the top ten as freshmen? Nice dreams and aspirations. Here’s me wishing you all the best as a senior.”

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 127 - Comprehensive Test

Chapter 127 Comprehensive Test

“Seniors, since you think so highly of us, why don’t we be friends? We should work on our communication for pure friendship at school…” Li Xuan used this opportunity to chat with the seniors as he walked over.

Just as they were happily chatting and Li Xuan was about to take a step further, they suddenly heard a commotion from the students. It was as though many female seniors were talking about a particular Brother Wei[1].

“Ah! Brother Wei… Brother Wei…” The female seniors who had been conversing with Li Xuan suddenly ignored him and began waving their hands in a different direction.

“F*ck, when did Sunset College become so liberal?” Li Xuan was puzzled as he turned his head to look in the direction where the female seniors were waving their hands. He saw a boy walking towards the stage to speak on behalf of the students.

When he saw the boy’s appearance, Li Xuan said with a tinge of jealousy, “So what if you’re president of the student council? You’re only two years ahead of us. I’ll be running for student council president later. I’ll also be president.”

“Is he very strong?” Zhou Wen asked.

“Not bad I guess. The student council president of Sunset College usually has the strength to squeeze into the school’s top three. Before we arrived, this Wei Ge was considered the

second strongest in the college. His Life Providence was about being all-rounded in both academics and martial arts. He is extremely fast at learning and mastering things when others need to spend a lot of time practicing. From martial arts and weapons to theoretical knowledge, he has never gotten second place after entering Sunset College."

"Since he has never gotten second, why do you call him the second strongest?" Zhou Wen asked, perplexed.

Li Xuan chuckled and said, "He hasn't been second before, but he has been beaten up badly by someone. However, that person was the weirdo, Huang Ji. Now, the situation is different. The two of us are here in Sunset College, so he can only be fourth in the future."

After Wei Ge delivered his speech, he did a demonstration for all the students in the four tests, mainly to teach the freshmen how the test was to be held.

In the coin fishing in oil pots, there were a total of 100 pots with boiling oil inside. However, the 100 pots were split into ten groups. Each group had 10 oil pots, and the further back the oil pots were, the higher the temperature.

Normally, if one could pull out a coin from the pot with the lowest temperature, it would be considered a pass.

"This test is very dangerous. Before choosing it, you must consider it carefully. Even if you have decided to participate in it, please start with the oil pot with the lowest temperature," said Wei Ge as he summoned a Companion Beast-a black-furred gorilla.

"This is a Blackiron Gorilla at the Mortal stage. Its Constitution is at about 9 points, so it's considered top-notch among the Mortal stage." With that said, Wei Ge ordered the

Blackiron Gorilla to fish out the coin from the first oil pot. However, just as its claws reached into the pot, it screamed.

The Blackiron Gorilla screamed as it retracted its claw, but the fur on it had already blistered. It looked very scary, and there was even a faint meat fragrance.

Everyone’s heart skipped a beat when they saw this. Those students who were originally hoping to try their luck immediately gave up on the idea of choosing this test.

“I believe everyone has seen it. You must be careful when choosing this option. Next, I will demonstrate it for everyone.” Wei Ge smiled as he rolled up his sleeve. A red tattoo appeared on his smooth arm-a red-scaled snake.

Following Wei Ge’s summoning, the red-scaled snake tattoo on his arm seemed to come alive. It transformed into a red-scaled bracer that wrapped his entire arm and palm. Then, Wei Ge extended his hand into the oil pot and took out a coin as if nothing had happened.

Following that, Wei Ge demonstrated the remaining three options, but he only did it for the lowest difficulty, mainly to let the freshmen know how the options were tested.

Out of the four options, only crossing the paper bridge did not have any ranking. All the paper bridges were 100 meters long, and the results were determined by the time it took for one to cross. Tearing the calligraphic paper meant zero points.

Besides, one was not allowed to use flying Companion Beasts when crossing the paper bridge and had to walk on paper. Therefore, this was a huge obstacle for many students.

After Wei Ge’s demonstration, the students started signing up for the options they were participating in. Each of them had to declare at least two, and of course, they could select all four.

Zhou Wen and Li Xuan declared that they were taking all four options as they wanted to enter the top ten. Therefore, not only did they need to complete the four options, but they also had to obtain good results.

These four options didn’t seem easy to Zhou Wen. It wasn’t difficult to pass, but it wasn’t easy to obtain a high score.

However, the first student who went up on stage chose to fish the coin from the oil pot. Furthermore, he walked straight to the hottest pot in the row of ten. He casually stood in front of the pot and rolled up his sleeve. He did not use a Companion Beast, but his arm had a metallic sheen. It was unknown what Primordial Energy Skill he used as he extended his hand into the pot and pulled out a coin.

“That guy’s name is Wu Jun. He also has a younger sister named Wu Nan. It’s very difficult to see the siblings in action. However, they have unfathomable strength,” Li Xuan told Zhou Wen.

Wu Jun’s performance gave many of the students who had been frightened earlier, hope. In the end, a freshman chose to fish the coin, believing that his Primordial Energy Skill could help him pass. However, just the lowest temperature pot scalded his hand. Luckily, there were doctors present to provide him emergency treatment.

After Wei Ge’s demonstration, he watched from the side. When he saw Feng Qiuyan choose to cross the paper bridge and obtain excellent results, breaking the previous record, he came to Feng Qiuyan’s side with a smile.

“Feng Qiuyan, I’ve heard so much about you. Are you interested in joining the student council?” Wei Ge asked with a smile.

The students beside them looked at Feng Qiuyan with envy. Those who could join the student council were all the college’s top students. Normally, they would have to apply to join. Yet, the student council president, Wei Ge, personally invited him. To the typical student, it was a great honor.

“Not interested,” Feng Qiuyan replied expressionlessly as he walked past Wei Ge.

Wei Ge only smiled. Those who were capable all had some character. He could understand that, but at the same time, he firmly believed that it was only a matter of time before Feng Qiuyan joined the student council.

He turned to look at Feng Qiuyan and realized that he was actually walking towards Li Xuan.

Wei Ge naturally recognized Li Xuan, a famous scion from Luoyang City. He couldn’t help but be surprised that with Feng Qiuyan’s temper, he would actually have ties with Li Xuan. It was truly unbelievable.

However, Wei Ge soon discovered that Feng Qiuyan was not looking for Li Xuan, but the boy standing beside him.

[1] The name of Viagra in Chinese.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 128 - The Rejected Wei Ge

Chapter 128 The Rejected Wei Ge

With a careful look, Wei Ge recognized Zhou Wen. As the president of the student council, he paid attention to the top freshmen.

Wei Ge had already carefully studied Zhou Wen and Li Xuan’s battle of the Mutated Buddha Heart Lotus, as well as the video of him slaying the word-engraved Demonized General.

Zhou Wen’s performance was indeed good, but it also exposed some problems. Therefore, Wei Ge had only placed Zhou Wen on a list of possible nominees as student council members. As for whether he would invite him to join in the future, it also depended on what Life Providence he obtained after he advanced to the Legendary stage.

Li Xuan was talking to Zhou Wen when he saw Feng Qiuyan walking over. He found it odd, but ended up seeing Feng Qiuyan walk straight towards Zhou Wen.

Zhou Wen’s heart skipped a beat when he saw Feng Qiuyan. Could it be that Feng Qiuyan found out that I was just being perfunctory with him and came to settle scores with me?

“Coach, when’s the next class?” Feng Qiuyan asked Zhou Wen.

“Wait, coach? What’s happening?” Li Xuan widened his eyes as he looked at Feng Qiuyan and Zhou Wen.

Upon hearing Feng Qiuyan’s words, Zhou Wen’s hanging heart eased. He said to Feng Qiuyan, “First, master what I said previously. We’ll talk about the rest later.”

“Alright.” Feng Qiuyan agreed and sat down beside him.

“Old Zhou, what’s going on?” Li Xuan felt like a cat was clawing at his curiosity. He really couldn’t understand why Feng Qiuyan was acquainted with Zhou Wen and addressed him as coach.

“It’s nothing. It’s just that Feng Qiuyan invited me to be his personal coach and tailor a training plan for him,” Zhou Wen said casually.

After Li Xuan heard this, the way he looked at Zhou Wen became even odder. With Feng Qiuyan by his side, it wasn’t appropriate for him to say anything. However, he thought to himself, What the hell. Feng Qiuyan can hire any coach. It’s not difficult even finding an Epic expert as a personal coach for him. Why would he find a student from the same school? Furthermore, Zhou Wen hasn’t even advanced to the Legendary stage. Is Feng Qiuyan bonkers to hire him as a coach?

Li Xuan sat there uneasily, eager to know what had happened between Zhou Wen and Feng Qiuyan; however, it wasn’t the best place to ask him.

When Wei Ge saw Feng Qiuyan sitting beside Zhou Wen, he was somewhat surprised, but he didn’t think too much about

it.

Seeing that Wang Lu had finally appeared on the field and had just registered for the tests she was taking, Wei Ge hurriedly went up to her and smiled like a gentleman. “Wang Lu, I’m the student council president, Wei Ge. I wish to invite you to join the student council…”

“Sorry, I don’t plan on joining any club.” Wang Lu politely rejected Wei Ge before walking towards Zhou Wen as well.

Wei Ge was not surprised that Wang Lu had rejected him, because her family background was obvious. Others might think highly of the student council’s connections and influence, but Wang Lu had no need for it.

However, when Wei Ge saw that Wang Lu had actually walked over to Zhou Wen and exchanged a few words with him before sitting down beside him, he couldn’t help but be alarmed.

When Wei Ge saw An Jing, he didn’t mention the invitation to her. He just went up to greet her to acquaint himself with her.

Sunset College was originally under the An family, so if she were to join the student council, she would definitely become president. When that happened, he would have to step down to the rank of vice president, so Wei Ge naturally wouldn’t do such a stupid thing

Fortunately, after all this time, An Jing hadn’t shown any intention of joining the student council. This relaxed Wei Ge a lot more.

An Jing nodded politely as a response to Wei Ge before walking towards Zhou Wen again.

What the hell is wrong with that punk? He’s only been in Sunset College for a month, yet he already has such connections? Wei Ge was secretly alarmed as he couldn’t help but think more highly of Zhou Wen.

An Jing came in front of Zhou Wen. She looked at him and said, “If you can get into the top 100 at the comprehensive test, I’ll count you as winning the bet.”

With that, she walked away.

Zhou Wen was slightly taken aback before recalling the three-month declaration An Jing had made with him. However, he hadn’t taken it to heart. So if she hadn’t mentioned it at that moment, he would have already forgotten it.

“What bet?” Li Xuan probed, his eagerness for gossip rearing its head.

“Nothing.” Zhou Wen shook his head without saying a word.

Wei Ge sized up Zhou Wen from a distance, wondering how he could pull him onto the student council. Since Zhou Wen had such connections, it would be of great help to the student council’s future development if he could get him on the student council.

Wei Ge could also use Zhou Wen’s connections, perhaps to break into Wang Lu’s and An Jing’s circle.

As he was thinking, he saw Huang Ji walking over from the front. Wei Ge immediately changed directions, unwilling to meet Huang Ji.

In this school, the person he hated the most and also didn’t dare provoke the most was Huang Ji. In the past, he had

wanted to rope Huang Ji onto the student council but had been rejected. Later, he used some tricks, only to realize that Huang Ji was much more powerful than he had imagined. This ended up in him being beaten up.

The school knew that Huang Ji had beaten him up, but they did not know why.

Ever since that time, Wei Ge would circle around Huang Ji when he saw him. He had stopped thinking of roping Huang Ji onto the student council again. Moreover, he did not think that anyone had such a pull with Huang Ji.

After Wei Ge circled around Huang Ji and looked back, he saw Zhou Wen stand up and wave at Huang Ji, as though he was beckoning for him to head over.

By then, Huang Ji had already taken a seat. With Wei Ge's understanding of him, he believed that Huang Ji definitely wouldn't bother with Zhou Wen.

However, to his surprise, Huang Ji actually got up and walked over after hearing Zhou Wen calling out to him. When he arrived beside Zhou Wen, he began chatting very warmly with him.

Wei Ge was dumbfounded. What's going on? That weirdo Huang Ji can actually chat with someone for so long?

He had no idea that the reason Huang Ji was chatting with Zhou Wen for so long was that Zhou Wen was talking about his game and investment. That was why Huang Ji was so interested.

This first-year freshman, Zhou Wen, needs serious observation. Wei Ge felt that it was necessary to reassess

Zhou Wen again. If possible, he had to rope him onto the student council and be under his service.

Not long after, Wei Ge saw Hui Haifeng and Nana walk over to Zhou Wen’s side with a few high-ranking students. They seemed to be having a great chat with Zhou Wen and company, and his heart skipped a beat.

By right, since he was the student council president, there shouldn’t be anyone in Sunset College who could compete with him. However, Hui Haifeng was an exception.

If Wei Ge was a classic model student at Sunset College, Hui Haifeng was a typical bad role model. Most of the students around him were people who didn’t abide by the rules.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 129 - Perfect Score

Chapter 129 Perfect Score

Sunset College is indeed one of the best schools in the East District. There are just too many formidable people around. Li Xuan couldn’t help but feel nervous when he saw someone raise the heaviest stone tripod cauldron.

Zhou Wen had roughly guessed that based on the present situation, the two of them had to obtain perfect scores on at least two tests before they could enter the top ten.

Hui Haifeng and Feng Qiuyan had already passed the test, each scoring full marks on three and nine points on the fourth. Hui Haifeng was one point short of crossing the paper bridge and Feng Qiuyan was one point short in the coin fishing test.

As Li Xuan expected, Wang Lu had indeed advanced to the Legendary stage. Like An Jing, she had obtained 4 perfect scores very easily.

Huang Ji hadn’t taken the test, but considering how he had beaten up Wei Ge previously, Zhou Wen knew that it was highly likely that Huang Ji would receive four perfect scores as well.

There were already five people in the top ten. In addition, there were Wu Jun and Wu Nan who had outstanding performances, leaving three spots left.

na

“That’s not right. There are only two slots left. That Wei Ge will definitely score four perfect scores,” warned Li Xuan.

“In that case, we need to obtain four perfect scores to safely enter the top ten,” Zhou Wen pondered for a moment before saying and basically giving up.

After all, he had yet to advance to the Legendary stage. He could only rely on his Companion Beasts, so it was very difficult for him to score high.

Hui Haifeng, Wang Lu, and company looked at Zhou Wen and Li Xuan with smiles. They had already received their results, so they were all waiting to see the duo’s performance.

“We have to give it a try no matter what,” Li Xuan said through clenched teeth. The situation was worse than he had expected.

When the staff called out Zhou Wen’s name, he had no choice but to head to the venue with oil pots to fish out a coin. Just as he was about to register with the staff and head on up, he was stopped by someone.

“Zhou Wen, mind if we have a chat?” Wei Ge said with a smile.

“How may I help you?” Zhou Wen stopped and asked Wei Ge.

“Let the other students take the test first. Let’s have a chat at the side.” Wei Ge led Zhou Wen to a quiet spot.

“Feel free to speak your mind,” Zhou Wen said.

“Zhou Wen, you haven’t advanced to the Legendary stage yet, right? Are you confident of getting into the top ten?” Wei Ge said when he saw Zhou Wen looking at him suspiciously. “Don’t misunderstand me. I don’t have any other intentions. I just feel that you are a talent. It’ll be a pity if you can’t get into the top ten because of your stage.”

“What do you mean?” Zhou Wen looked at Wei Ge in puzzlement, unsure what he was getting at.

“The student council still has an empty spot for vice president. I admire you very much and wish to recommend you to be the vice president of the student council.” Wei Ge paused for a moment before smiling and saying, “As a member of the student council, I will naturally do my best to help you. Perhaps it will help you enter the top 10 in the comprehensive test.”

“Thank you for your kind intentions. However, I’ve already made an agreement with Li Xuan to organize a club on my own,” Zhou Wen said.

Sunset College had a clear rule that students who had already joined a club could not become members of the student council. This was to prevent some clubs from using the power of the student council to seek personal gains.

“Is that so? That’s such a pity. The doors of the student council will always be open to you. If you ever change your mind, hit me up anytime.” Wei Ge looked saddened but did not say anything else.

Zhou Wen went to the staff to register before heading to the first test venue— fishing a coin from a pot of boiling oil.

“President, will Zhou Wen become the second Hui Haifeng?” a student council member standing beside Wei Ge whispered.

Wei Ge didn’t answer him. He thought for a moment and asked, “Were you in charge of setting up the venue?”

“Yes, it was all set up by our student council. Didn’t you arrange for it?” Zheng Tianlun was puzzled.

“I didn’t arrange for you to tamper with it, right?” Wei Ge narrowed his eyes at Zheng Tianlun.

Zheng Tianlun’s forehead immediately broke out into a cold sweat. He forced a smile and said, “As expected, I can’t hide anything from you, President. I was just trying to help some friends out. I wasn’t trying anything else since all they wanted was a pass.”

Wei Ge said indifferently, “You don’t have to worry. I didn’t say anything before, and I won’t say anything now, but I need your help with something.”

“If there’s anything, President, please instruct us. We will definitely do it well,” Zheng Tianlun hurriedly said.

“The difficulty of Zhou Wen’s options should be lowered. The lower the level, the better. It’s best if he gets 4 perfect scores,” commented Wei Ge.

Zheng Tianlun asked with a puzzled look, “President, that Zhou Wen has already rejected you. Why are you still helping him?”

“Rejection doesn’t make him an enemy. This person isn’t simple. There’s no harm in doing him a favor.” Wei Ge smiled at Zhou Wen when he said that. He didn’t say certain things.

If he were to become an enemy in the future, this matter might become a skeleton in the closet for Zhou Wen.

Cheating was a serious matter at Sunset College. The punishment ranged from having a black mark on their records to being expelled.

“Alright, I’ll do it now. However, all we can do is adjust it within a certain range. If it’s at the Mortal stage, I’m afraid it will be difficult for him to get a perfect score,” Zheng Tianlun said after some thought.

“Just do what needs to be done. Remember, I don’t know anything,” Wei Ge said.

“I got it, President. Don’t worry, this has nothing to do with you at all,” Zheng Tianlun said hurriedly.

Zhou Wen came to the oil pot and was rather cautious. He began with the pot that had the lowest temperature.

“How many points do you think Zhou Wen will get?” Li Xuan asked Hui Haifeng.

Hui Haifeng shook his head and said, “It’s hard to say. Normally, without advancing to the Legendary stage, he won’t have any Legendary Companion Beasts or Primordial Energy Skills. Fishing out a coin from the fifth pot is already quite impressive. However, Zhou Wen is somewhat abnormal. He might have some unexpected results.”

“It’s about the same as I expected. With his abilities, I think he should be able to obtain around seven points. It will be a

little difficult to get any higher.” Li Xuan knew Zhou Wen quite well.

“

In fact, Zhou Wen had roughly estimated getting such a score. Although the Lotus Flower Buddha Body could protect him, it was a Primordial Energy Skill that augmented his entire body. It was inferior to Primordial Energy Skills that specialized in augmenting one’s arm.

Furthermore, his Constitution wasn’t comparable to those at the Legendary stage. The latter might not even be able to obtain ten points, so Zhou Wen estimated that he would get about seven or eight.

However, when Zhou Wen tried the oil pots one by one, he realized that the temperature of the pot wasn’t as high as he imagined. He had managed to successfully take out a coin from the final pot and obtained full marks without any surprises.

Although it was thanks to the lotus flower bracer, Zhou Wen still felt that something was amiss.

What? Looks like the test isn’t that difficult. Li Xuan heaved a sigh of relief when he saw Zhou Wen easily obtain a perfect score.

He was just after Zhou Wen in fishing out the coin. Seeing how Zhou Wen had easily scored a perfect ten, he didn’t bother wasting any more time as he directly headed straight for the tenth pot.

To Li Xuan’s surprise, when he extended his hand into the pot, believing that his Immortal God of Combat Life Providence and Invincible Connate Divine Art could protect

him, he let out a loud cry. He hurriedly pulled out his hand only to see his skin scalded red.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 130 - Peerless Genius?

Chapter 130 Peerless Genius?

Impossible! How can Zhou Wen fish out a coin, while I can't? Li Xuan's expression was one of disbelief.

However, the results of this option were set in stone. Li Xuan couldn't even fish out a single coin, putting his result at zero. Even if he received a perfect score on the other three options, there was no way he could squeeze into the top ten.

Li Xuan felt a sense of regret. If he hadn't been careless and bore with it, he could have taken out the coin. After all, with the Immortal God of War Life Providence, his hand wouldn't be crippled.

One false step will lead to everlasting grief! Li Xuan nearly cried.

Zhou Wen successfully passed the subsequent tests. Other than crossing the paper bridge at a slower speed, he obtained a perfect score on the other three options.

Instantly, the entire school broke out into a flurry of discussion. People were trying to find out more about Zhou Wen. A freshman at the Mortal stage had actually received three 10s and one 9. They were basically certain that he could enter the top ten. The results were really shocking

Although Wang Lu, An Jing, and Feng Qiuyan were freshmen, they had already advanced to the Legendary stage. It was understandable for them to have such results. It was shocking for Zhou Wen, who was at the Mortal stage, to obtain such results.

Instantly, the reputation of the peerless genius Zhou Wen spread throughout the school, but there were also teachers who had their doubts.

They had seen their fair share of geniuses, but none of them could achieve such results at the Mortal stage.

The person who had the greatest suspicions was Wang Fei. She had wanted Zhou Wen to be stirred up by the comprehensive test and see if he could pull himself together, but to her surprise, Zhou Wen had managed to enter the top ten and even obtained the qualifications to enter Providence Palace. She thought this was unacceptable.

However, all the tests were carried out in front of everyone. Zhou Wen wasn't the first or the last one. People before and after him used the same equipment, so there wasn't any evidence to explain it away with cheating.

"It doesn't make sense… This doesn't make sense… Why did I only get three 9S… Yet, you obtained three 10s and a 9…" Li Xuan really couldn't accept this outcome.

In fact, Li Xuan wasn't the only one who couldn't accept it. Zhou Wen also knew that his results were absolutely problematic. On the Strength test, Zhou Wen knew very well that he couldn't lift the tenth stone tripod cauldron; yet, he had managed to raise it in the end. Furthermore, he felt that the tenth stone tripod wasn't any heavier than the ninth. It was impossible that there wasn't something fishy about it.

How could Zhou Wen know that electromagnetic devices were installed at the bottom of the stone cauldron and the platform beneath them? Zheng Tianlun could control the power needed to lift the stone cauldron to a certain extent.

The other tests had also been tampered with. However, they were done in an extremely unnoticeable fashion. Even the teachers did not know that the venue had already been tampered with during the setup.

After the comprehensive test ended, the venue was dismantled, so no one would realize anything

All of this was something Zheng Tianlun had actually prepared for himself, hoping to use these methods to enter the top ten, but after he was exposed by Wei Ge, he didn’t dare continue with the tampering. This ended up benefiting Zhou Wen.

This resulted in Zhou Wen inexplicably gaining the reputation of a genius. When Wei Ge specially came to congratulate him, he even winked at him, making Zhou Wen, who had originally suspected Wei Ge, confirm his theory.

Indeed, it was Wei Ge who tampered with it. But why did he do that? Is it to rope in a freshman to join the student council? Zhou Wen was perplexed.

Regardless, Zhou Wen was famous in Sunset College. Since its establishment over the years, no Mortal-stage student had such results.

As expected of Coach. Feng Qiuyan had zero doubts, believing that it was all Zhou Wen’s true strength, so his determination at getting him to be his personal coach became firmer.

Although there were people who had their doubts, they could only keep quiet because of a lack of evidence.

Finally, the top ten spots were confirmed. Without any surprises, Zhou Wen successfully entered the top ten and obtained the qualification to enter Providence Palace.

“Old Zhou, I really can’t accept it. Other things aside, your Strength definitely isn’t as great as mine. It doesn’t make sense that you could lift the tenth stone tripod cauldron, but I couldn’t.” Li Xuan’s face was filled with resentment.

“That’s life for you.” What else could Zhou Wen say?

Thankfully, Li Xuan wasn’t really bothered by the spot. All he did was gripe at Zhou Wen.

“I’m not bragging, but Zhou Wen is a genius amongst geniuses. Back when we were in Guide High School, everyone in our school knew that Zhou Wen was a genius. You know Ascetic Meditation, right? With how difficult it is to cultivate, the typical person won’t even gain a basic mastery in Primordial Energy without a couple of years, even if they have Primordial Energy Crystals. Yet, Zhou Wen forcibly mastered it without using a single Primordial Energy Crystal…” Tian Xiangdong’s saliva splattered as he described anecdotes of Zhou Wen’s past during high school to other students.

Without Zhou Wen even realizing it, he had become an iconic figure amongst Sunset College’s freshmen and was regarded as the most promising freshman in Sunset College.

Although this wasn’t the outcome Zhou Wen wished to see, obtaining the qualifications to enter Providence Palace was a pleasant surprise for him.

The second day after the comprehensive test ended was the day Zhou Wen and the other nine students entered Providence Palace. All of them received a token given by the school, and under the leadership of a counselor, they arrived at the legendary Providence Palace.

Providence Palace was more magnificent than the Forbidden City. After becoming a dimensional zone, it gave people the feeling that it was magnificent and majestic. Although it was underground, it did not hinder Zhou Wen and the other students from marveling at the greatness of the ancient culture.

“

Outside the entrance, Zhou Wen and company were waiting for it to open. Wang Lu looked around curiously. “This place is about a thousand meters deep and is surrounded by rocks. Where did those legendary treasures come from?”

“Other dimensions, obviously. Do you really think there are ghosts?” Hui Haifeng said with a smile.

It wasn’t Wei Ge’s first time here, so he explained, “Those treasures float out of the dimensional rifts before flying into Providence Palace. There is no lack of precious, rare treasures. However, the typical rare treasures are only collectibles that can only be exchanged for money. The truly precious ones are the Companion Eggs and dimensional crystals. Among them are things that the East District doesn’t have. If you are lucky enough, you might obtain a Companion Egg like an elf or an angel. They are pretty good selections.”

“How does one know what type of Companion Eggs they are?” asked Wang Lu curiously.

“I really do not know. Let’s not talk about identifying Companion Eggs, it’s hard to even choose one,” said Wei Ge.

“Why?” Wang Lu was a little confused.

“Because all the treasures are in boxes. All we can see are those boxes. We don’t even know what’s inside. Once the box is chosen, we won’t be able to change it. Therefore, we can only rely on luck to choose something,” Hui Haifeng explained.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 131 - Treasure Selection

Chapter 131 Treasure Selection

Zhou Wen had been searching for the tiny palm symbol the entire time, but he hadn’t found it. He had scrutinized the building that housed the city gates countless times, but he had failed to find it.

However, other than the entrance, there were only city walls with no sign of the tiny palm symbol.

Is the tiny palm symbol in Providence Palace? Zhou Wen looked at the tightly shut door of Providence Palace and thought, If it were really in Providence Palace, that would be troublesome. Every year, the Providence Palace only opens its gates once a day. However, the counselors have repeatedly exhorted us not to enter. In the past, there were experts at the Epic stage who had entered the Providence Palace on this day without being able to exit. Furthermore, I’m only at the Mortal stage.

Just as he was feeling disappointed, he suddenly heard the melodious and solemn music from within Providence Palace.

Accompanied by the music, it was as if the city gates, that had been sealed shut for centuries, were slowly opening. The city gate was filled with a brilliant purple glow, so blinding that it was hard for anyone to look straight at it.

Before Zhou Wen and company could see what stood beyond the city gates, the underground space suddenly emitted a blinding light that resembled holy light from the spatial rifts.

Then, they saw an inconceivable sight. They saw large and small boxes flying out from the spatial rifts.

There were exquisite wooden boxes, boxes filled with antiquity, and green and snow-white jade boxes. There were also large metal chests.

There were also gold and silver boxes with gems embedded in them. They looked dazzling and exquisite. The girls stared at them, almost entranced.

There were many gift boxes. In just a moment, more than a thousand boxes flew towards the entrance in a line. Just like the legends said, there seemed to be invisible ghosts dragging them into the entrance.

“There are so many boxes. How should I choose one?” Feng Qiuyan frowned.

“You can only rely on luck. There’s no other way.” Hui Haifeng took a large stride towards a golden box with all sorts of gems embedded in it. He took out his token and lightly tapped the small golden box with the token. The small golden box stopped floating in midair having lost its support as it fell to the ground.

Hui Haifeng immediately reached out and held onto the small golden box, then returned. He was very decisive.

Zhou Wen looked at the gift boxes that numbered more than ten thousand. He really didn’t know which one to choose from. At that moment, Wang Lu said to Zhou Wen, “My luck has always been good. If you need it, I can help you choose one.”

When Wang Lu said this, she was brimming with confidence. It was as if she would definitely be able to choose something

good.

“Alright, I’ll leave it to you then.” Zhou Wen was extremely disappointed having failed at finding the tiny palm symbol. Choosing a box held little meaning for him.

If he couldn’t download the Providence Palace dungeon, the probability of choosing a gift box with a Companion Egg in it was just too low.

To be able to choose a gift box with a high-level Companion Egg was even more difficult.

Zhou Wen never had luck with gambling, so it didn’t matter whether he chose it or not. He couldn’t be bothered to waste his time and energy and casually threw the token to Wang Lu.

Even if he had to choose it himself, he could only randomly pick one. It was no different from letting Wang Lu choose one. He might as well save some time to see if he could find the tiny palm symbol.

“Anyone else need my help?” Wang Lu looked at the others and asked.

“Since we are already here, it’s all down to luck anyway. It’s better to choose one yourself,” Wei Ge said with a smile.

The others obviously liked to hold their own fate in their hands, so no one planned on letting Wang Lu choose for them.

Other than Hui Haifeng who had already made his selection, the others began to observe the boxes, hoping that they could find some clues.

Zhou Wen was also observing, but he was looking into Providence Palace to see if he could find the tiny palm symbol.

Unfortunately, it was filled with a screen of resplendent divine light. All he could see was gift boxes flying in, but he couldn’t see what was on the inside.

However, Wang Lu had no intention of seriously choosing. She treated the two tokens as darts and threw them into the row of boxes.

With two clangs, two boxes were knocked to the ground by her random throw.

Wang Lu grinned as she ran over and carried the two gift boxes back, handing one to Zhou Wen.

The gift box was carved out of wood. It was about thirty centimeters wide on all sides, and there were cloud patterns engraved on it. Other than that, there was nothing else.

Zhou Wen wasn’t in the mood to see what was inside. After receiving the box, he stuffed it into his bag and continued gazing into the palace.

“Aren’t you going to open it?” Wang Lu said.

“There’s no need. It doesn’t matter what it is,” Zhou Wen said casually.

Wang Lu was a little displeased that Zhou Wen didn’t care about it. Seeing that everyone was choosing their boxes and that no one was paying any attention to them, she said to Zhou Wen, “Don’t think that I just randomly chose it. My luck is really good. The items I inside will definitely be good.”

“Yes, thank you,” Zhou Wen said perfunctorily.

Wang Lu was incensed when she saw Zhou Wen’s perfunctory manner. She glared at him hatefully, but Zhou Wen had been observing the situation inside Providence Palace the entire time without giving her a second glance.

“If I knew this would happen, I wouldn’t have helped you choose.” Wang Lu pouted and resentfully retreated to the side. She didn’t even have the mood to open her gift box to see what was inside.

Even after they had all made their choices, one after another, and the counselors had led them out of Providence Palace, Zhou Wen still hadn’t found the tiny palm symbol. He was extremely disappointed.

None of them had the intention to open their gift boxes on the spot. Zhou Wen also took the box that Wang Lu had chosen for him back to his dorm.

I wonder what it is? Zhou Wen opened it up.

Indeed, it was the same as he imagined. There were no Companion Eggs or dimensional crystals inside, but a strange old bronze flask.

It can’t be a chamber pot, right? Zhou Wen looked at the bronze flask inside the box, and it looked like one, no matter how he looked at it.

But from the looks of it, it seemed to be a little too small. It was probably not suited for adults.

Furthermore, the style looked more exquisite and it had smooth curves as if it did not match the style of the East District’s ancient style.

Zhou Wen switched on his ordinary phone and checked the Internet. Soon, he learned what it was. It was a hand-held oil lamp from ancient Arabia.

From the looks of the oil lamp, it should be an antique. I wonder how much I can sell it for? Zhou Wen muttered to himself as he took out the bronze lamp and wiped the dust he saw on it with a piece of tissue paper.

After a few strokes, the bronze lamp suddenly trembled, and the patterns on it began to glow strangely.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 132 - No Acquaintances with Immortals

Chapter 132 No Acquaintances with Immortals

The pattern on the lamp’s body flickered as swirls spun in circles. A flame was spontaneously ignited at the mouth of the lamp, giving off an inexplicable demonic charm as it danced. It was like a seductive woman twisting her waist while dancing.

Zhou Wen’s gaze was attracted by the strange flame as though it was the most beautiful woman in the world. He couldn’t help but become engrossed, unable to shift his gaze away from the flame.

He was extremely determined, so when he felt that something was amiss, he forcefully shifted his gaze away from the flame.

However, when his gaze moved away from the flame, he was attracted by the shimmering patterns on the bronze lamp. Only then did Zhou Wen realize that the patterns weren’t simple patterns. Instead, they were ancient words. The demonic powers contained in them were countless times stronger than the flame, making him unconsciously attracted.

How is this happening! Zhou Wen’s fingers on his left hand suddenly moved, as though they were playing a piano. However, his mind hadn’t willed his fingers to make any movements.

Zhou Wen wanted to use his other hand to control his left hand, but his other hand's fingers moved along with it.

Soon, it wasn't only his fingers, but Zhou Wen's entire body. He moved uncontrollably in an irregular fashion, something he realized to be dancing.

Zhou Wen had never come into contact with dancing, nor was he interested in dancing. He didn't even watch dancing shows, but he was now like a professional dancer. His body danced with the rhythm of the music, making all sorts of moves he had never thought of before.

And no matter how he looked at it, he could see that it was a woman's dance moves. They were enchanting and charming, light and elegant.

However, to have a man dance it made him look extremely comical. If Li Xuan were here to see him, he would probably be rolling on the ground laughing.

Zhou Wen tried his best to control himself, but it was useless. He had repeatedly switched a few Primordial Energy Arts, but they were all useless. His body was squirming more and more intensely, and there were also many coquettish moves included.

Soon, Zhou Wen discovered that his actions were identical to the flickering of the lamp. It was as though he was a puppet controlled by the flame.

Damn it… What the hell is this… Zhou Wen felt as though he was going crazy.

As his dance sped up, the Lost Immortal Sutra which automatically circulated slowed down. As the Lost Immortal

Sutra slowed down, Zhou Wen’s body gradually slowed down.

When the Lost Immortal Sutra completely stopped circulating, Zhou Wen’s body also stopped twisting.

However, the next second, the Primordial Energy in his body circulated in a frenzy, but it was no longer the path of the Lost Immortal Sutra. Instead, it was another Primordial Energy Art that Zhou Wen had never cultivated before.

The patterns on the oil lamp are also a Primordial Energy Art? Zhou Wen was astonished but also somewhat delighted.

This Primordial Energy Art was very odd. It was different from anything Zhou Wen had previously come into contact with. It seemed to have countless odd transformations, and at times, it was light and graceful, at other times as forceful as a storm. It made Zhou Wen have the urge to tear through the air and dance.

Time ticked by. By the time Zhou Wen regained control of his body, he had already mastered the Primordial Energy Art.

The oil lamp that had been floating in the air suddenly lost its radiance and fell to the ground. It returned to its old and damaged state.

Zhou Wen was just about to pick up the oil lamp when he suddenly felt something amiss with his body. The Primordial Energy Art he had just mastered instantly dissipated as the Lost Immortal Sutra began to circulate again.

However, the circulation this time was different from the previous one. Primordial Energy flowed through his body like blood circling his body.

Boom!

Zhou Wen felt his brain buzz as a voice resounded incessantly.

“If God opposes me, I will slay God… If an immortal opposes me, I will cull the immortal… No exchanges with god… No acquaintances with immortals… I am me…” The voice was unbridled and savage, but it also had a terrifying power that made his blood boil. It was as if something was stirring in one’s heart, eager to poke a hole in the sky.

This voice wasn’t unfamiliar to Zhou Wen. Over the countless nights he had cultivated in the Lost Immortal Sutra, the voice had kept whispering into his ear. However, in the past, he couldn’t hear the voice clearly.

Today, he finally heard what that voice was saying. It was a woman’s voice, but it had a heart-stopping aura. It was as if all living beings from the various worlds would fall prostrate at her feet.

Although Zhou Wen only heard a voice, he couldn’t help but envision a scene. Countless deities prostrating themselves on the ground, bowing towards a woman as though on a pilgrimage.

Unfortunately, this was just Zhou Wen’s imagination and was able to see the woman’s face clearly. He felt that her bearing was incomparable. She was lofty, but she wasn’t as holy as an immortal or Buddha. She had a killing aura.

The voice in his mind became weaker and weaker, as if it was about to disperse. In the end, it was almost inaudible.

Zhou Wen vaguely heard a sentence that sounded a little different from the repeated sentence he had just heard: “My

return… Will spell… the death of all immortals…”

However, the voice at the end was so soft that he didn’t hear the complete sentence.

Boom!

The Lost Immortal Sutra in his body seemed to explode as all the cells seemed to bind together. It made Zhou Wen suspect if his body had self-destructed.

Falling… Constantly falling…

Zhou Wen felt as though his consciousness had plunged into the deep sea as it constantly plummeted. Finally, his consciousness was completely submerged in the darkness.

Ever since he had mastered the Lost Immortal Sutra, he hadn’t had a proper sleep.

Every time he fell asleep, no matter where he was or what time it was, there would be a voice whispering into his ear, akin to scripture chantings by Buddha or a devil’s enticements.

Together with the sleep paralysis, anyone else would have gone berserk.

Zhou Wen grinding every day was certainly to raise his strength, but it also included his thoughts of trying to avoid sleeping.

Up to this day, the feeling of being haunted by ghosts finally completely dissipated. Zhou Wen slept soundly as though nothing in the world was more blissful than having a good sleep.

When he woke up and stretched his back, he felt so comfortable that he almost moaned in delight. All his cells seemed to emit comfortable cheers.

Zhou Wen pressed his palm down on the bed to sit up, but when he pressed down, his body bounced up, slamming his head into the ceiling. Half his head was inside the ceiling made of steel and cement, leaving him dangling from it.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 133 - Exchange Student

Chapter 133 Exchange Student

“Pui! Pui!”Zhou Wen spat out the cement in his mouth and looked at his hands in surprise. What’s going on?

After some thought, he recalled what had happened yesterday and seemed to realize something. He quickly took out his mysterious phone and pricked his finger with a needle, dripping a drop of fresh blood onto the screen.

The blood quickly coagulated into the blood-colored avatar. Zhou Wen looked at its stats and was overjoyed. He had indeed advanced to the Legendary stage.

He eagerly checked the blood-colored avatar’s attributes only to be left somewhat puzzled.

Zhou Wen

Age: 16 years

Level: Legendary

Legendary Life Providence: Sigh of the King

Strength: 12

Speed: 12

Constitution: 12

Primordial Energy: 12

Primordial Energy Art: Lost Immortal Sutra

Primordial Energy Skill: Astral Suction Palm, Astral Slash Blade, Astral Suction Palm, …

Companion Beast: Truth Listener, Banana Fairy, Mutated Lotus Flower Ant, Silver-Winged Flying Ant

His stats and Primordial Energy Art were considered normal, but his Legendary Life Providence was a little strange. Typically, ordinary people weren't able to see their attributes in the game like Zhou Wen, but after advancing to Legendary, they were able to sense the basic abilities of their Legendary Life Providence and know how it could be used.

However, Zhou Wen couldn't sense what his Life Providence could be used for. All he could sense was that his Life Providence's powers needed certain conditions to be triggered.

As for the triggering conditions, Zhou Wen only had a vague sense which wasn't too clear.

When he looked at the additional note regarding Sigh of the King in-game, there was only one sentence: Sigh of the King, it is endless sinking.

Zhou Wen didn't understand the meaning of the annotation, so he was momentarily unsure whether his Life Providence was good or bad.

However, being able to advance to the Legendary stage was ultimately a boon. It meant that Zhou Wen could finally incubate a Legendary Companion Egg without any reservations. He could also absorb high-valued dimensional crystals to raise his stats.

As for killing Epic creatures, Zhou Wen didn't have a blind sense of self-importance. The difference between the Epic and Legendary stages was far greater than the difference between the Legendary and Mortal stages. The weakest Epic could easily kill the strongest Legendary.

It wasn't only because an Epic's attributes were higher, but also because an Epic's life possessed a form of soul protection. They were completely different from Legendaries, making it an extremely difficult task to defeat an Epic at the Legendary stage.

Whatever. I'll increase my stats first. Zhou Wen picked up the mysterious phone. He wanted to enter the game and use some high-valued dimensional crystals to raise his stats. Otherwise, even if he had advanced to the Legendary stage, he would still be one of the weakest.

Li Xuan and An Jing had their family's support, so it was very simple for them to raise their stats. They just needed to use the dimensional crystals prepared by their families, but Zhou Wen needed to rely on himself.

Before he could launch a dungeon on his phone, the doorbell rang.

"Old Zhou, what treasure did you choose from Providence Palace? It can't be that your luck was so bad to choose a urinal or something, right?" Li Xuan didn't dare enter the room as he looked straight in. When he saw the antelope sleeping on the couch, he immediately retracted his head.

“See for yourself.” Zhou Wen invited Li Xuan into the house.

“No, no, no. I’m not going in. I’m not here to see the treasure you chose. Counselor Wang Fei got me to tell you that she wants you to see her.” Li Xuan quickly shrank back again.

“Why is the Counselor looking for me?” Zhou Wen was puzzled.

“She didn’t say, but I’m guessing it has something to do with the exchange students with from Covenant College,” Li Xuan said.

“What do you mean?” Zhou Wen didn’t understand. Covenant College was a famous school in the West District and was worlds apart from Sunset College. Even if there was an exchange student, it shouldn’t have anything to do with him.

Li Xuan smiled and said, “There’s an exchange student from Covenant College here in Sunset College to study for a period of time. I heard that the exchange student is quite extraordinary. He’s from one of the Six League Heroes families. He’s famous at Covenant College and is considered as the heir to the six heroes. He’s the most likely person to reach the level of the six heroes.”

“What has this got to do with me?” Zhou Wen frowned.

“Since it’s an exchange student, they will interact with students from our college after arriving. In order to not lose face, the school will definitely let the best students interact with that fellow. Having entered the top ten at the comprehensive test, it’s normal for the school to give you such an important mission. However, I don’t think it’s any of your business. After all, your ranking in the top ten is too low. As long as you stand out, it will definitely be Huang Ji,

Wei Ge, and An Jing who will deal with that exchange student. Just watch the show," Li Xuan said.

Zhou Wen thought that it made sense and went to Wang Fei's office.

It was just as Li Xuan guessed. Wang Fei informed him that an exchange student from Covenant College was coming to study at Sunset College.

"Zhou Wen, do you know who the exchange student is?" Wang Fei asked.

"Is this related to me?" Zhou Wen said indifferently.

"Of course it has something to do with you. Otherwise, why would I especially summon you here? If it was just an ordinary exchange student, you wouldn't be needed." Wang Fei paused. "The student's name is John. Like Liz, he comes from a family with the last name Cape."

"Liz?" Zhou Wen frowned slightly.

Wang Fei continued, "John is Liz's younger brother, but he's different from the poorly talented Liz. His talent is almost comparable to the hero from the Cape family. Not only did he inherit the physique of the hero, but he also obtained an extremely powerful Life Providence when he advanced to the Legendary stage. In the west, he has the title of a Saint."

"So what?" Zhou Wen said indifferently.

"Do you need me to go into the details between Liz and you? Given John's status, even if he came to Sunset College, he wouldn't purposely challenge a Mortal. However, you happened to be ranked in the top 10 at the comprehensive test as a Mortal stage. This gave John an excuse to challenge

you. When the time comes, even if he doesn’t dare to do anything to you in Sunset College, it will be a disgrace to both you and Sunset College if you were to suffer a terrible defeat.”

Wang Fei paused for a moment before saying, “That’s why the school hopes that you can go home for a few days and not give John a chance to challenge you.”

“If he’s really out to get me, won’t he come knocking on my door even if I were to hide in my dorm?” Zhou Wen said.

“It’s alright. You can return to the An family home to rest for a few days. The school will approve your leave,” Wang Fei said.

“There’s no need.” Zhou Wen directly rejected it. He definitely wasn’t going to seek protection from the An family.

“Zhou Wen, if you really had the strength to be in the top ten, the school doesn’t mind you fighting with John. It doesn’t matter even if you lose. However, I think you should know better than me how you ended up in the top ten. The school didn’t hold it against you for the sake of the An family. However, you should know that your current strength isn’t enough to represent Sunset College’s top standards. It’d be meaningless to accept such a challenge,” Wang Fei said.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 134 - Mutated Demonized General

Chapter 134 Mutated Demonized General

“Counselor, although my strength isn’t enough to represent the college, there’s no need for me to be afraid of John, much less escape.” Zhou Wen bowed slightly to Wang Fei before turning to leave the office.

Ignoring the fact that Zhou Wen had already advanced to the Legendary stage, even if he wasn’t John’s match, he still wouldn’t choose to flee to the An family residence.

This fellow’s surname isn’t An, but why is he as stubborn as the An siblings? Wang Fei watched Zhou Wen leave the office and couldn’t help but worry.

After Zhou Wen returned to his dorm, he launched an instant dungeon and began grinding crazily. He wanted to spawn some high-level dimensional crystals and quickly raise his attributes.

Ding! After killing a Silver-Winged Flying Ant, a 14-valued Speed Crystal dropped. The blood-colored avatar absorbed the Speed Crystal and his Speed increased to 14.

Ding! After killing a Mutated Buddha Heart Lotus, a 13-valued Primordial Energy Crystal dropped. The blood-colored

avatar absorbed it and his Primordial Energy increased to 13.

Ding! After killing a Skeleton General, a Skeleton General Companion Egg dropped.

Zhou Wen unhesitatingly incubated it and obtained a Skeleton General Companion Beast. However, the Companion Beast’s stats and skills were relatively average.

While grinding the Lotus Flower Cave, Zhou Wen was once again lucky enough to spawn a Fairy Monkey Companion Egg. When he incubated it, the stats weren’t too bad, but they weren’t considered excellent-grade stats.

Since it wasn’t an excellent-grade Companion Beast and its skills weren’t anything special, Zhou Wen decided to attempt a fusion when he saw that the Skeleton General and the Fairy Monkey had a compatibility score of 57% which was a rather high success rate.

However, Zhou Wen was extremely disappointed. The fusion failed as the two Companion Beasts disintegrated simultaneously.

Zhou Wen knew how lucky his Mutated Lotus Flower Ant had been at succeeding from the recent fusion failures. The chances were about the same as winning the lottery.

Thankfully, Zhou Wen was able to keep grinding dungeons. His chances of dropping a Companion Egg were much higher than the average person. After persisting for an entire day and night, Zhou Wen’s stats experienced a significant boost. His Strength and Constitution had reached 16 points. His Speed and Primordial Energy were slightly weaker and had only increased to 15 points.

This made Zhou Wen clearly feel that his body was much stronger. During this process, he managed to raise his Dragon Gate Fairy Skill to Rank 9, raising his movement technique to its limit.

Rank 9 was a standard Primordial Energy Skill limit. There was no way to continue raising it with Primordial Energy Skill Crystals. In the past, Rank 9 was the highest Zhou Wen could reach. However, with the precedent of Ashen Palm, he knew that Rank 9 wasn't the limit and that there was room for improvement. However, that required him to train and figure it out himself before being able to reach Dragon Gate Fairy Skill's limit of Rank 10.

It was unknown how many times he had entered Tiger Cage Pass dungeon before he encountered a Demonized General with the word "Fist" engraved on its helmet. It delighted Zhou Wen.

Seeing the Demonized General turn golden in color, like a golden-armored god of war, Zhou Wen controlled the blood-colored avatar to charge forward instead of retreating, clashing head-on with the Fist Demonized General.

Now that Zhou Wen had advanced to the Legendary stage, his speed had increased significantly. Coupled with the Silver-Winged Flying Ant's silver wings, his speed was no longer slower than the Fist Demonized General's. He easily dodged its strange spear's

rust before slashing at its neck with his hand wrapped in the lotus flower bracer.

With a clang, Zhou Wen's present strength combined with the lotus flower bracer was still unable to damage the Fist Demonized General. Instead, his opponent balled its other

hand into a fist and threw a punch at the blood-colored avatar's stomach.

Astral Suction Palm! Zhou Wen guessed that the Astral Suction Palm could restrain the Fist Demonized General's Primordial Energy Skill. Unsure if it was true, he gave it a try.

The strength of the Fist Demonized General's fist was extremely domineering, as though it had gathered all of its energy into one point. Even the Mutated Lotus Flower Ant at the same level would explode with one punch.

The Astral Suction Palm appeared nothing powerful with how soft and weak it was. The instant his palm clashed with the fist, Zhou Wen felt a strange feeling. His Astral Suction Palm seemed to be able to guide the forces of the Demonized General's fist.

With a thought, Zhou Wen pulled and pushed with his Astral Suction Palm, directing the Demonized General's domineering punch right back into the other side of his enemy's chest. With a boom, the armor on his body shattered and blood spewed out.

Zhou Wen was delighted when he saw this. He controlled the blood-colored avatar to charge forward, penetrating the wound on the Demonized General's chest with his palm which wore the lotus flower bracer. This impact burst the heart inside.

'Killed Fist Demonized General. Discovered Companion Egg.'

Zhou Wen was still immersed in the excitement of his killing the Fist Demonized General for the first time when he saw the system notification appear. He couldn't help but be pleasantly surprised.

Upon careful look, he saw a black-colored Companion Egg drop on the ground. He hurriedly ordered the blood-colored avatar to pick it up but seeing its attributes, he couldn’t help but find it odd.

Mutated Demonized General: Legendary

Legendary Life Providence: Malignant General

Strength: 19

Speed: 17

Constitution: 18

Primordial Energy: 18

Talent Skill: Astral Fist, Demon Flame Spear, Demon Rider Summon

Companion Form: None

How can a Mutated Demonized General not have a Companion Form? Zhou Wen found it odd, but its stats were really high. It was considered a top-notch existence among Legendaries.

He directly incubated the Mutated Demonized General since he had no plans on giving such an excellent-grade Companion Beast as food.

He summoned the incubated Mutated Demonized General and it was exactly the same as the one in the game. A burly Demonic General riding on a red horse, with a strange spear in his hand. With one charge, the strange spear in its hand could knock over a large number of Demonized Soldiers. It was extremely powerful.

Another Demonized General! Zhou Wen was delighted. With the boost provided by the Demonized General's skills—far greater than the Mutated Lotus Flower Ant and the Silver-Winged Flying Ant-it was good as a vanguard.

Taking advantage of the excitement of having a new Companion Beast, Zhou Wen continued grinding. He wanted to raise his stats in one fell swoop. It would be best if he could raise everything to 18.

Perhaps due to luck, Zhou Wen encountered another Mutated Demonized General when he respawned again and went to Tiger Cage Pass. However, the Demonized General's helmet had the word 'Blade' engraved on it this time.

He didn't attack himself, allowing the Fist Demonized General to charge forward. Due to the effectiveness of the Fist Demonized General against the Blade Demonized General, it killed the Blade Demonized General with one charge.

The Blade Demonized General's Astral Slash Blade was shattered by the Astral Punch and was made completely useless.

Exceeding Zhou Wen's expectations, the Blade Demonized General once again dropped a Companion Egg. Having obtained two Mutated Demonized General Companion Eggs consecutively, this was a probability that Zhou Wen found unbelievable.

Mutated Demonized General: Legendary

Legendary Life Providence: Malignant General

Strength: 19

Speed: 18

Constitution: 17

Primordial Energy: 16

Talent Skill: Astral Slash Blade, Demon Flame Spear, Demon Rider Summon

Companion Form: None

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 135 - Demonic Words

Chapter 135 Demonic Words

The Blade Demonized General’s attributes were similar to the Fist Demonized General’s. Only its talent skills were somewhat different.

Zhou Wen looked at the system notification and discovered that the compatibility score between the two Demonized Generals was as high as 88%. It tempted him greatly, and in the end, he couldn’t help but tap on the fusion button.

Ding! When he heard the system’s chime, Zhou Wen’s heart couldn’t help but pound. He was even a little nervous.

Fortunately, a compatibility score of 88% was as true as it gets. The fusion succeeded and produced a new Demonized General.

Just by looking at the new Demonized General’s appearance, it seemed to be even more ferocious and domineering. It wore red-vested armor, and its eyes were fiercely glowing red. It looked like a ferocious general in a raging inferno.

And the word engraved on its helmet was neither Blade nor First, but the word “Demon.”

Mutated Demonized General: Legendary

Legendary Life Providence: Malignant General

Strength: 19

Speed: 18

Constitution: 18

Primordial Energy: 18

Talent Skill: Astral Slash Blade, Astral Fist, Demon Flame Spear, Demon Rider Summon

Companion Form: None

These stats are a little sick. Furthermore, it also has the Astral Slash Blade and Astral Fist skills. If I were to obtain another Paper Demonized General Companion Beast and fuse with it, would it result in an excellent-grade with all three skills? Zhou Wen thought to himself.

However, it wasn’t easy to have two Mutated Demonized General Companion Eggs drop. It was unknown how long it would take to have another one drop.

Thankfully, Zhou Wen had to grind Tiger Cage Pass dungeon every day, so he wasn’t in a rush. There were always opportunities.

The Mutated Demonized General was good at the offensive and defensive. It killed everything in its way, and together with the Mutated Lotus Flower Ant and Silver-Winged Flying Ant, they formed a team that could kill monsters from both air, land, and sea. Most of the time, the blood-colored avatar didn’t even need to move a finger to kill the dimensional creatures.

With my current strength and Truth Listener at the Legendary stage, can I try clearing Ant City? Zhou Wen had always been obsessed with the golden beam of light in Ant City. However, previously he had been lacking in strength and couldn't make much progress. Now that he had advanced to the Legendary stage and had four top-notch Legendary Companion Beasts, it seemed like he could make an attempt.

"Old Zhou, we can finally register our own club. What do you think it should be called? Do you think it's better to call it the God of Combat Alliance or Invincible Club?" Li Xuan walked into the living room excitedly.

"Up to you." Zhou Wen was grinding Ant Nest, so he didn't have the capacity to care. Furthermore, he wasn't obsessive-compulsive. He would accept any name.

"Don't mind. This is our club. There's meaning only if we think of names together. Those two aren't good. What do you think about Xuanwen? Our names are both in it. Others can tell that it's our club," Li Xuan said.

"Sure." Zhou Wen nodded while gaming-the blood-colored avatar had already rushed to the periphery of Ant City.

"Then that's it. Let's register for the Xuanwen Club." Li Xuan pulled Zhou Wen out excitedly.

Zhou Wen had no choice but to follow him out. But when they arrived, they realized that setting up a club didn't just require filling in an application form. They had to gather at least five people to submit the application to establish a club.

"Why do we need so many people? The two of us are good enough to beat everyone in the world." Li Xuan's heart

stirred as he looked at Zhou Wen and asked, “It won’t be easy to find people now. Almost all the senior students have already joined clubs. After more than a month, most of the freshmen have been roped in. It will be very difficult to find suitable people. Your two high school classmates seemed to be interested in our club. Why don’t you rope them in to make up the numbers?”

“I’m not sure if they have joined other clubs or not,” Zhou Wen said.

“Then let’s make a call and ask. Do you have the phone number of that beautiful woman named Fang something?” Li Xuan urged.

Zhou Wen had no choice but to take out his ordinary phone and call Fang Ruoxi while gaming with one hand.

“F*ck, you even have a game-only phone and a phone for calls. Bro, you sure are extravagant,” Li Xuan teased.

Zhou Wen ignored him and called Fang Ruoxi. He heard her voice and asked, “Hello, is this Fang Ruoxi?”

“It’s me. Li Xuan and I established a club. If you and Tian Xiangdong haven’t joined other clubs, why don’t you consider it?” Zhou Wen said.

“We haven’t joined anything yet. I heard that you were setting up a club, so we have been waiting for your invitation,” Fang Ruoxi replied with a smile.

“Alright, we are still short of one person. I’ll contact you after we find everyone.” Zhou Wen hung up after making an agreement with Fang Ruoxi.

“Quite swell of this old classmate of yours. She’s pretty and pure, and she has some feelings for you. You have to act as early as possible. Otherwise, she’ll be contaminated by this mixing bowl known as university,” Li Xuan said with a smile.

“Don’t spout nonsense. She’s just an old classmate,” Zhou Wen said.

“Now we have four people. We are still short of one. Who do you think we should get?” Li Xuan tugged at his hair in frustration.

“Is it that difficult for Young Master Li to find someone?” Zhou Wen looked at Li Xuan in confusion.

“It’s really not difficult to find someone. Just a simple call and I can get a dozen or two. However, I’m afraid that there might be my brother’s people among them. I’m more at ease with people you recruit,” Li Xuan said.

“I don’t know anyone…” Zhou Wen suddenly thought of something as he asked Li Xuan, “Do you know Gu Dian?”

“Of course I know him. How can I not know this person? He’s the school’s most problematic person. He beat up a senior when he had just started school. He’s a person who only recognizes money. As long as he’s paid, he will do anything…” Li Xuan said as he looked at Zhou Wen in puzzlement. “Why are you asking about him?”

“Has he joined a club?” Zhou Wen asked.

“Let’s not even talk about him having thoughts of joining a club; even if he does, no one will want him. Who knows when he might beat up the people in his club. That would be such a joke… Wait… Don’t tell me you want to recruit him?” Li Xuan widened his eyes.

“I think he’s not bad. If there’s really no other candidate, we can give him a try,” Zhou Wen said.

“That won’t do. Such a person will definitely be bribed by my brother. When the time comes, he will harm us once again.” Li Xuan shook his head repeatedly.

“Do you think the others won’t be bribed by your brother?” Zhou Wen asked.

Li Xuan was slightly taken aback before he smiled bitterly. “You are right. As long as my brother wants it done, it’s useless who I find.”

“At least Gu Dian has a clear price. Let’s be wary of him. It’s better than people that put on different facades, right?” Zhou Wen said.

“You’re right. However, there were people who invited Gu Dian in the past. He didn’t join either. It won’t be easy inviting him to join our club,” Li Xuan said with a sigh.

“Can you find him? Let’s give it a try,” Zhou Wen said.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 136 - Myriad Buddha Cave

Chapter 136 Myriad Buddha Cave

“Are you sure Gu Dian is here?” Zhou Wen looked at the Myriad Buddha Cave in front of him and looked at Li Xuan in disbelief.

“There’s no mistake about it. According to what I learned, Gu Dian is a weirdo. Ever since he entered school, he hasn’t slept in his dorm. As long as he’s not in class, he will definitely come to Dragon Gate Grotto. It’s normal for him to spend half a month here. I received accurate news that he entered Myriad Buddha Cave three days ago and hasn’t come out yet. There’s no mistake about him being inside,” Li Xuan said.

“Do you honestly think someone can live inside here?” Zhou Wen said as he pointed at the Golden Warriors wandering around the Myriad Buddha Cave.

There were relatively rare dimensional creatures in Dragon Gate Grotto. Typically, they were at the Mortal stage. As long as their numbers were few, ordinary students could handle them.

However, the Golden Warriors in the Myriad Buddha Cave were different. Not only were they at the Legendary stage, but they also had powerful defensive strength. Legendary students needed a great deal of effort to kill them. It was very difficult.

Unless there was a special requirement, the average Legendary wouldn’t be willing to come here to kill a Golden

Warrior.

At that moment in the Myriad Buddha Cave, he could see two or three Golden Warriors wandering around. Zhou Wen didn’t believe that students could live here for two to three days.

Even if he had the ability to fight with a Golden Warrior, it was impossible for him to fight for three days and three nights. He would probably die from exhaustion in one day, much less three days and three nights.

“The news shouldn’t be wrong. Gu Dian is a weirdo. He often does this kind of thing. No one knows how he survives in the dimensional zones, but he manages to. It’s likely that he’s inside the Myriad Buddha Cave,” Li Xuan said with certainty.

“Since that’s the case, let’s go in and take a look.” Zhou Wen had entered the Myriad Buddha Cave in-game and knew that it was difficult to kill a Golden Warrior. However, their Speed wasn’t very fast. He just needed to avoid them since he was only spending a short amount of time to find Gu Dian.

Upon seeing Zhou Wen enter, Li Xuan followed him into the Myriad Buddha Cave.

Seeing that someone had stepped into the Myriad Buddha Cave, Golden Warriors immediately rushed over. Their bodies were dark as if they were carved from some kind of jade. Every step they took left a deep footprint on the ground, indicating their extreme weight.

Li Xuan drew his saber and slashed down at the Golden Warrior that was charging right in front of him. His saber was fast and ruthless and was transformed from a Legendary Companion Beast. If an ordinary Legendary creature were to

be struck by him, they would have their bones cleaved through even if they didn’t die.

However, when the blade landed on the Golden Warrior, sparks flew everywhere, producing a sound of metallic hum. Only a faint white mark was left on the Golden Warrior while Li Xuan’s palm went numb from the shock.

“It’s harder than the legends say!” Li Xuan hurriedly dodged, afraid to clash head-on with the Golden Warriors.

Zhou Wen dashed in and had no intention of fighting the Golden Warriors. Not only were they strong, but they also possessed the talent skill, Golden Bell.

Unless someone wanted to have Golden Bell drop, no one would waste their time killing Golden Warriors. Unfortunately, the drop rate of Golden Bell was very low, making the Warriors unpopular among students.

Thankfully, the Golden Warriors were naturally slow, so it was impossible for them to catch up to Zhou Wen and Li Xuan. As they ran, they avoided the Golden Warriors’ attacks and entered the Myriad Buddha Cave.

Perhaps it was because no one had been here to kill the Golden Warriors for a while, there were plenty of them in the cave. After covering a few hundred meters, Zhou Wen and Li Xuan had about thirty to forty Golden Warriors chasing behind them.

“Is Gu Dian really here?” At that moment, even Li Xuan himself doubted the authenticity of the information he had received. No matter how he looked at it, there didn’t seem to be anyone here.

Just as Li Xuan was about to suggest returning, he suddenly saw a Golden Warrior rushing out of the cavern in front of him. However, it was different from the typical black Golden Warrior. It was covered in golden light and there was a single golden vertical eye on its forehead.

“Three-Eyed Golden Warrior!” Li Xuan exclaimed when he saw the warrior. However, it was a more pleasant surprise than horror.

“What’s that?” Zhou Wen had never seen a Three-Eyed Golden Warrior. Back when he entered the Myriad Buddha Cave in-game, he hadn’t ventured too deep. This was because it was too difficult to kill the Golden Warriors. He wasn’t interested.

In the time it took to kill a Golden Warrior, he could kill at least more than ten Legendary creatures.

“Three-Eyed Golden Warriors are an extremely rare Legendary creature. It should be a mutated version of Golden Warriors; however, their skills are different from that of other Golden Warriors. Typically, most Golden Warriors only drop two Primordial Energy Skills—Golden Palm and Golden Bell. As for the Three-Eyed Golden Warrior’s Primordial Energy Skill, it’s called Invulnerable Golden Power, one that’s far higher than Golden Bell. Not only is the Primordial Energy expenditure low, but the defensive strength is even higher… Since we encountered it today, let’s just kill it first. It will be great if the Invulnerable Golden Body drops.” As Li Xuan spoke, he rushed towards the Three-Eyed Golden Warrior.

He used all his strength to slash at it, but the Speed of the Three-Eyed Golden Warrior was much faster than the typical Golden Warrior. It didn’t show any signs of clumsiness.

As Li Xuan slashed down, the Three-Eyed Golden Warrior actually raised its hand and grabbed Li Xuan’s saber in midair before forcefully twisting it.

The Legendary saber in Li Xuan’s hand was twisted around. In the end, it couldn’t withstand the terrifying force and broke into several pieces.

“My Frost Cicada Saber!” Li Xuan felt his heart ache so much that he nearly vomited blood. He had recently been unlucky and had already sacrificed several Companion Beasts.

Zhou Wen swept past the Three-Eyed Golden Warrior’s head and struck out with his palm, hitting the top of its head.

With a clang, the Rank 10 Ashen Palm failed to injure it. The Three-Eyed Golden Warrior turned its head and struck out with Golden Palm, striking at Zhou Wen’s back like a bolt of lightning

Its palm move was like lightning-fast and ruthless. With Zhou Wen’s body in midair, it was as though he had no way of dodging. Li Xuan was alarmed as he kicked at the Three-Eyed Golden Warrior and shouted, “Old Zhou, dodge!”

Bang!

Li Xuan’s kick was rather heavy-it was enough to snap a tree that was as thick as a person. However, the Three-Eyed Golden Warrior seemed oblivious to the attack as it ignored him. Without moving, the Golden Palm continued its trajectory towards Zhou Wen’s back.

In midair, Zhou Wen suddenly drew out a trajectory like a strange bird, dodging the Three-Eyed Golden Warrior’s strike.

Zhou Wen, who was like an eagle, was hovering above the Three-Eyed Golden Warrior. At the same time, he repeatedly struck with his palms, clashing with the Three-Eyed Golden Warrior.

Li Xuan, who was standing by the side, had no means to join in. Furthermore, large groups of Golden Warriors had gathered around them, instantly cutting off all paths of retreat.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 137 - Three-Eyed Golden Warrior

Chapter 137 Three-Eyed Golden Warrior

“Old Zhou, there are too many Golden Warriors. I can’t hold on any longer, quickly retreat!” Li Xuan shouted as he dodged the power Golden Warriors.

“Hold on. Give me three minutes,” Zhou Wen said.

“Three minutes? Even thirty seconds would be too difficult. Three-Eyed Golden Warriors are too difficult to kill. We definitely won’t be able to kill it in a short period of time. Let’s go back and get more people to come over. We can clean up this group of Golden Warrior hindrances before slowly killing it. Besides, I really can’t last three minutes,” Li Xuan shouted while fighting.

“Two minutes,” Zhou Wen said again.

“F*ck, if you can’t kill it, my blood will be on your hands.” Li Xuan gritted his teeth and summoned a Companion Beast armor to protect his body as he charged into the Golden Warriors’ ferocious attacks, slamming one of them back several steps.

“If the tiger doesn’t show its might, do you really think I’m HELLO KITTY?” Li Xuan was like a god of combat that had descended to the mortal world. His body slammed forward, his fists unleashed a barrage of attacks, and he managed to charge out of the crowd of Golden Warriors.

Zhou Wen didn’t have the time or mood to appreciate Li Xuan’s ferocious appearance. He circled above the Three-Eyed Golden Warrior like a hawk, dodging its Golden Palm. At the same time, he struck out repeatedly with his palm, striking the Three-Eyed Golden Warrior’s head.

Even with the augmentation of the lotus bracer, Zhou Wen’s might made it very difficult for him to injure the Three-Eyed Golden Warrior. Every collision was like a clash of metal as sparks flew.

Although it seemed to be filled with zest, Zhou Wen’s palm strikes couldn’t hurt the Three-Eyed Golden Warrior at all. At most, it only made it uncomfortable.

The Three-Eyed Golden Warrior didn’t feel good either. It waved its palm again and again, but it failed to even touch the corner of Zhou Wen’s clothes. Zhou Wen was like a giant fly flying above it.

“Roar!” Even the most mild-tempered Buddha would be enraged, much less an irascible warrior. With Zhou Wen enraging it, the Three-Eyed Golden Warrior’s palm glowed with golden light as it used all its might to strike at the airborne Zhou Wen in an indomitable manner.

It’s now! Zhou Wen’s eyes focused as he no longer relied on his movement technique or silver wings to dodge in the air. He flattened his left hand as he sucked at the Three-Eyed Golden Warrior’s bloodthirsty Golden Palm.

Zhou Wen’s palm was blood-red, as though it possessed an invisible force that deviated the Three-Eyed Golden Warrior’s palm to the side.

With a boom, the Three-Eyed Golden Warrior delivered its full might with Golden Palm to its forehead, shattering the

forehead with the vertical eye, as well as the golden eye.

The Three-Eyed Golden Warrior collapsed to the ground with a loud thud. Within its own shattered skull, there was a strange dazzling golden glow.

Zhou Wen landed in front of the Three-Eyed Golden Warrior's corpse and reached into its head. He pulled out a golden crystal bead the size of a goose egg. Inside it, there was a Three-Eyed Golden Warrior figure shimmering-it was a Companion Egg.

My luck with Companion Eggs seems pretty good at the moment. Zhou Wen reeled with joy.

"Old Zhou, stop staring blankly. I can't hold it any longer. Quickly come and help!" Li Xuan shouted.

Zhou Wen turned his head and saw that he was surrounded by a group of Golden Warriors. They were pummeling Li Xuan until he was dizzy. His armor had cracked from the beating and was about to explode.

However, Li Xuan's Immortal God of Combat Life Providence and Invincible Connate Divine Art were really good at tanking. After being struck countless times, to the point of almost being beaten to a pulp, he still remained conscious. However, the situation looked extremely bad.

Zhou Wen threw the Companion Egg into his backpack as the silver wings on his back vibrated. Instantly, it transformed into a silver beam of light that flew above Li Xuan. He reached out and pulled Li Xuan into the air and landed on the Buddha statue on the mountain cliff.

"Don't touch those Buddha statues!" Li Xuan immediately shouted when he saw this. His face was filled with horror.

However, he had shouted too late. Zhou Wen raised him with both hands as he stepped on the Buddha statue's shoulder and used the momentum to once again leap into the sky.

"It's over… It's over… Old Zhou… You're really trying to kill me… In the future, you should just stay at home and play games. No number of lives is enough coming out with you." Li Xuan nearly cried.

There were countless Buddha statues in Myriad Buddha Cave. Before becoming a dimensional zone, there were more than ten thousand of them, but the number was inestimable after the area became a dimensional zone.

In Myriad Buddha Cave, everything could be touched, but not the Buddha statues. Once touched, the Buddha statue would awaken. Although it wouldn't really stand up, with the awakening of the Buddha statue, all the dimensional creatures in Myriad Buddha Cave would go berserk. Their strength would greatly increase, and in addition, their bodies would also become even harder. Even their originally low speed would turn extremely fast.

Just the thought of a group of accelerated Golden Warriors was terrifying. It was almost impossible for the two of them to escape Myriad Buddha Cave alive with their Legendary stages.

However, Zhou Wen ignored Li Xuan. After he leaped into the air, he landed on the legs of a Buddha statue that was sitting at a greater height.

"Old Zhou, why are you still stepping on them? Do you think our deaths need to be expedited?" Li Xuan felt that his name was already written in the King of Hell's notebook.

The Golden Warriors below couldn’t come up, nor did they dare to touch the Buddha statues. As for Zhou Wen and Li Xuan, they stood there for quite a while without seeing any movement from the Buddha statues.

Li Xuan looked at them in confusion. “Could it be that these Buddha statues aren’t awake today?”

“That’s possible,” Zhou Wen said casually as he looked around Myriad Buddha Cave.

He had entered Myriad Buddha Cave in-game, so he naturally knew that the Buddha statues couldn’t be touched. However, that was before he used the Small Perfection of Wisdom Sutra.

As long as Zhou Wen switched his Primordial Energy Art to the Small Perfection of Wisdom Sutra, he wouldn’t anger the Buddha statues no matter how much he touched them.

After all, the Buddha statue was only a statue, not a true Buddha. Even a true Buddha might mistake Zhou Wen as a pious child, so it was even more natural for the Buddha statues to fail to distinguish him.

This was because Zhou Wen’s Small Perfection of Wisdom Sutra was too low. If he reached an extremely high level, most Buddha-type creatures would bow to him without daring to fight him.

The Golden Warriors were, after all, low-level dimensional creatures without any intelligence, so they lacked the ability to sense such weak auras of the Small Perfection of Wisdom Sutra.

“Old Zhou, stop carrying me. Put me down now.” Li Xuan had been too nervous before, but now that he relaxed, he

realized that Zhou Wen’s hands were still carrying him in a princess hold without letting him down.

“I think it’s better I carry you.” Zhou Wen didn’t know if his Small Perfection of Wisdom Sutra could protect Li Xuan. It was fine if he stepped on it himself, but he didn’t know if it was okay for Li Xuan.

“I know I’m handsome, but you can’t have impure thoughts about me just because I’m handsome.” Li Xuan leaped out of Zhou Wen’s embrace and stood on the Buddha statue’s knee.

Boom!

As Li Xuan stood still, he suddenly felt the Buddha statue shake violently, nearly throwing him down, its eyes suffused a golden glow.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 138 - The Ship Anchor

Chapter 138 The Ship Anchor

Li Xuan jumped in fright as he wrapped his arms around Zhou Wen’s neck and hung off his body.

However, it was already too late. The Buddha statue did not stop its anomalous change. The countless Buddha statues in Myriad Buddha Cave all suffused golden glows, illuminating the cave in a golden resplendence.

The ordinary Golden Warriors’ eyes also became golden. Their black jade-like bodies emitted golden glows as they stared straight at Zhou Wen and Li Xuan.

“They… shouldn’t be able to come up, right?” Li Xuan gulped and said with some difficulty.

Just as Li Xuan said that, he watched the warriors’ bodies as a golden halo appeared beneath their feet and began to levitate them. This only served to turn Li Xuan’s face green.

“Come here.” Just as the Golden Warriors were about to charge up with the golden halo, they suddenly heard a low and hoarse voice coming from above.

Zhou Wen and Li Xuan were alarmed as they hurriedly looked up and saw that in the middle of the many Buddha

statues, a person had extended half his body and was waving at them.

That ferocious face that resembled a ferocious ghost was obviously Gu Dian’s.

“Why is Gu Dian here?” Li Xuan exclaimed.

However, Zhou Wen wasn’t in the mood to speak to Li Xuan. He leaped up with him in his arms as the silver wings on his back vibrated. Soon, he arrived at the spot where Gu Dian was standing

Only then did the two realize that in the middle of the two Buddha statues was a stone rift.

Gu Dian retreated and let the two of them follow him into the stone rift, leading them deeper in.

The Golden Warriors rose up with the help of the golden halo, but they didn’t dare touch the Buddha statues. All they could do was surround them from the outside without chasing up to them.

Zhou Wen and Li Xuan walked a distance with Gu Dian before the stone rift opened up. There was an uncarved stone cave inside.

The cave wasn’t small, and there was a pool below. There was clear spring water flowing in the pool, making it look very clear.

There were also some daily necessities in the cave, which looked like they belonged to Gu Dian.

“Everything outside will return to normal in an hour. You can then leave,” said Gu Dian coldly.

“Old Gu, we came specially for you. We plan on registering a club and wish to invite you.” Li Xuan exchanged looks with Zhou Wen and directly explained his intentions.

“Not interested.” Gu Dian said without lifting his head.

“Don’t be in such a hurry to reject it. Our club’s benefits are good. There will be quite a good membership allowance every month.” Having heard that Gu Dian loved money very much, Li Xuan hurriedly used monetary incentives.

“One hundred thousand a month. I’ll join if you pay me,” Gu Dian said.

100,000 was nothing to Li Xuan, but Gu Dian’s attitude displeased him. Furthermore, he had never heard of any club using money to buy members. Wouldn’t that be a joke?

Li Xuan wanted to say something but was stopped by Zhou Wen. Zhou Wen looked at Gu Dian and said, “Five members are needed to register a club. There are only four of us now. We wish to invite you on board, and it would be best if you are willing to join. If you aren’t willing, can you help us out and register with us? Although you will be one of our members in name, you actually don’t need to attend any of the club’s activities or be responsible for the club. How much would that cost?”

“10,000,” Gu Dian said straightforwardly.

“Alright, 10,000 it is. Li Xuan, pay up.” Zhou Wen agreed without hesitation, but the one paying had to be Li Xuan.

“Just helping in the registration costs ten thousand? Isn’t that a little too easy?” Li Xuan said reluctantly.

“Anyway, I can’t find anyone else. Find someone else or pay. Choose one,” Zhou Wen said as he spread out his hands.

“Even if I’m willing to pay, I still need a signal. How am I to transfer money in this crappy place?” Li Xuan said gloomily.

“That’s settled then. You can return with us later. We’ll transfer the money to you once there’s a signal,” Zhou Wen said to Gu Dian.

“Sure,” said Gu Dian and he began packing his things.

Gu Dian reached out his hand for something on the mat and stuffed it into his pocket. Zhou Wen had been observing Gu Dian all this time, so his action left him puzzled.

When Gu Dian took the item, he had clearly used his body to block their line of sight, as though he didn’t want them to see it.

However, Zhou Wen had been wearing the Truth Listener earring during his previous battle. Through the abnormal hearing given to him by the earring, Zhou Wen could hear the shape of the item.

As Truth Listener only provided listening abilities and not true sight, all Zhou Wen knew was that it was a pocket watch. The exterior was likely made of metal. As for the color, it was unknown to Zhou Wen.

However, there was a strange symbol engraved on the pocket watch’s surface, something that Zhou Wen seemed to have seen somewhere before.

After all, he had heard it without any color, making it different from true vision. Therefore, Zhou Wen momentarily couldn’t recall where he had seen the symbol before.

As he stared at Gu Dian who was thinking as he was packing his things, Zhou Wen's eyes lit up. He finally remembered where he had seen such symbols.

The symbol on the pocket watch was a ship's anchor, but it was different from the typical ship's anchor. On the surface was a woman's side profile.

According to what Zhou Wen knew, people who went out to sea to fish in the past were very particular about women. Typically, they wouldn't let women go out to sea with them, nor would they carve women's symbols on the boat.

Therefore, Zhou Wen had a deep impression of the ship's anchor when he saw it.

The last time he saw the symbol was when he followed Ouyang Lan to the Xiyuan Crystal Shop. In the room at basement four, there was a silver-haired Companion Beast in chains.

Behind the chain was a metal piece the size of a millstone. On the metal piece was a nine-number keypad, and on the side of the metal block was such a ship's anchor symbol.

However, Zhou Wen's mind was focused on the nine-number keypad back then, so he didn't pay much attention to the ship's anchor symbol. Furthermore, the symbol on the metal piece was huge while the pocket watch was very small. Therefore, Zhou Wen took a while before recalling the matter.

Is it a coincidence? Zhou Wen thought with a frown. Although the difference in size between the two symbols was huge and he hadn't seen the anchor's colors on the pocket watch, from the structure of the symbol, it was indeed the same.

“Old Zhou, what did that Three-Eyed Golden Warrior drop? Quickly take it out and show it to me,” Li Xuan said.

Zhou Wen handed Li Xuan the Three-Eyed Golden Warrior Companion Egg that dropped. When Li Xuan saw it, his eyes lit up as he cried out, “Why is your life so good? You actually had a Three-Eyed Golden Warrior Companion Egg drop. That was worth it. Totally worth it. There aren’t many of these things, so even if you have the money, you might not be able to buy them. It really was worth risking our lives for it.”

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 139 - Working Hard to Improve

Chapter 139 Working Hard to Improve

“Do you like it?” Zhou Wen asked Li Xuan.

“Nonsense. Who wouldn’t? This thing can only be obtained by chance. I’ve only heard of it in the past. I don’t even know what companion form this Companion Beast has,” Li Xuan said.

“Take it if you like it,” Zhou Wen said.

“Really? Don’t you want it for yourself?” Li Xuan was slightly taken aback.

“Of course I do. However, you have to give me the amount of money I deserve. It can’t be lower than the market price,” Zhou Wen said.

The Three-Eyed Diamond Companion Egg might be difficult for others to obtain, but to Zhou Wen, it was just a little difficult. If he wanted, he could visit Myriad Buddha Cave multiple times in-game in the future. It wouldn’t be difficult for him to obtain one.

The game’s Companion Eggs couldn’t be sold in the real world, so it was best to sell Companion Eggs obtained in reality.

“Money isn’t a problem, but are you sure you don’t want to keep it for yourself? This item is truly rare and even if its companion form isn’t something you wish for, the Companion Beast is strong enough. It can be used as a meat shield and as a vanguard while charging ahead. Very few people can hurt it. It’s a rare excellent-grade beast,” Li Xuan said.

“I don’t need it now. If I need one in the future, I’ll just get one more from the Myriad Buddha Cave,” Zhou Wen said with a smile.

“Get one more? You make it sound easy. Ignoring the fact that Three-Eyed Golden Warriors are extremely rare, just the time it takes to spawn one takes months. And even if you manage to wait for its spawn, the chances of a Companion Egg dropping after killing it is less than 20%.” Li Xuan looked at Zhou Wen as though he was looking at an idiot.

“Why are you saying so much? If you don’t want it, just give it to me,” Zhou Wen said as he reached out his hand.

“Yes… but don’t regret it…” Li Xuan hurriedly clenched the Companion Egg in his hand.

Gu Dian said that the Myriad Buddha Cave would return to normal an hour later. There was still plenty of time, so Li Xuan couldn’t help but incubate the Three-Eyed Golden Warrior.

“Wow… Invulnerable Golden Power… Golden Palm… Double skills… Wow… Its companion form is actually a Golden Silk Soft Armor… It looks so cool…” When Li Xuan summoned the Three-Eyed Golden Warrior’s Golden Silk Soft Armor companion form, he deliberately walked in front of Zhou Wen and occasionally let out an exaggerated cry. Clearly, he was showing off on purpose.

Zhou Wen ignored him without giving him a second look. All he did was lower his head and game.

Seeing that Zhou Wen was ignoring him, Li Xuan felt a little bored. He ignored Zhou Wen and went to Gu Dian to show off. He summoned the Three-Eyed Golden Warrior and ‘tsked’ in amazement. “Look at its body. Look at how domineering it is. It’s a rare excellent-grade beast. Old Gu, have you seen anyone else with such a Companion Beast after living in the Myriad Buddha Cave for so long?”

“Pay me and I’ll say no.” Gu Dian looked up at Li Xuan with a serious expression.

“How boring… The two of you are really boring…” Li Xuan felt that being with the two of them was like playing a zither to a cow. He felt depressed that no one was available to appreciate his splendor.

After waiting for an hour, the Myriad Buddha Cave was indeed restored to normal. The Golden Warriors also returned to their original states. The three of them rushed out together and did not waste time with the Golden Warriors.

After getting Fang Ruoxi and Tian Xiangdong together, the five of them filled out an application form and returned to wait for the news after the submission. The school said that the club would be approved within a week.

Li Xuan told them to leave the matter to him and that Zhou Wen didn’t need to worry about it. Their Xuanwen Club would get the approval tomorrow.

Zhou Wen had no plans on bothering with it anyway. He planned on heading home to game, but unfortunately, he bumped into Wang Fei and was taken to her office.

“Zhou Wen, have you considered the matter that I mentioned previously?” Wang Fei asked.

“Ms. Wang, I already said that I won’t avoid it.” It wasn’t that Zhou Wen insisted on fighting John, but that he had nowhere to go.

“Alright, since you’re so insistent, I won’t persuade you any further. In light of how you might be representing the school in battle, you can bring up anything that you need now. The college will try its best to support you,” said Wang Fei.

Zhou Wen thought for a moment and said, “I want the entry pass to Tiger Cage Pass and Lotus Flower Cave. I wonder if it’s possible?”

“Of course, that’s not a problem. If you need anything, I can help you apply for a few more passes,” Wang Fei agreed readily.

Wang Fei felt gratified. Although Zhou Wen had almost no chance of defeating John, it was still worth it if this could stir up Zhou Wen’s fighting spirit.

“That’s even better. Thank you, Ms. Wang.” Zhou Wen expressed his gratitude.

He didn’t really wish to enter to train himself with the pass, but to find a reasonable excuse for future summonings of the Demonized General and using of the Primordial Energy Skills.

“There’s no failure when you’re young. The most important thing is not to leave any regrets. Work hard and don’t make yourself regret in the future.” Before Zhou Wen left, Wang Fei even encouraged him.

Zhou Wen felt that Counselor Wang Fei was really a nice person, but she was just too naggy.

That afternoon, Wang Fei sent a few permit passes to Zhou Wen. Apart from Tiger Cage Pass and Lotus Flower Cave, there were several other dimensional zones that had been closed by the school-ones that the typical student wasn't able to enter.

After Zhou Wen had obtained the passes, he went to Tiger Cage Pass first.

He did enter Tiger Cage Pass, but he didn't kill any monsters. He killed Demonized Soldiers for a while before finding a spot without any Demonized Soldiers. Coincidentally, there was an old, broken-down tank there. He lay down in it and continued to use his phone to grind.

There were many black-winged flying ants outside Ant City. They were Legendary creatures, and their combat ability was similar to the Silver-Winged Flying Ant. However, they were not as agile as the Silver-Winged Flying Ant.

Zhou Wen summoned Truth Listener, the Mutated Lotus Flower Ant, the Silver-Winged Flying Ant, and the Mutated Demonized General in their Companion Beast form. Together with the blood-colored avatar, they charged towards Ant City.

The Mutated Demonized General charged forward as the Silver-Winged Flying Ant flew in the air. Behind it were the Mutated Lotus Flower Ant and Truth Listener. The blood-colored avatar was in the middle, sending the grinding team into the black-winged ants.

Despite being at the Legendary stage, Zhou Wen's few Companion Beasts were much more ferocious than the

black-winged flying ants. With one charge of the Mutated Demonized General and a cleave of the strange spear in its hand, it killed several black-winged flying ants.

The lotus flower above the Mutated Lotus Flower Ant’s head spewed out large amounts of red lotus seed bullets. The black-winged flying ants that were hit by the lotus seed bullets immediately corroded away, losing their ability to fly. After landing on the ground, their combat strength decreased drastically and they were beheaded by Truth Listener’s tiny claws.

What shocked Zhou Wen the most was Truth Listener. Despite its tiny size-less than the size of a palm-its claws were like a ghostly claw that could lop off a black-winged flying ant’s head with one strike.

Zhou Wen originally imagined that it would be a bitter fight, but now he realized that he didn’t need to do a thing. All he needed to do was follow behind to pick up the items.

The four Companion Beasts charged forward, and from time to time, he would hear a chime. Quite a number of dimensional crystals dropped on the ground, and even a black-winged flying ant’s Companion Egg dropped.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 140 - Golden Ant Honey

Chapter 140 Golden Ant Honey

Picking up things from behind his Companion Beasts made Zhou Wen feel guilty of reaping the fruits of success without putting in any effort.

It’s no wonder so many people wanted to be a general in ancient times. With a bunch of lackeys sweeping through everything, it’s truly a pleasure to reap the spoils. In a blink of an eye, he threw away the guilt he felt and continued picking things up without any qualms.

17-valued Strength dimensional crystal! Zhou Wen hurriedly picked it up and allowed the blood-colored avatar to absorb it, raising his Strength to 17. This was the highest attribute Zhou Wen currently possessed.

The dimensional crystals produced by Legendary creatures were commonly below 15 points. It was rare to see them above that. This was the first 17 points he had obtained.

Ever since Zhou Wen began grinding Legendary creatures, he hadn’t seen 20-valued dimensional crystals. This left him somewhat worried as to how he could raise his attributes to 21.

Based on his previous experience, he had to raise his attributes to the level of a Mythical creature like Truth Listener, so that he could advance to the next level.

All the attributes of Truth Listener at the Legendary stage were 21, so Zhou Wen naturally had to raise his attributes to 21.

As the four powerful Companion Beasts charged forward, the blood-colored avatar had already entered Ant City. Large numbers of ants immediately rushed out from the ant

nest.

These ants were different from the black-winged flying ants. There were red-armored ants and black-armored ants but most of them were yellow-armored ants. Their numbers were terrifying, but they couldn’t fly and could only attack on the ground.

The blood-colored avatar and the four Companion Beasts immediately plunged into the endless sea of ants. The previously ferocious Mutated Demonized General charged forward. Although it killed several ants, more surged forward and pulled it deep into the swamp-like sea of ants.

When Zhou Wen realized that the situation was turning south, he made the blood-colored avatar jump onto the back of the Silver-Winged Flying Ant and fly straight into the sky before flying towards the middle of Ant City.

He let the Mutated Demonized General slow down the ant horde as much as it could.

Due to the large number of black-winged flying ants killed previously, there were very few ants that could fly after entering Ant City. Using the ant nest as an obstacle, the

Silver-Winged Flying Ant dodged left and right, flitting through the air swiftly as it got closer and closer to the strange ant nest in the middle.

A black-winged flying ant charged forward, but the Silver-Winged Flying Ant was no longer capable of dodging. The blood-colored avatar struck out with Ashen Palm and struck the black-winged flying ant's head. As though it had been struck dumb, it began flying in random directions before plummeting to the ground.

Zhou Wen didn't use any other Primordial Energy Skills as their expenditure was too high, allowing him to only use them twice. Only Ashen Palm used a relatively lower amount of Primordial Energy. With Zhou Wen's natural speed of Primordial Energy recovery, he could barely use it for extended periods of time.

However, that was only on the basis of occasional use. As the black-winged flying ants charging at him from his surroundings increased, Zhou Wen couldn't even use his Ashen Palm.

Seeing that he was about to be surrounded by the black-winged flying ants, Zhou Wen looked at the distance between the blood-colored avatar and the ant nest. Gritting his teeth, he leaped from the back of the Silver-Winged Flying Ant and charged towards a black-winged flying ant. He took the opportunity to use Dragon Gate Fairy Skill to rush to the top of an ant nest by the side. He then used the momentum to rush straight to the highest spot where the nest was glowing with a golden halo.

In the nest behind him, several ants were leaping into the air in a bid to strike the blood-colored avatar. Thankfully, they were wingless red-armored ants. The blood-colored avatar

circled the sky with the Dragon Gate Fairy Skill, causing the red-armored ants to miss and fall to the ground.

When the blood-colored avatar used the momentum to slide towards the golden ant nest, two black-winged flying ants rushed over from both sides.

The Silver-Winged Flying Ant had already been surrounded by a group of black-winged flying ants. Its wings had been ripped apart and it was being eaten. There was no way it could help him again.

The Dragon Gate Fairy Skill was only a movement technique and not a flight technique. As Zhou Wen’s strength had reached its limit and without anything to push off from, there was no way he could dodge the two black-winged flying ants’ attack.

Gritting his teeth, Zhou Wen thought of something. A green beam of light was summoned from the blood-colored avatar’s palm, transforming into a little fairy sitting on a banana leaf.

Before the fairy could see what was happening, the blood-colored avatar stepped on her banana leaf and leaped into the air again. However, the little fairy, along with the banana leaf, fell to the ground.

It was not easy for the little fairy to regain control of the banana leaf. Her ashen face was filled with anger. She pointed at the blood-colored avatar in the sky and yelled something

With this step, the blood-colored avatar finally managed to dodge the pounce of the two black-winged ants. Like a cannonball, it slammed into the shimmering golden ant nest.

Bam!

The ant nest wasn’t as solid as Zhou Wen imagined. He had actually managed to open a huge hole as the blood-colored avatar rolled in with the mud walls.

The scene in the nest left Zhou Wen slightly taken aback. That so-called golden light wasn’t treasure.

The bottom half of the nest was filled with golden liquid, one that was sticky like glue.

Zhou Wen remembered hearing from others that some kinds of ants made honey like bees. Furthermore, these ants that could make honey were typically terrifying poison ants.

However, the honey they made was a tonic that was nourishing and even had medicinal value.

Of course, this was all hearsay. Zhou Wen was unsure of its authenticity, but the golden liquid in the nest seemed to be ant honey no matter how one looked at it.

After the blood-colored avatar entered the nest, it fell into a golden liquid. Immediately, it felt like it had fallen into a quagmire, so the more it struggled, the deeper it sank.

However, after the blood-colored avatar’s mouth was stained with the golden liquid, he felt a sweet fragrance entering his mouth. It made Zhou Wen even more certain that it was the legendary ant honey.

‘Consumed Golden Ant Honey, Primordial Energy+1.’ A notification notification popped up on his phone screen. It left Zhou Wen slightly taken aback before he became ecstatic.

Just as he was about to control the blood-colored avatar to drink a few mouthfuls, he suddenly heard an ear-piercing scream. When he looked up, he saw a flying ant that looked like it was cast from gold. It angrily flew down from the top of the nest and was as fast as a golden phantom.

Zhou Wen was only able to see the Golden Flying Ant’s appearance when the blood-colored avatar was slain by a golden beam of light. Its head and body were separated.

However, the last thing he saw was something like a cocoon floating in thin air in the upper half of the nest. It was snow-white and crystalline, and he had no idea what it was.

Without even having the time to look at it, the phone screen went black.

Ants seem to be born from eggs, right? That thing was clearly a cocoon formed from thin silk. Could it be that ants in a dimensional dimension can reproduce? Zhou Wen found it odd. The aura from the cocoon seemed somewhat different from the Golden Flying Ant.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 141 - Strange Siblings

Chapter 141 Strange Siblings

Just as Zhou Wen was about to drip his blood to revive and continue fighting, he suddenly heard a voice coming from afar. The sound became clearer as though someone was walking over.

“Brother, is that thing really inside Tiger Cage Pass?” A woman’s voice sounded. Although it wasn’t loud and was rather far away, Zhou Wen could still hear it clearly with Truth Listener’s ability.

“The most likely place is Tiger Cage Pass.” A man’s voice rang out.

“If that thing is really inside Tiger Cage Pass, with our abilities, we won’t be able to rush in at all. I’m afraid we’ve made a wasted trip,” the woman added.

“Not necessarily,” the man said with a laugh.

“The one in Tiger Cage Pass is not the usual person at the Epic stage. I’m afraid we won’t even be able to catch an arrow from him, so how can we rush in?” the woman said.

“Blindly charging in will definitely not work. However, I do know of a method that can allow us to enter.” The man paused before continuing, “There are three mutated Demonized Generals like Fist, Paper, and Blade in Tiger Cage Pass. If we can gather all three Demonized Generals’ skills, we can use them to get past that arrow. When the time

comes, as long as we can get close enough to Tiger Cage Pass, we can enter it through that secret tunnel."

"There aren't many mutated Demonized Generals to begin with. It's easier said than done to have one drop with all three skills," said the woman.

"Let's take it slow. After all, we still have to stay at Sunset College for two years. If we are lucky, we might be able to gather the three Primordial Energy Skills," the man said.

Zhou Wen was lying in the broken-down tank and heard their conversation clearly. The duo talked as they walked and soon, they had gone some distance without discovering Zhou Wen.

Those two must be Wu Jun and Wu Nan who were in the top ten, right? They actually know so much about Tiger Cage Pass and some secret tunnel? What's the thing they were talking about? Zhou Wen could easily recognize them with Truth Listener's ability.

However, the siblings' behavior was somewhat odd.

However, none of this had anything to do with Zhou Wen. He continued to lay in the tank and grind away. He still wanted to enter the Golden Flying Ant's nest to drink a few mouthfuls of the ant honey.

He had only taken a sip due to his lack of preparation the last time. Next time he felt that he would be able to fill his stomach.

However, through a great ordeal, when Zhou Wen finally arrived in front of the nest at the highest point, he saw a golden beam flash before he could enter. The golden flying

ant charged out of the nest and killed the blood-colored avatar outside without giving him a chance to enter.

Zhou Wen refused to give up and tried again, but the result was the same. Without even having the chance to enter the nest, he was killed by the Golden Flying Ant.

How can this be? Logically speaking, the game's program should be fixed. The first time I went there, the Golden Flying Ant was in the nest. It only took action after I rushed in. Why did it come out before the blood-colored avatar entered the nest during the second and third time? Zhou Wen felt depressed.

Drinking the Golden Ant Honey seemed hopeless, so all Zhou Wen could do was grind the other dungeons.

While grinding, Zhou Wen also headed to Myriad Buddha Cave to see if there were any Three-Eyed Golden Warriors.

There were Three-Eyed Golden Warriors, but they spawned at different locations every time which meant that it took Zhou Wen some time to find them.

The Mutated Demonized General led the way on a horse, blasting through the horde of Golden Warriors. This made Zhou Wen's progress speed much faster.

After finding a Three-Eyed Golden Warrior, the Mutated Demonized General clashed head-on with it but failed to gain much of an advantage. However, it wasn't placed at a disadvantage either.

The clash between the Golden Palm and Astral Fist was like a collision between Mars and Earth. The air blasts that produced were enough to send the Golden Warriors by the side flying

Although the Three-Eyed Golden Warrior was powerful, its Speed and means of attack were still inferior to the Mutated Demonized General.

Zhou Wen used Astral Suction Palm to help the Mutated Demonized General to kill the Three-Eyed Golden Warrior, which ended up dropping an 18-valued Constitution Crystal, raising Zhou Wen's Constitution to 18 points.

Time passed as Zhou Wen grinded away, living a very regular lifestyle. He alternated between Tiger Cage Pass and Lotus Flower Cave on a daily basis.

Wang Fei was greatly gratified when she learned how hardworking Zhou Wen was. However, unbeknownst to her, Zhou Wen only found a place to game after entering the dimensional zones.

"Who's that boy? Why haven't I seen him before? He's so handsome!" A few girls were walking in the school when they suddenly saw a boy walking over. After taking a closer look at his face, their eyes lit up.

"Really? Our school actually has such a handsome guy. Why didn't we notice him in the past?" The girl's eyes were almost fixed on him.

In their eyes, that boy was flawless from head to toe. His entire being seemed to be glowing.

When the boy saw them looking at him, he smiled at them. The girls' hearts pounded wildly and they lowered their heads shyly, not daring to look at him again.

By the time they lifted their heads again, the boy had already disappeared.

“Damn it, I should have asked for his number just now.” A girl stamped her feet in regret.

“The door isn’t locked. Come in.” Wei Ge was clearing some student council work when he suddenly heard a knock on the door.

The door was pushed open, but Wei Ge felt that something was amiss. It was as if the person was not a member of the student council, so he looked up.

Upon seeing this, Wei Ge felt a sense of animosity.

The boy in front of him was his idea of the perfect man. He was elegant, mature, reliable, and had the aura of a nobleman. No one could ignore his existence with him merely standing there. It was as though he was the center of the world.

With just a glance, Wei Ge had already added the boy to the list of his opponents.

The boy reached out his hand and, in a friendly manner, said, “Hello, I’m John.”

“So it’s John. I’m the student council president of Sunset College, Wei Ge. I’ve already received notice from the school that I’ll be responsible for your daily life while you’re studying here.” Wei Ge stood up and reached out to shake John’s hand as their gaze met.

John’s gaze was as pure as a silent sea, without any ripples.

When their hands held each other, Wei Ge smiled as he secretly exerted strength in his palm. He wanted to test John’s strength.

Wei Ge had long heard that John had the title of Saint in the West district-he was a famous genius in the West district.

Wei Ge didn’t think that he would be any worse than John, but after his hand gradually tightened, his expression changed.

No matter how much Wei Ge exerted his strength, nothing happened to John’s palm. It remained warm and firm, as though strength couldn’t affect it at all. Even his expression was as gentle as ever.

Wei Ge felt that John was like an unfathomable ocean. No one knew how terrifying it was beneath the calm.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 142 - Saint John

Chapter 142 Saint John

“John, welcome to Sunset College for your studies. I’ll take you to the dormitory first.” Wei Ge retracted his hand as his expression was a mixture of emotions.

“Then I’ll have to trouble you,” John said with a smile, “I heard that Sunset College produced a genius this year. A freshman who has yet to advance to the Legendary stage has managed to enter the top ten of the comprehensive test.”

Wei Ge was a shrewd person. Upon hearing John’s words, he immediately had a guess. Could it be that this John has a grudge with Zhou Wen?

Although he had such thoughts in mind, Wei Ge said, “I do indeed have such a junior. His talent and character are excellent.”

“I heard his name is Zhou Wen?” John asked again.

“That’s right. Do you know him?” Wei Ge asked.

“I don’t know him. I heard that Sunset College has produced such a genius, so I’m looking forward to it. If there’s a chance, I hope I can spar with him.” John made his words very clear.

This only affirmed Wei Ge's conjecture, but he avoided answering. He only smiled and said, "I'll take you to the dormitory first. The school will arrange everything else."

John nodded with a calm expression. He didn't say anything further and instead chatted with Wei Ge about the glorious history and interesting news of Sunset College.

News of John coming to Sunset College quickly spread. Even if the school didn't promote him, a tall, handsome, and outstanding student like John would easily attract attention once he appeared on campus.

"It's as the rumors say, John is indeed a genius with both looks and strength. The reputation of a saint is true."

"What do you mean 'as the rumors say'? You haven't seen his strength at all, have you? Maybe he's just a pretty boy."

"Generally, men who are good-looking can't be too weak," said a girl.

The students of Sunset College were discussing the genius student from the West district, especially the Cape family that had borne one of the six heroes. This gave him an even more mysterious halo.

Many of the experts in the school hoped to battle John, but this was not something they could sort for themselves. They had to follow the arrangements of the school's leaders.

Sunset College had carefully selected a list of students to interact with John. There were five people, including Huang Ji, Wei Ge, Hui Haifeng, Wang Lu, and Feng Qiuyan.

In consideration of Zhou Wen's relationship with Liz, he wasn't put on the list.

When John saw the name list, he didn’t say anything. The corners of his mouth curled up and he revealed a rare smile.

Zhou Wen had also heard the news of John’s arrival, but he didn’t take it to heart. With his present strength and his legendary Companion Beasts that possessed astonishing combat strength, it could be said that he wasn’t afraid of any cultivator of the same level. If John really wanted to fight him, he wouldn’t back down.

He continued persisting in his old ways by grinding daily. He obtained quite a number of dimensional crystals and Companion Beasts, and his attributes increased significantly. Apart from his Speed, the other attributes had increased to 18 points and his Speed was at 17 points.

However, he didn’t obtain any better excellent-grade Companion Beasts. Most of them were used as food to feed Truth Listener and Banana Fairy. He attempted to fuse a small number of them, but all of them failed. The success rate of the fusion was frighteningly low.

Providing plenty of food was clearly beneficial. After consuming a copious number of Legendary Companion Eggs, Banana Fairy finally began to evolve.

Banana Fairy didn’t undergo much of a change when she reached the Legendary stage. Her body was still small and petite, and she didn’t grow up at all. Instead, the banana leaf she was sitting on had enlarged but was merely the size of a palm.

Banana Fairy: Legendary (Evolvable)

Life State: Great Yin Spirit Root.

Strength: 21

Speed: 21

Constitution: 21

Primordial Energy: 21

Talent Skill: Grand Yin Wind

Companion Form: Fan

Apart from possessing a Life Providence, her attributes had grown to the same level as Truth Listener's. There were no changes in other aspects, with her only skill being Grand Yin Wind.

The Great Yin Spirit Root seemed to have a certain augmentation effect on the Grand Yin Wind. Zhou Wen tested the power of the Grand Yin Wind in-game and with a gentle flap, he sent several black-winged flying ants flying tens of feet away. Furthermore, the wind caused their bodies to be covered in frost, to the point of nearly being frozen into ice sculptures and losing all their combat strength. They were so stiff that they curled into a ball and trembled.

What a potent Grand Yin Wind. Unfortunately, I can only use it once. Zhou Wen realized that the Grand Yin Wind was completely uncontrollable. If he used it once, it would absorb all his Primordial Energy at once without leaving him a single drop.

After advancing to the Legendary stage, Truth Listener and the Banana Fairy became restless. Zhou Wen often sensed their thoughts, hoping that he could release them.

When there was no one around, Zhou Wen would release them to allow them to take a breather. Truth Listener was rather well-behaved. He crouched beside Zhou Wen and

pricked up his four ears to listen to him. It was unknown what he was listening to.

However, Banana Fairy wasn’t that well-behaved. She flew around like a fly on the banana leaf, her mouth smacking away, saying something completely indecipherable.

Thankfully, Zhou Wen didn’t have any other advantages but being sufficiently focused, no matter how noisy the tiny Banana Fairy was beside him, he didn’t seem to hear her. He continued gaming without being affected.

Wang Fei was originally worried that John would cause trouble for Zhou Wen, but John didn’t seem to have any objections to the list of people. Nor did he mention Zhou Wen, as though he had no idea that Zhou Wen existed.

In just three or four days after arriving at Sunset College, John received unanimous praise from the students, especially the female students. They almost thought John was their Prince Charming.

During his sparring; John battled Wei Ge to a tie with his sword techniques, he tied with Hui Haifeng with his melee combat skills, his saber techniques were comparable to Feng Qiuyan’s, and his skills of alacrity were no weaker than Wang Lu’s.

Apart from not really fighting Huang Ji, John and the other four top students of Sunset College were tied. Although they didn’t win, they didn’t lose either.

However, many students believed that John was stronger because he had never used Holy Light Judgment, the Primordial Energy Skill he used to obtain the title of Saint.

A Primordial Energy Skill like the Holy Light Judgment was not something that could be learned with a dimensional crystal. Before that, one had to possess a Covenant Royale physique of the Cape family-one of the six heroes—to absorb the Primordial Energy Skill Crystal needed to master the terrifying Primordial Energy Skill like Holy Light Judgment.

In just a few days, John became synonymous with the words “humility,” “elegance,” “nobility,” and “gentlemanly.” Even Wei Ge, who was popular with female students, was overshadowed by John.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 143 - Dragon Gate Twenty Pieces

Chapter 143 Dragon Gate Twenty Pieces

“Zhou Wen, be careful. That John is terrifying,” Li Xuan said to Zhou Wen with a heavy expression when he arrived at his dorm one night.

“What’s wrong?” Zhou Wen looked at Li Xuan in puzzlement.

“Don’t you find it strange? He definitely knows about you and Liz, but he hasn’t mentioned it in the past four days in school. Don’t you think this person is too sinister?” Li Xuan said.

“Isn’t it better if he doesn’t mention it?” Zhou Wen asked.

“Not mentioning it doesn’t mean he won’t cause trouble for you. Anyway, I think there’s something fishy. You have to be careful and don’t fall into his trap. By the way, it’s best you don’t agree to spar with him. Do you know what Wei Ge said about him?” Li Xuan said.

“I don’t,” Zhou Wen said with a shake of his head.

“Unfathomable,” Li Xuan said before continuing, “Although Wei Ge’s character isn’t great, he’s still quite powerful. If even someone like him views John as unfathomable,

st mean that John’s strength is really terrifying. Unless necessary, it’s best not to fight him.”

“Alright, I’ll remember that.” Zhou Wen nodded in agreement.

As long as John didn’t make trouble for him, he didn’t plan on fighting him.

When it comes to fighting, how can it be more fun than killing monsters in games? It’s not like fighting people can drop equipment or pets, Zhou Wen thought.

After sending Li Xuan off, Zhou Wen continued gaming while lying in bed. When Zhou Wen entered Myriad Buddha Cave again, he killed another Three-Eyed Golden Warrior and actually had a Companion Egg drop.

My Three-Eyed Golden Warrior Companion Egg has finally returned. Zhou Wen was delighted as he hurriedly checked its attributes.

Three-Eyed Golden Warrior: Legendary

Life State: Golden Body

Strength: 18

Speed: 14

Constitution: 18

Primordial Energy: 17

Talent Skill: Invulnerable Golden Body, Golden Palm, Golden Fiendtamer Fist.

Companion Form: Golden Silk Soft Armor

This Three-Eyed Golden Warrior was actually a rare Companion Beast with three skills. Furthermore, its

attributes were even better than Li Xuan’s. It was basically maxed out.

The Three-Eyed Golden Warrior’s Speed wasn’t fast to begin with, so 14 points was its limit. Li Xuan’s was only at 13, even slower than Zhou Wen’s. Its Strength and Primordial Energy were slightly lower than Zhou Wen’s, with only Constitution being equal.

Although its attributes were inferior to his Demonized General, its Golden Body Life Providence made it hardier than the Demonized General. It was an excellent-grade meat shield pet.

With the Three-Eyed Golden Warrior tanking any attacks up ahead, it gave Zhou Wen much more space to maneuver.

As for the Golden Fiendtamer Fist, it seemed to be weaker than Golden Palm, but something was better than nothing.

The Xuanwen Club was finally officially established. In order to celebrate the birth of the club, Li Xuan organized his first club activity and gathered all the members together. He planned on having a training event at a dimensional zone.

Although Gu Dian was only a member in name, Li Xuan still sent him a message, hoping that he might participate.

Zhou Wen and Li Xuan never expected him to join them, but to their surprise, Gu Dian actually came.

“Are you going to Dragon Gate Grotto’s Ancient Yang Cave?” asked Gu Dian.

“That’s right. Shall we go together?” Li Xuan said with a smile.

“Alright.” Gu Dian nodded slightly before standing to the side without speaking to anyone.

Zhou Wen and Li Xuan had roughly understood his personality, so they didn’t mind. After getting Fang Ruoxi and Tian Xiangdong, the five of them set off towards Ancient Yang Cave at Dragon Gate Grotto.

Ancient Yang Cave was considered one of the more famous caves in Dragon Gate Grotto. The famous ancient tablets from the Wei dynastythe Dragon Gate Twenty Pieces-consisted of twenty items. And nineteen of them were in the Ancient Yang Cave.

After it became a dimensional zone, the Dragon Gate Nineteen Pieces also underwent changes, giving birth to a Legendary creature, the Mounted Tablet Beast.

Li Xuan’s organization of the club activity was to hunt the Mounted Tablet Beast together.

Mounted Tablet Beasts looked extremely odd. It was a stone turtle that carried a stone tablet on its back. It moved very slowly, but its body was extremely hard. It was like a Golden Warrior, a Legendary creature that was extremely difficult to kill.

The only difference was that no one liked to kill Golden Warriors. However, Mounted Tablet Beasts were popular for hunting because although it was difficult to kill, they dropped excellent Primordial Energy Skills. Furthermore, the drop rate was rather high.

According to the differences in the words written on the tablet, there were a total of nineteen types. Every Mounted Tablet Beast had a special Primordial Energy Skill. There

were nineteen types that could drop and each one had their own uses and was deeply loved by the students.

As too many students hunted Mounted Tablet Beasts, the school had no choice but to limit entry into the Ancient Yang Cave. They had to have a permit to enter freely.

After Li Xuan used some connections, he obtained the pass to Ancient Yang Cave and organized this event.

There were too many small dungeons in Dragon Gate Grotto. Although Zhou Wen knew of the existence of Ancient Yang Cave, he had never been to it in-game.

Originally he was not interested in the Cave, but he still had to participate in the club's events. Hence, he went along with Li Xuan and company.

The Buddha statues and Buddhist shrines in the Ancient Yang Cave were dazzling. Just as they entered, they saw a moving stone pillar. On careful look, it was a giant turtle carrying a stone tablet crawling on the ground.

"Let me repeat again. When killing the Mounted Tablet Beast, make sure not to touch the Buddha statues or the Buddhist shrines. Otherwise, no one can save you if something bad happens," Li Xuan exhorted again.

"Brother Li, don't worry. We know the rules. We guarantee that we won't break them," Tian Xiangdong said as he patted his chest.

"That's good. After all, there's not much danger in Ancient Yang Cave. The Mounted Tablet Beast crawls very slowly. As long as you don't court death, it probably won't be able to harm you. Everyone split up and do whatever you need to do. You can all find Mounted Tablet Beasts for yourselves." Li

Xuan immediately began as he charged towards the Mounted Tablet Beast.

Gu Dian and Fang Ruoxi went in different directions to search for the Mounted Tablet Beasts hidden in the Ancient Yang Cave.

However, Zhou Wen stood rooted to the ground as he watched Li Xuan attack the Mounted Tablet Beast. At the same time, he looked at the stone tablet text on the back of the Mounted Tablet Beast.

The words on the tablet danced and moved in a strange way. The strokes were full, straight, and filled with spirituality. It had an unbound beauty.

Zhou Wen didn't know calligraphy, but when he saw the words on the tablet, he thought of the mysterious stone monuments he had seen.

The stone tablet on the back of the Mounted Tablet Beast couldn't match the mysterious stone monuments Zhou Wen had seen. Nor did it have any mysterious power lingering on. It was likely something ordinary.

However, after reading through the information regarding Ancient Yang Cave, Zhou Wen's heart stirred. The species of the Mounted Tablet Beast corresponds to the Dragon Gate Nineteen Pieces. Does that mean that at the last piece of the Dragon Gate Twenty Pieces, there's a corresponding dimensional creature and Primordial Energy Skill? But why haven't I heard of any other Mounted Tablet Beasts outside the Ancient Yang Cave?

Zhou Wen checked the information regarding the Dragon Gate Twenty Pieces and discovered that nineteen of them

were in Ancient Yang Cave. Only one piece was located outside Old Dragon Cave at Cixiang Kiln.

Upon seeing this, Zhou Wen couldn’t help but recall something. Wang Lu had previously mentioned that one could hear a dragon’s roar near Old Dragon Cave and that there was a treasure halo that appeared at night. Apparently, it was close to Cixiang Kiln.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 144 - Rising Sun Monument

Chapter 144 Rising Sun Monument

It killed Wei Ge to meet John again, but he had no choice but to take him around to experience campus life at Sunset College.

In the past, Wei Ge had been the center of attention wherever he went. He had been the target of all the girls' passionate gazes. But with John by his side, Wei Ge felt as if his brilliance had been completely overshadowed.

He felt it now as they were touring the campus. There was a large group of girls following them, however, the girls who used to only have eyes for him were now staring unblinkingly at John. Their eyes were almost in the shapes of hearts.

"Is this Sunset College's Rising Sun Monument?" John stood in front of a monument made of white jade and stared at the rows of names on it.

"That's right. This is the Rising Sun Monument. The names of the top ten students of each year's comprehensive test are engraved on it as a way to inspire future students. If they make it onto the rankings several times, there will be a star-shaped mark beside their names. The number of stars tells you how many times the student has had their name appear on the Rising Sun Monument while schooling," said Wei Ge proudly.

He had been on the rankings ever since he was in his sophomore year. Together with the current year, he had

already been on the rankings twice. He was bound to appear on the rankings next year, in his final year.

Only a small group of elites in Sunset College attained such rankings for three consecutive years. This was an illustrious result that one could be proud of.

“President Wei’s cultivation is superb and his sword skills are peerless. I guess you definitely make it onto the rankings?” John asked with a smile.

“I was lucky enough to get on the rankings twice.” Wei Ge pointed at his name on the monument.

“Hui Haifeng, Feng Qiuyan, and Wang Lu are both highly talented, so they should be on this list, right?” John asked again.

“Indeed. They were in the top ten in the comprehensive test this year.” Wei Ge pointed them out one by one, but he could already feel that something was amiss.

“Eh, that’s weird.” John looked at the Sun Rise Monument and suddenly exclaimed in surprise.

Wei Ge had already realized something as he shot a look at John. However, he didn’t follow up on the topic, as if he hadn’t heard John’s words of surprise.

Although Wei Ge didn’t respond, one of the girls following them asked, “What’s so strange, John?”

Wei Ge wanted nothing more than to give the girl a slap, thinking that this woman was truly stupid.

John pointed at the name on the monument and said, “President Wei, you and the others are all elite talents, being

able to advance to the Legendary stage before reaching twenty. It's not surprising that you could make the rankings. However, on this entire Rising Sun Monument, other than one person, all of them are at the Legendary stage. Why is this person's name on it despite being only at the Mortal stage?"

"The person you're talking about is Zhou Wen, right? Although he is only at the Mortal stage, his strength is indeed astonishing. He obtained the stunning results of three perfect scores and one short of perfect at nine during the comprehensive test. He's indeed a genius, so it's not surprising that he made the rankings," the girl from before added.

John pulled up the corners of his mouth and looked at Zhou Wen's name on the monument. "I never expected such a genius to exist in this world. To be able to enter the top ten of Sunset College's comprehensive test at the Mortal stage makes him a truly rare sight. Since I'm here at Sunset College, I have to see him for myself. Otherwise, wouldn't this be a longing regret?"

Wei Ge's expression changed slightly before it immediately reverted to its original state. He looked at John and said, "Zhou Wen is indeed a genius. However, he's still at the Mortal stage. It's probably not appropriate for you to spar with him, right?"

Although Wei Ge didn't have a good impression of Zhou Wen, as the student council president of Sunset College, he still stood in the position of upholding the school's reputation.

John said indifferently, "President Wei, that's not right. There were many experts at Sunset College's comprehensive test.

Even the top twenty-three are probably Legendary experts. For a Mortal stage to be able to defeat so many Legendary experts, and for you, President Wei, Feng Qiuyan, and company, to be similarly ranked in the top ten, isn't it odd that you're now telling me that he doesn't have the ability to fight someone at the Legendary stage? Could it be that Zhou Wen's results weren't obtained by his strength alone? If that's the case, I suggest that his name be promptly removed from the Rising Sun Monument, lest it mars the reputation of Sunset College. Those not in the know might even come to the impression that students of Sunset College only know how to cheat."

Wei Ge's expression changed as he replied firmly, "Zhou Wen's results are real. Students from Sunset College never cheat."

"In that case, I would like to see how this Mortal stage genius managed to enter the top ten of the comprehensive test…" John said with a smile.

Zhou Wen was gaming on his bed when he suddenly heard his phone ring. When he saw that it was a call from Li Xuan, he chose to answer.

"Old Zhou, bad news. That bastard John is too sinister." Li Xuan's resentful voice sounded.

"Calm down. What happened? Tell me slowly." Zhou Wen wasn't flustered at all.

"That bastard is standing in front of the Rising Sun Monument…" Li Xuan recounted what had happened and continued anxiously, "This matter has blown up quite a bit. The school doesn't have a way out, so this matter probably won't be easy to settle."

“Got it.” When Zhou Wen heard the doorbell ring, he said to Li Xuan, “Someone’s pressing the doorbell. It might be Ms. Wang Fei. I’ll talk to you later.”

“What do you plan on doing?” Li Xuan asked again.

“What else can I do if others come knocking at my door?” Zhou Wen hung up after saying that.

Opening the door, it was indeed Wang Fei. She looked at Zhou Wen and sighed. “Zhou Wen…”

Just as she said that, Zhou Wen cut her off. “Ms. Wang, I can fight. Take me there.”

Wang Fei was stunned. Seeing Zhou Wen’s indifferent expression, as though he had already made a decision, she still asked, “Have you decided?”“Yes, don’t worry. Even if I can’t win, I definitely won’t embarrass the school,” Zhou Wen said.

“Just do your best.” Wang Fei didn’t believe that Zhou Wen could defeat John. If possible, she would rather Zhou Wen not fight.

However, the matter had blown up so much that it might even affect the reputation of Sunset College. Regardless of whether it was victory or defeat, Zhou Wen needed to step forward to battle John.

The school held no hopes of Zhou Wen defeating John. They only hoped that he wouldn’t lose too terribly so that they could have a chance of spinning it in a better light.

Wang Fei didn’t wish for Zhou Wen to fight, afraid that the positive attitude he had recently established would crumble from the beating.

John’s family background was better than An Jing’s. His achievements were not much worse than An Jing’s, and might even be better.

Back then, Zhou Wen didn’t even manage to withstand a single blow from An Jing. This time, the outcome wasn’t optimistic either.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 145 - Ten Minutes

Chapter 145 Ten Minutes

“Since you are doubting the standards of our Sunset College students, I’ll fight you.” A cold voice was heard in front of the Rising Sun Monument. Everyone turned their heads and saw the deadpan An Jing approach John.

John said with a smile, “Miss An, I believe you are mistaken. I’m not doubting Sunset College’s teaching ability or strength of its students. I’m very respectful to students like President Wei, Hui Haifeng, Feng Qiuyan, Wang Lu, and you, Miss An. All of you are truly capable students. As for Zhou Wen, I was originally very respectful to him. I wanted to get to know this rare genius, but your attitude has left me somewhat puzzled. This matter had nothing to do with me to begin with, but since I’m an exchange student here at Sunset College, I’m considered part of it during this period of time. I don’t wish for the college’s reputation to be sullied.”

“You don’t dare to fight me?” She stared at John quietly.

John continued with a smile. “Miss An, are you upholding Zhou Wen’s honor or Sunset College’s? Could it be that this Zhou Wen is truly lacking in strength and cheated to obtain a spot that should have belonged to another student?”

John’s doubts caused the students of Sunset College who were watching to whisper amongst themselves. Clearly, everyone became suspicious.

Previously, when Zhou Wen obtained the spot, there were already people who suspected him. However, there was no

evidence back then, so no one mentioned it. Now that John mentioned it, the previous suspicions were magnified.

“There’s absolutely no such thing. Our Sunset College categorically forbids cheating. Once they are discovered, they are immediately expelled,” an official from the college hurriedly explained. However, no matter what he said, he was unable to dispel the suspicions of those students.

“Unless Zhou Wen comes out to fight me to prove to everyone that he isn’t any worse than the other students in the top ten, it’s hardly convincing,” John said with a smile.

“How shall it be proven? By defeating you?” An Jing was about to say something when she suddenly heard a voice.

Everyone turned their heads and saw Zhou Wen walk over and stand in front of the Rising Sun Monument.

“It might be a little too harsh on you to talk about defeating me. Weapons or empty-handed, strength, speed, and endurance, or even if it’s a battle of Companion Beasts, you can choose any one type. As long as you can last ten minutes without being defeated, it’s your win.” John was forcing Zhou Wen to have no way out.

“That bastard John is so sinister,” Li Xuan cursed under his breath.

Now, he finally understood why John hadn’t directly challenged Zhou Wen when he first came to the college. His intentions were extremely sinister.

If Zhou Wen were to fight John as one of the students who interacted with him in the beginning, he could just admit defeat if he wasn’t his match.

But now that things had reached this stage, if Zhou Wen couldn’t hold on for more than ten minutes, not only would Zhou Wen lose face, but even Sunset College’s reputation would be tarnished.

Therefore, Zhou Wen had to persist for ten minutes regardless. And in these ten minutes, John could do whatever he wanted.

John definitely wouldn’t dare kill Zhou Wen at Sunset College, but he could teach him a lesson that he would never forget.

An Jing naturally saw through John’s intentions and said to Zhou Wen, “Zhou Wen, you don’t need to prove anything to others.”

“Since you are so lacking in confidence, how about this? I won’t do a thing. As long as you can last ten minutes without being defeated in front of one of my Companion Beasts, I’ll count it as you winning. How can a top ten student of Sunset College’s comprehensive test not be able to complete such a simple matter?” John looked at Zhou Wen mockingly.

“Ten minutes?” Zhou Wen asked John.

“That’s right. Just ten minutes.” John couldn’t help but smile when he saw Zhou Wen about to agree.

“Ten minutes is too long.” Zhou Wen shook his head.

“Oh, then how long do you think you can last?” John looked at Zhou Wen with piqued interest. It was beyond his expectations that Zhou Wen was actually showing signs of weakness in front of so many people.

“One minute.” Zhou Wen thought seriously before giving a number.

With Zhou Wen’s words, the surrounding Sunset College students felt ashamed. After all, Zhou Wen was in the top ten of the comprehensive test, so for him to admit that he could only last a minute in front of John’s Companion Beast was a disgrace to Sunset College.

“A minute is indeed short, but since you have spoken, let’s do it,” John said with a smile that had no mirth in it.

John thought to himself, Even if it’s only a minute, I can still cripple you. How dare you treat my sister that way. I will definitely settle this score with you.

There were special combat grounds in the school. Under the guidance of the college staff, the two of them arrived at the venue.

This matter had long spread across Sunset College. Many students had come to watch, but there were very few counselors. Apart from Wang Fei and a few other counselors and staff who maintained order at the scene, there was basically no sight of the college’s upper management.

The college’s upper management could roughly guess how Zhou Wen had entered the top ten. However, they didn’t hold it against him because of the An family. From their point of view, Zhou Wen was bound to lose to John in combat, so no one wanted to embarrass themselves here.

“Will Zhou Wen be alright?” Fang Ruoxi asked worriedly.

“Old Zhou will definitely be fine if it’s just a minute, but…” Li Xuan said.

“But what?” Fang Ruoxi asked.

“I have a nagging feeling that things aren’t that simple. Old Zhou’s personality seems mild and uncompetitive, but he’s a very proud person deep down. He shouldn’t…” Li Xuan didn’t continue.

When Li Xuan saw Feng Qiuyan sitting by the side, he asked, “Little Feng, you fought with John. What are your thoughts?”

“John is very strong, a minute will be very difficult,” Feng Qiuyan said.

Li Xuan, Fang Ruoxi, and Tian Xiangdong were alarmed. Tian Xiangdong said in disbelief, “Is John so strong that Zhou Wen won’t even last a minute?”

Feng Qiuyan said calmly, “It’s indeed difficult to defeat John in a minute, but Coach might have his own ideas.”

Tian Xiangdong’s and Li Xuan’s mouths widened so much that an egg could be stuffed into them. They looked at Feng Qiuyan like he was an alien.

“Did I hear wrongly just now? Are you saying that Zhou Wen wants to defeat John in a minute? Is that what Zhou Wen meant by a minute?” Tian Xiangdong felt his mind become a mess.

However, Li Xuan slapped his thigh. “I knew it. How could Old Zhou be so cowardly? That’s right, that must be the case.”

As the few of them spoke, John had already summoned his Companion Beast. Many of the onlookers shouted its name when they saw it.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 146 - One Minute Is Too Long

Chapter 146 One Minute Is Too Long

“Knight of the Round Table!” Li Xuan cried out softly when he saw John summon his Companion Beast.

Among the many dimensional zones in the West district, Camelot was undoubtedly one of the most famous.

There was only one dimensional creature in Camelot—the legendary Knights of the Round Table. They were rare in number, and each one of them had different abilities.

To be able to obtain a Knight of the Round Table Companion Beast was like a dream to Legendary cultivators in the West district.

In the West district, a Knight of the Round Table Companion Beast was synonymous with being invincible at the Legendary stage. It was not only because they were powerful, but also because of another important reason: Other than a Knight of the Round Table’s own abilities, they were also one of the few Companion Beasts who could be augmented by their owner’s strength.

The more powerful the person with a Knight of the Round Table was, the more it boosted the Knight. This made him almost invincible at the Legendary stage.

There was a very famous West district expert who had used Galahad of the Knights of the Round Table to be unparalleled in Companion Beast combat in the West district.

John’s Knight was riding a black horse, carrying a steel spear that made him look extremely majestic. He wore a medal signifying his status as a knight of the Round Table.

“That’s Holy Spear Knight of the Knights of the Round Table. Legend has it that he corresponds to the Round Table knight, Lamorak. He’s one of the three most powerful Round Table knights. His usage of spears is nearly invincible. He once defeated thirty knights single-handedly and is an extremely powerful Legendary Companion Beast. With John’s augmentation of the Round Table knight, it wouldn’t be too much to say that he’s one of the strongest Companion Beasts at the Legendary stage.” Wang Lu identified the Round Table knight’s origins.

“Is Zhou Wen alright?” Li Xuan began to worry. It wouldn’t be easy for Zhou Wen to defeat such a powerful Companion Beast in a minute.

Wang Fei was also astonished when she saw the Holy Spear Knight.

There were very few dimensional creatures in Camelot, so the number of Companion Beasts produced was limited. Every Round Table knight’s owner was very famous, so it was unexpected for John to have one.

However, Round Table knights were usually one of a kind. She had never heard of two Round Table knights appearing at the same time. According to what she knew, the Holy Spear Knight originally belonged to an Epic expert in the West district, but now, it was appearing with John.

Although Sunset College also produced knight-type Companion Beasts in the dimensional zones, they were naturally inferior to the world-renowned Knights of the Round Table.

John looked at Zhou Wen and said, “This is my Companion Beast Holy Spear Knight. He only has one active Primordial Energy Skill—Spear of the Holy Steed, but the might of this spear is nearly invincible amongst its peers. However, since you are one of the top ten students at Sunset College, it shouldn’t be difficult for you to last a minute under his spear, right?”

“Are… are you ready?” John narrowed his eyes and asked Zhou Wen.

“I’ll be done soon.” Zhou Wen had planned on using the banana fan to just blow away John’s Companion Beast, but after seeing the Holy Spear Knight, he dispelled the thought.

As he spoke, Zhou Wen extended his hand and beckoned. A crimson beam of light flew out, materializing in front of him to form a red-armored knight on a red horse. It was a mighty knight that resembled a devil.

“A Demonized General… No… It’s not an ordinary Demonized General. It’s a word-engraved Demonized General… Why is the word engraved on its helmet a little odd…?” The students from Sunset College immediately recognized the Mutated Demonized General and began stirring.

Even Wang Fei was somewhat surprised. Zhou Wen actually obtained a word-engraved Demonized General as a Companion Beast? Isn’t his luck too good? How many days has it been since he obtained the Tiger Cage Pass’s entry pass? He actually managed to have a Mutated Demonized General’s Companion Egg drop. Furthermore, that word-engraved Demonized General is a little odd. Why isn’t the helmet engraved with Blade, Paper, Fist, but Demon?

“F*ck, Old Zhou is amazing. He managed to obtain a Mutated Demonized General’s Companion Egg without anyone knowing. However, can itl beat a Holy Spear Knight?” Li Xuan said.

“I don’t know. In theory, Holy Spear Knight should be stronger. After all, he can be augmented by his owner’s power. In contrast, the Mutated Demonized General doesn’t have this ability. He can only rely on himself,” said Wang Lu in thought.

“I’m ready now,” Zhou Wen said.

“A knight versus a knight? That’s interesting. I’ll show you what a real knight is.” John proudly raised his finger and gently swiped it. “The time starts now.”

As though he had received an emperor’s order, the Holy Spear Knight lifted up his spear and launched an attack at Zhou Wen and the Mutated Demonized General.

As the charge increased in speed, a terrifying spear beam emitted from the Holy Spear Knight’s spear. The spear beam pierced through the air, and formed a swirl that was visible to the naked eye. It was like a hurricane that effused a terrifying holy luster that charged at the Mutated Demonized General.

Zhou Wen didn’t make any moves as the Mutated Demonized General charged out as well. The red-armored spear was like a red flame.

The white and red horses charged forward at the same time, like two hurricanes sweeping through the battlefield, hitting each other in an instant.

Bam!

The red spear clashed with the holy spear. The terrifying power tore through the air, creating a piercing explosion.

This strike was actually a tie. John couldn’t help but frown slightly as he couldn’t accept the outcome.

The Holy Spear Knight failed to gain the upper hand despite being augmented by his powers. It left him somewhat astonished by the power of the Mutated Demonized General.

The spectating students were also excited. The Mutated Demonized General was actually on par with the famous Knight of the Round Table. It made them yearn for one and wished that they could head over to Tiger Cage Pass to have a Mutated Demonized General’s Companion Egg drop.

However, just as everyone thought that the clash had ended, the Mutated Demonized General’s other hand clenched into a fist and bombarded the Holy Spear Knight.

Bam!

Under everyone’s shocked gaze, the Holy Spear Knight’s body was sent flying from the horse’s back. He flew more than ten meters before landing on the ground. The knight lost grip of his spear as it fell far away. The heavy armor on his chest also cracked, while his helmet rolled to the side.

Before the Holy Spear Knight could stand up again, the Mutated Demonized General on the horse that resembled a devil, struck out with another palm. A blood-red saber beam slashed through the air, chopping off the Holy Spear Knight’s head.

Everything happened in the blink of an eye, so fast that everyone stared in shock. Even John himself had yet to

react. His Holy Spear Knight had been killed the moment the face-off began.

“One minute… From the looks of it, it’s still too long…” Zhou Wen looked at the Holy Spear Knight’s corpse and spoke without expression.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 147 - Rebellious Knight

Chapter 147 Rebellious Knight

“What’s that? Was I seeing things? That Mutated Demonized General seems to have used two Primordial Energy Skills of fist and blade at the same time, am I right? Is there such a Demonized General?” A student from Sunset College stared at the scene with widened eyes.

“Haha, what Knight of the Round Table. He’s far inferior to our Demonized General.”

“Ten minutes was indeed too long. A minute was too long as well. What Zhou Wen said was right. Haha.”

“I knew it. How could someone from Sunset College cheat? Zhou Wen’s results must be real. With this Companion Beast, he’s qualified to be in the top ten.”

“Isn’t Zhou Wen at the Mortal stage? Can a Mortal stage use a Legendary Companion Beast?”

As the students were in a flurry of discussion, Wang Fei wore an odd look as well. What’s going on with that Demonized General? It has both fist and blade techniques. Is this another mutation of the Mutated Demonized General?

“Old Zhou, amazing. The Mutated Demonized General is truly powerful,” Li Xuan said with a laugh.

John’s eyes narrowed as he stared at Zhou Wen and said slowly, “Sunset College is indeed worthy of its reputation. I’ve underestimated you. I lost just now. You have the right to fight me. Do you dare fight me seriously in battle?”

“Tch, I thought a saint from the West district would be impressive. So they are just people who can’t afford to lose,” Li Xuan curled his lips and said disdainfully.

“John, you’ve already lost,” An Jing said coldly.

John remained unmoved as he continued staring at Zhou Wen. “Are you afraid of accepting the real challenge?”

“You’ve already lost. I’m not interested in people who have been previously defeated,” Zhou Wen said calmly before turning to leave.

John’s expression turned ugly as he clenched his fists tightly and stared intently at Zhou Wen’s back. “Do you dare to fight me with the Cape family’s honor on the line as well as this Rebellious Knight Companion Egg?”

Those who had heard of the name Rebellious Knight were alarmed. Even Zhou Wen stopped in his tracks and turned to look at John.

“The Rebellious Knight you mentioned is the one that’s strongest among the Knights of the Round Table?” Zhou Wen asked.

“That’s right. The most powerful Knight of the Round Table- Lancelot. If you can defeat me, you can have him.” John took out a Companion Egg.

The egg emitted resplendent holy light and the flawless shell that resembled jade had the marks of a sword and

shield.

Zhou Wen stared at the Companion Egg and was truly tempted.

Lancelot was known as the strongest Round Table knight, but it was also because of his existence that it fractured the Knights of the Round Table and the legend of King Arthur.

He was somewhat similar to a General Lu Bu in the history of East district. They were all tragedies that were a result of a woman and eventually ended a great legend.

Besides other things, Lancelot was indeed an invincible Round Table knight of that era. If the Rebellious Knight really corresponded to Lancelot, then it was likely to be even stronger than the Holy Spear Knight that John had used.

Zhou Wen didn’t doubt the authenticity of the Rebellious Knight Companion Egg. The Cape family was one of the Six League Heroes’ family clans, so for John to dare say such things about betting on the Cape’s family’s honor, there was no need to use a fake Legendary Companion Egg to ruin the reputation of the family.

“Since you are betting with Rebellious Knight, I can give you a chance. However, victory and defeat require a clear definition. You can’t just let me kill you here, can you?” Zhou Wen spoke very seriously.

When people heard this, they felt like Zhou Wen was looking down on John, as though he was saying that John would lose without a doubt and that he would go back on his word when he lost.

John’s eyes twitched a few times, but he suppressed the anger in his heart.

He had paid a heavy price for underestimating Zhou Wen. Now, he needed to fight him again. He believed that it was easy for him to defeat him with his strength. A real battle wasn’t as simple as relying on a powerful Companion Beast. John was confident that he could repress Zhou Wen and his Companion Beast.

Taking a deep breath, he tried to calm himself down and maintain his usual composure. He took out a pen and drew a circle on his chest.

“It’s your victory as long as you can touch this area,” John said as he pointed at the circle on his chest.

“Alright.” Zhou Wen nodded, but he had no intention of drawing a circle on his chest. It was as though he was saying that he wouldn’t lose.

When John saw Zhou Wen acting in such a manner, he felt even more infuriated. However, it also matched his thoughts. He had no intention of easily defeating Zhou Wen.

Not only did he want to defeat Zhou Wen, he also wanted Zhou Wen to pay the price for the matter regarding Liz.

When Wang Fei heard that Zhou Wen had agreed to fight John again, she couldn’t help but frown.

Zhou Wen had defeated John by surprise with a powerful Companion Beast. He should have quit while he was ahead, but now, he had been enticed by the Companion Egg and agreed to the battle. It was somewhat irrational.

“Feng Qiuyan, in your opinion, what are the chances of Zhou Wen winning?” Li Xuan asked Feng Qiuyan.

Although he was most familiar with Zhou Wen, he didn’t know much about John. Furthermore, he was biased, so he couldn’t make an accurate judgment.

Feng Qiuyan pondered for a moment before saying, “Coach is indeed very strong. If both of them are at the Legendary stage, I think that Coach will definitely win. But if Coach hasn’t advanced to the Legendary stage yet, it’s hard to say. After all, they will be one level apart.”

As he spoke, John walked towards Zhou Wen. At the same time, a golden light condensed on him, transforming into a golden armor that enveloped his entire body.

John clenched his right hand slightly as a gorgeous sword with embedded gems appeared in his hand.

He was tall and handsome. With the gold armor and long sword as a foil for him, he looked mighty and domineering, like a legendary hero knight that saved the world.

With John’s footsteps, his entire body and sword emitted a strange glow. The light seemed to condense into something corporeal that could be seen with the naked eye.

“Is that the famous battle aura Primordial Energy Art of the West district?” Li Xuan and company widened their eyes as they looked at John.

They had only seen battle aura in videos and teaching materials. This was the first time they had seen it with their own eyes.

“Battle aura Primordial Energy Arts are rather common in the West district. It’s somewhat different from our East district’s Primordial Energy Arts. It’s not as converged as our Primordial Energy Art. Typical battle aura arts are more

domineering. Once one reaches the Legendary stage, they will have the ability to release their battle aura which has destructive power and is also slightly stronger than most of the East district’s Primordial Energy Arts, Wang Lu said.

At this moment, John, who was less than ten meters away from Zhou Wen, suddenly sped up. He leaped up and slashed at Zhou Wen with both hands wielding his sword.

All the battle aura in him condensed on the sword and transformed into a sword beam that was several meters long. It instantly slashed at Zhou Wen’s head.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 148 - Super Meat Shield

Chapter 148 Super Meat Shield

That strike was too fast and powerful. It was rare to see a sword beam several meters long in the East district.

Although there were quite a number of Primordial Energy Arts and Primordial Energy Skills that allowed the projection of force in the East district, they were usually more converged, so there weren't any exaggerated effects.

However, to be able to slash out a sword beam that was several meters long meant that John's strength was indeed extraordinary. Typically, the West district Legendary cultivators who cultivated battle aura and similar Primordial Energy Skills would only produce sword beams that were about a meter long. To have one spanning several meters was truly terrifying.

"This John didn't reveal his true strength when he was sparring with us. That strike was much stronger than what he previously demonstrated," Feng Qiuyan said.

"Will Old Zhou, be alright?" Li Xuan was alarmed when he saw the might of the strike.

It wasn't only Li Xuan. Many of the spectating students were worried for Zhou Wen when they saw such an exaggerated

strike, afraid that he would be split into two by the sword.

The two counselors who were in charge of refereeing were already prepared to save Zhou Wen at moment's notice.

Zhou Wen looked at the cleave without any intention of fighting. With a casual wave of his hand, a golden beam of light flashed as a ferocious-looking Golden Warrior appeared in front of him.

The mighty Golden Warrior completely shielded Zhou Wen's body as it raised its palm to meet John's terrifying battle aura sword beam.

Clang!

An earth-shattering metallic clang sounded. The battle aura golden beam shattered like broken glass in the palm of the three-eyed warrior. The visual impact it dealt on the students made many of them crane their necks to see.

John's sword cleaved onto the Three-Eyed Golden Warrior's palm, but it failed to proceed further with the huge palm in the way.

"Holy sh*t, Three-Eyed Golden Warrior! That guy actually had another Three-Eyed Golden Warrior drop!" Li Xuan felt as if he was going mad.

Zhou Wen had a Three-Eyed Golden Warrior drop not too long ago. Back then he gave it to Li Xuan and had said that he could get one to drop for himself if he needed it.

Li Xuan had scoffed at it. The Three-Eyed Golden Warrior was so rare that people didn't usually encounter one in months. Even if one did, the chances of a Companion Egg dropping was pathetic.

However, how long had it been? Zhou Wen had actually managed to produce another Three-Eyed Diamond? It made Li Xuan suspect that Zhou Wen had reincarnated ten times as a virgin. Otherwise, how could he have such good luck? The heavens had to be compensating him for the miseries in his past lives.

Clang! Clang! Clang!

John unleashed a flurry of slashes with his long sword, but they were all blocked by the Three-Eyed Golden Warrior. Even if it directly hit the Three-Eyed Golden Warrior, it merely left a faint mark.

The Three-Eyed Golden Warrior's Golden Body and Invulnerable Golden Power made its physical defenses stand at the peak of the Legendary stage. The only weakness was its third eye. Unless the third eye was hit, even Zhou Wen himself would find it difficult to injure it.

"Three-Eyed Golden Warrior, Mutated Demonized General. Zhou Wen is just too enviable. Those are Companion Beasts that can't even be bought with money!"

"Ignoring everything else, Zhou Wen's Companion Beasts are truly powerful, but he should have advanced to the Legendary stage. Otherwise, how could he incubate such a powerful Legendary Companion Beast?"

"The Heavens are unfair. Just give me one of the Three-Eyed Golden Warrior or Mutated Demonized General."

"That punk, John, must be feeling depressed. After slashing so many times, he hasn't even managed to injure the Three-Eyed Golden Warrior. How can he fight Zhou Wen?"

The students discussed fervently, mostly envious of Zhou Wen for having two rare Legendary Companion Beasts.

John originally believed that with his powerful strength, it wouldn’t be difficult for him to kill the Companion Beast in front of him. He wanted to kill Zhou Wen’s beloved Companion Beast just like Zhou Wen had killed Holy Spear Knight. He wanted Zhou Wen to experience what it felt like to lose a Companion Beast before dealing with him.

But very quickly, John’s expression turned extremely ugly. This was because he knew that even if he used all his strength, there was no way he could hurt the Companion Beast in front of him. It was a meat shield-type Companion Beast with powerful defense. It would be meaningless if he continued fighting. It would only be a waste of his Primordial Energy.

It was already too late by the time he realized this. His Primordial Energy at the Legendary stage was limited, and he had already expended most of it.

Wang Fei looked at the Three-Eyed Golden Warrior standing in front of Zhou Wen in a daze. He had managed to have two such Companion Beasts-ones that might not even be purchasable with money, drop in such a short period of time.

With her relationship with Ouyang Lan, she naturally knew that Zhou Wen hadn’t accepted the An family’s help. For him to obtain such a Companion Beast, it was definitely something he had obtained on his own.

This fellow actually managed to kill Mutated Demonized Generals and Three-Eyed Golden Warriors. He’s probably no longer at the Mortal stage, right? Wang Fei looked at Zhou Wen and suddenly felt infuriated.

She had worked so hard to help Zhou Wen grow stronger, but who knew that Zhou Wen had already advanced to the Legendary stage? To think she had been worried for him, afraid that he would lose too terribly.

This punk just needs to be punished. I should intensify the level of his training in the future, Wang Fei thought viciously.

While feeling indignant, Wang Fei felt somewhat excited. Before Zhou Wen entered Sunset College, he was definitely at the Mortal stage. In just a short span of time, he had already advanced to the Legendary stage. Furthermore, he had managed to kill such powerful Legendary creatures in Tiger Cage Pass and the Myriad Buddha Cave.

Such strength was worthy of the word “genius.” If he were to be properly trained in the future, she might really be able to produce a great cultivator.

Sis Lan sure has sharp eyes. Zhou Wen’s talent is indeed not bad and his luck isn’t bad. If he can obtain a special physique in the Holy Land, he might really have the chance to step into the Mythical stage in the future. Wang Fei felt her heart beat faster when she thought of the possibility of producing a Mythical expert. Her cheeks flushed a little red from the rapid circulation of her blood.

John had already stopped attacking. He wanted to retreat and recover his expended Primordial Energy before circling around the Three-Eyed Golden Warrior to attack Zhou Wen.

He knew very well that such super meat shield-type Companion Beasts weren’t fast at all. With his speed and movement techniques, it wasn’t difficult for him to circle around the Three-Eyed Golden Warrior. If he hadn’t wanted to kill Zhou Wen’s Companion Beast, he wouldn’t have been placed in such a passive position.

However, the moment he retreated, Zhou Wen, who had been standing behind the Three-Eyed Golden Warrior, suddenly moved. Like a ghost, he chased up to the retreating John and extended his palm to strike at his chest.

John was alarmed and furious. Zhou Wen had grasped the perfect opportunity when he was retreating. His strength was receding and his center of gravity was shifted backward, making it impossible for him to counterattack.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 149 - The Might of a Flap

Chapter 149 The Might of a Flap

Light patterns on John’s chest emerged and turned into a warrior raising a shield in front of him.

Zhou Wen struck the tower shield with his palm, but only managed to make the warrior retreat half a step.

John’s expression was cold as his Primordial Energy churned. His hair flared up and he had a crown-shaped mark of light on his forehead.

Zhou Wen was no stranger to this mark. It belonged to one of the six heroes, the Holy Emperor’s hero mark, which also represented the Holy Emperor’s special physique—the Holy Emperor Body.

John’s current condition was a sign that the Holy Emperor Body was being activated. Then, there was no need to guess what John would do next.

“Oh no, John is actually going to use Holy Light Judgment in a spar like this?” An Jing’s expression changed drastically, but it was too late to help.

Others might not know how terrifying Holy Light Judgment was, but An Jing had seen the terror of the Holy Light Judgment in the An family’s database. Although John

definitely couldn’t reach the level of the Holy Emperor, a Primordial Energy Skill like Holy Light Judgment was extremely terrifying. It was difficult for opponents of the same level to resist it.

Indeed, John clasped his fingers together as he raised his arms and slashed at Zhou Wen.

As he moved, a dazzling glow like the sun burst out from his tightly-locked hands, transforming into a huge blade of light that slashed down.

The blade of light was more than twenty meters long and it was extremely fast. It cleaved down at Zhou Wen like it was a manifestation of lightning, reaching him almost instantaneously.

At that moment, John, who was emitting holy light, looked like a representative of God in the mortal world. He used the power of God to judge the guilty.

Not good… The two counselors who were watching the scene phased away at the same time, hoping to save Zhou Wen before Holy Light Judgment landed.

The spectating students stood up. This attack was too terrifying, one that was far beyond the typical Legendary stage. If Zhou Wen couldn’t withstand it, he would probably be killed by this strike.

A cold look flashed in Zhou Wen’s eyes, but he didn’t have any intention of dodging. Instead, he advanced and extended his hand and beckoned. A small palm-sized fan that resembled jadeite appeared in his hand as he flapped it towards the approaching John who seemed to be delivering God’s punishment.

Bam!

Under the shocked looks of the crowd, the terrifying blade of light—the manifestation of Holy Light Judgment—was shattered like glass in a hurricane. John’s glowing body was sent flying by the fan and slammed into the tempered glass that lined the borders of the arena and shattered it.

Instantly, the entire venue fell silent. Everyone stared wide-eyed at John, who was struggling to get up from amidst the glass shards.

He was unable to get up even after repeated struggles. His body was still curled up as he shivered, like a creature that was about to freeze to death in an ice cellar.

Bam!

Zhou Wen walked in front of John and stepped on his chest. He looked down at him and said coldly, “Do you want to do it again? I can give you another chance.”

John was furious and embarrassed. He had the reputation of being a saint in the West district and was known to be invincible among peers of the same stage. He had never suffered such humiliation in Covenant College. In his anger, anxiety, and embarrassment, together with the injuries caused by the Grand Yin Wind, he spat out a mouthful of blood and passed out.

The two counselors who had rushed in to rescue Zhou Wen were taken aback, momentarily unable to recover from their shock. They had rushed in for a situation completely different from the outcome. It left them at a loss.

“Counselors, I’ll have to trouble you with the rest.” Zhou Wen didn’t care if John was dead or alive as he took out the

Round Table knight Companion Egg from John’s backpack and bowed slightly at the two counselors.

“Alright.” One of the counselors finally snapped back to attention and quickly went up to check on John’s injuries.

After all, John was a descendant of the Cape family, and he had inherited the physique of a hero. If he died at Sunset College, it would be a huge problem.

Zhou Wen wasn’t fazed by this and left after taking the Companion Egg.

“What just happened?”

“Damn, I didn’t see clearly what was going on just now. Why was John, who was like a god descending to the mortal world, sent flying?”

“I saw it. Zhou Wen waved a green fan in his hand at John, sending his sword beam flying together with him.

“That John looks quite scary, but why is he so weak? He can’t even withstand one strike.”

“Zhou Wen sure is terrifying when it comes to strength. Although he relied on the powers of his Companion Beasts, they are still a part of his strength.”

“This Zhou Wen’s background is probably extraordinary. A typical family student wouldn’t have so many powerful Companion Beasts even if they advanced to the Legendary stage.”

After Zhou Wen left, the students snapped to their senses and began discussing excitedly. The main topic was Zhou

Wen’s Companion Beasts, and the most discussed topic was the Companion Beast which manifested as a green fan.

“Old Zhou, you finally made a name for yourself. You sent Saint John flying with a fan. It’s simply exhilarating. What kind of Companion Beast is that fan of yours? It’s really too powerful,” Li Xuan said to Zhou Wen excitedly as they walked to the dorm.

“He’s just too weak.” Zhou Wen didn’t answer Li Xuan’s question. It wasn’t easy to explain the Banana Fairy’s origins, and Zhou Wen didn’t want to tax his brain to fabricate a story, much less deceive his friend.

Li Xuan didn’t ask further either as the two returned to the dorm.

John’s defeat at Sunset College had not only caused a stir at Sunset College, but also caused a great stir in Covenant College.

John, a formerly undefeated hero’s successor, one who had the title of saint, had been beaten up by someone at Sunset College. Furthermore, the person wasn’t the strongest student at Sunset College. The fact that he barely entered the top ten rankings made it clearly unacceptable to them.

For a moment, the discussion forums of Covenant College seemed to explode. Some people claimed that John was not fit to have the title of a saint, nor was he worthy of being the successor of Holy Emperor.

People also said that John should work harder at his cultivation before defeating Zhou Wen and reclaim his glory.

Zhou Wen wasn’t aware of this, nor was he in the mood to care. He had just hatched the Rebellious Knight and was

admiring his attributes.

Rebellious Knight: Legendary

Legendary Life Providence: Fate Knight

Strength: 19

Speed: 19

Constitution: 19

Primordial Energy: 19

Talent Skill: Cross Sword, Everlasting Shield, Holy Steed Summoning, Holy Steed Battle Aura

Companion Form: None

It was a Companion Beast with four skills and all its stats reached Overdrive at 19 points. It could be said to be an excellent-grade existence among Legendary Companion Beasts. Its attributes were even more impressive than the Mutated Demonized General.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 150 - Restriction City

Chapter 150 Restriction City

Wang Fei hadn’t been in a good mood recently. Apparently, she hadn’t been in a good mood ever since she had Zhou Wen as a student.

Zhou Wen’s defeat of John had cheered her up for a period of time, but soon, there was no more joy in her.

She originally believed that Zhou Wen would establish his confidence, stop giving up on himself, and become a hardworking student after defeating John.

However, the truth was completely opposite to what she had imagined. Since Zhou Wen had defeated John, he hadn’t returned to the dimensional zones and just cooped himself in his dorm all day.

According to Wang Fei’s investigations, although she didn’t know what he was doing in the dorm, Zhou Wen’s sunbathing every morning while holding his phone didn’t escape her notice. He was clearly playing a game.

Damn you, Zhou Wen. You’re like a donkey Every time I whip you twice, you’ll take two steps. If I don’t whip you, you just stay there and roll around. Do you really think I can’t do

anything about you? The more Wang Fei thought about it, the angrier she became.

She originally believed that Zhou Wen had finally snapped out of his doldrums, but to her surprise, he immediately returned to his original state after the crisis passed. It was like dowsing Wang Fei's enthusiasm with cold water.

Wang Fei was clearly not someone who could let matters pass. Therefore, she made it her mission to completely free Zhou Wen from the terrible habit of gaming. She wanted him to completely quit his online addiction.

Of course, the reason Wang Fei was so adamant about it was that she didn't want Zhou Wen's talent to be wasted.

He thinks he's impressive just because he defeated John? He's still far from invincible. Furthermore, he relied on his Companion Beasts, not his own abilities… With this in mind, Wang Fei's eyes suddenly lit up. She couldn't help but smile as she revealed a bizarre smile. She had another idea once again.

It wasn't that Zhou Wen didn't deliberately go to Tiger Cage Pass. He was just too famous. Recently whenever he went out, there were always students he didn't know coming up to talk to him.

Zhou Wen couldn't ignore others when they came to greet him out of goodwill, but with so many students doing so, he had no time to focus on gaming.

In addition, his Demonized General and Three-Eyed Golden Warrior had already been revealed, so there was no need for him to pretend to head to the dimensional zones. He might as well stay in his dormitory to play games.

Zhou Wen originally believed that he could game in peace, but the new homework mission that Wang Fei assigned washed his plans down the drain.

“Old Zhou, our counselor is treating us, ordinary students, as special admissions students. The homework mission she assigned us is only given to those special admissions students in past years,” Li Xuan complained after seeing the homework mission.

“What kind of place is Restriction City?” Zhou Wen asked as he looked at the information on the homework mission.

Their new homework mission was to hunt ten bronze beasts in Restriction City, but Zhou Wen had never heard of a dimensional zone known as Restriction City.

Li Xuan said, “Restriction City is one of the underground cities in Luoyang and is one of the few that’s right at the bottom. It isn’t considered dangerous, and there are quite a number of dimensional creatures at the Mortal stage in there. The highest-level ones are only Legendary creatures. However, there’s something very special about Restriction City. There’s no way to use a Companion Beast there. It’s impossible to summon them or use their companion form.”

“In other words, we need to use our strength to kill ten Legendary creatures?” Zhou Wen understood what Li Xuan meant.

“That’s right. This mission has very high standards required of one’s own strength. In the past, only special admissions students received this mission. I never expected that this year, our class would actually be given such a homework mission. I’m afraid most of the students will fail. The students in our class must be wailing in despair now,” Li Xuan said.

“Is this bronze beast very difficult to kill?” Zhou Wen asked in puzzlement.

Although most of the students were still at the Mortal stage, the mission allowed for up to four people to complete the mission. With the collective strength of four students, killing a Legendary creature wasn’t too difficult unless they encountered a creature as powerful as a Mutated Demonized General.

Most of the students had completed the previous mission of killing ordinary Demonized Generals.

“It’s not easy to kill. According to the information, the various attributes of the bronze beasts are pretty good. They do not have any obvious weaknesses. Although they aren’t considered strong among the Legendary stage, they are extremely difficult to deal with. Under the circumstances of not being able to use a Companion Beast, it’s still fine for us at the Legendary stage, but it’s probably very difficult for those Mortal-stage students to accomplish it,” Li Xuan said with a smile.

“Let’s go. Let’s head to Restriction City.” Zhou Wen suddenly stood up and pulled Li Xuan out.

“Why are you suddenly so pumped up? Aren’t you gaming?” Li Xuan was puzzled. Zhou Wen had never been so enthusiastic before.

Zhou Wen said, “Since most of our students are unable to complete the homework mission, don’t you think that they will spend money to buy my strategy if I can figure out a strategy?” Zhou Wen said with lit eyes.

“Do you lack money?” Li Xuan was rendered speechless.

“Yes.” Zhou Wen nodded seriously.

“Why do you need money? How much do you need?” Li Xuan asked again.

“I wish to invest in Huang Ji’s game. I’ve previously chatted with him and the first round of investment requires a million bucks for him to first create a simplified version. Development will continue when I have more money,” Zhou Wen said.

“Are you crazy? What era are we in now? You actually want to invest in developing a game? Are you going to develop it for old people? Young people these days have more and more invested in dimensional zones. Apart from those old people who have never cultivated before, who else would be in the mood to play games?” Li Xuan said.

“Me,” Zhou Wen said with a smile.

“That’s what depresses me. You game all day, so how are you this strong?” Li Xuan was indeed depressed. On the surface, he appeared to be enjoying himself, but he cultivated hard in private. However, compared to Zhou Wen, his progress was clearly much slower.

“I game to become stronger,” Zhou Wen said seriously.

“F*ck off. Stop pulling my leg. I won’t fall for your trick.” Li Xuan didn’t raise the issue of money again. If Zhou Wen really needed it, he wouldn’t mind helping him. A million wasn’t a huge sum to him.

However, Zhou Wen had indulged in the fantasy of investing in a game. Li Xuan felt that it was best if he wasn’t an accomplice in this, so he didn’t offer the money.

Zhou Wen had no plans on borrowing money either. He wanted to earn money himself.

Hence, Zhou Wen and Li Xuan went to Restriction City that was deep underground.

Restriction City was in an ancient style. Legend had it that it was the capital city of a certain dynasty in ancient times. It was said to be related to East Zhou, but Zhou Wen didn’t know if it was real or fake.

However, after entering Restriction City, he immediately felt as though the Companion Beasts on him had vanished. He no longer had any connection with them.

However, Banana Fairy and Truth Listener were exceptions. Zhou Wen could still sense their existence and could still use his will to communicate with them.

A Mythical pet is indeed extraordinary. Zhou Wen was somewhat delighted.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 151 - Bronze Luck Beast

Chapter 151 Bronze Luck Beast

Restriction City was totally unique. There were bronze beasts and bronze birds everywhere in the city, with smaller creatures such as rabbits, rats, sparrows, and bigger creatures such as tigers, wolves, and peacocks everywhere.

Most of the bronze beasts here were at the Mortal stage, and the students' homework mission was to kill ten Legendary bronze beasts. It looked very simple.

However, without the protection of a Companion Beast, it would be very dangerous for them to charge into a bronze beast horde.

It was fine if ordinary Mortal-level students didn't have Companion Beasts, but Li Xuan and company were unable to use one even if they had one. It was a very unpleasant feeling.

"There are so many bronze beasts. Which one of them is at the Legendary stage?" Zhou Wen looked at the bronze creatures in the city and was momentarily unable to distinguish them.

"There's only one Legendary bronze beast in Restriction City called Bronze Lucky Beast. It's definitely not here. We can

only encounter them by walking further in.” Li Xuan paused and pointed at the Mortal-level bronze beasts. “It’s best you ignore those fellows. Let’s charge in and find the Bronze Lucky Beast.”

“Why?” Zhou Wen was puzzled.

“There are too many bronze beasts at the Mortal stage. Even if we kill all of them now, another batch will quickly surge in from the spatial rift. There’s no way to clear them no matter how fast we kill. Furthermore, they have very low drop rates. No matter how many we kill, nothing of use will drop. There’s no need to waste time on them,” Li Xuan said as he rushed into the city.

It was rather strange. The bronze beasts and birds in the city were originally motionless like statues, but the moment Li Xuan approached them, the bronze beasts near him came to life and charged at the duo ferociously.

The duo tried their best to avoid their attacks, but once they went past a certain range, the bronze beasts stopped pursuing them. Instead, they automatically returned to their original spots, either crouching or standing, as though they had become statues again.

Only when they reached the crossroads of the city did Li Xuan point at a bronze behemoth’s statue and say, “That’s the Bronze Luck Beast.”

Zhou Wen took a careful look and saw that the statue resembled both a tiger or a lion. It had scales growing on its body, and its tail resembled a snake. On its head was a pair of horns, making it look extremely odd.

“Roar!” The two of them were about fifty meters away from the Bronze Luck Beast when it suddenly came alive. It let

out a roar before jumping off the bronze platform and charging at Zhou Wen and Li Xuan like a green beam.

The two quickly dodged, causing the Bronze Luck Beast to miss. Its claws scratched the rock on the ground, leaving deep marks, as though someone had struck it with a sharp ax.

“Is this what you call ordinary?” Zhou Wen knew from its Speed and strength that this fellow was definitely in no way ordinary. It was definitely top-notch at the Legendary stage.

Without using a Companion Beast, Zhou Wen’s Strength and Speed were probably inferior to it.

Clang!

Li Xuan’s punch landed on the Bronze Luck Beast’s body, but his fist turned numb from the impact. He failed to injure it.

“F*ck, how is that possible? The information clearly states that the Bronze Luck Beast’s attributes are ordinary. It’s only about the same as ordinary Golden Warriors, making it a little harder to kill.” Li Xuan was also very depressed.

When the two of them were dealing with the Bronze Luck Beast, the ordinary bronze beasts nearby also pounced forward and caused them some trouble.

Zhou Wen used Ashen Palm, but it didn’t seem to be of much use against the Bronze Luck Beast. The Bronze Luck Beast’s resistance didn’t seem to be weaker than ordinary Golden Warriors.

However, its Speed was much faster than that of a Golden Warrior. It was among the best, making it extremely difficult

to deal with.

After using the Astral Slash Blade, Zhou Wen left a deep mark on the Bronze Luck Beast's body. However, the damage wasn't enough to kill it unless Zhou Wen was able to release another two or three more Astral Slash Blade beams.

Having used Astral Slash Blade with all his might, he had drained all of his Primordial Energy. He had none left for a second attack.

Li Xuan and Zhou Wen had no choice but to leave Restriction City and return empty-handed.

"Thankfully, it's the two of us. If it were those Mortal-stage students, I would be surprised if they hadn't ended up dying in there. Isn't the homework mission assigned by Ms. Wang a little ridiculous? Also, why is the information so unreliable?" Li Xuan looked at his tattered clothes and said gloomily.

"Who knows? But that's good too. I'll think about it again when I return. If I were to come up with a strategy to kill the Bronze Luck Beasts, there will definitely be many students who will want to buy it." Zhou Wen was very optimistic because he had already discovered the tiny palm symbol before entering the city and downloaded Restriction City into his phone.

Unbeknownst to Zhou Wen, Bronze Luck Beast had a weakness. As long as he spent more time researching it, it was only a matter of time before he found a simple method for killing it. If he wrote a strategy, he might even earn a fortune.

Li Xuan had no choice but to listen to Zhou Wen and return.

After returning to his dorm, Zhou Wen opened the Restriction City’s instance Dungeon and began his repeated grinding.

From the path he took after entering the city, and how to best avoid awakening the bronze beasts to killing the Bronze Luck Beast, Zhou Wen repeatedly experimented.

Li Xuan was right. The Bronze Luck Beasts were much stronger than what was written in the database. Even a Legendary-stage student would find it difficult to kill them without using a Companion Beast in a one-on-one situation.

In the past, special admissions students needed the collection strength of four people to kill the Bronze Luck Beast. Now, most of Zhou Wen’s class was at the Mortal stage, so it was an impossible task to expect them to kill a Bronze Luck Beast.

In the beginning, Zhou Wen had relied on Truth Listener’s and Banana Fairy’s help to successfully kill a Bronze Luck Beast.

After some slow research, he finally managed to kill the Bronze Luck Beast alone. However, his ability to do so didn’t mean that the other students could do it.

Even if he wrote out his strategy, his fellow classmates, whose attributes remained at the Mortal stage or they lacked powerful Primordial Energy Skills, made it impossible for them to use this method and strategy.

Is there really no other way? As Zhou Wen continued killing the Bronze Luck Beasts, he kept studying them, hoping to find a way for his fellow Mortal-stage classmates to kill them.

At that moment, Wang Fei had a smug look on her face. She had indeed issued a homework mission for them to kill the Bronze Luck Beasts, but she had done some tampering with it when handing it out.

Apart from Zhou Wen and Li Xuan, the other students had received the mission to kill a Mortal-stage bronze beast. Only the two of them had received the mission to kill Legendary Bronze Luck Beasts.

They really think they’re impressive. I’ll let those two punks suffer. Wang Fei was very certain that Zhou Wen and Li Xuan wouldn’t be able to complete the mission.

This homework mission was prepared for the Legendary-stage special admissions students this year and had not yet been officially handed out. Even for special admissions students, they needed three to four people to join forces to kill the Bronze Luck Beast.

Now, Li Xuan and Zhou Wen were the only ones in their class who were at the Legendary stage. It was impossible for them to seek help from other students.

When she imagined how Zhou Wen would come to her with his face ashen after failing to complete the mission, Wang Fei was filled with anticipation.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 152 - Chess Mountain

Chapter 152 Chess Mountain

Cold river water flowed out between the mountains and bright moonlight shone, illuminating the river, giving a sheen that resembled fish scales.

Although the moonlight was bright, it was still terrifyingly dark under the water surface. The mountain pass in the distance was like an abyss, as though it could devour everything at any time.

On the bank of the river, there was a defensive mechanism made of steel concrete. The soldiers held their binoculars and watched the mountain pass.

“It’s already been more than ten days. There’s been nothing happening at Chess Mountain. Is it really as scary as you all say it is?” a soldier muttered.

“That’s because you didn’t see the earlier situation since you were transferred in late. Otherwise, you would have peed your pants.” Another middle-aged soldier chuckled.

“Tsk, what’s there to be afraid of? It’s not like I’ve never entered a dimensional zone before. What haven’t I seen before? Last month, we were ordered to explore a

dimensional zone. There, we killed countless dimensional creatures," the soldier from before said.

The middle-aged soldier curled his lips and said, "I've been a soldier for so many years and the dimensional zones I've entered and the number of dimensional creatures I've seen are more than the number of women you have seen. But that day, I nearly peed my pants. If you really saw what I saw you would have peed your pants on the spot."

"What did you see that day?" the soldier asked curiously.

"That day, we were under orders to guard the mountain pass. We were planning to enter the mountain the next morning to explore the dimensional zones in the Chess Mountain, but on that night, the river's waters suddenly turned into something resembling blood…" As the middle-aged soldier spoke, he subconsciously pointed at the river.

However, when his eyes met the surface of the river, his eyes suddenly widened and he stuttered, "Just… like this…"

The young soldier turned his head and under the moonlight, saw that the shimmering lake had turned blood red at some point. The blood-red color rapidly spread out from the mountain pass. In just a moment, the river water had turned into a deep red liquid.

The alarm in the base sounded and all the soldiers and officers that were either on duty or resting got up.

As the highest-ranking officer in the area, Zhao Muye rushed to the outer perimeter of the defenses. When he saw the blood river flowing slowly, his expression turned abnormally grave.

“Commander Zhao, there’s something coming out from the Chess Mountain’s pass,” shouted a soldier who had been using binoculars to monitor the mountain pass.

Zhao Muye looked over with his binoculars. Sure enough, he saw something approaching from the mountain pass. Adjusting the focus of the night vision lens to make out what was it, Zhao Muye’s expression changed drastically.

He saw a humanoid creature walking on the river of blood-towards them. The clothes he wore were very odd. It was likely a product of an ancient era.

That wasn’t the crux. More importantly, the area above his shoulders was empty-he had no head. Instead, the head was in his hands.

That head didn’t look like a human either. It had a green face and sharp fangs. It had crimson hair and a pair of strange horns growing on its head.

The headless monster walked across the bloody river with its head in one hand. It walked out of Chess Mountain and gradually approached the defenses by the river bank.

“Fire!” Zhao Muye ordered calmly as he waited for the headless monster to enter the shooting range.

“Fire… Fire… Fire… Give it whatever you have…” The soldiers who received the order raised their guns and aimed at the headless monster over the river, firing with everything they’d got.

Bullets rained down on the headless monster’s body, instantly tearing his clothes apart. In the blink of an eye, his clothes were riddled with holes.

Seeing the headless monster standing motionless above the river surface, the soldiers couldn’t help but stop shooting, but they quickly realized that something was amiss.

The monster’s clothes were riddled with holes, but no blood flowed out.

Suddenly, the head in the headless monster’s hand opened a bloodshot eye that seemed to contain infinite amounts of blood.

“No good!” Zhao Muye’s expression changed as he summoned his Companion Beast, Guardian Spirit Hawk, turning it into a barrier of light that protected the nearby area.

The headless monster’s body jerked violently. The bullets that had been sent into his body shot back like raindrops. Furthermore, the bullets followed their original trajectories and traced back to their owners.

Bam! Bam! Bam!

The light barrier formed by the Guardian Spirit Hawk failed to block the bullets that were shot back as it was pierced by multiple spots.

Screams were heard as the bullets penetrated the soldiers’ bodies. In a moment, more than half of the soldiers who had fired were killed.

“Change to the newest type of Primordial Gold bullets and continue firing.” Zhao Muye gave the order. However, when he looked at the river surface, he realized that the headless monster had disappeared. Apart from the moonlight that scattered across the river, there was no trace of it.

Zhao Muye cursed under his breath as he summoned his Companion Beast armor and weapon. When he turned around, he realized that the headless monster was holding its head, standing within the defensive line.

The devil- like head and blood-red eyes were staring at Zhao Muye and the soldiers with bloodthirsty eyes.

“Inform the Overseer. Everyone else, prepare for battle!” As Zhao Muye spoke, he raised his saber and slashed at the headless monster. The saber beam was like a rainbow as it streaked across dozens of meters.

To his surprise, the headless monster didn’t dodge at all. Instead, it raised the head in its hand and blocked Zhao Muye’s saber beam.

Clang!

The saber struck the devil-like face, but it failed to tear apart its skin. The blood-red eyes stared at Zhao Muye under the saber as a creepy smile appeared on his face.

“Ah!”

Blood splattered as gunshots rang out. The silent night was completely broken.

“Qihe River Base requesting backup… Qihe River Base requesting backup… A dimensional creature has rushed out of Chess Mountain… It has already rushed into the base… Please provide support immediately…”

When Ah Sheng received the news, his usually stoic expression changed. He immediately awaited An Tianzuo’s further orders.

“Hold on for twenty minutes. Backup will be there soon,” answered An Tianzuo.

“Something happened at Chess Mountain after all. Muye is there…” Ah Sheng said worriedly.

“Let’s go.” An Tianzuo interrupted Ah Sheng with a terse remark.

Several helicopters quickly took off and carried An Tianzuo, Ah Sheng, and a group of spearhead troops towards Chess Mountain.

When they arrived at the Qihe River Base, they saw dismembered bodies everywhere. The wounds on the broken limbs looked like they had been bitten off by something.

From afar, the sounds of a clash could still be heard. Ah Sheng rushed over and when he took in the situation before him, his eyes instantly turned red.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 153 - A Simple Strategy Guide

Chapter 153 A Simple Strategy Guide

Blood flowed everywhere, and corpses were strewn all over the place.

There was only one living person left fighting in the entire base. Or rather, it could no longer be considered a living person. His left arm had already been completely severed, and his body was full of bite wounds. A large piece of flesh had been bitten off his left rib. One could vaguely see his internal organs and the bones on his leg were visible beneath their wounds.

Even so, the person was still fighting the headless monster with all his might.

Crack!

The headless monster bit the person’s thigh with the head in its hand. This bite directly snapped his left thigh bone, causing him to lose his balance. As he retreated, staggering, blood spilled all over the ground.

Ah Sheng’s eyes were red. He pulled out his gun and shot fiercely at the headless monster. At the same time, he rushed over to support Zhao Muye who was about to fall.

“Muye, why aren’t you retreating?” Ah Sheng gritted his teeth as he held onto Zhao Muye’s body.

“Overseer told us to hold on for twenty minutes. It’s not time yet, so how can I leave?” A smile appeared on Zhao Muye’s pale face. “Besides, we can retreat, but the city behind us can’t. Ah Sheng, you don’t have to be sad. This day will come to all humans. I’m just leaving a little early. When you’re tired in the future, we can gather down there and have drinks together…”

Bang! Bang! Bang!

Continuous bullets struck the headless monster, blasting open bloody holes in its body, but the injuries didn’t faze it.

The headless monster held its head and let out a roar as it charged through the pelting shots of eight soldiers, aiming straight for An Tianzuo who was standing behind them.

Clearly, the headless monster’s intelligence wasn’t low. It was able to tell that An Tianzuo was leading these people and wanted to kill him first.

The headless monster’s skin suffused a demonic red glow as the bullets made of Primordial Gold failed to injure it. It charged through the storm of bullets, using the head in its hand to bite An Tianzuo.

An Tianzuo remained unperturbed as he pulled out a gun and fired two shots at the headless monster.

Bang! Bang!

The first bullet hit the head’s cheekbones, causing the head to tilt a little before the second bullet drilled right through its ear.

Blood splattered out from the ear before it began bleeding from all seven orifices. Its eyes exploded and the headless body collapsed to the ground.

An Tianzuo didn’t look at the corpse as he walked towards Ah Sheng, who was hugging Zhao Muye.

“Overseer, Muye is dead.” Ah Sheng raised his head, his eyes filled with grief. In his arms, Zhao Muye had already breathed his last.

“I gained control of the An family when I was 13 years old. At that time, Muye was already an assistant regional commander figure. So many years have passed and he still remains one. It’s not that he didn’t have the chance to be promoted, nor was he incapable. Instead, it was because he wanted to stand at the front line of Chess Mountain to protect those people that he now can’t ever help again.” An Tianzuo sighed. “Let him go. He deserves the rest.”

“Overseer, when I first joined the army, Muye was the one who took care of me and taught me. I want to take him back to bury him with his family,” Ah Sheng said.

“He doesn’t have family,” said An Tianzuo. “His family died in Chess Mountain, but their corpses were never found.”

Ah Sheng instantly fell silent. He couldn’t say a word, his heart was filled with unbearable pain.

“Bury him outside Chess Mountain. Let him watch over the area. One day, we will charge into Chess Mountain and slay all those dimensional creatures on his behalf. Perhaps he will truly rest in peace when that happens,” said An Tianzuo.

“The situation at Chess Mountain is getting worse. Even our latest primordial Gold bullets have started to lose their

effectiveness. I’m afraid the situation is worsening,” Ah Sheng said.

“That’s why we need to find the source of the dimensional zones and resolve the problem at the root. Otherwise, no number of dimensional creatures killed will matter,” An Tianzuo said as he looked in the direction of Chess Mountain. “Now, many dimensional zones have already appeared in various parts of the League. If we can’t find a way to resolve it as soon as possible, the ones dying won’t just be Muye and these soldiers. All of mankind will suffer annihilation. We have no time to spare. Let’s go. We have no time for grief. There are plenty of things that need our attention.”

Zhou Wen had been researching a simplified strategy for the killing of Bronze Luck Beasts. He didn’t know that other than him and Li Xuan, no one else in his class needed the strategy

After a few days, Zhou Wen finally figured out a way to kill Bronze Luck Beasts at the Mortal stage. After getting Li Xuan to come over, he planned on test-driving the strategy with just the two of them.

“Old Zhou, can this strategy of yours really work?” Li Xuan read Zhou Wen’s strategy and found it unbelievable that Bronze Luck Beasts could be killed that easily.

“Don’t underestimate it. This is the result of me spending days racking my brains. As long as you follow the steps according to the guide, you will definitely be able to easily kill a Bronze Luck Beast,” Zhou Wen said as he tapped Li Xuan, while holding a camera.

“Are you sure we don’t need two people? Can I really do it myself?” Li Xuan was still doubtful.

“Yes,” Zhou Wen said with certainty.

“Why don’t you give it a try with me first? It’s inevitable that I’ll make mistakes the first time. We can watch each other’s backs if we do it together. It’ll be more convenient to remedy the situation.” Li Xuan felt that Zhou Wen had only been to Restriction City with him once. If the strategy he wrote was problematic, wouldn’t he be in deep trouble? He wanted Zhou Wen involved no matter what.

“Ain’t I in charge of filming you? If anything goes wrong, I’ll naturally take action,” Zhou Wen said.

Li Xuan thought that made sense. Since Zhou Wen was going in with him, He wouldn’t just sit idly if something bad happened. He wasn’t going to continue filming his death, right?

The two entered Restriction City one after the other. Li Xuan charged ahead according to the strategy Zhou Wen had written while Zhou Wen followed behind him, filming. They soon entered deep into Restriction City.

Li Xuan was originally worried that Zhou Wen’s strategy would be problematic, but when he charged in, he realized that it was as though he had entered a no man’s land. The bronze beasts didn’t even touch him at all.

Finally, while battling the Bronze Luck Beast, he used perfect positioning and the Bronze Luck Beast’s weakness to easily kill it. It was so easy that Li Xuan suspected that the Bronze Luck Beast wasn’t the same one they had encountered before.

“Old Zhou, nice strategy! How did you come up with it?” Li Xuan tried again and realized that killing the Bronze Luck Beast was extremely simple. Even ordinary Mortal-stage

students would find it easy to kill the Bronze Luck Beast if they knew its weakness and joined forces.

“Do you think I can sell this strategy for money?” Zhou Wen was more concerned about money.

“Definitely. Such an awesome strategy guide definitely will have people willing to spend money to buy it. With our classmates still at the Mortal stage, they definitely won’t be able to complete their homework mission without this strategy,” Li Xuan said with certainty.

“Alright, let’s head back and seek out buyers now.” Zhou Wen was eager to know how much his strategy guide could be sold for.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 154 - A Strategy Guide That Can’t Be Sold

Chapter 154 A Strategy Guide That Can’t Be Sold

“What did you say?” Li Xuan’s eyes widened as he glared at a female student and shouted loudly.

The girl looked a little afraid and said meekly, “My mission is done… There’s no need… There’s no need to buy your strategy…”

“That’s impossible. Are you joking with me? How did you kill the Bronze Luck Beasts?” Li Xuan said while glaring at the girl in disbelief.

The girl said cautiously, “I didn’t kill Bronze Luck Beasts; I only killed ten Bronze Bunnies and completed the mission.”

“Bronze Bunnies? Isn’t our mission to kill Legendary bronze beasts? What’s the point of killing Bronze Bunnies?” Li Xuan said with a frown.

“The homework mission didn’t say to kill Legendary bronze beasts. All you need to do is kill bronze beasts.” The girl hurriedly took out her phone to show Li Xuan.

Indeed, her homework mission only stated that she needed to kill bronze beasts. There was no rule that required her to kill those at the Legendary stage.

“That’s impossible, right? We can’t be mistaken?” Li Xuan hurriedly took out his cell phone and read his homework mission again, confirming that he wasn’t wrong. It clearly

indicated that he needed to kill Legendary-stage bronze beasts.

“Old Zhou, what does yours say?” Li Xuan asked Zhou Wen again.

“Same as yours.” Zhou Wen handed his phone to Li Xuan.

Li Xuan took a glance and, just like him, quickly made a few phone calls. Soon, he looked at Zhou Wen with an odd expression and said, “All of our classmates received missions to kill bronze beasts. We are the only two who received the mission to kill Legendary-stage bronze beasts.”

“Could it be a mistake?” Zhou Wen asked.

“It’s impossible for the wrong message to be sent. They are sent en masse. If it was sent wrongly, all the students must have received the wrong message. How can it be just the two of us? This is clearly a message that was separately sent to us,” Li Xuan said.

“Then doesn’t that mean that my strategy won’t be of any use?” Zhou Wen’s first thought wasn’t why Wang Fei had given them such a difficult mission, but if his strategy guide could still be sold.

“That’s hard to say. According to what I know, the class of special admissions students received this mission as well. However, those guys are basically at the Legendary stage and all of them have their noses up in the air. They probably won’t spend money on buying your strategy,” Li Xuan said.

Zhou Wen couldn’t help but frown when he heard that he might not be able to sell the strategy guide. However, when he thought of Wang Lu, his eyes lit up again. He turned to Li Xuan and asked, “Li Xuan, is there any record in Restriction

City? I mean the time record for killing the Bronze Luck Beast."

"Definitely. There are records in every dimensional zone." Li Xuan instantly understood what Zhou Wen was getting at. "You mean you wish to sell this strategy to special admissions students who wish to break the record?"

"I can give it a try." Zhou Wen felt that there was a chance. He planned on asking Wang Lu to see if she was interested in buying the strategy.

They returned to Four Seasons Garden and went to Wang Lu's dorm to look for her. They happened to meet her on the way there. She was accompanied by about five special admissions students, seemingly having just returned. They were chatting as they walked, as though they were discussing something.

"Zhou Wen, Li Xuan, what a coincidence!" Wang Lu greeted Zhou Wen and Li Xuan when she saw them.

"It's not a coincidence. We came here especially to find you. Did you special admissions students receive the homework mission to kill the Bronze Luck Beasts?" Zhou Wen asked directly.

"That's right. What's the matter?" Wang Lu looked at Zhou Wen curiously, unsure why he would suddenly ask.

"It's this. Li Xuan and I have figured out a strategy to kill the Bronze Luck Beast. It should be of some help for killing them, allowing you to kill them faster and even break the record. Would you be interested?" Zhou Wen asked.

Before Wang Lu could say a word, a male student beside her said, "Zhou Wen, we admit that your Companion Beasts are

indeed powerful. Unfortunately, we don’t have any as powerful as yours. Your strategy is useless to us.”

“The strategy we came up with doesn’t need any special Companion Beasts. Besides, they can’t be used in Restriction City,” Zhou Wen said.

“Since no one can use a Companion Beast, we can figure out a method to kill the Bronze Luck Beasts ourselves. Why would we need to spend money on your strategy?” said the boy with a smile.

Zhou Wen finally realized that with his low EQ, he had overlooked a problem. Those who could enter Sunset College were geniuses, and the special admissions students were geniuses among geniuses. They were all rather proud, so to get them to spend money to buy a strategy from someone else would be akin to making them admit that they were inferior to others. How could proud special admissions students be willing to spend money to buy such a thing?

Another female student also said, “Zhou Wen, we came to Sunset College to hone ourselves. We have to experience it for ourselves before we can improve. Buying someone else’s strategy is equivalent to cheating. It’s meaningless to us.”

The other special admissions students likely had similar views.

Wang Lu said, “Zhou Wen, I’m sure your strategy is useful, but I still want to challenge myself.”

With Wang Lu saying that, Zhou Wen knew that there was no hope in selling his strategy.

After they returned to the dorm, Li Xuan said to Zhou Wen, “From the looks of it, the strategy would be a tough sell. I

wonder what Ms. Wang was thinking. Why didn’t she tell us earlier that only the two of us were given the mission to kill Bronze Luck Beasts? We wasted so much time researching a strategy.”

“It’s nothing. Just treat it as a form of training and learning.” Zhou Wen didn’t mind.

Li Xuan thought for a moment and said, “By the way, you can post the strategy guide to our school’s intranet forums. It allows for monetization. Who knows, those special admissions students might be embarrassed to buy it in front of others, but wouldn’t have scruples doing it in private.”

“Alright, help me post it. However, the price must be set high. Such a strategy guide isn’t worth anything if it’s spread, so it’s best to earn as much as possible in one go.” Zhou Wen still remembered the painful experience of posting the last strategy and warned Li Xuan.

“But if the price is too high, it won’t be easy for them to be purchased, right?” Li Xuan remarked hesitantly.

“It’s fine even if it can’t be sold, as long as it’s not sold too cheaply.” Zhou Wen was quite open-minded.

“Alright.” Li Xuan nodded and posted the strategy on the school’s intranet forum. When he was done, he saw Zhou Wen lying on the sofa gaming again. He asked, “Aren’t you bored to death gaming all day? All you do is kill those ants. Isn’t it boring?”

“Not at all,” Zhou Wen said without looking up.

“Stop gaming. Join me as I kill the ten Bronze Luck Beasts first. We’ll break the record. Since those special admissions

students don’t want to, let’s break it ourselves,” Li Xuan said.

Zhou Wen followed Li Xuan to Restriction City. As for the post, it attracted the attention of someone.

The counselor of the special admissions class, Liu Zhengyan, saw the post titled “A god’s guide to slaying a Bronze Luck Beast in a minute.”

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 155 - Liu Zhengyan’s Plan

Chapter 155 Liu Zhengyan’s Plan

It isn’t difficult to kill a Bronze Luck Beast in a minute at the Epic stage. For those at the Legendary stage to kill Bronze Luck Beasts in such a short period of time without using a Companion Beast is not impossible, but it’s just too difficult. Liu Zhengyan was originally curious, but after trying to take a look at the content, he realized that it was monetized. Furthermore, the points needed to read it when converted to League current was ridiculous. It cost more than twenty thousand.

Students nowadays really have all sorts of tricks up their sleeves. They want to cheat money like that? Liu Zhengyan shook his head slightly and logged into the management account on the forum.

Liu Zhengyan was one of the moderators of the forum. If this was really a scam, he would have to deal with it and not let the other students be fooled.

Although he felt that Sunset College didn’t have a student with such low intelligence, he still needed to quickly deal with any necessary threads.

After logging into the moderator’s account, Liu Zhengyan used his authority to check Li Xuan’s post without spending any money. Although he felt that it was definitely a scam, he still planned on confirming it first.

Very quickly, Liu Zhengyan saw the contents of the post and his expression changed drastically. He started off calm and

indifferent, but in the end, he was flabbergasted. The changes to his face seemed like an artistic act.

Is this strategy really feasible? Based on Liu Zhengyan's understanding of Restriction City and Bronze Luck Beasts, the strategy did seem feasible. More importantly, there were a few places that even he didn't know if they were real or fake. He was unable to determine the authenticity of the strategy.

If it's really possible, then the person who wrote this strategy is amazing. Liu Zhengyan decided to make a trip to Restriction City and personally test it out.

If this strategy were real, he planned on including it as teaching material and let all the special admissions students study it.

Liu Zhengyan didn't want them to learn how to kill Bronze Luck Beasts, but to learn from the line of thinking and methods used to derive the strategy.

The rarest thing about this strategy was that it was a meticulous and creative design. There was no need to rely on powerful strength to resolve the problem. It was solely designed using perfect positioning, suppression, and the use of the opponent's weakness. If the strategy was proven to be real, even a few Mortal-stage cultivators could kill the Bronze Luck Beast in a group. Such a strategy was simply the work of a genius.

Liu Zhengyan eagerly headed to Restriction City. He only wanted to quickly verify the authenticity of the strategy.

However, when he entered Restriction City, he realized that someone was already killing Bronze Luck Beasts. The few of them near the city gates had already been killed.

Liu Zhengyan’s heart stirred as he headed deep into the city. Indeed, not long after, he saw two students killing the Bronze Luck Beasts.

When he saw the movements of the two students, he immediately came to a realization. He didn’t need to experiment anymore and he knew that the strategy was real. Besides, he already knew who had posted it.

Li Xuan and Zhou Wen, were they the ones who wrote that strategy? Liu Zhengyan looked from afar at the duo’s slaying of the Bronze Luck Beasts and only grew increasingly alarmed.

Li Xuan was executing the steps of the designed strategy. With his strength alone, he could easily kill the Bronze Luck Beast. The entire process definitely took less than a minute. This had already broken the student records of the school.

The crux of the matter was that Li Xuan had completed it too easily. Furthermore, it also proved that Bronze Luck Beasts had a huge weakness. As long as one targeted this weakness, killing it would be too easy.

What left Liu Zhengyan even more surprised was Zhou Wen. Although the person attacking the Bronze Luck Beast was Li Xuan, Zhou Wen had been following him all the way with a camera. He tossed and turned in the group of bronze beasts and followed Li Xuan, perfectly capturing his every move.

It was not easy to keep up with Li Xuan’s actions, much less in Restriction City. There were many Mortal-stage bronze beasts and bronze birds around.

With the bronze beasts awoken by Li Xuan, Zhou Wen’s subsequent tailing of him made the bronze beasts and bronze birds target him with priority. However, Zhou Wen’s

pace was light and nimble as though he was taking a stroll. He didn’t even look at the bronze beasts, yet he was able to dodge all of their attacks.

The entire process was pleasing to the eyes, so fluid that Liu Zhengyan felt like it was a sight to behold.

This Zhou Wen doesn’t only have powerful Companion Beasts. His standards aren’t bad either. He should be more than able to enter the special admission class. The more Liu Zhengyan looked at him, the more he felt that difficulty as a videographer was more difficult than Li Xuan who was the protagonist when hunting the Bronze Luck Beasts.

When Liu Zhengyan had watched the entire process of the two of them hunting the Bronze Luck Beast, he secretly left Restriction City without alarming Zhou Wen and Li Xuan.

After returning to his office, he logged on to the website again and found the thread Li Xuan had posted. Then, he clicked on it.

This time, Liu Zhengyan didn’t use his moderator account and access. Instead, he purchased the monetized thread as a normal user.

Since I’ve already paid for it, it shouldn’t be a problem for me to use it. Liu Zhengyan smiled and had already made up his mind.

The special admissions class was different from the ordinary classes. If the ordinary students of Sunset College were left to develop themselves, then the students of the special class were specially nurtured.

There was no saying which of the two teaching methods was exactly good or bad, but the teaching methods of the special

class were more targeted with results showing faster.

However, this kind of teaching method required the students to have a very good foundation. This was something that ordinary students did not have. At the same time, they also needed a large number of resources from the college, so it was difficult to extend it to everyone.

Liu Zhengyan planned to use this strategy as teaching material and give detailed explanations to the students of the special class.

However, it wasn’t for now, but after the special admissions students completed their homework missions.

With the pride and confidence of the special admissions students, they would definitely be very confident in their own results. Some would even feel proud of their own results.

However, if they saw this strategy and saw the tremendous effects of it, he believed that it would be a good learning experience for them.

However, before that, Liu Zhengyan had to confirm that those students didn’t know about it already; otherwise, the educational effects would be greatly reduced.

Liu Zhengyan wasn’t worried about the thread on the discussion forum. With such a high price, no student would be foolish enough to purchase it.

The only thing that needed to be resolved was Li Xuan and Zhou Wen’s recorded results.

It looks like I need to have a good chat with Ms. Wang. Liu Zhengyan decided to discuss the matter with Wang Fei, and

get her to temporarily hold back Li Xuan and Zhou Wen’s results and videos. It wouldn’t be too late to announce them after he had finished teaching his students.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 156 - Who Was the One Who Wrote The Strategy Guide?

Chapter 156 Who Was the One Who Wrote The Strategy Guide?

Wang Fei had been in a rather good mood recently. Ever since she gave Zhou Wen the mission to kill the Bronze Luck Beasts, her mood had greatly improved.

“Ms. Wang, are you there?” Liu Zhengyan’s voice and knocking came from outside her office.

Wang Fei opened the door and invited Liu Zhengyan in. She poured him a cup of tea and asked with a smile, “Mr. Liu, what’s the matter?”

“It’s like this, Teacher Wang. Did you assign a homework mission for Zhou Wen and Li Xuan to kill Bronze Luck Beasts?” Liu Zhengyan asked frankly.

“Didn’t I inform you about this matter? Did something happen?” Wang Fei looked at Liu Zhengyan in confusion.

“Nothing happened. I just have something to ask of you,” Liu Zhengyan said.

“Mr. Liu, you are my senior. You helped me a lot when I first joined the school. There’s no need to be so polite with me if there’s anything you need me to do,” Wang Fei said.

Liu Zhengyan said, “Alright, then I won’t stand on ceremony with you. I hope you can temporarily hold back Zhou Wen and Li Xuan’s results and videos. You can report their results and videos after my class completes the homework mission.”

“Mr. Liu, I don’t understand. What are you getting at?” Wang Fei was confused as she did not know what Liu Zhengyan meant.

It wasn’t difficult for her to do so, nor did it violate any of her principles. However, Wang Fei simply didn’t understand the meaning behind his actions.

Liu Zhengyan pointed at the computer in front of Wang Fei. “Ms. Wang, open the student discussion forums on the intranet and take a look at the post titled ‘A god’s guide to slaying a Bronze Luck Beast in a minute.’”

Wang Fei doubtfully clicked open the forum and found the thread that Liu Zhengyan was talking about. When she saw that it was actually a monetized thread with a ridiculously high price, she couldn’t help but look at Liu Zhengyan.

“Buy it and take a look. You won’t regret reading the contents in it,” Liu Zhengyan said with a smile.

Wang Fei hesitated for a moment before following Liu Zhengyan’s instructions. She bought the thread and clicked on it to read its contents.

When she read it, Wang Fei’s expression was similar to the one Liu Zhengyan had when he first read it. Slowly, it turned to shock as she turned to look at Liu Zhengyan and asked, “Is what’s written real?”

“Every word of it. I’ve already verified it,” Liu Zhengyan said.

“Was this strategy guide written by you, Mr. Liu. It’s really impressive.” Wang Fei misunderstood and thought that the strategy guide was written by Liu Zhengyan.

He shook his head and said, “I didn’t write the thread. I thought that it was a scam. I wanted to delete it, but after reading the content, I realized that it was a real strategy. Furthermore, it’s a shocking one.”

“If it wasn’t written by you, then which teacher would write a strategy for Bronze Luck Beasts?” Wang Fei subconsciously believed that most Legendary students wouldn’t be able to write such a strategy. It was likely written by a certain teacher.

“The strategy guide isn’t written by any teacher.” Liu Zhengyan shook his head again.

“If it’s not written by a teacher, then who…” As Wang Fei spoke, she seemed to have some nasty thoughts surface in her mind.

Liu Zhengyan said, “This is the reason why I wanted you to hold back Zhou Wen and Li Xuan’s results. This strategy guide should be written by both of them or either one of them. I’ve seen them use this method to kill a Bronze Luck Beast with my own eyes. It’s absolutely feasible and there aren’t any problems. Therefore, I wish to use this strategy as teaching material for my students. However, I hope that they won’t know of the duo’s results ahead of time. Nor do I wish for them to see their videos. It’s why I’m here to trouble you.”

“Mr. Liu, are you sure that this thread was written by Zhou Wen and Li Xuan?” Wang Fei stared at Liu Zhengyan with widened eyes. She really couldn’t accept this outcome.

She originally believed that she had Zhou Wen under her thumb, but she suddenly realized that the obstacle she had set up for Zhou Wen was completely useless. To think that she had been gloating over it.

“No doubt about it. They wrote it. As long as you see their videos, you will understand that apart from the original author, no one else can do as well as they do, especially Zhou Wen, who’s the videographer. If you have the chance, you should go to Restriction City to take a look. The videographer’s performance will be more interesting than the main character in the video,” Liu Zhengyan said with a smile.

“Mr. Liu, I’ll follow your request. Don’t worry, I’m very sorry, but I’ll be heading out for a while now.” Wang Fei decided to listen to Liu Zhengyan’s advice and go to Restriction City to take a look.

She couldn’t believe that a gamer like Zhou Wen who gamed all day could write such a strategy.

When Wang Fei rushed to Restriction City, Li Xuan was slaying the tenth Bronze Luck Beast for his mission. This was because he had spent too much time searching for Bronze Luck Beasts in Restriction City; otherwise, the mission would have been completed ages ago.

Although Wang Fei didn’t see the complete process, with only the second half of Li Xuan’s hunt, it was enough to shock her.

It was not only because the strategy was just as Liu Zhengyan had said, but also because of Zhou Wen’s movement techniques during the filming. That level of difficulty was even higher than Li Xuan’s hunting of the Bronze Luck Beast.

If not for the fact that he knew the bronze beasts in Restriction City like the back of his hand, it would be impossible for him to reach such a level. Zhou Wen’s movement technique was as though he had installed a

Heavenly Eye. He took into consideration the reactions of all the nearby bronze beasts and without even looking at them, he perfectly dodged all their attacks while following Li Xuan.

Now, she finally understood why Liu Zhengyan was so certain that the strategy guide was written by the duo. Only someone who knew the bronze beasts so well could write such a strategy.

This fellow… He's just too talented… How did he do it? Wang Fei looked at Zhou Wen with an odd expression as she felt mixed emotions. It was hard to describe what she felt.

Zhou Wen was more outstanding than she imagined. As Zhou Wen's counselor, Wang Fei was very pleased and happy for her good friend, Ouyang Lan.

However, when she thought of how such a genius was obsessed with mobile games, the words "what a waste of a treasure" surfaced in her mind.

Zhou Wen and Li Xuan didn't notice the distant Wang Fei. After Li Xuan completed his mission, it was Zhou Wen's turn to kill ten Bronze Luck Beasts.

This change made Wang Fei more certain that the strategy was written by Zhou Wen, at least he took most of the credit.

When Li Xuan did the filming, his movements were clearly a lot more amateurish. From time to time, he had to take care of the attacks of the Mortal-stage bronze beasts to prevent himself from being injured. He wasn't able to be as focused as Zhou Wen on the filming.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 157 - Multiple Life Providences

Chapter 157 Multiple Life Providences

When Wang Fei returned, she was exceptionally calm.

She was somewhat astonished by Zhou Wen’s talent and capabilities. She believed that his gifts could no longer be judged simply by the standards of a genius.

Throughout her teaching career, she had never seen a student like him.

What Zhou Wen needs is no longer repetitive suppressive training. Such a student needs to be given more new things that he can analyze for himself. Wang Fei decided to return and think about it. She had never taught a student like him, so she needed to think more and reflect on herself. She wanted to come up with a new way to educate a student like Zhou Wen instead of using her past experiences on him.

After handing in the Bronze Luck Beast homework mission, Wang Fei didn’t give him any more strange homework missions. Zhou Wen finally had some peace and quiet and now had the time to properly game.

Outside Tiger Cage Pass, he encountered another Paper Demonized General.

Drop me a Companion Egg! Zhou Wen commanded his Demonized General Companion Beast to charge forward as he waited in anticipation.

The reason for his anticipation was that if his Demonized General could fuse with a Paper Demonized General once again, wouldn’t it become a complete Companion Beast with three skills?

The Demonized General’s Astral Slash Blade restrained the Paper Demonized General, easily slaying it. At the instant the Paper Demonized General’s head was chopped off, a resplendent crystal dropped.

An 18-valued Speed Crystal. That’s not too bad. Zhou Wen was somewhat helpless. Although he could encounter Paper Demonized Generals more frequently than the average person, there was no way to guarantee his drop rate. All he could do was rely on luck.

The absorption of the Speed Crystal allowed all four of his attributes to reach 18. He was considered to be at the peak of the ordinary Legendary stage, but he was still 3 points behind Truth Listener’s and Banana Fairy’s 21 points.

Although it was only three points, the higher the stat needed, the harder it was to raise. Normal Legendary creatures only produced 18-valued stats crystals at best. Even mutated Legendary creatures dropped 19-valued stats crystals. It was difficult to obtain 20-valued stats crystals, not to mention 21-valued stats crystals.

I wonder if I can increase my attribute points by cultivating other Primordial Energy Arts like in the Mortal stage? Zhou Wen thought to himself.

Zhou Wen thought for a moment and decided to visit Small Buddha Temple. After he advanced to the Legendary stage, he wanted to see if the Small Perfection of Wisdom Sutra’s stone monument was of any use.

It had been a long time since he had been to Small Buddha Temple, but the environment here remained unchanged. When Zhou Wen came in front of the Small Perfection of Wisdom Pillar, his gaze landed on the stone monument. When he looked at it, the Small Perfection of Wisdom Sutra in his body automatically began to circulate, evolving into the Legendary stage.

Soon, the Small Perfection of Wisdom Sutra had risen to the Legendary realm. He didn't face any obstacles during the advancement. It was so simple that it made Zhou Wen suspect that he wasn't cultivating a Primordial Energy Art, but just doing a copy and paste.

Zhou Wen looked at the blood-colored avatar's stats and couldn't help but be taken aback.

He didn't sense any special changes in his body, but the blood-colored avatar's attributes changed drastically.

There were a total of two changes. Zhou Wen's original Legendary Life Providence was Sigh of the King, but it was now gone. Replacing it was a Life Providence named "Eight Perfections Wisdom."

Together with the change in Life Providence, Zhou Wen's Primordial Energy Art also changed. It went from only having Lost Immortal Sutra to being replaced with Small Perfection of Wisdom Sutra.

Instead, the stats that Zhou Wen hoped to increase didn't increase. The four stats remained at 18 points.

It can't be? Could it be that the Lost Immortal Sutra has changed into the Small Perfection of Wisdom Sutra? Zhou Wen was alarmed as he hurriedly attempted to switch back to the Lost Immortal Sutra's mode.

The outcome made Zhou Wen heave a sigh of relief. His Life Providence changed back to the Sigh of the King, and his Primordial Energy Art changed back to the Lost Immortal Sutra.

Zhou Wen switched back and forth a few times and realized that as long as he switched to the Small Perfection of Wisdom Sutra, his Life Providence would also change.

Although his Life Providence had changed, Zhou Wen had a nagging feeling that it didn’t change at all. It was as though he still had his original Life Providence.

Furthermore, the two Life Providences gave him a completely different feeling. The Sigh of the King gave Zhou Wen a feeling that it was one with his body, but although the Eight Perfections Wisdom had an extremely intimate tie with his body, he felt that it was lacking something compared with the Sigh of the King.

However, he could clearly sense the characteristics of Eight Perfections Wisdom. It was similar to the typical feeling people had after possessing a Life Providence. It was unlike the Sigh of the King. Even Zhou Wen himself was half aware of it.

I wonder if there will be another Life Providence after I upgrade the Ancient Imperial Sutra at the Fire God Platform? Zhou Wen immediately confirmed his guess and left the Small Buddha Temple’s instance dungeon before switching to the Ancient Imperial City.

After returning to the Fire God Platform, he read the Ancient Imperial Sutra on the monument. It was similar to his previous experience. The Ancient Imperial Sutra automatically advanced to the Legendary stage, causing

Zhou Wen’s Life Providence and Primordial Energy Art to experience changes.

Ancient Emperor. When Zhou Wen looked at the two words of his Life Providence, he understood the benefits that such a Life Providence could bring him.

Zhou Wen made another trip to Mount Laojun’s instance dungeon, and the outcome was the same. The Wordless Monument also gave him a Life Providence of Dao Body, and the Primordial Energy Art only had two words, “Dao Sutra.”

However, be it the Eight Perfections Wisdom, Ancient Emperor, or Dao Body, despite being able to clearly sense their effects, Zhou Wen found it unnatural. He felt as though the Life Providences didn’t belong to him.

Only the Sigh of the King made Zhou Wen feel like there was no distance in between it and him.

Could it be that those Life Providences and Primordial Energy Arts aren’t actually possessed by me, but a product of the Lost Immortal Sutra’s effects? Zhou Wen long had his suspicions, but it only felt more real this time.

Taking out the oil lamp, Zhou Wen rubbed it once again. The oil lamp, which no longer had any characters, light, or darkness appearing on it, suddenly produced a projection of text. It turned Zhou Wen’s Life Providence into Godfiend and his Primordial Energy Art turned into Godfiend Era.

Just like the first three Life Providences, the Godfiend’s Life Providence also felt somewhat distant. It made him uneasy, but it was only a feeling. It didn’t obstruct him from using it.

Zhou Wen wasn’t able to use four different Life Providences at the same time. He could use the corresponding Life

Providence when his Primordial Energy Art switched to the corresponding type, and different Life Providences gave him different augmentations.

Eight Perfections Wisdom greatly augmented his body. It was similar to Li Xuan’s Immortal God of Combat that allowed for his physical resilience to improve greatly as he gained a powerful recovery ability.

The Dao Body Life Providence augmented his Primordial Energy, greatly increasing Zhou Wen’s recovery speed. It just took him a few seconds to regain all his Primordial Energy.

The Ancient Emperor Life Providence raised all his stats, but it mainly increased his Strength greatly. Furthermore, it made his Strength attribute experience some abnormal changes.

The Godfiend Life Providence was the oddest. Zhou Wen originally believed that it would augment his Speed attribute greatly, but that wasn’t the case. The Godfiend Life Providence augmented all his attributes, but not by much. Its main purpose was to allow Zhou Wen to possess the ability to fly.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 158 - Raising a Weighted Feather

Chapter 158 Raising a Weighted Feather

With the Godfiend's Life Providence, Zhou Wen could choose not to use any Primordial Energy Skills, nor did he need to borrow the wings of his Companion Beast to directly float in the air. Furthermore, he could fly freely, as though he had invisible stairs in the air.

Every Life Providence had its unique effects, and they all seemed very powerful, but Zhou Wen had a nagging feeling that these powers didn't belong to him.

He was at home studying the effects of the Primordial Energy Arts and Life Providences when he suddenly heard the doorbell ring.

At first, he thought it was Li Xuan, but when he opened the door, he realized that it was Feng Qiuyan.

"Why are you here?" Zhou Wen asked curiously.

"Coach, I would like you to tailor a second cultivation plan for me," Feng Qiuyan said firmly.

"Didn't I say before that you have to finish the plan I tailor-made for you before you can proceed to the next stage of cultivation…" Zhou Wen really didn't wish to lie to Feng Qiuyan, so he could only find an excuse to reject him.

However, before he could finish speaking, Feng Qiuyan said, "Coach, I've already mastered the realm of the slow saber."

“What? You’ve mastered it?” Zhou Wen widened his eyes as he looked at Feng Qiuyan in disbelief.

He had only said it in passing. Although he had included some of his insights, most of them were just random thoughts he pulled out of his ass. The fact that Feng Qiuyan had actually managed to master the realm of the slow saber realm with his nonsense, left Zhou Wen in disbelief.

“I’ve really mastered it. I’ll demonstrate it to you now.” Feng Qiuyan slashed at Zhou Wen with his saber.

In the past, Feng Qiuyan’s slashing of his saber was very quick, so fast that no one could see it clearly. It was like a bolt of lightning. It was extremely fast and agile.

His saber remained very fast, but it was so fast that it gave one a heavy feeling. It was as if there was immense weight on his saber, as if a mountain was pressing on it.

This saber move allowed others to see it clearly. It looked very slow, but in fact, its speed was even faster than before.

“You move as if you are raising a weighted feather!” Zhou Wen directly spoke of the feeling that Feng Qiuyan’s saber had given him.

Feng Qiuyan nodded and said, “As expected of Coach. You knew about this realm all along. If it wasn’t for your guidance, I don’t know how long it would have taken me to figure it out.”

Zhou Wen wasn’t able to describe his current feelings as he thought to himself, Feng Qiuyan, you are truly a genius. You actually managed to master something with that little said? What else can I say?

“Coach, please continue to tailor a cultivation plan for me,” Feng Qiuyan said solemnly to Zhou Wen.

Without waiting for Zhou Wen to say a word, Feng Qiuyan transferred the money to Zhou Wen. It was actually more than twenty thousand, three times more than the first lesson.

“Coach, I know that you aren’t doing it for this pittance, but this is just a form of my appreciation,” Feng Qiuyan said.

I’m doing it precisely for this pittance, alright? Zhou Wen was really in need of money, but he found the money to be a hot potato.

“I’ve been a little busy recently. I probably don’t have much time to tailor a plan for you…”Zhou Wen wanted to find an excuse to send Feng Qiuyan away.

However, Feng Qiuyan immediately said, “It’s alright. Coach, if you have time, give me some pointers. If you don’t have time, I can wait.”

Zhou Wen looked at Feng Qiuyan with a complicated expression, momentarily at a loss for words. After a long hesitation, Zhou Wen gritted his teeth and said, “Feng Qiuyan, listen to me. In fact, from the beginning, I only wanted to earn a little bit of your money from teaching you. What I said to you previously was all nonsense. For you to master the realm of the slow saber is because you are talented and perceptive. It has nothing to do with me. I’m sorry; I’ll refund you the money you paid previously. I hope that you won’t take it to heart…”

Zhou Wen really didn’t wish to lie to Feng Qiuyan. He told him the truth and would rather return the money to him than continue the lie.

However, Feng Qiuyan didn’t believe him at all. He stopped Zhou Wen from refunding him the money and said, “Coach, it’s fine if you don’t have time. I can wait. If you think my talent is too poor and don’t wish to teach me, it doesn’t matter. I’ll stay by your side. You don’t have to deliberately teach me. Just let me figure things out on my own.”

Zhou Wen wasn’t an eloquent person. He was at a loss for an explanation as he stammered, “That’s not what I meant…”

“Coach, you don’t have to say anything else. I know people like you are very diligent in your cultivation. You will definitely squeeze every minute and second for cultivation, or else you wouldn’t have improved so quickly. I was selfish to make you waste your time tailoring a plan for me. But other than you, I can’t tolerate those mediocre people who only teach following a fixed curriculum. So please do not reject me. I know that your time is precious, so you don’t have to do anything. Just let me be by your side and self-study. Don’t worry, I won’t affect your day-to-day life. I won’t disturb you when it’s inconvenient.” Feng Qiuyan’s eyes were steeled with resolve.

This person… must be crazy… Zhou Wen looked at Feng Qiuyan with his mouth agape. He realized that he had no way of explaining himself.

“I’m telling you that I really have nothing to teach you. Are you sure you want to stay?” Zhou Wen said feebly.

“Coach, don’t worry. I will definitely not disturb your cultivation,” Feng Qiuyan said firmly.

“As long as you’re happy. Let me make things clear. I have nothing to teach you. If you insist on staying, the money you gave me won’t be refunded,” Zhou Wen said.

“I don’t usually use a lot of money. I haven’t used much of the allowance that my family gave me. There’s still about a million left. If you need it, you can take it all,” Feng Qiuyan said.

“There’s no need.” Zhou Wen shook his head helplessly as he went back inside and sat on the sofa to continue gaming.

Feng Qiuyan walked in and closed the door before following Zhou Wen, preparing to watch him play games.

“Do you want to watch me game too?” Zhou Wen put down his phone and asked Feng Qiuyan.

“I want to understand your entire cultivation process. Gaming is also part of your cultivation, right? What game are you playing? I want to download one too,” Feng Qiuyan said seriously. It was obvious that he wasn’t joking.

“This is a game I created myself. It hasn’t been completed yet, so it is a trade secret.” Zhou Wen felt like he was about to go mad.

Feng Qiuyan was obviously the one who had been deceived, but he, the deceiver, felt extremely depressed.

“I see.” Feng Qiuyan nodded and stopped watching him game. He walked to Zhou Wen and pulled a chair to sit down as he stared at him intently.

Zhou Wen couldn’t be bothered with him. He believed that Feng Qiuyan would leave once he was bored, so he decided to ignore him. Since Feng Qiuyan couldn’t see what game he was playing, he continued gaming and grinding the game’s instance dungeons.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 159 - True Grinding

Chapter 159 True Grinding

This time, Zhou Wen was grinding the Ant Nest. When he arrived in the Ant City again, he immediately switched his Primordial Energy Art to the Dao Sutra. His Life Providence also changed to Dao Body, giving him immense augmentation to his Primordial Energy recovery rate.

At the same time, he got the blood-colored avatar to summon the Banana Fairy in her fan-like state. Seeing the swarm of black-winged flying ants charging at him, he swatted the fan at them.

The dozen or so black-winged flying ants in front of him were immediately sent flying. The cold wind caused their bodies to freeze into ice sculptures. When they were hit, they immediately shattered into broken limbs that fell to the ground.

Following the dozen or so notifications that a black-winged flying ant had been killed, a dimensional crystal dropped on the ground.

Awesome. This is what it means to grind. Zhou Wen summoned the Three-Eyed Golden Warrior, Mutated Demonized General, the Mutated Lotus Flower Ant, and the Silver-Winged Flying Ant, but he didn’t let them attack. All he did was put up a battle formation for defense, preventing the horde of black-winged flying ants from approaching the blood-colored avatar.

The Three-Eyed Golden Warrior took point as the swarm of black-winged flying ants failed to injure its Golden Body. It occupied the space of nearly half the black-winged flying ants.

The other Companion Beasts also used their own strengths to prevent the ant swarm from approaching the blood-colored avatar.

However, there were just too many black-winged flying ants. In just a few seconds, a large group had gathered and were on the brink of breaking through the defensive perimeter.

Zhou Wen glanced at the blood-colored avatar’s Primordial Energy. Under the effects of the Dao Body, his Primordial Energy had recovered to the maximum of 18 points. Without any hesitation, he swatted his fan again.

Boom! Boom!

A large group of ants was sent flying as they slammed into each other, shattering to pieces. The notifications of black-winged flying ants being killed flooded the screen.

Under the protection of the Three-Eyed Golden Warrior and other Companion Beasts, the blood-colored avatar delivered a gust of cold wind every few seconds. The immense numbers of black-winged ants couldn’t withstand such a slaughter. In less than half an hour, the massive Ant City had almost no black-winged flying ants left.

Zhou Wen controlled the blood-colored avatar to charge into Ant City. All kinds of ants crawled out of the nest in an attempt to attack him, but a large swath of them was killed by the Great Yin Wind.

There were shiny dimensional crystals on the ground, mixed with Companion Eggs. It was a spectacular sight that Zhou Wen had never seen before.

Awesome! How awesome! Zhou Wen led the group of Companion Beasts to storm through Ant City, leaving a river of blood in his wake. He didn't even have time to pick up the dimensional crystals and Companion Eggs that dropped.

Kill! Kill! Kill!

Zhou Wen immersed himself in a frenzy, slaughtering every ant he saw. He wanted to massacre Ant City before heading to the tallest ant nest and fight the Golden Flying Ant so as to drink the honey inside.

Zhou Wen felt that the number of Legendary creatures he killed in less than an hour was more than the number of Legendary creatures he had killed previously combined. Just from the dimensional crystals and Companion Eggs that shimmered on the ground, he knew how mind-blowing the number of ants he had killed was.

It's no wonder that the powerful family clans will become stronger, but it's so difficult for the weak to become stronger. Once one's strength reaches a certain level, it's too easy to earn resources, Zhou Wen thought.

While he was crazily gaming and killing monsters, Feng Qiuyan, who was sitting opposite him, kept staring at him. His eyes never left him.

For a person as hardworking as Coach, his gaming must be a form of cultivation, but what's the point of cultivating in such a way? Although Feng Qiuyan couldn't figure out the outcome, he firmly believed that Zhou Wen's actions had his reasons and meaning, so he continued staring at him.

As Feng Qiuyan was pondering over the matter, the antelope that had been sleeping on the couch woke up. It jumped down from the couch and bleated at Zhou Wen a few times. It meant that it was hungry and wanted Zhou Wen to prepare food for it.

However, Zhou Wen was engrossed in the game and completely ignored it.

It was extremely unhappy as it stomped on the ground with its hooves, as though it was tap dancing

Seeing that Zhou Wen wasn’t paying any attention to it, the antelope circled around Zhou Wen and jumped around him. It even nudged its head into his embrace, hoping to attract his attention and get him to prepare food.

Zhou Wen was very familiar with the antelope and knew that it typically didn’t use violence. Furthermore, he was at a critical moment in his grinding, so he had no time to deal with it. No matter how much of a fuss it made, he ignored it.

As Feng Qiuyan watched, his eyes suddenly lit up. I understand now. Coach is practicing the cultivation of one’s mind. In such an environment, he can still focus on gaming. He’s not affected by any external factors or objects. This realm of single-mindedness is the optimal state for cultivation.

I see… So that’s how it is… I understand what I should do next… Feng Qiuyan leaped up and bowed slightly at Zhou Wen. “Coach, I understand. I’ll start my cultivation now. When I reach the same realm as you, I’ll seek your advice again.”

Zhou Wen didn’t respond and continued gaming as though he hadn’t heard him. Feng Qiuyan didn’t mind as he turned

around and left Zhou Wen’s dorm.

After glancing at Feng Qiuyan, a puzzled expression appeared on the antelope’s face. It had no idea what had happened to the person; he had acted like a madman.

Feng Qiuyan walked out excitedly, but as he walked, he slowed down.

How do I cultivate the way to having a calm mind? Just as Feng Qiuyan was thinking, he saw a person walking towards him. On careful look, it was Li Xuan.

“Feng Qiuyan, why are you here at Zhou Wen’s place?” Li Xuan asked in puzzlement.

Feng Qiuyan’s eyes lit up as he quickly came to Li Xuan. Without answering him, he asked, “Li Xuan, you have the best relationship with Coach. Do you know how he usually cultivates to be completely single-minded?”

“What single-minded? That fellow, Old Zhou, is like a fool when he’s gaming. He doesn’t hear a thing,” Li Xuan said casually.

“That’s right. What kind of disturbance practice does he do when he’s gaming?” Feng Qiuyan hurriedly said.

“Is there a need for practice? When he’s gaming, he isn’t distracted at all. In the past, I had a pretty chick tempt him while he was gaming, but guess what happened in the end? That punk acted as though he couldn’t see that chick at all. When that girl stopped him from playing, he threw her to the ground with a slap and continued gaming…” Li Xuan said as his saliva splattered.

So one needs to get past lust first? Feng Qiuyan’s eyes lit up as though he had figured out something.

However, when Feng Qiuyan thought about it, he realized that this was Sunset College. There was no way he could find such a woman to practice with. Instantly, he felt a little stumped.

“Do you know anywhere that has women? The kind that are very noisy,” Feng Qiuyan asked, having heard from Li Xuan that he had previously found women for Zhou Wen.

“Very noisy women… There really is one…” When Li Xuan saw how oddly Feng Qiuyan was behaving, he had the intention of pulling his leg.

Feng Qiuyan was delighted when Li Xuan said yes. He immediately got Li Xuan to take him there and followed him to Li Weiyang’s club.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 160 - Battling the Golden Flying Ant Again

Chapter 160 Battling the Golden Flying Ant Again

Zhou Wen didn't know how long he had been grinding. As the massive Ant City was only left with a tiny number of ants, there was no need for him to use the Grand Yin Wind again. Just the Mutated Demonized General could easily finish them off.

Seeing dimensional crystals and Companion Eggs drop everywhere in Ant City, Zhou Wen's excitement suddenly waned.

Despite killing black-winged flying ants, red-armored ants, blue-armored ants, and so on, they were only at the ordinary Legendary stage. Their limit was 18, so the dimensional crystals they dropped were at most 18, and the number was extremely few.

Crystals with such stats were of no use to Zhou Wen. Only the Primordial Energy Crystals could be used to replenish his Primordial Energy.

Zhou Wen's heart bled as he saw the large number of stats crystals wasted.

However, he couldn't take anything in the game out. If he could sell the stats crystal he obtained from grinding, it

would be enough for him to invest in Huang Ji's game.

Zhou Wen ignored ordinary stats crystals and focused on picking up the Companion Eggs and Primordial Energy Skill Crystals.

He had reaped quite a sizable harvest this time. Just the Legendary Companion Eggs numbered 14 and the Primordial Energy Skill Crystals numbered 21. However, most of them were repeated. There were only two unique types of Primordial Energy Skills.

One of them was the black-winged flying ant's Primordial Energy Skill. Zhou Wen had previously obtained this, but the other was something he hadn't collected before. It was dropped by the red-armored ants that couldn't fly. Its name was Concealed Armor Technique; it was also a defensive Primordial Energy Skill.

Companion Eggs with poor attributes were fed to the pets. Those with good attributes were hatched since Zhou Wen planned on keeping them for fusion later.

With most of the ants in Ant City killed, the Golden Flying Ant remained inside the ant nest high up. Zhou Wen made sure he was in optimal state by filling up his Companion Beasts' and blood-colored avatar's Primordial Energy before heading for the ant nest at the top.

It was different from before. This time, Zhou Wen had brought a large number of helpers over. He wasn't as wretched as he used to be, nor was there any ant horde besieging him.

Even if I can't kill the Golden Flying Ant, it won't be difficult to drink some Golden Ant Honey. Zhou Wen didn't believe he could kill the Golden Flying Ant with his current strength.

When he arrived at the apex of the ant nest, he directly ordered the Mutated Demonized General and the Three-Eyed Golden Warrior to charge in. They were the only ones who could tank, especially the Three-Eyed Golden Warrior. It could withstand blows the best, so Zhou Wen planned on using them to attract the Golden Flying Ant's attention so that he could rush in and drink the honey.

Indeed, the moment the duo charged in after smashing through the nest's walls, they immediately attracted the Golden Flying Ant's attention. With a flash of golden light, a gigantic flying ant appeared above their heads. Its sharp claws slashed straight at the Mutated Demonized General's head.

The Mutated Demonized General roared angrily as it delivered Astral Fist. Its entire body glowed with golden light as it punched at the Golden Flying Ant's claws.

But the next second, Zhou Wen saw a golden beam flash. One of the Mutated Demonized General's arm flew up into the air, having been sliced off by the Golden Flying Ant.

Holy sh*t, it's that powerful! Zhou Wen was alarmed as he didn't dare hesitate any further. He controlled his remaining pets to charge at the Golden Flying Ant as the blood-colored avatar jumped into the ant honey and began gulping mouthfuls of honey.

After a few mouthfuls, the game produced a notification: 'Absorbed Golden Ant Honey. Primordial Energy +1'

His Primordial Energy finally raised from the limit of 18 to 19.

Zhou Wen was delighted as he continued drinking the ant honey, hoping to directly break through to 21 points.

However, despite filling his stomach to the point of not being able to swallow any further, he didn’t receive a notification of his Primordial Energy raising to 20 points, much less 21 points.

Could it be that I haven’t drunk enough? Zhou Wen cloyed from the excessive sweetness. Perhaps just opening his move would make him vomit honey. He just couldn’t continue drinking.

On the other side, Zhou Wen’s pets had been mercilessly killed by the Golden Flying Ant aside from the Three-Eyed Golden Warrior.

There was a deep wound on the Three-Eyed Golden Warrior’s chest. Despite having Golden Body and Invulnerable Golden Power, it was still heavily injured. The Golden Flying Ant’s strength was extremely terrifying.

Seeing it rush over again, the Three-Eyed Golden Warrior was unable to duck the speedy attack. All it could do was use Golden Palm to meet it.

With a cracking sound, the Three-Eyed Golden Warrior’s palm was cleaved apart. His body involuntarily flew backward and crashed into the cocoon hanging in the middle of the ant nest.

Suddenly, the Golden Flying Ant phased away and appeared in front of the gigantic cocoon in a flash. It used its body to block the Three-Eyed Golden Warrior from crashing into the gigantic cocoon.

When the Three-Eyed Golden Warrior collided with the Golden Flying Ant, it was sent flying to the side. The latter immediately charged forward in an attempt to slay the Three-Eyed Golden Warrior.

Zhou Wen’s heart stirred as he controlled the blood-colored avatar. He raised the banana fan and waved it at the gigantic cocoon, sending a cold gust of wind over.

The Golden Flying Ant that was charging at the Three-Eyed Golden Warrior immediately flew back. A strange golden barrier shot out from its body to protect the gigantic cocoon.

The Grand Yin Wind collided with the golden barrier, but only trembled it a little. The barrier remained unbroken.

In the next second, the two feelers on the Golden Flying Ant’s head emitted a terrifying golden light. Like a golden lightning bolt, they struck the blood-colored avatar, and the screen of the cell phone turned black.

The Golden Flying Ant is undoubtedly at the Epic stage, but I wonder what’s inside the gigantic cocoon? Logically speaking, it should be the descendant of the Golden Flying Ant, but its energy aura seems different from the Golden Flying Ant.

Although Zhou Wen was puzzled, he didn’t have the ability to kill the Golden Flying Ant. Even if he wanted to explore the secret of the gigantic cocoons, he couldn’t.

Unfortunately, I only managed to increase my Primordial Energy by one point despite drinking so much of the ant honey. I wonder if there’s a limit to how much it can raise my Primordial Energy or if there are other reasons. Zhou Wen was truly exhausted today. Although he still had plenty of Primordial Energy, the repeated use of Grand Yin Wind over long periods of time left him mentally exhausted.

After putting away his phone, Zhou Wen saw the antelope glaring at him as though he wanted to eat him up.

“Brother Antelope, I’m sorry. I’ll go get you some food now.” Zhou Wen hurriedly ran out of the building and prepared to eat something before bringing back some fresh vegetables for the antelope.

When he reached the entrance of Four Seasons Garden, he met Wang Lu and the other special admissions students.

Zhou Wen wasn’t familiar with the other special admissions students, so he only greeted Wang Lu before heading to the cafeteria.

A special admissions student named Li Zhuo said with a smile, “Zhou Wen, have you sold the Bronze Luck Beast strategy yet?”

“No,” Zhou Wen answered before heading straight to the cafeteria. He didn’t have the time for idle chats.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 161 - Who’s First?

Chapter 161 Who’s First?

“It would be a wonder if he could sell it. In terms of Companion Beasts, we are indeed not as strong as him. Unfortunately, Restriction City doesn’t allow the use of Companion Beasts. Who needs his strategy?” Li Zhuo pursed his lips as he watched Zhou Wen leave.

The girl beside him added, “He thinks he’s very strong just because he defeated John, but it was all because of his Companion Beasts. To write a strategy guide and sell it to our special class is indeed excessively arrogant.”

“Let’s not talk about the geniuses like An Jing, Wang Lu, or Feng Qiuyan in our special class, even the average ones are far superior to the students of the ordinary classes. If he wants to write a strategy guide, it will be us writing for them.”

The few special admissions students shared the same thought. They still felt a little displeased that Zhou Wen had tried selling them the strategy guide. It had hurt their pride.

Wang Lu frowned slightly and said, “Zhou Wen is indeed a genius. The guide he wrote must have something to learn from. However, we aren’t buying it because we want to train ourselves, so there’s no need to belittle him.”

Li Zhuo laughed and said, “Wang Lu, you are overthinking things. We have no intention of disparaging him. We are just saying that no one is weaker than him in terms of their own abilities. There’s no need to buy his strategy.”

Wang Lu could tell that Li Zhuo was insincere, but she didn’t say anything else.

The few of them headed for class together. The mission to slay the Bronze Luck Beasts had been completed, so Liu Zhengyan was to provide them a summary and explanation. All the special admissions students had to attend the class.

Liu Zhengyan was in a good mood today. He didn’t blame Feng Qiuyan or another student for being late. He only waved his hand to get them to quickly take their seats.

“Mr. Liu seems to be in a good mood today. He didn’t reprimand the late students!” a girl said in surprise.

Shaking his head, Li Zhuo said with a smile, “Of course he’s in a good mood. Our special class did a good job with the homework mission. I heard that a few of us broke the special class record from last year.”

“Seems like we can relax for a while.” The girl from before smiled.

Liu Zhengyan raised his hand slightly to signal for the students to quieten down. Then, he swept his gaze across everyone’s faces and said slowly, “Everyone has completed the homework mission of killing Bronze Luck Beasts. Compared to the special classes of past years, the overall standard of this class is a level higher. It can be considered the best result in recent years.”

The students started clapping. Many students showed their excitement. Having been in school for more than a month, this was the first time they heard Liu Zhengyan praise them.

Liu Zhengyan waved his hand and waited for the students to quieten down before continuing, “This year, a few students performed pretty well. They broke the records from previous years. An Jing with 3:20. Wang Lu with 3:27, and Feng Qiuyan with 3:28. Such results can be said to be extremely outstanding.”

The other students looked at the three of them enviously. Although they had already known that the three of them were exceptionally outstanding-even in the special class—they couldn’t help but feel jealous.

“But…” Liu Zhengyan suddenly changed the topic and continued, “But this year’s best result wasn’t scored by any of them.”

“How is that possible? Who else could it be? Is there anyone else in our class who has better results than them?”

“It can’t be, right? There are hidden big shots that are more impressive than the three of them?”

“That’s impossible, isn’t it? An Jing, Wang Lu, and Feng Qiuyan are among the top ten students in the school. Even if the other students are very strong, they aren’t good enough to enter the top ten. It seems impossible for anyone to have better results than the three of them.”

The students engaged in a flurry of discussion. They looked around and wondered who that person was.

“The person who obtained the best results in killing the Bronze Luck Beast this year isn’t from our special class.” The

students' discussion became even more intense after Liu Zhengyan said those shocking words.

"Mr. Liu, don't tell me you're talking about our seniors?" Li Zhuo couldn't help but ask loudly.

Liu Zhengyan smiled and looked at Li Zhuo. He asked, "Li Zhuo, who do you think should be first and what's his timing?"

"I think it should be Senior Wei Ge. I believe that if it were Senior Wei Ge, he should be able to do it in sub-three minutes," said Li Zhuo.

"That's right. Wei Ge got 2:57. It happens to be within three minutes. You are very keen," Liu Zhengyan said.

Li Zhuo said proudly, "Mr. Li, you flatter me. I was just making a casual guess. I didn't expect to be on the mark."

Liu Zhengyan smiled. "But that's Wei Ge's results when he was practicing. Besides, he's already in his third year, so he's not within the rankings of you freshmen. The freshman in first place is someone else."

"Who is it?" Li Zhuo couldn't help but be dumbfounded.

Liu Zhengyan picked up a dossier and said, "The results for this year's killing of Bronze Luck Beasts puts Zhou Wen from Counselor Wang Fei's class as first. Second is Li Xuan from her class as well. Third place is our class's An Jing…"

"Impossible!" Li Zhuo cried out in disbelief.

This time, it wasn't just Li Zhuo and the other students. Even An Jing, Wang Lu, and Feng Qiuyan's eyes narrowed as they looked at Liu Zhengyan.

“What’s Zhou Wen’s timing?” An Jing suddenly asked.

“That’s a good question. You can guess what their results are,” Liu Zhengyan said with a smile.

“It’s at best an order of magnitude from An Jing, right?” suggested Li Zhuo.

“It’s indeed an order of magnitude.” Liu Zhengyan turned on the player and projector and played a video. “See for yourself.”

Everyone cast their gaze to the big screen. An Jing, Feng Qiuyan, and the others also had their eyes peeled to the screen as they watched the video carefully.

The video was very short and only took less than a minute. However, after watching the video, the entire classroom fell silent. Li Zhuo and the others broke out into a cold sweat as they stared intently at the big screen. They failed to regain their cognitive abilities for a long time, and their faces were blank.

Coach lives up to being a coach. What amazing positioning. Is this all the benefits of gaming while practicing to be undistracted? Looks like I still need further cultivation. Feng Qiuyan’s eyes were burning, but he seemed to have expected it.

Wang Lu was somewhat astonished as well. Although she had expected Zhou Wen’s results to be excellent, she never expected them to be this good. It only took him forty-seven seconds.

Zhou Wen was indeed faster than them by an order of magnitude, but this order was at the level of minutes.

An Jing looked at the screen calmly, but her expression was a little odd. It was unknown what she was thinking.

“Mr. Liu, are these results real? This is a strategy designed by the counselors before getting Zhou Wen to carry it out, right?” Li Zhuo still found it unbelievable.

“Unfortunately, no counselor participated in the design of this strategy. The strategy was written by Zhou Wen and Li Xuan. I also spent money on the discussion forums to read their monetized thread before I learned that there was such a method to kill Bronze Luck Beasts. Such a line of thinking and design can be said to be unique. To resolve a problem from a weakling’s point of view, relying on intelligence and not strength is very difficult. Today, we will be discussing in detail the ingenuity of the design and their unique line of thinking. I believe all of you will learn plenty from it, especially their thoughts on solving the problem. Strength might not be the only solution to resolving problems. This is very important…”

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 162 - Restriction City Activity

Chapter 162 Restriction City Activity

Li Xuan organized another event for the Xuanwen Club. Zhou Wen originally thought that not many people would turn up. If Gu Dian didn't come, there would at most be four people, but when he arrived, he realized that there were more people than he imagined.

Fang Ruoxi and Tian Xiangdong were there as well. Gu Dian had also come. Apart from the original five people from the Xuanwen Club, there were also Feng Qiuyan, Wang Lu, Li Weiyang, and Hui Haifeng.

Li Xuan chuckled and said, "The club's event is a joint activity between our Xuanwen Club, Weiyang Club, and the Ocean Club. Furthermore, our Xuanwen Club has added two more formal members. They are Feng Qiuyan and Wang Lu."

Zhou Wen was slightly taken aback. He had been gaming permanently for the past few days and had not paid any attention to the situation regarding the Xuanwen Club. Only then did he realize that Feng Qiuyan and Wang Lu had been roped into the Xuanwen Club by Li Xuan.

Li Xuan had set his sights on Restriction City. The group headed for the city with great fanfare.

The Weiyang Club consisted of only girls while the Ocean Club was mainly boys. Furthermore, they were all infamous problematic students in school. With Li Xuan and Zhou Wen's Xuanwen Club having some odd ones out, this group quickly attracted the attention of the school.

The first person to receive the news was Wei Ge. As the president of Sunset College's student council, he acutely believed that this matter was somewhat unusual. Perhaps it represented future trends of the students of Sunset College.

Hui Haifeng and his gang are actually so close to Zhou Wen and Li Xuan. Wang Lu and Feng Qiuyan from the special class all have large families backing them, so they haven't joined any clubs. Now, they have joined the Xuanwen Club and that strange Gu Dian has joined them too. Will the Xuanwen Club become the second Ocean Club in the future? No, I have to see what those people are up to. Wei Ge quickly gathered student councilors and joined the Xuanwen Club's activities in the name of maintaining order and keeping the students safe. Together, they entered Restriction City with Li Xuan and company.

Due to the addition of the student council, the group once again grew bigger—there were already more than 50 people. After the group entered Restriction City, they directly stormed the area. The ordinary bronze beasts and bronze birds couldn't withstand the slaughtering of so many students.

Surprisingly, Feng Qiuyan, who loved to use his saber, didn't take action this time. He was gaming on his phone just like Zhou Wen.

Zhou Wen saw that the game Feng Qiuyan was playing was a mini-game called "Last 20 Seconds If You Are A Man." The game was very simple, but it wasn't easy to maintain 20 seconds in the game without dying.

When Zhou Wen saw Feng Qiuyan gaming, the latter had already lasted more than a minute. However, he still failed to escape the fate of death.

As there were so many students, and many of them were extremely powerful seniors, the originally dangerous Restriction City seemed to become a tourist attraction. Even the Bronze Luck Beasts were quickly cleared.

Wang Lu had even used Zhou Wen's strategy to kill one. Indeed, she had easily improved her results to less than a minute.

"Zhou Wen, I think highly of you. If you join the student council now, there's a high chance of becoming the president of the student council. Think about it," Wei Ge said to Zhou Wen when they were alone.

"I'm fine as is. Besides, I only like gaming. I can't be president," Zhou Wen said.

"No one was born to be one. Just take your time to learn. You don't have to be in a hurry to answer me. Think about it first," Wei Ge said with a smile.

Seeing Hui Haifeng walk over, Wei Ge didn't wish to meet him. He bade Zhou Wen farewell and left.

"Did Wei Ge tell you that he thinks highly of you and wants you to join the student council to work with him? And when he leaves in the future, you will be the president of the student council?" Hui Haifeng walked to Zhou Wen's side and said with a smile.

Zhou Wen was slightly taken aback. Although his words were somewhat different, they had the same meaning.

Hui Haifeng smiled and said, "There's no need to be surprised. That punk is like that. He has said those words to almost every single member of the Ocean Club."

“I see.” Zhou Wen was enlightened as he finally understood why Hui Haifeng had guessed Wei Ge’s words so accurately.

“I’ve read your Bronze Luck Beast strategy. It’s truly impressive. It has nothing to do with your combat strength. It’s the kind of planning ability that can calculate such shortcuts in chaotic environments that can avoid the sacrifice of many soldiers when exploring new dimensional zones,” Hui Haifeng said.

“You plan on joining the army in the future?” Zhou Wen asked Hui Haifeng.

Hui Haifeng nodded. “If there’s a chance, I’ll join the army. If there’s no chance, I’ll work on something related. If a man can’t do something jaw-dropping his entire life, I feel like life would have been lived in vain.”

“I wish you success.” Although Zhou Wen didn’t share the same views, it didn’t stop him from appreciating such a person. At the very least, he had a good impression of Hui Haifeng.

Everyone kept storming into Restriction City as all sorts of bronze beasts were killed. Unfortunately, the drop rates of the bronze beasts were too low. It would only produce a single dimensional crystal occasionally. Furthermore, their attributes were generally not high.

As he walked forward, Zhou Wen suddenly felt the mysterious phone in his pocket vibrate. It left him somewhat taken aback.

He had already found the tiny palm print of Restriction City and had downloaded it into his phone. Why was the mysterious phone still vibrating?

Seeing that no one was paying attention to him, Zhou Wen deliberately stayed at the back. He took out the mysterious phone, wanting to know why it was vibrating.

As soon as he took out the phone, the camera was automatically activated.

Zhou Wen raised his phone and looked around the city. When a scene appeared on his screen, the camera app automatically locked onto it. A green frame appeared that enclosed something on the screen.

It was an old and worn wall. At a glance, it seemed as though there was nothing different about it. There was nothing different about it from the brick walls beside it.

However, when Zhou Wen walked to the side of the brick wall and touched it with his hand, he realized that the brick wall wasn’t made of ordinary brick, but some kind of metal.

The mysterious phone’s camera function was only locked onto the metal wall, but it didn’t automatically take pictures or lock onto any patterns. Zhou Wen was momentarily unsure of what was so special about the metal wall.

It was a part of a particular building, but the structure was somewhat odd. It was squarish, like a miniature ancient city.

The four walls of the city were only about ten meters tall. Zhou Wen circled the building but didn’t find any doors or windows.

Using his ability to fly thanks to the Godfiend Life Providence, he flew to the top of the building and discovered that the roof was sealed as well. The entire building didn’t seem to have an entrance.

Can it be that the item that causes the mysterious phone to vibrate is inside the building and not the metal wall itself? Zhou Wen wondered.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 163 - Death City

Chapter 163 Death City

“What did you discover?” Wang Lu jumped up and sized up the building beneath her.

“This building is a little odd. There aren’t any entrances or windows around it. Furthermore, it doesn’t seem to use ordinary bricks. It seems to be made from a special type of bronze,” Zhou Wen said.

“It’s indeed a little odd.” Wang Lu crouched down to touch it and nodded. “Its metal. It’s indeed a little strange.”

Their actions attracted Li Xuan and the company. Wang Lu explained the situation and everyone agreed that the building was strange.

“All of you, move aside. Let me try and see if I can smash it open.” A stout boy from the Ocean Club struck down at the metal wall with a huge hammer.

The boy was at the Legendary stage, and he was a Strength-type. He had also used his metal hammer that had Primordial Gold mixed in, combined with his Primordial Energy Skill, to strike the wall. Even if the wall was made of metal bricks, he should have been able to smash open a crack.

However, not only did he fail to blast through the metal wall, he even fell to the ground from the recoil. The hammer in his hand flew out of his hand, and his hands were dripping with

blood. The area between his thumb and index finger had torn.

“It’s so hard!” Everyone was shocked. The boy was famous for his Strength in school, but due to his poor Speed, he was unable to enter the top ten.

In terms of strength alone, he would probably be ranked in the top three. For the Full-Strength strike from such a person to fail to scratch the surface of the metal wall made it clear that it was truly extraordinary.

This only intrigued everyone further. They tried a variety of methods, but unfortunately, they failed to succeed in seeing what was inside.

Even Zhou Wen used Truth Listener’s powers. He wanted to hear what was inside, but the interior of the building seemed to be a chunk of solid mass. There wasn’t any movement at all. Zhou Wen couldn’t hear a thing from the dead silence.

“That’s Death City.” A voice suddenly sounded.

Zhou Wen looked in the direction of the voice and saw that the person speaking was a long-haired boy. His looks were ordinary, but he looked refined. He had a scholarly air to him.

Zhou Wen hadn’t noticed him in the beginning perhaps because of his reticent temperament that didn’t attract much attention among the students.

“Jiang Yan, this strange building is called Death City? Do you know its origins?” Wei Ge asked him.

Jiang Yan was a member of the student council, but he didn’t look like one of the key members. He was probably just an ordinary member, so no one had noticed him before.

“In the Zhou dynasty, while humans were still confined to the borders of undeveloped barbaric behavior, many people believed in ghosts and gods, and it was very common for them to carry out rituals to worship the heavens. The funeral rituals were also very particular, especially the members of the royal family back then. In the later years of the Eastern Zhou dynasty, King Zhou became afraid of death. He built Death City and placed his bones and blood in it, hoping that by indicating his passing, he could hide from the heavens and escape death. Unfortunately, heaven’s will couldn’t be violated. He ultimately died.” Jiang Yan’s eyes flashed a look of mockery.

After a pause, Jiang Yan continued, “According to the few historical records, Death City is made of bronze, with no doors or windows…”

Hearing Jiang Yan’s words, everyone was increasingly convinced that this strange bronze building was the legendary Death City.

“I thought it was something good, but it turns out it’s just a fake grave. It only spells bad luck,” a boy said.

“That might not be the case,” said Jiang Yan indifferently. “In order to fool the ghosts and gods, King Zhou didn’t only put his bones and blood in Dead City; he also buried his personal items and treasures with him. There were even some brutal kings who would even bury their beloved concubines alive. In order to fool the ghosts and gods, he had put in much effort.”

“Does that mean that there might be treasures inside?” Many students’ eyes lit up when they heard that.

“If the history books are right, there will definitely be burial items inside. However, now that this place has turned into a dimensional zone, there might be some abnormal changes in it. It wouldn’t be surprising if it had dimensional creatures inside,” said Jiang Yan.

“Jiang Yan, do you know how to open Death City?” Wei Ge asked Jiang Yan.

It was his first time realizing that Jiang Yan had such a side to him, as though it was somewhat different from the person he knew before.

“Dig into the area beneath the south wall of Death City. If this is really East Zhou’s Death City, there should be an entrance there,” Jiang Yan said.

Wei Ge arranged for people to dig according to Jiang Yan’s instructions. After a hole seven to eight feet deep was dug, they saw a hole appear on the metal wall.

After digging further down, a circular hole appeared. It was a tunnel that went all the way into Death City, but it was winding, making it impossible to see what was going on inside.

“Which one of us is willing to go in first and take a look?” Wei Ge said.

“I don’t know about others, but I’m definitely entering to take a look. However, I don’t want to be the first to enter,” Li Xuan said.

After a short discussion, Hui Haifeng was the first to enter. The four clubs sent a few people in.

Zhou Wen originally didn’t wish to enter, but Li Xuan pulled him inside. Soon, they heard Hui Haifeng’s voice from ahead. “Everyone, come on in. There’s no danger inside.”

By the time Zhou Wen and Li Xuan climbed in, Wei Ge, Hui Haifeng, Feng Qiuyan, Li Weiyang, and the company were already standing in Death City.

Zhou Wen originally imagined that he would see skeletons and coffins, but after entering, he realized that there was nothing of that sort. There was only a tree in the city.

The tree was about two meters tall. The branches and leaves were all black, but there were many thin white lines on them. It looked like a painting drawn in black and white.

“Jiang Yan, what’s going on? Didn’t you say that this Death City has King Zhou’s bones and burial items? Why is there only this tree?” Wei Ge questioned Jiang Yan.

Jiang Yan said indifferently, “I’ve already said that those are records in the history books. After the dimensional storms, it’s normal to have abnormal changes inside.”

“Then do you know what tree this is?” someone asked.

“I don’t know,” Jiang Yan replied straightforwardly.

Everyone was somewhat disappointed. Even though they didn’t really have any hopes of digging up any treasures, learning that there was only one tree in there wiped away their curiosity instantly. They were somewhat disappointed.

“What crappy tree is this? It caused us to waste so much time.” A member of the Ocean Club kicked the tree trunk unhappily.

With this kick, the pitch-black tree swayed and turned a bright white color. In the blink of an eye, the black tree had turned completely white.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 164 - The Color-Changing Tree

Chapter 164 The Color-Changing Tree

The originally black tree turned snow-white in an instant. Everyone was shocked and retreated warily.

However, other than turning snow-white, the tree did not undergo any other changes, nor was there any danger.

After a while, the white tree gradually turned black again, as if nothing had happened.

“This tree is a little strange. It’s clearly a black tree, so why did it suddenly turn white?” Li Xuan was extremely curious as he held a wooden stick and stabbed it a few times.

However, the black tree remained black without any changes from before.

Zhou Wen aimed his mysterious phone at the black tree and the camera function immediately locked onto it. Clearly, it was the tree that had caused the mysterious phone to vibrate.

He pressed the shutter button and the phone immediately entered the picture-taking interface.

Quite a number of people were using their cell phones to illuminate the area as well as taking pictures of the black

tree. Zhou Wen’s actions didn’t seem too out of the ordinary.

As there was no danger, someone boldly shook the black tree. In the next second, the black tree had turned into a ruby-like color. It was like a gem in the shape of a tree, shimmering with a dazzling glow of riches.

The person shaking the tree was a girl. This scene gave her a shock and she hurriedly retreated.

Just like before, nothing dangerous happened. The red gem tree gradually lost its luster and soon returned to its dark appearance.

“This is really strange.” Li Xuan seemed to have thought of something as he carefully shook the black tree with his hand. Indeed, the black tree had changed color again. However, it was different from the previous few colors. This time, the black tree had turned golden.

“It seems like the color will be different depending on the person,” Li Xuan said.

“Let me give it a try.” Everyone was curious as they attempted to shake the black tree.

Indeed, just as Li Xuan said, when different people touched the black tree, it would transform into another color. Even if it changed to red, the red itself was a different shade.

“Old Zhou, try it too,” Li Xuan said to Zhou Wen.

“There’s no need. I don’t like to take risks. It’s best you don’t touch it.” Zhou Wen shook his head. Before figuring out what the black tree was, he was unwilling to touch it.

The phone was still in the middle of downloading, and the download speed seemed much slower than before.

After the crowd had their fun, they realized that the black tree didn’t have any other function other than changing colors. Soon, they were bored with it.

As there was nothing else here, everyone left Death City and continued exploring Restriction City.

The mysterious phone was still in the middle of downloading. It didn’t finish even when the club activity ended and everyone left together.

With the screen constantly downloading, Zhou Wen had no way of gaming. After returning to his dorm, he had a good nap-a rather rare opportunity.

Ever since he had advanced to the Legendary stage, the feeling of having sleep paralysis hadn’t happened again. Zhou Wen had a good nap and ended up waking the next morning. After washing up and eating, he realized that the download had been completed when he unlocked the mysterious phone. There was a tree-shaped icon on the home screen.

However, the cartoon-styled icon looked different from the black tree. There were three words “Dead Man Tree” written below.

Zhou Wen was somewhat curious as to why a tree had an instance dungeon. He immediately tapped on the tree’s icon.

After launching the app, the scene turned black. In the dark space, there was a tree-a black one. However, in the dark cavern, one could clearly see the tree’s appearance.

Apart from its cartoon-styled appearance, it was the black tree they had encountered in Death City.

The blood-colored avatar stood in front of it, but apart from the black tree, there was nothing around it. Zhou Wen was momentarily at a loss as to what the instance dungeon was for.

He summoned the Silver-Winged Flying Ant and let it fly towards the black tree. He then attacked the black tree with Magical Needle which stabbed into it but failed to penetrate it. He wasn’t able to damage the black tree at all either.

The tree didn’t react and remained standing quietly in the darkness.

Zhou Wen hesitated for a moment before deciding to let the blood-colored avatar personally touch the tree to see if there would be any abnormal changes.

However, Zhou Wen found it strange that after the blood-colored avatar touched it, the color of the black tree did not change. It was still black, completely the same as before.

Strange, why didn’t the color change? Zhou Wen remembered that in Death City, the black tree had undergone a change in color when people touched it. Nothing like what had happened to him was experienced in game.

Is it me or is it a problem with the game? Zhou Wen was momentarily unsure of what the tree was for, nor did he understand the use of the instance dungeon. All he could do was ignore it for the time being. After quitting the game, he logged into other dungeons to hunt monsters.

Now, Zhou Wen only grinded two types of monsters. One was mutated Legendary monsters since only they could drop stats crystals above 18 points which were of use to him.

Another was Epic creatures that could drop stats crystals that exceeded 20 points. They were similarly useful to Zhou Wen.

However, Epic creatures were too powerful. He was no match for the few Epic creatures Zhou Wen encountered in-game, so all he could do was search for the mutated Legendary creatures.

In a room at the An family's residence in Luoyang, An Tianzuo had recently returned home.

"Tianzuo, has the situation around Luoyang been very bad recently?" Ouyang Lan asked worriedly.

"It's not that bad. Apart from the problematic matters at the Qihe River, there aren't too many problems in other places," said An Tianzuo with a smile. "Mom, don't worry. As long as I'm in Luoyang, I won't let those dimensional creatures invade Luoyang."

Ouyang Lan nodded slightly and sighed before saying, "The Holy Land qualification competition is just around the corner. If Zhou Wen goes alone, I won't be at ease. Let Ah Sheng accompany him, right?"

"Mom, are you really letting Zhou Wen go? Aren't you going to reconsider?" An Tianzuo frowned.

Ouyang Lan shook her head and said, "I know what you're thinking. However, Xiaojing has a congenital illness. It would be terrifying if something were to happen to her during her

acceptance of the special physique. I don’t want Little Jing to take any risks. Do you understand?”

“Understood.” An Tianzuo added, “But I believe that Little Jing can do it.”

“There’s no need to elaborate on this matter. I’ve already made up my mind. Furthermore, the nomination has been changed to Zhou Wen. There’s no way to change it.” Ouyang Lan stopped An Tianzuo from continuing.

An Tianzuo remained silent. Although he didn’t agree with Ouyang Lan’s decision, he would not go against her wishes. He had always been a filial son.

Ouyang Lan sighed lightly. “Besides, Zhou Wen might not be willing to go. He has no blood relationship with the two of you, but his temper is extraordinarily similar. He’s always so stubborn.”

“It’s different. He’s stubborn while we are confident,” said An Tianzuo proudly.

Ouyang Lan only looked at An Tianzuo and smiled without saying another word.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 165 - Dead Man Tree

Chapter 165 Dead Man Tree

An Jing huddled into a ball and leaned against the corner of the wall, enduring the pain that was like a knife being twisted inside her.

Why don’t people who can cultivate the Sun Strafe Art cherish it? I have to ensure such pain just to cultivate it. Why is Heaven so unfair to me? An Jing thought of Zhou Wen amidst the pain as she clenched her teeth, seemingly reducing the pain she felt.

She had a congenital disease, so she couldn’t cultivate Sun Strafe Art, a Primordial Energy Art which was highly yang in nature. However, if she failed to master the Sun Strafe Art, she would not be able to obtain the special physique she needed.

In the Holy Land, there were several special physiques. The special physiques that everyone could obtain were different, but they had to have the corresponding strength attributes to obtain the corresponding special physiques.

The special physique that An Jing wanted was the Sun God Body. If she could master the Sun Strafe Art, she would have an 80% chance of obtaining the Sun God Body if she stood out.

However, the Sun Strafe Art didn’t match her body’s attributes. When she cultivated the Sun Strafe Art, it would trigger her congenital illness. Every time she cultivated, she would feel like dying due to the excruciating pain.

An Jing didn’t give up because of this. Even though Ouyang Lan had forbidden her from cultivating the Sun Strafe Art, she still secretly endured it.

Even Ouyang Lan believed that An Jing had advanced to the Legendary stage by using another Primordial Energy Art. She never expected An Jing to endure extreme pain to advance to the Legendary stage with the Sun Strafe Art.

However, this matter was something An Jing had never told anyone. Even An Tianzuo wasn’t aware of it.

After completing the Sun Strafe Art’s cultivation, the pain in An Jing’s body gradually disappeared, making her complexion turn for the better.

After taking a shower and changing into a clean set of clothes, An Jing walked out of her dorm and arrived in front of her neighbor’s door. After a moment of hesitation, her eyes turned resolute as she pressed the doorbell of Zhou Wen’s dorm.

“What’s the matter?” Zhou Wen opened the door and asked curiously when he saw An Jing standing outside.

“Do you still remember our three-month contract?” she asked calmly.

“I don’t remember.” Zhou Wen shook his head. It was only a one-sided statement by An Jing. He had never agreed to a three-month contract.

“It doesn’t matter whether you remember it or not. Although it’s not three months yet, since you’ve already advanced to the Legendary stage and have so many powerful pets, it will be a fair battle between us now. It’s time for us to end things,” An Jing said.

“I’m not interested in that special physique nomination. If you want it that much, I can accompany you to meet Sis Lan. Let me convince her to return the nomination to you,” Zhou Wen said.

An Jing looked at Zhou Wen and suddenly felt extremely aggrieved. She had risked her life to obtain the nomination, but it was nothing of importance to Zhou Wen.

Suddenly, An Jing’s fighting spirit vanished without a trace.

So what if I defeat Zhou Wen? So what if I prove that I’m more outstanding than him? I still can’t go to the Holy Land to get the Sun God Body. An Jing felt like everything was meaningless.

Without looking at Zhou Wen again, An Jing turned and left, looking somewhat lost.

Strange person. Zhou Wen found it odd when he saw An Jing leave just like that.

However, since An Jing had automatically given up antagonizing him, it was naturally best for Zhou Wen.

“Zhou Wen, bad news.” Just as Zhou Wen was about to close the door and return to his room to continue gaming, he saw Li Xuan running over, panting

“What’s wrong?” Zhou Wen asked with a frown.

“Something happened. Something big has happened.” Li Xuan gasped for breath as he said, “Someone died in our college. A few students died.”

“Did they die in the dimensional zones?” Zhou Wen asked.

“No, they died in school. Furthermore, the people who died were people who joined us on our trip to Restriction City yesterday. Furthermore, all of them had entered Death City as well. That includes Wang Lu,” Li Xuan said with an odd expression.

“Wang Lu is dead? How did they die?” Zhou Wen was alarmed when he heard that.

“I don’t know.” Li Xuan shook his head.

“How do you not know?” Zhou Wen frowned slightly.

“I heard from the school’s management that they have yet to find out the cause of their deaths, nor do they know how they died. A few of them were walking when they suddenly collapsed to the ground and died. They were not breathing and their heart had stopped beating. The cause of death hasn’t been found either. Wang Lu was roughly the same. She was reading in the library when she suddenly fell to the ground. There wasn’t any warning. The people from the school and the military are investigating, but there hasn’t been an answer yet.”

With that said, fear appeared on Li Xuan’s face. “What’s more frightening is that they died at the same time. Furthermore…”

“Furthermore what?” Zhou Wen knew that Li Xuan had definitely discovered something important.

“Further, if I remember correctly, those people who died had touched that black tree. Coincidentally, when they touched the black tree, the black tree turned red.” Li Xuan swallowed his saliva and continued, “I don’t know if this has anything to do with their deaths, but it’s too much of a coincidence.”

“Did you tell the counselors about this?” Zhou Wen had an ominous feeling.

“I told them. The college has already sent people to Restriction City and found that bronze building. However, after entering, there was no sight of that black tree. There was nothing inside, not even a leaf. It’s as if there was never a tree there.” When Li Xuan said that, his body trembled slightly. Clearly, he was feeling a little horrified.

“Let’s go. Take me to their corpses,” Zhou Wen said through gritted teeth.

“The military has already taken over this matter and the corpses are in the military’s hands. I’m afraid it will be difficult for us to enter,” Li Xuan said.

“Take me there now.” As Zhou Wen spoke, he switched on the mysterious phone and opened the Dead Man Tree icon.

After he loaded the game, Zhou Wen immediately felt his heart turn cold when he saw the dead tree. He saw that the originally pitch-black dead tree was now completely red, like it was carved out of a ruby. It emitted a strange red glow.

The deaths of Wang Lu and company are indeed related to this Dead Man Tree. Now that the tree has turned red, Wang Lu and company have died. Then, if the tree becomes another color, will those students who share the same color after touching the tree also die? Zhou Wen’s ominous feeling intensified.

Now, all he wanted to do was quickly see their corpses and see how their deaths were related to the Dead Man Tree. He wanted to know if there was still a chance of them being revived.

An Jing overheard their conversation and subconsciously followed them.

Under Li Xuan’s lead, the trio quickly arrived at the school’s military base.

“Their corpses are inside, but it’s not just us; even if a counselor comes, they will definitely not be able to enter without the military’s permission,” Li Xuan said as he pointed at the door manned by guards.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 166 - Dissection

Chapter 166 Dissection

“An Jing, can you take us in?” Zhou Wen cast his gaze at An Jing. At that moment, he couldn’t be bothered about their differences anymore.

Now, Zhou Wen was afraid that the military would dissect their corpses, spelling doom to everything

“Sure, but I have one condition,” An Jing said after some thought.

“I promise to fight you. Take me in immediately,” Zhou Wen said straight away.

“I didn’t say I wanted to fight you,” An Jing said, surprising Zhou Wen.

“Then what do you want?” Zhou Wen asked with a frown.

“I haven’t thought about it yet. Just treat it as if you owe me one. I’ll tell you after I’ve thought it through.” After An Jing said that, she didn’t wait for Zhou Wen to rush her as she walked straight to the door.

“Hello, please show some identification.” The two soldiers who were guarding the door clearly recognized An Jing. However, after saluting her, they still kept her outside and did not let her in immediately.

An Jing seemed to have known this would happen, so she didn’t react in any special manner. She took out an identification card from her pocket before the soldiers allowed her to take Zhou Wen and Li Xuan into the encampment.

After asking where the morgue was, they went straight to it. She was no stranger to the military encampment here.

Zhou Wen was somewhat glad that An Jing was here. Otherwise, with the encampment so huge, it wouldn’t be easy for him and Li Xuan to come in and find the morgue.

Zhou Wen looked at his phone as he walked, only to see five flower buds appear on the glowing red Dead Man Tree.

The flower buds also looked like they were carved out of ruby. It was even more dazzling, but they exuded an evil aura. Through the ruby-like flower petals, he could vaguely see something inside, as if it were a beating heart.

“How many dead classmates are there?” Zhou Wen asked.

“Five.” Li Xuan thought for a moment before replying.

Zhou Wen was almost certain that Wang Lu and company’s deaths had something to do with the five flowers on the Dead Man Tree. However, he didn’t know what the five flowers meant, nor did he know what to do. He could only wait until he saw the corpses before deciding:

In the morgue, Deputy Inspector Qin Wufu and a few Epic experts stationed at Sunset College were listening to the forensics report.

“There are no obvious wounds or symptoms on the outside. We didn’t find anything through X-ray either. We can only

perform an autopsy now before we decide the outcome," said Coroner Yan Zhen.

"No, we can't dissect them." An Epic expert immediately rejected Yan Zhen's words with a firm tone.

"If we don't do an autopsy, it will be difficult to find the true reason for the deaths," Yan Zhen said slowly.

"The daughter of the Wang family died here for no reason. If we were to dissect her body, how are we going to explain it to the Wang family when they arrive?" the Epic expert from before said.

"Since Wang Lu's corpse cannot be dissected, we can first dissect the corpses of the other four," said Yan Zhen.

"That would work." the Epic expert's tone softened significantly.

"You can't dissect them." However, Qin Wufu vetoed Yan Zhen's suggestion.

"Why can't we dissect them?" Yan Zhen asked as he looked at Qin Wufu.

"Although their bodily functions have stopped, they still have a tiny bit of life on them. They might not be truly dead yet. You can't dissect them and kill them!" Qin Wufu said.

Yan Zhen laughed after hearing that. "Deputy Inspector, if we don't dissect them now, we won't be able to find the reason why they are in such a state. Then, what's the difference between them and the dead? Now, all we need to do is dissect the other four students, and we might be able to find out the reason. Who knows, we might be able to save Wang Lu. This is the best choice we have right now, isn't it?"

A few Epic officers also felt that this was a pretty viable plan. If Wang Lu could be saved, their problems would be greatly reduced.

“If Wang Lu can be saved, the others should be saved as well,” Qin Wufu said as he stared at Yan Zhen.

“Please forgive me for my inadequacies,” Yan Zhen said.

“All of you may leave. I’ll chat with Dr. Yan alone.” Qin Wufu waved his hand and dismissed everyone. They left the morgue, leaving only Yan Zhen and Qin Wufu behind.

At this moment, Qin Wufu stared at Yan Zhen and said coldly, “Yan Zhen, I know that you can save them. You want to dissect them only because you want to know what kind of power has turned them into this.”

“Deputy Inspector, aren’t you thinking too highly of me? I’m just a doctor, not a god. I don’t even know what kind of injuries they have suffered, so how can I save them?” Yan Zhen nudged his glasses and said with an unperturbed expression.

“Speak. What condition do you want to save them?” Qin Wufu frowned.

“There’s no condition. Dissect four corpses and save one,” Yan Zhen said indifferently, licking his lips as he stared at the five corpses.

“They are living people, not your experimental subjects.” A furious expression appeared on Qin Wufu’s face.

“They’re real people if I save them. If not, they are just dead people. Using the dead as experimental subjects wasn’t

even a big deal back in times of peace.” Yan Zhen’s tone sounded like he was saying something that was only right.

Qin Wufu was so angry that his face turned livid. If he didn’t know Yan Zhen well enough, he would probably have drawn his gun and killed this despicable fellow.

But now, he couldn’t do that. The only person who could save these five students was Yan Zhen.

Suppressing the anger in his heart, Qin Wufu said coldly, “Rescue these five students. I will apply for you to use the bodies of the dead soldiers for your experiments.”

“No, I want these four experimental subjects.” Yan Zhen categorically rejected Qin Wufu. There was no room for negotiation.

“Haven’t you always been wanting to experiment with the corpses of dead soldiers? If you miss this chance, you definitely won’t get another one. You’re giving that up just to dissect these four students. Is it worth it?” Qin Wufu looked at Yan Zhen and said.

“It’s worth it. These five people are in a very strange state. If I dissect them, it might be of great help to my research. I want to see what kind of power is at work,” said Yan Zhen.

“I will definitely not give you this opportunity,” said Qin Wufu angrily.

“You have no choice. If I don’t save them, Wang Lu will also die. Should I let Wang Lu die with the four of them, or let the four die while Wang Lu lives? Deputy Inspector Qin, make your choice.” Yan Zhen looked at Qin Wufu with certainty, as though he was certain that Qin Wufu could do nothing about him.

Qin Wufu stared intently at Yan Zhen, wishing that he could slay this bastard with his saber. However, he knew that it was useless even if he killed him. Yan Zhen definitely wouldn’t yield unless he achieved his goals. Killing him made no difference.

Furthermore, killing Yan Zhen meant Wang Lu was doomed.

Just as Qin Wufu was about to compromise, he suddenly heard the door to the morgue being pushed open. He could not help but be enraged as he shouted coldly, “Get out! Who let you in?”

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 167 - Dead Man Flower

Chapter 167 Dead Man Flower

“Uncle Qin.” An Jing looked at the furious Qin Wufu, a little puzzled who could make him so angry.

Although Qin Wufu’s name had the implications of being a warrior, he was not one that was prone to anger. The last time An Jing saw him angry was a childhood memory.

The reason Qin Wufu was angry was not that he couldn’t save those four students. If there was really no way to save them, Qin Wufu wouldn’t be angered or have his judgment affected even when an entire battalion was wiped out in war, much less the deaths of four students.

But now, there was a way to save them, but he could only watch helplessly as four students died. Furthermore, they died in the hands of a coroner on their side. This was something that Qin Wufu couldn’t accept.

“Little Jing, why are you here?” Qin Wufu’s expression softened when he saw An Jing.

“Uncle Qin, we would like to see the bodies of those five students.” An Jing explained the purpose of her visit.

Qin Wufu said, “What’s so nice about corpses? Little Jing, bring your classmates to my office first. Uncle Qin will catch

up with you after I’m done here.”

“Inspector Qin, just like them, we had entered the bronze building in Restriction City. We have also touched a tree that can change color,” Zhou Wen said.

Qin Wufu said, “The military has already sent people to investigate the situation several times. There is indeed a bronze building in Restriction City, but there’s no sign of the tree all of you mentioned.”

“So many of us students saw that tree. So many of us can’t be wrong, right?” Li Xuan asked.

“I already know about this. I will send people to continue the investigation. There are still matters to be handled here. Go outside and wait.” Qin Wufu wanted to quickly convince Yan Zhen to save the five students.

“Inspector Qin, when the five of them touched that tree, the tree turned red, and now, they have died in a bizarre manner. There are more than a dozen students who touched the tree, causing it to turn into another color. Now that Wang Lu and the rest are dead, will the other students die one day? If we don’t figure out the problem regarding Wang Lu and the others, there might be even more students dying,” Zhou Wen said.

When Yan Zhen heard this, he smiled and said, “This student is right. If we don’t figure out the cause of their deaths now, more people will die. My dissection of them now is to prevent more students from dying. It’s best you quickly decide.”

“You can’t dissect them,” Zhou Wen said before Qin Wufu could answer.

After seeing Wang Lu and company's corpses, he was even more certain that they hadn't really died. After approaching their corpses, the five flower buds in-game became even more dazzling, with signs of blooming.

Qin Wufu, Yan Zhen, and even An Jing and Li Xuan looked at Zhou Wen in puzzlement, unsure why he was so agitated.

Zhou Wen knew that he had to take the risk. It was impossible for Qin Wufu to hear a student like him shoot his mouth. Furthermore, Zhou Wen himself didn't know what was happening, so how could he convince Qin Wufu?

Therefore, he could only take a gamble. If one of them could be revived, then Qin Wufu would naturally disagree with the dissection of the corpses.

"I don't think they're dead yet. They shouldn't be dissected," Zhou Wen said as he pointed at the corpses of Wang Lu and company.

Qin Wufu was slightly taken aback as he couldn't help but carefully size up Zhou Wen. He had been engaged in battle all his life, so he was accustomed to seeing dead people. Furthermore, with the cultivation of his Primordial Energy Art, he could sense that Wang Lu and company were not truly dead.

A student like Zhou Wen was at most at the Legendary stage, but he could tell that Wang Lu and the others were still alive. This left him astonished.

"What's your name? Why do you say that they aren't dead yet?" Qin Wufu asked Zhou Wen.

Zhou Wen didn't answer the first question and directly said, "I've seen that tree with them before. Furthermore, I am

more sensitive than most people. I can sense that they have the aura of that tree and the aura of the tree represses their aura. That results in this phenomenon of a fake death. If the aura of that tree is removed, they might be able to come back to life."

"Can you really sense their auras?" Qin Wufu sized up Zhou Wen from head to toe as he was secretly impressed with him.

From his point of view, the aura Zhou Wen mentioned was likely life-force. It was impossible to see or touch life-force. Only people who cultivated some special Primordial Energy Art or had such special abilities could sense it.

Although Qin Wufu didn't know how true it was for Zhou Wen to be able to sense the existence of life-force, the current situation matched Wang Lu and company's.

"Yes." Zhou Wen nodded.

"I'm already aware of the situation you mentioned. I'll think of a way to save your classmates. You can return now." Although Qin Wufu thought highly of Zhou Wen, he didn't think too much of it. All he thought was that Zhou Wen had a keen sense.

Zhou Wen knew that it was impossible to convince Qin Wufu with his empty words as a student. Furthermore, he lacked the plans needed to save Wang Lu and company.

As he turned to leave, Zhou Wen took out his cell phone to take a look. At the same time, he ordered the blood-colored avatar to slash at one of the flowers.

Zhou Wen was originally somewhat hesitant to sever the flower buds. After all, this was a risk. If he severed them and

ended up harming them, it would be equivalent to him killing Wang Lu and company.

But now, the military clearly didn’t have any good solutions. There was a high chance that they were going to dissect the students. If they were to do so, death was certain. Therefore, Zhou Wen might as well give it a try. That way, there would at least be a chance of survival.

Through the blood-colored avatar’s perception, Zhou Wen tried his best to sense the five flower buds on the tree. He could vaguely sense that the aura within the five flowers seemed somewhat different. They corresponded to the five corpses on the bed.

Zhou Wen roughly determined which flower bud belonged to Wang Lu before he got the blood-colored avatar to slash at another flower bud.

Most people would subconsciously prioritize protecting people who were closer to them. Those who could prioritize protecting strangers or treat them as equals were saints.

Zhou Wen wasn’t a saint, so he chose an unfamiliar classmate as his first test subject.

The Astral Slash Blade slashed across the flower bud like a sharp blade. The flower bud and leaves shook a few times but failed to be lopped off.

Zhou Wen’s heart tightened. The Astral Slash Blade was already considered a relatively powerful offensive Primordial Energy Skill of his. But if the Astral Slash Blade couldn’t injure the flower bud, it was likely that his other Primordial Energy Skills would be ineffective.

Although the saber beam failed to cut off the flower bud, the corpse on the bed suddenly moved and sat up straight like a zombie having come back to life.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 168 - Slaying Flowers

Chapter 168 Slaying Flowers

The few of them were shocked as they looked at the corpse. It was the corpse of a male student.

However, in the next second, the corpse fell back onto the bed without any movement.

Yan Zhen immediately went forward to do a checkup. Qin Wufu also walked to the bed and stared at the corpse, hoping that things would turn for the better. He was in no mood to bother with Zhou Wen and company.

The trio stopped in their tracks and watched the situation on the bed. Zhou Wen stood near the wall behind them and got the blood-colored avatar to summon Banana Fairy.

The Banana Fairy held the banana leaf and waved it at the flower bud on the tree. The Grand Yin Wind swept over, causing the leaves to shake violently. However, that was all. It failed to blow off the flower buds.

On the other hand, the corpse began to tremble again. It was an extremely harrowing sight.

When Zhou Wen saw that he couldn’t even blow off the flower bud with the Grand Yin Wind, his expression warped.

He knew that it would be very difficult for him to cut off the flower bud today.

Unwilling to watch Wang Lu and company die, Zhou Wen had no choice but to summon his pets and attack the flower bud one after another. It could be considered a last-ditch effort.

“How is this happening?” The boy’s corpse shook continuously. Yan Zhen had used several methods but failed to detect anything, nor could he stop the shaking.

Noticing that Yan Zhen seemed to be at a loss, Qin Wufu couldn’t help but frown.

Yan Zhen’s medical skills were not only excellent, and the Primordial Energy Art he cultivated had something to do with his Life Providence and Life Soul, so he had an ability that was just short of reviving the dead.

Now that he couldn’t do anything about it, things were clearly turning for the worse.

Zhou Wen watched his pets attack the flower bud one by one, but it was completely ineffective. Just as he was feeling disappointed, he saw Truth Listener’s figure flash. It arrived in front of the flower bud, grabbed it with its paw, and plucked it off. Zhou Wen couldn’t help but be delighted.

The moment the flower bud was plucked, the boy, who had been trembling non-stop on the bed, suddenly sat up. His tightly shut eyes suddenly opened.

“What… what are you trying to do…” When the boy saw Yan Zhen about to stab him with a needle, he immediately shouted and jumped down from the bed.

“Yan Zhen, quickly stop.” Qin Wufu was overjoyed. At the same time, he stopped Yan Zhen and immediately subdued the boy. He quickly checked his body and discovered that other than being a little weak, the boy was no different from a normal, healthy person.

Zhou Wen was also observing the boy. Seeing that he was indeed fine, he got Truth Listener to pluck another flower bud from the tree.

The flower buds were easily removed by Truth Listener. This time, Zhou Wen felt a lot more relaxed. He immediately saw the game’s system notification: ‘Obtained an Unripe Dead Man Flower.’

As the flower bud was plucked off, another schoolmate was revived. This delighted Qin Wufu greatly.

Li Xuan was also overjoyed. He had also touched the dead tree and had always been very afraid that he would die just like them. Now that he saw them alive again, he immediately felt a weight lift off his chest.

Zhou Wen waited for a while and seeing that the student was fine, he got Truth Listener to pluck the other flower buds.

The flower buds were plucked off one after another. Similarly, the schoolmates revived. Wang Lu was the last to wake up as she looked around blankly, unsure of what had happened.

Everyone was overjoyed. Only Yan Zhen frowned as he sized up the five students as if he was filled with doubt.

Qin Wufu called out to the other medical personnel and asked them to give the five students a detailed examination.

The results were normal, but their bodies were a little weak and were in need of nourishment.

Seeing that they were fine, Zhou Wen heaved a sigh of relief before leaving with Li Xuan.

“Yan Zhen, it looks like you’re going to be disappointed this time.” Qin Wufu said to him in a good mood before leaving with An Jing.

However, Yan Zhen ignored Qin Wufu. He only looked at the test results of the five students and sank into deep thought.

How did this happen? Their bodies had completely stopped functioning, so why would they be able to revive without any external help? Yan Zhen carefully recalled the entire process.

The anomaly of the five corpses seemed to happen only after the three students arrived. Could it be related to the three students? Zhou Wen’s face flashed across Yan Zhen’s mind. Although there were three people, he had the deepest impression of Zhou Wen.

Perhaps it was because Zhou Wen had said that Wang Lu and company were still alive or because of Yan Zhen’s intuition, he was increasingly convinced that the matter was related to Zhou Wen as he thought about it.

That’s interesting. Was this a subconscious act or did he do something? The corners of Yan Zhen’s mouth pulled up as though he had thought of something interesting.

Yan Zhen was more inclined to the latter as he thought to himself, They’d all come into contact with that tree. Could it be some situation that allows them to exert a mutual

influence amongst themselves? It looks like there’s a need for further research.

…

After Zhou Wen returned to his dorm, he took out the mysterious phone and looked at the five ruby-like flower buds in Truth Listener’s hand.

Dead Man Flower: Flower of a Condensed Soul, Unripe.

After some research, Zhou Wen realized that the five flowers could neither vanish nor be absorbed. They didn’t seem to be of any use.

From the looks of it, it must have been plucked off before it matured. That’s why it turned into this. What would happen if the Dead Man Flower matured? Zhou Wen wasn’t at all sure.

Just as he was considering how to deal with the five flower buds, he saw Truth Listener gesturing, as though it had something to tell him. At the same time, Truth Listener’s conscience was sent over.

The thought was vague and Zhou Wen was unable to take in the information clearly, but he could roughly make out that Truth Listener wanted to eat the five flower buds.

Since there was no point in keeping them, Zhou Wen agreed.

Truth Listener was overjoyed as it opened its mouth and swallowed a flower.

Zhou Wen suddenly thought of something as he hurriedly stopped Truth Listener from continuing eating the flower

buds. Then, he made a phone call to confirm that the five students were fine. Only then did he relax and let Truth Listener swallow the remaining flower buds.

Although Truth Listener’s tiny body had devoured five flower buds, it still looked as though it was yearning for more.

Zhou Wen didn’t relax as he kept paying attention to the Dead Man Tree’s situation. Only after midnight did the red Dead Man Tree gradually change its color. However, it didn’t turn back to black, but golden.

Zhou Wen remembered that the Dead Man Tree had turned golden when Li Xuan touched it. He hurriedly made a call to Li Xuan. The ringtone on the other end kept ringing, but no one picked up.

On the dead tree, another few sprouts grew out

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 169 - Showdown

Chapter 169 Showdown

Zhou Wen kept calling Li Xuan’s phone, but no one picked up his calls. As for the sprouts, they gradually grew in size, forming a bud.

Zhou Wen didn’t hesitate. He summoned Truth Listener and plucked the few sprouts. Then, he called Li Xuan and this time, it connected.

“Old Zhou, why are you calling me in the middle of the night?” Li Xuan’s half-asleep voice came through the phone.

“I called you more than ten times. Why didn’t you answer?” Zhou Wen asked.

“No way, right?” As Li Xuan spoke, he looked at his phone. Indeed, there were more than ten missed calls. He was immediately given a fright. “Strange, my phone is right beside my pillow. How can it be that I didn’t hear it?”

Cultivators had keen senses. No matter how soundly they slept, it was impossible for them not to be woken up by their cell phone’s loud ringing.

“Perhaps you’ve been working too hard recently. Get some sleep. I need some as well.” Zhou Wen was certain that Li Xuan had been in the same fake death state as Wang Lu.

Ignoring what Li Xuan would be thinking, Zhou Wen hung up the phone and looked at the mysterious phone. He saw that Truth Listener had devoured all the little flower buds, licking its lips as though it hadn't had enough.

For the next few days, Zhou Wen didn't game. He stared at the Dead Man Tree every day. As long as it changed its color and sprouted, Zhou Wen got Truth Listener to pluck the flower buds and eat them.

As such, there were no more bizarre deaths in the school. At most, it was rumored that someone had fainted, only to awaken quickly.

On the eighth day, the dead tree recovered its original black color. Only when there weren't any other changes did Zhou Wen let out a long sigh.

However, on second thought, Zhou Wen found it a pity. Up to now, he still didn't know what changes the flowers would undergo if they truly matured.

Now that this tree existed in a mobile game, no one can see it again, much less touch it again. I'm afraid there's no chance to see the scene of the flower truly blooming. Zhou Wen felt a little regretful as he thought to himself, If only this tree can be taken out again. If anyone offends me in the future, I'll plant it at their doorstep. Without knowing how powerful the Dead Man Tree is, they will die just from touching it. A death a touch, two touches two deaths, how quaint.

Zhou Wen only mused over the idea. Since the Dead Man Tree had entered the game, it couldn't be taken out again.

"Coach, are you free now?" Feng Qiuyan, who had not seen him in days, suddenly came to Zhou Wen's dorm.

Zhou Wen felt a headache when he saw him, but he couldn’t chase him away. All he could do was reply, “I’m going to be gaming the whole day. I’m not free.”

Feng Qiuyan didn’t mind as he continued, “Coach, I have already gained some success in the way of calmness. I hope you can test the results of my recent cultivation.”

Zhou Wen wore a look of puzzlement. He didn’t remember when he had taught Feng Qiuyan how to calm his mind. Yet, this fellow had actually mastered it.

“How do I test it?” It wasn’t right for Zhou Wen to say that he had taught him nothing.

“I only know how to use a saber. Coach, please spar with me and see if there’s any room for improvement in my saber techniques. Consider it my third lesson,” said Feng Qiuyan as he transferred the 20,000 to Zhou Wen.

Zhou Wen originally wanted to say that he didn’t have time to spar with him, but seeing that he could collect 20,000, he swallowed the words he was about to say.

Simply sparring gained him twenty thousand. There was no reason to refuse.

He went to a sparring hall in the school with Feng Qiuyan. Feng Qiuyan took a practice rubber saber and said to Zhou Wen, “Coach, what weapon would you like?”

“I don’t need any weapons.” Zhou Wen had never practiced any weapon skills in the real world. Although he knew how to use swords and sabers, it was only limited to him slashing with brute force. There wasn’t anything technical about it, so he might as well not use them.

“Coach, on your guard.” Feng Qiuyan didn’t stand on ceremony as he slashed with his saber.

Feng Qiuyan’s saber appeared as heavy as a mountain. It was so fast that one could clearly see it, but not dodge it.

Even more terrifying was the biting cold saber aura that came with it. It instantly streaked across several meters and struck Zhou Wen.

Feng Qiuyan’s saber was fast, but Zhou Wen wasn’t slow either. He suddenly darted to the side and dodged Feng Qiuyan’s saber aura. At the same time, he used Dragon Gate Fairy Skill to escape Feng Qiuyan’s sharp and powerful saber aura.

Feng Qiuyan’s attacks increased in speed with each strike he delivered. Zhou Wen pushed the Dragon Gate Fairy Skill to its limits, but he found it increasingly taxing. It was as though he was a tiny boat in a stormy sea that could sink at any moment

Zhou Wen tried everything, but only barely stayed out of striking distance from Feng Qiuyan. If it was purely a competition of skills, Zhou Wen wouldn’t even have the chance to counterattack.

“Hold on.” Zhou Wen suddenly shouted to stop Feng Qiuyan from continuing his attack.

“Coach, what’s the matter?” Feng Qiuyan stopped and asked.

“You’ve slashed twenty-three times since the beginning. Even if each strike only consumes one Primordial Energy point, your Primordial Energy should have been depleted.

How can you still use your saber aura?” Zhou Wen asked Feng Qiuyan.

Furthermore, Feng Qiuyan’s saber aura was so strong that it was impossible for him to only consume a bit of it.

Feng Qiuyan said, “This is because I’ve raised my Primordial Energy Skill, Rainbow-Startling Saber Aura, to Rank 10. After advancing to Rank 10, the Primordial Energy consumption is greatly reduced. In addition, my Life Providence and Primordial Energy Art augments my saber technique. It will further reduce the expenditure and accelerate the recovery of my Primordial Energy. Under normal circumstances, I can continuously slash out twenty-seven times before being completely drained of my Primordial Energy.”

“Do all Primordial Energy Skills have such effects after reaching Rank 10?” Zhou Wen asked in surprise.

“Regardless of which Primordial Energy Skill it is, there will be a qualitative leap when it reaches Rank 10. However, the effects might be different. Coach, don’t you know?” Feng Qiuyan looked at Zhou Wen in puzzlement. He believed that Zhou Wen definitely knew about this.

“I’ve never practiced Rainbow-Startling Saber Aura, so I didn’t know of the effects when it reached Rank 10. I was just asking.” Zhou Wen thought of his Ashen Palm. Although it was only a Mortal-stage Primordial Energy Skill, it was abnormally powerful. It dealt quite a good deal of damage to Legendary creatures. Vigor Divine Fist, which was a Mortal stage skill, was already unsuited for him.

Astral Slash Blade and Astral Suction Palm don’t have any ranks, so I’m afraid they can’t be upgraded. Ashen Palm has already reached Rank 10, but it’s a Mortal stage Primordial Energy Skill after all. Its might can’t keep up with my current

needs, so I’m not sure if there’s any possibility of raising it. Zhou Wen decided to use his Ashen Palm to battle Feng Qiuyan.

However, he soon discovered that Feng Qiuyan’s technique was much more skilled than his. Soon, Zhou Wen was at a disadvantage. All he could do was use Dragon Gate Fairy Skill to dodge, making it difficult for him to find a chance to counterattack.

Feng Qiuyan’s saber techniques were getting faster and more stable. Even without the aid of the saber auras, he still possessed extremely lethal force.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 170 - Epiphany In Battle

Chapter 170 Epiphany In Battle

Typically, someone at the Legendary stage had Speed that maxed out at 18. Now, the Speed of Feng Qiuyan's saber techniques was probably at 28, much less 18. It was getting faster and faster.

If one's Speed exceeded the user's control limit, causing their reaction to not keep up, it would easily reveal flaws.

However, Feng Qiuyan's saber technique was as steady as a mountain. No matter how fast his saber was, he could control it freely without any signs of losing control after increasing his Speed.

Zhou Wen had to admit that Feng Qiuyan was indeed very mighty. He was practically a genius born for sabers. If Zhou Wen hadn't fought desperately in-game to exchange for plenty of combat experience, a Legendary student with similar attributes as Zhou Wen would easily have been slain by Feng Qiuyan.

From the looks of it, combat techniques are equally important. Primordial Energy Skills also need to be upgraded to Rank 10. Zhou Wen had already discovered his inadequacies.

He had learned quite a number of Primordial Energy Skills, but he didn’t really have many useful ones. Astral Suction Palm and Astral Slash Blade were very useful, but they drained Primordial Energy exceedingly fast, depleting him almost instantly.

Ashen Palm at the Mortal stage was already somewhat unable to keep up with his pace. The Legendary Golden Palm was only at Rank

After some thought, other than Dragon Gate Fairy Skill, Zhou Wen didn’t seem to have any useful techniques.

At the very least, when facing an expert like Feng Qiuyan, ordinary Primordial Energy Skills were useless.

Zhou Wen decided not to counterattack. Instead, he switched his Primordial Energy Art, giving himself a Dao Body. He used it to rapidly recover his Primordial Energy, constantly using Dragon Gate Fairy Skill to deal with Feng Qiuyan.

Even so, Zhou Wen still found it harder and harder. Feng Qiuyan’s saber techniques seemed to be able to increase his saber’s speed without limit, and each strike was faster than the last, as though there was no limit.

There was no limit to his saber speed, but Zhou Wen’s movement only had one speed. He was gradually unable to dodge Feng Qiuyan’s saber.

A glint flashed in Feng Qiuyan’s eyes as though he had already noticed Zhou Wen at his limit. He remained unwavering as a mountain as he slashed out with both hands.

This strike seemed to split a mountain apart as it seemed indomitable. It moved as fast as thunder as it tore through the air, ignoring all its resistance. With a whine that sliced through the air, it slashed right in front of Zhou Wen.

With Zhou Wen’s current speed, it was impossible for him to dodge the attack.

However, Zhou Wen didn’t show any signs of panic. His eyes were calm as the entire world seemed to slow down before him. He tapped his toes on the ground gently as his body rode the wind and retreated. He didn’t look as fast as before, but Feng Qiuyan’s saber aura remained three inches away from Zhou Wen’s clothes. No matter how he tried, he couldn’t get close.

The alacrity version of raising a weighted feather? Feng Qiuyan’s eyes were filled with excitement as he brandished the saber repeatedly with both hands. The saber aura was like a raging tidal wave as it swept towards Zhou Wen.

Zhou Wen felt a sense of calm. In the middle of the battle, he had also gained insight into the concept of raising a weighted feather for the Dragon Gate Fairy Skill, pushing it towards Rank 10.

Dragon Gate Fairy Skill at Rank 10 not only augmented Zhou Wen with greater Speed, but it also increased his ability to stay in midair. It also greatly reduced his Primordial Energy expenditure.

There were other miraculous aspects that couldn’t be explained in a few words.

Just speed alone was inadequate to match Feng Qiuyan. After all, the Dragon Gate Fairy Skill had its limits, but Feng Qiuyan’s saber speed seemed to lack any.

At the same realm of raising a weighted feather, Feng Qiuyan's saber quickly caught up to Zhou Wen who was in midair.

Just as he was about to strike Zhou Wen, Feng Qiuyan was suddenly taken aback. This was because Zhou Wen's figure suddenly became light. It was as though he was weightless. As he rapidly plummeted, it was as though he had opened a parachute, making his body feel like it was rising instead.

This change in speed made Feng Qiuyan show an error in judgment. The saber slashed the area beneath Zhou Wen's feet, failing to touch him.

Zhou Wen danced in the air like a fairy, but in the next second, his speed suddenly increased. He grabbed the moment Feng Qiuyan made the mistake, and like a bolt of lightning, struck Feng Qiuyan's head.

Feng Qiuyan's saber had lost its force, but his momentum continued propelling his body forward. He was already unable to dodge Zhou Wen's strike.

Feng Qiuyan was decisive as he threw his saber and turned to his side to dodge Zhou Wen's strike. At the same time, he turned around and brushed past him. With a flip of his hand, he grabbed the saber in midair and slashed it at Zhou Wen. Then, using the spin he generated that boosted his waist, he slashed at Zhou Wen.

In midair, Zhou Wen's figure once again became lightweight, causing Feng Qiuyan to make a mistake in his judgment once more. He struck the empty air again.

This time, Feng Qiuyan didn't pursue him as he stared at Zhou Wen with a glint in his eyes. "As expected of Coach.

That was the counter version of raising a weighted feather, wasn’t it?”

Zhou Wen nodded. “Raising a weighted feather and raising a feather weight. By combining them, it’s similar to a technique that mixes truths and bluffs. It’s just a small trick.”

“It sounds easy, but it’s very difficult in practice. Coach, you’ve taught me something new again today. I know what to do next. Till next time.” Feng Qiuyan turned around and left without any hesitation.

This Feng Qiuyan sure is terrifying. If I hadn’t reached Rank 10 for the Dragon Gate Fairy Skill, I probably would have been defeated. Ignoring the special physiques and Primordial Energy Arts, Feng Qiuyan is much more terrifying than John. Zhou Wen was in a good mood. He had raised the Dragon Gate Fairy Skill to Rank 10, greatly strengthening his combat strength. Furthermore, he had found his weakness in today’s battle, giving him direction for improvement.

It’s important to increase my level, but my techniques and skills mustn’t fall behind. After all, no matter how powerful one is, it requires powerful skills to fully deliver one’s greatest strength. Zhou Wen pondered over what skills he should practice.

There were too many skills in the world. There were sabers, swords, staffs, spears, whips, axes, hooks, forks and all sorts of other weapons that had skills that matched them.

It was likewise with feet, fists, fingers, palms, and legs. All of them had different skills. A person’s time and energy were ultimately limited. Although Zhou Wen was talented and could master everything quickly, being adept at one type of

skill was much easier to reach the sublime realm than training in everything.

Furthermore, Zhou Wen still needed to take time to raise the few Primordial Energy Skills that were more suitable for him at Rank 10. He also needed to spend time gaming to have more high-level crystals drop. He really didn’t have that much time to master them all.

After some thought, Zhou Wen came up with a perfect plan that killed two birds with one stone. It would be a waste of time to train in weapons while raising the rank of his Primordial Energy Skills.

Therefore, Zhou Wen decided to hone his palm skills before matching it with his Ashen Palm. With his Dao Body rapidly recovering his Primordial Energy, Zhou Wen felt that he could do both.

Since ordinary Primordial Energy Skills can be raised to Rank 10, why can’t I raise my Mortal stage Primordial Energy Skill to the Legendary stage? Zhou Wen made up his mind to practice Ashen Palm.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 171 - Old Dragon Cave

Chapter 171 Old Dragon Cave

Wang Fei had been seriously considering how to educate Zhou Wen over the past few days. In the end, her final consideration was that Zhou Wen didn't need repeated practice. Instead, he needed a lamp to shine a path for him, allowing him to see far.

Hence, Wang Fei thought of someone, Counselor Wang Mingyuan.

Wang Mingyuan was an old counselor at Sunset College. He was about to retire, and at present, he was only doing some research work and no longer had class duties.

However, he still had a few students by his side. They were all outstanding talents in the school. Although they were not as famous as Wei Ge, they were not inferior to Wei Ge in their field of expertise and were perhaps even stronger.

Wang Mingyuan was Wang Fei's uncle; thus, she knew him very well. She knew that although his level wasn't too high-average amongst those at the Epic stage—the results of his research were enough to rank him at the top of the League.

In certain domains, Wang Mingyuan's theoretical knowledge was so strong that it could be said to be the best in the

League.

If Wang Fei were to make the request, he would likely give Zhou Wen a chance. But now, she was afraid that Zhou Wen would be too proud and unwilling to learn from him.

Wang Mingyuan’s theoretical knowledge was indeed very impressive, but he wasn’t very strong. In terms of strength, Wang Mingyuan could only be considered as below average amongst the counselors at Sunset College.

A genius like Zhou Wen probably wouldn’t like such a teacher. Typical geniuses enjoyed having people who could talk the talk and walk the walk.

Wang Fei couldn’t think of any good solution, so she could only try to persuade him.

Zhou Wen was considering which counselor’s class he should attend to study palm skills when Wang Fei summoned him to her office.

“Zhou Wen, I would like to introduce you to a counselor to learn more. I’ll let you study with him for a month. Is there a problem with that?” Wang Fei thought of how she had to convince Zhou Wen later. She wanted to let him know that learning from Wang Mingyuan was a lot more promising than other powerful counselors.

“Does that counselor know palm skills?” Zhou Wen asked.

“Of course.” Wang Fei nodded. She didn’t know why Zhou Wen would ask such a question. However, Wang Mingyuan had indeed studied palm skills, albeit it wasn’t his main research focus.

Even if he had never researched palm skills, which Epic expert hadn’t practiced in one?

“Alright, I’ll attend the class, ” Zhou Wen said with a nod.

Zhou Wen’s straightforward answer left Wang Fei in disbelief. She had thought of many solutions to save this gaming addict, but had failed. For him to agree so readily made her feel like she was dreaming.

“Ms. Wang, what’s the counselor’s name? How can I find him? When can I begin class?” Zhou Wen wasn’t willing to waste any time. He needed to quickly make use of every minute to grasp the knowledge related to palm skills. He wanted to choose a palm skill that was suitable for himself before practicing it with Ashen Palm.

“The counselor I was referring to is Wang Mingyuan. He no longer has any classes and is only doing some research. I recommend you to be his assistant and learn from him at the same time. You can just visit him.” Wang Fei sent a message to Zhou Wen using her phone. On it was Wang Mingyuan’s laboratory address.

After some hesitation, Wang Fei asked, “Do you need me to take you there?”

“Thank you, Ms. Wang. I’ll be fine.” After thanking Wang Fei, Zhou Wen went out in search of the address.

He originally believed that Wang Mingyuan’s laboratory was in one of the experimental buildings on campus, but he soon discovered that the lab was in a dimensional zone.

Old Dragon Cave! Zhou Wen wasn’t unfamiliar with this place. It was one of the caves in Dragon Gate Grotto. Wang

Lu had previously been there, claiming that there were dragon roars and treasure glow inside.

Zhou Wen had never encountered a dragon's roar or treasure glow before, but he had been to Cixiang Kiln to see the Dragon Gate Twenty Pieces.

Despite its name, Old Dragon Cave's interior was mostly occupied with Buddha statues. Zhou Wen had already been here once, so he was familiar with the area. However, he didn't venture deep the last time. After passing through one cave after another, he saw a stone cave that had a manually installed door.

Zhou Wen knocked on the door and a young male student opened it. He had long hair and looked rather delicate.

"Jiang Yan?" Zhou Wen was slightly surprised. He actually knew this student. He was the student councilor who had recognized Death City.

"Zhou Wen, right? Counsellor Mingyuan mentioned that you were coming. However, he's at Dragon's Well to carry out some inspection work. He won't be able to meet you for the time being, but you don't have to worry. He has left some work for you." Jiang Yan took Zhou Wen into the lab.

Although it was called a laboratory, it was actually just a cave that had a large door installed. There were some apparatus and machinery inside, and on the other side, there were also daily necessities. It looked extremely crude and hard to imagine.

"Hui Haifeng…" Zhou Wen saw two other students in the laboratory. One of them was Hui Haifeng.

When Hui Haifeng saw Zhou Wen, he said with a smile, “I never expected you to become Counselor Mingyuan’s disciple. Great, we can be considered true fellow disciples.”

“Actually, I just wanted to learn some palm skills,” Zhou Wen said as he scratched his nose.

“It’s alright, Teacher Mingyuan is understanding and reasonable. You can learn anything you want. He won’t force you to learn things you aren’t fond of, nor will he make you do things you aren’t happy about.” Hui Haifeng smiled and said, “But before that, you have to finish the job left behind by Counsellor Mingyuan. See that thing there? It’s the work Counsellor Mingyuan left you before he left.”

Zhou Wen looked in the direction of Hui Haifeng’s finger and saw that in the corner of the cave, there was a hollow. It was pitch-black and deep like a well.

At the edge of the hollow, there was a chain that extended out. It was as thick as an arm and was pitch-black in color. It was made of some unknown metal.

“Your job is to pull that chain up and then you can rest,” Hui Haifeng said with a smile.

Although Hui Haifeng looked good when he smiled, his smile made Zhou Wen feel like he was up to no good.

Jiang Yan, who was elsewhere, didn’t say a word. He only handed a piece of paper to Zhou Wen. Zhou Wen saw that the note mentioned his arrival today and that work had been arranged for him. It was signed off by Wang Mingyuan.

Since it’s work left behind by Mr. Wang, I’ll just do it. Zhou Wen had no choice but to walk to the hollow and grab the chain.

The moment he placed his hands on it, they immediately retracted as if they had been electrocuted, causing Hui Haifeng to laugh out loud.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 172 - Dragon Fishing

Chapter 172 Dragon Fishing

Zhou Wen found the chain bone-chilling. It was colder than holding an ice block, as though the frost would drill into his bones.

Hui Haifeng laughed and said, “There’s no need to be afraid. The coldness in the chains can’t hurt your Legendary body.”

“Why is this chain so cold?” Zhou Wen once again held the chain, feeling as though he had reached his hand into liquid nitrogen.

Of course, this was only Zhou Wen’s feeling. He had never attempted to put his hand into the liquid nitrogen.

Hui Haifeng said, “This hollow’s name is Dragon’s Well, but there’s no water underneath. Instead, there’s a very thick white fog. The white fog is extremely cold, and there are some places where the temperature is even lower than liquid nitrogen. This chain extends all the way into it and is affected by the white fog, causing it to turn extremely cold. If an ordinary person were to hold the chain, they would probably freeze their fingers in no time. However, with the body at the Legendary stage, the effects won’t be too severe.”

“What’s this chain for?” Zhou Wen asked as he pulled up the chain.

“Do you know how to fish?” Hui Haifeng asked without answering Zhou Wen’s question.

“I tried when I was young. It was just for fun, nothing serious,” Zhou Wen answered.

“Then you have to study hard. This chain is used to fish something, it’s not fish, but a dragon,” Hui Haifeng said sternly.

“Dragon fishing?” Zhou Wen looked at Hui Haifeng in surprise, hoping that he could make things clear.

Hui Haifeng explained, “This chain was created by Counselor Mingyuan in order to fish up the dragon in Dragon’s Well.”

“There’s a dragon down there? What kind of dragon is it?” Zhou Wen was even more intrigued.

In this era, any kind of mythical creature could appear. However, dragons were a legend after all. It was probably something that only those at the Mythical stage could see. The average person had no chance of encountering one.

“I don’t know. It’s something Counselor Mingyuan deduced. We have never seen it before, but this Dragon’s Well does emit a dragon’s roar rather frequently. Occasionally, we can see a strange light shining out from Dragon’s Well,” Hui Haifeng said.

At that moment, a languid voice suddenly interjected, “No one has ever heard the voice of a dragon before, so how do you know that it’s a dragon’s roar? I think that even if there’s anything down there, it’s just a type of dimensional

creature. It has nothing to do with dragons spoken in myths.”

Apart from Zhou Wen, there were three students in the laboratory. The person who spoke was the third person other than Hui Haifeng and Jiang Yan.

He put his hands behind his head languidly and slumped back on a chair. His legs were casually placed on the table, in a desultory fashion.

“His name is Zhong Ziya, another student of Counsellor Wang,” Hui Haifeng briefly introduced him.

Zhong Ziya leaned against the chair and casually greeted Zhou Wen. “Junior, you came at the right time. I’ve had to pull up that crappy chain in the past. Now that you’re here, I’m finally free. I have to thank you for that.”

“It’s only right.” Zhou Wen didn’t think much of it as he continued pulling the chain upwards. It was unknown how long the chain was, but Zhou Wen didn’t find its end despite pulling up more than ten meters.

Furthermore, the areas he gripped turned colder as the chain was pulled up. It was something that Zhou Wen was unable to withstand despite his potent body. All he could do was circulate his Lotus Flower Buddha Body Primordial Energy Skill to protect his hands to withstand the terrifying cold.

“Junior, you can’t use any Primordial Energy Skills when you pull the chains. This is a rule set by Teacher,” Zhong Ziya said languidly. Among the three of them, he was the only one who called Wang Mingyuan “teacher” instead of the usual “counselor.”

“Is there such a rule?” Zhou Wen looked at Hui Haifeng and Jiang Yan.

Jiang Yan sat by the side reading quietly, as if he hadn’t heard Zhou Wen’s words. He felt oblivious to whatever was happening, only focused on reading.

Hui Haifeng, on the other hand, was using some equipment to train his body. As he trained, he said, “Counselor Mingyuan has indeed set this rule. We can’t do anything about it. Just bear with it for a while. Thankfully, the cold really won’t hurt you. It just makes you feel a little uncomfortable.”

“What a strange counselor.” Zhou Wen had no choice but to stop using his Lotus Flower Buddha Body. All he could do was rely on his flesh and blood to resist the coldness from the chain.

The more Zhou Wen pulled, the colder his hand became. His fingers were so numb that they couldn’t even bend. However, Zhou Wen didn’t seem to have any intention of stopping as he continued pulling the chain.

Hui Haifeng, Jiang Yan, and Zhong Ziya looked at Zhou Wen either intentionally or unintentionally as though they were watching something interesting.

He kept pulling until all ten fingers turned numb from the cold. With a slip of his hand, the metal chain that he had pulled up by nearly a hundred meters slid down again.

Hui Haifeng and company only watched. None of them said a word, nor did they have any intention of helping him.

Zhou Wen looked at the falling chain and didn’t feel discouraged. He sat by the side and rested for a while. After

the coldness in his hands dissipated and his fingers returned to normal, he got up to pull the chain again.

This time, Zhou Wen did better than the last time. When he reached a little more than a hundred meters, he couldn’t stand the cold again, causing the chains to fall again.

Zhou Wen waited for his hands to recover before picking up the chain again. This time, he pulled out more than a hundred and ten meters, but he ultimately failed to withstand the coldness on the chains, causing it to slide down once more.

After repeatedly pulling for seven to eight hours, Zhou Wen still failed to pull out the entire chain.

Just as he was about to continue pulling the chain, he saw someone crawl out of Dragon’s Well.

The man was wearing an arctic suit and had a helmet on his head. When he climbed up, he took off his helmet, revealing a mature man’s gentle face. He looked rather young and had long hair. A few strands of white hair made him look more mature and masculine. He looked like a superstar in movies.

Zhou Wen originally thought it was a senior, but ended up hearing Hui Haifeng say, “Counselor, you’re back?”

This is Wang Mingyuan? Zhou Wen looked at the man in front of him in surprise, momentarily unable to accept it.

He heard from Wang Fei that Wang Mingyuan was about to retire and thought that he was probably an old counselor with a head full of white hair. He never expected Wang Mingyuan to look like that.

“Are your hands alright?” Wang Mingyuan nodded at Hui Haifeng and company before naturally pulling Zhou Wen’s hands over. A warm energy flowed into Zhou Wen’s hands and instantly dispersed the coldness.

“Thank you, Counselor. I’m fine,” Zhou Wen hurriedly thanked him.

Wang Mingyuan released Zhou Wen’s hand and asked with a smile, “How many times did you pull the chain?”

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 173 - Seven Distribution Palm

Chapter 173 Seven Distribution Palm

“I didn’t count, probably dozens of times,” Zhou Wen answered.

“Why didn’t you think of other solutions after making so many failed attempts?” Wang Mingyuan asked Zhou Wen with interest.

“I just wanted to try pulling it up,” Zhou Wen said.

When Wang Mingyuan heard this, he smiled and said, “You’re quite interesting. The three of you, tell him how you pulled the chain for the first time.”

Wang Mingyuan’s words were obviously directed at Hui Haifeng and the rest.

Hui Haifeng was the first to speak, “When I pulled the chains, I felt that the chain was too cold, so I sped up, pulling it all the way up before my hands froze.”

Seeing Wang Mingyuan’s gaze on him, Jiang Yan held the book in his hand and said, “I also felt that the chain’s bottom was too cold, so I slowed down my speed. Sometime after the chain leaves the frost, the temperature naturally gets higher. Slowly, I pulled the chain up.”

Zhong Ziya pursed his lips but didn’t say anything.

Wang Mingyuan said, “Ziya doesn’t abide by the rules the most. When he couldn’t pull it up, he used a Primordial Energy Skill to pull the chain up.”

“Speaking of which, three of the five students who studied under me succeeded the first time when pulling the chain. Two of them failed to pull it up, but you are the first to fail despite making so many attempts.” Wang Mingyuan smiled at Zhou Wen.

“Who was the other person who failed?” Zhou Wen asked curiously.

“One of your seniors who has already graduated,” Wang Mingyuan said indifferently and didn’t mention it again. He continued, “The rules are for rookies to pull the chain up before they are allowed to rest.”

“Alright.” Zhou Wen walked back to Dragon’s Well and grabbed the chain before pulling it up again.

However, Zhou Wen didn’t seem to learn from the lesson or use the experiences of his seniors. He continued pulling at the same pace as before, and eventually, he failed.

Wang Mingyuan only smiled and didn’t bother him anymore. He took off his arctic suit and changed into casual clothes. He then put on an apron and took out some vegetables to begin cooking.

Not long after, the dishes were ready. There wasn’t much variety and they were relatively light and plain. They were basically vegetarian dishes with the only non-vegan dish being hard-boiled eggs.

The few students gathered around the table to eat. Zhou Wen put down the chain and came over, ignoring the rules.

Wang Mingyuan didn’t say a word as he similarly handed a set of cutlery to Zhou Wen. Everyone was given a bowl of porridge and an egg.

After the meal, Zhou Wen continued to pull the chain. Wang Mingyuan, Hui Haifeng, and company did their own things. Apart from having the necessary exchanges, none of them spoke much.

Zhou Wen had originally come here to study palm skills, but he ended up becoming the chain-puller. He ate and slept as usual, and only managed to pull up the nearly 200-meter-long chain at noon the next day.

When the end was pulled out, Zhou Wen was taken aback.

The end of the chain looked like a giant fish hook, but upon closer inspection, he realized that it wasn’t a fish hook, but in the shape of a ship anchor.

Furthermore, Zhou Wen had seen such a ship-shaped anchor twice. The first time was at the Xiyuan Crystal shop, and the second time was on Gu Dian’s pocket watch.

However, the anchor didn’t have a woman’s side profile, and the hook was polished sharp. It looked like it was used as a hook.

Zhou Wen reached out to the side of the ship’s anchor and touched it. He couldn’t help but frown when he realized that it had signs of being polished.

“Dragons are very greedy creatures, especially when it comes to food.” As Wang Mingyuan spoke, he brought a bag

of Companion Eggs over and used rope to secure them on the hook.

“Lower it. I hope there’ll be something next time,” Wang Mingyuan said as he looked at the bottomless Dragon’s Well.

Zhou Wen lowered the chain back down. After finishing all his work, he came in front of Wang Mingyuan and asked, “Counselor, is there anything else you need me to do?”

“In the future, you will be in charge of pulling the chain. Everything else will depend on your own interests. I heard from Little Fei that you want to learn palm skills?” Wang Mingyuan said gently.

“Yes.” Zhou Wen nodded.

“Most cultivators nowadays train in weapons. Even if it’s physical training, there are many people who train their fists and legs. There are very few who train their palms and fingers. It’s mainly because fistand leg-related skills are easy to learn but difficult to master. On the other hand, palmand finger-related skills are difficult to learn but easily mastered. There’s no real difference between the two. It’s the same when you practice either to the extreme. However, most people like to start with the simple. That’s why fist- and leg-skills are popular these days. As for palm- and finger-skills, they are difficult to gain basic mastery, making them unpopular,” Wang Mingyuan said with a sigh.

“If I wanted to train in palm skills, how should I gain a basic mastery?” Although Zhou Wen knew Ashen Palm, it was only a method of using strength and not a technique. Now, what Zhou Wen wanted to learn was technique.

“That depends on the type of palm skill you wish to cultivate in. Fists are external, while palms are internal. Ordinary fist

skills go from the outside to the inside, while palm skills are the opposite. In the past, there was an old saying: Rather endure ten punches than a palm strike. It means that the palm strikes directly injure the organs, causing more serious damage to the body. However, it's very difficult to gain basic mastery of such palm skills that focus on the internal. It requires long periods of practice. If you only wish to practice palm techniques, I have a few good ones. Gaining basic mastery is relatively simple. There are my comments on it. You can follow your own ideas to practice in it," Wang Mingyuan said as he handed a diary to Zhou Wen.

Zhou Wen opened it and saw that it was filled with the content of the palm techniques. Furthermore, it was all handwritten. There were many parts that had detailed notes. They were crystal clear at a glance.

Wang Mingyuan's handwriting was beautiful and graceful, a truly rare one. Even though Zhou Wen wasn't a calligraphic expert, he found it extremely beautiful, leaving him comfortable just from looking at it.

"Thank you, Counselor. I'll take a look at these palm techniques first. I'll seek your advice on the rest later." Zhou Wen had come here for the palm techniques. To him, the diary was like a treasure he had obtained.

Wang Mingyuan didn't say anything else as he continued his research.

Zhou Wen stayed in the laboratory and had to pull the chain every day. Despite there being many Companion Eggs hanging on it when lowered, they were gone when he pulled them up. It was the same every time.

This left Zhou Wen somewhat curious. He wanted to use his cell phone to enter Dragon's Well to probe, but he had

recently been studying Wang Mingyuan’s palm techniques, so he didn’t deliberately enter the game.

There were a total of seven palm techniques recorded in the diary. Although the moves were different, they were mostly similar. However, Wang Mingyuan managed to note down some of their ingenuity.

Each palm technique was recorded and there were a total of seven moves. These seven moves were called Seven Distribution Palm by Wang Mingyuan. Each move was ingenious and had a completely different style.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 174 - Dragon’s Well

Chapter 174 Dragon’s Well

Zhou Wen felt that Wang Mingyuan as a counselor was rather interesting. When he had questions, Wang Mingyuan would answer every question he asked. Although he didn’t speak much, he explained in detail.

Wang Mingyuan wouldn’t take the initiative to teach Zhou Wen, Jiang Yan, and the others anything either. He would only explain when they asked.

Usually, he would do all sorts of research. Zhou Wen could understand some research projects, but he couldn’t figure out the meaning behind them.

For example, if Wang Mingyuan allowed Jiang Yan to record the entire life process of an ant’s day, Zhou Wen couldn’t work out the meaning behind it. It was an ordinary ant, not a dimensional creature. It wasn’t even considered a mutated creature from Earth.

What surprised Zhou Wen was that Jiang Yan actually stared at the artificial ant nest created by transparent materials for 24 hours without moving

Anyways, Zhou Wen found these people odd. Only Hui Haifeng looked a little more normal.

Although the Seven Distribution Palm had a few moves, it wasn’t easy to learn them. One had to first master the seven palm techniques and understand their essence, so as to better understand and master the seven moves.

Zhou Wen was Zhou Wen after all. He trained with full focus, and in less than two days, he had learned the Seven Distribution Palm. All he lacked was proficiency and use in actual combat.

Wang Mingyuan didn’t manage them, so Zhong Ziya would sleep on the table every day after he was done with his work. No one would bother about him.

After Zhou Wen pulled up the chain, he took out his mysterious phone and sat in a corner to open the Dragon Gate Grotto’s dungeon and chose Old Dragon Cave.

The blood-colored avatar quickly found Dragon’s Well which Wang Mingyuan and company had named. In the game, Dragon’s Well was an underground hole with no signs of artificial excavation or the chain.

Zhou Wen knew that the bottom of Dragon’s Well was deep and extremely cold. He summoned the silver wings and switched to the Small Perfection of Wisdom Sutra which strengthened his physique before descending Dragon’s Well.

Dragon’s Well’s mouth was only about a meter wide in diameter, and the lower he went, the wider it became. However, when he was about fifty meters down, he saw white fog everywhere, making it difficult to see clearly.

What was even more terrifying was that the temperature in the white fog was strangely low. After Zhou Wen used the Lotus Flower Buddha Body, he still felt extremely cold when he came into contact with the white fog. The coldness drilled

right into his bones and, shortly after using all his strength to descend amidst the white fog, the screen turned black as the blood-colored avatar froze to death.

Although Zhou Wen’s body was fine, he shared the same feelings as the blood-colored avatar. The feeling of freezing to death was extremely uncomfortable.

Even the Small Perfection of Wisdom Sutra and the Lotus Flower Buddha Body can’t withstand the white fog’s coldness. How low is the temperature? Zhou Wen was alarmed, but he wasn’t willing to give up.

After some thought, he revived the blood-colored avatar again. Zhou Wen switched the Primordial Energy Art to the Ancient Imperial Sutra before letting the blood-colored avatar descend into Dragon’s Well.

Every time Zhou Wen circulated the Ancient Imperial Sutra, he felt as though a ball of fire was burning in his body. He wanted to try and see if the heat of the Ancient Imperial Sutra could withstand the cold.

The moment he entered Dragon’s Well, Zhou Wen felt something was different. Back when he used the Small Perfection of Wisdom Sutra, although his resistance had increased, he could still sense the cold.

Now that he was using the Ancient Imperial Sutra, he only felt warmth throughout his body, without any cold at all.

When the blood-colored avatar entered the white fog, Zhou Wen only felt a slight chill. Soon, the heat in his body dissipated the cold.

Zhou Wen was delighted. The Ancient Imperial Sutra had a miraculous effect resisting the cold. While enduring the

terrifying cold, Zhou Wen continued descending. The temperature dropped with distance, and after two hundred meters, even the Ancient Imperial Sutra's power appeared somewhat lacking. It left Zhou Wen feeling a chill, albeit a tiny bit. It wasn't enough to truly harm the blood-colored avatar's body.

How deep is this Dragon's Well? Zhou Wen's vision was blocked. Thankfully, the Truth Listener earring had given him a powerful sense of hearing, allowing him to use his sense of hearing to replace his sense of sight. He could see dozens of meters through the white fog, and if there were sufficiently large fluctuations in the distance, Zhou Wen could hear it from afar.

He still didn't reach the bottom after descending another hundred odd meters. However, Dragon's Well had already expanded to a gigantic underground space. Zhou Wen's hearing was no longer good enough to reach the surrounding stone walls.

By the time he reached a distance of nearly 500 meters, he felt like he couldn't hold on any longer. If he continued, he might just freeze to death like the first time.

I can't go any further down. Zhou Wen hesitated for a moment before getting the blood-colored avatar to summon a Golden Warrior Companion Beast.

This was an ordinary Golden Warrior whose attributes were pretty good. Zhou Wen had originally planned on using it for fusion when he incubated it.

The Golden Warrior didn't know how to fly. After being summoned, it immediately plummeted and disappeared into the white fog.

Thanks to the Golden Warrior’s falling through the white fog and creating sound and material flux, Zhou Wen was able to use Truth Listener’s hearing to see it and have an image form in his mind.

The Golden Warrior kept falling. The Golden Warrior with the Golden Body Life Providence was unable to resist the cold produced by the white fog. Frost grew on its jade-like skin as it rapidly spread throughout its body.

After falling a distance away, the Golden Warrior’s body was frozen into an ice sculpture, emitting creaking sounds. Before long, it exploded, splintering into broken ice blocks that plummeted further.

As the fragments fell, they became smaller and smaller. Almost at the point of losing “sight” of them, Zhou Wen heard a terrifying scene.

As the tiny ice fragments streaked across the white fog, Zhou Wen heard them land on something before a scene formed in his mind.

It was a creature that resembled a winding mountain range. On a huge stone pillar that resembled a mountain peak, there was an oval-shaped object, looking like an offering.

When the ripples produced by the ice fragments touched the oval object, it made Zhou Wen clearly understand what it was. The surface of the object wasn’t smooth, but rather, seemed to be wrapped by threads.

Is that a cocoon? The oval object in Ant City appeared in Zhou Wen’s mind. It looked very similar to the cocoon in both shape and size.

Before Zhou Wen could think further, the terrifying creature that had been hit by the ice fragments suddenly opened its huge mouth and roared upwards.

It was an extremely strange sound that Zhou Wen found indescribable. It wasn’t like a beast’s roar, nor was it a bird’s screech. It was like a long hum from a musical instrument.

Bam!

When the sound wave reached him, the blood-colored avatar’s body immediately exploded and the game screen went black.

Is that thing down there really a dragon? Is the thing it’s protecting the same as the cocoon protected by the Golden Flying Ant? Zhou Wen was filled with puzzlement.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 175 - Dr. Soul

Chapter 175 Dr. Soul

Zhou Wen found it impossible to snatch the treasure from the terrifying dragon-like creature’s proverbial jaws.

With just a casual roar, the fellow instantly killed the blood-colored avatar despite the two to three hundred meters. This was probably a top existence among Epic creatures, or even a Mythical creature.

In contrast, Zhou Wen felt that the Golden Flying Ant was much easier to deal with.

From the looks of it, I should think of a way to finish off the Golden Flying Ant and see what’s inside the cocoon. Zhou Wen was extremely curious.

However, Zhou Wen was still lacking to date. Even if he continuously used the Grand Yin Wind, he was still no match for the Golden Flying Ant.

It’s a little difficult to kill the Golden Flying Ant. Is there any way to obtain the cocoon without killing it? The more Zhou Wen thought about it, the more he found it feasible.

Before that, I need to have sufficient Speed. The Dragon Gate Fairy Skill nimbleness is sufficient, but its thrust and absolute speed aren’t its strength. Zhou Wen frowned as he thought. He wondered what Primordial Energy Skill could make him faster.

“Zhou Wen, why are you frowning? Did you encounter some difficult problem?” Wang Mingyuan happened to walk over and asked when he saw Zhou Wen frowning in thought.

“Teacher,” Zhou Wen subconsciously called out. He found it easier to address him as “teacher” like Zhong Ziya, so he began following Zhong Ziya.

“What problem did you encounter? Why don’t you tell me?” Wang Mingyuan said with interest.

He didn’t seem to have the airs of a teacher, evident from how he often cooked for Zhou Wen, Jiang Yan, and the rest whenever he had nothing to do. If one didn’t know his identity as a counselor, one would completely treat him as an older brother next door.

“Teacher, I’ve learned the Dragon Gate Fairy Skill, but I feel that it isn’t fast enough. Are there any faster Primordial Energy Skills that imbue alacrity at the Legendary stage?” Zhou Wen asked Wang Mingyuan the question that happened to be on his mind.

Wang Mingyuan thought for a moment and said, “The Dragon Gate Fairy Skill is considered one of the best alacrity-type Primordial Energy Skills at the Legendary stage. There are even faster Primordial Energy Skills and our Sunset College does have such a Primordial Energy Skill, but it’s not easy to obtain it.”

“What’s that Primordial Energy Skill? Which zone has it?” Zhou Wen was delighted when he heard that.

“Outside Sunset City, there’s a strange dimensional creature known as the Sun Chasing Bird. It has a type of Primordial Energy Skill called Sun Chasing, allowing people to possess

a speed faster than Dragon Gate Fairy Skill. In addition, the speed-up isn’t just twice as fast,” said Wang Mingyuan.

Zhou Wen was taken aback when he heard that. The reason Sunset College had that name was largely due to Sunset City. No human had ever been able to enter the dimensional zone known as Sunset City; it was even more terrifying than Tiger Cage Pass.

To hunt dimensional creatures there—ones that could fly and with unparalleled speed-type Primordial Energy Skills—was extremely difficult for humans.

Although Sun Chasing Birds were only at the Legendary stage, Zhou Wen believed that the difficulty of killing one wasn’t lower than killing a Golden Flying Ant. After all, it wasn’t an easy task to catch up to it in the sky.

There’s always a chance no matter what. I’ll visit the exterior of Sunset City to take a look. If I can download Sunset City as a game dungeon, it’s not like I have no chance of killing the Sun Chasing Birds. Zhou Wen applied for a leave of absence with Wang Mingyuan and planned on searching the area outside Sunset City for the tiny palm symbol

Since Wang Mingyuan didn’t restrict their freedom and it wasn’t the time to pull up the chain, he approved of Zhou Wen’s departure.

Zhou Wen left Old Dragon Cave and, while walking up the steps of Dragon Gate Grotto, he began wondering how he could obtain the cocoon if he couldn’t kill the Sun Chasing Birds.

Suddenly, Zhou Wen felt his heart palpitate as though something ominous was about to happen. It made his cold sweat flow down his back.

He was alarmed as he immediately observed the area ahead of him. He saw a man walking towards him on the same flight of stairs. He wasn’t ugly, but he looked a little cold.

“Yan Zhen?” Zhou Wen recognized the person as the unease and palpitations in his heart intensified.

When he first met Yan Zhen, he felt that this person was a little sinister.

“We finally meet again. I’ve been waiting so long for you,” Yan Zhen said as he walked over, staring at Zhou Wen. Clearly, he was here for him.

Zhou Wen turned around in a bid to leave, but he was dumbfounded when he turned around. He saw a figure wearing a white coat standing not far behind him, nearly sticking to his back Yet, he hadn’t realized it.

The shadow looked like a human, but its feet didn’t touch the ground. Instead, it was floating above the stone steps.

“That’s my Life Soul. His name is Dr. Soul.” Yan Zhen’s voice came from behind.

Zhou Wen’s expression changed as he summoned his wings, hoping to combine it with his Godfiend Life Providence to fly up.

However, Dr. Soul’s left eye seemed to flash like a camera. The flash in his eye contained a strange red color. The moment he was illuminated by the red light. Zhou Wen’s body, which was about to soar into the sky, instantly froze. He was unable to move an inch.

Zhou Wen felt his muscles stiffen and he couldn’t move his body. He couldn’t even summon his Companion Beasts.

Yan Zhen came in front of Zhou Wen and sized him up before saying with interest, “I’ve investigated all the students who entered Death City. Only three of them didn’t touch the black tree you mentioned, including you. But why did you say that you touched that tree? Why did you lie?”.

Zhou Wen was trapped by some kind of power and couldn’t even speak.

Yan Zhen snapped his fingers as the red light in Dr. Soul’s eye flashed. Zhou Wen immediately felt his mouth regain its function, but the rest of his body remained motionless.

“You are only a coroner, not a policeman. What right do you have to treat me like this?” Zhou Wen asked.

“It’s fine if you don’t wish to say it. I can speak for you. After you came to the morgue, Wang Lu and the other students came back from the dead. As for the other students who touched the black tree, they also experienced a temporary fainting spell, but quickly returned to normal. This is clearly very abnormal. Tell me, what did you do?” Yan Zhen asked as he stared at Zhou Wen.

“I don’t understand what you’re getting at. Release me immediately or I’ll shout for help,” Zhou Wen said with a frown.

“It’s useless. Everyone’s brain waves or souls will be affected or controlled within a certain range by Dr. Soul’s powers. Unless permission is granted by me, no one can see us or hear our voices. Even if I were to kill you here, no one would have any reaction,” Yan Zhen said indifferently.

Zhou Wen shouted out in disbelief a few times. Indeed, the cultivators that came and went in Dragon Gate Grotto nearby didn’t seem to hear a thing or see them.

“Answer my question, or let me dissect your body and find the answer myself.” Yan Zhen’s eyes were burning with zeal. He was like a lunatic as he held a small and exquisite scalpel in his hand that emitted a chilling cold light.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 176 - Madman

Chapter 176 Madman

“You are a coroner. Don’t you know that this is against the law?” Zhou Wen kept using all sorts of powers at his disposal in an attempt to break the force that restrained him physically.

However, it was completely useless. With Dr. Soul staring at him from behind, with its left eye flashing with a sanguine light, he felt as though his soul had been sealed.

Zhou Wen was unable to use his Primordial Energy Skills, nor was he able to circulate the Primordial Energy Arts or summon a Companion Beast. Even the Lost Immortal Sutra that automatically circulated seemed to freeze.

However, this didn’t throw Zhou Wen into despair. This was because, in such an extreme environment, there was a strange and familiar power growing within him.

“The law is created by Man. If I’m strong enough, then I can set the law. It’s not a problem,” Yan Zhen said calmly, but the fervor in his eyes grew stronger.

“But you aren’t strong enough to ignore the law. If you kill me, do you think you can escape punishment from the law?” Zhou Wen asked.

“That’s why I get Dr. Soul to do it. Otherwise, a Legendary student like you wouldn’t need me to use my Life Soul.” Yan Zhen approached Zhou Wen and used his fingers to open his eyelids. As he leaned in to carefully study Zhou Wen’s eyes,

he said, “Even if I dissected you here, no one would know that I was here, much less know that I dissected you here. Therefore, it’s best you answer my question obediently. What did you do? How did you affect the souls of those students?”

“I told you, I have no idea what you’re talking about. I could only sense the aura of the black tree on their bodies. I don’t know anything else, nor did I do anything,” Zhou Wen said.

“It’s fine. It’s fine if you don’t wish to tell me. All I need is a tiny surgery to know everything about you,” Yan Zhen said as he swished his scalpel above Zhou Wen’s head with the scalpel. He said indifferently, “I’ll cut open your skull and extract your brain to read the memories inside. This isn’t difficult for Dr. Soul.”

“Why are you doing this? What do you gain by doing it?” Zhou Wen asked through clenched teeth. He knew Yan Zhen wasn’t joking.

“What do I gain?” Yan Zhen said slowly. “All this time, science and medicine have never been able to resolve the question of the origins of life. The so-called explanations are full of loopholes. Life is not a machine, and human consciousness is not purely an intelligent program. How did their consciousness come about? What kind of relationship does it have with the body? Can consciousness exist independently away from the body? All these questions are very interesting.”

“Does that mean you can kill your own kind without a qualm just to figure out these questions?” Zhou Wen looked at Yan Zhen as though he was looking at a lunatic.

“Life is short, so it’s only a matter of time before one dies. But my research is eternal. If my research succeeds, I can

extract the consciousness of humans, or perhaps should I say the soul. Then, all humans will be able to gain eternal life. When that happens, I will be the savior of humans, and all humans will be grateful to me for I will be the one who made them gain eternal life. In this period of time, sacrifices are inevitable for research purposes. It's an undeniable outcome for human advancement." Yan Zhen seemed to be talking about something very ordinary.

"You really are mad." Zhou Wen was dumbfounded.

"Mad? That's right. This is an era of madness. Who in the past would believe that there are dimensional creatures in this world? Who would have imagined that there would be companion Beasts and magical powers? Who knows if true gods might exist in those dimensional zones? And what I'm doing now is to become a god of humanity, allowing human life to truly belong to themselves, without being controlled by any other power. Aging, ailment, death, and disability will all become history and no longer be a problem that troubles humanity."

The more Yan Zhen spoke, the more excited he became. "If my research succeeds, all humans can let their souls leave their weak bodies and enter high-level bodies at will. For example, you can use a tank as your body. You can also use powerful dimensional creatures as your body. As long as you are willing, you can have everything, and not have a weak, regrettable body as we have now."

Zhou Wen didn't know if he should call Yan Zhen a genius or a lunatic. All he knew was that he was truly crazy, and he wasn't willing to become the necessary sacrifice he mentioned

“Perhaps what you said makes sense, but unfortunately, there’s nothing special about my body. I also have no idea about the matter you were talking about. Are you sure you want to dissect me?” Zhou Wen calmed down.

In his body, that familiar yet unfamiliar power was brewing, like an ancient beast hidden under the calm sea.

Zhou Wen knew that the power was his Life Providence. It was the Sigh of the King that was produced by the combination of the Lost Immortal Sutra and his talent.

Ever since he advanced to the Legendary stage, Zhou Wen had been able to sense the existence of the Sigh of the King. It was like a part of his body, as though he had an additional body organ, an existence that resembled limbs.

But before this, Zhou Wen had no idea how to use the new organ in his body. He could sense its existence and knew that it possessed immense power, but he was unable to use it.

Only moments ago did Zhou Wen finally sense the Sigh of the King and how he could use it when his body was restrained by Dr. Soul.

Humans were peculiar animals. Most of the time, they would only use the organs they needed. Many organs that they didn’t need would degenerate due to prolonged periods of idleness, to the point of forgetting how to use them.

A typical human’s Life Providence was a passive ability. There was no need for one to take the initiative to use it, but Zhou Wen’s Sigh of the King was clearly different.

When he truly sensed that the Sigh of the King could be used by him, the force had already begun to spread within

his body like an ancient beast occupying his body.

“Scientific research has many uncertain factors to begin with, so it’s inevitable to take a wrong path. After all, this is a study for becoming a god. No matter how many failures there are, they can be forgiven.” Yan Zhen’s expression turned colder. The scalpel in his left hand had already reached Zhou Wen’s forehead. His voice said without any emotion, “Don’t worry. I won’t let you suffer too much pain. I’ll start with your skull and expose your pineal gland. Then it will be your left brain, followed by your right. When your brain is completely dissected, Dr. Soul will be able to use his powers to read the information within…”

As Yan Zhen spoke, the scalpel’s blade shimmered with some crystalline light. Under his slender fingers, he was about to cut through Zhou Wen’s skull.

Boom!

At the instant, Yan Zhen’s fingers moved, the force which resembled an ancient beast within Zhou Wen’s body erupted.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 177 - Terrifying Life Providence

Chapter 177 Terrifying Life Providence

The scalpel’s blade was already clinging to the skin on Zhou Wen’s head and was just about to cut in, but at that moment, Yan Zhen’s pupils constricted.

The scalpel’s light flickered, but it could no longer move an inch forward. It was as if it was being held by an invisible force. No matter how much strength Yan Zhen exerted, he couldn’t move an inch.

“You do have secrets on you!” Yan Zhen was delighted instead of being alarmed. His eyes burned with frenzy as terrifying power erupted from his body, transforming into streams of light that gathered onto the scalpel, causing the light on it to become even more terrifying, one that was as resplendent as the sun.

Behind Zhou Wen, Dr. Soul also released terrifying power simultaneously. He also held a surgical blade condensed from a beam of light and slashed it at the back of Zhou Wen’s head.

Even though Zhou Wen’s body didn’t move, Yan Zhen and Dr. Soul appeared to be grabbed by a huge, invisible hand. They suddenly lost their balance and floated in front of Zhou Wen.

Yan Zhen’s face was filled with shock as he struggled with all his might. The blood-red glow in

the eyes of Dr. Soul’s eyes kept flickering, but it was completely useless.

It was as if they were being controlled by an invisible hand, unable to move or make a sound. As the hand tightened, their bodies were being squeezed thinner and thinner.

Flesh deformed as bones warped and his eyes protruded out.

“No… Impossible… How can a student at the Legendary stage… have such great power…” Yan Zhen was overcome with fear. Despite using all his strength, he was unable to resist that terrifying power.

Bam!

With a violent roar, Yan Zhen and the Dr. Soul were crushed by that invisible force and ended up dying.

Zhou Wen watched as Yan Zhen was squashed, but he didn’t have it any better.

The awakening of the Sigh of the King’s brought unimaginable power. After Zhou Wen’s body recovered thanks to the force, his bones emitted a creaking sound as though they would snap at any moment. His flesh and organs were under immense pressure.

All the blood vessels in his body protruded, and many of the more fragile fine capillaries had ruptured. His organs felt like they had been crushed to smithereens.

It wasn’t only Yan Zhen who couldn’t move, even Zhou Wen was unable to move thanks to the terrifying force. It was as

though he was carrying a mountain on his back.

Unlike Yan Zhen, Zhou Wen could see a shadow appear over his body. It was this figure that had squeezed Yan Zhen and Dr. Soul to their deaths.

Bam!

Zhou Wen couldn’t withstand the terrifying power from his body as he collapsed to the ground with one knee propping him up. Blood spewed out of his mouth as the power that descended on him became more terrifying. It exceeded the limits of what his body could withstand. His organs looked like they were about to split apart.

Just as Zhou Wen believed that he would be the first person in history to be crushed by his Life Providence, the force receded like the tide and shrank back into his body.

He suddenly relaxed as the pressure abruptly vanished and he felt his vision go dark as he fell to the ground and fainted.

Wd

When Zhou Wen woke up, he realized that he was actually lying in Wang Mingyuan’s lab. He was sleeping on the only bed in the laboratory—Wang Mingyuan’s resting spot. The students usually slept on the floor.

He couldn’t see Wang Mingyuan, Hui Haifeng, or Zhong Ziya. Only Jiang Yan was reading quietly in front of the oil lamp.

“Why am I here?” Zhou Wen moved and felt his body ache terribly. He didn’t have any strength and his body was as soft as a newborn.

“It’s best you don’t move around. Your bones are fractured and your organs are damaged. Although Counselor has already used his Life Soul to heal your body, you still need to recuperate for a period of time. Otherwise, those injuries will easily relapse,” Jiang Yan said casually.

“How did I end up here?” Zhou Wen asked again in puzzlement.

Logically speaking, Yan Zhen had died on the spot and, being seriously injured, he had fallen unconscious by the side. Even if the police didn’t believe that he had really killed Yan Zhen, they would still have taken him back to investigate. Therefore, it only made sense if he was in the police station’s hospital right now.

“When Hui Haifeng went out to buy some stuff, he heard a scream. When he went over, he found you fainted on the ground with serious injuries, he immediately got Counselor over to treat your injuries and bring you back.” Jiang Yan put down the book in his hand and looked at Zhou Wen. “You suffered such serious injuries in Dragon Gate Grotto? Who injured you?”

“I don’t know who injured me. Was there anyone else nearby?” Zhou Wen was filled with puzzlement.

It was fine if Dr. Soul had been crushed. After all, it was only a pure energy body, so it didn’t leave any traces. Yan Zhen was a living person, and Zhou Wen had watched him explode. Blood had splattered everywhere, so it was impossible for him not to leave a trace.

However, Jiang Yan’s recount made it seem like no one had seen Yan Zhen’s corpse.

“There were many people, but they were just bystanders. We didn’t discover anyone who had injured you,” Jiang Yan replied with certainty.

With that said, Jiang Yan got up and walked to the side. He picked up a bowl and walked in front of Zhou Wen. “This is the medicine prepared by Counselor before he left. He told me to feed you when you woke up. Not one drop can be left behind. This is one of my missions today.”

With that said, Jiang Yan picked up a spoon and scooped a spoonful of medicine and moved it to Zhou Wen’s mouth.

“I’ll do it myself…” Zhou Wen struggled to sit up, but his body was aching so terribly that he felt limp and without any strength.

“Didn’t I tell you just now that Counselor has just treated your injuries and your body needs to recover? Don’t move around or hinder me from completing my mission.” Jiang Yan said as he took the spoon to Zhou Wen’s mouth.

Zhou Wen knew that his body couldn’t muster any strength, so he could only open his mouth and drink the mouthful of medicine. He found it extremely bitter, and he had no idea what it tasted like.

“What medicine is this?” Zhou Wen couldn’t help but frown.

“Medicine personally created by Counselor. It should be useful,” Jiang Yan said indifferently.

Jiang Yan fed Zhou Wen spoonful by spoonful until the entire bowl of medicine was finished ten minutes later. The medicine was so bitter that it made Zhou Wen’s mouth and intestines turn bitter. He almost couldn’t sense any other flavor.

“Rest well, don’t move around. Counselor said that you can only get off the bed in two days. If you don’t want to be treated again, then lie down obediently,” Jiang Yan said.

Although Zhou Wen was weak, he could still move his limbs, albeit lacking the strength for any strenuous activities.

When he pulled away the blanket to take a look, he realized that he was only wearing his underwear. He was shocked and was just about to ask Jiang Yan if he had seen his phone when he turned his head and saw that his clothes were neatly placed by the bed. There were two phones and some miscellaneous items on them. The bracelet was there too.

Zhou Wen immediately heaved a sigh of relief as he reached out for the mysterious phone.

There was no problem with turning it on. Zhou Wen unlocked the phone and was instantly taken aback. The other apps on the cell phone’s home screen were normal, but there was an additional number, “1,” on the Dead Man Tree icon.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 178 - Demonized General With Three Skills

Chapter 178 Demonized General With Three Skills

Zhou Wen was puzzled as he clicked on the Dead Man Tree icon. Soon, the image of the Dead Man Tree appeared onscreen.

However, at that moment, the Dead Man Tree had already turned white. Between the white leaves, there was a white flower bud.

How did this happen? Zhou Wen was alarmed. He looked at it for quite some time but failed to notice anything. The flower bud was still young, so there was nothing special about it.

However, the bud’s appearance made Zhou Wen recall Yan Zhen’s corpse. Yan Zhen was indeed dead, but no one had discovered his corpse. Now that there was another flower bud on the dead tree, it was very difficult to not make any connections.

No way? Could it be that the Dead Man Tree in-game can suck dead people from reality? Zhou Wen couldn’t help but frown when he thought of this.

If the Dead Man Tree in-game still had an influence on reality, wouldn’t it be very dangerous for him to carry it with

him all day?

No one knew how great the effects of the Dead Man Tree were. It would only spell greater trouble if the people around him ended up being affected by the dead tree.

Zhou Wen recalled his Life Providence and felt his head ache even more. He had never heard of anyone not being able to withstand their Life Providence's power.

In theory, this was an impossible situation. This was because the Life Providence had been born out of Zhou Wen's body. Therefore, its power couldn't exceed Zhou Wen's own limits; otherwise, it would be impossible for him to produce it. Yet, Zhou Wen's Life Providence had exceeded his own limits.

It nearly crushed my body with just one use of my Life Providence. I'm probably the only person in history. Zhou Wen mocked himself.

However, Zhou Wen had a nagging feeling that his Life Providence was abnormal. It was very likely related to the Lost Immortal Sutra. When he advanced to the Legendary stage, he had seen an illusion that vaguely looked like a woman. And the woman's voice was similar to the devil-like whispers he heard when suffering sleep paralysis.

When he used Sigh of the King, Zhou Wen felt the shadow around him seem to resemble a **woman.**

However, he wasn't sure because he had only seen a blurry shadow. Furthermore, he had only seen a portion of it. Without a mirror, he couldn't see his entire body, so he naturally couldn't see a complete shadow.

Jiang Yan fed him the medicine three times a day, making Zhou Wen grimace in pain, to the point of feeling like he had

transformed into a bitter gourd. It was as if his flesh and blood were emitting a bitter taste.

Only in the evening did Wang Mingyuan and Zhong Ziya crawl out of Dragon's Well. He had no idea what they were studying down below.

Hui Haifeng left the laboratory for some matters and didn't return that day. Wang Mingyuan checked Zhou Wen's body again before saying, "Your injuries are no longer serious. You can get out of bed in two days, but you still can't do any vigorous exercise. It will take at least half a month before you can begin practicing your palm techniques again."

To Zhou Wen's surprise, Wang Mingyuan didn't ask him how he was injured. It made the excuse he had prepared useless.

As he couldn't get out of bed, Zhou Wen could only play games on the bed. Thankfully, his injuries didn't affect the blood-colored avatar, so it wasn't a problem to grind in-game.

"I say, Zhou Wen, I really couldn't tell. You look so quiet usually, but you were so ruthless when you fought." Zhong Ziyuan placed Wang Mingyuan's bowl of porridge on a chair beside Zhou Wen's bed. He grinned as he continued, "Tell me, who beat you up? As your senior, I'll avenge you."

"I really don't know who that person is. I was ambushed while walking. I fainted without seeing anyone." Zhou Wen felt weak all over and it was difficult for him to even sit up. So all he could do was roll around and lay on the bed to eat the porridge.

"Alright, there's no need to go through so much effort." Zhong Ziya picked up the congee again and fed Zhou Wen with a spoon. "You're really useless. You didn't even manage

to see who your enemy was. It’s embarrassing for us. Don’t tell others that you are Teacher’s disciple.”

Knowing Zhong Ziya’s personality, Zhou Wen knew he was only joking, so he didn’t take it to heart. Instead, he changed the topic. “I heard that Teacher has another disciple. What’s the senior’s name? How is he now?”

“That senior, well… his name is Liu Yun. You should have heard of his name, right? Like you, he entered Sunset College from Guide High School,” Zhong Ziya said with a strange expression.

“Senior Liu Yun?” Zhou Wen was slightly taken aback.

Zhou Wen had heard of this name. Before Zhou Wen, there had been a few geniuses produced by Guide High School. One of them was a student named Liu Yun. It was said that he had received similar treatment to Zhou Wen in the past. He was the pride of Guide High School, and he was also the top scholar in the city’s college entrance examination.

However, Liu Yun was a few classes higher than Zhou Wen. Back when Zhou Wen was in high school, Liu Yun had long graduated, so they never met.

He never expected Liu Yun to be Wang Mingyuan’s disciple. Unfortunately, Zhou Wen arrived too late and again, Liu Yun had graduated a year ago.

Zhong Ziya didn’t seem willing to chat with Zhou Wen about Liu Yun. After feeding him, he yawned and returned to his bed.

Zhou Wen was rather bored lying there, so he could only continue gaming.

When he arrived at Tiger Cage Pass, he encountered a Paper Demonized General once again. He was no longer as excited when he saw Paper Demonized Generals. He had met many before, but none of them dropped a Companion Egg.

Zhou Wen originally imagined that he would end up with nothing, but after he killed the Paper Demonized General, he saw a Companion Egg mixed with red and black colors drop.

He found it unbelievable that a Paper Demonized General Companion Egg dropped. After a momentary pause, he got the blood-colored avatar to pick it up.

The attributes of the Paper Demonized General were similar to the two Demonized Generals from before and they had identical Life Providences. However, the only difference in skills was Astral Suction Palm.

After taking a look at the compatibility between the Paper Demonized General and the Mutated Demonized General, he realized that the compatibility wasn’t as high as the previous two Demonized Generals. It was only about 54%, which was equivalent to a fifty-fifty chance.

The probability wasn’t high, so Zhou Wen hesitated for a moment before choosing the fusion.

He had plenty of opportunities to have a Mutated Demonized General drop in the future. Even if he failed this time, he would still have a chance.

With Zhou Wen’s choice, the Companion Egg transformed into a flash of light and infused itself into the mutated Demonized General’s body. Then, the sparkling glow on the mutated Demonized General’s body filled the entire image of the cell phone.

‘Fusion successful. Obtained Mutated Demonized General.’

As the light dissipated, the Mutated Demonized General’s figure appeared onscreen. It had a red horse and red armor, with a red crown on its head. It held a strange blood-colored spear, but its body emitted a strange black aura.

Mutated Demonized General: Legendary

Legendary Life Providence: Malignant General

Strength: 19

Speed: 19

Constitution: 19

Primordial Energy: 19

Talent Skill: Astral Slash Blade, Astral Fist, Astral Suction Palm, Demon Flame Spear, Demon Rider Summon

Having succeeded in fusing a Mutated Demonized General, the attributes were comparable to Rebellious Knight’s. Furthermore, it had five skills that exceeded the limit. Amongst Legendaries, it was considered the strongest existence other than the mythical pets.

The reason Zhou Wen hadn’t hatched the Rebellious Knight Companion Egg all this time was that he had some concerns.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 179 – Inauspicious Life Providence

Chapter 179 Inauspicious Life Providence

With an excellent-grade Companion Egg like Rebellious Knight, one would typically choose to hatch it unless they were already at the Epic stage and not have any need for a Legendary Companion Egg.

John had been running around with the Rebellious Knight Companion Egg without hatching it. This left Zhou Wen somewhat puzzled.

Hence, after obtaining Rebellious Knight, Zhou Wen carefully studied all of its attributes, including his Life Providence.

Then, Zhou Wen realized the problem. Although Rebellious Knight’s Life Providence being Knight of Destiny didn’t seem to be a problem, the blurb introducing it was very intriguing.

Knight of Destiny: Knight favored by destiny, the eternal protagonist.

Despite being a Companion Beast, he had a Life Providence of a protagonist. This clearly wasn’t a good thing. At the very least, John definitely thought so. Otherwise, there was no reason for him not to hatch Rebellious Knight.

After connecting the Rebellious Knight’s history with the knights of the round table, Zhou Wen was even more certain about his guess. The reason John hatched Sacred Spear Knight and not Rebellious Knight was definitely because of the same misgivings Zhou Wen had.

That round table knight was once the strongest knight under King Arthur, and together with King Arthur, he had established a glorious era together.

But it was also because of him that the round table knights fell apart. King Arthur’s death also drew the curtains on a legend.

No matter how great the legends and novels described this knight, it couldn’t erase his betrayal and selfishness. Like the famous Lu Bu in the East District, they had ended an era because of a woman.

Although humans could contract with Rebellious Knight, and not be afraid of his betrayal, it was ultimately not a good thing to have such an ominous Companion Beast by his side.

The main problem lay in him and his Life Providence. If I can remove the useless and jinxed Knight of Destiny Life Providence, there shouldn’t be too much of a problem, Zhou Wen thought.

Although John couldn’t resolve the problem, it wasn’t a problem that Zhou Wen was helpless against.

The mysterious phone had the ability to fuse Companion Beasts. As long as Rebellious Knight fused with other Companion Beasts, he could resolve the Life Providence’s problem.

Without a doubt, the best choice was to fuse him with the Mutated Demonized General. Both were Companion Beasts with mounts, so the chances of successfully fusing would be higher.

However, Zhou Wen had previously seen the Mutated Demonized General's compatibility with Rebellious Knight. It was only 23%. Even Zhou Wen didn't dare to risk with such a low probability. There was almost no chance of success.

Now that the Mutated Demonized General had undergone another fusion, Zhou Wen once again looked at his compatibility with Rebellious Knight. His compatibility score was even lower—11%.

From the looks of it, once a pet fuses, the compatibility score will drastically decrease. After repeated fusions, the compatibility score will drop even further. Zhou Wen naturally didn't choose to have Rebellious Knight fuse with Mutated Demonized General. Therefore, up to now, Zhou Wen still hadn't hatched it.

While recuperating, he gamed and killed monsters. To Zhou Wen, it didn't matter. When he was grinding the Three-Eyed Golden Warriors, he obtained a 19-valued Constitution Crystal, allowing his Constitution to advance to 19 points.

Zhou Wen had previously heard from the Wu siblings that after gathering the three Primordial Energy Skills like the Astral Suction Palm, Astral Fist, and Astral Slash Blade, one would be able to destroy the arrow shot out from the gate.

However, the Mutated Demonized General already possessed three abilities and was still unable to dodge the might of the arrow. Therefore, Zhou Wen was skeptical about what he had heard previously.

Zhou Wen still went to Tiger Cage Pass every time, hoping to have the Astral Fist Primordial Energy Skill Crystal drop. Even if he countered that arrow, Astral Fist was still an extremely powerful Primordial Energy Skill.

Ding!

He had casually cleaved a soldier to death when a Companion Egg dropped. It left Zhou Wen alarmed.

However, that was only an ordinary Mortal-stage soldier. It was useless even if its Companion Egg dropped.

However, Zhou Wen was surprised when he saw the system's notification. The Mortal Companion Egg's attributes were very ordinary, but it had a 97% compatibility with Rebellious Knight.

That can't be, right? How can this Companion Egg have such a high affinity with Rebellious Knight? Zhou Wen carefully observed the soldier's stats.

Saber Shield Soldier: Mortal stage.

Strength: 8

Speed: 6

Constitution: 7

Primordial Energy: 3

Talent Skill: None

Companion Form: None

It was basically a useless Mortal Companion Beast with average stats. It didn't even have a talent skill or a

companion form. It could be said that it was trash at the Mortal stage.

However, such a trash Companion Beast had such a high affinity with Rebellious Knight. This left Zhou Wen very surprised.

With a thought, Zhou Wen got the blood-colored avatar to hatch the Saber Shield Soldier. His attributes were identical to what he had seen before incubation-trash.

Then, Zhou Wen made an extremely bold decision. He used the Rebellious Knight’s Companion Egg as a supplement to fuse with the Saber Shield Soldier.

The main reason was that Zhou Wen wasn’t willing to make a pact with Rebellious Knight who had a problematic Life Providence, so it was useless keeping it. But since there was such a high success rate, he could try fusing it.

Zhou Wen didn’t have much hope in the first place, but after the pet’s fusion was completed, the attributes gave him a fright.

Saber Shield Knight: Legendary stage

Life Providence: Offense and Defense

Strength: 19

Speed: 19

Constitution: 19

Primordial Energy: 19

Talent Skill: Cross Sword, Everlasting Shield, Holy Steed Summoning, Holy Steed Battle Aura

Companion Form: None

The current Saber Shield Knight was completely different from the previous Saber Shield Soldier. He was wearing iron armor and riding on a black horse with a saber in one hand and a shield in the other. He looked extremely majestic and mighty.

The crux of the matter was that he had inherited the four talent skills of Rebellious Knight. The abilities were not much weaker than Mutated Demonized General with three main skills.

Zhou Wen was exhilarated. This fusion not only resolved the problem of the Life Providence, it also allowed him to possess yet another powerful Legendary warrior.

Now that I have Mutated Demonized General and Saber Shield Knight, I might be able to form a cavalry team in the future if I get a few more. Zhou Wen glanced at the compatibility score of Saber Shield Knight and Mutated Demonized General. It actually reached 49%.

After some hesitation, Zhou Wen gave up on the fusion, unwilling to take the risk.

During the few days of recuperation, Zhou Wen lived rather comfortably. But on the seventh day, the white flower on the Dead Man Tree completely bloomed, and its petals began withering.

After the flower wilted, a white fruit grew out which Zhou Wen could faintly see a blob of light within. It looked familiar, but also unfamiliar.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it

as soon as possible.

Chapter 180 - Fruit

Chapter 180 Fruit

Zhou Wen was puzzled as he stared at the fruit for quite some time, but he failed to crack the puzzle.

With the passage of time, the fruit grew bigger and bigger. The originally crystalline shell also gradually became thicker and harder. It looked like an eggshell.

The fruit formed on the Dead Man Tree can’t be a Companion Egg, right? After two days, the more Zhou Wen looked at the fruit, the more it looked like a white Companion Egg. He had no idea how to describe his feelings.

If the Dead Man Tree can really produce a Companion Egg, then what’s the Companion Beast inside it? Yan Zhen? Or is it his Life Soul, Dr. Soul? Zhou Wen could only make such a guess.

Zhou Wen didn’t know when the fruit would mature. All he could do was slowly watch its growth. He spent the rest of the time grinding as usual.

It was unknown how many times he had died at the hands of the Golden Flying Ant, but Zhou Wen failed to touch the white cocoon it was protecting. This left him somewhat depressed.

From the looks of it, I have to think of a way to obtain the Sun Chasing movement technique. With absolute speed, I

should have a chance of circling around the Golden Flying Ant and touch that cocoon. Zhou Wen was already able to get off the bed, so he decided to make another trip to Sunset City to check on the situation outside.

Although Yan Zhen wasn't part of the military, he was still a coroner. He had disappeared without a trace and had a deep relationship with the military. It was impossible that no one would investigate this matter.

"Your body hasn't recovered yet. Any more injuries will be very troublesome. Let Ziya accompany you." Wang Mingyuan instructed Zhong Ziya to accompany Zhou Wen to Sunset City.

Zhong Ziya was originally unhappy, but because Zhou Wen was injured, he had no choice but to pull the chain. Now, he had to accompany Zhou Wen to Sunset City. This naturally displeased him greatly.

It was unknown what Wang Mingyuan had said to Zhong Ziya before he agreed to accompany Zhou Wen.

However, Zhou Wen didn't even consider hunting the Sun Chasing Bird the moment he saw it.

What Zhou Wen could see with his naked eye was a black dot that streaked across the sky. At that height and flying speed, it was impossible for him to catch up, even with the power of his Godfiend Life Providence.

Furthermore, the Sun Chasing Bird never landed. It was a dimensional creature that would forever fly in the sky.

This was the first time Zhou Wen had seen Sunset City. It was like an ancient city floating between a mirage and

clouds. It seemed to be extremely close, but it also seemed impossible to touch.

Zhong Ziya looked at Sunset City between the clouds and said, “Because it can only be seen when the glow of sunset appears, it’s why this city is named after the sunset. The ‘sunset’ in Sunset College also points to Sunset City. The additional meanings behind ‘sunset’ were added by future generations.”

“Has anyone entered Sunset City yet?” Zhou Wen asked curiously.

“How do we get in?” Zhong Ziya curled his lips and said, “Did you see those Sun Chasing Birds? They have been chasing after Sunset City all their lives, never landing on the ground. However, none of them have been able to fly in. Who do you think will be able to enter Sunset City?”

“By the way, why do you want to kill a Sun Chasing Bird? The difficulty of killing one is probably even harder than killing the typical Epic creature because you might not be able to catch up to it,” Zhong Ziya added.

“I need a movement technique that’s faster than Dragon Gate Fairy Skill. That’s why I want to kill a Sun Chasing Bird,” Zhou Wen said.

“If that’s the case, there’s no need for you to kill the Sun Chasing Bird. Do you know the Lotus Flower Cave in Dragon Gate Grotto? There’s an Epic dimensional creature known as the Fairy there. If you kill a Fairy, you might be able to have the Dragon Gate Flying Immortal Skill. It’s the upgraded version of the Dragon Gate Fairy Skill. It’s faster, more potent, and more agile. It’s much faster than the pure speed that Sun Chasing Skill provides,” Zhong Ziya said.

Zhou Wen said with a bitter smile, “I do want to do so, but I’m no match for Fairies. I’m only capable of killing a Fairy Monkey.”

Zhou Wen was speaking the truth. Back when he went to the Lotus Flower Cave, he had encountered a Fairy and ended up being instantly killed. Although he was much stronger now, it wasn’t easy to kill a Fairy.

Upon hearing Zhou Wen’s words, Zhong Ziya immediately laughed. “Isn’t there a simple solution? As long as you are sincere enough, get Hui Haifeng and Jiang Yan. With the three of us helping you, there’s no need to worry about not being able to kill a Fairy.”

“It won’t be nice troubling everyone, right?” Zhou Wen asked hesitantly.

“There’s no trouble at all. I believe that those two fellows are bored staying in the lab all day. They’ll definitely be willing to accompany you to Lotus Flower Cave.” Zhong Ziya thought for a moment before saying, “But that Fairy is an Epic creature after all. We’ll have to plan before taking action. We’ll discuss it later when we get back.”

Zhong Ziya continued speaking, blatantly ignoring if Zhou Wen was really asking for his help. They then rode an electric scooter back to the lab.

After meeting Hui Haifeng and Jiang Yan, Zhong Ziya told them about helping Zhou Wen hunt a Fairy. Hui Haifeng and Jiang Yan agreed readily without any conditions.

“That’s settled then. I’ll first head to the Lotus Flower Cave to test the strength of Fairies. Once Zhou Wen recovers from his injuries, we’ll kill her together,” Zhong Ziya said as he left the lab, giving Zhou Wen no chance to stop him.

“Will it be dangerous for him to go?” Zhou Wen asked worriedly.

He was a person who didn’t like to owe others favors. If Zhong Ziya were to die in Lotus Flower Cave, Zhou Wen really didn’t know how he should repay the favor.

To his surprise, Hui Haifeng pursed his lips and said, “Don’t worry, even a more powerful Epic creature wouldn’t be able to kill that fellow, much less a Fairy. He will at most suffer a little pain.”

Zhou Wen was somewhat puzzled, unsure why Hui Haifeng was so certain.

Jiang Yan said, “Zhong Ziya is a tough cookie. He has nine lives like a cat. He won’t die.”

Seeing how confident they were, Zhou Wen didn’t say anything else, but he was still a little worried.

When it was night time, Zhong Ziya returned. His clothes were tattered and torn, and he looked like he had been through a fierce battle. However, there was no blood on his body at all. Beneath his tattered clothes was flawless skin.

Zhong Ziya slept the moment he returned, without saying a word. This prevented Zhou Wen from asking him what had happened.

When Zhou Wen woke up every morning, Zhong Ziya was nowhere to be seen. At night, he would see Zhong Ziya return in tattered clothes. This continued for several days until Zhong Ziya returned with his clothes intact on the fourth day.

“Alright. After Zhou Wen recovers from his injuries, we’ll go hunt a Fairy,” Zhong Ziya said languidly after returning instead of collapsing in bed.

Zhou Wen originally thought they were just joking, but he never expected them to be that bold. In a few days, when Zhou Wen’s injuries were more or less healed, they actually dragged him to Lotus Flower Cave.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 181 - Fairy

Chapter 181 Fairy

“Are you confident in killing a Fairy?” Zhou Wen followed behind the group as they walked towards Lotus Flower Cave.

“No,” Hui Haifeng answered.

Although Jiang Yan and Zhong Ziya didn’t answer, their faces implied that they weren’t confident either.

“Aren’t you taking too much of a risk when you don’t have the confidence in killing a Fairy?” Zhou Wen looked at the trio speechlessly.

Hui Haifeng smiled and said, “If it’s something that can definitely be done, what’s the fun in doing so? It’s only interesting if you aren’t confident.”

“What theory is that?” Zhou Wen was rendered even more speechless. He didn’t agree that risking one’s life for fun was something interesting.

Zhong Ziya pursed his lips and said, “Hui Haifeng might not be entirely right, but there’s nothing wrong with it. If it’s something others can do, why should we do it?”

“What about you?” Zhou Wen looked at Jiang Yan.

“Counselor got me to watch you all. Since all of you are going, I can only follow,” Jiang Yan said indifferently.

Zhou Wen looked at the trio and was momentarily at a loss for words. He increasingly felt that none of Wang Mingyuan's students were normal.

He had originally found Hui Haifeng was rather normal, but from what he saw today, he was wrong. Apart from Zhou Wen, no one else was in any way normal.

Why would a gentle person like Teacher, teach such a bunch of strange and eccentric fellows? Zhou Wen originally wanted to say that he wasn't going, but the trio had already gone far.

"Whatever." Zhou Wen sighed and shook his head before following.

Zhou Wen wasn't completely lacking in confidence. He wasn't a Fairy's match in the past, but he was much stronger now. Although he wasn't enough to fight an Epic Fairy, he still had some confidence in staying alive.

When he grinded in Lotus Flower Cave, he would occasionally encounter a Fairy. It wasn't difficult for him to escape.

Soon, the four arrived at Lotus Flower Cave. Not long after they entered the cave, they met a Fairy Monkey.

Before Jiang Yan and Zhong Ziya could make a move, Hui Haifeng nudged Zhou Wen forward. "You've been recuperating for so long, let's warm up your muscles first so that you won't have a cramp when you encounter a Fairy."

I'll be the last one cramping between the two of us, Zhou Wen cursed inwardly, but he had no choice but to approach the Fairy Monkey.

He had lost count of the number of Fairy Monkeys he had killed in-game, but he knew every action of theirs. When he saw the Fairy Monkey flap its wings and fly down, its claws shimmering with a terrifying light, he unhurriedly took a huge step forward and leaped up, causing the Fairy Monkey to barely miss him.

Bam!

Zhou Wen struck the back of the Fairy Monkey's head with his palm. The Fairy Monkey didn't even have the chance to scream as it fell from the sky. It convulsed twice without any sound.

"Beautiful!" Hui Haifeng couldn't help but praise.

Jiang Yan was also slightly surprised, but Zhong Ziya pursed his lips and said, "Passable. All that training in palm techniques didn't go to waste after all. You didn't embarrass Teacher."

They encountered several Fairy Monkeys in a row, but no one was willing to take action. Zhou Wen had no choice but to head up and hunt them, treating it as an opportunity to practice his Seven Distribution Palm.

Zhong Ziya led the way, passing through more than ten caves when they suddenly saw a fairy-like creature rushing towards them with its clothes fluttering.

Zhou Wen recognized it at a glance. It was a Fairy-an Epic dimensional creature inside Lotus Flower Cave.

But upon careful inspection, Zhou Wen's expression changed drastically. He had seen quite a number of Fairies, but they were all dressed in colorful clothes with ribbons wrapped around their bodies.

However, this Fairy was different. She was dressed in black and the ribbons fluttering in her body were pure white in color. She was very different from the Fairies that Zhou Wen had previously seen.

“Oh no, it’s a Mutated Fairy.” Zhong Ziya was also surprised, but he had no intention of retreating. He took out a gun and aimed it at the Fairy, shooting three consecutive shots.

The bullets instantly appeared in front of the Fairy, but she didn’t move at all. The pure white ribbons danced around her body as though they had a life of their own, repelling the three bullets.

The bullets made of Primordial Gold failed to deal any damage.

“Run!” Seeing that the three bullets were useless, Zhong Ziya immediately turned around and ran. His actions were swift and without any hesitation.

Zhou Wen had just started when he saw Jiang Yan and Hui Haifeng running, each faster than the other. They had run virtually at the same moment with Zhong Ziya, and Zhou Wen was the slowest.

However, even Zhong Ziya, who was running right ahead, was unable to rush out of the cave. Just as he was about to enter the neighboring cave, he saw the surroundings suddenly turn pitch black. He could no longer see anything

Zhong Ziya leaped up in a bid to rush out of the cave in the darkness.

However, with that jump, he slammed into what appeared like a steel plate. With a loud bang, Zhong Ziya’s face was flattened from the impact. He fell back as his nose bled.

Zhou Wen didn’t know if Hui Haifeng and Jiang Yan could see, but he could see everything clearly with Truth Listener’s powers.

As for the Fairy in the air, a black sun suddenly appeared behind her. It emitted black light which enveloped the entire cave, forming a dark space.

Is that the Life Soul of a Fairy? Zhou Wen had also seen a few Fairies, but he had never seen them use their Life Souls. It was unknown if the typical Fairy’s Life Soul was the same as a Mutated Fairy’s.

Zhou Wen was just about to warn Jiang Yan and Hui Haifeng to be careful when the ribbon on the Mutated Fairy flew over like a jade wyrm tearing through the air. It was targeting Zhou Wen.

Just as he was about to fight, he saw Jiang Yan’s figure flash and help him block. A slender sword had appeared in his hand in the process.

The sword’s width was at most one finger wide, even thinner than paper, so thin that it was almost transparent.

The sword in Jiang Yan’s hand drew out a purple beam and accurately hit the ribbon. It failed to slice through it but instead wrapped around the sword.

With a tug of the Fairy’s milky-white hand, the pure white ribbon tightened and the sword in Jiang Yan’s hand snapped loudly into several pieces.

Jiang Yan retreated in time, avoiding being sliced by the ribbon.

Zhong Ziya leaped up from the ground, a gun in each hand. He fired ceaselessly at the Mutated Fairy, but unfortunately, all the bullets were blocked by the spinning ribbons. The Fairy wasn’t injured at all.

.

Why are we so unlucky? Zhou Wen knew that if he didn’t kill this Mutated Fairy, they would probably die. Without any hesitation, he took the opportunity to summon the Great Yin Fan while the Fairy was blocking the bullets. He leaped into the air and charged at the Mutated Fairy.

Meanwhile, Hui Haifeng and Jiang Yan seemed to act as though their minds were connected by telepathy. They charged at the Mutated Fairy, clearly having the same thoughts.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 182 - Battling Fairy

Chapter 182 Battling Fairy

With a strong swish of the banana fan at the Mutated Fairy, the Grand Yin Wind swept out immediately.

The Mutated Fairy's body fluttered like the wind, and the Grand Yin Wind seemed to aid her. However, a thin layer of frost appeared over her body. It was just that the cold wasn't enough to freeze her. It merely affected her agility.

Zhou Wen knew that this was because the Banana Fairy's level was too low. If the Banana Fairy was also at the Epic stage, this single flap would probably have frozen the Mutated Fairy in midair. It would be useless even if she had the ability to ride the wind.

However, as the Mutated Fairy was flying with the wind's momentum while suffering from diminished agility, it made her trajectory easier to predict. Jiang Yan held a semi-translucent whip that was neither gold nor jade. It looked like a weapon made out of a biological creature's tendons. Lashing it out at the Mutated Fairy, the translucent whip wrapped around its ankle as though it had predicted her trajectory.

Jiang Yan pulled the whip with all his might, but the strength of the Mutated Fairy was so strong that it lifted him up.

Jiang Yan didn't let go of the whip and continued to clasp onto it tightly. It was like a weight that greatly slowed down the Mutated Fairy's speed.

The ribbons on the mutated Fairy’s body fluttered like a wyrm as they swept towards Jiang Yan. If he was caught by the ribbons, his body would probably be broken into several pieces.

Hui Haifeng had already rushed in front of the Mutated Fairy. An arm wrapped in a metal bracer erupted like a volcano, emitting powerful streams of light as it blasted at the Mutated Fairy.

Due to the freezing and Jiang Yan, the Mutated Fairy’s movement was greatly affected. She could no longer dodge the punch, but she wasn’t flustered. She waved her hand gently, blocking Hui Haifeng’s punch.

Bam!

Hui Haifeng felt as if he had been struck by a hammer as his body flew backward. He slammed into the stone wall and spat out a mouthful of blood.

Seeing that the ribbon was about to sweep him up, Jiang Yan held the whip with both hands and shook his body, avoiding the entanglement of the ribbons several times. However, that was all he managed. It didn’t stop the ribbons from eventually being on the cusp of wrapping around his body.

There was a sword flash hit the ribbon, a result of Zhong Ziya holding a sword at some point in time. It was unusually sharp and, although the sword beam shattered immediately upon contact with the ribbon and Zhong Ziya was sent flying, the change in the ribbon’s trajectory gave Jiang Yan a chance to dodge it.

Jiang Yan continued to hold on to the whip, dodging the ribbon twice before the threat of having the ribbon wrap around him happened again.

At this point, Zhou Wen noticed something. Jiang Yan's whip seemed to have some special use which was why Jiang Yan refused to let go.

Without any hesitation, he leaped up into the sky and once again flapped the banana fan at the Mutated Fairy. It blew the Mutated Fairy's body to the side and changed her ribbon's trajectory.

However, this time, the mutated Fairy seemed to be prepared. While she used the wind to escape, she tapped gently with her milky-white finger, sending a beam in the direction of Zhou Wen's heart.

Zhou Wen immediately felt his heart turn cold. The beam was too fast, one that he couldn't dodge with his Speed. All he could do was summon the Three-Eyed Golden Warrior to put it in between him and the beam.

Crack!

The white beam penetrated the Three-Eyed Golden Warrior's Golden Body without stopping. Neither did its power dissipate as it continued forward, stabbing into Zhou Wen's flesh.

Blood immediately spewed out from the wound on his shoulder. Thankfully, the Three-Eyed Golden Warrior was able to ward off most of its might. Furthermore, Zhou Wen had also used that opening to adjust his position without being hit in any vital spots.

Hui Haifeng's mouth was covered in blood as he delivered another punch at the Mutated Fairy. Then, Zhou Wen saw that he had once again been sent flying upon contact with her palm.

The diabolical longsword in Zhong Ziya’s hand flickered, but his eyes appeared even more diabolical than the sword’s glint. It presented a strange blood-red color as it slashed out blood-colored sword beams in a frenzy, sweeping right at the Mutated Fairy like a tornado.

The Mutated Fairy’s ribbons spun as they shattered all the sword beams. Despite fighting against four, she still held an absolute advantage.

However, Zhou Wen didn’t know if it was an illusion, but he felt that the Mutated Fairy’s speed had slowed down. It wasn’t as fast as before, especially her hands. They weren’t as light and elegant as before, as though there was something heavy on them that prevented her from moving them as she wanted.

It’s a result of Hui Haifeng’s punches? Zhou Wen saw a strange mark appear on the Mutated Fairy’s palm. He immediately thought of the two punches Hui Haifeng had delivered.

Without time to think deeper, Zhou Wen stirred up the Grand Yin Wind once again. This time, it wasn’t directed at the Mutated Fairy, but rather, it was aimed at her ribbon. He was forcibly changing the trajectory of the ribbon that was targeting Jiang Yan.

Even so, Jiang Yan’s face was still sliced by a ribbon. His cheekbones tore open and a trickle of blood immediately flowed out.

Following that, another beam of light shot towards Jiang Yan’s head. He had no room to dodge unless he was willing to release the whip in his hand.

“Hold her back.” Jiang Yan grabbed the whip and screamed.

“How? I can’t even if I were to throw my life at her.” Zhong Ziya held his sword with both hands as he unleashed several sword beams at the light beams that the Mutated Fairy produced

When the diabolical blood-colored sword beams came into contact with the beams, they immediately burst like blood-colored fireworks.

Zhong Ziya was also sent flying by the force of the blow. His hands holding the sword were covered in blood, but the beam still shot towards Jiang Yan.

Just as the beam was about to shoot through Jiang Yan’s head, an invisible force suddenly pulled his body to the side, allowing him to barely dodge the attack.

Zhou Wen had yanked Jiang Yan with his Astral Suction Palm, saving his life in a timely fashion.

Despite the four of them engaging the Mutated Fairy in combat, he was covered in injuries. This was the first time Zhou Wen had risked his life so crazily. In the past, he had only been gaming. Although he shared the same feelings in-game, it was a game after all. Zhou Wen knew that he couldn’t die; therefore, the feeling now was completely different.

Under the true threat of death, Zhou Wen felt his entire being in a state of nervousness and oppression.

In such a state, a normal person’s body would become uneasy and cause their actions to change. Perhaps one wouldn’t even be able to perform at seventy to eighty percent of their original strength.

However, the more pressure Zhou Wen felt, the faster his body and mind were.

The ribbons sliced past his muscles, producing a sound of lacerating flesh and bones that left him trembling. The horror pressured him, but it made his body even more excited.

As he licked the blood from his mouth, he saw the Fairy’s hands hang down. Having just exerted her strength, she could only rely on the ribbons to protect her. Zhou Wen flew in the air like a bat, narrowly passing through the gaps between the ribbons. He swept over the Fairy and simultaneously struck the top of her head.

This palm was formless and silent, but when it struck the top of the Fairy’s head, it caused her to scream in pain. Subconsciously, it shot ten beams at Zhou Wen with her fingers.

Zhou Wen switched his Primordial Energy Art to Godfiend Era and using the Life Providence’s ability to levitate, he pushed the Dragon Gate Fairy Skill to its limits. Twisting his body, he dodged the terrifying beams.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 183 - Stat Requirements

Chapter 183 Stat Requirements

It wasn’t solely because of Zhou Wen’s speed and agility that he managed to dodge the beams. It had to do with the Mutated Fairy’s fingers drastically slowing down. The mark that Hui Haifeng’s strike left on her hand continued to do its magic, slowing down her hands with time.

Furthermore, Zhou Wen didn’t know if he was mistaken, but he felt that the Mutated Fairy’s strength had weakened significantly. The intensity of the beam had clearly decreased.

By the time the Mutated Fairy attacked Zhou Wen, she was in a panic. Hui Haifeng took the opportunity to leap up and strike her back, bombarding her with his two fists. This produced about four marks on her back.

The Mutated Fairy turned around in an attempt to kill him, but her body suddenly stopped in midair. Jiang Yan had already landed on the ground at some point in time. He held onto the long whip with both hands and forcefully pulled back the Mutated Fairy’s body, preventing her from continuing her flight.

Zhou Wen saw Jiang Yan’s body sparkling with purple light like a demonic spirit. The whip was also glowing with purple light, as though it was a blood-sucking demon that was constantly trembling and swallowing.

“Die!” Zhong Ziya repeatedly slashed with his sword, both hands gripped tightly on it. Streaks of blood-red sword

beams slashed at the Mutated Fairy that Jiang Yan had put to a halt. They actually split apart her robe, leaving behind streaks of blood.

Although the sword marks weren't deep, it was the first time Zhou Wen and company had truly injured the Mutated Fairy.

The Mutated Fairy was clearly a spent force. Her movements became slower and slower, as though she had a mountain suppressing her. Furthermore, her strength was weakening, and Jiang Yan was becoming stronger.

Bam!

Like a demon god, Jiang Yan pulled the whip in his hand, forcefully throwing the mutated Fairy's figure out and slamming her into the stone wall. This left a huge hole in the wall as the Mutated Fairy's mouth was covered in blood.

Zhong Ziya slashed down with his sword as well. The blood-red sword beam slashed at the head of the mutated Fairy, and the sword plunged into the skull.

A fierce glint flashed in the Mutated Fairy's eyes as she abruptly stood up and hugged Zhong Ziya. A terrifying power erupted from her body.

"No good… She's going to self-destruct…" Hui Haifeng shouted loudly.

Zhong Ziya struggled with all his might, but he was unable to break free. Despite Jiang Yan yanking his long whip, he could only pull the Mutated Fairy and Zhong Ziya over. He couldn't separate them.

Zhou Wen wasn't far from Zhong Ziya as he was right behind him. A thought suddenly came to his mind as he

charged at Zhong Ziya and struck him on the back.

Zhou Wen used all his strength to slam his Ashen Palm at Zhong Ziya’s back.

Bam!

Zhong Ziya’s body was fine, but the Mutated Fairy in front of him seemed to suffer a heavy blow to her chest. Blood spurted out of her mouth as her embracing of Zhong Ziya weakened significantly.

Zhong Ziya struggled with all his might, got out of her embrace, and kicked her hard.

Bam!

As she flew in the air, the Mutated Fairy’s body exploded. A terrifying black aura sent Zhou Wen, Zhong Ziya, Hui Haifeng, and Jiang Yan flying. Instantly, the entire cave trembled and the ground quaked. Dust rose up as gravel flew.

“Are all of you alright?” Hui Haifeng crawled out of the rubble, his body covered in blood and dust. He wore an ashen look as though he had just crawled out of a tomb.

“I’m fine.” Jiang Yan also stood up from his spot elsewhere. Apart from his body being a little dirty, he was fine.

“I’m not.” Zhong Ziya was slumped at the feet of a stone statue. His back was covered in bloody flesh, and his injuries were indeed serious.

Zhou Wen’s injuries weren’t light either, he was about as injured as Hui Haifeng.

“Not being dead is good,” Jiang Yan said with a smile after checking Zhong Ziya’s injuries.

Clearly, Zhong Ziya’s life was not in danger, but his injuries were more serious.

“Is that how a person speaks?” Zhong Ziya said weakly, “Don’t talk so much. Hurry up and look around and see if anything dropped from the Mutated Fairy. If nothing dropped, our injuries will have been for nothing.”

Jiang Yan’s condition was the best. He rummaged through the rubble and soon, they heard him say happily, “There’s something. It’s a Primordial Energy Skill Crystal. I wonder if it’s the Flying Immortal Skill.”

“As long as there’s something. It doesn’t matter what it is,” Zhong Ziya said.

Jiang Yan threw a crystal at Zhou Wen. “I don’t know if it’s the Flying Immortal Skill. Go back and give it a try. However, be careful. Taking in an Epic Primordial Energy Skill at the Legendary stage is extremely dangerous. If you aren’t confident, it’s best you consult Counselor.”

“Give me your accounts. I’ll transfer your shares to you later,” Zhou Wen said without standing on ceremony as he grabbed the Primordial Energy Skill Crystal.

“There’s no need for money. You will be part of my team when I wish to kill some dimensional creature in the future,” Hui Haifeng said.

“Can we talk about money later? Can you take me back to Teacher to treat my injuries first?” Zhong Ziya groaned.

Jiang Yan carried Zhong Ziya on his back while Zhou Wen and Hui Haifeng helped each other out of Lotus Flower Cave. Soon, they returned to the laboratory in Old Dragon Cave.

When Wang Mingyuan saw the four of them, Zhou Wen and company were like old, weak soldiers who had just been defeated. They were all covered in dirt and blood.

However, Wang Mingyuan didn't ask about their escapades. He only summoned his soul and used the power of his Life Soul to treat their wounds.

This was the first time Zhou Wen had seen Wang Mingyuan's Life Soul. He had been unconscious back when Wang Mingyuan treated his wounds.

Wang Mingyuan's Life Soul was a bottle with a thin neck. Although it wasn't gorgeous, it had some beauty. A stream of light flowed out of the bottle like water and when it touched a wound, Zhou Wen immediately felt a refreshing feeling as the pain of the wound was alleviated.

As the aqueous light flowed into the wound, the wounds healed at a discernible pace. Even his bones recovered rapidly.

After treating the quartet's injuries, Wang Mingyuan smiled and said to them, "It's rare that the four of you were injured together. Let's have a feast to celebrate tonight."

Zhou Wen recovered very quickly. Even without Wang Mingyuan's treatment, as long as he switched to the Small Perfection of Wisdom Sutra, his recuperation ability would be much better than the average person's.

Hence, while Zhong Ziya and Hui Haifeng were still lying in the bed, Zhou Wen and Jiang Yan joined Wang Mingyuan for

a celebratory feast.

While resting in the evening, Zhou Wen took out the Mutated Fairy’s crystal. It was about the size of a chicken egg. It was crystalline, and inside it was a Mutated Fairy’s shadow.

Using the phone’s camera function to check the crystal’s attributes, Zhou Wen couldn’t help but be dumbfounded.

‘Mutated Fairy Crystal: Epic stage. Merging requires a Speed of more than 21 points and a Buddha-elemental Primordial Energy Art.’

This was the first time Zhou Wen had seen a Primordial Energy Skill that had a stat requirement other than Primordial Energy points. Furthermore, there were requirements on the Primordial Energy Art. This was something he had never learned in school.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 184 - Doctor Darkness

Chapter 184 Doctor Darkness

Zhou Wen’s current Speed was only 18—quite a distance from 21 points, so the final three points were extremely difficult for him to raise. Apart from grinding monsters to have high-valued crystals drop, Zhou Wen didn’t have any other good methods.

I can only give it a try and see if I can use the mysterious phone to obtain the Skill Crystals in-game. Perhaps I can refine them and absorb them there. Zhou Wen hid under his blanket and used the mysterious phone’s camera function to try snapping a picture of the Mutated Fairy Crystal.

A system notification popped up on the phone: ‘Yet to reach the stat requirements for the skill crystal; thus, it cannot be refined and absorbed. Do you want to continue?’

Zhou Wen hurriedly chose no. Since he couldn’t refine and absorb it, nor was there any way to store items in an inventory in-game, the crystal might end up being erased if the blood-colored avatar died after he brought it in-game. He might as well leave it in the real world.

I can’t refine and absorb it in-game if I can’t meet the stat requirements? Zhou Wen felt a little depressed.

It was nearly impossible for a 21-valued Speed Crystal to drop from a Legendary creature. Unless Zhou Wen killed an Epic creature, it was very difficult to get his hands on one.

The experience of killing the Fairy today made Zhou Wen fully realize how terrifying an Epic creature was. If any of the four of them had made a mistake today, they might have perished there and then.

And the combat power of Fairy was considered lowly among the Epic creatures.

With Zhou Wen’s strength alone, it would probably be difficult for him to succeed even with the help of a Companion Beast.

As for the Buddha-elemental Primordial Energy Art requirement, it wasn’t difficult for Zhou Wen. All he needed to do was switch his Primordial Energy Art to the Small Perfection of Wisdom Sutra, and he was likely to satisfy the condition.

He took a look at his blood-colored avatar’s unchanged stats again. Only Ashen Palm had changed from the Mortal stage to the Legendary stage. Furthermore, it was still at Rank 10.

Zhou Wen didn’t find it strange that his Ashen Palm had advanced from the Mortal stage to the Legendary stage. He had already sensed it during the battle; otherwise, he wouldn’t have been able to deliver the palm strike that saved Zhong Ziya.

However, he never expected Ashen Palm to remain at Rank 10 after advancing to the Legendary stage.

After some thought, Zhou Wen realized how difficult it was to obtain a Speed Crystal of 21 points from a Legendary

creature. He might as well kill an Epic creature.

However, with Zhou Wen’s strength alone, it was impossible for him to kill an Epic creature in-game.

Today’s battle with Jiang Yan and company made Zhou Wen understand one thing. He was alone in-game, and that limited him. However, in the real world, there were many powerful humans like Jiang Yan, Zhong Ziya, and Hui Haifeng. As long as they had good teamwork, they could do things that he couldn’t do in-game.

Zhou Wen planned on killing an Epic creature in reality, but before that, he needed to find some powerful helpers.

People like Li Xuan, Wang Lu, and Feng Qiuyan were extremely powerful Legendaries. If he could obtain their help, they had a chance of killing low-level Epic creatureshigh-level Epic creatures were definitely impossible.

Of course, Zhou Wen wouldn’t risk his life, nor would he risk Li Xuan and company’s lives. Therefore, he began crazily challenging the instance dungeons.

The grinding this time was different from before. This time, Zhou Wen had especially sought out dungeons found in the college. Furthermore, he targeted dungeons with Epic creatures.

The most common destination was Dragon Gate Grotto. In some of the caves, there were Epic creatures that existed. Zhou Wen tried hunting them one by one.

This resulted in him naturally dying time and time again. When he encountered some powerful Epic creatures, the blood-colored avatar would be instantly killed.

If he encountered a weaker Epic creature, he was able to last a little longer, but that was all. There was no way he could kill those Epic creatures.

The most powerful thing about an Epic creature was that they possessed a Life Soul that had all sorts of powers. Those powers didn't have the limitations on Primordial Energy, so they could be constantly activated. A stronger Life Soul could instantly kill the blood-colored avatar and a group of his pets. Weaker Life Souls all had their own unique characteristics and possessed all sorts of magical powers.

Zhou Wen repeatedly tested in order to find an Epic creature that could possibly be killed by him. Then, he came up with a perfect plan, hoping to find a few capable helpers to kill an Epic creature without taking any risk.

Time passed as the blood-colored avatar constantly died. As he repeatedly probed things way beyond his level, he ended dying instantly most of the time. Having dripped too much blood, Zhou Wen felt that he was beginning to suffer from anemia again.

Yan Zhen's disappearance didn't seem to cause too much of a stir. Although the police came to the school to investigate, it was only part of their routine procedures. No one suspected that Yan Zhen had died on campus.

This made Zhou Wen heave a long sigh of relief. However, on second thought, he understood why no one suspected that Yan Zhen had died on campus.

This was because no one knew that he had come to school. Yan Zhen had come to Zhou Wen and wanted to dissect him. This was something clandestine to begin with, so he had definitely made preparations beforehand. He wouldn't let

anyone know that he had come to the school, nor would anyone know that he was here to find Zhou Wen.

Upon thinking of Yan Zhen, Zhou Wen glanced at the fruit on the Dead Man Tree. The fruit was already the size of a papaya, and its exterior was white and shiny. It looked like an egg no matter how he looked at it.

On the seventh day of the fruit's growth, it automatically fell off the tree. Zhou Wen got the blood-colored avatar to pick it up. Indeed, it was a Companion Egg.

Doctor Darkness: Epic

Life Providence: Golden Left Hand

Life Soul: Dr. Soul

Strength: 21

Speed: 37

Constitution: 26

Primordial Energy: 38

Talent Skill: Scalpel, Fight Poison With Poison, Light of Penetration

Companion Form: None

Upon seeing the information on the Companion Egg, Zhou Wen couldn't help but feel odd. The Doctor Darkness was clearly a replica of Yan Zhen.

Could it be that the power of the Dead Man Tree is to make a dead person a Companion Beast? Then, does Doctor Darkness have Yan Zhen's memory? Zhou Wen was

momentarily hesitant, unsure of how to handle the Companion Egg

Hatching an Epic Companion Egg required too much Primordial Energy. According to Zhou Wen’s previous experience, he was likely able to incubate an Epic Companion Egg using a bug in the game. However, there was a high chance that the Doctor Darkness would suffer a drop in level or be incomplete.

However, if he didn’t hatch it, Zhou Wen was afraid that it would disappear on his next refresh of the game.

Also, if the Doctor Darkness had Yan Zhen’s memories, would he rebel? This was something no one could guarantee.

After some thought, Zhou Wen chose to incubate Doctor Darkness. He gritted his teeth and infused his Primordial Energy into the Companion Egg.

At the moment the Companion Egg was activated, Zhou Wen felt his Primordial Energy surge like a flood that flowed out of a dam. In a blink of an eye, all his Primordial Energy was drained.

The blood-colored avatar exploded to its death in-game. Due to the lack of Primordial Energy, the Companion Egg drained the blood-colored avatar’s vitality.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 185 - Rejection

Chapter 185 Rejection

The blood-colored avatar exploded to death as the game screen turned black.

Zhou Wen dripped another drop of blood and was reborn. When he entered the game again, he saw a Doctor Darkness appear in his Companion Beast window.

He realized that Doctor Darkness had already fallen to the Legendary stage when he took a look at his stats.

Doctor Darkness: Legendary (Youngling)

Life Providence: Golden Left Hand

Speed: 18

Strength: 12

Constitution: 13

Primordial Energy: 18

Talent Skill: Scalpel, Fight Poison With

Companion Form: None

He was considered quite a good Companion Beast at the Legendary stage, but that was all. After he evolved into a

mature form, he might be able to return to the Epic stage. However, it required a large amount of time to feed him.

Zhou Wen glanced at Doctor Darkness's image in-game and thought he looked very similar to Yan Zhen, but he realized that Doctor Darkness wasn't Yan Zhen.

Doctor Darkness was wearing a white doctor's robe, but he wasn't a person, but a human-shaped puppet. He wasn't of real flesh and blood.

Zhou Wen heaved a sigh of relief. He really couldn't accept it if Doctor Darkness really had looked like Yan Zhen.

After testing the Doctor Darkness's skills in-game, he realized that he was actually a support-type pet. He was rather formidable when it came to tasks related to surgery, but his true combat power was not even comparable to the Three-Eyed Golden Warrior of the same level.

However, if he was used for surgery, Doctor Darkness was definitely a top-notch Companion Beast. If a doctor had him as a Companion Beast, it was very likely that he could become a famous doctor.

The Scalpel technique allowed precise incisions with an error as small as three decimal places.

Fight Poison With Poison was to use poison to stimulate one's body, allowing one's vitality to erupt, to tide through the most dangerous point in surgery. It could even suppress some viruses.

Light of Penetration could be used to see through a patient's body, far better than X-ray or MRI.

However, Zhou Wen didn’t know medicine. It was a waste giving him such an impressive medical Companion Beast. He didn’t know how to use it at all.

Don’t tell me I need to study medicine now? Zhou Wen was somewhat depressed, but on second thought, it wasn’t completely useless.

If he had to deal with some external injuries on the battlefield urgently, Doctor Darkness was still useful. When he returned to the Epic stage in the future, his Dr. Soul Life Soul would be of great help to him in battles.

If I can make the Doctor Darkness return to the Epic stage, it would be much easier for me to kill an Epic creature. However, I wonder how long it will take before I can do this. Zhou Wen kept a happy-go-lucky attitude as he went to Ant City to obtain a few Companion Eggs to feed Doctor Darkness.

Days passed and Ouyang Lan got Ah Sheng to pick him up once again. She said that she had something important to discuss with Zhou Wen.

“Little Wen, have you thought it through? Do you want to participate in the competition for the special physiques?” Ouyang Lan paused before saying, “The competition is about to begin. If you want to participate, you can head to the League’s Holy Land over the next two days.”

“Sis Lan, I don’t wish to go. Can you give the spot to someone else?” Zhou Wen didn’t wish to vie for a special physique. With the Lost Immortal Sutra, even if he didn’t have a special physique, he could still master the Primordial Energy Art of various styles.

“There’s only one chance to change every nomination. I had already used up this opportunity when I changed the nomination to you. There’s no way to change it now. If you don’t go, this nomination would be considered null and void. Little Jing wouldn’t be able to go either,” Ouyang Lan explained as though she had seen through Zhou Wen’s thoughts.

“Sis Lan, I’m really not interested in that nomination. You should think of some other solution if it’s possible.” Zhou Wen felt that going to the Holy Land to vie for those special physiques was a waste of time for him.

Ouyang Lan sighed and said, “Since you don’t wish to go, I won’t force you either. Let’s forget about this matter. It’s fine if the nomination is voided. Since it’s useless to us, we’ll just leave it voided.”

Although Zhou Wen felt somewhat embarrassed, the nomination wasn’t what he wanted in the first place. It wasn’t his fault for having it voided because of his rejection.

Ouyang Lan didn’t mention the matter again. She ordered a few dishes and the two chatted about family matters and school. After the meal, she got Ah Sheng to take Zhou Wen back.

Ah Sheng wasn’t a conversationalist. He didn’t say anything the entire journey until he got Zhou Wen to the entrance of the school. Just as Zhou Wen was about to alight, Ah Sheng suddenly said, “Why didn’t you accept that nomination? Having that nomination isn’t a bad thing for you. Many members of the League’s large families yearn for this spot.”

“I just want to live peacefully. I have no interest in special physiques,” Zhou Wen said.

Ah Sheng shook his head and said, “Young Master Wen, perhaps you still don’t know that the League isn’t as peaceful as it seems. In fact, many of the other dimensional zones in the League have had cases of break-outs. Powerful dimensional creatures have rushed out of the dimensional zones and entered the human cities, creating terrifying massacres. Many people have died.”

After a pause, Ah Sheng continued, “Perhaps in a few years, all the dimensional zones will vanish. When that happens, large numbers of dimensional creatures would rush into the human cities. If one doesn’t have the necessary strength, they might not even be family.”

“Is the situation very bad?” Zhou Wen knew that Ah Sheng wasn’t lying. In his dorm, there was a dimensional creature that had broken out and refused to leave. It ate like a lord every day.

“It’s worse than most people can imagine. Not long ago, a military base at Chess Mountain was wiped out, including an Epic-stage commander. Now, Chess Mountain is only temporarily suppressed, and the creatures inside can rush out at any time. When that happens, the dimensional creatures that come out might be even more powerful. Once the military is unable to stop those break-out creatures, the human world will immediately plunge into a disaster.”

Ah Sheng looked into Zhou Wen’s eyes through the rearview mirror and said, “It’s not for anyone. It’s only for your survival in this chaotic world. You should also make a trip to the Holy Land. The things that can be given to you there might allow you to survive in a world of chaos that isn’t too far away.”

“Thank you for telling me this. However, I really do not wish to have anything to do with the An family or take anything from them,” Zhou Wen spoke the heartfelt truth.

affinity that made Zhou Wen believe that he could say what he couldn’t tell others.

Ah Sheng fell silent. After a long while, he sighed and said, “Madam is right. Although your surname isn’t An and you don’t have any blood relations with Overseer An, your temperaments are too similar.”

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 186 - Zhou Wen’s Plans

Chapter 186 Zhou Wen’s Plans

When Zhou Wen returned to his dorm, his heart felt heavy.

The reality was worse than he imagined. Even an Epic military officer had died in battle outside a dimensional zone, with large numbers of break-out creatures rushing into the cities. Zhou Wen couldn’t imagine how many humans would survive when that happened.

Although he knew that danger wasn’t far away, there was little he could do now. The only thing he could do was to raise his strength as much as possible.

If that day really came, perhaps he could use his own strength to save the people he wanted to save.

He glanced at the antelope sleeping on the couch. This fellow did nothing but eat and sleep all day. Ever since it left Mount Laojun, it hadn’t done anything else.

If only the dimensional creatures in the dimensional zones are the same as you. It would be great if they could just be dealt with by giving them something to eat. Zhou Wen was just musing, knowing that it was impossible.

Even if dimensional creatures didn’t cause trouble for humans, the greedy nature of humans would still plunder their treasures.

Sometimes, as a human, Zhou Wen felt that humans didn’t deserve pity.

Zhou Wen controlled the blood-colored avatar and constantly launched suicidal attacks against various Epic creatures, hoping to find a pushover among them.

His efforts were not in vain. Through the experience gained through death, Zhou Wen saw a sliver of hope.

It was an Epic creature in Dragon Gate Grotto. However, it wasn't a Fairy, but a tiger in the Binyang Cave. It looked ordinary, so every time Zhou Wen saw it, he wrote it off as an ordinary tiger. It was at best a Mortal-stage creature.

However, when the tiger really began moving, Zhou Wen realized how ridiculously wrong he was. He didn't put up much of a fight before he was swallowed by the tiger.

Although he had suffered a terrible defeat the first time, Zhou Wen had no choice but to make attempts on the few weaker Epic creatures. Since he had suffered an even worse defeat by other Epic creatures, this was a safer option for now.

He gradually discovered some of the tiger's habitual weaknesses and after fighting the tiger several times, he was able to last longer.

After countless deaths and repeated experiments, Zhou Wen was certain that it wouldn't be difficult to kill the tiger if he had two or three powerful helpers.

He already had a detailed plan. As long as he followed the plan, it wouldn't be difficult to kill the tiger. The problem now was where to find a few powerful helpers.

Zhou Wen's three senior brothers were very strong, but they had already helped him once, and they hadn't received any

benefits from him. He had yet to return the favor he owed, so it wasn’t appropriate for him to seek their help again.

After some thought, Zhou Wen made a phone call to Li Xuan and told him that he wanted his help in killing an Epic creature.

“F*ck, Old Zhou, nice one. You are often silent, but once you make a sound, it’s shocking. You’ve actually decided to directly aim your sights at an Epic creature? Whatever, count me in.” Li Xuan agreed without any hesitation. This trust was not something average people had.

Zhou Wen didn’t say anything else as he got Li Xuan to meet him the next day. There was no point in saying certain things. It was better to let actions speak for themselves to not disappoint him.

After some thought, Zhou Wen made another phone call to Feng Qiuyan. Feng Qiuyan’s saber techniques were sufficiently powerful, comparable to Zhong Ziya’s sword techniques. He was also a powerful aide.

After explaining his thoughts on killing an Epic creature and telling Feng Qiuyan that he only wanted the Speed Crystals, and wouldn’t claim anything no matter what dropped, Feng Qiuyan didn’t hesitate either. Those other items could be split among themselves.

He directly said, “To be able to fight with Coach is a very good learning opportunity. I don’t need to split the spoils. Just let me participate in the battle.”

Zhou Wen felt like crying when he heard that. What a good classmate and such a kind child. If there were more people like Feng Qiuyan in this world, would there still be things like war?

According to Zhou Wen’s plan, it should be enough to kill the Epic-stage tiger with Li Xuan and Feng Qiuyan’s help.

However, taking in the old adages “expect the unexpected” and “man proposes god disposes,” Zhou Wen decided to buy some “insurance” for his first attempt at killing an Epic creature.

Hence, Zhou Wen made another call to Huang Ji and repeated what Feng Qiuyan had said to him. He also told Huang Ji that, other than the Speed Crystal, anything that dropped would be his.

Zhou Wen knew that Huang Ji was also in need of money. As long as Huang Ji believed him, he definitely wouldn’t reject the opportunity to earn money. After all, anything dropped by an Epic creature could sell at a decent price.

“If you had said so earlier, I would definitely have joined you. However, I’m already at the airport and am about to board the plane. I definitely won’t be able to join you,” Huang Ji said.

“Board the plane? Where are you going?” Zhou Wen asked in puzzlement.

“I have some matters to attend to at the League’s Holy Land. I’m afraid I won’t be able to return anytime soon. If you’re not in a hurry, wait about ten days for me,” said Huang Ji.

“Let’s talk when you come back.” Zhou Wen hung up the phone and thought for a moment before calling Wang Lu to ask if she was interested in hunting an Epic creature.

“Of course I’m interested. How can such an interesting thing happen without me?” Wang Lu said with a smile. It looked like she had recovered pretty well.

Zhou Wen thought to himself, If Wang Lu were to turn into a Companion Egg by the Dead Man Tree, I wonder what kind of form it would be.

After gathering a number of people, Zhou Wen called them over the next morning to give them a detailed explanation of his plans and things to take note of.

“Old Zhou, what kind of Epic creature do you want to kill? Fairies in Lotus Flower Cave or the Golden creatures deep in the Myriad Buddha Cave?” Li Xuan asked with a grin.

“Those Epic creatures are too powerful and too dangerous. I want to kill this Epic creature—an epic tiger in Binyang Cave,” Zhou Wen said.

Li Xuan’s expression turned odd when he heard that. “The tiger you mentioned can’t be the one with white fur, black stripes, and a strange cross pattern on its forehead, right?”

“That’s right.” Zhou Wen looked at Li Xuan in puzzlement. From Li Xuan’s tone, there seemed to be a problem.

Li Xuan said with a bitter smile, “That tiger is indeed one of the weakest Epics, but the items it drops aren’t bad. They are even very rare and useful. Therefore, the tigers in the Binyang Cave are protected animals. You have to obtain permission to kill it.”

“What rare items can such a weak tiger drop?” Zhou Wen found it unbelievable.

Li Xuan rolled his eyes at him and said, “Have you heard of the story of Buddha cutting his flesh to feed a tiger? It’s said that the tiger in the Binyang Cave is the descendant of that tiger. They aren’t strong, but their Life Providences are one

of a kind. They are of immense use and everyone wants them.”

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 187 - Baby Tiger of Luck

Chapter 187 Baby Tiger of Luck

“What Life Providence does that tiger have?” Zhou Wen asked.

“Its Life Providence is called the Baby Tiger of Luck. Think about it. A baby tiger that was just about to be eaten by his mother actually encountered Buddha and had Buddha sacrifice his body to feed his mother. Don’t you think it’s lucky?” Li Xuan said.

“Indeed, it’s lucky, very lucky.” Wang Lu nodded.

“Therefore, that baby tiger’s Life Providence is one that comes with an extremely rare luck attribute. If one can obtain a baby tiger Companion Beast and use it to kill dimensional creatures, one will not only have the chances of dimensional crystals and Companion Eggs drop, but also be boosted by several percentage points, the dimensional crystal’s value and the Companion Egg’s attributes will be better than usual. Do you think this item is worth anything?” Li Xuan said.

“It will be worth a lot. It’s so valuable. Even an excellent-grade Epic Companion Beast might not be worth as much as it,” said Wang Lu firmly.

“Therefore, there are too many people who want the baby tiger. Let’s not talk about us, even those bigwigs will want this baby tiger with them. It’s also because of this that the tiger in Binyang Cave has become an endangered dimensional creature. There have been a few clashes in

Binyang Cave in the past. Eventually, the military was deployed to resolve the matter. Later on, they took over the area. You can enter to kill the tiger, but you have to obtain permission from the military. My family has some say in Luoyang, but it's impossible to get in through the back door. Old Zhou, I think you need to change your plan," Li Xuan said.

Zhou Wen never expected the tiger he had chosen would be so famous. He couldn't help but frown as he asked, "Then what should we do to obtain the right to kill the tiger?".

Although Zhou Wen was very interested in a tiger with a lucky Life Providence, it wasn't his main goal. All he needed to do was obtain the Speed Crystal.

If he had to formulate a new plan, firstly, it wasn't easy finding weak Epic creatures and secondly, Zhou Wen and company might not be able to beat them.

"All the bigwigs in Luoyang City grit their teeth in anger when this topic is raised. In the beginning, everyone wanted to get connections to obtain the right to kill the tiger, but think about it. There are so many bigwigs in Luoyang City, so it's not good for the military to permit and reject people. It might be because they were forced to do so, but I don't know who came up with the idea. They set up a huge wheel of fortune. They claimed that whether you can get the lucky baby tiger will be decided by luck. Spinning the wheel each time costs 10,000. If you hit it, you are permitted to enter for 24 hours," Li Xuan said knowingly.

"10,000 a spin isn't considered expensive. Those bigwigs have plenty of money. Just spend some money. What's there to be angry about?" Wang Lu asked in puzzlement.

“If only it were that simple. The wheel of fortune the military set up is electronically controlled. Just pressing a button will automatically spin it. Furthermore, with the military’s dedicated personnel watching over it, there’s no way to interfere with it. The chances of success are what you call low. There was once a bigwig who led his men to spin the wheel of fortune. After a few hundred turns, they failed to hit it at all. In the beginning, the military earned quite a bit of money. It was practically a scam, but there was nothing that could be done about it. Blame it on the bigwigs wanting the baby tiger. It ranges from one to two hundred spins or a few hundred spins to hit it. But even if you hit it, the tiger might not drop a Companion Egg, right?” Li Xuan droned on.

“Isn’t this a scam?” Zhou Wen frowned. He had completely given up on killing the tiger. With so much money, why was he going through all the trouble? He could just buy Speed Crystals?

“It is a scam, but what can you do if you want the baby tiger? However, there are plenty of rich people and bigwigs who don’t care about money to spin that thing. I also wanted to try it in the past, but thinking about how I can’t spin too many times with my allowance, I gave up on this plan,” Li Xuan said as he spread out his hands.

“In that case, it looks like I can only give up on this plan. I’ll do more research when I get back. I’ll find another Epic creature as a target,” Zhou Wen said.

“There’s no need to give up. Follow me. I have a way to enter the Binyang Cave,” said Wang Lu with certainty.

“What solutions do you have?” Li Xuan asked Wang Lu in disbelief.

Although Wang Lu had a powerful background, she wasn’t a Luoyang native. Li Xuan refused to believe that she had more say than the Li family that could only enter through the back door.

“Just follow me. You will know when the time comes.” Wang Lu looked confident.

Zhou Wen, Li Xuan, and Feng Qiuyan had no choice but to follow Wang Lu to the Binyang Cave. Zhou Wen didn’t explain his plan and planned on seeing if Wang Lu could obtain permission to enter the Binyang Cave to kill the tiger. If she couldn’t obtain it, there was no point in explaining it.

Soon, the four of them arrived outside the Binyang Cave. It was not completely sealed off. Only the cave where the baby tiger appeared had the military managing it.

Not long after Li Xuan had brought Zhou Wen and company into the Binyang Cave, they saw a soldier guarding a cave entrance. Beside the cave’s entrance was a wheel of fortune.

The white wheel of fortune was very eye-catching, but there was a thin red line that looked like a strand of hair. The needle had to hit the red line precisely before the system could automatically determine a jackpot.

Ignoring the fact that it was an electronic wheel of fortune, even if it was manually spun, it would not be easy to hit it.

There was only a red button on the entire wheel. It had pressure sensors that allowed for longer and faster spinning by pressing the button forcefully and a slower and short spin with a gentle press. The only thing that could be controlled was this button.

Zhou Wen wanted to use Truth Listener’s hearing to hear the internal structure of the wheel, but he couldn’t hear anything. He didn’t know what device was installed in it.

“How long would it take to kill that tiger?” Wang Lu asked Zhou Wen.

“If it’s only to kill, it should be fast. If nothing goes wrong, it’s at most half an hour.” Zhou Wen thought for a moment. He could have the tiger repeatedly appear in-game, but he didn’t know how long it would take for these tigers to burrow through a spatial rift.

Li Xuan said, “I heard that a tiger will appear every two to three days. Furthermore, there is usually only one tiger in the cave at a time. There won’t be multiple tigers appearing together. We have no idea if a tiger has been killed.”

“Alright, I got it.” As Wang Lu spoke, she walked towards the wheel of fortune and said to the guard, “I’m going to spin three times. How do I pay?”

“Card, QR code, or bank transfer.” The soldier smiled.

“Wang Lu, don’t tell me your method is to throw money at it? Then why don’t you just give the money to Zhou Wen so that he can buy a Speed Crystal?” Li Xuan said with widened eyes.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 188 - The Spinning Wheel

Chapter 188 The Spinning Wheel

“Just watch.” As Wang Lu said that, she scanned the QR code to make payment and walked to the wheel of fortune. After being checked by the military, she pressed a red button.

The wheel started spinning, stopping only after a while.

Tick! Tick! Tick! Tick!

When the wheel stopped moving, Zhou Wen, Li Xuan, and Feng Qiuyan’s eyes widened as they looked incredulously at the wheel of fortune.

He saw that the needle had stopped at the red line that was as thin as a hair strand. The light on the wheel of fortune lit up, accompanied by a jackpot sound.

“D*mn, what kind of dog sh*t luck did you get? You actually hit it in one shot!” Li Xuan’s eyes widened.

An officer walked over but did not congratulate Wang Lu for winning the prize. Instead, he carefully checked the wheel of fortune and tried spinning it a few more times. After confirming that everything was normal, he said to Wang Lu, “Miss, you are really lucky. Congratulations on obtaining twenty-four hours. You may enter now.”

“Hold on, I still have two more chances,” Wang Lu said as she pressed her palm on the red button again, making the wheel spin again.

When the wheel stopped, Li Xuan, Zhou Xuan, and Feng Qiuyan widened their mouths as they looked at Wang Lu and the wheel as though they were watching an alien.

All that could be seen was flashing lights and music fanfare playing. Wang Lu had hit the jackpot again.

The officer’s expression changed and he quickly checked the machine again. In the end, everything was still normal. He tried many times but failed to get it. Clearly, there was no problem with the wheel of fortune.

“Miss, congratulations on obtaining another 24 hours. There’s still one more chance. Are you still spinning?” The officer stared at Wang Lu and asked. Clearly, he suspected that there was something wrong with Wang Lu.

“Why not? I did spend the money,” Wang Lu said as she pressed her palm onto the red button.

This time, the officer stared intently at Wang Lu the entire time. He wanted to know if she had used any powers to interfere with the wheel of fortune. He was in charge of this area and had special abilities. If powers affected the wheel, it would be impossible for him not to notice.

However, despite staring at Wang Lu from beginning to end, he realized that she hadn’t used any powers to cheat, but when the needle stopped, the wheel of fortune’s light lit up again.

A cold sweat broke out on the officer’s forehead. He didn’t believe that a Legendary student could cheat in front of him.

However, surely it was impossible for her to hit the jackpot three times in a row. It was virtually impossible. The wheel's program didn't allow for such a high probability of hitting the jackpot.

"72 hours. That should be enough, right?" Wang Lu returned to Zhou Wen and company.

"Enough… Enough…" Li Xuan and company subconsciously nodded in response.

The officer and soldiers looked at her as though she was a monster as the four entered the cave together.

"Wang Lu, how did you do it? I'm willing to pay to buy your method." When they arrived at an uninhabited spot, Li Xuan hurriedly asked Wang Lu. He believed that Wang Lu had definitely cheated, but they just couldn't tell.

Wang Lu smiled and said, "There's no method. I just pressed the button a few times and hit the jackpot."

"Tch, forget it if you don't want to say." Li Xuan naturally refused to believe it.

Seeing that he didn't believe her, Wang Lu added, "I don't have anything that stands out, but my luck is a little better than the average person's. I heard from my dad that before I learned how to walk, he took me out for a stroll. I climbed out of the pram myself and picked up a piece of paper on the grass. Who knew that it was actually a lottery ticket. It even won the first prize that day. It was only seven or eight million. I can't remember. When I was in kindergarten, I bought a second-hand hair clip for three bucks, but to my surprise, there was a high-valued crystal embedded in it. When I was in middle school…"

“Are you kidding me?” Li Xuan refused to believe that such a lucky person existed in this world. After all, he had never won the lottery before, much less picked a winning ticket from the ground. What Wang Lu said was basically spinning tales.

“Do you have any coins on you?” Wang Lu said with a smile.

“Yes, you want to do a coin flip?” Li Xuan said as he took out a coin.

“I’ll buy ten heads. Flip it,” said Wang Lu.

“Tch, I really don’t believe it.” Li Xuan threw his coin into the air, but when it landed, it was really heads.

After ten consecutive flips, Li Xuan looked at Wang Lu as though he had seen a ghost.

“Sister Lu, can I call you sister? You are the humanoid version of the lucky baby tiger. Are you free tomorrow? The two of us can make a trip to the rich…” When Li Xuan jolted to his senses, he nearly pounced forward to hug Wang Lu’s thigh.

“I’m not free.” Wang Lu mercilessly rejected Li Xuan.

“Alright, stop fooling around. I’ll discuss the detailed plan first. In a while, you must listen to my instructions and not make any mistakes. Although that tiger isn’t a very strong Epic creature, it’s still at the Epic stage. Any tiny mistake could kill us.” Zhou Wen repeatedly exhorted them not to be careless.

The tiger was just relatively weak compared to an Epic stage powerhouse. When compared to Legendaries like them, it was undoubtedly a super big boss to them.

“Don’t worry. We aren’t fools. We know that it’s very dangerous. But Old Zhou, you haven’t killed a tiger before. Where did this strategy come from?” Li Xuan asked.

“I watched videos on the Internet,” Zhou Wen said.

“Damn, can you be any more reliable? Those videos are experts at the Epic stage fighting. We are far inferior to them,” Li Xuan said.

“If you don’t make a mistake, it will be very reliable.” Zhou Wen was very certain that his plan wasn’t problematic. He had already tried it countless times, but he was lacking in strength, so he couldn’t put his plan into action.

He explained the detailed plan to the three of them, especially their positioning and cooperation. Zhou Wen had them practice it several times and only after seeing that they were familiar with the positioning did he confirm that there was no problem. He then led them deep into the cave.

“Zhou Wen, can you change this plan? Let Wang Lu deliver the final blow to the tiger?” Li Xuan asked Zhou Wen.

“Sure,” Zhou Wen agreed readily.

Based on Wang Lu’s nearly sick luck, killing the tiger would definitely result in something dropping.

Tigers were so rare. If it didn’t drop anything, they would have to wait a few more days before they could try their luck again.

However, to their surprise, Wang Lu shook her head and said, “I don’t like killing. It’s best you do it yourselves.”

After passing through a few caves, they suddenly saw a tiger covered in white fur and black stripes lying on a boulder in front of them. The tiger also noticed Zhou Wen and company. With a roar, it pounced down from the rock and attacked them.

“Xuan, left; Feng, right; Lu, back.” In order to reduce the troubles while giving commands, Zhou Wen only said one word in their names.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 189 - You Owe Me

Chapter 189 You Owe Me

“Is this really an Epic creature?” Twenty minutes later, Li Xuan looked in disbelief at the tiger lying in a pool of blood. He found it unbelievable that it was an Epic creature.

In just twenty minutes, they killed the tiger without any injuries. It was so simple that it was unbelievable.

“Is there another tiger beside it?” Zhou Wen asked.

“I know it’s weak, but I never expected it to be so weak. It was like one of the weakest Epic creatures,” Li Xuan said.

However, Feng Qiuyan said in a serious tone, “No, it’s not that the tiger is weak, it’s that Coach’s plan is so targeted. The tiger didn’t have the ability to utilize its potential and was suppressed by us. If it wasn’t for Coach’s plan, it would be questionable if we could have killed it.”

“Old Feng, you really don’t have any sense of humor.” Li Xuan curled his lips and said, “Forget it. Old Feng, go take a look and see if there’s anything good in the tiger’s body. It’s best if it can release Speed Crystals, lest we accompany Zhou Wen again next time.”

Feng Qiuyan didn’t say a word. He walked straight to the tiger’s corpse and dissected it. Soon, he dug out a crystalline white Companion Egg.

“F*ck, Lucky Baby Tiger!” Li Xuan widened his eyes. Their luck was just too good. They had killed a tiger and ended up having a Companion Egg drop. It was unknown how those bigwigs who had killed countless tigers without having a Companion Egg drop would feel.

“How do we split the Companion Egg?” asked Wang Lu.

“I’ve said it before. All I want are Speed Crystals. Whatever else dropped will be yours.” Zhou Wen was the first to excuse himself. He had already said it before coming, so he naturally wouldn’t go back on his word just because of a Companion Egg.

Although the tiger was precious, and it was difficult for others to obtain it, Zhou Wen could kill it in-game. It wouldn’t be difficult to obtain it in the future.

“I came just to help Zhou Wen. I also said that I wouldn’t take anything,” Li Xuan said.

“I don’t want it.” Feng Qiuyan was even more straightforward.

“I really want it, but it’s too valuable. It’s not appropriate for me to take it myself. Let’s do it this way. I’ll accept the Companion Egg. Your share will be converted into money or something,” said Wang Lu.

“Are we people who lack money? Rather than money, why don’t you help us enter a few more times in the future? Firstly, we can help Zhou Wen get the Speed Crystals he wants. Secondly, we can also try to see if we can get a few more tigers to drop. When the time comes, we can each bring one out to enjoy the breeze,” Li Xuan said.

“No problem. I’ll be there as you wish.” Wang Lu also knew that it was indeed difficult to calculate something like a lucky tiger using money. To take it away, she had to owe them favors.

There would only be a second tiger in three days. The four of them had no choice but to head back now and come back three days later.

Zhou Wen felt a little depressed. He had read from a thread that the tiger easily dropped Speed Crystals. Maybe Wang Lu’s luck was so good that it affected the tiger’s drop-rate, resulting in a Companion Egg being dropped.

It’s still three days before we can kill the tiger. It’s too long. I’d better do more research and see if there are any other Epic creatures that can be killed. Just as Zhou Wen was about to begin gaming, he suddenly heard a knock on the door.

When he opened the door, he saw that it was actually An Jing.

“Is there a reason you are looking for me?” Zhou Wen asked curiously.

“Can we talk inside?” An Jing appeared rather calm this time. Her expression did not change at all.

“Sure.” Zhou Wen let An Jing in and poured her a cup of tea.

An Jing didn’t touch the teacup as she looked at Zhou Wen and asked, “Why did you refuse to participate in the competition for special physiques?”

“Isn’t that what you wanted?” Zhou Wen asked casually.

An Jing looked at Zhou Wen and continued, “Is that why you refused to participate in the competition?”

“It’s part of the reason. Since this is your spot, I’m not interested or have any desires in having it,” Zhou Wen said.

“You should know that there’s no way to change the nomination. I can’t go even if you don’t,” said An Jing.

“I know, but your things are yours. I can’t take your things away just because you don’t need them,” Zhou Wen said.

“I understand.” An Jing nodded slightly as she pondered for a moment before looking up at Zhou Wen. “Do you still remember that you agreed to owe me a condition when I brought you into the military camp?”

“Of course I do. You can raise conditions at any time, but it has to be within my abilities, I won’t do anything that harms others.” Zhou Wen naturally wouldn’t forget the favor he owed.

“It’s fine as long as you recognize the debt. Then prepare yourselves. Ah Sheng will take you to the Holy Land tomorrow,” said An Jing.

“What do you mean?” Zhou Wen was taken aback.

“My condition is for you to represent me in the competition for special physiques. Is that clear enough? Do you understand?” she said indifferently.

“Why do you want me to go? Haven’t you always wanted to prevent me from getting that spot?” Zhou Wen frowned as he looked at An Jing, unsure of her thoughts.

Previously, An Jing had tried her best to stop him. She had even transferred to Guide High School to fight him, but now she was the one forcing him to go.

“On Uncle Feng’s account, it’s not appropriate for me to personally teach you a lesson. However, there are many geniuses in the Holy Land. It would be appropriate to get them to teach you a lesson and help me vent my anger. It will also let my mother and grandfather know that the person they have high hopes for is useless. Only I can help the An family obtain a special physique.” With that said, An Jing turned to leave Zhou Wen’s dorm. When she reached his door, she stopped and said without turning her head, “Remember, Ah Sheng will pick you up at ten tomorrow. You owe me this.”

Zhou Wen was momentarily at a loss for words as he watched An Jing leave in a daze.

Should I go or not? Zhou Wen was somewhat hesitant.

He didn’t want to have anything to do with the An siblings, so he would rather have An Jing’s nomination be voided than go.

However, for some reason, An Jing had used the condition in exchange, forcing him to go to the Holy Land. Zhou Wen didn’t know why An Jing would do that, so he was somewhat hesitant.

After some thought, Zhou Wen took out his ordinary phone and called Ouyang Lan.

“Little Wen, what’s the matter?” Ouyang Lan remained as cordial as ever. Even though Zhou Wen had rejected her the last time, her attitude towards Zhou Wen didn’t change.

“Sis Lan, can’t we switch it to having An Jing head to the Holy Land?” Zhou Wen asked.

“It really can’t be done. If it were any other family, it might still be possible. However, the League has always been wary of the An family. They can’t wait to wipe away the An family’s nomination, so how could they give the An family another chance?” Ouyang Lan paused for a moment before continuing, “You don’t need to feel burdened. If you don’t want to go, so be it. Speaking of which, I was a little selfish. As it’s too dangerous there, I wasn’t willing to let my daughter take the risk. Instead, I pushed you to the forefront. It was my bad.”

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 190 - Crystal Purchase

Chapter 190 Crystal Purchase

“Sis Lan, can you give me the information about the Holy Land?” Zhou Wen thought for a moment. Since he didn’t wish to owe the An family any favors, he was prepared to make a trip to the Holy Land regardless of An Jing’s motives as payment.

“You really don’t have to force yourself. It’s fine if you don’t go,” Ouyang Lan said.

“I wish to take a look,” Zhou Wen said.

“Alright then. I’ll send you the information on the Holy Land.” Ouyang Lan paused before continuing, “Look through the information first. If you aren’t confident, don’t go. If anything happens to you, I won’t be able to answer Lingfeng.”

“Alright, Sis Lan, send me the information first,” Zhou Wen said vaguely.

Ouyang Lan sent the information of the Holy Land to Zhou Wen. Only after seeing it did he realize that the Holy Land was actually a large dimensional zone.

Unlike ordinary dimensional zones, there were extremely powerful creatures in it. These creatures were actually willing to give human special bloodlines to change their physiques.

However, powerful creatures would not casually bestow human bloodlines. They had to pass their tests to obtain their bloodlines.

Currently, the known bloodlines were those of the six heroes. Previously, John’s Holy Emperor Body was one of them. However, the bloodline John had inherited naturally couldn’t be compared to the first generation’s Holy Emperor Body.

Zhou Wen had seen the Holy Emperor Body before. The other five types of physiques were all unique. The most detailed description was a body known as the Sun God Body. It was an extremely masculine type that needed one to cultivate an extreme Yang-elemental Primordial Energy Art to pass the test.

Without a doubt, the Sun Strafe Art was prepared for the Sun God Body, but unfortunately, Zhou Wen didn’t cultivate the Sun Strafe Art. It was hard to tell if he could obtain the Sun God Body when the time came.

“Sis Lan, I’ve already thought about it. I want to go to the Holy Land.” Zhou Wen felt that there was no harm in making a trip there. He could return the favor he owed An Jing and also attempt to download the Holy Land into his phone.

If possible, he might be able to use the Lost Immortal Sutra to obtain many special physiques in the Holy Land.

“I thought about it carefully and felt that it was best if you don’t go,” Ouyang Lan suddenly said.

“Why?” Zhou Wen asked in puzzlement.

Ouyang Lan said with a wry smile, “Back when Tianzuo was young, he went once. However, no one received any special physiques during the trip.”

“Why?” Zhou Wen was even more puzzled.

“Ahem. When he went there, there was some unhappiness between him and the other youths who went. It devolved into an armed melee. That’s why the other contestants from other families were rather unfriendly to our An family. If you represent the An family, they will target you. It will be very troublesome when the time comes, so it’s best you don’t go,” Ouyang Lan said.

“Those that can enter the Holy Land are at most at the Legendary stage, right?” Zhou Wen asked after some thought.

“Yes, the Holy Land has restrictions. One cannot enter if they surpass the Legendary stage,” Ouyang Lan said.

“I’ll go,” Zhou Wen said through gritted teeth. Perhaps it was as An Jing had said. There would be many elites waiting to teach him a lesson, but since he had agreed to return the favor, there was no reason for him to shrink back now.

Ouyang Lan added some things to take note of and got Zhou Wen to be careful. Having a chance to obtain a special physique was the best, but it didn’t matter if he didn’t get it. Safety was the priority.

Why are the mother’s and daughter’s temperament so different? If it wasn’t for the fact that An Jing had a unique appearance like Ouyang Lan, Zhou Wen really would suspect that An Jing wasn’t Ouyang Lan’s biological daughter.

Although Zhou Wen had decided on heading to the Holy Land, he had to raise his speed to 21 points first. He could head there after refining the Mutated Fairy Primordial Energy Skill Crystal.

It’s definitely too late to kill the tiger now. Ignoring the fact that there aren’t any tigers in Binyang Cave, even if there are, killing it might not necessarily result in a Speed Crystal. After some thought, Zhou Wen realized that there was only one path he could take. He had to buy a 21-valued Speed Crystal from a crystal shop.

Epic grade crystals weren’t cheap. Fortunately, a 21-valued Speed Crystal was considered one of the lowest grade crystals at the Epic stage, so the price wasn’t too ridiculous.

However, even so, the price wasn’t something an ordinary person could accept. If it wasn’t for the urgency of the matter, Zhou Wen wouldn’t have chosen to spend money to buy it. After all, he lacked money.

Zhou Wen requested Ah Sheng’s help to settle the administrative procedures for his suspension at school. Since he was going to the Holy Land tomorrow, he definitely wouldn’t be able to return in half a month. A day or two didn’t matter.

He got Ah Sheng to drive him to the Xiyuan Crystal Shop. This time, there were many customers there, unlike the last time, when it was only Zhou Wen and Ouyang Lan.

When he passed by the code lockers, Zhou Wen took another look and couldn’t help but recall the numbers on the name card.

Unfortunately, Zhou Wen didn’t know what those numbers meant and wasn’t sure if it was the passcode for a locker.

“Young Master Wen, what kind of stat crystal do you want to buy?” Ah Sheng asked when he saw Zhou Wen walk to the crystal cabinet.

“I want to buy an Epic Speed Crystal. Just 21 points would do,” Zhou Wen said.

“Young Master Wen, you haven’t advanced to the Epic stage yet. It’s too dangerous to absorb an Epic stage crystal right now. If you need higher valued Legendary crystals, I can prepare them for you,” Ah Sheng said.

“There’s no need.” Zhou Wen shook his head in rejection. The crystals Ah Sheng had brought were naturally given to him by the An family.

“Ah Sheng, what brings you here today?” Zhou Wen was looking at the crystal when he suddenly heard an elder’s voice. He turned his head and saw that the person speaking was an old man with a sickly look.

“Old Master Qin, I’m here to accompany Young Master Wen to buy crystals,” Ah Wen replied respectfully.

Only then did Zhou Wen realize that the sickly old man in front of him was likely the owner of Xiyuan Crystal Shop, Qin Xiyuan.

Qin Xiyuan appeared somewhat surprised as he looked at Zhou Wen and said, “Lad, you’re Zhou Wen?”

“Old Master Qin, you know me?” Zhou Wen was somewhat surprised.

Qin Xiyuan said with a smile, “Of course I know. There’s probably no one in Luoyang City who doesn’t know about Little Lan’s marriage with your father.”

With that said, Qin Xiyuan pulled Zhou Wen’s hand and walked him deeper into the store. As he walked, he said,

“The things outside are just to fool ordinary people. You are one of Little Lan’s. Come to my treasury and take a look.”

“Old Master, I just want to buy an Epic Speed Crystal. Just an ordinary one would do,” Zhou Wen said.

“It doesn’t matter if you are buying. Take a look first,” Qin Xiyuan said with a chuckle as he pulled Zhou Wen into the elevator.

Qin Xiyuan led him straight to the fourth floor. After exiting the elevator, he said to Ah Sheng, “Ah Sheng, stay here and watch. Don’t let anyone disturb us.”

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 191 - Qin Xiyuan

Chapter 191 Qin Xiyuan

“This Companion Beast’s name is the Skygod Crane. It was sent here by an Epic expert, Lu Jiuyun. This Skygod Crane’s speed is extremely fast. Furthermore, its Life Providence and Life Soul are pretty good…” Qin Xiyuan held Zhou Wen’s hand as he warmly introduced the Companion Beasts in basement four.

Zhou Wen felt odd. He was clearly here to buy a Speed Crystal, so why did Qin Xiyuan introduce these Companion Beasts to him?

Zhou Wen had tried to emphasize the purpose of his visit several times, but he couldn’t find a chance to interject.

In fact, when Ouyang Lan brought Zhou Wen here, she had already told him everything. However, with Qin Xiyuan’s enthusiasm, Zhou Wen could only patiently listen.

Without realizing it, the two came to the room with the chained silver-haired Companion Beast. After entering the room, Qin Xiyuan suddenly said to Zhou Wen, “Zhou Wen, do you know that you are in danger?”

“Old Master Qin, what do you mean?” Zhou Wen looked at Qin Xiyuan in confusion.

Qin Xiyuan looked outside and saw that Ah Sheng was still guarding the fourth level entrance. He whispered to Zhou Wen, “Everyone in Luoyang City knows that Little Lan married another man, but they don’t know much about that

man. At most, they know his surname is Zhou, much less know that he has a son named Zhou Wen.”

“Then how did you know about me?” Zhou Wen asked Qin Xiyuan.

“It was Ouyang who told me. He said that he thinks highly of you and you are outstanding. If possible, he hopes that you can take over his job in the future,” said Qin Xiyuan.

“What job?” Zhou Wen looked at Qin Xiyuan in confusion.

Qin Xiyuan smiled bitterly and said, “Ouyang is still as cautious as ever. He thought highly of you but didn’t tell you anything?”

“The former principal has indeed praised me for my talent, but that was just a casual remark. Don’t treat it seriously.” Zhou Wen paused and looked at Qin Xiyuan. “Old Master Qin, doesn’t the former principal study history? I’m not familiar with this area and am not very interested in it. You must have heard wrongly that the former principal asked me to take over his job, right?”

“It can’t be wrong. Ouyang gave you the passcode, right? Did you see the metal slab over there? Enter the code. The items inside were all left by Ouyang. They should be of some help to you,” Qin Xiyuan said as he pointed behind the silver-haired Companion Beast.

What he was referring to was the metal slab with the ship’s anchor emblem engraved on it. The last time Zhou Wen came, he had seen the keypad on it. He guessed that it might be a password lock, but he never expected it to be true.

Despite having those thoughts, Zhou Wen's expression remained stoic as he feigned surprise. "Old Master Qin, what password are you talking about?"

"Didn't Ouyang give you the passcode? That's bad. It's all the things he left for you. You can't open without the passcode, so you can only wait for him to return," Qin Xiyuan said as he stared at Zhou Wen.

"The former principal left something for me? He even wants me to take over his job. Why haven't I heard him mention it before? I'll have to ask him when he returns," Zhou Wen said.

"Did Ouyang really not tell you anything?" Qin Xiyuan asked in surprise.

"Back when the former principal was still in Guide High School, he often chatted with me, but he didn't leave anything for me. Also, what was the danger that you mentioned?" Zhou Wen asked Qin Xiyuan.

"The things Ouyang left for you are very important. If others know that you have the items, it will definitely be disadvantageous to you. So you must hide them well and not let anyone see them." Qin Xiyuan said sternly.

"What are the things?" The puzzlement on Zhou Wen's face wasn't faked. He really didn't know what the former principal had left him.

"Since you don't know anything, that can be considered a good thing. Forget it. Since Ouyang didn't tell you the details, let's wait until he comes back." Qin Xiyuan saw that Zhou Wen didn't seem to be faking it, so he didn't say anything else and left the room with the silver-haired Companion Beast.

When Qin Xiyuan closed the door, Zhou Wen glanced at the silver-haired Companion Beast. Just like the last time he came, the Companion Beast was still sitting there with his head lowered. His long silver hair covered his face, masking his appearance.

However, Zhou Wen had a nagging feeling that a pair of eyes were staring at him behind the waterfall-like silver hair. Furthermore, they were smiling at him.

After leaving basement four, Qin Xiyuan got someone to give him the Speed Crystal which Zhou Wen needed. He gave him a very high discount, and eventually, Zhou Wen paid 138,000 for the 21-valued Speed Crystal.

On the way back, Zhou Wen's mind wasn't on the Speed Crystal.

Is the number on the name card really from the former principal? Is that string of numbers really used to open the metal slab? Zhou Wen was extremely puzzled as he felt that something was amiss.

Therefore, when Qin Xiyuan said those words, Zhou Wen only pretended not to understand anything. In fact, he really didn't quite understand.

Sir, what's going on? Zhou Wen was filled with doubt.

After Zhou Wen left his store, Qin Xiyuan sat on a chair in his office. He was using the mouse to click on the video and repeatedly replayed the entire conversation he had with Zhou Wen.

After watching for a while, Qin Xiyuan muttered to himself, It looks like I'm overthinking things. This kid really doesn't know. Who did that old fool Ouyang pass the passcode to?

He didn’t even tell his own daughter. Could that old fool have wanted that thing to die together with him?

After returning to his dorm, Zhou Wen took out the 21-valued Speed Crystal and attempted to snap a picture to put it inside the game.

It was very dangerous to directly absorb stat crystals that exceeded one’s level. Although Zhou Wen’s body was powerful, he wasn’t willing to take the risk.

Furthermore, Zhou Wen was somewhat worried. A Legendary stage definitely had its limits, but he didn’t know what the limit was. A person’s limit was 18. His was clearly higher than the average person’s, but he had no confidence in reaching 21 points.

The Speed Crystal successfully entered the game, the moment the blood-colored avatar touched it, it immediately transformed into a stream of light that fused into the blood-colored avatar’s body. It made Zhou Wen feel as though a force had fused into his muscles, strengthening them.

The blood-colored avatar’s speed quickly increased by one point and became 19. Soon, it increased by another point and became 20.

However, when the Speed Crystal was completely absorbed by the blood-colored avatar, his Speed stat stopped increasing.

Zhou Wen’s heart skipped a beat. He knew what he was most worried about had happened. His Legendary stats hit the limit at 20 points, so he was unable to increase his Speed to 21 points. Unless he advanced to the Epic stage, he wouldn’t be able to learn the Dragon Gate Flying Immortal Skill.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 192 - Hope of Breaking Through

Chapter 192 Hope of Breaking Through

At the Mortal stage, the Lost Immortal Sutra simulated four types of Primordial Energy Arts to boost my stats to 11 points. But now, those Primordial Energy Arts have already reached the Legendary stage, but it hasn't increased my stats. How do I have my stats break through to 21 points? Zhou Wen frowned in thought.

"Zhou Wen, I heard you are representing the An family and will be heading to the Holy Land?" Li Xuan ran over and sized up Zhou Wen.

"Yes, I just decided to go yesterday. How did you know?" Zhou Wen asked.

"It's almost time to enter the Holy Land, so the League has already released the list with your name on it. The An family sure treats you well. They actually gave you this spot." Li Xuan was very surprised. He never expected the An family to give the spot to Zhou Wen.

If I didn't have to go, I really wouldn't have gone, Zhou Wen thought to himself, but there was no point in saying that now. Therefore, Zhou Wen only asked, "Does that mean you are going too?"

Li Xuan curled his lips and said, “If Brother were to talk to me nicely, I might have even given it to him. However, with what he has done, I’ll definitely not let him get his wish.”

“By the way, how are you getting to the Holy Land? Let’s go together? We can join forces and forge a path of blood together. Each of us will obtain a special physique and return. Later, we will then have a mythical pet.” Li Xuan rattled on. “Have you thought about which type of physique you will be vying for? Different physiques have different Primordial Energy Art requirements. You have to cultivate the corresponding Primordial Energy Art to have a possibility of passing.”

Just as Zhou Wen was about to answer, his eyes suddenly lit up as he thought to himself, That’s right. Why didn’t I think of it? Although the Lost Immortal Sutra has the power to confuse Immortals and Buddhas, making those Immortals and Buddhas think that I have a special physique, I actually do not have one. Could the special physiques in the Holy Land allow my body to exceed the limits of the Legendary stage?

With this in mind, Zhou Wen suddenly felt that his trip wasn’t necessarily a bad thing.

“Hey, what are you doing? I’m asking you a question,” Li Xuan said as he waved his hand at Zhou Wen when he saw him looking down in a daze.

“Ah Sheng will be taking me there.” Zhou Wen snapped out of his daze and explained.

“Then tell Ah Sheng to take one more person. I’ll go with you for company,” Li Xuan said.

“It shouldn’t be a problem. I’ll inform him later, but there will be trouble plaguing me. If you come with me, I’m afraid it won’t be too peaceful,” Zhou Wen said.

“People live in this world to resolve all kinds of trouble. There’s no point fearing it. Alright, I’ll head back to pack up.” Li Xuan bade farewell and left.

Zhou Wen called Ah Sheng, but he never expected Ah Sheng to say, “Young Master Wen, it’s best if you don’t go with Li Xuan.”

“Why?” Zhou Wen asked in puzzlement.

“There are some internal problems with the Li family. I’m afraid that it won’t be safe on our trip.” Ah Sheng wasn’t too direct, but Zhou Wen knew that the problem he was referring to was probably Li Xuan’s second brother, Li Mobai.

“I’m also in trouble. Li Xuan isn’t afraid of trouble, so what’s there for me to be afraid of?” Zhou Wen said with a smile.

After hanging up, Zhou Wen went to Old Dragon Cave. Ah Sheng could help him apply for a leave of absence, but Zhou Wen still wanted to inform Wang Mingyuan and company before he left.

When Zhou Wen arrived at the laboratory, he saw the rare sight of Zhong Ziya, Hui Haifeng, and Jiang Yan there. Furthermore, Zhong Ziya wasn’t sleeping and Jiang Yan wasn’t reading. The three of them were playing cards.

Not seeing Wang Mingyuan, Zhou Wen asked, “Where’s Teacher?”

“He’s down Dragon’s Well. He should be back soon,” Hui Haifeng answered.

Zhou Wen couldn’t help but worry when he heard that Wang Mingyuan had gone into Dragon’s Well again.

Hui Haifeng and company had never seen the dragon at the bottom of Dragon’s Well, but Zhou Wen had experienced it deeply. Although Wang Mingyuan was at the Epic stage, he might not be a match for the dragon.

Sitting by the side and watching the trio play cards, he felt that something was amiss.

Zhou Wen couldn’t figure out how the trio was playing, despite watching for quite some time.

Zhong Ziya had thrown a 7, and Hui Haifeng had thrown an 8, but Jiang Guan threw a 5. No matter how he thought about it, 5 wasn’t bigger than 8.

“What kind of game are you playing?” Zhou Wen asked in puzzlement.

“Just a random game,” Hui Haifeng said with a smile.

Zhong Ziya continued, “There’s no point in playing a proper game of cards. This is called Reverse. We’ll select one person to play cards in reverse while the other two play normally.”

This was the first time Zhou Wen saw that cards could be played this way.

He found it more interesting as he watched. A clearly big card was used as a small card in Jiang Yan’s hand, while his smallest 3 to 5s all became the biggest cards.

However, playing cards in such a way made it prone to confusion, especially for an ordinary person. However, the

three of them played with relish and never made any mistakes.

After waiting for more than an hour, Wang Mingyuan came out of Dragon’s Well. Zhou Wen recounted how he was going to the Holy Land.

“I didn’t expect the An family to give you the nomination. If you really want to go, you have to be careful.” Hui Haifeng spoke up first.

Seeing Zhou Wen’s puzzled expression, Hui Haifeng said with a smile, “Back when An Tianzuo was about the same age as us, he went to the Holy Land. He didn’t obtain any special physiques, but he beat the descendants of the six heroes who went to the Holy Land one after another. He caused all the descendants of the six heroes to fall out and none of them obtained any special physiques. This resulted in a great feud. As a representative of the An family, you will likely be targeted.”

Zhou Wen was dumbfounded when he heard that. Only then did he know that the trouble Ouyang Lan mentioned was really troublesome.

“Why did An Tianzuo do that?” Zhou Wen asked.

“Rumor has it that An Tianzuo was too arrogant. He said that it was meaningless for the descendants of the Six Hero families to get the special physiques every time, so he beat them to a pulp and made them have to quit. But this is just a rumor. Only the real people involved know the truth,” Hui Haifeng said.

“If you don’t have to go, it’s best you don’t go. A special physique might not necessarily be good,” Zhong Ziya said with a twitch of his lips.

“I’ve already promised the An family,” Zhou Wen said.

“You’ll have to go if you have promised, but after you get there, you must take note of someone called Lance,” said Jiang Yan.

“What’s so special about that person?” Zhou Wen asked.

“Lance is also a descendant of the six heroes. Although his fame isn’t as great as John’s, he’s thousands of times more terrifying than John. With your abilities and Companion Beasts, it won’t be difficult for you to deal with the descendants of the other six heroes, but if you encounter this person, you have to be careful.” Jiang Yan said very seriously without any intention of joking.

“Lance, I’ll remember him.” Zhou Wen repeated the name Jiang Yan mentioned and silently memorized it.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 193 - Qin Mountain

Chapter 193 Qin Mountain

When Zhou Wen left, there was a necklace around his neck. Although it was a necklace, it was actually a red string with a bead carved from ivory.

This was given to him by Wang Mingyuan who claimed to have made it personally. He originally planned on giving each of them one after making all four. Since Zhou Wen was leaving for some time, he wanted to give him the completed one first.

The next morning, Ah Sheng came to fetch Zhou Wen and Li Xuan, and Ouyang Lan came over. Before leaving, she specially exhorted Zhou Wen, “Little Wen, I’m not worried about your strength, but I’m afraid that you might be careless. After you reach the Holy Land, you have to be careful of the descendants of the six heroes. The grudge from back then between Tianzuo and the six heroes is so deep, they will definitely target you. Remember, safety first. It’s nice to obtain a special physique, but it doesn’t matter if you don’t.”

“Sis Lan, I understand.” Zhou Wen nodded slightly.

If this were in the past, Zhou Wen wouldn’t have taken the special physique to heart, but in order to break through,

Zhou Wen had to vie for it.

Zhou Wen originally imagined that they were taking a plane to the Holy City, but to his surprise, Ah Sheng drove them out of Luoyang city without heading to the airport.

“Brother Sheng, isn’t it too slow by car?” Li Xuan didn’t dare call him Ah Sheng, so he called him Brother Sheng.

Previously, Li Xuan had told Zhou Wen that although An Sheng was only picked up by An Tianzuo and was not a true member of the An family, An Tianzuo treated him like a brother.

In the An family, he was Ah Sheng, but outside, An Sheng’s name was frightening.

“This was ordered by Madam. There are many routes to choose from so the roads are safer. Furthermore, there are a few dimensional zones. I want you to visit them before heading to the Holy Land,” answered Ah Sheng.

“Which dimensional zones?” Li Xuan was intrigued.

“The nearest place is in Qin Mountain. I don’t know what the name is,” Ah Sheng answered simply.

However, Li Xuan’s expression changed when he heard the name. “Brother Sheng, don’t tell me you are really letting us enter the dimensional zone at Qin Mountain? I heard that the dimensional zones there are really terrifying. Without being at the Epic stage, entry means death.”

“It’s not that exaggerated. About 90% die,” Ah Sheng said.

Is there a difference? Li Xuan cursed inwardly.

Zhou Wen didn’t know much about this, so he asked, “Is Qin Mountain terrifying?”

“Is it terrifying? Remove that questioning tone and that’s more like it. That’s where the great horror lies. Have you heard of the legendary Kunlun?” Li Xuan said with a twitch of his lips.

“Didn’t Ah Sheng say he was going to Qin Mountain? What has it got to do with Kunlun?” Zhou Wen was somewhat puzzled.

“The legendary Kunlun of ancient myths refers to Qin Mountain. It doesn’t point to the present-day Kunlun Mountain Range. Qin Mountain is also a dragon vein of East District, basically the best geographical location. The dimensional zones there are extremely terrifying, and there are countless powerful dimensional creatures inside. Humans are nothing there. Even top human experts have to tread carefully inside like they are treading on thin ice. If they aren’t careful, they might perish, much less us Legendaries.” Li Xuan asked another question after he was done, “Brother Sheng, are you really taking us to the dimensional zone in Qin Mountain?”

“Yes,” Ah Sheng answered simply.

Li Xuan suddenly realized that coming with Zhou Wen was a wrong decision.

It didn’t mean that he was afraid of going to the ruins. No matter how dangerous that place was, Ah Sheng wouldn’t bring them to their deaths.

However, along the way, Ah Sheng drove without saying a word, while Zhou Wen gamed on his phone, leaving him bored out of his wits.

“Is that stupid game really that fun? You’ve been grinding ants the entire journey. How many ants have you killed? Did the ants provoke you? If you really hate it so much, just find a real ant and kill it. Why do you have to seek revenge on it?” Li Xuan said gloomily.

“Yeah,” Zhou Wen replied before continuing grinding

Li Xuan was instantly rendered speechless. He had no way of communicating with Zhou Wen, so all he could do was lean back into his seat and sleep.

Zhou Wen had been trying to kill the Golden Flying Ant or break the white cocoon it was protecting. Unfortunately, the Golden Flying Ant was too fast, so he could do neither.

However, grinding for some Companion Eggs to feed his pets was not a bad choice. He could try his luck at Companion Beast fusion.

The success rate of a fusion was really low. The success rate for the first fusion was the highest. After every fusion, the success rate plummeted. As for how much it decreased, it depended on the pet’s species.

Due to the existence of the Grand Yin Wind skill, Zhou Wen could quickly grind ants. Many ant eggs dropped, so Zhou Wen began to wonder if he could come up with an ant that could both fly and provide defense.

It would have high speed and high defense.

Therefore, Zhou Wen had been using Companion Eggs of the black-winged flying ants and the red-armored ants all this time. He had succeeded quite a few times, but none of them could satisfy Zhou Wen with their stats and skills.

Red-armored, yellow-armored, blue-armored ants each have a defensive Primordial Energy Skill. I'll first do fusion until I get an ant with three skills, then I'll combine it with a black-winged flying ant, allowing it to have the ability to fly. That way, I'll need at least three fusions. The success rate is just too low. Zhou Wen tried many times. Skills were either lost after the fusion or the fusions failed.

It was especially so for the third fusion. The chances of success were too low. There was only a little more than an 11% chance of success. He had lost count of the number of times he had attempted fusion, but they all failed.

Thankfully, there were many ant eggs. Zhou Wen didn't have anything else to do on the way, so he slowly fused them.

When the car entered the mountainous region, it was very rare to see people and cars.

In this era, due to the appearance of the dimensional zones, many roads were blocked. Traveling between cities was actually a very difficult matter.

If an ordinary person were to accidentally enter a dimensional zone, the probability of surviving was extremely low.

Currently, there weren't many civilian operations for the transportation of goods. The main reason was that the League's military was doing it. Even so, there were still many accidents every year.

Most of the time, people along with their vehicles would disappear. Search and rescue teams didn't even have a clue where to begin.

As the car drove along the mountain road, Zhou Wen, who was gaming, suddenly felt his eardrums hurt. The window shattered at the same time as the tires burst. Accompanied by an explosive sound, he heard a strange shriek.

The car lost control and swerved into the railing of the mountain road as it began to spin off the road.

Ah Sheng suddenly wound down the car window, and with one foot on the mountain road, he forcefully stopped the car. It was as if the car had been nailed to the ground, leaving it less than a meter away from the cliff.

Zhou Wen and Li Xuan were given a fright as they subconsciously looked out onto the mountain road. They saw a golden glow dancing in the middle of the mountain range.

On a closer look, it was a giant bird that was as golden as a phoenix. It was dancing through the mountain like a golden sun. The bird’s cry from before came from it.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 194 - Car Flying Through The Empty Sky

Chapter 194 Car Flying Through The Empty Sky

“F*ck, is that a phoenix?” Li Xuan asked in surprise.

“Don’t speak, don’t move, don’t make any sound,” Ah Sheng said in a low voice.

Zhou Wen and Li Xuan felt a baffling sense of pressure when they saw Ah Sheng being so cautious. They sat in the car without daring to move, but their eyes were focused on the dancing giant bird in the mountains.

The giant bird flew very leisurely, like a golden cloud floating in the middle of a mountain. It leisurely bobbed up and down in the sky, like an elder taking a stroll.

After flying for a while, the giant bird approached Zhou Wen and company. Only then did Zhou Wen and Li Xuan see that behind the giant bird was a row of chicks.

The giant bird was like a golden cloud, but the chicks were about the size of a quail. Although their feathers were also golden, their color was lighter, and they didn’t have such a strong luster. Apparently, their feathers hadn’t fully grown.

Zhou Wen counted and found a total of six chicks followed behind the giant bird. They flapped their wings and tried their best to maintain their flying postures, but it was

extremely strenuous. They flew in all directions, as though they could drop at any moment.

The giant bird ignored them and continued flying in front. The six chicks tried their best to follow the giant bird up and down as they flapped their wings with all their might.

This is the true descendant of a dimensional creature! This was the first time Zhou Wen had seen a dimensional creature’s descendant. A Companion Egg wasn’t a real egg, but a form of life crystal.

As they watched, the giant bird flew over with the chicks. When it was a few hundred meters away from the mountain path, Zhou Wen and Li Xuan felt a strong heat blast, as though a scorching wind was hitting them.

The sweat from their bodies intermediately oozed out. In a blink of an eye, their clothes were drenched.

Because of Ah Sheng’s reminder, neither of them dared make a sound. They sat in the car, as though they were in a sauna.

They were still somewhat worried, unsure if the giant bird was coming for them. Zhou Wen even wondered if their firm muscles had caught the fancy of the giant bird, making it decide to feed them to the chicks.

Li Xuan and Zhou Wen looked at Ah Sheng, hoping to ask him what ideas he had. They were no match for such a monstrous creature. If they didn’t flee now, it would be too late.

Ah Sheng sat there without any reaction. He looked at the giant bird without a word, evidently having no intention of escaping.

The two of them could only bite the bullet and sit still. After a while, the giant bird flew past the top of the mountain with the six chicks and ignored them. Clearly, they were only out practicing flying and weren't intentionally targeting them.

Zhou Wen and Li Xuan secretly heaved a sigh of relief when they saw that the giant bird was about to fly over them.

However, it was at this moment that something unexpected happened.

An exhausted chick fell from the sky. Although it tried its best to flap its wings and control its body, it was unable to muster the required strength. It fell faster and faster.

And coincidentally, the chick fell in the direction of their car.

"What do we do?" Li Xuan and Zhou Wen looked at Ah Sheng.

Ah Sheng obviously hadn't expected this to happen and the look on his face changed as well. However, he still sat motionlessly in the driver's seat and even gestured for their silence.

The chick fell too quickly and just as Zhou Wen saw that Ah Sheng wasn't moving, the chick had already fallen on the roof of the car. With a loud thud, a huge dent was produced on the roof.

Furthermore, a tiny hole had smashed through the roof. The chick's head and neck drooped down from the tiny hole as it shook in front of Zhou Wen and Li Xuan.

Instantly, the air in the car seemed to freeze. Li Xuan robotically turned his head and exchanged a glance with Zhou Wen, seeing their worry in each other's eyes.

This chick won’t die here, right? Zhou Wen was very worried. If the chick really died here, would the giant bird vent its anger on them?

Dimension creatures weren’t humans, so they wouldn’t reason with them. They could thank their lucky heavens if they weren’t eaten by them, much less think about being given compensation for the car damage.

Just as Zhou Wen was considering whether he should immediately jump out of the car to flee, he saw the chick’s neck twitch before opening its eyes. It then looked at Zhou Wen and Li Xuan for a few seconds.

Following that, they heard thumping sounds. The car’s roof which was made of special steel alloy had been warped and dented. There were a few more holes, as sharp objects pierced through the steel plate, allowing Zhou Wen and company to see tiny sharp hook-like talons.

Precisely six sounds! Zhou Wen kept count as he listened to the thumping and knew that six chicks had landed on their roof.

In the next second, before the sound could form an image in Zhou Wen’s mind, the car trembled violently. Outside the shattered car window, a gigantic golden bird claw appeared.

Then, Zhou Wen and company felt the car rapidly rise as it instantly rose into the sky.

How can I be so unlucky… Zhou Wen felt that he never had a smooth trip when he went out. This time, he was ridiculously unlucky.

Li Xuan could no longer hold his tongue, but Ah Sheng made a gesture a step ahead of him, indicating for him to remain

silent and continue sitting

Soon, Zhou Wen and Li Xuan could already look down on the mountain. The entire car had been hoisted into the sky by the giant bird’s claw.

The chick exchanged looks with the humans for a few seconds before struggling a few times to pull its head out.

But soon, Zhou Wen heard the piercing sound of steel being torn through. The roof of the car was quickly ripped off by a tiny talon, forming a bigger hole. The chick jumped in

Seeing the chick about to land on him, Zhou Wen thought of the tiny, tender talon that could easily tear apart special steel plates. This gave him the urge to rush from the vehicle to flee.

Ah Sheng, who was in front, gestured for him to hold back. Clearly, he didn’t want Zhou Wen to make any sudden movements.

Zhou Wen hesitated for a moment before the chick landed on his leg. Unlike what he imagined, the chick was very light and was at most half a pound in weight. It didn’t have any strength in its claws.

Before Zhou Wen could decide on how to deal with the chick, a few more chicks had jumped down from the hole and landed on Zhou Wen and Li Xuan, or into the back row of seats.

Another chick landed on Li Xuan’s head and stood perched there, as though it had no intention of moving.

Li Xuan and Zhou Wen were equally depressed, but they didn’t dare move. They had the urge to cry.

The six chicks jumped around Zhou Wen and company and pecked them from time to time. However, they didn’t really exert any strength, as though they were just curious.

It’s over, it’s over. If this giant bird were to bring us back, we would definitely become their meal. Li Xuan lamented inwardly about his bad luck.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 195 - Tree Halfway Up the Mountain

Chapter 195 Tree Halfway Up the Mountain

The six chicks happily bounced around in the car. They pecked here and there, looking around with curiosity.

Zhou Wen and Li Xuan clearly weren't as relaxed as they were. They sat there motionless, afraid that they would anger them and incur the giant bird's wrath.

At the same time, they were afraid that these chicks would suddenly think of trying to test the hardness of their beaks.

"Bam!" Just as they were in thought, a chick suddenly threw a tantrum and pecked heavily at the car door.

The car was bulletproof. A normal bomb couldn't even blast open the door, but the chick easily bore through a hole.

Zhou Wen and Li Xuan's cold sweat instantly poured, mixing with the warm sweat that they were already soaked in. It was quite an indescribable feeling.

Thankfully, the chicks didn't try their beaks on them. Zhou Wen was fine, but Li Xuan was a little unlucky. The chick that was standing above him actually pooped. Although it wasn't much, it made Li Xuan feel like dying.

With another loud crash, the car shook violently. The golden bird’s giant claw had vanished, and the car had apparently landed on the ground.

However, when Zhou Wen looked outside, he immediately realized that he was wrong. They hadn’t landed on the ground at all. This was a mountain halfway up the mountain. The car had landed on a stone platform on the mountainside. It was neither up nor down. Unless their car could fly, it was impossible to drive away.

Being able to drive away was secondary. Most importantly, it was whether they could return alive.

Zhou Wen was considering how to survive when Li Xuan furtively tugged at the corner of his shirt and pointed outside the window.

Zhou Wen looked in the direction he was pointing and was immediately alarmed.

They were on the mountainside of a lone mountain peak, at least 700 to 800 meters off the ground. However, from Li Xuan’s side, he could see the crown of a tree.

A tree crown can be seen here? How tall is that tree? Zhou Wen found it unimaginable. Although there were many mutated plants in this era, Zhou Wen had never seen a tree that was 700-800 meters tall.

If the height was converted into a building, it would be about 200 to 300 stories tall.

The phoenix-like bird landed on the crown of the tree and let out a bird’s cry. It made Zhou Wen feel like his ears were numb, buzzing so much that he couldn’t hear anything.

When the six chicks heard the giant bird's cry, they bounced out of the window and approached the giant bird on the tree crown.

Only then did Zhou Wen realize that the huge bird didn't live on the mountain peak. Its nest was on the large tree.

On the mountain's stone platform, besides their car, there were also several other cars. There were SUVs and trucks too, and many things were scattered around them.

There was a box of beverages, as well as some timber from a vehicle. All sorts of things were scattered on the platform, but no one could be seen.

From the looks of it, it's not the first time that the giant bird has brought cars up here, but why isn't there anyone around? Where did the people in those cars go? Did they escape or have they already found themselves in the giant bird's stomach? Zhou Wen guessed.

While Zhou Wen was contemplating, the giant bird had already led the six chicks into a tree hole. At that moment, Ah Sheng lowered his voice and said, "That giant bird is too terrifying. We are no match for it, so make sure not to anger it."

"Brother Sheng, there are Epic creatures you can't deal with?" Li Xuan asked with a sliver of hope.

"I may have means to deal with an Epic creature, but it's hard to tell whether that's an Epic creature or not," Ah Sheng said calmly.

Li Xuan was immediately alarmed when he heard that. "That can't be? Could it really be the mythical phoenix?"

“I don’t know if it’s a phoenix, but that tree should be the legendary parasol tree,” Ah Sheng said as he looked at the giant tree outside.

“The tree outside is the parasol tree? There’s the saying that a phoenix nests in a parasol tree. Does that mean that the giant bird is really a phoenix?” Li Xuan was even more alarmed.

“That’s not necessarily the case. I once fought in the dimensional zones with the Overseer and have previously seen parasol trees slightly smaller than this one elsewhere. It was an Azure Luan which was just half a step short of being a Mythical creature. We suffered heavy losses in that battle and even the Overseer suffered serious injuries. That’s why we killed the Azure Luan and chopped down the parasol tree,” Ah Sheng said.

“Brother Sheng, what should we do now? Why don’t we sneak down the mountain and escape at night?” Upon hearing Ah Sheng’s words, Li Xuan felt even more afraid.

“Forget about these terrifying dimensional creatures. Even ordinary birds have better eyesight than humans. Daytime or nighttime doesn’t make a difference to them.” Ah Sheng scanned his surroundings and saw the cars and the things strewn on the ground.

“You guys wait here. I’ll go out and take a look.” Ah Sheng then quietly got out of the car. He crawled forward like a snake, so quiet that he didn’t even make a sound.

In a short while, Ah Sheng returned with many things tucked under his arms.

“These drinks still have half a year of shelf life. From the looks of it, their owners weren’t brought here too long ago.

Now, there’s no one here. If they haven’t escaped, they are most likely in the giant bird’s stomach.” Ah Sheng handed the cans in his hand to Zhou Wen and Li Xuan. “Only after eating will we have the strength to flee. We don’t have much time left. There are still a few dimensional zones to go. We also need to arrive in the Holy Land on time. We can’t delay any further.”

Considering how the giant bird wasn’t likely to exit the tree hole moments after returning, they decided to leave immediately.

After drinking some of the beverages and eating some snacks to fill their stomachs, the three of them immediately got up and quietly headed for the edge of the cliff to take a look.

ot only was the mountain steep, but the stone wall was also as smooth as a mirror. There was almost no place to rest one’s feet.

“It’s too steep here. If I don’t use my flying pets, I’m afraid I won’t be able to get down,” Li Xuan said with a sullen expression.

“You can’t use Companion Beasts. Dimension creatures are very territorial. If you use a Companion Beast, you will be making an enemy out of the giant bird, infuriating it in the process.

“Young Master Wen, can you go down by yourself?” Ah Sheng asked Zhou Wen.

“Yes.” It wasn’t difficult for Zhou Wen to head down.

“Alright, then I’ll carry Li Xuan. Let’s head down together.” After Ah Sheng said that, he crouched down and waited for

Li Xuan to get on his back.

“Brother Sheng, there’s no need. There’s really no need. I should be able to give it a try myself. There won’t be much of a problem.” Li Xuan hurriedly rejected Ah Sheng’s good intentions.

The three of them climbed down together. Their ascension of the mountain was abrupt, but their descent was dangerous. With Dragon Gate Fairy Skill, Zhou Wen was barely able to maintain his balance while descending

Zhou Wen crawled for a while and saw Li Xuan sweating profusely. However, it seemed as though he could still hang on.

He subconsciously turned his head to look in the direction of the tree hole. What he saw left Zhou Wen in a state of shock. He had no idea that the giant bird was standing at the tree hole’s entrance. Its eyes were coldly staring at him.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 196 - Four Gentlemen Blades

Chapter 196 Four Gentlemen Blades

Ah Sheng and Li Xuan had clearly noticed it as well. They lay on the mountain wall, not daring to move.

The giant bird spread its wings before violently flapping them once. An ominous foreboding rose in their minds when they felt a hurricane rise up and sweep their bodies up.

Bam! Bam! Bam!

The three of them fell back onto the stone platform and saw stars. It took them a while before they could stand up.

However, when they turned back to look at the tree hole in the towering tree, there was no sign of the giant bird. Looking everywhere, there was no trace of it. It was as though it had gone back inside.

“From the looks of it, it knew we were here long ago. Since it didn’t kill us, why did it leave us here? Could it be that it treats us as a food stockpile and plans to keep us here for the new year?” Li Xuan was still in the mood to joke.

“I don’t know if it’s keeping us for the new year, but it must have deliberately left us here,” Zhou Wen said.

“Since it didn’t kill us, we still have a chance. Let’s think of other ways.” Ah Sheng said as he looked around the platform.

Since the giant bird had already targeted them, it was useless no matter how careful they were. Zhou Wen also circled the platform, hoping to find something useful.

“This item isn’t bad.” Li Xuan found a playboy magazine in a cargo truck’s compartment.

Zhou Wen picked up a beverage bottle and saw that there was still more than a month left before it expired. He opened it to drink it and, as he did so, he arrived in front of an off-road vehicle. The off-road vehicle looked very old and had all its windows shattered. The frame was also severely deformed.

The vehicle’s body was covered in mud, and it was about the same inside. It looked like it had suffered the elements and had been here for quite some time.

Zhou Wen looked inside and saw a plush doll covered in mud sitting in the back seat. He thought, The owner of this vehicle likely had a child on board. I wonder how they ended up. I hope they’re alright.

There was too much mud in the vehicle, so it didn’t seem to have anything of use. Just as Zhou Wen was about to turn around and leave, he suddenly caught sight of a pole-like item caked in mud.

Zhou Wen extended his hand and pulled the item out.

It’s really a saber. Zhou Wen wiped the mud away and revealed the true appearance of the object. It was a sheathed saber.

The saber was straight, so its scabbard was also straight. Together with the hilt, it looked like a four-foot-long stick.

After wiping it clean, he realized that the entire saber's design was like a piece of bamboo-segmented. The top segment was the hilt, and the bottom four segments were the scabbard. If one looked closely, one would think that it was a bamboo stick.

In fact, the hilt and scabbard were made of metal, and it weighed heavily in the hand.

Zhou Wen attempted to draw the blade but failed to pull it out.

"Zhou Wen, what are you doing?" Li Xuan ran over and stared at the bamboo blade in Zhou Wen's hand.

"I found a saber, but I can't pull it out." Zhou Wen tried several times but failed to pull it out. He couldn't help but be surprised.

He was very strong and could easily break steel bars. He was rather surprised that he couldn't pull out the bamboo blade.

"It looks like a bamboo stick no matter how you look at it. How is it a blade?" Li Xuan commented as he looked at the bamboo blade in Zhou Wen's hand.

"No, that's a saber. Its name is Bamboo Blade." Ah Sheng heard their conversation and walked over, only to see it. He asked in surprise, "Where did you find this Bamboo Blade?"

"It was inside this car." Zhou Wen pointed at the off-road vehicle and said, "I wonder if it's stuck from rust. I can't pull out the blade."

As Ah Sheng got into the off-road vehicle, he searched and said, “The Bamboo Blade is made of Primordial Gold. Even the scabbard doesn’t rust, much less the blade. This blade has a special design. You need to spin it counterclockwise to pull the blade out.”

Zhou Wen followed Ah Sheng’s instructions and turned the handle. Although it was very heavy, it could really be rotated. When he exerted his force outwards, a portion of the blade immediately came out of the scabbard.

The blade was like a deep pool of water that emitted a coldness. It was only two fingers wide and the back of the blade was slightly wider. Its sharp edge was extremely thin, making it feel like it could easily slice through anything.

Zhou Wen pulled the blade out and swung it around. When the blade brushed past the car window to his side, it was sliced apart cleanly. Zhou Wen didn’t sense any resistance from the blade’s edge, showcasing its shocking sharpness.

“This blade is so sharp! Furthermore, it’s made of Primordial Gold. Are there any left? Find one for me too.” Li Xuan was also shocked by the sharpness of the Bamboo Blade.

“There’s only one Bamboo Blade in the entire League. Where are you going to find another one?” Ah Sheng crawled out from the off-road vehicle empty-handed. Clearly, he hadn’t found anything.

“Are you serious? The An family has plenty of Primordial Gold ores. Isn’t it easy to make one?” Li Xuan said in disbelief.

“Primordial Gold ores are restricted items. Every gram has a record. The League is very strict regarding this, so it’s impossible for the An family to use them as they wish.

Besides, this blade wasn’t forged by the An family,” Ah Sheng said as he looked at the Bamboo Blade in Zhou Wen’s hand.

Zhou Wen handed the Bamboo Blade to Ah Sheng and, after he took a careful look at the blade, Ah Sheng said, “The blade is like a pool of water over an abyss. Deep beneath is nothing but blood. This is indeed the Bamboo Blade of the Four Gentlemen Blades. I never expected that the Bamboo Blade that has been missing for so many years would actually be here.”

“What are the Four Gentlemen Blades? Why haven’t I ever heard of them before?” Li Xuan asked.

Ah Sheng didn’t answer Li Xuan. He gently swiped the blade across his palm and immediately sliced open a bloody gash. Blood trickled down the blade, forming a line that remained coagulated without dripping.

“Brother Sheng, what are you doing?” Li Xuan and Zhou Wen looked at Ah Sheng in a daze.

“A gentleman doesn’t fight, but if there’s a need to fight, blood will definitely splatter. Hence, when the Four Gentlemen Blades are unsheathed, blood must be seen. Otherwise, it will deal harm to their masters.” As Ah Sheng spoke, he swung the blade and threw blood on the blade out. The blade was spotless, like a pool of limpid water.

After sheathing the blade, Ah Sheng returned it to Zhou Wen. “Young Master Wen, although this blade is sharp, it’s very inauspicious. It’s best you don’t use it if possible.”

Zhou Wen nodded and took the Bamboo Blade. He asked, “Who’s the owner of this blade? Will someone come looking for me in the future?”

Ah Sheng shook his head and said, “The person who used the blade has been dead for years. The four original owners of the Plum, Orchid, Bamboo, and Chrysanthemum Blades all died tragically. Later on, when these four blades found themselves outside in the world, they gradually vanished. Their subsequent masters probably didn’t have a good ending.”

“What era are we in now? Why do we still believe in such superstitions? Aren’t you a fool to not use such a good blade?” Li Xuan said disapprovingly.

Ah Sheng didn’t argue with him and said, “The Overseer’s father, Old Master An, was once the owner of the Plum Blade.”

Upon hearing that, Li Xuan immediately fell silent. An Tianzuo’s father, Ouyang Lan’s ex-husband, was once the head of the An family with a promising future. Despite his bright future, he died early due to an accident. It was regretful and was known by all the rich and powerful in Luoyang. Li Xuan naturally knew.

If this was really the inauspiciousness brought about by the Four Gentlemen Blades, it was really terrifying.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 197 - Trainer

Chapter 197 Trainer

“The owner of this blade might be like uscaught and brought here by the giant bird. There’s a high chance that they were eaten by that giant bird. From the looks of it, this blade is truly inauspicious. Zhou Wen, it’s best you throw it away,” Li Xuan said.

However, Ah Sheng said, “Once the blade is in hand, you’re its owner. It’s too late to throw it away now. You should bring it along.”

Zhou Wen nodded without a word. He wasn’t superstitious to begin with, so he naturally didn’t mind.

The trio searched the platform for a while longer before finding two Companion Eggs in the trunk of a car. However, they were only at the Legendary stage and didn’t look like they were worth much.

Realizing that the giant bird hadn’t appeared the entire time, the trio decided to secretly escape from another side, but before they could go far, they felt a hot gust of wind assault them. They were once again swept back onto the platform. This time, they didn’t even see the giant bird.

After that, they made a few more attempts and even tried to escape by jumping down the mountain. However, the result

was the same. The hot gust of wind blew them back onto the platform.

The next morning, before the sun rose above the horizon, the giant bird brought six chicks out of the tree hole and led them to the mountaintop.

Zhou Wen and company originally imagined that they would fly away like before, but to their surprise, the giant bird only brought the six chicks to the mountaintop. Then, they formed a line before jumping off the mountain peak like diving athletes. As they learned how to fly, they charged towards the platform.

Zhou Wen saw a chick charging towards him and was about to dodge to the side when he felt a force overwhelming him. It impelled him to meet the chick and catch it.

Soon, Zhou Wen and company knew the intentions of the giant bird. It had actually treated Zhou Wen and company as workers. They were to catch its six children while they practiced flying swoops.

A day ago, Zhou Wen never imagined that he would be a nanny and trainer of six chicks.

What left Zhou Wen even more depressed was that the birds seemed to always target him and fly towards him. They seldom flew towards Ah Sheng and Li Xuan.

Li Xuan gloated by the side and said, “Old Zhou, it looks like you have quite good social relations, no-maybe I should say you have better twitter relations! Those chicks love you. If you were this good with women, you would have long been in a relationship.”

The chicks practiced flying the entire day. These fellows had extremely strong physiques and talent, but as they had just been born, they were unable to perfectly control their bodies. That was why they appeared rather clumsy.

However, they improved extremely quickly. With just a day's practice, their body control had increased tremendously. In the morning, they were still staggering in flight. Not only did they not land on Zhou Wen, they even missed and flew past the stone platform.

By the evening, the chicks could accurately land on Zhou Wen's head.

When the sun set, the giant bird returned to the tree hole with the chicks. Zhou Wen believed that he could finally relax, but to his surprise, the giant bird flapped its wing, stirring up a gust of wind that pulled him into the tree hole.

Ah Sheng's reaction was extremely fast as he grabbed Zhou Wen, but with his strength, he couldn't hold him back. His feet drew two long ditches on the stone platform and he was almost thrown off the stone platform.

"This bird sure is sinister. It made us nannies in the day, and food at night." Li Xuan also pounced forward to grab Zhou Wen.

However, it was useless. The giant bird's wings flapped once again as the three of them were sent flying into the hole.

"It's over, it's over. We'll definitely be food for the birds this time!" Li Xuan cried out tragically.

The tree hole was very deep. When Zhou Wen and company landed on the ground, they felt the force retract, preventing them from slamming heavily to the ground.

“Stop shouting. These birds don’t eat meat,” Ah Sheng looked around and said.

“How do you know they don’t eat meat?” Li Xuan refused to believe it.

“There’s no smell of blood here, nor are there any bones or anything like that. Instead, there are a lot of fruits here.” Ah Sheng pointed to a corner of the tree hole. There were indeed many fruits piled there.

“So they don’t eat meat. That’s good, that’s good.” Li Xuan heaved a long sigh of relief.

However, Zhou Wen didn’t look at the fruits. He raised his head and looked up with a strange expression.

The tree hole was nearly a hundred meters tall, like a huge warehouse. In the sky of the tree hole, floated a golden oval object.

If one looked closely, one would realize that it was a cocoon made of silk.

Zhou Wen had seen two similar cocoons, but they were white while this one above him was golden.

That can’t be. There’s actually a cocoon here? Zhou Wen carefully looked at the golden cocoon. The more he looked at it, the more it looked like the two cocoons he had seen apart from the different color.

Could it be that these dimensional creatures are actually born out of cocoons? Zhou Wen found it odd. Why did these different dimensional creatures have a cocoon in their nests?

Up to this point, only Golden Flying Ant was the weakest of dimensional creatures with cocoons. The other two were ridiculously strong.

There was no need to mention the dragon-shaped creature wrapped around the stone pillar in Dragon’s Well. It was unimaginable. Likewise for this giant bird. Ah Sheng was also one of the top experts in the Epic stage; yet, he did not seem to have much ability to resist the giant bird.

Of course, it was also possible that Ah Sheng wasn’t planning on giving his all unless death was certain.

Li Xuan and Ah Sheng followed Zhou Wen’s gaze and saw the golden cocoon. Li Xuan exclaimed in surprise, “Strange, why is there a cocoon here?”

No one could answer him as the giant bird landed with six chicks. This sight made Li Xuan’s heart tighten, and he was in no mood to care what the cocoon was.

The giant bird landed on a charred piece of wood and squawked at Zhou Wen and company, causing their eardrums to ring.

The trio didn’t understand bird language, nor did they have telepathic abilities. They didn’t know what the giant bird meant, but just as they were hesitating, they saw that each of the six chicks had something in their mouths. They flapped their wings and flew diagonally to Zhou Wen, placing the things in their mouths at his feet.

Zhou Wen originally believed that these chicks were afraid that their trainer would starve to death, so they brought him fruits to eat. But upon closer inspection, he realized that the six chicks didn’t bring fruit, but instead, they were shards that resembled jade.

The six shards were all different shapes, but the material looked about the same. It was a translucent jade that was close to beige in color.

Why are you giving me this? I’m not a Western dragon or a woman. I don’t like shiny things. I’d rather receive fruits, Zhou Wen thought.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 198 - Shard Choice

Chapter 198 Shard Choice

“These look like eggshell shards.” Ah Sheng carefully examined the shards and said after a moment of thought.

“Eggshell shards?” Zhou Wen carefully inspected the six shards and indeed, they looked like irregular shapes after an eggshell cracked.

Furthermore, the shards all had some curvature, making Zhou Wen even more certain that Ah Sheng was right. These shards were likely the eggshells of the six chicks.

But why are they bringing me their eggshells? Can it be that they want to treat me to eggshells? I can eat bird eggs, but I can’t eat eggshells. Zhou Wen felt depressed. Ignoring the fact that they couldn’t understand him, he coughed lightly and said to them, “Thank you for your kind intentions. I don’t eat eggshells. You should put them away.”

It was unknown if they didn’t understand him or if there were other reasons. The six chicks stood in front of Zhou Wen in a line as they stared at him with widened eyes, as though they hadn’t heard him.

When Zhou Wen saw that they weren’t moving, he knew that he couldn’t continue the standstill. Hence, he picked up

an eggshell and said, “I just need one piece. I’ll take it back and slowly eat it.”

Zhou Wen pinched the eggshell and found it smooth and supple. It was warm to the touch and resembled legendary warm jade. If he hadn’t seen these chicks before, no one would have expected it to be an eggshell shard.

As Zhou Wen spoke, he placed the shard in his pocket, hoping that he would be able to bluff his way through.

He never expected things to work out. Upon seeing Zhou Wen grab a shard, the other five chicks ran back with their respective shards in their mouths. Only the chick that Zhou Wen had taken a shard from stood in its original spot as it stared blankly at Zhou Wen.

Zhou Wen finally heaved a sigh of relief. If the chicks were determined to make him eat the eggshell, Zhou Wen would have to make a last stand in battle despite knowing that he was no match for them. He really couldn’t swallow something like that.

I wonder what other tricks these chicks have up their sleeves? Just as Zhou Wen was pondering over the matter, he saw the giant bird perched on a piece of charred wood. It spread its wings and, immediately, a hot wind swept the three of them up like a tornado, throwing them out of the tree hole.

The trio felt as though they were riding on floating clouds, and their vision was filled with distorted golden light. When the terrifying power disappeared, they fell to the ground and realized that there was no parasol tree in front of them. Instead, they were on a mountain path. There were also collision signs along the mountain railings-it was where they had stopped their car earlier.

Li Xuan looked around but did not see any sign of the giant bird. He could not help but exclaim in pleasant surprise, “We have returned to our original spot. Did that giant bird actually released us?”

Zhou Wen was also delighted, but when he suddenly heard a bird’s cry, he couldn’t help but feel his heart turn cold. He imagined that the giant bird was here again, but on careful thought, he felt that something was amiss. The bird’s cry was clearly very tender and lacked a terrifying might. It wasn’t the giant bird’s cry, but more like a chick’s.

Zhou Wen looked down and saw a chick standing by his feet in a daze. It was looking at him with its head cocked.

Why was this chick swept away with us? Zhou Wen was alarmed, but on second thought, he felt that this might not be a mistake made by the giant bird.

Zhou Wen had already found it odd that the six chicks had brought him shards. Back then, he hadn’t thought too much about it, but he had a lot more thoughts once he saw the chick had also been sent away with him.

Don’t tell me I was choosing these chicks back when I took the shard? The chick I chose will leave with me? If that’s the case, what would happen if I had taken all six of them? Zhou Wen reached out to pick up the chick which didn’t resist. It allowed Zhou Wen to hold it in his hand as it cocked its head and stared at Zhou Wen with its round eyes.

“Old Zhou, did the giant bird give this chick to you? That’s not fair. We did the work together, so why is it that only you received a present, while Brother Sheng and I have nothing?” Li Xuan also noticed the crux of the problem.

“I still don’t know if it’s a blessing or a calamity.” Zhou Wen shook his head slightly and shouted towards the mountain range with the chick in hand, “Divine bird, are you letting me take it away?”

After shouting three times without receiving any response, Zhou Wen had no choice but to take the chick along with him.

Without a car, the trio could only walk on foot. Although they could run as fast as cars, a human wasn’t a machine. With limited stamina, they would be drained of their strength if they ran for a long time.

And in the wilderness of the mountainous region, with them near Qin Mountain, they would be in for a bad time if they encountered dimensional creatures while lacking strength.

The trio didn’t dare to run too fast either. They alternated between walking and running

Originally, Ah Sheng had planned on taking them to a dimensional zone near Qin Mountain, but because of a lack of vehicle and no phone signal here, he had no choice but to abandon his previous plans and rush to the next city as quickly as possible.

Ah Sheng told Zhou Wen that if they didn’t arrive at the next city in time, the An family would send a search and rescue team to seek them out. Therefore, they had to come into contact with the An family as soon as possible.

Qin Mountain was just too mysterious. Although they were only close to it and had yet to really enter it, they had already seen many mysterious objects.

That night, Zhou Wen and company heard the sound of immortal music coming from Qin Mountain. It sounded like fairies were playing music and dancing inside.

Although Zhou Wen wished to take a look, he knew that he couldn’t take the risk.

Along the way, he saw many plants that he had never seen before—mushrooms that were taller than buildings, grass that resembled humans. There were all sorts of strange things happening. And this was only the periphery of Qin Mountain.

Although they encountered many strange incidents along the way, nothing serious happened after encountering the giant bird. The three of them finally traversed Qin Mountain and arrived at a small city.

Ah Sheng contacted the An family and gave them a timely update of the situation, stopping the search and rescue team that the An family had already prepared to send.

“Our original plan was to let you first head to a few dimensional zones to train, but it’s too late now. We’ve already chartered a plane, and it will be taking us to the Holy Land in a while,” Ah Sheng said to Zhou Wen and Li Xuan after the call ended.

Zhou Wen and Li Xuan felt that it was better to head directly to the Holy Land, to prevent themselves from encountering further troubles. After realizing the terror of the giant bird, they didn’t dare to casually wander about in the wilderness.

After resting for half a day, an armed helicopter came to pick them up and took them to a large city with an airport. Then, they flew to the Holy City.

As many regions in the sky were enveloped by dimensional zones, planes couldn’t fly randomly. Most of the air routes they had used in the past were no longer usable. Very few regions allowed passage. Now, the airports had been taken over by the League government, and the members of the aircrew were military officers.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 199 - Holy City

Chapter 199 Holy City

Holy City was the highest administrative center of the League. It was also the world center that humanity had built after the dimensional storms.

The reason it was named Holy City was that the Six League Heroes had obtained their powerful physiques in Holy Land. With immense power, they had been able to suppress the generation of those times and establish a fixed political system, reducing the suffering that war and disaster brought to humanity.

The trio arrived at Holy City, a new city that was only built after the dimensional storms. The architectural style was different from the old cities like Guide City and Luoyang. It looked modern and there were statues of six heroes everywhere on the streets.

As heroes who saved humanity from the chaos and disaster, they had received the highest honor in the League. All the citizens of the League remembered their names forever.

However, this wasn’t a good thing for Zhou Wen because the descendants of the six heroes were likely to go against him.

Ignoring the grudges between An Tianzuo and the six hero families, just the grudge between Zhou Wen and the Capim family was unlikely to be resolved so easily.

Ah Sheng had booked a room for Zhou Wen and Li Xuan to stay in. After he settled them in, he began handling the administrative matters needed for entering the Holy Land.

As they had been delayed at Qin Mountain for a few days, most of the youths participating in the competition had already arrived. Zhou Wen and Li Xuan were considered the last two.

“Minister, Zhou Wen has arrived in Holy City and has checked into Goth Hotel.” Liz’s eyes shimmered as she clenched her fists tightly.

Liz could still endure having her Primordial Energy Sea crippled, but John’s humiliation made her wish she could immediately charge over and kill Zhou Wen.

“I already know. With An Sheng by his side, and with them being the League’s invitees at the Holy Land, it’s not appropriate for us to take Zhou Wen into custody so brazenly. Just as we said, contact the youths from the other families who will be participating in the competition and get them to take care of Zhou Wen inside the Holy Land,” Qiao Siyuan said.

“Don’t worry, Minister. Even if I don’t do it, the other families won’t let Zhou Wen off easily. Back then, An Tianzuo crippled six hero families’ generation of youths, and now with Zhou Wen representing the An family, everyone is rubbing their hands in glee. They want to cripple him just like what An Tianzuo did back then,” Liz said.

“Zhou Wen isn’t a simple person. He was able to defeat John despite him using Light of Judgment. With such strength, not many people, including those from the six hero families, would be able to do it. Besides, the An family naturally has some confidence if they dare send him here. It’s best you

contact the other families to ensure that nothing goes wrong with this plan.” Qiao Siyuan wasn’t as optimistic as Liz.

“Don’t worry. I’ve already contacted a few people who are closer to my family to take action with John. There won’t be any problems,” Liz said confidently. “This is the Holy Land, not the An family’s Luoyang. Zhou Wen won’t be able to escape this time.”

Qiao Siyuan tilted his head and paused before asking, “Have you contacted Lance?”

“No, he has been missing recently. I don’t know where he’s gone. I’m afraid he will not return until the day the Holy Land opens,” Liz said.

“Try your best to contact him. If Lance were to take action, everything would be fine,” Qiao Siyuan said.

With this being his first time in Holy City, Li Xuan went out shopping. He said that he wanted to see how different Holy City was from Luoyang. However, Zhou Wen wasn’t interested and chose to game in his room.

Zhou Wen had used his phone’s camera function to look at the Bamboo Blade and the eggshell shard, but he had failed to discover anything special. Since he couldn’t lock onto the two items, he naturally couldn’t bring them in-game.

Zhou Wen had no choice but to place them in the Chaos Bead’s space. Zhou Wen had originally planned on using the power of the Chaos Bead to raise the First Order of Chaos to the Legendary stage to see what Life Providence he would obtain.

However, the Chaos Bead did not produce any light or text. Zhou Wen had no way of advancing himself.

The chick kept hopping on the table. Zhou Wen had bought some fruits for it, but it didn’t eat much.

Over the past few days, the chick didn’t eat much nor did it drink much water. However, it still looked energetic without showing any signs of frailty.

Zhou Wen originally planned on grinding a few instance dungeons to see if he could raise all his stats to 20, but the chick didn’t sit still. It jumped onto him and kept peeping noisily.

When he ignored it, it jumped onto his head and pecked him on the head with its beak.

“What are you trying to do?” Zhou Wen removed the chick from his head and questioned it gloomily.

Initially, he thought that it was pointless speaking to it since it wouldn’t be able to understand him. To his surprise, the chick actually understood him and jumped onto the table. Using its mouth, it flipped open a magazine to one of the pages, pressing its claw onto it.

Zhou Wen looked curiously and saw that the chick’s claw was pressing down on an advertisement. The advertisement’s content was actually the auctioning of a Companion Egg.

“You want to eat this?” Zhou Wen asked the chick in shock.

The chick understood his words and immediately nodded.

“I don’t have that, but I do have a Legendary Companion Egg. Make do with it.” Zhou Wen took out a Legendary Companion Egg and placed it in front of the chick. It was

something he had discovered in a damaged car on the stone platform.

Seeing the chick’s look of contempt, Zhou Wen added, “That is a rare Epic Companion Egg. I don’t have the money to buy it for you. Don’t even think about it. Just make do with this one. If you don’t eat it, you won’t even have one.”

Seeing the number of zeros on the starting bid, Zhou Wen lost all interest. Even he didn’t need such a good Companion Beast, so it was a little too much to let the chick eat it.

The chick glared at Zhou Wen before eventually lowering its head in resignation and pecked at the Companion Egg. It sporadically pecked at it, as though it was very unwilling to eat.

Zhou Wen had no choice. To feed it with a Legendary Companion Egg already pained his heart. It was impossible for him to obtain an Epic stage Companion Egg.

After resting for two days, Ah Sheng took them to the entrance of the Holy Land for registration. When they arrived, many young people had already finished registering.

When Zhou Wen went to register, the official in charge of confirming the candidate read out ‘Luoyang An family’. This drew the gazes of all the youths present. A few of them even began cracking their knuckles.

Standing in the crowd, John stared coldly at Zhou Wen as the killing intent flickered in his eyes.

“Old Zhou, it looks like we are very popular.” Li Xuan also noticed that something was amiss, but he deliberately retorted.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 200 - Thundergod General

Chapter 200 Thundergod General

“Indeed. I’m just afraid that their passion will be unbearable when the time comes,” Zhou Wen said indifferently.

“The An family actually didn’t send An Jing. What’s the meaning behind sending an outsider? Are they afraid?” a stern-looking youth in black asked.

“The An family is smart. They didn’t send one of their own out of fear and got an outsider to let us vent our anger.” Another handsome young man with blonde hair wore a look of disdain.

“It looks like apart from An Tianzuo, there aren’t many talents in the An family. They actually found an outsider to enter the Holy Land. I feel sorry for the An family.”

Zhou Wen could tell from the number of youths speaking that he was in trouble this time.

“Young Master Wen, if you don’t wish to participate, it’s still not too late for you to quit. Madam has said that you should act according to the circumstances and don’t force it,” Ah Sheng whispered to Zhou Wen

“Since I’ve agreed to come, I can only take the challenge even if there’s a sea of fire ahead of me. There’s no reason

for me to return now.” Although Zhou Wen spoke beautifully, he really didn’t wish to get involved if not for his attempt to see if the special physiques could enhance his physical stats.

Of course, he had to return the favor he owed. No matter what, he had to enter the Holy Land to take a look.

Ignoring the mockery and sarcasm of those people, Zhou Wen’s gaze constantly observed the so-called Holy Land, hoping to find the tiny palm symbol.

The so-called Holy Land was different from what Zhou Wen imagined. It didn’t have any magnificent ancient buildings or immortal-like paradises.

In a desolate desert, there was an ancient and worn-out stone platform. The stone platform was hexagonal and every edge had a stone pillar.

The six stone pillars had different symbols engraved on them. Even the carving techniques and styles were different, as though they were made by six different kinds of craftsmen.

Unfortunately, Zhou Wen failed to see any tiny palm symbol despite using Truth Listener to observe his surroundings for quite a while.

“Shut up. This isn’t a wet market. Whoever spouts any more nonsense will be disqualified.” The official coldly stopped everyone and continued, “Before coming here, your family has already informed you of the rules of the Holy Land. However, I still have to repeat them one more time. Everyone who enters the Holy Land does so voluntarily. If any mishaps happen in the Holy Land, it has nothing to do

with the organizers of this trial. In other words, even if you die inside, no one will be responsible for it."

With that said, the official looked at Zhou Wen and continued, "If anyone wishes to quit now, they can immediately make the request to not enter the Holy Land. However, once anyone enters the Holy Land, they need to be responsible for their actions. Good luck to them."

Everyone knew very well that the official's words were directed at Zhou Wen. With so many people targeting him, Zhou Wen probably wouldn't have a good time after entering the Holy Land. The chances of death were much higher than the others.

Seeing that Zhou Wen had no intention of backing out, the official continued, "Since no one plans on quitting, this year's Holy Battle will officially begin. In a while, the Companion Egg Market will begin business. If anyone needs a Companion Egg, you can purchase it. For the next twenty-four hours, you can enter the Holy Land at any time. As for whether you can leave the Holy Land alive, it will depend on your fate."

After the official spoke, the trading market opened for business. Many merchants had set up stalls. On the stalls were various Companion Eggs. They were basically at the Legendary stage.

Zhou Wen saw a few brands he was familiar with. They were all famous Companion Eggs retailers in the League.

"Young Master Wen, feel free to choose any Companion Egg you need. Madam has already prepared sufficient funds. It should be enough to buy all the Companion Eggs you need. Therefore, you don't have to worry about money," said Ah Sheng.

“There’s no need. I’ll just use my Companion Beasts,” Zhou Wen said.

Although the Companion Beasts that a person could obtain were unlimited, having a large number of them would be difficult to command in battle. It would be fine if a Companion Beast had high intelligence, but most Companion Beasts had low intelligence. If they were left to attack on their own, they would be a bunch of disorderly mobsters. They might not be able to use their powers and might even hinder each other.

Therefore, most people focused on training a few Companion Beasts, ones that they could use with the greatest ease.

Zhou Wen was already very adept at using his Companion Beasts. Furthermore, they were considered top-notch existences at the Legendary stage. It was enough.

“Madam was right. Indeed, you aren’t willing to buy Companion Eggs.” As Ah Sheng spoke, he took out a box and handed it to Zhou Wen. At the same time, he solemnly said, “Before I left, I was specifically instructed to hand it to you. Madam said that you can choose not to have any other Companion Egg, but this one was personally obtained by her in a dimensional zone. She said that you have to accept it no matter what. Otherwise, she will make you accompany her for meals daily when you return. Miss Jing will also join the meals.”

“Sis Lan sure is thoughtful.” Zhou Wen didn’t reject the offer and took the box.

He didn’t like the An siblings, but he wasn’t averse to Ouyang Lan. Since Ouyang Lan had said so, Zhou Wen didn’t reject the item.

When he opened it, he saw a black Companion Egg the size of a fist inside. It looked like metal, but it also had the luster of jade.

“What kind of Companion Egg is this?” Zhou Wen looked inside the box, but there was no information card.

“Madam didn’t tell me. She only said that you would know after you hatch it,” Ah Sheng said.

Zhou Wen nodded but didn’t immediately incubate it. He stored it away in his backpack and said to Ah Sheng, “I’ll accept the Companion Egg. I’ll find an opportunity to hatch it in the future. Don’t worry.”

Zhou Wen had a Dao Body and his Primordial Energy recovery speed was extremely fast. He could incubate Legendary Companion Eggs at any time, so he didn’t have to worry about the danger of expending too much of his Primordial Energy.

“Alright, now that your matters have been resolved, and since you aren’t buying Companion Eggs, why don’t you accompany me to take a look. I don’t have as many excellent-grade Companion Eggs as you do. This is a good opportunity for me. Who knows, I might be able to obtain a few.” Li Xuan pulled Zhou Wen towards the market.

Li Xuan’s words weren’t wild fantasy. In fact, as long as he had enough money, he could buy Legendary Companion Beasts that were usually rarely seen.

In order to leave an impression on these young people who could lead a future generation, many of the excellent-grade Companion Eggs were put on sale here.

Zhou Wen couldn’t help but be astonished when he followed Li Xuan around. He had never heard of many of the Companion Eggs here, but from their introductions, many of them had very useful abilities. They were in no way inferior to the Mutated Demonized General before it underwent a fusion.

The Companion Eggs here were basically at that level. The prices were also astronomical and were at least twice the price of a typical Companion Egg shop.

Even so, many young people who were prepared to enter the Holy Land spent a huge sum of money to buy Companion Eggs. Their expressions remained stoic as though what they were spending wasn’t money.

“Thundergod General… There’s actually a Thundergod General here…” Suddenly, a voice sounded, attracting the attention of many.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 201 - Gold-Armored Beast

Chapter 201 Gold-Armored Beast

The words “Thundergod General” seemed to contain infinite attraction. Many young people were attracted.

Zhou Wen and company went over to take a look as well. After all, Thundergod General was a very famous Companion Beast. He had the reputation of being the best offensive pet, with potent offensive abilities. Be it his companion form or his pet form, he had extremely powerful attacks.

The most famous aspect of Thundergod General was his Primordial Energy Skill, Thundergod Augmentation. It could augment a person with lightning from the void, giving a person infinite power to battle an enemy. Every strike had terrifying lightning power accompanying it. It struck extreme fear into the hearts of people.

Furthermore, even in his companion form, Thundergod Sword, Thundergod Augmentation could still be used. Even someone who had never cultivated a lightning-elemental Primordial Energy Skill would be able to use the Thundergod Sword that came with sword beams imbued with lightning

The reputation of Thundergod General as the number one Legendary offensive pet was definitely not unfounded. However, that was if one had the Thundergod

Augmentation. However, Thundergod had a total of four skills, so even if one hatched him, he might not have Thundergod Augmentation.

Without the Thundergod Augmentation, Thundergod General was an ordinary Legendary Companion Beast. It was nothing compared to the best Legendary offensive pet.

Therefore, whether Thundergod General was worth anything depended on whether he had the Thundergod Augmentation skill.

Unfortunately, the items sold here were all Companion Eggs. Even with X-ray vision, it was impossible to tell the stats or skills available to the Companion Beasts.

Hence, there were many onlookers, but none of them were willing to pay for it.

The price of a Thundergod General Companion Egg was two million. This was definitely not too much to buy the best Legendary offensive pet. However, if Thundergod General didn’t have Thundergod Augmentation when he was hatched, he would be worth at most a hundred thousand or so. Spending two million to buy it was no doubt a waste.

Therefore, many people just watched. It was very nicely priced. It made those who wanted to buy it still feel the pinch. Yet, they would find it unacceptable giving it up. After all, Thundergod General Companion Egg was extremely rare.

Zhou Wen pretended to take a picture with his phone and glanced at Thundergod General Companion Egg’s stats. He discovered that it was Thundergod General with two skills, and one of the skills was the Thundergod Augmentation.

“If it’s a Thundergod General with Thundergod Augmentation, two million would be worth it. I’m just afraid it doesn’t have it. Spending two million for trash would be a terrible loss.” Li Xuan was also tempted.

“If you know that it has the Thundergod Augmentation skill, would you even have a chance of making a comment? It would long have been sold.” A blonde youth said disdainfully.

“That’s odd. Why are there dogs barking randomly in Holy City?” Li Xuan asked Zhou Wen in surprise.

“Perhaps someone’s dog wasn’t tied up and ended up running out,” Zhou Wen added.

The blonde youth’s expression instantly darkened, but he didn’t turn hostile. He only said coldly, “Are the people from East District so uncultured?”

“For us from East District, that’s only reserved for the cultured,” Li Xuan said, unwilling to be outdone.

“Very good. I won’t argue with you. After we enter the Holy Land, we’ll settle the scores,” the blonde youth said without any expression.

“I’ll be your guest.” After Li Xuan said that, he ignored him. He looked at Thundergod General Companion Egg before asking Zhou Wen, “Unfortunately, Wang Lu isn’t here. With her luck, she would definitely be able to help me get one that has Thundergod Augmentation.”

“It’s only two million. That shouldn’t be a huge sum to you. It’s good to bet. If you score one and obtain the best Legendary offensive pet, it will be worth a lot more than two

million.” Zhou Wen secretly nudged Li Xuan in the direction, hoping that he would buy the Thundergod General.

He already had Banana Fan and had recently picked up Bamboo Blade. He didn’t lack any weapons. As for offensive pets, his Mutated Demonized General was in no way inferior to the Thundergod General. There was no need to buy another one.

“Alright, I’ll take that bet.” Li Xuan gritted his teeth and bought the Thundergod General Companion Egg under everyone’s gaze.

“Two million to buy a Thundergod General Companion Egg. There are so many vulgarians in rural cities,” someone mocked Li Xuan.

Although Thundergod General Companion Eggs were rare, they were only worth four to five hundred thousand on the market due to the low probability of possessing Thundergod Augmentation. Buying it for two million was indeed expensive. This was also why nobody had bought it despite the huge crowd.

However, Li Xuan didn’t mind. He went shopping with Zhou Wen and Ah Sheng at other stalls. He had plenty of wealth and wasn’t stingy with his money. He bought several Legendary Companion Eggs consecutively.

“Will you have the time to incubate so many Companion Eggs?” Zhou Wen said with a frown.

“Since I can’t incubate it outside, I’ll take it into the Holy Land. After all, we need to stay in the Holy Land for at least ten days. There will be time.” Li Xuan seemed to be full of confidence, but he changed the topic and said, “However, I want to incubate Thundergod General before entering the

Holy Land. I’m just too curious. I wonder if he has Thundergod Augmentation.”

There were rooms prepared by the League government. Li Xuan and company each requested a room while the former began incubating the Thundergod General Companion Egg

Zhou Wen already knew what the outcome would be, so he wasn’t too concerned. He sat down on the sofa in the living room and took out the Companion Egg Ouyang Lan had prepared for him. He glanced at it with his mysterious phone.

Gold-Armored Beast: Legendary.

Life Providence: Steel Protection

Strength: 19

Speed: 11

Constitution: 20

Primordial Energy: 12

Talent Skill: Tempered Steel.

Companion Form: Armor

Just by looking at the attributes, he knew that the Companion Beast was definitely an excellent-grade Legendary Companion Beast. Furthermore, it was one with an extremely high defense. It was very likely to be on par with the Three-Eyed Golden Warrior.

The most critical thing was that the Gold-Armored beast’s companion form was armor. It was obviously given to him by Ouyang Lan to save his life.

Li Xuan ran out from his room with a broadsword wrapped in lightning bolts as he shouted excitedly, “Jackpot… Jackpot… I never expected that I’d have such a day… Old Zhou… My Thundergod General has two skills… One of them is Thundergod Augmentation…”

“Don’t tell me you want the entire world to know that you have a true Thundergod General?” Zhou Wen was speechless.

“What’s the harm?” Although as Li Xuan said that, he quickly stowed Thundergod General away. With no one knowing, Thundergod General would make an excellent trump card.

They did some preparatory work before bidding Ah Sheng farewell, in preparation to head for the Holy Land’s entrance.

“Go in later. Head in when the twenty-four hours are almost up. That way, you can avoid meeting most people. They won’t wait that long since they will be vying for the qualifications,” Ah Sheng said.

“Alright.” Zhou Wen was very patient, so there was no rush.

Although Li Xuan didn’t think so, he patiently waited for Zhou Wen to head in with him.

Zhou Wen had previously asked if Li Xuan wanted to head in himself to prevent him from being marked by the youths of the six hero families. However, Li Xuan didn’t mind at all. Since they came together, he believed that it was natural for them to enter together.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 202 - Sky Battle

Chapter 202 Sky Battle

The way he entered the Holy Land made Zhou Wen question life. He and Li Xuan stood on a stone pillar, and the stone pillar descended like an elevator.

Zhou Wen originally believed that the Holy Land was underground, but after the stone pillar's long descent, he suddenly felt the ground beneath him give way. Then, he realized that he was in the air, surrounded by floating clouds with mountains beneath his feet.

How is this possible? We were clearly descending, so how did we end up in the sky? Zhou Wen was alarmed as he sized up the ground beneath him. Soon, he realized that the area below wasn't Holy City's territory.

There were no mountains near Holy City, but there were endless mountain ranges below.

Li Xuan didn't have the Godfiend Life Providence, so he didn't have the ability to levitate, preventing him from examining his surroundings as Zhou Wen did. Instead, he summoned a huge eagle pet and landed on its back. At the same time, he flew towards Zhou Wen and pulled him onto the back of the giant eagle.

"How magical. This is the Holy Land, a sacred place. No one knows where the Holy Land is, but It's definitely not

underground anyway," Li Xuan said, as he looked at the surrounding mountains and rivers.

"Which Holy Temple are you going to?" Zhou Wen asked.

"I cultivate in the Invincible Connate Divine Art. This Primordial Energy Art corresponds to the Connate Infinite physique, so I'll be going to the Connate Holy Temple." Li Xuan replied, "It's highly likely that the An family made you cultivate the Sun Strafe Art, right? In that case, you should go to the Sun Divine Temple. However, from the looks of it, your Primordial Energy doesn't look like it's of the Sun Strafe Art pedigree."

"I've never cultivated the Sun Strafe Art, so it doesn't matter where I go. Since you are going to the Connate Holy Temple, I'll go somewhere else to try my luck." Zhou Wen naturally wasn't willing to compete with Li Xuan.

Every physique only chose one person. If Zhou Wen snatched it away, Li Xuan would definitely not have one.

"Alright, where shall we meet later?" Li Xuan asked.

"I haven't decided where to go for the time being. If there's nothing special, let's meet up after we exit this place." If Zhou Wen wanted to vie for the special physique, he probably had to fight the youths from the six heroes' families. He was unwilling to involve Li Xuan.

"In that case, I'll accompany you to find a suitable Holy Temple. After all, the test lasts ten days. It doesn't matter when one visits it. I'm not in a rush either," Li Xuan said with a smile.

Seeing how Li Xuan insisted on accompanying him, Zhou Wen could only say, "If that's the case, let's head to the

Connate Holy Temple first.”

“Alright.” Li Xuan didn’t stand on ceremony as he let the giant eagle fly east.

Shortly after they flew off, they saw more than ten people riding on flying mounts. Leading them was someone Zhou Wen still remembered. It was none other than Saint John from the Cape family.

“Zhou Wen, do you think you can escape trouble just by entering late?” John said coldly, as he rode on a flying lion.

As they spoke, the group had already surrounded Zhou Wen and Li Xuan in all directions. Unable to charge out of the encirclement, the giant eagle could only spiral around in the middle.

“John, if you wish to have another battle, I’ll take up your challenge any time.” Zhou Wen shot Li Xuan a glance. Li Xuan immediately understood and controlled the giant eagle to land on the ground.

“Trying to run? Aren’t you an overly naive one.” John sneered as he gave the order. More than ten people together with their Companion Beasts attacked simultaneously.

Without a word, Zhou Wen summoned the banana fan and sent a gust of Grand Yin Wind at John.

“I wasn’t prepared the last time, allowing you to successfully sneak an attack on me with your Companion Beast. This time, you won’t have another chance.” John clearly came prepared. Upon seeing Zhou Wen’s Grand Yin Wind approach, he didn’t fluster or show any intention of dodging.

When the Grand Yin wind reached John, it was as if it had encountered an invisible barrier that splashed sideways. No damage was dealt to John nor the lion beast that he was sitting on.

Zhou Wen was slightly surprised and he found it odd. However, time didn't permit him to ponder over the reason. The attacks of the other ten plus Companion Beasts had already circled him, nearly sealing off all routes of retreat for him and Li Xuan.

Just as Zhou Wen was about to go all out, he suddenly heard a young bird's tender chirping. It was the yellow-feathered chick.

This fellow had been following Zhou Wen all this time. As it stood on Zhou Wen's shoulder, a mere chirp was enough to make the dozen or so flying pets suddenly lose control and be thrown into disarray like a kite with a broken string.

Zhou Wen took a careful look and knew that it was all thanks to the yellow-feathered chick. The flying Companion Beasts who were randomly flying about were all birds. Only a minority, like John's flying lion, wasn't affected.

With the opponent's lineup in chaos, there was a weakness to exploit despite the attacks of the ones remaining. Li Xuan controlled the giant eagle to rush out of the encirclement and quickly landed on a nearby mountain.

"Chase after him." John gritted his teeth and chased after him. The dozen or so disciples of the six hero families also joined in the chase.

"John, are you really going to fight me to the death?" Zhou Wen stood on the back of the giant eagle as he stared at the chasing John.

“You don’t have to die. We are very fair. Back then, An Tianzuo injured our family members. Now, since you are here on behalf of the An family, we will also be very fair. All we need to do is cripple your Primordial Energy sea and maim you,” John said coldly.

“An Tianzuo had crippled your family members once. Don’t force me to do the same thing,” Zhou Wen said as he looked at the approaching John.

“Haha, do you really think you’re An Tianzuo? You’re just representing the An family. Your name isn’t An Tianzuo. The pets you rely on are completely useless against me. Who are you to act so arrogantly in front of me?” John held his sword as he began to condense Light of Judgment. He was prepared to finish Zhou Wen and company in midair, preventing them from having a chance to escape back to the ground.

Zhou Wen didn’t say anything else as he took out the Bamboo Blade. With one hand holding the scabbard and the other holding the hilt, he said to Li Xuan, “You leave first.” Then, he leaped up and flew towards John who was charging at him.

“Old Zhou, what are you doing?” Li Xuan was alarmed. He wanted to stop Zhou Wen, but it was too late.

“So you have a death wish.” John knew that when fighting in the sky, the death sentence was practically given to those without a flying mount. Without any hesitation, he slashed out with his sword, transforming into a gigantic sword beam that tore towards Zhou Wen.

The few youths behind him who weren’t using avian mounts also used their own Primordial Energy Skills. Together with John, they surrounded Zhou Wen. Several beams of light

instantly intersected with each other, nearly sealing off all possible routes of retreat for Zhou Wen.

This was difficult to avoid even on land, much less when in the air.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 203 - A Man Doesn’t Need Wings!

Chapter 203 A Man Doesn’t Need Wings!

“Zhou Wen, you won’t be able to escape today even if you have wings. I will return the humiliation you made me suffer at Sunset College with interest.” The Sword of Judgment in John’s hand slashed down.

More than ten Companion Beasts spat out all sorts of light blasts as they worked with the humans to attack the encircled Zhou Wen in the air. From the looks of it, it was impossible for him to escape.

Unperturbed, Zhou Wen continued to rise with Bamboo Blade in hand. At the instant Light of Judgment and the numerous attacks were about to land on him, Zhou Wen exerted strength in his legs as though he had stepped on an invisible staircase in the air. He accelerated rapidly and changed his trajectory to avoid John’s Light of Judgment.

John and company thought they were seeing things. John was right. Zhou Wen was indeed unable to escape if he had wings. Even a real bird would probably not be able to escape the encirclement.

Furthermore, Zhou Wen didn’t have any wings on his back, but he seemed to be walking on flat ground in the air. It was as though he could move as he pleased.

Zhou Wen moved erratically in the sky. In a completely impossible situation, he tore through John and company’s

encirclement and, like a ghost, rushed in front of a youth riding on a flying bird.

The youth wasn’t a weakling either. He drew his saber and slashed at Zhou Wen, condensing potent battle aura into a corporeal blade beam.

Zhou Wen spun like an eagle as he dodged the attack, brushing past the bird.

Bamboo Blade instantly unsheathed itself and flashed like a cold beam of light. After Zhou Wen flew several meters away, the bird split into two and blood splattered across the sky.

Instantly, John and company felt their bodies turn cold. It wasn’t as if they had never seen anyone with better movement techniques and saber techniques than Zhou Wen, but in the sky, to be able to fly freely without any external help was terrifying. It would be courting death to fight someone like him in the sky.

Unfortunately, they came to that realization too late. Zhou Wen was like a specter in the sky as his body flashed. He slashed out again and again with Bamboo Blade, aiming for the mounts instead of their owners.

Just as John had said, if one did not have a mount in the sky, death was almost a certainty.

Those who relied on their mounts clearly couldn’t be as agile as Zhou Wen. With the difficulty of dodging plaguing them, they watched their own mounts being killed.

Blood filled the sky, and feathers poured down like snow. The youth whose mount had been sliced apart cried out tragically as he fell to the ground.

“Everyone, return to the ground!” John shouted out loudly, feeling extremely infuriated. He originally thought that killing Zhou Wen in midair was a plan that would be foolproof, but who knew that this would end up becoming their greatest disadvantage?

“Ah!” Tragic screams were heard constantly as people fell onto boulders, fracturing their legs.

Only a few people with backup flying pets and flying equipment were spared.

Fortunately, these fellows were all from the families of the Six League Heroes, and were the children of the League’s wealthiest. They had plenty of good things on them, so they didn’t fall to their deaths. The ones that had been roped in to make up the numbers suffered terribly from the fall.

John tried his best to control his flying lion, hoping to land back on the ground, but Zhou Wen was too agile in the air. He eventually managed to cleave off the head of the flying lion.

John was infuriated as a pair of snow-white wings sprouted from his back. However, he didn’t charge at Zhou Wen and he sped towards the ground.

Even with wings, John didn’t dare fight Zhou Wen in midair. The mobility his wings gave him was on a completely different level from Zhou Wen’s aerial combat ability.

How could Zhou Wen let him off? The saber was like a rainbow as it chopped at John repeatedly. Although it wasn’t able to kill him, it had severed one of his wings.

John lost control of his body and fell to the mountain peak below. He almost broke his bones in the process.

Li Xuan was dumbfounded as he could not help but laugh out loud. “Indeed, you can’t escape even if you have wings. John, you’re really an honest person.”

Zhou Wen had no intention of letting them off. He charged straight for the mountain peak and landed on it.

The group blamed the terrible loss they suffered for their immobility in the sky. So now that Zhou Wen had dared to land, they didn’t miss this opportunity and immediately surrounded him.

A stocky man held a huge shield with one hand and a huge hammer in the other as he charged straight at Zhou Wen.

Zhou Wen didn’t draw his saber. Instead, he struck out with a gust of Grand Yin Wind with the banana fan, sending the man’s hammer and shield flying.

With a loud bang, the man slammed into the mountain like a cannonball, creating a crater in the wall. His hammer and shield flew out of his hand as blood spewed out of his mouth. His hair and brows were covered in a layer of frost.

After struggling a few times, the man was unable to stand up.

As expected. There’s something on John that counters the Grand Yin Wind, preventing him from suffering its effects. After coming to this realization, Zhou Wen had switched his Primordial Energy Art into Dao Sutra. His Life Providence then turned into the Dao Body that could constantly restore his Primordial Energy.

Seeing a few more people charging at him, Zhou Wen waved his fan again. The few of them were instantly blown away

and their bones fractured from the fall. They rolled on the ground screaming.

Seeing that Zhou Wen had taken care of the dozen or so people with a few flaps of the fan, John turned around and tried to escape.

“Didn’t you want to fight me?” Zhou Wen wasn’t willing to let him off as he slashed his Bamboo Blade at John’s back with a cold beam.

John raised his sword to block, one that was transformed from a Legendary Companion Egg. Bamboo Blade immediately snapped it and didn’t stop as it hit John’s armor, leaving a foot-long wound on his armor. Blood immediately gushed out.

John’s expression changed drastically. As he retreated, he summoned his Companion Beast, hoping to fend off Zhou Wen. Unfortunately, he was already in a state of frenzy. He had no intention of using the Companion Beasts to battle Zhou Wen. All he wanted was for them to hold Zhou Wen back so that he could escape.

The Bamboo Blade in Zhou Wen’s hand shimmered as the Legendary Companion Beasts were cleanly sliced through with a single slash. Before John could run far, Zhou Wen’s palm struck his back, sending blood spewing from him as he fell to the ground.

It only took moments to have more than ten people collapsed on the ground. Not a single one of them could get up.

“Kill me if you have the guts!” John shouted angrily when he saw Zhou Wen stepping on his chest.

“Wouldn’t killing you be too easy on you?” Zhou Wen thrust out his Bamboo Blade and pierced through John’s Primordial Energy sea.

“Zhou Wen, this isn’t over.” John wailed in excruciating pain, eager to rip Zhou Wen to shreds.

“You aren’t qualified,” Zhou Wen said coldly. He waved his Bamboo Blade once again and tore off John’s armor, revealing a strange necklace around John’s neck.

There was crystal embedded in the necklace, and within the crystal, there seemed to be swirling wind. It formed a vortex within, making it look rather special.

It looks like it was this item that caused Grand Yin Wind to lose its effects. Zhou Wen raised his saber and broke the necklace’s latch, allowing it to fall into his hands.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 204 - The Goddess of Wind’s Protection

Chapter 204 The Goddess of Wind's Protection

Li Xuan's eyes lit up when he saw the necklace. He could not help but cry out, "IS that the Goddess of Wind's Protection?"

"You know what this is?" Zhou Wen asked as he held the necklace.

"I've only heard that there are extraordinary treasures in some dimensional zones. Those treasures possess magical powers. The Goddess of Wind's Protection is one of them. Legend has it that it's a magical necklace that possesses the power of the wind. Wearing it can give you damage immunity from any wind element. However, according to what I know, the Goddess of Wind's Protection likely belongs to the Qamar family. Furthermore, it's unique, so I've no idea if it's real or not," Li Xuan explained.

"It doesn't matter if it's real or fake." Zhou Wen stuffed the necklace into his pocket. Since this item could resist the Grand Yin Wind, he naturally didn't want anyone else to possess it.

When John saw this scene, he was so angry that he vomited blood.

The necklace was indeed the Goddess of Wind's Protection. In order to counter Zhou Wen's banana fan, Member of Parliament Cape had paid a huge price to borrow it from the

Qamar family. Now, it had been snatched away by Zhou Wen.

Zhou Wen ignored John as he walked towards the others with the Bamboo Blade in hand. He ignored their pleas or insults as he stabbed through their Primordial Energy sea. Quite a number of people fainted either from the pain or anger.

“Li Xuan, help me search. They must have bought quite a number of Companion Eggs at the market before they came. Let’s see if they still have any on them.” As Zhou Wen spoke, he personally pulled away a young man’s clothes and found two Companion Eggs.

Li Xuan didn’t stand on ceremony either as he rummaged through the bodies of the rest. Soon, they had found 14 Companion Eggs which were likely at the Legendary stage. As for what type they were, it wasn’t possible for them to tell immediately.

John and company seethed in anger with clenched teeth. Back then, An Tianzuo had crippled his peers, but he didn’t do anything else. Zhou Wen and Li Xuan were even more ruthless. Not only did he cripple them, he even took everything from them.

“Let’s go.” After searching, Zhou Wen turned around and left, ignoring John and company.

“Old Zhou, what sort of movement technique was that? It’s way too cool. You actually managed to float in midair like Superman,” Li Xuan asked Zhou Wen as he looked at him enviously. Clearly, he was somewhat tempted.

“That’s not a movement technique. Unless you give up the Invincible Connate Divine Art, you can forget about it,” Zhou

Wen told a half-truth.

Even if Li Xuan was willing to give up the Invincible Connate Divine Art, he might not be able to master the Godfiend Era. Zhou Wen’s Godfiend Era was simulated by the Lost Immortal Sutra, not that he had succeeded in cultivating it.

When Li Xuan heard that, he heaved a sigh of relief and said depressingly, “Forget it. Although flying in the air is very cool, I’m not bad either.”

The two of them headed east. They knew that Connate Holy Temple was in the east from maps drawn by their predecessors. However, the exact location was unclear.

Every time someone entered the Holy Land, the map they drew was different, but the general location of the Holy Temples Temple was never wrong.

There were no dimensional creatures in the Holy Land, so the duo didn’t encounter any danger. After walking for more than half a day, they saw a sea in front of them. On the cliff by the seaside stood an ancient purple building.

“It should be there.” Li Xuan was delighted as he got Zhou Wen to rush over.

By the time they reached the ancient building, there were already several youths standing in front of the building. Clearly, they were all here to receive the Connate Holy Temple’s test.

When they saw Zhou Wen, they were slightly taken aback. They were somewhat suspicious, as though they were wondering how Zhou Wen had managed to come this far.

From their expressions, Zhou Wen knew that these people definitely knew that John was about to besiege him and Li Xuan.

“Zhou Wen, you sure are lucky. You actually weren’t stopped by John and the rest,” said a black-robed youth coldly.

“My luck has always been pretty good,” Zhou Wen said.

“However, your luck has come to an end. My goal is An Jing. I found it beneath me to fight you, but since she didn’t come and that useless bum, John, failed to stop you, I just can’t let you return whole now that you have come to me yourself. I have to leave some mark on you to show An Tianzuo when you return,” the youth in black said arrogantly.

“What’s with all the nonsense? If you want to attack, hurry up. Don’t delay us from accepting the Connate Holy Temple’s test,” Zhou Wen said casually.

Without another word, the black-robed youth released terrifying black flames from his body. He threw a punch at Zhou Wen like an erupting volcano.

Zhou Wen didn’t use the banana fan. Instead, he switched his Primordial Energy Art to the Ancient Imperial Sutra and struck out with Ashen Palm, meeting the black-robed youth’s fist.

As their fist and palm met, the youth in black felt a scorching pain in his visceral organs. He opened his mouth and spat out a large pool of blood as his body limply collapsed to the ground.

The smiles on the faces of the youths beside him froze and a chill ran down their spines.

They knew the strength of the black-robed youth very well. He was rather famous among the six hero families and was in no way inferior to John. However, he couldn’t even withstand Zhou Wen’s strike.

Could this be another An Tianzuo? They had an ominous feeling.

In the middle of the mountains, a beautiful butterfly leisurely flew past and, surprisingly, there was a person sitting on its back.

As the butterfly flew, the person revealed a look of surprise. The butterfly changed its direction and landed on a mountain peak.

More than ten people were lying on the mountaintop, moaning in pain. It was John’s group.

“Lance, you’re finally here!” John was overjoyed when he saw the person on the butterfly’s back.

“What happened?” Lance looked at John and the others while asking in surprise.

“We had our Primordial Energy sea destroyed by Zhou Wen. He even stole our things…” John recounted what had happened through gritted teeth. Finally, he pleaded. “That Zhou Wen has powerful Companion Beasts aiding him and we weren’t his match. Now, you are the only one who can maintain the dignity of our six hero families. Perhaps no one else is his match.”

“This Zhou Wen is rather interesting, but I’ve already said that I’m not interested in him. Furthermore, you were the ones who went knocking on his door and ended up being crippled by him. You only have yourselves to blame for your

lacking skills.” As Lance spoke, he patted the butterfly beneath him and it immediately rose up and left the mountain.

John and the others were stunned. They didn’t expect that Lance would actually disregard the solidarity between the six hero families.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 205 - The Holy Temple’s Invitation

Chapter 205 The Holy Temple’s Invitation

Zhou Wen sat on the stone steps outside the Connate Holy Temple to game while Li Xuan entered to take the test.

The youth in black and the few others had long disappeared. The youth’s Primordial Energy sea had been destroyed and he had even had his possessions robbed from him. They didn’t dare stay here any longer.

Zhou Wen couldn’t help but feel somewhat disappointed that he had died once again at the hands of the Golden Flying Ant. He didn’t know how many times he had been killed by it; yet, he had failed to touch the white cocoon.

Zhou Wen really wanted to know what was inside the white cocoon.

“Why are you the only one here? Did no one else come here to the Connate Holy Temple?” Just as Zhou Wen was about to restart his game, he saw a man descending on a butterfly. The man glanced at the sealed temple door and then looked at Zhou Wen.

“There’s another person inside the holy temple,” Zhou Wen replied when he saw that the man didn’t harbor any ill intentions.

After alighting from the butterfly’s back, Lance unsummoned the butterfly and looked at Zhou Wen’s phone. “I enjoy playing mobile games too. However, I play fighting games. These kinds of repetitive games aren’t suitable for me.”

Saying that, Lance took out his cell phone and launched a game. “It’s a pity that the magnetic field here is too unstable and causes excessive signal interference. Otherwise, we could network and play together.”

“I don’t play fighting games, ” Zhou Wen said.

“That’s such a pity.” Lance seemed a little disappointed as he sat down on the steps beside him. As he gamed, he asked, “Are you also interested in the Connate Holy Temple?”

“No, I’m just accompanying a friend here to take a look. Are you also here to accept its test?” Zhou Wen asked.

“Well, not really. I’m only here to see what the Connate Holy Temple looks like. I have no intention of receiving the Connate Holy Temple’s special physique.”

Zhou Wen found this person rather interesting. As he spoke, he played games. His actions and thoughts didn’t conflict, and his handling was extremely fine. This wasn’t something an ordinary person could do.

“Since you came to the Connate Holy Temple, why don’t you give it a try? Perhaps there might be a chance of obtaining a Connate Infinite physique,” Zhou Wen asked with interest.

While playing games, Lance said, “It’s not only the Connate Infinite physique, I’m actually not interested in any of the special physiques in the Holy Land. It’s just that my family insists that I come. So, I came to take a look and since I’m

here, I might as well visit all the Holy Temples. I'll just treat it as a vacation."

"You sure are interesting." Zhou Wen found this person interesting.

"You're very interesting too. I've heard of people vying for the nominations here in the Holy Land, but never about someone here to accompany their friend," Lance said with a smile.

"I plan on vying for them too, but I don't have my sights on the Connate Infinite physique," Zhou Wen said.

Lance lowered his phone and sized up Zhou Wen for a moment before saying, "The six types of physiques in the Holy Land have their own advantages and weaknesses. This Connate Infinite physique has very high requirements on one's body, so ordinary people are unable to meet the requirements. According to what I know, in the League, only those who cultivate in the Invincible Connate Divine Art can barely meet the requirements. From the looks of it, you don't look like someone who cultivates in it. Your aura is a little odd. I'm afraid it's not compatible with any of the Holy Temples' special physiques. If you wish to vie for one, the difficulty might be higher than the others."

"Human effort can achieve anything." Zhou Wen wasn't willing to elaborate on his matters, but he was rather interested in Lance. He asked, "Why don't you want a special physique? This is something many want to vie for."

"It's precisely because everyone wants it. It's been so many years and although there aren't many people with the six special physiques in the League, there are still quite a number of them. There's no point in me obtaining what others have. It's rather pointless so I might as well not get it.

Besides, An Tianzuo of the An family doesn’t have any special physiques. Yet, he can suppress his peers. And if he can do it, so can I.” Lance seldom shared such thoughts, but for some reason, he mentioned it in passing to Zhou Wen.

Upon hearing An Tianzuo’s name, Zhou Wen’s expression turned odd.

“You know An Tianzuo?” Lance acutely guessed that Zhou Wen knew An Tianzuo from his expression.

“Yes, but we aren’t on good terms. If you wish to ask me about him, I’m afraid you will be disappointed,” Zhou Wen said with a

shrug.

“There’s no need… There’s no need… Please don’t tell me anything about An Tianzuo.” Lance hurriedly waved his hands.

“Why is that?” Zhou Wen looked at Lance in puzzlement.

“I will personally defeat him in the future. If I hear about him now, it will be too boring if I end up learning about his weaknesses. The An Tianzuo I want to defeat is the strongest An Tianzuo I can face,” said Lance solemnly.

Zhou Wen thought to himself, From the looks of it, this person should also be from the six hero families. Otherwise, he wouldn’t be thinking about defeating An Tianzuo all day. However, it’s strange. Doesn’t he know that I’m the one coming on behalf of the An family?

After chatting for a while, they seemed to get along pretty well. They also talked about their experience in cultivation and martial techniques. Although they understood things

differently, their shared concepts that were congruent with each other.

As the two were chatting, they suddenly saw the door to the temple open. Li Xuan walked out.

“How was it?” Zhou Wen got up and asked.

“I passed, but I’ve no idea if anyone will have better results than mine. We’ll know in ten days,” Li Xuan said with a smile. “I’m done. Which holy temple do you want to head to? I’ll accompany you.”

At that moment, Li Xuan saw Lance. Clearly, he didn’t know him. Seeing that he and Zhou Wen seemed to get along pretty well, he asked curiously, “Who is this? Someone you know?”

“I just got to know him.” Only then did Zhou Wen recall that he didn’t know of his name. Neither of them had said their names.

Lance stood up and said, “It’s time for me to go in. See you again if there’s a chance.”

However, before Lance could enter the Connate Holy Temple, a wyrm statue coiled around a stone pillar in front of the door suddenly opened its eyes. Its body moved as it came alive. It stretched out its head and stared at Zhou Wen. “Are you willing to be the representative of my Connate Holy Temple?”

The three of them were slightly taken aback. Lance looked at Zhou Wen with a strange expression. As a member of the six hero families, he had never heard of anyone receiving an invitation from a holy temple.

Even the first six heroes who came to the Holy Land had only been chosen after many trials.

It was the first time he had seen an invitation extended by the holy temple.

“Zhou Wen, what are you waiting for? Quick, agree.” Li Xuan hurriedly nudged Zhou Wen when he saw him in a daze.

However, Zhou Wen wasn’t feeling happy about being invited. The reason he was stunned was because after the wyrm sent out the invitation, his Life Providence, Sigh of the King, seemed to be in a frenzy. A sense of disgust spread through him, affecting him with those emotions.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 206 - Who’s the Real Scion?

Chapter 206 Who’s the Real Scion?

That feeling was intense, so intense that Zhou Wen didn’t hesitate to reject it. “Sorry, I only accompanied my friend here to take a look. I don’t wish to obtain anything from the Connate Holy Temple.”

The wyrm shot Zhou Wen a look again before slowly retreating back to the stone pillar and slowly transforming into a lifeless statue.

Lance looked at Zhou Wen with piqued interest.

Li Xuan sighed and said, “Old Zhou, if you rejected it because of me, I will be touched and also sad.”

“That’s not it. Connate Infinite physique wasn’t my goal to begin with. Even without you, I would still reject it.” Zhou Wen was telling the truth.

“That makes me even more depressed,” Li Xuan joked.

“Let’s go and visit the other holy temples.” Zhou Wen only wanted to visit the other holy temples to take a look.

The Sigh of the King was a result of his own attributes and the Lost Immortal Sutra, but now that the Sigh of the King

had ostracized the holy temple, it was likely difficult for Zhou Wen’s original advancement plan to succeed.

If I can’t use a special physique to raise my stats to 21 points, how can I advance to the Epic stage? Zhou Wen was puzzled.

This fellow sure is interesting. Seeing Zhou Wen and Li Xuan leave, Lance turned and entered the Connate Holy Temple.

Zhou Wen and Li Xuan rushed to the Sun God Temple, not because of the Sun Strafe Art, but because it was closest to the Connate Holy Temple.

However, they did not know that the members of the six hero families were already gathered together, discussing how to deal with Zhou Wen.

Previously, when Liz had gone to the various families to seek their cooperation, most of the members of the six hero families thought nothing of it. They felt that there was no need for them to involve themselves in dealing with Zhou Wen since An Jing wasn’t coming.

However, who knew that John would have his Primordial Energy sea crippled by Zhou Wen despite leading more than ten people to teach him a lesson. Even the black-robed youth of the Xia family had been crippled.

Zhou Wen appeared to be another An Tianzuo, making many of the members of the six hero families find it unbearable.

“An Tianzuo has already humiliated our six families. Now, there’s another, Zhou Wen. Such a tendency cannot be encouraged. What do you think?” Xia Bing said coldly.

The black-robed youth that Zhou Wen had robbed of his Primordial Energy sea in front of the Connate Holy Temple, was Xia Bing's younger brother.

"Originally, I couldn't be bothered with him, but I never expected him to be so outrageous. We should really teach him a lesson. Otherwise, others will think that we are easily bullied. In the future, anyone will dare to bully us," Dugu Chuan of the Dugu family added.

"Zhou Wen has to be crippled. However, he has an abnormally powerful Companion Beast on him. It can transform into a fan that can even withstand my Light of Judgment. If we can't deal with the fan, I'm afraid it will be difficult to subdue him," John said weakly.

"A Companion Beast Primordial Energy Skill that even the Light of Judgment can't withstand is something we have to be wary of. If only the Goddess of Wind's Protection was here. That treasure is most resistant to wind-elemental powers," said Xia Bing.

John said with a bitter smile, "I did bring the Goddess of Wind's Protection, but Zhou Wen snatched it away. However, even with the Goddess of Wind's Protection, it was useless. After all, that item can only protect one person. The others will still be injured by the fan's strength."

Xia Bing and company were taken aback when they heard that. They never expected John to spend that much. He had even brought the Goddess of Wind's Protection. It was a pity that Zhou Wen had robbed it from him.

Dugu Chuan pondered for a moment before saying, "Such a Primordial Energy Skill definitely expends a great deal of Primordial Energy. All we need to do is use a tag-team

strategy and expend his Primordial Energy. That way, it will be useless even if he has the fan."

John hurriedly shook his head and said, "This method won't work. When we were fighting him previously, he used it six times during the battle. However, he still had plenty of Primordial Energy to use other Primordial Energy Skills. I believe he has some treasure that can rapidly recover his Primordial Energy."

"In that case, it's really a big problem." Dugu Chuan frowned.

"It's not much trouble. Leave that fan to me," Xia Bing said.

"Xia Bing, are you confident? We can't fail again. Otherwise, the six hero families will become laughing stocks," Dugu Chuan said.

"It's not convenient for me to elaborate on the details, but don't worry. As long as I confirm that the fan is a manifestation of the wind-elemental Companion Beast, I have a hundred percent chance of making it useless." Xia Bing was confident.

"Alright, I'll leave the fan problem to you. Let's find Zhou Wen now," said Dugu Chuan as he stood up.

"Wait," John called out to him.

"Is there anything else?" Dugu Chuan frowned.

John coughed lightly and said, "Besides possessing that fan, Zhou Wen is also very skilled in flight. Without using any flying Companion Beasts or mounts, he is able to move freely in the sky, almost like Superman. I wonder what Primordial Energy Skill he cultivates in or what kind of flying

treasure he possesses. You have to be constantly on guard when you head over. Don’t let him use his flying abilities to escape.”

“Is it a wind-elemental flying skill?” Xia Bing asked.

“I don’t think so. I didn’t sense the power of the wind on him.” John shook his head.

“This is a little troublesome. If it’s not a wind-elemental flying skill, I won’t be able to do anything to him,” Xia Bing said with a frown.

“Leave this problem to me. I promise I won’t let him escape,” said a blonde youth.

When Xia Bing and Dugu Chuan saw that the person who spoke was Pros, they all nodded slightly. They fully trusted his abilities and didn’t say anything else other than prepare to set off.

“Wait,” John called out to them again.

“What else is there?” Xia Bing was getting impatient.

“Zhou Wen still has a saber. It’s extremely sharp. My Legendary Snake of Brilliance was easily chopped apart by it. Also, the flying mounts we used previously were also split into two with a single strike. You have to be careful,” John added.

“What else do you know? Say it all at once.” Dugu Chuan already had a headache.

A terrifying pet, a powerful flying skill, and an extremely sharp weapon. Any one of these items was enough to make an ordinary person world famous. Yet, Zhou Wen actually

had all three at the same time. It was no wonder that even John had been defeated by him. It wasn’t simply because of his incompetence.

“There’s nothing else. By the way, Zhou Wen still has a Companion Beast. Its defensive strength is extremely high, making it difficult for ordinary Legendary weapons to injure it. There’s also a knight pet that has a powerful offensive and destructive power…” John added after some thought.

Dugu Chuan, Xia Bing, and company looked at John as a thought arose in their minds. Who’s the real scion? Aren’t our six hero families the most powerful and rich families in the alliance? Why does it seem like Zhou Wen is richer than us?

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 207 - Battle in Front of the Temple

Chapter 207 Battle in Front of the Temple

When Zhou Wen and Li Xuan arrived at Sun God Temple, they were somewhat surprised to discover that there wasn’t a single person in front of it. Furthermore, the temple’s main door was open, proving that no one was undergoing a test.

“That’s odd. Is the Sun God Temple that unpopular? Why isn’t anyone here undergoing the test?” Li Xuan looked around in puzzlement. Indeed, there was no one.

“We came rather late after being caught up with matters. Perhaps the people who came here to take the test have already left.” Zhou Wen walked towards the Sun God Temple’s interior, intending to give it a try. He wanted to know if the Sun God Temple really ostracized the special physiques.

After Zhou Wen entered the temple, the door automatically closed. Li Xuan sat on the stone steps outside and waited for him.

However, just as he sat down, he saw a group of people walk over. When Li Xuan took a glance, his expression changed drastically. His lackadaisical appearance instantly vanished as his expression turned solemn.

The people who approached were all members of the six hero families, so it was obviously not a coincidence that they were here together.

“You are Li Xuan from Luoyang’s Li family?” Nearly fifty people surrounded the temple as Xia Bing sized up Li Xuan.

“I’m Li Xuan. Hello, Miss Xia.” Li Xuan bowed slightly at Xia Bing.

Li Xuan recognized Xia Bing. Among the six great hero families, the Xia family had its roots in the East District. It was the biggest and wealthiest family there. Even though the Li family was considered a wealthy family in Luoyang, it was nothing compared to the Xia family.

Furthermore, the Li family and the Xia family had business dealings and had many connections. Even the Li family’s Invincible Connate Divine Art was obtained from the Xia family.

“Since you addressed me as Miss Xia, I’ll let you leave on account of your father and second brother. Don’t interact with people like Zhou Wen again. It won’t do you any good,” Xia Bing said as she walked towards the main door.

“Miss Xia, Zhou Wen is undergoing a test inside. You can’t enter now,” Li Xuan said with a smile, but he didn’t make way.

“We are precisely waiting for him to take the test. Does he really think he can obtain the Sun God Body? An Tianzuo failed to obtain it. It will be the same for him. Furthermore, he has to pay the price,” said Pros disdainfully.

“What do you mean?” Li Xuan’s smile deepened, but he realized that something was amiss.

Although Li Xuan didn’t know what they had done, things were definitely not that simple. Logically speaking, outsiders

wouldn’t be able to enter the temple during someone’s test, nor would they be able to disturb the people inside.

However, from the way Pros spoke, they clearly had a way of influencing Zhou Wen who was undergoing the trial. They might even be able to deal him some form of damage.

“Cut the crap and get out of my way.” Xia Bing was already impatient. She was infuriated that her brother had his Primordial Energy sea crippled by Zhou Wen. She couldn’t wait to personally destroy Zhou Wen’s Primordial Energy sea.

“Miss Xia, what are you planning to do?” Li Xuan didn’t move as he continued to block her way.

Xia Bing frowned slightly as she stared at Li Xuan and said, “Li Xuan, do you have a death wish?”

Seeing that he couldn’t get anything out of her, Li Xuan wiped away his smile and looked at Xia Bing. “Miss Xia, I really don’t wish to be enemies with you. However, the person undergoing the test is my friend. I haven’t had friends since I was young, and two of my friends died not long ago. It greatly upset me, so I really do not wish to see my friend get hurt. Can you tell me what you wish to do to Zhou Wen?”

“To have the courage to say such things, Luoyang’s Li family can be considered quite impressive. However, you have to understand your limits, or you might not be able to bear the consequences,” Xia Bing said.

“Cut the crap with him. I’ll finish him off first before destroying Zhou Wen’s trial.” Without Xia Bing’s patience, Pros threw a punch at Li Xuan. The fist flashed with terrifying lightning, bringing about horrifying beams of light.

Li Xuan raised his fist to receive the punch. When the fists collided, Li Xuan’s body immediately trembled, as though he had been electrocuted, before he was sent flying by Pros’s punch.

Li Xuan’s body slammed into the Sun God Temple’s door and he immediately spat out a mouthful of blood. However, he stumbled to his feet and walked back to Pros with gritted teeth.

“You are courting death.” With another punch, Pros’s lightning-like punch sent Li Xuan flying once again. It looked like Li Xuan was even more miserable than the last time.

However, Li Xuan still stubbornly walked back. He looked like he was about to lose his footing, as though a gust of wind would topple him.

Pros frowned and said, “Li Xuan, do you really want to die here? Is it worth it for Zhou Wen?”

“I don’t want to see my friend get hurt again. Let him off, please?” Li Xuan muttered.

“Pros, don’t waste any more time. Just cripple him,” said Dugu Chuan.

With a nod, Pros punched Li Xuan again, but this time, he struck Li Xuan’s abdomen.

Typically, when a person cultivated in a Primordial Energy Art, they would need to store their Primordial Energy in one area. This area was the Primordial Energy sea, but the locations varied depending on the Primordial Energy Art.

Most of the Primordial Energy sea was in the lower dantian, which was where the abdomen was. If the Primordial Energy

sea was crippled, Primordial Energy would leak, making it impossible to store any more Primordial Energy. It was equivalent to being crippled.

There were also some Primordial Energy Arts that had Primordial Energy seas not in the lower dantian, and that made it more difficult to find.

Pros didn't know where Li Xuan's Primordial Energy sea was, so he first attacked Li Xuan's abdomen. If his Primordial Energy sea was there, such a terrifying lightning blast could penetrate his Primordial Energy, causing his Primordial Energy to leak and turn him into a cripple.

Bam!

Li Xuan was sent flying once again. He looked even more miserable than before. He struggled to get up, but he staggered around, unable to even stand properly. Yet, he still attempted to get up and walk back.

Everyone was perturbed. There were not many people in this era who would be so foolish for their friends.

However, Xia Bing suddenly said with an odd expression, "Something's not right. His body has a jade-like luster, and his eyes are faintly glowing. It's a sign that he has mastered the Invincible Connate Divine Art. Such injuries are nothing to a Legendary who has cultivated the Invincible Connate Divine Art. Furthermore, his Primordial Energy sea isn't in his lower dantian. It's impossible for him to be in such a wretched state."

Xia Bing's words left everyone stunned. When Li Xuan heard Xia Bing's words, his staggering body also straightened up. Wiping away the blood from his mouth, his entire bearing changed.

“From the looks of it, I can’t hide it from you, Miss Xia.” Li Xuan sighed slightly. He originally wanted to stall for time, but unfortunately, with Xia Bing, who was familiar with the Invincible Connate Divine Art, there was no use no matter how superb his acting was.

When Pros saw that he had been fooled, he was immediately enraged. The lightning on his body flared as the bolts of lightning around his fist struck Li Xuan like a sun.

Li Xuan didn’t retreat; instead, he advanced. A heavy sword that was wrapped in lightning appeared in his hand. Lightning flashed on the sword as it headed straight for Pros’s fist.

Boom!

Two types of lightning exploded in the sky, only to reveal Li Xuan standing proudly on the stone steps with his heavy sword in hand. As for Pros, he had taken a few steps back and spat out a mouthful of blood.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 208 - Sun God Temple

Chapter 208 Sun God Temple

Everyone was astonished. Even among the six hero families, Pros was rather famous. It was truly shocking that he had been defeated by Li Xuan.

“Isn’t that Thundergod General? The one he bought at the trading market actually had the Thundergod Augmentation skill. How lucky.” Immediately, someone recognized the Thundergod Sword in Li Xuan’s hand.

“He’s really lucky. He bought a Thundergod General with Thundergod Augmentation for only two million. This punk is really lucky,” someone said jealously.

Back at the trading market, Li Xuan’s spending of two million to buy a Thundergod Companion Egg had made him the target of mockery. It was a Companion Egg that could be bought for four to five hundred thousand outside; yet, he chose to spend two million here. It was an act of a fool.

However, when they saw Thundergod General with Thundergod Augmentation, many of them turned green with envy.

The Thundergod General was the best offensive pet among Legendaries. Even a fellow like Pros, who was adept at lightning-elemental forces, suffered quite a bit.

“So Pros, who claims to be the son of lightning, is nothing much after all. He can’t even defeat the lightning forces of a Companion Beast. How disappointing.” Li Xuan wanted to

infuriate Pros and make him fight him alone. That way, he could delay things.

“Pros, he’s deliberately trying to provoke you to stall for time,” Xia Bing said.

Pros nodded slightly as lightning flickered in his golden pupils. He stared at Li Xuan and said, “You’ve successfully provoked me, so die.”

However, he wasn’t the only one who made a move. A few members of the six hero families attacked Li Xuan in a bid to finish him off in the fastest time possible before destroying Zhou Wen’s trial.

“I’ve been unknown for sixteen years. Today, I’m fighting the masses with one sword. I don’t seek a place in history, only an eternal name.” Li Xuan held the Thundergod Sword in hand and stood proudly in front of the Sun God Temple. This was the first time he had looked this serious.

The sword struck out like lightning, causing ripples to form as it surged towards the attacks of his assailants.

When Zhou Wen walked into the temple, he originally thought of it as merely a palace, but after entering it, he realized that the inside of the temple was a void.

In this void, there was a sun hanging high above. It emitted an extremely resplendent divine light, as though it was the center of this empty universe.

At Zhou Wen’s feet were a stone staircase floating in the void, one that extended towards the sun.

“Path seeker, step on the stone steps and walk towards the sun. The closer you are to the sun, the more likely it is for

you to obtain the God of the Sun’s power.” An ethereal voice sounded in the void.

Zhou Wen didn’t sense any abnormal reaction from the Sigh of the King as he walked towards the stone steps ahead. After taking a few steps, he felt the temperature around him increase significantly.

The temperature had risen quickly. After walking more than ten steps, Zhou Wen felt as though he had walked into a furnace.

On the other hand, the chick on his shoulder looked like it was enjoying itself as if this heat made it very comfortable.

Before Zhou Wen entered the hall, he had switched the Primordial Energy Art to the Ancient Imperial Sutra. The Ancient Imperial Sutra also seemed to have a portion of the power of fire, but it was completely different from the power of the Sun God Temple.

Zhou Wen originally believed that Ancient Imperial Sutra’s powers of a similar trait would allow him to take advantage of the situation, but now, he realized that that wasn’t the case. Despite using all his strength to resist the sun’s mighty splendor, he was already covered in sweat after taking about twenty steps. If he continued walking another ten steps, he might end up dehydrated by the sun.

With no other choice, Zhou Wen had no choice but to activate his Lotus Flower Buddha Body Primordial Energy Skill to resist the Sun God’s splendor. But even so, he only managed to take a few more steps; he was still a long way from the sun in the void.

From the looks of it, ordinary people can’t withstand the power of the Sun God Temple. Unless they cultivate in a

corresponding Primordial Energy Art and receive the recognition of the temple; otherwise, even an Epic expert wouldn’t be able to walk to the front of the sun. Zhou Wen already had the intention to retreat.

He was only here to seek out a way to break through, not to risk his life. Since he knew that there was no possibility, there was no need to continue.

Just as Zhou Wen was about to retreat, the Ancient Imperial Sutra inside him automatically changed back into the Lost Immortal Sutra. The Lost Immortal Sutra slowly circulated as the originally ethereal Lost Immortal Sutra gradually turned warm.

As the Lost Immortal Sutra heated up his Primordial Energy, the Sun God’s splendor around Zhou Wen’s body no longer seemed to be as hot as before. Zhou Wen immediately felt energized.

The Lost Immortal Sutra has finally shown its effects. Could it be that there’s hope of advancing this time? Zhou Wen was delighted as he dispelled the thought of retreating and continued proceeding.

After the Lost Immortal Sutra showed its effects, the effects of the Sun God’s splendor on him grew less and less. When it shone on Zhou Wen, he found it comfortably warm. It wasn’t anything like the scorching heat from before.

If I were to cultivate in the Sun Strafe Art, the effect would probably be like this if I came to the Sun God Temple, right? Zhou Wen thought to himself as he walked towards the sun.

The sun that seemed to be far away also seemed to become much closer. With every step Zhou Wen took, he could sense that he was rapidly approaching the sun.

How is this a test? It’s clearly a selection. Those who are selected by the temple would be able to get close with a casual stroll, but those who aren’t selected will not be able to succeed no matter how hard they try. If not for the fact that the Lost Immortal Sutra is able to fool the terrifying existence here, even if I had advanced to the Epic stage, I wouldn’t have been able to reach the sun. Indeed, nothing in the world is fair. It’s the same for the miraculous Sun God Temple.

As he pondered, Zhou Wen was getting closer and closer to the sun. The sun was no longer as blinding as before, allowing him to see it clearly.

It turned out that it wasn’t a sun, but a golden seed. It looked like a pine nut, and its entire body was like a golden crystal.

The seed emitted light and heat, making it look like a sun.

Zhou Wen glanced at the chick on his shoulder and was surprised to see it still looking relaxed. It didn’t seem to be affected by the sun’s temperature at all.

He had the Lost Immortal Sutra that played the role of confusing the Sun God Temple’s mechanism; therefore, he wasn’t suppressed by the power of the Sun God Temple. This was how he had managed to reach this point.

However, the chick didn’t have the Lost Immortal Sutra. The fact that it relied on its body to withstand the forces made it rather terrifying

I wonder what level this chick’s mother is. From its appearance, it’s unlikely that its mother is as simple as an Epic creature. Zhou Wen proceeded forward step by step, approaching the seed without suffering any effects.

Finally, when Zhou Wen was on the last stone step, the seed floated inches away from him. All he needed to do was stretch out his hand to obtain the sun-like seed.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 209 - The Sun Disc

Chapter 209 The Sun Disc

Outside, Li Xuan had his back against the temple's door. He brandished the Thundergod Sword crazily, blocking one attack after another.

However, no matter how powerful he was, he couldn't withstand all the attacks-sword beams, battle aura, flames, ice, and various powers tore through the flaws in his moves, tearing apart the armor he was wearing. Even his Three-Eyed Golden Warrior's Golden Silk Soft Armor was damaged from the numerous attacks.

A terrifying sword beam directly tore through Li Xuan's body of flesh and blood. The powerful battle aura made his bones produce cracking sounds, as all kinds of attacks left countless wounds on him.

Li Xuan's injuries were now in more than a hundred spots. However, he still stood in front of the hall and continued brandishing the Thundergod Sword, as though he was a tireless war machine.

As for the injuries on his body, they healed at an unbelievable speed. Often, wounds that had just been formed would be healed a few seconds later. The wounds seemed to only flow through his body like water, disappearing from a mere flick.

Xia Bing and the others were appalled by the rapid recovery of his injuries.

Although the Invincible Connate Divine Art has powerful recovery abilities, he’s only at the Legendary stage. It can’t have such a powerful effect unless there’s something wrong with his Life Providence. Xia Bing had already guessed the reason, and she couldn’t help but feel envious and jealous.

The Invincible Connate Divine Art was the first Primordial Energy Art the Xia family had obtained. It also corresponded to the Connate Holy Temple. However, the Invincible Connate Divine Art needed a virgin male to cultivate it. Once he wasn’t a virgin, he would become a cripple and it would require cultivating all over again. Therefore, the Xia family would only give up the Invincible Connate Divine Art unwillingly.

Back then, one of the six heroes, a Xia family elder, had turned from an invincible hero to an ordinary person in order to get married and have children. In order to prevent such things from happening again, the Xia family’s elders had sought out several other Primordial Energy Arts to replace the Invincible Connate Divine Art.

However, the Xia family had no intention of handing the Invincible Connate Divine Art over to someone else. The Li family had once helped the Xia family a great deal and suggested using the Invincible Connate Divine Art as an exchange. Although the Xia family had given it to them, it was only a simplified version. It was still far from the true Invincible Connate Divine Art.

Furthermore, without the corresponding Connate Infinite Body, the power one was able to use with the Invincible Connate Divine Art was extremely limited.

However, Li Xuan, who was only practicing a simplified version of the Invincible Connate Divine Art and didn’t even

have a Connate Infinite Body, was able to condense a Life Providence that was in no way inferior to the Xia family's hero. It was truly enviable.

Li Xuan's Life Providence was clearly different from that of the Xia family's elders. Xia Bing only knew that of a powerful recovery ability, but she wasn't too sure of its exact functions.

"This fellow is an unkillable monster. There's no point in fighting any further. If we don't quickly enter the Sun God Temple, I'm afraid Zhou Wen will be out soon. All the work we did previously would be for nothing," said Dugu Chuan.

"I know that too, but what can I do?" Pros pummeled Li Xuan's chest with his punches, causing it to cave slightly. But in a blink of an eye, his chest bulged once again, as though he had never been injured.

"I do have a Companion Beast that should be useful. Although it won't kill him, it can control him. However, with this pet down, I'm afraid you'll have to put in more effort when dealing with Zhou Wen later," said Dugu Chuan hesitantly.

"Aren't you aware of the situation? Let's get rid of this monster first. As long as we destroy Zhou Wen's trial, he'll be severely injured. Will it be difficult for us to cripple him when that happens?" Pros said.

"Alright." After some thought, Dugu Chuan agreed that it made sense. Without any hesitation, he summoned a Companion Beast.

It was a huge, snow-white spider with blood-colored patterns on its back. The patterns looked like a woman's face.

In the next second, the spider transformed into a snow-white pole and landed in Dugu Chuan’s hands. Soon, he found an opportunity and struck Li Xuan with the snow-white pole.

The weapon, that looked like a pole, instantly transformed into a huge net that bound Li Xuan’s body. Dugu Chuan pulled the net with all his might, trying to pull Li Xuan away from the door.

Li Xuan tried using the Thundergod Sword to slice through the net, but it was stuck to the net. The more he struggled, the tighter the net became.

However, Li Xuan was rather powerful. Dugu Chuan alone was unable to pull Li Xuan away.

“Why aren’t you helping?” shouted Dugu Chuan. A few people beside him rushed over to help him pull the net and soon, Li Xuan’s figure was forcibly pulled out.

After Dugu Chuan pulled Li Xuan away, he said to the nearby Pros, “Pros, we’ll hold him back for now. Quickly take action. Don’t let Zhou Wen complete the trial.”

“Alright, leave it to me. Don’t worry.” Without the need for Dugu Chuan to mention it, Pros had already rushed to the door.

Li Xuan wanted to stop him, but there was nothing he could do.

Pros carried an item in his arms—a sun disc. He searched the Sun God Temple’s main door for a while before he placed the sun disc into a groove on the door. The sun disc fitted perfectly with the door, as if they were born together.

The sun disc was left behind by an elder of the Pros family who was also one of the six heroes of the past. The physique he obtained was the Sun God Body.

The sun disc was also an item that the elder had taken out of the Sun God Temple. As the first-generation representative of the Sun God Temple, it gave him authority. If his descendants ever inherited the Sun God Body's bloodline, then they could bring the sun disc back to the Sun God Temple and use the Sun God Body to activate the Sun God Body's enhanced trial.

An enhanced trial was specially prepared for people with the Sun God Body, and its difficulty far exceeded that of ordinary trials. Even people with the Sun God Body might not necessarily pass this trial, much less ordinary people.

In the past, someone from the Pros family had attempted the enhanced trial at Sun God Temple with a Sun God Body, but in the end, not only was he unable to pass the trial, he was even seriously injured. He only fully recovered after three to four years of recuperation.

It was quite a coincidence. Xia Bing and Pros knew that the An family had the Sun Strafe Art which was most compatible with the Sun God Temple. They believed that Zhou Wen must have cultivated the Sun Strafe Art and would come to Sun God Temple to take the test. This was why they set up this trap.

Although Zhou Wen didn't cultivate in the Sun Strafe Art, it was a coincidence that he came to Sun God Temple. It could only be said that Pros and company hit the mark by fluke.

Zhou Wen was just about to reach out to pluck the sun-like seed when he suddenly saw the seed light brighten up, turning abnormally resplendent.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 210 - Getting the Seed

Chapter 210 Getting the Seed

As the seed’s temperature rose abnormally, the surrounding temperature also increased abruptly. Terrifying golden flames burned in the entire Sun God Temple, instantly filling the void.

The seed was like a piece of golden glass with golden symbols shimmering within.

Zhou Wen jumped in fright as his clothes ignited. He immediately knew that something was amiss. The Lost Immortal Sutra was only masquerading his physique after all. He didn’t really possess a Sun God Body, so if he was consumed by the flames, he would definitely be burnt to ashes.

With the golden flames about to engulf him, Zhou Wen was just about to use his summoned banana fan when a cold sensation emanated from his neck as the flames on his body automatically extinguished.

Zhou Wen was slightly taken aback as he looked down and realized that the coolness had come from a pendant hanging around his neck. It was the ivory pendant Wang Mingyuan had given him before he left.

The pendant that Teacher gave me isn’t an ordinary item? Zhou Wen was secretly alarmed.

Without any time to think, Zhou Wen held the banana fan and attempted to rush out of Sun God Temple. As for the

seed, even though he wanted to attempt taking it, he didn’t dare to do so. The temperature on it was terrifyingly high, so even metal would melt upon contact.

Suddenly, the chick on Zhou Wen’s shoulder opened its beak and inhaled. The golden flames surrounding Zhou Wen immediately gushed towards the chick’s mouth like a breach of a dam.

Zhou Wen watched as the golden flames that filled the sky surged like a heavenly river into the chick’s tiny mouth. Its tiny body seemed like a bottomless abyss. All the golden flames -no matter how many were there-were gone the moment they were sucked in.

As the golden flames were swallowed, the pale yellow feathers on the chick’s body began to show a luster. Its feathers looked fuller with a faint golden glow.

The more golden flames it absorbed, the more vibrant its feathers became. It even seemed to have grown bigger in size.

Zhou Wen watched as the golden flames in the void were completely absorbed by the chick. The terrifying heat also vanished, leaving the seed glowing like a miniature sun.

At that moment, the chick’s body had grown to the size of a pigeon. Its feathers were pale gold and looked like a pigeon with a somewhat special color.

“It’s all thanks to you this time.” Zhou Wen patted the chick’s head and stowed away the banana fan.

Although the banana fan’s Grand Yin Wind could suppress the golden flames here, Zhou Wen’s Primordial Energy was limited after all. With his Dao body’s recovery abilities, it

was impossible for him to continuously use the Grand Yin Wind. He would have suffered no matter what.

With the flames extinguished, Zhou Wen looked at the golden seed and frowned slightly. The golden symbol in the seed was still coruscating, allowing him to sense the extreme temperatures of the seed.

He tried to grab it with his hand, but before his fingers could touch the seed, he felt as though he was scalded by the terrifying heat.

Seeing that there was no way for him to obtain the seed, Zhou Wen had an idea. He took out his mysterious phone and aimed at the seed. Indeed, the camera had successfully locked onto the seed. With a snap, the seed immediately vanished and was stored into his phone.

Zhou Wen couldn’t help but be overjoyed. He hurriedly put away his phone and turned to leave.

With the abrupt turn of events happening inside the Sun God Temple, Zhou Wen suspected that something had happened outside.

Outside Sun God Temple, Pros and company were waiting for Zhou Wen to come out. Although there were others who wished for him to die there, they knew that he wouldn’t die so easily. However, it was likely that he would be severely injured.

Facing a heavily injured Zhou Wen would most likely be a lot easier for them.

If John hadn’t described Zhou Wen as he had, they wouldn’t have come up with such a plan. If this were any other time,

they would have directly approached Zhou Wen and suppressed him with force.

Boom!

Finally, the door to the Sun God Temple opened. All of them hurriedly prepared their respective Companion Beasts and Primordial Energy Skills. They planned on taking Zhou Wen down when he rushed out.

However, when they saw the situation inside the Sun God Temple's main door, they were stunned.

At the moment the divine palace opened, the carvings and patterns on it began to emit a holy glow. The stone palace that looked ancient was now resplendent in divine light, as though it was a palace found in myths.

The portrait of the sun at the highest point of the palace emitted unparalleled light, as though it was announcing something to the world.

"Why would there be a phenomenon at the Sun God Temple now? Isn't this a phenomenon that will only happen after ten days? We are still days away before the trial ends. Why is it now…" The more Pros spoke, the softer his voice became and the nastier his expression became.

He had already understood the only reason for such a situation to take place—someone had already walked up to the sun seed and taken it away.

However, the result of his guess was something that even Pros found unbelievable.

Ignoring the fact that using the sun disc could enhance the difficulty of the trial, few people could walk to the sun seed

and take it away in an ordinary Sun God Temple trial.

Even in their families, only two people had done so after all these years. One of them was a first-generation hero, and the other was a person who had inherited the Sun God Body bloodline. The latter had obtained the sun seed by undergoing the ordinary trial.

As for the enhanced trial, even if one had the Sun God Body, no one had ever obtained the sun seed. Zhou Wen naturally didn’t have the Sun God Body. Pros refused to believe that Zhou Wen was able to obtain it in the enhanced trial.

However, no matter how much he refused to believe it, the truth was already in front of him. Zhou Wen had walked out unharmed; even the pigeon on his shoulder was unharmed.

“Pros, what’s going on? Didn’t you say that no one can pass the enhanced trial? That without the Sun God Body, it’s unknown if one can even survive??” Seeing Zhou Wen unscathed, Dugu Chuan couldn’t help but question him.

“How would I know!” Pros was also furious. He too wanted to know what was going on. This was completely different from what he imagined

“Now’s not the time to talk about this. Let’s take down Zhou Wen first and act according to plan. Even if he wasn’t injured in the temple, we can still cripple him,” Xia Bing said as she drew her sword and attacked Zhou Wen.

“You guys sure don’t know when to quit.” Zhou Wen turned his gaze and saw Li Xuan bound in a white net like a fish. He immediately relaxed when he realized that he wasn’t in a terrible state.

With Xia Bing and the others surrounding him, Zhou Wen held the banana fan and fanned them, sweeping out the Grand Yin Wind.

However, to Zhou Wen’s surprise, Xia Bing held a calabash in her hand as she directed it at the Grand Yin Wind and sucked it in. The strong wind was sucked into the calabash, leaving nothing behind.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 211 - Sun God Power Crystal

Chapter 211 Sun God Power Crystal

Zhou Wen was alarmed. As for Dugu Chuan and the others, they were overjoyed. They increased the forces in their hands as all colors of light beams shot towards Zhou Wen.

Pros was already prepared, ready to cast the Myriad Thunder Sky Dungeon at any time to prevent Zhou Wen from escaping through the sky.

Dugu Chuan summoned a strange shield to block Zhou Wen’s sharp Bamboo Blade.

Xia Bing also summoned three Companion Beasts, preparing to restrain Zhou Wen’s Three-Eyed Golden Warrior and Mutated Demonized General.

The others also showcased their full range of abilities, hoping to take down Zhou Wen on the spot, leaving him no room to resist.

However, before Zhou Wen could draw his saber, the chick on his shoulder suddenly spat out resplendent light from its mouth. Golden flames spewed out like a flood, instantly turning the square outside Sun God Temple into an inferno.

Immediately, tragic screams sounded out as everyone was left dumbfounded. They had prepared meticulously for this for so long, having thought of several strategies to use against him. Yet, before those strategies could be used, all of them were burnt to a crisp by the chick on Zhou Wen’s shoulder.

At once, there were endless cries of agony. Many people were screaming as they rolled on the ground, trying to extinguish the flames on them. Some even took off their clothes while running.

Without any hesitation, Zhou Wen drew his saber and charged in. Without throwing any caution to the wind, he mercilessly stabbed their dantians.

Most people had their Primordial Energy sea in their dantians. So with Zhou Wen’s stab, they were practically crippled.

The few who didn’t have Primordial Energy seas at their dantian weren’t any better when they were impaled by Zhou Wen in their abdomens. They writhed on the ground, screaming endlessly.

Zhou Wen tried finding Xia Bing in the chaos, but she was nowhere to be seen. Even Dugu Chuan had disappeared. As for Pros, he had attempted to escape amidst the chaos but was still slashed at by Zhou Wen.

Pros, feeling alarmed and furious, summoned his Companion Beast to block Zhou Wen. He still had full intention of escaping, having no illusions that he could put up a fight.

The chick’s flames had frightened him out of his wits. There were many Legendary Companion Beasts that could spew fire, but to be able to instantly turn an entire square into a sea of flames was something that he had never seen before.

What was even scarier was that those golden flames were clearly not ordinary flames. They could even burn through defensive battle auras. It was appalling.

However, Pros wasn’t as fast as Zhou Wen no matter how fast he fled. Zhou Wen split his Companion Beast into two and slashed his saber at him.

In this perilous situation, Pros turned around and summoned a gigantic ax to meet Zhou Wen’s Bamboo Blade. However, the gigantic ax was cleaved apart upon contact.

In his shock, he didn’t dare fight anymore and retreated as fast as he could.

With a flash, Zhou Wen pierced through Pros’s dantian, causing him to fall to the ground in pain.

Zhou Wen withdrew his saber but didn’t look at him. He brandished his saber and stormed through the crowd. Bamboo Blade sliced through everything it met, be they Primordial Gold weapons or Companion Beast weapons. It was terrifyingly sharp.

To have a single person chase after dozens of people, with the pursuees being members of the six hero family would probably deal a shock to the League if they saw this scene

Fortunately, other than the members of the six families, there were only a few descendants of powerful figures from all over the world. Not many were there to watch.

There was only one spot for all the big shots in the world, unlike the juniors of the six hero families. As long as they were young and strong enough, they could enter the Holy Land.

After they entered, they headed straight for the Holy Land that they had set their sights on. No one wasted time wandering around.

Originally, Xia Bing and company believed that other than Zhou Wen, it was unlikely that descendants of other big shots would choose the Sun God Temple. Therefore, it was unlikely for anyone to see this.

However, to their dismay, this scene was witnessed by someone who had even recorded it.

The incident of An Tianzuo crippling the six hero families has been repeated. That guy is so strong, the person praised as he recorded.

However, he was rather careful. He only hid in the shadows and didn’t expose himself while recording, afraid that the six families would discover him.

By the time the battle ended, the people on the square were all lying on the ground, clutching their abdomens and screaming.

The spider web which bound Li Xuan had been burnt through by the golden flames, protecting him as a result. After escaping, Li Xuan joined the battle without any hesitation. However, he wasn’t beating people, but plundering those who collapsed.

Zhou Wen couldn’t help but feel regretful that he hadn’t found Xia Bing. He wanted to know what the calabash in her hand was.

After plundering the area with Li Xuan, the two of them left, leaving behind the children from the six family clans screaming in pain.

When they arrived in an uninhabited cave, Zhou Wen and Li Xuan sat down to divide the loot. After all, they didn’t know what breed the Companion Eggs were. Each person got half

the pile, allowing Zhou Wen to obtain twenty-six Companion Eggs. They definitely wouldn’t be cheap considering who had purchased them.

Zhou Wen planned on finding a time to use his mysterious phone to check the attributes of the Companion Eggs before choosing to hatch or fuse them.

The worst ones were, of course, a present for the Banana Fairy.

As Zhou Wen was making his plans, the chick flew down from his shoulder and pecked at a Companion Egg. It lowered its head and sucked all the essence in it.

Since the chick had just helped tremendously, eating two Companion Eggs wasn’t a big deal. In a rare instance, Zhou Wen generously gave it another Companion Egg. But to his surprise, it didn’t show any appreciation. It didn’t even look at it as though it was completely uninterested.

“You’re rather picky with food. Even the better if you aren’t eating it.” Zhou Wen put away the Companion Eggs and ignored the chick.

Compared to a Companion Egg, he was more interested in the sun seed. He wanted to know what it was.

Previously, he had been in a hurry to come out and had taken in the sun seed into his mysterious phone, so he hadn’t had a chance to look at it again. He took out his cell phone to take a look and, seeing that the sun seed was still in the blood-colored avatar’s hand, he heaved a sigh of relief.

Using his phone to check the sun seed’s attributes, he was slightly taken aback.

Sun God Power Crystal: A product of the Sun God’s blood essence. Absorbing it will improve one’s body.

A choice to absorb or not appeared on the game screen. Zhou Wen didn’t sense any rejection from the Sigh of the King, so he chose to absorb it.

The Sun God Power Crystal immediately transformed into a golden beam that fused into the blood-colored avatar’s body. This made Zhou Wen also feel a burning sensation surge into his body, causing his body to heat up.

When everything returned to normal, Zhou Wen saw that the blood-colored avatar’s Strength stat had already changed to 21. And behind 21, there was also the word (Sun).

What does that mean? Zhou Wen was somewhat puzzled.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 212 - Trajectory Holy Temple

Chapter 212 Trajectory Holy Temple

Zhou Wen attempted using his Strength, but he didn’t sense any additional attributes or burning effects. He didn’t know what the word “Sun” behind Strength meant.

However, he had finally found a way to make a breakthrough. Zhou Wen planned on visiting the other temples. If he could succeed in obtaining Power Crystals there, he might be able to advance to the Epic stage. When that happened, learning the Mutated Fairy Skill would be a piece of cake.

Among the six holy temples, Zhou Wen had already been to two—the Connate and Sun God Holy Temples. The nearest one to them was the Divine Emperor Holy Temple.

However, after some consideration, Zhou Wen didn’t head to the Divine Emperor Holy Temple. Instead, he headed for one that was slightly further away.

Zhou Wen had seen John’s Holy Emperor body before and guessed that it was likely a Strength-type physique. The Sun God Holy Temple had boosted his Strength, and the two seemed to overlap.

Therefore, Zhou Wen planned on taking a look at the Trajectory Holy Temple first. It was said that it gave one the physique-Body of Trajectory; it was the most mysterious physique among the six.

The Dugu family, which had the Body of Trajectory, didn’t seem to offer any outstanding performance. Hence, this physique was the most controversial. Some people even claimed that the owner of the Body of Trajectory, the first-generation hero of the Dugu family, didn’t deserve to be ranked alongside the other five heroes.

However, the Dugu family’s lineage had continued most stably amongst the six families to date. In contrast, the other five families were more famous and had more power.

However, they would occasionally have people die for various reasons. However, up till now, no one from the Dugu line died.

The other first-generation heroes of the five families were mostly dead, but the original hero of the Dugu family remained alive and well. Now, the power of the Dugu family was so great that it was ranked in the top three of the six families.

Quite a number of people jested in private that having superior martial arts wasn’t as good as having a long life. The Dugu family’s hero had outlasted several young heroes of the other five families. In the future, perhaps once the members of the five families were all dead, the Dugu family would be able to rule the world.

The name—Trajectory-together with the fact that the people from the Dugu family had long lifespans, made Zhou Wen suspect that the Body of Trajectory was a Speed-type physique. Therefore, members of the Dugu family could escape quickly. This allowed them to survive several dangers and stay alive.

Zhou Wen was extremely interested in opportunities to augment his escaping abilities, so he planned on heading to

the Trajectory Holy Temple to take a look.

Many of the people from the six families had been crippled by Zhou Wen, so the few remaining ones didn't dare cause him trouble. It was as though they had vanished into thin air.

Zhou Wen and Li Xuan spent more than a day walking in the Holy Land without meeting a single member of the six families. Instead, they encountered the descendants of several powerful figures from other places.

Those people had indifferent attitudes towards Zhou Wen. They neither offended him nor showed any intention of getting cozy with him. Clearly, they didn't wish to interfere in the feud between Zhou Wen and the six families.

When they arrived at the Trajectory Holy Temple, there was no one outside, but the door was closed. Clearly, someone was undergoing a test inside.

Zhou Wen and Li Xuan could only wait outside. Zhou Wen took out his cell phone and continued gaming while Li Xuan studied them, having the intention of hatching them all.

After waiting for a while, they suddenly heard a rumble. The door to Trajectory Holy Temple opened and a person rushed out.

The person really sped out and ran very quickly. Furthermore, his hair was disheveled and he looked like a lunatic. His face was awash with extreme horror as though he had seen something unbelievable.

"Don't kill me… Don't kill me… I didn't see anything… I didn't see anything…"

“Pal, what’s wrong?” Li Xuan went forward to stop the person and pressed his shoulder as he asked.

Li Xuan wanted to ask what exactly was going on in the Trajectory Holy Temple to scare him to such an extent.

However, the moment Li Xuan pressed down on the man’s shoulder, the man immediately turned pale from fright. What happened next shocked Zhou Wen and Li Xuan.

The person reached out and stabbed his eyes until they were two bloody holes. Then, he struggled to free himself from Li Xuan’s grasp. As he ran, he shouted, “I didn’t see anything… Don’t kill me… Don’t kill me…”

The duo was stunned as they looked at the bloodstains on the ground, wondering if they were dreaming.

“Old Zhou, I think it’s best if we don’t enter this Holy Temple. Although we aren’t afraid of death, if we become a lunatic like that fellow, it’ll be a fate worse than death.” Li Xuan gulped his saliva and turned to look at the Trajectory Holy Temple. The way he looked at it was as though it was a diabolical den.

“Indeed.” Zhou Wen felt that what Li Xuan said made sense. He didn’t wish to become a lunatic, and he was indeed afraid of death.

The Holy Land appeared extremely safe without any dimensional creatures threatening their lives; however, the real danger was within the temples.

Previously, the Sun God Holy Temple had nearly injured Zhou Wen. With the Trajectory Holy Temple being so bizarre, Zhou Wen felt that he didn’t necessarily have to enter.

The two of them had a short discussion before preparing to leave. But at that moment, they saw the crazy man who had just stabbed his eyes run back again.

His eyes were still bleeding and he looked extremely terrifying. As he ran, he shouted, “Help… Help…”

His eyes were blinded, so he stumbled as he ran. It took him a few stumbles before coming in front of the duo. He fell to the ground and hugged Li Xuan’s thigh. “Save me… I don’t want to die… Save me…”

Li Xuan could sense that his body was trembling terribly, as though something extremely terrifying had affected his thoughts, causing such intense convulsions.

“What happened? Tell me clearly first.” Li Xuan felt apologetic towards the person, so he didn’t push him away and comforted him.

Li Xuan thought that if he hadn’t stopped this person just now, this person might not have blinded his eyes.

Even a lunatic would be happier to see things than being blind.

The person hugged Li Xuan’s calf and said in an extremely terrified tone, “I saw a ship-a very, very large ship. Someone on the ship was engaging in murder. All of them died… All of them died… I didn’t see anything… Don’t kill me… Don’t kill me…”

The person said a few more words before his madness worsened. He released Li Xuan’s leg and attempted to escape again.

Zhou Wen extended his hand to pull the person. Since he was blind, there was a chance of him running off a cliff to certain death.

Zhou Wen grabbed the man’s arm, but the man struggled with all his might. He managed to escape with his extraordinary strength, but his sleeve was ripped off by Zhou Wen.

When his gaze landed on the man’s arm, Zhou Wen’s pupils constricted. On the man’s arm, there was an anchor-like tattoo.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 213 - Lunatic

Chapter 213 Lunatic

This was not the first time Zhou Wen had seen an image of the anchor. This was because women were typically taboo to sailors out at sea. Therefore, it was impossible for women to be engraved on an anchor, but this anchor symbol had a woman’s side profile on it. This left a deep impression on him.

Zhou Wen hadn’t figured out what the anchor symbol meant, so he was rather curious. Now, suddenly seeing such a tattoo on the person’s arm, he really wanted to ask him about the origins of it.

Alas, this person was another lunatic. He was running around like a madman. Despite being blind, he kept running. He stumbled and fell several times but refused to stop.

He mentioned that he had seen a ship, and that someone was engaging in murder on it. Does that anchor symbol have any relationship to the ship he mentioned? Zhou Wen thought to himself.

Looking at the ancient Trajectory Holy Temple in the distance, Zhou Wen suddenly realized that his previous guess was wrong.

Most of the six original heroes died in the dimensional zones. Only the old hero of the Dugu family remained well and alive. Perhaps it was not because he had run the fastest.

From the looks of it, he must have seen something terrifying in the Trajectory Holy Temple. Typically, there are two possibilities. One is that there's really something terrifying inside which is why he is so afraid. Another possibility is that there aren't any terrifying things inside. All he saw was an illusion. Either way, this doesn't look like a test of Speed-type physique. As Zhou Wen was in thought, the person had slammed himself into a tree due to his blindness. He fainted as a result.

Zhou Wen walked to the madman and checked his injuries. He realized that he had only suffered superficial wounds and there weren't any serious problems. He had only fainted.

"Do you know who he is?" Zhou Wen asked Li Xuan.

Those who were able to enter the Holy Land were either descendants of the six heroes or the representatives of powerful figures. Although Zhou Wen didn't know him, a knowledgeable person like Li Xuan might.

If he could figure out the identity of this lunatic, he might be able to figure out something about him.

However, Li Xuan shook his head and said, "I don't know him. However, judging from his attire, he doesn't look like someone from the six families. He might be here to represent some big shot."

With Li Xuan not being able to recognize him, Zhou Wen was out of ideas as he said to Li Xuan, "Is there any way to take him out? He's a lunatic and now he's blind. If we leave him here, he might not be able to survive."

"I'm afraid there's no other way now. It's easy to enter the Holy Land, but to leave, the six temples need to make a decision regarding their successors before a path will be

opened. Now, no one can leave," Li Xuan said with a shake of his head.

Zhou Wen had the intention of taking him out and asking about his background, but if he had to wait that long, it wouldn't be convenient to take a lunatic along the way.

"Let's do this. Tie him on my mount and we can bring him with us. After all, I caused him to become blind. It's not good to leave him here," Li Xuan said with a sigh.

"Alright." Zhou Wen happened to share the same thoughts, so he immediately agreed.

After Li Xuan summoned a pet cow, the duo lifted the madman onto the cow's back and used a rope to secure him on it before continuing on their journey to the other temples.

After walking for a short distance, they heard the crazy man on the cow's back speaking. The two of them thought that he had woken up, but when they took a closer look, they saw him lying there and muttering to himself as if he was deliriously talking in a dream.

"Trajectory Holy Temple… I must go to the Trajectory Holy Temple… As long as I enter the Trajectory Holy Temple, I'll know what exactly happened on the ship… Why are they killing each other… Why… Don't… Don't kill me… Don't kill me… I didn't see anything…" He mumbled incoherently in his dreams. Everything was fine at first, but it developed into a nightmare-like wail.

After listening for a while, Zhou Wen suddenly had the urge to enter the Trajectory Holy Temple to take a look.

Although this lunatic was somewhat incoherent, from what he had said, it was very possible that he had indeed been on

a ship before. However, something unexpected had happened on the ship in the end. The people on the ship had been killing each other or killing someone. And this person had survived.

However, even the person in question didn’t know what had happened on the ship back then, so he wanted to use the power of the Trajectory Holy Temple to find out.

If this theory was valid, then the power in the Trajectory Holy Temple’s trajectory was very likely to allow people to see the past. That was why this person wanted to use its power.

In other words, it shouldn’t be because the power in the Trajectory Holy Temple had driven him mad. It was the happenings on the ship that he had seen that left him so frightened.

As Zhou Wen was pondering over it, the man seemed to wake up from his nightmare. He immediately straightened his body, but he couldn’t sit up after being tied down. He could only stick to the cow’s back as his body stiffened like a stick.

“Who are you? What are you trying to do?” the lunatic shouted in horror.

“Brother, don’t be afraid. We don’t have any ill intentions. We were afraid that you would go crazy and run around, so we tied you up on the cow’s back. When the exit is opened, we will take you out of the Holy Land. The treatment techniques these days are excellent, and with the usable powers of a Companion Beast, you can definitely have your eyes healed.” Li Xuan didn’t care if he could understand and spoke quickly.

That person seemed to sober up a little. He wasn’t as afraid as before, but he was still a little agitated. He shouted, “I don’t want to leave! Let go of me! I want to enter the Trajectory Holy Temple…”

Zhou Wen and Li Xuan exchanged looks and could see the shock in each other’s eyes. This person had been so afraid moments ago that he was about to commit suicide, but now, he was insisting on returning to the Trajectory Holy Temple. It was truly baffling what he was up to.

“Brother, don’t be agitated. You just came out from the Trajectory Holy Temple. Why do you want to enter now?” Li Xuan asked curiously.

“I want… I want…” The madman thought for a long period of time but couldn’t come up with a reason. Then, he suddenly froze and said in a daze, “What do I want? What do I want?”

“This person is really crazy.” Li Xuan shook his head with a wry smile.

Zhou Wen looked at the lunatic with a frown without saying a word. He really was curious about the madman’s affairs, but from the looks of it, he was unlikely to fathom anything out. This fellow’s brain was completely damaged.

The madman suddenly used all his strength to break the rope. He jumped off the cow’s back and ran in the direction of the Trajectory Holy Temple. His speed was so surprisingly fast that Zhou Wen and Li Xuan didn’t react in time.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 214 - Unable to Tell the Truth

Chapter 214 Unable to Tell the Truth

Xia Bing, Dugu Chuan, and the others were gathered together, their expressions not looking very good.

More than thirty people from the six families that had entered the Holy Land had been crippled by Zhou Wen. This was only thanks to some people's Primordial Energy sea not being located at the lower dantian; otherwise, there would have been even more.

"Zhou Wen is another An Tianzuo. If we were to let him leave the Holy Land, the reputation of our six families will be destroyed." John's face was pale, but he was flushed red from agitation.

"So what if you don't let him leave? Which one of you has the means to restrain his Companion Beast?" Xia Bing said coldly.

"I'm not afraid of that kind of flame, but I'm no match for Zhou Wen alone. This fellow's Companion Beast is just too powerful. The An family has been in charge of the Primordial Gold mine for so many years that they are filthy rich. In terms of wealth, they aren't much inferior to our six families put together. From the looks of it, they went all out this time to smack us in the face," Dugu Chuan said with a sigh. He imagined that Zhou Wen was a result of the An family's arrangements.

"If I had known this would happen, I would have made more preparations. In terms of Companion Beasts, our family

won’t lose to them in terms of quantity. It’s not impossible for us to incubate a few Epic Companion Beasts. At most, we would have to pay a tiny price.” Pros was feeling both angry and hateful.

His Primordial Energy sea was not in his lower dantian, so he wasn’t crippled. However, he didn’t feel good after being stabbed in his abdomen.

“What’s the point of all this hindsight? If I had known, I would’ve cried like a woman and thrown a tantrum. I would’ve taken the Mythical Companion Egg from my aunt and wouldn’t have allowed Zhou Wen to be so arrogant,” said Dugu Chuan gloomily.

Many of the six families’ members had special physiques, ones that allowed them to explore certain special dimensional zones. If they had a certain affinity, they would be able to obtain a Mythical Companion Egg like Zhou Wen in Small Buddha Temple.

A few of them had previously obtained Mythical Companion Eggs. However, they were only at the Mortal stage when they hatched. They needed to be fed for growth. As for whether they could advance to the Mythical stage, it was still an unknown.

After all these years, it was rare for one to actually raise a Companion Egg to the Mythical stage. It was rare even in the six families.

Ever since Dugu Chuan inherited his family’s Body of Trajectory, he had a chance to incubate a Mythical pet. However, it wasn’t safe enough. Therefore, Dugu Chuan’s aunt hadn’t given him the Mythical egg she had single-handedly obtained in the dimensional zone.

Pros glanced at Xia Bing and said, “You have foresight. That calabash should be a Mythical Companion Beast, right?”

“Now isn’t the time to talk about this. Let’s think about how to deal with Zhou Wen first,” Xia Bing said indifferently without answering the question.

“What else is there? We don’t have any powerful Companion Beasts that can fight Zhou Wen. It’s useless no matter what ideas we come up with. In this Holy Land, only one person from our six families can defeat Zhou Wen,” John said.

“You mean Lance?” Xia Bing frowned.

“He’s the only one.” John nodded.

“But didn’t you say earlier that Lance has already rejected the request? With his personality, he won’t do a thing,” Xia Bing said.

“Now, things are different. People from his family have also been crippled by Zhou Wen. Even if Lance doesn’t help us, is he going to ignore kinship?” John asked.

Xia Bing and the others looked at each other, realizing that what John said made sense.

“Although what you said is true, you know Lance’s personality too. He’s very strange and it’s not necessarily possible. Let’s go find Lance first.” As Dugu Chuan spoke, he prepared to get up.

“Hold on. Tell Lance that Zhou Wen has two Mythical pets after you find him,” John suddenly said.

Dugu Chuan and company were slightly taken aback. Although Zhou Wen’s Companion Beasts were powerful,

they didn’t think in the direction of the Mythical Beast. They only believed that Zhou Wen had used some special method to hatch an Epic Companion Egg.

Due to the lack of special physiques, it was impossible for him to obtain a Mythical Companion Egg, much less incubate it. Zhou Wen didn’t have the bloodline of the six families, so it was impossible for him to have inherited a special physique. How could he have a Mythical Beast?

Therefore, they believed that Zhou Wen’s Companion Beasts only had high levels and powerful techniques.

“Zhou Wen’s bird and fan are Mythical Companion Beasts?” asked Dugu Chuan as he stared at John.

“Is it really that important? As long as it intrigues Lance, no?” John said with a smile.

Dugu Chuan immediately understood and nodded slightly. “Alright then. Those two pets indeed have extraordinary qualities and look like mythical pets.”

When Dugu Chuan took his guys to look for Lance, Zhou Wen and Li Xuan were sitting in front of the Trajectory Holy Temple’s entrance, waiting.

That blind madman had actually charged into the Trajectory Holy Temple again. They wanted to wait for the lunatic to come out before reassessing the situation.

“Old Zhou, do you think that lunatic’s words are reliable? If it’s really as he said, wouldn’t the power inside the Trajectory Holy Temple be something that can’t be seen?” Li Xuan said casually as he was bored.

“I don’t know. You’ll need to enter to know.” Zhou Wen stared at the temple’s door. He was already tempted, but he didn’t want to take the risk.

Earlier on, he had searched the surroundings of the Trajectory Holy Temple, but he hadn’t found any sign of the tiny palm, preventing him from downloading this place into his phone.

Strange, why don’t the dimensional zones in the Holy Land have tiny palm symbols? Zhou Wen was somewhat depressed. If he could download them onto his cell phone, he could enter all the Holy Land without any scruples.

“If I must say, he’s a lunatic. He’s definitely spouting nonsense. Think about it. Although the League controls the entire Earth in name, it doesn’t dare head into the sea, nor do they dare go out to sea. That lunatic is only the same age as us. He’s definitely still a student. How can he head out to sea on a ship at such a young age? Therefore, what he said must be illusions he saw in the Trajectory Holy Temple,” Li theorized.

Li Xuan’s words reminded Zhou Wen that going on a cruise was probably something that had happened before the dimensional storms came. After the dimensional storms, even an aircraft carrier wouldn’t return once it set off, much less an ordinary cruise ship.

It was impossible for an ordinary person to board a ship to head out into the sea. Just like them, this lunatic was a young man who was participating in the trials. At his age, even if his elders had the ability to go out to sea, they wouldn’t dare take him along.

Could it be that the power in the Trajectory Holy Temple is just an illusion? Zhou Wen felt that something was amiss.

The anchor symbol on the lunatic’s arm still bothered him. Moreover, that lunatic had also said that he wanted to use the power of the Trajectory Holy Temple to see what had happened in the past.

From the looks of it, I’ll only know if that lunatic’s words are true after I enter the Trajectory Holy Temple and take a look. As Zhou Wen pondered, the temple’s door slowly opened.

The madman was lying in front of the door with one hand on the sill, motionless. They couldn’t tell if he was dead or unconscious.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 215 - Crossroads

Chapter 215 Crossroads

Zhou Wen and Li Xuan hurriedly went over and pulled the lunatic’s hand out of the door.

When they went over, both of them had been very careful and hadn’t crossed the threshold. As long as they didn’t cross it, it wouldn’t be considered as entering the temple for a trial.

However, just as Zhou Wen grabbed the madman’s hand, he felt a strange force from inside the Trajectory Holy Temple pull him in.

Zhou Wen immediately sensed that something was amiss. He and Li Xuan had clearly held onto the madman’s hand at the same time without crossing the threshold. Why was Li Xuan fine, but he had been pulled into the door by some force?

Li Xuan reached out his hand to grab Zhou Wen, but it was too late. Zhou Wen was sucked inside and with a bang, the door to the temple automatically closed and left Li Xuan outside.

Seeing that he and the lunatic were locked inside, Zhou Wen pulled the lunatic away in a bid to head back. Typically, even if the trial had begun, he could still choose to withdraw.

However, when Zhou Wen turned around, he was dumbfounded. There was no stone door behind him. Not only so, was nothing there, but there was only a straight road leading far into the distance. At the end of the road were blue skies and white clouds.

Zhou Wen turned his body 360 degrees and immediately realized that he and the lunatic were standing at a crossroads. All four directions led straight to the horizon. Apart from the road, there was nothing else.

Neither the holy temple or stone walls existed.

“What’s happening? Is the test to get us to choose a path? But the four directions are the same. How do we choose? You need to give us some hints, right?” Zhou Wen shouted into the sky.

There had to be some creature in the temple controlling everything; otherwise, he wouldn’t have been pulled in. However, Zhou Wen didn’t hear any response after waiting for quite a while.

At that moment, the unconscious lunatic woke up. He rubbed his head and sat up, then sized up his surroundings. His face was filled with confusion.

The lunatic didn’t look as crazy as before while he asked, “What is this place?”

“Haven’t you entered the Trajectory Holy Temple twice?” Zhou Wen gave him an odd expression. He had clearly been blinded, but he was now completely fine.

“This is the Trajectory Holy Temple? Isn’t there a ship in the Trajectory Holy Temple?” The madman looked at Zhou Wen

in surprise as though he was trying to determine if what Zhou Wen said was true.

“You saw a ship when you entered the Trajectory Holy Temple before?” Zhou Wen felt that something was amiss. If that ship was really an illusion that only the lunatic could see, it would be very difficult for him to get anything out of the lunatic’s mouth.

“That’s right, it’s a ship.” When he mentioned it, the expression on his face changed again, but fortunately, he didn’t act up like before.

Zhou Wen hurriedly changed the topic and pointed at the anchor tattoo on his arm. “This tattoo of yours is rather interesting. Is there any special meaning to it?”

The madman seemed to be lost as he subconsciously answered, “This was tattooed by my father when I was young. He was a sailor and he said that this was the mark of their ship. When I grow up, I can become a sailor like him and work on his ship.”

“Are there still sailor professions these days?” Zhou Wen asked in puzzlement. From what he knew, no ship had dared to enter the sea in the past few decades. Even if someone were to enter, they would still be Epic experts steering a Companion Beast. A ship wouldn’t be required, much less a sailor.

“Yes, why not? Our hometown has many fishing boats that go out to sea every day to fish. It’s just that my dad’s ship is different. It’s a ship that travels across many countries and sells different goods to different countries.” The lunatic looked much more awake.

“Wait, you mentioned countries?” Zhou Wen stared at the madman with an odd expression, trying to determine if he was being fooled.

Countries were a concept before the dimensional storms. After the dimensional storms, there was only the League and no countries. Humans had united together to survive that calamity.

“That’s right. Is there something wrong?” The madman looked at Zhou Wen in astonishment as though whatever he said could only be right.

“Brother, how old are you?” Zhou Wen asked.

“Seventeen, why are you asking this?” the madman asked, puzzled.

“Then are you joking with me? After the dimensional storms, how can there be any countries? There are dimensional zones everywhere over the sea. No one in the League dares to enter the sea now, much less fish. It would be pretty good if they weren’t eaten by fish,” Zhou Wen said.

“What do you mean? What League? What dimensional storm?” The madman looked at Zhou Wen like he was looking at a lunatic.

“Alright, don’t tell me that you were born before the dimensional storms.” Zhou Wen frowned as he looked at the lunatic. He felt that this person was messing with him. Perhaps he hadn’t gone mad from the beginning

The madman looked at Zhou Wen seriously and said, “I don’t know what you mean by that. My name is Ah Lai. I was born in a town not far from the seaside named Langya Town. I came here for… to…”

At this point, Ah Lai was stunned, as if he couldn’t recall why he had come here.

Zhou Wen didn’t know if this person was mad or faking it, so he asked, “How did you know about the Holy Land and how did you come here?”

“What Holy Land? Isn’t this the Six Path Temples?” asked Ah Lai in puzzlement.

“The Six Path Temples?” Zhou Wen was also dumbfounded. He felt like he was communicating with an alien, completely at a loss as to what the man was talking about.

“That’s right. It’s the Six Path Temples. This is…” Ah Lai realized that he couldn’t recall anything. He rubbed his head, but he still couldn’t think of it.

“You know that this is the Trajectory Holy Temple, right?” Zhou Wen asked again.

“That’s right. This is one of the Six Path Temples, the Trajectory Holy Temple,” Ah Lai answered with certainty.

“Do you still remember why you came here?”. Zhou Wen continued asking.

Ah Lai thought about it, and his expression gradually turned ugly. “I seem to remember that I followed Dad onto his ship, then… then… We encountered a storm… After that… After that…”

At this point, Ah Lai suddenly hugged his head and screamed out in pain. Soon, he fell to the ground and twitched continuously. He passed out shortly after.

Zhou Wen checked his body and realized that he wasn’t faking it. Zhou Wen was confused.

What’s wrong with this fellow? Is he really… Impossible… He’s only seventeen… Impossible… Zhou Wen looked at Ah Lai as countless thoughts flashed through his mind.

Since Ah Lai didn’t wake up, Zhou Wen had no choice but to think of a way out. However, all he could see was four straight roads.

Zhou Wen summoned the Mutated Lotus Flower Ant, made it carry Ah Lai, and chose a direction to walk in.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 216 - Trajectory Crystal

Chapter 216 Trajectory Crystal

There was no concept of north or south, east or west here. Zhou Wen carefully observed his surroundings for a long time, but he failed to discover any differences. All he could do was choose one.

It was no longer within Zhou Wen’s consideration whether he could pass the trial. All he wanted was to leave quickly and leave the Holy Land before getting the League’s authorities to investigate Ah Lai’s origins.

Every person who entered the Holy Land had their information recorded. If he had entered with the rest of them, information about him was definitely available.

If there’s no information about him… The corners of Zhou Wen’s eyes twitched when he thought of this.

The road seemed endless as it extended to the end of the horizon. After more than an hour of walking, the surrounding scenery remained unchanged.

Suddenly, Zhou Wen realized that there was something different in front of him. He quickened his pace and continued proceeding. He discovered that there was another crossroad ahead of him—it didn’t seem different from the

one he had set off from. The only difference was that there was another stone statue in the middle of the crossroad.

The stone statue was a three to four meter tall root. The four sides of the stone statue were faces. The face that faced Zhou Wen said, “Congratulations, Human. You have completed the test and can become the representative of the Trajectory Holy Temple in the mortal world.”

The moment the stone statue said that, Zhou Wen felt a strong sense of aversion from the Sigh of the King. Even his emotions were affected.

Zhou Wen suppressed his emotions and looked at the stone face, saying, “Sorry, I don’t plan on becoming the representative of the Trajectory Holy Temple. I only wanted to get my friend out and accidentally entered.”

Zhou Wen secretly cursed inwardly. It’s clearly you who forcefully pulled me in. Besides, how is this a trial? It’s a forced selection.

“Since you are already here, why don’t you consider it? As the representative of my Trajectory Holy Temple in the mortal world, not only will you obtain a Trajectory Holy Body, you will also obtain a Mythical Companion Beast that’s compatible with it,” added the stone face.

“Thank you for the offer, but I already have my own goals. The Trajectory Holy Temple isn’t my choice. Please open the door and let us leave this place.” Zhou Wen increasingly felt that this fellow was up to no good. One who was unreasonably solicitous was definitely hiding evil intentions.

The stone face didn’t say anything else. Its originally expressionless face slowly turned stiff, turning into a lifeless stone statue.

Zhou Wen shouted a few more times, but the stone statue didn’t react at all as though it was just an ordinary stone statue.

Zhou Wen thought for a moment before circling around the stone statue and continuing forward. After walking for some time, another crossroad appeared in front of him. In the middle of the crossroad was the four-faced stone pillar.

Zhou Wen surveyed his surroundings and felt that this was the crossroad that he had previously arrived at. He couldn’t help but frown slightly, but the stone statue remained silent. All he could do was switch directions before continuing forward.

Soon, Zhou Wen realized that no matter where he went, he would ultimately return to the four-faced stone pillar, as though this place was an endless cycle.

“Why are we still here?” Ah Lai, who was on the Mutated Lotus Flower Ant’s back, woke up as he rubbed his eyes.

Zhou Wen looked at Ah Lai and suddenly had a thought. “You previously said that there was a ship inside the Trajectory Holy Temple when you entered?”

“Yes, a ship, one identical to the one my father worked on,” Ah Lai answered.

“Did you board your father’s ship before?” Zhou Wen asked again.

“I did. On the first day after graduation from high school, my dad took me onto the ship,” answered Ah Lui.

“Then take a careful look. Have you been here before? Have you seen it before?” Zhou Wen pointed at the four-faced

stone pillar.

Ah Lai looked at it for a while before answering with certainty, “No, I’ve never seen it.”

After Zhou Wen heard that, he seemed to understand something as he secretly frowned in thought. Based on Ah Lai’s situation, the people who entered the Trajectory Holy Temple will be trapped in their memories. However, since Ah Lai has never been here before and has never seen the four-faced stone pillars, this might be my memory. However, I’ve never been to such a place before, right?

Guide City, where Zhou Wen was born, was a flat plain. Even if there were large swaths of flat land, they were farmland. It was impossible for there to be such a large grassland. Zhou Wen was certain that he had never been here before.

After a moment of silence, Zhou Wen suddenly drew his Bamboo Blade and slashed at the four-faced stone statue.

The Bamboo Blade was extremely sharp, splitting the stone statue into two upon contact. The broken stone statue vanished with a poof.

The roads and plains around him vanished as well. Zhou Wen couldn’t help but break out into cold sweat when he saw the scene in front of him.

He was indeed standing at a crossroads, but this crossroad was not built on grasslands, but built on a volcano lava pool.

If Zhou Wen hadn’t walked along the path and stepped onto the plains, he would probably have fallen into the lava pool.

In the middle of the crossroads, there was a stone platform with a black seed floating above it. It was like the

condensation of night, emitting a strange and mysterious aura.

This aura was similar to the Sun God Crystal he had previously obtained, but there were differences.

Zhou Wen attempted to grab the seed with his hand, but nothing special happened. He easily removed the black seed.

Boom!

The moment the black seed was removed by Zhou Wen, the entire temple quaked as the door opened once again. Zhou Wen saw Li Xuan standing outside.

He quickly took Ah Lu out of the temple with him. As expected, a bright light was shining from the Trajectory Holy Temple. The various engravings emitted a strange black fog, a sign that the Trajectory Holy Temple had selected an heir.

From then on, the Trajectory Holy Temple would shut its doors until the Holy Land opened again.

“Old Zhou, don’t you have a body that matches the Sun God Temple? How did you pass the Trajectory Holy Temple’s trial?” Li Xuan looked at Zhou Wen in astonishment.

“I don’t know what’s going on either. I find it a little baffling.” Zhou Wen looked at the black seed in his hand and felt that something was amiss.

He felt that the black seed had been given to him by the temple itself and not something he had obtained from a real trial. At least, he was not trapped in his memories.

Zhou Wen even suspected that what the four-faced stone statue had said wasn’t a test or an illusion, but to genuinely rope him in.

“Why bother? It’s better to have something than nothing. If the six families learn that you have actually obtained the recognition of two temples, their expressions will be very interesting.” Li Xuan chuckled.

“There’s nothing to show off about.” Zhou Wen made Li Xuan watch over Ah Lai as he secretly snapped a picture of the black seed on his cell phone, sending it into the game.

He had a strange feeling that the Trajectory Holy Temple was odd, so he didn’t dare absorb the black seed directly.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 217 - It’s You?

Chapter 217 It’s You?

Trajectory God Power Crystal: A product of the God of Trajectory’s blood essence. Absorbing it will enhance one’s bloodline.

Seeing that there was no problem with the game’s judgment, Zhou Wen allowed the blood-colored avatar to absorb the Trajectory God Power Crystal.

As the black power was absorbed by the blood-colored avatar, its stats changed once again. His Speed stat also increased to 21 points, and in the end, it revealed the word “Trajectory.”

The Trajectory Holy Temple really increases Speed. It’s quite a coincidence. Zhou Wen was secretly amused. Although he had previously believed that the Trajectory Holy Temple corresponded to Speed, the situation inside the temple was completely different from what he had imagined. Therefore, Zhou Wen was surprised that the Trajectory God Power Crystal could increase Speed.

Zhou Wen and Li Xuan asked Ah Lai more questions, but the latter really seemed to have forgotten many things. He only remembered that he had come from Langya Town, his father was a sailor, and that he had followed his father onto the ship after he graduated from high school. Later, he encountered a storm at sea, and he couldn’t remember what happened after that.

Zhou Wen had some doubts about Ah Lai and planned on figuring out his origins after taking him out.

However, before that, he had to wait until the end of the Holy Land's trials.

Zhou Wen had originally wanted to head to the other temples to obtain their God Power Crystals to raise his four stats to 21 points.

But when they arrived at a few other temples, they realized that they had already completely closed. Clearly, the God Power Crystal had been taken away by someone else.

There are indeed hidden dragons and crouching tigers in the League. In just a few days, the God Power Crystals have been snatched away. Zhou Wen was somewhat worried about Li Xuan.

If the Connate Infinite physique was taken away, Li Xuan would have zero hope left.

As he was deep in thought, he suddenly heard the sound of thunder coming from the sky. The wind and clouds stirred as if a hole had collapsed in the sky, forming a huge vortex.

Zhou Wen's body involuntarily flew towards the vortex. He could see other people flying around the Holy Land and being sucked into the vortex.

Zhou Wen didn't resist the suction force of the vortex as he allowed himself to fly into it. He even patted Li Xuan's shoulder.

There was only one possibility of such a situation. The God Power Crystals of the six holy temples had been taken away

by others. It was why everything had ended ahead of time, opening up a passageway to leave the Holy Land.

However, Li Xuan didn’t mind. “Since I couldn’t obtain it, it means that I wasn’t destined to get it. It’s no big deal even if I don’t have any special physiques. With my Immortal God of Combat Life Providence, I can still forge my own path. The world is my

oyster.”

“You’re right. It might not be a bad thing not having a special physique.” Zhou Wen had a nagging feeling that the six holy temples were somewhat odd.

“Alright, don’t console me. I’ve suffered too much since I was young. Such a trivial matter isn’t enough to make me depressed.” Li Xuan believed Zhou Wen was consoling him.

Zhou Wen didn’t explain. After all, everyone wanted a special physique, and he didn’t have any evidence and was speculating without any grounds. It was pointless explaining.

Together with Ah Lai, the trio flew towards the vortex and arrived near it. They happened to see Pros being sucked up as well. In turn, he glared at Zhou Wen.

“Zhou Wen, don’t be too happy. This matter isn’t over yet.” As he spoke, he was sucked into the vortex.

Zhou Wen and company were also sucked in. Soon, they returned to the stone altar from before.

Zhou Wen originally wanted to take Ah Lai elsewhere to check his identity, but he discovered that many young

people had yet to leave the altar. Instead, they surrounded it, clearly targeting him and Li Xuan.

“Why are you crowding here? Hurry up and move aside. Do you want to fight here?” Li Xuan said with a twitch of his lips.

They could do whatever they wanted in the Holy Land, but now that they were out, they would be bound by the League’s laws.

Although the six families enjoyed special privileges, they did not have the privilege to openly challenge a representative of the An family here.

“Lance, it’s him.” No one bothered with Li Xuan. John pointed at Zhou Wen and said to Lance.

“You are Zhou Wen?” Lance looked at Zhou Wen in surprise.

“Your name is Lance?” Zhou Wen was surprised as well. Before coming, Jiang Yan had warned him that the only person he needed to be afraid of was someone named Lance.

“Did you cripple their Primordial Energy seas?” Lance asked Zhou Wen.

“Yes, but they were the ones who initiated it.” Zhou Wen originally didn’t plan on explaining, but after taking a glance at Lance, he still decided to explain.

Lance nodded. “Actually, that’s not important. I want to fight with you. Choose the venue and time.”

“Because I’m the representative of the An family?” Zhou Wen knew that Lance cultivated because of his goal of

defeating An Tianzuo.

“Not for anyone else. Just because you are Zhou Wen. Apart from An Tianzuo, you are the second person that has intrigued me. I didn’t plan on taking action back when they asked for my help, but since you are Zhou Wen, I’m interested in fighting you,” said Lance.

“But I don’t wish to fight with you. Fighting is troublesome,” Zhou Wen said as he spread out his hands.

He wasn’t a battle maniac like Feng Qiuyan. He wasn’t interested in a meaningless fight. It was time that Zhou Wen could use to game.

“Fight me. No matter who wins or loses, I’ll ensure that you leave the Holy City safely. If not, you will ultimately be in trouble. Those guys won’t let you off easily. Compared to fighting me, those guys will delay your gaming time more, right?” Lance suddenly came close to Zhou Wen and whispered in his ear with a voice that only he could hear.

“It looks like I can’t reject it, but the time and place is up to me to choose,” Zhou Wen said with a shrug.

Lance’s words were half-truths, but there was one thing he was right about. Those from the six families definitely wouldn’t let this matter rest. Their best chance was in Holy City, so it was impossible for them to allow Zhou Wen to leave so easily.

Although Zhou Wen didn’t expect Lance to really allow him to leave, stalling for time gave Ah Sheng time to prepare.

“You can choose any time and place in the next two days,” said Lance.

“Lance, two days is way too long…” John turned anxious as he was afraid Zhou Wen would take the opportunity to escape.

However, Lance only smiled and said, “He won’t run, so don’t worry.”

“There’s no need for two days. Let’s do it tomorrow afternoon. I still want to make an early return after the fight,” Zhou Wen said.

“Alright, where will it be?” Lance asked.

“I’ll inform you when the time comes.” Zhou Wen didn’t answer directly. He planned on getting Ah Sheng to choose the location. With Ah Sheng’s abilities, he would definitely be able to choose a suitable spot.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 218 - Soundless

Chapter 218 Soundless

In the hotel room, Ah Sheng looked at Zhou Wen with an odd expression.

“That’s what happened. Is there a problem?” Zhou Wen recounted his experience in the Holy Land.

“Not at all. Don’t worry, leave the rest to me,” Ah Sheng said without any hesitation.

“Alright then. I’ll go back and prepare.” As Zhou Wen spoke, he prepared to return to his room and absorb the Mutated Fairy’s Primordial Energy Skill Crystal.

Due to the earlier stat requirements, Zhou Wen wasn’t able to master it. Now that his Speed had increased to 21, he had reached the requirement. He could then battle Lance after practicing it.

“Young Master Wen, you have to be careful of Lance. Although he’s not as famous as John, those who truly are in the know of the six families know that Lance is the most terrifying person of this generation,” Ah Sheng said.

“I know.” Even if Ah Sheng hadn’t said anything, Zhou Wen could sense it.

“He also has a nickname, Soundless.” Ah Sheng continued.

“Why Soundless? Is the Primordial Energy Art he cultivates related to sound?” Zhou Wen asked curiously.

Ah Sheng said, “There are all kinds of sounds in this world. Every sound has its own unique rhythm and charm. Every life has the right to make its own voice, proving that they are part of this world. However, there are some voices that are loud enough and some sound softer.”

Ah Sheng didn’t directly mention the reason behind Lance’s nickname, but Zhou Wen already understood why. The meaning behind it was that when Lance made a sound, the entire world would quieten down. There wouldn’t be any other noise except for his sounds.

Returning to his room, Zhou Wen took out the Mutated Fairy Primordial Energy Skill Crystal and took a picture and took it in-game.

The blood-colored avatar held the Mutated Fairy Crystal and chose to absorb it, but Zhou Wen was notified that it couldn’t absorb it.

Zhou Wen switched his Primordial Energy Art to the Small Perfection of Wisdom Sutra before the notification was removed. The crystal immediately transformed into strands of black and white auras that fused into the blood-colored avatar’s body.

Zhou Wen felt as though there was a faint immortal aura flowing within him, making his body float up like a hydrogen balloon.

After a while, the feeling gradually disappeared until it returned to normal. Only then did the system in the game give a new hint.

‘Absorbed the Mutated Fairy Crystal. Attained Transcendent Flying Immortal.’

Zhou Wen took a look at the blood-colored avatar’s information. Indeed, there was an additional skill, Transcendent Flying Immortal, not the Dragon Gate Flying Immortal technique that Zhou Wen knew of.

Is this Transcendent Flying Immortal a Primordial Energy Skill that only Mutated Fairies possess? Could it be a mutated version of the Dragon Gate Flying Immortal Skill? Zhou Wen hurriedly took a look at the introduction of Transcendent Flying Immortal.

Although the other techniques of a Mutated Fairy were powerful, what Zhou Wen wanted the most was the Dragon Gate Flying Immortal Skill. There were countless Primordial Energy Skills in the world, and there were countless powerful Primordial Energy Skills, but they only had one effectto defeat or kill the enemy.

However, Zhou Wen didn’t like to kill, and he cherished his life greatly. The Dragon Gate’s Flying Immortal Skill was undoubtedly the best life-saving technique. If he couldn’t beat his adversary, he could run, preventing them from catching up to him. It was useless even if his opponent was strong.

Transcendent Flying Immortal: Ascension Technique for Other Realm Immortals

The information was very vague, but it was likely a Primordial Energy Skill similar to the Dragon Gate Fairy Skill. When Zhou Wen carefully sensed the information he had obtained from the Transcendent Flying Immortal, he looked even more pleasantly surprised.

The next morning when he woke up for breakfast, Zhou Wen saw Li Xuan and Ah Lai sitting at the table chatting.

Zhou Wen originally wanted to investigate Ah Lai's origins, but with the hoo-ha caused by the six families yesterday, he had ended up delaying the matter. Ah Lai had also followed them back to the hotel.

Zhou Wen had recalled the matter on the way back. He originally wanted to take Ah Lai to the officials to investigate the identity the latter had used to enter, but after informing Ah Sheng, Ah Sheng told him that there was no need for him to go. There was no such person on the Holy Land list. Ah Sheng was very certain-if it was a person on the name list, there was no way he had never seen him before.

This left Zhou Wen very puzzled. If Ah Lai wasn't part of the batch of people who had entered the Holy Land, where did he come from? How did he end up within the Trajectory Holy Temple?

"Ah Lai, what plans do you have for the future? Are you interested in hanging out with us? There's absolutely nothing wrong with following me. I guarantee you that you'll live in the lap of luxury. There will be endless beautiful girls." Li Xuan seemed to be trying to seduce him.

Ah Lai said with an odd expression, "How did the world become like this?"

"It doesn't matter what the world turns into. A good man treats the four corners of the world as his home. What difference does the place make? If you follow me in the future, I guarantee you that you will have a brighter future than being a sailor," Li Xuan said as he patted Ah Lai on the shoulder.

Zhou Wen found it odd. Although Li Xuan wasn't a bad person, he wasn't that good enough to be a philanthropist. It didn't seem like his personality at all.

Ah Lai didn’t reply. When he saw Zhou Wen walk over, he said, “Zhou Wen, you said that I came from inside the Trajectory Holy Temple and you also entered the Trajectory Holy Temple. Do you know why I was there?”

“It seems like you entered the Trajectory Holy Temple because you wanted to investigate what happened to your father’s ship. I don’t know anything else, have you completely forgotten?” Zhou Wen asked.

Ah Lai shook his head. “I only remember that my father’s ship encountered a storm. I can’t remember what happened afterward.”

“There’s no rush. You can think about it slowly. Li Xuan isn’t a bad person. If you have nowhere to go, why don’t you bunk with him for now? After all, he’s rich. He’s not afraid of being bankrupted,” Zhou Wen said.

“That’s right, that’s right. I’ll definitely make sure everything is the best.” Li Xuan did not retort at all, making Zhou Wen find it even odder.

After breakfast, Ah Lai went out for a walk, claiming he wanted to know what the world looked like; hence, he went out alone.

When Zhou Wen saw Ah Lai leave, he asked Li Xuan, “Why are you so enthusiastic and nice? This isn’t like you. Tell me honestly, what are you planning?”

“Heavens, haven’t you noticed?” Li Xuan said in an exaggerated manner.

“What?” Zhou Wen asked with a frown.

“Ah Lai is very strong.” Li Xuan seemed to find this description insufficient as he added, “He’s especially strong. At least he’s stronger than us.”

“Why do you say that?” Zhou Wen asked in puzzlement. Ah Lai didn’t seem to show any special combat ability.

“Didn’t I use a rope to tie him to my Companion Beast’s back? That rope was formed from a legendary nine-scaled serpent. If I were tied up by it, there’s no way I could break free. As for Ah Lai, he easily broke through it in a seemingly trivial manner.”

Li Xuan said, “Now that this fellow has lost his memory and there’s nowhere for him to go, isn’t it a perfect win-win situation for me to take him in while he helps me with certain matters?”

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 219 - Battling Lance

Chapter 219 Battling Lance

Little Lin’s Pet Combat Arena was Ah Sheng’s chosen venue for the match.

Many of the younger generation of the six families had come to the arena, including some who were in their twenties or thirties.

Back then, An Tianzuo had suppressed and crippled that generation. Now, another, Zhou Wen had appeared; he had crippled more than thirty members of the six families. This was an absolute humiliation to them.

Xia Bing glanced at Lance who was sitting in the resting area as she said with a complicated expression, “Thankfully, this generation of the six families produced Lance. Otherwise, they would have to swallow their anger as they did back then.”

She had always wanted to chase up to Lance or even surpass him, but no matter how hard she tried, the distance between her and Lance just grew further and further; so much so that she couldn’t see his back anymore.

Despite Lance not having inherited a hero’s physique and not cultivating his family’s Primordial Energy Art, he was

able to steam ahead, making it impossible for others to even have the thought of chasing up to him.

Fortunately, there's only one Lance in this world. Xia Bing sighed inwardly, unsure if she was feeling happy or sad for herself.

"Here he comes," Dugu Chuan suddenly said.

Xia Bing looked over and indeed saw Zhou Wen arrive in the arena with Ah Sheng and Li Xuan. The latter two remained in the spectator stands while Zhou Wen walked into the arena alone.

When Lance saw Zhou Wen, he stood up from the bench in the resting area and walked into the arena.

The members of the six families were rather calm. Others might think that Zhou Wen had a chance, but they knew better-Zhou Wen had no chance at all. No one under the Epic stage was Lance's match. Even someone at the Epic stage might not be his match.

In a corner of the spectator stands sat a man and a woman. Both of them wore hats and sunglasses that covered most of their faces. However, anyone familiar with them would be able to recognize them-Liz and Qiao Siyuan.

"What do you think?" Qiao Siyuan asked as he looked at Zhou Wen and Lance.

Liz replied with a dark expression, "Lance is a talented genius. No peer of his is more outstanding than him. It's impossible for Zhou Wen to win."

Qiao Siyuan said nonchalantly, "Don't forget that Zhou Wen is someone who has come into contact with Jing Daoxian. If

he was really fancied by Jing Daoxian, do you still think that Lance will certainly win?”

“Yes.” Liz said with certainty, “Minister, you are not from the six families. Perhaps you don’t understand Lance very well. His talent is unparalleled. Unless one has absolute power to crush him, no one can defeat him.”

Qiao Siyuan only smiled and did not refute Liz’s words. Instead, he asked, “Make another confirmation. Is everyone in place?”

Liz nodded slightly and contacted the personnel of the Special Investigation Bureau around the arena to confirm that they had arrived.

“Minister, everything is in place. Zhou Wen won’t be able to escape today,” Liz said to Qiao Siyuan.

Qiao Siyuan didn’t say a word. He only looked at Ah Sheng, who was sitting in the spectator stands. Ah Sheng was wearing a trench coat and a hat. He was seriously observing the situation in the arena and had seemingly not placed any attention elsewhere.

With that person around, I’m afraid it won’t be easy to complete this mission. If I had a few people like Ah Sheng aiding me instead of Liz, I wouldn’t need to go through all this trouble. Qiao Siyuan sighed inwardly.

There were too many personnel in the Special Investigation Bureau that entered thanks to nepotism. Everyone in the six families wanted to have their own people in it, but it was hard to determine how capable those people were.

Although the six families did have many outstanding people, their background made many of them overly proud

to the point of arrogance. Sometimes, it was difficult for them to truly become good inspectors.

A good inspector isn’t as simple as being strong. However, it can be considered as having pros and cons. Without these people in the bureau, the bureau wouldn’t have obtained such a huge privilege. Qiao Siyuan turned to look at Liz and said, “Get someone to keep an eye on An Sheng at all times. If he shows any abnormality, report it immediately. Even the smallest details have to be reported.”

In fact, Qiao Siyuan was also looking forward to seeing the people from the six families learn to give up their pride and dignity under his guidance. When that day happened, they might turn out to become the most terrifying. On that day, they might be the most terrifying inspectors.

However, Liz didn’t think much of it. “He’s just An Tianzuo’s adjutant. What else can he do when we’re watching him?”

Qiao Siyuan could only patiently explain, “Don’t underestimate An Sheng. He has been in charge of the An family’s security for the past few years. Every year, countless people set their sights on the An family, but there have never been any problems with the An family. Such a person cannot be underestimated. Do you know another nickname he has in Luoyang’s military? Devil’s Adjutant. His name is a lot more useful in the military than An Tianzuo.”

Although Liz felt that the Holy City was their territory and an adjutant that was being watched couldn’t do anything, Qiao Siyuan was her superior after all. Thus, Liz immediately contacted the people responsible for watching An Sheng and exhorted them.

In the arena, Zhou Wen came in front of Lance. He didn’t wield any weapons as he had stowed away the Bamboo

Blade in the Chaos space. He had no intention of using it.

Bamboo Blade needed to see blood once it was drawn or it would deal a backlash to its owner. Although Zhou Wen didn’t believe in such things, he didn’t think that there was a need for him to draw his saber because he wasn’t skilled with it. It was fine using the sharp Bamboo Blade to chop up some vegetables, but fighting with Lance would instead become a flaw.

“They said that you have two Mythical pets. Is that true?” Lance asked Zhou Wen.

“Does it matter? I don’t plan on using pets,” Zhou Wen said.

Lance smiled brightly, revealing two rows of snow-white teeth. “I’m starting to look forward to it now.”

“In that case, hurry up. I’m still planning on returning home to game.” Zhou Wen took a step forward and struck out with the first stance of the Seven Distribution PalmCompunction Free-at Lance.

Compunction Free was a masculine move that was extremely direct and open. This stance was actually somewhat incompatible with the Ashen Palm’s forces that Zhou Wen had trained in. However, Zhou Wen still managed to fuse the power of the Ashen Palm into this move.

Lance didn’t dodge either. He also struck out with his palm to meet Zhou Wen’s. His palm turned purplish-red, looking like a special Primordial Energy Skill.

Bam!

Zhou Wen felt a pricking pain in his palm and couldn’t help but retract his palm. However, Lance’s chest quivered

violently as he took two steps back.

Zhou Wen glanced at his palm and saw that it was covered with bloody holes that seemed to be a result of countless needles. He couldn’t help but say, “What a vicious Primordial Energy Skill.”

“Likewise. Your Primordial Energy Skill is also very vicious,” said Lance with a smile.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 220 - A Person That Fights As Though In A Game

Chapter 220 A Person That Fights As Though In A Game

Zhou Wen used the seven stances of the Seven Distribution Palm one by one. They were disjointed with completely different styles. Zhou Wen’s continuous usage made it difficult for his opponent to adapt to such changes in style.

However, Lance acted as though he didn’t feel anything. He blocked and parried all of Zhou Wen’s seven strikes. Furthermore, apart from the first palm, the Ashen Palm’s forces that were secretly included in the Seven Distribution Palm, none of them were able to injure Lance.

When the mild concealed force touched Lance’s palm, it immediately dissipated, unable to enter his body.

After striking seven times, Zhou Wen immediately retracted his hands and said to Lance, “I only know these seven strikes. Since all seven of them were countered by you, I have no choice but to admit defeat.”

“It’s fine if you want to admit defeat, but you have to satisfy me first.” Lance didn’t care what Zhou Wen said as he charged forward and struck out with a Wind Lightning Fist.

The Wind Lightning Fist was a relatively common fist-type Primordial Energy Skill in the district where Lance lived in. The punch contained the power of wind and lightning. There was no need for any powerful technique as it used brute strength to subdue the enemy.

Zhou Wen also knew that it was impossible for Lance to let him off so easily. When he saw Lance deliver the punch, he used the Dragon Gate Fairy Skill and circled around him.

After Zhou Wen learned the Transcendent Flying Immortal, the Dragon Gate Fairy Skill hadn’t been replaced. Clearly, the former wasn’t a Primordial Energy Skill. There was still a difference between the two.

Zhou Wen really only knew the seven palm strikes and had no time to learn other techniques.

Upon seeing Zhou Wen dodge, Liz sneered. “Zhou Wen is finished. In front of Lance, retreating is equivalent to losing.”

It wasn’t just Liz. Everyone who had sparred with Lance, including Xia Bing and Dugu Chuan, knew how scary it was to let Lance take the initiative to attack. No one could remain undefeated under his relentless attacks.

Dugu Chuan’s movement techniques were considered top-notch among his peers, but he managed fewer than twenty of Lance’s strikes.

With just two punches, Zhou Wen could sense the pressure that Lance was exerting on him. His attacks were unique, something that Zhou Wen had never seen before.

Although a fist combo was common as a combat technique, when it came to actual combat, the fist combo was actually of not much use. Unless one could hit the opponent with the

first punch and leave the opponent open for more attacks, the subsequent chaining of the fist combos wouldn’t be possible.

However, if the first punch was enough to hit the target, then one should strive to take down one’s opponent with that one punch. What was the point with the remaining punches?

Therefore, the fist combo was just a supplementary measure. What was really effective was the first punch that hit the opponent. How could one connect the first punch? This was the answer everyone wanted to know.

However, Lance’s fist combo was different. He was like a character in a fighting game. His moves were connected without any gaps, giving Zhou Wen no chance to counterattack.

It even made Zhou Wen have the illusion that if he revealed any flaws and allowed him to connect the first strike, then the subsequent attacks from Lance would be like a raging storm that would directly KO him without giving him any chance to react.

The Dragon Gate Fairy Skill had been pushed to the extreme by Zhou Wen as he constantly dodged. His arms and legs were also fending off the attacks from Lance. Every clash of their limbs made Zhou Wen feel a terrifying force surge at him, causing his bones to protest in pain.

What looked like ordinary punches and kicks produced an effect that resembled an extremely explosive Primordial Energy Skill. It left Zhou Wen very surprised.

Soon, he realized that Lance’s seemingly ordinary punches and kicks were everything but ordinary. It was really some

kind of Primordial Energy Art that greatly augmented him in his Strength and in all other aspects.

Every action of Lance's was supported by different Primordial Energy Skills. This was the first time Zhou Wen had seen someone fight like that.

Zhou Wen had only practiced Primordial Energy Skills with his fists and palms, he had never trained his other parts. All he could do was use the Lotus Flower Buddha Body to protect himself. However, the defensive strength of the Lotus Flower Buddha Body wasn't enough for Zhou Wen to fight Lance head-on. Every clash of their bodies made Zhou Wen feel like his bones were about to break apart. All he could do was dodge with his movement techniques.

However, there was no way to completely dodge Lance's crazy attack. Just a dozen punches placed Zhou Wen at an absolute disadvantage.

When Dugu Chuan saw this, he laughed. "Do you want to use your movement technique to dodge the attacks of Lance and hope for him to expend all his Primordial Energy? You're too naive. This strategy might work on others, but against a person like Lance, it's useless. That was what I thought back then, but I ended up being pummeled."

Xia Bing said faintly, "Back then, in order to act as a character in a combat game, Lance had specially learned a Primordial Energy Art that allows rapid Primordial Energy recovery. Furthermore, in order to reduce the Primordial Energy expenditure, he had found dozens of the most basic Primordial Energy Skill Crystals. Those Primordial Energy Skills themselves used up very little Primordial Energy to begin with. After he learned them, he raised dozens of Mortal stage Primordial Energy Skills from Rank 1 all the way

to Legendary Rank 10. Not only are they extremely powerful, but they also consume very little Primordial Energy. Lance completed something so unthinkable to the average person in just four months."

"If I had the talent of Lance, I could be as willful as him. I could also abandon my hero physique and not learn the family's Primordial Energy Art. I could also play games all day like him," John said through gritted teeth.

Although he was known as a saint at Covenant College, he knew very well that he was far inferior to the fellow who gamed all day in school. No matter how hard he worked, he was not even qualified to be his opponent.

Bam!

When the fists collided, Zhou Wen felt a surge of power penetrate his body. It ran up his arm, making his organs feel like they had suffered a heavy blow. He couldn't help but take a few steps back.

Lance could actually use concealed forces, but they were just not as strong as Zhou Wen's Ashen Palm.

The look in Zhou Wen's eyes gradually turned serious. He had never encountered such an opponent before. Among his peers, no one had ever given him such pressure.

Although An Jing had defeated him with one strike back then, that was an absolute difference in Speed and Strength due to their difference in level. That kind of battle had nothing to do with Zhou Wen's abilities. Furthermore, Zhou Wen had never learned any combat techniques back then.

This time, it was different. In terms of physical strength at the same level, Zhou Wen felt immense pressure. This was

something he had never experienced before.

Jiang Yan is right. Lance is much more terrifying than John. Zhou Wen’s heart gradually burned with passion. Although he knew that beating Lance was not beneficial to him, he still wanted to win; he didn’t want to lose.

After all, Zhou Wen was a seventeen-year-old. He was unable to completely control his young and competitive heart, especially when facing a peer like Lance.

However, Zhou Wen had spent too much time practicing his Primordial Energy Art in the past. He had an excessively low starting point and had spent his golden years cultivating Ascetic Meditation which ended up being useless. Eventually, it was replaced by the Lost Immortal Sutra.

After that, he continued gaming and grinding instance dungeons. His level and physique had been enhanced, and he had obtained quite a number of Primordial Energy Skills. Fighting ordinary people with these was enough, but against someone like Lance, he was still greatly lacking.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 221 - Flying Immortal Skill

Chapter 221 Flying Immortal Skill

Zhou Wen calmed down. The more he was placed in such situations, the calmer he became.

He had pushed the Dragon Gate Fairy Skill to its limits as he dodged like a ghost and attacked Lance from time to time.

It’s still not enough. If my movement technique could be a little faster, and if this transition move of mine in midair could be a little more sudden, and the angle a little smaller… Zhou Wen constantly gained insight into the battle, and his Raising a Weighted Feather realm had become increasingly proficient as he used it.

“Fifteen punches, and he still isn’t using a Companion Beast?” Dugu Chuan was somewhat astonished. Zhou Wen’s dodging and ducking had allowed him to withstand fifteen of Lance’s punches.

“It should be soon. In less than ten punches, Zhou Wen will definitely use his Companion Beast. Otherwise, defeat is the only outcome for him.” Xia Bing could tell that Zhou Wen was about to reach his limit.

Lance’s attacks became more and more incisive, making Zhou Wen feel like he wasn’t facing a single person, but a

massive tsunami. He had the feeling that he was powerless to resist.

Under such terrifying attacks, Zhou Wen could keep pushing himself and make his every move simpler and more efficient, just as Lance had done.

It was impossible for him to be able to use all sorts of Primordial Energy Skills like Lance. Therefore, he could only bet everything on his movement technique-to make it faster, stronger, and more efficient.

Even if it was just a millimeter, he had to try his best to shave as much as he could, so that his body wouldn’t produce any additional movements to squeeze out every bit of potential and possibility.

The countless deaths he had experienced in-game now played a tremendous role. This was because Zhou Wen experienced the same thing when the blood-colored avatar faced death. Therefore, even in such a disadvantageous situation, he could still maintain his clarity of mind and focus, allowing him to devote himself to battle without any distractions. It was a talent of his.

Gradually, Zhou Wen’s movement technique exceeded the limits of Dragon Gate Fairy Skill and fused with his unique style.

Suddenly, Zhou Wen felt that Lance’s attack wasn’t as difficult to resist as his motion trajectories seemed to be able to keep up with Lance’s attack. Even if he didn’t use his palm to block, just using his movement techniques allowed him to slowly dodge Lance’s continuous attacks.

How can that be! Dugu Chuan widened his eyes as he looked at Zhou Wen. As a person who was proficient in all

kinds of movement techniques, he had naturally studied a famous Primordial Energy Skill like the Dragon Gate Fairy Skill. He even knew it himself. Furthermore, his Dragon Gate Fairy Skill was not inferior to Zhou Wen's in terms of ranks.

However, Dugu Chuan had better movement techniques, so he rarely used Dragon Gate Fairy Skill.

Back when Zhou Wen used Dragon Gate Fairy Skill, and the way he kept switching between styles left Dugu Chuan somewhat impressed. However, it was only praise attributing to Zhou Wen's ingenious way of using such a method to push the Dragon Gate Fairy Skill to Rank 10.

However, it was just a compliment. He also had Rank 10 movement skills that were even more outstanding than Dragon Gate Fairy Skill. However, he hadn't lasted more than twenty blows under Lance's barrage of attacks.

Zhou Wen's current movement technique clearly exceeded the realm of Dragon Gate Fairy Skill, but it had the foundation of the Dragon Gate Fairy Skill. Dugu Chuan had also seen similar movement techniques—the Dragon Gate Flying Immortal Skill possessed by the Epic dimensional creature, Fairy.

Although the difference between the Dragon Gate Fairy Skill and the Dragon Gate Flying Immortal Skill seemed to be just in its name, the two were worlds apart.

The Dragon Gate Fairy Skill came from a Fairy Monkey, but the Dragon Gate Flying Immortal Skill came from a real branch of the Fairy. There was an insurmountable difference in quality between the two.

Zhou Wen was at the Legendary stage, so it was impossible for him to master the Dragon Gate's Flying Immortal Skill

now. Furthermore, Zhou Wen’s movement technique previously indicated that he had indeed never learned it before.

However, Zhou Wen’s movement technique had hints of the Dragon Gate Flying Immortal Skill.

Did he raise the Dragon Gate Fairy Skill to the Epic stage without using Primordial Energy Crystals, having only relied on his battle experience and insight? Dugu Chuan’s expression was capricious.

If one’s comprehension of a Primordial Energy Skill reached Rank 10, it was something only a genius was capable of. But to directly raise the Primordial Energy Skill to a whole new level, especially if one hadn’t reached that level, would be too terrifying.

Although Dugu Chuan didn’t wish to believe that Zhou Wen could reach such a level, his movement techniques were becoming more and more pronounced with the bearing of the Dragon Gate’s Flying Immortal Skill. That poise and elegance was something the Dragon Gate Fairy Skill didn’t possess.

This person seems a little scary. Dugu Chuan suddenly had such a feeling.

Xia Bing also looked at Zhou Wen in astonishment. She wasn’t an expert with movement techniques like Dugu Chuan, but she could tell that Zhou Wen was dodging more easily. It was as though Lance’s attacks were increasingly unable to force him to block with his body.

Zhou Wen’s body was like a flying immortal. When Lance threw a punch, his fist remained three inches away from Zhou Wen’s body, preventing him from hitting him.

It felt like Zhou Wen was using the wind generated by the first to gracefully float back in the air.

Although Dugu Chuan was right, he wasn't completely right. Zhou Wen's movement technique had indeed imitated the Fairy's movement technique, but it wasn't an ordinary Fairy's movement technique, but a mutated Fairy's.

He had infused the Mutated Fairy's movement technique he had seen into the Dragon Gate Fairy Skill, causing it to gradually transform, forming a brand new movement technique.

"Old Zhou's movement skills are getting more and more impressive, but why does this fellow like movement techniques so much? Isn't it better to fight head-on? Don't you think so?" Li Xuan clearly didn't appreciate Zhou Wen's style; he still preferred to attack directly.

An Sheng, who was sitting beside Li Xuan, remained silent as he continued watching the battle.

Qiao Siyuan would occasionally look at the duo, and when he saw this scene, he couldn't help but frown slightly.

After some thought, Qiao Siyuan asked Liz beside him, "Ask the guy monitoring Ah Sheng. Is there anything abnormal there?"

Liz was in a bad mood when she saw that Zhou Wen had managed to dodge Lance's attack. She said, "It should be fine. If there's anything, they should report it."

"So should I hand over the post of minister to you then?" Qiao Siyuan's voice turned cold.

When Liz met Qiao Siyuan’s cold gaze, her heart turned cold and she hurriedly said, “I’m sorry, Minister. I’ll ask immediately.”

Liz didn’t dare to be negligent. She immediately contacted the surveillance personnel and only after confirming it repeatedly did she tell Qiao Siyuan, “An Sheng hasn’t done anything out of the ordinary. He’s been watching the competition the entire time.”

“Something’s wrong… But what…” Qiao Siyuan’s expression did not change because of what Liz had said.

Just as Liz was about to say something, Qiao Siyuan suddenly stood up, quickly left his spot, and walked to the other side of the spectator stand. It was right across from Li Xuan and Ah Sheng.

Qiao Siyuan stared at An Sheng like an eagle. He kept sizing up his face, and the more he looked at him, the worse his expression became.

An Sheng was wearing a trench coat and a hat, but he didn’t deliberately lower his hat or wear sunglasses. He looked like Ah Sheng, but Qiao Siyuan was certain that it wasn’t him.

Qiao Siyuan’s heart turned cold immediately.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 222 - A Battle Without Limits

Chapter 222 A Battle Without Limits

“Minister, what happened?” Liz walked over as well. She followed Qiao Siyuan’s gaze and also recognized An Sheng. She took a look but didn’t notice anything abnormal.

“I was too careless. That guy was only wearing a hat. He didn’t lower his cap or wear glasses, he even revealed his entire face so as not to arouse my suspicion. I should have known that An Sheng wouldn’t sit here and watch the competition without doing anything… All personnel is to immediately report their locations…” Qiao Siyuan was no longer in the mood to teach Liz. He directly issued the order to everyone through the comms.

Everyone reported their positions one by one, and Liz could hear them clearly from her earpiece. After all the personnel had finished reporting, she said, “Minister, everyone is at their designated spots. Everything is normal and there’s nothing out of the ordinary. What’s wrong with you?”

Qiao Siyuan’s expression was as cold as ice. Ignoring Liz, Qiao Siyuan directly said on the channel, “An Sheng, I know you’re listening. Answer me.”

In the monitoring room of the Little Lin’s Pet Combat Arena, An Sheng was sitting on a chair. He was looking at Qiao

Siyuan through the surveillance footage. The two inspectors beside him were like puppets sitting there mechanically.

Hearing the voice from the walkie-talkie, An Sheng said calmly, “Go ahead.”

Liz thought that Qiao Siyuan had gone crazy, but when she heard the voice coming over the comms, her expression immediately turned ugly and she wore a look of incredulity.

Qiao Siyuan took a deep breath and said, “Don’t hurt my people. During this period of time in the Holy Land, the bureau will not do anything.”

Killing an inspector in Holy City was an extremely serious offense. Most people wouldn’t dare do so, but Qiao Siyuan could not forget An Tianzuo’s words. He also couldn’t forget how An Sheng had crippled Liz without any thought.

The title of Devil’s Adjutant was not just a simple name. As long as An Tianzuo gave the order, An Sheng would do anything. He was a lunatic.

“Calm down. Sit down and drink some water. This match is very exciting. Don’t you want to finish watching it?” An Sheng said as he watched the surveillance camera footage.

“An Sheng, if you dare to harm even a strand of their hair, I will make sure none of you can leave the Holy Land…” Liz said angrily.

“Shut up.” Qiao Siyuan suppressed his voice and stopped Liz. Then, he sat back down on the spectator stands and surveyed the entire Little Lin’s Pet Combat Arena.

If he found An Sheng’s location before the competition ended, there was still a chance of a comeback.

Suddenly, when he saw a camera in the arena, Qiao Siyuan’s eyes lit up. He got up and prepared to leave his seat, but An Sheng’s voice came through the earpiece again. “Minister Qiao, you better sit there and not move. From now on, one of your inspectors will die with every step you take. I wonder if the lives of these inspectors are enough for you to reach the monitoring room? If there’s enough, you can take your time walking. I’ll be sitting here waiting for you to send me to jail. This is Holy City, so it’s not like I can run, right?”

Qiao Siyuan gritted his teeth and returned to his seat. He said dejectedly, “You won. Don’t hurt them.”

“Enjoy this match. It looks like it will be really exciting,” An Sheng said calmly.

In the arena, Lance’s eyes shone as if he had seen a classic game he had long wanted. He couldn’t hide his smile.Visit website our Listnovel.com

“How interesting. It’s indeed interesting to have an opponent in a fighting game,” said Lance as he stopped his attacks.

“Sorry, I’ve already said that I don’t like to play fighting games. I don’t understand what that feeling is,” Zhou Wen said.

However, Lance ignored Zhou Wen’s words as he continued, “Do you know why I like to play games? It’s because, in reality, I can’t find a match, so I can only find joy in games. The rules and skills in the game restrict my performance, which makes me feel a sense of difficulty. Unfortunately, a game is still a game after all. There are still rules that can be found. No matter how the mechanism is adjusted, once one knows the rules, after playing for some time, one can easily defeat them. This is also why I do not wish to know anything

about An Tianzuo before meeting him. I’m afraid that I will discover a pattern. That will make defeating him boring.”

“Then you can try leveling up games. There will always be a stronger boss waiting for you,” Zhou Wen said.

“So what if it’s an even stronger boss? It’s just tweaked strength and skills to make it stronger. In essence, it’s no different from those ordinary monsters. Powerful bosses are identical in every way, but an interesting soul has a different charm to it.” Lance stared at Zhou Wen with a fervent gaze. “It’s been a long time since I had such a great battle. You are the one who has made me reacquire the joy of combat. I originally imagined I would find it again on the day I meet An Tianzuo.”

“To be honest, I prefer to hunt those soulless bosses,” Zhou Wen said as he shrugged.

“No, you aren’t that kind of person. You are just like me deep down. You thirst for battle,” said Lance as he relaxed his body. As he walked towards Zhou Wen, he said, “Let me see what your limit is.”

With that said, Lance suddenly moved. However, this time, he didn’t use his continuous combo attacks like a game. At the instant he moved, his speed left behind images that instantly appeared in front of Zhou Wen.

Zhou Wen tapped his toes on the ground as he rapidly retreated. However, in the next second, the Lance in front of him turned blurry. The real Lance appeared above Zhou Wen’s head like a god that had descended to the mortal world. Along with it came his fist that crashed down with a terrifying battle aura.

Even the Dragon Gate Fairy Skill, after its evolution, couldn’t dodge the punch. Zhou Wen gathered strength for Golden Palm and used the Seven Distribution Palm’s Sky-Supporting Pillar to meet Lance’s fist.

Boom!

The battle aura blasted out as terrifying forces caused Zhou Wen’s legs to sink into the specially-made rubber ground.

With the clash of powers, Lance’s figure strangely used the force in the air as leverage. He turned blurry once again, leaving behind an afterimage. His true body had already plummeted to the ground like a meteor, shattering the ground through the quaking. At the same time, he sent another punch straight at Zhou Wen.

With Zhou Wen’s legs sinking into the ground, it was already impossible for him to dodge. He switched the Primordial Energy Art to a Dao Body and used Astral Suction Palm at the same time. He sucked and guided Lance’s fist, causing it to tilt to the side as his body brushed past Zhou Wen.

However, Lance’s reaction was too fast. In the split second, he passed him by, he leveraged the momentum from the charge to twist his body and kicked Zhou Wen like a sweeping blade.

His actions happened in one swift motion. It was unworldly.

His Primordial Energy Skill… seems to have broken through the rules of a Legendary stage’s rank… Xia Bing looked at Lance as she felt mixed feelings.

Dugu Chuan also smiled bitterly to himself. Lance had gone even further than they had imagined. He had never been serious in their previous battles.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 223 - Transcendent Flying Immortal

Chapter 223 Transcendent Flying Immortal

Lance had trained his combat skills to the extreme. If Zhou Wen were to focus on training his combat skills for a few years, he might still have a chance to match Lance. But now, Zhou Wen was unable to fight Lance with pure combat skills.

However, Zhou Wen didn’t waste his time. His combat skills were indeed inferior to Lance’s, but he also had his strengths and unique traits.

Seeing that there was no way to dodge, Zhou Wen suddenly released a stream of power that shot up from his legs that had sunk to the ground. Almost instantly, he shot up into the sky, dodging Lance’s foot.

Lance’s actions weren’t slow either. A terrifying power erupted beneath his feet as he charged towards Zhou Wen, bringing with him numerous afterimages. His entire body was burning with a raging battle aura like a volcano eruption.

“This Lance… is so powerful…” Even Li Xuan had to admit it. Li Xuan would only qualify to be beaten if he went up alone.

Xia Bing, Dugu Chuan, and the others all had smiles on their faces as they waited for the moment Lance won.

Zhou Wen couldn’t dodge Lance’s attack on the ground, much less dodge in the air.

Indeed, there’s no one at the same level who can fight Lance. If Zhou Wen were to use a Companion Beast, he might be able to hold out for a little while longer. To think he wants to engage in melee combat with Lance shows how naive he is. However, Zhou Wen can hold his head high after fighting so well with him, thought Dugu Chuan.

Liz was also feeling delighted. Their operation had completely failed, and they were being threatened. She felt aggrieved, but now that Lance could defeat Zhou Wen, it was the only thing that would cheer her up today. Now, all she wished for was for Lance to cripple Zhou Wen’s Primordial Energy sea, giving him the taste of being crippled.

But in the next second, everyone’s jaws dropped in disbelief.

In the air, Zhou Wen’s figure seemed to be completely free from the limitations of gravity, as though he had transformed into lightning. He streaked across the sky in a zigzag manner and quickly charged forward. His target was Lance who had rushed into the air.

The fighting spirit burned in his eyes as his battle aura flared wantonly. His bodily functions were also pushed to the limit as he twisted his body. He threw a barrage of quick punches to block Zhou Wen’s attacks that appeared like lightning bolts. Due to his actions being too fast, he left behind afterimages, making it seem like he had multiple limbs that could block the lightning-fast phantoms.

However, no matter how fast Lance’s actions were, he was still inferior to Zhou Wen’s lightning-like attacks that criss-crossed like a net. Even with his multi-limbed form, he failed to withstand the unparalleled barrage of attacks. In the end, he was unable to withstand it. After being struck in the chest by a beam of light, his defensive stance instantly crumbled as the criss-crossed figures struck Lance’s body like bolts of lightning that passed through his body.

The final figure fused together to reveal Zhou Wen’s body as he struck Lance’s chest and immediately sent him flying.

Bam!

Lance fell to the ground and cracked the ground while blood seeped from the corner of his mouth.

The spectator stands fell completely silent. The members of the six families, including Dugu Chuan and Xia Bing, were all in disbelief. They couldn’t believe that Lance would be beaten by someone and even bleed. They had never imagined such a scene.

Furthermore, the person who had defeated Lance was a youth about the same age. The scene of the criss-crossing of lightning bolts left them extremely shocked.

Liz was so infuriated that she nearly vomited blood. She yearned to mobilize the troops to immediately tear Zhou Wen into pieces.

Lance stood up from the ground, ignored the blood trickling down the corner of his mouth, and stared at Zhou Wen. “What was that move called?”

“Transcendent Flying Immortal,” Zhou Wen replied.

“Transcendent Flying Immortal? I’ll remember that. I’m very happy that I’ve finally found a path for me to continue advancing. I hope that you can give me more surprises the next time we fight.” With that, Lance collapsed to the ground.

His injuries were too severe and he was suffering from internal injuries. To be able to stand up and persist to the end of the conversation with Zhou Wen showed how unparalleled his willpower was.

The medical staff immediately rushed into the arena to save him. Fortunately, Lance had only fainted. Although he was heavily injured, his life wasn’t in danger. With his physical condition, he would make a quick recovery.

Zhou Wen left the battlefield and left Little Lin’s Pet Combat Arena with Li Xuan.

Xia Bing and company watched Zhou Wen leave, but no one stopped them. Their expressions were extremely complicated.

They hadn’t witnessed An Tianzuo’s incident with their own eyes, back then, but now, they had personally experienced everything. The Transcendent Flying Immortal’s name was like that person. It would probably stay on their minds for a very long period of time.

After leaving the arena, Zhou Wen and company boarded a car and drove out of the Holy City.

The driver was none other than An Sheng. As for the An Sheng sitting beside Zhou Wen, he took off his hat and wiped the disguise from his face. It was Ah Lai.

“Young Master Wen, I’m afraid that your name will be marked by the six families in the future. You must be more careful of where you go,” An Sheng said.

Zhou Wen nodded and didn’t say a word. He thought about his battle with Lance. If he didn’t have Transcendent Flying Immortal, he would definitely have lost. If Lance had learned a Primordial Energy Skill that matched Transcendent Flying Immortal, he would have equally lost.

From the looks of it, although level and Primordial Energy Skills are important, combat techniques can’t be neglected. I’ll have to continue learning from Teacher when I return. Zhou Wen secretly made up his mind. He had to make up for his lacking combat techniques when he returned.

An Sheng originally thought that they would encounter a lot of trouble on their way out of Holy City, but he was puzzled that nothing happened. As a result, many of his preparations were useless.

In the medical ward, Lance was sitting by the bed. Beside him was a long-haired girl peeling an apple.

“Has Zhou Wen and the rest left Holy City?”. asked Lance.

“Don’t worry, everything has been done. The ones from the other families have been stopped.” The girl passed the peeled apple to Lance.

“That’s good. I’ll definitely beat him next time.” Lance took the apple and took a bite.

“If you wanted to win, why didn’t you use your Life Providence?” The girl seemed to think that as long as Lance used his Life Providence, he would definitely have won.

“That would be boring,” said Lance in excitement. “Although I lost this battle, it made me understand something. Previously, I only pursued combat techniques, but I neglected the ultimate attacks found in games. In the past, I could defeat my opponents with ordinary offensive techniques, but a fellow like Zhou Wen couldn’t be defeated so easily by me. Likewise for An Tianzuo, so if I can learn several Primordial Energy Skills like Zhou Wen’s Transcendent Flying Immortal, mixing it with my combat techniques, that would be even more interesting…”

Looking at Lance’s focused and excited expression, the girl by his side listened quietly with a gentle smile.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 224 - Boundary Stone

Chapter 224 Boundary Stone

Zhou Wen was somewhat vexed. His Strength and Speed had been enhanced by the God Power Crystals, making him break through to 21 points.

However, his Primordial Energy and Constitution were still unable to break through. Now, he had no God Power Crystals to obtain unless he waited another ten years for the Holy Land to open again to head to the temples once more.

Unfortunately, Zhou Wen couldn’t wait another ten years. Even if he could, the An family probably wouldn’t give him the spot.

How do I get my Constitution and Primordial Energy to break through to 21 points? Zhou Wen had no idea what to do.

Since there are God Power Crystals in the Holy Land, they might exist in other dimensional zones as well. I can only look around in the game dungeons. Zhou Wen couldn’t help but recall the Golden Flying Ant and the white cocoon.

Now that his Dragon Gate Fairy Skill had improved and he had mastered Transcendent Flying Immortal, he might have a chance of obtaining that white cocoon.

“I was planning on taking you to the dimensional zones that we didn’t have a chance to visit when we returned, but I think we can forget about it now. We’ll go again when we have the chance,” said An Sheng as he drove.

No one objected. Zhou Wen had offended the six families terribly, so it wasn’t appropriate for them to continue wandering outside. It was best they returned to Luoyang as soon as possible.

As he was afraid that something would go wrong, An Sheng didn’t choose to take the plane back. He drove all the way until they arrived at a mountain road where they saw a girl waving at them in the middle of the road.

The car stopped and they saw that the girl’s ankle was severely injured as if she had been bitten by something. The wound was very deep and her bones were injured.

“I was attacked by a dimensional creature nearby. All my Companion Beasts died in battle and I couldn’t walk due to my injuries. Can you take me to a nearby city?” the girl requested.

“You were injured in this area? There shouldn’t be any dimensional zones nearby, right?” Li Xuan asked the girl.

“I thought that too, but a dimensional creature appeared here. I nearly died because of it,” the girl said.

“Where did you encounter dimensional creatures? What kind of dimensional creatures were they?” An Sheng stared at the girl and asked.

“It was on a mountain road about a kilometer ahead. It’s a snow-white ape-shaped dimensional creature…” The girl recounted what had happened.

After An Sheng heard this, he agreed to let the girl hitch a ride.

Li Xuan found an opportunity while An Sheng was checking the car and whispered to him, “Brother Sheng, is there a problem with this woman? We just offended the six families and ended up meeting an injured woman in the wilderness. Isn’t this too much of a coincidence?”

“If she has a problem, then all the more reason I should take her with me. I’d rather keep the enemy in my hands,” An Sheng said.

Li Xuan felt that it made sense and stopped talking.

As the car continued its journey, Zhou Wen saw that there were many signs of a battle. There was quite a lot of rubble and terrifying claw marks on the road. This woman didn’t seem to be completely lying. At the very least, there had been a fight here. As for whether her opponent was a dimensional creature or a human, it was hard to tell.

Li Xuan was very good at talking with women, so he quickly started chatting with her.

The woman said her last name was Zhang, Zhang Yuzhi—from the Eastern capital. She was a dimensional creature hunter who was a freelancer.

Typically, even if one entered a dimensional zone to adventure or kill dimensional creatures, they would join large organizations or the League’s organizations.

Only a small number of people chose to become a freelancing hunter. They would enter dimensional zones to hunt dimensional creatures alone or with a few friends.

This woman was only in her early twenties. According to the current education system, most people went to university at the age of 16. After four years of college, they would only be in their early twenties. It was surprising that a newly graduated woman would choose to become a freelance hunter.

There was also something that left Zhou Wen and company very concerned. The Eastern Capital was very close to Luoyang, and it was now under Luoyang's jurisdiction. This woman was from the Eastern Capital, so she happened to be on the same path as them.

While Li Xuan and Zhang Yuzhi were chatting, he deliberately asked a lot of questions about the Eastern Capital. Zhang Yuzhi answered them proficiently like she was a native. She even knew some of the tinier shops in the old alleys.

When they arrived at the place Zhang Yuzhi mentioned that she had encountered the dimensional creature, they didn't see white ape. Instead, there were many fallen stones on the road ahead that blocked the way.

Li Xuan went down to clean up the road and swept the rubble to the bottom of the mountain. However, after moving the rubble away, he realized that there was a corpse beneath it.

The corpse was a white ape, similar to Zhang Yuzhi's description. It was undoubtedly the same one she had seen before.

"You killed it?" An Sheng looked at the white ape's corpse and asked Zhang Yuzhi.

“No. It nearly killed me. It killed all my Companion Beasts, so how could I have the ability to kill it?” Zhang Yuzhi shook her head with certainty.

“That’s strange. If you didn’t kill it, why would it die here?” Li Xuan asked.

“I don’t know about that. Maybe there’s someone else here.” Zhang Yuzhi scanned her surroundings, but this was one of the curvy mountain roads. There was no one here. One side of the mountain road was a cliff, while the other side was a straight mountain wall. It was impossible to hide anyone.

Zhou Wen was also looking at the corpse and saw a bloody hole in the white ape’s chest. It was as though someone had dug its heart out and it had died a tragic death.

“Get in the car. Let’s continue moving.” An Sheng moved the white ape’s corpse to the side and got into the car.

Just as Zhou Wen was about to get into the car, he glanced to the side in passing and realized that there was a Boundary Stone erected by the roadside.

Boundary Stones weren’t rare. In the past, they were used to divide the boundaries between regions, cities, and countries. Some even demarcated the borders between villages. Boundary Stones were used to separate territories.

After the dimensional storms, no one really used the Boundary Stones anymore. This was because most regions had dimensional zones, making it difficult to divide them.

There were still some Boundary Stones remaining that were often seen. However, they were of no use now.

It wasn’t a rare sight to see one here, but what was rare was the tiny palm symbol on it.

Zhou Wen was very familiar with the palm symbol. Although it looked inconspicuous in the corner of the Boundary Stone, he saw it at a glance.

In the strange palm symbol was a skull. It looked even eerier.

And the four words carved on the Boundary Stone didn’t look like a location’s name. The four words were actually “Yin Yang Boundary Stone.”

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 225 - Red Clothes

Chapter 225 Red Clothes

Zhou Wen took out his cell phone and snapped a picture of the Boundary Stone. Indeed, it was downloaded into his interface.

“Zhou Wen, what are you doing? Get in the car!” Li Xuan shouted at Zhou Wen from inside the car.

“Look at this Boundary Stone. There seems to be a problem,” Zhou Wen said as he pointed at it.

Li Xuan and company alighted from the car and walked to the Boundary Stone. Li Xuan said with a glance, “Is this a prank?”

An Sheng walked to the stone monolith and touched it. He dug the soil under the stone monolith with his hands before he frowned and said, “This stone monolith wasn’t buried recently. It has existed here for a long time. It doesn’t seem like a prank.”

“It’s not a prank? Why would there be such a thing as a Yin Yang Boundary Stone? Could it be that after crossing the Yin Yang boundary, one will reach the netherworld?” Li Xuan joked.

“I don’t know if we will enter the netherworld, but there’s nothing wrong with being careful. All of you, be on your

guard.” An Sheng carefully looked around but didn’t find anything unusual.

There was only one path on the mountain. Furthermore, there were no dimensional zones nearby. An Sheng couldn’t directly turn back just because of the appearance of such a Boundary Stone.

Zhou Wen said, “Ah Sheng, let’s switch paths. I think there’s something off about the area up ahead. Could it be a newly appeared dimensional zone?”

“Not a bad idea.” An Sheng nodded slightly. He also felt that something was amiss. However, if he had to take a detour, they would have to travel another additional ten hours or more.

He turned the car around and drove back the way they came. He drove to a fork at the foot of the mountain and made his way to another mountain road. He continued driving along another path that was a huge detour. Furthermore, it wasn’t easy to drive on, limiting the car’s speed.

The path was riddled with potholes and it was extremely difficult to drive across it. The car was shaking violently as Zhou Wen looked at his phone. The download had been completed, and the Yin Yang World icon had appeared on the phone’s home screen.

However, Zhou Wen usually only played the Ant Nest dungeon in front of others. Now that there were so many people, it was not appropriate for him to open the Yin Yang World’s instance dungeon.

After driving for half a day, the tremors were so intense that Zhou Wen felt like his bones were about to fall apart. Li Xuan

and Ah Lai felt a little uncomfortable as well, and the three nearly fainted.

Screech!

A sudden slamming of the brakes woke the three of them up. Their heads almost squeezed against the back of the front row.

“Brother Sheng, what happened?” Li Xuan asked.

“There’s another Boundary Stone in front of us,” said An Sheng before he opened the door and got out.

Zhou Wen and company followed. Indeed, there was a Boundary Stone by the side of the mountain. On it were the same words: ‘Yin Yang World.’ However, Zhou Wen didn’t see the tiny palm symbol.

“Must it be that creepy?” Li Xuan looked around. It was almost getting dark, so there was a limit to what he could see.

“Ah Sheng, is there another way?” Zhou Wen asked.

“That’s it. Now, most of the dimensional zones have cut off the routes available. If we want to take another detour, we will have to leave this mountainous area, but it would take too long.” An Sheng thought for a moment before saying, “How about this? It’s getting dark and there aren’t any street lamps. It won’t be convenient for us to go back. Let’s find a place to camp. After daybreak, we can return to the airport and take a plane back.”

“Alright, let’s do that then.” Zhou Wen felt that it was best not to risk crossing the Yin Yang World’s stone monolith.

An Sheng took out a simple tent and other tools from his car and found an empty space by the side of the road. He set up a tent and placed a few warning pins to prevent any other vehicles from crashing into their tents while driving past.

Although there was a small possibility of cars passing through, An Sheng still managed to consider everything.

Li Xuan and Zhang Yuzhi were chatting while Ah Lai started a fire to prepare some food.

Zhou Wen sat in the car and was about to open the Yin Yang World instance dungeon to see what was inside when he suddenly heard Li Xuan's surprised voice. "What is that?"

Zhou Wen hurriedly got out of the car and looked over. He saw Li Xuan pointing in the direction of the Yin Yang Boundary Stone with a look of shock.

He looked over and saw a woman in red standing on the other side of the Yin Yang Boundary Stone.

To be precise, it was likely a woman wearing a red wedding dress. Zhou Wen had seen such clothes when he was watching television when he was young. It was said to be a rather ancient tradition.

Women nowadays wore white wedding gowns when they got married. In the East District's ancient times, white was something only when there was a death in the family. People wore red for marriage.

The daughters of rich families all wore embroidered red silk wedding gowns, with a red veil covering their heads. The groom would only be able to remove the bride's red veil on their wedding night.

The woman standing on the other side of the Yin Yang Boundary Stone was like a bride dressed in red from a television drama. She had a red veil over her head and was standing behind the stone monolith, seemingly looking at them.

“Who’s trying to act mysterious there?” Perhaps the trembling Zhang Yuzhi had triggered Li Xuan’s male hormones. At that moment, Li Xuan was shockingly bold as he shouted at the woman in red behind the Yin Yang Boundary Stone.

The woman in red didn’t respond and stood there motionless. Although the red cloth covered her head, it didn’t deter Zhou Wen and company from feeling as though she was staring at them.

Without any response from the woman in red, Li Xuan became somewhat angry. He summoned a Legendary black-eyed leopard and ordered it to pounce at the woman.

An Sheng, Zhou Wen, and company stared at the black-eyed leopard. It quickly passed the stone monolith and leaped into the air, bearing its sharp claws as it pounced at the red-dressed woman.

The next scene caused the five of them to widen their eyes as their scalps tingled.

The black-eyed leopard actually passed through the woman’s body, as though her body was just an illusion.

“Don’t tell me we’ve really run into ghosts?” When Li Xuan saw this scene, he felt a little nervous.

He wasn’t afraid of guns or bullets, but a ghost would still make him feel uneasy even if he was strong.

Li Xuan was just about to order the black-eyed leopard to continue attacking when he saw the woman’s body move. Only then did everyone notice that the woman’s feet were not touching the ground. She had always been levitating in midair, so they could clearly see the red floral embroidered shoes on her feet.

Due to the Boundary Stone’s obstruction, everyone had imagined that she was standing there. Upon seeing this scene, they had the urge to flee. Even Zhou Wen was no exception.

When he was young, he had heard many ghost stories from his grandfather. One of them was the story of the ghost bride. He thought to himself, Did I really encounter a ghost bride?

When his grandfather told the story of the ghost bride when he was young, it scared Zhou Wen so much that he didn’t dare sleep the entire night. The moment he fell asleep, a red-dressed female ghost came looking for him, determined to kill him. It was a childhood nightmare.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 226 - Breaking Out of the Seal

Chapter 226 Breaking Out of the Seal

However, Zhou Wen only felt a little creeped out. He didn’t really turn around to run. He knew that even if she was a ghost bride, she was only a dimensional creature.

He now possessed the strength of a Legendary stage, so there was no need for him to be afraid of any ghost brides.

Li Xuan seemed to have shared the same thoughts as he grew bolder. He ordered his black-eyed leopard to once again pounce at the ghost bride.

The ghost bride also rushed towards the black-eyed leopard. Their bodies met in mid-air, and the black-eyed leopard once again passed through the ghost bride’s body, unable to hurt her at all.

However, when the black-eyed leopard landed, it let out a tragic whimper as it staggered to the ground. There was a bloody hole in its chest, as though someone had dug its heart out.

Companion Beasts were manifestations of life crystals, so they naturally didn’t have a real heart. However, such an injury caused the black-eyed leopard’s body to collapse. A Legendary pet was gone just like that.

From the way the black-eyed leopard died, it looked almost identical to the white ape from before.

After the ghost bride killed the black-eyed leopard, she stood behind the Boundary Stone and looked at Zhou Wen and company without any intention of rushing over.

“She doesn’t dare to cross the Boundary Stone!” Upon realizing this, Li Xuan immediately became emboldened. He summoned another Legendary pet and had it charge at the ghost bride.

Previously, he and Zhou Wen had robbed quite a number of Legendary Companion Eggs in the Holy Land. He had obtained quite a number from the splitting of the spoils, so he had hatched a few out of boredom on the way. Now, it was a good opportunity to use them.

A snake-shaped Legendary pet rushed in front of the ghost bride and spat out a mouthful of venom. However, the venom didn’t manage to touch the ghost bride’s body. After passing through it, it landed on the ground.

The snake lunged at her and attempted to coil itself around her. However, it was useless. The ghost bride was a ghost that couldn’t be touched.

In turn, the snake pet’s body had an additional five claw holes that caused it to die.

Li Xuan was enraged. He was just about to summon another Companion Beast to fight the ghost bride but was stopped by An Sheng.

“Don’t waste your Companion Beasts. That should be a dimensional creature that’s a ghost type. Ordinary physical attacks are ineffective against ghost-type dimensional

creatures,” said An Sheng as he summoned a Companion Beast.

Zhou Wen and company didn’t even see what the Companion Beast looked like as it transformed into a wooden fish-one that a monk often used—that fell into An Sheng’s hands.

An Sheng struck the wooden fish a few times. Zhou Wen and company didn’t find anything special about the sound it produced, but the ghost bride’s body trembled as though her body had been punched.

An Sheng kept striking the wooden fish, but the ghost bride’s body stopped trembling. The sound of the wooden fish seemed to have lost its effect on her.

An Sheng frowned slightly. “This Buddhist wooden fish is considered an excellent-grade item among the Legendary stage. It is effective against ghost-type dimensional creatures; yet, it can’t injure this ghost bride. From the looks of it, her level isn’t low.”

“Then, do you have any other Companion Beasts that are effective against her?” asked Li Xuan.

“I don’t have any. Not all Buddhist Companion Beasts can restrain ghosts. I only obtained this Buddhist wooden fish by chance. I’ve never used it before.” With a pause, An Sheng added, “From the looks of it, this place has indeed formed a new dimensional zone. Furthermore, it’s a dimensional zone that is filled with ghost-type dimensional creatures. Thankfully, Young Master Wen was meticulous and discovered the Yin Yang Boundary Stone. If we had rushed in, we could have died inside without any Companion Beasts that are effective against ghost-type dimensional creatures.”

Zhou Wen secretly felt ashamed. If he hadn't seen the palm symbol, he wouldn't have noticed that there was something amiss with the Boundary Stone.

"I don't believe it. I don't believe that there's no Companion Beast that can deal with her." Li Xuan refused to believe it as he summoned a few more Companion Beasts. However, all of them were killed by the ghost bride without exception. Furthermore, they couldn't even touch the ghost bride's body. Li Xuan was so infuriated that he nearly vomited blood.

However, Li Xuan only relied on his numerous Companion Beasts. He wouldn't dare fight the ghost bride himself.

Humans usually relied on their Companion Beasts to open up a path in new dimensional zones. Even so, deaths were frequent. For example, if Zhou Wen and company had entered the Yin Yang World by mistake, it would have been very easy for them to be killed by ghosts even if they had many Companion Beasts.

The few Companion Beasts that Li Xuan had hatched had been killed by the ghost bride. He still had a few other Companion Beasts, but they were all excellent-grade ones he had specially selected. He couldn't bear to use the Companion Beasts like the Three-Eyed Golden Warrior and Thundergod General. If they were to be killed by the ghost bride, his heart would ache terribly.

Although Li Xuan couldn't accept this outcome, he gave up on attacking her.

But at this moment, the ghost bride drifted out from behind the Yin Yang Boundary Stone.

“No good, she’s a creature that has broken out. Get in the car and leave immediately.” An Sheng’s expression changed. He rushed in front of everyone and shouted at the same time.

They didn’t dare to delay any further. They ignored the tent and went straight into the car. However, they realized that the car couldn’t be started.

The color of the bonfire lit turned from yellow to blood red. It made them reel with anxiety.

The ghost bride ignored An Sheng, who was standing in front of her, and floated over to Zhou Wen and company. A cold glint flashed in An Sheng’s eyes as he struck the ghost bride’s body with his palm that had produced lightning. Instantly, the ghost bride retreated dozens of feet and floated far away.

“Brother Sheng, why didn’t you say earlier that lightning is effective against ghosts? Let me help you.” Li Xuan was delighted when he saw this. He hurriedly summoned his Thundergod General and transformed him into the Thundergod Sword. As he held it in his hand, he slashed at the ghost bride.

When the Thundergod Sword slashed at the ghost bride with lightning bolts, the ghost bride stretched out a pale hand and grabbed the Thundergod Sword. Then, with a strong swing, she threw Li Xuan and the sword out together.

Bam!

Li Xuan’s body slammed into the mountain wall and immediately, his face was swollen. Even his bridge of his nose was fractured.

“The power of the lightning element deals a certain level of damage to ghosts, but the effects are still greatly reduced. When I used the power of an Epic-stage lightning bolt to hit her, it only achieved about 10-20% of its effect. What’s the use of that bit of lightning power of yours?” As An Sheng spoke, he struck out with another palm of lightning, sending the ghost bride flying again.

However, it was only enough to send her flying. He was still unable to seriously injure the ghost bride.

The ghost bride was forced back by An Sheng time and time again, but she pounced forward again and again. The situation was tense.

“We don’t have the strength or Companion Beasts that are effective against ghosts. It’s very difficult to kill her. I’ll hold her back. You guys leave first. We’ll rendezvous at Dadong Town,” said An Sheng.

Zhou Wen’s heart stirred when he heard An Sheng’s words. He summoned Truth Listener. This fellow was a Mythical pet from Small Buddha Temple. Furthermore, the legendary Truth Listener was a soul-suppressing beast of hell. Perhaps it was possible that it had the ability to counter ghosts.

Just as Truth Listener was summoned, its eyes flashed with golden light as it stared intently at the ghost bride. In the next second, Truth Listener transformed into a golden beam of light that tore towards the ghost bride.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 227 - Jinxes Husband

Chapter 227 Jinxes Husband

Truth Listener transformed into a golden beam of light and instantly appeared in front of the ghost bride. The ghost bride's body trembled as a result. Facing the Epic-stage An Sheng, the ghost bride hadn't shown any fear, but now, she turned around and attempted to escape.

However, Truth Listener clearly wasn't letting her go. It pressed its claw on her back and it seemed to resemble a golden seal that left a mysterious golden branding on the ghost bride's back.

No matter how far she ran, her body shimmered with golden light. Soon, her soul dissipated amidst the golden light, dropping a red crystal.

Truth Listener's tiny claw grabbed the red crystal and leaped back with a whoosh, landing in Zhou Wen's palm. It then placed the red crystal in his hand.

Li Xuan widened his eyes as he looked at Truth Listener, who resembled a golden-silk monkey in Zhou Wen's palm. He asked in surprise, "Old Zhou, what kind of pet is that? Why is it so awesome?"

An Sheng also sized up Truth Listener in surprise, clearly very curious.

"A Legendary Companion Beast. However, it has Buddhist attributes, so it should be effective against ghosts. Probably the reason why it killed the ghost bride so easily." Zhou Wen

unsummoned Truth Listener and carefully looked at the red crystal in his hand before realizing that it was a Companion Egg.

“Ghost-type Companion Beasts are very rare at the moment. Typically, a ghost-type Companion Beast can avoid physical attacks and most of its attribute attacks. However, typically speaking, a ghost-type Companion Beast’s attack strength is relatively weaker. They are more adept at curses. This ghost bride’s offensive strength was very powerful, so it’s relatively rare among ghost-type pets. Although she’s only at the Legendary stage, she will be very useful when exploring new dimensional zones due to her characteristics. Even if she were to encounter an Epic creature, she probably wouldn’t be killed unless the opponent is of a counter attribute,” An Sheng said as he looked at the Companion Egg in Zhou Wen’s hand.

Zhou Wen threw the ghost bride Companion Egg at An Sheng, who was slightly taken aback when he caught it. “Young Master Wen, what are you doing?”

“I’m still a student, so I naturally don’t have the chance to explore new dimensional zones. It’s useless keeping her around. Take this with you to the military. Perhaps it can reduce the number of military sacrifices.” An Sheng had spent a lot of effort taking care of them along the way. It could even be said that he had risked his life. All Zhou Wen wanted was to do something in return.

Although ghost bride Companion Beasts were rare, Zhou Wen had already downloaded the Yin Yang World’s instance dungeon and had Truth Listener who was effective against the ghost bride. It wouldn’t be difficult for him to obtain ghost bride Companion Beasts in the future.

“A Companion Egg can’t solve the military’s problem. It will be of great use if there’s a large number of ghost brides.” As An Sheng spoke, he returned the ghost bride Companion Egg to Zhou Wen. “Young Master Wen, if you really wish to help the military, you can join after graduation. You will definitely be of help with your capabilities.”

“We’ll see when the time comes,” Zhou Wen said with a shake of his head. Even if he wanted to join the military, he had no plans of joining An Tianzuo’s unit.

As though he had seen through Zhou Wen’s thoughts, An Sheng shook his head slightly and said nothing more.

They packed their things and followed the path back. Even with an Epic expert like An Sheng around, they couldn’t randomly enter an unknown dimensional zone and risk their lives. Furthermore, this dimensional zone had the most bizarre ghost-like creatures.

“Old Zhou, quickly hatch that ghost bride and take a look. I want to see what she looks like. After you hatch her, get her to remove the red veil for us to take a look,” Li Xuan said to Zhou Wen when they got into the car. He was curious.

Zhou Wen also wished to see the ghost bride’s stats, but it wasn’t convenient for him to use his cell phone in front of Li Xuan and company. He listened to Li Xuan and took out the ghost bride Companion Egg.

Zhou Wen seldom hatched Companion Eggs himself as he typically hatched them in-game. With the Companion Egg in hand, he injected his Primordial Energy into it. Immediately, he felt his Primordial Energy flow into the Companion Egg like it overflowed a dam. Soon, all the drops that flowed out were gone. There was even a feeling that he had provided an insufficient amount.

This left Zhou Wen slightly taken aback. Although his Primordial Energy had yet to reach 21 points, he still had 20 points. Typical Legendary Companion Eggs that could be hatched with 18 or 19 Primordial Energy were already considered excellent-grade. Yet, the ghost bride found 20 Primordial Energy points insufficient. This made it rather impressive.

She sure is a powerful creature that dared to walk out of the dimensional zone. She really seems different. Zhou Wen gritted his teeth and forcefully survived the pressure the Companion Egg exerted on him. Thankfully, he had a Dao Body and his Primordial Energy recovered quickly. It wasn't difficult for him to last through the ordeal.

The Companion Egg was finally hatched as it transformed into a red glow that imprinted onto Zhou Wen's forehead. It transformed into a red dotted tattoo that resembled a red birthmark on his forehead.

"Quickly summon her and take a look," Li Xuan said eagerly.

"It's so crowded in the car. How do I summon her?" Zhou Wen asked.

"Your intelligence sure is lacking. She has a ghost body. Nothing in the car can touch her," Li Xuan said.

Zhou Wen shook his head. "Let's wait until we arrive at a rest area."

He found an opportunity when no one was watching to glance at the ghost bride's stats and never expected her name to really be Ghost Bride.

Ghost Bride: Legendary

Life Providence: Wife of the Ghost King

Strength: 19

Speed: 20

Constitution: 19

Primordial Energy: 21

Talent Skills: Ghost, Spirit Suction, Yin Wind Claw, Jinxes Husband.

Companion Form: Ghost Eyes.

Her Primordial Energy is actually at 21 points. Isn't this a stat point that only Mythical Creatures have? How can ordinary Legendary creatures reach such a level? Zhou Wen was alarmed. Seeing her talent skills, his expression turned even odder. How is jinxing a husband considered a skill?

Looking at her companion form, he had no idea what Ghost Eyes meant. He could only guess that the Ghost Bride could become an eye.

Zhou Wen was studying the Ghost Bride's stats when he suddenly felt An Sheng brake. The tires screeched as it dragged across the road, producing ear-piercing sounds.

Li Xuan was about to doze off, so without sitting properly, he slammed into the back of the seat in front of him. Just as he was about to say something, he heard Zhang Yuzhi, who was sitting in the front passenger seat, let out an extremely sharp scream. "In front… there are ghosts in front…"

Zhou Wen and Li Xuan looked ahead where the car lights shone. Immediately, their expressions changed. A group of

white-robed ghosts appeared on the main road ahead of them. They walked over in a daunting manner, and amongst them, there were even ghosts carrying a red-painted coffin. When they walked over, the entire sky seemed to be enveloped by a terrifying ghostly aura. Instantly, the surroundings became a place filled with ghosts.

The white-robed ghosts had long green fangs that didn’t resemble human teeth. As for the red coffin, there was a strange black gas emitting from it. It looked ghastly and terrifying.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 228 - Ghost Tide

Chapter 228 Ghost Tide

Zhou Wen and company's faces turned grim. There were countless ghosts in front of the mountain path. They were carrying a coffin, like a funeral procession.

When they were about a hundred meters away from Zhou Wen and company, the ghosts that carried the coffin stopped. However, it was a momentary pause. In the next second, the ghosts roared and charged forward like a tidal wave.

"There's no other way. We can only storm through." An Sheng summoned a dagger and opened the door to get down.

Zhou Wen, Li Xuan, Ah Lai, and Zhang Yuzhi got out of the car. Zhang Yuzhi's face was pale, but she was already prepared for battle. Clearly, she knew that it was useless no matter how afraid she was. She had to storm through.

"You guys follow behind me." An Sheng took charge and stared at the approaching ghosts. When they were about five meters away from him, the dagger in his hand finally moved.

The dagger brought with it a beam of light that resembled a blade. The blade beam slashed at the surging ghosts, instantly cleaving through the first row of ghosts that were leading the charge. The few ghosts behind were struck by the impact, and their bodies were sent flying backward.

Although the might of one strike appeared powerful, Zhou Wen couldn’t help but frown. If An Sheng’s blade beam was facing ordinary Legendary creatures, it would probably have killed a large number of them.

However, this strike only managed to kill the first four ghosts, and they were only ordinary Legendary ghosts. Clearly, the effect of An Sheng’s strength was limited when dealing damage to a ghost.

In an instant, the legion of ghosts inundated Zhou Wen and company as they attacked from all directions.

An Sheng was in charge of leading the charge while Ah Lai and Li Xuan defended the flanks. Zhou Wen stood at the back while the injured Zhang Yuzhi, who had lost all her pets, remained in the middle to guard against the occasional one that slipped through their defenses.

An Sheng’s gaze was cold as he constantly brandished his dagger. Wherever the blade beam hit, even ghosts were forcibly cut through. A path of destruction emerged from the sea of ghosts as he charged forward with Zhou Wen and company.

Although the Thundergod Sword in Li Xuan’s hand was limited in effect against the Ghost Bride, it was still effective against ordinary ghosts.

Furthermore, his Invincible Connate Divine Art seemed to have a certain effect on them. Although he wasn’t capable of slaying the ghosts like An Sheng, he still caused the ghosts beside him to howl in pain.

Ah Lai’s situation was somewhat odd. He was clearly a little afraid and had apparently not cultivated any specialized combat techniques. It did not seem like he had been

augmented by any Primordial Energy Skills, but when his fists struck the ghosts, he was able to send them flying. A few ghosts were nearly blasted apart by him.

“Li Xuan is right. Ah Lai does indeed possess immense power.” Zhou Wen was relatively relaxed. Truth Listener was right in front of him. When ghosts charged at him, Truth Listener would charge out like a stream of light, dissipating a ghost with a single swipe of its paw.

Zhou Wen switched his Primordial Energy Art to the Small Perfection of Wisdom Sutra. The ghosts that slipped through the cracks would suffer a strike of his palm. He discovered that with the augmentation of the Small Perfection of Wisdom Sutra, hitting a ghost was no different from hitting a living creature. It directly shattered the ghost’s head.

The Small Perfection of Wisdom Sutra does have the ability to restrain ghosts. Zhou Wen felt a lot more at ease. According to their current situation, if they were only blocked by this legion of ghosts, they should be able to tear through the obstacle.

However, Zhou Wen had an ominous feeling when his gaze landed on the red-painted coffin that emitted black gas.

An Sheng led the group all the way forward, killing countless ghosts along the way. There were many ghost crystals that dropped on the ground, but none of them had the time to pick them up.

Truth Listener seemed to enjoy the crystals of these ghosts as it charged forward like lightning and devoured them. It reveled in the killing and, without waiting for Zhou Wen’s instructions, he took the initiative to kill the nearby ghosts.

It was very effective against ghosts. Legendary ghosts basically just needed one swipe of its claw. Those ghosts had no ability to resist it at all.

The five of them continued their relentless assaults in the midst of the ghost tide, almost closing in on the coffin.

Perhaps due to the agitation caused by the group’s slaying of ghosts, the red-painted coffin that emitted black gas began to shake violently. Just as Zhou Wen and company were less than ten meters away from it, the lid suddenly opened and a hand extended out, pressing it to the side of the coffin.

It was as pale as snow with long, slender fingers. They looked like bones wrapped in skin, but the nails were silver, long and sharp, like sharp blades.

And there seemed to be a faint black gas emitting from that hand.

Zhou Wen’s heart sank as An Sheng’s expression turned solemn. They continued charging forward without a word.

The ghost hand pressed down hard on the coffin, and a figure slowly stood up. It was a person with white hair and black armor. There was even a ferocious ghost mask on its face and a faint black gas emitted from its body-one that exuded a sinister charm.

The black-armored, white-haired ghost slowly floated up from the coffin as it stared at Truth Listener and An Sheng. The next moment, it seemed to teleport and appeared in front of An Sheng. It thrust its silver fingernails at An Sheng’s head like five sharp daggers.

An Sheng quickly reacted as he whipped his dagger upwards and slashed at the ghost’s hand like a streak of light, giving it a great impulse.

“Retreat,” An Sheng said with a solemn expression.

Zhou Wen and Li Xuan knew that something was amiss. Behind them was the Yin Yang Boundary Stone. If they retreated, they would retreat into the Yin Yang world.

An Sheng clearly knew that this was the case; yet, he still got them to retreat. Clearly, they had encountered a very serious problem. Even he was not confident about defeating the black-armored, white-haired ghost.

Without another word, Zhou Wen charged back with Truth Listener. Li Xuan, Ah Lai, and Zhang Yuzhi followed closely behind.

However, An Sheng didn’t retreat. He held onto the dagger and stared at the black-armored, white-haired ghost intently.

The black-armored, white-haired ghost also looked at An Sheng as the black aura around it became more obvious. As for the other ghosts, they appeared to not see An Sheng at all. They no longer attacked him and instead charged at the escaping Zhou Wen and company.

An Sheng’s aura grew stronger as a strange light rose up from his body as if a demon had possessed him. The purple light seemed to dye his body purple. Boom!

Zhou Wen only heard a terrifying explosion from An Sheng when he saw ghostly auras rise up. It was mixed with a strange purple hue. Countless ghosts had been dispersed.

However, there were just too many ghosts, and countless ghosts were still rushing at them. Without An Sheng holding back most of the ghosts, their situation immediately became dire.

Although Truth Listener was effective against ghosts, it was a Legendary pet after all. It could only kill one ghost at a time without a mass attack. With it only killing one ghost, more ghosts would lunge at them.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 229 - Yin Yang World

Chapter 229 Yin Yang World

Zhou Wen charged forward as he constantly punched out with his fists, but he could only send two or three ghosts retreating.

Seeing more and more ghosts surrounding them, Zhou Wen and company were unable to move far. They were trapped in their spots. Zhou Wen summoned Banana Fairy and sent a gust of Grand Yin Wind at the ghosts ahead of them.

A strong gust of wind blew past, instantly blowing away the large group of ghosts ahead. However, after the ghosts were blown away, they quickly lunged forward again, not suffering too much damage.

Zhou Wen immediately understood that the power of the Grand Yin Wind was an Yin-elemental wind. As for ghosts, they were of an extreme Yin nature. The wind attribute of the Grand Yin Wind was effective against them, but the Yin attribute wasn’t of much use. All he could do was send them flying, but he couldn’t freeze them.

It’s good enough to send them flying. Zhou Wen gritted his teeth as he charged forward. His Dao body quickly recovered his Primordial Energy, and once he did that, he would fan the back.

Li Xuan blocked most of the ghosts in the rear, but the wounds on his body kept increasing. With Zhou Wen’s fanning, a large number of the ghosts behind them were sent flying, giving Li Xuan some breathing space.

Zhou Wen summoned the Three-Eyed Golden Warrior, the Saber Shield Knight, Demonized General, the Silver-Winged Flying Ant, and the Mutated Lotus Flower Ant, but the effects weren't that great.

Among them, only the Golden Warrior's Golden Palm did significant damage to the ghosts. The damage dealt to the ghosts by the other pets' attacks was very limited and was of not much use.

Soon, Zhou Wen unsummoned them. This was the real world. They died permanently here with no way to revive them. These were excellent-grade Companion Beasts that Zhou Wen had; he couldn't bear to send them to their deaths.

Zhou Wen summoned the Ghost Bride and saw her figure move erratically. Wherever the pale-white hands with red nails touched, a ghost's head would be pierced through by her claws. Then, the ghost would be absorbed by her palm, turning her nails even redder like blood.

The Ghost Bride's wanton killing was much more efficient than Zhou Wen's. She shared the burden for the four of them.

With the aid of the Banana Fairy, Truth Listener, and Ghost Bride, Zhou Wen and company finally arrived at a spot not far from the Yin Yang Boundary Stone.

From time to time, earth-shattering explosions could be heard from afar, making Zhou Wen and company feel much more at ease. At least they knew that An Sheng was still battling the black-armored, white-haired ghost-he hadn't been killed.

However, they were also in a daze. An Sheng only wanted them to rush back, but he didn’t tell them what to do. Now that they were about to reach the Yin Yang Boundary Stone, were they to cross it?

There was no way out after being chased by ghosts. If they entered the netherworld again, it could only be worse.

Zhou Wen, who was at the forefront, couldn’t help but look in the direction of the Yin Yang Boundary Stone. When he saw it, his pupils immediately constricted as though he had seen an extremely terrifying scene.

“Holy sh*t!” Li Xuan also looked in the direction of the Boundary Stone and immediately exclaimed when he saw it.

Behind the Boundary Stone was a group of red-dressed female ghosts. Their numbers were in no way lesser than the white-robed ghosts they were facing. At that moment, they were behind the Boundary Stone like a sea of red flowers.

However, the red-dressed female ghosts were somewhat different from Zhou Wen’s Ghost Bride. Although they were dressed in red, they were only dressed in ordinary red robes. They weren’t bridal gowns, nor were there red veils that covered their faces. Their faces could be seen.

The female ghosts didn’t look ugly and were actually rather pretty. However, their faces were pale and looked ghastly. Their fingernails were long and sharp. Although they didn’t look ugly, they appeared extremely frightening.

“Out of the frying pan and into the fire. We are really in big trouble this time,” Li Xuan cried out loudly. His Immortal God of Combat Life Providence and the Invincible Connate Divine Art made him nearly immortal as long as he wasn’t

immediately slain. But even so, such a crazy battle was a huge burden on him.

Zhou Wen was also secretly lamenting. The white-robed ghosts had the black-armored, white-haired ghost that even An Sheng was not necessarily able to beat. They definitely couldn’t escape in that direction.

However, the red-dressed female ghosts weren’t to be trifled with either. Furthermore, after entering the dimensional zone, who knew what else was there. Perhaps, there was a large number of black-armored, white-haired ghosts inside. If they charged in, they would only end up dead.

Instantly, the four fell into a dilemma. They could neither advance nor retreat, and could only fight the white-robed ghosts with all their might.

However, there was no way to continue fighting like this. Humans didn’t have inexhaustible stamina. The Dao Body could recover Zhou Wen’s Primordial Energy, but it was impossible for it to completely recover his stamina. Zhou Wen was already beginning to feel exhausted, and he had no idea how long he could last.

Li Xuan’s and Ah Lai’s situation wasn’t any better. The depletion of their stamina wasn’t any less than Zhou Wen’s. Zhang Yuzhi was the worst. She limped as she barely managed to fight. She had already suffered quite a few injuries.

If not for Zhou Wen, Li Xuan, and Ah Lai taking care of her occasionally, she would have long been killed by the ghosts.

“It’s not a solution if this goes on. Instead of dying so pathetically, why don’t we charge back and kill the black-armored, white-haired ghost with Brother Sheng? If we

succeed, we can successfully escape. Even if we don’t succeed, we’ll just die gloriously in battle. It’s better than dying here because of being overwhelmed,” Li Xuan said.

Zhou Wen scanned his surroundings and suddenly said, “Don’t go back yet. Let’s approach the Yin Yang Boundary Stone a little closer.”

With that said, Zhou Wen had already used the Grand Yin Wind to lead the way as he charged towards the red-dressed female ghosts. However, his Grand Yin Wind was only used to fan the white-robed ghosts away; he didn’t attack the red-dressed female ghosts.

Although they did not know what Zhou Wen was up to, Li Xuan and Ah Lai followed without any hesitation. Soon, they arrived in front of the Boundary Stone.

At that moment, they discovered a strange scene. None of the red-dressed female ghosts standing behind the Boundary Stone charged over.

As for the white-robed ghosts, none of them came close to the Yin Yang Boundary Stone. They gathered on the other side of the Boundary Stone as they bared their fangs and brandished their claws at Zhou Wen and

company.

The white-robed ghosts and the red-dressed female ghosts looked at each other across the Boundary Stone. The ghosts on both sides were eyeing Zhou Wen and company covetously, but none of them charged forward. It made the four who were trapped around the Boundary Stone feel alarmed yet relieved.

After fighting for so long, the four of them were exhausted. They leaned close towards the Yin Yang Boundary Stone but were unable to rest. The white-robed ghosts and red-dressed female ghosts on both sides were less than a meter away from them. The terrifying ghastly claws that were waving around seemed to be able to pierce a few holes into their bodies at any moment.

“Old Zhou, are we saved now?” Li Xuan said with a sullen expression as he looked at the ghastly claw waving in front of him.

“The food and drinks are all in the car. We are trapped here. Even if these ghosts don’t harm us, we won’t be able to live for long. Do you think we are saved?” Zhou Wen sized up the Yin Yang Boundary Stone. He hoped that he could find a way out.

However, beyond that was ghastly and terrifying. Fog was everywhere, making it impossible to see what was inside.

Suddenly, the potent collisions in the distance vanished as the night turned silent. It made Zhou Wen and company feel their hearts in their throats.

“Did Brother Sheng win?” Li Xuan swallowed his saliva with great difficulty. If An Sheng didn’t win, he probably had been harmed by the black-armored, white-haired ghost. This also spelled doom for them.

Their gazes were fixed on the road. Soon, Zhou Wen and company’s expressions became extremely nasty. They saw the black-armored, white-haired ghost fly over in the sky, its head of white hair fluttering in the wind, like a devil coming into this world.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 230 - Ghost King

Chapter 230 Ghost King

“Let’s charge in.” Zhou Wen gritted his teeth when he saw the black-armored, white-haired ghost charging at them. He got up and charged towards the Yin Yang Boundary Stone.

With the Grand Yin Wind clearing the path, the red-dressed female ghosts were sent flying dozens of meters away.

Li Xuan and company also knew that facing the black-armored, white-haired ghost would only lead to death. Without any hesitation, they followed Zhou Wen past the Yin Yang Boundary Stone.

Despite the Grand Yin Wind sending many female ghosts flying dozens of meters away, there were just too many red-dressed female ghosts. Soon, more red-dressed female ghosts surrounded them.

Zhou Wen fanned again, blowing away the female ghost in front of him as he ran desperately inside with the trio.

Not long after the four of them ran in, the black-armored, white-haired ghost charged to the Yin Yang Boundary Stone. However, he didn’t hesitate like the white-robed ghosts and rushed straight in.

The moment he entered, the red-dressed female ghosts seemed to break into a frenzy. All of them began screaming as their hair stood on end. They charged at the black-armored, white-haired ghost fearlessly.

Zhou Wen and company were pleasantly surprised when they saw this.

“Holy sh*t, all hell’s breaking loose!” Li Xuan cried out in pleasant surprise.

However, their pleasant surprise didn’t last long. When the group of red-dressed female ghosts pounced at the black-armored, white-haired ghost, the black gas emitting from the latter suddenly blasted outwards, producing a shockwave. It instantly obliterated all the red-dressed female ghosts within a twenty-meter radius.

The black-armored, white-haired ghost ignored the red-dressed female ghosts and flew towards Zhou Wen and company.

The four of them felt their hearts turn cold. The black-armored, white-haired ghost could kill a group of red-dressed female ghosts without even laying his finger on them. Such strength was a calamity for them.

Although the red-dressed female ghosts continued charging forward fearlessly, they had no effect on the black-armored, white-haired ghost. Just a surge of his black gas evaporated and dissipated them, leaving only a few ghost crystals falling to the ground.

The four of them only managed to run for about a hundred meters before the black-armored, white-haired ghost caught up to them. He extended his ghastly claws and grabbed at Zhou Wen.

The black gas condensed into the shape of a ghastly claw and, despite being more than ten meters away, appeared in front of Zhou Wen instantly and was about to hoist him up.

Zhou Wen held the banana fan and fanned it at the black gaseous claw. The Grand Yin Wind swept over, blowing away all the black gas.

However, before Zhou Wen and company could rejoice, the black-armored, white-haired ghost released another claw. A gigantic ghastly hand, formed from black gases grabbed at Zhou Wen, its speed so fast that it was almost impossible to dodge.

The Grand Yin Wind had just been used and Zhou Wen's Primordial Energy had yet to recover. Unable to use it again, all he could do was pull out his Bamboo Blade and slash at the black gaseous claw.

Ghost Bride and Truth Listener attacked the black gaseous hand at the same time. The Yin Wind Claw and the golden beam of Truth Listener's claws almost struck the black gaseous claw simultaneously.

Bam!

The black gaseous claw was shattered by the two pets, but Zhou Wen felt his hands go numb as his Primordial Energy was nearly drained.

"Run separately!" Zhou Wen could tell that he was the black-armored, white-haired ghost's target. He immediately ran in another direction.

The black-armored, white-haired ghost indeed chased after him without any hesitation. The red-dressed female ghosts that approached him were dissipated as though he was a demon king in the flesh.

Zhou Wen felt worse than the black-armored white-haired ghost. By using the Great Yin Wind to rid the red-dressed

female ghosts in front of him, there was no way to deal with his pursuer. Furthermore, the black-armored, white-haired ghost was obviously much faster than him. In a blink of an eye, he had caught up to him.

As though he knew that the black gaseous claw was useless against Zhou Wen, the black-armored, white-haired ghost grabbed at him with his hand. It was as fast as an illusion.

Zhou Wen switched his Primordial Energy Art to the Small Perfection of Wisdom Sutra and used the Bamboo Blade to produce Transcendent Flying Immortal.

Instantly, the sky lit up as Zhou Wen’s speed suddenly increased. Like lightning, he slashed at the black-armored, white-haired ghost’s body.

Clang! Clang! Clang! Clang!

Sounds of metal ringing sounded incessantly as the extremely sharp Bamboo Blade struck the black armor of the white-haired ghost. It was unknown what the armor was made of, but it looked like black jade. When the Bamboo Blade struck it, only white scuff marks were left behind, failing to split the armor apart.

The black-armored, white-haired ghost floated in the air, blocking Zhou Wen’s attack without even lifting his palm.

The instant Transcendent Flying Immortal ended, the black-armored, white-haired ghost extended his hand and instantly appeared in front of Zhou Wen, moments from grabbing his neck.

The difference in speed was too great, so Zhou Wen didn’t even have a chance to dodge.

Truth Listener appeared on Zhou Wen’s shoulder as a golden light flashed across its claws. It was as though it was wearing a mysterious hex seal as it moved towards the black-armored, white-haired ghost’s palm.

Bam!

Its palm was branded with a golden mark that made him retract his hand as if he had been pricked by a needle. As for Truth Listener, it was sent flying. It tumbled in the air a few times before landing on the head of a red-dressed female ghost. She was so frightened that she didn’t dare move.

Truth Listener didn’t look injured. After baring its teeth and crying out loud, it leaped up once again, rushing towards the black-armored, white-haired ghost.

The ghost shook his hand and immediately, the golden flame-like branding on his palm was drowned by the black gas. Then, he shot out a plume of black gas, immediately sending Truth Listener flying.

W

Truth Listener was only at the Legendary stage. Despite being struck by the black-armored, white-haired ghost twice, it remained unharmed. However, there was nothing it could do about the black-armored, white-haired ghost. Before it could reach him, it was sent flying by the hand formed by the black gas.

Zhou Wen felt a little depressed. If Truth Listener could advance to the Epic stage, it would probably be able to fight the black-armored, white-haired ghost or even suppress it. Now, it could only be trounced.

The black-armored, white-haired ghost seemed to know that Truth Listener was a nemesis of ghosts, making it difficult to kill. Therefore, he only sent Truth Listener flying before ignoring it. With his body phasing away, he appeared in front of Zhou Wen.

Zhou Wen was already prepared as he fanned at him, sending the black-armored, white-haired ghost flying back more than a hundred feet.

However, just as he retreated, the white-haired ghost's figure blinked again. It was so fast that Zhou Wen had no time to recover his Primordial Energy.

It was already too late for Truth Listener and Banana Fairy to save him. Zhou Wen could only use Ghost Bride to ward off his assailant, but Ghost Bride appeared to be extremely afraid of the black-armored, white-haired ghost. She didn't dare rush forward to help Zhou Wen ward off the disaster.

Zhou Wen immediately cursed inwardly. Typical Companion Beasts were absolutely obedient. They wouldn't hesitate even if they were ordered to commit suicide.

Only a Mythical pet like Truth Listener and Banana Fairy had a certain level of self-awareness. He never expected Ghost Bride to have her own consciousness and even know fear.

However, with the Ghost Bride's hesitation, Zhou Wen immediately fell into peril. He watched as the black-armored, white-haired ghost's palm grabbed at his neck.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 231 - Fight to the Death

Chapter 231 Fight to the Death

The chick that had been standing on Zhou Wen’s shoulder suddenly spat out a golden flame that sprayed onto the black-armored, white-haired ghost’s palm.

When the golden flame touched the white-haired ghost’s palm, it was as if a spark had encountered gasoline. It immediately ignited and the ghastly hand caught fire.

Good bird. Zhou Wen was overjoyed as he turned around and continued fleeing.

Although the chick was magical, it had not long been born. Its level was too low now, so no matter how powerful its flames were, it would probably not be able to burn the black-armored, white-haired ghost to death.

Indeed, the black gas emitted by the black-armored, white-haired ghost surged out, extinguishing the golden flames that engulfed his palm. His charred palm also rapidly recovered amidst the black gases, and his eyes showed anger as he chased again.

What a haunting presence! Zhou Wen suddenly felt that at times, people really couldn’t believe in superstitions. Ever since he had the Bamboo Blade, his luck had really deteriorated significantly.

On this return trip, a new dimensional zone had appeared out of nowhere. There were even creatures that had broken

out of containment and they were unlucky enough to encounter them.

Truth Listener and Banana Fairy rushed over to help Zhou Wen fend off the black-armored, white-haired ghost. Zhou Wen had also pushed Dragon Gate Fairy Skill to its limits, hoping to escape the calamity.

However, the black-armored, white-haired ghost had extremely high intelligence. He already knew that Truth Listener's and Banana Fairy's weakness was that their levels weren't high, so he ignored them. He sent them flying and continued targeting Zhou Wen.

Zhou Wen kept ordering Ghost Bride to fight, but all she did was tremble as she slowly floated towards the black-armored, white-haired ghost. Clearly, she was horrified.

Zhou Wen dodged in the air like an eagle several times, but he failed to completely dodge the black-armored, white-haired ghost's palm attacks. He was just seconds from having his neck grabbed.

Seeing his furious gaze, Zhou Wen had no doubt that he would snap his neck.

After I return, I'll definitely stay at home and game in peace. I won't come out again no matter what, Zhou Wen thought to himself as he prepared to activate his Sigh of the King.

Although the Sigh of the King was potent, his body couldn't withstand such immense power. Furthermore, it was unknown if it was effective against the black-armored, white-haired ghost, but now, using it meant a last-ditch effort. If his attack failed, death was certain for him.

The white-haired ghost dodged the flames spewed out by the chick. Just as it was about to grab Zhou Wen, a bolt of lightning suddenly descended from the sky and struck the white-haired ghost's head. It was Li Xuan who cleaved down with the Thundergod Sword.

The white-haired ghost frowned slightly. He moved his body sideways and flipped his hand, sending the ghastly gases to blast Li Xuan and his sword away.

Bam!

Li Xuan's body slammed into the ground paved with stones, shattering the area.

"Li Xuan!" Zhou Wen cleaved at the white-haired ghost while shouting.

Li Xuan did a backflip from the rubble and charged at the white-haired ghost again, his Thundergod Sword weighing him down.

The white-haired ghost's figure flashed as he grabbed the Bamboo Blade with one hand and grabbed the Thundergod Sword with the other. He violently flung Zhou Wen and Li Xuan to the ground.

As gravel flew, Zhou Wen felt his face deform from being smashed. It was possible that his bones were fractured as blood gushed out from his nose.

Li Xuan's condition wasn't any better as he crashed into the stony earth.

The white-haired ghost's body descended and its feet were just about to step on both of their heads.

Bam!

Ah Lai rushed over and kicked the white-haired ghost in the chest, sending him flying backward.

Zhou Wen didn’t hesitate any further as he channeled the Sigh of the King. Instantly, the strange power blasted out like a volcanic eruption.

A beam of light descended on Zhou Wen. Li Xuan and company couldn’t see the shadow, but Zhou Wen could sense that it was a woman, but he couldn’t see her clearly.

Terrifying power instantly filled Zhou Wen’s entire body, making him feel like he could blast through everything.

He was unwilling to waste any more time since the Sigh of the King’s power only grew stronger. If too much time passed, the power might explode his body. Zhou Wen had to finish off the Ghost King before his body crumbled.

Seeing the Ghost King charge at him again, Zhou Wen didn’t hesitate to use Transcendent Flying Immortal. His body transformed into a lightning flash as he faced the black-armored, white-haired ghost.

Crack!

The Bamboo Blade slashed at the Ghost King’s black armor once again, tearing open a deep rift. The black gas in it immediately surged out like a fountain.

The black-armored, white-haired ghost’s expression changed. His figure flashed like a ghost and disappeared into thin air. The subsequent attacks of Transcendent Flying Immortal missed due to the target suddenly disappearing

When the black-armored, white-haired ghost appeared again, it was already tens of meters away. Its trajectory didn’t show, as though it had teleported over.

Zhou Wen felt the power in his body turn increasingly violent. Without any hesitation, he used Transcendent Flying Immortal again.

Originally, with his Primordial Energy, he could only use Transcendent Flying Immortal once before being enervated. However, with the Sigh of the King, Zhou Wen felt that he could use Transcendent Flying Immortal countless times. He didn’t need to worry about over-exerting his Primordial Energy, as though his body had infinite Primordial Energy.

This feeling made Zhou Wen excited and extremely worried. He was like a baby swinging a sledgehammer-he could hurt himself at any moment due to his lack of power. His body’s strength was insufficient to control the Sigh of the King.

Transcendent Flying Immortal streaked across the sky instantly and appeared in front of the black-armored, white-haired ghost. However, his figure phased away and vanished once again. It made Zhou Wen unable to sense his aura, preventing him from locking onto it. This Transcendent Flying Immortal missed again.

Zhou Wen’s expression changed slightly as his body showed signs of overexertion. If he couldn’t quickly finish off the white-haired ghost soon, he would probably implode.

However, the white-haired ghost possessed a technique that was similar to teleportation. No matter how strong or fast he was, it was useless if he couldn’t touch the white-haired ghost.

When the white-haired ghost appeared again, Li Xuan charged forward and slashed at its head with the Thundergod Sword.

The white-haired ghost was somewhat afraid of Zhou Wen’s strength, but he thought nothing of Li Xuan. With a slight blink, he dodged Li Xuan’s Thundergod Sword and pressed Li Xuan’s head to the ground with one hand.

Bam!

Rocks flew everywhere as Li Xuan’s head crashed into a huge crater on the ground. Blood splattered out along with the rubble.

Zhou Wen was alarmed. This strike had probably crushed Li Xuan’s head.

However, just as the white-haired ghost was about to retract his hand, Li Xuan suddenly grabbed his arm with both hands and leaped up. He clung tightly to the white-haired ghost and shouted at Zhou Wen, “Kill him!”

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 232 - Slaying Ghost King

Chapter 232 Slaying Ghost King

Zhou Wen didn’t hesitate. With Transcendent Flying Immortal, he traversed more than ten meters in an instant and slashed his Bamboo Blade at the white-haired ghost like a bolt of lightning

The black gas exploded from the white-haired ghost’s body, causing Li Xuan’s blood to spray. He didn’t know how many bones had been broken, but he refused to release his tight grip.

Realizing that he couldn’t shake Li Xuan off, the white-haired ghost tried to teleport with Li Xuan. However, Ah Lai, who had rushed over, hugged his other leg. The ghost was clearly much slower attempting to teleport with the two of them, allowing Zhou Wen to discover the secret of his teleportation.

It wasn’t teleportation at all; it was just a fast-moving art, but because it was so fast, it looked like it was an instant transmission.

Li Xuan risked his life to hold him back, and with Ah Lai joining, his speed immediately slowed down, allowing Zhou Wen to see the white-haired ghost’s trajectory clearly.

Transcendent Flying Immortal moved like lightning as they intertwined and slashed at the black-armored, white-haired ghost.

The extremely hard armor was cleaved apart by Zhou Wen’s redoubtable strength as if it was tofu as cracks appeared one after another.

Large amounts of black smoke spewed out from the cracks in his armor, and soon, his body appeared close to tearing apart.

However, a strange scene happened at that moment. The black-armored, white-haired ghost gave a long roar as it enveloped the entire land that was the nether realm. The white-robed ghosts and red-dressed female ghosts turned into streams of ghost aura that surged towards him.

As there were too many ghosts around him, large amounts of ghostly aura surged into his body, quickly restoring the damage to his body. The armor that was on the brink of collapse was stabilized.

Zhou Wen knew that this wasn’t going well. His body was almost at its limits. If this strike couldn’t kill the black-armored, white-haired ghost, he still had a high chance of killing him by using Transcendent Flying Immortal again. However, his body would probably not be able to withstand it either. He would probably implode while using Transcendent Flying Immortal.

Just as Zhou Wen was lamenting the turn of events, Ghost Bride beside him let out a scream as she emitted a red glow.

In the domain of the black-armored, white-haired ghost, her ghostly aura was also sucked away, preventing her from escaping. Finally, she unleashed all her potential.

Although it was said to be all her potential, there was only one talent skill that she had never used. It was also the Jinxes Husband skill that he had no idea how to use.

When the red glow radiated outwards, Zhou Wen and company didn’t feel anything, despite being illuminated by the red light. The black-armored, white-haired ghost was also illuminated by the red light. Immediately, the ghostly aura in his body was thrown into chaos. The ghostly aura that had been sucked into his body to heal it turned chaotic. Not only did it not repair his body, it even affected his own ghostly aura.

“Die!” Zhou Wen released all his strength as the remaining half of Transcendent Flying Immortal was unleashed with even more terrifying might. It transformed into bolts of lightning that meshed together, striking the black-armored, white-haired ghost.

Bam!

The black-armored, white-haired ghost’s body was shattered as the black armor was scattered everywhere. The ghostly aura in his body also exploded, sending Li Xuan and Ah Lai flying

Zhou Wen retracted the power of Sigh of the King and landed back on the ground. He lost his balance and fell to the ground. His skin was crimson red—a result of his blood vessels and meridians bursting. Under such immense pressure, all his bones would have fractured. If he had delayed a little while longer, he would have been killed by his Life Providence without needing the black-armored, white-haired ghost to do the honors.

“Li Xuan, Ah Lai, are you alright?” Zhou Wen struggled to stand up, but it was to no avail no matter how hard he tried. His bones were fractured and he couldn’t stand the pain even if he didn’t move. Any movement made it excruciating

Meanwhile, Ah Lai helped Li Xuan up from the rubble. “I’m fine. Li Xuan’s condition isn’t too good.”

“I won’t die.” Li Xuan was covered in bloodeven his face was indiscernible, making him look extremely terrifying. With his powerful recovery abilities, he still didn’t show any signs of improvement, proof of his serious injuries.

They had just said a few words when their expressions turned nasty. They were already unable to continue fighting, but the red-dressed female ghosts suddenly surrounded them. They bared their fangs and brandished their claws as if they wanted to skin them alive.

If this were in the past, Zhou Wen and company wouldn’t have been afraid of the red-dressed female ghosts. No matter how many of them blocked their path, they could still charge out.

But now, three and a half of the four were equivalent to trash. They were not combat-fit. More critically, they didn’t even have the ability to escape. They could only stand their ground and await death.

“I never expected that I, Li Xuan, would die in the hands of a female ghost. Alright, dying in the hands of a beautiful female ghost is better than being eaten by those ugly beasts.” Li Xuan also knew that he was unlikely to survive today, but he didn’t feel any fear. He looked up and said to Zhou Wen, “Old Zhou, I’m afraid you and I are both going to hell. When we go to hell, remember me. Don’t forget me. When the time comes, let’s wreak havoc in hell.”

“Alright.” Zhou Wen also knew that there was no way they could survive this ordeal as he nodded in response.

Ah Lai sighed softly. “It’s a pity I still haven’t remembered what happened in the past.”

Zhang Yuzhi hobbled towards Zhou Wen and company with her injured legs, but she collapsed to the ground. Only Zhou Wen’s pets were still fighting, but the red-dressed female ghosts were like an unending tidal wave. With the opening the red-dressed female ghosts detected, they lunged over and threw the four into despair.

Suddenly!

A beam of light flashed as the heads of the red-dressed female ghosts flew into the air. At the same time, a figure appeared in front of them.

“Brother Sheng, you aren’t dead?” Li Xuan was overjoyed when he saw the person. It was An Sheng

However, when he saw An Sheng’s appearance, Li Xuan’s expression turned odd. He saw that An Sheng’s clothes were ironed and his shirt was clean and white. Even his hair was neat and tidy. There was no messy hair and there was a smile on his face. He did not look like he had gone through an intense battle.

Furthermore, it was clearly very strenuous for him to kill the ghosts previously, but, this time, this strike had managed to behead dozens of red-dressed female ghosts. This was clearly different from his previous performance.

“Don’t tell me you’re bluffing?” Li Xuan asked with widened eyes.

The others looked at An Sheng as well, but An Sheng said with a smile, “Didn’t I mention that I would take you to a few dimensional zones for training? This Yin Yang Ghost World

that just appeared is one of them. I originally thought that I would save you when you were on the brink of death, but I never expected that you could actually kill Ghost King. You did pretty well. Don’t you feel a sense of achievement?”

Li Xuan did not say a word as he showed An Sheng his middle finger. He suddenly understood why many people in Luoyang called An Sheng the Devil’s Adjutant.

An Sheng wasn’t angry either. He played with the dagger in his hand and casually killed the red-dressed female ghosts until they fled in fear, no longer daring to lunge forward again.

He walked to the spot where Ghost King had died and picked up something before stuffing it into Zhou Wen’s hand. “Young Master Wen, this is your spoils of war. It’s very meaningful. The experience gained from life and death is something that no amount of wealth can compare with.”

Zhou Wen didn’t have the strength to speak. He received the Primordial Energy Skill Crystal that emitted black gas and flipped An Sheng off as well.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 233 - Afraid You'll Be Unhappy

Chapter 233 Afraid You'll Be Unhappy

I should have realized it long ago. With Ah Sheng's meticulousness, why would he take us on such a dangerous path? Besides, he's the one who led us here. Zhou Wen shook his head slightly. He was glad that Ah Sheng wasn't an enemy while also warning himself.

This time, An Sheng was not their enemy. But if their enemy treated them this way, how would they deal with it?

Zhou Wen could only warn himself that he had to be more careful in the future.

However, he didn't lose trust in anyone because of this matter. At the very least, Li Xuan and Ah Lai had chosen to fight alongside him in the life-and-death situation, instead of running for their lives.

Between trust and distrust, Zhou Wen knew that he needed to find a balance.

There was one thing An Sheng was right about. A battle that threatened his life was far more memorable than Zhou Wen gaming. Some things were difficult to understand unless it was a life-and-death situation. The penalty of death in-game ultimately failed to reach the bottom of his heart.

On his way back, Zhou Wen was fiddling with the Ghost King's Primordial Energy Skill Crystal in his hand. An Sheng told Zhou Wen that the Yin Yang World had only appeared recently, and it was difficult to kill a Ghost King. In fact, a

Ghost King was very rare as well, not something that would be encountered every time. Therefore, up to now, very few Primordial Energy Skill Crystal had dropped. The one in Zhou Wen's hand was the first. Even An Sheng didn't know what Primordial Energy Skill the Ghost King would drop.

An Sheng also said that he had watched Zhou Wen and company's entire battle process. If it wasn't for the strange powers of Ghost Bride restraining the Ghost King, the outcome would have been completely different. The restrictions Ghost Bride had on the Ghost King were too great. It was a very effective weapon against him.

If Zhou Wen was interested and had the time, he could use Ghost Bride to earn money here in the future. There would definitely be people who would hire Zhou Wen's Ghost Bride.

It was also An Sheng's first time finding out the abilities of Ghost Bride. In fact, he had never seen a Ghost Bride before, and this was also his first time seeing her.

Not long after the Yin Yang World was discovered, all An Sheng knew about were the red-dressed female ghosts, white-robed female ghosts, and the Ghost King.

However, An Sheng had the ability to control dimensional creatures like ghosts. Therefore, even if two Ghost Kings appeared at the same time, he was confident that he could protect Zhou Wen and company. That was why he brought them here to experience the sensation of life and death. At the same time, he wanted Zhou Wen to experience the dimensional creatures of the ghost type. Otherwise, he wouldn't be mentally prepared when facing them in the future.

What kind of Primordial Energy Skill is it? Zhou Wen didn’t directly absorb it. It was an Epic Primordial Energy Skill Crystal, so directly absorbing it was too dangerous. Zhou Wen planned on absorbing it in-game after returning to the college.

Nothing happened on the way back, as An Sheng successfully got them to Luoyang. When they passed by Eastern Capital, Zhang Yuzhi got out of the car and thanked them. She even added them as friends on social media.

“Did everything go well on the way?” An Tianzuo asked casually as he read the documents in the military camp.

“It went well,” An Sheng answered. “That’s good.” An Tianzuo frowned slightly as he continued reading the documents.

However, after waiting for a while, he still didn’t hear An Sheng speak. An Tianzuo looked up at An Sheng, who was standing by the side, and asked, “Don’t you have anything to say?”

“Overseer, do you want to know about my matters? Or do you want to know about Zhou Wen’s matters? If it’s the former, you can feel at ease. I was very safe the entire journey,” An Sheng said with a smile.

“Humph, you are becoming more and more presumptuous.” An Tianzuo’s face sank as he reprimanded An Sheng before continuing, “I heard that he caused quite a stir in Holy City. I’m afraid he will bring trouble to our An family.”

“In terms of the ability to stir up trouble, he definitely can’t compare to you, Overseer. Besides, even if he were to cause trouble, the An family would be the one causing trouble for him, don’t you think so?” An Sheng blinked as he spoke.

“Ah Sheng, have you been living too comfortably recently? Do you want to go on a training expedition at the front lines?” An Tianzuo put down the documents in his hand and glared at An Sheng.

“Overseer, calm down. I’m just afraid that you won’t be happy if I say something that I shouldn’t say,” An Sheng said meekly.

“I’m very unhappy right now,” said An Tianzuo with a cold expression.

An Sheng wasn’t afraid as he blinked and said, “Alright, I’ll tell you then. If you hear something you don’t like, don’t be angry.”

“Do you believe that I’ll throw you to the Chess Mountain to guard it?” An Tianzuo said.

“If I were to guard the mountain pass, who else would know your preferences? They wouldn’t even know what tea you like to drink or the ratio of warm water to use. I’m afraid you wouldn’t be able to get used to it.” An Sheng smiled as he made tea for An Tianzuo.

“Do you think I’m apprehensive about dealing with you just because of this? Do you believe that I can find a more capable adjutant to replace you tomorrow and throw you to guard the mountain pass?” With that said, An Tianzuo laughed.

“Yes.” An Sheng placed the teacup in front of An Tianzuo before saying seriously, “You should already know about Zhou Wen’s situation in Holy City. So what are you asking about?”

“Your evaluation of him.” An Tianzuo took a sip of tea and slowly said.

“Like I said, I was afraid you would be unhappy,” An Sheng said.

“Speak.” An Tianzuo only said one word.

“I think he’s even stronger than you were back then,” An Sheng said.

An Tianzuo immediately put down his teacup and glared fiercely at An Sheng. “Don’t use those exaggerated words. No matter how well you praise him, he will not catch my eye.”

An Sheng said, “You said that you wouldn’t be angry. If you want to hear lies, I’ll just do as you wish. That punk Zhou Wen is extremely weak. He was capable of defeating six families and Lance not because he’s strong, but because the children of the six families are too disappointing. Zhou Wen merely enjoys undeserved fame. The reason he could kill the Ghost King is because of his sheer luck…”

“Ah Sheng, you seem to think highly of him?” An Tianzuo narrowed his eyes and asked An Sheng

IZUO narro

“I just feel that Zhou Wen is just what Mr. Ouyang said. He’s someone that can be trusted,” An Sheng said seriously.

“Is that so? I don’t think so,” said An Tianzuo indifferently as he picked up the document and read it again.

An Sheng knew An Tianzuo’s habits, so when he saw him pick up the document, he didn’t say another word. All he

could do was sigh inwardly. An Tianzuo's temper was the same as Zhou Wen's. It was useless for anyone to say anything once he had made up his mind.

Now, An Sheng only hoped that the two of them wouldn't become enemies in the future. Otherwise, it would be a disaster.

After Zhou Wen returned to his dorm, he took the mysterious phone to snap the Ghost King's Primordial Energy Skill Crystal. However, he received the notification that his stats were inadequate.

Zhou Wen took a look and realized that the Ghost King Crystal was the same as the Mutated Fairy Crystal from before. They both had stat and Primordial Energy Art requirements.

The stat requirement was the same as Transcendent Flying Immortal-21 points of Speed. As for the Primordial Energy Art, it required Yin-type Primordial Energy Art.

The few Primordial Energy Arts that Zhou Wen was proficient in now were more neutral. The Ancient Imperial Sutra was clearly more inclined to Yang, and a Buddhist-type Primordial Energy Art like the Small Perfection of Wisdom Sutra was definitely not Yin-type. As for the First Order of Chaos, it had yet to advance to the Legendary stage. The only one left was the Godfiend Era.

Zhou Wen didn't have much confidence while switching his Primordial Energy Art to the Godfiend Era All he wanted to do was give it a try. After all, the Godfiend Era hadn't appeared to be Yin-type in nature. At best, it could only be considered a little more feminine.

To his surprise, the mysterious phone successfully captured the Ghost King’s crystal into the game and successfully absorbed it once he switched to Godfiend Era.

‘Absorbed Ghost King Crystal. Attained Primordial Energy Skill: Ghost Steps.’

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 234 - Ghost Steps

Chapter 234 Ghost Steps

Ghost Steps: A moving technique of a ghost with a mysterious, unpredictable effect.

Zhou Wen tested Ghost Steps and discovered that it was a movement technique that resembled the Ghost King's instant transmission. Ghost Steps wasn't true teleportation, but an instant burst of extraordinary speed. Due to the sudden burst of speed and suddenness, it looked like one vanished.

Previously, with Li Xuan and Ah Lai holding back the Ghost King, Zhou Wen had seen his trajectory due to the lowering of his speed.

Although it wasn't true teleportation, it was already enough to pleasantly surprise him. The speed at which the Ghost Steps erupted in an instant was too astonishing. Now, Zhou Wen was only at the Legendary stage, so the speed attained from using Ghost Steps exceeded some at the Epic stage.

However, Ghost Steps was similar to that of Transcendent Flying Immortal. They had higher Primordial Energy requirements, so even Ghost King himself was unable to continuously use Ghost Steps. Zhou Wen was the same, although he could switch to the Dao body to increase his frequency. Typical Primordial Energy was impossible to support Ghost Steps' consumption.

If I were to maintain the Sigh of the King state, with infinite Ghost Steps and Transcendent Flying Immortal, I'm afraid no

one at the same level as me could withstand such terrifying attacks. What a pity. Although Zhou Wen had such thoughts, he knew that it was unlikely he could accomplish that in a short period of time.

The next morning, Zhou Wen took some gifts to meet Wang Mingyuan and his seniors. He also asked Wang Mingyuan about the ivory pendant.

The ivory pendant emitting a chill to resist the flames of the sun in the Sun God Temple had clearly made it extraordinary.

Wang Mingyuan casually said, “That’s not ivory. It’s a type of tooth I found in Dragon’s Well. As for what kind of creature it is, it’s hard to say for now. I’ve carved a total of four pendants. One for each one of you. Consider it a memento.”

Wang Mingyuan didn’t care about such worldly possessions. Although he knew that these teeth pendants had magical uses, he did not take them to heart.

Zhou Wen asked him some questions regarding combat techniques, and Wang Mingyuan answered them casually.

After Zhou Wen consulted him on Lance’s combat tactics, Wang Mingyuan told him, “It’s not that combat tactics can’t be used, but the average person’s reaction can’t reach that level of thinking in battle. Therefore, most combat tactics are inflexible. It doesn’t change on the spot in a targeted manner. A completely inflexible combat tactic is easily seen through by others, so it has to be used appropriately unless one’s thoughts can reach the standard of a supercomputer, allowing one to react in almost every way possible. Otherwise, it can only be used as support. Don’t deliberately seek out such tactics.”

Zhou Wen naturally couldn’t reach such a level, so he chose a more normal path, a path that could match both reality and virtuality together in a versatile manner.

By being versatile, faking out the enemy was a competition with the enemy on a psychological and physical level. Although this gave the enemy some time to think, he too would have the time to think and see who was better.

Zhou Wen learned from Wang Mingyuan. Zhong Ziya and Jiang Yan were in the lab every day while Hui Haifeng often went out. He was considered the most active one of Wang Mingyuan’s disciples.

The more Zhou Wen learned from Wang Mingyuan, the more he found Wang Mingyuan’s knowledge unfathomably deep. Furthermore, he had a mild personality and wouldn’t force him to learn anything, nor would he assign him to take a particular path. He was like a lamp that illuminated the world ahead of him. As for the path an individual wanted to take, they could choose it themselves.

The sun was scorching, and the familiar cries of cicadas made the summer feel even hotter.

It was rare for Wang Mingyuan to take the four of them to a classroom. He borrowed a projector and explained some relatively advanced theoretical knowledge and equipment to Zhou Wen and company.

Wang Mingyuan was not only a researcher of dimensional forces, but he was also very accomplished in science.

Zhou Wen wasn’t too interested in technology, so he sat quietly at the back and played games.

Hui Haifeng listened attentively, but it wasn’t clear if he was really interested or had other plans.

Zhong Ziya was lying on the table sleeping, but the cicadas’ chirping irritated him so much that he couldn’t fall asleep no matter what. He lay there weakly, his eyes staring blankly at the blackboard.

Jiang Yan supported his face with one hand and looked out of the window, as if he was looking at the cicadas on the tree outside and with great interest.

Wang Fei walked to the door and peeked inside the classroom through the gap. She wanted to know how Zhou Wen’s progress under Wang Mingyuan’s teachings.

Upon seeing this, she couldn’t help but feel a little depressed. She thought to herself, Uncle Mingyuan’s personality is just too nice. He spoiled these guys. How can he let them off like this?

Although she had such thoughts, Wang Fei didn’t enter the room to say anything. Firstly, this was Wang Mingyuan’s class, so she had to respect him. Secondly, Wang Fei knew that reprimanding a person like Zhou Wen was useless.

Furthermore, Wang Fei had also heard what Zhou Wen had done in Holy City. Although the six families had started a news lockdown, the news couldn’t be kept under wraps forever.

Wang Fei was Ouyang Lan’s best friend. She had long known from Ouyang Lan, and the tone she used to flaunt him made Wang Fei feel contempt.

Forget it. It’s already very difficult for this fellow to find an opponent among his peers. It’s unlikely that I can come up

with very good ideas to encourage him to continue working hard for the time being. I'll let him be smug for now. After some thought, Wang Fei decided to ignore Zhou Wen for the time being. After all, Zhou Wen was only a first-year freshman. Compared to the other students, Zhou Wen's improvement was extremely fast.

However, after Wang Fei returned, she still raised the difficulty of her homework missions. This led her students crying foul.

The students never expected that their homework missions became harder because of Zhou Wen.

Wang Lu walked out of the building with the baby tiger and, when she saw Zhou Wen return after class, she went forward to greet him. "Zhou Wen, are you interested in heading to Dragon Gate Grotto to hunt dimensional creatures?"

"I'm actually caught up with something. I'm afraid I don't have time," Zhou Wen said.

"What else do you do? Isn't it just gaming?" Wang Lu curled her lips, displeased with Zhou Wen's perfunctory answer.

"That's right. There's a part of the game I can't get past. I wish to make a breakthrough as soon as possible," Zhou Wen said with a nod.

With Ghost Steps and Transcendent Flying Immortal, Zhou Wen planned on attempting to kill the Golden Flying Ant again or see what was inside the white cocoon.

He had not been able to raise his Primordial Energy and Constitution to 21 all this time, so all he could do was place his target on something tangible first.

“Gaming nerd.” Wang Lu puffed up her cheeks and left.

Zhou Wen returned to his room and switched on his phone. He chose to enter the Ant Nest and headed straight for Ant City.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 235 - Setting Up a Stall

Chapter 235 Setting Up a Stall

When the blood-colored avatar arrived in Ant City again, it no longer acted as cowardly as before. Zhou Wen’s pets could easily resolve the ant horde without him needing to do anything

After clearing all the ordinary ants, Zhou Wen took his pet to the ant nest at the apex.

The Golden Flying Ant charged straight out. Its speed was extremely fast, even faster than the Ghost King when not using Ghost Steps. Its feet shot out a terrifying golden beam like a blade.

Zhou Wen had allowed the Saber Shield Knight to lead the charge, using his shield to block the golden beam. However, he could only block once. Although he had used a shield Primordial Energy Skill, the shield cracked from the strikes. If another blow landed, the shield would definitely be destroyed.

The Silver-Winged Flying Ant attacked from the side but was instantly killed by the beam shot from the Golden Flying Ant’s eyes. Its wings and body were penetrated.

Truth Listener attacked from the flank but was taken down by the golden beam. Immediately, it retreated with a tragic cry.

Its stats couldn’t resist the Golden Flying Ant’s strength. It was not as powerful as when it faced the Ghost King. Even

its fur revealed a wound.

However, this was already considered very strong. Ordinary Legendary creatures would have been killed instantly.

With the banana fan in hand, Zhou Wen fanned at the Golden Flying Ant and instantly sent it flying backward.

Taking this opportunity, Zhou Wen used the Dragon Gate Fairy Skill and charged towards the white cocoon. It was still difficult for him to kill the Golden Flying Ant alone, so he decided to first see what was inside the cocoon.

The Golden Flying Ant's speed was extremely fast as it instantly charged back. A golden beam shot out of its eyes, trying to kill Zhou Wen on the spot.

Zhou Wen stepped on the nest's wall and suddenly vanished, leaving the Golden Flying Ant stunned.

By the time Zhou Wen appeared again, he was already in front of the white cocoon. His palm struck the white cocoon in a bid to blast it apart.

However, the strike that was powered by Golden Palm made Zhou Wen feel as though his palm had struck a spring. After the cocoon slightly caved in, it immediately bounced up, sending Zhou Wen flying.

The Golden Flying Ant flashed over to him and the blood-colored avatar that was sent flying back was instantly killed by the golden beam. The game screen turned black.

My full-strength strike failed to deal any damage to the white cocoon? Zhou Wen was slightly surprised as his curiosity towards the white cocoon increased.

Unfortunately, there’s no way to bring the Bamboo Blade in-game. Otherwise, it would be much easier to use Bamboo Blade in-game to split open the cocoon. Zhou Wen wanted to try it again, but the antelope was displeased. It ran over and bit Zhou Wen’s clothes as it pulled him out.

“Alright, I got it.” Zhou Wen helplessly put away his cell phone and took the antelope out to eat.

During the period Zhou Wen wasn’t around, he had requested Wang Lu to take care of the antelope. Zhou Wen had originally planned on getting Wang Lu to give it some fresh vegetables.

However, who knew that after Zhou Wen returned, this fellow insisted on heading to the school’s cafeteria to eat steak every day.

You are an antelope. You eat grass, alright? Zhou Wen cursed inwardly as he felt a little depressed. He could have just fed it some vegetables without spending much money like in the beginning, but after Wang Lu’s feeding for a few days, the fellow insisted on eating steak daily. If it wasn’t for Zhou Wen’s robbery of many Companion Eggs on his trip and his plans on selling them for a good price, it was unlikely that he could afford to rear it.

It’s true that one is marked by the company one keeps. I definitely can’t let my pets have anything to do with Wang Lu in the future. Zhou Wen subconsciously touched the chick on his shoulder.

After the meal, Zhou Wen planned on selling all the Companion Eggs he had on hand. The money he obtained could be invested in Huang Ji’s game. It wasn’t likely to be a problem to sell so many Companion Eggs for one or two

million. He definitely would have some money for the investment.

There was a trading market in the school, so students could purchase or sell the Companion Eggs they obtained there. Zhou Wen scanned the Companion Eggs he had obtained with his mysterious phone and after seeing their types and attributes, he labeled them. Each Companion Egg was labeled with its species and price and nothing else. Zhou Wen began setting up a stall for the first time.

When he arrived at the market, the place was bleak. There was almost no one there, other than two people.

As most of the students were at the Mortal stage, they were unable to use Legendary Companion Eggs. Furthermore, Mortal Companion Eggs were extremely rare. Therefore, typical students would never come here. Those who came were basically the top students of the school.

Typically, students who could advance to the Legendary stage by now were students with good family backgrounds. They didn’t usually lack Companion Eggs, so they wouldn’t go through the trouble of selling the Companion Eggs they obtained.

Therefore, Zhou Wen looked at the empty market and began suspecting if his Companion Eggs could be sold.

“Isn’t this Zhou Wen? Are you here to buy a Companion Egg? Come and see my Companion Eggs. They are all excellent-grade…” After the only two stall owners in the market saw Zhou Wen, one of them, a senior named Li Yu, immediately had his eyes light up as though he was a wolf seeing its prey. He nearly pounced at him.

The other person who had set up a stall was actually Huang Ji.

“Senior, why are you setting up a stall here?” Zhou Wen asked Huang Ji.

“My lack of money. What else can it be?” Huang Ji said embarrassedly.

“By the way, Senior, didn’t you say you were going to the Holy Land? Why didn’t I see you?” Zhou Wen recalled how Huang Ji had mentioned that he was going to the Holy Land, but when Zhou Wen was there, he didn’t manage to see Huang Ji, despite especially looking out for him.

“You didn’t see me, but I saw you. You were impressive.” Huang Ji gave a thumbs up.

“I was compelled. Did you obtain anything from your trip to the Holy Land?” Zhou Wen asked again.

“I did gain something. I obtained a God Power Crystal, but that item can’t be exchanged for money, so I’m still short of cash,” Huang Ji said as he sized up Zhou Wen and said with a smile, “You seem to have obtained quite a number of Companion Eggs in the Holy Land. You should be able to sell them for quite a bit, right? Do you plan on investing in my game?”

“Once I sell them for money, I’ll immediately invest in your game,” Zhou Wen said with certainty.

However, he was somewhat puzzled. Huang Ji had actually said that he had obtained a God Power Crystal and knew that Zhou Wen had robbed many Companion Eggs. That meant that he had likely gone to the Holy Land, but Zhou Wen was puzzled why he hadn’t seen him.

“Then what are you waiting for? Hurry up and set up the stall.” Huang Ji’s eyes lit up.

Zhou Wen set up the stall beside Huang Ji, but other than the three of them sitting in a row, there was no one to be seen.

The trio looked at each other without saying a word.

Having nothing to do, Li Yu was given a fright when he saw the four Companion Eggs Zhou Wen had placed out for sale. “Zhou Wen, isn’t your label fake? Isn’t a Companion Beast like the Broken-Winged Angel something only found in the West district? Also, this Cyclops Behemoth is unique to the West District, isn’t it? This Ice Frost Bear is something from the North district, right? We don’t typically get to see any of this over here.”

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 236 - Selling on Behalf

Chapter 236 Selling on Behalf

The Companion Eggs Zhou Wen had snatched were Legendary Companion Eggs which were specially prepared for sale by the various major merchants. Most of them were unique to certain regions and were very few in number. They were considered rather rare types that were scattered all across the globe.

Even if one went to a large Companion Egg store in Holy City, it would be very difficult to see so many different types from so many different regions.

“You’ll know if it’s true if you buy one,” Zhou Wen said.

“That’s fine, but isn’t your price too high?” Li Yu glanced at Zhou Wen’s bid. The Broken-Winged Angel was worth 188,000. Typical Legendary Companion Eggs could be bought at 10–20,000. The rare ones went for about 70-80,000. Only excellent-grade Eggs could exceed 100,000.

“I referenced the price on the Internet. It’s non-negotiable,” Zhou Wen said.

He had checked the prices on the Internet, but due to the frequent appearance of dimensional zones across the world, traffic was greatly obstructed. The supply chain had become slow and unsafe, and there were often severe losses of goods. Therefore, the scale of Internet transactions was gradually shrinking

If he couldn’t sell it in the college, Zhou Wen could only try his luck at Luoyang’s market. If he still couldn’t get a buyer, he could only sell it to merchants. If that happened, the price would be very low.

Li Yu smacked his lips. “Zhou Wen, I don’t have the money to buy such things. However, if you try here, I’m afraid you won’t be able to sell it either. Why don’t we do it this way? Why don’t you hand over your Companion Eggs to me for selling. I’ll take a ten percent commission for my hard work?”

“Why will you be able to sell it if I can’t sell it here?” Zhou Wen looked at Li Yu with interest.

Li Yu handed a business card to Zhou Wen. “To be honest, I’ve already been accepted by the Royal Pet Store. Although I haven’t graduated yet, I’m already an official employee there. As you can see, there’s no one here. I’m only setting up a stall here due to the company’s requirements. If your Companion Eggs are real, I can help you sell them through the company’s channels. The prices will definitely be high, on the premise that these Companion Eggs are definitely real.”

Unfortunately, most people didn’t know of the battle in the Holy Land, nor did they know what Zhou Wen had done in Holy City. Otherwise, Li Yu wouldn’t have suspected the authenticity of these Companion Eggs.

“There’s no need. I’ll just sell them by myself. After all, I have nothing to do.” Zhou Wen knew that Li Yu was planning on doing a lossless business. The risk was all Zhou Wen’s, but the profits had to be shared with Li Yu. Furthermore, Zhou Wen didn’t know how much Li Yu would sell them for.

However, Zhou Wen knew that the fellow wasn’t reliable based on the name of the Royal Pet Store. Together with three other pet stores, it was known as one of the top four scammers in the League. They were well-known to purchase at low prices and sell at high prices, and they liked to play cheap tricks.

Zhou Wen wasn’t too busy himself. He could game while running a stall, so there was no rush.

“Let’s do this. Since it’s not easy to sell these Companion Eggs, why don’t you sell them to me as a package deal? As long as you can guarantee their authenticity, I’ll give you 80,000 each. Four of them makes it 320,000. Let’s round it off to 300,000. How about that?” Li Yu added.

“Non-negotiable,” Zhou Wen said as he gamed.

“This Ice Frost Bear is clearly too expensive. An ordinary Ice Frost Bear Companion Egg is only 70-80,000. Why are you pricing it at nearly 200,000?” Li Yu pointed at the Frost Bear Companion Egg.

“It’s worth every penny.” Zhou Wen’s Ice Frost Bear was indeed priced very high, but that was because he had seen its stats and knew that it was worth the price.

“If you do business like this, you won’t even be able to sell it in the Luoyang market, much less here.” Li Yu had never seen Zhou Wen’s sales tactics before. He decided to wait and see; he believed he could buy Zhou Wen’s Companion Eggs at low prices after Zhou Wen realized the cruel reality of the world.

There were very few people in the market. Occasionally, students would come for Li Yu. From the looks of it, his identity as a Royal Pet Store employee wasn’t fake.

Occasionally, the student council would entrust him to sell the Companion Eggs they obtained from the dimensional zone.

Although he didn’t offer a high price, the benefit was that money could be directly received without going through the trouble of selling it themselves.

However, the ones that were sold to Li Yu were mostly common Companion Eggs that were nothing spectacular.

“How about it? Did you see that? The students acknowledge me. The price is fair and honest. The price I gave you isn’t low.” Li Yu took another Companion Egg and flaunted it at Zhou Wen.

Zhou Wen ignored him as he continued gaming. By the side, Huang Ji was also doing something on his laptop. His fingers were rapidly tapping on the keyboard, having no time to chat with Zhou Wen.

Seeing that Zhou Wen was ignoring him, Li Yu couldn’t help but mumble, “That’s not the way to do business. You definitely won’t make any sales.”

As he spoke, another person walked over. When Li Yu saw that person, his eyes lit up.

“Gu Dian, you got another Companion Egg?” Li Yu hurriedly went forward to welcome him warmly.

When Zhou Wen heard Gu Dian’s name, he looked up and indeed saw the devilish-looking man walk in.

“How much can these Companion Eggs be exchanged for?” Gu Dian threw a bag in front of Li Yu.

Li Yu hurriedly opened the bag and was overjoyed when he saw more than ten Companion Eggs inside. As he appraised them, he said in delight, “This should be a Golden Warrior Companion Egg. Others will pay at most 5,000 to buy them out. On account of us being old friends, I’ll give you 5,500 for it…”

Zhou Wen looked at the Companion Eggs with his cell phone and couldn’t help but be astonished. Li Yu was indeed quite capable. His appraisal of the Companion Egg’s species was right on the money.

However, the price he offered was nothing but a scam. It was basically less than a third of the market price.

A Golden Warrior Companion Egg might only be an ordinary Legendary, but it was an excellent pet for tanking. They were sold for rather high prices on the market. However, the price Li Yu offered was much lower than that of a typical Legendary Companion Egg. He was truly unscrupulous.

“Gu Dian, are you selling these Companion Eggs?” Zhou Wen asked Gu Dian.

Gu Dian was ultimately a member of the Xuanwen Club despite only being recruited to make up the numbers. Zhou Wen didn’t wish for him to be cheated right under his nose.

A person like Gu Dian spent all day in the dimensional zones without even having a friend. He definitely wouldn’t know the market prices, so Zhou Wen reckoned that he had been scammed by Li Yu in the past.

“Yes,” replied Gu Dian.

“Since I’m also selling Companion Eggs, I’ll sell it for you if you trust me,” Zhou Wen said.

“Alright.” Gu Dian grabbed his bag and placed it in front of Zhou Wen before turning to leave without a word.

Li Yu was somewhat infuriated as he said to Zhou Wen with a cold expression, “Zhou Wen, that’s quite an a**hole thing to do. Don’t you know the rules of doing business?”

“I don’t know much about business, but Gu Dian is a member of our club. I’m not breaking the rules by helping him sell them, right?” Zhou Wen said.

“Alright, let me watch you sell them here.” Li Yu was in no hurry. He had to sell the Companion Eggs through the Royal Pet Store’s channels. It was practically impossible to sell them here.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 237 - Rich

Chapter 237 Rich

Zhou Wen ignored Li Yu and wrote the name and price on Gu Dian's Companion Eggs before sitting behind his stall to continue gaming.

Li Yu glanced at Zhou Wen's prices, one of the eggs was extremely expensive.

How dare you price a Gatekeeper Lion Companion Egg at 100,000? It's ridiculously high even for a retail price. It will be a miracle if you can sell it, thought Li Yu.

Just as he was thinking about it, another person came to the market. This time, it was a young student who looked extremely handsome, like a movie star.

When Li Yu saw this person, his eyes lit up as he went forward again. "Brother Luo Xuan, are you here to buy Companion Eggs? I recently obtained quite a number of good items…"

Luo Xuan went over to Li Yu's stall to take a look at the Companion Eggs, but when he saw Zhou Wen's stall, he couldn't help but take a look. He was immediately interested.

"I'll take all four of them," Luo Xuan said as he pointed at the four Companion Eggs Zhou Wen had placed for sale.

"Brother Luo, don't just look at the name. How high are the chances of us obtaining a Companion Egg like the Broken-

Winged Angel or the Ice Frost Bear?” Although Li Yu didn’t say that Zhou Wen’s Companion Eggs were fake, it was obvious from his tone.

Luo Xuan smiled and said, “A person like Zhou Wen wouldn’t lie on such matters.”

“Even if they’re not fake, aren’t they too expensive? If you really want them, I’ll get the company to transfer some over for you in a few days. The Ice Frost Bear is at most 100,000.” Zhou Wen had ruined his business plans, so Li Yu didn’t want Zhou Wen to have an easy life.

Luo Xuan smiled at Zhou Wen and said, “Zhou Wen, can your Companion Eggs be cheaper?”

“No, they’re worth every penny. You can buy them for 100,000 elsewhere, but that’s the price for mine,” Zhou Wen said without looking up.

“Brother Luo, look at his attitude. He’s clearly trying to scam you,” Li Yu said.

Luo Xuan thought nothing of it as he directly transferred the money to Zhou Wen. “Alright, I’ll take all four of them. Help me wrap them up.”

“Sorry, I forgot to bring any bags. You’ll have to hold them yourself.” After receiving the payment, Zhou Wen realized that he didn’t even have a plastic bag.

Li Yu’s face turned livid as he watched from the side. He thought to himself, Luo Xuan sure is silly and rich. He’s buying those things just like that? This is really letting Zhou Wen luck out.

Luo Xuan didn’t mind. He opened his backpack and stuffed the four Companion Eggs inside. Then, he looked at the Companion Eggs placed on Zhou Wen’s counter and asked in surprise, “Why is this Gatekeeper Lion Companion Egg so expensive? The market price should be around 20,000, right?”

“This is a Mutated Gatekeeper Lion egg. It’s no ordinary Gatekeeper Lion,” Zhou Wen said.

“Mutated Gatekeeper Lion?” Li Yu was slightly taken aback as he carefully looked at the Companion Egg, but he failed to notice anything amiss. It was identical to an ordinary Gatekeeper Lion egg. He couldn’t help but sneer inwardly. It’s true that Zhou Wen is very talented, and I admit that I’m inferior to you, but when it comes to the appraisal of Companion Eggs, it’s my specialty. What I studied for three years wasn’t for nothing. Even I can’t tell the difference, but you can? What a joke.

“This is the first time I’ve heard of a Mutated Gatekeeper Lion. What difference does it have from ordinary ones?” Luo Xuan’s interest was piqued.

Zhou Wen said, “Mutated Gatekeeper Lions are quite rare. It’s normal that you haven’t heard of them. They have higher stats than the typical Gatekeeper Lion, and they have an additional Lion Roar as a skill. It’s a relatively rare sonar wave attack. Just having this technique alone makes it worth more than 100,000.”

“I never knew that. I’ll buy it.” Luo Xuan said extravagantly as he waved his hand, wanting to transfer the money.

“Brother Luo, I’ve heard of Mutated Gatekeeper Lions, but they are very rarely produced. None of us have seen them before. However, I’ve heard that not every Mutated

Gatekeeper Lion has Lion Roar so it’s still probabilistic. Without the ability of a Lion Roar, there’s almost no difference between a Mutated Gatekeeper Lion and a normal one. No one knows if it’s really mutated.” Li Yu was speaking the truth, but he was also suspecting that Zhou Wen was selling an ordinary Gatekeeper Lion as a Mutated Gatekeeper Lion.

Luo Xuan looked at Zhou Wen who said indifferently, “I can only guarantee that this is a Mutated Gatekeeper Lion egg. I can’t guarantee anything else.”

When Li Yu heard Zhou Wen say that, he immediately beamed with joy. Only a fool would buy something like that with you saying that.

“I’ll buy it.” However, Luo Xuan waved his hand, causing Li Yu to be dumbfounded. His mouth was agape for a long time.

He knew that Luo Xuan was rich, but he never expected him to be so rich. He was secretly depressed. If I had known that Luo Xuan was such a fool, I would have asked for higher prices in the past.

Seeing that Luo Xuan no longer had any interest in the other Companion Eggs on Zhou Wen’s counter, Li Yu hurriedly took out the few valuable Companion Eggs he had. Although they couldn’t compare to Zhou Wen’s Ice Frost Bear and the rest, they were rare ones produced at the college.

“Brother Luo, this is a rare White-Winged Red-Tail Crane. Its skill is extremely rare and it is very rarely produced. I was lucky to acquire one. I spent 98,000 on it. For you, I’ll charge you 110,000.” After witnessing Luo Xuan’s wealth, Li Yu automatically increased the price to a whole new level.

“Yes, not bad.” Luo Xuan nodded slightly.

“It’s good that you like it, Brother. Do you want to pay by card or bank transfer?” Li Yu was secretly delighted.

“I only brought so much money today. It’s all spent. Perhaps next time,” said Luo Xuan with a smile.

Li Yu was somewhat dumbfounded. He felt depressed. D*mn it, you can just swipe your card and not use your wallet. What do you mean by not bringing that much money today?

Luo Xuan ignored Li Yu and took out the Mutated Gatekeeper Lion egg. He directly injected his Primordial Energy and hatched it.

When Li Yu saw Luo Xuan doing so, he couldn’t help but nod inwardly. From the looks of it, Luo Xuan isn’t really silly. By hatching the Gatekeeper Lion on the spot, he will definitely settle scores with Zhou Wen once he discovers that he has been fooled. Zhou Wen can’t deny it even if he wants to.

Li Yu folded his arms and waited for the development to play out. Gu Dian was the one who had brought the Gatekeeper Lion egg here. Even Gu Dian himself didn’t mention anything about a Mutated Gatekeeper Lion and Li Yu couldn’t tell; therefore, he refused to believe that Zhou Wen would be able to recognize a Mutated Gatekeeper Lion. He believed that Zhou Wen was likely deliberately scamming Luo Xuan in a bid to earn more.

Soon, Luo Xuan hatched the Gatekeeper Lion. A majestic stone lion appeared in front of him. Li Yu took a look and saw that it looked identical to an ordinary Gatekeeper Lion. It looked nothing like a Mutated Gatekeeper Lion.

Just as he was waiting to see Luo Xuan and Zhou Wen fall out, he suddenly heard Luo Xuan say, “It’s indeed a Mutated Gatekeeper Lion. Apart from its Speed, all its attributes are no less than 17. Lion Roar is indeed excellent. Zhou Wen, if you have such good stuff in the future, contact me directly.”

Li Yu felt as if he was dreaming as he watched with his mouth agape as Luo Xuan and Zhou Wen added each other as friends.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 238 - Ever-Victorious

Chapter 238 Ever-Victorious

“To be honest, my family owns a pet store, but it naturally can’t compare to a chain store like Royal Pet Store that covers the entire League. Our store is a small shop in Luoyang. In the future, if a Companion Egg is sold or if you want to buy a Companion Egg, you can look for me directly.” Luo Xuan sent Zhou Wen a message.

“I still have some rare Legendary Companion Eggs that are about the same as those four rare ones. What kind of prices would you pay for them?” Zhou Wen replied to Luo Xuan.

The two exchanged a few words with information and after confirming the price, Zhou Wen immediately packed up and prepared to leave.

The price Luo Xuan offered was rather fair and was close to the true value; therefore, Zhou Wen didn’t wish to waste time here. He planned on selling Gu Dian’s and his Companion Eggs to Luo Xuan.

“Zhou Wen.” Just as Zhou Wen was about to pack up and leave, Li Yu called out to him.

He turned to look at Li Yu. Li Yu hesitated for a moment before saying, “How could you tell that it was a Mutated

Gatekeeper Lion?”

“Is that very difficult?” Zhou Wen asked in return before bidding farewell to Huang Ji. He carried the bag half-filled with Companion Eggs and left the market.

Li Yu was stunned for a while before he came back to his senses. He couldn’t help but smile bitterly and say, “If that isn’t considered difficult, then what’s the point of me studying for three years?”

Zhou Wen arrived at the spot he had agreed on with Luo Xuan and gave Gu Dian and his Companion Eggs to him. And without any bargaining, Luo Xuan transferred the money to Zhou Wen at the agreed price.

Ignoring Gu Dian’s portion, Zhou Wen had obtained more than two million. This was the first time he had received so much money. He felt like a nouveau riche.

“Are you interested in becoming an appraiser at my pet store after graduation? I can give you some shares,” said Luo Xuan.

“I’m not interested in the appraising business.” Zhou Wen thought for a moment before asking, “Do you have any Legendary weapon-type Companion Beasts? The ones with extremely powerful destructive power, it’s best if their destructive power can reach the Epic stage.”

“If someone were to ask that, I would definitely say no. In fact, I would even look down on him. However, since that’s what you asked, I’ll tell you that they exist, but they are very expensive,” said Luo Xuan.

“How expensive?” Zhou Wen was in desperate need of a weapon that could break through the white cocoon.

The power of the banana fan was the wind. If it evolved to its limits, it could blow an entire mountain away.

However, its power was not concentrated enough and its destructive power wasn’t potent enough. This was incomparable to a single-target skill. If one wanted to destroy something, heavy weapons were more practical. At the very least, they needed to be weapons like swords and sabers.

Luo Xuan muttered to himself, “I wonder if you have heard of a Companion Beast like Overlord Snake? It’s a very rare Companion Beast and it has immense strength. It can be considered a top Strength-type Companion Beast at the Legendary stage. Its companion form is a spear, and we give it a nicknameOverlord Spear.”

After pausing for a moment, Luo Xuan continued, “The Overlord Spear is considered top-notch among Legendary weapons. However, if it’s compared to an Epic-stage weapon, it’s definitely far inferior. However, there are always exceptions. Just like the best offensive pet, Thundergod General, if it possesses the ability of Thundergod Augmentation, the lightning power it produces will be able to stand head and shoulders above its peers. It’s the same with Overlord Snake. The typical Overlord Snake isn’t strong, but if you have a Mutated Overlord Snake, there is a possibility of it having the talent skill—Ever-Victorious. With this skill, Overlord Spear will be able to penetrate most objects. Even the typical Epic creature can’t withstand its sharpness.

“It’s a pity that Mutated Overlord Snakes are very rare, and the Mutated Overlord Snakes with Ever-Victorious are even rarer. Our family had hired people to grind in the Snake Cavern for six months before we obtained an Overlord Snake

with Ever-Victorious. And that’s under the circumstances of having excellent luck. Now, that Mutated Overlord Snake is one of our store’s crown jewels. It’s not for sale, but if you want it, I can make the decision to sell it to you. But I must warn you, it’s very expensive.”

“How much is it?” Zhou Wen asked.

“10 million.” Luo Xuan named the price.

“It’s indeed very expensive. I can’t afford it.” Zhou Wen shook his head.

“There’s nothing we can do about it. An Overlord Snake’s level isn’t considered high, but it’s very rare for it to have Ever-Victorious. Furthermore, we got someone to specially incubate it. If you want it, the person needs to sacrifice his own cultivation level and damage his body to transfer Overlord Snake. That will require a huge sum of money as well,” said Luo Xuan.

Zhou Wen nodded. Everyone wanted the good stuff. Although their levels were about the same, the high price was understandable.

Zhou Wen couldn’t afford Overlord Snake, but Luo Xuan’s words reminded him that even though he couldn’t afford it, he could try to grind one at Snake Cavern.

Snake Cavern was near Old Dragon Cave. Zhou Wen had heard Zhong Ziya mention it before, but he hadn’t paid much attention to it back then. Besides, Zhong Ziya didn’t know that Mutated Overlord Snake had the Ever-Victorious skill.

After separating from Luo Xuan, Zhou Wen transferred Gu Dian’s money to him. Zhou Wen had already added him as a

friend when he entered the Xuanwen Club.

After Gu Dian received the money, he only replied with two words: “Got it.”

Zhou Wen contacted Huang Ji again and confirmed some matters regarding the game. In the end, he confirmed his investment of 1.5 million. This investment was split into two tranches. The initial investment was 500,000. After Huang Ji completed a demo, he would fund him with the remaining 1,000,000 investment.

After returning to his dorm, Zhou Wen took out his mysterious phone and went to Snake Cavern. There were python-like snakes everywhere. Legendary Overlord Snakes had peerless strength and were considered top-notch Legendary creatures. Furthermore, they lived in groups with numerous numbers. Typical Legendary students wouldn’t dare enter Snake Cavern.

Zhou Wen naturally didn’t have any qualms. He summoned his group of Companion Beasts and wreaked havoc in Snake Cavern.

Soon, Zhou Wen understood why Overlord Snakes were so expensive. He had killed nearly a hundred of them, but not a single Overlord Snake egg dropped, much less a mutated one.

In the next few days, other than studying at Wang Mingyuan’s place, Zhou Wen spent the rest of his time grinding the Overlord Snakes. However, he had nothing to show for. Over the past few days, he had only obtained an ordinary Overlord Snake egg. He managed to encounter a Mutated Overlord Snake, but nothing dropped.

It’s no wonder Luo Xuan said that they were extremely lucky to have a Mutated Overlord Snake egg drop after six months. Zhou Wen thought of the matter of luck and thought of Wang Lu.

With Wang Lu’s luck, if she were to be taken to the Snake Cavern, she might be able to have a Mutated Overlord Snake egg drop. However, Zhou Wen had no intention of seeking help, so all he could do was continue grinding. After repeatedly grinding, Zhou Wen nearly vomited when he saw the snake.

Ding! Zhou Wen killed another Mutated Overlord Snake. Suddenly, he heard a crisp sound as a black snake egg dropped and landed on the ground.

Mutated Overlord Snake egg! Zhou Wen was delighted as he hurriedly got the blood-colored avatar to pick it up. Then, he prayed inwardly, Please let it have the Ever-Victorious skill. If I keep grinding, I’ll go hissterical!

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 239 - Sky Spider

Chapter 239 Sky Spider

Mutated Overlord Snake: Legendary

Life Providence: Born Overlord

Strength: 19

Speed: 16

Constitution: 18

Primordial Energy: 15

Talent Skill: Death Coil

Companion Form: Spear

It doesn’t have Ever-Victorious! Zhou Wen was very disappointed. Although the Mutated Overlord Snake’s stats were not bad, it was useless without the Ever-Victorious skill.

After putting away the Mutated Overlord Snake, Zhou Wen had no choice but to continue grinding at Snake Cavern. He had to get the Mutated Overlord Snake with Ever-Victorious to drop no matter what.

Boom! As Zhou Wen was grinding the Overlord Snake, he suddenly felt his house shake violently as though an earthquake was happening

Zhou Wen hurriedly exited the game and rushed out of the building to see what was happening

By the time he rushed out, An Jing and Wang Lu were already standing in the yard. Furthermore, the two of them were looking up into the sky as though they were looking at something

Wasn’t it an earthquake? Why are they looking up at the sky? Zhou Wen also looked up at the sky and was alarmed by what he saw.

Up above, there were crystalline silk criss-crossed like a huge net that covered the entire sky. Perhaps not just Sunset College, but all of Luoyang.

And on the net, there was a spider with eight eyes that resembled jade. It kept spewing out spiderwebs.

A break-out creature? Zhou Wen was alarmed.

The spider was so huge that the web it spewed out nearly covered the whole of Luoyang. Just its aura alone meant that its level was definitely not low.

At this moment, an attack aircraft appeared in the sky and launched an assault on the spider and spiderweb. However, the web moved and wrapped around the attack aircraft. The attack aircraft immediately stuck to the web and exploded very quickly.

The flames created by the explosion failed to destroy the spider’s web.

The bullets and shells fired by the plane were also stuck to the spiderweb, making them seem completely useless.

The spider in the sky let out a silent roar, but Truth Listener’s ability allowed Zhou Wen to hear the strange shriek.

Then, many ventilation holes in the spider's abdomen opened up. When they opened and closed, white spheres were spat out which landed in various locations.

Two of them landed in the direction of Sunset College. Zhou Wen focused his gaze and only when the sphere was close did he realize that it wasn't a sphere. Instead, there were countless white spiders entangled together, making them look like a sphere.

Just as they were about to land on the ground, the sphere exploded, causing a sea of spiders to land everywhere in Sunset College. Instantly, the entire school was filled with spiders.

"All teachers and students, may I have your attention. Please eradicate the invading spiders. This is not a drill… I repeat, this is not a drill…" The school's announcement system urgently sounded.

Epic-stage counselors had already streaked across the air, killing many spiders that had yet to land.

However, there were too many spiders and there were still many that landed throughout the school.

Quite a number of spiders had fallen into Four Seasons Garden. There was one not far from Zhou Wen and company, the spider was snow-white in color and its hair was white. Its claws looked like translucent jade, and it was bigger than a human, but it didn't look terrifying. Instead, it looked like a furry toy.

An Jing and Wang Lu were still sizing up the spider out of curiosity when Zhou Wen summoned the Overlord Snake and thrust forward with Penetrating Pierce.

After the battle in the Yin Yang world, Zhou Wen was instinctively wary of dimensional creatures. Regardless of their looks, he had to first ensure that he wasn’t being threatened.

Zhou Wen’s Penetrating Pierce only managed to cover half the distance when the spider spat out a strand of web that wrapped around the Overlord Spear. Then, with a flick of its head, Zhou Wen felt a powerful force surge towards him, making him feel like he couldn’t hold the spear.

He hurriedly tightened his grip on his spear as the man and spider were locked in a stalemate. Zhou Wen was momentarily unable to pull the spider over.

INTO

An Jing quietly summoned a long sword that dazzled with divine light. She then slashed at the spider.

The spider spat out another strand of silk. When the sharp sword beam touched the silk, it ended up stuck as well. It left the three of them shocked.

To have a power that allowed a spiderweb silk to cling to a sword beam was somewhat terrifying

The crux of the matter was that Zhou Wen and company didn’t know if the spider was a dimensional creature or a puppet summoned by the spider in the sky. They felt a headache coming on.

The spider’s mouth kept spewing webs, trying to immobilize the trio. Soon, the webs covered a large area.

Wang Lu summoned a whip, but just as she lashed it out, it was stuck in the spider’s web. She couldn’t pull it back no

matter how hard she tried.

In the sky, an Epic expert had already flown over on a flying bird. He slashed a stunning sword beam at the spider, but despite having the power to slice through a mountain, it ended up stuck to the spider’s web the moment it made contact with it. It was unable to move forward, and vanished without a trace moments later.

After the spider’s silk bound the flying bird, it strangled the bird into two like blade-like steel silk.

There were already five Epic experts from the military, but despite using all sorts of abilities, they were unable to do anything to the huge spider in the sky.

From time to time, it would spit out spider spheres that scattered across the city, causing the entire city to fall into a panic.

Wang Lu and An Jing were also attempting to fight the spider but to no avail. Their attacks were blocked by spiderwebs, making it impossible to pose a threat to the spider.

Zhou Wen snapped a picture of the spider with his phone, hoping to see if he could obtain its information so as to find a way to kill it.

However, the information he obtained left him somewhat disappointed. The information only mentioned that it was a Sky Spider puppet, so it didn’t look like a dimensional creature, but a puppet formed from the spider’s powers.

Zhou Wen summoned the banana fan and fanned a Grand Yin Wind at the spider. The cold wind tore through the spiderweb and swept it over the spider’s body. Instantly, the

spider flew up and slammed into a tiny building in front, causing the walls to crack.

An icy glint flashed in An Jing’s eyes as she grabbed the opportunity to pierce the spider’s body with her sword beam.

Boom!

The spider’s body exploded and it immediately perished.

“Zhou Wen, your fan is very useful. Let’s quickly finish off the other spiders to prevent the other students from being harmed,” Wang Lu said to Zhou Wen, overjoyed.

However, Zhou Wen wasn’t as optimistic as Wang Lu. The number of spiders that came raining down was just too many. It was already difficult for them to deal with them, so how would ordinary citizens cope? It was likely that Luoyang City was already facing an apocalyptic scene.

Before the trio could rush out of Four Seasons Garden, they saw other special admissions students battling the spiders. They weren’t much different from Zhou Wen and company. The attacks were of little use against the spider puppets, so it was extremely difficult to fight them.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 240 - Chaos of the Sky Spider

Chapter 240 Chaos of the Sky Spider

None of the special admissions students of Sunset College were weak. Although they were unable to kill the spider, they still used various methods and abilities to deal with the spider. They were not in danger at all.

However, with the increasing number of spiderwebs surrounding them, the amount of space they and their Companion Beasts could move in became restricted. The battle became somewhat difficult.

Four or five spiders spewed out spider silk in Four Seasons Garden. Bright, crystalline spiderwebs could be seen everywhere. A Companion Beast had already been stuck to one, preventing it from struggling.

Having already discovered the spider’s weakness from her previous battle, An Jing stabbed forward like a bolt of lightning, instantly pinning a spider to the ground.

This was the first time Zhou Wen had seen An Jing fight seriously. Her swordplay was extremely intense, and each strike carried a dazzling glow, as though the void had been penetrated as well.

Zhou Wen immediately recognized the Primordial Energy Art that An Jing used. It was no doubt the Sun Strafe Art. Her sword techniques were somewhat extraordinary and although they looked simple, each strike made them look extremely gorgeous. The sword flashes were like dazzling divine beams.

She was so powerful that she looked as good as Lance. It was just that she and Lance used two completely different styles.

Lance’s technique was unparalleled, but An Jing’s every strike was like a bolt of lightning. If she could kill her opponent with one strike, she definitely wouldn’t require a second attack.

I deserved losing back then. With An Jing’s strength, Zhou Wen was indeed no match for her back then.

Seeing that An Jing could deal with the spiders in Four Seasons Garden, Zhou Wen immediately rushed out and saw that there were indeed spiders spewing out spider silk outside. A student was stuck to the spiderweb as the spider crawled towards him.

Zhou Wen raised his left hand and chopped down with Astral Slash Blade. The blade aura transformed into thin threads that sliced through the spiderweb. The remnant forces continued on and sliced the spider into two.

The schoolmate was still in shock. Before he could thank him, Zhou Wen had already rushed elsewhere.

There were many experts on campus. Besides the Epic counselors, there were also quite a number of students who could kill the spiders. The spiders in the school were quickly subdued.

“All students, may I have your attention… All students who have the ability to kill spiders… please enter the city immediately to aid the military… This is not a drill… I repeat, this is not a drill… All students who participate in the hunting of spiders will be rewarded with credits…” The broadcast rang again.

In fact, Zhou Wen had already run to the school’s entrance and ridden the Mutated Lotus Flower Ant out of the school.

The situation in the city was indeed much worse than the school. From afar, Zhou Wen could see the intertwined spiderwebs in the middle of buildings. The city looked like a spider forest with webs everywhere.

Many citizens had already been stuck to the spiderwebs. Quite a number of people had already been killed. The military were firing with their assault rifles in all directions. However, the effects looked limited. It was only possible for them to kill a spider after several consecutive shots hit the target.

Moreover, the spiders moved very agilely and they were protected by the webs. When a bullet hit the web, it was stuck and had its effects limited.

A mother carrying a child was bound by a spiderweb and was left hanging in the air, suspended in the middle of the building. They were just seconds from having the spider pounce at them.

The eyes of the soldiers below were bloodshot, but they didn’t dare fire. It was too close to the mother and son. If they shot, they might accidentally hit the innocent.

Just as the spider was about to bite the mother and son, a figure flashed across the sky. The spiderweb and the spider

were split into two. The duo who fell were grabbed by the figure before landing safely on the ground.

The soldiers came over to rescue the mother and son, leading them to seek refuge. A soldier asked Zhou Wen, “Are you a student at Sunset College?”

“Yes.” Zhou Wen nodded slightly.

“Please provide assistance to the Duke of Zhou Temple. That area has become a spider disaster zone and is spreading outwards,” the soldier said to Zhou Wen.

“Alright,” Zhou Wen replied before riding the Mutated Lotus Flower Ant towards the Duke of Zhou Temple.

The person that worshiped at Duke of Zhou Temple was Ji Dan. He was King Wu of Zhou’s younger brother, had been regent twice, and helped King Wu of Zhou in clinching victory at the Battle of Muye. He was also involved in the establishment of rites and the creation of music, earning him a consecration from future descendants.

Zhou Wen stormed through and killed several spiders on the way and rescued some citizens.

However, along the way, many citizens had already turned into corpses. They looked as if they had been sucked dry as they hung on a spider web attached to skyscrapers.

Just one break-out creature can cause such a disaster. If the various dimensional zones are unable to trap those dimensional creatures, what will the world become? Zhou Wen felt that his strength was minute.

The battle in the sky continued as a few Epic stage experts rushed over. In the sky, they were fighting the Sky Spider,

but the situation didn’t look good. No one could pose a threat to the Sky Spiders. Instead, their Companion Beasts were stuck to the spiderwebs. No matter how much they struggled, they were unable to escape.

“Zhou Wen, are you going to the Duke of Zhou Temple as well?” Zhong Ziya charged over from another direction and happened to meet Zhou Wen.

The thin sword in his hand was unbelievably fast. Wherever the sword passed, the spiders would have their foreheads instantly penetrated by a sword beam, leaving only a wound that resembled a needle hole, accentuating their deaths.

“There was a soldier who said that it needs reinforcements,” Zhou Wen said as he tore open the spider webs.

“Me too. Let’s go together.” Zhong Ziya rushed over with his sword in hand.

Zhou Wen followed. Soon, he met a few other students who had been invited by the military to reinforce the Duke of Zhou Temple.

The military’s Epic powerhouses were rushing into the sky to fight the Sky Spider. If they didn’t get rid of the Sky Spider as quickly as possible, the spiders that it spat out would be endless. All they could do was leave the spiders below to ordinary soldiers and some Legendary military officers.

Zhou Wen and the other students from Sunset College would become officers if they chose to join the army after graduation. There was no need for them to start off as enlistees.

Usually, when the students were together, it was difficult to tell who was truly strong, but when it came to real battles,

everything became obvious. Zhou Wen had never seen some of the powerful students in the school rankings before.

A person like Zhong Ziya was definitely not weaker than Wei Ge, the president of the student council. He could even be stronger; however, he didn’t have a ranking.

The pair of siblings from the Wu family were terrifying as well. Zhou Wen couldn’t help but marvel at how many hidden dragons and crouching tigers there were at Sunset College.

Just as they were about to arrive at Duke of Zhou Temple, Zhou Wen saw Hui Haifeng leading a group of people in a battle with the spiders. The surrounding soldiers were also watching the front lines as they fired crazily.

They had yet to see the Duke of Zhou Temple, but the number of spiders ahead of them was uncountable. It was unknown how many of them were crawling out.

“This city has become a spider’s nest,” Zhong Ziya said.

“Cut the crap. Hurry up and provide reinforcements. We can’t hold out any longer!” Hui Haifeng shouted.

Zhou Wen, Zhong Ziya, and the rest of the students rushed forward and blocked the swarm of spiders. It was a chaotic scene where they killed countless spiders. Yet, the number of spiders that charged out from the Duke of Zhou Temple remained constant.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 241 - Entering the Temple

Chapter 241 Entering the Temple

Zhou Wen rushed in front of a military officer and asked, “How long have you been here? How many spider balls have landed here?”

“We’ve been here for nearly an hour. We saw a total of three spider balls landing near the Duke of Zhou Temple,” the officer answered.

“The three spider balls can’t have that many spiders. Have you sent someone to charge in to take a look?” Zhou Wen asked again.

As the officer fired, he shouted, “We also suspect that there’s something wrong inside, but there are too many spiders. We can’t charge in. We’ve tried, but suffered heavy casualties.”

“There’s no point in this endless killing. Zhou Wen and Ziya, charge in with me to take a look,” Hui Haifeng said as he charged towards the group of spiders with his shield.

His charge was extremely ferocious, but he was quickly stuck by a spiderweb and could no longer break through.

Zhou Wen and Zhong Ziya charged over and sliced the spiderweb in front of them with their saber and sword.

There were a few students standing behind them. They huddled into a group as they charged in, fighting ceaselessly against the tidal wave of spiders.

A few drops of blood landed on Zhou Wen’s face. They were from Hui Haifeng. A strand of spider silk had swept across his face, leaving a bloody mark.

The temple was in front of them, but they couldn’t see the main body of the temple at all. It was completely covered by the spiderwebs as if it was covered in snow.

Zhou Wen and company could see large numbers of spiders crawling out of the spiderwebs without stopping.

“There must be something wrong with the temple. Otherwise, how can there be so many spiders crawling out from such a tiny place?” Zhong Ziya said.

“The webs have sealed off the area. If we head in, just making contact with a few spiderwebs will trap us. When that happens, we won’t even have a chance to hide,” a student said.

“Let us rush in and take a look. Help us watch our backs.” Two military officers rushed into the temple.

Zhou Wen and company tried their best to block the surrounding spiders as the two officers entered one after another. Not long after they entered, they heard a scream as another officer flew out.

“What happened?” Zhou Wen caught the officer and asked anxiously.

“There are too many webs in there. There’s no room for movement at all. You’ll get stuck with any slight movement. The third platoon commander…” The officer’s eyes were red and he couldn’t continue speaking. He got up and wanted to rush towards the temple again.

“Don’t go, it’s useless even if you go. The spiderwebs are like a lair. Anyone who goes in will die unless it’s an Epic expert who forcefully tears through those webs.” Zhong Ziya held the officer down and prevented him from entering

“If we don’t resolve the problem here, the spiders will rush out like a tidal wave. There’s no way we can defend our ground. When the time comes, the entire Luoyang City will be finished.” The red-eyed officer struggled out of Zhong Ziya’s grasp as he tried to charge inside.

Everyone fell silent. They naturally knew that it was impossible for such a small group of people to fend off so many spiders unless an Epic expert came.

But right now, the Epic experts were attacking the Sky Spider, so how could they come here to support them?

“I hate these fellows who risk their lives for no good reason. It’s as if everything can be resolved as long as they are willing to risk their lives.” Zhong Ziya pursed his lips disdainfully and continued, “Please help me watch the area outside. I’ll go in and take a look.”

As he spoke, Zhong Ziya raised his sword and leaped over the officer, before entering the opening. “Ziya, I’ll go in with you.” Hui Haifeng pushed away the spider in front of him and entered the lair-like temple.

“Stay outside for now. Before we come out, you must hold the ground no matter what. Don’t let the spider swarm spread out,” Zhou Wen said to the officer as he rushed into the temple.

The spiderweb wrapped around the doors and walls like yarn. Mere contact would cause the spider silk to cling onto them like death’s grip. When the time came, they wouldn’t

be able to break free, making dodging the spiders' attack extremely difficult. They would then be like a fly caught in a spider's web.

When Zhou Wen rushed in, he saw that the ground was covered in spiderwebs and that if his feet were to touch the ground, he would likely be stuck to it.

However, he wasn't flustered. He circulated the Ancient Sovereign Sutra and slashed out with his Primordial Energy. Immediately, he tore open the spiderweb in front of him and his legs landed on the ground. The moment his feet touched the spider silk, it immediately melted like snow meeting embers. It failed to stick to Zhou Wen's body.

When Zhou Wen was outside, he had already tried all sorts of Primordial Energy Arts and discovered that the Ancient Sovereign Sutra was highly effective against spider silk. When they encountered the Ancient Sovereign Sutra's Primordial Energy, they would immediately melt. This was why he dared to barge in.

He hadn't gone far before he saw Hui Haifeng's body covered with spiderwebs. He resembled a dumpling wrapped in white silk. However, he could still charge forward. The nearby spiders who had crawled out failed to hurt him due to the spider silk that formed a protective net.

Zhou Wen scrutinized Hui Haifeng and realized that the spider silk on him had clearly been put on by him. It wasn't connected to the spider silk outside. Although he looked terrifying, he was still able to move freely.

"That's a good move. How did you think of that?" Zhou Wen charged over and rendezvoused with Hui Haifeng, killing all the incoming spiders.

Hui Haifeng said, “These spider silk threads look scary, but if you take a closer look, you’ll see that there are actually two types. One is a sticky kind of spider silk, the other is a type that doesn’t stick. Those spiders are also walking on the non-sticky spider silk, so I used those as a form of protection. The non-stick spider silk helps against the other kind of spider silk, so it prevents me from being stuck.”

With that said, Hui Haifeng sized up Zhou Wen from head to toe. “Dude, how did you get in? You weren’t stuck by the spider webs?”

“My strength perfectly counters these spider silk threads. They can’t stick to me.” Zhou Wen asked again, “Where’s Ziya?”

“He rushed to the front. He’s too fast and I can’t catch up with him. I reckon he should already be in the main hall of the Temple by now,” Hui Haifeng said.

“Then take your time. I’ll head in and take a look as well.” As Zhou Wen spoke, he used his Bamboo Blade to storm open a bloody path and charged into the Duke of Zhou Temple.

“Wait for me.” Hui Haifeng rushed in with Zhou Wen. However, because he was covered in spider webs that made him look like a snowman, his actions appeared somewhat clumsy.

The Bamboo Blade was extremely sharp, and with Zhou Wen’s Ancient Sovereign Sutra’s Primordial Energy, it was the nemesis of the spiders. Wherever the blade passed, the spiderwebs and spiders were sliced apart.

The two of them charged forward and killed countless spiders.

An intense battle sounded in front of him as Zhou Wen hurriedly called out to Ziya. He immediately heard Zhong Ziya’s voice: “I’m here. Quick, help me. This fellow is a tough one.”

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 242 - The Team for Putting Out Fires

Chapter 242 The Team for Putting Out Fires

Zhou Wen heard the sound coming from the backyard, but it was already covered in beads of silk, like a snow cave.

Truth Listener’s ability allowed Zhou Wen to see what was happening inside. Zhong Ziya was fighting a group of spiders, and in the yard, there was something like a well. Spiders were pouring out of it and, clearly, that was the problem.

“I’ll be right there.” As Zhou Wen spoke, he circled around to the backyard. Indeed, he saw Zhong Ziya embroiled in a battle with a horde of spiders.

He didn’t have any spiderwebs on him, and his powers were clearly unable to restrain the spider silk like Zhou Wen’s. However, his movement technique was extremely odd. He was like a boneless snake as he swam through the silk, preventing it from sticking to him.

Zhou Wen took a closer look and realized that when Zhong Ziya’s body touched a strand of silk, he would land on the non-sticky spider silk. The spiders could do nothing about him.

However, Zhong Ziya wasn’t in the best of conditions. Although normal spiders couldn’t do anything to him, there was a very strange spider that left him in peril.

The spider was also snow-white in color, but on its back was a unique blood-red pattern. The pattern looked like a human face, making it stand out among a group of snow-white spiders.

The blood-patterned spider kept darting through the horde of spiders to avoid being attacked by Zhong Ziya. Zhong Ziya had been pursuing it the entire time, but there was something that left Zhou Wen somewhat puzzled.

When the blood-patterned spider burrowed into the pile of spiders, Zhong Ziya would lose his target. When he saw it again, he failed to recognize it immediately.

“Ziya, what’s the situation now?” Hui Haifeng noticed something amiss as well and hurriedly asked.

“That spider is the problem. Quickly kill it,” Zhong Ziya said.

“I see, but why does it look like you don’t want to kill it?” Hui Haifeng said as he rushed over.

“If I could recognize it, I would have killed it long ago. It’s very cunning. It’s always burrowing into the spider horde and mixing with other spiders. It takes me a while to determine which one it is,” Zhong Ziya said.

“It can’t be, can’t you see the blood-colored patterns on its back?” Hui Haifeng asked, puzzled.

“I’m colorblind, and particularly can’t identify red.” Zhong Ziya’s answer nearly caused Zhou Wen and Hui Haifeng’s jaws to drop to the ground. If it weren’t for this critical moment, they would never have believed that such a strange illness existed in this world.

Hui Haifeng charged forward and punched the blood-patterned spider. It moved at rapid speed, allowing it to easily dodge Hui Haifeng’s attack. Speed wasn’t Hui Haifeng’s forte to begin with, so now that he was wrapped in spider silk, he became even clumsier. He ultimately failed to catch up to the blood-patterned spider, but he did kill several ordinary spiders.

Without another word, Zhou Wen used Ghost Steps and charged forward as though he had teleported. The Bamboo Blade cleaved the blood-patterned spider into two.

Unlike the other spiders, once the blood-patterned spider died, it didn’t reduce to dust. It was actually a true body of flesh and blood.

What’s going on? Zhou Wen was somewhat surprised. He thought that all the spiders were puppets, but this one was clearly not.

The moment the blood-patterned spider died, the underground well exploded and large amounts of white liquid spewed out. After that, no spiders crawled out.

When Zhou Wen and company had slaughtered all the spiders, he walked to the well and saw that it was only a few meters deep. It resembled a huge pot, so he couldn’t work out how that many spiders managed to crawl out of it.

The military was firing wildly outside and killing the spiders that crawled out earlier. However, the effects were getting worse. Quite a number of soldiers were hung up by the spider silk and some of them even had their bodies snapped into two by it.

Despite almost failing to hold the defensive line, the significant drop in spiders that crawled out of the temple

allowed them to gradually stabilize the situation.

“They succeeded!” The officer in charge was surprised and delighted. He ordered the soldiers to increase their firepower and quickly eliminate all the spiders.

By the time Zhou Wen and company came out, most of the spiders outside had already been killed by the troops and other students who had rushed over to reinforce them.

“Students, thank you for everything you’ve done…” The officer was about to say something when he suddenly received an urgent notification. There was another spot in the city where another spider horde had gathered. The troops there were asking for reinforcements.

“Students, if it’s possible, can I ask you to come with us?” the officer said in embarrassment.

“How troublesome. Where is it?” Zhong Ziya asked.

Hence, Zhou Wen and company became an emergency team that was made to put out fires. They constantly shuttled through the city, in charge of clearing locations that constantly produced spiders.

There were more than ten places like this in Luoyang City. And these were the discovered ones. It was unknown how many in the suburbs had yet to be discovered.

The three of them should have split up and gone to different locations, but Hui Haifeng couldn’t catch up with the blood-patterned spider and Zhong Ziya was colorblind, so they had no choice but to rush over together.

Thankfully, with the two of them opening up a path, all Zhou Wen needed to do was focus on killing the blood-patterned

spider. The effects had increased significantly.

After killing a few blood-patterned spiders, Zhou Wen discovered a Companion Egg inside a blood-patterned spider’s body. Zhou Wen glanced at it with his mysterious phone.

Sky Spider Larva: Legendary (Youngling)

Life Providence: Son of the Sky

Strength: 19

Speed: 20

Constitution: 17

Primordial Energy: 20

Talent Skill: Sky Spider Silk, Sky Spider Sanguine Venom.

Companion Form: Sky Spider Glove

Zhou Wen knew what was going on when he saw the annotation of a youngling. Typical Companion Beasts didn’t have any room for growth. Legendaries were Legendaries; impossible for them to further evolve.

However, with the youngling annotation, it meant that there was still room for growth. As for the level of advancement after becoming an adult, that depended on its bloodline.

Since it was a youngling of a Sky Spider, it would probably grow into existence like the Sky Spider in the sky.

The three of them continuously moved to help the military kill the Sky Spider younglings. Many officers recognized them, but they didn’t know their names.

Zhou Wen and company had killed another Sky Spider youngling and were rushing to the next location when they suddenly saw the sky light up.

It was daytime with the blazing sun high in the sky, but the radiance was even more dazzling than the sun.

The trio couldn’t help but look up. They saw a brilliant sword flash sweep across the sky, as though it had swept across the entire horizon. The gigantic Sky Spider was instantly killed.

The Sky Spider had been sliced in half and fell from the sky. It was unknown where it landed, but it caused the entire city to experience tremors for a moment like an earthquake.

Zhou Wen looked up into the sky. At the spot where the sword beam disappeared, a man in an officer’s uniform and trench coat stood in midair like a god of war.

An Tianzuo? Although he couldn’t see An Tianzuo’s face due to the distance, the latter’s figure immediately made him recall An Tianzuo.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 243 - Deserving of a Commendation

Chapter 243 Deserving of a Commendation

The calamity of the Sky Spider was finally over. The damaged city could be repaired, but the dead would never come back to life.

“Bury our brothers who died properly. Arrange to disburse the bereavement money as quickly as possible. Make sure that not a single cent goes astray. Also, if they have any problems at home, do your best to take care of them. We can’t let their family cry while our brothers are bleeding.” An Tianzuo sat behind his desk as he looked at the list of casualties An Sheng had brought over. His expression wasn’t the best.

He had said that he wanted to protect Luoyang, but today, Luoyang City nearly became a ruin.

“Everything has been arranged. Do you want to attend their funeral personally?” An Sheng asked.

“Yes.” An Tianzuo nodded with a heavy expression.

“Also, this is the list of those who contributed from below. Most of them are fine, but since many students from Sunset College had participated in the battle, our subordinates have also submitted their names. Three of them were personally added by Deputy Governor Qin, but…” An Sheng paused for a moment.

“But what?” An Tianzuo asked.

“Those three students didn’t report to the military headquarters for registration, so they don’t know their names. Deputy Governor Qin only mentioned three students, but didn’t write their names,” An Sheng said.

“Since they didn’t head for the military headquarters, it means that they don’t care about the rewards. They likely come from the big and powerful families. It’s fine if they didn’t register, but why would Uncle Qin especially highlight them? There should be some reason for this, right?” An Tianzuo said thoughtfully.

“Overseer, you’re wise. These three students helped our troops destroy sixteen spider wells, significantly reducing our casualties. The officers below wish to report their names, but they don’t know them. Deputy Governor Qin especially highlighted them after learning of the matter. I believe he hopes we can find out who they are and give them the commendations that they deserve,” An Sheng said.

“There aren’t many youths these days who are so responsible. Such acts are indeed worthy of commendation. Find them and hold a commendation ceremony at Sunset College. I want to personally award them a reward and set them as a classic example.” An Tianzuo nodded slightly when he heard that.

“Yes, Overseer,” An Sheng replied. He took note of this matter and went to settle it after he was done with his other more pressing issues.

The two clearly didn’t realize that Zhou Wen was one of the three. This was because, from their understanding of him, Zhou Wen was clearly not someone who was willing to take risks.

To be able to do such a thing as venturing deep into the spider's lair was definitely an action a hot-blooded youth would take. And Zhou Wen's character was clearly not one.

When Zhou Wen returned to his dorm, the shocking sword beam from An Tianzuo still appeared in his mind from time to time.

From the looks of it, I'm still very far from An Tianzuo. It's no wonder Lance said that he wants to advance to the peak of the Epic stage before challenging An Tianzuo. That does make sense. Zhou Wen also hoped that he could reach that level one day.

Of course, thinking about it was useless. Therefore, Zhou Wen took out his mysterious phone and planned on continuing to enter the game to hunt monsters so that he could quickly increase his strength.

Before Zhou Wen could enter the instance dungeon, the antelope came over to tug at his clothes. Zhou Wen knew that it wanted to eat again, so he took out the soy sauce beef he had placed in the chaos space.

When he picked up the soy sauce beef, Zhou Wen saw a necklace beside it. Only then did he recall that he had snatched the necklace from John.

John was immune to the Grand Yin Wind from Banana Fairy because he was wearing the necklace. Although it was because the level of the Banana Fairy was still low, it was undeniable that the power of the necklace gave him a strong resistance against the wind element.

However, Luoyang basically didn't have any wind-elemental dimensional creatures. It hadn't come in handy after Zhou Wen had received the necklace.

He took it out and saw that the gems embedded in it seemed to have a swirling vortex within. It was rather magical.

Banana Fairy, who was flying around on a banana leaf, flew over when she saw the Goddess of Wind's protection. She landed on Zhou Wen's hand that was holding the necklace. She looked pitifully at Zhou Wen with her large eyes, her mouth producing a voice that Zhou Wen couldn't understand. It was unknown what she wanted to say.

"You want this necklace?" Zhou Wen asked Banana Fairy.

Banana Fairy hurriedly nodded as she looked at Zhou Wen with anticipation.

"What do you want it for? You can't wear such a huge necklace. You can't treat it like a snack, right?" Zhou Wen casually asked.

However, just as Zhou Wen finished his sentence, Banana Fairy grabbed the gem on the necklace and bit down. The stone that seemed to have wind flowing within was devoured by her.

"Hey, hey… I was just making a remark… Why did you really eat it…" Zhou Wen's heart ached. This item was a treasure that could make him immune to wind-based attacks. Zhou Wen was prepared to take it to Sky City.

Sky City was mostly filled with wind-elemental creatures. With this necklace, Zhou Wen could kill dimensional creatures there without any worries.

Now that Banana Fairy had swallowed the gem, he didn't know if the necklace had any effect.

However, the Banana Fairy looked at Zhou Wen with a puzzled expression. She didn’t quite understand why Zhou Wen was acting so sad even though he was the one who had asked her to eat it.

However, this expression didn’t last long. After swallowing the gem, wisps of wind gushed out from Banana Fairy’s body. The wind turned into something visible to the naked eye as it spun around Banana Fairy and the banana leaf. Furthermore, the wind was getting stronger and stronger as it gradually formed a storm.

The tables and chairs in the room were all swept up. If this continued, the entire building would probably be swept up by her.

Zhou Wen hurriedly stowed away Banana Fairy into the chaos space as he wondered in surprise, Could it be that Banana Fairy is going to evolve? She’s already at the Legendary stage. If she continues to evolve, wouldn’t she be at the Epic stage?

The hurricane in the chaos space continued as Zhou Wen’s consciousness entered. All he saw was a heavenly pillar-like hurricane swirling, preventing him from seeing Banana Fairy’s figure.

The storm was getting more intense, and it didn’t seem like it would stop anytime soon.

Seeing the mess in the room, Zhou Wen couldn’t help but shake his head slightly. He began packing up the items on the ground and just as he was done packing, he heard his cell phone ring.

“Little Wen, let me ask you something. Did my father ever give you anything special?” Ouyang Lan’s voice came

through the phone.

“I used to eat at the former principal’s place often, but it seems like he never gave me anything. Sis Lan, has something happened?” Zhou Wen noticed that Ouyang Lan’s tone was somewhat odd.

“We’ve established contact with the expedition team and they said that they lost contact with my father. I plan on making a trip to Zhuolu myself to figure out the situation. During my absence, you have to take good care of yourself. If there’s anything you need, find An Sheng. He will help you,” Ouyang Lan said a few simple words and hung up before Zhou Wen could ask about the situation.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 244 - Movement Technique

Chapter 244 Movement Technique

Zhou Wen hurriedly called back, wanting to meet Ouyang Lan and tell her about the name card and number. However, it wasn’t convenient to call her over the phone. It could be troublesome if the call was monitored.

However, when Zhou Wen called, he heard the notification that the person he had just called had switched off their phone.

He thought for a moment before calling An Sheng. Thankfully, An Sheng’s call went through successfully.

“An Sheng, I called Sis Lan just now. Why is her phone switched off?” Zhou Wen asked.

“Madam has already set off. She left in a hurry, so she didn’t take any detours. She’s flying straight to Zhuolu County. On the way, she will pass through many areas with abnormal magnetic fields. It’ll probably be very difficult to contact her on her phone,” An Sheng said.

What happened? Why did Sis Lan leave in such a hurry? Zhou Wen frowned slightly.

“We aren’t sure of the actual situation. All we know now is that one of the people who went to the dimensional zone for research with Mr. Ouyang has returned. He said that some accidents happened in the dimensional zones. They were separated from Mr. Ouyang, and many of them died. Only he escaped alive. Later, they sent a few more groups of people

in, but the outcome was terriblemany people died. Madam was really worried, so she went alone. Overseer couldn’t stop her, so he rushed people over. You don’t have to be worried.”

“An Sheng, can you take me along? I also want to go to Zhuolu,” Zhou Wen asked after some thought.

There weren’t many people in this world who didn’t ask for anything in return. The former principal was one of them. Although Zhou Wen was a rather cold and aloof person, he wished to do something for the former principal.

Zhou Wen knew that he was lacking, so it was useless entering the dimensional zone. However, he had the mysterious phone. If he could find the tiny palm symbol there, he could explore the dimensional zone in the game’s instance dungeon and learn of the dangers ahead of time. It might be of help to the former principal.

“That ancient battlefield is extremely terrifying. Previously, those who entered with the principal were all experts at the Epic stage. Even so, only one of them survived. It’s useless for the average person to go. Don’t worry, we will do our best to save Old Mr Ouyang,” An Sheng said.

“I don’t feel at ease staying here either. I wish to wait at Zhuolu so that I can immediately learn the latest news about the former principal and Sis Lan,” Zhou Wen said.

An Sheng hesitated for a moment before saying, “The first group of people has already set off for Zhuolur. I’m afraid we won’t be able to catch up. Wait another two days first. The people that Overseer has hired will arrive then. When the time comes, you can follow them.”

“Alright.” Zhou Wen had no other choice but to agree.

This world is changing too quickly, but my growth in strength is just too slow. Zhou Wen recently had an increasing feeling that his improvement was too slow.

However, he didn't realize that typical college students who advanced to the Legendary stage before they graduated from university were considered fast growers. He had already advanced to the Legendary stage in his first year of university, so he was indeed a little too impatient at wanting to advance to the Epic stage.

Even with a background like the six families, with virtually unlimited resources supporting them, it would be difficult for students to advance to the Epic stage in just a few years.

I wish to slowly advance too, but this world isn't waiting for anyone. Zhou Wen sighed inwardly.

He went to the Golden Flying Ant once again. This time, Zhou Wen used Ghost Bride, hoping to use her ability to be immune to physical attacks. He wanted to see if she could pass through the white cocoon to see what was inside them.

When he arrived, Ghost Bride was actually able to ignore the Golden Flying Ant's attack. This delighted Zhou Wen greatly, but just as she was about to pass through the white cocoon, she was repelled by the cocoon.

Is it still impossible? Zhou Wen was somewhat disappointed. All he could do was continue grinding Overlord Snakes, hoping that he could get one with Overlord Spear as soon as possible.

"Zhou Wen, can you do me a favor?" Hui Haifeng suddenly asked while he was studying at Wang Mingyuan's place.

"What is it?" Zhou Wen asked in surprise.

“Can you practice movement techniques with me? In the past, I’ve been too focused on strength and techniques, but I neglected my movement techniques. When we went to kill the spider, Ziya and you showed me the importance of movement techniques. I want to practice them, but it’s not an ordinary technique. I developed a technique that’s most suitable for me, so I need someone to help me,” Hui Haifeng said.

“I can do it in the next two days. However, I might have something to attend to in two days and have to leave the school,” Zhou Wen said.

“It should be done in two days. I don’t have any clue, so I need to find a direction in actual combat. It shouldn’t take too long,” Hui Haifeng said.

“Alright, let’s begin now,” Zhou Wen agreed.

When he got to the training field with Hui Haifeng, Hui Haifeng had Zhou Wen attack him with all his might, but all he did was block or dodge.

Hui Haifeng was rather well-rounded. He was a person with a relatively balanced development, but in terms of movement techniques, he was weaker than Zhou Wen.

Zhou Wen pushed Dragon Gate Fairy Skill to its limits and constantly attacked Hui Haifeng.

Hui Haifeng seemed to have learned a few movement techniques that constantly swapped. Yet, he was still constantly struck by Zhou Wen.

However, Hui Haifeng had improved very quickly. After familiarizing himself with Zhou Wen’s movement

techniques, the number of times he was hit began to decrease.

The progress was extremely smooth, but after reaching a certain level, Hui Haifeng could no longer dodge Zhou Wen's attacks. No matter how hard he tried, there was no progress.

"The pressure on me isn't enough. Faster," Hui Haifeng said.

"Alright." Zhou Wen switched to Godfiend Era and used his levitation ability to push his Dragon Gate Fairy Skill to an even higher level. He flew across the sky and attacked Hui Haifeng from all directions, making it even harder for Hui Haifeng to dodge. The number of times he was hit increased.

Hui Haifeng gritted his teeth as he constantly changed his movement techniques. The number of palm imprints on his body increased, but he had no intention of giving up. He continued to persist, hoping to find a path that was most suitable for him to break through while under heavy pressure.

It's useless… It's still useless… My speed isn't as fast as Zhou Wen's… Nor do I have such powerful aerial combat capabilities as Zhou Wen… What can I do? Hui Haifeng didn't feel vexed over his flaws. Instead, he was searching for a chance to resolve the problem with his own abilities.

Under Zhou Wen's relentless assault, Hui Haifeng gradually found a path that belonged to him.

Suddenly, Hui Haifeng seemed to come to a realization. His movement technique changed drastically, one completely different from the movement technique he had used earlier. It was quite a bizarre change.

Rather than saying that it was a movement technique, it was more accurate to say that it was a variation in the footwork in a fist technique. Hui Haifeng’s movements were very tiny, but such tiny movements were very fast like an explosive impulse.

This kind of movement couldn’t be maintained at high speeds, but the continuous impulse movement caused Hui Haifeng’s trajectory to become unpredictable.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 245 - Movement Technique (2)

Chapter 245 Movement Technique (2)

“Haha, I’ve finally found a suitable movement technique for myself. No matter how fast I am, I can’t compare to you and Ziya. I can’t maintain a high speed like the two of you, but I can use my explosive impulse to accelerate myself to a speed faster than the two of you for a moment. And I have good endurance and can sustain such continuous impulses. This is the most suitable movement technique for me.” Hui Haifeng laughed heartily.

“It’s indeed a pretty good movement technique,” Zhou Wen praised.

Hui Haifeng wrapped his arm around Zhou Wen’s shoulder and said, “This movement technique was completed with your help. Half the credit goes to you. I’ll give you half of the naming rights. You and I can think of one word and we’ll use it as the name of this movement technique. In the future, when it becomes famous, your name will definitely be recorded in history.”

“There’s no need. I’m just a sparring partner,” Zhou Wen said with a shrug.

“It’s different. My movement technique was inspired by your movement technique. Half its name has to come from you. Come, quickly think of a name for it. I can’t wait to perfect it.” Hui Haifeng took out a piece of paper and a pen and handed them to Zhou Wen. He asked him to have a think before he wrote a single word.

Although Zhou Wen found Hui Haifeng's method of naming rather ridiculous, he thought for a moment under Hui Haifeng's insistence and wrote the word "True" on the piece of paper.

After the two of them finished writing, they unfolded the pieces of paper together and saw that there was also the word "True" on Hui Haifeng's paper. When they saw the words on the paper, they couldn't help but be slightly stunned.

Hui Haifeng laughed. "It looks like we're both like-minded and thought of the same thing. Let's do it this way. It won't be interesting to write another name. This movement technique shall be called Double True."

"Double True… Double True… True Double… This name sounds a little…" Zhou Wen repeated it a few times before he realized[1] that something was amiss.

After Hui Haifeng said it out loud, he clearly realized this problem. However, he didn't mind it and said with a smile, "Double True movement technique doesn't sound nice, but since it's decided by fate, let's call it Double True."

With that said, Hui Haifeng ran off. He couldn't wait to head back and continue researching and perfecting the Double True movement technique.

Zhou Wen shook his head and said, "Wang Mingyuan's disciples are all talented geniuses, but their personalities are weird. I originally thought Hui Haifeng was a normal person, but from the looks of it, he isn't very normal."

An Sheng needed to do a lot of work. Not only was he An Tianzuo's adjutant, but he was also the An family's butler. He had to handle the matters of the military and the An

family. Therefore, An Sheng had to organize people to handle many matters.

When he received a name list, his expression turned extremely odd.

There were three names written on the listone of them was Zhou Wen. These three names were specially written by Qin Wufu. An Tianzuo had also mentioned that he wanted to personally reward the three.

None of that was a problem, but one of the three names was Zhou Wen.

“Are you sure this list is correct?” An Sheng looked at the intelligence officer in front of him and asked. He had to be sure of this matter, or else there would be a huge problem.

“Yes, many officers have seen the three of them before. We have also checked the surveillance footage of some shops nearby and compared them to the school’s database. We have confirmed that it’s the three of them. Furthermore, we have also brought a photo to show those officers. It’s confirmed without a doubt that it’s the three of them,” the intelligence officer said with certainty.

“Very good. You did well. Go ahead and busy yourself.” An Sheng looked at the name on the list and a strange smile appeared on his lips. He took some documents and got up to head to An Tianzuo’s office.

“Come in.” An Tianzuo was handling some documents, clearly in a bad mood.

He already had a headache over the various break-out creatures from the dimensional zones. Now that Ouyang Lan had gone to such a dangerous place, he was very worried.

If it wasn’t because there were too many problems in Luoyang and he couldn’t split himself, he yearned to fly to Zhuolu immediately and get Ouyang Lan back.

However, he knew Ouyang Lan’s temper very well. Even if he went, it would be impossible for her to return because his temper was inherited from her. He knew very well that no one could stop her once she made up her mind.

“Overseer, the list of students who have rendered meritorious services has been compiled. The three students who helped us destroy the spider wells have also been found. The commendation ceremony has already been prepared. Should we start as planned?” An Sheng walked over and handed the document to An Tianzuo.

“Act according to the plan. Go ahead and do it.” An Tianzuo didn’t look at the documents. Usually, such matters were handled by An Sheng. He didn’t think there would be any problems with such trivial matters.

“Yes.” An Sheng took back the document and left An Tianzuo’s office.

Zhou Wen was constantly grinding at Snake Cavern, but he hadn’t had a Mutated Overlord Snake drop with Ever-Victorious. Therefore, he planned on inviting Wang Lu to try it out at Snake Cavern.

Wang Lu was listening to music in the living room when she heard the doorbell ring. When she opened the door, she couldn’t help but be surprised that Zhou Wen had actually knocked on her door. It was unbelievable.

“Wang Lu, how much money do I need to hire you to accompany me to the Snake Cavern to hunt dimensional creatures?” Zhou Wen asked Wang Lu.

“You want to hire me?” Wang Lu was stunned before looking at Zhou Wen with interest.

“Yes, if it’s possible, we can head to the Snake Cavern now.” Zhou Wen nodded with certainty.

“You should know that I don’t lack money, right?” Wang Lu said with a smile.

Zhou Wen was slightly disappointed. “Sorry for disturbing you.”

With that said, Zhou Wen prepared to leave when Wang Lu hurriedly said, “Hold on. It’s not impossible for you to hire me, but I don’t want money. I have one condition.”

“What condition?” Zhou Wen asked.

“I want to go shopping tonight. Be my lackey and help me carry things,” Wang Lu said.

“No problem, I’m going to the Snake Cavern to kill the Mutated Overlord Snakes. I wish to use your luck to have a Mutated Overlord Snake egg drop.” Zhou Wen shared his motives.

“It shouldn’t be a big problem, as long as there’s a Mutated Overlord Snake there,” said Wang Lu with a smile.

Zhou Wen and Wang Lu headed to Dragon Gate Grotto where Snake Cavern was. Zhou Wen was already very familiar with the place, so killing Overlord Snakes was very simple for him. He only wished to meet a Mutated Overlord Snake. After all, it wasn’t something that could be found at any time. If there wasn’t a Mutated Overlord Snake, it wouldn’t matter how lucky Wang Lu was.

However, Zhou Wen had clearly underestimated Wang Lu’s luck. Not long after they entered Snake Cavern, they saw an Overlord Snake that resembled black jade. It was a Mutated Overlord Snake.

[1] Double in Chinese lingo can mean clueless/idiot. So flipping the name becomes True Idiot.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 246 - Cracking the Cocoon

Chapter 246 Cracking the Cocoon

Zhou Wen was delighted when he saw the Mutated Overlord Snake as he ordered the Saber Shield Knight to charge forward.

The Saber Shield Knight had a Life Providence of Offense and Defense. Furthermore, his shield skills, saber skills, and battle aura skills were very powerful, making him the best at restraining Overlord Snakes.

The Mutated Overlord Snake charged over as the Saber Shield Knight activated the Everlasting Shield. The cross symbol on his shield immediately lit up with a holy radiance, as though it was a holy light that enveloped his entire body and his mount.

He used the shield technique to block the Mutated Overlord Snake’s attack before chopping down with the saber in his right hand with Cross Sword’s sword beam to kill it. This was what the Saber Shield Knight had always done.

However, this time, the Mutated Overlord Snake slammed into the shield, tearing it apart. It opened its mouth and bit down on the Saber Shield Knight’s head.

Zhou Wen hurriedly got the Demonized General to charge forward as he struck out with Astral Fist, sending the Mutated Overlord Snake’s body flying out.

The Demonized General and the Saber Shield Knight attacked the Overlord Snake together, but they were still at

a tiny disadvantage. When its tail swept, whatever was in its way, directly shattered.

Could it be that this is the Ever-Victorious skill? Zhou Wen was delighted instead of shocked. The Mutated Overlord Snakes he had encountered in the game weren't that powerful.

"Baby Tiger, attack, bite it." Wang Lu let her Lucky Baby Tiger help.

The abilities of Lucky Baby Tiger were considered inferior amongst the Epic stage, but it was naturally much stronger than the Legendary stage. It was very agile as it dodged the attack from the Overlord Snake. It pounced forward and bit down on the Overlord Snake's neck, splitting it into two pieces.

Zhou Wen allowed his pet to withstand the attacks of the other Overlord Snakes while he took Bamboo Blade and peeled off the Overlord Snake's head. Immediately, he saw two crystals inside.

One crystal was obviously a stats crystal, while the other was a black metal egg. It was none other than the Mutated Overlord Snake egg.

"Mission accomplished. Remember to be my lackey tonight," said Wang Lu with a cheeky smile.

"Alright, I'll definitely be there on time." Zhou Wen put away his Companion Egg and rushed out of Snake Cavern with Wang Lu.

After returning to his dorm, Zhou Wen hurriedly used his cell phone to snap the Mutated Overlord Snake Companion Egg.

Mutated Overlord Snake: Legendary

Life Providence: Born Overlord

Strength: 20

Speed: 19

Constitution: 20

Primordial Energy: 16

Talent Skill: Death Wrap, Devourer, Ever-Victorious.

Companion Form: Spear

Zhou Wen was delighted to see this. Indeed, it was an excellent-grade Mutated Overlord Snake. Not only did it possess the Ever-Victorious skill, but it also had another skill, Devourer. It was much better than the one which dropped for him previously.

Luck is indeed useful. From the looks of it, I have to think of a way to have a Lucky Baby Tiger drop. Zhou Wen already had the urge to head to the Binyang Cave to grind for one.

He now had the two Epic skills—Ghost Steps and Transcendent Flying Immortal. He also had the Overlord Spear with Ever-Victorious. There was likely a chance for him to kill the weakest Epic tiger alone.

However, what was most pressing for Zhou Wen was still the white cocoon protected by the Golden Flying Ant; therefore, he headed to Ant City to try it out first.

After hatching the Mutated Overlord Snake, it didn’t take long for a black metal spear that was about twelve feet long to appear in Zhou Wen’s hand. Its entire body was made of

black metal and the two blades on the spear emitted a cold glow that sent shivers down one’s spine.

Zhou Wen had never practiced with spears before, but he had a Legendary Primordial Energy Skill-Penetrating Pierce. It possessed decent armor-piercing strength which suited Zhou Wen’s current use.

He waved his Overlord Spear a few times to familiarize himself with its weight and center of mass before putting it away and opening the Ant Nest instance dungeon.

After storming all the way to Ant City, Zhou Wen couldn’t be bothered clearing the ordinary flying ants and armored ants. He allowed his pets to battle the ant horde before taking Truth Listener and Ghost Bride to the Golden Flying Ant’s nest at the top.

The Golden Flying Ant lunged forward at an astonishing speed. Zhou Wen used Ghost Bride to lure the Golden Flying Ant, while he used Ghost Steps to instantly charge to the side of the white cocoon.

With the Golden Flying Ant being led to the other side by Ghost Bride and how Zhou Wen’s Ghost Steps were ridiculously fast, making him no way slower than the Golden Flying Ant, it was already too late for it to rush back.

Zhou Wen held the Overlord Spear and used Penetrating Pierce. At the same time, he unleashed all his strength and stabbed the white cocoon.

The spear’s blade chafed against the white cocoon, making metal-grinding sounds. It was harsh to the ears.

Zhou Wen was alarmed. The Overlord Spear’s tip had only stabbed a few inches in, failing to completely penetrate the

cocoon.

The Golden Flying Ant had already flashed over. It released golden beams at the blood-colored avatar furiously.

The silver wings on the back of the blood-colored avatar flapped as Zhou Wen used Ghost Steps again and charged out of the nest. At the same time, he ordered Ghost Bride to attack the white cocoon to attract the Golden Flying Ant's attention.

The Golden Flying Ant was fooled as expected. It stopped chasing after Zhou Wen and charged at Ghost Bride. Golden beams of light shot through Ghost Bride's body, but they didn't injure her.

Zhou Wen couldn't help but sigh. The strength of a dimensional creature isn't absolute. If one's attributes and skills are restrained, even an inferior Companion Beast might not necessarily be useless.

Using Dao Body to keep replenishing his Primordial Energy, Zhou Wen charged into the nest and stabbed the same spot again. However, he failed to completely pierce through the white cocoon and only broke a portion of it.

Zhou Wen's attack was augmented by Ever-Victorious and the armor-piercing strength of Penetrating Pierce, making the destructive power extremely terrifying. Yet, the cocoon remained resilient in a shocking manner.

After exiting the nest once again, Zhou Wen used the same trick to constantly entice the Golden Flying Ant and repeatedly attack the white cocoon. He repeated it dozens of times until Zhou Wen struck the same spot on the white cocoon again and felt the tip of the spear lighten as though he had penetrated half the spear into it.

It penetrated! Zhou Wen was delighted as he hurriedly pulled out his spear.

When Zhou Wen pulled out the Overlord Spear, he saw a beam shoot out from the hole. It was orange-red in color and looked extremely bizarre, but it didn’t seem to have any lethal force. It was like the light of an electric lamp.

Zhou Wen glanced at the white cocoon’s hole and saw that it was entirely orange inside. And the source of the orange-red light was actually a curled creature.

The creature looked a little like a human. Its body was curled up and its hands hugged its legs as it curled into a ball. Its orange long hair covered most of its body.

On his head, there was a pair of strange feelers and on his back, there was a layer of translucent thin wings. The thin wings were very soft and looked like they hadn’t fully matured.

Inside the white cocoon is indeed a dimensional creature, but it doesn’t look anything like an ant. Zhou Wen dodged the Golden Flying Ant’s angry attack as he thought to himself.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 247 - Taboo

Chapter 247 Taboo

Zhou Wen timed his opportunity and once again charged to the side of the white cocoon. He thrust the spear in again, but this time, he stabbed straight at the strange creature inside the cocoon.

Ding!

Zhou Wen heard a crisp sound like the sound of jade colliding. The spear tip failed to stab into the supple-looking skin. Instead, it felt like it had collided with a metal wall.

So hard? Zhou Wen was alarmed as he began to suspect the level of the dimensional creature within the white cocoon.

However, at this point, it was impossible for Zhou Wen to give up. All he could do was try, again and again, hoping to use repeated attacks to tear through the creature’s skin.

Unfortunately, it was clearly futile. The continuous attacks failed to break through the creature’s skin, it was as if it was an indestructible piece of rock.

At this point, how could Zhou Wen be willing to give up? He gritted his teeth and activated the power of Sigh of the King.

The strength, Primordial Energy Skills, Primordial Energy Art of a Life Providence was different. To the typical person, it was a different kind of strength mode. However, to Zhou Wen, be it in-game or in reality, using the Sigh of the King was a very dangerous matter.

Once Life Providence was activated, not only would the blood-colored avatar in the game be affected, he would even be affected by the power of the Sigh of the King in reality.

If it wasn’t used properly, Zhou Wen would end up exploding to his death.

Therefore, Zhou Wen wasn’t willing to use the Sigh of the King if he didn’t have a reason to do so. Even if he could stop in time, he needed to lie in bed for a few days before his body and bones would slowly heal. The pain and itchiness he ended up suffering was unimaginable to others.

Having used the Sigh of the King twice, Zhou Wen already had a taste of the feeling. If it was possible, he was unwilling to attempt it a third time.

But now, he had no choice but to use it again. With Overlord Spear with Ever-Victorious unable to injure the creature within the white cocoon, it was unknown when he would have the ability to kill the creature inside.

A terrifying force instantly descended upon Zhou Wen, causing the blood-colored avatar’s strength to surge.

He didn’t dare to delay at all. With Ghost Steps and Transcendent Flying Immortal, the Overlord Spear in his hand brought with it the terrifying power that tore through space. Instantly, it stabbed into the white cocoon once again.

When the spear beam struck the creature’s skin, it shattered and scattered like glass shards. When the spear tip stabbed into the skin, it finally broke through its fair skin and stabbed a little deeper.

However, it was just a little. It was probably less than a centimeter from the tip of the spear. This left Zhou Wen alarmed.

Although the Sigh of the King’s power had only just been activated, it was enough to kill an existence like the Ghost King back in the Yin Yang world.

And with such strength, coupled with the fact that he had attacked with Overlord Spear’s Ever-Victorious, he had only barely torn open the creature’s flesh. This made Zhou Wen suspect that the dimensional creature in the cocoon might very well be at the true Mythical stage as spoken of in legends.

Although Banana Fairy and Truth Listener were also at the Mythical stage, they were only considered half-Mythicals. They might be able to advance to the Mythical stage in the future, but that was not the case now.

At the instant the tip of the spear stabbed into the flesh, the life form in the cocoon twitched. His head slowly turned, revealing part of his side profile. He looked flawless like a figure that had walked out of a painting. An orange-red eye also revealed itself as it stared at the blood-colored avatar through the hole bored through by the spear.

The eye exuded an indescribable diabolical feeling. Its pupil was like an orange gem, without any impurities. However, with that gaze, even Zhou Wen, who was outside the game, had goosebumps.

Bam!

Almost at the same time, a force blasted out of the cocoon, instantly sending the Overlord Spear and the blood-colored avatar flying.

The blood-colored avatar flew right across Ant City’s sky like a cannonball before slamming into a stone wall.

Although the blood-colored avatar didn’t die immediately, Zhou Wen could sense that all the bones in its body had broken. The pain inundated Zhou Wen’s nerves, but this time, the bones weren’t broken by Sigh of the King, but by the terrifying force.

That must be a Mythical creature! A mere glance without any physical activity was enough to quake the blood-colored avatar that had activated the Sigh of the King to the brink of death. Such power was just too terrifying

Clang!

Nas

The Overlord Spear that had been snapped into several pieces slammed into the stone wall. The outcome of the Overlord Spear was worse than Zhou Wen’s. After it snapped, it immediately vanished and dissipated like ash. It left Zhou Wen heartbroken.

It hadn’t been easy for him to obtain the Overlord Spear with Ever-Victorious, but it was destroyed just like that.

Although this was a game where a Companion Beast could be revived, Zhou Wen’s first reaction when he saw the Overlord Spear destroyed was a heartache.

But as the Overlord Spear disappeared, a drop of sparkling orange blood dripped down from the tip of the spear. It was a gem the size of a grain of rice. It just remained suspended in midair.

‘Discovered Mythical Blood Essence. Absorb it?’

With the notification popping in-game, Zhou Wen didn’t hesitate and hurriedly chose to absorb it.

The blood-colored avatar stretched out its hand with great difficulty. The Sigh of the King had already been deactivated, and the blood-colored avatar’s bones were almost completely fractured. Both his arms and fingers were bent as he stretched out with great difficulty to touch that drop of blood. At the same time, the game screen suddenly turned black.

Zhou Wen immediately had the urge to curse. The blood-colored avatar had failed to hold on and died right at that moment. If the blood was gone from the respawn, Zhou Wen’s efforts and hard work would have all been in vain.

Just as Zhou Wen was about to drip his blood and revive the blood-colored avatar, he suddenly felt a strange power flow out of the mysterious phone, instantly filling his entire body.

Due to the heavy burden of using the Sigh of the King, he had already shown signs of internal bleeding in several spots. Under the nourishment of the strange energy, he gradually snapped to his senses and recovered at an extremely fast speed.

In just a few seconds, Zhou Wen’s damaged body returned to normal. As for the strange power, it remained fused into his body, giving him an indescribable sense of comfort. He felt as though all his cells had been revived, as though he had been given a new lease of life.

After a long while, this feeling gradually disappeared.

After everything returned to normal, Zhou Wen hurriedly dripped a drop of blood onto the mysterious phone, allowing

the blood-colored avatar to revive as he carefully read the blood-colored avatar’s information.

With this look, Zhou Wen immediately realized that his Primordial Energy stat had reached 21 points.

Just like before, there was an additional word behind his Primordial Energy value.

Taboo. Zhou Wen looked at the word, but he didn’t understand what it meant. He thought to himself, Strength has the postfix of Sun because it absorbed the God Power Crystal of the Sun God. Speed has Trajectory as its postfix because it absorbed the God Power Crystal of the God of Trajectory. Could it be that there’s also a god in the cocoon? Is his name the God of Taboos?

Zhou Wen could only make this guess, but he was unable to confirm it.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 248 - The Hope of Advancing to Epic

Chapter 248 The Hope of Advancing to Epic

The blood he obtained from the cocoon allowed Zhou Wen to see the hope of advancing to the Epic stage, he was just short of his Constitution reaching 21 points.

Now, Zhou Wen was aware of two locations where white cocoons could be found. One of them was at the nest of the chick's mother. Zhou Wen didn't dare go there. Even Ah Sheng didn't dare put up any resistance. Even if he were to activate Sigh of the King, he would probably only be courting death.

Besides, now that the chick was with Zhou Wen and had helped him before, Zhou Wen couldn't bring himself to touch the white cocoon that the giant bird was protecting.

Then the only one left is the white cocoon that's protected by the wyrm under the Old Dragon Cave. Zhou Wen felt a headache coming on when he thought of the wyrm.

The wyrm was obviously much more powerful than the Golden Flying Ant. Perhaps the wyrm itself was a Mythical creature to begin with. If he wanted to tear through the cocoon and obtain the blood of the living creature within, he might as well have a fight with the wyrm and die a faster death.

Although he knew that there was no chance, Zhou Wen was bent on trying. As expected, before he even reached the

stone pillar, the wyrm was jolted awake as it opened its mouth and roared, instantly killing the blood-colored avatar.

Even Ghost Bride’s soul body wasn’t spared. Her soul was shattered by the dragon’s roar.

How can this be obtained? It’s impossible. Unless my body can withstand the power of the Sigh of the King and allow its full powers to manifest, only then might there still be a sliver of a chance. Zhou Wen put down his phone, having no intention of trying it a second time. It was useless even if he tried. They were not at the same level. In front of absolute strength, everything was in vain.

“Zhou Wen, where are you? I’ve been waiting for you all day.” Wang Lu called, her voice sounding rather angry.

“Sorry, I’ll be there soon.” Only then did Zhou Wen recall that he still needed to be Wang Lu’s lackey that evening. He hurriedly washed his face and left the building.

“What’s wrong with you? You’re a man, and you’re late. You are in no way a gentleman,” Wang Lu said angrily.

“I’m sorry. My bad.” Zhou Wen felt that there was no way of explaining himself because he had indeed done something wrong. All he could do was lower his head and admit his mistake.

“Since it’s your fault, you have to accept punishment. Do you have any objections?” Wang Lu said.

“No.” Zhou Wen shook his head.

“That’s what you said. You are not to go back on your word.” Wang Lu narrowed her eyes.

“Apart from committing murder, arson, and immoral acts, you can punish me for anything.” Zhou Wen could only accept it.

“It’s not that serious. Follow me.” Wang Lu beamed even more, happy as she led Zhou Wen out of the school.

Zhou Wen originally believed that randomly leaving Sunset College was a privilege of people like An Sheng. Even Li Xuan couldn’t casually leave the school, but Wang Lu had easily led Zhou Wen out.

It’s still good to be privileged. Zhou Wen sighed inwardly.

There was already a car waiting outside the school. Wang Lu led Zhou Wen to the car and they headed for the biggest commercial street in Luoyang. Qin Xiyuan’s Xiyuan Crystal Shop was also on the street.

Wang Lu did not go to the crystal shop. She went to a store selling all kinds of cosmetics and clothes.

Zhou Wen couldn’t understand why Wang Lu was buying these things.

Sunset College was a partially militaristic school. Back on campus, students were only allowed to wear uniforms. The school uniforms were basically simple military uniforms.

Moreover, the college didn’t allow students to put on makeup. It was alright to secretly put on some light makeup, but if it was a little more obvious, the student council would find out and carry out disciplinary action.

Although Wang Lu was one of the elites of the college, Zhou Wen hadn’t seen her wear make-up when he saw her in

school. He really didn’t know what those things were bought for.

However, Wang Lu was very happy as she flitted through the various shops. Soon, Zhou Wen became a humanoid rack with various bags hanging over his body. They were all things Wang Lu had bought.

“Does it look good?” Wang Lu walked out of the fitting room and walked around Zhou Wen in a lovely dress. She posed in a beautiful way as she asked Zhou Wen.

“Such clothes aren’t suitable for practice or battle, right?” Zhou Wen said as he looked at the various cloth decorations hanging from the clothes.

Wang Lu glared at Zhou Wen fiercely. “I’m happy and it’s all out of my own free will. This, this, and this. Give me one of the same

color.”

Hence, Zhou Wen had a lot more bags on him. Although with his physique, it wasn’t a problem for him to carry more, he just couldn’t understand the point of buying them. The clothes looked identical, just in different colors.

After shopping for nearly four hours, and having two sumptuous meals in the middle, Wang Lu was finally satisfied. She went back to school with bags of all shapes and sizes.

Zhou Wen took the items into Wang Lu’s building and was about to leave when Wang Lu stopped him.

“Are you leaving just like that?” Wang Lu asked Zhou Wen.

“Didn’t I already fulfill my promise?” Zhou Wen looked at Wang Lu in puzzlement.

“The promise is fulfilled, but the punishment for being late hasn’t been done yet. Don’t tell me you want to go back on your word?” Wang Lu’s eyes were filled with doubt about Zhou Wen’s character.

“Of course not. Tell me how you would like to punish me,” Zhou Wen said as he spread out his hands.

“Actually, it’s very simple. I only bought the cosmetics looking at the color palette. I can’t see the real effects. Help me try them,” Wang Lu said with a cheeky smile as she took out a lipstick.

“You… want me to try this?” Zhou Wen immediately widened his eyes.

“You want to go back on your word?” Wang Lu’s questioning eyes became more obvious.

“No.” Zhou Wen gritted his teeth as the word seemed to be squeezed out through his teeth.

“That’s good. Sit tight. Don’t move.” Wang Lu was immediately delighted as she took out all the new cosmetics she had bought and swept them across Zhou Wen’s face.

Zhou Wen sat there motionless, feeling as though he was sitting on pins and needles.

Always angering me? Today, I’ll let you know what happens when you anger me. A devilish tail seemed to grow behind Wang Lu.

When it was almost midnight, An Jing returned from the device room. When she passed by Zhou Wen’s building, she subconsciously took a glance and saw that it wasn’t lit.

Just as she was about to return to her own building, she heard the door open to the building beside hers. A figure walked out.

An Jing originally thought nothing of it, imagining it was Wang Lu, but to her surprise, the figure walked to Zhou Wen’s building and entered the yard’s door.

Zhou Wen? An Jing couldn’t help but be taken aback when she saw that it was Zhou Wen.

Zhou Wen also saw An Jing, but his relationship with her was never that great. He nodded slightly as a form of greeting before opening the door and entering his building

Just a few results to show for and he’s already so brazen. Not only does he game every day, but he’s also fooling around in the dorm of a girl in the middle of the night. I really wonder what Grandpa and Mom see in him. An Jing felt extremely unhappy as her good mood instantly vanished.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 249 - Assembly

Chapter 249 Assembly

After returning to his dorm, Zhou Wen entered Dragon Gate Grotto’s instance dungeon and prepared to grind for the lucky tiger.

Wang Lu had allowed Zhou Wen to realize the magic of the Luck stat. Therefore, he wished to grind for a Lucky Baby Tiger to increase his Luck stat. It would be easier to take the Lucky Baby Tiger along with him if he wanted any Companion Egg to drop in the future.

The only problem now was that Zhou Wen needed to hatch an Epic Companion Egg at the Legendary stage. It would be somewhat difficult.

Zhou Wen didn’t know how Wang Lu had managed it. He planned on trying to use the Dao Body’s rapid recovery of Primordial Energy. The tiger was relatively weak to begin with, so the amount of Primordial Energy he needed probably would be reduced. Perhaps, he could give it a try

In reality, the tiger was in high demand, but there was no one in-game to vie for it besides Zhou Wen. After Zhou Wen arrived at Binyang Cave, he quickly found the tiger.

Without another word, he summoned his Overlord Spear and circled to the back of the tiger with Ghost Steps and stabbed it in the rectum.

The tiger’s reaction wasn’t slow. With a flying pounce, it dodged the fate of having its rectum torn through. In return,

its tail lashed out like a steel whip.

Zhou Wen had already studied it thoroughly. As he dodged sideways, he thrust out again, stabbing the tiger's thin waist.

The Overlord Spear finally stabbed into the tiger's waist. With Ever-Victorious showing its effect, the tiger let out a tragic cry when the spear stabbed through its skin. A blood hole opened up and its pelvis was damaged. With its movements greatly restricted, Zhou Wen quickly finished it off.

This was the first time he had killed an Epic creature alone in-game. Although it was the weakest Epic, it gave Zhou Wen a sense of accomplishment. However, it was very unlikely that the tiger would drop a Companion Egg

Zhou Wen didn't expect to have the Lucky Baby Tiger drop on his first try, he could only try in passing. It wasn't something he could keep respawning.

This was because there was only one tiger in-game every time, just like reality. After Zhou Wen killed it, he had to drip his blood to respawn, allowing the game's instance dungeon to be refreshed before he could kill the tiger again. It would be such a waste.

Zhou Wen would kill the baby tiger every time he dripped his blood for respawning. Then, he would go elsewhere to grind for Companion Eggs or explore new instance dungeons. He waited until he died before respawning to have a chance of killing the baby tiger again.

I wonder if there are any other Companion Beasts that can add to my Luck stat? When Zhou Wen was free, he went online to search for more information. He discovered that

Luck stat was indeed rare. Although other Companion Beasts had similar effects, just like Little Tiger, they were targets that were vied for by many. It was difficult to obtain them.

Besides the baby tiger, the other known Companion Beasts with a Luck stat were extremely powerful Epic creatures. Their combat strength was many times stronger than the Lucky Baby Tiger’s.

While checking on the information, Zhou Wen also saw another Companion Beast with the opposite Luck stat. It was born with bad luck or, in other words, filled with misfortune.

One of the most famous ones in the East district was Tai Sui. If one had this Companion Beast, not only would it be the case of not having any luck with drops, but even buying a packet of instant noodles would come without any seasoning packets. Entering a dimensional zone would definitely result in trouble. It was an essential pet if one wanted to have a death wish.

The last Epic expert who had obtained Tai Sui originally believed that he had obtained a powerful Companion Beast. He had even shared the information he gained on his WeChat Moments to flaunt it, but he ended up dying in a dimensional zone the next day.

Who the hell would hatch such a Companion Beast? Zhou Wen carefully read the description of Tai Sui and remembered its appearance. It would be truly troublesome if he were to accidentally hatch it in the future.

Just as they were about to continue grinding instance dungeons, the school sent a notice to all the students, requesting that they gather at the field. It was unknown what had happened.

When he arrived at the field, he saw Wang Fei and his classmates already lined up. Li Xuan was waving at him.

Zhou Wen hurriedly walked over and stood behind Li Xuan as he asked, “Li Xuan, what happened at the school? Why are all the students suddenly gathered?”

Such situations were rare in Sunset College. It focused more on pragmatic education, so it was rare for it to organize any student assemblies.

“I have no idea. I was sleeping soundly when I was awoken by a message. I don’t know what happened either,” Li Xuan said as he spread out his hands.

Soon, all the teachers and students gathered. Zhou Wen found it odd that there were even rows of soldiers on the field.

Although there were troops stationed on campus, they only guarded the school’s entrance or special places like the dimensional zones’ entrances. They rarely interacted with students.

Yet, the soldiers were participating in the student assembly held by the college. Moreover, the soldiers’ uniforms seemed different from those of the ordinary soldiers. It seemed like they were not the usual soldiers in the college.

After the managing vice-chancellor went on stage to say a few words, Zhou Wen and the rest of the students realized that the student assembly was to commend the students who had contributed when the Sky Spider wreaked havoc.

Zhou Wen didn’t pay much attention to this because he, Hui Haifeng, and Zhong Ziya hadn’t reported their names. The

school didn’t include them, so even the rewards had nothing to do with them.

It wasn’t that Zhou Wen and company weren’t willing to accept the rewards, but that they originally believed that the credits given weren’t much. The trio weren’t people who lacked credits, so they were too lazy to report it. When the time came, the military would have to verify it and it would be extremely troublesome.

Since Zhong Ziya and Hui Haifeng found it troublesome, and Zhou Wen didn’t have any strong desire for credits, the three of them hadn’t bothered reporting.

If he had known that there would be actual material rewards, Zhou Wen would have reported his name no matter what. But now, it was too late for regrets.

As Zhou Wen was thinking about this, he saw a few military officers arrive in the field. They were being escorted by soldiers. The managing vice-chancellor and the school’s upper management hurriedly stood up to welcome them, inviting the leading officer to the main seat.

“Wow, it’s Overseer An. He’s so handsome!”

“I’ve been in school for three years, but this is the first time I’ve seen the Overseer in person. He’s even more valiant and imposing than the legends.”

“It’s nothing to get excited about. We Luoyang locals often get to see him.”

Instantly, there was a commotion among the students. An Tianzuo was like a god of war in Luoyang. Many of the students believed that he was a target and an idol to aim for in cultivation.

In fact, a large part of the reason many outstanding students chose Sunset College was because it was the An family’s school and An Tianzuo had also graduated here

Zhou Wen didn’t feel anything special when he saw An Tianzuo. He treated him like a passerby.

An Tianzuo had acute senses. Even among the thousands of students, he immediately sensed Zhou Wen’s spot. However, he didn’t even look at him, as though Zhou Wen didn’t exist in his books.

An Sheng nodded at Zhou Wen with a smile, but the smile seemed to carry a deeper meaning.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 250 - We Are Honored By Them

Chapter 250 We Are Honored By Them

The process of the assembly was very simple. There weren’t many bigwigs speaking. Only An Tianzuo spoke a few words. Although he didn’t say a lot, his oomph left many students boiling with excitement. They wished they could join the army and fight to protect their homeland.

Many girls even had the urge to follow An Tianzuo to battle on the battlefield, even if they died for him.

Even Zhou Wen had to admit that An Tianzuo was the kind of person who was born with the charisma of a leader. If someone else were to say the same words, it would only appear awkward and pretentious.

However, An Tianzuo’s delivery was infectious. He had a convincing charm, but Zhou Wen found it odd regardless.

Following that, it was the award ceremony for the students who had helped the army. All of them were named and invited on stage to receive their awards and military honors. Zhou Wen listened for quite a while but didn’t hear his name. It wasn’t unexpected.

An Tianzuo was in a rather good mood today. Although he had had many troubles to deal with recently, he was in a better mood after seeing so many outstanding students at Sunset College. These people would imbue the army with fresh blood in the future.

An Tianzuo was waiting for the three most outstanding students' turn and was prepared to personally decorate them with the medals.

"Overseer, the rewards for the other students have been distributed. Only the three students with outstanding contributions are left. Do you want to personally announce them?" An Sheng came to An Tianzuo's side and handed a script to him.

"Alright." An Tianzuo received the script and stood up from his chair before walking to the stage.

This was a very good opportunity to promote the military. An Tianzuo hoped that more students would be inclined to join the military in the future. This was one of the reasons why he had personally come to hand out the awards.

"I'm very relieved that there are so many outstanding students in my alma mater. While the students from other colleges are still studying hard, you have already grown to become a cornerstone of the League. On the battlefield, you poured your blood, using your bodies to create a steel wall for our siblings, parents, and elders. You have not let down the name of Sunset College." An Tianzuo read the script written by An Sheng and found it somewhat odd. It didn't seem to be his normal style.

This fellow has been lazing off again. He must have gotten a subordinate to pen it. With this thought in mind, An Tianzuo took a glance at the script before continuing.

He had a photographic memory. Just one glance was enough for him to memorize the entire contents of the piece of paper in his head. There was no need for him to continue reading from the script.

“Among excellent students like you, three of you have made me proud. They aren’t afraid of death, nor are they afraid of danger. They went deep into the spiders’ nest and destroyed the source of the disaster, saving the lives of countless citizens. They used actions to prove their excellence and, as a man, I’m glad that Sunset College has such students. I’m also proud that there are such men among humanity. Seeing them makes me see the League’s future. It’s a bright and glorious future…” An Tianzuo was almost done reading the contents of the first page, so he flipped to the second page and took another look.

The content on the second page was very simple. There were only three names.

An Tianzuo continued, “Let me invite these three outstanding students up on stage. I want to personally decorate them with a medal. Everyone, please remember their names. All of us should be proud of them. These three students are: Hui Haifeng… Zhong Ziya… Zhou… Wen…”

When he said the last name, An Tianzuo’s eyes glared at An Sheng as if he was shooting daggers at him with an extremely fierce killing intent.

If looks could kill, An Sheng would have been torn apart.

However, An Sheng lowered his head as if he had not seen anything as he concentrated on taking notes.

When Zhou Wen heard his name, he was slightly taken aback before his expression turned extremely odd. The words that had just been said left him feeling a little odd. Furthermore, it came from An Tianzuo’s mouth, making him find it even stranger.

An Jing was stunned when she heard Zhou Wen's name. She couldn't believe that An Tianzuo would use such words to describe Zhou Wen, much less believe that he was one of the three.

"Was the person that the Overseer mentioned really Zhou Wen? Could it be someone sharing the same name?" It wasn't only An Jing who didn't believe it, even Wang Fei found it unbelievable. She had no way of connecting the selfish and indifferent Zhou Wen, who was engrossed in games, with the outstanding student An Tianzuo mentioned.

However, Wang Fei soon realized that the school only had one student named Zhou Wen, so it was impossible for it to be someone else who shared the same name.

"Why are you still standing there in a daze? Hurry up and go onstage to accept the medal. This is a medal, not something meaningless like a commendation certificate. Furthermore, it's personally given out by Overseer An. I'm so envious. If I were to obtain such an honor, I could brag about it for three years…" Li Xuan said as he nudged the dazed Zhou Wen.

Zhou Wen hesitated for a moment. He didn't wish to have any interaction with An Tianzuo. Furthermore, with their past, it made him feel uncomfortable standing in front of An Tianzuo and letting him decorate him with a medal.

"What are you waiting for?" Wang Fei came over and gave Zhou Wen a nudge.

She felt gratified that she had taken Zhou Wen to Wang Mingyuan. Not long after, Zhou Wen had become so responsible and reliable.

Although she found it a little unreal, this was her initial wish for Zhou Wen-to go onstage to receive a medal. It was also a

form of affirmation of her educational methods. It left her feeling honored.

Seeing that Hui Haifeng and Zhong Ziya were already onstage and how everyone was looking at him, Zhou Wen had no choice but to walk up to the podium.

An Sheng walked over with a tray in hand. An Tianzuo expressionlessly helped Hui Haifeng and Zhong Ziya wear the medals before rewarding each of them with a Companion Egg

When it was Zhou Wen’s turn, An Tianzuo walked over with a deadpan expression. His eyes met Zhou Wen’s for a second before they repelled like magnets of the same polarity. Their eyes subconsciously darted to the side.

An Tianzuo instantly returned to normal as he expressionlessly put on Zhou Wen’s medal. However, his actions were clearly much faster than when he decorated Hui Haifeng and Zhong Ziya.

“Let us applaud Hui Haifeng, Zhong Ziya, and Zhou Wen for their sheer fervor, bravery, and responsibility,” An Sheng said.

The applause below the stage boomed like thunder. Zhou Wen and An Tianzuo felt uncomfortable standing together, and their expressions were extremely stiff.

An Sheng took a photo of the two of them and recorded this moment.

After Zhou Wen left the venue, he immediately took off the medal and threw it into the chaos space. Then, he felt discomfort in his chest as he patted it, as though he was swatting away something.

An Tianzuo got into the car and took off his white gloves, throwing them at An Sheng. With a cold expression, he said, “Drive.”

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 251 - All Three Skills

Chapter 251 All Three Skills

Zhou Wen waited for An Sheng’s notice as he made preparations for heading to Zhuolu.

Although Zhou Wen didn’t plan on truly entering the dimensional zone and only wanted to search for the tiny palm symbol, there was nowhere that was safe and peaceful now. Even Luoyang City had been attacked by a break-out creature. No one knew what would happen in uninhabited places.

The Gold-Armored Beast that Ouyang Lan had given him had been hatched. The Three-Eyed Golden Warrior was also on him at all times. Once he left Luoyang, Zhou Wen planned on transforming the two Companion Beasts into their companion forms and wearing them—Golden Silk Soft Armor within and the full-body armor on the outside as double protection.

The Companion Beast reward at the assembly was a Legendary Bronze Figurine. It was a Legendary-grade Companion Beast without a companion form, but its combat strength was one of the best among Legendaries. It had a Life Providence of Undying Soldier, which greatly enhanced the Bronze Figurine’s survivability. It was very suitable for being a scout and vanguard.

This was what Zhou Wen deserved. He wouldn’t reject it just because of his relationship with An Tianzuo, so he also hatched it.

However, all of these were just support. The Companion Beasts that Zhou Wen could truly rely on were Truth Listener and Banana Fairy. There was naturally no need to elaborate on Truth Listener's support abilities. It supported him in all kinds of situations.

Banana Fairy was currently undergoing evolution. If it succeeded in evolving to the Epic stage, it would definitely be a tremendous boon for Zhou Wen.

The effects of Ghost Bride couldn't be neglected. Instead, the Silver-Winged Flying Ant and Mutated Lotus Flower Ant that Zhou Wen had used often in the past, now appeared somewhat useless.

The Silver-Winged Flying Ant's flight ability was dispensable to the present Zhou Wen. The Mutated Lotus Flower Ant's combat strength was only considered average.

Zhou Wen wished to fuse the two together, but despite both being ants, their compatibility was astonishingly low, making it impossible for a fusion to succeed.

After sorting out his pets, he did another careful look. He was surprised to find that the Sky Spider youngling he had obtained recently was surprisingly compatible with the Silver-Winged Flying Ant. It had a compatibility of more than 80%.

Without any hesitation, Zhou Wen chose to fuse the two together.

The fusion compatibility of that number didn't disappoint him. The fusion was successful and, because both of them had been hatched, there was no distinction between main and supplement. The outcome of the fusion left Zhou Wen slightly stunned though.

After the fusion, the Companion Beast looked like it was mainly a Sky Spider. It still maintained the snow-white spider body, but it had four silver wings on its back. At the end of its tail, there was a stinger like a bee’s. It looked beautiful, and its silver-colored appearance made it look like a silvery-white plush toy.

Silver-Winged Sky Spider Youngling: Legendary (Youngling)

Life Providence: King of the Sky

Strength: 19

Speed: 20

Constitution: 19

Primordial Energy: 20

Talent Skill: Silver Wing Flash, Magical Needle, Sky Spider Silk, Sky Spider Sanguine Venom.

Companion Form: Sky Spider Silver-Silk Glove

Zhou Wen was slightly surprised. This fusion could be said to have been unprecedentedly successful. Not only had its stats increased, but it had also inherited all of the talent skills of the Silver-Winged Flying Ant and Sky Spider youngling. Furthermore, its Life Providence had also changed.

Previously, the Sky Spider Child was the Son of the Sky, while the Silver-Winged Flying Ant was a King of Low Altitudes. Now that the two had fused, it became the King of the Sky. Zhou Wen took a look and realized that the Life Providence had increased its flying abilities. It wasn’t like it had been in the past where it could only fly at low altitudes.

What was even more valuable was that the Silver-Winged Sky Spider was still a youngling. There was still room for future growth, so it would definitely be able to advance to the Epic stage in the future. However, it was unknown how long it had to be fed before it could advance to the Epic stage.

Summoning the Silver-Winged Sky Spider in its companion form, a translucent silver-silked glove immediately appeared on Zhou Wen's left hand. The glove clung tightly to his skin as though it was weightless. It was difficult to sense its existence as though it was a layer of skin.

Zhou Wen tested the glove's ability and found that it was rather interesting. Apart from its excellent defensive powers, the Sky Spider Silver-Silk Glove also possessed a type of stickiness. As long as Zhou Wen was willing, the Sky Spider Silver-Silk Glove could stick to anything. Furthermore, if Zhou Wen didn't deliberately separate, it would be difficult to pull him away from the adhered surface.

It's an interesting companion form gear. If I use it well, it might be of great use in the future. Zhou Wen retracted the Sky Spider glove.

After organizing his gear, Zhou Wen refreshed the instance dungeon once again. To his pleasant surprise, he finally gathered the three Mutated Demonized Generals' abilities and had Astral Fist, which he had always wanted, drop.

He directly learned Astral Fist and focused all three Demonized Generals' skills on him, but Zhou Wen didn't feel any qualitative changes in his strength. The might of the three Demonized General techniques was no different from the typical Demonized General.

From the looks of it, what the Wu siblings said was a lie. Nothing impressive happens when all three Demonized General skills are gathered. How is it possible to catch the arrow shot out from Tiger Cage Pass? Although he had already obtained confirmation by using his Mutated Demonized General, he was still somewhat disappointed.

However, with this in mind, Zhou Wen suddenly had a thought. Would there be any changes if I were to use three Demonic General techniques at the same time?

But I only have two hands. I can use the Astral Slash Blade with one hand and the other with the Astral Suction Palm. What other free hand do I have to use Astral Fist? Zhou Wen carefully sensed the information regarding Astral Fist, only to have his expression turn odd.

Although the Astral Fist was called a fist, it was a Primordial Energy Skill that condensed all of one’s strength. When using the Astral Fist, one’s body would produce an effect similar to a Dominance Body. It wasn’t really necessary to deliver an actual punch.

In that case, I can try using all three skills at once. Zhou Wen tried once in the game and used the three demonized skills at the same time, but he encountered difficulties again.

The three demonized skills were all unranked Primordial Energy Skills. When used, the amount of Primordial Energy allocated determined their might. Basically, Zhou Wen had to use all his Primordial Energy at once to produce the greatest strength of Astral Slash Blade.

Now that the three skills were used together, it was impossible for him to use his Primordial Energy in such a manner. All he could do was distribute his Primordial Energy equally among the three Primordial Energy Skills.

When Zhou Wen’s three Primordial Energy Skills were activated, his body experienced a strange change.

The three Primordial Energy Skills resonated with one another, attracting and repelling each other. They formed a very subtle balance that caused the blood-colored avatar’s body to emit a strange sanguine glow. It was as though it was enveloped by a sanguine light.

If one looked closely, they would discover that the sanguine light was rapidly revolving around the blood-colored avatar’s body. Zhou Wen had no idea how to use this force, so all he could do was attempt to strike forward.

Immediately, a blood-colored wheel of light flew out of his body, striking the battlefield in front of him. It immediately minced an ancient war chariot into pieces.

That’s right, it wasn’t cleaving, but mincing. It was as though the chariot had been stuffed into a meat grinder and had instantly been minced into pieces.

What terrifying strength! Zhou Wen couldn’t help but be alarmed as he looked at his palm.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 252 - Demonic Astral Wheel

Chapter 252 Demonic Astral Wheel

‘Acquired Comb Skill: Demonic Astral Wheel’

A notification appeared on his cell phone screen. Then, Zhou Wen saw that in the blood-colored avatar’s skill column, there was indeed an additional Demonic Astral Wheel. And the three Demonized General techniques from before had vanished.

Soon, Zhou Wen came to a realization that the Demonic Astral Wheel combined the effects of all three Demonized General skills. It combined offense and defense into one system, making it far more powerful than any of the original skills individually.

Why am I able to acquire the Demonic Astral Wheel while the Mutated Demonized General who has all three skills is not able to obtain the Demonic Astral Wheel? Do I need him to use all three skills simultaneously to acquire it? Zhou Wen summoned the Mutated Demonized General and attempted to command it to use all three skills simultaneously.

However, the Mutated Demonized General’s control over Primordial Energy was clearly not as strong as Zhou Wen’s. It was very difficult to achieve that intricate balance of using the three Primordial Energy Skills at the same time.

From the looks of it, it’s not an easy task to make the Demonized General acquire the Demonic Astral Wheel. Zhou Wen gave up temporarily and left for a future endeavor.

Now, all Zhou Wen wanted to do was give it a try to see if the Demonic Astral Wheel could catch the arrow shot from Tiger Cage Pass.

In fact, even if Zhou Wen didn’t use the Demonic Astral Wheel, he could still dodge the arrow by relying on Ghost Steps. He just hadn’t attempted to rush into Tiger Cage Pass.

The blood-colored avatar came in front of Tiger Cage Pass and directly stepped over the threshold. Indeed, just like before, an arrow tore through the air and instantly traversed the battlefield, shooting right at the blood-colored avatar.

Zhou Wen didn’t make the blood-colored avatar retreat. Instead, he used the Demonic Astral Wheel. The spinning wheel like sanguine light slammed into the arrow’s tip.

Zhou Wen immediately saw a strange scene. The revolving Demonic Astral Wheel spun together with the arrow. However, the direction of their spin was different.

The Demonic Astral Wheel spun forward like a car wheel, while the arrow spun like an electric drill. The moment the two collided, the arrow changed direction and landed on the ground in front of the blood-colored avatar. Furthermore, the strength left in the Demonic Astral Wheel wasn’t significantly expended.

Zhou Wen immediately understood why the Wu siblings said that the fusion of the three skills allowed one to counter the arrow. The arrow’s power mode was very similar to the fusion of the three skills. When both powers were simultaneously in effect, the arrow would automatically deviate from its trajectory; thus, not causing any damage to Zhou Wen.

Zhou Wen’s heart stirred. He no longer produced Demonic Astral Wheel, but instead allowed it to continue spinning like

a shield as he walked towards Tiger Cage Pass.

Another arrow shot out from Tiger Cage Pass. However, the moment the arrow touched the Demonic Astral Wheel, it was automatically diverted to the ground, blasting a huge crater into the ground.

Zhou Wen was delighted. With the Demonic Astral Wheel's protection, he quickly charged into Tiger Cage Pass.

Boom!

Tens of thousands of arrows shot out from Tiger Cage Pass and rained down like a heavy storm.

However, the arrows that landed on Zhou Wen's body deviated from their trajectories due to the Demonic Astral Wheel. They shot into Zhou Wen's side without even damaging his clothes.

Just as Zhou Wen was feeling smug, he saw the Demonic Astral Wheel suddenly vanish. In the next second, the blood-colored avatar was pierced by thousands of arrows and shot to death on the spot. The phone's screen turned black.

I forgot that this Demonic Astral Wheel expends plenty of Primordial Energy. Even with Dao Body activated, there's no way for me to sustain it for long. Zhou Wen wasn't discouraged. The Demonic Astral Wheel was already strong enough and what he lacked was only Primordial Energy. In the future, when he advanced to the Epic stage, his Primordial Energy would increase and the Demonic Astral Wheel would only grow stronger.

However, storming past Tiger Cage Pass sure is a little troublesome. I wonder what kind of figures are inside. The legendary Tiger Cage Pass in Romance of the Three

Kingdoms does have a very famous general. Could the person shooting arrows at the city gate be him? Zhou Wen thought to himself.

He really wanted to see who the person inside Tiger Cage Pass was. Zhou Wen dripped his blood to respawn and entered the game once again. However, he first went to Binyang Cave to kill the tiger before heading to other spots to grind. Only after all of that was done, did he come to Tiger Cage Pass.

He switched his Primordial Energy Art to Dao Body, the Primordial Energy Art that Zhou Wen used the most frequently. Quickly recovering his Primordial Energy was just so useful. Zhou Wen only found it regretful that it wasn’t fast enough; otherwise, he could use all sorts of Primordial Energy Skills indefinitely.

If I were to advance to the Epic stage, I wonder if Dao Body would be able to produce a Life Soul. If Dao Body also had a Life Soul, I might really be able to recover Primordial Energy without end. Zhou Wen was only secretly fantasizing.

The Three-Eyed Golden Warrior transformed into Golden Silk Soft Armor while the Gold-Armored Beast transformed into armor that covered the former. Then, Zhou Wen sent the blood-colored avatar rushing towards Tiger Cage Pass.

As the arrow flew like the wind, the blood-colored avatar directly activated the Demonic Astral Wheel and fended off the arrow. The Demonic Astral Wheel was only activated in momentary bursts, to conserve Primordial Energy to its fullest extent.

Just like before, after the blood-colored avatar closed in, the rain of arrows once again launched a dense attack.

However, these arrows were not as terrifying as the previous arrows. Most of the arrows' strength was only at the ordinary Legendary stage. Only one of the arrows could instantly kill a Legendary.

However, with so many Legendary arrows, it was impossible for ordinary Legendary creatures to withstand them. Zhou Wen didn't wish to use his body to experiment. At the instant the arrows rained down, the blood-colored avatar's figure vanished. When it appeared again, it had already left the volley of arrows behind as it continued heading for Tiger Cage Pass.

As he approached the city walls of Tiger Cage Pass, Zhou Wen could roughly see that there were many guards on it.

Unlike the bedraggled soldiers before reaching the threshold of Tiger Cage Pass, these soldiers were all dressed in bright armor and looked majestic. They looked extraordinary at a glance.

On the steps of the city gate was a powerful and domineering general dressed in black armor. There was wine on the table in front of him, and beside him was a halberd. He was also holding a longbow in his hands, and the person who shot the arrows was undoubtedly him.

Seeing that Zhou Wen had already rushed to the gates of Tiger Cage Pass and was about to leap up to the city gates, the black-armored general threw the wine glass in his hand and suddenly rose up. He grabbed the nearby halberd and thrust it at the blood-colored avatar that came whooshing through the sky.

The black-armored general's aura seemed to transform into a black ferocious beast's shadow. The shadow was like a

tiger or lion, but it had three heads, like a three-headed hell hound.

In the next second, terrifying power erupted from the halberd. It shattered the Demonic Astral Wheel and two layers of armor on the blood-colored avatar and killed it on the spot as it exploded into a bloody mist.

Epic stage! Zhou Wen wasn’t surprised. He didn’t choose to dodge with Ghost Steps, but instead forcefully received the strike. He wanted to know how powerful the black-armored general was, and as expected, it was a top-ranked Epic creature who wasn’t any weaker than the Golden Flying Ant. He might even be stronger.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 253 - Introspection Silence

Chapter 253 Introspection Silence

“Overseer, the people you invited have arrived. Would you like them to immediately head to Zhuolu County?” An Sheng came to An Tianzuo’s office and asked.

“Let them rest at the villa first. After I’m done with my work, I’ll head to Zhuolu with them,” said An Tianzuo.

“Overseer, are you really heading to Zhuolu personally?” An Sheng asked.

“My mom is there. If I don’t go, how can I feel at ease?” An Tianzuo said.

“Overseer, please consider it carefully. Even if you were to go, Madam won’t change her mind because of your request. When that happens, it will be hard to deal with the situation on both ends. Neither will Madam be invited back, nor will Chess Mountain have you around. There will be no way to resolve problems that happen. When the time comes, the An family’s business and the Luoyang City that you swore to protect will be destroyed. If that happens, Miss Luo won’t be happy if she learns of it,” An Sheng said.

Upon hearing the words “Miss Luo,” An Tianzuo’s eyes revealed a strange look. However, he said coldly, “Don’t mention it to Little Luo. It won’t work this time. Filial piety is most important of all the virtues. My mom is in such a dangerous place with her life possibly at risk at any moment; how can I sit at home?”

“Then let me ask you. Will Madam return if you go?” An Sheng asked.

“No, but I can accompany her to the ancient battlefield,” said An Tianzuo.

“You can indeed do that, but what about Luoyang? It can’t run without someone watching it for even a single day. This place needs you. Besides, even if you accompany Madam to the ancient battlefield, won’t she still be in danger? You can’t guarantee that she will be safe and sound,” An Sheng said.

“If I don’t go, she will be in even greater danger.” An Tianzuo was adamant.

“The safest way is to persuade Madam back. Actually, there’s a way to get her back,” An Sheng said with narrowed eyes.

“And what do you plan on doing? How are you going to persuade her?” An Tianzuo curled his lips. He knew Ouyang Lan’s character very well. Since she had decided to go, no one could persuade her to return.

“I’m definitely not capable of doing so, but there’s someone who can,” An Sheng said.

“Who? Uncle Feng? I’m afraid he can’t do it either. If he could, my mother wouldn’t have gone to Zhuolu.” An Tianzuo shook his head slightly. Ouyang Lan wouldn’t give up on her thoughts and principles for Zhou Lingfeng.

The reason she chose Zhou Lingfeng was partly because he was a man who knew how to respect her.

“Uncle Feng naturally can’t, but there’s someone who can,” An Sheng said confidently.

“Who else?” An Tianzuo frowned slightly, but he couldn’t figure out who An Sheng was referring to.

“Overseer, how could you forget that there’s still Zhou Wen? Madam wanted Zhou Wen to take the risk in the Holy Land in An Jing’s stead. Although Zhou Wen returned safely and even benefited from it, he has offended the six families because of this. With Madam’s personality, she definitely feels that she owes him. With Zhou Wen’s relationship with the former principal, if Zhou Wen were willing to persuade her, Madam might have a change of heart. No offense, but letting Zhou Wen go will be more effective than both you and Miss Jing,” An Sheng said.

“No way. There’s no need for an outsider like him to interfere with the An family’s matters. Besides, he’s only a Legendary student. Going to a place like Zhuolu would only add trouble to the mix. Who knows what trouble he will cause.” An Tianzuo immediately objected.

“I’m afraid that to Old Mr. Ouyang, you are an outsider. He treats Zhou Wen better than he treats you. This time, Zhou Wen has taken the initiative to request to go to Zhuolu, so we can get him to persuade Madam. I think it’s rather suitable. It’s more useful than you going,” said An Sheng.

An Tianzuo frowned and thought for a moment before saying, “Watch him well. Don’t let him cause any trouble. Also, if he wants to go, it has nothing to do with our An family. He can’t blame others even if he dies there.”

“Overseer, don’t worry. I will watch over him and not let him cause any trouble,” said An Sheng hurriedly.

Zhou Wen received An Sheng’s notification that he would be setting off for Zhuolu tomorrow. Therefore, he had no choice but to head to Wang Mingyuan’s place at night to bid farewell.

“You are going to Zhuolu?” Wang Mingyuan frowned slightly when he heard Zhou Wen say that.

“Yes, the former principal treated me like family. If I don’t go, I will never be able to feel at peace,” Zhou Wen said.

“Zhuolu is an inauspicious land. It’s fine if you don’t enter, but if you enter, it will be very difficult for you to escape unscathed,” said Wang Mingyuan after some thought.

“I know my strength is limited, so I’ll only wait outside. I won’t enter the dimensional zone,” Zhou Wen said.

When Wang Mingyuan heard that, he only smiled and patted Zhou Wen on the head. “Although you haven’t been with me for long, I know your personality quite well. If you don’t wish to do something, why would you travel so far?”

Zhou Wen opened his mouth to explain, but Wang Mingyuan waved his hand, gesturing for him to not say any more.

“Wait a moment,” Wang Mingyuan said. He walked to his desk, took a piece of paper and pen, and wrote a few words. Then, he folded the paper into a small square and placed it into a metal box the size of a matchbox.

“Take this. If you really find yourself trapped in that inauspicious land, open the box and read the words on it. It might be beneficial to your situation.” As Wang Mingyuan spoke, he stuffed the tiny metal box into Zhou Wen’s hand.

“Thank you, Teacher.” Although Zhou Wen felt that it was useless, he respectfully received it with both hands and bowed in thanks.

“How many times have I told you that there’s no need for all these proprietaries with me? Look, when did Ziya ever say ‘thanks’ when he took something from me?” Wang Mingyuan smiled.

“I’m different from him, but I respect you the same way.” Zhou Wen shook his head and said. He really couldn’t be like Zhong Ziya.

However, Zhou Wen had an indescribable sense of familiarity towards Wang Mingyuan. It was as though his fate with him was like the former principal. With his cold personality, he couldn’t help but get close to him.

Wang Mingyuan thought nothing of it. He took a book from his desk and handed it to Zhou Wen. “You should have plenty of free time on your way there. You can’t forget your homework. Take this book and tell me your understanding and thoughts when you’re back.”

Zhou Wen took the book and agreed. Wang Mingyuan didn’t keep him any longer and told him to return to do some packing. After Zhou Wen exchanged a few more words with the reading Jiang Yan, he saw that Zhong Ziya and Hui Haifeng weren’t around. Since it was late, they probably wouldn’t be coming, so he bade everyone farewell and left.

After informing Li Xuan and company, he asked Wang Lu to take care of the antelope. Zhou Wen went to the supermarket again and bought large quantities of food and water, placing them in the chaos space to prepare for emergencies.

The tiny metal box that Wang Mingyuan had given him had also been placed into the chaos space. He had no intention of entering the dimensional zone, so it definitely had no use.

He picked up the book that Wang Mingyuan had given him and flipped through it. He realized that it wasn’t about palm techniques, but was a book named “Introspection Silence.” It was filled with Wang Mingyuan’s experience and insights. However, it wasn’t about his experience in experimenting, but his experience in cultivating the various realms.

Although the book didn’t have any cultivation methods or techniques, Zhou Wen read with relish as though he had obtained a treasure.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 254 - Bells

Chapter 254 Bells

An Sheng came to pick Zhou Wen up and set off with more than ten people. However, other than Zhou Wen, they were basically experts at the Epic stage.

Although most of them were older than An Sheng, they were still respectful towards him. None of them dared to put on any airs with him.

However, most of those people didn’t look like soldiers. There were men and women, old and young. They looked very strange, a mystery where they had come from.

They weren’t interested in Zhou Wen, but Zhou Wen wasn’t interested in them either. Therefore, he was happy to be at peace and game in the vehicle.

With the black-armored general guarding Tiger Cage Pass, Zhou Wen wasn’t able to make any progress. However, he recalled what the Wu siblings had said. There was apparently a secret passage that allowed one to enter Tiger Cage City. However, despite repeatedly searching in-game, he failed to find the secret passage.

Could it be that there’s no secret passage in the game? Or could there be some mechanism to the secret passage? Zhou Wen was momentarily unable to guess.

“Lad, is the game fun?” asked a man sitting opposite Zhou Wen. He had graying hair, but he looked like a middle-aged man.

They were on a military-sized truck. It had very powerful cross-terrain capabilities, but it was a little shaky. It was not too crowded even with more than ten people sitting in it.

“It’s fun,” Zhou Wen answered casually.

“It’s very rare to see young people enjoy gaming like you these days. Back when I was your age, everyone played games and there were all sorts of gaming competitions. After the dimensional storms, not many people play anymore. How nostalgic,” the man said.

“You experienced the dimensional storms?” Zhou Wen looked at the man in surprise. He didn’t look old.

Before the man could say anything, a middle-aged man beside him pursed his lips and said, “You don’t even know the name Lord Alcohol? Young man, you still have a lot to learn. Take your time to learn.”

However, Lord Alcohol laughed and said, “I was originally the ninth child in the family and people used to call me Old Nine. However, with age, I began to enjoy alcohol. Gradually, I became Lord Alcohol. It’s just a nickname. How should I address you, young man?”

“My name is Zhou Wen,” Zhou Wen answered. Clearly, these people didn’t know of his background and only knew that he was brought here by An Sheng.

“Zhou Wen.” Lord Alcohol repeated it twice as though he was recalling information related to the name. Unfortunately, he didn’t find anything. Hence, he added, “Are you going to the ancient battlefield in Zhuolu?”

“I’m still a student. How can I have the guts to go to such a place?” Zhou Wen said.

“Oh, then why are you going to Zhuolu?” pressed the middle-aged man.

“To study and broaden my horizons,” Zhou Wen answered. He wasn’t familiar with these people, so he was perfunctory with his answers.

“Reading ten thousand books isn’t as good as walking ten thousand miles; even more so in this era. It’s not bad for young people to come out and broaden their horizons,” said Lord Alcohol with a smile.

“What’s terrible if he dies before he learns anything,” a woman in her thirties suddenly said.

“That’s right. A place like Zhuolu isn’t a place you can visit at a whim. Even the League’s scouts get trapped inside. It’s practically a land of death. Lord Alcohol, how confident are you in our trip?” The middle-aged man wasn’t interested in Zhou Wen. After saying a few words, he directed his words at Lord Alcohol.

“It’s hard to say. The situation in the ancient battlefield is unclear. Just based on the information we have now, it’s hard to tell. I can only assess the place after I get there,” said Lord Alcohol calmly.

As they were talking, the truck suddenly came to a halt.

“What happened?” Lord Alcohol looked at the driver’s seat and asked.

“There’s something blocking the way.” An Sheng, who was sitting in the front passenger seat, had already opened the door and jumped out.

The group of people came out from the back of the truck and saw that the road ahead was, indeed, blocked by something. However, it wasn’t anything like a rock. Instead, vines had grown on the road, circling the trees on both sides of the road and blockading the road.

Everyone could tell that the vines were somewhat strange- purple vines, dark green leaves, and a few fruits on them.

However, the purple fruits were a little strange as they were not circular. Instead, they looked like miniature, copper bells. When the wind blew, the purple copper bells shook on the vines and produced metallic tinkling.

But everyone could clearly see that the bell was clearly grown on the vines. How could it be metal?

“Adjutant An, let me lead the way,” said a muscular middle-aged man as he walked out.

“Be careful.” An Sheng nodded slightly.

The middle-aged man responded and summoned a dimensional creature that looked like an elephant. He immediately made the elephant charge towards the vines. Flames began to burn from the elephant’s body, making it appear like a hurtling meteor that targeted the vines.

With the Flaming Elephant’s mass and speed, it should have been easy to smash through the vines. What’s more, there were terrifying flames on its body.

But when the Flaming Elephant slammed into the vines, it seemed to fall into a quagmire. It was trapped by the vines and was unable to make any progress.

It released all its strength, hoping to use its flames to burn through the vines that had entangled its body. The flames spread over the vines, and soon, the entire vine began to burn.

However, the vine wasn’t damaged. Instead, the Flaming Elephant’s body rapidly dried up, as if it had been sucked dry by a vampire.

Bam!

In just a short time, the Flaming Elephant’s body was reduced to ash.

Everyone wore a heavy expression as the stout man was perturbed. Although the Flaming Elephant was only a Legendary Companion Beast which he used to scout, for it to be so easily killed by the vines meant that they were probably not so simple.

The flames on the vines gradually extinguished. The muscular man was just about to make another move when he saw the bells suddenly shake violently.

In the next second, a few purple copper bells spewed out large amounts of flames as they swept towards the group.

The cold woman summoned a white fox. The fox opened its mouth and spat out a cold white mist that shot towards the flames. Immediately, the flames were extinguished as the white mist continued floating towards the vines.

Soon, the cold mist enveloped the vines, causing frost to appear on them as if they had been frozen.

“Snow Fox lives up to its name,” praised the muscular man.

But just as he said that the frost on the vines rapidly melted. The purple copper bells shook a few times, and they also spat out a large amount of white mist that swept towards the crowd.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 255 - Three Flying Sabers

Chapter 255 Three Flying Sabers

Everyone’s faces changed.

It was fine if the Legendary Flaming Elephant was sucked dry by the vines, but the Snow Fox was an Epic creature. The frost mist it spewed out could freeze an Epic creature.

Ignoring the fact that the vines weren’t affected, it could even spew out frost snow mist. Furthermore, the frost snow mist it spewed out was even greater in quantity than the amount Snow Fox had spat out. This was quite frightening.

The woman frowned slightly, causing the Snow Fox to spit out another mouthful of frost. It mixed with the white mist that spewed out of the bells before both sides dispersed simultaneously. Neither side had the upper hand.

The woman wanted to continue but heard Lord Alcohol say, “Director Lu, don’t be in a hurry to make a move. Let me take a look first.”

Lu Ning nodded slightly. She unsummoned the Snow Fox and retreated to the side.

The muscular man looked at him and asked, “Lord Alcohol, do you know what it is?”

Everyone looked at Lord Alcohol. They, too, wanted to know what the vines were.

Lord Alcohol sized up the vines and said, “I’ve seen a similar vine in Changbai Mountain before. It wasn’t growing bells, but three flying sabers. Back then, the people I went with wanted to cut the vines, but they were killed by the saber flashes. Many ideas were proposed until the flying sabers were plucked from the vines.”

At this point, Lord Alcohol paused as he swept his gaze across everyone’s faces before continuing, “To everyone’s surprise, the flying sabers were a fascinating Companion Beast. Whoever plucked the flying sabers would be automatically recognized as their masters and belong to them. Back then, three people were delighted to obtain the flying sabers. The flying sabers were extremely powerful, and they were considered top-notch at the Epic stage. And it was true they were extraordinary. From what I’m seeing, these vines are somewhat similar to the one at Changbai Mountain. But it’s not completely the same. Perhaps they share some similarities.”

When everyone heard what Lord Alcohol said, their desire for the bell heated up-it was evident from their eyes.

They had already seen the might of the bell. If they could obtain one as their Companion Beast, it would undoubtedly be a powerful aid.

“Lord Alcohol, how did you pluck the flying sabers back then?” the muscular man, Zhao Xin, hurriedly asked.

Lord Alcohol recalled and said, “Back then, that vine was the same as this one. It was invulnerable and had the saber flashes of the flying sabers protecting it. It was really tricky.”

Everyone looked at Lord Alcohol, hoping that he could quickly tell them the solution, so that they could try it on the bells.

However, Lord Alcohol shook his head and said, “I don’t know how they managed to pluck the flying sabers in the end.”

“Lord Alcohol, are you kidding us? Weren’t you at the scene? How could you not know?” Zhao Xin said in disbelief.

Lord Alcohol gave a bitter smile and said, “I was indeed present at that time and saw how they plucked the flying sabers. However, despite watching with my own eyes, I still can’t fathom how they did it.”

“What? Who were the people who plucked the flying sabers?” Lu Ning was curious and couldn’t help but ask.

Zhou Wen was also very curious. The places he had visited were limited and his knowledge was limited. To be able to hear such a secret would probably aid him in the future.

Lord Alcohol said, “You must all have heard the names of the three people who plucked the flying sabers. Even if you haven’t met them, you definitely know them. One of them is called Jing Daoxian.”

“That devil, Jing Daoxian?” Everyone trembled when they heard that.

Jing Daoxian’s name had made the League tremble for decades. Few people who knew of his deeds were unafraid of him.

Lord Alcohol continued, “I really have no idea how Jing Daoxian managed to pluck the flying sabers. When the others approached the vines, they were slain by the saber flash. However, Jing Daoxian actually walked in front of the vines and reached out to pluck one of the flying sabers. The flying sabers didn’t react at all. I opened my eyes wide and

watched him pluck them, but to this day, I have no idea how he managed to do it.”

Although what Lord Alcohol said sounded like a fantasy, no one found it amiss. It was as though no matter how bizarre it was, it was not surprising when it involved Jing Daoxian.

“Lord Alcohol, who were the other two people who plucked the flying sabers?” An Sheng seemed interested as he looked at Lord Alcohol and asked.

“The other two people were Zhang Daotian and Wan Yiqi.” When Lord Alcohol said these two names, everyone except Zhou Wen gaped.

“Impossible… How could the strongest of the six heroes, Zhang Daotian, and his wife, Wan Yiqi, be together with that devil, Jing Daoxian? Aren’t they arch-enemies? Why would they go to Changbai Mountain together and pluck the flying sabers together?” Zhao Xin immediately voiced the puzzlement in his heart. This was also a question on everyone else’s minds.

Only then did Zhou Wen recall that the strongest of the six heroes was Zhang Daotian. In closed circles, people even gave him the title of Hero King. However, the Zhang family didn’t send anyone to participate in the battle at the Holy Land. It wasn’t because they had declined, but because the Zhang family didn’t believe in vying for such qualifications.

The discussion forum that Zhou Wen had posted his strategy was under the Zhang family. The other five families found it difficult to obtain information about the Zhang family. Even most of the League’s currency system was in the hands of the Zhang family. Although the Zhang family didn’t have military power, its influence on the Senate and the League could be said to be the strongest among the six families.

Zhou Wen had also heard some of Zhang Daotian's stories. Basically, it was known to all in the League.

Back then, Jing Daoxian had stormed into the League government office and slaughtered countless League experts. He was almost unstoppable. In the end, Zhang Daoxian had defeated him. Only then did Jing Daoxian escape with injuries, failing to wipe out the upper echelons.

"Back then, they were still young. Jing Daoxian wasn't yet the legendary devil. Zhang Daotian wasn't a Hero King and Wan Yiqi hadn't married Zhang Daotian either," said Lord Alcohol with a smile.

"I see. Then how did Zhang Daotian and Wan Yiqi pluck the flying sabers?" Lu Ning asked curiously.

Lord Alcohol chuckled. "Zhang Daotian and Jing Daoxian both walked over and plucked the flying sabers. They didn't suffer any attacks from the flying sabers. As for Wan Yiqi, you might not believe her method of plucking the flying saber."

"Don't tell me she bit it off with her mouth?" Zhao Xin joked.

Lord Alcohol glanced at Zhao Xin and said indifferently, "If you were to let Jing Daoxian hear that, you would probably be dead."

Zhao Xin's heart chilled as he forced a smile. "Even if there's any anger, it should be from Zhang Daotian. It has nothing to do with Jing Daoxian, right?"

Lord Alcohol ignored Zhao Xin and continued, "Wan Yiqi had the title of a Beauty across the Seven Continents. She was definitely the most beautiful back then. Even the flying sabers were mesmerized by her. Before she even reached

the flying saber, it automatically dropped and fell into her hands.”

Everyone found it unbelievable when they heard that. They felt that Lord Alcohol was bullsh*tting. No matter how beautiful a woman was, it was impossible for her to affect dimensional creatures. Furthermore, it was a flying saber, so how could it understand the aesthetic preferences of humans?

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 256 - Plucking Bells

Chapter 256 Plucking Bells

Although Lord Alcohol's story sounded interesting, they still had no clue how to pluck the purple copper bells from the vines.

To follow what Lord Alcohol had said and walk over directly to pluck it? Not only did Zhou Wen find it unreliable, but Zhao Xin, Lu Ning, and company also found it unreliable. The stories that Lord Alcohol told could be treated as a fairytale, but it was impossible for them to act on it. No one would use their lives to verify the authenticity of the story.

Seeing that Lord Alcohol couldn't come up with any ideas, Zhao Xin summoned a long saber and slashed out a saber beam, hoping to slice through the vines.

However, when the saber beam struck the vines, the vines remained intact as the saber beam shattered.

The few bells shook as they sucked in the broken saber flashes. Soon, they spat them out again. However, when they spat out again, the saber beams poured out like a torrential storm. Everyone quickly used their own abilities to block the saber beams that filled the sky.

An Sheng stood in front of Zhou Wen as he brandished his dagger a few times, shattering the incoming saber beams.

Although no one was injured, everyone's hearts were shrouded in gloom. The vines and bells were so bizarre that not only could they devour all kinds of powers, the strength

of the objects they spat out was even stronger than before. It was truly terrifying.

Instantly, no one dared to attack the vines again. They still had stronger powers up their sleeves, but if the power was absorbed by the vines and spewed back, they were not confident that they could withstand it.

Zhou Wen sized up the vines from behind as he took a picture of it with his cell phone. Although a living dimensional creature couldn’t be acquired through the phone, he wanted to see if he could see its information.

The phone’s screen locked onto the vines. There was actually some information on the vines.

Yin-Yang Purple Air Bell Companion Egg: Epic

Life Providence: Mountain River Absorption

Life Soul: Purple Light Bell

Strength: 38

Speed: 0

Constitution: 39

Primordial Energy: 40

Talent Skill: Yin and Yang Reversal

Companion Form: None

Zhou Wen was slightly taken aback when he saw it. This was clearly the stats of one of the Purple Air Bells. He looked at the other bells and realized that other than the four

fundamentals, the rest were the same. There was basically no difference between the four bells.

It’s really a Companion Egg. However, will plucking them really be considered as incubating them? Zhou Wen wasn’t certain. He took out his cell phone to take a picture of the purple vines, but he couldn’t see its stats.

The mysterious phone seemed to only be able to snap Companion Eggs and not dimensional creatures, so there was nothing Zhou Wen could do about it.

After studying the four bells’ Life Providence, Life Soul, and talent skill, Zhou Wen gained something unexpected.

Mountain River Absorption allowed the Purple Air Bells to be unafraid of Primordial Energy Skills. No matter how powerful a Primordial Energy Skill was, it would be useless if it landed on it. Instead, it would be absorbed.

As for Yin-Yang Reversal, it could release whatever Primordial Energy it absorbed multifold. Apart from not being able to move, the Yin-Yang Purple Air Bell was indeed an extremely powerful Companion Beast.

However, plant-type Companion Beasts were somewhat odd. Even without hatching them, they could still release their powers. Furthermore, as long as they were plucked, one didn’t need to use their Primordial Energy to especially hatch them even if they had already been incubated.

However, the Yin-Yang Purple Air Bell also had its weakness. It was not afraid of Primordial Energy Skills, but it was afraid of physical attacks. It was completely opposite from the characteristics of Ghost Bride.

Furthermore, it didn’t have any destructive power. It needed to absorb energy from the outside world to produce a backlash. It was a very passive Companion Beast.

In that case, as long as I walk over and don’t use any Primordial Energy Skills to attack it, I should be able to pluck it? Zhou Wen felt that it was feasible, but his only concern was the Purple Vine.

The bells themselves didn’t have any offensive properties, but it wasn’t necessarily the case for the purple vine. It had easily squeezed the Flaming Elephant to death.

Lord Alcohol and the others were still discussing. It wasn’t that they were lacking in intelligence, but that they had never seen the Yin-Yang Purple Air Bell before. They didn’t know what abilities this thing had. It was akin to an ancient person who had just come into contact with a smartphone. No one taught them nor was there any manual, so it was impossible for him to immediately know how to use it.

However, Zhou Wen was different. He had the Purple Air Bell’s manual and knew how to restrain it.

It was a rare opportunity. These four Purple Air Bells would be of great use in the future, but Zhou Wen didn’t want to risk it himself. Hence, after some thought, he said to An Sheng, “Ah Sheng, I’ve thought of a way to pluck the bells. When you pluck all four of them, how about giving me two?”

Zhou Wen spoke very softly, but Lord Alcohol and the others were Epic experts. They had sharp senses and heard Zhou Wen’s words.

Zhao Xin looked at Zhou Wen and said, “This isn’t a game. Don’t harm Adjutant An with your speculations.”

Lord Alcohol added, “Zhou Wen, tell us what method you have and let us study it. If it’s really valuable, we naturally won’t hold back what you deserve after plucking the bells.”

Some people felt that Zhou Wen was young and naive, while others wished that Zhou Wen could share his thoughts.

“Young Master Wen, tell me what needs to be done. I’ll do as you say and pluck the bells. We’ll split them two-two.” An Sheng seemed to believe in Zhou Wen without any hint of doubt.

Zhou Wen hesitated for a moment, unsure if he should reveal his thoughts in front of Lord Alcohol and company.

“Young Master Wen, please speak your mind. Even if someone else uses your method, they will still have to give you the bell after plucking it. No one can take that bell,” An Sheng said with a smile.

Zhou Wen nodded and handed his Bamboo Blade to An Sheng. “Just walk over and chop off the bells. However, you have to be careful. Don’t be entangled by the vines or use Primordial Energy Skills. Just slice off the bells with the blade.”

Zhou Wen had seen An Sheng’s capabilities and knew that his movement techniques were extremely strange. Even Ghost King’s movement technique wasn’t as strange as his. With his ability and reaction, it was difficult for an Epic creature to injure him.

“I thought you had some good ideas. Aren’t you asking Adjutant An to send himself to his death?” Zhao Xin turned to look at An Sheng and said, “Adjutant An, don’t listen to the young man’s nonsense. Let’s quickly discuss something else and remove these vines.”

When An Sheng pushed the Bamboo Blade back, Zhou Wen imagined that he hadn’t believed him. Just as he was about to explain, An Sheng pulled out his dagger and walked towards the vines.

“Adjutant An, are you really going?” Zhao Xin and the others were shocked.

An Sheng said calmly, “If Young Master Wen says it will work, then it will definitely work.”

With that said, An Sheng had already approached the vines. Indeed, the purple vines moved, wanting to bind him. However, An Sheng was just too fast. He easily avoided the vines’ entanglement and came in front of the bells. With a swift slash, his dagger sliced at the roots of a bell.

The previously imposing Purple Air Bells remained motionless. An Sheng’s dagger had directly cut off a bell.

An Sheng reached out to catch the bell. The moment the bell touched his skin, it transformed into a purple gas and melted into a tattoo that resembled a morning glory flower.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 257 - Blood Storm

Chapter 257 Blood Storm

Without any hesitation, An Sheng dodged the purple vines' attacks while cutting off another Purple Air Bell. However, An Sheng didn't take it for himself this time. Instead, he used his dagger to lift the Purple Air Bell.

The Purple Air Bell flew straight at Zhou Wen. He reached out to receive it, and the Purple Air Bell turned into a purple gas that seeped into his skin. Without needing to expend any energy to incubate it, it had already become a tattoo that resembled a morning glory flower. It left Zhou Wen overjoyed.

It was difficult for Zhou Wen to incubate ordinary Epic stage Companion Eggs, but the Purple Air Bell was unique. There was no need for any incubation, allowing him to obtain an Epic Companion Beast.

Soon, An Sheng picked another bell and Zhou Wen caught it once again. He obtained another Epic Companion Beast.

The last bell was caught by An Sheng after he sliced it off. He also had two Purple Air Bells.

With all four Purple Air Bells cut off, the purple vine suddenly seemed to have lost its soul as it froze.

A gust of wind blew and the purple vines dissipated into dust. The perfectly fine purple vine was gone.

Zhao Xin and company looked at Zhou Wen oddly. An Sheng got everyone to return to the vehicle and they continued on their journey.

“Pal, how did you know that those bells fear physical attacks?” Lord Alcohol asked once they were on board.

The others also looked at Zhou Wen. To be able to tell the crux of the problem in such a short period of time wasn’t an easy task.

“I only gained inspiration from listening to your story,” Zhou Wen said. “My story?” Lord Alcohol was a little stunned.

Zhou Wen continued, “That’s right, your story. Didn’t you say that those flying sabers didn’t harm the three of them? I was wondering why they didn’t harm Jing Daoxian and company. Although I couldn’t think of the reason, I thought of the problems with these bells. They only counterattacked when we attacked, and they didn’t have the consciousness to take the initiative to attack. Furthermore, their counterattacks were using our powers. I then wondered if it was the same reason as those flying sabers not causing any harm. Hence, I thought about it and surmised that since they do not have any offensive abilities, I could get Adjutant An to give it a try. I never expected him to succeed.”

“As expected of a young man. They are so quick to think. It’s no wonder Adjutant An thinks highly of you. I’m really getting old. Even if I made the connection, I wouldn’t have dared to try it,” praised Lord Alcohol.

“Even a broken clock is right twice a day. He made Adjutant An take a risk on a mere guess. He was right this time, but if he was wrong, wouldn’t he have harmed Adjutant An?” Zhao Xin said with a twitch of his lips. Clearly, he was against Zhou Wen’s actions.

Zhou Wen didn’t refute Zhao Xian and Lord Alcohol because they weren’t wrong. If it was only a guess, Zhou Wen would have been extremely irresponsible to have An Sheng take such a risk.

However, Zhou Wen wasn’t making a guess. He had crucial information and knew that Ansheng would be fine. That was why he had sent him over. However, there was no need for Zhou Wen to explain to others.

On the way, they encountered many problems. However, these people were experts at the Epic stage. They each had their own unique traits, so they resolved the problems without needing Zhou Wen to do anything.

Zhou Wen kept playing games. After respawning the tiger a few times, he still failed to have a Companion Egg drop.

When can I be like Wang Lu and run around with the baby tiger to have Companion Eggs rain? Zhou Wen yearned for a Lucky Baby Tiger, but he just couldn’t get one to drop.

Originally, driving from Luoyang to Zhuolu didn’t take more than a day. However, there were many dimensional zones everywhere in this day and age. They were unable to proceed in a straight line, and highways didn’t allow easy passage. They also encountered problems along the way, so it took them until the evening of the fourth day before they finally arrived at Zhuolu County.

There weren’t many ordinary people in Zhuolu County anymore. Most of the humans had already fled to larger cities, leaving only a small number of independent hunters and some military organizations behind.

An Sheng drove straight into a yard that looked like some unit. There were many soldiers inside.

“Adjutant An.” An officer immediately came forward to greet An Sheng.

“How’s the situation over here? Where’s Madam?” Ansheng asked.

“Madam has already entered the ancient battlefield with the rest.” The officer smiled bitterly.

“What happened? Didn’t I tell you to calm Madam down first and let her wait two days before entering?” An Sheng’s expression changed immediately.

Although he was not a biological son of the An family, An Tianzuo and Ouyang Lan treated him like family. An Sheng had long treated them like family too.

“We did what you instructed. Madam had already agreed to it, but two days ago, an anomaly happened in the ancient battlefield. Madam couldn’t wait any longer, so she led people inside,” the officer said.

“What anomaly?” An Sheng’s expression turned even nastier. If there was an anomaly, it meant that it was even more dangerous.

“It began raining on the ancient battlefield. It was very heavy rain and the color of the rain was red. Anyone who came into contact with that blood-like rain would act up like a rabid dog. They would bite any living thing they saw. When the blood started to rain, a few soldiers didn’t notice it and were drenched by the blood rain. In the end, when we saw those soldiers, they had already ripped each other up into an unrecognizable mess.” The officer couldn’t help but shiver at the mere recall.

“Young Master Wen, stay at the base and wait for me. I’ll go to the battlefield to take a look.” As An Sheng spoke, he prepared to lead his men to the ancient battlefield.

“Ah Sheng, take me along. I’ll just stay outside the battlefield to watch. I won’t cause you any trouble,” Zhou Wen said.

“Alright. However, you have to promise me that you will definitely not enter.” An Sheng knew that Zhou Wen’s personality was too similar to the An family’s members. Even if he didn’t allow Zhou Wen to go, he would definitely do so by himself. Therefore, he might as well take him along and watch over him.

“I won’t enter as said. Don’t worry. I know that my powers are limited, so I won’t cause you any trouble.” Zhou Wen was telling the truth. He had no intention of entering since it wasn’t a place he could step into.

An Sheng got someone to bring over the latest information. He then gave Lord Alcohol and the rest a copy each and let them take a look while they were on the way.

Zhou Wen also received a copy. After getting into the vehicle, he carefully read through it.

The situation at the battlefield was indeed terrible. When the expedition team first arrived, the dimensional zones there weren’t that strange, without much danger inside. Having only found some ancient ruins, they invited many experts to conduct some studies. Among them was an authority in the field of history, Ouyang Ting—the former principal.

However, with the passage of time, the ancient battlefield grew stranger and stranger. More than a month ago, the old

principal, a group of experts, and the people protecting them were trapped in there and were nowhere to be found. Only one soldier in charge of watching over the equipment escaped.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 258 - Ancient Battlefield

Chapter 258 Ancient Battlefield

The League had already sent a few groups of people in to search for their whereabouts. However, the changes in the ancient battlefield were too intense. Many people died there, but no one was found. In the end, the League basically gave up.

When Ouyang Lan came, the League's army was only guarding the ancient battlefield and was no longer sending anyone in.

Ouyang Lan had originally wanted to wait for An Sheng to come, but after the sudden blood storm in the ancient battlefield, Ouyang Lan was afraid that her father wouldn't be able to hold on any longer. Without having the luxury of time to wait, she decided to lead her men into the ancient battlefield.

Based on the current information, as long as the blood rain didn't hit the skin, there shouldn't be too much of a problem. However, the strangeness of the ancient battlefield was far from that.

The old principal and the others were stationed in some ancient ruins as their research targets. However, when the soldiers of the military rushed over, many of them ended up dying in the ruins. Even the cause of death remained unknown.

If Ouyang Lan wanted to find her father, she would definitely head there first. An Sheng was afraid that Ouyang Lan would

die there, a result that he had no way of telling An Tianzuo and An Jing when he returned.

The vehicle quickly arrived at the entrance of the ancient battlefield. The scene in front of them made Lord Alcohol and the others wear even graver looks.

A river surged down. On their side of the river there was blue sky, and opposite the river was a storm cloud blanketing the river with blood rain. The two banks of the river were like two completely different worlds.

The river was as red as blood. It roared as it flowed downwards; its ultimate destination unknown.

“There wasn’t such a river in the past, right?” An Sheng took out the map in the documents and said.

“This was formed after the blood storm. The blood storm was especially violent previously, so it’s already considered a lot smaller now,” the officer from before said.

“Prepare to cross the river and enter the ancient battlefield.” An Sheng instructed his men to distribute the rainproof equipment to Lord Alcohol and the others.

As Lord Alcohol wore a custom raincoat, he looked at the boundless torrential rain and muttered to himself, “Legend has it that during ancient times when the Yellow Emperor fought Chiyou, Chiyou summoned the Count of the Wind and the Lord of the Rain to aid him in battle when he realized he was no match for Yellow Emperor. This caused a storm to sweep through the enemy, causing the Yellow Emperor to drop his armor and flee. This rain is blood-red and is an ominous omen.”

Zhou Wen also knew that this was an ancient battlefield. However, that was a time from eons ago. He had only heard some legends and didn't know exactly what had happened.

However, he had heard of the Lord of the Rain before. Some said that the Lord of the Rain was an orthodox god sealed by the Heavens and Earth, while others said that the Lord of the Rain was actually a manifestation of a crimson dragon. Anyway, there were many legends, and nothing to be treated seriously. It couldn't be treated seriously.

"Young Master Wen, I will bring Madam back. Before that, you cannot enter the ancient battlefield no matter what." Before An Sheng left with the rest, he had especially told Zhou Wen not to enter.

"Don't worry. I'll wait for you to bring Sis Lan back." Zhou Wen was in a rush to find the tiny palm symbol. There were no city gates or stone monuments here, so he was afraid that he wouldn't be able to find the tiny palm symbol.

"Battalion Commander Lu, protect Young Master Wen well. No matter what happens, Young Master Wen has to live. Also, don't let him cross the river," An Sheng said to the officer.

"I guarantee that I will complete the mission." Lu Yun gave a military salute and loudly promised.

Only then did An Sheng cross the blood river with the others. Soon, they disappeared into the blood rain. The group appeared so puny in under the wrath of heaven and earth.

Zhou Wen didn't have the time to be in a daze. He turned around and walked along the river of blood. He needed to

find the tiny palm symbol so that he could provide a little help.

“Principal, Sis Lan, please don’t let anything happen to you.” Zhou Wen quickly walked along the river.

“Young Master Wen, where are you going?” Battalion Commander Lu Yunxian rushed forward to stop Zhou Wen.

From his point of view, Zhou Wen shouldn’t have come to such a place. For a student to come here, other than causing trouble and wasting manpower, he really didn’t know what else he could do.

“I want to tour the vicinity,” Zhou Wen said.

“No, I’m afraid not. Adjutant An told me to protect you. Nothing must happen to you. Please return to the encampment with me immediately,” Lu Yunxian said.

“Adjutant An told you to ensure my safety and not restrict my freedom. If you can’t do it, you can get someone else to do it,” Zhou Wen said as he circled around Lu Yunxian and followed the blood river upstream.

Lu Yunxian frowned slightly, but he still followed him with his guards. Although he disliked Zhou Wen very much, he had to abide by An Sheng’s orders no matter what.

Zhou Wen walked in front while Lu Yunxian led his guards to a spot not far from him. Zhou Wen stopped walking to take photos with his cell phone, as though he was here on a tour.

As such, not only did Lu Yunxian dislike Zhou Wen, even the guards couldn’t hold back their displeasure. If An Sheng hadn’t ordered them to protect a person like him, they wouldn’t have wanted to.

“Things have already come to this stage and everyone is working hard. But what is he doing? He has the mood to come here to have fun and take pictures,” a guard said unhappily.

Another guard added, “If I had known this would happen, I’d rather have followed Adjutant An across the river to the ancient battlefield and try my best to save lives. I wouldn’t have to suffer this bullsh*t.”

“Cut it out.” Lu Yunxian stopped them.

Although he couldn’t stand Zhou Wen, he was a soldier after all. His profession required obeying orders.

Zhou Wen naturally heard the discussions of the soldiers, but he couldn’t explain it.

He walked along the river and walked for more than five kilometers, but he didn’t find any sign of the tiny palm print, nor did his phone respond.

They had arrived in an area that was mountainous up ahead. According to the information provided, the mountainous region was also within the dimensional zone Furthermore, there were the dark clouds of the blood rain blanketing it. Zhou Wen couldn’t find the palm symbol, so he could only head back downstream.

Lu Yunxian and company originally believed that this scion was finally returning, but to their surprise, Zhou Wen continued walking downstream without any intention of returning to his origin.

“Young Master Wen, it’s getting late. The sky is about to turn dark. We should go back. If you are interested, you can come back in the day tomorrow,” said Lu Yunxian.

“The sky isn’t dark yet. Let’s continue walking.” Zhou Wen didn’t wish to wait another day. If he found the tiny palm symbol earlier, he could help the efforts. Perhaps this would lead to a greater chance of rescuing the former principal.

Lu Yunxian couldn’t help but frown, but since Zhou Wen had already begun walking away, he had no choice but to follow him. However, his expression didn’t look too good as he remained silent with a cold expression.

Zhou Wen knew that Lu Yunxian and the rest were unhappy, but he could only feign ignorance. He continued searching along the river and couldn’t help but pray inwardly. Please let there be the tiny palm symbol!

However, with the passage of time, Zhou Wen’s heart grew heavier. The sun had already set, but he had still failed to find the tiny palm symbol.

Just as Zhou Wen was wondering if there even was a tiny palm symbol here, his phone suddenly vibrated. Zhou Wen was immediately delighted as he hurriedly took it out and scanned his surroundings.

There it is! When Zhou Wen saw the tiny palm symbol on an ancient monument, he nearly teared up with excitement.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 259 - First Battle With An Ancient Creature

Chapter 259 First Battle With An Ancient Creature

Zhou Wen hurriedly scanned the tiny palm symbol. He finally relaxed when the phone showed that it was downloading.

I hope I’m not too late. Zhou Wen looked at the blood rain that covered the opposite side of the river like a fog. He wondered how the former principal, Ouyang Lan, and An Sheng were doing.

Just as Zhou Wen scanned the tiny palm symbol on the stone monument, a shadow suddenly appeared behind it—a huge blood frog. It spat out a mouthful of bloody liquid at Zhou Wen.

Lu Yunxian rushed to Zhou Wen’s side and grabbed his shoulder with one hand, throwing him to the back. At the same time, he raised a shield with his other hand to block the bloody liquid.

The metal shield was corroded, leaving pockmarks. It had nearly melted through.

Lu Yunxian held a saber in his other hand and slashed with a blade beam, splitting the blood frog into two.

“Young Master Wen, can we return now?” Lu Yunxian turned to Zhou Wen and asked.

“Alright.” Zhou Wen stood up and patted the dust off his body.

He then followed Lu Yunxian back to the garrison. The game had finished downloading. On the cell phone’s home screen, there was an icon of a Boundary Stone. On it was the word, Zhuolu.

He clicked and entered the Zhuolu instance dungeon and soon, the blood-colored avatar appeared on the ancient battlefield that was covered in blood rain. However, before Zhou Wen could control it, he saw the blood-colored avatar charge out maniacally and fall into the river of blood. Then, the screen went black.

Zhou Wen felt a little depressed. He had died the moment he spawned. This was clearly not a good sign.

How do I defend against the blood rain? Zhou Wen lowered his head in thought. In reality, he could use custom raincoats. Not only were they waterproof, but they had pretty good defensive capabilities.

However, there were no raincoats in-game. All Zhou Wen could do was attempt to wear the soft armor manifested by the Three-Eyed Golden Warrior and the armor from the Gold-Armored Beast. However, neither of them could completely cover his body, so it was unknown if it would work.

The results proved that it was useless. As long as his skin was stained with the bloody rain-even a drop of it-he would lose control of his blood-colored avatar as it ran like it had rabies, eventually dying tragically in the blood rain.

Zhou Wen attempted to activate the Lotus Flower Buddha Body to see if he could withstand the corrosive effects of the

blood rain. Only by doing so did he survive in the ancient battlefield.

However, the Lotus Flower Buddha Body constantly expended his Primordial Energy. Zhou Wen had to switch his Primordial Energy Art to a Dao Body to sustain the continuous expenditure of the Lotus Flower Buddha Body.

As he proceeded through the blood storm, his vision was seriously hampered. The visibility was reduced to less than three meters, but thankfully, Zhou Wen had the Truth Listener earring. It allowed him to possess senses similar to radar.

Trudging through the muddy land, Zhou Wen proceeded towards the location indicated by the military map. The place he was heading to was the ruins that the former principal and the others had researched. It was also where they had vanished. It was definitely the place where Ouyang Lan and An Sheng were headed for.

After a short walk, Zhou Wen heard a figure walking towards him.

It was a creature that looked like a human. Its hair reached to the ground and covered its face. Its limbs were long and slender, and its entire body was drenched in blood. Its movements were very strange, like a zombie.

Zhou Wen didn’t dare lower his guard. He summoned the Saber Shield Knight and Demonized General and got them to charge forward first. No matter what it was, it was a creature inside the ancient battlefield. It was definitely not to be underestimated.

However, the Saber Shield Knight and Demonized General were unable to withstand the blood rain’s poison. They lost

control of themselves and began killing each other.

Does the blood rain have the same effect on a Companion Beast? Zhou Wen's mood worsened. Without being able to use a Companion Beast and having to constantly activate Lotus Flower Buddha Body to expend his Primordial Energy, this greatly reduced his combat strength.

Crack!

The strange creature suddenly moved at an incredible speed in the rain. Instantly, it appeared in front of the crazy Demonized General. It grabbed his head with both hands and twisted it off. Then, it casually threw the head to the ground and ripped off the Saber Shield Knight's head.

This is indeed not a place for people. Zhou Wen could tell from his opponent's speed that it was definitely an existence at the Epic stage.

He had encountered an Epic creature the moment he entered the ancient battlefield. It was even more terrifying than Zhou Wen imagined

Initially, he thought that even if it was the battlefield found in myths, there should be some lesser soldiers and generals. It was impossible for them to all be high-level creatures. But now, it seemed as if his wishes had been too ideal.

Zhou Wen decided to summon all his Companion Beasts to see if they could withstand the blood rain, so as to gauge how much combat strength he had left.

Ghost Bride was unafraid of the blood rain as she floated beside Zhou Wen.

The Mutated Overlord Snake in the Overlord Spear form wasn’t affected either. It could be used in the blood rain.

The Three-Eyed Golden Warrior and the Golden-Armored Beasts were unaffected in their companion form. However, the Silver-Winged Sky Spider was unable to withstand the power of the blood rain, as it went into a frenzy.

The Mutated Lotus Flower Ant was fine and even Doctor Darkness wasn’t affected. Truth Listener and the Yin-Yang Purple Air Bell could also be used.

The number of pets that Zhou Wen could use in the blood rain was much better than he had expected.

As he watched the monster charge at him, Zhou Wen tightened his grip on the Overlord Spear. At the instant the monster reached him, he used Ghost Steps and circled behind the monster. Augmented by Ever-Victorious, the Overlord Spear pierced through the monster’s back.

Ever-Victorious was indeed useful. The tip of the spear pierced straight through the monster’s body and stabbed into its back and out of its chest.

Zhou Wen was delighted, but he suddenly saw the monster’s body explode like a water ball, splattering black liquid all over the blood-colored avatar.

The black liquid quickly flowed through the blood rain, as if it had a life of its own. It gathered together again, distorting into the monster’s appearance.

What is this fellow? Zhou Wen was secretly alarmed. Just as he was about to launch another attack, he saw the screen turn black. The blood-colored avatar had died again.

Zhou Wen couldn’t help but frown. After some thought, he understood how the blood-colored avatar had died.

It must be because the black liquid came into contact with my body. From the looks of it, that monster has a toxicity that’s stronger than the bloody liquid. Zhou Wen was at a loss.

Although he knew that the monster possessed such power, he still couldn’t find a way to resolve it.

The monsters appeared to be water-elemental, so Overlord Spear’s attack with Ever-Victorious didn’t have much effect on it. Furthermore, he possessed a powerful corruptive ability, one that Lotus Flower Buddha Body was unable to withstand. An Epic stage dimensional creature was just too strong. Before Zhou Wen advanced to the Epic stage, he would always find it difficult to fight any Epic creature.

I have to find a way to counter it. Zhou Wen knew very well that experience was the best teacher. He entered the game once again and continued to seek out the monster’s weakness in battle.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 260 - Finding Weakness

Chapter 260 Finding Weakness

Lu Yunxian was extremely displeased with Zhou Wen. He just couldn’t understand why An Sheng would bring him to such a place.

Ignoring the reckless touring of the area, he spent all his time gaming after he returned to the garrison. He truly was an eyesore.

However, Lu Yunxian was relieved that Zhou Wen didn’t cause any trouble for them.

It wasn’t their fault they were irritated by Zhou Wen. The way he acted was just detestable. If Zhou Wen were in Lu Yunxian’s shoes, he probably wouldn’t have liked such a person either.

However, Zhou Wen had his reasons. Even though he knew it incurred the displeasure of others, he could only continue doing so.

Through repeated battles and repeated deaths, Zhou Wen’s physical condition and blood regeneration abilities began to find it difficult to keep up with the expenditure, despite it only being one drop of blood each time.

Usually when gaming, Zhou Wen would switch to the Small Perfection of Wisdom Sutra, significantly improving his ability to recover. However, when he died too frequently, he would still suffer from anemia. He didn’t know if it would cause any latent risks to his body.

Zhou Wen had also thought of getting a blood transfusion to make up for the loss. Although the blood transfusion required some troublesome paperwork, he should be able to obtain it if he thought of a way.

Zhou Wen ultimately gave up on the idea of a blood transfusion. He didn't know if the blood that was transfused into his body would count as his or the other person when dripped onto the mysterious phone.

He took out the blood supplements he had brought from the chaos space. Although he didn't know if they were of any use, it was better than nothing. Even a placebo was useful.

As he had earned a huge sum of money from selling Companion Eggs the last time, the supplementary medicine Zhou Wen had bought was clearly a lot more high-end. There was also good stuff like American ginseng and donkey-hide gelatin.

However, Zhou Wen searched everywhere, but he didn't find any ingredients like an electric pot. He didn't even have a hot water flask, so he could only call Lu Yunxian.

Lu Yunxian was discussing the latest intelligence with his colleagues. The changes in the ancient battlefield were getting more and more serious. Besides the blood river, dimensional creatures would occasionally appear.

Now, the garrison troops of the League were constantly clearing the monsters and, although they came under the jurisdiction of Luoyang's An family, the situation was so terrible that An Sheng and company would definitely be affected while inside.

Suddenly, Lu Yunxian heard his phone ring. He took a look and realized it was Zhou Wen. He frowned and answered the

call.

“Zhou Wen, what’s the matter?” Lu Yunxian asked.

“Is there anything like a rice cooker or an electric kettle? I need to cook something,” Zhou Wen said as he gamed.

“This is a military encampment, not a college dormitory. There are no such things,” Lu Yunxian said.

“Then, is there any way to boil stuff here?” Zhou Wen asked again.

“I’ll send someone over. If there’s anything you need, tell her. I’m currently in a meeting.” Lu Yunxian said before hanging up.

Zhou Wen didn’t take it to heart. He was only asking and it was fine if he couldn’t boil the supplement. He planned on buying the utensils needed to boil the blood replenishing supplement the next time before coming out and placing them into the chaos space.

In-game, Zhou Wen was fighting a monster. So many deaths weren’t without any rewards. He had mostly figured out the monster.

The monster was like a water ghost. It possessed water-elemental strength and ordinary physical attacks were useless against it. Furthermore, its body had a powerful virus. Any contact with its body would result in infection, even if it were a drop of water.

If one was physically resistant enough, they could still last for a period of time. Otherwise, an instant death was possible.

Zhou Wen was only at the Legendary stage. Relatively speaking, his physical qualities were relatively weak. He could use the Small Perfection of Wisdom Sutra to withstand the virus for a little while longer, but it wasn't of much use.

What was even more frightening was that the monster could mix its poison into the blood rain. It was completely impossible to defend against, and if one weren't careful, one would succumb to it.

When Zhou Wen used the Ancient Sovereign Sutra, it had a certain effect that restrained it, allowing him to injure its body. However, to kill it, just the augmentation of Primordial Energy was clearly insufficient.

If I could advance to the Epic stage, I could blast it apart with a punch with the augmentation of the Ancient Sovereign Sutra. Unfortunately, I'm still a Legendary. Zhou Wen sighed slightly as he continued sacrificing the blood-colored avatar's life to study his opponent and think of means to kill it.

Zhou Wen had also thought of circling around it, but after doing so, he ended up encountering another one. Clearly, there were more than one or two such monsters on the battlefield. If he couldn't think of a way to kill them now, he would definitely be unable to inch his way through the ancient battlefield.

While he was fighting the monster, there was a knock on the door.

"Come in," Zhou Wen said without looking up as he gamed.

Xu Wen walked in and frowned when she saw Zhou Wen gaming on his phone. However, she still said, "I'm Xu Wen from the medical corp. Battalion Commander Lu wanted me

to come over to see if you need anything. If you need anything in the future, just let me know.”

“Please cook the bag of medicine on the table for me.” Zhou Wen was fighting the monster, so he was unable to divert his attention to speak to Xu Wen.

“You’re injured?” Xu Wen asked with a frown.

Lu Yunxian wanted her to take good care of Zhou Wen. If Zhou Wen was injured, she had to do something immediately.

“No, it’s just some supplements for blood replenishment. If it’s convenient, can you boil it? If it’s not convenient, just leave it there,” Zhou Wen said.

Upon hearing Zhou Wen’s words, Xu Wen bit her lip and left Zhou Wen’s room without a word.

For Zhou Wen, who had been gaming all day in the dorm and doing nothing, to still drink such supplementary tonics left Xu Wen stupefied.

I really don’t know why Adjutant An brought such a good-for-nothing wastrel here. Although Xu Wen was displeased, she still found a female soldier from the medical corp to boil the medicine for Zhou Wen.

Xu Wen glanced at the medicine—they were all rather good supplementary tonics, and she couldn’t help but curse him for being such a wastrel.

When She took the medicine over, Zhou Wen was still gaming. She wasn’t in the mood to bother with him, so she just left the medicine and returned to take care of the injured.

Recently, a large number of dimensional creatures had appeared beyond the blood river and many soldiers had been injured in battle. Xu Wen felt that it was a waste for Zhou Wen to be drinking such tonics. She believed that it should be given to the injured soldiers.

Zhou Wen naturally didn’t know what Xu Wen was thinking. As he drank the medicine and gamed, he was once again tragically killed in the ancient battlefield.

I wonder when Banana Fairy will finish evolving? Zhou Wen glanced at the hurricane in the chaos space. It was still spinning without any signs of stopping.

Once again, he dripped his blood and entered the ancient battlefield. When he met the monster again, he took a deep breath and charged forward once more.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 261 - Fight Poison With Poison

Chapter 261 Fight Poison With Poison

When Zhou Wen stabbed the monster, it burst into a mass of black liquid once again. Zhou Wen hurriedly summoned his pet to block it. With most of his other pets killed in action, Zhou Wen summoned the weak Doctor Darkness to block the black liquid.

Zhou Wen originally imagined that Doctor Darkness would be killed instantly, but to his surprise, Doctor Darkness's body turned black due to the virus but didn't immediately die.

Doctor Darkness used a certain technique and a syringe appeared in one hand. He aimed the syringe at his arm and stabbed it in.

Zhou Wen only saw the liquid in the syringe being pushed into his body before he lost the luxury of time to look further. The monster had taken form and attacked again.

After dealing with him for a while, Zhou Wen was gradually left at the disadvantage. At that moment, he realized that the Doctor Darkness had rushed over to help him in combat. The scalpel in his hand shimmered with a thin blade beam. Although it was useless, it left Zhou Wen somewhat astonished.

Even the Three-Eyed Golden Warrior and the Golden-Armored Beast couldn’t withstand the terrifying poison after they made contact with the black liquid. Even if they turned into armor, they would still be corroded.

Doctor Darkness’s body wasn’t as strong as the Golden Warrior and Gold-Armored Beast; yet, he still survived after making contact with the black liquid. Furthermore, after a short period of time, he became energetic and lively. It was as if he had never been injured.

Zhou Wen wasn’t a match for the monster, so he was quickly forced to block the black liquid that splattered out from the monster’s body. This time, Zhou Wen summoned Doctor Darkness to help him block it. To his surprise, Doctor Darkness became even stronger this time. His body was stained with the black liquid, only to turn black from contact and then quickly recover their rosy colors.

Apart from the corrosion of his flesh, he didn’t suffer any damage from the virus.

This left Zhou Wen very surprised. Although the black liquid on the monster’s body was highly corrosive, it wasn’t lethal enough. Zhou Wen still had a way to deal with it.

However, the virus in the black liquid was something Zhou Wen was unable to defend against. He was basically killed by the virus every time.

Yet, Doctor Darkness was immune to it and seemed to have adequate resistance against the corrosive forces of the black liquid.

As Zhou Wen was so surprised, that moment of distraction allowed one drop of the monster’s black liquid to splatter onto him.

Black gas immediately arose from the blood-colored avatar's body as it rapidly expanded. Zhou Wen knew something was amiss as he suddenly recalled the scene of Doctor Darkness stabbing himself with a syringe. He immediately thought of something

"Doctor Darkness, use Fight Poison With Poison." Zhou Wen gave the order. Without any hesitation, Doctor Darkness carried out Zhou Wen's order. A syringe appeared in his hand and stabbed the blood-colored avatar's body, injecting the poison into the blood-colored avatar's body.

Zhou Wen immediately felt a spasming pain spread throughout his body, but the pain slowed the spreading speed of the monster's virus, preventing him from dying as quickly as before.

It actually works! Zhou Wen was only giving it a try, he never expected it to be that effective. Although the pain was intense, he didn't die.

However, the poison could only temporarily withstand the virus and prevent the virus from spreading within his body. It had not been eliminated.

From the looks of it, Doctor Darkness isn't afraid of the virus solely because of Fight Poison With Poison. It has a lot to do with his own physique and Life Providence. Zhou Wen persisted for a while longer before being sprayed by the black liquid once again. The virus in his body exceeded the poison that Doctor Darkness had injected into him, and the virus began to spread again.

Zhou Wen hurriedly got Doctor Darkness to inject him with more poison using Fight Poison With Poison.

After injecting two batches of poison, the virus in Zhou Wen's body was stabilized again. However, the poison that Doctor Darkness had injected was extremely stimulating for his body. It made Zhou Wen feel pain as if he was being pricked by needles and he nearly stumbled to the ground.

The blood-colored avatar was ultimately killed. It was not that the monster had ripped off his head, but that he had made contact with some more of the black liquid. After injecting the poison again, the blood-colored avatar could no longer take it physically.

From the looks of it, Fight Poison With Poison cannot be used constantly. After injecting more than a certain amount of poison, it will cause tremendous damage to the body. Zhou Wen was somewhat disappointed as he originally imagined that he had found a way to deal with the monster. From the looks of it, it was only temporary.

On the other hand, Doctor Darkness's resistance to the virus was getting higher and higher. He could actually ignore the virus of the blood rain and the monster.

Unfortunately, he was still at the Legendary stage and had few combat skills. The monster could easily rip its head off. Otherwise, with his abilities, he would have perfectly countered such monsters.

Doctor Darkness was an Epic in the first place. It was only because Zhou Wen had insufficient Primordial Energy in his incubation that he had fallen to the Legendary stage. When he evolved into a mature body, he might be able to restrain that monster.

Although he had such thoughts, Zhou Wen knew that it was impossible for Doctor Darkness to evolve into his mature form in such a short period of time.

The abilities of Doctor Darkness allowed Zhou Wen to gain the ability to circle around the monster a little more. However, Fight Poison With Poison was just too painful. His organs felt like they were being pricked by needles, something ordinary people would find difficult to tolerate.

After injecting the poison a few times, Zhou Wen discovered something strange. Doctor Darkness's Fight Poison With Poison seemed to have more resistant traits against the virus.

In the beginning, Zhou Wen had needed an injection after making contact with one or two drops of black liquid. However, after a few times, Zhou Wen discovered that Doctor Darkness needed very little poison to put the virus at bay. Furthermore, its restraining effects were improving.

He's growing? The virus here has made Doctor Darkness rapidly grow? Zhou Wen immediately understood what was happening.

When Zhou Wen realized this, he consciously allowed Doctor Darkness to come into contact with even more poison. The blood rain which was everywhere and the black liquid on the monster's body were all candidates to be his nutrients.

As the poison that Doctor Darkness came into contact with increased, his resistance towards the virus increased. Apart from his physical traits being inferior to the monster, he eventually became immune to the monster's virus.

Furthermore, his usage of Fight Poison With Poison became more and more effective. As a result, one injection from Doctor Darkness after the blood-colored avatar made contact with a few drops of black liquid ended up being an overdose, causing the blood-colored avatar to be poisoned to death.

Zhou Wen once again came in front of the monster. When Doctor Darkness helped him block the black liquid, the system suddenly produced a notification: ‘Doctor Darkness has reached the growth requirement and evolved into a mature body.’

Following the system’s notification, a strange change occurred to Doctor Darkness’s body. White streams of light emitted from his body. The white doctor robe flared up with the streams of light as a terrifying aura erupted from him.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 262 - Returning to the Epic Stage

Chapter 262 Returning to the Epic Stage

Light arose from Doctor Darkness’s body, forming a shadow projection of a doctor over his head. It was none other than the Dr. Soul Life Soul which Zhou Wen had seen before.

Seeing the monster charge at him again, Doctor Darkness raised the scalpel in his hand while Dr. Soul moved as well. He held the scalpel formed from light and stabbed it into the monster.

The monster’s originally running body seemed to be nailed to the ground as it stopped moving.

Zhou Wen was delighted. He knew that Doctor Darkness had returned to the Epic stage. He finally had a powerful fighter who could be used.

Bam!

However, the monster’s body turned into black liquid and exploded. Dr. Soul pinning him down with the scalpel shadow had instantly lost its effect.

However, the black liquid of the monster was useless against Doctor Darkness. It once again condensed into a monster and in an instant, it was behind Doctor Darkness. It wanted to twist Doctor Darkness’s head off with its advantage of speed.

But now, Doctor Darkness had evolved to the Epic stage and he could keep up. With a slight flash of his body, he managed to dodge its hands. At the same time, the scalpel in his left hand flashed rapidly, slicing across the monster's body continuously.

In the blink of an eye, the scalpel diced the monster's body into several pieces.

However, the monster's body was not affected at all. It quickly merged into one and pounced towards Doctor Darkness once again.

Zhou Wen became a bystander in the battle between the two Epic creatures. Taking this opportunity, he glanced at the information of Doctor Darkness after his evolution.

Doctor Darkness: Epic

Life Providence: Golden Left Hand

Life Soul: Dr. Soul

Strength: 27

Speed: 40

Constitution: 29

Primordial Energy: 39

Talent Skill: Scalpel, Fight Poison With Poison, Light of Penetration

Companion Form: Soul

It was somewhat different from the original Epic Doctor Darkness's attributes. The four basic stats had increased,

but they were still mainly concentrated on Speed and Primordial Energy. This was not much of a change.

The biggest transformation was his companion form. Doctor Darkness didn’t have a companion form previously, but he did now. Zhou Wen didn’t quite understand what a soul companion form was.

While Zhou Wen was thinking about this, he suddenly saw a strange light shoot out from Doctor Darkness’s eyes. Dr. Soul’s eyes lit up as well. With that, four beams shone on the monster’s body, overlapping each other like a spotlight, illuminating the monster’s body.

The beam of light didn’t have any lethality. Zhou Wen knew that it was likely the Light of Penetration skill of Doctor Darkness, but he didn’t know how effective it was.

In the next second, Doctor Darkness moved. He held the scalpel in his left hand and disappeared like a magic trick. He was incredibly fast as he moved the scalpel with almost indiscernible trajectories.

The monster that flew towards him was stabbed in the waist.

This time, the monster didn’t explode into black liquid. Zhou Wen thought he heard something shatter inside its body. In the next second, the monster took a few steps back and exploded, turning into a pool of black liquid. However, this time, he wasn’t reborn again. Instead, he slowly merged into the mud, leaving only a crystal behind.

A notification popped up in the game: ‘Killed Epic creature, Wangliang. Discovered Dimensional Crystal.’

However, Zhou Wen couldn’t help but be taken aback when he saw the crystal’s name clearly. The dimensional crystal

was different from what he had seen before.

The small black crystal’s size wasn’t obvious in-game. He estimated it to be about the size of a quail egg, but its name was a little odd.

Poison Crystal: 7

Zhou Wen got the blood-colored avatar to pick up the virus crystal, and the game system immediately asked if he wanted to absorb it.

Zhou Wen chose to absorb it and soon, a strange force fused into his body. Then, he looked at the blood-colored avatar’s attributes and realized that its stats had changed from four different types to five. The new attribute was Poison, and its value was seven.

Zhou Wen didn’t know much about Epic matters, he didn’t know what the Poison stat was for either.

However, he soon discovered that he had obtained quite a lot of benefits after obtaining a seven-valued Poison stat. This was because he could directly withstand the blood rain and not be reduced to a lunatic by the poison.

From the looks of it, the Poison stat gives me quite a good viral immunity. However, I still need to further test how strong this resistance is. Zhou Wen was in a good mood as he continued walking forward with Doctor Darkness.

He had already wasted too much time here. He had to rush to the ruins as soon as possible.

After walking for more than half a kilometer, a monster appeared in front of him. Zhou Wen originally imagined that

it was a Wangliang, but upon careful inspection, something was amiss.

The monster that appeared wasn't a Wangliang, but rather, a very strange creature. The creature's head looked like a wyrm with no horns on its head. Its body was like a lion's, its tail like a crocodile's. Its body was also covered in crocodile-like skin.

Zhou Wen's heart stirred. The one I killed previously was a Wangliang. Could this be the Chi from ChiMeiWangliang?

It was common to use the term ChiMeiWangliang to describe monsters of the mountains and rivers in the East District. Even if one didn't recognize the word, most people in the East District could guess that this phrase was used to describe all kinds of bad people. And with these four words all having the "ghost" radical in their characters, it meant a kind of ghost or monster.

Based on what Zhou Wen knew, the term "ChiMeiWangliang" represented three types of monsters. Wangliang referred to the ghost of plagues according to legend. There were also tales that he was one of the legendary Five Emperors of ancient times—Zhuan Xu's third son that had drowned to death.

Although it was a tale and couldn't be taken seriously, since a Wangliang had appeared, such a strange creature in front of him might just be the Chi of ChiMeiWangliang

This was because the legendary Mei, or succubus, was a ghost found in mountains and forests. It was a wood spirit that didn't match the monster's image in front of him. On the other hand, it was a beast-like ghost. There were also tales that it was one of the nine sons of the dragon. It did resemble the monster in front of him.

However, these were tales. They might not be the same as the dimensional creature in front of him.

Seeing the monster rushing over, Zhou Wen ordered Doctor Darkness to charge forward. Dr. Soul also condensed a scalpel made of light as he stabbed the glimmering weapon at the monster.

“Roar!” The monster let out a roar as black flames burst out from its body, transforming it into a Life Soul that was in the form of a black dragon. Without waiting for Dr. Soul to react, it swallowed him in one bite.

“Ah!” Doctor Darkness cried out in pain. A powerhouse’s pain of having a Life Soul devoured was an excruciating pain that was akin to having his heart dug out.

While Doctor Darkness was in pain, the monster pounced on him and swallowed him.

Zhou Wen controlled the blood-colored avatar and circled to the back of the monster with Ghost Steps, stabbing its soft waist with his Overlord Spear.

However, before Overlord Spear could stab into the monster’s waist, the black dragon-resembling Life Soul spewed out black smoke at the blood-colored avatar. This resembled a volcanic eruption as it enveloped the blood-colored avatar’s body.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 263 - Battlefield Ruins

Chapter 263 Battlefield Ruins

Without a word, Zhou Wen summoned his Yin-Yang Purple Air Bell and aimed it at the black smoke.

The black smoke seemed to be sucked away as it surged into the Yin-Yang Purple Air Bell. In the blink of an eye, it was sucked clean.

The monster seemed somewhat puzzled as it stared at the Yin-Yang Purple Air Bell with its strange eyes. Zhou Wen held the bell and shook it at the monster.

Black smoke immediately gushed out from the bell, enveloping the monster's body. When the black smoke touched its scales, it immediately seeped in. The monster's eyes rolled back as it collapsed to the ground.

Holy sh*t, is this black smoke that powerful? It even poisoned the monster to death? Zhou Wen was alarmed but upon closer inspection, he realized that the monster hadn't died. It had only fallen asleep.

The monster had fallen asleep and its Life Soul seemed to lose control. It floated above its head motionlessly.

How could Zhou Wen miss such a good opportunity? He charged forward with the Overlord Spear in hand and stabbed the monster in the abdomen.

Ever-Victorious showed its effects as the tip of the spear stabbed into the monster's abdomen. A hole was torn open

in the monster’s abdomen and black blood immediately flowed out.

It was unknown what the black smoke’s strength was, but after having such a huge hole stabbed through, the monster didn’t react at all despite bleeding excessively. It continued sleeping soundly, leaving Zhou Wen astonished.

Zhou Wen naturally wasn’t going to be merciful with it. He stabbed it again and again, stabbing at it for a total of 18 times before the monster was finally dead. The black dragon-like Life Soul also shattered.

A notification popped up in-game: ‘Killed the Epic creature, Chi. Discovered Dimensional Crystal.’

Zhou Wen saw that the dimensional crystal that dropped was a Strength Crystal with 32 points. Although its value was very high to him, Zhou Wen’s limit was at 21. It was useless no matter how good it was.

After absorbing the 32-valued Strength Crystal, Zhou Wen felt that he was brimming with strength. His earlier fatigue was wiped clean, but his Strength stat didn’t increase. It remained at 21 points.

Since the Wangliang and Chi have appeared, there should be a Mei. I wonder what kind of creature the Mei is. Zhou Wen was filled with curiosity.

However, he was not that bored to the point of deliberately searching for the Mei. He headed for the ruins through the blood rain before he encountered another Wangliang.

With a Dark Doctor to restrain it, it was rather easy to kill it. However, it didn’t drop any Poison Crystals and only

dropped an ordinary Speed crystal. It was useless for Zhou Wen now.

As he charged towards the ruins, he encountered several Wangliang and Chi. However, he didn’t see the Mei, nor did anything useful drop.

After battling the entire night, Zhou Wen finally arrived at the spot where the map marked the ruins.

He wasn’t in a rush to get the blood-colored avatar to walk over when he saw the broken stone pillars and the stone walls that stood in the middle of the blood rain not far away. Instead, he took the information An Sheng had handed out before leaving and carefully read it again. According to the information, the League had sent a few more groups of people to the ruins to find Ouyang Ting and the others.

However, when they entered the ruins, they died for no explicable reason. Even Epic experts were no exception. Until now, they had not found the reason.

It was also because of this that they felt that the former principal and the others were already dead inside. Hence, they didn’t send any more search and rescue teams. Help came only when the An family received the news.

Zhou Wen observed the ruins from afar, hoping to find any clues no matter how minute. However, there were ancient symbols on them that he couldn’t decipher. No matter how he looked at them, he couldn’t tell anything

I’ll still have to risk my life to scout the way. Zhou Wen summoned Doctor Darkness and Ghost Bride. Together with Three-Eyed Golden Warrior and Gold-Armored Beast, they entered the ruins as the blood-colored avatar remained outside.

Golden Warrior and Gold-Armored Beast were pets with powerful bodies, while Ghost Bride had the body of a ghost. Doctor Darkness was an Epic pet, so Zhou Wen wanted to see who would die among them. Through this, he could determine how terrifying the powers were inside.

The four pets carefully walked into the ruins and slowly explored.

After walking for a short distance, a cracking sound was heard as the Golden Warrior’s head flew up from his neck as he died instantly.

Just like what was written in the information. Dying from a beheading. Zhou Wen frowned slightly. Although he had read it very carefully, he didn’t see any creatures appear. Nor did he notice any power fluctuations. It was as though an invisible executioner had cleaved off the Golden Warrior’s head.

Crack!

As Zhou Wen was pondering over the matter, Doctor Darkness’s head fell to the ground and he died on the spot. He didn’t put up any resistance just because he was an Epic creature. His death was equally clean.

Zhou Wen still couldn’t see what was in the ruin. He couldn’t even tell how Doctor Darkness died.

Not long later, Gold-Armored Beast suffered the same fate. Similarly, it had no chance to react. It died quickly, and in less than thirty minutes, Zhou Wen’s three Companion Beasts, including the Epic Doctor Darkness, had been killed silently. Only Ghost Bride remained floating forward.

Ghost Bride continued forward for a while, but her head wasn’t chopped off. This delighted Zhou Wen. It looks like that power is ineffective against ghosts.

Zhou Wen didn’t dare enter, but with Ghost Bride around, she could scout the path for him.

Zhou Wen didn’t hesitate any further as he sped her up. He began his carpet search of the ruins, hoping to discover something.

Perhaps it was because the power in the ruins was too terrifying that even ChiMeiWangliang didn’t appear. There was only a dead silence. Apart from the blood rain outside, all that was left were those decrepit ancient buildings.

Zhou Wen controlled Ghost Bride to get her to search for clues in all sorts of rundown buildings.

This was a game, so he definitely couldn’t find the former principal and company here. However, it was impossible for them to vanish into thin air. They must have gone somewhere. All Zhou Wen wanted to do was find the place.

At the encampment, the soldiers guarding the door suddenly saw someone in front of them rushing over like madmen. They hurriedly raised their rifles.

“Halt. Don’t move any further, or else we’ll shoot.” A soldier hurriedly warned when he saw that the person was charging over.

However, that person didn’t stop and continued running like a madman.

Just as the soldier was about to deliver a warning shot, he suddenly realized that the person was wearing the same

military uniform as them. However, because he was covered in blood, most of the parts of his military uniform had turned dark red.

“It’s Liu Chengzhi… Didn’t he follow Madam Lan to the ancient battlefield? Why is he running back alone? Where’s Madam Lan and the rest?” One of the soldiers took a closer look and instantly recognized who that person was. He was shocked and quickly went forward to welcome him.

Liu Chengzhi, who was covered in blood, pounced over when he saw the two of them. The two soldiers quickly held him up.

“Quick… Quick, tell Adjutant An… Madam is in danger… Save her immediately… If there’s any delay, it’ll be too late…” Liu Chengzhi said anxiously as he coughed out blood.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 264 - Tunnel Ruins

Chapter 264 Tunnel Ruins

“Liu Chengzhi, what happened?” Lu Yunxian asked as he looked at Liu Chengzhi, who was being treated on a sickbed.

Liu Chengzhi’s injuries were horrifying. Under the treatment of a Companion Beast with healing abilities, his life was saved. However, his injuries still required a longer period of treatment.

“Commander, quickly tell Adjutant An that Madam Lan is trapped in the ruins. Quickly send someone to help her. It will be too late if we delay any longer,” Liu Chengzhi said anxiously.

“Adjutant An entered the ancient ruins two days ago. Didn’t you encounter them?” Xu Wen asked.

Liu Chengzhi was stunned when he heard that. He shook his head and said, “Adjutant An has already entered the ruins? Why didn’t I see them? I escaped from the ruins and rushed back with all my might, but I didn’t see anyone.”

“That’s strange. Tell me clearly what happened to Madam Lan,” Lu Yun asked first.

Liu Chengzhi hurriedly said, “We entered the ancient battlefield with Madam Lan and encountered many strange things. However, under Madam Lan’s lead, we managed to arrive at the ruins where Old Mr. Ouyang and the rest studied without any mishaps. That place had already become extremely bizarre. Many of our Companion Beasts

were beheaded there. Finally, Madam Lan came up with a way to safely enter the ruins."

Due to the excessive loss of blood, Liu Chengzhi felt a little thirsty as he swallowed his saliva before continuing, "In the ruins, we found an entrance that leads underground. There was also a mark left behind by Old Mr. Ouyang. In the beginning, we used many of our Companion Beasts to scout the area, but nothing happened. However, when Madam Lan led the group down, the entrance to the passageway was sealed. The few of us who stayed outside did all we could to open the stone door."

"And then?" Xu Wen pressed.

Liu Chengzhi panted a few times before continuing, "Three hours later, the stone door at the entrance opened automatically and Old Qiu rushed out. By then, old Qiu was covered in blood and I almost couldn't see the color of his military uniform. He rushed over and directly handed me a strange stone artifact. In a very urgent tone, he told me to pass the stone artifact to Adjutant An and get Adjutant An to lead men into the ruins to save Madam Lan or it would be too late. He was in such a hurry that he spoke in a delirious manner. He said that the stone artifact is a key that opens some doors. The stone artifact needs to be returned before the door can be opened to save Madam Lan. We have to be fast, or it will be too late. He kept repeating himself, and the few people we left guarding the spot couldn't say a word. Just as they were about to ask questions, Old Qiu suddenly spat out a mouthful of blood and passed away."

"What about the stone artifact?" Lu Yunxian asked.

Liu Chengzhi wore a look of guilt. "Even people like Madam Lan and Old Qiu were unable to deal with the situation in

the stone passageway, so it would be impossible for us to do so. After our discussion, we planned on returning with the stone artifact and report the situation. However, the ancient battlefield is simply too terrifying. A few of our brothers died while I barely survived. The stone artifact was swallowed by a dimensional creature with a wyrm's head and a lion's body along the way. It's all my fault for not being able to hold onto it…"

"Do you still remember where that dimensional creature is?" Lu Yunxian asked after some thought.

"I roughly know the location, but I wonder if the dimensional creature is still there," Liu Chengzhi said.

"Alright, Xu Wen, do your best to treat Liu Chengzhi's injuries. Everyone else, prepare to be on standby. Prepare to set off anytime," Lu Yunxian said.

"Commander Lu, since Adjutant An has already gone, it probably won't be of much use for us to enter, right?" a middle-aged officer asked.

Lu Yunxian said, "When Liu Chengzhi and company returned, they didn't encounter Adjutant An. Therefore, even if Adjutant An reached the ruins, he wouldn't know of the stone artifact's existence, much less know that it has been swallowed by a dimensional creature. We have to deliver it to him."

"We can't do much, but killing a dimensional creature shouldn't be difficult. Furthermore, Liu Chengzhi is still familiar with the situation. There shouldn't be any major problems. Go and prepare," said Lu Yunxian in a tone that didn't allow for doubts.

Right now, Lu Yunxian was the highest-ranking officer. Since he had already decided, no one doubted him. They went back to prepare to enter the ancient battlefield.

Xu Wen also wanted to go, but Lu Yunxian rejected her request. Lu Yunxian wanted her to stay behind to take care of Zhou Wen, to ensure that nothing happened to him.

“Commander, just let me go. My healing abilities can reduce the number of casualties. Zhou Wen can just be taken off by the female soldiers at the medical corp,” Xu Wen requested once again.

“Stay behind to take care of Zhou Wen. That’s an order. If anything happens to him, you will be court-martialed. There’s absolutely no room for negotiation,” Lu Yunxian said firmly.

He had said it in a relaxed manner earlier, but he knew that the ancient battlefield was very dangerous. They would be placed in grave danger by heading in, and he didn’t want Xu Wen to take the risk.

Xu Wen opened her mouth but was at a loss for words. She was a soldier, so she could only obey Lu Yunxian’s orders. However, she felt extremely indignant.

Zhou Wen was gaming in his room, but he wore the Truth Listener earring at all times, so he could clearly hear the sounds nearby.

When Liu Chengzhi returned, the place was a little far from where Zhou Wen bunked. Zhou Wen didn’t hear it, but when Lu Yunxian and the others prepared to set off, he heard the commotion.

When he came out to take a look, Lu Yunxian and the rest had already boarded their vehicles and set off. Two jeeps and a huge truck were driving out of the camp.

Zhou Wen realized what had happened. Seeing Xu Wen standing at the entrance of the camp, he walked over and asked, “Head Nurse Xu, what happened? Where are Commander Lu and the rest going?”

“Why are you asking so much? Do you dare to go to the ancient battlefield to rescue lives? Go back and play your game,” Xu Wen snapped.

Xu Wen believed that if it wasn’t for Zhou Wen, she wouldn’t have been left behind.

“Rescue lives in the ancient battlefield? Who are they going to rescue? Ouyang Lan or An Sheng?” Zhou Wen was alarmed as he hurriedly asked.

“It’s none of your business who’s being rescued.” Xu Wen didn’t wish to say much to Zhou Wen.

Zhou Wen frowned slightly. He knew how dangerous the ancient battlefield was, which was why the An family had invited so many Epic experts from outside. However, if Commander Lu and those low-ranking officers were to enter the ancient battlefield, it was basically equivalent to sending themselves to their deaths.

“Head Nurse Xu, I believe you still don’t know that Ouyang Lan is actually my mother, right? I hope you can understand my feelings and tell me what happened,” Zhou Wen said when he saw that Xu Wen wasn’t willing to tell him what had happened.

“Who are you lying to? Madam Lan only has two children- Overseer and Miss An Jing. Do you think you’re the Overseer? Or Miss An Jing?” Xu Wen said with a pout.

“You should know about Ouyang Lan’s remarriage, right? I’m her new husband’s son. Who do you think I am to her?” Zhou Wen asked.

Xu Wen looked at Zhou Wen in disbelief.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 265 - Heading to the Ruins

Chapter 265 Heading to the Ruins

“If it wasn’t for my identity, why do you think An Sheng wants all of you to take care of me?” Seeing Xu Wen’s hesitation, Zhou Wen went against his conscience and said, “My relationship with Ouyang Lan is very good, just like a biological mother and son. My concern for her is definitely no less than the An siblings. Can you tell me what happened?”

Xu Wen hesitated for a moment. Believing that it wasn’t much of a secret, she recounted the entire incident to Zhou Wen.

After Zhou Wen heard that, he turned and walked out of the camp.

Although Lu Yunxian was an Epic expert, he didn’t have many capable people under him. The low-level officers he had taken were basically at the Legendary stage. With their abilities, it was too difficult to deal with the dimensional creatures on the ancient battlefield.

Their survival had nothing to do with Zhou Wen, but if they couldn’t retrieve the stone artifact, Ouyang Lan might very well die. It might even be possible that the former principal was also in the underground stone passageway, so Zhou Wen had no choice but to retrieve it.

“Hey, where are you going?” Xu Wen hurriedly chased after Zhou Wen when she saw him heading outside the camp.

“I’ll help Commander Lu and the rest retrieve the stone artifact,” Zhou Wen said.

“Stop fooling around. You’re just a student. Why are you messing around?” Xu Wen hurriedly stopped Zhou Wen. Lu Yunxian wanted her to watch over Zhou Wen, so she couldn’t let him do anything rash.

“Head Nurse Xu, you are the highest commander of the medical corp and also the best doctor. Why didn’t you participate in this operation?” Zhou Wen asked Xu Wen.

Xu Wen snorted and said, “It’s all because of you. If it wasn’t for the fact that I had to stay and take care of you, I would have definitely gone. So you should stay here obediently and stop causing trouble.”

“Then are you really not going? The ancient battlefield is fraught with danger. As the best medical personnel here, how can you stay behind and watch helplessly as your comrades die without doing anything? Comrades who can clearly live but will have to die because you weren’t there. Can you really be at ease?” Zhou Wen stared at Xu Wen as he clearly enunciated each word.

Xu Wen’s expression changed slightly, but she still said, “Whatever you say is useless. We must stay in the camp and not go anywhere. Otherwise, I won’t be able to answer to Commander Lu, Adjutant An, and Madam Lan.”

“Commander Lu got you to protect me, right?” Zhou Wen said after some thought.

“That’s right.” Xu Wen nodded.

“He didn’t say that I can’t leave the military camp, right?” Zhou Wen asked again.

“Well…” Xu Wen hesitated.

“Since he didn’t say that I’m not allowed to go, and he wants you to protect me, that means that you will be going wherever I go, right?” Zhou Wen added.

Xu Wen was slightly taken aback.

“Then, do you want to go or not?” Zhou Wen stared at Xu Wen with a burning gaze.

“No, I can’t let you take the risk…” Xu Wen struggled internally.

“Let’s go to the blood river to take a look. We won’t cross it. Waiting here is just too torturous. You wish to wait somewhere nearby, right?” Zhou Wen said with a sincere look.

“Well…” Xu Wen was still very hesitant.

“Anyway, I have to take a look. It’s up to you to decide if you want to go.” Zhou Wen walked around Xu Wen and walked towards the camp’s entrance.

Xu Wen gritted her teeth but didn’t stop Zhou Wen as she chased him out of the camp.

Xu Wen felt that a spoiled fellow like Zhou Wen, who stayed cooped up inside the encampment and ate supplementary tonics, definitely didn’t have the guts to enter the ancient battlefield.

The main reason she agreed was that she was also feeling anxious. If she were to continue waiting in the encampment, she would feel too uneasy. In fact, she wanted to go more than Zhou Wen. His words had already shaken her resolve.

“How long do you think walking will take? Come on up.” Xu Wen summoned a white lion. It was extremely majestic and was even taller than a horse.

Zhou Wen originally wanted to summon his mount, but his mount wasn’t very fast. It wasn’t as fast as he ran, so it was useless.

Seeing Xu Wen’s white lion running quite quickly, Zhou Wen jumped up and sat behind her.

Xu Wen ordered the white lion to run at full speed and chased in the direction that Commander Lu and the rest had gone.

“Don’t go too fast,” Zhou Wen suddenly said to Xu Wen.

Xu Wen was slightly taken aback before she understood what Zhou Wen meant. If they ran too quickly and ended up catching up with Commander Lu and company, they would definitely be chased back.

Xu Wen grunted. When she saw the troops from afar, she slowed down a little.

Xu Wen steered the white lion in front while Zhou Wen continued gaming. Ghost Bride had found the tunnel and stone steps in the ruins.

However, there seemed to be some terrifying power inside that made Ghost Bride hesitate.

Zhou Wen knew that Ghost Bride must have sensed something, but unfortunately, she couldn’t express it. Zhou Wen could only vaguely sense that she was afraid of something and didn’t dare enter the passageway.

Since Ghost Bride didn’t dare enter, Zhou Wen had no choice but to think of a way to enter. Ouyang Lan and the former principal might be trapped inside. Even if he didn’t enter in the future, he knew that An Sheng would definitely enter. If he could find out ahead of time what danger was inside, he could warn An Sheng so reducing their sacrifices and giving them a greater chance of rescuing Ouyang Lan and the former principal.

What kind of power does the beheading in the ruins? Zhou Wen had already restarted the game a few times and had thought of many methods, but he still couldn’t figure out what kind of power it was.

Even Doctor Darkness’s Light of Penetration couldn’t detect any problems in the ruins.

Zhou Wen hesitated for a moment before turning Doctor Darkness into his companion form. He saw that Doctor Darkness’s body transformed into a beam of light that clung onto the blood-colored avatar like an illusion.

Zhou Wen was slightly taken aback as he realized that in the blood-colored avatar’s skill column, there were skills—Scalpel, Fight Poison With Poison, and Light of Penetration.

Doctor Darkness’s soul state actually imbued his powers on the master, allowing the master to use them.

Zhou Wen was delighted as he controlled the blood-colored avatar to head to the ruins again. Soon, he encountered a Wangliang.

Zhou Wen knew how Doctor Darkness killed Wangliangs, so he activated Light of Penetration and shot a beam at it.

Under the Light of Penetration, the Wangliang’ body seemed to turn transparent

-all the meridians and organs within could be seen clearly. Zhou Wen immediately saw a tiny black bead rapidly flowing within the Wangliang. The bead was only the size of a rice grain and was extremely inconspicuous. It moved at an extremely fast speed, like a cardiograph. Furthermore, it didn’t have any pattern, making it difficult to capture its trajectory.

Zhou Wen immediately understood how to kill the Wangliang.

With the Ghost Steps activated, Zhou Wen instantly appeared behind the Wangliang. With Scalpel, a white beam of light condensed into a scalpel and instantly pierced through the Wangliang’s body and struck the beating bead.

Bam!

As soon as the bead broke apart, the Wangliang’s body collapsed into a pool of black liquid that sprayed onto the ground. The game also gave the notification that he had killed an Epic Wangliang.

As long as I can understand the abilities and weaknesses of an Epic creature, it’s not impossible for me to kill them with my present strength. Zhou Wen increasingly felt the importance of knowing himself as well as the enemy.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 266 - Are You Nuts?

Chapter 266 Are You Nuts?

Both banks of the blood river were two completely different worlds. On one side, the weather was perfect while on the other side, there was a bloody storm that stretched for thousands of kilometers. Mountains and rivers were dyed with blood, as though they were in hell.

When Zhou Wen and Xu Wen arrived at the blood riverbank, Lu Yunxian had already led the officers across the river.

“Head Nurse Xu, why are you here?” A low-ranking officer who was staying behind quickly greeted Xu Wen when he saw her.

“It’s a little unsettling to stay in the garrison. Let’s just wait here for Commander Lu and the rest to return,” Xu Wen said as she sized up the interior of the vehicle.

Although she felt that she shouldn’t cross the river and had to obey orders and take care of Zhou Wen, she couldn’t help but look inside the car, hoping to find the remaining custom raincoats.

Without the custom raincoat, one wasn’t able to move an inch in the blood rain. Upon contact with the raindrops, they would become lunatics. Entering would be suicide.

Unfortunately, the number of custom raincoats was limited. Ouyang Lan and An Sheng had taken two batches away one after another. There weren’t many left after that. Lu Yunxian and the others had only obtained about ten sets, so only

about ten people had crossed the river. The others could only wait here to receive them.

Without any custom raincoat left, Xu Wen felt extremely disappointed. It was impossible for her to even think about crossing the river now.

Zhou Wen stood by the blood river and looked at the blood rain with mixed emotions. Before he came to Zhuolu, he believed that he definitely wouldn’t enter the ancient battlefield. All he needed to do was game outside and provide some help.

But now, he had to cross the river and enter that terrifying place personally.

I hope there’s no need to use the words left behind by Teacher. Zhou Wen didn’t think it would be too dangerous. He had already gained a better understanding of the ancient battlefield in-game. As long as he didn’t enter the ruins, there wouldn’t be too much danger.

“Do you have any more raincoats left?” Zhou Wen asked the officer.

Xu Wen said, “The number of raincoats we have is too limited. There wasn’t enough for Commander Lu and the rest, so how can there be any left? Don’t think too much. Just wait here for Commander Lu and the rest to return. With Commander Lu and Adjutant An’s abilities, they will definitely be able to save Madam Lan and Old Mr. Ouyang and return safely with them.”

Zhou Wen stood by the blood river and looked at the other side of the river before saying slowly, “You’re right. Ah Sheng and company are both excellent. Perhaps they can return safely.”

With that said, Zhou Wen paused for a moment as the luster in his eyes gradually turned sharp. Then, he said, “Unfortunately, I’m a person who doesn’t like gambling. I can’t sit here and wait for the needle of a wheel of fortune to stop. I can’t watch the needle waver between luckiness and unluckiness. I want to control the needle and wheel and make them stop at the position I want.”

The more Xu Wen processed what he said, the more she felt that something was amiss. Just as her expression changed slightly and she was about to say something, she saw Zhou Wen run towards the blood river, his body wrapped in black armor. In a few steps, he reached the edge of the river bank and leaped up, flitting across the river.

Xu Wen and company were shocked. Without any hesitation, Xu Wen reached out and grabbed an umbrella beside her. At the same time, she summoned a strange bird that was shimmering with lightning. The strange lightning bird transformed into a pair of wings and landed behind her.

Although Zhou Wen was wearing armor, the armor couldn’t protect his entire body, so there would still be blood rain touching him. To Xu Wen, Zhou Wen’s actions were akin to having a death wish.

The lightning wings on Xu Wen’s back flapped as she instantly streaked across the sky like a bolt of lightning. She caught up with Zhou Wen who was about to enter the blood rain. She grabbed his shoulder and opened the umbrella to block the falling rain.

“Are you nuts?” Zhou Wen looked at Xu Wen in puzzlement.

It was impossible for the umbrella to block all the blood rain. Furthermore, Xu Wen was mainly using the umbrella to

cover Zhou Wen’s body, so many blood rain droplets splattered onto her body.

Although she had already summoned her armor-type Companion Beast to protect her, she was unable to envelop her entire body with it. A few raindrops of blood splattered onto her cheeks.

Zhou Wen couldn’t understand why Xu Wen would do that. She had nothing to do with him, and she didn’t even seem to like him. Yet, she had risked her life to rush over. This was something Zhou Wen couldn’t understand.

“You are the one who’s nuts. Go back with me.” Xu Wen grabbed Zhou Wen and exerted her strength with her wings, trying to fly back to the other side.

However, she still underestimated the blood rain’s infectious ability. In an instant, her eyes turned red, as though they were about to drip blood. Her consciousness suddenly blurred as she nearly caused Xu Wen to fall into the blood river.

With just a tiny bit of rationality left, Xu Wen threw Zhou Wen across the river as she landed by the side of the river of blood. She stood motionless in the rain with an umbrella in hand, knowing that she couldn’t return.

“Just wait patiently for Commander Lu and the rest to come back. You’re not a child anymore. Don’t always give others trouble. No one can keep protecting you.” Xu Wen’s voice gradually turned hoarse, and her eyes gradually turned ferocious. Blood had already begun to flow out of them.

“B*stard… You b*stard…” When the officer on the other side saw this scene, he felt like tearing Zhou Wen apart as he roared angrily.

Zhou Wen was in the air as he looked at Xu Wen with an odd expression. He was an emotionally indifferent person, so he couldn’t understand why Xu Wen would do such a thing for a stranger she didn’t like. But at that moment, he didn’t want her to die.

As though stepping on empty space, his body circled around like a bird. In midair, he charged towards the opposite bank like an arrow, shooting towards Xu Wen, who was holding an umbrella.

When Xu Wen saw Zhou Wen returning in midair again, she wanted to say something, but her consciousness turned blurry as violent emotions filled her mind.

Kill! Kill! Kill!

Xu Wen only wanted to kill and see blood. Any living thing in her eyes appeared filthy to her. It was as if only killing and blood could make her feel comfortable.

Boom!

She threw the umbrella in her hand and allowed it to fall to the ground. Pressing her palms together as the pair of wings behind her crackled with lightning, she struck out with both her hands as though she was enveloped by lightning. A lightning beam then shot towards Zhou Wen.

The officers on the other side watched as this scene unfolded, but they could not do anything. The distress drove them nuts.

From their point of view, Zhou Wen was definitely doomed facing such an attack from Xu Wen in midair. Even if he was lucky to not die from the attack, he would end up like Xu Wen the moment he landed in the blood river.

The azure lightning snaked at Zhou Wen as if it was about to swallow him.

However, in everyone’s line of sight, Zhou Wen’s figure suddenly blurred as he vanished into thin air, leaving the officers stunned.

By the time they saw Zhou Wen again, they realized that he was already standing on the other side of the river. He was standing behind Xu Wen, emitting a faint white light. He held onto the umbrella that was about to fall to the ground with one hand and holding something in his other hand. He then stabbed Xu Wen directly in the neck.

The red-eyed Xu Wen immediately turned limp as Zhou Wen held an umbrella in one hand and held Xu Wen in the other. He leaped into the air and returned to the opposite shore like a hawk.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 267 - Strange Person in the Rain

Chapter 267 Strange Person in the Rain

“Don’t come over.” Zhou Wen shouted coldly as he stopped the officers who were rushing over. He placed Xu Wen, who was moaning in pain, on the ground and said, “Do you have water? Bring me some water.”

The officers looked at Zhou Wen, who was covered in blood, and their eyes looked odd and complicated. They had no way of connecting him to the former prodigal student.

“Yes.” One of the officers answered and quickly brought a water bottle over.

“Just throw it over and bring some more,” Zhou Wen said.

The officer quickly threw the water bottle over and the other officers quickly went to get more water too.

Xu Wen felt as though her entire body was being stabbed by needles. She was so uncomfortable that she couldn’t say a word. However, her mind was a lot clearer. She watched as Zhou Wen used water to wash the blood rain from her face and hair before finally washing the blood rain from her armor. Then, he lifted her up and placed her on a clean patch of grass.

“She will recover in a while. Take good care of her.” Zhou Wen glanced at Xu Wen before standing up and flying across the river again.

Xu Wen endured the pain as she pressed her hands against the ground to support her upper body. Seeing Zhou Wen's figure disappear into the blood rain, an inexplicable expression appeared on her face.

The officers surrounded her and asked, "Head Nurse Xu, are you alright?"

"I'm fine." Xu Wen was still in great pain, but she could feel that her condition was improving

She didn't know how Zhou Wen had done it. Up to this point, they had yet to come up with a method to effectively resist the blood rain. One could withstand the blood rain only if their physique was strong enough-at the Epic stage-coupled with some protective Primordial Energy Skills.

Once someone was infected by the blood rain, there was no proper treatment. As the head nurse, Xu Wen knew how terrifying the blood rain was.

However, not only was Zhou Wen able to ignore the virus in the blood rain, but he was also able to remove the blood rain's virus from her body. This left her feeling incredulous. There was no way to connect Zhou Wen with the prodigal student who stayed cooped up all day gaming and consuming tonics.

Could it be that as long as one enters the An family, those who aren't surnamed An will become strange? Another figure appeared in Xu Wen's mind. It was a harmless-looking man who always wore a smile. Zhou Wen was extremely similar to the man she had met back then.

Zhou Wen quickly proceeded through the blood rain. He had to quickly catch up with Lu Yunxian and company and track them down to find that Chi. After hearing Xu Wen's

description, Zhou Wen knew that the entity that swallowed the stone artifact was definitely a Chi.

They were unable to see anything in the blood rain, but Zhou Wen could use Truth Listener's powers to grasp his surroundings. Soon, he found Commander Lu and company.

However, to Zhou Wen's surprise, Commander Lu and company hadn't gone far. They were proceeding forward very slowly.

Although they were wearing custom raincoats, the blood rain had affected their visibility. They didn't dare move too quickly, afraid that they might bump into dimensional creatures. Once their raincoats were torn, they would die.

Zhou Wen didn't know where the Chi was, so he could only follow them patiently. Thankfully, there was the blood rain. Zhou Wen didn't need to stay too far from them, nor did he need to hide himself too much. All he needed to do was follow them since no one could discover him in the blood rain.

With an umbrella in hand, Zhou Wen slowly proceeded through the blood rain while observing the situation ahead. If they encountered other dimensional creatures, Zhou Wen had to ensure their safety, to ensure that they could find the Chi that had swallowed the stone artifact.

Lu Yunxian wore a heavy expression as he proceeded through the blood rain. Even at the Epic stage, he only had a visibility range of ten meters. He was blind to anything further.

Under such circumstances, it was as if they were in a dangerous forest. The blood rain around them was like a

dense bush, and it was possible for a venomous snake to jump out of it at any time.

Even Lu Yunxian himself was terrified, let alone those Legendary officers.

Suddenly, Lu Yunxian felt a chill run down his spine as an ominous feeling arose in his heart. He immediately shouted, “Be careful. There might be an enemy attack.”

Lu Yunxian believed in his intuition. This was something forged over the years while on the battlefield. Although it wasn’t necessarily accurate, it had saved his life many times.

The group looked around, but it was useless. The blood rain affected their vision, preventing them from seeing anything.

Lu Yunxian tried his best to look forward, but no matter how he tried, the raindrops quickly blurred the scenes. He vaguely made out a figure walking in front of him. He took a careful look, but he couldn’t confirm the figure.

“Who’s that in front? Say something if you are human.” Lu Yunxian shouted, but no one answered him except for the sound of rain.

However, as the figure approached, Lu Yun finally saw it clearly. It was a strange person with black hair hanging low. He was drenched in the blood rain and his skin was stained with blood. It was certain that even if he was human, he was probably a monster now.

“That’s a ghost… a ghost…” Liu Chengzhi immediately shouted as he saw the figure, his voice filled with fear.

“Vanguard team, attack.” Lu Yunxian summoned his Companion Beast. It was a stone golem that could withstand the power of the blood rain.

The other officers also summoned the few Companion Beasts that could withstand the blood rain as they charged alongside the stone golem.

The few Companion Beasts used their various abilities to attack the strange person that was slowly walking through the blood rain. The Epic stone golem, in particular, struck the strange person’s head with a terrifying punch.

Bam!

The strange person’s head exploded before his entire body exploded, splattering into black liquid.

The group of officers cheered, but halfway through their cheers, their faces froze. This was because the Companion Beasts that were stained with the black liquid appeared to be snow that made contact with burning charcoal as they emitted large amounts of white gas.

A few Legendary Companion Beasts instantly melted into a pool of liquid. The stone golem’s body was riddled with holes from the corrosion, and its arms were cracked apart. One of its legs corroded and broke off as it fell into the pool of blood.

Under the horrified gazes of the group, the black liquid once again coagulated into the black-haired person, who had half his face covered by black hair. He opened his mouth and gave them a silent and eerie laugh. It left everyone’s scalp tingling as they suffered goosebumps. They wished they could immediately turn around and flee.

However, as soldiers, although they were terrified, they still raised their weapons and launched their most intense attack on the strange person the moment they heard Lu Yunxian’s order.

The sword and saber beams criss-crossed as Lu Yunxian’s punch was as violent as a volcanic eruption. It was the most domineering strike under his Life Soul Fire General’s augmentation. It could even melt solid gold.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 268 - The Person Under the Umbrella

Chapter 268 The Person Under the Umbrella

The strange person's figure rapidly moved like a wandering spirit amidst the attack. He appeared and disappeared randomly like a ghost, causing all the attacks to miss.

Lu Yunxian's domineering explosive punch created a ravine that was more than ten meters long, evaporating large amounts of blood, but it didn't damage the strange person at all.

"Ah!" One of the officers retreated in shock. The strange person had appeared in front of him and his eyes were completely black without any white. He looked at him through his hair and left him horrified. He couldn't help but scream and retreat.

However, the strange person's hand had already grabbed at his neck, his hand like a ghastly claw.

"How dare you!" Lu Yunxian threw out a tempestuous punch as the flames roared out like a tiger.

However, the strange person's figure disappeared in the blood rain. When he appeared again, he was behind the officer. His ghastly claws were just moments from grabbing the officer's head.

Instantly, everyone felt a chill rise in their hearts. They knew very well that with one death, it would only be a matter of time before all of them were wiped out.

If one couldn’t find a way to defeat the dimensional creature, they would easily be wiped out. The only way out was to escape.

Lu Yunxian also knew this very well. Therefore, he had already prepared to give the order to retreat, hoping that as many of them could escape as possible. He would then hold back this terrifying dimensional creature alone. He was willing to sacrifice his life.

Just as the strange person’s claws were about to grab the young officer’s head, a bright beam of light shone from afar and landed on the strange person.

Under the light, the strange person subconsciously raised his hands to block his face. Then, he looked in the direction of the bright light.

“All of you, move back.” When a voice sounded, the officer finally reacted and rushed out of the strange person’s range.

The other officers, including Lu Yunxian, subconsciously retreated a distance.

Hum!

With a resonating hum, a Bamboo Blade streaked through the sky, tearing through the blood rain and stabbing straight into the strange person’s body. Then, the strange person’s body transformed into a pool of black liquid that scattered to the ground. The Bamboo Blade was left diagonally embedded in the land that was covered by the blood rain.

However, unlike before, the strange person didn’t revive again. Instead, he gradually mixed with the blood rain and seeped into the mud.

Lu Yunxian and company looked in the direction of the Bamboo Blade. They didn’t know who had saved them. However, Lu Yun found the voice rather familiar. He also seemed to have seen this strange Bamboo Blade somewhere before, but he couldn’t recall where.

Soon, they saw a figure walking across the pool of blood. That person was holding an umbrella in his hand, but he wasn’t wearing the heavy and bulky custom raincoat they were wearing. That person was only wearing ordinary black armor as he walked through the blood. His body had made contact with the blood, but he wasn’t infected by the blood rain’s virus. Lu Yunxian couldn’t help but sigh in amazement, thinking that the person holding the umbrella in front of him must be an extremely powerful Epic expert.

Lu Yunxian noticed that the umbrella looked familiar. After some careful thought, he realized that he also had one. However, he had left it in the jeep and not brought it along. It would be useless in a place like this.

The person with the umbrella walked to the Bamboo Blade that was diagonally planted into the ground. He reached out to pull it out and sheathed it.

As his face was obscured by the umbrella, Lu Yunxian couldn’t see his face clearly. He gave a standard military salute and said, “Thank you for saving us, my friend. I wonder if you can leave a name. I, Lu Yunxian, from the Sunset Army’s Seventh Brigade, Third Battalion, am eternally grateful. I will definitely repay you someday…”

Upon hearing Lu Yunxian speak, the person looked up at him. The umbrella slightly tilted up, and Lu Yunxian finally saw the person’s face clearly. Then, he was completely stunned. His mouth was wide open, at a loss for words.

Not only Lu Yunxian, but all the officers from the three camps widened their eyes in disbelief as they looked at the face that was revealed under the umbrella. They were all dumbfounded.

The blood rain continued to fall, but apart from that, there was a dead silence.

“Commander Lu, there’s not much time left. Let’s hurry up and find the dimensional creature that swallowed the stone artifact.” Zhou Wen walked forward with the Bamboo Blade in hand.

He originally didn’t want to show his face, but Lu Yunxian and the others were clearly no match against the Wangliang. In fact, Lu Yunxian’s strength wasn’t inferior to that of the Wangliang, especially with his fire powers being effective against it. However, in this boundless blood rain, his fire-elemental powers were greatly suppressed, while the Wangliang was greatly augmented. Just its ability to travel through liquid greatly increased its speed, preventing Lu Yunxian’s attack from being able to touch it.

“Young Master Wen, Adjutant An ordered me to take good care of you, and absolutely not allow you to step into the ancient battlefield.” The way Lu Yunxian addressed Zhou Wen was the same as before, but be it his tone or attitude, they were now completely different.

Soldiers obeyed orders and respected experts. In the past, they viewed Zhou Wen as a prodigal scion. Therefore, no matter how honorable Zhou Wen’s identity was, they didn’t treat him with any respect.

However, Zhou Wen had come to the ancient battlefield alone and killed the dimensional creature that they were

helpless against. He had even saved one of their comrade's lives. These feats immediately earned their respect.

"But I'm already here, right?" Zhou Wen looked at Liu Chengzhi and asked, "How far is it from where you encountered that dimensional creature?"

"There's still about five kilometers left," Liu Chengzhi answered subconsciously.

"Commander Lu, if it's possible, let your subordinates return to the other side of the blood river. You, Liu Chengzhi, and I can then travel light and proceed at full speed. We have to use the shortest time to retrieve the stone artifact," Zhou Wen said to Lu Yunxian.

Being in a place like this was no different from suicide for these Legendary officers.

"Young Master Wen, take us along. We are not afraid of death. We can scout the path for you."

"Young Master Wen, take us along. We can help."

Before Lu Yunxian could say anything, the officers immediately cried out, showing their extreme agitation.

Zhou Wen frowned slightly. He really didn't understand what was going through these people's minds. It was as if it was a glorious thing to send themselves to their deaths.

Perhaps the saying is right. The kind of leadership determines the type of followers. Judging from how Xu Wen, Lu Yunxian, and the rest act, I can imagine what kind of leader they have. Zhou Wen suddenly felt that the man he never took seriously might be more terrifying than he imagined.

Zhou Wen had no idea how a leader could make a soldier be willing to die. At the very least, he couldn’t, nor did he want to do it.

“Immediately return to the blood river and make preparations for any rescued casualties. That’s an order.” Lu Yunxian knew that he had been too idealistic previously. Legendary officers and their Companion Beasts were useless here. The Primordial Gold firearms were almost useless. Letting them stay behind would be no different from sending them to their deaths.

He strictly ordered the officers to return the way they had come, leaving Liu Chengzhi and Zhou Wen behind. Lu Yunxian looked at Zhou Wen and said, “Young Master Wen, I have a question for you. Please answer me truthfully.”

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 269 - Stone Chi

Chapter 269 Stone Chi

“What?” Zhou Wen frowned.

“Did you plan on entering the ancient battlefield before you came to Zhuzhuo? Or did you decide on it at the last minute?” Lu Yunxian asked.

“Is there a difference if I already had a plan?” Zhou Wen asked.

“Yes. If you had already made a plan, you would naturally have made a lot of preparations. It wouldn’t be as easy to die here. If it’s just a spur of the moment, I will send you back no matter what,” said Lu Yunxian.

“I have indeed made a lot of preparations. It shouldn’t be that easy to die. Let’s go. We don’t have time to waste. We need to find the stone artifact and take it to the ruins as soon as possible.” Zhou Wen looked at Liu Chengzhi and said, “Lead the way. Just walk forward. If I don’t say stop, continue walking.”

Liu Chengzhi nodded. Due to Zhou Wen’s arrival, the fear in his heart lessened significantly.

They had previously encountered the Wangliang, and many had died. However, Zhou Wen had easily killed one. This did plenty to assuage his fear.

The trio continued on. Although they were fewer in number, the atmosphere was not as oppressive as before.

Lu Yunxian watched as Zhou Wen walked ahead with the umbrella open. He found it somewhat odd, having no way of connecting this Zhou Wen to the one he had known previously.

“Stop.” Lu Yunxian suddenly heard Zhou Wen’s voice and hurriedly stopped to look at him. Seeing Zhou Wen staring ahead, he traced Zhou Wen’s gaze and saw nothing but the blood rain.

“Liu Chengzhi, retreat now.” Zhou Wen walked in front of Liu Chengzhi and pulled out his Bamboo Blade.

When the rain hit the blade, not a drop remained on it as they streaked straight down. Even in the rain, the Bamboo Blade remained untainted as it shimmered with a cold glint.

After a while, Lu Yunxian saw another strange person walk through the rain and approach them. It looked identical to the strange person they had met earlier. He couldn’t help but be put on alert as he gathered his strength to prepare for battle.

Zhou Wen immediately moved as his eyes shot out a light beam that shone down on the strange person’s body. In the next second, Zhou Wen’s figure had vanished. When he appeared again, the Bamboo Blade pierced through the strange person’s body, causing it to explode into a mass of black liquid. A dimensional crystal dropped as a result.

Lu Yunxian glanced at Zhou Wen as he found it increasingly bizarre. He wondered if Zhou Wen really was a student at the Legendary stage. In this terrifying place where even an Epic stage expert was treading on thin ice, he seemed to be in control of everything. He could easily kill a dimensional creature, that even he was helpless against, with a swing of his saber.

“Let’s continue,” Zhou Wen said to Liu Chengzhi as he picked up the dimensional crystal.

“Yes, Young Master Wen.” Liu Chengzhi was a lot more spirited. After responding, he took large strides forward, the fear in his heart seemingly lessened.

During the rest of the journey, Zhou Wen and company didn’t encounter any dimensional creatures. There weren’t many dimensional creatures on the ancient battlefield to begin with, but every one of them was terrifying and had their own unique traits.

If it wasn’t for Zhou Wen’s deep understanding of them that he gleaned from the game as well as knowing the method to counter these dimensional creatures, the three of them would have long died.

After walking for more than five kilometers, they still didn’t see any signs of the Chi which Liu Chengzhi had mentioned. It was unknown if Liu Chengzhi had led them in the wrong direction or if that Chi had already gone somewhere else.

“Old Liu, how much farther do we have to go?” Lu Yunxian also felt that they had gone too far and asked.

Liu Chengzhi scratched his head and said, “We should have already reached the area where we encountered it, but for some reason, we didn’t see any traces of it.”

When Liu Chengzhi said that, Zhou Wen and Lu Yunxian felt that something was amiss. If that Chi had really left this area, where could they find it when the ancient battlefield was so huge?

Besides, there wasn’t only one Chi on the battlefield. How would they know which one was the one that swallowed the

stone artifact?

“Don’t walk any further. Let’s try to search the vicinity.” The ChiMeiWangliang that Zhou Wen encountered in the game all loitered in a fixed area. They didn’t wander off too far.

However, this was reality and not a game. No one knew if the Chi would remain here.

The three of them adjusted their direction slightly and searched the surrounding ruins. After searching in trepidation for a while, Zhou Wen was pleasantly surprised to find a Chi.

However, after seeing the Chi, Zhou Wen frowned and said to Liu Chengzhi, “Confirm if it’s that monster who swallowed the stone artifact you brought back.”

Zhou Wen had seen many Chi in-game. They were mostly identical in appearance, so there was no difference.

However, this Chi was clearly different from the ones Zhou Wen had seen. Typically, they were all in black-scaled armor. Although they looked strange, they looked like living beings.

The Chi in front of him was different. Its body was grayish-white and it looked like a stone sculpture. If it hadn’t slowly walked over, Zhou Wen definitely wouldn’t have believed it to be a living thing.

Liu Chengzhi couldn’t see it at first. Only when the Chi came closer did he finally see it clearly. His face was filled with puzzlement. “From the looks of it, it doesn’t seem wrong, but the one we saw looked like a living thing. Why does this one look like a stone statue?”

The moment Liu Chengzhi said that, the Chi roared as a gray flame rose from its body. Then, Zhou Wen and company felt the ground quake violently.

“No good. Quick, dodge.” Zhou Wen flew up and, at the instant his feet left the ground, stone spears pierced out from the ground.

Lu Yunxian and Liu Chengzhi jumped up as well, dodging the sharp stone spears.

They did not have the ability to withstand the blood rain. If they were stabbed by the spears, even if they survived it, they would probably still be dead if their custom raincoats were damaged.

Zhou Wen was alarmed and puzzled. This Chi was somewhat different from what he had seen in the game. It even had different skills.

The Chi roared as it charged forward. As he didn’t know anything about it, Zhou Wen didn’t dare to forcefully fight it. He summoned the Three-Eyed Golden Warrior, hoping to test the strange Chi’s powers.

Although the Three-Eyed Golden Warrior was only at the Legendary stage, it had the Life Providence of Golden Body and the Invulnerable Golden Power skill. Previously, it had been able to withstand two to three blows from a Chi in-game without dying.

Seeing the Three-Eyed Golden Warrior standing in its way, the Chi rolled its eyes and shot out two blurry gray beams of light that shot straight at it.

Seeing another skill he had never seen before, Zhou Wen immediately felt ominous. However, it was already too late

for him to dismiss the Three-Eyed Golden Warrior. When the light landed, its body cracked like tempered glass. In the next second, it was reduced to fragments that fell all over the ground. It had been killed.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 270 - The Strange Chi

Chapter 270 The Strange Chi

Zhou Wen felt his heart wince in pain. Although the Three-Eyed Golden Warrior was only a Legendary pet, it was extremely rare. Furthermore, it was a tank. Zhou Wen had always used it to scout in-game, so with him dead, it was impossible for him to revive like in-game.

Zhou Wen's tattoo that represented the Three-Eyed Golden Warrior also vanished. It made Zhou Wen realize that this wasn't a game, and he only had one life. If he died, that was it.

Lu Yunxian let out a roar and struck out with an explosive flaming fist. The terrifying flames charged towards the Stone Chi like a ferocious tiger.

A light beam shot out from the Stone Chi's eyes once again and collided with the flaming tiger. A violent explosion occurred in the air and the flaming tiger and light beam dissipated together.

Flames burst out from Lu Yunxian's body, as though a flaming general had possessed him. He continuously released flames with his fists, each punch like a ferocious tiger pounce as they rushed towards the Stone Chi.

Although the light beam the Stone Chi shot out was powerful, the speed at which it shot was relatively slow. The time gap between shots was a little long, so it was unable to withstand the numerous flaming tiger punches.

Seeing that more than ten flaming tigers were about to hit it, it roared and the gray gas over its body condensed into a grayish-white stone dragon.

The stone dragon opened its mouth and took a deep breath before swallowing the flaming tigers. It didn’t even make a sound, as though its stomach was a bottomless abyss.

Although the power of the stone dragon Life Soul was terrifying, Zhou Wen had already seen it in-game. He wasn’t surprised, but instead glad to see something he knew.

At the very least, this strange Stone Chi still retained some of its powers and characteristics. It was not completely different.

Zhou Wen didn’t have any intention of helping Lu Yunxian in the battle against the Stone Chi. Instead, all he did was watch from the side.

After all, he was only at the Legendary stage. Before he figured out the Stone Chi’s strengths and weaknesses, even if he went up to help, it would not be of much use. It might even affect Lu Yunxian’s performance.

Sometimes, appropriate observation could be more efficient than direct combat. Zhou Wen waited patiently by the side for an opportunity.

Lu Yunxian was indeed the commander of a battalion. His flaming powers were extremely tempestuous. Other than being a little slow, the other aspects were considered quite impressive amongst those at the Epic stage.

Furthermore, with the augmentation of the Flaming General Life Soul, Lu Yunxian kept striking out with the Flaming Tiger Fist without any signs of Primordial Energy depletion.

The man and Chi fought an intense battle, but the Stone Chi clearly held the upper hand. The stone dragon Life Soul on its body could devour all of Lu Yunxian’s flaming tiger punches with a single inhale. It looked like it was completely effortless.

Fortunately, the stone dragon wasn’t able to redirect the attacks like the Purple Air Bells. It just swallowed the attack; otherwise, it would have been even more terrifying.

The Stone Chi was unable to break through Lu Yunxian’s Flaming Tiger Fist and became a little irritable. It actually tried to charge at Lu Yunxian, slamming straight into the Flaming Tiger Fist. It ended up retreating from the blow, but its body didn’t suffer any damage. With a roar, it rushed over again.

The stone dragon swallowed and the light in the Stone Chi’s eyes shone out gray rays. It forcefully broke through the airtightness of the Flaming Tiger Fist and slammed into Lu Yunxian.

Lu Yunxian hurriedly summoned a few Companion Beasts because his best stone golem had already died in the previous battle. Although the few that he could use weren’t bad, they weren’t as good as the stone golem.

The Stone Chi wreaked havoc as its gigantic claws ripped at him while sweeping its eye rays across. In moments, all the Companion Beasts that Lu Yunxian summoned were killed.

Zhou Wen was secretly alarmed when he saw this. The Stone Chi hadn’t used the black smoke skill of ordinary Chi. This left Zhou Wen somewhat helpless.

When in-game, Zhou Wen used the Purple Air Bells to absorb the black smoke from the Chi before letting it have a taste of

its own medicine.

The black smoke possessed powerful hypnotic powers that even the Chi couldn’t withstand. Therefore, Zhou Wen was able to easily kill the Chi.

However, this Stone Chi hadn’t released any black smoke skills the entire time. Zhou Wen had no way of absorbing it even if he wanted to.

Now, all I can do is absorb the Stone Chi’s gray ray. Seeing that Lu Yunxian was no longer able to put up a fight, Zhou Wen couldn’t wait any longer. He summoned the Purple Air Bell and, with a flash, arrived beside Lu Yunxian.

The Stone Chi’s ray was directed at Lu Yunxian, so when Zhou Wen appeared in front of him, he raised the Purple Air Bell to meet the incoming gray ray.

Immediately, he saw a blurry light shoot into the interior of the bell as though it had been slurped up like noodles.

Then, Zhou Wen held the bell and shook it at the Stone Chi. A thick gray pillar of light spewed out from the bell’s mouth as it shot towards the Stone Chi.

Bam!

The ray shot out from the Stone Chi’s eyes clashed with the pillar of light from the bell. However, it was shattered. Just as the light pillar was about to land on its body

The stone dragon Life Soul let out a roar as it opened its mouth and inhaled. It swallowed the pillar of light, averting any harm to the Stone Chi.

Indeed, it doesn’t work. Zhou Wen was somewhat depressed.

Previously, when he used black smoke to deal with the Chi, if the black dragon Life Soul were to suck the black smoke, it too would fall into a slumber. Now, there were none of the benefits.

Lu Yunxian took the opportunity to attack the Stone Chi, but his attacks failed to be effective.

Zhou Wen relied on his Purple Air Bell's powers to absorb the Stone Chi's rays as he joined forces with Lu Yunxian. All he could do was hold back the Stone Chi, but killing it was nearly impossible.

Before long, Lu Yunxian's punches began to weaken. Although he was augmented by Flaming General, his Primordial Energy consumption was just too high. He could not hold on much longer.

Zhou Wen allowed Doctor Darkness to possess him as he used Light of Penetration to illuminate the Stone Chi, but the result left Zhou Wen alarmed. Under Light of Penetration, the Stone Chi's body was covered in a gray blur that prevented him from seeing through anything.

What's going on? Why can't I see through it? Zhou Wen was alarmed and puzzled.

Previously, when he was fighting Wangliangs and Chis, he could use the Light of Penetration to observe their bodies' interior. But now, it was completely ineffective. It could only mean that this Stone Chi was extraordinary.

Could it be that this Stone Chi is the Chi that devoured the stone artifact? The stone artifact affected it, making it undergo such a strange mutation? Zhou Wen secretly guessed.

At that moment, the Stone Chi’s patience seemed to be completely worn out by the duo. It roared as the stone dragon emitted a dragon roar before spewing out a mouthful of gray smoke.

The gray smoke looked like the normal black dragon’s black smoke, but the color was a little different.

Zhou Wen didn’t have the luxury of time to think. He raised the Purple Air Bell and sucked in the gray smoke as he saw it surge into the Purple Air Bell’s interior.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 271 - Stone Artifact

Chapter 271 Stone Artifact

When the gray smoke was sucked into the Purple Air Bell, Zhou Wen’s expression changed drastically.

The metallic purple bell began to turn grayish-white as though its surface was covered in a layer of ash. Furthermore, it was rapidly petrifying and seemed moments from becoming a rock.

Zhou Wen didn’t dare hesitate. He hurriedly shook the Purple Air Bell and spat out the gray smoke inside.

The gray smoke swept towards the Stone Chi, only to be sucked in by the stone dragon.

Unlike before, the gray smoke was ineffective against the stone dragon Life Soul. The stone dragon remained brimming with energy, but the Purple Air Bell in Zhou Wen’s hand was still gray. It didn’t recover from its original appearance after releasing the gray smoke.

There’s definitely something wrong with this Stone Chi. If it really turned into this because it swallowed the stone artifact, what is that stone object? How can it have such terrifying power? What did Ouyang Lan and company encounter in that stone cave? Many thoughts flashed through Zhou Wen’s mind.

The Stone Chi let out a ferocious roar as it charged after Zhou Wen. Rays shot out from its eyes and thankfully, Zhou

Wen’s movement technique was as fast as lightning, allowing him to duck the Stone Chi’s attack.

Lu Yunxian hurriedly struck out his Flaming Tiger Fist to remedy the situation, but it was devoured by the stone dragon Life Soul. This resulted in the Stone Chi changing its target as it pounced towards Lu Yunxian.

Lu Yunxian was wearing the raincoat, so he couldn’t use his body to block the attacks of the Stone Chi. If he did, his raincoat would definitely tear and that would spell certain doom for him.

Seeing that Lu Yunxian had nowhere to retreat to, Zhou Wen hurriedly used Ghost Steps to appear behind the Stone Chi as he slashed at its neck with Bamboo Blade.

The stone dragon Life Soul that was wrapped around the Stone Chi’s body roared and spat out the gray smoke at Zhou Wen.

Zhou Wen could only retreat. The Purple Air Bell couldn’t withstand the gray smoke, much less him. He naturally didn’t dare to clash head-on with it.

Lu Yunxian rolled on the ground in a sorry state before dodging the ray shot from the Stone Chi’s eyes. Instantly, the Stone Chi broke out into a frenzy, forcing Zhou Wen and Lu Yunxian to flee.

Liu Chengzhi had not fully recovered from his injuries, and his Companion Beast had already been sacrificed. He didn’t have any combat strength, so all he could do was use his machine gun to shoot at the Stone Chi.

However, when the bullets mixed with Primordial Gold hit the Stone Chi, there was no effect at all. They bounced off it

like billiard balls.

Seeing that Lu Yunxian could not hold on any longer and the Stone Chi was about to catch up with him, Zhou Wen summoned Ghost Bride and sent her over to release Yin Wind Claw at the Stone Chi's back.

However, the effects of the Yin Wind Claw were very limited. Basically, they amounted to a mere scratch of an itch.

The Chi turned its head and shot a glance at Ghost Bride. A gray ray through Ghost Bride's body, but it failed to cause any damage. However, Zhou Wen noticed Ghost Bride's body trembling clearly. It was as though she had been struck by lightning and her aura had clearly weakened.

This Stone Chi is ridiculous! Zhou Wen was appalled when he saw that the Stone Chi could actually injure a ghost's body.

Knowing that this battle only had two outcomes- life or death, Zhou Wen could no longer hesitate. He held the Bamboo Blade as a mysterious and powerful aura surged out of him. Sigh of the King descended upon him, and the immense power made his body float in midair. He could levitate without needing any external help.

Lu Yunxian dodged the Stone Chi's attack in a sorry state when he saw a bolt of lightning flash from the sky and shoot straight for the Stone Chi's body. Then, he saw streaks of lightning interweave against each other as they shuttled back and forth through the Stone Chi's body. It was unbelievably fast.

As it was too fast, even the Stone Chi failed to react. By the time it reacted, by having the stone dragon Life Soul spew

out the gray smoke, Zhou Wen’s Transcendent Flying Immortal had already ended.

After Transcendent Flying Immortal was done, Zhou Wen immediately widened his distance with Ghost Steps to dodge the rolling gray smoke. As his feet touched the ground, he quickly suppressed the Sigh of the King’s power once again.

Just that split moment of usage was enough to make Zhou Wen feel as though all his muscles had been ripped apart in excruciating pain.

Crack!

The Stone Chi’s body shattered piece by piece, turning into a pile of rocks that scattered on the ground. Its body had actually been diced into a pile of rocks with Transcendent Flying Immortal.

Before Zhou Wen and company could rejoice, the rocks began moving again as though an invisible hand was building up toy blocks. They then pieced the rocks back together, restoring the lively and energetic Stone Chi.

Lu Yunxian and Liu Chengzhi instantly felt despair. The Stone Chi was incomprehensibly strong. There was almost no loophole to speak of.

Zhou Wen’s eyes flashed like lightning as they shimmered with a calm luster.

When the Stone Chi was cleaved apart by Transcendent Flying Immortal, Truth Listener’s powers allowed him to piece together a projection of whatever he heard in his mind. At that time, Zhou Wen realized that there was a

strange triangular stone in the Stone Chi when it was being diced up.

The stone was different from the rocks that made up the Stone Chi. Although it was triangular in shape, there was a curve at the edge. In the middle, there was a circular hole that looked ancient and mysterious.

Furthermore, when the Stone Chi was resurrected, it seemed like it had once again gathered the rubble with it at the center.

“Liu Chengzhi, is the stone artifact you brought back a triangular piece of rock with a circular hole in the middle?” Zhou Wen shouted as he dodged the Stone Chi’s attacks.

“How did you know?” Liu Chengzhi was stunned.

Zhou Wen was now certain that the Stone Chi had mutated into this strange abomination thanks to the stone artifact.

Without any hesitation, he used Sigh of the King once more, risking the damage to his body. As the terrifying power descended upon him, Zhou Wen felt his bones groan in pain as though they would suddenly break at any moment. His already tearing muscles even began to crack into bloody patterns.

Zhou Wen endured the pain and once again used Ghost Steps, appearing beside the Stone Chi like a ghost.

However, this time, the Stone Chi was prepared… The moment Zhou Wen appeared, the stone dragon Life Soul spewed out a mouthful of gray smoke at him.

Zhou Wen held the Purple Air Bell that seemed to be covered in dust as he sucked the gray smoke into it.

However, this completely petrified the bell. Before Zhou Wen could shake it, cracks began to appear on its body as it shattered and was completely destroyed.

Transcendent Flying Immortal! Releasing the bell, Zhou Wen drew his saber and used Transcendent Flying Immortal, transforming into a blur that criss-crossed around the Stone Chi as he constantly struck it.

With the sharpness of Bamboo Blade, the terrifying power of the Sigh of the King, and the dominance of Transcendent Flying Immortal, he once again split apart the Stone Chi’s body.

At the instant the Stone Chi’s body shattered, a cold glint flashed in Zhou Wen’s eyes as he threw out the Bamboo Blade in his hand. It manifested into a cold beam as it tore through the rubble and struck away a stone piece.

Zhou Wen’s figure flashed with the use of Ghost Steps, arriving in front of the Bamboo Blade instantaneously. As he grabbed the Bamboo Blade, he pressed down on the stone piece.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 272 - Killing the Stone Chi

Chapter 272 Killing the Stone Chi

“Pfft!” When Zhou Wen pressed down on the stone, he couldn’t help but spit out a mouthful of blood. He had used the Sigh of the King for too long and his internal organs had been torn apart. He was already suffering from severe internal bleeding.

If it were any ordinary person, they would have been dead, but Zhou Wen held on. He looked at the shattered stone that manifested the Stone Chi. If the Stone Chi wasn’t dead, the three of them would be doomed. Zhou Wen was powerless to continue fighting.

Lu Yunxian and Liu Chengzhi stared intently at the pile of rubble. The entire world seemed to quieten down at that moment as the three of them could almost hear their rapidly-beating hearts.

After the silence continued for a while, Liu Chengzhi was a little unsure, but he said hopefully, “It’s not… It’s not moving… It really seems to be dead…”

Zhou Wen exhaled as he felt the pain in his body. It made him feel like his skin was being ripped off, but he still held onto the stone with one hand.

When he first pressed down on the piece of stone, Zhou Wen could still sense it throbbing and struggling a few times. However, it quickly calmed down, as though it was a lifeless object.

“Commander Lu, your raincoat…” Zhou Wen had just heaved a sigh of relief when he heard Liu Chengzhi exclaim.

Zhou Wen looked at Liu Chengzhi and saw his horrified expression. He had his finger pointed at Lu Yunxian as his fingers trembled nonstop.

Zhou Wen looked in the direction of his finger and saw that Lu Yunxian’s custom raincoat had torn at his waist. Although the opening wasn’t large, the blood rain was already dripping in.

Lu Yunxian didn’t know when the raincoat had been torn apart during the intense battle. The color in his face drained as his pupils gradually turned red.

“Young Master Wen, I’m afraid I can’t accompany you any further. I have let down Adjutant An and failed to complete the mission he assigned me. I even brought you into the ancient battlefield. However, I beg you to take the stone artifact to the ruins and hand it over to Adjutant An. I’m sure you can do it.” As Lu Yunxian spoke, his eyes became increasingly bloodshot. His breath also became heavier.

“Young Master Wen, I’ll make a move now. I hope I can still be a member of the Sunset army in my next life.” Chaos began to rule Lu Yunxian’s consciousness as bloodthirst overwhelmed his intelligence. He knew that he didn’t have much time left. Unwilling to become a rabid monster, he raised his fist that had gathered flames and was about to smash himself in the head.

“Stop!” Zhou Wen endured his pain as he ordered Doctor Darkness to leave his body and charge at Lu Yunxian. At the same time, he activated his surgical skills.

Lu Yunxian did not listen to Zhou Wen. He did not wish to die like a rabid dog.

However, his fist did not land on his head. Dr. Soul's scalpel was faster as it stabbed into his neck, causing his body to stiffen and become motionless.

At the same time, Doctor Darkness came in front of Lu Yunxian. A syringe appeared in his hand as he stabbed into his blood vessel, injecting the poison into his body.

Lu Yunxian felt the excruciating pain in his body. He could not help but let out a cry, but the blood color in his eyes gradually faded away as he slowly returned to normal.

Zhou Wen propped himself up. With the stone artifact in one hand, he picked up the umbrella that he had thrown into the rain with the other. After shaking away the blood rain on it, he opened it. He then stood in front of Lu Yunxian and sheltered him with the umbrella.

"Do you still have any armor-type Companion Beasts? Can they first block the damage from the rain?" Zhou Wen asked Lu Yunxian as he unsummoned Doctor Darkness.

Lu Yunxian's consciousness had mostly recovered. He could feel that the virus that had invaded his body was being expelled by the pain.

"There isn't any armor left, but I still have a Companion Beast that should be able to remedy the situation." Lu Yunxian looked at Zhou Wen with a complicated expression.

Back when An Sheng ordered him to protect Zhou Wen, he had never imagined such a day would come. He never expected so many things to happen between him and Zhou Wen, making him feel as if he was in a dream.

“Then quickly fix it. My body is very weak, so I’m afraid there’s no way for me to fight again. If we encounter a dimensional creature again, I’ll be relying on you,” Zhou Wen said.

Lu Yunxian gritted his teeth and nodded at Zhou Wen. Then, he summoned a Companion Beast. It was a snake that transformed into a strange leather belt. He wrapped it around his waist, perfectly blocking the hole on his raincoat.

Zhou Wen staggered before he collapsed into the muddy ground that was covered in blood. The damage to his body was too serious. Despite switching to the Small Perfection of Wisdom Sutra, it was still difficult to completely recover in such a short period of time.

The Small Perfection of Wisdom Sutra’s restoration is still lacking. If only I could have Li Xuan’s Immortal God of Combat body, that would allow me to quickly recover from this injury. Zhou Wen sighed inwardly.

“Young Master Wen, are you alright?” Liu Chengzhi hurriedly came forward to help Zhou Wen.

“Let him rest for a while.” Lu Yunxian spoke, but his pupils suddenly constricted as his eyes widened.

Liu Chengzhi struck Zhou Wen’s head with his palm, and the purple light from his palm flashed with a ghastly glow. His aura was not inferior to Lu Yunxian’s, and it was even more demonic and powerful.

Lu Yunxian couldn’t figure out how Liu Chengzhi, who had yet to recover from his injuries, could produce such terrifying strength. Even in perfectly good condition, he wouldn’t have such strength, let alone when he was seriously injured.

Furthermore, Lu Yunxian knew that Liu Chengzhi likely cultivated a wind-elemental Primordial Energy Art, but his palm was clearly not wind-elemental.

There was no time for Lu Yunxian to think further. Liu Chengzhi was too close to Zhou Wen, so there was no way for him to dodge the strike. Furthermore, Zhou Wen's body was too weak.

Without thinking, Lu Yunxian extended his hand, hoping to use his arm to block Zhou Wen's strike.

However, Zhou Wen was faster than Lu Yunxian. He raised the stone artifact in his hand and parried Lu Yunxian's arm, causing Liu Chengzhi's palm to land on the stone artifact.

Bam!

A blurry light emitted from the stone artifact. The purple light on Liu Chengzhi's palm shattered as he retreated a few steps due to the recoil. Standing amid the rain of blood, he stared at Zhou Wen with an odd expression.

The raincoat covering his palm had torn, and his unshielded palm was exposed to the blood rain. However, the blood rain had failed to penetrate his body.

"You are not Liu Chengzhi, who exactly are you?" Lu Yunxian stared at Liu Chengzhi and asked.

Although Liu Chengzhi was also an Epic, he was only considered average among them. Even Lu Yunxian couldn't fend off the blood rain with his bare body, much less Liu Chengzhi.

"Hehe… I'm Liu Chengzhi…" Liu Chengzhi's expression and voice became strange. It was clearly a man's body, but his

demeanor and voice were that of a woman’s.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 273 - Paper Slip

Chapter 273 Paper Slip

“You are the Mei, the succubus.” Sitting in the rain of blood, Zhou Wen suddenly stared at Liu Chengzhi after some thought.

There were three types of monsters among the ChiMeiWangliang, but despite seeing the Wangliang and Chi, Zhou Wen hadn’t seen the Mei. Now, Liu Chengzhi didn’t look like a normal human in any way.

“Hehe… You’re really smart… You actually saw through my identity. What a pity that I failed to kill you despite having such a good opportunity.” As Liu Chengzhi spoke, his body trembled strangely. A strange purple smoke drifted out of his seven orifices.

The purple smoke gradually gathered together, transforming into a blurry purple figure. However, the figure was enveloped by the purple smoke. Zhou Wen and Lu Yunxian could only see a woman’s figure, but they couldn’t see what she looked like.

After the purple smoke completely wafted out, Liu Chengzhi’s body collapsed. He no longer had an aura that a living person should have. He was obviously a dead person, and his body was rapidly rotting.

“I didn’t see through your identity previously, but I found it a little strange. Why was it only you who managed to escape? From my point of view, you weren’t equipped with the possibility of escaping. Besides, I’m born with a cold

personality, so it’s hard for me to trust anyone. I’m wary of anyone,” Zhou Wen said.

“I see. I imagined that you had long seen through me considering how you could call out my name,” the purple figure said with a giggle.

“Why did you possess Liu Chengzhi’s body and trick us here?” Zhou Wen only wanted to stall for time so that his body could recover a little more.

The Mei in front of him might be more difficult to deal with than Stone Chi. Although the Stone Chi was strong, its intelligence wasn’t high. In contrast, the purple figure was full of tricks.

“That Chi was lucky to have swallowed the stone artifact that Liu Chengzhi and the others had brought out. By the time I discovered it and rushed here, it had already begun to evolve and I was no longer its match. Therefore, I could only think of a way to lure you humans here and hope that both of you would suffer a deadly outcome. However, I didn’t expect that you humans only had such a pittance of strength left. I was originally a little disappointed, believing that my chances were null. I never expected a human like you to appear. It was quite a pleasant surprise.”

As the Mei spoke, she gave a coquettish laugh and said to Zhou Wen charmingly, “I still have to thank you for helping me kill the Stone Chi and retrieve the stone artifact. The power in your body sure is potent. It even makes me feel fear. It’s truly amazing. Unfortunately, your body is too weak. It’s impossible for you to withstand such a potent force. If you still wish to use it, your body will explode from that force even without me raising a finger. Your body is on the edge of breaking down. You can no longer fight me. If

you were to offer the stone artifact to me with both hands, I will spare your lives and allow the two of you to leave Zhuolu alive.”

“Young Master Wen, leave now. I’ll stop her,” Lu Yunxian stood in front of Zhou Wen and said with a burning gaze.

The Mei curled her lips disdainfully. “The potency of your flames have been reduced to less than 70% of its original might in the Lord of the Rain’s Baneful Blood Rain. Furthermore, you’ve just been injured and you don’t even have half your full combat strength. I only need a moment to kill you. Where can a person whose body is about to collapse run?”

“It looks like you’ve planned everything,” Zhou Wen said as he looked at her. Although he believed that one could change their destiny, he had to admit that ever since he obtained the Bamboo Blade, his luck had really changed drastically. He had been in danger several times.

“I was luckier than my plan called for. Since you aren’t willing to hand over the stone artifact, I have no choice but to pull it out from your fingers when you are dead.” The Mei saw through Zhou Wen’s thoughts as a purple light suffused her body and she walked towards him.

Lu Yunxian gathered his strength and punched out with Flaming Tiger Fist. However, the Mei extended her hand and pressed the top of the flaming tiger’s head with her slender palm. The flaming tiger instantly extinguished as though it was a pricked bubble.

“As I said, your combat strength is less than 50%. Killing you will be too easy,” said the Mei as she walked.

“It won’t be difficult for you to obtain this stone artifact, but can you tell me what it is before I give it to you?” Zhou Wen asked as he held the stone artifact.

“There’s no harm in telling you. In the Zhuolu battle years ago, there was a clash between two dimensional life-forms. The stone artifact was the holy object of one side,” said the Mei.

“Wasn’t the Zhuolu battle between the Yellow Emperor and Chiyou? They are all humans. How did they involve dimensional life-forms?” Zhou Wen asked in puzzlement.

“They are human, but what they represent aren’t just humans. Otherwise, how could two mere humans invite so many terrifying dimensional creatures to participate in the battle?” said the Mei indifferently. “The two of them are merely representatives of different dimensional life-form factions in the mortal world. The dimensional life-form represented by the Yellow Emperor is a race that treats stones as holy. And the dimensional creature represented by Chiyou treats metal as holy. The stone artifact you have is one of the holy artifacts that Yellow Emperor obtained from the stone-elemental dimensional life-forms.

“According to what I know from legends, ChiMeiWangliang were creatures that stood on Chiyou’s side. If the legend is right, what use does the Yellow Emperor’s stone artifact have on you?” Zhou Wen tried to stall for time, but his injuries were too serious. It was impossible for him to recover so quickly.

As he spoke to the Mei, his mind raced in search of a chance for survival.

However, no matter how he racked his brains, the situation was just as the Mei had said. He was already in a hopeless

situation and there was no possibility of him defeating her.

He no longer had the ability to fight, and Lu Yunxian was no match for her. The only useful combat strength he had left was Doctor Darkness. However, his combat abilities were not strong to begin with. He was more geared towards functionality than combat.

The Mei had also witnessed the abilities of Doctor Darkness. If she lacked confidence dealing with Doctor Darkness, she wouldn’t have taken action.

“It’s useless to stall for time. However, there’s no harm in telling you. That stone artifact is extremely beneficial to any dimensional life-form.” As the Mei spoke, she walked over and grabbed Zhou Wen’s head with her hand that had a purple halo.

Lu Yunxian immediately took action while Zhou Wen summoned Doctor Darkness. He wanted to use the scalpel to fix the Mei in place.

However, when Dr. Soul’s scalpel stabbed into her body, it pierced straight through. It did not work on her. Instead, Lu Yunxian was sent flying by the Mei’s purple halo as he fell into a pool of blood. The situation looked extremely bad.

Teacher! I can only rely on you to save me now. Zhou Wen was already at the end of his rope. Apart from using the Sigh of the King to risk his life again, he couldn’t think of any other solution. He couldn’t help but think of the tiny box Wang Mingyuan had given him before he left.

Zhou Wen remembered that there was a paper slip written by Wang Mingyuan in it. He didn’t know what was written on it, but hoping to make a Hail Mary effort, Zhou Wen hurriedly pulled out the box from the chaos space and

opened it. He took out the slip and saw the words written on it.

“Kneel and beg for mercy!” Zhou Wen nearly spewed a mouthful of blood when he read the words.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 274 - Kneel and Beg for Mercy

Chapter 274 Kneel and Beg for Mercy

Teacher, this joke isn’t funny at all. You are killing me. Zhou Wen was at a loss whether to laugh or cry nor did he feel angry. He never expected Wang Mingyuan to pull his leg, so he was momentarily at a loss.

If kneeling to beg for mercy was useful, humans wouldn’t die in dimensional zones. After all, there were more people who cherished their lives than people who cherished their pride.

Instantly, Zhou Wen felt as though he had reached the end of his rope. Although he had the stone artifact in hand, it didn’t have the ability to initiate an attack. Even if he were to feed it to a Companion Beast, it wouldn’t be effective. If there was an effect, it would require an evolutionary process that wasn’t instantaneous.

In his current situation, he was probably minutes away from being killed by the Mei. He didn’t have the luxury of time.

Why don’t… I kneel down and beg for mercy… Teacher wouldn’t be pulling my leg, right? Zhou Wen couldn’t help but have this thought come in his mind. Wang Mingyuan didn’t seem to have any reason to prank his student. Perhaps, it might really work.

However, the Mei didn’t give Zhou Wen time to finish his thoughts. She had already attacked with the strange purple halo. Zhou Wen hurriedly blocked with the stone artifact.

The stone artifact was tiny, while the strange purple halo seemed to blot out the sky. It was impossible for it to be effective at blocking.

When the purple halo dawned on him, he saw a blinding blur in front of him. He could even see the Mei within the purple halo reaching out to grab his head. The palm was inches away.

Just as Zhou Wen thought he was doomed, he suddenly saw the purple halo in front of him converge. And the Mei in front of him seemed to come under the influence of a powerful magnet on the ground. Her body sank down as she knelt on the ground with a thud, sending blood splattering everywhere.

Zhou Wen stared blankly at the Mei kneeling in front of him, at a loss.

The Mei knelt on the ground with both hands pressing down on the ground. Her knees and hands sank into the mud as her body trembled. She seemed to be using all her strength to prop herself up, but she just couldn’t.

Her head seemed to be attracted by an invisible magnetic force as she slowly sank into the ground. No matter how hard she struggled, she could not lift her head up.

The Mei let out a terrifying scream as purple gases rose from her body. She struggled to get up, but she was unable to move. The invisible force was so strong that she could only bow her head.

Did the stone artifact show its powers? This was the first thought in Zhou Wen’s mind, but he immediately rejected the idea.

The stone artifact was still the same as before. It did not produce any energy fluctuations at all. Unless an attack was directed onto it, it wouldn’t have any reaction. The Mei’s attack had yet to touch it, so how could it have unleashed such a powerful force?

If it could really produce such powerful strength to protect others, Zhou Wen wouldn’t have been able to kill the Stone Chi so easily.

But if it’s not the stone artifact… that leaves only… No way… Zhou Wen turned his gaze to the paper slip in his hand.

It was an ordinary piece of white paper with the words “kneel and beg for mercy” written on it. As Wang Mingyuan liked calligraphy, the words were written with a brush. They were elegant with quite a flair. Each stroke contained a charm, making it a rare piece of excellent calligraphy that was in no way inferior to famous calligraphers. Even Zhou Wen, who didn’t know much, could tell that the calligraphy was beautiful.

However, no matter how beautiful the words were, they were just words written on ordinary paper with normal ink.

Zhou Wen looked at the piece of paper in his hand and immediately discovered something strange. Although it was ordinary and without any luster to it, none of the blood that rained down stained the piece of white paper at all. It was as though the raindrops automatically avoided it.

It can’t be… Teacher… He wasn’t pulling my leg? Zhou Wen instantly felt like he had gone from hell back to heaven. He turned the piece of paper in his hand to read the words on it, hoping to see if they emitted supreme radiance to suppress the Mei in front of him.

Zhou Wen turned the paper around and realized that the words on the paper were still the same. There was nothing special about it.

However, when he pointed the four words at him, the Mei immediately lost her restraints. She leaped up from the ground, giving Zhou Wen a fright.

The Mei didn’t expect the invisible force on her body to suddenly vanish. Her struggles immediately bore fruit as she flew into the air.

Zhou Wen hurriedly aimed the words ‘kneel and beg for mercy’ at the Mei in the sky. Immediately, he saw the airborne Mei attracted to the ground by a powerful magnetic field. With a loud thud, she fell to the ground and landed on her knees with her hands pressed to the ground. She sprawled across the mud that was covered in blood and took on the kneeling posture.

Teacher, I love you! Zhou Wen wished he could hug the paper slip and kiss it a few times. He never expected Wang Mingyuan’s words to have such an effect.

Without any hesitation, Zhou Wen shouted at Lu Yunxian, “Commander Lu, what are you waiting for? Quickly kill her!”

Lu Yunxian was also stunned by what had just happened. He widened his eyes as he looked at the Mei kneeling in the pool of blood. With Zhou Wen’s shout, he immediately snapped out of his daze and gathered all of his strength. The Flaming General Life Soul erupted as he struck out with his Flaming Tiger Fist, slamming it at the kneeling and powerless Mei.

The Mei was unable to defend herself and, just as the Flaming Tiger Fist was about to strike her, a trace of panic

flashed in her eye. She slammed her head into the blood and shouted, “Spare me, great lord!”

In the next second, the invisible force field that was suppressing the Mei seemed to disappear. The Mei’s figure charged into the sky and avoided Lu Yunxian’s Flaming Tiger Fist.

Holy sh*t! When Zhou Wen saw this, he couldn’t help but curse. He wondered about his teacher’s reliability. He could dish out a suppression, but the enemy would be fine once they begged for mercy? What was the point?

With the Mei liberated, wouldn’t he be in a hopeless situation again? Zhou Wen felt like he was about to go crazy from Wang Mingyuan’s antics.

“Hehe, how dare you receive my kowtow? You are dead.” The Mei laughed weirdly in midair, her voice filled with bone-chilling hatred.

Having reigned supreme in the dimensions for so many years, she had kowtowed before, but that was to supreme rulers. How could she bow to a weak human like Zhou Wen? From her point of view, it was the worst insult she had ever experienced.

With a terrifying purple halo, the Mei streaked across the void like a demonic purple beam, lunging straight at Zhou Wen.

However, when the purple halo arrived in front of Zhou Wen, there was another loud thud. The Mei’s figure emerged from the purple beam as she found herself kneeling in the blood.

“I…” Zhou Wen had no idea how to describe his feelings.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 275 - Another Companion Egg

Chapter 275 Another Companion Egg

Lu Yunxian made a prompt decision and immediately attacked the kneeling Mei.

The Mei's eyes were filled with indignation and humiliation, but she had no choice but to kowtow once more and shout, "Spare me, great lord!"

With a shout, the Mei lost her restraints and flew into a retreat once again, turning into a purple mist; thus, avoiding Lu Yunxian's Flaming Tiger Fist.

This time, the Mei didn't charge over as anger, resentment, indignation, and other emotions mixed together. She glared fiercely at Zhou Wen before quickly escaping amid the blood rain. Soon, she disappeared.

"Just you wait, I'll be back." A charming voice drifted from the blood rain, gradually becoming indiscernible.

Zhou Wen sat in the pool of blood as he gasped for air. What had happened moments ago had been too intense. It made his heart palpitate and relax repeatedly. He felt his blood pressure was so bad that his blood vessels were about to burst.

"Young Master Wen, what kind of treasure is that? Why is it so strange?" Lu Yunxian looked at the piece of paper in Zhou Wen's hand and the words on it with an odd expression.

“How would I know?” Zhou Wen folded the piece of paper and placed it back into the box.

He did not tell Lu Yunxian that the piece of paper was given to him by Wang Mingyuan. According to what he knew, although Wang Mingyuan’s theoretical knowledge could be said to be a grandmaster of a generation, his cultivation level only placed him as an ordinary Epic.

Yet, by just writing those words, he was able to suppress such a terrifying Epic creature. It made the Mei have no choice but to kowtow and beg for mercy. How was this an ordinary Epic level? It was simply terrifying.

Zhou Wen felt that it was best not to let others know of this matter. Furthermore, he had no idea why Wang Mingyuan’s words possessed such extraordinary power.

As for why Wang Mingyuan only restrained without killing, leaving the opponent a chance of survival, Zhou Wen could only guess that Wang Mingyuan probably didn’t want him to abuse the power in those words. Therefore, he left the words “beg for mercy,” allowing a restrained creature to have a chance of survival.

Zhou Wen didn’t know how powerful the words were, but against an ordinary Epic creature, it could be considered another life-saving charm. It was extremely important to Zhou Wen.

“Commander Lu, let’s go.” Zhou Wen endured the pain and stood up from the mud.

“Can you still walk?” Lu Yunxian rushed forward to support Zhou Wen.

“I have to. The principal is still waiting for the stone artifact to save his life. I have to take it over.” Zhou Wen got Doctor Darkness to carry him.

“The principal?” Lu Yunxian was first taken aback, momentarily unable to figure out who Zhou Wen was referring to.

“The missing old Mr. Ouyang. I believe Madam Lan should be trapped with him.” Zhou Wen couldn’t forget saving the former principal. Others were secondary, so he blurted it out without paying attention.

Lu Yunxian did not think too much about it as he nodded and said, “Madam Lan and Old Master Ouyang might be trapped in the passageway. Let’s rush over now.”

Zhou Wen had little combat strength and was weak, but he wasn’t too worried. At present, there were only three dimensional creatures —Chi, Mei, and Wangliang-on the battlefield.

Doctor Darkness had an effective advantage over Wangliang, and he still had a Purple Air Bell that was effective against Chi. With that paper slip on him, he wasn’t afraid of the Mei.

At least they would not be in too much danger before they arrived at the ruins.

What Zhou Wen was most worried about was not finding An Sheng and company at the ruins. If An Sheng and company had entered the ruins, it would be useless even if he held the stone artifact. He would probably have to enter by himself.

“Hold on.” Zhou Wen called out to Lu Yunxian and got Doctor Darkness to carry him towards the dead Stone Chi.

Due to the intense battle just now, Zhou Wen hadn’t checked to see if the Stone Chi had dropped anything.

Lu Yunxian had forgotten about the matter. Seeing how Zhou Wen wasn’t able to take action, he hurriedly walked over and moved the rocks aside to see if there were any crystal-like objects inside.

Suddenly, Lu Yunxian’s eyes lit up. Beneath a rock was a gray stone egg. It was about the size of a fist, like a gray frosted cobblestone.

“A Companion Egg?” Zhou Wen and Lu Yunxian were delighted.

With the Stone Chi so powerful, the Companion Egg it dropped wouldn’t be weak as long as Zhou Wen’s luck wasn’t too bad.

“Young Master Wen, keep the Companion Egg well. This Companion Egg is no trifling matter. In the future, it will definitely be of great help when you hatch it after advancing to the Epic stage.” Lu Yunxian had seen the might of the Stone Chi and knew that the Companion Beast was no trifling matter.

Zhou Wen nodded and took the Companion Egg before letting Doctor Darkness carry him on their journey.

It was dark, and in the midst of a rain of blood, Lu Yunxian walked ahead while Doctor Darkness followed behind with an umbrella in one hand to shield Zhou Wen from the rain.

Zhou Wen held his cell phone and looked at the Stone Chi egg. Indeed, there was information about it.

Mutated Stone Chi: Epic

Life Providence: Stone Beast Ghost

Life Soul: Petrified Dragon’s Son

Strength: 40

Speed: 34

Constitution: 40

Primordial Energy: 40

Talent Skill: Stone Laser, Earthly Spear Formation.

Companion Form: Stone Armor

It was a powerful Companion Beast with three of its stats reaching the limit of the Epic stage at 40 points. It also possessed two offensive skills. Furthermore, with its Life Providence and Life Soul, unless one encountered a nemesis, they were considered top-grade Companion Beasts at the Epic stage.

Unfortunately, Zhou Wen’s current Primordial Energy was insufficient for him to incubate such a top-grade Epic Companion Beast. All he could do was put it into the chaos space.

Zhou Wen lay on the back of Doctor Darkness and took out his cell phone to continue gaming. With Doctor Darkness shielding him from the elements, he was rather comfortable.

With his attention focused on the game, the pain was greatly alleviated for him.

What Zhou Wen wanted to do now was to find the source of the beheading power in the ruins and come up with a solution to resolve the problem.

If An Sheng and company had really entered the ruins, he could only take the stone artifact in. If he couldn’t find the source of the beheading power, he wouldn’t be able to enter at all. Even if he rushed in recklessly, he would only be sending himself to his death. It was meaningless.

Lu Yunxian walked for quite a while and, noticing that Zhou Wen wasn’t speaking, he turned to look at him. He realized that Zhou Wen was being carried on Doctor Darkness’s back while he gamed fanatically. He couldn’t help but marvel inwardly, As expected of Young Master Wen. I would never be able to game with such a relaxed mindset in such a place. It’s no wonder he has such achievements at such a young age.

The human psyche was a very strange thing. When one decided that someone wasn’t good, then, no matter what he did, it was not good. However, once one had decided that the person was outstanding, one would feel that whatever he did was good and would come up with thousands of explanations.

The present Lu Yunxian was a perfect example. No matter what Zhou Wen did, he found it extremely sublime and profound.

I hope Ah Sheng hasn’t entered the ruins yet. Zhou Wen was somewhat worried.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 276 - Realmwind

Chapter 276 Realmwind

Since Ghost Bride didn’t dare enter the underground tunnel, Zhou Wen could only let her circle the interior of the ruins.

The entire ruin consisted mainly of broken stone walls and pillars in an area spanning a radius of more than ten kilometers. There was no dimensional creature to be seen. Even the blood rain’s scale reduced significantly.

Ghost Bride had already searched the ruins several times, but Zhou Wen still failed to discover the root of the problem. When he sent Companion Beasts in, all of them were beheaded apart from Ghost Bride.

It’s impossible that there aren’t any clues. Since Ouyang Lan and Ah Sheng can enter, it means that they must have discovered the source of the beheading power. Zhou Wen repeated, again and again, allowing his Companion Beasts to enter one after another. Then, he scrutinized how they were beheaded, hoping to find clues.

It was true that nothing could be seen with his eyes, but after repeatedly listening with Truth Listener, Zhou Wen finally discovered the root of the problem.

Every time Zhou Wen’s Companion Beast was beheaded, he would hear a faint sound.

The sound was not produced from the severing of flesh and bone during the beheading. Instead, it was an extremely concealed sound that sounded like a breeze.

However, it would be strange if that was the wind. As the ruins were very strange, even the blood rain outside suddenly stopped wafting in. Blood rain descended slowly like snowflakes, with no signs of a wind blowing.

However, when the pets were beheaded, Zhou Wen heard the sound of the wind.

After letting the Gold-Armored Beast enter the ruins again, Zhou Wen closed his eyes and listened attentively with Truth Listener's powers.

As the Gold-Armored Beast walked, something suddenly lopped off its head, but there was nothing there.

Wind… It's indeed a wind… Zhou Wen suddenly widened his eyes as the blood-colored avatar looked at the Gold-Armored Beast's corpse in the ruins.

At the instant the Gold-Armored Beast was beheaded, Truth Listener's abilities had allowed him to capture traces of the wind. However, the wind that appeared out of nowhere did not come from the outside world. It was as if it had suddenly appeared beside the Gold-Armored Beast's neck, chopping off its head.

Wind can't be generated for no reason, but no wind blew from the outside towards the Gold-Armored Beast. Where did the wind come from? Zhou Wen frowned in thought.

"Commander Lu, do you know how winds are formed?" Zhou Wen suddenly looked up and asked Lu Yunxian who was ahead of him.

Lu Yunxian thought for a moment and said, "According to the scientific explanations from the past, wind is a natural phenomenon caused by the flow of air. Under normal

circumstances, the movement of the wind is facilitated by the heat of the sun. The temperature on the surface rises due to the sun's rays, causing the temperature of the air above the surface to expand and rise…"

After explaining how winds were formed, Lu Yunxian said, "I wasn't a stellar student in school, so I only remember this. Young Master Wen, is what I said correct?"

"I'm a lousier student." Zhou Wen fell into deep thought after hearing Lu Yunxian's words.

Zhou Wen didn't sense any abnormality in temperature while inside the ruins. Furthermore, the blood rain poured straight down, so there weren't any signs of airflow. He really couldn't figure out how the wind could appear out of thin air.

Battalion Commander Lu continued, "But in this era, there are many things that cannot be explained by science. Speaking of the wind, I do recall something. When Madam Lan was watching the blood rain, she said that the blood rain might be the Baneful Blood Rain produced by Chiyou's subordinate, Lord of the Rain. And equal to him, is another mighty god also subordinate to Chiyou named Wind God. He was proficient in the wind. Madam Lan said that he possesses a wind force known as Realmwind."

"What's Realmwind?" Zhou Wen hurriedly asked as he realized something.

Battalion Commander Lu's words reminded him that Wind God and Lord of the Rain were of equal ranks. The entire ancient battlefield was enveloped by the blood rain, but he did not feel the power of the wind.

The wind that appeared out of nowhere in the ruin might have something to do with Wind God.

“Actually, I’m not too sure either. I’ve only heard Madam Lan’s comments.” After a pause, Battalion Commander Lu continued, “Wind is the result of the flow of air. However, this is in regards to one world. If two different worlds have a passageway open up, then the air in the two worlds will flow as well. Wind God possesses this ability that’s known as Realmwind. As for how Wind God does it, or if he and Realmwind even exist, it eludes me.”

Zhou Wen was in thought as he felt that Commander Lu’s words had inspired him greatly

The wind couldn’t have been generated out of thin air, but in the ruins, wind had appeared out of thin air. It could be explained if the wind was generated from the connection between different worlds.

Could it be that the beheading in the ruins is secretly done by Wind God? Zhou Wen felt that something was amiss when he thought about it. For a legendary figure like Wind God, there was no need for him to resort to such tiny tricks. Just a casual blow from him would probably be enough to kill countless Epic experts.

If it isn’t Wind God, it would have to be a dimensional creature with similar Realmwind powers. It would definitely be hidden in the ruins. As long as I can find it and kill it, I can safely enter the ruins. But how can I find it? Zhou Wen felt a headache coming on.

Ghost Bride had already searched the ruins several times, but she had not found anything. It was very likely that the wind-elemental creature hid in the dark, making it difficult to find its location.

If only Banana Fairy were here. She’s also of the wind element. She should be able to achieve a certain effect.

Zhou Wen glanced at the chaos space and saw that the tornado was still swirling.

As for the Goddess of Wind's Protection, the necklace was no longer effective after Banana Fairy ate the gem. In fact, it did not even have the ability to imbue immunity to wind-elemental powers.

Zhou Wen experimented the entire way and encountered two Wangliang en route. They were killed by Doctor Darkness, so they didn't encounter any more trouble. The Mei had vanished as though she had really escaped.

When the two arrived in front of the ruins, they saw several tents, as well as people in custom raincoats patrolling.

The prowler was first taken aback when he saw Zhou Wen and Lu Yunxian. Then, he walked over and asked, "Zhou Wen, why are you here?"

"Zhao Xin, where's An Sheng?" Zhou Wen recognized Zhao Xin and couldn't help but feel delighted. Since Zhao Xin was still here, An Sheng and company might not have entered the ruins yet.

"Adjutant An has gone into the ruins with the rest. They have been in there for almost a day. Young Master Wen, it's best you go back quickly. It's too dangerous here," Zhao Xin said.

Zhou Wen frowned and continued asking, "Isn't there a terrifying beheading power in the ruins? How did An Sheng and company enter?"

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 277 - Testing

Chapter 277 Testing

“It’s indeed very strange. In the beginning, we sent quite a number of Companion Beasts in, but every one of them had their heads beheaded. Only two of them managed to survive. Adjutant An said that it’s called Wind of Space, and it’s a powerful wind generated by the exchange of air between two different spaces. As it comes and goes without a trace, one will find it difficult to withstand it unless they are completely without flaw.”

Zhao Xin paused for a moment before continuing, “Adjutant An finally thought of a way and got two Epic experts, who are proficient in spatial powers, to be responsible for disrupting the spatial order, so that the Wind of Space cannot be formed quickly. After trying it out, we realized that this method is indeed effective. It’s just that the two of them can only protect limited areas, so we can’t send everyone in. Me and two others could only stay guard here and await Adjutant An’s return.”

“Did An Sheng say which part of the ruins he’s taking the rest to?” Zhou Wen asked.

“I don’t know. Adjutant An didn’t say anything. He only said that he wanted to search for Madam Lan and Old Master Ouyang in the ruins. He didn’t tell us exactly where he went.” Zhao Xin shook his head.

Zhou Wen looked at the distant ruins and felt a little worried. Although he knew that there was indeed a power similar to Realmwind in the ruins, Zhou Wen didn’t have

spatial powers, nor did he have the ability to stop the Realmwind. Even if he knew its traits, he was still unable to withstand them.

“What are you doing here?” asked Zhao Xin.

“I have something here that needs to be given to An Sheng. It might be of help towards rescuing Madam Lan. Do you have any way of contacting him?” Zhou Wen asked vaguely when he saw the other two Epic experts who had stayed behind come out. However, he didn’t mention the stone artifact and made a vague comment.

“There’s too much interference here. Communication devices are useless. Unless they come out, I’m afraid there’s no way to contact them,” said Zhao Xin.

When the other two saw Zhou Wen, they were immediately alarmed. They pointed at him and said, “You aren’t wearing a raincoat. How are you not infected by the virus?”

Zhao Xin was taken aback when he heard that. Only then did he realize that Zhou Wen was only wearing ordinary armor without a raincoat.

Looking at the shape of his armor, it was impossible to cover all his body parts. He would definitely be tainted by the blood.

“I have a way to counter the blood rain, so don’t worry about me. Leave a tent for me. I need some rest,” Zhou Wen said. He needed to wait for his injuries to recover and be combat-fit before he could think of a way to deal with the Realmwind. If not, he would be sending himself to his death.

Zhao Xin pointed at one of the tents and said, “That’s Adjutant An’s tent. Just stay in his.”

Zhou Wen didn’t stand on ceremony as he entered immediately.

The tent was clean and tidy, and there was even a small battery-powered lamp. Beside it were some books and a small incense burner.

An Sheng actually hadn’t minded taking so many things to such a place. Zhou Wen found a spot to sit down as he circulated the Small Perfection of Wisdom Sutra to heal his injured body before he continued gaming.

Zhao Xin and company led Lu Yunxian into another tent and said with a smile, “Commander Lu, it must have been hard on you to bring Zhou Wen to such a dangerous place. You must have suffered a lot on the way, right?”

Lu Yunxian glanced at Zhao Xin and company and said coldly, “This is my duty. And without Young Master Wen, I wouldn’t be here.”

The three of them were taken aback. Zhao Xin looked at Lu Yunxian and asked, “What do you mean?”

However, Lu Yunxian did not answer and only said, “All of you, get ready. When Young Master Wen recovers, we will follow him into the ruins to look for Adjutant An.”

The three of them looked at Lu Yunxian as though they were looking at a lunatic. Zhao Xin licked his lips and said, “I know that you members of the Sunset army are famous for being fearless even in the face of death, but do you know how terrifying the spatial wind in the ruin is? Do you know how many powerful Companion Beasts died when we first probed the area? That’s not a place anyone can enter as they please.”

“Young Master Wen will think of a way,” Lu Yunxian said indifferently.

Zhao Xin and company exchanged looks. They felt that Lu Yunxian must have a screw loose. What kind of solution could one come up with for such a place? Without the ability to control the Wind of Space, entering meant having a death wish. There was no other way.

No matter how smart Zhou Wen was, he didn’t have spatial powers. Furthermore, he was at the Legendary stage. How could he safely enter the ruin?

Due to the difference in opinion, Zhao Xin and company decided to ignore Lu Yunxian and minded their own business.

Zhou Wen didn’t manage to come up with any solutions either. Despite knowing the traits of Realmwind, the knowledge didn’t help in restraining it.

After some thought, Zhou Wen only came up with the solution of using Ghost Steps to dodge at the instant the Realmwind was generated, preventing them from hitting him.

However, Zhou Wen had tried several times in-game and the difficulty was extremely high. The spot where the Realmwind appeared almost clung to his skin, and a 0.01 second delay in his reaction time meant him dying. He barely managed to dodge once or twice every ten times. Even so, luck played a factor.

Ghost Steps was very fast, but that was referring to speed. Zhou Wen’s reaction speed wouldn’t increase because of the Ghost Steps, so his reaction speed was clearly insufficient against the sudden Realmwind.

I have to be able to dodge the Realmwind. How can I react faster and avoid the Realmwind safely? Zhou Wen constantly experimented in-game.

Zhou Wen was fully focused on his experiments in-game. When Zhao Xin and company delivered his meal, they smiled without saying a word when they saw Zhou Wen sitting there gaming on his phone.

Zhou Wen's usage of his phone was nothing out of the blue to them, nor did they find it amiss. However, they found it amusing when they connected such actions to Lu Yunxian's words.

When they returned to the tent that the four of them shared, they saw that Lu Yunxian was still making preparations, as though he really was prepared to set off for the ruins.

Zhao Xin couldn't help but laugh, "I say, Commander Lu, Zhou Wen is still gaming. I don't think he will be able to head to the ruins anytime soon. You should rest for a while."

"We will be going," Lu Yunxian said calmly.

Zhao Xin didn't say anything further in response to Lu Yunxian's stubbornness. He lay on the mat and took out his cell phone. He also found a game to play.

It wasn't that he really liked gaming, but that he was under too much pressure in such a place. If he didn't find something to do, he was afraid that he would go crazy.

Zhou Wen constantly honed his ability to react at the precipice of life and death. He needed to make a perfect plan to enter the ruins. Not a single mistake could be made.

In the game, he could afford death if he made a mistake. He could respawn with a drop of blood, but in reality, he only had one life. If he died, that was it—there were no second chances.

What can I do to ensure perfection and make zero mistakes? Zhou Wen soon discovered that with his own reaction, it was impossible for him to make no mistakes even if he practiced to the extreme.

There would always be one or two mistakes every ten attempts because the speed of the Realmwind had exceeded the reaction limits. No matter how well Zhou Wen did, it was impossible for him to always exceed his usual limits and avoid the Realmwind’s attack.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 278 - Banana Fairy Evolution

Chapter 278 Banana Fairy Evolution

If my reaction can’t be perfect, then I have to think of a way to predict when the Realmwind will appear. Zhou Wen knew that unless he advanced to the Epic stage, it would be impossible for him to completely avoid all the Realmwind attacks.

It’s already too late for me to react when Truth Listener hears the sound of the Realmwind. But what can I do to discover where it comes from? Zhou Wen thought to himself.

Eyes were definitely out of the question. It was impossible to see the Realmwind. Using one’s body to feel it would be even more ridiculous. When the Realmwind touched his body, it was the moment he was beheaded.

What should I do? How do I predict the moment when the Realmwind appears? Zhou Wen repeatedly tried, but the outcome wasn’t ideal.

Hence, he removed Truth Listener’s companion form and allowed it to play in the tent. He was accustomed to the convenience that Truth Listener had given him. The sudden loss made Zhou Wen feel like he was blind. Although he could still see with his eyes and hear with ears, he still found it awkward, as though something was missing.

Indeed, I can’t rely too much on a Companion Beast. Otherwise, it will greatly affect my own powers. Zhou Wen took a deep breath and calmed his mind before he once again controlled the blood-colored avatar to enter the ruins.

Truth Listener climbed onto Zhou Wen’s shoulder and scanned its surroundings. When its gaze landed on Zhou Wen’s pocket, its eyes suddenly lit up. With a leap, he jumped into the pocket like a diving athlete.

The pocket contained the stone artifact that Zhou Wen had retrieved.

The monkey-like Truth Listener landed on the stone artifact and used its claws to touch the stone artifact a few times before sticking out its tongue to lick it. As though it wasn’t satisfied, it opened its mouth wide and swallowed the stone artifact.

Its petite body wasn’t even as large as the stone artifact, but it managed to swallow the entire stone artifact with the only clue of its actions: the tiny bump on its abdomen. It was unknown how it managed to do it.

Zhou Wen was now completely immersed in the game. Furthermore, he had just lost Truth Listener’s listening ability and Doctor Darkness and Truth Listener were guarding the tent. He would know immediately if there was any commotion, so he didn’t think too much about it.

However, Zhou Wen never expected Truth Listener to actually commit embezzlement by swallowing the stone artifact that he had painstakingly retrieved. Then, with four legs raised, Truth Listener collapsed into Zhou Wen’s pocket.

The golden fur on its body gradually turned into a grayish-white stone color that resembled stone. Its entire body rapidly petrified. In a few seconds, it turned into a mini monkey stone sculpture.

However, the change to Truth Listener’s body did not end. It produced a substance similar to a stone pulp from its body.

The liquid gradually wrapped around its body and soon, Truth Listener turned into an egg-shaped rock.

Zhou Wen had no idea of the astonishing changes happening in his pocket. Otherwise, he would definitely have stopped Truth Listener. After all, the stone artifact was key to saving Ouyang Lan and the former principal. He simply couldn’t afford to lose it.

Zhou Wen constantly battled as he sensed the impact of the Realmwind on his life. Without Truth Listener’s ability to support him, the blood-colored avatar’s death rate soared once again. Sometimes, it wouldn’t even survive once in ten times.

However, under the stimulation of death, Zhou Wen, without Truth Listener’s support, seemed to vaguely grasp something, but he was unable to confirm it.

As the drops of blood vanished, Zhou Wen’s senses became sharper and sharper. It wasn’t like Truth Listener’s pure sense of hearing. His eyes, nose, ears, and even his skin became more sensitive under the pressure of death. His overall senses were greatly enhanced.

Finally, Zhou Wen controlled the blood-colored avatar to take a step forward. And at the spot where he stood, a stone pillar was sliced off by an invisible Realmwind that appeared out of thin air before it collapsed to the ground.

I succeeded! Zhou Wen was delighted. He seemed to have figured out something, but he still needed to prove it with repeated successes.

Over and over again, Zhou Wen constantly dodged the wind. The chances of him being injured by the Realmwind decreased as he finally grasped the key to dodging it.

I’ve finally done it. Zhou Wen was delighted. He wanted to summon Truth Listener back and try to see if he could better predict the appearance of the Realmwind with it.

However, after two summonings, he failed to sense Truth Listener returning to his ears. He could not help but look around. All he saw was Doctor Darkness standing silently in a dark corner, but there was no sign of Truth Listener, nor could he sense where it was.

Just as he was feeling puzzled, Zhou Wen’s expression suddenly changed. He hurriedly reached into his pocket and touched it, his expression turning ashen.

The stone artifact was triangular in shape, and the stone that he was touching was clearly shaped like an egg.

He hurriedly took out the stone in his pocket. Indeed, it was a stone egg the size of a fist. However, it emitted the aura of Truth Listener.

I was careless. Why didn’t I guard against this thief!? Zhou Wen regretted his decision.

The situation was very obvious. Truth Listener must have swallowed the stone artifact to cause such a change. Perhaps, it was evolving.

If it was only an ordinary treasure, Zhou Wen wouldn’t have been unwilling to part with it no matter how precious it was. He wouldn’t have minded Truth Listener swallowing it since it was his main combat pet.

However, this item might very well be used to save the former principal and Ouyang Lan’s lives. Now that Truth Listener had devoured it, Zhou Wen was momentarily at a loss.

Smashing the stone egg and see if the stone artifact remains inside? It was naturally infeasible.

I can only take the stone egg in to give it a try. The stone egg should possess the power of a stone artifact. It might be able to replace the stone artifact’s effects. Zhou Wen had no choice but to rely on a last-ditch effort.

This time, Zhou Wen didn’t dare be careless. He directly placed the stone egg into the chaos space, but when he saw the scene in the chaos space, he couldn’t help but feel delighted

The hurricane that had been spinning around had already weakened. It was getting thinner and thinner as though a wind egg was suspended in the air.

Crack!

A green light emitted from a crack in the wind egg. Wearing a green robe, Banana Fairy flew out and floated through the air like a fairy in the wind.

She had grown a lot taller, and her every move seemed to have an invisible wind supporting her. It made her clothes dance in the wind, as though a hairdryer was blowing her at all times.

Banana Fairy has finished evolving? Zhou Wen was pleasantly surprised. This was considered the best news in recent times.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 279 - Divine Wind Immortal

Chapter 279 Divine Wind Immortal

Previously, the banana leaf was only the size of a palm but now it was the size of a normal fan. Banana Fairy had also grown to the size of a doll as she sat on the banana leaf. She fluttered about like a little princess in the wind.

After Zhou Wen released her from the chaos space, Banana Fairy flew around him looking very happy.

“Finally.” Zhou Wen extended his hand and Banana Fairy flew over from the banana leaf and landed on Zhou Wen. He immediately felt a breeze surround him, making him cold.

After rubbing Banana Fairy’s head, she transformed into a green stream of light and fused with Zhou Wen’s body, turning back into a banana leaf tattoo.

Zhou Wen dripped a drop of blood on his phone and respawned the blood-colored avatar. He looked at Banana Fairy’s new attributes.

Banana Fairy: Epic (Evolvable)

Life State: Great Yin Spirit Root.

Life Soul: Divine Wind Immortal

Strength: 41

Speed: 41

Constitution: 41

Primordial Energy: 41

Talent Skill: Grand Yin Wind

Companion Form: Fan

The attributes were as Zhou Wen expected. They were twice the value of 20 plus 1. Zhou Wen didn't know what the extra 1 point was for, but he had a nagging feeling that this additional one point wasn't simple.

The skill was still the single Grand Yin Wind, making Zhou Wen feel a little disappointed. He originally wondered if a new kill would be learned after she evolved, but in the end, she remained with a single skill.

The Great Yin Spirit Root Life Providence didn't change, but the greatest change to Banana Fairy's transformation was the addition of a Life Soul. The Divine Wind Immortal undoubtedly had strong effects on the wind element. As for the actual effects, he had to test it.

Zhou Wen opened the Zhuolu instance dungeon, hoping to test the power of the Banana Fairy after it evolved.

Soon, he encountered a Wangliang. With a wave of his hand, Banana Fairy appeared in front of him while sitting on a banana leaf. When she saw the Wangliang charging at them, she immediately puffed up her cheeks and pouted her mouth, blowing right at the Wangliang.

An invisible cold wind suddenly blew as the Wangliang's body was sent flying by the wind. It tumbled far away in the air, and at the same time, its body rapidly froze into an ice sculpture.

Crack!

The Wangliang’s body flew for an unknown distance before shattering in the air, raining down ice shards. Even the Wangliang bead inside its body shattered, causing it to die. A dimensional crystal dropped on the ground.

She’s amazing. Is this the suppression that absolute strength brings? Zhou Wen was pleasantly surprised. Having such wind powers made her the strongest Epic creature Zhou Wen had ever seen. Few creatures of the same level could withstand one fanning of hers.

On Banana Fairy’s body, there was an indiscernible wind that flowed. As the wind flowed, Zhou Wen could vaguely see a transparent woman’s figure. She looked like a deity and was likely Banana Fairy’s Life Soul, Divine Wind Immortal.

Originally, Banana Fairy could only use the Grand Yin Wind once and her Primordial Energy would be depleted. However, with the Divine Wind Immortal, Zhou Wen discovered that Banana Fairy’s Primordial Energy was rapidly recovering. It didn’t take long before she could use Grand Yin Wind again.

In that case, Banana Fairy will have a chance of continuously doing battle. Zhou Wen was delighted. Now that Banana Fairy was his strongest combat power, it was much safer to traverse the ancient battlefield with her.

He extended his hand and Banana Fairy transformed into a jade-like fan that landed in his hand. The fan was about the size of a normal fan, unlike the mini-fan from before. It fit perfectly in his hand.

Zhou Wen examined the banana fan formed by Banana Fairy. It was entirely jade-like and cool to the touch. On the

surface of the fan, there was a lady’s portrait. It looked different from the previous banana fan.

Zhou Wen didn’t know if the banana fan would have the same potent effects as Banana Fairy. After all, Banana Fairy had 41 Primordial Energy points, and he only had 21. If he used the Grand Yin Wind skill, there would definitely be a difference in strength.

As he continued forward, he soon ran into a Chi. Zhou Wen used it as an experiment and saw the black dragon Life Soul spew out black smoke. This time, Zhou Wen didn’t use the Purple Air Bell.

Wherever the wind reached, the black smoke was blown back, striking the Chi. Then, it was swept away by the wind.

The black smoke immediately made the Chi fall into a deep slumber. The Grand Yin Wind from the banana fan also caused layers of ice to form outside its body.

However, when Zhou Wen used it, his Grand Yin Wind was indeed much weaker than the Banana Fairy’s. It wasn’t able to directly freeze and shatter the Chi’s body, only managing to send it flying far into the distance.

But even so, Zhou Wen was satisfied. He was only at the Legendary stage. To send an Epic creature like the Chi flying hundreds of feet away using the Grand Yin Wind and freezing it into an ice sculpture was already remarkable.

Now, let’s see if Banana Fairy can resist the Realmwind in the ruins. Zhou Wen rushed to the ruins at full speed. He encountered another Chi on the way and easily slew it. It was effortless.

After arriving outside the ruins once again, Zhou Wen got Banana Fairy to take her original form and enter the ruins with the blood-colored avatar.

Zhou Wen kept observing his surroundings. He was already very sensitive to the Realmwind. Even without Banana Fairy by his side, he was confident that he could dodge Realmwind’s attacks.

However, Zhou Wen still wanted to see how Banana Fairy would respond to it.

As Zhou Wen was thinking, he suddenly felt a minute spatial fluctuation. He knew that it was a sign that a Realmwind was about to appear. Without any hesitation, he dodged, but he didn’t pull Banana Fairy along.

The wind was like a blade as it slashed at Banana Fairy’s neck. However, she didn’t seem to notice it as she sat on the banana leaf and swayed.

It can’t be? How can the wind-elemental Banana Fairy have such a slow reaction towards the Realmwind? Zhou Wen found it strange, but in the next second, his mouth gaped open.

The Realmwind that approached Banana Fairy suddenly spun like an invisible wind blade as it swirled around Banana Fairy’s body, causing the surrounding space to ripple.

With a wave of Banana Fairy’s hand, the Realmwind automatically landed in her palm as though it was a whirling blade that was being controlled by her. It kept spinning until Banana Fairy flicked it, sending it flying off.

Kacha!

A distant stone pillar was sliced apart by the Realmwind. Blood spewed out from it while a strange scream sounded.

“Little Banana, you’re really awesome.” Zhou Wen wished he could summon Banana Fairy over and hug her, planting a deep kiss onto her cheeks.

With Banana Fairy by his side, he was free to enter the ruins. He no longer needed to worry about the terrifying Realmwind.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 280 - Realmwind Insect

Chapter 280 Realmwind Insect

A notification of him killing an Epic Realmwind Insect popped up in-game. Zhou Wen walked towards the stone pillar that had been sliced apart by the Realmwind and saw a hole in the middle. Hidden in it was something that resembled a cricket, but it was more than a foot long. However, it had been halved just like the stone pillar.

So this is what's causing all the problems inside the ruins. Zhou Wen didn't expect that an insect like this would have such destructive power.

Thankfully, I have Banana Fairy. Otherwise, it wouldn't be easy to find it. Zhou Wen got Banana Fairy to continue searching for the Realmwind Insects in the ruins. He planned on killing a few more to confirm whether Banana Fairy could completely repress the Realmwind Insects.

However, Banana Fairy's performance was better than Zhou Wen had imagined. As long as the Realmwind appeared and wasn't too far from her, it would be controlled by her and become her weapon. She easily found the Realmwind Insects that were hiding in stone columns or walls while releasing Realmwind. All of them were slain.

Ding!

When he killed the sixth Realmwind Insect, Zhou Wen heard a familiar chime and a crystal dropped.

Zhou Wen was delighted when he saw the crystal. It resembled an ant’s egg and was the size of a chicken’s egg. There was the shadow of a Realmwind Insect inside. It was clearly a Primordial Energy Crystal with the name Realmwind Insect Crystal.

I wonder what the Realmwind Insect’s Primordial Energy skill is? It can’t be Realmwind, right? Zhou Wen thought to himself as he got the blood-colored avatar to pick up the Realmwind Insect Crystal, hoping to see what skill he would receive.

However, the system popped up a notification: ‘Requires 21 Strength and 9 Wind stats to absorb the Realmwind Insect Crystal. Insufficient Wind stats. Cannot be refined and absorbed.’

It actually needs a Wind stat? Zhou Wen was somewhat depressed. He had an inkling what it was—it was probably similar to the Poison stat he had obtained from his previous absorption.

Epic Primordial Energy Skills seemed to have all sorts of requirements, unlike in the past where he could just master one if he so wished.

Zhou Wen had killed quite a number of Wangliang, but he only had one Poison crystal drop. The later ones were all four basic stat crystals. It was obvious that special stat crystals didn’t have high drop rates, likewise for the Wind stat crystal. It wasn’t easy to have one drop.

Zhou Wen held the Realmwind Insect Crystal and felt dismayed. If he left it on the ground, it might be gone in a respawn, but he couldn’t absorb it even if he held it in his hand. There was no inventory in the game.

If only there was a Chaos Bead in the game. Zhou Wen had no choice but to hold onto the Realmwind Insect Crystal and wander the ruins killing all the Realmwind Insects.

Just as Zhou Wen expected, a few basic stat crystals dropped, but not a single Wind stat crystal dropped. The drop rate was rather low.

However, this also had to do with the rarity of Realmwind Insects. Zhou Wen and Banana Fairy toured the ruins and only found 17 Realmwind Insects. They couldn’t find any more Realmwind Insects no matter how hard they tried.

However, once the instance dungeon was refreshed, the Realmwind Insect Crystal in the blood-colored avatar’s hand disappeared along with the refresh. Its drop rate was similarly low, making Zhou Wen reluctant to waste such an opportunity.

It’s such a waste letting it be deleted in the refresh. I’ll make a trip to the ruins in real life and kill the Realmwind Insects to see if they can drop Wind stat crystals. Zhou Wen made up his mind-he was going to hunt Realmwind Insects in real life.

With Banana Fairy around, as long as he didn’t enter the underground tunnel, there shouldn’t be any danger. He could also take a look and see if An Sheng and the rest were still inside the ruins.

If they hadn’t entered the tunnel, he could meet up with them.

However, Zhou Wen felt that they had already entered the underground tunnel. It was highly likely that he had to go down the tunnel as well.

After packing his things, Zhou Wen left the tent. He planned on informing Lu Yunxian and the others to remain while he made a trip to the ruins.

Zhao Xin and company were chatting when they saw Zhou Wen coming over. Zhao Xin asked casually, “With your serious injuries, why aren’t you resting in the tent? Just shout if you need anything.”

“My injuries are much better. I want to go into the ruins to take a look. Stay here. If An Sheng comes back, tell him not to enter the ruins again. Wait here for me.” Zhou Wen turned around and left.

Zhao Xin and company widened their eyes. Previously, Lu Yunxian had mentioned that Zhou Wen would definitely head to the ruins, but they didn’t believe him. Now, they had no choice but to believe him.

“Zhou Wen, there’s the strange spatial wind in the ruins. It’s useless even if you go. You will just suffer a pointless death,” said Zhao Xin.

“I’ve already thought of a way to deal with spatial winds. You don’t have to worry about me.” Zhou Wen didn’t plan on letting them go, so he didn’t stay any longer and walked away.

“Young Master Wen, I’ll go with you.” Lu Yunxian was already prepared, so he chased after him.

The remaining three looked at each other. Finally, it was Zhao Xin who said, “Let’s go and take a look outside the ruins. If they die in the ruins, we might be able to find a way to collect their corpses.”

“Brother Zhao, do you think Zhou Wen has really thought of a way to crack the spatial wind?” asked another person.

“How is that possible? Adjutant An couldn’t even crack it, and Zhou Wen doesn’t cultivate in wind-elemental Primordial Energy Arts, and he’s only at the Legendary stage. How can he possibly succeed?” Zhao Xin wasn’t convinced.

“If Zhou Wen really cracked it, should we follow him in?” the person asked.

“It’s not going to happen, so why are you thinking so much? Let’s go take a look first.” Zhao Xin then put on his raincoat and the three of them left the tent together.

When they arrived at the ruins, Zhou Wen and Lu Yunxian had already entered. Thankfully, the blood rain inside the ruins was lighter, allowing them to see their figures clearly.

“Zhou Wen, Battalion Commander Lu, we’re here to receive you. Call for help if you need anything.” Zhao Xin didn’t dare enter the ruins as he shouted to Zhou Wen and Lu Yunxian.

Zhou Wen ignored him. He had persuaded Lu Yunxian against following him, but Lu Yunxian refused to return. All Zhou Wen could do was let follow him into the ruins.

I wonder if the Realmwind Insects are located in the same spots as in-game? Zhou Wen looked at a stone pillar. If the location was the same, he could directly go up to kill the Realmwind Insects without waiting for them to release the Realmwind.

With this thought in mind, Zhou Wen clenched the hilt of his Bamboo Blade and slowly approached the stone pillar.

Regardless of whether they were in the same position as the game, there was no harm in trying

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 281 - Young Overseer

Chapter 281 Young Overseer

When Lu Yunxian saw Zhou Wen grip his hilt, he believed that Zhou Wen had discovered an enemy. He hurriedly circulated his Primordial Energy Art and looked around warily.

Zhao Xin and company tensed up as well. Although Zhou Wen and Lu Yunxian entered on their own accord, absolving them of any fault if they ended up dying, no one was willing to see their own kind beheaded in such a strange place.

Suddenly, Zhou Wen's figure vanished as he appeared in front of a broken stone pillar like a ghost. With sabers tightly gripped with both hands, he slashed at the stone pillar in front of him as a sanguine arc beam slashed out.

Crack!

The stone pillar was split into two by Zhou Wen's saber. The cut was as smooth as a mirror, but blood spewed out from the cut. Lu Yunxian and the other three were stunned.

"Young Master Wen, is this the source of the strange spatial wind in the ruins?" Lu Yunxian asked as he walked up to take a look at the Realmwind Insect's corpse.

As Zhou Wen rummaged through the corpse of the Realmwind Insect, he nodded. "That's right. There should be more than one. Don't go too far away from me, lest something happens."

Unfortunately, the Realmwind Insect did not drop a crystal or a Companion Egg.

While Zhou Wen led Lu Yunxian forward, Zhao Xin and company wore odd expressions outside.

“Brother Zhao, that punk, Zhou Wen, wasn’t bullsh*ting. Even Adjutant An failed to find the dimensional creatures in the ruins. Yet, he managed to find them. It looks like he’s really capable. Should we go in?” one of them asked Zhao Xin.

“What are we going in for? To send ourselves to our deaths? If there’s one, who knows how many of them there are? If they make a mistake, they’ll still die in there. Since Adjutant An got us to stand guard here, we’ll wait here for them. Why should we risk our lives?” Zhao Xin said as he walked back. However, Zhou Wen’s slash kept surfacing in his mind. He couldn’t help but mumble, “That punk is a little odd.”

Zhou Wen didn’t expect the location of the Realmwind Insects to be identical to the ones in the game. He didn’t give the Realmwind Insects a chance to use Realmwind, killing them within their stone crevices.

Lu Yunxian followed Zhou Wen and watched as he charged forward as though he was a prescient god. The Bamboo Blade saw blood every time it was unsheathed. It killed the strange insects hidden in the rocks. The way he looked at Zhou Wen became odder.

He had also seriously observed his surroundings, but he didn’t notice anything abnormal. It was impossible for him to know where the Realmwind Insects were hidden. Yet, Zhou Wen struck with his saber with zero hesitation, decisively killing every Realmwind Insect.

The ruin, that was originally enveloped in horror, seemed to become less terrifying because of the youth in front of him. In Lu Yunxian’s eyes, Zhou Wen seemed to emit light and warmth, illuminating this land of terror.

This feeling… is so familiar… I’ve experienced it before… Lu Yunxian couldn’t help but be reminded of the past when he charged into a dimensional zone with An Tianzuo.

At that time, An Tianzuo was probably a little older than Zhou Wen. He was almost twenty. Back then, An Tianzuo had already been the head of the An family for several years and was known by everyone in Luoyang. They addressed him as “young overseer.”

However, An Tianzuo back then wasn’t as accepted as he was now. Even the An family had many members against him.

Once, a new dimensional zone appeared in Luoyang’s south district, causing a large group of citizens to suffer a calamity. An Tianzuo wanted to send men to suppress the dimensional zone in the south, but because of the clan’s obstruction, only a small number of soldiers were sent.

An Tianzuo had no choice but to personally lead the troops into the dimensional zone. Back then, Lu Yunxian was not a battalion commander, but a mere section commander. They had four sections that followed An Tianzuo into the perilous dimensional zone where they encountered many bizarre dimensional creatures.

The reinforcements that should have arrived didn’t get there on time.

Back then, many soldiers had already given up hope. They thought that they would definitely die in battle. Even Lu

Yunxian had thought the same.

However, it was that young man who held a revolver in one hand and a large sword in the other; he led them through the dimensional zone, storming a bloody path through the dimensional beast horde and led them out.

At that time, An Tianzuo was like the youth in front of him, emitting light and heat like the sun.

After that battle, many of the surviving soldiers and low-ranking officers, like Lu Yunxian, later became the bedrock of the Sunset army. They were also very loyal to An Tianzuo.

The first thing An Tianzuo did when he returned to Luoyang was to rush to the residence of the An family's elder, An Huaishan, who had violated the military order. He then personally slew all the men who were above sixteen years of age.

That night, the An family's blood flowed like a river. The man who used to be like the sun had his military uniform covered in blood. He was like the devil that made it impossible for anyone to approach him. Only a handsome youth followed behind him, carrying a gunny sack on his back walking to the martyrs' cemetery.

They walked all the way, blood dripping from the gunny sack. When they arrived at the warriors' tomb in the dimensional zone, the handsome youth opened the cloth bag and bloody heads rolled out, stunning everyone.

An Huaishan's family-from An Huaishan to his 16-year-old grandson-and all the men who had been part of the military were beheaded. All their heads were here, and they were hung in front of the mass grave to honor the deceased warriors.

After that, An Tianzuo took control of the An family's power one step at a time. The Sunset army also gradually became synonymous with An Tianzuo.

It's been so many years… I've never seen anyone like him again… Lu Yunxian looked at Zhou Wen with mixed emotions.

Perhaps due to the environment they had grown up in, this youth and An Tianzuo had completely different personalities, but when they put their mind to doing something, they were surprisingly similar. It was as if they could do anything they wanted. They exuded a blinding radiance that was fatally attractive to others.

Crack!

Zhou Wen slashed open the stone pillar with his saber. A Realmwind Insect had its body cleaved apart, causing a rhombic crystal to roll out.

Zhou Wen was delighted when he saw the crystal. The crystal was transparent and flawless, and there seemed to be wind swirling within it. It was obvious that it was different from an ordinary crystal.

Could this be a wind stat crystal? Zhou Wen hurriedly picked it up before secretly snapping it with his phone.

'Wind Crystal: 11.'

The information displayed on the phone delighted Zhou Wen as he secretly heaved a sigh of relief.

If there were only 17 Realmwind Insects in real life, with him already killing 13, he would have to give up on the

Realmwind Insect Crystal in-game if the wind stat crystal didn’t drop.

Without any hesitation, he immediately absorbed the Wind Crystal. He felt a faint breeze enter his body, and his attributes had an additional wind element with a value of 11.

Having reached the requirements needed to absorb the Realmwind Insect Crystal, Zhou Wen chose to absorb it. The crystal immediately turned into transparent wind that permeated the blood-colored avatar’s body, forming a new Primordial Energy path and circulation in his body.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 282 - Boomerang Wind

Chapter 282 Boomerang Wind

‘Absorbed Realmwind Insect Crystal. Attained wind-elemental Primordial Energy Skill: Boomerang Wind.’

It’s not Realmwind? Zhou Wen was somewhat disappointed. He had already seen how powerful it was, so he had been hoping that it would be Realmwind, but to his dismay, it wasn’t.

Scrutinizing the Boomerang Wind’s information, he found that it was a passive wind-elemental Primordial Energy Skill that couldn’t be used actively. It had to meet certain conditions before it could be used.

Boomerang Wind: Requires saber aura-type Primordial Energy Skill to trigger, creating a wind with a boomerang effect.

Zhou Wen didn’t know what the Boomerang Wind effect was, but thankfully, he knew a saber aura-type Primordial Energy Skill. It was the Astral Slash Blade that he had obtained from the Mutated Demonized General. He had fused it with two other skills to form the Demonic Astral Wheel. Now, Zhou Wen wasn’t sure if it could still be considered a saber aura-type Primordial Energy Skill.

Since I’ve learned it, I might as well give it a try. Zhou Wen continued walking forward until he reached a Realmwind Insect’s hiding spot. As he drew his saber, he used Demonic Astral Wheel. A sanguine arc slashed out from the Bamboo

Blade like a razor blade, slicing the stone pillar into two and killing the Realmwind Insect inside.

Zhou Wen sheathed his saber and was about to head over to check the corpse of the Realmwind Insect to see if there were any crystals inside when he saw a sanguine beam flash. The Astral Slash Blade he had slashed out had flown back, but thankfully, Zhou Wen reacted fast enough and ducked in time. Otherwise, he might have been hit by his own Primordial Energy Skill.

Crack!

The Demonic Astral Wheel slashed at the stone wall behind Zhou Wen, splitting the stone wall in half before it vanished.

So this is the boomerang effect? That’s quite interesting. Zhou Wen was slightly surprised. Typical Primordial Energy Skills were uncontrollable once they were slashed out.

But with Boomerang Wind, it gave him the possibility of controlling the Demonic Astral Wheel he had slashed out.

“Young Master Wen, your saber aura is so strange. It’s similar to the legendary Cyclic Saber Aura, but it’s also different. Cyclic Saber Aura achieves victory through artifice. The saber aura is elusive because of the curved trajectory it takes, but the destructive force is lacking. But for yours, it’s extremely domineering while being bizarre. It really catches one off guard. If I hadn’t seen it, I would never expect the saber aura to return. There’s a high chance of me being heavily injured or even dying,” Lu Yunxian said.

“I’ve only just learned it and haven’t mastered it well. Sorry for making a fool of myself,” Zhou Wen said.

“Then you have to practice properly. Such a technique is often very effective on the battlefield.” Lu Yunxian said seriously, “Combat on the battlefield emphasizes a one-hit kill. Everyone will fight with all their might, but to have a slash suddenly appearing behind them is not something many will be able to dodge.”

“Alright.” Zhou Wen nodded. “We’ll talk about it later. It’s more important to find An Sheng and the rest now.”

Zhou Wen was rather familiar with the interior of the ruins and had deliberately taken a detour to kill the Realmwind Insects. Now that he had obtained the Wind Crystal, he stopped taking the detour and headed straight for the entrance to the passageway.

“Young Master Wen, could that be the underground entrance Liu Chengzhi… no… the Mei mentioned…” Lu Yunxian said as he pointed at a dilapidated building.

The structure was squarish like a stone box with only one empty side. From there, they could see a stone staircase leading underground

On both sides of the stone steps, there were two strange stone statues. The statue on the left had a tiger-like body, but on its back was a pair of wings. On the right was a bird-like statue, but on its head were two ox-like horns.

“It should be here.” Zhou Wen obviously knew that this was the entrance to the underground tunnel. He had been here many times in-game, but he just never entered.

Zhou Wen was somewhat disappointed that he didn’t see An Sheng and company. As such, he had no choice but to enter the passageway to find them.

I wonder if this item can be used as a replacement for the stone artifact? Zhou Wen looked at the stone egg in the chaos space and felt somewhat depressed.

“Young Master Wen, I’ll go in and take a look.” Lu Yun said first.

“Don’t go in now. It’s dangerous here. It doesn’t matter if we fall in, but if we lose the stone artifact, it won’t be worth it,” Zhou Wen said.

“Then what should we do?” Lu Yunxian asked.

“Let’s wait for a day or two. If An Sheng doesn’t come out, we’ll enter.” Zhou Wen needed time to understand the situation in the underground tunnel, or he would be courting death.

After all, he was only at the Legendary stage and his cultivation level wasn’t strong enough. He could not barge in forcefully like An Sheng and Ouyang Lan. If an accident happened, he might not be able to handle any unexpected situations.

Lu Yunxian followed Zhou Wen’s lead. Since Zhou Wen had said so, he had no objections.

“Stay guard here and wait for An Sheng and the rest to come out. I’ll clean up the rest of the insects in the ruins to prevent them from encountering any trouble after they come out,” Zhou Wen said as he prepared to leave. However, he suddenly heard a strange noise from the underground tunnel.

Zhou Wen cocked his head to the side to listen. The sound was like a train moving on steel tracks. It sounded rhythmic, as though a train was running underground. The sound grew

louder, giving the feeling that a train might rush up the pitch-black stone steps at any moment.

It’s a pity that Truth Listener is evolving. Otherwise, with its abilities, I could tell what was going on inside. Zhou Wen was already beginning to miss Truth Listener’s ability. It could resolve many problems.

“If I remember correctly, this place doesn’t have any train networks. There shouldn’t be any trains here. Could there be something similar to a train in the myths?” Lu Yunxian listened for a while and also heard the sound resembling a train.

Zhou Wen shook his head and didn’t say a word. In this era, he wouldn’t find it unbelievable to have a spaceship fly out from underground.

The two of them stared at the stone steps warily. It was pitch-black inside, like the mouth to a hell fiend. They could not see anything except the rumbling noises that grew in intensity. It was as if a train was coming out.

Zhou Wen and Lu Yunxian looked at each other before they retreated to the side. They stood on both sides of the passageway-at least they wouldn’t be hit by a train if it really rushed out.

As the sound approached, Zhou Wen was almost convinced that a train was about to rush out. He could even see the flickering lights of a train in the darkness.

“Is there really a train down there?” Lu Yunxian saw the light as well and couldn’t help but be surprised.

“I don’t know if it’s a train, but it’s coming out soon. Be careful.” Zhou Wen summoned Doctor Darkness and got him

to possess him. Then using Doctor Darkness’s Light of Penetration, he looked into the dark passageway.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 283 - Strange Underground Vehicle

Chapter 283 Strange Underground Vehicle

Zhou Wen’s eyes illuminated like two miniature floodlights, shooting out two light beams into the dark tunnel. Although the main purpose of this skill was to see through things, viewing things in the darkness wasn’t too difficult either. The only limitation was that it could only view things that were close by, not something too far away.

The sound of a train in the darkness wasn’t far from the exit. With a glance, Zhou Wen’s expression immediately changed.

There was actually a vehicle in the dark tunnel. It came up from the bottom, it wasn’t a train but a strange vehicle made of stone and wood.

The design of the vehicle looked ancient. It was a square-shaped horse-drawn carriage. However, the vehicle didn’t have any horses or other creatures pulling it. At the front of the carriage was a human-shaped puppet. It stood at a stand at the front of the vehicle, both hands holding onto a crank. Its body moved up and down as it rhythmically rotated the stone crank.

With the rotation of the stone crank, the strange vehicle moved up the stone steps. The stone wheels collided with the edge of the stone steps, producing loud thuds. It moved at a rather slow speed.

Beside the puppet was a wooden rod with a stone lamp hanging from it. The light that Zhou Wen and Lu Yunxian saw earlier was emitted from the stone lamp.

Apart from the puppet, there were no other creatures to be seen. It was as if the puppet was driving the vehicle.

The puppet was strange. It looked human, but its face was flat without any facial features, making it look very bizarre.

rre.

Zhou Wen only took a few looks before the strange stone carriage reached the mouth of the entrance. It then slowly came to a stop.

Zhou Wen and Lu Yunxian sized up the strange vehicle warily, but after the carriage left the stone path, it stopped moving. The puppet on it seemed to have used up all its energy. It stopped there and kept the pose of rotating the crank.

Lu Yunxian leaped up, but he didn’t approach the vehicle. He only wanted to jump up to see what was inside the vehicle.

“Lu Ning!” After Lu Yunxian reached a certain height, his gaze fell on the back of the vehicle and he screamed.

Zhou Wen also flew up to look inside. He saw that there was only a woman lying there. She looked like she had passed out. Apart from that, there was nothing else. It was empty inside the vehicle.

Zhou Wen kind of knew the woman-Lu Ning who had come with An Sheng. Zhou Wen had a deep impression of her,

especially her Snow Fox. It had powerful ice elemental powers, making Zhou Wen envious.

“I’ll go see if she’s dead.” Lu Yunxian said as he prepared to jump onto the strange vehicle.

“Don’t go yet.” Zhou Wen had a nagging feeling that the vehicle was a little strange. He stopped Lu Yunxian and used Demonic Astral Wheel to suck at the vehicle.

The unconscious Lu Ning was immediately sucked out by him and she flew towards Zhou Wen’s palm.

With Liu Chengzhi having served his lesson, Zhou Wen was a lot warier. He didn’t touch Lu Ning; instead, he retracted his strength, causing Lu Ning to fall to the ground.

He didn’t know if she was dead or not, but she did not react at all when she fell to the ground. She just lay there motionless.

Zhou Wen first used the Light of Penetration to look at Lu Ning and discovered that her heart was still beating. Her bodily functions seemed normal.

However, the strange thing was that inside her body, there were many extremely slender worms that looked like snakes squirming along her veins. It looked abnormally terrifying

Zhou Wen had an inkling that the reason Lu Ning was unconscious was probably because of these worms.

The worms were like strands of hair that squirmed through the blood vessels. Even her heart and organs were filled with them.

“She’s still alive and doesn’t seem to be injured. Her heart is also beating. For some reason, she’s unconscious,” Lu Yunxian said as he checked Lu Ning’s body.

“Her raincoat has been torn, so she can’t avoid the blood rain here. It’s not convenient to treat her here. Take her back to the tent first. We can ask her what happened inside when she’s awake.” Seeing that there were no signs of the hair-like worms drilling out of her body, Zhou Wen got Lu Yunxian to wrap Lu Ning in a rainproof cloth he had brought along. Lu Yunxian then piggybacked her out of the ruins.

When Zhao Xin and company saw Zhou Wen and Lu Yunxian coming out unscathed and bringing someone back, they were quite surprised.

“Lu Ning! What happened to her?” Zhao Xin was shocked when he saw Lu Ning.

He knew Lu Ning’s might. Her ice-elemental Primordial Energy Art was considered top-notch at the Epic stage. With the help of many excellent-grade Companion Beasts, not many people could defeat her.

Now that Lu Ning had been brought back by Zhou Wen and Lu Yunxian in a coma, it meant that the situation below wasn’t looking good.

“What happened? How’s Adjutant An and the rest?” Zhao Xin asked.

“I don’t know. When we arrived at the entrance of the underground tunnel, we happened to see her come out. We will have to wake her up before we can figure out what happened underground,” Zhou Wen said.

“Let me try. I have an Ivy Companion Beast with good healing abilities.” As Zhao Xin spoke, he summoned a plant-type Companion Beast.

The green vine wrapped around Lu Ning’s body like a snake, its sprouts crawled across Ning’s face and reached into her nostrils, mouth, and ears, producing some liquid that resembled water.

The liquid had decent healing properties. Even a severely injured person would be able to temporarily awaken.

However, despite Zhao Xi making the green vines produce the liquid, he failed to wake Lu Ning.

“Strange… If she’s only injured, the Rejuvenation Juice would still be effective even if her brain has been injured. Why isn’t she reacting at all? Could she have been hypnotized?” Zhao Xin asked, puzzled.

The others did not have any treatment abilities. They looked at each other, but there was nothing they could come up with.

“Don’t let your Companion Beast waste its energy. Let it rest for a while. It might be needed later,” Zhou Wen said to Zhao Xin.

“Young Master Wen, do you have a solution?” Zhao Xin had changed his mind and called him Young Master Wen like Lu Yunxian.

“I’ll give it a try. It’s a last-ditch effort.” As Zhou Wen spoke, he flicked his wrist. A strange energy condensed in his hand, forming a metal syringe.

Walking to Lu Ning’s side, Zhou Wen’s eyes stared at Lu Ning like a floodlight. At the same time, he injected the syringe into Lu Ning’s arm.

When he was in school, he had learned about injections, but it was limited to the basics. Furthermore, it was only theory with no practicals. Zhou Wen was only trying to see if Doctor Darkness’s poison could kill the strange worms inside Lu Ning’s body.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 284 - Operation

Chapter 284 Operation

Zhou Wen pushed the syringe in very slowly because he didn’t know how much poison was needed to kill the worms. If the dosage was too high, he might poison Lu Ning to death. He couldn’t be too reckless.

Thankfully, Zhou Wen had experienced the poison himself in-game, so he knew at what concentration it would be fatal. Although it was by his own standards, Lu Ning was at the Epic stage, so she likely could endure more than he could.

As the poison slowly entered Lu Ning’s body, Zhou Wen carefully observed her reaction to see if there was any change in the strange worms due to the poison.

If they struggled too hard, he feared that they might damage Lu Ning’s body. When that happened, Lu Ning’s body would be riddled with holes. Even if the worms were poisoned to death, it would be useless.

However, with how serious Lu Ning’s situation was, he could only take the risk and give it a try. If he didn’t get rid of the worms, she would die sooner or later anyway.

Fortunately, the worst situation that worried everyone didn’t happen. After the poison was injected into Lu Ning, her body started to twitch violently, but it did not wake her up.

Zhao Xin and company looked at Lu Ning worriedly, but Zhou Wen continued to inject more of the poison without any expression. He carefully controlled the amount.

It looked like Lu Ning was in great pain, but it was the result of the poison acting up, not because of the strange worms.

The poison flowed through her bloodstream. It was excruciating, but very effective. After absorbing the poisoned blood or being corroded by the poison, the worms quickly stopped squirming.

Before long, all the worms in Lu Ning's body had been killed, but it didn't ease Zhou Wen's furrowed brows. After the worms died, their corpses remained in Lu Ning's body. This might lead to a blockage, causing problems.

If he couldn't remove the hair-like worms, death was a certainty for Lu Ning. It was obvious that she had not fully recovered from her persistent coma.

But to extract such thin worms from so many tiny blood vessels, and with so many of them in her organs, even the best surgeon in the world wouldn't be able to cut open her blood vessels and organs to extract the worms, right? Zhou Wen thought to himself.

As though sensing Zhou Wen's thoughts, Doctor Darkness informed him with a strong thought, as though telling him that he could do it.

This left Zhou Wen somewhat astonished. Although every Companion Beast had their own will, most of them didn't have much of a mind of their own. Up to now, Zhou Wen only had four Companion Beasts that could clearly express their thoughts:

Truth Listener, Banana Fairy, Ghost Bride, and Doctor Darkness.

Doctor Darkness was born from the Dead Man Tree. It might be extraordinary. Zhou Wen was a little worried. If Doctor Darkness really gained complete sentience in the future, would he turn back into that crazy doctor?

He summoned Doctor Darkness and he walked to Lu Ning, his slender fingers holding a scalpel.

Zhao Xin and company looked at Doctor Darkness who was holding the scalpel like a puppet. They knew that it was Zhou Wen’s Companion Beast, but they didn’t know why he had summoned one.

To have a Companion Beast operate on humans? This was not something they would have come up with even in their wildest dreams.

Indeed, many Companion Beasts possessed powerful healing abilities that could even revive those on the brink of death. However, they were manifestations of dimensional power, and surgery was a professional technique that was completely different from simple powers.

In the next second, Doctor Darkness completely overturned their understanding of Companion Beasts. The scalpel in Doctor Darkness’s hand flashed as it sliced through Lu Ning’s blood vessels. Then, with a syringe in hand, he injected the poison into her blood vessels. The entire process was so fluid that it was harrowing

If not for the fact that there were no medical equipment, they might even feel like they were watching the most outstanding doctor in an operation theater.

As the poison entered her body, Lu Ning’s body convulsed once more. Then, at the spots where the blood vessels had

been cut open, blood slowly flowed out. The hair-like strange worms flowed out with them.

Zhao Xin and the rest were shocked when they saw the strange worms. They could not help but exclaim, “What the heck are those?”

After Doctor Darkness was done, he returned to Zhou Wen’s side. Zhou Wen was depressed as he thought, You are just leaving it like that? If she continues bleeding, she will die from excessive blood loss despite your removal of the strange worms.

“I want her alive,” Zhou Wen said to Doctor Darkness.

Doctor Darkness didn’t have the ability to answer. All he did was send a thought to Zhou Wen, as though he was saying that he was only responsible for extracting the strange worms.

He’s still so toxic after becoming a Companion Beast. It’s no wonder he’s called Doctor Darkness. Zhou Wen had no choice but to say to Zhao Xin, “Use your Ivy to help Lu Ning. Don’t let her bleed out.”

When Zhao Xin heard this, he summoned the Ivy again, letting it secrete the Rejuvenation Juice to nourish Lu Ning’s injured body.

The Rejuvenation Juice was rather effective. When all the strange worms had finally flowed out of the wounds, Lu Ning didn’t die from excessive blood loss. Instead, she woke up.

“Alright, stop her bleeding.” Zhou Wen had used Doctor Darkness’s Light of Penetration to keep an eye on her the entire process. Seeing that all the strange worms had flowed

out, he immediately got Zhao Xin and the rest to stop her bleeding.

The openings that Doctor Darkness had sliced were tiny. At first, it was the effects of the venom that caused the blood to flow out. When the effects of the poisons reduced, the blood would stop flowing once all the strange worms were purged. Zhou Wen couldn’t help but marvel at Doctor Darkness’s control over the poison.

“Lu Ning, how do you feel? Can you speak?” Zhou Wen asked when he saw Lu Ning open her eyes.

Lu Ning’s eyes couldn’t focus in the beginning. It took her a while to recover. After identifying Zhou Wen and company, her face revealed a look of puzzlement as she struggled to sit up and asked hoarsely, “Why am I here?”

“It was Young Master Wen who rescued you. You aren’t aware, but you were unconscious when you were brought back. Young Master Wen’s Companion Beast showed its prowess and extracted the strange worms from your body…” Zhao Xin said as he looked at the strange, hair-like worms that coiled together on the ground. He couldn’t help but shiver.

The thought of so many worms entering a body made him shudder.

Lu Ning’s expression changed when she saw the strange worms. She seemed to finally regain complete consciousness and became angry. “Lord Alcohol and those b*stards didn’t come to help Adjutant An in a search and rescue operation. After we arrived at the underground battlefield, they suddenly revealed their true colors. They attacked us, sending us down a fault.”

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 285 - Underground Tunnel

Chapter 285 Underground Tunnel

Zhou Wen and company were shocked when they heard that. Lu Yunxian hurriedly asked, “Lu Ning, make yourself clear. What happened?”

Lu Ning recounted everything that had happened. After following the marks left behind by Ouyang Lan, they found the entrance to the underground tunnel. Then, An Sheng led the rest in.

However, not long after they entered, the entrance to the passageway suddenly closed. A large amount of black liquid seeped out from the crevices in the rocks.

When they took a closer look, it wasn’t a liquid but worms that resembled strands of hair. The number of worms was immeasurable like a tidal wave. The moment the worms touched their bodies, they entered through their pores, quickly knocking them unconscious.

If one had too many worms in one’s body, it would be fatal.

The passageway couldn’t be opened, and they still needed to rescue Ouyang Lan. An Sheng could only order them to retreat deeper underground. After traveling for some time, they finally escaped the worm tide and found a strange underground temple.

Just as An Sheng gave the order to explore the temple, Lord Alcohol and the rest suddenly launched a sneak attack on An Sheng and Lu Ning. An Sheng was caught off guard and

was thrown down the fault where the worm tide was everywhere. Although Lu Ning put up a resistance, she was outnumbered. She too was thrown down the fault.

Lu Ning only remembered that she had fallen into the worm tide and fainted. She thought she was dead for sure, so she never expected to see Zhou Wen and company when she opened her eyes.

Zhou Wen and Lu Yunxian frowned after hearing that. “Don’t you know that when you came out, you were in a strange vehicle?”

“What vehicle?” Lu Ning frowned.

With Lu Ning truly unaware of this, Zhou Wen and Lu Yunxian were puzzled. From what Lu Ning said, it was naturally impossible for Lord Alcohol and the rest to be magnanimous and rescue her. There was something fishy about all of this.

“Lu Ning, can you draw a map for me of places you walked past and the things you encountered?” Zhou Wen asked.

“Yes, but we were constantly on the run back then. I can remember the general direction, but not the path. I do remember some special landmarks.” Lu Ning took a pen and paper and wrote some fragmented information.

“Have a good rest. We’ll think of a way to rescue them.” Zhou Wen took the information and prepared to return to game. He planned on following Lu Ning’s route first.

Lu Ning shook her head and did not say anything. They only had a few people left, so how could they go in to rescue the rest? Furthermore, An Sheng had already fallen into the sea of worms. The chances of survival were slim.

Zhou Wen didn’t believe that a person like An Sheng would die so easily. Furthermore, the former principal was probably inside. He had to go in, no matter what.

After returning to his tent, Zhou Wen switched on the mysterious phone and entered the Zhuolu instance dungeon, arriving at the entrance to the underground tunnel.

The game didn’t have the strange vehicle. Zhou Wen looked at the information Lu Ning wrote and directly controlled the blood-colored avatar to enter the tunnel.

The tunnel was dark and damp, and the stone steps were covered with moss. On both sides of the tunnel were partially dug out artificial stone walls. He could tell that this was supposed to be an underground cave, but it was slightly widened.

Not long after he entered the passageway, he heard a loud bang. The passageway’s entrance was blocked by a stone door, and the passageway turned dark.

Zhou Wen was somewhat unused to the darkness. Without Truth Listener’s ability, just his vision alone was insufficient. He couldn’t see anything in the darkness.

Thankfully, Zhou Wen still had Doctor Darkness to rely on. He activated Light of Penetration, and immediately Zhou Wen’s eyes shot out light beams, allowing him to see everything within ten meters.

This glance made Zhou Wen’s scalp tingle. He saw that there were many cracks on the stone walls. Countless strands of the strange hair-like worms were gushing out from the cracks, just as Lu Ning had described-they resembled black liquid.

Zhou Wen summoned the banana fan and fanned at the surrounding hair-like worms. Wherever the wind passed, the worms were immediately blown away. Slamming into the mountain wall, they turned to crushed ice and died.

‘Killed Legendary creature, Blood Threadworm… Killed Legendary creature, Blood Threadworm… Killed Legendary creature, Blood Threadworm…’ With one flap of the fan, the system’s notification flooded the screen.

They are only at the Legendary level? Zhou Wen was slightly disappointed. He didn’t expect such strange worms to only be at the Legendary stage. However, they were still very impressive for drilling into the body of an Epic expert and causing her to enter a coma.

From the looks of it, level suppression isn’t absolute. The power of these Blood Threadworms is rather special and with such copious numbers of them, it’s no wonder even Epic experts have to avoid them. When Zhou Wen saw that the Blood Threadworms were surging over at him like a tidal wave, he didn’t waste his Primordial Energy any further. He immediately ran deeper into the passageway.

Lu Ning slept for more than ten hours and used some Primordial Energy Crystals. When she woke up again, she looked much better.

When Lu Yunxian saw Lu Ning sit up, he suddenly asked her, “Lu Ning, would you dare to enter the underground tunnel again?”

“If Adjutant An is already dead, what’s the point of us entering again?” Lu Ning sighed. “Now that I think of it, we were desperately running for our lives after we entered the tunnel. I didn’t realize it back then, but on second thought, we were led by Lord Alcohol and the rest the entire time.

They were familiar with the underground world from the very beginning. They aren’t here to save Madam Lan. They have hatched a plot.”

“No matter what motives they have, I don’t believe Adjutant An will die so easily. Furthermore, Young Master Wen will definitely go in to reinforce Adjutant An. But we don’t understand the situation inside too well. If it’s possible, I hope that you can follow us into the underground tunnel,” Lu Yunxian said. There were certain things that Zhou Wen didn’t need to do, but he needed to make plans.

“Young Master Wen? Do you mean Zhou Wen? I know he has great potential, but he’s only at the Legendary stage. In such a terrifying place, even we can’t protect ourselves. What can he do?”

Lu Yunxian didn’t elaborate. He looked at Lu Ning and asked, “Then are you still willing to enter the underground tunnel again? Just think of it as doing it for Adjutant An.”

Lu Ning gaped and was about to say something when she suddenly heard a clunking sound coming from the ruins. It sounded like a bell, but it did not sound like it was a result of metal colliding. It was more like the sound of stones colliding

Zhou Wen also heard the noise and immediately connected it to the strange vehicle. Furthermore, from the direction of the sound, it seemed to be coming from the entrance to the underground tunnel.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 286 - The Strange Vehicle Sets Off

Chapter 286 The Strange Vehicle Sets Off

When Zhou Wen came out, Lu Yunxian and company had already walked out of the tent and were looking in the direction of the ruins.

“Young Master Wen, should we go take a look?” Lu Yunxian asked Zhou Wen. Clearly, he had also determined that the noises came from the strange vehicle.

Zhou Wen nodded. “It’d be good to take a look.”

He was very curious about the strange vehicle too. In the game, he didn’t see the vehicle, despite entering the tunnel.

Zhou Wen was very curious as to where the strange vehicle had come from. Was it brought in by someone or something that was originally from the underground tunnel?

Seeing Lu Yunxian follow Zhou Wen into the ruins, Lu Ning, who hadn’t recuperated from her injuries, hesitated for a moment before following them.

“How did you resolve the spatial winds?” Lu Ning rode a huge Snow Fox behind them. She didn’t see Zhou Wen and Lu Yunxian use any means to interfere with the spatial wind, so she couldn’t help feeling puzzled.

When she had entered with the others previously, they had sacrificed quite a number of Companion Beasts to find a way

to interfere with the spatial wind. However, it was only a stopgap measure; the spatial winds still appeared.

“Young Master Wen has already killed the dimensional creature that uses the spatial winds. There shouldn’t be any spatial winds anytime soon,” said Lu Yunxian.

Lu Ning found it unbelievable. She looked suspiciously at Zhou Wen, finding it hard to believe that this youth could do something so unbelievable.

However, the reality forced her to believe it. She didn’t encounter the spatial wind again despite having been inside the ruins for some time.

Zhou Wen didn’t say a word as he walked forward silently. Soon, the three of them arrived in front of the underground tunnel.

As expected, the strange vehicle that emitted the sounds was parked in the tunnel. However, it suddenly started moving again when they approached. The wooden puppet standing in front of the vehicle started to move its arms, turning the crank. The strange vehicle began to creak, producing a loud clang with every revolution of the crank.

The wheels of the strange vehicle moved slowly, but this time, it didn’t move forward, but backward as though it was returning to the ruins.

“This is the strange vehicle you were talking about? Did I come out lying on it?” Lu Ning asked as she looked at the strange vehicle that was slowly retreating.

“Yes.” Lu Yunxian said, “You came out on it. You were the only one.”

“What power is driving it?” Lu Ning looked at the puppet on the strange vehicle, as if she wanted to know if it were alive.

“Young Master Wen and I had checked before. The vehicle is a dead object. There are no signs of living creatures on the puppet, but we didn’t discover any fuel or similar items. We have no idea what principle is behind the driving force. We originally imagined that it had expended its energy source, but from the looks of it, that isn’t the case,” Lu Yunxian said.

Seeing that the strange vehicle was slowly retreating and about to enter the underground tunnel, Zhou Wen looked at Lu Ning and asked, “Lu Ning, you were brought out by the vehicle while unconscious. Then, could you have fallen into the strange vehicle?”

“I really don’t know. I was struck off the fault by Lord Alcohol and the rest and fell into the tide of Blood Threadworms. I lost consciousness very quickly. I really don’t know what happened next.” Lu Ning shook her head.

Zhou Wen looked at the strange vehicle that was about to retreat into the tunnel with a frown.

In the game, he had already entered deep underground with the information given by Lu Ning. However, Lu Ning’s information only had a few landmarks and didn’t come with detailed directions or path identifiers. Hence, Zhou Wen had no choice but to find a path himself.

However, the underground world was massive. He had spent more than ten hours in it without finding the temple that Lu Ning mentioned.

Zhou Wen didn’t have the opinion that Lu Ning was lying to him because the roads inside were complicated, as though they had been changed artificially. He walked for a long time

and realized that there were many instances when he would circle back to a spot he had passed previously. This spot wasn’t fixed, but despite walking for more than ten hours in-game, Zhou Wen still failed to walk past it.Visit website our Listnovel.com

“I remember you mentioning that you fell to a fault layer underground. That was inside the temple, right?” Zhou Wen asked Lu Ning.

“That’s right. As soon as we entered the temple, we were ambushed by Lord Alcohol and the others, and we were struck down the fault layer,” Lu Ning said.

“If I were to deduce that you fell into this strange vehicle and triggered some mechanism, allowing it to take you out, then if we were to ride this vehicle, would it take us back to the fault layer where you dropped?”

“I really don’t know, but it’s too dangerous,” Lu Ning smiled bitterly.

“Yes, that’s too dangerous.” Lu Yunxian said.

“Although it’s very dangerous, this might be the best solution. Lu Ning also said that she was led by Lord Alcohol and the rest. Since they know the path and we don’t, we might not be able to find the temple if we just head down. Lu Ning came out on this strange vehicle, and since she was able to come out safely, it implies that the strange vehicle’s interior is safe. Our only way of going straight to the temple is by taking the strange vehicle in,” Zhou Wen said.

Of course, there was another sentence that Zhou Wen didn’t say. He had played the game for more than ten hours and was quite familiar with the underground world. He had a way to deal with the few dimensional creatures inside. What was

most troublesome was that he couldn’t get out of the maze-like area. The strange vehicle in front of them seemed to be the only hope.

“But that’s just speculation. What if the strange vehicle takes us to a more dangerous place?” Lu Yunxian said.

“We know nothing about the interior, so everything inside is dangerous for us.” Zhou Wen saw that half of the vehicle had entered the tunnel and didn’t hesitate anymore. He walked over briskly and jumped into the carriage and said to Lu Yunxian and Lu Ning, “Head back to the camp and wait for me. I’ll head on to take a look.”

Although Zhou Wen could continue waiting and find a way out in the game, he didn’t know how long that would take. Perhaps a day or two, maybe a week or so, or even a month or two. He was afraid the former principal couldn’t afford to wait for him.

Zhou Wen wasn’t worried that he would be trapped inside. With his understanding of the underground world, he knew that there were a few relatively safe spots inside. Furthermore, his chaos space also had plenty of daily necessities. He wouldn’t be in danger even if he was trapped for a year.

Furthermore, he had his phone. After entering the tunnel, he could have the blood-colored avatar follow the path. If any accidents were to happen, he could find a safe place to continue exploring in game.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 287 - Underground Starry Sky

Chapter 287 Underground Starry Sky

“Young Master Wen, I’ll go with you.” Lu Yunxian rushed over and jumped onto the vehicle.

Lu Ning was still hesitating, but when she saw that the strange vehicle had already tilted and was about to slide into the underground tunnel, she gritted her teeth and let the Snow Fox rush her to the strange vehicle.

Lu Ning jumped onto the strange vehicle just as it slid down.

Cha-chuff… Cha-chuff… Cha-chuff…

The strange vehicle entered the tunnel, and like a roller coaster, it suddenly sped up and dived deeper underground.

Zhou Wen and company hurriedly grabbed the edge of the carriage and saw the scenery behind them rapidly retreating. The strange vehicle charged forward as though it was charging through the criss-crossing caves, but it seemed to have a fixed trajectory.

The puppet moved its arms, pushing the crank wildly; its body moving up and down like a sewing machine at full speed.

“Hold tight. Don’t get thrown out.” The strange vehicle was too fast, and it didn’t slow down when it made turns. Zhou Wen and company nearly flew out due to the shift in their center of gravity.

The three of them grabbed onto the edge of the carriage as their bodies floated up. They waited for the bend to pass before slamming into the back of the carriage. Before they could heave a sigh of relief, the next bend was up.

Zhou Wen and Lu Yunxian were fine, but Lu Ning had yet to recover. These jolts made her expression change.

Fortunately, Lu Ning was not a pampered child. She had traveled across the League as a mercenary hunter, hunting countless dimensional creatures. She had experienced many battles and had encountered situations many times more difficult than she was in now. This wasn’t enough to throw her into a panic.

After a while, the slope of the cave slowed down and the speed of the strange vehicle slowed down.

Zhou Wen and company could finally sit safely in the carriage without being flung around.

Lu Yunxian held onto the edge of the carriage and stood up. He looked outside and saw stone walls and tunnels. Looking around, he soon realized that he couldn’t even tell which direction they were facing.

“Young Master Wen, I don’t even know where I’m heading to now.” Lu Yunxian looked at Zhou Wen helplessly.

“Lu Ning, look around. Do you remember this place?” Zhou Wen asked Lu Ning.

He knew the direction and had even memorized the route of the strange vehicle. His focus allowed him to remember everything even under harsh conditions. This was not something the average person could do.

However, Zhou Wen didn’t say this out loud. Instead, he asked Lu Ning.

Lu Ning’s face was pale. She stood up, with the help of the carriage’s sides, and looked around. After a while, she said, “There are no obvious landmarks here. It’s the same as the average cave. I don’t know if I’ve been here before.”

After some thought, Zhou Wen agreed. There weren’t any special characteristics here other than stone walls and forks everywhere. Furthermore, with their poor eyesight, they only had a visibility of less than twenty meters from the illumination of the stone lamp at the front of the vehicle.

Suddenly, their eyes lit up. They saw a starry sky appear in the darkness in front of them. In the pitch-black night sky, countless stars shimmered.

Zhou Wen and company quickly discovered that it wasn’t the night sky but a type of ore on the dark stone walls. It was similar to mica which gave off fascinating lights.

The vehicle traveled in the dark cave, and with the scattered ores looking like stars, it felt like they were flying in the starry sky. It was so beautiful that it made one’s soul feel liberated.

“Not good. When we came here, we passed similar places. Beside those strange light-emitting ores are strange Epic creatures. They resemble bats but do not have sonar skills. Their eyes will shoot out light beams. Once contact is made, the body will melt like snow. It’s extremely terrifying,” Lu Ning said.

“How many did you meet earlier?” Zhou Wen asked as he looked at the top of the stone tunnel.

“We met three in total, but we didn’t encounter them together. Otherwise, there might have been casualties,” Lu Ning said.

“Then you might want to be mentally prepared now,” Zhou Wen said with a strange expression.

Lu Ning and Lu Yunxian couldn’t see clearly, but Zhou Wen could see using Doctor Darkness’s Light of Penetration. There were white bat-shaped dimensional creatures hanging from the ceiling. He had no idea how many there were since he couldn’t count them all.

Just as Lu Ning was about to ask him what he meant, she heard the flapping of her wings. A large swath of white bats swooped down from the ceiling like a thick layer of white cloud. Countless bats had flown over.

When Lu Ning saw this, the last of the color in her face drained. Just the number of bats flying over numbered at least a hundred. And this was limited to what she could see. She had no idea how many more she couldn’t see in the darkness.

When they first came, they had taken quite a lot of effort to kill a white bat. Now, to have so many bats charging at them, it could be said that they had just been passed the death sentence.

Lu Yunxian and Zhou Wen prepared for combat. Lu Yunxian didn’t know how powerful the white bats were, but Zhou Wen did. However, he wasn’t afraid. He had already seen these white bats in-game.

The light beams produced by the white bats’ eyes were indeed powerful, but Zhou Wen had his ways of dealing with them.

Seeing large swaths of bats fly over, Zhou Wen held the banana fan and waved it at the bats. An invisible Grand Yin Wind gushed out, sending the white bats flying.

Lu Ning summoned the Snow Fox and was about to fight to the death when she saw Zhou Wen standing in front of the vehicle, holding an extremely beautiful fan in his hand. He gently fanned the white cloud-like bats.

The white bats suddenly seemed to be swept away by an invisible force. They flew out and slammed into the stone ceiling, their bodies shattering from the impact. One by one, they smashed loudly into the surrounding stone walls and stone steps around them.

Lu Ning looked at Zhou Wen in a daze, unable to believe her eyes. The might of the fan had actually killed nearly a hundred white bats. It was truly astounding. She found it unbelievable that it was the work of a Legendary student like Zhou Wen.

She could accept it if that had been done by a top-notch Epic expert. Yet, Zhou Wen, a Legendary, was able to produce such might. She found it surreal.

Zhou Wen didn’t find it strange. The banana fan was a top-notch Epic and the white bats also had their weaknesses. They were extremely fast and most Epic experts would find it difficult to injure them. Together with their terrifying eye beam skills, they were indeed tough to deal with.

However, the white bat’s weakness was that its Constitution was too low. It was the weakest among Epic creatures with about 20 points. It was not much stronger than a Legendary. It couldn’t withstand the Grand Yin Wind and could not avoid its huge area-of-effect attack. It could be said that the banana fan was its nemesis.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 288 - Strange Vehicle Adventure

Chapter 288 Strange Vehicle Adventure

Zhou Wen watched as large numbers of white bats landed in the tunnel in fragments behind him. There were also some crystals, and he couldn’t help but feel wistful.

The strange vehicle continued to move forward. He didn’t know what the consequences would be if he left it, so he didn’t attempt to pick up the crystals. He could only watch as the strange vehicle left the spoils untouched.

Despite him killing a large group of bats, there were still large numbers that didn’t fear death as they charged forward. Looking at the white shadows flying above them, it made one’s scalp tingle.

Zhou Wen had just used the Grand Yin Wind and his Yuan Qi hadn’t recovered when he saw large swaths of white bats rush down. His expression changed slightly as he clenched his Bamboo Blade and prepared to engage the white bats in melee combat.

Lu Yunxian and Lu Ning summoned their Companion Beasts to prepare for battle. The carriage was too small, so they could only summon Companion Beasts in their companion form-as armor or weapons-to aid them in battle.

When a large horde of white bats charged down, Zhou Wen was just about to draw his saber when there was a humming

sound. All the white bats above retreated. None of them continued charging as they circled the ceiling of the cave.

Zhou Wen and company were stunned as they looked ahead. They didn’t know when the puppet began holding a strange musical instrument. It was likely made of stone; flat with a few holes on it. It was rather crudely made.

However, just as the white bat was about to charge down, the puppet placed the stone musical instrument in front of its face. Its face was a wooden board without any facial features. It was unknown how it blew, but it produced a humming sound.

The moment the sound emitted, the white bats immediately retreated again. They hovered above them, but none had the courage to swoop down again.

The strange vehicle moved through the bats, but they didn’t encounter any more attacks from them. They safely moved forward.

“Young Master Wen… Don’t tell me that the puppet is alive…?” Lu Yunxian looked at the puppet with his mouth agape. He thought it was a mechanical object. Who knew that there would be such a development?

Zhou Wen looked at the puppet as well. The puppet stood in front, no longer moving its arm. However, the strange vehicle continued to move forward at a constant speed. The crank was also spinning autonomously.

The puppet stood there, holding the stone musical instrument as it looked forward into the distance. However, without any facial features and eyes, what was it using? It was extremely bizarre.

Zhou Wen found it odd, but since it was beneficial to them, he didn’t have any intention of attacking the puppet. He was just worried about where the strange carriage would take them.

The scenery in front of them suddenly broadened as the white bats that filled the sky scattered. Zhou Wen and company looked past the scattered white bats and saw a blue sky.

Unlike the cave from before, this place was actually a huge and boundless space. It was impossible to see the end of this space at a glance. In the distance, one could even see the sea and islands. Above them was a blue sky.

However, the blue sky was a little too blue. It was like a sapphire. Zhou Wen looked carefully and realized that it really was a sapphire.

A gigantic sapphire formed the sky of the underground space by occupying the entire area above.

There were no suns or stars. The sapphire emitted a faint blue light that illuminated the entire underground space. At the same time, everything in the underground space had a blue hue.

In the next second, the strange vehicle landed on the blue ocean. Zhou Wen didn’t know if it was an ocean, but he just couldn’t see the water body’s end. All he saw was deep blue seawater.

The strange vehicle cruised over the sea surface. Its stone wheels were rolling across the surface as though it was traveling on flat ground. They dragged out two white waves on the surface of the sea in its wake.

“What’s that underneath?” Lu Yunxian pointed at the seawater beside him in horror.

Zhou Wen and Lu Ning looked at the surface of the sea and saw a huge shadow, as though a behemoth was swimming under the strange vehicle.

All they could see was a gigantic shadow, nothing else. Furthermore, the shadow was gradually expanding.

Splash!

The seawater erupted like a volcanic eruption as it sprayed hundreds of feet into the sky. Huge waves formed as the seawater struck the strange vehicle. However, the strange vehicle appeared imperturbable. This didn’t stop the seawater from pouring into the carriage, drenching them.

However, Zhou Wen and company weren’t in the mood to care about the seawater. The three of them widened their eyes as they stared at the sea by the side of the war wagon.

A huge creature that looked like it was carved from obsidian extended half its body from the sea. Its body was perfect and gorgeous. Its black obsidian-like scales shimmered and every inch of its body seemed to be exquisitely carved. Even if one were to observe the titanic body with a magnifying glass, one wouldn’t be able to find any crudeness or flaws.

The huge body that was like a hill exuded an exquisite and majestic feeling.

“Dragon… That’s a dragon… a dragon carved from obsidian…” Lu Yunxian stammered as he pointed at the creature that had stretched half its body out of the sea.

Zhou Wen didn’t look too good either. The development seemed to exceed his expectations. Regardless of whether the terrifying creature in the sea was a dragon or not, he could tell from its aura that it was a terrifying existence. It might even be stronger than the white dragon in Dragon’s Well.

Boom! Boom!

A series of crashing waves sounded as the seawater around the strange vehicle churned. Copious amounts of seawater surged over, knocking Zhou Wen and company off their feet.

However, their gazes were never on the strange vehicle’s interior, but outside. Black dragon heads emerged one after another. One… Two… Three…

When Zhou Wen saw the ninth black dragon extend its head out of the sea, he felt numb.

“Roar!” The nine creatures carved from obsidian roared at the strange vehicle, sending sonar waves at them. Even the seawater turned into tumultuous waves as a result of the sonar waves. They surged at the puny strange vehicle from every direction.

“We’re doomed!” Lu Yunxian’s expression changed drastically. Such terrifying creatures and such terrifying sound waves implied that they had no way of escaping the calamity.

Zhou Wen held the banana fan tightly as he prepared for death. Even though he knew he wasn’t a match for these entities, he couldn’t just sit back and do nothing.

“Hum!” The strange sound from the stone musical instrument echoed in front of the carriage. The sound wave

dispersed the churning sonar waves and tsunamis at the same time, preventing them from getting close to the strange vehicle.

The nine black dragons stared at the strange vehicle covetously, but none of them lunged forward. They only watched as the strange vehicle slowly drove towards the other side of the sea.

Zhou Wen and company’s hearts raced. After the strange vehicle left the nine black dragons, Zhou Wen looked back and saw the nine obsidian-like dragons roaring at the sky as though they were venting their anger.

And beneath the sea, Zhou Wen discovered that the lower half of their bodies were connected, like a black mountain that had sunken into the sea. Only then did he realize that it wasn’t nine dragons, but a monster with nine heads.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 289 - Returning to the Bat Cave

Chapter 289 Returning to the Bat Cave

The strange vehicle raced across the sea while the puppet remained in front, staring into the distance, motionless like a statue.

“Is this how I came back?” Lu Ning asked. Her face looked puzzled. She couldn’t imagine what she had experienced while she was unconscious.

Zhou Wen leaned against the back of the strange vehicle, playing games on his phone.

He wanted to see if he could control the blood-colored avatar to take the same path.

Although he knew that it was useless even if the blood-colored avatar walked over, successfully passing the cave of white bats, it was impossible for him to cross the underground sea with the nine-headed dragon guarding it.

However, there wasn’t much to do in the strange vehicle. Lu Ning was resting while Lu Yunxian was observing the situation ahead. Since he had nothing else to do, Zhou Wen began grinding the instance dungeon.

Zhou Wen sat at the back, and there was only the sea behind him. In front, Lu Yunxian and Lu Ning couldn’t see what he was playing.

Zhou Wen controlled the blood-colored avatar to move forward at full speed. Soon, large groups of Blood Threadworms surrounded him. Zhou Wen didn’t have the patience to deal with them. He ignored them and ran at full speed. When his Primordial Energy filled up, he killed all of them, letting them rain crystals. However, he no longer had any use for Legendary crystals.

As for the Blood Threadworm eggs that dropped, Zhou Wen would pick them up and incubate them.

The Blood Threadworms were not strong, but if there were a lot of them, things were different. Even Epic stage experts had to avoid them.

Zhou Wen had hatched quite a number of Blood Threadworms. He planned on trying to see if they were of any use. If they were useful, he would keep them and not feed them to his pets.

Where can I find a speed-type mount? I run with my legs all the time and it expends my Primordial Energy, but I can’t do anything about it. Zhou Wen used his Primordial Energy to increase his speed and ran for a while before having to recover his Primordial Energy. This was quite tiring, so he thought of how he needed a mount.

Zhou Wen naturally had something extraordinary about him, being called a genius among geniuses by the former principal. His divergent thinking abilities and memory far exceeded that of ordinary people. He remembered the complicated routes that the strange vehicle took, despite its fast speed and quickly arrived at the cave of white bats.

Looking at the ores that looked like stars in the cave, Zhou Wen suddenly wondered if he could dig out these ores in-game.

Thinking about it, he gave it a try. It was not difficult to dig the ores. The blood-colored avatar shattered the rocks beside the ore, digging out a translucent milky-white crystal.

‘Obtained Primordial Crystal. Weight: 21 grams, Primordial Crystal Purity: 0.12’

This crystal is actually something that the game acknowledges. But what’s the use of Primordial Crystals? It can’t be used to make weapons that can kill dimensional creatures like Primordial Gold, right? Zhou Wen was astonished.

Unfortunately, there was no storage space in-game. Even if he knew that the Primordial Crystals were useful, he couldn’t take them away.

I wonder if there are any storage-type Companion Beasts. If they exist, I have to get one. Otherwise, it’s such a pity to waste so much good stuff. Zhou Wen had heard of such a Companion Beast, but he had never seen it. He also had no idea where they dropped.

Zhou Wen didn’t wait for the white bats to attack after entering the bat cave. He attracted the attention of the nearby white bats over.

There wasn’t any strange vehicle in the game, so if he were to be surrounded by the bats, he would definitely die. Therefore, Zhou Wen planned on killing them along the way and let them drop their items.

If he was lucky, he might even have a white bat drop as a mount. They flew at extremely fast speeds and were rare flying pets. Zhou Wen was very interested in getting one.

The only worry was he couldn’t hatch an Epic Companion Egg.

Zhou Wen lured a horde of white bats and with the fan, he sent them flying. Their bodies turned into ice sculptures in midair, shattering upon collision with the stone walls.

Seeing dozens of white bats being destroyed by a single attack and having plenty of crystals drop excited Zhou Wen greatly.

It would be great if all Epic creatures can be killed as easily as these white bats, Zhou Wen thought greedily.

It was a pity that it was not easy to find such weak Epic creatures. Furthermore, there were few places with Epic creatures appearing in huge hordes. In some smaller dimensional zones, Epic creatures usually appeared alone. Even in a super dungeon, like Zhuolu, it was rare to encounter one.

After scanning the battlefield, he discovered that the crystals produced by the white bat were mostly Speed Crystals. Epic crystals were very useful, but Zhou Wen’s absorbing was useless, nor could he take them away. He felt as if he had lost a winning lottery ticket as he looked at the floor of crystals.

A storage Companion Beast. I must get a storage Companion Beast, Zhou Wen screamed inwardly.

Zhou Wen lured and killed countless white bats along the way. Although he didn’t keep a careful count, he estimated he killed at least 400-500 of them. The crystals that dropped were all basic stat crystals.

Ding!

Upon hearing a rather unique chime, Zhou Wen looked at the pile of white bat corpses and his eyes lit up.

Among a few crystals, there was a crystal that glowed blue. The words on it were different from the rest.

Poison: 13… Overjoyed, Zhou Wen he hurriedly got the blood-colored avatar to pick up the Poison Crystal. After absorbing it, his Poison stat reached 13 points.

A Poison stat allowed Zhou Wen to have a decent poison resistance. Furthermore, some special Epic Primordial Energy Skills had special requirements towards his stats.

Zhou Wen thought that if he could obtain a Primordial Energy Skill that came with the Poison element in the future, the Poison stat would definitely be useful.

Seeing that the white bats dropped Poison Crystals, Zhou Wen felt energized and continued charging forward. He kept luring and culling large numbers of them.

When he was less than halfway through the bat cave, Zhou Wen lured a large group of white bats and fanned them, sending them all to their deaths.

However, one of the bats flickered and vanished as though it had teleported. When it appeared again, it had passed the Grand Yin Wind and appeared in front of the blood-colored avatar.

Only then did Zhou Wen realize that the white bat was different from the others. It was bigger and its color was different from the whiteness of the normal white bats. It looked as though it was carved from milk-white jade, and its eyes were like two shining diamonds.

In the next second, a beam shot out from the white jade-like bat’s eyes and headed straight for the blood-colored avatar.

Zhou Wen hurriedly used Ghost Steps to dodge its attack and began engaging in combat with it.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 290 - White Shadow of Poison

Chapter 290 White Shadow of Poison

The white bats' speed was already surprisingly fast, but the jade-white bat was ludicrously fast. It wasn't inferior to the Ghost King. Furthermore, Zhou Wen realized that it wasn't just purely a difference in speed because it could now use the skill to pass through Great Yin Wind without suffering any damage.

Could this jade-white bat really be capable of spatial teleportation? Or is it the legendary instantaneous transmission? Zhou Wen was astonished as he constantly controlled the blood-colored avatar to circle around the jade-white bat.

Doctor Darkness and Ghost Bride helped by the side, but the jade-white bat was too fast. They were unable to injure it.

Suddenly, Zhou Wen's heart stirred. He saw the jade-white bat phase into existence on a spot before him. After deducing its location, he suddenly raised his palm and chopped down the Demonic Astral Wheel.

The sanguine wheel of light spun furiously as it slashed at the jade-white bat.

The jade-white bat flapped its wings and easily dodged the Demonic Astral Wheel. However, when it continued charging at Zhou Wen, it grunted.

The Demonic Astral Wheel boomeranged back and landed on the jade-white bat's back at an even faster speed.

CV

Zhou Wen’s Primordial Energy wasn’t enough to severely injure an Epic creature, but the jade-white bat was the type of Epic creature with high Speed but weak Constitution.

With the Demonic Astral Wheel hitting its back, the spinning blade beams immediately left a long gash on its back as blood splattered.

This attack caught the jade-white bat by surprise. Its body deviated from its trajectory and lost control for a moment.

Doctor Darkness stabbed out with the scalpel in his hand. The scalpel in the Life Soul’s hand almost overlapped with his scalpel, stabbing into the bat’s chest, staggering it in midair.

Zhou Wen didn’t hesitate and made Banana Fairy take her true form. She puffed up her cheeks, turning her face chubby. Then, she blew at the jade-white bat.

The jade-white bat was frozen in place by the scalpel and couldn’t move. It was sent flying by the Great Yin Wind. Its body rapidly turned into an ice sculpture in the air before smashing into the wall and shattering to pieces.

Ding! Zhou Wen heard another special chime of something dropping. He hurriedly looked over and saw a milky-white egg drop on the ground.

Zhou Wen was instantly overjoyed. I’m really lucky today. I’m getting whatever I’ve been wishing for.

However, on second thought, Zhou Wen felt a little nervous. He didn’t know if he could hatch a complete Epic Companion Egg.

Regardless, Zhou Wen first got the blood-colored avatar to pick up the Companion Egg and checked its attributes.

White Shadow of Poison: Epic

Life Providence: Bone Corroding

Life Soul: Shadow of Darkness

Strength: 27

Speed: 40

Constitution: 24

Primordial Energy: 32

Primordial Energy Skill: Flash, Poison Ray, Claw of Poison

Companion Form: Arm Wings

After seeing the White Shadow of Poison's attributes, Zhou Wen finally understood why this fellow was able to pass through the Grand Yin Wind. It didn't teleport, but its Shadow of Darkness Life Soul could temporarily let it take on a shadow form.

No matter how strong the wind was, it was impossible for it to blow away the shadow. The White Shadow of Poison in an incorporeal shadow form was nearly invulnerable.

However, White Shadow of Poison could only enter a shadow state for a short period of time. Coupled with the speed-boosting Flash skill, it appeared as if it had completed teleportation.

Zhou Wen gained a rough idea of its three skills, but White Shadow of Poison's Companion Form left him somewhat

puzzled.

Flying-type Companion Beasts were mostly winged Companion Beasts, and most of them had wings as their companion form. However, this was the first time Zhou Wen had heard of arm wings.

Looking at the White Shadow of Poison’s information, especially the information on the companion form, he saw a pair of white bat wings appear on the phone screen.

However, unlike ordinary wings, the upper part of the wings was not an ordinary skeleton frame, but a bat’s claws.

The arm wings could be considered wings and could also be considered a pair of arms. It was indeed very strange.

Zhou Wen carefully looked at the White Shadow of Poison’s wings and discovered that they were indeed very ordinary, but extremely useful. They could be used as wings, allowing it to fly faster, and it could also be used as a pair of arms that were rather agile. When in combat, they could launch an attack that caught the enemy by surprise.

Good stuff. I just don’t know if it can be fully hatched. Zhou Wen couldn’t bear to use such a high-leveled Companion Egg as food. He gritted his teeth and prepared to hatch it.

However, Zhou Wen didn’t incubate it blindly. He first held onto the Companion Egg to grind a few white bats and picked up a few Primordial Energy Crystals. Placing them beside the blood-colored avatar, he made the blood-colored avatar sit on some and held two Primordial Energy Crystals in hand. Only then did he choose to hatch the egg.

In an instant, Zhou Wen felt his Primordial Energy drain out of his body. He couldn’t even replenish his Primordial Energy

with Dao Body. At this moment, the two Primordial Energy Crystals in the blood-colored avatar's hands showed their effects. They kept injecting the blood-colored avatar with Primordial Energy. Likewise with the Primordial Energy Crystals under him. However, they were not absorbed as quickly as the Primordial Energy Crystals in his hand.

Although he had the dual replenishment stemming from his Dao Body and Primordial Energy Crystals, hatching a Companion Egg required too much Primordial Energy in a short period of time. The expenditure couldn't keep up with the supply provided, making Zhou Wen feel physically drained.

After enduring for more than twenty seconds, just as Zhou Wen thought the blood-colored avatar was about to explode, the Companion Egg finally turned into a white beam and fused into the blood-colored avatar.

At the same time, a white bat tattoo appeared on Zhou Wen's back. Clearly, the incubation had been successful.

I succeeded! Zhou Wen was overjoyed as he hurriedly looked at the White Shadow of Poison's attributes. They were still the same. It remained at the Epic stage and didn't drop in level. Its attributes were exactly the same as before.

Zhou Wen anxiously summoned the White Shadow of Poison before riding on its back and rode it deeper into the bat cave. Indeed, he was traveling much faster this way.

With the help of the White Shadow of Poison, Zhou Wen's grinding speed increased. Along the way, he had another Poison Crystal and a Primordial Energy Skill Crystal drop.

The Poison Crystal only had 9 points, so it was useless for Zhou Wen with his 13 Poison stat. However, Zhou Wen loved

the Flash Primordial Energy Skill Crystal. He absorbed it immediately, learning Flash at the Rank 6. It was a wing-required flying skill that greatly augmented his flight speed.

Zhou Wen had the White Shadow of Poison, so he used it with great skill and verve.

If he wasn’t in a rush to scout ahead, Zhou Wen would have spent a few months here grinding and having more good stuff drop.

After passing the bat cave, Zhou Wen finally saw the endless underground sea. He couldn’t help but look deep into the sea, searching for signs of the nine-headed dragon.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 291 - Totem?

Chapter 291 Totem?

Zhou Wen summoned the White Shadow of Poison, getting it to fly higher and cling towards the sapphire sky. He hoped to avoid the nine-headed dragon and successfully pass through the underground sea.

Zhou Wen kept staring at the surface of the sea but didn’t discover the terrifying shadow. Suddenly, a blue light flashed on the screen and the screen turned black. The blood-colored avatar died mysteriously.

What was that? Zhou Wen frowned as he looked at his phone. He only knew that the item wasn’t from the nine-headed dragon but from the sapphire sky.

Thankfully, we came on the strange vehicle. Otherwise, crossing the underground sea would have been extremely difficult. Just as Zhou Wen was about to restart the game, he heard Lu Yunxian, who was in charge of observing upfront, shout, “Land ahoy!”

Zhou Wen and Lu Ning stood up and saw that in the direction the strange vehicle was heading, a silver beach had indeed appeared. The sand there was whiter than any sand that Zhou Wen had seen before, like snow.

The strange vehicle touched shore and the wheels left two deep tracks on the beach as it continued forward.

As soon as they crossed the sea, a white desert appeared in front of him. It was as white as snow.

Zhou Wen originally imagined that the strange vehicle would continue on for a little while-at least an hour or two-just like how it was in the underground sea.

However, just as Zhou Wen sat down and was about to take out his phone to continue challenging the instance dungeons, he heard Lu Yunxian's voice. "Young Master Wen, what do you think is that?"

Zhou Wen, who hadn't even gotten comfortable, had no choice but to get up again. He looked deep into the desert and saw a flag-like object sticking out from the sand in the distance.

The reason it only looked like a flag was that the flag shaft was bent. It looked like a snake that had not lifted its body up straight. There was a piece of animal hide hanging on the top, black and tattered. Its shape resembled enlarged pants, ones that hadn't been washed for centuries.

Zhou Wen focused his gaze and vaguely saw a symbol on the thing that looked like a pair of pants. However, without Truth Listener, his vision was clearly inferior to Lu Yunxian's and Lu Ning's.

Lu Ning's expression changed slightly as she said in a strange voice, "I think I've seen the symbol on the flag before when Lord Alcohol took me into that stone temple."

"What kind of symbol is it? Are you sure it's the same?" Zhou Wen asked.

Lu Ning looked at it for a while longer, and when the vehicle got closer, she said, "There's no mistake about that. It's that symbol. It's a triangular anchor. There's also a long-haired woman's side profile drawn on it. As the symbol looks very

weird, I took a few more glances back then. It left quite a deep impression on me.”

A ship anchor with a woman’s side profile? Alarmed, Zhou Wen never expected to see it in such a place, having seen them before.

“Yes, although I don’t know who invented ship anchors or who the inventor is, according to history, it can’t have appeared recently. There must be large ships built before an anchor is needed. In Zhuolu myth, there are no stories with huge shops. So to have an anchor appear there naturally left a deep impression on me,” Lu Ning added.

“Could it have been carved after someone went in?” Lu Yunxian pondered.

“I had such thoughts too, but the pattern was specially engraved on a stone monument. Furthermore, the stone looked like it has been ravaged by thousands of years of history. It was rather indiscernible, so I doubt it was newly carved onto it. On second thought, it hasn’t been a century since the dimensional storms happened. The Zhuolu battlefield only appeared in recent years, so who could have entered the stone monument so early? Besides, it has to share the same architectural style as the stone temple. Even the materials and dating have to be uniform. That’s quite impossible,” Lu Ning said.

“It’s really quite impossible.” Zhou Wen nodded slightly, but his eyes remained fixed on the fluttering ragged pants. At that moment, he could tell that it was a piece of very tattered animal skin, but the anchor symbol was rather complete. Other than the difference in size, the anchor and the woman with the side profile were identical.

What’s the meaning of this woman anchor symbol? If this pattern existed in ancient times, then who’s its owner? The woman on the anchor? Zhou Wen guessed inwardly, but he had no answers.

The bent flag shaft was not a snake but a black ancient vine that looked curled.

“What’s that under the flag?” Lu Yunxian said while staring at the bottom of the vine flag.

Zhou Wen could only see a blob of grayish-black shadows, as though it was someone sitting there with a cloak draped over him.

When the strange vehicle got closer to the flag, Zhou Wen realized that it wasn’t a cloak. It was just a strange robe made of animal hide. It looked like a cloak due to the covering of the head.

As for the creature in the beast-hide robes, it was unknown what it was. All that was left were bones. The bones were crystalline and had a clear and flawless look. It formed a stark contrast to the crude hide.

Creak!

When they were less than ten meters away from the flag, the strange vehicle screeched to a halt. The puppet turned around and turned its face at the skeleton in the animal hide. It bent its back slightly as if it was giving a bow.

Why did it stop just like that? Zhou Wen looked around in puzzlement. There was a white desert around him. He didn’t see any stone temple, nor was there a fault cliff or Blood Threadworms. It didn’t look like the place Lu Ning had mentioned.

Lu Ning was also confused. The three of them waited for a while. When they realized that the vehicle had no intention of continuing and the puppet had stopped moving, they jumped out from the back of the vehicle. They approached the skeleton and looked at it and the vine flag.

There were no words on the ragged vine flag. The only thing there was the anchor symbol. There was nothing special about it.

“This is the Zhuolu battlefield. Do you think this vine flag is the flag of a particular race during the war?” Lu Yunxian asked.

Lu Ning shook her head slightly. “Although there are many different versions of the myth, some say that the Yellow Emperor race’s totem is that of a bear or dragon. The Chiyou race was said to be insects, bulls, or birds. Regardless of the version of the myth you subscribe to, their totems shared something in common. They were basically living beings, nothing dead, much less an anchor.”

“What you said makes sense. At that time, it should have been a period of nature worship. There shouldn’t be any artificial totems like anchors.” Lu Yunxian found his thoughts ridiculous.

As they were studying the area, the skeleton, that was motionless like an inanimate object, suddenly stood up. It gave the three of them a fright as they quickly retreated to summon their Companion Beasts and warily stared at it.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 292 - Don’t Speak

Chapter 292 Don’t Speak

“Are you willing to become my race’s representative? My race will bestow you with supreme brilliance, an eternal brilliance, turning you into an immortal existence.” The skeleton held the vine flag in one hand and stood above the white sand. Although it was only a skeleton, its supercilious stance left one reeling. It was as though it had millions of formidable soldiers under its command, all capable of flattening the world once the order was given.

Two white flames burned in the skeleton’s eye sockets, resembling eyes as they stared straight at Zhou Wen, who was standing between Lu Yunxian and Lu Ning.

Once the skeleton spoke, Zhou Wen felt a sense of disgust and contempt rise up from his body. It was none other than the Sigh of the King

Lu Yunxian and Lu Ning looked at Zhou Wen and the skeleton in shock. They didn’t know what was going on. Despite all their knowledge, they had no idea what a representative implied.

However, the brilliance that ignited over the skeleton resembled a god’s descent into the world. The ordinary flag burst into a blinding radiance. It was like a blinding sun.

“Young Master Wen, I once heard that the six heroes became heroes after obtaining the heritage of powerful creatures. Could it be that there are similar opportunities here?” Lu Yunxian said to Zhou Wen.

Zhou Wen knew that this place was likely the same as the Holy Temple in the Holy Land. It could inherit the bloodline powers of a race, but the Sigh of the King didn’t give him a good feeling, so he didn’t plan on accepting the offer.

“What race are you from?” Zhou Wen wasn’t in a rush to refuse as he asked the skeleton.

This rare chance of seeing the anchor symbol and learning that it belonged to some race made Zhou Wen want to ask the skeleton which race the symbol belonged to.

“Your soul tells me that you’re not willing to become my race’s representative. What a pity… A pity…” As the skeleton spoke, the light on its body and flag faded.

The skeleton slowly sat back on the ground just like in the beginning. It leaned against the vine flag and lowered its head, returning to its lifeless state.

Can you not be so straightforward? Can you at least answer a few of my questions? Zhou Wen felt depressed. The answer was right in front of him, but he couldn’t crack the mystery. He had the urge to agree to the skeleton to get the answer.

Clang! Clang! Clang!Clang! Clang! Clang!

As the skeleton returned to its dead silence, the strange vehicle chugged on again. The puppet moved the crank, causing the strange vehicle to move again.

Zhou Wen and company hurriedly jumped onto the strange vehicle. They didn’t know where they were, so they had to rely on the strange vehicle to find their way.

Lu Yunxian worried that the strange vehicle would leave the ruins, but it didn’t retreat. It continued to drive deeper into

the desert.

The desert wasn’t as big as they imagined. In less than half an hour, it had already driven out of the desert and entered an endless mountain range.

The underground mountains were not very tall. The highest was only a few hundred meters, its peak almost reaching the sapphire sky.

As the strange vehicle entered the mountainous region, Blood Threadworms reappeared. Moreover, there were more than had previously been seen in the tunnel. There were patches of rocks seemingly covered in black blood everywhere. In fact, they were crawling with Blood Threadworms.

When the Blood Threadworms discovered them, they crawled over but the puppet didn’t even need to play the stone musical instrument to scare them from approaching any further. They gathered on both sides of the vehicle like spectators watching a motorcade, parting a path for the strange vehicle to pass.

The terrain on the mountain became more and more complicated. The vehicle even drove into the belly of a mountain. With the changes in the strata, Zhou Wen felt that the vehicle was still moving down.

Lu Ning observed the cliffs and tidal-like Blood Threadworms and said with some hesitation, “I think I have some memory of this place. It’s like I’ve been here before. However, I didn’t pay too much attention to the situation down there since we were walking on the cliff up above, so I can’t be certain.”

Just as she said that, Lu Ning’s eyes lit up and she pointed ahead. “No mistake about it. This is it. This is the valley of

the fault before entering the temple. That stone pillar is the path to the stone temple. On the other side is the stone temple.”

Zhou Wen and Lu Yunxian looked over and indeed saw a stone pillar on the cliff ahead. The stone pillar wasn’t the same as the stone walls beside it. It was grayish-white and eye-catching. Its shape was angular, making it obvious that it had been carved.

“If this strange vehicle doesn’t stop when we pass by the stone pillar, should we get off? We have to make a choice now,” Lu Yunxian said to Zhou Wen and Lu Ning.

“If we get off here, we can enter the temple directly. We can find the fault that Adjutant An fell into.” Lu Ning obviously agreed to get out of the vehicle.

Lu Yunxian looked at Zhou Wen who said after some thought, “Finding An Sheng is more important. Let’s get off here.”

Since their original target was the fault inside the temple, they could get there directly from here. There was no need for them to continue riding the vehicle.

Seeing both of them agree to alight, Lu Yunxian nodded slightly. When he reached the stone pillar, he used flames to open a path, burning the Blood Threadworms on a nearby mountain wall. Then, the three of them climbed up the pillar and soon arrived at the top.

Indeed, they saw a stone temple built against a mountain. It was like half a temple growing from the mountain wall. Zhou Wen saw an anchor sculpture at the top of the temple. The woman with the side profile was carved on the front of the anchor

However, he didn’t have the time to carefully examine the ship’s anchor sculpture because, in front of the stone temple, Lord Alcohol and about a dozen people had summoned all sorts of Companion Beasts. They appeared to be preparing for battle, staring at something beyond the temple doors.

As they didn’t move or make any noise, Zhou Wen and company hadn’t noticed them until they arrived at the top.

After Zhou Wen and company charged up the stone pillar, Lord Alcohol and company immediately looked in their direction. Instantly, the atmosphere turned tense.

Lu Ning stared at them and said coldly, “Lord Alcohol, you heartless bast*rd. You betrayed and plotted to harm Adjutant An despite all the benefits he gave you. Aren’t you being too ruthless?”

When Lu Ning said that, the expression of Lord Alcohol and company changed drastically as they gaped their mouths, as though they were saying something. However, Zhou Wen wondered if there was something wrong with his ears—he couldn’t hear anything. They kept opening and closing their mouths, and from the shapes of their mouths, it felt like they were repeating two words.

Don’t speak! Zhou Wen lip-read and connected it to the anxious looks written all over the faces of Lord Alcohol and company. He immediately had an ominous feeling as he hurriedly pulled Lu Ning to stop her from speaking

Lu Ning also realized that something was not right. She had long shut her mouth and stopped talking, but she heard a loud rumbling coming from the temple as if it was thunder.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 293 - Echo

Chapter 293 Echo

The voice grew louder, as if lightning was approaching rapidly.

Boom!

When the sound came out of the stone temple, it was like a thunderclap exploding above everyone’s heads. Zhou Wen felt his ears buzz as though his head was about to split open. His eyes, nose, ears, and mouth bled. He couldn’t hear anything for a moment.

The other people were in no better situation than Zhou Wen. Some of them had already spewed out blood. Even their Companion Beasts were affected. Their expressions turned ghastly as some of them were clearly injured.

However, Lord Alcohol and company covered their ears and remained motionless.

Zhou Wen didn’t dare move when he saw the situation. The sound was odd, but the thunderclap that happened above him nearly knocked him unconscious. Who knew what the consequences would be if he continued talking.

Zhou Wen thought of retreating to the other side of the stone pillar. If he did, he could shout and use that terrifying sound to easily finish off Lord Alcohol and the rest.

Lord Alcohol kept staring at Zhou Wen and company. Seeing the change in Zhou Wen’s eyes, he seemed to have guessed

something. He opened his mouth and said something to Zhou Wen, but he didn’t make a sound.

Zhou Wen carefully tried to lip-read and realized that he was saying: “Don’t move. Airflow can also cause echoes. When that happens, all of us will die. If we could run, we’d have run.”

Zhou Wen didn’t know if what he said was true, but seeing how they had no intention to move, he guessed it was true. They would probably have run if they could.

“You can’t stay here forever, right?” Zhou Wen mouthed to Lord Alcohol.

“Wait, in another hour, the echo will disappear,” Lord Alcohol said.

Zhou Wen’s heart stirred when he heard that. Since they Lord Alcohol and company didn’t dare to move, they could still maintain peace. However, once the restriction on them disappeared, Zhou Wen and company might not be their match.

Although Zhou Wen had the banana fan, Lord Alcohol and the rest clearly weren’t weaklings. Even a person like An Sheng had been thrown down the fault. This group couldn’t be underestimated.

Especially a person like Lord Alcohol. He had experienced the dimensional storms before. He was even associated with people like Jing Daoxian and Zhang Daotian. He was definitely not as simple as a haggard old man.

If I don’t teach them a lesson now, the three of us will be at a disadvantage later, Zhou Wen thought to himself.

However, the three of them weren’t immune to the damage from the echo. Finishing off Lord Alcohol and the rest now was equivalent to dooming themselves.

Unfortunately, Truth Listener is still in the midst of its evolution. Otherwise, it would probably have some effect on the echoes. Zhou Wen thought of Truth Listener and looked at the chaos space. It was still in a stone egg form; the completion of its evolution unknown.

Other than Truth Listener, is there no other way? Zhou Wen racked his brains for a way to deal with the echo.

Banana Fairy was definitely not up to the mark. She was an offensive-type Companion Beast, so she didn’t have good defense. Now that they were facing an invisible enemy, it was impossible counterattacking.

Under such circumstances, Doctor Darkness was even more useless. Without an opponent, his ability could not be used.

Ghost Bride might be of some use. As a ghost, she’s probably not afraid of the sonar attack, Zhou Wen thought. Although Ghost Bride wasn’t afraid of the echo, it wasn’t of much help to Zhou Wen. She couldn’t block the echo for them.

Unless the echo is directional. Zhou Wen carefully recalled the details of the echo blast. He felt that although they were relatively far from the stone temple, they didn’t hold any advantage.

The further they went, the louder the echo. They were no different from Lord Alcohol and the rest who were standing in front of the stone temple.

While Zhou Wen was contemplating the matter, he saw Lu Yunxian wink at him and mouth something to him. However, Zhou Wen had been looking at Lord Alcohol and company, so he hadn’t noticed before.

Now that he noticed Lu Yunxian, he could tell from his mouth that he seemed to be saying: “I have a way to withstand the echoes.”

“You can withstand the echoes?” Zhou Wen also mouthed in response to Lu Yunxian. Unfortunately, Lu Yunxian didn’t have the ability to read lips. He kept repeating his words.

Zhou Wen thought about it. Lu Yunxian was quite reliable, so it was unlikely he would lie.

Zhou Wen hesitated for a moment before attempting to walk towards Lu Yunxian. He was only two or three steps away when he immediately heard the rumbling of thunder in the stone temple.

Boom!

A thunderclap boomed, causing Lord Alcohol and company to bleed from their seven orifices. Even the Companion Beasts were no exception.

As for Zhou Wen and company, they were fine. In front of them was a strange pet that looked like a headless pig. Its body was curvy and oval without a head or tail. It had four hooves growing on it. It looked very strange.

However, such a silly-looking Companion Beast had actually used a strange energy fluctuation to withstand the terrifying sonar blast, preventing the trio from being hit by it.

Zhou Wen’s eyes immediately narrowed as he looked in the direction of Lord Alcohol. The latter wasn’t in a good state to begin with, so when he saw what had happened, his face became even paler.

“Young Master Wen, how about we make a deal?” Lord Alcohol mouthed a request.

“What kind of deal?” Zhou Wen directly asked, immediately causing thunder to rumble from the stone temple. It turned back into an echo that boomed above the stone temple.

Boom! Boom!

Some of the Companion Beasts dropped to the ground. The dozen or so people bled from their seven orifices. The weaker ones had already collapsed to the ground.

These sounds triggered even more echoes. Thunder rumbled outside the stone temple, as if an enraged thunder god kept attacking with echoes.

There were already a few people on Lord Alcohol’s side who were badly bleeding, who knew if they could survive this ordeal. Zhou Wen’s situation wasn’t looking good either. The echo’s powers were too strong, and the strange Companion Beast was trembling. It didn’t seem as if it could last much longer.

Zhou Wen’s eyes darted askew and saw that, instead of retreating, the old fellow chose to harge into the stone temple in spite of the thunderous booms.

“Let’s enter the stone temple.” Zhou Wen’s heart stirred as he made Lu Yunxian control the Companion Beast.

Zhou Wen originally imagined that the sound would be even more terrifying when they were nearer the stone temple. However, he realized that the further away he was, the louder the sound was. Although the echo remained terrifying in the stone temple, it wasn’t as terrifying as outside.

Zhou Wen sized up the stone hall and saw that there were many crudely-made stone objects inside. Lord Alcohol continued running for the back door of the stone temple. The echoes left him vomiting blood, but were unable to kill him.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 294 - Longevity Fruit

Chapter 294 Longevity Fruit

“Where did An Sheng fall from?” Zhou Wen asked Lu Ning.

“The fault at the back of the temple,” Lu Ning replied.

Zhou Wen hurriedly got Lu Yunxian to control his Companion Beast as the trio rushed into the back hall.

If the front of the temple was considered a building, then the back of the temple was a huge cavern. 80% of it maintained its original appearance with only a few places showing signs of artificial excavation.

A stone drum stood on the left side of the cavern, emitting thumping sounds. The terrifying sonar waves came from it.

However, now that Zhou Wen and company were close to the stone drum, they couldn’t sense the powerful might of the echo. The power of the sonar wave was only equivalent to a Legendary sonar wave attack.

A huge rift spanning a few hundred meters covered the other side of the cave, and at the back was a strange fruit tree.

The fruit tree was twenty to thirty meters tall, its crown resembling a large umbrella. The tree had dense leaves and its body was black as ink. Only the leaves had a few fine white veins.

Many fruits peppered the areas between the black leaves. However, looking carefully, one couldn’t help but be alarmed.

This was because the fruits looked like babies that were sitting cross-legged with their eyes closed. It exuded an indescribable horror.

No matter how he looked at it, Zhou Wen found the strange tree resembled the Dead Man Tree in his mysterious phone, but there were slight differences.

Lord Alcohol had already run up to the tree. He leaped up to pick the infant-like fruit.

Zhou Wen didn’t know if it was an illusion, but he saw the fruit move by itself, taking the initiative to make contact with Lord Alcohol’s palm. Soon, it was in his hand.

“I originally planned on letting them give it a try, but now there’s nothing I can do.” Lord Alcohol’s red eyes stared at the strange fruit that resembled a jade doll and swallowed it.

“What’s that fruit?” Zhou Wen asked Lu Ning.

Lu Ning looked confused. “When we first entered, this was all there was at the back of the temple. There was no stone drum or fruit trees.”

Without any hesitation, Zhou Wen pulled out his Bamboo Blade and cleaved at Lord Alcohol, who had just swallowed the fruit, with the Demonic Astral Wheel. Since he had become an archenemy, he had to try with all his might to kill his enemy.

Zhou Wen didn’t know what changes would happen after Lord Alcohol swallowed the fruit. Although he wanted to

know, he wasn’t willing to wait for the outcome.

Lu Ning and Lu Yunxian shared the same thoughts. Two forces of ice and fire joined Zhou Wen’s Demonic Astral Wheel in the assault on Lord Alcohol.

After Lord Alcohol swallowed the fruit, he seemed to be in a daze. He stood there motionless with his head lowered and his body bent. He looked extremely strange.

Just as the three forces were about to hit him, Lord Alcohol raised his head and spread open his arms. He leaned back and let out a painful

roar.

A terrifying power erupted from his body as a powerful shockwave shattered Zhou Wen and company’s attacks. This terrifying power wasn’t directed at the three of them.

Their expressions instantly turned nasty as Zhou Wen summoned Banana Fairy. Banana Fairy opened her mouth and blew a gust of cold wind at the roaring Lord Alcohol.

The cold wind blew Lord Alcohol away, slamming him into the stone wall at the back of the cave, creating a huge pit.

Lord Alcohol’s body leaned against the pit in the stone wall, his body twisted. Covered in frost, his eyes were closed.

However, the ominous feeling in Zhou Wen’s heart intensified. With the Bamboo Blade in hand, he used Ghost Steps to instantly appear in front of Lord Alcohol, delivering Transcendent Flying Immortal right into Lord Alcohol’s chest.

At that moment, Lord Alcohol’s hand suddenly moved. The veins on his hand protruded like tiny purple snakes

wrapping around his arm. Furthermore, his arm was emitting a strange blood-colored glow.

At such a close distance, Lord Alcohol held the Bamboo Blade that had stabbed at him like a bolt of lightning. It had failed to slice off his palm but had managed to slice it open.

Blood flowed out, but he seemed to feel nothing. Holding the blade, he opened his eyes and slowly stood up from the pit.

As he stood up, his body underwent a tremendous change. His fractured bones automatically healed, and his white hair turned black. His hunched and thin figure also gradually straightened up as he bulked up. His entire silhouette and overall bearing seemed to undergo a miraculous change.

Lord Alcohol, who looked like an old man, had turned into a middle-aged man as he slowly stood up. There were no signs of aging on him at all. It was hard to imagine that the previous Lord Alcohol was the same person.

Doctor Darkness silently crept behind him and stabbed him in the waist with his scalpel.

Crack!

Without even looking back, Lord Alcohol threw out his palm, sending Doctor Darkness and his Life Soul flying out. Doctor Darkness slammed into the mountain wall, his bones seemingly fractured. He fell to the ground with a twisted expression. It was unknown if he could survive.

“Jing Daoxian didn’t lie to me. The fruit of the Longevity Tree can really restore one’s youth. It feels great being young…” Lord Alcohol wore a look of delight. In his glee, he exerted

strength in his palm, throwing Zhou Wen and his saber flying.

Zhou Wen switched to the Godfiend Life Providence in midair and used its power to counter the terrifying momentum that Lord Alcohol transferred into him. He landed safely on the ground, not suffering a tragic fate like Doctor Darkness.

“What’s that fruit? How did it make Lord Alcohol become so terrifying?” Lu Yunxian said as he looked at the young and powerful Lord Alcohol.

“I don’t know.” Zhou Wen’s expression didn’t look too good. The aura emanating from Lord Alcohol was terrifying. Zhou Wen could even faintly feel an invisible gas rising from his body like an invisible devil.

What made Zhou Wen most worried was that the current Lord Alcohol had already reached an unimaginable level. Even Banana Fairy couldn’t kill him. The three of them probably didn’t have the strength to resist him anymore.

Lord Alcohol had transformed into a twenty-year-old youth. His black hair was hanging down due to his nature-defying growth, and his muscles were filled with elasticity and strength. He had been a grizzled old man just moments ago.

“Let’s leave, now.” Zhou Wen cried out to Lu Yunxian and Lu Ning, before turning to run towards the front temple.

Since they were no match for him, death was the only outcome.

Lord Alcohol glanced coldly at them and reached out his hand to grab at them. Zhou Wen and company immediately felt an irresistible suction force pulling them towards him.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 295 - Devil

Chapter 295 Devil

Zhou Wen held the banana fan and sent out a gust of Grand Yin Wind.

Crack!

Lord Alcohol's body was blown away once again and he slammed into the wall. However, he stood up even faster this time and he recovered from his injuries more quickly. He stared at the banana fan in Zhou Wen's hand with a sharp gaze. "An Epic Companion Beast can't have such potent wind-elemental powers. That's a Mythical Companion Beast. Which race do you represent?"

"So you're also a representative?" Zhou Wen asked.

"Pfft, I'm not a lackey. I'm myself. I'm a lord no matter where I go, not anyone's dog. It doesn't matter which race you represent. You'll all die today," Lord Alcohol said as he stared coldly at Zhou Wen.

With that said, Lord Alcohol's majestic figure took a step forward and arrived in front of Zhou Wen. He grabbed his head.

Zhou Wen's body phased away as he spread his wings behind him. His figure flashed like a shadow as he dodged Lord Alcohol's grasp.

Boom!

The force exerted by Lord Alcohol’s fingers left five finger marks that were more than a meter long on the mountain wall over a hundred meters away. It alarmed Zhou Wen.

Lu Yunxian and Lu Ning attacked at the same time. Two completely different forces, one ice and one fire, attacked Lord Alcohol’s back.

With a wave of his hand, Lu Yunxian’s flaming tiger and Lu Ning’s Ice Snake’s powers shattered. The two of them were sent flying as they spat out blood and fell into the distance; their outcomes unknown.

Zhou Wen sighed inwardly. Indeed, I should just stay at home and play games. Why did I have to risk my life? But there are some things that I have to do.

Zhou Wen tightened his grip on the banana fan as Lord Alcohol walked towards him. The only thing that could restrain Lord Alcohol was this banana fan, but the Grand Yin Wind consumed too much Primordial Energy, preventing him from constantly using it. It was a huge weakness.

If Zhou Wen took a step further and advanced to the Epic stage, he might still be able to use his Life Soul to resolve the problem of his Primordial Energy consumption, but he didn’t have a good solution at the moment.

“Lord Alcohol, it looks like I won’t be able to escape death today. Before I die, can you tell me what those fruits are? Why do they have the mystical powers of rejuvenation?” Zhou Wen wanted to stall for time.

Lord Alcohol was clearly very excited. He had finally gotten what he wanted after so many years. At that moment, he had a lot of glee and emotions that he wanted to vent.

“This is a Longevity Fruit. Its effect isn’t as simple as rejuvenation, turning one young again. In the words used in ancient times, consuming this fruit can allow one to ascend and transform.” Lord Alcohol’s face was filled with excitement.

“I heard you say that Jing Daoxian told you about the Longevity Tree?” Zhou Wen asked.

“That’s right. Jing Daoxian, Zhang Daotian, and I were playmates who grew up together. However, I wasn’t as blessed as Zhang Daotian or as talented as Jing Daoxian. Neither was my luck comparable to theirs. Thankfully, I’ve had a relatively good life and managed to live to old age.”

“I met Jing Daoxian a few months ago. Jing Daoxian had white hair and looked older than the past you. If the Longevity Fruit was really that good without any side effects, why didn’t he pluck one and eat it himself, so as to restore his youth?” Zhou Wen asked.

“I’ve naturally thought of this question. I wanted those fellows to test it out, but unfortunately, you ruined my plans. But now, it looks like Jing Daoxian didn’t lie to me. He probably feels that it’s beneath him to use the Longevity Fruit.”

“Lord Alcohol, isn’t what you just said a little too naive? You’ve lived to this age. Just think about it. Who wouldn’t want to stay youthful forever?” Zhou Wen retorted.

However, Lord Alcohol sneered. “It’s naturally impossible for anyone else, but Jing Daoxian is different. He’s a natural devil. Common sense doesn’t apply to him. Things that people spend their whole lives pursuing is nothing to him. If he puts his mind to it, he can obtain anything.”

Seeing how Lord Alcohol seemed to think highly of Jing Daoxian, Zhou Wen deliberately retorted, “No matter how powerful Jing Daoxian is, didn’t he still lose to the Hero King, Zhang Daotian? Isn’t the claim that he can obtain anything a little too devoid of reality?”

Lord Alcohol immediately revealed a look of disdain. “Zhang Daotian may be a stunning genius, but he’s still much worse than Jing Daoxian. Everyone thinks that Zhang Daotian defeated Jing Daoxian, but unbeknownst to them, the only time Zhang Daotian beat Jing Daoxian was in his marriage to Wan Yiqi.”

“What do you mean?” Zhou Wen was somewhat curious, and not purely because he was just trying to stall for time.

“Back then, Jing Daoxian and Zhang Daotian fell in love with Wan Yiqi, but because Jing Daoxian was extremely tyrannical and malicious as he acted according to his whims, he gradually gained the title of a devil. As for Zhang Daotian, he became the Hero King. It’s also why Wan Yiqi eventually chose Zhang Daotian who represented justice and kindness. What a pity that she never expected…” At this point, Lord Alcohol sneered.

“What didn’t she expect?” Zhou Wen pressed.

“She never expected that she herself was the stumbling block of justice,” Lord Alcohol mocked. “On the second day after Wan Yiqi and Zhang Daotian got engaged, Wan Yiqi advanced to the Epic stage and obtained her Life Soul. Guess what its name was?”

“What was it?” Zhou Wen knew that Lord Alcohol just wanted someone to respond to his words.

“Haha, her Life Soul was actually the Culling Empress. If Wan Yiqi wanted to live, she had to kill someone every day to rear Culling Empress; otherwise, Culling Empress would turn itself against her. And as time went by, Culling Empress would become stronger, forcing her to take more lives. Hence, she passively became the most evil devil in the world. Regardless of her willingness, she had become a stumbling block of justice, becoming the person she hated the most.”

“Couldn’t killing dimensional creatures work?” Zhou Wen asked curiously.

“No, she could only kill humans. That was what the Culling Empress demanded. Wan Yiqi told Zhang Daotian about her Life Soul, imagining that he could help her. Unfortunately, no one can change their Life Souls. Wan Yiqi still committed murder under the influence of Culling Empress, and Zhang Daotian chose to let her be punished by the League’s laws.”

“There’s such a thing? Why haven’t I heard of it before?” Zhou Wen was puzzled.

“You obviously won’t read about it in the history books. When Wan Yiqi was about to be sentenced to death, Jing Daoxian stormed the League building and slaughtered almost everyone, producing a river of blood. Only a few survived. By the time Zhang Daotian arrived, he saw corpses everywhere, while Wan Yiqi stood there completely unharmed. On the snow-white wall behind her were words written in blood.”

The League shall live with her alive. The League shall perish with her dead.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it

as soon as possible.

Chapter 296 - Begging for Mercy

Chapter 296 Begging for Mercy

“For the sake of pride, the League could only say that Zhang Daotian had sent Jing Daoxian scurrying. In fact, it wasn’t too far from the truth. In that battle, Jing Daoxian really suffered severe injuries. It would be hard to say who would have won if they had fought. Since then, the League has been trying all means to have Jing Daoxian killed. They tried all kinds of despicable means, but even so, they failed to kill him,” Lord Alcohol said.

“Why didn’t Jing Daoxian take Wan Yiqi away? Why did he leave her there?” Zhou Wen asked curiously.

“I don’t know what others would choose, but with Jing Daoxian’s pride, he definitely wouldn’t take her away no matter what happened since she hadn’t chosen him in the past.”

“What a strange person. Did Zhang Daotian kill Wan Yiqi in the end?” Zhou Wen had already forgotten that he was stalling for time. He couldn’t help but ask again after being completely attracted by the story.

“Who would dare to kill Wan Yiqi if Jing Daoxian was alive? Back then, Jing Daoxian really had the ability to slaughter Congress.” Lord Alcohol shot Zhou Wen a look and said, “Don’t ask me how Wan Yiqi survived. I have no idea either. There are so many people in the League, so there’s always a way to deal with the problem regarding Wan Yiqi’s Life Soul. But ever since then, Wan Yiqi has never appeared in public.”

“Alright, now that the story is over, you should be on your way. Life is seeping away from you, but you are still able to listen to the stories of others with such relish. You’re an interesting person. If you weren’t a representative, I could have spared your life. Pity,” Lord Alcohol said as he walked towards Zhou Wen.

“Would you believe me if I said I’m not a representative?” Zhou Wen asked.

“How can one have a Mythical Companion Beast without being a representative?” Lord Alcohol said disdainfully as he curled his lips.

Zhou Wen naturally knew what his situation was, but he couldn’t think of a good solution. In front of the disparity in strength, it was difficult for him to think of a plan to defy the heavens and change fate.

The only more reliable method was probably to pluck a fruit from the tree, like Lord Alcohol, and eat it. Perhaps he could become as strong as him.

However, Zhou Wen felt that there was something sinister about the Longevity Fruit. He hadn’t eaten it, afraid that there would be side effects.

Besides, even if Zhou Wen wanted to eat it, Lord Alcohol wasn’t blind. How could he give him such a chance?

“I can only give it a try.” Zhou Wen tightened his grip on the Bamboo Blade, and with Demonic Astral Wheel, he slashed at Lord Alcohol once again.

Lord Alcohol’s fingers pressed on the Demonic Astral Wheel. The spinning blade arc was stopped by his fingers and with a loud bang, it dissipated into light wisps.

Banana Fairy blew a gust of Grand Yin Wind, and almost simultaneously, Zhou Wen used Ghost Steps and seemingly teleported to the Longevity Tree.

Bam!

Lord Alcohol suddenly vanished, avoiding the Grand Yin Wind as well as sending a palm strike down at Zhou Wen. He was actually able to keep up with the speed of Ghost Steps.

Zhou Wen used the Dragon Gate Fairy Skill and Godfiend Life Providence's powers to reduce the force, but it remained too powerful. He slammed into the mountain wall and cracked it, causing him to spit out a mouthful of blood.

What a waste. This amount of blood is enough for me to play several rounds of games. Zhou Wen knew he had no choice but to risk his life. He gripped his Bamboo Blade tightly and activated the Sigh of the King.

The saber beam streaked across the void like lightning. Saber flashes intercrossed on Lord Alcohol's body, and augmented by the mighty power of the Sigh of the King, Zhou Wen pushed the Transcendent Flying Immortal to its limits.

However, all he heard was the sound of metal clashing. Lord Alcohol blocked all his Transcendent Flying Immortal attacks with his finger acting as a sword.

Zhou Wen failed to injure Lord Alcohol despite delivering Transcendent Flying Immortal. He gritted his teeth and made a second attempt with Transcendent Flying Immortal, but halfway through, he was struck in the chest by a sword beam which sent him flying backward.

After crashing to the ground, Zhou Wen struggled to sit up. The wound on his chest continued to bleed. If it wasn't for the fact that he had dodged two centimeters at the critical moment, the sword beam would have pierced through his heart.

"You're really not bad. Back when Jing Daoxian was your age, he wasn't as powerful as you. However, the better you are, the more reason there is for you to die," Lord Alcohol said as he raised his palm again, as though he was about to execute Zhou Wen.

Zhou Wen gritted his teeth and took out something from the chaos space. It was the small metal box with Wang Mingyuan's note on it. Although he had no idea if it would be effective against a terrifying existence like Lord Alcohol, he had to try given the circumstances.

Teacher, please bless me! Seeing that Lord Alcohol was about to reach him, Zhou Wen took out the slip of paper and opened it. He aimed the words "kneel and beg for mercy" at Lord Alcohol.

Lord Alcohol's body swayed for a moment as his knees bent slightly. However, before Zhou Wen could rejoice, Lord Alcohol straightened his legs again. He didn't kneel down.

It's over. Even Teacher's item doesn't work. Zhou Wen's heart chilled. He knew that he was doomed this time.

"Just those few words can suppress the power of a peak Epic. Who wrote this? Zhang Daotian? No, his words aren't like that. Besides him, who else in the League possesses such power?" Lord Alcohol looked at the words and couldn't help but sneer. "Regardless of who you are, you aren't qualified to use those words on me. Lord Alcohol is forever a lord."

As he spoke, he struck his palm out, sending Zhou Wen and the paper flying.

Bam!

Zhou Wen slammed into the stone wall once again, creating a huge pit. Many of the bones in his body fractured, and his organs were burning with pain. Now, he and Lord Alcohol had swapped spots.

The piece of white paper didn’t tear as it floated to Zhou Wen’s side.

From the looks of it, there’s really no hope this time. Zhou Wen looked at the words on the piece of paper, but he realized that there were another few more words on the piece of paper.

These words were much smaller than the original words, but no matter how small they were, it was impossible that he had only seen them now. It was as if they had appeared out of thin air. Besides the small font, they were still in Wang Mingyuan’s handwriting. The writing style wasn’t something others could mimic.

“My dear disciple… Kneel and beg for mercy…” Zhou Wen read the first three words together with the original words and his expression changed.

Teacher, are you kidding me? What’s the point of me kneeling down and begging for mercy now? People like Lord Alcohol won’t let me off just because I beg for mercy, right? Zhou Wen thought this, but he felt that the reason for Wang Mingyuan’s suggestion went deeper. It was impossible for him to make him do something for no reason.

Seeing that Lord Alcohol was approaching again, Zhou Wen gritted his teeth and prepared to try out Wang Mingyuan’s method to see if it would help him survive.

Zhou Wen forced himself to stand up and as he prepared to genuflect, said, “Spare me…”

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 297 - Rescued

Chapter 297 Rescued

Just as Zhou Wen’s legs bent, he suddenly felt a violent rage erupt from his body like a volcano. Following that, a terrifying power erupted, instantly making Zhou Wen’s legs straighten.

Upon hearing Zhou Wen’s words, Lord Alcohol was about to say something in a mocking tone when his expression abruptly changed. All his strength erupted as he slammed his palms forward.

Boom!

Zhou Wen’s body flew into the air and he remained suspended in midair. His hair stood up as his entire body emitted a demonic and tyrannical halo. When the halo blasted out, Lord Alcohol used both his hands to defend, but his powerful strength from the Longevity Tree was instantly destroyed. His body flew away like a runaway kite.

Seeing Lord Alcohol collapse to the ground and struggling to get up, Zhou Wen wore a look of disbelief. He almost couldn’t believe his eyes.

Holy sh*t, the Sigh of the King doesn’t need my body as a medium for activation? Zhou Wen finally reacted. The eruption of the Sigh of the King’s power didn’t pass through his body, but directly blasted out.

When Zhou Wen first used the Sigh of the King, he felt as though he was holding a heavy saber and needed to swing it

with all his strength. However, when the Sigh of the King erupted this time, it was as though he was using a revolver. Pulling the trigger was enough to release the might. He didn’t need to use his own strength or have his body withstand that formidable force.

“Impossible… Such strength… already doesn’t belong to the Epic stage…” Lord Alcohol struggled to stand up as he glared at Zhou Wen intently as though he was looking at a monster.

However, his current situation wasn’t much better than Zhou Wen’s. He was staggering as he walked, and he didn’t have the ability to fight anymore.

Zhou Wen was severely injured, and with the damage to his body caused by the Sigh of the King, he couldn’t even stand up.

Fortunately, I have Banana Fairy. Zhou Wen ordered Banana Fairy to attack Lord Alcohol, and she immediately flew towards him.

Lord Alcohol’s expression changed slightly as he forcefully gathered his strength and charged towards the Longevity Tree. He wanted to climb up the tree and pluck another Longevity Fruit.

However, just as he touched the Longevity Tree, he saw tree roots that were like poisonous dragons rising from the tree and wrapping around his body. The tip of the tree’s roots stabbed into his body, sucking him dry in an instant.

“Save…” Lord Alcohol widened his eyes in horror as he extended his hand with great difficulty. He wanted to cry for help, but just as he said the first syllable, he was pulled down into the ground by the roots and disappeared.

Zhou Wen felt a chill run down his back, and he was even more certain that the Longevity Tree wasn’t a benevolent entity.

After a while, Zhou Wen saw a white flower bloom on the tree. The flower bloomed quickly and wilted equally quickly. It formed a fruit that resembled a baby that sat cross-legged. It emitted a refreshing and charming fragrance.

Zhou Wen stared at the fruit in a daze. For some reason, he felt disgusted and nauseous.

As the Small Perfection of Wisdom Sutra kept healing Zhou Wen’s injured body, he summoned an ordinary Golden Warrior and made the Golden Warrior carry him to Lu Yunxian and Lu Ning to check on their injuries. Although they had suffered quite serious injuries, they weren’t dead. They were just unconscious.

However, they didn’t have the ability to heal themselves. With such severe injuries, it would be very difficult for them to survive if they were not treated quickly—they could die at any moment.

Doctor Darkness’s injuries are also very serious. Furthermore, even if he isn’t injured, that fellow can only use Fight Poison With Poison. He doesn’t know how to rescue people with medical skills. Zhou Wen couldn’t think of a way to rescue them.

Just as he sighed, he heard rustling sounds coming from the direction of the tree. Zhou Wen immediately cursed under his breath, knowing that something wasn’t right. He turned his head and saw tree roots drilling out like strange snakes. They began sweeping towards him.

Zhou Wen hurriedly summoned the Demonized General and the Saber Shield Knight, letting each of them carry Lu Yunxian and Lu Ning to run to the front of the temple.

Zhou Wen himself sat on the White Shadow of Poison's back and allowed it to fly him out.

However, before they could run out, the tree roots had climbed up to the exit of the temple at the back. They were like interweaving spider webs that sealed the exit.

I'm doomed… I wonder if kneeling down is of any use now? Zhou Wen knew that the situation was bad. Seeing the roots sweep over, he could only grit his teeth and rush towards the fault.

There was a patch of dark red below the fault. There were Blood Threadworms everywhere, but Zhou Wen didn't have a choice. He jumped down, along with Lu Yunxian and Lu Ning.

Reaching the fault, the tree root became apprehensive and stopped chasing after them.

After Zhou Wen and company landed, he had to rely on his Companion Beasts to kill the hordes of Blood Threadworms. However, there were too many of them. The three of them weren't combat-ready as two of them were still unconscious. A few Blood Threadworms had already crawled onto Lu Yunxian's and Lu Ning's bodies.

Clang! Clang! Clang!

Just as Zhou Wen started to feel helpless, he heard a familiar sound.

The strange vehicle… It came all the way here… Zhou Wen was delighted as he hurriedly controlled his Companion Beasts to fight the Blood Threadworms. As long as he lasted until the strange vehicle arrived, the three of them would be saved.

Sure enough, it didn’t take long before the strange vehicle drove out of a cave. Zhou Wen looked at it and was surprised to find that there was another person on it.

“Young Master Wen, why are you here? Didn’t I ask Lu Yunxian to look after you and forbid you from entering the ancient battlefield?” The person on the vehicle surprisingly was An Sheng.

“Let’s not talk about this for now. Get Lu Yunxian and Lu Ning into the vehicle first. They’re about to die.” Zhou Wen wasn’t in the mood to answer An Sheng’s question.

An Sheng jumped out of the strange vehicle and Zhou Wen saw that his clothes were neat and his hair wasn’t messy at all. It was obviously not as tragic as Lu Ning imagined.

An Sheng carried Lu Yunxian and Lu Ning into the vehicle while Zhou Wen jumped in. He sat in the vehicle, panting.

“Didn’t I tell you not to enter? Why are you here?” An Sheng said as he looked at Zhou Wen with a reproachful look.

“Do you think I wanted to come? If it wasn’t because of that darn stone artifact I needed to pass to you, I wouldn’t have come to such a wretched place.” Zhou Wen recounted the situation.

After An Sheng heard that, he said in surprise, “The stone artifact is actually on you. Well done. Give it to me. Without

it, I won’t be able to open the ancient divine temple to save Madam.”

“Well… The stone artifact is with me, but there’s just this tiny problem,” Zhou Wen said with a light cough.

“Don’t tell me you lost the stone artifact?” An Sheng asked Zhou Wen.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 298 - Dragon Pearl

Chapter 298 Dragon Pearl

“It’s not that I lost it, but one of my Companion Beasts has eaten it. It has now transformed into a stone egg and is evolving.” Zhou Wen took out Truth Listener’s stone egg. “I wonder if this can be used as a substitute?”

“That… I don’t know… Let’s give it a try…” An Sheng wasn’t sure either. After some thought, he said, “Give me the stone egg and take this chariot out. It will take you all the way out of the ruins without bringing much danger. The injuries on Lu Yunxian and Lu Ning need treatment. There aren’t any healing Companion Beasts here.”

“Were you the one who sent Lu Ning out?” Zhou Wen handed the stone egg to An Sheng as he asked.

“The Blood Threadworms in her body weren’t easy to deal with, so I had no choice but to send her out first,” An Sheng said as he took the stone egg.

“What’s going on with you, Lord Alcohol and the others?” Zhou Wen didn’t believe that An Sheng would be so careless as to bring a group of people with ulterior motives.

“Let’s just say that we were making use of each other. Lord Alcohol had his ploy, and I also needed someone to attract the attention of the Longevity Tree in the Longevity Hall.” An Sheng carefully put away the stone egg.

“Have Sis Lan and the former principal been found? Are they alright?” Zhou Wen asked the question he wanted to know

the most.

“They should be inside the temple. However, with the stone artifact missing, the temple couldn’t be opened. If there are no mishaps, I should be able to rescue them. Head back now. Let’s talk when I’m back.” An Sheng said as he jumped out of the strange vehicle, heading towards the cave where the strange vehicle had come from. In a blink of an eye, he vanished.

Zhou Wen heaved a sigh of relief and leaned against the back of the chariot’s hold. He felt his body aching terribly.

If I knew I could meet Ah Sheng by riding the chariot all the way to the temple, I wouldn’t have gone through so much trouble. I almost died. Zhou Wen looked at Lu Yunxian and Lu Ning. They were in terrible conditions, and he had no idea if they could survive the journey back to the encampment.

On the chariot’s return trip, the route it took was identical to the previous one. After passing through the desert and sea, the chariot drove out of the ruins’ underground tunnel.

Zhou Wen took Lu Yunxian and Lu Ning back to the camp. Zhao Xin treated their wounds and managed to keep them alive. The Blood Threadworms that had entered their bodies were not fatal, but he was unable to rid the Blood Threadworms for them as Doctor Darkness was seriously injured.

Zhou Wen’s injuries were also very serious, but the energies of the Ivy Companion Beast were limited. He got Zhao Xin to take care of Lu Yunxian and Lu Ning first while he slowly recovered using the Small Perfection of Wisdom Sutra.

He laid in bed and grinded the bat cave instance dungeon once again. Although the bat cave’s drop rate wasn’t high, it

had many bats, allowing for quite a number of items to drop. However, none of them were good.

When can I have a baby tiger drop? If I take it to the bat cave, I'll definitely enjoy a much bigger harvest. Zhou Wen didn't manage to obtain a baby tiger the entire time, so he was extremely unhappy.

When he arrived at the underground sea again, Zhou Wen carefully looked at the sapphire sky but didn't discover anything inside.

Why isn't there the chariot in-game? With no way to travel by air, Zhou Wen had no choice but to travel over the surface of the sea. He flew one White Shadow of Poison at low altitudes, not daring to fly too high.

After flying for a short while, the seawater sprayed out as an obsidian-like sea dragon tore out from the sea's surface. It opened its mouth in a bid to swallow Zhou Wen and White Shadow of Poison.

Its mouth seemed to be a black hole with a terrifying suction force, sucking the White Shadow of Poison. It had no ability to resist at all and couldn't even escape.

Zhou Wen hurriedly got White Shadow of Poison to use its Shadow of Darkness skill. It was effective, turning both itself and the blood-colored avatar into a shadow. Then, sneaking away, they escaped the dragon's jaws.

But very quickly, a few heads of the black dragon popped out from different directions and sucked at White Shadow of Poison.

Zhou Wen's heart was unperturbed as he controlled the blood-colored avatar to jump down from White Shadow of

Poison’s back using Ghost Steps as he plunged into the sea.

The dragon heads bit White Shadow of Poison, practically dooming it. After the blood-colored avatar jumped into the sea, Zhou Wen controlled him to rapidly dive down as he looked at the body of the sea dragons.

Zhou Wen had previously seen them twice and realized that their bodies were connected together under the sea. Now that there was a chance, he naturally had to take a closer look.

He was astonished to discover that it wasn’t a nine-headed dragon. The nine black dragons’ bodies beneath the sea were actually chained together.

Black chains pierced through their spines, connecting their bodies to a black war wagon. The war wagon looked like it was made of metal, and was completely sealed with four walls with a ceiling. It was impossible to see what was inside.

When the nine black dragons moved, they would pull the huge metal war wagon slowly. Therefore, the speed of these black dragons was greatly restricted. Otherwise, they would have traveled even faster.

Who has the right to sit on a war wagon pulled by the nine black dragons? Zhou Wen didn’t know if there were any creatures inside the war wagon. If there were, it would be extremely terrifying.

However, looking at the war wagon, it seemed to have been abandoned for a long time. Seaweed wrapped around it, with seashells and coral taking root on the war wagon, making it look very strange.

Wait… What’s that? Zhou Wen’s gaze landed on the corals on the war wagon, and his eyes suddenly lit up.

Among the coral, there was an obsidian-like pearl wrapped in seaweed. Zhou Wen suspected that the pearl was a dragon pearl as spoken in legend. It could also be an egg of a dragon.

If I can get that dragon pearl, I wonder if I can borrow its power to raise my last stat to 21 points? Just as Zhou Wen thought of this, the game screen turned black.

A black dragon had devoured the blood-colored avatar, ending Zhou Wen’s game.

However, Zhou Wen wasn’t depressed. On the contrary, he was extremely excited. He seemed to see the hope at advancing to the Epic stage.

The black dragons were very likely Mythical creatures, and the dragon pearl in the corals might be their descendant. Consuming one would likely be a good substitute for the divine blood.

More importantly, the nine black dragons were chained and connected to the black war wagon. The war wagon’s weight greatly affected the nine black dragons’ mobility. This gave Zhou Wen a chance to steal the dragon pearl or he wouldn’t survive in front of these Mythical creatures.

How can I obtain that dragon pearl? Zhou Wen kept the question on his mind.

Although he found it promising, Zhou Wen failed to approach the war wagon the next few times he tried before being devoured by the black dragons.

From the looks of it, I have to come up with a detailed plan. I wonder if kneeling will be of any use… Zhou Wen thought to himself.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 299 - Missing

Chapter 299 Missing

Zhou Wen didn’t know if kneeling down was of any use in real life, but it proved useless in-game. Don’t ask Zhou Wen how he knew. It would only bring him to tears.

After a few days of grinding in the camp, he had failed to obtain the Dragon Pearl. He did manage to kill plenty of poisonous bats and he managed to raise his Poison stat to 15. A few poisonous bat Companion Eggs dropped, but their stats were far inferior to the White Shadow of Poison. They were all fed to his pets as food.

On the fourth day, An Sheng brought Ouyang Lan and a few others back. Zhou Wen had an ominous feeling when he saw that the former principal wasn’t among them.

“Sis Lan.” Zhou Wen went forward to ask about the former principal.

Ouyang Lan looked a little tired as she forced a smile and said, “Little Wen, An Sheng told me of the tremendous help you provided him. However, don’t take such risks again. This is beyond your abilities. Luck won’t stand on your side forever.”

“Got it, Sis Lan. Where’s the former principal?” Zhou Wen hurriedly asked.

Ouyang Lan’s expression fell. “I couldn’t find him. We found some things that belonged to my father and the other

experts in the temple, but we couldn’t find any traces of them.”

Upon hearing that the former principal hadn’t been found, Zhou Wen’s mood improved ironically-not finding them meant that there was still hope. Hence, Zhou Wen asked, “Could they be trapped somewhere else?”

“I don’t think so. It’s easy to enter the temple but it’s hard to get out. The people inside can’t come out without someone opening it from the outside. My dad and the rest have clearly ventured deep inside the temple. It’s unlikely they can come out without any rescue,” Ouyang Lan said as she shook her head.

Zhou Wen was stunned when he heard that. He was about to ask something when An Sheng said, “Madam didn’t manage to rest while inside. Let her rest.”

Zhou Wen had no choice but to swallow the words he was about to say. He planned on asking An Sheng later.

Everyone returned to the encampment. Without waiting for Zhou Wen to visit him, An Sheng went to Zhou Wen’s tent and explained the situation inside.

Ouyang Lan and An Sheng had followed the markings left by the former principal and found the temple. They did not find any markings left behind by the former principal elsewhere. They could confirm that he had been inside the temple but they could not find him, despite searching the entire area for him.

The former principal’s last marking was on an altar. It meant that something had happened after they arrived. However, it was already the inner sanctum of the temple and there was no other way out, nor did they find any mechanism that

made people disappear. The former principal and the others appeared to have disappeared into thin air.

After Zhou Wen heard that, he frowned and didn’t say a word. There must be a problem with the temple, but it wouldn’t be of any use even if he were to go, considering how An Sheng and Ouyang Lan had failed to find any clues, despite being such knowledgeable people.

“Don’t worry, we’ve already explored a portion of the battlefield ruin’s interior. With the chariot, it’s safe when heading to the temple. We’ll get professionals to investigate and seek out every possibility.” An Sheng paused and added, “But based on the present circumstances, trying to find Old Mister Ouyang won’t take a day or two. Madam wants you to return to school and stop wasting time here.”

“Alright, I’ll head back. But before I leave, can you take me to the temple? I want to take a look too.” Although he knew that there was no point in going, Zhou Wen refused to give up unless he managed to see it with his own eyes.

An Sheng seemed to have guessed that Zhou Wen would have such a request, so he nodded in agreement.

The route to the temple was indeed very safe. The chariot was a direct route to the temple, and it would automatically stop when it reached it. It would only be sent to the entrance if someone activated it.

An Sheng led Zhou Wen into the temple. Since he had already figured out the dangers inside, Zhou Wen didn’t sense any danger when An Sheng took him in, until he arrived at the innermost sanctum of the temple.

An Sheng showed him the former principal’s markings. Zhou Wen looked around the temple for a long time but didn’t find

any clues.

Although he couldn’t accept this result, Zhou Wen had no choice but to return. There was no point in staying there. He could use his phone to continue exploring the temple when he returned. Perhaps he could find some clues.

However, the chariot didn’t exist in the game, so if Zhou Wen wanted to reach the temple, he had to pass through the underground sea first. This was also a problem.

Zhou Wen guessed that the chariot in-game was most likely parked in front of the temple. As no one had activated it, it didn’t appear at the entrance.

It was obvious that the chariot’s purpose was to send people out and not bring them in.

An Sheng sent someone to take Zhou Wen back to Luoyang. After Zhou Wen returned to school, he felt a sense of familiarity. He hadn’t left for many days, but he felt uncomfortable. Perhaps the great contrast between the safe days at school and the dangerous days in the Zhuolu battlefield had gotten to him.

The most pressing matter at hand is to quickly advance to the Epic stage. Otherwise, if something were to happen, it would be difficult to handle it with my lack of strength. Zhou Wen thought about how he could obtain the Dragon Pearl.

Aerial movement techniques like Dragon Gate Fairy Skill were less effective underwater. The water resistance also weakened Ghost Steps. Therefore, the fact that the Dragon Pearl was underwater left Zhou Wen vexed.

Unable to think of a good solution, Zhou Wen went to Wang Mingyuan’s place. Since he knew that Wang Mingyuan loved

drinking tea, he even got An Sheng to buy him some high-quality tea that he obviously paid for himself.

“Teacher, this piece of paper was a life-saver. But I tried it again and it doesn’t work anymore, why is that so?” Zhou Wen took out the paper slip and respectfully returned it to Wang Mingyuan.

He later tested it a few more times and discovered that ever since the slip of paper had been used on Lord Alcohol, it had no effect on other dimensional creatures. It was just like an ordinary piece of paper.

“Have you ever seen a bowl of rice that can’t be finished no matter what?” Wang Mingyuan asked with a smile as he took back the note.

Zhou Wen immediately understood that the power on the note had been exhausted.

“Teacher, how did you know that my Life Providence would react if I knelt down to beg for mercy?” Zhou Wen voiced out his doubts again. He had never told Wang Mingyuan what his Life Providence was.

Wang Mingyuan smiled and said, “My research includes the reading of people, and you can say I have some success in it. Therefore, I was able to figure out something about your Life Providence. There’s some pride in your Life Providence, something I’ve never seen before. I knew it was extraordinary, and it wouldn’t tolerate such humiliation, so it might have been of some use. That’s why I got you to test it out to see if it worked. From the looks of it, it really did.”

“Test it out…” Zhou Wen was instantly rendered speechless.

“Then can I still use this move in the future?” Zhou Wen hurriedly asked. Since this move was so useful, and there was no real need for him to kneel, it was a waste not to use it.

“Have you ever heard of the saying that one would rather die than be humiliated? A single instance might make your Life Providence erupt due to anger, but I’m afraid a repeat of that will cause that anger to be vented on you. I’m not sure if you can withstand that. If it’s possible, you can test it out,” Wang Mingyuan said with a smile.

Zhou Wen couldn’t help but shudder when he thought of Lord Alcohol’s outcome. He quickly replied in all seriousness, “A man should have dignity and not kneel. I’ve never considered it and was just asking.”

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 300 - Poison Wyrm

Chapter 300 Poison Wyrm

Zhou Wen took back the antelope and chick that he had entrusted with Wang Lu. It wasn’t good to trouble Wang Lu, and this debt had to be returned. It would be even more troublesome when the time came.

The chick had clearly gained a lot of weight from eating. Although it looked like it had grown up a little, Zhou Wen felt that it had merely gained weight, not because it had grown up.

The antelope was still as lifeless as ever. It slept lazily on the sofa all day. Apart from its interest in food, it didn’t move much.

After consulting Wang Mingyuan, Zhou Wen learned that the campus had a dimensional zone known as Poison Wyrm Pool, which had a type of Epic creature known as Poison Wyrm. The Poison Wyrm had an opportunity to drop a Primordial Energy Skill known as Dragon Transformation Art. It was a movement technique that allowed movement in water, greatly enhancing one’s Speed while in water.

Zhou Wen’s current goal was the Dragon Transformation Art, but the Poison Wyrm occasionally appeared in Poison Wyrm Pool. Once one was discovered, it would be finished by the military quickly. And the Poison Wyrm Pool dimensional zone was under the military’s jurisdiction. Students who wanted to enter had to request permission from the military.

Even if Zhou Wen had a phone that could download instance dungeons, he had to enter the dimensional zone and find the tiny palm symbol.

It was definitely possible to gain permission through An Sheng, but going through him was equivalent to using the An family. Zhou Wen didn't want to do that.

Therefore, Zhou Wen called Li Xuan to see if he had any means to obtain an entry pass.

Li Xuan didn't know much about such matters but said that he would ask around using his connections. If he could get it, he could give Zhou Wen a price to see if he found it acceptable.

Finally, Zhou Wen spent 30,000 for the pass. It was a one-time pass, and he couldn't stay inside for more than 48 hours.

"Old Zhou, why are you going to the underground Pool City? Although there are many rare dimensional creatures there, they are all Epic creatures. It'll be difficult to kill them now, and it's unsafe. Typically only tutors will request permission to enter when they need some special Companion Beast," Li Xuan said as he handed the entry pass to Zhou Wen.

"I wish to pay Poison Wyrm Pool a visit. I heard that there's a Poison Wyrm there that drops an underwater movement technique. I'm very interested in that," Zhou Wen said.

When Li Xuan heard that, he immediately waved his hands. "When you mentioned the entry pass, I investigated the situation inside. The Poison Wyrm you just mention isn't something that Legendaries can kill. And even it can be done, you have no chance of that happening. Legend has it that snakes evolve into wyrms over a thousand years, and a

wyrm evolves into a dragon after a thousand years. Although a Poison Wyrm hasn’t evolved into a dragon, they are top-notch existences at the Epic stage. Furthermore, they are covered in poison. Even the Poison Wyrm Pool’s water is lethally poisonous. The typical Epic can’t even enter the Poison Wyrm Pool, much less kill a Poison Wyrm. Let alone us!”

“I’m just going to take a look. If it works, so be it. It doesn’t matter if it doesn’t. I’ll just treat it as broadening my horizons.” After sending Li Xuan off, Zhou Wen took his pass and headed to the underground Pool City.

When the soldiers guarding the underground Pool City saw that Zhou Wen was about to enter, they kindly reminded him, “Student, although there aren’t many dimensional creatures in Pool City, they are all at the Epic stage and have unique traits. Unless necessary, it’s best you don’t enter.”

“Thank you for the warning. I’m heading in to take a look and won’t venture far.” Zhou Wen thanked him.

After handing over the pass, Zhou Wen passed the checkpoint and arrived in front of the underground Pool City.

Pool City was submerged by water everywhere, but it wasn’t deep. The deepest part measured about a meter. There were many plants growing in the water, especially reeds that looked like forests.

From afar, one could see an underground ancient city. The city walls were already mottled as if they had experienced the merciless destruction of time.

Zhou Wen heard that there were many water monsters in Pool City. Other than the Poison Wyrm, there were often other water-elemental dimensional creatures lurking in

there. However, it was fine in the city's periphery. The most powerful dimensional creatures were inside the city.

People had built a cement bridge in the periphery that connected all the way to the entrance of Pool City. Just as Zhou Wen stepped onto the bridge, he heard someone else enter. He was slightly taken aback when he turned to take a look.

The person who was walking towards him was his tutor, Wang Fei.

Although Wang Fei had introduced Zhou Wen to study under Wang Mingyuan, Zhou Wen was still her student under the school's system.

Wang Fei was clearly surprised to see Zhou Wen. After settling the procedures, she walked to the bridge and asked Zhou Wen, "Why are you here? This place is too dangerous for students."

"Teacher Wang Mingyuan told me to visit this place as an observational practice. I'll just be wandering the periphery and not entering," Zhou Wen used Wang Mingyuan as an excuse, afraid that Wang Fei would speak further.

"Since it's an observational practice, come with me. After all, I'm your tutor. I can't just let Uncle Mingyuan be the one always teaching you. Just take it as me giving you the lesson today," Wang Fei said as she walked towards the city gates via the bridge.

I… I'm really just here to take a look at the gates… I don't want to go in… Zhou Wen was depressed, but he couldn't say it out loud. All he could do was follow behind Wang Fei.

As he walked, Zhou Wen sized up the city gate of Pool City, hoping to see if he could find the tiny palm symbol.

This time, Zhou Wen's luck was pretty good. He immediately saw a tiny palm symbol on the plaque above the city gate. Engraved in the middle of the palm was an ancient Chinese character for "water."

Zhou Wen hurriedly took out his phone to take a picture of the tiny palm symbol above the city gate. Upon seeing this, Wang Fei said, "Why are you taking pictures of the city gate? It's best to capture images later when we encounter dimensional creatures. It's best if they are video. You can slowly study them when you're back. Water-type dimensional creatures are subjects of study in the various universities in the League. It will be very helpful in future conquest battles at sea."

Zhou Wen also knew that the League had always wanted to conquer the seas. However, because the situation at sea was different from land, there weren't many people who could really go out to sea. However, experts had predicted that the era would soon arrive.

Due to this prediction, the price of Companion Eggs associated with water had increased greatly. Some of them had increased by more than ten times, but it had already been twenty to thirty years since the prediction, and there were still no signs of the so-called era of seafaring. It was still dangerous for normal people to head out to sea. Even Epic humans didn't dare do so easily.

After he downloaded Pool City's instance dungeon, Zhou Wen felt a lot more relaxed. He wasn't afraid of the Epic creatures, believing that it wasn't a bad thing to follow Wang Fei in to take a look. He could gain an understanding

of how water-type dimensional creatures fought. It might help him too.

After entering Pool City, they discovered that the streets here were more flooded. Most of the houses were half-filled with water. It was a waterlogged city.

Splash!

The two of them had just Pool City when they saw a wave appear not far from them. Something in the water was rapidly approaching them.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 301 - Demonstrating

Chapter 301 Demonstrating

“There are two types of water-type dimensional creatures commonly found in Pool City. Take note of the waves. If the angle of the waves is around 30°, you have to be careful. They are Epic Electric Eels. They have extremely powerful electric powers. Electricity easily conducts in water. The best way to deal with a Electric Eel is to stay out of the water. Having the ability to fly is the best. Otherwise, choose to jump onto a building. In short, make sure not to stay in the water unless you have the confidence of withstanding the electrocution at the Epic stage with your body. If the waves are at 50°, it’s an Epic Sword Fang Fish. Their offensive strength is extremely high, but they have low intelligence. To Epic experts, they are pretty much a bonus…” Wang Fei patiently explained to Zhou Wen.

She had already learned of Zhou Wen’s actions in the Zhuolu battlefield from Ouyang Lan. Although Ouyang Lan was very worried about the former principal, she still mentioned Zhou Wen several times and urged her to take good care of him.

Wang Fei admitted that she didn’t have the ability to teach a special genius like Zhou Wen, but teaching him some practical experience wasn’t a problem. After all, Wang Fei had once been a soldier and participated in many battles.

“Dealing with the Sword Fang Fish is very simple. As it’s quite brainless, only having high offensive strength, you just have to dodge its attack and then stab it.” As Wang Fei

spoke, the Razortooth Fish flew forward, arriving in front of her with astounding speed.

Wang Fei's figure flashed slightly before she drew her sword and slashed upwards. After crossing the Sword Fang Fish, waves of blood splashed out from behind her. Soon, a thin, two-meter-long strange fish floated with its white belly facing up. It was obviously dead.

It was the first time Zhou Wen had seen Wang Fei in combat. Her technique was swift, accurate, and elegant. It exuded the feeling of being fully composed while striding between life and death. She was truly an expert amongst those at the Epic stage.

Wang Fei sheathed her sword and turned to Zhou Wen. "However, if you do that, you have to wait until it's one meter away from you before dodging and attacking. You mustn't give it any time to react. If you lack the confidence to dodge at such close proximity, it's best you jump onto a wall and not face it directly in battle. Do you understand?"

"Got it." Zhou Wen nodded in response.

Wang Fei's experience was obtained from actual combat. Ordinary people had to earn these experiences with their lives.

Now that Zhou Wen had Banana Fairy, ordinary Epic creatures couldn't do anything to him. As long as he didn't have a death wish, there wasn't much danger in Pool City.

"Ms. Wang, where are you going?" Zhou Wen asked Wang Fei who was walking ahead. Although he had Banana Fairy, he didn't want to take too many risks.

“Don’t worry. I’m just taking a stroll nearby. I heard that a Electric Eel was spotted here recently. I happen to want a Electric Eel Companion Beast, so I came to try my luck,” said Wang Fei.

Only then did Zhou Wen relax. As long as she didn’t go to places like the Poison Wyrm Pool, nothing would happen.

Wang Fei led Zhou Wen onto the roof of the buildings, but her gaze remained fixed on the water beneath as she searched for traces of the Electric Eel.

She didn’t find the Electric Eel, but she found another Sword Fang Fish. Wang Fei looked at Zhou Wen and asked, “Do you want to give it a try? I heard you already have the ability to kill Epic creatures.”

“There’s no need. I’m not good at fighting in water.” Zhou Wen shook his head. Although Wang Fei had already demonstrated the technique to slaying Sword Fang Fish, Zhou Wen still felt that there was no need to gain experience by risking his life. After all, he could do the same safely in-game.

Wang Fei didn’t say anything when Zhou Wen declined the proposal. After all, she had heard about his escapades from Ouyang Lan. An Sheng had told her and he had heard it from Lu Yunxian; therefore, Wang Fei felt that there was likely some level of exaggeration. After all, Ouyang Lan thought highly of Zhou Wen to begin with. After the trip to the battlefield ruins, she thought even better of him. It was quite understandable that she had embellished it a little.

“It’s right for you to choose not to try. Killing a Sword Fang Fish requires experience too. Watch from the side and I’ll demonstrate again.” As Wang Fei said that, she jumped into

the water, but stood on the water surface without sinking. Apparently, she had quite good skills in alacrity.

Sensing the fluctuations in the water's surface, the ripples in the water immediately rushed towards Wang Fei. It looked extremely fast and potent, making it seem as if something was a little off.

Wang Fei frowned slightly as she seemed to notice something

Splash!

As the water splashed, a four-meter-long golden Sword Fang Fish leaped up from the water, stabbing at Wang Fei like a sharp sword.

On the golden Sword Fang Fish's body, there was a golden glow.

"It's a Mutated Sword Fang Fish?" Wang Fei's eyes focused as she drew her sword and slashed out a beam at the Mutated Sword Fang Fish.

Clang!

When the sword flashes clashed, several sword flashes appeared on the golden Sword Fang Fish's body. They split like gears, grinding Wang Fei's sword beams to pieces.

Wang Fei tapped the surface of the water with her toe and dodged the Sword Fang Fish's attack before engaging in battle with it.

Zhou Wen watched from the side and realized that the golden Sword Fang Fish was much stronger than the average Sword Fang Fish. Its sword flashes were able to grind all sorts

of Primordial Energy Skills to pieces. Despite Wang Fei's sword techniques being highly ingenious, her sword flashes would shatter upon contact with the Sword Fang Fish's body. She couldn't injure it in any way.

However, Wang Fei's movement techniques were lithe and swift. Although the Sword Fang Fish's sword flashes were fast, they couldn't injure her. The situation was in a stalemate.

After watching for a while, Zhou Wen roughly knew the weakness of the golden Sword Fang Fish. Although Wang Fei wasn't weaker than it and had very high-quality Companion Beasts, she didn't have the ability to overwhelm the golden Sword Fang Fish.

However, Wang Fei's standard was clearly much better than the golden Sword Fang Fish. She was definitely able to slay it given enough time.

Seeing that she couldn't finish the battle anytime soon, Zhou Wen sat on the rooftop and took out his phone. As he gamed, he waited for Wang Fei to kill the golden Sword Fang Fish.

When Wang Fei noticed that Zhou Wen was sitting there playing games, it was a miracle that she wasn't angered to death by him. All she could do was vent her anger on the golden Sword Fang Fish. However, it was quite a handful, something she couldn't finish instantly.

Just as Wang Fei was feeling depressed, she suddenly saw a wave of water appear in the street a distance away. The angle of the wave was extremely small, and it was like an arrow that was approaching her.

“Electric Eel?” Wang Fei was immediately alarmed. She still had the energy to deal with a golden Sword Fang Fish, but adding on a Electric Eel made it a challenge.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 302 - Two Mutated Creatures

Chapter 302 Two Mutated Creatures

However, on second thought, Wang Fei felt that it was also a good opportunity to educate Zhou Wen. She wanted him to learn how to fight in a disadvantaged situation, and how to eventually win despite being outnumbered two to one.

Zhou Wen also saw the new wave. Based on the knowledge taught by Wang Fei, he recognized it as the Electric Eel and hurriedly got up to help.

However, he heard Wang Fei say loudly, “During actual combat in dimensional zones, we often encounter situations that can put us at a great disadvantage. This is especially so when we are attacked by a group of dimensional creatures. Learning how to deal with such a disadvantageous situation is very important when you explore dimensional zones in the future. Watch well. I’ll now demonstrate to you how positioning and kiting can be used to deal with two or more dimensional creatures.”

Hearing what Wang Fei said, Zhou Wen sat down again. He didn’t game, but stared at the battle which Wang Fei was engaging in.

Child, let me, your tutor, blow you away with my performance. Wang Fei took a deep breath inwardly and tapped the water surface with her toe. Like a graceful fairy, she dodged the Sword Fang Fish’s sword flash and slashed at the Electric Eel that was rushing towards her.

The Electric Eel leaped up from the water and revealed itself to be a five-meter-long eel. Its body shimmered with silver light as though silver electric bolts were dancing on its scales.

Wang Fei’s heart skipped a beat when she saw this. Normal Electric Eels were blue in color, but this Electric Eel was silver. Furthermore, the electric bolts were also a strange silver color, not the common blue. It was obviously a mutated creature.

What’s going on? Wang Fei felt something amiss.

It wasn’t easy to find a mutated dimensional creature, but now there were two of them. It was way too odd. The key point was that Wang Fei had never encountered Mutated Electric Eels before. She didn’t know much about them either. She had no idea if she could simultaneously deal with two Epic mutated

creatures.

Boom!

The silver lightning on the Mutated Electric Eel blasted out and clashed with Wang Fei’s sword flash. The sword flash instantly shattered as she saw silver bolts of lightning smite down from the sky.

Zhou Wen watched as Wang Fei engaged in a battle with the two mutated creatures. He watched as she moved like a fairy, constantly dodging and ducking above the water surface, every instant in a harrowing manner. He couldn’t help but marvel inwardly. As expected of a tutor. She’s indeed extraordinary. These kinds of movement techniques are already better than my Dragon Gate Fairy Skill. It looks like I still need to work harder.

Zhou Wen had never seen the Electric Eel before, nor did he know that it was a Mutated Electric Eel. He thought that Wang Fei was deliberately showing him her movement techniques and ingenious positioning.

Wang Fei was in a dilemma, unable to voice her suffering. The Mutated Electric Eel was much harder to deal with than she had imagined. The silver electric bolts were extraordinary and could spread across large areas in the water. Coupled with its incredible speed, she was unable to catch up to the Mutated Electric Eel.

She could not kill one, nor catch up to the other. Although Wang Fei was capable, she was unable to use her abilities to their fullest. All she could do was dodge the attacks of large swaths of lightning and sword flashes, without being given any chance of retaliation.

Having had the intention of retreating temporarily, she recalled the words she had said to Zhou Wen. It was too embarrassing to retreat now.

Wang Fei originally wanted to rely on her own abilities to find a way to kill two mutated creatures, but she soon realized that it was almost impossible.

The Mutated Sword Fang Fish’s sword flashes could be torn apart through repeated attacks, but the Mutated Electric Eel had an escape technique with dual water-electric traits. With the two combined, along with the environment of Pool City, it only took an instant to travel nearly a thousand meters. Wang Fei had no way to keep up with its speed.

She wanted to set up an array of sword flashes to stop the Electric Eel, but the Mutated Sword Fang Fish would rip apart whatever she set up. It couldn’t be turned into something effective.

Instead, the Mutated Electric Eel’s attack caused a lot of trouble for Wang Fei. Electric bolts flashed in the water, making it impossible for her to touch it. Lightning also struck down from the sky, making it difficult for her to dodge.

If she was on land, she could still summon a Companion Beast to help, but now, other than flying Companion Beasts, the other Companion Beasts would be electrocuted the moment they entered the water. It was useless to summon them.

For a moment, Wang Fei was in an extremely awkward situation. She was at a loss of whether to fight or retreat. This dilemma troubled her.

Although Zhou Wen didn’t quite understand Wang Fei’s complicated feelings, his talent in combat was still quite good. He quickly noticed that her situation wasn’t looking good.

It could no longer be described as a disadvantageous situation. If this continued, Wang Fei’s life would be in danger.

Without having second thoughts, he summoned the banana fan and timed it just as the Mutated Sword Fang Fish leaped out of the water before fanning it.

Wang Fei was just about to dodge when she saw the Mutated Sword Fang Fish charging at her with sword flashes that resembled glowing wheels when a strong gust of wind suddenly swept over.

The water’s surface stirred up a wave several meters high. If it wasn’t because all the water had been used, the waves might have been higher.

The wind swept the water wave onto the Mutated Sword Fang Fish’s body, instantly sending it flying. It flew into the sky along with some of the water like a column that reached to the heavens.

What was even more amazing was that the water column had frozen into ice, freezing in midair. Even the Mutated Sword Fang Fish was frozen in the water column. It was a very strange sight.

Wang Fei was slightly taken aback as she turned to look in the direction where the cold wind came from. She saw Zhou Wen standing at the top with a green fan in his hand. When she looked over, Zhou Wen had just put the fan to his chest, looking somewhat refined.

Zhou Wen really has the ability to kill Epic creatures. Isn’t this the power of this fanning way too ridiculous? Even among Epic creatures, there aren’t many who can use such a level of attack. Wang Fei’s expression looked confused.

However, Wang Fei was one who had been through a lot. After being startled for a moment, she immediately snapped out of her daze and dodged the Mutated Electric Eel’s attack.

Without the Mutated Sword Fang Fish holding her back, Wang Fei felt much more relaxed dealing with the Mutated Electric Eel.

Zhou Wen didn’t offer any more help, but Wang Fei had already lost the mood to demonstrate to him. All she wanted was to quickly finish this Mutated Electric Eel.

It wasn’t that Zhou Wen didn’t want to help, but the usage of Grand Yin Wind had already expended all his Primordial Energy. He needed some rest to use it a second time.

However, even if it was used a second time, it would probably be useless. The Mutated Electric Eel’s dual water-electric escape technique was too fast. The Grand Yin Wind might not be able to catch up with it.

Wang Fei vented all her frustration on the Mutated Electric Eel as she slashed out one sword flash after another, forming afterimages in the air. Soon, Zhou Wen discovered that the afterimages were not real afterimages, but remnant sword flashes in the air.

The sword flashes had failed to stay in place due to the Mutated Sword Fang Fish’s sword flashes destroying them, but now that there was no Mutated Sword Fang Fish left, the sword flashes formed a sword net in the air. When the Electric Eel slammed into it, it ended up being covered in blood.

Despite finishing off the Mutated Sword Fang Fish, Wang Fei just didn’t feel happy about it.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 303 - One-on-One

Chapter 303 One-on-One

“Ms. Wang, your movement technique and swordplay are truly exquisite. Can I learn from you?” Zhou Wen asked Wang Fei sincerely.

Wang Fei frowned at Zhou Wen, unsure if he was mocking her.

Although Zhou Wen’s EQ wasn’t high, he could tell that there was something wrong with the way she was looking at him. He hurriedly explained, “I mainly focus on movement techniques, but I’m so inferior to you. I wonder if you can tell me the name of the movement technique you used, or which dimensional creatures drop it?”.

Wang Fei didn’t know whether to laugh or cry when she saw how sincere Zhou Wen was, a clear act that he wasn’t being sarcastic.

She had thought of so many methods in the past, hoping that Zhou Wen would learn from her, but to no avail. To her surprise, Zhou Wen ended up wanting to learn from her because of the embarrassing circumstance.

“This movement technique is unique to my family, so it’s hard for outsiders to learn it.” When Wang Fei learned that Zhou Wen wanted to learn it from her, she was thrown into a difficult position.

This movement technique was a secret technique of the Wang family. It required the combination of three different

movement technique-type Primordial Energy Skills to acquire mastery. Furthermore, the three Primordial Energy Skill Crystals were proprietary to the Wang family's dimensional zones. Outsiders could not obtain them.

"I see. Then I'll look at other movement techniques." Zhou Wen was slightly disappointed. Wang Fei's movement technique was indeed better than his Dragon Gate Fairy Technique, and it was more practical.

However, since it was the Wang family's secret technique, Zhou Wen had to give up.

Seeing Zhou Wen's disappointed expression, Wang Fei had mixed feelings. She previously wanted Zhou Wen to study under her, but now that he wanted to do so, she couldn't teach him.

"You're my student and also Uncle Mingyuan's disciple. You can't be considered an outsider. How about this? I'll go back and discuss it with my family elders. Perhaps there's a chance," Wang Fei said after some thought. She really didn't wish to miss an opportunity to teach Zhou Wen.

"Thank you, Ms. Wang. If it's too troublesome, forget it." Zhou Wen didn't really want to trouble Wang Fei.

"We'll talk about it when the time comes. I may not succeed." Wang Fei didn't say much because she really wasn't sure if she would succeed.

If it weren't for the fact that the person who wanted to learn it was Zhou Wen, Wang Fei wouldn't even attempt to win him an opportunity.

After hoisting up the Mutated Sword Fang Fish and Mutated Electric Eel, she discovered that they each had a Companion

Egg inside their bodies. Two Companion Eggs had dropped at once.

“This is yours.” Wang Fei handed Zhou Wen the Mutated Sword Fang Fish’s Companion Egg and put away the Mutated Electric Eel Companion Egg.

Zhou Wen didn’t stand on ceremony when he considered how he had indeed put in the effort. He put away the Mutated Sword Fang Fish Companion Egg and planned to hatch it when he returned. It might come in handy later when he went to slay the Poison Wyrm at Poison Wyrm Pool.

In Bright Prospects College’s canteen, a man with short black hair was quietly eating his meal. A girl walked over and sat opposite him, speaking to him excitedly, “Ming Xiu, I got accepted to be an exchange student at Sunset College. I can head over to Sunset College with

you.”

“Is it worth being so happy to go to Sunset College?” The boy looked up at the girl, confused.

“Of course, it’s something worth celebrating. It’s Sunset College! The best school in Luoyang! It’s not even just Luoyang, there are many outstanding geniuses in the entire League who wish to study at Sunset College. Being able to attend school there is the dream of many students, right?”

Saying that, the girl blinked and said, “Of course, I’m so happy not because I can study at Sunset College, but it’s that I can go to Sunset College with you. I want to see you defeat the high and mighty geniuses there. I want to let them know who the strongest genius is.”

“There are many geniuses, but I’ve never been a genius,” said Ming Xiu indifferently.

“I know; you relied on your own hard work, but it’s undeniable that you’re a true genius and the strongest genius in Bright Prospects College’s history. If your father weren’t the chancellor of Bright Prospects College, you wouldn’t have attended this school. Famous schools like Sunset and Covenant Colleges are where you should’ve gone. You are not inferior to any of those students. You are even more outstanding.” The girl looked at Ming Xiu, speaking with agitation.

“Outstanding?” Ming Xiu shook his head slightly and reached out to stroke the girl’s head. “Compared to going to Sunset College, I prefer eating the lunch boxes you prepare for me in the sun.”

“Got it, got it. You’ve said it many times. Wasn’t I training hard recently to get a spot to go to Sunset College with you? I obviously didn’t have the time to make lunch boxes for you. Now that I’ve already obtained the qualification, I’ll make it for lunch tomorrow. You greedy cat,” the girl said in exasperation.

At the same time, Sunset College was also discussing the exchange students between Bright Prospects College and Sunset College. The two colleges had a deep relationship, so there would be certain spots reserved for students from Bright Prospects College to study for one semester which lasted three months.

Although it was an exchange, it was to let them learn advanced knowledge and theory. The teachers from Sunset College would send their students to tutor them on a one-on-one basis.

“These are the nominations for the student tutors this year. Look and see if you have any objections,” the vice-chancellor said as he pointed to the documents in front of the teachers.

Wang Fei picked up the name list and looked at it. She asked in surprise, “Why is Zhou Wen’s name on it? Aren’t the student tutors always third years and above? Zhou Wen is just a freshman. He shouldn’t need to do this, right?”

The managing vice-chancellor smiled and said, “Zhou Wen is in the top ten of our school’s comprehensive test, and he once defeated John and won honor for our school. If he doesn’t qualify, few of our students qualify.”

Wang Fei didn’t want Zhou Wen to waste his time and energy on being a student tutor. She wanted to change the vice-chancellor’s mind, but before she could say anything, the vice-chancellor waved his hand and said, “This matter is decided. There is no room for discussion.”

Seeing how determined the chancellor was, Wang Fei had no choice but to swallow her words. After the meeting, before Wang Fei went to look for the managing vice-chancellor, he asked her to stay behind.

“Madam personally called to request this,” the managing vice-chancellor said to Wang Fei.

“Sis Lan?” Wang Fei was slightly taken aback. However, since it was Ouyang Lan’s request, she had nothing to say. She was only Zhou Wen’s teacher, but Ouyang Lan was, in name, his mother.

Wang Fei picked up the name list again and glanced at the person Zhou Wen would be tutoring. On it were two words: Ming Xiu.

“Ming Xiu, could it be the one from the Ming family? What is Sis Lan trying to do?” Wang Fei looked at the name with an uncertain expression.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 304 - Poison Wyrm

Chapter 304 Poison Wyrm

In the underground Pool City instance dungeon, Zhou Wen controlled the blood-colored avatar and ran towards Poison Wyrm Pool.

There were few dimensional creatures in Pool City, so he only encountered two Sword Fang Fish along the way. However, they were only ordinary ones that he easily slew.

Using the characteristics of the Overlord Spear's Ever-Victorious, he was able to dish out death with one strike, but nothing dropped.

The Poison Wyrm Pool was originally a lake built in the city. After the city was flooded, the pool wasn't fully submerged due to its higher height. The square and stone columns by the side remained above the water surface.

With the blood-colored avatar standing in front of the stone column, Zhou Wen looked down and couldn't help but frown. The water in the Poison Wyrm Pool was black. Even if he jumped in, there was a chance that he wouldn't be able to see anything.

He first summoned an ordinary Golden Warrior, letting it enter the Poison Wyrm Pool to test things out. He wanted to see if he could lure the Poison Wyrm out.

The Golden Warrior fell into the water and sank with a bloop. After a while, there was no reaction from the pool. However,

the game indicated that the Golden Warrior had died. The Poison Wyrm didn’t appear.

Zhou Wen summoned a few more Companion Beasts and sent them into the water, but the results were all the same. They caused quite a commotion when they sank, but they soon fell silent. However, the Poison Wyrm just didn’t appear.

With no other choice, Zhou Wen let Ghost Bride give it a try. She had a ghostly body and wasn’t affected by the poisonous liquid. She floated straight into the lake.

Although Ghost Bride was unaffected, she couldn’t see anything in the pitch-black pool and didn’t know how deep the pool went. Despite diving several hundred meters, Ghost Bride still failed to reach the bottom, nor did she find the Poison Wyrm.

Ghost Bride kept diving for nearly a thousand meters before she finally reached the bottom. The bottom wasn’t very spacious, and she didn’t encounter the Poison Wyrm after circling the area.

Strange, where did the Poison Wyrm go? Has it not spawned? Zhou Wen was puzzled.

This was a game, and Zhou Wen was the only gamer. That made it quite impossible for there to be spawning problems. Zhou Wen made Ghost Bride make another circle of the area but ultimately didn’t discover anything.

Strange! Zhou Wen had no choice but to go to the school’s database.

There was quite a lot of information regarding the Poison Wyrm. After all, it was a dragon-like existence. Many tutors

had attempted to obtain a Poison Wyrm Companion Beast.

However, there were very few people who could kill it. The Poison Wyrm was also known as a Diving Wyrm. It remained within the Poison Wyrm Pool, and wouldn’t easily be tempted by external objects.

As for the Poison Wyrm Pool, it was extremely toxic. Not only humans, but even some of the venomous Companion Beasts also found it difficult to survive in it.

A tutor had specifically written a guide to lure the Poison Wyrm out. The most important point mentioned was that although the Poison Wyrm was an aquatic creature, it enjoyed eating birds, especially bird eggs.

As long as one applied some beaten eggs to the stone railings, one could lure the Poison Wyrm out. If one couldn’t find any bird eggs, chicken eggs could be used too. However, the amount of chicken eggs required was around four kilograms.

Drawing out the Poison Wyrm was only the first step. This was because an ordinary Epic expert would not be able to withstand the toxicity of the Poison Wyrm. If they were to be sprayed with poisonous gas, they would most likely die on the spot.

Are there bird eggs in the game? I don’t have any bird eggs, but I have one stone egg. I wonder how long it will take before Truth Listener evolves. Zhou Wen was somewhat depressed. Only objects like Companion Eggs could be brought from real life into the game. Ordinary objects couldn’t enter.

If I were to go to the Poison Wyrm Pool in reality, I could take the chick over and tie it up as bait. But in this game, where

can I find birds and eggs? As Zhou Wen was thinking about how to get eggs, he heard a commotion outside.

Originally, he didn't want to pay attention to what was happening outside, but when he heard Li Xuan call his name, he opened the door. He immediately saw Li Xuan standing outside the courtyard with many people surrounding him. Most of them were special admissions students that lived in the Four Seasons Garden. Even Wang Lu was amongst them.

They surrounded Li Xuan and said something, while Li Xuan had a smug look on his face. Beside him was a beautiful Companion Beast in a leafed robe with a wooden bow in hand. It had pointy ears and a pair of wings growing on its back.

"Zhou Wen, what do you think of my newly acquired Elf Companion Beast? It's an authentic Elf Archer from the West District's Life Forest. Although it's only at the Legendary stage, it's much more expensive than the typical Epic. Furthermore, due to their rarity, it's not something that can be bought with just money," Li Xuan flaunted.

The special admissions students by his side had looks of envy, as though they agreed with Li Xuan's words.

"What special abilities does she have?" Zhou Wen felt that ordinary Legendary Companion Beasts were useless to him unless they had special abilities.

"Such a pet doesn't need any ability. It just needs to stay by my side," Li Xuan said.

Many students beside him nodded in agreement, feeling that Li Xuan was right.

“If there’s nothing else, I’ll go back and play games.” Zhou Wen didn’t see the point of having such a Companion Beast tag along.

Li Xuan hurriedly followed Zhou Wen into the building.

“Old Zhou, this item is just a decoration. It’s indeed useless. However, a batch of excellent-grade Companion Eggs has recently been sent to Luoyang. This Elf Archer is just one of them. Someone gave it to me as a gift. They invited my Li family to participate in the Companion Egg auction. Are you interested in joining me?”

“I don’t have money anyway. What can I do if I go? I’ll just play games at home,” Zhou Wen said with a shake of his head.“Come on man. Join me. Just treat it as broadening your knowledge. After all, it’s rare seeing Companion Eggs from the West District. I heard there are dragons, angels, devils, and some other elemental Companion Beasts.” Li Xuan added.

“I’m not going,” Zhou Wen rejected.

“Don’t be so heartless. At most, I’ll pay you to attend.” Li Xuan knew that Zhou Wen lacked money, so he tempted him.

However, that was in the past when Zhou Wen lacked money. He had invested enough money now, so his need wasn’t that high.

“Why must you drag me along?” Zhou Wen asked.

Li Xuan chuckled in embarrassment. “The last time I bought the Thundergod General was when you were with me. You helped me make up my mind, resulting in my good luck. I

will definitely get a few more Companion Beasts this time, so if you join me, I'll feel a lot more at ease."

"Do you think I'm some kind of lucky mascot? I don't have that ability. If you really want to get lucky, why don't you invite Wang Lu along?" Zhou Wen rolled his eyes at him.

Upon hearing Wang Lu's name, Li Xuan said depressingly, "Wang Lu will participate too, but she is buying a Companion Egg for herself. We will be competitors. Come with me. I won't let you do it for free." If any Companion Beast catches your fancy, I'll buy it for you as payment as long as it's not too expensive."

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 305 - Poison Wyrm Crystal

Chapter 305 Poison Wyrm Crystal

Zhou Wen didn’t accept the payment, but he still agreed to participate in the auction with Li Xuan. The venue of the Companion Egg auction happened to be at the Xiyuan Crystal Shop.

Qin Xiyuan’s shop? When Zhou Wen recalled the store, he immediately thought of the mysterious numbers and the locked Companion Beast.

He thought that he could get the answer after saving the former principal, but to his dismay, he failed to find the former principal in the ruins.

The An family had sent many experts into the temple to search. An Sheng would occasionally inform him of the progress. The latest update from An Sheng was that there seemed to be a problem with the temple.

According to the analysis of an expert in ancient architecture, following the layout of the temple, they should have only arrived at the outer sanctum of the temple and there should be an inner sanctum further in. The former principal was probably trapped inside the inner sanctum.

However, they had yet to find a way to enter the inner sanctum. The research was still ongoing

Zhou Wen also wanted to enter the temple in-game. Unfortunately, he couldn’t pass the underground sea, so he couldn’t reach the temple.

I should focus on advancing to the Epic stage first. Zhou Wen couldn’t find any bird eggs in-game-not even chicken eggs. He had no choice but to think of other solutions.

In the patch of reeds outside Pool City, there were some low-level avian dimensional creatures. Zhou Wen grabbed a few of them and hung them above the Poison Wyrm Pool’s stone railing and drained their blood.

This actually worked. It didn’t take long before bubbles popped out of the Poison Wyrm Pool. The few avian dimensional creatures trembled in extreme fear.

Splash!

The surface of the water suddenly exploded. A dimensional creature that looked a little like a snake or dragon extended half of its body from the toxic pool. It opened its mouth and sucked at the bleeding birds, sucking them into its mouth.

It didn’t appear like a snake since it had claws, but it was not a dragon since it lacked horns. It looked very strange.

Zhou Wen wasn’t in the mood to appreciate its appearance. He made Banana Fairy blow a gust of cold, raging Grand Yin Wind at the Poison Wyrm, sweeping it up along with large amounts of poison water before it was frozen in midair.

Bam!

Frozen in a block of ice, the Poison Wyrm landed on the square. Any ordinary Epic creature would have been frozen to death, but the Poison Wyrm didn’t die. Thankfully, the freeze remained in effect as it lay motionless when it fell to the ground.

Zhou Wen held the Overlord Spear and thrust out several times, stabbing the Poison Wyrm to death.

It’s not as powerful as the rumors say! Zhou Wen felt that those strategies were a little exaggerated. Killing a Poison Wyrm was quite easy.

However, it had eluded him that few people in the world possessed the Mythical Banana Fairy. Without her, how could he have so easily killed a Poison Wyrm?

Ding!

The Poison Wyrm’s body exploded as a crystal dropped. Zhou Wen took a look and saw that it was a crystal with a Poison Wyrm’s figure inside. It was obviously a skill crystal.

My luck is in here. Zhou Wen was overjoyed as he hurriedly got the blood-colored avatar to pick up the crystal.

‘Poison Wyrm Crystal: Requires 21 Strength and 14 Poison stats to absorb.’

The system gave him a notification, and it was something that Zhou Wen’s stats matched perfectly. He even had a slightly higher Poison stat; hence, he directly chose to absorb it.

The Poison Wyrm crystal transformed into wisps of black gas and fused into the blood-colored avatar’s body. At the same time, Zhou Wen felt a numbing pain aura circulate in his body as he cried out in pain.

After a while, the feeling gradually disappeared as a new Primordial Energy circulation formed in his body.

‘Absorbed Poison Wyrm Crystal. Attained Epic Primordial Energy Skill: Poison Dragon Finger.’

It’s not the Dragon Transformation Art? Zhou Wen felt depressed. It wasn’t what he needed. He hadn’t heard of the Poison Dragon Finger before, and on second look, he realized it was just Rank 1.

Zhou Wen tested the Poison Dragon Finger and when he used it, his left middle finger turned black. Other than that, there didn’t seem to be any other changes.

There weren’t any strong finger beams or explosive powers. It looked ordinary and unremarkable. It was unbelievable that it was an Epic Primordial Energy Skill.

Isn’t this too weak? Do I even have to touch my opponent with my finger? It’s already an Epic Primordial Energy Skill, yet it’s still so low-end? Zhou Wen pointed at the stone column and discovered that not only was it ordinary, nothing about its effects stood out. The augmentation in Strength was very lacking, making it not much stronger than the Mortal-stage Golden Finger. It really didn’t live up to its status as an Epic skill.

Since the Poison Dragon Finger has the word “poison,” it likely clinches victory using poison, right? I’ll try testing it on a living creature later. Zhou Wen had no choice but to console himself and leave the Underground Pool City dungeon before switching to the Zhuolu battlefield.

Not long after, he encountered a Chi. This time, Zhou Wen specifically used the Poison Dragon Finger to deal with it. However, when he tapped at the Chi, it wasn’t damaged at all. He only left a black dot the size of a fingertip on its body.

Zhou Wen originally hoped for the black dot to show its special effects such as directly rotting it and poisoning the Chi to death, so he kept staring at the Chi's black dot.

However, not long after, the black dot disappeared. With it disappearing without a trace, the Chi remained brimming with energy as though it was completely fine.

I actually believed this nonsense! Zhou Wen was rendered completely speechless. To call this Primordial Energy Skill an Epic was an insult to the word "Epic."

Without a solution, Zhou Wen first tried his luck at the baby tiger and once again tried the underground sea. After successfully killing himself, he headed for the underground Pool City to grind the Poison Wyrm. He refused to stop until he obtained the Dragon Transformation Art.

Now experienced, it was easier for him to lure the Poison Wyrm out and kill it. There were no absolutely invincible dimensional creatures in this world. Even a Companion Beast like Banana Fairy with a Mythical foundation could be resolved as long as he knew her characteristics.

The principle of mutual promotion and restraint was very useful in battles between Companion Beasts and dimensional creatures.

It was unknown if Zhou Wen's luck had really changed for the better recently. After killing the Poison Wyrm once again, he had another Primordial Energy Skill Crystal drop. It left him in disbelief.

May the heavens bless me. It should be the Dragon Transformation Art this time, right? Zhou Wen hurriedly got the blood-colored avatar to pick up the Poison Wyrm Crystal.

The absorption conditions were the same as before-Strength and Poison stat requirements. After the blood-colored avatar absorbed the Poison Wyrm Crystal, the system gave another notification.

‘Absorbed Poison Wyrm Crystal. Attained Poison Dragon Finger 2.’

D*mn, there’s a sequel? Zhou Wen felt like he was about to explode. He actually had two weak Primordial Energy Skills drop in consecutive fashion. He didn’t know if he was lucky or unlucky.

At this point, Zhou Wen didn’t have a solution. He killed the baby tiger with nothing to speak of, before diving into the underground sea to steal the Dragon Pearl. After succeeding in dying, he returned to kill the Poison Wyrm.

Ding!

A crisp sound rang out as another Primordial Energy Skill Crystal dropped.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 306 - Stone Armor

Chapter 306 Stone Armor

‘Absorbed Poison Wyrm Crystal. Attained Poison Dragon Finger 4.’

Zhou Wen felt a little uncomfortable when he saw the game notification pop out. The Poison Wyrm was simply exasperating; it just kept dropping Poison Dragon Finger.

What the hell is this? Zhou Wen had no choice but to treat the Poison Dragon Finger seriously.

To have the Poison Dragon Finger Primordial Energy skill drop three times in a row, Zhou Wen didn’t think it was a mere coincidence. After studying the skill carefully, he realized that the Poison Dragon Finger’s 1, 2, 4 weren’t the same. They were three separate skills.

Zhou Wen believed that the first unlabeled Poison Dragon Finger was 1. When he used it, the middle finger on his left hand turned black, Using 2 and 4 turned his index finger and ring finger black.

Could it be that there are five types of Poison Dragon Finger that correspond to each of the five fingers? However, the effects of the Poison Dragon Fingers are so weak. Even if they’re used at the same time, it wouldn’t be of much use, right? Zhou Wen was rather intrigued. He wanted to know the might of the Poison Dragon Finger when he gathered all five.

After all, the Poison Dragon Finger in its present state didn’t live up to being an Epic skill. Zhou Wen now felt that the Poison Dragon Finger wasn’t that simple.

He checked the Poison Wyrm’s information on the school’s database mainly to see what it could drop. There was little information on such matters. Only the tutor who had previously written the method to lure the Poison Wyrm had mentioned that Poison Dragon Finger would drop. However, he claimed that it was very weak and weaker than the typical Legendary skill. It wasn’t worth practicing

Zhou Wen didn’t manage to find any information on the Dragon Transformation Art, so he could only continue grinding. However, after killing the Poison Wyrm three times, he only had a Strength Crystal drop. No other skill dropped, much less a Companion Egg

It’s so difficult to have the Dragon Transformation Art drop. I wonder who’s managed to have it drop in the past. Zhou Wen had no choice but to patiently grind the instance dungeons.

The bat cave dropped the most items, but few of them were useful. The best was naturally the White Shadow of Poison Companion Egg. Unfortunately, Zhou Wen only had one drop. The ones he subsequently killed didn’t produce any Companion Eggs.

Next were the Primordial Energy Skill Crystals, followed by the Poison Crystals.

In addition, the bat cave had another special use-help Zhou Wen hatch Epic Companion Eggs.

Due to Zhou Wen’s lack of Primordial Energy, he wasn’t able to hatch Epic Companion Eggs. But thanks to the large

number of bats, killing them all dropped at least seven Primordial Energy Crystals each time he cleared the bat cave. These were valued between 21 and 36.

With the help of these high-valued Primordial Energy Crystals and the Primordial Energy recovery of his Dao body, Zhou Wen could barely hatch an Epic Companion Egg.

Zhou Wen had used this method to hatch the Mutated Stone Chi. Now, the Mutated Stone Chi had transformed into a grayish-white stone armor that the blood-colored avatar wore.

The armor was unique. It was a full-body armor. The grayish-white stone covered the blood-colored avatar from head to toe. It was different from the crudeness that Zhou Wen imagined. The Mutated Stone Chi in its armor form was exquisite and refined. It was on par with exquisitely forged steel armor. It even had quite an artistic feel to it.

After the blood-colored avatar put on the stone armor, it looked like a stone statue. However, its face was covered with a ferocious beast helm. It looked extremely ferocious and ruthless.

On the back of the armor, there was a black dragon pattern. The dragon appeared more abstract, preventing anyone from seeing its full appearance. However, the dragon’s domineering aura seemed to leap out of the armor as though it would come to life at any moment.

rul

After testing the defense of the Stone Chi’s armor, it wasn’t only strong, the armor had powerful self-healing abilities. It could instantly repair itself if it was not completely destroyed. The poisonous rays from ordinary Epic poisonous

bats were unable to scuff the armor. Even the White Shadow of Poison’s poisonous rays and poisonous claws only left a few marks that weren’t too deep. They failed to penetrate the armor.

This is good stuff. Zhou Wen thought that, with such good armor, he might be able to withstand the black dragon’s attack, but once he entered the underground sea, the stone armor and the blood-colored avatar were swallowed whole. It didn’t mean anything to the black dragon. The only thing was that it was a little hard to chew.

It wasn’t of much use to deal with those terrifying true dragons, but the armor was an excellent-grade defensive object at the Epic stage. Zhou Wen liked it a lot.

When the Mutated Stone Chi fought alone in battle, it was rather powerful. It had the strength similar to the Mutated Stone Chi which Zhou Wen had killed. It was an excellent-grade pet that was good both in the offensive and defensive.

After hatching the Mutated Stone Chi, Zhou Wen took out the Mutated Sword Fang Companion Egg and hatched it using the same method.

Mutated Sword Fang Fish: Epic

Life Providence: Fish of Sword Comprehension

Life Soul: Sword Flash Fish

Strength: 39

Speed: 37

Constitution: 38

Primordial Energy: 35

Talent Skill: Fangwheel Sword Flash

Companion Form: Sword

Although it only had one skill, the Mutated Sword Fang Fish's stats were excellent. It was all-rounded, with none of its stats lower than 35. It could be considered a pretty good excellent-grade Epic Companion Beast.

The only regret was that the Mutated Sword Fang Fish was an aquatic-type creature. It could only move freely in the water, so its mobility on land suffered greatly. It was basically useless.

However, that didn't matter. Usually, Zhou Wen could just use it as a sword in a place without water. The sword formed by the Sword Fang Fish, along with its sword flashes, was much more convenient than the Overlord Spear. It was even mightier, it just lacked the Ever-Victorious trait.

He brought the Mutated Sword Fang Fish to the underground sea and wanted to use its speed to snatch the Dragon Pearl, but it was still swallowed by the black dragon. It failed to put up any resistance.

From the looks of it, I can't just rely on pets. I still have to increase my strength as soon as possible. Zhou Wen gritted his teeth and continued grinding the Poison Wyrm, hoping to have the Dragon Transformation Art drop.

When it was time to meet Li Xuan, Zhou Wen applied for leave and attended the auction with Li Xuan.

Zhou Wen was rather familiar with the Xiyuan Crystal Shop, but when he got there with Li Xuan today, there were more

people here than the previous few times.

The people were mostly middle-aged. There were young people, but not many. Apart from Li Xuan, Zhou Wen didn’t see any familiar faces. Wang Lu didn’t seem to be there either.

“Brother, aren’t you going to introduce me to your friend?” Just as the duo arrived at the venue, they saw a young man walk over.

Although Zhou Wen didn’t recognize the young man, he could guess that he was Li Xuan’s second brother, the man who had tried to kill him several times.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 307 - Tyrant Behemoth

Chapter 307 Tyrant Behemoth

When one wore clothing in the form of a western suit and white shirt, it made them feel formal. However, the young man wearing such attire in front of them looked natural and desultory, as if wearing those clothes was nothing but natural. He exuded a unique, indescribable charm.

Zhou Wen sized him up. He was a man in his twenties, with looks that made one jealous. His every move was filled with charm, enough to move any woman's heart.

Seeing that Li Xuan was merely looking at him coldly without any intention of introducing him, the man smiled and offered Zhou Wen his hand. "Hello, my name is Li Xiubai. My close friends call me Mobai. Since you are my brother's friend, call me Mobai as well."

"Zhou Wen, Li Xuan's friend." Zhou Wen extended his hand and shook it before answering tersely. Those few words directly told Li Xiubai that he was on the same side as Li Xuan, and there was no way he would be friends with him.

Li Xiubai didn't mind. He smiled and said, "Brother's friend is naturally my friend. If we have a chance to get to know each other in the future, you'll start to understand me. Don't rush to conclusions. I have friends over there, so pardon me."

Seeing Li Xiubai leave, Li Xuan pursed his lips and said, "He always looks like a gentleman when he's in front of others, but he uses all possible means behind their backs."

Zhou Wen glanced at Li Xiubai and felt that Li Xuan's second brother was rather terrifying. He had plotted to kill Li Xuan, but he was still able to show his good brother image in front of others without his expressions betraying him. If it wasn't because Zhou Wen knew the situation well, he would probably have believed that Li Xuan had a good relationship with his brother.

"Li Xiubai is really scary. It's no wonder you can't beat him," Zhou Wen said to Li Xuan.

"What do you mean I can't beat him? I just didn't want to compete with him in the past, but things are different now. He can forget about taking advantage of me in the future," Li Xuan said with a pout.

Zhou Wen shook his head slightly. Li Xuan's words had already exposed his weakness. Despite how Li Xiubai had treated him, all Li Xuan wanted was to prevent his brother from taking advantage of him.

Such a harmless personality might be Li Xuan's weakness, but it was precisely because of this personality that Zhou Wen was willing to get close to him and become friends.

There were many Companion Eggs placed in the glass cabinets on display in the exhibition hall. They were all to be auctioned, so anyone could take a careful look at them to better inform their decision on the bidding in the evening.

However, it was difficult to tell if Companion Eggs were good or bad. Furthermore, with the tempered glass shield in the way, it blocked the aura of the Companion Eggs, making it even harder to make informed decisions.

"Have you shortlisted your targets?" Zhou Wen asked Li Xuan.

“Yes, I’d like to bid for No. 47 Holy Sword Angel. What do you think of it?” Li Xuan brought Zhou Wen to the glass cabinet with the number 47 and pointed at a Companion Egg inside.

As Zhou Wen used his phone to take a picture of the Companion Egg, he asked, “What are the characteristics of Holy Sword Angel?”

Li Xuan described the details of Holy Sword Angel to Zhou Wen before asking, “How’s two million? I plan on paying two million to buy this one during the auction. What do you think?”

“I don’t think this one is too good. You should consider something else,” Zhou Wen said after some thought.

He saw that the Holy Sword Angel’s attributes were only average. Although they weren’t bad, they weren’t considered good. Its skills were also incomplete, so it was far from an excellent-grade Companion Beast.

“Then which one do you think is good? I want the kind that looks good. Can you help me choose one from those?” Li Xuan pointed at the few Companion Eggs in the catalog.

The few Companion Eggs in the catalog hatched angels, fairies, and demonesses. Furthermore, the prices were ridiculously high. Yet, their abilities were only average. It was unknown why Li Xuan was buying them.

However, since Li Xuan wanted one, Zhou Wen decided to help him take a look. There were indeed a few which had relatively good attributes, especially an Epic Companion Egg named Spirit Drawing Demoness. The four basic stats exceeded the limits listed on the catalog’s range, and it had all four skills. It could be said to be an excellent-grade Companion Egg.

Zhou Wen secretly told Li Xuan that he should spend all his funds bidding for the Spirit Drawing Demoness.

Li Xuan trusted Zhou Wen greatly. Since Zhou Wen told him to buy the Spirit Drawing Demoness, he didn't look at the other Companion Eggs.

"Zhou Wen, we agreed that you could pick one for yourself. It'll be your payment for your help," Li Xuan said to Zhou Wen.

"Cut that out. Since what needs to be done has been done, I'll look around. Go around by yourself and take a look." Zhou Wen wanted to go to the fourth level and look at the locked Companion Beast. He felt that it likely had something to do with the passcode that the former principal had given him.

"What's your problem? Just choose one. You can walk around after picking one." Li Xuan forcefully pulled Zhou Wen back. As he walked, he said, "How's this Nightmare Succubus? Her figure is hot."

Zhou Wen had no idea what Li Xuan was thinking. He remembered that the Invincible Connate Divine Art Li Xuan cultivated prevented him from losing his virginity. Losing his virginity would only make him lose his cultivation. What was the point looking at these all day? Wasn't he afraid of losing his cultivation?

Since Li Xuan insisted on giving him one, Zhou Wen decided to choose a relatively cheaper one and be done with it. After flipping through the catalog, he realized that the cheapest cost at least 100,000. Furthermore, it was some boring Legendary Companion Egg, for example, goblins or swamp monsters.

These kinds of Legendary Companion Eggs, that could only be considered ordinary in the West District, sold for more than 100,000, alluding to the saying that what is rare is dear. After all, the East District didn’t have any of these Companion Beasts.

He walked around and occasionally used his phone to take a look. As others were using phones to take photos, Zhou Wen’s actions weren’t too out of place.

As Zhou Wen was looking, he suddenly froze. He looked at the display cabinet beside him. Inside it was a Companion Egg with the name “Minotaur” written on the card. However, the phone’s information was different.

Zhou Wen took a closer look at the information on the card. It wrote that it was a Legendary Minotaur which dropped from a dimensional zone called the Underground Maze in West District. It was good at using axes, having pretty good Constitution and Strength.

However, the information Zhou Wen saw on the phone was completely different from the card. This Companion Egg with the Minotaur label was listed as Tyrant Behemoth on the phone. Furthermore, it was only at the Mortal stage. However, behind those words the phrase “Evolvable.”

That can’t be? Could this be a Mythical Companion Beast that’s comparable to Banana Fairy? That shouldn’t be possible. Those who are in the Companion Egg business are experts, especially at such a large auction. They must have been appraised by many experts. Why would they make a mistake between a Minotaur and a Tyrant Behemoth? Zhou Wen found it unbelievable, but the phone’s information was clear. This was a Tyrant Behemoth Companion Egg.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 308 - Exchange

Chapter 308 Exchange

The procedures were strict, so how could there be any room for mistakes? Mythical Companion Eggs were just too rare. Would anyone mistake it for other Companion Eggs after obtaining it?

Zhou Wen definitely wouldn’t be mistaken.

Regardless of the reason for the screw-up, there’s no reason not to get something this good. Zhou Wen pointed at the Companion Egg with the Minotaur label and said to Li Xuan, “I’ll take this.”

“Minotaur? I say, Old Zhou, you sure are a little hardcore! There are so many Companion Eggs to choose from, but you have to choose something this ugly. Even if you want to save me money, that’s not how you do it, right? Let’s do it this way. I’ll decide, and I’ll get you that Nightmare Succubus tonight. I guarantee you that you won’t regret it,” Li Xuan looked at the introduction on the card as he said.

“No, I want this. If you aren’t going to bid for it, I’ll do it myself,” Zhou Wen said.

“You’re really odd. There are so many beautiful Companion Beasts, but you want none of that. Instead, you insist on something so ugly. Forget it, it’s fine as long as you like it,” Li Xuan said helplessly. After all, Zhou Wen had been a weirdo from the beginning. He wasn’t too surprised.

“Zhou Wen, Li Xuan, you two sure came early?” Wang Lu walked over and stood in front of them.

“Wang Lu, do you think Zhou Wen is odd? He doesn’t want all these beautiful Companion Beasts and insists on having an ugly Minotaur,” Li Xuan said with a smile.

“What Minotaur?” Wang Lu asked.

Li Xuan pointed at the display cabinet beside him. Wang Lu looked over and saw that the serial number was 107. She looked at Zhou Wen in surprise and asked, “You wish to buy this Companion Egg?”

“Yes.” Zhou Wen’s heart skipped a beat as he felt something amiss.

“What a coincidence.” Wang Lu took out a note from her pocket and handed it to Zhou Wen.

“What’s this?” Li Xuan craned his head to look at the note with great curiosity. He saw the number, “107,” written on it.

Wang Lu said with a smile, “I originally didn’t want to come, but the organizer of this auction is a good friend of my family’s elders, and I’m the only one in Luoyang, so I had to attend. I never thought of buying any Companion Beasts, and couldn’t be bothered perusing the catalog, so I randomly wrote a number. I planned on bidding for the Companion Beast with that number this evening as a way to please the auction organizer.”

Li Xuan found it rather coincidental when he heard that, but Zhou Wen was alarmed. Wang Lu’s luck was just too good. To be able to randomly select a Mythical Companion Beast made her a humanoid mascot.

“Don’t tell me the two of you plan on bidding for this Minotaur?” Li Xuan looked at the two of them and asked.

Since the two of them had chosen the Minotaur, they would only benefit the seller if they got into a bidding war. Since they were all fellow students with a good relationship, there was no need for that.

Wang Lu looked at Zhou Wen and said, “I don’t plan on giving up. What about you?”

“Same here,” Zhou Wen said.

“I really don’t understand you. There’s no need to fight for a Minotaur. There are plenty of them in the West District. If you really want one, I’ll get someone to get you a few. There’s no need to strain your friendship,” Li Xuan tried to mediate.

“My decision never changes once I’ve made up my mind, but what Li Xuan said is right. There’s no need to strain our friendship for a Companion Egg. How about this, I’ll bid for this Companion Egg, and you’ll bid for another Companion Egg. After the auction is over, we can exchange them as a gift exchange. That way, I wouldn’t have changed my mind, and you will obtain the Companion Egg you want. Isn’t that fair?” Wang Lu said after some thought.

“Fair enough.” Zhou Wen nodded in agreement. He felt that if he really engaged in a bidding war with Wang Lu, there was almost no way he could beat her. Her suggestion would be for the best.

Be it money or luck, Zhou Wen was no match for Wang Lu.

“I’m going to the organizer to say hello. I’ll see you at the auction tonight.” When an attendant came to invite Wang

Lu over, she had no choice but to leave.

Zhou Wen continued surveying the Companion Eggs in the exhibition hall. Although Wang Lu had willingly made the exchange, Zhou Wen still felt a little uncomfortable. He couldn’t give up on a Mythical Companion Beast, but he should try his best to find a good Companion Beast for Wang Lu.

In a private room on the top floor of Xiyuan’s shop, a middle-aged man knocked on the door carefully. When the door opened a sliver, he immediately entered the room.

In the private room, an old man sat on the sofa, smoking as he asked, “Have you done what I told you to do?”

“Sir, it’s done. I’ve already switched the Companion Egg. As long as you bid for the Companion Egg at the auction, you can take it away without anyone noticing. The Zhang family definitely won’t be able to notice it in such a short amount of time,” said the middle-aged man nervously.

“Well done. What’s the serial number of the Companion Egg?” The old man put down the cigarette as his eyes shone with a fiery light.

“Sir, you promised me that as long as I settle this matter, you’ll let me regain my freedom and send me back to the sea-my home,” the middle-aged man said to the old man, his tone slightly anxious.

“I’ll naturally do what I promised you,” the old man said with a frown.

“I’ve worked for the Zhang family for so many years and finally managed to achieve my current position today. If what I did was discovered by them, there’s no way I can

survive. It’s all because of your order, so you must keep your promise. Please send me home.” The middle-aged man’s eyes were bloodshot, his hands clenched tightly.

“I said that I will definitely fulfill my promise. Don’t worry, what’s the serial number of the Companion Egg?” The old man stared coldly at him and asked again.

“107… 107… That Companion Egg greatly resembles a Minotaur Companion Egg. I did something to the Companion Egg, so even expert appraisers wouldn’t notice any problems ahead of time. Besides, no one will pay attention to a Minotaur Companion Egg…”

As soon as the middle-aged man finished speaking, a shadow that looked like a devil appeared behind the old man. The shadow spewed out smoke at the middle-aged man, engulfing him before he could react.

Very soon, the smoke swirled back. When it landed on the old man’s fingers, it had transformed into a cigarette.

The old man struck a match and lit the cigarette. He sucked it deeply before exhaling a mouthful of smoke. He said calmly, “Don’t worry, I’ll scatter your cigarette ashes into the sea. It can be considered as returning home.”

Zhou Wen walked around the exhibition hall for quite a while, but he couldn’t find a satisfactory Companion Beast. They were either too expensive or too inferior. He couldn’t afford the expensive ones, and he felt a little guilty buying the inferior ones.

He was almost done checking out all the Companion Eggs except for one. Zhou Wen took one final snap. However, he couldn’t help but be taken aback when he saw the results.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 309 - Four-Leaf Clover

Chapter 309 Four-Leaf Clover

Four-Leaf Clover: Legendary

Life Providence: Lucky Grass.

Strength: 0

Speed: 0

Constitution: 3

Primordial Energy: 20

Talent Skill: Exorcism

Companion Form: Hair Clip.

This was the information that Zhou Wen saw, and the name on the card was a Three-Leaf Clover. It was said to be a plant-type companion pet that could soothe one’s mind.

However, according to the information Zhou Wen saw on his phone, it was a Four-Leaf Clover. Its attributes were extremely weakvirtually trash among those at the Legendary stage-and Exorcism was a common skill in the West District. Furthermore, it was a passive skill, so it wasn’t of much use.

The Four-Leaf Clover looked ordinary, with nothing noteworthy. However, its Lucky Grass Life Providence astonished Zhou Wen.

Lucky Grass Life Providence: Luck +3

It was a simple and direct introduction. Zhou Wen had seen this back when Wang Lu's Lucky Baby Tiger hadn't hatched. However, the Lucky Baby Tiger added 5 Luck, 2 points higher than Lucky Grass.

This was understandable. After all, the baby tiger was at the Epic stage while this Four-Leaf Clover was only at the Legendary stage.

Wang Lu's luck is amazing. This is the one. Zhou Wen decided to bid for the Four-Leaf Clover Companion Egg. Having a Luck stat was just too rare. Many people wanted it, and Zhou Wen was no exception. However, recognizing it as Wang Lu's luck, he believed Wang Lu deserved getting the Four-Leaf Clover since he was getting a Tyrant Behemoth. He couldn't have his cake and eat it.

Furthermore, Zhou Wen felt that wearing a hair clip didn't suit him.

There were many people who knew Li Xuan, so Li Xuan had to entertain them. Zhou Wen didn't like such socializing events, so he went to the fourth level to see the locked Companion Beast.

However, Zhou Wen soon discovered that other than the independent elevator he had taken before, there weren't any other ways to take him to basement four. And the elevator he had taken previously was closed, with no way to open it.

Zhou Wen was puzzled. With so many tycoons from Luoyang and the surrounding cities here, as well as wealthy foreigners especially coming to participate in the auction, shouldn't the shop open up basement four and sell the pets

inside? Instead, it had been sealed. Qin Xiyuan's actions puzzled him.

After he made an inquiry, an attendant told him that basement four required the boss to escort someone down. Even they couldn't take Zhou Wen down there.

Zhou Wen had no choice but to give up the thought. After he visited the other floors of the store, he realized that the Xiyuan Crystal Shop was indeed a well-established shop in Luoyang. It had plenty of crystals and Companion Eggs. It had also launched several new products, testimony that the Xiyuan Crystal Shop had a very broad supply chain.

When the auction was about to begin, Li Xuan took Zhou Wen to a private room on the second floor. Wang Lu was already waiting inside.

"It's all thanks to Wang Lu this time. Otherwise, young people like us wouldn't be able to touch a private room at all." Li Xuan grinned and sat on the sofa.

Wang Lu smiled and said, "This room isn't prepared for me either. It's only because they are taking my family's elders into account. I'm just a representative."

The three of them chatted for a while before the auction began. The first auction was for Legendary Companion Eggs. They were considered desserts before the main courses. The final Epic-stage Companion Eggs were the main course.

Legendary Companion Beasts were sold with a starting bid of 100,000. Their quality was much lower than the batch Zhou Wen obtained last time. However, those who could participate in the auction didn't care about the chump change. All they did was buy something they liked. Every

item had a bid, but most of them weren’t high. The highest closed at 230,000.

Only then did Zhou Wen realize that serial numbers were sold in reverse order. The larger the number, the earlier they were auctioned. The thirteenth item was the Minotaur numbered 107, and it also had a starting bid of 100,000.

Wang Lu very calmly pressed the button to raise the bid to 110,000.

The room was sealed and isolated, equipped with one-way mirrors, so it was unlike the people in the hall below. They needed to use a bidding device instead of raising their hands; otherwise, the auctioneer wouldn’t be aware of bids from the private rooms.

There were two people interested in the Minotaur. Soon, the bid raised to 160,000. Then, Wang Lu raised it to 170,000.

The two bidders on the first floor had already given up. Wang Lu originally thought that she could be the winning bidder, but someone else suddenly increased the bid to 200,000.

200,000 for a Minotaur was an astronomical price. It appeared that the other party was determined to win the Minotaur.

“Looks like someone wants to compete with you. You don’t have any enemies in Luoyang, right?” Li Xuan said with a smile.

Wang Lu shook her head and raised the price to 210,000.

“Isn’t it tiring adding 10,000 each time? Just raise it to 300,000 and see if he wants to carry on bidding,” Li Xuan

said like the rich man he was.

“Money still needs to be conserved. Every bit counts,” Wang Lu said with a smile.

At that moment in another room, an old man who was smoking frowned. He originally believed that it wouldn’t be a problem winning the Companion Egg with 200,000, he never expected someone to engage in a bidding war with him.

Could it be that the news was leaked? Or did that guy leave a backup plan? The old man pondered for a moment. He felt that both cases were possible, but it didn’t seem like it.

Unable to figure out the reason instantaneously and seeing how no one was bidding, with the auctioneer already calling 210,000 once, the old man decided to bid. The money spent was trivial as long as he could get it.

He didn’t wish to attract too much attention, so he planned to add 10,000 to test the other party’s reaction.

However, when his finger pressed on the bidding device, there was no reaction. It seemed to have broken.

The old man was stunned. He quickly reached out his fingers and pressed it several times, but there was no reaction at all. It was as if it had really broken. Sweat seeped out from his forehead and he pressed continuously, but there was no reaction.

“Calling thrice… 210,000, sold!” The Minotaur was sold for 210,000. The auctioneer was satisfied with the number and had called out very quickly.The old man in the room fumed with anger. He had considered everything, making all the

necessary arrangements, only to fail because of a damaged bidding device. He could not help but be enraged.

He called the staff over and launched a tirade. However, when the staff checked the bidding device, they found that all the buttons were working normally. There were no problems at all during the subsequent attempts.

“Sir, were you too excited just now? Could it be a mishandling of the controls?” the staff member asked in an extremely polite manner.

The old man hated that he couldn’t immediately turn the staff in front of him into smoke, but this was Luoyang. If he did that, he would definitely be targeted, and this wouldn’t solve any problems.

“Who won 107?” the old man could only suppress his anger and ask.

“Sir, I’m sorry. Unless the client is willing to make it public, we need to keep our clients’ information confidential,” the staff member said as he bowed slightly.

The old man held back his anger and let the staff leave. His expression darkened.

He did not know if it was a coincidence or if he had already been targeted. If someone had targeted him, he would be in danger.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 310 - Tyrant Behemoth

Chapter 310 Tyrant Behemoth

Zhou Wen couldn’t help but heave a sigh of relief when he saw that Wang Lu had succeeded in bidding for the Tyrant Behemoth. This kind of Companion Beast that had a chance to advance to the Mythical stage was just too precious. There was nowhere in-game he could grind for them like ordinary pets which he would eventually obtain given time. To have something fall into his lap just like this, he doubted that there would be a second opportunity.

Moments later, a staff member sent the item over. After letting Wang Lu confirm that the item was right, Wang Lu directly paid the bill with her card and obtained the Tyrant Behemoth Companion Egg.

Wang Lu turned to face Zhou Wen with the Companion Egg in hand. He extended his hand to receive it, only to have Wang Lu retract her hand and hug the Companion Egg. She smiled at Zhou Wen and asked, “Since it’s a trade, where’s your Companion Egg?”

“The Companion Egg I chose hasn’t begun the auction,” Zhou Wen said.

“Then I’ll trade with you when you get it.” Wang Lu hugged the Companion Egg and sat back on the sofa.

Zhou Wen wasn’t in a rush as he waited for the auction to continue. After a few more auction items, he finally saw the Four-Leaf Clover being auctioned.

There weren’t many people bidding for the Four-Leaf Clover since the card’s information stated that it was a Three-Leaf Clover without any combat strength. It was basically a supplementary item that made one clear-headed. The effects were not much different from medication oil, so few people had any interest in it. Only one person started it off with the opening bid, allowing Zhou Wen to buy it for 130,000.

“Let’s swap the goods at the same time.” Wang Lu held the Companion Egg with one hand and extended her other hand in front of Zhou Wen.

“Alright.” Zhou Wen placed the Four-Leaf Clover Companion Egg in Wang Lu’s hand before taking the Tyrant Behemoth Companion Egg

I finally got it. Holding the Tyrant Behemoth Companion Egg, Zhou Wen felt extremely excited. This pet had the chance of advancing to the Mythical stage in the future.

Behemoths were a type of dimensional creature that was terrifying in Western mythology. Legend had it that it ate mountains on a daily basis, and due to its huge appetite, God, who had originally created a pair of Behemoths, was afraid that their descendants would end up devouring the entire world. Hence, He killed the female Behemoth, leaving behind only the male Behemoth.

It was ultimately a legend, but the attributes of Tyrant Behemoth made it clear that it was extraordinary

Tyrant Behemoth: Mortal (Evolvable)

Strength: 11

Speed: 11

Constitution: 11

Primordial Energy: 11

Talent Skill: Mountain Devouring

Companion Form: Boxing Glove

It was a classic four 11-pointer all-rounder. Like Banana Fairy, it only had one single skill. This disappointed Zhou Wen a little. The Companion Form was a boxing glove, something that he would figure out after hatching it.

The auction continued. In the end, Li Xuan managed to win the Epic Spirit Drawing Demoness for 3,200,000. It was much more expensive than the market price, making him feel the pinch.

However, he still insisted on winning it. Once the auction ended, he rushed back impatiently, planning to think of a way to incubate Spirit Drawing Demoness.

“I know there’s a dessert shop nearby that has pretty good desserts. Want to try it before we head back to school?” Wang Lu asked Zhou Wen after leaving Xiyuan.

“I’ll pass. I don’t really eat sweet stuff.” Zhou Wen was speaking the truth. Besides, he was in a rush to hatch the Tyrant Behemoth, so he wasn’t in the mood to eat.

Waving his hand as a farewell, Zhou Wen summoned his Mutated Lotus Flower Ant and rode it back to school.

“He’s really not gentlemanly at all. What a dimwit. Drive,” Wang Lu said angrily and ordered her driver to drive her to the dessert shop.

After the car left, an old man walked out of a nearby alley. He looked in the direction of the car with a complicated gaze.

Someone from the Wang family won that Companion Egg? It looks like something happened. That guy probably leaked the news… The old man felt that he was in a very dangerous situation. He had to leave immediately. Otherwise, it was possible that the Wang family would silence him.

After all, it was the Zhang family's Mythical Companion Egg, and the Hero King's family was not to be trifled with. In order to not provoke the Zhang family, the Wang family might have very well eliminated all those who knew about this.

Damn the Wang family. Count it my loss this time. The old man didn't dare to stay any longer. He sneaked into the darkness and left. Highly nervous, he constantly observed his surroundings to prevent anyone from the Wang family from pursuing him.

After Zhou Wen returned to his dorm, he hatched the Tyrant Behemoth. After all, it was still at the Mortal stage. With the amount of Primordial Energy Zhou Wen currently had, it was rather easy to hatch it.

Before long, a tattoo that looked like a bull's head appeared on the back of Zhou Wen's hand. It was completely black, resembling the silhouette of a bull's head.

He summoned Tyrant Behemoth. He originally imagined that it would be massive like its namesake. After all, the Behemoth was the largest mythical creature, a terrifying existence that fed on mountains daily.

But the tyrant in front of him was only half the height of a human. It had a bull's head and a thick curved horn on it. Its

body resembled an ape and its claws were sharp. The tail on its back curled up and its fur was black and luscious like black silk. It did look like a minotaur-a miniature one.

When Tyrant Behemoth turned into a boxing glove, a black boxing glove immediately appeared on Zhou Wen’s right hand. Strangely, there were two horns at the front of the glove. If Zhou Wen wanted to punch someone, the horns would definitely be the first to make contact.

This fellow is still at the Mortal stage. No matter how strong he is, he can’t be that strong. I wonder how long it will take to evolve to the level of Banana Fairy, Zhou Wen thought.

Zhou Wen soon discovered that Tyrant Behemoth did indeed live up the legends about it eating mountains. Banana Fairy and Truth Listener, together with the other Companion Beasts that needed to be fed, didn’t eat as much combined.Not long after he fed it, the phone would notify him that Tyrant Behemoth was in a hungry state. Furthermore, it wasn’t picky. Be it Companion Eggs or Companion Beasts, it could swallow them whole. Thankfully, Zhou Wen now had the Epic poison bats that he could kill in mass numbers. After getting a few Epic poison bat Companion Eggs for it, the system’s notifications silenced.

It can eat so much at such a young age. If it really evolves to the Epic stage, will I be able to raise it? Zhou Wen was already beginning to worry.

Apart from the time he spent studying at Wang Mingyuan’s place, Zhou Wen kept grinding daily. What he wanted the most was Lucky Baby Tiger and the Poison Wyrm’s Dragon Transformation Art, followed by that dragon pearl.

“Zhou Wen, come to my office.” Wang Fei sent him a text.

Zhou Wen thought that the Wang Fei had finally convinced her family to allow him to learn the Wang family’s movement techniques, but to his surprise, he learned that the school wanted him to be a student mentor. It had been arranged that he would take care of a student from Bright Prospects College. Zhou Wen would be responsible for his learning and day-to-day-living for the next three months at Sunset College.

“Isn’t this the responsibility of a tutor?” Zhou Wen asked in puzzlement.

“Don’t forget that you’re a student at Sunset College. To the students of the other colleges, you have the right to be their mentor. That’s why you are called a student mentor. Do a good job, and don’t disgrace our Sunset College,” Wang Fei said to Zhou Wen with a solemn expression.

Zhou Wen wanted to decline, but Wang Fei told him that this was the school management’s decision. He couldn’t decline it unless he dropped out of school.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 311 - Challenge

Chapter 311 Challenge

Dropping out of school was naturally just a joke. No one would drop out of school because of this. Furthermore, the school gave corresponding rewards for the student mentors, allowing them to obtain special permits to certain special dimensional zones.

Instead of calling it mentoring, it was actually being a guide to allow the students of Bright Prospects College to quickly integrate into Sunset College’s curriculum and lifestyle.

After all, they were only here for three months, unlike Zhou Wen and company who could live here for four years and could take things slowly.

Bright Prospects students who were mentored on a one-on-one basis joined their mentors in the same class. Naturally, their homework missions were the same.

The only compulsory thing for student mentors was to team up with their mentees and guide them in completing their homework missions.

After Zhou Wen saw the responsibilities of a student mentor, he thought nothing much of it. After all, it was just taking another person along for his homework missions. It wasn’t anything difficult since he had to do the homework missions too.

When Zhou Wen saw his mentee, he learned that his name was Ming Xiu, a handsome youth around his age. He didn’t

know why, but Ming Xiu looked rather lazy despite looking sunny and chipper, as though he wasn’t interested in anything.

The school had already allocated Ming Xiu and company their dorms, but Zhou Wen was needed to take them there and help them familiarize themselves with the situation on campus.

These weren’t too troublesome for Zhou Wen. Although the school was large, students usually only had a few places to go too. They would be able to familiarize themselves with the campus in half a day. Once that was finished, Zhou Wen was done with his responsibilities until homework missions were assigned. He just needed to take Ming Xiu along when that happened.

Although Zhou Wen was learning from Wang Mingyuan, his tutor was still Wang Fei in name, so Ming Xiu’s tutor was also Wang Fei.

“Ming Xiu, this is your dorm key. Shall I take you to the dormitory first?” After the school management had delivered their speeches, Zhou Wen planned on taking Ming Xiu to his dorm to settle him in.

“Thank you, just give me the key. We’re all adults. I can do such trivialities myself. There’s no need to trouble you,” Ming Xiu said politely.

“Sure, this is my phone number. Call me if you need anything.” Zhou Wen handed over the dorm key and his phone number.

“Thanks. By the way, who was first in Sunset College’s comprehensive test this year?” Ming Xiu asked after taking the key and paper slip.

“I believe first place went to Senior Wei Ge.” Zhou Wen had a good memory, but that was on matters he wanted to memorize. If he wasn’t interested, he often didn’t pay much attention. He really didn’t care who was first. He just knew that he was in the top ten.

“Wei Ge is the current president of the student council, right?” Ming Xiu nodded as if he had heard of this person before.

“Yes.”

“Do you know where to find him?”

“I really don’t know. You can go to the student council’s activity room to take a look. Even if you can’t find Senior Wei Ge, you can still find the key members of the student council there.” Zhou Wen then told him where the student council was located.

“Thanks.” After thanking Zhou Wen once again, Ming Xiu turned around and prepared to leave.

Zhou Wen didn’t stop him. Seeing how independent the Bright Prospects student was, he felt gratified. Besides, Ming Xiu was right. They were already adults and didn’t need others to watch over them. Many things could be figured out if one put in the effort. There was no need to have someone to seek advice from.

This was in line with Sunset College’s education policy. It was best not to restrict a student’s wishes and development. It only gave them guidance in particular directions and provided them with knowledge and the ability to learn. What they made out of that depended on the students themselves. Independence was what determined if a student could truly grow.

After Ming Xiu left, Zhou Wen turned around and returned to his dormitory. He hadn’t managed to obtain the Dragon Transformation Art. He planned to continue grinding before heading to Wang Mingyuan’s place for learning

Ming Xiu walked to a trash can and, without looking at Zhou Wen’s paper slip, he threw the folded piece of paper into the recycle bin.

Ming Xiu had no intention of coming to Sunset College to learn anything, nor did he need the companionship of a student mentor.

Wei Ge had been in a rather good mood recently. He was originally worried that Zhou Wen would become the second Hui Haifeng and might even compete with him to be the next student council president. However, after some observation, he realized that Zhou Wen was not much different from the other weirdos in school. His lack of interest in such matters relieved Wei Ge.

Zhou Wen seldom appeared and he didn’t participate in group activities. What was worse was that Zhou Wen often requested a leave of absence to leave campus.

Wei Ge automatically defined Zhou Wen as a rich and powerful scion. With Zhou Wen’s personality, he probably wouldn’t compete with him for the position of president of the student council.

Wei Ge was studying a dimensional zone guide when he heard the door being pushed open. He looked up at the person who had entered and couldn’t help but frown.

His memory was very good, especially when it came to faces. However, he could not remember where he had seen this handsome boy before.

The exchange students from Bright Prospects College arrived today. This boy should be one of them, right? Wei Ge guessed Ming Xiu's background and thought to himself, Why is the new exchange student here at the student council instead of in his dorm?

"Hello there, I'm the president of the student council, Wei Ge. Is there anything I can help you with?" Wei Ge said to Ming Xiu in a friendly manner, like he was a political figure greeting the poor in the countryside.

In Wei Ge's heart, Bright Prospects College was a third-rate college. Therefore, their students weren't much different from the poor and needy. Permitting their entry into Sunset College was a form of charity.

Ming Xiu looked at Wei Ge and said, "You are the president of the student council, Wei Ge?"

"That's me." Wei Ge nodded with a smile. He looked extraordinary and secretly he felt smug. Even a Bright Prospect student knows of me. As expected, I'm already famous elsewhere.

"Can you spar with me in real combat? I want to know how strong the strongest student at Sunset College is." Ming Xiu directly explained his purpose for coming.

Wei Ge smiled and said to Ming Xiu, "Are you an exchange student from Bright Prospects College?"

Ming Xiu nodded slightly and continued, "You decide on the time and place."

Young kid from a third-rate school, eager to prove himself. What a pity that he's overly ambitious. He wants to challenge me, the president of the student council, the

moment he’s here. He’s still too young. Wei Ge was experienced in handling such matters. While maintaining his smile, he took out a coin and placed it on the table. Then, he said to Ming Xiu, “Well, there’s no need to go through all that trouble. See this coin? I’ll do something to it. If you can do the same, you’ll be the winner.”

“Okay,” Ming Xiu agreed without hesitation.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 312 - Disciple Accepts the Challenge

Chapter 312 Disciple Accepts the Challenge

Wei Ge reached out his palm and casually pressed down on the coin on the table. Then, he removed his hand and smiled at Ming Xiu. “Saw that?”

Ming Xiu’s gaze landed on the coin and saw a needle-like hole in the middle of the coin. He reached out and picked up the coin. The coin had been pierced, but the table below wasn’t damaged at all.

“Condensing forces into a needle?” Ming Xiu said as he placed the coin on the table.

“You have quite a keen eye. You can give it a try as well.” Wei Ge was very pleased with himself. His ability to condense forces in his palm into a needle was something he was most proud of. Furthermore, he could control this technique easily and freely. It was impossible for the average person even if they worked hard for more than a decade. It had nothing to do with one’s strength because it was a manifestation of one’s control of their strength.

Otherwise, no matter how powerful one’s force was, even if it could smash a coin, it wouldn’t just leave a hole the size of a needle.

With this technique, Wei Ge had made many challengers retreat without a fight. He was already used to it.

Ming Xiu didn’t say anything. He only reached out his palm and pressed it on the coin. Then, he removed his palm and said to Wei Ge, “Now can you spar with me in real combat?”

Wei Ge looked at the coin and was shocked. He saw a hole on the coin that was smaller than the hole he had left behind.

Picking up the coin and seeing that there was no damage to the table, Wei Ge thought to himself, It’s surprising that a third-rate school like Bright Prospects College would have such an expert at strength control. This guy looks like a handful. It’s necessary I beat him, but there’s no benefit to it. But if I were to lose, wouldn’t my reputation be ruined?

With this thought in mind, Wei Ge suddenly had an idea. He smiled at Ming Xiu and asked, “How should I address you?”

“Ming Xiu,” Ming Xiu answered.

“Ming Xiu, you obviously can challenge me, but I have to clarify one matter first. Are you trying to challenge me, the president of the student council, or the number one expert of our Sunset College?” Wei Ge asked.

“Is there a difference?” Ming Xiu asked.

“Of course there is. Although I’m the president of the student council, the publicly recognized number one expert in our school is someone else. If you want to challenge the number one expert, I’m afraid you have gotten the wrong person,” Wei Ge said.

“Who’s the strongest?” Ming Xiu asked.

“Our school’s number one expert is Hui Haifeng who’s known as the Invincible Fist.” Wei Ge directly sold Hui

Haifeng out. After all, he and Hui Haifeng were rivals. Getting Ming Xiu to cause trouble for Hui Haifeng was the best option.

“Where can I find him?” When Ming Xiu heard the impressive title of Invincible Fist, he didn’t think that Wei Ge was lying. If he wasn’t that strong, he wouldn’t dare mention “invincible” in his title.

Furthermore, as the president of Sunset College’s student council, it was unlikely Wei Ge would spout nonsense.

Wei Ge wasn’t spouting nonsense. Hui Haifeng had such a nickname, but it was just one used in jest. Wei Ge used to hate Hui Haifeng’s nickname, but it was a perfect opportunity to use it now.

“Wait a minute.” Wei Ge made a phone call and quickly found Hui Haifeng’s whereabouts. He then said to Ming Xiu with a smile, “He should be in Dragon Gate Grotto. It’s not difficult to find the area. Just ask around on campus or use your phone’s navigation.”

“Thank you.” Ming Xiu turned around and left.

After Ming Xiu left, Wei Ge looked at the coin again. The needle hole was not only small but also very round. It was much more intricate than Wei Ge’s.

This guy is quite impressive. If I fought him, I might not be able to win. How did a third-rate school like Bright Prospects College produce such a freak? Wei Ge was puzzled. A student like him should have been able to enter a prestigious school.

However, thinking about how he had brought huge trouble to Hui Haifeng, Wei Ge felt happy again. If Ming Xiu really

defeated Hui Haifeng, it would be amusing.

Zhou Wen went to Wang Mingyuan’s place to study. Just as he arrived at Dragon Gate Grotto, he saw Ming Xiu standing at the intersection, looking down at his phone as though he was hesitating on which path to take.

“Stop looking. The GPS is useless here in Dragon Gate Grotto. Where do you want to go?” Zhou Wen walked to him and asked.

Seeing that it was Zhou Wen, Ming Xiu asked, “I’m looking for Hui Haifeng. I heard he’s in Old Dragon Cave, right?”

“Why are you looking for Hui Haifeng?” Zhou Wen asked curiously.

“Wei Ge said he’s the number one expert in Sunset College, so I wanted to see how strong the number one expert of Sunset College is,” said Ming Xiu.

Zhou Wen was somewhat speechless when he heard that. He had sent Ming Xiu to Wei Ge, and Wei Ge ended up sending him to Hui Haifeng.

“You know Hui Haifeng?” Ming Xiu sized up Zhou Wen and asked.

“We’re under the same tutor, so we’re considered fellow disciples,” Zhou Wen said as he considered how he could resolve the trouble that was Ming Xiu.

“Zhou Wen, what are you doing here?” Hui Haifeng asked as he walked out of Dragon Gate Grotto before Zhou Wen could think of a solution.

“This is Ming Xiu from Bright Prospects College. He wants to challenge you.” Zhou Wen had no choice but to introduce Ming Xiu to Hui Haifeng.

“Ming Xiu, why do you want to challenge me?” Hui Haifeng didn’t panic at all as he asked with a smile.

“Someone said that you are the number one expert at Sunset College. I want to know how strong Sunset College’s number one expert is,” said Ming Xiu.

“That’s right. That person has a keen eye, but Ming Xiu, if anyone can challenge me as you do, as the number one expert of Sunset College, wouldn’t I be busy all day? Just accepting challenges would tire me to death.” Hui Haifeng then changed gears and pointed at Zhou Wen. “Let’s do this. He’s my junior and ranked the lowest among our tutor’s four disciples. He’s also the weakest. Try defeating him first before I consider accepting your challenge.”

Zhou Wen nearly spat out the water he had just drunk. Hui Haifeng was too shameless.

Ming Xiu looked at Zhou Wen and gestured for him to launch an attack. “I’ll be troubling you.”

Zhou Wen was a little depressed. He didn’t have the time to fight with Ming Xiu. He still had a few questions to ask Wang Mingyuan.

Just as Zhou Wen was thinking, Feng Qiuyan saw him and ran over, immediately asking, “Coach, I’ve already figured out what you taught me the last time. When is the next lesson?”

Zhou Wen pointed at Ming Xiu and said, “Ahem. Feng Qiuyan, let me introduce you. This is Bright Prospects

College’s Ming Xiu, an exchange student who’s just come to our school. He’s very strong. You can spar with him. It’s a way to test you on your recent improvement in strength.”

“Alright.” Feng Qiuyan agreed immediately, his eyes filled with fighting spirit.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 313 - Ming Xiu’s Decision

Chapter 313 Ming Xiu’s Decision

Ming Xiu revealed a look of displeasure. When he heard Feng Qiuyan call Zhou Wen “Coach,” he thought that Feng Qiuyan was just a student trained by Zhou Wen. He felt that Zhou Wen was looking down on him asking him to spar with someone like that.

“Feng Qiuyan’s strength is no weaker than mine. As long as you can beat him, you can directly challenge Senior Haifeng.” Zhou Wen hurriedly directed the problem back at Hui Haifeng.

When Ming Xiu heard that, his expression softened and he looked at Feng Qiuyan.

This spectacular scene finally unfolded as they exchanged looks and immediately went to the arena.

Ming Xiu originally imagined that he could easily defeat Feng Qiuyan, who wasn’t famous at all, but he failed to gain an advantage once the battle began.

Feng Qiuyan’s saber techniques already had the inklings of a master’s. He freely struck with verve, his spirit and courage becoming stronger as he fought. His saber landed like roiling heavenly rivers that prevented his opponent from catching his breath.

Ming Xiu could not help but become serious. He used his incredible Life Providence powers and fought with Feng

Qiuyan with all his strength. But even so, it was only a draw. He found it difficult to clinch victory.

Ming Xiu’s shock was indescribable. His Life Providence was Peerless Twins-he learned everything much faster than others. He took days to master something that others might need a year for.

He just needed one look at concepts that eluded others to quickly understand them. Among his peers, he had never experienced the feeling of having an opponent.

He originally believed that Sunset College was only a little more famous, and their students were nothing much. It was impossible for them to be stronger than him.

However, he never expected that he wouldn’t be able to defeat Feng Qiuyan despite giving his all. And since Feng Qiuyan called Zhou Wen “Coach,” it was obvious he had been trained by Zhou Wen. Furthermore, Hui Haifeng claimed that Zhou Wen was the weakest among the four students of their tutor.

Sunset College is really filled with hidden talents! Ming Xiu, who had originally thought that it would be boring being an exchange student at Sunset College, suddenly changed the glint in his eyes.

The two of them had been fighting in the arena for more than an hour, but there was no victor. Both ended up exhausted with no energy left.

“Is that Zhou Wen really your coach?” Ming Xiu didn’t believe that a person who could fight him to a draw would be trained by someone their age.

“Yes,” Feng Qiuyan answered honestly.

“Then, is it like what he said? Your strength is about the same as his?” Ming Xiu asked again.

“I don’t know Coach’s strength, but it’s only because of his three pointers in the past two to three months that I have reached my current realm. Before this, I wouldn’t have been your match. I would have been defeated within ten moves.”

Feng Qiuyan believed that he was telling the truth, but even he himself didn’t know that Zhou Wen hadn’t given him any serious pointers—he had figured everything out himself.

However, those words sounded completely different in Ming Xiu’s ears. It was unbelievable that a person who couldn’t even withstand ten of his attacks previously could now tie him with just three pointers from Zhou Wen.

Feng Qiuyan looked like a rigid and focused person. He didn’t look like someone who would lie.

“There’s actually such a genius in this world. I had such a narrow view of the world before. It looks like I made the right choice to come to Sunset College.” Ming Xiu suddenly laughed.

Life without an opponent and goal was too boring for him. Now with someone like Feng Qiuyan and Zhou Wen appearing, he felt as though he had come alive.

Tian Zhenzhen had arranged for the Bright Prospects students to gather at the canteen. She would occasionally glance at the canteen’s entrance, but she didn’t see that familiar figure.

“Zhenzhen, we’ve already asked around. Sunset College’s top student for this year’s comprehensive test is the president of the student council, Wei Ge, but he’s not the

most famous one. It’s a freshman named Zhou Wen. He got into the top ten at the Mortal stage. Not long ago, he defeated John from Covenant College and helped the army defeat the Sky Spiders…” A Bright Prospects College student recounted Zhou Wen’s antics in Sunset College with great familiarity.

“Although Zhou Wen is very strong and much stronger than us, he’s definitely not Ming Xiu’s match,” Tian Zhenzhen said confidently.

“Of course. No matter how strong Zhou Wen is, he’s only a slightly stronger student. How can he be comparable to Ming Xiu? He’s our Bright Prospects’ god,” another Bright Prospects student said matter-of-factly.

The other students also agreed. Ming Xiu was too dominant in Bright Prospects College. He was a god in the hearts of all the students. Even the tutors believed that Ming Xiu could have a chance at being in the top ten of the entire League.

“Since Zhou Wen is so famous, let Ming Xiu challenge him first so that he can become famous in one battle. Let those arrogant fellows from Sunset College know what true geniuses are.” Tian Zhen was brimming with confidence. She seemed to be able to foresee how all the students of Sunset College would be stunned when Ming Xiu defeated Zhou Wen.

While they were chatting, Ming Xiu walked over.

“Ming Xiu, why are you so late?” Tian Zhenzhen hurriedly invited Ming Xiu to sit beside her.

“Something cropped up,” Ming Xiu said.

“Ming Xiu, we’ve already asked around. Now, Sunset College…” Before Tian Zhenzhen could finish her sentence, Ming Xiu interrupted her.

“Zhenzhen, before coming, my mom must have secretly given you quite a bit of money, right?” Ming Xiu looked at Tian Zhenzhen and asked.

“Auntie prepared it for you, just in case. It was in the event that you urgently required money,” Tian Zhen said, embarrassed.

“Give me 20,000,” said Ming Xiu.“What do you want the money for?” Tian Zhenzhen asked as she transferred the money, puzzled.

“I want to hire Zhou Wen to be my personal coach. I would like him to give me some pointers and cultivation guidance,” Ming Xiu said excitedly.

Having had a long chat with Feng Qiuyan, he increasingly found Zhou Wen unfathomable. It was truly worth it to be able to hire someone like Zhou Wen to teach him for twenty thousand.

Ming Xiu was a top genius who could learn anything quickly, but this also made him lose direction. He didn’t know what he should learn. It felt like he could learn anything and everything, but he had the nagging feeling that he wasn’t good at anything. This was a horrible feeling

Before today’s battle, Ming Xiu still felt that it was just loneliness derived from invincibility, but after his battle with Feng Qiuyan, he realized that he had yet to find his own path.

After Feng Qiuyan’s repeated recommendations, Ming Xiu decided to hire Zhou Wen to come up with a cultivation plan for him and to guide him out of his confusion. Feng Qiuyan had informed him that each class cost 20,000.

Tian Zhenzhen was dumbfounded when she heard that. She stared at Ming Xiu in a daze. Her mouth was agape for a long time. She didn’t even realize that she had dropped the food she was eating.

They had just been discussing how Ming Xiu could defeat Zhou Wen and how he could become famous in Sunset College, but in the blink of an eye, the god in their eyes actually wanted to hire Zhou Wen as a coach. He even wanted him to guide him in his cultivation. Silence fell at the table with only Ming Xiu speaking in excitement.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 314 - Talent at Playing Cards

Chapter 314 Talent at Playing Cards

“Ming Xiu, do you have a fever?” Tian Zhenzhen touched Ming Xiu’s head and asked curiously.

Ming Xiu pushed Tian Zhenzhen’s hand away. “Of course not.”

“Then why do you want to hire Zhou Wen to be your coach? Shouldn’t you defeat him, thus becoming famous in Sunset College?” Tian Zhenzhen said.

“I’ve already fought with a student he trained,” said Ming Xiu.

“Shouldn’t your opponent be him? Why would you be fighting with his student? What happened in the end?” Tian Zhenzhen asked three questions in a row.

“It was a draw. I couldn’t beat him even when I used all my strength. That person’s saber technique is too powerful,” said Ming Xiu excitedly.

Tian Zhenzhen and the students from Bright Prospects College were alarmed. Ming Xiu was such a strong person, yet, he only managed a draw with Zhou Wen’s student. It was hard to believe how powerful Zhou Wen was.

Ming Xiu continued, “That student only attended three of Zhou Wen’s private classes. According to him, he wouldn’t have been strong enough to take ten strikes from me about three months ago.”

“What?” Tian Zhenzhen and the rest felt that their brains were lacking.

The person could fight Ming Xiu to a draw with just three private classes. To them, this sounded like a fairytale.

“Ming Xiu, is what you said true?” Tian Zhen was in disbelief.

“It can’t be wrong. A person like Feng Qiuyan wouldn’t lie. Furthermore, Zhou Wen is only ranked last amongst his tutor’s four students. He’s the weakest.”

“Is this the famous Sunset College? What kind of monsters are they!?” Tian Zhenzhen and company were dumbfounded.

To them, the invincible Ming Xiu didn’t seem that outstanding in Sunset College.

However, Ming Xiu was very excited. “I thought that it would be a boring trip, but I didn’t expect it to be the right choice. Sunset College lives up to its name. There are so many powerful students here. This feeling is great.”

In Wang Mingyuan’s laboratory, only Zhou Wen and Zhong Ziya were around. The two of them were playing cards facing each other, and there were several paper slips pasted on Zhou Wen’s face.

Zhou Wen had originally come to ask Wang Mingyuan some cultivation questions, but Wang Mingyuan had yet to return from Dragon’s Well. Zhong Ziya had suggested playing cards since they had nothing to do.

Zhou Wen refused at first since gaming was better than playing cards.

However, Zhong Ziya said that if Zhou Wen could defeat him at cards, he would give Zhou Wen an Epic movement technique crystal.

Although Zhou Wen wasn’t good at playing cards, he believed that card games between two people depended on 30% skill, 70% luck. Even if his skills weren’t good, he could win as long as his luck was good.

However, he never expected that Zhong Ziya would want to play Reverse with him. As soon as he made one mistake, he lost. The three pieces of paper on Zhou Wen’s face were punishment for him throwing out the wrong card.

Zhou Wen had seen his three seniors play Reverse before, so he had an idea how to play it. However, watching was one thing, but playing it was a whole different matter. It was very easy to throw the wrong cards in this game.

Zhong Ziya threw out cards in the normal order while Zhou Wen threw out cards in the reverse order. For example, if Zhou Wen threw a 7, Zhong Ziya needed to throw an 8 or higher. However, Zhou Wen couldn’t throw a 9. Instead, he had to throw a card smaller than 8 to be lower than Zhong Ziya’s 8.

Such a form of playing was very special. It was Zhou Wen’s first time playing it, and he had to play the cards in reverse. Zhong Ziya spoke to him while playing, making Zhou Wen throw out cards in the normal manner. That was how he lost all three matches. It had nothing to do with his bad cards.

As Zhong Ziya threw his cards, he smiled and said, “Junior, Reverse isn’t that easy to play. When Jiang Yan taught me and Hui Haifeng, both of us had lots of paper slips on our faces. Just count it as tuition money.”

“I already know what to do. Again,” Zhou Wen said.

“You can play however many rounds you want,” Zhong Ziya said with a grin.

It was not easy to change habitual thinking. Having lived for more than ten years and playing cards in the normal manner, to have someone play it in reverse order made it easy for one to throw the wrong cards.

When he started, Zhong Ziya had also spent quite a bit of time adapting to this kind of reverse thinking process. It definitely wouldn’t be easy for Zhou Wen to get used to it immediately.

Furthermore, Zhong Ziya deliberately spoke to Zhou Wen, diverting his attention in the conversation. That made it easier for Zhou Wen to make mistakes.

Back when Zhong Ziya started playing Reverse, he didn’t dare speak to Jiang Yan. He made mistakes the moment he was distracted.

Only after a long period of time was he able to play cards and chat with Jiang Yan and the company. Hui Haifeng’s situation was similar to his. The only person who could play Reverse and chat with them without any mistakes was Wang Mingyuan.

Zhong Ziya didn’t know if Wang Mingyuan had played Reverse before or if there was another reason. In short, he had never seen Wang Mingyuan make a mistake while playing Reverse.

Zhong Ziya had never seen Jiang Yan, who had suggested Reverse, make a mistake either. However, since Jiang Yan

was the one who suggested it, he reckoned that she must have been experienced, so it wasn’t strange.

Zhong Ziya originally thought that Zhou Wen would definitely need some time to get used to it, or that he wouldn’t speak to him. He would focus on playing cards and slowly think to avoid mistakes.

However, Zhou Wen didn’t do that. He continued chatting as he played. The speed at which he threw the cards was also normal—he didn’t deliberately slow down to think.From the fourth round, Zhou Wen stopped making any mistakes. Although he still lost in the end, it was because his cards weren’t good as well as the lack of skill required in comparing thrown cards.

How did he get used to it so quickly? Zhong Ziya found it unbelievable and continued playing a few more rounds with Zhou Wen. He soon realized that Zhou Wen had really gotten accustomed. No matter how much he talked to Zhou Wen or how distracting his topics were, he couldn’t make Zhou Wen commit mistakes.

This guy’s talent in this aspect might be better than me and Hui Haifeng. Zhong Ziya was slightly surprised.

Seeing how Zhou Wen was no longer making mistakes and how his technique was improving, Zhong Ziya was really afraid that he might fail at this simple task. Hence, he said with a laugh to get himself out of it, “I’m not playing anymore. How boring.”

“Let’s play another two rounds. I won’t take your crystal if you lose.” Zhou Wen had just gotten the hang of it and found it interesting, so he naturally wouldn’t let Zhong Ziya off.

Zhong Ziya had no choice but to agree to two more rounds.

By the time Wang Mingyuan came out of Dragon’s Well, Zhong Ziya and Zhou Wen had a lot of paper slips on their faces. This surprised Wang Mingyuan slightly.

From what he knew, it was probably Zhou Wen’s first time playing Reverse. Yet, he was able to play it well with Zhong Ziya-it seemed like he was quite talented in this area.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 315 - I Like Your Teaching Method

Chapter 315 I Like Your Teaching Method

“Drop, my baby tiger.” Zhou Wen had killed the tigers in Binyang Cave countless times in-game, but he was once again disappointed. There was still no Companion Egg.

Is it really that hard to get pets that add Luck? Zhou Wen was somewhat speechless. He remembered that Wang Lu had gotten a Lucky Baby Tiger the first time she came. Why was it so difficult for him?

He headed to Poison Wyrm Pool once again. Thankfully, it gave him a pleasant surprise as a Primordial Energy Skill Crystal dropped.

After Zhou Wen absorbed it, the system notified him that he had learned Poison Dragon Finger 5. Now, Zhou Wen had four types of Poison Dragon Finger-he was only lacking Poison Dragon Finger 3.

Actually, a few Poison Dragon Finger Crystals had dropped previously, but they were repeated. There were more than 1s, 4s, and 2s. 3s and 5s seemed especially rare, but he had finally managed to have a 5 drop today. Yet, there was still no sign of a 3.

He didn’t have Dragon Transformation Art drop either. The drop rate was similarly low. Out of options, Zhou Wen could only grind slowly. After all, he had plenty of opportunities. It just took time.

“Ding dong!” Just as Zhou Wen was about to go to the underground sea to commit suicide, the doorbell suddenly rang. He opened the door and saw Ming Xiu.

“Why are you here? What’s the matter?” Zhou Wen looked at Ming Xiu, puzzled. This fellow was rather independent. Even if something happened, he probably wouldn’t look for his student mentor.

“Zhou Wen, I want you to be my personal coach. One private lesson costs 20,000, right? Give me your account details and I’ll transfer it to you now,” Ming Xiu said bluntly.

He had previously thrown away Zhou Wen’s phone number and had no choice but to look for him himself. After asking around for a while, he finally found out where Zhou Wen lived.

“Don’t listen to Feng Qiuyan’s nonsense. I’m just a student like you. How can I be qualified to be your personal coach?” Zhou Wen immediately guessed what Feng Qiuyan had said when he heard the two keywords.

“Because I’m a Bright Prospects student?” Mingxiu misunderstood and thought that Zhou Wen didn’t want to be his personal coach because he wasn’t a student at Sunset College.

“No, that’s not it. I really don’t have the qualifications to teach you.” Zhou Wen shook his head and explained.

Ming Xiu lowered his head and pondered for a moment. Just as Zhou Wen imagined that he was about to come to his senses, Ming Xiu looked up and said to Zhou Wen, “I remember you should be my student mentor, right? It’s also your responsibility to tutor me, right?”

“This…” Zhou Wen was momentarily at a loss for words.

“What’s your phone number? Add me as a friend. It’ll be easier to contact you in the future,” Ming Xiu asked Zhou Wen as he took out his phone.

“Let me make it clear. I really don’t have anything to teach you. There’s no need for the money. Let’s study together.” Zhou Wen helplessly took out his phone and added Ming Xiu.

“You don’t have to be so humble. I heard about what you’ve done from Feng Qiuyan. Your way of teaching is really unique and leaves a deep impression. I hope you can use that method to teach me.” After Ming Xiu added Zhou Wen as a friend, he immediately transferred 20,000 to him.

What did Feng Qiuyan say to him? Zhou Wen’s forehead was covered in a cold sweat. Who knew what kind of inane teaching method he had? It was not something Zhou Wen knew anyway.

“You can do whatever you like.? I don’t have time today. Tomorrow is the day Ms. Wang will assign homework missions. Let’s complete the mission together when it’s out.” Zhou Wen didn’t explain, nor did he bother to explain.

“Teaching through actual practice. You’re just like Feng Qiuyan said.” Ming Xiu nodded in satisfaction and ignored Zhou Wen’s reaction before turning to leave.

Zhou Wen gaped at Ming Xiu’s departing figure. After a long while, he muttered to himself, “Is he nuts?”

When he went back in, he saw an unread message on the phone. It was a message from An Sheng. They had made a new discovery in the ruins and found the inner sanctum’s

entrance. However, the inner sanctum’s situation was terrible. A few groups of people had died with unknown causes. Not a single person had walked out alive to date.

An Sheng and the rest were thinking of various ways to study the secrets of the inner sanctum, hoping to find Old Mister Ouyang as soon as possible. He would inform Zhou Wen if there was any news.

Zhou Wen sent a text to An Sheng, but he didn’t receive any reply. He didn’t know if An Sheng had entered an area without a signal or if he was too busy to reply.

I have to quickly think of a way to pass the underground sea and reach the temple. It’s better using the blood-colored avatar to explore the inner sanctum than letting those warriors sacrifice themselves for nothing. Zhou Wen was afraid that the former principal had already died in the inner sanctum. If that happened, whatever he did now would be meaningless.

The next morning, Zhou Wen received a message from the class group. It was the homework mission assigned by Wang Fei.

It’s just killing a Golden Warrior? Zhou Wen heaved a sigh of relief when he saw how simple the homework mission was.

He needed plenty of time to grind. He didn’t have the time or effort to spend time doing research on other matters. It was best if he could complete his homework mission easily.

“Coach, when are you going to do the homework missions?” Zhou Wen was just about to wash when he received a message from Ming Xiu.

The homework mission needed to be completed in ten days. Zhou Wen originally planned on going in a few days. But it would only be more troublesome if Ming Xiu messaged him daily.

Therefore, Zhou Wen thought about it and decided to do his homework mission today to prevent Ming Xiu from looking for him again.

They arranged to meet at the Myriad Buddha Cave, and when he arrived, he realized that Ming Xiu was already waiting for him there.

“Coach, what do you plan on teaching me today?” Ming Xiu asked.

“I’ve told you that I have nothing I can teach you. Today, we are just going to do the homework missions-kill a Golden Warrior,” Zhou Wen said as he walked.Kill a Golden Warrior? Mingxiu revealed a pensive expression as if he was thinking about something

Golden Warriors had very high defense and their drop rates were low. Therefore, few people came here. As for the other students who received the mission to kill a Golden Warrior, they were most likely still studying the materials pertaining to the Golden Warrior and would come in a day or two.

Therefore, when Zhou Wen and Ming Xiu entered the Myriad Buddha Cave, there was no one else there.

“Are you confident in killing the Golden Warrior?” Zhou Wen turned to ask Ming Xiu.

“Yes, I’ve already read up on the Golden Warrior. It’s not difficult for me,” answered Ming Xiu.

“Then you go first. I’ll do the recording for you,” Zhou Wen said to Ming Xiu.

Recording a video to hand it in to Wang Fei was the way of providing evidence that they had completed the homework mission. It couldn’t be anything else, but when Ming Xiu heard it, there was a whole other meaning.

He wants to create a targeted cultivation plan only after understanding my abilities and traits? Ming Xiu decided to showcase his strength to let Zhou Wen understand his current situation.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 316 - Your Destiny

Chapter 316 Your Destiny

Zhou Wen watched Ming Xiu battling the Golden Warrior as his eyes constantly twitched.

Ming Xiu was indeed impressive. In terms of combat skills, he wasn’t inferior to Zhou Wen. Furthermore, he was skilled and proficient in all sorts of techniques.

However, no matter how strong he was, what was the point in thrashing up a Golden Warrior? Ming Xiu had already spent more than an hour battling with it.

He could have easily killed a Golden Warrior, but he would always ruthlessly strike only to land it gently. It was unknown how many times the Golden Warrior had been hit by him. It was terribly beaten, but still short of being beaten to death.

Even Zhou Wen couldn’t stand it any longer. Although it was a dimensional creature, he didn’t have to torture it in such a way. If you want to kill, kill it. Otherwise, just leave. What’s the point of torturing it for more than an hour? Are you a sadist?

Zhou Wen didn’t have an imagination like Ming Xiu’s. He believed that Ming Xiu was flaunting his skills and abilities.

Ming Xiu, on the other hand, was very excited. He displayed all the things he knew. However, Ming Xiu was simply too talented. The breadth of what he knew was just extensive.

He showcased them one by one until he broke out into a sweat in exhaustion.

However, Ming Xiu felt that it was necessary. Otherwise, Zhou Wen wouldn’t understand his situation well. How then was he to tailor a cultivation plan for him?

If this were in the past, Zhou Wen would be able to locate Ming Xiu without even looking thanks to Truth Listener. If not for the need to record him, Zhou Wen would have been gaming

Now that Truth Listener was still incubating, Zhou Wen wasn’t able to record Ming Xiu accurately if his eyes remained peeled to the screen. Therefore, he could only patiently do the recording. However, he was already feeling a little impatient waiting. This was basically wasting his time.

He waited until Ming Xiu finally felt that he was done with his demonstration and killed the Golden Warrior. Even Zhou Wen felt aggrieved for it.

“It’s your turn to record,” Zhou Wen said to Ming Xiu, who was wiping his sweat.

“Alright.” Ming Xiu nodded and pointed the phone at Zhou Wen before following behind him.

Zhou Wen was feeling anxious from all the waiting. He rushed forward the moment he saw a Golden Warrior. He took out his Bamboo Blade and diced up the Golden Warrior before glancing at Ming Xiu unhappily. He then turned around and walked out.

I can finally return to gaming, Zhou Wen thought to himself.

Ming Xiu looked thoughtful when he saw Zhou Wen slice up the Golden Warrior.

It’s a clean and straightforward saber technique, but there’s nothing special to it. It’s just that the saber is so sharp. Hold on, it’s definitely not that simple. Feng Qiuyan said that Zhou Wen loves to integrate what he wants to say in his actions. He must have been hinting at something when he looked at me with such a strange look in his eyes. There must be some secret hidden within the saber move. It’s just that I haven’t understood it yet, Ming Xiu thought.

“Let’s end it for the day. I’ll contact you again when the next homework mission is available,” Zhou Wen said to Ming Xiu as he left Myriad Buddha Cave.

Hearing these words, Ming Xiu was even more certain of the secret behind Zhou Wen’s saber move. Otherwise, there was no way Zhou Wen wouldn’t tailor a plan for him and allowed him to leave after he paid the 20,000.

“Coach, don’t worry. I’ll definitely gain some insights before the next homework mission,” Ming Xiu said to Zhou Wen.

Zhou Wen couldn’t be bothered to waste his time with him and let Ming Xiu return by himself. Instead, he went to Wang Mingyuan’s lab to listen to his especially interesting lectures. Wang Mingyuan always talked about random things that appeared useless, as though he was telling a story or a joke. However, when one encountered a particular situation, one would suddenly discover that one of those stories seemed applicable to the situation they were in. It made Zhou Wen feel that he could treat the situation from a third party’s perspective, and not be limited by his biases.

Therefore, Zhou Wen was very willing to listen to Wang Mingyuan’s random lectures. However, Wang Mingyuan

didn’t have much time. Occasionally, he would give the four of them lessons, but most of the time, he would assign them homework missions.

Zhou Wen’s main job was still to pull the chain that had sunk into Dragon’s Well. Although Zhou Wen’s strength had improved significantly, it remained tedious pulling the chain. The coldness coming from the chain was just too overwhelming. It indirectly proved the White Dragon’s terror.

After Ming Xiu returned to his dorm, he kept thinking about what Zhou Wen wanted to tell him, but no matter how he thought about it, he couldn’t figure out what special meaning the ordinary saber strike had. This left Ming Xiu vexed.

After some thought, Ming Xiu began to suspect that Zhou Wen was just fooling him.

The time came for him to meet Feng Qiuyan for sparring, as they previously arranged. Afterward, Ming Xiu shared his doubts with Feng Qiuyan.

Feng Qiuyan frowned in thought when he heard that. Then, he said with a confirmatory tone, “Coach’s saber move definitely has a deeper meaning. It’s only because you’re lost to your biases that you didn’t understand.”

“You understand what that strike means?” Ming Xiu’s eyes lit up as he asked Feng Qiuyan.

“Of course, the more I think about it, the more I feel that Coach’s strike is brilliant and exciting. Only a person like Coach can come up with such a brilliant idea to remind you,” Feng Qiuyan said to Ming Xiu in all seriousness, almost slapping his thigh in amazement at his coach.“Tell me, what exactly does he want to tell me with that strike?” Ming Xiu

clearly didn’t have as good an imagination as Feng Qiuyan, nor could he figure out any deeper meaning to the strike.

Feng Qiuyan looked at Ming Xiu and asked, “What do you think your biggest problem is right now?”

Ming Xiu thought for a moment and said, “I’ve learned too many things that I’m not sure what I’m truly good at. I’m puzzled about my future path.”

“That’s it.” Feng Qiuyan nodded and said, “You are currently in a state of confusion over your future path. You feel that you are capable of everything and can do anything. However, you fail to really master anything. Therefore, Coach used the most ordinary saber strike to tell you that the most ordinary and direct attack that can hit a vital spot is most suitable for you.”

“What is the most ordinary and direct attack?” Ming Xiu was still confused.

“Buddhists talk about the myriad interpretations in the world. A person’s life and energy are limited after all. It’s already a great blessing to be able to study one thing fully during one’s entire life. Coach’s strike is telling you not to be blinded by appearance. Use your own heart to feel what you need and don’t care about what others think. Even if it’s an ordinary path, that’s your choice, a path that will allow you to reach greatness. You just need to keep advancing forward without end.”

The more Feng Qiuyan spoke, the more agitated he became. “Ask yourself. You must have some most ordinary and most direct thought. Let’s use women as an example. No matter how many women stand together, no matter how your heart feels, your eyes will automatically look at the one you think is the prettiest. It’s the same with practicing martial arts. No

matter how much you know, there must be one thing that you will be willing to learn first. That is your true intention. That’s your destiny.”

My true intention… My destiny… The first thing that I’m willing to learn… Ming Xiu felt his mind explode as he thought of what had happened when he was young. It was a past that he could never forget.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 317 - Metal War Wagon

Chapter 317 Metal War Wagon

When Ming Xiu was young, a break-out creature had attacked their residence. His father fought with his sword, risking his life to kill the creature and protected the young Ming Xiu.

In the young Ming Xiu's heart, his father was the greatest person in the world-his sword technique was also the strongest one in the world. He yearned to learn his father's sword technique when he grew up and become someone like his father.

However, when he finally grew up, many people told him that his father's sword technique was too ordinary, and there was no value in learning it. There was no chance for him to reach the pinnacle mastering it and it wasn't on par with a genius like him. They advised him to learn more powerful sword techniques.

Ming Xiu refused to believe the naysayers, so he continued learning his father's sword technique. However, the truth was just as those people had said. His father's sword technique was just something he considered very strong when he was young, but in reality, it was far inferior to the sword techniques that everyone knew. Ming Xiu was able to master his father's sword technique easily, and he found that it really wasn't that strong.

Although Ming Xiu knew that his father's sword technique wasn't strong, he had always had a soft spot for it. Even though it was far inferior to those of the world's best sword

techniques, Ming Xiu still couldn’t forget it. However, he subconsciously didn’t use it. Deep in his heart, there was an indescribable emotion regarding this matter.

Today, Feng Qiuyan’s words had awakened the deepest feelings Ming Xiu had. He felt as though his brain had been struck by lightning.

That’s right, why did I give up? So what if my father’s sword technique is ordinary? In my heart, that is the strongest sword technique in the world. If it’s not strong enough, and the world doesn’t agree with that, I’ll try my best until it becomes the most powerful sword technique in the world, so that everyone will acknowledge it as the strongest sword technique… Ming Xiu’s heart burned with passion.

“Feng Qiuyan, you’re awesome. Thank you, I now understand.” Ming Xiu hugged Feng Qiuyan tightly, almost as though he wanted to carry him to the heavens.

Feng Qiuyan said calmly, “Coach is the one that’s amazing. I’m only telling you what Coach wants you to understand in words. I don’t know if that’s right or not. In fact, you should figure it out yourself.”

“That’s right. Coach is really amazing. He saw through my problems at a glance. He used such a method to remind me, but I actually failed to comprehend it. I’m really silly. I used to believe that I was a genius, but now I know that I’m a pig when compared to Coach.” Having resolved the knot in his heart and feeling happy, Ming Xiu found beauty in everything and realized that Zhou Wen was just awesome.

If Zhou Wen were to hear their conversation, he might be able to stuff a duck egg into his agape mouth. Then, he would give Feng Qiuyan a thumbs up and say, “You’re the one who’s freaking awesome!”

Zhou Wen naturally didn’t know of these matters. He was in his dorm grinding the Poison Wyrm Pool.

He had already lost count of how many times he grinded at Poison Wyrm Pool. Zhou Wen heard a chime when he slew the Poison Wyrm again. However, he was already numb to the sound. The Poison Wyrm often dropped Primordial Energy Skill Crystals, but they were always the Poison Dragon Fingers 1, 2, and 4.

However, when he looked at the crystal this time, he realized that there was something different about it. In the past, the Poison Wyrm inside the Poison Wyrm Crystal was black in color, but the one that dropped was red. It looked like the Poison Wyrm had been skinned, making it look extremely strange.

Zhou Wen hurriedly controlled the blood-colored avatar to pick it up before absorbing it.

A numbing and itchy force flowed out of the phone and rushed into Zhou Wen’s body. It made him feel extremely itchy under his skin as though he was about to shed it.

Of course, this was just an illusion. Zhou Wen didn’t shed his skin. After the feeling completely vanished, another notification popped up in the game.

‘Absorbed Poison Dragon Crystal. Attained Epic Primordial Energy Skill: Dragon Transformation Art (Rank 7).’

Although he wasn’t the strongest Rank 9, Rank 7 was already rather high. In fact, as long as he could have it drop, Zhou Wen would be rather satisfied. This thing had a very rare drop rate.

Finally, I have the Dragon Transformation Art. Zhou Wen was overjoyed as he took in the information that surged into his brain, digesting all it.

Since there was water everywhere in Pool City, Zhou Wen immediately sensed the difference after trying it in the water.

In the past, he used to feel that water was water. This meant needing to overcome the powerful resistance when moving in it, but now, Zhou Wen felt different when he entered the water. It was as though the water was propelling his body. When he swam underwater, he moved much easier and faster.

The Dragon Transformation Art is really good stuff! Zhou Wen realized that instead of calling it a movement technique, it was a skill that allows one to sense the water's flow characteristics. It allowed Zhou Wen to use the water's strength rather than resist it all the time.

With the Dragon Transformation Art, this was only the beginning. After obtaining it, Zhou Wen's speed in the water became much faster. However, he still needed to practice using the various movement techniques underwater for combat. Thanks to the Dragon Transformation Art, Zhou Wen's movement technique underwent modifications. He was no longer severely restricted in underwater battles.

After familiarizing himself with the benefits brought by the Dragon Transformation Art, Zhou Wen eagerly headed to the underground sea. He wanted to see if he could break through the black dragons' protection and obtain the dragon pearl.

When he reached the underground sea again, Zhou Wen acted according to his usual method. He first lured the nine

dragons over from the air before using the White Shadow of Poison as bait to attract their attention. As for himself, he instantly charged into the sea with Ghost Steps.

The moment his body entered the sea, Zhou Wen felt a little different from before. It was as though the surrounding seawater was flowing merrily around him.

A light stroke was enough to send his body traveling a long distance. He swam faster than a fish as though he was a humanoid wyrm.

In fact, the Dragon Transformation Art was not a movement technique, but a transformation technique before a wyrm transformed into a dragon. And since wyrms were aquatic beasts, they became kings of the water after transforming into a dragon. Thus, the Dragon Transformation Art allowed one to sense the water element and receive its help. It could greatly increase one’s speed underwater. It was not wrong to call it a water-elemental movement technique.

Zhou Wen was delighted as he swam in the direction of the metal war wagon at a speed many times faster than before, and he soon arrived in front of it.

At that moment, a dragon finally rushed over and opened its mouth to swallow Zhou Wen. It sucked a large amount of seawater into its mouth, forming a huge maelstrom.

If this were in the past, Zhou Wen would have been sucked in without any way to put up a fight. However, this time, Zhou Wen followed the vortex’s forces and circled around it before rushing out of the vortex to head for the war wagon below.

The metal war wagon was already close to him. This was the first time Zhou Wen had got so close to the metallic war

wagon, having previously died so many times.

However, he was beneath the metal war wagon, the dragon pearl was on the roof of the war wagon. Zhou Wen had clung close to the war wagon’s bottom to avoid the black dragons’ line of sight. He swam towards the rear of the war wagon, planning on climbing onto the roof from behind.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 318 - Movement Technique Enlightenment

Chapter 318 Movement Technique Enlightenment

The nine dragons had already returned to the sea and were swimming over from different directions, in an attempt to devour the blood-colored avatar below the war wagon.

Unfortunately, their bodies were chained together, restraining their every move. Otherwise, the blood-colored avatar would have long been devoured by them.

With the war wagon shielding him, Zhou Wen shuttled through the seaweed and coral bushes on it, dodging the attacks several times. Finally, he arrived at the back of the war wagon. With a flip, he tore towards the top of the war wagon and somersaulted over.

Zhou Wen remembered that the dragon pearl was placed nearer to the front. Seeing that the dragon pearl was now right in front of him-at a distance less than five meters away-he continued forward. The blood-colored avatar ended up being swallowed by a black dragon that rushed over from his side. The game screen immediately turned black.

Zhou Wen took it in his stride. In fact, he was delighted. He was now able to get close to the dragon pearl, proving that he had a chance of obtaining the dragon pearl. As long as he did everything better, he would definitely be able to obtain it.

However, he soon realized that he had counted his chickens. The black dragons were indeed true dragons. Although they were chained, inconveniencing their movement, they were still much faster than he was. Zhou Wen could somersault several times on the roof, but he ultimately failed to get close to the dragon pearl. He was always just short by a few meters.

Zhou Wen originally wanted to use the Demonic Astral Wheel to suck the dragon pearl over, but after a few attempts, all he managed to suck was seawater, seaweed, and coral. The dragon pearl remained motionless.

After some thought, Zhou Wen had no choice but to think of a way to dodge the black dragons' attacks to obtain the dragon pearl. He was already very close to it, but he lacked the final necessary sprint.

Hence, Zhou Wen deliberately observed the movements of the black dragons underwater, as well as their actions and modus operandi, hoping to find a way to break through them.

However, after staring for quite some time, Zhou Wen suddenly realized that the movement techniques of the black dragons were truly marvelous underwater. There was some kind of truth in it, one that Zhou Wen felt he could reference from.

It was naturally impossible for an ordinary person to mimic the black dragons' movement techniques, but Zhou Wen, who had mastered the Dragon Transformation Art, didn't find it that difficult.

After further study, Zhou Wen realized that the nine black dragons looked identical, but in fact, they were slightly different. Their stances were somewhat different as well.

Every black dragon had its unique water stances. These stances allowed Zhou Wen, who had mastered the Dragon Transformation Art, to mimic them a little and became more agile in the water. He was like a fish in water.

The more Zhou Wen studied it, the more he felt that the black dragons' stance was marvelous. He listed down each of the nine black dragons' stances and felt that he could combine them into a movement technique.

The more he studied the black dragons' stances, the closer he got to the dragon pearl. There had been a few instances when Zhou Wen was only an arm's length away from it.

Zhou Wen had a feeling that he would soon be able to obtain the dragon pearl.

He was already extremely familiar with the stances of the nine dragons. His movement technique had also taken in all the traits of nine dragons' stances. It could be considered perfect.

However, Zhou Wen still felt that something was lacking. It was as though he hadn't really gotten the essence. Once he figured out the final conundrum, he could use the movement technique he gleaned from the nine dragons' stance to obtain the dragon pearl.

What exactly is the difference? Zhou Wen planned on heading to Wang Mingyuan's place to show him the movement technique he had figured out and get advice on what the movement technique lacked.

The number of times Wang Mingyuan descended into Dragon's Well had increased in recent times, and the time he spent inside grew longer. When Zhou Wen arrived at the

laboratory again, he didn’t see him. Jiang Yan was the only one there.

“Zhou Wen, do you remember that you still owe me a favor from when we killed the Mutated Fairy?” Jiang Yan said when he saw Zhou Wen walk over.

“I do. What help do you need?” Zhou Wen asked. He rarely saw Jiang Yan now, so he had no idea what he was doing.

“There’s something I need your help with. If you have the time, accompany me to Cixiang Kiln,” Jiang Yan said.

“Why are we going there? To see the Dragon Gate Twenty Pieces?” Zhou Wen asked in puzzlement.

Nineteen of the Dragon Gate Twenty Pieces were in Ancient Yang Cave. Only one was at Cixiang Kiln. Zhou Wen had previously gone to see it as well, but Jiang Yan was just going to look at the tablet text, there was no need for Zhou Wen to accompany him.

According to what Zhou Wen knew, Cixiang Kiln only had Legendary snake-type dimensional creatures. Although there were many of them, with Jiang Yan’s strength, it would not be difficult for him to avoid them.

Jiang Yan said, “It’s to see the Dragon Gate Twenty Pieces. I’ve already been a few times, but every time I looked at it, I was disturbed by those snakes, losing all my mood and feelings. This time, accompany me and help watch over me. Don’t let those pesky snakes disturb me.”

Zhou Wen looked at Jiang Yan with an odd expression. This fellow actually wanted someone to clear the area while he looked at the tablet text. He even used the favor Zhou Wen

owed him. Zhou Wen really couldn’t understand what he was thinking.

However, since Jiang Yan had suggested it, Zhou Wen naturally wouldn’t reject it and accompanied him to Cixiang Kiln.

Cixiang Kiln had changed thanks to the dimensional zones. It was much bigger, and there were linked caves and stone caverns everywhere. Many snake-type dimensional creatures entered and exited here.

However, they were different from the Overlord Snakes in Snake Cavern. These snakes were poisonous snakes. If one was bitten by them, even Epic experts would be in trouble. Hence, not many people came here.

As there were so many venomous snakes, and they typically hid in stone grooves, it was impossible to kill them all even if one wanted. Jiang Yan ignored the venomous snakes and directly dodged their attacks, heading all the way to Dragon Gate Twenty Piece’s tablet text.

“I’ll be reading the text here. Help watch me. No matter what, don’t let them disturb me,” Jiang Yan said to Zhou Wen before standing there and focusing on the tablet text, completely ignoring everything behind him.

The venomous snakes in Cixiang Kiln were called “Dragon-Patterned Snake.” However, they did not have any dragon patterns on their bodies. They only had some patterns similar to the tablet’s inscriptions. Together with the Dragon Gate Twenty Pieces’ tablet text here, this was how the snakes got their name.

The Dragon-Patterned Snake was very poisonous, and there were quite a number of them. Soon, several Dragon-

Patterned Snakes swam towards them. Moreover, there were also quite a number of Dragon-Patterned Snakes that stuck their heads out of their nooks and crannies, ready to rush out at any moment.

Since I have nothing better to do, I'll just practice my movement techniques. Zhou Wen didn't use his Companion Beasts. He drew his Bamboo Blade and circled around the Dragon-Patterned Snakes with his movement technique while killing them.

He wasn't afraid of the venom of the Dragon-Patterned Snakes, so it didn't matter even if he was bitten. He himself had a decent Poison stat and with Doctor Darkness's Fight Poison With Poison, the Dragon-Patterned Snakes posed no threat to him.

The speed of the Dragon-Patterned Snakes was very fast, especially when they jumped up for the strike. It was like a wyrm leaving its hole, fast and accurate.

However, compared to Zhou Wen's new movement technique, they were naturally much weaker. It wasn't difficult for Zhou Wen to dodge their attacks, but after watching them attack, he suddenly had a strange feeling. The snake's stances seemed a little similar to his new movement technique.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 319 - Double Enlightenment

Chapter 319 Double Enlightenment

From Zhou Wen’s careful observations, he found that the Dragon-Patterned Snakes were only acting on instinct. They were very different from the enlightenment he got from the stances of the dragons. However, for some reason, Zhou Wen found them somewhat similar.

As he killed the Dragon-Patterned Snake that approached Jiang Yan, he wondered why. Zhou Wen thought for a while before his eyes suddenly lit up as though he understood something.

A snake cultivates for a thousand years and transcends the tribulations to become a wyrm and a wyrm cultivates another thousand years to transcend the tribulations to become a dragon. The Dragon Transformation Art is about transforming a snake into a dragon. That means it’s not a dragon, so it naturally still retains a snake-like nature. I had forcefully imitated a dragon’s stance with Dragon Transformation Art, so it didn’t succeed. I always felt that my movement technique was lacking something. So this is what is lacking. Zhou Wen suddenly understood the problem of his movement technique.

Since he knew where the problem was, he now had to resolve it. It was not like before when he had no clue where to start.

To truly remove the influence of a snake and become the stance of a true dragon, I can only touch on the fundamentals. I need to make Dragon Transformation Art

shed its mortality until it reaches the Dragon Transformation realm. As Zhou Wen engaged in battle with the snakes, he constantly used Dragon Transformation Art and kept trying to figure out the truth behind it.

There were two ways to raise a Primordial Energy Skill's rank: One was to use Primordial Energy Skill Crystals to raise it. As long as the Primordial Energy Skill Crystal had a high rank, the absorption could directly raise the rank and reach Rank 9.

Another method was to increase one's familiarity and insight regarding the Primordial Energy Skill to raise the rank to a max of Rank 10. Doing so was very difficult and slow. Apart from a few people like Lance, who was extremely talented and could comprehend the truth behind a Primordial Energy Skill until it reached Rank 10, the average person needed a lot of time to study and gain insight into it. It was much slower than using Primordial Energy Skill Crystals.

Dragon Transformation Art had a very low drop rate. To hope for a Rank 9 Dragon Transformation Art to drop would take ages Zhou Wen didn't have the time to wait. Furthermore, what he needed wasn't only Rank 9, but an extraordinary Rank 10. Only by doing so could he truly match up to a dragon's stance, allowing him to take on the stance of a true dragon.

As Zhou Wen observed the Dragon-Patterned Snake's actions, stance, and habits, he recalled the stances of the nine black dragons and made comparisons. Gradually, he understood the differences between dragons and snakes.

Zhou Wen discovered that there were indeed many similarities between a dragon and a snake's movement. It was no wonder snakes were called baby dragons in the East

District. However, even though they were so similar, when humans saw a dragon, they would never mistake them for snakes. Apart from the differences in size, the most important difference between the two was the sublimity.

Zhou Wen constantly felt the difference between the sublimity of a snake and a dragon. It was a feeling that was impossible to describe using words. It could only be sensed with the heart and soul.

With the insight Zhou Weng gleaned, the way he moved didn’t change much. However, there was a slight difference in his movements. Every move seemed to have a flair to it.

Jiang Yan was focused on reading the tablet text, furrowing his eyebrows from time to time as if he was confused. Other times, he would reveal a look of enlightenment, appearing exhilarated.

However, not long after, Jiang Yan’s eyebrows furrowed deeper and tighter until they finally relaxed.

As Jiang Yan read the tablet text, he muttered to himself, “The Dragon Gate Twenty Pieces is representative of Chinese calligraphy from the Northern Wei dynasty-a classic piece of work from the Wei dynasty. It is forceful with its vertical and horizontal strokes, sharp like the edge of a blade. However, it’s not as squarish as a regular script. The words written on the top half and bottom half are in different scripts, and the sublimity in it is most difficult to grasp. Just changing the thickness of the stroke changes the script. To figure out something from the Dragon Gate Twenty Pieces and turn it into a technique is just too difficult. Just missing out part of the sublimity would make it lack greatly.”

Jiang Yan thought about it but was unable to accurately grasp its sublimity.

Feeling a little impetuous, Jiang Yan knew that he couldn’t continue. Otherwise, with this mentality, he couldn’t reach a pure state of mind even if he had gained some insights.

Jiang Yan retracted his gaze and planned on resting for a while. He could read the tablet text again when his mind completely calmed down. If he couldn’t calm down, there was no harm in coming some other day.

He turned around and sat on a rock beside him. He took out the tea set that he had brought along with him. There was even a small brass charcoal furnace.

When he lit the charcoal furnace and heated the water, he brewed two cups of tea. Just as he was about to get Zhou Wen to drink it with him, his gaze landed on Zhou Wen and he couldn’t move his eyes away. He even forgot to take back his hand that was pouring tea. The tea in the teapot had overflowed the teacup, but Jiang Yan didn’t notice anything and just watched Zhou Wen’s fight with the Dragon-Patterned Snakes.

Instead of saying that Zhou Wen was fighting the Dragon-Patterned Snakes, it was more like a solo dance. His movement technique was vigorous and extraordinary with an indescribable sublimity to it.

Jiang Yan watched as he suddenly threw down the teapot in his hand, and ran to a stone wall. He reached out his finger and drew it across the stone wall.

His finger was like a blade as it tore through the wall. He wrote one word after another on it; the words looked like works from the Wei dynasty, but they were different.

Every stroke was like a knife’s slice, but they didn’t appear exceedingly sharp. They were straight and carefree.

“A thousand-year-long path for snakes, ten thousand years for a wyrm. The moment they show themselves, they would be flying dragons in the sky.” When Jiang Yan finished writing the last word, Zhou Wen happened to let out a long cry as his body flew through the air, rising to the heavens like a dragon. His entire body seemed to have undergone a certain transformation.

The surrounding Dragon-Patterned Snakes retreated as though they were trembling. For a moment, no snake dared to attack Zhou Wenagain.

Although he didn’t take a look at the in-game information, Zhou Wen was certain that his Dragon Transformation Art had already broken through and reached Rank 10. That feeling was indescribable.

“Junior, thanks to you, I managed to grasp something today,” Jiang Yan said with a smile.

Zhou Wen turned his head and saw the words Jiang Yan had carved on the wall. Although he wasn’t a connoisseur of calligraphy, he found them exuding a sense of familiarity. On careful thought, he understood that the words contained the insights of the movement technique he had just figured out.

“These words…” Zhou Wen asked with an odd expression as he looked at the words.

“This was what I wrote from observing your movement technique and the words on the Dragon Gate Twenty Pieces. It’s rather interesting. In the future, I’ll use it as my foundation and match it with the Dragon Gate Twenty Pieces to come up with a technique. Half the credit is yours. Why don’t you give it a name?” said Jiang Yan.

“I’m not good with names. It’s best you name it.” Zhou Wen shook his head.

“There’s the word ‘dragon’ in Dragon Gate Twenty Pieces. Your movement technique has the bearing of a dragon, so it’s naturally necessary to have a dragon character. Together with our names, let’s call it ‘Dragon Wenyan.” As Jiang Yan spoke, he reached out and wiped away the characters carved on the stone wall.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 320 - Door Opening

Chapter 320 Door Opening

“What are you doing? Why are you wiping away perfectly fine words?” Zhou Wen thought it a pity and hurriedly grabbed Jiang Yan’s hand.

“Although these are the best words I have written so far, their existence will restrict my past. I only seek the future and don’t want to look back. Therefore, I won’t keep them,” said Jiang Yan.

“It’s best not to wipe them away. I’d still want to take a look, so keep it for now.” Zhou Wen felt that the concepts in the words were a little too similar to his insights, but also somewhat different. Therefore, he wanted to take the time to compare the differences.

“If you want it, I’ll let it stay for now. However, after you’re done, you should wipe it away. It’s not a good thing to leave words on the same wall as the text the ancients left behind.” Jiang Yan paused before saying, “When the Dragon Wenyan is perfected, I’ll send you a copy. You can take a good look when the time comes.”

“Alright.” Zhou Wen looked at the words on the stone wall. The first two lines had been wiped away by Jiang Yan, leaving “the moment they show themselves, they would be flying dragons in the sky.”

After leaving Old Dragon Cave, Zhou Wen returned to his dorm and eagerly switched on his phone before entering the Zhuolu instance dungeon.

This time, he was in no mood to pay attention to the dimensional creatures as he flew forward on White Shadow of Poison towards the underground sea. He wanted to see if he could obtain the dragon pearl with his new movement technique.

In the blood-colored avatar's information column, not only did Zhou Wen's Dragon Transformation Art advance to Rank 10, but its name had changed to Nine Dragons Art. Zhou Wen had clearly obtained the phone system's approval after fusing the nine dragons' stance and the Dragon Transformation Art into one.

I should be able to obtain the dragon pearl with a Rank 10 Nine Dragons Art, right? After much difficulty, Zhou Wen finally arrived at the underground sea.

Shortly after, the waves surged as black dragons tore out of the surface and extended their dragon heads to devour the White Shadow of Poison and Zhou Wen.

Zhou Wen leaped up and dived into the sea, instantly swimming hundreds of feet. It didn't feel like he was swimming, but like seawater was propelling him forward. His speed was much faster than before.

He somersaulted onto the war wagon in one fell swoop and, before the black dragons could stop him in a timely manner, Zhou Wen had already arrived at the roof of the strange war wagon. He didn't need to hide underneath it like before to avoid the attacks of the nine dragons.

The nine black dragons finally stormed over as they roared and attempted to devour Zhou Wen. However, Zhou Wen had an extremely special feeling today. It was as though he was connected to the nine dragons' mind. He could predict

their every move in advance, allowing him to easily dodge them.

Zhou Wen knew that this wasn’t really telepathy with the dragons. It was only because he had figured out the nine dragons’ stance and knew how they moved like the back of his hand.

As he moved around, the seawater did not resist Zhou Wen, it even aided him. After dodging a series of attacks from the nine black dragons, he finally rushed in front of the dragon pearl and grabbed it with one hand.

Zhou Wen was excited. He finally had the dragon pearl in his hand. It felt very heavy, but before he could think further, the nine black dragons’ second round of attacks came. He yanked it with a jerk, hoping to take the dragon pearl away.

It was true that the dragon pearl had been pulled up by the blood-colored avatar, but when it was about a meter away, it couldn’t be pulled any further. To Zhou Wen’s surprise, there was a thin thread beneath the dragon pearl. It was like a strand of hair that was translucent. There was no way to notice it underwater without careful inspection.

Zhou Wen’s expression changed slightly as he suddenly realized that something was amiss. He pulled a few more times, but the thread was extremely resilient. He was unable to break it with the blood-colored avatar’s strength.

Crack!

At that moment, he suddenly heard a strange sound coming from the war wagon. It was as if a sealed gear had started to spin again. Due to the lack of lubricant, the sound of metal grinding could be heard.

What was even more bizarre was that the nine black dragons, who had been desperately attacking Zhou Wen, didn’t lunge forward again. They landed on the seabed, trembling while they prostrated onto the ground.

Seeing that he couldn’t take the dragon pearl away, Zhou Wen hurriedly released his hand and retreated. He left the war wagon, but he didn’t go too far.

Since the blood-colored avatar could respawn, Zhou Wen wasn’t afraid of death. He wanted to see what changes the war wagon would undergo.

As the gears in the war wagon began to move faster and faster, a metallic wall began to fall from one side, revealing a door.

Zhou Wen looked into the war wagon and saw that it was pitch black inside. It was like a world without light. Any ray of light that reached inside seemed to be severed. Nothing could penetrate it, not even his eyes.

Boom! Boom!

Zhou Wen was surveying the situation in the war wagon when he heard a continuous series of metal rupturing. He saw the black metal chains around the black dragons crack one by one, giving them freedom once more.

The nine black dragons were instantly overjoyed. They soared into the sky excitedly and instantly broke through the sea. It was unbelievably fast.

Only then did Zhou Wen realize that the reason he was able to survive under the attack of the nine black dragons wasn’t that he was strong, but because the nine black dragons had

most of their strength suppressed by the black chain. The strength they used to fight him was completely lacking.

At this moment, the nine black dragons escaped. The power they exuded was not anything that their past could use as a reference.In the next second, the nine black dragons charged back into the sea and roared at Zhou Wen, widening their mouths in a clear attempt to devour him.

How heartless. I was the one who liberated you, but you are now returning kindness with ingratitude. What a beast, Zhou Wen cursed under his breath.

However, he also knew that his current strength was impossible for him to fend off the nine true dragons who had escaped. Gritting his teeth, he controlled the blood-colored avatar to rush to the door that opened up half the war wagon’s holdings. Before the nine dragons devoured him, he rushed into the darkness.

Although the war wagon’s carriage was huge, it was still a carriage. Space was very limited, but when Zhou Wen rushed inside, he felt as though it was an empty darkness that stretched out endlessly.

In that darkness, there was a white cocoon emitting a strange light.

Another cocoon! Zhou Wen was slightly taken aback, but the next second, he was overjoyed. There was actually a cocoon here, so there was a chance for him to break through in his final stat.

Without any hesitation, he summoned his Overlord Spear and, combining it with the augmentation of Ever-Victorious, he thrust his spear at the white cocoon in the void.

However, this thrust turned Zhou Wen’s expression nasty.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 321 - Inner Sanctum

Chapter 321 Inner Sanctum

The white cocoon didn’t seem far, but when he thrust out the spear, it felt like there was an infinite distance between them. The tip of the spear couldn’t touch it.

Activating Ghost Steps, he instantly traversed a hundred meters. However, the distance between the tip of the spear and the white cocoon remained as far away as before.

What’s going on? Zhou Wen was secretly alarmed, but the black dragons outside had already rushed in. Immediately, they sucked at the blood-colored avatar with a terrifying black hole-like suction force. The blood-colored avatar was sucked into a dragon’s stomach without putting up any resistance.

The game screen went black, mirroring Zhou Wen’s expression. The cocoon was right in front of him, but for some reason, he couldn’t touch it.

He dripped his blood and respawned again. When he reached the underground sea again, the black dragons and the war wagon had returned to their original states—the former chained, the latter closed.

However, Zhou Wen knew that the dragon pearl was not the black dragons’ egg but a mechanism to open the war wagon.

In a new attempt, the blood-colored avatar rushed into the carriage again, but it still failed to touch the white cocoon. It

was so near yet so far.

Zhou Wen used all sorts of abilities and Companion Beasts, but he still failed to touch the white cocoon.

Despite being stumped for a solution to penetrate the white cocoon and obtain the blood of the creature within, at least Zhou Wen was now able to cross the underground sea. He planned on heading to the temple to take a look.

The white cocoon in the war wagon definitely couldn’t be reached with brute force, so Zhou Wen didn’t waste any more blood on futile attempts. He had to figure out what kind of power the white cocoon possessed to crack it.

The nine black dragons were unable to catch up to Zhou Wen when chained. After Zhou Wen charged past the underground sea, he passed the mountain and arrived at the location of the Longevity Tree. He hoped to know its situation in-game.

But when he arrived at the stone temple, he couldn’t find the Longevity Tree. The back of the temple was empty except for a stone drum.

The Longevity Tree isn’t here? What’s going on? Zhou Wen was alarmed.

If the game was different from reality, Zhou Wen would have to be even more careful when he entered dimensional zones in the future. Even if he had a strategy to clear the game, it didn’t mean that he could randomly enter; otherwise, something bad could easily happen.

However, this was the first time Zhou Wen had encountered something in-game that was different from reality.

Zhou Wen thought of a possibility. If the Longevity Tree wasn’t something that originally existed in the dimensional zone, then its nonexistence in the game became self-explanatory.

Zhou Wen was momentarily unable to determine the reason. It was just a guess.

He had originally wanted to experiment with a Longevity Fruit in-game, but now, he had to give up on this idea.

After circling the stone temple and passing through the cave at the bottom of the fault, Zhou Wen followed the map An Sheng had given him and arrived at the other end of the temple. It wasn’t much different from what Zhou Wen had seen previously.

There were two stone statues in front of the temple’s entrance. They were identical to the stone statues at the entrance to the ruins. Zhou Wen turned the stone statue and opened the temple door.

With the detailed method An Sheng and company used to enter the temple, the blood-colored avatar quickly arrived at the innermost sanctum. There were no dimensional creatures inside, only some special trap mechanisms. As long as one didn’t trigger any traps, there wouldn’t be any danger.

What was truly terrifying was the inner sanctum that An Sheng and company had just discovered. When Zhou Wen arrived in front of the altar, he saw the spot where the former principal had left a marking. Of course, there wasn’t any marking on the altar in-game. However, the altar was key to opening the inner sanctum’s entrance.

Zhou Wen looked around and found seven stone furnaces in different spots in the temple. He placed the stone furnace in front of the desk in a certain position before hearing a rumble. The innermost wall of the temple began moving as it slowly rose, revealing the space behind it.

As the situation in the inner sanctum hadn’t been explored to date, An Sheng had provided him with very little information. All Zhou Wen knew was that there was a stone statue in the inner sanctum. No one who entered the inner sanctum and passed the stone statue had left alive. All of them had vanished.

When the stone wall completely rose up, it revealed the stone tunnel behind it. It was squarish with a depth of about thirty to forty meters before reaching the end. Then, it split into two forks. And in this T-junction, there was indeed a stone statue.

The stone statue was ancient and spartan. It was only about the height of a person, and it resembled a cloaked person standing there. However, the statue’s face was carved somewhat strangely. It only had a mouth, no eyes, nose, or eyebrows. Its mouth was slightly open, as if it wanted to speak, but it didn’t say anything

The stone statue gave off a stifling feeling. It made one have the urge to shut its mouth or open its mouth to finish what it had to say.

Zhou Wen walked in front of the stone statue and carefully observed it. The more he looked at it, the more uncomfortable he felt. He decided not to study it and instead looked at the two forks.

It was pitch-black inside the squarish tunnel. It led to the unknown. The An family had tried many times, but it was

the same whether they chose left or right. No one who entered came out alive.

Zhou Wen allowed Doctor Darkness to possess him as he used Light of Penetration to look at the left fork. After the Light of Penetration shone into the left tunnel, it was as though it had vanished. He couldn’t see what was inside at all.

2

How odd. Could it be that the tunnel is under the influence of spatial forces? That prevents Light of Penetration from shining in? Zhou Wen thought for a moment and summoned a few Companion Beasts to enter the left fork.

The moment a Companion Beast stepped into the left fork, it immediately lost its connection with Zhou Wen. It was unknown if it was dead or what had happened, but it was the same as the news An Sheng had sent.

Since no one from the An family could enter, there was naturally no news. Up until now, no one knew what was going on inside the tunnel.

Zhou Wen summoned Ghost Bride, but she shared the same outcome. He lost contact with her the moment she entered. It was unknown if she was dead or alive.

Even ghosts don’t work? Zhou Wen frowned slightly. There was only one method left—to let the blood-colored avatar enter to take a look. Even if he died, he could still get some information out.

Taking a deep breath, Zhou Wen controlled the blood-colored avatar to walk towards the left tunnel. He definitely wouldn’t have done so in the real world.

Therefore, Zhou Wen really admired the soldiers. Even though they knew that there was almost no chance of survival, they still pressed forward if they were given the order.

If he could understand the secrets in the tunnel and reduce the sacrifices of those soldiers, it would be a great help.

The moment the blood-colored avatar stepped into the left tunnel, Zhou Wen’s body involuntarily shivered as he felt an ominous feeling

The originally dark tunnel lit up as soon as the blood-colored avatar stepped in.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 322 - Stone Statue

Chapter 322 Stone Statue

The originally squarish tunnel suddenly changed. At this moment, the tunnel became oval-shaped, and the tunnel curved. There were also many glowing horn crystals on the stone wall that resembled rows of sharp teeth.

When he turned his head, he realized that the T-junction and the stone statue were nowhere to be seen. Behind him was the same oval-shaped tunnel embedded with many sharp crystals with no end in sight.

Ghost Bride floated over from somewhere unknown to Zhou Wen, but the other Companion Beasts had vanished.

Just as Zhou Wen was feeling puzzled, he suddenly felt the tunnel shake violently. Instead of calling it shaking, the entire tunnel was shrinking. The inner walls of the tunnel even spun. The sharp crystals became a terrifying weapon akin to a grinder due to the spinning

As the tunnel constricted, the space that the blood-colored avatar could stand on decreased. Zhou Wen hurriedly summoned the Overlord Spear, hoping to tear open a huge hole into the shrinking tunnel.

However, when the Overlord Spear thrust out, it sunk all the way into the handle. It failed to tear open the stone wall to another space. It was unknown how thick the stone wall was.

The spinning stone wall made Zhou Wen lose his grip of the Overlord Spear, and it was instantly swept away.

Thrown into the air, Zhou Wen summoned the banana fan. He kept fanning the Grand Yin Wind at the tunnel, but it wasn’t of much use. The strong winds blew through the tunnel for an unknown distance without touching anything

The tunnel eventually tightened so much that it closed completely into itself. The blood-colored avatar was also strangulated and the game screen went black.

Zhou Wen’s expression turned nasty. If the former principal and company had entered the tunnel and encountered the same situation, the chance of them surviving was nearly zero.

Ghost Bride wasn’t ground to death by that strange tunnel because she’s a ghost, but she loses contact with me after entering. It’s useless to survive inside. Zhou Wen thought for a moment and opened the Zhuolu instance dungeon again. He wanted to see what happened if he took the right fork.

If the right tunnel was the same as the left one, he could basically give up hope of rescuing the former principal.

When Zhou Wen reached the tunnel once again, he decisively chose the right fork.

When he stepped into the tunnel, he couldn’t help but shudder again. An extremely ominous feeling rose in his heart once more.

The tunnel on the right was somewhat different from the left fork. This was still a squarish stone tunnel, but there were no sharp crystals.

However, Zhou Wen discovered many strange texts on the stone walls. Some of the text looked similar to hieroglyphics,

but not quite the same. All in all, Zhou Wen didn’t recognize the words.

He turned around and realized that the crossroads from where he entered had also disappeared.

Zhou Wen felt a little more at ease. Although he found it ominous, there wasn’t any lethal danger. If the former principal and company had chosen the right tunnel, they could still be alive.

Zhou Wen controlled the blood-colored avatar to walk forward. For some reason, he had a nagging feeling that there were many pairs of eyes watching him, but he found none of them when he observed his surroundings.

As he walked, he felt something amiss. The feeling of being spied on grew stronger.

Is it those words? Zhou Wen frowned slightly as he stared at the strange text on the stone walls. If there was anything in the tunnel, it had to be those strange texts.

Zhou Wen summoned the Overlord Spear and stabbed at one of the words on the stone wall. Overlord Spear’s Ever-Victorious showed its effects as it directly stabbed into the stone wall, impaling a text.

Pfft!

Zhou Wen felt a tearing pain in his left ear as blood spewed out from the blood-colored avatar’s ear.

In the next second, Zhou Wen saw all the strange text transform into small monsters with tails. Their bodies were oval and text was engraved on them. However, inside the

text were eyes. They bared their sharp teeth and flapped their wings like a bat, biting at the blood-colored avatar.

Zhou Wen brandished his Overlord Spear to attack the monsters, but every time his spear stabbed a monster, he suffered a rupture in his organs. After killing a few monsters, the blood-colored avatar's body could no longer take the damage.

Summoning the banana fan, he used the Great Yin Wind at the group of tiny monsters. It immediately blew them away and their bodies froze in pieces.

Almost at the same time, the blood-colored avatar's body turned into ice before shattering on the ground. The game screen also turned black.

What strange things are they? Attacking them ends up rebounding onto me? Zhou Wen naturally noticed the strangeness of the monsters, but even though he could figure it out, he couldn't think of a way to resolve the problem.

No matter which path I take, it seems to lead to death. The former principal and the others are probably in grave danger. Zhou Wen sighed inwardly. Based on the present situation, grim possibilities plagued the former principal's fate.

Zhou Wen tried a few more times, but even if he didn't provoke the monsters formed from words, they would still pounce on him and bite him. Even if he wore the Stone Chi's armor, he wouldn't be able to withstand the teeth of the monsters. It was as though they could bite through anything.

Both tunnels eat people… It’s impossible to pass through them… Zhou Wen thought to himself as an idea suddenly flashed in his mind. Wait… Eating people…

He thought of the stone statue at the T-junction—the one that only had a mouth and no other facial features. It made one feel extremely uncomfortable looking at it.

Since the outcome of entering either tunnel meant being eaten, this seemed connected to the statue to a certain extent.

When Zhou Wen came in front of the stone statue again, he didn’t enter the two tunnels. Instead, he carefully observed the stone statue, hoping that he could tell what was amiss

However, he couldn’t tell what was so strange about the stone statue. Desperate, he immediately pulled out his Overlord Spear and aimed it at the stone statue’s head.

But in the next second, Zhou Wen saw an extremely terrifying scene. The stone statue opened its mouth and swallowed the blood-colored avatar and spear together. The game’s screen instantly turned dark.

The problem does lie with the stone statue. Zhou Wen didn’t enter the game again but gave An Sheng a call.

The phone rang a few times until it finally got through. An Sheng’s voice sounded. “Young Master Wen, is there something wrong?”

“Ah Sheng, have you checked the stone statue in the inner sanctum?” Zhou Wen asked.

“It has been inspected in detail, but we didn’t find any trap mechanisms,” An Sheng said.

“In whose likeness is the stone statue carved in? Did you figure that out?” Zhou Wen asked again.

“We hired some experts to study and verify it. They believe that it’s highly likely to be Aoyin -a monster in mythical legends. Its body looks a little like a person’s, but it has immense strength and it enjoys eating brains…” An Sheng explained the conclusion from the experts’ analysis in detail.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 323 - Sacrificial Items

Chapter 323 Sacrificial Items

“Ah Sheng, no matter how I think about it, the problem lies with the statue. Get someone to examine it in detail again, but be careful. I have a nagging feeling that the stone statue’s appearance in a place like that is a little too bizarre. It might take the life of people.” Zhou Wen couldn’t explain his discovery in-game, so he could only tactfully tell An Sheng.

“Okay, I’ll send someone to check the stone statue again.” An Sheng answered seriously.

After hanging up, Zhou Wen entered the game again and continued attempting to attack the stone statue in-game. This time, Zhou Wen learned his lesson and distanced himself from the stone statue before sending a gust of Great Yin Wind over.

The Grand Yin Wind hit the stone statue, causing it to actually open its mouth and swallow the Grand Yin Wind. The terrifying Grand Yin Wind entered what seemed like a bottomless pit. And that was it.

Even the Grand Yin Wind is useless? Zhou Wen frowned slightly. He knew that to deal with the suspected Aoyin statue, he couldn’t use force. He needed to think of a way.

en use

I remember the ghost stories Grandpa told me when I was young. In ancient times, humans believed in ghosts and

gods. Often, they held rituals to offer sacrifice to the ghosts and gods. Some ignorant and evil people would even use living people as a sacrifice. With that Aoyin statue placed there, could it be that it needs to be offered sacrificial items? Although Zhou Wen found the idea a little ridiculous, he didn’t have any other solutions and could only give it a try.

Zhou Wen didn’t have the ability to use living humans as a sacrifice. Even if he was capable of doing it, he wouldn’t. Therefore, after some thought, he decided to capture two poison bats and take them to the Aoyin statue and offer them as a sacrifice to the Aoyin.

However, there was no reaction from the stone statue when Zhou Wen delivered the two poison bats to the stone statue’s mouth.

Do I really need to use living people? Zhou Wen thought for a moment and smashed the head of the poison bats before delivering it to the stone statue again.

This time, the stone statue had a reaction. It opened its mouth and sucked, swallowing the two poison bats that had their heads opened

up.

After swallowing the poison bats, Zhou Wen felt that the two forks were somewhat different. However, he couldn’t put a finger on the differences as he hurriedly ran towards the left tunnel.

After stepping into the tunnel, he realized that it was still a square stone passageway. It didn’t turn oval, nor did the sharp crystals appear. He couldn’t help but feel delighted as he rushed deep into the tunnel.

The tunnel wasn’t long, spanning about a hundred meters. Soon, Zhou Wen reached the end and found that there was a stone door. Pushing it open, he found a palace inside.

Before he could carefully observe the palace, a terrifying dimensional creature lunged forward. Zhou Wen was only able to see its shadow before the blood-colored avatar was smacked to death.

The monster resembled a tiger or wolf with two tails. It was a monster that emitted black flames all over its body. With his Ghost Steps’ speed, he wasn’t able to dodge the monster’s attack. Even if it wasn’t at the Mythical stage, it was probably close to one.

Zhou Wen didn’t give up. He went to the stone statue again and sacrificed the two poison bats before using the right fork. Indeed, the right tunnel had become safe as well. There weren’t any strange text monsters.

At the end of the right tunnel was another palace. The moment Zhou Wen opened the door, he saw a strange snake standing erect like a dragon as it spewed out black smoke at the blood-colored avatar.

Zhou Wen hurriedly summoned his remaining Purple Air Bell and sucked all the black smoke in. Then, he shook the bell, sending the black smoke back at the strange snake.

Like a tide of black smoke, it instantly drowned the monster snake’s massive body. The snake opened its mouth and inhaled, and the black smoke was sucked back in. His actions failed to damage it.

Then, Zhou Wen saw the black gas rise from the strange snake as though an ancient demon god was enveloping it.

Zhou Wen cursed under his breath as he turned around to escape. The snake’s eyes turned into a mirror that reflected the blood-colored avatar’s figure.

Not long after the blood-colored avatar ran out, it collapsed to the ground and died. The game screen went black again. Zhou Wen didn’t even know how it had died.

Don’t tell me the creatures in the two palaces are at the Mythical stage? Zhou Wen was secretly alarmed. Just as he was about to probe further, he heard his phone ring.

Zhou Wen immediately picked up the call when he saw that it was An Sheng.

“Young Master Wen, as you expected, the stone statue is problematic,” An Sheng said directly.

“What did you discover?” Zhou Wen asked.

“During the inspection, the stone statue was completely normal and we didn’t discover any problems with it. Later, an expert attempted to put a mechanical arm into its mouth to investigate, but it was swallowed. After that, there was a brief change in the two tunnels. Our men were able to enter the tunnel without disappearing. However, it wasn’t for long. In less than an hour, the passageway returned to normal,” An Sheng said calmly.

However, Zhou Wen could tell that plenty of sacrifices had been made.“From the looks of it, the stone statue needs sacrifices. Why don’t we try using dimensional creatures as sacrifices? If it’s really Aoyin, it might be interested in the brains of dimensional creatures,” Zhou Wen said.

“I’ll get someone to try it now.” An Sheng paused before saying, “At the end of the two tunnels, there are doors to a

palace. But I didn’t get them to open the palace. Young Master Wen, any thoughts on this?”

“Since the Aoyin guarding the tunnels is already so terrifying, a powerful dimensional creature will definitely guard the palace’s interior. It might even be a Mythical creature. I think it’s best to be careful. Don’t open the door hastily.” Zhou Wen could only provide warnings. He couldn’t possibly say that he had entered the palace in-game and that there was a terrifying existence suspected to be a Mythical creature inside, right?

“I share the same thoughts too. If there really are Mythical creatures inside, it’s not something we can deal with. We can only seek the Overseer’s help.” An Sheng thought for a moment before saying, “Young Master Wen, it’s all thanks to you that we can make progress so quickly. Unfortunately, you’re still too young. In a few years, if you can advance to the Epic stage, I might have a chance to fight alongside you.”

“I have no intention of joining the military. After I graduate, I plan on opening a crystal shop for a living,” Zhou Wen said.

“You aren’t that kind of person.” An Sheng didn’t wait for Zhou Wen to say anything before saying, “I’ll hang up now and report our progress to the Overseer.”

“Ah Sheng, if you aren’t confident, make sure not to enter the palace at the end of the tunnels. I have a feeling that there will be terrifying dimensional creatures inside,” Zhou Wen exhorted again.

“Don’t worry,” Ah Sheng said before hanging up. It was unknown if he would listen to Zhou Wen.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 324 - Map

Chapter 324 Map

Zhou Wen had been trying to figure out the dimensional creatures inside the two palaces, but they were too powerful. The blood-colored avatar could last for a very short period of time without gleaning much information.

However, Zhou Wen wasn’t discouraged. He persisted and studied their abilities and habits. This wasn’t only for saving the former principal; Zhou Wen also thought about the possibility of using their blood to enhance his final stat to 21 points if he could injure the Mythical creatures.

Therefore, he didn’t hold any hope of killing them. All he wanted was to obtain one or two drops of blood.

Of course, this was only Zhou Wen’s idea. He did not know if it could work.

He still had no way of touching the white cocoon in the war wagon. That power that caused an infinite gap between them, left Zhou Wen helpless.

“Old Zhou, I heard that another new dimensional zone has been discovered in Luoyang City. The college plans on getting students to explore it,” Li Xuan ran over and said to Zhou Wen excitedly.

“Shouldn’t the military be exploring a new dimensional zone first? Why would they let students explore it?” Zhou Wen asked in puzzlement.

Li Xuan said with a smile, “The newly discovered dimensional zone is a Town God’s Temple. Many of the ancient districts in the East District have such dimensional zones. They are basically all the same and not dangerous. It might be very beneficial.”

When Zhou Wen heard Li Xuan say that it was a Town God’s Temple, he immediately understood why the college was sending students to explore it.

In ancient times, a Town God’s Temple was a place of worship that revered the guardian of a city. It was a place that ensured the city’s safety. After the dimensional storms, various ancient city districts had Town God’s Temple zones.

Typical temple zones had no wild dimensional creatures, so they didn’t bring harm to anyone who entered the Town God’s Temple. However, inside one, there would usually be some special dimensional creatures that were worshiped.

These dimensional creatures had immortal bodies. Humans could challenge them at places that they were enshrined. If they defeated them, they might receive benefits from the Town God’s Temple.

“Has Luoyang’s Town God’s Temple only just been discovered?” Zhou Wen asked in puzzlement.

For an ancient city like Luoyang, it was almost a certainty that a Town God’s Temple existed. Logically speaking, it should have been discovered long ago.

“The big Town God’s Temple has long been explored. It enshrined four guardians. Legend has it that they are the ancient heroes-Han Xin, Pang Juan, Zhou Yu, and Luo Cheng’s embodiment. It’s currently under military control, so ordinary people won’t have a chance of entering. The newly

discovered temple is the Town God’s Temple of the former county city. It’s not that famous, and rather small. Recently, it was discovered that it has become a dimensional zone.”

Li Xuan paused for a moment before saying, “How about we visit it before that it’s brought under military control?”

Zhou Wen hadn’t made much progress in his endeavors, so he felt that it wasn’t a bad idea to take a look. Perhaps, he could download a Town God’s Temple dungeon from there.

Li Xuan and Zhou Wen had just stepped out of the door when they met Wang Lu. Upon hearing about the new development, Wang Lu was also interested and quickly joined them.

The school posted an announcement indicating that there would be a truck that would take interested students to the newly discovered Town God’s Temple. It wasn’t mandatory if one wasn’t interested.

The three of them got into the truck and saw that there were more than ten students in it. This was just one of the trucks, a few had already set off. It looked like there were quite a number of students heading there.

The truck drove all the way to West Luoyang. Just as it was about to leave the city, they finally saw the legendary Town God’s Temple. It was much smaller than Zhou Wen imagined. From a distance, it was nothing more than a small ancient building. It had two side halls and a main temple. At the top was a signboard with the words “Town God’s Temple” written.

There were plenty of students outside Town God’s Temple. There were also some independent hunters and residents who were also there to join in the buzz. From the fact that

even ordinary passersby dared enter the temple, it was testimony that the Town God’s Temple posed no danger.

After the trio entered the temple, Li Xuan looked around and said in puzzlement, “That’s strange. Why aren’t there any guardians inside this Town God’s Temple?”

Wang Lu also nodded and said, “This Town God’s Temple is really too young. Usually, they will honor a famous general in history as a guardian, but there’s none here. Only the main temple honors a generic city god. I wonder what this god’s name is.”

“If there’s no guardian, what’s the point of coming here?” Li Xuan said gloomily.

He had originally wanted to test out his skills to see if he could defeat the incarnation of a famous general in history, but who knew that there was no consecrated target here.

A student who had just come out of the side hall heard Li Xuan say that and added, “Although there are no consecrated generals here, the side hall enshrines the Earth Lord. It might be beneficial for you to enter and pray to him.”

“What benefits?” Li Xuan asked in interest.

Earth temples were usually built independently. Yet, this Town God’s Temple also consecrated the Earth Lord. It was quite obvious that it wasn’t very orthodox.

The scale of Earth temples that enshrined the Earth Lord was usually smaller. Even though he was an immortal who was in charge of land, he was considered a deity of a lower rank in the Daoist pantheon.

In Journey to the West, Sun Wukong would stomp on the ground whenever he wanted, pulling out the Earth Lord by his beard. Even demons would bully the Earth Lord, evidence of how low his status was.The student said, “If you catch the Earth Lord’s fancy, he will give you a map. Dig in the spot indicated by the map and perhaps, you might be able to find treasure.”

“That’s nice!” Li Xuan was excited. He looked like he was planning on going in big and getting several treasure maps to dig out treasures.

However, the student said, “However, Earth Lord is a local god. You have to be a local and bow to him to obtain a map. In addition, it’s only possible for you to obtain the map when paying respects to him for the first time. Zhou Wen and Wang Lu, you aren’t locals, right?”

Li Xuan was delighted when he heard that. He said to Zhou Wen and Wang Lu with a smile, “See that? There are benefits to being a Luoyang local. I am registered as a resident of Luoyang. Tough luck for the both of you.”

To his surprise, the student said to Li Xuan, “Li Xuan, don’t count your chickens before they hatch. Although Luoyang locals obtain a map after bowing to Earth Lord, he likes to pull pranks. There might not be a treasure as indicated on the map. One student obtained a map that led to dog feces.”

“Don’t worry. I, Li Xuan, am blessed. How can I dig up dog feces? Even if I don’t get a huge treasure, I can still dig out antiques.” Li Xuan was filled with confidence.

The three of them entered the Earth temple and saw that it enshrined a rich-looking old man with white hair and beard.

Just then, an ordinary citizen was kneeling in front of Earth Lord. The middle-aged man kowtowed and something magical happened. After the middle-aged man raised his head, there was a small wooden sign that had a simple map drawn on it.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 325 - Digging Treasures

Chapter 325 Digging Treasures

The middle-aged man held a small wooden tablet and ran away happily. Another person ran over and bowed to the Earth Lord. Soon, he got a small wooden tablet with a map engraved on it.

“This Earth Lord sure is magical!” Li Xuan’s eyes widened when he saw this.

Wang Lu said with a smile, “Although Earth Lord doesn’t have a high status among immortals, he is quite capable. He knows everything about the land under his jurisdiction. He knows all the good things buried underground too. He also knows where there’s danger and the things not to be done. It can be said that he’s omniscient in a particular region. In ancient times, Earth Lord had a name-Kitchen God. That was a real god and he enjoyed a very high status.”

The trio wasn’t in a rush. After everyone was done paying their respects, Li Xuan walked to the statue of Earth Lord and plopped to his knees before kowtowing.

Indeed, Li Xuan also received a small wooden token.

“Sir and madam, how about that? Are you regretting not being born in Luoyang?” Li Xuan flaunted the wooden tablet to the duo.

“Earth Lord is most merciful. If I beg him, he might give me a map too?” Wang Lu walked to the statue of Earth Lord and

bowed to the statue before saying, “Earth Lord, how benevolent are thee. Please give me a map too.”

“If begging works, what’s the point of having a household register? Besides, you aren’t being sincere. You didn’t even kowtow. All you did was bow. What’s the use of… Ah…” Li Xuan curled his lips. However, just as he finished speaking, he saw a small wooden tablet grow out of the ground. Instantly, his mouth dropped agape as he was at a loss for words.

Wang Lu happily took the wooden tablet and said to Zhou Wen, “Why don’t you try too? Perhaps Earth Lord might show his benevolence and give you a map too?”

Zhou Wen thought that it made sense. After all, Guide City, where he was born, wasn’t too far from Luoyang. Perhaps this Earth Lord had a greater area under his jurisdiction, so was Guide City also under his management?

He didn’t really suffer any losses bowing even if he wasn’t given a map.

Zhou Wen mimicked Wang Lu and stood in front of the Earth Lord statue. He pressed his palms together and bowed slightly at the statue.

“I can ignore Wang Lu’s good luck, but I just don’t believe that you can get a map like that,” Li Xuan said.

When Zhou Wen bowed, he suddenly heard the sound of rocks grinding. He saw the statue of the Earth Lord drift horizontally three feet away.

“What’s happening?” Li Xuan’s eyes widened as Wang Lu wore a look of surprise.

Zhou Wen didn’t know what was happening either, but when he saw a wooden plaque grow out of the ground, he reached out to pick it up.

“It looks like Earth Lord is quite a swell guy. He gave me a map too.” Zhou Wen took the wooden tablet and said to Li Xuan with a smile, “It looks like your Luoyang’s registration isn’t of much use.”

“Absurd.” Li Xuan looked at the Earth Lord statue that had moved three feet to the side, feeling extremely alarmed and puzzled.

Regardless of how one looked at it, it appeared as though the Earth Lord statue didn’t dare receive Zhou Wen’s bow. That was why it had moved away.

Wang Lu also sized up the Earth Lord statue and Zhou Wen in puzzlement.

The three of them walked out of the temple and were about to head to the main temple hall when they saw a group of soldiers enter the Town God’s Temple. The soldiers informed them that the area had been sealed by the military and ordered them to leave in an orderly fashion.

The trio had no choice but to leave Town God’s Temple. Li Xuan looked at the wooden token in his hand and saw that the map on it was very vague. It had the general terrain of rivers and mountains. Then, there was a red dot which labeled the treasure location.

If it wasn’t for a Luoyang native who was well-versed with the Luoyang terrain, it wouldn’t be easy finding the location on the map.

“You definitely won’t be able to tell where the map is pointing to. I’ll help you take a look,” Li Xuan said to Zhou Wen and Wang Lu.

Zhou Wen and Wang Lu handed their wooden tablets to him. Li Xuan was quite an expert in identifying the local terrain. He quickly helped them find the location. Furthermore, he marked it on the phone’s map app, making it convenient for them to seek out the treasure.

“Are we going to dig for treasures together or do we do it individually?” Li Xuan asked.

“Let’s go together. These places all require us to exit the city. It’ll be safer for us to be together,” Zhou Wen said.

“Alright. Mine is the nearest, so let’s dig mine first,” Li Xuan said as he summoned his Companion Beast mount.

Zhou Wen only had the White Shadow of Poison to ride on, but it was a little odd seeing it in broad daylight. Li Xuan’s ox-type mount was rather large so there was room for Zhou Wen.

Wang Lu summoned her tiger, sat on it, and followed behind.

The three of them passed through the city and attracted the envy of many ordinary citizens.

After leaving the city, Li Xuan dug for quite a while in a small forest in the suburbs. Li Xuan dug a hole that was four to five meters deep and finally found something.

It was a ceramic container that looked rather ancient. “Could there be gold hidden inside by the ancients?” Li Xuan said in excitement as he held the jar.

“It’s possible. Who knows, there might even be jewelry. Quick, open it and take a look.” Zhou Wen was somewhat curious as he urged Li Xuan to open it.

Li Xuan didn’t hesitate to open the jar. He saw that it was filled with copper coins that were in a badly rusted state. He took out one and pinched it, instantly shattering it from the decay.

“How did this happen?” Li Xuan was extremely depressed.

“Don’t ruin it. Those copper coins are likely to be antiques, right?” Zhou Wen said.

“Antiques might be valuable in a peaceful era, but in this era, who would spend money to buy antiques? With money, one would buy dimensional crystals and Companion Eggs. Besides, these copper coins are way too inferior in quality. They are almost deformed,” Li Xuan said.

However, he had gained something after all. Li Xuan still kept the jar in his bag. It wasn’t big and fitted his backpack perfectly.

Following that, they dug for Wang Lu’s treasure. Her treasure wasn’t too far from Li Xuan’s treasure. So with Li Xuan as an experienced local guiding them, they quickly arrived at the location.

It was by a small stream. Wang Lu flipped through the area a few times and when she flipped open a cobblestone, she immediately discovered a gem the size of a longan. It was crystal clear, like a cat’s eye.

“How beautiful.” Wang Lu was very fond of it. She washed it in the stream and played with it in her hand.

Zhou Wen’s map pointed to a forest beside the mountainous area. The trio traveled more than five kilometers before they reached the spot. Due to the dimensional zones nearby, the trio walked very carefully and deliberately circled and made a detour to avoid a dimensional zone.

“This is it,” Li Xuan said as he looked at the map and pointed to a bush.

Zhou Wen saw that there were only some weeds and nothing else. He planned on digging to see what he could dig out.

To their surprise, just as Zhou Wen approached, white smoke suddenly spewed out from the bush. It frightened the trio and they couldn’t help but retreat as they cautiously stared at the spot where the white smoke was emitting

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 326 - Baby

Chapter 326 Baby

A cute, chubby baby jumped out of the white smoke.

The baby's fair and tender body was wearing a red piece of cloth that only covered his chest and belly, and there was a braid sticking upwards on his head.

"Who abandoned this child here?" Li Xuan couldn't help but mutter when he saw how adorable the child was.

However, when he thought about it carefully, he felt that something was amiss. The child was only the size of a baby; yet, he could actually walk on his own. Furthermore, he was extremely agile. No baby was this amazing.

The baby stared at them with his big eyes, seemingly furious. He seemed to be warning them not to come any closer.

"Could this be…" Wang Lu's expression changed slightly when she saw the baby.

"Wang Lu, do you know what this baby is?" Li Xuan hurriedly asked.

"I once entered a dimensional zone in Changbai Mountain to hunt dimensional creatures with my family's elders. There, I saw a plant-type ginseng baby that resembled a human baby. He wore such clothes and he had a few ginseng leaves growing on his head. He does resemble this baby, but there

are some differences," Wang Lu said as she sized up the baby.

"Ginseng Baby? Isn't that the ginseng spirit spoken in legends that is extremely nourishing?" Li Xuan's eyes glowed as he stared at the baby.

The baby seemed to sense the evil intentions in Li Xuan's eyes as he glared at Li Xuan and with a turn of its body, he vanished.

"Oh no, retreat quickly." Wang Lu's expression changed slightly as she immediately retreated.

Although Zhou Wen and Li Xuan didn't know what was happening, seeing Wang Lu's seriousness they also retreated.

However, just as Li Xuan moved, he suddenly felt as though something had tripped him and he fell down with a plop.

The baby appeared not too far away and clapped in glee as he looked at Li Xuan. He looked extremely happy.

"Little imp, do you think I'm powerless against you? I don't care if you are a Ginseng Baby or something else. I'll teach you a good lesson." Li Xuan crawled to his feet and summoned the Thundergod Sword before cleaving at the baby.

The Thundergod Sword reached the baby in an instant, but he suddenly vanished. The lightning sword beam blasted a huge hole in the ground, but it failed to hit the baby.

Plop!

Li Xuan felt his legs being tripped by something again and fell to the ground with a thud once more. When he turned his head, he saw the baby extend half his body from the ground and jump out. He clapped his hands and grinned at Li Xuan, his face filled with mockery.

Li Xuan had never experienced this before. He lunged forward to grab the baby, but no matter how fast he was, he couldn’t catch him. Instead, he kept tripping thanks to the baby. He was in a sorry state.

“Wang Lu, is this really a Ginseng Baby?” Zhou Wen asked as he sized up the baby in surprise.

“I don’t know, but he does resemble a Ginseng Baby. He’s proficient in escaping through the earth and can travel for thousands of miles underground. Even top Epic experts would find him difficult to catch if he escaped.”

Wang Lu paused for a moment before continuing, “Back then, my grandfather used a puppet Companion Beast to lure the playful Ginseng Baby over. Then, he used his Intrinsic Lock to catch him by surprise and lock him up before successfully capturing him.”

“We don’t have those things. Is there any way to catch him?” Zhou Wen knew that Ghost Steps would be useless catching up to him, after seeing the baby’s ability to escape through the earth.

“Perhaps, but I don’t know.” Wang Lu shook her head helplessly. “Ginseng Babies have the nickname of Little Earth Immortal. As long as he’s on the ground, I’m afraid no one will be able to catch him. This baby might be a Ginseng Baby, but from his ability to escape through the earth, he’s in no way inferior to the one I’ve seen before.”

When the two spoke, Li Xuan had already been teased into a rage, but he couldn’t touch the baby no matter what. He was like a clumsy bear as he was led by the nose by the baby.

Li Xuan slashed with the Thundergod Sword in his hand and even summoned several Companion Beasts. Even the Spirit Drawing Demoness that he had just obtained was summoned. Yet, he still couldn’t do anything about the baby.

The little child suddenly phased into existence like a tiny sprite that could continuously teleport. He was toying with Li Xuan and his Companion Beasts.

“Old Zhou, Wang Lu, aren’t you going to provide some help? Quickly grab this little fellow. I have to spank him.” Li Xuan had been tripped several times again, making his face turn livid with anger.

Zhou Wen felt that the baby’s escape technique was very interesting. Furthermore, he didn’t seem to have the intention to harm others. All he did was tease Li Xuan.

With a thought, Zhou Wen activated Ghost Steps as his figure seemed to teleport. He appeared behind the baby and reached out to grab the baby’s arm, but the baby vanished instantly.

Wang Lu guessed the location of the baby. She flashed over to grab him, but she failed.

The trio used all sorts of methods to grab hold of the baby but they ended up in circles. In the end, they fell to the ground, exhausted. They no longer had the strength to grab hold of the baby who kept clapping nearby as he mocked them.

Li Xuan couldn’t take it any further and chased after him once more. However, Zhou Wen and Wang Lu were truly exhausted and they sat on the ground without getting up.“What’s the level of that Ginseng Baby you encountered? Is his ability to escape through the earth that powerful?” Zhou Wen asked Wang Lu.

“I don’t know what level he is.” Wang Lu shook her head and said, “Just as my grandfather captured the Ginseng Baby, a terrifying creature in Changbai Mountain suddenly appeared. It almost killed us. The Ginseng Baby was taken away by the creature. I never expected the map given by Earth Lord would be something like this. Even if we find it, we don’t have the ability to take him away.”

Zhou Wen looked at the baby with a frown and didn’t say a word. He really didn’t have the ability to grab him unless he could make the baby’s body leave the ground, preventing him from burrowing through the earth.

Zhou Wen secretly held the banana fan in his hand and waited for an opportunity.

Li Xuan pounced here and there, but he didn’t even touch the baby’s clothes. Instead, he slashed out craters on the ground.

After Li Xuan fell again, the baby clapped his tiny hands in delight as his chubby calves jumped up. He looked excited.

Right now. At the instant the baby’s feet left the ground, the banana fan Zhou Wen was holding stirred up a gust of cold wind, sending the baby flying

“Haha, let’s see where you can flee to now.” Li Xuan was overjoyed as he pounced forward, hoping to grab the flying baby in midair.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 327 - Rat Rabbit

Chapter 327 Rat Rabbit

When the baby was swept up by the Grand Yin Wind, he really couldn’t escape through the earth. White Frost formed on his body as Li Xuan rushed forward to grab his arm.

The baby’s body was ice-cold. His eyes were closed, motionless. Even his brows were covered in white frost as if he had been frozen.

“There’s no heartbeat; did he have to be frozen to death?” Li Xuan couldn’t help but stare at the baby when he didn’t feel his heartbeat.

Although he was a dimensional creature, he looked like a human baby. Furthermore, he had only been teasing the trio without truly harming them. Li Xuan wasn’t really planning on killing him.

“Don’t tell me he dies so easily?” Zhou Wen touched the baby’s neck. Indeed, there wasn’t a pulse.

“Are the two of you dumb? If he’s really a creature of the same class as Ginseng Babies, he’s a plant. How can there be a heartbeat?” Wang Lu rolled her eyes.

“Then take a look. Is this baby dead?” Li Xuan handed the baby to Wang Lu.

Wang Lu was about to reach out to grab the baby when he suddenly opened his eyes. Taking advantage of the loss in

grip while handing him over, the baby forcefully struggled to escape before landing on the ground and disappearing.

When he appeared again, he was more than ten meters away. He stood on a rock and made funny faces at the three of them.

“This baby is very scheming…” Li Xuan was about to rush over but was stopped by Zhou

Wen.

“Forget it. Let him go.” Zhou Wen really couldn’t bear to kill such a creature. It would be useless even if he caught him.

Li Xuan nodded and said with a smile, “At least Wang Lu and I benefited. You didn’t manage to obtain anything from this map. From the looks of it, our luck is indeed better. By the way, Wang Lu, what powers does a Ginseng Baby Companion Beast have when dropped?”

“I heard that Ginseng Baby Companion Beasts have very strong Primordial Energy regeneration abilities. They also have healing-type Primordial Energy Skills. It enhances one’s combat strength greatly, but they are just too rare. Changbai Mountain has more Ginseng Babies, but most of them are at the Legendary stage. Their abilities are relatively weaker. Epic Ginseng Babies are very rare. According to my grandfather, if one has an Epic Ginseng Baby Companion Beast, they can basically use Primordial Energy Skills indefinitely.” Wang Lu looked at the distant baby and said, “However, there should be ginseng leaves on the head of a Ginseng baby and this one doesn’t have any. I don’t think he’s a Ginseng Baby, just some kind of plant-type dimensional creature.”

“Since Ginseng Babies are of such great use, we really have to make a trip to Changbai Mountain in the future to obtain some,” Li Xuan said.

“How can it be that easy? The dimensional zones in Changbai Mountain have dimensional creatures that aren’t offensive, but there are even more terrifying dimensional creatures. Ignoring the Epic Ginseng Babies, just obtaining a Legendary Ginseng Baby isn’t an easy task. One might even lose their life. Quite a number of people risked their lives to enter Changbai Mountain to hunt for one. A Legendary Ginseng Baby Companion Egg can be sold at an astronomical price.” Wang Lu clearly didn’t believe that entering Changbai Mountain was a good idea.

“Are there any better Companion Beasts that possess healing powers other than the Ginseng Baby?” Zhou Wen had always wanted a Companion Beast with healing abilities. They were extremely rare.

“Those with healing abilities are relatively rare to begin with, so a Ginseng Baby is already considered one of the better ones. Although there are others, it’s not that easy to obtain them. For example, Lucidum Horses are even rarer than Ginseng Babies. It’s even more difficult to hunt them. There are also some which naturally have the healing abilities. For example, some Angels from the West District and Alchemical Cauldrons in our East District. They are similarly difficult to obtain,” Wang Lu said after thinking for a moment.

The three of them spoke as they walked, intending to return to the city. When the baby saw that they were leaving, he tunneled through the ground to appear around them. Then, he made funny faces at them and clapped as if provoking them.

However, Zhou Wen and company didn’t wish to kill him. They ignored him and continued walking ahead.

Seeing the trio ignore him, the baby was very disappointed. Like a child that had lost his beloved toy, his face was filled with disappointment as he stared blankly as Zhou Wen and company left.

Boom!

As they were walking, they suddenly heard an explosion. They turned around and saw a hole in the ground where the baby was standing. A black-furred monster looking like a rat or rabbit that was about half a person’s height bit onto the baby’s arm as it dragged him into the hole.

Zhou Wen frowned slightly. He activated Ghost Steps and slashed out with Demonic Astral Wheel, cutting off the Rat Rabbit’s retreat into the cave.

The Rat Rabbit reacted quickly as it exerted strength in its legs and actually dodged the Demonic Astral Wheel. It dragged the baby and ran into the bushes.

Li Xuan also slashed with his Thundergod Sword, smiting a bolt of lightning that forced the Rat Rabbit to change its escape trajectory.

Wang Lu’s tiger also pounced forward to stop the Rat Rabbit.

The Rat Rabbit was abnormally fast. Zhou Wen used Ghost Steps to chase after it, but it managed to dodge him several times as though it also had a Primordial Energy Skill that enhanced its speed.

However, after using it a few times, the Rat Rabbit’s Primordial Energy seemed to be unable to keep up with its

expenditure. It was almost struck by the lightning from the Thundergod Sword. It let go of the baby and escaped into the forest.

“Look after him. I’ll be right back.” Zhou Wen chased after the Rat Rabbit.

The Rat Rabbit was likely at the Epic stage, but its ability was a little special. It wasn’t a dimensional creature with relatively stronger offensive abilities, so there might be some special rewards capturing it.

Furthermore, this wasn’t a dimensional zone yet. Its appearance here made it a break-out creature, so it was best to eliminate it.

The Rat Rabbit ran very quickly, but its lacking Primordial Energy eventually gave Zhou Wen a chance to kill it when it ran into a mountain valley.When he saw a crystal inside its body and took it out, he realized that it was a skill crystal.

Zhou Wen picked up the Primordial Energy Skill Crystal and was about to leave when he saw a figure flash across the ground—the baby had appeared. His arm that had been bitten by the Rat Rabbit had healed. He was fine.

The baby looked at the dead Rat Rabbit and then at Zhou Wen. He seemed to hesitate before running in front of Zhou Wen and pulling at Zhou Wen’s trousers with his tiny hands.

“Be careful in the future. No one will save you next time.” Although Zhou Wen wouldn’t be fooled by his adorable appearance, this fellow looked too much like a human child. He really couldn’t bring himself to killing him.

The baby didn’t let go as he tugged at Zhou Wen’s trousers. He made sounds like he was trying to say something as he

pointed into the valley with his tiny finger.

“Don’t tell me you want to trick me?” Zhou Wen naturally understood what the baby meant. He was trying to get him to walk into the valley.

“Yiyi…” It was unknown if the baby understood him, but he kept pulling Zhou Wen’s trousers and pointed at the valley while speaking

After some hesitation, Zhou Wen saw that the valley wasn’t a dimensional zone. Furthermore, the valley had just a one-way path, so there shouldn’t be too much danger. After some thought, he walked in, hoping to see what the baby was up to.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 328 - Baby’s Gift

Chapter 328 Baby’s Gift

When the baby saw Zhou Wen walk into the valley, he loosened his grip on Zhou Wen’s trousers and skipped ahead.

The valley wasn’t deep. After walking less than half a kilometer, they reached the end. The baby pushed aside the grass in front of the mountain wall and revealed a hole half the height of a person.

If you want me to enter, I definitely won’t burrow in it, Zhou Wen thought to himself as he watched the baby vanish before him.

Zhou Wen waited for a while but the baby didn’t appear. Instead, he heard Li Xuan and Wang Lu who had followed his tracks.

“Zhou Wen, that baby ran away on its own. What are you doing here?” Li Xuan asked curiously when he saw Zhou Wen standing in front of a mountain wall, not fighting any dimensional creatures.

“I met the baby. He led me here and then burrowed into the hole himself,” Zhou Wen said as he pointed at the hole in the grass.

Just as Li Xuan was about to say something, he saw the baby poke his head out of the hole. He seemed to be dragging something with both hands, his face flushed red from the strenuous activity.

After pulling a few times, the baby finally dragged something out of the hole.

The three of them stared at the thing that the baby held onto. They saw a vine or root of some unknown plant. The baby pulled the vine out with all his might. It was taut as if there was something very heavy attached to it.

Seeing this, Zhou Wen reached and helped the baby pull the vine out. He was immediately alarmed. He originally imagined that it was because the baby had limited strength which made the pulling difficult. However, when he tried, he realized that it was very heavy. Despite using all his strength, he was barely able to move it forward.

They pulled the vine out by more than a meter but still failed to see what was inside. Wang Lu and Li Xuan came forward to help, and the four of them finally pulled the vine out. They saw something tied to the other end of it.

“What’s this?” Li Xuan looked at the item they had pulled, but he couldn’t tell what it was. He turned to look at the baby.

The baby gestured as it made all kinds of utterances, but the trio still didn’t understand what he meant.

Zhou Wen carefully observed the thing tied to the vine. It looked like a huge walnut that was about the size of a soccer ball. Its exterior looked like a walnut, but it seemed as though it was made of dark gray metal.

“Is this thing a walnut?” Li Xuan tapped the hilt of the Thundergod Sword on the item twice. When he heard a metallic sound, he looked at Wang Lu and asked, “Wang Lu, do you know what this is?”

Wang Lu also shook her head. “It looks like a walnut to me as well, but I’ve never heard of metal that looks like a walnut.”

As the three of them were studying the object, the baby pointed at Zhou Wen and then at the walnut as it garbled.

“Do you want to give me this?” Zhou Wen asked the baby with a guess.

Seeing that Zhou Wen finally understood, the baby hurriedly nodded.

“Alright.” Although Zhou Wen didn’t know what it was, it appeared to be quite important. Since it was a free gift, it was a waste not to accept it.

However, the thing was just too heavy. Zhou Wen summoned the Mutated Stone Chi. The few of them worked together to move the metal walnut onto its back before letting the Mutated Stone Chi carry it back.

After the trio walked out of the valley, the baby looked at them from afar with no intention of following them.

“This little fellow is rather interesting but too bad it’s a dimensional creature.” Li Xuan shook his head.

Although there were people who raised dimensional creatures, dimensional creatures were different from Companion Beasts. They weren’t able to completely control their actions. Once they were allowed to enter human society, any problems would result in serious consequences.

Therefore, the League maintained an opposing attitude towards rearing them. There was just no clear rule that forbade their rearing.

Zhou Wen had reared the antelope and chick secretly. Thankfully, the other students and teachers always believed that the antelope had been brought out from Mount Laojun and wasn’t aggressive, so they ignored it.

As for the chick, most people believed it was Zhou Wen’s Companion Beast.

When the trio returned to school, the sky was already dark. Mainly because the walnut was so heavy that the Stone Chi couldn’t run fast while carrying it. All they could do was walk slowly.

After returning to his dorm, Zhou Wen carefully took the walnut down and placed it in the living room. Then, he took out his mysterious phone and snapped a picture of it. He wanted to know if the mysterious phone could tell what it was.

However, he was quickly disappointed. The mysterious phone didn’t respond, indicating that it wasn’t a dimensional creature. It was likely a native product of Earth.

“What is this thing?” Zhou Wen took a few photos and sent them to Wang Mingyuan who was extremely knowledgeable. Perhaps, he knew what it was.

Wang Mingyuan was surprisingly free. After a while, he replied Zhou Wen with a message.

“You can’t confirm it just by looking at photos. Once I’m done with the research on hand, you can bring it over. I’ll help you to study it.”

“Teacher, how’s your research progressing?” All this while, Zhou Wen wasn’t very clear what Wang Mingyuan’s research was. All he knew was that he was studying what lay below

Dragon’s Well and that it was likely a study of the white dragon.Zhou Wen was originally worried that White Dragon would kill Wang Mingyuan if he angered it.

However, after experiencing the might of the paper slip, Zhou Wen felt that his worry was unnecessary. A person like Wang Mingyuan wouldn’t easily put himself in danger.

“The progress is going quite well, but I’ve encountered some snags. At the moment, I’m trying to think of a solution.” Wang Mingyuan sighed and said, “Currently, there are signs from other parts of the League that the chance of dimensional creatures breaking out is rapidly increasing. If it continues at this rate, it might only take another few years before the dimensional zones no longer have any restrictions on dimensional creatures, or rather, they will be very weak. When the time comes, humanity’s situation will be much worse than when the dimensional storms first happened.”

This wasn’t the first time Zhou Wen had heard such words. In the past, An Sheng had also mentioned this to him, but he didn’t make it as clear as Wang Mingyuan.

“Teacher, will the dimensional zones’ restrictions really fail in a few years?” Zhou Wen asked.

“It won’t exceed ten years. When the time comes, the restrictions on the dimensional zones will definitely fail,” Wang Mingyuan answered with certainty.

“Only ten years?” Zhou Wen felt that Wang Mingyuan wasn’t someone who would randomly say things. If he said ten years, the chances were very high that it was the case.

“In fact, ten years refers to the point when the restrictions on the dimensional zones are completely lost. And during

this period, the restrictions of the dimensional zones will constantly decrease. Humanity doesn’t have ten years.” Wang Mingyuan paused before suddenly asking Zhou Wen, “Little Wen, if you are made to choose between pain and death, which would you choose?”

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 329 - Failed Fusion

Chapter 329 Failed Fusion

“It depends on how painful it is,” Zhou Wen said after some thought.

“Worse than death.” Wang Mingyuan said tersely.

Zhou Wen was momentarily at a loss for an answer. This was because the words “worse than death” were too vague. He didn’t know what kind of concept it was because he hadn’t experienced such pain.

Zhou Wen felt that physical pain could sometimes be endured for a moment, but a psychological blow might very well result in a pain worse than physical pain.

Seemingly sensing that he had been too vague, Wang Mingyuan thought for a while and said, “Let’s use a more common analogy. If there’s a woman you love very much, and she’s raped in front of you, but you don’t have the ability to save her. You have two choices. One is to fight to the death. Even though you know you can’t save her, you insist on dying to protect her. You will have a clear conscience. The second option is to collude with those people and think of ways to preserve her life. After that, you try to rescue her out of her misery before killing those people to avenge her. If it were you, what would you choose?”

“This is really a difficult question. Reason tells me that I should choose the second option, but I’m ultimately only one person. I’m afraid I wouldn’t have the mental fortitude

to complete the second choice. Therefore, I believe that if I were to encounter something like this, I would choose the first option," Zhou Wen said after seriously considering it.

"Is that so?" Wang Mingyuan's tone was odd as though it was both a question and answer. It was unknown if he was asking Zhou Wen or himself.

"Teacher, what is the answer to this question?" Zhou Wen knew that some problems weren't limited to the question itself. If he was smart enough, he could think of other answers.

Wang Mingyuan smiled and said, "There's no answer. I've asked Jiang Yan and the others this question too. Haifeng's answer is identical to yours. Ziya said he would kill that woman first and Jiang Yan chose the second option."

"Then what's your answer, Teacher?" Zhou Wen asked curiously.

"I don't have an answer." Wang Mingyuan changed the topic. "How's the situation at the Zhuolu battlefield? Have they found your former principal?"

"Not yet. An Sheng called me a few times, but he didn't say anything. However, I can tell that it isn't going well. Perhaps many sacrifices have been made." Zhou Wen fell silent after saying that.

An Sheng seldom contacted him recently, but Zhou Wen knew that the An family definitely wouldn't give up. They would definitely get someone to open the doors of the two palaces. When the time came, they would definitely suffer losses. After all, the An family didn't have Mythical experts. What they could do wouldn't be much better than Zhou Wen's.

“I recently learned some divination arts. Although I’m not very proficient in them, they seem to be effective to some extent. I did read your former principal’s fortune, and the results are that there’s a silver lining. He should be fine for the time being,” Wang Mingyuan said.

Zhou Wen didn’t know if Wang Mingyuan was comforting him or if he really had learned divination, but he felt better after hearing that.

After hanging up, Zhou Wen continued grinding. However, he didn’t make much progress. Be it the white cocoon in the war wagon or the two palaces in the temple, he was at an impasse.

Zhou Wen’s strength had seemingly reached a bottleneck. No matter how many Primordial Energy Skills he learned or cultivated any other Primordial Energy Arts, they weren’t of much use.

He felt that he couldn’t continue grinding aimlessly. Therefore, he planned on organizing his thoughts.

Zhou Wen: Legendary

Life Providence: Sigh of the King

Strength: 21

Speed: 21

Constitution: 20

Primordial Energy: 21

Primordial Energy Skill: Demonic Astral Wheel, Nine Dragons Art, Dragon Gate Flying Immortal Skill, Ghost Steps,

Transcendent Flying Immortal, Ashen Palm, etc.

Companion Beast: Truth Listener, Banana Fairy, Tyrant Behemoth, Mutated Stone Chi, Mutated Sword Fang Fish, Mutated Lotus Flower Ant, Silver-Winged Sky Spider Youngling, Ghost Bride, White Shadow of Poison, Mutated Overlord Snake, Doctor Darkness, Mutated Demonized General, Saber Shield Knight, etc.

In terms of Primordial Energy Skills, they were mainly focused on Speed and movement techniques. There wasn't much of a problem in this area. With sufficiently fast Speed, one was better at attacking and escaping than the average person.

Among Companion Beasts, there were only a few that were frequently used. The Mutated Lotus Flower Ant was clearly unable to keep up with the current battles.

However, the real deciding factor was still the Mythical Banana Fairy. Truth Listener had yet to finish its incubation, so it was unknown what changes it would undergo in the future.

Typical Companion Beasts have all kinds of problems. It's not that their stats are bad, but that their Life Providences are bad or their Primordial Energy Skills are lacking. In short, they have all kinds of flaws. Just like Overlord Spear, Ever-Victorious is indeed a good skill, but the Mutated Overlord Snake's level is too low. Its stats are only considered average. Even with Ever-Victorious's skill, it's difficult to use it to the fullest. After some thought, Zhou Wen still had a route to take. That was to use his phone's pet fusion capabilities to fuse the pets so as to get the Life Providences, Primordial Energy Skills, and stats he wanted on one pet.

First, it’s the Ever-Victorious skill. I have to think of a way to raise the Overlord Snake’s level or fuse this skill with other pets. Zhou Wen matched the Mutated Overlord Snake with his other pets and looked at their compatibility score.

Mutated Overlord Snake and other pets had a relatively low compatibility score. It didn’t exceed 30% at best. It only had a slightly higher compatibility score with the Mutated Sword Fang Fish.

He didn’t have any better options, and keeping them didn’t seem to be of much use. Zhou Wen hesitated for a moment but couldn’t bear to risk it.

It was still a low chance of success that didn’t exceed 50%—just too low. If he failed, Zhou Wen didn’t wish to grind the Mutated Overlord Snake again. It would be a waste of time, something about the thought of grinding it made him retch.

The success rate of Doctor Darkness and other Companion Beasts’ fusion chance was even lower. Basically, there wasn’t one that exceeded a compatibility score of 10%. It was about the same for Ghost Bride.

The Mutated Demonized General and Saber Shield Knight had a compatibility score of nearly 50%. Zhou Wen gritted his teeth and chose to fuse them. The two weren’t very useful now, and if they couldn’t progress further, keeping them wouldn’t be of much

use.

Boom!

With the sound of the explosion, there was nothing on the phone. The Mutated Demonized General and the Saber

Shield Knight vanished as the words “Fusion failed” appeared.

Zhou Wen was instantly depressed. The Mutated Demonized General could still be grinded, but it wouldn’t be easy to obtain the Saber Shield Knight.

Unwilling to give up just like that, Zhou Wen fused the Mutated Lotus Flower Ant and a Mutated Buddha Heart Lotus, hoping to increase its stats a little.

The compatibility score was nearly 70%. Zhou Wen originally believed that it would definitely succeed, but to his surprise, with a bang, they vanished once again.

That actually failed? Zhou Wen was extremely depressed. He wasn’t willing to give up, so he decided to place the Mutated Overlord Snake and Mutated Sword Fang Fish together and risk it again.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 330 - Overlord Sword

Chapter 330 Overlord Sword

I can’t fail three consecutive times, right? Heavens, please bless me with success! Zhou Wen gritted his teeth as he clicked on the fusion. He saw the sparkling light on the two Companion Beasts slowly fuse together.

Amidst Zhou Wen’s uneasy feelings, all he heard was a chime. The phone emitted a light as a new Companion Beast appeared on screen.

I succeeded. Zhou Wen was delighted as he hurriedly checked the new pet.

The new pet looked somewhat different from the Overlord Snake and the Sword Fang Fish. The Overlord Snake was black, while the Sword Fang Fish was golden; the new pet was a dark gold color. It wasn’t as dark as black, nor was it as bright as gold. It looked quite pleasing to the eye.

Mutated Overlord Sword Snake… Epic stage… Zhou Wen saw its name and saw that it looked like a sea serpent. He didn’t waste his time looking carefully and directly checked its stats.

Now, what Zhou Wen was most concerned about was whether the Ever-Victorious skill was still around.

Mutated Overlord Sword Snake: Epic

Life Providence: Overlord of Swords

Life Soul: Sword Flash Snake

Strength: 40

Speed: 39

Constitution: 27

Primordial Energy: 36

Talent Skill: Ever-Victorious, Fangwheel Sword Flash

Companion Form: Sword

Zhou Wen was immediately overjoyed when he saw this. Although the Overlord Snake's Death Wrap and the Devourer techniques couldn't be inherited, the strongest Ever-Victorious had been inherited. Fangwheel Sword Flash was also a very potent skill, so with both present, they could be considered excellent-grade.

The other stats were all pretty good. The Life Providence of Overlord of Swords could raise the might of the user when using sword techniques, so it had a certain suppressive effect on typical sword-type Companion Beasts. It was a very good Life Providence.

Sword Flash Snake was basically the same as the Sword Fang Fish's Sword Flash Fish Life Soul. When it used Fangwheel Sword Flash, the Life Soul would enhance the might of the sword flash, allowing more sword flashes to appear.

If there was anything about the Mutated Overlord Sword Snake that wasn't perfect, it was its Constitution-27 points. Even before the fusion, the Sword Fang Fish's Constitution

wasn’t this low. It was quite a mystery why the RNG gave such a low Constitution.

With a poor Constitution, it meant that the Mutated Overlord Sword Snake would be easily injured. And when transformed into its sword form, it could easily be damaged or be cleaved apart.

The Overload Sword Snake in its sword form was a dark gold greatsword, and the sword’s edge radiated a cold glint. There was a black, snake-like pattern on the sword’s spine.

If one looked carefully, they would realize that the sword had dark fish scale patterns that resembled a pattern that had been tempered and forged countless times. The entire sword was extremely domineering. It was five feet long and with Zhou Wen’s strength, he could only barely lift it. If he were to strike with it, he probably wouldn’t have any strength left after swinging it around.

He tried out the might of the Overlord Sword in-game and slashed out with his sword. The sword flash transformed into a circular blade that slashed forward. Ever-Victorious also augmented the sword flash, splitting a Chi into two.

What a powerful sword flash! Zhou Wen couldn’t help but be overjoyed. The might of the Overlord Sword was no weaker than Li Xuan’s Thundergod Sword. It might even be stronger.

Ever-Victorious was even more powerful than a sword flash augmented with lightning attributes. In a comparison between the two swords, Thundergod Sword might probably lose its accolade as the best offensive pet.

The only flaw of the Overlord Sword was that its Constitution was poor. It was alright slashing out a sword flash, but if the sword were to clash directly with the Thundergod Sword, it

would likely crack open a notch. Repeats of this might snap it.

How can I raise Overlord Sword’s Constitution? Otherwise, it won’t live up to its name. Zhou Wen quickly came up with an idea.

If a Companion Beast were to fuse with a Companion Egg, it would mainly be the Companion Beast taking center stage while the Companion Eggs became supplements. The Overlord Snake’s basic appearance and abilities wouldn’t change much other than become stronger.

As long as he found a Companion Egg with a high Constitution that had a high compatibility with Overlord Sword Snake, he could increase its Constitution.

Of course, after experiencing the previous failure, Zhou Wen definitely wouldn’t risk it with the Overlord Sword Snake with anything less than 80%. It would be best if the compatibility was above 90% before he made an attempt.

However, after a few matches, he realized that the compatibility between the other pets and the Overlord Sword Snake wasn’t very high. The highest was less than 50%. Even the compatibility between the Overlord Snake and the Overlord Sword Snake was only 49%.

Zhou Wen planned on making a trip to a shop selling Companion Eggs when he had the time. By matching them together, he might be able to find a Companion Egg with a higher compatibility score with the Overlord Sword Snake.

As for the remaining Companion Beasts, Zhou Wen looked at them and couldn’t bear to fuse them. He had no choice but to leave it at that. He took the Overlord Sword into the

underground sea, hoping to see if the Overlord Sword's sword flash could approach the white cocoon.

He once again came into the war wagon and looked at the white cocoon in the darkness. Zhou Wen pulled out his Overlord Sword and slashed at the white cocoon. Immediately, the sword flash of Overlord Sword spun like a circular blade as it headed for the white cocoon.

Intense ripples appeared in the air. It was as if a calm water surface had been torn apart as the sword flash approached the white cocoon at a discernible pace.

Zhou Wen was overjoyed when he saw this. He watched as the sword flash tore through the invisible force outside the white cocoon and hit it, tearing open a hole.

However, before he could make the next move, the black dragon rushed in and swallowed the blood-colored avatar. The game screen went black.

A sword flash with Ever-Victorious is really useful! Even Zhou Wen was surprised. After all, he couldn't touch the white cocoon back when he used the Overlord Snake.

This made Zhou Wen see hope again. Now that he was able to rupture the white cocoon, the only thing he needed to consider was how to damage the white cocoon before the black dragons charged in. He also needed to obtain a drop of blood from the creature inside.

The Overlord Sword together with Transcendent Flying Immortal was already fast enough. Together with Ghost Steps' Speed, it was difficult to find someone faster than Zhou Wen at the same level. However, he still wasn't able to complete his goal before the black dragons charged in.

Zhou Wen had already done the math. He needed to slash at least three times before he could produce a gap that allowed the blood-colored avatar to charge in. After several attempts, he was swallowed by the black dragon that rushed in before he could finish the three strikes.

From the looks of it, my Transcendent Flying Immortal still isn’t fast enough. Other than the three strikes, I still need one more strike to damage the creature inside the white cocoon to obtain its blood. My sword needs to be even faster. Zhou Wen planned on honing his Transcendent Flying Immortal to raise it to Rank 10.

The thought of raising his sword’s speed reminded Zhou Wen of Feng Qiuyan. Hence, he called Feng Qiuyan and asked him if he had the time to be his sparring partner.

In terms of speed, Feng Qiuyan was definitely one of his fastest peers. Furthermore, with his Swift Saber Heavenly King Life Providence and talent, Zhou Wen really couldn’t figure out who could be faster than him among his schoolmates.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 331 - Who Is the Coach

Chapter 331 Who Is the Coach

“I’m free! Where do we meet?” Feng Qiuyan agreed readily.

“Let’s go to the training grounds,” Zhou Wen said.

“Ming Xiu is here as well. He wants to join. Can I bring him along?” Feng Qiuyan asked.

“It’s just practice. He can come if he wants to.” Zhou Wen felt that it didn’t matter. After all, Transcendent Flying Immortal was no secret.

“Ten minutes.” Feng Qiuyan hung up after saying that.

Ming Xiu really wanted to know how strong Zhou Wen was. Feng Qiuyan, who he had trained, was already so powerful, so Zhou Wen’s strength must definitely be stronger.

Just as the two left the house, they met Tian Zhenzhen, who had come to deliver some items to Ming Xiu. Upon hearing that they were going to train with Zhou Wen, Tian Zhenzhen requested to tag along.

Since Zhou Wen didn’t mind anyone watching, Feng Qiuyan didn’t reject her. The three of them headed for the training grounds.

As Tian Zhenzhen walked, she thought to herself, I don’t believe that a student can be stronger than Ming Xiu. I have to personally see if Zhou Wen is a cheat.

When the trio arrived at the training grounds, Zhou Wen was already waiting inside. He was practicing the simplest drawing of a sword and striking, unwilling to miss out on any possibility of raising his sword’s speed.

Is that Zhou Wen? He looks very ordinary. Although he’s rather good-looking and has a good figure, why does he look a little pale and seem to be very weak? Is such a person really as good as Ming Xiu says? Tian Zhenzhen was even more suspicious when she saw Zhou Wen.

was

It wasn’t her fault. Zhou Wen usually expended plenty of his blood. He had also previously suffered a serious injury, and recently, he had been grinding the underground sea and temple. He had died too many times, so his body’s ability to regenerate blood could hardly keep up with his expenditure.

m

Zhou Wen had been checking on the information recently. He wanted to see if there were any Companion Beasts that could enhance his liver and organs, or even Companion Beasts that could enhance his marrow.

Unfortunately, they were very rare. Zhou Wen hadn’t discovered any for the time being.

After the trio entered the training grounds. Ming Xiu and Tian Zhenzhen sat on a bench beside the grounds as Feng Qiuyan walked over and asked, “Coach, I’m here. How shall I help you in the sparring?”

“I want to raise my sword’s speed. You are an expert in this area. Give me some suggestions,” Zhou Wen said to Feng Qiuyan.

“Although I use sabers, striking out with a sword or saber is almost the same. A saber strike’s speed is different from a body’s speed. Typically, a saber’s speed is faster than body movement speed. Firstly, a saber is lighter, and a saber’s shape is easier to deal with piercing any air resistance. The human body is far lacking. It’s heavy and there’s more surface area; therefore, there are fewer things to consider when striking out with a saber. Other than unleashing one’s strength, technique is also very important. The correct saber-wielding posture and way to release your strength allow one to increase the speed of the saber. However, to greatly improve speed, one can only focus on the technique when striking. Just like using a gun. A bullet’s speed is all the same, but what’s key is the instant when the gun is drawn. Whoever draws first can pull the trigger faster; thus, determining the victor. Striking with a saber follows the same principle…” Feng Qiuyan explained certain key points to Zhou Wen.

Zhou Wen tried the techniques and key points that Feng Qiuyan had explained to him and found them especially useful. Indeed, his strikes were much faster, but such speed still failed to meet his requirements.

The freed black dragons are just too powerful. I have limited time after I charge into the war wagon. Such a fast sword speed is still insufficient, Zhou Wen thought.

Tian Zhenzhen was watching from the sidelines with Ming Xiu. After watching for a while, she curled her lips and said, “Ming Xiu, how is this Zhou Wen impressive? He’s Feng Qiuyan’s personal coach, so why is he trying to get Feng Qiuyan to teach him? Who’s the coach here? Don’t tell me you’ve mixed things up?”

“Perhaps there’s a deeper meaning to Zhou Wen’s actions?” Ming Xiu said uncertainly.

Although from the looks of it, Zhou Wen was indeed seeking advice from Feng Qiuyan, Ming Xiu had a deep impression of Zhou Wen’s potency. Therefore, he didn’t think as much as Tian Zhenzhen, believing that Zhou Wen had plans.

TI

“It’s obvious. Zhou Wen is learning from Feng Qiuyan. What kind of deeper meaning can there be?” Tian Zhenzhen increasingly felt that Ming Xiu had been brainwashed by Zhou Wen.

“Watch and see. Zhou Wen likes to do the unexpected. Perhaps this is also a teaching method,” Ming Xiu said after some thought.

Zhou Wen had already grasped the method Feng Qiuyan was talking about. All he needed was time to practice. However, even if he reached true mastery, the improvement in his speed would still be insufficient.

“Use your swift saber to attack me,” Zhou Wen said to Feng Qiuyan after some thought. He wanted to observe Feng Qiuyan’s saber techniques in actual combat to see if there was anything he could use as a reference to raise his sword’s speed.

Feng Qiuyan didn’t waste any time. He picked up a practice wooden saber from the rack, but he glanced at the practice greatsword in Zhou Wen’s hand and said, “Coach, if you want to be swift with the sword, this type of greatsword isn’t suitable. It’s best if you use a thinner and lighter one.”

It wasn’t like Zhou Wen didn’t want to change it, but only the Overlord Sword could break through the white cocoon. As for the Overlord Sword, it was a greatsword, and its weight was heavier than the practice sword in his hand. Therefore he had to use the greatsword to practice. It would be useless to master it using the thin sword.

If it weren’t for the fact that the Overlord Sword was too heavy, Zhou Wen wouldn’t have needed training. Just the technique and speed of Transcendent Flying Immortal were fast enough.

“I know. I just want to use the greatsword to practice my swift sword,” Zhou Wen said.

When Tian Zhenzhen heard that, she became more convinced that Zhou Wen wasn’t a proper coach. No one would use a greatsword to hone their speed. Anyone who practiced swords knew that such a heavy weapon wasn’t suited for ordinary sword techniques at all, much less fast ones. Even someone who didn’t know how to wield a sword would definitely know that such a heavy weapon couldn’t allow one to take the path of the quick sword.

Feng Qiuyan only nodded as he drew his saber and slashed at Zhou Wen.

It was unknown how Feng Qiuyan had been training recently, but Zhou Wen realized that his saber techniques had become even faster and stronger. Furthermore, they weren’t as impetuous as before. He already had the aura of a saber expert.

Zhou Wen raised his greatsword to block Feng Qiuyan’s saber, finding each strike of Feng Qiuyan’s saber becoming faster than the last, but it was unusually stable. It was like a flowing river that flowed without end.

After Zhou Wen blocked the first strike, he realized that he couldn’t find a chance to strike back. Under the relentless inundation of the saber techniques, all he could do was retreat and block.

What impressive saber techniques. This fellow’s improvement is just too fast. Zhou Wen couldn’t help but be surprised at Feng Qiuyan’s rate of improvement. He seemed to exude a completely different feeling every time he met him.

“Feng Qiuyan’s saber techniques are really impressive. Although I can learn the same saber techniques and reach a certain mastery as well. However, no matter how I use them, I can’t give off the feeling that he does. It’s like there’s always something lacking,” Ming Xiu said in thought.

“Feng Qiuyan is indeed very strong, but Zhou Wen isn’t able to counterattack from Feng Qiuyan’s strikes. How is he as strong as you say?” Tian Zhenzhen was almost certain that Ming Xiu had been hoodwinked. Zhou Wen wasn’t as strong as the rumors said.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 332 - Sword Training

Chapter 332 Sword Training

Feng Qiuyan’s saber slashed faster and faster. The swift and forceful posture was as though Zhou Wen would have his head chopped off if he blinked.

Zhou Wen had switched his Primordial Energy Art to the Small Perfection of Wisdom Sutra. The Small Perfection of Wisdom Sutra strengthened his Constitution, but it wasn’t as simple as that.

There were six types of the Perfection of Wisdom according to Buddhism. The first was True Determination Perfection of Wisdom, the second was Realm Perfection of Wisdom, the third was Linguistic Perfection of Wisdom, the fourth was Enlightenment Perfection of Wisdom, and the fifth was Attendant Perfection of Wisdom. The sixth was the Diamond Perfection of Wisdom that most people were more familiar with.

The Perfection of Wisdom was about wisdom, with the six types of Perfection of Wisdom being the wisdom of the Universe. The Small Perfection of Wisdom Sutra was the ability to raise one’s physical body. It made one’s senses sharp enough to understand the underlying laws of the Universe.

When using the Small Perfection of Wisdom Sutra, Zhou Wen’s body and six senses were enhanced. His perception of the outside world also became very sharp.

He could sense the minute changes in Feng Qiuyan’s saber technique with each delivered strike. Although the saber technique looked simple, it contained an inexplicable technique. Zhou Wen was also able to sense the flaws of Feng Qiuyan’s saber techniques.

The greatsword was too heavy, and it suffered immense resistance as well. He wasn’t able to match Feng Qiuyan’s speed. All could Zhou Wen only use the flaws in Feng Qiuyan’s saber techniques to barely fend off his attacks.

However, it had to be said that Feng Qiuyan was indeed a martial arts prodigy. If Zhou Wen were to exploit any flaws he used once, Feng Qiuyan would immediately correct them, preventing him from exploiting them a second time.

Fast! Fast! Fast!

Feng Qiuyan’s saber was so fast that most couldn’t have a clear grasp of what was happening even without blinking. Tian Zhenzhen didn’t even blink as she watched from the side. However, all she could see were flickering saber flashes and shadows, preventing her from seeing its trajectory.

Ming Xiu could only barely keep up with Feng Qiuyan’s saber speed and his saber techniques.

Zhou Wen, who was directly facing Feng Qiuyan, felt this more acutely. He thought to himself, Feng Qiuyan is really incredible. If I were to fight him, I would have to use all my strength and defeat him with the first few strikes. The longer one delays, the less chance there is of defeating him. After a hundred strikes, I’m afraid he’d be truly invincible against all his peers of the same level. No one could stop such a swift saber. It’s no wonder his Life Providence is Swift Saber Heavenly King. He really has the potential to be a King of the Sabers.

Zhou Wen had reaped immense benefits from facing Feng Qiuyan's saber techniques. The way Feng Qiuyan struck out and withdrew his saber was like a textbook example. It allowed Zhou Wen to realize what he needed to do to be the fastest.

If the greatsword in his hand wasn't as heavy, he might have been able to keep up with Feng Qiuyan's speed.

Of course, Zhou Wen didn't have the talent of Swift Saber Heavenly King, so if he allowed the situation to continue, Feng Qiuyan would definitely be faster than him. It wasn't wrong to say that he was invincible after a hundred saber strikes. Even Zhou Wen wasn't willing to fight Feng Qiuyan after he delivered a hundred saber strikes.

However, Zhou Wen was now learning, so he naturally didn't stop Feng Qiuyan from continuing his slashes. Only through such a swift saber could Zhou Wen more accurately sense how Feng Qiuyan managed to strike and withdraw with his saber.

Soon, Zhou Wen realized that Feng Qiuyan was indeed different from the typical person. The average person was quick at striking out but much slower at retracting.

However, Feng Qiuyan's retracting was faster than his slashing, so this resulted in him being able to deliver three strikes in a time frame which most could only deliver two.

This technique was naturally learned by Zhou Wen. At the same time, he realized that Feng Qiuyan would shake his wrist habitually every time he struck.

Although this action had benefits in raising the saber's speed, it also made his saber move an additional distance. This distance was already considered a flaw by Zhou Wen.

Using this flaw, Zhou Wen dealt a blow with the hilt of his sword and struck Feng Qiuyan’s wrist. Indeed, Feng Qiuyan failed to defend against it. His attack instantly slowed down as he ducked Zhou Wen’s strike.

However, Feng Qiuyan’s attack had no intention of stopping. His saber stance didn’t stop as he slashed forward once more, but his wrist movement had already vanished.

At that moment, Feng Qiuyan’s saber techniques were nearly inconceivably fast Even though he was only using a rubber saber, its slashes emitted a cold, sinister aura, as though they would dice up Zhou Wen.

Even Ming Xiu and Tian Zhenzhen, who were sitting by the side, felt a chill in their hearts. It was as though the saber beams could slash at their necks at any moment.

This Feng Qiuyan is really incredible. He probably doesn’t pale in comparison to Ming Xiu. Although Tian Zhenzhen had always felt that Ming Xiu was invincible among peers of the same level, she had no choice but to rank him equal to Ming Xiu after seeing Feng Qiuyan’s powerful saber moves. She didn’t dare underestimate him in the slightest.

However, when she saw Zhou Wen, who had been suppressed by Feng Qiuyan’s saber techniques, she was even more certain that Ming Xiu had definitely been duped.

Although this Zhou Wen’s strength isn’t bad and he’s able to withstand Feng Qiuyan’s swift saber for so long, it’s impossible for such strength to be enough to be Feng Qiuyan’s personal coach. I’ll have to talk to Ming Xiu about it later, Tian Zhenzhen thought to herself.

Ming Xiu had experienced Feng Qiuyan’s swift saber moves many times. Since he had started the exchange, he had

sparred with Feng Qiuyan daily, so he was extremely familiar with his saber speed. However, today, Feng Qiuyan seemed exceptionally strong. Ming Xiu felt that if he was Feng Qiuyan's opponent, the outcome would have been decided long ago. It was impossible for him to continue allowing Feng Qiuyan to slash out; otherwise, he would definitely lose.

However, Zhou Wen clearly didn't have any intention of winning. He continued letting Feng Qiuyan's swift saber accelerate even faster.

What does Coach want? Ming Xiu was puzzled as he frowned in thought.

In the blink of an eye, Zhou Wen had managed to simplify his striking and withdrawal to the extreme. However, he still felt that he couldn't match Feng Qiuyan's saber speed.

The saber was so fast that it was almost invisible. Even Feng Qiuyan himself was beginning to lose control of such speed. Veins protruded from his fingers as his hand, which held the saber, trembled. It was as though the saber might lose control at any moment.

"Feng Qiuyan, be careful. I'm about to strike." Zhou Wen was unable to withstand the pressure. He suddenly shouted and dragged the greatsword in his hand as he slashed upwards. He had used Transcendent Flying Immortal.

Transcendent Flying Immortal had been simplified and improved by Zhou Wen. Although he couldn't reach the level of Feng Qiuyan's saber retraction being faster than his saber striking, he was able to reach near parity. All sorts of tiny actions were simplified to the extreme. Nothing was superfluous or redundant.

Compared to the past, Zhou Wen’s Transcendent Flying Immortal was more domineering and direct. It lacked some lithe and grace, but it was incomparably domineering

Tian Zhenzhen originally imagined that Zhou Wen was about to be cleaved down by that unbelievable fast saber, but to her surprise, Zhou Wen’s aura changed. Instantly, he resembled a powerful demon that had descended into the world. He became one with the sword and streaked across the sky at lightning speed. Sword shadows intersected with Feng Qiuyan at the center, forming an arc with the sounds of swords and sabers clashing. It was impossible to tell how many times their weapons clashed.

Despite Feng Qiuyan’s swift saber, he couldn’t keep up with the domineering swordplay. After the sword shadows that filled the sky dissipated, Zhou Wen and Feng Qiuyan stood facing each other.

The saber in Feng Qiuyan’s hand hung to the ground as Zhou Wen’s greatsword rested on his neck.

This person… is too terrifying… Tian Zhenzhen was alarmed. She felt that Zhou Wen’s strike was the most domineering and grandest sword technique she had ever seen in her entire life.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 333 - People of Different Realms

Chapter 333 People of Different Realms

Zhou Wen was delighted by the improvement in Transcendent Flying Immortal. He wanted to thank Feng Qiuyan for sparring with him; otherwise, he wouldn’t have been able to make such progress in such a short period of time.

However, before Zhou Wen could say a word, Feng Qiuyan said, “Coach, thank you for your guidance. I’ve learned something.”

“What did you learn?” Zhou Wen was somewhat confused, unsure what Feng Qiuyan meant.

Feng Qiuyan said solemnly, “Coach, you specifically came to point out the flaws in my saber techniques. You truly care about me, and I will definitely not disappoint you. I will definitely be accomplished in the future. Coach, don’t worry.”

Who the hell has expectations for you? Zhou Wen looked at Feng Qiuyan with a mixed expression. Seeing Feng Qiuyan’s sincere and serious expression, he couldn’t bring himself to thank him. All he could do was say helplessly, “Train well. I have something to tend to. I’ll be leaving now.”

“Coach, don’t worry. I’ll definitely work hard,” Feng Qiuyan shouted as Zhou Wen walked away.

Zhou Wen didn’t turn his head as he waved his hand. He really didn’t know what to say. He clearly hadn’t taught anything, but Feng Qiuyan always made rapid progress. This left Zhou Wen puzzled.

“Coach’s swordsmanship is really amazing!” Ming Xiu walked over and said with a fiery gaze.

He had been researching the sword technique his father had passed down. He wanted to modify it so that it could truly join the ranks of formidable sword techniques. Initially, he had no clue how to proceed, but after seeing Zhou Wen’s Transcendent Flying Immortal, he had a vague idea.

Tian Zhenzhen said from the side, “Zhou Wen’s sword technique is indeed quite good, but he only defeated Feng Qiuyan once.”

Tian Zhenzhen was already convinced that Zhou Wen was very strong. The strike was indeed domineering and it left a deep impression on her. However, from the beginning to the end, Zhou Wen had been constantly suppressed by Feng Qiuyan. At the end of it, he only had a one-strike advantage. From her point of view, the two of them were evenly matched, and Zhou Wen had only won by a narrow margin.

However, Feng Qiuyan shook his head and said, “That’s just what you see on the surface. Actually, Coach wasn’t asking me to teach him the technique of a swift sword, but to point out the flaws in my saber techniques.”

“Is that so?” Tian Zhenzhen was quite doubtful of Feng Qiuyan’s words.

Feng Qiuyan asked, “Didn’t you realize that Coach rarely counterattacked?”

“Isn’t it because he was suppressed by your swift saber?” Tian Zhenzhen asked.

Feng Qiuyan said in all seriousness, “Of course not. The reason Coach didn’t counterattack is that he wanted me to demonstrate my saber techniques to the fullest extent so that he could find the flaws in them. He didn’t counterattack much, but every time he did, he hit the flaws in my saber technique, making me realize my weaknesses so that I can correct them in time.”

“Is that so?” Tian Zhenzhen’s eyes widened in disbelief. However, this came from the horse’s mouth. She just couldn’t doubt him.

Ming Xiu also said, “That’s true. Every time Coach made a move, he did strike at the flaws in the saber technique. To be able to see through the flaws in an opponent’s saber technique so quickly in a battle, his martial arts attainments are indeed much better than ours.”

With even Ming Xiu saying that. Tian Zhenzhen couldn’t keep up her doubts.

However, Ming Xiu didn’t know that Zhou Wen’s powers weren’t purely because of his martial arts attainments. It was an ability that came with the Small Perfection of Wisdom Sutra.

Feng Qiuyan nodded in agreement. “Indeed. Coach is caring. He knew that my saber techniques were flawed, so he came specially to point them out to me. Only after I corrected all the flaws in my saber techniques did he defeat me with one strike. If he had gone all out from the beginning, I wouldn’t have been able to withstand that strike of his, so how could I deliver a hundred strikes at Coach?”

Feng Qiuyan didn’t know that Zhou Wen’s Transcendent Flying Immortal wasn’t that strong in the beginning. It was only because he learned the beneficial traits of a hundred saber strikes did he evolve it into something so terrifying.

That’s what happened? Tian Zhenzhen was alarmed. On careful thought, it did seem to be the case. If Zhou Wen were to directly use that extremely domineering strike, wouldn’t Feng Qiuyan have lost in one strike?

With this in mind, Tian Zhenzhen couldn’t help but sigh. “Sunset College indeed lives up to its reputation as the best college in this district. To think a student could be this strong. My horizons have been too stilted in the past.”

“That’s very normal. You guys haven’t been here for too long. As time goes by, you will understand Coach’s true strength. In the past, when Coach played games on his cell phone while competing with me. He didn’t even spare me a glance. I wasn’t his match either. Furthermore, I was completely defeated.” The competition Feng Qiuyan mentioned was actually back during their first encounter at the ball launcher. It wasn’t a real battle.However, when Tian Zhenzhen and Ming Xiu heard this, it left them shocked beyond words. An expert like Feng Qiuyan who could fight Ming Xiu to a draw could actually be defeated by Zhou Wen with one hand. Furthermore, he was gaming on his phone. This was unbelievable.

“Coach… Is he really that powerful?” Tian Zhenzhen changed the way she addressed Zhou Wen, no longer calling Zhou Wen by his name.

“I wouldn’t call him strong, but that he’s on a completely different realm from us. Alright, it’s time for me to train. After Coach’s guidance, not only did he make me correct the flaws

of my saber techniques, he even made me realize something new. His final strike was to tell me that no one would foolishly wait for me to deliver more than a hundred strikes. If I can't resolve this problem, my saber techniques can only be considered inferior. Now, I'm going to practice my saber techniques and resolve this problem." After saying that, Feng Qiuyan turned and left.

"I'm also going to practice my swordplay. Coach's strike has inspired me greatly. I think I have a direction in my research of my own sword technique." Ming Xiu also left hurriedly.

Tian Zhenzhen followed Ming Xiu with a complicated expression. She turned back and looked in the direction in which Zhou Wen had left. I thought Ming Xiu was invincible among his peers. I never expected there to be such a strong peer in the world. It's truly terrifying.

Zhou Wen naturally didn't know what they were thinking. Now, his Transcendent Flying Immortal had improved significantly. All he needed to do was train for a period of time to hone his striking and retracting, allowing him to advance to Rank 10 quickly.

Zhou Wen didn't do anything significant for the next few days. He just trained his Transcendent Flying Immortal in-game. He wanted to push it to the limit and slice through the white cocoon in a perfect manner to obtain a drop of blood from the terrifying creature within to see if he could advance to the Epic stage.

Although he already had quite a number of Epic pets, such as the Mutated Stone Chi, the Purple Air Bell, and the White Shadow of Poison-which were all very strong-he would ultimately suffer if his strength was too weak. It didn't

matter how powerful his pets were if he were to be killed. All of them would vanish and be of no use.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 334 - Something Happened

Chapter 334 Something Happened

“Zhou Wen, something happened. Come to Old Dragon Cave quickly.” Early in the morning, Zhou Wen was still sleeping when his phone rang. When the call connected, he heard Zhong Ziya’s anxious voice.

Zhong Ziya was usually an indifferent person who didn’t take anything to heart. Zhou Wen had never heard him speak in such a panicked tone before and had an ominous feeling in his heart.

“What happened?” Zhou Wen hurriedly asked.

“The League’s Special Inspector Bureau sealed the laboratory, saying that Teacher is a spy from overseas and has arrested him. The school is negotiating with the Special Inspector Bureau,” Zhong Ziya hurriedly explained the situation.

“What?” Zhou Wen was immediately stunned when he heard that. He couldn’t connect Wang Mingyuan to being an overseas spy.

“Wait for me. I’ll be right there.” Zhou Wen didn’t believe that Wang Mingyuan was a spy. Furthermore, with his understanding of the Special Inspector Bureau, he knew their modus operandi. They would place a groundless, trumped-up crime on their target. He was a living example.

When Zhou Wen arrived at the scene, he realized that the entire Dragon Gate Grotto was sealed off. The uniformed

inspectors from the Special Inspector Bureau probably numbered about a thousand. Many of them had high-ranking epaulets on their shoulders.

Zhou Wen recognized Liz from before, but from the looks of it, she was only qualified to stand guard at the entrance.

There were also Luoyang military, college management, and students outside, making the scene look extremely chaotic.

Zhong Ziya, Hui Haifeng, and Jiang Yan were outside, their expressions grave.

“What’s the situation now? Is he alright?” Zhou Wen hurriedly asked.

“It must be a mistake by the bureau. How could Teacher be a spy?” Zhong Ziya said.

Hui Haifeng comforted, “It should be fine. This is Luoyang, and Tutor is from Luoyang’s Wang family. If there’s no concrete evidence, even the Director-General of the League’s Special Inspector Bureau being here in person wouldn’t be able to take him away so easily. Ms. Wang Fei and the school’s management, and Deputy Governor Qin are inside. It won’t be that easy for the bureau to frame Tutor.”

Zhou Wen felt better hearing Hui Haifeng’s words, but on second thought, he felt that something was amiss.

“The Deputy-General of the Special Inspector Bureau is here?” Zhou Wen asked Hui Haifeng.

Hui Haifeng nodded slightly. It was obvious that he was very worried about this.

If only they were ordinary inspectors, even if they were ministers of a particular ministry, everything could be easily resolved. It was almost impossible to take someone away from Sunset College.

However, it wasn’t an easily resolvable task if the Special Inspector Bureau’s Deputy-General was here personally. There was only one reason for him to come personally. The six hero families had already reached a consensus on the matter. This might be extremely disadvantageous for Wang Mingyuan.

The four of them no longer had any desire to speak. They looked at Dragon Gate Grotto eagerly, hoping to see anything or hear good news.

Not long after, they saw a group of people approaching them from the stone staircase. Many of them were part of the school management, including Wang Fei and Deputy Governor Qin, but their expressions were sour.

However, when they saw Wang Mingyuan, their bodies trembled. Wang Mingyuan was held by two inspectors at gunpoint. He was handcuffed.

Zhou Wen and company knew very well what this meant. Even Deputy Governor Qin had been unable to stop Wang Mingyuan from being arrested. The situation was already at a terrible level.

“Teacher,” Zhong Ziya called and wanted to charge forward, but he was stopped by two inspectors.

Zhong Ziya had a fearless personality. He tried to force his way in as though he would stab anyone who dared touch Wang Mingyuan even if they were a god.

“Ziya, stop it.” Wang Fei came over to stop Zhong Ziya. Zhong Ziya knew of Wang Fei and Wang Mingyuan’s relationship, so he didn’t charge madly when she stopped. However, his eyes remained glaring at the inspectors.

“They’re Wang Mingyuan’s students, right? Bring them in for interrogation.” A brawny, elderly man in a military uniform and jacket said as he glanced at Zhong Ziya and company.

“Yes, Deputy-General.” Some of the inspectors immediately took the order and wanted to arrest the rest.

“Deputy-General, they are only ordinary students. They only have an ordinary student-teacher relationship with Wang Mingyuan. As to them having any problems, we will conduct a thorough investigation. There’s no need to trouble your bureau.” Deputy Governor Qin extended his hand as a gesture. The troops beside him immediately protected Zhou Wen and company, forming a confrontation with the inspectors.

“Governor Qin, there is concrete evidence that Wang Mingyuan is an overseas spy. Can you guarantee that his students weren’t brainwashed by him and have been made downlines?” the elder said coldly as he stared at Qin Wufu.

“No, which is why I’ll take them in for proper investigation. Our Sunset army will not spare a bad person, but we won’t malign a good person either,” Qin Wufu said.

With Qin Wufu not backing down, the elder frowned slightly. Qiao Siyuan walked over and whispered something into the elder’s ear before looking at Zhou Wen.

ernor

The elder’s gaze landed on Zhou Wen and he said indifferently, “So he’s from the An family. It’s no wonder that Governor Qin is protecting him so flagrantly. Forget it, I’ll let him off on account of the An family. However, if our investigations show that he’s involved, I’m afraid the An family won’t be able to shirk their ties with him, even if they want to.”

Then, he ignored Qin Wufu’s reaction and led the inspectors outside.

Wang Mingyuan appeared very calm while he was being escorted out. He nodded at Zhou Wen and company with a smile, but he didn’t say a word.

“Ms. Wang Fei, did they frame him? Think of something; we can’t let them take him away. The Special Inspector Bureau is a place where even the innocent will come out half-dead. We mustn’t let Teacher enter a place like that,” Zhong Ziya said as he tugged at Wang Fei.He knew that with his own strength, there was no way he could save Wang Mingyuan even if he were to risk his life with the Deputy-General present.

Wang Fei held back Zhong Ziya as she said with a heavy expression, “We’ll talk when we get back.”

Everyone watched helplessly as Wang Mingyuan was escorted away. However, there was nothing they could do.

“Ms. Wang, can you explain the situation?” Zhou Wen asked.

Wang Fei sighed softly. “Although I don’t believe that Uncle Mingyuan would be that kind of person, the evidence is conclusive.”

The four of them were stunned when they heard that. Zhong Ziya said, “Impossible! How can Teacher be that kind of person? It must be the Special Inspector Bureau wronging Teacher. They are a bunch of mad dogs that bite anyone they see.”

Wang Fei shook her head slightly and said with a wry smile, “Those documents have Uncle Mingyuan’s signatures. Many of the things were gathered by Uncle Mingyuan himself. Those things can’t be faked.”

Zhou Wen and company were taken aback, momentarily at a loss for words.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 335 - Meeting

Chapter 335 Meeting

“I don’t care if Teacher is an overseas spy. I absolutely cannot let them take him away. Death is inevitable in a place like the Special Investigation Bureau. Ms. Wang, think of a way to snatch him back before they leave Luoyang and destroy the evidence. Then, we can just let Teacher escape into dimensional zones,” Zhong Ziya said.

Wang Fei shook her head and said, “Don’t spout nonsense. You can’t do that kind of thing. There’s no way for him to be a barbarian forever in the dimensional zone, right? Besides, the Director-General of the Special Inspector Bureau brought a Mythical Companion Beast with him. Who could snatch him under his nose?”

Upon hearing this, Zhong Ziya felt deflated. He frowned and said, “Is there no other solution?”

Wang Fei remained silent. If she had had a choice, the Wang family and Luoyang military wouldn’t have allowed the bureau to take him away from the school.

Jiang Yan suddenly said, “Perhaps, Tutor has been expecting this. Since he didn’t escape, it means that he doesn’t plan on escaping.”

“What do you mean?” Zhong Ziya asked with a glare. Jiang Yan pondered for a moment before continuing, “Think about it. Wouldn’t there always be someone in the laboratory amongst the four of us? Yet for some reason, none of us were in the laboratory out of coincidence. No one was there.”

“Isn’t that a coincidence? If Teacher had really predicted this, why didn’t he destroy the evidence beforehand? Without the evidence, he wouldn’t have been caught red-handed, and the bureau shouldn’t be able to take him away, right?” Zhong Ziya said.

Jiang Yan shook his head slightly. “Let’s not talk about Zhou Wen. Hui Haifeng often goes out too. The two of them can’t be counted. But the two of us spend our days in the laboratory, and we seldom head out at the same time. Even if something happens, someone will usually be left behind in the laboratory. I left because Teacher asked me to go to the Myriad Buddha Cave to hunt Golden Warriors. What’s the reason for you not being in the laboratory?”

“Teacher got me to buy something outside campus for him.” Zhong Ziya also felt that something was amiss. It seemed as though Wang Mingyuan had deliberately sent them away.

Hui Haifeng added, “I was planning to go to the lab today, but yesterday, Tutor told me of a new fist technique that led me to practice late into the night, so I didn’t go in.”

The four of them increasingly felt that Wang Mingyuan had really expected that something would happen today before he sent them away.

“Let’s leave the talking until we are back in the military camp. Before the bureau leaves, don’t go back to the dorms. Besides, there are some questions that you need answering.” Qin Wufu got the soldiers to take Zhou Wen and company back.

Firstly, it was to protect them. Secondly, they also needed to be investigated thoroughly. If Wang Mingyuan was really an overseas spy, they needed to eliminate the quartet’s

suspicion; otherwise, any further problems would pose a threat to Luoyang.

Zhou Wen had no idea what was up with the overseas spy. When he was questioned privately, he only recounted the details of his interaction with Wang Mingyuan. After that, the four of them were detained in the military camp and were not released. However, the treatment they received wasn’t bad; each of them had a single room.

“Ms. Wang, what’s up with being an overseas spy?” Zhou Wen asked in puzzlement when Wang Fei came to see him. Wang Fei sighed and said, “The overseas factions were established during the early stages of the League. They were a few devils who escaped overseas to create a human faction. Before the appearance of the six heroes, they did whatever they wanted and committed countless crimes. Every one of them was an evil fiend. Their hands were stained with the blood of the innocent. The most famous Jing Daoxian was one of them, but for some reason, Jing Daoxian remained in the League all year round and seldom returned overseas.”

“You mean that Teacher is one of those devils?” Zhou Wen really couldn’t believe that the gentle Wang Mingyuan was a vile devil.

“Although I don’t believe it either, the evidence is just concrete. Furthermore, he was caught red-handed. Even Uncle Mingyuan didn’t provide an explanation and tacitly admitted it.” Despite having her doubts, Wang Fei had no choice but to believe the truth.

Although that was what was said, Zhou Wen still couldn’t believe that Wang Mingyuan would be such a heinous devil.

The military camp had its rules. Zhou Wen’s phone and whatever he had on him had been temporarily confiscated by the military. Without his phone to game, Zhou Wen could only wait in a single room. This didn’t last long. The next day, Qin Wufu ordered his subordinates to release the four. He also told Zhou Wen that the bureau had already escorted Wang Mingyuan back to Holy City yesterday.

Zhou Wen got back his phone and items-all of them untouched. Only then was he slightly relieved.

The four returned to the lab at Old Dragon Cave and found it in a mess. Not only was all the furniture and equipment damaged, but there were also holes dug into the walls.

The quartet exchanged looks. None of them spoke for a moment. They were unable to accept the fact that Wang Mingyuan was an overseas spy.

“Jiang Yan, you have the best solutions. Tell me, is there any way to save Teacher?” Zhong Ziya asked while gritting his teeth.

Jiang Yan shook his head slightly. “Unless we can advance to the Mythical stage, no one can save Tutor in this situation.”

“Then, how will they deal with him?” Zhong Ziya asked again.Jiang Yan thought for a moment and said, “If Tutor really is an overseas spy, and even the Director-General of the bureau was activated, then his status can’t be low. Or perhaps he has some secret that even the Senate wants. That’s why he was forcefully arrested. In that case, it’s possible that they won’t kill Tutor for now, or if he is willing to give them what they want, he might still have a chance of surviving. Other than that, we can’t do anything.”

Although Zhou Wen knew that it was useless, he still made a phone call to An Sheng and asked his opinion of Wang Mingyuan.

Although he wanted to know his thoughts, he actually wanted to know if An Sheng had any way to save Wang Mingyuan.

If it was for himself, Zhou Wen definitely wouldn’t have asked An Sheng. However, Wang Mingyuan’s position in his heart was different.

Unfortunately, An Sheng told Zhou Wen with sure certainty that since Wang Mingyuan was caught red-handed, there was no room for negotiation unless Wang Mingyuan could produce something that was satisfactory to the League. Only then did he have a chance of survival.

Zhou Wen originally imagined that the matter would end there, but to his surprise, he, Hui Haifeng, and company received a notification from the League that Wang Mingyuan wanted to see them a few days later. However, Wang Mingyuan didn’t insist that they come. He said that they could come if they wanted. They could likewise stay.

After that, the four of them even had a video call with Wang Mingyuan. Wang Mingyuan only said that he wanted to meet them as he had some things he wanted to say to them in person without any elaboration.

Zhou Wen could sense that Wang Mingyuan appeared to have something he needed to tell them.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 336 - Holy Tower

Chapter 336 Holy Tower

Although it was very dangerous to head to Holy City like this, Zhou Wen and company ultimately chose to head there.

Zhou Wen didn't know why Hui Haifeng and company had chosen to go, but although Zhou Wen hadn't spent much time with Wang Mingyuan, he had provided him plenty of help. He had even saved his life.

This meeting might very well be his last meeting with Wang Mingyuan, so Zhou Wen insisted on going

Wang Fei and Qin Wufu had persuaded them not to go, but no one was willing to give up the last chance to see Wang Mingyuan and resolutely boarded the plane that the League had sent to pick them up.

Qin Wufu wanted to attach his personal guards to Zhou Wen, but Zhou Wen rejected his offer. This was because bringing two top Epic experts was useless in the Special Inspector Bureau's territory.

The Special Inspector Bureau inspectors were very polite to them. They didn't look as arrogant as they usually did. They tried their best to satisfy their needs along the way. After arriving in Holy City, they politely got them to stay in a guest house under the jurisdiction of the bureau.

Originally, they thought that the bureau would fall out with them the moment they arrived, but none of that happened.

The bureau continued to feed them delicious food, as though they were afraid of ill-treating them.

“When can we meet Teacher?” Zhong Ziya asked an inspector impatiently.

“That will depend on the arrangements of the top brass. I’m just an ordinary inspector. I only listen to orders from above,” the officer said with a smile.

Originally believing that they could quickly see Wang Mingyuan, it took them until the third day before an inspector actually got them to prepare to meet Wang Mingyuan.

After passing through multiple layers of security, Zhou Wen and company entered a secret base located in Holy City. They met Wang Mingyuan in a heavily guarded room.

Wang Mingyuan’s condition didn’t seem too bad. He hadn’t been subjected to inhuman treatment as they had imagined. He didn’t look injured, and he still wore a warm smile on his face.

However, Zhou Wen felt that Wang Mingyuan was still somewhat different. Yet, there was a sense of familiarity which he couldn’t put a finger on. The feeling was very subtle.

“You guys came.” Wang Mingyuan smiled at the four of them.

“Teacher, are you alright?” Zhong Ziya asked worriedly.

Wang Mingyuan shook his head slightly and asked with a smile, “Do you still remember the question I asked you previously?”

The four of them were slightly taken aback as Zhou Wen immediately recalled the question Wang Mingyuan had asked him about pain and death. He asked curiously, “Is it the choice between death and pain?”

Wang Mingyuan nodded and said, “Yes. I’ve asked all of you before, and all of you gave your answers. Later on, all of you asked me how I would choose. At the time, I hadn’t decided, but I now have an answer.”

The four of them looked at Wang Mingyuan in confusion. They didn’t know why he would still care about that question at this juncture.

However, they all understood Wang Mingyuan’s character. They knew that he wasn’t someone who would do things without a reason. Now that he raised that question, perhaps there was some deeper meaning behind it.

Zhou Wen was also pondering over the matter, wondering if Wang Mingyuan was hinting to them about something.

However, Zhou Wen recalled every word Wang Mingyuan said and compared it to every word he was now saying. He couldn’t think of any other underlying meanings.

In another room separated by a wall, the Director-General of the bureau, Shen Yuchi, Qiao Siyuan, and the other important personnel of the bureau were all watching the conversation between Wang Mingyuan and company through a one-way mirror.

“Director-General. Wang Mingyuan is part of Luoyang’s Wang family. He has so much family, including his blood-related brothers. Yet, he didn’t choose to meet them and instead chose to meet his four students. Why do I feel that something’s amiss?” Qiao Siyuan said.

“This is our bureau’s headquarters. Are you afraid that he can escape? Who cares who he wants to see? Once he’s done with the meeting, Wang Mingyuan will be able to help us do what we want,” said a director of the bureau.

Qiao Siyuan frowned slightly. What he hated the most were these people who spent their days in offices without doing anything, just causing trouble for them all day.

“Listen to them. When we send them away later, separate them and ask them what Wang Mingyuan’s question was,” Shen Yuchi said.

“Yes sir,” Qiao Siyuan replied.

In the room next door, Wang Mingyuan’s gaze swept across Zhou Wen and company’s faces before he said with a smile, “My answer is that, like Jiang Yan, I’ll choose the second option.”

With that said, Wang Mingyuan stood up without waiting for them to react. He faced the mirror and said, “Alright. I’ve said what I wanted to say. Now, you can do what you want to do. However, I have a condition. I need the four of them to follow me.”

Zhou Wen and company wore looks of astonishment. Clearly, Wang Mingyuan’s words weren’t directed at them. They didn’t know what was happening, nor did they know what Wang Mingyuan was up to.

“Sir, Wang Mingyuan can’t be trusted in the police station. He must have some plans for taking Zhou Wen and company with him. We can’t agree,” Qiao Siyuan said.

“It’s just four students. Even if we let him take them, what trouble will there be?” The director was always at

loggerheads with Qiao Siyuan.Shen Yuchi frowned slightly and pondered for a moment before saying into the microphone, “Wang Mingyuan, you have too many requests.”

“As the only person who can open the Holy Tower, I don’t think I have a lot of requests, right?” Wang Mingyuan smiled as if he was certain that Shen Yuchi would agree to his request.

Shen Yuchi’s gaze passed through the glass and met Wang Mingyuan’s eyes. After a while, he said coldly, “This is your last request. If I hear any requests from you again, I’ll kill one of your students with every new request.” “Deal.” Wang Mingyuan nodded slightly. Zhou Wen frowned slightly, unsure what Wang Mingyuan meant. However, Jiang Yan muttered to himself, “Didn’t the Holy Tower shut down long ago? Can Tutor open the closed Holy Tower?”

Zhou Wen heard Jiang Yan and was about to ask something when an inspector came over and led Wang Mingyuan, Zhou Wen, and company out.

Very soon, they were escorted to a car. There seemed to be a special design in the car that prevented them from hearing or sensing anything outside. They didn’t even know whether the car was driving or not.

“Teacher, what’s going on?” Although there were still inspectors monitoring them, Zhong Ziya couldn’t help but ask Wang Mingyuan.

“I’ve already told you the answer. Now, I just want you to accompany me along my final journey,” Wang Mingyuan said calmly, his gaze complicated.

Jiang Yan said, “From what I know, the Holy Tower is likely the defensive hub of the entire Holy City, and it’s also the hub of Holy City and Holy Land. Originally, the six hero families could use the connection between the Holy Tower and the six Holy Temples in the Holy Land to form a defensive net with the strength of the six Holy Temples. The strength of the defensive net was so strong that it could even stop a Mythical creature’s attack. However, Jing Daoxian used some unknown method to shut down the Holy Tower, causing the defensive net in the Holy City to vanish as well. As a result, Jing Daoxian was able to storm the League building and launch a killing spree. Although the League has been researching this matter all this while, no one has been able to reactivate the Holy Tower to this day.”

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 337 - Blast of Light

Chapter 337 Blast of Light

“Teacher, can you activate the Holy Tower?” Jiang Yan asked Wang Mingyuan.

Wang Mingyuan nodded slightly but didn’t say a word. Instantly, the vehicle fell silent.

The Holy Tower was not actually a tower in the ordinary sense of the word. It was a divine statue that was over a hundred meters tall. It was snow-white like jade, as if a person had spread open his arms towards the heavens and was praying for something.

Legend had it that before Jing Daoxian stormed into the League building and started his massacre, the statue emitted infinite holy light that enveloped the entire Holy City. No matter how many powerful dimensional creatures there were, they were unable to tear through the holy light.

However, even though the statue remained white and clean, it didn’t have any of its godly radiance. It was just a majestic statue.

In front of the statue, there were many military officers and inspectors. Among them were six eye-catching figures—four men and two women. If anyone knew them, they would be shocked to see all six appear at the same time.

These four men and two women were the heads of the six families right now. They were Senators from the Senate.

When the six of them stood together, they had even more authority than the League President.

After all, the League President’s bills had to be approved by the Senate.

“Sir, Wang Mingyuan is here.” Even the powerful Shen Yuchi had to be respectful in front of the six of them. He did not dare commit a faux pas.

One of the six-a noble, goddess-like ladyasked calmly, “Is everything ready?”

“Everything is ready. Wang Mingyuan has already agreed to activate the Holy Tower,” Shen Yuchi said.

“Very good. We have been waiting for this day for too long. If Wang Mingyuan can really reactivate the Holy Tower, he would be the greatest contributor to the League. It’s just a pity…” Another elegant middle-aged man said calmly, but he didn’t finish his sentence.

“Based on the information obtained from him, it’s indeed feasible. However, there are one or two key points that our researcher can’t figure out. We need Wang Mingyuan to do it personally,” a secretary-looking person said.

“Then let him go,” the woman said calmly.

“Yes.” Shen Yuchi responded and got someone to bring Wang Mingyuan over.

When Wang Mingyuan walked past the six of them, the elegant man looked down at him superciliously and said, “Wang Mingyuan, after the Holy Tower is reactivated, we will pardon all your crimes and give you the chance to redo

things. You must seize this opportunity and not waste our kindness."

"I will grab hold of the opportunity." Wang Mingyuan wore shackles-a manifestation of a special Companion Beast. Even a Mythical creature would find it difficult to escape if it was bound by the shackles.

With the inspectors escorting them, Zhou Wen and company followed Wang Mingyuan to the statue.

"Are the four youths Wang Mingyuan's students?" the elegant middle-aged man asked as he looked at Zhou Wen and company.

"Yes, one of them is related to the An family," Shen Yuchi said.

"In extraordinary times, even the Ans are no exception. To be able to sacrifice for the League is considered priceless. I believe the Ans can understand," the elegant middle-aged man said ethereally as though he had determined Zhou Wen and company's fate.

Wang Mingyuan stopped in front of the Holy Tower. In front of him stood a stone cauldron which was in front of the statue. Everyone's attention was drawn to him. Even the six people standing at the top of the League couldn't help but stare at Wang Mingyuan, anticipating his actions.

Wang Mingyuan turned to look at the League official beside him and said, "The sacrificial ceremony can begin. Let's go according to procedure. If anything goes wrong, it won't be my fault."

"If something goes wrong, you'll be the first to die." That official gave a cold snort before looking at where Shen Yuchi

was.

Seeing Shen Yuchi nod slightly, the official gave the order. A group of soldiers walked up and lined up before the stone cauldron. Then, they cut their fingers and dripped a drop of blood into the stone cauldron.

As more and more blood dripped into the stone cauldron, it suddenly ignited. It was as if the blood was gasoline. The more blood dripped into the cauldron, the stronger the flames inside the cauldron became.

Glee appeared on the four men and two women's faces. If the Holy Tower could really be reactivated, the safety of Holy City would be greatly increased. Even if all the dimensional zones in the future were to lose their binding forces, the Holy Land would remain the last bastion of humanity. No dimensional creatures could storm in.

But as more and more soldiers offered up their blood, the flames in the stone cauldron rose higher and higher; yet, there were no other changes. The statue did not emit any holy light.

Seeing that the last soldier had left the altar after sacrificing his blood, the official frowned and asked, "Wang Mingyuan, what do we do next?"

"Next requires a sincere prayer," Wang Mingyuan said.

The official was slightly taken aback as he asked in puzzlement, "Is praying useful?"

"If prayers were useful, there wouldn't be so many poor people in the world," Wang Mingyuan said with a smile.

“Are you messing with me?” The official was enraged. He pointed at Wang Mingyuan and said, “You’d better activate the Holy Tower or I’ll make you regret that you were ever born.”

Wang Mingyuan suddenly moved and slammed into the official. The official’s strength was average to begin and held a deskbound job. His combat skills were almost nil. Caught off guard by Wang Mingyuan’s collision, he involuntarily retreated and slammed into the stone tripod cauldron. Immediately, he fell into the burning stone cauldron.

The official’s entire body burst into flame. He screamed and tried to climb out, but it was as though a pair of hands were pulling him from inside the stone cauldron, preventing him from climbing up no matter how hard he tried.

“Wang Mingyuan… What are you doing?” Shen Yuchi was furious. All the soldiers and inspectors aimed their firearms at Wang Mingyuan. With just an order from him, they would immediately riddle Wang Mingyuan with holes.

Wang Mingyuan ignored him and turned to face the statue.Shen Yuchi frowned and shouted a few more questions, but Wang Mingyuan ignored them. He just stood there and looked up at the statue.

The noble woman stopped Shen Yuchi, who was about to personally deal with Wang Mingyuan. She pointed to the statue and said, “Hold on, look at the statue.”

All they could see was a bright glow on the hands of the divine Statue. Even though it wasn’t very bright, it was something that had never happened before in their years of research on the Holy Tower. It left them ecstatic.

The tragic cries of the official in the flames began to weaken, but the glow on the statue grew stronger and stronger. Not only its hands, but the entire statue emitted a holy glow, as though it was really manifesting its divine powers.

“In a sacrificial ritual, a sacrifice is obviously needed.” Wang Mingyuan wore an odd expression and muttered as he watched the holy brilliance rise up.

Zhou Wen and company were inches away. As they looked at Wang Mingyuan’s expression, they felt that he looked extremely unfamiliar at that very moment. He didn’t seem like the same person in their memories.

Shen Yuchi and the other six high and mighty existences were all filled with excitement. They saw that the light above the two hands of the statue shot up into the sky, turning into a halo that spread out in all directions, as if it wanted to turn the entire sky into a holy resplendence.

All the residents of the Holy City saw this strange scene. Some of the older elders couldn’t help but cheer. They still remembered the time when the Holy City was enveloped by the holy light. Those were the safest periods of their lives.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 338 - A Farewell Gift

Chapter 338 A Farewell Gift

The divine statue’s radiance was dazzling like a divine tower that reached the sky.

A godly glow spread out across the sky, bathing the entire Holy City. Those who knew of the radiance of the Holy Tower were overjoyed.

The six Senators were also overjoyed. After decades, the Holy City’s brilliance finally appeared in front of everyone once again.

“This is the real Holy City. This is the Holy Brilliance that can stir the souls of everyone. With the Holy City around, the League is eternal…” a Senator said feverishly, his eyes burning with excitement.

Shen Yuchi was also excited. To be able to accomplish such a great thing was undoubtedly a great contribution all thanks to the Special Inspector Bureau.

In front of the Holy Tower, the entire altar was lit up with a bright Holy Brilliance. The humans inside seemed to melt like snow.

Shen Yuchi and the six Senators were not surprised because they already knew that such a thing would happen. Back when the six families first activated the Holy Tower, something similar had happened. How could a human be able to taint the holiness of God? Once the Holy Tower was

activated, everything on the altar would be purified. This was something that couldn’t be avoided.

No human could survive on the altar, including the six heroes of the past. They knew very well how terrifying the power of the Holy Tower was. It was a power that came from the six Holy Temples. Other than the mighty existences within the Holy Temples, no human could withstand it.

Zhou Wen felt his body being corroded by the intense Holy Brilliance. He hurriedly summoned the Stone Chi and transformed into a stone armor to protect his body. However, the armor rapidly melted under the terrifying Holy Brilliance as though it was being eaten by termites.

Jiang Yan and the others were in similar circumstances, looking extremely uneasy.

“Teacher, let’s escape now,” Zhong Ziya said as he slashed at the brilliance before him. However, his sword ended up being melted. He failed to deal any damage to it.

“Escape? Why would I escape? I came here to wait for this moment.” Wang Mingyuan looked at the resplendent statue in front of him with a determined gaze.

“Teacher, what are you trying to do?” Although Zhou Wen had always felt that Wang Mingyuan wouldn’t harm them, everything Wang Mingyuan was doing now was beyond his imagination.

Wang Mingyuan turned his head and said to Zhou Wen and company, “We’re master and disciple after all. There are some things I need to give to you. Just treat it as Wang Mingyuan’s final inheritance in this world. Keep it as a memento.”

Crack!

The shackles on Wang Mingyuan’s body split apart automatically and fell to the ground like garbage. Before they landed on the ground, they were melted by the Holy Brilliance.

Wang Mingyuan exuded a strange power that blocked the Holy Brilliance, preventing his four students from suffering any more damage from it.

Zhou Wen looked at the power emitted by Wang Mingyuan and felt that it was somewhat familiar. However, he couldn’t figure out the reason for its familiarity.

Wang Mingyuan had been held for many days. He was probably only left with his prison uniform. However, when he extended his palm into the void, he seemed to tear through it as he grabbed something out of thin air.

It was a thick diary that looked old, but it was very well-preserved. Zhou Wen had seen it in the past. It was a diary that Wang Mingyuan had always carried with him. Whenever he had any ideas and inspiration, he would jot them down in the diary.

“Jiang Yan, your personality is the most similar to mine and you like research. This contains my years of experience and thoughts. I’ll give it to you,” Wang Mingyuan said as he handed the diary to Jiang Yan.

Jiang Yan took the diary with both hands, saying nothing.

Wang Mingyuan didn’t say anything further. The power around him grew stronger, his body seemed to be affected by it. It was as though he was gently trembling. Zhou Wen could even see the rippling power flowing around him.

Wang Mingyuan took out another sheathed sword and handed it to Zhong Ziya. “You’re too extreme, so it’s inevitable that there will be some deviation in what you do. Perhaps giving this sword to you will be of some help to you.”

Zhong Ziya remained silent as he received the sword and stared straight at Wang Mingyuan.

Wang Mingyuan knew what Zhong Ziya wanted to hear, but he didn’t tell him anything. Instead, he took out something else and handed it to Hui Haifeng. “You have great ambitions and will definitely accomplish much in the future. These are the savings that I’ve saved over the years. They’re useless now. Take them.”

“Yes, Tutor.” Hui Haifeng didn’t decline it. He respectfully received the small box, unsure what it contained.

Finally, Wang Mingyuan’s gaze landed on Zhou Wen as he said with a smile, “You are the simplest of the four of them. You don’t have as many thoughts and desires as the three of them, but you’re also the most difficult to understand. Although I know what you want, I can’t do it now. Apart from that matter, what other wishes do you have? There’s no harm in telling me.”

At this moment, the power on Wang Mingyuan’s body was almost tangible, transforming into streams of light that constantly circulated around his body. The familiar aura Zhou Wen sensed intensified.

Now, Zhou Wen finally remembered where he had felt such an aura.

Beneath the Dragon’s Well, the white cocoon protected by the White Dragon contained the same aura. However, the

white cocoon’s aura was very weak, so weak that it was almost undetectable. This left a very vague impression on Zhou Wen.

However, Wang Mingyuan’s aura was very strong. It was so strong that it left Zhou Wen stifled.

Could it be that Teacher… Zhou Wen had an extremely nasty thought as he looked at Wang Mingyuan.“I don’t have much time. Answer me. What do you want?” Wang Mingyuan had a strange expression as his entire body trembled. His voice seemed to be suppressed.

Zhou Wen looked at Wang Mingyuan with some bitterness. After a moment, he said, “Teacher, can you give me a drop of your blood?”

Zhou Wen’s words stunned Wang Mingyuan, Zhong Ziya, and company. Wang Mingyuan looked at Zhou Wen and smiled. “You’re indeed the most difficult person to understand.”

With that said, Wang Mingyuan ignored Zhou Wen. He slowly turned around and back faced the four of them as he gazed at the resplendent statue.

“I’m really very happy to spend time with you guys. Unfortunately, things must always come to an end. Today, we shall bid each other farewell. From now on, we will be unrelated. As a final farewell, I’ll give you another tiny gift.” With Wang Mingyuan’s trembling words, the power in his body exploded, spewing out like an erupting volcano as his body changed.

The black hair on his head instantly turned white and quickly grew. It almost reached the ground, and a pair of

crystal-like horns grew on his head. His entire body was undergoing an unusual transformation.

Unfortunately, Zhou Wen and company couldn’t see Wang Mingyuan’s face; otherwise, they would definitely discover that his face had turned handsome and strange. His eyes emitted an indescribable odd glow.

That terrifying power rose up from his body like countless divine beams of light that surrounded him. His clothes moved without any help from the wind as his body floated up to the statue.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 339 - A Drop of Blood

Chapter 339 A Drop of Blood

“What is that?” The six excited Senators suddenly saw a figure appear within the resplendent Holy Brilliance-it was right in front of the statue.

The noble woman stared at Wang Mingyuan who was before the holy statue and said in surprise, “That’s… Wang Mingyuan… No… That aura… Why does it feel like a dimensional creature…”

“What is he trying to do?” The middle-aged man frowned, feeling a little uncomfortable.

Naturally, no one could answer his question. They didn’t know what Wang Mingyuan wanted to do. They even believed that Wang Mingyuan should already be dead. No human could survive the Holy Brilliance—he should have been purified a long time ago.

Shen Yuchi’s expression was also changing at the same time. He had an extremely ominous feeling, as if something terrible was about to happen.

Although all of them wanted to stop Wang Mingyuan, no one moved, they didn’t dare enter the statue’s confines. The Holy Brilliance came from the power of the six Holy Temples, so entering the altar was equivalent to fighting the six Holy Temples. Even a Mythical Companion Beast wouldn’t be able to withstand it and would be purified in the Holy Brilliance.

Levitating in front of the statue, Wang Mingyuan stared at the statue and muttered to himself, “If there is an unforgivable crime in this world, then let me be the one to bear it.”

With that said, Wang Mingyuan slowly raised his arm high like a blade. His fingers pointed into the sky as the strange powers on his arm condensed into something corporeal.

“What… is he trying to do…” Shen Yuchi’s voice was already trembling. He seemed to have guessed what Wang Mingyuan was up to, but he couldn’t believe that something like that would happen.

“Wang Mingyuan…” The six Senators roared in unison, but it was of no use.

Boom!

Wang Mingyuan slashed down with his arm. The terrifying power was like the Heaven’s blade, forcibly slicing the giant statue into two. The split statue slowly collapsed to the sides.

The whole of Holy City fell into a state of panic. Everyone stared blankly at the god-like figure floating in the air, as well as the two halves of the collapsing holy statue. Their hearts seemed to crumble along with it.

Boom!

Holy City seemed to quake due to the collapse of the holy statue. It shattered into pieces, but the Holy Brilliance coming from the sky didn’t come to an end. Beams of Holy Brilliance descended from the sky like God’s punishment. It was akin to the apocalypse.

Without the holy statue that prayed to the heavens, Holy City directly crumbled to the ground. No one could predict what the consequences would be. Perhaps the whole of Holy City would be reduced to rubble.

Instantly, everyone was stunned. Even the powerful Senators, who possessed Mythical Companion Beasts, felt their scalps tingle as they quickly retreated, hoping to escape this

area.

Boom!

The bombardment of the Holy Brilliance did not hit the ground. In the air, the godlike Wang Mingyuan suffered the brunt of the terrifying Holy Brilliance.

The boundless Holy Brilliance inundated him, bathing his body in it. But he didn’t seem to be injured at all. Instead, a terrifying power gathered in him, causing his body to continue to undergo a strange change.

Boom!

Amidst the Holy Brilliance, six pairs of butterfly-shaped wings of light appeared behind Wang Mingyuan as a halo that represented godhood appeared behind him. It was as though a true god had descended.

On the altar, Zhou Wen and company were already stunned. Wang Mingyuan exuded an extremely terrifying aura. They had never seen such a terrifying existence.

Even though Zhou Wen had seen the white dragon at the bottom of Dragon’s Well and had seen the nine black dragons in the underground sea before, none of them were

as terrifying as the present Wang Mingyuan. Compared to them, the difference was like night and day.

Wang Mingyuan emitted an indescribable god-like halo. When the halo landed on Zhou Wen and company, it made them feel as though their bodies had been baptized by holy water. Their bodies, flesh, and bones-every cell—were transformed. It was as though they had been reborn.

Now, Zhou Wen finally knew what the last gift Wang Mingyuan mentioned was.

However, Zhou Wen wasn’t delighted when he saw the godlike Wang Mingyuan in midair. Instead, he felt strangely upset.

Wang Mingyuan’s aura transformed into a dimensional aura. Zhou Wen could no longer sense a human aura from him. It was as though he was no longer a human, but a dimensional creature that was an enemy of humanity.

“Little Wen, what will you choose-pain or death?” Zhou Wen couldn’t help but recall the question Wang Mingyuan had asked him.

Now, Zhou Wen seemed to understand something. Wang Mingyuan had been doing research all these years, hoping to find a way out to deal with the situation after the restrictive forces in the dimensional zones vanished.

However, he didn’t see any hope, so he chose another path. Just like the question he asked, he chose to live in pain. The pain he endured might not be physical, but mental pain and anguish-one far more tortuous than physical pain.

In the sky, the godlike Wang Mingyuan looked up with a cold expression. He said calmly, “Since this world lacks the power

to eliminate demons, I'll devolve to become a demon and become a demon among demons."

As soon as he said that, the terrifying power in him surged into the sky. Even the Holy Brilliance was dispersed by his power, piercing into the void and tearing apart a huge black hole.Countless illusions appeared within the black hole. There were flying fairies, terrifying dragons, roaring behemoths, holy angels, and savage demons.

Everyone stared at the black hole in the sky in a daze. Before they could react, countless roars could be heard coming from the black hole. A hundred-meter-long black centipede rushed out as it flapped its six wings.

In the next second, all sorts of terrifying dimensional creatures rushed out of the black hole, instantly blotting out the sky. It was as though the apocalypse had dawned.

Wang Mingyuan looked down at Zhou Wen and company before decisively turning around to walk on air. He slowly walked towards the black hole in the sky.

Despite the countless powerful dimensional creatures present, none of them dared approach him. They automatically made way for him, as though he was the king of this world. Any creature that stood in front of him could not afford to withstand his rage.

"Teacher!" Zhou Wen felt an indescribable pain in his heart as though he had lost something. He couldn't help but cry out.

However, no one responded to him. Wang Mingyuan had already entered the black hole and his body gradually vanished. However, a drop of red blood flew across space

and floated in front of Zhou Wen like a drop of crystallized blood.

The drop of blood was bright red, giving off a warm feeling. It was holy and without any evil.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 340 - Disaster

Chapter 340 Disaster

Holy City was in pandemonium as terrifying dimensional creatures endlessly rushed out of the black hole like locusts that blotted out the sky. They charged into Holy City and wreaked havoc.

The clashing of forces and human cries were everywhere. Many innocent humans died and countless families had been destroyed.

Zhou Wen didn’t know if Wang Mingyuan’s choice was right or wrong. That wasn’t something he could figure out yet.

He extended his hand to grab the crystalline blood and the Lost Immortal Sutra immediately circulated crazily and absorbed it. Zhou Wen immediately felt a strange force spread across his body.

“What are you waiting for? Take the opportunity of the chaos to storm out of Holy City! Do you want to wait to be caught?” Zhong Ziya pushed Zhou Wen.

He wasn’t sad anymore. No matter what Wang Mingyuan had become, Zhong Ziya felt that it was enough as long as Wang Mingyuan was alive.

Jiang Yan and Hui Haifeng ran out. Holy City was in a mess—humans were fighting the dimensional creatures everywhere, so no one had the time to pay attention to them.

The four of them retreated as they fought. They saw powerful humans riding gigantic dragons and streaking across the sky to fight the dimensional creatures. There were also people wielding flying swords. The sword beams shot out like thousands of shooting stars, instantly wiping out a large number of dimensional creatures.

Various terrifying experts tore through the air to engage in combat, but they were unable to kill all the dimensional creatures that had invaded Holy City. Furthermore, the black hole was constantly open, allowing dimensional creatures to constantly charge in. The flames of war raged nonstop.

Boom!

Zhou Wen and company were fleeing as a tyrannous eight-headed snake landed in front of them. The eight heads spewed various powers of wind, rain, thunder, and lightning, instantly turning the area into a doomsday battlefield. Many ordinary people who were escaping died due to the various terrifying forces.

With the four of them cornered, all they could do was retreat. Zhou Wen’s figure flashed using Ghost Steps, as he dodged the venom that spewed at him.

But just as he was about to get his footing, the winged scorpion descended from the sky, its tail radiating a cold light as it shot towards him.

Zhou Wen drew his saber and slashed the scorpion in half. However, more flying scorpions rushed over like locusts.

Hui Haifeng, Jiang Yan, and Zhong Ziya were also engaged in tough fights. All of Holy City was filled with dimensional creatures, so it was really difficult for them to storm a path to freedom.

When everyone was scattered, Hui Haifeng shouted, “Find your own opportunity to charge out. Leave if there’s a chance. Rendezvous in school.”

Zhou Wen knew that their strength was minute in such a battlefield. Just barging out was impossible. All he could do was seek out an opportunity to escape without any other considerations.

He believed that with Jiang Yan, Zhong Ziya, and Hui Haifeng’s abilities, they wouldn’t die so easily.

Boom!

A mountain-like monster landed several hundred meters in front of Zhou Wen, but with it punching the ground, the streets and buildings that spanned thousands of meters were instantly reduced to fragments. The fragments collided with other objects, killing all the humans caught in between.

Zhou Wen hurriedly brandished his Bamboo Blade and slashed apart the fragments that were flying towards him. He was still wearing the stone armor for defense, but many spots on his body had been pierced through by the fragments. He was already injured.

He gritted his teeth and ran in another direction. The Lost Immortal Sutra in him continued circulating rapidly, as though it had reached a critical point and was about to break through.

Boom!

The mountain-like monster once again slammed the ground, but this time, the ground didn’t shatter. Instead, it created a powerful suction force that sucked in everything around it.

Zhou Wen stabbed his Bamboo Blade into the ground, but his entire body was dragged towards the mountain. Despite leaving a deep mark on the ground, the Bamboo Blade failed to stop him from flying towards the mountain-like monster.

Zhou Wen turned his head to look and saw countless gaping mouths on the mountain-like monster. The humans that had been sucked in had been devoured. He had no idea what their outcomes were.

With a thought, he activated the Demonic Astral Wheel, using its suction force to keep him firmly on the ground and resist the mountain's suction force. This prevented him from flying towards it.

However, the strange mountain's suction force was just too potent. Zhou Wen was ultimately unable to escape the suction force. He could only barely stop himself from being sucked in.

Just as Zhou Wen was wondering how he could escape the suction range of the mountain, he saw a figure tear through the air. It was a woman dressed in black. She had appeared on an ancient bronze sword and entered the region of the strange mountain, but she wasn't pulled in by it. All she did was float in front of the strange mountain.

With a pull of her hands, a sword flash immediately condensed between her hands. With a nudge, the sword beam flew towards the mountain.

As the sword beam flew, the surrounding void trembled as the sword beam split into two, then two to four, four to eight, and eight to sixteen. By the time the sword beam reached the strange mountain, it was already a cloud of swords.

The strange mountain opened its mouth. After all, it was covered with mouths. It swallowed the cloud-like sword beams.

The black-robed woman frowned slightly. As she landed on the ancient bronze sword, the sound of the ancient greenish-bronze sword reverberated. She flew back into the air and charged towards the strange mountain.

The strange mountain didn’t hesitate. It opened its mouth and sucked at the ancient bronze sword. However, a moment later, rays of sword light emerged from the strange mountain, piercing through its body like sharp swords, and soon, the strange mountain resembled a porcupine.Boom!

The strange mountain suddenly crumbled as the ancient sword returned to under the woman’s feet. She didn’t stop and flew towards other terrifying dimensional creatures on her sword. Wherever she went, the sword beam was like a turbulent river that slew countless dimensional creatures.

Zhou Wen wasn’t in the mood to watch further. Once the mountain was dead, the suction force would naturally vanish. He chose a direction and charged out of Holy City.

However, there were too many dimensional creatures. Zhou Wen killed many as he ran, but he only reached the third ring road of Holy City.

Jiang Yan and company were nowhere to be seen. Apart from the dimensional creatures, he could only see humans fighting for their lives. The majority of them were soldiers, as most ordinary people had turned into corpses.

A little girl was crying in the ruins, and a centipede that was several meters long was crawling towards her.

Zhou Wen’s rationality told him that it wasn’t the time to be nosy. Escaping Holy City was imperative, but he couldn’t help but slash out a saber beam, cleaving the centipede into two.

“Follow me now.” Zhou Wen saw that there was nothing around her, except for corpses. Even if the girl’s parents and family weren’t dead, they probably weren’t nearby. All he could do was take her out of Holy City before making plans.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 341 - Condensing a Life Soul

Chapter 341 Condensing a Life Soul

The girl was rather obedient as she reached out and hugged Zhou Wen’s neck. Although she still had tears on her face, she had stopped crying

Suddenly, Zhou Wen felt his heart palpitate as he slashed at the girl in his arms. At the same time, he pushed her away with his other hand. The girl instantly retreated more than ten meters. Blood was left on the corner of her mouth as she stuck out her tongue to lick it. Her face was filled with a look of greed.

Zhou Wen touched his neck and his hand was immediately covered with blood. There were two rows of teeth marks on his neck. If he had been any slower, his neck would have been bitten off.

“Are you a human or a dimensional creature?” Zhou Wen held the Bamboo Blade as he calmly sized up the girl. Up to this point in time, he still had not realized that the girl had the aura of a dimensional creature. She looked like a two or three-year-old human girl no matter how he looked at her.

However, her actions and ability proved that she was no ordinary human girl.

The girl ignored him. Her figure flashed as she pounced at Zhou Wen, so fast that she left blurry shadows in her wake.

Without any hesitation, Zhou Wen used his Bamboo Blade coupled with Transcendent Flying Immortal. Instantly, blade

beams flashed as they slashed at the girl.

However, the girl was surprisingly fast. Zhou Wen's lightning-like saber technique had actually been dodged by her. She was even faster and more bizarre than Ghost King's movement technique.

The girl charged through the gaps in the saber strikes and lunged forward, wanting to bite Zhou Wen's neck.

The banana fan appeared in Zhou Wen's other hand. It fanned at the little girl who came at him, sending her body flying into the air.

Zhou Wen followed with Ghost Steps and slashed out Demonic Astral Wheel in midair. The blood-red saber beam slashed out, slashing at the girl like a blood wheel. It ripped through her clothes, but the Demonic Astral Wheel failed to slice through her tender-looking, fair skin.

It was as if the skin was not made of flesh and blood but extremely tough steel.

Zhou Wen could still understand the failure of Demonic Astral Wheel, but when the sharp Bamboo Blade slashed at her, it actually failed to rip her skin apart. It left him alarmed.

Bamboo Blade was sharp; even an Epic creature with a relatively stronger physical defense couldn't completely withstand it. However, this slash didn't even manage to pierce through her skin. It merely sent her flying. All of this was quite frightening.

The little girl landed on the ground as if she wasn't injured at all. She was only slightly angry as she pounced forward again.

Zhou Wen retreated as he fought. Despite using all sorts of means, he was unable to injure the little girl.

The girl was odd. She didn’t have the aura of a dimensional creature, but her actions were like

one.

What was even stranger was that she didn’t have any special powers. Other than having tremendous strength and extreme speed, as well as unimaginably tough skin, Zhou Wen wasn’t even able to injure her when using Ashen Palm to inject a devastating force into her.

Unable to kill her, Zhou Wen wanted to escape from her, but she had a deep hatred for him. She was constantly in hot pursuit. He had tried using Ghost Steps several times to escape, but she quickly caught up to him every single time.

The girl was like a vengeful ghost that would not stop unless she had him dead. She kept chasing and attacking him, seemingly hoping to devour him alive.

Zhou Wen could neither kill her, nor escape. All he could do was retreat as he battled.

The black hole in the sky slowly shrank, significantly reducing the number of dimensional creatures that rushed in. The six hero families had used everything they had in Holy City, cooperating with the military to slay the invading dimensional creatures.

Although the situation was gradually brought under control, the losses this time were unprecedented since the establishment of Holy City.

Back then, Jing Daoxian had only rushed into the League building and killed some League officials. Now, the disaster had embroiled all the ordinary citizens of the Holy Land. Countless people had died.

Zhou Wen was certain that after today, his teacher would likely replace Jing Daoxian and become the devil that everyone despised. He would probably become even more infamous than Jing Daoxian.

Teacher, is this really worth it? Zhou Wen didn’t know if Wang Mingyuan’s choice was right.

Just like Wang Mingyuan had said, risking his life to save that woman or choosing to join the villains before thinking of a way to save her was a difficult question to begin with.

Without any further time to think, Zhou Wen had already rushed out of Holy City’s vicinity. There were fewer dimensional creatures around him, but the girl continued pestering him.

Zhou Wen even struck her using Overlord Sword with Ever-Victorious, but no matter how many times he did so, the girl didn’t suffer any injuries as she continued pestering him.

What in the world is this thing? Zhou Wen had a hard time battling her. If not for his Companion Beasts’ help giving him a chance for a breather to recover his Primordial Energy, he would have been bitten to death by the girl a while ago.

Zhou Wen felt the Lost Immortal Sutra in him circulated faster and faster. His entire body seemed to be undergoing a tumultuous change as a kind of force was growing inside him.

The origin of that force was his Life Providence, but it was connected to his blood and soul. It was an indescribable feeling.

If he had to describe it, Zhou Wen felt as though his soul was being split.

Of course, this was just what he felt.

Am I about to condense a Life Soul? What is my Life Soul? As Zhou Wen retreated, he thought about it. Could it be a Life Soul in the form of a woman? Or could it be an artifact?

The reason Zhou Wen thought of a woman first was because of his Sigh of the King Life Providence. He vaguely felt that it had the appearance of a woman.

Typically, a Life Soul would be tremendously influenced by a Life Providence. For example, a person with a Buddhist Child Life Providence would likely have a revered Buddha shadow or Buddha statue as their Life Soul.

For someone like Feng Qiuyan who had the Life Providence of Swift Saber Heavenly King, it was a certainty that his Life Soul would definitely be related to a saber in the future.

Therefore, Zhou Wen believed that his Life Soul was likely in the form of a woman, but this was just a guess.

Crap! Zhou Wen’s Life Soul formation reached a critical moment. His entire body was undergoing sublimation, and his soul had seemingly left his body. This temporarily stopped him from moving.

To his chagrin, the girl was still chasing after him. Zhou Wen stood motionless as the girl immediately lunged forward and opened her mouth in a bid to bite his neck.

Damn it, why has it got to happen at this moment! Zhou Wen was so depressed that he nearly vomited blood. Unfortunately, the Lost Immortal Sutra wasn’t under his control. After absorbing Wang Mingyuan’s drop of blood, it automatically activated an evolution.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 342 - Epic Advancement

Chapter 342 Epic Advancement

The Stone Chi and Overlord Snake were still in armor and sword form. Without Zhou Wen’s order, it was impossible for them to turn into pets and fight the enemy.

Although White Shadow of Poison charged towards the little girl, it did not have much effect on her. The little girl’s speed was above it, and its poison couldn’t hurt her.

Doctor Darkness’s scalpel was unable to immobilize the little girl. The syringe was unable to penetrate her skin. So he was utterly useless.

The other Companion Beasts like Tyrant Behemoth were too low-leveled to be useful, so Zhou Wen didn’t even summon them.

With the girl already charging at him, Zhou Wen’s consciousness was completely drawn by the power in his body. Unable to care about the outside world, he appeared to be in mortal danger.

With a bang, Banana Fairy automatically got out of her companion form without any orders. She recovered her original form and sat on the banana leaf, putting herself between Zhou Wen and the girl as she exhaled.

The Grand Yin Wind immediately blew the little girl hundreds of meters away. The little girl knocked into a forest, slamming through many thick trees that spanned two arm widths. She left a long ditch in the forest.

But very quickly, the little girl rushed out of the forest. There was still frost on her clothing, but her body wasn’t injured.

Seeing the little girl rushing back, Banana Fairy gritted her teeth and blew out another Grand Yin Wind, blowing the little girl away.

However, this time, the Grand Yin Wind was clearly much weaker than the first. The distance the girl traveled wasn’t as great as before. She only fell into the forest and slammed through two trees.

The Grand Yin Wind expended plenty of Primordial Energy. The short interval limited the amount of Primordial Energy that Banana Fairy could restore; thus, the Grand Yin Wind she blew out naturally weakened.

The girl was too obstinate, as though she wanted to fight to the death. She charged over and pounced at Zhou Wen again.

Banana Fairy blew another mouthful of Grand Yin Wind, sending her flying again. She repeatedly prevented the girl from rushing towards Zhou Wen who was condensing his Life Soul to advance to the Epic stage.

However, the Grand Yin Wind that Banana Fairy blew out was weaker with each instance. It started with sending her flying a few hundred meters and leaving a long ditch in the ground.

However, after ten instances, the Grand Yin Wind could only blow her a few meters away. After the girl landed, she dashed towards Banana Fairy quickly again, not giving her a chance to catch her breath.

Banana Fairy’s face was pale. The Grand Yin Wind that she could produce had weakened drastically, but she remained in front of Zhou Wen without any intention of backing off.

A gust of Grand Yin Wind blew out again, but the girl wasn’t sent flying. She continued walking towards Zhou Wen against the strong wind.

At the instant the Grand Yin Wind stopped, the little girl flew up and grabbed Banana Fairy’s neck. She yanked her off the banana leaf and pressed her to the ground.

The girl’s eyes were ice-cold as her palm was about to snap Banana Fairy’s neck when she suddenly felt a force blast out from Zhou Wen. She couldn’t help but look up.

An invisible force surged from Zhou Wen’s body, making his body float up uncontrollably. His body emitted a strange force that enveloped his entire body.

The girl stared at Zhou Wen in midair as her eyes shimmered. It was as though she had seen something that surprised her. She was momentarily stunned.

At that moment, Zhou Wen finally opened his eyes. Simultaneously, wisps of invisible flames rose up from him, a kind of indescribable force.

It contained Zhou Wen’s Primordial Energy, or even his essence, vitality, and spirit. However, it was different from ordinary Primordial Energy. It was not a pure energy body like a Companion Beast. It was a magical power that resembled a form of energy but also a form of life.

The energy kept rising in Zhou Wen’s body as it slowly gathered behind him, as though it had formed the legendary entity known as a Life Soul. Zhou Wen could sense the

existence of his Life Soul and could sense the terrifying power that came with it. However, he couldn’t see it, as though it was transparent and invisible.

Zhou Wen wasn’t in the mood to figure out why he couldn’t see his Life Soul. When he saw the little girl pressing Banana Fairy’s neck to the ground, he was already raging inside.

He drew his Bamboo Blade and slashed it at the girl.

However, with this slash, Zhou Wen felt that it was somewhat different from usual. Usually, when he slashed out, how much strength the blade had was limited by his own strength.

But now, with this slash, Zhou Wen felt an additional force that exceeded his limits, being injected into his saber.

More accurately speaking, his entire body seemed to be enveloped by a strange force. When he swung his saber, it was as if someone was holding his hand before swinging the saber with him.

The slash completely exceeded Zhou Wen’s expectations both in speed and strength. The blade seemed to teleport as it vanished briefly before appearing in front of the girl.

The girl revealed a look of surprise as she extended her arms to block the blade.

Immediately, blood splattered as the girl’s arm was sliced open. Through the wound, he could see the flesh and bones inside. Her body was also sent flying and, when she fell to the ground, she created a hundred-meter-long ditch in the ground that had roots entrenched in it.

Zhou Wen looked at the saber in his hand in a slight daze. The strength of the saber had far exceeded his expectations. Logically speaking, although he had advanced to the Epic stage, his physical stats hadn't been raised. It was unlikely he had suddenly become this strong.

Even if he could become stronger, that would be when he absorbed stats crystals and increased his stats to a higher level.

But now, he had not done anything; yet, he was already so strong.

Is this the power of a Life Soul? Zhou Wen inspected himself, but he didn't see anything. He clearly felt that there was a Life Soul outside his body, but he couldn't see it.

Banana Fairy flew back and rubbed her neck, looking very uncomfortable.

Zhou Wen glanced at the girl and saw her get back on her feet. He couldn't help but frown slightly as he clenched the saber in his hand, preparing to completely finish her.

He absolutely couldn't let such a vicious creature live in this world. Otherwise, there would be endless trouble.

With her vengeful personality, she definitely wouldn't stop until Zhou Wen was killed.

Zhou Wen drew his saber and was about to head towards the little girl who had just gotten up when he suddenly saw a sword flash in the sky. A black figure appeared on a flying sword, blocking him.

After Zhou Wen saw who it was, he couldn't help but frown slightly. The person riding the sword in front of him was the

one who had killed the strange mountain back in Holy City.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 343 - Sword Snatching

Chapter 343 Sword Snatching

“Why are you killing a child?” The woman in black was clearly the same as Zhou Wen. She only believed that the girl was a human child. She had passed by and seen Zhou Wen slashing at the girl from midair. She didn’t know of the development prior to that.

After confirming that the little girl was not a dimensional creature but a human, the woman in black stood in front of the little girl on her flying sword. However, she had no intention of taking action. She just wanted to figure out the situation.

“She’s not human,” Zhou Wen said to the woman in black.

“How can she not be… Ah…” Before the woman in black could finish her sentence, she felt a searing pain in her calf.

The little girl had lunged forward and hugged her leg. She had imagined that the little girl had done so out of fear, but the little girl ended up biting her calf. Her white teeth pierced into her flesh, almost snapping off her calf.

The woman in black was at the peak Epic stage with high hopes of stepping into the Mythical stage, but her ancient sword was already a Mythical Companion Beast.

With the toughness of her body, it naturally wasn’t something a human child could injure. It immediately made her realize that what Zhou Wen was saying was the truth. This was indeed not a human child.

Bam!

The woman in black instinctively raised her leg and kicked the little girl away. Then, just as she was about to attack, her body suddenly shook and she almost fell to the ground. Her vision blurred, and she immediately felt something was amiss.

She barely ordered the ancient bronze sword to attack the little girl, wanting to kill her now. However, as the ancient bronze sword flew out, she had already fallen to the ground. It was unknown if she was dead or alive.

Zhou Wen was secretly alarmed as he subconsciously touched the wound on his neck. The woman was so strong, but with just one bite from the girl, in moments, her fate was in question. He had been bitten by her too, but he was fine. He considered it extreme luck.

The ancient bronze sword continued flying towards the girl and penetrated her body. It then flew back and automatically floated above the woman in black. Zhou Wen knew that the woman wasn’t dead; otherwise, the Companion Beast would have dissipated after her death.

Since the ancient bronze sword remained, it implied that the woman in black was still alive.

Zhou Wen ignored her and charged at the girl who had fallen onto a grass patch. Although her heart had been pierced through by the ancient bronze sword, Zhou Wen doubted that she was truly dead.

When he rushed to the grass where the girl had fallen. There were some bloodstains on the grass, but there was no sign of the girl.

Clang!

Zhou Wen heard a noise coming from the direction of the woman in black. He hurriedly turned around and saw the girl grabbing onto the hilt of the ancient bronze sword. Blood covered the sword as it trembled without killing the girl.

Although Zhou Wen didn’t know that the ancient bronze sword was a Mythical existence, he had seen the might of the bronze sword killing the strange mountain. Such might was something that the Epic Banana Fairy couldn’t match up to. Even after its master stopped directing it, it wasn’t likely to be seized by someone else.

However, the girl held onto the ancient bronze sword. All it did was tremble without releasing any sword beams as an offensive. This left Zhou Wen very puzzled.

Soon, he realized that something was amiss. The ancient bronze sword was covered with blood-the girl’s blood.

The blood was slowly seeping into the ancient bronze sword. The latter wasn’t simply stained with blood, but rather, the quality of the ancient bronze sword was undergoing changes itself. The originally bronze material had turned to the color of purple copper after being soaked in blood. It looked extremely bizarre.

Furthermore, as the blood seeped into the ancient bronze sword, the resistance it put up increasingly weakened.

Zhou Wen was alarmed. He didn’t dare hesitate. He slashed his saber over, hoping to kill her.

Clang!

The girl brandished the ancient bronze sword in her hand and clashed with the Bamboo Blade. Although she wasn’t able to stimulate the power of the ancient bronze sword, Zhou Wen’s Bamboo Blade wasn’t able to slice through the sword. All it did was send the girl and the sword flying.

Before the girl landed, Zhou Wen had already closed the distance with Ghost Steps. He delivered Transcendent Flying Immortal once again as saber beams criss-crossed in a bid to slay the girl.

The girl brandished the ancient bronze sword to block Transcendent Flying Immortal, but she was unable to completely block its saber forces. With the augmentation of a Life Soul, Zhou Wen’s Transcendent Flying Immortal was even faster and more ruthless than before. He forcefully slashed across her, producing a bone-deep wound.

The little girl flew as the ancient bronze sword landed beside her.

Having been stabbed through the heart by the ancient bronze sword, Zhou Wen didn’t dare hope that one strike was enough to kill her. He immediately rushed to her.

Indeed, she wasn’t dead. She even glared fiercely at Zhou Wen as he slashed down with the Bamboo Blade in hand.

Hum!

With a sword hum, Zhou Wen immediately felt that something was amiss. He instantly activated Ghost Steps. When he appeared dozens of meters away, he saw a sword beam sweep past the spot he had been standing on. It left behind a deep rift spanning hundreds of meters.

The Companion Beast that had turned into a purple-copper ancient sword floated beside the girl. Purple sword flashes shimmered, like a venomous snake flicking its forked tongue, one that could devour at any moment.

How can this be? Zhou Wen wore a strange expression. It was almost impossible for a Companion Beast to betray its owner the moment it signed a contract. A Companion Beast's life was intrinsically tied to its owner.

Although there were some methods that could "tear up" a Companion Beast contract, it was done at a huge price. Even so, the owner had to give permission. It was unheard of for Companion Beasts to betray on their own accord, nor had he ever heard of Companion Beasts being snatched away and used by others.

Where exactly is this girl from? Zhou Wen was alarmed.

Zhou Wen's first thought was to turn around and flee. He had seen the might of the ancient bronze sword before it could kill a suspected Mythical creature like the strange mountain. Although he had advanced to the Epic stage, he was still no match for it.

Now that the ancient bronze sword was under the girl's control, there was a high chance that she would launch a terrifying offensive against him.

As expected, the girl grabbed the ancient sword's handle and swung the sword at Zhou Wen. Purple sword beams immediately tore out of the sword in an indomitable fashion, halving everything that stood in front of her. Zhou Wen was next.

The sword beam was just too fast. Zhou Wen barely dodged with Ghost Steps, partly thanks to his Life Soul's

augmentation.

The sword beam shot out thousands of meters into the forest. Everything that stood in its way was severed, including the hard mountain rocks. It was like slicing through tofu.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 344 - Pursuit

Chapter 344 Pursuit

The girl had an indescribable ferocity. She brandished the ancient purple-copper sword and charged over again. The injuries on her body were almost fully recovered. Her recovery speed was not inferior to Li Xuan’s Immortal God of Combat, and was perhaps superior.

Zhou Wen didn’t escape again when he saw the staggering sword beam brought about by the ancient purple-copper sword. He advanced instead of retreating, pushing Ghost Steps to the limit as he dodged the sword beam. This allowed him to approach the girl as he slashed at her neck with Bamboo Blade.

If the ancient purple-copper sword had been fighting autonomously, Zhou Wen would have fled as far as he could. However, he realized that the girl held the purple-copper sword in her hand as she fought. This made him feel as though he had a chance.

The girl was very strong, and her speed was very fast. Coupled with the indomitable sword beam from the purple-copper sword, she looked terrifying

However, she clearly didn’t know any combat techniques or sword techniques. All she did was fight based on instinct. Her fighting with the sword was inferior to having the sword fight alone. This allowed Zhou Wen to see an opportunity.

He was like a ghost as he pushed the Dragon Gate Fairy Skill, Nine Dragons Art, and Ghost Steps to its limits. The

limited Primordial Energy problem that he had before, was now gone.

With his Life Soul, he felt as though he had infinite Primordial Energy. He could continuously use Ghost Steps, Transcendent Flying Immortal, and many other Primordial Energy-expensive Primordial Energy Skills, but he could not sense any signs of his Primordial Energy weakening.

With his Life Soul, Zhou Wen felt as if he had activated a cheat that gave him unlimited skills. All sorts of Primordial Energy Skills could be used without considering the Primordial Energy consumption.

Although he was facing a huge crisis, Zhou Wen felt extremely carefree right now. The feeling of being able to use any Primordial Energy Skill as he wished was just too good.

In the past, he needed to do all kinds of calculations and conservation. Even with the augmentation of his Dao Body, he could only use Primordial Energy Skills intermittently. But now, the exhilaration of using one skill after another ad infinitum was something he had never experienced before.

Now, Zhou Wen felt as though he had become an enhanced version of Lance. Lance could deliver an infinite Primordial Energy Skill combo because he chose Primordial Energy Skills that expended very little Primordial Energy. In contrast, Zhou Wen could now use all sorts of devastating, expensive Primordial Energy Skills repeatedly.

Furthermore, Zhou Wen’s every move seemed to be equipped with a booster. His Strength and Speed increased greatly as every step he took seemed to have him pushed forward by a booster rocket.

Now, Zhou Wen really wanted to check his in-game stats and know what his Life Soul was. Although he enjoyed the benefits brought about by his Life Soul, he couldn’t see what it was.

Zhou Wen’s figure kept flashing around the girl. Although he couldn’t clash with the ancient purple-copper sword’s beam, the girl’s brandishing was insufficient to hit him. Instead, Zhou Wen’s Bamboo Blade would slice through the girl’s body from time to time, producing cuts on her skin.

If it wasn’t for the ancient purple-copper sword’s immense strength and how annihilative the sword beam was, forcing Zhou Wen to retreat at times, the girl would have long been slain by him.

The girl also felt that she was in extreme danger. No matter how she brandished the purple-copper sword in her hand, it couldn’t touch Zhou Wen’s body. This infuriated her.

The girl gritted her teeth and dragged the purple-copper sword as she fled.

How could Zhou Wen allow her to escape? He held the Bamboo Blade and pursued her.

This girl was so vicious and terrifying. If she wasn’t killed today, she might become greater trouble after she grew up and learned some techniques. She might even become another terrifying demoness in the history of the League.

Zhou Wen wished for nothing more than to slay the girl under his blade. However, the ancient purple-copper sword’s beam was too powerful, making it difficult for him to directly slay her. It was also because the girl held it and limited its strength that Zhou Wen could chase after her.

If the girl were to throw it out and let the ancient sword attack autonomously, the one running would probably be Zhou Wen.

The girl clearly didn't understand this logic as she kept slashing with the purple-copper sword, but it failed to hurt Zhou Wen. Instead, Zhou Wen left deep wounds on her body, ones so deep that her bones could be seen.

The two engaged in combat as the pursuit continued. Soon, they rushed into the mountains. The purple-copper sword's staggering sword beam sliced through some of the hills, testimony of the sword beam's shocking prowess.

What was even more shocking was that the girl had gradually begun imitating Zhou Wen's movement technique and various techniques in battle. Although she was far inferior to Zhou Wen and could hardly cause trouble for him, she was improving rather quickly.

What kind of origins does this fellow have? If she's human, how can she have such a terrifying physique and capabilities? A powerful existence like the woman in black had been bitten by her, and her outcome is now unknown. Even the ancient bronze sword has been forcefully snatched away. Such an ability is too terrifying. It's impossible for a human child to possess such powers. But if she's a dimensional creature, why doesn't she have the aura of other species on her? She looks human in every single way. Zhou Wen recalled the dimensional black hole that Wang Mingyuan had opened. If this girl had really come from the dimensional black hole, her origins were definitely extraordinary.

Unfortunately, all this was just speculation. Zhou Wen didn't plan on figuring out her origins. He only wanted to quickly

kill her so that she wouldn’t grow stronger.

There were already many wounds on the girl’s body. Many of the wounds would have been fatal to ordinary people, but she had managed to survive them. Furthermore, she could continue fighting. The wounds on her body also healed quickly in battle.Now, other than beheading her, Zhou Wen had no idea how he could kill her.

As the pursuit continued deep into the mountains. The girl suffered another strike from Zhou Wen, sending her flying as she landed beyond a cliff.

Zhou Wen immediately rushed over and slashed his saber at the girl’s neck, giving her no chance to land on the ground.

The girl was in midair when she forcefully produced a sword beam, forcing Zhou Wen to dodge. He circled in the air like an eagle to dodge the sword beam before lunging at the girl who had fallen to the bottom of the cliff.

The girl clearly didn’t have the ability to fly. Without any place to land her feet to propel her elsewhere, she was unable to dodge. Her face finally revealed a look of panic as she desperately swung the purple-copper sword furiously.

Zhou Wen flew through the air like a fairy, dodging the shocking sword beams. Finally, he approached the girl and slashed at her neck.

Fresh blood splattered. Although the girl had tried her best to twist her neck, she suffered a horrendous wound. Zhou Wen had sliced a fifth into her neck.

Zhou Wen was just about to continue striking the wound when he suddenly felt a terrifying force spew out from beneath the cliff.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 345 - Death

Chapter 345 Death

A large number of strange vines extended from the bottom of the cliff. A few of them managed to bind the girl while the other vines swept towards Zhou Wen.

Zhou Wen slashed with the Bamboo Blade, he managed to damage them but was unable to sever them. Seeing that the vines were still sweeping towards him, he had no choice but to use Fairy Skill to dodge their attack.

The girl had already been pulled to the bottom of the cliff by the vines. Zhou Wen summoned White Shadow of Poison. With a flap of its wings, it chased the vines down the cliff.

He wasn’t sure what the vines were, but he knew that he couldn’t let the little girl live. Otherwise, it would only spell doom in the future.

Vines swept towards Zhou Wen, but thankfully, with the White Shadow of Poison and his movement techniques, he dodged the vines’ attack and chased the girl to the bottom of the cliff.

The scene below left Zhou Wen alarmed. Beneath the cliff was a gigantic mushroom about two to three stories tall. Or, perhaps, it was a Ganoderma lucidum or something similar. Either way, it was a fungus.

The huge mushroom cap was black. Whiskers that looked like vines extended out from under the cap. They wrapped

around the girl and the purple-copper sword in her hand as they attacked Zhou Wen.

The girl was entangled by the mushroom whiskers and looked to be in extreme pain. The whiskers were like blood-sucking leeches, clinging onto her and piercing into her skin to extract her blood.

The purple copper sword was bound by the mushroom whiskers and couldn’t break free.

A plant-type dimensional creature can actually hold back that ancient purple-copper sword so that it can’t break free. What in the world is this place? It has such a terrifying plant-type dimensional creature! Zhou Wen looked around, completely unaware of where he was. He had pursued the girl in too deep, so he had no idea where he was.

Mushroom whiskers swept over like an inescapable net. Zhou Wen slashed with the Bamboo Blade, his body constantly moving as he barely managed to dodge the sweep from the mushroom whiskers. However, he was unable to do anything to the gigantic mushroom or even approach it.

Just as the little girl was about to be sucked dry, she let out a painful scream. Her body withered rapidly. Her face contorted into an excruciating grimace.

in

“Get reborn in a good family for your next life.” Zhou Wen frowned slightly as he summoned the Overlord Sword. His body rapidly flashed as he found an opportunity to strike out and stab through her body.

Although the girl was doomed, and Zhou Wen didn’t need to add this additional strike, her death meant the wiping out of the grudge between them. There was no need for him to see her die in pain. It was better to let her rest in peace early.

Zhou Wen stabbed through the girl’s body with his sword. At that moment, the girl might have been drained of too much blood by the mushroom and was on the brink of death. She was slain immediately upon being struck by Overlord Sword’s beam.

Just as Zhou Wen was about to turn and leave, he suddenly felt the mysterious phone vibrate before flying out of his pocket.

The phone screen automatically lit up. This was something that had never happened before.

The last time Zhou Wen’s phone was taken away by the military, they had checked it, however, it couldn’t be switched on as though its battery was flat or damaged.

But now, the phone actually moved on its own. The screen showed the Dead Man Tree’s interface, and at the same time, the camera on the phone focused on the slain girl and automatically snapped a picture.

Then, Zhou Wen saw the girl’s corpse and the purple-copper sword vanish together. And on the Dead Man Tree, there was a tiny sprout.

The huge mushroom immediately went crazy when it lost its target. Countless mushroom whiskers extended out from beneath the mushroom cap and swept towards Zhou Wen like a tidal wave.

Zhou Wen didn’t dare hesitate. He grabbed the phone floating in front of him and flew up, heading for the cliff.

However, the whiskers flew even faster than Zhou Wen, instantly catching up to him.

The Great Yin Wind from the banana fan only blew some of the mushroom’s whiskers askew while even more mushroom whiskers swept over.

All Zhou Wen could do was make a sacrifice. He summoned several Companion Beasts that he didn’t usually use, throwing them at the mushroom whiskers.

Taking the opportunity while the mushroom whiskers bound his Companion Beasts, Zhou Wen flashed away and dodged the attack from the other mushroom whiskers before finally rushing out of the cliff.

He turned back and saw the Golden Warriors and Stone Qilin being caught by the mushroom whiskers. In a blink of an eye, they were reduced to dust that scattered everywhere.

What a terrifying plant-type dimensional creature! Zhou Wen didn’t dare stay any longer as he charged into the sky. He saw the mushroom whiskers soar up like a volcanic eruption, but they failed to catch up to him.

Zhou Wen didn’t dare fly randomly in midair. After leaving the cliff, he retraced his steps. The mushroom whiskers had limited length, so there was no way they could chase after him. This relieved Zhou Wen.

After running for some distance, with no dimensional creatures appearing anywhere, Zhou Wen finally heaved a sigh of relief as he hurriedly checked the information on his phone.

The blood-colored avatar’s information had undergone a huge change, somewhat different from the one he had undergone during the Legendary stage.

Zhou Wen: Epic

Life Providence: Sigh of the King

Life Soul: Slaughterer (Primordial Body)

Strength: 22 (Sun)

Speed: 22 (Trajectory)

Constitution: 22 (Guilt)

Primordial Energy: 22 (Taboo)

Poison: 17

Wind: 11

His Primordial Energy Skills and Companion Beasts were still the same. The four basic stats were now 22. Behind Constitution was the word “Guilt.” Zhou Wen didn’t know what it meant, but from the looks of it, the postfix was similar to the other three stats after he broke through each limit. He just didn’t know why using his teacher’s blood to break through would be “Guilt.”

His Life Soul’s name was Slaughterer, but when he looked for the information on the Life Soul, he realized that it was blank. He didn’t know why his Life Soul had the name of a Slaughterer. He was clearly a pacifist and didn’t like slaughters.

As for the postfix of the Primordial Body, Zhou Wen had already learned that the Life Soul of humans was different

from the Life Soul of dimensional creatures.

A dimensional creature’s Life Soul was fixedremaining the same after birth. However, a human’s Life Soul could grow.

In the beginning, it was a Primordial Body, and after a single evolution, it would be an Evolved Body. A second evolution was a Perfect Body. Currently, the most powerful Epic stage Life Soul for humans was a Perfect Body.

Legend said if a Perfect Body further improved, one would reach the Mythical stage.

Of course, this was only a legend. Zhou Wen had never heard of any human having evolved to the Mythical stage.

Zhou Wen didn’t wish to stay in the wilderness for too long. Thankfully, his memory was outstanding. He still remembered how he came. He rode the Mutated Stone Chi and ran towards a small city nearby.

When he arrived at the location with the signal, Zhou Wen gave An Sheng a call and asked him about the situation.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 346 - Return

Chapter 346 Return

“Young Master Wen, you shouldn’t have gone to Holy City. Holy City suffered casualties this time. Wang Mingyuan’s crime has implicated the Wang family. If it wasn’t for the fact that they have some influence in the League, the entire Wang family would have been doomed. Even so, the Wang family is still in a terrible fix and they won’t have it easy. As for the four of you being Wang Mingyuan’s students, I’m afraid no one in the League will dare to hire you in the future,” An Sheng clearly knew of what had happened at Holy City as he spoke to Zhou Wen.

Zhou Wen fell silent. He didn’t mind if no one dared to hire him, but with Wang Mingyuan’s infamy that would last generations, there was probably no way to whitewash him.

Many lives were lost because of his actions. There was no way he could be rid of the guilt.

“Young Master Wen, where are you? I’ll send someone to pick you up. As long as you return to Luoyang, no one in the League will touch you,” An Sheng said.

“There’s no need. I remember the way. I can head back myself.” Zhou Wen rejected An Sheng. As the path An Sheng had taken previously wasn’t too dangerous, he could return to Luoyang safely with his present strength.

“Alright, be quick. Now that Holy City is in a mess, the six families and the Special Inspector Bureau don’t have the time or manpower to do anything to you. However, things

will be different after a while. You have to return to Luoyang as soon as possible," said An Sheng.

After hanging up, Zhou Wen rode the Stone Chi and headed for Luoyang. An Sheng was right. He needed to return quickly.

In the past, the bureau had tried to arrest him simply because of a tiny bit of suspicion. Now, his teacher, Wang Mingyuan, had committed such a huge crime, and they had been right beside him when things went down; therefore, Zhou Wen refused to believe that the six families would ignore them. Therefore, he had to return to Luoyang as quickly as possible. If there was no other choice, he could only escape into a dimensional zone.

He didn't encounter any danger along the way. Zhou Wen rode on the Mutated Stone Chi that moved faster than a car. However, it was too bumpy, making it very uncomfortable for gaming

Zhou Wen observed the Dead Man Tree on his cell phone every day and saw the flower sprout growing bigger by the day. It was very similar to the situation after Yan Zhen's death.

From the looks of it, after Yan Zhen died the last time, he was sucked in by the Dead Man Tree. That's why no one saw his corpse. Zhou Wen roughly gained an understanding of what was going on, but he still wasn't sure if this was a good or bad thing.

The Dead Man Tree was an unknown and terrifying existence. Previously, everything on the phone had been under Zhou Wen's control, but now, the Dead Man Tree seemed to exceed his control.

However, it was useless to worry about these things now. He couldn’t throw away his phone just because of the Dead Man Tree’s existence.

“Xia Xuanyue, can you tell me exactly what happened?” Xia Dongyue stared at Xia Xuanyue, his eyes filled with rage.

Xia Xuanyue was one of the geniuses that the Xia family had. She had the greatest hope of advancing to the Mythical stage. Her Life Soul had reached the Perfect stage and the Mythical Companion Egg the Xia family had obtained from a dimensional zone was given to her because of her outstanding performance.

Xia Xuanyue lived up to everyone’s expectations. With the Xia family’s resources, she had advanced the ancient sword to the Mythical stage in less than six years.

It could be said that Xia Xuanyue was the main pillar of the Xia family, but she ended up heavily injured while in the wild. The Xia family found her and managed to save her life, but she claimed that the ancient sword was gone.

Xia Yunyue was extremely calm as she recounted what happened that day.

“Are you telling me that you fainted after being bitten by a three-year-old child. After you woke up, that ancient sword Companion Beast was gone?” Xia Dongyue found it unbelievable.

After a moment of silence, Xia Xuanyue said, “Now that I think about it, the young man was right. That child really wasn’t human.”

was

“What’s that young man’s name? What does he look like? Find him. As long as he’s not dead, we must figure out the truth.” Xia Dongyue held back his anger as he spoke.

That was a Mythical Companion Beast; the Xia family didn’t have many Mythical Companion Beasts. With one gone just like that, how could he not be angry?

Xia Xuanyue knew what Xia Dongyue was suspicious of, but when she thought of the youth’s appearance, Xia Xuanyue said, “I didn’t take a careful look at that young man back then. I fainted after I was bitten. Now, I can’t remember his face anymore. I just found him very ordinary looking, without any obvious characteristics.”

Xia Dongyue was even more furious, but there was nothing he could do about it. After venting his anger, he allowed Xia Yunyue to leave his office.

That young man must be one of Wang Mingyuan’s four students. I just don’t know his name. Xia Xuanyue was also in front of the Holy Tower back then, so she naturally recognized Zhou Wen, but she just didn’t know his name.

After she returned, Xia Yunyue found information from the bureau and quickly confirmed that the young man she had met was Wang Mingyuan’s disciple, Zhou Wen.

Forget it. If I hadn’t stopped him from killing that girl, such a thing wouldn’t have happened. It has nothing to do with him. He’s already in enough trouble, so why should I heap more on him? Xia Xuanyue closed the window containing Zhou Wen’s information, having no intention of pursuing the matter.

When Zhou Wen successfully returned to Luoyang, An Sheng and Ouyang Lan had also rushed back from Zhuolu.

He was taken to Ouyang Lan before he even entered the city.

“Punk, why are you so unlucky? It doesn’t matter now that Wang Mingyuan’s dead, but he sure brought hellfire on the Wang family and his students,” Ouyang Lan sighed as she held Zhou Wen.

“How are Hui Haifeng, Zhong Ziya, and Jiang Yan?” Zhou Wen hurriedly asked. He hadn’t encountered them the entire way back.

“Hui Haifeng’s family background is clean. There shouldn’t be any problems. He should be at home now. If there aren’t any problems, he should return to school for lessons shortly,” Ouyang Lan said.

“What about Zhong Ziya and Jiang Yan?” Zhou Wen realized that something was amiss.

Ouyang Lan shook her head and said, “No one knows. There hasn’t been any news about them to date. I wonder if they died at the mouths of those dimensional creatures or if they managed to escape and have hidden themselves.”

Zhou Wen heaved a sigh of relief when he heard that. He believed that it was unlikely for the two of them to die so easily. As long as they didn’t fall into the hands of the Special Inspector Bureau and the six families, they still had a chance of meeting in the future.

“Sis Lan, how’s the situation at Zhuolu?” Only then did Zhou Wen recall that if Ouyang Lan and An Sheng had returned, did that mean that there had been some new developments?

“There’s no progress. The inner sanctum is guarded by Mythical creatures. Our men cannot enter unless Tianzuo

brings his Companion Beasts over, but Luoyang isn’t stable either. It’s impossible for him to leave for so long. Otherwise, Luoyang might be the next Holy City,” Ouyang Lan said with a sigh. Clearly, she was helpless on this matter.

From the looks of it, I can only rely on myself. Zhou Wen knew that the An family couldn’t be counted on. He had to think of a way to crack the inner sanctum and find the former principal.

Although he knew that the odds were against the former principal, Zhou Wen refused to give up until the time he saw his corpse.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 347 - Slaughterer

Chapter 347 Slaughterer

After returning to the school’s dorm, Zhou Wen continued studying his Life Soul.

When an ordinary person advanced to the Epic stage and condensed a Life Soul, they would sense their Life Soul to a certain extent and would know its approximate powers.

However, Zhou Wen was very puzzled about his Life Soul. He could sense the existence of Slaughterer and sense its close relationship with him, but he was unable to communicate with it.

It felt like Zhou Wen’s Life Soul was a lifeless robot. All it knew was to follow a program.

In any case, this feeling was extremely odd. Zhou Wen didn’t discover anything after looking through the college’s records regarding the Epic stage. Why are my Life Providence and Life Soul so strange? It’s fine if I can’t read the information about the Life Soul, but I can’t even see it. What’s going on? Zhou Wen had tried many times in-game-his Life Soul didn’t seem to have a corporeal body. When attacked, Zhou Wen could sense the Life Soul on him, but it didn’t stop any attacks. Any force would penetrate it and affect Zhou Wen as though it didn’t exist.

Zhou Wen couldn’t command Slaughterer to take the initiative to attack, nor could he allow Slaughterer to use any skills. It was as though Slaughterer’s effect was to

passively increase Zhou Wen’s Strength and Speed, as well as provide an infinite reservoir of Primordial Energy.

Why does my Life Soul and Life Providence seem to be swapped when compared to others? Others have a Life Providence that provides passive abilities, while their Life Soul has active skills. Why is my Life Soul a passive ability? Zhou Wen found it very strange. Zhou Wen wished that his Life Soul was like Dr. Soul’s. It could aid Doctor Darkness and could also attack independently. That was Zhou Wen’s ideal Life Soul.

In fact, most Life Souls were like that. The Life Soul of the Mutated Stone Chi was in an offensive and defensive state. At the very least, even Wang Mingyuan’s Life Soul was a bottle with a healing ability. However, Zhou Wen’s Life Soul had no ability to attack on its own. It could only attach to him to provide support.

Zhou Wen wanted to test out Slaughterer’s support, so he planned on heading to a test venue. After all, he had advanced to the Epic stage and the ordinary testing apparatus in his dorm didn’t have such a high upper limit. He couldn’t accurately make measurements with them.

Just as he walked out of Four Seasons Garden, he saw Wang Fei walk over.

“Zhou Wen, do you have time? Can we have a chat?” Wang Fei walked over and asked.

“Ms. Wang, what’s the matter?” Zhou Wen guessed that Wang Fei was probably going to tell him about Wang Mingyuan.

Indeed, Wang Fei sighed and said, “I shouldn’t have introduced you to Uncle Mingyuan. I originally wanted you

to study well, but I ended up bringing you to harm instead."

"Ms. Wang, it's nothing like that. I don't regret learning from Teacher. No matter how others see him, he will always be my teacher," Zhou Wen said with a serious expression.

Wang Fei stared blankly at Zhou Wen for quite some time. After confirming that he wasn't joking, she shook her head and said with a bitter smile, "Even those who share the same blood can't compare to a student. This world is really different."

"Ms. Wang, has something happened?" Zhou Wen felt that the Wang Fei today was a little different from the Tutor Wang Fei he had known before.

Wang Fei shook her head. "It's nothing. From tomorrow onwards, I won't be your tutor anymore. I came to see you before I leave the school. I originally wanted to apologize, but since you don't mind being Uncle Mingyuan's disciple, there's no need for me to say sorry."

"Ms. Wang, you are leaving the school?" Zhou Wen said in surprise.

Although he wasn't quite studious usually, this didn't stop him from believing that Wang Fei was a good tutor.

"After Uncle Mingyuan's incident, I can no longer remain in the school as a tutor. I'm a family member of a monster who betrayed all of humanity. No one can tolerate such a person to continue teaching. The League can't tolerate it; nor the parents of the students, so I, as a relative of a sinner, can only resign," Wang Fei said self-deprecatingly. Zhou Wen was at a loss for words. Wang Mingyuan's incident was terrible and there were far-reaching influences. This was something expected.

Anyone could be willful and say that one had to be responsible for their own actions. However, if something were to really happen, certain influences couldn’t be avoided.

“That’s good too. I’ve always felt that I’m unsuitable being a tutor. Perhaps the battlefield is where I belong.” Wang Fei looked at Zhou Wen and said, “Zhou Wen, study hard. Don’t let others look down on you. After all, Uncle Mingyuan and I have taught you before.”

With that said, Wang Fei waved her hand, indicating that Zhou Wen need not say another word. Then, she turned and left.Zhou Wen felt somewhat uncomfortable as he watched Wang Fei leave. He ultimately believed that she was a good tutor.

“No one’s more suitable as a tutor than you,” Zhou Wen said to Wang Fei’s back. Unfortunately, Wang Fei had already gone too far and couldn’t hear him.

Before Zhou Wen could enter the testing hall, Li Xuan called him on the phone, requesting he head to the activity room of the Xuanwen Club. “Old Zhou, are you alright?” Li Xuan asked as he sized up Zhou Wen. “Why wouldn’t I be? I’m more curious about why you’re looking for me,” Zhou Wen said casually. “Our Xuanwen Club has been established for quite some time now, but we haven’t organized many activities. Now that you’re finally back, I plan on inviting all the members over for an event,” Li Xuan said with a smile. “It’s not a good time now, right?” Wang Mingyuan’s matter had just happened, and all of the League citizens all knew about it. As for being Wang Mingyuan’s disciple, although there wasn’t any news about this spreading, many people on campus, especially the members of the Xuanwen Club, knew that Zhou Wen was studying under Wang Mingyuan. “This is

the best time to run one. Only then will we be able to tell who truly is a trustworthy partner," Li Xuan said with a smile. "I've informed all members and also told them that you will be coming. As for how many will eventually come, I don't know." "There's no need, right? It's just a school club, and we aren't real companions. Why do you need to know so clearly?" Zhou Wen said disapprovingly. Li Xuan played it off with a laugh and said, "We recently recruited quite a number of people and it feels quite troublesome. We can take this opportunity to kick a portion away, so that it will save us the trouble."

Zhou Wen didn't say anything else. After some time, people slowly straggled in, but most members didn't come. Some gave excuses while others didn't even reply, nor were they seen.

What surprised Zhou Wen was that Gu Dian was here. Fang Ruoxi and Tian Xiangdong had also come.

Then, there were Feng Qiuyan and Wang Lu. The Xuanwen Club which had reached a membership of almost thirty people had now been reduced to the few of them.

"Those who came today are all true friends of our Xuanwen Club. Okay, let's cut the chatter. In the future, none of you will be left out when there are special activities. This is some bonus from the club. I know no one will be impressed by it, but just treat it as a little token from Zhou Wen and me." Li Xuan distributed the special passes he had prepared. They were passes to dimensional zones that students usually couldn't enter.

"Never expected such a bonus. Can you count me in as well?" Someone pushed the door open and walked in.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 348 - Storming Through Tiger Cage Pass

Chapter 348 Storming Through Tiger Cage Pass

When Zhou Wen saw that it was Huang Ji, he said with a smile, “Senior, are you using us for amusement?”

Zhou Wen knew that Huang Ji had an extremely odd personality. Although he had a terrifying cultivation, he never participated in any school activities. He hadn’t joined the student council when they invited him to be its vice president.

“Do I look like I’m joking? If you don’t find me a hindrance, then help me with the sign-up procedures,” Huang Ji said.

“Nothing of that sort, Senior Huang! We fully welcome you joining our Xuanwen Club. I’ll do the paperwork for you.” Li Xuan was very happy. He originally thought that he would be purging members today, but he never expected to have one join. Furthermore, it was the famous Huang Ji. It was truly a pleasant surprise.

“I’ll leave the administrative procedures to you. Zhou Wen, we’ve already finished the game’s alpha version. Try it out.” Huang Ji unlocked his phone and handed it to Zhou Wen.

It’s been made? Zhou Wen was delighted. He never expected that the game could be made in such a short span of time. “It’s just an alpha. The map uses Tiger Cage Pass. Try it and give me some feedback,” Huang Ji urged Zhou Wen, clearly looking forward to his evaluation. Under Huang

Ji’s guidance, Zhou Wen tapped an icon and soon entered the game interface.

“How is it?” Huang Ji asked eagerly.

Zhou Wen looked at the game interface and gaming characters as his expression turned odd. No matter how he looked at it, it resembled a 2D side-scrolling game from the past.

Zhou Wen could only describe this game interface using one word-crude.

After all, it’s just an alpha. I think it will get better in the future? Zhou Wen could only console himself.

Li Xuan and company crowded over to take a look at the game Zhou Wen and Huang Ji had come up with. Zhou Wen had no choice but to control the character and try out the controls. The controls were very smooth and the character design included four skills, ones that were common on campus. One typically could obtain them easily.

The controls were pretty alright, but the in-game monsters were Demonized Soldiers from Tiger Cage Pass. Although their styles were a little crude, one could tell that they were Demonized Soldiers.

However, the Demonized Soldiers in-game were a little stupid. Although their attack patterns were the same as real ones, they weren’t as intelligent.

He easily killed a few Demonized Soldiers. After walking a short distance, he realized that there was no path ahead. “Where should I go?” Zhou Wen looked at Huang Ji.

“This is just an alpha. The map is only that big. What do you think?” Huang Ji asked Zhou Wen with an expectant look. I invested 1.5 million, and you are giving me this!? Zhou Wen really wanted to point at Huang Ji’s nose and question him. In what universe did such a game look like it was worth 1.5 million? However, seeing Li Xuan and company looking at him, Zhou Wen could only grit his teeth and say, “Not bad. Keep up the good work. I look forward to the day the game truly launches.”

Having already made the investment, it was too late to say anything now. In order to accentuate his persona of a gaming fanatic, he had no choice but to suffer in silence.

Huang Ji imagined that Zhou Wen was really looking forward to seeing his game, so he said excitedly, “I knew you would like it. Don’t worry, I’ll speed up the progress. The first map I’m preparing to do is Tiger Cage Pass. After it’s created, I will add more common Primordial Energy Skills that are readily available in our school, allowing the students to choose their own Primordial Energy Skills to game. I’ll also add a Demonized General as a Boss and add all the skills and behavior of it. As long as other students play our game, they will have a more comprehensive understanding of the Demonized Soldiers and Demonized Generals…

Zhou Wen no longer had much hope for Huang Ji. It seemed like the quality of the game he developed wasn’t as high as his cultivation.

However, since he had already spent the money, and Zhou Wen wasn’t really hoping to play the game, all he could do was grit his teeth and agree, expressing his anticipation.

Huang Ji was delighted, his enthusiasm boundless. After settling the sign-up procedures, he went back to work on the

game development.

“Old Zhou, I think that game seems a little too simple.” Although Li Xuan usually only played simple games to kill time, he could tell that the game’s interface was truly terrible.

Zhou Wen had no choice but to speak up for Huang Ji. “What’s important isn’t the game’s graphics but the content of the game. In the future, the game will add all the dimensional zones on campus as dungeons. When the time comes, one will be able to understand the behavior and various skills of dimensional creatures by gaming, so it will be very beneficial.”

“Is that so?” Li Xuan and the others expressed their doubts.

Although the current level of technology wasn’t much better than it was more than a decade ago, the standards of a 3D game were already rather mature. In terms of side-scrolling games like Huang Ji’s, it just didn’t seem right.

However, they didn’t really play games, so they didn’t have much of an opinion about it.

On the contrary, Wang Lu seemed somewhat interested in this. She got Zhou Wen to let her have a spin after the game was done.

After Wang Fei left, the school assigned another tutor to their class. However, Zhou Wen had already advanced to the Epic stage and was on the same level as his tutor. The teaching content used to teach ordinary students was useless to him.

The school was most useful to Zhou Wen because of that massive database and those dimensional zones. Therefore,

when he had nothing to do, Zhou Wen would crazily grind the dungeons.

After entering Tiger Cage Pass, Zhou Wen controlled the blood-colored avatar to rush for the city gates. Sitting on the Mutated Stone Chi made him look domineering. All the Demonized Soldiers and Demonized Generals that approached were killed by the beam of light that shot out from its eyes. Otherwise, it would summon large swaths of spears that erupted from the land, piercing to death hordes of Demonized Soldiers.When the arrow flew over, the Mutated Stone Chi’s eyes blasted out a beam that collided with it and exploded. The beam dissipated and the arrow shattered.

The blood-colored avatar continued charging forward as huge amounts of arrows rained down. A grayish-white stone dragon appeared above the Stone Chi’s head. It spewed out large amounts of grayish-white smoke that immediately petrified the arrows as they crumbled to the ground.

The blood-colored avatar didn’t do anything as the Mutated Stone Chi leaped up and jumped onto the city gates.

The black-armored general at the pass, pulled out his halberd and smashed it at the blood-colored avatar on the Mutated Stone Chi’s back with terrifying demonic flames.

Zhou Wen summoned his Overlord Sword as his greatsword clashed with the halberd. With a clang, the halberd was flung away as Overlord Sword deviated from its trajectory. Neither side gained the upper hand.

However, in the next second, Zhou Wen used Transcendent Flying Immortal. He became one with the sword as he transformed into sword shadows that slashed at the black-armored general.

The black-armored general’s demonic flames surged into the sky as he brandished his halberd and blocked the attacks. It was as though he had three heads and six arms as he successfully blocked the Transcendent Flying Immortal.

What a powerful Demonized General! Zhou Wen was somewhat surprised.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 349 - Tiger Cage Pass Boss

Chapter 349 Tiger Cage Pass Boss

Although his attributes hadn’t increased much after he advanced to the Epic stage, with the addition of Transcendent Flying Immortal, and the augmentation of the Slaughterer Life Soul, ordinary Epic creatures couldn’t withstand a single strike from Zhou Wen.

Yet, the black-armored Demonized General was actually able to block his Transcendent Flying Immortal. Furthermore, the strange weapon didn’t snap from the blow. It left Zhou Wen somewhat surprised.

However, Zhou Wen’s strongest strength now wasn’t one Transcendent Flying Immortal strike, but infinite Transcendent Flying Immortal strikes.

The Mutated Stone Chi pounced at the Demonized Soldiers that came charging forward. The blood-colored avatar’s figure flashed as it pulled the distance with Ghost Steps, delivering wave after wave of Transcendent Flying Immortal. Sword shadows danced wildly as they constantly struck the black-armored general.

Although the black-armored general’s combat strength was extraordinary, and he was able to block Transcendent Flying Immortal, he couldn’t use his Primordial Energy Skills repeatedly like Zhou Wen. In the gaps of his skills, Zhou Wen slashed at the joint between the helmet and armor.

Boom!

Zhou Wen originally imagined that even if this strike couldn’t kill the black-armored general, it would still be able to severely injure him. However, to his surprise, the demonic flames on the general’s body turned into a three-headed, six-armed devil. Among the devil’s six arms, he held a halberd condensed from three demonic flames. One of the halberds had blocked Overlord Sword.

Although the halberd condensed from the demonic flames was shattered, the black-armored general managed to escape the certain doom. Furthermore, the shattered halberd quickly reformed.

The blood-colored avatar’s fight with the black-armored general was like facing the black-armored general and his three-headed, six-armed Life Soul. It was unable to take him down quickly.

However, infinite Ghost Steps and Transcendent Flying Immortal were just insane. Even with the help of his Life Soul, the black-armored general was only able to withstand less than twenty consecutive Transcendent Flying Immortal strikes before being killed by Zhou Wen.

‘Killed Epic creature, Tiger Cage Demonized General. Discovered Dimensional Crystal.’

Zhou Wen saw a crystal drop out of the black-armored general’s body. Picking it up, he saw that it was a Strength Crystal with a value of 31. He immediately absorbed it and raised his Strength stat to 31 points.

The Mutated Stone Chi was still engaging in a slaughter amidst the Demonized Soldier horde. Zhou Wen ignored it and charged straight into Tiger Cage Pass to see what was inside.

However, despite killing everything in the pass, he failed to discover any other dimensional creatures of notice, other than the Tiger Cage Demonized General.

Strange, is that all Tiger Cage Pass has? Zhou Wen was somewhat surprised.

Although the Tiger Cage Demonized General was indeed very powerful and should be a top-notch Epic creature, there was no reason why the college couldn’t crack Tiger Cage Pass if that were the case.

No matter how powerful the Tiger Cage Demonized General was, it would be impossible for him to withstand the siege of numerous Epic experts.

Suddenly, Zhou Wen realized that something was amiss. Ever since he had entered the city, he had killed countless Demonized Soldiers and Demonized Generals, but none of them dropped dimensional crystals. It was rather abnormal.

Zhou Wen took a look at the in-game notification, but he didn’t discover anything special. It kept notifying him that he had killed Demonized Soldiers and Demonized Generals, but nothing dropped.

After storming through the city a little bit more, his suspicions were confirmed. No matter how many he killed, the number of Demonized Soldiers and Demonized Generals in the city didn’t seem to lessen.

Zhou Wen had deliberately summoned Banana Fairy to get her to engage in a mass slaughter with the Mutated Stone Chi, but a large number of Demonized Soldiers and Demonized Generals continued to surge over.

Thanks to having unlimited Primordial Energy, Zhou Wen could continue. Any other Epic expert would probably be exhausted from handling the endless horde.

Zhou Wen carefully observed and discovered that the Demonized Generals and Demonized Soldiers surged out from the city gate’s entrance.

With a thought, Zhou Wen controlled the blood-colored avatar and charged towards the city gates.

When he saw the city gates closing from afar, he saw someone standing above them. He had not seen this person when he stormed in, nor when he was on the city gates. Zhou Wen did not believe that he was seeing things. This was because the person was completely different from ordinary Demonized Soldiers and Demonized Generals. He wasn’t wearing any armor or equipment. Instead, he wore a cotton shirt-one that looked odd. It resembled a Daoist robe, but there were differences.

That person stood on the city gates, wearing a devil mask on his face. It was impossible to tell what he really looked like. He reached into his pocket and dug out something before scattering it into the city.

Finally, Zhou Wen got a clear look. What the person scattered were black beans. When the beans hit the ground, they turned into Demonized Soldiers. Some of the more special beans became Demonized Generals.

Is this the legendary Cast Beans for Soldiers? Zhou Wen was dumbfounded when he saw that. Then, he was delighted. If he were to kill the strange person, he might be able to have the Cast Beans for Soldiers Primordial Energy Skill drop.

Since ordinary Demonized Soldiers and Demonized Generals were no match for Zhou Wen, he stormed a bloody path and charged towards the city gates.

The devil-masked man sprinkled a few more beans. Upon seeing that the Demonized Soldiers and the Demonized Generals weren't able to withstand the blood-colored avatar, he stopped. He then took out two items—a pair of scissors and a stack of yellow paper. The strange person held the pair of scissors in one hand and a piece of yellow paper in the other. With a few crunching sounds, he cut the yellow paper into a human shape and threw it into the sky.The sky was filled with yellow paper and when the yellow paper landed, it transformed into a Tiger Cage Demonized General.

More than ten Tiger Cage Demonized General instantly surrounded Zhou Wen as they charged at him from all directions.

Zhou Wen sidestepped and dodged a few halberds. At the same time, he slashed out with Overlord Sword, clashing with a Tiger Cage Demonized General's halberd. Then, he was astonished to discover that the Tiger Cage Demonized Generals which were cut from the yellow paper were actually comparable to a true Tiger Cage Demonized General in terms of Strength and Speed.

What was even more unbelievable was that all the Tiger Cage Demonized Generals produced a three-headed, six-armed devil Life Soul.

Holy sh*t, who's that strange person? This is way too sick! Zhou Wen was alarmed. This was the first time he had seen such a Primordial Energy Skill.

It was unimaginable that just a paper figurine would be able to reach the standards of a Tiger Cage Demonized General.

Could it be that the strange person is at the Mythical stage? Zhou Wen guessed inwardly. At the same time, he also knew why no one could leave alive after entering Tiger Cage Pass. It was really difficult to stay alive with someone like that guarding Tiger Cage Pass. Shoot the horse before shooting the rider; capture the leader before capturing the looting throng. It’s useless for me to kill these Tiger Cage Demonized Generals that are made from paper figurines. I might as well charge over to kill that strange person. Zhou Wen exerted strength under his feet as he unleashed his full speed with Ghost Steps, dodging the Tiger Cage Demonized General’s encirclement. He soared into the sky and attempted to fly up to the city gates.

However, the strange person held a tiny triangular flag and waved it at the sky. Instantly, dark clouds gathered as lightning bolts struck down and hit the blood-colored avatar. The blood-colored avatar immediately went numb as it fell from the sky.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 350 - Magic

Chapter 350 Magic

More than ten Tiger Cage Demonized Generals immediately charged forward, bent on slashing the blood-colored avatar to death. The Mutated Stone Chi roared and the stone dragon Life Soul spewed out large amounts of grayish-white smoke. It made several Tiger Cage Demonized Generals have no choice but to brandish their halberds to fend off the gray smoke. Meanwhile, Banana Fairy spat out a mouthful of Grand Yin Wind. Instantly, a Tiger Cage Demonized General beside her was blown away before slamming into the city wall, causing bricks to fly everywhere.

The blood-colored avatar thankfully didn't die after being struck by lightning. It immediately used Ghost Steps to dodge the Tiger Cage Demonized Generals' attacks.

The devil-masked man on the city gates took out another stack of yellow paper and cut it into a human shape. Scattering it again, more than ten Tiger Cage Demonized Generals descended.

Who could withstand that? A Tiger Cage Demonized General was already a top Epic creature. Now, there were about thirty of them. Zhou Wen had to fight one against thirty. If it wasn't for the fact that his Life Soul was empowering, and he had two powerful Companion Beasts helping him, he would have died long ago.

"Banana Fairy… Come…" Zhou Wen controlled the blood-colored avatar to beckon at her, summoning the Banana

Fairy into his hand. He shook the fan and fanned a few times.

In the past, due to his limited Primordial Energy, he had to rest once he fanned. He would wait until his Primordial Energy recovered before doing it a second time, but now, he was frantically fanning. He didn’t have to worry about the Primordial Energy expenditure.

Although the Grand Yin Wind produced by Zhou Wen wasn’t as strong as Banana Fairy’s use of it, he could do it as many times as he wanted. As the fan fanned in every direction, gust after gust of Grand Yin Wind swept out, sending the Tiger Cage Demonized Generals flying into disarray. They slammed into one another or crashed into buildings, causing many of the buildings to collapse.

With the Overlord Sword in Zhou Wen’s other hand, he slashed out without any hesitation, beheading the Tiger Cage Demonized Generals in midair.

Bam! Bam! Bam!

White smoke spewed out from the Tiger Cage Demonized Generals’ heads, reducing them to paper figurines. They floated to the ground, but nothing dropped.

Clearly, the Tiger Cage Demonized Generals transformed from paper figurines weren’t real dimensional creatures; they were just the strange person’s Primordial Energy Skill.

Seeing so many Tiger Cage Demonized Generals killed, the strange person began cutting paper again. Zhou Wen didn’t give him the chance to do so. The two wings on his back which were formed from White Shadow of Poison, flapped as he activated Flash to instantly close in on the city gates.

With Transcendent Flying Immortal, he wanted to slay the strange person under his sword.

However, the strange person reached out and threw a rope that shot into the sky like a rod. Dark clouds appeared above his head.

The strange person held the end of the rope, pulling it into the dark clouds. When Zhou Wen’s Overlord Sword hit the clouds, the terrifying sword beam sliced apart the dark clouds, but the strange person was nowhere to be seen.

In the next second, he saw a strange figure appear on the roof of a small building in the city. The strange person scattered the yellow paper in his hand as more than a dozen cut Tiger Cage Demonized Generals landed and relentlessly charged at Zhou Wen.

Who is this fellow? He has terrifying and bizarre powers. Zhou Wen charged forward with Banana Fairy as he kept fanning the banana fan, sending the charging Tiger Cage Demonized Generals flying.

This time, Zhou Wen was too lazy to kill the paper-created Tiger Cage Demonized Generals. Killing them was useless. Nothing dropped from a piece of paper.

as

Therefore, Zhou Wen rushed straight for the strange person on the roof as he slashed out Demonic Astral Wheel with Overlord Sword. The strange person dodged Demonic Astral Wheel but didn’t expect it to boomerang as it immediately struck his back.

Zhou Wen was delighted when he saw the strange person sliced in half. However, white smoke emitted from the

strange person’s body as two halves of a yellow piece of paper fluttered down.

On the other end of the city gates, the strange person appeared again. He casually threw out yellow pieces of paper that transformed into Tiger Cage Demonized Generals.

Zhou Wen battled the strange person in Tiger Cage Pass, but all he killed were either bean soldiers or paper generals without any benefit.

He wanted to kill the strange person, but the strange person’s extremely arcane Primordial Energy Skill made it seem like a magic trick. Even if Zhou Wen’s sword managed to behead him, the strange person would turn into yellow paper the very next second, and his real body would appear someplace else.

I can’t take it anymore. If I continue, my Primordial Energy might remain full, but my body won’t be able to take it. Zhou Wen was extremely exhausted. His muscles were aching.

Although he had sufficient Primordial Energy, he had maintained such a high-intensity use of Primordial Energy Skills that his muscles were about to tear.

Zhou Wen had no choice but to leave Tiger Cage Pass. Killing the final Boss of Tiger Cage Pass didn’t seem like it would happen any time soon unless he found his weakness. Killing him with brute force alone was impossible.

Although he didn’t have the ability to kill the devil-masked man, Zhou Wen could rush out of Tiger Cage Pass alive. He was already a rare, powerful existence at the Epic stage. Any ordinary Epic might not survive in there.

After quitting the game, Zhou Wen went online to search for information.

The school’s database did not have any records of the strange person. Zhou Wen also checked the history of Tiger Cage Pass and discovered that section of history was rather vague, with only a few recorded folklore tales in the Three Kingdoms.

However, the Three Kingdoms’ records basically pointed to military generals who appeared at Tiger Cage Pass. There was no one who was proficient in Daoist spells.However, there were indeed some legendary characters in the Three Kingdoms-Yu Ji, Zuo Ci, Immortal Nanhua, as well as the latter’s two disciples—who seemed to have such abilities. All of them seemed to be possible candidates.

However, such information wasn’t of much help for Zhou Wen’s slaying of the devil-masked man. After all, the books didn’t provide any methods to crack their Daoist spells.

Zhou Wen roughly compared it and felt that the strange person was either Zuo Ci or Immortal Nanhua and his lineage. Zuo Ci was adept at all kinds of magical arts and was best at various bizarre spells.

Immortal Nanhua’s lineage was represented in the Three Kingdoms as using spells related to talisman soldiers.

Zhou Wen studied it for a while and found several ways to deal with paper generals online. The most direct way was to attack with water. Paper figurines were the most afraid of water. Legend had it that once it rained, those paper generals would be useless.

However, how could it rain in-game? The more realistic method was to find a Companion Beast that could spray

water. As long as he could crack the strange person’s paper figurines, there was a higher chance of killing him.

Apart from the paper figurine avatar, the strange person also had a skill that allowed him to crawl into the clouds with the rope before vanishing. After Zhou Wen checked the Internet, he found that there actually were such techniques recorded. Legend had it that these techniques were known as the Immortal Chains, but they had long been lost. There was no way to crack them yet.

After some thought, Zhou Wen ultimately decided to leave the Tiger Cage Pass’s Boss for the future. This fellow was too difficult to kill. He would try again when he obtained a Companion Beast that could spray water. Zhou Wen decided on going to Ant Nest to kill the Golden Flying Ant.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 351 - Slaying the Golden Flying Ant

Chapter 351 Slaying the Golden Flying Ant

Zhou Wen was already very familiar with Ant City. He didn’t need to do anything as his mount, the Mutated Stone Chi, could finish off a large horde of black-winged flying ants and the flightless ants.

The low-valued crystals that dropped were of little use. The Companion Eggs that dropped were fed to his few pets as snacks.

Tyrant Behemoth was simply too gluttonous. Its appetite alone was comparable to Banana Fairy and Silver-Winged Sky Spider. Furthermore, it was only at the Mortal stage, but the phone often popped up a notification that it was hungry. This gave Zhou Wen a headache.

If it’s such a glutton at the Mortal stage, won’t it really be able to swallow a thousand mountains when it truly advances to the Mythical stage? Zhou Wen was worried if he could afford to rear this fellow.

When he saw his old friend, the Golden Flying Ant, again, it hadn’t changed at all; however, Zhou Wen was no longer the same Zhou Wen who waited to be butchered by it.

Using Ghost Steps, he was able to instantly dice up the Golden Flying Ant with Transcendent Flying Immortal. The previously mighty Golden Flying Ant couldn’t even withstand a single strike from Zhou Wen. The speed it relied

upon for survival was useless in the face of Ghost Steps and Transcendent Flying Immortal.

‘Killed Epic creature, Golden Ant. Discovered Dimensional Crystal.’

A golden crystal dropped from the body of the dead Golden Ant which Zhou Wen grabbed before it landed in the honey pool.

It was a Primordial Energy Skill Crystal. Inside the golden dimensional crystal was the shadow of a Golden Flying Ant. However, it was unknown which of the Golden Flying Ant’s Primordial Energy Skill it was.

He reached out into the pool and scooped up some ant honey before trying it. It tasted pretty good and at the same time, a warm current entered his body. However, the ant honey was no longer of any use to Zhou Wen; it couldn’t increase his Primordial Energy.

After getting Banana Fairy to eat a little, Zhou Wen’s heart stirred when he saw that Banana Fairy seemed to like it. He summoned Tyrant Behemoth and got it to eat the ant honey.

Tyrant Behemoth didn’t stand on ceremony. It buried its head in the honey pool to drink, quickly dropping the honey level in the pool. After it was halfway done, Tyrant Behemoth was surprisingly satiated and stopped devouring the honey.

This was a rare situation. Even a glutton like Tyrant Behemoth had times when it was satiated.

It’s quite good to use this ant honey to feed my Companion Beasts. I’ve finally found a source of food for the future. Zhou Wen was delighted. In the future, as long as he killed the Golden Flying Ant, he wouldn’t have to worry about not

having any food to feed Tyrant Behemoth. He had solved a huge problem.

He chose to absorb the Primordial Energy Skill Crystal that was dropped by the Golden Ant; however, a notification indicated that he lacked 7 points of Light stats.

Zhou Wen obviously didn’t have a Light stat. He was instantly depressed. Many Epic Primordial Energy Skills had stat requirements, and even Primordial Energy Arts had requirements. It wasn’t like the past when he could freely absorb them.

Looking at the white cocoon suspended in midair, Zhou Wen gritted his teeth as he unsheathed his sword and slashed at it. After cutting it open, he indeed saw the creature inside.

She was the same as before. She was curled inside the white cocoon, but when Zhou Wen saw her, he was alarmed. This was because he felt that the creature inside the cocoon seemed to have grown significantly. Even the wings on her back seemed to have expanded significantly, making her look less tender than before.

She’s growing up? Zhou Wen was somewhat surprised.

The dimensional creatures in the game were like NPCs. No matter how many times Zhou Wen visited, their behavior and levels were the same. There wouldn’t be any changes.

However, the creature inside the cocoon actually grew. This was quite terrifying.

Zhou Wen was about to use Overlord Sword to slash at the creature inside the cocoon when she opened her eyes. She was originally hugging her knees with her face buried in her

arms, but she tilted her head, revealing her side profile and an eye. She then glanced at the blood-colored avatar.

Boom!

The blood-colored avatar’s body exploded as the game screen went black.

How is this fellow so powerful? With my present strength, I can’t even withstand a glance from her? Zhou Wen was alarmed. This was probably the most terrifying dimensional creature he had ever seen.

Whether it was the nine black dragons, the white dragon under Dragon’s Well, or even the two mythical creatures in the temple, they couldn’t be compared to the creature inside the white cocoon.

At the very least, the other Mythical creatures couldn’t instantly kill the blood-colored avatar with just a mere glance.

Thankfully, Zhou Wen didn’t expect to kill the creature inside the white cocoon himself. After all, the Golden Ant and the honey pool were his main targets, so he had completed his mission.

As the blood-colored avatar died, the Primordial Energy Skill Crystal dropped by the Golden Ant had been erased.

Zhou Wen didn’t mind. After some hesitation, he dripped his blood to revive. He started the Dragon Gate Grotto instance dungeon and went to Old Dragon Cave.

The creature inside the white cocoon was terrifying, and when Wang Mingyuan transformed into a dimensional creature, he clearly had the aura of the white cocoon which

was protected by the white dragon. Zhou Wen didn’t know what Wang Mingyuan had done to the white cocoon, so he wanted to head down to take a look.Given his current strength, as long as he wasn’t too close to the white dragon, there shouldn’t be too much danger.

Zhou Wen kept his stealth when he went down Dragon’s Well until he arrived at the white dragon’s stone pillar. However, what he saw left him somewhat astonished.

The white dragon was still coiled around the stone pillar, but the white cocoon above the stone pillar was gone.

How did it disappear? Could it be that Teacher really took away the white cocoon or killed the creature inside? However, even if he took away the white cocoon, it should still be in-game. Could it be that the white cocoon has a unique attribute? Be it in-game or in real life, as long as one takes the white cocoon away or the creature inside the white cocoon is killed, it will no longer exist? Zhou Wen thought about it and felt that it was a more reasonable conjecture or there was no explaining the disappearance of the white cocoon. Teacher, what have you done to the white cocoon? Zhou Wen still had some doubts, unsure how Wang Mingyuan had used the white cocoon to become a dimensional creature.

Not daring to alarm the white dragon, Zhou Wen controlled the blood-colored avatar to secretly leave Dragon’s Well.

Ant Nest has already been cleared. Tiger Cage Pass only has that one Boss left. Now, I should head to Zhuolu’s bat cave. I’ll grind more stats crystals there and raise my four basic stats. Then, I can head to the temple to give it a try. Although I doubt I can kill the two Mythical creatures, I can try to find their weaknesses. As long as I can find their

weaknesses, there might be a chance to kill them, even if they are Mythical. Zhou Wen entered the Zhuolu instance dungeon and began grinding crazily.

Epic creatures had stats that ranged from 21 to 41 points, but in fact, only Mythical creatures could reach 41. The highest attribute a typical Epic creature had was 40 points. And this was even with a certain Overdrive mutation. In fact, most Epic creatures' stats only reached 36-37 points. That was already considered pretty good.

Apart from dropping 36-valued Speed Crystals, the ordinary bats dropped relatively low-valued stat crystals. Only the White Shadow of Poison dropped a 40-valued Speed Crystal. This was Zhou Wen's main goal.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 352 - See You

Chapter 352 See You

Grinding was boring. Spending at least ten hours a day to grind the same monster was even more boring. Someone else would have vomited from this mindless grinding, but Zhou Wen kept on going. He only stopped to sleep. He didn’t even waste time while brushing his teeth or using the toilet.

Over the next few days, Zhou Wen rarely left his residence. He was like a daughter of an aristocratic family in ancient times, never taking a step out of the house.

His stats slowly increased, but the Slaughterer Life Soul showed no signs of evolution.

There were a myriad of ways for a Life Soul to evolve. Everyone needed to find their own way. Some Life Souls would only be able to evolve after absorbing stat crystals, while others needed to be evolved in battle. There were some that needed special supplementary materials to evolve.

In short, there were no two Life Souls that were completely identical in the world; likewise, there was no completely identical evolutionary method.

Zhou Wen had tried using stat crystals or engaging in combat with Slaughterer tagging along, but nothing worked. Slaughterer remained a Primordial Body.

I’m just too anxious. To be able to advance to the Epic stage at seventeen years of age is already staggeringly fast. The

average person would probably exceed thirty years of age by the time they advanced to the Epic stage. Geniuses would usually have to finish university before they advanced to the Epic stage in their twenties. Compared to them, my advancement speed is sick, Zhou Wen consoled himself.

However, he also knew that although his advancement was fast, it was still insufficient. He still didn't have the ability to storm into the Zhuolu battlefield and find his former principal

Furthermore, dimensional zones could lose their binding restrictions at any moment. When that happened, having Epic combat strength might not be considered weak, but it was definitely not strong.

While grinding the stat crystals, Zhou Wen attempted to switch to other Life Providences. He realized that when he switched to other Life Providences, he was unable to summon the Slaughterer Life Soul, nor could he use it. Clearly, the Slaughterer Life Soul could only match with the Sigh of the King Life Providence.

When he used other Primordial Energy Arts, he only had a Life Providence and no Life Soul.

Zhou Wen still remembered the last time he had read the tablet text and condensed a Life Providence. Therefore, he went to the Fire God Platform to check on the Ancient Sovereign Sutra, but he was greatly disappointed. Nothing happened when he looked at the Ancient Sovereign Sutra's stone monument.

Zhou Wen didn't give up and went to Mount Laojun to look at the Wordless Monument. He also went to Small Buddha Temple to read the Small Perfection of Wisdom Sutra and the

bronze lamp’s Godfiend Era. The outcome was the same-nothing.

Could it be that the Primordial Energy Art simulated by the Lost Immortal Sutra isn’t able to produce a Life Soul? Zhou Wen found it very likely. After all, it was only a simulation and not a Primordial Energy Art that he had truly mastered. It was like a building in the sky. Without a foundation, it was normal for him not to be able to condense a Life Soul.

Although he had expected it, he couldn’t help but feel a little disappointed. He felt that it would be a pity to just let the four Life Providences go to waste. After all, all four Life Providences had their own unique characteristics. If he could condense a Life Soul, it would definitely be a very unique one.

However, since he couldn’t condense a Life Soul, Zhou Wen didn’t think too much about it. He continued grinding stat crystals daily, trying his best to raise his stats before finding a way to evolve Slaughterer.

One day, while Zhou Wen was grinding, his phone suddenly rang. He glanced at the screen and saw an unknown number.

When the call connected, a rather charming man’s voice sounded. “Is this Zhou Wen?”

“I’m Zhou Wen. Who are you?” Zhou Wen had a vague impression of the voice, but he couldn’t recall where he had heard it before.

“I’m Li Xuan’s second brother, Li Mobai. We met previously at the auction,” Li Mobai said.

“What’s the matter?” Zhou Wen frowned slightly, unsure what Li Mobai was up to by contacting him.

“Are you free soon? I want to have a chat with you,” Li Mobai said.

“Sorry, I’m very busy with my studies. I don’t have much time.” With that said, Zhou Wen hung up. Li Mobai and Li Xuan were enemies. Since Zhou Wen treated Li Xuan as a friend, he naturally couldn’t have anything to do with him.

Although Zhou Wen had never dealt with Li Mobai, the methods the latter employed allowed him to know that he was terrifying. Otherwise, it would have been impossible for Li Xuan’s two childhood friends to betray him.

Zhou Wen was a very lazy person to begin with, so he didn’t wish to waste his time dealing with such a person.

However, his phone quickly rang again. Zhou Wen glanced at it-it was still the same number.

Zhou Wen didn’t pick up the first time, but Li Mobai called again. After some thought, Zhou Wen answered the call and planned on telling Li Mobai not to call again.

However, before Zhou Wen could say a word, Li Mobai said, “Do you want to know what the experts like Old Mister Ouyang and the rest studied at the Zhuolu battlefield?”

Zhou Wen was rendered speechless when he heard that. He asked with a frown, “What do you mean?” Li Mobai continued, “The League has invited many experts to go to Zhuolu for research. Besides Old Mister Ouyang, there are also people of his caliber. Having spent so much money, don’t tell me you think that the League’s brass doesn’t have any requests?”

“Regardless of their goal, there’s no need to pursue it now,” Zhou Wen said.

“That’s where you are wrong. In fact, the research of Old Mister Ouyang and the rest had borne fruit long ago. They dug out quite a number of things from the Zhuolu battlefield and also made some inferences. The garrison stationed at Zhuolu didn’t tell you these things, right?” Li Mobai said.

“Are you done? If you are done, let’s leave it at that? Don’t call me again.” With that said, Zhou Wen prepared to hang up.Even if what Li Mobai said was true, Zhou Wen could have An Sheng investigate. There was no need to establish ties with Li Mobai.

“Do you know that there’s a locked Companion Beast in basement four of the Xiyuan Crystal Shop?” Li Mobai suddenly said.

“What?” Zhou Wen asked in feigned ignorance.

“Do you want to know the origins of that Companion Beast? Do you want to know its relationship with Old Mister Ouyang? I’ll wait for you at the west entrance of your college at 8 p.m. tonight. See you.” Li Mobai hung up after saying that. Zhou Wen looked at the phone as several thoughts ran through his mind. What exactly is Li Mobai up to? Did he throw out so much bait just to meet me?

Zhou Wen pondered for a moment before making a phone call to Li Xuan. Then, he recounted what Li Mobai had said to him.

“You want to go?” Li Xuan fell silent for a moment before saying.

“I do want to know the answers to those questions,” Zhou Wen said.

“Then go. However, you have to be careful. My brother is truly terrifying,” Li Xuan said. “I know.” Zhou Wen knew what Li Xuan was worried about, but it was impossible for him to hide from Li Mobai his entire life. It was better to meet him openly and see what he was up to.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 353 - Stone Artifact Pill

Chapter 353 Stone Artifact Pill

It was late summer, and daylight didn’t last long. By eight in the evening, the sky had already darkened, and the street lamps outside the college’s walls that were modeled as wrought iron lamps had already lit up.

The west gate was a side gate of Sunset College. It wasn’t as grand as the main entrance, but it wasn’t small either. After Zhou Wen showed his pass to the soldiers guarding the gate, he walked past the west gate and saw a garden trail that was about three meters wide. Li Mobai was standing under a street lamp and holding his phone in his hand as he browsed through something.

“Li Mobai, why are you looking for me?” Zhou Wen walked in front of Li Mobai and asked directly.

Li Mobai lowered his phone and looked at Zhou Wen. “Wang Mingyuan betrayed humanity and entered a dimensional zone. Although it was his choice, it implicated the Wang family and his few students. It’s fine if the An family protects you in Luoyang, but it’s impossible for you to stay in Luoyang forever. It’s also impossible for you to be taken under the wing of others forever. Once you leave Luoyang, the road ahead of you will be thorny. No matter what you do, you will be labeled as a traitor’s student. Everyone will look at you as a horse of another color. No matter what you do, it’ll be harder than others.”

“Can’t I always stay in Luoyang?” Zhou Wen said indifferently.

Although he indeed planned on leaving Luoyang after graduation, he naturally wouldn’t say this to Li Mobai.

Li Mobai smiled and said, “If you were such a person, you wouldn’t be my brother’s friend. My brother’s ability to read people is terrible, and he’s always muddle-headed in whatever he does. He thinks he’s free and easy, but in reality, he’s just avoiding problems. There are only two kinds of people who are willing to be friends with him. One is someone who covets his identity as the third scion of the Li family and wants to take advantage of him. The other is the kind who really doesn’t care about anything and just wants to make friends with him.

“If you wanted to take advantage of him, you should have taken advantage of the An family. However, you didn’t do so. Although I’m not willing to believe that Brother could have such good luck, you are indeed the latter kind of person. How could a person who doesn’t want to take advantage of others stay in Luoyang?” Li Mobai asked.

“That’s equivalent to not saying anything. Typical friends only have those two outcomes. It’s binary,” Zhou Wen said.

1C

Li Mobai shook his head and said, “It looks like you are as simple and pure as Li Xuan. It’s no wonder you can be friends. In fact, other than childhood playmates, any friend you encounter after stepping into society is centered on interests. That also means that you have to be valued by others before others will choose to approach you and slowly establish a so-called friendship. Brother has always been muddle-headed and believes himself to be smart, but in fact, he is just burying his head in the sand. If he continues on like this, truly powerful experts will not be willing to

interact with him. They naturally won’t be friends. Those who are willing to approach him are mostly only eyeing his wealth.” “Can’t he have a friend that shares common hobbies and interests with him?” Zhou Wen asked.

“Of course. If you’re a soccer mate, you have to be able to kick a ball first before others come looking for you. This is your value. If it’s the antique collectors’ circle, you have to understand what’s valuable or have a collection before entering that circle. This is also your value. If you don’t have any value, why would others get you to play soccer? Why would they discuss collectibles with you?” Li Mobai said.

“What are you trying to get at?” Zhou Wen frowned slightly. Li Mobai was right, but Zhou Wen had a nagging feeling that something was amiss and couldn’t completely agree with him.

“I’m just having a casual chat. I invited you here today because I want to make a deal with you,” Li Mobai said. “What deal?” Zhou Wen asked.

“My Li family has some connections with the League’s brass, and happens to know some information about the Zhuolu battlefield. If you are interested in the news, I would like to ask you for a favor,” Li Mobai said with a smile.

“What do you want me to do?” Zhou Wen didn’t ask Li Mobai about the news.

However, Li Mobai said with a smile, “Let me give you the general outline. Back when the dimensional zone in the Zhuolu battlefield hadn’t opened, someone found a stone artifact on the Zhuolu battlefield. There was a pill inside the stone artifact. The League’s brass experimented on it. Only a small amount of powder could advance a Mortal Companion Beast to the Legendary stage.” After pausing for a moment,

Li Mobai continued, “I believe you’ve heard some of the methods used by the League’s brass. Soon after, someone called for so-called volunteers and did human trials. The result was exaggerated. An old man who had never cultivated seemed to turn young again after using a small amount of the powder. His hair turned black, and his skin became taut. After testing, his bones were akin to a man in his thirties or forties. His various vitals had improved tremendously, reaching the level of a peak Mortal. The powder that he used was almost negligible. Don’t you think people would feel tempted knowing that something like that exists? But at that time, the Zhuolu battlefield had yet to become a dimensional zone. The brass sent people over to find the location of the stone artifact. They wanted to see if there were any more. However, Zhuolu was huge, and they couldn’t dig up the entire place. That’s why a team of experts comprising Old Mister Ouyang was formed.”

Zhou Wen only listened silently. The fact that Li Mobai could tell him meant that it likely wasn’t a secret.

Indeed, Li Mobai paused for a moment before continuing, “The expedition team has actually been in Zhuolu for a long period of time. They did get something. Old Mister Ouyang once returned to Luoyang midway. According to my investigations, after he returned to Luoyang, he didn’t even go to the An family. He only went to one place.”

“Xiyuan Crystal Shop?” Zhou Wen stared at Li Mobai and asked.

Li Mobai nodded. “Yes, that’s why I’ve investigated the Xiyuan Crystal Shop and discovered some interesting things. It’s regarding Old Mister Ouyang and the Companion Beast locked at basement four. If you are interested, you only need to do me a little favor. I’ll tell you everything I know, and I

guarantee you'll be interested. You can also ask the An family to help you investigate, but a lot of clues were deliberately erased when I was doing the investigation. And I did the same thing. Even the An family won't be able to easily figure out anything via an investigation."

"What do you want me to do?" Zhou Wen asked with a frown.

"Very simple. Sever ties with Li Xuan. The relationship between the two of you shall be limited to being schoolmates," Li Mobai said.

"From the looks of it, there's no need for us to continue the conversation. Goodbye." Zhou Wen turned around and walked towards the college's west gate. Although he was very interested in the secret of the Companion Beast in basement four, he didn't wish to be manipulated by Li Mobai.

Even if it wasn't for Li Xuan, Li Mobai's schemes had nearly killed him as well. If it wasn't for him being careful and having certain strength, he might have long died with Li Xuan.

"Old Mister Ouyang had been to Zhuolu a long time ago. The Companion Beast in basement four of the Xiyuan shop might have been brought back from Zhuolu," Li Mobai suddenly said.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 354 - Condensing a Life Soul

Chapter 354 Condensing a Life Soul

“How early was early?” Zhou Wen turned to look at Li Mobai and asked. After all, he hadn’t agreed to his conditions. He didn’t mind hearing it if Li Mobai was willing to tell him.

“Anyway, it’s much earlier than the League’s investigations on Zhuolu. It should have been when Old Mister Ouyang was still young,” Li Mobai said with a smile, “If you’re still interested and want to carry on listening, we can discuss conditions again.”

“I don’t think there’s any need to continue the discussion.” Zhou Wen turned around and left.

This time, Li Mobai didn’t say another word. All he did was watch Zhou Wen enter the college’s west gate, still wearing that smile as though nothing had changed.

On the way back, Zhou Wen kept thinking about what Li Mobai had said. Ouyang Lan had indeed told him that Principal Ouyang used to take her to see the Companion Beast when she was young. What Li Mobai said wasn’t impossible. It was only recently that the Zhuolu battlefield had a dimensional zone appear. When Principal Ouyang was young, Zhuolu didn’t have any dimensional zones. Where did he get the Companion Beast? Zhou Wen couldn’t figure it

out.

Since he couldn’t figure it out, Zhou Wen didn’t think about it any longer. As long as he could find the former principal from the Zhuolu battlefield, all his doubts would be resolved.

Therefore, Zhou Wen only wanted to quickly raise his stats and find a way to advance his Life Soul. Then, he would head to the two temples and attempt to find the weaknesses of the Mythical Creatures.

“How was it? What did my brother say to you?” When Zhou Wen returned to his dorm, Li Xuan was waiting for him at the entrance.

Zhou Wen recounted the encounter between them and Li Xuan heaved a sigh of relief when he heard that. “I never expected him to do this much investigation. However, why don’t you directly ask Qin Xiyuan? Since the former principal stored his pet with him, he should know something?”

Zhou Wen shook his head. “I’ve seen Qin Xiyuan before, and always have a bad feeling about this person. Later on, after careful thought, I realized that he might have appeared too warm. It made me feel a little uncomfortable.”

The next morning, Zhou Wen woke up as usual and took out his phone to game. However, he heard hurried knocks on the door. When he opened it, he saw Feng Qiuyan standing outside the door, looking delighted.

“Coach, I’ve figured it out,” Feng Qiuyan said excitedly as he grabbed Zhou Wen’s shoulder.

“What did you figure out?” Zhou Wen asked in a daze. He was completely helpless against Feng Qiuyan, feeling that it was fine as long as he was happy. Nothing else mattered.

“I seem to have figured out One Saber Art that I’ve been practicing. I think I might be advancing to the Epic stage, but I’m not sure,” Feng Qiuyan said.

“You’re about to advance to the Epic stage?” Zhou Wen was slightly taken aback.

Feng Qiuyan nodded and shook his head again as he said incoherently, “I’m not too sure either. I feel like I’m about to break through, but the old man who taught me the One Saber Art said that it would take at least five to six years for me to advance to the Epic stage from the Legendary stage, and to figure out the true meaning of the One Saber Art. From that, I would condense a Life Soul and advance to the Epic stage. However, I’ve only been at the Legendary stage for just over a year now, so I shouldn’t have advanced so quickly… But I feel like I’m about to break through.”

“In what way do you feel like you are about to have a breakthrough?” Zhou Wen’s heart stirred as he asked Feng Qiuyan.

“I don’t know either. I just kept practicing. By the way, didn’t you specially instruct me in the past? I’ve been practicing my saber techniques recently, trying to resolve the problems with it. I finally came up with a solution. It was at that moment that I felt like I was about to break through. That feeling was very clear to me, that if I continued practicing, I would be able to break through a critical point. I believe it’s about breaking past the Legendary stage, but it seems too fast. I’m only 17 years old. Can I really advance to the Epic stage?” Feng Qiuyan seemed somewhat lacking in confidence.

“Then give it a try. Since it’s a breakthrough, there shouldn’t be any harm if you do not advance to the Epic stage, right?”

Zhou Wen said.

“You’re right. I’ll try now.” Feng Qiuyan was too excited just now, so when Zhou Wen said that, he immediately snapped to his senses and slashed with his saber.

This is my living room! Why are you practicing here? Shouldn’t you be at the training field at the very least? Zhou Wen immediately felt depressed. Feng Qiuyan was a martial arts fanatic. He lacked common sense in a way worse than Zhou Wen, or rather, his mind was focused on his saber practice. He could not think about anything else.

Only such a person can obtain such achievements. Success indeed doesn’t have any shortcuts. How much you put in is how much you gain in return. Zhou Wen sighed inwardly.

However, Feng Qiuyan didn’t give a d*mn about anything. He slashed out repeatedly with his saber in Zhou Wen’s living room without releasing any saber aura. However, Zhou Wen could sense that the force from the saber was becoming stronger and stronger.

Feng Qiuyan slashed out ten times on just an ordinary slashing stance; yet, the saber force was already unbelievably powerful. It was as though Feng Qiuyan could split a mountain in front of him with one cleave.

Zhou Wen felt that his essence, vitality, and spirit were somewhat different. It was as though something was spewing out from him. The present Feng Qiuyan was like a volcano about to erupt.

Zhou Wen looked at Feng Qiuyan and suddenly had a thought. The Lost Immortal Sutra is different from ordinary Primordial Energy Arts. It can automatically circulate, so much so that one doesn’t need to gain any insights for a

breakthrough. As long as my stats reach a certain level, I can advance immediately. However, ordinary people need to cultivate in Primordial Energy Arts and understand the true meaning in it before they can push their bodies, essence, vitality, and spirit to the limits and break through to produce a Life Soul. If I were to do it according to how ordinary people advance to the Epic stage, can I also condense several other Life Souls?

Zhou Wen was unable to confirm if this was possible because his few Primordial Energy Arts were apparently simulated by the Lost Immortal Sutra. It wasn't something he had mastered himself, so he wasn't sure if he could condense a Life Soul like an ordinary Primordial Energy Art. All he could do was give it a try in the future.

While Zhou Wen was pondering over it, Feng Qiuyan seemed to have unlocked a particular shackle. An unparalleled saber intent erupted from his body. This caused an indomitable terrifying power to erupt from him. The power grew stronger and stronger, condensing above Feng Qiuyan's head, transforming into a corporeal saber.

The blade was very pure and the design was the simplest saber often seen in the Tang dynasty. It didn't look fancy, but it was sharp. It looked as if no one in the world could block its sharpness once it moved.

Zhou Wen wasn't surprised when he saw that Feng Qiuyan's Life Soul was a saber. This person probably only had his heart occupied by sabers. It couldn't be any more normal to have a saber for his Life Soul. It would be odd otherwise.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 355 - Regicide

Chapter 355 Regicide

I’ve really advanced to the Epic stage? With a thought, the saber flew to Feng Qiuyan. He reached out to grab the hilt, and once he held the saber in his hand, he was certain that he had advanced to the Epic stage.

Zhou Wen immediately felt envious. It would be great if his Life Soul was so obedient.

“Congratulations on advancing to the Epic stage.” Zhou Wen was genuinely happy for Feng Qiuyan. He believed that now that Feng Qiuyan had advanced to the Epic stage, there was probably no reason for him to disturb him while he was gaming again, right?

As Feng Qiuyan held the Life Soul Saber, his eyes gradually became resolute. He looked up at Zhou Wen and said, “Thanks to you, Coach, I was able to advance to the Epic stage at 17 years old. It’s almost three years ahead of my plan. Please continue guiding me in the future.”

“I didn’t guide you at all. It’s all because of your talent. It has nothing to do with me. There’s nothing I can teach you in the future,” Zhou Wen hurriedly said with a shake of his head.

Feng Qiuyan didn’t argue with Zhou Wen. Instead, he held his Life Soul Saber and said, “Coach, I’ve just advanced to the Epic stage. I’m still unfamiliar with the power of my Life Soul. Can you spar with me?”

Zhou Wen originally wanted to refuse, but on second thought, he agreed and went to the training grounds with Feng Qiuyan.

Although he wasn't interested in fighting Feng Qiuyan, Zhou Wen was thinking about the other four Primordial Energy Arts he had. If he could use the typical methods used to advance to the Epic stage, he needed to comprehend the true meaning behind the Primordial Energy Art. It would be a win-win situation to spar with Feng Qiuyan.

When they arrived at the training grounds, Zhou Wen thought for a moment and switched his Primordial Energy Art to the Godfiend Era. Feng Qiuyan's saber techniques were fast, and he had advanced to the Epic stage. Although his stats hadn't increased, his saber speed would definitely become even faster with the augmentation of his Life Soul. Zhou Wen's other three Primordial Energy Arts didn't significantly increase his Speed. Now, Zhou Wen's highest stat was Speed. With the Godfiend Era Life Providence that increased his Speed and gave him levitation abilities, he believed he could probably battle Feng Qiuyan.

Feng Qiuyan's Life Soul belonged to a combat type, so it could be used as a weapon. Feng Qiuyan held his Life Soul Saber and slashed forward.

This strike was completely different from the last time Feng Qiuyan sparred with Zhou Wen. Back then, Feng Qiuyan needed to slowly increase the saber's speed with every strike, but this strike was so fast that it was almost indiscernible. It was as though it had vanished from his sights.

If he hadn't advanced to the Epic stage and raised his Speed stat, he probably could only have a chance at dodging the

strike with Ghost Steps. However, things were different now. Zhou Wen's Speed stat had increased to 36 points. Feng Qiuyan had just advanced to the Epic stage and was likely only at 21 points of Speed. The difference was still huge.

Without using Ghost Steps, Zhou Wen took a step forward and his speed soared to an extreme. He followed up with Dragon Gate Fairy Skill, dodging Feng Qiuyan's attack in an unfazed manner.

"Coach, you have to be careful. My soul is known as the Regicide, and what I'm sensing is that it's unmatchable." Feng Qiuyan didn't guard against Zhou Wen at all as he shared his Life Soul's name and ability.

The Life Providence and Life Soul were the greatest dependence a person had, so most people wouldn't easily let others know about their Life Providence's and Life Soul's ability.

Regicide? Why does it sound a little inauspicious? My Life Providence has the word 'King.' Doesn't regicide mean killing a king? Zhou Wen made connections.

Feng Qiuyan had mastered his saber techniques, and he had showcased the standards with his first strike. It exceeded the speed his body could control—the standard back when he delivered more than a hundred strikes.

If he continued slashing, his strikes would become faster. Having already exceeded his physical limits, Feng Qiuyan shouldn't have been able to control such speeds. However, he was using the Life Soul Saber. It was almost one with him, greatly enhancing his control. This allowed each strike to exceed his limits, thus becoming stronger and faster without losing control.

Thankfully, Zhou Wen’s Speed stat was much higher than Feng Qiuyan’s. With the Godfiend Era as his foundation, it wasn’t difficult for him to dodge Feng Qiuyan’s swift saber.

However, Zhou Wen couldn’t help but praise Feng Qiuyan. If Feng Qiuyan didn’t die because of a mishap, he would definitely be a great saber expert in the future.

His Life Providence as Swift Saber Heavenly King allowed him to have a talent of having no upper limit when it came to saber speed. Now that he had the Regicide Life Soul, it gave him a saber that was most suitable for him. In addition, with his innate concentration and perceptivity towards sabers, no one could stop him from advancing as long as he didn’t die. Perhaps he might one day really advance to the Mythical stage.

Feng Qiuyan’s saber was getting faster and faster, and becoming more and more dangerous. His saber techniques were no longer like the past, deliberately seeking out perfection. One could see many flaws in his saber techniques, but all of them were concealed under his swift saber’s speed. Even though Zhou Wen could see through the flaws, Feng Qiuyan was too fast. Seeing it but not being able to act on it was equivalent to not having any flaws.

In the past, Feng Qiuyan’s saber techniques had some commonplace triteness, and he had deliberately pursued the limits. Although he wasn’t as perfect now, he had some of the traits of it being all so natural. The triteness was gone, and there was some finesse. At first, Zhou Wen didn’t feel any pressure. After all, his Speed was much higher. However, slowly, Feng Qiuyan’s saber techniques made him feel pressured.It was a saber technique that exceeded the limits. It had infinite possibilities, but it also required Zhou Wen to give him an opportunity to showcase it. Otherwise, Feng

Qiuyan wouldn’t have any infinite possibilities if he was defeated in the first strike.

Under the swift saber that could kill in the blink of an eye, Zhou Wen was as graceful as an immortal, dodging the saber strikes repeatedly with his feet not touching the ground. While fighting Feng Qiuyan, he also sensed the characteristics of the Godfiend Era and Godfiend Life Providence.

The Godfiend Era Primordial Energy Art was unpredictable. The Godfiend Life Providence gave Zhou Wen the ability to control space. With the Godfiend Life Providence, Zhou Wen could treat the sky as flat ground. To him, there was no such thing as direction. Wherever he stood, the infinite worlds were beneath his feet as the ground.

With such an ability, Zhou Wen had a lot more choices than the average person when using movement techniques. Zhou Wen could easily do something that many others could not.

In the past, Zhou Wen had only used the Godfiend Life Providence to provide him with the ability to control space, and he didn’t think too much about it. However, after carefully sensing the Godfiend Life Providence, he realized that what he could do was far more than he imagined.

Just like the Dragon Gate Fairy Skill. With the Godfiend Life Providence, there were many moves that required him to leverage himself on some other object to continue. However, he could exclude all of that because he didn’t need any leverage to directly fly through the air, saving him a lot of time and Primordial Energy.

He did not need to take a breath in places that usually required it.

It was just like how humans swam under the water. They would need to surface to take another breath after some time. However, if humans could breathe underwater, why would they need to waste time to surface and get another mouthful of breath?

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 356 - Contemplating Godfiend

Chapter 356 Contemplating Godfiend

The Godfiend Life Providence made Zhou Wen the lord of the skies, making him freer than a bird. After gaining a deeper understanding, he realized that under such circumstances, he could do things no one could imagine.

Feng Qiuyan had restrained himself in the beginning, afraid that he would injure Zhou Wen with his saber. However, the more he battled, the more he realized that Zhou Wen’s movement techniques were unique and unbelievable.

He had never seen a person actually have the ability to float upside down in the air and fight in battle. It was as though the laws of science didn’t rule over Zhou Wen at all. It completely crushed all the experience he had gained in his previous battles with humans.

The many movement techniques Zhou Wen displayed were things he had never imagined before. They practically exceeded humanity’s imagination.

As expected of Coach! This left Feng Qiuyan excited. He brandished his saber and fought Zhou Wen to his heart’s content so that he could see more of Zhou Wen’s strange movement techniques.

Zhou Wen’s movement techniques became stranger and more bizarre as time passed. As for Feng Qiuyan’s saber techniques, they were becoming calmer, using permanence to counter impermanence. It was as though Feng Qiuyan

was truly comprehending the profoundness of countering movement with stillness.

With the Godfiend Life Providence, Zhou Wen began to gain an advantage. However, he gradually realized that every strike from Feng Qiuyan made him feel extremely uncomfortable. It was as though he had sealed off all the changes in his movement techniques, giving him a feeling of returning to the basics.

Zhou Wen was already immersed and focused on the battle. As he fought, he pondered how to escape the present predicament. However, no matter what kind of changes Zhou Wen's movement technique did-no matter how unique it was-it was difficult to waver Feng Qiuyan's saber. Every strike from Feng Qiuyan had turned simple. He had seen through the myriad of changes to finally decide on one saber strike.

In between each strike was without bound or limit and turned sublime. Feng Qiuyan had finally mastered his saber techniques.

Zhou Wen's movement technique kept changing, only barely managing to dodge Feng Qiuyan's saber techniques. However, the space he could move about decreased, being constantly suppressed by Feng Qiuyan's saber techniques.

This strong and oppressive pressure did not cause Zhou Wen to panic. Instead, he felt a little excited. His brain was calmer and clearer than any other time.

Zhou Wen constantly sought the possibility of cracking Feng Qiuyan's saber techniques. He squeezed out every ounce of possibility from his body to turn the impossible possible. The Godfiend Life Providence and Godfiend Era Primordial Energy circulation were similarly squeezed dry, allowing

Zhou Wen to deeply feel their existence and effects. Only by doing so could Zhou Wen better make use of them.

Gradually, Zhou Wen realized that the Godfiend Era and Godfiend Life Providence were somewhat different from what he had previously understood.

It was true that they provided powerful augmentation to speed and flight, but their true power wasn’t just that. This Primordial Energy Art that came from a different realm seemed to have even more profound meanings.

As usual, Wei Ge came to the training ground early in the morning. He came here not to train but to wait for someone.

The vice-chancellor was in charge of managing the training grounds. He was just a vice-chancellor who didn’t have much authority in school, he usually didn’t care about anything

In fact, Wei Ge knew that this vice-chancellor, who looked like he didn’t have any actual power, had a very deep background. According to Wei Ge’s intelligence, a president of the student council had been able to stay in the school as a staff member. It was arranged by the vice-chancellor.

One had to know that keeping a student as a staff member wasn’t something the managing vice-chancellor had the authority to do, but he succeeded.

Therefore, when Wei Ge heard that the vice-chancellor came to the training grounds in the morning, he would come here every morning to pretend to train, hoping to leave a good impression on him. He even wanted close ties with the vice-chancellor, to provide him with some help in the future when the problem about being retained as staff cropped up.

Wei Ge knew how important it was to be retained as staff. An Jing couldn’t be bothered with the position of student council president. Li Xuan could also disregard staying in the school, but he couldn’t.

He wasn’t an elite like An Jing, nor did he have Li Xuan’s family background. To help him and his family have a future, staying on campus was undoubtedly the best option.

In this era where danger was everywhere, the school was undoubtedly one of the safest places. To stay in Sunset College and bring his parents to settle here was always Wei Ge’s goal. Furthermore, he had been working hard for it, unscrupulously even.

However, it was just too difficult to be retained at Sunset College. It was so difficult that Wei Ge didn’t wish to give up any sliver of hope. When Wei Ge arrived at the training grounds, it was still early. Only a few students were training with the various equipment in the hall, and he didn’t see the vice-chancellor.

Wei Ge was very satisfied with this. He entered the changing room and changed into his training kit, preparing to find a relatively conspicuous spot to train while waiting for the vice-chancellor’s arrival.

However, when Wei Ge passed a training room, he heard a faint sound coming from inside. It sounded like the sound of blades tearing through the air.Someone’s using the training room so early? Wei Ge was somewhat curious. He walked to the training room’s door and pushed it open. Realizing that the door wasn’t locked, he pushed it open and looked inside.

What he saw immediately widened his eyes as he saw the two figures fighting in the training room. One of them was using a saber, and the saber was enough to send chills down

his spine. Just looking from outside made Wei Ge feel like he was about to be slain by the saber aura.

The other person didn’t use any weapons. He only used his movement techniques to dodge the terrifying strikes. Despite the terrifying saber techniques, his body was still as graceful as an immortal. Wei Ge had also seen many tutors use their saber techniques and movement techniques. As the president of the student council, he had more opportunities to interact with tutors than ordinary students. He had also seen many tutor battles, but the saber techniques and movement techniques in front of him gave him an unprecedented feeling. It was as if they were even stronger than the tutors he had seen before.

Zhou Wen… Feng Qiuyan… Wei Ge recognized the two of them as he stood there stunned. It was as though he couldn’t believe that the two people fighting here weren’t tutors, but students like him-juniors that were of a lower grade than him.

Wei Ge stood outside the door, watching the two battle in a daze as he kept the door open without entering or backing out. He looked somewhat stunned.

Boom!

At this moment, Zhou Wen’s aura exploded as an indescribable force surged out of his body as though a transparent flame was burning.

He’s condensing a Life Soul… Wei Ge’s pupils constricted as he stared intently at Zhou Wen in midair, as though he was petrified.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it

as soon as possible.

Chapter 357 - Lost Country

Chapter 357 Lost Country

It’s not speed… It’s not space control… It’s the trajectory of space… Zhou Wen seemed to realize something as a force burst out from his body. The force contained the power of the Godfiend Life Providence, as well as Zhou Wen’s essence, vitality, and spirit. The strange power warped space and burned like a transparent flame.

The transparent flames eventually condensed into Zhou Wen’s left middle finger, forming a strange ring on his finger.

The ring looked very strange. It appeared to be forged from black iron and had no luster at all. It didn’t look gorgeous, not even exquisite.

A simple metal ring had a ghostly face appear on it. However, the ghostly face was very strange. Half of its face looked extremely ugly, like a devil’s, while the other half looked beautiful.

While Zhou Wen looked at the strange ring on his left finger, information seemed to enter his mind. He immediately knew the name and use of the ring.

Lost Country? Zhou Wen was somewhat puzzled. Why was the Life Soul condensed by the Godfiend Era a ring? Furthermore, its name was Lost Country. It had absolutely nothing to do with the Godfiend Era Primordial Energy Art, nor the Godfiend Life Providence.

Feng Qiuyan’s saber did not give him time to think carefully. The swift saber had already slashed in front of him.

Zhou Wen was momentarily distracted looking at the Life Soul ring, Lost Country, that he had condensed. By the time he snapped to his senses, the saber was already in front of him.

Seeing that Zhou Wen had not dodged, Feng Qiuyan was also taken aback. He wanted to retract his saber, but he had struck out too quickly. It was almost reaching Zhou Wen’s clothes, and there was no space for him to retract the saber at such a short distance.

Wei Ge, who was standing by the door, was alarmed as well, believing that Zhou Wen was about to bleed.

However, in the next second, they saw Zhou Wen vanish into thin air in front of Feng Qiuyan. When the latter slashed down, he touched nothing.

Feng Qiuyan couldn’t help but be taken aback. Zhou Wen had really vanished. It wasn’t just a false impression due to excessive speed. No matter how fast one was, one would still leave trajectory, but he didn’t see Zhou Wen’s trajectory. He had no idea where Zhou Wen had gone.

Feng Qiuyan stopped and looked around, only to see Zhou Wen standing less than a meter behind him. He had no idea how or when Zhou Wen had arrived there.

“Coach, you also condensed a Life Soul to advance to the Epic stage?” Feng Qiuyan asked in delight. From his point of view, it was only natural for Zhou Wen to advance to the Epic stage by condensing a Life Soul. However, he had forgotten that Zhou Wen was actually around his age. It was

indeed rather astonishing to be able to condense a Life Soul at this age.

Outside the training room, Wei Ge had already closed the door. He stood with his back against the wall and his eyes closed. His breathing was heavy like a beast’s panting.

17 years old… They should only be 17 years old… They actually condensed a Life Soul… The scenes of Zhou Wen condensing a Life Soul kept repeating in Wei Ge’s mind. He couldn’t wipe them from his mind.

Wei Ge suddenly felt that all the efforts he had spent in the past were for naught. He questioned the meaning of his hard work.

If he could condense a Life Soul when he was seventeen, no—even if he could do it now, there was no need for him to do so many things. A student like him who could condense a Life Soul to advance to the Epic stage during his university days would be a hot commodity. The school would even take the initiative to request that he remain in school.

If they can do it, I can do it as well. Wei Ge clenched his fists as he opened his eyes, his eyes shined.

He suddenly came to a realization. Over the past two years, he had spent too much effort on managing his social connections, but he had forgotten how he had managed to get admitted to Sunset College or what he had relied on to become the president of the student council.

Genius… I’m also a genius… Wei Ge recalled the time when he had just enrolled in Sunset College by being first in his city. In just a year, he had relied on his passion and drive to defeat many competitors before becoming the president of the student council.

However, after he became the president of the student council and came into contact with things that he had not been able to interact with before, he learned a lot of new things.

Power and wealth had a strong influence on the world, making him feel lost for a period of time. He yearned to get close to power and wealth, and gradually forgot his roots.

But today, after seeing Zhou Wen condense his Life Soul to advance to the Epic stage as well as Feng Qiuyan having similarly advanced to the Epic stage, he suddenly woke up.

Without a foundation, no matter how hard I work, I can’t enter the center seat of power and wealth. I don’t have a background like Li Xuan and An Jing. All I can rely on is myself. But what have I done in the past two years? I’ve actually wasted my most precious things in exchange for a tiny bit of pity from those people high above… Wei Ge’s fists clenched tighter and his gaze became sharper.

After some time, Wei Ge’s eyes gradually calmed down. He turned around and took a deep look at Zhou Wen and Feng Qiuyan, who were once again sparring in the training room. Then, he calmly turned and left.Wei Ge was still as relaxed and confident as before, but he seemed to be somewhat different from before. There seemed to be something additional in his eyes.

Zhou Wen, Feng Qiuyan, the next time I push open the door and stand in front of you, that person will definitely not be the present me. Wei Ge walked to the entrance of the training grounds and happened to see the vice-chancellor enter. He greeted him politely like usual, but he didn’t stay long. After greeting him, he walked out of the training grounds.

Zhou Wen was in a good mood after condensing the Godfiend Era’s Life Soul. After practicing the entire morning with Feng Qiuyan, he had already figured out the Lost Country’s powers. Furthermore, Lost Country’s introduction in-game was much clearer than Slaughterer.

Lost Country (Primordial Body): The condensation of spatial energy, the ability to change spatial trajectories.

Simply put, the Lost Country’s ability was achieving true instant transmission. Zhou Wen could use Lost Country to teleport to any spot within a ten-meter radius. However, he could only use Lost Country’s teleportation ability once every twenty-four hours.

However, this wasn’t the main point. Zhou Wen believed that as the Lost Country grew, the distance of teleportation would increase, and the interval between uses would also become shorter.

Zhou Wen, who was already extremely interested in escaping skills, was very satisfied with the Lost Country’s ability. However, this was only a manifestation of Lost Country’s powers. The other powers needed Zhou Wen to develop them himself.

What puzzled Zhou Wen was that behind his Speed stat, the “Trajectory” had gone missing while the remaining three postfixes were still there.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 358 - Magma River

Chapter 358 Magma River

From the looks of it, it’s because of Lost Country’s appearance that “Trajectory” vanished. Since the Godfiend Era can produce a Life Soul, the other three Primordial Energy Arts should be able to condense a Life Soul as well. Zhou Wen planned on spending some time to condense the remaining three Primordial Energy Arts’ Life Souls.

Lost Country can truly teleport. I wonder what the remaining three Life Souls will be capable of? Zhou Wen thought for a moment and planned on starting with the Ancient Sovereign Sutra.

Why did he decide on starting with the Ancient Sovereign Sutra? That was because Zhou Wen was still unable to figure out the other two Primordial Energy Arts.

It was difficult to understand the profundity of Dao Sutra. Apart from recovering his Primordial Energy, Zhou Wen had yet to discover anything special. It was probably not simple for him to gain insights into its true underlying principles.

The Small Perfection of Wisdom Sutra was related to the body and six senses—sight, hearing, smell, touch, taste, and mind. Zhou Wen was momentarily unable to think of a good way to raise it.

Comparatively speaking, the Ancient Sovereign Sutra seemed to be a little more direct. It greatly augmented his strength and it also had fire-elemental attributes. Zhou Wen

felt that it wouldn’t be difficult for him to figure out some fire-elemental powers.

He looked at the current game dungeons he had in possession, and there weren’t many dungeons with fire-elemental dimensional creatures. Only the Fire God Platform had them.

However, he had already tried many times with the firebirds. He failed to gain any new insight, so he planned on changing locations.

Dragon Gate Grotto didn’t have any particularly powerful fire-elemental dimensional creatures. Mount Laojun and Ant Nest were places without fire. Similarly, Tiger Cage Pass had none, while Pool City was practically an ocean.

The majority of Zhuolu battlefield creatures were poison-type creatures—there weren’t any fire creatures there either.

There aren’t fire-elemental creatures in the game instance dungeons I have! Zhou Wen had no choice but to try getting a new one. He searched for the dungeon information available to Sunset College on the Intranet, hoping to find a dimensional zone with fire-elemental creatures.

If he really couldn’t find it, Zhou Wen planned on experimenting with the chick. After all, it was fire-elemental too, so it would likely be of some use. Teasing it and letting it spew out fire probably wouldn’t be difficult.

However, the chick’s flames were a little terrifying. He had no plans on touching it unless he had no choice.

It wasn’t difficult to find a fire-elemental dungeon, so Zhou Wen soon found one. Furthermore, it didn’t need any special entry passes. Zhou Wen immediately got up and planned to

visit it. He would first seek out the tiny palm symbol and download the new dungeon.

The place Zhou Wen was going to was called Magma River and it was underground. However, it was different from dungeons like Pool City. There was no city there, only an underground magma river. There were several fire-elemental dimensional creatures nearby.

As the Magma River's value wasn't high, most fire-elemental dimensional creatures possessed the ability to survive in magma. Hunting them was relatively difficult and nothing much was to be gained. Apart from students and tutors who needed fire-elemental Primordial Energy Skills, the typical person seldom went there. Naturally, no one monitored the area.

Zhou Wen encountered several students on the way, but they were all heading to other dungeons. When he got near the Magma River, he didn't see anyone.

From afar, he felt heat waves hit him. Thankfully, Zhou Wen's physique was already extremely strong. If it were any other ordinary person, they would be covered in sweat. If they stayed here for an extended period without any water, they would easily get dehydrated.

Red magma slowly flowed out from an underground cave. The scarlet glow formed a stark contrast with the nearby black rocks. They illuminated the underground cavern, so it wasn't dark at all.

Before Zhou Wen could approach the Magma River, he saw a person squatting by it. The clothes were probably the school's uniform.

“Gu Dian, what are you doing here?” Zhou Wen walked closer and took a look. Although he could only see his back, he recognized the person.

It was inevitable as Gu Dian’s figure was huge and stocky. It was difficult not to recognize him.

“Fishing.” Gu Dian turned his head to glance at Zhou Wen and only said one word. Then, he turned his head and continued staring at the magma river.

“Fishing? Here? What fish are you trying to catch?” Zhou Wen walked to Gu Dian’s side and looked down. Gu Dian held a rope that was as thick as a thumb. It was snow-white and crystalline, looking like it was woven from silk. The rope drooped to the magma below but it wasn’t burned by the magma. It likely wasn’t ordinary silk.

This place was about three to four meters from the magma, but the heat was intense. Yet, Gu Dian didn’t break a sweat as he stared expressionlessly at the magma river.

“Goldfish.” Gu Dian spat out one word again as though his words were very valuable. It was as though he was afraid of losing out if he said too much.

“There are goldfish in such a place?” Zhou Wen didn’t believe that there were any goldfish here. He had only heard sightings of Fire-Armored Crocodiles and Magma Worms here.

If a crocodile was considered a fish, it could be said that there were fish here. However, the Fire-Armored Crocodile was black and had fiery patterns that resembled magma. It wasn’t golden.

“Yes,” Gu Dian replied with certainty.

“Then take your time. I’ll head elsewhere to see if there are Fire-Armored Crocodiles.” Zhou Wen was about to follow the magma river to see if there were any tiny palm symbols nearby when he suddenly saw the rope in Gu Dian’s hand shake violently.

Gu Dian’s hands gripped the rope tightly as his legs stood rooted to the rock. The rope was taut and extended straight into the other end of the magma, but it kept moving as though something was pulling at it from inside the magma.

Zhou Wen was attracted by Gu Dian’s situation and couldn’t help but stop walking to observe.

Crack!

The rock beneath Gu Dian’s feet shattered as his legs sank deep into the rock. His entire calf sank in.

What immense strength. This fellow should be at the peak of the Legendary stage, right? Zhou Wen had always been curious about Gu Dian’s strength.

He had once defeated Gu Dian, but later, he realized that Gu Dian’s strength wasn’t only limited to the level back when he defeated him. However, as the two hadn’t had another chance to fight, Zhou Wen didn’t know Gu Dian’s true strength either.From the looks of it, it definitely isn’t just the tiny bit that he had shown back then. Gu Dian had probably held back. At the very least, his Strength is at around 20 points.

Despite Gu Dian’s strength, he still couldn’t hold onto the rope. This was because the force from the rope was too strong. Gu Dian’s legs were like plowing the ground as he created two ditches. He was on the verge of being pulled down into the magma river.

Zhou Wen hurriedly moved to Gu Dian’s side and grabbed the rope with both hands, helping Gu Dian pull it up.

Although his Strength wasn’t as high as his Speed, it was at 32 points. With his pull, he instantly stopped the rope from being pulled downwards. However, when Zhou Wen tried pulling the rope up again, he found it abnormally heavy. It was as though he was facing a heavyweight candidate in a game of tug-of-war. He couldn’t budge it.

“Relax when I relax, pull when I pull,” Gu Dian suddenly said.

“Alright.” Zhou Wen kept track of Gu Dian’s use of force. When Gu Dian exerted his strength, he exerted all his strength. When Gu Dian relaxed, he also relaxed.

After about half an hour, Zhou Wen felt the strength on the other end of the rope weaken. Gu Dian suddenly roared, “Pull!”

Zhou Wen hurriedly used all his strength and pulled the rope with Gu Dian. The rope was pulled out of the magma, and on the other end was a golden-scaled fish, with a tail resembling chiffon, jumping out of the magma. Its body was still burning with golden flames.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 359 - Fire-Armored Crocodile

Chapter 359 Fire-Armored Crocodile

Plop!

After the goldfish leaped out of the magma, it violently flicked its tail and landed back into the magma, nearly dragging Zhou Wen and Gu Dian in.

The two of them used their strength together. But with a snap, the rope, that was made of white silk, broke.

Gu Dian pulled the remaining white-silk rope up. As for the magma river, there was no trace of the goldfish. The magma gradually returned to normal.

“What level is the goldfish? Why is it so strong?” Zhou Wen asked.

They had failed to pull the goldfish up despite their combined strength. It had to be at least a top Epic creature, but if it was really an Epic creature, how could it leave without counterattacking?

“Epic.” Gu Dian put away the rope and got up to leave.

“Are you just leaving like that? Aren’t you going to continue fishing?” Zhou Wen asked, puzzled.

“The rope’s broken. There’s no bait.” Although Gu Dian was a man of few words, he was thankfully able to express himself clearly.

“What bait is needed to fish for this goldfish?” Zhou Wen planned on trying to catch such a goldfish when he downloaded the dungeon later.

“Ice Silkworm.” Gu Dian left after saying that.

Zhou Wen had never heard of Ice Silkworm, but it sounded like a dimensional creature.

“Is there any special use for fishing this thing?” Zhou Wen asked again.

“Cat food.” Gu Dian’s voice drifted over from afar, stunning Zhou Wen.

Catching an Epic creature to feed to cats? Zhou Wen really didn’t understand what was on Gu Dian’s mind.

After Gu Dian left, Zhou Wen followed the magma river, but he didn’t find the tiny palm symbol. Instead, he saw a Fire-Armored Crocodile lying on the bank.

The Fire-Armored Crocodile was nearly four meters long. The magma-like scales were covered with dark red magma patterns. Although it was only a Legendary creature, it could spit out scorching flames. Furthermore, it was very powerful, making it a top Legendary creature.

The Fire-Armored Crocodile discovered Zhou Wen before he could even get close. It opened its mouth and spat out a flame, spraying it several meters away like a flamethrower.

Zhou Wen didn’t dodge a flame at this level. Wearing the armor manifested by the Stone Chi, he circulated the Ancient Sovereign Sutra and threw a punch at the flames.

Boom!

The flames were immediately blasted apart as magma at its core splattered in every direction. Such flames were unable to injure Zhou Wen at all.

The Fire-Armored Crocodile spewed out flames once again. Since Zhou Wen didn't kill it, it kept spewing fire, allowing Zhou Wen to use the Ancient Sovereign Sutra's powers to blast through the flames. This allowed him to sense the profundity in the Ancient Sovereign Sutra's fire-elemental powers.

But soon, Zhou Wen realized that apart from the heat, he couldn't sense any profundity in the flame. It only had a high temperature.

After this continued for some time, Zhou Wen didn't feel anything, but the Fire-Armored Crocodile was so exhausted that it couldn't spit out any flames. It turned around and fled into the magma river, swimming into the distance.

Perhaps the flame isn't strong enough. Let's see if I can encounter a Magma Worm. It's an Epic fire-elemental creature. Its flames should be much stronger than a Fire-Armored Crocodile. Zhou Wen didn't chase after the Fire-Armored Crocodile. Killing a Legendary creature was now meaningless to him, so he couldn't be bothered to.

He walked as he looked for the tiny palm symbol, but to no avail. Instead, he encountered a group of Fire-Armored Crocodiles on the banks.

A Fire-Armored Crocodile's flames aren't strong enough. Perhaps a dozen of them is enough? With this in mind, Zhou Wen rushed into the group of Fire-Armored Crocodiles.

…

Li Weiyang wasn’t in a good mood right now. She had planned on inviting a few of her friends from the Weiyang Club for an activity, but to her surprise, one of them had brought her boyfriend.

It wasn’t a big deal bringing a boyfriend, but the person was somewhat annoying. Li Weiyang originally planned on hunting some Mortal-stage Demonized Soldiers, but this person insisted on coming to Magma River.

The members of the Weiyang Club were basically at the Mortal stage. Li Weiyang had recently advanced to the Legendary stage and her stats had not been raised.

It was meaningless to take them to Magma River. The lowest level dimensional creature here was the Fire-Armored Crocodile. It was a very strong Legendary creature, one that even Li Weiyang found it difficult to fight, much less her friends who had yet to advance to the Legendary stage.

However, the man did his best to suggest that they go to Magma River. Together with his girlfriend helping, Li Weiyang and company didn’t want to embarrass her, so they reluctantly went to Magma River.

Thankfully, the dimensional creatures never strayed too far from the magma river. Although they were no match for the creatures, as long as they didn’t approach the magma river, they wouldn’t be in any danger.

Although they didn’t need to worry about safety, Li Weiyang had originally organized a hunt. Now, all they could do was watch the man fight the Fire-Armored Crocodile. Apart from his girlfriend, Sulli, who was constantly praising her boyfriend, the others felt bored.

Zheng Tianlun killed a Fire-Armored Crocodile and was lucky to have a Strength Crystal drop. He returned to the girls' side and handed the Strength Crystal to his girlfriend, Sulli. He said, "Sulli, this Strength Crystal is for you."

"That's inappropriate, right? I'm still at the Mortal stage. Isn't using a Legendary crystal a waste?" Although Sulli said that, she couldn't hide her delight.

"Take it. Killing Legendary creatures isn't difficult for me. It's very easy to obtain Legendary crystals. Today, I'm just here to have fun with you. Anything that drops is yours." Zheng Tianlun stuffed the Strength Crystal into Sulli's hand, but he couldn't help but feel his heart ache.

Zheng Tianlun had only advanced to the Legendary stage in recent months, so killing a Legendary creature wasn't as easy as he claimed. The reason he had brought Sulli and company to Magma River instead of somewhere else was that it was relatively safe here. Furthermore, he had a Snow Snake Companion Beast. The Snow Snake Saber it manifested was the nemesis of fire-elemental creatures, so killing a Fire-Armored Crocodile was easier than killing other Legendary creatures.Li Weiyang found it very boring. She wasn't a beggar who needed others to provide her alms. Besides, this didn't meet the objective of training. If it wasn't for the sake of her friends, she would have turned around and left.

Zheng Tianlun led them forward, but for some reason, the Fire-Armored Crocodiles, which were commonly seen on the shore, were almost nowhere in sight today.

There was one in the magma river, but Zheng Tianlun didn't have the ability to enter the magma river to kill it.

Zheng Tianlun led them for a few miles without finding any Fire-Armored Crocodiles by the bank. He muttered to himself awkwardly. That’s strange. Why are all the Fire-Armored Crocodiles in the river today?

“They probably ran into the river after knowing that you came to kill them,” Sulli said, in consideration of his feelings.

Zheng Tianlun laughed out loud when he heard that. “Then they are really smart.”

“There seems to be something up ahead,” a girl suddenly pointed ahead.

Li Weiyang could no longer continue to listen to the couple. When she heard that, she looked ahead. Indeed, she saw a figure walking by the magma river. She could vaguely tell that the person was wearing their school uniform.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 360 - Escape

Chapter 360 Escape

“He should be a student from our college. Let’s head over to take a look.” Li Weiyang felt bored. Upon seeing a schoolmate here, she suggested that they head over.

Everyone agreed. Zheng Tianlun was a little unhappy. He had been the only blade of grass amidst a bed of roses; if the person up ahead was male, wouldn’t there be an additional blade of grass that would share in his glory? However, they were bound to meet if they wanted to continue moving forward; therefore, he didn’t object to it.

Li Weiyang sped up as she led everyone over. Soon, she recognized the person who was walking slowly along the river bank to be Zhou Wen.

Li Weiyang was delighted as she shouted at Zhou Wen, “Zhou Wen, what are you doing here alone?”

Zhou Wen had long heard their footsteps, but he couldn’t be bothered about them at all. Therefore, he didn’t look back. Only when he heard Li Weiyang’s scream did he stop and turn around. “What else can you do here?”

Li Weiyang came in front of Zhou Wen and said, “I was wondering why I haven’t seen Fire-Armored Crocodiles on the bank. You killed them all, right?”

“No, I haven’t killed any Fire-Armored Crocodiles.” Zhou Wen shook his head. He really hadn’t killed a single one.

Zheng Tianlun heaved a sigh of relief when he heard that. He smiled and said, “See? What did I say? For some reason, the Fire-Armored Crocodiles have all run into the river and aren’t coming out.”

“Zhou Wen, let’s go together?” Li Weiyang invited him.

“I still have something on. You guys can go ahead.” Zhou Wen still needed to find the tiny palm symbol, so it wasn’t convenient for him to go with them.

Li Weiyang was helpless against Zhou Wen. This fellow was completely different from her brother, Li Xuan. She did not know how they had become friends.

“Since Zhou Wen is very busy, let’s not disturb him.” Zheng Tianlun was overjoyed when he heard that.

Although something had happened to Zhou Wen recently, Zheng Tianlun didn’t believe that he could steal the limelight from him. Since Zhou Wen wasn’t willing to go with them, it was naturally a boon for him.

Li Weiyang had no choice but to leave with Zheng Tianlun and the rest. She turned her head and saw Zhou Wen walking slowly down the riverbank, glancing into the magma river from time to time. It was unknown what he was looking for.

This fellow has been hanging out with Li Xuan for so long, yet he still lacks sense. What a weirdo, Li Weiyang thought to herself. However, it’s good this way. If he was as glib-tongued as Li Xuan, he would be very boring.

As they continued walking, Zheng Tianlun deliberately sped up in order to get further away from Zhou Wen.

Firstly, he didn’t wish for Zhou Wen to steal his limelight. Secondly, he didn’t wish to have anything to do with Zhou Wen. After all, Zhou Wen was Wang Mingyuan’s disciple. This wasn’t anything honorable. It would be bad if people misunderstood him for getting too close to Zhou Wen.

After walking for a short distance, Sulli pointed at the bank ahead and said, “There are Fire-Armored Crocodiles there.”

Zheng Tianlun was delighted. He thought that it was time for him to perform again, but upon closer inspection, there were more than ten Fire-Armored Crocodiles lying on the shore. He instantly reeled in shock.

His Snow Snake Saber had no problem dealing with a single Fire-Armored Crocodile. But with so many Fire-Armored Crocodiles, he would probably die if he really charged forward.

“There are too many fire armored crocodiles here. I’m afraid I won’t be able to take care of y’all if I fight here. Let’s switch areas,” said Zheng Tianlun.

Li Weiyang naturally knew that he was no match for the crocodiles, but there was no need to expose him. Just as Zheng Tianlun had said, they circled around the crocodiles.

After they circled around the crocodiles, Li Weiyang realized that Zhou Wen was still behind. She wanted to head back to warn him not to step into the Fire-Armored Crocodile infested area.

However, when she looked back, she saw that Zhou Wen had already walked into the Fire-Armored Crocodiles’ range. The dozen or so crocodiles instantly looked up in Zhou Wen’s direction.

“Ah, Zhou Wen has alarmed those Fire-Armored Crocodiles!” a girl exclaimed.

“Zheng Tianlun, help him,” Li Weiyang said as she summoned her Companion Beast. She wanted to head over and help, but she also called for Zheng Tianlun.

Zheng Tianlun fell into a dilemma. He didn’t think that the three of them could deal with the group of Fire-Armored Crocodiles. He could only pretend that he hadn’t heard her and stood there without moving.

When Li Weiyang charged ten meters forward, she saw the Fire-Armored Crocodiles move, but they didn’t rush at Zhou Wen. Instead, they looked like they had seen a ghost as they scrambled for the magma river.

There were loud splashing sounds as the crocodiles jumped into the magma river and swam desperately towards the other bank of the magma river.

Li Weiyang couldn’t help but stop as she watched in astonishment.

Fire-Armored Crocodiles were famous for their fiery temper. They would even spit a mouthful of flaming magma at dimensional creatures that were stronger than them, much less a human.

Li Weiyang had never seen such a scene before.

Zheng Tianlun and company were dumbfounded as well. Wherever Zhou Wen went, the Fire-Armored Crocodiles would try their best to escape as though they were horrified.

As the Fire-Armored Crocodiles were densely packed, one of them failed to scramble away in time, allowing Zhou Wen to

step on its tail.

The Fire-Armored Crocodile seemed to turn into stone as it lay there motionless, its body still trembling.

Zhou Wen reached out and slapped the Fire-Armored Crocodile’s head a few times, hoping to anger it to spew fire. However, the Fire-Armored Crocodile had a backbone. It remained motionless. It didn’t even open its mouth, much less spew out fire.

From the looks of it, these Fire-Armored Crocodiles were the batch that had fled previously. Zhou Wen couldn’t help but feel a little depressed. Back when he fought with the group of them, he got them to spit fire to allow him to comprehend the Ancient Sovereign Sutra. However, this time he failed to figure out anything even when they were out of fire.

Later on, the Fire-Armored Crocodiles ran away. He didn’t expect that these would be the same ones he had encountered before.

“Go.” Zhou Wen released his foot gloomily. The Fire-Armored Crocodile acted as though it had been pardoned and quickly scrambled towards the magma river before jumping straight in.

Li Weiyang and company were dumbfounded. They found it somewhat unbelievable. The ferocious dimensional creatures, the Fire-Armored Crocodiles, were like mice encountering a cat.

After Zhou Wen passed through the area, he arrived near Li Weiyang and company. Without saying a word, he walked past them and continued following the magma river upstream.

“He’s so cool! Does Zhou Wen have a girlfriend?” a girl said with hearts filling her eyes.

“Of course not. I heard he’s a famous gaming nerd,” another girl said.

“What gaming nerd? It should be a gaming god. Didn’t you see that? That Legendary Fire-Armored Crocodile actually didn’t even dare to move in front of him. He’s so godly.” The girl from before retorted.

What a pity. If he wasn’t Wang Mingyuan’s disciple, he would definitely become a powerful figure known throughout the League, Li Weiyang sighed inwardly.

She knew very well how terrible the matter regarding Wang Mingyuan was. Even the Luoyang’s Wang family, which had plenty of say, was almost in ruins. It would be difficult for them to enter the core power in the League in the future.

As Wang Mingyuan’s student, Zhou Wen was already on the League’s blacklist. If it wasn’t for the An family protecting him, the Special Inspector Bureau would have long taken him back for interrogation.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 361 - Magma Worm

Chapter 361 Magma Worm

Zhou Wen ignored them as he continued walking along the riverbank.

“Weiyang, why don’t we follow Zhou Wen to take a look at what he’s doing?” a girl suggested.

“That’s not too nice, right?” Li Weiyang was somewhat hesitant.

Since Zhou Wen hadn’t killed the Fire-Armored Crocodile, he clearly wasn’t here for it. Li Weiyang was also somewhat curious about Zhou Wen’s actions, but it seemed a little inappropriate to follow him like this.

“Magma River is huge. It’s not like only one person is allowed to hunt at a time. Zhou Wen didn’t say that he was going to book the entire place. He didn’t chase us away either. It shouldn’t be a problem, right?” the girl from before added.

“That’s right, President. We’ll walk slowly behind him. It won’t affect him,” another girl said.

Apart from Zheng Tianlun, all the girls were interested in following Zhou Wen. Li Weiyang thought for a moment and said, “Alright then. Let’s continue walking.”

Although Zheng Tianlun was a little unhappy, it wasn’t his place to object with everyone so enthusiastic. All he could do was follow them.

However, this time, they walked slower than Zhou Wen and stayed behind him.

Zhou Wen originally wanted to wait for them to overtake him before slowly finding the tiny palm symbol, but he quickly realized that they moved when he moved, stopping when he stopped, so he decided to ignore them and slowly walked along the magma river.

He hadn’t found the tiny palm symbol and the Fire-Armored Crocodiles nearby were afraid of him. The sight of him made them escape into the magma river, boring him greatly.

After walking for a while, he suddenly saw a two-to-three meter tall magma fountain.

Zhou Wen was delighted when he saw the magma fountain. He had carefully studied the information regarding Magma River before coming here. Such a phenomenon usually indicated the breathing of a Magma Worm beneath the magma surface.

Magma Worms were Epic creatures that lived in magma, but they didn’t have the ability to breathe in magma. Every once in a while, they would float up to take a breath like a whale.

Li Weiyang and company also saw the fountain from behind and guessed that there were Magma Worms there. However, they soon saw Zhou Wen walking towards it.

“Zhou Wen, be careful. There are Magma Worms there,” a girl warned Zhou Wen.

“I know,” Zhou Wen answered. He had already walked to the bank and was looking at the magma fountain in the center of the river.

“Don’t tell me Zhou Wen is here to hunt Magma Worms?” The girl guessed.

“No way. Magma Worms are Epic creatures. Although Zhou Wen is very strong, there’s a huge difference between the Legendary stage and the Epic stage. Furthermore, Magma Worms are in the magma river, holding a terrain advantage; how can they be killed?” another girl said.

“I think he’s just taking a gander. Let’s not talk about students, even tutors will not easily provoke Magma Worms.” Zheng Tianlun was telling the truth. In a place like Magma River, the chances of winning were slim. If one accidentally fell into the magma river, they would definitely die. Without being fully prepared, even Epic experts wouldn’t risk coming here to kill Magma Worms.

As they conversed, they saw Zhou Wen summon a huge sword, one that looked hideous and terrifying. They had no idea which Companion Beast’s manifestation it was.

“Look, Zhou Wen is about to attack. He’s indeed here to kill Magma Worms,” a girl said in excitement.

As she spoke, Zhou Wen had already slashed at the fountain with his sword. A sword beam grew out from the sword as it spun like a rotary blade of light that slashed at the fountain.

Boom!

A crack immediately appeared on the magma fountain. In the next second, the magma churned and a section of the magma river that was tens of meters long began to churn. In the middle of the magma river, something suddenly rose up and magma flowed to both sides. A giant creature lifted its body from the magma river.

The monster was covered in magma. The body that extended out from the magma river was more than ten meters long. It looked like a gigantic magma snake.

“This Magma Worm is huge. Just what it shows is more than ten meters long. I wonder how long the rest of its body is. Its strength must be terrifying. Will Zhou Wen be ok?” a girl said worriedly.

Li Weiyang was equally worried. The bigger the Magma Worm, the stronger it was. A typical Magma Worm could reach ten meters, and their strength would be considered pretty good at the Epic stage. Yet, the body exposed by the Magma Worm was already more than ten meters long. Its strength was definitely unimaginable.

The growth of the Magma Worms was different from ordinary dimensional creatures. They were especially weak at birth and were real worms that were just the length of a finger.

After the Magma Worms were born, they would absorb micro materials in the magma, allowing these materials to attach to them. This way, their bodies would gradually grow bigger. These micro materials could not only become its armor, but it could also provide the worm with powerful fire-elemental energy.

Thus, the larger the size of the Magma Worm, the more terrifying their strength would be. The fire-elemental energy that they could release would also be stronger.

This Magma Worm was probably about 30 meters in size. It was definitely an overlord existence among the Magma Worms. The fire-elemental power it could unleash was something even Epic experts wouldn’t dare underestimate.

Boom!

The gigantic Magma Worm spat out a mouthful of golden-red flames at Zhou Wen that resembled boiling magma.

The girls' hearts were in their throats, but Zheng Tianlun thought to himself, You stole my limelight. Serves you right to be burned to death by the Magma Worm.

Zheng Tianlun didn't like Zhou Wen, but the feud between them hadn't just happened today. Back at the comprehensive test, Zheng Tianlun had prepared to cheat, but he ended up not being able to use it and ended up benefiting Zhou Wen. Although it wasn't Zhou Wen who had forced him, he did not have a good impression of him. Now that he saw Zhou Wen provoke such a sick Magma Worm, he hoped that Zhou Wen would be killed by it.

Just as the terrifying flames were about to land on Zhou Wen, Zhou Wen raised the sword above his head. He circulated the Ancient Sovereign Sutra and injected Primordial Energy into the sword as he slashed out at the flames that filled the sky.

A sword beam tore out of his sword, striking the terrifying flames.

It can't be. Does Zhou Wen want to forcibly withstand the flames of the Magma Worm? Li Weiyang was alarmed. After all, it was an Epic creature. She originally imagined that Zhou Wen would think of a way to dodge, but she never expected him to face the attack head-on.

She didn't know that Zhou Wen had advanced to the Epic stage and felt that it was too rash for him to confront the Epic Magma Worm as a Legendary.

The other girls were also alarmed by what they saw, but the sword beam had already struck the flame.

In the next second, they saw a dazzling scene. The rotary-like sword beam sliced the sea of flames into two. It did not stop as it slashed at the body of the Magma Worm.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 362 - Slaying the Worm with One Strike

Chapter 362 Slaying the Worm with One Strike

The rotary-like sword beam struck the Magma Worm's body like an electric saw cutting through steel, sparks flew everywhere.

The golden crystal-like body was sliced apart by the sword beam, splitting into two before falling into the magma river.

Boom!

The carapace of the Magma Worm landed in the magma river, stirring up magma waves that were several feet high. Li Weiyang and company were already dumbfounded when they saw this. They felt like Zhou Wen, who was standing by the riverbank with his sword, was a god.

"He… He's so strong… He killed the Magma Worm with one strike… He doesn't seem like a student at all…" A girl stared at Zhou Wen with her eyes glowing as she muttered to herself.

"He's indeed not a student. Don't forget who his teacher is," Zheng Tianlun added coldly. Seeing the girls staring at Zhou Wen like they were infatuated with him, his girlfriend, Sulli, being no exception, Zheng Tianlun was extremely displeased.

When Li Weiyang heard Zheng Tianlun say that, her expression immediately sank. "Zheng Tianlun, don't spout

nonsense. Zhou Wen is Zhou Wen. He has nothing to do with what kind of teacher he has."

"That's right. Zhou Wen is so handsome. He definitely has nothing to do with those terrifying people." The girls began speaking up for him.

When Zhou Wen slashed open the body of the Magma Worm, he saw a white baby silkworm-like worm drop near the carapace's head.

Although Zhou Wen was taught by his teachers in school that silkworm babies were adorable, he had never found them adorable. Instead, he found them rather frightening.

Therefore, Zhou Wen didn't hesitate to strike out with his sword, onto the main body of the Magma Worm.

However, before Zhou Wen's sword beam could land, the magma river suddenly exploded into a pillar of magma. A golden figure leaped out of the waves.

It had golden scales, with a tail resembling chiffon. It looked exceptionally enchanting.

Goldfish! Zhou Wen immediately recognized what it was. It was the goldfish that Gu Dian had been trying to fish, but he didn't know if it was the same fish.

The goldfish leaped up from the magma river and swallowed the Magma Worm in one mouthful. Then, it fell into the magma and with a flick of its tail, it was gone.

Holy sh*t, it actually stole my prey! Zhou Wen widened his eyes. He never expected that the Magma Worm he was about to kill would be snatched away by a goldfish.

With a thought, he made the White Shadow of Poison transform into an arm wing and brought him flying over the magma river, slashing at the place where the goldfish had landed.

Boom!

Deep rifts more than ten meters long were carved out in the magma when the goldfish leaped up and landed elsewhere in the magma river.

Zhou Wen chased after it and slashed, but the goldfish had switched locations.

Zhou Wen chased the goldfish via air as he slashed out his sword beams, but the goldfish was extremely slippery and crafty. Despite several slashes, Zhou Wen failed to hit it. Instead, it continued swimming upstream.

Li Weiyang and company chased after Zhou Wen from the bank as they moved upstream. However, Zhou Wen was flying much faster than them. Soon, he had left them far behind them, preventing them from seeing him again. Realizing that they couldn't catch up, they stopped.

"We are all students of Sunset College and Zhou Wen is only a first-year student. How is he so strong?" A girl sighed.

"That's right. He's really too strong. He's even stronger than President Wei Ge. Killing a thirty-meter-long Magma Worm with one strike is godly," another girl said from the bottom of her heart.

Zheng Tianlun said coldly, "I don't think it's anything special. Although he's indeed very strong, he's still far inferior to President Wei. President Wei relied on his own efforts to obtain his present results. Zhou Wen just has a

good family background and has many powerful Companion Beasts.”

“Family? What family background? I heard Zhou Wen came from a small city. What family background does he have?” Most students weren’t very aware of Zhou Wen’s situation, so the girls looked at Zheng Tianlun curiously.

Zheng Tianlun curled his lips and said, “You probably don’t know yet, right? Zhou Wen was originally from a single-parent family, and his father remarried not long ago. Do you know who his stepmother is?”

“Who is it?” The girls were indeed curious.

“His stepmother is Overseer An’s mother, the First Lady of Luoyang City, Ouyang Lan,” Zheng Tianlun said.

“Ah, I never expected that. Doesn’t that make him Overseer An’s younger brother?” The girl covered her mouth with a look of disbelief.

Read latest Chapters at WuxiaWorld.Site Only

“That’s why it’s easy for Zhou Wen to get whatever resources he wants. I heard that Ouyang Lan dotes on him a lot, far more than An Jing. He gets whatever he needs. Otherwise, where do you think he got so many powerful pets from? What student could have the ability to obtain such powerful Companion Beasts? You saw his sword earlier; he was able to kill such a powerful Magma Worm, which makes it without a doubt that it’s an excellent-grade Epic Companion Beast. Do you think a Legendary student could incubate such Companion Beasts? It must be Ouyang Lan who got a certain Epic expert to sacrifice himself and transfer the Companion Beast to Zhou Wen.” Zheng Tianlun knew something about Zhou Wen, but he wasn’t too familiar

with the details. Half of it was hearsay, and the other half were guesses.

“I never expected it to be like this. It turns out Zhou Wen has such a powerful background. It’s no wonder Wang Mingyuan’s matter didn’t implicate him.” The girls wore enlightened expressions.

“Now you know. It’s not that Zhou Wen is strong, but it’s his background that’s strong.” Zheng Tianlun struck while the iron was hot and continued smearing Zhou Wen.

However, a girl held her cheek and said, “I find Zhou Wen so pitiful. As a stepson, he must have suffered a lot with his father marrying into such a large family clan. I wonder how many hardships and grievances he suffered before he gained the An family’s and Ouyang Lan’s acknowledgment.”

“That’s right. It’s no wonder Zhou Wen is so solitary. So it’s because of this. We should give him more love and care.”

“President, isn’t your younger brother the president of the Xuanwen Club? He has a good relationship with Zhou Wen, right? Why don’t you discuss it with your younger brother? Our clubs should hold more joint activities. We can provide Zhou Wen more love and concern or he will be too pitiful,” another girl said.

“That’s right, the children of the stepmother’s family are all so outstanding. He must have put in an unimaginable effort to be able to achieve his current achievements. This is so touching. President, we must protect him even more. Please allow us to have a joint social event with the Xuanwen Club… No… I mean a joint event…”

Zheng Tianlun opened his mouth wide and stared at the girls in a daze. He really couldn’t understand what kind of

logic these girls had.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 363 - Goldfish Let Me Game in Peace

Chapter 363 Goldfish Let Me Game in Peace

Zhou Wen chased after the goldfish as he slashed, but the goldfish was very agile. It scurried in the magma repeatedly. Zhou Wen lost sight of it several times, but it jumped out of the magma itself, as though it was provoking him.

Zhou Wen found it odd. The goldfish was undoubtedly a top-notch Epic creature, but it never counterattacked. It only swam through the magma without spewing flames like the Magma Worm or Fire-Armored Crocodiles.

Zhou Wen didn't believe the notion that it couldn't breathe fire. This was because the fellow's body was burning with terrifying golden flames. Molten rock that touched its body would directly melt. How could it not possess fire attacks?

Back when Gu Dian was fishing for it, the goldfish hadn't counterattacked. That had already puzzled Zhou Wen, so he was even more puzzled now.

Could it be that this is a dimensional creature that can't attack? Zhou Wen felt that something was amiss when he thought about it. This fellow wasn't a vegetarian, having swallowed the Magma Worm as food. It also ate something known as Ice Silkworm.

When he thought of Ice Silkworm, Zhou Wen's eyes lit up. Could it be that the goldfish lost its ability to spew fire because it ate Gu Dian's Ice Silkworm?

The more Zhou Wen thought about it, the more he was convinced of his conjecture. Although Gu Dian was powerful, he had yet to advance to the Epic stage. He would definitely have made some special preparations to fish an Epic goldfish. Perhaps the Ice Silkworm was its nemesis, making the goldfish temporarily lose the ability to control fire.

From the looks of it, this goldfish is very likely the one Gu Dian caught. Zhou Wen once again lost sight of the goldfish, but shortly after, the fish jumped out of the nearby magma provocatively. When it jumped into the magma, it deliberately shook its chiffon-like tail and sent magma splattering in all directions.

I originally wanted to use you to gain insights into the profundity of fire-elemental powers. Since you are courting death, don’t blame me. With a thought, Zhou Wen switched his Primordial Energy Art to Godfiend Era. A Godfiend Life Providence appeared and he summoned the Lost Country Life Soul. A strange ring appeared on Zhou Wen’s finger.

Zhou Wen stared at the magma surface and, indeed, it didn’t take long before the goldfish jumped out again.

A strange glint flashed in the eyes of the half-ghostly, half-beauty Lost Country ring as Zhou Wen’s figure suddenly vanished. Almost immediately, he appeared beside the goldfish. The sword beam from Overlord Sword penetrated the goldfish’s body at almost the same time.

Looking at the goldfish stuck to the Overlord Sword like a grilled fish and completely dead with no chance of being mischievous, Zhou Wen dragged it to the bank.

After ordinary dimensional creatures were killed, their corpses decayed faster than ordinary creatures. Zhou Wen didn’t want corpses either. However, after hearing that Gu

Dian wanted to feed it to the cats, he decided to summon the Mutated Stone Chi and transport the goldfish’s corpse back.

On his way back, he didn’t see Li Weiyang and company. He presumed that they had left.

After leaving the dimensional zone, Zhou Wen contacted Gu Dian and asked if he wanted the goldfish’s corpse.

“Yes.” Gu Dian was always so succinct.

Before sending the goldfish’s corpse to him, Zhou Wen split open the fish’s belly and found a Companion Egg inside. This left Zhou Wen extremely surprised.

However, other than being fast and able to travel through magma, this goldfish didn’t seem to have any special abilities.

After transporting the corpse to Gu Dian, Zhou Wen asked him for more details.

Indeed, Gu Dian told him that the Goldfish was unable to use its fire powers for a limited period after it devoured an Ice Silkworm.

Gu Dian hadn’t lied to him. He really fed the goldfish’s corpse to the cats. Furthermore, it was the same litter that Zhou Wen had seen previously. However, the kittens had grown quite large over the past few months and they were almost the size of an adult cat. The adult cat ate with the kittens the pieces of fish that Gu Dian sliced off for them. They looked rather blissful.

Gu Dian now seemed to have transformed into a three-star chef. He was meticulous while having extraordinary

patience. Even his ferocious appearance did not seem that frightening. Instead, he looked gentler.

Zhou Wen turned around and prepared to leave when Gu Dian suddenly said, “I owe you one for the goldfish. Call me if you need anything from me.”

“Alright.” Zhou Wen nodded and left the abandoned old campus.

After returning to his dorm, Zhou Wen couldn’t wait to incubate the goldfish Companion Egg. The fellow needed plenty of Primordial Energy. Zhou Wen originally imagined that it wouldn’t be difficult incubating it, so he only used his body’s Primordial Energy to supply it to the Companion Egg. However, it only took an instant for nearly 30 Primordial Energy points to be drained from him. It gave him a fright. He hurriedly summoned the Slaughterer Life Soul that gave him unlimited Primordial Energy to stabilize the situation.

The Companion Egg transformed into a golden stream of light that landed on Zhou Wen’s arm, forming a goldfish tattoo that seemed to be swaying its tail.

Zhou Wen summoned it out and it looked like the goldfish from before. Its body burned with golden flames, but the moment it landed, it immediately melted the ground, so Zhou Wen hurriedly summoned it back.

This goldfish doesn’t know how to fly. It can only survive in magma. It probably won’t be easy to use it in combat, Zhou Wen thought to himself as he looked at the stats of the goldfish in-game. He was immediately overjoyed.

Fortune Goldfish: Epic

Life Providence: Luck (Luck +6)

Life Soul: Soul of Magma

Strength: 34

Speed: 39

Constitution: 28

Primordial Energy: 40

Talent Skill: Magma Bubbles

Companion Form: None

After seeing the stats of the Fortune Goldfish, Zhou Wen only wanted to laugh out loud. This day has finally come! So you want me to fail with the baby tiger? Ha! Now I have an even better Fortune Goldfish! It's better than the baby tiger. The baby tiger only adds 5 to Luck, while this is 6! It's better than Wang Lu's!

Zhou Wen felt great. He had been a little depressed having not obtained the baby tiger after all his grinding. Now, he was in an extremely good mood.

He had originally planned on gaining insights from the goldfish's flames, but now he put it aside. He logged into the game before heading to the bat cave. He wanted to give it a try and see how much better the drop rate would be after obtaining Luck +6.

After summoning the Fortune Goldfish, it instantly appeared with its golden flames and plopped to the ground. In a short time, the ground was melted into a pool of magma that was about a meter in diameter. The goldfish swam inside and the Soul of Magma on it would melt the rocks into magma, in whichever direction it swam. However, no matter how fast it

was, there was still a process. Thus, Fortune Goldfish’s speed was extremely slow.

Unless there was a place like Magma River, this fellow could only engage in trench warfare with no way to pursue an enemy.

It’s time to show my true skills. Companion Eggs, Primordial Energy Skill Crystals, Poison Crystals, and high-level stat crystals. All of them are to come to me. Zhou Wen summoned his sword and stormed towards the horde of poison bats.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 364 - Luck

Chapter 364 Luck

ttering the ground, making him pick up Companion Eggs until his hands went soft, and so many Primordial Energy Skill Crystals that he couldn’t be bothered to pick up.

These scenes Zhou Wen imagined didn’t happen. Not only didn’t they happen, Zhou Wen even felt as if his drop rate had lowered.

Usually, when he grinded at the bat cave, he would get a dozen stat crystals to drop. Occasionally, a Companion Egg or rare Poison Crystal would drop.

However, after he cleared the bat cave today, only three stat crystals dropped. Furthermore, none of them exceeded a value of 25.

What crappy luck is this? It’s a lie, right? Is the Luck stat so useless? Zhou Wen couldn’t accept this outcome. He felt that his intelligence and character had been insulted and had even begun to doubt life.

Ignoring the fact that Luck +6 is useless, my luck has even become worse. From the looks of it, the Luck stat has been exaggerated by others. If I had known earlier, I shouldn’t have wasted my time grinding that baby tiger. All that time spent was such a waste. Zhou Wen felt depressed as he glanced at the Fortune Goldfish’s stats.

What he saw left him dumbfounded. After he snapped to his senses, he nearly spewed out a mouthful of blood.

The other attributes of the Fortune Goldfish didn’t change, but in postfix behind the Life Providence, the annotation was different from the one he had seen previously.

Zhou Wen had previously seen Luck +6, but now it was Bad Luck +8 as the annotation.

No way. I must be seeing things. I clearly saw Luck +6; it’s impossible for me to be mistaken. Zhou Wen rubbed his eyes again, but he still saw Bad Luck +8.

What the f**k. Could it be that I’ve been dreaming of a lucky pet for too long that I mistook bad luck for luck? That’s not right. How can I be mistaken? Previously, it was clearly Luck +6. No matter how wrong I am, it’s impossible that I missed out the additional “bad.” Zhou Wen thought for a moment and left the game dungeon before looking at it in his dorm.

When he did this, Zhou Wen’s expression turned odd. The Fortune Goldfish’s Life Providence had a postfix of Luck +6.

Zhou Wen seemed to figure something out as he entered the bat cave and summoned the Fortune Goldfish again. However, this time, it was Bad Luck +7. Compared to before, his bad luck wasn’t any worse, but he was still very unlucky and had no luck.

After taking two steps with the Fortune Goldfish, Zhou Wen realized that his bad luck had changed from +7 to +8.

Holy sh*t, this fellow doesn’t just add Luck. It adds Bad Luck in different places! Zhou Wen walked around the bat cave with the goldfish and realized that the Bad Luck value constantly changed between 3 to 9. Only in a special place would Bad Luck disappear, turning into Luck +1.

Zhou Wen stood on the stone that only allowed his feet to step on. He was momentarily rendered speechless. In such a crappy tiny area, all he got was one additional point in Luck. Furthermore, he couldn’t move. Just moving a tiny bit caused his Luck to immediately turn into Bad Luck.

Zhou Wen left the bat cave and went to the other instant dungeons with the goldfish to test them out. Soon, he realized that the goldfish was stranger than he had imagined.

In Dragon Gate Grotto, the goldfish added Monetary Luck most of the time. Although it wasn’t high and it fluctuated between 1 and 3, the stat alone surprised Zhou Wen.

And when he arrived at Tiger Cage Pass, he gained Bad Luck as well. It typically jumped between 1 to 7. Zhou Wen didn’t walk through the entire Tiger Cage Pass, so he was unsure if there was a spot that gave him Luck.

Zhou Wen tried a few dungeons and discovered that most of the dungeons gave Bad Luck. Only in the Ancient Sovereign City dungeon would the goldfish’s Life Providence increase Luck. Furthermore, it gave plenty of Luck, basically fluctuating between 4 to 10.

Zhou Wen tried grinding monsters with the help of higher luck and it was truly satisfying. Just killing a few monsters was enough to have stats crystals rain. With a little bit of effort, Companion Eggs and Primordial Energy Skill Crystals weren’t difficult either.

Ancient Sovereign City was famous for its low drop rate. However, with the augmentation of high Luck, Zhou Wen had Companion Eggs and crystals drop.

However, this godforsaken place didn’t have any dimensional creatures worth killing. Even if more Companion Eggs and stats crystals dropped, it was useless. There were no Epic dimensional creatures here. The strongest was at the Legendary stage.

“Goldfish Bro, are you messing with me? Even if the bat cave is too close to the underground sea, and it’s understandable that you don’t like water so you don’t add Luck. But why did you give me Monetary Luck at Dragon Gate Grotto? Can’t you give me Luck?” Zhou Wen’s words clearly had no effect on the goldfish.

When he arrived at Dragon Gate Grotto, the goldfish still added Monetary Luck. Zhou Wen didn’t know what it was for. Instead, he spent some time grinding Overlord Snakes in Dragon Gate Grotto and didn’t see any increase in his drop rates. It was about the same as usual.

Where can I find a place to use the goldfish? Zhou Wen had a headache. He felt that the Fortune Goldfish was a scam. The baby tiger was more reliable.

For the moment, he couldn’t find a dungeon that could allow the goldfish to be of use. All he could do was temporarily give up on the goldfish’s functions. He found a spot in-game and got the goldfish to constantly release its fire-elemental powers. Zhou Wen tried to gain insights into the profundity of the Ancient Sovereign Sutra.

The golden flames on the goldfish’s body belonged to its Life Soul, Soul of Magma. It was a kind of fire of a piece of golden rock that could easily melt rocks or metal.

Its Primordial Energy Skill, Magma Bubbles, was also a similar type of fire. It spat out a magma fireball, possessing a powerful explosive power, similar to a powerful missile.

However, Zhou Wen didn’t gain any insights from it.

Strange, could it be that I’m wrong? Although the Ancient Sovereign Sutra has fire attributes, the true profoundness behind it isn’t fire, Zhou Wen thought to himself.

“Zhou Wen, quickly come to our activity room. Something serious has happened.” Li Xuan called, sounding alarmed.

“What happened?” Zhou Wen hurriedly asked.

“It’s difficult to say over the phone. Come to the forest on the old campus. There’s too many of them… I can’t handle them… Come quickly…” With that said, Li Xuan hung up.

Is Li Mobai here to stir trouble again? But what can he do on campus? Is someone willing to help him kill in school? I heard from Li Xuan that there are quite a number of people. Zhou Wen felt that the situation was a little serious as he rushed over.

Li Mobai had recently looked for him. Now that something had happened, there was a high chance that these two matters were related.

Zhou Wen anxiously rushed over to Li Xuan, but the sight before him nearly angered him to death. He saw Li Xuan and the few members of the Xuanwen Club eating barbecue with a group of girls. Li Xuan was surrounded by many girls, and it did seem as though he couldn’t handle them.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 365 - Joint Activity

Chapter 365 Joint Activity

“Zhou Wen, what took you so long? The meat is almost done. Come over quickly.” Li Xuan waved at Zhou Wen.

“What the hell are you doing? Didn’t you say something serious happened? Is this what you call serious?” Zhou Wen walked to Li Xuan’s side and looked at the roasted meat in his hand.

“Would you have come if I didn’t say so? Today is a joint activity between our Xuanwen Club and the Weiyang Club. All these things are provided by the Weiyang Club. Since they sincerely invited us, it wouldn’t be nice for us to reject their kind intentions, right?” Li Xuan got up and pointed to the girls beside him. “My sister, Li Weiyang, you know her. She’s a tigress, so ignore her.”

“Do you have a death wish?” Li Weiyang glared at him.

“My sister is a little fierce, but she’s pretty enough. Just based on her looks, I’ve tolerated her for more than ten years. If not, I would have fallen out with her.” Li Xuan pointed at the girl beside and said, “This is Zhang Miaomiao. She’s the vice president of the Weiyang Club. Just now, she told me that she wants you to give her some pointers in swordplay. Teach her when you have the time.”

“Hello, I’m Zhang Miaomiao. I’m good at finance and management.” The girl had quite a swell nature as she stood up and extended her hand.

“Zhou Wen.” Zhou Wen reached out and shook her hand.

“Our Weiyang Club welcomes you at all times. I have to learn some sword techniques from you, but if you need any help in finance and investments, come look for me. I guarantee that I won’t disappoint you,” Zhang Miaomiao continued as she held Zhou Wen’s hand without letting it go.

“I don’t have much spare money to invest.” Zhou Wen pulled his hand back.

Li Xuan shook his head, thinking, Zhou Wen is really a born virgin. I should let him cultivate my Invincible Connate Divine Art.

However, Zhang Miaomiao didn’t seem to mind at all. She smiled and said, “It’s alright. You can look for me whenever you have the money in the future.”

Li Xuan was taken aback as he wondered what was happening. Since when did these women become so good-tempered?

Following that, he introduced the other Weiyang Club members to Zhou Wen. All of them were female students. Furthermore, they all expressed their goodwill towards him.

“Sis, what’s the situation? Tell me honestly, did your Weiyang Club take the initiative to hold a joint activity with us because you have your sights on Zhou Wen? Are you thinking of poaching him from me?” Li Xuan couldn’t help but secretly ask Li Weiyang when he saw the girls surrounding Zhou Wen and asking questions. Even Zhou Wen, who was so insensitive and impervious to the questions, didn’t scare them away.

“It’s none of my business. They were the ones who said that Zhou Wen is too pitiful. He must have suffered terribly at his stepmother’s house and ended up having such a teacher. Therefore, they want to show Zhou Wen some love and concern and let him know that there’s still human warmth present in the world,” Li Weiyang said as she shrugged.

Pitiful? Suffered? Li Xuan found his brain lacking. He looked at Zhou Wen who was surrounded by all the ladies and thought, What do you mean pitiful? What suffering? You have no idea how nice Ouyang Lan is to him. Whatever dimensional crystals he needs can be given to him, but he doesn’t want them. Also, Wang Mingyuan, although he really is a great devil, he was really nice to his students. I heard from Zhou Wen that he was able to advance to the Epic stage thanks to Wang Mingyuan’s help.

Of course, Li Xuan didn’t tell Li Weiyang that. Another thought ran through his mind and he said, “That’s good. Otherwise, with Zhou Wen’s character, which woman would be able to take it? He would probably spend his entire life alone. It’s just nice now. If someone is willing to take the initiative to accommodate him, who knows, he might hook up with someone?”

However, Li Xuan clearly underestimated Zhou Wen’s lethality. Zhou Wen sat there, barbecuing meat, while several girls sat beside him to chat with him. However, Zhou Wen only responded with a grunt and kept twirling the metal skewer in his hand as he focused on barbecuing the meat over the charcoal fire, as though his interest in barbecued meat was far greater than a conversation with the girls.

In the beginning, the girls didn’t mind. They imagined that the topic might not have interested him, so they changed the topic to matters like games and Companion Beasts.

They had clearly come prepared. They mentioned some of the recently popular games, but it wasn't as though Zhou Wen really enjoyed gaming. He had never played those games before, nor had he heard of them. All he could do was directly tell them that he had never played those games before, causing the chatty girls to be at a loss. The scene turned awkward as the girls could only chat with each other.

"Your friend is truly one of a kind. If he can find a girlfriend, I'll take your surname," Li Weiyang said to Li Xuan with a smile when she saw the situation.

"Stop kidding. We have the same surname, to begin with, so what's the point in taking my surname?" Li Xuan shook his head and said, "There's nothing we can do about it. Zhou Wen's personality is a little introverted. He's also quite insensitive. In a peaceful era, he would definitely be a homebody."

"I'm a little curious. How did you become friends with him? The two of you have such different personalities," Li Weiyang asked curiously.

Li Xuan smiled and said, "Actually, making friends has nothing to do with personalities. It's just like finding a girlfriend. As long as one catches the eye at a particular moment, it doesn't matter what flaws they have. One will just feel that they can be friends."

"So that's how you make friends? It's no wonder you got cheated." Li Weiyang rolled her eyes at him.

The girls on the other side no longer came up to Zhou Wen to chat. It wasn't because they didn't wish to talk, but because there was no way they could continue the conversation. Zhou Wen was a topic terminator. Any topic

that was raised with him would come to an end, as though sucked into a black hole.

With no one speaking to him again, Zhou Wen was happy to be free. He continued roasting meat with the metal skewers while pondering over his next step into gaining insight into the Ancient Sovereign Sutra.

The Ancient Sovereign Sutra does have fire-elemental augmentation. Why can’t I figure out anything related to the Ancient Sovereign Sutra from fire? Is my knowledge of fire not deep enough? Or is the true power of the Ancient Sovereign Sutra not fire-elemental? Zhou Wen roasted the meat as he pondered.

In fact, Zhou Wen was a little too anxious. How could it be easy to gain insight into the profundity of a Primordial Energy Art?

The average person began cultivating Primordial Energy Arts from the moment they started schooling until their college graduation. Then, they would enter society to learn. In their thirties, those with good talent would be able to comprehend the true meaning of their Primordial Energy Arts.

Children of large families, like Feng Qiuyan, began training their Primordial Energy Arts from a young age. Their families invested massive amounts of manpower and resources in them, and there were also seniors who had cultivated the same Primordial Energy Arts to pass on their insights. Typically, they would only comprehend the true meaning of the Primordial Energy Arts after they were twenty.

And someone like Feng Qiuyan who could comprehend it so quickly could be said to be a genius among geniuses. However, Feng Qiuyan had trained his saber techniques

since he was young. This was the result of all his efforts culminating together.

Zhou Wen had previously cultivated Ascetic Meditation, but it was replaced by the Lost Immortal Sutra. He hadn’t cultivated it for less than a year before he advanced to the Epic stage. It could be said to be a heaven-defying advancement speed.

As for the Primordial Energy Art like the Ancient Sovereign Sutra and the Godfiend Era, he had never cultivated it before. They were only simulated by the Lost Immortal Sutra. Under normal circumstances, it would take Zhou Wen at least a few years to slowly familiarize himself with them and ponder over them before he could understand their true meaning.

Figuring out the true meaning of the Godfiend Era in his battle with Feng Qiuyan was already considered lucky. It was part talent and part luck. So, how could it be so easy to figure out the Ancient Sovereign Sutra?

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 366 - Fire of Life Let Me

Chapter 366 Fire of Life Let Me

“That’s not how you roast meat. Look at you; you’ve burnt it.” As Zhou Wen was in thought, he was jolted awake by a woman’s voice.

Looking up, he saw that it was Li Weiyang sitting down on a chair beside him. The girls from before had already gone elsewhere to play with Li Xuan and company, leaving him and Li Weiyang behind.

“Give it to me.” Li Weiyang extended her hand in front of Zhou Wen.

Zhou Wen was engrossed in his thoughts and forgot that he was still holding a skewer. The meat had been roasted for too long and the outside was charred black.

Zhou Wen handed the skewers to Li Weiyang in embarrassment. Li Weiyang placed the charred meat to the side and took a few fresh skewers before placing them over the charcoal fire.

“One look and I know you’re a scion who hasn’t experienced much hardship. You don’t even know how to roast meat. Although this isn’t considered a skill, food is the foundation of human survival. Without food, even Epic experts would starve to death. Large swaths of land are now occupied by dimensional zones. The area where humans can harvest food has been greatly reduced. There’s still a need to avoid unnecessary waste.”

As Li Weiyang roasted the meat, she said, “Let me teach you how to roast meat. In the future, when you leave school and really enter the dimensional zones in the wilderness, the food you receive will probably mostly be raw meat. Roasting meat is also an essential skill, so at the very least, it can make you have a better time eating while outside. The most important thing about roasting meat is the control of the heat…”

Zhou Wen actually knew how to roast meat, but he had been preoccupied and had forgotten about the meat skewer in his hands. This resulted in the current situation.

He didn’t refute Li Weiyang’s words, but as he listened, an idea flashed in his mind as he stared intently at the meat she was roasting.

The muscles and fat were sizzling over the fire, giving off an aroma that whet his appetite.

I remember that when humans first used fire, they used fire to fend off wild beasts and cook food. One of the Three Sovereigns, Suiren-shi, had made great contributions to the human race because he had brought the fire. He was praised as the leader of the Three Sovereigns. Could it be that the fire-elemental power in the Ancient Sovereign Sutra is not the destructive power of fire but the vitality of fire?

The more Zhou Wen thought about it, the more he found it correct. He had been trying to find an inkling of the Ancient Sovereign Sutra through the power of fires, but its fire-elemental powers didn’t lean towards lethal power.

Typical fire-elemental Primordial Energy Arts could achieve a projection effect of fire-elemental power when advancing to the Legendary stage.

However, the Ancient Sovereign Sutra didn’t have such an effect. Its fire-elemental power was converged and restrained.

People say that water is the source of life, but they don’t know that fire is the source of civilization. Without fire, perhaps the cold world wouldn’t give birth to life… Without fire, humans wouldn’t be able to eat cooked food or kill most of the parasites in it… Zhou Wen looked at the charcoal fire burning as more and more thoughts flashed through his mind. They were scattered, and he wasn’t able to find the main point.

“Hey, I’m talking to you. Can you hear me? Don’t burn the meat when you roast it in the future,” Li Weiyang said as she roasted the meat.

“It’s just too beautiful,” Zhou Wen said as he looked at the flames. At that moment, he felt that the flames were somewhat different from usual as they emitted a moving radiance.

Usually, when Zhou Wen looked at flames, he would only sense their heat and lethality. But now, when he looked at the flames again, he felt that there was a rhythm to life in them.

Although Zhou Wen was still unable to grasp the essence of the flames’ influence on life, the flames in his eyes were no longer as simple as lethal force.

“What did you say?” Li Weiyang was slightly taken aback as she turned to look at Zhou Wen.

“It’s just too beautiful. I never noticed that something that usually looks so hot inside can have such a beautiful and

touching side,” Zhou Wen said as he stared at the roasted meat. He was naturally referring to the flames.

Li Weiyang wasn’t an immortal, so she naturally couldn’t read Zhou Wen’s mind. She imagined that Zhou Wen was referring to her when she heard him say that. Her face blushed slightly as she said in embarrassment, “It’s just roasting meat. It’s nothing serious. It’s not as grand as you put it.”

“No, to me, this is the most important thing. It’s just too beautiful,” Zhou Wen said as he stared at the flames. His body and mind had already been attracted by the dancing flames.

“You… Stop talking nonsense… Eat your barbecue meat…” Li Weiyang handed the barbecue meat to Zhou Wen. She was a little shy after being praised like that, especially by a man. Even she felt embarrassed, despite her usually fiery-tempered self.

“I finally understand. So the true characteristic of fire isn’t destruction. It’s life. The fire of life is what makes it moving and beautiful. I finally get it.” Zhou Wen stood up and walked back. He finally understood why he had never been able to figure out the true meaning of the Ancient Sovereign Sutra. He had been wrong from the beginning.

Now, all Zhou Wen wanted to do was return immediately and meditate on the Ancient Sovereign Sutra. He almost couldn’t contain his excitement.

Li Weiyang held the barbecued meat as she stood there in a daze. As she watched Zhou Wen run off, her mind was filled with question marks. Fire? Beautiful? Moving? What the hell?

“What happened to Zhou Wen?” Li Xuan walked over and asked Li Weiyang.

“How would I know what’s wrong with that lunatic? I’m not a lunatic.” Li Weiyang angrily stuffed the meat into Li Xuan’s mouth before leaving.

What happened? What’s wrong with both of them? Li Xuan looked puzzled, unsure why Li Weiyang was so angry.

After Zhou Wen returned to his dorm, he began meditating over the Ancient Sovereign Sutra in the training room. He quickly realized why the fire-elemental powers that came with the Ancient Sovereign Sutra were so weak.

It wasn’t that the Ancient Sovereign Sutra was not strong, but because excess was just as bad as a deficiency. The true essence of the Ancient Sovereign Sutra was life. If the power of fire was too strong, it would destroy everything, including life.

Therefore, the power of fire was necessary, but it couldn’t cross a certain boundary.

It was akin to the sun’s effect on humans. With the sun, there was the night and day, the four seasons. It was only with the sun that life was possible.

However, if the ground was too close to the sun, all the plants and animals on the ground would be burnt to death. No life could withstand it.

This is the same as barbecuing. It will be inedible if it’s too raw but it can’t be eaten if it’s charred. The most touching thing about life is that tiny bit of spark. Zhou Wen vaguely felt as though he had grasped something, but he was momentarily unable to grasp it accurately.

Over the next few days, Zhou Wen spent all his time in the training room studying the Ancient Sovereign Sutra. He began to understand more and more of the Ancient Sovereign Sutra’s true meaning.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 367 - Condensing a Life Soul Again

Chapter 367 Condensing a Life Soul Again

An Jing had been practicing the Sun Strafe Art recently. Although she had improved greatly, she still failed to grasp the true meaning of the Sun Strafe Art required to advance to the Epic stage.

With her talent, it shouldn’t have been difficult for her to advance to the Epic stage. However, due to her body’s chronic ailment, she was unable to sense the underlying sublimity of the Sun Strafe Art.

An Jing wasn’t afraid of hardship. Every time she cultivated the Sun Strafe Art, she could endure the inhuman pain caused by the chronic ailment.

However, gaining insight into something like this couldn’t be resolved just by suffering. The untalented might not even be able to match a day’s enlightenment of someone even after ten years of training.

An Jing had talent, perceptivity, and diligence. She could be said to be a rare genius in the world, but her body wasn’t suitable for practicing the Sun Strafe Art. It made her feel as though she was separated by something as she ultimately failed to grasp its true meaning.

After her second attempt at enlightenment, An Jing curled up in a corner of the room in pain. Every time she cultivated the Sun Strafe Art, she suffered such pain.

Her phone rang and An Jing struggled to stand up. She walked to the table and picked up the call.

“My Little Jing, it’s been a while since I’ve met you. Mommy wants to have a meal with you. Are you free tonight?” Ouyang Lan’s voice came through the phone.

“Tonight…” An Jing had just cultivated the Sun Strafe Art and the pain in her body hadn’t subsided that quickly. Now, she really didn’t want to move a step.

“Mommy only has you and Tianzuo as my two precious treasures. Tianzuo is busy with military matters and I haven’t seen him for days. You have to stay on campus, leaving me all alone at home every day. I am so lonely…” As Ouyang Lan spoke, she gave off the feeling like she was on the brink of tears. It was sad and tear-inducing hearing her.

“Got it. I’ll head back tonight,” An Jing said helplessly.

Ouyang Lan immediately brightened up and said happily, “Then I’ll wait for you at MG Restaurant. By the way, remember to bring Little Wen along and have him eat dinner with me. I haven’t seen him in a long time. I’ll get Ah Sheng to come to the school gates to pick you up.”

“Can’t you…” Before An Jing could finish her sentence, Ouyang Lan hung up.

An Jing frowned slightly. Although she had gotten Zhou Wen to take her place in the Holy Land and was over the nomination, she still wasn’t willing to face him. She still had a knot in her heart when she saw him.

She had always felt that if her body wasn’t problematic, she would be the most suitable candidate.

She thought about not calling Zhou Wen, but Ouyang Lan had already mentioned it. An Jing hesitated for a moment, washed up, changed her clothes, walked out of her building, and over to Zhou Wen’s building.

She pressed the doorbell but didn’t see Zhou Wen come out.

“It’s not that I didn’t get him; he’s not around.” An Jing pressed three times, but no one answered. Thus, she turned to leave.

Bang!

At that moment, An Jing suddenly heard something from Zhou Wen’s building. It sounded odd as though something had been smashed.

Could something have happened? She glanced at Zhou Wen’s building, but she had second thoughts. What has he got to do with me? He can die for all I care.

She turned around and walked a few steps. When she was about to return to her yard, An Jing turned her head and walked to Zhou Wen’s door again. She pressed the doorbell again as she mumbled to herself, as though trying to convince herself, He lives next door. It’s just a wall separating us. What if he implicates me because of something he does? I have to figure it out.

But after pressing the doorbell a few times, there was still no response. Instead, there was the sound of something shattering coming from inside the house.

An Jing looked up and saw that the balcony door on the second floor wasn’t locked. She leaped up and landed on the balcony before pushing the door open and entering.

“Zhou Wen, what are you doing?” An Jing walked inside as she spoke.

No one answered her, but there was another loud bang. An Jing heard it clearly this time. The sound came from the training room.

There’s soundproofing in the training room. Even boxing sandbags wouldn’t leak any sound. What’s he doing? Had something really happened? An Jing thought to herself as she looked around. Suddenly, she saw a spot in the ground that had signs of heat warping. It seemed to have solidified after melting. Immediately feeling something amiss, she was certain that something had happened.

An Jing naturally didn’t know that the floor was damaged due to Zhou Wen’s summoning of the goldfish. She had imagined that Zhou Wen had been attacked.

Don’t tell me the League’s Special Inspector Bureau attacked him? She quickly rushed to the training room and pushed the door. It was locked from the inside and didn’t budge.

An Jing knocked on the door and called out Zhou Wen’s name a few times, but no one answered. She was even more certain that something had happened to him.

Without any hesitation, she summoned a sword and sliced through the training room’s steel door and rushed in.

The scene she saw when she entered left her slightly taken aback.

The scene in the training room wasn’t as she had imagined. There were no men from the bureau, no signs of fighting, nor were there any signs of items shattering.

The only thing she could see was Zhou Wen floating in midair, his entire body emitting light and heat like a sun.

Although the light was a little blinding, it didn’t cause any harm. The temperature made her feel hot, but it wasn’t unbearable. Instead, it was comfortable, akin to sunbathing.

He’s condensing a Life Soul… An Jing stared at Zhou Wen as her pupils constricted.

Back when she had defeated Zhou Wen with one strike, he was only at the Mortal stage—worthless. In less than a year, Zhou Wen was already condensing a Life Soul to advance to the Epic stage. Such a speed was too fast, so fast that it left An Jing jealous.

If it weren’t for my chronic ailment, I would have advanced to the Epic stage a long time ago. If not for the fact that I can’t go to the Holy Land, his Sun God bloodline would have belonged to me. An Jing looked at Zhou Wen and thought to herself.

But soon, An Jing realized that something was amiss with Zhou Wen’s situation.

Zhou Wen’s strength looked like it was a result of the Sun God bloodline being suitable with the Sun Strafe Art, but upon careful inspection, she realized that it wasn’t the case. It looked a little different.

What’s happening? Did he not cultivate the Sun Strafe Art? Then what did he cultivate in? How did he obtain the Sun God bloodline? An Jing was puzzled. She stared at Zhou Wen who was condensing his Life Soul and carefully observed him.

Bang! Bang!

An Jing heard the sound again, but she realized that the sound came from Zhou Wen’s body—from his chest. The sound seemed to be his heartbeat.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 368 - Healing

Chapter 368 Healing

In prehistoric times when humans lived out in the open, with the land as their mat, the sky as their blankets. They fought against countless terrifying creatures, using their bodies to resist the assault of the elements.

There came a day when humanity would grasp the power of fire and draw the curtains of an era of blood and fire—the dawn of civilization.

Fire represented destruction and also hope.

Countless scenes flashed through Zhou Wen’s mind. In that glacier world, groups of humans were huddled inside caves, bunched up with each other, but they were still trembling in the cold wind. Some of them closed their eyes, never to open them again.

A person walked over with a torch and lit a fire. It was so warm that it filled the entire cave, and countless humans worshiped it.

An Jing looked at Zhou Wen’s body and saw the sun-like glow around him grow more intense. It wasn’t only light and heat, but there was also an indescribable power that made one prostrate down in fear.

This kind of worship was not the fear of gods, nor was it faith, but pure adoration.

Bang! Bang!

Zhou Wen’s heart beat more and more intensely. His chest was heaving visibly, as though the heart in it was about to tear out.

An infinite vitality erupted from Zhou Wen’s body. Even An Jing, who was standing at the door, could sense the vigorous vitality.

This isn’t the Sun Strafe Art. It’s definitely not the Sun Strafe Art. Although it has the power of light and heat, and although it looks similar to the Sun Strafe Art, the Sun Strafe Art doesn’t have such vitality. It doesn’t have the aura of a sovereign who encompasses everything… An Jing stared intently at Zhou Wen as she was extremely alarmed.

She originally believed that Zhou Wen only had the chance of obtaining the Sun God Body in the Holy Land after cultivating the Sun Strafe Art.

However, Zhou Wen was now telling her that he could obtain the Sun God Body even if he didn’t cultivate the Sun Strafe Art.

Zhou Wen’s life force had almost materialized as it illuminated the entire room like sunlight. An Jing, who was standing at the door, was also illuminated by it.

She immediately felt a warm force enter her body, quickly warming her entire body. Her body, which was still in pain due to the relapse, felt much better. The pain was rapidly dissipating.

How is this happening? An Jing found it unbelievable. The similarly vigorous Sun Strafe Art inflicted extreme pain on her, only causing her chronic ailments to worsen. However, Zhou Wen’s power could reduce her pain and even slow down her ailment.

An Jing could clearly feel the icy ailment in her body slowly melting under the illumination of Zhou Wen.

Zhou Wen’s heart beat more and more intensely as the light and heat on his body grew stronger. All the blood vessels in his body were throbbing and swelling up due to the intense beating of his heart. They surfaced on his skin like purplish-red wyrms. All his muscles tightened as though they were filled with infinite explosive power.

The potent power and vigorous vitality made Zhou Wen feel as though his body possessed an infinite amount of energy. Even if he clashed with the heavens, he could still bore a huge hole through the sky.

Zhou Wen felt that the current him could be described by an idiom, “bursting with energy.” Ever since he had needed blood to game, his physique and strength had kept improving, but it had been a long while since he had experienced this kind of vigorous vitality.

Now, Zhou Wen wished he could deliver a punch that could flatten the entire dorm. Whatever house, whatever blanket, my body temperature can melt ice and snow and illuminate the entire world. Let the tempest come strike harder!

The gushing Primordial Energy, essence, vitality, and spirit constantly condensed over Zhou Wen’s body before flowing towards his heart. It made his entire chest emit light and heat as though there was a sun in it.

An Jing stared blankly at the floating Zhou Wen. The intense light illuminated her body, rapidly melting the ice, as warmth spread across her body.

An Jing had an urge to cry. From the moment she came of age, she had never felt warmth. It was as if ice had frozen in

her body. Even when it was summer, while everyone was drenched in sweat due to the heat, she would only feel the coldness lessen a little. She didn’t feel warm at all.

But now, the ice in her body was melting. An unprecedented warmth spread throughout her body.

Boom! Boom… Boom! Boom… Zhou Wen felt as though a strange object had condensed in his heart. The item fused with his heart as it spread across his body, forming a strange physical system.

Zhou Wen felt as though the physical system with the heart as the center was an engine that gave him infinite motivation.

I… I have to leave immediately… Even if I suffer a lifetime of chronic ailments… I will not accept Zhou Wen’s powers to heal my body… An Jing turned around and left.

Although she knew that staying behind would rid her of the ailment that had troubled her for years, An Jing’s pride prevented her from accepting Zhou Wen’s treatment.

It would be fine if it were anyone else. Just not Zhou Wen.

She was An Jing, the An family’s An Jing. Even if Zhou Wen took away her nomination to enter the Holy Land, she could proudly tell everyone that she was better than Zhou Wen and could defeat him.

However, if she were to accept Zhou Wen’s powers, how was she to deal with herself in the future even if her ailments were cured?

She would never be able to look up at Zhou Wen again, forever unable to confidently tell everyone that she was

better than Zhou Wen—that as long as she wished, she could defeat him.

There was no way she could live such a proud life again. This was more intolerable than the chronic ailment.

Without any hesitation, An Jing turned around and left. Although her body yearned for sunlight, she would rather walk into the darkness to preserve her pride.

However, at the instant An Jing turned around, Zhou Wen's strength completely erupted. The light on his chest spewed out like a blazing sun. Instantly, the resplendent light seemed to melt the entire room as An Jing's body was devoured by the light.

An Jing felt a scorching force instantly fill her entire body. The coldness in her body was like a ball of snow that had been thrown into a furnace. It instantly melted, as though some chains had melted off her body. Her body turned limp and she collapsed to the ground.

Zhou Wen became completely conscious as he saw a humanoid glow floating in front of him like a sun. He knew that it was the Life Soul that he condensed from the Ancient Sovereign Sutra.

But other than the condensed Life Soul, there was also a woman sitting paralyzed by the door. She was struggling to stand up with her hands against the door frame.

An Jing! Zhou Wen immediately recognized the person when their eyes met.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 369 - Ancient Sovereign

Chapter 369 Ancient Sovereign

“An Jing, why are you here?” Zhou Wen felt puzzled when he looked at An Jing. He didn’t know what was happening. While condensing the Ancient Sovereign Sutra’s Life Soul, he had been immersed in it completely, without knowing what was happening around him.

An Jing’s body felt warm and weak. She had never experienced such a feeling before. She could no longer feel the cold energy in her body.

An Jing’s pride had never been dealt such a blow before, so she felt extremely embarrassed and furious. She forced herself to stand up with the help of the door frame, trying to make herself look as cold as she usually was. Gritting her teeth, she said, “I’m here to foil your Life Soul condensation; otherwise, why do you think I’d be here?”

With that said, she ignored Zhou Wen’s reaction and turned to leave.

Zhou Wen watched An Jing leave in a daze. He didn’t quite believe her, but he couldn’t figure out what she was here for.

His phone suddenly rang. Zhou Wen picked up his phone and glanced at it. It was An Sheng, so he chose to answer.

“Young Master Wen, are you ready? I’m waiting outside the school’s main gate.” Having waited for some time without Zhou Wen or An Jing appearing, An Sheng called Zhou Wen.

“What are you waiting for?” Zhou Wen asked in puzzlement.

“Madam invited you and Miss Jing to dinner. Didn’t Miss Jing inform you?” An Sheng asked.

“Oh, yes. I was informed. Wait for me, I’ll be right there.” Zhou Wen was in a good mood right now. The Ancient Sovereign Sutra had finally condensed a Life Soul which was a great thing for him. Therefore, he didn’t reject Ouyang Lan’s invitation. He could have a good meal to reward himself.

Zhou Wen first dripped his blood to revive and read the game’s information. Indeed, when he used the Ancient Sovereign Sutra, his Life Soul became a new one.

Ancient Sovereign (Primordial Body): Ancient life born from blood and fire, the sovereign who fights against the heavens.

Roughly knowing the Ancient Sovereign’s abilities, Zhou Wen didn’t immediately study it. He quickly took a shower and changed his clothes before heading for the school’s entrance.

When Zhou Wen arrived at the school’s entrance, he saw An Sheng’s car parked not far away.

He walked over to the car and saw An Jing sitting in the back with a deadpan expression. He pulled open the front door and sat in the front passenger seat.

An Sheng sized up Zhou Wen and revealed a look of surprise. “Zhou Wen, you condensed a Life Soul?”

“How do you know?” Zhou Wen asked in puzzlement.

Typically, as long as someone didn’t summon a Life Soul, no one would be able to tell who was at the Epic stage and who was at the Legendary stage. It was rather odd that An Sheng could tell at a glance that he had a Life Soul.

An Sheng smiled and explained, “Didn’t I tell you before that I’m especially sensitive to things like souls? However, if it’s some time after a person condenses a Life Soul, their Life Soul would be more restrained, so I wouldn’t be able to sense it. The Life Soul aura on you is still very strong, so it shouldn’t have been long since you condensed it, right?”

“I see. I just succeeded before coming here,” Zhou Wen said.

“That’s really great news. Madam sure chose a good time to invite you to a meal. She can celebrate for you.” An Sheng paused before continuing, “For you to be able to condense a Life Soul so quickly, it’s obvious that your talent is just like Old Mister Ouyang said. You are extremely outstanding.”

“To condense a Life Soul after so many years of cultivation is already considered very slow,” Zhou Wen said.

“Pretentious,” An Jing said from the back without looking at Zhou Wen.

Zhou Wen was already used to An Jing’s snide remarks, so he simply ignored her. An Sheng didn’t respond and continued asking, “Tell me what Life Soul you condensed if you don’t mind. I can report this good news to Madam later.”

“It’s nothing special. Previously, our Xuanwen Club was organizing a joint activity with the Weiyang Club. Li Xuan got me to join in the barbecue. While observing the charcoal fire, something struck me. When I returned and thought it through, I finally understood the true meaning to fire due to

my good luck. I broke through my bottleneck and condensed a Life Soul," Zhou Wen explained simply.

He definitely couldn't hide his advancement to the Epic stage, so he might as well just tell them straight away. Furthermore, he could make the Ancient Sovereign Sutra's Life Soul public while concealing the other Life Souls, especially Slaughterer. Zhou Wen didn't want anyone to know of the existence of this Life Soul. He had a nagging feeling that it was too bizarre.

Figuring out a Life Soul from eating barbecue? An Jing didn't say a word, but the corners of her eyes twitched as she felt a huge blow to her heart.

"Principal Ouyang was right. You are indeed an extremely focused person. Such a person will succeed easily. No matter what you do, you can gain inspiration from it," An Sheng said.

"You are referring to Feng Qiuyan. He's that kind of person." However Zhou Wen looked at it, he felt that An Sheng's words described Feng Qiuyan.

"Feng Qiuyan from the Feng family? I really don't know about that. However, I'll pay attention to him in the future." An Sheng paused before saying to Zhou Wen, "Young Master Wen, what plans do you have after graduation? With your talent, you will succeed no matter what you do. However, in this era, nothing you do will be stable. Do you want to consider joining the military?"

"We'll talk again in the future." Zhou Wen didn't wish to continue the topic.

An Sheng didn't mention it again. He drove the duo to MG Restaurant. Ouyang Lan was already waiting for them in a

private room.

The present Ouyang Lan looked a lot thinner than when Zhou Wen first visited the An family. However, she still wore a warm smile as she pulled An Jing and Zhou Wen to sit beside her.

“Ah Sheng, sit down too. We are all family and there are no outsiders,” Ouyang Lan said when she saw An Sheng standing by the side.

An Sheng didn’t stand on ceremony either. He pulled a chair and sat beside Zhou Wen. He said to Ouyang Lan, “Madam, Young Master Wen condensed his Life Soul today and advanced to the Epic stage.”

“Is that so? Little Wen, you’re really a genius.” Ouyang Lan was delighted as she pinched Zhou Wen’s cheeks with both hands. She tugged a few times with all her might, causing his face to distort.

Zhou Wen looked at Ouyang Lan in a daze, momentarily at a loss for a response.

Ouyang Lan seemed to realize that she had been too excited. She released her hands and said, “Sorry, it’s a habit of mine pinching Little Jing. I couldn’t help it.”

Zhou Wen was immediately rendered speechless. At the same time, he imagined what An Jing would look like if she was pinched like that.

However, he found it quite unimaginable. An Jing’s cold expression made it difficult for him to imagine how she would look after being pinched.

Apart from An Jing, everyone enjoyed the meal. Only An Jing felt extremely conflicted. She didn’t know how she finished the meal because she had no idea how she could face Zhou Wen in the future.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 370 - Inside the Temple

Chapter 370 Inside the Temple

After returning to his dorm, Zhou Wen carefully studied the Ancient Sovereign Life Soul and discovered that the “Sun” postfix of the Strength stat also vanished like before.

The Ancient Sovereign Life Soul could fuse with Zhou Wen’s body and give him a powerful driving force. This was somewhat different from a traditional Strength-type Life Soul.

When possessed by a traditional Strength-type Life Soul, Strength was directly multiplied.

For example, if the Strength of an Epic expert was at 40. If his Life Soul was to multiply his Strength, it was possible that his Strength would be raised to 60, 70, or even 80.

However, it didn’t mean that one could unleash 80 Strength when one’s Strength reached 80. In reality, the power that a person could produce was largely related to their skills, stamina, and other factors. Without any training, even if they possessed 80 Strength, the power that they could truly wield from throwing a punch was less than 60 or even less than half.

Even a well-trained fighter couldn’t unleash their peak combat power for prolonged periods. Usually, he would be able to maintain his peak strength output for two to three minutes. Those that didn’t drop below 90% of their Strength would be considered an extremely powerful individual. If this continued, their bodily functions would weaken and

they would need some buffer time to continue such explosive strength.

However, that wasn’t the case with the Ancient Sovereign Life Soul. The Ancient Sovereign Life Soul provided a powerful driving force system. Now, Zhou Wen’s Strength was 32. When he had the Ancient Sovereign Life Soul possess him, he could maintain his Strength at peak condition constantly. He wouldn’t suffer a decline in stamina or a decrease in strength. He was practically a combat machine.

And now, the Ancient Sovereign Life Soul was still at its lowest Primordial stage. If he could continue growing, he didn’t know what powers he would have in the future. Perhaps it would allow him to break through the limits of his strength and produce extraordinary powers.

Furthermore, the Ancient Sovereign Life Soul also had combat powers. His combat strength was equivalent to Zhou Wen’s attributes and could be considered Zhou Wen’s avatar. This was somewhat similar to Doctor Darkness’s Dr. Soul. Zhou Wen was very satisfied.

Looking at the glow that resembled a sun god, Zhou Wen felt a little depressed. The glow from the Ancient Sovereign Life Soul was too intense and it was like a humanoid creature condensed from light. He couldn’t see what he looked like at all.

Now, there’s the Wordless Monument’s Dao Sutra and Small Buddha Temple’s Small Perfection of Wisdom Sutra. Which one do I start with? Zhou Wen was momentarily at a loss.

The Ancient Sovereign Sutra could still be connected to fire, but Zhou Wen didn’t know where to begin with these two

Primordial Energy Arts. All he could do was find information related to Buddhism and Daoism in the school’s database.

However, the knowledge of these two categories was just too broad and profound. Even if one spent the rest of their lives studying them, they might not be able to cover everything. Having no clue at all, Zhou Wen didn’t know where to begin.

The flower bud on the Dead Man Tree had already withered over the past few days and had grown a purple fruit. It looked like it was cast from purple-copper, and its shape resembled an egg.

In the past, Doctor Darkness’s fruit ripened after seven days. Zhou Wen estimated that this would take at least seven days, so all he could do was patiently wait. He looked forward to seeing the type of Companion Beast that would appear from the fruit.

He started up the game and tried to enter the temple under the ruins to use the Lost Country’s teleportation ability to enter the temple.

Passing the Aoyin stone statue with the sacrificial offerings, he arrived at the door to the left side of the palace. The moment the blood-colored avatar opened the door to the palace, he saw a creature resembling a wolf and tiger. It was entirely black in color and had two tails. With wings on its back, it lunged over at an incredulous speed. Even Ghost Steps’ speed couldn’t match it.

Zhou Wen pressed down on the ring transformed by Lost Country. The ghostly face’s eyes flashed as the blood-colored avatar’s body instantly vanished. When it appeared again, it was behind the monster.

Zhou Wen hurriedly sized up the environment in front of him. He was likely inside the temple, but he saw that it was ancient and spartan. It didn’t have exquisite decorations or any kinds of calligraphy works. In the hall, there was only a stone altar and a stone offering table. There weren’t any statues on the altar other than a rock.

Zhou Wen only had the chance to glance at the stone before the game screen went black. The blood-colored avatar had clearly been killed by the terrifying dimensional creature.

Even if the temple doesn’t consecrate gods, they should consecrate some demons. Why would they consecrate a stone? Zhou Wen was puzzled.

He had only taken one look at the rock and felt that it looked like a boulder. It was about three meters tall and it was shaped like a mountain. It didn’t look anything special.

After waiting for twenty-four hours, Zhou Wen went to the temple on the right. The temple on the right was somewhat special. Zhou Wen used teleportation, but he also only managed one glance.

The palace’s interior was filled with metal. Even the walls and pillars were made of metal. It also had altars and offerings, but they were made of metal as well.

On the metal altar, the thing that was consecrated was a huge metal ax. The ax was double-edged, and it looked dark and sinister. It was even bigger than a door. The handle of the ax was like a metal pillar, and it looked heavy. There was probably no human who could use such a heavy weapon.

Although he could enter the temple, he died upon entry. Apart from teleporting, even Ghost Steps couldn’t dodge the

attacks of the two Mythical creatures. Zhou Wen couldn’t think of a way to fend them off.

However, there were no hiding spots within the temple. If the former principal and the others had really entered the temple, they were likely doomed.

Zhou Wen grinded the dungeons daily and read some relevant articles to study how to condense a Life Soul and level up one’s Life Soul. A few days had unknowingly passed.

One day, Zhou Wen was grinding the tiger dungeon when his phone suddenly rang. He answered the call while grinding.

“Zhou Wen, are you alright?” A familiar voice sounded. It was Zhong Ziya.

Zhou Wen couldn’t be bothered with grinding. He threw down the game and gripped his phone tightly. “I’m fine. I’ve returned to school. How are you?”

After a moment of silence, Zhong Ziya said, “I won’t be able to return to school. If there’s a chance, we’ll meet again in the future.”

“What plans do you have?” Zhou Wen asked again.

Although they hadn’t spent much time with each other, he felt that Wang Mingyuan’s students matched his personality. He had unknowingly become closer to them.

“With the world so huge, it naturally has a place for me. For Teacher to do something so earth-shattering, I can’t embarrass him as his student. Naturally, I have to do something big as well,” Zhong Ziya said.

“What are you going to do?” Zhou Wen was a little worried. Zhong Ziya had a strange temper, but he possessed an extraordinary talent. He was probably going to cause havoc if he really turned evil.

“Let’s talk about it when we meet in the future. I have something on campus. I won’t be going back in the future. There’s no point in keeping those things there. I’ll give them to you. That item is at…” Zhong Ziya told Zhou Wen a place.

“I’ll get it and send it to you,” Zhou Wen said.

“There’s no need. Just treat it as a memento.” Zhong Ziya hung up after saying that.

When Zhou Wen called again, he heard the notification that the person he had just called had switched off their phone.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 371 - Spirit Casting

Chapter 371 Spirit Casting

Zhou Wen helplessly put away his phone and thought for a moment. He planned on heading to the location Zhong Ziya mentioned to take a look.

However, Zhou Wen wasn't sure if the item was still there because Zhong Ziya's belongings were hidden in Dragon's Well. Back then, the Special Inspector Bureau's Director-General had personally led a search and investigation, so it was very likely that they had already found the item.

As for what it was, Zhong Ziya didn't say, and Zhou Wen didn't have the time to ask.

When he came to Old Dragon Cave again, Zhou Wen felt mixed feelings. He still remembered Wang Mingyuan cooking for the four of them while wearing an apron. But now, it was a mess.

He wanted to clean up the lab and make it return to its original appearance, but he felt uncomfortable. He picked up a few pieces of broken apparatus and put them down again.

They're gone. So what if I tidy the place? Zhou Wen sighed inwardly. After putting down the item, he headed straight for Dragon's Well.

The platform made of stone beside Dragon's Well had been dismantled, and the chain had long disappeared. This served to make Zhou Wen feel even more uncomfortable.

Back then, he had pulled the chain quite a few times. The few of them had joked that they were fishing for dragons, but they had never really caught anything. They didn’t even catch a single snake, much less a dragon. It was all a form of self-consolation.

He switched to the Godfiend Life Providence and flew down the shaft, stopping about twenty meters from the mouth of the well.

The cold fog here was already thick and it was so dark that he couldn’t see his fingers. Zhou Wen approached the wall and reached his hand out to feel his way. It was biting cold to the touch as though it was ice.

Zhou Wen wasn’t worried about encountering danger. He had entered Dragon’s Well several times in-game, so he knew that this place was still far from the White Dragon’s location so he wouldn’t alarm it.

After some searching, he only found cold rocks. Suddenly, Zhou Wen felt a soft spot as though he had touched a sponge. He couldn’t help but feel delighted.

After carefully feeling around the area, he discovered the wooden plank that Zhong Ziya had mentioned. He opened it and revealed a hole that allowed an arm to extend in. Zhou Wen extended his hand and groped for a while before taking out a bamboo tube.

The hole wasn’t deep. After some groping around and realizing that there was nothing else, Zhou Wen took the bamboo tube and flew out of Dragon’s Well.

After leaving Dragon’s Well, he carefully examined the bamboo tube, only to discover that it was emerald-green in

color, like fresh bamboo that had just been chopped off. The opening was stuffed with cloth.

Zhou Wen removed the seal and looked into the bamboo tube. He saw that there was something rolled up. It looked like paper.

After pouring the thing out, Zhou Wen realized that it wasn’t paper, but an animal hide of unknown species. After some processing, it turned into a leather scroll.

The workmanship of the scroll wasn’t bad. It was just that it had been through a lot, so it was a little worn out.

What did Zhong Ziya leave here? Zhou Wen was puzzled as he unfolded the leather scroll. He saw that there were many words written on it. Although the words looked a little faded, time had failed to completely erase them.

Zhong Ziya doesn’t usually like to study. Why would he have such a thing hidden here? It’s relatively easy to believe that this item was hidden by Jiang Yan. Zhou Wen was somewhat curious as he carefully read the contents on the scroll.

This left Zhou Wen alarmed.

The leather scroll recorded witchcraft called Spirit Casting. It was said that humans were unable to fuse with other living beings, but the method described was too alarming. It didn’t adhere to human common sense. If Zhou Wen had seen it in the past, he would only treat it as something fabricated by a delusional person. It was impossible for it to be realized.

However, Zhou Wen’s expression turned odd when he thought of Wang Mingyuan, who had transformed into a dimensional creature.

Don’t tell me Teacher used this Spirit Casting technique to fuse with the creature inside the white cocoon? Zhou Wen thought to himself. But why does Zhong Ziya have this? Where did he get it from? Did Teacher give it to him?

Zhou Wen couldn’t figure it out. After hesitating for a moment, he placed the leather scroll back into the bamboo tube before storing it in the Chaos Bead’s chaos space.

This item was definitely taboo for humans. Zhou Wen didn’t want others to see it, nor did he have plans to learn it.

If Zhong Ziya didn’t come to retrieve it in the future, he planned on permanently sealing it within the chaos bead, preventing it from ever seeing the light of day again.

After doing all this, Zhou Wen walked out of Old Dragon Cave.

The bustle outside Dragon Gate Grotto had returned to normal. There were even more people. Many people had set up stalls outside selling their loot. The most popular ones were all kinds of stat crystals. Although everyone wanted Companion Eggs, the prices were too high so transactions were relatively few.

“Zhou Wen, what are you doing here?” someone stopped him.

Zhou Wen turned around and saw that the person who called out to him was Huang Ji. This fellow had actually set up a stall here.

“Senior, why are you running a stall when you should be developing the game?” Zhou Wen was somewhat depressed. To not work on the game and run a stall here only seemed to imply that his investment was for nothing.

Huang Ji mysteriously pulled Zhou Wen to the side and whispered, “I’m working on the game. Some unimportant parts have already been outsourced. In two months, we should have the results. That’s not urgent. Something big will happen today, and benefits might be in store. Why don’t you wait with me?”

“What can happen here?” Zhou Wen looked around him. Although Dragon Gate Grotto had many dimensional zones, they were all inside the grottos. What could happen outside?

“Junior, you have no idea. All the dimensional zones in Dragon Gate Grotto are different, but in fact, Dragon Gate Grotto is an entire dimensional zone, including the spot where we are now,” Huang Ji said as he pointed at the stone steps beneath him.

“Of course I know that.” Zhou Wen didn’t know what Huang Ji was getting at.

“Then aren’t you curious why there are dimensional creatures in those grottos with magical things happening inside but there aren’t any outside?” asked Huang Ji.

“Is a reason needed?” Zhou Wen asked.

Huang Ji covered his forehead and pursed his lips. “There is definitely a reason for everything. If there is no reason, then it just means that we haven’t figured it out. There is actually something mysterious outside Dragon Gate Grotto. It’s just that it won’t appear normally, but tonight is when that magical moment happens. Otherwise, why do you think there are so many people here? There will be more people coming later. Many people who know of this will probably come tonight.”

“What magical thing is it?” Zhou Wen was somewhat intrigued. He believed there definitely would be something good. Otherwise, why would people choose to come here instead of other places where there were so many magical things happening in other dimensional zones?

“This magical thing in Dragon Gate Grotto is called Buddha Eye Opening…” Huang Ji said excitedly.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 372 - Buddha Eye-Opening

Chapter 372 Buddha Eye-Opening

Legend had it that in ancient times, Dragon Gate Grotto often suffered floods, wiping out cities and fields.

One year, due to a prolonged rain upstream, the water level kept rising. The experienced elders knew that there was going to be a flood and began moving higher up the mountain. In the story, a child was playing on the shore when he heard a strange sound coming from the water. It sounded like someone was saying, “Open or not… Open or not…”

The child thought nothing of it. Two days later, a major flood really began upstream. The commoners watched their fields and city flooding and felt extremely miserable.

Although they had brought everything that they could bring with them, once the disaster was over, the fields would be ruined. There would be nothing to eat in the coming year, resulting in a definite famine. Moreover, after the flood, there would definitely be plagues. At that time, medical technology was not good enough to control plagues. They could only survive it with numbers, which meant that in larger areas not everyone would die from the contagion.

While everyone was filled with grief, the child heard that strange voice coming from the water again. It sounded like it was asking, “Open or not… Open or not…”

The child was very curious and explained the matter to his parents. When his parents heard that, they were overjoyed

and told the child that if he heard the voice again, he should answer “open”.

Not long after, the child heard that voice again. This time, he followed his parents’ instructions and said, “open.”

Then, the churning river split apart. The floodwater that flowed down from upstream actually split into two paths. One circled around the fields and city from the left, and the other circled around it from the right. A serious flood didn’t happen.

And in the area where the river split apart, the mountain walls that were beneath the river surfaced. Numerous Buddha statues and grottos of different sizes appeared. One of them was a Buddha statue with eyes staring straight at the sky. The river split into two with his eyes being the central axis.

After the flood passed, the commoners realized that the Buddha statue’s eyes had closed. Only then did they realize that the Buddha statue had saved their entire city.

Ever since then, the Buddha statues and grottos appeared out of the water—the present Dragon Gate Grotto.

Of course, this was just a legend that couldn’t be taken seriously. However, the story of Buddha opening his eyes had spread around the area.

Huang Ji told Zhou Wen that he didn’t know if Buddha had really opened his eyes to save all those lives, but he was certain that after the dimensional storms, every time the river beside Dragon Gate Grotto exceeded a certain range, a Buddha statue would open its eyes. If one were to be looked at by the Buddha statue, there might be a huge fortuitous opportunity befalling them.

“What huge fortuitous opportunity?” Zhou Wen asked curiously.

Huang Ji shook his head and said, “I don’t know. I heard that there were several instances in Dragon Gate Grotto that had the Buddha open his eyes. Every time someone was glanced at by the Buddha statue, it was as though a Buddha’s light had descended upon them. However, I don’t know what benefits those people gained later on. It’s just that I heard about a student with an average aptitude, who had the lowest grades in school and always ranked in the bottom three in the comprehensive test. He was lucky enough to be looked at when the Buddha opened his eyes. From then on, it was as though he had cheated as his results shot up rapidly. He advanced to the Legendary stage in just a few months. I heard that he advanced to the Epic stage shortly after graduation.” “That godly?” Zhou Wen was somewhat in disbelief.

“I don’t believe it either. But that’s the legend that’s spreading. I’ve only heard people mention it. Recently, there’s been a lot of rain, and the water level has already exceeded the legendary mark. Perhaps today will be the day the Buddha opens his eyes. If there’s nothing else you need to do, just wait here. Who knows, if Buddha takes a look at you, you’ll be in for a swell time,” Huang Ji said. Upon hearing Huang Ji, Zhou Wen felt that he should stay behind to take a look. Even if the Buddha statue didn’t fancy him, it was better to broaden his knowledge. Zhou Wen sat down beside Huang Ji, waiting for the so-called Buddha Eye-Opening to happen. “Which is the Buddha statue with the closed eyes as mentioned in the legend?” Zhou Wen looked around him but didn’t see any Buddha statue with closed eyes.

“That one.” Huang Ji pointed up. Thankfully, Zhou Wen’s eyes were especially good; otherwise, he really wouldn’t be able to see that Buddha statue. It was because the Buddha statue that Huang Ji pointed to was so inconspicuous.

The more important Buddha statues were all full-body sculptures, but the Buddha statue in question was just a carving. Furthermore, it was only one-foot-tall and was carved on a stone wall. The Buddha statues around it were several meters tall or even more than ten meters tall. This made it extremely inconspicuous. If one didn’t pay attention, they would miss it.

Zhou Wen scrutinized it and realized that the Buddha statue did have its eyes closed, but after sizing it up for a while, he failed to discover anything magical about the stone statue.

Li Xuan and Li Weiyang walked over with a group of people. From afar, he saw Zhou Wen, ran over, and grumbled, “Old Zhou, so you’re here. That makes it easy for me. Why didn’t you answer all my calls?” Only then did Zhou Wen recall that he hadn’t brought his ordinary phone when he came out.

“Why are you all here?” Zhou Wen looked and realized that almost everyone from the Xuanwen Club and the Weiyang Club was here. Even Gu Dian.“Why else would we be here? Aren’t you here for that Buddha Eye-Opening as well?” Li Xuan curled his lips as though he was very displeased with Zhou Wen for coming alone without informing him.

“I only learned about the Buddha Eye-Opening from Senior Huang Ji a moment ago. I went to Old Dragon Cave to pack some things,” Zhou Wen explained.

“Then you came at the right time. If the Buddha statue really opens its eyes later, it might be able to take a fancy to

us. That will be sweet," Li Xuan said.

As the two spoke, more and more people came. Zhou Wen saw that Wei Ge had brought quite a number of the student council's leaders, including Zheng Tianlun.

Zheng Tianlun wasn't very fond of Zhou Wen and only gave him a glance. Wei Ge nodded at him with a smile, appearing to be somewhat friendly.

Zhou Wen nodded slightly in response, but he had a nagging feeling that Wei Ge was a little different from before, but he couldn't put a finger on the difference.

The sky grew darker and, when the sun was setting, more and more people came. Not only were there people from the college, but there were also some from outside the college. After all, not all of Dragon Gate Grotto belonged to Sunset College. As more and more people appeared, the Buddha statue remained motionless. Ignoring the hope of having its eyes opened. It was so dark that it was almost out of sight.

Suddenly, Zhou Wen heard splashing sounds as though something was churning in the river, causing it to constantly bubble.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 373 - Enjoying the Flowers

Chapter 373 Enjoying the Flowers

Everyone’s eyes were attracted by the churning water, including Zhou Wen.

With a loud splash, green lotus leaves emerged from the water. After extending out from the water surface, many water droplets swirled on the lotus leaves, making them wobble. The splashing sounds continued to echo. More and more lotus leaves appeared on the surface of the river like bamboo shoots after the rain. They kept appearing, and not long after, the river was almost completely covered by the lotus leaves. At a glance, it was as if it had turned into a green river of jadeite. In the darkness, the lotus leaves even emitted a faint light.

“Did such a phenomenon happen in the past Buddha Eye-Opening?” Zhou Wen asked Li Xuan.

Li Xuan shook his head and said, “I’m not very sure about that. However, I heard that there was indeed a phenomenon before the Buddha Eye-Opening. However, I’ve only heard of birds flying over from all directions, nothing about the river giving rise to lotus leaves.

As the two conversed, there was another change on the river surface. Lotus flowers extended out from the water and slowly bloomed between the lotus leaves, making the scenery on the river even more pleasant.

Those lotus flowers seemed to be lamps that illuminated the surface of the river. It was truly a magical sight.

Zhou Wen was watching the scene of the lotus flower blooming when he suddenly heard someone shout, “The Buddha has opened his eyes… The Buddha has opened his eyes…”

Zhou Wen and company turned their heads and looked at the statue on the stone wall. Its closed eyes seemed to have a golden line drawn. Light shimmered from within as though it was about to open its eyes.

Zhou Wen’s heart stirred as he switched his Primordial Energy Art to the Small Perfection of Wisdom Sutra. He thought, The Small Perfection of Wisdom Sutra is also a Buddhist Primordial Energy Art. It might be of some use. Since it shares the same religion, the Buddha statue might even glance at me.

Many students and cultivators moved in front of the Buddha statue, hoping to obtain the Buddha statue’s favor.

Feng Qiuyan, Ming Xiu, and Tian Zhenzhen also came to Zhou Wen’s side. Tian Zhenzhen looked at the Buddha statue curiously and asked, “Could it be that only those with Buddhist physiques or people with Buddha-related Life Providences can obtain the fortuitous opportunity during the Buddha Eye-Opening?” “Who knows? The last people who got chosen by the Buddha statues apparently didn’t have any Buddhist physiques,” Li Xuan said after some thought.

“Could there be no standard?” Tian Zhenzhen asked again.

“Even if there are standards, no one knows what it is,” Li Weiyang said. As they spoke, the Buddha statue’s eyes had already completely opened, its eyes sparkling with a Buddhistic glow. However, the direction it was looking at was not the humans on the shore, but the lotus leaves and lotus flowers over the river.

“Is he enjoying the flowers?” Ming Xiu looked at the Buddha statue in deep thought.

“From the looks of it, enjoying the flowers is his main goal. Choosing someone might just be done in passing,” Li Xuan said with a twitch of his lips.

Dragon Gate Grotto had thousands of people along the riverbank as they helplessly watched the Buddha statue enjoy the flowers. The Buddha statue did nothing but admire the flowers, with zero intention of looking at the humans by the shore.

Seeing that the Buddha statue wasn’t looking at him, Zhou Wen couldn’t help but feel somewhat disappointed. It looks like the Small Perfection of Wisdom Sutra isn’t of much use.

Suddenly, not far away, a figure ran to the river bank and jumped into the river. After that, the figure separated the lotus leaves and swam towards a spot where the Buddha statue was looking at.

“Holy f*ck! This bro sure has ideas!”

“You want to get a Buddhist affinity this way? Is that person’s brain damaged?”

“I guess that person must have gone crazy thinking of getting a Buddhist affinity? If you can obtain a Buddhist affinity using such a trick, what kind of affinity is that?” “The person destroyed so many lotus leaves and flowers and disrupted the Buddha statue’s enjoyment of the flowers, spoiling its mood. I won’t be surprised if there’s a punishment, so to get a Buddhist affinity? Stop dreaming.”

Everyone reacted and immediately understood what that person was trying to do. There were people who were

amazed, but most people were mocking the person.

“That person is rather interesting! Is it a student from our school?” Zhou Wen looked at the person who was swimming with piqued interest. Earlier, they had all had their eyes on the Buddha statue and hadn’t seen who had jumped into the river.

Although this method seemed unreliable, this person dared to act on their ideas. It wasn’t comparable to the people on the shore who could only mock.

“Probably.” Li Xuan was somewhat unsure. The person was swimming amongst lotus leaves so they were blocked from view. Furthermore, the river’s water had drenched the person’s clothes, so it was impossible to tell if they were wearing the school uniform.

Boom!

The person was trying their best to swim when a bolt of lightning suddenly shot down from the sky. It hit the person who was swimming in the water. The surrounding river water rose a foot high because of the impact, and the lotus flowers nearby also suffered damage. An area was charred black after the lightning strike.

“I knew it. How dare you use such a trick before Buddha? You deserve to be struck by lightning.”

“Some people only want to take shortcuts. Have you learned your lesson?”

“You even dare to fool Buddha? Who else should be struck by lightning if not you?”

Many people who were watching were gloating. Even though there were people who were concerned about whether that person had died from the lightning strike, no one dared to save the person. They were afraid that they would also be struck by lightning once they entered the river. Zhou Wen felt that the person was rather interesting. He had seen the might of the lightning, and it wasn’t enough to hurt him. He said to Li Xuan, “Wait here for me. I’ll see if he’s dead.”

Zhou Wen didn’t summon his arm wing, but he used Dragon Gate’s Flying Immortal Skill. He stepped on the lotus leaves and headed for the lightning-strike victim.

As he stepped on the lotus leaves and landed on the spot where the person had been struck, he reached out to grab the person who was floating faced down. Upon closer inspection, he was surprised. This person’s hair and clothes had been charred black, but the person wasn’t dead. The person had only fainted.

That wasn’t the main point. The main point was that Zhou Wen actually knew this person. She was none other than Fang Ruoxi, who had graduated from Guide High School with him.

It’s no wonder you jumped down from our side. It’s her! Zhou Wen was looking at the Buddha statue just now, just like the others. He really didn’t notice that Fang Ruoxi had disappeared.Just as he was about to bring Fang Ruoxi back to the shore, he suddenly saw a bolt of lightning appear out of nowhere. It descended from the void and struck Zhou Wen and Fang Ruoxi.

“Zhou Wen, be careful!” Li Xuan and company shouted.

And among the other spectators, many gloated over Zhou Wen’s predicament. They felt that he deserved being hit for

his rash act.

Zhou Wen naturally saw the lightning smite down as well. The lightning came quickly, preventing him from having any time to think. Zhou Wen summoned his Overlord Sword and slashed out the Demonic Astral Wheel at the lightning

The blood-colored light wheel tore out and collided with the lightning. Immediately, a streak of blood-red light exploded.

As the Demonic Astral Wheel shattered, the lightning also shattered. It transformed into electric wisps that scattered across the river surface, charring the lotus leaves and lotus flowers.

Boom!

Before Zhou Wen could retract the sword in his hand, another bolt of lightning came smiting down, preventing him from having a chance to return to the bank.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 374 - Who Ended Up With It?

Chapter 374 Who Ended Up With It?

Zhou Wen held Fang Ruoxi in one hand and raised his Overlord Sword in the other as he prepared to slash out a sword beam to shatter the incoming lightning.

However, he had only raised his sword halfway when he suddenly felt his ears heat up. A golden earring appeared on his ear, producing a strange power.

Truth Listener! Zhou Wen was delighted. He knew that Truth Listener had finished its incubation and had automatically returned to his ears. At the same time, it unleashed a strange power.

This power extended all over Zhou Wen’s body. Even the Overlord Sword in his hand was enveloped by Truth Listener’s power. The lightning struck the Overlord Sword, but it didn’t produce any terrifying power. Instead, it transformed into a strange energy that was transmitted into Zhou Wen’s body, giving him an indescribable sense of comfort. Not only did the lightning not harm him, it even seemed to replenish his energy. Boom! Boom! Boom!

Lightning Bolts fell from the sky one after another as they struck the Overlord Sword that Zhou Wen raised.

“It’s over. Old Zhou is about to be charred to a crisp!” Li Xuan felt his heart chill when he saw the blinding lightning blast on Zhou Wen’s body.

Anyone would imagine that Zhou Wen would be electrocuted to death with such a terrifying electric blast.

However, Zhou Wen didn't feel the pain of being struck by lightning. Instead, he felt his Primordial Energy fill. Every bolt of lightning that struck him added a little to his Primordial Energy. The excess Primordial Energy that his body couldn't contain seeped out from his pores.

Almost instantly, nine bolts of lightning fell. When the light from the lightning dimmed, the spectating students and crowd realized that Zhou Wen was still standing there with his sword raised. He hadn't been reduced to ashes as they had expected. Even his clothes weren't damaged at all.

Zhou Wen, who was standing on a lotus leaf, held Fang Ruoxi in one hand and raised the Overlord Sword in the other. He even emitted a faint golden luster. The visual effect was perfect, alarming and puzzling many students.

"The nine golden lightning bolts were so terrifying. Why isn't Zhou Wen injured at all?" Zheng Tianlun widened his eyes in disbelief. Wei Ge said indifferently, "You underestimate Zhou Wen. How can such lightning hurt him?"

Zhou Wen walked towards the bank with Fang Ruoxi, but the lightning didn't descend from the void again.

Zhou Wen landed on the shore and just as he put Fang Ruoxi down, two golden beams shot out of the Buddha statue's eyes and headed straight for him.

Is it finally coming? Zhou Wen felt a little excited. He didn't know what the Buddha Eye-Opening's power would bring him.

However, in the next second, Zhou Wen was stunned. The golden beam from the Buddha's eyes didn't shine on him but on Fang Ruoxi who was on the ground.

Fang Ruoxi's hair and skin that had been charred from the lightning strike rapidly healed under the golden light. Not only did she recover from her own injuries, but she also became even more crystalline. Amidst her black hair was a faint golden luster.

From the looks of it, the Buddha statue chose Fang Ruoxi from the beginning. After all, she was the first person to enter the river. Zhou Wen guessed the reason why the Buddha statue had chosen Fang Ruoxi. He wasn't envious at all. Fang Ruoxi had such an opportunity because she had pursued it with all her might.

Fang Ruoxi opened her eyes. Even her pupils seemed to glow with a faint golden luster. It made her seem a little different from before.

"Why am I here? Didn't I get struck by lightning?" Fang Ruoxi sat up and looked around in a daze.

"It was Old Zhou who saved you. Furthermore, you were lucky to have received the Buddha statue's gaze. However, you need to thank Old Zhou. If he hadn't helped you block eight bolts of lightning, you would probably have lost your life instead of enjoying the Buddha affinity," Li Xuan said jealously.

"Thank you, Zhou Wen," Fang Ruoxi stood up and stood in front of him.

"It's nothing. It's nothing." Zhou Wen shook his head slightly and turned to look at the Buddha statue on the stone wall. However, the Buddha statue had already closed its eyes and

returned to its normal appearance. The lotus flowers and leaves in the river also withered in an instant. In the end, they all melted into the river, leaving nothing behind.

When the crowd of onlookers saw that the Buddha statue had lost its divine glow and the surface of the river had returned to normal, they knew that they had missed the Buddha Eye-Opening this time and could not help but feel regret. Previously, they had not jumped into the river like Fang Ruoxi's search for a Buddhist affinity. Otherwise, they might have gotten it instead.

A number of people left in disappointment, but there were also quite a number of people who looked over. Apart from asking about who had obtained the Buddhist affinity, they were mostly asking about Zhou Wen.

Zhou Wen had managed to withstand eight golden lightning bolts with a single sword without being injured at all. It was as though he was a God of Combat embodied. It left people somewhat shocked.

Zhou Wen wasn't in the mood to stay any longer. He informed Li Xuan, Huang Ji, and company that he had something on, before returning to his dorm.

After returning to his dorm, Zhou Wen eagerly took out the mysterious phone and checked Truth Listener's information.

A small golden monkey appeared on the screen. Its transformation wasn't too great, and its body was still rather miniature. However, the golden fur on its body had turned into a dark golden color, much more restrained than before. Furthermore, it had four ears when it advanced to the Legendary stage. Now, it had six ears, three on each side. They were distributed in a triangular shape like flower petals.

With Truth Listener looking almost the same, Zhou Wen directly looked at its stats, eager to know what power it had used.

Truth Listener: Epic (Evolvable)

Life Providence: Heaven’s Senses

Life Soul: Evil Nullification

Strength: 41

Speed: 41

Constitution: 41 Primordial Energy: 41 Talent Skill: Truth Listener, Indestructible Golden Body, Evil Warding, Nine Extremes

Companion Form: Earring

Zhou Wen saw that Truth Listener’s attribute growth was within his expectations. There weren’t any changes in skills. However, there was an additional Life Soul-Evil Nullification. It was likely the Evil Nullification Life Soul that nullified the lightning and turned it into Primordial Energy.

However, Zhou Wen was only able to sense a thing or two when it came to a Companion Beast’s Life Soul. He had no way of completely figuring out what Evil Nullification’s exact effects were.

When he summoned Truth Listener, he saw a tiny six-eared, golden-haired monkey appear in his palm. It looked at him with eyes that suffused a golden glow.

“Summon your Life Soul for me to see,” Zhou Wen said to Truth Listener.

Truth Listener received Zhou Wen’s order, but it didn’t summon the Life Soul. It appeared to be scratching its ears and cheeks as though it didn’t know what to do. At the same time, Truth Listener had a thought transmitted into Zhou Wen’s mind.

“I can’t… I can’t…” Zhou Wen sensed that Truth Listener’s will was seemingly repeating this.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 375 - Useless Evil Nullification

Chapter 375 Useless Evil Nullification

Zhou Wen found it odd. Could it be that Truth Listener's Life Soul is a passive Life Soul that can't be summoned just like my Slaughterer?

Truth Listener couldn't speak and Zhou Wen had no way of asking it. All he could do was take it in-game to fight monsters, hoping to see how much it had improved.

When he reached the poison bat cave, he summoned Truth Listener and let it kill the poison bats itself.

Truth Listener was indeed a Mythical pet. Although it was still developing, it possessed a strange strength that was astonishing. Its movement speed was as fast as lightning, and it was as fast as Zhou Wen's Ghost Steps. Its two claws were indomitable, easily tearing apart a poison bat that was similarly at the Epic stage.

Even the poison bat Boss, White Shadow of Poison, was easily caught up by Truth Listener before tearing its body apart. What surprised Zhou Wen was that when the White Shadow of Poison entered its shadow state, it failed to dodge Truth Listener's claws and was directly torn into two.

That petite body jumped between the horde of poisonous bats. Even though it could only kill one poisonous bat every time, the speed at which it killed them was very fast. Each swipe of the claw killed one, almost as though it was not afraid of a group brawl.

Although Truth Listener performed very well, these seemed to be skills it originally had. The reason why it had powerful Speed and Strength was that it was augmented by the Nine Extremes Primordial Energy Skill. This Primordial Energy Skill allowed Truth Listener's Speed and Strength to exceed its limits, allowing it to produce strength that exceeded its own.

The Indestructible Golden Body made Truth Listener hardly need to dodge attacks of the same level. It wouldn't even be easy for dimensional creatures of a higher level to kill it.

Truth Listener could really be used as a tanking pet despite it's extremely small body.

Zhou Wen had seen these powers before, but he didn't see the effects of its Evil Nullification Life Soul.

Seeing that the experiment was useless, Zhou Wen turned Truth Listener into an earring and went to the underground sea.

Before Zhou Wen descended to the sea, he summoned the goldfish to give it a try. The moment it landed in the seawater, it immediately vaporized immense amounts of water, producing white steam. It was like placing red-hot metal pieces into water.

Then, Zhou Wen hurriedly checked the goldfish's stats and saw his Bad Luck instantly soar to +100. It frightened him so much that he hurriedly unsummoned it.

You're clearly a fish, alright? How can you not like water? This is your fault, Zhou Wen lampooned inwardly before he rushed into the sea.

After switching back to the Slaughterer Life Soul, Zhou Wen used his movement technique to circle around the nine black dragons. He was ultimately no match for it and was swallowed by a black dragon.

Apart from the enhancement in my hearing range and the details I can make out, it doesn’t seem to be of any special use. Back in Dragon Gate Grotto, it was able to turn the lightning into Primordial Energy. Why isn’t it capable of doing so now? The black dragon spewed out a few rounds of dragon breath at me, but it failed to absorb the dragon breath and convert it to Primordial Energy when it landed on me. Could it be because the black dragon is too powerful that it isn’t able to convert it in time? Zhou Wen thought to himself as he headed to Ancient Sovereign City. He wanted to see if it could absorb the flames at the Fire God Platform.

However, when the firebirds hit the blood-colored avatar, Truth Listener didn’t react at all and didn’t absorb the flames.

Could it be that it can only absorb the power of lightning? However, dimensional creatures with lightning-elemental attributes seem a little difficult to find, Zhou Wen thought for a moment and immediately thought of Li Xuan.

Li Xuan had the Thundergod Sword. He just needed to try it out with him.

He gave Li Xuan a call and asked if he was free. Since Li Xuan was free, the two of them decided to meet at the training grounds.

“Zhou Wen, look who this is?” When Li Xuan came, he had actually brought someone over.

“Ah Lai, why are you here?” Zhou Wen was somewhat surprised. This was because Ah Lai wasn’t a student at the college. Logically speaking, he shouldn’t have been able to enter the school.

Li Xuan said smugly, “I got him an identification card and got him to be admitted into an ordinary university. Then, I used some connections to get him to come to our Sunset College as an exchange student.”

“Awesome!” Zhou Wen gave him a thumbs up. This wasn’t something an ordinary person could do.

Ah Lai was still very quiet. He didn’t speak much. Back when Zhou Wen and Li Xuan had taken him out of the Holy Land, his memory had been damaged greatly, so his memories were limited.

Later, Ah Lai was taken back by Li Xuan and was arranged that he would stay in Li Xuan’s villa. This was the first time Zhou Wen had seen him since their farewell.

“Ah Lai is really strong. I got him to cultivate in a Primordial Energy Art and gave him some crystals. It didn’t take long for him to advance to the Legendary stage. He’s an absolute genius. Who knows, he might be able to advance to the Epic stage in a short while,” Li Xuan said excitedly.

In a certain sense, Ah Lai’s Primordial Energy Art and Primordial Energy Skills were taught by Li Xuan. It was enough to view Ah Lai as his student, so Li Xuan was very happy with Ah Lai’s achievements.

“If you need money, go to Li Xuan. If you want to beat up monsters or something, you can look for me,” Zhou Wen said to Ah Lai with a smile.

Li Xuan rolled his eyes at Zhou Wen speechlessly. “By the way, why were you looking for me?”

“I want you to help me with a test. Use your Thundergod Sword to smite me with lightning,” Zhou Wen said.

“What’s the point of me smiting you? Even the void lightning in Dragon Gate Grotto wasn’t able to harm you at all. I doubt my lightning will do anything.” Li Xuan curled his lips and said, “Don’t tell me you are deliberately showing off?”

“Just smite me. Why all the chatter?” Zhou Wen said.

“On your guard.” Li Xuan suddenly unsheathed his sword and cleaved using the Thundergod Sword, slashing out a powerful lightning beam at Zhou Wen.

Zhou Wen had no intention of being hit. All he did was hold his Overlord Sword horizontally and block the lightning sword beam.

Bam!

The lightning exploded on his sword, spreading lightning across Zhou Wen that his hair stood on end. Thanks to the electric current, his body convulsed for quite some time before he stopped.

Holy sh*t, it’s useless! Zhou Wen was depressed. Why did it work previously, but not now?

“Old Zhou, what’s wrong with you? Why didn’t you use the method you used at Dragon Gate Grotto to block my lightning?” Li Xuan felt puzzled as he looked at Zhou Wen, unsure of what he was up to.

“Again,” Zhou Wen said through gritted teeth.

“Old Zhou, when did you gain the hobby of being tortured?” Li Xuan said with a smile. However, he didn’t idle as he struck out with another lightning sword beam.

Zhou Wen raised his sword to block the lightning sword beam, but it was the same as the previous strike. His entire body turned numb from the lightning, and his hair resembled afro curls.

“Haha, Zhou Wen, do you really have sadomasochistic tendencies? Do you want me to strike you a few more times?” Li Xuan was in a good mood. He was eager to continue, as though he wanted to cleave out a few more times.

“Smite your a*s.” Zhou Wen was now officially certain that Truth Listener’s Evil Nullification Life Soul didn’t have the ability to convert lightning.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 376 - White Immortal

Chapter 376 White Immortal

“Old Zhou, what were you trying to do?” Li Xuan asked with a smile.

“Nothing. I’m testing my Companion Beast abilities, but it’s just a disappointment,” Zhou Wen answered truthfully.

“What Companion Beast is it? Can it only show its strength after suffering abuse?” Li Xuan was even more curious.

However, Zhou Wen wore a depressed look as he waved his hand. “Forget it. I was wrong. Let’s just leave it be. I’ll head back now.”

“Don’t, I made an appointment with Feng Qiuyan and Gu Dian. I’ll be taking all of you to somewhere nice later,” Li Xuan said.

“Where to?” Zhou Wen asked.

Li Xuan took out a black entry pass and said, “Do you see this? This is the entry pass to White Immortal Temple. It’s very difficult to obtain it. Only five people can enter. You, Ah Lai, Feng Qiuyan, Gu Dian, and I will go together.”

White Immortal Temple? Is there such a dimensional zone on campus? Zhou Wen thought carefully but couldn’t think of any dimensional zone of that name on campus.

“It’s not in our college, but it’s in Luoyang City. It’s a great place. You will see later,” Li Xuan said mysteriously.

“The White Immortal Temple doesn’t consecrate Madame White Snake, right?” Zhou Wen had heard his grandfather tell him the story of Madame White Snake when he was young, so the name “White Immortal” reminded him of the story.

“What is on that head of yours? Madame White Snake is suppressed in a place called Leifeng Pagoda. It’s far away in West Lake,” Li Xuan explained even though Feng Qiuyan and Gu Dian haven’t arrived yet. “The so-called White Immortal is one of the five immortals in folklore—Fox, Yellow, White, Willow, and Gray. Fox refers to Fox Immortal. You should know that foxes can cultivate to become an immortal. It’s a very common story. Yellow Immortal refers to a weasel. It’s an extremely evil thing. Willow Immortal refers to a Snake Immortal. Gray Immortal is a mouse. As for White Immortal, it is actually a Porcupine Immortal. These five immortals are more well known in the north. We have fewer than Five Immortal Temples in our area, but in Luoyang, there’s a White Immortal Temple. It has turned into a dimensional zone and has been under military control. The entry pass is hard to come by. I was lucky to get one by chance and can bring all of you to take a look.”

“By chance?” Zhou Wen stared at Li Xuan with an odd expression.

Li Xuan knew what Zhou Wen was thinking and shook his head. “Don’t worry. This has nothing to do with my brother. Besides, death is virtually impossible in White Immortal Temple. You’ll just suffer a little.”

“What do you mean?” Zhou Wen had zero ideas about White Immortal Temple; he had no idea what it looked like.

“There is a special power inside White Immortal Temple. Once you enter, every step you take will be like a needle prick. The further you go, the more intense the needle-pricking pain is. Normal people won’t go too deep, and at most, they will have many bloody holes in their soles. But if one barges in forcefully, that would be fun. I heard that an Epic expert with great movement techniques flew into the White Immortal Temple’s main hall by relying on his flying ability. However, as soon as he entered the hall, he let out a tragic cry and fell to the ground. His entire body was covered in needle holes and he was severely mangled. His blood flooded the ground and he died immediately.”

“From the sound of it, this White Immortal Temple seems very dangerous?” Zhou Wen didn’t like to go to dangerous places.

“It’s actually not a big problem as long as we don’t force our way in. Just walk as far as you can go. If you can’t withstand the pain, just turn around and come out. As long as you turn around and walk straight, you won’t be injured. If you have a high tolerance threshold, you can walk to the incense burner in front of the hall and light a stick there. You might obtain a Companion Egg from the White Immortal,” Li Xuan said.

“What’s the level of the White Immortal Companion Egg?” Zhou Wen asked.

“The level doesn’t matter. In fact, the White Immortal Companion Egg is only at the Legendary stage. However, it has an extraordinary Life Providence. If you have a White Immortal Companion Beast, it might one day save your life. You can tell how good it is just by how much the military locks down the place.” Having said that, Li Xuan deliberately stopped. Clearly, he was waiting for Zhou Wen to ask him questions.

Zhou Wen had no choice but to entertain him. “What is the White Immortal’s Life Providence?”

“The White Immortal’s Life Providence is impressive. It’s known as Immunity to All Illnesses. With a White Immortal Companion Beast, you can basically guarantee that you won’t fall sick. You should know how terrifying illnesses are. Although cultivators have strong bodies and typically don’t fall sick, their bodies are unable to withstand the harsh environments in dimensional zones. If they fall ill, the illness can be even more fatal than the average person. When that happens, White Immortal’s value will show itself.

Li Xuan continued, “Besides, the White Immortal Companion Beast has the ability to seek out herbs. Although it doesn’t know how to fight, it can distinguish between the strange plants in a dimensional zone. It knows which ones are poisonous and which ones are medicinal herbs. If there’s nothing to eat, one can also rely on White Immortal’s help to eat some herbs for survival. It’s better than starving to death, and there’s no need to worry about accidentally consuming poisonous plants.”

“Now that you put it this way, this White Immortal sure is a good pet.” Zhou Wen felt that Li Xuan was right. Immunity to All Illnesses was indeed a good Life Providence, especially when this Life Providence could aid its master.

Even a cultivator couldn’t guarantee that they wouldn’t fall sick. In all kinds of harsh environments, if they fell sick, it would be very troublesome. With White Immortal, there was no need to worry about it.

After a while, Feng Qiuyan and Gu Dian came one after another. The five of them successfully left the school together as Li Xuan had already prepared a permit for them

to leave. Ah Lai drove the four of them to the White Immortal Temple.

The White Immortal Temple was much smaller than Zhou Wen had imagined. It was like a small courtyard house of an ordinary family. However, its design was slightly different. There was an old wooden plaque hanging on the dilapidated wooden door. The words “White Immortal Temple” were indeed written on it, but the paint on it was almost gone.

After Li Xuan handed over the pass, the five of them walked to the door of White Immortal Temple. The door was already open, and they could see the tiny courtyard inside with a single glance. There were all kinds of small houses, but they looked like they were only used to store miscellaneous things, and not meant to consecrate other immortals.

A slightly bigger building that directly faced the door was the hall that worshiped White Immortal.

In front of the big building was a stone incense burner. The incense inside was almost completely filled.

Li Xuan gave each of them three sticks of incense before taking three sticks of incense himself. After taking off his shoes at the door, he walked in.

“Why are you taking off your shoes?” Feng Qiuyan asked in puzzlement.

Li Xuan said, “Later, my feet will be pricked with bloody holes. I’m not afraid of the blood, but dirtying my shoes and socks won’t be nice.”

Zhou Wen and company found this reasonable, and they mimicked Li Xuan by taking off their shoes and socks before walking barefooted into the yard.

Li Xuan took point. The moment he stepped in, his expression changed immediately, but he gritted his teeth and walked in. However, when he raised his leg, he could clearly see a bloody mark beneath his feet which formed footprints.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 377 - Bloody Footprints

Chapter 377 Bloody Footprints

Zhou Wen hesitated when he saw Li Xuan losing so much blood. One step took enough blood for plenty of games.

However, this yard was relatively small and it wouldn’t take too many steps to cover the entire distance. At most, it was about ten steps. For the sake of the White Immortal Companion Egg, Zhou Wen decided to give it a try.

Gu Dian, Feng Qiuyan, and Ah Lai followed Li Xuan inside. The expressions on everyone’s faces changed the moment they walked in. It was easy to imagine how it felt to be stabbed in the soles by needles. Feng Qiuyan and company were considered people who had a high tolerance level, but they couldn’t help but grimace.

Gu Dian had a small disadvantage. His feet were big and the blood footprints he left behind were much larger.

Zhou Wen was the last to step in. He was already mentally prepared to suffer the pain of the needles pricks, but when he stepped down on the ground, he didn’t feel any pain at all. Instead, a warm current rose from the soles of his feet and directly entered his body. It was actually Primordial Energy that surged into his body.

Truth Listener! Zhou Wen felt the power coming from the earring. It was the feeling he had when resisting the lightning in Dragon Gate Grotto. He felt pleasantly surprised.

He attempted a few more steps and indeed, he didn’t have his sole pierced like Li Xuan and company. Nor did he feel any pain. Instead, plenty of Primordial Energy seeped into his body from the soles of his feet.

Truth Listener’s Evil Nullification Life Soul is really strange. Under what kind of situations can it be used? It was lightning previously, but now it’s the power of the White Immortal Temple. The two don’t seem to match at all. What similarities do they have? Zhou Wen thought to himself.

The yard was tiny, so Li Xuan and company only took about ten steps before arriving in front of the incense burner.

However, those ten steps weren’t a breeze. Every step they took meant one bloody footprint. The further they walked in, the more bloody footprints. The pain of 10,000 needles piercing through the bottom of their feet was something that could be endured once or twice. But to take about ten steps wasn’t something ordinary people could endure.

Li Xuan was the first to walk to the incense burner. Then, he respectfully lit the three sticks of incense. After bowing three times, he inserted the incense sticks into the incense burner.

After doing all of this, Li Xuan looked in anticipation.

Zhou Wen looked in from behind and saw that there wasn’t a statue inside. On the single offering table was a wooden plaque with the words “Old Madam White” written on it.

Crack!

The three incense sticks that Li Xuan inserted in the incense burner suddenly tilted, snapping from the middle.

“This trip was for nothing. You guys give it a try.” Li Xuan gloomily retreated to the side.

Being able to walk in to offer incense was one thing, but to be able to obtain the White Immortal Companion Egg was another matter. The immediate snapping of the three incense sticks indicated that the Old Madam White hadn’t accepted Li Xuan’s incense offerings, so she naturally wouldn’t give a White Immortal Companion Egg to him.

Ah Lai walked forward and mimicked Li Xuan by bowing three times before inserting the incense sticks.

All five of them were focused on the three incense sticks, wondering if they would snap like Li Xuan’s incense.

The three incense sticks didn’t break, but they burned very quickly. What should have taken almost an hour to finish burning took only minutes.

The smoke from the three incense sticks didn’t dissipate. Instead, it gathered above them. After the three incense sticks were completely burned, the smoke turned into a white egg and landed in the incense burner.

“Ah Lai, your luck is in. Quick, take the Companion Egg,” Li Xuan said.

Ah Lai picked up the Companion Egg from the ash. It was the size of a fist, crystalline-white like porcelain.

Following that, Feng Qiuyan went to offer incense as well, but his results were the same as Li Xuan’s. The incense stick snapped just as it was inserted. Clearly, he wasn’t able to obtain Old Madam White’s favor.

Gu Dian walked over to light the incense, but this fellow didn't bow. Instead, he lit the incense sticks and inserted them into the incense burner. This sight left Li Xuan and company shaking their heads, believing that it would be odd if such an attitude gave him a Companion Egg.

However, what astonished them was that the three crooked incense sticks that Gu Dian had placed in the incense burner, didn't snap. They burned as quickly as before and before long, they were done burning. The smoke also turned into a Companion Egg.

"I wouldn't have bowed if I had known." Li Xuan felt even more depressed when he saw that.

"Old Zhou, it's your turn," Li Xuan said as he looked at Zhou Wen, who was in the rear. However, he immediately felt that something was amiss.

Behind the three of them were two rows of bloody footprints. However, where Zhou Wen was standing, there was nothing. Li Xuan took a careful look and realized that from the entrance to the incense burner, there were only six rows of footprints. Indeed, there were no signs of Zhou Wen's.

Zhou Wen was just about to offer some incense when he heard Li Xuan say, "Old Zhou, what's wrong with you?"

"Coach hasn't offered the incense yet. What do you mean what's wrong?" Feng Qiuyan asked.

Li Xuan pointed at the bloody footprints on the ground and said, "I'm not talking about the incense. I'm referring to the bloody footprints. All of us left bloody footprints. Why doesn't Zhou Wen have any?"

Feng Qiuyan and company hadn’t noticed Zhou Wen who was in the rear. Now that Li Xuan had said so, they looked back, and indeed, they didn’t see Zhou Wen’s bloody footprints.

Zhou Wen said, “I happen to have a Companion Beast that can restrain the power here, so I didn’t suffer the needle-pricking.”

“Seriously? Where did you get your Companion Beast from? I’ll go get one too.” Li Xuan widened his eyes. He had never heard of any Companion Beast being able to ward off the needle-pricking in White Immortal Temple.

“Small Buddha Temple, you can try it if you want,” Zhou Wen said.

Li Xuan’s eyes widened. “You actually went to Small Buddha Temple. I heard that many people died there. They died for no reason after entering. You didn’t die and even got a Companion Egg from there?”

“I read a strategy on the Internet before. The strategy guide said that as long as you cultivate in the Heart Meditation Primordial Energy Skill, you can safely enter Small Buddha Temple. However, in the main hall, you have to first learn a Primordial Energy Art on a stone monument in the monastery. Otherwise, entering means death. I tried it, and the strategy was right.” Zhou Wen made it clear. If Li Xuan and company had a chance to enter, it would be best if they could obtain the Companion Egg inside. After all, Zhou Wen wasn’t able to obtain it.

Be it in-game or in reality, he had already been there. After receiving Truth Listener, the three-faced Buddha had no reaction to him at all.

“You dare believe in a strategy on the Internet? Count yourself lucky that you aren’t dead. I think I’ll forget it.” Li Xuan shook his head. If he were to train in other Primordial Energy Arts again, it was a question whether he could master it, but if it had a conflict with the Invincible Connate Divine Art, it wouldn’t be worth the loss.

“Coach, you cultivate multiple Primordial Energy Arts on the side?” Feng Qiuyan asked in surprise.

“Just for fun. I still mainly cultivate my Primordial Energy Art,” Zhou Wen said.

Feng Qiuyan praised, “It’s said that a Primordial Energy Art in a dimensional zone needs special physiques to master them. Coach, you were able to gain entry on a minor cultivation even though you didn’t cultivate it deeply. Your talent is too astonishing.”

“Let’s not talk about anything else. In terms of talent, no one is better than Old Zhou. He’s still this strong despite gaming all day, if he focused on cultivation, I don’t think anyone could even come close,” Li Xuan said.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 378 - Explosion

Chapter 378 Explosion

“Indeed. Coach is the rarest talent I’ve ever seen.” Feng Qiuyan nodded in agreement as he looked at Zhou Wen with admiration.

Although Zhou Wen was a little thick-skinned, he couldn’t stand it any longer. They just didn’t know how hard he worked all day, playing games with everything he had. He bled and sweat in the true sense of the word; his efforts were no less than any other.

It was a pity that others only thought of him as gaming. It wasn’t something he could explain either.

All he could do was pretend not to have heard them. When he turned around and walked to the incense burner, he lit the three incense sticks. Holding them in his hand, he bent down and prepared to bow like Li Xuan.

However, just as Zhou Wen bent down slightly, there was a loud thud. The wooden plaque on the offering table shook a little and fell to the ground.

Zhou Wen was taken aback as Li Xuan, Feng Qiuyan and company wore looks of astonishment, unsure what was going on.

They didn’t sense any wind. Besides, this was a dimensional zone. Even if there was wind, it was impossible to blow off a wooden tablet. Why would the wooden tablet fall?

Zhou Wen already roughly knew what was going on and was certain that it had something to do with his Life Providence. Back in the Earth Temple, the statue of an orthodox deity like Earth Lord hadn’t even dared receive his bow by automatically moving to the side. White Immortal, who wasn’t a true deity, naturally couldn’t have her tablet take his bow.

Earth Lord gave me a treasure map after all. You should give me something, right? Zhou Wen didn’t bow and inserted the three incense sticks into the incense burner.

And once this happened, there was a boom as the fallen wooden tablet exploded into wooden splinters.

“What… What’s happening…” Li Xuan and company looked at each other, unsure what was going on.

“Old Zhou, you are freaking awesome. You blew up Old Madam White’s tablet!” Li Xuan patted Zhou Wen on the shoulder.

Zhou Wen was too deep for tears. All he wanted was a Companion Egg. But this f**king tablet even exploded. From the looks of it, he had zero chance of getting the Companion Egg. Zhou Wen saw that the three incense sticks were slowly burning. They didn’t snap, but they didn’t burn at an accelerated speed.

“Let’s not talk so much. Let’s quickly leave. Otherwise, it will be very troublesome when the guards outside realize that the tablet is gone. We might get into trouble,” Feng Qiuyan said.

“Yes, let’s go.” Li Xuan firmly believed so.

Zhou Wen looked at the pile of wood splinters, feeling depressed. However, he had no choice. All he could do was follow Li Xuan and company out of the White Immortal Temple.

Zhou Wen wasn’t injured, so he put his shoes on straight away.

Li Xuan and Gu Dian’s recovery abilities were excellent. By the time they walked out, the injuries on their feet had healed. It was as though they had never been injured.

Feng Qiuyan and Ah Lai didn’t have such powerful recovery abilities, so they could only use their socks to wipe off the blood on their soles.

The five of them hurried out of the White Immortal Temple. The soldiers guarding the temple did not see what had happened inside, nor did they stop them.

If I can’t offer incense, wouldn’t I be missing the benefits I can get from many dimensional zones? Zhou Wen felt somewhat depressed when he didn’t see the tiny palm symbol and couldn’t download the temple.

His Life Soul was good, but it didn’t distinguish. It even exploded tablets, so how was he to obtain any benefits?

After returning to his dorm, Zhou Wen couldn’t help but recall what had happened during the day. He couldn’t help but think. During the Buddha Eye-Opening, Fang Ruoxi jumped into the river and triggered a lightning that resembled heavenly punishment. It was reduced to Primordial Energy by Truth Listener’s power. After walking into the White Immortal Temple today, the needle-pricking power was resolved by Truth Listener’s powers. It appears they aren’t connected, but on second thought, they seem to

be of the same origin. It’s as though these two powers are punishment-types. Could it be that the effects of the Evil Nullification Life Soul resist punishment-type powers?

It doesn’t seem right. Zhou Wen felt that something was amiss again, but an idea suddenly flashed in his mind as he thought of the tunnels protected by Aoyin.

There were two tunnels that appeared to be similar in situation to White Immortal Temple. Zhou Wen decided to try out to see if Truth Listener’s Evil Nullification Life Soul was useful there.

He directly activated the Zhuolu instance dungeon, controlled the blood-colored avatar, and stormed all the way to the ruins’ tunnels before arriving in front of the Aoyin stone statue.

This time, Zhou Wen didn’t take any poison bats as sacrifice. He summoned Truth Listener to transform into an earring before Zhou Wen chose the right tunnel.

Without a sacrifice, strange text would appear in the tunnel. Those words would turn into living beings that attacked anyone inside the tunnel. Even the armor formed by the Mutated Stone Chi could not withstand their sharp teeth.

If he attacked those text monsters, he would be injured instead.

This time, Zhou Wen didn’t see the text when he walked in. Instead, a strange strength surging around him, turned into Primordial Energy that surged into his body. It filled his Primordial Energy with the excess gushing out from all his pores.

It really works. Zhou Wen was delighted. Truth Listener's Life Soul seemed to be more useful than he had imagined. It even managed to convert the strange powers of the Aoyin tunnel into Primordial Energy.

What kind of power does Evil Nullification Life Soul possess? Zhou Wen felt that the power of the Evil Nullification Life Soul seemed to have something to do with some strange powers, but he was temporarily unable to precisely define it.

Without pushing open the door to enter the temple, Zhou Wen ran to the left passageway. Despite no sacrificial items, the left passageway never mutated. At the same time, large amounts of Primordial Energy were converted into Zhou Wen's body through the Truth Listener earring.

This delighted Zhou Wen. Although he could use sacrifices to pass through the passageway, the offerings had a time limit. In the future, if he really needed to enter the temple to look for the former principal, it would have been a huge problem when he came out if he had stayed inside for too long.

Now that he had Truth Listener's Evil Nullification Life Soul, he didn't need to worry about these problems. He could freely enter and exit the Aoyin tunnels and replenish his Primordial Energy. This ensured his safety, making Zhou Wen even more confident of entering the temple to seek out the former principal.

Since the power of the Aoyin tunnel is restrained by Truth Listener, will the Aoyin stone statue be restrained as well? Zhou Wen's mind became active.

In the past, he didn't have the ability to target the Aoyin stone statue, but things were different now.

With this in mind, Zhou Wen came in front of the Aoyin stone statue again and sized it up.

The Aoyin stone statue was like a traveler in a cloak. It had no eyes, or ears, and a slightly open mouth as if it could devour anyone at any moment.

In the past, Zhou Wen had tried attacking the Aoyin stone statue but ended up being swallowed by it. No attack worked.

Gritting his teeth, Zhou Wen controlled the blood-colored avatar to summon his Overlord Sword. After gesturing at the Aoyin stone statue a few times, he slashed out with the Demonic Astral Wheel.

The blood-colored wheel of light slashed at the head of the sculpture.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 379 - Slaying Aoyin

Chapter 379 Slaying Aoyin

The Aoyin stone statue's mouth suddenly split open like a devil's mouth, reaching almost to its earlobes. It was pitch-black inside and, like a black hole, it swallowed the Demonic Astral Wheel.

The Demonic Astral Wheel with the Ever-Victorious trait seemed to be sucked into a bottomless abyss. Not a single ripple stirred.

Zhou Wen constantly produced sword beams one after another with Overlord Sword, using all his strength with every strike. With the augmentation of Slaughterer, he slashed out Demonic Astral Wheel at the stone statue like it cost nothing.

The Aoyin stone statue remained standing there without any signs of its body changing or moving. However, it strangely entered some form of translation motion. It kept opening its mouth and swallowing the sword beams.

In the next second, the Aoyin stone statue arrived in front of the blood-colored avatar. The stone statue looked as though it had never moved. However, its large mouth was on the brink of devouring the blood-colored avatar.

Zhou Wen was delighted by this. This was because he had previously seen the stone statue's mouth occupy the entire phone screen and devour the blood-colored avatar, but he had no means of dodging or counterattacking.

However, this time, he actually saw the Aoyin stone statue move, and there was no sign of the sculpture occupying the entire screen of the phone. In other words, he could now fight the Aoyin stone statue. Just this point alone deserved his joy.

Truth Listener's earring emitted heat the entire time, transforming a mysterious force into Primordial Energy that injected into Zhou Wen's body.

Zhou Wen knew that this was because Truth Listener had blocked a certain power from the Aoyin stone statue. Otherwise, the blood-colored avatar would have been swallowed by the stone statue like before.

He instantly activated Ghost Steps, dodging the mouth of the Aoyin stone statue. At the same time, his Overlord Sword brought with it an intense sword flash that cleaved at the waist of the Aoyin stone statue.

However, the Aoyin stone statue's speed was even faster than Zhou Wen when he used Ghost Steps. The stone statue moved with every move the Overlord Sword made. The sword beams produced were always three inches from the stone statue, unable to catch up to it at all.

Aoyin moved to Zhou Wen's side and bit down again, attempting to swallow him whole.

Zhou Wen constantly made use of Ghost Steps to move while slashing out sword beams. However, the Aoyin stone statue kept moving. Zhou Wen just couldn't hit it; instead, the blood-colored avatar nearly got bitten by the Aoyin stone sculpture several times.

However, without the mysterious force plaguing him, Zhou Wen had the ability to fight. He didn't find the Aoyin stone

statue that terrifying.

Having fast speeds and powerful strength, as well as the ability to devour anything meant that Zhou Wen just needed time to figure out a solution to the problem. He was afraid of powers that he could succumb to without seeing or figuring out what they were.

Although he was at a disadvantage, Zhou Wen gradually figured out the combat style of the Aoyin stone statue.

It once again bit at Zhou Wen, but this time, Zhou Wen didn’t dodge with Ghost Steps. A strange ring suddenly appeared on his finger. The eyes of the ghostly face on the ring flashed as Zhou Wen’s body vanished. When he appeared again, he was by the side of the Aoyin stone statue.

“Die!” Overlord Sword slashed at the neck of the Aoyin stone sculpture that had lowered its head for the bite.

Crack!

The Overlord Sword with Ever-Victorious sliced through the stone statue with an intense Fangwheel Sword Flash, causing the stone powder and sparks to fly. The stone statue’s head was chopped off.

Once he had beheaded the stone statue, its body shattered. At the same time, a notification popped up on the phone: ‘Killed Epic creature, Aoyin Stone Statue. Discovered Dimensional Crystal.’

The Aoyin Stone Statue is only at the Epic stage? That’s right. After all, it’s only a stone statue. It isn’t Aoyin itself. Zhou Wen controlled the blood-colored avatar to walk over and pick up a dimensional crystal from the rubble.

It was a gray crystal with an image of Aoyin inside. It was actually a Primordial Energy Skill Crystal.

Zhou Wen didn’t know what skills Aoyin had, and he couldn’t be bothered to think further. He directly allowed the blood-colored avatar to absorb the Primordial Energy Skill Crystal.

Soon, a strange energy emitted from the phone and flowed into Zhou Wen’s body like a bolt of lightning. It surged through his meridians and formed a new Primordial Energy circulation in his body. At the same time, some vague information entered his brain.

A notification popped up on his phone: ‘Absorbed Aoyin Stone Statue Crystal. Attained Primordial Energy Skill: Tongue Blade (Rank 9).’

Zhou Wen’s expression turned odd. He had heard of Primordial Energy Skills like hand blades or arm blades, but this was the first time he had heard of tongue blades.

Using one’s tongue as a weapon… That’s really… Zhou Wen was somewhat speechless. However, he was overjoyed when he carefully studied what it did.

Tongue Blades were essentially the same as Primordial Energy Skills such as hand blades and arm blades. They used part of his body as a weapon, but the tongue was just too weak. Without bones in them, using tongues as weapons was even harder.

Aoyin Tongue Blade wasn’t really about using a tongue to lick the enemy. Instead, one released Primordial Energy from their tongue to attack the enemy. It was similar to using a finger to shoot out a sword beam. However, using a tongue to emit a sword beam was clearly more unexpected.

I never expected the Aoyin Stone Statue to have this ability. Why didn't I see it being used just now? Zhou Wen imagined fighting an enemy in the future in an intense battle when he would open his mouth and spit at the other party. However, it wasn't saliva, but a sword beam. What would the other party's expression be?

Tongue Blade is good. This skill is great. Zhou Wen couldn't help but be happy when he thought of it.

After killing the Aoyin Stone Statue gatekeeper, and obtaining a rather practical Primordial Energy Skill. Zhou Wen wished to grind it a few more times, but even if he was willing to bleed, he was unable to kill the Aoyin Stone Statue without Lost Country's ability to teleport.

Even if the blood-colored avatar were to die and be reborn, the power of the Life Soul wouldn't refresh. It was still in sync with Zhou Wen's true body.

It's a pity that the three Life Souls have to match the corresponding Primordial Energy Art and Life Providence. I'm unable to use them together. If only I could use them together, my combat strength would rise to a whole new level, Zhou Wen thought with no regrets.

After leaving the Zhuolu battlefield, Zhou Wen didn't grind the Bat Cave again. The poisonous bats mainly produced Speed Crystals. Zhou Wen's current Speed Crystal was now at 40 points while the other three stats were slightly above 30. Therefore, he planned on changing his grinding spot.

He didn't have any hopes of reaching 41. Before heading to Zhuolu, he had to at least raise his four basic stats to 40.

Apart from the Zhuolu battlefield, Dragon Gate Grotto and Pool City were the only dungeons that had relatively more

Epic creatures. Dragon Gate Grotto’s Epic creatures were quite scattered, so it wasn’t convenient grinding the map. Therefore, Zhou Wen planned on heading to the underground Pool City.

Zhou Wen had been grinding the Poison Wyrm Pool for a very long time, but he was still lacking one of the Poison Dragon Fingers to gather all five. He didn’t know what effects there would be if he gathered them all. Therefore, he could use this opportunity to grind them again.

Other than the Poison Wyrm Pool, there were also many Epic creatures like the Sword Fang Fish and Electric Eel in Pool City. There was also the most common Jade Toad.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 380 - A Way to Advance the Life Soul

380 A Way to Advance the Life Soul

Although there were quite a number of Epic creatures like Jade Toad, and it could drop many good items, there were not many tutors in the college who were willing to kill one.

The Jade Toad was poisonous. The blood and bodily fluids that spewed out were deadly poisonous if one managed to lacerate it. Just touching a little bit of it was enough to kill someone.

Before its death, the Jade Toad would even self-destruct. Within a radius of tens of meters, the poison would spray everywhere. Touching any bit of it could result in death.

If there wasn’t a special need, who would risk their lives to kill such a dimensional creature? Humans were still humans after all. Even if they had the ability to kill Jade Toads, who could guarantee that they wouldn’t be distracted for a moment? If they were stained with the poison, their outcome would be dire.

Naturally, Zhou Wen didn’t have any qualms about that. His Poison stat was close to 20, so he didn’t take to heart the typical poison. Furthermore, he wasn’t afraid of death in-game.

Jade Toads and Poison Bats were poisonous creatures, but the crystals they dropped were mainly Strength-type. Occasionally, some high-level Primordial Energy Crystals would drop, making them rather good options.

Zhou Wen came to the underground Pool City and arrived at a region with shallow water. Indeed, there was a huge green toad sprawled on the roof.

Although this fellow could stay in water, it didn’t usually do so.

Without a word, Zhou Wen controlled the blood-colored avatar to pull out the Overlord Sword and slashed out with a sword beam from afar.

The sword beam was as fast as lightning. The Jade Toad’s speed was too slow and it was unable to dodge in time. All it could do was spit out venom to block the sword beam, but the sword beam sliced through the venom, slicing through its body.

Bam!

The Jade Toad exploded, and its poisonous green blood splattered everywhere, dyeing the nearby waters a dark green color.

Zhou Wen was overjoyed when he saw a dimensional crystal drop—Strength +36. He hurriedly sent the blood-colored avatar flying over to pick it up.

There was also poisoned blood on the dimensional crystal. When the blood-colored avatar picked it up, it had dyed its hands with a little green poison. However, the poison didn’t spread. After Zhou Wen washed away the poison on the dimensional crystal, the poison on the blood-colored avatar’s finger also slowly subsided.

The poison of this Jade Toad is even more powerful than the poison from the Poison Bat. It should also drop Poison Crystals, right? Zhou Wen was filled with anticipation when

he saw this. Perhaps, he could obtain higher-valued Poison Crystals here.

Zhou Wen spent most of his time grinding Jade Toads. Before he dripped his blood to respawn the underground Pool City, he would kill the baby tiger and grind Tiger Cage Pass.

The Tiger Cage Demonized General was awesome. Furthermore, Zhou Wen also wanted to use the warlock at Tiger Cage Pass to hone his combat skills. The warlock was indeed powerful, making it difficult to kill him. However, using him to train his combat skills was better than using anyone else.

Typical dimensional creatures didn't have high intelligence, making them mostly rely on their natural talents when it came to combat technique. It was very rare to have enemies like the Tiger Cage Pass warlock.

He had no clue about the Small Perfection of Wisdom Sutra or the Dao Sutra Life Soul, nor did he find a way to advance the Slaughterer Life Soul. Instead, he attempted raising the Ancient Sovereign Sutra Life Soul.

The way to level up the Ancient Sovereign Life Soul was through combat. As long as he kept fighting, the Ancient Sovereign Life Soul would gradually grow. However, ordinary battles wouldn't have much effect on it; it had to be a high-intensity battle before it could evolve.

Zhou Wen realized that the Ancient Sovereign Life Soul underwent some strange changes while in battle with the Tiger Cage Pass warlock. Although he hadn't advanced it to an Evolved Body, it was indeed growing.

In battles between dimensional creatures, most of them rely on their talent and instincts. There aren't many truly skilled

dimensional creatures. Speaking of techniques, humans are better at it… Zhou Wen thought for a moment. If he wanted the Ancient Sovereign Life Soul to evolve, he would have to fight other humans.

In school, the only opponent Zhou Wen could think of was Feng Qiuyan. Although there were other schoolmates who had talent on a par with Feng Qiuyan, they hadn’t advanced to the Epic stage yet and were unable to reach the level the Ancient Sovereign Life Soul required in battle.

Although Feng Qiuyan is powerful, his saber techniques are too singular. His battle style is just speed. This doesn’t seem to match the Ancient Sovereign Sutra’s intent. After some thought, Zhou Wen realized that he probably wouldn’t be able to spar with his schoolmates. However, other than students, there were many tutors in school who were genuine Epic experts.

However, tutors usually wouldn’t spar with students. Even his own class’s tutor might not spar with him, let alone those tutors who were only in charge of teaching.

After Zhou Wen studied all the tutors in the college, he felt that one tutor would probably be willing to be his opponent.

This tutor was Wei Feng, a tutor who was responsible for imparting boxing techniques in the college. He was adept at all kinds of powerful boxing techniques. Skills such as Golden Palm and Fiend Suppression Fist were a piece of cake for Wei Feng. It was said that the fist-type Primordial Energy Skill he was most skilled at was called “Explosive Fist.” The strength of a single punch was like a bomb that could blast a house into ruins. It was truly the best choice for house demolitions.

Zhou Wen heard that Wei Feng was an old military officer who could have enjoyed life after retirement. However, he wanted to relieve his excess zeal, so he accepted the college's offer to teach at Sunset College.

Although Wei Feng was a tutor now, his temper didn't change much when compared to his time in the military. He wore his heart on his sleeve and had a fiery temper. He would take action as a demonstration if there was any disagreement.

Of course, it was only limited to a demonstration. He wouldn't really attack students, nor would he let students be injured.

Zhou Wen had also heard that Wei Feng was used to fighting in the military. After coming to school, with no one to fight him, he wasn't used to it and often got other tutors to spar with him. Many tutors were already scared of him.

Some of them really weren't his match, while others were irritated by his pestering. As long as he couldn't beat them, Wei Feng would continue to pester them until he defeated them. If he was in a good mood, he would want several more rounds of battles.

Most people wouldn't be able to tolerate this. Therefore, most of the tutors in the college changed expressions and hid far away when they saw him.

Others couldn't stand him, but Zhou Wen happened to be looking for such a trait. Therefore, after asking around about Wei Feng, he found some time to attend his class.

Zhou Wen was already a famous person in school. Although he kept a low profile as he entered the lecture hall and

chose an inconspicuous spot to sit down, he was still recognized by other students.

“Why is Zhou Wen attending Tutor Wei’s class?” Many students whispered to each other when they saw him.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 381 - Untitled

Chapter 381 Untitled

Zhou Wen had recently become more accustomed to being gossiped about or discussed in private, especially after Wang Mingyuan’s incident. This situation was already very common. As long as he was recognized while he was on campus, people would point fingers at him.

Of course, not all of them were malicious. Most of them were just discussing him.

After Wei Feng arrived, the lively lecture hall became quiet. It seemed that the students were still rather afraid of Wei Feng.

Zhou Wen secretly sized him up. Although he wasn’t too tall, he was very imposing. He had quite a burly build and he carried a sense of valor, one that Zhou Wen had only seen from soldiers before. Although the typical tutor was strong, they didn’t have such traits.

“Today, let’s talk about how to use the Yin force in a fist technique.” Wei Feng really liked to demonstrate in person while lecturing.

Zhou Wen saw Wei Feng take out a transparent scarf and hang it on a rope. Then, he punched at the silk cloth and produced a hole.

“Who wants to give it a try?” Wei Feng glanced at the students.

Zhou Wen originally imagined the typical student wouldn’t be willing to step forward when a tutor asked for volunteers. He had attended classes from other tutors in the past, and only a few students who were more eager to learn were willing to cooperate.

However, the students who were listening in class all eagerly raised their hands to sign up. Every one of them raised their hands high as though afraid that Wei Feng wouldn’t choose them.

What’s going on? Is Wei Feng that popular? Zhou Wen was alarmed.

“That student who didn’t raise his hand, come up.” Wei Feng swept his gaze and finally looked over at Zhou Wen.

Zhou Wen looked left and right and realized that he was the only one in the entire lecture hall who hadn’t raised his hand. As for the other students, they looked at him with a faint smile.

Zhou Wen immediately understood why the other students eagerly raised their hands. It was obvious that they already knew Wei Feng’s character. They knew that the more they didn’t wish to volunteer, the easier it would be for Wei Feng to select them. This was why they were all so enthusiastic.

“Stop looking around. You are the one I’m talking about,” Wei Feng said to Zhou Wen.

Zhou Wen had no choice but to stand up and walk up the podium.

He had also attended a few lectures by other tutors. It was truly his first time seeing a temper like Wei Feng’s.

To have so many students attend his class despite his way of selecting volunteers, this also meant that Wei Feng's lectures weren't too bad. Otherwise, no student would have attended his class. After all, Wei Feng was not the only tutor in the college who taught boxing.

"I haven't seen you before. Is it your first time attending my class? What's your name?" Wei Feng asked Zhou Wen as he tied a new scarf on the rope.

"Zhou Wen," Zhou Wen answered.

Wei Feng didn't seem acquainted with Zhou Wen's name. He only nodded slightly and said to Zhou Wen, "Alright, you can throw out the punch. With the strength of a fist, I can consider giving you ten credits if you can penetrate the silk cloth."

Most credits were distributed by a student's tutor. A pure lecturer like Wei Feng didn't have many credits to give, but it wasn't that he didn't have any. He could occasionally use them to reward students.

"Thank you then, Tutor." Zhou Wen's mood immediately lightened up when he heard that there were credits to be earned.

"It's good to be confident," said Wei Feng with a smile. Clearly, he had no idea about Zhou Wen; otherwise, he wouldn't have suggested giving him credits.

Apart from cultivation, Wei Feng usually read about the League news and the battle reports at the front lines. He wasn't interested in the gossip about students and teachers, so he didn't know anything about Zhou Wen. He did know about Wang Mingyuan's matter, but he didn't delve deep into it.

In Wei Feng’s opinion, even for top Legendary students who hadn’t practiced Yin force, it was impossible for them to penetrate a scarf with their bare hands.

The silk scarf was tough and light, and the force from a strike on it didn’t seem to hold. Without a good Yin force cultivation, no matter how strong one was, they wouldn’t be able to penetrate it. It would only cause the silk scarf to flutter.

Zhou Wen walked to the scarf and raised his right hand, flexing his wrist and doing some wrist movements.

In the past, when he practiced Inch Punch, he had also done similar training. However, he had used paper at that time which was easier to penetrate. It was more difficult when faced with a thin, light, and tough scarf like this.

Of course, the present Zhou Wen wasn’t the same as before. After moving his wrists, he raised his fist to smash at the scarf tied to a rope from above.

“Student, your posture isn’t right. Please turn your body slightly to the side and don’t deliver a straight punch when you are throwing it out. You have to move your sides…” Wei Feng corrected Zhou Wen’s actions.

Seeing how serious Wei Feng was, Zhou Wen naturally couldn’t reject him. Working with him, he posed a standard stance.

This stance did help with the delivery of strength, but Zhou Wen had already exceeded that realm. Even if he were to lie on the ground, he could still deliver a Yin force that was powerful enough.

“Alright, you can try throwing a punch now. Remember to use the strength of your wrist and arm. Relax your arms. Don’t cramp up your muscles when you are throwing punches…” Wei Feng instructed from the side.

Zhou Wen followed his instructions and threw a punch out. The punch hit the light, thin silk scarf that didn’t seem capable of holding out against any force. However, the scarf tore and a hole appeared.

Wei Feng was stunned. He wondered inwardly, Could it be that I taught too well today that this kid can learn it in one try? That’s not right. Even if I taught him well and he completely comprehends it, he shouldn’t be able to penetrate the silk scarf without a year’s worth of practice.

“Student, have you practiced Yin force in the past?” Wei Feng asked as he sized up Zhou Wen.

“I practiced Inch force when I was in high school,” Zhou Wen answered truthfully.

“No wonder.” Wei Feng was enlightened. He smiled and said, “Not bad. Give me your student number. I won’t give you a single point less than the ten academic credits I promised you.”

“Tutor, can I request for these ten credits to be changed for something else?” Zhou Wen took the opportunity to ask.

Wei Feng looked at Zhou Wen with interest and said, “Tell me, what request do you have?”

“I would like you to be my sparring partner and engage in actual combat when you are free. Is that okay?” Zhou Wen asked.

“Sure, of course. I love students like you who are self-motivated the most. When I finish my lesson, you can train for as long as you want.” Wei Feng narrowed his eyes, and the wrinkles on his face began to show.

He was really very happy that a student wanted to spar with him in real combat. This was Wei Feng’s favorite pastime.

I hope you can hold on for a little longer. Don’t try to run too soon, Wei Feng thought to himself. He wasn’t afraid of Zhou Wen’s enthusiasm for learning would rise but he was afraid that Zhou Wen would cower back quickly.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 382 - Fist of Steel

Chapter 382 Fist of Steel

After Wei Feng finished his lesson, he led Zhou Wen to the training grounds. However, he took him to one meant especially for tutors, not students.

Students couldn’t usually come here. Only tutors could train here.

Wei Feng used a single training room, changed into combat attire before asking Zhou Wen, “How do you want to train?”

“Sparring with just boxing,” Zhou Wen said.

“It’s possible to spar, but you’re only at the Legendary stage. All I can do is suppress my strength…” Before Wei Feng could finish his sentence, he saw a humanoid figure appear on Zhou Wen’s body. Then, the humanoid figure fused into Zhou Wen’s body, causing his entire body to emit a glow.

“You have advanced to the Epic stage by condensing a Life Soul?” Wei Feng looked at Zhou Wen in surprise. Back when he was Zhou Wen’s age, he was only at the Mortal stage, yet Zhou Wen had already condensed a Life Soul. That was just too fast.

Although Wei Feng had seen quite a number of geniuses in his career as a tutor in the past few years, this was the first time he had seen someone who had advanced to the Epic stage at Zhou Wen’s age.

“Yes, so Tutor, you have to use all your strength. There’s no need to show any mercy,” Zhou Wen said.

“Don’t worry, I won’t show any mercy.” Wei Feng laughed as he thought to himself. To be able to advance to the Epic stage at such a young age, you can be said to be an unparalleled genius. However, you are still too young, so your level doesn’t represent your true combat power. Let me teach you a good lesson and let you know how important combat experience is in battle.

Wei Feng looked at Zhou Wen’s clothes and asked, “Do you have an armor-type Companion Beast?”

“Yes.”

“Put it on. It’s inevitable that I won’t be able to hold back during actual combat. It won’t be nice if you get hurt,” said Wei Feng.

“Alright.” Zhou Wen felt that there was nothing wrong with that. He summoned the Mutated Stone Chi armor and put it on to ensure his safety.

“Then, let’s begin now.” Wei Feng wasn’t like the other tutors. Without waiting for Zhou Wen to strike first, he directly threw a punch, but he didn’t use his Life Soul.

Wei Feng’s punches were fast and powerful, but it was just boxing without the use of any Primordial Energy Skills. With the augmentation of the Ancient Sovereign Life Soul, Zhou Wen used his Seven Distribution Palm.

This seven-palm technique was distilled by Wang Mingyuan from seven different palm techniques. Each move had his own unique feature. With seven different concepts, Zhou Wen had already become very adept at it and could well

deliver the seven moves' traits. However, when it came to understanding the concept, he still fell a little short.

It wasn't that Zhou Wen wasn't perceptive enough and wasn't able to grasp the concept of the Seven Distribution Palm. It was just that he usually didn't have the chance to use palm techniques.

With Overlord Sword and Bamboo Blade as weapons, he naturally wouldn't go empty-handed to kill monsters with palm skills. He rarely had the chance to use palm skills against dimensional creatures.

Wei Feng wanted to use his experience and boxing techniques to teach Zhou Wen in the beginning, but after fighting for a while, he realized that his boxing techniques didn't have the upper hand against Zhou Wen.

Zhou Wen's palm techniques seemed to undergo a wide variety of changes, allowing him to deal with all kinds of situations. What was even more frightening was that this fellow didn't look like a student at all. He resembled a wily old fox who had fought and survived countless battles on the battlefield. He had rich combat experience and was in no way inferior to him at all.

Wei Feng fought Zhou Wen for more than ten minutes without finding any flaws. Not only was Zhou Wen very experienced in combat, but he was also extremely stable. There weren't any signs of impetuousness in his palm skills. Wei Feng had attempted to set up a trap several times to lure Zhou Wen into taking the risk to attack him, but Zhou Wen was completely unfazed.

Is this fellow really sixteen? Wei Feng found it unbelievable. Firstly, Zhou Wen had rich combat experience, and

secondly, with such a calm personality, it was not something a sixteen-year-old youth should have.

He had once “educated” other talented youths. Even though those talented youths who appeared calm and dignified on the surface would become hot-blooded in actual combat. This allowed him to seize the opportunity to teach them a good lesson.

However, Zhou Wen was completely different. He was calm like a mountain that was extremely stable. No matter how much Wei Feng tried to entice him, he remained unmoved.

Unbeknown to Wei Feng was that although Zhou Wen was young, he had rich combat experience in-game. One reason why he was so calm and composed was partly that his character was straightforward. However, the main reason was that he had experienced too many deaths in-game and had experienced all sorts of trials of death. It made him think more than the typical youth and gradually developed the habit of being cautious.

Seeing Zhou Wen’s appearance, Wei Feng knew that if he continued fighting him like this, there would probably be no outcome even if the apocalypse dawned.

I really can’t underestimate these young adults. Since he has already used his Life Soul, there’s no need for me to be too polite. After some thought, Wei Feng summoned his Life Soul.

His Life Soul was a boxing glove that appeared on his right hand. It looked like it was made of steel, one that wrapped his entire right fist and the forearm. It looked like a mechanical arm.

“You have to be careful. My Life Soul is called the Fist of Steel. Although it’s not very eye-catching, it has potent powers,” Wei Feng said as he threw his right hand which was wrapped in the Fist of Steel at Zhou Wen.

Wei Feng’s boxing style seemed to be open, but hidden in it were fine details. In addition to Wei Feng’s rich combat experience, Zhou Wen had to go out of his way to barely fend off his attack. He was temporarily unable to find a chance to counterattack.

Now that Wei Feng had used a Life Soul, Zhou Wen wasn’t astonished. Instead, he was delighted. This was because the pressure Wei Feng had given him wasn’t enough. Now that he had used the Life Soul, it meant that he was going all out.

Zhou Wen originally wondered what abilities Wei Feng’s Fist of Steel Life Soul had, but with Wei Feng’s punch coming at him, he saw a hole spewing out steam around the Fist of Steel. This boosted Wei Feng’s punch to produce unparalleled speed that instantly doubled.

As he was sparring, Zhou Wen didn’t use his movement technique to dodge and forcefully received Wei Feng’s punch with his palm.

Bam!

As the fist and palm clashed, Zhou Wen felt a tremendous force that numbed his arm. His body involuntarily rose up and flew backward.

Zhou Wen spun in midair for a few moments before he wore out the immense force. When he landed on the ground, his arm was still numb as his palm trembled slightly.

“I told you to be careful. The Fist of Still greatly boosts my Speed and Strength. I only used 30% of my strength just now,” Wei Feng said smugly.

“Again.” Zhou Wen took a step forward and attacked again. He could sense the stirring of the Ancient Sovereign Life Soul, and his heart was beating rapidly.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 383 - Eruption

Chapter 383 Eruption

Wei Feng’s boxing technique was stronger than Zhou Wen’s to begin with. Together with the augmentation of the Fist of Steel, Zhou Wen was instantly placed at an absolute disadvantage.

Wei Feng didn’t keep using Fist of Steel; instead, he used it once in a while, accelerating the speed of his punches suddenly. This added some level of unexpected elements in the battle. It made his boxing techniques more varied and harder to deal with.

Zhou Wen had already been forced to block Wei Feng’s fist many times. Each time, he felt like he was struck by a sledgehammer. His arms felt numb from the impact.

Thankfully, he was wearing the Mutated Stone Chi armor. Otherwise, the bones in his arm might have fractured from the impact.

Although he had armor protecting him, Zhou Wen still felt his arms burn painfully amidst the numbness.

When Wei Feng discovered that Zhou Wen’s armor was extremely tough, to the point of being able to withstand his punches, he no longer had any qualms and freely released his might.

Bam! Bam! Bam!

Zhou Wen immediately lost all his ability to counterattack. He was like a sandbag and was completely suppressed by Wei Feng's punches. All he could do was raise his arm to block Wei Feng's barrage of attacks.

It had been a long time since Wei Feng had felt this satisfaction. Back when he was on the battlefield, he could battle without any worries, fully unleashing his strength on the dimensional creatures.

However, after joining the school, although he could kill dimensional creatures, it still felt somewhat different.

The biggest difference was that he had detailed information about the dimensional creatures on campus. He only needed to attack the dimensional creatures' weaknesses to easily clinch victory.

However, when he was in the military, they were mostly fighting unknown dimensional creatures. The thrill of life and death and the horror and excitement when challenging the unknown was something that the college couldn't compare with.

In a battle with tutors, he was restrained in every way. He was unable to go all out.

Wei Feng's battle with Zhou Wen made it seem as though he had returned to his time in the military. Zhou Wen was like an unknown dimensional creature. Wei Feng wanted to find his weakness and completely crush him. At that moment, Wei Feng was like a ferocious beast that kept unleashing terrifying attacks.

From the beginning until now, although Zhou Wen had been completely suppressed, he wasn't in a fluster at all with his palm skills. He remained shockingly stable. Despite being

suppressed, he blocked all of Wei Feng’s attacks, making Wei Feng even more eager to break through Zhou Wen’s defense.

Wei Feng became more and more serious. He almost forgot that this was just a sparring match. It was as if he had completely immersed himself in it, pushing his ability to the limit.

Bang! Bang!

Zhou Wen’s arms and palms suffered countless punches. Wei Feng’s fists rained down like a storm, constantly bombarding him. Especially the right hand that was wearing a Fist of Steel—every time it struck Zhou Wen’s arm, an explosive force could be felt through the stone armor. It nearly fractured his arm.

Even the stone armor formed by the Mutated Stone Chi began to crack under the continuous attacks. If this continued, it would probably be smashed to pieces.

Under such pressure, Zhou Wen still didn’t use his movement techniques. He was still using his palm skills to fend against Wei Feng. He could vaguely sense that the Ancient Sovereign Life Soul was stirring. His heart was attached to the Ancient Sovereign Life Soul and was beating rapidly. It was becoming more and more erratic, and its speed became faster and faster like a race car engine that was starting.

Zhou Wen was filled with energy as his desire for battle intensified. Under Wei Feng’s powerful suppression, he didn’t feel fear. Instead, he became more and more excited. The excitement was mostly from the Ancient Sovereign Life Soul.

Under the intense beating of his heart, Zhou Wen felt as though all his blood vessels had turned into a highway. His blood was flowing at an extremely fast speed as it rubbed against the blood walls, causing the temperature to rise higher and higher, as though it was about to ignite.

Badump! Badump! Badump!

Under the effects of the Ancient Sovereign Life Soul, his heart beat more and more violently. It made Zhou Wen feel as though his body had become a volcano with a force about to erupt at any time.

Wei Feng became more and more excited. Zhou Wen's stability and the sturdiness of the Mutated Stone Chi armor made him completely let loose himself. Apart from not using any Primordial Energy Skills, he had pushed his abilities to the limit.

I refuse to believe that I can't crack your defense. It was as though Wei Feng had returned to his time in a dimensional zone. His punches were becoming more and more precise, ferocious, and lethal just like when he fought powerful dimensional creatures.

At that moment, Zhou Wen remained calm, but there seemed to be a ball of flames burning in his eyes. He constantly flailed his arms as he kept retreating. Under Wei Feng's crazy attack, cracks had appeared on the arm of the Mutated Stone Chi armor.

If Zhou Wen hadn't deliberately used different spots to block Wei Feng's Fist of Steel, allowing him to repeatedly strike, the same spot would have long shattered the Mutated Stone Chi's bracer.

Although Zhou Wen had already controlled the location of the blocks, there were already cracks everywhere on his bracer. If he continued suffering the attacks, the bracers on both arms would probably be shattered completely.

However, Zhou Wen didn’t dispel the Mutated Stone Chi armor and chose to continue fighting. He could sense that the Ancient Sovereign Life Soul was reaching a critical point. If he retreated, all his previous efforts would have been for naught.

Crack! Crack!

Under Wei Feng’s attacks, a fine cracking sound appeared on his bracer. More and more of such cracking sounds were heard. There were visible cracks on his bracer, and small fragments began to be released from the cracks which spread like spider webs.

Zhou Wen’s eyes were like fire as he quickly brandished his arms to block Wei Feng’s crazy attacks.

Just a bit more… Just a bit more… Zhou Wen felt that the force in his body was like a volcano about to erupt, but it just didn’t erupt. It was as though a boulder was blocking the volcano’s mouth, preventing it from spewing out hot lava.

Crack!

Zhou Wen’s arm blocked Wei Feng’s right fist again. A piece of armor the size of an egg crumbled from his right bracer, turning into fragments that scattered everywhere. It was like a butterfly effect. The bracer completely shattered, revealing Zhou Wen’s arm.

Without the protection of the armor, the powerful punch landed on Zhou Wen’s arm. Immediately, Zhou Wen’s arm trembled like a bowstring, as though it was about to be snapped.

At this moment, Zhou Wen’s eyes seemed to spew out lava, turning his pupils into scorching red lava. His entire body began to emit a terrifying hot aura as scorching heat spewed out from him, distorting the surrounding air. From afar, it was as though there was an invisible fire burning outside his body.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 384 - My Life, My Blood, My Soul

Chapter 384 My Life, My Blood, My Soul

Zhou Wen’s bracer shattered. Wei Feng was alarmed as he hurriedly stopped his attack. He couldn’t help but regret it greatly. He had been too serious while sparring with a student. If Zhou Wen’s Companion Beast died because of that, Wei Feng wouldn’t know what to do.

If news of a tutor killing his student’s Companion Beast got out, he would probably be treated as a representative of violent educators.

Wei Feng looked at Zhou Wen and wanted to ask if he was alright. Companion Beasts were secondary. The fact that Zhou Wen wasn’t injured was of greatest importance.

However, when Wei Feng’s gaze landed on Zhou Wen, he was alarmed. He saw that Zhou Wen’s body was emitting a scorching hot aura. The heat seemed to distort the air around his body. It was as though his body was burning with transparent flames.

Alarm bells began to sound in Wei Feng’s heart. This was Wei Feng’s intuition gained from years on the battlefield. Only when he encountered extremely dangerous creatures would he have such a feeling. And now, Zhou Wen had made Wei Feng smell a sense of danger.

“Tutor, please continue.” Zhou Wen’s body trembled slightly, not because of his pain or fear, but because of the immense

power brought about by the rapid flow of blood from his powerful heartbeats. This influenced his body in a way that he couldn’t control, and with every beat of his heart, his entire body trembled. And now, the frequency of his heart beating was as fast as a piston. That’s why it made Zhou Wen’s body appear to be trembling.

This didn’t affect Zhou Wen’s control of himself. To be precise, he had never felt this good. His entire body was filled with explosive strength. It was as though he was revving at the starting point, his engine roaring non-stop. He was like a powerful racing car that had the slight inclination to charge forward.

Without waiting for Wei Feng to deliver the punch, Zhou Wen clenched his fists and threw a punch at Wei Feng. This was a subconscious act. Although he knew the Seven Distribution Palm, he subconsciously felt that clenching his palm into a fist would make his blood-filled hand, at the point of explosion, feel better.

When he threw a punch, the surrounding air seemed to be distorted by the heat, leaving a blurry and distorted afterimage—Zhou Wen and fist had already arrived in front of Wei Feng.

Wei Feng’s expression turned solemn as steam spewed out from his Fist of Steel vent. It caused his fist to quickly strike out and meet Zhou Wen’s fist.

Bam!

When the fists collided, Zhou Wen’s figure took four to five steps back before he stopped. As for Wei Feng, he only staggered for a moment without taking half a step back.

However, Wei Feng wore a look of surprise as he sized up Zhou Wen in disbelief.

After fighting Zhou Wen for so long, he had a general understanding of him. He knew that Zhou Wen's Strength wasn't weak, with its number ranging in the thirties. This Strength was already very close to his, but with the augmentation of the Steel of Fist, his fist's Strength increased significantly, something that Zhou Wen's Strength was unable to withstand.

Back when Zhou Wen was able to fight him, he had mainly relied on the defense of the Mutated Stone Chi armor. However, the fist Zhou Wen had used was from the one beneath the shattered bracer. Without the protection of his armor, Zhou Wen had only retreated four to five steps. His Strength had clearly been boosted significantly in such a short time.

However, without using stat crystals, his Strength stat couldn't increase unless he used a Strength-enhancing Primordial Energy Skill. However, Zhou Wen didn't use one. It was still the same as before. All he did was use a fist technique to fight him.

Could it be… the Life Soul… Wei Feng looked at Zhou Wen who seemed to be burning with an invisible flame and felt that his entire body was emitting light and heat. The warning bells in him became more obvious.

Without giving Wei Feng time to think, Zhou Wen threw another punch. This was followed by a barrage of punches as if he had gone mad.

Wei Feng's fighting spirit was triggered as he clenched his fists and clashed with Zhou Wen. The Fist of Steel unleashed all its might, producing unparalleled speed and strength. It

was like steel meteors that sent Zhou Wen retreating again and again.

However, Wei Feng could sense that Zhou Wen's strength was getting stronger and his speed was also increasing. His actions seemed more and more fluid.

Fire!

Wei Feng felt as though there was a flame burning in Zhou Wen's body. It wasn't a real flame, but Wei Feng had this feeling that as the flame burned, Zhou Wen's body—no, it should be said that his entire life—was combusting to produce light and heat. It would become more and more blinding and it made his heart tremble.

"My life… My blood… My soul… Live for life… Born for the living… Even if I spill my blood… Bury all my bones… I will fight for a chance for life to survive in this dark and cold land…" The Ancient Sovereign Life Soul seemed to be emitting an ancient will that bordered on a roar.

His blood was boiling!

This wasn't an adjective. Zhou Wen really felt as though all his blood was igniting. It was as though he had infinite power. It increased his strength and his speed. Every inch of his cells seemed to emit light and heat.

Bang! Bang!

Zhou Wen's fists constantly clashed with Wei Feng. From being at a disadvantage in the beginning, to slowly parrying Wei Feng, he was no longer sent into a retreat. It eventually ended up with Wei Feng's fist without the Steel of Fist being suppressed as Zhou Wen's might grew stronger.

Bam!

When the fists collided again, Zhou Wen’s bare fists seemed to emit sun-like heat and light. When he collided with the Fist of Steel, he wasn’t sent retreating. Instead, Wei Feng’s body involuntarily trembled as he took half a step back.

This fellow… This fellow… Wei Feng’s eyes flickered as he looked at Zhou Wen in disbelief.

He had been in the military for thirty years, and had been a tutor for six years. He had seen countless experts and geniuses, but to have such strength at Zhou Wen’s age, he had only met one before. Zhou Wen was second.

In the crazy battle, Wei Feng constantly retreated. Every step he took made him feel like Zhou Wen was growing taller. The body that emitted light and heat grew bigger and bigger in his eyes, becoming increasingly unstoppable.

At that moment, the invisible flames on Zhou Wen’s body actually condensed into corporeal light. His entire being seemed to emit a glorious sun. The Ancient Sovereign Life Soul also propelled his body, making him break the shackles to certain limits and causing terrifying power to erupt.

Boom!

Zhou Wen’s fist broke the speed of sound and rubbed against the air, producing light and heat. Like a blinding sun, it struck Wei Feng.

The alarms in Wei Feng’s heart rang out as he saw the fist that appeared like the sun intermittently increase in size. Without any hesitation, he immediately used his best Primordial Energy Skill, Explosive Fist. Using the explosive

power brought about by the Fist of Steel, he struck Zhou Wen’s fist.

Boom!

The terrifying power that centered around Zhou Wen and Wei Feng’s fists produced a tremendous explosion and shock wave. The custom forty-centimeter rubber buffer on the ground was torn apart by the explosive burst. Even the cement concrete layer beneath cratered.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 385 - Inverse Ancient Sovereign

Chapter 385 Inverse Ancient Sovereign

Wei Feng only felt his Steel of Fist arm tremble and his legs turn weak. He looked at Zhou Wen, feeling an inexplicable shock.

Despite using his Primordial Energy Skill, he had only come to a draw with Zhou Wen without gaining the upper hand. The power that exploded from Zhou Wen’s body was shocking.

Looking at Zhou Wen who was emitting light and heat like a sun, Wei Feng suddenly felt that he had truly aged. This world was truly a world of young people. Their youth and vitality were something that he lacked now.

Zhou Wen felt his heart boom as all his strength surged with his blood flow, pushing him to deliver another strike.

Wei Feng could only raise his fist to meet his attack. He released his Primordial Energy Skill and clashed with Zhou Wen’s repeated punches.

This was going to cost him his life. Zhou Wen purely relied on the power of his erupting Life Soul and didn’t need to use his Primordial Energy. However, Wei Feng had to rely on his Primordial Energy Skills to fend off Zhou Wen.

Primordial Energy Skills were unleashed with the use of Primordial Energy. Wei Feng didn’t have a Slaughterer Life Soul that provided him infinite Primordial Energy; therefore,

it was impossible for him to constantly release Primordial Energy Skills. After striking more than ten Explosive Fists, he felt that his Primordial Energy was almost depleted.

Wei Feng originally believed that Zhou Wen’s explosive strength couldn’t be too stable or his body wouldn’t have been able to withstand it. But to his surprise, Zhou Wen remained brimming with energy despite unleashing dozens of punches. It was as though he had an endless amount of energy.

Most terrifying of all was that the explosive strength of an ordinary person fluctuated. It was impossible for one to maintain peak strength. However, Zhou Wen’s release in strength maintained a straight line at peak strength.

Wei Feng felt his arm go numb and he almost couldn’t lift it up. If this continued, his arm would probably fracture.

Zhou Wen was completely immersed in the eruption of the Ancient Sovereign Life Soul as he delivered punch after punch. He could sense that the Ancient Sovereign Life Soul had advanced to an Evolved Body.

Zhou Wen threw another punch at Wei Feng excitedly when he suddenly saw Wei Feng stop. Wei Feng looked in the direction of the training room door and said in surprise, “We are using the training room. Come back later.”

Zhou Wen couldn’t help but stop his punch and turn to look at the door. However, he saw that the door to the training room was still closed and there was no one there.

Bam!

In the next second, Zhou Wen felt a heavy blow to his face which was covered by a helm. His head warped to the side

as his body flew out and he slammed into the rubber buffers on the training room's wall.

The punch wasn't very heavy as Wei Feng didn't use all his strength. Zhou Wen quickly stood up and looked at Wei Feng with a puzzled look.

Wei Feng said in all seriousness, "Zhou Wen, it looks like you lack actual combat experience. You can't even defend against such a simple scheme. If you were on the real battlefield, you would already be dead. I've given you an important lesson today. Remember, you can't make the same mistake again. Alright, let's end the training today."

"Tutor, I'll remember. Let's continue sparring a little longer?" Zhou Wen went forward and said.

"Let's end it here for today. You've trained for so long, and I think you're tired. Let's continue another day," said Wei Feng as he walked.

"Tutor, I'm not tired. Let's continue a little while," Zhou Wen said.

"Another day… Another day…" Wei Feng took out his phone and placed it to his ear as he walked. "Hello… Ah, my dear daughter… Why are you looking for me… What… Something happened at home… Okay, okay, okay… I'll rush back now…"

"I'm sorry. Although I really want to continue sparring with you, something urgent has cropped up at home. Let's spar again another day." As Wei Feng spoke, he quickly left the training room and disappeared without a trace.

Zhou Wen was somewhat regretful. He hadn't completely vented all his excessive strength, so he felt somewhat

uncomfortable.

However, since he no longer had an opponent, Zhou Wen could only get the Ancient Sovereign Life Soul to leave his body and float in front of him.

The Ancient Sovereign Life Soul was still in the form of light, but the figure became clearer, as though it was about to condense into something corporeal.

The Ancient Sovereign Life Soul was like a humanoid sun floating there. Zhou Wen no longer needed to fear the darkness no matter where he went in the future. As long as he had the Ancient Sovereign Life Soul, there was light no matter how dark it was.

He took out his mysterious phone and looked at the information after the Ancient Sovereign Life Soul evolved.

Inverse Ancient Sovereign (Evolved Body): Ancient life born from blood and fire, the sovereign who fights against the heavens.

The Ancient Sovereign had evolved into an Inverse Ancient Sovereign. Although the note didn’t change, Zhou Wen knew that the Ancient Sovereign’s ability had undergone a substantial change.

The evolution of a Life Soul was extremely odd. Even a person who cultivated the same Primordial Energy Art would condense a different Life Soul because of their different physiques and insights.

And the evolution of a Life Soul would result in further differences due to one’s personal insights and growth.

Zhou Wen could sense that not only did the Inverse Ancient Sovereign enhance his Strength and Speed, but it could provide him with an endless stream of energy. He probably needed to test the numbers on the apparatus for the specifics.

The game only showed basic values, but not the values after a Life Soul augmentation. Therefore, Zhou Wen didn't know what his various attributes were like under the augmentation of the Inverse Ancient Sovereign.

Indeed, it's more interesting to spar with humans. I'll find Tutor Wei next time for more sparring. Zhou Wen unsummoned the Mutated Stone Chi and discovered that one of its legs had snapped.

Thankfully, the Mutated Stone Chi hadn't been obliterated. The Companion Egg was a pure energy body, so as long as it had Primordial Energy Crystals to replenish its Primordial Energy, it could slowly recover in the future.

The immense power brought about by the Inverse Ancient Sovereign Evolved Body made Zhou Wen want to advance Slaughterer even more. If Slaughterer could advance to an Evolved Body or even a Perfect Body, who knew what kind of power it would bring him.

Unfortunately, Zhou Wen still didn't have any clue of how to advance Slaughterer. He had no choice but to first evolve the Inverse Ancient Sovereign, hoping to advance it to a Perfect Body.

However, after Zhou Wen visited Wei Feng a few times, the latter would hurriedly leave using excuses such as family matters. He didn't give Zhou Wen any chance to spar with him.

Apart from Wei Feng, Zhou Wen didn’t have any other opponents that he could spar with. He could only temporarily put this matter aside and spend time grinding while reading classics regarding Buddhism and Daoism. He hoped to condense a Life Soul for the other two Primordial Energy Arts.

When Zhou Wen came to the Poison Wyrm Pool again and killed the Poison Wyrm, another Primordial Energy Skill Crystal dropped. However, Zhou Wen was already numb to this.

The chances of a Primordial Energy Skill dropping by the Poison Wyrm was quite high, but it was almost always Poison Dragon Finger’s 1, 2, or 4. The lacking Poison Dragon Finger 3 never dropped.

However, when Zhou Wen allowed the blood-colored avatar to absorb the Primordial Energy Skill Crystal, he was surprised to discover that the system notified him that he had comprehended Poison Dragon Finger 3. It jolted him awake.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 386 - Poison Dragon Palm

Chapter 386 Poison Dragon Palm

I actually got Poison Dragon Finger 3 to drop! Zhou Wen was immediately overjoyed. He had been grinding Poison Wyrms for so long to the point of vomiting. This was the first time he had Poison Dragon Finger 3 drop.

With all five Poison Dragon Fingers gathered, there weren't any special changes to the Primordial Energy Skill column. The five Poison Dragon Fingers were listed separately, proving that they weren't the same Primordial Energy Skill.

Zhou Wen attempted using five Poison Dragon Fingers together and immediately saw the blood-colored avatar's fingers turn a pitch-black color. This was no different from before. However, what happened next delighted Zhou Wen.

The blackness on the blood-colored avatar's fingers extended towards his palm, and moments later, the blood-colored avatar's palm turned black.

At the same time, a notification popped up in-game: 'Acquired Poison Dragon Palm.'

Zhou Wen looked at his skill column and realized that the five Poison Dragon Fingers had vanished, having been replaced by an additional Poison Dragon Palm skill.

Poison Dragon Palm (Rank 10): Epic

Zhou Wen was truly taken aback. This was the first time he had seen a Primordial Energy Skill that naturally came as a

Rank 10. According to what Zhou Wen knew, Primordial Energy Skill Crystals only appeared at Rank 9. To reach Rank 10, one had to further comprehend it themselves.

However, the Poison Dragon Palm was at Rank 10 without any need for him to comprehend it himself. It was truly powerful.

Zhou Wen thought of where he could test out the Poison Dragon Palm that he had painstakingly obtained. Immediately, he searched the underground Pool City for a while, hoping to find a Sword Fang Fish or a Jade Toad to test out the palm's strength.

However, to his surprise, he encountered a rather rare Electric Eel. Although it couldn't compare to Wang Fei's Mutated Electric Eel, it was enough for his test.

As an Epic Primordial Energy Skill, when Zhou Wen condensed the Poison Dragon Palm, he didn't sense any powerful force. It was about the same as when he used the Poison Dragon Finger. There wasn't any special reaction, nor were there any wind forces coming from it, much less any burst of divine light. There weren't even any poisonous gases. Apart from his palm turning black, there was nothing special about it. His strength wasn't able to be released either.

Don't tell me it's still as useless as the Poison Dragon Finger? Zhou Wen thought to himself as he used Ghost Steps to appear above the Electric Eel and struck it on the back.

After water splashed, Zhou Wen's palm struck the Electric Eel's back, sinking it into the water. Zhou Wen could see that the palm didn't even manage to damage a single scale. Instead, he was zapped by the Electric Eel, turning his body numb and almost falling into the water.

What the heck? This is a Primordial Energy Skill that I acquired after so much grinding? Zhou Wen immediately felt depressed. The water surface surged as the Electric Eel rapidly swam into the distance.

Zhou Wen didn't even feel like chasing after it. After grinding it for so long, he still had some expectations. He never expected the Poison Dragon Palm to be so useless. It was basically the upgraded version of the useless Poison Dragon Finger.

However, the escaping Electric Eel had swum for almost two hundred meters when it suddenly stopped moving underwater. Moments later, Zhou Wen saw the Electric Eel float up with its belly facing up. At the same time, a notification popped up in-game.

'Killed Epic creature, Electric Eel. Discovered Dimensional Crystal.'

Zhou Wen immediately widened his mouth into an "O"-shape When he saw a dimensional crystal drop from the Electric Eel's corpse, he hurriedly rushed over to pick it up before it sank to the bottom.

This Poison Dragon Palm is rather interesting… Zhou Wen was somewhat surprised. He had actually killed the Electric Eel with just a single palm strike. Such power was indeed interesting. Furthermore, the Poison Dragon Palm's power was clearly related to the poison. It wasn't a traditional palm strike.

The crystal Zhou Wen obtained only had +3 in value, but upon careful inspection, the dimensional crystal dropped by the Electric Eel was a dimensional crystal that added +3 to his Electric stat and not basic stats.

After making the blood-colored avatar absorb the Electric Stat crystal, electricity flowed through his body, making him involuntarily tremble.

He saw an additional Electric attribute in his stats. Although it was only 3 points, it was enough to satisfy him. After all, the drop rate of special stat crystals was very low. His luck was pretty good for him to obtain it by simply killing a single Electric Eel.

From the looks of it, my luck has recently risen. It’s time to farm the baby tiger again. Zhou Wen controlled the blood-colored avatar to head to Binyang Cave, but he returned without any success.

Thankfully, Zhou Wen wasn’t discouraged. After switching dungeons, he went to the Zhuolu ruins.

Zhou Wen’s target was the nine chained black dragons. He wanted to test out how powerful the Poison Dragon Palm was and how high its limits were.

Being able to poison an Electric Eel to death was useless to Zhou Wen. Coupling Overlord Sword with Transcendent Flying Immortal, he could kill Electric Eels without any trouble. He didn’t need to go close, nor did he need to use his palm to directly touch the Electric Eel.

The reason he wanted to test the palm on the nine black dragons was that he couldn’t even touch the other Mythical creatures. Only when the nine black dragons were chained up and physically restrained could he have a chance of hitting them.

Zhou Wen had already tried using Overlord Sword and Lost Country’s teleportation to stab a black dragon, but only a tiny bit of the Overlord Sword’s tip penetrated. It couldn’t

even penetrate the dragon scales, much less kill the black dragon.

Unless Zhou Wen could continuously stab the black dragon with a thousand strikes at the same spot, there was no way he could kill it.

However, under the combined attack of the nine black dragons, even though their actions were restrained, they were ultimately Mythical creatures; therefore, it was impossible for Zhou Wen to last too long under their siege. Delivering a few hundred swords was wishful thinking. He would be considered lucky to be able to stab several times without dying.

However, if the Poison Dragon Palm could really poison the black dragon to death, Zhou Wen had an idea. Perhaps, this gave him a chance of killing the black dragon.

Of course, this way, he wouldn’t be able to rely on Lost Country’s teleportation to approach the black dragons. He had to use Lost Country’s teleport after striking a black dragon with Poison Dragon Palm to flee. If the blood-colored avatar were to die, then it would be useless even if the Poison Dragon Palm could really poison the black dragon to death.

Once the blood-colored avatar died, he would have to respawn. What was the point in killing the black dragon?

Therefore, after Zhou Wen thought about it, all he could do was rely on his movement technique to approach the black dragon and deliver a Poison Dragon Palm. Then, he could use his Lost Country’s teleportation ability to escape. Then, he just needed to wait for the black dragon to be poisoned to death. This was the only way he could kill a Mythical creature.

When he arrived at the underground sea again, Zhou Wen took a deep breath and switched his Life Soul to Slaughterer before jumping down and diving into the sea.

After swimming for a short while, he saw nine black dragons pulling the war wagon from the bottom of the sea. The black dragons emitted a strange dragon’s roar, causing the seawater to quake uneasily.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 387 - Dragon Gate Stone Beas

Chapter 387 Dragon Gate Stone Beas

Although the Inverse Ancient Sovereign Life Soul could provide Zhou Wen with strength that exceeded Slaughterer, the Inverse Ancient Sovereign's strength was too potent. It was suited for frontal combat. Zhou Wen wasn't qualified to fight the black dragons head-on and could only use tricks. Therefore, Zhou Wen chose to use the Slaughterer Life Soul.

The strength increase provided by Slaughterer was inferior to the Inverse Ancient Sovereign, but its characteristic of infinite Primordial Energy was what Zhou Wen needed the most.

When the nine black dragons approached, Zhou Wen chose a location at the bottom of the sea that had a complicated terrain. Relying on the cover of the sea mountain, the black dragons didn't attack him immediately.

When the nine black dragons pulled the war wagon around the undersea mountain peak, Zhou Wen used the Nine Dragons Art he had cultivated with Ghost Steps. He swam rapidly like a dragon beast in the sea, dodging the devouring of the black dragons in front of him. Before the nine black dragons surrounded him, he rushed to the bottom of the war wagon.

Zhou Wen lacked the ability to directly approach the black dragons' bodies unless he used teleportation. However, it would be different if he relied on the war wagon's protection.

The nine black dragons were chained and they couldn’t reach beneath the war wagon. With their mobility further weakened, Zhou Wen hid under the war wagon. When he saw a black dragon’s head extend down to him, he struck out with Poison Dragon Palm.

The black dragon reacted very quickly. Zhou Wen was already close enough, but it still reacted in time. It let out a roar as a terrifying sound wave blasted Zhou Wen’s body and swam away. He had failed to touch it with Poison Dragon Palm.

The blood-colored avatar’s body flew out uncontrollably along with the flow of water. Before Zhou Wen could stabilize the blood-colored avatar, a few black dragons pounced on him and surrounded him. A black dragon swallowed the blood-colored avatar amidst the scramble. The game screen went black.

The Poison Dragon Palm requires the palm to touch the body to work. This isn’t good. If it can injure someone across a distance, things will be much easier. Zhou Wen had no choice but to drip his blood to revive.

This time, Zhou Wen learned from his previous experience. He didn’t choose to touch the black dragons’ heads. Instead, he used the war wagon’s concealment to fend off the black dragon’s attack. He then flipped to the back of the war wagon. When a black dragon circled around to him, he turned around and charged at the black dragon’s body, striking the dragon’s scales with his Poison Dragon Palm.

With the successful palm strike, Zhou Wen was completely exposed. The nine black dragons formed a circle, making it impossible for Zhou Wen to flee.

Zhou Wen immediately switched to the Godfiend Era's Primordial Energy Art and the Lost Country appeared on his finger. A black dragon had already sucked the blood-colored avatar to its mouth. When half the blood-colored avatar entered the dragon's mouth, its body suddenly vanished, leaving the nine dragons stunned.

However, the teleportation distance available to Lost Country was too low. The nine black dragons quickly noticed Zhou Wen who hadn't gone far and roared as they pursued him.

Zhou Wen swam towards the surface, but when he was in the water, Ghost Steps' efficiency decreased significantly. Infinite Ghost Steps wasn't able to increase his speed significantly, so before he could swim out of the sea, he was devoured by the nine black dragons.

However, with his experience hitting the black dragon once, Zhou Wen was even more certain that he could succeed. The only thing lacking was to escape alive.

As long as I can rush out of the water surface, I can use my flying abilities and Infinite Ghost Steps to escape. Even with Nine Dragons Art in the water, I can't match a real dragon's speed. Therefore, I have to think of a way to get my Poison Dragon Palm to strike the black dragon when I'm as close as possible to the water surface, Zhou Wen thought to himself.

He wanted to redo it, but Lost Country's teleportation ability had a 24-hour cooldown.

This won't do, Lost Country's cooldown is too long. The teleportation distance is too short as well. How can I think of a way to raise Lost Country to an Evolved Body so as to enhance the teleportation ability? Zhou Wen began considering how to advance Lost Country.

The Godfiend Era has a myriad of changes. After condensing the Godfiend Life Providence, I gained the ability to stay in space. After condensing Lost Country, I possess the ability to teleport. Both of them are related to space. To improve Lost Country, I'm afraid I'll have to put in effort towards spatial matters. After some thought, Zhou Wen failed to think of a way to enhance Lost Country.

Space was a rather special attribute regardless of the League's four districts. Dimensional creatures with spatial powers were rare as well. Typically, there weren't any low-grade creatures with them being at least at the Epic stage.

Zhou Wen checked the school's database. Although there were many dimensional zones on campus, there were no dimensional creatures with spatial abilities.

However, Zhou Wen surprisingly discovered some useful information. The information had nothing to do with Sunset College, but about certain strange matters in Guide Ancient City.

This included records of Fire God Platform and the stone furnace in front of the stone monument. This information was identical to what Zhou Wen had seen in-game. There was only one difference.

The stone furnace in-game produced firebirds. It was the same in reality. There was a stone saber stuck in the stone furnace in-game and there was a stone saber in reality.

Zhou Wen had attempted to pull out the saber in-game, but he just couldn't touch it. He believed it to be an illusion, but in reality, someone had attempted to pull it out. Although it wasn't pulled out, the person touched the stone saber.

According to the records in the document, a tutor who possessed a fire-elemental Life Providence and flame-type Life Soul went to Guide Ancient City. He found Fire God Platform and scaled it. He discovered the stone saber in the furnace, but when he pulled it out, it seemed rooted. He was unable to shift the stone saber even with his Epic strength.

This is strange. I can see it in-game, but I can't touch it. In reality, it can be touched. What's the reason? Zhou Wen had the urge to immediately return to Guide Ancient City to take a look and figure out the problem of the stone saber.

However, firstly, school wasn't on break. Secondly, entering Guide Ancient City required entry passes. Without a pass, it was useless even if he returned.

"Zhou Wen, the new homework mission has been released. Shall we go together?" Li Xuan sent a message.

"Alright, let's meet outside Dragon Gate Grotto." Zhou Wen still needed to finish homework missions, so he scheduled a meeting with Li Xuan.

The mission given by the new tutor wasn't as strange as Wang Fei's. They only needed to kill ten Mortal Dragon Gate Stone Beasts. This was a common Mortal stage dimensional creature in Dragon Gate Grotto. It wasn't difficult for ordinary students, so it was pretty much a walk in the park for people like Zhou Wen and Li Xuan.

The two came to Dragon Gate Grotto and randomly chose a relatively nearby grotto. Soon, they saw several Dragon Gate Stone Beasts. Li Xuan rushed forward and finished them off in no time.

"I haven't even started filming yet!" Zhou Wen said with a smile.

“It’s fine. There are plenty of stone beasts anyway. We can just kill a few more later.” Li Xuan didn’t mind.

The two of them continued walking in. Before long, they saw a few students attacking a stone beast. However, the stone beast looked a little special and was slightly different from the other stone beasts.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 388 - Snatching a Companion Egg

Chapter 388 Snatching a Companion Egg

Ordinary stone beasts were only half the height of a human. They looked like Pekingese, and their bodies were grayish-white rocks.

However, the stone beast that the students were attacking was different. The stone beast's body was as crystalline as white jade, and it was also much taller—about the size of a racehorse.

When the Mortal students attacked the stone beast, they unleashed Primordial Energy Skills with their fists and palms, but the strikes were almost useless against it.

As the chances of dropping a Companion Egg at the Mortal stage were very low, these students didn't have any Companion Beasts and could only rely on their strength to fight head-on. However, the effects were clearly not the best. A student was even injured by the stone beast.

Seeing that they were his schoolmates, Li Xuan went over with the Thundergod Sword and cleaved the stone beast to death with one strike to prevent them from being injured by the stone beast again.

The stone beast was cleaved into two by Li Xuan. A crystalline jade egg fell out of its body—a Companion Egg.

"Holy sh*t, I'm that lucky?" Li Xuan looked at the Companion Egg in surprise.

Although it was a Mutated Dragon Gate Stone Beast and it was only at the Mortal stage, the chances of a Companion Egg dropping at the Mortal stage were almost identical to winning the lottery. He really had good luck to have it drop.

The students also stared at the Companion Egg. Mortal Companion Eggs were rare to begin with. Furthermore, it was a mutated species, so its stats were definitely good. Who wouldn't want one?

However, the Mutated Stone Beast was killed by Li Xuan. They didn't dare to snatch it, but they were also unwilling to give it up. After all, they had discovered the Mutated Stone Beast first.

"Distribute the Companion Egg among yourselves." Li Xuan wasn't too interested in the Mutated Stone Beast Companion Egg. He had only been helping out and had no intention of splitting it.

The few students were overjoyed when they heard that. Two students were still hesitating, but the other three students scrambled for the Companion Egg.

The three of them didn't give in to the others, and soon it became a snatching fest. The other two students also joined the snatching competition when they snapped out of their daze.

Who didn't want to have a Companion Beast? Ordinary students might not be able to advance to the Legendary stage in their four years in college. Firstly, the Primordial Energy Arts they cultivated were lacking, and secondly, there was a lack of resources and thirdly, their perceptivity.

Typical Primordial Energy Arts required one to gain insights before advancing to the next level. The Lost Immortal Sutra

was quite an outlier to allow advancement simply by having the stats reaching a certain value.

Li Xuan glanced at the students who were vying for the Companion Egg and curled his lips. He said to Zhou Wen, ” Reality is just that cruel. No matter how good their relationships are usually, once it involves personal interests, schoolmates and friends are nothing. Both of us should be happy that we didn’t end up having to vie with them.”

Zhou Wen shook his head and said, “That’s not necessarily the case. We also need to vie for things. It’s just that the things we are fighting for are a little more advanced. There’s no difference in essence. The degree of sorrow doesn’t lessen just because of its higher level.”

“That’s true. In this world, it’s hard to tell the difference between humans and fiends,” Li Xuan said with a sigh.

Clearly, he had been reminded of his family matters. Even if they were biological brothers, he couldn’t rely on him.

“Let’s head elsewhere to take a look.” Zhou Wen didn’t wish to continue the topic. Once the dimensional zones’ restrictions failed, similar things would happen. Many people would do anything to survive.

Just as the duo was about to leave, they suddenly heard a bird’s cry coming from above. The pale golden feathers on the chick standing on Zhou Wen’s shoulder stood on end, as though it had encountered an enemy as it looked into the sky.

Zhou Wen was alarmed as he looked up and saw a golden bird swooping down from the sky like a golden cloud. Its target was them.

“Duck!” Zhou Wen felt a sense of danger as he roared at the students. At the same time, he pulled Li Xuan back quickly.

The few students were still vying for the Companion Egg, but no one paid attention to Zhou Wen. The golden bird descended like a golden cloud and before it arrived, a terrifying hurricane rolled down from high above, sweeping the five students flying hundreds of feet away. Some struck into stone statues while others fell to the ground. Immediately, they vomited blood and couldn’t even get up.

The giant bird swallowed the Companion Egg in one mouthful, but its claw didn’t land. With a flap of its wings, another hurricane suddenly appeared. It instantly flew into the sky and soon vanished.

Zhou Wen and Li Xuan leaned against the wall as they held onto a Buddha statue with both hands to avoid being swept away by the hurricane. The few students weren’t that lucky as they tumbled and crashed in the hurricane, leaving their bodies bloody. It was unknown if any of them were killed by the impact.

“That bird just now… It can’t be a Golden-Winged Roc, right?” Li Xuan said in surprise as he looked up into the sky.

“It shouldn’t be. If it’s a Golden-Winged Roc, I’m afraid it will be even more terrifying.” Zhou Wen shook his head. Seeing the students screaming incessantly, and although they weren’t dead, who knew how many bones had been fractured. He didn’t dare touch them and since he didn’t have any healing skills, all he could do was head out to call the college’s medical department and get the doctor to rush over to treat them.

“Old Zhou, I think that the golden bird is on the peak of Dragon Gate Grotto. Shall we go and take a look?” Li Xuan

suggested.

Zhou Wen looked at the chick that had regained its composure and pondered for a moment before shaking his head. “I think it’s best if we don’t go. That giant bird is probably extraordinary. We aren’t its match.”

As the two spoke, a doctor and tutor came over. The first tutor to arrive was Zhou Wen’s new tutor. Upon seeing the tragic state of the five students, the new tutor couldn’t help but frown.

“What happened?” the new tutor, Wu Yusheng, asked Zhou Wen and Li Xuan.

Li Xuan recounted what had happened in detail. Wu Yusheng was doubtful of what he had heard. When he looked above Dragon Gate Grotto, he frowned and said, “I never heard that there are birds and dimensional creatures lurking outside Dragon Gate Grotto. Don’t run around. Leave immediately and I’ll head up to take a look.”

Wu Yusheng summoned a sword and flew on it, heading towards the top of the mountain.

“Wow, it’s a flying sword Companion Beast. It’s just too cool. I’ve wanted it for a long time, but only a few dimensional zones drop flying sword Companion Beasts. Their numbers are very rare and they don’t drop anywhere near us,” Li Xuan said in envy as he looked at the flying sword beneath Wu Yusheng’s feet.

Speaking of the flying sword, Zhou Wen recalled the little girl and the purple-copper flying sword. He glanced at the Dead Man Tree in-game and saw that the purple-copper fruit on the Dead Man Tree had grown to the size of a soccer ball. However, it didn’t seem ripe yet.

Suddenly, a bird cry shook the area. At the top of Dragon Gate Grotto, a golden beam of light shot into the sky.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 389 - The Demonic Organ Throne

Chapter 389 The Demonic Organ Throne

Zhou Wen looked up and saw that the golden beam was none other than the golden bird that had previously vanished into the horizon. At that moment, the giant bird spread its wings and charged towards Wu Yusheng, who was standing in the sky on his flying sword.

Wu Yusheng wasn’t indecisive. He extended his hand and summoned another flying sword Companion Beast. His ancient sword slashed at the golden bird with sharp sword beams that resembled dawn.

The golden bird dodged as well. With a flap of its wings, it tore through the sky of sword flashes and clashed with the flying sword. The flying sword split into two behind the golden bird.

Wu Yusheng’s expression changed drastically as he turned to flee on his flying sword.

That Heavenglow Sword was a top Epic Companion Beast he had spent a lot of effort in the Mt. Shu dimensional zone before having it drop. The Heavenglow Sword’s beam could rip apart a mountain, and its Life Soul, Skyglow Sword Soul, augmented the Heavenglow Sword’s beam. It allowed it to turn into a rain of swords with each sword beam dealing an area-of-effect attack.

After he obtained the Heavenglow Sword, he had experienced countless battles without having the sword damaged. Now, it snapped with just a touch of the giant golden bird's wings. He immediately knew that the golden bird was terrifying beyond imagination.

Although the flying sword beneath Wu Yusheng's feet was fast, it was not as fast as the giant golden bird. Without flying far, the giant golden bird had already rushed behind him like a bolt of golden lightning.

Wu Yusheng's face paled in fright as he hurriedly used the flying sword beneath his feet to meet the giant golden bird. He landed on a mountain wall and ran down the mountain in a sorry state.

"Stop watching. We need to leave quickly." Zhou Wen pulled Li Xuan and ran. Even Epic tutors couldn't defeat the golden bird, so if the golden bird were to flare up, it might end up turning Dragon Gate Grotto into a bloodbath. It would be too late to escape when that happened.

Crack!

The two of them had barely taken two steps before they heard a crisp sound. The sword beam that was like a rainbow was snapped by the giant bird's wings. The snapping of the flying sword was a testament to the wings' unimaginably sharpness.

Wu Yusheng was still escaping, but how could he be faster than the giant golden bird? Before he could run far, he was caught up. He was just moments from being slain by the giant golden bird's wings.

Suddenly, a figure tore through the air. The person wore a school tutor uniform and he immediately appeared at the

top of Dragon Gate Grotto as though he had teleported. With a flick of his finger, a yellow glow in the form of a talisman flew towards the golden bird.

The giant golden bird had remained unperturbed in the face of the sharp flying sword, but when it saw the talisman glow, it became somewhat apprehensive. It flapped its wings, released Wu Yusheng, and dodged the talisman glow.

The tutor who had appeared, flicked his fingers, sending out talisman glows that rained on the giant golden bird.

The golden bird flapped its wings and golden rays in the shape of feathers shot out from its wings, clashing with the talisman glows. Light exploded everywhere in the sky.

The people who had set up stalls outside Dragon Gate Grotto were already running for their lives. Zhou Wen and Li Xuan were also running, but after reaching the entrance to Dragon Gate Grotto, they didn’t directly leave. They watched from afar as the tutor fought the golden bird.

The giant golden bird was abnormally fierce and charged at his tutor with its golden feather storm. The talisman glows released by the tutor were also destroyed by the feather storm. They didn’t inflict any damage to the giant golden bird.

Zhou Wen was worried that the tutor might also be defeated by the giant bird like Wu Yusheng, when he suddenly saw a black light gush out from his white uniform.

The black light condensed in front of him, actually transforming into a huge black-colored organ. The organ looked like a piano, with black-and-white keys, but they were even larger. Furthermore, behind the organ were black metal pipes that were lined up like a small mountain.

Furthermore, the piano keys were like stairs. There were many layers, unlike ordinary pianos with only a row of keys.

The tutor ignored the giant golden bird that rushed over and calmly sat in front of the organ, his slender fingers pressing on the keys.

Zhou Wen and Li Xuan immediately heard ancient, soothing music. It was somewhat different from the sounds produced by an ordinary piano that Zhou Wen had heard before. The sounds of a piano clearly lacked the heavy and distant vibes of the organ.

“He appeared… That’s Chancellor Leng’s Demonic Organ Throne… He’s a man who has once fought with gods…” Li Xuan looked up at the tutor in the sky with a pleasant surprise.

“Chancellor Leng? The chancellor of our school?” Zhou Wen was slightly surprised. He had been in Sunset College for so long, but he had never seen the chancellor before. Usually, work was done by the managing vice-chancellor who oversaw the daily operations.

“Probably. Although I’ve never met him, his Demonic Organ Throne is too famous. It can’t be wrong. Back when Old Master An passed away, the An family was without a leader. The Senate wanted to place Sunset College under the League’s management and sent someone from Member of Parliament Dugu’s family with a Mythical Companion Beast over, but they were barred from entering by Chancellor Leng’s Demonic Organ Throne. They weren’t even able to enter the school’s main gate before they returned with their faces ashen. Even a Mythical Companion Beast wasn’t able to break through the Demonic Organ Throne. That made the

Demonic Organ Throne famous across the League. Everyone knew about it," Li Xuan said in excitement.

As Li Xuan spoke, Chancellor Leng's slender fingers were already dancing across the organ keys. Bleak and open music sounded from the organ. The sound waves inside the metal pipe resonated and spread out like ripples.

The giant golden bird had been charging fiercely at Chancellor Leng with its golden-feather storm. However, after hearing the music, its actions slowed down.

By the time it flew to the organ's side, it had already held back the golden-feather storm. The ferocity it wore on its face had disappeared, and it did not continue attacking. Instead, it retracted its wings and stood beside the organ as though it was listening to Chancellor Leng's music.

Zhou Wen also listened to the music and, without realizing it, tears streamed down his cheeks. By the side, Li Xuan was already awash with tears.

The students who had yet to escape Dragon Gate Grotto also cried bitterly.

Zhou Wen wiped his tears and focused his gaze at the giant golden bird in the sky. He saw a crystalline tear seep out from the corner of the golden bird's eye as though it could fall at any moment.

Chancellor Leng's Life Soul is actually an organ. That's really rare, but my emotions aren't really affected by organ music, so why am I crying? Zhou Wen looked at the Demonic Organ Throne in the sky in shock and puzzlement.

At that moment, a tear finally fell from the corner of the golden bird's eye, like a golden gem falling from the sky.

The chick that had been standing on Zhou Wen’s shoulder suddenly flew up and headed straight for Dragon Gate Grotto before swallowing the golden bird’s tear. It then flew back to Zhou Wen’s shoulder.

The music in the sky stopped. Chancellor Leng looked at the chick on Zhou Wen’s shoulder and his calm gaze, which seemed to have a strength that could penetrate one’s heart, left Zhou Wen slightly alarmed.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 390 - Puzzlemen

Chapter 390 Puzzlemen

However, Chancellor Leng's gaze did not linger on them for too long. He retracted his gaze after taking one look and looked at the giant golden bird beside him.

"Go back. From now on, no one will bother you again." Chancellor Leng seemed to be speaking to the golden bird.

The giant golden bird actually lowered its head, as though expressing its understanding before it spread its wings and flew back to Dragon Gate Grotto's peak.

"From today onwards, no one is to ascend to the peak of Dragon Gate Grotto." Chancellor Leng stood up and the Demonic Organ Throne vanished. With that, he soared into the sky and disappeared in the blink of an eye.

"When can I be as powerful as Chancellor Leng? To make such a terrifying dimensional creature obey my orders with a snap of my fingers," Li Xuan said enviously.

"Is Chancellor Leng at the Mythical stage?" Zhou Wen asked with a frown.

"I don't think so. I heard that he's at the peak of the Epic stage. The Demonic Organ Throne is a Perfect Life Soul. Furthermore, people say that Chancellor Leng is likely the human that's closest to the Mythical stage. He's just half a step away from stepping into the Mythical stage." Li Xuan's words were filled with admiration for Chancellor Leng.

“I never knew there was such a strong person in Luoyang!” Zhou Wen exclaimed.

“Definitely. Chancellor Leng is Overseer An’s tutor. How can he not be strong considering how he taught such a strong student like Overseer An?” Li Xuan said.

“An Tianzuo’s tutor?” Zhou Wen didn’t think that it was impressive for someone to produce An Tianzuo with their teachings. However, Chancellor Leng was really strong. The music-type Demonic Organ Throne Life Soul gave Zhou Wen an eye-opener. He had never heard of making such terrifying dimensional creatures retreat without any bloodshed.

Recalling the music from the Demonic Organ Throne, Zhou Wen felt that something was amiss.

Zhou Wen wasn’t an emotional person. Normally, when he was listening to music, he didn’t experience many emotional upheavals. Yet, he had actually cried. This didn’t seem right.

Is it really due to the music from the Demonic Organ Throne affecting my emotions? Zhou Wen felt that it wasn’t the case.

“Why are you in a daze? Let’s go. We still have to complete our homework mission.” Seeing Zhou Wen standing there in a daze without saying anything, Li Xuan nudged him.

Zhou Wen followed Li Xuan back to Dragon Gate Grotto, but he kept thinking about the music that Chancellor Leng had played using the Demonic Organ Throne.

It’s not the music that affected my emotions—definitely not. Others might not mind the minute changes, but Zhou Wen wanted to understand the differences as he constantly mulled over the reason.

“What are you waiting for? My homework mission is done. It’s your turn,” Li Xuan said as he recorded a video of Zhou Wen on his phone.

Zhou Wen wasn’t in the mood to do the homework mission right now. He immediately drew his Bamboo Blade and charged at the Stone Beast herd. With one blade per strike, he nimbly killed ten Stone Beasts before turning around to head back.

He planned on checking the information regarding sound-type powers, and then figure out the real reason for having the music from the Demonic Organ Throne affect his mood, or if it was some other power.

Li Xuan was already used to Zhou Wen’s various strange actions, so he let him be and didn’t ask further.

After leaving Dragon Gate Grotto, Zhou Wen headed to the school library. The information there was more comprehensive than the Intranet, and he soon found the section where music-related matters resided. There were bookshelves spanning dozens of meters, a total of four rows. They contained books covering music.

Zhou Wen took a look and realized that most of them were books related to music theory and knowledge, or they taught one how to sing. He rarely saw information on music-type Primordial Energy Arts.

It’s no wonder there are so few people cultivating music-type Primordial Energy Arts. With so much information just teaching people music theory, there’s nothing to do with cultivation. Zhou Wen read through the books on the bookshelves. After searching for a long time, he only found a few books related to the music-type Primordial Energy Arts.

From the information he had, Zhou Wen realized that music-type Primordial Energy Arts were indeed very interesting, or perhaps—special.

The cultivation method of music-type Primordial Energy Arts was about the same as the typical Primordial Energy Art. Interestingly, the music-type Primordial Energy Arts had relatively special Primordial Energy seas.

Typically, a Primordial Energy Art's Primordial Energy sea was in one of the three dantians, but a music-type Primordial Energy Art used the lungs as a Primordial Energy sea. It was very rare.

Furthermore, it was different from what the average person would imagine. There was no mention of music affecting one emotionally in the music-type information. It only mentioned music frequency and oscillation theory.

And the destructive power of music-type powers mainly came from the pressure of sound.

Zhou Wen read a lot, but he didn't understand why the Demonic Organ Throne could affect the emotions of humans and even dimensional creatures. Although there were some extraordinary theories, they hadn't been verified. Furthermore, Zhou Wen felt that the theories didn't match the Demonic Organ Throne's powers.

Without finding the answer he wanted, Zhou Wen had the urge to directly ask Chancellor Leng, but even tutors and the other vice-chancellors had trouble meeting him. As a student, how could he meet Chancellor Leng?

The library reached its closing hours when the sky darkened. Zhou Wen had no choice but to return to his dorm and

search for information on the music-type powers online, but he failed to find the answer he wanted.

However, while browsing the school forum, Zhou Wen saw a thread regarding music-type Primordial Energy Arts.

The thread name and content intrigued Zhou Wen. The thread was named “Space Dimensionality of Sound,” and the person who posted it was a student’s ID. Few people paid attention to it, and there were only a few dozen clicks. There were also very few replies.

There were very few people in Sunset College who cultivated music-type Primordial Energy Arts, so very few people were interested in this thread. However, Zhou Wen’s eyes lit up when he saw it.

Although the content was a little strange and seemed unrealistic, it was very interesting.

After Zhou Wen read the thread, he seemed to understand why the Demonic Organ Throne could affect his emotions. However, there were many things he couldn’t understand. The thread didn’t have the answers to his questions.

Zhou Wen saw that the thread was posted two years ago. The author’s ID wasn’t online either. When he checked the author’s post history, he was somewhat disappointed that this was the only thread. From the looks of it, he wasn’t a person who often logged on to the forum.

He attempted to send a private message to the other party only with the hope of giving it a try and raising a few questions that troubled him.

Zhou Wen originally didn’t have much hope, but to his surprise, the other party replied with a message shortly after

and answered his questions in detail. Zhou Wen had never heard of any of those strange explanations which were unheard of, but they answered his questions.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 391 - Leng Zongzheng

Chapter 391 Leng Zongzheng

Leng Zongzheng was fiddling with trinkets while looking at his cell phone. It had been two years since he posted an article on the forum. It received very few replies, but someone had sent him a private message on the forum today.

Leng Zongzheng was just casually surfing the net when he realized that the private message the other party had sent was actually some questions regarding music and space. He originally wrote this message off, thinking that it was the same as the students from before. They would just hound him with questions about methods to master a music-type Primordial Energy Art, as well as how to use music-type skills or reform all beings with the use of music.

If those were the questions, Leng Zongzheng couldn’t be bothered to answer. He didn’t believe that music had any ability to infect the emotions of all beings.

Everyone thought that his Demonic Organ Throne could reform all beings, believing that he used the magical powers of music to touch those creatures. However, Leng Zongzheng scoffed in derision to such suggestions.

He was never someone who could infect others—no matter whether it was music or anything. He didn’t believe that he had any special influence on others.

When he was young, Leng Zongzheng was called “Expressionless” by his classmates and friends, as well as

given nicknames such as “Masked Man” or “Wooden Block” because he didn’t express any emotions. Even smiles were very difficult for him.

Those people who asked him how to use his charm and music to infect all beings were laughable in Leng Zongzheng’s eyes.

These few questions are rather interesting. Leng Zongzheng finished reading Zhou Wen’s questions and wrote down his reply by answering the questions.

Soon, the other party sent another private message over and asked a few more questions.

This time, Leng Zongzheng was a little surprised. This was because after receiving his answer, the other party had a new slew of questions.

To be able to understand his answer so quickly and to draw inferences and come up with more questions indicated that the other party was good at active thinking.

This piqued Leng Zongzheng’s interest. He replied to the other party’s question and even secretly included some matters at a deeper level in his answer. He wanted to see if the other party could see through the problem.

After sending the message, he waited for a while, but there was no reply. Leng Zongzheng couldn’t help but feel a little disappointed. If the mind of the person’s activity was only at this level, it wasn’t enough to satisfy Leng Zongzheng despite it being pretty good.

Ever since he taught An Tianzuo, Leng Zongzheng had no longer taught new students. It wasn’t that he couldn’t teach, but he felt uninterested.

Once one taught a student who was able to understand anything in one setting and learn anything related, teaching students who were unable to understand anything quickly was exasperating. However, Leng Zongzheng had never given his patience to others because his patience was fully focused on research. If not, he wouldn’t have achieved what he had today.

Even the six families of the League feared his Demonic Organ Throne. Everyone thought that he was talented, but little did they know about the effort he had put in.

In this era, everyone believed that science was useless. Only dimensional crystals and Companion Beasts were the future. All of them were trying their best to hunt for dimensional items.

However, Leng Zongzheng was different. Although he cultivated, he had never stopped scientific research. From his point of view, those god-like dimensional creatures were nothing of that sort. They were just creatures from other worlds, probably not much different from aliens.

The mystical powers they possessed were similar to that of technology. However, the laws of those mystical powers were the laws of other worlds, completely different from those of the League.

Therefore, he had always been studying their power systems. The one he had studied the most was space. Others might imagine that the Demonic Organ Throne had music attributes or was a music-type Life Soul, but they were terribly wrong. This was because the Demonic Organ Throne was never a music-type, but a spatial-time Life Soul.

The music was only a form of spatial manipulation used by the Demonic Organ Throne. Neither did it have the

infectious ability of music. The music he played was mainly used to change the frequency of sound and affect the brain frequency of living creatures. This was a very brilliant technique, not his talent.

Leng Zongzheng had initially thought that the matter would end here, but to his surprise, he received another private message? It was from the same ID. There were a few more questions.

After looking at these few questions, Leng Zongzheng was truly intrigued by this person. From these few questions, he could already confirm that the other party had already guessed that the Demonic Organ Throne was not a music-type but a spatial-type.

To be able to think of this set of problems, this person must be one of the people who saw my battle with the Golden-Winged Roc at Dragon Gate Grotto today. Who could it be? A young man with a golden chick on his shoulder flashed across Leng Zongzheng’s mind.

It should be him, right? Although Leng Zongzheng felt that it was likely the youth, he didn’t have the intention to verify it. Even though he could easily find out who the other party was, he didn’t do so.

Although the other party was an excellent young man, he wasn’t at a level that made him interested in finding out who he was.

However, it was rare for someone to be willing to learn and think. Leng Zongzheng answered Zhou Wen’s question and even gave him some tips before suggesting that he take a look at some famous works that involved spatial dimensions.

Leng Zongzheng was aware that this knowledge was insipid. Ignoring this world filled with magical powers, very few people could sit down and learn such knowledge even before the dimensional storms appeared.

There were a lot of things that needed to be memorized and the required knowledge was broad. If one wasn’t an expert in such matters, they probably wouldn’t be able to understand it. They would need to read up and reference a lot of information.

However, Leng Zongzheng believed that if the other party did not even have the patience and ability to learn, there was no need to waste his time.

Humans had thousands of ways of living, but to have outstanding achievements in certain aspects, one had to be able to treat boredom as enjoyment. One had to endure loneliness.

There were no friends on the path to studies, only hard work and pursuits.

After Zhou Wen read the message from Leng Zongzheng, he found the idea interesting. He sent another private message, but this time, he didn’t reply to his questions and only replied with a line of text:

“The answers you want are all in those books.”

Zhou Wen originally only wanted to figure out the strength of the Demonic Organ Throne, but after delving deeper, he realized that the Demonic Organ Throne was actually the power of space. This discovery surprised him and piqued his interest.

This was because his Lost Country was also a space-type power. He felt that he could indeed study knowledge about space.

The next morning, Zhou Wen went to the library to borrow some books regarding this, but he really didn’t understand many of them. He had never heard of the terms, formulas, and laws, so all he could do was seek out references as he read.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 392 - Success

Chapter 392 Success

Zhou Wen realized that he had been very busy recently. There were too many books to read, and even the amount of time he spent gaming was reduced.

When he could use Lost Country again, Zhou Wen went to the underground sea. This time, he didn't head directly into the sea but controlled the blood-colored avatar parallel to the water surface.

Not long after, a huge shadow appeared beneath the sea. Nine black dragons roared as they emerged from the sea.

After sacrificing the White Shadow of Poison, Zhou Wen dived into the sea and rapidly approached a black dragon. However, the black dragon's tail swept up a shocking wave that sent the seawater hitting Zhou Wen's body.

Zhou Wen could only use the impact of the waves to distance himself from the black dragon before tearing out of the sea. However, he didn't dare fly too high because the sapphire-like sky above was similarly fraught with danger. He could die faster if he approached it.

One black dragon after another rushed over, their mouths spewing water like a volcanic eruption.

Zhou Wen used Ghost Steps to charge into the sea again. This time, he identified the position of the war wagon and swam towards it. With the aid of the wagon, he blocked the black dragons' devouring and attacks.

Zhou Wen kept every action of the nine black dragons in his calculations. The blood-colored avatar kept circling around the black dragons while fleeing to the back of the war wagon, keeping close to it.

A black dragon rushed over from one side as Zhou Wen charged over without any hesitation. He struck it with his palm, but when the Poison Dragon Palm touched the black dragon's scales, Zhou Wen didn't even look at the outcome. He switched to the Lost Country Life Soul and used teleportation to escape.

This time, he was very close to the surface. After teleporting, he used Ghost Steps to rush straight out of the sea. The black dragons angrily charged out of the water and chased after him.

Zhou Wen spread his arm wing behind him as he used infinite Ghost Steps to dodge the attacks of the nine black dragons, rushing towards a cave on a nearby mountain cliff.

Thankfully, the nine black dragons weren't able to leave the sea, allowing Zhou Wen to barely escape into the cave. From afar, the nine black dragons roared in the sea, stirring up waves. It was frightening.

Zhou Wen stood in the cave looking for the black dragon that the Poison Dragon Palm had hit. Others couldn't tell apart the nine black dragons as they looked identical, but after studying them for so long, Zhou Wen was extremely familiar with them. He immediately found the black dragon that had been struck by the Poison Dragon Palm.

Around its abdomen, Zhou Wen saw a black palm print. As the dragon was black, Zhou Wen almost failed to notice the palm print. After careful inspection, he found the palm print

that was only slightly different in color from the black dragon.

I hope it works. Zhou Wen knew that it was impossible for him to kill Mythical creatures at the moment. Now, he was still unable to fight real Mythical creatures. He could only attempt to kill the black dragons chained up.

After waiting for quite a while, Zhou Wen didn’t see the black dragon die from the poison even after the nine black dragons lost their patience and dived back to the bottom of the water.

After all, it’s a Mythical creature. Its poison resistance will definitely be higher. I’ll wait a little longer. Zhou Wen left the dungeon and planned on heading down to see if the black dragon had been poisoned to death when Lost Country’s cooldown was up tomorrow.

Now, the blood-colored avatar couldn’t die. Once it died, it had to respawn, and all of his previous efforts would go to waste.

Without doing anything too dangerous, Zhou Wen switched to Pool City to grind for Epic creatures to raise his stats to 40.

He was quite lucky today. After killing a few Jade Toads, a 20-valued Poison Crystal dropped. He even had a Jade Toad Companion Egg drop. Unfortunately, it had average stats.

Zhou Wen had actually obtained quite a number of Companion Eggs, but he mostly fed them to his Mythical pets as food. Their interest in high-level Companion Beasts was higher than ordinary food.

Unless it was a Companion Egg with excellent stats, Zhou Wen wouldn’t keep them.

Why isn’t this phone game equipped with autoplay? If only I had it. Zhou Wen spent quite a while grinding and inevitably felt bored. After all, repeatedly killing the same monster wasn’t challenging at all. It was just a time-grinder.

“Zhou Wen, are you home?” Someone knocked on the door outside and Zhou Wen could tell that it was Wang Lu. When he opened the door, he found Wang Lu standing at the yard’s entrance.

“What’s the matter?” Zhou Wen walked to the yard and opened the yard door.

Wang Lu curled her lips and said, “Can’t I look for you if there’s nothing wrong?”

“You can, but I’m very busy at the moment. If there’s nothing special, I’ll get back to my reading.” Zhou Wen walked back as he spoke.

“A gaming addict like you actually reads? Let me see what books you read.” Wang Lu seemed to have something to say, but when she heard that Zhou Wen was reading, she became intrigued. She followed Zhou Wen into his dorm.

Wang Lu casually flipped through the few books on Zhou Wen’s couch and said with a smile, “String Theory, Quantum Teleportation, Diamond Perfection Sutra, and Superior and Wondrous Numinous Treasure Scripture of Limitless Salvation and Most High. Your hobby sure is widespread. You go from front-line scientific theories to idealism. Are you a materialist or idealist?”

“I am whatever that brings me benefits.” As Zhou Wen flipped through the books in his hand, he used his phone to check on the references.

“You’re quite pragmatic.” Wang Lu placed the books back to their original spot before sitting beside Zhou Wen. She looked at the book in Zhou Wen’s hand and saw that it was explaining something about branes.

“What’s the matter?” Zhou Wen asked again.

“I took care of those two pets for you previously. You said you would repay me the favor. Are you free? Do you want to repay me now?” Wang Lu said as she narrowed her eyes.

“What do you want me to do?” Every time Zhou Wen went out, he would leave the antelope and chick to Wang Lu to take care of them. Back then, he had indeed said that he owed her a favor and would slowly repay her in the future.

“Eat with me and meet someone,” said Wang Lu.

“Who?” Zhou Wen frowned slightly.

“Someone I don’t wish to see, but he’s someone I have to. Why are you asking so many questions? Are you trying to renege on your promise?” Wang Lu stared at Zhou Wen.

“No, I was just asking. When is it?” Zhou Wen thought that it made sense. It was pointless asking since he had to return the favor.

“Now, go and change your clothes. We’ll leave now and rush back before the school gates are closed,” said Wang Lu.

Zhou Wen didn’t ask any further questions as he returned to his bedroom to change out of his uniform and changed into

his casual clothes before leaving the school with Wang Lu.

He was very puzzled as to why Wang Lu would bring him along for dinner with someone else. However, he didn’t pursue the matter since Wang Lu didn’t elaborate.

After arriving at the restaurant, Wang Lu headed straight for a private room with great familiarity. Zhou Wen saw that there was already someone sitting in the private room—a middle-aged man, but he didn’t recognize him.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 393 - Tes

Chapter 393 Tes

“Uncle, this is my classmate, Zhou Wen.” Wang Lu pointed at Zhou Wen and introduced him before pointing at the middle-aged man. “This is my uncle. You can call him Uncle too.”

“Uncle,” Zhou Wen greeted, but he felt somewhat puzzled. He didn’t know why Wang Lu had brought him along to meet her family member.

“Sit down,” Wang Lu’s uncle said indifferently without any intention of communicating with Zhou Wen.

Wang Lu sat opposite him and tugged at Zhou Wen, gesturing to him to sit beside her. The two of them looked at the middle-aged man across the table.

“Little Lu, you should have had enough fun, right? It’s time to go back and cultivate seriously. Don’t keep your parents worried,” said Wang Guotao as he stared at Wang Lu.

“Uncle, things are progressing well with my cultivation at Sunset College. Sunset College is one of the top ten colleges in the League. The tutors and teaching resources here are all very good…” Before Wang Lu could finish her sentence, she was interrupted by Wang Guotao.

“I’m more familiar with Sunset College’s standards than you are. The teaching standards there are indeed excellent

compared to ordinary schools, but it’s still a school that’s targeted at the masses at the end of the day. It’s impossible for it to teach according to your characteristics and abilities, much less teach you the secret techniques of our Wang family,” said Wang Guotao.

“I don’t necessarily have to learn the family’s secret techniques. I think the status quo is pretty good,” Wang Lu said as she bit her lip.

“Do you really think that learning from things catered to the masses is good? If that’s the case, the disappointment won’t be limited to your parents, Even I’m disappointed,” said Wang Guotao.

“Uncle, I wish to continue studying in school. You dote on me the most, help me,” pleaded Wang Lu.

“I can let it pass on any other matter, but not this. You’ve already wasted half a year. If you don’t return and focus on your cultivation, how can you keep up with the progress of your siblings? You’ll have to take charge of the Wang family in the future. If your strength can’t suppress those of the same generation, how will the masses submit to you in the future?” Wang Guotao said.

“It’s not like I’m planning on taking charge of the Wang family.” Wang Lu muttered softly.

“What did you say?” Although her voice was soft, Wang Guotao still heard her. His expression turned cold.

“Nothing. I’m saying that cultivation is the same in college. One’s cultivation progress will not be slower than at home,” Wang Lu said as she pointed at Zhou Wen and said, “Zhou Wen is my schoolmate. He’s also studying in school. He’s much stronger than my siblings.”

“He’s a member of the An family, so the college naturally takes great care of him.” Wang Guotao clearly knew about Zhou Wen and continued, “Besides, saying that he’s stronger than your siblings? I don’t think so.”

When Wang Lu heard this, she immediately felt delighted. She knew that Wang Guotao was acting as she had imagined. He couldn’t bear humiliation, especially when the Wang family was insulted.

“If you don’t believe me, you can test him. If he is indeed stronger than my siblings who cultivate at home, how about letting me remain on campus and cultivate?” Wang Lu took the opportunity to say.

“Since you brought him here, I’m afraid you won’t give up if I say no.” As Wang Guotao spoke, he looked at Zhou Wen. “What are you best at?”

“I’m not particularly good at anything,” Zhou Wen answered.

Wang Lu hurriedly added, “Uncle, Zhou Wen means that he is proficient in everything. You can test him as you please.”

Is that what I mean? Zhou Wen didn’t know whether to laugh or cry, but he couldn’t say it out loud in front of Wang Guotao.

“Your grandfather has been cultivating an entire lifetime, and even he doesn’t dare say that he’s proficient in everything. Do you think those words are suitable for a student?” said Wang Guotao sternly.

With that said, he ignored Wang Lu’s reaction and looked at Zhou Wen. “Since you aren’t good at anything, I’ll test you on the Wang family’s usual cultivation problem.”

Zhou Wen looked at Wang Lu who gave him a pleading look. Her hands were clasped under the table, moving it like she was praying to a god.

“Uncle, please speak.” Zhou Wen thought for a moment. He had no choice but to help her since he owed her a favor.

Wang Guotao poured a cup of tea and pushed it in front of Zhou Wen. He said indifferently, “The most important thing about cultivation is the foundation. It’s like building. If the foundation hasn’t been built, there’s no way you can build a skyscraper. Even if it’s built forcefully, it will quickly collapse. Now, I’ll test your foundation.”

Zhou Wen looked at Wang Guotao in puzzlement, unsure how he could test him with a cup of tea.

Wang Guotao remained unperturbed. He poured himself a cup of tea and placed it on the table in front of him.

The table was made of rosewood. It was about ten centimeters thick and was rather sturdy. With a casual press, Wang Guotao made the teacup sink into the table. The cup’s mouth became parallel to the table, as if it was embedded in it. The cup wasn’t damaged, and not a single drop of tea inside spilled.

“Uncle, aren’t you making things difficult for him? Zhou Wen has never cultivated our family’s Heart Destroying Palm. Besides, which of my siblings can even achieve a level like yours?” Wang Lu immediately objected.

“If you can’t do it, it means that the teachers of the academy are lacking. So, it’s best you go back home and cultivate,” said Wang Guotao calmly.

Wang Lu opened her mouth to protest, but she didn’t know how to rebut Wang Guotao.

“I’ll give it a try,” Zhou Wen said as he looked at the teacup in front of him.

“It’s a good thing that young people are willing to try. I won’t make things difficult for you either. As long as you can sink a third of the teacup into the table without shattering the teacup, I’ll count it as a pass,” Wang Guotao said.

Zhou Wen nodded and reached out to smack the teacup.

“Wait,” Wang Lu called out to Zhou Wen nervously and looked at him pleadingly. “Be careful. Don’t shatter the teacup. Just get it in if you can.”

Wang Lu thought that if the teacup were to shatter, there was no way to protest. As long as the teacup didn’t shatter, or even if a third of the cup didn’t sink in, she could still bargain with Wang Guotao.

Zhou Wen actually didn’t quite understand why Wang Lu insisted on studying on campus when her family had such good conditions. Wasn’t she rejecting what was near at hand and seeking what was far away?

However, it wasn’t his place to interfere with Wang Lu’s matters. He just needed to return the favor.

“Don’t worry,” Zhou Wen said to Wang Lu before reaching out to smack the teacup in front of him.

Wang Lu fell into despair when she heard a cracking sound.

The table was completely fine as the teacup was smashed to pieces by Zhou Wen. Wang Lu felt the room spinning,

wishing she could plant her head to the ground. She thought, Did I have a screw loose in my head? Why did I think of bringing Zhou Wen here?

“Young man, there are many things in this world that can’t be resolved simply with great strength,” Wang Guotao said before ignoring Zhou Wen. He looked at Wang Lu and said, “Little Lu, return to campus and pack up. I’ll send someone to fetch you home tomorrow.”

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 394 - Tea Pattern

Chapter 394 Tea Pattern

Wang Lu sadly hung her head low, unable to bring herself to retort. She could only blame herself for bringing a fool like Zhou Wen here. She had already told him not to shatter the cup, but great, he ended up smashing it to pieces. The water had spilled onto the table and it was an appalling sight.

“Uncle, I’ll head back first,” Wang Lu said as she stood up.

“Hold on.” Zhou Wen sat there motionless as he called out to Wang Lu.

Wang Guotao could not help but frown slightly as he looked at Zhou Wen. “Young man, although your surname isn’t An, you are still a part of the An family. You should know your limits when doing things.”

Zhou Wen didn’t explain himself because it wasn’t worth wasting his time explaining things to irrelevant people.

Pointing at the table, Zhou Wen said, “Uncle, it’s best if you give an evaluation. Tell me what standard this strike is for members of your Wang family’s younger generation.”

“The results are already very obvious. Do I still need to comment on it?” Wang Guotao asked.

“In that case, Uncle, are you allowing Wang Lu to stay on campus for cultivation?” Zhou Wen asked Wang Guotao.

Wang Guotao was amused by Zhou Wen. He looked at him and said, “It’s rare to have young people like you who can disregard their pride. However, if you are really doing this for the sake of Little Lu, you should let her return home for cultivation. Alright, both of you can leave.”

Wang Guotao’s words were clearly saying that Zhou Wen was shameless, but Zhou Wen remained unmoved. “I don’t know if going back to cultivate is a good choice for Wang Lu, but since we had an agreement, and I’ve done it already, shouldn’t you allow Wang Lu to make her choice on returning?”

A cultured person like Wang Guotao couldn’t help but have his expression turn cold when he heard Zhou Wen’s words. He said, “I originally wanted to leave you some dignity, but since you don’t want it, don’t blame me for being blunt. A standard like yours is only about the same level as a child who has just gained some initial mastery in the Wang family. At most, it can be considered brute force, so there’s nothing to be evaluated.”

Wang Guotao also felt somewhat vexed. He was wondering why Zhou Wen was so clueless. He got up and prepared to leave, having no wish to speak to the unreasonable Zhou Wen.

“Zhou Wen, let’s head back,” Wang Lu said as she walked to Zhou Wen. She was well aware of Wang Guotao’s temper, so it was impossible for them to fool him.

Zhou Wen didn’t move and continued sitting in front of the table. Then, he reached out his hand and pushed the teacup fragments on the table to one side. He looked at Wang Guotao and said, “Uncle, please hold your step. Are you sure

that the beginners of your family can do this? Then, please demonstrate for me so that I'll admit defeat wholeheartedly."

Wang Lu had wanted to stop Zhou Wen from speaking, but when her eyes met the table, she immediately let out a cry as she looked at the table in surprise.

Wang Guotao originally didn't want to bother with Zhou Wen. It was unbecoming for him to keep arguing with Zhou Wen, but when he heard Wang Lu's exclamation, he couldn't help but turn around and see her staring intently at the table. Even Wang Guotao followed her gaze.

With a single glance, Wang Guotao's pupils contracted, but his eyes widened as they formed a strong contrast.

On the surface of the yellowish-brown wood grain on the table, were veins of tea leaves. On a closer look, one could see that there weren't patterns. They were obviously the tea leaves that had been forcibly pressed into the table. The tea leaves were not damaged at all, and the leaf parts were clearly visible. They looked like the original patterns of the wooden table.

Impossible! Wang Guotao walked to the front of the table again. He stretched out his hand to pry open the fragments of the teacups. Soon, he discovered that there were no tea leaves in the teacup fragments. There were no tea leaves in the spilled tea.

Wang Guotao almost couldn't believe his eyes. It was true that he was able to slam the teacup into the table using Yin forces, but the hardness of porcelain was not bad after all. However, tea leaves were brittle, and once they were soaked in water, just a slight nudge would rip them apart. How could they possibly be slammed into the wood?

The strength of Zhou Wen’s palm shattered the cup. Yet, pieces of tea leaves were slammed into the table without any damage. Regardless, Wang Guotao found it impossible.

Wang Guotao stretched out his hand to touch the tea leaves, and with a slight tug, the tea leaves immediately tore. He could clearly see the leaf marks on the table.

They’re not fake? Wang Guotao was dumbfounded again as he stared blankly at the table. He really couldn’t figure out how Zhou Wen had managed to do it.

Beside her, Wang Lu was surprised and delighted as she said, “You actually pushed the soaked tea leaves into the wooden table. Furthermore, the tea leaves aren’t damaged at all. How did you do it?”

“It’s not difficult. I just learned a little trick from school. I wonder what standard this trick is in the Wang family?” Zhou Wen spoke to Wang Lu, but his eyes were on Wang Guotao.

Wang Guotao looked at Zhou Wen with a complicated expression. He wasn’t able to accomplish this. He had never seen such usage of a Yin force before.

“Is this a technique you learned in school?” Wang Guotao took a deep breath before asking Zhou Wen.

“Yes, I just learned it from reading a thread on the school forum a few days ago.” Zhou Wen knew that even if he could do as Wang Guotao did—pushing the teacup into the table—Wang Guotao probably wouldn’t let Wang Lu stay.

He had to prove that the things he learned in school were better than what the Wang family had to offer. Only then would Wang Guotao consider letting Wang Lu stay.

“Uncle, I doubt any of my siblings can do something like what Zhou Wen did, right? You aren’t allowed to go back on your word,” Wang Lu said happily.

Wang Guotao looked at the tea leaves that had sunk into the table with a complicated expression. After a while, he said to Wang Lu, “You can stay, but I will send someone to test you every month from now on. If you can’t reach the assessment standards, you need to return immediately.”

“Uncle, thank you. You’re great.” Wang Lu was overjoyed as she pulled Zhou Wen to his feet and said, “Zhou Wen, let’s go.”

“Wait, Little Lu, go get the bill first. I have something to say to Zhou Wen,” Wang Guotao stopped Wang Lu.

Seeing Wang Lu look at him suspiciously, Wang Guotao said with a smile, “Don’t worry. I’m not that unreasonable. I just want to ask a few questions about you. I’m afraid Zhou Wen wouldn’t dare tell the truth in front of you.”

“Uncle, just ask me if you have anything to ask,” said Wang Lu.

“Go settle the bill.” Wang Guotao spoke again.

Wang Lu could only obediently settle the bill, but before she left, she kept winking at Zhou Wen, as though warning him to be careful with his words.

After Wang Lu left, Wang Guotao asked, “Zhou Wen, how’s your relationship with Little Lu?”

“Not bad,” Zhou Wen answered truthfully.

Wang Guotao nodded slightly before saying to Zhou Wen, “If you really have Little Lu’s interests at heart, I hope that you can maintain a certain distance from her in the future.”

“Why?” Zhou Wen frowned.

“Because you are Wang Mingyuan’s student,” said Wang Guotao simply.

“I understand. Uncle, don’t worry. Wang Lu and I are just ordinary friends.” Zhou Wen replied calmly.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 395 - Becoming a Videographer Again

Chapter 395 Becoming a Videographer Again

Zhou Wen could understand Wang Guotao's worries. In the League, Wang Mingyuan was taboo. His reputation might even be worse than the devil, Jing Daoxian.

With the branding as Wang Mingyuan's student on him, no one from a wealthy family in the League would dare to get too close to him to avoid being considered to be in cahoots with him.

Wang Guotao only said one sentence, but he didn't say anything after that. One sentence was all that was needed when speaking to smart people. For those who weren't smart, it was useless no matter how much was said. Therefore, he only mentioned one key point.

Zhou Wen and Wang Lu left the restaurant together. Wang Lu was very happy, so she didn't return to school directly. Instead, she took Zhou Wen around the mall and bought quite a lot of things. She also bought some clothes for him to show her gratitude.

"Zhou Wen, how did you do it? You actually slammed the tea leaves into the table. Even my uncle was dumbfounded. He definitely can't do it," Wang Lu said.

Zhou Wen said with a smile, "Actually, it's not completely Yin force. It's a technique I've been learning recently. It's considered a trick."

Zhou Wen was telling the truth. He was certain that he couldn’t do anything to such an extent by relying on Yin forces. The soaked tea leaves were not only soft and brittle, but they were also separated by the teacup. Even a powerful Yin force expert like Wang Guotao couldn’t send the tea leaves into the table like him.

Zhou Wen used some of the spatial-type means, but it looked like Yin force. In fact, the Yin force played a very small role in it. It was in the same vein as Leng Zongzheng’s use of the Demonic Organ Throne. It was also the fruit of Zhou Wen’s recent reading and research.

Although there was still no way to upgrade the Lost Country to an Evolved Body, there was finally some progress. As long as he continued his research, he would eventually gain some insight.

“At least you’re smart. I’m really happy today. Are you free tomorrow? I need to complete my homework mission, so be my videographer,” Wang Lu said.

“Alright.” Zhou Wen didn’t reject it.

He didn’t deliberately distance himself from Wang Lu due to what Wang Guotao had said. He and Wang Lu were only ordinary friends, so there was nothing to hide. Furthermore, Zhou Wen wasn’t a goody-two-shoes.

Wang Lu was well aware of his situation. Since Wang Lu didn’t mind being friends with him, why would he push Wang Lu away?

As for the negative effects of being Wang Mingyuan’s student, Zhou Wen believed that he could eliminate it in the future and not let it affect his family and friends.

Of course, that was on the premise that Wang Lu didn’t mind.

After returning to his dorm, Zhou Wen headed for the underground Pool City. However, he had killed many Epic creatures inside, so finding more of them was very troublesome. All he could do was switch dungeons.

The blood-colored avatar couldn’t die, so Zhou Wen couldn’t respawn the dungeons either. All he could do was head to some safe places to grind. After some time, he didn’t have any monsters to grind.

I’ll sleep early today. I’ll check the results when I head to the underground sea tomorrow. It was rare for Zhou Wen to go to sleep so early that he woke up punctually at six in the morning.

His Lost Country cooldown time wasn’t up. After he washed up, he grabbed a book and walked to the cafeteria to eat as he read.

The few books that Leng Zongzheng introduced him to were a little too profound. Many of them had knowledge that Zhou Wen had never read before, but he didn’t find it dull.

Perhaps others who read these intelligible books might find them boring, but Zhou Wen read with great relish. From his point of view, the knowledge he didn’t understand gave him plenty of room to imagine. Rather than studying, it was better to say that Zhou Wen treated it as a storybook.

Many times, after Zhou Wen figured out what it really meant and compared it to his imagination, he realized he had been ridiculously wrong.

For someone like Zhou Wen, who was easily engrossed in everything he did, he learned everything faster than the average person.

Of course, there were also flaws. While Zhou Wen immersed himself in multi-dimensional string theory and fantasized about a magical world, he didn't realize that Wang Lu had been sitting opposite him for quite some time.

Just as Zhou Wen was about to leave, he realized that Wang Lu was sitting there.

"When did you arrive?" Zhou Wen asked.

"I really have no idea what's up with you. I can close one eye when you're obsessed with gaming, but to be so engrossed in reading such books… I'm really impressed." Wang Lu rolled her eyes at him. "Yesterday, you said you will be my videographer. Did you forget that because of your reading?"

"I haven't forgotten. What's your homework mission? Where are you going to hunt dimensional creatures?" Zhou Wen put away his book and asked.

"There's no need to hunt dimensional creatures this time. Didn't we go to the Town God's Temple previously? This homework mission is also to go to a Town God's Temple. However, it's not the tiny one from before, but the bigger one in the city," Wang Lu said as she walked.

"Your homework mission is to pray at Town God's Temple?" Zhou Wen said in surprise. He had never received such a nice homework mission.

"This is a homework mission that only special admissions students have. We need to at least defeat a guardian," Wang Lu said.

Zhou Wen followed Wang Lu to the Town God's Temple. At the same time, a person arrived in Luoyang and went to An Tianzuo's office.

"Sir, it's been a long time since we last met. You are still the same." An Tianzuo stood up to welcome him, allowing the person to enter the office.

"I'm old. The last time I saw you, I still had some black hair. But now, it's all white." Fu Yu sighed.

"Sir, you guard the East Sea and slay countless sea beasts to ensure our League's safety. You are one of the cornerstones of the League. If you claim to be old, no one in the League would dare say that they are young." An Tianzuo got someone to brew tea for Fu Yu.

"You…" Fu Yu could not help but laugh.

"Sir, is there something important for you to suddenly come to me at this time?" A person like Fu Yu would never leave the East Sea if there was nothing important. His sudden appearance without even making a phone call clearly made it unusual.

Fu Yu put down his teacup and looked at An Tianzuo as he asked, "Tianzuo, we have some relationship as master and disciple. There are some things I can't say to others directly, but to you, I won't beat about the bush."

"Sir, please speak," An Tianzuo said seriously.

"Wang Mingyuan has a student named Zhou Wen. Is he related to you?" Fu Yu asked An Tianzuo.

"Not really. He's my step-father's son with his former wife, and has nothing to do with our An family," An Tianzuo said.

“How’s your relationship with him then?” Fu Yu asked again.

“I have nothing to do with him,” said An Tianzuo without any hesitation.

“That’s good. In that case, if the people from the Special Inspector Bureau were to take him away, just turn a blind eye,” Fu Yu said.

“Sir, what do you mean by that?” An Tianzuo frowned.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 396 - Lobbyis

Chapter 396 Lobbyis

“Wang Mingyuan destroyed the Holy Tower and opened up a dimension, nearly turning Holy City into an undead city. The impact this matter brought is overly disastrous,” Fu Yu said.

“That’s Wang Mingyuan’s own fault. What has it got to do with his students? If all of Wang Mingyuan’s former students are to be punished, how many officials and generals in the League have once attended Wang Mingyuan’s lessons? Why aren’t they all to be arrested?” An Tianzuo said.

“How is that the same? Before Wang Mingyuan broke through the dimension, he deliberately got his four students to visit him. Clearly, these four students are different. Furthermore…” Fu Yu wanted to say something but held back.

“Sir, if you have something to say, just say it,” said An Tianzuo.

Fu Yu sighed and said, “If Wang Mingyuan’s matter had ended there, the League wouldn’t have their eyes peeled on his students. For your sake, let’s hope they only increase the surveillance. However, the situation now is different. Some things can’t be hidden. The dimensional passageway that Wang Mingyuan opened looks like it has closed, but in fact, it hasn’t completely closed. Or rather, it has already become extremely weak. With a certain level of strength, one can tear open the dimensional passageway.”

“A Mythical creature entered the League from there?” An Tianzuo asked with a frown.

“It would be great if that was all. The current League has a lot of restrictions on dimensional creatures. Even if they come, the danger they pose won’t be too great. The League’s brass still has ways to deal with them.” After a pause, Fu Yu said, “But I wonder what method Wang Mingyuan used. After his incident, many famous figures from the League and even some bigwigs did as Wang Mingyuan did. They entered the dimensional zone from there.”

“Perhaps they just wish to explore the dimension to gather information,” said An Tianzuo.

“Do you need to turn into a monster like Wang Mingyuan to gather information?” Fu Yu sighed.

“How is that possible? The reason Wang Mingyuan could transform into a dimensional creature is due to the power of the Holy Tower and the six temples. Now that the Holy Tower has been destroyed, the powers of the six temples won’t surge out again. How did they turn into dimensional creatures?” An Tianzuo was astonished.

“That’s the problem. It’s impossible for them to turn into dimensional creatures by themselves unless someone is secretly messing around.”

“Wang Mingyuan?”

“Is there anyone else who can do such a thing apart from him?” Fu Yu continued. “The League has been investigating. What we know now is that they have a connection with the dimensionalized Wang Mingyuan. They must have been able to dimensionalize and rush into the dimensional zones with Wang Mingyuan’s help. As for what method was used, as

well as how Wang Mingyuan returned from the dimensional zone, it’s still impossible to determine.”

“So does the Senate wish to seek an answer from students like Zhou Wen?” An Tianzuo understood what Fu Yu meant.

“Before Wang Mingyuan underwent dimensionalization, he didn’t even meet his family, but he insisted on meeting the four of them. Clearly, they have some extraordinary significance to him. Perhaps they really know something. The Senators only want an answer to prevent the situation from worsening,” Fu Yu said.

“They even invited you over, which means that this matter has been confirmed, right?” An Tianzuo asked with a calm expression.

“Tianzuo, since Zhou Wen isn’t one of yours, why do you have to interfere in this matter? Just let the bureau take him away. I believe they won’t make things difficult for Zhou Wen on account of the An family,” Fu Yu said.

“Sir, do you believe what you are saying?” An Tianzuo asked.

Fu Yu was momentarily at a loss for words. After entering the bureau, they would definitely resort to every means possible to get whatever they wanted from Zhou Wen. They might even use soul-type Companion Beasts and abilities. They might even steal Zhou Wen’s memories away. There was no way they would treat him well as Fu Yu said.

“If I don’t agree to you taking Zhou Wen away, will those Senators plan to forcibly abduct him?” An Tianzuo asked Fu Yu.

Fu Yu’s expression changed slightly when she heard that. “Tianzuo, why are you doing this? You have already said it yourself. Zhou Wen has nothing to do with you…”

An Tianzuo smiled and said, “Sir, remember when you taught me in school. When a human is extraordinary, they have to treat others as humans. When a human is mediocre, they have to treat themselves as human. Zhou Wen is a student of Sunset College. He didn’t commit any crimes. I have nothing to do with him, and I don’t even have a good impression of him, but as long as he hasn’t done anything wrong, no one can take him away from Luoyang.”

“Tianzuo, your personality…” Fu Yu looked at An Tianzuo helplessly.

“Sir, can you return and tell those Senators who are in their ivory towers that if they want to take Zhou Wen away, they have to produce enough evidence to gain my approval or do it over my dead body. They can choose either one,” An Tianzuo said without any expression.

Fu Yu knew there was no need to continue speaking. From his previous master-disciple relationship with An Tianzuo, he knew what kind of person An Tianzuo was. Since he had said it out loud, even if a blade was placed at his neck, it was impossible to change his decision.

After Fu Yu left, An Tianzuo glanced at the door and said with a cold expression, “Have you heard enough?”

An Sheng pushed the door open and walked in. With a smile, he said, “Overseer, you used to look down on Zhou Wen in the past. Why are you protecting him?”

“What do you mean by in the past? It’s the same now. I’m protecting him because I don’t want the empress dowager at

home to be unhappy. Besides, how can a student of Sunset College be abducted as they wish? This is a lawful society!” An Tianzuo said.

“Yes, yes, yes. You are the most righteous Overseer in this world,” An Sheng said with a smile.

“Why does it sound so awkward when you put it that way?” An Tianzuo put down his pen and glared at An Sheng.

“Maybe it’s because you’re too humble, Overseer. You aren’t used to compliments. You will get used to it once you hear more of them,” An Sheng said.

“Cut it out. Don’t tell my empress dowager about this. She’s already feeling terrible about Grandfather’s matter. Don’t add to her worries any further,” instructed An Tianzuo.

“Got it. What about Zhou Wen? They’ve already gotten Mr. Fu to lobby you, so I’m afraid they won’t back down even if they don’t blatantly come and apprehend him. They’ll still secretly send people here. It’s probably unsafe for Zhou Wen to stay on campus,” An Sheng said.

“What has his safety got to do with us? He’s already an adult. If he gets captured and killed, that’s because he’s incompetent, so he deserves it. Don’t tell me you still want to be a nanny who cradles him 24 hours a day?” An Tianzuo said with a cold expression.

“Yes, Overseer. I’ll go inform him now and leave him to his own devices.” An Sheng saluted and turned to leave.

“Come back.” An Tianzuo called out to An Sheng again.

“Overseer, do you have any orders?” An Sheng turned around and asked.

“Because of Grandfather’s matter, my mom has been in a bad mood recently. Doesn’t she favor that punk the most? Get that punk to accompany her. At the very least, he’s a stepson. This is also something he should do. Besides, the empress dowager dotes on him so much, so he should know how to repay her kindness,” An Tianzuo said with a deadpan expression.

“Overseer, do you mean to get him to move to the An family’s compound?” An Sheng blinked as he asked.

“Did I say that?” An Tianzuo snorted coldly.

“No, definitely not. Then I’ll go find Zhou Wen now and get him to accompany the An family’s emperor dowager.” An Sheng saluted in all seriousness before leaving the office.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 397 - Four Guardian Generals

Chapter 397 Four Guardian Generals

Zhou Wen and Wang Lu arrived at the Town God's Temple. It was clearly much more majestic than the one Zhou Wen and company had gone to. It was also a lot bigger. It was split into three outer entrance gates, three entrances, three opera rooms, one hexagonal stone-pillared pavilion, three buildings with round ridge roofs, five temples, five back halls, and twelve rooms on each side of the stone pillars.

The temple was the main place of worship. It consecrated the Town God, Duke Wei Ling. There were two judge statues. There were stone carvings carved on the top of the hall's roof beam, and on the four corners of the spine, there were stone statues. Legend had it that the four infamous generals, Han Xin, Zhou Yu, Pang Juan, and Luo Cheng were punished to guard the city for their crimes.

However, this was only a legend. The four guardian generals of the Town God's Temple's dimensional zone were named Four Generals of Wei Ling. As long as one challenged any of the four generals and remained undefeated for three minutes, they would be rewarded by Duke Wei Ling.

However, to hold out for three minutes without being defeated by the four of them, one had to at least be at the Legendary stage. Most of the students in Sunset College couldn't do it, so it was no wonder the homework mission was only given to special admissions students. Even if the typical student came, not only would they not obtain any benefits, their lives might even be in danger.

The four guardian generals separately wielded a sword, saber, a spear, and a swordbreaker, so they were known as the Sword General, Saber General, Spear General, and Swordbreaker General.

“Which guardian general are you choosing?” Zhou Wen asked Wang Lu.

“According to legend, the Swordbreaker General corresponds to Pang Juan, so I’ll choose him,” Wang Lu said after some thought.

“Why him?” Zhou Wen was somewhat surprised. This was because Pang Juan’s fame was the worst of the four guardian generals. Few people usually chose him.

Most people would choose Sword General who likely represented Han Xin or Spear General who likely represented Luo Cheng. Relatively fewer people would choose Zhou Yu who represented Saber General and Pang Juan who represented Swordbreaker General.

“I once read some stories about Pang Juan. I always feel that the so-called crime of harming a fellow disciple is false. Back then, Pang Juan was publicly acknowledged as the number one general, and he remained victorious in all attacks. Furthermore, he and Sun Bin came from different countries, and there was quite a huge difference in age. No matter how I think about it, that story is a bit too bizarre. Just like Zhou Yu’s abhorrent name, it’s just fabricated in novels. The Battle of Red Cliffs was all thanks to Zhou Yu and the other generals. The so-called stories of borrowing the eastern wind and using boats of straw to capture arrows were merely a stylistic choice the authors had of elevating Kong Ming. It had never happened to him before. In that battle, Liu Bei

didn’t obtain any credit. He only picked up the spoils when Cao Cao was defeated,” Wang Lu said.

Zhou Wen nodded. He didn’t know much about the history before the dimensional storms, but he also found what Wang Lu said sounded reasonable.

Zhou Wen took out his phone and recorded Wang Lu. Wang Lu entered the Wei Ling Hall and bowed at it. Then, she pulled out a summoning talisman with the word “Swordbreaker” engraved on it from the offering table.

After the summoning talisman was pulled out, the sound of meteors striking the ground could be heard coming from within the courtyard. A general in armor appeared in the courtyard with two swordbreakers in hand.

The general had a majestic figure. He wielded his two swordbreakers like a gigantic deity as his eyes darted over like lightning and stared at Wang Lu.

After Wang Lu exited the main entrance of the Wei Ling Hall, the general smashed down with his swordbreaker. Although the weapon didn’t emit any light, it possessed a powerful force that was akin to a mountain crashing down.

Wang Lu didn’t clash head-on with the swordbreaker. Instead, she used her movement technique to circle around him. She moved agilely amidst the storm-like attacks of the dual swordbreakers with great ease. It left Zhou Wen slightly surprised.

Zhou Wen had always felt that Wang Lu was just lucky, but he never expected her movement techniques to be so exquisite. Apart from the difference in level and speed, she wasn’t at all inferior to Zhou Wen’s movement techniques.

In three minutes, the swordbreakers had failed to injure Wang Lu at all. They didn’t even touch her clothes.

When the time was up, the Swordbreaker General burst into a white mist and disappeared. As for the summoning talisman that Wang Lu had pulled out from the offering table, there was a strange change. It turned into a dimensional crystal. The crystal contained the Swordbreaker General’s shadow. Surprisingly, it was a Primordial Energy Skill Crystal.

“Do you want to give it a try?” Wang Lu asked as she blinked and put away the Primordial Energy Skill Crystal.

“Can I? I don’t have the homework mission,” Zhou Wen asked.

“Since the pass can bring you in, you naturally can try,” said Wang Lu.

Zhou Wen nodded. Since he was already here, there was no reason to give up on the benefits.

Zhou Wen came to the Wei Ling Hall. He didn’t dare pray this time. If he accidentally blew up Duke Wei Ling, where would he get the benefits?

He looked at the summoning talismans that represented the four generals. Wang Lu had taken one of the tokens, but now, it had returned to four.

Zhou Wen had limited knowledge of historical figures and had only heard of their names. Furthermore, it was difficult to say if the four generals really represented them. Therefore, after some thought, he chose the Sword General.

He had the Overlord Sword in hand. If a sword-type Primordial Energy Skill dropped, he could use it.

He heard a loud bang from the courtyard. A general with an ancient sword appeared in the yard.

As soon as Zhou Wen left the courtyard, the general slashed over with his sword. However, the sword wasn’t fast. It didn’t have the domineering stance of the Swordbreaker General.

Zhou Wen had no intention of dodging. He summoned his Overlord Sword and slashed at the Sword General. He wanted to see how strong the guardian general’s defense was.

However, when his sword slashed over, he saw the Sword General withdraw his sword and retreat, causing Zhou Wen’s strike to miss.

What’s going on? Does the guardian general fear me? Just as Zhou Wen was feeling puzzled, he suddenly saw the general wave his sword. A beam of light flashed in the yard as ten beauties with ancient swords appeared out of nowhere. All of them wore fiendish looks as they charged at Zhou Wen with swords in hand.

Instantly, sword beams surged everywhere, transforming into a sword formation that trapped Zhou Wen inside.

Zhou Wen was slightly surprised. The Sword General was rather interesting—he could even summon a sword formation. Seeing the layers of sword beams strike at him, Zhou Wen didn’t dodge them. Overlord Sword released a terrifying sword beam as he delivered Transcendent Flying Immortal.

The sword glows interlaced with one another. In just a split second, the ten beautiful women with ancient swords in hand were chopped up with their swords. They turned into white mist and dissipated.

When Zhou Wen looked at the Sword General, he saw him swing the ancient sword. Another ten ancient sword beauties had formed a sword formation again.

Zhou Wen repeatedly slashed at the seven waves of the sword formation formed by the seven beauties, but the Sword General kept avoiding a direct battle with him. Zhou Wen used Ghost Steps to approach the Sword General to pressurize him into fighting him, but the Sword General's movement technique was baffling. He actually dodged Zhou Wen's attack and summoned the beauties' sword formation again.

Three minutes quickly passed as the Sword General turned into white mist and dissipated. However, Zhou Wen was somewhat depressed. He had failed to force the Sword General to fight him.

His gaze landed on the summoning talisman and saw that it had indeed turned into a crystal. The shadow of the Sword General was inside, and it was also a Primordial Energy Skill Crystal.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 398 - Seal

Chapter 398 Seal

Zhou Wen wasn’t in a rush to absorb the Primordial Energy Skill Crystal. After putting it in his pocket, he left the Town God’s Temple with Wang Lu.

“What are we going to do later?” Wang Lu asked as they walked.

“Head back before reading books and playing games,” Zhou Wen blurted out his thoughts.

He still hadn’t found a way to condense a Life Soul for Small Perfection of Wisdom Sutra. Despite him already having three Life Souls and knowing he shouldn’t be so greedy, he wanted one that he couldn’t force. He still found it a knotty problem even though condensing a single Life Soul before thirty was considered a success.

“What’s the point of reading and gaming all day? Shall we go to the dimensional zone to hunt dimensional creatures?” Wang Lu suggested.

“I’m not going.” Zhou Wen wasn’t in the mood to enter a dimensional zone. Even if he were to grind, he could do it himself in-game. There was no need for him to risk his life in real life. If he accidentally died, he would truly be dead.

Wang Lu rolled her eyes at Zhou Wen and wanted to criticize him, but her eyes darted when she suddenly said, “By the way, didn’t you plan on killing the Binyang Cave’s tiger before? Do you want to make a trip there?”

Zhou Wen originally planned on returning to read and game, but after hearing Wang Lu's words, his eyes lit up. "Can we?"

"With me around, there's nothing you can't do. You also want a baby tiger, right?" Wang Lu said with a smile.

"What are the conditions?" Zhou Wen asked as he cautiously looked at Wang Lu. He found it odd that Wang Lu would help him hunt the tiger for no reason.

"We are schoolmates, so it's too tacky to name conditions. How about this? Based on the principle of mutually helping and showing love for each other, you have to lend a helping hand to a student with difficulties. During our semester time, you will be responsible for my breakfast," Wang Lu said with a smile.

"Sure, you can have anything that the canteen has to offer," Zhou Wen agreed without hesitation. Although breakfast over the years cost a lot of money, it was nothing compared to the baby tiger.

"Do I look like I'm short of money?" Wang Lu rolled her eyes at him.

"Didn't you tell me to cover your breakfast?" Zhou Wen looked at Wang Lu in puzzlement.

Wang Lu sighed and said, "We're all schoolmates, so I won't lie to you. Actually, I've had some weird disease since I was young. Every morning, I have a relapse and I am in so much pain that I have no way of getting out of bed. Breakfast time is exactly the time when I have a relapse. It's been a long time since I had breakfast. If you don't mind, I hope you can deliver breakfast to me every day."

“I see. Don’t worry. As long as I’m in school, I’ll deliver breakfast to you on time.” Zhou Wen nodded. He felt a little sad for Wang Lu, having never expected her to have such a strange illness. It was no wonder he never saw her in the first half of the day.

“Then it’s a deal. Let’s go to Binyang Cave now,” Wang Lu said in satisfaction.

Zhou Wen followed Wang Lu to Dragon Gate Grotto. Zhou Wen felt that he should be concerned about Wang Lu’s condition, so he asked, “By the way, what kind of illness do you have? Do you have a solution?”

Wang Lu pondered for a moment before saying in all seriousness, “Every day at dawn, I’ll be possessed and sealed by a blanket monster. No matter what I do, I just can’t get up. The thought of waking up will be painful, excruciatingly painful…”

“Blanket monster… Seal…” Zhou Wen looked at Wang Lu in a daze.

“Don’t worry about me. I can still take it. I won’t admit defeat. I will resolutely fight the seal to the end. As long as you deliver breakfast on time every day, I can replenish my energy and have the strength to resist the seal.” Wang Lu wore a determined expression as she clenched her fists, as though she was encouraging herself.

Zhou Wen looked at Wang Lu, unsure of what to say.

Before they entered the school gate, he saw An Sheng standing beside the car.

“Zhou Wen, are you free? I have something important to discuss with you,” An Sheng said.

“You guys go ahead. I’ll be heading back now,” Wang Lu said as she winked at Zhou Wen. “Don’t forget our deal. Be on time tomorrow.”

“Alright.” Zhou Wen nodded.

“Girlfriend?” An Sheng asked as he looked at the departing Wang Lu.

“No, ordinary friend.” Zhou Wen shook his head.

An Sheng smiled and said, “Wang Lu is destined to become the head of the Wang family. It’s not easy to marry her. None of the Wang family will agree to you marrying into the Wang family.”

“Didn’t I just say? We are just ordinary friends.” Zhou Wen was speechless.

An Sheng’s expression turned serious as he looked at Zhou Wen and said, “Zhou Wen, there are new developments to Wang Mingyuan’s matter. You and the other three students are in a terrible situation. The League might send someone to take you back.”

“What do you mean?” Zhou Wen looked at An Sheng in puzzlement.

An Sheng recounted what had happened to the League recently, leaving Zhou Wen dumbfounded.

“Was Teacher behind those humans who dimensionalized themselves and entered the dimensional zones?” Zhou Wen asked.

“It appears to be the case now. Therefore, the League has tried various means to stop such incidents from happening

again. They will not let go of any possibility. Therefore, you, Hui Haifeng, Jiang Yan, and Zhong Ziya have become their main focus. Although they don't dare to brazenly arrest you in Luoyang, they will definitely send someone to secretly abduct you," An Sheng said.

"How's Hui Haifeng and the rest?" Zhou Wen asked.

"Hui Haifeng is protected by his family, so there shouldn't be too much of a problem. Zhong Ziya and Jiang Yan seemed to have vanished into thin air. There's no news at the moment," An Sheng answered.

"That puts me at rest." Zhou Wen wasn't worried about his safety. As long as he wasn't facing a large number of Epic experts, he believed that he had the ability to protect himself.

"Overseer hopes that you can go to the An family to accompany Madam," An Sheng said ingeniously.

Zhou Wen was slightly taken aback when he heard that. However, he pondered for a moment before saying, "It's better I stay on campus. After all, I'm not from the An family. It's impossible for me to hide in the An family for the rest of my life."

"Now isn't the time to be impulsive. When the League sends their men, they will be top-notch Epic experts. Furthermore, they wouldn't just appear in front of you. They will only attack in secret. It's very likely that you would succumb without even knowing what happened," An Sheng said.

"Ah Sheng, just as you said. A dimensional zone can lose its effectiveness at any time. When the time comes, can I still hide with the An family while all kinds of terrifying dimensional creatures are rampaging?" Zhou Wen asked.

An Sheng looked at Zhou Wen in silence. Zhou Wen continued, “I can’t rely on others for my entire life. As you know, I’ve already condensed a Life Soul. I want to try and protect myself with my strength.”

An Sheng fell silent for a long time before saying, “I respect your decision, but you have to remember that even if you have something against Overseer and Miss Jing, don’t treat Madam as an outsider. It will sadden her.”

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 399 - Ják

Chapter 399 Ják

“Senators, I’ve already made my case. An Tianzuo is arrogant because of his talent. With the support of the An family’s business in Luoyang and the support of Leng Zongzheng, he has always thought little of the Senate. He won’t hand Zhou Wen over.” The bureau’s director-general, Shen Yuchi, said to the senators present as he stood in the meeting hall.

“Since An Tianzuo is so stubborn and disregards the safety of the League, we can only use our own methods to defend the League’s peace. Director-General Shen, I’ll leave this matter to you. We have to see Wang Mingyuan’s four students as soon as possible,” said Senator Xia who represented the senators.

“Yes.” Shen Yuchi bowed slightly before leaving the meeting hall.

In fact, they had reached an understanding before sending Fu Yu to Luoyang. If Fu Yu couldn’t succeed in persuading An Tianzuo, the Senate would tacitly allow the Special Inspector Bureau to take action.

Shen Yuchi had even arranged for a candidate to go to Luoyang. He was just waiting for the final order. Furthermore, he had already expected An Tianzuo to turn down the request of handing Zhou Wen over.

Shen Yuchi came to a secret prison in the Special Inspector Bureau. This place was named “Heaven” internally by the

bureau not because of how beautiful this place was, but because none of the criminals who entered here could ever leave. It was as if they had entered heaven and could no longer return to the world.

After passing through one prison door after another, Shen Yuchi came to a prison cell and produced his left fingerprint. Then, he verified with an iris scan. The heavy metal door of the cell, similar to that on a gold vault, finally opened.

In this strange cell, there were no prisoners. The only thing was a metal box that resembled a mummy’s sarcophagus.

Shen Yuchi looked at the metal box and said, “Ják, according to our previous agreement, help me bring that person back and I’ll return you your freedom.”

If someone had heard the name Ják a few decades ago, they might have suffered from insomnia due to fear.

In the early years of the League’s establishment, Ják’s name had once shaken the entire League. He had killed countless people, and he was sinister and vicious. He was a classic example of someone who didn’t treat anyone as human, and his reputation as a devil was almost in no way inferior to Jing Daoxian.

The difference was that Jing Daoxian was an extremely arrogant person, but Ják was different. He preferred hiding in the dark, playing a game of cat and mouse. He held his target in the palm of his hand, letting them die without realizing how.

Although he had killed countless people, few people had actually seen his true colors.

The bureau had paid a huge price to capture Ják back then. They had imprisoned him here for so many years that they didn’t even dare let him reveal his eyes. They were afraid that someone would be charmed and made to do his bidding, giving him a chance to escape.

Clang! Clang! Clang! Knocking sounds came from the metal box. It was Ják’s answer. Even his voice was restrained—they were afraid that his voice would affect the prison guards.

“Since that’s the case, our deal will officially begin now.” Shen Yuchi opened the metal box and saw a pale, silver-haired middle-aged man locked inside. His limbs were locked onto the metal box, and even his mouth was covered with metal tools. There were many tubes attached to his body, making him look like an ICU patient.

In fact, the equipment was to maintain Ják’s life and prevent him from dying. At the same time, it was also to prevent him from interacting with the prison guard.

After the chains were unlocked and the equipment removed, Ják finally emerged from the metal box.

“If there’s anything you need, feel free to tell me.” Shen Yuchi said as he looked at Ják who was walking out from the metal box with his limbs trembling.

“Give me a glass of red wine. The kind before the dimensional storms. You know what I’m referring to,” Ják said as he slowly moved his muscles.

“Sure.” Shen Yuchi smiled.

…

After Zhou Wen returned to his dorm, he thought about how he should deal with the experts from the Special Inspector Bureau. He didn't believe that An Sheng was being an alarmist.

He had already experienced the working style of the bureau. As long as they were bent on doing something, they would resort to any means to achieve their goals. They were like venomous snakes that would not give up once they bit down.

Looking at the antelope sleeping on the couch, Zhou Wen felt a lot more at ease. He guessed that it might be a top Epic and even a Mythical creature.

This was evident from the chick's attitude in the dorm. The chick dared to do anything in the dorm. It flew everywhere; it even dared to fly onto Zhou Wen's head and perched on it as though his hair was a bird's nest.

However, he had never seen the chick dare mess with the antelope. It clearly was wary of it.

With such a powerful fighter, Zhou Wen decided that he would spend most of his time in the dorm and not head out unless absolutely necessary. If the bureau came and the antelope was angered, they might end up scurrying.

Of course, Zhou Wen didn't plan on relying on the antelope. He summoned Truth Listener and wore it as an earring twenty-four hours a day, paying attention to any activity around him.

To prevent others from looking for him and causing unnecessary trouble, Zhou Wen even added a message to his wall. "In seclusion cultivation, not leaving the house for a month. Do not disturb."

Li Xuan and a few classmates who were on good terms with him quickly sent messages. Zhou Wen only said that he was going into seclusion and not to look for him.

“If you are going into seclusion, what about my breakfast?” Wang Lu sent a text.

“I’m still buying. Are you free to head to Binyang Cave tomorrow?” Zhou Wen replied.

Zhou Wen believed that the people from the bureau wouldn’t arrive so soon. It wouldn’t be bad if he followed Wang Lu to Binyang Cave to get a baby tiger. Who knows, he might be able to get one out?

With the baby tiger, if he went to the game dungeon again, the drop rate would increase significantly, and the chances of high-valued crystals dropping would increase as well. There was no need to grind so hard.

“Yes, see you tomorrow morning.” Wang Lu replied.

Zhou Wen finally waited until Lost Country’s cooldown was up. He eagerly rushed to the underground sea and took a look at the black dragon that had been hit by the Poison Dragon Palm.

There was a palm-sized mark on the black dragon. It looked like a sore that was about to produce pus. However, it was not able to poison the black dragon to death. The black dragon looked slightly irritable.

From the looks of it, the Poison Dragon Palm is still useful. However, the poison isn’t enough. I wonder how I can poison the black dragon with such a tiny sore? Zhou Wen thought for a moment and followed his previous method. He gave the black dragon another palm strike and escaped again.

If one palm doesn’t work, I’ll give it a few more strikes. As long as the poison is useful, it’s only a matter of time before I can poison it to death, Zhou Wen thought hatefully.

Since he couldn’t enter the temple and couldn’t take the risk to clear dungeons, he could only spend his time on the black dragon.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 400 - Grinding For Baby Tiger With You

Chapter 400 Grinding For Baby Tiger With You

In the morning, after waking up and washing, Zhou Wen headed to the cafeteria. He filled his stomach before buying a few buns and soy milk for Wang Lu.

Thankfully, Wang Lu's dorm was right next door, so it was still on the way.

He pressed Wang Lu's dorm's doorbell several times before he saw her opening the door while rubbing her eyes.

"Breakfast." Zhou Wen handed the buns and soy milk over.

"Why are you so early?" Wang Lu asked as she took the bag and walked back to the living room.

"It's getting late. I've already begun gaming usually at this time," Zhou Wen said.

Wang Lu pursed her lips and ignored him. She continued opening the bag and saw that it was filled with buns and soy milk. She said with a smile, "You're very thrifty."

"I don't know what you like to eat. I bought the most common food. If you wish to eat anything in particular, tell me in advance the next time," Zhou Wen said.

"This will do. Wait for me. I'll go wash up first." After washing up and eating breakfast, it was already more than an hour later.

Zhou Wen and Wang Lu went to Binyang Cave. When the soldier guarding it saw Wang Lu, his eyes immediately widened as he stared at her, as though he was guarding against a thief.

“I want to spin it three times,” Wang Lu said to Zhou Wen.

Wang Lu naturally wasn’t the one forking out the money. After Zhou Wen paid, he got Wang Lu to spin the wheel of fortune.

The soldiers held their guns and stared intently at Wang Lu like searchlights. However, they could only watch helplessly as Wang Lu won the entrance requirement to Binyang Cave three times in a row.

The officer in charge of the area stared blankly. After Zhou Wen and Wang Lu left, he checked the wheel of fortune again. However, there weren’t any problems. They spun it dozens of times, but none of them managed to hit the red line.

“What the hell!” The officer felt that this was too odd. After the last time, they had already installed higher-grade Primordial Energy sensors. If Wang Lu used any powers, the Primordial Energy sensor would have sounded the alarm, but it showed nothing.

The two entered Binyang Cave. Wang Lu’s luck was excellent as expected. Her luck was good to begin with but with the augmentation of the baby tiger and the Four-Leaf Clover, it was even more impressive. Not long after they entered the cave, they saw a tiger deliver itself to them, baring its teeth and pouncing over.

“Are you going to personally kill it?” Zhou Wen looked at Wang Lu and asked. He didn’t know if he needed Wang Lu to

personally kill the tiger to have a chance of having a Companion Egg drop.

“Give me your hand,” Wang Lu said to Zhou Wen.

“What for?” Zhou Wen extended his right hand in front of Wang Lu.

Wang Lu reached out her fingers and drew a circle in Zhou Wen’s palm. Then, she grabbed Zhou Wen’s right hand and pushed his fingers towards his palm. She made Zhou Wen’s right hand clench into a fist and said piously, “May the Goddess of Luck be with you. Alright, you can go.”

Zhou Wen was doubtful. Wang Lu’s luck was good, but luck shouldn’t spread, right? Zhou Wen had killed the tiger countless times in-game, but only some Primordial Energy Crystals dropped. He had never seen a Companion Egg before.

Zhou Wen doubted Wang Lu’s claim that the circle was of use.

Although he didn’t believe it, the tiger had already pounced in front of him. Zhou Wen didn’t hesitate as he unsheathed Bamboo Blade with his right hand and slashed at the tiger with a Fangwheel Sword Flash.

The tiger was surprisingly stronger than usual. With a twist of its waist, it dodged the Fangwheel Sword Flash. Unfortunately, it had not expected it to boomerang back and cleave it into two.

“Killing an Epic dimensional creature with one strike. It might be the weakest, but your strength is already very powerful. What a pity,” said Wang Lu.

“Why do you say so?” Zhou Wen asked as he walked towards the tiger’s corpse.

“Unfortunately, you’re Wang Mingyuan’s student. Other than Luoyang, no one else will dare to hire you,” Wang Lu said bluntly, not deliberately avoiding the topic.

“So what?” Zhou Wen didn’t mind. The dimensional zones were already very unstable. No one knew how long the League could last, nor had he ever thought of becoming a high official in the League.

“It’s great to be free. It would be great if I could be like you, having the freedom to do as you wish,” Wang Lu muttered.

Unfortunately, Zhou Wen didn’t hear Wang Lu. This was because Zhou Wen’s gaze was completely attracted to the Companion Egg in the tiger’s corpse.

A Companion Egg really dropped! Zhou Wen took out the Companion Egg, still finding it unbelievable.

He had been grinding the tiger in-game to the brink of puking. He hadn’t been able to get a baby tiger to drop. But all it took was once this time.

“Remember my breakfast every day. Don’t kick me to the curb when I’ve outlived my usefulness,” Wang Lu said with a smile.

“Definitely not. Just tell me whatever you want to eat and I guarantee that it will be delivered,” Zhou Wen hurriedly said.

“Anything. As long as you find it delicious.” Wang Lu wasn’t picky with her food.

Zhou Wen agreed and eagerly injected his Primordial Energy. He hatched the tiger on the spot and soon, a white tiger Companion Beast appeared in front of him.

Baby Tiger: Epic

Life Providence: Lucky Baby Tiger (Luck +5)

Life Soul: Tiger Soul

Strength: 28

Speed: 26

Constitution: 26

Primordial Energy: 23

Primordial Energy Skill: Tiger Pounce

Companion Form: None

The attributes were indeed lousy, making it an Epic existence that was equivalent to trash. However, a unique luck-type Life Providence made such a useless Companion Beast value even rarer.

Now that he had the Lucky Baby Tiger, Zhou Wen felt as though a boulder that was weighing down on his chest had lifted. He didn’t have to constantly think about farming the tiger every day.

The two of them walked out of Binyang Cave with each of them having a tiger in tow. The soldiers guarding the Binyang Cave were dumbfounded.

Although the baby tiger’s stats were very ordinary, Zhou Wen felt different riding the baby tiger. He even found its

speed to be much faster.

“Alright, my mission is complete. I need to catch up on sleep. Insufficient sleep is taboo for girls.” Wang Lu went back to sleep.

After Zhou Wen returned to his dorm, he couldn’t wait to take the baby tiger to the bat cave and see the effects of the Companion Beast’s enhanced luck.

The baby tiger didn’t disappoint Zhou Wen. The dimensional crystals that dropped were fifty percent more than usual, and their quality was significantly higher. Most of the dimensional crystals’ stats exceeded 30 points, and a 21-valued Poison Crystal dropped. The highest-valued Poison Crystal that Zhou Wen had obtained in the past was only ten-plus points. His 20-valued Poison Crystal had dropped from a Jade Toad.

This is really good! Zhou Wen was very fond of it.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 401 - Quickly Grow Up

401 Quickly Grow Up

A few Companion Eggs dropped as well, so Zhou Wen fed them to his Companion Beasts. Tyrant Behemoth finally began to evolve after eating the two Poison Bat Companion Eggs.

The tiny behemoth, which was originally only half a person’s height, grew its fur crazily. Its muscles swelled like balloons and soon, it grew to almost four meters tall. The muscles on its body were like steel, filled with explosive power.

Tyrant Behemoth: Legendary (Evolvable)

Life Providence: Extreme Strength

Strength: 21

Speed: 21

Constitution: 21

Primordial Energy: 21

Talent Skill: Mountain Devouring

Companion Form: Boxing Glove

Zhou Wen had been feeding it for quite some time, with plenty of Epic Companion Eggs in the mix. It took this long before Tyrant Behemoth advanced to the Legendary stage, so he had no idea when it would advance to the Epic stage.

However, Tyrant Behemoth was indeed ferocious. It was nearly four meters tall when it was only at the Legendary stage. If it advanced to the Mythical stage, it might really be able to devour a mountain. It would be unimaginably massive.

Little Behemoth, quickly grow up. I don’t expect you to advance to the Mythical stage. Hurry up and advance to the Epic stage. Be a happy fighter for me. Zhou Wen actually didn’t wish for Tyrant Behemoth to advance to the Mythical stage.

The six hero families had plenty of resources; yet, it was difficult for them to nurture Mythical Companion Beasts, so it would be even harder for him. If it weren’t for the game dungeons that allowed them to grind for resources, Zhou Wen probably wouldn’t have been able to afford to rear a Mythical Companion Beast.

…

Zheng Tianlun had been in a bad mood recently. He had imagined that he would be able to get close to the girls from the Weiyang Club after he got together with Sulli. That way, he could then hit on the other beauties.

With his family background and position as the vice president of the student council, it didn’t seem difficult.

However, to his surprise, those female students from the Weiyang Club didn’t participate in activities with the student council and instead regularly hung out with the people from the Xuanwen Club instead.

Although Zheng Tianlun’s family had some connections, he was naturally far more inferior to Li Xuan. He didn’t dare to do anything about the Xuanwen Club. He originally wanted

to invite Wei Ge to help him deal with the Xuanwen Club, but Wei Ge repeatedly rejected the notion. Nothing happened. This made Zheng Tianlun even more depressed.

After leaving campus, Zheng Tianlun was heading home. When he walked to a small alley, he saw a pale-faced, middle-aged man with a sickly look walking over.

The middle-aged man's appearance reminded Zheng Tianlun of Zhou Wen. Zhou Wen's face was a little pale, as though he hadn't been out in the sun for years. It felt very similar to the middle-aged man, worsening Zheng Tianlun's mood.

When Zheng Tianlun saw that the man was staring at him, he couldn't help but feel p*ssed. He glared back and wanted to ask what he was looking at. However, the moment his eyes met the middle-aged man's gaze, he was left rooted to the spot.

He felt as if there was a ball of mist in the middle-aged man's eyes that was attracting him. He couldn't help but look into those eyes, unable to think about anything else.

Ják kept looking at Zheng Tianlun and slowly walked in front of him. Then, he stretched out a hand and carefully pulled out a strand of hair from Zheng Tianlun's head.

Zheng Tianlun was jolted awake from the pain. Even though he did not know why he was suddenly confused, he felt a sense of fear when he looked at the middle-aged man. He couldn't help but retreat and ask, "What are you trying to do?"

Ják ignored Zheng Tianlun and pinched the strand of hair with his fingers before taking out a palm-sized doll. The doll looked like a clown.

Ják stuck Zheng Tianlun's hair onto the clown doll's head. The soft strand of hair seemed to turn into a steel needle in his hands, it quickly sank into the body of the clown doll.

At that moment, Ják looked up at Zheng Tianlun with a strange, chilling smile. He pursed his slightly purple lips and said, "I have something I need your help with. There's a student named Zhou Wen in your school. Help me get a strand of his hair or nails."

"Are you crazy? Why would I do such things for you?" Zheng Tianlun didn't know why, but the fear in his heart intensified as he spoke. He kept retreating, and if not for his legs going soft, he would have already turned around and escaped.

Ják didn't say anything to Zheng Tianlun. He glanced at a stray dog who was rummaging through a trash can. He reached out in the air, pulled out the stray dog's fur, and sucked it to his fingers.

Under the pain, the stray dog barked at Ják, but Ják only gave it a look before the stray dog instantly turned around and ran off with its tail between its legs. It didn't even dare to bark again.

Ják took out another clown doll, inserted the dog fur into the head of the clown doll, and drilled an unforgettable scene into Zheng Tianlun's mind.

Ják's eyes became frighteningly bright as he stared intently at the clown doll in his hand. He had a frightening smile on his face as if he was a clown smiling. That pale face looked like the white face after a clown put on clown makeup.

In the next second, Ják exerted some strength to rip off the clown doll's arm. At the same time, the stray dog let out a

tragic cry as fresh blood spewed out. One of its front legs seemed to be ripped off by an invisible hand.

Ják yanked at the doll in his hand even more crazily. Very quickly, the remaining limbs of the doll were torn off. Similarly, the stray dog lost its limbs as blood splattered everywhere.

Under Zheng Tianlun's horrified gaze, Ják tore off the clown doll's head. When Zheng Tianlun saw the stray dog being beheaded in front of him, he broke down mentally. He screamed and turned around to run.

"Your hair is here too." Ják's soft words made Zheng Tianlun, who was extremely terrified, stop running. He stood there like a stone statue, without moving.

"I'll give you two days. I want to see Zhou Wen's hair or nails; otherwise, you will be like that stray dog." As Ják spoke, he reached out and stroked the clown doll's head.

Zheng Tianlun instantly felt his scalp go numb as if a huge, invisible hand was caressing his head. His body trembled and he fell to the ground, his pants soaked.

Ják frowned, seemingly unwilling to look at Zheng Tianlun again. Covering his nose, he turned around and slowly walked out of the alley.

At the same time, Zheng Tianlun heard Ják's hoarse voice. "Remember, you only have two days."

"How am I to find you after I get it?" Although Zheng Tianlun was extremely afraid, his desire to live compelled him to ask in a trembling voice.

“After you get it, I will naturally appear by your side. Whether you live or die is in your hands.” As Ják spoke, he turned and left the alley.

Zheng Tianlun got up and secretly chased down the alley, only to find that there was no one on the streets. There was no sign of the middle-aged man. Zheng Tianlun would have thought that he had just had a nightmare if not for the bloodstains on the ground and the stray dog’s corpse.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 402 - Luck Composition

402 Luck Composition

Apart from eating at the cafeteria and bringing Wang Lu breakfast, Zhou Wen hardly left the house.

With the baby tiger, the efficiency of grinding increased significantly. The dimensional crystals and Companion Beasts that dropped had improved significantly, be it in terms of quantity or quality.

+5 Luck really shows an obvious improvement. If I have a few more points, wouldn’t the drop rate double? Zhou Wen thought about where to get another pet that added luck.

Due to the Lucky Baby Tiger’s Life Providence being unique, even if he had one more baby tiger, the luck wouldn’t stack. Therefore, it was useless even if Zhou Wen went to Binyang Cave to grind for the baby tiger again.

Wait a minute. The Lucky Baby Tiger’s Life Providence can’t be stacked, but can it be synthesized? When two different Companion Beasts combine, they might produce a different Life Providence. Just like when I fused the Silver-Winged Flying Ant and Sky Spider Youngling, the King of Low Altitudes became the King of Sky. If I were to fuse the baby tiger with some other cat or dog, would I be able to turn it

into a lucky cat or something? Would it be stackable? Zhou Wen was considering the viability of this matter.

If he could really synthesize one like this, he could completely synthesize the luck-type Life Providence with another powerful Companion Beast. It would give him a luck bonus and powerful combat ability.

Zhou Wen was only thinking about it. He couldn’t have the blood-colored avatar die, nor could he refresh dungeons. All his thoughts were empty thoughts, making it impossible for him to farm the baby tiger.

As he hadn’t refreshed the dungeon, Zhou Wen had nearly wiped out all the monsters he could grind in the past few days. He was about to reach a point of not having any monsters to grind on. This was the first time he had encountered such a situation since obtaining the mysterious phone.

Although there were also instance dungeons he had never been before, such as Mount Laojun, Zhou Wen didn’t dare visit them as he was afraid the blood-colored avatar would die inside.

Thankfully, Zhou Wen had many books to read, so it wasn’t that he had nothing to do. He was engrossed in an ocean of knowledge every day.

…

Zheng Tianlun felt like crying. He originally believed that using his relationship as a fellow schoolmate, it wouldn’t be difficult to get a strand of Zhou Wen’s hair. In the beginning, he had sought out the Xuanwen Club members who were closer to Zhou Wen. He claimed that the student council

wanted to host a joint activity with them, hoping that Li Xuan and Zhou Wen could participate.

He was responsible for all the expenses. For this, he spent a large sum to get some special dimensional zones passes.

However, to his surprise, Li Xuan told him that Zhou Wen was in seclusion and refused to participate in any activities. In the end, the joint activity was held. He had spent the money but failed to see Zhou Wen.

What do I do? What do I do? Zheng Tianlun was extremely anxious. There was less than a day left. He had to obtain Zhou Wen’s hair as soon as possible. He didn’t dare imagine the outcome of failure and dared not remember the tragic state of the stray dog.

Zheng Tianlun had thought of many methods, but they were unviable. Finally, he had no choice but to find Zhou Wen himself. He had to obtain a strand of Zhou Wen’s hair no matter what.

…

Zhou Wen was reading a book near the balcony on the second floor. The sunlight shone on him, making him feel warm and comfortable.

As he wore the Truth Listener earring in its companion form the entire time, Zhou Wen heard Zheng Tianlun’s approach before he even reached the yard’s entrance.

Why is he here? Zhou Wen was puzzled. Zheng Tianlun was clearly walking towards his building and was about to reach his yard’s entrance.

“I have to get his hair… I have to get it…” Zhou Wen listened carefully and heard Zheng Tianlun muttering to himself. It was so soft that ordinary people might not be able to hear it even if they stood beside him. However, Truth Listener’s hearing was just too good. Zhou Wen heard him clearly.

Whose hair does he want? Mine? What does he want my hair for? Zhou Wen immediately made some bad connections.

There were many magical dimensional forces in the League. Legend had it that some people in the West District had curse-type Primordial Energy Skills that allowed them to curse a person to death remotely through mediums such as a person’s hair and nails.

There were many similar abilities in the East District, and they were even more exaggerated. There was no need for any physical contact. Just knowing the time someone was born was enough to take their life, even from a great distance away.

Zhou Wen currently didn’t have much knowledge regarding such Primordial Energy Skills. In a real battle, be it an Epic human or Companion Beast, he had the power to contend a fight. Instead, he was afraid of powers that he could succumb to without even seeing.

Against such powers, even if he had the annihilative powers, it would be of no use considering how he couldn’t find or hit his target.

For instance, many powerful Epic experts died without even seeing a dimensional creature while exploring dimensional zones. It wasn’t that they weren’t strong enough, but that their resistance against the unknown force was too weak.

They were nothing but boors who were unable to use their strength.

Of course, there were boors that succeeded. Legend had it that the Xia family’s hero had cultivated the Invincible Connate Divine Art in the past, reaching an invulnerable state. No matter how evil power it was, nothing could kill him. He was a classic example of being able to be a ramrod that could charge straight forward.

However, he ultimately didn’t end well when he entered a dimensional zone.

Therefore, Zhou Wen always firmly believed that knowing one’s enemy was the key to winning all battles. It was best if he didn’t take any risks; after all, he only had one life.

While Zhou Wen was pondering over it, Zheng Tianlun had already pressed his doorbell.

It looks like the people from the bureau have arrived. Zhou Wen had guessed what was going on. After some thought, he went down and opened the door. He wanted to find out from Zheng Tianlun about the person whom the bureau had sent.

“Zheng Tianlun, why are you looking for me?” Zhou Wen asked Zheng Tianlun who was outside.

“I have an important matter to discuss with you. Can I come in?” Zheng Tianlun asked carefully.

“Come on in.” Zhou Wen kept a high alert the entire time. He didn’t get too close to Zheng Tianlun, maintaining a certain distance.

To his surprise, Zheng Tianlun slammed the door shut after entering and plopped to his knees. “Zhou Wen, please save me. If you don’t save me, I’m dead.”

“What are you doing?” Zhou Wen frowned slightly.

Zheng Tianlun said, “The night before yesterday, I applied for leave and went home. On the way, I bumped into a strange middle-aged man…”

Zheng Tianlun recounted what had happened that night. No matter how he thought about it, he knew it was impossible to get Zhou Wen’s hair by force. He knew that Zhou Wen was from the An family, so he couldn’t afford to offend him, nor could he use force.

“Zhou Wen, I’m begging you, save me. I really don’t want to die.” Zheng Tianlun kowtowed as he spoke.

Zhou Wen reached out to stop Zheng Tianlun. Although he didn’t have a good impression of Zheng Tianlun, he didn’t have any feud with him either. He felt uneasy hearing the pleading.

However, just as his hand touched Zheng Tianlun’s hand, Zheng Tianlun’s flesh and bones exploded and his arms turned into a bloody mist.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 403 - Battling Ják

Chapter 403 - Battling Ják

The two never expected such a turn of events. No matter how fast Zhou Wen retreated, his hand was quickly stained by the blood mist as Zheng Tianlun fell to the ground and screamed.

In a forest in the suburbs, Ják revealed a mocking smile. How could he place his hopes on others? He made Zheng Tianlun firmly believe that he needed Zhou Wen's hair. Only then would Zheng Tianlun be able to fool Zhou Wen because even Zheng Tianlun himself believed that it was real. Others wouldn't be able to see through the flaws.

"Old pal, it's been a while since we got some exercise. It's time to come out and get some exercise." As Ják spoke, a sanguine aura on him surged and condensed into a blood-colored clown Life Soul.

The blood-colored clown Life Soul came in front of Ják. Ják pulled out the strand of Zheng Tianlun's hair from the puppet and gave it to the clown Life Soul.

The clown Life Soul reached out to grab the hair, and it immediately burned with a blood-colored flame and quickly burnt to ashes. It transformed into a sanguine beam that fused into the clown's body.

"By using your blood as the medium, I'll use the soul as a guide, Blood Hex Clown, use your strength to make those ignorant people tremble in grief once again." Ják looked excitedly at the Blood Hex Clown and growled.

A sanguine glint flashed in the eyes of the Blood Hex Clown as a demonic blood-colored flame rose over its body.

In his dorm, Zhou Wen looked at the blood on his hand and tried to shake it off, but it was already too late. He felt his ears heat up before a force entered his body from his palm and spread through his entire body. Large amounts of Primordial Energy surged into his body. It was massive, almost comparable to the lightning bolt he had endured at Dragon Gate Grotto.

Zhou Wen immediately realized that Truth Listener's Evil Nullification Life Soul had taken effect, resolving the strange power of the assailant.

I was still too careless. Zhou Wen reflected over his faults, but after some thought, he realized that he was up against someone bent on getting him. No matter how prepared he was, it was inevitable for him to miss out certain things. The best way was to eliminate the enemy first to truly feel worry-free.

But now, he didn't even know where his opponent was. When he looked at Zheng Tianlun who had his arms torn apart, Zhou Wen felt a chill run down his spine.

It was Zheng Tianlun this time, someone he didn't care too much about. But what if the next person was Li Xuan, Wang Lu, or the rest? Could he still remain so indifferent?

Zhou Wen called the school's emergency number and called for a doctor to handle Zheng Tianlun.

Ják stared at the Blood Hex Clown in front of him. Seeing the sanguine light in its eyes glow with greater intensity, he believed that the blood hex's power was in control of Zhou Wen. He ordered, "Bring him here."

Zhou Wen felt an endless stream of Primordial Energy surge into his body, preventing him from being able to accommodate it as large amounts of Primordial Energy seeped out of his body.

Suddenly, the Truth Listener earring seemed to be pulled by something as it floated up and pointed in one direction.

Zhou Wen's heart stirred as he walked outside. The moment he opened the door, he saw An Jing and Wang Lu standing outside, about to knock on the door. Zheng Tianlun's screams had alerted them, which was why they had come over to take a look.

"Help me look after him. Don't let him die. I have to make a trip." Zhou Wen pointed at Zheng Tianlun who was screaming inside before walking out.

He didn't pity Zheng Tianlun, but if Zheng Tianlun really died in his dormitory room, he would probably have a hard time explaining himself. Without any evidence, the college would only believe that he had killed Zheng Tianlun.

Regardless of An Jing's and Wang Lu's expressions, Zhou Wen headed straight for the direction the earring had pointed.

After leaving the school, Zhou Wen headed west according to the earring. Soon, he left the city and entered the suburbs.

A forest appeared in front of Zhou Wen, and the heat from the Truth Listener earring grew stronger. It made Zhou Wen realize that he was approaching his target.

After slowing down his speed, Zhou Wen carefully entered the forest. Truth Listener earring's hearing was put to its

greatest use. Everything within a hundred meters around him projected into an image in his mind thanks to his hearing.

Not long after entering the forest, the Truth Listener earring's ability allowed him to see a man standing in the forest. In front of him floated a blood-colored clown-like Life Soul.

Just as Zheng Tianlun had said, the man was wearing a shirt and suit with a unique hat on his head. He had a standard Caucasian look with blue eyes and carved facial features. His hair was a rare silver color.

His skin was white to begin with, and with him looking a little pale, it looked like there was no blood in him. It was as if his face had been wiped with white powder.

When Zhou Wen sensed Ják, Ják also sensed something. He frowned and looked in Zhou Wen's direction. At the same time, surprise flashed in his eyes.

"Did the bureau only send you here?" Zhou Wen gripped the Bamboo Blade tightly as he walked towards Ják. At the same time, he used Truth Listener's ability to constantly sweep his surroundings to make sure that there were no ambushes.

"You are actually immune to the blood hex's control. Furthermore, you were able to find me. Interesting." Ják stared at Zhou Wen as he sized him up. His eyes were shimmering as though he was looking at some interesting toy.

"You won't find it interesting very soon." Zhou Wen had already confirmed that there weren't any ambushes around him. He instantly unsheathed his Bamboo Blade and appeared in front of Ják instantaneously as though he had

teleported. With Transcendent Flying Immortal, he slashed at Ják's body with unparalleled speed.

Ják clearly hadn't expected Zhou Wen to be that fast. Such strength was completely different from the information Shen Yuchi had given him. He was no ordinary student at the Legendary stage.

"To be at the Epic stage at such a young age?" Ják's gaze froze slightly. Zhou Wen's saber was simply too fast. Clearly, Ják was weaker when it came to combat. Perhaps due to his long imprisonment and him not having fully recovered, he couldn't dodge in time.

The black gas in his hand struck at the Bamboo Blade, but the black gas was directly sliced apart by the Bamboo Blade. Ják's palm was sliced off.

The Bamboo Blade did not stop and slashed right into Ják's body.

With a ripping sound, Zhou Wen realized that the Bamboo Blade had only sliced through Ják's jacket. He was gone. All that was left was the slightly trembling hand on the ground.

Zhou Wen scanned his surroundings and pushed the Truth Listener earring to its limits. It reflected everything around him in his mind, but he didn't see any traces of Ják.

Just as Zhou Wen was searching for Ják, he suddenly felt that something was amiss. An ant had crawled over at his feet. There were many ants in the forest, but this ant was somewhat odd. It had actually crawled straight in front of Zhou Wen's feet.

Zhou Wen's heart stirred as he rapidly retreated. The ant's tiny body exploded like a bomb, blasting apart the ground

and trees nearby, forming a huge crater that was more than two meters in diameter.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 404 - Stalemate

404 Stalemate

Zhou Wen flew back and touched a leaf that exploded like a grenade. Fortunately, he was wearing the Mutated Stone Chi armor. He charged out the instant the leaf exploded using Ghost Steps, suffering minimal damage from the explosion.

Even so, the Mutated Stone Chi's armor was blackened from the blast. Zhou Wen was somewhat astonished. This person's ability was so bizarre that he could actually turn an ant and a leaf into his weapons. It was impossible to guard against.

The entire forest was filled with insects, leaves, and vegetation. Zhou Wen didn't know which insects or leaves would become a bomb. Even the grass on the ground could become a landmine.

Zhou Wen's body stood in midair. He used Truth Listener's hearing and his eyes to search for Ják. If he couldn't find him, no amount of strength was useful.

However, Zhou Wen couldn't find any traces of Ják within the range of his senses. The entire forest only had the rustling sounds of leaves when the wind blew and the chirping of insects.

Zhou Wen hovered in the air, using the Godfiend flying ability to prevent himself from touching anything. Then, he

slowly moved in the air, in search of Ják's possible hiding locations.

When insects, birds, or leaves approached him, he would preemptively slice them apart.

However, there weren't any further explosions. Zhou Wen sensed that Ják was still there. He hadn't left. The atmosphere in the woods felt very odd.

Boom!

Zhou Wen suddenly heard an explosion. However, the explosion didn't happen from his body. Instead, it happened above a large nearby tree. A bug exploded from the crown of a tree, scattering the leaves and branches everywhere. Even a wasp hive that was nestled in the tree flew out.

Zhou Wen looked at the leaves and wasps that filled the sky as though he was watching a flurry of bombs. He only had one thought in mind: he absolutely couldn't let them touch him.

With Ghost Steps and Dragon Gate Flying Immortal Skill, Zhou Wen's figure rapidly flashed. The leaves and wasps that filled the sky failed to touch him.

Boom! Boom! Boom! Boom!

Several trees were blasted apart as the sky filled with leaves and critters. Zhou Wen kept flying as his body twisted and turned, passing through the leaves like a ghost.

He didn't touch the leaves, but the nearby leaves automatically exploded as though the entire forest had turned into an explosive warehouse. Anything that approached Zhou Wen could explode.

Zhou Wen was caught off guard. All he could do was dash out of the forest and appear in the sky above. He looked down at the forest from above and observed everything that was happening.

Truth Listener's power had already presented everything that was happening in the forest to his brain. No activity could escape his ears.

Zhou Wen was certain that the person was still in the area, but he had used some unknown method to hide. As long as he carefully searched, he could definitely find him.

This was the most terrifying opponent of the same level Zhou Wen had ever encountered since he began cultivating. Although he had fought others before, the strongest was the Mutated Stone Chi and Mei. No matter how powerful they were, they weren't as diabolical and terrifying as this person.

Previously, although Yan Zhen was also diabolical and terrifying, he wasn't good at combat. He was more like a crazy scientist, but this person was like a killing machine. Although his combat ability wasn't very strong, his abilities and means allowed him to kill someone without doing the dirty work.

Zhou Wen moved back and forth in the air as he swept the nearby trees several times, but failed to find any traces of Ják.

That bastard Shen Yuchi. Is this his idea of an ordinary student? Ják cursed inwardly as well.

Before he was locked up, he had seen many experts. Only a handful were as terrifying as Zhou Wen. He really couldn't believe that Zhou Wen was only a student.

Ják didn’t dare move. Although he had already made use of sorcery to disguise himself as a part of the forest, he could sense that showing any signs of abnormality would be detected by the aerial Zhou Wen.

He didn’t know how Zhou Wen did it, but he knew that he was using a method to constantly scan the forest’s situation. He had already felt something similar to a vision sweep over him several times.

Ják closed his eyes, unwilling to let his gaze attract Zhou Wen’s attention. However, his heart was burning with zeal.

He loved killing people. The more powerful someone was, the more excited he became. At that moment, his blood was about to boil. He yearned to kill Zhou Wen immediately to satisfy his inner desires.

As for Shen Yuchi’s order to bring Zhou Wen back alive, Ják had completely forgotten about it. He was like a venomous snake that was seeking an opportunity. Once the prey showed weakness, he would deliver the most lethal strike.

I don’t believe that you can keep flying in the air. Ják waited patiently for the opportunity.

One of them was in the air while the other was in the forest. They were in a stalemate.

Zhou Wen couldn’t find Ják’s hiding spot, and it wasn’t convenient for him to attack the woods. That would only give Ják a chance.

As time passed, Ják realized that Zhou Wen didn’t show any signs of descending despite him floating in midair. His desire to kill Zhou Wen intensified.

Half a day passed and the sky gradually darkened.

Here’s my chance. As he felt the sky grow darker, Ják knew that his chance was here. The night was his home ground.

Although he couldn’t find Ják’s location, Zhou Wen continued waiting patiently. He was waiting for Ják to strike. As long as he made a move, it was impossible for him to perfectly conceal himself. This gave him a chance of finding his true body.

Zhou Wen really didn’t wish to let such a terrifying figure escape. Otherwise, he didn’t know who would be the next victim.

When the sun set and the moon silently crawled up. Zhou Wen continued floating in the air, waiting for Ják to reveal an opening.

Suddenly, Zhou Wen felt an abnormality in the woods. A snake was rapidly darting under the leaves. It was normal for snakes to move around in the grass, but Zhou Wen found something was amiss with the snake. It seemed to have a clear goal—it was heading deep into the forest.

Zhou Wen summoned his Overlord Sword and slashed out. The sword beam instantly tore through the forest and chopped down a tree. At the same time, he split the snake into two.

Boom!

The snake exploded, creating a huge pit in the vicinity. But on the other side, Ják’s body emerged from a cave made of tree root that was the size of a fist. He dashed into the forest like a black shadow.

However, the direction he headed in wasn’t directed at the aerial Zhou Wen, nor was it deep in the woods. Zhou Wen quickly chased after him, but he saw Ják stop and reveal his snow-white teeth. He gave Zhou Wen a sinister smile.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 405 - It Couldn“t Be Him

405 It Couldn“t Be Him

While smiling sinisterly at Zhou Wen, Ják threw out a blood-colored dagger. However, the dagger wasn’t thrown at Zhou Wen but at the ground.

Zhou Wen immediately felt that something was amiss. He saw the blood-colored dagger fly over and immediately realized the problem.

His shadow! Ják wasn’t attacking him, but his shadow that had been projected by the moonlight.

It was too late to dodge. He didn’t have the time to think further. Zhou Wen’s first reaction was to summon his Inverse Ancient Sovereign Life Soul.

The moment the Inverse Ancient Sovereign Life Soul was summoned, the blood-colored dagger had nailed Zhou Wen’s shadow. However, due to the Inverse Ancient Sovereign’s humanoid sun Life Soul appearing, the strong rays of light scattered his shadow. Most of the shadows were redirected in another direction. The shadow cast by the moon was almost invisibly faint.

His heart palpitated slightly, but he didn’t feel any damage. Like a ghost, Zhou Wen appeared in front of Ják and slashed his Overlord Sword and Bamboo Blade at him.

Ják ducked, causing Overlord Sword to miss. However, Bamboo Blade slashed across his waist. Unfortunately, all

that was sliced apart was Ják's clothes. He was nowhere to be seen.

Boom! Boom! Boom! Boom!

Ják's clothes exploded in front of Zhou Wen, forcing him to retreat quickly. He retreated to the air once more and switched back to his Godfiend Life Providence.

The atmosphere became tense again. Both of them knew that they had met a terrifying opponent. They waited for each other to make the first move, waiting for the moment the other party revealed a flaw.

Zhou Wen wasn't in a rush. He didn't believe that the other party could keep hiding without eating or drinking. He flew into the air and grabbed a random piece of pancake and a can of Coke from the Chaos Bead. He even brought out some spring onion to go with the pancake. He ate while monitoring the situation in the forest.

That punk is quite a figure. He's so tasteless. Is that even called food? Ják couldn't stand Zhou Wen's eating preferences, but he couldn't help but feel hungry. The fragrance of red wine and roasted meat surfaced in his mind.

Ják gulped his saliva and forced himself to stop thinking. Just like that, he continued the stalemate with Zhou Wen while silently seeking out an opportunity.

It was not feasible to use Lunar Shadow Sorcery to control Zhou Wen, so Ják had to think of other solutions.

As Ják endured the hardship below, Zhou Wen ate his fill in the sky. At first, he only filled his stomach. Later, he took out a vacuum-packed duck head and beer and sat down in the air, having a feast.

This punk’s taste is terrible. Is that what a human will eat? Ják wished he could throw the food that Zhou Wen was eating into a trash can, but he held back.

Ják glanced at where Zhou Wen’s shadow was, but he didn’t dare head over. Although Zhou Wen appeared to be eating and drinking on the surface, he believed that Zhou Wen’s sword beam would definitely slash at him the moment he made any abnormal movements.

He was well aware of the prowess of Zhou Wen’s sword beam. Although it was a little lacking compared to a few sword experts he knew, his sword beam held some special attributes to it. It had to be extraordinary, considering how he could sever his hand.

After Zhou Wen had his fill, he said to the forest, “You won’t be able to escape no matter what. Why don’t you come out and have a chat? If you can provide enough information that satisfies me, I might spare your life.”

Ják continued lurking and ignored Zhou Wen as though he hadn’t heard him.

“Your ability is so outstanding that I believe you have some status in the bureau. Why risk your life?” Zhou Wen continued probing.

However, no one answered him.

Suddenly, Zhou Wen realized that someone was approaching the forest. The person was riding a gray wolf with an astonishing speed as he quickly approached the forest.

Zhou Wen took a careful look and realized that it was An Sheng.

“Ah Sheng, don’t enter the forest.” Zhou Wen shouted at the distant An Sheng from midair, but it was already too late. The gray wolf An Sheng was sitting on was too fast as it rushed into the forest.

Boom! Boom!

Zhou Wen immediately saw an explosion in the woods, as leaves exploded like a bomb. The blown-up trees snapped and mud flew. It was a mess.

Zhou Wen was feeling worried when he saw Ah Sheng rush out of the dust. Apart from his clothes being a little tattered and looking quite sorry, he didn’t look injured.

“Sorcery… Life Blast… Who could it be from the West District?” Ah Sheng glared at the woods and asked.

No one answered. The forest was still silent, with only a few critters fleeing for their lives.

Seeing no one reply, An Sheng looked at Zhou Wen and asked, “Young Master Wen, are you alright?”

“I’m fine. He refuses to come out. I’ve been waiting for him here so that he can’t escape,” Zhou Wen said.

“You have fought him before, right? Describe his looks and abilities,” said An Sheng.

Zhou Wen recounted Ják’s looks and abilities to An Sheng. While An Sheng wore an extremely odd expression, he finally couldn’t help but exclaim when he heard Zhou Wen mention the blood-colored clown Life Soul. “Blood Hex Clown… Could it be that psychopath from the West District… It can’t be wrong… It’s definitely Ják… Other than Ják, no

one else has the ability to use Blood Hex Clown, Lunar Shadow Sorcery, and Life Blast…”

“He seems very famous?” Zhou Wen asked.

“Of course he’s famous. A few decades ago, the name, Ják, sent shockwaves through the entire League. He committed more sins than Jing Daoxian. At least Jing Daoxian only killed people depending on his mood. But Ják kills people because he likes to kill people. An entire city’s people were once cursed to death by him. Back then, many of the League’s top-notch Epic experts died in order to arrest him. He should be imprisoned… Could it be…” An Sheng immediately realized that the bureau had released the psychopath, Ják, in order to capture Zhou Wen.

However, upon further thought, An Sheng felt that something was amiss. He felt that it couldn’t be Ják. If it was Ják, how could he have been stopped by Zhou Wen?

The bureau is truly unscrupulous. To think they would dare release a devil like Ják just to capture me? Zhou Wen frowned slightly. If not for his special abilities and with the help of a Mythical Companion Beast, he would have died at Ják’s hands.

In fact, Zhou Wen should be glad that he encountered Ják who had been imprisoned for decades. Most of his Companion Beasts had died in battle before his imprisonment. While fighting Zhou Wen, he mainly relied on the Perfect Blood Hex Life Soul and Primordial Energy Skills. If his previous Companion Beasts were present, he would have been even more terrifying.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 406 - Blood Hex

Chapter 406 - Blood Hex

Ják lurked in the grass, alarmed. He had been imprisoned for more than twenty years. Were young adults these days so powerful?

Back in his day, he could kill young adults in their twenties, such as An Sheng, without wasting too much effort.

However, between the two young adults that he met today, Zhou Wen had forced him to hide in the darkness while An Sheng, who appeared a little older, maybe in his mid-twenties, but definitely not in his thirties, had managed to escape the Life Blast that he had set up. This made him suspect that the League had experienced an explosive growth over the past few decades. However, from his journey here, he believed that humans might have improved, but they shouldn't be that powerful.

Ják lived up to his name. The thought of escaping didn't arise just because of Zhou Wen and An Sheng's strength. The killing intent in his heart burned even more.

If my previous Companion Beasts were still around, killing them would be much simpler. Unfortunately, I'll have to think of another solution now. Ják's mind raced as he thought about how to kill Zhou Wen and An Sheng. He had no intention of escaping.

Perhaps, even Shen Yuchi wouldn't have expected that a great devil like Ják would have to go through so much difficulty to capture a university student.

Back when Ják was pursued by the bureau and in what seemed like an inescapable net, he had even killed more than twenty Epic inspectors.

Ják even infiltrated Holy City while being pursued, a showcase of his boldness. He abducted the son of the previous director-general of the Special Inspector Bureau and killed him in front of the experts chasing him.

Shen Yuchi had made a deal with Ják because he wanted to put things right once and for all. He hoped that Ják could capture Zhou Wen without anyone noticing, but little did he expect Ják to end up in a predicament.

He swept his glance across the forest, and a vicious glint flashed across Ják's eyes as he exploded the Life Blast he had set up.

Rumble!

The leaves exploded in the forest like bombs. In a region spanning a few hundred meters, there were explosive booms and destroyed trees everywhere.

A large group of birds and wild beasts fled in all directions, and the forest was thrown into pandemonium.

"No good. He wants to escape." Truth Listener's range was only about a hundred meters. The explosions' had already exceeded the distance that Truth Listener could monitor. There were all sorts of creatures fleeing in the forest. If Ják were to be among them, it would be impossible to find him.

Zhou Wen had no choice but to fly in the sky and constantly search with Truth Listener's powers, hoping to find something abnormal.

Suddenly, Zhou Wen saw a black shadow escape rapidly under the moonlight. Although the moonlight was bright, there were trees sheltering the area. Shadows covered the area below as the black shadow rapidly slunk through the shadows. Zhou Wen's Truth Listener couldn't hear it; it just so happened that his eyes accidentally swept across the spot where the moonlight scattered, allowing him to see it by chance.

Zhou Wen immediately recalled that the other party had previously wanted to pin his shadow. Clearly, he was proficient in shadow techniques, and now, he was escaping using shadows. It would be difficult to find him if he escaped successfully. There was still a chance of finding his true body next time, but even so, Zhou Wen himself wasn't confident.

With no mercy in his heart, Zhou Wen switched to the Ancient Sovereign Life Soul, letting it fuse with him. His entire body emitted a glow as he rushed into the forest like a god of light in pursuit of the shadow.

"Don't chase after him!" An Sheng loudly warned Zhou Wen, but he saw Zhou Wen charge in without stopping. All he could do was rush in as well.

The Ancient Sovereign Life Soul brought Zhou Wen powerful vital essence, one that emitted light and heat as he lit up the dark forest.

Tree leaves fell on Zhou Wen. With one hand holding the Overlord Sword and the other holding the Bamboo Blade, he slashed out a sword and saber beam, splitting all the leaves that came close to him.

However, when he stepped onto the grass on the ground, the grass suddenly exploded. Thankfully, Zhou Wen was wearing the Mutated Stone Chi armor. Resisting the blast, he

leaped up and tapped his feet on the trunk before continuing his pursuit of the shadow.

Zhou Wen didn't dare land on the ground as he used the trees to engage in pursuit. His glow illuminated the forest. Under the brilliance, he could clearly see a shadow moving quickly on the ground without making a single sound. Truth Listener couldn't hear it either.

He slashed out Fangwheel Sword Flash with the Overlord Sword, but the shadow rapidly flashed. It dodged the sword beam and circled around in a bid to escape in another direction.

Zhou Wen chased the shadow as he kept slashing out sword beams, but the shadow dodged Zhou Wen's sword beams again and again. It was like a ghost, making Zhou Wen almost believe that it was really just a shadow.

However, seeing that the shadow was constantly dodging the sword light, and that it wouldn't fade under the light he emitted, he knew that it wasn't a real shadow.

To be able to use a shadow escape technique to such a degree and use a large area of Life Blast, could this person really be Ják? An Sheng rushed into the forest and stood on a tree branch. When he saw Zhou Wen chasing the shadow, he was alarmed and puzzled.

He had heard many legends about Ják in the past. All the different kinds of evil and powerful Primordial Energy Skills at his disposal made him extremely unpredictable. He was capable of killing people in an invisible manner.

This legendary person was actually suppressed by Zhou Wen, forcing him to reevaluate Zhou Wen's strength.

Young Master Wen might end up being a second Overseer in the future, thought An Sheng. He had watched Zhou Wen develop his strength, but even he was astonished at such a growth rate.

Just as Zhou Wen cornered the shadow with nowhere for it to escape, Ják revealed his body. Ják stood there, his Blood Hex Clown Life Soul in front of him as he withstood the Fangwheel Sword Flash with both hands.

Boom!

The Blood Hex Clown and Ják behind it were sent flying as they slammed into an old tree. Blood immediately spurted out from Ják's mouth.

Zhou Wen wasn't willing to give him a chance. The moment his feet landed on the ground, he exerted strength with all his might, ready to charge forward and kill Ják on the spot.

However, just as his foot touched the ground, he felt his ankle tighten. A terrifying force tugged at him, almost causing him to fall to the ground.

Zhou Wen looked down and realized that the Ják's severed hand was grabbing his ankle. Sanguine aura surged from the severed hand arm as it clutched tightly at his ankle. The sanguine aura also surged up and quickly spread across his leg as though a blood-patterned talisman had been drawn on the stone armor.

"No good!" An Sheng wanted to rush over, but when he saw Zhou Wen's expression and gaze, instead of rushing over immediately, he stopped in his tracks.

An Sheng had seen similar looks and expressions many times. It was the look and expression that a particular

Overseer he knew well had when it was time to reel in the net he had carefully arranged.

Ják suppressed the excitement in his heart as he stood up. He licked the blood on his lips and looked at Zhou Wen with burning eyes. "You should feel honored to be the first person I, Ják, have killed in 27 years."

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 407 - Slaying

407 Slaying

Following Ják's words, the Blood Hex Clown beside him emitted blood-colored light. The Blood Hex Clown levitated, its hands seemingly praying to Buddha while it seemed to chant something.

As the chanting sounded, the Blood Hex Clown's sanguine halo intensified. It actually turned into blood-colored incantations that revolved around its body.

As for the palm gripping Zhou Wen's ankle, it exploded from the Blood Hex Clown's blood hex. The strange blood-colored incantation patterns crept onto Zhou Wen's stone armor as though they were trying to wrap him in a net formed of blood-colored incantations.

"In that case, you should feel more honored than me," Zhou Wen said to Ják without showing any signs of panic despite being trapped by the blood incantation.

Ják felt a little uneasy as he stared at Zhou Wen and asked, "Why?"

"It's because you will be killed by me. You have lived for so many years. This should be the first time you have been killed, right?" Zhou Wen said.

"Is that so? Then I'm really looking forward to it." Ják felt that something was amiss, but with the arrow already strung, he had to release it. However, the unease made him

activate it ahead of time. He didn’t wait for the Blood Hex Clown to finish the incantation.

A red glow flashed from the Blood Hex Clown’s body as it flashed like police sirens. The Blood Hex Clown’s body suddenly exploded the next second.

With the self-detonation of the Blood Hex Clown, the blood incantation on Zhou Wen’s body and the severed hand exploded. It was an internecine curse.

Bang! A blood-colored blast of light rose from Zhou Wen’s body as everything almost twenty meters in diameter was destroyed by it.

“Impossible!” Ják stared at the empty area behind the blood explosion and saw Zhou Wen still flowing in holy light. He stood there like a god of light, completely unharmed.

Ják completely couldn’t believe his eyes. It was the evil self-destruct skill that the Blood Hex Clown had acquired only after it advanced to a Perfect Body. The power of its self-detonation was enough to injure even a Mythical Creature. However, it would take a long time before the Blood Hex Clown Life Soul would recover from its self-destruction. Ják seldom used it even before he was locked up.

Being cornered today, he used this power, but he never expected that it would fail to injure Zhou Wen at all. How could he remain composed?

However, he was ultimately a person with an iron will. When he realized that something was wrong, he phased away into a shadow in a bid to escape without any hesitation.

“Are you done playing? It’s my turn now, right?” With the Overlord Sword in hand, Zhou Wen’s sun-like radiance

gradually vanished. It was replaced by a mysterious aura.

Unlike the vital radiance from before, Zhou Wen didn’t leak any Primordial Energy as he seemed to meld into the void.

Double Life Souls! An Sheng was pleasantly surprised.

Double Life Souls were extremely rare. This was because Primordial Energy Arts could easily produce conflicts. Typically, an ordinary person could only cultivate one. Otherwise, it was very possible that the conflict between Primordial Energy Arts would cause damage to the body, especially when advancing. Such sudden conflicting impulses happened suddenly.

It was especially so when Life Providences between the Primordial Energy Arts clashed. Death was almost certain. Needless to say, any conflict in Life Souls would probably lead to a situation worse than death.

An Sheng knew a person who cultivated dual Primordial Energy Arts and condensed two Life Souls. That person had peerless talent, and with immense perseverance, he condensed two Life Souls of two different Primordial Energy Arts.

He originally thought that he was fine, but afterward, he realized that he could only control his body in the day. Once he fell asleep, his Life Soul would occupy his body and do many crazy things that he didn’t even know about. Eventually, he went mad and was sent to a mental hospital.

The fact that Zhou Wen was able to have double Life Souls proved that his talent was indeed as excellent as the former principal had said. However, An Sheng was worried that the double Life Souls would harm Zhou Wen.

Having double Life Souls exacerbated Zhou Wen's advancement to the Mythical stage. There was already no clear advancement path, but now, he had added an obstacle for himself. This made An Sheng very worried; the surprise was both worrisome and pleasant.

Zhou Wen switched his Life Providence to Godfiend and the Lost Country ring appeared on his finger. Zhou Wen remained suspended in midair as he looked at the escaping Ják in shadow form, having no intention of pursuing him. All he did was touch the Lost Country ring on his finger.

A strange glint flashed in the eyes of the ring's ghost face. It was as if a supernatural being had opened its eyes. Furthermore, the light gradually spread outwards, causing the originally simple, ancient ring to have incantations engraved on it.

Boom! Boom! Boom! Boom!

Ják fled in a frenzy, but when he charged through the woods and hit the sword marks that Zhou Wen had delivered previously, sword flashes burst out from the sword marks.

Ják ran so quickly and anxiously that he repeatedly triggered countless sword marks. Rays of sword flashes stabbed into his body and exploded, instantly blasting Ják out of his shadow form.

Covered in blood, Ják suffered wounds everywhere thanks to the sword flashes. He fell to the ground, coughing blood non-stop.

Ják stared at Zhou Wen and swallowed a mouthful of blood. He asked in a hoarse voice, "You… know how hex spells as well?"

“No, but I have to thank you for giving me some inspiration. If it weren’t for you, I wouldn’t have thought of using my Life Soul in this manner.” Zhou Wen wasn’t lying.

Ják’s combat method inspired Zhou Wen. It allowed him to combine the spatial and dimensional knowledge he had acquired recently and finally figured out a way to use the Lost Country. It wasn’t as simple and crude as using it for teleportation.

Lost Country’s ability to change spatial trajectories wasn’t limited to just teleportation.

Ják looked at Zhou Wen with a complicated expression. Although he was a genius, he had only just advanced to the Legendary stage at Zhou Wen’s age. He was far inferior to the present Zhou Wen.

Zhou Wen didn’t hesitate at all as he slashed out the Demonic Astral Wheel. He planned on slaying the heavily injured Ják, unwilling to give him any chance.

Ják was no longer able to dodge, but there was no trace of fear on his face. Instead, his eyes were scorching hot.

“This is amazing! This world is amazing! There should be plenty of strong fellows like you among humans, right? It’s really thrilling,” Ják muttered to himself in fervor.

Zhou Wen ignored him as he cleaved apart Ják’s body with the Overlord Sword. Fresh blood spewed out as Ják was split into two on the spot.

However, when Ják’s body landed, Zhou Wen was shocked to see it transform into a palm-sized doll that had been sliced into two. The doll even spoke despite being sliced in half. “Zhou Wen, you really excite me. To me, you’re a top-notch

food ingredient. I’ll definitely kill you and make your flesh into a top-notch delicacy. Before that, please do protect your body and prevent anyone from tainting this priceless ingredient.”

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 408 - An Sheng“s Suggestion

408 An Sheng“s Suggestion

In a cave, a pale-faced Ják spat out a mouthful of blood. His face flushed abnormally red. He had used a puppet avatar hex to battle Zhou Wen. Although the one killed was only a puppet avatar and not his main body, the death of his avatar dealt him some severe injuries.

Furthermore, the Blood Hex Clown Life Soul had really self-destructed. It was a very serious blow to him.

Although I can't wait to eat delicacies, I still need to get some Companion Beasts first. Otherwise, I might really not be his match. Ják wiped the blood from his mouth as he wondered how he could obtain a Companion Beast.

He naturally did not fancy typical Companion Beasts. With his present situation, he needed plenty of time to obtain high-level Companion Beasts.

Since those people from the League want me to do their bidding, they should pay for it. A look of mockery flashed in Ják's eyes.

If he had considered taking Zhou Wen to the bureau to exchange for true freedom, he no longer had that thought after today's battle.

Ják walked out of the cave and headed for Luoyang City. He didn't have any communication devices like phones on him, so he needed to find a place to contact Shen Yuchi.

He didn't plan on telling Shen Yuchi what happened today. Failure would only make them think that he was incompetent. Ják planned on telling Shen Yuchi that the An family was protecting Zhou Wen. He needed some Companion Beasts to bring him back.

Others might only need a Companion Egg, but Ják was different. It would be fine even if it was a Companion Beast with an owner. He believed that Shen Yuchi wouldn't reject his request.

After entering Luoyang City, Ják went to a shop to buy a phone and contacted Shen Yuchi. As he expected, although Shen Yuchi was a little reluctant, he still agreed to his request. He told him to wait two days for the Companion Beasts to arrive.

After the call, he wanted to throw the phone into the trash can, but he realized that there were several different types of bins. He didn't know what the different labels meant, so he casually threw it into one of them.

"Sir, you're mistaken. You just threw a phone, right? That's recyclable. You should place it in the bin for recyclable waste…" a young girl said to Ják when she walked over.

Ják looked at the girl coldly. When the girl and Ják looked at each other, she was stunned. Then, as if she had lost her soul, she walked toward him.

Ják turned and walked into a remote area with the girl following in tow. She had no idea what she was doing.

In an empty alley, Ják looked at the girl and reached his hand out towards her neck. However, before his fingers could touch it, he stopped. There was a strange expression on his face.

Darn it. All I can think of right now is that top-notch delicious ingredient. How can I eat such trash? Ják looked at the girl with disgust before gritting his teeth and turning to leave.

Not long after Ják left, the girl woke up and looked around blankly. She didn't know why she was here, nor did she know that she had just escaped a calamity.

...

Zhou Wen scanned the entire forest and didn't discover any aura nor did he sense anything. He was certain that Ják's real body wasn't here.

"I failed to kill him despite going through all that trouble?" Zhou Wen sighed. He really wanted to kill Ják. He was too terrifying.

An Sheng walked over and said with a smile, "You're just a student, yet you managed to force Ják to such a state. I'm afraid no one will believe you if you tell others. You should be proud of yourself. What's there to sigh about?"

"Don't joke around. If I can't kill him this time, I don't know what terrifying means he will use to deal with the people around me next time," Zhou Wen said.

An Sheng nodded and said, "A devil like Ják will definitely not let this matter rest. It's indeed not appropriate for you to stay in school. You're fine on your own. With your capabilities, it won't be easy for Ják to touch you, but it's hard to say for the people around you."

Zhou Wen felt a headache over this. He wasn't afraid for himself, but if the next time the person standing in front of him was either Li Xuan or Wang Lu, Zhou Wen couldn't

imagine how he would feel if they suddenly exploded and splattered blood all over him.

"Young Master Wen, if you don't want to go to the An family, I have a suggestion. You can prevent the people around you from being hurt by Ják, and also stay safe," An Sheng said with narrowed eyes.

"What's the suggestion?" Zhou Wen asked.

"Recently, Chess Mountain hasn't been peaceful. There are frequent signs of break-out creatures. Deputy Governor Qin is building a special unit to guard Chess Mountain. Those people are not part of the army. Most of them are mercenary hunters or cultivators who have committed a crime. If you are interested, you can join this unit. Firstly, you can contribute to guarding Chess Mountain. Secondly, you can also avoid injury to the people around you. Thirdly, there are many experts in the camp, so it won't be easy for Ják to touch you," An Sheng said.

"Aren't you afraid that I would be killed by a break-out creature at Chess Mountain?" Zhou Wen looked at An Sheng gloomily.

"I really didn't dare to recommend you in the past. But after watching your battle with Ják, I don't think it makes a difference," An Sheng said.

"How can it not make a difference?" Zhou Wen felt that what An Sheng said made no sense. There was naturally no danger if he didn't go.

An Sheng smiled and said, "With your present strength, if you were killed, then Chess Mountain's encampment would definitely be lost. So even if you don't go to Chess Mountain, the break-out creatures inside will still rush to Luoyang City.

When the time comes, won't you still have to fight them? So what difference does it make?"

"Why do I have to fight them? Can't I run?" Zhou Wen curled his lips.

"You can also run on Chess Mountain. Don't worry. You aren't a regular soldier. Just run. You won't be considered a deserter," An Sheng said with a smile.

Zhou Wen was hesitant. Life on campus was comfortable. If possible, he really didn't want to go to a dangerous place like Chess Mountain.

An Sheng noticed Zhou Wen's hesitation and continued, "Tell me. If Luoyang City really falls in the future, it will definitely be the doing of dimensional creatures in Chess Mountain. If I were you, I would head to Chess Mountain to take a look. At least I would understand the creatures there ahead of time and know how to deal with them. It's much better than others who aren't prepared."

"Is Chess Mountain that terrifying?" Zhou Wen asked in puzzlement when he saw how serious An Sheng was.

"According to our research, the ruins of the ancient Zhaoge City might be in Chess Mountain. Don't you think it's terrifying?" An Sheng said sternly.

Zhou Wen was slightly taken aback. In the history of the East District, there were two most famous battles between deities, monsters, immortals, saints, and humans. One was the battle between the Yellow Emperor and Chiyou. The other was the famous Battle of Muye. The famous novel, Investiture of the Gods, had depicted this very battle.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 409 - Blood River

409 Blood River

Zhou Wen thought for a moment and felt that going to Chess Mountain didn't seem like a bad idea. He could also seek out the tiny palm symbol and try to download Chess Mountain.

Just as An Sheng had said, the more he knew about dimensional creatures, the higher the chances of him being able to survive after a large-scale break-out.

While the dimensional creatures in Chess Mountain had yet to rush out en masse, this was the best chance to go to Chess Mountain. The situation would only worsen in the future, so it wouldn't be easy to head over again.

"Just treat it as going on a vacation and touring the area. It will not be too late to return to campus after Ják's matter is resolved," An Sheng said.

"Alright. When do we set off?" Zhou Wen asked.

"To prevent any delays, let's do it now." An Sheng looked at Zhou Wen and said, "Don't tell me you still wish to return to the school and inform your schoolmates? Wouldn't that be equivalent to telling Ják who matters to you so that he can threaten you with them?"

Zhou Wen thought for a moment and agreed with him. He gave up on his plans to return to the school and followed An Sheng to Chess Mountain.

Chess Mountain was not far from Luoyang City, so it was not long before Zhou Wen arrived at the encampment with An Sheng.

As the situation at Chess Mountain was getting worse, Qin Wufu had been transferred here and was temporarily in charge of guarding Chess Mountain.

After An Sheng introduced Zhou Wen to Qin Wufu, Qin Wufu sized up Zhou Wen strangely and said, "Adjutant An, are you sure you want Zhou Wen to join the new unit?"

"Yes," An Sheng answered affirmatively.

"It's not impossible, but you should know the unit's situation. The members are quite rowdy…" Qin Wufu knew Zhou Wen and knew his relationship with the An family. That was why he was being tactful. Otherwise, he would have rejected Zhou Wen joining the unit.

After all, Zhou Wen was only a student. The unit he had recently established was used to guard Chess Mountain, so all the members were at the Epic stage.

An Sheng noticed Qin Wufu's concerns, so he said, "You know Zhou Wen's situation as well. The bureau has been looking for trouble with him over Wang Mingyuan's matter, so Madam got him here mainly because she wants you to take care of him… Actually, it's just for a few days. Madam has other plans, so he will be sent back very soon…"

Qin Wufu felt a headache coming on. Defending Chess Mountain was enough to give him a headache. Now, he had to take care of some nepotic fellow like Zhou Wen.

However, Qin Wufu had to take into consideration Ouyang Lan and reluctantly agreed to accept Zhou Wen. However,

he rejected Zhou Wen's entry into the unit and told him to stay put for a few days. There was no need for him to do anything.

Zhou Wen didn't mind. He had only planned on staying temporarily for a few days, returning once he resolved his Ják problem.

Therefore, Zhou Wen stayed at Chess Mountain's encampment. As he didn't have a job scope and wasn't a soldier, he didn't need to be on duty. No one cared about him, so it suited Zhou Wen's intentions.

On the day Zhou Wen went to the Chess Mountain encampment, he headed out to take a look. There was fog in the direction of Chess Mountain, so he couldn't see anything clearly. It was as though a beast trapped in fog had opened its mouth.

The river flowing out of Chess Mountain was as red as blood. An Sheng told him that it had started a few months ago.

"Which military unit are you from? Why are you wandering around here?" As Zhou Wen walked slowly along the riverbank in search of the tiny palm symbol, an officer leading a patrol stopped him.

Zhou Wen showed his identification card that Qin Wufu had given him. The officer took it and immediately felt respect for him. After a military salute, he handed the identification documents to Zhou Wen. "So it's Doctor Little Zhou. What are you doing here?"

The job title Qin Wufu gave him was an intern doctor. Although he was only an intern doctor, doctors were highly respected in the military. No one could guarantee that they

wouldn't be injured on the battlefield. They would definitely need doctors to help them.

Most people who could become military doctors had the ability to heal. This ability was extremely rare and precious on the battlefield. Even an intern doctor was a rare species.

This officer didn't know that Zhou Wen wasn't even an intern doctor. His identity was something Qin Wufu had temporarily given to him in order to make it easier for him to stay in the military camp.

"I just came to the river to take a look," Zhou Wen said casually.

When the officer heard Zhou Wen, he imagined that Zhou Wen was investigating and collecting samples, so he sighed and said, "Doctor Little Zhou, you have to investigate carefully. There's indeed a problem with the river's water. Recently, many of our soldiers have suffered red rashes. The more frequently they patrol the river, the worse the rashes become. Although they don't deal any major harm and one can recover after two days from staying away from the river, the itch is really tremendous. It's not like we can avoid patrolling."

Although Zhou Wen wasn't a true doctor, he knew some basic knowledge. He asked casually, "Have you tried using a filtered face mask?"

"We've tried. It's completely useless. Even protective suits have been worn. It's still useless. As long as we get near this river, the rashes will still break out," the officer said.

Zhou Wen really didn't know much. Just as he was thinking of how to send them away and continue his search for the

tiny palm symbol, he saw a soldier running over from the mountain pass, panting.

"Why are you here? Shouldn't you be guarding the sentry post?" the officer asked immediately when he saw the soldier.

"Liu Gui… He suddenly fainted… I can't wake him up no matter what I do… He has rashes all over him…" the soldier said as he panted heavily.

"What… Quick, find a doctor… Ah, Dr. Little Zhou is here… Follow us quickly. We need to take a look…" The officer recalled that Zhou Wen was an intern doctor so he pulled him towards the mountain pass.

Zhou Wen's face turned livid. He was an imposter. How could he know any medical skills? It would be a wonder if he could figure out anything.

However, he hadn't denied his identity as a doctor, so it wasn't appropriate for him to say anything now. He felt that he wouldn't say anything once he came to the soldier. He would immediately direct them to send the soldier to the medical team and be done with it.

The sentry post was the closest outpost to Chess Mountain. Usually, there would be two soldiers standing guard and monitoring the situation nearby.

When Zhou Wen arrived at the sentry post, he realized that this was indeed close to the Chess Mountain's pass. He could vaguely see the mountain pass's cliff.

There was a soldier lying in the sentry post. Zhou Wen was shocked when he saw his face. His face was covered in rashes and parts were covered in blood.

"What's going on? Why are his rashes so serious?" the officer glared at another soldier and asked.

The soldier didn't dare hide anything as he revealed the truth. "Originally, the rule was to take turns every three days, spending a maximum of three days per rotation. However, Liu Gui had some matters to attend to and had to swap shifts with his other comrades. Including today, he has been here for seven days."

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 410 - Imposter Doctor

410 Imposter Doctor

"The unit has made it clear that we can only stand guard for a maximum of three days. Furthermore, we are to stay away from the river for three subsequent days. He actually stayed here for seven days. Does he have a death wish?" The officer looked at Zhou Wen as he spoke.

The soldier said with a bitter smile, "Liu Gui said that he had a tenacious body and wasn't afraid. He was really fine in the beginning. He didn't get any rashes after manning it for five days like us. On the sixth day, he only had a tiny bout of rashes, but who knew that his rashes would suddenly break out today. His entire body is covered in rashes and they are festering. Before I left, it wasn't as serious …"

"Doctor Little Zhou, what do we do?" the officer asked Zhou Wen.

"What else can we do? Send him back to the medical team quickly." Zhou Wen was just about to say that when he saw the soldier's body convulse. Wherever his skin was exposed, the red rashes rapidly decayed and his hands festered.

It was unknown if the pain had jolted him awake. He began reaching out and clawing his face. With one swipe, his skin was torn, leaving behind a few marks on his face. His cheekbones could be seen, making him look extremely frightening.

However, the soldier did not care and continued to claw himself with all his might. His face was mangled in a few

scratches, but he refused to stop and continued to claw at it with all his might.

"Hold him down!" the officer immediately ordered. The soldiers rushed forward and pressed his hand down to stop him from grabbing his face.

It was unknown if Liu Gui was conscious or not. He didn't say a word as he struggled with all his might to claw his face.

"Liu Gui, do you have a death wish…" the officer berated him loudly, but Liu Gui acted as though he didn't hear anything. He struggled with all his might, his feet kicking hard as he rubbed his body across the ground. After he kicked off his boots and socks, people realized that his feet were covered in rashes.

Suddenly, Liu Gui stopped struggling and blood seeped out from his mouth. He looked like he was about to die.

"Doctor Little Zhou, what should we do? Hurry up and save Old Liu." A soldier who was on good terms with Liu Gui nearly cried.

Zhou Wen thought to himself, I'm not a real doctor. How would I know?

He wanted them to send him to the medical team, but it was already too late by the looks of it. Zhou Wen thought for a moment and felt that this red rash could also be a poison. Perhaps Doctor Darkness's Fight Poison With Poison would be useful.

By now, Zhou Wen could only attempt a Hail Mary. He would rather have the soldier die in his hands than watch him die.

Without any hesitation, he summoned Doctor Darkness to appear in companion form and used Fight Poison with Poison as a syringe appeared in his hand.

"Hold him down properly. Don't let him move," Zhou Wen said to the soldiers.

After all, he was not a real doctor. Administering injections was not his forte. Fortunately, if it was only administering a tranquilizer, he could still do it.

The few soldiers held Liu Gui down tightly as Zhou Wen stabbed the syringe in and slightly pushed the plunger, injecting bits of poison into Lin Gui's body before stopping to watch his reaction.

Doctor Darkness's poison was extremely potent. He reacted quickly after being injected with it. The blood that flowed out of Liu Gui's mouth had clearly decreased, but Zhou Wen didn't know if it was because he was about to die or if Fight Poison With Poison was showing its effect.

After waiting for a while longer, Liu Gui's rashes stopped festering. Liu Gui's convulsions also lessened in intensity.

Seeing that the poison was effective, Zhou Wen injected a little more. Liu Gui's body convulsed even more, but the rashes on his body were dissipating.

Zhou Wen knew that it was truly effective. It was normal for Liu Gui's body to convulse. It was unknown what kind of poison Doctor Darkness used, but the pain from having it injected into the body was something Zhou Wen had experienced before. It wasn't something an ordinary person could tolerate.

However, this also meant that Liu Gui's condition was improving. Previously, he couldn't feel any pain.

Zhou Wen didn't dare to inject too much poison. Seeing the improvement, he put away the syringe and used Doctor Darkness's Light of Penetration to look inside Liu Gui's body. He didn't discover any problems, nor did he discover what the source of the rashes was.

"Ah! It hurts!" Liu Gui's eyes widened as he screamed in pain. His body struggled even harder.

"Doctor Little Zhou, what's going on?" The officer and several soldiers looked at Zhou Wen, unsure of what was happening.

"His condition has improved. He's probably saved, but it's impossible to carry out any of the subsequent treatment here. Quickly send him to the medical team," Zhou Wen said.

The officer hurriedly summoned an ox-shaped Companion Beast which carried Liu Gui back to the encampment.

"Doctor Little Zhou, are you heading back with us?" the officer asked Zhou Wen.

"I still have something on. I still have to take a look by the river. Go ahead." Zhou Wen didn't have any medical skills. It was useless even if he followed. However, since Fight Poison With Poison had been effective in saving Liu Gui's life, the extent of his recovery depended on the true doctors.

The officer was in a hurry to bring Liu Gui back, so he did not speak further and rushed back to the encampment.

Zhou Wen continued walking in the direction of Chess Mountain, hoping to find the palm symbol. He didn't dare get too close to the Chess Mountain's mountain pass. The place was extremely unstable, and dimensional creatures could rush out at any time. Therefore, he only searched in the vicinity.

However, there were no stone monuments or any human buildings by the river. There was no tiny palm symbol. As he approached Chess Mountain, the rocks in the mountain pass could be seen clearly.

The rock on Chess Mountain was very unique. Most of it was black, but there were some rocks that were white in color. The contrast was obvious as if some white lines had been drawn on black cloth.

The blood-colored river flowed out from the mouth of the mountain. If the color was any darker, it would really resemble blood.

There's no tiny palm symbol? Zhou Wen was somewhat disappointed as he looked in the direction of Chess Mountain, afraid to head forward. A warning sign had already been erected in front of him, indicating that it would be dangerous to head any further.

Zhou Wen held the mysterious phone and scanned the surroundings with the camera function. There wasn't a vibrational notification on his phone either. He didn't know if there really wasn't a tiny palm symbol or if his mysterious phone couldn't detect anything due to the proximity gap.

I'll continue walking. If the mountain pass's wall doesn't have it, I'll return. Zhou Wen hesitated for a moment before deciding to take a walk forward to see if there was anything on the mountain pass's walls.

With his present strength, as long as he didn't encounter a Mythical creature, there shouldn't be too much danger.

However, Zhou Wen was still very careful and didn't dare let his guard down. Strength wasn't absolute, and he wasn't omnipotent. If he encountered a dimensional creature he couldn't subdue, even if he were of the same level or higher it could still take his life.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 411 - The Little Flower on the Mountain

Chapter 411 The Little Flower on the Mountain

Lu Su was reading some documents for her research when she suddenly received an emergency notice. She rushed over to take a look at the soldier's condition and could not help but frown. "What happened to him?"

"Dr. Lu, Liu Gui violated the rules. He stationed himself at the sentry post for seven days, and turned into this," the officer said.

"He stationed himself at the sentry post for seven days straight? Does he not want his life anymore?" Lu Su was slightly taken aback when she heard that. She went forward to carefully observe Liu Gui's injuries and asked in disbelief, "He must have scratched himself, right? There's indeed some festering, but…"

The more she looked at it, the stranger she found it. Liu Gui's injuries seemed to have signs of rashes, but it was obvious that the rashes were no longer festering and there were signs of recovery. The situation wouldn't have been so if the rashes had really acted up.

"We happened to meet Doctor Little Zhou earlier on. Doctor Zhou injected some medicine into Liu Gui at the sentry post, improving his condition a little. He's much better now…" the officer explained everything that had happened earlier.

“Doctor Little Zhou? Which Doctor Little Zhou?” Lu Su found it unbelievable.

After all her research, she had ultimately failed to find a way to treat the rashes. Once it acted up, death was a certainty. According to what they said, Liu Gui had been there for seven days without dying. That was testimony to his luck. The situation back then must have been the rashes acting up, quickly turning him into a pool of blood.

According to their description, Liu Gui should already be a dead person. Even if she, Lu Su, had been present, there was no way she could have saved Liu Gui.

However, the doctor they were talking about had only given one injection to significantly improve Liu Gui. She could no longer see any signs of the rashes, so she found it unbelievable.

“It’s Dr. Zhou Wen. His identification document says that he’s an intern,” the officer replied.

Lu Su ran through all the medical team’s personnel through her mind, but they did not have such an intern doctor. There were indeed a few new interns this year, but none of them had the Zhou surname.

“Take him in for a checkup now.” Lu Su let Liu Gui in. Liu Gui could already walk on his own, but his facial injuries were rather serious.

Lu Su checked Liu Gui and treated his wounds. But this only served to surprise her more.

Liu Gui’s entire body was covered in festering rashes, which meant that the breakout was very severe. Liu Gui and company were probably not lying, but the rashes did not

show any continual signs of decay. Instead, they were slowly improving.

After Lu Su’s check-up, Liu Gui had almost fully recovered from his rashes. Even if he didn’t undergo any more treatment, he would recover in a few days. However, he needed to be treated for those festering wounds or his entire body would be covered with scars.

Instead, the self-inflicted wounds were more serious. It would probably take him quite some time to treat them.

“Are you sure that the intern doctor you met is named Zhou Wen?” Lu Su asked again.

The officer answered with certainty, “It’s Doctor Zhou Wen, alright. I made sure.”

“That’s strange.” Lu Su really wanted to meet Zhou Wen and ask him what he had injected into Liu Gui, but she couldn’t recall having such a person in the medical team.

When she returned to her office, Lu Su found the medical team’s case files and saw that none of the intern doctors were named Zhou Wen. None of them had the Zhou surname.

How strange. Could it be that they were really lucky to meet a deity? Lu Su was secretly puzzled.

…

Zhou Wen was less than two hundred meters from Chess Mountain’s mountain pass. With his eyesight, he was able to see if there were any patterns on the mountain wall, so he didn’t head forward again.

Zhou Wen’s gaze constantly sized up the mountain wall and after a while, he failed to find the tiny palm symbol. Instead, he saw a strange flower.

The flower was growing on the wall of Chess Mountain and was only about ten centimeters tall. The leaves were black, but the flowers were white. The contrasting colors resembled the rock colors of Chess Mountain.

The small flower grew alone on the stone wall. There were no plants for hundreds of meters.

There must be something wrong with things that happen out of the ordinary. Zhou Wen remembered that he had been taught in school that there was no lack of terrifying plants in dimensional zones. Perhaps the flower in front of him was a terrifying plant-type dimensional creature.

Therefore, Zhou Wen’s nerves immediately tensed up when he saw the flower. It wasn’t because he was excited, but because he was wary.

Plant-type powers were often rather special. Many animal-type dimensional creatures relied on brute force to achieve victory, but that wasn’t something Zhou Wen was afraid of.

However, most plant-type dimensional creatures didn’t achieve victory through brute force. Using the knowledge he learned from school, he knew there were many flower-type dimensional creatures that killed with pollen. There were also some fungoid dimensional creatures that could give off tiny spores that could barely be seen with the naked eye. Through the respiratory tract or the gullet, or even pores, they could enter the body and parasitize humans. They treated the human body as nutrients and sucked the human to their deaths.

Zhou Wen wore the Truth Listener earring and listened to the flow of the air, but he didn’t find any tiny particles swirling over from the side of the flower. Only then did he feel relieved.

Although he didn’t know if the flower was a plant-type dimensional creature, Zhou Wen decided to stay far from it. There was nothing wrong with being careful. He didn’t want to die here for no reason.

He turned around and walked in another direction, hoping to stay away from the flower. However, just as Zhou Wen walked a few steps, he heard a voice from the flower.

“Can you hear me?” It was a woman’s voice. Although the sun hadn’t set and the sky wasn’t too dark, Zhou Wen was still alarmed.He turned to look at the direction of the voice and saw that there was neither human nor dimensional creature. There was only the flower growing on the mountain wall.

“Can you hear me?” The flower sounded again. Strangely, the flower turned around and faced Zhou Wen.

Zhou Wen shut his mouth and stared at the flower, but he slowly retreated.

Zhou Wen didn’t want to know why the strange flower could speak. He only hoped that the flower wouldn’t cause any trouble for him. He wasn’t sure if he could deal with it.

“Why do you want to leave? I just want to chat with you. Nothing else.” The woman’s voice came from within the flower again.

Call me a fool if I believe you. Such lines often appear in movies and dramas. Many men say this to women to cheat

them into getting a room, Zhou Wen thought to himself, but he still retreated without answering the flower.

Zhou Wen had heard a story from his grandfather when he was young. He said that when walking in the middle of the night, one was not to answer or turn their head to look once they heard a stranger calling their name from behind; otherwise, they would die.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 412 - The Flower“s Powers

412 The Flower“s Powers

“Seven steps. If you take another seven steps, you will die. If you don’t believe me, you can continue walking,” the flower’s voice sounded again.

A cold sweat broke out on Zhou Wen’s forehead as he stood there, unsure if he should continue walking.

Logically speaking, Truth Listener was able to nullify any evil powers, but there was no invincible power in this world. Zhou Wen still hadn’t figured out what kind of evil powers Truth Listener could nullify.

If the flower was just making an empty threat, Zhou Wen would be fine with leaving, but what if it was speaking the truth? Zhou Wen didn’t dare gamble with his life.

However, Zhou Wen wasn’t willing to be frightened by the flower. Gritting his teeth, he continued retreating. One step, two steps, three steps. As he retreated, he looked at the flower on the mountain wall.

The flower didn’t make another sound. This only made Zhou Wen feel uneasy.

Four steps, five steps, six steps. Zhou Wen continued walking, but there was no reaction from the Truth Listener earring. Zhou Wen’s heart drummed. Could it really be a hoax? Why isn’t there any reaction at all?

Despite having this in mind, he didn’t dare to take the final step.

That’s right. Zhou Wen was indeed afraid of death, and there didn’t seem to be a need for him to risk his life.

“Why aren’t you walking? You have one more step to go.” The flower finally spoke, but its tone was filled with mockery.

“We don’t have any feud. Why are you making things difficult for me? If you lack fertilizer, I’ll help you find it. If you lack water, I’ll water you. How about that?” Zhou Wen stood there and shouted at the flower on the mountain wall.

“Why would I want your water and fertilizer?” The flower said coldly. “From now on, answer the questions I ask you. If you satisfy me, I’ll spare your life. Otherwise, I’ll make you beg for death. Even if you die, I’ll turn you into a candle.”

“I can’t stand being threatened by others. I’m leaving. What can you do about it?” Zhou Wen said as he raised his foot.

However, just as he raised his foot, he felt a wave of dizziness and almost fell to the ground. Alarmed, he stopped in his tracks, not daring to lift his foot to take the step.

Damn it, how did this happen? Zhou Wen was appalled. He knew that the flower was speaking the truth.

“Why aren’t you leaving? Continue walking. Where did your temper go?” the flower teased.

Zhou Wen thought to himself, There’s no need to lose my life over a quarrel with a flower. Even Truth Listener’s Evil Nullification Life Soul is useless. I wonder what origins this flower has.

“You seem to be the only flower growing on the mountain wall. You must be very lonely and sad. I hate seeing others sad and suffer, so I’ll chat with you. However, since it’s a chat, it can’t just be you asking questions. I should be able to ask you some questions too. Don’t you agree?” Zhou Wen bargained.

The flower didn’t refute him. Instead, it asked, “What’s your name?”

Zhou Wen’s heart skipped a beat. He remembered that in myths, there was a power capable of imprisoning people with the mere calling out of a name. He was momentarily unsure if he should answer.

“Why are you so wishy-washy? Just die,” the flower said impatiently.

“My name is Zhou Wen. What’s your name?” Zhou Wen knew that it was useless even if he used a fake name. This was because the name was actually just a representation. From his mouth, no matter if it was real or fake, it represented himself. If the other party really had that ability, it would be effective even on a fake name.

“Call me The Thearch.” The flower paused before asking, “Why are you here?”

“Will you believe me if I say that I’m here as a tourist?” Although Zhou Wen said that, he thought to himself, To think a flower wants to be called a thearch? Is it crazy?

The flower chuckled. “I believe you. Why not? Since you’re here to travel, I’ll do a good deed. I’ll take you to Chess Mountain for a tour.”

With that said, the wall in which the flower was rooted in, cracked. The cracks expanded slowly, causing Chess Mountain to shake slightly as if the mountain was about to split open.

“There’s no need to trouble you. I’m afraid of heights. I hate climbing mountains the most. I’ll just watch the river scenery here.” The beads of cold sweat on Zhou Wen’s forehead increased a lot.

The swaying mountain finally calmed down. The flower mocked, “Are you really not coming in to take a look?”

“There’s really no need.” Zhou Wen hurriedly waved his hand before changing the topic. “Are there many dimensional creatures in Chess Mountain? Are there any Mythical creatures?”

“Of course, and there’s plenty. Which would you like to see? I can get them to come out to meet you,” the flower said with a smile.

“There’s no need. I was just asking.” Zhou Wen suspected that the flower was bluffing him with its inane claims.

It was just a flower, and it grew on a mountain wall that had suffered the elements. However, its tone sounded like it was the monarch of Chess Mountain. This left him very suspicious.

“Are there currently many humans with strength like yours?” the flower asked.

“There should be quite a number.” Zhou Wen thought for a moment and felt that it wasn’t a small number.

During Jing Daoxian’s era, not long after the dimensional storms, there were very few Epic experts. Over the past few decades, Epic experts were no longer as rare as they used to be.

“How many humans are there now?” the flower continued asking.

“It shouldn’t be more than ten billion, I guess,” Zhou Wen thought for a moment and replied. These weren’t secrets and there was nothing to hide.

“Then, people of your standard should number a few hundred million?” the flower muttered.

“This… I don’t think there’s that many.” Zhou Wen found it a little difficult to speak after hearing the flower’s words. This was because the actual situation was too different from the flower’s guesses.

Although Zhou Wen didn’t know how many Epic experts there were in the Federation, he estimated that it was difficult to even reach six digits. It was already quite good to have tens of thousands.

“Tens of millions?” the flower guessed again.

“A little fewer,” Zhou Wen said helplessly.

“Just a few million? Are humans so weak now? There are so few people at your level?” the flower said in a tone of disbelief.

“Something like that. I’m basically considered relatively weak.” Zhou Wen couldn’t tell the flower that it should reduce the number it guessed by a hundred times.

Zhou Wen thought for a moment and asked, “Are you very familiar with Chess Mountain? Have you seen a symbol here? It’s a picture of a tiny palm. There might be something in the palm.”

Zhou Wen roughly described the tiny palm symbol. Since he couldn’t leave, he might as well take the opportunity to find out more. Perhaps this flower really knew.

“There is indeed such a symbol on the top of Chess Mountain. I don’t know who carved it. It irritates me. Why are you looking for it?” the flower asked.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 413 - Climbing the Mountain

413 Climbing the Mountain

Zhou Wen was overjoyed when he heard that there was the tiny palm symbol. However, when he thought of how it was at the top of Chess Mountain—a place he didn't dare head up—he couldn't help but turn sullen.

"I've seen similar symbols in other dimensional zones, but I don't know what the symbol means. Therefore, I've been studying them all this time, hoping to take a picture. By the way, do you know what the tiny palm symbol represents?" Zhou Wen asked half-truthfully.

"How would I know? I don't know who carved it out of boredom. It's easy if you want to see it. Once you reach the peak, you will naturally be able to see it," the flower said.

"Forget it. It's not necessary." Upon hearing that he was going to have to climb up the mountain, Zhou Wen rejected it without even thinking.

There were countless terrifying creatures in Chess Mountain. Who knew if he would be able to come out after climbing up there?

However, the little flower laughed. "So you don't want to climb it? Then I'll make you. If you can't reach the peak within two hours, your eyes will go blind."

Previously, when the flower said that he would die within seven steps, Zhou Wen didn't pay attention. However, this time, he saw it clearly. Just as the flower's voice faded, one

of its petals wilted and scattered in the air as a point of light, as though it had vanished into thin air.

Zhou Wen didn't feel anything, nor did the Truth Listener earring react. However, he knew that he had probably been hit by some curse.

What origins does this flower have? Why is its power so strange? Zhou Wen looked at the flower and asked, "You said that I would die if I took seven steps. Now, you want me to climb the mountain within two hours? Doesn't this conflict?

The flower said calmly, "Don't worry. The first wish's wish forces have been covered by the second wish. You can walk anywhere you want now without dying. However, if you don't ascend Chess Mountain's peak in two hours, you will definitely become blind. Even a Mythical Primordial Energy Skill that can resurrect the dead won't be able to restore your vision. If you don't believe me, go ahead and leave this place."

"What are you really up to?" Zhou Wen looked up at the flower on the mountain wall and asked. If he were to go up Chess Mountain, he was afraid that he would lose his life. Being blind was better than dying.

At the very least, he still had the Truth Listener earring. Even if he was blind, he wouldn't be completely blind. He could use his ears as a substitute for his eyes. He just wouldn't be able to see any colors or changes in shadows in the future.

"Nothing. I just find it fun. If you don't want to climb the mountain, you can leave now. However, if I'm in a bad mood one day and think about you, I might make another wish to turn you into a cripple. I believe it will be very interesting," the flower said.

Zhou Wen stared at the flower and thought to himself, Indeed, I shouldn't take risks going near dimensional zones. It's better to just stay home and game.

"If you wish to kill me, just do it. There's no need to go through so much trouble," Zhou Wen said as he stared at the flower.

"If it wasn't for your good looks, do you think you could still stand and talk to me, a thearch?" the flower said in contempt.

Zhou Wen was immediately rendered speechless. He thought to himself, You are a flower. Why would you have any idea about human looks?

The flower continued, "Forget it. I shall tell you another secret. There's a treasure on the top of Chess Mountain. You shall have a chance of obtaining that treasure if you can climb up there. Based on the standards of you humans, it is a Mythical item."

"What Mythical item is it?" Zhou Wen asked.

"You'll know when you get up there. However, I shall give you a hint. Don't think about flying up. You must climb up the mountain wall. Otherwise, you'll die," the flower said.

"Alright, I'll climb." Zhou Wen gritted his teeth. He knew that he had provoked this flower. Even if he were to leave now, there would be endless trouble. He might as well go take a look. If there was really a tiny palm symbol, he could snap it and download it into the game. He could then understand Chess Mountain's secret in-game and think of a way to eliminate the flower's pestering.

Zhou Wen walked to the stone wall and reached out to grab the cracks on the rock before climbing up. The moment he climbed up, he immediately felt that something was amiss. A powerful magnet seemed to be situated beneath Chess Mountain. It tugged at his body, making it suddenly feel heavy. He struggled to climb up, just like ordinary people when they went rock-climbing.

"Do you find yourself heavy?" the flower's voice sounded.

"Why did this happen?" Zhou Wen asked as he crawled up.

"The Chess Mountain is a sealed place. Even those true immortals don't dare approach it. Only your human body can approach it. It won't be injured by the power of the seal, but it will still be affected by it," said the flower.

"A sealed place? Who sealed it?" Zhou Wen took the opportunity to gather information.

"If you can climb up the mountain and see that Mythical item, you will naturally be able to guess who he is. If you don't climb up, it's useless telling you." The flower paused and said, "Since you have already climbed up, don't think about retreating. Otherwise, you shall die. If you don't believe me, look down."

Zhou Wen looked down and was alarmed. He had only climbed up a few meters, but the bottom had turned into a bottomless abyss, as though it was leading straight to hell.

Damn you flower, just you wait. Once I download Chess Mountain's instance dungeon and find your weakness in-game, I'll finish you, Zhou Wen thought hatefully.

He didn't know if it was an illusion or what was going on, but since he had come up, Zhou Wen didn't plan on retreating.

He continued climbing up.

The more he climbed up, the heavier his body became. It was as though his body was covered in chains. Even with Zhou Wen's strong physique, he found it exhausting just climbing a few hundred meters.

Thankfully, Chess Mountain wasn't tall. It was only about 700–800 meters. If it was a mountain that was thousands of meters high, Zhou Wen really doubted if he could scale it.

The flower said, "I couldn't tell. Your perseverance is not bad."

"It's okay. You've been at Chess Mountain for so long. Do you know who Chess Mountain's original owner is?" Zhou Wen didn't forget to fish for more information.

"I'm the owner of Chess Mountain," the flower said with a laugh.

Zhou Wen naturally didn't believe it. According to An Sheng, Chess Mountain traced to the ancient Zhaoge City. If that was the case, there would definitely be many Mythical creatures inside. There would be no lack of famous Mythical existences. Even if this flower had powerful and strange powers, Zhou Wen definitely didn't believe its claim of being the owner of Chess Mountain.

Despite nearing the summit, Zhou Wen's Truth Listener still couldn't hear anything from the top of the mountain. It was as though there was some mysterious force blocking the sounds, preventing Zhou Wen from peeping at the mountain peak.

Now, Zhou Wen felt as though someone was pulling him with a chain beneath him. Every step he climbed up

required him to use all his strength. He had no choice but to use the Ancient Sovereign Life Soul to replenish his vital energies. This eased him greatly.

"Eh? The aura of an ancient human sovereign. Do you cultivate the Ancient Sovereign Sutra?" The flower sensed the power of the Ancient Sovereign Life Soul and immediately guessed the Primordial Energy Art Zhou Wen cultivated.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 414 - Peak

414 Peak

"You know about the Ancient Sovereign Sutra?" Zhou Wen asked.

The flower laughed and said, "It's not like it's something impressive. Why wouldn't I know? It's no wonder you climbed up Chess Mountain so easily. It turns out that you've cultivated the Ancient Sovereign Sutra. However, after cultivating the Ancient Sovereign Sutra, your future will not be too easy. It will be extremely difficult to pass the Mythical stage."

"Why would it be difficult to cultivate the Ancient Sovereign Sutra? Aren't other Primordial Energy Arts difficult to cultivate?" Zhou Wen's heart stirred as he tried to get the way to advance to the Mythical stage from the flower's mouth.

To date, Zhou Wen had never heard of humans becoming Mythical experts. If he could obtain a method to advance to the Mythical stage, he might be the first Mythical expert among humans.

"They're difficult too. However, ordinary Primordial Energy Arts follow the order of the world. The Ancient Sovereign Sutra works by destroying the order of the world, so naturally, the difficulty is greater. Furthermore, the founder of the Ancient Sovereign Sutra, the strongest Human Sovereign of your human race, ultimately failed to change fate," the flower said.

"Which Human Sovereign are you referring to?" Zhou Wen hurriedly asked.

"As a human and one that cultivates the Ancient Sovereign Sutra, you don't even know your race's sovereign, Suiren-shi?" the flower was puzzled.

Only then did Zhou Wen realize that the Ancient Sovereign Sutra was a Primordial Energy Art left behind by Suiren-shi. It was the leader who had brought fire to humanity.

Zhou Wen originally believed that the Ancient Sovereign Sutra was discovered on E Bo Platform. It might have something to do with E Bo. He never expected it to be Suiren-shi's Primordial Energy Art.

"When you talk about changing fate, do you mean that Human Sovereign ultimately failed to advance to the Mythical stage?" Zhou Wen thought to himself that if that were the case, it would be even more difficult to advance the Ancient Sovereign Sutra to the Mythical stage in the future.

"You can understand it as that too," the flower said rather ambiguously. It didn't continue the topic. Instead, it said, "Once you reach the top of the mountain, you will see a stone staircase. Follow it, but do not walk around recklessly. Otherwise, don't blame your death on me. The tiny palm symbol will be engraved on the boulder at the end of the stone steps."

"What's that Mythical item you mentioned?" Zhou Wen asked.

"You're almost there. It's on the boulder." The flower ultimately didn't answer his question.

Even with the augmentation of the Ancient Sovereign Life Soul, it still took his all to just climb up. When he finally reached the mountaintop, his fingers trembled as he held them to the ground.

He looked up and sized up the mountaintop. Indeed, there was a stone staircase leading to the center of the mountain summit. There was a huge black boulder that looked like a steamed bun.

Zhou Wen immediately saw the tiny palm symbol on the stone and couldn't help but be overjoyed.

That flower didn't lie to me. There really is a tiny palm symbol. Zhou Wen stood up and carefully approached the bun-resembling black boulder.

As Zhou Wen took a few steps, he felt the mysterious phone vibrate in his pocket. Zhou Wen took it out and automatically opened the camera app.

He aimed the phone at the black boulder and the camera automatically focused. It locked onto the small palm symbol on the boulder before producing a snapping sound. It turned into the downloading interface.

"What is that in your hand?" the flower's voice came from the mountain wall.

"Don't you know what a cell phone is?" Zhou Wen realized that the mountain peak wasn't as dangerous as he had imagined it to be. It wasn't as terrifying as the flower had said. It was barren and he felt a little more relaxed.

Now that he had downloaded the game dungeon, he could research the flower's weakness when he got back. After he had researched it thoroughly, he could deal with it.

As long as he didn't die here, he still had a chance to turn the tables even if he was blinded by the flower.

Wait. If I'm blind, will the blood-colored avatar in-game be blind? Zhou Wen suddenly thought of a serious problem.

He and the blood-colored avatar shared the same vantage view. If the blood-colored avatar also became blind and he couldn't see the screen, wouldn't that mean that he couldn't game?

"What is a cell phone? It doesn't look like a treasure as it doesn't have any Primordial Energy fluctuations," the flower said.

"It's not a treasure. It's just a communication tool that we humans use to communicate across distances. There are also some functions like taking pictures. Everyone has one." Zhou Wen tried his best to describe the phone as something rather common to prevent the flower from suddenly becoming interested in the phone.

"What does taking pictures mean?" the flower asked again.

"It's to record down a scene into a drawing. I can take pictures of people or scenery," Zhou Wen said as he put away the mysterious phone. It looked like the flower was interested in the phone.

"Is that so? Take a photo and let me see," the flower said.

Zhou Wen was already mentally prepared as he took out his ordinary phone and took a few photos with his phone.

"This thing is rather interesting. The drawings are so realistic." the flower paused and said, "How do you speak with this thing across distances?"

"It's very simple. Every phone has a number. As long as you call this number, you can call another phone a distance away. However, there's no signal here, so there's no way to talk." Zhou Wen realized that there was no signal here.

"What is a signal?" the flower asked again.

"I don't quite understand that either. It roughly entails humans establishing cell towers. Through these cell towers, we can transmit signals across distances. There's no cell tower here, so there's no way to use the phone to communicate." Zhou Wen wasn't very knowledgeable on such matters so he just gave a general explanation.

"I understand. You have two phones. Give one to me then. You don't have any objections, right?" Although the flower was inquiring, its tone wasn't taking no for an answer.

"Sure, but there's no signal here. It's useless even if you have the phone, right? Besides, you don't have hands. How are you going to use the phone?" Zhou Wen asked.

"It's none of your business. Just place your phone on the stone steps," the flower said.

Zhou Wen deleted his own information on the phone. Thankfully, he didn't use it often. There wasn't much private information inside, so he deleted it in a few seconds.

"What's the number of this phone and the other phone?" the flower asked.

Zhou Wen told the flower his cell phone number before saying, "I didn't get a number for my other phone. I'll only get it after I return. However, there's communication software in there that can be used for communication. It can't be used due to a lack of signal though."

"It's alright. Tell me how to use it." The flower was very calm.

Zhou Wen told the flower how to use the communication software. He still wanted to return alive, so he agreed to any of the flower's requests.

After Zhou Wen gave the tutorial, the flower claimed that it understood. It was unknown if it really understood or was faking it. After all, there wasn't any signal here and there wasn't much use for having a phone. It was the same even if it didn't understand. Therefore, he couldn't be bothered to say more.

"By the way, where is the Mythical item you mentioned? Why don't I see it?"

"Didn't I tell you that it's on the boulder? You can see from its side," said the flower.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 415 - Treasure Box

415 Treasure Box

The bun-shaped boulder was about a meter tall. After Zhou Wen got closer, he could see the top.

There was a white jade box embedded in the middle of the boulder. When Zhou Wen saw that the white jade box didn't seem particularly outstanding, he asked, "Is the Mythical item that you mentioned in this jade box?"

"No. That jade box is the Mythical item," the flower said.

The jade box is the Mythical item? Zhou Wen sized it up, but he couldn't find anything special about it. It didn't have any extraordinary luster or Mythical patterns. It looked like an ordinary box made of white jade. It was about a foot long and only about four fingers wide.

"A real treasure is right in front of you, but you can't recognize it. You can be considered blind. Based on my personality back then, I would have dug your eyes out to quell my anger." The flower paused before continuing. "That box is a Mythical expert's Mythical item. It has terrifying power. Even a Mythical creature like a dragon wouldn't be able to withstand the power of the box. This Chess Mountain's seal remains because of its suppression."

"You mean that if I take it away, the seal on Chess Mountain will be lifted?" Zhou Wen asked in surprise.

He originally thought that the flower was trying to trick him into taking the treasure here and to achieve some hidden

ploy. However, the first thing the flower said was to point out the importance of the jade box. It left Zhou Wen surprised.

The flower said disdainfully, "As such a weak human, you don't have the right to take it away. Even a Mythical creature needs a special physique to be able to take it out. You're still far from it."

After pausing for a moment, the flower continued, "But if you can advance to the Mythical stage in the future, you can come over and give it a try. You cultivate in the Ancient Sovereign Sutra, so you might have a chance to take it away."

Only when I'm mad would I take it away. Why would I allow these monsters to walk the land? Zhou Wen thought to himself.

The flower seemed to see through Zhou Wen's thoughts as it said with a laugh, "It's only a matter of time before the dimensional zones rule the land. Even if you don't take it, someone will take it away in the future. Even in dimensional zones, this item is a unique treasure. It has killed countless Mythical creatures. If you really are that great, just pretend that it doesn't exist."

Zhou Wen was tempted when he heard that. the flower's words weren't without reason. When that truly happened, his choice of leaving it here would only benefit someone else.

Although he knew that the flower was tempting him, it was a lie to say that he wasn't tempted. However, he couldn't take it now.

I'll give it a try in-game. If I can take it away in-game, it shouldn't affect the real world, Zhou Wen thought to himself.

"I've climbed up the mountain and got my things. I've also given you my phone. Can I leave now?" Zhou Wen asked.

"Up to you." The flower had no intention of stopping Zhou Wen.

Zhou Wen hurriedly climbed down again. It was harder to go down the mountain than up the mountain. Thankfully, Zhou Wen had cultivated for so many years, so even if he didn't fly, he was still considered agile.

"So... I'm really leaving..." Zhou Wen said as he looked in the direction of the flower, afraid that something would happen again.

"Are you planning on getting me to keep you here on Chess Mountain for a meal?" the flower said coldly.

"There's no need to be so polite. I'll take my leave now. I'll contact you when I have the time." Zhou Wen hurriedly turned around and left. The flower had an unpredictable temperament. It was best if he could leave quickly.

When I find a loophole in-game, I'll deal with you when I come back. After Zhou Wen left Chess Mountain, he took out the phone and saw that it had already finished downloading. There was a new game icon on the home screen.

The icon was a black mountain with the name 'Chess Mountain.'

Zhou Wen rode the Mutated Stone Chi back and immediately opened the Chess Mountain dungeon. After entering the game, the blood-colored avatar stood in front of Chess Mountain's wall. There was a flower growing on it. Although the cartoon-styled flower looked a little different

from the real world, he could still vaguely tell that it was the flower Zhou Wen had seen.

Although he was in-game, Zhou Wen held back and didn't attack the flower because he couldn't die yet. He headed to the underground sea every twenty-four hours to deliver a Poison Dragon Palm at the black dragon to drain it to its death.

If it dropped a Mythical Companion Beast, he would have made a killing. Even without a Mythical Companion Beast, it would be a huge gain for him to have a Primordial Energy Skill Crystal drop. After all, Zhou Wen hadn't had the ability to kill a Mythical creature yet. It was very difficult to obtain a dimensional crystal at the Mythical stage.

Standing in front of the mountain wall and sizing up the flower, he realized it didn't speak like it did in real life. It just quietly grew on the mountain wall.

Zhou Wen decided to wait until he killed the black dragon before teaching the flower a lesson. Then, he chose to leave the game dungeon.

...

In a dark cave, a seductive woman was bound by criss-cross chains. The chains with runes pierced through her bones and chained her inside the cave. She couldn't even move and could only sit on the mountain wall. Her neck and legs were chained and she couldn't move at all.

At that moment, a phone was floating in front of the seductive woman. It was the one Zhou Wen had placed on the stone steps.

The seductive woman's gaze landed on the phone, but there seemed to be a pair of invisible hands that grabbed the phone and quickly operated it.

A cell phone is quite interesting. A strange smile gradually appeared on the seductive woman's face.

...

Zhou Wen returned to the encampment and finished grinding the game dungeons. Having nothing else to do, he took out his books from the chaos space to read.

Previously, during his battle with Ják, he had gained a new understanding of Lost Country. However, it hadn't reached the level where he could advance Lost Country to the Evolved Body stage. Now, he could use this period of time to study it and see if he could advance further, allowing Lost Country to become an Evolved Body.

A Life Soul itself had a certain ability, but the usage of the Life Soul's ability required the owner of the Life Soul to develop it himself. Teleportation was only the most basic usage of spatial trajectory forces.

After receiving inspiration from Ják, Zhou Wen thought of a different way of making use of spatial trajectories—Trajectory Control.

After the average person's strength was projected out, it was equivalent to spending money. It was impossible for them to get it back and they could not repeatedly use the same money to buy things.

However, by using the effect of spatial trajectories, he could still control the forces he sent out. They were connected to each other via the trajectory, but this connection was

different from what most people thought. It was invisible and did not physically exist.

Using this trajectory connection, Zhou Wen could be like Ják. He could set up his strength as though he was burying a land mine. With a detonator in hand, he could detonate any land mines he had buried beforehand.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 416 - Doctor Little Zhou

416 Doctor Little Zhou

However, in contrast, Ják’s Life Blast was more sinister. This was because Ják was detonating the energy of life itself. This meant that he didn’t expend his Primordial Energy. All he did was rely on the energies of others.

Zhou Wen’s method was to expend his Primordial Energy to set up a land mine. It would be a lot more troublesome and the expenditure was even more severe.

However, Life Blast was just too sinister. Every strike required the lives of others in exchange. The stronger the vital energy, the stronger the explosion would be.

Zhou Wen attempted to use the spatial trajectory he had figured out. Every trajectory link formed a string on his ring. If many of the trajectories connected, it would cover the ring with all sorts of lines as though they were incantations.

He had been studying the effects of spatial trajectories and used it as a breakthrough point in an attempt to advance the Lost Country to an Evolved Body.

Unfortunately, the advancement of a Life Soul was clearly not that simple. After studying it the entire afternoon, Zhou Wen didn’t make much progress. However, he was more familiar with the usage of spatial trajectories.

Zhou Wen felt uncomfortable reading in his room. Just as he got to the door with a book in hand and moved a chair to

read at the door, an officer holding a washbasin saw him and immediately came up to greet him. “Doctor Little Zhou, so you’re staying here. I really have to thank you for saving Liu Gui’s life. Dr. Lu said that if you hadn’t handled it in time, Liu Gui would have died.”

“It’s nothing, it’s my duty.” Zhou Wen had treated the case as a last-ditch effort. He didn’t wish to repeat it a second time.

“Doctor Little Zhou, I’ve been to the river recently and have rashes on my body. Although they aren’t serious and will fade in two days, they are really itchy. Do you have any method to stop the itch?” the officer asked Zhou Wen.

“Of course. A single injection can stop the itch,” Zhou Wen said without any hesitation.

Doctor Darkness’s Fight Poison With Poison could restrain the rash poison. As long as the dosage was appropriate, it was easy to eliminate the rash.

“Really?” The officer’s eyes lit up as he looked at Zhou Wen with anticipation. “Doctor Zhou, can you give me an injection? I can’t stand it any longer. I wish I could tear my bones to pieces.”

“Alright. Come over and extend your arm.” This was a trivial matter to Zhou Wen. Since it was simple, it was only right to help him.

After all, they were stationed here and fighting dimensional creatures with their lives. This allowed the residents of the city to live in peace.

The officer was overjoyed as he hurriedly rolled up his sleeves and stretched out his arm.

Zhou Wen directly summoned Doctor Darkness to possess him. After using Fight Poison With Poison, a syringe appeared in his hand.

As he wasn’t professional, Zhou Wen didn’t use any rubber bands to make the blood vessels protrude. He directly stabbed the needle and accurately stabbed into the blood vessel, before slowly pushing in an extremely minute amount of poison.

The officer’s face was still full of excitement at the beginning. He thought that he finally didn’t have to endure the crazy itch anymore. However, in the next second, the officer’s face turned pale.

He felt an incomparable pain that he had never experienced in his entire life. It instantly spread through his entire body, causing his entire body to spasm.

Anyone who had a cramp in their legs would know that cramps felt terrible, but now, his entire body was cramping violently. Not only his legs, even his fingers and toes were cramping, and his organs were about to collapse.

The officer fell onto the ground and convulsed on the ground like a lunatic. White foam spewed from his mouth as his eyes rolled back.

At this moment, if he still had the strength, he would have slammed himself to death. This pain was much worse than the itch before.

“I administered a little too much?” Zhou Wen looked at the officer and muttered to himself.

He wasn’t worried that something would happen to the officer because the amount of dosage he had injected was

already very minute. It wasn’t enough to cause too much damage, just a little pain.

The nearby soldiers didn’t know what had happened, but they all came over with concern. Seeing that the officer was twitching non-stop, they wanted to send him to the medical team.

“Don’t touch him. He will be fine soon.” Zhou Wen stopped the soldiers.

One of the soldiers seemed to understand what was going on. He said to the other soldiers, “This young man is right. This is called epilepsy. Don’t touch him when he’s spasming. Otherwise, he might die. Quickly place his head on the side and use something to block his tongue. Don’t let him bite his tongue. He should recover in a while.”

“Epilepsy, you as*!” The officer finally endured through the most painful period and sat up with a pale face.

At this moment, he deeply regretted it. Thoughts of dying had run through his mind several times just now so that he wouldn’t have to suffer such inhuman pain. If he had known earlier that it would be so painful, he would rather have suffered the itch.

“Thank you, Doctor Little Zhou.” Although he felt regret, the officer still thanked Zhou Wen politely before leaving with a pale face.

Zhou Wen thought nothing of the matter. It had been easy to help him.

However, Zhou Wen never expected that this very simple help played a huge role that night.

As usual, the officer led a group of soldiers to patrol the river. When they were patrolling a spot by the river, a strange fish suddenly stuck its head out from the river and spat out a mouthful of bloody water at the soldiers on the bank. The soldiers dodged, but the blood covered a large area like rain. Despite dodging very quickly, they were still drenched.

The other soldiers immediately went into a coma from the poison. Their bodies began to break out into the red rashes. Only the officer was surprisingly fine, despite being drenched in blood.

Thankfully, he hadn’t fainted and was able to bring his soldiers back to the camp in time. Otherwise, if they had all fainted, no one would have realized they were dead until some time later.

The officer used his Companion Beast to take a group of soldiers back to the camp and send them to the medical team. When Lu Su saw that the rashes on their bodies had already festered, she shook her head in exasperation and said, “No, the poison has already spread to the blood in their bodies. There’s no way they can be saved.”

The officer was stunned when he heard that. He said in disbelief, “That’s impossible. How can there be no hope? Doctor Lu, think of another solution. There must be a way to save them.”

These soldiers had always been with him, so how could he not have any feelings for them? When he heard that they were about to die, he naturally found it unacceptable.

“They were hit by the bloody water spewed out by the dimensional creature you mentioned. The poison spread too quickly and there’s no hope for them. Thankfully, you

weren’t stained by the blood or you would suffer the same fate as them,” Lu Su said.

“No, I was also stained by it. Why am I fine? Oh right, it’s Doctor Little Zhou. Doctor Little Zhou definitely can save them. Last time, Liu Gui was in a worse state than them. He was treated by Doctor Little Zhou. Doctor Lu, quickly get Doctor Little Zhou here. He can treat him,” the officer said anxiously.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 417 - He“s Really A Doctor

417 He“s Really A Doctor

Lu Su frowned and said, "Our medical team doesn't have the Doctor Zhou Wen you mentioned previously. If there is, how could we not get him to save you all?"

"How can that be? He's clearly from your medical team, and I've even seen his identification documents. Oh right, he's not a doctor yet; he's just an intern doctor," the officer said.

"There's no such person even amongst the intern doctors. There's no one with the Zhou surname either." Lu Su felt that grief had gotten to this officer's head that he started spouting nonsense. If he had really been hit by the blood, how could he come back alive? He even dragged his comrades back while remaining fine.

"Impossible. He's clearly here…" As the officer spoke, he seemed to think of something. He ran outside as though he had gone crazy.

"Ah! What madness!" Lu Su sighed.

The present era was an era that drove people crazy. Although humans possessed superpowers that they never dared to dream of, they were still burdened with unimaginable pressure. Many people couldn't withstand the impact and this devolved into psychological problems.

To Lu Su, this officer was someone who couldn't withstand the blow which resulted in psychological problems.

The officer didn't have that many thoughts. He ran all the way to where he had met Zhou Wen. He remembered which dorm he was in. He came for Zhou Wen, not to prove his existence as Doctor Little Zhou, but to get him to save his comrades.

Zhou Wen was reading in bed when he suddenly heard a series of urgent knocks on the door. Then, he heard someone shouting desperately outside. "Doctor Little Zhou… Help… Doctor Little Zhou… Are you there?"

Zhou Wen could tell that the officer was outside, so he opened the door. "Doctor Little Zhou, I'm so glad you're here. Please save my brothers."

Upon seeing Zhou Wen, the officer felt like crying. Without another word, he pulled Zhou Wen towards the medical team.

As he was being pulled to the medical team, Zhou Wen asked, puzzled, "What's the matter?"

"My brothers were suddenly attacked by a dimensional creature while they were patrolling alongside the river. They were sprayed with blood and quickly fell unconscious. They have rashes on their bodies and they are rapidly festering. The doctors are helpless. It will be too late if you don't do something," the officer said.

Zhou Wen quickened his steps when he heard that. He didn't wish to see a living person die in front of him. He would do his best.

Soon, Zhou Wen was pulled to the medical team by the officer. He saw six soldiers lying in a special ward with two nurses and a doctor taking care of them.

However, their situation hadn't improved at all. The rashes on their faces and hands had already turned into bloody holes. From afar, they looked as if blood-colored flowers had bloomed on their faces. There was no beauty about it and only made one shudder.

"Doctor Little Zhou, quickly save my brothers. Quickly give them the injection," the officer said anxiously as he pulled Zhou Wen along.

"Are you the Doctor Zhou Wen they mentioned?" Lu Su sized up Zhou Wen suspiciously. She was certain that Zhou Wen wasn't from the medical team. She knew everyone from the medical team, and there wasn't such a character. Furthermore, Zhou Wen looked too young. He was probably less than twenty years old. It was no wonder the officer called him Doctor Little Zhou.

Usually, one would attend university at the age of 16. After graduation, they would be 20 years old.

"I'm a new intern doctor, Zhou Wen. I haven't reported to the medical team yet," Zhou Wen said as he showed his identification.

Lu Su took the document and looked at it. It was true. He was indeed an intern. This person was not a figment of imagination fabricated by those soldiers.

"Can I take a look at their injuries?" Zhou Wen asked Lu Su.

"Of course." Lu Su also wanted to know if Zhou Wen could treat the poison. If he could really treat it, Lu Su would be very grateful to him.

The military wasn't a hospital. There wasn't any competition or selfishness that ordinary doctors had. Saving a soldier's

life was more important than anything. Furthermore, if Zhou Wen could treat the rashes, it would be a great thing for the garrison in Chess Mountain. It would resolve a huge problem.

Seeing Lu Su agree, Zhou Wen went to an injured soldier and looked at his injuries. The two nurses beside him looked up curiously.

Zhou Wen looked a little younger than them, but he was called a doctor by the officer. Furthermore, he seemed to have placed all his hopes on him, making them curious as to what kind of person Zhou Wen was. They were curious as to whether Zhou Wen could really treat the soldiers' rashes.

Zhou Wen could tell that they were indeed the same as the red rashes he had seen previously. Immediately, he summoned Doctor Darkness to possess him and used Fight Poison With Poison. A syringe appeared in his hand.

Without any hesitation, Zhou Wen grabbed the soldier's wrist and stabbed it.

Lu Su jumped in fright, but it was too late to stop him. Because Zhou Wen had delivered an injection with just one look, this made him appear somewhat unreliable.

However, on second thought, Lu Su felt that no matter how unreliable he was, there was still hope. Even if Zhou Wen didn't inject the soldier, the soldiers wouldn't be able to survive, so she didn't stop him.

From his two previous experiences, Zhou Wen had a general idea of the dosage needed to be injected. Therefore, he stopped after a certain amount of dosage was injected and walked towards the next soldier.

There were only six soldiers in total. In just an instant, Zhou Wen had fully administered it to them all.

"It's done. That's all I can do. I'll have to trouble the nurses to help deal with their festering injuries," Zhou Wen said.

"Doctor Little Zhou, are they alright now?" the officer asked nervously.

"If nothing unexpected happens, it should be like Liu Gui. They need to recuperate for some time. I still have matters to tend to, so I'll be heading back now," Zhou Wen said as he walked out.

The officer trusted Zhou Wen very much. Upon hearing Zhou Wen's words, the weight on his heart was lifted. After thanking him, he ran to the beds to see his comrades.

Lu Su frowned as she watched. From his attitude when he injected the patients, she could tell that Zhou Wen was extremely unprofessional. He even had problems being an intern doctor.

For such a seriously injured patient, he had to observe their reactions after injecting a drug. Yet, he didn't even look at them and left after the injections. He didn't look like a doctor at all.

Lu Su had no idea that Zhou Wen wasn't a doctor. He didn't know any medical skills, so it was useless staying.

She wanted to stop Zhou Wen, but before she could speak, she heard a nurse cry out, "He… He's reacting…"

Lu Su hurriedly looked at the nurse and saw her pointing at a soldier, shock filling the nurse's face.

She looked at the soldier and surprise colored her face as well. The soldier grunted softly and woke up. Furthermore, his rashes seemed to have stopped festering.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 418 - Magical Medicinal Effects

Chapter 418 Magical Medicinal Effects

The six soldiers quickly woke up. It was fine even if they hadn’t woken up, but the poison that Zhou Wen had injected was so excruciatingly painful that it jolted them awake.

Lu Su quickly did a checkup on the six soldiers and discovered that the toxins and red spots on their bodies had receded. Their spirits were slowly recovering. It was unbelievable.

This is unbelievable. How did he do it? Lu Su was shocked, but she didn’t stay idle. She dealt with the six soldiers’ wounds with the two nurses.

Although the toxins and red rashes had subsided, the festering wounds had not healed. They still needed treatment.

After working for half the day, when the six soldiers were deep asleep, the surprise in Lu Su’s eyes intensified. It could be confirmed that the rashes on these soldiers had indeed subsided after a short period.

How did he do it? Lu Su had researched the rashes for a long time, but she still couldn’t find a way to treat them. It was fine if the rash didn’t act up, but once it did, the patient would definitely die.

However, the six soldiers today, who had already taken half a step into the jaws of death, recovered with a simple injection from Zhou Wen. It was unbelievable.

What medicine is he using? Why is it so effective? Lu Su thought to herself.

“Thank you, Doctor Lu,” the officer said to Lu Su gratefully.

Although Lu Su didn’t save her comrades, she had done all she could to deal with their festering wounds. This was already very precious.

“I’m asking you, were you really splattered by the blood?” Lu Su looked at the officer and asked.

“That’s right. If I could have reacted in time, I wouldn’t have let my comrades get soaked in the blood,” the officer said.

“Then why aren’t you infected with rashes like them?” Lu Su asked again. She naturally believed the officer’s words.

The officer thought for a moment and said, “It should be this morning. I got Doctor Little Zhou to give me a shot. Perhaps the shot’s medicinal effect is still present in my system?”

Now, he was very glad that Zhou Wen had given him the injection. Otherwise, they would all have been left unconscious there. By the time the other patrols discovered them, they would have been dead.

In comparison, the little pain he suffered was nothing.

Could it be that the medicine has lingering effects or it has created antibodies? Lu Su thought to herself. If it was the latter, the medicine Zhou Wen used would be even more precious.

Lu Su planned on finding a time to have a good chat with Zhou Wen and see if there was any chance of mass-producing the medicine. She believed that Zhou Wen would

be reporting to her very soon. Lu Su was the in-charge of the medical team, so all interns should report to her.

However, Lu Su didn’t see Zhou Wen the next day.

Lu Su was not angered because of this. She knew very well that an intern doctor had to report to her first before their lodging and identification documents were arranged and distributed by the medical team.

Zhou Wen didn’t report to her, but he already had a residence and identification documents. Clearly, his identity wasn’t ordinary.

Furthermore, Zhou Wen could actually treat the rashes. This made Lu Su even more convinced that he didn’t have a simple background. Therefore, Lu Su planned on visiting him personally.

The officer often went to see his comrade, so learning where Zhou Wen stayed wasn’t difficult. But when Lu Su arrived at Zhou Wen’s dorm, she realized that the door was locked. There wasn’t anyone inside.

However, after seeing Zhou Wen’s living quarters, Lu Su was even more certain that Zhou Wen wasn’t an ordinary intern doctor. How could an intern doctor have a single room? Even ordinary low-ranking officers didn’t receive such treatment. As the main supervisor of the medical team, she had barely managed to get herself a single room.

Lu Su thought for a while and returned to the medical team, planning to visit again at night.

Zhou Wen really wasn’t at the encampment, as his phone had been taken away by the flower. He couldn’t contact his

schoolmates—he hadn’t requested absence of leave from Wang Lu, considering his promise to buy breakfast for her.

Therefore, Zhou Wen asked for a travel pass from Qin Wufu’s adjutant before heading to a nearby city to buy a new phone.

He didn’t have many requirements for his phone. He just needed it to work, so he bought a relatively cheap phone and got a new number.

Although he could request his old number back, Zhou Wen was afraid this might cause trouble with the flower, so he decided to change his number.

After finishing everything, Zhou Wen logged into his communications app and planned on sending a group message to inform them that he had changed his number.

However, the moment he logged in, the messages kept ringing. When he opened them, he saw that many of them were from Wang Lu.

“Big liar, you aren’t a man of your word.”

“You’re not sincere. You just held on for one day. You didn’t even last to the second day.”

“Miser, stingy.”

“Why didn’t you tell me that you can’t bear to pay for breakfast?”

“Are you not daring to say a word because you know you are in the wrong?”

“…”

“Sorry, I was hunted by someone and lost my phone. I had no time to contact you. I won’t forget what I promised you. Wait for me to return,” Zhou Wen replied.

Zhou Wen also replied to Li Xuan’s and Huang Ji’s messages.

Finally, Zhou Wen saw a system notification. When he opened it, he saw a friend request.

Zhou Wen subconsciously wanted to swipe away the message. Typically, he wouldn’t randomly add friends unless he had agreed on a friend request ahead of time. However, Zhou Wen was alarmed when he saw the ID of the requester. His hand, which was about to press the delete button, froze.

The Thearch… It can’t be… It’s just a coincidence… There’s no signal at Chess Mountain… That flower doesn’t have hands. How does it use a phone? It even knows how to add me as a friend! Zhou Wen looked at his friend request in horror and had the urge to immediately delete it.

However, Zhou Wen knew that escaping wasn’t a solution, so he approved his friend request to see if The Thearch was the flower or just a coincidence.

Just as he accepted the request, The Thearch sent a message. “Why did you take so long to accept my friend request? Are you tired of living?”

Zhou Wen found it unbelievable that a flower could use a phone, but from the person’s tone, it was identical to the flower’s.

“Who are you?” Zhou Wen probed.

“What’s the matter? Have you forgotten me so quickly? Do you want me to make another wish for you to deepen your

memories?” A message quickly replied.

“Ah, it’s really you, The Thearch. I never expected you to be able to use the phone. I didn’t think there was any signal there, right? How did you get on the Internet?” Zhou Wen replied.

“It’s trivial. How can it daunt me?” The Thearch’s reply clearly contained a hint of smugness, but she didn’t say how she did it.

“Since you know how to use a phone, I suggest that you check out books or television dramas on the Internet. I recommend Super Gene. It’s especially good. You should be interested.” Zhou Wen regretted the moment he sent the message, but it was too late to recall it.

“Alright, I’ll take a look.” The Thearch had already read the message and quickly replied Zhou Wen.

Zhou Wen was very vexed. Perhaps the flower wasn’t really just a harmless flower that could survive thanks to the sun. However, if it read Super Gene and started becoming a glutton like the characters in the book, wouldn’t many humans be in trouble?

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 419 - The Thearch Has Learned How to Use the Interne

419 The Thearch Has Learned How to Use the Interne

The Thearch was like a teenager who had just learned how to chat online. Or perhaps she had been alone for too long. She kept chatting and talked about any topic under the sun. She asked Zhou Wen all sorts of questions, giving him no time to do anything else.

After returning to the encampment, The Thearch was still asking him all sorts of questions regarding the Internet. She appeared very excited.

Just as Zhou Wen was thinking about how he could send The Thearch along her way, he suddenly received another message: "What does it mean when the phone notifies me about a low battery?"

"A phone is powered by a battery. If the battery's charge is used up, the phone will automatically be switched off. Only after charging it can it be used." Zhou Wen was immediately amused as he thought to himself, I doubt your crappy place has any power cables. You definitely won't be able to charge it. Let's see how you can come online and bother me in the future.

"How do I charge it? Can I strike it with lightning?" The Thearch sent another message.

"Definitely not. A lightning bolt's charge is unstable. It will overload the phone. You will need ordinary household power

to charge a phone. You also need a specialized charger. You can look it up on the Internet," Zhou Wen said.

Zhou Wen was secretly delighted that there was no news from The Thearch. He wondered if her phone had run out of battery and he could finally be rid of her.

After a while, The Thearch sent another message.

"You need to bring me a small diesel dynamo, a barrel of diesel oil, and the phone's charger before noon tomorrow. Otherwise, I'll make a wish for you to become a limbless cripple."

Zhou Wen was immediately awash with sadness. His mouth opened, unable to say a word.

"I'm being pursued by an enemy now! How can I have the time to do those things for you? Besides, I have to go to a nearby city to buy those things. Even if I were to go, I won't be able to return before noon tomorrow. Besides, I don't dare go since the powerful enemy is chasing me every day," Zhou Wen complained.

"What enemy?" The Thearch sent a message.

Zhou Wen recounted Ják's various abilities and even embellished and exaggerated them. He deliberately exaggerated Ják's strength, as though he would be killed by Ják the moment he went out.

"I thought it would be some extraordinary character. So it's just a lowly character. How about this? Before evening tomorrow, bring me all the things I want. I'll give you something good so you can easily kill that enemy," The Thearch said disdainfully.

"What is it?" Zhou Wen's heart stirred.

"You'll know when you arrive. Remember, you have to deliver the items before the sun sets tomorrow. Otherwise, I'll make a wish for you to be limbless." After The Thearch sent the message, there was silence. It was unknown if she was out of battery.

Zhou Wen sent a few more messages, but there was no response. She had likely run out of battery.

I wonder if the flower's wishing ability can be effective from a distance? Zhou Wen thought for a moment and felt that it wasn't worth it to bet his limbs on a diesel dynamo and some diesel oil. Furthermore, the flower had said that it would give him something good to kill Ják. Zhou Wen felt that he could make the trip.

He then left the door and rode the Mutated Stone Chi to rush to the nearby city at full speed. He wanted to return quickly and satisfy the flower so that he could read and game in peace.

The Mutated Stone Chi was as fast as a car. Furthermore, there wasn't a need to take the main roads. Zhou Wen headed straight for the nearby city and quickly bought all the items needed.

He originally imagined that he would encounter Ják's ambush on the way, so he had been very careful, but nothing happened. Ják never appeared.

It wasn't that Ják didn't wish to ambush Zhou Wen, but that he had no time at all. Shen Yuchi had indeed given him quite a number of Companion Beasts, but they had owners. Shen Yuchi had to think of a way to transfer their Companion Beasts over.

Those people were all criminals from Heaven prison. When Shen Yuchi sent them over, he never expected them to return alive.

Ják robbed them of their Companion Beasts one by one, spending quite a bit of time and energy. It couldn't be done quickly, so he had no time to ambush Zhou Wen.

Zhou Wen took the mini diesel dynamo, a twenty-kilogram drum of diesel oil, as well as the charger to Chess Mountain and found the flower.

"Just place the things besides the mountain wall." A familiar woman's voice sounded from the flower.

"The Thearch, I've spent more than half of my savings to buy these things. You have to use them sparingly. If they're damaged, I won't have the money to buy you any more later," Zhou Wen said as he lamented because he didn't want the flower to get him to buy more items.

"Don't lie to me. I saw that the price is very cheap on the Internet," The Thearch said.

"The price is very cheap, but I don't have the time to earn money. Without an income, how would I have the money? I've almost used up all my savings to buy these things," Zhou Wen said.

The Thearch seemed to think that what Zhou Wen said made sense. She thought for a moment before saying, "I have something here. Take it and exchange it for money. I'll leave it on the stone steps at the top of the mountain. Take it yourself. The thing I promised you is also there. You can use it to deal with your enemy. As long as you aren't too stupid, he will definitely die if he comes looking for you."

"What is it?" Zhou Wen asked.

"You will know when you see it." The Thearch didn't tell him directly what the item was.

Zhou Wen had no choice but to climb to the peak of Chess Mountain. Indeed, there were two things on the stone steps—one was a dimensional crystal, and the other was a petite bone flute.

"If your enemy comes looking for you again, blow the bone flute. When the time comes, it will definitely be of use. You can exchange the dimensional crystal for money." The Thearch's voice came from the mountain wall.

Zhou Wen saw that the bone flute was very ancient and crude. He didn't know which animal's bone it was made of, but he didn't see any special aura flowing from it. It looked no different from something ordinary.

The dimensional crystal was a Primordial Energy Skill Crystal. The shadow inside was in the form of a jade lute. It looked somewhat gorgeous, but he had no idea what level this Primordial Energy Skill Crystal was. He could only use his mysterious phone to check when he returned.

He was afraid that the flower would take a fancy to his mysterious phone if he took it out.

"How do I use this bone flute?" Zhou Wen put away the dimensional crystal and asked while holding the bone flute.

"When you see him again, use all your Primordial Energy to blow the bone flute. When the time comes, it will naturally be of use. However, let me tell you, this bone flute can only be used once. Don't use it randomly," The Thearch said.

Seeing that she wasn't willing to say more, Zhou Wen had no choice but to put away the bone flute. When he reached the foot of the mountain, he saw that the diesel dynamo and diesel oil had disappeared. He did not know where they had gone.

The flower didn't make another sound and ignored Zhou Wen. This suited Zhou Wen's intentions as he rode the Mutated Stone Chi out of Chess Mountain.

After he left Chess Mountain, he hurriedly took out his mysterious phone and snapped a picture of the dimensional crystal. This shocked him. The dimensional crystal was a Mythical Primordial Energy Skill Crystal.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 420 - Mythical Primordial Energy Skill

420 Mythical Primordial Energy Skill

Jade Lute Crystal: Mythical.

These few words made Zhou Wen’s heart tremble and he nearly shouted out.

However, just as Zhou Wen was about to put it into his phone, a notification popped up.

‘Requires 41 Constitution. 21 Spatial stat, Spatial-type Life Providence, Spatial-type Life Soul. Insufficient stats. Unable to absorb.’

Not only does it have a special stat requirement, but it also has a Life Providence and Life Soul requirement. I’ve never seen a spatial stat before and I have no idea where to get it, and it asks for 41 Constitution. That also means that I basically can’t master Mythical Primordial Energy Skills at the Epic stage because the highest Epic experts can only reach 40 Constitution. Zhou Wen couldn’t help but feel depressed when he saw this.

The Life Providence and Life Soul requirements were likely satisfied with his Godfiend Life Providence and Lost Country, but the stats were indeed a little troublesome. The requirements were too high, but he ultimately had a chance of absorbing it. Unlike ordinary people, who didn’t even have a chance.

Zhou Wen naturally didn’t plan on selling it. Since he could use it, he naturally had to keep it for himself. When he

obtained enough stats, he could absorb it to gain insights into a Mythical Primordial Energy Skill. Just the thought of using a Mythical Primordial Energy Skill at the Epic stage thrilled him.

After putting the crystal into the chaos space, Zhou Wen looked at the bone lute in his hand. The crystal that the flower randomly produced was at the Mythical stage, so it would definitely be of great use. Since she said he could only use it once, Zhou Wen didn't attempt to try it. He used his phone to snap the lute, but his phone didn't react.

After putting the bone lute into the chaos space, Zhou Wen thought of something. The Chaos Bead had the First Order of Chaos in it, and he had gained a basic mastery of it. However, he didn't continue cultivating it. However, this Primordial Energy Art was most likely spatial in nature. It was somewhat similar to the Godfiend Era.

Zhou Wen had too many Primordial Energy Arts and he really didn't have the energy to study the First Order of Chaos. However, now that he thought about it, having more didn't disadvantage him. Those Mythical Primordial Energy Skills had requirements on Life Providences and Life Souls, so it might be useful in the future.

Of course, that was just what Zhou Wen thought. He no longer had the energy to study the First Order of Chaos. He needed to condense the other Life Souls before advancing them to the Perfect Body.

If he couldn't break through to the Mythical stage, it wouldn't be too late to study it again.

Although he had taken the flower's bone lute, Zhou Wen didn't plan on using it. The flower said that the bone lute could help him against his enemy, but Zhou Wen wasn't

sure what the actual situation was. If it was the key to unsealing Chess Mountain, wouldn’t he be in deep trouble?

Before he returned to the encampment, Zhou Wen’s phone rang. He saw that it was a message from Wang Lu.

The message had been sent quite some time ago, but Zhou Wen hadn’t received it because he was out of reception.

“Do you need any help?” Wang Lu’s message was very simple.

“I can handle it. I’ll return after settling this matter.” Zhou Wen replied.

Soon, Wang Lu replied: “I’ll wait for you. You need to make up for the breakfast that you owe me.”

“How do I make up for this? Won’t I be always buying?”

“If breakfast isn’t enough, use lunch to make up for it.”

“Alright.”

After chatting a little with Wang Lu, he realized that The Thearch had actually sent a message. It looked like her phone had been charged.

Zhou Wen found it somewhat odd as he thought to himself, It’s just a flower. How did it use the dynamo?

Opening the message, he saw that she had sent an emoji.

She’s really quick to learn. She can even use emojis. Zhou Wen didn’t reply, afraid that she would just keep chatting with him. It would take away all his time from other matters.

Seeing that Zhou Wen didn’t reply, The Thearch sent a series of emojis over.

Zhou Wen naturally ignored her. After a while, The Thearch asked: “Did I use the emojis wrongly? Why aren’t you answering me?”

“Typically, people who have nothing to do will use emojis. I didn’t think it was important seeing that you just sent emojis.”

In high school, a female classmate had added Zhou Wen as a friend and would occasionally send him an emoji. Zhou Wen never replied because he had no idea what the expression meant, nor did he know how to reply.

“Oh, I see.” The Thearch suddenly understood.

“Now that you have an electric generator, you don’t have to worry about not having enough power. You can go online to watch television dramas or something. It’s very interesting.” Zhou Wen hurriedly introduced a few classic comedies to her.

Zhou Wen thought to himself, If she watches those television dramas and gets influenced by the characters and concepts in the television dramas, it would be great to have her turn into a clowning idiot. At the very least, she wouldn’t have the thought of killing humans again. I’d have done so much good.

“Alright, I’ll go take a look. Remember to pay for my number’s service. If they cut off my service, you’re dead.”

She even knows about service payments! Zhou Wen was exasperated.

Fortunately, he had just received benefits from her, so he didn’t care about the amount of money. Furthermore, he had saved quite a lot of money on his phone previously. As long as she didn’t crazily make phone calls and used the Internet, he didn’t need to pay a single cent this year.

It was unknown if The Thearch had started watching a television drama or not, but she didn’t send any more messages. It made Zhou Wen heave a sigh of relief as he sped back to the encampment.

Lu Su came to look for Zhou Wen again in the evening, but she realized that he hadn’t returned. Just as she was about to return, she saw Zhou Wen.

“Zhou Wen,” Lu Su called out.

“Doctor Lu, are you staying here too?” Zhou Wen walked over and asked.

“I don’t live here. I came here especially to find you,” Lu Su said.

“You are looking for me? What’s the matter?” Zhou Wen looked at Lu Su in puzzlement.

“Why didn’t you report to the medical team?” Lu Su asked.

Zhou Wen thought for a moment and said, “To be honest, I’m actually not an intern doctor. This identification is only for convenience.”

“That’s not important. Since you already have the identity of an intern doctor, you should do something that an intern doctor would do, right? I’ve been researching rashes all this time, hoping to solve this virus, but the progress isn’t that great. Can you tell me what medicine you used? If your

medicine needs to be kept confidential, you don’t have to tell me the exact composition. I just want to know if antibodies will be formed after using your medicine. Are there any negative side effects? If it can form antibodies and it doesn’t have any negative effects, I hope you can produce some. I’ll apply for funds to buy it as a vaccine for the soldiers. This way, it will greatly reduce the casualties and it will be of great help for the combat situation in the future. Even if it doesn’t form antibodies, I hope to buy a batch for backup,” Lu Su rattled off.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 421 - Mythical Companion Beas

421 Mythical Companion Beas

"Dr. Lu, I'm really sorry. I didn't use any medicine. In fact, what I used to treat those soldiers is the ability of one of my Companion Beasts. As for antibodies, I'm not sure either. I don't know how long the effects of the Companion Beast's skill last. Although I wish to help you, there's not much I can do. If a soldier suffers from such injuries, you can call for me at any time," Zhou Wen said.

Lu Su was somewhat disappointed when she heard Zhou Wen. Companion Beasts' Primordial Energy Skills were typically temporal. They were of use at the time in question, but would not be of any use once the period was over. They also wouldn't form any antibodies.

"In this era, Companion Beasts are becoming more and more widespread in medicine. To have such a Companion Beast is already a good condition for becoming a doctor. Are you interested in learning some medical knowledge from me?" Lu Su felt that it would be a waste for Zhou Wen to not be a doctor with such a Companion Beast.

Zhou Wen shook his head and said, "I'm really sorry. I still have many things to do. I usually don't have much time."

Although Lu Su was somewhat disappointed, she didn't say anything else. Since Zhou Wen had the ability to heal the rashes, this was already an unexpected harvest. It could reduce many casualties.

This matter didn't end there. After a few days, Lu Su would realize that the soldiers who had been injected with the poison had become immune. Even if they were stationed by the river, they wouldn't get rashes again.

Although Doctor Darkness was only at the Epic stage, he was no ordinary Companion Beast. Regardless of his background or abilities, he was very special.

Zhou Wen returned to his dorm and finally had a good sleep. Once he woke up, he headed to the underground sea to deliver a palm strike to the black dragon.

The black dragon already had several poison boils formed from palm imprints. Although the poison boils had yet to take its life, it was clear that the black dragon's mental state was no longer right.

If the other eight black dragons were like muscular young men, then this black dragon was like an old man in his twilight. Its movements slowed down significantly, and it looked rather muddle-headed, as if its mind was no longer clear.

From the looks of it, the poison has had a huge impact on it. However, it's unknown how long it will take to poison it to death. Zhou Wen was most looking forward to having a black dragon Companion Beast drop.

This fellow had its speed and strength greatly weakened due to its chains. Once the restrictions were removed, Zhou Wen would be killed by the black dragon in less than a minute. The difference was too great.

If he could obtain the black dragon as a Companion Beast, he might be able to have a true Mythical fighter and not

need to slowly nurture his Companion Beasts like Banana Fairy.

Although it was somewhat fun to nurture them from the beginning, their combat abilities were indeed lacking. Furthermore, it was too slow. Tyrant Behemoth was still at the Legendary stage, and it was unknown when it could advance to the Epic stage.

For two consecutive days, The Thearch didn't send any messages. Zhou Wen could finally read and game in peace. However, Zhou Wen had almost wiped out all the Mortal monsters in the game dungeons. There was no point in continuing the grinding. All he could do was continue reading.

Has Ják given up? It's been a few days, but why hasn't anything happened? Zhou Wen didn't make any progress while reading, so he began thinking of Ják.

To fight such a fellow was terrifying, but he had a faint sense of excitement. Back then, Zhou Wen felt that his train of thought had become much clearer, and his thoughts had become more lively and spirited.

...

At that moment, Ják couldn't control his excitement. In front of him was an elderly with a head full of white hair. The old man looked like he had dementia as he sat there motionless. However, he emitted a strange sanguine glow. His eyes shimmered with a red light.

The Blood Hex Clown possessed the old man and replaced his will to control his body. Even his memories were controlled.

Ják discovered a huge secret from the old man's memories.

This old prisoner actually had a Mythical Companion Beast. He had never told anyone about it and had paid a huge price to nurture it to the Epic stage.

He originally imagined that he could become an overlord by relying on his Mythical Companion Beast in the future, but too many resources were needed to advance a Mythical Companion Beast. He couldn't afford it, so all he could do was use his position to his advantage and get some information.

However, just as he nurtured his Companion Beast to the Epic stage, his crimes were discovered. The Special Inspector Bureau secretly arrested him and imprisoned him in Heaven.

Because his position was special and the object of corruption was a special item that couldn't be handled openly, the bureau had taken custody of the case.

As he was only a corrupt criminal, the bureau merely questioned him as per usual, without wasting too many resources. The elder hung on and didn't reveal the matter regarding the Mythical Companion Beast.

This time, he had been sent to Ják by Shen Yuchi. Originally, it was because he had a Companion Beast that could change colors for concealment—Ják had specifically asked for it.

To his surprise, Ják actually discovered the biggest secret in his memories. He couldn't help but be overjoyed. What a fool. To be so easily caught by the bastards at the bureau despite having such a Mythical Companion Beast. He's trash even with one.

However, this has ended up benefiting me. Ják didn't hesitate any further as he activated the Blood Hex Clown's ability. He controlled the elder's body and made him pay with his life to transfer the Companion Beast to Ják.

When the man fell like a desiccated corpse, a strange tattoo appeared on Ják's arm—a purple cat-shaped tattoo.

Shen Yuchi, you might have considered all possibilities, but you probably never expected that I would be this lucky, right? With this Mythical Companion Beast, the restriction you left on me can no longer restrain me. After I enjoy the beauty feast, I will definitely go to the capital and kill every one of you in the bureau. Ják looked at the purple cat symbol on his arm as the excitement on his face intensified.

...

When Ják snatched the old man's Mythical Companion Beast, Zhou Wen also wore a look of delight. After waiting for so long, the fruit on the Dead Man Tree had finally ripened and dropped.

The phone automatically vibrated as Zhou Wen obtained the fruit in-game.

When the blood-colored avatar caught the fruit, a notification popped up on his phone. 'Mythical Companion Egg, do you want to incubate it?'

Mythical Companion Egg… Zhou Wen was pleasantly surprised and delighted. Although he had already guessed it, seeing a real Mythical Companion Egg excited him greatly. He hurriedly checked the Mythical Companion Egg's stats.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 422 - Demonic Neonate

422 Demonic Neonate

Demonic Neonate: Mortal (Evolvable)

Life Providence: Child of Dimension

Life Soul: Supreme True Demon

Wheel of Destiny: One Spin.

Strength: 11

Speed: 11

Constitution: 11

Primordial Energy: 11

Talent Skill: Demonic Sword

Companion Form: None

What's going on? Zhou Wen was dumbfounded, momentarily unsure of the situation. The stats of the Demonic Neonate were really strange.

Zhou Wen originally believed that he could directly hatch a Mythical Companion Beast. After all, he had Doctor Darkness as a precedent, but apparently, things didn't turn out the way he expected.

From its Mortal stage and Evolvable postfix, it was likely the primordial state of a Mythical Companion Beast. Even so,

Mythical creatures wouldn't possess a Life Providence and Life Soul at the Mortal stage. They had to slowly advance before condensing them.

However, the Demonic Neonate actually had a Life Providence and Life Soul at the Mortal stage. There was also a Wheel of Destiny that Zhou Wen had never seen before.

Although he had no idea what was going on, Zhou Wen still hatched her. After absorbing plenty of Primordial Energy, the purple copper Companion Egg transformed into a stream of light that fused into Zhou Wen's body, turning into a thumb-sized, purple-haired baby girl symbol that appeared on his arm.

Zhou Wen summoned the Demonic Neonate. It was about forty centimeters tall—the size of a doll. It had long purple hair. It wore purple armor while hugging an ancient purple copper sword.

Zhou Wen saw that her face was no different from the fierce girl. However, her figure was much smaller, about the size of a baby.

He sized up the girl and the girl also glared at him with widened eyes, as though she was sizing him up. It made Zhou Wen feel a little frightened.

The Companion Eggs produced on the Dead Man Tree just grew in oddness. Doctor Darkness was already shocking enough. But this recently hatched Dead Man Tree seemed to have a mind of her own.

With a thought, the Demonic Neonate received his order. She carried the ancient sword in her arms and walked to a table beside him. With a light leap, she landed on the table and poured Zhou Wen a cup of tea.

Zhou Wen immediately relaxed when he saw that she was as obedient as the typical Companion Beast. He got her to do some more things and the Demonic Neonate did it according to Zhou Wen's instructions.

Although it's a little strange, it shouldn't be a problem. Zhou Wen unsummoned the Demonic Neonate and took out his phone to enter the game dungeon. After some choosing, he chose the Myriad Buddha Cave in Dragon Gate Grotto. After entering, he summoned the Demonic Neonate.

Most of the monsters in the dungeons had been killed by Zhou Wen. There were still some scattered Golden Warriors in Myriad Buddha Cave which Zhou Wen couldn't be bothered to waste time finding them. Now, he could use them to test the strength of the Demonic Neonate.

After searching for a while, he finally found a Golden Warrior. Zhou Wen gave the order for her to kill it and waited to see if she could do it.

The Golden Warrior was at the Legendary stage and its defense was astonishing. As for the Demonic Neonate, it was only at the Mortal stage. Logically speaking, the baby shouldn't be a Golden Warrior's match.

However, a Demonic Neonate had a Life Providence and Life Soul, something ordinary Legendary creatures didn't possess. Zhou Wen brought her here to see if her Life Providence and Life Soul could be used.

The Demonic Neonate didn't move after receiving Zhou Wen's order. She stood there with the ancient sword in her arms as she looked at the Golden Warrior.

Is she afraid? As Zhou Wen was thinking, he suddenly saw the ancient sword in the Demonic Neonate's arms

automatically leave the scabbard. It transformed into a purple beam that flew out. Even Zhou Wen didn't see the sword beam clearly. The Golden Warrior was actually split into two by the sword beam. It dropped a dimensional crystal and dissipated.

The flying sword circled around before returning to the Demonic Neonate's scabbard.

What a powerful Primordial Energy Skill. It's definitely not at the level of a Mortal Primordial Energy Skill. It's even stronger than my Transcendent Flying Immortal. Logically speaking, it should expend a lot of Primordial Energy. Primordial Energy at the Mortal stage isn't enough to sustain such a powerful Primordial Energy Skill. How did she do it? Zhou Wen was alarmed as he constantly sized up the Demonic Neonate.

After some thought, Zhou Wen unsummoned the Demonic Neonate and entered the extremely vast Zhuolu battlefield. Zhou Wen ran very far in-game before finally finding a surviving Chi. He summoned the Demonic Neonate and tried to get her to kill it.

Although the Chi wasn't as powerful as the Mutated Stone Chi, it was still top-notch at the Epic stage.

The Demonic Neonate continued hugging the ancient sword and coldly looked at the Chi that was rushing towards them. When the Chi was close to her, the ancient sword in her arms automatically unsheathed itself and slashed at the Chi with the purple beam.

The Chi let out a roar as black smoke condensed into a dragon Life Soul. It spat out black smoke at the purple glow, hoping to block it.

Zhou Wen had seen the black smoke's might, but the purple sword beam directly split the black smoke, slicing both the Life Soul and Chi into two.

Zhou Wen was dumbfounded as he watched the ancient sword return to its scabbard. The Demonic Neonate held the ancient sword, still standing there expressionlessly.

This fellow is really impressive. Is this still a Mortal Companion Beast? If she continues advancing, what kind of changes will there be? Zhou Wen felt that the advancement of the Demonic Neonate would definitely be different from other Mythical creatures. After all, she already had a Life Providence and Life Soul, so it was hard to imagine what would happen when she evolved again.

Will she condense a second Life Providence and Life Soul? Or will the original Life Providence and Life Soul be enhanced? Zhou Wen was stumped. Furthermore, the Wheel of Destiny gave him an odd feeling.

It's a pity I don't have a true Mythical Companion Beast. I wonder if all of them will have something like that after advancing to the Mythical stage. Zhou Wen wondered, but he didn't have an answer.

Humans had yet to advance to the Mythical stage. Only the six families had some Mythical Companion Beasts. Zhou Wen didn't have many friends in the six families, nor did he have any place to ask around.

However, it was now confirmed. Although the Demonic Neonate was still at the Mortal stage, her combat strength was far stronger than most Epic creatures. With just her sword, she could probably kill most Epic creatures.

"This is for you to eat. You have to work hard in the future." Zhou Wen handed her an Epic Companion Egg that had dropped previously. Zhou Wen couldn't bring himself to use it to feed his other Companion Beasts.

However, he hadn't been grinding instance dungeons recently, so there hadn't been a chance for Companion Eggs to drop. This was one of the Companion Eggs he had left inside the dungeon without picking up.

To his surprise, the Demonic Neonate only took one glance at the Epic Companion Egg before turning her head to the side. The cold attitude left Zhou Wen depressed.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 423 - I Want a Person

423 I Want a Person

You aren't even eating an Epic Companion Egg? Aren't you being a little too picky with your food? Zhou Wen thought to himself. If it were Tyrant Behemoth, he would have run over like a pug. Yet, this fellow didn't even bother with it.

The Demonic Neonate remained standing there with a cold expression, without any reaction. It was as though she only moved when Zhou Wen gave the order.

Forget it. You will eat when you are hungry. Zhou Wen saw that the phone didn't give him a hungry notification and left the Companion Egg in the dungeon. He could retrieve it when the Demonic Neonate became hungry.

It's not a solution if this continues. I can't grind dungeons now, but my few Companion Beasts need to eat, especially Tyrant Behemoth. If it wasn't for the fact that I've hatched quite a lot of food for it and I've been rationing just to keep it alive, I would long be out of stock.

Zhou Wen failed to come up with a good solution. All he could do was wait for the black dragon to die before grinding.

...

A medical report about the soldiers shocked Lu Su.

The soldiers who had been saved by Zhou Wen were healed in less than two days. The scars on their bodies would only

disappear after some time, however, it didn't stop them from participating in battle.

Another break-out creature appeared the day before. A large number of soldiers had participated in the encirclement attack only to have a few soldiers splashed with the bloody water. Among them were three soldiers that Zhou Wen had saved.

Red rashes appeared on the other soldiers as they fainted on the spot and were dragged into the river. However, the three of them were completely fine. They were lucky to have escaped the calamity.

Lu Su had someone draw their blood for tests. The test results showed that they had a high resistance against the rashes. Even if the virus entered their bodies, it wouldn't cause too much damage. Instead, it would slowly die, unable to proliferate.

How did this happen? It could be said that it's a coincidence if one or two of them are like that. But all of them are like that, so there's only one possibility. Zhou Wen's Companion Beast ability can really make their bodies produce antibodies. The more Lu Su thought about it, the more convinced she was.

This discovery excited Lu Su. Although there wasn't any medicine, Zhou Wen's Companion Beast's ability was more effective than medicine. If all soldiers could have such resistance, their battle at Chess Mountain would become much more proactive. At the very least, they didn't need to worry about dropping into the blood river or fighting in it.

They also didn't have to worry about getting infected with rashes if they stayed on duty for too long. This way, they

could send more people to strengthen surveillance. It was easier to deal with any problems that cropped up.

Previously, despite having enough manpower, as the soldiers couldn't stay by the river for long, they could only divide the manpower into several groups and switch shifts. With Zhou Wen's abilities, there was no need to go through so much trouble. They could set up more guards and expand the surveillance range.

This time, Lu Su wasn't in a rush to look for Zhou Wen. Instead, she went to Qin Wufu's office.

Qin Wufu was handling official matters when he heard the guard say that Lu Su wanted to see him. He stopped whatever he was doing and ordered the guards to invite Lu Su in.

Although Lu Su was only in her thirties and wasn't of a high ranking position, the medical team determined the lives of more than ten thousand officers and soldiers. Qin Wufu didn't dare to be negligent.

"Susu, why are you looking for me?" Qin Wufu didn't have any airs. Furthermore, Lu Su's family had some ties with him. He always treated Lu Su as his junior.

Lu Su said, "Uncle Qin, I want to ask you for someone."

"Who would be so important to have you personally make this trip?" Qin Wufu asked Lu Su curiously.

After Lu Su took charge of the medical team, she did not make use of his relationship to request any conditions. However, she managed the medical team well and the soldiers all acknowledged her. This made Qin Wufu very satisfied.

Now that Lu Su suddenly requested someone, Qin Wufu was curious as to who she wanted.

"An intern doctor," Lu Su said.

Qin Wufu found it even more strange. He looked at Lu Su and asked, "The medical team's personnel are all under your jurisdiction. Why are you asking for an intern doctor from me?"

With that said, Qin Wufu was enlightened. "You want to recruit new intern doctors? It's not that I don't wish to help you do the recruitment, but there are just too few students studying medicine now. Ever since the dimensional storms, the number of people suffering from illnesses has decreased every year, and the number of people who study medicine is decreasing. Furthermore, being a military doctor requires medical skills..."

"Uncle Qin, there's no need to hire a new doctor. I just want an intern at the encampment," Lu Su said.

"An intern doctor in the encampment?" Qin Wufu was slightly taken aback. He knew that Lu Su wasn't someone who would cause trouble for nothing. Since she wanted this person, the person definitely existed in the encampment.

He's in the encampment, but doesn't come under Lu Su's management... Qin Wufu immediately thought of Zhou Wen. He looked at Lu Su with an odd expression and asked, "Don't tell me the person you want is Zhou Wen?"

"Uncle Qin, you really know him. That's right, I just want him. I hope that he can join the medical team as an official member," Lu Su said.

Qin Wufu looked at Lu Su and asked, "Why do you want him?"

Qin Wufu found it extremely odd. He knew very well that Zhou Wen was only an ordinary college student and he didn't study medicine. He had also randomly filled up the document for Zhou Wen, making him an intern doctor. It was mainly to allow Zhou Wen to enter the encampment and not have to undergo training with the ordinary soldiers.

"With him, we can resolve a problem that has been plaguing you all this while, Uncle Qin," Lu Su said calmly.

"Oh, what problem?" Qin Wufu looked at Lu Su with piqued interest and asked.

"The rashes problem. With Zhou Wen around, our soldiers won't have to be afraid of the blood-colored river or rashes. They can always be on sentry. They don't have to frequently switch shifts and they can fight in the blood-colored river," Lu Su enunciated each word clearly.

"What? Are you sure?" Qin Wufu stood up in shock and asked Lu Su.

Lu Su was right. This was indeed a problem that had been plaguing him. Due to this problem, the military had lost at least 40% of its combat strength. It also weakened the surveillance on Chess Mountain.

In the past, with Yan Zhen around, even though his temper was a little strange, he was able to help him resolve these problems. Although Lu Su had the same excellent medical skills, she could not resolve these strange problems.

Qin Wufu was unable to contact the missing Yan Zhen and there wasn't any news from the coroner, so it gave him a

headache.

Now, Lu Su suddenly said that Zhou Wen could solve the problem of the blood river. It surprised Qin Wufu. He found it unbelievable.

"The soldiers that Zhou Wen saved were all previously infected with a bout of rashes. After Zhou Wen treated them, their bodies are now immune to the blood river. This is some experimental data I gathered…" Lu Su handed the information she had brought over to Qin Wufu.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 424 - Ják“s Attack

424 Ják“s Attack

After Qin Wufu read the information, his expression turned odd.

Lu Su said excitedly, “Uncle Qin, with Zhou Wen’s ability, our strategy at Chess Mountain won’t be so passive…”

“I’m afraid I can’t give this person to you,” Qin Wufu said.

Lu Su couldn’t help but be taken aback and asked in puzzlement, “Why? Uncle Qin, don’t you believe me? I can guarantee you that the data is real. Zhou Wen’s Companion Beast’s ability can effectively form antibodies. It can make the soldiers immune to the blood in the river. The side effects are also very tiny…”

“No, Susu, you misunderstood me. I believe in your research and information and know that Zhou Wen might have such abilities. However, I still can’t give him to you. Or rather, I don’t have the authority to give him to you,” Qin Wufu said with a bitter smile.

“You are the commander-in-chief of Chess Mountain. How can you not have the power? What background does Zhou Wen have? Could he be sent by the Federation?” Lu Su asked in puzzlement.

“No, he should be considered a member of the Sunset army. However, his identity is a little special,” said Qin Wufu.

“Regardless of his identity, since he’s from the Sunset army, even if he’s the Overseer, he has an obligation to protect the lives of soldiers. He has the responsibility to contribute,” Lu Su said sternly.

“If he was the Overseer, that would be easy. Unfortunately, he’s not,” Qin Wufu said.

“Uncle Qin, who is he?” Lu Su could barely hold it in anymore.

“His name is Zhou Wen. The man Madam Lan married also has the Zhou surname. What kind of status do you think he has?” Qin Wufu said.

Lu Su’s eyes widened and she said in surprise, “Madam Lan actually found such a young husband… That age gap…”

“What nonsense are you talking about? Madam Lan’s husband is Zhou Wen’s father. Zhou Wen is still studying at Sunset College, and he’s a student. He used to study under Wang Mingyuan for a period of time, so the bureau is targeting him and is attempting to bring him back for interrogation. Madam Lan placed him here because she hopes that we can protect him. Now, if I were to get him to treat those soldiers, how would I answer Madam Lan if one of the soldiers comes from the bureau and something happened?” Qin Wufu berated.

Lu Su was enlightened. “I see. However, if that’s the case, he should be more willing to help because of Madam Lan, right?”

“Nonsense. I’m saying no. And that’s final. We mustn’t let anything happen to him.” It wasn’t that Qin Wufu didn’t want Zhou Wen to help.

An Sheng had repeatedly exhorted him not to let anything happen to Zhou Wen or interfere with his actions. If anything happened to Zhou Wen, Madam Lan would definitely pursue the matter and even the Overseer wouldn’t be able to stop her.

Qin Wufu knew that An Tianzuo was the most filial, so there was no way he would go against his mother.

Qin Wufu knew Madam Lan’s temper. Even though Madam Lan was usually easy to talk to, if anything were to really touch her bottom line, she would be an unbridled bull that couldn’t be stopped.

Lu Su wasn’t willing to give up despite being rejected by Qin Wufu. She could clearly prevent so many soldiers from dying, so why couldn’t they use Zhou Wen? Lu Su felt that Zhou Wen wasn’t a foppish scion. From her observation, she found him a very gentle person who was very willing to help others. He didn’t have the temperament of a scion.

Uncle Qin might say no, but if Zhou Wen is willing, that’s a whole other matter. Lu Su decided to convince Zhou Wen herself.

After Lu Su left, Qin Wufu looked at the information in his hand and couldn’t help but mutter to himself, It’s such a pity for Zhou Wen. If he hadn’t been embroiled in Wang Mingyuan’s matter, his future would have been limitless. Now that he’s being targeted by the bureau, it’s hard to tell if he can live to grow.

Lu Su walked out of Qin Wufu’s office and headed straight for Zhou Wen’s residence.

Zhou Wen was reading a book when Lu Su came and informed him of her intentions.

Zhou Wen waited for Lu Su to finish before looking at her and saying, “Doctor Lu, if it was in the past, I would definitely have agreed to it without question. But I probably can’t agree to it now.”

Lu Su sighed and said, “I can understand. After all, you have been targeted by the bureau. If you interact with the soldiers too much, it will give the bureau an opportunity.”

Zhou Wen shook his head. “I’m not worried about my safety. I’m just afraid that the soldiers will be implicated by me.”

Lu Su didn’t say anything else. She felt that Zhou Wen’s words were just an excuse. No matter how domineering the bureau was, it was impossible for them to bring men to charge into a military camp and kill them. So how could they endanger ordinary soldiers?

Lu Su believed that Zhou Wen was only saying this to save her dignity.

However, Lu Su didn’t find anything wrong with Zhou Wen’s actions. After all, everyone only had one life. It wasn’t wrong to cherish their lives. Everyone had the right to protect themselves.

Therefore, Lu Su didn’t say a word. Although she was somewhat disappointed, she decided to return to try extracting the antibodies from the few soldiers that Zhou Wen had treated.

Although doing so would take quite a while, Lu Su had no other choice.

“Dr. Lu, if there’s nothing important, I hope you try not to come to my place in the future. If there is anything, it’s

better to send me a message.” Zhou Wen felt that if Lu Su came over often, she might be implicated as well.

A person like Ják was best at using someone’s weakness. As long as it could achieve his goal, Zhou Wen believed that Ják would do anything.

“Don’t worry. I won’t disturb you again.” Lu Su couldn’t help but feel completely disappointed when she heard that.

After leaving Zhou Wen’s dorm, Lu Su was about to return to study the antibodies when she saw a man dressed in an officer’s uniform walk over.

The officer had his head lowered as he walked, his cap covering most of his face. Lu Su didn’t see his face, but when he got closer, the officer looked up.

When Lu Su saw the officer, she found him odd. The officer in front of her looked to be in his thirties and his face somewhat pale.

There were quite a number of Sunset Army officers in their thirties, but this officer clearly had the looks of someone from the West District. He was very different from the people of the East District. Although the Sunset Army also had officers from the West District, there weren’t many. Lu Su ought to know all of them, but she had never seen this officer before.

Just as she was about to ask, the officer raised his hand and pressed it against her shoulder. Lu Su wanted to dodge, but her body refused to obey. She immediately stiffened once the hand touched her shoulder. She couldn’t move. When she opened her mouth, no sound came out.

The officer smiled at Lu Su and asked elegantly, “You just came out of Zhou Wen’s room, right?”

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 425 - Who“s Surrounded?

425 Who“s Surrounded?

Zhou Wen had been wearing the Truth Listener earring. Although he was still in the room, he immediately discovered a problem. He opened the door and walked out, only to see Ják standing there in the officer’s uniform.

“We meet again. Not bad. You have protected my ingredients well.” Ják stared at Zhou Wen’s body from head to toe as though he was examining his food.

“Aren’t you afraid of being surrounded when entering a military camp so brazenly? You won’t be able to escape like the previous time. Or should I say, is this just another one of your avatars?” Zhou Wen also stared at Ják as he sized him up.

Ják gave a sinister smile. “It’s hard to say who’s being surrounded. As for this being my main body or my avatar, you can guess. If you’re right, I can let you choose how I’ll cook you.”

Zhou Wen silently held the Bamboo Blade. He didn’t want to guess or say any nonsense like “Release Lu Su.” To a person like Ják, those words were meaningless. Life was probably inferior to an ant to him.

To Zhou Wen’s surprise, Ják pushed Lu Su towards him.

Zhou Wen didn’t help Lu Su up. Instead, he took a few steps back and allowed Lu Su to stagger to the ground.

Lu Su was alarmed, puzzled about Zhou Wen's actions. Why wasn't he willing to even help her? She was just about to stand up when she heard Zhou Wen say, "Sit there and don't move."

Lu Su didn't know what Zhou Wen meant, but she knew that the situation wasn't right. Upon hearing Zhou Wen's words, she sat on the ground and didn't stand up. She had guessed that Ják was likely a member of the Special Inspector Bureau.

"Do we call for help?" Lu Su asked Zhou Wen.

Zhou Wen shook his head slightly as his eyes remained peeled at Ják.

Ják laughed. "There's no need to be so nervous. I did plant a Life Blast on her, but I didn't plan on detonating it. In fact, it's not just her. In the entire camp, everyone except you has been planted with a Life Blast. As long as I'm willing, I can hold a fireworks party here at any time. Do you want to see it?"

When Lu Su heard the words "Life Blast", her body trembled. She clearly knew what the words meant. She also knew why Zhou Wen hadn't helped her up. If Zhou Wen had touched her just now, she might have already exploded.

"Zhou Wen, don't bother about me. Inform the Deputy Governor. We can't let such a person leave no matter what," Lu Su said through gritted teeth.

"It looks like you don't believe me." Ják snapped his fingers and they heard continuous explosions in the encampment.

Zhou Wen and Lu Su watched as a soldier walked over and exploded. Such explosions rang several times in the other

parts of the military camp. Zhou Wen counted silently in his heart and heard a total of five explosions.

The entire military camp was in disarray. Alarms sounded everywhere. The soldiers were frantically rushing to the locations of the explosions.

Lu Su looked at the blood on the ground not far away and was dumbfounded. It wasn't as if she had never seen a dead person. Many people died fighting dimensional creatures, but this was the first time she had seen someone die like this.

Furthermore, Ják also said that all the people in the encampment, including her, had been planted with a Life Blast. Just thinking about how all the soldiers could explode in the same manner, Lu Su felt a chill down her spine and her body involuntarily trembled.

Lu Su finally believed what Zhou Wen had said. He wasn't afraid that someone among the soldiers would try to harm him, but that he would implicate them.

"How did you do it?" Zhou Wen's expression remained stoic as he asked Ják.

He had done his research on Life Blast. It was similar to his Poison Dragon Palm. It needed physical contact with a living medium to use Life Blast. Furthermore, the process was more complicated than the Poison Dragon Palm. It wasn't as simple as a tap.

Using ants and leaves as a medium was easy, but it wouldn't be that easy to use humans as a medium.

Zhou Wen didn't believe that Ják had actually planted a Life Blast on everyone in the encampment. He felt that Ják was

just bluffing. Perhaps only a few people had been planted with Life Blast.

Ják said with a smile, “If it were someone else asking this question, I wouldn’t bother answering. But you are different.”

With that said, Ják extended his hand and a purple cat appeared in front of him. It had short, purple fur and its tail was curled up. However, its eyes were black. Furthermore, its eyes had double pupils that made it look extremely demonic.

“A Mythical Hex Cat Demon. Although it’s still at the Epic stage and hasn’t really advanced to the Mythical stage, its abilities are extremely compatible with mine. After obtaining it, I don’t have to personally plant a Life Blast. All I need to do is add Life Blast to its curses. Everyone that’s cursed by it will be automatically planted with Life Blast,” Ják said excitedly.

The Hex Cat Demon and his abilities were a perfect match, greatly boosting Ják’s abilities.

“There should be a limit to the curse, right? It’s impossible that this cat can curse whoever it wishes.” Zhou Wen glanced at the chaotic military camp and continued speaking to Ják.

“Of course there are restrictions. There is no power without restrictions. Although the Hex Cat Demon is a Mythical creature, it also has restrictions. However, this limitation isn’t a problem for me. So now, everyone in this military camp, including this woman, has become my bargaining chip. If you don’t wish for all of them to turn into fireworks, follow me obediently,” Ják said.

“Why don’t you curse me directly? Isn’t that more convenient?” Zhou Wen asked again.

“Such a top-notch ingredient naturally can’t be tainted at all. Otherwise, it will be a huge waste. Before making you into a delicacy, I won’t let you suffer any damage.” As Ják spoke, he saw Qin Wufu rushing over with a group of Epic officers.

With such strange explosions happening at the encampment, Qin Wufu immediately imagined that something had happened to Zhou Wen. If a dimensional creature from Chess Mountain had rushed out, it wouldn’t have been completely silent. He could tell at a glance that the technique used was Life Blast.

“Governor Qin, don’t come over,” Zhou Wen said to Qin Wufu.

If it was really as Ják had said, everyone would be planted with Life Blast—Qin Wufu and those Epic officers were terrifying bombs.

Exploding an Epic lifeform’s energy wouldn’t be at the level of those soldiers. The entire encampment would probably be instantly flattened. Zhou Wen didn’t want to be blasted to death.

“Is he from the Special Inspector Bureau?” Qin Wufu stopped and looked at Zhou Wen and Ják, then at Lu Su sitting on the ground. Finally, his gaze landed on Ják.

Although he could only see Ják’s back, he was certain that he was from the bureau. Although he was wearing a military uniform, he didn’t have the bearing of a soldier at all.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 426 - I“ll Leave With You

426 I“ll Leave With You

“Long time no see, Qin Wufu.” Ják turned around and looked at Qin Wufu.

Qin Wufu saw Ják’s face clearly and was immediately alarmed. “Impossible… Ják… How were you released…”

Qin Wufu had participated in the encirclement operation of Ják. It included many of his comrades in the Federation.

Back then, Qin Wufu was still in his prime. Surrounded by a group of Epic experts in the Federation, he hunted the psychopath, Ják. He hadn’t been afraid at all. He only had the zealous ardor of getting rid of a scourge of humanity.

However, as the encirclement continued, more and more of his companions were silently killed by Ják. They didn’t even meet Ják at all. This made Qin Wufu realize that Ják was a terrifying devil, a cunning fox, a venomous snake, and he had the necessary qualities of all evil people. He was a born devil.

On Qin Wufu’s back was a scar that stretched across his entire back. It was left behind by the battle. If his Life Providence hadn’t been extraordinary, he probably would have died in that battle.

Ják’s name caused the faces of some middle-aged soldiers to change drastically. It was the name that their parents often used to scare them when they were young.

If they made a mistake, or if they constantly pulled a tantrum, their parents would say that serial killer Ják was coming for them to eat them up. It caused a childhood trauma.

Even though they had already advanced to the Epic stage, hearing this name made them subconsciously fearful.

An Epic officer who was about 27 years old had clearly never heard of Ják's name. He might have heard of it before, but he had no deep impression of Ják.

After all, Ják had been arrested when he was born.

"No matter who you are, you can't do as you please," the young Epic officer said coldly. He bragged that he was a genius, advancing to the Epic stage at the age of 28. He claimed that he wasn't inferior to the geniuses of the six families.

Unfortunately, he didn't know how terrifying the person in front of him was. He had also underestimated the kind of existence that left a name of 'devil' in the history of the Federation.

Ják didn't even look at him and merely snapped his fingers.

Boom!

The young officer's body exploded and a terrifying shockwave blasted all the nearby buildings. Although the officers reacted quickly, they were too close. Many of the officers were injured from the explosion and the surroundings were in a mess.

"From now on, all of you, shut up. I don't have time to waste on trash like you. Whoever dares to spout nonsense will

share the same end," Ják said coldly.

"You, he…" A hot-tempered officer was about to rush towards Ják when he was stopped by Qin Wufu.

"Ják, what are you trying to do?" Qin Wufu stared at Ják and asked.

"I only want him." Ják pointed at Zhou Wen and said, "Follow me now. If you dare say no, I'll make everyone here turn into fireworks, as the pre-celebration before my meal."

"Zhou Wen, listen to me. Leave this place immediately and let me handle it." Qin Wufu stared at Ják as his body shimmered. An armor appeared on him.

The other officers and soldiers also summoned their Companion Beasts, prepared to fight at any moment.

"It looks like you still don't understand what's happening. Then I'll let you all sober up," Ják said as he raised his hand to snap his fingers.

"Ják, wait a moment," Zhou Wen said.

Ják stopped and looked at Zhou Wen with interest. "Why? Have you thought it through?"

Zhou Wen nodded and said, "I understand. I'll leave with you."

Zhou Wen didn't agree to leave with Ják because of Qin Wufu and company. After all, he wasn't afraid of Ják to begin with. Besides, he needed to find Ják's real body to completely eliminate him.

Even if he were to attack and kill Ják, he didn’t know if this was Ják’s second puppet.

“Zhou Wen, you can’t. Leave here immediately,” Qin Wufu ordered.

“Governor Qin, the entire military camp has Life Blast implanted in them by Ják. As the commander-in-chief of Chess Mountain, do you want everyone to die with me?” Zhou Wen only wanted to leave as quickly as possible without wasting any more time.

When everyone heard this, their expressions changed. If everyone was implanted with a Life Blast, wouldn’t they explode at any moment like the young officer?

“That’s impossible. Life Blast needs contact before it can be released. We haven’t seen him before,” Qin Wufu said with a change in expression.

“You should have seen it before, right?” Ják pointed at the cat at his feet.

Everyone looked at the cat and their expressions changed when they saw it. They had indeed seen the cat, but they had just noticed it in passing. However, when they paid attention again, they didn’t see it again. They thought they were seeing things.

But now, they realized that something was amiss. Furthermore, the self-detonation of the young officer just now disheartened them.

“Do you want me to prove it to you?” Ják said coldly.

“There’s no need. I’ll leave with you.” Zhou Wen wanted to quickly escape the current situation. He had to find Ják’s

true body as soon as possible.

How could such a dangerous fellow, who stood at odds with him, be allowed to live?

This time, he dealt with soldiers who had nothing to do with him. It was hard to guarantee that the next victim wouldn’t be his family or friends.

“Zhou Wen…” Qin Wufu looked at Zhou Wen with a strange expression.

“Governor, please remember your responsibility. The person you need to protect isn’t me, Zhou Wen, but the millions of ordinary people behind you.” Zhou Wen only wanted to quickly follow Ják. If Qin Wufu were to stop him, he would only become an obstacle. All he could do was say something that pinned Qin Wufu in place so that he wouldn’t have the determination to fight to the death.

However, when Qin Wufu, Lu Su, and the officers and soldiers heard this, it meant something completely different to them.

Zhou Wen’s image instantly became lofty in their hearts. It was like a saint sacrificing himself to save the citizens.

They had no idea that Zhou Wen yearned to stay as far away as possible from them as possible. No one wanted to be with a pile of bombs that could explode at any moment.

“Let’s go.” Ják turned around and walked towards the encampment’s entrance.

Zhou Wen didn’t hesitate to follow him. Qin Wufu gaped, but he ultimately didn’t say anything. All he did was give Zhou Wen a military salute.

All the officers and soldiers saluted Zhou Wen and watched him and Ják leave the military camp.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 427 - Slaying Ják 1

Chapter 427 Slaying Ják 1

“I’ve already come out with you. Can you release the Life Blasts in their bodies?” Zhou Wen said to Ják after leaving the encampment.

“Put this on.” Ják handed Zhou Wen a strange chain.

“What’s this?” Zhou Wen looked at the item and felt that it resembled shackles, but it was much thinner. It wasn’t as simple as simply chaining his limbs.

“This is the Primordial Trapping Lock that was invented by the bureau. It’s made with Primordial Gold. After wearing it, it can bind all 26 spots that you might have a sea of energy. When worn, even immortals will not be able to use their Primordial Energy. I was locked up in one for 28 years, but this is a simplified version. The one I wore was more complicated and inconvenient to obtain. I’ve requested this from the bureau to be specially prepared for you,” Ják said.

Zhou Wen looked at the Primordial Trapping Lock and frowned. “What you are doing is equivalent to making me commit suicide.”

“Of course, you can also choose to watch a fireworks bonanza.” Ják pointed in the direction of the encampment.

“Alright, I’ll wear it.” Zhou Wen was actually sneering inwardly while pretending to be placed in a difficult position.

This item might be useful on others, sealing their Primordial Energy sea, but Zhou Wen didn’t have any Primordial Energy sea. If one insisted on using the concept, his entire body was a Primordial Energy sea. Unless one directly destroyed his body, there was no way one could destroy his Primordial Energy sea.

The Lost Immortal Sutra was one of a kind.

After receiving the Primordial Trapping Lock, Zhou Wen put it on, it was as though he wasn’t wearing it. He saw chains envelop his body. In some special areas, there were twenty-six spots that had metal needles pierce into his body. They targeted twenty-six spots where Primordial Energy seas could be.

Even the most top-notch experts in the Federation would no longer be able to use Primordial Energy after being bound by the Primordial Trapping Lock. Without the circulation of Primordial Energy, they couldn’t use Primordial Energy Arts, nor could they summon Companion Beasts.

Although summoning a Companion Beast didn’t require much Primordial Energy, not having any made it impossible to activate the tattoo formed by the Companion Beast. That prevented the summoning of a Companion Beast.

“You are very strong, but unfortunately, you are restrained by the so-called morals of the secular world. You are actually foolish enough to sacrifice yourself for others. This is the only place you aren’t strong enough. It’s also the only thing that disappoints me. I originally imagined that you would be truly inspired by my coercion and abandon those trash to release your true self, finally to truly push your mental and physical body to the limits. I never expected you to be brainwashed by such foolish feudal ethics. It’s truly

disappointing.” Despite seeing Zhou Wen put on the Primordial Trapping Lock, Ják revealed a disappointed expression instead of joy.

“Isn’t this what you want?” Zhou Wen looked coldly at Ják.

“Of course not. I told you before that I wanted to see the moment when your body and mind reached their limits. Only then would you be the best ingredient in the world with no substitute. Unfortunately, your mental state is too terrible. You’re extremely stupid. This greatly reduces your deliciousness,” Ják said.

Zhou Wen wore an amused, yet, angered look. He stared at Ják and said, “You’re such a particular person when it comes to doing evil. Should I say that you’re an artist amongst evil people? Or should I say you’re a jerk?”

“It doesn’t matter. I’m me. My pursuit doesn’t need the understanding of others.” Ják glanced at Zhou Wen and said, “If I were to eat you now, it would be a waste of a delicacy. However, there’s no rush. I’ll soon push your mind to the limit.”

“What are you trying to do?” Zhou Wen’s expression changed slightly.

“Do you feel it? Your mind is beginning to stir.” Ják looked in the direction of the encampment and continued, “Now, I’ll get rid of that stupid trash and stop them from being a mental obstacle for you. I’ll let you recover your true self.”

“You’re a lunatic!” Zhou Wen immediately understood that Ják was actually going to kill those people in the encampment to agitate him.

“I’m just helping you search for your true self.” Ják’s eyes were burning with zeal.

“You are a lunatic. Do you want me to become a lunatic like you?” Zhou Wen stared at Ják expressionlessly. He wasn’t angry, but he was judging if Ják was an avatar or the actual body.

“If a lunatic can be happy, why not try going crazy?” Ják said calmly as he summoned the Hex Cat Demon.

“You said that you used the cat demon’s curse to plant a Life Blast into everyone. It’s actually fake, right?” Zhou Wen asked.

“Why do you say that?” Ják stopped and asked with interest.

“According to what I know, curses have all sorts of restrictions. To begin with, a curse requires a medium. And to add Life Blast via a curse makes it even more difficult. The conditions should be even more stringent. Even the curse powers of a Mythical Companion Beast shouldn’t be so powerful that they are able to curse someone without a medium, right?”

Ják nodded and said, “You’re right. It’s true that I can’t curse everyone. I just cursed something in the camp. Anyone who came into contact with it would be infected by the curse and have Life Blast planted in them.”

“It shouldn’t be that simple. It’s impossible to spread such a passive curse so easily and in such a widespread manner,” Zhou Wen said with certainty.

“Oh, then how do you think I infected them with the curse?” Ják stopped what he was doing and asked Zhou Wen with interest.

“You detonated a soldier before and also detonated an officer, so the item must be something touched by the soldiers and officers. Just touching it isn’t enough. You need a special ritual or medium to infect them with a curse. Previously, I said that they had all been set up with Life Blast. You showed them the Hex Cat Demon and made them believe that they were cursed by it. In fact, you had already exposed the fact that you didn’t curse everyone,” Zhou Wen said.

“Continue.” Ják smiled.

“In the camp, there’s only one thing that fulfills the conditions mentioned. After much thought, it’s the logbook they sign when they hand over their duties. You put the curse on the logbook and all the officers and soldiers who signed it ended up completing the ritual and got infected with the curse. You said that you didn’t curse me because you didn’t want me to suffer any harm. In fact, it’s because I didn’t write my name on the logbook, so you can’t curse me.”

“You are indeed very smart. You are almost perfect. However, even if your name is on the logbook, I won’t let you be tainted by the curse,” Ják said.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 428 - Slaying Ják 2

428 Slaying Ják 2

“From the looks of it, I guessed correctly. You are probably the real body. I never expected you to be so bold to enter the military camp with your real body. If you really detonated everyone, you probably wouldn’t be able to escape, right?” Zhou Wen praised Ják.

“You even guessed that. How did you guess that?” Ják was somewhat surprised as he asked Zhou Wen.

“I wasn’t sure, but I’m certain now,” Zhou Wen said.

Ják was taken aback before he laughed. “Interesting. You’re really interesting. What a pity. A smart person like you actually chose to sacrifice yourself for that trash. However, it’s fortunate that you did so. Otherwise, with your abilities and intellect, I wouldn’t have been able to capture you.

“You are right. This is my real body. This is because I wouldn’t be able to summon a Mythical Companion Beast without my actual body. Naturally, I wouldn’t have been able to complete those means without it. Everyone believes that I’m a despicable person who only hides in the dark. Everyone believes that I won’t take risks with my real body, but I just so happen to do so. Furthermore, I came out unscathed. Isn’t that very interesting?” Ják was somewhat delighted.

“You are indeed a bold and meticulous devil. If a person like you were to live in this world, I’m afraid many people would be very uneasy.” Zhou Wen sighed.

“Others aren’t within my considerations, but you should be happy. Although you will be dead, I won’t let off those people who want to capture you. I’ll destroy the entire bureau. It can be considered as taking revenge for you in a way,” Ják said.

“I’ve been poor since I was young, so I grew up with a bad habit. I like to handle my own things by myself and don’t really know how to enjoy life or enjoy being served by others. Therefore, it’s best I avenge myself,” Zhou Wen said.

“You’ve put me in a difficult position. I’m starving now, and I wish I could swallow a delicacy like you immediately. I can’t wait that long,” Ják said as he licked his lips.

“So, I’ll kill you first,” Zhou Wen said as he stared at Ják.

“It’s a pity that you’ve already put on the Primordial Trapping Lock, so you don’t have a chance.” Ják was clearly very confident in the lock. After all, this was something that had chained him for twenty-eight years. He had tried all possible means without a way of breaking free from the lock’s imprisonment.

“Is that so?” Zhou Wen exerted strength as the shackle that bound him instantly shattered, turning into flying shards.

Ják’s expression changed as he attempted to snap his fingers to kill all the people who had been cursed. He wanted to deal a mental blow to Zhou Wen.

However, just as he raised his hand, he saw a flash. It was unbelievably fast as it chopped off his hand. It did not stop as it continued towards Ják’s body.

As Zhou Wen had been chained by the Primordial Trapping Lock, Ják wasn’t prepared at all. He was just too close to

Zhou Wen, and Zhou Wen was just too fast. There were probably few people who were faster than him at the Epic stage, and Ják wasn’t as fast as Zhou Wen’s blade.

Ják suddenly turned into a shadow and escaped, but the Bamboo Blade in Zhou Wen’s hand was even faster. He slashed at the shadow.

With a spurt of blood, a tiger-shaped Companion Beast was sliced into two by Zhou Wen. The tiger-shaped Companion Beast’s corpse and blood exploded suddenly. The strength of the explosion was much more terrifying than the full-powered attack of an Epic creature. Clearly, the tiger-shaped Companion Beast was at the Epic stage.

“Die!” Ják dodged to another spot. In his spot, more than ten Epic Companion Beasts appeared at the same time and were set off by Ják.

A terrifying force exploded within a radius of a few hundred meters, forming a huge blast of light that shot into the sky. It could be seen from tens of kilometers away.

Inside the encampment, Qin Wufu and the others saw the terrifying blast of light. They felt the ground shake as their expressions turned nasty.

“Something might have happened to Zhou Wen. Let’s go take a look.” Qin Wufu immediately led his men in the direction of the explosion. It was in the direction where Ják had taken Zhou Wen.

As for the terrifying blast, it wasn’t something not at the Epic stage could match. Zhou Wen definitely couldn’t produce such immense power. Therefore, there was only one possibility left— Ják was unleashing his powers.

Lu Su rushed in the direction of the explosion with the rest. She was extremely depressed. She still remembered that she had written Zhou Wen off as being afraid of death when he said that he didn’t wish to implicate the soldiers.

However, in order to preserve their lives, Zhou Wen chose to leave with a serial killer like Ják. His outcome was obvious.

Lu Su knew that there was hell ahead of them. A youth who was still schooling had bravely chosen to walk towards hell for the sake of these soldiers. This made Lu Su feel ashamed and touched.

Zhou Wen, don’t die! This was Lu Su’s heartfelt prayer, as well as the heartfelt pleas of many Chess Mountain soldiers and officers. The moment Zhou Wen left with Ják, Zhou Wen was no longer an ordinary name in their hearts.

Ják glared at the spot of the blast. He was extremely conflicted; he didn’t wish for Zhou Wen to die just like that. From his point of view, this was a waste of good food.

However, at that moment, he really felt that his life was under a serious threat. He had subconsciously used all his strength. Compared to delicacies, his life was more important.

Ják stared intently at the spot where the blast had gone off. Although more than ten Epic creatures self-destructed at the same spot and the might was enough to kill any Epic creature, Ják was still worried. He couldn’t feel at ease without seeing Zhou Wen’s corpse.

Boom!

A figure rushed out from the blast, emitting light and heat into the air. It was like the sun. He held a huge sword in his

hand and slashed down from above. The sword beam cleaved down like a wheel of sunlight. The light was unbelievably domineering.

Is this fellow a monster? The detonation of more than ten Epic Companion Beasts failed to kill him? Ják was alarmed, but his eyes burned with zeal.

At that moment, he no longer wished to escape. Now, the thought of eating Zhou Wen burned even more. It almost devoured him. He extended his hand and the Hex Cat Demon transformed into a ring that appeared on his finger. Wearing the ring, Ják didn't escape and instead punched Zhou Wen's sword beam.

This was clearly not Ják's style, but Zhou Wen's sword beam still slashed without any hesitation.

Crack!

Ják's cat demon ring and his arm were severed at the same time. Ják was sent flying, but he wore a crazy smile on his face.

Curse of Blood… Life Change…Sanguine light burst out from Ják's body, transforming into blood-colored hex patterns. His Life Soul, Blood Hex Clown, appeared on Zhou Wen's body, and immediately, Zhou Wen's body was enveloped by sanguine light as he fell from the sky.

Let's see who has a more hardy life! Ják's long hair flared in the wind. The blood hex on his body rose as he was about to activate his curse.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 429 - I Have to Make Them Feel The Pain

Chapter 429 I Have to Make Them Feel The Pain

Just as Ják was about to release his curse, a purple beam slashed across his back. Ják's movement froze as his raised hand stopped in midair. A head flew into the air with the splattering blood.

Not far behind Ják was a doll-like girl wearing purple armor. She was standing there with a purple-copper scabbard in her arms.

Thud!

Ják's beheaded corpse fell and the ancient sword returned to the sheath in the Demonic Neonate's arms.

However, Zhou Wen didn't dare let his guard down. He continued staring intently at Ják's corpse, afraid that it would turn into a puppet.

Thankfully, the thing he was worried about didn't happen. Ják's corpse didn't turn into a doll. Instead, his mysterious phone vibrated. Zhou Wen took out his phone and saw the Dead Man Tree automatically appear on the screen. He snapped a picture of Ják's corpse with the phone and his corpse and blood vanished. The Blood Hex Clown also transformed into a red stream of light that was sucked into the phone.

On the crown of the Dead Man Tree, an additional sprout appeared.

When Qin Wufu brought his men over, he saw a huge crater a few hundred meters in diameter. Zhou Wen stood in the huge crater, but there was no sign of Ják.

“Zhou Wen… Are you alright… Where’s Ják?” Lu Su asked Zhou Wen in surprise.

“He probably doesn’t exist in this world anymore.” Zhou Wen stuffed his phone into his pocket and said casually.

Qin Wufu, Lu Su, and the other Epic officers were shocked. What Zhou Wen said was very obvious, but they found it unbelievable.

However, the reality was right in front of him. Even Qin Wufu found it difficult to produce the results of such an intense battle and explosive strength. In such a battle, there was naturally one survivor. Since Zhou Wen could stand here unharmed, Ják’s outcome was self-evident.

Lu Su and company were alarmed when they saw Zhou Wen standing in the crater. They found it unbelievable that an infamous, bloodthirsty murderer like Ják would be killed by a college student like Zhou Wen.

Even though they didn’t know how powerful Ják had been in the past, Ják had barged into the military camp alone and killed so many soldiers and officers while he chatted casually. However, they could do nothing against his ferocious might. They acutely knew how powerful he was, but he had been killed by a student like Zhou Wen. It was truly difficult to accept the truth.

After returning to the encampment, Lu Su strongly requested Zhou Wen to have a physical checkup, but she found him completely uninjured.

Zhou Wen’s deeds became legends in the Chess Mountain’s encampment. The soldiers discussed his achievements, his bravery, prowess, and excellent medical skills.

In Chess Mountain’s encampment, Zhou Wen became synonymous with omnipotent. He was revered by many soldiers and officers.

Even when Qin Wufu reported it to An Tianzuo, he had used the most exaggerated words of praise, causing An Tianzuo’s expression to turn odd when he heard the report.

“Overseer, it’s such a waste for such a talent to stay on campus. Please make sure Zhou Wen stays in Chess Mountain. I hope he can become the captain of the special unit.” Qin Wufu directly voiced his request through the video call.

“Do you think that with his age and experience, people will acknowledge him as captain of the Special Operations Unit?” An Tianzuo asked.

“Don’t worry, Overseer. I’ve already asked for their views. Their opinions are unanimous. They accept no one to be their captain but Zhou Wen,” Qin Wufu said immediately.

An Tianzuo’s expression became even odder. He pondered for a moment and said, “I can’t make the decision on this matter. His surname is Zhou, not An. I’m not in charge of him. Besides, your suggestion might not even be approved by my empress dowager.”

Qin Wufu sighed when he heard that. “That’s true. Madam Lan probably won’t let him take the risk, but it’s too wasteful to let such a talent stay in school. As long as he trains for a few more years, he will definitely be able to preside over a region in the future…”

An Sheng stood by the side in all seriousness, but for some reason, An Tianzuo felt that he was holding back his laughter.

Only after Qin Wufu hung up did An Tianzuo turn to glare at An Sheng. “What are you so happy about? Don’t you know how many soldiers were killed?”

“Overseer, I’m not laughing,” An Sheng said solemnly.

“Hmph, does the bureau really think that Ans are dead? How dare they kill the An family’s soldiers inside our military camp? They have to pay for this,” said An Tianzuo coldly.

“Overseer, how do you want them to pay?” An Sheng’s eyes turned cold.

“It’s time to nudge the nail you buried in the bureau,” said An Tianzuo.

“Yes, I understand what I need to do,” An Sheng’s eyes lit up as he said in excitement.

“Go ahead. Don’t let them wait too long. Also, clamp down the news that Zhou Wen killed Ják. Don’t let any news on Chess Mountain spread,” said An Tianzuo.

“Even if word gets out, no one will believe that Ják was killed by Young Master Wen, right?” An Sheng said.

“Ják naturally wasn’t killed by a student,” said An Tianzuo.

An Sheng immediately understood what An Tianzuo was getting at. “Overseer, don’t worry. Ják’s death has nothing to do with Young Master Wen. He was shot dead by our An family’s army.”

“Did I say so?” An Tianzuo glared at him.

“No, Overseer has never said anything about that. However, if others were to think that way, you can’t stop them. Anyway, this has nothing to do with Young Master Wen, and they won’t be able to pin it on him,” An Sheng said in all seriousness.

“It’s none of my business whether he’s investigated? It’s good if a troublesome fellow ends up dying,” An Tianzuo said with a snort.

“Overseer, do you mean to let him stay at Chess Mountain or let him return to school?” An Sheng asked.

“Don’t ask me about his matters. Ask the person at home yourself,” An Tianzuo said without looking up.

…

With Ják’s death, Zhou Wen felt a lot more relaxed. However, his mind didn’t stop working. The bureau had actually used people like Ják to capture him; it was no different from taking his life.

Although Zhou Wen’s present strength was insufficient to confront the bureau head-on, wouldn’t it mean that they could bully Zhou Wen as they wished if he didn’t do anything? Wouldn’t they send even more people without any scruples?

No, I have to think of a way. I have to let the bureau feel the pain. Although I can’t face the bureau head-on, I don’t necessarily have to fight them head-on. Just like Ják, I might be able to do something. Zhou Wen’s mind raced.

Zhou Wen didn’t like arguing with others, nor did he like to hold grudges with others. He even found quarreling troublesome.

However, he had his bottom line and temper as well.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 430 - Entering Chess Mountain

Chapter 430 Entering Chess Mountain

Zhou Wen had a limited understanding of the bureau. He couldn’t do anything even if he had the intention.

Therefore, he made a phone call to An Sheng and asked him for information regarding the bureau.

“Young Master Wen, although Ják was very strong, he was locked up for so many years. His strength alone was far inferior to the bureau’s.” An Sheng paused before saying, “Don’t worry about this. The An family definitely won’t let this matter rest. They will definitely make the bureau pay for it. We are already taking action.”

“I just want to know more about my enemy.” Zhou Wen didn’t explain further.

“That’s true. You will definitely have to deal with the bureau in the future. Indeed, you should have a detailed understanding of them. Why don’t you give me some time? I’ll organize the information and send you a copy. It won’t be appropriate passing some of the materials over the Internet,” An Sheng said.

“Alright.” Zhou Wen wasn’t in a rush. He hadn’t thought of what to do either.

“Did you really kill Ják?” An Sheng asked curiously as there were no traces of Ják’s corpse on the spot.

“I don’t know what to say. In theory, he should be dead,” Zhou Wen said.

“Then does that mean there’s still a chance of survival?” An Sheng asked.

“You don’t have to worry about Ják’s problem,” Zhou Wen said with certainty.

The reason he didn’t say that Ják was dead was that he had vanished in this world because the Companion Eggs produced by the Dead Man Tree were different from ordinary Companion Eggs. They carried things from their past lives, making them a type of clone.

Zhou Wen was still very expectant of the Companion Beast transformed by Ják. If he could have the ability to produce Life Blast, it would be of great help to Zhou Wen in his future battles.

Although he could use spatial trajectories to achieve the effect of a Life Blast, it was much less practical. It wasn’t as easy or convenient as Life Blast.

Furthermore, Ják was an expert in shadow escape and various curses. The only thing Zhou Wen wasn’t sure of was the number of techniques he could retain after Ják transformed into a Companion Beast.

Beep! Beep! A message came through the phone.

Zhou Wen took out his phone to take a look and realized that it was a message from The Thearch.

“I need these things. Buy them for me.” A long list followed the message.

Zhou Wen took a look and realized that they were all equipment, instruments, and materials related to chemistry.

“What do you want these things for?” Zhou Wen found it odd. He remembered that he hadn’t introduced television dramas related to chemistry to The Thearch.

“For learning.” The Thearch’s answer was very simple.

Learning chemistry? Zhou Wen was alarmed as he asked, “Have you watched the television dramas I introduced?”

“They’re too fake. Too boring. The fake stuff you humans cook up is useless. Only stuff like chemistry and technology is interesting. Hurry up and buy them. I want to see those things before tomorrow’s sunset.”

“That’s impossible. Many of the things you want need to be purchased in a large city. I can’t get them in a small city at all. If I go to a big city, I’ll take half a month to return.” Zhou Wen was telling the truth. It was possible to buy something like a beaker in a typical small city, but it was impossible to buy those instruments.

The Thearch seemed to have learned a lot about the Federation from the Internet. She probably knew that Zhou Wen wasn’t lying. After some silence, she sent another message.

“I want you to enter Chess Mountain once. Get something inside.”

“The Thearch, you also know how weak I am. If you let me enter Chess Mountain, won’t that kill me?” Zhou Wen immediately sent a message rejecting the request.

“As long as you do as I say, absolutely nothing will happen. If you don’t go, I’ll make a wish to sever all your limbs,” The Thearch said.

“What do you want me to go in for?” Zhou Wen frowned slightly. If The Thearch wanted him to enter to break the seal, that would be a huge problem.

“To take a treasure from inside. With that treasure, in the future, you can pass things to me directly through the treasure. There’s no need to run around again. You can save a lot of time,” said The Thearch.

“There’s actually such a treasure? What is it?” Zhou Wen was delighted when he heard that.

From the current situation, The Thearch really needed him to do errands, so it didn’t make sense for her to harm him. If he could enter Chess Mountain to take a gander at the situation inside, it would be helpful when he had to clear the Chess Mountain dungeon in the future. Furthermore, there were treasures that he could take.

The Thearch said, “It’s nothing special. It’s just a flower. However, that flower is growing inside Chess Mountain. You have to enter the belly of the mountain to take it out. I can’t help you take it out.”

“Is it really not dangerous?” Zhou Wen was still somewhat hesitant.

“Chess Mountain is indeed very dangerous, but as long as you follow my instructions, there won’t be any danger. Unless you have a death wish and choose not to listen to my orders.” The Thearch paused and said, “You don’t have the right to choose. Show yourself at Chess Mountain in an hour or else…”

“Got it. All limbs severed, right?” Zhou Wen added.

Although he was unwilling, Zhou Wen still had to go. He had seen The Thearch’s strength before. The wish force was too terrifying. Even Truth Listener’s Evil Nullification couldn’t resolve the problem. He really had to go.

It’s indeed bad to take risks. I won’t randomly go to unfamiliar dimensional zones in the future. Zhou Wen packed and rushed to Chess Mountain.

When he saw the flower again, The Thearch didn’t say anything to him. He saw that there was a crack on the mountain wall from where the flower was rooted. It could probably allow someone to squeeze in.

“Come in.” The Thearch’s voice came from within the flower.

Zhou Wen gritted his teeth and crawled into the crack by turning sideways.

The crack was narrow, so all Zhou Wen could do was slowly walk sidewards. The further he went in, the darker it became. Soon, it was pitch-black. Thankfully, Zhou Wen had Truth Listener, so he knew of the surrounding situation. It wasn’t that terrifying.

After walking for quite some time, the rift finally opened up. Zhou Wen realized that in front of him was a huge space.

Zhou Wen was in the middle of the mountain belly. And at the bottom of it, there was a massive, strange building.

Zhou Wen had seen quite a number of ancient architectural maps, but this was the first time he had seen such a building. It had layers that resembled stairs, but they were extremely huge. Each layer was similar to a huge square.

At the very top was an ancient building. There was a rainbow-colored treasure halo that surged up into the sky, illuminating the interior of the mountain belly.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 431 - Treasure Trove

431 Treasure Trove

The seven-colored treasure glow surged up from within the ancient building, but at its foundation, blood-like liquid seeped out. The underground river flowed through the foundation and brought away the blood-like liquid, immediately turning into a blood-colored river.

Now, Zhou Wen finally knew why the river outside was blood-colored. It was because of this strange building.

Upon closer inspection of the foundation of the building's "bleeding," Zhou Wen's expression changed slightly. The bottom of the foundation was actually made of countless skulls and bones. It was as if countless skeletons had been poured into cement. Just looking at it made his scalp tingle.

"Crawl down while keeping close to the mountain wall. Remember, don't ever leave the mountain wall or fly. You have to keep your feet on the ground." The Thearch's voice sounded, but it wasn't a real voice. Instead, it sounded in Zhou Wen's mind.

"Don't tell me that the flower you mentioned is in that ancient building?" Zhou Wen whispered as a probe.

As expected, The Thearch heard what he said. "That's right. After you reach the bottom of the mountain wall, you can swim into the river. Remember not to take the staircase right in front. Swim to the left. There's a hole there. You have to enter from there."

“There shouldn’t be any strange creatures in the river, right?” Zhou Wen looked at the blood-colored river beneath the ancient building, feeling a little uneasy.

“Of course there are. You haven’t used that bone flute yet, am I right? When you enter the water, bite the bone flute with your teeth and swim forward. No matter what you see or feel, don’t panic or speak. You just have to follow my instructions and swim forward.”

“What else is there to take note of? Can you finish it in one go?” Zhou Wen said gloomily.

“That’s all. You can go now,” The Thearch said straightforwardly.

Zhou Wen took out the bone flute and bit it with his teeth before climbing down.

Although the river was blood-colored outside, color was the only thing it had in common. There was no smell of blood. However, things were different inside. The more Zhou Wen crawled down, the stronger the smell of blood. It was almost intolerable.

When he reached the bottom, the smell of blood almost made him want to vomit.

After taking a look at the river that resembled blood and the skeleton foundation that was bleeding in the distance, Zhou Wen gritted his teeth and jumped into the water. He had high poison resistance and had injected himself with Doctor Darkness’s poison several times, so he wasn’t afraid of being poisoned by the river.

Even so, Zhou Wen felt his skin itch after entering the water. Although he had already put on the Mutated Stone Chi

armor, the armor still had some gaps. It couldn’t stop the blood-like water from seeping in.

Thankfully, other than the itch, there was no other reaction. Only then did Zhou Wen feel a lot more at ease. He sped up and swam to the left of the building.

As he swam, Zhou Wen suddenly felt something float up from beneath the blood-colored river and approach him.

That thing was a massive object. Its entire body seemed to be trembling with some kind of power. Truth Listener could hear its existence, but it was affected by the tremors. It couldn’t hear its exact appearance, but it felt humongous.

“Don’t stop, don’t speak, continue swimming. Don’t panic, unless you want to die.” The Thearch’s voice sounded in his mind again.

At this point, Zhou Wen could only continue swimming forward, but he kept his ears pricked up. He felt that the thing underwater was just beneath him. The thing was unimaginably huge spanning a probable hundred meters in length. He didn’t know what it was.

D*mn you flower, don’t you harm me! Zhou Wen thought to himself. He felt like the thing was about to touch his body. Furthermore, many things like seaweed or tentacles had already touched his body.

“Don’t stop, continue swimming. Ignore it.” The Thearch’s voice rang again.

Zhou Wen could only listen to her and continue swimming forward, but soon, he realized that there were many red things tearing out of the water around him. The things were the thickness of a thumb. They resembled seaweed or

tentacles that crawled out from the water, occupying the hundred-meter-long river.

When Zhou Wen’s body touched the items, he found it soft and sticky. He had no idea what it was.

“Continue swimming and don’t worry about them. It doesn’t matter even if you touch them.” The Thearch’s voice sounded in Zhou Wen’s mind again.

Zhou Wen felt his entire body itch. He knew that it definitely wasn’t harmless as The Thearch had said. At the very least, these things were definitely poisonous. It was only because his poison resistance was high enough. If it were someone else, they would have sunk to the bottom of the river long before now.

He swam in the red objects with the bone flute in his mouth. This wasn’t swimming anymore; he felt like he was crawling on the red objects.

Thankfully, other than feeling itchy, the objects didn’t attack him. Zhou Wen crawled all the way to the left of the ancient building and crawled a few hundred meters, but he didn’t see the hole that The Thearch had mentioned.

“You’re there. About three meters down. Dive in from here,” The Thearch suddenly said.

Holy sh*t, I definitely won’t come again even if I’ll get all five limbs severed. Zhou Wen gritted his teeth and peeled away the red seaweed-like objects. He swam through the blood which had a smell that made him feel like vomiting.

The red objects kept trembling, severely affecting Truth Listener’s hearing. Zhou Wen dived through the red

seaweed and searched for a while before finally finding the hole that The Thearch had mentioned.

The cave was about the same size as a dog hole. Zhou Wen's head was just able to enter, so he barely managed to squeeze in. There was a tunnel behind him that was flooded by the river. Thankfully, the red seaweed wasn't here. Truth Listener could probably hear the situation inside.

"Don't surface yet. Just swim underwater according to my instructions. You have to be careful now. You have to stick to the stone slab right below. If those things outside discover you, you're dead."

D*mn it! Zhou Wen had the urge to curse.

But since things had come to this point, there was no other way. All he could do was carefully swim forward while keeping close to the stone slabs at the bottom.

The tunnel below was connected in all directions. Zhou Wen swam forward according to The Thearch's instructions. At the same time, he remembered the path he had taken, making it easier for his next venture here.

He definitely wouldn't come back in person. However, he still could continue exploring in-game.

Thankfully, Zhou Wen had learned the Nine Dragons Art. His ability to hold his breath underwater was far greater than the average Epic expert. If it were an ordinary Epic human, not only would the poison in the water prevent them from swimming underwater for so long, but they would probably have already surfaced to catch their breath.

"Alright, there's a stone staircase up ahead. Just go up with the stone staircase." After swimming for quite some time, he

passed through many flooded tunnels. Just as he needed to take a breath, he finally heard The Thearch telling him to leave the water.

Zhou Wen rushed out of the water along the stone stairs, gasping heavily for his breath. However, while panting, he couldn’t help but hold his breath when he saw the scene in front of him.

At the end of the stone steps was a stone platform. On it was a small mound of dimensional crystals that glittered like a mountain of treasure.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 432 - Deer Terrace Pavilion

432 Deer Terrace Pavilion

He didn’t use his phone to take a picture, but from the terrifying fluctuations emitted by the crystals, he knew that they were definitely not ordinary.

“Walk around the treasure platform and head behind it.” The Thearch’s voice rang out in his mind again.

“Can I take some of the crystals here? If I need to buy anything in the future, I don’t have to ask you for money again,” Zhou Wen asked as he swallowed.

Even he couldn’t help but feel his heart race as he faced the mountain of high-level crystals.

“If you don’t want to live, go ahead and take them. If you want to stay alive, stay away from them and don’t touch them,” The Thearch said.

“Stingy,” Zhou Wen muttered as he circled around the mountain of crystals. When he walked to the back of the crystal pile, he saw a strange creature sprawled on the crystal pile. Its body was curled up as though it was sleeping.

The creature was golden in color and looked like a pangolin, but it seemed different.

“What dimensional creature is that?” Zhou Wen asked as he looked at the pangolin sprawled on the crystal pile. Since

The Thearch hadn’t warned him to be careful, there shouldn’t be any danger.

“In the words of you humans, it’s a Mythical creature. It’s called a Wealth Conserver. It devours any greedy creature that tries to take its wealth,” The Thearch said.

“Mythical creature! Why didn’t you say so earlier?” Zhou Wen’s expression changed slightly as his voice deepened.

“As long as you don’t touch those crystals, it won’t wake up. Why would I talk about it?” The Thearch said matter-of-factly.

Zhou Wen was secretly alarmed. If he hadn’t listened to The Thearch and had greedily taken the crystals, he would have been in big trouble.

Behind the treasure platform was a stone staircase. Zhou Wen walked down the stone steps and entered a hall. He saw many strange stone sculptures of various strange beasts in the hall. They were ancient and majestic, but there was nothing special about them. However, they all had different-colored eggs in their mouths.

“Are those are Companion Eggs?” Zhou Wen looked at the two rows of stone sculptures on both sides of the hall. Each stone statue contained a Companion Egg in their mouth.

“That’s right. In your human words, those are Mythical Companion Eggs,” said The Thearch.

“Mythical Companion Eggs? What kind of place is this? Why are there so many treasures here?” Zhou Wen asked in surprise.

There were at least ten stone statues, and all of them had Mythical Companion Eggs in their mouths. This made it a little terrifying.

“Didn’t you go to school and learn the history of the East District?” The Thearch said in disdain.

“What does this have to do with me learning history?” Zhou Wen asked.

“Since you’ve studied history, you should be able to recognize Deer Terrace Pavilion when you see it. This is a unique building in the world,” The Thearch said.

“Deer Terrace Pavilion? The Deer Terrace Pavilion that a tyrant built after expending all his country’s resources and oppressing the citizens?” Zhou Wen was terrible at history. He only studied to deal with the examinations, but he had also heard of Deer Terrace Pavilion because it was just so famous.

Back when the tyrant built Deer Terrace Pavilion using the entire nation’s strength, he had hidden countless rare treasures in it. He reveled in eating, drinking, and having fun in it. It was excessive extravagance and debauchery. It even left Zhou Wen somewhat envious.

“That’s right. This is the legendary Deer Terrace Pavilion. However, the effect of the Deer Terrace Pavilion isn’t as simple as storing treasures as you humans say.”

“Then what’s it for?” Zhou Wen asked.

The Thearch gave a strange laugh and said, “You must have seen the movies and films regarding the Deer Terrace Pavilion, right? One of them talks about a fox demoness that

invited immortals to descend to the mortal world to drink and eat at Deer Terrace Pavilion with the tyrant, right?”

“I’ve seen that, but they weren’t actually immortals. They were all manifestations of demons that the demoness invited,” Zhou Wen said after some thought.

“Although the plot isn’t very realistic, it’s still slightly relevant. The Deer Terrace Pavilion’s usage is related to dimensional creatures, so it can also be considered as inviting demons,” The Thearch said indifferently.

“Can I take these Companion Eggs away?” Zhou Wen asked as he stared at the Companion Eggs. They were all Mythical Companion Eggs. Any one of them could be sold at an astronomical price. Even if he didn’t sell them, he could use them himself.

“What do you think?” The Thearch asked.

“Forget it, I can’t take it,” Zhou Wen said helplessly.

“Then why aren’t you speeding up? There’s a flower pot on the right side of the hall. That’s the thing you are here for,” The Thearch urged.

Zhou Wen followed the location that The Thearch had mentioned and indeed saw a flower pot in the corner. It looked very inconspicuous—a shiny clay pot. There was a flower planted inside. It lazily grew two leaves and a flower. The flower looked like a morning glory flower. It drooped listlessly as though it was malnourished and was about to wither.

“What are you waiting for? Why aren’t you taking it away?” The Thearch urged again.

Zhou Wen had no choice but to pick the flower pot up. He wasn’t in a good mood as he could only bring out the flower pot despite seeing so many high-level crystals and Mythical Companion Beasts.

“The Thearch, it’s not easy to make a trip here. Do you have anything else for me to bring out? I don’t want to make another trip again,” Zhou Wen asked, unwilling to give up.

“There are dimensional creatures guarding the Deer Terrace Pavilion. If you have the ability, go ahead and take whatever you want. I will not stop you,” The Thearch said disdainfully.

Upon hearing that, Zhou Wen dismissed the thoughts of taking anything else. As he walked back with the flower pot, he asked, “What’s the use of this flower?”

“Don’t underestimate it. This flower has the ability to teleport. In the future, when you buy something and put it in the flower, you can teleport it to me.”

“It’s only a fixed-point teleportation device?” Zhou Wen was immediately disappointed.

“You don’t have to be disappointed. In the future, if I have something to give you, I can also transfer it to you through it. It’s much more convenient than your human phones. It’s probably about the same as the quantum transportation device that you humans are researching without any results,” The Thearch said after some thought.

Zhou Wen forced a smile, but he could only hope that he could obtain benefits from The Thearch in the future. Otherwise, this would be a wasted trip; he didn’t benefit other than the flower pot.

Zhou Wen indignantly sized up his surroundings and saw that there was a strange nine-tailed fox’s portrait engraved on the wall in front of the hall. He couldn’t help but size up the portrait and said, “Is this the legendary true form of the fox demoness?”

“That’s right. If I were you, I wouldn’t continue looking at her,” The Thearch said coldly.

“Why?” Just as Zhou Wen asked, he felt his Lost Immortal Sutra react as its circulation began to slow down.

Almost at the same time, Zhou Wen saw the nine-tailed fox’s eyes emit an evil light.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 433 - Demon God Bloodline Catalog

433 Demon God Bloodline Catalog

“Aren’t you going to close your eyes? Why are you, a human, staring at the Demon God Catalog for so long? Do you plan on becoming a half-demon?” The Thearch coldly shouted.

However, Zhou Wen didn’t retract his gaze because of The Thearch’s admonition. He continued to stare at the nine-tailed fox symbol on the stone wall.

The Lost Immortal Sutra in him automatically circulated again. This feeling was too familiar to Zhou Wen. He had had the same feeling when learning the Small Perfection of Wisdom Sutra and the other Primordial Energy Arts.

Zhou Wen watched as the nine-tailed fox statue transformed into a strange black tiger. It didn’t take long for it to transform into a winged cow. Then, Zhou Wen saw the stone statue on the stone wall constantly changing, producing many statues that Zhou Wen had never seen or heard before.

“Stop looking. It doesn’t matter if you’re tempting fate, but who’ will buy my things?” The Thearch was very anxious.

Although she could also talk to someone on the Internet, it wasn’t easy to trick others into coming to Chess Mountain. There was probably no one who dared to come.

Even if someone dared to come, there would be troops stationed outside. Outsiders wouldn’t be able to get close to Chess Mountain.

Taking another step back, even if one could get close to Chess Mountain, it would probably not be easy to find someone who could enter Chess Mountain without dying.

After The Thearch went online, she realized that humans were much weaker than she had imagined. Zhou Wen was already considered one of the strongest humans.

Zhou Wen ignored The Thearch and kept staring at the stone wall. The transformation on the stone wall had run through thousands of demon beast symbols. Zhou Wen felt that the demon beasts had different charms and auras, but he didn’t see anything special.

However, the Lost Immortal Sutra kept circulating at an increasingly slower pace. When Zhou Wen couldn’t remember how many demon beast stone statue symbols he had seen, the Lost Immortal Sutra finally stopped circulating.

In the next second, Lost Immortal Sutra circulated crazily. However, the path and mode were completely different from before. It once again became a brand new Primordial Energy Art.

This Primordial Energy Art was extremely bizarre, giving Zhou Wen a strange feeling. When he circulated the Primordial Energy Art, his flesh trembled as though it was producing a dragon’s roar. His tendons and bones roared collectively like wolves and tigers as his hair stood up like a hedgehog’s spine. It ended up making him look like a dandelion.

Impossible… How can a human gain basic mastery of the Demon God Catalog’s legacy? This is impossible… In her cave, The Thearch’s eyes widened in surprise as though she had seen something extremely unbelievable.

As Zhou Wen circulated the new Primordial Energy Art, he obtained the information that the Primordial Energy Art was called the “Demon God Bloodline Catalog.”

However, Zhou Wen had only gained basic mastery of the Primordial Energy Art. He was still far from condensing a Life Providence.

After Zhou Wen retracted his gaze and heard The Thearch’s voice ringing in his mind. “Strange, why isn’t there any demonization when you cultivated the Demon God Catalog? Are you not a human to begin with?”

“It’s just a casual look; how could I become a demon like that, right?” Zhou Wen said indifferently. He hadn’t really mastered the Demon God Bloodline Catalog. It had just been simulated by the Lost Immortal Sutra; therefore, he didn’t suffer the harm that The Thearch mentioned.

The Thearch didn’t say anything else. All she did was urge Zhou Wen to leave Deer Terrace Pavilion quickly.

Zhou Wen put the flower pot into the Chaos Bead before following the path back. He walked all the way out of Chess Mountain until he emerged from the crack, only to let out a long sigh of relief.

“Return and buy everything I need as soon as possible. Then, send them to me through the Void Flower,” The Thearch instructed.

After Zhou Wen returned to his dorm in camp, he heaved a sigh of relief. He decided not to risk venturing to unknown dimensional zones again.

Should I think of a way to deal with The Thearch’s wishes? Otherwise, I’ll always be asked to do this and that. It’s really

troublesome, Zhou Wen thought about it but failed to come up with a good solution.

In the next few days, Zhou Wen went to a nearby city to buy some common chemicals and equipment. He then attempted to teleport the items to her with the Void Flower.

The Void Flower was really useful. As long as he said “open” to the flower that resembled a morning glory, its flower would form a miniature spatial portal. All he needed to do was throw the items in.

The Thearch was temporarily placated, but she urged Zhou Wen to hurry to a big city and buy everything she needed.

Although Zhou Wen agreed, he wasn’t in a rush to return to school. He spent a few more days in the military camp. He let the soldiers get infected with the rashes before injecting them with the poison to give them the antibodies. Without needing to fear the blood river, their combat strength also increased significantly.

Now, the officers and soldiers were calling Zhou Wen ‘Doctor Zhou’ the moment they saw him. They didn’t even need to say “little.” Clearly, they showed him deep respect.

However, Zhou Wen wasn’t used to it. He clearly didn’t know any medical skills, so every time he was addressed as Doctor Zhou by the soldiers, he found it odd.

An Sheng’s men finally came and brought with them information about the Special Inspector Bureau. Many of them were confidential documents. An Sheng repeatedly exhorted Zhou Wen to immediately destroy them after he had read them. He couldn’t let anyone else see them.

Zhou Wen carefully studied the thick stack of information, including the detailed explanations of the bureau's various departments. It had fine details about every department and office.

Only after reading it did Zhou Wen realize that the Special Inspector Bureau had a very large range of authority. It was almost the same as the Embroidered Uniform Guard, a secret police that served the emperors in ancient China.

However, the information also mentioned many of the Special Investigation Bureau's accolades. Many vile devils had been captured by the Special Investigation Bureau. They had lost many lives in the process.

The initial establishment of the bureau was to target those unscrupulous devils, as well as some Federation officials and local rich families who secretly carried out a variety of nefarious deeds.

However, as times changed, its power grew without any restrictions. The bureau also gradually changed.

There were a total of fifteen branches in the Special Investigation Bureau. They were stationed in fifteen important cities in the Federation and were responsible for the intelligence and supervision of the nearby areas.

There were a total of fifteen ministers that handled a branch, like Qiao Siyuan, and all of them were experts at the Epic stage. Furthermore, they had their own strengths, making them incomparable to ordinary Epic experts.

That was not all. There were even more experts in the headquarters of the bureau. There was no need to mention Shen Yuchi. Although no one had ever seen him attack, everyone who wanted to harm him had disappeared from

this world. To date, there had been no known instances of anyone successfully dealing him harm.

Back when Ják killed the son of the former director-general of the Special Inspector Bureau, the former director-general nearly went mad and used excessive means to capture Ják. However, due to his anger, he made a few irrational decisions and almost caused the bureau to be destroyed by Ják.

Under orders, Shen Yuchi designed a plan to capture Ják and reestablish the authority of the bureau. At the same time, he also recruited many talents, such as Qiao Siyuan.

Apart from Shen Yuchi, there were also the four Censors from the bureau. Every one of them was extremely terrifying as there were also some Epic experts.

After carefully studying the information, Zhou Wen realized that it wasn’t an easy task for him to touch the bureau. Small-scale skirmishes didn’t affect the bureau at all, nor would he make them feel pain.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 434 - Primordial Crystal Mine

Chapter 434 Primordial Crystal Mine

Zhou Wen felt that there was no need for a man to waste time on trivial matters, but once he decided on what he wanted to do, he had to be ruthless. He had to strike to kill. If death wasn’t possible, he had to drill the pain into their bones and figuratively strike fear into their bones.

Zhou Wen found cursing, making harsh threats, smashing things, and face-slapping meaningless. Even if he were to kill two of the Special Inspector Bureau’s men—even if one was a minister—it would be considered a trivial matter for the bureau. They could just hire someone else to be the branch minister.

Zhou Wen didn’t have the strength to storm the headquarters of the bureau and destroy it yet.

Even an arrogant person like Ják had been locked up by the bureau for twenty-eight years. After he came out, he didn’t immediately seek revenge on the bureau, but followed orders to capture Zhou Wen. This proved how terrifying the bureau was.

Zhou Wen studied it for a long time before a piece of news caught his attention.

The Special Inspection Bureau was very powerful, but it was different from typical rich families. They were only a department in the Federation and were given a salary by the Federation.

Although it was very easy for a department like the bureau to earn money, Shen Yuchi had strictly forbidden corruption. At the moment, there were no cases of any such misdeeds. Zhou Wen really admired Shen Yuchi in this aspect.

To be able to control such a department to this level was not something anyone could do.

However, relying on the Federation's funds alone was clearly insufficient for the bureau to operate. The bureau's main income came from two sources. One was the sponsorship from various major corporations and another was a Primordial Crystal mine.

According to the information An Sheng had given him, sixty percent of the Special Inspector Bureau's income came from this single Primordial Crystal mine.

Zhou Wen was no stranger to the Primordial Crystal mines. In the bat cave, there was quite a lot of Primordial Crystal Ore. As he couldn't take it out, he didn't pay much attention to it. He went to the bat cave mainly to hunt poison bats.

He hadn't respawned the instance dungeon recently, so all the poison bats inside had long been wiped out by him. He hadn't visited the bat cave ever since.

However, after reading the information on the Primordial Crystal mine, Zhou Wen was pleasantly surprised.

The effects of Primordial Crystals were similar to Primordial Gold. They could be used to make Primordial Crystal weapons, and they could even create laser weapons. That type of lasers had a certain level of lethality to dimensional creatures.

The value of the Primordial Crystal was even higher than that of the Primordial Gold. However, the Primordial Crystal deposits were usually not as high as the Primordial Gold deposits. The few discovered Primordial Crystal mines only produced a few tonnes every year.

Zhou Wen estimated that the production of a Primordial Crystal mine for a year was about the same as the Primordial Crystals in the bat cave.

The Special Inspector Bureau’s Primordial Crystal mine had rich deposits. After digging for several years, the number of Primordial Crystals produced was still very stable. It would probably not be a problem to mine for another ten to twenty years.

Due to the tight protection of the Primordial Crystal mine, there was only this little bit of information. There wasn’t any specific production or storage information, but it was estimated to be quite substantial. Every time the bureau needed money, a large number of Primordial Crystals would be sold.

What really piqued Zhou Wen’s interest was a footnote. Some earth- or stone-type dimensional creatures treated Primordial Crystal ores as food that could catalyze their evolution.

When Zhou Wen saw the footnote, his eyes lit up.

Without any hesitation, he took out his phone and switched to the Zhuolu instance dungeon. He quickly arrived at the poison bat cave and looked at the Primordial Crystal ores that resembled stars. Zhou Wen summoned Tyrant Behemoth.

Standing at three to four meters tall, Tyrant Behemoth was already like a monster. When it saw the Primordial Crystal ores, its eyes lit up. It let out a roar and charged forward, clawed the stone wall, and bit down.

Zhou Wen was stunned when he saw Tyrant Behemoth swallowing the rocks mixed with Primordial Crystals into his stomach like candy.

Tyrant Behemoth had no intention of stopping at all. It bit down on the nearby Primordial Crystal ores without end. It even chewed and swallowed many rocks. It wasn’t picky at all.

This fellow is indeed a monster that can eat a thousand mountains daily! Zhou Wen couldn’t help but marvel. Although they were also Mythical creatures, Banana Fairy’s and Truth Listener’s appetite was much smaller than it.

As for Demonic Neonate, she had never eaten anything since she was born.

Tyrant Behemoth was like a drilling machine. Wherever it went, it bit off a wall.

He had indeed been starving Tyrant Behemoth recently because he didn’t have any dungeons to grind. In order to save food, Zhou Wen waited until it was extremely hungry before giving it some food. During this period, Tyrant Behemoth hadn’t even eaten half its fill. Needless to say, it had never been satiated.

Now that there was food, it wasn’t willing to give up. It ate crazily across the bat cave. After half a day, it had devoured all the Primordial Crystal ores inside. Its stomach ballooned.

This fellow… I really can’t afford to raise him in the future… If it wasn’t for the game dungeon and the Primordial Crystals in the bat cave, Zhou Wen would have the urge to strangle Tyrant Behemoth to death. He had to kill it before it became a glutton prodigal, lest it brought disaster to the world.

Suddenly, Zhou Wen saw Tyrant Behemoth burping from its satiation. Then, a black glow emitted from its body before it completely enveloped its body.

Is it about to evolve into the Epic stage? Zhou Wen was immediately overjoyed.

If he had known that the Primordial Crystal ores would have such a great effect on Tyrant Behemoth, Zhou Wen would have brought it here a long time ago. What a waste of all those bat caves he grinded in the past.

After advancing to the Epic stage, should Tyrant Behemoth be able to eat even more? Zhou Wen’s eyes flashed with excitement when he thought of the Primordial Crystal mine that the bureau owned.

Tyrant Behemoth kept evolving. Zhou Wen didn’t know when it would finish evolving. However, the bat cave in-game was relatively safe, so he left it there.

Zhou Wen continued studying the information regarding the bureau, especially the parts regarding the Primordial Crystal mine.

The Primordial Crystal mine wasn’t in Holy City or the capital. Instead, it was in a dimensional zone in the wilderness. However, the bureau had already sealed off the dimensional zone, and one of the four major bureau inspectors, Cai Jin watched over it with other men. It

wouldn’t be easy for him to enter the dimensional zone to find the Primordial Crystal mine.

After Zhou Wen did some studying, he realized that there were many people who had their sights on the Primordial Crystal mine, but none of them succeeded. The main reason was that the dimensional zone itself was very odd. The bureau greatly relied on this oddity. The average person would die without knowing why as soon as they entered.

According to the information, An Sheng and company had definitely sent people there. However, the results weren’t good. There were many people sent in, but only two made it out alive.

Not long after the two of them came out, they also encountered problems. One of them went mad and the other committed suicide.

The only information that the An family had on hand was provided by these two people.

After Zhou Wen read the information, he revealed a look of delight. The place was indeed odd, but he could give it a try.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 435 - Stone Saber

Chapter 435 Stone Saber

Zhou Wen carefully studied the information An Sheng had brought over, believing that the power there was likely a curse. As for Truth Listener, it had very strong restraints against curses.

However, I still have to verify the actual situation before I can be certain. It’s best if I can find a tiny palm symbol and download the dimensional zone into my phone. Zhou Wen didn’t plan on immediately heading to the Primordial Crystal mine. Tyrant Behemoth was still evolving, so it was useless even if he went there. There was no way he could dig the mine himself. Even if he were to enter now, it wouldn’t be of much use and he couldn’t take too many of the Primordial Crystals.

According to usual practice, Zhou Wen first went to the underground sea. The black dragon now had more than ten palm imprints. Apart from the palm imprints, other parts of its body also began to produce poison boils that showed some festering.

After Zhou Wen descended into the sea, the other eight black dragons attacked him, but the black dragon was in a stupor. It was as though it had almost lost consciousness from its groggy state.

From the looks of it, it should be soon. Zhou Wen was delighted, hoping that something would drop after the black dragon died.

After escaping the underground sea, Zhou Wen didn’t immediately leave the game. Instead, he observed the sapphire-like sky, but he didn’t discover anything.

Previously, he had approached it only to suddenly die. There was probably a terrifying creature in the sapphire-like sky, but, to date, he had failed to discover its existence.

Just as Zhou Wen was about to exit the game, he suddenly saw a blue light flash across the distant sapphire sky. It was like a signal from an electrocardiogram as it flashed across the sapphire sky.

The blue light came and disappeared quickly. He waited for a while, but he didn’t see the blue light appear again.

I wonder what it is. It should also be a Mythical creature, right? Zhou Wen knew that it was useless even if he knew what it was. With his present strength, killing a chained black dragon was already so difficult. He had no chance of killing an unrestrained Mythical creature.

It was unknown when Tyrant Behemoth, who was in the midst of evolving in the bat cave, would complete its evolution.

After quitting the game, Zhou Wen received a call from An Sheng.

“Young Master Wen, there’s a piece of good news for you. Our plan against the bureau is about to come to fruition,” An Sheng said.

Zhou Wen was naturally delighted to hear that the bureau was about to be in trouble, but he wanted to personally send them to hell.

“Ah Sheng, Ják is dead. I wish to leave Chess Mountain,” Zhou Wen said.

“Of course you can. The bureau likely doesn’t have time to deal with you for now. I’ll get someone to take you back to school tomorrow,” An Sheng said.

“There’s no need. I’ll head back myself. Before that, I wish to return to my hometown,” Zhou Wen said.

“That’s fine. Even Ják isn’t your match, so it’s not going to be easy to find someone to protect you now. You can decide on your own.” An Sheng paused before asking, “What are you going back to Guide City for? You don’t have any relatives there, right?”

“There are some things at home that I want to bring back. By the way, can you obtain an entry pass to Guide Ancient City? I want to take a look when I’m back,” Zhou Wen said.

“That’s easy. Just head there straight away. I’ll make a call to arrange it,” An Sheng said straightforwardly.

After hanging up, Zhou Wen packed up his things and went to tell Qin Wufu about his departure. Not only did he want to return to Guide City, but he also had to head to the Special Inspector Bureau’s Primordial Crystal mine.

The reason he wanted to head to Guide City first was that he wanted to see if there was a stone saber in the furnace on Fire God Platform in reality.

In-game, the stone saber was just an illusion. He couldn’t touch it no matter what, so he wanted to take a look while on the way.

“Are you really leaving? If you are willing, you can stay here. I’ll let you be the captain of the Special Operations Unit and be in charge of those people. I’ll be in charge of explaining to the Overseer.” Qin Wufu wanted Zhou Wen to stay behind. He felt that it was a waste for Zhou Wen to return to school.

“Overseer, I’m still a student after all. I should still focus on my studies,” Zhou Wen said.

“Fine then. There are indeed some impressive figures in Sunset College, especially Chancellor Leng. Calling him the strongest person beneath the Mythical stage isn’t an exaggeration. It’ll be beneficial for you to learn more from him,” Qin Wufu said.

Zhou Wen nodded slightly. “Then I’ll be leaving now.”

“That fast?” Qin Wufu was a little surprised.

“There’s no point in staying another night. I still have some matters to do,” Zhou Wen said.

“Alright then. However, you have to say farewell to those guys. Otherwise, they will definitely eat me up,” Qin Wufu said with a smile.

After leaving Chess Mountain, Zhou Wen headed straight for Guide City on the Mutated Stone Chi.

Back when he left Guide City, he was only a Mortal-stage youth. Now, in less than a year, he had advanced to the Epic stage. He was very different from before.

When he arrived at Guide Ancient City again, Zhou Wen recalled the matter of him participating in the combat test

with Li Xuan. It felt like something that had happened a long time ago.

After entering the ancient city, he saw scattered instances of people fighting the Skeleton Soldiers. Zhou Wen circled around them and headed deeper into the ancient city.

Although he had only visited in real life once, he had grinded the game countless times. He was very familiar with Guide Ancient City, so he arrived at Fire God Platform quickly.

The firebirds on the Fire God Platform naturally couldn’t hurt Zhou Wen. Zhou Wen walked up the stairs and they flocked towards him. As Zhou Wen circulated the Ancient Sovereign Sutra, the firebirds automatically flew back.

When he arrived at the top of Fire God Platform, it wasn’t much different from the game. The layout was identical, except that it was cartoonish in-game. It looked cuter and more ancient in real life.

There were flames burning in the mottled stone furnace, as well as a stone saber. It looked a little cruder than the one in-game. It was probably hand-made. There were pits and natural stone patterns on the blade. Only the edge of the blade looked fine and sharp. This could be considered a partially man-made stone saber.

Zhou Wen circulated the Ancient Sovereign Sutra and summoned the Ancient Sovereign Life Soul to attach it to him before reaching his hand into the stone furnace.

The flames in the furnace seemed to sense something as they automatically separated. Without burning Zhou Wen’s palm, they revealed the stone saber in the furnace.

Zhou Wen held the stone saber with his palm and immediately felt the roughness unique to stone. It was a little cold to the touch. He had clenched it firmly.

I gripped it. The stone saber really exists in real life! Zhou Wen was alarmed.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 436 - Don“t Cry Valley

436 Don“t Cry Valley

The moment he gripped the stone saber, Zhou Wen immediately felt an ancient aura emitting from it. It left his mind reeling as he involuntarily clenched the hilt.

With a gentle tug, he began to pull out the stone saber. Zhou Wen immediately felt the whole of Guide Ancient City quake. Flames spewed out from the furnace, as though countless lives were roaring inside.

Zhou Wen’s expression changed slightly as he immediately pressed the stone saber back. Only then did the terrifying feeling vanish.

This stone saber… Don’t tell me it’s like the jade box on Chess Mountain… It’s an item that seals the dimensional zone? Zhou Wen released the stone saber, afraid to touch it.

Although he didn’t know the consequences of pulling out the stone saber, Zhou Wen chose not to touch it.

Only when he got off the Fire God Platform did Zhou Wen realize that something was amiss. The Skeleton Soldiers had been most common in Guide Ancient City with Skeleton Generals being in the minority.

Now, Zhou Wen saw more than ten Skeleton Generals nearby. He hadn’t seen them when he came in. Clearly, they had just appeared.

Indeed, there are effects from my pulling the stone saber. Zhou Wen continued walking out and discovered that there were indeed many Skeleton Generals.

It was already impressive enough to encounter one or two Skeleton Generals in Ancient City, but Zhou Wen ended up seeing more than fifty along the way. He had no idea how many he had missed.

The appearance of so many Skeleton Generals delighted the garrison. They were only able to kill Skeleton Soldiers most of the time, but now there were so many Skeleton Generals. The increased drop rates naturally excited them.

Zhou Wen was somewhat worried. Based on the present situation, if the dimensional zone's seal was removed, the situation would be worse than he imagined.

After returning to his old residence and staying the entire night, Zhou Wen set off for the Special Inspector Bureau's Primordial Crystal mine the next day.

The dimensional zone where the mine was located was named "Don't Cry Valley." Legend had it that it was a very beautiful valley with a young couple living in it. The woman planted flowers in the valley while the man went up the mountain to hunt. They led lives like an immortal couple.

Once, the man didn't return after heading up the mountain to hunt. The woman waited bitterly for his return, but he did not come back.

After that, the nearby villagers continued to hear the sobbing noises coming from the mountain valley. It almost never stopped.

Some of the villagers were bold and entered the valley in the day. Then, they realized that the woman had been dead for a long time. Her body had dried up and there was a knife in her abdomen. It looked like she had committed suicide.

The villagers buried the woman’s body and changed the name of the valley to Don’t Cry. They hoped that the woman could rest in peace and stop crying. However, they could still hear the female crying coming from the valley at night.

Of course, these were just legends. There was no crying inside Don’t Cry Valley, but ever since the dimensional storms, cries sounded from the valley, but it wasn’t from that woman.

Anyone who entered the valley would involuntarily cry. No matter how hard they tried, they couldn’t control themselves. If they went too deep, they would die for no reason amidst their crying.

The bureau had clearly grasped the secret of Don’t Cry Valley, so they could move about freely without being affected by the mysterious force.

However, the other factions had sent quite a number of people to find out the secret of Don’t Cry Valley and snatch the Primordial Crystal mine inside. They returned without any success and many people died.

This included the people from the An family. Only two survived Don’t Cry Valley, and it was thanks to them that the An family obtained the information.

Zhou Wen suspected that the sobbing power was similar to the power of a curse. Truth Listener was effective against curses. Therefore, Zhou Wen decided to try entering Don’t Cry Valley.

If he could really restrain Don’t Cry Valley’s powers he would have a chance of entering the Primordial Crystal mine.

Of course, Zhou Wen didn’t take the risk to enter. Firstly, Tyrant Behemoth hadn’t finished evolving. Secondly, he wanted to find the tiny palm symbol outside. If he could find it, he could give it a try in-game. That would bolster his confidence.

…

In the An family of Luoyang, An Tianzuo frowned at An Sheng and said, “What do you mean that you lost contact with the brat?”

“When he went to Guide Ancient City, he still remained in contact with me. However, after that, there was zero news. It’s been four days and there hasn’t been any news of him. He hasn’t returned to Luoyang or Guide City. There’s no news of him at Chess Mountain either,” An Sheng said.

“Then where is he?” An Tianzuo asked.

An Sheng pondered for a moment before saying, “Overseer, I think he might have gone to the bureau.”

“Nonsense. What can he do in the bureau? Does he really think that he can become an enemy of the bureau just because he killed Ják?” An Tianzuo placed the teacup on the table heavily.

An Sheng said with a bitter smile, “Young Master Wen might look gentle and mild-tempered as if he doesn’t care about anything. However, he’s extremely obstinate and unyielding like you. The bureau keeps bullying him, so Young Master Wen definitely won’t let them off. He asked me for

information regarding the bureau before. He must have gone to find trouble with them."

"What nonsense. Becoming arrogant and conceited just because of a little achievement? He really has an exaggerated opinion of his abilities. Does he think he's invincible just by killing a Ják?" An Tianzuo said angrily.

"Overseer, I don't think Young Master Wen is a rash person. I think he has his own ideas and he might really do something," An Sheng said.

"What can he do? Let's not talk about Shen Yuchi whom I have to be wary of. However, none of his four Censors are weaker than Ják. They are extremely difficult characters. It would be fine if he just wanted to vent his anger and kill a few of the lackeys, but if he really dares to head to the Special Inspector Bureau's headquarters, he will definitely die." An Tianzuo paused before saying, "If he only kills a few lackeys to vent his anger, he would be a stupid pig. Doing something like that won't help him at all. It will only make the bureau target him even more."

"Young Master Wen isn't a bloodthirsty person. He naturally wouldn't kill someone to vent his anger." An Sheng thought to himself, It's probably you who likes to kill people, right?

"Humph, who knows what nonsense he will do? Bring him back," said An Tianzuo.

"Overseer, didn't you say that you don't care about him?" An Sheng asked.

"Of course I don't care about him. It's best if he's dead. I'm just afraid that he will be arrested alive by the bureau. Wouldn't that cause the one at home to flip?" An Tianzuo

glared at An Sheng and said, “Go immediately. No matter what you do, you have to bring him back.”

“Yes, I’ll head to the capital immediately,” An Sheng replied.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 437 - True Blood Demon Dragon

437 True Blood Demon Dragon

Shen Yuchi had been in a bad mood recently. One of the officers in the bureau had betrayed the bureau and stolen many secret files.

The secret files contained some of the Special Inspector Bureau’s operations, but these operations were held to target certain members of the six families. The exposure of these secret files immediately made the bureau become a public target.

The bureau was originally the watchdog for the six families. For it to attempt to bite its master, the outcome was palpable.

Shen Yuchi was already in a terrible fix. The only thing he could rejoice about was that the inspector’s rank wasn’t high enough. The files he had stolen were only a very small part of the collective, and it did not involve any core secrets.

Although the file only contained some of the less important members of the six families, Shen Yuchi was still being questioned and forced to explain to the six families. For this, the bureau had also paid a huge price.

The Cape family, who Liz was part of, provided huge amounts of financial aid to the bureau every year. In fact, the six families gave the Special Inspector Bureau the same amount of funding, but this funding was cut by all six families just before the transfer was supposed to be made.

Although the excuses used were different, Shen Yuchi knew very well that this was just a small warning from them.

It wasn’t just that. Some of the inspectors who investigated the six families had also encountered some problems. Although no one had died, Shen Yuchi knew that it wouldn’t be so simple if something like this happened again.

An Tianzuo, your revenge came really quickly. Shen Yuchi had already guessed who had done all this. Apart from An Tianzuo, there was no one else.

Even Ják had failed. This An family is getting more and more thorny. Just as Shen Yuchi was deep in thought about what to do next, he heard a knock on the door.

“Director-General, Northern Ice City has already agreed to our deal. This is the schedule of prices they offered.” The secretary handed a document to Shen Yuchi.

Shen Yuchi carefully looked at the schedule of prices and frowned. “Why is it 30% more expensive than what we discussed previously?”

“Northern Ice City said that the Aurora Pith produced on their side has been decreasing, so they want to increase the prices. This is the lowest price they can accept,” the secretary said helplessly.

“What do they mean by decreasing? It’s clear they know that we are urgently in need of Aurora Pith. It’s just an exorbitant demand.” Shen Yuchi snorted coldly, but he felt somewhat helpless.

He had to obtain the Aurora Pith. It was needed for the advancement of Mythical Companion Beasts, so he had to obtain it no matter how expensive it was. After the

Companion Beast advanced, it would be the most powerful trump card in the bureau’s hands. This was a huge matter that couldn’t be delayed.

However, the bureau’s current financial situation was terrible. They had originally been hoping for the funding from the six families, but now that the funding had been cut, it would be difficult for the bureau to operate normally, much less buy the expensive Aurora Pith.

It looks like we can only use the Primordial Crystals in the reserves. After much thought, Shen Yuchi could only come up with this solution.

The quantity of the Primordial Crystal mine in the Special Investigation Bureau exceeded everyone’s imagination. Even Shen Yuchi didn’t expect such a massive amount of reserves when he first started mining.

However, Shen Yuchi was not in a hurry to cash out the Primordial Crystal mine. Every year, he only sold a few tons. As for the large number of Primordial Crystal ores, they were stored in the warehouse under the mine.

If he were to take out all the Primordial Crystal Ores, the future bureau wouldn’t have to worry about funding for decades.

Of course, Shen Yuchi would definitely not let anyone know that the Special Inspector Bureau had such a large sum of wealth. Even the six families thought that the Primordial Crystal mine was only an ordinary mine.

“Continue discussing with Northern Ice City. Try to lower the price as much as possible.” Shen Yuchi said to his secretary.

Even though he had money, he definitely couldn’t waste it. Those Primordial Crystals would be of great use in the future. Unless it was a last resort, Shen Yuchi didn’t want to use a single ounce.

“Yes, Director-General,” the secretary replied.

Shen Yuchi picked up the investigation report from Luoyang and read it for a while. He couldn’t help but frown and say, “Even Ják couldn’t bring Zhou Wen back from the An family, so who should I send?”

For a moment, Shen Yuchi was unable to think of a good candidate. It was even more difficult to get someone from the uncrowned king of Luoyang—the An family.

He had imagined that Ják would be able to resolve this matter, but Ják had failed.

“Let’s think about it carefully again.” Shen Yuchi had no intention of giving up. Although Ják had failed, Wang Mingyuan’s matter was very important. The six families had given him an order that had to be obeyed, so he had to investigate it thoroughly no matter what. Even if he was willing to give up, the six families wouldn’t.

Zhou Wen slumped over a hill’s peak as he observed the valley not far away with his binoculars.

The valley was the legendary valley—Don’t Cry Valley. From the outside, the entrance wasn’t very big. It was probably enough for three to four trucks to pass.

There were checkpoints built, and patrolling details. However, these weren’t key. The patrols were carried out by ordinary inspectors who were only at the Legendary stage. It wouldn’t be difficult for him to charge into Don’t Cry Valley.

In fact, many people had rushed in before, but there weren’t many who left alive.

The bureau clearly didn’t focus the defense on the outside. The Primordial Crystal mine was likely their core defense. One of the four Censors, Cai Jin, was likely stationed there.

Zhou Wen wasn’t too familiar with Cai Jin, but the information An Sheng had given him had mentioned this person in detail. He kept a very low profile, the lowest amongst the four Censors. There wasn’t much information on him other than that he was good with the saber.

However, since Shen Yuchi was willing to hand over such an important Primordial Crystal mine to him, he could tell that this person was not simple.

Drones flew past from time to time, so Zhou Wen had to hide in the shadows as he continued observing the situation in Don’t Cry Valley.

The distance is still too far. I can’t see if there’s a tiny palm symbol there. I have to get closer. Zhou Wen thought for a moment and summoned Truth Listener. He hid in the grass of the peak and let it take a look.

Truth Listener was only the size of a finger—a relatively small target that the average person couldn’t see. Ordinary radar wouldn’t discover its existence.

Truth Listener quickly ran through the grass and forests, and soon, it approached the valley’s entrance. Zhou Wen’s order was to let it search for the tiny palm symbol. Truth Listener didn’t go anywhere near the checkpoint. Under the cover of the grass, it circled around the valley’s entrance but failed to discover anything.

Since I can’t find the tiny palm symbol, I have to go in myself to give it a try. Just as Zhou Wen was pondering how he should enter, his phone vibrated. Taking it out to take a look, he discovered a notification popped up in-game.

‘Killed a Mythical Creature, True Blood Dragon. Discovered Dimensional Crystal.’

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 438 - Demon Dragon True Body

Chapter 438 Demon Dragon True Body

True Blood Demon Dragon? What's that? Zhou Wen was first stunned for a second. When he realized what was happening, he was immediately overjoyed. He hurriedly took out his phone and entered the Zhuolu battlefield dungeon, controlling the blood-colored avatar to run towards the underground sea.

The crystal that the black dragon dropped won't be swallowed by the other black dragons, right? Zhou Wen was slightly worried, but he realized that it was a game, not reality. It was unlikely that the black dragons were that intelligent.

He ran to the underground sea and plunged in. Soon, he saw eight black dragons pulling the war wagon over. One of them was gone.

I wonder where the black dragon died? Zhou Wen felt a slight headache, but it was likely nearby.

Zhou Wen didn't dare let the blood-colored avatar die. If it died, whatever had dropped would be gone.

He controlled the blood-colored avatar to turn around and draw the eight black dragons out of the water surface. Then, he took them on a merry chase and led them to a spot close to the coast. Only then did he use teleportation to shake them off and circle back from another direction.

When Zhou Wen returned to the spot where he had encountered the eight dragons, he didn’t spend much time searching. He saw a treasure glow at the bottom of the sea. He dived over and saw a pearl that looked like a dragon pearl at the bottom of the sea. Inside the pearl was a black dragon’s shadow—it was a Primordial Energy Skill Crystal.

Zhou Wen didn’t have the time to look carefully when he obtained the Primordial Energy Skill Crystal. He first controlled the blood-colored avatar to leave the underground sea, in case he ended being chased by the eight dragons.

Now that he didn’t have the ability to teleport, it wouldn’t be easy for him to escape the eight dragons if he were to be entangled by them.

After returning to the bat cave, Zhou Wen carefully sized up the True Blood Demon Dragon’s Primordial Energy Skill Crystal.

True Blood Demon Dragon Crystal: Mythical

‘Requirement: Strength 40, Poison 21, Constitution-raising Life Providence, Constitution-raising Life Soul.’

I’ve already obtained 40 points of Strength. Although I don’t know why there’s a Poison stat requirement, it has also reached the requirement. I wonder if the Ancient Sovereign Sutra can be considered as a Constitution-raising Life Providence and Life Soul? Zhou Wen found a secluded cave and prepared to attempt it. He switched his Primordial Energy Art to the Ancient Sovereign Sutra before letting the Ancient Sovereign Life Soul fuse with him.

When Zhou Wen attempted to absorb the True Blood Demon Dragon Crystal again, the dragon pearl-like crystal

immediately emitted a blinding light. Wisps of black gas seeped out from the crystal and into the blood-colored avatar’s body.

Zhou Wen immediately felt a terrifying force roaring in his body as though it was about to rupture.

Soon, Zhou Wen realized that something was amiss. His muscles were expanding and his bones were growing as he grew taller in a short period of time. He was about two meters tall.

Furthermore, there were scales growing on his body. However, the scales weren’t black. Under the reflection of the Ancient Sovereign Body, the scales looked like blood crystals.

Zhou Wen felt his entire body ache, and the top of his head felt as though it was about to be pierced through. His spine hurt terribly as though a blade was slicing at his flesh.

Zhou Wen endured the pain until the crystal’s energy completely melted into his body. Only then did he feel a lot better. However, using the phone’s selfie camera function to take a look at himself, he realized that he was like a humanoid dragon. Apart from the lack of a dragon’s tail, he had grown horns on his head. Dragon fins had also grown on his back. His body was covered in scales too. He didn’t look like a person at all.

He hurriedly stopped the Primordial Energy Skill he had just acquired. Then, Zhou Wen felt his body deflate like a balloon. He immediately shrank to his original size as the dragon scales and dragon horns vanished from his body.

Only then did Zhou Wen heave a sigh of relief. He hurriedly looked at the stats in-game and saw that the game had

already popped up a notification: ‘Absorbed True Blood Demon Dragon Crystal. Attained Mythical Primordial Energy Skill—Demon Dragon True Body.’

Although it’s a Mythical Primordial Energy Skill, this image is a little too odd. Zhou Wen attempted to use the Demon Dragon True Body again and discovered that this Mythical Primordial Energy Skill could only be used when he used the Inverse Ancient Sovereign Life Soul. He couldn’t transform when using other Primordial Energy Arts.

After activating the Demon Dragon True Body, Zhou Wen looked at himself through the camera and couldn’t recognize that it was him. In the sun-like glow stood a blood-red humanoid dragon. As the light was too strong, he could only see a blood-colored human dragon’s silhouette. It looked odd no matter how he looked at it.

The Demon Dragon True Body lasted for about ten seconds before Zhou Wen found his Primordial Energy depleted as he automatically returned to human form.

The Ancient Sovereign Sutra doesn’t provide unlimited Primordial Energy. This Demon Dragon True Body can only last for about ten seconds. I wonder how powerful it is. Zhou Wen didn’t dare try it out in reality, so he returned to the game and first grinded some Primordial Energy Crystals to replenish his Primordial Energy before heading to the underground sea.

As he had restarted the game dungeon while grinding Primordial Energy Crystals, he once again encountered nine black dragons when he arrived at the underground sea.

Seeing the nine black dragons charge at him, Zhou Wen activated his Demon Dragon True Body before charging at

the nine black dragons in the form of a humanoid dragon that emitted terrifying light.

About ten seconds later, Zhou Wen felt as though he had become Superman. His body's Strength and Speed could actually clash head-on with the black dragon. He wasn't at a disadvantage at all. He was like a humanoid dragon.

Ten seconds later, Zhou Wen returned to his original form. It didn't take long before he was killed by the nine black dragons.

What a pity. If I could use Demon Dragon True Body while in Slaughterer state, I could storm into the bureau and destroy the bureau's headquarters, wiping out its existence. Zhou Wen felt full of regret.

However, ten seconds was enough for Zhou Wen to do a lot of things. He just couldn't use any other Primordial Energy Skills in that ten seconds. If his Primordial Energy was expended, the Demon Dragon True Body would automatically stop, preventing him from lasting even ten seconds.

It's not that I can't use the Demon Dragon True Body for long. I can just grind some Primordial Energy Crystals in-game. After the Demon Dragon True Body ends, I'll find a place to absorb Primordial Energy Crystals. However, in that case, I'll still need some buffer time. Zhou Wen was quite satisfied with the Demon Dragon True Body. Mythical Strength and Speed were as true as it got. Even if he didn't use any Primordial Energy Skills, he could easily kill an Epic creature with his Strength and Speed.

It's time to make that arrogant flower pay the price. Zhou Wen excitedly opened Chess Mountain's instance dungeon

and prepared to teach the flower a lesson. He wanted to find her weakness and never be bullied by her again.

As Tyrant Behemoth hadn’t successfully evolved, Zhou Wen could only hide in a cave and wait for it to complete its evolution before heading to the Don’t Cry Valley. He had nothing else to do other than gaming.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 439 - Returning to the Deer Terrace Pavilion

439 Returning to the Deer Terrace Pavilion

The blood-colored avatar came in front of Chess Mountain’s mountain cliff. Zhou Wen had nothing to be afraid of in-game. He straightened his back and summoned Overlord Sword. With one move, he slashed out with the Demonic Astral Wheel that went against the heavens. The blood-red light wheel of light immediately tore out and slashed at the flower on the mountain wall.

The flower petal silently fell. The Demonic Astral Wheel immediately shattered the petal upon impact.

Zhou Wen wanted to know what tricks the flower had up its sleeve when he suddenly saw the blood-colored avatar collapse to the ground. The game screen also went black.

Zhou Wen felt his body turn cold. Thankfully, he hadn’t had too much conflict with The Thearch; otherwise, he would already be a rotten corpse.

How did I die? I only saw a petal drop before dying, Zhou Wen thought to himself.

It was obvious that the flower’s power of wishes didn’t share the same system as curse-related powers, but it could also kill.

They clearly kill people the same way, so why wouldn’t the power of the wishes be restrained by the Evil Nullification Life Soul? Zhou Wen was somewhat depressed.

Dripping a drop of blood to revive, he came in front of Chess Mountain cliff. Zhou Wen used every attack technique he knew, as well as all sorts of Companion Beasts, but the outcome was the same.

As long as the flower dropped a petal, the blood-colored avatar would immediately die. There was no chance of survival.

Zhou Wen had also tried letting the Demonic Neonate attack with her ancient sword from a distance away, but before the ancient sword arrived, the petals fell and the blood-colored avatar collapsed to the ground once again. The game was over.

What kind of crappy flower is this? Does it give five others a chance? After Zhou Wen’s repeated deaths, he had the urge to smash his phone.

No matter how strong the other dimensional creatures were, he could at least see some possibilities. He couldn’t kill them now only because he lacked strength. When he had enough strength in the future, he naturally would have the chance to kill them.

However, this flower didn’t provide him any hope at all. If a petal fell, he would die no matter what.

Zhou Wen calmed down and began considering the problem regarding the flower.

It’s obvious that the flower in the game isn’t intelligent, much less capable of interacting with others. It’s just a

flower without any level of sentience. It will only react automatically when I attack it by dropping a petal. This is completely different from The Thearch I met in real life. Is it the difference between the game and reality? Or is there another reason? Zhou Wen had a nagging feeling that The Thearch wasn’t as simple as a flower. Perhaps this flower was only a tool The Thearch used to transmit her voice. The Thearch was actually someone else, but Zhou Wen didn’t know who or what she was.

He entered the game again and this time, Zhou Wen didn’t attack the flower. He attempted to ignore it before climbing up the mountain wall.

However, to his surprise, when Zhou Wen didn’t attack the flower, the flower wouldn’t attack him either. It continued growing silently on the mountain wall like an ordinary wildflower.

Zhou Wen already had experience climbing Chess Mountain, so he did the same in-game. It had an extremely powerful force that pulled at his body, making it extremely difficult to climb higher.

After struggling to reach the peak, he found a stone staircase that led to the top of the mountain just like in reality. There was a huge boulder that looked like a steam bun.

There was a snow-white jade box embedded in the center of the boulder. Zhou Wen controlled the blood-colored avatar to touch the jade box, but he failed. His palm passed through the jade box as though it was a phantom, not something real.

As expected. This jade box is similar to that stone saber. It suppresses dimensional zones, so it’s impossible to touch in-

game. It can only be obtained in real life. Although Zhou Wen was greedy, he knew that many people would be killed if a dimensional zone's restrictions were removed. He couldn't take it no matter what.

When he descended the mountain, Zhou Wen saw the flower on the mountain wall. Suddenly, an idea flashed in his mind. Previously, when The Thearch got me to enter Chess Mountain, I didn't go by the mountain pass, but a crack near the flower's roots. Could it be that this flower is the key to entering Chess Mountain? Is this a secret tunnel?

But how can I get the flower to open the passage to Chess Mountain for me? I wonder if begging it is useful? Zhou Wen thought to himself as he tried. After all, it didn't take much effort.

"Little Flower, the flower, can you help me open the path to Chess Mountain?" Zhou Wen asked the flower.

However, the flower didn't react at all. It didn't seem to have any intention of bothering with him.

It doesn't work? Zhou Wen thought of using the Void Flower. Since the two of them were flowers and might even be connected to each other, he decided to shout at the flower in the language that The Thearch had taught him. It meant: "Open!"

Rumble!

As a flower petal fell, the entire Chess Mountain shook. A mountain rift opened up near the flower's roots.

It really works... Then all those earlier deaths were for nothing. Zhou Wen was somewhat depressed.

However, when he thought of the mountain of high-valued crystals and the dozen or so Mythical Companion Eggs in Chess Mountain, Zhou Wen stopped worrying about it. He controlled the blood-colored avatar to rush in.

Everything was the same as when The Thearch led him in. Not long after, he arrived at the Deer Terrace Pavilion in the mountain belly.

Zhou Wen still followed the previous method and climbed down the mountain wall before jumping into the river and swimming towards Deer Terrace Pavilion.

After swimming for a while, he felt that something huge was approaching the blood-colored avatar. Zhou Wen was already experienced and didn't bother with it. However, very quickly, the red tentacles or water grass wrapped around him and pulled the blood-colored avatar into the river. Before Zhou Wen could do anything, the game screen went black.

Holy sh*t, what's going on? Zhou Wen felt depressed. He had done everything according to the previous method. However, without the bone flute in-game, there was no way for him to get the blood-colored avatar to bite the bone flute when entering the river. This was probably where the problem was.

Since the method doesn't work, I have to force my way in. Zhou Wen had no way of getting the bone flute into the game, so he had no choice but to give up on his previous path.

Summoning the stone armor, he held the Overlord Sword in his hand. He also wore the Truth Listener earring. With the banana fan in his other hand, he rode the White Shadow of Poison and flew towards Deer Terrace Pavilion.

Before he could get close, he saw a black gas rise up from the ancient building, condensing into the image of a black nine-tailed fox. It rested above the ancient building and its tail, condensed from nine black gases, was swaying. Its pair of demonic, enchanting eyes were staring at the blood-colored avatar.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 440 - Immortal

440 Immortal

Two beams shot out of the fox demon’s eyes and arrived in front of the blood-colored avatar in a blink of an eye. They were so unbelievably fast that Zhou Wen wasn’t given any time to react.

Zhou Wen subconsciously used Ghost Steps and dodged to the side. However, White Shadow of Poison didn’t react quickly enough. After the beam hit it, it immediately disintegrated and vanished.

What terrifying strength! Zhou Wen was alarmed as he saw the fox demon’s eyes constantly shoot out beams at the blood-colored avatar.

Zhou Wen was best at movement techniques, but under such speedy beams, dodging a few times quickly exhausted him. Desperate, he could only draw his sword and slash it at the fox demon’s eyes.

However, the beam didn’t seem corporeal as Overlord Sword’s sword beam pierced through the beam as it illuminated Zhou Wen and the Overlord Sword.

Zhou Wen watched the scene of Overlord Sword and the blood-colored avatar being disassembled into points of light before the game screen went black.

I’m afraid the fox demon’s gaze is about to reach the speed of light. How can it be dodged? Zhou Wen was somewhat

helpless. No matter how good his movement technique was, it was difficult for him to dodge.

From the looks of it, this won’t work. I can’t take the river path. The sky has the fox demon as an obstacle. I can’t afford to provoke any of them. Zhou Wen realized that he couldn’t enter Deer Terrace Pavilion.

Is there a way to enter? Zhou Wen suddenly recalled how he had looked at the stone wall inside Deer Terrace Pavilion and simulated a Primordial Energy Art known as the Demon God Bloodline Catalog. He wondered if it was of any use.

Dripping a drop of blood to revive, he entered Chess Mountain again. This time, since they were useless, Zhou Wen didn’t hold so many weapons. In fact, he decided not to take anything. All he did was switch his Primordial Energy Art to the Demon God Bloodline Catalog which he had gained basic mastery, one that didn’t even have a Life Providence.

After he was done, Zhou Wen hesitated for a moment before choosing to jump into the river.

After all, this was a path that he had taken once. If he were to take another path, he didn’t know what other problems he would encounter. If the Demon God Bloodline Catalog really worked, he could directly reach the place where the Mythical Companion Eggs were placed.

Just like the last time, the blood-colored avatar didn’t swim far before strange blood-colored tentacles appeared under the river. However, the blood-colored tentacles didn’t pull him into the water. They danced in the water like swaying seaweed.

Is the Demon God Bloodline Catalog really useful? Zhou Wen was delighted as he spread apart the tentacles and continued swimming forward. Soon, he arrived beside Deer Terrace Pavilion.

Surprisingly, nothing happened. Zhou Wen searched the left side of Deer Terrace Pavilion for quite some time, but he failed to find the hole that he had previously used to enter.

No way? That crappy hole isn’t in-game? Zhou Wen searched back and forth a few times. There was no mistake about it. There really wasn’t a hole there.

Left with no choice, Zhou Wen could only swim to the front of Deer Terrace Pavilion and climb up the stone stairs.

There were three levels to the foundation of Deer Terrace Pavilion. It was like a pyramid. Further up was the ancient building.

Previously, Zhou Wen had swum underwater. According to his estimates, after entering, he was probably at the bottom of the foundation.

There were no doors to the three levels. He could only walk up the stone stairs and reach the ancient building’s entrance.

While carefully controlling the blood-colored avatar, he nervously walked up the stone stairs. Although he had the Demon God Bloodline Catalog protecting him, it was only at basic mastery. It didn’t even have a Life Providence.

When Zhou Wen walked to the foundation at the bottom, he suddenly saw a mist spew out from the platform, transforming into many fairies and immortals that cast their gazes at the blood-colored avatar.

Zhou Wen’s heart skipped a beat. He saw that these fairies and immortals were rather beautiful, but he felt an indescribable seduction. He thought of the demoness in the legend who summoned many demon spirits who could transform their appearances. They disguised themselves as immortals to drink with the tyrant.

Although they were only demon spirits, they were all figures in myths and legends. It wasn’t impossible for them to have strength at the Mythical stage.

The fairies and immortals looked at the blood-colored avatar and sized him up before ignoring him. They held alcohol flasks and glasses as they focused on drinking. There were even fairies dancing as they drank. Their dancing styles were tacky.

This Demon God Bloodline Catalog is actually so useful. Doesn’t that mean that I can freely enter dimensional zones in the future without needing to worry about being attacked? Zhou Wen thought to himself, but he didn’t stop walking. He continued walking up the stairs.

When he arrived at the second floor of the foundation’s platform, he saw many fairies and immortals. They were similar to the previous level—they only sized up the blood-colored avatar for a moment before ignoring him.

Zhou Wen walked up all the way to the third level’s platform, which was also the level where the ancient building was. He saw some more fairies and immortals, but the outcome was the same. No one paid him any attention.

Zhou Wen controlled the blood-colored avatar to walk towards the ancient building’s door. The door was open. He looked inside and saw six fairies and immortals drinking and enjoying themselves. However, they were different from the

ones outside. They sat on both sides of the hall. Each of them had a short table in front of them. On the table were fine wine, fruits, and delicacies.

The moment the blood-colored avatar entered the hall, a fairy sitting close to the door looked at him. With just a glance, her expression changed as she shot out a rainbow beam.

No good! I've been discovered! Zhou Wen dodged and retreated, but the rainbow beam kept chasing after him like it had a life of its own. It drew an arc in the air like a rainbow.

Zhou Wen continuously changed directions and dodged a few times, but he was ultimately caught up by the rainbow beam. Helpless, he could only draw his sword and slash at it.

Boom!

The Overlord Sword struck ruthlessly. The rainbow-colored beam was actually cleaved apart by the Overlord Sword. However, the blood-colored avatar's body was sent flying as it tumbled down the stone steps.

As such, the concealment from before had also lost its effect. The fairies and immortals on the platform charged ferociously at the blood-colored avatar.

Realizing that he was exposed, Zhou Wen didn't hide anything. He switched back to the Lost Immortal Sutra and took out his banana fan. He fanned at the charging assailants.

Boom!

The sky was filled with immortals as they were sent flying by the fan. They either slammed into the wall or fell to the

ground. They spat out mouthfuls of blood and looked seriously injured. Some of them directly revealed their true bodies. Most of them were foxes, night cats, pheasants, etc.

So these guys aren’t at the Mythical stage. Zhou Wen was relieved as he fanned the fake fairies and immortals.

After sending them flying everywhere, some died upon hitting Deer Terrace Pavilion.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 441 - Tyrant“s Evolution Completed

441 Tyrant“s Evolution Completed

‘Killed Epic creature, Ancient Tomb Fox Demon. Discovered Dimensional Crystal.’

‘Killed Epic creature, Three-Eyed Cat Demon. Discovered Dimensional Crystal.’

‘Killed Epic creature, Ancient Tomb Fox Demon…’

Matching the banana fan with Slaughterer’s infinite Primordial Energy, his ability to kill en masse was virtually unparalleled at creatures his level. After fanning a few times, he killed many fake fairies and immortals.

Zhou Wen saw the dimensional crystals that dropped and was about to pick them up when he saw a rainbow beam fly down. It was none other than the fairy sitting at the end of the grand hall.

Zhou Wen struck out with a Grand Yin Wind at the fairy. With a wave of her hand, a rainbow beam met the Grand Yin Wind, diverting it aside.

Zhou Wen immediately knew that the fairy was most likely at the Mythical stage. Although the Grand Yin Wind was strong, it wasn’t at the Mythical stage yet. He would definitely be at a disadvantage against a Mythical creature.

Zhou Wen turned around and ran down the stairs. The fairy chased after him as she released rainbow beams with both hands. They combined into a single rainbow beam that

enveloped the blood-colored avatar like thousands of rays of light. The colorful rays seemed to have a life of their own, so no matter how Zhou Wen dodged, they continued chasing him.

The colorful light came from all directions and Zhou Wen had no room to move. He gritted his teeth and switched to the Ancient Sovereign Sutra. At the same time, he used the Demon Dragon True Body to fend off the rainbow beams with his powerful physique.

Boom!

The rainbow beams landed on Zhou Wen, causing him to feel like he had been struck by hammers. However, the rainbow beams failed to tear through the scales on the blood-colored avatar's body. Instead, they shattered.

What an amazing Demon Dragon True Body! Zhou Wen was overjoyed as he pounced at the fairy like a beast.

The fairy's body phased away, leaving behind afterimages. At the same time, it constantly emitted rainbow beams from her hands. Although the Demon Dragon True Body wasn't afraid of the rainbow beams, he was repelled every time. He failed to approach her.

Seeing that time for his Demon Dragon True Body was running out, Zhou Wen turned and ran downstairs.

The fairy chased after him and constantly attacked. However, after Zhou Wen left the third level and returned to the foundation's second level, she didn't chase after him again and returned to the ancient building.

The fake fairies and immortals on the second level charged forward. Although Zhou Wen's time in his Demon Dragon

True Body had run out due to having zero Primordial Energy, he wasn’t afraid of them. He switched back to Slaughterer and his Primordial Energy immediately returned to full.

Combining the Overlord Sword with Transcendent Flying Immortal, he killed all the fairies and immortals that rushed at him.

Zhou Wen realized that no matter how he killed on the second level, the dimensional creatures inside the palace didn’t come out.

I can’t enter the palace, but it’s not a bad idea to grind these Epic creatures. Zhou Wen summoned the baby tiger and killed all the fairies and immortals on the second and first levels. A few dimensional crystals dropped, along with one Primordial Energy Skill Crystal.

Zhou Wen didn’t head back up to the third level. He couldn’t even deal with a single demoness. There were five of them inside, so it was useless even if he went up.

Could The Thearch be one of the six demons in the hall? Zhou Wen thought.

Zhou Wen hid in the cave and kept grinding. Although the demons who pretended to be fairies and immortals at Deer Terrace Pavilion weren’t very capable, the dimensional crystals they dropped weren’t bad. High-valued dimensional crystals would often drop, so Zhou Wen took the opportunity to raise his various stats.

‘Tyrant Behemoth has succeeded in evolving to the Epic stage.’

After two days of grinding, Zhou Wen suddenly saw a notification appear in-game. He couldn’t help but feel

delighted.

It’s finally done! Zhou Wen hurriedly opened the Companion Beast column. Among the Epic Companion Beasts, there was indeed Tyrant Behemoth.

In the game, he summoned Tyrant Behemoth and saw a majestic black monster appear on the game’s screen. He couldn’t tell how big it was in-game, but when he compared to the blood-colored avatar, he realized that the blood-colored avatar was only the size of its palm. This fellow was like a small mountain.

I wonder how much this fellow will eat in the future. Can I really afford it? Zhou Wen thought to himself.

Looking at the Tyrant Behemoth’s stats, Zhou Wen immediately threw away his worries.

Tyrant Behemoth: Epic (Evolvable)

Life Providence: Extreme Strength

Life Soul: Violence Crown

Strength: 41

Speed: 41

Constitution: 41

Primordial Energy: 41

Talent Skill: Mountain Consuming

Companion Form: Boxing Glove

It’s finally at the Epic stage. It’s time to begin operations. Zhou Wen switched off his phone and walked out of the cave. He sneaked in the direction of Don’t Cry Valley in the darkness.

Unfortunately, Ják’s Companion Egg hadn’t grown. Otherwise, with Ják’s shadow escape ability, he would have been able to enter Don’t Cry Valley without a sound.

Now, Zhou Wen had to force his way in.

Thankfully, the bureau didn’t place its key defenses here. It wasn’t difficult to charge in. The mysterious force in Don’t Cry Valley that made people cry was the best defensive barrier.

Zhou Wen wore the Mutated Stone Chi armor and wrapped his entire body inside. Without even showing his face, he switched to his Godfiend Life Providence and charged at a checkpoint.

The personnel from the bureau saw a figure fly over. Before they could react, it flashed past the checkpoint and disappeared into Don’t Cry Valley. They almost thought they were seeing things.

“I think something rushed in, right?” One of the inspectors looked at another inspector and asked with uncertainty.

“It seems so. I didn’t see it clearly.” Another inspector wasn’t too sure either.

“Should we report it?”

“Let’s take a look at the surveillance cameras.”

The two of them checked the surveillance footage and slowed down many times before they saw a person wearing stone armor rush into Don’t Cry Valley.

“Quickly report to the Censor.” The two quickly sent people into Don’t Cry Valley to report to Cai Jin.

After Zhou Wen rushed into the valley, the Truth Listener earring on his ear began to heat up. At the same time, a surge of Primordial Energy surged into his body, delighting him. This meant that the Truth Listener earring had shown its effects. Don’t Cry Valley wasn’t a dangerous land for him.

He scanned his surroundings before flying in a certain direction.

As no one reached the Primordial Crystal mine alive, Zhou Wen didn’t know its exact location. All he could do was search the valley.

In the large valley, there were bamboo forests everywhere. After the wind blew through the bamboo forest, there was a rustling sound. It sounded very strange.

Although it didn’t look big from the outside, the valley’s space became huge after it had become a dimensional zone. In the endless bamboo forest, Zhou Wen rapidly moved in search of the possible location of the Primordial Crystal mine.

The deeper he ventured into the valley, the more Primordial Energy surged into his eyes. Clearly, the mysterious force was gradually strengthening. However, to the Truth Listener earring, the mysterious force became beneficial, allowing Zhou Wen to replenish his Primordial Energy even when he used other Primordial Energy Arts.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 442 - Tunneling

Chapter 442 Tunneling

The interference in Don’t Cry Valley prevented all kinds of equipment from working normally. Zhou Wen wasn’t worried about cameras here, but he still needed to pay attention to things like Companion Beasts.

Some people liked to use worms, mosquitoes, and other Companion Beasts for reconnaissance purposes, making them harder to defend against than electronic equipment. This was because few people would notice them so they were especially useful in dimensional zones.

Zhou Wen used the Truth Listener earring to pay attention to every movement around him, to ensure that any dimensional creatures could be discovered the moment they appeared.

Suddenly, Zhou Wen sensed the existence of a dimensional creature. It was a green bamboo viper. It was sprawled on a bamboo joint, sharing the same color as the bamboo leaves, making it difficult for ordinary people to discover its existence.

However, the Truth Listener earring had discovered its existence from afar. Zhou Wen didn’t know if the bamboo viper was a native dimensional creature of Don’t Cry Valley or it was manually placed there.

Regardless of which one it was, Zhou Wen didn’t plan on alerting it. He circled around it and continued deeper into the bamboo forest without letting it discover him.

Zhou Wen found quite a number of dimensional creatures along the way. He circled around them without alerting any of them. He hoped that he was heading in the right direction.

As he walked forward, more and more dimensional creatures appeared. There were bamboo vipers, mantises that resembled withered leaves, and a frog hiding in the fallen leaves. These Companion Beasts weren’t very powerful, but they were distributed very regularly. It was difficult for one to dodge their line of sight no matter where one went.

Zhou Wen wasted a lot of time to circle around these dimensional creatures. After passing through the bamboo forest, he saw a building resembling a blockhouse erected on the mountain wall.

It was obvious that the building was man-made. It was highly likely to be the entrance to the Primordial Crystal mine.

However, there was only one entrance without any windows. It was completely sealed. If one wanted to rush in, one had to break open the door and clash with the people from the bureau.

This was the economic lifeline of the bureau. It had one of the four Censors, Cai Jin, guarding it. According to An Sheng, Cai Jin was as strong as Ják.

With the help of other Epic experts, and with them having the terrain advantage, Zhou Wen didn’t think it was a good idea to forcefully barge in.

After observing the surrounding terrain, Zhou Wen infiltrated from another side of the canyon and found a low depression. He summoned Tyrant Behemoth.

The Epic Tyrant Behemoth was more than ten meters tall. It was like a small black mountain. In reality, it felt majestic and terrifying when he looked at it. He felt like it could pierce through a mountain with a single punch.

“Tyrant, can you dig diagonally down in that direction? Be careful not to make too much noise.” Zhou Wen pointed in the direction of the mine.

Tyrant Behemoth could devour extremely hard Primordial Crystal ores, so it shouldn’t be a problem for it to deal with ordinary rocks.

Tyrant Behemoth took action after hearing the order. It lowered its head to the ground, and the two horns on its head spun like a huge drill, tearing open a huge hole.

Zhou Wen saw mud splatter and hurriedly crawled in behind Tyrant Behemoth. Tyrant Behemoth was like a super drilling vehicle that violently drilled through rocks and kept proceeding underground.

As there was nowhere to dispose of the rock and mud, the back of the tunnel was quickly blocked, just leaving a space slightly bigger than Tyrant Behemoth.

The place Zhou Wen had chosen was still more than a thousand meters from the entrance to the mine. He was originally worried that Tyrant Behemoth would take too long to enter, but he had clearly underestimated Tyrant Behemoth’s strength.

This was a fellow who was known to be able to eat a thousand mountains every day. Although it hadn’t advanced to the Mythical stage and couldn’t eat a mountain, it wasn’t difficult for it to dig a hole.

After following Tyrant Behemoth for more than an hour, Zhou Wen guessed that he should have arrived at a stop under the mine, but he hadn’t seen any Primordial Crystal ores appear.

Strange, why haven’t I seen any Primordial Crystal ores? Logically speaking, if there’s a mine here, I should be able to see Primordial Crystal ores nearby. Why aren’t there any? Zhou Wen found it odd.

Crack!

As he was thinking, he heard the sound of rocks cracking above him. He looked over and saw that there were several cracks above the tunnel that Tyrant Behemoth had dug open. There was faint light passing through the cracks.

But for some reason, Tyrant Behemoth didn’t advance further. It looked up at the cracks.

Eh! Could it be that Tyrant Behemoth went too deep down and missed the mining area? Zhou Wen made Tyrant Behemoth stop. He stood on Tyrant Behemoth’s body and leaned close to the crack to take a look inside. There was light inside, but all he could see was the ceiling.

Using Truth Listener’s ability, a huge warehouse appeared in Zhou Wen’s mind. Rows of metal chests were placed inside.

The entire warehouse was around a thousand square meters. There were plenty of metal chests in there.

This place… Could it be their warehouse to store the Primordial Crystal ores? Zhou Wen’s heart stirred as he carefully observed using Truth Listener’s powers. He soon discovered that there were quite a number of mini Companion Beasts hidden in the warehouse. One of them, a

cricket-like Companion Beast, was staring at the crack as though it had sensed something.

Zhou Wen knew that he couldn’t alarm them; otherwise, Cai Jin and the other inspectors would immediately be alarmed. After some thought, he summoned some Blood Threadworms.

These Blood Threadworms were obtained from the Zhuolu battlefield. They were finer than hair. It was very difficult to notice a few of them with the naked eye.

He let the Blood Threadworm crawl into the warehouse and carefully approach the Companion Beast in the warehouse before letting them burrow into their bodies.

The Companion Beasts were ordered by their owners to remain motionless. This made it easier for Zhou Wen to take action. The Blood Threadworms crawled into their bodies and immediately affected their nerves. Although they wouldn’t immediately die, they fell into a state of dementia.

Without any hesitation, Zhou Wen got Tyrant Behemoth to drill a huge hole into the warehouse. The man and pet crawled inside.

Zhou Wen raised his hand and chopped open a metal chest’s lock. He lifted the lid and immediately, a blinding light emitted from the box. All the boxes were filled with Primordial Crystals.

Holy sh*t, aren’t there thousands of metal chests in this warehouse? If the items inside are all Primordial Crystals… Zhou Wen didn’t dare imagine what would happen. As for Tyrant Behemoth, he was already salivating at the box of Primordial Energy Crystals that Zhou Wen had opened.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 443 - Let Loose and Ea

443 Let Loose and Ea

“Eat. Let loose and eat. Eat however much you can.” Zhou Wen ordered Tyrant Behemoth.

Tyrant Behemoth let out a roar and swallowed the chest of Primordial Crystals that Zhou Wen had opened with a single mouthful. After chewing a few times, it swallowed it. It wasn’t afraid of indigestion.

The Tyrant Behemoth didn’t even look. It opened its mouth and bit down on the metal chests one by one, then chewed them to pieces. Its crushing bite was simply too astonishing. It ate metal and Primordial Crystal was like it was eating jelly beans.

Zhou Wen didn’t idle either. He opened the boxes and saw that they were filled with Primordial Energy Crystals. He directly put them into his Chaos Bead, throwing chest after chest in.

These were all worth money. Zhou Wen was used to being poor, so he had never seen so many valuables before. He just kept moving them into his Chaos Bead.

It wasn’t that he had never seen anything good, but all the good things were in-game. He couldn’t take them out no matter how good they were. These Primordial Crystals were good stuff that could be used in the real world. He could also sell them for a good price. He didn’t have to waste time grinding for any Companion Eggs or Primordial Energy Skill Crystals.

Now that he had money, he could buy them directly.

Previously, Zhou Wen didn’t know that there were so many Primordial Crystals stored here. He imagined that he would need to get Tyrant Behemoth to dig for ores, but to his surprise, the bureau had already dug them out and placed them there in chests.

If he had known this would happen, Zhou Wen would have come long ago. Why would he need to wait for Tyrant Behemoth to evolve? He could have emptied the area alone.

Tyrant Behemoth ate one chest after another while Zhou Wen moved chests into his chaos space. Both of them were busy at work.

Zhou Wen suddenly thought of a famous saying from a great person, “The people of labor are the most glorious.”

Zhou Wen didn’t know how many chests he had stored in the Chaos Bead. In any case, apart from the ones he had moved into the Chaos Bead, the remaining were devoured by Tyrant Behemoth. He didn’t know what its stomach was made of, but after eating nearly a thousand boxes of Primordial Crystals, its stomach didn’t even swell up at all.

Seeing Tyrant Behemoth looking at him longingly, Zhou Wen subconsciously tightened his grip on his Chaos Bead. Then, he looked at Tyrant Behemoth and said, “This is a Primordial Crystal mine. There must be many more unmined deposits of Primordial Crystal ores outside. Let’s head out and eat the ones outside. You can eat as much as you want.”

Tyrant Behemoth seemed to understand what Zhou Wen was getting at. His eyes were as bright as light bulbs. With a roar, he slammed his head against the ground.

No matter how excited you are, you shouldn’t be hitting your head? Foodies really lack brains, Zhou Wen thought.

However, to his surprise, Tyrant Behemoth crashed into the ground of the warehouse. The horns on his head spun, opening a huge hole in the rock before burrowing down.

Zhou Wen hurriedly followed it. Tyrant Behemoth drilled for some time before it suddenly widened its mouth. It began to directly bite down on the rocks. Only then did Zhou Wen realize that the surrounding rocks had already shown signs of Primordial Crystal ores. They looked like sparkling stars.

Zhou Wen had never seen Tyrant Behemoth use the Mountain Consuming skill in combat. Now, he had truly witnessed it for himself. The skill wasn’t used for fighting, but for eating.

Tyrant Behemoth’s mouth was like a black hole as it swallowed the rocks mixed with the Primordial Crystal ores. It was like a miniature black hole.

Zhou Wen was already satisfied with obtaining so many Primordial Crystals, so he allowed Tyrant Behemoth to devour the Primordial Crystal ores.

Shen Yuchi was currently in Cai Jin’s office. The Primordial Crystal mine was the economic lifeline of the bureau. Shen Yuchi had told Cai Jin that no one could take a piece of the Primordial Crystals from here without him being here in person.

In order to purchase the Aurora Pith, he had to use some of the Primordial Crystals in the reserves. It just scratched the surface of the reserves, so Shen Yuchi was not worried about any future financial problems.

With the Primordial Crystal mine backing him, even if he couldn’t obtain any funding for ten years, the bureau could still lead a comfortable life. Furthermore, the six families definitely wouldn’t stop funding the bureau next year. After all, many descendants of the six families were working there. Even if he didn’t want their money, they would definitely give it to him in the future.

“Cai Jin, it’s been hard on you to guard the Primordial Crystal mine for all these years.” Shen Yuchi had always thought highly of Cai Jin. Although he wasn’t the most powerful of the four Censors, he was the most reliable one. He was meticulous and had been guarding the Primordial Crystal mine for so many years without any mistakes. He was very cautious and professional.

“Director-General, you’re too polite. This is simply my job,” Cai Jin said in neither a supercilious nor obsequious manner. He knew Shen Yuchi’s temper. If he acted overly proud and arrogant, it would probably earn Shen Yuchi’s displeasure.

“Yes. Wait for another two years and the position of deputy director-general will be open. I plan to recommend you to take over the position,” Shen Yuchi said.

“Thank you for your grooming.” Cai Jin was truly happy.

The four Censors were very famous, but in fact, they were working under Shen Yuchi. However, becoming the deputy director-general was different. That put him in the ranks of having actual authority.

Just as Shen Yuchi was about to say something, an inspector suddenly knocked on the door and entered. He reported, “Sir, there’s news from the guards at the canyon entrance that someone has infiltrated Don’t Cry Valley.”

“Do you know who it is?” Cai Jin’s expression didn’t change much. Over the years, various factions had sent many people to try to pry into the situation of the Primordial Crystal mine, but all of them failed. He had seen such situations aplenty.

“I don’t know. That person was too fast and they weren’t able to see him clearly. However, the surveillance camera captured the person. They printed the photo and brought it here.” As he spoke, the inspector handed a few photos to Cai Jin.

After Cai Jin received them, he directly handed them to Shen Yuchi with both hands. With Shen Yuchi around, he naturally had to let him see them first.

Shen Yuchi looked at the photos and saw that the person was covered in stone-like armor. He couldn’t see his face clearly at all. However, the stone armor looked a little familiar to him, but he couldn’t recall where he had seen it before.

“Cai Jin, what’s your take?” Shen Yuchi pushed the photo in front of Cai Jin. He still trusted him immensely.

After taking a look at the picture, Cai Jin couldn’t tell who the person was, but he didn’t panic either. He said with a smile, “I’ve planted a lot of Companion Beasts in the bamboo forest. Those Companion Beasts were dimensional creatures that dropped in Don’t Cry Valley. They aren’t influenced by its mysterious powers. They are also difficult for the average person to notice. Even if someone discovers a few, it’d be impossible to find all three hundred of them. As long as a Companion Beast discovers them, I’ll sense them and be able to confirm his location. Now, none of the Companion Beasts have reacted, it means that the person

hasn’t gone deep into the bamboo forest. Or should I say, he might have already died under the mysterious forces of Don’t Cry Valley.”

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 444 - Vomiting Blood

444 Vomiting Blood

Shen Yuchi was very satisfied with Cai Jin’s answer, but he still said calmly, “What if the enemy can pass through the bamboo forest and reach the mine?”

“Don’t worry, Director-General. The mine also has many stone-type Companion Beasts planted. They aren’t easily discovered. Needless to say in the warehouse, the Companion Beasts that are planted there were personally selected by me. They have extremely powerful concealment and reconnaissance abilities. Furthermore, their spots are adjusted every week to prevent any problems from arising,” said Cai Jin.

“Good.” Shen Yuchi was very satisfied with Cai Jin’s answer.

The most important aspect when working for the bureau was to be meticulous. If any oversight were to happen, even a small problem might result in a chain reaction that would cause great trouble.

Just by looking at Cai Jin’s layout of the mine cave, he knew that this person was very meticulous. He was, indeed, of good caliber.

“Endure another two years. Then in two years, we’ll conquer the world together,” Shen Yuchi patted Cai Jin on the shoulder and said.

Cai Jin respectfully said, “Your humble servant is willing to follow you for life, Director-General.”

“Heh.” Shen Yuchi did not comment. Instead, he smiled and patted Cai Jin on the shoulder. “Let’s go. Let’s go to the warehouse to get some Primordial Crystals. The purchase of the Aurora Pith is very important, so we have to use the reserves.”

Cai Jin led the way and as they walked he asked, “Director-General, can the Aurora Pith really advance the Holy Light Angel to the Mythical stage?”

Shen Yuchi nodded and said, “Those experts have already verified it many times. As long as there’s sufficient Aurora Pith, there’s an 80% chance that the Holy Light Angel can advance to the Mythical stage.”

“It will be great if it succeeds. Our bureau will have an additional trump card. We will no longer need to take into account the whims and wants of those families,” said Cai Jin.

“Don’t speak nonsense. Our bureau is a subordinate organization under the Senate. We naturally have to obey orders from our superiors. Besides, it’s only a Mythical Companion Beast. Do you really think that it can compete with them?” Shen Yuchi said indifferently.

“I apologize for my words, but they’re ultimately words of hope,” said Cai Jin.

“The Primordial Crystal mine is our only hope. With it, we can exchange crystals for the resources we need. In the future, we will have a chance to nurture Mythical Companion Beasts. Watch it carefully. This is our lifeblood,” Shen Yuchi said seriously.

“Don’t worry, we will prevail with the mine in existence.” Cai Jin issued a military order.

Just as Shen Yuchi was about to say something, he saw an inspector running over in a panic.

“What are you so flustered about? What did I teach you?” Cai Jin frowned and reprimanded the inspector.

Shen Yuchi hated people who were so flustered when they encountered something. Usually, Cai Jin didn’t see his subordinates being so crude. However, he had shown his fluster with Shen Yuchi around. Wouldn’t that make Shen Yuchi think that he was incompetent at handling his subordinates?

The inspector did not calm down because of Cai Jin’s reprimand. He continued speaking in a panic. “Sir, something happened in the mine.”

“What happened?” Cai Jin’s heart skipped a beat. He suddenly had a bad feeling that something bad had happened—precisely when Shen Yuchi was here.

“The lower levels of the mine have collapsed. The mine below is blocked. Our men can’t head down. We don’t know what’s going on below.” The inspector gave a summary of the situation.

“A large-scale collapse?” Cai Jin breathed a sigh of relief. If it was just a collapse, it wouldn’t be a serious problem. At most, he could just spend some time digging it out.

“Get the men to fortify the mine before digging out the collapsed area to see what’s going on,” Cai Jin instructed.

Cai Jin made the necessary arrangements before turning around to speak to Shen Yuchi. “Director-General, let’s head to the warehouse first.”

Shen Yuchi nodded and continued walking towards the warehouse with Cai Jin. He was quite satisfied with Cai Jin’s way of handling things. The unexpected always happened and there was no lack of accidents. As long as he had the ability to handle it, it was fine.

Very quickly, the two of them passed through many checkpoints and arrived outside the warehouse. The door could only be opened when both Cai Jin and Shen Yuchi were around.

“Director-General, after you.” Cai Jin opened the door and gestured for him to enter.

However, before Shen Yuchi could enter, his gaze landed on the warehouse and his expression immediately changed.

“Cai Jin, what’s going on?” Demanded Shen Yuchi with an extremely livid expression. He glared at Cai Jin with a ferocious gaze.

“What do you mean?” Cai Jin looked into the warehouse and was stunned.

The warehouse was originally full of rows of metal chests, but none of them could be seen. The huge warehouse was empty except for two huge holes on the ground.

“Director-General… I really don’t know what’s going on… The Companion Beasts that are planted here are still there… Why wasn’t there any reaction? I even saw them through the observation hole yesterday… The Primordial Crystals were all here…” Cai Jin stammered.

He knew that he was in big trouble. These Primordial Crystals could be said to be the entire assets of the Special Inspector Bureau. Now that more than a thousand chests of Primordial Crystals were gone. That was a serious fault.

Shen Yuchi wore a sullen expression and didn't say anything. His figure moved like a shadow as he entered the warehouse and stepped into one of the holes. A sword beam shot out from his finger, splitting apart the rubble in the hole as he rushed deep inside.

Cai Jin reacted and followed after him. When he caught up with Shen Yuchi, the scene in front of him left him stunned.

The massive underground Primordial Crystal mine had a huge space dug out by something. It was as if the mountain had been emptied out. Only a few rocks supported the upper layer, while the other Primordial Crystal ores were gone. This area was obviously an area that had been explored by them. It was the area with the largest deposits.

"No… Impossible…" Seeing that the top floor was collapsing, and how rocks kept falling from above, Cai Jin was dumbfounded. Such a massive endeavor would take at least a year to complete even if he were to poach Epic experts to be miners.

However, if someone really went all out to dig for such a long time, it was impossible for him not to have noticed anything.

"Director-General… I… I really don't know anything…" Cai Jin felt his entire body turn cold. This was a terrible disaster. He didn't know how Shen Yuchi would deal with him.

Shen Yuchi ignored him as he stared intently at the collapsing underground hole. After a while, Shen Yuchi

suddenly opened his mouth and spat out a mouthful of blood. His face turned pale as he trembled.

“Director-General…” Cai Jin became alarmed. He hurriedly went forward to support Shen Yuchi.

At that moment, Zhou Wen had long left Don’t Cry Valley. He originally wanted Tyrant Behemoth to eat more and leave the Primordial Crystal mine with nothing. However, to his surprise, Tyrant Behemoth showed signs of evolving as he ate.

Zhou Wen was afraid that it would evolve in the mine and, since he could dig, he would be trapped when the time came. All he could do was get Tyrant Behemoth to dig him out again.

Not long after he entered the bamboo forest, Tyrant Behemoth began evolving. It had eaten too many Primordial Crystals and its body constantly emitted crystalline light, turning it into a Companion Egg state once again.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 445 - Not That Much

445 Not That Much

“Overseer, this matter is a little odd. Although we exposed those documents and dealt a certain blow to the bureau, the bureau seems to have gone mad recently. It’s like a rabid dog that’s biting people everywhere. Their reaction is much worse than we expected,” An Sheng said as he read the latest intelligence.

An Tianzuo was also looking at the information. He had similar views to An Sheng. It seemed odd that the bureau had gone to such great lengths.

An Sheng was about to say something when his phone suddenly rang. An Sheng looked at the caller ID and said to An Tianzuo, “The informer I left on campus says that Zhou Wen is back.”

An Sheng had previously gone to the capital but had failed to find Zhou Wen. He was certain that Zhou Wen hadn’t been there.

As he had no idea where Zhou Wen had gone. Without any leads, An Sheng had no choice but to return to Luoyang.

An Tianzuo looked at An Sheng without saying a word. An Sheng understood what An Tianzuo was getting at and answered the call.

After a while, An Sheng hung up and said to An Tianzuo, “Zhou Wen has returned. Should I call him and ask him?”

“That’s your business,” An Tianzuo said coldly.

An Sheng called Zhou Wen. “Young Master Wen, where have you been the past few days? Madam has been very worried about you.”

Zhou Wen thought for a moment and said, “I visited Don’t Cry Valley and got some things from there.”

He had caused too great a stir and Zhou Wen knew that he couldn’t hide it. Even if the bureau couldn’t figure out that he was the one behind it, An Sheng and company would figure out something in the future. After all, the time he went missing coincided with it.

Rather than waiting for them to find out, he might as well say it himself.

“Don’t Cry Valley… Wait… Are you talking about the Special Inspector Bureau’s Primordial Crystal mine…” An Sheng said in surprise.

“The mineral deposits are a gift from the land. If the bureau can take it, I should be able to take it too, right?” Zhou Wen said with a smile.

“Did you really enter Don’t Cry Valley’s Primordial Crystal mine? How much did you get?” An Sheng immediately asked.

“Not that much. I just took some of the reserves and dug a little more,” Zhou Wen said.

An Sheng’s expression turned odd. Zhou Wen made it sound simple, but the recent crazy actions of the bureau made An Sheng realize that it wasn’t as simple as Zhou Wen had claimed.

“About how much did you take?” An Sheng asked.

“I’m not too sure of the number. There are probably a few hundred chests. One chest weighs about a ton,” Zhou Wen said.

An Sheng gaped in disbelief.

After a long while, An Sheng came to his senses and exhorted Zhou Wen. “Stay on campus and don’t go anywhere. Don’t touch the Primordial Crystal ores you have. Don’t let anyone know about it.” He then hung up.

“Zhou Wen stole the Primordial Crystal ores from the bureau. It’s a massive amount,” An Sheng said to An Tianzuo.

“I heard that.” An Tianzuo’s expression was somewhat odd. Even he found it unbelievable that a person had snatched hundreds of tonnes of Primordial Crystal ores from the bureau.

“It’s no wonder the Special Inspector Bureau has gone mad. A few hundred tonnes of Primordial Crystal ores. This isn’t about stealing ores, it’s about killing the bureau! Young Master Wen really is gutsy, and he actually did it. It’s hard to imagine how he managed to do it alone. It looks like he’s growing faster than we expected,” An Sheng praised.

An Tianzuo wasn’t in the mood to bicker with An Sheng as he said with a sigh, “Go deal with the aftermath and try to find out more from the Special Inspector Bureau to see what’s going on.”

“Yes.” An Sheng also knew that this wasn’t the time to say these words. He had to seize every moment to wipe away the traces that Zhou Wen might have left behind. He

couldn’t let the bureau know that it was Zhou Wen who had done it.

Half a day later, a piece of information was placed in front of An Tianzuo. After he had finished reading it, his expression became more complicated.

An Sheng also wore an odd expression as he looked at An Tianzuo and said, “According to the intelligence, Cai Jin has already been transferred back. Quite a number of experts from the Primordial Crystal mine have been transferred back as well. Very few people remain behind. Young Master Wen didn’t steal from them. He clearly uprooted the bureau’s finances.”

An Tianzuo burned the document and threw it into the trash bin. “Do what you need to do. Just take it that nothing ever happened.”

“Yes,” An Sheng answered solemnly.

That punk is really daring. When An Tianzuo was the only one left in the office, he looked at Zhou Wen’s information on the computer and muttered to himself with an odd expression.

After Zhou Wen returned to school, he took a nap before continuing his grinding.

With the Demon Dragon True Body, Zhou Wen could finally attempt to challenge a Mythical creature. Although he only had ten seconds, Zhou Wen no longer died so easily when he went to the temple in the ruins.

However, against the Mythical creature guarding the temple, Zhou Wen still needed to use some Primordial Energy Skills

in addition to the Demon Dragon True Body to prevent himself from being killed. In fact, he didn’t last ten seconds.

Although switching to Slaughterer could restore his Primordial Energy, switching back to the Ancient Sovereign Sutra and then using the Demon Dragon True Body required time. This was enough time for the Mythical creature to kill the blood-colored avatar.

Although he could only last for a few seconds, Zhou Wen finally wasn’t slaughtered without any resistance. At least in these few seconds, he could face the Mythical creatures head-on, giving him a chance of discovering their weaknesses.

Of course, this required repeated deaths. If Zhou Wen wasn’t in a hurry to enter the temple to find the former principal, there would be no need for him to be in such a rush.

There were two temples—the left and right. The creature in one of the temples resembled a wolf or tiger. It had wings on its backs and it was unbelievably fast. Zhou Wen had to use Ghost Steps when in Demon Dragon True Body form to keep up with it. He couldn’t last long against it.

In the other temple, the Mythical Creature resembled a huge snake that could spew out large amounts of poisonous gas, but its speed was much slower than another Mythical creature.

Zhou Wen could barely keep up with its speed in the Demon Dragon True Body without using Ghost Steps; hence, he placed his focus on the snake.

Zhou Wen’s Poison Resistance and the augmentation of the Demon Dragon True Body couldn’t withstand the snake’s

terrifying poison. He could clearly sense the symptoms of poisoning.

However, he would be killed before the poison could take effect. Therefore, the lethality of the poison didn’t matter for now.

Apart from the poison, the snake still had several abilities. Some of them were alright—Zhou Wen could at least understand them. As long as he could understand them, he had a chance of cracking them. However, Zhou Wen didn’t understand one of the snake’s powers.

Every time the snake’s eyes turned into a mirror, the blood-colored avatar would reflect in its eyes before dying.

No matter how fast Zhou Wen’s movement technique was, it was impossible for him to be so fast that the snake couldn’t see the blood-colored avatar. Therefore, every time the snake used this skill, the blood-colored avatar died.

Zhou Wen tried many times, but he failed to figure out what was going on.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 446 - The Sword Needs to Kill Before It“s Unsheathed

Chapter 446 The Sword Needs to Kill Before It“s Unsheathed

When he woke up the next morning and had breakfast, Zhou Wen bought some breakfast for Wang Lu.

“You’re back?” Wang Lu opened the door and asked in surprise.

“I came back yesterday.” Zhou Wen entered and placed the breakfast on the table.

“Has the matter been resolved?” Wang Lu asked.

“Pretty much.” Zhou Wen felt his mood elevate, but he didn’t know if the bureau would back down or not.

“That’s good. Let’s settle our scores now. You owe me a lot of breakfast. You need to make it up with lunch.” Wang Lu very seriously listed down the number of breakfasts Zhou Wen owed her.

After taking Wang Lu’s breakfast, Zhou Wen went to the Xuanwen Club.

“Old Zhou, why are you always going missing? Can’t you let me tag along if there’s anything interesting happening?” Li Xuan said with a smile.

“I got into some trouble, so I went into hiding. What’s so fun about that?” Zhou Wen shrugged his shoulders helplessly.

As the two of them spoke, they saw Feng Qiuyan, Ming Xiu, and a girl walk in.

Zhou Wen knew Ming Xiu, but didn’t know why he had come to the Xuanwen Club. He wasn’t a member of the Xuanwen Club.

However, Zhou Wen still felt a little guilty towards Ming Xiu. After all, he was his student tutor, but he had not done anything since he had come.

“Zhou Wen, you’re finally back. Are you free now?” Ming Xiu’s eyes lit up when he saw Zhou Wen.

“What’s the matter?” Zhou Wen felt that if Ming Xiu had any questions, as his student tutor, he should provide some level of help.

“I’ve recently practiced a set of sword techniques. I want you to give me some pointers,” Ming Xiu said.

Although he had asked Zhou Wen for pointers, Ming Xiu was very confident in his sword techniques. Ever since he saw Zhou Wen’s Transcendent Flying Immortal, Ming Xiu had gained inspiration and had been studying the sword techniques left behind by his father.

After repeatedly improving and practicing it with Feng Qiuyan, Ming Xiu felt that his sword techniques were rather perfect. They were in no way inferior to Zhou Wen’s Transcendent Flying Immortal.

“Alright.” Zhou Wen nodded in agreement.

Feng Qiuyan was also very interested. He knew that Zhou Wen had already advanced to the Epic stage. If it was a life-

and-death battle, Ming Xiu was definitely no match for Zhou Wen.

However, sparring was different from a life-or-death battle. They only fought to determine whose sword technique was better and not one's strength and speed. Therefore, Feng Qiuyan felt that Ming Xiu probably had a chance.

During this period of time, he had been training with Ming Xiu. He knew that Ming Xiu's sword techniques had improved significantly. Apart from his lacking level, just his sword technique alone was as good as his saber techniques.

When Ming Xiu fought Zhou Wen, he could also watch from the side and figure out how much Zhou Wen had improved.

Everyone went to the training ground and the two changed into combat uniforms. They held their training swords and faced each other. Tian Zhenzhen asked nervously, "Feng Qiuyan, what do you think of Ming Xiu's chances of winning?"

Ming Xiu's sword techniques had improved significantly, but Tian Zhenzhen had a nagging feeling that they were too simple. It was unlike Zhou Wen's Transcendent Flying Immortal which was domineering and magnificent.

"I don't know." Feng Qiuyan shook his head.

If it were the sword techniques that Zhou Wen had used in the past, and with Zhou Wen's lack of understanding of Ming Xiu's sword techniques, Feng Qiuyan felt that Ming Xiu would have a chance of winning. However, Zhou Wen definitely wouldn't stop improving while he and Ming Xiu improved. Therefore, Feng Qiuyan couldn't determine the outcome. However, deep down, he believed that Zhou Wen

would definitely win. However, Feng Qiuyan couldn’t say it without any evidence.

“That goes without saying. No one can beat Old Zhou. We just need to see how many strikes Ming Xiu can last under Old Zhou.” However, Li Xuan was confident about Zhou Wen.

“Tch, how would you know if they haven’t fought? I think Ming Xiu will definitely win.” Tian Zhenzhen immediately retorted.

“Please guide me.” Ming Xiu held the training sword and took on an elegant stance. Then, he sheathed the sword back into the scabbard.

“Please.” Zhou Wen didn’t hold a scabbard. He only held the sword in his hand as he pointed it diagonally to the ground.

Ming Xiu’s expression didn’t change. However, his aura became increasingly calm. He seemed to fuse with the air. If one didn’t look at him with their eyes, one wouldn’t be able to feel his existence.

A sword flash appeared, an extreme movement after extreme stillness. After the practice sword was unsheathed, an earth-shattering strike, that was fast and powerful, appeared. It looked as if it would tear through the skies and pass through the ninth firmaments.

It was unlike Feng Qiuyan’s swift saber. Although Feng Qiuyan’s swift saber could exceed its limits, it did so with temperance. Particular attention was needed regarding control.

However, Ming Xiu’s sword technique wasn’t the same. It was as if he would explode with all the light of his life in this

single strike. It squeezed every ounce of his strength. Every cell seemed to unleash all their energy.

There was only one survivor. The sword didn’t return once it struck.

There was no control, no hesitation, and no way out. It was as if he had staked his entire life on this one strike. Although it wasn’t brilliant, it had the determination to destroy everything.

Even though it was only a single strike, it went all in. It couldn’t be controlled, nor was there any need to control it. The sword lived with the person and died with the person. Either the enemy or himself fell.

When Li Xuan saw the strike, his expression turned solemn as he muttered to himself, “Is it worth it to stake his life on this strike?”

Zhou Wen stared at the earth-shattering strike, but he didn’t move his practice sword. He could sense Ming Xiu’s determination from the sword.

“Ah!” Tian Zhenzhen exclaimed in shock when she saw Zhou Wen did not react to it.

It may be a special rubber sword that was used for training, without any edge or sharpness, even to the point of being curved, but under the augmentation of Ming Xiu’s sword technique, even a practice sword could pierce through flesh and blood.

Feng Qiuyan’s and Li Xuan’s expressions changed as well. They didn’t know what was wrong with Zhou Wen. He had failed to react.

As the sword flew like the wind, the practice sword in Ming Xiu’s hand brushed past Zhou Wen’s neck, almost touching the skin on his neck, but, ultimately, it didn’t injure him.

“Why didn’t you fight back?” Ming Xiu asked Zhou Wen with a frown.

“Why should I fight back when you aren’t stabbing at me?” Zhou Wen said casually. Ever since he had sensed the power of spatial trajectories, he had a keen sense of trajectories. Others might not be able to distinguish the minute difference due to Ming Xiu’s sword being too fast, but Zhou Wen could see it clearly. That strike wouldn’t hurt him at all.

Upon hearing Zhou Wen’s words, Ming Xiu was stunned. He looked at Zhou Wen in a daze and didn’t say a word.

After a long while, Ming Xiu’s eyes gradually became resolute. He slowly retracted the sword that was sitting beside Zhou Wen’s neck and sheathed it. He bowed slightly at Zhou Wen and said seriously, “Coach, I understand. I won’t randomly strike in the future. The sword needs to kill before it’s unsheathed.”

With that said, Ming Xiu turned around and left. Zhou Wen was somewhat taken aback. He didn’t know what had gone wrong with Ming Xiu. First, he didn’t stab him, and next, he left for no reason.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 447 - Continue Working Hard

447 Continue Working Hard

“Ming Xiu, what’s going on? Why are you leaving without fighting?” Tian Zhenzhen chased after him and asked.

“We’re done,” Ming Xiu said.

“Done? How is that possible? Didn’t you only stab him once? Why are you done? I understand now. Zhou Wen was unable to dodge your attack, so he lost, right?” Tian Zhenzhen rattled on.

“Of course not. I lost. Feng Qiuyan is right. Coach is no longer an existence on the same level as us. He could see through my weakness with a single glance and tell me my weakness through actual actions,” said Ming Xiu.

“What weakness?” Tian Zhenzhen didn’t understand what Ming Xiu was saying. All she saw was Zhou Wen standing there without doing anything.

“As it was a sparring match, I deviated a little when I struck. I was afraid that I would really harm him, but Coach saw through my hesitation at a glance, so he didn’t strike at all,” Ming Xiu said.

“That’s normal. Just continue sparring. Why did you admit defeat?” Tian Zhenzhen still didn’t understand.

Ming Xiu shook his head and said, “There’s no need to continue. If Coach had been an enemy, he would have seen through my hesitation. If he were to strike back then, I would have already been defeated. He didn’t attack to tell me that since I’ve staked my life on this strike, I should be certain that I really want to kill the person before I deliver it. If I’m not even sure myself, then I shouldn’t attack. If I have doubts in my heart, I will definitely lose when I strike out. If I can’t strike out without any hesitation, I shouldn’t draw my sword.”

“But aren’t you sparring? Isn’t it normal to show mercy?” Tian Zhenzhen asked.

“This is where Coach is better than others. It’s obvious that he’s telling me that there are no drills in life. The past is the past. There’s no chance for a redo. Since I’ve staked my life on the sword, how can there be any sparring? I have to risk my life when I strike. There’s no chance for me to do it again. My Sword Dao cultivation is indeed not enough. To think that I actually wanted to spar with Coach. In fact, I’d already lost when I had this thought. From today onwards, unless I confirm that I want to kill my enemies, I will definitely not draw my sword again,” Ming Xiu said seriously.

“From the looks of it, coming to Sunset College was right. You’ve really grown a lot,” Tian Zhenzhen said as she looked at Ming Xiu.

“Yes, it’s my good fortune to be able to meet Coach. Unfortunately, we only have three months here. I can’t learn more from Coach.” Ming Xiu nodded.

Zhou Wen didn’t know what Ming Xiu was thinking. He was somewhat puzzled. He originally wanted to see what Ming

Xiu’s sword technique was like, but to his surprise, Ming Xiu ran after stabbing at him.

However, Ming Xiu’s strike was truly stunning. The sword technique of seriously betting everything had a shocking feeling to it.

In a battle, only bravery won. Ming Xiu’s sword technique was the easiest way to win against a strong opponent, but it was also the easiest way to die.

What Ming Xiu learned from Zhou Wen was about questioning himself and not striking out. It greatly reduced the chances of him dying. Only then would this lead to Ming Xiu becoming a stunning swordsman in the future.

Zhou Wen realized that his strength and speed were stronger than Ming Xiu’s, and his sword techniques weren’t inferior to Ming Xiu’s, but no matter how he attacked, he wasn’t as decisive as Ming Xiu.

Even if he used all his strength, he could only maximize it. He didn’t have that kind of determination.

Feng Qiuyan took his saber and said to Zhou Wen, “Coach, since we’re already here, why don’t you spar with me?”

He didn’t use a practice saber because he already had absolute confidence in his saber techniques. No matter how intense the battle was, he wouldn’t accidentally injure Zhou Wen.

“Alright.” Zhou Wen felt that he had no choice. Feng Qiuyan had requested to spar with him, so he didn’t refuse and slashed down with his sword.

Zhou Wen hadn’t really practiced his sword techniques before. With Transcendent Flying Immortal, coupled with his movement techniques, he was basically able to subdue the enemy with one strike. He didn’t need that many techniques; one strike was enough.

This was actually the same as Ming Xiu’s. The two of them didn’t usually attack with their swords, but when they did, they would use their full strength. However, due to the difference in their personalities, their techniques split into two very different branches.

Zhou Wen’s movement and sword techniques were so fast that even Feng Qiuyan couldn’t keep up with him. All he could do was passively slash his saber to block.

Ming Xiu and Tian Zhenzhen, who were outside the door, heard the sounds from the training grounds. Knowing that Zhou Wen and company were sparring, they walked in again. Upon seeing the two of them fighting, Tian Zhenzhen said in surprise, “Feng Qiuyan has been suppressed to the point of only defending?”

She had never seen Feng Qiuyan use a defensive stance. Feng Qiuyan often sparred with Ming Xiu, so no matter how strong Ming Xiu’s sword techniques were, Feng Qiuyan would choose to attack him without losing out.

But now, Feng Qiuyan didn’t even have the chance to counterattack under Zhou Wen’s sword techniques.

Ming Xiu watched as he said, “Coach’s sword techniques are indeed much faster and stronger than mine. Furthermore, he still has more strength he’s holding back. It’s unlike mine. Once I strike, I use all my strength and am completely unable to control myself.”

“He hasn’t used all his strength yet?” Tian Zhenzhen was alarmed. If he had suppressed Feng Qiuyan to this extent without even using his full strength, how powerful would he be when he used all his strength?

Zhou Wen kept using Transcendent Flying Immortal. Although it was only a single move, it created different effects due to the angle of attacks when combined with the variation in movement technique.

However, Feng Qiuyan’s saber technique was like a turtle’s shell, completely impenetrable. Just a sword technique alone couldn’t break through his defense. Although he could suppress Feng Qiuyan, he was unable to defeat him.

Feng Qiuyan was also suppressed to the point of not having the ability to counterattack. After exchanging more than a hundred blows, Zhou Wen felt that he couldn’t freely engage in battle as he wished. He found it boring, so he retracted his sword and retreated. “It’s boring. That’s it.”

“It’s because I’m not strong enough that Coach can’t enjoy it. Don’t worry, I’ll continue working hard,” Feng Qiuyan said seriously.

“Then continue working hard.” Zhou Wen placed the sword back on the rack and left the training grounds with Li Xuan.

“Old Zhou, you’ve already advanced to the Epic stage. What’s the point of going to school? Have you considered what you will do after graduation?” Li Xuan asked Zhou Wen casually as they walked through campus.

“Something related to dimensional zones. It’s best if it’s an easy job. It’s best if I can game at work,” Zhou Wen said without any thought.

“You will only be twenty when you graduate, and an Epic stage at that. Although not everyone will dare to hire you because of Wang Mingyuan, many people in Luoyang will definitely be willing to hire you. Your request isn’t a problem, but do you really plan on spending the rest of your life like this?” Li Xuan asked as he looked at Zhou Wen calmly.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 448 - Missing

448 Missing

“I think it’s good this way. Why can’t I?” Zhou Wen wasn’t someone who liked to go too far. His greatest goal now was to rescue the former principal and find a safe place to live his life before raising his strength.

Even if the dimensional zones’ seal failed in the future, he could still protect himself and his friends and family.

“You definitely know that the occurrences of break-out creatures these days are increasing in frequency. The break-out creatures that appeared in our school previously destroyed the library. There was also the Sky Spiders that nearly destroyed Luoyang City. In the future, this world will only become more and more chaotic. What kind of job can you find to lead a peaceful life?” Li Xuan asked.

Zhou Wen thought that it made sense. When the world turned into a monster amusement park, there wouldn’t be jobs that could allow him such an idyllic life.

“Then what do you want after graduation?” Zhou Wen asked Li Xuan.

“I wish to build a city myself and gather many powerful humans. I want to build an impregnable castle. The city will be filled with my friends and family. I want to be able to protect them,” Li Xuan said.

“If you have such thoughts, you are no different from me,” Zhou Wen said with a smile.

“How is that the same? I’m proactively attacking. You are just passively getting beaten up,” Li Xuan said disdainfully as he cast a glance.

“Alright, let’s make an agreement here. You can leave me a room when you build the city so that I have a place to stay,” Zhou Wen said.

“Then you will have to wait. It’s impossible to build a city without the standards of a top Epic. I haven’t even come close to the Epic stage. Who knows when I can become a top Epic,” Li Xuan said with a smile.

“I believe you will definitely reach it,” Zhou Wen said seriously.

“Alright. That’s an agreement. In the future, I’ll build a city and leave the best compound for you to comfortably stay in,” Li Xuan said heroically.

The two of them chatted as they walked. However, most of the time, Zhou Wen listened to Li Xuan voice out his future ideals. As for himself, he didn’t seem to have many pursuits. The only time he felt a sense of achievement was when his level increased and his abilities improved.

“Today is my father’s birthday. Why don’t you join me? Just treat it as a free meal. It’s a waste not to eat it.” Li Xuan dragged Zhou Wen out of the school.

Although Li Xuan greatly disliked Li Mobai, it wasn’t likely he would fall out with him in front of his father.

Apart from Li Xuan and Li Mobai, Old Master Li had also adopted many godsons and goddaughters, so the rich and famous in Luoyang came to congratulate him. Even An

Tianzuo had sent someone to deliver a gift. The Li family was especially lively today.

“I really don’t have to buy a gift?” Zhou Wen had been dragged over by Li Xuan. He hadn’t bought any gifts and went to the Li family empty-handed.

“What else are you going to give me? You coming is already giving me face. Now, everyone knows that you are Ouyang Lan’s favorite son. Even An Jing isn’t as doted on as you.” Li Xuan pointed at the buffet table and said, “Eat anything you want, drink whatever you want. As long as you don’t get drunk and go crazy.”

“That won’t happen. I don’t drink,” Zhou Wen said.

“I’ll take a look over there. Get something to eat first. Call me if there’s anything you need,” Li Xuan said as he went to the other side.

Zhou Wen didn’t know anyone, so he didn’t need to worry. He took the food and beverages and minded his own business by eating.

“Zhou Wen, we meet again. Have you considered the matter I told you about previously?” Li Mobai walked over and said to Zhou Wen with a smile.

“Didn’t I already give you an answer?” Zhou Wen said indifferently.

“Don’t you think about it anymore?” Li Mobai asked with a smile.

“There’s no need,” Zhou Wen answered with certainty.

“That’s such a pity.” Li Mobai shook his head slightly before walking away.

After Li Mobai left, Zhou Wen didn’t take the matter to heart as he continued eating.

Zhou Wen and Li Xuan had agreed that the two of them would return to school after the birthday banquet ended. However, Zhou Wen never saw Li Xuan again. When the banquet was almost over, he didn’t see Li Xuan, nor did he pick up his phone.

Could something have happened to Li Xuan? Zhou Wen couldn’t help but feel his heart skip a beat. However, with this being the Li family, who could touch Li Xuan?

Even Li Mobai didn’t have the guts to touch Li Xuan in front of Old Master Li, right?

However, Zhou Wen felt uneasy. He immediately used Truth Listener’s earring to search the Li family manor, hoping to find Li Xuan.

At this moment, in a secret chamber, Li Xuan woke up groggily. His vision gradually cleared as he realized that he was chained up with some strange metal. His body was bound to a metal chair while Li Mobai was standing in front of him.

“Li Mobai, what are you trying to do? Aren’t you afraid that the old man will know that you dared to attack me here?” Li Xuan glared fiercely at Li Mobai.

“I think you’re really not fully awake. Do you want me to help you recall how you came here?” Li Mobai’s expression remained unchanged as he smiled.

“Didn’t you…” As Li Xuan spoke, his expression changed.

He gradually recalled what had happened before he came. He was supposed to be at a banquet, but Li Weiyang had called him and said that she was at the back door of the Li family residence.

As she was an illegitimate daughter, Li Weiyang didn’t even have the right to attend the family birthday banquet. When Li Xuan went out to meet her, she said that she had a gift for Old Master Li, but since it wasn’t convenient for her to give it to him, she asked him to deliver it for her.

Li Xuan naturally agreed, but after he received the gift from Li Weiyang, who he wasn’t wary of, he fainted and woke up to find himself here.

“What’s wrong with you? Sis Weiyang? Li Mobai, if you dare touch her, I’ll kill you!” Li Xuan glared at Li Mobai and said fiercely.

Li Mobai laughed and pinched Li Xuan’s face with one hand. “Li Xuan, Li Xuan, you’re still so stupid. You don’t know the dangers of this world. I originally thought you were playing the pig, but from the looks of it, you are really a pig.”

As he spoke, Li Mobai released Li Xuan and reached out to press the button on the remote control. Then, Li Xuan saw the wall in front of him gradually turn transparent.

It turned out that it wasn’t a real wall but a mirror. After the motorized curtain lifted, he saw the room opposite.

Li Xuan’s gaze landed on the room across him and immediately saw Li Weiyang inside.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 449 - Life-Snatching Gu

449 Life-Snatching Gu

“Li Mobai, what are you trying to do?” Li Xuan gritted his teeth and asked.

“Nothing much. After all, you are my brother. Even if you die, you have to understand why.” Li Mobai picked up a walkie-talkie and said, “Li Weiyang, you did well on this matter.”

Li Weiyang clearly couldn’t see the room. Upon hearing Li Mobai’s voice, she immediately looked around in panic. She realized that the sound came from a speaker, and she said agitatedly, “I’ve already done what you asked me to do. Please remove the poisonous Gu from my body.”

Li Mobai glanced at Li Xuan and continued, “Li Xuan usually treats you so well; yet, you handed him to me. Don’t you know what happens when he falls into my hands?”

Li Xuan had planned on speaking, but he fell silent when he heard Li Mobai’s question. He looked through the mirror on the wall at Li Weiyang.

Li Weiyang turned pale. “I know I let Li Xuan down, but I just want to live. There’s nothing I can do.”

“He’s your younger brother,” Li Mobai said mockingly.

“There’s nothing I can do. I’m just an illegitimate daughter, but he’s the third scion of the Li family who’s high and mighty. We don’t belong to the same world to begin with. He

treats me well, but it’s just a farce to show to others. It’s just pity, charity…”

Li Xuan’s face turned pale when he heard that.

He had always treated Li Weiyang as his sister, but he never expected her to say something like that.

Although she was saying it with her life under duress, the words were still unacceptable to Li Xuan.

Li Mobai didn’t say a word. All he did was look at Li Xuan. However, Li Weiyang grew anxious. “I’ve already done what you asked me to do. You said you will remove the poisonous Gu from my body. Quickly, remove it…”

Li Weiyang slammed the table in annoyance, her voice sounding agitated with a hint of pleading.

“Of course, I will keep my promise. However, you still have to do one last thing for me. After doing this, you can regain your freedom,” Li Mobai said.

“What else do you want me to do?” Li Weiyang asked loudly.

“Li Weiyang, you should know that there’s no absolute secret once someone else knows it. If I release you now, one day, you will tell everyone that I killed Li Xuan,” Li Mobai said calmly.

“No, no, no. I definitely won’t say anything. I won’t say anything. You have to believe me…” Li Weiyang waved her hand in panic, fear written all over her face.

“I don’t like having my fate controlled by the hands of others. It’s easy for me to let you go. You just need to personally kill Li Xuan. That’s the only way I can let you go

without worries. I don’t have to worry about exposing the secret because the first one to die will be you,” Li Mobai said.

“No, no, no. I can’t do that.” Li Weiyang shook her head as she retreated.

“Of course, you have the right to choose, but if you don’t, I can only let you die here. Only dead people keep secrets,” Li Mobai said.

“You can’t do this to me!” Li Weiyang’s face warped as she appeared conflicted.

“Ah!” Suddenly, Li Weiyang held her stomach as she collapsed to the ground in pain.

“The poison has already taken effect. You don’t have much time left,” Li Mobai said expressionlessly.

“I… I… I promise you…” Li Weiyang said in pain.

Li Xuan felt as though he had been struck by lightning as his expression turned extremely nasty.

“Sorry, you took too long to agree. I’ve changed my mind. Dead people are still better at keeping secrets.” As Li Mobai spoke, he rubbed the ring on his finger. Li Weiyang immediately spasmed. In just a moment, she rolled her eyes and spat out white foam. She was quickly dying.

“Stop! She has already agreed to it. Why are you still killing her?” Li Xuan shouted.

Li Mobai said indifferently, “Because I never planned on letting her out alive. Only dead people can truly keep secrets. This world is just that cruel.”

With that said, Li Mobai extended his hand in front of Li Xuan. A strange bug was in his palm. It looked like a centipede, but it had a scorpion's tail. It had four transparent wings on its back, and its head looked like that of a cricket. It looked very strange.

"Do you know what this is?" Li Mobai asked with a smile.

Seeing Li Xuan stare at him with those blood-red eyes, Li Mobai continued, "It's a special Companion Beast. Its name is Life-Snatching Gu. However, don't worry. It won't really kill you. The life it snatches is your Life Providence. Then it can transfer it to me and make me have dual Life Providences."

"You want my Life Providence? Since you want my Life Providence so badly, why don't you cultivate the Invincible Connate Divine Art yourself?" Li Xuan stared blankly at Li Mobai.

Li Mobai revealed a strange smile. "Because cultivating the Invincible Connate Divine Art requires one to be a virgin. If I were to cultivate it, the Li family wouldn't have any successors. But you are different. You've cultivated the Invincible Divine Art, and once I snatch your Life Providence from you I don't need to maintain my virginity. Although it's not as impressive as cultivating the Invincible Connate Divine Art personally, it's still enough."

Without waiting for Li Xuan to speak, Li Mobai continued, "My talent is better than yours and I'm stronger than you. The old man made you cultivate the Invincible Connate Divine Art because he prepared you for me."

"Impossible. You are lying," Li Xuan said loudly.

"I'm lying? Everyone knows that once one cultivates in the Invincible Connate Divine Art, one can't have descendants.

Even the original owner of the Invincible Connate Divine Art, the Xia family, didn’t cultivate it. Yet, the old man made you cultivate it. Do you think this is something a father would do?” Li Mobai said with a smile.

“I was the one who wanted to cultivate in the Invincible Connate Divine Art. It has nothing to do with the old man,” Li Xuan said.

“Was it really your intention? Do you remember when you were young? Who told you how powerful the Invincible Connate Divine Art was? How impressive the Xia family’s patriarch was?” Li Mobai continued with a smile. “Ever since you were young, everyone told you that the Invincible Connate Divine Art was great and awesome. It subtly influenced you into thinking that it was nothing to be a virgin your entire life just to cultivate in such a Primordial Energy Art, right?”

Li Xuan wanted to retort, but it did seem like this had been the case when he was young. Including the old man, everyone had told him that the Invincible Connate Divine Art was powerful and invincible. Once he mastered it, he would become a hero of the world.

Therefore, from a young age, he felt that cultivating the Invincible Connate Divine Art was an act of a hero. Now that Li Mobai had pointed it out to him, Li Xuan felt his body turn cold.

“Impossible… The old man can’t do this to me… I’m his son… He can’t possibly do this to me…” Li Xuan seemed to be trying to convince himself.

“If you were really his son, of course he wouldn’t. Unfortunately, you aren’t. You always thought you were his biological son, but that’s not the case. You were just a tool

that was prepared for me. It’s been hard on you. After all these years, your mission is completed,” Li Mobai said as he placed the Life-Snatching Gu on Li Xuan’s face.

The Life-Snatching Gu automatically crawled into Li Xuan’s nose. In its wake, Li Xuan felt as though it was slicing his body with a knife.

Soon, the pain reached his heart. At the same time, he felt a strange force spread throughout his body.

“My good brother, thank you for all your years of arduous cultivation. I’ll treat your Life Providence well. When my name becomes famous, your Life Providence will become famous alongside me. As my younger brother, you should be very happy, right?” Li Mobai’s finger slid across Li Xuan’s forehead, emitting a strange light as though it was stabbing into Li Xuan’s head.

“B*stard… You are a b*stard…” Li Xuan felt like countless steel needles were stabbing into his head, as though they were trying to suck his brain away.

Li Xuan struggled with all his might, but the metal chains had a strange effect. They didn’t only seal his body, but it also blocked his Primordial Energy circulation.

“Don’t use profanities. The Li family has raised you for so many years, so you should be grateful.” Li Mobai continued, “By the way, you still have a very good classmate called Zhou Wen, right? You’re quite pitiful too. You can’t get close to women, so you ended up liking men. Whatever, I’ll kill him with your Life Providence in the future and get him to accompany you.”

“Li… Xiu… Bai…” Like the straw that broke the camel’s back, Li Xuan’s eyes turned blood red. All his Primordial Energy

spewed out like blood flames that burned crazily. His bones and muscles swelled as his hair stood on end. A blood-colored carapace appeared over him, forming a strange armor. Four transparent blood wings spread out from his back like a supernatural being.

On him, a red beam of light condensed, resembling a devil that came from ancient times. It attached itself to Li Xuan.

Crack!

The metal chain that sealed his body and Primordial Energy broke inch by inch, no longer capable of binding his body.

“Li Xiubai, I’m going to kill you!” Li Xuan’s blood-red eyes stared at Li Mobai, roaring angrily. The blood-red projection around him roared as well, like a devil had possessed him.

He didn’t even call out Li Mobai’s name, directly calling him by his actual name—Li Xiubai.

“Come on, let me see what capabilities you have to kill me,” Li Mobai said as his eyes shimmered with zeal.

“Die!” Li Xuan’s eyes burned with killing intent as blood-colored light exploded from his body. The devil behind him roared as he struck Li Mobai with a punch with bloody flames.

Boom!

The blood-red light exploded in the secret chamber, reducing the entire secret chamber to ruins.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 450 - Evil King Gu

450 Evil King Gu

Li Mobai’s eyes widened as he leaned against the cracked wall. Li Xuan’s fist brushed past his head, slamming into the wall. The terrifying power caused the metal walls of the chamber to shatter. Everything looked like ruins.

Pa! Li Mobai slapped Li Xuan in the face and said in disdain, “You’re still so cowardly and useless. Even at this stage, you still don’t dare kill me?”

“Why did you do so much? Why did you give me your Life Soul? It’s not a Life-Snatching. What you gave me was your Life Soul,” Li Xuan said as he stared at Li Mobai.

“I still failed?” Li Mobai was extremely disappointed as he leaned against the wall and slowly sat down. The luster of his body gradually faded.

“What do you mean?” Li Xuan looked at Li Mobai and asked with gritted teeth.

Li Mobai sighed and said, “Why are you still unable to be heartless even at this stage? Don’t tell me you’re not angry at all?”

“Even if I were in hell, I wouldn’t become a devil. Li Mobai, what were you trying to do?” Li Xuan asked again.

Li Mobai closed his eyes and said, “Do you still remember Big Brother?”

“Of course I remember. Why are you mentioning him?” Li Xuan asked.

“Brother was peerless and was far better than both of us. He was no less inferior to An Tianzuo of the An family. If he had lived to this day, our Li family would definitely be in a better state than we are now. It wouldn’t be difficult for us to become true elites,” Li Mobai said.

“He’s already been dead for so many years. Is there any point in saying all this now?” Li Xuan frowned.

“Don’t you want to know how Brother died?” Li Mobai opened his eyes and stared at Li Xuan.

“Wasn’t Brother killed by a dimensional creature when he went dimensional creature hunting in a dimensional zone?” Li Xuan’s heart stirred as he vaguely felt that this matter wasn’t that simple.

“Killed by dimensional creatures? That’s technically right. Humans are the dirtiest dimensional creatures,” Li Mobai mocked.

“What do you mean? Do you mean that Brother was killed by someone? It wasn’t an accident?” Li Xuan stared at Li Mobai and said.

“Of course not. Back then, before Brother left, he told me that he wanted to go to the Dragon Gate Grotto to hunt Fairies, and to get a Fairy Companion Egg for me as a birthday present.” Li Mobai closed his eyes, his voice a little hoarse. “But when he died, he was in Old Dragon Cave. Back then, I had my suspicions about why he was in Old Dragon Cave. He shouldn’t have gone there. Brother was a man of his word. Since he agreed to get me a Fairy Companion Egg,

he would definitely have gone to the Lotus Flower Cave. He wouldn’t leave before getting a Fairy Companion Egg.

“I didn’t dare to tell anyone about this because I was too young and weak back then. I didn’t have the ability to do anything, so I could only bury this matter in my heart. I slowly investigated when I grew up and had the powers to do so.”

Li Mobai continued, “In order to make myself stronger, I chose to cultivate the Evil Gu Sutra. It gave me the power to control Gu, allowing me to use it as a foundation to control people. Slowly, I obtained clues. Everything pointed to a huge entity. That faction is too powerful, so powerful that it made me despair. Even if I used all my strength, I wouldn’t be able to shake that massive figure.”

“Who are they?” Li Xuan stared at Li Mobai and asked.

“The Xia family,” Li Mobai said.

“The Xia family that gave us our Invincible Connate Divine Art?” Li Xuan looked at Li Mobai in surprise.

“Invincible Connate Divine Art? That’s nothing but a joke. The Invincible Connate Divine Art they gave us is an incomplete version. If your talent wasn’t so outstanding, no matter how much you cultivated it, you wouldn’t have made any achievements. Thankfully, the heavens blessed you. You managed to master an incomplete Invincible Connate Divine Art and condensed a high-level Life Providence like Immortal God of Combat. But that’s not enough. Although you are very strong, you are still far inferior to Brother. Furthermore, the Invincible Connate Divine Art’s weakness is too obvious. With your personality, I’m afraid you would give up everything for a woman if you were to meet one that you loved.”

“I…” Li Xuan was at a loss for words. He might really do that.

“The Xia family has no lack of women who can stir hearts,” Li Mobai said in disdain.

“So, you want me to be completely heartless? There’s no need for you to do that. All you need to do is tell me about Brother. I can do it. There’s no need for you to treat Weiyang that way,” Li Xuan said through gritted teeth.

“It’s not just because of this. To become an enemy of the Xia family and wipe it out, both of us are lacking. No matter how talented you are or how you can master an incomplete Invincible Connate Divine Art to its limits and match that hero from the Xia family back then, you still can’t touch the Xia family.”

Li Mobai opened his eyes as a cold glint flashed in his eyes. “After lots of thinking, I came up with the only method to give us a fighting chance against the Xia family. In my cultivation of the Evil Gu Sutra, there’s a way of transferring. It’s like a daughter I raise. After growing up and marrying someone else, I can transfer my Life Soul, Evil King Gu, to you and help you condense a Life Soul. After absorbing the Evil King Gu, your Life Soul will no longer be a pure Life Soul condensed by the Invincible Connate Divine Art. It will subtly influence you, causing your body and Life Providence to change. It will make you stronger, far stronger than a pure Invincible Connate Divine Art. It will not have the fatal flaw. Only then will you have the chance to deal with the Xia family.

“However, cultivating the Evil Gu Sutra requires one to be emotionless or it will cause them to leave behind a huge latent problem. And to obtain the recognition of my Life Soul, Evil King Gu, after I completely transfer it to you, you

will also need to be heartless. At the very least, at the moment of fusion, you have to be able to disown your family. Only then will Evil King Gu willingly sacrifice itself to be transferred to you.” Li Mobai closed his eyes again.

“If I really did kill you and accomplished the act of being heartless, then who will tell me about Brother? Without knowing anything, what’s the point of doing all of this?” Li Xuan felt that Li Mobai was too bigoted.

“Me.” A voice came from the room next door.

As the secret chamber had been destroyed by the blast, the mirror wall had also shattered. “Li Weiyang,” who had fallen to the ground, stood up alive.

However, there was a strange change to her face. She didn’t look like Li Weiyang anymore. Her face was like an unfamiliar woman.

“Her name is Butterfly. Initially, after I die, she would tell you everything and support you to continue proceeding forward until you destroy the Xia family. Now, it’s useless,” Li Mobai said as he tried to stand up.

Li Xuan subconsciously wanted to help Li Mobai up, but Li Mobai pushed him away and said indifferently, “There’s no need to help me. Since you failed, I’ll continue taking this path.”

“But you…” Li Xuan wanted to say that his Life Soul was gone, and the Evil Gu Sutra was crippled. How could an ordinary person without any cultivation continue the path?

“There are no buts. Even if it’s the path to hell, I have to walk it again.” Li Mobai propped himself up and staggered towards the door. He was weak but firm.

If Li Xuan’s body was in the depths of hell as he headed for light, Li Mobai was the person who walked towards hell.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 451 - Invisible Clothes

451 Invisible Clothes

When Zhou Wen found Li Xuan, he was sitting alone in the garden, dazed.

Zhou Wen heaved a sigh of relief when he saw that Li Xuan was fine. He walked over and asked with a smile, “What’s wrong? What are you doing here alone?”

Li Xuan turned his head and looked at Zhou Wen, his eyes somewhat different from before.

“Zhou Wen, I want to become stronger, stronger than anyone else,” Li Xuan said to Zhou Wen. Zhou Wen had never seen Li Xuan look so serious.

Even when he was betrayed by Jiang Hao and Xu Miantu, Li Xuan had only smiled and said that he would make Li Mobai pay the price.

However, this time, Zhou Wen felt that Li Xuan was really different.

“What happened?” Zhou Wen asked Li Xuan.

Li Xuan didn’t answer but asked Zhou Wen, “If I become a devil one day, will we still be friends?”

“I won’t let you become a devil,” Zhou Wen said seriously.

Li Xuan laughed. “No, I won’t become a devil. I’ll use my own means to change this world.”

Zhou Wen realized that Li Xuan was really different. Ever since he had returned from the birthday celebration, Li Xuan had seriously begun cultivating.

Li Xuan had excellent talent and although he had been very hardworking in the past, his frequent mantra was striking a balance between work and rest. But now, whenever Li Xuan had the time, he would drag Zhou Wen to train with him. Zhou Wen could clearly sense that Li Xuan was rapidly improving.

Furthermore, Li Xuan condensed a Life Soul, something that surprised Zhou Wen. This was because Li Xuan had said that it might take him years to condense a Life Soul, but he seemed to achieve it overnight.

Furthermore, Zhou Wen felt that something was amiss with Li Xuan’s Life Soul. It was slightly different from his Invincible Connate Divine Art’s attributes.

However, no matter how Zhou Wen asked him, Li Xuan refused to say anything.

Zhou Wen constantly grinded dungeons and sought out the weakness of Mythical creatures in the temple, but he didn’t make much progress.

In the Special Investigation Bureau’s headquarters, Shen Yuchi was looking at a photo.

In the photo was a person wearing stone armor. There was only a side profile and his body was covered in stone armor. He couldn’t tell what the person inside the armor looked like.

“Director-General, he’s here.” Cai Jin’s voice sounded from outside.

“Bring him in,” Shen Yuchi put down the photo in his hand and said calmly.

Cai Jin quickly brought the person in and became even more respectful towards Shen Yuchi.

Cai Jin had lost all of the Special Inspector Bureau’s assets. He originally imagined that he would be killed, he did not think Shen Yuchi would not even punish him. He had even transferred him back to the Special Investigation Bureau and restored him to his former position and job. This made him both grateful and uneasy.

“Old Shen, why are you in such a hurry to find me?” An elderly man wearing a Primordial Trapping Lock followed behind Cai Jin and sat on a chair opposite Shen Yuchi.

“I want to know who the person in the photo is.” Shen Yuchi pushed the photo to the old man.

The old man took a look at the photo before curling his lips. “Although my Life Soul can take form, you do know that it has great limitations. It’s not something that can be used casually. It will decrease my lifespan.”

“Find him and you’ll be free,” said Shen Yuchi.

The old man’s eyes immediately lit up. He stared at Shen Yuchi and asked, “Aren’t you afraid that the Cape family will cause you trouble if you let me leave Heaven?”

“I want to know who this person is,” Shen Yuchi said calmly without answering.

“Alright, deal.” The old man extended his hand.

Shen Yuchi nodded slightly. Cai Jin went forward and opened the Primordial Trapping Lock on the elder's body.

The old man's hunched body suddenly straightened, making him look much taller. He reached out to pick up the photo, his eyes filled with energy. His eyes seemed to have magical powers as a magical beam shot out from within and landed on the photo.

As the light in the elder's eyes shone, the figure in the photo seemed to come to life as though it was struggling to walk out of the picture.

Shen Yuchi and Cai Jin stared intently at the photo, waiting for the figure in the photo to walk out.

"Ah!"

Suddenly, the old man let out a tragic cry as his eyes burst open. Blood splattered everywhere on the table. He covered his eyes and cried out in pain. Shen Yuchi and Cai Jin's expressions changed drastically.

On campus, Zhou Wen felt his Sigh of the King spontaneously appear, but it only lasted a split second before vanishing again.

Strange, what happened? Zhou Wen was alarmed and puzzled, but he had no idea what was happening.

After waiting for a while and not sensing any further abnormalities of the Sigh of the King, Zhou Wen continued his research.

During this period of time, he had been constantly fighting the snake in the temple. He had basically figured out the snake's abilities. Zhou Wen still had ways to deal with its

other abilities, but he was unable to do anything about the snake eye’s mirror image.

Unless I can infinitely teleport or become invisible to prevent the snake from seeing me; otherwise, it’s impossible to dodge that gaze. It’s still impossible to teleport infinitely now, but I can think of ways to obtain an invisible Primordial Energy Skill. Zhou Wen knew that there were indeed Primordial Energy Skills that allowed for invisibility.

However, invisible-type Primordial Energy Skills were extremely rare. Few were willing to sell them. Therefore, even if someone were to sell them, they were often sold at astronomical prices.

Zhou Wen had plenty of Primordial Crystals on hand. He could afford them even if they had sky-high prices. More importantly, it wasn’t convenient for him to sell the Primordial Crystals at present.

While Zhou Wen was fretting over this matter, An Sheng contacted him to express that the Sunset Army wanted to buy his Primordial Crystals.

Puzzled, Zhou Wen asked, “Why do you want the Primordial Crystals?”

An Sheng said, “Although Primordial Crystals and Primordial Gold have the effect of killing dimensional creatures, the characteristics are different. The problems involved are very simple. I’ll just give an imperfect analogy. If it’s only Primordial Gold, we can only make them into firearms, but if we add in Primordial Crystal, we will be able to produce laser guns. Of course, it’s not that simple, but that’s the general gist of it.”

“I can give you the Primordial Crystals. I don’t want money either, but I have a request,” Zhou Wen said.

“Speak.”

“I want a Primordial Energy Skill that can make me invisible. It needs to be at least Epic stage.” Zhou Wen gave his request.

“There are too few Primordial Energy Skills that provide invisibility. They can only be obtained by chance. If you just want an invisibility ability, a very good opportunity has recently opened up. There’s a Companion Egg in a West District auction. That Companion Beast has the ability to make one invisible. However, the price will be very high. There are many competitors as well. You have to be mentally prepared,” An Sheng said.

“What Companion Beast is that?” Zhou Wen asked.

“The Mythical Companion Beast, Invisibility Cloak,” said An Sheng.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 452 - Cannot be Hatched

Chapter 452 Cannot be Hatched

“Someone actually is selling a Mythical Companion Egg?” Zhou Wen found it unbelievable.

An Sheng smiled and said, “No one would sell one under ordinary circumstances, but this one is a little different.”

“How is it different? Is there anything special?” Zhou Wen asked, puzzled.

“Do you have any idea about Orphism of the West District?” An Sheng asked.

“A little. I roughly know that in the early times, there was the god, Chronos. It later became the God of Chaos, Chaos, and then the twelve Titans. Finally, it became the more famous twelve Olympus Gods, with Zeus being the leader. These are the few representative generations of gods in Orphism.” Zhou Wen knew quite a bit about this belief.

As he had received Chaos’s heritage and it was also related to the Chaos Bead, Zhou Wen had previously read about such matters. Although he didn’t study it in-depth, he had a general understanding of it.

“It’s not bad that you already know these things. Few people from the East District typically study the myths of the West District. They probably only know about Zeus and the other gods.” An Sheng paused before continuing, “The Cape family discovered a temple left behind by the dualism god, Phanes, in the mortal realm. His status is probably the same

as the Pangu of our East District’s system of gods. Although it’s a little different, you get what I mean. Anyway, according to the myths and legends in the West District, all the god-kings have to gain his approval before they become the king of gods.

“The Cape family obtained the recognition of the temple. They chose one of the three Companion Eggs in the temple, which is this Invisibility Cloak that is being put up for auction,” An Sheng said.

“That’s not right. Since it’s being auctioned now, it means that no one has ever hatched it. How do you know that it’s Invisibility Cloak?” Zhou Wen asked curiously.

“The reason they know that it’s Invisibility Cloak is that the Cape family has formerly hatched that Mythical Companion Egg before. After that, they gained the ability to be invisible,” An Sheng said with a faint smile. “When people obtain powers that exceed the rules, their true colors show. The person from the Cape family used his powers of invisibility to do countless dirty things. He went overboard and even dared to touch the members of the six families. In the end, he was discovered by the Zhang family and he was exposed.”

“This matter is a scandal of the six families. The Cape family has been slain by the Zhang family as well. However, when they killed him, the Zhang family used some unknown method to turn the Invisibility Cloak to a Companion Egg form. It didn’t vanish along with that person and has been kept all this while.”

“That means that the invisibility cloak Companion Egg fell into the Zhang family’s hands. It doesn’t make sense for the Zhang family to auction such a powerful Companion Egg,

right? Does their family lack money?” Zhou Wen asked, puzzled.

“The Zhang family naturally doesn’t lack money, but the Invisibility Cloak Companion Egg isn’t a real Companion Egg. It was unknown what method they used to turn the Invisibility Cloak into a Companion Egg. No one can hatch it. In the beginning, no one knew that there was a problem with the Invisibility Cloak Companion Egg. The Cape family paid a huge sum of resources to get the Companion Egg back from the Zhang family. However, when they got it back, they couldn’t hatch it.

“Later, the Invisibility Cloak exchanged a few hands a few times. Although there’s a problem, it’s a Mythical Companion Egg and has magical invisibility. Everyone wants to give it a try. Everyone thinks that they care capable of doing something others can’t, but they ultimately realize they can’t do it either. From the six families to ordinary families, it has changed multiple hands. No one has managed to hatch the Invisibility Cloak. However, don’t think of picking it up on the cheap. There are plenty of confident people, so the price will definitely be unimaginable if you want to bid on the cloak.”

“Can my Essence Crystals be used in the auction?” Zhou Wen asked.

“Of course they can, but they’re not convenient. How about this? I’ll help you bid for the Invisibility Cloak Companion Egg. After I get it, you can sell me the equivalent of Essence Crystals at market price.” An Sheng thought for a moment before saying, “The amount needed at the auction will definitely not be small. I don’t know if it will exceed your expectations, so you have to go with me. If you think it’s

possible, I'll bid. If you feel that it's too expensive, we can just give it up."

"To the West District?" Zhou Wen was somewhat worried.

"Don't worry. I have my own arrangements. There won't be any problems. Just treat it as a vacation. There are many famous dimensional zones in the West District where the auction is held. You can also pay them a visit when the time comes." An Sheng could understand Zhou Wen's worry.

"Alright." Zhou Wen was rather interested in the Invisibility Cloak. Furthermore, he wanted to see if the dimensional zones in the West District had the tiny palm symbols.

If there were any tiny palm symbols, it wouldn't be a bad idea to download a few of them. Zhou Wen was very interested in Companion Beasts that were angels, sprites, and devils.

As he was about to leave, Zhou Wen had no choice but to place the antelope and chick at Wang Lu's place. Zhou Wen had previously given the antelope and chick some Essence Crystals, but they weren't interested in them at all.

"Your trip will make you owe me more days of breakfast, right? I'm afraid lunch won't be enough to cover the shortfall," Wang Lu said as she looked at him.

"Then use dinner to make up for it," Zhou Wen said.

"I want to lose weight. I don't eat dinner," Wang Lu said with a twitch of her lips.

Although she said that, Wang Lu still took the chick. The antelope also consciously followed her; it even seemed somewhat eager.

Clearly, it could eat better when with Wang Lu.

This time, An Sheng personally brought Zhou Wen to the West District. Zhou Wen heard from An Sheng that the place they were heading to was a peninsula and it was very close to the sea. Not far from the peninsula were the Aegean Sea islands where there were many dimensional zones. They contained several terrifying existences.

“Are there dimensional zones that drop angel or sprite Companion Beasts?” Zhou Wen asked An Sheng as he sat in the car.

An Sheng blinked and said, “Sprites are creatures that only come from the dimensional zones in the North District. Angels belong to another divine system. Do you think there will be one?”

“Aren’t they from the same district?” Zhou Wen was somewhat alarmed. He had always felt that these two dimensional creatures belonged to the West District.

“Of course not,” An Sheng answered with certainty.

“Then what Companion Beasts are available at the place we are going?” Zhou Wen had no choice but to seek An Sheng’s advice.

“Monsters, giants, pythons, etc.” An Sheng roughly explained the situation before smiling. “If you have the ability, you can kill a goddess like Athena. There might even be a Companion Egg drop. It’s said that Athena’s temple has been discovered, but it’s hard to tell if Athena is really inside.”

“Forget about Mythical creatures. Are there more pragmatic Epic Companion Beasts?” Zhou Wen knew himself. The

possibility of him killing a Mythical creature was just too low.

Now, Zhou Wen was just waiting for Tyrant Behemoth to complete its evolution. After it became a Mythical creature, Zhou Wen really had the capital to fight Mythical creatures.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 453 - The Only Princess of the Zhang Family

453 The Only Princess of the Zhang Family

Zhou Wen originally believed that they would head to the auction venue directly, but he soon realized that it wasn’t only the two of them going to the auction together. An Sheng had to tag along with others.

To be precise, An Sheng and Zhou Wen were only hitching a ride on a plane. The Zhang family was going to participate in the auction too. An Tianzuo had asked if they could bring Zhou Wen and An Sheng along. This also meant that they would be under the Zhang family’s protection.

Isn’t the An family and the six families on bad terms? Why would the Zhang family agree to take us with them? Zhou Wen found it odd.

“Let’s not talk about us. Even the relationship between the six families is nothing much to speak of. There is even competition amongst themselves, competition that is far more intense than with others. However, when it comes to interests, that’s another matter. The Zhang family has a lot of need for Essence Gold. We also have some needs that the Zhang family can satisfy us with, so our relationship is relatively stable. However, the Zhang family originally wanted to reject our request, but for some reason, they later agreed,” An Sheng said.

When they arrived, a butler-like person welcomed An Sheng and Zhou Wen and took them to a private airport.

“Butler, who is the person in charge of the Zhang family this time?” An Sheng asked.

There were many experts in the Zhang family. An Sheng wanted to know who it was, lest he made any faux pax.

“The one who’s going to the Aegean Sea this time is Third Master’s only daughter,” the old butler said.

An Sheng couldn’t help but be surprised when he heard that. In the Zhang family’s previous generation, there were three brothers who were particularly good at fathering sons. They had many sons. The first and second master had eight sons each. The third master had two sons and only one daughter.

The entire Zhang family only had one daughter. One could imagine how doted upon this girl was.

Legend had it that every year, all the sons of the Zhang family rushed back to celebrate her birthday. Each of them prepared a rare treasure. The scene was extremely breathtaking.

Of course, that was only a legend. This was because the Zhang family only had one daughter. She was like a princess, so they had protected her from birth. Up until now, no one in the Zhang family knew her name, much less what she looked like.

An Sheng wanted to ask the name of the princess of the Zhang family, but the butler clearly didn’t want to say too much and had already boarded the plane.

An Sheng mentioned the princess of the Zhang family to Zhou Wen and said with a smile, “We are lucky today. Perhaps we might have a chance to meet her in person.”

The two of them boarded the plane, and the old butler brought them inside. There were all sorts of pink decorations inside the plane, making it look very feminine.

Inside the cabin, there was a young woman who looked to be in her twenties. She was somewhat different from the princess Zhou Wen imagined. She was at least older than he imagined.

However, when An Sheng and Zhou Wen saw her clearly, their eyes widened.

“What’s wrong? You’ve forgotten about me already?” The woman looked at the two of them and smiled.

“Zhang Yuzhi… You’re from the Zhang family?” Zhou Wen obviously recognized her. Back when he was heading home with An Sheng, Li Xuan, and Ah Lai, he had met this woman on the way and allowed her to hitch a ride.

“Isn’t what you’re saying odd?. You’ve already called me Zhang Yuzhi. If I’m not from the Zhang family, would I be from your Zhou family?” Zhang Yuzhi said with a smile.

Zhou Wen wasn’t eloquent. He gaped his mouth, unsure of how to explain himself.

“Sit down. The plane is about to take off,” Zhang Yuzhi said as she pointed to the seat beside her.

“What’s that?” After the plane took off, Zhou Wen looked out the window and realized that there were actually many white birds outside the window. They looked like cranes, but they were a lot bigger. Furthermore, there were quite a number of them and they flew around the plane in groups.

On careful look, Zhou Wen realized that there was someone sitting on each crane’s back.

“That’s the Sky Crane Companion Beast that’s unique to the Zhang family. It’s a top Epic creature. Its flight and combat abilities are very strong,” An Sheng explained.

Zhou Wen immediately understood that they were experts of the Zhang family that protected Zhang Yuzhi.

Zhou Wen looked at Zhang Yuzhi with an odd look. With her status, how could she have suffered a breakdown by herself in the wilderness?

As though reading Zhou Wen’s mind, Zhang Yuzhi said with a smile, “I had a quarrel with my family back then, so I went out alone to calm down. I never expected anything to happen. Thankfully, I met you. Otherwise, I would really have been afraid to be alone.”

“No wonder. The Zhang family originally wanted to decline us in the beginning, but they later agreed to take us along. It was because of you, right?” An Sheng said.

Zhang Yuzhi nodded and said, “With our family and the An family’s relationship, it’s nothing much to bring you along. However, our family doesn’t want strangers to get close to me, so they were planning to reject it.”

As they were all acquaintances, and Zhou Wen and An Sheng didn’t take into account backgrounds, they chatted very happily with Zhang Yuzhi.

After chatting for a while, the old butler walked over and said, “Miss, it’s time for you to rest.”

Zhou Wen and An Sheng found it odd. What did he mean that it was time for her to rest? Zhang Yuzhi had been sitting comfortably in her chair, not doing anything.

Zhang Yuzhi seemed to want to stay, but the old butler repeated that it was time for her to rest. Zhang Yuzhi could only stand up and say to the two of them, “Sorry, I need to rest for a while. If you need anything, just instruct Uncle Fu.”

Although Zhou Wen and An Sheng found it odd, they weren’t that close. It wasn’t appropriate for them to say anything else as they watched Zhang Yuzhi walk through the door in the cabin ahead of them.

Zhou Wen was curious as he wanted to see where Zhang Yuzhi was resting.

Legend has it that passenger planes have first class cabins. Could it be that this plane has first class cabins as well? Zhou Wen activated Truth Listener’s earring, hoping to see what Zhang Yuzhi’s resting place looked like. He didn’t have any malicious intent.

A three-dimensional layout of the plane immediately appeared in Zhou Wen’s mind. In front of the main passenger area was a separate, single cabin. Zhang Yuzhi pushed the door open and entered.

However, when Zhou Wen saw what was happening, his expression changed slightly.

The cabin wasn’t big, but there were many things placed there. It was decorated extremely strangely. There were many long strips of paper hung inside. Due to Truth Listener’s ability, it couldn’t see the colors or the patterns. Therefore, Zhou Wen only knew that there were long strips

of paper. He wasn’t sure if there were any drawings on the strips of paper.

However, there weren’t any lounge chairs or beds inside. Zhou Wen only saw a strange, head-sized box that was squarish at the base and round at the top.

The box’s shape made it look like an item used by humans in funerals before the dimensional storms.

It can’t be a coffin, right? Could it be a new massage device? As Zhou Wen thought about it, he saw that Zhang Yuzhi had already opened the lid and lay down inside the box.

Zhou Wen could clearly see that the box didn’t have any massage equipment, making it look like a coffin no matter how he looked at it.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 454 - Why Did It Take So Long?

454 Why Did It Take So Long?

The more Zhou Wen looked at it, the more he realized that something was amiss. The box was likely carved from stone. There was nothing inside but a pillow. It also seemed to be made of stone. It didn’t seem comfortable to sleep inside no matter how he looked at it.

After Zhang Yuzhi lay inside, the old butler closed the lid again. Once the lid was in place, he couldn’t hear the situation inside with Truth Listener’s ability.

How odd. Do rich girls have such strange temperaments? She’s sleeping in a stone box instead of a high-end couch on a plane? Zhou Wen felt that it resembled a coffin no matter how he looked at it.

Zhou Wen retracted Truth Listener’s ability. After all, it was her privacy and he did not wish to continue intruding on her.

They did not encounter any incidents along the way. When they passed the sky above some dimensional zones, the Sky Crane team outside intimidated all the dimensional creatures, preventing them from approaching the plane.

Even if a few dimensional creatures, who didn’t know better, attacked, they were promptly dispatched by the Sky Crane team. The plane was not damaged at all.

When they reached the Peninsula of Gods, they didn’t see Zhang Yuzhi again. After the plane landed, the old butler led them out of the plane. An Sheng said that he wanted to bid farewell to Zhang Yuzhi, but the butler said that there was no need. They could just leave.

“Ah Sheng, don’t you find Zhang Yuzhi a little odd?” Zhou Wen asked An Sheng after the two of them left the airport.

“It’s far from just odd. Although the six families are in different areas, as hero families, they place the most emphasis on etiquette. This isn’t the way to treat guests.” An Sheng paused before continuing, “But this is the Zhang family’s matter. It has nothing to do with us. There are still two days before the auction begins. Where do you want to go? I’ll take you around.”

“Let’s head to the nearby dimensional zones.” Zhou Wen felt that he should tour the area once. If he could find the tiny palm symbols, it would be best if he could download a few instance dungeons.

“Most of the dimensional zones on the Peninsula of Gods have owners. We are foreigners after all. It will probably be a little troublesome if we want to enter. Why don’t we take a look at the Aegean Sea? It’s a little dangerous, but there are many ownerless dimensional zones. It’s also rather interesting,” An Sheng said.

“Is it okay going out to sea like this?” Zhou Wen knew that the dimensional zones in the ocean were more terrifying than on land.

“It’s fine. I’ve been to those places many times in the past. I’m very familiar with them.” An Sheng was confident.

The two walked towards the harbor. Along the way, they saw many people walking their Companion Beasts on the streets. The more common ones were giants and foot monsters. There were also many strange monsters, and Zhou Wen even saw a Fire Man Companion Beast. It looked very interesting.

“Didn’t you say that there aren’t any sprites on the Peninsula of Gods? Then what’s this? Isn’t it a Fire Sprite?” Zhou Wen asked.

“The sprites I’m talking about are those with pointy ears who look similar to humans—elves. These are elemental sprites. These are two different things. I thought you wanted those beautiful elves,” An Sheng said.

“How can such an elemental sprite be obtained?” Zhou Wen asked.

When the person with the Fire Sprite heard Zhou Wen, he smiled and said, “This is an Epic Fire Sprite from the Forging Temple. Fire Sprites are very rare. The chances of a Companion Egg dropping is even lower. I was at the Forging Temple for two and a half years before I was lucky enough to obtain this Fire Sprite. If you are interested, you can try your luck.”

“What kind of place is Forging Temple?” Zhou Wen asked when he saw how friendly the person was.

“That’s the temple of the god of metalworking, Hephaestus. Not only are there Fire Sprites there, but there are even higher-level Fire Sprite Kings as well. However, their numbers are even rarer. Moreover, the depths of the temple are too dangerous. Young people like you shouldn’t be so overly ambitious. You should just hunt Fire Sprites on the first level of the temple. If you venture deeper, your life will

be in danger,” the middle-aged man with the Fire Sprite said.

“Thank you for your guidance.” Zhou Wen had some impression of Hephaestus, but he couldn’t remember the name. He only remembered that he was Zeus’s son, an artisan, and the god of metalworking.

The reason Zhou Wen could remember him wasn’t because of him being an artisan, but because he was the husband of the goddess of love and beauty. Furthermore, he had been cuckolded.

Apart from that, Cupid’s bow, Apollo’s chariot, and Zeus’s lightning bolt were made by him. He could be said to be an expert at creating divine artifacts.

An Sheng seemed to know a little about the Metalwork Temples as he said to Zhou Wen, “There aren’t only fire-elemental sprites in the Metalwork Temple. There are also all sorts of metal-type and machinery-type dimensional creatures. It’s rather interesting, but that’s private property on the Peninsula of Gods. Apart from locals being able to enter with their identity cards, outsiders are forbidden from entering.”

“Young man, you’re quite knowledgeable. You’re right. Unless you’re a citizen of the Peninsula of Gods, it’s impossible for you to enter the Metalwork Temple. It looks like it’s a pity that you don’t even have the qualifications to obtain ordinary Fire Sprites.” The middle-aged man proudly led his Fire Sprite away.

“Is there really no way to enter?” Zhou Wen asked An Sheng as he was rather interested in the Metalwork Temple.

“There’s really no way. This is a common rule set by several families on the Peninsula of Gods. Even those few families cannot break this rule. Otherwise, they will be enemies of the entire Peninsula of Gods.” An Sheng spread his hands, indicating that he had no solution.

“Even if we can’t enter, it’ll be okay to take a look outside, right?” Zhou Wen said.

“Of course you can, but do you really plan on just taking a look?” An Sheng looked at Zhou Wen, puzzled.

“We can take a look if it’s on the way. Taking a few photos as a memento would be nice.” Zhou Wen only wanted to find the tiny palm symbol, so he had no intention of entering.

“I never expected you to have such boring hobbies. It is on the way. It’s just a tiny detour.” An Sheng continued walking forward with Zhou Wen.

Shortly after he left, he saw white shadows flying across the sky. The passersby all stopped to look.

Zhou Wen and An Sheng looked up and saw Sky Cranes fly past them. The Sky Cranes landed in front of them as the gray-clothed members of the Zhang family got off the Sky Cranes’ backs and walked straight towards them.

The person in the lead looked to be about twenty-eight years old. He had a dignified air, but he wasn’t too flamboyant. He looked extremely handsome.

“Zhang Xiao, what’s the meaning of this?” An Sheng clearly recognized the leader as he frowned at him.

Zhang Xiao said, “I’m sorry, I have something to ask the two of you.”

“What is it?” An Sheng asked.

“Have you seen my sister, Zhang Yuzhi, after you got off the plane?” Zhang Ye asked.

“Didn’t she get some rest on the plane? We haven’t seen her since then. What happened? Do you need our help?” An Sheng asked.

Zhang Xiao sized up An Sheng and Zhou Wen, as though confirming that they really hadn’t seen Zhang Yuzhi. Then, he bowed slightly and said, “Thank you. If you meet my sister, Zhang Yuzhi, please inform me as soon as possible. The Zhang family will definitely thank you.”

“Alright. If we see her, we will definitely contact you immediately,” said An Sheng.

Zhang Xiao did not hesitate. After bidding farewell, he left with the Sky Crane team. He looked extremely anxious.

“It looks like the little princess of the Zhang family is very worrying,” An Sheng said with a smile.

As the two spoke, they headed for the Metalwork Temple, but unfortunately, there was someone guarding it. Zhou Wen could only see the door from afar, so he was unable to see any tiny palm symbol at close proximity.

Slightly disappointed, he followed An Sheng to the port. Just as they were about to rent a ship to head out to sea, they saw a person in a suit and a hat waving at them on a ship.

“Why did it take you so long? I’ve been waiting for you for ages.” The person looked up slightly and spoke to Zhou Wen and An Sheng.

The two of them were stunned when they saw the person’s face. The person in the male outfit was Zhang Yuzhi.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 455 - Water Elemental Sprite

455 Water Elemental Sprite

“Why are you still standing there in a daze? Get on board quickly. Don’t you want to go to the Aegean archipelago?” Zhang Yuzhi greeted them from the ship.

“How did you know?” Zhou Wen and An Sheng exchanged looks in surprise.

They had only decided to head to the Aegean archipelago after they alighted the plane. Yet, Zhang Yuzhi knew of their plans and had waited for them here. They couldn’t figure out when Zhang Yuzhi had overheard their conversation.

“If I want to know, I’ll naturally know. The ship is about to set off. Aren’t you getting on board?” Zhang Yuzhi asked.

“Do you know that your brother, Zhang Xiao, is looking for you?” An Sheng asked.

“Just ignore them. If you don’t board the ship, I’ll leave on my own.” Zhang Yuzhi curled her lips and was about to start the engine.

Zhou Wen and An Sheng thought for a moment and had no choice but to board the ship.

Zhang Yuzhi was very excited. After she started the engine, she drove the boat towards the sea and shouted excitedly, “I want to conquer the entire sea.”

“How old are you? How childish,” An Sheng said with a smile.

“I like childish stuff. You’re childish too, even if you’re not convinced!” Zhang Yuzhi retorted.

An Sheng came to Zhang Yuzhi’s side and said, “Let me drive it. There are dangers lurking in the sea. I have to take the correct route to avoid unnecessary trouble,”

“That’s good.” Zhang Yuzhi handed the task of driving the boat to An Sheng. She walked to the bow of the boat and extended her hands. She faced the wind as though she was hugging the sea.

Once they were out in the sea, electronic devices were affected. There were all kinds of errors. Phones could be switched on, but there was no signal. Furthermore, there were also signs of hanging.

As the sea was dangerous, Zhou Wen didn’t grind dungeons and constantly paid attention to the sea surface.

Not long after they headed out, they suddenly heard a strange song. The three of them looked in the direction of the song. In the distance, there was a reef. A young woman was singing on it.

However, upon closer inspection, they realized that the woman didn’t have legs. She had a fishtail. It was the legendary mermaid.

As if sensing the gazes of the three of them, the mermaid stopped singing and plunged into the sea before disappearing.

“A mermaid. It was actually a mermaid. We were really lucky. I heard that mermaids in the sea are extremely rare. I didn’t expect to meet one so quickly while out at sea,” Zhang Yuzhi said.

However, An Sheng said, “The mermaids are known as sirens in certain myths. It’s ominous to encounter them at sea.”

“Why?” Zhang Yuzhi was slightly taken aback as she asked in disbelief.

“According to myths, the sirens with human faces but fish bodies are the daughters of the river god. They have a voice that can bewitch one’s heart, causing the sailors to be charmed by their singing. They will involuntarily steer their ships to the hidden reefs and eventually perish.” An Sheng told them the story of the sirens.

Thankfully, they weren’t the sailors in myths and legends, nor were they bewitched. The journey went very smoothly. Although they saw dimensional creatures at sea, nothing attacked them.

When Zhou Wen saw an island, An Sheng circled the boat around the island without any intention of landing on it.

“Why aren’t we heading for that island?” Zhang Yuzhi asked curiously.

“That’s the legendary Crete Island. You might not be familiar with this name, but you should have heard of the Palace of Minos, right? The legendary Minotaur is inside. No one who has stepped foot inside has come out alive,” An Sheng said.

The boat left the island and headed deeper into the sea. An Sheng was indeed very familiar with the area. There wasn’t

any danger on their journey. When they arrived at an inconspicuous island, An Sheng steered the boat over.

“Is this island also a dimensional zone?” Zhang Yuzhi sized up the island, but she didn’t see anything like a palace.

The dimensional zones in the Aegean Sea typically existed in the form of a palace. Most of the god-like existences were inside the palaces.

“Of course, the dimensional zones out at sea aren’t as obvious as the dimensional zones on land. In fact, the entire Aegean Sea is a huge dimensional zone.” An Sheng jumped onto the beach and moored the boat. He continued, “There are many Water Elemental Sprites on this island. You can try your luck and get a Water Elemental Sprite Companion Egg to drop. When you enter dimensional zones in the future, you won’t have to worry about water.”

Zhou Wen and Zhang Yuzhi knew the importance of water. If they were trapped in a dimensional zone for a long period of time, they could still last for a period of time as long as there was water to drink.

Although Zhou Wen had stored a lot of food and water inside the Chaos Bead and didn’t have to worry about a lack of water, it was especially important for the average person to have a Water Elemental Sprite Companion Beast even if it was at the Legendary stage.

However, Water Elemental Sprites were similarly rare. They were usually only seen out at sea, but those who could go out to sea had to at least be at the Epic stage. Furthermore, they might not be able to find Water Elemental Sprites even if they went out to sea.

The three of them headed deeper into the island. Before long, they saw a blue blob of water bouncing around on the grass like a frozen soccer ball.

“That’s the most ordinary Water Elemental Sprite. It’s a Legendary stage dimensional creature which usually has two talent skills—Water Gun and Water Ball. They can deliver long-distance attacks,” An Sheng said as he pointed at the water blob.

“It’s just a ball of water. Its attack power shouldn’t be strong, right?” Zhang Yuzhi saw that the Water Elemental Sprite was very cute, and it made her feel like pinching and hugging it.

“Have you never seen a high-pressure water jet cutter? Are granite and steel hard enough? Water can easily cut it apart. Don’t underestimate the power of water. It will kill you,” An Sheng said solemnly.

As the trio spoke, the Water Elemental Spirit had already discovered them and was about to bounce up from the grass. In the air, it spat out a water column that sprayed towards Zhou Wen.

The water pillar was as thick as a finger, but its speed was shockingly fast. Zhou Wen ducked and the water pillar spewed out more than ten meters, leaving a deep dent on a rock.

Zhou Wen pulled out his Bamboo Blade and slashed at the Water Elemental Sprite. He split the Water Elemental Sprite’s body apart, but after his blade slashed, the Water Elemental Sprite’s body returned to its original state. It wasn’t injured at all.

“Water will flow around a blade. Striking a Water Elemental Sprite’s body is useless. It has a water-elemental crystal in

its body. Shatter it to kill it,” An Sheng said.

Zhou Wen nodded and carefully observed the Water Elemental Sprite’s body. Indeed, there was a dark-blue bead flowing within its body. He slashed with his saber and sliced the bead apart. This time, the Water Elemental Sprite shattered along with the bead and dropped a crystal.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 456 - The Strange Waterfall Pool

456 The Strange Waterfall Pool

“Your luck is pretty good. Your first Water Elemental Sprite produced a crystal, but unfortunately, it’s not a Companion Egg,” An Sheng said with a smile.

Zhou Wen kept searching for Water Elemental Sprites on the island, hoping to have a Companion Egg drop. However, Zhang Yuzhi wasn’t interested in Companion Eggs. She only took photos as though she was on a tour.

“Why is that Water Elemental Sprite a little different?” When Zhou Wen and company came to a waterfall, they saw a strange Water Elemental Sprite.

Typical Water Elemental Sprites were blue in color and looked spherical, but in fact, they were the shape of water droplets. However, this Water Elemental Sprite was silver in color. It didn’t look like a water droplet, but a snake.

“This should be a high-level Water Elemental Sprite. It might be an Epic creature. Be careful,” An Sheng said responsibly.

Zhou Wen was indeed very careful. He summoned stone armor and didn’t approach the silver water snake sprite. He summoned his Overlord Sword and slashed at it from afar.

The water snake didn’t dodge. It opened its mouth and spewed out silver water. However, the water that it spewed out was somewhat strange. It was actually in the shape of a venomous fang.

A sword beam slashed across, shattering the water snake’s venomous fangs. The sword beam continued to slash at it.

When the silver water snake saw that something was amiss, it turned around and slipped into the pool beneath the waterfall. Its body resembled water to begin with, so once it entered the pool, it immediately vanished. It was impossible to tell its location with the naked eye.

Thankfully, Zhou Wen had Truth Listener. The Truth Listener earring’s ability ignored color, so he immediately saw the silver water snake in the pool. When Zhou Wen chased after it, he sent a sword beam into the pool.

Boom!

The water surface was parted by the spinning sword beam, slicing apart the silver water snake’s body. Even the water-elemental crystal in its body was shattered.

A silver crystal-shaped Companion Egg dropped and sank to the bottom of the pool.

A Companion Egg dropped? Zhou Wen stood by the pool and observed for a while. When he saw that there were no signs of other dimensional creatures in the pool, he jumped in and dived towards the bottom.

Zhou Wen reached out to pick up the Companion Egg. Just as he was about to float up, he suddenly felt a tremendous suction force at the bottom of the pool. It caused his body to instantly sink as though a toilet whirlpool was sucking at him.

Splash!

Zhou Wen was flushed down with the flow of water and discovered that there was a huge space beneath the pool. Beneath it was churning seawater.

Zhou Wen looked up, but he didn’t find the cave entrance that he had washed down from. There were black rocks above his head without any gaps.

He slashed at the rock, shattering a huge piece, however, there were still rocks behind it. Zhou Wen slashed several times, but they were all rock. There was no exit.

As for the destination of the underground seawater flow, there was a light that seemed to be the exit of a tunnel.

Zhou Wen had no choice but to follow the flow of the water as he headed for the exit. As long as he could get out, it wouldn’t be difficult for him to circle back to the pool again.

Soon, Zhou Wen rushed out with the flow of water. When he exited, he realized that he was at the waterfall’s entrance.

After Zhou Wen came out of the waterfall, he directly floated in the air, alarmed by what he saw.

No matter how he looked at the waterfall and the pool below, it looked like the one he had fallen into. However, he had clearly fallen into the pool of water beneath, so why would he come out of the waterfall from above?

Zhou Wen carefully observed his surroundings. Indeed, the environment was identical. It was the pool that he had fallen into, but there was no sign of An Sheng or Zhang Yuzhi.

Don’t tell me they went into the pool to look for me? Zhou Wen thought to himself as he flew higher, hoping to confirm that they were still on the island.

As he flew into the air, he managed to take in the entirety of the small island.

The extremely beautiful island was filled with green grass and flowing water.

However, when Zhou Wen’s gaze landed on a spot, his pupils constricted abruptly. There was an apple tree growing on a grass slope.

There was only one apple on the huge apple tree, but that apple was somewhat unusual. It was as though it was made of gold and emitted a resplendent glow.

Under the apple tree, there was a black lizard sleeping. The lizard was even bigger than an elephant.

Soon, because lizards didn’t have wings, Zhou Wen realized that it wasn’t a lizard but a legendary West District dragon. On the dragon’s back were two fleshy wings.

Gold apple… Dragon… Zhou Wen was alarmed and puzzled.

This was a little similar to the myths that Zhou Wen had read. Legend had it that the human hero, Peleus, married a sea-nymph. They had invited all the gods to their wedding but chose not to invite the goddess, Eris. Unhappy about this, she produced a golden apple at the wedding and tossed it into the feast of the gods. On it were the words “to the most beautiful.”

In the end, Hera, Athena, and Aphrodite entered a dispute for the golden apple. This eventually led to a human war.

Legend had it that the golden apple tree was in a holy garden, guarded by a hundred-headed dragon, but that was only a legend. This place didn’t look like a holy garden.

The black dragon under the golden apple tree didn’t look like it had a hundred heads—it only had one.

Zhou Wen didn’t know what the golden apple was for, nor did he wish to snatch it, lest he alarm the black dragon. Although it might not be a hundred-headed dragon, the dragon itself was a Mythical creature of legend. Zhou Wen didn’t wish to take the risk.

However, what puzzled Zhou Wen was that before they had come onto the island, they hadn’t seen the golden apple tree or the dragon. Why did these things suddenly appear?

Zhou Wen checked the entire island, but he didn’t find An Sheng and Zhang Yuzhi. The strangest thing was that even the boat that they had moored on the beach had vanished.

Could it be that this isn’t the island from before? It just looks a little similar. When I passed through the hole beneath the pool, I arrived somewhere else? The more Zhou Wen thought about it, the more he found it possible.

Splash! Splash!

As Zhou Wen was pondering over the matter, he heard two splashes. It was as though a stone had dropped into a pool of water. He turned his head and saw An Sheng and Zhang Yuzhi fall from the waterfall and fall into the pond, stirring up a huge splash.

They were fine and quickly crawled out of the pool, but Zhou Wen felt something amiss. He turned to look at the black dragon under the apple tree. Indeed, it had awoken from its slumber. It slowly got up and looked towards the waterfall.

“Zhou Wen, what are you doing up there?” Zhang Yuzhi shouted at Zhou Wen when she saw him in midair.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 457 - Apple-Plucking Plan

Chapter 457 Apple-Plucking Plan

Zhang Yuzhi’s voice woke up the black dragon. It raised its head and pricked up its ears, staring straight at the waterfall.

Zhou Wen knew that they couldn’t see the distant giant dragon or the golden apple tree, so he hurriedly gestured for them to stay silent. He also descended and pulled them into the cave.

Boom!

The three of them had just entered the cave when the black dragon streaked across the sky like a black bolt of lightning. It landed beside the pool as it swept its eyes around as though it was looking for something.

After circling the pond a few times and finding nothing, it slowly returned to the apple tree.

The three people, who had held their breath in the waterfall cave, finally dared to breathe.

“Strange. I’ve come to this island many times. There are only some Water-Elemental Sprites. Why would there be an additional dragon?” An Sheng said with a frown.

“It’s not just that.” Zhou Wen recounted his discovery and speculation.

Zhang Yuzhi’s eyes lit up when she heard that. “In other words, we aren’t on the original island. When we passed the tunnel beneath the pool, we entered another space. This is a dimensional zone that hasn’t been discovered. There’s a gigantic dragon here and a golden apple? Is that really the golden Apple of Discord from the legends?”

“How would I know?” Zhou Wen shook his head.

An Sheng said, “No Mythical creature is to be trifled with. Even if it’s a weaker existence in myths and legends, it’s not something we can deal with. Don’t even have thoughts on the golden apple. Let’s swim back from the waterfall tunnel and take a look. It’s best if we can go back. If we can’t return, we can try entering the pool again. Perhaps we’ll be sucked in once again and be able to leave this place.”

Zhou Wen agreed since he didn’t wish to take the risk. Although Zhang Yuzhi was very interested in the golden apple from the fairytale legend, she could only leave with the two of them.

They soon realized something terrifying. There was no way back at the end of the waterfall. Furthermore, after they entered the pool, there was no strange suction force at the bottom.

After leaving the pool, the three of them returned to the cave. Zhang Yuzhi thought for a moment and said, “I remember hearing from my elders that one can only leave certain dimensional zones by obtaining a special item after entry. Otherwise, they won’t be able to leave and they will die inside.”

“From the looks of it, this dimensional zone should be the death zone you’re talking about. After you enter, either you

die or the dimensional creature dies. There's no third option," An Sheng said.

Zhang Yuzhi thought for a moment before saying, "If we leave this island, will we be able to leave this dimensional zone?"

"I've already taken a look from midair. Previously, there were distant islands, but there's nothing now. At a glance, all I can see is the sea," Zhou Wen said.

"That means we're really trapped here. This island isn't big either. I reckon that the black dragon or the golden apple is the dimensional zone's special item. Killing the dragon or obtaining the golden apple is the only way of exiting," Zhang Yuzhi said excitedly, "If we kill that dragon, will we become the first dragon slayers in human history?"

"If you aren't afraid of becoming dragon feces, you can give it a try." Zhou Wen was rather inclined to think of a way to obtain the golden apple.

The chance of dying when fighting a Mythical creature was too high, but plucking the apple didn't necessarily mean fighting the dragon. They had quite a number of Companion Beasts that they could use to lure the black dragon away before plucking the golden apple. It was likely a much safer option.

An Sheng agreed with Zhou Wen's idea. "Yuzhi, stay here. Zhou Wen and I will give it a try and see if we can lure the dragon away and pluck the golden apple."

"Why am I staying?" Zhang Yuzhi was puzzled.

"Because the two of us are going to be apple-stealing thieves. If the two of us fail, it will be your turn to be the

dragon-slaying heroine,” An Sheng said.

“That’s right. I can’t do such covert work.” Zhang Yuzhi nodded.

After An Sheng asked Zhou Wen about the location and details of the golden apple tree, he sneaked out of the waterfall cave with him.

“I have a Essence Energy Skill that converges my aura. I likely won’t be discovered by the dragon even if I approach it. When I get close, I’ll summon a Companion Beast to see how strong the dragon is,” An Sheng said to Zhou Wen before he crept forward.

Zhou Wen saw him silently proceed forward like a snake. If he couldn’t see him with his naked eyes, he wouldn’t have been able to sense his existence. He couldn’t help but admire An Sheng for being a wily old fox. His abilities were much more multifaceted than his.

Zhou Wen didn’t have any similar Essence Energy Skills and couldn’t guarantee that he wouldn’t be discovered by the dragon, so he didn’t approach. He found a relatively high spot nearby and looked at the golden apple tree and the black dragon from afar.

Not long after, An Sheng arrived less than a thousand meters away from the golden apple tree. He pressed himself against the ground, and the armor on his body automatically changed color, making him almost fuse with the grass.

Then, Zhou Wen saw him summon a leopard-like Companion Beast that charged in the direction of the golden apple tree as it roared.

The black dragon hadn’t slept. It immediately stood up and saw the leopard-like Companion Beast. It flapped its wings and a black bolt of lightning streaked across the sky.

The leopard was no match for it at all. Just as it spewed out a ball of flames, it was swallowed by the black dragon.

What fast speed! Zhou Wen was alarmed. The dragon’s speed was almost on par with the wolf-like, tiger-like Mythical creature in the temple.

Although it was still slightly weaker, its speed was not something Epic humans could contend with.

The leopard was an Epic creature, but it hadn’t managed to put up any resistance in front of the black dragon.

An Sheng lay motionless on the grass. After the dragon devoured the leopard Companion Beast, it roared violently and shuttled back and forth across the island like lightning, as though it was searching for other intruders.

Zhou Wen was also lying in the grass, motionless. A few times, the black dragon flew close to him, making him feel his heart in his throat. This wasn’t a game. If he was discovered by the black dragon, there was a high chance of death.

The black dragon finally quietened down and returned to the golden apple tree. After quite some time, it seemed to be exhausted. When it lay under the tree to rest, An Sheng silently retreated. He gave Zhou Wen a look and the two of them slowly retreated to the side of the waterfall.

The sound of the waterfall could conceal their voices. Even if they made any movements here, it was unlikely to attract the dragon’s attention.

“This island is too small. With the speed of that black dragon, no matter where we lure it to, it can immediately return to the apple tree. From the looks of it, luring it away won’t work,” An Sheng said after returning to the cave.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 458 - Fighting the Dragon

Chapter 458 Fighting the Dragon

To lure it away, it had to be taken sufficiently far away. If they were to approach the golden apple tree now, they would be killed by the dragon when it rushed back. This plan was clearly useless.

“What do you think?” An Sheng asked Zhou Wen.

Zhou Wen thought for a moment and said, “We definitely can’t fight it head-on. The chances of death are too high. We must think of other solutions.”

After a pause, Zhou Wen continued, “I do have an idea. If I can hold back the black dragon for a few seconds, do you have the confidence to pluck the golden apple?”

“How long can you last?” An Sheng asked after some thought.

“At most ten seconds and at least five seconds. However, before that, I need to use a Companion Beast to confirm it again before I can determine the exact amount of time,” Zhou Wen said after serious consideration.

“If you can hold it back for six seconds, I can pluck the golden apple and return,” An Sheng said after careful observation.

“Then let’s give it a try.” Zhou Wen planned on first figuring out the black dragon’s powers.

“I still have quite a number of Companion Beasts on me. Let’s give it a few more tries and get a good understanding of the black dragon’s abilities before attacking it,” An Sheng said.

“Can I do something?” Zhang Yuzhi asked.

“Please cheer us on over here,” An Sheng said to her.

“Alright, I’ll cheer you on.” Zhang Yuzhi didn’t plan on really being a dragon-slaying heroine. Furthermore, she was only at the Legendary stage, inferior to Zhou Wen and An Sheng. She had only been joking.

Zhou Wen and An Sheng left the cave once again and found a hidden spot to summon their Companion Beasts. They left them in different locations. After making arrangements, the Companion Beasts attacked the black dragon from different locations.

An Sheng had countless Companion Beasts, and Zhou Wen had quite a number as well. However, their Companion Beasts were basically useless. None of them survived.

Zhou Wen used the Blood Threadworms to secretly drill into the black dragon’s body, but the moment the Blood Threadworms entered its skin, they automatically died.

There was also the Epic Poison Bat. After flying over, it was swallowed by the black dragon.

The two of them sacrificed at least thirty Companion Beasts. None of them could last five seconds in front of the black dragon, making them fully realize the horror of the black dragon.

Of course, this was also because the two of them weren’t willing to use their beloved Companion Beasts. They only released cannon fodder Companion Beasts.

However, the different kinds of attacks the Companion Beasts delivered made the black dragon use some of its abilities, allowing Zhou Wen and An Sheng to gain a better understanding of the black dragon.

“Its Speed is far faster than ours and it has more Strength. My Strength-type Epic Companion Beast was easily suppressed by it. Furthermore, it isn’t afraid of wind, fire, or lightning and has high resistance. It doesn’t spit fire, but it spits poison…” An Sheng listed down the outcome of his observations before looking at Zhou Wen and asked, “What’s your take? How long can you last? It’s better to underestimate than overestimate.”

“Seven seconds.” Zhou Wen carefully did the calculations mentally. He included all his various abilities and finally gave such a conservative number.

“Enough. Let’s draw up our plan first. I’ll hide near the apple tree. My limit should be within 500 meters. Then, you can use your Companion Beast to lure it away and think of a way to hold it back for seven seconds. Leave the rest to me,” An Sheng explained, as he drew a picture on the ground to show the entire plan clearly.

“Remember, we only have one chance. If we fail, we will die,” An Sheng said to Zhou Wen when he was prepared to leave the cave.

“Got it.” Zhou Wen nodded solemnly.

The two of them left the cave. Following the plan, An Sheng stealthily approached the apple tree. His ability to converge

his aura and his concealment were amazing. Zhou Wen watched as An Sheng proceeded and couldn’t distinguish the difference between him and the grass.

The closer An Sheng came to the black dragon, the slower he became. He was almost acting in slow motion.

A few hours later, An Sheng was almost 400 meters away from the apple tree when the black dragon’s ears suddenly twitched.

Zhou Wen and An Sheng’s hearts were in their throats as An Sheng lay there motionless. Zhou Wen’s heart pounded as he forgot to even breathe.

After quite some time, the black dragon’s ears drooped again. Only then did Zhou Wen feel a little better.

However, An Sheng was extremely bold. He continued moving forward another twenty to thirty meters, making Zhou Wen’s heart skip a beat.

Zhou Wen knew the danger that An Sheng faced grew with every centimeter he approached the black dragon. He had originally planned on stopping 500 meters from the apple tree, but now, he was already within 400 meters. This was An Sheng taking on risk to lower the danger Zhou Wen would face.

The closer he was to the apple tree, the faster he could reach the golden apple, making the black dragon turn around to chase after him. This would reduce Zhou Wen’s risk.

Finally, An Sheng made the designated gesture. Zhou Wen heaved a sigh of relief and knew that it was time for him to appear.

After he retreated to the edge of the island, Zhou Wen summoned his Companion Beast and prepared himself. Finally, he roared, “Big Lizard, I’m here. Come over and eat me.”

The black dragon, who had been resting under the golden apple tree, immediately pricked up its ears when it heard Zhou Wen’s shout. It stood up and, after confirming his location, it flapped its wings and instantly tore through the sky, rushing towards Zhou Wen.

Black lightning streaked across the sky, instantly occupying Zhou Wen’s vision.

Zhou Wen summoned a row of Golden Warriors to form a blockade in front of the black dragon. These were originally food meant for Tyrant Behemoth, but with Tyrant Behemoth directly eating the Essence Crystals, they were useless now.

The black figure charged over like a bolt of lightning as the Golden Warriors were sent flying everywhere. Zhou Wen held Bamboo Blade and Overlord Sword in each hand as he slashed out with both saber and sword. The Demonic Astral Wheel and Fangwheel Sword Flash crisscrossed and slashed at the black dragon’s head.

A black beam shot out of the black dragon’s eyes, blasting apart the Demonic Astral Wheel and Fangwheel Sword Flash. However, it didn’t stop charging at Zhou Wen.

Zhou Wen activated Ghost Steps and instantly moved more than ten meters away. At the same time, he counted inwardly. One second…

On the other side, An Sheng had already charged at the golden apple tree like a ghost. His speed was equally terrifying.

The black dragon was much faster than Zhou Wen’s Ghost Steps. It extended its wings and its huge body nimbly drew an L-shaped mark in the air before catching up to him. It spat out a large amount of black poison smoke that swept towards Zhou Wen like a flood.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 459 - Seven-Second Battle

Chapter 459 Seven-Second Battle

A purple bell appeared in Zhou Wen’s hand as he waved it at the black dragon. The billowing black smoke was sucked into the bell.

The black dragon was somewhat taken aback, but it immediately charged towards Zhou Wen with its mouth agape, hoping to devour him.

Zhou Wen waved the bell in his hand. As black poison smoke spewed out from the bell, he redirected it to the black dragon. At the same time, he used Ghost Steps to rapidly move away.

Two seconds! Zhou Wen counted inwardly.

The black dragon entered the poisonous smoke and temporarily lost its vision. In its rage, it let out a roar that sounded like a thunderclap. The shockwave scattered the poisonous smoke and didn’t stop. The shockwave continued rushing towards Zhou Wen’s body.

The roar was an area-of-effect attack. There was no place for him to dodge. Zhou Wen could only fend off the strike and activate the Inverse Ancient Sovereign Life Soul while using the Demon Dragon True Body. When he was done, the shockwave had already arrived in front of him.

Boom!

Zhou Wen raised his fists to defend himself. He was thrown back by the force from the shockwave, his legs plowing deep marks that were dozens of meters long.

The black dragon seemed to sense something and stopped pursuing Zhou Wen. It turned around and attempted to charge back.

Zhou Wen knew that An Sheng had entered the range of the golden apple tree and had attracted the black dragon’s attention. It was returning to protect the golden apple.

Zhou Wen naturally couldn’t let it leave, otherwise, An Sheng’s life would be in danger. Seeing that the black dragon was about to fly away, a purple beam flew over from the side and struck the black dragon’s wings.

The purple light was a short purple-copper ancient sword. The black dragon’s scaly wing was sliced open by the purple-copper ancient sword.

Well done. Zhou Wen saw the Demonic Neonate expressionlessly hiding in the grass with the scabbard in her arms. After the ancient sword injured the black dragon, it flew towards the grass.

Roar! The dragon roared angrily. It had never suffered such damage before. Its wings had been injured, so it didn’t rush back in rage. It transformed into lightning and charged at Zhou Wen, planning to devour him first before returning to protect the golden apple.

The black dragon was so fast that its massive figure couldn’t be seen. Only a black lightning bolt was seen crossing the void. It was unbelievably fast.

However, Zhou Wen was already used to such speeds. He grinded the Mythical creature every day. Although the snake was slightly slower than the black dragon, it wasn’t that much slower. As for the other Mythical creature, it was faster than the black dragon.

Zhou Wen remained calm as he charged into the sea with a burst of terrifying speed with his Demon Dragon True Body.

In the sky, he wasn’t the match for the black dragon, but in the seawater, a winged dragon couldn’t be as agile as him. The pair of huge wings became an obstacle in its underwater movement.

Seeing Zhou Wen rush into the water, the black dragon hesitated for a moment and chose not to chase after him. It looked like it was about to turn around and return to the golden apple tree.

Three seconds! As Zhou Wen counted, he tore out of the water surface and switched back to Slaughterer. He held the banana fan and fanned the black dragon three times.

The three Grand Yin Winds stirred up huge waves as they swept towards the black dragon in the sky. One wave after another struck its body, while the Demonic Neonate hid and sent the ancient sword for another attack. They attacked the black dragon one after another.

The black dragon had been injured by the ancient sword, so when it saw the purple beam flying towards it and the waves rushing towards it, its ferocity was triggered. The black gas around it surged as its body emitted a metallic sheen. Another two pairs of wings appeared on its back, turning it into a black six-winged dragon. Black flames burned on its body as its six wings flapped. The black flames erupted like

a volcano, blocking the Grand Yin Wind as the ancient sword was sent flying.

The black six-winged dragon, that looked like devilish, burned with black flames in its eyes as though it had come from a devilish abyss. It suddenly swooped down and its speed increased once again. It had reached an unbelievable level that Zhou Wen couldn’t even react in time.

They didn’t manage to force the dragon to produce such change in their previous probes, but Zhou Wen had been prepared for accidents. He was mentally prepared.

At the instant the black six-winged dragon charged into the sea, Zhou Wen had used the Lost Country to teleport away.

Boom!

The surface of the sea exploded with waves reaching several hundred feet high. The gigantic black six-winged dragon charged into the sea. Its black flames remained burning in the sea, completely unaffected by the seawater. Instead, large amounts of seawater evaporated.

Lost Country’s teleportation had a limited distance range. After Zhou Wen teleported, he was sent flying by the shockwave from the black six-winged dragon’s charge into the water. Blood oozed out of his ears, eyes, mouth, and nose, and his bones almost seemed like crumbling.

When the black six-winged dragon discovered Zhou Wen, it immediately charged over. It remained very fast, but it wasn’t as indiscernible as before. Clearly, the water’s resistance had created quite a problem for it. Behind it was surging white foam, a result from the flapping of its three pairs of wings.

Zhou Wen knew that the more bubbles there were, the greater the resistance it experienced. Immediately, he switched back to the Inverse Ancient Sovereign state. The Demon Dragon True Body worked with the Nine Dragons Art as he constantly darted about in the water, dodging the attacks of the black six-winged dragon.

Four seconds! Zhou Wen felt like it was an eternity. The Demon Dragon True Body had greatly increased his expenditure of Essence Energy, but in such a battle, it was impossible for him to switch back. If he slowed down, he would definitely be devoured by the black six-winged dragon.

After failing to catch up to Zhou Wen several times, the black six-winged dragon once again flew into a rage. The scales on its body stood up as though it was an angry fowl. Suddenly, the scales bloomed like lotus flowers.

Countless scales flew in all directions and sliced through the seawater, instantly appearing in front of Zhou Wen.

There were just too many scales. With nowhere to dodge, Zhou Wen gritted his teeth as he gripped the Overlord Sword and Bamboo Blade and forcefully slashed down.

The Overlord Sword and Bamboo Blade slashed at the scales of light. With the strength of the Demon Dragon True Body, he managed to shatter the two scales in front of them. However, the scales behind them bombarded him like artillery.

Zhou Wen tried his best to brandish his blades to block, but he was still unable to do so. Scales of light streaked across his body and immediately sliced through the Mutated Stone Chi’s armor. They even sliced through the flesh and bones inside as blood instantly dyed the seawater red.

Zhou Wen flew backward, leaving a long pool of blood in the sea like a blood dragon.

Five seconds! The Demon Dragon True Body automatically lost its effect. Zhou Wen could only switch back to Slaughterer. Although his Essence Energy instantly recovered, his injuries remained.

And he didn’t have the chance to switch back to Demon Dragon True Body. This was because the black six-winged dragon had already torn through the seawater and charged forward like a primordial beast. If Zhou Wen switched back to the Inverse Ancient Sovereign and used the Demon Dragon True Body, his body would stiffen for an instant. It would be enough time for the black six-winged dragon to kill him several hundred times.

Forcefully activating Sigh of the King, a powerful force filled his body, but it also made his injured body feel even more painful.

Without fighting the black six-winged dragon, Zhou Wen used all his strength to rush out of the sea like a cannonball with Ghost Steps. He continued in midair and headed for the beach.

The Sigh of the King lasted for a limited period of time. Zhou Wen’s body couldn’t withstand such immense strength. It wouldn’t be enough time to kill a Mythical creature in battle. If the Mythical creature didn’t die, he would explode to his death.

The black six-winged dragon charged after him. Its speed immediately soared in midair. Despite Zhou Wen using the Sigh of the King, the gap between them rapidly shrank.

The dragon roar sounded from behind. Zhou Wen could already hear the terrifying shockwave surge behind him.

Zhou Wen held the Overlord Sword and slashed out with the Demonic Astral Wheel. With the augmentation of the Sigh of the King, the blood-red sword beam sliced through the shockwave and struck the black six-winged dragon’s head.

The black six-winged dragon flapped its wings and dodged it. Even it felt apprehensive fending off the Demonic Astral Wheel that was augmented by the Sigh of the King. It didn’t use its body to withstand the blow like before.

After dodging the Demonic Astral Wheel, the black six-winged dragon engaged in pursuit. However, to its surprise, the Demonic Astral Wheel spun back and struck the wings on its back. Immediately, a hole tore open on its wings as dragon blood immediately gushed out.

With Ever-Victorious cooperating with the Sigh of the King, even the black six-winged dragon couldn’t remain uninjured.

However, such a wound was nothing to the black six-winged dragon. It only served to make it crazier as it chased after Zhou Wen like a lunatic.

Six seconds! Zhou Wen continued counting.

Suddenly, a loud shriek sounded from the golden apple tree. Zhou Wen knew that An Sheng had succeeded. This was the signal he had succeeded.

Zhou Wen desperately tried to escape, but the black six-winged dragon closed in.

Zhou Wen held the banana fan in his hand and fanned at the black six-winged dragon, but all he could do was slow it down.

In the darkness, the Demonic Neonate controlled the ancient sword to stab at the black six-winged dragon, but this time, it didn’t dodge and continued pursuing Zhou Wen crazily.

The ancient sword stabbed into its neck, and the blade fully sank into its flesh. However, the black six-winged dragon seemed to have lost all feeling as it continued the chase.

As for Zhou Wen’s body, he couldn’t withstand the power of the Sigh of the King. His bones nearly shattered from the pressure, and his eyes, ears, mouth, nose, and wounds kept spurting out blood.

Damn it! Zhou Wen realized that he couldn’t escape the berserk black six-winged dragon.

I’m going to risk it! Zhou Wen gritted his teeth. He knew that he was really going all out this time as a desperate measure. Otherwise, he would definitely die today.

An Sheng grabbed the golden apple and rushed over frantically, but he was too far away. It was too late.

The enraged black six-winged dragon chased after Zhou Wen when he suddenly stopped. He held the sword and saber in each hand. He unleashed the Sigh of the King’s powers completely, ignoring the possibility of blasting apart his body. He slashed his saber and sword at the black six-winged dragon.

Transcendent Flying Immortal produced sword flashes and saber flashes that constantly flashed, transforming into

streams of light that streaked across the black six-winged dragon’s body.

The black six-winged dragon roared at the sky as its six wings flapped crazily and blocked Zhou Wen’s blade beams like a devilish blade.

Boom!

Zhou Wen’s body flew out like a pellet and slammed into the mountain wall a thousand meters away. He left a huge hole in the wall as half the mountain wall shattered and collapsed.

On the other side, four of the six wings of the black dragon had been severed. One and a half wings remained attached to its back—only one was intact.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 460 - The Death of the Black Six-Winged Dragon

460 The Death of the Black Six-Winged Dragon

Zhou Wen felt as though all his bones were fractured and his organs were bleeding. He failed to stand up despite struggling a few times.

The black six-winged dragon stared at Zhou Wen, its eyes filled with anger and killing intent. In the next second, it opened its mouth and spewed out devilish flames that resembled a volcanic eruption. The flames could destroy everything. Ignoring the fact that Zhou Wen was heavily injured and unable to resist, even if he wasn’t injured, it wasn’t likely that he could withstand this blow.

Zhou Wen could only watch as the demonic flames spewed out as he remained powerless to resist them.

An Sheng was still about a thousand meters away from Zhou Wen. He had a solemn expression as he placed the golden apple on the ground. Essence Energy erupted from his body as he made a strange pose with his hands as a glow coruscated between his brows.

At that instant, An Sheng’s figure blurred as though he had turned into a phantom. However, that was only an instant. Soon, his figure became corporeal again, but he wasn’t An Sheng. He had turned into the heavily injured Zhou Wen.

An Sheng appeared where Zhou Wen previously was.

Boom!

The black six-winged dragon’s terrifying demonic flames struck An Sheng. Even the mountain wall behind him was torn apart. Large swaths of the mountain walls cracked and dust scattered.

“Ah Sheng!” Zhou Wen was alarmed as he struggled to stand up, but he repeatedly fell to the ground.

The dust dissipated and An Sheng’s body was covered in blood. His armor had also shattered. He pressed his hands on the ground and wobbly stood up.

The raging black six-winged dragon opened its mouth to spew another mouthful of flames. Zhou Wen didn’t have any combat strength, and An Sheng’s situation wasn’t any better. All he could do was grit his teeth and summon Banana Fairy, allowing her to use Great Yin Wind at the black six-winged dragon.

The black six-winged dragon felt the Grand Yin Wind and turned its head to spit out a mouthful of demonic flames. It collided with the Grand Yin Wind and immediately scattered it. Banana Fairy was tossed in the air and was thrown far away, like a leaf dancing in the wind.

The black six-winged dragon also turned its head and looked at Zhou Wen. Finally, its gaze locked onto Zhou Wen. Its eyes were filled with bone-chilling hatred as it dragged its broken wings and, step by step, walked towards Zhou Wen. It looked like it wanted to devour him to dispel the hatred in its heart.

An Sheng summoned a bow and shot arrows at the six-winged dragon, but it ignored him. The arrows stabbed deep into the wound on its back.

Ignoring everything, the black six-winged dragon continued walking towards Zhou Wen as though there was nothing else in its eyes other than Zhou Wen.

“Gold apple, throw away the gold apple,” An Sheng shouted at Zhou Wen.

Zhou Wen picked up the golden apple on the ground and threw it into the distance, but the black six-winged dragon didn’t look at the golden apple. It firmly walked towards Zhou Wen, who found it difficult to even stand up. It opened its mouth, baring its terrifying fangs.

From the looks of it, there’s no escape for me today. I should have known not to enter dimensional zones in real life. Every time I enter a dimensional zone in real life, something bad happens. Could it be that I’m unlucky and there’s something the dimensional zones have against me? Zhou Wen thought in a self-deprecating manner.

An Sheng kept attacking the black six-winged dragon to attract its attention, but it ignored his attacks because it hated Zhou Wen to the core. Although An Sheng’s attacks injured the black six-winged dragon’s body, he was unable to seriously injure it.

Roar! The black six-winged dragon had already rushed in front of Zhou Wen and was about to devour him.

Zhou Wen’s mind raced, but he couldn’t think of a solution. An Sheng summoned a sword and leaped onto the black six-winged dragon’s back. He stabbed into its wound, but the black six-winged dragon didn’t seem to notice. The killing intent in its eyes burned intensely. It didn’t spew out any demonic flames. Only by gnawing on his bones and chewing on his flesh could it fully vent its anger.

Just as Zhou Wen was about to be devoured, a figure appeared in front of him, blocking the mouth of the black six-winged dragon.

Zhou Wen couldn’t help but cry out when he saw that Zhang Yuzhi was blocking him.

Zhang Yuzhi stood in front of Zhou Wen, but she had no intention of retreating. She clasped her hands together and placed them on her chest as she looked at the black six-winged dragon in a pleading manner. “I beg you, don’t hurt him, alright?”

“What’s the point of begging it? Move away quickly!” Zhou Wen thought to himself, Isn’t this courting death? Your tiny figure is only a snack for the black six-winged dragon. You’ll be devoured in a mouthful.

However, to Zhou Wen’s surprise, the black six-winged dragon didn’t bite down at all. It looked at Zhang Yuzhi with some hesitation.

Zhou Wen and An Sheng looked at Zhang Yuzhi in shock. An Sheng also stopped driving his sword deeper, afraid that he would anger the black six-winged dragon.

Zhang Yuzhi approached the black six-winged dragon and pressed her hand against its face. She gently said, “Please don’t be angry anymore, alright?”

The black six-winged dragon stared at Zhang Yuzhi as it let out a low whimper. It seemed to be about to fly into a rage and devour Zhang Yuzhi who was right by its mouth. However, it didn’t move. It seemed to be hesitant.

Whoosh!

Suddenly, a blood-red light burst out from the black six-winged dragon's chest. Blood spewed out like a fountain, bringing with it a purple beam of light. It was the Demonic Neonate's ancient sword.

The black six-winged dragon had ignored the ancient sword when it stabbed into its neck. However, at some point in time, the ancient sword had pierced its body and entered its heart. At this moment, it broke through its heart and heavily injured the black six-winged dragon.

Boom!

The black six-winged dragon's demonic flames erupted as terrifying power instantly reduced the entire area to ruins. An Sheng's first reaction was to flash in front of Zhou Wen and raise a shield to block the terrifying demonic flames.

The shield instantly shattered and turned to ash. An Sheng held Zhou Wen with one hand and pressed his other hand on the ground. Together with Zhou Wen, they instantly vanished into the ground.

However, the terrifying force reduced the ground to dust. Zhou Wen felt An Sheng heavily slam into him before the two of them flew out. In the next second, he felt a large amount of cold seawater surge in.

When the terrifying demonic flames stopped, half the island had been destroyed, forming a crater a thousand meters in diameter. The seawater gushed in and Zhou Wen and An Sheng barely floated up. Banana Fairy had pulled them out of the sea.

The two of them were almost half-dead. Their gazes landed on the spot where the black six-winged dragon was. Only the spot it stood on wasn't destroyed. It stood in the middle

of the crater like a stone pillar, staring at Zhang Yuzhi with a strange look in its eyes.

Zhang Yuzhi was so close to the black six-winged dragon, but she didn’t suffer any damage. From her appearance, it was likely that despite the black six-winged dragon unleashing its power in that situation, it still avoided her.

“I’m sorry… I’m sorry…” Zhang Yuzhi hugged the black six-winged dragon’s chin and cried.

Boom!

The black six-winged dragon collapsed to the ground. The vitality in its body gradually dissipated, but it didn’t close its eyes. It stared at Zhang Yuzhi as though puzzled. There was also sorrow, anger, and indescribable complexity in its eyes.

Banana Fairy tried her best to pull Zhou Wen and An Sheng to the platform. Both of them were covered in injuries, but after being washed by the seawater, there wasn’t much blood on their bodies. They fell to the ground without the strength to even sit up as their bodies ached terribly.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 461 - God“s Arrival

461 God“s Arrival

Zhou Wen looked at Zhang Yuzhi, who was crying in front of the black six-winged dragon’s corpse. Just as he was about to say something, he suddenly saw a golden beam rise from the seawater.

A golden apple floated out of the water amidst the pillar of light and slowly rose into the air.

The golden apple was clearly the one Zhou Wen had thrown out. At that moment, it seemed to be alive. It floated in the air and emitted a resplendent divine light.

A golden beam of light descended from the sky like a god. That figure seemed to be condensed from golden light as a terrifying pressure descended. It was like a sea of death, as though it was a supreme existence in the world.

The golden light descended from the golden beam, stopping only when it reached the golden apple. It reached out and grabbed the golden apple.

Almost at the same time, Zhou Wen and company heard the indescribable divine voice in their minds. “Human, you have completed the trials of my race in the human world. Leave your names behind. You will receive the rewards my race will bestow.”

“I don’t want it.” Zhang Yuzhi shook her head and said, the tears on her face still remaining.

Zhou Wen and An Sheng exchanged looks before An Sheng nodded at Zhou Wen. After some thought, he said to the golden light, “Poison.”

Boom!

Once Zhou Wen said that, the entire island trembled as though the universe’s birth was repeating as the time passed. The destroyed island rapidly recovered under the golden glow.

The seawater retreated and the ground returned to normal. The rocks flew back and the grass sprouted again. A golden apple tree formed a golden apple.

Under the golden apple tree, a black dragon appeared. It looked very similar to the one Zhou Wen and company had killed, but there were some differences.

As for the black six-winged dragon corpse that Zhou Wen and company had killed, it gradually disintegrated and vanished, only leaving behind a dimensional crystal.

There was an additional item under the apple tree. It was a golden monolith. On the top of the monument was the word: “Poison.” There was nothing below.

“I’ll bestow you a golden apple in the name of the gods.” The golden light held the golden apple as the apple shimmered. Moments later, the golden light gradually faded as the luster on the golden apple converged before slowly flying towards Zhou Wen.

When the golden light and beam vanished, the golden apple landed in Zhou Wen’s hand. Although it was still the golden apple, Zhou Wen felt that it was somewhat different.

“How do we get out?” Zhou Wen couldn’t help but ask when he saw the golden light vanish.

“Let’s try retracing our steps,” An Sheng said.

“Let’s go.” Zhou Wen helped Zhang Yuzhi up and picked up the dimensional crystal that the black six-winged dragon left behind.

It was a skill crystal, but he had no idea what skill it was. Furthermore, Mythical Crystals had high attribute requirements. It wasn’t something that could be easily absorbed.

The trio once again arrived at the pool. This time, the pool directly sucked them in. When they came out of the waterfall again, they realized that they had returned to the original island. Their boat was moored on the beach and the distant islands could be vaguely seen.

“Do we still head for the other dimensional zones?” An Sheng asked Zhou Wen.

“Our injuries are so heavy. I don’t know when we will recover. Why would we go?” Zhou Wen felt certain that the dimensional zones in real life had a vendetta with him. It was best if he didn’t head to any dimensional zones in reality.

The trio boarded the boat. Zhou Wen and An Sheng were seriously injured, so it wasn’t appropriate for them to move around. Zhang Yuzhi drove the boat while An Sheng was in charge of directing her as they returned in the same way towards the Peninsula of Gods.

“We have a total of two spoils of war. The golden apple and black six-winged dragons’ Essence Energy Skill Crystal.

Yuzhi, choose one.” Zhou Wen placed the two items in front of Zhang Yuzhi.

If it wasn’t for Zhang Yuzhi, he might have already died. He wouldn’t have been able to hold on until the Demonic Neonate’s ancient sword tore out of its heart. Zhang Yuzhi really deserved it.

“There’s no need. I don’t want to see anything related to it.” Zhang Yuzhi shook her head.

“Are you alright?” Zhou Wen asked Zhang Yuzhi.

Zhang Yuzhi’s condition was clearly odd. She seemed completely heartbroken over a dimensional creature. Furthermore, despite the black six-winged dragon being in such a rage, its final strike didn’t injure her. It was clearly a little odd.

Zhou Wen guessed that the Essence Energy Art which Zhang Yuzhi might have cultivated had something to do with her Life Providence. Zhou Wen had previously heard that some Life Providences could communicate with dimensional creatures, but Zhang Yuzhi’s ability was clearly not as simple as communication.

“I’m fine. I’ll get used to it.” Zhang Yuzhi forced a smile, but it was obvious that she was still in a terrible mood.

Seeing that she really didn’t want it, to the point of finding it a little loathsome, Zhou Wen offered the two items to An Sheng.

An Sheng took the dimensional crystal and left the golden apple to Zhou Wen. “Take this. Who knows, it might be useful in the future.”

Zhou Wen didn’t stand on ceremony with An Sheng as he put away the golden apple.

Zhang Yuzhi didn’t wish to talk about the incident on the island at all, so Zhou Wen and An Sheng didn’t ask further.

Along the way, Zhou Wen and company saw a group of Sky Cranes tear through the air and quickly arrive in front of their boat. Zhang Xiao descended from the back of Sky Crane. When he saw Zhou Wen’s and An Sheng’s severe injuries, his expression changed drastically. He ignored them and walked straight to Zhang Yuzhi and asked anxiously, “Yuzhi, are you alright?”

“I’m fine. Thanks to the protection from Zhou Wen and An Sheng, I wasn’t injured. They were severely injured. We have to thank them properly,” Zhang Yuzhi said.

Zhou Wen and An Sheng immediately understood that Zhang Yuzhi was afraid that the Zhang family would cause trouble for them.

“Thank you for protecting Yuzhi. If there’s anything you need in the future, feel free to inform me.” Zhang Xiao said to Zhou Wen and An Sheng before getting an Epic expert from the Zhang family to use rare healing spells to treat their injuries. At the same time, the Sky Crane Team escorted Zhang Yuzhi back.

After returning to the harbor, Zhou Wen and An Sheng had greatly recovered. The Zhang family quickly left with Zhang Yuzhi, as though they were protecting a real princess.

“I heard that the Zhang family’s little princess is very doted upon. Originally, I thought it was because the Zhang family only has one daughter, but from the looks of it, it’s not that simple. It might be a reason, but the most important reason

is probably related to her Life Providence," An Sheng said to Zhou Wen when he saw the Zhang family escort disappear with Zhang Yuzhi.

Zhou Wen nodded. He naturally could tell that there was something wrong with Zhang Yuzhi. Recalling how she had slept in a coffin on the plane, it only implied a greater problem.

"Don't think too much about it. Let's find a place to recuperate. With such serious injuries, I'm afraid it will take some time for us to recover. Fortunately, the Zhang family helped us with their healing skills. Otherwise, it's hard to say if we would even be able to participate in the auction the day after tomorrow," An Sheng said.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 462 - Resetting Life Providence

462 Resetting Life Providence

After finding a hotel, the two injured men went back to their individual rooms to rest.

The Zhang family’s Epic expert had very powerful healing abilities, but it was impossible for him to completely heal their damaged organs and bones. Even with their physiques and self-recovery abilities, it would be difficult for them to engage in combat in the next couple of weeks.

Zhou Wen lay on the bed with his phone in one hand and the golden apple in the other as he took a picture of it.

Although it was a gift from a god, this thing didn’t have a manual. The god didn’t tell Zhou Wen what it was for. All Zhou Wen could do was study it himself.

Thankfully, Zhou Wen had the mysterious phone. After snapping a picture of the golden apple, he saw its information appear on his phone.

‘Golden Apple: A treasure of the Aegeans. Randomly changes a Life Providence once.’

Zhou Wen looked at the information and couldn’t help but be taken aback. He never expected that something in this world could change a Life Providence.

The changing of a Life Providence was undoubtedly an opportunity for those who had a crappy Life Providence. However, Zhou Wen was rather satisfied with his Life

Providence and had no intention of changing it. The Golden Apple was useless to him.

Zhou Wen thought for a moment and put the Golden Apple into his chaos space. Although this item was useless to him, it was extremely valuable. It was very likely worth more than a Mythical Companion Egg.

A Life Providence wasn’t something that could be decided by humans. It was related to the Essence Energy Art one cultivated, and at the same time, it had something to do with one’s physique and other factors. Therefore, there was huge variability.

Even if one cultivated a top-grade Essence Energy Art and had excellent conditions, he couldn’t prevent himself from getting a relatively useless Life Providence.

Just like a senior from the Dugu family, he naturally cultivated the best Essence Energy Art. His physique wasn’t in any way bad since he had the inheritance of the Dugu family.

Furthermore, that person had been talented from a young age. He picked things up things quickly and was considered the future hope of the family. They had spent a lot of effort and resources to nurture him.

However, when he condensed his Life Providence, the Life Providence he condensed was called God of No Deaths.

At that time, everyone thought that with such an impressive name, it would definitely be amazing. However, they realized that with the Life Providence of the God of No Death, no matter what skills or weapons he used, he was unable to harm his opponent.

His Life Providence prevented him from killing anyone; he couldn’t even injure others. If a person couldn’t even kill the weakest dimensional creature, wouldn’t that make him a cripple?

Such an example was not rare in the six families. Although there were only a few extreme cases, many still hoped to change their Life Providences.

Zhou Wen had heard from An Sheng that the Cape family once produced an unlucky Life Providence. It was truly unlucky.

If he sold the Golden Apple to such a person, he could probably exchange it for a Mythical Companion Egg. That person would definitely agree if he had one.

Before the auction began, Zhou Wen didn’t go anywhere. He just rested in his room and kept grinding the game’s dungeons.

After the battle with the black six-winged dragon, the Mutated Stone Chi’s armor was shattered, so the Mutated Stone Chi naturally died. Zhou Wen had lost an important piece of defensive equipment and could only grind for an ordinary Chi. Although it didn’t have a high defense like the Mutated Stone Chi, he had no other choice. Without the stone artifact, there was probably no way for a second Mutated Stone Chi to appear.

If it wasn’t for the defense of the Mutated Stone Chi armor, he might have died while fighting the black six-winged dragon.

He spent two days grinding in the Zhuolu battlefield with the baby tiger, but the Chi armor didn’t drop. Instead, another White Shadow of Poison appeared.

The baby tiger only increased a drop rate, but what dropped wasn’t within Zhou Wen’s control. He couldn’t get whatever he wanted like Wang Lu.

“The auction is about to begin. It’s time for us to go.” An Sheng called Zhou Wen regarding the auction.

Zhou Wen followed An Sheng to the auction. When he arrived at the venue, he took out an auction booklet. Apart from the Invisibility Cloak, there were many good items for sale.

Although there weren’t any Mythical Companion Eggs, there were plenty of Epic Companion Eggs. Many of them were exotic. Even an angel Companion Egg was sold.

What surprised Zhou Wen the most was that there were actually constellation Companion Eggs. The one that appeared at the auction was an Equuleus Companion Egg. However, the booklet didn’t clearly state what an Equuleus Companion Egg was.

From the looks of it, we are rather fated. I never expected to meet you again so quickly.” Zhou Wen was reading the booklet in the hall when someone walked over and sat down beside him.

“Li Mobai?” Zhou Wen turned his head and realized that it was Li Mobai.

However, when he took a closer look at Li Mobai, he realized that something was amiss. His aura was very weak, as though he was a normal person who had never cultivated before.

“Didn’t Li Xuan tell you? My cultivation is crippled,” Li Mobai said indifferently.

“It happened on the day of the birthday party?” Zhou Wen sized up Li Mobai in surprise and asked.

“I originally wanted to use my own Life Soul to promote Li Xuan’s growth, but that punk was disappointing. It failed.” Li Mobai briefly explained the situation of him using the Evil King Gu to help Li Xuan advance to the Epic stage.

Zhou Wen didn’t believe Li Mobai’s words. He looked at him and said, “In that case, you were doing it for Li Xuan’s good? None of that makes sense. Li Xuan nearly died in Guide Ancient City.”

Li Mobai said indifferently, “It’s not necessarily for his own good. I just want to achieve my goals. He’s just a tool to me, but unfortunately, he’s a useless tool. Didn’t you know that Xu Miantu was also working for me back at Guide Ancient City? If they were to deal with my stupid brother together, do you think he would still be alive?”

Zhou Wen was immediately taken aback. Li Mobai’s words seemed to make sense.

“What about the lotus pond? If I hadn’t been there…” Before Zhou Wen could finish his sentence, Li Mobai interrupted him.

“Don’t you think that you should have been the one who died?” Li Mobai said expressionlessly.

Zhou Wen carefully recalled the situation back then and couldn’t help but feel somewhat taken aback. He realized that it was indeed the case. From beginning to end, Xu Miantu’s target seemed to be him, not Li Xuan.

“I originally thought that he was a member of the Li family after all. With the same blood flowing in him, he should be

capable of something. I didn’t expect him to be a useless fellow. To wash a pig is to waste both water and soap, so he might as well be a pig for the rest of his life. Help me tell him when you return. In the future, no one will trouble him again. Tell him to just be his third young master of the Li family,” Li Mobai said.

Zhou Wen didn’t know if this matter was true or not, nor could he believe that Li Mobai was telling the truth. He had to wait until he returned to ask Li Xuan about it before he could confirm the veracity of the matter. Therefore, he didn’t wish to tell Li Mobai too much.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 463 - Downloading the Temple Dungeon

463 Downloading the Temple Dungeon

Li Mobai had no intention of saying anything to Zhou Wen. He got up and left the hall with a girl.

The girl followed behind Li Mobai silently. From beginning to end, she hadn't said a word, as if she was Li Mobai's bodyguard.

"I heard that Li Mobai from the Li family is quite a figure. Having met him today, he's indeed extraordinary. Even though his cultivation is ruined, he doesn't seem dispirited at all," An Sheng said.

"Can he start all over again?" Zhou Wen asked.

"Difficult. If he were to forcefully transfer his Life Soul away, his Life Providence and foundation will definitely be destroyed, making him inferior to an ordinary person. It's impossible for him to cultivate the same Essence Energy Art. He can't even cultivate the same Essence Energy Art that uses the same Essence Energy sea. He needs to cultivate a Essence Energy Art in other spots to start all over. Furthermore, him restoring a Life Providence and Life Soul will probably be ten times harder than the average person. After all, when a person condenses a Life Providence for the first time, he has already used up most of his potential. To condense it again, there will be some inborn flaws. Even if he succeeds in condensing one, it will be somewhat lacking," An Sheng said.

After pausing for a moment, An Sheng continued, “However, a person’s strength doesn’t just depend on the strength of their combat strength. No matter how weak Li Mobai’s Life Providence is, he cannot be underestimated. If you become his enemy in the future, you must be careful.”

Zhou Wen nodded. It was true that the worth of a person who could be so ruthless to himself couldn’t simply be measured by his strength.

The An family was considered a wealthy family in the East District, but they could only sit in the hall like the others. The Zhang family likely had an individual room, so Zhou Wen didn’t see Zhang Yuzhi in the hall.

After the auction began, Zhou Wen watched by the side, having no intention of taking action.

The Equuleus Companion Egg was won by someone from the West District, so Zhou Wen ultimately didn’t learn what Companion Beast it was.

In the midst of this, Zhou Wen saw Li Mobai bid a few times. Apart from some of West District Companion Eggs, he had also bid on a Essence Energy Art named “Constellation Artwork.”

The final appearance was the Invisibility Cloak Companion Egg, and the competition exceeded Zhou Wen’s imagination. The average person had too few channels to obtain a Mythical Companion Beast, so even if they knew the possibility of incubating the cloak was low, many tycoons still wanted to give it a try.

Zhou Wen wasn’t afraid of spending money, but in the end, the price of the Invisibility Cloak went out of control. An Sheng had already hit his limit and had repeatedly

requested An Tianzuo to obtain more funding, but in the end, he couldn’t obtain the funds. Yet, there were still people bidding for it. In the end, he could only watch helplessly as the Invisibility Cloak was won by a guest in a VIP room.

“I didn’t expect the price offered for the Invisibility Cloak to be much higher than the last time,” An Sheng said helplessly.

Zhou Wen was helpless as well. Although he had plenty of Essence Crystals on hand, he couldn’t just use them as money. Furthermore, the price was just too high.

After the auction ended, Zhou Wen didn’t immediately leave the Peninsula of Gods. He planned on taking this opportunity to visit Athena’s temple to see if he could find the tiny palm symbol or his trip would have been for nothing.

This time, Zhou Wen made up his mind not to enter. He would just look from the outside.

The humans on the Peninsula of Gods had discovered a temple. The temple didn’t have a name, only a shield-shaped carving. On the shield, there was also a portrait of a beautiful goddess’s head. Many people guessed that it was the Goddess of Wisdom’s temple because her head portrait was often engraved on a shield in ancient times. It represented protection and resistance against invasion.

However, up to now, no one had been able to prove that it was the Goddess of Wisdom’s temple. Furthermore, the temple had not been fully explored and many people had died inside.

Now, the Peninsula of Gods allowed anyone to enter the temple to explore so as to attract more hunters.

Zhou Wen had no intention of taking the risk to enter the temple. He purely wanted to see if there was a tiny palm symbol. Furthermore, his injuries hadn’t healed, so it was inconvenient for him to fight.

An Sheng rented a car and took him to the temple. Three hours later, the two arrived in front of a massive stone palace.

Zhou Wen saw the shield symbol on the palace door and the side profile of the woman in the middle of the shield.

This woman’s head portrait was clearly of West District heritage. It was different from what Zhou Wen had seen on the anchor symbol.

Apart from the shield and the woman’s portrait, there were also many ancient European-style patterns along the side. Before Zhou Wen could carefully look at the patterns, the mysterious phone automatically vibrated. Zhou Wen took out his phone and aimed it at the palace. The camera function automatically locked onto a tiny palm symbol on a pattern.

He pressed the shutter button and the screen showed a download. It delighted Zhou Wen. From the looks of it, the dimensional zones in the West District can be downloaded as well. It will be great if I can download all the temples of the twelve Olympian gods as game dungeons. It would be best if I could download the temples of the twelve Titans, Chaos, and the five primordial deities…

Zhou Wen was only musing. Ignoring the fact that most of the temples of the twelve Olympian gods’ had yet to be discovered, there were no traces of the Titans’ temple. Even those that had been discovered were likely controlled by the

families of the Peninsula of Gods. Ordinary people were unable to approach them.

Just as he was thinking about what other dimensional zones he could visit, he suddenly saw a group of people escorting a person to the temple.

“Brother, who is that? He appears famous?” An Sheng asked a passerby and pointed at the man who appeared like a celebrity.

“You don’t even know about Lucas? He’s the pride of our Peninsula of Gods. He advanced to the Epic stage at the age of twenty and killed the Cyclops single-handedly. At sea, he fought Leviathan… He even created the world-famous Lucas Battle Aura…” The passerby praised him to the heavens.

Zhou Wen realized that this man’s results were so illustrious that he was definitely an extremely powerful figure. He couldn’t help but stop for a moment.

He imagined that the man was here to explore the temple, but to his surprise, he held a fan meeting at the entrance of the temple.

“Lucas… Lucas…” The fans shouted his name loudly.

“Is this Lucas really that powerful?” After the passerby left, Zhou Wen asked An Sheng in disbelief.

“Perhaps it’s different from common folklore. I’ve heard of his name before, but I’ve never seen him before. He’s only active around the Peninsula of Gods. He’s a famous independent hunter. He’s about thirty years old. In the past, he had quite a few impressive results. He’s quite famous here at the Peninsula of Gods. As for the Lucas Battle Aura, I’ve never heard of it before,” An Sheng said.

“The two of you… That’s right… I’m talking about you! Foreign fans, let The Great Lucas give you an autograph…”

Zhou Wen and An Sheng were chatting by the periphery of the crowd, they didn’t know why Lucas would suddenly point at them as if he had a screw loose.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 464 - The Great Lucas

464 The Great Lucas

Zhou Wen turned his head and saw that they were the only ones from the East District. The others looked Mediterranean. Clearly, the two fans that Lucas mentioned were likely him and An Sheng.

Many of Lucas's fans looked at them enviously.

"Don't doubt it. Don't be excited, my friend. It's you. I, Lucas, can't let you return disappointed after you came all this way here. Come, my friend, take The Great Lucas's autograph and enjoy a luxurious day tour sponsored by Lucas. Leave pleasant memories of your stay here in the beautiful Peninsula of Gods. When you return, you can tell your friends in the East District how beautiful the Peninsula of Gods is. Of course, tell people how handsome The Great Lucas is," Lucas said as he pointed at the two of them.

"Ahem. Young Master Wen, I don't think he has any ill intentions. I've heard about his style before. We should respect his enthusiasm and kind intentions. We need to be gentlemanly and polite," An Sheng whispered to Zhou Wen.

Hence, Zhou Wen and An Sheng boarded the temporary stage under the envy of many fans.

"Come on, buddy. Where do you want The Great Lucas autograph signed? On your chest, or your butt… I'm just joking… I only sign on the butts of women…" Lucas said with a smile.

Zhou Wen really couldn’t appreciate Lucas’s humor, much less allow him to scribble on his clothes. He took out a notebook and handed it to him. “Please sign here.”

“Friends from the East District are indeed reserved. Alright, as you wish.” Lucas waved his pen rapidly and signed his name on Zhou Wen’s notebook.

“What about you, my friend?” Lucas looked at An Sheng.

“I’ll have to trouble you to sign here,” An Sheng said as he flipped a page and pointed at a blank spot in the notebook.

“You East District people are too strict. Young people should be more relaxed. Don’t be embarrassed to express your love. Alright, I should sign something special for you.” As Lucas spoke, he signed again. This time, he did not sign a name but wrote a sentence.

“Dedicated to my dear friend, your greatest love, Lucas.” He spoke it out loud as he wrote before signing his name.

Zhou Wen didn’t know what expression An Sheng had, but he nearly burst out laughing.

An Sheng said expressionlessly to Lucas, “Thank you for your autograph. We still have matters to attend to. I’m afraid we have to leave.”

“Don’t be in such a rush to leave. There’s still the luxurious tour that’s fully paid for. You have a chance of coming into close contact with the mighty Lucas and seeing how I hunt dimensional creatures. Whatever is received today will be yours. Today is your lucky day. Come on, young friends.” He wrapped his arms around Zhou Wen and An Sheng’s shoulders. Then, he said to the fans, “Thank you for your

support. Today, I'll be entertaining my fans from the East District, so pardon me."

With that said, he handsomely snapped his fingers and a Companion Beast that looked like a dinosaur appeared in front of him. He flew up and waved at Zhou Wen and An Sheng. "Don't be shy. There's no need to be too pleasantly surprised. Try having a ride on the Tyrannosaurus Rex. This is what you deserve."

"Lucas… Lucas…" A group of fans cheered. They were clapping for the lucky Zhou Wen and An Sheng, as though encouraging them to be braver.

Zhou Wen and An Sheng looked at each other before An Sheng nodded. Then, they flipped onto the back of the Tyrannosaurus. Lucas handsomely patted it and said, "Old Pal, let's set off."

The Tyrannosaurus roared cooperatively, causing the young fans to cheer crazily. Then, it ran to the opposite side of the street.

Zhou Wen and An Sheng were dumbfounded. They had heard Lucas talk so much at the temple entrance and had imagined that he was going in to explore the temple. To their surprise, he didn't enter the temple and instead rode the Tyrannosaurus down the street.

Many youths from the Peninsula of Gods let out cheers when they saw him. Lucas also greeted them handsomely.

Is this fellow a celebrity or an Epic expert? Zhou Wen wore an odd expression.

After running for a while, the Tyrannosaurus came in front of a Metalwork Temple. Lucas showed his pass and took Zhou

Wen and An Sheng in.

“Didn’t you say that only residents of the Peninsula of Gods can enter the Metalwork Temple?” Zhou Wen asked An Sheng in puzzlement.

An Sheng clearly didn’t know why Lucas was able to take them in. On the other hand, Lucas said coolly, “The Great Lucas is the image ambassador of freelance hunters in the Federation. Here at the Peninsula of Gods, I’m the only one who can bring you in here. Now, you should understand how rare this is, right?”

“Great Lucas, can I take a few photos in front of the temple’s entrance?” Zhou Wen hurriedly said to Lucas when he saw the small palm symbol as they approached the entrance.

“Haha, you’re really a smart little imp. Are you taking the opportunity to have a photo with me? Of course you can. You are the VIP today,” said Lucas warmly as he wrapped his muscular arm around Zhou Wen.

With no choice, Zhou Wen had no choice but to take a few pictures with Lucas before seizing the opportunity when An Sheng had a photo with Lucas to snap the tiny palm symbol with his mysterious phone.

He had originally thought that he wouldn’t be able to enter the Metalwork Temple, but to his surprise, he was able to download it thanks to this chance. He really wanted to thank this mighty Lucas.

After taking a group photo, Lucas led them into the Metalwork Temple.

The temple was like a blacksmith shop. It was filled with machinery used for forging. There was a huge steel furnace,

work platforms, and some tools. Zhou Wen couldn’t name them.

However, the heat in the furnace was hot. There was actually liquid-like metal boiling in them. From time to time, one could see Fire Sprites jumping inside.

“Are those Fire-Elemental Sprites?” Zhou Wen asked as he pointed at a scarlet ball of fire.

“It’s about the same. However, its real name should be the Steel Cauldron Fire Sprite. It’s a type of elemental sprite. It has high temperatures and can spew out high-temperature flames. It’s a very powerful Legendary creature.” As Lucas spoke, he summoned a long-handled ax. He rode on the Tyrannosaurus and slashed at it with a cool slash. He struck the Steel Cauldron Fire Sprite and destroyed it, sending sparks flying.

Lucas raised a shield in his other hand to block the sparks, preventing Zhou Wen and An Sheng from being affected.

Having killed the Steel Cauldron Fire Sprite, Lucas smiled at them and said, “What a pity. There weren’t any dimensional crystals or Companion Eggs. From the looks of it, your luck ain’t that good.”

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 465 - Fire Furnace Queen

465 Fire Furnace Queen

Lucas rode on the Tyrannosaurus as they stormed through the Metalwork Temple. He killed several Steel Cauldron Fire Sprites and several robot dimensional creatures. They were instantly killed in one strike, making him look rather powerful.

However, his luck was clearly average. After killing more than ten Legendary creatures, only one Strength dimensional crystal dropped. It was even at the Legendary stage.

“We’ve finally gained something. From the looks of it, your luck isn’t too bad. Take it. Don’t stand on ceremony with the mighty Lucas. This is what you deserve.” Lucas handed the dimensional crystal to Zhou Wen before taking out his phone. He took a selfie with Zhou Wen and himself together with the dimensional crystal.

Zhou Wen broke out into a sweat as he thought to himself, This person is really a piece of work. There’s really no limit to this world when it comes to surprises. To think that such a person is a famous Epic expert from the Peninsula of Gods. I really didn’t expect it.

Lucas led them through the hall’s corridor and constantly killed various dimensional creatures. However, they were all at the Legendary stage. Most of them were Steel Cauldron Fire Sprites with the occasional robot.

Suddenly, a flaming person that resembled magma appeared in front of him. Zhou Wen immediately recognized it. It was an Epic Fire Sprite that they had seen previously.

“You are really lucky to encounter an Epic Fire Sprite. From the looks of it, I have encountered a true opponent today. Young lads, watch the battle from the side. If the Fire Sprite drops a Companion Egg, you will really be lucky.” Lucas made the two of them alight the Tyrannosaurus before charging at the Fire Sprite.

The Fire Sprite was nearly three meters tall. When Lucas fought the Fire Sprite while riding the Tyrannosaurus, Zhou Wen frowned.

To be honest, the Fire Sprite had quite good fire-elemental powers and it wasn’t afraid of being injured. It was indeed quite strong, but Lucas was one of the famous Epic experts in the Peninsula of Gods. He actually had a tough time defeating the Fire Sprite.

The battle looked gaudy as the gigantic ax and shield bombarded the flames. In addition, the roars of the Tyrannosaurus and the Fire Sprite made it seem like a battle between Epic monsters.

If this was a movie, Zhou Wen could give it 99% for the visual effects.

However, from Zhou Wen’s point of view, Lucas was too much a noob. He had average combat talent and was quite pedestrian.

With an Epic Tyrannosaurus, an Epic Companion Beast weapon, and Epic armor, he only managed to tie with the Fire Sprite. Apart from ‘noob,’ Zhou Wen didn’t have any other words to describe him.

“Is this really a famous Epic expert whose name resounds in the Peninsula of Gods?” Zhou Wen looked at An Sheng and asked.

“Yes, I think so.” An Sheng’s expression was calm. Clearly, he had seen all kinds of things happen before, so he wasn’t too surprised.

Zhou Wen naturally refused to believe that the Peninsula of Gods was only at that level. If the top Epic expert in the Peninsula of Gods was at this level, the resources here would probably have been snatched away by other factions.

After fighting for more than half an hour, the intense battle ended with Lucas’s victory. However, the Fire Sprite also left injuries on him.

Lucas even showed Zhou Wen and An Sheng his injuries as though he was flaunting them. He even took a few selfies as a memento.

However, Lucas was really a generous person. When the Fire Sprite dropped a Essence Energy Skill Crystal, he actually gave it to Zhou Wen and An Sheng according to his promise. However, he still naturally took the picture to commemorate this. He did all of this with great familiarity.

“You sure are lucky to have a Fire Sprite’s crystal drop. This is a good item that has about a 3% drop rate,” said Lucas as he stuffed the crystal into An Sheng’s hands. He then asked, “Let’s add each other as friends. I’ll send you the pictures later.”

“I haven’t installed that software. Let Zhou Wen add you.” An Sheng reacted quickly and directed this at Zhou Wen.

Zhou Wen wasn’t eloquent, so he added Lucas as a friend. Then, he saw that he had sent the photo they had just taken, along with some stage lines.

“Although I’ve suffered some injuries, it’s worth it to let fans from the East District witness Lucas’s strength and charm.”

A few of them were photos of him getting injured while fighting the Fire Sprite. There was also the picture of him giving Zhou Wen the crystal.

The comments were filled with envy. There were all sorts of comments that claimed how awesome it was. Some even praised Lucas for his invincibility.

It’s really a waste that this bro… isn’t a celebrity… Zhou Wen thought to himself.

Lucas led the two of them to continue hunting dimensional creatures in the Metalwork Temple. He was clearly very familiar with this place as he traversed the corridors that resembled a spiderweb and found quite a number of dimensional creatures.

“Lads, it’s time to rest. As a great hunter, you have to know how to enjoy life. Work and play need to be combined to ensure that you are always in your optimum combat state.” As Lucas spoke, he took out a folded chair and table from a box on the Tyrannosaurus’s back. Inside it was an umbrella.

This fellow actually made it seem like he was drinking coffee by the sea. He set up all sorts of things in the Metalwork Temple. Even food was prepared. It looked like a sumptuous spread.

Just as Zhou Wen and An Sheng were about to start eating, they heard snapping sounds. Lucas had taken another selfie

with them before quickly posting a few words on the Internet.

Zhou Wen saw Lucas's message. It was the picture that had just been taken. On it was the tagline: "Hero's mid-game break."

Zhou Wen and An Sheng continued eating by themselves. Not to mention, the food brought by Lucas was quite good. Zhou Wen had never tried such exotic food, so he ended up eating quite a lot.

The three of them were eating when they suddenly felt the temperature in their surroundings rise. The air that was originally extremely hot because of the huge steel furnaces was now unbearable. Their hair almost charred.

Zhou Wen turned his head and saw a burning dimensional creature with a pair of butterfly-like flaming wings. On its head was a flaming crown. It was a dimensional creature that had flown out of another palace.

"What's that?" Zhou Wen asked curiously.

"No good. It's the Fire Furnace Queen. Get up. Let's go." Lucas was surprisingly fast. Ignoring the chairs and table, he jumped onto the Tyrannosaurus's back and shouted to Zhou Wen and An Sheng.

"Why are you running? Get rid of it. It would be nice if a Companion Egg dropped." Zhou Wen had heard the passerby mention that the Fire Furnace Queen was a mutated Epic creature. She possessed very powerful flaming powers and was extremely rare.

"I can fight her alone, but you will definitely be implicated if you are here. How can the mighty Lucas allow you to be

injured? I’ll fight her again after I take you out…” Before Lucas could finish his sentence, Zhou Wen summoned a sword and casually slashed out a sword beam.

The sword beam shot out and cleaved apart the Fire Furnace Queen’s body. Flames splattered everywhere as a Companion Egg dropped.

The mighty Lucas gaped in astonishment as he stared at the Overlord Sword in Zhou Wen’s hand. His jaw nearly dropped to the ground.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 466 - The Invisibility Cloak Is Stolen

466 The Invisibility Cloak Is Stolen

What’s up with this fellow? He doesn’t seem to be even twenty years old? He should still be a student, right? How can he so easily kill the Fire Furnace Queen? Countless thoughts flashed through Lucas’s mind.

That sword’s beam is way too powerful, isn’t it? The Fire Furnace Queen is an extremely powerful existence even among Epic creatures. Yet, she couldn’t even withstand one strike. It must be because the sword is too powerful. Otherwise, he wouldn’t have such strength at such a young age. That’s not right! Only by advancing to the Epic stage can he incubate an Epic Companion Beast. That means he’s at least at the Epic stage…

Zhou Wen had already picked up the Fire Furnace Queen Companion Egg. It was still very useful. With powerful fire-elemental powers, she performed pretty well in many human fields.

“Young lad, you’re pretty strong. You’re almost on par with me. Have you graduated from college?” Lucas laughed as he walked forward and asked. He thought to himself, This fellow might only look young and rather young. In fact, he’s already quite old. He’s probably in his thirties like. Yes, that must be the case.

“Not yet. I’m still schooling,” Zhou Wen answered.

Lucas froze when he heard that. He forced a smile and continued asking, “What year are you in?”

Lucas calculated inwardly. I advanced to the Epic stage at the age of twenty just as I graduated from university. The East District should be the same as our Peninsula of Gods. They are all about seventeen years old when they enter college. If he's in his fourth year, he should be twenty. To advance to the Epic stage at the same age means the mighty Lucas didn't lose.

"I'm a freshman," Zhou Wen said as he put away the Companion Egg.

"Did you attend university late?" Lucas found it unbelievable that Zhou Wen had advanced to the Epic stage at seventeen.

"No. I attended university at a normal age."

"Have you been retained?"

"No."

Lucas looked at Zhou Wen with an odd expression. After some time, he wrapped his arm around Zhou Wen's shoulder and said, "To have such achievements at such a young age, from the looks of it, you will be as great as Lucas in the future."

Zhou Wen thought to himself that this person was really thick-skinned, but he wasn't a bad person.

"Lucas, thank you for your hospitality today. It's time we bid you farewell. If you have a chance of coming to the East District in the future, contact us," Zhou Wen said to Lucas.

"Where are you going? Anyway, it's on the way. I'll take you there." Lucas patted his Tyrannosaurus and thought to himself. Thankfully, I have such a domineering Companion

Beast mount. This isn’t something that can be easily obtained. I spent a large sum of money to obtain it.

“Thank you for your kind intentions, but there’s no need. We can go back ourselves,” An Sheng said as he summoned a mount.

When Lucas saw the mount, his eyes widened. It was also a Tyrannosaurus. Although it was about the same size as his Tyrannosaurus Rex, it was made of metal. It looked like a metal statue, not a living creature.

Is this an Epic Mutated Metal Tyrannosaurus? On the list of Companion Beasts released by the Federation, Lucas had seen the introduction of this Mutated Metal Tyrannosaurus. It was far stronger than the Tyrannosaurus Rex.

After Zhou Wen and An Sheng bade farewell, they left on the Mutated Metal Tyrannosaurus. After returning to his senses, he hurriedly uploaded the photo of the Flaming Furnace Queen’s corpse on the Internet. There was even a caption.

“Today, I hunted a very rare Fire Furnace Queen with my friends from the East District. Delightful!”

“Your mount isn’t bad. Where did you get it from?” Zhou Wen asked as he looked at the Mutated Metal Tyrannosaurus.

“I got it when I went to Dinosaur Island. There are dinosaurs everywhere there. If you’re interested, I’ll take you there in the future,” An Sheng said with a smile.

“I think we should head to the nearby temples to take a look.” Zhou Wen still wanted to visit the other temples to see if there were any tiny palm symbols. It was best if he could download more dungeons.

“Do you want to visit the other temples? Why not let The Great Lucas take you there. Otherwise, there are many dimensional zones in the Peninsula of Gods that don’t allow outsiders to enter.” Lucas rode his Tyrannosaurus Rex and chased after them.

“How can we trouble you?” Zhou Wen asked.

“What’s there to be embarrassed about? We’re friends,” Lucas said straightforwardly.

Lucas led them to the relatively famous dimensional zones on the Peninsula of Gods, such as the God of Light Apollo’s Music Temple.

It sounded a little odd, but the Olympian gods usually had multiple titles. Apollo was talented and took on many titles. The Music Temple was one of his many temples.

Zhou Wen found the tiny palm symbol outside the Music Temple and downloaded it.

After that, he went to the other temples, but Zhou Wen didn’t find the tiny palm symbol. He downloaded three dungeons that day.

The Metalwork Temple, Music Temple, and Curse Demon Palace.

The first dungeon Zhou Wen had downloaded was actually Curse Demon Palace. This surprised him. Athena was the Goddess of Wisdom, and in the legends, she was also the Goddess of War, but the word “curse” didn’t seem related to her. Furthermore, the word “Demon Palace” was clearly not something a god’s temple should have.

This made Zhou Wen realize that the temple didn’t belong to the Goddess of Wisdom. If the people on the Peninsula of Gods treated it as a temple of the Goddess of Wisdom, they would likely suffer a huge loss.

Zhou Wen originally wanted to visit a few more dimensional zones, but after receiving a phone call, Lucas hurriedly left, as though he had something urgent to attend to.

Zhou Wen and An Sheng had no choice but to return to the hotel. This was because the Zhang family had already left the Peninsula of Gods. They couldn’t hitch a ride on the plane back, so they could only fly back on Federation Airlines.

Just as they were about to book the air tickets, Zhou Wen received a call from Lucas.

“Dear friend, if a police officer requests you to assist in their investigations, don’t panic. It’s just assisting in the investigations. I’ll rush to the police station to testify for you,” said Lucas without any head or tail.

“What happened? Why are we being taken by the police to assist in investigations?” A puzzled Zhou Wen asked.

Lucas said, “The Invisibility Cloak Companion Egg bought by Lord Irjarr for a large sum of money has been stolen. The thief has East District features. Therefore, every East District person in the Peninsula of Gods is being investigated. For now, they can’t leave the Peninsula of Gods. However, you don’t have to worry. When the Invisibility Cloak Companion Egg was stolen yesterday, you were always with The Great Lucas. I will be your witness.”

“Thank you, Lucas,” Zhou Wen thanked him sincerely. Although he wasn’t afraid of being investigated, it was

indeed nice of Lucas to inform them in advance.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 467 - Curse Demon Palace

467 Curse Demon Palace

“The Invisibility Cloak Companion Egg has been stolen. I wonder who did it?” Zhou Wen hung up and said to An Sheng.

“It’s hard to tell. There are too many people who want the Invisibility Cloak Companion Egg. Furthermore, the trait of looking like someone from the East District isn’t reliable. There are some rare Essence Energy Skills and Companion Beasts that can allow one to change their appearances,” An Sheng said.

As the two of them spoke, they heard a knock on the door. When they opened it, they found the local police to get them to assist in their investigations.

Zhou Wen and An Sheng cooperated and went to the police station. They saw many people from the East District there. Li Mobai was one of them.

Most of the people who were there were people from the East District who had participated in the auction. Zhou Wen and An Sheng were separately questioned during the investigations, but they were quickly released.

“My friends, you’re fine now. I’ve already made it clear to them. You were with me the entire time yesterday and didn’t have the chance to steal the Companion Egg. However, before the ban is removed, you are temporarily unable to leave the Peninsula of Gods.” Lucas walked over and said

warmly, “That’s good too. It gives me the chance to entertain you for a few more days.”

“Lucas, do you know what kind of person stole the Invisibility Cloak Companion Egg?” An Sheng asked.

Lucas said, “It’s a man from the East District. He acted the role of a Companion Egg merchant and entered Lord Irjarr’s house. After he left, the Invisibility Cloak Companion Egg was gone. From the surveillance, he’s a man from the East District. However, it’s hard to tell. As you know, in our eyes, all men from the East District look rather similar. Furthermore, it’s difficult to tell his age.”

“Can we watch the surveillance footage?” An Sheng asked.

“I’m afraid not. However, if you just want to see what that thief looks like, you can just look at this.” Lucas handed An Sheng a piece of paper.

It was a warrant of arrest with a photo on it. It was indeed a man from the East District. He looked to be in his twenties or thirties.

“Do you know him?” Lucas asked.

“I don’t know him.” An Sheng looked carefully before shaking his head.

Zhou Wen looked at the portrait and felt that he probably had never seen such a man before. However, for some reason, he found him somewhat familiar.

After careful inspection, Zhou Wen shook his head and said, “Nah, I really don’t know him.”

After returning to the hotel, An Sheng said to Zhou Wen, “Perhaps this will be an opportunity. Since the Invisibility Cloak Companion Egg has been stolen, it becomes an ownerless object. Perhaps we will have a chance to obtain it.”

“We don’t even know who stole the Companion Egg. What chance can we have?” Zhou Wen said.

“The Peninsula of Gods is dangerous. There are dimensional zones everywhere, and there aren’t many paths to take. It won’t be easy to escape with the Invisibility Cloak, so we might stand a chance,” An Sheng said.

“I’m just afraid that he would hide in a dimensional zone with the Companion Egg before coming out a year and a half later. When that happens, we won’t be able to catch him no matter if he hatches it.” Zhou Wen shook his head.

“Then let’s see how powerful the tycoons of the Peninsula of Gods like Irjarr are. Anyway, we won’t suffer any losses,” An Sheng said with a smile.

Zhou Wen returned to his room and prepared to grind the new instance dungeons. Among the three dungeons, he had already gone to the Metalwork Temple in real life once. Although he didn’t venture deep, he wasn’t in a rush to grind it.

Zhou Wen hesitated for a moment before choosing to enter the Cursed Demon Palace.

The unknown was interesting. Zhou Wen also wanted to see what it looked like inside the Curse Demon Palace that had been accidentally passed off as a temple of the Goddess of Wisdom.

The blood-colored avatar appeared in a palace. It was ancient and glorious, with many exquisite sculptures and patterns, but it gave off a weird feeling.

It looks so eerie and it’s obvious that it’s not an orthodox deity’s temple. Why would those people think that this is the temple of the Goddess of Wisdom? Zhou Wen found the cartoon-styled dungeon eerie and terrifying, so it meant that, in reality, the temple was definitely worse.

However, Zhou Wen didn’t know that many deity temples were extremely eerie and terrifying.

He didn’t see any dimensional creatures as he controlled the blood-colored avatar to walk into the palace. After taking a few steps, a stone statue beside him suddenly came alive.

The stone was like a warrior holding a sword and a shield. When Zhou Wen approached him, he came to life and struck out with the stone sword.

Without needing Zhou Wen to take action, the Fire Furnace Queen beside the blood-colored avatar spewed out a ball of flames, blasting the stone statue to pieces.

When Zhou Wen returned to the hotel, he had hatched the Fire Furnace Queen and the silver Water Snake Companion Egg.

Fire Furnace Queen: Epic

Life Providence: Fire Elemental Body

Life Soul: Flaming Crown

Strength: 36

Speed: 37

Constitution: 32

Essence Energy: 37

Talent Skill: Fire Bullet, Fire Furnace, Fire Elemental Affinity

Companion Form: Flaming Crown

The Fire Furnace Queen’s stats were considered top-notch among Epic creatures, but compared to Overlord Sword, her attack power was far inferior. Her companion form augmented fire-elemental powers, so it wasn’t of much use to Zhou Wen.

However, the Fire Furnace Queen had an extremely great advantage. Her Fire Elemental Body Life Providence and her Fire Elemental Affinity Essence Energy Skill could last for a very long period of time when she was releasing fire-elemental Essence Energy Skills. Together with the large area-of-attack of Fire Furnace, she could transform an area spanning a hundred meters into a sea of flames. Furthermore, it could last for a long time. It was an awesome skill for grinding monsters.

Although Banana Fairy’s Grand Yin Wind was stronger, it required Zhou Wen to keep using it. In comparison, Fire Furnace just needed to be cast, and the area within would keep burning for an hour in a sea of flames. All the monsters that entered would die.

Of course, it was another matter for dimensional creatures that could withstand Fire Furnace.

Zhou Wen could use her to kill the monsters, preventing him from being entangled by ordinary monsters. It was much

more convenient, and it increased his grinding efficiency.

Zhou Wen originally believed that this place would have many monsters that used curses, thanks to its name—Curse Demon Palace. Truth Listener could perfectly restrain that.

To his surprise, there were only stone monsters—Stone Warriors, Stone Lions, and Stone Scorpions. The entire palace was filled with stone statues, all of which were powerful dimensional creatures with resilient bodies. None of them could curse. The Truth Listener earring didn’t react either.

Later, Zhou Wen couldn’t be bothered to distinguish between the rocks that were alive from the dead ones. Wherever he went, he got Fire Furnace Queen to throw a ball of Fire Furnace, turning the area into a sea of fire that burned the stone statues inside to death.

On the phone screen, notifications of him killing dimensional creatures constantly appeared. Many dimensional crystals dropped.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 468 - Medusa

468 Medusa

With the baby tiger, the dimensional crystals that dropped were pretty good. Many of the stat crystals exceeded 30 points.

One of the Stone Warriors dropped a Essence Energy Skill Crystal.

As he cleared the area with Fire Furnace Queen, he came to a palace that blocked his way. The stone door of the palace was tightly shut, and on it, Zhou Wen saw the carving on the temple’s main door.

Outside, the shield was a woman’s side profile, but there was a difference inside—the woman on the shield faced forward.

One could tell that it was a very beautiful girl. Her eyes were as alluring as the sea. Even though it was just a carving, one could not help but take a second look.

Zhou Wen took a look and felt his ear heat up. The Truth Listener earring emitted an intense heat. Then, he felt a terrifying Essence Energy surge into his body, filling it with Essence Energy that constantly seeped out.

Such terrifying amounts of Essence Energy. If not for the Truth Listener earring, the blood-colored avatar would probably have died, right? Zhou Wen was alarmed.

Zhou Wen realized that as long as the blood-colored avatar didn’t look at the beauty’s eyes on the stone door, Truth

Listener wouldn’t react. This also meant that the eyes of the beautiful stone statue were the source of the problem.

Zhou Wen closed his eyes and relied on Truth Listener’s hearing, nullifying the beauty’s eyes completely.

When he arrived at the door, Zhou Wen controlled the blood-colored avatar to push it open with all his might, but the stone door didn’t budge an inch as though it had been welded shut.

Zhou Wen used Overlord Sword to slash at the stone door a few times, but it seemed to have divine power protecting it. Despite Overlord Sword’s Ever-Victorious trait, it failed to leave a mark on the door, much less split it open.

Since there’s a door, there must be a way in. But how do I enter? Zhou Wen groped around the door, hoping to find the mechanism to open the door.

When Zhou Wen’s hands touched the beautiful woman’s eyes, there was a clicking sound as though some mechanism had been activated. The door automatically separated to the left and right.

The door opened to reveal the palace. It was pitch black inside without any lighting. Zhou Wen scanned the palace with Truth Listener’s ability and saw many stone pillars and some braziers.

As the palace was too large, Truth Listener’s hearing powers couldn’t reach the deepest depths. However, no dimensional creature was found in the vicinity, nor were there any stone statues.

Zhou Wen controlled the blood-colored avatar to step into the palace. The door to the palace automatically closed

behind him. The two rows of braziers lit up and extended all the way to the deepest depths of the palace.

Zhou Wen looked inside and saw a beautiful girl sitting on a throne. Her appearance was identical to the beautiful woman on the shield. She looked like she had stepped out of the painting.

However, she was even more charming than the portrait, especially her eyes. Although they were cartoonish, they were filled with seduction, making it impossible for his eyes to move away from her.

With just a glance, the blood-colored avatar's body immediately underwent a special change. Its blood-colored body turned into stone like a statue before the game screen went black.

I died! Why didn't the Truth Listener earring work? Zhou Wen found it odd.

Previously, Truth Listener earring had shown its effects, but why was it completely useless after seeing the girl inside the palace?

Even if the girl was at the Mythical stage, and the Truth Listener earring wasn't strong enough to withstand such immense power, it shouldn't have had zero reaction. This left Zhou Wen very puzzled.

After some thought, Zhou Wen came up with only one possibility. Since there's no reaction from the Truth Listener earring, there's only one possibility. The girl's eyes in the palace and the beautiful woman's eyes on the shield aren't the same power.

This piqued Zhou Wen’s interest in the girl. He dripped his blood to revive as he entered the Curse Demon Palace once again and stormed straight to the girl.

After entering, Zhou Wen made the blood-colored avatar keep his eyes closed. He didn’t even look at the girl to prevent himself from being petrified by the girl’s gaze.

Indeed, this method was feasible. As long as he didn’t look at the girl’s eyes, he wouldn’t be petrified.

Is this girl the legendary creature in myths? Zhou Wen had previously read a myth about the Peninsula of Gods. When he saw the girl’s petrification gaze, he thought of a famous monster in myths—Medusa.

In ancient myths, Medusa was a natural demon. Her head portrait would be engraved on a shield to ward off evil.

There was also a myth that Medusa was a beautiful girl who tried to compete with the Goddess of Wisdom, only to be beheaded by the Goddess of Wisdom, and then embedded on a shield.

Modern people usually believed that Medusa had a human head and a snake body, but in ancient myths, only Medusa’s hair consisted of venomous snakes. There was no other difference from humans.

Zhou Wen didn’t know which myth matched the dimensional zones. However, if this girl was really Medusa, the latter had seemed more likely.

The girl sat on the throne and watched every step as the blood-colored avatar approached. There was no movement and she sat there quietly.

Zhou Wen carefully approached the girl and had already reached the throne, but he still hadn’t seen her move.

It can’t be a dummy, right? Zhou Wen thought to himself. However, no matter how he looked at the girl in front of him, she was beautiful—extremely beautiful. Worthy of note was her beautiful long hair that had an indescribable charm. She didn’t look like a dummy in any way.

The blood-colored avatar had already walked up to the girl, but the girl remained sitting there motionless. She only looked at him with her eyes without any intention of speaking.

Could it really be a dummy? Zhou Wen thought to himself as he reached out and pinched the girl’s face.

It was fleshy and warm. It was clearly not a fake.

When Zhou Wen touched the girl, her expression immediately changed. Almost instantly, her beautiful face turned as terrifying as a ferocious ghost. Her beautiful hair turned into venomous snakes, immediately turning her from a beautiful girl into a terrifying demoness.

A pair of swan wings appeared behind her. When she opened her mouth, it was filled with fangs as it hissed at Zhou Wen strangely.

Zhou Wen couldn’t help but open his eyes and glance at her. The Truth Listener earring released a scorching energy that nearly scalded Zhou Wen’s ear. At the same time, large amounts of Essence Energy surged into his body.

Strange, why does Truth Listener work now? Zhou Wen was puzzled, but it was too late to think about it. The demoness had already attempted to devour him.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 469 - The Thief Found

469 The Thief Found

The terrifying venomous snakes were difficult to count. They nearly enveloped the entire palace, making it impossible for Zhou Wen to dodge.

Zhou Wen unsheathed his sword and slashed at the venomous snakes in front of him, but when the venomous snakes in front of him were injured, more appeared from elsewhere, swept over, and wrapped around the Overlord Sword. There were even venomous snakes that bit at the Overlord Sword, snapping it.

Zhou Wen’s heart stirred as he switched to the Ancient Sovereign Sutra, summoning the Inverse Ancient Sovereign and using the Demon Dragon True Body.

With the augmentation of the powerful Demon Dragon True Body, the blood-colored avatar ignored the venomous snakes’ bites as he charged at Medusa. The venomous snake bit on the scales of the Demon Dragon True Body, leaving only faint teeth marks. Although the snake venom had infiltrated his body, Zhou Wen’s poison resistance was high. With the augmentation of the Demon Dragon True Body, the snake venom failed to do anything to him.

Grabbing the venomous snakes with both hands, he tore them apart. He then charged towards Medusa and punched her in the chest.

Medusa also refused to be outdone and fought Zhou Wen. Her speed was faster than Zhou Wen’s, but her strength

wasn’t as strong as that of a Demon Dragon True Body. For a moment, there was no clear winner.

Zhou Wen’s Demon Dragon True Body could usually only last ten seconds, but Zhou Wen kept staring at Medusa’s eyes. Medusa’s petrification ability allowed Zhou Wen to obtain large amounts of Essence Energy through the Truth Listener earring. This allowed him to use the Demon Dragon True Body for a longer period of time.

Medusa’s strongest Eyes of Petrification was useless against Zhou Wen. Her long snake hair had little effect on him. The battle was a close match, making it impossible to determine the winner.

Although there was a large amount of Essence Energy to replenish him, it was still insufficient for the Demon Dragon True Body to sustain the expenditure. As time passed, he couldn’t keep up the Demon Dragon True Body.

Furthermore, even if he could keep it up, the Demon Dragon True Body was not enough to kill Medusa. At most, it could only maintain its undefeated state.

With a thought, Zhou Wen decided that he might as well use his Essence Energy Skill, Transcendent Flying Immortal, while in Demon Dragon True Body to produce a burst of extremely potent Energy in a bid to kill Medusa.

Lights and shadows criss-crossed and left wounds on Medusa’s body, but none of them could kill her. Instead, Zhou Wen himself showed signs of being poisoned when the blood from Medusa’s body splattered on him.

With his Essence Energy drained and his Essence Energy lacking in supply, the Demon Dragon True Body

automatically vanished as the blood-colored avatar was bitten to death by the venomous snakes.

With Truth Listener and Demon Dragon True Body, it’s quite surprising that I’m able to fight Medusa head-on. However, it’s still difficult to kill her, but there’s a great chance. Zhou Wen thought about how he could kill Medusa.

Before he thought of a way to kill Medusa, Zhou Wen wouldn’t go to Curse Demon Palace again. The drop rate there was too low. Even with the baby tiger’s augmentation, nothing good dropped.

After some rest, Zhou Wen switched on his game again and went to the Music Temple.

After entering the Music Temple, Zhou Wen immediately saw a strange and magical musical note soar in the air with wings attached to it.

As the musical note flew, it produced a strange sound wave that released an attack power similar to a sound wave.

However, a sonar attack at the Legendary stage was naturally useless against Zhou Wen. With one strike, Zhou Wen shattered the musical note.

‘Killed Legendary Musical Note Sprite. Discovered Dimensional Crystal.’

Zhou Wen saw a dimensional crystal drop, but it was only a 14-valued Speed Crystal. He couldn’t be bothered to pick it up and continued walking deeper into the Music Temple with the baby tiger.

In the Music Temple, Musical Note Sprites flew over from time to time. Although they all looked the same, with wings

growing on each note, each one was slightly different.

Furthermore, their sonar attacks were somewhat different, but all of them were useless against Zhou Wen.

After grinding for a while, many dimensional crystals dropped; there were even Essence Energy Skill Crystals. However, these Musical Note Sprites were at the Legendary stage, making them useless for Zhou Wen.

“My dear friend, you are going to be free soon?” Lucas called and said excitedly.

“What happened?” Zhou Wen was already used to the way Lucas spoke without head or tail.

“The thief who stole the Invisibility Cloak Companion Egg has been found. The ban will be quickly lifted,” said Lucas.

“He’s been found? Who is he?” Zhou Wen asked in surprise. He found the local nobles on the Peninsula of Gods very efficient. They had actually found someone so quickly.

“I don’t know yet, but he has already been trapped in the recently discovered Goddess of Wisdom Temple. He shouldn’t be able to escape. I believe he will be caught very soon,” said Lucas.

Zhou Wen was slightly taken aback as he thought to himself, Isn’t the newly discovered Goddess Temple the Cursed Demon Palace?

“Have people been sent in?” Zhou Wen asked.

“Yes, but they encountered some trouble. Only one of the experts who entered came out. Now, Lord Irjarr is hiring

people. The culprit will definitely be captured in the next few days," said Lucas.

"Do you know what problems they faced?" Zhou Wen already had his guesses. It was likely that they had succumbed at the stone door.

"I'm not sure yet. According to the Epic expert who came back, he saw Epic experts turn into stone statues from afar. He didn't know what happened," Lucas explained.

As expected. Zhou Wen knew that something had happened to the people in front of the stone door. The Medusa on it had turned them into stone statues.

However, the development of the matter wasn't as smooth as what Lucas had predicted. After a few days, the ban wasn't lifted. Zhou Wen and An Sheng had to remain on the Peninsula of Gods.

According to Lucas, Irjarr had found many experts to enter, but most of them either died or were injured. They still failed to capture that East District person.

They were starting to suspect that it was not the temple of the Goddess of Wisdom, but the palace of Medusa. There were many Epic experts who were petrified at the entrance.

"This matter seems odd," An Sheng said as he frowned in thought.

"What's odd?" Zhou Wen asked.

"The Peninsula of Gods is their territory after all. Yet, an East District person can cause such a huge commotion. Having sent so many Epic experts, Irjarr has failed to capture him. This itself is very problematic."

After a pause, An Sheng continued, “I think there are two possibilities. One possibility is that the person has already hatched the Invisibility Cloak to survive under such a pursuit.”

“What about the other possibility?” Zhou Wen asked.

“There’s another possibility that’s interesting. Perhaps someone is messing around behind the scenes. They want to use the Invisibility Cloak to do something to the aristocratic families in the Peninsula of Gods,” An Sheng said with a faint smile.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 470 - Reward

470 Reward

Knock! Knock! Knock!

Someone suddenly knocked on the door. It was very loud.

Zhou Wen and An Sheng found it odd. The room had a doorbell, so why didn’t the person use it?

When they opened the door, they saw that it was Lucas.

Lucas didn’t seem to think of them as strangers. He walked straight in and headed for the couch. He poured himself a cup of water and said to Zhou Wen and An Sheng after finishing it, “My good friends, our good luck is here.”

“Could it be that the thief has been caught?” Zhou Wen asked.

“If he’s been captured, what good luck do we have? No one can catch that thief for now. The person hasn’t even been found. Lord Irjarr suspects that he has hidden inside the palace. But as no one can open the door to the palace, Lord Irjarr has issued a reward mission. Anyone who can open the door to the palace can receive a huge reward.” Lucas looked at Zhou Wen and An Sheng and asked in anticipation, “How about it? Shall we team up and open the door to the palace?”

Zhou Wen found it odd when he heard that. The door to the palace wasn’t difficult to open. As long as one closed their eyes and walked to the door without looking at the beautiful

woman’s eyes, they could grope about to press the eyes of the beauty. People have failed to open the palace despite such a simple solution. It left him somewhat astonished.

In fact, Zhou Wen was wrong. It wasn’t difficult to avoid being petrified because it happened when looking at the eyes of the beauty’s portrait on the door. It was unlike the Medusa inside the palace. Even if one didn’t look at her eyes, one would still be petrified when she saw them.

But even if one wouldn’t get petrified, everyone knew that the owner of the palace was likely Medusa. Who would dare touch Medusa’s eyes? Hence, this resulted in an impasse, and no one could open the door to the palace.

“If it’s just a small matter like opening the door to a palace. Why would The Great Lucas need our help?” An Sheng joked.

Lucas didn’t blush at all. He smiled and said, “Even great heroes need companions. Just like the Six Federation Heroes, it was through the combined efforts of the six heroes that they created the Federation’s legend. I think we can form a Federation of Legends and open the door to the palace together, leaving behind a legendary story. What do you think?”

“How much is Irjarr paying?” Zhou Wen asked.

“Ten Epic Companion Eggs and they are all products of Pluto Temple. They are all good stuff. Ordinary people aren’t able to enter Pluto Temple. There’s also a Peninsula of Gods’ permanent entry pass that permanently allows one to enter the public dimensional zones of the Peninsula of Gods. This is a reward targeted at freelance hunters,” said Lucas.

“That sounds good. What are the Epic Companion Eggs produced by Pluto Temple?” Zhou Wen was somewhat interested.

“They are all the Companion Eggs of Underworld creatures. There are many different types, and it’s almost impossible to buy them on the market. Pluto Temple belongs to Lord Irjarr’s family. It doesn’t allow outsiders to enter.” Lucas didn’t seem to know much.

“How about it? Think about it. The three of us will go together. The Companion Eggs will be split equally. The pass will be yours,” Lucas continued trying to persuade them.

“Sure, but I have another condition,” Zhou Wen said after some thought.

“What condition?” Lucas asked in puzzlement.

“I wish to visit Pluto Temple.” I just need one chance. Zhou Wen wanted to go to Pluto Temple to see if there was a tiny palm symbol.

Zhou Wen had heard of the Peninsula of God’s Pluto Temple. Legend had it that it was the territory of Pluto. There were many dimensional creatures of the Underworld in it, and they were very different from ordinary dimensional creatures.

“Can’t we change the conditions? For example, add two more Companion Eggs?” said Lucas, apparent that he had been put in a difficult spot.

“No,” Zhou Wen answered with certainty.

“Then I’ll go have a chat with Lord Irjarr. By the way, how much do you know about that palace? Are you confident

about opening the door?” Although Lucas felt that Zhou Wen and An Sheng were very strong and he might have a chance of opening the door by teaming up with them, he wasn’t completely confident. He only wanted to try his luck, but if he couldn’t open the door after negotiating the conditions, it would be too embarrassing.

“I heard that it’s likely Medusa’s palace, right? If so, I might have a way to open the door,” Zhou Wen said.

“How confident are you?” Lucas asked.

“There’s about a 90% chance if it’s Medusa’s palace,” Zhou Wen answered.

Hearing this, Lucas was overjoyed. He patted his chest and said, “If that’s the case, wait for my good news. I will definitely be able to convince Lord Irjarr.”

After Lucas left, An Sheng asked Zhou Wen, “Are you really confident of opening the door to the palace? We haven’t healed from our injuries yet, so it’s not suitable for us to do anything too risky.”

“You know that I have a Companion Beast on me that can withstand the power of curses. Medusa’s Eyes of Petrification is actually a kind of curse that will have no effect on me. If it’s just to open the door, there wouldn’t be much risk,” Zhou Wen explained.

“That’s good. However, we still have to be careful. You can’t be careless just because you are protected by a Companion Beast. There are too many strange powers in this world, so no Companion Beast is absolutely invincible. This applies even to Mythical Companion Beasts,” An Sheng said solemnly.

Zhou Wen knew that An Sheng was afraid that he would suffer because of carelessness. He nodded and said, “Don’t worry. I’m well aware.”

These words were not exaggerated at all. He knew the Curse Demon Palace very well. As long as he did not enter Medusa’s palace, there would not be any danger.

Lucas rushed over to Irjarr’s house, and Irjarr happened to be receiving guests.

“Henry, let me do the introductions. This is the number one freelance hunter of the Peninsula of Gods, Lucas.” Irjarr pointed at the man on the sofa and introduced him to Lucas. “Lucas, this is Henry from the Cape family. He’s a famous freelance hunter and has the title of Spear Sovereign.”

“Nice to meet you. I’m the number one freelance hunter of the Peninsula of Gods, Lucas,” said Lucas as he extended his hand.

Henry sat on the sofa, but he had no intention of reaching out his hand. He didn’t even budge. He glanced at Lucas and said with contempt, “A freelance hunter from the Peninsula of Gods, the mighty Lucas. I’ve heard of this name before.”

With that said, he looked at Irjarr and said, “Since you have the help of a great freelance hunter, why did you come looking for me? Can’t you just get this great Lucas open the door for you?”

Irjarr coughed lightly and said, “Lucas is good at frontal assaults. It’s not his specialty to deal with such evil powers. Therefore, I need your help to open the door to the palace.”

“Of course I can do it. However, I have a condition,” said Henry. He gave a faint smile and looked at Lucas who had lamely retracted his hand.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 471 - Opening the Door Together

471 Opening the Door Together

“Why are you looking at me?” Lucas found it odd.

“I’ve seen your recent post on social media. You have a good relationship with Zhou Wen, right?” Henry said.

“So what?” Lucas frowned slightly.

“Very simple. Take this first.” Henry handed him a bottle.

When Lucas took the bottle from Henry, he felt his fingers itch. He raised his hand and saw a red dot on his finger as though it had been bitten by a bug.

Lucas thought nothing of it. He held the bottle and asked, “What is this?”

“There’s water inside. As long as you pour the water inside into Zhou Wen’s water and let him drink it, that will do,” said Henry. “Then, I’ll help you open the door to the palace for free.”

“Impossible. I won’t help you do such filthy things.” Lucas placed the bottle heavily on the table before turning to Irjarr. “Lord Irjarr, we don’t need their help. I’ve already got Zhou Wen and company to head to the palace with me. I guarantee that I can open the door to the palace.”

Irjarr looked a little hesitant. Lucas continued, “My lord, please believe me. I will definitely be able to open the door to the palace to help you catch that thief.”

Irjarr looked at Lucas and then at Henry. Finally, he said to him, “If you are willing to help, what I promised previously still holds.”

Henry sat on the sofa and did not reply to Irjarr. He picked up the bottle of water that was on the table in front of Lucas and said to him, “I think you will agree, right?”

“Of course not. What kind of person do you think the mighty Lucas is?” Lucas said angrily.

“Is that so?” The look in Henry’s eyes became odder and odder. Something seemed to be shaking in his eyes, and his pupils became very strange. It was as if there was a mosquito or bug trapped in a glass sphere.

“Ah!” Lucas immediately felt as though countless worms were gnawing his bones. The pain made his face turn pale as beads of sweat oozed out of his forehead.

“Despicable… Bastard… You… What did you do to me…” Lucas nearly fainted from the pain as he glared at Henry and barked.

“Henry, you actually dare to attack my man on my territory?” Irjarrr’s expression turned cold as he stared at Henry.

But Henry remained indifferent. He placed the bottle in front of Lucas and said calmly, “Do as I say. You won’t die, but this kind of pain will continue until you die. If you don’t believe me, you can seek out others to help you relieve your pain.”

With that said, Henry got up and bowed slightly to Irjarr. “Dear Mr. Irjarr, I believe I’ll be able to serve you very soon. I’m looking forward to our next meeting.”

“If I were you, I would immediately relieve the pain in Lucas’ body.” Irjarr waved his hand and immediately, a few Epic experts surrounded him.

“Mr. Irjarr, I hope you can consider it carefully. Zhou Wen is my Cape family’s enemy, so do you wish to become enemies with the Cape family?” After saying that, Henry strode off and ignored the Epic experts.

Irjarr gritted his teeth. In the end, he didn’t give any order to attack Henry.

“Lucas, you know how powerful the Cape family is. They are the uncrowned kings of West District, and we don’t have the ability to fight them yet. You…” After Henry left, Irjarr said to Lucas helplessly as he looked at the small bottle of water.

Lucas wiped away the cold sweat on his forehead and reached out to grab the small bottle.

Zhou Wen and An Sheng waited in the hotel for news of Lucas. Before long, he rushed back.

“Lucas, how’re the negotiations?” Zhou Wen asked.

“I ran back all the way. I’m dying of thirst. Let’s talk after I drink some water.” As Lucas spoke, he sat on the sofa in the living room and began pouring himself a cup of water. After drinking it, he filled it up and poured Zhou Wen and An Sheng a cup.

“I didn’t manage to get the entry pass to Pluto Temple,” said Lucas as he held a teacup.

“Is the entry pass to Pluto Temple that precious? Can’t outsiders even take a look?” Zhou Wen said, somewhat surprised.

“Although I failed to get Pluto Temple’s entry pass, I’ve already discussed it with Lord Irjarr. You can leave the Peninsula of Gods in advance. Pack up and follow me to the airport,” said Lucas.

“I’m really grateful to you, Lucas. However, we still wish to stay here for some time. We don’t have any plans of leaving for the time being,” Zhou Wen said as he drank a mouthful of water.

Seeing Zhou Wen drink some water, Lucas heaved a sigh of relief and said, “Since you don’t plan on leaving, can you consider it again? Join me in opening the door to the palace. All the rewards that I mentioned previously will be yours. I don’t want anything. Just treat it as helping me.”

“Alright, let’s do as we said before. The Companion Eggs will be split equally. The pass will be ours.” Zhou Wen nodded. Since he couldn’t obtain the entry pass of Pluto Temple, getting a few Pluto Temple Companion Eggs and entry passes to the other temples wasn’t too bad.

Of course, Zhou Wen’s main goal was still to hope that Irjarr and the rest could find the thief. Otherwise, they wouldn’t have the chance to fish in troubled waters.

“Haha, I knew it. Lucas’s friends are good friends.” Lucas wrapped his muscular arm around Zhou Wen’s neck and laughed loudly.

Lucas quickly led Zhou Wen and An Sheng to the Curse Demon Palace. It had been sealed off by Irjarr’s men, so no one was allowed to enter without his orders.

Lucas was naturally an exception. After showing an identification document, he brought Zhou Wen and An Sheng into the Curse Demon Palace.

As there had been many people rushing into the Cursed Demon Palace to look for traces of the thief, the stone statue creatures had almost been wiped clean.

Zhou Wen and company walked all the way to a spot close to the door of the palace without encountering any dimensional creatures.

“Right ahead is the palace’s door. Put this on. Otherwise, even if you accidentally see the girl’s eyes on the door, you will be petrified.” Lucas took out the three pairs of eye masks and gave one each to Zhou Wen and An Sheng. He put on one himself.

Zhou Wen and An Sheng put on the eye masks before continuing forward.

Zhou Wen had Truth Listener’s powers, so it wasn’t a problem without his sight. An Sheng was about the same. They remained very agile while wearing the eye masks.

Only Lucas seemed a little clumsy after putting on the eye mask. Even his footsteps became slow.

Zhou Wen didn’t rush him. He slowly walked to the door of the palace and groped around the door. He pressed down the girl’s eyes with both hands.

The door to the palace automatically slid aside, immediately opening.

“It’s open. You can remove the eye mask,” Zhou Wen said.

Lucas took off his eye mask and was overjoyed when he realized that the stone door was gone. He took out his phone and stood in front of the door, taking a picture with Zhou Wen and company. He posted it online:

“The great Lucas and his friends opened the mysterious and terrifying palace door together.”

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 472 - Great Lucas

Chapter 472 Great Lucas

“You guys can head back to the hotel now. I’ll go to Lord Irjarr to get the reward. I’ll send it to you later.” After leaving the Curse Demon Palace, Lucas rode on his Tyrannosaurus Rex.

Just as Zhou Wen and An Sheng were about to leave, Lucas added, “The Peninsula of Gods hasn’t been peaceful recently. Don’t eat and drink things randomly. Make sure they’re checked.”

“Got it.” Zhou Wen smiled as he waved goodbye and left with An Sheng.

Lucas rode the Tyrannosaurus on the streets. Many young people would cheer when they saw him. They would wave at him, and Lucas also responded enthusiastically.

After leaving the city, Lucas’s expression darkened. He quickly arrived at a manor in the suburbs.

“Tell Henry that I have already done what he wants me to do,” said Lucas to the guards.

The guard seemed to have known that Lucas would be coming. He smiled and said, “Please come in, Lord Henry is waiting for you.”

Lucas followed the person into the manor and soon saw Henry. He was sunbathing in front of the pool. He was

holding an exquisite antique gun in his hand as he wiped it carefully with a cloth.

“Henry, I’ve finished what you asked me to do. Please remove the restrictions on me immediately.” Lucas took out the small bottle and placed it on the table in front of him. The liquid inside had already disappeared.

Henry looked at the bottle on the table and suddenly picked up the antique gun in his hand and pulled the trigger at Lucas.

Lucas’ reaction wasn’t slow. He used a shield to block his body, but the bullet was very strange. It turned around and circled around the shield, passing through the gaps in his armor and shot into his muscles.

The strange thing was that the bullet wasn’t made of metal, but grayish-white bones. After drilling into his muscles, the bone bullet actually produced tiny blood vessels. It connected with Lucas’ muscles and blood vessels, as though it was parasitizing him.

“Ah!” Lucas felt a great pain in his body, and he felt numb. He had to kneel on one leg and press his hands down to prevent himself from falling to the ground.

Henry stared coldly at Lucas and said in disdain, “Do you think I’m as stupid as you? Do you think I don’t know that you’ve thrown the liquid away? Since you’re so great and willing to sacrifice for your friend, I’ll fulfill your wish.”

“What a despicable person. How could the mighty Lucas betray his friends? You’ve found the wrong person.” Lucas stood up abruptly and slashed at Henry with his ax in both hands.

“What a pitiful and ignorant fellow. Do you think that just because those little brats call you the mighty Lucas, it makes you some big shot? That’s just ignorant people having fun. In the eyes of true experts, you are just a lowly worm. I can poke you to death with a finger.” Henry sat there without moving.

However, Lucas felt as though his heart was about to stop beating. His body was unable to take another step forward. He maintained the pose of cleaving down his gigantic ax as he turned immobile.

“You first got hit by my bone-eating worm, and now, you’ve been hit by my parasitic bullet. Do you still want to fight me? You’re truly foolish.” Henry looked at the frozen Lucas and continued, “Bone-eating worms will constantly devour your bones until there’s none left. When the time comes, all that’s left is flesh, blood, and skin. You’ll be like a pile of rotten flesh. The Great Lucas, when you kneel down crying and beg for mercy and wish for me to give you death, an ignorant and pitiful worm like you will know what true greatness is.”

“The Great… Lucas… will never yield to anyone…” Lucas trembled as veins protruded from his body as though he was trying to move his body.

However, he couldn’t move his body no matter how hard he tried. His bones emitted waves of excruciating pain, as though thousands of worms were devouring his bones.

Blood began to seep out from Lucas’s eyes, ears, nose, and mouth.

“Only an ignorant worm like you would dare to call yourself great. I’m afraid you haven’t seen any true power. The number one freelance hunter of the Peninsula of Gods? This

title is a form of mockery. To think that you really treated it seriously. There are quite a number of experts on the Peninsula of Gods. What makes you think you have what it takes?" Henry said disdainfully.

"I'm the number one freelance hunter on the Peninsula of Gods. I'm The Great Lucas," said Lucas through gritted teeth as his body trembled violently.

"What an arrogant and foolish fellow," said Henry with his lips curled.

"I'm The Great Lucas… I'm the number one hunter on the Peninsula of Gods… I'm the irreplaceable Lucas…" Lucas's seven orifices bled, but his eyes were filled with determination.

"Nothing but a meaningless imagination of the lowly…" Before Henry could finish his sentence, his expression suddenly changed.

"I'm The Great Lucas…" As Lucas roared, terrifying power erupted from his body. A golden light blasted out, enveloping his body as though he was a golden god.

In the next second, the parasitic bullet that bound Lucas's body exploded. It was forcefully squeezed out by his muscles, and the threads that resembled vessels were completely severed.

With his strong hands holding the gigantic ax, he slashed down with dazzling golden divine light.

Boom!

The massive manor was split into two by the divine light produced by the gigantic ax, leaving a huge ravine.

Henry stood sideways at the edge of the ravine, the armor on his chest sliced off. His chest muscles showed, and there were bloody wounds on it.

Henry’s face was extremely pale, and there were still traces of horror on his face. A portion of the tip of his nose had been sliced off and he was bleeding. If not for his quick reflexes, he would have died under that terrifying golden divine light.

“In front of The Great Lucas, you are just worms that only know how to flee.” The golden divine light on Lucas’s body dissipated, and the god-like shadow vanished as well. The gigantic ax landed on the ground as he held it with both hands. He kept standing relying on sheer willpower. However, he looked at Henry with contempt.

As he spoke, he even took out his cell phone and took a selfie. Looking at the picture, he muttered to himself, “As expected of The Great Lucas. He’s still so handsome even when getting rid of worms.”

“Cut off this bastard’s limbs. I want him to lie in front of me like a worm.” Henry was infuriated by the look in Lucas’ eyes. How dare he look at him like a bug? It was his greatest insult.

A few Epic experts beside Henry immediately surrounded Lucas. However, they were very careful and didn’t dare to rush straight at Lucas. After all, Lucas’s attack was too terrifying. The halved manor and ravine were shocking.

“What are you afraid of? Can’t you tell that he doesn’t have any strength left?” Henry barked angrily.

“No, he does.” A voice came from outside the manor.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 473 - Break-Out Medusa

473 Break-Out Medusa

“You… Why are you here…” Lucas turned his head and saw Zhou Wen and An Sheng.

“As your strength, how can we not come? It wouldn’t be right!” An Sheng said with a smile, but his eyes were a little cold.

In fact, from the day Lucas went to look for them, An Sheng and Zhou Wen could tell that something was amiss. However, they didn’t say anything. The two of them had only observed silently without saying anything. In the end, they had secretly tailed him here. They never expected to see this happen.

Henry spoke with a cold smile when he saw the two of them. “Zhou Wen, you came at the right time. It’s time to settle the score for Liz and John. And you are An Sheng, right? You were the one who crippled Liz’s sea of energy, right?”

“It’s me,” An Sheng said frankly. “From the looks of it, just crippling her sea of energy was too easy on her. She should have been killed.”

“Is that so? That’s really unfortunate. I’m afraid you won’t have the chance to touch a single strand of my Cape family members’ hair in the future.” As Henry spoke, he raised the antique gun in his hand and aimed it at Zhou Wen. He continued, “If I were you, I would stop immediately. Otherwise, the bone-eating worm in Lucas’s body will go

berserk with my gunshots and devour all his bones in a moment. You are his friends, and he has sacrificed so much for you. You don’t want to see him die in pain, right?”

“Lucas is right. You really are a dirty worm.” Zhou Wen didn’t stop as he continued walking towards Henry. He held the handle of the Bamboo Blade as his eyes flickered with killing intent.

“I told you to stop. Didn’t you hear me? Do you want to see him die?” Henry pulled the trigger and shouted at Zhou Wen.

“The bone-eating worm is your Companion Beast, right? If you die, your Companion Beast will naturally perish as well. Naturally, the threat to Lucas will no longer exist. I’m still about 35 meters away from you. Before your gun sounds, I’d have chopped off your head. If you don’t believe me, you can try shooting. But if I were you, I’d immediately retrieve the bone-eating worm. I’m not someone who likes to kill. Don’t give me a reason to draw my saber,” Zhou Wen continued walking towards Henry.

Henry appeared to have heard an extremely ridiculous joke as he said with a smile, “If the person who said that was An Tianzuo, I would do as he says. Don’t tell me that you think of yourself as An Tianzuo’s younger brother after your father married his mother? Even if you are An Tianzuo’s younger brother, as long as you are not An Tianzuo himself, you have no right to say that to me.”

With that said, Henry pulled the trigger.

Slender and powerful fingers held the handle of the saber as he drew the saber smoothly.

The saber beam appeared at an unbelievable speed. Everyone felt their vision blur as Zhou Wen and his saber seemed to vanish.

When they saw Zhou Wen again, they saw that he was already behind Henry. He held a crystal-clear saber in his hand. The tip of the saber was pointed diagonally to the ground as a drop of blood slowly flowed from the blade before dripping to the ground.

The moment the blood dripped onto the ground, there was a crack. The antique gun in Henry's hand split into two, and Henry's body was halved. His face that wore fear and disbelief split apart as well.

"Lord… Henry…" The Epic experts who followed Henry were stunned.

When they were with the Cape family, they knew that Zhou Wen had been protected by the An family—a student sheltered by the An family.

However, this student had managed to kill Henry with one strike. Even in the expert-filled Cape family, Henry could be considered a top-notch expert.

Such a person wasn't even able to block Zhou Wen's single strike. It left them alarmed and losing all morale, they reacted by turning around and fleeing.

An Sheng appeared like a ghost as a dagger-like knife flashed in his hand. In just a moment, he killed the Epic experts without leaving a single one behind. He felled them like he was chopping vegetables.

Wiping away the blood on the dagger, An Sheng said nonchalantly, "You guys can leave first. Leave this to me."

“That’s not nice, right…” Lucas recovered from his shock and looked at An Sheng strangely.

“Leave it to him. He’s more professional than us.” Zhou Wen pulled Lucas and walked out.

“Lucas, that ax strike of yours was really powerful. How did you do it?” Zhou Wen and Lucas rode the Tyrannosaurus Rex towards the city as he voiced his curiosity.

The strength Lucas used when he slashed out far exceeded his usual strength. It was like night and day.

When Lucas heard Zhou Wen praise him, he was immediately delighted. He said smugly, “The Great Lucas isn’t a result of bragging. My Life Providence is a Hero of Glory. My Life Soul is a Combat Faith God. When I fight for glory and faith, I can produce unparalleled power…”

As Zhou Wen listened, his expression changed.

Although Lucas described himself as very powerful and his Life Providence and Life Soul were indeed very powerful, his strength was very odd. It could be said that most of the time, his Life Providence and Life Soul were useless.

His Life Providence and Life Soul meant that he could not fight for himself. In most cases, only by fighting for others could he activate the Hero of Glory Life Providence.

Furthermore, Lucas’s beliefs had to be firm. The more he believed in himself, the stronger his Life Soul became.

If he had nefarious thoughts and did something that violated the glory of heroes, his Life Providence would be of zero use. Furthermore, due to his guilt, his Combat Faith God would also become very weak.

However, under certain circumstances, Lucas could become extremely powerful. If many people acknowledged and worshiped him from the bottom of their hearts, his Life Soul would become extremely powerful.

What a strange Life Providence and Life Soul, Zhou Wen thought.

“By the way, don’t upload the photo you took just now on the Internet. Don’t mention this matter again. Just treat it as though you have never seen Henry,” Zhou Wen said as he took out his phone to take a look. Seeing that the Dead Man Tree didn’t react at all. It didn’t absorb Henry’s corpse as it had before.

“Of course, I’m not a fool.” As Lucas spoke, he took out his cell phone and deleted the photos he had taken previously.

The Cape family was the uncrowned king of the West District. Although Lucas was famous in the Peninsula of Gods, he was still far from being able to compete with them. If they were to pester him, there would probably be trouble.

Just as he deleted the photo, Lucas’s phone rang. After Lucas picked up the call, his expression immediately turned ugly. He could not help but exclaim, “What? The Medusa inside the palace broke out! How did this happen?”

Zhou Wen’s expression changed when he heard Lucas’s words. He knew very well how terrifying Medusa was. If Medusa really broke out of its confines, this city, or even the entire Peninsula of Gods, would become an infernal domain.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 474 - Devastating the City

474 Devastating the City

“Sorry, I have to return immediately. Let’s talk again if there’s a chance in the future,” Lucas said to Zhou Wen.

“Let’s go together.” Zhou Wen found the matter odd as well.

Medusa was inside the palace. Someone had entered the palace. If anyone touched her, she would transform into a demoness and attack humans.

However, after entering the palace, the door would automatically close. Medusa should not have escaped from the palace. At least she had never run out in-game.

Could it be the thief’s doing? Zhou Wen felt that something was amiss no matter how he thought about it. Perhaps it had something to do with the thief.

“Alright.” Lucas didn’t stand on ceremony with Zhou Wen as he urged the Tyrannosaurus Rex to run towards the city.

Before reaching the city, they saw crowds running towards them. Many people saw Lucas and were pleading for help. “Lord Lucas, there’s a dimensional creature destroying the city. Quickly go and take a look.”

Lucas asked for directions and immediately rode the Tyrannosaurus Rex against the human tide.

Not long after they entered the city, they saw that the bustling streets of the city were empty, but there were many

stone statues. There were elders, children, and some animals.

They maintained all sorts of poses. Some ran for their lives in fear, while others fell to the ground. There was also a puppy who was peeing up a pole, but it had turned into a stone.

Many buildings had been destroyed and the city seemed to have become a world of ghosts.

When Zhou Wen saw the stone statues, he knew that it was Medusa's work. It was different from the stone statues on the door. Even if one didn't look into her eyes, one would still be petrified if they were seen by Medusa's petrifying eyes.

Lucas's expression changed drastically. He clearly recognized some of the petrified people.

A helicopter flew across the sky. Lucas hurriedly chased after the helicopter.

After turning two streets, they saw a young woman running ahead. Lucas chased after her and yelled, "Barbara, what are you doing here?"

The young woman turned to look at Lucas and was instantly overjoyed. "Lord Lucas, quickly go and take a look. Medusa is destroying the entire city. Other than you, no one can save this city."

"Where is she? What exactly happened? How did Medusa escape from the palace?" Lucas asked.

"I don't know. After you sent the news, Lord Irjarr sent someone into the palace, but not long after, Medusa ran out. All the people and creatures that are seen by her eyes turn

into stone statues. Even Companion Beasts are no exception. I wasn’t petrified because of the protection given to me by a special Companion Beast,” Barbara said.

“Where is she?” Lucas asked.

“She’s over there. I’ll take you there. However, it’s best if you don’t ride the Tyrannosaurus Rex. It will be petrified if she sees it.” Barbara pointed at the Tyrannosaurus.

“Alright.” Lucas put away the Tyrannosaurus before running in the direction that Barbara was pointing.

Barbara also followed, but when she saw that Zhou Wen was also running in that direction, she said to him, “Why are you following us? Aren’t you afraid of being petrified by Medusa? Hurry up and hide in an underground bomb shelter.”

“I’ll go over and take a look to see if I can help.” Zhou Wen wasn’t afraid of Medusa. Truth Listener could perfectly restrain Medusa’s Eyes of Petrification, and the Demon Dragon True Body could barely contend with Medusa.

Although he could not kill Medusa, he did not need to be afraid of her.

Seeing that Zhou Wen had already run over, Barbara didn’t say anything else. However, she didn’t think much of it. Zhou Wen looked like a student, one even younger than her. How could he be of any help? If Medusa were to see him, he would probably be petrified immediately.

After running for a short distance, he heard an explosion on the street in the next block. He also saw a few helicopters shooting at the ground from the sky. Lucas directly climbed up a building.

Zhou Wen and Barbara also climbed up. When they reached the top of the building, they ran to the other side. Looking down, they saw a three to four-meter-tall demoness, with hair that resembled venomous snakes, standing on top of a three-story building. The snake-like long hair on her head seemed to extend indefinitely as it flew into the air and wrapped around a helicopter, causing it to explode into pieces.

An Epic expert rode a flying eagle and flew over with a spear in his hand. He wanted to attack Medusa in midair, but all Medusa did was to turn her head to glance at him. The Epic expert was petrified along with his eagle Companion Beast. They fell from the sky and shattered.

Missiles blasted over from afar and exploded. Essence Gold shards scattered everywhere, but they did not harm Medusa.

In a nearby building, someone was constantly shooting at Medusa with Essence Gold bullets. Many people were using Companion Beasts to attack her.

However, it was all meaningless. Medusa swept her gaze and all the Companion Beasts she saw turned into stone statues. The dancing snake hair drilled into the buildings and bit the soldiers and policemen to death.

Any human that was bitten by a snake’s head would instantly be reduced to blood.

The snake hair wrapped around tanks one by one and threw them into the sky. When they fell, they cratered the nearby buildings.

The terrifying Medusa wreaked havoc in the city but no one could stop her. Humans became powerless in front of her.

Even Epic experts only dared to control their Companion Beasts to attack her from afar, not daring to be seen by her.

Boom!

A nearby building collapsed. Many humans who were hiding inside cried out in horror.

Medusa glanced over and immediately, a group of humans was petrified. Their faces were filled with various expressions of fear.

Boom!

The crumbling floors fell, instantly smashing the petrified humans into pieces.

“Damn it!” Lucas grabbed his ax and wanted to jump to a shorter building to the side.

“Where are you going?” Zhou Wen pulled him and asked.

“I’ll run behind her and chop at her head. Just like the legendary prince in the myth, I’ll behead her,” said Lucas.

“You don’t have the prince’s adamantine sword, helm of darkness, and winged sandals. Do you think you can succeed?” Zhou Wen had also heard the myth that Lucas had mentioned.

With the help of the Goddess of Wisdom, he had used a few divine weapons to secretly chop off Medusa’s head. It would be strange if he could cut her head off with a crappy ax.

“Where there’s a will there is a way. Some things have to be done by someone. The Great Lucas can do it.” As Lucas spoke, he ran out and jumped onto the rooftop beside him.

Then, he crouched down and advanced, preventing Medusa from discovering him. He continued to move towards another building and constantly approached Medusa.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 475 - Fighting Medusa Again

475 Fighting Medusa Again

Zhou Wen frowned slightly. Although Lucas's words made sense, he knew very well how powerful Medusa was. Even if Lucas could unleash the power of that strike back at the manor, it would probably be very difficult to injure Medusa.

However, even if Zhou Wen persuaded Lucas, he definitely wouldn't listen under such circumstances. Even if he knew it meant death, he would definitely advance.

"Little girl, you said that you have a Companion Beast that can block Medusa's Eyes of Petrification, right? Is that true?" Zhou Wen asked Barbara.

"Who are you calling a little girl, you kid? I'm older than you, okay?" Barbara glared at Zhou Wen.

"Alright, Missy. You said that there's a Companion Beast that can resist Medusa's Eyes of Petrification, right?" Zhou Wen asked as he looked at her.

"So what if I do? Don't get any funny ideas," Barbara said as she looked at Zhou Wen warily.

Zhou Wen pointed at Lucas. "It's too dangerous for Lucas to fight Medusa. Why don't you lend him your Companion Beast?"

“You think I don’t want to? But my Companion Beast is a piece of clothing. It’s only useful if I wear it. The clothes transformed from a Companion Beast can’t be worn by others. How can I help him?” Barbara asked.

“Clothes? Is it an invisibility cloak?” Zhou Wen asked in surprise.

Unless it was an invisible cloak that Medusa couldn’t see, Zhou Wen didn’t know what other clothes could prevent someone from being petrified by the Eyes of Petrification.

“What are you thinking about? How could I have an invisibility cloak? My Companion Beast can turn into sunshade clothes; it doesn’t have the ability to turn invisible.” Barbara pointed at the cloak-like clothes on her body.

Such clothes transformed from this Companion Beast can resist Medusa’s Eyes of Petrification? Zhou Wen sized up Barbara’s clothes.

She wore something that looked like a large cloak that wrapped around her entire body. It was silver in color, making it very eye-catching. It really didn’t seem like it had invisible properties.

“That’s right. I’m very sure that it can resist Medusa’s Eyes of Petrification. Back then, Medusa looked over at me, and many people around me were petrified. Only I managed to escape. I was completely fine,” Barbara replied.

“What kind of Companion Beast transforms into your sunshade clothes? What are its uses?” Zhou Wen asked.

“The sunshade clothes were obtained from a Legendary dimensional creature I killed at the beach. Its name is

Silverleaf Shell. Its companion form is the sunshade clothes. It has a certain level of defense, but it’s not strong. It’s mainly used to defend against fire. After wearing it, even the flames of the Fire Sprites in the Metalwork Temple can’t hurt me.”

Is it just fire-resistant clothes? And it’s a low-level Legendary Companion Beast. Yet, it can actually resist Medusa’s Eyes of Petrification? The more Zhou Wen listened, the more incredulous he felt.

There were many armors that could defend against fire, but it didn’t seem like any of them could defend against Medusa’s Eyes of Petrification.

Seeing that Zhou Wen didn’t believe her, Barbara said angrily, “It’s up to you whether you believe me or not. I’m telling the truth anyway.”

Sunshade clothes… Fireproof… Wait… Could it be because of… Zhou Wen suddenly had an idea as he thought of a possibility.

According to what Zhou Wen knew, snakes didn’t have good vision. It could be said that they were extremely short-sighted. As for some snakes, they had infrared thermal detectors. They could sense the body temperature of creatures to track their prey.

Medusa was not a snake, but if she was considered a snake and if her Eyes of Petrification also possessed infrared thermal detection functionality, it could explain many things.

For example, why her Eyes of Petrification could only petrify creatures, not dead objects like buildings.

For example, why was it that Barbara’s sunshade clothes were able to withstand Medusa’s Eyes of Petrification? That was because not only were the sunshade clothes fire-resistant, but they also prevented Barbara’s body temperature from dissipating. As such, Medusa couldn’t see her, so she naturally couldn’t be petrified.

Of course, the Eyes of Petrification couldn’t be as simple as just detecting body temperatures. It was likely at a higher level. Therefore, even Companion Beasts could be petrified. However, by doing so, one could probably know the main effects of the Eyes of Petrification and figure out a way to crack it.

Although Zhou Wen wasn’t afraid of the Eyes of Petrification, Lucas didn’t have such an ability.

When he thought of Lucas, he realized that Lucas had already run to the bottom of the three-story building where Medusa was standing. He peeked his head out from behind to check on the situation, as though he wanted to rush up.

This fool. Don’t tell me he really wants to fight Medusa head-on? Just as Zhou Wen was thinking about it, he saw Lucas suddenly leap up with the gigantic ax in his hand. With a terrifying golden divine light, he cleaved at Medusa’s neck without any hesitation.

“Lord Lucas, you can do it!” Barbara waved her fists excitedly as she cheered Lucas on. It was clear that Lucas held a very high position in her heart.

Zhou Wen was also somewhat surprised by Lucas’s strength. He had clearly just expended his Essence Energy not long ago, but to be able to produce a strike that wasn’t inferior to the one he delivered in the manor was indeed surprising.

Could it be that the saying that an idiot isn’t afraid of exhaustion is true? Zhou Wen thought to himself.

Lucas’s sneak attack on Medusa from behind was not a bad idea. Unfortunately, Medusa did not only have a pair of eyes. The poisonous snakes that her hair had transformed into were all her eyes.

Just as Lucas jumped up, he had already been discovered by Medusa. Medusa turned her head and looked at Lucas, who was in midair and cleaving down with both hands.

It’s over! Zhou Wen sighed inwardly. Although he wanted to help Lucas, he wasn’t able to make a move in time. Furthermore, even if he did, he couldn’t deal with Medusa. All he could do was guarantee his escape.

Something that exceeded Zhou Wen’s expectations happened. Medusa’s gaze landed on Lucas’s body, which was enveloped by the golden divine light. It failed to petrify his body. However, the god-like golden light on Lucas’s body dissipated. His body flew out like a cannonball.

Boom!

Lucas’s body crashed into a building, shattering the glass windows of the building.

“Even Lord Lucas…” Barbara covered her mouth as her eyes widened in disbelief.

Zhou Wen saw that Medusa was actually chasing after Lucas, so he said to Barbara before rushing out of the building, “Go and see how Lucas is doing. I’ll lure Medusa away.”

“Do you have a death wish?” Barbara reacted and went to pull Zhou Wen back, but he had already rushed out of the building. He had actually leaped into the air and slashed at Medusa with a huge sword in his hand.

The sword beam that resembled a wheel of sunlight violently spun and slashed at Medusa. The venomous snakes on Medusa’s head welcomed the sword beam. Many of the poisonous snakes that could even tear a helicopter to pieces were actually sliced apart by the sword beam. After landing on the ground, they turned into black pieces of hair.

Medusa didn’t pursue Lucas again as she turned to look at Zhou Wen.

Barbara was alarmed, thinking that Zhou Wen was doomed. However, she was surprised to discover that Zhou Wen wasn’t petrified.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 476 - No Way Ou

476 No Way Ou

While Barbara was feeling alarmed, Zhou Wen’s figure flashed as he ran towards the other end of the street. His speed was so fast that she couldn’t see his trajectory. He was like a ghost, appearing once in a while at an unbelievable speed.

Medusa let out a sharp cry as though she had turned on an accelerator and chased after Zhou Wen.

Zhou Wen hadn’t planned on fighting Medusa head-on. The injuries on his body hadn’t healed yet, so it wasn’t suitable for him to fight a high-intensity battle. If it was a battle, perhaps an intense clash of strength would tear his organs apart once again.

He continuously used Ghost Steps. Thanks to having infinite Essence Energy because of Slaughterer, Zhou Wen could use Ghost Steps continuously. He lured Medusa towards the sea.

Seeing that Medusa had been led away by Zhou Wen, Barbara hurriedly jumped off the building and ran towards where Lucas had fallen.

Lucas spat out a mouthful of blood. Some of his skin had already been petrified, but it didn’t look too serious. Before Barbara could even reach him, Lucas had already crawled out of the ruins.

“Where’s Medusa?” Lucas looked around but did not see Medusa.

“The youth who came with you led her over there…” Barbara pointed in the direction that Zhou Wen had left with a strange expression. Then, she couldn’t help but ask, “Lord Lucas, who is he? He’s actually able to ignore Medusa’s Eyes of Petrification. Furthermore, his speed is crazy fast. I’ve never seen anyone as fast as him…”

Barbara wanted to say that he was faster than Lord Lucas, but she swallowed her words in the end.

“He’s a friend of mine. He’s a stronger hero than me.” As Lucas spoke, he went in the direction that Zhou Wen had lured Medusa away.

A hero even more powerful than Lord Lucas? But he’s still so young, how is that possible? Barbara was shocked.

Gritting her teeth, Barbara saw a motorcycle beside her. As the owner was petrified and the key was still in it, she immediately got on and turned the key. The motorbike came to life normally and she chased after Zhou Wen and Lucas.

It wasn’t just Zhou Wen. Many Epic experts in the city had chased after them. Although they didn’t dare to go head-on against Medusa, they couldn’t just let Medusa do as she pleased.

Unfortunately, they were much slower than Zhou Wen and Medusa. Soon, they were left behind.

Boom!

Medusa’s body slammed through the thick wall and directly came out of a building. The venomous snake’s head spewed

venom as it rained down on Zhou Wen.

Zhou Wen flashed to the back of another building. The venom splattered on the wall, causing many holes to appear on the wall made of concrete and steel.

Despite using Ghost Steps continuously, Zhou Wen wasn't as fast as Medusa. He had to rely on various buildings and terrain to barely ensure that Medusa wouldn't catch up.

Medusa's speed is really too fast. If it were another non-speed-type Mythical creature, I wouldn't have to go through so much trouble. Zhou Wen's figure flashed as a devilish gaze nearly grazed his cheek, exploding a cafe.

Zhou Wen leaped into the air and avoided the flying rubble and various glass shards. He stepped on a piece of flying glass with his toes and used Ghost Steps to propel himself again.

However, before Zhou Wen could land, Medusa had already rushed to the spot where he landed. A venomous snake swept over.

Instantly, he switched to the Godfiend Life Providence. The White Shadow of Poison appeared behind him and flapped its wings. Zhou Wen's figure charged into the sky, dodging the venomous snakes' devouring.

Medusa suddenly exerted strength in her feet as the hard concrete ground cracked open. She leaped into the air like cannonballs as she chased after Zhou Wen. She shot out shocking finger beams as her palm grabbed at Zhou Wen's flying body.

Zhou Wen's body drew a strange arc in the air like a flying immortal. There was something elegant in the midst of a

close call. He dodged Medusa’s repeated attacks and charged into a building that had over twenty floors.

Boom!

Medusa also crashed into the wall, causing a huge hole to appear in it. Fragments splashed out everywhere.

Zhou Wen lured Medusa all the way to the seaside. He had originally wanted to escape from Medusa in the city, but he ultimately failed. All he could do was attempt to escape through the sea.

As he was chased and fled, Zhou Wen tried his best but was only barely able to avoid being caught by Medusa. It was impossible for him to counterattack.

Even if he were in his best condition, he would not be a match against Medusa.

After running for more than an hour, he finally arrived at the beach. Zhou Wen plunged into the sea and unleashed the Nine Dragons Art, swimming deep into the sea.

Although there were many dimensional creatures at sea, it was not easy to find a terrifying existence like Medusa in it.

However, Zhou Wen soon realized that his decision wasn’t that correct.

After Medusa chased him into the sea, her speed wasn’t affected at all. She was still as fast as before. The head of the venomous snake became even more agile as it constantly attacked Zhou Wen like a fish in water.

Zhou Wen immediately recalled that in legends, Medusa seemed to have an affair with Poseidon. Fighting in the sea

wasn’t difficult for her.

In the sea, it was disadvantageous for him to use Ghost Steps. All Zhou Wen could do was rush out of the sea and use the Godfiend Life Providence to charge into the sky.

Medusa probably doesn’t have the ability to fly, right? I’ll flee to a high altitude. I don’t believe she can still catch up. Zhou Wen tore out of the water and summoned White Shadow of Poison to flap its wings again as he charged towards the sky.

Medusa also leaped up from the sea like a ferocious sea monster. She bared her fangs and brandished her claws as she charged at Zhou Wen. Light constantly shot out from her eyes as her snake hair swept towards him.

Zhou Wen’s body constantly changed his position as he drew a strange arc with his figure. He moved in the air as though he was on the ground. He constantly borrowed force to dodge Medusa’s repeated attacks.

Boom!

Gravity took over Medusa’s leap as she fell back into the sea. The waves that were dozens of feet high were stirred. She really could not fly.

Zhou Wen was immediately delighted. Back in the game, he had been sealed in the palace. He had no chance of flying into the sky. He never expected Medusa to have such a weakness.

However, before Zhou Wen could be happy, he saw Medusa spread a pair of swan-like wings behind her back and fly up again.

F**k you. Why didn’t you use your wings just now? Zhou Wen could only continue fleeing, but he still couldn’t escape Medusa. He was chased to the point where he had nowhere to turn.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 477 - Nowhere to Turn To

477 Nowhere to Turn To

I can’t keep running like this. How can I get rid of her? Zhou Wen wasn’t as fearless as Lucas.

He only wanted to get rid of Medusa now. As for whether Medusa would harm the world in the future, that was not something he could control. Anyway, he did not want to die.

Suddenly, Zhou Wen’s heart stirred as he flew in one direction. He headed for the island that An Sheng had taken him to.

Zhou Wen thought that he might be able to use the magical waterfall and pool to escape Medusa. This was because he had already cleared the dimensional zone and had left his name on the golden monolith in the dimensional zone. He wouldn’t be trapped inside worrying about not being able to leave.

As long as he could avoid Medusa’s pursuit, he would quietly hide inside for a period of time and wait for Medusa to leave before coming out.

He didn’t have the strength to kill the black six-winged dragon again. He had previously joined forces with An Sheng and, with Zhang Yuzhi’s help, they managed to kill the black six-winged dragon. He was alone this time and had yet to recover from his serious injuries. If he really angered the black six-winged dragon, he would probably die.

Zhou Wen lured Medusa to the island. After a while, Lucas and the group of Epic experts finally reached the beach. They discovered traces of battle on the beach, but they failed to find anyone.

One of the trembling residents by the beach told them that they were heading towards the sea.

Medusa was already extremely terrifying and there were even more dimensional creatures on the sea. When the other Epic experts heard that Medusa had been lured to the sea, they secretly heaved a sigh of relief. They thought with luck, “Perhaps Medusa won’t return after being lured to the sea.”

Lucas ignored everything else and jumped onto a boat, prepared to start the engine, and venture deep into the sea.

“Master Lucas, I’ll go with you.” Barbara arrived on her motorbike and threw it onto the ground before jumping onto the boat.

“Quickly disembark it. The sea is too dangerous,” said Lucas.

“Lord Lucas, have you forgotten? I came from the sea to the Peninsula of Gods. I’m a daughter of the sea, so I can help you track your friend and Medusa at sea. You are just one person. You won’t be able to find them even if you’re on a boat.” Barbara had already started the boat.

Lucas thought about it and agreed. Looking at the boundless sea, he only knew the general direction. He had no idea how to find Zhou Wen and Medusa.

“Then fight alongside the Great Lucas, girl,” Lucas said as he stood at the bow of the boat and looked at the sea.

After great hardship, Zhou Wen finally returned to the island where there were Water Sprites. Now, he wasn’t in the mood to kill them. He rushed to the waterfall on the island and plunged into the pool.

Boom!

Just as Zhou Wen entered the pool, Medusa’s gaze landed on the pool, blasting a curtain of water several meters high.

After the pool calmed down, Zhou Wen was gone.

Inside the cave, Zhou Wen followed the water and quickly exited the waterfall cave.

Zhou Wen heaved a sigh of relief when he didn’t see Medusa. He thought to himself, Medusa better not jump in here when she can’t see my corpse in the pool.

However, his worst fears happened. Zhou Wen could only hear the splashing sound of water coming from the cave. Medusa had already rushed out of the water.

I’m screwed! Zhou Wen hurriedly burrowed under the pool, hoping to get out again.

However, Medusa’s snake hair had entered the pool. It was already a snakes’ nest. Countless venomous snakes were wriggling in the pool.

This fellow’s intelligence is too high. She actually knows how to sever my retreat! Zhou Wen felt depressed, but he had no choice but to move his body to dodge Medusa’s attack.

Boom! Boom!

Medusa’s gaze randomly shot out in all directions, causing the surrounding rocks and grass to explode, creating a loud boom.

Zhou Wen immediately felt that something bad was about to happen. It was already difficult to deal with Medusa. If she made a scene, the black six-winged dragon would definitely be awoken. If he were to face two terrifying Mythical creatures, wouldn’t he die even more tragically?

Now, Zhou Wen wished he had an invisibility cloak and could immediately disappear in front of Medusa.

Roar! An angry roar came from the center of the island. As expected, the dragon was awakened and turned into a black lightning bolt that rushed over.

Please bless me. Although they are dimensional creatures, they aren’t of the same species. They might be enemies. Let them fight it out! Zhou Wen prayed inwardly.

Unfortunately, he soon realized that he was being too naive.

After the dragon rushed over, it ignored Medusa and opened its mouth to spit out a venomous smoke at Zhou Wen.

This is really bad. Zhou Wen suddenly realized that he shouldn’t have come here.

It was too late for regrets. There was a black dragon in front of him and Medusa behind him. They attacked Zhou Wen one after another, completely cutting off the possibility of him escaping.

Even if he used Ghost Steps, it was impossible for him to be faster than two Mythical creatures. Whether he advanced or retreated, he was doomed.

Seeing that the two Mythical creatures had surrounded him and leaving him no chance to escape, Zhou Wen gritted his teeth and switched to the Godfiend Life Providence. The Lost Country ring appeared on his finger. After spinning the ring, Zhou Wen's body immediately vanished from the middle of the pincer attack.

Lucas and Barbara were in the sea searching for traces of Zhou Wen and Medusa. The more Barbara searched, the more depressed she became. Finally, she couldn't help but say to Lucas, "Lord Lucas, I'm afraid that your friend is doomed. Although he's very powerful, it's very difficult for even a god to survive against an existence like Medusa."

"No, Barbara, you underestimate a friend of Lucas too much. He's just like me, a great human hero. I firmly believe that he's safe and sound. Perhaps he has already killed Medusa. We have to find him as soon as possible. We can't let him enjoy the glory alone." Lucas's face was filled with determination as he stood at the bow of the boat and surveyed the surrounding sea, searching for Zhou Wen.

That's impossible! That's Medusa! She's a mythical demoness! Even the mythical human prince had to borrow many divine artifacts from the Goddess of Wisdom to defeat her! Barbara grumbled internally, but she didn't dare to say it out.

"There seems to be a small island over there. Let's take a look," Lucas instructed.

On the island, Zhou Wen's figure appeared on the black six-winged dragon's back after a momentary disappearance.

Without any hesitation, Zhou Wen wrapped one hand around the black six-winged dragon's neck. On his palm was a silver spider web glove. After touching the scales on the

black six-winged dragon’s neck, it immediately stuck firmly to it.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 478 - Monster Battle

478 Monster Battle

Upon sensing Zhou Wen on its back, a terrifying black flame immediately erupted from the black six-winged dragon’s body. It wanted to shake Zhou Wen off its back.

However, Zhou Wen was already prepared. He transformed into the Demon Dragon True Body and stuck to its body, allowing the black flames to erupt without letting go.

Medusa was originally attacking Zhou Wen, but because he was on the black six-winged dragon’s back, her gaze immediately landed on the black six-winged dragon.

The Eyes of Petrification landed on Zhou Wen. Through the use of the Truth Listener earring, this replenished his Essence Energy, allowing him to maintain his Demon Dragon True Body state.

However, the black six-winged dragon did not have such an ability. The scales on its body actually began to turn into stone when Medusa’s Eyes of Petrification looked at it.

Roar!

The black six-winged dragon flew into a rage as demonic flames rose from its back. Two hidden pairs of wings appeared, making it live up to its name as a six-winged black dragon. The petrified scales on its body shattered like stone shells, revealing the new scales underneath.

The six dragon wings were suddenly extended. They drew out a terrifying black flame. Black flame-like blades slashed toward Medusa.

Medusa was unwilling to be outdone as she waved her snake hair to meet the black-flamed blade aura. Numerous blade auras collided with the snake hair. Although the blade aura was shattered, many of the poisonous snakes were also severed.

Instantly, the two Mythical creatures were enraged as they began a battle between monsters.

Zhou Wen firmly held onto the black six-winged dragon's back. No matter how intense the battle was, he wasn't thrown off its back.

Zhou Wen's Sky Spider Glove had very strong adhesive properties. Once he stuck on, there was no way of separating him unless he released or had his hand chopped off.

It wasn't easy to survive in such a terrifying battle. Thankfully, Zhou Wen had the Demon Dragon True Body. Otherwise, just the aftershocks of the battle or the black flames from the six-winged dragon's body would have been enough to kill him.

Furthermore, there was an extremely important point to take note of. Medusa's Eyes of Petrification provided Zhou Wen with endless Essence Energy. If not, he wouldn't have been able to persist either. Without the Demon Dragon True Body protecting him, he would be instantly killed in such a battle.

Zhou Wen hugged the black six-winged dragon's neck tightly and slumped on its back. If Medusa wanted to kill him, she would definitely attack the black six-winged

dragon. As for the black six-winged dragon, how could it allow her to bully it? The more they fought, the angrier they became. Instantly, the mountain wall above the island shattered and the ground cracked.

The venom corroded the rocks, and the black flames turned the originally lush island to ruins. Only the spot where the golden apple tree was located remained unscathed, as if it was protected by a mysterious power.

Zhou Wen wished he could immediately escape from the black six-winged dragon’s back. Now that it was truly infuriated with Medusa because of the battle, he believed that the two monsters probably wouldn’t stop the fight even without him.

But now, Zhou Wen really couldn’t escape. The force field produced from their battle had pressed him firmly onto the black six-winged dragon’s back. If Zhou Wen were to forcefully rush out, he would probably be struck by a terrifying explosive force in midair and end up being embroiled in their battle.

The pain in his organs was excruciating. It was likely that the wounds from before had been torn apart. Although he had the Demon Dragon True Body protecting him, his body still suffered a significant blow. Blood constantly seeped out from his mouth and nose.

I’m going to die. Zhou Wen endured the pain as he hugged the black six-winged dragon’s neck tightly. He tried his best to stick his body to its scales to reduce the damage.

The black six-winged dragon was indeed worthy of being the guardian of the golden apple. It was actually able to fight evenly with a mythical demoness like Medusa.

Although Medusa’s Eyes of Petrification had some effect on it, it was difficult to completely petrify it. Only the scales on its surface were affected, but, after shattering, they produced new scales.

The battle between the two monsters allowed Zhou Wen to see the abilities they didn’t use when he fought them.

As Zhou Wen’s strength wasn’t at their level, there were many skills that they didn’t need to use when they fought him.

Now that they had encountered an opponent that was on par with them, they had used all sorts of skills, broadening his horizons.

Zhou Wen was secretly rejoicing. The reason they were able to kill the six-winged dragon the last time was purely because they were lucky. If it wasn’t for the six-winged dragon being infuriated by him and completely ignorant of everything else, the Demonic Neonate wouldn’t have had a chance to stab the ancient sword through its heart. In a head-on clash, he and An Sheng would probably only end up being thrashed even if they joined forces.

Of course, Zhang Yuzhi also played a crucial role. Otherwise, Zhou Wen would have died.

Zhou Wen had the intention to summon the Demonic Neonate and get her to do it again, but in this situation, even if he could kill one of them, the other wasn’t something Zhou Wen could handle. In the end, it would only mean death.

Just as Zhou Wen was thinking about how he could survive, the black six-winged dragon had already pounced on Medusa and bit her head.

The venomous snakes on Medusa’s head swept over but were mostly bitten apart by the black six-winged dragon.

Suddenly, blood tears rolled out of Medusa’s eyes. A strange light shot out from her eyes.

The Eyes of Petrification did not have any corporeal light. Medusa also had another ability that shot out light from her eyes. However, that was not the Eyes of Petrification. It only possessed potent destructive power without the ability to petrify.

However, the light that shot out this time was different. When the beam from the blood teary-eyes shone on the black six-winged dragon’s body, it began petrifying it.

This time, the petrification was different from before. Not only were the scales on the surface petrified, but the six-winged black dragon’s body was also petrified. The speed of petrification just wasn’t very fast.

Roar! Black flames rose from the black six-winged dragon’s body as it erupted with a terrifying power. It wanted to resist the petrification of its body, but it was useless this time. Its body became more and more petrified.

It started with its chest and face, then its forelimbs, and then finally its body and rear limbs. In just a short moment, the six-winged dragon was about to turn into a statue.

What’s going on? Is this the true power of Medusa’s Eyes of Petrification? Was the one before just for fun? Zhou Wen was alarmed.

Even worse was that the Truth Listener earring’s power was gradually unable to withstand the petrifying light. Zhou

Wen’s skin began to show signs of petrification despite his dragon form.

I can’t wait any longer. Zhou Wen knew that if he waited any longer, he might lose his life. He immediately summoned the Demonic Neonate and Banana Fairy.

He held the fan formed by Banana Fairy and waved it at Medusa below. A strong wind blew and blew away Medusa’s snake hair.

The Demonic Neonate did not hesitate. The ancient sword tore out of its sheath and transformed into a purple glow that directly pierced toward Medusa’s head.

The black six-winged dragon was not completely petrified. It continued to press against Medusa, preventing her from dodging. All she could do was turn her head in an attempt to avoid the ancient sword.

However, the ancient sword was too close to her and she was unable to completely dodge it. A purple light flashed and the ancient sword actually pierced through her left eye. Immediately, blood flowed out from the socket as Medusa let out a sharp cry.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 479 - A Hero Almost Akin to God

479 A Hero Almost Akin to God

Medusa let out a painful cry. A huge force surged out from her body, forcing the half-petrified six-winged dragon to retreat more than ten meters.

She used her fingertips to grab the hilt of the ancient sword and, like pulling out a splinter, she pulled it out from her eye and threw it violently.

Zhou Wen jumped off the black six-winged dragon’s back and looked at Medusa’s eyes. He saw that the eye that had been stabbed by the ancient sword was blood-red, and blood kept gushing out. It looked like a serious injury.

Upon discovering Zhou Wen, Medusa angrily rushed over, but the petrified black dragon’s body emitted a cracking sound. Its petrified flesh and bones cracked open as it forcefully slammed Medusa.

Medusa was hit head-on and immediately rolled over. However, a purple light flashed. The ancient sword that was thrown by Medusa had flown back. While she was embroiled with the six-winged black dragon, the sword stabbed into her other eye. The Demonic Neonate hid in the distance with a cold expression in her eyes.

Medusa’s eyes were completely blind. She immediately became a poisonous snake that had lost its poisonous fangs.

Although her combat strength remained terrifying, she was not as strong as before.

The black six-winged dragon dragged its half petrified body and fought the blind Medusa. It was still an intense battle, but Zhou Wen was finally able to escape the crossfire. He fled the battlefield and watched them fight.

The ground trembled as the two monsters engaged in close combat. The ground cracked and the mountains collapsed, as though the end of the world had arrived.

Zhou Wen hid far away and saw Medusa and the black six-winged dragon slam into the sea together. The waves in the sea churned, stirring up huge waves. He couldn’t help but secretly rejoice. If they really end up with an internecine outcome, I might really luck out this time. Perhaps I might be able to kill two Mythical creatures at once.

As he thought this, he saw the six-winged black dragon and Medusa sink into the sea. He could only see the surging waves on the surface of the sea, so he did not know what the situation below was.

After a while, the sea calmed down, but a lot of red liquid spread out.

Don’t tell me both parties are dead? If they die without me killing them, will they leave behind crystals and Companion Eggs? Zhou Wen was considering whether he should go into the sea to search for the corpses when he suddenly saw the seawater spew out like a volcanic eruption. Face covered in blood and body covered in wounds, a one-armed Medusa charged out of the sea.

The ancient sword in her eye hadn’t been pulled out, but she ignored it and charged at Zhou Wen.

Although her eyes were blind and she no longer had the ability to use the Eyes of Petrification, the snakes on her head could still allow her to see.

Zhou Wen turned around and ran. Although Medusa looked miserable, she was still a Mythical creature after all. To be able to kill a six-winged dragon in such a state was indeed extremely terrifying.

Medusa chased after him with all her might as though she hated Zhou Wen to the core. However, Zhou Wen soon realized that she was much slower.

Previously, Zhou Wen wasn’t as fast as her when he used Ghost Steps. Now, he could open up a distance with it. Medusa’s speed was indeed much slower, completely different from before.

Zhou Wen felt a lot more at ease. He rushed into the waterfall pool and returned to the island in the real world.

Medusa rushed out as well, but Zhou Wen knew that she was slowing down. Furthermore, her body was constantly bleeding. It looked like her aura was rapidly weakening.

She’s about to die? Zhou Wen was delighted. He watched as Medusa’s aura weakened and her body slowed down. More importantly, the Demonic Neonate’s ancient sword had completely stabbed into her eye, having likely penetrated her brain.

Although Medusa no longer posed a threat to him, Zhou Wen still tried his best to maintain a constant distance from her. He had no idea if she would suddenly unleash a crazy attack before dying, just like when the black six-winged dragon died previously.

However, Zhou Wen soon realized that Medusa was really on the brink of death. As she chased after him, she left a pool of blood on the ground. The wounds on her body were bleeding profusely. With her physique, the wounds should have stopped bleeding. Clearly, the six-winged dragon’s powers were strange, preventing her wounds from healing.

Medusa had already begun to stumble as she walked. She was like a staggering old woman. She no longer had her previous might.

When Zhou Wen retreated to the beach, Medusa seemed to know that she was at the end of her rope. She unleashed her final strength and pounced at Zhou Wen with a shrill cry.

Her pounce seemed to be strong, but her strength was spent. She no longer had the terrifying energy fluctuations from before.

Zhou Wen summoned Overlord Sword and slashed out a sword beam at Medusa who was pouncing over.

Lucas and Barbara had already arrived near the island on their boat. Lucas was looking around when he saw Zhou Wen standing on the beach. He was immediately overjoyed. Just as he was about to call out to him, he suddenly saw Medusa pounce at him.

Barbara immediately let loose a cry of surprise upon seeing this.

However, in the next second, Zhou Wen drew his sword and slashed at Medusa, who was pouncing over.

The intense sword glow was like a sun halo as it slashed at Medusa’s neck. After this, Medusa’s body was sent flying under the impact of the sword beam. Under the continuous

rotation of the razor-like sword flash, the flesh and bones on her neck were crushed and broken. Finally, her head was chopped off and it flew into the air.

Barbara’s scream came to a halt as her mouth gaped open in shock. Her eyes were widened at this incredulous scene.

The demoness, Medusa, who had wreaked havoc in the entire city and left countless Epic experts on the Peninsula of Gods helpless, had been beheaded. It was truly unbelievable.

Lucas was also surprised. Then, he subconsciously took out his phone and, out of habit, took a photo.

Ka-Cha!

The image on the screen was that of a man on the beach with his back facing the camera under the setting sun. He was holding a sword askew to the ground.

Across the young man, Medusa’s body was suspended in mid-air. Fresh blood spurted out and a head flew into the air. The entire scene looked extremely impactful and had an indescribable beauty of violence.

The calmness of the sword-wielding man formed a strong contrast with the twisted snakes on Medusa’s head and the blood that sprayed out. It made anyone who saw the picture feel their blood boil for some reason.

Lucas looked at the picture and had a sudden impulse. After adding a caption, he attempted to post it on his online account.

“Medusa’s doomsday—the descent of a hero almost akin to God.”

The moment this photo appeared, it immediately caused the Internet to explode in excitement. Countless people on the Peninsula of Gods saw this photo and left a message.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 480 - A Personal Hero

480 A Personal Hero

Although the people who followed Lucas were basically young people from the Peninsula of Gods, it was precisely because of this that they knew how terrifying Medusa was.

Many people had witnessed Medusa wreaking havoc in the city with their own eyes. Countless innocent citizens had been harmed, and so many Epic experts were mercilessly killed by Medusa.

Even though no one had fought Medusa before, they knew that this legendary demoness was definitely at the Mythical stage.

Now that Medusa had actually been killed, they were both surprised and happy.

Many people left comments to ask Lucas if Medusa had really been killed. Many people also asked who the man that killed Medusa was and who the sword-wielding man was.

Then, this photo and Lucas’s caption spread across the Internet at the speed of light, triggering a tsunami-like discussion.

There were two main points to the discussion. One was the authenticity of the picture, while the other was the identity of the sword-wielding man. Lucas’s personal page was about to crash from the traffic. Everyone was waiting for Lucas’s reply.

However, Lucas didn’t read the messages. After posting the photo, he and Barbara landed on the island together.

“Haha, I knew you could do it. You are a great hero like me, Lucas. You saved our city.” Lucas went forward and gave Zhou Wen a firm hug.

“I’m not as great as you.” Zhou Wen wasn’t mocking him, but speaking from the heart.

Lucas knew that it was impossible, but he did what he could do. Although there was a slight accident, it hadn’t been his intention.

“One day, you will surpass me.” Lucas looked confident as he patted Zhou Wen’s shoulder and said, “Quick, go and take a look at your spoils of war. That’s the reward you deserve and also the medal of a hero.”

Zhou Wen rolled his eyes inwardly. He was clearly just digging through a corpse for treasures. Why did it sound so righteous when Lucas put it that way?

Zhou Wen didn’t stand on ceremony. This was a Mythical creature he had risked his life to kill. He naturally wouldn’t let it go.

Soon, Zhou Wen found a dimensional crystal in Medusa’s corpse. There was Medusa’s shadow in the dimensional crystal. Clearly, it was a Essence Energy Skill Crystal.

“Old friend, you’re really lucky to have obtained Medusa’s Essence Energy Skill Crystal. Come, let me take a picture of you and upload it online with the photo from just now. Let them witness the moment of heroism.” As Lucas spoke, he was about to use his phone to take a picture.

“What did you say?” Zhou Wen hurriedly stopped Lucas and glared at him.

“I said take a picture and upload it online. This is your heroic history,” said Lucas.

“No, what do you mean by the photo from just now?” Zhou Wen asked again.

“It’s this. I just took a picture of you and uploaded it online. The response is pretty good. You will soon become a famous hero…” Lucas opened his personal page and showed the picture to Zhou Wen as though he was showing off.

Zhou Wen looked at the number of replies—it was already more than sixty thousand, and it was still increasing. His face immediately turned livid.

“Quick, quickly delete the photo.” Zhou Wen was truly anxious.

The Special Inspector Bureau and six families didn’t know that he had advanced to the Epic stage. If they were to find out that he had advanced to the Epic stage and had even killed a dimensional creature like Medusa, they would only be more careful when sending people to make trouble with him in the future. The people they sent would also be more powerful. Wouldn’t that be giving him trouble?

“Why should I delete it? Isn’t this good?” Lucas asked in puzzlement.

“I don’t want to be a hero, much less become famous. Lucas, you mustn’t tell anyone about what happened today. Don’t let others know that I killed Medusa, alright?” Zhou Wen also knew that deleting it was useless. This picture had probably been reposted countless times.

He took a closer look at the photo and realized that it was only a back view of him. Furthermore, because the Overlord Sword reflected the sunlight, it was almost impossible to see the blade clearly. Even his back was affected by the light, so it wasn't easy to recognize him.

"Although I don't know why you have such a strange request, as your friend, I respect your decision. Do you still want me to delete this picture?" said Lucas.

"Forget it." Zhou Wen shook his head. If he were to delete it now, it would only result in the Streisand effect.

Zhou Wen looked at Barbara and asked, "Missy, can you help me keep this secret?"

"No." Barbara shook her head.

"Barbara, he's my friend…" Lucas said anxiously.

Barbara took out a notebook and pen from her chest and handed it to Zhou Wen. Blinking her eyes, she said, "It's fine if you want me to keep it a secret for you, but you have to sign an autograph for me."

"Why do you want my autograph?" Zhou Wen frowned slightly.

He still remembered Ják's matter and wouldn't easily sign things.

"Silly, because you are her hero," Lucas said with a laugh as he patted Zhou Wen's back.

Zhou Wen only realized that he was overthinking when he saw Barbara's flushed face.

“I can give you an autograph, but don’t tell anyone about this, okay?” Zhou Wen took the notebook and pen and signed his name on it.

“Sure.” Barbara received the notebook and carefully looked at Zhou Wen’s signature. Then, she carefully closed it and hugged it in her arms. She thought in joy, Of course I’ll keep it a secret for you. Only I know that you’re the hero who killed Medusa. Only I have your autograph. This is a secret between my personal hero and me.

“Are you going back with us?” Lucas asked Zhou Wen.

“It will be inevitable for people to suspect me if I go back with you.” Zhou Wen didn’t choose to go back with them, not only because of the reason he gave. He still wanted to enter the island to see if the six-winged dragon was dead.

If it was dead, there might be something like a crystal left behind. It would be best if he could obtain a Companion Egg.

Even if nothing was left, it was not bad to pick another golden apple.

However, Zhou Wen remembered that the golden apple had just borne previously, so it likely wasn’t ripe yet.

After Lucas and Barbara left, Zhou Wen entered the dimensional zone through the pool and went to the apple tree to take a look. The golden apple had only just grown and was still far from being ripe. It was probably useless if he plucked it now.

Without finding the ruins of the six-winged dragon on the island, Zhou Wen arrived near the sea where it fought

Medusa. He summoned the silver water snake and made it search for it to see if he could find anything.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 481 - True Mythical Companion Beas

481 True Mythical Companion Beas

As soon as the silver water snake entered the ocean, it merged with the seawater, as if it had disappeared.

Zhou Wen made it search the bottom of the sea. After a while, he saw the silver water snake crawl out of the sea with something in its mouth.

Zhou Wen saw that it looked like a black pineapple without leaves. On careful look, he realized that it was an egg covered in scales.

The black six-winged dragon’s egg? Zhou Wen was overjoyed.

The silver water snake handed the egg to Zhou Wen. Zhou Wen looked at it using the mysterious phone. It was indeed a Mythical Companion Egg.

Six-Winged Guardian Dragon: Mythical

Life Providence: Guardian Dragon

Life Soul: Wings of Black Flame

Wheel of Destiny: The Last Guardian

Strength: 69

Speed: 68

Constitution: 68

Essence Energy: 65

Talent Skill: Poison Breath, Dragon’s Rage, Hell Demonic Flame, Six Wing Slash.

Companion Form: Demonic Flaming Dragon Wings

A true Mythical Companion Beast! Zhou Wen was surprised and delighted. This was the first time he had seen a true Mythical Companion Egg.

The Companion Beasts he had now only had the potential of being Mythical, but none had truly advanced to the Mythical stage. The one closest to the true Mythical stage was Demonic Neonate, but her stats were too low. She needed to grow again; otherwise, she could only release her flying sword from afar and not participate in any head-on combat.

This Six-Winged Guardian Dragon was a true Mythical creature. If it could hatch, it would undoubtedly raise Zhou Wen’s strength greatly.

With it, the chances of Zhou Wen defeating the Mythical Creature in the temple were much higher.

The Essence Energy requirement must be very high, but my Slaughterer has the ability to have unlimited Essence Energy. I should be able to hatch it, right? Zhou Wen thought as he used the mysterious phone to snap the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon egg into his phone before letting the blood-colored avatar attempt to hatch it.

The incubation went surprisingly smoothly. After activating Slaughterer, the blood-colored avatar easily hatched the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon. Its tattoo appeared on his back.

Zhou Wen excitedly summoned the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon. The feeling of seeing a black dragon appear in front of him was indescribable.

However, the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon that appeared in front of Zhou Wen only had two dragon wings. It wasn't in its six-winged form.

After Zhou Wen made it use its Life Soul, the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon took on the six-winged form, and its strength increased greatly.

After getting the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon to use all its skills, Zhou Wen realized that the fellow's skills weren't complete. It had fewer skills than the real Six-Winged Guardian Dragon, but these four skills were enough.

What Zhou Wen was more concerned about was its Wheel of Destiny. The Demonic Neonate also had the Wheel of Destiny, but it was written "One Spin" without any annotations.

However, the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon was different. Behind the Wheel of Destiny was the "The Last Guardian," and there was also an annotation.

The Last Guardian: Miracle of Life Ward.

Although it had an annotation, Zhou Wen still didn't understand what it meant. He got the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon to demonstrate it, but it couldn't.

Regardless, having his first true Mythical Companion Beast made Zhou Wen very excited.

Riding on the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon, Zhou Wen circled the sky and realized that it wasn’t as comfortable as he had imagined. This fellow’s flying state was too violent and wasn’t stable at all. Riding it was like riding a wild, unbridled horse. The feeling wasn’t good.

From the looks of it, it’s not that great an experience when the legendary Dragon Knights in the West District ride dragons. Zhou Wen unsummoned the dragon and glanced at the golden apple that hadn’t ripened. In the end, he gave up the thought of plucking it and left the mysterious dimensional zone.

After returning to the Peninsula of Gods, he quickly contacted An Sheng.

“You were the one who killed Medusa, right?” An Sheng had clearly seen the photo online and asked directly.

Zhou Wen recounted the situation. An Sheng wasn’t as excited as Lucas and company. He said to Zhou Wen solemnly, “Young Master Wen, you only have one life. Furthermore, it doesn’t only belong to you. I hope you won’t use your life to do such dangerous things again.”

“I originally only wanted to lure Medusa away. I never expected that I couldn’t lose her no matter how hard I tried. In the end, I was forced by the circumstances,” Zhou Wen explained.

“This absolutely mustn’t happen a second time. Forget it, I’ll quickly take you back. I can’t let you stay outside any longer. It’s only been a few days, but you nearly died twice.

I’ll let you return to school where you attend classes and game,” An Sheng said.

“Has the ban on the Peninsula of Gods been lifted?” Zhou Wen asked.

“After Medusa escaped, the Peninsula of Gods was already in chaos. What’s the use of the ban? That thief has probably left the Peninsula of Gods long ago, so there’s naturally no need for them to continue the ban.” An Sheng paused before saying, “Quickly come back. I’ll go book the flight tickets now.”

When Zhou Wen returned to the hotel, An Sheng didn’t say anything else. However, he booked the earliest ticket to leave the Peninsula of Gods. They could leave tomorrow morning.

When Zhou Wen was resting, he unlocked his phone to look at Lucas’s personal page. The comments below the picture had exceeded 200,000. The latest messages were asking who the hero was.

This was because Lucas had confirmed Medusa’s death after his return. Now, they only wanted to know who killed Medusa.

Thankfully, there was only his back view in the photo, and because of the light, it wasn’t very clear. Even An Sheng had relied on guessing. It was impossible for him to recognize Zhou Wen with this photo. No matter how many times the Special Inspector Bureau guessed, it was probably impossible to think of him. After all, in the bureau’s eyes, he was still a student who hadn’t advanced to the Epic stage.

This photo was not only popular on the Peninsula of Gods, but even the Federation’s brass had noticed it.

After all, Medusa had really appeared. Such a creature was undoubtedly at the Mythical stage. They paid close attention to people who could kill Mythical creatures.

It wasn’t impossible for someone in the Federation to kill Mythical creatures. At least, there were such people in the six families. However, that was only because they relied on Mythical pets. Furthermore, there weren’t many of them. Each family only had a few capable of such feats.

Now that a person who could kill Mythical creatures had suddenly appeared, it naturally attracted the attention of many factions. It wasn’t just the six families. The powerful bigshots in many places were guessing who this person was and whether he was from the six families.

However, few people knew the answer. The next morning, An Sheng took Zhou Wen to the airport.

Zhou Wen sat in the departure hall while An Sheng went to the bathroom. As he was texting Lucas to bid him farewell, someone walked to the chair behind Zhou Wen and sat down.

Zhou Wen didn’t notice the person, but after he sat down, he leaned against the back of the chair behind Zhou Wen. The back of his head bumped into Zhou Wen’s hair.

Zhou Wen frowned slightly. Just as he was about to lean his head forward and not get too close to him, he heard a voice behind him. “It looks like you’ve been doing pretty well recently.”

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 482 - Turning Around is Easy, Meeting is Difficul

482 Turning Around is Easy, Meeting is Difficul

Zhou Wen’s body trembled when he heard the voice. He was alarmed and delighted. Just as he wanted to stand up and turn his head to look at the person, he heard him say, “Sit still just like that and don’t move.”

“Zhong Ziya, where have you been recently? Why are you here?” Zhou Wen asked in a lowered voice. He could tell that the voice belonged to Zhong Ziya.

He knew that Zhong Ziya’s situation might be worse than his. At the very least, the bureau didn’t dare openly arrest him and Hui Haifeng, but they weren’t as polite to Zhong Ziya and Jiang Yan.

“I’ve been traveling around, leading the bunch of dogs at the Special Inspector Bureau in circles.” Zhong Ziya leaned against Zhou Wen and said in a relaxed tone, “As for you, your rate of growth is really surprising. You were the one to kill Medusa, right?”

“That was an accident.” Zhou Wen paused and said, “I got what you left behind. It’s with me now. I’ll hand it to you.”

“There’s no need. That was originally a souvenir for you,” Zhong Ziya said lazily.

“Is that the method Teacher used?” After a moment of silence, Zhou Wen asked again.

“Who knows?” Zhong Ziya pursed his lips and said, “Even if you were to know what method was used, is there any meaning to it?”

Zhou Wen thought about it and was momentarily at a loss for words.

“Did Medusa drop a Companion Egg?” Zhong Ziya asked.

“No, it’s just a Essence Energy Skill Crystal,” Zhou Wen answered truthfully. Although the two of them hadn’t really spent much time together, Zhou Wen felt that Zhong Ziya was different from others. Perhaps it was because they were both Wang Mingyuan’s students and were in the same situation, or perhaps for some other reason. If it wasn’t necessary, he wasn’t willing to patronize Zhong Ziya.

“Lend me the Medusa crystal and pass it to me from the left. The surveillance camera can’t see it from that corner,” Zhong Ziya said.

“What do you want it for?” Zhou Wen said as he took out Medusa’s crystal and handed it to Zhong Ziya.

He had seen the requirements of the Medusa crystal. He couldn’t meet the requirements of 41 Constitution and 21 Cursed attributes.

In addition, there were Life Providence and Life Soul requirements. Zhou Wen didn’t know if his few Life

Providences and Life Souls would be of any use. He was still unsure.

However, just the stat requirement was enough to ensure that Zhou Wen wouldn’t be able to use the Medusa Crystal anytime soon. Furthermore, if he needed it, he could head to the Curse Demon Palace to try his luck with Medusa.

“I need it to do something. Don’t ask me what it is. I don’t want to say.” Zhong Ziya took the dimensional crystal. After a while, he touched Zhou Wen’s hand and said, “This is for you. Take it as interest.”

Zhou Wen took it and looked at it. It was a box. Just as he was about to open it, he heard Zhong Ziya say, “Don’t look at it now. Do it when there’s no one around.”

Zhou Wen was about to say something when Zhong Ziya stood up. “I hope that I’ll still be me when we meet again.”

With that said, Zhong Ziya walked out of the waiting area while Zhou Wen sat there, motionless.

Turning around wasn’t difficult, but meeting was difficult.

When An Sheng returned, Zhong Ziya had already disappeared into the crowd. If it wasn’t for the box in his hand, Zhou Wen would have wondered if any of that had happened.

The scene of Wang Mingyuan cooking for the four of them and him playing cards with them seemed to have happened yesterday, but today, they could not even look into each other’s eyes.

“This darn world,” Zhou Wen cursed softly as though he was venting his emotions.

Lucas had offered to wave them off, but Zhou Wen told him that it wasn’t necessary. The reason why An Sheng didn’t get Zhou Wen to inform him in advance was because he didn’t want him there in case someone connected the person in Lucas’s photo to Zhou Wen.

An Sheng sent Zhou Wen back to school. His stance made it obvious that he definitely wouldn’t allow any accidents to happen to him.

In fact, Zhou Wen didn’t have the energy to stir up trouble. His injuries had been worsened from the battle, so he didn’t even want to move.

After returning to the dormitory, he threw himself into bed and soon fell asleep. When he woke up, it was already noon.

Since he still couldn’t feel hunger, Zhou Wen didn’t eat anything. Thinking of the box Zhong Ziya had given him previously, he took it out of the Chaos Bead and opened it to take a look.

There’s nothing? Zhou Wen couldn’t help but be taken aback. The box was empty.

That’s not right! Zhou Wen quickly realized that the box wasn’t empty because it was made of paper and was very light. However, he could sense that the box was rather heavy, as though there was a piece of iron inside.

Could it be… Zhou Wen thought of something as he reached his hand into the box. Inside the empty box, something seemed to be in the way, preventing him from reaching in.

Zhou Wen’s fingers felt as though they were touching something ice-cold. Furthermore, wherever his fingertips

touched, space warped visibly, as though a transparent plastic sheet had been crumpled.

No way! Zhou Wen’s expression turned odd. He took out the mysterious phone and aimed it at the box. Immediately, he saw a row of information appear on the phone.

Invisibility Cloak: Mythical

After reading the top line, many thoughts flashed through Zhou Wen’s mind as he came to a realization.

The person who stole the Invisibility Cloak Companion Egg is Zhong Ziya? Zhou Wen carefully recalled and suddenly understood why he found the picture of the thief familiar.

Now that he thought about it, the thief’s looks and figure were different from Zhong Ziya’s. However, his eyes had a unique aura like Zhong Ziya’s.

Zhong Ziya didn’t end up trapped in the Curse Demon Palace because he stole the Invisibility Cloak, but he stole it to deal with Medusa’s Eyes of Petrification? Zhou Wen gradually considered the cause and effect of the matter.

It was obvious that Zhong Ziya could not incubate the invisibility cloak, so he could not kill Medusa. However, he ended up using some unknown method to get Medusa out of Curse Demon Palace.

With Zhou Wen’s understanding of his character, Zhong Ziya definitely wanted to use the experts on the Peninsula of Gods to kill Medusa. As for how many people would die as a result, Zhong Ziya probably didn’t take it to heart.

Zhou Wen ended up killing Medusa, so he had come to see him. Otherwise, Zhou Wen wouldn’t have known that he was

the one who had stolen the Invisibility Cloak. Zhou Wen probably wouldn’t have even known that he had been here before.

Zhong Ziya, what are you doing? Zhou Wen was somewhat worried. Zhong Ziya’s character was too extreme. Furthermore, he was extremely talented. If he really did something evil, he might become a devil like Jing Daoxian.

Looking at the Invisibility Cloak Companion Egg in his hand, Zhou Wen’s expression turned extremely complicated. He had originally gone to the Peninsula of Gods for the Invisibility Cloak, but he never expected the Invisibility Cloak to reach his hand in such a manner.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 483 - Strange Invisibility Cloak

483 Strange Invisibility Cloak

Zhou Wen carefully read the information on the Invisibility Cloak, but he felt that something was amiss.

Invisibility Cloak: Mythical

Life Providence: Seamless

Life Soul: Combat Cloak

Wheel of Destiny: Deity Possession

Strength: 54

Speed: 71

Constitution: 67

Essence Energy: 72

Talent Skill: Invisibility.

Companion Form: Invisibility Cloak.

There was no problem with the attributes. The Wheel of Destiny was a little strange. The annotation was that it was a miracle of a deity’s descent.

None of these were problematic, but the Invisibility Cloak was a Companion Egg. However, it didn’t indicate that it was a Companion Egg in its information. It was as though the Companion Beast had already been hatched.

Zhou Wen took out the transparent Companion Egg from the box. He could feel that it was the shape of an egg, about the size of a rugby ball.

He attempted to inject his Essence Energy into it, but the Invisibility Cloak Companion Egg didn’t react at all. It didn’t accept his Essence Energy, much less absorb it.

I wonder what method the Zhang family used to reduce the Invisibility Cloak back to its Companion Egg state. Now, although the Invisibility Cloak doesn’t have an owner and looks the same as an ordinary Companion Egg, in essence, it’s already hatched. It’s no wonder no one can’t hatch it after so many years. Zhou Wen was already mentally prepared. It wasn’t strange that he couldn’t hatch it.

With the Companion Egg in hand, Zhou Wen switched his Essence Energy Art to the First Order of Chaos before attempting to inject his Essence Energy into the Companion Egg.

Legend had it that the Invisibility Cloak came from the temple of the dualism god, Phanes. As for the relationship between Phanes and Chaos, it was very subtle. Furthermore, they were from the same pantheon. Zhou Wen felt that the First Order of Chaos might be useful.

However, the outcome didn’t disappoint Zhou Wen. After converting his Essence Energy Art to the First Order of Chaos, the Invisibility Cloak accepted his Essence Energy. The entire Companion Egg trembled slightly.

Zhou Wen was delighted as he increased his Essence Energy input, but the Companion Egg continued trembling gently. When Zhou Wen expended all his Essence Energy, the Invisibility Cloak remained still.

What's the situation now? Does it work or not? Zhou Wen tried a few more times. When he injected Essence Energy, the Invisibility Cloak Companion Egg had a reaction. The moment he stopped, the Invisibility Cloak's reaction disappeared, but it showed no signs of hatching.

After some thought, Zhou Wen felt that this might have something to do with his First Order of Chaos's low level. He had only achieved basic mastery of the First Order of Chaos, and he hadn't even condensed a Life Providence. If he could cultivate it to a higher level, he might be able to hatch the Invisibility Cloak.

Zhou Wen had no choice but to put away the Invisibility Cloak. Even if he were to train his First Order of Chaos now, it wasn't something that could be improved in a short period of time.

Although I can't use the Invisibility Cloak for the time being, I have obtained the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon Companion Beast. I can try and see if I can fight that snake in the temple. Zhou Wen took out his phone and activated the Zhuolu instance dungeon.

Once again, he came to the temple protected by the snake. Zhou Wen summoned the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon and let it enter to fight the snake.

The Six-Winged Guardian Dragon was slightly faster than the snake, but its strength was clearly not as strong as that of the snake. A terrifying clash erupted within the palace.

Dragon Breath, Demonic Flame, Poison Smoke, and all sorts of powers erupted. The blood-colored avatar was nearly killed just from the remnant blasts. Thankfully, Zhou Wen had activated his Demon Dragon True Body in time, preventing him from dying.

Although the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon was at a disadvantage, the snake could not kill it in a short period of time. He could not help but be overjoyed. With the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon as the main force, he might have a chance of killing the snake. There was no need for him to get the Invisibility Cloak anymore.

Zhou Wen summoned Demonic Neonate and Banana Fairy. Just as he was about to rush in to help, he saw the snake's eyes turn into mirrors. Then, it glanced at the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon, immediately making it disappear. It was as though it had been projected inside the snake's eyes. The next second, Zhou Wen saw the notification that the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon had died. He hurriedly turned around and ran.

However, he ran a little too late. After being glanced at by the snake, the phone screen darkened.

What kind of Essence Energy Skill is that? Do you have to be so shameless? Even a Mythical Six-Winged Guardian Dragon dies from a glance. Are you not giving me a way out? Zhou Wen was depressed.

After re-entering the game, Zhou Wen tried a few more times. If the snake didn't have that Essence Energy Skill, he might be able to defeat it by working together with the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon.

However, every time the snake used that skill, he and the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon would be instantly killed

without any chance to retaliate.

Zhou Wen could only take the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon to the other temple, but the outcome was even worse. The dimensional creature that looked like a wolf and tiger, but wasn’t any of them, killed the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon with its speed. The dimensional creature’s speed far exceeded that of the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon. Furthermore, its claws were nearly indestructible. The Six-Winged Guardian Dragon was ripped apart in a few blows.

Although they were both Mythical creatures, the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon was clearly much weaker than the two.

This also had something to do with the Companion Beast’s incomplete skills. If it was the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon with its entire lineup of skills, it should be able to last a little longer.

Even if I can’t kill these two, can’t I kill the weaker ones? Zhou Wen took the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon to the underground sea, thinking of using it to crush the nine black dragons that were pulling the wagon.

They were all at the Mythical stage. With the black dragon being chained up, their strength was greatly reduced. They were definitely not as strong as the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon.

Zhou Wen confidently rode the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon towards the sea and prepared to start a massacre.

However, the moment they entered the sea and saw the nine black dragons, the black dragons seemed to become enraged. The chains on their bodies began to break apart.

Then, a tragic scene occurred. The Six-Winged Guardian Dragon was like a little lamb that had entered a pack of wolves, and it was torn apart by the nine ferocious black dragons.

What’s going on? They can escape their chains even without opening the door to the war wagon? Zhou Wen looked at the black screen and felt extremely depressed.

Zhou Wen tried going to the underground sea again. This time, he didn’t summon the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon. The nine black dragons did not escape their chains.

However, when Zhou Wen summoned the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon, the nine black dragons acted like they were on steroids. They broke free from the chains and devoured the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon and the blood-colored avatar once again.

As a person, it’s best to be more pragmatic. Zhou Wen still hadn’t recovered from his injuries and he had lost a lot of blood previously, so he really didn’t wish to waste any more blood. He didn’t dare take the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon to fight Mythical creatures again. Instead, he went to Tiger Cage Pass.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 484 - Killing the Masked Man

484 Killing the Masked Man

The only dimensional creature that Zhou Wen had never killed in Tiger Cage Pass was the masked man.

The masked man’s various Essence Energy Skills were endless and extremely bizarre. Although Zhou Wen wasn’t afraid of him, he couldn’t kill him.

Now that he had the help of the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon, Zhou Wen felt that it was time to give it a try.

Apart from Truth Listener, Zhou Wen summoned all of them —Six-Winged Guardian Dragon, Fire Furnace Queen, Demonic Neonate, Banana Fairy, and a few other commonly used Companion Beasts.

The Tiger Cage Demonized General was nothing. The Six-Winged Guardian Dragon’s poisonous breath killed him instantly.

After entering the city, the Fire Furnace Queen released Fire Furnace, turning the surroundings into a sea of fire. Any Demonized Soldiers or Demonized Generals that came died.

The masked man used Cast Beans for Soldiers and Cut Paper as Generals. It was of little use and could not block the Fire Furnace Queen that was setting fire everywhere. Everything produced was burnt to death.

The Fire Furnace Queen’s combat strength could only be considered average. However, when it came to farming low-level monsters, she was truly great. She was invincible and even the few Mythical pets were not as useful as her.

Thinking back to how pathetic he had been when he first entered the city, and now looking at how he was trampling over the Ancient City, Zhou Wen felt that he was indeed improving.

With Zhou Wen’s command, the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon immediately charged at the masked man. It spewed out poisonous smoke as the demonic flames on its body burned it to ashes.

Unfortunately, it was only a piece of yellow paper. The masked man appeared elsewhere. The Six-Winged Guardian Dragon roared and charged over again, killing the masked man again, but it was still a piece of yellow paper.

Although the masked man’s level and strength were far inferior to the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon, his technique was just too bizarre. Despite the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon making several attacks, it was still unable to kill him.

This fellow’s skill is amazing. If he can drop the skill, it will be awesome for me. Are its Immortal Chains or Yellow Paper Avatar more powerful? Although the Cast Beans for Soldiers and Cut Paper As Generals are also impressive, they don’t seem to be of much use. It’s fine dealing with low-level monsters, but it’s basically useless against high-level monsters, Zhou Wen thought to himself.

The Six-Winged Guardian Dragon chased the masked man in a frenzy. When the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon spewed out its Dragon Breath again, the strange man threw a rope into

the air and a dark cloud appeared in the sky. Then, he took a few steps and pulled the rope before rising into the clouds.

The Six-Winged Guardian Dragon spat out a mouthful of demonic flames that scattered the dark clouds, but the masked man was nowhere to be seen.

The pair of dragon eyes scanned the city but it did not see the masked man.

The Six-Winged Guardian Dragon was enraged. Demonic flames erupted from its body, burning all the Demonized Soldiers around it to death. However, a Demonized Soldier leaped up from the demonic flames and somersaulted onto the city wall. Its body changed from the Demonized Soldier to the masked man. He held beans and pieces of paper in each hand before scattering them into the air. Immediately, it transformed into Demonized Soldiers and Demonized Generals.

The Six-Winged Guardian Dragon rushed over and shredded the masked man into pieces, but it was reduced to yellow paper shreds.

This skill is too sick. Even a Mythical creature can’t do a thing to him. Who is this fellow? Zhou Wen was dumbfounded.

Zhou Wen had already seen quite a number of dimensional creatures. Typically, high-level creatures could crush low-level creatures. This was the first time Zhou Wen had seen an Epic creature tease a Mythical creature.

How can I kill him? Just as Zhou Wen was pondering, he saw the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon’s six wings flap crazily. It shot out beams of demonic flames that resembled saber beams, sweeping away all the Demonized Soldiers and

Demonized Generals in the city. The masked man had nowhere to hide and was forced out. He pulled the rope and attempted to escape into the dark clouds.

Before he could enter the dark clouds, a purple beam of light suddenly flew past and severed the masked man’s head along with the rope.

Thud!

The masked man’s headless corpse and the rope fell to the ground. The purple light transformed into a flying sword and returned to the scabbard in the Demonic Neonate’s arms.

However, Zhou Wen soon discovered that the corpse that had fallen to the ground had turned into a puppet. And at the spot between the puppet’s brows was a speck of red, like a drop of blood.

“Killed Epic creature, Elegant Emperor’s Avatar Puppet. Discovered Dimensional Crystal.”

Zhou Wen originally imagined that it was all for naught, he never expected to see the notification on his phone. A dimensional crystal dropped at the same time.

Zhou Wen saw that the dimensional crystal didn’t have the shadow of the masked man, but there was a spirit talisman. Although he found it odd, he was still overjoyed. Although it wasn’t a Companion Egg, he was already very satisfied to have a Essence Energy Skill Crystal drop.

I wonder which skill it is? Zhou Wen picked up the Essence Energy Skill Crystal and wanted to absorb it.

‘Life Providence incompatible. Unable to absorb.’ A notification popped up on the phone, startling Zhou Wen.

He knew that a Mythical skill required specific types of Life Providence and Life Soul, but for an Epic Essence Energy Skill to have a Life Providence requirement was rather rare.

Zhou Wen switched his Life Providences and attempted. The Ancient Sovereign Life Providence, Eight Perfections Wisdom, and Godfiend were useless. When Zhou Wen switched to Dao Body, he finally absorbed the Essence Energy Skill Crystal.

A strange energy surged out of the crystal and entered the blood-colored avatar's body. It opened up a new Essence Energy circulation pathway in the blood-colored avatar's body. An indescribable coolness spread throughout Zhou Wen's body as strange information flowed into his brain.

'Absorbed Elegant Emperor Avatar's Puppet Crystal. Attained Epic Essence Energy Skill: Substitute Talisman.'

Zhou Wen was delighted. Is this the Substitution technique of the Elegant Emperor? It's probably the skill which uses the paper figurines to substitute death, right? Surely with that skill, I no longer have to be afraid of death? It's equivalent to having countless lives?

After Zhou Wen carefully studied the Substitute Talisman's information, his expression turned odd.

It wasn't like there was any other way. The Substitute Talisman was the skill of letting the paper figurine be a substitute in death. However, this skill wasn't as simple as he thought it to be. It wasn't something that could be used immediately if he wanted to. He had to prepare the Substitute Talisman beforehand so that he could use it during battle.

This Essence Energy Skill wasn’t something that could be used at the last minute. It required a long period of advanced preparations, and the process was rather complicated.

The only thing that comforted Zhou Wen was that creating a Substitute Talisman required a large amount of Essence Energy to support him. Thankfully, he had the Slaughterer Life Soul giving him virtually unlimited Essence Energy, so there was no need to worry about lacking it.

Zhou Wen got some tools and planned on creating a Substitute Talisman.

Creating a Substitute Talisman did not necessarily require yellow paper, wood, stone, or metal. Even a piece of tile could be used as the basic material for Substitute Talisman.

However, generally speaking, the success rate of jade and plant materials was the highest when creating them.

Zhou Wen took out an ordinary piece of paper. It was probably made of plant material, so the success rate wasn’t too low.

After calming his mind, Zhou Wen used the Substitute Talisman skill. He extended his finger and condensed his Essence Energy on his fingertip. He pressed it on the white paper and drew a strange rune.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 485 - Going to Mount Laojun Again

485 Going to Mount Laojun Again

However, before he could finish drawing the runes, the paper tore apart. It could not withstand the corrosion from the Essence Energy.

After drawing this talisman, Zhou Wen's Essence Energy was nearly depleted. The Substitute Talisman consumed too much Essence Energy.

However, the Dao Body gave him extremely fast Essence Energy recovery speed. Zhou Wen didn't have to worry about having insufficient Essence Energy. However, it would be a waste if he didn't complete the Substitute Talisman.

Ordinary paper didn't seem to work. Zhou Wen found a wooden plank. It had been peeled off a box and was rather common pine wood.

However, the wooden plank couldn't withstand the Essence Energy either, and before Zhou Wen could finish drawing the Substitute Talisman, it shattered.

Zhou Wen thought hard and found a steel plate. He used his Essence Energy to draw talismans on it. This time, the steel plate didn't crack, but the Essence Energy talisman he drew

dissipated immediately. It was as though he had used gasoline to write on it, and it had quickly evaporated.

From the looks of it, it's not a problem with the material. The success of the Substitute Talisman likely has a probability. It's not something that can be used just by drawing it out. Zhou Wen roughly understood the reason.

Therefore, he continued to use paper in his attempt to draw the Substitute Talisman. After drawing dozens of talismans in a row, none of them succeeded. The paper was completely shredded.

Isn't the success rate a little too low? If it were someone else, their Essence Energy recovery wouldn't be able to keep up. They might not even be able to produce any Substitute Talisman in a day. This chance is almost as low as winning the lottery. Zhou Wen felt somewhat indignant as he continued drawing. However, he failed to succeed even after finishing all the paper.

Zhou Wen was a little stubborn. If he didn't successfully complete one, he would feel uncomfortable. However, he couldn't find any more paper at home. He left his dorm and planned on buying a few diaries from the supermarket. He refused to believe that he couldn't draw a Substitute Talisman.

Just as he walked out of Four Seasons Garden, he saw Wang Lu return from outside. After seeing Zhou Wen, Wang Lu blinked and said, "When did you come back? Why didn't you tell me? You even got me to help you rear the antelope and chick. They are gluttons, don't you know that? Isn't that too much?"

"I just came back and haven't had the time to go to your place," Zhou Wen said with a cough. He had really forgotten

the two fellows.

“You came back just in time. This is the food I bought for them. Take it back for them.” Wang Lu handed the two bags in her hands to Zhou Wen.

Zhou Wen took a look. There were all kinds of snacks in the bag, and they were all branded goods that weren’t cheap.

“Wang Lu, you don’t have to feed them with these things. Just give them something simple to eat.” Zhou Wen was somewhat speechless as he thought to himself, Do you have a mine at home? Do you need to be so extravagant when feeding them?

“It’s not good to torture animals, right?” Wang Lu said with a smile.

After a while, Wang Lu said, “By the way, you came back just in time. There will be a Xuanwen Club event tomorrow. You can come too.”

“What’s the event?” Zhou Wen asked.

“Li Xuan said he wants to visit Mount Laojun to see the Wordless Monument,” said Wang Lu.

“He’s visiting Mount Laojun to see the Wordless Monument?” Zhou Wen was somewhat surprised.

They had previously gone to Mount Laojun. After returning, Li Xuan swore that he would never go to that godforsaken place again. Now, he was the one suggesting to visit Mount Laojun to see the Wordless Monument?

From the looks of it, Li Mobai’s matter really dealt him a huge blow, Zhou Wen thought.

“Are you going?” Wang Lu asked.

“Yes.” Zhou Wen thought for a moment. Since Li Xuan was determined to cultivate hard, he naturally had to support him.

“By the way, take the antelope with you when you go.” Zhou Wen felt that this might be an opportunity to see if the antelope would return to Mount Laojun’s Golden Peak.

When they arrived at Wang Lu’s dormitory, he saw that the antelope was still lazily sleeping on the sofa. As for the chick, it was standing on the table, watching an entertainment program that was playing on television.

There were two dishes on the table. One was filled with melon seeds, and the other was filled with melon seed shells. It ate a melon seed very skillfully and spat the melon seed shell onto the other plate. It was done in a fluid fashion like water.

A cloud hung over Zhou Wen’s head as he thought to himself, Indeed, I can’t leave a pet to a woman. It’s only been a few days, and it has already become like this. From the looks of it, I’ll have to leave it with Li Xuan if I go out again.

Furthermore, Zhou Wen realized that the two of them had gained weight. It wasn’t because they had grown, but because they had become fat. In the past, the chick resembled a small falcon. Its body was streamlined, but now, it was as fat as a duck as it waddled about. Zhou Wen was really worried about its flight abilities.

No, I have to educate it well. I have to make it an outstanding phoenix. Who the hell has seen a phoenix that

looks like a fat duck? Zhou Wen made up his mind to train it in the future.

From the looks of it, I should indeed find a dimensional zone to hone it. Zhou Wen stared at the chick as he considered which dimensional zone to take it to.

The chick shivered for some reason as it looked away from the screen. When it saw Zhou Wen, it immediately flapped its wings excitedly and flew over.

Zhou Wen opened his arms and wanted to hug it, but to his surprise, the fellow plummeted mid-flight because it was too fat. It flapped its wings a few times before stabilizing its body—it didn't fall to the ground. However, a dark cloud hung over Zhou Wen's head.

This fellow really can't fly anymore. I need to train him. He needs to undergo hell training. Zhou Wen steeled his mind.

As for the antelope, Zhou Wen didn't dare touch it and pretended not to see it.

He took the antelope and chick back to his dorm. The next morning, Zhou Wen went to buy breakfast for Wang Lu. After she woke up and finished eating, the two of them went to the Xuanwen Club.

The members of the Xuanwen Club were nearly all present. Even busy people like Gu Dian and Huang Ji had actually come.

Feng Qiuyan had also brought Ming Xiu and Tian Zhenzhen. Together with Fang Ruoxi, Tian Xiangdong, and the other old members, the group took the school's bus for Mount Laojun.

This was an event that the Xuanwen Club had applied for with the school. The driver and the tutor who took them there were from the school, so there was no need to worry too much about safety.

Zhou Wen wasn’t worried about his safety. With the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon, there were only a handful of people in the Federation who could kill him. Even if he couldn’t beat them, Zhou Wen was confident that he could survive.

The fat chick lay on Zhou Wen’s lap. The antelope occupied two seats. Zhou Wen had brought them along.

After the group arrived at Mount Laojun, Zhou Wen and Li Xuan familiarly led the way and soon arrived in front of Mount Laojun’s Wordless Monument.

They met a few people when they went up the mountain. It was unknown what they were here for, but they had stopped in front of the Wordless Monument as if they were here to see it.

“Elder Jun, your surname is Jun. This is also Mount Laojun. I think this is your blessed land,” a middle-aged man said to the old man beside him in a sycophantic manner.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 486 - Seeing Potential from Actions

Chapter 486 Seeing Potential from Actions

Zhou Wen and company arrived in front of the Wordless Monument, preparing to look at it.

“Students, can you wait for a while before you view the Wordless Monument later?” the middle-aged man walked over and said.

“Why?” Li Xuan asked.

“This is our East District’s Daoist expert, Elder Jun Tingyu. He’s here to study the Wordless Monument. If you were to look at it now and be affected by its power, it’d inevitably disrupt Elder Jun’s research,” said the middle-aged man.

“It’s alright, let them take a look at it first,” Jun Tingyu said.

Since Jun Tingyu had already spoken, the middle-aged man did not say anything else and returned to the group.

Zhou Wen and company took out the items they had brought with them before preparing to look at the Wordless Monument.

This was because they would be affected by the Wordless Monument if they looked at it for extended periods of time. They would become hyperactive and would do things that expended stamina, so they prepared some tools to do what they wanted.

For example, Tian Xiangdong had prepared two dumbbells. In a while, he wanted to lift the dumbbells to consume his stamina. Tian Zhenzhen had prepared a yoga mat and planned to do yoga.

Apart from Gu Dian, everyone had brought some tools.

Jun Tingyu looked at the things they prepared and seemed interested. He smiled as he sized them up.

“Elder Jun, I heard that the power of the Wordless Monument can put people in a hyperactive state. Then, if one uses this stimulus for learning, can one improve their results?” asked the middle-aged man, Li Mingcan.

Jun Tingyu smiled and said, “This idea isn’t bad, but it’s actually very difficult to implement it. Legend has it that Mount Laojun is the place where the founder of Daoism secluded himself. His thoughts are mainly about the Dao. The Dao is about nature in search of the origins of all things to obtain the Great Dao of Heaven and Man. I don’t completely understand the meaning and power of this Wordless Monument, but based on my understanding of Laojun, I guess that it must be a power that pursues nature and returns to self.”

“Elder Jun, can you speak human? We still can’t understand such profoundness,” Li Mingcan said.

“If my guess is correct, the Wordless Monument should be able to stimulate one’s innate potential, so when it plays its role, humans will act according to their own hearts. They will ignore the constraints of the mortal world and do what they want to do deep down. The things that they have prepared beforehand are things that people feel they should do. However, what they want to do deep down will not be affected by the worldly factors, so what they do after

viewing the Wordless Monument is often different from what they want to do now.”

“Take a student for example; he believes that he should study hard, but that’s only because of societal norms. What he thinks he should do is due to external factors. However, what he really wants to do doesn’t necessarily have to be studying. Or rather, more than 95% of people would never want to study deep down. Therefore, even if he brings a book, he wouldn’t read it.”

“Is there no way to solve this problem and use the power of the Wordless Monument on a specific topic that one wants to do?” Li Mingcan asked again.

“At the beginning, when the influence is relatively low, one can still control it a little. But after looking at the Wordless Monument for a long time, the innate potential in one’s heart will become completely stimulated, making it very difficult to control. Unless it’s a Sage or Buddha, it’s difficult for anyone to control their instincts.” Jun Tingyu said.

As they spoke, Zhou Wen and company were already sitting in front of the Wordless Monument, staring at it.

The longer one looked at the Wordless Monument, the greater the influence they would receive. However, it also depended on the degree of determination one had.

If one’s willpower was stronger, then even if one looked at it for a long time, the impact would be smaller than that of an average person.

But this determination might not necessarily be a good thing. Instead, it could be an obstacle.

Due to external factors, humans would do many things that went against their conscience. For example, many people felt that work was a burden and wanted to go out without worries.

However, due to various external factors, one could not resist the impulse. One had to do something that they were unwilling to do, and they had to think of ways to make themselves do the work.

If one’s willpower was too strong, it was very likely that they would forget their innate pursuits and find it difficult to stimulate their innate potential.

“In that case, won’t the items they prepared be completely useless?” Li Mingcan said as he looked at the tools Li Xuan and company had prepared.

“Only if his original intentions are the same as his current thoughts; otherwise, they really won’t be of much use.” Jun Tingyu spoke conservatively. In fact, he believed that those things were basically useless.

“I originally wanted to bring my books over to learn something. Thankfully, I didn’t bring them,” said Li Mingcan with a smile.

Jun Tingyu said, “Actually, it’s not that you can’t read, but that’s only if you like it. From the actions that arise from looking at the Wordless Monument, you can also see a person’s potential in the future. For example, a person who would subconsciously practice his fist after looking at the Wordless Monument would definitely be extraordinary in fist arts in the future. If a person were to subconsciously practice his swordplay after looking at the Wordless Monument, then his sword art would definitely be extraordinary in the future.”

They had been chatting and had not deliberately looked at the Wordless Monument, so they were less affected.

However, Zhou Wen and company had been looking at the Wordless Monument at a close distance. Tian Xiangdong, who had the worst willpower, was quickly affected. It didn’t take long before he couldn’t sit still. He stood up and began running in circles.

“Elder Jun, you’re right. The things he brought are useless. But what kind of potential does he have considering how he’s running in circles? Does it mean that he will be very proficient in movement techniques in the future?” Li Mingcan asked.

“This isn’t easy to interpret. You can also interpret it that way. It’s just a possibility.” Jun Tingyu actually had another explanation, but he didn’t say it out loud.

Running was also a manifestation of psychological evasion.

Zhou Wen looked at the Wordless Monument for a while. He originally wished to figure out something. Perhaps, he could improve his Dao Body and condense a Life Soul.

But to his surprise, even if he circulated the Wordless Monument’s Essence Energy Art, there was no reaction from the Wordless Monument.

After looking at it for a while, he felt really bored. He took out his phone and started grinding dungeons.

Zhou Wen’s actions immediately attracted the attention of Li Mingcan and company. Li Mingcan asked curiously, “Elder Jun, that student actually began gaming after seeing the Wordless Monument. What does that mean?”

Jun Tingyu shook his head and said, “Although everyone will enjoy fun deep down, most people still subconsciously have some pursuits. To be completely immersed in a game like him, his future achievements will probably not be too high. Or rather, his achievements will be related to games.”

Jun Tingyu had minced his words. In such an era, it was obvious that a student who was engrossed in gaming would not have any achievements.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 487 - Why Is The Difference So Great?

Chapter 487 Why Is The Difference So Great?

Zhou Wen naturally heard their words, but he didn’t mind what others said, so he continued grinding.

After the antelope arrived at Mount Laojun, it strolled around on its own. This delighted Zhou Wen, but he never expected the fat bird to follow him. This left him somewhat depressed.

Perhaps it was because they had known each other for a long time that the two of them had become so familiar with each other. The bird and antelope looked more and more in tune with each other.

After a short while, the others started to move.

Tian Zhenzhen’s yoga mat didn’t serve its purpose as expected. Instead, she started practicing her swordplay. This was still quite normal; the others were a little abnormal.

Just like Zhou Wen, Huang Ji took out his phone and began gaming crazily.

Gu Dian took out a bunch of food from his backpack. They were basically all kinds of dried meat and drumsticks. He sat there and began eating.

Wang Lu had prepared a canvas and a pen, and she started drawing there.

This time, Li Xuan was completely different from the last time he came. The last time he came, he did push-ups so crazily that he couldn’t even lift his arms for two days.

But this time, he actually sat there without doing anything. He closed his eyes as if he was resting. No one knew what he was thinking.

“Elder Jun, what’s your take on them…” Li Mingcan looked at Jun Tingyu, unsure of what to say.

Jun Tingyu shook his head and sighed. “There are indeed some problems with the potential of these students. They either eat or game. There are also those who are resting with their eyes closed. If the students of the Federation all have such thoughts, then I’m afraid the Federation has no future.”

Jun Tingyu was truly worried about the Federation’s future. The Federation was already in a state of turmoil, yet these young people were all so depraved. It was hard to imagine how the Federation would be able to survive with these young people who spent all their time gaming, eating, and drawing.

Even though Li Mingcan did not know much about the Wordless Monument, he could tell that gaming, eating meat, drawing, and so on were definitely not good manifestations of potential.

Finally, Jun Tingyu’s brows relaxed.

Ming Xiu stood up, used the practice sword he had on his lap, and began practicing.

The sword art he practiced was the same as Tian Zhenzhen’s. In fact, Tian Zhenzhen learned her sword art from him, so naturally it was identical.

However, there was one thing that was different. Ming Xiu did not completely practice his sword art. He only constantly drew his sword and stabbed out, doing the same action repeatedly.

Li Mingcan finally saw someone looking like he was doing something decent and asked Jun Tingyu, “Elder Jun, what does it mean for this student to repeatedly draw his sword?”

Jun Tingyu praised, “Good, this student is really good.”

“Elder Jun, may I ask how is he good?” Li Mingcan asked Jun Tingyu.

“Although it’s only one move, I can tell that his foundation is very stable. He’s still when he’s calm, but as swift as a rabbit when moving. He holds his sword steadily and firmly. He thrusts out his sword fast and accurately. Despite having such a foundation, he’s still pursuing perfection. He’s not satisfied with his own achievements, and he’s also able to endure boredom and loneliness. This student’s future accomplishments in sword arts will definitely be extraordinary. If there’s no surprise, he’ll definitely become a famous person in the way of the sword.” Jun Tingyu was not stingy with his praise.

Firstly, it was because Ming Xiu was very outstanding. It wasn’t an exaggeration to praise him. Secondly, it was because after seeing Zhou Wen and the other jokers, seeing an outstanding student like Ming Xiu was simply stunning.

“If our Federation can have a few more youngsters like this, why would we need to worry about not being able to survive in the future?” The more Jun Tingyu looked at Ming Xiu, the more he liked him. The more he looked at him, the happier he became.

He even felt some regret that Ming Xiu wasn’t his student. He wanted to nurture him well so that he could become useful to the Federation in the future.

Li Mingcan also said wistfully, “It looks like our Federation’s younger generation still has some talent. They’re not all people who only know how to engage in revelry.”

As they spoke, they saw Feng Qiuyan stand up and use his hand as a saber to practice his saber art.

Li Mingcan saw that Feng Qiuyan’s moves were simple. They weren’t very ostentatious, but they had a unique aura. He felt that this student was somewhat different from the rest.

And when Feng Qiuyan’s saber art landed in Jun Tingyu’s eyes, his eyes lit up. He said excitedly, “A genius… What a genius…”

“Elder Jun, what’s going on?” Li Mingcan was shocked. Jun Tingyu usually had a sage-like demeanor. He had been with him for so long, but he had never seen him lose his composure.

Jun Tingyu stared at Feng Qiuyan without blinking, as though he was admiring a peerless treasure.

“The student has actually managed to master this saber art at such a young age. He’s practically a natural saber user. No, it should be said that he’s a natural saber king…” Jun Tingyu was someone with good eyesight. Otherwise, he wouldn’t have been able to tell that Feng Qiuyan’s saber arts were good.

Feng Qiuyan’s saber arts were indeed impressive. He had the chance to become a grandmaster in the future. How

could Jun Tingyu not be surprised to see such saber arts and saber force from a teenager?

The last time he saw such a saber art, it came from a famous saber expert in the Federation. That person had already been famous for twenty to thirty years but was declining now. It was impossible for him to advance any further.

As for Feng Qiuyan, his future was limitless. No one knew how far he could go in the future.

“It’s too perfect. There’s actually such a perfect genius in this world. I didn’t come to Mount Laojun for nothing. Mingcan, help me ask for his contact details later. Oh right, there’s also that student who’s practicing his swordplay. With such geniuses, there’s hope for the future of the Federation.” Jun Tingyu could hardly contain his excitement.

All he wanted to do now was to recruit these two talented young people as his students and ask which school they were from. If possible, he wanted to make them his students and mentor them as his graduate students. They could study at the college he worked at.

“I’ll ask them now.” Li Mingcan could naturally tell that Jun Tingyu really valued these two young men and was ready to go over.

“Don’t disturb them. Let’s wait for them to finish their training before heading over. If you go over now, it’ll inevitably disrupt their train of thought. It won’t be good if it affects them.” Jun Tingyu hurriedly pulled Li Mingcan to prevent him from disturbing Feng Qiuyan and Ming Xiu.

Jun Tingyu watched from the side. The more he looked at them, the more he found them pleasing to the eye and realized how promising they were. When he looked at the

clowns beside them, the glutton had almost finished ten kilograms of jerkies. He couldn’t help but sigh. “They’re both students, but why is the difference so great?”

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 488 - Fusion Idea

488 Fusion Idea

Jun Tingyu was very patient. He found a spot not far away and sat down. The more he looked at Feng Qiuyan and Ming Xiu practice, the more he liked them.

Zhou Wen was grinding the Metalwork Temple instance dungeon. He had already gone to the Curse Demon Palace. With the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon, he was still no match for Medusa inside the Curse Demon Palace.

The main reason was that the palace was limited in size. When Medusa's strength swept out, there wasn't much space to hide from it. He and the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon could only fight head-on with Medusa. Medusa's terrifying Eyes of Petrification would petrify him and the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon. Demonic Neonate did not have a place to hide either. It was very easy for her to die in the palace and she couldn't showcase her worth.

Therefore, Zhou Wen decided not to try the Curse Demon Palace for the time being. He decided to head to the Music Temple and the depths of the Metalwork Temple.

Inside the Metalwork Temple, Zhou Wen summoned the Fire Furnace Queen, Six-Winged Guardian Dragon Guard, and the Fortune Goldfish. Then, he brought the baby tiger and charged forward.

The Fortune Goldfish's stats gave Luck +4 in the Metalwork Temple. Occasionally, there would be fluctuations. In addition to Lucky Baby Tiger's Luck +5, a total of 9 Luck

wasn’t a joke. The drop rate nearly doubled. When Zhou Wen was farming monsters, he felt that the drop rate was especially high. The chances of Essence Energy Skills and Companion Eggs dropping were also significantly higher.

However, Zhou Wen wasn’t interested in ordinary Essence Energy Skills or Companion Beasts. The Companion Eggs that often appeared here were Legendary Steel Cauldron Fire Sprites. Although fire-elemental Companion Beasts were pretty good, with the Fire Furnace Queen, Steel Cauldron Fire Sprites were naturally useless.

Fire Cannon, Metal Heavy Fist, and Flame Protection were the most commonly dropped Essence Energy Skills. Before long, Zhou Wen had mastered them and had reached Rank 9.

However, these Essence Energy Skills had very ordinary effects. Zhou Wen didn’t usually need them.

Fire Furnace Queen was clearly a rare monster. Zhou Wen passed through several huge palaces and corridors before finally encountering one. Unfortunately, only one Strength Crystal dropped after killing it.

As he walked further in, he found more common dimensional creatures such as Steel Cauldron Fire Sprites, Fire Sprites, Hammer Metal Golems, and so on. If not for the fact that he wanted to see what was deep inside the Metalwork Temple, Zhou Wen wouldn’t have bothered killing them.

Buzz! Buzz! Buzz!

When Zhou Wen controlled the blood-colored avatar to come to a large hall, he heard an extremely odd sound that sounded like the rumbling of an operating machine.

As expected, the moment the blood-colored avatar entered the hall, it saw a strange metal monster sprawled inside. It looked like a war vehicle that resembled a tank, but its outer appearance was round. It looked like a small flying saucer.

It was more than three meters tall and five meters in diameter. There were many holes around it. When it saw the blood-colored avatar enter, the strange war vehicle began spinning. Flames spewed out from the holes. Due to the rotation, the war vehicle was like a huge metal spinning top that spewed flames.

Boom!

The Six-Winged Guardian Dragon slapped down with its claws, reducing the strange war vehicle into a pile of scrap metal.

‘Killed an Epic creature, Inferno Tank. Discovered Dimensional Crystal.’

Realizing that it was a 38-valued Essence Energy Crystal, Zhou Wen picked it up and held it in the blood-colored avatar’s hand as he continued walking forward.

As he went further in, the number of such Inferno Tanks increased. After killing twenty to thirty of them, an Inferno Tank Companion Egg dropped.

The Inferno Tank’s stats were considered pretty good at the Epic stage, but it was useless for Zhou Wen. However, one skill of the Inferno Tank attracted his attention.

The Essence Energy Skill was called Rampage. When the Inferno Tank used this skill, it would be almost invincible, or rather, a Dominance Body. Even the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon wouldn’t be able to kill it in that period of time.

This skill is good stuff, but the Inferno Tank is too weak. I wonder if I can fuse Rampage onto other pets… Zhou Wen thought carefully and suddenly had an idea.

Recently, he had been trying to obtain armor-type Companion Beasts. Ever since the Mutated Stone Chi died, Zhou Wen didn’t have any armor-type Companion Beasts.

The defenses of ordinary Chi were too weak. It was useless against Mythical creatures as they were paper. That failed to meet Zhou Wen’s requirements.

Since there aren’t any ready-made armor-type Companion Beasts, can I fuse one myself? If I combine the Life Providence, Life Soul, and skills I want onto a Companion Beast, perhaps I can create an armor-type Companion Beast that’s stronger than the Mutated Stone Chi? Let me think about it. It’s best if the Life Providence is the Three-Eyed Golden Warrior’s Golden Body. That will enhance the defense greatly. I can also have the skill, Invulnerable Golden Body. Which Life Soul should I choose?

Zhou Wen silently calculated. Just considering Life Providence, Life Soul, and skills was clearly insufficient. This was because there was a problem with compatibility. If the compatibility was too low, even if the two pets had Life Providences and skills that Zhou Wen needed, it would be difficult to successfully fuse them.

Furthermore, after the two pets fused, the product’s stats would change. It might not be able to retain the Life Soul or skills that Zhou Wen wanted. Therefore, it was almost impossible to try to produce one in one or two fusions.

Zhou Wen thought about all the pet attributes he knew. Although he had a few skills and Life Providences that he thought were good, he still felt that they weren’t perfect.

Furthermore, after trying it out, he realized that the compatibility between some pets was too low. It was almost impossible to succeed through multiple fusions.

Just as Zhou Wen was fretting over this, a dimensional creature that he had never seen appeared deep within the Metalwork Temple. It was a heavy-armored warrior that was completely made of metal.

When the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon slapped down with its claws, a golden pattern appeared on the body of the armored warrior. It looked like he was made of raw metal. It was strange yet beautiful. It appeared on the black-gray armor, causing the originally ordinary armor to become gorgeous and resplendent.

Clang!

The Six-Winged Guardian Dragon’s claw struck the head of the armored warrior, but it was actually blocked by a pair of arms. The stone floor beneath its feet cracked, but the armored warrior didn’t suffer any damage at all.

Eh! This fellow is interesting! Zhou Wen’s eyes lit up.

Clang! Clang! Clang!

The Six-Winged Guardian Dragon swiped down with its claws one after another, slamming heavily on the arms of the armored warrior, smashing the armored warrior into the ground like a nail. However, the armored warrior suffered several heavy blows, and only a fine crack appeared on the armor on his arm. It did not shatter.

Clang!

After another heavy blow, the shiny patterns on the armored warrior’s body that looked like magma shattered. As the patterns shattered, the armor was also smashed into pieces at the same time. It was just an empty shell without any creature inside.

‘Killed an Epic creature, Runic Heavy-Armored Warrior. Discovered Dimensional Crystal.’

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 489 - Divine Armamen

489 Divine Armamen

This fellow is an Epic creature. He’s actually able to withstand a few consecutive strikes from the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon. How impressive is his defense? What’s the light pattern on his body? A skill? Life Providence? Or Life Soul? Zhou Wen’s interest was piqued as he began searching for the Runic Heavy-Armored Warrior in the Metalwork Temple.

Luckily, this type of Epic Runic Heavy-Armored Warrior was not rare. However, it was only found in the nearby area, and behind it was a square. There were quite a number of Runic Heavy-Armored Warriors on the square, and behind them was a strange building half embedded in the mountain wall.

The building was completely made of metal. It looked like half a huge metal ship was embedded in the mountain wall. Above the building was a metal statue holding a forging tool. It must be the god of metalworking.

These Runic Heavy-Armored Warriors were guarding the nearby temple.

Seeing that there was no other path, Zhou Wen knew that the strange metal palace was probably the end of the Metalwork Temple. He wasn’t in a hurry to enter, so he searched outside for Runic Heavy-Armored Warriors to hunt.

There were only about a hundred Runic Heavy-Armored Warriors in the vicinity. It wasn’t that easy to have a Companion Egg drop. Zhou Wen was already mentally

prepared to grind a few more times, but with the Lucky Baby Tiger and Fortune Goldfish’s double augmentation in luck, he actually managed to get a Runic Heavy-Armored Warrior Companion Egg drop.

Zhou Wen hurriedly checked the stats of the Runic Heavy-Armored Warrior and was overjoyed.

Runic Heavy-Armored Warrior: Epic

Life Providence: Heavy-Armored Warrior

Life Soul: Blessed Combat Runes

Strength: 36

Speed: 29

Constitution: 37

Essence Energy: 34

Talent Skill: Fist of War, Rampage, Heart of Enrage.

Companion Form: Heavy Armor

From the looks of it, those magma-like patterns should be his Life Soul, Blessed Combat Runes. Furthermore, he also has the skill, Rampage I wonder if this fellow can fuse with the Three-Eyed Golden Warrior. If he can fuse into a Companion Beast with the Golden Body Life Providence and Blessed Combat Runes Life Soul, I wonder if the defense will improve greatly when he’s in armor form? Zhou Wen didn’t have any Three-Eyed Golden Warriors at the moment, but ordinary Golden Warriors had the Golden Body Life Providence as well. He might not necessarily need to use a Three-Eyed Golden Warrior.

He put the Runic Heavy-Armored Warrior together with the Golden Warrior and checked their compatibility. He discovered that their compatibility was 76.

Without much hesitation, he chose to fuse them. With a bang, the Companion Egg and the Golden Warrior burst into smoke. The fusion failed.

Zhou Wen was immediately taken aback. He found it unbelievable that the fusion had failed despite a compatibility score of 76. Furthermore, he had two lucky pets with him.

“From the looks of it, the Goddess of Luck will occasionally have some hiccups,” Zhou Wen muttered to himself.

Thankfully, Golden Warriors and Runic Heavy-Armored Warrior weren’t rare. One was at the Legendary stage while the other was at the Epic stage, so it was relatively easy to grind them. However, Zhou Wen had killed all the Runic Heavy-Armored Warrior in the area. He needed to drip blood to respawn them.

Zhou Wen didn’t respawn immediately. Instead, he walked towards the Metalwork Temple. He wanted to see what was inside.

The metal hall’s door was very heavy. Zhou Wen controlled the blood-colored avatar to use all his strength before pushing open a crack.

A warm surge rushed out from the temple. It nearly made an Epic expert like Zhou Wen feel like he was about to be roasted.

He quickly used the Inverse Ancient Sovereign Life Soul to make himself feel better. Then, he slowly pushed open the

metal door and looked into the temple.

There was a huge furnace in the main temple. Above the furnace was a golden trident. It was indescribably majestic, as if it was a divine item from Heaven.

Golden Trident? Zhou Wen had heard of such a weapon.

Legend had it that the weapon of Poseidon was a trident. It was a divine armament that controlled all the seas in the world and possessed the power to destroy the world.

Poseidon relied on the power of the trident to release a huge flood that could destroy the world in an attempt to compete with the Goddess of Wisdom for the control of the land.

There were all sorts of legends about the origins of the trident. One legend claimed that the trident was a divine armament forged by the god of metalworking.

Of course, Zhou Wen didn’t know if the golden trident was Poseidon’s trident. Furthermore, in the legends of other religions, the trident represented the devil, Satan’s weapon because its prongs were one long and two short. It was very similar in characteristics and was considered a symbol of evil.

This was the temple of the god of metalworking, so it likely didn’t have anything to do with Satan. Zhou Wen felt that the possibility of the former was higher. Even if it wasn’t Poseidon’s trident, it should be a rather good weapon.

As Zhou Wen was pondering over it, he saw the golden trident emit a powerful golden divine light. The flames in the furnace also rose crazily, turning the entire temple into a sea of flames.

The flames were extremely terrifying. With Zhou Wen’s physique, he was unable to withstand them and was about to be burned to death.

The baby tiger was in an even worse shape. It died in the flames and was burned to ashes.

The Fortune Goldfish and the Fire Furnace Queen were not afraid of flames at all, and the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon Guardian appeared as if nothing had happened.

They weren’t afraid, but Zhou Wen couldn’t afford not to be. With a thought, the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon transformed into six flaming wings and appeared behind the blood-colored avatar. The flames on the dragon wings resisted the surrounding flames, giving Zhou Wen a lot of benefits.

The silver water snake was summoned as well. It spat out a stream of water to fight against the surrounding flames. Unfortunately, its water jet was obviously weak. The moment it came into contact with the flames, it evaporated immediately. It was useless.

Zhou Wen was just about to try pulling out the golden trident when he suddenly saw the furnace shake. The golden trident flew out of the furnace and pointed at the blood-colored avatar.

Boom!

A golden beam shot out from the trident, melting the entire temple into a golden beam like the sun. Zhou Wen saw that the screen was filled with golden light. He couldn’t see anything. By the time the screen recovered, it had already darkened. Clearly, the blood-colored avatar was already dead.

What the hell? Zhou Wen was somewhat depressed. He had been instantly killed. If he had known, he wouldn’t have made the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon transform into dragon wings. With the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon in front of him, it shouldn’t have been that easy to be instantly killed.

Zhou Wen was just about to respawn with a drop of blood and enter the game when he heard the few people who had been resting nearby walking towards them. He couldn’t help but look up.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 490 - I Only Want to Learn From Coach

490 I Only Want to Learn From Coach

Ming Xiu stopped his practice. The influence of the Wordless Monument had disappeared from his body. Ming Xiu was just about to look at the Wordless Monument again to continue practicing when he saw Jun Tingyu walking over with his group of people.

“Hi, can we have a chat?” Seeing Ming Xiu stop practicing, Jun Tingyu walked over impatiently.

“Hello, what’s it about?” Ming Xiu asked Jun Tingyu doubtfully.

Jun Tingyu looked at Li Mingcan. There were some things that he couldn’t say, but if he didn’t say them, it would be difficult to move a talent like Ming Xiu.

Of course, Li Mingcan understood Jun Tingyu’s intentions. He lightly coughed and said to Ming Xiu, “Hi, what’s your name? Which school are you studying at?”

“My name is Ming Xiu. I’m a first-year student at Bright Prospects College. I’m now studying at Sunset College on exchange.” This wasn’t a secret, so there was no need to hide it. Ming Xiu told the truth.

“Only a first year?” Jun Tingyu’s eyes lit up. Ming Xiu was more outstanding than he had imagined. He had originally

thought that Ming Xiu was already a third or fourth-year student, but he hadn’t expected that he would still be a first-year student. He was even younger and more outstanding than he had imagined.

Furthermore, when he heard that Ming Xiu was a student at Bright Prospects College, but was only now on exchange at Sunset College, Jun Tingyu became more confident.

If he was really a student of Sunset College, with Ming Xiu’s excellent performance, he would definitely be heavily nurtured. However, Bright Prospects College was far from being on the same level as Sunset College.

As for the Imperial Capital College where he hailed from, it was definitely not inferior to Sunset College. Its ranking was even higher. As long as he had enough chips and sincerity, he wasn’t afraid that Ming Xiu would be tempted.

Should he be an exchange student at Sunset College, or should he directly go to Imperial Capital to be his graduate student? Any student with the ability to judge should know how to choose.

“Ming Xiu, let me do the introductions. This Mr. Jun Tingyu, a tutor from Imperial Capital College and also an honorary vice-chancellor. He’s a famous Daoist expert…” Li Mingcan listed a lot of titles. Even without those titles, just being a tutor of Imperial Capital College was enough to make people respect him.

“Ming Xiu, are you interested in studying at the Imperial Capital College? I happen to be short of two graduate students. I can also apply for a scholarship for you,” Jun Tingyu interrupted Li Mingcan. Li Mingcan had gone overboard with the accolades.

Ming Xiu finally understood that this old man in front of him wanted to recruit him into the Imperial Capital College.

“I’m sorry to disappoint you.” Without any hesitation, Ming Xiu rejected Jun Tingyu. Originally he hadn’t wanted to come to Sunset College, now he did not want to go to Imperial Capital College.

“Why? If you have any difficulties, you can tell me. I can think of a way to help you resolve them.” Jun Tingyu was slightly taken aback. He didn’t expect Ming Xiu to directly reject him.

“There aren’t any difficulties, but I still wish to stay at Sunset College for my studies,” said Ming Xiu.

“If I remember correctly, Bright Prospects College’s exchange students will only be studying at Sunset College for three months, right? In three months, you will be returning to Bright Prospects College, right?” Jun Tingyu looked at Ming Xiu and asked. He suspected that he had remembered wrongly.

“That’s right. I have less than a month left in Sunset College,” Ming Xiu said with a nod.

“Then why aren’t you willing to go to the Imperial Capital College?” Jun Tingyu was even more confused.

“Because someone here can teach me things that I can’t learn from anywhere else,” Ming Xiu said seriously.

Jun Tingyu noticed that Ming Xiu was speaking very seriously and didn’t seem to be patronizing him. He thought for a moment and said, “Sunset College is indeed a very good college. It won’t be much inferior to our Imperial Capital College. However, if one were to say that the

teaching standards here are better than the Imperial Capital College's, that's not necessarily the case. In the entire Sunset College, I, Jun Tingyu, only admire Leng Zongzheng. Your tutor isn't Leng Zongzheng, right?"

"No." Ming Xiu shook his head.

"Then who is your tutor?" Jun Tingyu asked again.

"It doesn't matter who my tutor is. My staying at Sunset College isn't because of the tutor, but because there's someone here. To me, he's the best coach. He's someone no one can replace. He taught me how a sword should be used," said Ming Xiu.

"Oh, who is he?" Jun Tingyu was a little interested.

To be able to teach such an outstanding student like Ming Xiu, Jun Tingyu believed that he must be a highly-respected tutor, or perhaps a sword arts master. Perhaps it was some special treatment the college had given Ming Xiu.

However, Ming Xiu turned around and pointed his finger in one direction. Then he said, "That's him. He's my coach."

Jun Tingyu was a little surprised. He didn't expect Ming Xiu's coach to be here as well. However, when he looked in the direction Ming Xiu was pointing, he was instantly shocked.

There was only one person in the direction Ming Xiu was pointing. It was Zhou Wen, who was gaming there. At that moment, Zhou Wen had entered the dungeon and continued playing his game. It looked like the battle was extremely intense.

"You're saying that the student who's playing games is your coach?" Jun Tingyu thought that Ming Xiu had made a

mistake. The person who could teach such a genius student was naturally a true expert. How could it be a student, and such a student at that?

“Yes, he’s my coach. He taught me how to use the sword, so even if there’s less than a month left, I still hope to learn from him,” Ming Xiu said seriously.

Jun Tingyu, Li Mingcan, and the others all had their mouths agape, unable to speak. From Ming Xiu’s expression, it didn’t seem like he was spouting nonsense. However, to give up the chance of going to Imperial Capital College as a graduate student with Jun Tingyu for just another month of study with another student, this was simply incomprehensible to them.

“Ming Xiu, you should consider it again. Although that student… might have something extraordinary about him, there’s definitely a gap between him and a famous tutor like Elder Jun. You’re too young, so you might not know much about him. Among the students taught by Elder Jun, many of them are already famous Epic experts in the Federation…” Li Mingcan said.

“Jun Tingyu, a mentor at the Imperial Capital College, the honorary vice-chancellor, and a famous Daoist expert. He has the reputation of being a famous Daoist master, and his strength is outstanding. He even taught Li Zijian, Zhang Huayu, and other famous Epic experts of the Federation. He groomed more than 30 Epic experts for the Federation…” Ming Xiu recounted Jun Tingyu’s accolades as though he knew them all.

But in the end, he bowed slightly to Jun Tingyu and said, “Thank you for your kind offer. If this was before I came to Sunset College and met Coach, I would have agreed to

follow you to Imperial Capital College without any hesitation. But now, even if there’s only one day left, I still wish to learn from Coach.”

Jun Tingyu and Li Mingcan were both dumbfounded. They watched as Ming Xiu turned around and walked to the Wordless Monument. He sat down and continued to look at the monument. They were unable to regain their senses for a long time.

Suddenly, they heard a saber hum go straight into the clouds. They turned their heads and saw Feng Qiuyan slash at the sky with his palm like it was a saber. He was like a heaven-defying dragon. His aura was terrifying, as though he could slice apart the heavens and earth.

Life Soul! He actually condensed a Life Soul! Heavens! How old is he! Jun Tingyu’s body trembled as he widened his eyes in disbelief at Feng Qiuyan. It was as if he had seen a ghost.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 491 - The Luck of a Lifetime

491 The Luck of a Lifetime

As time passed, various dimensional zones were developed. More and more geniuses appeared among humans, and the age for reaching the Epic stage was declining.

However, even the geniuses of the six families would usually only have the chance to advance to the Epic stage when they were in their twenties or thirties. These were people with extraordinary talent.

The college student in front of him had already advanced to the Epic stage and condensed a Life Soul. Even though he was used to seeing geniuses at Imperial Capital College, he could not help but be surprised and happy.

This is a rare genius that only appears once in a hundred years. I have to think of a way to recruit him as my disciple. I definitely can’t miss out on such a genius. Jun Tingyu only wanted to take Feng Qiuyan as his graduate student.

Under the power of the Wordless Monument, Feng Qiuyan constantly practiced his saber, finally gaining some insight. He felt like he had yet to fully vent something in him, so he couldn’t help but unleash his true strength and slash out the saber that slashed at the heavens.

After slashing out, Feng Qiuyan calmed down significantly. He retracted his palm and converged his Essence Energy.

“Hello, I’m Imperial Capital College’s tutor, Jun Tingyu. What’s your name?” Jun Tingyu couldn’t wait for Li Mingcan

to introduce him. He walked over impatiently, took out his name card, and handed it to Feng Qiuyan.

Feng Qiuyan was puzzled and looked at Jun Tingyu, unsure why he was here for him.

“Feng Qiuyan, are you willing to be my graduate student at the Imperial Capital College? I can apply for the best scholarship for you. Furthermore, you can directly work in my laboratory and participate in the project I’m researching. During this period of time, you can enjoy the treatment of a researcher. I will also apply for passage to all the dimensional zones in Imperial Capital College for you…” Jun Tingyu couldn’t wait to throw out all his chips. He really wanted Feng Qiuyan.

It was easy to obtain a thousand soldiers, but not a general. There were many humans who could cultivate, but very few had the chance to break through to the Mythical stage. It had been so many years, and the number of people who had the ability to break through to the Mythical stage could be counted on one hand.

From Jun Tingyu’s point of view, Feng Qiuyan was the person who could very likely break through to the Mythical stage. If he could be carefully nurtured by him, he might become a legend of the Federation in the future.

“Sorry, I have no intention of leaving Sunset College,” Feng Qiuyan said.

After experiencing Ming Xiu’s previous experience, Jun Tingyu’s mental fortitude was much greater. After being rejected, he didn’t feel too agitated. He asked Feng Qiuyan, “Why are you refusing? Does Sunset College give you better treatment than me?”

“I’m only a first-year student at Sunset College. I don’t receive any special treatment, nor do I need any special treatment,” Feng Qiuyan said.

“Another first year…” Jun Tingyu looked at Feng Qiuyan with an even more fervent gaze. This was simply a gifted talent. A first-year student was only seventeen years old. A seventeen-year-old Epic was just too shocking. It was likely that not many of the six families could produce such a powerful genius.

No, I have to think of a way to poach him away from Sunset College. From his looks, he doesn’t seem to lack money. His background must be extraordinary. If his surname is Feng, could he be a descendant of the Feng family? Jun Tingyu pondered for a moment before asking, “Although the Feng surname is the number one surname in ancient times, there aren’t many people with the surname Feng in the present world. Now, there are two famous Feng family clans. They are situated at the capital and Sea Return. Which one are you?”

“Sea Return’s Feng family,” Feng Qiuyan replied.

Jun Tingyu was overjoyed when he heard that. “Old Master Feng Boren from the Feng family of Sea Return and I have a good relationship. I have some understanding of your Feng family’s Essence Energy Art. If you are willing to study at the Imperial Capital College with me, I can provide you with a special Wind stat crystal. It’s sufficient for your cultivation.”

A special wind-elemental crystal wasn’t something that could be bought with money. It could only be obtained by hunting wind-elemental dimensional creatures. However, wind-elemental dimensional creatures were relatively rare, and their drop rate was low.

The Sea Return Feng family's Essence Energy Art required a large amount of wind-elemental crystals to advance to a higher realm. As a result, the Feng family's wind-elemental crystals were never enough. They needed to spend large amounts of resources to purchase them. Even so, it was still not enough. He had made a generous offer that even Jun Tingyu felt his heart ache.

From his point of view, Feng Qiuyan didn't have any reason to reject him. A wind-elemental crystal was too important to the Feng family.

"Sorry, I don't plan on leaving Sunset College." Feng Qiuyan didn't hesitate as he rejected him once again.

Jun Tingyu was somewhat stunned. He looked at Feng Qiuyan and asked, "Can you tell me why you're unwilling to go to Imperial Capital College?"

Li Mingcan and company also looked at Feng Qiuyan. They really couldn't figure out why Feng Qiuyan would reject him. If Jun Tingyu gave any university student those conditions, they would usually follow Jun Tingyu to Imperial Capital College without any hesitation. Let alone poaching a first-year student, the offer was more than enough for poaching a famous researcher.

Furthermore, Jun Tingyu was willing to offer the wind-elemental crystals from his prized collection. This was simply a blessing from the heavens. They really couldn't understand why Feng Qiuyan would reject him. Was his brain damaged?

Feng Qiuyan said matter-of-factly, "Because there's Coach here, but there's no one like him in Imperial Capital College."

Hearing the word ‘Coach’, Jun Tingyu, Li Mingcan, and the others felt their hearts skip a beat. They thought, It can’t be?

Jun Tingyu’s expression was extremely odd. He glanced at Zhou Wen, who was gaming not far away. He then looked at Feng Qiuyan and asked, “Which coach are you referring to?”

“He’s right there.” Feng Qiuyan pointed at Zhou Wen, who was gaming.

Although they were mentally prepared, when Feng Qiuyan pointed at Zhou Wen, Jun Tingyu and company’s expressions changed.

Jun Tingyu’s emotions were extremely complicated as he looked at Zhou Wen with a strange gaze.

Li Mingcan could no longer hold back his anger. He could not help but ask, “Feng Qiuyan, you said that he’s your mentor. Can you tell us who he is?”

“His name is Zhou Wen. Just like me, he’s a first-year student at Sunset College,” Feng Qiuyan answered.

Jun Tingyu’s heart skipped a beat. “Another first-year student?”

Li Mingcan asked in confusion, “He’s also in his first year. How can he be stronger than you?”

Li Mingcan actually wanted to say, what right does he have to be your coach? However, he was someone who still cared about his reputation, so he was too embarrassed to say such words.

However, in Li Mingcan’s heart, Feng Qiuyan was already an unprecedented genius. It was understandable for him to have a tutor or a famous person as his coach, but he was also a first-year student. The fellow who was addicted to gaming was actually Feng Qiuyan and Ming Xiu’s coach. Li Mingcan felt that it wasn’t something to be believed at all. It was likely that Feng Qiuyan and Ming Xiu were just patronizing them, making excuses that they didn’t want to go to the Imperial Capital College.

Upon hearing Li Mingcan’s doubts, Feng Qiuyan immediately said seriously, “Coach is obviously stronger than me. Compared to Coach, I’m worlds apart from him. I’m less than ten-thousandth of Coach. It’s the luck of my lifetime to be able to cultivate alongside Coach.”

Jun Tingyu and Li Mingcan were dumbfounded when they heard that. They couldn’t help but look at Zhou Wen. Looking at Zhou Wen, who was engrossed in the game, they really couldn’t associate such a student with Feng Qiuyan’s description of him.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 492 - Too Late

Chapter 492 Too Late

Could it be that I've misjudged him? Is that student really a genius, a genius who's stronger than Ming Xiu and Feng Qiuyan? Jun Tingyu began to doubt himself.

He could tell that Ming Xiu and Feng Qiuyan respected Zhou Wen greatly. The feelings that came from the bottom of their hearts couldn't be faked. It was impossible that they were just patronizing him.

However, Jun Tingyu couldn't believe that the fellow who was gaming was actually better than Ming Xiu and Feng Qiuyan.

Feng Qiuyan had advanced to the Epic stage at such a young age. It was a rare occurrence that happened only once in a hundred years, but to Zhou Wen of the same age, he was like a student idolizing his teacher. He couldn't imagine what kind of person Zhou Wen was.

Is there really such a genius in this world? Jun Tingyu looked at Zhou Wen with mixed feelings.

Li Mingcan and company looked at Zhou Wen as well. They couldn't help but gulp. Even Feng Qiuyan admitted that he was less than ten-thousandth of him. They found it even more difficult to imagine what kind of genius he was.

"Teacher, could there be a deeper meaning behind this act of gaming?" Li Mingcan was a little suspicious of the

previous judgment. Although he knew that it was not good to doubt Jun Tingyu like this, he could not help but ask.

Jun Tingyu was beginning to grumble inwardly. After carefully observing Zhou Wen, who was gaming, he felt that he was indeed somewhat extraordinary.

He looked calm and had an outstanding temperament. Although he was gaming, he gave off an aura that he could not be shaken even if the sky collapsed. It seemed that he was indeed different from others.

In fact, this was just a psychological effect on Jun Tingyu's part. Although Zhou Wen really wasn't just gaming, from the looks of it, he was no different from an ordinary person when gaming. To see anything from it was nothing but a joke.

As Zhou Wen was gaming, his phone suddenly rang. It was his usual phone. Upon hearing the text message chime, Zhou Wen immediately jolted.

This was because he had specially set up the notification sound. Only when The Thearch sent a message would he get this sound.

Zhou Wen didn't dare delay as he hurriedly took out the other phone from his pocket. Indeed, it was a message from The Thearch.

"After such a long time, I still haven't seen any of the things that I want. I don't think you've taken my matters to heart. I really shall mete out some punishment. Otherwise, you might think that my threats are just for fun."

Zhou Wen immediately broke out into cold sweat when he saw the message. He was afraid of death, and he was even

more afraid that The Thearch would sever his limbs. That would be terrible.

“I’ve been being pursued recently, so I haven’t had the time to buy you that equipment. Don’t worry, I’ll think of a way to buy them for you immediately. Even if I have to sell everything, I’ll definitely help you buy everything.” Zhou Wen had been too busy recently, so he had really forgotten about it.

“Too late.” The Thearch only replied with two words.

Zhou Wen hurriedly tried to explain. He was really afraid that The Thearch would make a wish to sever all his limbs. He was in the prime of his youth, so to have his limbs severed just because of a few darn instruments would be terrible.

However, no matter how he explained, the Thearch didn’t reply. This made Zhou Wen feel extremely uneasy.

When Jun Tingyu saw Zhou Wen using his phone to communicate with The Thearch, his eyes lit up. He shouted excitedly, “Genius… This person is really a genius…”

Li Mingcan and the others were shocked. Li Mingcan quickly asked, “Elder Jun, what have you seen?”

Jun Tingyu said, “I’m getting old. Indeed, I was wrong just now. This young man is really an extraordinary genius. It’s no wonder even geniuses like Ming Xiu and Feng Qiuyan admire him so much.”

“Elder Jun, how did you tell? Tell us.” Li Mingcan’s heart was itching to know.

Jun Tingyu pointed at Zhou Wen, who was texting on his phone, and said, “The Wordless Monument is a power that targets the hearts of people. Even top Epic experts would surrender themselves to their inner desires after being affected by the power of the Wordless Monument. Before they are exhausted, they definitely wouldn’t be distracted, nor can they be distracted. But look at him. When he was gaming, he was actually able to use another phone to constantly send messages. This means that his mind is completely unaffected by the power of the Wordless Monument. To be able to maintain his willpower in such a situation means that his willpower is completely unheard of. Even saints pale in comparison. With such powerful willpower, he definitely isn’t an ordinary person… No wonder…”

The more Jun Tingyu looked at Zhou Wen, the more he felt that he stood out as though he had an outstanding bearing. This made it impossible for him to treat Zhou Wen as a junior any longer.

Zhou Wen didn’t know all the things that Jun Tingyu had deciphered. As he had already cultivated the Wordless Monument’s Essence Energy Art, he wasn’t affected at all. He didn’t need to use his willpower to ward off the Wordless Monument’s power.

However, there was one thing Jun Tingyu did guess correctly by sheer chance. Zhou Wen’s willpower was indeed extraordinary.

Zhou Wen sent several messages, but The Thearch didn’t reply. He knew that this matter was likely going to blow up. He felt that it wasn’t appropriate for him to stay any longer. He needed to quickly think of a way to protect himself and resist The Thearch’s impending rage.

In front of so many people, he couldn’t make a big fuss. He had to find a place with no one around.

Zhou Wen put away his phone and stood up. Seeing that Li Xuan and company were still immersed in their worlds, he walked out and said to the tutor who was watching over them, “Sir, there are some matters in the school that need my attention. I’ll be returning now.”

After receiving the tutor’s approval, Zhou Wen was about to leave the mountain when Jun Tingyu stopped him.“I’m Jun Tingyu from the Imperial Capital College. I would like to know if you have the time to chat with me?” Jun Tingyu didn’t treat Zhou Wen as a student. He had the intention to talk to him as equals.

“I’m really sorry. I have something urgent to attend to and need to return to school. Let’s talk again in the future,” Zhou Wen said as he turned around and left.

“Why is this person so rude?” Li Mingcan said.

Jun Tingyu didn’t mind it at all. Instead, he felt that Zhou Wen was even more extraordinary. He pondered and said, “Geniuses have their own personalities. Zhou Wen is indeed not an ordinary person. This is understandable. I’ll go to Sunset College tomorrow to visit him.”

Li Mingcan was just about to say something when he suddenly saw an antelope and a golden eagle-like bird come down from Mount Laojun. The antelope was following behind Zhou Wen, and the bird circled above his head as though it was protecting him.

Li Mingcan, Jun Tingyu, and company were dumbfounded. The animals on Mount Laojun weren’t ordinary creatures. With Mount Laojun’s protection, they could be described as

pets in the backyard of a saint. They had actually taken the initiative to follow Zhou Wen down the mountain. They had never heard of such a thing, so they found it unbelievable.

Zhou Wen walked all the way down Mount Laojun before heading straight to campus. He felt uneasy the entire way, unsure how The Thearch would deal with him.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 493 - Punishmen

493 Punishmen

Zhou Wen returned to school on tenterhooks the entire way. But nothing happened even when he returned to his dorm.

Zhou Wen didn't dare be careless. He summoned all the Companion Beasts he could use and stopped sleeping in his bedroom. He stayed in the living room. With the antelope and chick by his side, he felt safer.

It was strange. Ever since they had come back from Mount Laojun, the chick that was as fat as a duck had actually slimmed down again. It looked like it was in high spirits like before.

Zhou Wen wasn't in the mood to study how the chick had lost weight in the blink of an eye. He sat on the sofa and placed a few notebooks to the side as he drew Substitute Talismans one by one.

These were life-saving treasures. If he could produce one, even if The Thearch wanted to deal with him, it might be able to save his life.

He drew one after another, but the success rate of a Substitute Talisman was really low. However, as the saying goes, 'practice makes perfect,' Zhou Wen gradually got the gist of it after repeatedly drawing.

Although this was a skill obtained from an Essence Energy Skill Crystal, Zhou Wen was the one who needed to draw the

talisman. When he realized that if he only drew the symbols using Essence Energy, the success rate was pathetic.

The lines of the Substitute Talisman seemed to contain some kind of profoundness. Zhou Wen sensed the strangeness of the lines and gradually figured out something.

This Substitute Talisman needs to be drawn with my Essence Energy. The lines drawn are also imbued with some kind of mysterious power related to me. It looks like the drawing of a talisman, but it’s actually a form of understanding of oneself. At the same time, it’s also a way to communicate with external objects… Zhou Wen thought as he drew.

Zhou Wen spent the entire day and night drawing. He didn’t know how many Substitute Talismans he had drawn by the next morning. He had almost used up several thick diary books by the time he finally completed one.

It was also thanks to Zhou Wen’s infinite Essence Energy that he could do so. If it were anyone else, they probably wouldn’t be able to draw so many times in a couple of months.

Although the Substitute Talisman is useful, it’s too difficult to draw one. It’s really not easy to get one talisman. Zhou Wen held the Substitute Talisman that he had drawn and was somewhat excited. With this talisman, it was equivalent to having an additional life.

Unfortunately, the Substitute Talisman could only be used by himself. This was because the Substitute Talisman that Zhou Wen drew was closely related to him, so it could only help him block calamities.

As for what kind of calamity the Substitute Talisman could withstand, Zhou Wen didn’t know.

Although talisman drawing wasn’t easy, Zhou Wen was thrilled by what he had gained. Talisman drawing needed him to sense the connection between himself and external objects. In this period of time, Zhou Wen kept using the Dao Sutra, allowing him to gain some insight into it.

The Dao models itself after nature. To condense a Life Soul from the Dao Sutra, I’ll probably have to work hard on Heaven Man Unity, Zhou Wen thought to himself.

Although there were some clues, as long as there was a direction, there was a possibility. It was better than being directionless as previously.

Now, Zhou Wen didn’t have the time to take in nature. He stored away the Substitute Talisman that he had drawn and slept.

Drawing the Substitute Talisman consumed both his Essence Energy and energy. He was already exhausted from all the drawing. Furthermore, he hadn’t recovered from his serious injuries. Now that he had the Substitute Talisman to protect him, he could finally sleep peacefully.

He slept soundly. Due to his exhaustion, Zhou Wen slept like a log. He only woke up when the doorbell rang.

Who is it? Zhou Wen stretched his back and wanted to ask.

“Meow!” However, Zhou Wen’s voice shocked him. He hurriedly covered his mouth with his hand.

However, when he reached out his hand, Zhou Wen was instantly stunned. How was that a hand? It was a furry paw. The fingernails on the claw were like hooks. What should have been the palm now looked like a pinkish meat lump that resembled a club suit from a pack of cards.

What… What’s wrong with me… Zhou Wen was alarmed. He wanted to stand up and size himself up, but he soon realized that his body had become very strange. Furthermore, there was a problem with his vision. All the furniture and things around him had become very large.

The clothes he wore yesterday were at his feet. They looked huge as though they were for giants.

Zhou Wen immediately felt something amiss. He hurriedly ran to the mirror and looked at it.

“Meow!” Looking at the black and white cat in the mirror, Zhou Wen was dumbfounded. He covered his mouth in horror as the cat in the mirror did the same.

At the dormitory’s entrance, a tutor rang the doorbell a few more times, but no one opened the door. Hence, he said apologetically to the old man beside him, “Elder Jun, I’m really sorry. It looks like he’s out.”

Jun Tingyu was very disappointed. In order to visit Zhou Wen at Sunset College, he didn’t hesitate to use his connections with a friend at Sunset College, but Zhou Wen wasn’t around.

“It’s alright, I’ll come again next time.” Jun Tingyu could only return in disappointment.

In the dormitory, Zhou Wen was about to explode from anxiety. He twisted his body and made various poses. He even tried to raise his tail. All he wanted to do was prove that the cat in the mirror wasn’t him.

Unfortunately, no matter what he did, the cat in the mirror did the same thing.

Even more terrifying was that when Zhou Wen attempted to use his Essence Energy Art or summon his Companion Beasts, there was no reaction.

The Thearch… It must be The Thearch's doing… Damn it… I have the Substitute Talisman on me. How can there be a problem? Zhou Wen ran to his pile of clothes and used his claws to tug at it a few times. He realized that the Substitute Talisman was inside his clothes, untouched. It hadn't done a thing.

Don't tell me I'm now permanently a cat? Zhou Wen hurriedly took out his phone. Thankfully, he didn't need to unlock using his fingerprints. A pattern worked too. Otherwise, he wouldn't even be able to unlock his phone.

After unlocking his phone, he immediately sent a message to The Thearch. "The Thearch, how am I supposed to buy those instruments when you've made me like this?"

Zhou Wen knew that he could only move The Thearch with benefits. It was probably useless for him to beg for mercy.

"I have plenty of ways to get people to deliver things to me. Who said I have to let you buy them? As for you, you have to be punished." The Thearch finally replied.

Zhou Wen sent a few more messages, hoping to move The Thearch and quickly change back into human form. However, the news was like a rock sinking into the sea. The Thearch didn't reply to him at all, as though she was determined to have him remain a cat for the rest of his life.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 494 - You Can“t Be Like This, Okay~

494 You Can“t Be Like This, Okay~

What should I do? Is there a way to restore my human body? Zhou Wen tried all kinds of methods, but he remained a cat. His body structure was completely different from before. He couldn’t use the Essence Energy Art or various Companion Beasts he had cultivated in the past. What else could he do?

The antelope and chick looked at him with interest. The antelope even used its hooves to rub his head as though it was comforting him, but Zhou Wen could see the smile in its eyes.

The chick bounced around him, sticking close to him as though it wanted to compete with him to see who was taller. However, when the chick stood, it was actually slightly taller than Zhou Wen when he was on all fours.

No, I have to think of a way to recover my human body. Zhou Wen used his paws to hide his phone and the bracelet which had the Chaos Bead embedded before walking towards the dormitory’s door.

Looking at this world from the perspective of a cat, his view was obviously much lower. Even the dormitory door was very large in his eyes.

Zhou Wen leaped up and tried to grab the handle to unlock the door.

In the past, jumping to such a height was trivial. However, even when reaching his paws to the limit, he was still quite a distance away from the door handle. His body then fell to the ground.

Zhou Wen landed on the ground and used all his strength to leap up once again. Only then did he jump up and open the door handle.

Although he was used to walking with two legs, if other students and teachers in school saw a cat walking with two hind legs, it would probably spell trouble.

Therefore, Zhou Wen could only sprawl on the ground and walk like a cat. Although it wasn't a problem for a cat to walk like this, Zhou Wen felt extremely uncomfortable walking in such a manner.

After exiting, Zhou Wen planned on heading to the chancellor's office. Most people probably wouldn't be able to resolve his current situation. Therefore, he wanted to find the chancellor of Sunset College, Leng Zongzheng.

He had heard that Leng Zongzheng was good at dispelling illusions, Zhou Wen felt that it was impossible for him to turn into a cat, so he suspected that it was just an illusion.

Zhou Wen thought to himself, At the very least, I'm a student at the school. I don't think Leng Zongzheng will leave me in the lurch, right?

However, Zhou Wen had no confidence in Leng Zongzheng's ability to turn him back into a human. He only wanted to try his luck.

Just as he walked to the yard, Zhou Wen heard the door to the building next door ring. He hurriedly hid in the bushes

and peeked at the yard next door.

Wang Lu walked out with two trash bags in her hands. It looked like she was going to throw the trash out.

Zhou Wen didn’t want anyone who knew him to know that he had turned into a cat. Be it Li Xuan or Wang Lu, they would definitely mock him for a long time.

Furthermore, as a cat, he didn’t have any clothes on him. Although he had fur, he still felt uncomfortable when people he knew saw him. Therefore, he didn’t contact Li Xuan and company.

Although Zhou Wen knew that Wang Lu probably couldn’t recognize him as a cat, it was better to be careful just in case.

After Wang Lu left, Zhou Wen prepared to leave in another direction. He planned on taking a detour to the chancellor’s office using the old school district behind Four Seasons Garden to avoid encountering so many students and tutors.

Although he had become a cat, Zhou Wen couldn’t tolerate having others looking at him with him being naked.

The yard’s door was locked from the inside. Although Zhou Wen could jump up and open the door, it was too eye-catching. He looked at the wooden fence in the yard and then at his body. Zhou Wen felt that it wasn’t difficult for his body to crawl out. Although he looked a little plump, most of it was fur.

Zhou Wen came in front of the wooden fence and chose a relatively large gap. He extended his head out, and there was a perfect outcome. Without any pressure, his head squeezed out.

As he continued squeezing his body, his stomach ended up stuck. Something seemed to have hooked his fur. If he tried to force his way through, he would feel a little pain.

“Poor kitty. Where did you come from? Why are you here?” Zhou Wen was about to squeeze back when he heard a familiar voice.

Not good! Zhou Wen immediately felt uncomfortable when he heard the voice. For some reason, Wang Lu had returned.

Zhou Wen struggled to retreat back into the yard, but he didn’t know what caught the fur on his belly. He couldn’t retreat even if he tried. His belly felt like it was about to be ripped apart.

“Poor little guy, why are you so stupid?” Wang Lu squatted down and pressed down on Zhou Wen. Then, she reached out her other hand to help him remove a wire he had been entangled with. This allowed Zhou Wen to escape before finally squeezing out.

Zhou Wen wanted to leave, but he was being carried by Wang Lu. “Although you look like a stray cat and aren’t an expensive breed, you look quite pretty. Wanna come back with me?”

Zhou Wen struggled with all his might, trying to escape Wang Lu’s demonic claws. After struggling to free himself, he landed on the ground and immediately ran away.

“Strange. That cat actually rejected me?” Wang Lu was slightly surprised. She never expected the cat to be so difficult to get along with. She had a much easier time with the stray cats she had encountered in the past.

Zhou Wen ran out of Four Seasons Garden as though he was fleeing for his life. Only after running for a long distance did he slow down. He felt exhausted. This was the first time in his long cultivation that he had felt this exhausted.

I have to recover my human body as soon as possible. Zhou Wen continued walking forward. Before long, he saw a few ferocious tigers blocking his way.

No, they should be described as fierce cats blocking the way.

At the corner of the building in front, four cats walked out and glared at Zhou Wen as though warning him not to enter their territory.

The four cats were a lot bigger than Zhou Wen. Furthermore, Zhou Wen found them familiar. On careful look, he recalled that they were the ones that Gu Dian secretly fed.

Zhou Wen still remembered that one of them was named Little Mei. Her body was pure white, with only an orange-red fur growing on her forehead. She looked very striking.

However, when Zhou Wen first saw her, she was still a tiny kitten. Now, she was already about the same size as her mother, a size bigger than the present Zhou Wen.

“I’m just passing by. I definitely have no intention of snatching your territory, nor do I have any intention of offending you.” As Zhou Wen spoke, his voice turned into meowing. He slowly walked to the side, wanting to circle around them.

“Meow!” Little Mei and company didn’t care much as they pounced forward, wanting to deal with the intruder, Zhou Wen.

Holy sh*t, are you really treating me, a sleeping tiger, as a cat!? Zhou Wen was depressed as he prepared to fight.

Although he was now a cat and had lost all his strength, his reaction and various techniques were still present. Under the combined attacks of the four of them, he was still as brave as ever. He used his sleek movements to restrain the four cats and then tore out of them one by one. His little paws gave them a beating, causing them to mew in pain.

“Haha, want to fight me? Now, do you know who’s the real king here?” Zhou Wen beat the four cats up badly. He even used his paw to press down on Little Mei. Just as he was feeling smug, he suddenly felt the skin on his back being grabbed by someone. Then, he heard a familiar voice.

“You can’t be like this, okay~”

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 495 - Gu Dian“s Secre

495 Gu Dian“s Secre

Zhou Wen flailed his four paws, trying to break free from his grasp, but he failed.

The scene in front of him changed—a face. It was a ferocious and ghastly face, but the eyes on the face had an indescribable gentleness as they looked at him.

“Were you abandoned by your master? You must be hungry after coming here, right? Have something to eat first,” Gu Dian said as he placed Zhou Wen on the ground beside him. There were two saucers right there. One was filled with milk while the other had cat food.

Zhou Wen had never seen Gu Dian so gentle to others, nor had he seen him speak to people in such a gentle manner. This was completely different from the Gu Dian he knew.

“Hurry up and eat.” Gu Dian squatted beside Zhou Wen, who was placed beside a saucer containing milk.

The four cats looked at him covetously but didn’t dare come over. They only meowed from afar.

“Little Mei, Little Yong, you can’t be like that. It’s the same as you—pitiful and homeless. You should all love one another,” Gu Dian said to the four cats.

Zhou Wen had goosebumps all over his body when he heard that. He turned around to leave. In order to prevent Gu Dian from catching him again, he used all his strength to run.

However, after he ran some distance, he couldn’t hear Gu Dian’s footsteps behind him. Instead, he heard an unfamiliar man’s voice coming from afar.

“Have you done what I asked you to do? It’s been so long, yet you can’t handle such a trivial matter. Are you afraid of Zhou Wen?”

Zhou Wen didn’t plan on stopping, but after running a few steps, he heard his name. He couldn’t help but stop and look over.

He saw a boy in a school uniform standing opposite Gu Dian. Zhou Wen didn’t know the boy, but he looked like an upperclassman. He was slightly older than him.

“Why do you want to do something to Zhou Wen?” Gu Dian asked the boy.

“You don’t need to know. You just need to do as I say.” The boy pursed his lips and said, “I’ll give you three more days. If you haven’t carried out my instructions, I’m afraid I won’t be able to help you keep that secret anymore. Think it through carefully.”

After that, the boy turned around and left with a cold face.

Based on Zhou Wen’s understanding, he didn’t think Gu Dian was someone who was afraid of anything. If someone dared to threaten him like this, no matter who he was, he would probably throw a punch over, right?

But this time, Gu Dian watched helplessly as the arrogant boy left. He didn’t show any intention of resorting to violence.

Zhou Wen was very curious. He didn’t know who the boy was. What was he planning to get Gu Dian to do? What skeleton in Gu Dian’s closet was he aware of?

After some thought, Zhou Wen decided to hang around. He wanted to figure out what was going on. After all, this matter involved him. If he didn’t figure out who the mastermind was, something similar might happen in the future.

Zhou Wen walked to Gu Dian’s side. When Gu Dian saw him, his ferocious expression turned gentle. He squatted down and placed the milk saucer in front of Zhou Wen. “Eat quickly.”

Zhou Wen was a little anxious. Gu Dian clearly wasn’t someone who liked to talk. It might be unrealistic to wait for him to mutter to himself about what had happened.

How can I get Gu Dian to tell me the entire story? Countless thoughts flashed through Zhou Wen’s mind, but he failed to come up with a solution.

Ask Gu Dian after transforming back into a human? This clearly wasn’t a good idea. His relationship with Gu Dian wasn’t that close. Their relationship was only slightly better than that of an unfamiliar classmate. If he were to ask him directly, they might fall out on the spot. Even if he didn’t fall out with Gu Dian, Gu Dian probably wouldn’t tell him anything given his personality.

As Zhou Wen pondered, Gu Dian nudged the milk towards Zhou Wen’s mouth. How could Zhou Wen drink milk meant for cats? He subconsciously turned his head to the side, indicating that he didn’t want to drink it.

However, when Zhou Wen’s action landed in Gu Dian’s eyes, he sighed softly. “Do you also think that it’s not right? Do

you think I’m wrong?”

Zhou Wen subconsciously nodded, but just as he nodded, he regretted it. He was a cat, so how could he understand Gu Dian’s words?

Gu Dian looked at Zhou Wen in surprise. However, his ability to accept the cat’s actions was clearly stronger than Zhou Wen had imagined. He didn’t suspect Zhou Wen at all, believing that he was a very intelligent cat.

“I also know that this isn’t right, but if I don’t do it, they will spread the news of me possessing the bloodline of a dimensional creature. When that happens, everyone will treat me like a monster and not a person,” Gu Dian said.

Zhou Wen nearly cried out in surprise. He never expected Gu Dian to have the bloodline of a dimensional creature.

Could it be that Gu Dian’s father or mother is a dimensional creature? Can humans and dimensional creatures mate to give birth to offspring? Countless strange thoughts flashed through Zhou Wen’s mind.

“But for so long, Zhou Wen and company have treated me like an ordinary person. They aren’t afraid of me because of my looks. They don’t ostracize me, and they treat me as one of theirs. How can I do something like that? Tell me, what should I do?” Gu Dian said bitterly and looked at Zhou Wen.

Gu Dian had no chance of making friends with humans because of his own problems. Furthermore, he didn’t know how to communicate with humans. Instead, he could pour out his heartfelt feelings in front of a cat. Wasn’t this also a tragedy?

“Beat him up and beat that turtle’s son to death. Who cares about you being human? Ignoring the fact that you have a dimensional creature bloodline, I wouldn’t mind even if you were a beast.” Zhou Wen wanted to say that, but the moment he opened his mouth, it turned into a meow.

Zhou Wen had no choice but to raise one paw and point in the direction the boy had left. He forcefully pointed a few times, indicating for Gu Dian to beat him up.

Gu Dian seemed to understand something when he saw Zhou Wen’s reaction. His eyes turned determined.

“I know what to do,” Gu Dian said to Zhou Wen before standing up and chasing after the boy.

Zhou Wen hesitated for a moment before chasing after him. He still wanted to know why the boy was targeting him. He might be able to hear the reason why later.

However, after becoming a cat, Zhou Wen’s Essence Energy was completely gone. His fastest speed was only the speed of a normal cat, so how could he catch up to Gu Dian? By the time he caught up, he saw that Gu Dian was already standing in front of the boy, seemingly talking to him.

“I can’t do that to Zhou Wen. Change the condition,” Zhou Wen vaguely heard Gu Dian say.

“Change to another condition? What right do you have to bargain with me? Don’t tell me you really think Zhou Wen and company think of you as a friend? They only want to make use of you because you are foolish and powerful. If they know that you have a dimensional creature bloodline, do you think they would still be willing to let you stay in the Xuanwen Club? When that happens, they will only treat you

as a monster—a pig or dog. It’s like you are a beast,” the boy said as he pointed at Gu Dian’s nose.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 496 - Why Not?

496 Why Not?

“This has nothing to do with you,” Gu Dian said with his head lowered.

“Why doesn’t it have anything to do with me? After all, we’re good friends, aren’t we?” The boy smiled and patted Gu Dian’s shoulder. He continued, “Have you forgotten our friendship? I’ve always remembered it.”

Gu Dian’s pupils constricted, but he remained silent.

“Think about it carefully. The current Zhou Wen is the second me in the future.” The boy narrowed his eyes and said, ” Birds of a feather flock together. Your birth has already determined that you won’t have any true human friends. Other than people like me, humans won’t accept a monster like you. If you don’t touch Zhou Wen now, when he learns your true identity in the future, he will no longer hesitate to draw a line with you or even kill you.”

After a pause, the boy said, “Don’t tell me you don’t know what happened to his teacher? Do you think he’ll still admit that he’s Wang Mingyuan’s student? If Wang Mingyuan appears again, he might even kill him…”

“That has nothing to do with me,” Gu Dian said expressionlessly.

“It has nothing to do with you? In that case, even if everyone knows how your mother gave birth to you, will

there not be a problem?” The boy narrowed his eyes and stared at Gu Dian.

Gu Dian’s expression changed drastically as he suddenly looked up and glared at the boy. “Lu Kaide, if you dare say a word, I’ll definitely kill you.”

“I’m just saying. How can it be leaked? We’re friends. I’ll definitely keep your matter a secret for you. I won’t let anyone know about it. However, you have to help me settle Zhou Wen’s matter. Otherwise, I won’t be able to live. Some things are hard to say… Ah…”

As Lu Kaide was speaking, he suddenly saw a cat leap up. Its claws scratched his face ruthlessly, leaving a few bloody marks on his face.

After listening for a long time, Zhou Wen nearly exploded in anger. Although he didn’t hear the complete story, he could roughly guess what had happened.

Gu Dian wasn’t a normal human, and it wasn’t his fault. It stemmed from the previous generation.

He did not know what method Lu Kaide had used to become Gu Dian’s friend. Furthermore, he knew of his secret, so he ended up using it to threaten Gu Dian.

Zhou Wen could understand why Gu Dian didn’t counterattack. He was the same as Gu Dian. He didn’t wish to bring anyone trouble, especially his family.

If it was only a matter of his identity, he believed that Gu Dian wouldn’t be threatened by him. He would have beaten him to the point of his mother not even being capable of recognizing him.

However, this involved Gu Dian’s mother’s reputation. Therefore, even though Gu Dian was extremely furious, he didn’t dare make a move on Lu Kaide.

Without a doubt, Lu Kaide wasn’t a fool. He definitely had some evidence in hand. Furthermore, even if he died, the evidence would still be spread. Only then could he threaten Gu Dian.

The more he understood Gu Dian, the more upset Zhou Wen felt. When he saw Lu Kaide’s wretched face, he couldn’t help but swipe his claw at him.

Now, Zhou Wen only hated himself for losing his strength. If not, he would definitely have smacked Lu Kaide’s face until it bled.

“Damn cat, Gu Dian, you bastard. Look at what you raise…” Lu Kaide was enraged as he attempted to grab Zhou Wen.

Zhou Wen ran and jumped onto Gu Dian’s back.

“Stop.” Gu Dian blocked Lu Kaide.

“Get out of the way. I’m going to kill this bastard,” Lu Kaide said as he attempted to grab Zhou Wen. Zhou Wen leaned on Gu Dian’s shoulder and looked at him with a faint smile as though he was mocking him.

Gu Dian didn’t make way. Instead, he reached out to stop Lu Kaide.

Lu Kaide was extremely furious, but he was stopped by Gu Dian and couldn’t capture Zhou Wen. He didn’t give up because of this. He took two steps back and suddenly summoned a Companion Beast.

The Companion Beast was a strange throwing dagger. After flying out, it circled around Gu Dian and stabbed at Zhou Wen's back. It was as fast as lightning.

Zhou Wen was alarmed as he cursed inwardly. He was only a cat, so it was probably difficult for him to dodge such a fast throwing dagger.

A huge hand suddenly grabbed the throwing dagger's blade. The throwing dagger trembled incessantly in Gu Dian's hand, but failed to escape his grip.

"Gu Dian, release it," Lu Kaide bellowed angrily.

"He's just a cat." Gu Dian held the throwing dagger without letting go. Blood dripped from between his fingers.

"I'll say it one last time. Let go. Otherwise, everything about you will spread throughout Luoyang tomorrow," Lu Kaide said angrily as he glared at Gu Dian.

Gu Dian held the throwing dagger and refused to let go. He didn't say a word and only looked at Lu Kaide.

Lu Kaide was even more infuriated as he summoned another saber and slashed at Gu Dian. He shouted, "Get out of the way, do you hear me?"

Gu Dian didn't move. He was struck on the shoulder by Lu Kaide, causing blood to spray out. However, Gu Dian's body was indeed resilient. The strike only lacerated him. It failed to reach his bones.

Lu Kaide refused to give up. He slashed at Gu Dian's body again and again, leaving bloody marks on Gu Dian's body. Even his face was lacerated.

It had to be said that Gu Dian’s body was truly resilient. Despite such strikes, he only suffered superficial injuries. When the blade struck his bones, it produced the humming sounds of metal clashing.

The reason Lu Kaide was so furious wasn’t entirely because Zhou Wen had scratched his face. Instead, it was because Gu Dian had repeatedly disobeyed his orders. He wanted to teach him a lesson, so Zhou Wen scratching his face was just an excuse.

Beat him up… Zhou Wen was anxious when he saw Gu Dian stand motionless, allowing Lu Kaide to slash him.

“Do you think of yourself as one of these beasts? Do you think they are more important than your life? Monsters are monsters…” Lu Kaide cursed as he slashed.

When Zhou Wen saw Gu Dian motionless, he couldn’t stand it any longer. He took a chance and darted out from his shoulder. His claws flailed as he clawed at Lu Kaide’s eyes.

“Ah!” Lu Kaide never expected a cat to pass through his series of blade attacks. At the close distance, Zhou Wen’s claw had injured his left eye. With one hand covering his eyes, blood immediately seeped out from the gaps between his fingers.

“I’m going to kill you!” Lu Kaide covered his eye in rage as the saber in his hand transformed into a saber beam that slashed at Zhou Wen.

This fellow’s strength wasn’t bad. Zhou Wen had never heard his name, so it was obvious that he wasn’t famous in school. However, he had top Legendary strength. Clearly, he had been hiding his strength. From this point, it was obvious

that he wasn’t an ordinary person. He definitely had ulterior motives.

Gu Dian’s eyes widened when he saw that Zhou Wen was about to be hit by the saber beam. He suddenly unleashed his strength as his powerful body charged into the saber beams. He grabbed Zhou Wen with one hand and struck out with the other.

With an explosive sound, the sky was filled with saber beams. The long saber in Lu Kaide’s hand shattered inch by inch. His body was also sent flying by the force and he fell seven to eight meters away. The hand which had held the saber was trembling and bleeding.

“Gu Dian, you dare attack me?” Lu Kaide widened his eyes as he stared at Gu Dian with gritted teeth as though he wanted to bite someone.

“Why wouldn’t he dare?” A voice sounded from the corner of the building. Lu Kaide and Gu Dian trembled as they couldn’t help but turn their heads. They saw a young officer in a military uniform and white gloves walking over. He looked gentle and mild.

He’s finally here. Zhou Wen heaved a long sigh of relief.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 497 - A Little Cold

497 A Little Cold

Zhou Wen knew that he was only a cat and had lost his strength. He definitely couldn’t handle the present situation. Thankfully, he still had the ability to text. Previously, he had contacted An Sheng when he saw Gu Dian’s phone left where he fed the cats. He told him to rush over as soon as possible.

This matter wasn’t something that could be resolved by force. Even killing Lu Kaide was useless. Otherwise, Gu Dian would have settled it himself and wouldn’t have been threatened by Lu Kaide.

When Lu Kaide saw An Sheng, he immediately turned around and wanted to run. He hadn’t managed to take a few steps before An Sheng placed a dagger by his neck.

“What are you doing? I’m a student at the college,” Lu Kaide calmed down and asked.

An Sheng said indifferently, “I don’t need to know who you are, but you’re dead.”

“Gu Dian, why aren’t you saving me?” Lu Kaide shouted in Gu Dian’s direction.

An Sheng said to Gu Dian unhurriedly, “Zhou Wen asked me to come. He has already told me about your matter. He wants me to pass on the message to believe him. Leave everything to me.”

“Gu Dian, you know what will happen if I die.” Lu Kaide knew that Gu Dian was his straw to clutch at.

He had heard of An Sheng’s name before. Having come to Luoyang to carry out a mission, how could he not know the famous An Sheng?

Gu Dian hugged Zhou Wen and pondered for a moment before nodding slightly at An Sheng.

The corners of An Sheng’s mouth curled up as he revealed a smile. The dagger in his hand had already pressed into Lu Kaide’s skin.

“Just answer whatever I ask. I don’t want to hear any nonsense,” An Sheng said.

Lu Kaide opened his mouth to say something, but An Sheng continued, “If you waste my time, I don’t mind using the Memory Stripping Spell to directly obtain the information I want from your brain.”

Lu Kaide’s expression changed drastically, as if he was hesitating about something.

“Don’t try to commit suicide. If I don’t let you die, even the King of Hell can’t take your life,” An Sheng said indifferently.

“If I tell you everything, can you give me a way out?” Lu Kaide said through gritted teeth.

“Yes,” An Sheng replied.

“Swear on it.” Lu Kaide had no other choice. He was already a piece of meat on the chopping block. He could only take a gamble. He did not want to die.

An Sheng’s expression didn’t change. He swore that if he went against his word, he would die a horrible death. Then, he asked Lu Kaide about Gu Dian.

Due to Gu Dian’s presence, Lu Kaide didn’t seem to lie. He explained everything clearly.

He had a voice recording of Gu Dian. It was a conversation with Gu Dian. Back then, Gu Dian had treated him as his only good friend, so he had told him everything.

Lu Kaide had not given this recording to anyone. He had only registered a few accounts online and scheduled an automatic release. If no one changed the release time, the recording and the article he had written would be released.

An Sheng didn’t listen to the recording. He just deleted everything.

“Where are the backups? Don’t tell me there aren’t any.” After An Sheng deleted it, he looked at Lu Kaide and asked.

“In an ancient Greek book on my dorm mate’s bookshelf. No one will read it,” Lu Kaide answered.

Following that, An Sheng asked about Lu Kaide’s origins. He admitted that he was a field agent nurtured by the Special Inspector Bureau. He had entered Sunset College to monitor the An family and Sunset College’s chancellor and tutors. He had recently received a mission to think of a way to bring Zhou Wen back to the headquarters, which was why he had used Gu Dian.

After a long while, Lu Kaide said, “I’ve said everything. Can you let me go now?”

“You have said everything, but how do I know if what you said is the truth?” An Sheng looked at Lu Kaide calmly.

“I’m telling the truth. At this stage, there’s no need for me to lie to you,” Lu Kaide said.

“That might not be the case. It’s a very important matter. I have to verify it myself,” An Sheng said as a black flame arose from his body. The flames floated towards Lu Kaide like ghosts and drilled into his brain.

“Ah… You swore to let me live… Otherwise, you will die a horrible death…” Lu Kaide exclaimed in horror. He had roughly guessed that An Sheng was trying to strip his souls and memories from him. Despite struggling desperately, he was unable to move his body.

“Before you came to Luoyang, you should have known that I have the nickname of Devil’s Adjutant, right? Is there a devil who abides by an agreement?” An Sheng said to Lu Kaide with a smile.

“You… You can’t do this to me… You can’t…” Lu Kaide was shocked and furious, his eyes filled with despair, anger, and indignation.

The pain that went straight into his soul seemed to slice his brain bit by bit. It made him want to scream in pain, but he could not make a sound despite his open mouth.

An Sheng only looked at him coldly as the black flames on his body seeped into his brain. Lu Kaide’s eyes gradually lost focus.

When the demonic-like flames drilled out of Lu Kaide’s brain and returned to An Sheng, Lu Kaide had already become a cold corpse. Even in death, his face was contorted with pain.

An Sheng opened the foldable cloth bag he had brought and stored Lu Kaide’s corpse inside. After he slung it over his shoulder, he said to Gu Dian, “In the future, other than Zhou Wen and me, no one will know about your matters. Unfortunately, there’s no way to silence me and Zhou Wen. You can leave it at that.”

“Thank… Thanks…” Gu Dian said those two words somewhat awkwardly. He had never said it before.

“Don’t say those words. You don’t need to thank anyone because that person is your friend.” After An Sheng said that, he left with Lu Kaide’s corpse.

“Friend?” Gu Dian’s expression turned odd.

In the past, he might have believed that there were friends. At that time, he was moved by Lu Kaide and treated him as a real friend. In the end, all he got was a betrayal. Ever since then, he preferred to be with cats than humans. He no longer believed in humans or friends.

Although he still did not believe it, there was a slight change in his heart.

At the very least, Gu Dian believed that once this matter was resolved, he no longer needed to be threatened and do things he didn’t wish to do.

“I… am finally free…” Gu Dian snapped to his senses and raised the cat in his arms. He smiled.

In his opinion, this little cat had given him luck, allowing him to finally be himself.

Gu Dian held the cat up in the air as he revealed a smile that came from the bottom of his heart. Although he was still as

ferocious as before, it made it difficult for people to not smile with him. The tabby cat also revealed a smile.

At that moment, Gu Dian suddenly felt the cat in his hand become heavier. Its body also changed. In a blink of an eye, the cat that Gu Dian was raising had transformed into a living man.

Their eyes met and the air seemed to freeze at that instant. The smile on Gu Dian and Zhou Wen’s faces gradually vanished.

A gentle breeze blew past Zhou Wen, making him feel a little cold.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 498 - Torch Dragon

Chapter 498 Torch Dragon

After returning to his dorm, Zhou Wen cursed inwardly. I have to crack Chess Mountain's dungeon!

"Prepare everything I need in a week. Otherwise, it won't be as simple as being a cat next time." The Thearch sent a message.

Clearly, The Thearch hadn't planned on permanently changing Zhou Wen into a cat. She just did it as a warning.

Now, Zhou Wen was filled with regret. If he had known, he would have stayed in his dorm obediently. Why did he go out?

Thinking back to the scene of his eyes meeting Gu Dian, he wished he could find a hole to hide in.

Zhou Wen had already made up his mind to think of a way to conquer Chess Mountain and pull The Thearch out. He would also transform her into a cat and raise her up high.

However, he had to feign civility now. He couldn't let her notice any problems. Once he cracked Chess Mountain and found her weaknesses, he would personally go to Chess Mountain and deal with her.

"I'll buy it as soon as possible." Zhou Wen replied.

After some thought, Zhou Wen sent another message: "Previously, I was chased by someone and fled into a

dimensional zone. I discovered a huge snake there…”

Zhou Wen described the snake’s physical characteristics and abilities. He wanted to ask if The Thearch knew what dimensional creature it was.

Since he could not do anything to The Thearch, he might as well make use of her.

“What snake? That’s Torch Dragon, one of the dragon species. It has powerful abilities and a pair of eyes can affect the day and night. When it opens its eyes, it will be bright. When it closes its eyes, it will be dark. It’s an extremely powerful ancient creature. Although it’s far inferior to me, it’s not something a mere human like you can match. It’s your good fortune to be able to come back alive after meeting it.” The Thearch replied.

“You sure are knowledgeable. That Torch Dragon’s eyes are indeed very powerful. It can kill many human experts with just a glance. It’s practically invincible. I wonder if you can crack its terrifying ability?” Zhou Wen sent another message.

“That’s called the Bright Torch Vision World. It’s not a bad ability, but what’s so difficult about cracking it? I just need to use an invisibility spell to prevent it from seeing me. When that happens, I can kill it as I please.” The Thearch replied.

“Could it be that even someone as strong as you can’t fight Torch Dragon head-on?” Zhou Wen deliberately said.

The Thearch’s solution was similar to Zhou Wen’s idea. However, although he had the Invisibility Cloak, it was still impossible to hatch it. He couldn’t be invisible.

The Thearch was a proud person, so she immediately replied, “It’s not easy to defeat it head-on. I can kill it with a wave of my hand, making it unable to open its eyes. Or perhaps, I can use a treasure mirror to reflect its gaze and make it have a taste of its own medicine.”

“You sure are resourceful. I wonder what kind of treasure mirror can reflect Torch Dragon’s Bright Torch Vision World?” Zhou Wen was delighted when he learned that.

If he could reflect the Bright Torch Vision World with just a mirror, then there was a chance of him killing Torch Dragon. There was no need to acquire an invisibility cloak.

“Don’t tell me you want to kill Torch Dragon? Do you have a death wish?” The Thearch had clearly seen through him as she sent a message.

“I’m just asking. How would I dare kill Torch Dragon?” Zhou Wen denied.

“The mirrors that you humans create have very good reflective effects. It would be enough to reflect Torch Dragon’s Bright Torch Vision World. However, those mirrors are too brittle. They shatter when encountering external forces. Other than the Bright Torch Vision World, Torch Dragon’s body is not something a mere human can deal with. If you wish to die, you can give it a try.”

Upon hearing The Thearch’s words, Zhou Wen was truly excited. He never expected an ordinary mirror to be able to deal with Torch Dragon. This boosted his chances of killing it.

“I’m just asking. Even if Torch Dragon invites me to kill it, I’m not free. I still have to help you buy things. By the way, I also encountered a terrifying dimensional creature. It looks

like a wolf and tiger, but it’s not one…” Zhou Wen continued to gather information from The Thearch.

The Thearch really knew everything. She told Zhou Wen that it was one of the four ancient ferocious beasts, Qiongqi. Not only did it possess the ability to devour everything, but it also possessed terrifying speed. It was even harder to deal with than Torch Dragon.

Furthermore, The Thearch also told Zhou Wen something quite strange. She said that if she wanted to deal with Qiongqi, she had to find an evil person to deal with it. The possibility of killing him would then be very high. If a good person were to fight Qiongqi, even if the good person’s combat ability was the same as that evil person’s, or even stronger, there was a high chance that he wouldn’t be able to defeat Qiongqi and would end up being devoured.

Zhou Wen was doubtful. He didn’t know if The Thearch was speaking the truth or just joking.

Zhou Wen admitted that he wasn’t a good person, but he wasn’t a person who committed heinous crimes. Therefore, he couldn’t test it out.

“Remember, you only have a week. If I don’t see those things again, prepare to suffer.” The Thearch sent the last message and ignored Zhou Wen.

Zhou Wen contacted Li Xuan and gave him the list, asking if he could help buy the items.

After a while, Li Xuan replied that it wasn’t a problem. Zhou Wen transferred the money to him and made him use the Li family’s resources to help him purchase the items. As for him, he considered how to kill Torch Dragon.

Although he knew that mirrors might be helpful in killing Torch Dragon, ordinary mirrors couldn’t be taken in-game. Zhou Wen had no way of testing the feasibility of this theory.

Head straight to the Zhuolu ruins in person? Zhou Wen didn’t dare take the risk. Ignoring the fact that The Thearch might be holding back the truth, even if it was the truth, the mirror could only reflect the Bright Torch Vision World. It wasn’t of much use against Torch Dragon’s other abilities. Furthermore, it was too easy to shatter. If an accident happened, Zhou Wen would have to pay with his life.

How can I take a mirror into the game? Zhou Wen thought for a moment before checking online to see if there were any Companion Beasts that could transform into mirrors.

He found quite a number of them. For example, there was a Clear Jade Immortal Mirror in the Kunlun Immortal Realm that could turn into an ancient mirror. However, that thing was relatively rare. Furthermore, the Kunlun Immortal Realm was too dangerous. It was almost impossible for an Epic to leave alive, and it was too far away from Zhou Wen.

The other places with mirror-type Companion Beasts were either too far or too dangerous. Just as Zhou Wen was fretting, he accidentally saw some introductions of Companion Beasts in the West District. His eyes lit up.

Among those Companion Beasts, there was an Epic Companion Beast named Sun Beast. Its companion form was a mirror, and it had excellent reflective ability.

Most importantly, the place where Sun Beasts spawned was in Zhou Wen’s game. It was called Music Temple.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it

as soon as possible.

Chapter 499 - Musical Fountain Square

499 Musical Fountain Square

Zhou Wen picked up his phone and started the Music Temple dungeon.

He had come once before, but because the first part of the journey was only filled with Legendary-level Musical Note Sprites, Zhou Wen felt that it was meaningless to continue grinding.

He never expected there to be such a good item like a Sun Beast in the Music Temple. Now, he was in urgent need of a mirror-type Companion Beasts, so he rushed in without any hesitation to grind the Sun Beast.

According to the online information, Zhou Wen knew that a dimensional creature like a Sun Beast was actually very rare in Music Temple. Only one would occasionally appear. Basically, very few people saw two or more Sun Beasts appear in the Music Temple at the same time.

Moreover, the Sun Beast was not the real boss of Music Temple. It was said that in the deepest part of the music hall, there was a lyre. Anyone who had seen the lyre would die.

Zhou Wen found it very contradictory. Since the people who had seen lyre were all dead, how could anyone know that there was a lyre?

Therefore, sometimes, legends were just legends. They couldn’t be taken at face value.

Zhou Wen didn’t plan on finding the lyre. After entering Music Temple with his pets, he ran towards the area mentioned online. He wanted to see if there were any Sun Beasts in-game.

Legend had it that the Sun Beast’s body was glowing like a small sun. One could see it from afar and it would usually appear at the musical fountain square in Music Temple.

Zhou Wen ran all the way to the musical fountain square. With the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon and Fire Furnace Queen leading the way, Zhou Wen killed many of the Musical Note Sprites and had many crystals and Companion Eggs drop.

Zhou Wen realized that there were a total of seven types of Musical Note Sprites. Furthermore, each of them only had one Essence Energy Skill which were all different.

Although they were different, the effects were similar. They were all sound blasts. They didn’t seem too different to Zhou Wen.

In the beginning, Zhou Wen didn’t mind, but as he killed them, he found it interesting.

These sound wave attacks formed a blast through the vibrations of the medium and superimposed waves. The seven different sound waves formed different shock waves. This intrigued Zhou Wen as he hatched some Musical Note Sprites. As he rode on Six Wing’s back and constantly advanced, he was studying the sound wave attacks of the Musical Note Sprites.

After killing countless Musical Note Sprites, he finally arrived at the musical fountain square.

In the huge square, there were seven fountains. The fountains did not continuously spray water pillars, but seemed to follow the music. They were rhythmic jets that shot to varying heights, not even shooting upwards at times. It looked very interesting.

And in the musical fountain square, there were Musical Note Sprites floating everywhere. They were colorful and had wings as they danced in the air. They were similar to the colorful paper used at Chinese weddings, but there were more of them.

The Six-Winged Guardian Dragon roared as demonic flames erupted from its body. Instantly, a large number of Musical Note Sprites were killed. However, the musical fountain square was quite large and there were Musical Note Sprites everywhere. Very quickly, new ones rushed over.

As he got his Companion Beast to kill the Musical Note Sprites, Zhou Wen looked around to find the Sun Beast.

However, after scanning the entire square, he didn’t see the legendary Sun Beast that resembled a miniature sun. Instead, a strange dimensional creature attracted Zhou Wen’s attention.

Ever since he entered Music Temple, the dimensional creatures he saw were all kinds of Musical Note Sprites. There were probably seven types.

However, the dimensional creature he saw this time wasn’t a Musical Note Sprite. It was a Golden Harp, but it didn’t look like metal. Instead, it was carved out of wood. There were gorgeous, exquisite patterns on it.

The last time Zhou Wen went to the Peninsula of Gods, he had learned about the various musical instruments. He had seen huge harps.

However, the harp in front of him was very small. It was about the same size as a violin. Furthermore, it had a pair of wings like the other Musical Note Sprites. It also had a pair of resplendent golden wings.

Sensing Zhou Wen’s Companion Beasts wreaking havoc on the musical fountain square, the strings on the harp moved automatically, producing melodious sounds.

Although its music was beautiful, it sounded a little monotonous. Zhou Wen didn’t notice any offensive sound waves. In other words, it wasn’t attacking him.

However, in the next second, Zhou Wen discovered a strange scene.

With the sound of the harp, countless Musical Note Sprites started to arrange themselves in a regular pattern on the square. They also produced sounds that seemed to respond to the playing harp.

Hum!

The countless Musical Note Sprites in the music square seemed to form a resonance as they emitted a massive sound wave. The power of the sound wave was able to instantly kill a powerful Epic creature like the Fire Furnace Queen and White Shadow of Poison. Their bodies were instantly obliterated by the sound wave.

Even the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon retreated a few steps back under the impact of the sound waves. The demonic flames on its body flickered continuously.

Roar! The Six-Winged Guardian Dragon flew into a rage and let out a furious roar. The demonic flames on its back rose and turned into four wings, making it enter the six-winged state. It spat out poisonous breath that transformed into a terrifying tidal wave in a bid to eliminate all the Musical Note Sprites.

The strings of the harp kept sounding, and the entire musical fountain square's Musical Note Sprites resonated with it, sending out terrifying sound waves to resist the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon's Poison Breath.

The mighty Six-Winged Guardian Dragon was actually held back by the sound wave attack. Under the vibrations of the sound waves, Poison Breath was torn apart. The Six-Winged Guardian Dragon's body seemed to be moving in the opposite direction, unable to move forward.

As for the blood-colored avatar, it had already retreated out of the musical fountain square under Zhou Wen's control and transformed into the Demon Dragon True Body. Only then could he withstand the sound wave's attack.

Zhou Wen wasn't alarmed but delighted because he saw a possibility.

There were the most Legendary dimensional creatures, so their Companion Eggs dropped the most. However, no matter how many Legendary Companion Eggs there were, even if they could form an army, their actual combat strength wasn't high.

This was because the suppression from absolute strength was redoubtable. Even if there were thousands of Skeleton Soldiers, they wouldn't be able to kill an Epic human.

Therefore, low-level Companion Beast legions were basically useless against powerful dimensional creatures.

However, the Golden Harp and the Musical Note Sprites were actually able to combine their powers to fight against the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon. This was rather impressive.

There are so many Musical Note Sprites in Music Temple. The chances of Companion Eggs dropping aren’t low either. If I have the ability of the Golden Harp, would I be able to form an army of Musical Note Sprites? Zhou Wen thought.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 500 - Golden Harp

500 Golden Harp

The Six-Winged Guardian Dragon was actually unable to gain the upper hand despite clashing with sound waves head-on. It was forced back by the sound waves again and again, unable to charge forward.

However, those sound waves were unable to harm the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon. They could only temporarily hold it back.

Every time the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon launched an attack, a portion of the Musical Note Sprites would be quaked to death. As the number of Musical Note Sprites decreased, the sound wave also weakened.

It was only a matter of time before the harp and the Musical Note Sprites were defeated.

Zhou Wen didn’t think the Golden Harp was useless because of this. After all, the Musical Note Sprites that it had gathered were only at the Legendary stage. If a large number of Epic-level Musical Note Sprites could enter its ranks, the sound waves produced wouldn’t be that simple. As long as sufficiently strong ones were included, it might be possible to defeat a Mythical creature.

Zhou Wen wasn’t in the mood to wait for the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon to defeat it. He secretly summoned Demonic Neonate and she found an opportunity to secretly release her flying sword.

The flying sword flew through the air during the gap in the sound waves, slicing the Golden Harp in half. After all, it was only at the Epic stage. Without the resonance power of the musical notes, it was unable to block Demonic Neonate's flying sword.

'Killed Epic creature, Golden Harp. Discovered Companion Egg.'

Zhou Wen was delighted. He never expected his luck to be so good today. A Companion Egg dropped in his first try.

After losing the conformity provided by the Golden Harp, the hundreds of thousands of Musical Note Sprites were reduced to a leaderless mob. They were no longer able to fight the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon. The Six-Winged Guardian Dragon charged forward and killed large numbers of Musical Note Sprites amid the raging demonic flames. Many crystals and Companion Eggs dropped.

Due to the massive numbers killed, even if the drop rate wasn't high, many Companion Eggs would drop.

Zhou Wen controlled the blood-colored avatar and picked up the Companion Eggs of the Golden Harp and the ordinary Musical Note Sprites, choosing to hatch them.

In a short while, Zhou Wen hatched more than a hundred Musical Note Sprites. Seven tiny musical symbols appeared on his left arm. Each of the music symbols had a saturated color.

The same Companion Beast would have a tattoo in the same spot. It would overlap, and the more there were, the more saturated the color of the tattoo.

The stats of the Musical Note Sprites were mostly the same. All of them only had sound wave techniques, so there wasn’t much of a difference. Therefore, Zhou Wen didn’t look at them carefully and focused on the stats of the Golden Harp.

Golden Harp: Epic

Life Providence: Symphony of Fate

Life Soul: Spirit of Music

Strength: 32

Speed: 39

Constitution: 31

Essence Energy: 40

Talent Skill: First Movement of the Symphony of Fate.

Companion Form: None

Zhou Wen couldn’t help but be delighted when he read the various information regarding the Golden Harp. Its ability wasn’t as simple as just coordinating the Musical Note Sprites. As long as it was a music-type power, it could add it to the fray.

If Zhou Wen could obtain a large number of high-level music-type creatures, Epic or even Mythical creatures, in the future, and then combine them with the power of the Golden Harp, the amount of power he could unleash was unimaginable.

From this point of view, although the Golden Harp was only at the Epic stage, its value was probably higher than some Mythical creatures.

Of course, the premise was that Zhou Wen had enough music-type Companion Beasts to work with the Golden Harp. Otherwise, its strength alone was considered at the bottom of the Epic creatures. After all, the Golden Harp's attack wasn't strong. It could even be said to be very weak.

After obtaining the Golden Harp, Zhou Wen was in a good mood. He got the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon to continue killing the Musical Note Sprites. Now, he wasn't in a hurry to find the Sun Beast. Hundreds of thousands of Musical Note Sprites on the square were wantonly killed by the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon. Zhou Wen followed behind to pick up the spoils.

After the musical fountain square was cleared, Zhou Wen obtained a total of more than two hundred Musical Note Sprites. The pitiful baby tiger had been killed when the Golden Harp unleashed its might. Otherwise, there would have been more.

There's no hurry. There's plenty of time to grind in the future. Sooner or later, I'll be able to form an army. Without discovering the Sun Beast, Zhou Wen led the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon forward and entered the temple behind the square.

The moment he entered the temple, he saw a blob of light appear in the innermost hall. When the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon and the blood-colored avatar were seen, the blob of light that resembled a miniature sun immediately shot out a beam of light.

The Six-Winged Guardian Dragon didn't hesitate to spit out a mouthful of demonic flames. When the light met the demonic flames, it didn't shatter. Instead, it was reflected away by the demonic flames. Rays of light shone on the

walls and pillars of the palace, causing green smoke to appear from the spot that was illuminated.

The demonic flames parted the beam and burned the Sun Beast's body. Zhou Wen didn't even see what the Sun Beast looked like before it was killed.

'Killed Epic creature, Sun Beast. Discovered Dimensional Crystal.'

Zhou Wen looked over and realized that it was only a 34-valued Strength Crystal. It was completely useless.

There were no other Sun Beasts or dimensional creatures in the temple. Zhou Wen circled around and left the temple before heading to the other buildings near musical fountain square.

On the other hand, he had found some other Musical Note Sprites and an Epic-ranked musical frog. It was able to emit sound waves and was extremely fast, but it was still easily dispatched by the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon.

After circling the buildings, apart from the Music Holy Temple which he hadn't dared enter, Zhou Wen had nearly cleared the entire Music Temple. He didn't find the Golden Harp or Sun Beast again.

Helpless, Zhou Wen had no choice but to leave the Music Temple dungeon and head to the Metalwork Temple to grind. He was rather lucky to obtain a Runic Heavy-Armored Warrior Companion Egg which he immediately hatched.

Now, Zhou Wen was still thinking of a way to obtain an armor-type Companion Beast.

The Runic Heavy-Armored Warrior and the Golden Warrior had a compatibility score of more than 70. The success rate was very high, so Zhou Wen wasn’t that unlucky the second time he fused them.

With the Legendary Golden Warrior as the main pet and the Runic Heavy-Armored Warrior as supplementary, he combined it into an Epic Golden Warrior.

Golden Warrior: Epic

Life Providence: Golden Evasion

Life Soul: Blessed Combat Runes

Zhou Wen was overjoyed when he saw the Life Providence and Life Soul. It was perfect—exactly what he wanted.

However, after looking at his stats, Zhou Wen frowned again. The stats of the Epic Golden Warrior were too low—27, 32, 29, 34. Its skills weren’t ideal either. It only had the Golden Bell and the Fist of War.

What should I use to fuse it again? Zhou Wen thought. The best fusion solution was naturally to obtain the Three-Eyed Golden Warrior’s Invulnerable Golden Body skill. This way, it could increase his stats and also possess a good skill.

With the Golden Bell and Invulnerable Golden Body, its defense could be improved.

The only problem was that the drop rate of the Three-Eyed Golden Warrior Companion Egg was similarly low.

Zhou Wen had been grinding dungeons recently. Every time he entered Music Temple, he would only encounter one Sun

Beast. He also grinded the Metalwork Temple for Three-Eyed Golden Warriors.

As for the Golden Harp, he had not seen it since the first time.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 501 - Peony Garden

501 Peony Garden

In the huge Music Temple, only one Sun Beast would spawn every time. This made it much more difficult for Zhou Wen to obtain a Sun Beast Companion Egg. He had no choice but to sacrifice his blood to grind for one.

Thankfully, other than the Sun Beast, Zhou Wen could also farm rare dimensional creatures such as the baby tiger, the Elegant Emperor’s Avatar Puppet, the Runic Heavy-Armored Warrior, the Three-Eyed Golden Warrior, Mutated Overlord Snake, and so on.

Some Companion Beasts’ levels weren’t high, but their skills or Life Providences were very useful. If he farmed a few more, he might be able to use them when they were fused in the future.

While grinding for pets, Zhou Wen found a good place.

The place Zhou Wen found wasn’t in Sunset College, but a dimensional zone in Luoyang. It wasn’t very famous, and ordinary people seldom went there because there weren’t many dimensional creatures there. Furthermore, the drop rate was low, making it a chore.

Most people weren’t willing to go, but Zhou Wen felt that it was a good place. The dimensional zone that he had specially applied to go to was Peony Garden.

There was a legend in the region that the first empress of the East District had once ordered a hundred flowers to bloom after she got drunk in Chang’an to cheer her up.

The blooming season was different for a hundred flowers. However, due to the empress’s might, they had no choice but to bloom at the same time. The empress was elated to see this. However, she realized that amongst the hundred flowers, there was a flower that had yet to bloom. It was still standing amidst the hundred flowers with withered leaves. It was a peony.

The empress was furious and demoted the peony to Luoyang. However, who knew that the moment the peony reached Luoyang, it immediately bloomed with a beautiful rosy red color.

The empress got even more furious when she heard of this. She ordered for the peonies to be burnt. To everyone’s surprise, the peonies became even more beautiful amidst the flames.

It was said that this peony garden was the place where the empress demoted the peony.

Of course, that was only a legend. No matter how powerful the empress of the human world was, she couldn’t dictate the blooming of flowers. Therefore, it was still a mystery why Peony Garden could become a dimensional zone.

The peony flowers in the peony garden were dimensional creatures. In the past, there were people who wantonly reaped them. Unfortunately, peony flowers didn’t drop dimensional crystals or Companion Eggs. Eventually, no one came here to cut peonies.

There were two types of dimensional creatures that could be killed in the Peony Garden. One of them was a bee-type dimensional creature, while the other was a butterfly-type. However, there weren't many of them, so it was rather troublesome to find them. They were all poisonous and didn't drop any good items. Therefore, Peony Garden gradually lost its importance.

The reason Zhou Wen came to peony garden wasn't to kill the bees and butterflies. It was because there were very few people here. Furthermore, it was said that there was an immortal root in Peony Garden that was the closest to nature.

Zhou Wen only wanted to come here to game. While gaming, he could also sense the flora and fauna. It could be considered a form of intimacy with nature. Perhaps he could gain a deeper understanding of the Dao Body and condense a Life Soul.

Condensing a Life Soul and advancing a Life Soul weren't simple tasks. Not only did he need a lot of practice, but having perception and opportunities was also very important. He was temporarily stuck at advancing Slaughterer, the Inverse Ancient Sovereign, and Lost Country. All Zhou Wen could do was study the Dao Art and Small Perfection of Wisdom Sutra.

He arrived at the peony garden and indeed, he saw a bunch of flowers. At a glance, there was a stretch of colorful flowers that extended for hundreds of kilometers. They were like a breathtakingly beautiful sea of flowers.

The beauty of peony gave people a sense of oppression. Some people felt that it was too beautiful, while others felt

that it was a glorious beauty. Some even said that peony was the queen of flowers.

Zhou Wen didn’t know much about flowers. He only felt that the peony flowers were indeed beautiful. As they had transformed into dimensional creatures, the beauty of peony was even more shocking.

Zhou Wen walked into the garden and found a stone pavilion in the sea of flowers. As he sat in the stone pavilion, he gamed while taking in the flora and fauna.

The peony garden was indeed different from other dimensional zones. It was quiet and tranquil, and the fragrance of flowers was refreshing. Apart from the stunning beauty of the peony flowers, it was indeed a good quiet place.

However, Zhou Wen didn’t have any special insights. As he circulated the Dao Art, he gamed. He didn’t make any progress with the Dao Art, so he focused on gaming and didn’t think too much about it.

After playing for a few hours, he heard footsteps.

Zhou Wen originally didn’t plan on paying attention to them, but the footsteps approached his stone pavilion. He used Truth Listener’s ability to listen.

Two people came. One was a middle-aged man and the other was a twelve-year-old youth. The two of them were dressed in odd plain clothes. A robe was worn outside, and they did not look like locals.

The middle-aged man walked in front. The young man held a sheathed saber in his hand and followed behind the middle-aged man.

The two of them walked all the way to the stone pavilion. They didn’t walk very fast, as if they were taking a stroll and enjoying the scenery of Peony Garden.

To be honest, the peony was indeed beautiful, but there was a limit to being able to appreciate it. This was also why many people always found the grass greener on the other side.

It wasn’t because the things weren’t good, but because people were prone to change. They believed that what is rare is dear, and they didn’t know how to cherish all that they had seen.

The middle-aged man kept observing the peony flowers, but he still seemed to be in high spirits. He studied the peony flowers closely.

The youth’s temperament was clearly not as staid as the middle-aged man’s. After watching for a while, he found it boring, but he still followed behind the middle-aged man obediently. He did not cross the line and looked like he had a good upbringing.

“Teacher, there’s already someone inside this pavilion,” the youth said in disappointment when they arrived in front of the stone pavilion.

However, the middle-aged man did not mind. He stood outside the pavilion and asked, “Young friend, can you let us rest for a while?”

“Of course. The stone pavilion is a common facility. You can use it as long as you want,” Zhou Wen said.

After thanking him, the middle-aged man walked into the stone pavilion with the young man.

The youth carried a large box on his back. He put the box down and opened it before taking out a cloth and laying it on the ground. Then, he took out a small wooden table and some random items. It looked like a picnic, but the tools on the table looked like they were used for brewing tea.

The middle-aged man and the young man sat down at the small wooden table. The young man could make tea with those complicated tea sets.

“It’s fate that we meet. Young friend, if you don’t mind, why don’t you try our hometown tea?” the middle-aged man said to Zhou Wen.

“Thank you for your kindness. I’m not thirsty.” After saying that, Zhou Wen continued gaming.

The middle-aged man didn’t mind either. As he drank his tea, he enjoyed the flowers. He looked rather pleased.

“Teacher, there are so many famous dimensional zones in Luoyang. Why do we have to come to peony garden? Even dimensional creatures are rare here. Is there anything special about this place?” The youth brewed a cup of tea and sat opposite him, asking the middle-aged man.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 502 - Not On The Same Level

Chapter 502 Not On The Same Level

“Flowers are like life. The plum blossoms are proud to the core and their chrysanthemums are lofty and pure. They bloom when other flowers wilt. Therefore, the first impression you have of them is that they are extraordinary. However, the peony is different. Its blooming time is not unique. Many flowers bloom in the same period of time, but in this season when the flowers bloom, it is still able to stand out. This is a kind of temperament, a kind of fearlessness. The plum blossoms and chrysanthemums are unique, but if they can stand out among the masses, they are extraordinary in different ways, first among extraordinariness,” said the middle-aged man.

The young man did not seem to understand what he was saying. He looked up at the peony flower outside the stone pavilion. It was beautiful, but after looking at it for a long time, he got used to it.

After some thought, the youth said, “I still like the cherry blossoms from our hometown. They aren’t that colorful, but they are still as beautiful. Furthermore, when they are at their most beautiful, they will wither. They won’t slowly wither like the flowers here which serves to remind me of heroes dying at their prime.”

“The momentary brilliance is naturally the most beautiful. However, life is not just an instance. Cherry blossoms do not only bloom for a year,” the middle-aged man said after drinking a cup of tea.

The young man quickly brewed another cup for the middle-aged man. After the middle-aged man drank it, he said, “The temperature of the tea today is still a little lacking.”

“Teacher, we have been out for so long, and you always want me to make tea. When will you teach me the way of the sword?” The youth could not help but ask.

The middle-aged man smiled. “You’ve been with me for seventeen days since we set off. For you to endure asking until now, it’s clear that your father has brought you up rather differently.”

“Please enlighten me.” The youth bowed.

“My way of the sword is a little different from your family’s. It focuses on comprehending. I’ve already taught you for seventeen days, but you haven’t gained any insight yet. When you do figure something out, it will be time for me to teach you the moves involved,” said the middle-aged man.

“You’ve taught me for seventeen days?” The youth was slightly taken aback. He looked at the middle-aged man with some doubt and said, “But in these seventeen days, we’ve been traveling. You either get me to do some chores or make tea. When did you teach me anything?”

“That’s why you haven’t figured it out yet.” The middle-aged man smiled.

The young man was still a young man after all. The past seventeen days had seemingly ground away all his patience. He could not help but retort, “If I knew everything, Father wouldn’t have made me acknowledge you as my master. Please teach me.”

As he spoke, the young man knelt before the middle-aged man.

The middle-aged man shook his head. “Your level of insight is still insufficient.”

The youth was not convinced. He raised his head and said, “I’m twelve years old this year and have already advanced to Legendary. I once went to the East Heaven Academy to compete with the top ten geniuses in the way of the sword. No one in the entire East Heaven Academy was my match. If my level of insight isn’t sufficient, then who can meet the mark?”

“Sparring is ultimately only sparring. It doesn’t mean anything. Moreover, this world is very big. The East Heaven Academy is not equal to the entire world,” said the middle-aged man indifferently.

The youth could not help but feel enraged when he realized that he was unable to move the middle-aged man no matter what he said. However, his teacher was too famous. He was disciplined from a young age to not go against his teacher excessively.

He had nowhere to vent his pent-up anger. Just as the youth was feeling upset, he suddenly thought of Zhou Wen on the other side of the stone pavilion. He stood up and walked in front of Zhou Wen. He bowed slightly and asked, “Are you a local here?”

“No, I study here,” Zhou Wen answered.

The youth’s eyes lit up when he heard that. He sized up Zhou Wen and asked, “Which school are you from?”

“Sunset College,” Zhou Wen casually replied when he saw that he was rather polite.

“I’ve heard of Sunset College. It’s a college that’s in the Federation’s top ten. It should be the best school here, right?” The youth’s eyes lit up.

“Probably,” Zhou Wen said.

When the youth heard that, he turned to the middle-aged man and asked, “Teacher, Sunset College is one of the top ten academies in the Federation. It’s ranked higher than East Heaven Academy. They don’t know who I am, so they naturally won’t give in to me. If I can defeat the best student at Sunset College, will you be able to teach me the way of the sword?”

The middle-aged man merely smiled and did not speak. He picked up the teacup and took a sip.

Without any reply from his teacher, the youth bowed and said, “Then I’ll take it that Teacher has agreed.”

With that said, the youth stood up and walked in front of Zhou Wen. He asked, “May I ask who is the strongest student at Sunset College?”

“Strongest?” Zhou Wen thought carefully before replying, “I guess the publicly recognized number one person should be the president of the student council, right?”

“What’s his name?” The youth asked.

“Wei Ge,” Zhou Wen answered.

“Wei Ge?” The youth repeated it a few times before walking to the middle-aged man and bowing. “Teacher, I’ll go to

Sunset College to challenge its strongest student. After I return victorious, you should be able to teach me the way of the sword, right?”

“There’s a student from Sunset College here. Why do you have to seek someone so far?” the middle-aged man glanced at Zhou Wen and said with a smile.

The youth said, “I want to defeat the strongest student of Sunset College, not an ordinary student.”

“But in my opinion, he is stronger than you,” the middle-aged man said.

The youth naturally refused to believe him. He looked at Zhou Wen and asked, “What’s your standard in Sunset College?”

“Very weak. It’s considered mediocre. You should go to Sunset College to find Wei Ge,” Zhou Wen said. He wasn’t interested in dealing with the child.

The youth looked at the middle-aged man and said, “Teacher, it seems that you have misjudged this time.”

The middle-aged man ignored the youth and looked at Zhou Wen with a smile. “My young friend, may I ask what rank you were in the last comprehensive test at Sunset College?”

“I barely ranked tenth,” Zhou Wen answered.

The youth sized up Zhou Wen again when he heard that. After a while, he nodded and said, “Tenth place is indeed lacking. However, since Teacher has spoken, I’ll first defeat you before challenging the best, Wei Ge.”

As he spoke, the youth made a strange hand gesture and said, “Please accept my challenge.”

“Sorry, I don’t have time,” Zhou Wen said as he played games. He was completely uninterested in the youth and had no interest in bullying children.

The youth couldn’t help but frown slightly. Zhou Wen’s attitude made him feel belittled.

“I’m Honn Shinsakura. Please enlighten me.” The young man stood as though he was about to draw his saber and held the handle of the saber as if he was about to strike at any moment.

Zhou Wen had already rejected him, so there was no need for him to repeat himself. He ignored him and continued gaming.

A sliver of anger flashed in Honn Shinsakura’s eyes as he suddenly unsheathed his saber. The saber beam flashed and slashed at Zhou Wen like lightning.

Zhou Wen was still gaming. He didn’t even raise his eyelids as the saber beams slashed past him. Although it looked dangerous, it didn’t even hit his clothes.

The middle-aged man’s expression changed slightly. He stood up and said, “Shin, step back. He is not on the same level as you.”

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 503 - Sei Gasakai

503 Sei Gasakai

Honn Shinsakura was not convinced to begin with. After hearing his teacher's evaluation, he became even more indignant. However, his teacher had already stood up. As a disciple, he had to maintain his etiquette. He could only step aside and sulk.

"I'm Sei Gasakai. May I know your name?" the middle-aged man asked Zhou Wen.

"There's no need to be this polite with me. My name is Zhou Wen," Zhou Wen said as he put down his phone.

As Zhou Wen had never heard of the name Sei Gasakai, he didn't think much of it. However, this name was famous in another region and even the entire Federation.

Speaking of the Sword Hero Sei Gasakai, many people who practiced the way of the sword knew that he used to be a first-rate sword master who practiced Niten Ichi-ryū ten years ago, and he was also famous locally for his good looks.

However, Zhou Wen didn't know any of this.

Seeing his teacher, Sei Gasakai, solemnly mention his name, while Zhou Wen only sat there silently, Honn Shinsakura could not help but snort coldly. He felt that Zhou Wen didn't respect his teacher, Sei Gasakai.

Sei Gasakai didn't mind as he said with a smile, "Zhou Wen, are you familiar with Chancellor Leng Zongzheng in your

studies at Sunset College?”

“It’s very rare to see Chancellor Leng. He’s no longer teaching,” Zhou Wen answered truthfully.

“Isn’t your mentor Leng Zongzheng? Then who is your mentor?” Sei Gasakai was slightly surprised.

Zhou Wen was so young, yet he had such a cultivation realm. He believed that Zhou Wen was Leng Zongzheng’s student. His visit to Luoyang was to challenge Leng Zongzheng.

“Wang Fei,” Zhou Wen answered subconsciously.

After Wang Fei left, many things happened to Zhou Wen. He seldom interacted with the new tutor, and he still thought of Wang Fei as his tutor. Furthermore, Wang Fei and Wang Mingyuan were both members of Luoyang’s Wang family. Zhou Wen subconsciously wanted to acknowledge Wang Fei as his tutor.

Sei Gasakai thought for a moment. He had never heard of this name before. In fact, Sei Gasakai didn’t like the other teachers of Sunset College. He believed that the only one worthy to fight him at Sunset College was the chancellor, Leng Zongzheng. Therefore, he didn’t know much about the other teachers. He only knew a few of the more famous tutors.

Even though the mentors were rather famous in the Federation, Sei Gasakai did not think of them as opponents.

Although Zhou Wen wasn’t a student taught by Leng Zongzheng, since he was a student of Sunset College and had such accomplishments at such a young age, Sei Gasakai wanted to know of Zhou Wen’s accomplishments.

Sei Gasakai originally could only tell that Zhou Wen's cultivation level wasn't bad. He remained unperturbed despite being in front of them. This made him find the young student pretty good.

It was only later, when Honn Shinsakura probed Zhou Wen, hoping to force him to take action, did Sei Gasakai realize that Zhou Wen wasn't ordinary. His martial realm wasn't low, but it wasn't obvious how high it was.

"If there's nothing else, I wish to continue gaming." Zhou Wen lowered his head and continued gaming.

Sei Gasakai didn't make any remarks as he looked at the peony flower outside the stone pavilion. A gust of wind blew past, and a withered petal fell, blowing into the stone pavilion. He extended his slender fingers and clamped the petal between his fingers.

"Little friend, take a look at this petal. Do you see anything different about it?" With that said, Sei Gasakai extended his index finger and middle finger towards Zhou Wen.

Zhou Wen immediately felt his body tremble as he couldn't help but look up at Sei Gasakai.

Sei Gasakai's finger wasn't fast, but when it landed in Zhou Wen's eyes, the scenery was completely different.

The life force in the peony garden seemed to have followed Sei Gasakai's finger. It was as if he was the lord of the peony garden, and the peony garden moved under his power.

Zhou Wen felt that he wasn't facing Sei Gasakai, but the billions of flowers in the peony garden. The power gathered on the petals was like a boundless sea. He immediately felt immense pressure.

Zhou Wen wore a solemn expression as he sat on the bench. His fingers were like swords as he extended them towards the petal delivered by Sei Gasakai, clamping the other side of the petal.

At that instant, Zhou Wen felt a strange force rush over.

Flowers bloomed and fell. The sun rose and set. From life to death, Zhou Wen felt his body rapidly aging as time flew by.

A strange glint flashed across Sei Gasakai’s eyes. In the past, he had cultivated Niten Ichi-ryū. The so-called Niten Ichi-ryū meant that the sky had the sun and the moon, and humans were divided into Yin and Yang. The Niten Ichi-ryū was also about complementing Yin and Yang.

Niten Ichi-ryū warriors usually held a tachi in their right hand and a small tachi in their left hand. This Yin and Yang produced endless changes.

Sei Gasakai was extremely talented. After being repeatedly honed by dimensional zones and gaining insights, not only did he reach the pinnacle of Niten Ichi-ryū, but he had also basically created a lineage using the Niten Ichi-ryū as a foundation, allowing his strength to improve greatly.

This lineage not only focused on Yin and Yang, the incorporeal and corporeal, but it also had a great relationship with time and life. Sei Gasakai had yet to name this lineage. This time, he had come to Luoyang to challenge Leng Zongzheng. If he could defeat him, he planned to name the lineage he created.

As Zhou Wen was a student of Sunset College, Sei Gasakai had originally planned on using his newly created technique to test his cultivation level and realm. He didn’t really want to fight him.

However, when he used the Will Renewal concept in his saber art, he realized that Zhou Wen wasn’t affected at all. With that, he gradually strengthened his will in the sword.

Zhou Wen felt as though countless flowers had bloomed before waning as time seemed to pass rapidly. It was as though the entire peony garden had turned into a flower graveyard. He had also gone from young to old as though he was about to die.

When Sei Gasakai saw that Zhou Wen remained unmoved, he couldn’t help but be astonished. He had already thought highly of Zhou Wen to begin with, but he never expected the youth in front of him to be even stronger than he had imagined. He couldn’t help but strengthen his sword will as it changed from the Will Renewal to life and death.

Honn Shinsakura watched from the side, but he didn’t sense anything. All he saw was Zhou Wen and Sei Gasakai each holding a petal. One of them was standing while the other was sitting, motionless.

Honn Shinsakura was somewhat puzzled. He did not know what his teacher Sei Gasakai was doing, but he did not dare disturb him. He could only wait patiently by the side.

But as he watched, Honn Shinsakura’s eyes widened.

His teacher, Sei Gasakai, had his hair band snap and his long black hair flowed down. His long black hair was gradually turning white. In just moments, his long black hair had turned snow-white.

“Teacher, what’s wrong?” Honn Shinsakura was alarmed as he hurriedly stood up. He wanted to rush over and push Zhou Wen away.

Boom!

However, just as he took a few steps towards Zhou Wen, he felt a terrifying force slam into him. His body involuntarily flew out and landed outside the stone pavilion. Blood oozed out of his mouth and a few of his bones were broken. He looked at Zhou Wen in the stone pavilion in horror and struggled several times but failed to get up.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 504 - Dao Body“s Soul Condensation

504 Dao Body“s Soul Condensation

After Zhou Wen arrived at the Peony Garden, he had been constantly circulating the Dao Art. When Sei Gasakai’s sword will crashed down on him, it made him feel both a Will Renewal and life and death. However, this pressure didn’t cause Zhou Wen’s will to waver. Instead, he suddenly seemed to gain enlightenment.

With Zhou Wen’s enlightenment, the Dao Sutra in his body also underwent some strange changes. His Dao Body and essence, vitality, and spirit were trembling. His entire body and mind seemed to resonate with everything in the world, causing them to constantly transform and condense within his body.

At this moment, Zhou Wen had actually begun condensing a Dao Sutra Life Soul.

Sei Gasakai didn’t know that his sword will was useless against Zhou Wen. Instead, it aided Zhou Wen by constantly giving him insights.

Seeing how Zhou Wen remained motionless, Sei Gasakai was alarmed. He pushed the sword will he had comprehended to its limits. His Essence Energy had already been infused into it. It wasn’t as simple as probing anymore. It was a true sparring match. The sword’s force surged

towards Zhou Wen through the flower petal that the two were holding.

This nameless sword strike was still unable to shake Zhou Wen despite Sei Gasakai pushing his sword will to the extreme.

His sword force, which carried the Will Renewal as well as life and death, vanished without a trace after entering Zhou Wen’s body.

Sei Gasakai was shocked. He had relied on his comprehension of this strike to push his Life Soul to Perfect stage. He had even planned on using this strike to challenge Leng Zongzheng.

However, who knew that this strike wouldn’t even be able to do a thing to a mere student of Sunset College? Instantly, Sei Gasakai felt despair. He felt like he had lost all hope in life. His black hair turned white in a short period of time.

Sei Gasakai had no idea that even if his strike were to clash with Leng Zongzheng, it was impossible for it to be ineffective. However, Zhou Wen’s Dao Body and the Life Soul he was condensing were the nemeses of his strike.

If he were to use his Life Soul to fight Zhou Wen, Zhou Wen was definitely not his match. However, just the Power of Life and Death alone was unable to do a thing to him.

Zhou Wen felt his essence, vitality, and spirit condense towards his brain. The power of Sei Gasakai’s sword was also sucked in. A certain power in the world was flowing towards his brain, pouring into him like a river.

Zhou Wen felt that a crystal had condensed in his mind. The crystal was very strange, as though it was in his brain, but it

wasn’t anywhere in his brain. It was as though it was something that only existed in his consciousness, but Zhou Wen could clearly sense its existence.

Once the Life Soul was formed, Zhou Wen immediately felt refreshed as though he had been reborn. Boundless Essence Energy surged out of the crystal-like Life Soul, making him feel like he was bathing in a spring.

Sei Gasakai could not accept the fact that he was inferior to a student at Sunset College. He could not accept that the Sword Dao he had comprehended over the years was completely useless.

When Zhou Wen’s Life Soul condensed, the fluctuations of the Life Soul’s power caused Sei Gasakai’s Life Soul to vibrate. A Sword Soul that resembled a devil or a god appeared over Sei Gasakai’s body.

Honn Shinsakura was dumbfounded. He had never expected that his teacher, the renowned Sword Hero, Sei Gasakai, would use his Life Soul when he was competing with a student.

That was a Perfect Life Soul, Samsara Sword Sage. Countless Epic experts were defeated by the Reincarnation Sword Sage of Sei Gasakai. It was a supreme existence with the power to determine life and death.

In the next second, Honn Shinsakura saw Sei Gasakai’s white hair fluttering in the wind. The Samsara Sword Sage had merged with Sei Gasakai, and a tachi condensed from light and darkness appeared in his hand. The petal had already melted from the terrifying power.

Sei Gasakai held the tachi in his hand. In his despair, he no longer had any other thoughts. All he wanted to do was

prove himself and his Sword Dao as he slashed at Zhou Wen.

Wherever the blade beam passed, the surrounding flowers were affected by it. Half of the flowers were blooming, while the other half was wilting, as though heaven and hell were separated.

Teacher actually used this strike… Honn Shinsakura was extremely shocked.

Not only did Sei Gasakai use his Life Soul, but he also used his most powerful strike. This strike was something Honn Shinsakura had only heard from his father, but he had never seen it before.

His father had seen this move of Sei Gasakai’s. He had originally been comparable to Sei Gasakai in strength, but in the end, he decided to hand over his beloved son, Honn Shinsakura, to Sei Gasakai for guidance. Furthermore, he held Sei Gasakai in high esteem, saying that he was the number one sword practitioner.

Honn Shinsakura followed Sei Gasakai and wanted to learn this move the most. However, Sei Gasakai had never used it before, so he had never seen it. Today was the first time he had truly witnessed this attack.

However, the strike that was described as an attack that could kill devils and gods alike was actually used by Sei Gasakai against a student. This made Honn Shinsakura feel incredulous.

However, he had finally witnessed the power of the strike. It was truly an attack that wielded the power of a devil or a god. However, due to the power of the attack, the peony garden was reduced to hell. All the flowers had withered. Such power was truly awe-inspiring.

It’s no wonder even a person like Father holds such high regard for Teacher. With such a powerful strike, who in the world can match it? Honn Shinsakura praised in his heart.

But in the next second, Honn Shinsakura was rooted to the spot. His eyes widened to the extreme, but his pupils constricted like needles as he looked into the stone pavilion in disbelief.

Zhou Wen was still sitting on the bench in the stone pavilion. He wasn’t moved by Sei Gasakai’s mighty strike, nor did he have any intention of standing up. All he did was grab a jade bamboo in his hand.

There was a flash; a saber revealed itself in the bamboo.

Honn Shinsakura had never seen such a magnificent and domineering technique before. The gorgeous saber beam sliced through the void, leaving an inextinguishable mark on his mind.

When Honn Shinsakura looked at the saber beam clearly, he realized that the Bamboo Blade had already returned to its sheath, as though it had never moved.

However, when he looked at Sei Gasakai again, the attack condensed from light and darkness in his hand suddenly broke apart, turning into specks of starlight before dissipating. The terrifying intent also shattered.

“I… lost…” Sei Gasakai stood there and stared at Zhou Wen in a daze, his eyes had already lost focus.

Honn Shinsakura sat on the ground. He really could not accept this outcome. Sei Gasakai, the man known as the number one Sword Hero—his teacher—had actually been defeated by a student who was not much older than him.

Looking at Zhou Wen, who was still sitting in the stone pavilion, Honn Shinsakura suddenly felt that he wasn’t a person but a devil. The earlier strike was a devil’s power.

However, that gorgeous saber move had left an inextinguishable mark deep within his soul. He could not help but recall it repeatedly.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 505 - Niten Flying Immortal-ryū

Chapter 505 Niten Flying Immortal-ryū

“Teacher!” Honn Shinsakura suddenly saw a trickle of blood on Sei Gasakai’s neck. He couldn’t help but be shocked and went to rush over.

“If I were you, I wouldn’t touch him,” Zhou Wen said.

Upon hearing Zhou Wen’s words, Honn Shinsakura’s body trembled. He stood outside the stone pavilion and didn’t rush in. He stared at Zhou Wen and gritted his teeth as he asked, “Your Excellency, since you have already won, why do you have to go so far as to kill him?”

Zhou Wen pointed at Sei Gasakai and said, “I’m not a murderer. Why would I kill him? Your teacher is probably envisaging a battle in his mind. I don’t know what will happen if you disturb him.”

Doubtful, Honn Shinsakura looked at Sei Gasakai. Seeing that his teacher was standing there in a daze, his eyes empty, and the wound on his neck only a superficial wound, he heaved a sigh of relief.

“What’s the name of the strike your teacher used just now?” Zhou Wen asked as he looked at Honn Shinsakura.

He now had comprehended the meaning of Will Renewal and life and death thanks to Sei Gasakai’s sword will. He had understood the relationship between humans and nature, which allowed the Dao Body to condense a Life Soul. From

this, one could tell that Sei Gasakai's move was indeed powerful.

Honn Shinsakura didn't dare belittle Zhou Wen any further. Although there wasn't much of a difference in age between the two of them, he treated himself as a junior. He cautiously answered, "That move isn't named. My teacher used the Niten Ichi-ryū as a foundation before comprehending the Four Seasons' Will Renewal and Life-and-Death Samsara concepts. He then created this blade technique."

"I see." Zhou Wen nodded slightly and got up to leave.

He came to the Peony Garden because he wanted to see if he could condense a Dao Body Life Soul. Although the Peony Garden failed to help him, in a way, Sei Gasakai had helped him.

Zero Taboo (Primordial Body): Union of Heaven and Man, Invulnerable to all Spells

With the appearance of the Life Soul, the word "taboo" behind Essence Energy disappeared.

This was a Life Soul condensed from a Dao Body. It was somewhat odd with being a crystal in his consciousness that seemed to have a corporeal form, but it also seemed incorporeal. It was this Life Soul that had blocked Sei Gasakai's Will Renewal move. It nullified the powers for Zhou Wen, allowing him to defeat Sei Gasakai.

In terms of pure strength, Sei Gasakai's Perfect-stage Samsara Sword Sage was much stronger than Zhou Wen's Life Soul. If he hadn't used that move and had used ordinary Essence Energy to fight Zhou Wen, Zhou Wen's strike wouldn't have been able to win so easily.

Upon seeing Zhou Wen walk out of the stone pavilion, Honn Shinsakura anxiously asked, “How’s my teacher?”

“I didn’t hurt him. It’s just that he doesn’t understand something. He’ll naturally recover once he figures it out,” Zhou Wen said without turning his head.

Honn Shinsakura hesitated for a moment. Seeing that Zhou Wen was about to leave, he couldn’t help but shout at Zhou Wen’s back, “What’s the name of that strike of yours?”

“Transcendent Flying Immortal,” Zhou Wen answered as he walked. Soon, he entered the flower shrubs.

“Transcendent… Flying… Immortal…” The gorgeous saber flashed through Honn Shinsakura’s mind again. That gesture sent shockwaves into his soul, one that he could not forget.

An old man and a young man stood in the stone pavilion in a daze while the other stood outside the stone pavilion in a daze. After a while, Honn Shinsakura suddenly heard a cry and hurriedly turned to look at Sei Gasakai.

Sei Gasakai spat out a mouthful of blood. Honn Shinsakura hurriedly rushed to Sei Gasakai. “Teacher, what’s wrong?”

Sei Gasakai spat out a mouthful of blood, but his expression was much better. He wiped the blood from the corner of his mouth and revealed a smile. “So that’s how it is… I see… It’s no wonder I didn’t name the move. It turns out that deep in my heart, I knew that it wasn’t right. Now I finally understand where I was wrong…”

With that said, Sei Gasakai looked around but didn’t see Zhou Wen. He asked, “Where’s Zhou Wen-kun?”

“He went back,” Honn Shinsakura answered.

“Why didn’t you stop him?” Sei Gasakai blurted out.

Honn Shinsakura thought to himself, How can I stop him when even you can’t?

Of course, he did not say that out loud. Sei Gasakai probably realized that something was wrong with what he said, so he asked him, “Did you ask him what the name of that attack was?”

“He said it was Transcendent Flying Immortal,” Honn Shinsakura replied.

Sei Gasakai nodded and said, “So that saber move is called Transcendent Flying Immortal. My blade technique has taken the wrong path. I’ve been blindly pursuing the path of Will Renewal and life and death, but I’ve lost the true essence of Niten Ichi-ryū. To think that I was so arrogant that I thought that my accomplishments had already reached the crest of perfection and even had the thoughts of challenging Leng Zongzheng. I never expected that even a student from Sunset College could nullify my sword technique. That’s good. After this battle, I’ve finally seen the path ahead clearly. I’m going back to revise my blade technique. Are you still willing to cultivate with me?”

“You will forever be my teacher.” Honn Shinsakura immediately bowed.

“Alright, we’ll head back now. I’ll revamp my blade technique. From now on, this lineage will be called the Niten Flying Immortal-ryū,” Sei Gasakai said seriously.

“Niten Flying Immortal-ryū?” Honn Shinsakura looked at Sei Gasakai in confusion.

“My Sword Dao came from the Niten Ichi-ryū , and the strike that Zhou Wen-Kun used to give me a wake-up call is called Transcendent Flying Immortal. In order to show respect, my style shall be called the Niten Flying Immortal-ryū. I hope that after you inherit my Sword Dao in the future, you will be able to advance further and use the blade technique of my Niten Flying Immortal-ryū to defeat his Transcendent Flying Immortal,” said Sei Gasakai.

“Niten Flying Immortal-ryū?” Honn Shinsakura muttered to himself as Zhou Wen’s gorgeous saber appeared in his mind.

The master and disciple no longer went to find Leng Zongzheng and chose to leave Luoyang.

Zhou Wen didn’t take this matter to heart, but he didn’t know that in the future, the Niten Flying Immortal-ryū would become a mainstream sword sect overseas. But all of this was in the future.

After returning to his dorm, Zhou Wen began studying the Zero Taboo Life Soul. He wanted to know what use it had.

As of now, what he knew was that it could nullify the Power of Will Renewal and Power of Death, but this was clearly not the true effect of the Zero Taboo.

After launching the game dungeon, Zhou Wen entered the Metalwork Temple. He wanted to see if the Zero Taboo could block the power of the flames, but unfortunately, the blood-colored avatar was nearly burned to death.

It can’t block the power of fire? Zhou Wen gritted his teeth and changed to another dungeon. He went to the Music Temple to try resisting the sound waves.

However, it was useless. After activating the Zero Taboo, the sound wave struck the blood-colored avatar, sending it flying several meters away. It was so painful that Zhou Wen nearly convulsed.

It can’t be? Don’t tell me that this thing can only block the Power of Will Renewal and Death? Just as Zhou Wen was feeling depressed, he saw a Sun Beast rush out of the palace.

Zhou Wen didn’t experiment any further. He summoned the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon and made it kill the Sun Beast. After grinding so many times, he didn’t even have a Companion Egg drop. He didn’t hold any hopes this time, but the Sun Beast ended up dropping a Companion Egg.

It’s finally here. Zhou Wen forgot about the Zero Taboo as his emotions became complicated.

With the Sun Beast, he could finally fight Torch Dragon.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 506 - Fusion Armor

506 Fusion Armor

Zhou Wen had killed plenty of Sun Beasts, but this was the first time he had seen one clearly.

As the Sun Beast’s glare was so strong, it usually looked like a small sun. However, in reality, the Sun Beast was just a small crystal-like beast. It wasn’t too big and emitted an intense light.

Sun Beast: Epic

Life Providence: Son of the Sun.

Life Soul: Solar Radiance

Strength: 39

Speed: 38

Constitution: 39

Essence Energy: 39

Talent Skill: Sun Arc.

Companion Form: Crystal Mirror.

Zhou Wen summoned the Sun Beast and transformed it into a companion form. An intrinsic, sundial-like mirror appeared in his hand. The mirror clearly reflected Zhou Wen’s shadow. It wasn’t inferior to the modern-day mirrors; it was even clearer.

Looking at the crystal mirror, Zhou Wen thought of a problem.

This mirror was more than enough to block his face, and it was just big enough to block his chest. However, he couldn’t hide his entire body behind the mirror.

Zhou Wen didn’t know if blocking a part of his body was of any use against Torch Dragon’s Bright Torch Vision World.

Taking the Sun Beast with him, Zhou Wen opened the game dungeon and planned on giving it a try.

Once again, he came to the shrine and summoned the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon, allowing it to charge into the temple as a vanguard.

Under Zhou Wen’s control, the blood-colored avatar cooperated with the six-winged Guardian Dragon and dealt with Torch Dragon. As Zhou Wen didn’t know when Torch Dragon would use the Bright Torch Vision World, he kept paying attention to Torch Dragon’s eyes.

Torch Dragon’s eyes were usually dim. When it used Bright Torch Vision World, the eyes would first light up before turning into a mirror.

The process in the middle was a brief instant. Zhou Wen had to summon the Sun Beast when Torch Dragon used Bright Torch Vision World. There was some skill involved.

As the Sun Beast was only at the Epic stage, it was impossible to summon it too early or it would die under the intense combat strength. Therefore, Zhou Wen could only use this strategy.

He was extremely familiar with Torch Dragon. When it used Bright Torch Vision World, Zhou Wen summoned the crystal mirror in front of him and blocked the blood-colored avatar's face.

In the next second, Zhou Wen saw a strange scene. The crystal mirror and blood-colored avatar's faces were indeed fine, but its body vanished. Then, the game screen turned black.

The Thearch didn't lie to me. The mirror is indeed useful, but the crystal mirror is a little too small. Zhou Wen wasn't discouraged. He knew that the mirror could restrain Torch Dragon, so killing it was only a matter of time.

He went online to search for information again to see if there were any bigger mirror Companion Eggs. However, he was somewhat disappointed. All known mirror Companion Beasts were relatively small in size. It was basically impossible to hide behind a mirror.

The biggest known Companion Beast mirror was a magic mirror in the West District. However, the magic mirror was at the Mythical stage. Up to this day, the six families had yet to destroy it.

From the looks of it, getting a big mirror won't work. Is there any other way? Zhou Wen thought hard about how to use the smaller crystal mirror to perfectly crack Bright Torch Vision World.

Zhou Wen constantly came up with new strategies and kept experimenting. He spent a large amount of time grinding dungeons every day.

Zhou Wen had yet to finish Torch Dragon, but he had obtained a Three-Eyed Golden Warrior Companion Egg.

He combined it with the Epic Golden Warrior that he had previously combined. Although they were both Golden Warriors, their compatibility was only slightly more than sixty.

After hesitating for a moment, he chose to fuse them. Then, he watched as the Golden Warrior and the Three-Eyed Golden Warrior Companion Egg were gradually devoured by the light before they merged into one.

When the light dissipated and a Golden Warrior appeared on the game’s screen, Zhou Wen finally relaxed.

The stats of the Golden Warrior increased significantly after being fused. All of them were above 30, and his luck was quite different. With the Three-Eyed Golden Warrior as a supplement, it retained its Invulnerable Golden Body. As such, the Golden Warrior had Golden Bell, Invulnerable Golden Body, and the Fist of War.

Fist of War wasn’t of much use to Zhou Wen. He mainly focused on the Golden Bell and Invulnerable Golden Body, which greatly enhanced his defense.

When he went to the temple to attack Torch Dragon again, Zhou Wen summoned the Golden Warrior to see how strong its defense was.

However, what surprised Zhou Wen was that the Golden Bell and Invulnerable Golden Body, along with the augmentation

of Blessed Combat Runes allowed it to withstand one blow of the Torch Dragon’s tail. Its body crashed into the palace wall, but it wasn’t seriously injured.

This seemingly ordinary Golden Warrior was finally killed after withstanding Torch Dragon’s four attacks.

This was already out of Zhou Wen’s expectations. Among Epic Companion Beasts, there weren’t many who could withstand a single strike from Torch Dragon. For a Golden Warrior to withstand four strikes was already shocking.

Unfortunately, the Golden Warrior could not block Bright Torch Vision World.

This Golden Warrior looks like an ordinary Golden Warrior, but its strength far exceeds that of a Golden Warrior. If an ordinary person were to treat it as a Golden Warrior, they would probably suffer terribly. That’s an advantage. Zhou Wen thought to himself if he were to find a publicly recognized weak Companion Beast in the future and combine all sorts of powerful skills with it. This way, he would be able to catch any enemy off guard.

Upon thinking of a weak Companion Beast, Zhou Wen thought of the Lucky Baby Tiger. This fellow was indeed the weakest among Epics. Apart from its Luck stat, it was completely useless.

I’ll try to fuse a powerful baby tiger when I get another baby tiger. Zhou Wen summoned the Golden Warrior and wore it as a golden soft armor.

The moment he wore it, he realized something different. The soft armor that a typical Golden Warrior transformed into was made of gold threads. It was pure gold without any patterns.

Zhou Wen’s soft armor had shimmering Blessed Combat Runes on it, making it look extremely dazzling.

Zhou Wen didn’t like being dazzling because that would make him a striking target.

“The Golden Warrior transforms into soft armor. I can still wear armor outside. I can use the Runic Heavy-Armored Warrior as the main ingredient and a Golden Warrior Companion Egg as a supplementary ingredient to form a Runic Heavy-Armored Warrior with a Golden Body Life Providence. Zhou Wen did as the idea came to him. Runic Heavy-Armored Warriors and Golden Warrior weren’t difficult to kill, but something went wrong when he fused them.

After the two were combined, the Runic Heavy-Armored Warrior did not obtain the Golden Warrior’s Life Providence. It was still his original Life Providence, but he had an additional skill.

After a few tries, the results were all different. Sometimes, there were more skills, and sometimes there were fewer. Only on the third time, did he obtain a Runic Heavy-Armored Warrior with the Golden Body Life Providence and Blessed Combat Runes Life Soul. However, that Runic Heavy-Armored Warrior did not even have a single skill.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 507 - Black Cube

Chapter 507 Black Cube

While Zhou Wen was grinding the dungeons, something strange happened in Luoyang City.

A crossroad in the city was blocked by a huge black cube. The black cube was about 50 meters long. It did not look like metal, but it did not look like stone or plastic either.

Strangely, no one knew when the black cube appeared. An Sheng, who was in charge of investigating the matter, looked at the nearby surveillance cameras and realized that the black cube had appeared out of thin air. It didn’t exist on the video then it appeared in the next second.

Such a strange matter was likely related to dimensional creatures. In order to prevent any accidents, An Sheng mobilized many experts from the Sunset army to research how to take away or destroy the black cube.

However, they tried many methods to no avail. They were unable to move the black cube away, nor were they able to damage it. Even the strongest destructive weapon and Essence Energy Skill that they could muster failed to damage the black cube one bit.

Some people dug up the concrete surface underneath the black cube and used some tools to move it away. However, they soon discovered that the black cube was actually suspended in midair. After the ground was dug open, it did not affect it at all and it still remained in position.

Although the black cube didn’t pose any threat, An Sheng still made preparations for the worst. He evacuated the nearby residents and temporarily isolated the area. He sent troops to guard it to prevent any accidents.

In less than two days, An Sheng received plenty of shocking updates. It wasn’t just Luoyang; many cities in the Federation’s four major districts had similar black cubes.

Now, everyone was studying the black cube. Up to now, no one had been able to determine what it was, nor could anyone destroy or move it.

Many people were worried like An Sheng. The black cube was like a ticking time bomb in the city. Who knew when it would cause a terrifying disaster.

“Strange phenomena are happening rather frequently. It looks like the days ahead will become more and more unpeaceful.” An Sheng sighed.

An Tianzuo was reading the intelligence gathered from all over the world. Even the cities of the six major families had black cubes. Furthermore, the six families were helpless against them.

The six families had sent out Mythical Companion Beasts to destroy or figure out what the black cube was, but the outcome wasn’t promising. The strength of Mythical Companion Beasts was still unable to harm the black cubes.

An Tianzuo frowned when he read the intelligence.

Black cubes had appeared all over the world; this was clearly unusual.

“Did you notice that these black cubes only appear in areas where humans gather? There are no black cubes in the wilderness or dimensional zones,” An Tianzuo said.

“You suspect that this is a conspiracy against humans?” An Sheng immediately understood what An Tianzuo was getting at.

“Although I don’t wish to see such a thing happen, the current phenomena’s analysis suggests that the black cubes are targeted at humans,” An Tianzuo said with a heavy expression.

“We shall handle it, come what may. Overseer, when have you ever been afraid of anything?” An Sheng deliberately said in a relaxed tone.

An Tianzuo smiled and stopped talking about the matter. He then asked An Sheng, “How’s the progress at Zhuolu?”

“There’s no progress. After a long analysis, the experts have roughly guessed that the snake is the legendary Torch Dragon. The other Mythical creature is Qiongqi, one of the four mythical ferocious beasts. Apart from that, there’s no progress. Unless a Mythical power involves itself in this matter, it’s impossible to make progress in the temple,” An Sheng said.

“How’s the mood of the person at home?” An Tianzuo paused before asking again.

“Same as usual. She eats whatever she likes and buys whatever she likes. However, I can tell that she can’t let this matter rest,” An Sheng said.

After a long silence, An Tianzuo suddenly said, “How long will it take for a return trip to Zhuolu?”

An Sheng’s expression changed drastically when he heard that. “Overseer, you absolutely can’t do that. You definitely can’t go to Zhuolu. The strength of Torch Dragon and Qiongqi is still unknown. We haven’t even figured out what abilities they have. It’s too dangerous for you to go like this.”

“If we don’t figure out if Grandpa is in the temple, the person at home will probably not be at ease,” said An Tianzuo.

“Overseer, if you were to perish in there, Madam wouldn’t just be sad. Furthermore, there’s the bizarre black cube. A huge problem might happen at any time. This place needs you,” An Sheng said solemnly.

An Tianzuo’s expression changed when he heard that. After a long while, he sighed and said, “Ah Sheng, in the past, we only wanted to have the An family and Luoyang completely in our control. At that time, we thought that we could no longer have any reservations and do whatever we wanted. Now that we have truly become the masters of this place, we realize that the matters to take into consideration have increased.”

An Sheng looked at An Tianzuo and said seriously, “The lesser the burden, the fewer the matters to consider. Overseer, you’re burdened by too many things.”

“Perhaps.” An Tianzuo stood up and walked to the window. He looked at the black cube on the city’s streets as his expression turned more complicated.

…

Zhou Wen had fused multiple pets without obtaining a Runic Heavy-Armored Warrior that he was satisfied with. All he

could do was use the unskilled Runic Heavy-Armored Warrior for the time being.

“Old Zhou, have you heard? A mysterious cube appeared on the streets in the city,” Li Xuan said mysteriously when he came to Zhou Wen.

“What mysterious cube?” Zhou Wen had been focused on grinding dungeons recently. Apart from sending breakfast to Wang Lu, he hadn’t gone out, nor had anyone told him.

“You don’t know about it?” Li Xuan recounted the mysterious appearance of the black cube. “It’s not just our Luoyang. I heard that the same black cube has appeared all over the world. However, no one knows what it is.”

Zhou Wen couldn’t help but frown when he heard that. He was also worried. If the black cubes contained a few Mythical creatures, the consequences would be unimaginable.

Li Xuan and Zhou Wen chatted for a while before he suddenly recalled something. He said to Zhou Wen with a smile, “Gu Dian looks like a ruthless character, but he’s actually quite timid.”

“Why do you say that?” Zhou Wen asked curiously.

“Didn’t we organize an activity previously and got Gu Dian to come with us? Fang Ruoxi brought her pet cat over. That pet cat wasn’t afraid of Gu Dian’s ferocious appearance and even jumped onto him. When he saw the cat, the usually ferocious Gu Dian ended up sitting on the ground in fright. His legs were so weak that he couldn’t even stand up. He just sat and crawled backward as though he was afraid that the cat would eat him… Don’t you think it’s funny… That kid usually looks quite manly. I never expected him to be so

timid…” Li Xuan didn’t notice Zhou Wen’s odd expression when he spoke.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 508 - he Thearch“s Hin

508 The Thearch“s Hin

After Li Xuan left, Zhou Wen went online to investigate the news regarding the black cube. As the matter was huge news, and the cubes had appeared in many places, it was impossible to completely conceal the matter. Therefore, many places did an exposé. There were also many clear pictures of it.

One could not tell anything from the pictures. It was just a black cube.

What exactly is this? I wonder if The Thearch knows what it is? Zhou Wen was considering how to ask The Thearch when he suddenly received a message from her.

“Did a black cube appear in the place where you are now?”

Zhou Wen hurriedly replied when he saw The Thearch mention this matter herself. “Yes, a lot of them suddenly appeared in the world. I wonder what it is?”

“If I were you, I would take my Mythical Companion Beasts to the cube,” The Thearch replied.

“How can I have Mythical Companion Beasts?” Zhou Wen denied.

“What’s on your ear? Don’t tell me that’s an earring you bought online,” The Thearch said.

“What do I do with the Mythical Companion Beast there? What is that black cube?” Zhou Wen never expected The Thearch to recognize Truth Listener. However, he wasn’t surprised. He was only curious. The Thearch clearly knew what the black cube was.

“I don’t wish to tell you what it is, but as long as you take a Mythical Companion Beast over, there will definitely be benefits. Do you dare to go?” Before long, The Thearch sent a message.

Zhou Wen frowned when he saw that. He didn’t know what The Thearch was up to. He didn’t trust The Thearch at all, afraid that she would scheme against him.

“The six families have already taken their Mythical Companion Beasts over, but they didn’t receive any benefits.” Zhou Wen replied without saying if he wanted to go.

“How can those ordinary people know of its benefits? With my guidance, naturally, it’ll be different.”

The Thearch immediately sent another message. “After you find the black cube, take a Mythical Companion Beast to the top of it. In the middle of the cube, there’s a circular dot. Get your Mythical Companion Beast to stand there and release all its Essence Energy and send it inside the dot. Remember, it can only be a Mythical Companion Beast. Essence Energy must be injected into the dot, or you will bear the consequences.”

“What will happen after the cube is opened?” Zhou Wen asked.

“Why don’t you give it a try yourself? If you don’t have the guts, just wait for others to activate the cube. After all, if you

don’t take the huge benefits, there are plenty of people who will.” The Thearch gave one final reply before she ignored Zhou Wen.

Zhou Wen was immediately put in a difficult spot. The Thearch was clearly teasing him. She deliberately didn’t mention what the black cube was to make him feel conflicted.

This really makes me doubt life. You underestimate me too much. Zhou Wen packed his things and planned on taking a look at the black cube.

Zhou Wen planned on using his phone to take a picture. The black cube was definitely something from a different dimension. Perhaps the mysterious phone would react to it. It wouldn’t be too late to decide if he should try using The Thearch’s method.

Zhou Wen didn’t dare go out in the open. He took advantage of the night to sneak to the spot where he discovered the black cube. There was an army stationed there, but it was mainly to prevent any anomalies from happening to the black cube. They didn’t forbid humans from approaching, so it wasn’t difficult to get close.

Zhou Wen arrived at the roof of a nearby building which was already very close to the black cube. Standing at the edge of the building, he was only about ten meters away from the corner of the black cube.

Although it was night time, with Zhou Wen’s eyesight, he could see it clearly, but he couldn’t tell what material it was. It didn’t look like metal or stone, nor did it look like a horn or bone. Instead, it looked like some man-made material.

What is this? I hope the mysterious phone can divulge something. Zhou Wen held the mysterious phone and aimed it at the black cube.

However, it left Zhou Wen somewhat disappointed. The mysterious phone didn’t do a thing or lock-on to it. It clearly wasn’t interested in the black cube.

Zhou Wen was put in a difficult spot. The Thearch had said that there were great benefits, but what if she was lying to him? If he really did as The Thearch said, it would be bad if he released a few demon monarch-level dimensional creatures.

However, after careful thought, Zhou Wen felt that The Thearch didn’t seem to have any reason to do so.

If The Thearch really wanted to mess with him, she could just make a wish. There was no need to go through so much trouble to trick him into coming here.

Furthermore, he had not sent the things that the Thearch had asked him to buy. If he were to release a few terrifying creatures and ended up dying, who would deliver the items to her?

Although The Thearch said it so easily as though she could find someone to deliver things to her at any time, how many humans dared to go to Chess Mountain? There were even fewer who dared to enter Chess Mountain to take the Void Flower. Zhou Wen suspected that there was only one pot of Void Flower in Chess Mountain.

After some thought, he believed that The Thearch wouldn’t let him die so easily so he decided to give it a try.

Zhou Wen was already prepared. He wore the most ordinary heavy armor of the Runic Heavy-Armored Warrior. The armor could envelop his entire body. Furthermore, it was rather common in the Peninsula of Gods. Even if he was discovered, it wouldn’t be easy to find out who he was.

The garrison troops were all around the cube, and there wasn’t anyone above. Taking advantage of the darkness, Zhou Wen pushed Ghost Steps to the extreme. He traversed more than ten meters like black smoke and landed on the black cube without anyone noticing.

After stepping onto the black cube, nothing abnormal happened. Only then did Zhou Wen heave a sigh of relief and silently walk towards the center.

At the center, Zhou Wen indeed discovered the circle The Thearch mentioned.

The black cube was about fifty meters in length, but the circle was only the size of a palm. Furthermore, it was only a shallow round mark. If Zhou Wen didn’t know that it was useful, he wouldn’t have noticed it.

Which Mythical Companion Beast should I use to give it a try? Zhou Wen thought to himself.

Excluding Tyrant Behemoth who was evolving, Zhou Wen still had four Mythical pets—Truth Listener, Banana Fairy, Demonic Neonate, and Six-Winged.

However, the first three hadn’t reached the Mythical stage yet. The real Mythical stage was Six-Winged.

After sizing up his surroundings, and seeing that there wasn’t anyone above him, he believed that even if he

summoned Six-Winged, no one would see him. Zhou Wen decided to summon Six-Winged.

After all, if anything were to happen, Six-Winged was at the Mythical stage. It should be able to deal with the problem, but Truth Listener and Banana Fairy might be instantly killed.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 509 - Famous in the Federation

Chapter 509 Famous in the Federation

When Six-Winged was summoned by Zhou Wen. Its huge body stood on the cube, but it wasn’t too obvious. However, its claws were a little too big. Its claws covered the tiny circle completely when pressed against it. As it was several times bigger than the circle, Zhou Wen didn’t know if this would work.

“I’ll give it a try.” Zhou Wen was very careful. He didn’t let the six-winged dragon immediately attempt it. He only made it stand there and left. He returned to the top of the building beside him before letting the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon inject its Essence Energy into the circle.

If anything were to happen, he could immediately retrieve the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon and escape.

Although he felt that it was unlikely that The Thearch would harm him, he still had to be careful.

The Six-Winged Guardian Dragon followed Zhou Wen’s orders and pressed its paw on the circle, injecting its Essence Energy into it.

Although Zhou Wen was mentally prepared, he was still alarmed the moment the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon injected Essence Energy.

The entire black cube instantly lit up, illuminating the surroundings. Zhou Wen was alarmed. He wanted to retrieve the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon, but he realized that the

Six-Winged Guardian Dragon seemed to have been sucked into the black cube, preventing him from retrieving it.

Zhou Wen’s expression changed drastically when he saw the black cube’s situation.

It was no longer a black cube. It was like a huge six-sided screen. The four sides of the screen were glowing brightly, resembling liquid crystal displays. There were even images on it.

The images weren’t anything else but the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon that was standing on the cube. Furthermore, it was the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon after it released its Life Soul.

One could imagine the scene. The four sides of the screen were all 50 meters long and were many times clearer than any 4K high-definition screen. Even the tiny dark lines on the scales of the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon could be seen clearly.

The fifty-meter-tall screen could be seen more than ten kilometers away. Anyone who had not slept and was outside could see the image on the cube from all directions.

Furthermore, the top of the cube was also glowing brightly, illuminating the Six-Winged Dragon like a statue. It would be impossible not to see it.

Now, Zhou Wen was secretly glad that he wasn’t standing on top. Otherwise, he would really be famous.

The military was alarmed, likewise for the reporters and gossip mongers. Phones rang everywhere. In just two to three minutes, the quiet night suddenly became lively.

People rushed to the streets, or ran to the high buildings and looked in the direction of the cube.

“Dear viewers… Dear viewers… This is News Today. I’m Reporter Xiaojing. I’m putting my life at risk going live here at the black cube which appeared a few days ago. Just a minute ago, it suddenly lit up. We can see that the side of the cube has become an ultra-high-definition big screen. And on the cube, there’s a terrifying dimensional creature. It looks like it’s a legendary dragon from the West District. Furthermore, it has six wings, and its body is burning with terrifying black flames. It’s very likely to have escaped from the cube. Will such a terrifying creature bring great disaster to our city…”

The Thearch tricked me again! Zhou Wen was somewhat dumbfounded. He had been trying to retrieve the six-winged dragon, but he couldn’t.

The army had already started advancing, and the sound of police sirens could be heard everywhere. Clearly, they were rushing over.

Now, Six-Winged Guardian Dragon is completely famous. I’m afraid that everyone in Luoyang knows about it! Zhou Wen attempted to retrieve the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon time and time again, but he failed.

Unfortunately, Zhou Wen thought about things too simply. It wasn’t just known by everyone in Luoyang. In fact, the moment the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon activated the black cube, the black cubes around the world lit up and displayed the projection of the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon.

The high-level officials and ordinary people in the various cities of the Federation all looked at the magnificent Six-

Winged Guardian Dragon from every angle.

Even those who didn’t see the cube’s screen with their own eyes would have definitely seen all kinds of headlines. Without a doubt, the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon and the cube made the headlines at the same time. It just took a few minutes.

Everyone in the world now knew that there was such a Six-Winged Guardian Dragon.

Just as Zhou Wen was feeling anxious, he saw the cube’s screen change again. The projection of the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon vanished, turning into a ranking with a ranking of 1 to 100.

However, the other rankings were all empty. Only the name of the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon appeared at first place. It gave off a feeling of invincibility.

Everyone in the Federation looked at the lone name on the cube. No one knew what was happening or what it represented.

What the hell is this? Zhou Wen was equally puzzled, but he saw that the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon’s body seemed to have undergone some minute changes amidst the light.

After three minutes, the military and media helicopters rushed over and the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon’s glow disappeared.

Zhou Wen, who had been trying to retrieve the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon, finally managed to retrieve it. The Six-Winged Guardian Dragon vanished, and the radiant cube dimmed, turning pure black again.

Zhou Wen didn’t hesitate any further as he escaped stealthily.

Now, Luoyang was in chaos. People were everywhere on the streets and upstairs. All sorts of vehicles and helicopters were everywhere, but no one noticed Zhou Wen.

When Zhou Wen left, he saw the car An Sheng usually drove. Clearly, he had rushed over as well, but he didn’t know if An Tianzuo was sitting inside.

Beep! Beep! Beep! Beep!

Zhou Wen was on his way back when he heard a message from his phone. He opened it and saw that it was from The Thearch.

“I never expected you to have a real Mythical Companion Beast. I’ve underestimated you. Not bad, not bad.”

“That’s not my Companion Beast.” Zhou Wen held back his frustration and denied.

The Thearch did not seem to believe him at all. She sent another message. “I didn’t lie to you. Take a closer look at your Six-Winged Guardian Dragon and see if it has changed. There will be a surprise.”

“I already said that it’s not my Companion Beast.” Zhou Wen was slightly taken aback when he heard that. He sent a message to The Thearch before taking out his mysterious phone to check the information on the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon.

With a single glance, he discovered that the information on the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon had indeed undergone a

huge change. He took a closer look at the data and was pleasantly surprised.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 510 - Life Protection

Chapter 510 Life Protection

Six-Winged Guardian Dragon: Mythical

Life Providence: Life Guardian Dragon

Life Soul: Wings of Black Flame

Wheel of Destiny: The Last Life Guardian

Strength: 80

Speed: 80

Constitution: 80

Essence Energy: 80

Talent Skill: Sanctification, Poison Breath, Dragon’s Rage, Hell Demonic Flame, Six Wing Slash.

Companion Form: Holy Flaming Dragon Wings

Zhou Wen remembered that the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon’s stats were around 60, but now, all of them had become 80. According to the advancement of his Companion Beasts, the top Mythical creatures likely had 81 stat points. Now that the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon’s stats had reached 80, it could be considered top-notch.

The Life Providence and Wheel of Destiny had slight changes. He had no idea what the word “life” meant, but he believed that it couldn’t be a bad thing.

It gained an additional Sanctification skill, making it have five skills. It was an obvious upgrade. The Demonic Flaming Dragon Wings had been upgraded into Holy Flaming Dragon Wings as well.

“How is it? Are you surprised?” The Thearch sent another message.

Seeing that The Thearch had already determined that the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon was his Companion Beast, he tacitly acknowledged the truth. He asked, “Can a beast be strengthened as long as it’s recognized by the black cube?”

“Dream on. This is a reward for the first Companion Beast that enters the rankings. It happens only once. You lucked out big time.”

Soon, The Thearch sent another message. “However, your Six-Winged Dragon’s potential isn’t good. You should have just used that earring to receive the enhancement. It should have been able to advance to the Mythical stage directly.”

Zhou Wen didn’t regret not listening to The Thearch. Truth Listener’s advancement to the Mythical stage was indeed good, but Truth Listener was more inclined towards support abilities. What Zhou Wen needed now was actual combat strength.

After the enhancement of the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon, its strength would likely increase significantly. It could play a bigger role when fighting Torch Dragon, boosting Zhou Wen’s chances of killing Torch Dragon.

Zhou Wen’s phone rang again, but this time, it wasn’t The Thearch, but a call from An Sheng.

An Sheng and Zhou Wen killed the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon together. He also knew that Zhou Wen had lured Medusa to fight the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon; therefore, he immediately guessed that the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon was Zhou Wen’s.

“Young Master Wen, what was the situation with the black cube?” An Sheng didn’t beat about the bush with Zhou Wen and directly got straight to the point.

Zhou Wen recounted what he knew, but he skipped the matter regarding The Thearch.

“You mean to say that the cube is actually a ranking for Companion Beasts?” An Sheng thought and asked after hearing that.

“From the looks of it, it’s true. However, we can’t rule out the possibility that there’s something else in the black cube. Otherwise, the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon wouldn’t have been strengthened,” Zhou Wen said.

However, An Sheng’s tone became much more relaxed. “That’s good then. The Overseer has been constantly worried about the cube. From the looks of it, it shouldn’t pose a threat any time soon.”

“By the way, congratulations Young Master Wen. You are now the third person in Luoyang to possess a Mythical creature.” An Sheng sighed. “Back when you first came to Luoyang, you were only at the Mortal stage. In less than a year, you even have a Mythical Companion Beast. In terms of speed, even the geniuses of the six families aren’t as fast as you.”

“Who are the other two?” Zhou Wen asked.

“Naturally, it’s Chancellor Leng and the Overseer. If they weren’t here, how could the An family of Luoyang continue standing, to the point of the six families fearing them?” An Sheng said with a smile.

Zhou Wen didn’t ask what their Companion Beasts were. They were the secrets and trump cards of everyone.

After returning to his dorm, Zhou Wen couldn’t wait to summon the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon in its companion form. Six fiery dragon wings appeared behind him, but they weren’t black anymore. Instead, they were pure white. They looked much prettier, but he didn’t know if there were any changes to their effects.

After dispelling the dragon wings, Zhou Wen took out his phone and entered the Zhuolu instance dungeon. He wanted to try and see if the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon could fight Qiongqi.

Torch Dragon had Bright Torch Vision World which ignored strength and speed. However, Qiongqi was a dimensional creature that relied on strength and speed. Now that the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon’s prowess had greatly increased, it might perhaps put up a fight with Qiongqi.

Taking the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon to the temple where Qiongqi was, the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon’s originally black body and wings turned white once it saw Qiongqi. It became a white dragon, a likely manifestation of its additional Sanctification skill.

Even though the Six-Winged Dragon was in its Sanctification state, its speed and strength were still inferior to Qiongqi’s. However, it could still barely put up a fight. It was unlike

before when it was completely thrashed with no ability to resist at all.

The stronger the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon was, the more Zhou Wen realized how terrifying Qiongqi was. Such a powerful Six-Winged Guardian Dragon was actually suppressed by Qiongqi.

The Six-Winged Guardian Dragon was barely able to put up a fight and didn't die instantaneously. However, the blood-colored avatar wasn't that lucky. With Qiongqi suddenly attacking it, Zhou Wen controlled the blood-colored avatar to dodge twice before it was smacked to death by Qiongqi's claw.

Something strange happened. The blood-colored avatar was clearly hit, but it didn't die. Instead, the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon's body suddenly exploded as it died for no reason.

With the death of the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon, the blood-colored avatar couldn't last much longer before being killed by Qiongqi.

Could it be that The Last Life Guardian is the miraculous ability to take the master's place in death? Zhou Wen guessed as he immediately restarted the dungeon and experimented a few more times.

Just as Zhou Wen had guessed, as long as the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon was still alive, it could help him withstand a single death. Furthermore, this ability could also be used even while it was in its dragon wings form.

This enhancement is just too good! Zhou Wen increasingly felt that his choice of doing the enhancement was right. This way, he would have an additional life. Even if he were to die

in the future, the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon could still protect him once. This was even more useful than any Mythical creature.

After all, he only had one life. No matter how many Mythical creatures he had, they would be useless once Zhou Wen died.

While Zhou Wen was studying the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon, the six families and some wealthy families were also studying the matter. People from the East and West District even began arguing.

As the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon had appeared in Luoyang, the people of the East District naturally believed that it belonged to an expert in the East District. However, the West District people said that the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon was clearly a Companion Beast of the West District, one that wasn't available in the East District, so the owner of the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon was definitely a West District citizen who happened to be passing by Luoyang.

The various large families were also guessing who the owner of the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon was. Their main suspects were naturally Leng Zongzheng and An Tianzuo.

However, after many probes and investigations, both of them denied it.

At the same time, the six families were not idle. They were all researching how the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon had appeared on the cube and what its purpose was.

"You mean that the Mythical Six-Winged Guardian Dragon is Zhou Wen's?" Inside the An family, An Tianzuo's expression changed when he heard An Sheng's report.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 511 - Fighting Torch Dragon Again

511 Fighting Torch Dragon Again

“Yes. Back then, Young Master Wen, Zhang Yuzhi, and I killed a Six-Winged Guardian Dragon together. However, it didn’t drop a Companion Egg. Later on, Young Master Wen lured Medusa to fight with the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon. The outcome resulted in a Companion Egg. Now that the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon has been strengthened, its combat strength should be considered high among Mythical creatures,” An Sheng said.

“That’s not necessarily the case. Wild Mythical Companion Beasts are ultimately inferior to those you nurture,” said An Tianzuo.

An Sheng didn’t refute him and only said with a smile, “Overseer, you are right. However, no matter what, that’s a powerful Mythical creature. With it being Young Master Wen’s, he can be considered a cornerstone of our Luoyang City.”

“When did you degenerate to the point of relying on a student? When did our Luoyang City degenerate to the point of relying on a student as a cornerstone?” An Tianzuo glared at An Sheng.

“There’s nothing I can do about that. I also want to be a cornerstone, but I don’t have a Mythical pet,” An Sheng said as he threw up his hands.

“What’s the rush? Isn’t our plan at White Cloud Mountain underway?” An Tianzuo said.

An Sheng replied, “We still don’t know if we can kill that Mythical creature on White Cloud Mountain. Even if we can kill it, it might not drop a Companion Egg. You killed three or four Mythical creatures previously, but none of them dropped a Companion Egg.”

“That’s because we were unlucky. The chance of Mythical Creatures dropping Companion Eggs is about a third. It should drop one this time.” An Tianzuo glared at him and continued, “In short, we used to rely on ourselves. We rely on ourselves now. It will be the same in the future. Don’t place your hopes on others.”

“Yes, Overseer.” An Sheng paused before asking, “What if Young Master Wen wants to go to Zhuolu? Should I stop him?”

“Does he have the guts? The Mythical creatures at Zhuolu are not something ordinary Mythical Companion Beasts can match. I don’t think he has the guts to go. To obtain a Six-Winged Guardian Dragon is only his luck. Do you really expect him to kill Mythical creatures?” said An Tianzuo.

Zhou Wen was reading the news in his dorm. Many of the media outlets he saw on his phone listed the appearance of the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon and the cube’s rankings as the headlines.

The entire Federation probably knew about the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon by now.

I wonder what use is a Companion Beast’s ranking? Zhou Wen thought to himself.

The Thearch didn’t mention what the ranking was for, and Zhou Wen didn’t figure out what it could be used for. However, he believed that it wasn’t that simple.

Black cubes had appeared all over the world. Was such a huge formation just to create a useless ranking? Zhou Wen felt that the terrifying existences in the dimensional zones weren’t that bored. The ranking definitely had some use, but he didn’t know what it was yet.

Zhou Wen didn’t grind dungeons today. He was considering how he could kill Qiongqi or Torch Dragon. The Six-Winged Guardian Dragon could only just fight Qiongqi, but Zhou Wen wasn’t strong enough. He couldn’t dodge Qiongqi’s attack and instead became a burden. Every time Qiongqi killed the blood-colored avatar, it was useless no matter how strong the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon was.

If he wanted to kill Torch Dragon, he would have to get over the Bright Torch Vision World. The Six-Winged Guardian Dragon could already face Torch Dragon head-on, but it could not block the Bright Torch Vision World.

It’s still harder to kill Qiongqi. I can only continue to think of something regarding Torch Dragon. Zhou Wen thought for a long time before he came up with a method to kill Torch Dragon.

Torch Dragon’s speed was much slower than Qiongqi’s. After the strengthening of the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon, its speed had already surpassed Torch Dragon’s by a hair’s breadth. It was only because of Bright Torch Vision World that it could not defeat Torch Dragon.

The crystal mirror Zhou Wen had obtained could restrain Torch Dragon, but it was too small. At most, it could only block his face.

Furthermore, Torch Dragon’s eyes were too wide, as if they were growing on both sides. It was impossible to use the crystal mirror to block his vision. The size of the crystal mirror could only block one of its eyes at most.

After some thought, there was only one way to deal with Torch Dragon—that was to transform Six-Winged into dragon wings to boost Zhou Wen’s flying speed. Then, he could use his movement techniques and speed to dodge the Torch Dragon’s Bright Torch Vision World gaze, preventing it from seeing him.

Of course, it was impossible to completely dodge it. After all, no matter how fast Zhou Wen was, it was impossible for Torch Dragon to completely miss him.

However, with the crystal mirror, it shouldn’t be difficult to block one angle of its vision. In that case, it gave Zhou Wen enough space. However, it also required repeated experiments in combat. It wasn’t something he could do just by theorizing it. Plans were one thing, but there were often many problems when executing them. He needed to repeatedly test them.

Now, the last problem is how to kill Torch Dragon. After so many battles with Torch Dragon, Zhou Wen realized that its body was even more powerful than the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon’s. The Six-Winged Guardian Dragon’s attack could only damage its scales. A small number of attacks would not be of much use. The effects of Overlord Sword’s sword beam wasn’t too obvious.

After some thought, Zhou Wen decided to rely on the Poison Dragon Palm or Demonic Neonate’s ancient sword to sneak an attack on Torch Dragon.

After figuring out the steps to kill Torch Dragon, Zhou Wen entered the temple again. Before he went to Torch Dragon, he first put on the soft armor formed by the Epic Golden Warrior and the heavy armor formed by the Runic Heavy-Armored Warrior. The Six-Winged Guardian Dragon appeared behind him in the form of dragon wings.

He wore the Truth Listener earring on his ear, holding the Overlord Sword in one hand, and the banana fan in the other.

At the same time, he summoned Demonic Neonate and got her to lie on the blood-colored avatar's back. Her mission was to constantly search for an opportunity to launch a sneak attack.

Now, the blood-colored avatar was wearing heavy armor with black magma patterns. It had three pairs of holy dragon wings on its back. It had a huge sword in one hand and a banana fan in the other. It looked odd, but it also gave off a powerful feeling.

However, Demonic Neonate, who was lying on its back, instantly reduced that domineering and powerful feeling to only about thirty percent. In general, it felt like a powerful male nanny.

Taking a deep breath, Zhou Wen opened the temple and sent the blood-colored avatar charging in.

Torch Dragon immediately saw him and spat out a mouthful of black smoke. It churned towards the blood-colored avatar like a tidal wave.

After fanning the banana fan a few times, the Grand Yin Wind immediately sent the black smoke back. Without waiting for Torch Dragon to react, the six dragon wings on

the blood-colored avatar’s back flapped. Immediately, the blood-colored avatar’s body flashed behind Torch Dragon like a phantom and slashed at Torch Dragon’s neck domineeringly. The sword beam spun violently as it slashed at Torch Dragon like a wheel of light.

Torch Dragon’s reaction wasn’t slow either. It turned its head to look at the sword beam as a flame-like beam shot out from its eyes, shattering it. At the same time, a lash of its gigantic tail left behind afterimages as it struck the blood-colored avatar in midair. Its speed was unbelievable.

The dragon wings flapped as he moved in midair with Ghost Steps, dodging Torch Dragon’s tail attack. At the same time, Overlord Sword slashed out once again, slashing at Torch Dragon’s vital point.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 512 - The Thearch“s Treasure Trove

Chapter 512 The Thearch“s Treasure Trove

Zhou Wen’s figure flashed like a phantom as he dodged left and right. He kept slashing out sword beams, but they were all stopped by Torch Dragon. He ultimately failed to injure it.

Zhou Wen wasn’t in a rush. Instead, Torch Dragon was somewhat impatient. Its body emitted waves of energy that radiated through the entire palace, leaving Zhou Wen with no room to dodge.

Holding the Overlord Sword tightly, he unleashed Transcendent Flying Immortal in passing. Sword beams slashed violently and collided with the ripples as both sword beams and ripples shattered.

There were just too many ripples and Transcendent Flying Immortal couldn’t dispatch all of them. When the ripples struck Zhou Wen’s body, they immediately sent him flying as he slammed into a metal pillar in the palace.

Zhou Wen realized that there were many holes in his armor, but his body wasn’t injured. After the first layer of his heavy armor was penetrated by the ripples, the soft armor inside suffered some damage, but it wasn’t completely penetrated.

This armor and soft armor are indeed useful. Zhou Wen couldn’t help but be overjoyed. The hard and soft double armor was actually able to withstand Torch Dragon’s attack.

It only caused him to receive some shock damage. This was much better than he had expected.

When Torch Dragon saw that the blood-colored avatar wasn’t dead, its eyes immediately flashed. This was the precursor to using Bright Torch Vision World. Zhou Wen abruptly got to his feet and activated Ghost Steps once again. The six wings on his back flapped as he moved behind Torch Dragon.

Torch Dragon quickly turned its head and looked in Zhou Wen’s direction. Its eyes had already turned mirror-like.

No matter how fast Zhou Wen’s movement speed was, it wasn’t as fast as its head turning. It was as though Zhou Wen’s figure was about to be caught by the corner of its eye, when he threw the crystal mirror at Torch Dragon’s eye whilst moving.

He originally imagined that the crystal mirror could block Torch Dragon’s line of sight, but to his surprise, Torch Dragon’s cognitive abilities suddenly sped up. The crystal mirror’s trajectory immediately deviated from its eye. The blood-colored avatar was immediately reflected in its eye, and the game screen turned black.

Even the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon’s Life Guardian Protection was useless. The Six-Winged Guardian Dragon exploded first before the blood-colored avatar died.

Life Guardian Protection was only a transfer of damage. If Zhou Wen was injured, it would be transferred to it, but there was no way for him to leave the Bright Torch Vision World.

From the looks of it, I still need more practice to block Bright Torch Vision World. Zhou Wen wasn’t discouraged as he continued grinding by dripping his blood and respawning.

He had long expected that it was impossible to succeed in one attempt. It was unknown how many tens of thousands of failures scientists had to undergo before they could produce results. What Zhou Wen was doing was equivalent to experimenting. What he wanted wasn’t luck, but a hundred percent chance of killing Torch Dragon.

Without sufficient confidence, Zhou Wen wouldn’t go to the temple in reality. That would be harming himself and others.

Before fighting Torch Dragon, Zhou Wen would first grind the rare dimensional creatures—Sun Beast, Baby Tiger, Elegant Emperor’s Avatar Puppet, and so on. If a Companion Egg dropped, it would definitely be useful for future fusion.

Zhou Wen had a nagging feeling that if he could combine rare Life Providences, Life Souls, and skills together, he might be able to form a pet that was even crazier than a Mythical pet. However, the difficulty of fusion wasn’t any easier than having a Mythical pet drop. He would need countless attempts.

On the Dead Man Tree, the flower that Ják bloomed after his death finally withered and produced a tiny fruit. It was unknown how long it would take to ripen.

Tyrant Behemoth remained in evolution. It looked like it needed more time to evolve to the Mythical stage than it did when advancing to the Epic stage.

This fellow won’t really become as big as a mountain after advancing to the Mythical stage, right? Zhou Wen was secretly worried. If it was really that big, it wouldn’t be able to enter many dimensional zones.

Zhou Wen was still grinding dungeons one day when Li Xuan sent the items that he had previously requested. Apart

from one chemical, he had bought everything on the list.

There wasn’t much time left until The Thearch’s deadline. After Li Xuan left, Zhou Wen used the Void Flower to teleport the items over. Then, he sent The Thearch a message saying that the material she wanted wasn’t easy to obtain and couldn’t be bought in the nearby cities. If she really wanted it, she would have to wait for some time.

“A month should be enough, right? You must obtain that material.” The Thearch replied.

“I spent a lot of money buying materials. I’m almost running out of money.” Zhou Wen continued complaining. He wasn’t trying to extort her, but he was afraid that The Thearch would think that it was easy for him to obtain these items. That would only serve to her asking him for items every now and then. He didn’t have the time to buy things for her.

“Are you planning on turning into a cat again? The Skill Crystal I gave you is a Mythical Skill Crystal. There aren’t many of those amongst you humans, right? You only bought those few items and you are telling me that you have no money? Do you think I don’t know the price?” The Thearch’s message quickly returned.

Oh no! Zhou Wen still imagined that The Thearch was as easy to fool as before. He had forgotten that she could surf the Internet. She probably had a better understanding of humans than Zhou Wen himself.

“Although a Mythical Skill Crystal is precious, you know the situation of humans now. No one can use it, and there’s no way to price it. It’s really not easy to sell. The crystal is still in my hands. The money to buy these things came from my savings. I really don’t have much left.” Zhou Wen was

certain that he wasn’t wrong to say that there was no way to find the price of the Mythical Crystal online.

“That’s true. You humans are too weak and can’t use good stuff. But the worst things I have here are those. There’s no lower level trash.”

The Thearch’s reply nearly made Zhou Wen, who was drinking water, choke.

How many treasures are there in Chess Mountain? Mythic Essence Energy Skill Crystals are only trash? No, I have to think of a way to crack Chess Mountain in the future. Zhou Wen cursed inwardly.

After obtaining Six-Winged, Zhou Wen did indeed have the right to challenge Chess Mountain in the game. Now, he likely had the strength to deal with the fake fairy in Deer Terrace Pavilion, but there wasn’t just one fake fairy inside. If the six of them were to attack together, Zhou Wen didn’t know if he could handle them.

Now that he was focusing on Torch Dragon, he didn’t plan on going just now.

“If it’s not convenient for you to provide payment now, I’ll just sell everything I have. I’ll put it on the tab.” Zhou Wen sent a message.

“There’s no need. Aren’t you in the city not far from Chess Mountain? I’ll tell you a place. Go and look for it. You should be able to find something valuable.” The Thearch was clearly not as petty as Zhou Wen.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 513 - White Cloud Mountain

513 White Cloud Mountain

“Where is it? It can’t be inside Chess Mountain, right?” Zhou Wen asked warily.

If The Thearch wanted him to enter Chess Mountain in reality, Zhou Wen wouldn’t go no matter what. That place was a huge trap. Zhou Wen guessed that even if the six families took all their Mythical Companion Beasts with them, they might not be able to conquer it.

According to legend, Chaoge was a place with numerous mythical creatures in ancient times. No one knew if those Mythical creatures that had helped Chaoge fight in the war remained inside.

The Seven Saints of Mount Mei, the Four Generals of the Mo family, and so on were extremely terrifying existences even among Mythical creatures. Killing a dragon was too easy.

Zhou Wen guessed that if he encountered them, even with the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon, he would probably be killed instantly.

“Don’t worry. It’s not in Chess Mountain. I’ve seen your present map. That place is in Funiu Mountain. Now, it should be called White Cloud Mountain.” The Thearch seemed to have seen through Zhou Wen’s thoughts.

“White Cloud Mountain is also a dimensional zone, right?” Zhou Wen had heard of White Cloud Mountain before.

White Cloud Mountain and Mount Laojun were part of the Funiu Mountain range, but their positions were somewhat different. Also, the nature of the two was completely different.

Mount Laojun was safer. As long as one didn’t kill or step on any plants, one’s life wouldn’t be in danger.

However, White Cloud Mountain was different. Ever since it transformed into a dimensional zone, the mountain range had been enveloped by clouds. It was faintly discernible like a divine mountain.

Zhou Wen heard that only a few people who entered White Cloud Mountain were able to survive. Occasionally, there would be people who could survive, but they would die for no reason a few days later.

According to the people who came out alive, it was very difficult to tell their bearings inside White Cloud Mountain’s fog. Even companions that were inches away would disappear as they walked, never to be seen again alive. Not even their corpses were found.

According to them, they also saw an immortal palace on White Cloud Mountain. That immortal palace wasn’t built on the mountain, but in the clouds. Jade stones were the foundation, and golden stones were on top. There were fairies dancing in the air.

Without exception, those who saw the immortal palace all died in the end. No one survived. Furthermore, when they died, their faces were filled with joy.

Therefore, White Cloud Mountain was also nicknamed the Immortal Ascension Mountain. Anyone who went there

would have their lives taken away by an immortal, and they would ascend to the immortal palace to enjoy life.

Zhou Wen didn’t know if they managed to enjoy life, but he didn’t want to die.

“What valuable things can there be in a place that isn’t a dimensional zone? On a peak on the southeast of White Cloud Mountain, there’s a mysterious stone that looks like a rabbit. The good stuff is beneath that mysterious stone,” said The Thearch.

“I heard that White Cloud Mountain is really terrifying. Everyone who goes there dies. I’m afraid that I won’t be able to bring anything back alive,” Zhou Wen said.

“Anyway, I’ve already told you where the item is. It’s up to you whether you want to go or not. No matter whether you want to go or not, don’t tell me that you lack money in the future,” The Thearch said.

“Do you have a way to enter White Cloud Mountain?” Zhou Wen asked.

“Close your eyes and enter without looking at anything. That way, nothing will happen,” The Thearch said.

“But how can I find that mysterious rock with my eyes closed?” Zhou Wen asked.

“Is that thing on your ear just for show? Whether you want to go or not, don’t bother me. I’m busy,” The Thearch replied disdainfully.

Zhou Wen was depressed. The Thearch even knew Truth Listener’s ability. It looked like he couldn’t fool her.

Zhou Wen checked White Cloud Mountain's information online and found the place The Thearch had mentioned. That place was rather famous on White Cloud Mountain. When there wasn't any dimensionalization in the past, it was a scenic spot named Jade Rabbit's Lunar Prayer.

Legend had it that Jade Rabbit had descended to the mortal world and gone to White Cloud Mountain to have fun. Due to the stunning scenery at White Cloud Mountain, Jade Rabbit forgot the time and missed its opportunity to return to the Moon Palace. It could only watch helplessly as the moon rose from the east, with it never returning. Thus, Jade Rabbit laid on the mountain peak and prayed to the east day after day, hoping that the Moon Palace Fairy would come to take it back to the Moon Palace.

It was only a legend. After the dimensionalization, no one knew what it had become, nor was it known if the Moon Rabbit stone was still there.

The Thearch said that I'll be fine as long as I don't open my eyes. This is very beneficial to me. Zhou Wen considered visiting White Cloud Mountain.

The Thearch had casually produced a Mythical Essence Energy Skill Crystal. Zhou Wen felt that it definitely wasn't an ordinary item if it managed to catch her eye and let her remember it.

In any case, as he had nothing to do on campus, Zhou Wen decided to pay White Cloud Mountain a visit. After all, he could still game and grind dungeons along the way. It wouldn't affect anything.

The chick and antelope had to be placed in Wang Lu's care once again. Although Zhou Wen wanted Li Xuan to raise them, the fellow was cultivating so seriously that he far

exceeded Zhou Wen’s intensity. He had no time to take care of the two creatures.

As for taking them to White Cloud Mountain, that was impossible. If the chick were to open its eyes and see the immortal palace, it would be dead.

Zhou Wen was counting on it to become a fighter when it grew up. He couldn’t let it take the risk so easily.

“How did Little Feifei lose so much weight after you took care of it for two days? Did you torture it?” Wang Lu rolled her eyes at Zhou Wen when she saw the thin chick.

“How would I dare mistreat it? I serve delicious food and drinks all day long. It’s better than what I eat.” Zhou Wen actually found it odd.

The chick was magically thin. After making a trip to Mount Laojun, it lost weight the moment it returned. Zhou Wen suspected that the antelope was up to no good. Back when he was gaming in front of the Wordless Monument, the antelope had taken it to the top of Mount Laojun. It seemed to have lost weight after coming down. He had no idea what they did up there.

“You owe me a lot of lunches and dinners. If this continues, I’m afraid you won’t be able to pay me back even after I graduate.” Wang Lu seriously wrote down the foster care that Zhou Wen required from her in her diary so that she could settle scores with him.

“I’ll pay you back slowly. I’ll be able to pay it all back eventually.” Zhou Wen had no choice. The two of them were dimensional creatures. He was worried that they might cause trouble if he let any ordinary person rear them.

After returning to his dorm, Zhou Wen called An Sheng, asking him to help him apply for a leave of absence for a few days. If he left the school for a longer period of time, the procedures would be more complicated.

Although White Cloud Mountain wasn’t far away, he didn’t know when he would come out once he entered the dimensional zone.

“No problem. I’ll give you a pass. When you return, you can enter and leave the school freely. There’s no need to go to the trouble of applying for a leave of absence every time,” An Sheng said.

“There’s such a pass?” Zhou Wen was somewhat surprised.

“Generally, it’s for postgraduate students. According to the rules, ordinary university students aren’t allowed to have a pass. However, you are naturally an exception. By the way, Young Master Wen, where are you planning to go this time?” An Sheng asked.

“I want to visit White Cloud Mountain.” Zhou Wen and An Sheng had experienced life-and-death situations, so there was naturally no need to hide it.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 514 - Spatial Crystal

514 Spatial Crystal

“Why are you going to White Cloud Mountain?” An Sheng was somewhat surprised.

“I heard that the dimensional zone there is quite interesting. I would like to pay a visit.” Zhou Wen naturally couldn’t say that he was going there to dig for treasure after hearing what The Thearch had to say.

“White Cloud Mountain is too dangerous. We’ve already been stationed there for a few years, but we still haven’t been able to ascend the Jade Emperor Peak. If you really want to go to White Cloud Mountain, you have to remember that you mustn’t open your eyes after entering. Otherwise, once you see a mirage like the immortal palace, even a Mythical Companion Beast might not be able to save you,” An Sheng said solemnly.

“Why can’t I open my eyes?” Zhou Wen already knew of this taboo, but he never expected An Sheng and company to know about it.

“I don’t know. It’s just like Small Buddha Temple. They have all kinds of unreasonable things. As long as you open your eyes and see it, you will definitely die. There’s no reason at all.”

An Sheng paused for a moment before saying, “You must not go to Jade Emperor Peak either. Even if you close your eyes,

you will still be injured by the strange forbidden power there. There will be no way out.”

“I understand. I’m just paying a visit. I might not even enter the mountain.” Zhou Wen asked for more details before realizing that An Sheng and company had a deep understanding of White Cloud Mountain. Apart from Jade Emperor Peak, they had basically figured everything out.

Zhou Wen knew that sacrifices were inevitable to gain such a deep understanding of White Cloud Mountain. They weren’t like Zhou Wen, who had the mysterious phone to explore without any scruples. Even if they were all Epic experts, the strangeness of the dimensional zones was impossible to guard against. Once an unforeseen accident happened, Epic experts would easily die as well.

Zhou Wen planned on taking a look first. If he could find the tiny palm symbol, he wouldn’t go up the mountain first. He could download White Cloud Mountain with the tiny palm symbol and use his phone to figure it out before heading up.

With that said, Zhou Wen hesitated for a moment before asking, “How’s the progress on Zhuolu?”

“I knew that you would definitely have your sights on it after you obtained the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon. I can tell you with complete certainty that you can only die if you take the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon there.” An Sheng told Zhou Wen some of the things they had recently discovered.

The experts were actually able to determine that the Mythical creatures in the temple were Torch Dragon and Qiongqi. This surprised Zhou Wen.

However, they could only determine their names. They had no means of conquering the temple. Their understanding of

Torch Dragon and Qiongqi was far inferior to Zhou Wen's. They couldn't even figure out what abilities Torch Dragon and Qiongqi had.

From the looks of it, I can only rely on myself on this trip to the temple, Zhou Wen thought.

"Since you want to go to White Cloud Mountain, wait another two days. I'll be going to White Cloud Mountain then. I'll take you along," An Sheng said.

Zhou Wen wasn't in a hurry to go. He felt that going with An Sheng was a good idea. After all, they had already explored the Jade Rabbit's Lunar Prayer. If he couldn't find the tiny palm symbol, it would be better for An Sheng to take him up. It was much better than him going up alone and running around blindly.

After making the arrangements with An Sheng, the two ended the call. Zhou Wen picked up his phone and continued grinding the dungeons. They were leaving in two days, so he couldn't be bothered to collect the chick and antelope. After all, they were happy to be with Wang Lu. The food and drinks there were better than with Zhou Wen.

After repeatedly grinding dungeons, Zhou Wen killed a large number of Musical Note Sprites. Now, there were more than a thousand of the seven different Musical Note Sprites. When summoned together, and under the command of the Golden Harp, the sound waves produced from their combined attacks could break through the defenses of the Runic Heavy-Armored Warrior, but they were still far from being able to fight a Mythical creature.

Zhou Wen estimated that he needed at least tens of thousands of Musical Note Sprites. Only then could the

sound wave attacks produced be comparable to the strengthened Six-Winged.

Zhou Wen wasn’t in a hurry. After all, he was here to grind the Sun Beast, so he could also grind the Musical Note Sprites along the way. He obtained a few Musical Note Sprite Companion Eggs on each trip.

Unfortunately, in the Music Temple, the Goldfish didn’t have the Luck attribute, so he could only have his Luck boosted by the baby tiger.

As usual, Zhou Wen came to the musical fountain square. To his surprise, he saw the Golden Harp again.

He had been to the musical fountain square many times, but apart from the first time, he hadn’t discovered the Golden Harp. Zhou Wen imagined that the Golden Harp wouldn’t appear again, so he was quite surprised to see it again.

Zhou Wen was overjoyed. He immediately ordered the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon to charge forward. The Golden Harp used its powers to make the hundred thousand Musical Note Sprites release a sonic wave, forming a huge sound blast.

However, the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon was no longer the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon from before. It unleashed its full strength. Its six wings appeared at the same time and its body turned white. Its body forcefully broke through the sound blast and arrived in front of the Golden Harp. With a single slap, it shattered the Golden Harp.

Six-Winged has indeed become much stronger. Zhou Wen wasn’t very happy. Even with more than a hundred thousand Musical Note Sprites joining forces, they couldn’t stop the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon. If he wanted to form the army

of the Musical Note Sprites, he would probably have to obtain at least hundreds of thousands of them before they could play a decisive role in the battle with Mythical creatures.

The Golden Harp didn’t drop a Companion Egg, but a rare spatial stat crystal appeared. It had a Space attribute +3.

This added another rare attribute to Zhou Wen. It was just that three points were not enough.

In the next two days, Zhou Wen spent two days grinding dungeons at home. He had obtained quite a lot of Runic Heavy-Armored Warrior and Golden Warriors, but the Companion Eggs of the baby tiger and the Elegant Emperor’s Avatar Puppet never dropped.

Zhou Wen could understand that it was rare for the baby tiger’s Companion Egg to drop, but he never expected the Elegant Emperor’s Avatar Puppet Companion Egg to be that difficult as well. Furthermore, skill crystals seldom dropped as well.

Apart from Zhou Wen obtaining the Substitute Talisman Skill for the first time, no other skill crystal dropped.

Early in the morning, An Sheng called to inform Zhou Wen that they would be heading to White Cloud Mountain. Zhou Wen packed his things, including the Substitute Talisman he had drawn.

When he arrived outside the school and saw An Sheng’s car, he walked to the window and realized that An Tianzuo was sitting in the back seat. He couldn’t help but be slightly taken aback.

Why didn’t Ah Sheng tell me that An Tianzuo would be coming? Zhou Wen found it a little odd, but he couldn’t say anything. All he could do was open the door to the front passenger seat and get in.

Zhou Wen had sat in this car many times in the past, but today, he found it odd. The atmosphere in the car just wasn’t right.

An Tianzuo’s eyes were somewhat odd as well. Clearly, he didn’t know that Zhou Wen was going to White Cloud Mountain as well.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 515 - Birth of the Game

Chapter 515 Birth of the Game

“Young Master Wen, we are going to White Cloud Mountain’s Red Birch Forest to hunt a Mythical creature. Are you interested in joining us?” An Sheng asked as he drove.

“Hunt a Mythical creature?” Zhou Wen was somewhat surprised. This was the first time he had heard of anyone hunting Mythical creatures.

An Sheng said, “That’s right. There’s a strange Mythical creature in Red Birch Forest. We’ve been investigating it for several years. We’ve already done most of the groundwork. We are quite confident this time. Since you’re going to White Cloud Mountain, why don’t you join us? Take it as gaining some experience.”

“I’m fine with that.” Zhou Wen trusted An Sheng very much.

After all, they were hunting Mythical creatures in real life. It was more dangerous, so they would definitely have done more preparatory work. They definitely wouldn’t risk their lives.

Furthermore, even An Tianzuo was taking action this time, so there shouldn’t be much of a problem.

However, Zhou Wen didn’t wish to have too much contact with An Tianzuo. He felt that he and An Tianzuo weren’t the

same types of people.

An Sheng continued, “I still don’t know what that Mythical creature in Red Birch Forest is called. We named it Love Letter. It’s rather interesting. Overseer said that if a Companion Egg drops this time, it will belong to me. Perhaps, I will have a Mythical Companion Beast in the future.”

“Love letter? How can there be such a name?” Zhou Wen was somewhat astonished.

“There’s a story behind it. Legend has it that the bark of the red birch tree is very thin and easily removed. Furthermore, it’s very beautiful. Some people will use the bark of the red birch tree to write love letters to their lover. Although the dimensional creature in Red Birch Forest doesn’t look like a book, the skills it uses are related to words. It’s rather difficult to deal with. It’s unknown how many Companion Beasts have died in Red Birch Forest in the past few years just to roughly understand its various skills…”

An Sheng explained quite a bit of the Mythical creature’s abilities before saying, “However, even if we know its abilities, it’s impossible to kill a Mythical creature without the same powers at the Mythical stage. Therefore, Overseer has to personally take action this time. Otherwise, I won’t be able to handle it myself. If you go with me, I’ll be even more at ease. It’s a good thing that both experts from Luoyang will be helping me kill a dimensional creature.”

Zhou Wen really didn’t wish to have any nice stories of him and An Tianzuo, but he couldn’t say anything uncultured. All he could do was remain silent.

“The mountain road is dangerous. Drive carefully,” An Tianzuo, who was sitting behind with his eyes closed, said

coldly.

“Yes,” An Sheng replied. Indeed, he didn’t dare say another word. He secretly winked at Zhou Wen before focusing on driving.

Zhou Wen had no interest in speaking. Just as he was about to close his eyes to rest, he suddenly heard his phone ring.

Seeing that it was Huang Ji who called, Zhou Wen answered the call.

“Zhou Wen, our game is done.” Huang Ji’s excited voice sounded. Even An Sheng and An Tianzuo heard it.

After the trial run the previous time, Zhou Wen didn’t have much anticipation for Huang Ji’s game. However, he still acted interested and said, “That’s great. Can you send me a copy? I can’t wait to try it.”

“Of course. I’ve already posted it online to begin the closed beta test. Go download this website and give me some suggestions after you’re done playing.” Huang Ji quickly sent a website address to Zhou Wen.

Zhou Wen opened the page and saw that it was a gaming website. It was filled with closed and open beta games. Their game was called “Dimension.” Zhou Wen saw the game at the top.

It was not because Huang Ji spent money that pushed his ranking so high, but because Huang Ji had just uploaded it. That made it appear at the top.

Zhou Wen hurriedly downloaded the game. Thankfully, this wasn’t a dimensional zone, or there might not be a signal.

They had just arrived in the suburbs, so the signal was pretty good.

After a while, Zhou Wen finished downloading the game and launched it. He realized that although the login interface was very simple, it wasn’t bad. It looked rather good.

After entering the game, Zhou Wen chose Tiger Cage Pass which was the only option. When he entered the game, he couldn’t help but be surprised.

He had originally thought that the game Huang Ji had created was the standard 2D side-scrolling game. But now, it was completely different from when he trialed it.

Even though it was a 2D side-scrolling game, both the NPCs and the details of the scenery had greatly improved. However, there were only two choices for characters—man or woman. After choosing a man, there was no skill selection interface like before. Instead, he entered a game tutorial interface.

The tutorial introduced the game’s operations and skill usage. Apart from the direction key, there were also five buttons in-game. Then, the direction key and the other five buttons could be used in different key combinations for different skills. There were ten skills available in-game. After remembering the method to deliver an attack, he could use the skills he needed.

It’s done pretty well! Zhou Wen was pleasantly surprised. He tried the maneuvering, and it was surprisingly fluid. It was similar to the popular fighting games in the past. The controls and feedback were a rather good experience.

After entering the game, Tiger Cage Pass became a black-and-white ink style. Demonic Soldiers were the same style as

well. It looked surprisingly immersive. Zhou Wen controlled the game character to kill the Demonic Soldiers in Tiger Cage Pass and discovered that the various techniques and attacks of Demonic Soldiers were very similar to real ones. They were much more agile than when he tried the alpha. There was some difficulty.

This… It's really not bad… Zhou Wen played for a while before becoming more and more surprised. This was far from what he had imagined. It was surprisingly good.

Although playing games might not necessarily mean one could kill Demonized Soldiers, one could familiarize themselves with the various means of attack by the Demonized Soldiers in-game. They could learn how to deal with them when encountering them in real life. To rookies who had not entered Tiger Cage Pass, it was quite helpful. It was much better than learning from videos.

Zhou Wen stormed through the game and killed quite a number of Demonized Soldiers. The controls weren't a problem for him. He only took a brief look at them before he was able to cast all sorts of skills smoothly. Killing Demonized Soldiers was very easy.

Soon, Zhou Wen discovered the mini-boss, Demonized General. After engaging in an intense battle with the Demonized General, he found the game pretty good. The Demonized General's behavior and skills were replicated very well, similar to the real Demonized General.

Zhou Wen gamed the entire time. Behind him, An Tianzuo had been resting with his eyes closed. When he heard Zhou Wen gaming, he couldn't help but open his eyes and frown.

An Tianzuo clearly didn't like Zhou Wen playing games all day. From his point of view, this was a form of obsession.

An Sheng was an extremely clever person. When he saw An Tianzuo frown through the rearview mirror, he knew that things were bad. Hence, he said, “Young Master Wen, I heard that you and your classmates worked together to create a game that can be used to teach people about the various abilities of dimensional creatures. Is that it?”

“Yes, production was just completed. It’s my first time playing the closed beta. Currently, there’s only a Tiger Cage Pass dungeon. In-game, there are Demonized Soldiers and Demonized Generals as monsters and one can learn their behaviors and various skills through gaming. Through learning about how to deal with them in-game, it will be useful in real life, but games are games after all; one still needs to practice the combination of various skills in combat,” Zhou Wen introduced.

“That’s pretty good. Overseer, why don’t you play the game that Zhou Wen and company created? If it’s feasible, it’ll be helpful in understanding dimensional creatures. Perhaps it can be promoted,” An Sheng said.

“A game is just a game after all. If you have the time to play games, why don’t you just spend time watching a video about it?” An Tianzuo closed his eyes again and continued resting.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 516 - Blood Text Scorpion

Chapter 516 Blood Text Scorpion

After arriving at White Cloud Mountain’s encampment, the person-in-charge took An Tianzuo, An Sheng, and Zhou Wen to White Cloud Mountain. An Tianzuo didn’t have much time, so he had to rush back regardless of whether they killed the Mythical creature today.

Zhou Wen looked at White Cloud Mountain from afar and saw clouds lingering over it. The mountain was partially visible. It was indeed like a legendary immortal mountain.

There were many red birch forests. The Mythical creature was at the foot of White Cloud Mountain, so there was no need to ascend the mountain.

However, it was also within the range of Baiyun Mountain. There was also a chance to see the unusual sight of the immortal palace in the clouds.

“If we continue moving forward, we might end up in an immortal palace illusion. Put this on.” An Sheng handed Zhou Wen a balaclava.

The balaclava was made of chemical fibers mixed with metal wires. After wearing it, it wouldn’t affect one’s breathing, but one’s vision was blocked and it was impossible to see anything outside.

“No matter what you hear or what happens, make sure not to take off the balaclava.” An Sheng put his balaclava on after giving Zhou Wen the rules.

An Tianzuo and the officers from the other encampments also wore balaclavas. They had their own methods. Some relied on their special Companion Beasts for visual, while some relied on their hearing. Some rode their mounts directly, allowing them to replace their eyes.

An Sheng summoned a strange Companion Beast. The Companion Beast looked like a large eye with wings. It flew beside An Sheng and seemingly allowed him to see his surroundings. It was no different from normal.

As for An Tianzuo, he didn’t summon a Companion Beast, nor was it clear what he had used. However, the balaclava didn’t seem to affect his vision. He still moved as freely.

Zhou Wen had Truth Listener, so he wasn’t affected.

The group followed an officer riding a Companion Beast into the depths of the red birch Forest.

White Cloud Mountain was mysterious, but there weren’t many dimensional creatures here. However, every dimensional creature that appeared here was extremely terrifying. At the very least, they were Epic creatures.

Rumor had it that the red birch forest was very beautiful, but since Zhou Wen could only listen and not see color, he did not think it looked beautiful.

“Overseer, the Earth Listener Beast has reacted. Love Letter should be somewhere not far ahead,” an officer riding on a Companion Beast suddenly said.

“Prepare for battle.” An Tianzuo gave the order.

Apart from Zhou Wen, everyone began preparing for battle. After advancing for a short while, Zhou Wen heard a dimensional creature appear in front of him.

The dimensional creature looked very strange. It looked like a large scorpion, but it had transparent wings on its back. It was huge and longer than an adult’s height.

Unfortunately, Zhou Wen could only hear and couldn’t see its color. Otherwise, he would have discovered many strange things.

The large scorpion was snow-white, but there were many blood-colored patterns on its body. If one looked carefully, they would see that those blood-colored patterns formed strange characters.

When Zhou Wen and company discovered the strange scorpion, it had also discovered them. With a flick of its tail, a blood-colored glow immediately appeared on the stinger, forming a strange blood-colored incantation pattern. The incantation pattern was completely condensed from light and looked very magical.

Zhou Wen had heard from An Sheng that this fellow had the ability to produce many things that resembled words. This was likely one of them, but Zhou Wen didn’t know which one it was.

While Zhou Wen was pondering, An Sheng and company had already begun preparing for battle. However, contrary to Zhou Wen’s expectations, the blood text on the scorpion’s tail didn’t shoot at Zhou Wen and company. All he saw was its tail stabbing into the ground as the blood text fused into the ground before disappearing.

At that instant, Zhou Wen saw the ground around him suffuse a blood-colored glow. The soil seemed to have been penetrated by the sanguine light as it emitted a lustrous red glow.

The red beams varied in intensity, making Zhou Wen believe that he was in a huge light formation.

The officers were clearly prepared. A Companion Beast beneath an officer raised its legs and condensed a holy white light. Then, it stomped on the ground. The holy light immediately spread out and covered the red light below, preventing the area where Zhou Wen and company were standing from being affected.

A strange phenomenon happened in the area that was affected by the red light. It was as if everything had slowed down. When the wind blew past the red birch forest, the forest that should have been rustling seemed to be a recording that played slowly. As the leaves swayed, it became extremely slow.

“This is its Slow Text. If we don’t have the corresponding counterforce, our speed will drop drastically. When the time comes, we won’t be able to dodge its attack, much less kill it. We will be killed,” An Sheng said.

As though he had discovered that the Slow Text was useless against them, a blood pattern flickered on the scorpion-like Mythical Creature’s back as a blood-colored text rushed out. The blood-colored text wasn’t directed at Zhou Wen and company but towards a red birch tree.

The blood-red text hit the red birch tree and disappeared in a flash. It was as though it had drilled into the tree. In the next second, the tree withered rapidly and died. The blood-red text flew out from the withered tree. However, the blood-

red text had clearly changed. Its shape had changed, and the blood-colored light had also become more intense.

The blood-colored text floated above the scorpion and emitted a red light. Wherever the red light shone, all the red birch trees seemed to come alive. The roots broke out of the ground and the branches swayed as they swept towards Zhou Wen and company like tree demons.

A cold light flickered on the back of an officer, and an Ice Fox-like Life Soul appeared. An icy beam erupted from the Life Soul, freezing the nearby demonized red birch trees.

An Sheng no longer had the time to explain to Zhou Wen. The scorpion's body emitted a sanguine light as red words flew out from its body, transforming into streaks of blood that attacked Zhou Wen and company.

An Sheng and a few officers collectively resisted the blood beams. An Tianzuo watched from the side, having no intention of attacking from beginning to end.

Zhou Wen could roughly tell that the scorpion's strength was about the same as Six-Winged before it was strengthened, but its abilities were rather strange.

Its blood-red text had many functions. Other than the few that he had seen, it could also transform into the power of wind, fire, lightning, and so on.

If one were to encounter it the first time, or if they were not strong enough, they would easily be killed by it.

However, An Sheng and company had studied it for years. They had already thought of ways to counter its various powers. No matter how it changed its abilities, they could barely contain them.

However, they had just managed to resolve it. Up to now, Zhou Wen had yet to see how they could kill the scorpion.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 517 - Failure

Chapter 517 Failure

An Sheng’s personal abilities were definitely top-notch at the Epic stage. However, even he couldn’t approach the scorpion. The scorpion’s speed was too fast. With a flap of its wings, it could easily fly hundreds of meters away. Even Zhou Wen probably couldn’t catch up to it easily with Ghost Steps.

After repeatedly resolving the blood-colored text of wind, fire, and lightning, An Sheng and company seemed to have found an opportunity to counterattack. With An Sheng’s command, the officers unleashed their strongest attack as terrifying forces struck the scorpion.

There was a sanguine flash on the scorpion’s back as a huge blood-red text appeared. It was like a shield that blocked their attacks.

With a series of crashing sounds, their forces were shattered, but the blood-colored barrier remained completely fine.

An Tianzuo, who had remained motionless all this while, finally made a move. Flames rose over his body, turning into a strange Life Soul.

The Life Soul’s entire body was covered in white armor. The armor was neither gold nor jade. It looked more like it was carved from bones.

Behind him was a blood-red cape. In his left hand was a slender bone saber covered in blood patterns. In his other hand was a gun made of bones.

That thing… It can’t be a Gatling, right… Zhou Wen looked at the weapon in the Life Soul’s hand. The bone gun barrel was connected to the recoil mechanism. It looked like an ancient hot weapon that was often seen in movies.

Just as Zhou Wen was pondering over it, he heard a terrifying boom. He saw the bone gun barrel shoot out blood-colored bullets like a storm.

Boom! Boom! Boom! Boom!

Bullets rained down on the scorpion’s blood-red text barrier, causing it to flicker as though it could shatter at any moment.

Buzzing sounds could be heard as the bullets poured freely. The bloody text barrier of the scorpion shattered.

This was the first time Zhou Wen had seen someone’s Life Soul produce a hot weapon. Furthermore, its attack was crazy powerful. It could actually break through a Mythical-stage barrier.

Although it was only a rather weak Mythical creature, Zhou Wen had relied on Ever-Victorious’s characteristic to kill Medusa. His Life Soul alone wasn’t that powerful.

The bullet hit the scorpion’s body, instantly infuriating it. The wings on its back spread open, and there was a blood-red glow on its wings. Its entire body was covered in blood-red light, and the blood-red symbol at the tip of its tail appeared especially terrifying.

The blood text circled around the scorpion’s body and kept spinning, blocking the rain of bullets.

When the bullets struck the blood text, they created a terrifying explosive shockwave that blasted the surrounding forest into pieces.

“Activate the halo,” An Sheng instructed the officers.

Two of the officers’ Companion Beasts shimmered with light as they enveloped An Tianzuo’s body. It caused An Tianzuo and his Life Soul’s bodies to emit two strange beams of light. The Gatling’s attacks became more ferocious as it pumped bullets at a denser and more powerful rate.

“Activate the curse.” An Sheng also used an Essence Energy Skill when he issued the order. He produced a strange gray smoke that enveloped the scorpion.

The other officers also used various powers. Those powers did not have any lethality, but they had a slight effect on the scorpion.

Boom!

The scorpion was furious after being bombarded by the Gatling’s attacks. The blood-red text surrounding it exploded with a terrifying sanguine light. Almost instantly, it engulfed everything nearby.

“Retreat.” An Sheng issued an order before the blood text exploded.

All the officers retreated with An Sheng in a great display of teamwork. Zhou Wen followed them and retreated, but he realized that An Tianzuo didn’t retreat.

The expanding sanguine light resembled a blood-colored black hole, devouring everything nearby. An Tianzuo was already standing at the edge of the blood hole, about to be devoured.

Zhou Wen was frowning when he suddenly saw An Tianzuo’s Life Soul vanish. As for An Tianzuo, he had a white bone armor and a blood cape. He held a bone saber in one hand and a bone Gatling in the other.

Just when the sanguine light was about to devour him, a black figure flew out from his body and landed on the bone blade. Instantly, a demonic black flame rose on the bone blade.

An Tianzuo raised his bone saber and slashed at the sanguine light in front of him. He managed to cleave open a rift as he charged in.

Gunfire roared and saber flames flashed. An Tianzuo fought the scorpion crazily. The madness was completely different from the usual An Tianzuo.

As for An Sheng and company, they constantly used various Essence Energy Skills from behind. They either aimed at An Tianzuo or at the scorpion. The only officer with the Ice Fox Life Soul and the ability to restrain the Slow Text was the busiest. They needed to constantly pump out damage to ensure that An Tianzuo’s region wasn’t affected by the power of the Slow Text.

Boom!

The scorpion’s body was sent flying by a backslash from An Tianzuo’s bone saber. An Tianzuo raised the Gatling with his hand. The black flames on the bone saber instantly shifted to the bone Gatling before enveloping it.

Boom! Boom! Boom! Boom!

Bullets with black flames roared towards the scorpion in midair, causing its body to constantly distort and rise in the air. In the end, its carapace was cracked by the bullets, and more and more bullets shot into its flesh and blood. The black flames also burned its flesh and bones.

Boom!

The blood patterns on the scorpion shattered and fell like glass.

“Success!” An Sheng was overjoyed.

Without the protection of the blood patterns, the storm-like bullets bombarded the scorpion wantonly. The carapace of the scorpion was completely shattered and blood spurted out.

Just as the scorpion’s body was about to explode, a blood-red light suddenly erupted from its abdomen. A strange blood text surfaced, and the blood quickly spread over the scorpion’s body.

Boom!

The sanguine light exploded as its carapace and flesh transformed into a terrifying energy blast. An Tianzuo had no choice but to retreat.

At the same time the explosion occurred, a sanguine light from the scorpion’s body flew toward White Cloud Mountain at an unbelievable speed.

An Tianzuo’s body flashed as he chased in the direction of White Cloud Mountain.

“Damn it, that fellow actually has such a move!” An Sheng cursed under his breath as he chased with his men.

Zhou Wen chased after him as well. When they caught up to An Tianzuo, they realized that he was standing in front of the mountain entrance. The scorpion that had self-destructed was nowhere to be seen.

“Love Letter escaped into Jade Emperor Peak?” An Sheng had already guessed what was going on.

An Tianzuo nodded slightly. “We have failed. Let’s head back.”

They knew that the scorpion was no longer able to survive; it was definitely on its last legs. As long as they could find it, even without An Tianzuo’s help, An Sheng could kill it himself.

However, no one dared to enter Jade Emperor Peak. No matter how strong a person was, entering would only lead to death. Even An Tianzuo could only return empty-handed.

Mythical creatures were precious, but they couldn’t trade for one with their lives.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 518 - Companion Egg Inside

Chapter 518 Companion Egg Inside

Zhou Wen used Truth Listener to listen to the area beyond the mountain entrance. He found it dead silent. Unable to hear a thing, it was as though the particles inside were motionless, having not generated any vibrations.

Jade Emperor Peak is indeed terrifying. It's such a pity. They prepared for so long, but all their efforts were in vain at the final moment. Zhou Wen felt sorry for An Sheng. If a Mythical Companion Egg dropped, An Sheng's strength would definitely improve greatly. It would be much safer for him to carry out missions in the future.

Along the way, Zhou Wen didn't find the tiny palm symbol. Although Truth Listener's ability couldn't hear the scene around him, he could hear the traces of carvings. If there was a tiny palm symbol, he should have heard it.

An Tianzuo was a decisive person. Since all hope was lost, he did not hesitate to order An Sheng and the officers to leave White Cloud Mountain with him.

Just as they were about to leave, they suddenly heard a miserable scream coming from Jade Emperor Peak. It sounded like a creature's death cry.

"It's Love Letter. It died less than twenty meters away from Jade Emperor Peak. It even dropped a Companion Egg," an officer suddenly shouted.

"How do you know?" An Tianzuo asked.

“I can’t hear it, but I can see it with my eyes. It’s inside. It’s a Companion Egg the size of a football and it resembles white jade. It has blood-colored text on it.” The officer had used his hearing, but he couldn’t hear anything. As he was unwilling to give up, he thought that it would be fine if he stole a glance. He removed his balaclava and had looked inside—seeing the Companion Egg.

“An Sheng?” An Tianzuo had also used his hearing ability but he couldn’t see the situation inside.

This was because An Sheng’s large-eyed Companion Beast gave him the ability of sight. If anyone could see it, An Sheng would be the first, but An Sheng hadn’t said anything.

“Even if it’s twenty meters, it’s within the confines of Jade Emperor Peak. It’s no different from two hundred meters or two thousand meters,” An Sheng answered.

He was obviously the first person to discover the blood scorpion, but he did not say anything. Even though it was right in front of him, he still chose to give up.

With that said, An Sheng said to the officer, “Old He, put on the balaclava. Are you tired of living?”

“Overseer, Adjutant, why don’t we make an attempt? It’s less than twenty meters inside. Perhaps there’s a way to get the Companion Egg out. That’s a Mythical Companion Egg.” The officer put on the balaclava and said to An Tianzuo and An Sheng, unwilling to give up.

“Ah Sheng is right. It doesn’t matter even if it’s two centimeters within Jade Emperor Peak, much less twenty meters,” said An Tianzuo.

“Overseer, let’s try using Companion Beasts. At most, we will sacrifice a few Companion Beasts. We can still afford to lose them.” The officers felt that it was a pity to leave.

“There’s no need to try. Haven’t we done enough experiments in the past? You can’t enter the Jade Emperor Peak, regardless if they are humans or Companion Beasts. The outcome is the same,” Ah Sheng objected firmly.

“Overseer, I have a Companion Beast that I obtained in a dimensional zone previously. It’s called Evil Warding Spirit Rhinoceros. It has the ability to resist evil powers, so why not let it try? If Adjutant An can obtain a Mythical pet, it’ll be a boon for our Sunset Army. In the future, fewer of our brothers will die when we carry out missions…” one of the officers said.

“Then give it a try,” said An Tianzuo.

“Thank you, Overseer.” The officer was instantly overjoyed.

“Overseer…” An Sheng wanted to stop him.

“If we don’t let them try, they won’t be willing to give up. Just remember this.” An Tianzuo stopped An Sheng from continuing.

As they were speaking, Zhou Wen circled around the mountain entrance. He wanted to see if there was a tiny palm symbol nearby. He didn’t have much hope because the tiny palm symbol was typically engraved on a more conspicuous spot. It wasn’t on the mountain entrance, so the chances of there being one were rather low.

But he didn’t expect to find the tiny palm symbol on a mountain rock to the east of the mountain entrance.

The tiny palm symbol was engraved on a mountain rock that was about the height of a person. It was unknown what color the mountain rock was, but its shape was nothing special. The tiny palm symbol engraved on it was a small hand holding a small mountain-shaped rock.

He took out his phone and took a picture of the small palm symbol.

The phone quickly locked onto the picture and entered the download interface.

Elsewhere, the officer had already summoned a moon-white rhinoceros. The rhinoceros looked very mighty, and it was much bigger than an ordinary rhinoceros. It was even bigger than an adult elephant. Its body was glowing with a jade glow, as though its body was enveloped by moonlight.

“Old He, don’t bother. It’s a pity to lose a precious Companion Beast like the Evil Warding Spirit Rhinoceros,” An Sheng said with a sigh.

“It’s fine. It’s less than twenty meters away. It’s just one step of the Evil Warding Spirit Rhinoceros.” Old He was determined. When the Evil Warding Spirit Rhinoceros stood in front of the stone entrance, Old He gave the order and the Evil Warding Spirit Rhinoceros moved like a tank charging through the entrance. It headed straight for the spot where the Companion Egg had dropped.

After it entered, Zhou Wen couldn’t hear the Evil Warding Spirit Rhinoceros. He thought that since there wasn’t any immortal palace phenomenon, he could take a look at the situation without looking up into the fog.

He lifted the balaclava a little so that he could see the situation at the mountain entrance. He saw the Evil Warding

Spirit Rhinoceros’s body four to five meters away from the mountain entrance. Furthermore, it was still charging at high speed. With such a speed, it would only take a few seconds to traverse twenty meters.Zhou Wen also saw the Companion Egg. Indeed, it was less than twenty meters away from the mountain entrance. Just as Old He had said, there were blood-colored patterns on the jade-white egg. There was a pile of blood-colored powder on the ground. It was likely formed after the Blood Scorpion died.

Just as Zhou Wen was sizing up the Evil Warding Spirit Rhinoceros, he saw a terrifying scene. After the huge rhinoceros rushed past the mountain entrance, its body turned into a piece of jade. It didn’t get far—perhaps ten meters—before the entire rhinoceros turned into a lifeless jade statue and fell to the ground.

Boom!

After a loud bang, the Evil Warding Spirit Rhinoceros shattered into pieces of jade. Furthermore, the pieces of jade that landed on the ground kept disintegrating, becoming smaller and smaller. Like sand, they split apart and finally turned to dust.

Zhou Wen couldn’t help but shiver. He finally knew what was going on with the pile of blood-colored powder beneath the Companion Egg. Even the Blood Scorpion couldn’t withstand the terrifying power from Jade Emperor Peak. It had ended up in the same state as the Evil Warding Spirit Rhinoceros.

However, the Companion Egg wasn’t affected by the terrifying force.

Ding! Zhou Wen’s phone notified the completion of the download. He looked down and saw a black mountain icon

on the screen. However, it wasn’t White Cloud Mountain but Demon Suppression Mountain.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 519 - Zero Taboo

Chapter 519 Zero Taboo

After tapping open the Demon Suppression Mountain dungeon, he realized that the blood-colored avatar had appeared in front of the black stone. Beside it was White Cloud Mountain's entrance. Other than the cartoon image, the layout was identical to the real White Cloud Mountain.

Zhou Wen thought for a moment and attempted to let the blood-colored avatar enter the mountain entrance. He wanted to see if Truth Listener's ability could withstand the terrifying power of Jade Emperor Peak.

However, it was useless. The power on Jade Emperor Peak wasn't an evil force like a curse. After a few steps, the blood-colored avatar turned to dust.

Zhou Wen thought for a moment and dripped his blood to revive. He walked into Jade Emperor Peak once again, but this time, he switched his Essence Energy Art to a Dao Art.

His Life Providence had naturally transformed into a Dao Body and Zero Taboo.

The moment the blood-colored avatar took half a step in, the Zero Taboo crystal in his consciousness lit up like a light bulb.

It works! Zhou Wen was delighted as he controlled the blood-colored avatar to continue walking forward. After taking a few steps, his body was fine. Cracks began to

appear on the Zero Taboo crystal, as though it was about to shatter.

…

It really can’t be taken out. In front of the mountain entrance, Old He wore a look of disappointment. He wasn’t sad for the death of his Evil Warding Spirit Rhinoceros, but because he couldn’t retrieve the Companion Egg for An Sheng.

“Old He, with the Overseer around, we will have plenty of chances to kill Mythical creatures in the future. It’s just a matter of time,” An Sheng said. He found it a pity that the Evil Warding Spirit Rhinoceros died. It was one of the few Epic Companion Beasts that could ward off evil. It was a pity to lose it.

“Let’s go.” An Tianzuo gave another order. This time, no one said a word. Although they were unwilling to give up on the Mythical Companion Egg in front of them, they had no choice but to leave.

“Ah Sheng, let me give it a try. Perhaps I can take it out,” Zhou Wen said as he walked over.

If the Companion Egg was An Tianzuo’s, Zhou Wen wouldn’t have stepped forward. He might even have waited for them to leave before secretly returning to retrieve the Companion Egg.

However, the Companion Egg was for An Sheng, so Zhou Wen felt that he should help.

An Sheng had given him plenty of help and had risked his life with him. He had plenty of chances to obtain Mythical

Companion Eggs in the future, but it was unlikely to have someone willing to risk his life for him at critical moments.

“Young Master Wen, if you wish to use a Mythical Companion Beast to take the Companion Egg, there’s no need to bother. Love Letter is also at the Mythical stage. It also failed to withstand the power of Jade Emperor Peak,” An Sheng said.

“If I just want to take out the Companion Egg, it’s very simple. I don’t need to use a Mythical Companion Beast.” As Zhou Wen spoke, he walked to the mountain entrance and deliberately sounded relaxed. He didn’t say that he was the one entering.

This was because he knew very well that if he said that he was the one entering, An Sheng would have definitely stopped him. It was impossible that he would let him take the risk.

“Young Master Wen, what solution do you have?” An Sheng asked.

An Tianzuo and the officers looked at Zhou Wen. They also wanted to know if he really had a way to bring out the Companion Egg.

Old He looked at Zhou Wen and said, “Young Master Wen, if you have a way to bring out the Companion Egg, just let me know if there’s anything I can do in the future. I’ll be at your beck and call.”

An Sheng had saved the lives of Old He’s family. Old He had always treated An Sheng’s matters as his own.

“I’ll remember that.” As Zhou Wen spoke, he looked past the mountain entrance. An Tianzuo and company believed that he would summon a Companion Beast, but to their surprise,

Zhou Wen suddenly took a step forward and walked through the mountain pass.

“No…” An Sheng turned pale with fright as he rushed towards the mountain entrance.

Someone was faster than him as he appeared in front of the mountain entrance in a flash. He extended his hand to grab Zhou Wen, but he was still a step slower. Zhou Wen had already rushed past the mountain entrance.

When An Sheng rushed to the mountain entrance, he was held back by An Tianzuo, who had arrived a step earlier. He didn’t let him chase after Zhou Wen.

“Look carefully. His body isn’t affected,” An Tianzuo said to An Sheng in a deep voice as he took off his balaclava.

Old He and company were also alarmed. They originally imagined that Zhou Wen would use a special Companion Beast to make the attempt, they never expected him to walk in by himself.

An Sheng stood outside the stone door and looked at Zhou Wen inside. He quickly walked towards the Companion Egg. His speed was astonishing. More importantly, his body didn’t disintegrate like the Evil Warding Spirit Rhinoceros.

Zhou Wen’s body landed in front of the Companion Egg like a wisp of smoke. He reached out and scooped the Companion Egg into his hand before turning around and retreating.

This back-and-forth was swift and elegant, like a swift saber that had been unsheathed. With a flash, the saber had already returned into the sheath before one could see what the blade looked like.

When Zhou Wen returned to the mountain entrance with the Blood Scorpion Companion Egg in hand, Old He and company jolted to attention as though they had been in a dream. They speechlessly looked at Zhou Wen who was standing in front of them in perfect condition.

“Young Master Wen, you are really too rash.” An Sheng sized up Zhou Wen’s body and only heaved a sigh of relief when he saw that there wasn’t anything wrong with his body.

“Don’t worry. I won’t do anything that I’m not confident of.” Zhou Wen threw the Companion Egg to An Sheng.

“Young Master Wen, thank you,” An Sheng received the Companion Egg and said with a smile.

“Not considering the consequences of your actions will one day make you pay the price. Put on your balaclavas and we will head down the mountain,” An Tianzuo said coldly. He put his balaclava on and turned to head down the mountain.

Everyone hurriedly put on their balaclavas and followed An Tianzuo down the mountain.

When they reached a fork on the mountainside, Zhou Wen asked An Sheng, “Ah Sheng, is Jade Rabbit’s Lunar Prayer on the mountain over there?”

“It’s there alright. I’ll take you there,” An Sheng said.

Old He also said, “Young Master Wen, if you want to pay a visit, I’ll take you there. However, it’s just a stone. There’s nothing to see.”

“There’s no need. There’s no danger there anyway. I just want to take a look myself. You guys can go back now,” Zhou Wen said as he walked up the mountain path.

An Sheng didn’t insist on going with him. Since Zhou Wen could remain unharmed in Jade Emperor Peak, nothing outside posed a danger to him.

“Adjutant An, this Young Master Wen is amazing. He actually managed to enter and exit Jade Emperor Peak safely. He’s really strong. Is he still in school?” Old He asked An Sheng as he watched Zhou Wen disappear on the mountain path.

“Don’t you know whose family Young Master Wen is from? How can a person who can be doted on so much by Madam not be strong?” As An Sheng spoke, he used his large eyes to glance at An Tianzuo, but unfortunately, he couldn’t see An Tianzuo’s expression through the balaclava.

“You’re right. Young Master Wen is Madam Lan’s son. It’s only right for him to be strong.” Old He smiled.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 520 - One Takes on the Color of One“s Company

Chapter 520 One Takes on the Color of One“s Company

Zhou Wen walked all the way up to the mountain where Jade Rabbit’s Lunar Prayer was. Although Zero Taboo seemed to have the ability to counter White Cloud Mountain’s taboo powers, Zhou Wen still wore the balaclava and used Truth Listener’s ability to scout the way.

If he were to see the immortal palace phenomenon, it would be quite an unjust death in the event Zero Taboo failed to work.

There were indeed very few dimensional creatures on White Cloud Mountain. Zhou Wen walked all the way to the peak, but he didn’t even encounter a single one.

After reaching the top of the mountain, Zhou Wen finally saw the legendary jade rabbit’s lunar prayer stone. Perhaps it was because Zhou Wen’s imagination wasn’t good, but no matter how he looked at it, it didn’t resemble a rabbit.

The Thearch said that the item is beneath this stone, but this stone seems to be connected to the mountain? Should I dig it up? Zhou Wen circled the Moon Rabbit stone but didn’t find the good stuff that The Thearch had mentioned.

Although it wasn’t nice to destroy a natural landscape, Zhou Wen couldn’t be bothered anymore. He summoned the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon and made it push the Moon Rabbit stone to see if there was anything below.

The Six-Winged Guardian Dragon had 80 Strength after all. With the augmentation of an Essence Energy Skill, it could snap the mountain, much less a mere rock.

However, it was unable to move the Moon Rabbit stone at all despite using all its might.

Zhou Wen couldn’t help but be surprised. With the strength of Six-Winged, even a piece of titanium alloy should have snapped, much less a rock.

Indeed, there’s something here! Zhou Wen made Six-Winged stop. He probably couldn’t move the Moon Rabbit stone with brute force.

Zhou Wen studied how to deal with the Moon Rabbit stone, but he failed to budge it despite exhausting all the methods he could think of. All he could do was leave White Cloud Mountain and return to the encampment. He planned on contacting The Thearch and asking her how to take the item under the Moon Rabbit Stone.

After Zhou Wen returned to the encampment, Old He warmly welcomed him back. He also told him that An Sheng and An Tianzuo had already left because they were needed in Luoyang. They had left a message, saying that if Zhou Wen wanted to return, he could get Old He to drive him back.

On the rugged mountain road, An Sheng was fiddling with his phone while driving.

To him, multitasking was not a difficult task. There was no conflict between driving and playing games. Ordinary people were forbidden from doing this as it was very easy for accidents to happen, bringing harm to themselves and others.

The scene that appeared on An Sheng's phone screen was the game that Zhou Wen had invested in. He held the phone in one hand as his fingers moved rapidly. It was no different from how others played with two hands. He was even more agile.

The game character used all sorts of odd positioning and releasing of skills to beat the Demonized Soldiers and Generals.

"Why aren't you driving properly? What are you doing there?" An Tianzuo, who was sitting behind with his eyes closed, suddenly asked.

"I downloaded the game that Zhou Wen and company made. Now that I'm trying it, it's really not bad. The feedback from attacking and the usage of skills are very good. The parameters are also very similar to reality, especially those Demonized Soldiers and Generals. Their behavior and skills are identical to reality. After playing this game, if one were to encounter Demonized Soldiers and Generals, one would know how to deal with them. This game is really not bad. From the looks of it, Young Master Wen isn't just playing games," An Sheng said as he played.

"He's just trying to play to the gallery. Watching a video allows one to understand dimensional creatures better than gaming. It's not like I see him doing any research. All he does is game. The so-called understanding of dimensional creatures is just an excuse to game," said An Tianzuo.

An Sheng defended Zhou Wen. “It’s still a little different. From watching the video, one can only know what kind of abilities a dimensional creature has. Ordinary people can’t tell what skills they can use to deal with it just by watching a video. However, in-game, they can attempt to use various skills to attack dimensional creatures. They can then know which skills are effective against them. Furthermore, through in-game combat, it’s easier to remember the timing of the various skills used by dimensional creatures. This game is a high-level strategy guide. It would be even better if we could turn it into a holographic game”

“I realize that ever since you and Zhou Wen went out a few times, you are getting better at clever, but false, arguments,” An Tianzuo said with a cold expression.

“Overseer, you’re right. It’s my fault. Games only make people lose their aspirations. It’s useless,” An Sheng hurriedly said.

“You’ve even learned how to agree overtly despite your private opposition. Indeed, one takes on the color of one’s company. Hand over the phone,” An Tianzuo said coldly when he saw that An Sheng was still playing.

“I was wrong, alright?” An Sheng hurriedly put away his phone.

“I told you to hand me the phone,” An Tianzuo said with a deadpan expression as he stared at An Sheng through the rearview mirror.

An Sheng helplessly handed his phone to An Tianzuo, who was sitting behind him. An Tianzuo reached out and took it. He glared at An Sheng and said, “Drive properly. If you continue with such nonsense, you’ll be punished to guard Chess Mountain.”

An Sheng tersely responded and continued driving. He didn’t dare do anything else.

An Tianzuo closed his eyes to rest for a while, but he had a nagging feeling. After a while, An Tianzuo opened his eyes again and picked up the phone beside him. After unlocking it, his gaze landed on the app icon named Dimension.

The corners of An Tianzuo’s eyes twitched slightly. He reached out and pulled the curtains to give himself privacy from An Sheng. Then, he said to him, “I’ll rest for a while. Don’t disturb me.”

“Got it, Overseer,” An Sheng said.

An Tianzuo held his phone and turned off the sound. Then, he tapped on the icon. Soon, an ink-styled interface appeared on his phone.

…

Zhou Wen rested in the encampment. As there was a signal in the encampment, he sent a message to The Thearch, but after waiting for several hours, he still didn’t receive a reply.

Just as Zhou Wen thought that The Thearch wasn’t replying to him on purpose, he finally received a message. He opened it and saw that it was from The Thearch.

“To learn the divine art, one must self-castrate.”

Zhou Wen read the message clearly and countless question marks appeared in his mind. Then, he sent a row of question marks.

“It was sent wrongly. It was for someone else. If you want the treasure, you must wait for the moon to rise.” The Thearch

replied very quickly this time.

So I have to wait until the moon rises before I can obtain the treasure under the Moon Rabbit stone. Zhou Wen was enlightened, but he suddenly felt that something was amiss.

“The Thearch, you said that you sent the message wrongly. Then who were you planning on sending that sentence to?” Zhou Wen’s expression turned odd.

Since The Thearch could use her phone to go online, it was not surprising that she could add friends on the Internet. The strange thing was, why did she send such a message to the other party?

“It’s a guy who wants to learn divine arts. His name seems to be John Cape,” The Thearch replied.

“John… Cape…” Zhou Wen naturally wouldn’t forget this fellow. After all, it was because of Liz and John that he and the Cape family had become enemies.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 521 - Immortal Palace Phenomenon

Chapter 521 Immortal Palace Phenomenon

Zhou Wen originally wanted to ask what The Thearch was doing, but The Thearch didn’t reply to him. Zhou Wen had to temporarily put the matter aside.

In the afternoon, Zhou Wen arrived in front of the Jade Rabbit’s Lunar Prayer stone again. There, he waited for the moon to rise from the east.

However, there was a problem. The Thearch said that he had to push the Moon Rabbit stone the moment the moon rose. Although Truth Listener was very powerful and could hear very minute sounds, it was still unknown if he could tell that the moon had risen.

If Truth Listener were to advance further in the future and advance to the Mythical stage, it might be able to hear something even deeper such as the rotations of electrons or the flowing sound of photons. When that happened, it was possible to use one’s hearing to determine if the moon had risen.

However, he definitely couldn’t do it now. After some hesitation, Zhou Wen switched his Essence Energy Art to a Dao Art before removing the balaclava.

Zhou Wen estimated the time. The moon was about to rise. If he were to use his eyes, he wouldn’t be so unlucky to

chance upon the immortal palace phenomenon, right?

However, even if he were to see the immortal palace phenomenon, he had the Zero Taboo Life Soul. It was unlikely he would die so easily.

While waiting for the sun to set at the garrison, Zhou Wen studied his Zero Taboo Life Soul. After entering White Cloud Mountain's Jade Emperor Peak and other dimensional zones, he discovered something.

Zero Taboo and Truth Listener's Evil Nullification were somewhat different. When Evil Nullification was in effect, it could deal with man-made curses. Zero Taboo did little against them. According to Zhou Wen's judgment, it worked against powers that came from the laws of nature.

For example, White Cloud Mountain's Jade Emperor Peak, Small Buddha Temple, or Sei Gasakai's Will Renewal. They were all unreasonable powers. That was just how the laws of nature worked.

Zero Taboo was very useful in this aspect. However, its effects were difficult to distinguish from Evil Nullification. There was some overlap between the two, and Zhou Wen was still studying them. His understanding of Zero Taboo wasn't thorough enough, so he was still in the guessing phase.

However, Zero Taboo was not truly without any restrictions. It could last for about ten seconds inside White Cloud Mountain's Jade Emperor Peak. Any longer, the Zero Taboo Life Soul would explode from the pressure.

In Small Buddha Temple, as long as he did not enter the temple hall, Zero Taboo was fine. However, once he entered the temple hall, it could only last for ten seconds.

Although the immortal palace phenomenon was terrifying, Zhou Wen guessed that it wouldn’t have much of an effect on him. Zero Taboo and Evil Nullification were of some use.

After pulling up the balaclava, Zhou Wen looked east. Although the sun and moon weren’t in the sky, it wasn’t too dark since the sun had just set.

As he looked over, he saw a sea of white clouds. Occasionally, a few mountain peaks would appear out of the sea of clouds, like a few black islands in a white sea. The scene was indeed as beautiful as a fairyland.

It’s a pity that no one has the chance to enjoy such beautiful scenery. If it was before the dimensional storms, I’m afraid this place would have been filled with tourists. Zhou Wen suddenly felt that the dimensional storms might not be a bad thing. If there were tourists crowding the place, no matter how beautiful it was, it would be greatly affected.

The immortal palace didn’t appear. Zhou Wen kept track of time and knew that the moon would rise at any moment. He didn’t wear the balaclava and sat there to watch the sea of clouds.

On the mountains above the sea of clouds, he could see some ancient buildings. However, they weren’t places he could go carelessly. Zhou Wen only admired them for the time being.

After waiting for less than two minutes, a crescent moon slowly floated out from the sea of clouds’ horizon. The moonlight was not strong and it was not bright. It was very mild.

Just as Zhou Wen was about to push the Moon Rabbit stone again, a white jade-like immortal palace appeared where the

crescent moon rose.

There were pavilions and pagodas, as well as jade halls and shrines. Beautiful and elegant immortal palaces appeared in the clouds, and he could even see fairies flitting about. Faintly, he could even hear singing coming from those immortal palaces.

Immortal palace phenomenon! Zhou Wen was alarmed. The Zero Taboo Life Soul had already lit up his mind. Clearly, it had a reaction to the immortal palace phenomenon.

The intensity of the Zero Taboo's reaction wasn't inferior to the Jade Emperor Peak. Zhou Wen took a careful look before closing his eyes and pulling down the balaclava.

The brightened Zero Taboo Life Soul also dimmed.

Thankfully, my theory is correct. Zero Taboo seems to be useful against all taboo powers in a dimensional zone. Zhou Wen recalled the scene of the immortal palace in his mind.

The immortal palace was extremely magnificent, but it didn't have much value to Zhou Wen. Instead, it was the dancing fairies that gave him some insight.

The Fairy in Dragon Gate Grotto was only at the Epic stage after all. Transcendent Flying Immortal's attack was only an Epic Essence Energy Skill. Although through Zhou Wen's constant insight and creativity, it had reached an outstanding level at the Epic stage, it was still inferior to a true godlike skill.

Having seen the figures of the fairies in the immortal palace, Zhou Wen immediately gained new insights.

Without a doubt, if those fairies really existed, they would all be true Mythical creatures.

Ignoring the fairies' stances, Zhou Wen extended his hand to push the Moon Rabbit stone just as the moon rose. Although it was still very heavy, it moved slightly with his strength.

Overjoyed, Zhou Wen pushed harder and shoved the Moon Rabbit stone to the side bit by bit. Then, he realized that beneath it was a jade box embedded in the stone's indentation.

Zhou Wen reached out to take out the jade box, only to find it cold to the touch.

After touching the indentation and confirming that there was nothing else, Zhou Wen pushed the Moon Rabbit stone back.

With the jade box in his arms, Zhou Wen planned on looking at what was inside the box when he returned home. Since he had already obtained it, he wasn't in a hurry.

As he thought about leaving the mountain, he couldn't bear it. After some thought, Zhou Wen pulled up the balaclava slightly and looked at the rising moon in the east.

The phenomenon of the immortal palace was still there. Numerous immortal palaces floated above the sea of clouds, looking extremely realistic. It was not something ethereal like a mirage.

The fairies danced among the immortal palaces. All of them had elegant and graceful postures. They seemed much more profound than the Fairies in Dragon Gate Grotto.

Zero Taboo kept emitting light. It felt like it would shatter in a few more seconds.

Zhou Wen didn’t dare take another look. Just as he was about to close his eyes, he suddenly saw a beautiful fairy fly out from a palace. The moment she appeared, the other fairies immediately paled in comparison. It was as though the halo around them had vanished as they became mere mortal beauties.

Only the fairy who had just appeared deserved being described as an “immortal fairy.”

Zhou Wen only took a glance and saw numerous crisscrossing cracks appear on the Zero Taboo crystal. Just as it was about to explode, Zhou Wen hurriedly closed his eyes in fright.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 522 - Change in Ranking

Chapter 522 Change in Ranking

This time, when he closed his eyes, the Zero Taboo crystal didn’t immediately extinguish. It continued emitting light. The cracks on the crystal were still spreading, and it was about to shatter. It left Zhou Wen shuddering in fear.

Thankfully, the crystal didn’t shatter and the light gradually dimmed.

Now, the Zero Taboo crystal was like a glass bead that had been doused in cold water after being heated over a flame. It was full of cracks, looking as if it would shatter at any moment.

Amazing. I only took a glance at her and she nearly blasted apart my Life Soul. If she really exists, I wonder what status she has among Mythical creatures? Zhou Wen could still recall the scene of the fairy dancing in the air. Her figure seemed to contain some profound charms. It was indescribably beautiful and shocking.

Zhou Wen closed his eyes and sat on the Moon Rabbit stone. He carefully recalled the details of the fairy’s figure, hoping to figure out the true secret of Flying Immortal.

Zhou Wen could sense that the fairy’s figure was extremely valuable to his Transcendent Flying Immortal, but after thinking for a long time, he felt that there was something in

the way between the two. It made him feel like he was looking at a beauty through a layer of frosted glass. He could see her, but not clearly. He couldn’t help but feel vexed.

He stood up and walked down the mountain. He wanted to have a change of environment and mood; perhaps that way, he might be able to understand what was happening. He would never dare to look at that immortal palace phenomenon again.

After returning to the encampment, Zhou Wen took out the jade box and placed it on the table. After studying it for a while, he opened the lid.

Inside the jade box were dozens of crystals the size of cat eyes. They were of different colors and shapes.

I wonder what attributes these dimensional crystals have? Zhou Wen took out his mysterious phone and snapped them.

It turned out that they were all Epic dimensional crystals. Most of them were crystals of the four basic stats. Only two were Essence Energy Skill Crystals. This left Zhou Wen somewhat disappointed.

He originally believed that The Thearch’s mention of something would be no trifling matter. Although Epic crystals were not bad, they were far inferior to the Mythical crystal from before.

However, on second thought, it made sense. The Thearch told him about these so that he could exchange them for money, so why would she get him to retrieve Mythical crystals that weren’t easily sold?

Epic crystals were the easiest to produce at present. Furthermore, there was a relatively high demand for them. There were at least ten crystals and they all had different attributes. Some were bad, while others were not bad. The best one was a Speed Crystal with 38 stats. It was likely worth quite a bit of money.

Of course, the most valuable ones were the two Essence Energy Skill Crystals. One was the Cloud Crane Crystal, while the other was the Cloud Deer Crystal. Zhou Wen had never seen these two dimensional creatures before, nor did he know what skills they had.

He placed the crystals back into the jade box and picked it up to put into the chaos space.

The dimensional crystals weren’t very warm, but the jade box was as cold as ice. It didn’t seem ordinary.

Is it possible that this jade box is something good? Zhou Wen held the jade box and began studying it.

The jade box was the color of the moon. It was translucent and he almost could see through it, but it also appeared opaque. It was as if there were clouds within the jade.

After Zhou Wen carefully studied the jade box, he found something amiss.

There were many cloud patterns engraved on the jade box. The patterns were of different shapes and sizes. If one were to look at them with the eyes of an ordinary person, they would be clouds of different shapes and sizes. One would write it off as nothing special.

Even though some people felt that the cloud patterns were special, it was difficult to see the true meaning behind them.

However, after Zhou Wen carefully observed them, he realized that the different types of clouds contained the beauty of a fairy's figure. Every cloud pattern looked like a fairy. If he hadn't seen the fairies flying, it would probably be difficult for him to tell the charms of these cloud patterns.

This is really something good. Zhou Wen picked up the jade box and continued studying the cloud patterns. As he looked at them, he compared them with the fairy poses he had seen. His understanding deepened.

While Zhou Wen was studying the cloud patterns, another shocking event happened. The black cube lit up again before another Companion Beast appeared on the ranking.

The second Companion Beast on the ranking was actually the publicly acknowledged number one Companion Beast, Verbis Diablo Holy Angel.

The Verbis Diablo Holy Angel's ranking had been ranked by a big organization in the Federation. It was known as the number one pet at the Epic stage. Now that it had taken its place on the cube's ranking, it actually failed to surpass the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon. It was only ranked second.

No one could help but speculate how powerful the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon was to be able to suppress the Verbis Diablo Holy Angel. This was truly quite a shock.

In the past few days, there had been no movement. Only Six-Winged had been placed on the list. When the Verbis Diablo Holy Angel entered the rankings, many Companion Beasts sprouted like mushrooms after a rain. They were listed one after another.

On the cube's screen, various pet creatures constantly appeared. Apart from the angel and dragon, there were also

sprites, magical beasts, and other Companion Beasts.

The Six-Winged Guardian Dragon, which was originally in first place, dropped to third place in a day. Eight others ranked after it. A total of eleven Companion Beasts were listed.

Two Companion Beasts ranked ahead of the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon. The first was Death of the Underworld, while the second was Frost Giant. They were Companion Beasts no one had heard of before.

As for the famous Verbis Diablo Holy Angel, it was ranked dead last among all the Companion Beasts on the list.

This caused a huge wave of discussion across the entire Federation. Only then did many ordinary people realize that the so-called strongest Verbis Diablo Holy Angel was just a bottom-tier existence in the world of truly powerful pets.

The powerful Companion Beasts were enough to make one gasp in excitement. However, at the same time, people were guessing who the extremely powerful Companion Beasts belonged to.

Including Zhou Wen’s Six-Winged Guardian Dragon, there were a total of three dragons that entered the rankings. It could be said that among all the Mythical creatures, they were the most common species.

However, one tidbit was very surprising. All the Companion Beasts that entered the rankings—be they angels, dragons, elemental sprites, or Death—were Companion Beasts from the West and North Districts. They didn’t see any special Companion Beasts from East District and South District on the list.

In fact, all the families that made a move this time came from the West and North Districts. Among them, the Cape family of the West District put in the most work and managed to occupy four ranks in one go.

The East District’s Xia family and Zhang family, and the South District’s Dugu family didn’t have any Companion Beasts appear on the ranking. The four districts seemed to have a completely different attitude towards the rankings.

Zhou Wen didn’t know anything about the change in ranking. Although Zhou Wen declined Old He’s offer to take him back, Old He insisted.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 523 - Flying Immortal Stance

Chapter 523 Flying Immortal Stance

After returning to school, Zhou Wen heard the students discussing the Companion Beasts on the rankings. Ordinary students suspected that they were Mythical Companion Beasts, but no one had ever seen one.

Zhou Wen also went online to take a look. Many media outlets and individuals had captured the pictures of the Companion Beasts on the cube.

Death of the Underworld looked very strange. He was wearing a gray cloak. Black and blue light filled its insides. He did not have a physical body and looked a little like the legendary Death. However, he did not have a scythe in his hands.

Frost Giant was a giant with a deep blue body. Wherever he went, ice would form on the ground.

The other Companion Beasts were also unique. Angels were holy, sprites were beautiful, and dragons looked about the same. However, for a Companion Beast to be ranked, one could tell that they were extraordinary just from their aura alone.

Unfortunately, only the images of the Companion Beasts were shown on the cube. Their skills weren’t listed.

Zhou Wen didn’t know what the ranking was for, but he quickly lost interest. He picked up his phone and continued grinding Torch Dragon. After his battle with Torch Dragon,

Zhou Wen gradually started to use his speed and crystal mirror to block Torch Dragon’s Bright Torch Vision World.

Unfortunately, a Sun Beast Companion Egg was a rare drop. If there were two or more crystal mirrors, the success rate of killing Torch Dragon would be much higher.

Zhou Wen thought of many solutions. For example, using a large number of Companion Beasts to shield him, but it was useless. The blood-colored avatar and all the Companion Beasts in front of him were reflected into the vision world.

Apart from the crystal mirror that could reflect, the other Companion Beasts weren’t of much use.

As for using the crystal mirror to block Torch Dragon’s gaze, he needed to grasp the timing and position perfectly, or it would be very difficult to block.

The problem was that Torch Dragon’s Bright Torch Vision World wasn’t a skill that could only be used once. Therefore, Zhou Wen needed to defend against it many times in battle. Otherwise, he would die.

As for Demonic Neonate that remained on the blood-colored avatar’s back, she constantly tried to find Torch Dragon’s flaws to attack it. There were a few times when she really found an opportunity. The ancient sword stabbed at Torch Dragon, but it only managed to penetrate a tiny length of the blade. It did not pose much of a threat to Torch Dragon.

As for the blood-colored avatar, it couldn’t survive until Demonic Neonate killed Torch Dragon.

According to Zhou Wen’s calculations, he needed to survive at least three hours in front of Torch Dragon before Demonic Neonate could kill it.

This was the best situation. If the situation didn’t go as smoothly as Zhou Wen expected, it might take even longer.

Zhou Wen’s most pressing problem was to 100% block the Bright Torch Vision World for those few hours. Just one mistake meant immediate death. All his efforts would be in vain.

After a bitter battle for an hour, the blood-colored avatar was once again killed by Torch Dragon’s Bright Torch Vision World. This was the longest time Zhou Wen had lasted.

I can’t make any mistakes, and I have to be absolutely precise. In a high-intensity battle, I have to ensure that I can throw out the crystal mirror with perfect timing and positioning while facing a powerful creature like Torch Dragon. Furthermore, it’s really difficult to judge Torch Dragon’s actions accurately.

Zhou Wen thought about it and realized that it was very difficult for him to boost his success rate. After all, the other party was a Mythical creature stronger than him. It wasn’t that easy to determine its actions and motions.

Since it’s very difficult to improve my judgment, I can only increase my speed and ability to adjust my position. I’ll try my best to prevent Torch Dragon from seeing me.

Therefore, in the following battles, Zhou Wen consciously fused Dragon Gate Flying Immortal Skill and Transcendent Flying Immortal into the fairy stance he had comprehended, hoping to improve his movement technique to another level.

This wasn’t an easy task. Zhou Wen felt that there was a barrier between the fairy’s stances and his movement techniques. It was very difficult to achieve perfection, and there would be problems when fusing them.

Zhou Wen wasn’t someone who would give up in the face of adversity. He continued researching and improving, especially the beautiful fairy’s stance. Zhou Wen spent a great deal of time comprehending and researching.

At the bureau’s headquarters, there was a lot of information placed in front of Shen Yuchi. It was all about the black cubes and the Companion Beasts on the ranking.

“Director-General, other than the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon, the origins of the other Companion Beasts are almost confirmed,” Qiao Siyuan said.

Shen Yuchi nodded slightly. “Why did those families in the West and North District put their Mythical pets on the rankings? Have you investigated?”

In fact, Shen Yuchi didn’t need to investigate to know which families these Companion Beasts came from. The key was why they wanted to expose their Mythical Companion Beasts to the public.

Before this, every family clan hid their Mythical Companion Beasts, afraid that others would know how many they had. But this time, they actually revealed a portion of them.

Although a number were already known to outsiders, it still felt puzzling.

“According to our investigations, those few families seem to have figured out some of the secrets of the black cube. They know that there would be benefits if they were to be ranked, which is why they made such a move. However, this information has not been verified yet, so we don’t know of its veracity,” Qiao Siyuan answered very conservatively.

“What kind of benefits?” Shen Yuchi knew what Qiao Siyuan was getting at. This news should have come from within those few families, but he couldn’t guarantee that they were using it as a smokescreen.

“From what they say, the Companion Beasts on the ranking might be fancied by terrifying existences in the dimensional zones. There might be benefits, but they aren’t sure if the news is real or not, nor do they know what benefits there will be.” Qiao Siyuan explained the information he gathered in detail.

After Shen Yuchi heard that, he remained silent.

“Director-General, what should we do?” Qiao Siyuan asked.

“The Zhang family, the Xia family, and the Dugu family didn’t make a move. The West and North Districts only sent some Companion Beasts as a test. It’s not time for us to step forward. Let’s just wait and see for now.”

After a pause, Shen Yuchi asked again, “How’s the progress of Wang Mingyuan’s students?”

“It’s not going well. Zhou Wen and Hui Haifeng are protected by their families, so it’s very difficult to bring them back. Jiang Yan and Zhong Ziya’s whereabouts are unknown. We’ve been tracking them for so long, but we haven’t been able to catch them. None of Wang Mingyuan’s four students are simple. I think Wang Mingyuan might have other motives for taking them in as his students. It’s not just a coincidence.”

Qiao Siyuan paused and said, “Besides, the six families aren’t too concerned about this matter now. For some reason, even the Cape family that wanted to capture Zhou

Wen the most seem to have forgotten about it. They’re all focused on the rankings.”

“That’s strange.” Shen Yuchi pondered over the cause and effect of everything.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 524 - In the Name of an Angel

Chapter 524 In the Name of an Angel

In a mysterious land of the West District, in front of an ancient, glorious cathedral, John advanced step by step. Every step he took felt as if he was going against the flow. It drained all his strength.

Within the cathedral, a holy light shone out, causing people to involuntarily lower their heads, not daring to look at the light.

When John walked to the door of the cathedral and pushed open the door with all his strength, the holy light instantly illuminated the entire world. John saw a huge angel mural inside the cathedral.

The portrait of the angel drew a holy six-winged seraphim. Strangely, there was a drop of blood at the corner of the six-winged seraphim’s eye. Its eyes seemed to contain endless sorrow.

John’s gaze was only slightly shocked by the six-winged seraphim’s portrait before he was attracted by something in it.

Between the six-winged seraphim’s hands was a strange white cocoon-like object. It was clearly a portrait, but the white cocoon in the picture seemed to exist.

“The Thearch didn’t lie to me… There’s really such a thing… It really exists…” John looked excited as he stared at the white cocoon in the painting. His eyes gradually turned strange.

Gritting his teeth, John walked to the portrait of the six-winged seraphim and cut his palm with a knife, letting his blood drip onto the white cocoon.

It was clearly a mural, but when John’s blood dripped onto the white cocoon, it strangely slid to the side. Not a single drop of blood touched the white cocoon.

Do I really have to do that to hatch it? John’s eyes gradually wore a crazed look as he watched his blood drop to the ground.

No matter what price I have to pay… I must defeat that person… I must… Just as the madness in John’s eyes reached its apex, he suddenly held the knife and slashed at his lower body.

Blood splattered as something fell to the ground.

The blood which flowed from John’s palm was unable to touch the white cocoon in the beginning. It was as though there was a force that kept the blood away from it. But now, the white cocoon no longer rejected John’s blood. Drops of blood landed on it and seeped in. Soon, it dyed the white cocoon red.

As the white cocoon absorbed the blood, it emitted a holy light. John’s body bathed in the holy light as his wounds healed rapidly.

At the same time, his damaged Essence Energy sea was restored. Furthermore, his entire body had undergone a

strange transformation.

John felt a pure and holy power flowing through his body. It was stronger and purer than before he was injured.

Under the support of that power, his Holy Emperor Body also underwent an unpredictable change.

John felt his body hurt and itch all over as though he was undergoing puberty again. He felt the strength in his body constantly increasing. John almost couldn’t feel the pain and only felt extremely excited.

“Ah!”

The strength within John’s body burst out uncontrollably. His limbs flailed in the air in an exaggerated manner. His skin was milk-like and he emitted a holy radiance. And behind him, a pair of snow-white angel wings appeared.

However, this pair of angel wings was only an illusion and not a real existence.

John was already handsome to begin with, but now he looked even more handsome. He was like an angel from heaven, as though he was from another world.

Compared to John from the past, this John was less masculine and more feminine.

This wasn’t strange, because angels had no gender.

Crack! Crack!

When John’s body completed the transformation from a human to an angel, the white cocoon cracked and gradually revealed a figure in the cocoon.

It was an angel who was even more handsome than John. He had six angel wings on his back, and his blonde hair emitted a sun-like radiance. His entire body seemed to be enveloped by holy light.

When he walked out of the white cocoon, the entire world seemed to be subdued by his radiance and turned dim.

John looked at the six-winged seraphim in front of him with a fervent gaze. He felt that the power in his body was getting stronger and stronger, as if it was affected by the six-winged seraphim.

He looked down at John like a god. He extended a hand and pressed it on John's head. He said calmly, "In the name of an angel, I'll bestow you the power to be protected…"

With that holy voice, a terrifying holy light erupted from the palm of the six-winged seraphim, enveloping John's body completely in holy light. Finally, even the six-winged seraphim's body was devoured by the holy light.

After the holy light dissipated, only John was left in front of the portrait of the cathedral. However, he had an additional snow-white angel armor and six snow-white angel wings on his back. His entire body emitted terrifying holy light.

Did it succeed? How interesting. I wonder if this is the first guardian to appear. Far away in Chess Mountain's cave, a seductive woman who was chained up suddenly had a strange look in her eyes as though she had sensed something.

However, the strange expression disappeared very quickly. She looked at the cell phone floating in front of her. There were photos on the cell phone interface. The content was

actually a picture of Wang Mingyuan breaking into the alternate dimension.

I didn’t expect that there would be such a powerful person among the humans today. He actually devoured the guardian of the dragons? It seems that the human world isn’t as boring as I thought. The seductive woman retracted her gaze and suddenly revealed a strange smile. She opened the chat app and clicked on a friend profile picture to send a message.

In the seductive woman’s friend list, there were only two groups. One group had more friends, while the other group only had one person. Now, she had sent the message to the friend in that one group.

Zhou Wen was studying the Flying Immortal pose when he suddenly heard his phone ring. He knew that it was a message from The Thearch. He opened it and couldn’t help but frown slightly.

“You have big trouble awaiting you.” There were only six simple words on the message.

“The Thearch, I haven’t offended you recently, right?” Zhou Wen replied.

“Since when did I say you offended me?” The Thearch replied.

“Then why are you giving me trouble?”

“Other than me, can’t anyone else give you trouble?”

“Apart from you, should there be anyone else? ” Zhou Wen asked.

“That might not be the case.” The Thearch then sent another message. “I’ll give you a chance. Be good and come to Chess Mountain to swear loyalty to me. I can help you tide through this calamity.”

“I appreciate your kindness,” Zhou Wen said.

“Alright, I’ll wait for you to come to Chess Mountain to beg me.” The Thearch seemed very confident.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 525 - Official Challenge

Chapter 525 Official Challenge

Zhou Wen knew that if The Thearch said that there was trouble, there was a high chance that it was real trouble. However, if he always remained subservient to her, there was no room for negotiation in the future.

Zhou Wen didn’t wish to be a puppet that was at the mercy of others. Furthermore, he also wanted to know if his Zero Taboo could withstand The Thearch’s wish powers.

While Zhou Wen became extra careful, he constantly studied the Flying Immortal stance. The Rank 10 Dragon Gate Flying Immortal Skill and Transcendent Flying Immortal had some improvement, but they had yet to take the final step needed for a breakthrough.

Zhou Wen didn’t know what breaking through an Epic Rank 10 Essence Energy Skill would become. It would be best if he could break through to the Mythical stage, but it clearly wasn’t that easy.

Through his battle with Torch Dragon, Zhou Wen constantly honed himself. It could be said that his posture was very similar to that of a flying immortal, but he was still lacking something. He had yet to reach that realm.

Sometimes, many inventions that shocked the world needed a flash of insight other than continuous experiments. What

Zhou Wen lacked now was that glimmer of light in the darkness.

Zhou Wen could now last for more than two hours in the battle with Torch Dragon, but it was useless. Even if he lasted 99% of the time, everything was useless if he didn't kill Torch Dragon.

Zhou Wen was gaming one day when he suddenly received a call from An Sheng.

"Young Master Wen, there's something I have to tell you. This matter can only be decided by you." An Sheng's voice was a little solemn. It was different from the usual An Sheng.

"What's the matter?" Zhou Wen knew that something that could make An Sheng so serious was definitely not simple. He recalled the trouble The Thearch had mentioned.

"John of the Cape family, do you still remember this person?" An Sheng asked after some thought.

"I remember. He once came to our school," Zhou Wen answered.

"Yes, it's because he lost to you and had his Essence Energy sea crippled that he made a request to our An family to have a fair battle with you. Furthermore, he took the initiative to propose a duel in Luoyang," An Sheng said.

Zhou Wen's heart skipped a beat. He knew that the trouble The Thearch mentioned was most likely John. He remembered that The Thearch had previously chatted with John online.

"Because the other party has officially proposed a duel and is willing to come to Luoyang alone to challenge you, it's not

appropriate for us to reject him on your behalf. You have to decide on this matter yourself. If you aren't willing, Young Master Wen, you can reject it," An Sheng said.

"John's Essence Energy sea should have been destroyed, right? How did he recover so quickly?" Zhou Wen asked.

"In theory, it shouldn't have been possible for him to recover so quickly. However, since he dares to challenge you in Luoyang, I'm afraid he has not only recovered, but he should also have improved." An Sheng paused for a moment before saying, "From my point of view, I don't think you need to take the risk to accept the challenge, Young Master Wen."

"You think I'll lose?" Zhou Wen was somewhat surprised. An Sheng should know that he had a Six-Winged Guardian Dragon. It was clearly unusual for him to persuade him not to accept the challenge under such circumstances.

"The Cape family has Mythical creatures as well. On the cube's ranking, there are four Mythical pets from the Cape family. I suspect that John will be bringing a Mythical Companion Beast with him this time." An Sheng shared his thoughts.

Zhou Wen didn't say a word as An Sheng continued, "Mythical Companion Beasts have their own specialties. It's very dangerous to rashly accept challenges without knowing what abilities they have. I've seen some Mythical creatures before. Their abilities are extremely unreasonable. As long as you get hit, death is certain. There's nothing you can do about that even if you're stronger than him. Just like Love Letter, we studied it for years and only attacked it after knowing its various abilities. Otherwise, we would definitely suffer heavy losses."

“I understand what you mean, but I want to accept this challenge,” Zhou Wen said after some thought.

From Zhou Wen’s point of view, this wasn’t a battle between him and John, but a secret battle between him and The Thearch.

The Thearch seemed to play both sides, seemingly purposefully but also inadvertently making Zhou Wen rely on her more and more.

Just like the previous few times when she showed her might to him or gave him benefits, she would intentionally or unintentionally show Zhou Wen her strength and invincibility. She would inadvertently create a lofty image, as though Zhou Wen would enjoy endless benefits as long as he remained subservient to her. And if he disobeyed her, he would suffer an irresistible blow.

Although The Thearch hadn’t really harmed Zhou Wen from beginning to end, Zhou Wen could sense that this wasn’t a good thing.

In the past, the former principal had once said to Zhou Wen that one needed to respect everyone, but one couldn’t let respect turn into reliance. Otherwise, one would lose the possibility of reaching the pinnacle because the person you relied on was your end.

Therefore, Zhou Wen wanted to accept this challenge not because he wanted to defeat John, but because he wanted to break the net that The Thearch had weaved over him. He wanted The Thearch to fail once.

“Alright, since you’ve already decided, I know what to do. I’ll help you choose the location and time. In Luoyang, you won’t be at a disadvantage. No one can use external forces

to affect you, but you have to be careful. Don’t underestimate John just because he has lost to you before,” An Sheng said seriously.

“Thank you.” Zhou Wen felt a sense of warmth in his heart. An Sheng was truly concerned about him. It had been a long time since someone cared for him.

An Sheng hung up the phone and turned to say to An Tianzuo, who was sitting behind his desk, “Overseer, Young Master Wen has decided to accept the challenge.”

“Indeed, he’s still too young. Since John dares to come to Luoyang alone, he must have made all the necessary preparations. The battle is extremely dangerous, so there’s no need for him to take the risk,” said An Tianzuo.

An Sheng smiled and asked, “Overseer, if it’s you, would you accept or refuse?”

“If I accepted it, that’d be because I have the strength to deal with any situation.” Although An Tianzuo didn’t give a direct answer, anyone could tell that he would accept it if it were him.

“I believe Young Master Wen can handle it as well,” An Sheng said.

“I’m just afraid that he will be arrogant and think that he’s invincible after obtaining a Mythical Companion Beast. When that happens, he won’t even know how he died,” sneered An Tianzuo.

It wasn’t An Sheng’s place to say anything else. An Tianzuo paused before saying, “Go and set up the venue. If the empress dowager finds out that he suffered, she’ll probably launch a tirade at me again.”

“Yes.” An Sheng accepted the order and left.

Few people knew that John was going to Luoyang to challenge Zhou Wen, but it spread among the six families. The other families found it odd.

It hadn’t been long since John’s Essence Energy sea was crippled, but he had recovered so quickly. He even dared to challenge Zhou Wen in Luoyang. Clearly, this was something unusual. Many families were secretly observing the matter.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 526 - Figuring Out Flying Immortal

Chapter 526 Figuring Out Flying Immortal

Strangely, the Cape family seemed to have a rather strange reaction towards John challenging Zhou Wen.

After some inquiries from the other families, even they didn’t know why John had challenged Zhou Wen.

“This matter is indeed a little strange. Xuan Yue, spectate the battle.” Xia Dongyue said to Xia Xuanyue.

“Is it necessary?” Xia Xuanyue asked in doubt.

“Just take it as a vacation.” Xia Dongyue smiled.

The reactions of the families were somewhat different. After investigations, they discovered that John wasn’t challenging Zhou Wen because of the Cape family’s ploy. It was just John acting as an individual. This reduced the attention on the matter.

Xia Xuanyue packed her stuff and headed to Luoyang.

Ever since she lost her Mythical Companion Beast, Xia Xuanyue hadn’t been doing well. The Xia family had a higher chance of obtaining a Mythical Companion Beast than the average person thanks to the possession of a Mythical Companion Beast.

However, it still wasn’t easy to obtain another Mythical Companion Beast. Even the Xia family needed a lot of investigation time before killing a Mythical creature. They needed to be fully prepared before sending their experts out with their Mythical pets. This typically took months.

And it was uncertain if a Mythical Companion Egg would drop. Even if they obtained a Mythical Companion Egg, with so many people in the Xia family in line for one, it was hard to say when it would be Xia Xuanyue’s turn again.

The incubation of Mythical Companion Beasts was also a huge problem. Wild Mythical Companion Eggs required too much Essence Energy to incubate. Typical Epic humans wouldn’t be able to withstand it. They needed to use some special methods, and the cost was similarly large.

After arriving in Luoyang, before the date of the duel, Xia Xuanyue went to a few famous dimensional zones in Luoyang to take a look. One of them was the famous Dragon Gate Grotto.

Xia Xuanyue proceeded to explore the caves that she could enter. When she arrived at the Lotus Flower Cave, she saw a familiar person battling with the Fairies inside.

It’s him! Xia Xuanyue instantly recognized that the person battling the Fairies was Zhou Wen.

She had a deep impression of Zhou Wen. After all, she had previously stopped Zhou Wen from killing the girl. Her Mythical Companion Beast had mysteriously disappeared after that.

Furthermore, she had come to Luoyang to watch Zhou Wen and John’s duel.

After watching from the side for a while, Xia Xuanyue realized that rather than a battle, Zhou Wen was imitating the Fairy's actions.

It was obvious that Zhou Wen was much stronger than the Fairy. It wouldn't be difficult for him to kill her, but he didn't do so. All he did was use a movement technique similar to the Fairy as he constantly circled around her.

Is he learning the Fairy's movement technique? Xia Xuanyue watched from the side for a while, and the more she watched, the more confused she became.

Others became better from imitating and practicing. However, Zhou Wen seemed to become worse. His originally elegant movement technique had turned stiffer and stiffer.

Xia Xuanyue had seen too many geniuses who improved from learning, but this was the first time she was seeing someone like Zhou Wen who became worse.

Zhou Wen's Flying Immortal Stance had always lacked meaning. Since he couldn't see the scenery of the immortal palace in-game, Zhou Wen decided to come to Lotus Flower Cave to fight the Fairy and directly compare the difference between the Fairy and the Flying Immortal. He wanted to see if he could figure out the reason he couldn't keep up with it.

Through actual combat, he could see some differences.

The Fairy's movement techniques were the same as the Flying Immortals Zhou Wen saw. They were both elegant and peerless, like fairies dancing in the clouds. Their stances were also very similar.

The only difference was the intent.

They were both fairies that flew, and Fairies originated from Buddhism. As for Flying Immortals, they were from Daoism. There was a huge gap between their auras, and it could even be said that they were completely different.

When Zhou Wen understood this, he immediately felt enlightened. He knew why he felt that something was amiss. It was normal for him to have a barrier when learning the Daoist's Flying Immortal stance with a Buddhist foundation.

During his battle with the Fairy, Zhou Wen constantly considered how he could resolve this problem. The more he practiced, the more he realized that the concept of Fairy was completely different from that of a Flying Immortal, maybe even the opposite. If he wanted to master the Flying Immortal Stance, he had to completely change the concept of his movement technique before he could truly master the Flying Immortal stance of Daoism.

Therefore, while fighting the Fairy, Zhou Wen constantly weakened the similarities between his movement techniques from the Fairy's, slowly wiping away the concept of the Fairy.

He planned to first master the Flying Immortal Stance before trying to see if he could fuse the two together.

This resulted in the situation that Xia Xuanyue saw. Zhou Wen's movement technique seemed to be getting worse as he practiced. It left Xia Xuanyue puzzled as to what Zhou Wen was doing.

After watching for a while, Zhou Wen's movement technique had become terrible. From Xia Xuanyue's point of view, the movement technique looked showy, but it lacked charm.

However, Xia Xuanyue soon realized that Zhou Wen's movement technique had changed again. His originally stiff movement technique seemed to become elegant again. However, this grace was different from that of a Fairy.

Strange? It seems to be a Fairy's movement technique, but why does it feel like the two movement techniques are completely different? Xia Xuanyue could sense a problem.

It was also an extremely elegant movement technique. The movement techniques of a Fairy had a dancing aura, but Zhou Wen's movement technique looked even more transcendent. It didn't have the feeling of decadence.

Zhou Wen was also pleasantly surprised. After completely erasing the concept of the Fairy movement technique, he realized that the barrier he had previously felt seemed to have vanished. His movement technique became more and more fluid.

Xia Xuanyue could not help but feel a little surprised. Despite Zhou Wen clearly imitating the Fairy's movement technique, he was able to cultivate something that was completely different. It was her first time seeing such a person.

This Zhou Wen is indeed different from the rest. It's no wonder even a peer like Lance was defeated by him. Xia Xuanyue nodded inwardly.

Ka-Cha!

Zhou Wen didn't plan on killing the Fairy, all he did was pass by the Fairy and the force from his clothes sliced through her body, causing her to die.

Having lost his opponent, Zhou Wen felt somewhat at a loss. At that moment, he was filled with inspiration and was just about to take another step forward when he suddenly lost his opponent. The inability to unleash his powers made him unable to vent his frustration.

Just as he was about to head to the depths of the cave to look for another Fairy, even if it was a few Fairy Beasts, he suddenly felt a sharp sword intent piercing through the air.

Zhou Wen was alarmed. He had been using the Truth Listener earring all this while, but he hadn’t discovered that a person was here. Although this had something to do with his focus while practicing the Flying Immortal Stance, it also meant that the person was not one to be trifled with.

The sword intent was like a tidal wave. A black-clothed woman used her finger as a sword as she cut through the air. Her figure was like a long beam of light as a cold wind blew.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 527 - Path to Snatching Heaven

Chapter 527 Path to Snatching Heaven

Zhou Wen was surprised to see that it was Xia Xuanyue.

The shocking scene of Xia Xuanyue having her ancient sword forcefully snatched by Demonic Neonate remained fresh in his mind.

Could it be that Xia Xuanyue knows that I snatched the ancient sword and specially came to settle scores with me? Zhou Wen originally wanted to explain, but Xia Xuanyue's sword intent was just too powerful and her movement techniques were too fast. He didn't even have the chance to explain.

Whether I'm right or wrong, I'll beat her first. The one with the biggest fist has the final say. Zhou Wen understood the logic and didn't wish to explain further. He used his newly learned Flying Immortal Stance to fight Xia Xuanyue.

Xia Xuanyue was many times more powerful than the Fairy. She immediately put immense pressure on Zhou Wen. Zhou Wen wasn't satisfied to begin with. So the pressure made him feel an indescribable joy as he displayed the Flying Immortal Stance he had learned.

Xia Xuanyue's movement technique was a secret art of the Xia family, named "Path to Snatching Heaven." Originally there was no path in the world. Living beings in this world

needed to snatch a path from heaven to survive. That was why it had such a strange name as the Path to Snatching Heaven.

“Fighting all living beings for the space for survival means that only one can survive.” This was the first sentence of the Path to Snatching Heaven. Hence, the Xia family’s Path to Snatching Heaven could be said to be a battle for every inch of land. I’ll walk the path you take, leaving you nowhere to go. Thus, the Path to Snatching Heaven’s “snatching” was fully displayed.

Zhou Wen was initially delighted, but not long after, the carefree feeling vanished without a trace. He felt even more stifled than before.

Xia Xuanyue’s movement techniques were just too domineering. Zhou Wen could only use half his movement techniques most of the time before the subsequent variations were made impossible by Xia Xuanyue. Therefore Zhou Wen had to use another move.

And this was only the beginning. Xia Xuanyue’s movement technique was like a fearless bandit that constantly repressed Zhou Wen, preventing him from completing a single move. Typically, he had no choice but to change his stance midway.

There was no trace of an immortal air in the Flying Immortal’s stance at all. Even that elegant feeling disappeared. The decadence made one uncomfortable just watching it.

If others could feel aggrieved seeing this, Zhou Wen felt even worse.

However, Zhou Wen was the type of person who would take the risk. The more pressure Xia Xuanyue gave him, the more spirited he became. He had to resolve the problem.

The two of them fought silently in the cave. The space available to Zhou Wen was constantly squeezed and reduced. This was the first time he had encountered such a domineering movement technique. He felt like he had nowhere to go.

If it were someone with a weak will, they would probably give up on such a battle and fight Xia Xuanyue with brute force.

However, Zhou Wen didn't do that. He continued searching for a way to break through Xia Xuanyue's suppression.

Xia Xuanyue became more and more surprised. Zhou Wen was much younger than her—about ten years. He was about the same age as Xia Bing and company.

However, Zhou Wen's determination was far beyond what Xia Bing and company could compare with.

Under her movement technique, even Xia Bing who was well-versed in the Path to Snatching Heaven could only last for a few minutes at most, and her mental fortitude would waver.

However, despite having fought her for so long, Zhou Wen remained highly focused. He constantly tried various methods to compete with her. He didn't shrink back or risk his life irresponsibly. To be able to maintain such a firm attitude despite being constantly suppressed left Xia Xuanyue somewhat astonished.

It’s no wonder the An family thinks so highly of him. Just this firm willpower alone isn’t something an ordinary person can compare with. Resources can be obtained slowly. Essence Energy Arts, Companion Beasts, and so on can be slowly obtained. However, if a person’s willpower isn’t firm, no matter how many resources they have, it will be very difficult for them to achieve anything. If Zhou Wen doesn’t perish, he will definitely be a candidate to become a Mythical. Xia Xuanyue marveled inwardly.

Under Xia Xuanyue’s suppression, Zhou Wen’s Flying Immortal Stance constantly improved, becoming more and more otherworldly.

His heart calmed down as the pressure Xia Xuanyue exerted on him decreased.

When Xia Xuanyue saw that her Path to Snatching Heaven’s pressure on Zhou Wen was reducing, she raised the strength of her sword technique, instantly pressurizing Zhou Wen.

However, this pressure didn’t last long. Zhou Wen gradually stabilized the situation. His movement technique was becoming more and more extraordinary. It had the feeling of him ascending to the heavens, completely different from the previous Fairy movement technique.

Xia Xuanyue’s expression turned serious too. Xia Xuanyue, who had not used her Life Soul, started using her Life Soul.

A vertical eye appeared between her eyebrows. The eye did not have a pupil, but it was as clean as a mirror.

The moment Xia Xuanyue’s Life Soul appeared, Zhou Wen, who had stabilized the situation, was at a disadvantage.

This time, Zhou Wen felt like he was lacking in strength. No matter how he changed his movement technique or how perfectly he used the Flying Immortal Stance, he was still firmly suppressed by Xia Xuanyue.

The sword and person sent Zhou Wen into a repeated retreat. Even his path of retreat was sealed. It made Zhou Wen feel like he was trapped in a battle of beasts.

No… It still doesn’t work… Zhou Wen realized that no matter how he changed his movement technique, Xia Xuanyue seemed to be able to predict his movements and seal off all possibilities. It made Zhou Wen feel like a bird in a cage, or like a monkey in Buddha’s palm. He couldn’t escape no matter what.

This pressure was different from fighting a powerful Mythical creature. In his battle against a Mythical creature, he knew he was no match for it, so he could only do his best.

However, when facing Xia Xuanyue, he clearly felt that his strength was not any weaker than hers, but he felt as though he was restricted in every manner. It was as though countless invisible threads bound him, making it impossible for him to unleash his strength.

This sort of stifling feeling was worse than not having the ability to fight.

The Slaughterer Life Soul boosted Zhou Wen’s strength and speed, but it still wasn’t enough to break through Xia Xuanyue’s attacks. After repeatedly retreating, Zhou Wen was forced deep into the cave. Behind him was a stone wall, and there was more room for retreat.

Xia Xuanyue’s suppression continued. Even Xia Xuanyue had no choice but to admit that even among her peers,

there weren’t many who could last so long under her sword.

This wasn’t a matter of strength, but the pressure one felt. It was very easy for others to give up on themselves and put their lives on the line.

And in a true battle between experts, every single move needed to be calculated. The so-called burst of strength and desperation never existed. The more impulsive one was, the more flaws one revealed—it made it easier to die.

Under extreme circumstances, the best solution was not to risk his life but to calm themselves down. Even when one was bleeding and injured, one had to constantly keep calm and think of a way to solve the problem. That was the only way out.

Under such pressure, Zhou Wen had already pushed the Flying Immortal Stance to its limits, but he was still unable to match up to Xia Xuanyue. This made him involuntarily think of the female immortal who had torn out of the door.

Perhaps only such a movement technique can break through the opponent’s suppression. Zhou Wen’s eyes burned as countless thoughts flashed through his mind.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 528 - Wanting to Win

Chapter 528 Wanting to Win

The image of the Fairy tearing out of the entrance had been replayed countless times in Zhou Wen’s mind. It wasn’t difficult to imitate the Fairy’s stance, but it was difficult for him to understand the insights and profundity within.

Through his understanding of the Flying Immortal Stance, Zhou Wen had gained some understanding of the fairy who tore out of the entrance. However, he didn’t know what effects these insights might have.

However, he was already in a desperate situation. Zhou Wen couldn’t care less. At the instant Xia Xuanyue’s Sword Technique sealed off all his escape routes, he used Transcendent Flying Immortal.

This Transcendent Flying Immortal technique was completely different from the previous Transcendent Flying Immortal. Although the moves were the same, the concept was completely different.

In the past, Transcendent Flying Immortal was extremely domineering, but now, it had a free and unrestrained feeling that transcended the mortal world. If one had to use a single word to describe it, Zhou Wen felt that this was what a true “immortal” was. Immortals in the traditional view of East District definitely weren’t overbearing in a peerless manner.

Immortals and deities were two completely different concepts. The power represented by deities made them revered by others because of the authority they had in certain aspects; therefore, deities were rulers.

The Chinese character for ‘immortal’ was the word ‘human’ and ‘mountain’ combined. The original meaning was about people seeking transcendence in the mortals. Immortality was simply a pursuit, a form of growth. From a certain perspective, one could even say that they were completely different from the deities who represented power.

Previously, Transcendent Flying Immortal was overly domineering and was closer to a deity. Now, the Transcendent Flying Immortal that Zhou Wen was using had the air of an immortal.

Xia Xuanyue’s Life Soul was known as Catoptric Eyes. It could allow her to enter an extraordinary ethereal state. Under that ethereal state, not only could she strengthen her physique, but it could also allow her to possess the power of clairvoyance. Although she could not really see the future, she could foresee her opponent’s actions, but it was not 100% accurate.

Relying on the power of the Catoptric Eyes and the Path to Snatching Heaven, coupled with her outstanding sword techniques, Xia Xuanyue was a rather terrifying person in her generation. Some even believed that she could be compared to An Tianzuo, who was about the same age.

In fact, even amongst the older generation, there weren’t many who could match Xia Xuanyue, let alone her peers.

Xia Xuanyue had already pushed Zhou Wen to a corner and was just about to stop. She wasn’t really planning on fighting a life and death battle with Zhou Wen to begin with.

She only felt that Zhou Wen desired more opportunities to use his movement technique. She also wanted to see how far he could go with it. Therefore, she took the initiative to be Zhou Wen’s sparring partner to force him to showcase his movement technique.

Zhou Wen’s performance had already surprised her. His movement technique was already comparable to the top movement techniques of the six families, but that was all.

Being able to match a top-notch movement technique didn’t mean that he could match a top-notch person. In fact, Zhou Wen’s movement technique wasn’t her match.

Just as she was about to stop, Xia Xuanyue’s pupils constricted. This was because her Catoptric Eyes suddenly seemed to lose their effect, preventing her from deducing Zhou Wen’s trajectory.

The Catoptric Eyes weren’t just having bouts of clairvoyance for no reason. An illusion that reflected in her eye constantly predicted her opponent’s reactions, allowing Xia Xuanyue to know what the opponent might do next so that she could be prepared in advance or deal with them in a targeted manner.

The deduction was extremely fast, just like a computer processing data. Feedback would appear in Xia Xuanyue’s mind in an instant. There was no need for complicated thoughts, as they could be synchronized with the battle.

However, the present situation was different. The Catoptric Eyes were unable to deduce Zhou Wen’s subsequent reactions. Or rather, there were too many subsequent reactions, so they were pointless as a reference.

Just like a person walking on a three-pronged road without considering the path they came from, Xia Xuanyue could

easily determine which path the person would choose from the two paths. The chance of determining the correct path was very high, and it was also very easy to prepare for it. At most, she could make preparations for both paths.

But now, Zhou Wen seemed to be standing at a bustling fork with at least a hundred forks. Even if her Catoptric Eyes could deduce all the possibilities, it was meaningless. It would be impossible for Xia Xuanyue to seal off so many subsequent challenges.

The present Zhou Wen gave Xia Xuanyue such a feeling. His movement techniques appeared unpredictable, and even Xia Xuanyue couldn’t predict his trajectory.

At that moment, the boundary between the Dragon Gate Flying Immortal Art and the Transcendent Flying Immortal began to blur. There was no longer any difference between movement techniques and attack moves. It could be unleashed as he wished, but it possessed an unfathomable profundity.

Elegant!

Xia Xuanyue could only use that word to describe Zhou Wen’s movement technique. Regardless of how domineering her sword techniques and Path to Snatching Heaven were, they didn’t seem to pose a threat to him.

And Zhou Wen’s casual actions made Xia Xuanyue feel immense pressure. Wherever his clothes passed, cracks would appear in the void.

Xia Xuanyue realized that she couldn’t keep up with Zhou Wen’s speed.

She couldn’t help but turn serious. She treated Zhou Wen as an equal, not like before when she only wanted to see what Zhou Wen could accomplish.

Xia Xuanyue’s movement technique was domineering and Zhou Wen’s movement technique was elegant. The two completely different movement techniques constantly clashed, benefiting Zhou Wen and Xia Xuanyue greatly.

In terms of talent, Xia Xuanyue was not weaker than anyone else. Not many people in the Xia Clan could master the Path to Snatching Heaven, and Xia Xuanyue had gained basic mastery when she was just twelve.

But at her current level, be it her Path to Snatching Heaven movement technique or her own level or realm, she had reached a bottleneck.

To advance to the Mythical stage from the Epic stage was as difficult as ascending to the heavens. It was already difficult enough to nurture a Mythical pet. It required large amounts of resources, but for humans to advance to the Mythical stage on their own, it was hundreds or thousands of times more difficult than nurturing a Mythical pet.

There were many members of the six families with resources and talent, but in all these years, how many people could truly advance to the Mythical stage?

With a perfect Life Soul, unparalleled movement and sword techniques, and a Mythical pet, Xia Xuanyue, who wasn’t even thirty years old, was already standing at the pinnacle of the human race.

It’s lonely at the top. In Xia Xuanyue’s eyes, it was not a compliment, but a sense of sorrow. She had no path to herself.

Therefore, even when she lost her Mythical Companion Beast, Xia Xuanyue didn’t think too much about it. This was because she was always stuck. Even if she waited for a few years for a Mythical Companion Beast, things would still be the same. It didn’t make much of a difference to her.

However, today’s battle with Zhou Wen had stirred up her long-awaited desire for victory and a breakthrough. Even her long-tired thoughts seemed to become active.

Victory had become a matter of course in the past few years, not a pursuit. However, Xia Xuanyue was trying to win now.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 529 - John“s Arrival

Chapter 529 John“s Arrival

With the sword and body combined, Xia Xuanyue fused her sword techniques and movement techniques into one, no longer separating them from each other. The body was the sword, and the sword was the body. Only then could she resist Zhou Wen’s Transcendent Flying Immortal.

The two of them gradually realized that although their movement techniques looked completely different and were even diametrically opposite, they also seemed to complement each other.

The Path to Snatching Heaven was created on the principle of human strength and the concept of taking fate into one’s hands. As for Zhou Wen’s concept of immortal, it was also a product of human pursuit for transcendence.

However, one was to conquer nature while the other was to return to nature. It could be said that the same pursuit had led to two completely different paths.

In a battle between two techniques, it was difficult to determine who was better. No one could gain the upper hand.

Both of them were pursuing a breakthrough and wanted to suppress each other. However, with every bit of insight they gained, they found their opponents were stronger than before. No matter how hard they tried, they could not defeat the other.

This was the first time they had encountered such a tenacious opponent. Each of them racked their brains, pushed themselves to the limits, and constantly gained revelations and countermeasures.

The two figures in the Lotus Flower Cave constantly intersected like two streams of light. Wherever the streams of light went, forces such as saber beams and sword beams followed. Just the force produced by the fluttering of clothes could easily cut through rocks, leaving behind marks like sword slashes.

Wherever the two of them went, the Fairy Beasts and Fairies were torn apart by the blade beams. The surrounding rocks also shattered, and the Lotus Flower Cave was battle-scarred.

Zhou Wen had already grasped the concept of the fairy who tore through the entrance. He could perfectly match it with Transcendent Flying Immortal, but he had ultimately failed to defeat Xia Xuanyue. He couldn’t help but wonder…

I wonder if it’ll work if I fuse the two different concepts of Fairy and Flying Immortal into Transcendent Flying Immortal! Zhou Wen thought to himself.

This was definitely a crazy and bold idea. The moves were the same, but the concepts were different. It might not be impossible.

Zhou Wen’s mind was constantly bubbling as he waited for the opportunity.

Xia Xuanyue was also pondering. The Xia family was originally an ancient family in the East District. Before the dimensional storms, they had a deep cultural heritage.

Therefore, after the dimensional storms, the Xia family received Essence Energy Arts early. There were even many Essence Energy Arts and techniques that the Xia family had learned from ancient culture.

The Path to Snatching Heaven was an example. Many of the Xia family's Essence Energy Arts were the same. Outsiders only believed that the Xia family was powerful because it had produced one of the Six Federation Heroes.

However, they didn't know that even without the Xia family's hero, they wouldn't be any weaker.

Therefore, the Xia family had the confidence to abandon the famous Invincible Connate Divine Art. This was because even without the Invincible Connate Divine Art, the Essence Energy Art that the Xia family possessed was enough to make them stand tall in the world of experts.

The Essence Energy Art that Xia Xuanyue cultivated was one of the Essence Energy Arts that the Xia family had learned in ancient culture. It was called the "Great Emperor Sutra."

However, as it was derived from ancient culture, it wasn't as complete as a ready-made Essence Energy Art. After generations of the Xia family researched and improved it, the Great Emperor Sutra was completed in Xia Xuanyue's generation, with the Mortal, Legendary, and Epic stage done.

However, after reaching the Epic stage, no one knew how to proceed. The Great Emperor Sutra did not have any subsequent followup, so they had to rely on themselves to figure things out.

Xia Xuanyue had been studying the Great Emperor Sutra, but her improvement was limited. In the past couple of

years, she had completely stopped progressing. Even though she had read a lot of ancient books, trying to find a direction for a breakthrough through was minuscule.

However, the battle with Zhou Wen gave Xia Xuanyue new ideas.

How difficult is it to snatch paths from the Heavens? As the leader of the human race, the Emperor is the one who will face Heaven’s Path most directly… A thought was sprouting in Xia Xuanyue’s mind.

The two figures continued to clash. Suddenly, the two of them seemed to come to a tacit understanding and simultaneously withdrew from the battle. Both of them stood at the end of the cave and stared at their opponent. There seemed to be a strange energy brewing within their bodies, like the calm before the storm.

They were in one of the dimensionalized Lotus Flower Caves. On top of the cave was an intricate lotus flower pattern, and there was even a Fairy flying around it.

As the two of them stood in silence, a distorted space suddenly appeared in the middle of the lotus flower pattern. A creature emerged from the lotus flower, appearing right in the middle of the two of them.

It was a Fairy. When the Fairy appeared, a terrifying power suddenly erupted from within the cave.

In an instant, the Fairy seemed to be sliced apart by countless sword beams, turning into fragments. Zhou Wen and Xia Xuanyue’s auras were also stirred as they moved involuntarily.

Zhou Wen’s body went from extreme stillness to extreme movement as he instantly streaked across the void. He looked elegant and graceful, but it made it impossible for anyone to react.

Despite being visible to the naked eye, one’s brain was unable to fire the order to react. One could only watch as the figure flitted away. The despair was enough to destroy a person’s soul.

However, not only did Xia Xuanyue react, but she also took a step forward. The sword intent on her seemed to shatter the heavens. With unparalleled conviction, she faced Zhou Wen’s terrifying strike.

Blood bloomed like flowers!

Xia Xuanyue’s finger stopped at Zhou Wen’s glabella. As for Zhou Wen’s finger, it was stuck to Xia Xuanyue’s swan-like neck. Drops of blood slid down their fingers.

…

John had come to Luoyang again. This was not his first time here, but his mood was completely different from the last time he came.

Zhou Wen, it’s time for you to pay the price for your actions. John walked on Luoyang’s streets. His handsome angel-like face attracted the attention of the passers-by.

There were many handsome men, but they had never seen anyone as handsome as John.

However, John was completely different from the princely gentleman he used to be. There was no expression on his

face, and he was as perfect as a sculpture. His every move was elegant and dignified.

“Mr. John, welcome to Luoyang.” An Sheng stood in front of the car and greeted John with a smile.

Although he wasn’t as handsome as John, for some reason he didn’t seem to pale in comparison when standing in front of him.

Two girls who stood on the street opposite them were momentarily lost as to who was more charming.

“Where’s Zhou Wen?” John looked at An Sheng and asked coldly. It was as though he held zero concern about anyone apart from Zhou Wen.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 530 - Divine Skill

Chapter 530 Divine Skill

Zhou Wen returned to his dorm and looked at the blood-colored avatar’s information with his mysterious phone. He had a smile that appeared as though he had hit the lottery.

Transcendent Flying Immortal: Mythical

Just one word made Zhou Wen feel sweet inside and out. The Dragon Gate Fairy Skill and Dragon Gate Flying Immortal Skill he had learned previously had vanished, leaving behind only one Transcendent Flying Immortal skill.

Furthermore, this skill didn’t have any rank. What was even more strange was that there wasn’t any Essence Energy consumption.

However, Zhou Wen soon understood why Transcendent Flying Immortal didn’t have any Essence Energy expenditure. This was because he could use it as he wished. He could freely control how much Essence Energy he expended, so there was naturally no limit to it.

If only advancing to the Mythical stage could be as simple as that, Zhou Wen thought greedily.

Unfortunately, his Life Soul hadn’t advanced to the Perfect stage yet. It was too early to think about the Mythical stage. His most important Life Soul, Slaughterer, was still in its Primordial Body form and had yet to advance.

Regardless, having a divine skill raises my strength greatly. If I can train all my skills to a divine level, I'll be really impressive. Zhou Wen tried some other skills and realized that it would be difficult for him to train his skills to Rank 10, much less advance to a Mythical level.

In fact, although a divine skill was much easier than advancing to the Mythical stage, not everyone could comprehend a divine skill at the Epic stage.

The reason Zhou Wen was able to comprehend it was partly because of his talent and partly because he had sufficient resources. If he didn't have so many foundation skills or hadn't watched the phenomenon of the fairy tearing out of the entrance, it would be impossible for him to advance to the Mythical level.

Another important reason was that his opponent was powerful enough. Moreover, his opponent's technique was a perfect match for his Transcendent Flying Immortal. Both sides had gained new insights before he advanced to the Mythical level.

Zhou Wen guessed that Xia Xuanyue's move had probably advanced to the Mythical level as well. However, she didn't have the mysterious phone to read the information about herself. Even so, she likely knew deep down what had happened.

The heritage of the six families is truly terrifying. Just any random woman has such capabilities. Zhou Wen increasingly felt that the six families had a strong foundation.

However, he was thinking too much. Xia Xuanyue was a top expert among the six families. They weren't as common as Zhou Wen imagined.

Just as he was admiring his divine skill, his phone suddenly rang. It was An Sheng.

“Young Master Wen, John has arrived in Luoyang. He came alone. He didn’t bring a single person from the Cape family,” An Sheng said.

Zhou Wen knew that An Sheng meant that since John had dared to come to Luoyang alone, he definitely wasn’t completely unprepared. He was also reminding Zhou Wen to be careful.

How could An Sheng know that Zhou Wen was more careful than he imagined? This was because Zhou Wen knew that he wasn’t only facing John, but also the terrifying Thearch.

“Where’s the battle location? What time is it?” Zhou Wen asked.

“Tomorrow. It’ll be held in the city’s arena. The venue has been set up. We definitely won’t let any external forces affect your battle with John. You can rest assured about this. We’ve even invited the Zhang family and the Xia family to watch the battle as witnesses to prevent the Cape family from making an issue afterward. People from the Dugu family will also come, but they haven’t arrived yet. They may appear tomorrow.” An Sheng explained the general situation.

“Ah Sheng, have you met John? Do you feel that he’s different from before?” When Zhou Wen asked this question, he was thinking about the words The Thearch had accidentally sent him.

“He’s indeed a little different. He looks very confident and his aura is very strong. It’s far from the standard of a

Legendary. This person is definitely not simple," An Sheng said.

"Nothing else?" Zhou Wen asked.

"What else?" An Sheng didn't know what Zhou Wen was referring to.

"Do you feel that John's looks, temper, or voice are different from before?" Zhou Wen didn't know how to put it.

"His temper could be a little different from before. He looks cold, as though he doesn't care about anything. He's like a high and mighty god. The way he looks at us is like looking at ants," An Sheng said after some thought.

"It's not that. Let's put it this way. Don't you feel that he's a little effeminate?" Zhou Wen asked again.

"Not really," An Sheng said after some thought.

Zhou Wen thought, Could it be that The Thearch's message wasn't sent to John?

An Sheng said that he would pick Zhou Wen up tomorrow. He told him to make preparations for battle.

…

The biggest arena in Luoyang was mainly used for Companion Beasts to battle. It was mostly a performance-type battle, but the military had sealed the arena today. Only a few people who were invited could enter the arena.

Xia Xuanyue was among the crowd. As soon as she entered the arena, she saw a man with a sword on his back standing in front of the guardrail of the arena.

Dugu Ge? Xia Xuanyue was slightly surprised to see the man. She never expected him to come to Luoyang.

Dugu Ge was slightly older than Xia Xuanyue and An Tianzuo by a few years. He had just reached his thirties and Xia Xuanyue had always heard about this legend.

Among the six families, Dugu Ge had a very special nickname: “The only man in the Dugu family who doesn’t cower.”

It wasn’t that the men of the Dugu family were really cowardly. However, they specialized in movement techniques, so when others fought with the Dugu family, they couldn’t even touch their bodies. It was extremely depressing and humbling, which was why they mocked the Dugu family for being cowardly.

In such a family clan, Dugu Ge was quite different. He didn’t use his movement techniques to win battles. When he was out traveling, he had defeated the six families and made them accept the loss wholeheartedly. Among those around the same age as Dugu Ge, no one could beat him.

Unfortunately, Dugu Ge was a little older than them and didn’t join the battle between An Tianzuo and the six families’ younger generation. The six families believed that Dugu Ge was definitely no weaker than An Tianzuo and might even be stronger.

Back when Dugu Ge went to the Xia family to challenge them, Xia Xuanyue was only ten years old. However, she had a deep impression of him because even her cousin, whom she had idolized since she was young, was unable to defeat Dugu Ge.

In recent years, she had rarely heard of Dugu Ge. She heard that he spent time conquering a large dimensional zone in the South District. She never expected to see him here.

“I remember you. You’re Loser’s sister, right?” Dugu Ge looked at Xia Xuanyue and recalled.

“My brother’s name is Xia Liuchuan, not Loser.” Xia Xuanyue said in a depressed tone.

“It’s all the same.” Dugu Ge said that and turned to look at the arena. He saw a handsome man standing in the arena.

“That young man from the Cape’s family is very scary,” Dugu Ge said to Xia Xuanyue.

Xia Xuanyue was slightly surprised. She didn’t expect Dugu Ge to have such a high opinion of John. It was truly terrifying for Dugu Ge to say the word ‘scary’.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 531 - Inside the Cocoon

Chapter 531 Inside the Cocoon

Xia Xuanyue could not help but look at John. Although he used to have the title of Saint, titles were just a joke in the six families.

Ignoring Xia Xuanyue's generation, even amongst John's peers, there was also a freak like Lance. John paled in comparison.

Now that John had actually been praised by Dugu Ge, Xia Xuanyue could not help but take a closer look at him.

John stood in the arena like an ancient Greek statue. Despite just standing there, he gave off a beautiful, holy feeling. His aura was indeed very strong, making him likely to be at the Epic stage. However, Xia Xuanyue did not know what horror Dugu Ge was referring to.

"Why do you say that?" Xia Xuanyue walked up to Dugu Ge and asked curiously.

"He has a special power," Dugu Ge said as he looked at John.

"Special?" Xia Xuanyue did not understand what Dugu Ge meant by special.

Many Essence Energy Arts, Essence Energy Skills, Pets, Life Providences, and Life Souls could be called special powers. This description was just too general.

Dugu Ge said, “I entered a dimensional zone with Loser. In that dimensional zone, I found a black cocoon. Did he tell you about it?”

“No, but I’ve heard of such cocoons. The six families have similar records. There will be similar cocoons in certain mysterious dimensional zones. However, there will be powerful Mythical creatures nearby. No one knows what’s inside the cocoons. Most people have guessed that they might be the descendants of Mythical creatures,” said Xia Xuanyue.

“No, they are definitely not the descendants of ordinary Mythical creatures. Back then, Loser and I cracked a black cocoon and saw the creature inside. It was completely different from the Mythical creature that protected it. It was an even more terrifying existence,” Dugu Ge said as his gaze landed on John. He said affirmatively, “There’s a similar aura on John, but it’s not quite the same.”

“What kind of creature is it? Why has my brother never mentioned it?” Xia Xuanyue asked.

“I don’t know. We originally thought that with our strength and Mythical pets, it wouldn’t be difficult for us to take the black cocoon even if we couldn’t defeat the Mythical creature guarding it. In the end, we used all our strength and only managed to crack open a tiny hole. We were nearly killed by the creature outside the black cocoon. As for the creature inside the black cocoon, it just waved its hand,” Dugu Ge paused before continuing, “and Loser suffered serious injuries. You can say that we barely escaped death. He recuperated at my house for nearly six months before he recovered.”

“I remember now. A year ago, my brother went to the South District. He said that he would be traveling for a month or two, but he only came back after almost a year. It should be that time, right?” Xia Xuanyue paused for a moment before continuing, “Ever since he came back, my brother seems to have changed. He’s checking up on documents every day as if he’s researching something. He’s acting mysteriously. When I ask him, he doesn’t tell me what he’s studying.”

“It was probably then. Anyone who has seen such a terrifying creature would not be indifferent. However, it was too dangerous. He probably didn’t want you to worry and was afraid that you would stop him from going again. That’s why he didn’t tell you,” said Dugu Ge.

“You’re saying that John has the aura of that kind of creature?” Xia Xuanyue looked at John with a strange expression.

“Yes, but it’s different. I’m not sure if it’s the same aura,” Dugu Ge said.

“What are you talking about?” A voice came from behind. A long-haired man in a robe walked over.

The man looked ordinary, but his eyes were exceptionally good-looking. They weren’t considered big, nor were they double eyelids, but the contours were especially aesthetic.

“Zhang Chunqiu, why are you willing to come out?” Dugu Ge looked at the man in surprise.

Dugu Ge hadn’t lost when he challenged the young scions of the six families years ago. However, there were also people who could fight him to a draw. Zhang Chunqiu was one of them.

In that era, the geniuses of the six families were numerous. They were known as the Golden Generation. Perhaps that generation had used up all the luck of the six families, and with four to five years as a demarcation line, the number of outstanding people who were born after that was few and far between. When it came to John’s generation, only Lance was outstanding, while the others were lacking.

On the contrary, amazing geniuses outside of the six great family clans appeared.

“The An family requested our Zhang family to bear witness, so I came.” Zhang Chunqiu walked to Dugu Ge’s side and sat down in the spectator stand.

“Over such a small event, you came instead of Zhang Xiao?” Dugu Ge didn’t believe it.

“The world hasn’t been peaceful recently, and the Fiend Tomb has been stirring. With the appearance of the black cubes, I feel like something big is about to happen, so I came out to take a look,” Zhang Chunqiu said.

“Something happened with the Fiend Tomb?” Dugu Ge and Xia Xuanyue were shocked.

They knew that the Zhang family had been guarding the Fiend Tomb for years. Many generations of people had ended up being buried there, which was why the creatures in the Fiend Tomb were unable to cause trouble in the human world.

If something really happened to the Fiend Tomb, the Zhang family would definitely be affected.

“It’s temporarily stabilized, so I can come out for a walk.” Zhang Chunqiu’s gaze landed on John, and his eyes

narrowed slightly. “This John has something interesting about him.”

“You can tell, too?” Dugu Ge sat down beside Zhang Chunqiu.

Xia Xuanyue also sat down. Compared to Zhang Chunqiu and Dugu Ge’s generation, her talent and strength were not inferior. However, she lacked their experience.

Years ago, there were very few Mythical Companion Eggs amongst the six families. It was unlike now where they could just give Xia Xuanyue a Mythical Companion Egg.

Back then, if they wanted a Mythical Companion Egg, they had to take the risk in the dimensional zones. This resulted in a difference in experience.

However, their generation was also the most tragic generation when it came to deaths. Very few managed to retrieve Mythical Creatures alive.

“I just came to take a look since it’s along the way. I didn’t expect to see anything so interesting. However, his opponent is a little weak. I wonder if he can force that thing out,” Zhang Chunqiu said.

“Not necessarily. Although I don’t know how terrifying that thing is, John’s opponent is definitely not weak,” Xia Xuanyue said.

Zhang Chunqiu smiled. “Zhou Wen should be Wang Mingyuan’s student, right? Speaking of which, I really wanted to meet Wang Mingyuan. Unfortunately, I missed the opportunity.”

Dugu Ge said, “To be able to defeat Lance, he can’t be weak. However, he hasn’t had much time to grow. I wonder how far he has progressed.”

As the trio spoke, Zhou Wen entered the venue. Everyone couldn’t help but look over.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 532 - The Appearance of the Six-Winged Seraphim

Chapter 532 The Appearance of the Six-Winged Seraphim

“Tsk, look at his Life Providence. He’s indeed extraordinary. It’s not easy to have one even among the six families,” Zhang Chunqiu said with narrowed eyes as he sized up Zhou Wen.

“This person’s aura is deep and reserved, and his eyes are resolute. If he doesn’t die, he will definitely be able to achieve something in the future.” Dugu Ge nodded.

“In recent years, outstanding talents have appeared from all over the world. On the contrary, although there are many talented people born in our six families, they lack the light from providence and perseverance,” Zhang Chunqiu sighed.

Xia Xuanyue and Dugu Ge remained silent. What Zhang Chunqiu said was something that they were all worried about. The six families seemed to be getting worse with each generation, and they no longer seemed favored by providence.

However, this was a problem that no one could solve. If one’s son was lacking, the father could only worry.

“Zhou Wen, we finally meet again.” John was standing quietly in the square with his eyes closed. The moment Zhou

Wen stepped into the venue, he opened his eyes and stared intently at him.

“I don’t want to see you that much.” As Zhou Wen spoke, he couldn’t help but glance at John’s crotch.

Fortunately, he couldn’t see anything through his clothes. Of course, Zhou Wen only subconsciously took a glance. He didn’t really want to see anything that burned his eyes, so he didn’t use Truth Listener’s hearing ability to take a gander at that spot.

“From today onwards, you probably won’t have the chance to see me again. Today, I’m going to make you repay what you owe me and my sister, along with the interest. I’ll let you have a taste of having your Essence Energy sea crippled. That feeling of living a life worse than death,” John said coldly.

“I’m afraid I’ll disappoint you,” Zhou Wen said firmly.

It was easy to kill Zhou Wen, but it was impossible to cripple his Essence Energy sea because he didn’t have any.

John didn’t say a word as he walked towards Zhou Wen.

An Sheng led many soldiers to guard the stands and he watched every action.

In the An family’s study, An Tianzuo was watching the battle through the surveillance footage from his phone.

In the cave in Chess Mountain, The Thearch was also looking at her phone. The scene was the same as An Tianzuo’s phone.

“You won’t be able to escape from my palm.” Upon seeing Zhou Wen on the screen, The Thearch’s seductive eyes narrowed slightly.

“Zhou Wen, accept the judgment of God,” John said as he raised his hand up high. Holy light spewed out from his hand and transformed into a towering Blade of Holy Light that slashed down at Zhou Wen. It was the famous Holy Light Judgment of the Cape family. One had to possess the hero bloodline of the Cape family to cultivate this terrifying Essence Energy Skill.

Zhou Wen had seen this move before, but it wasn’t as terrifying as it was now. Clearly, John’s strength had already reached the peak of the Epic stage.

Zhou Wen had no intention of retreating. He also raised his arm and slashed out a blood-colored wheel. It was none other than the Demonic Astral Wheel.

The blood-red wheel of light collided with the Blade of Holy Light and shattered with a terrifying explosion. The light blade and the light wheel tore apart, forming a shock wave that directly lifted the ground of the arena. The surface of the steel-concrete structure ebbed like a wave.

With just one strike, the ground was destroyed.

“Not bad. At this age, he has already reached the Epic stage. He’s much stronger than we were back then,” said Zhang Chunqiu with a smile.

Dugu Ge nodded slightly. “He’s indeed very strong. I wonder if he has a Mythical Companion Beast?”

“It’s hard to say. An Tianzuo is a little terrifying. Perhaps he can get a Mythical Companion Egg for Zhou Wen,” Zhang

Chunqiu said.

In the arena, John waved his arms. He repeatedly cast Holy Light Judgment attacks at him. Such a terrifying power seemed to be casually unleashed.

Zhou Wen had no intention of drawing his saber. At the same time, he brandished the Demonic Astral Wheel to fight John, shattering all the Holy Light Judgment attacks.

Dugu Ge and the others originally thought that such a battle would not last for long because the Holy Light Judgment consumed a huge amount of Essence Energy. Even with the hero bloodline and constitution of the Cape family, it was impossible to use it multiple times.

Although they had never seen Zhou Wen’s Essence Energy Skill before, it was clearly an extremely draining Essence Energy Skill for it to be able to resist the Holy Light Judgment. It also couldn’t be delivered forever.

But soon, they were surprised to discover that both John and Zhou Wen were able to continuously slash out Essence Energy Skills without any signs of exhaustion. In a blink of an eye, more than ten Holy Light Judgment attacks and Demonic Astral Wheels were slashed out.

The entire arena was a mess. The terrifying collision created huge craters in the ground.

Seeing that Holy Light Judgment couldn’t gain the upper hand, John didn’t plan on continuing. He stopped and stared at Zhou Wen. “I never expected you to come this far. It looks like I’ve underestimated you.”

“Your improvement isn’t slow either, but is that all?” Zhou Wen stared at John.

Although repeated unleashing of such Essence Energy attacks was indeed very powerful, it was nothing to Zhou Wen.

If John had really contacted The Thearch, his strength wouldn’t be that simple. After all, The Thearch knew that Zhou Wen had two Mythical pets—Six-Winged and Truth Listener.

Under such circumstances, The Thearch still believed that he was no match for John and even wanted him to beg for mercy at Chess Mountain. No matter how he thought about it, it was impossible for John’s strength to be limited to this.

Furthermore, Zhou Wen also sensed a familiar yet unfamiliar aura from John.

John didn’t fly into a rage because of Zhou Wen’s provocation. His expression didn’t change as he looked up at the sky and said, “Zhou Wen, you were indeed stronger than me in the past. You are indeed a genius. Even I have to admire you for reaching such a level in such a short period of time.”

“What you said is rather pertinent,” Zhou Wen said with a smile.

John continued expressionlessly, “But it’s different now. No matter how talented you are and how hard you work, you’re ultimately a mere mortal.”

“As for me, I’m the one chosen by God. I’ll become God.” John’s eyes turned fervent as a terrifying holy light rose from his body. White holy light illuminated the entire arena. The ordinary soldiers could not even open their eyes.

“What’s that? A Mythical Companion Beast?” When the light weakened, everyone stared at the spot behind John in shock.

A six-winged seraphim with holy light was floating behind him.

When the ordinary soldiers saw the six-winged seraphim, they actually had the urge to kneel and worship it.

Dugu Ge and Zhang Chunqiu looked at each other and saw the surprise and excitement in each other’s eyes. They had clearly realized something.

Zhou Wen also stared at the six-winged seraphim. He also sensed that there was something amiss with the six-winged seraphim’s aura. It wasn’t an ordinary Companion Beast, but it was somewhat similar to the creatures inside the white cocoons.

“What a terrifying aura. Is it a Mythical Companion Beast?” Xia Xuanyue had never seen the creatures inside the cocoons, so she naturally didn’t know what it was.

“No, that’s an existence even more terrifying than a Mythical Companion Beast,” said Dugu Ge.

“Could it be…” Xia Xuanyue immediately guessed what it was.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 533 - Mythical Power

Chapter 533 Mythical Power

John opened his arms as though he was hugging the sky. The six-winged seraphim transformed into feathers that flew towards his body, turning into an angel armor that enveloped John’s body.

However, that angelic armor seemed to grow on John’s body and had already become a part of him. The six wings of the seraphim angel unfurled behind him, exuding a holy glow. Together with the holy armor and his handsome face, he really looked like a god.

Everyone’s eyes were focused on John. Even a blind man could sense the terrifying energy fluctuations emanating from him.

“Is that the creature inside the cocoon? It doesn’t look like a Companion Beast, but it seems different from ordinary dimensional creatures.” Xia Xuanyue frowned as she pondered.

Dugu Ge and Zhang Chunqiu looked at John without saying a word, but the look in their eyes was a little strange.

An Sheng looked at Zhou Wen worriedly. John’s situation was indeed a little odd. He wasn’t sure if Zhou Wen could handle it.

An Tianzuo looked at the surveillance footage on his phone and frowned.

The six angelic wings on John’s back flapped slightly as his body floated in midair. He looked coldly at Zhou Wen and said, “Zhou Wen, I’ll tell you now what the difference between a god and a human is.”

With that said, John extended his hand and aimed his palm at Zhou Wen.

John shot out a beam of light from his palm. It was unbelievably fast, as though it was holy light that could destroy everything.

Boom!

The entire arena exploded like a volcanic eruption. The protective shield shattered and the arena shook.

“Mythical power,” Dugu Ge said with a serious expression.

“It’s indeed power at the Mythical stage.” Zhang Chunqiu nodded slightly.

Xia Xuanyue had had a Mythical Companion Beast before and knew that John’s strike was definitely at the Mythical stage. She couldn’t help but be alarmed.

The strength at the Mythical stage wasn’t new, but typically speaking, it was released from a Mythical Companion Beast. However, John released the strike himself; it wasn’t a Companion Beast’s strength.

There was a huge difference. No matter how powerful a Companion Beast was, it was only a tool. It was like a

firearm. The person who used the firearm didn’t become stronger.

But now, John displayed strength that showed that he had become much stronger. Not only did he improve his destructive power, but his physical constitution had also increased to another level.

The explosion dimmed and everyone immediately realized that Zhou Wen hadn’t been injured by the terrifying force. A gigantic white six-winged dragon appeared in front of him. It was the dragon that had blocked John’s attack.

“Six-Winged Guardian Dragon? So that’s Zhou Wen’s Companion Beast!” Dugu Ge said in surprise.

Xia Xuanyue and Zhang Chunqiu were somewhat surprised. They never expected the first Mythical Companion Beast on the ranking to belong to Zhou Wen. They originally imagined that it belonged to a local bigwig.

Inside Chess Mountain, The Thearch saw Zhou Wen’s Six-Winged Guardian Dragon through the video on her phone. She curled her lips and said, “Isn’t it a little too naive to use a Six-Winged Guardian Dragon to fight a Guardian?”

John looked at the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon and said coldly, “So that Six-Winged Guardian Dragon belongs to you. Unfortunately, even if you have a powerful Mythical pet, it’s impossible to change the fate of defeat.”

With that said, John made the sign of the cross on the front of his chest. The six wings on his back glowed brightly as terrifying energy fluctuations condensed once again, bursting forth with even more terrifying light waves than before.

The Six-Winged Guardian Dragon roared as the sanctified body burst forth with a blazing-white flame, colliding with John’s beam.

Boom!

The two forces collided and exploded. The Six-Winged Guardian Dragon’s huge body tore open a deep ditch on the ground. It retreated more than ten meters before finally stopping.

The Six-Winged Guardian Dragon roared angrily. It flapped its six wings and charged towards John.

John’s expression did not change, but his body disappeared as if he had teleported. When he reappeared, he was already in front of the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon. Using terrifying holy light, his fist struck the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon’s chin.

The massive body of the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon was thrown in the air by the uppercut.

John’s figure flashed again and he arrived in front of the Six-Winged Dragon that was rising up like a ray of light. He punched out expressionlessly, causing the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon to sway left and right. Dragon blood spewed wildly from its mouth, and finally, John punched its head and sent it flying.

Boom!

The Six-Winged Guardian Dragon crashed into the spectator stands, causing half of the arena to collapse.

The thing An Sheng was worried about happened in the end. Even the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon couldn’t match John.

John, who was floating in the air, was now like a saint that had descended upon the world to represent God.

“What are your thoughts on this?” Dugu Ge asked Zhang Chunqiu.

“Very strong, but it’s still within the scope of a Mythical stage,” Zhang Chunqiu said after some thought.

Dugu Ge nodded in agreement before saying, “Unfortunately, Zhou Wen’s Mythical Companion Beast has been defeated. He shouldn’t be able to continue fighting. It will be difficult for him to force out the full strength of that thing.”

“It’s indeed a pity.” Zhang Chunqiu also felt that the duel would come to an end.

“I don’t think Zhou Wen will admit defeat so easily,” Xia Xuanyue suddenly said.

“Although that Six-Winged Guardian Dragon still has the ability to fight, there’s no point in continuing the battle. It will ultimately lose,” Dugu Ge said.

He was mistaken. Xia Xuanyue’s comment about Zhou Wen not admitting defeat wasn’t because the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon still had the ability to do combat. She was referring to Zhou Wen himself.

However, Xia Xuanyue knew that there was no point in explaining, so she decided not to say anything, and continued watching patiently.

“Zhou Wen, do you now know the difference between a god and a human? Even if you can advance to the Epic stage and possess a Mythical pet, you are still an ant in front of

God.” John wasn’t in a hurry to cripple Zhou Wen. He wanted Zhou Wen to completely collapse in despair.

The Six-Winged Guardian Dragon crawled up from the collapsed pit and roared as it charged forward. However, Zhou Wen extended his hand and beckoned for it. The Six-Winged Guardian Dragon transformed into six Holy Flaming Dragon Wings that appeared behind him.

Although the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon still had the ability to fight, its Strength, Speed, and other aspects were inferior to John’s. There was no point in continuing the battle.

“I don’t see a god. I only see a lunatic with greater strength,” Zhou Wen said indifferently as he looked at John.

His words made Dugu Ge laugh. “This Zhou Wen is rather interesting. I’m beginning to like him.”

Zhang Chunqiu also said with a smile, “He’s right. John’s strength has only reached the peak of a divine level, but his realm and technique haven’t reached that stage. It’s indeed a little too arrogant to say that he’s God. However, sometimes, when the difference in strength reaches a certain level, even if the opponent is stupid, it’s still very difficult to win.”

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 534 - Holy Angel“s Redemption

Chapter 534 Holy Angel“s Redemption

Zhou Wen’s words didn’t anger John. John only sneered and said, “Then, let’s give it a try and see how strong the lunatic you’re talking about is.”

With that said, John’s figure instantly appeared in front of Zhou Wen with a flash of light. His palm, brimming with holy light, grabbed at Zhou Wen’s neck at an unbelievable speed.

The dragon wings on Zhou Wen’s back flapped as he used his movement technique to dodge John’s palm. However, he didn’t have any intention of retaliating. All he did was smile at John.

“Why don’t you draw your saber?” John asked as he stared at the Bamboo Blade at Zhou Wen’s waist.

“If I use my saber, you would have already been defeated. What’s the point?” Zhou Wen said seriously.

“Even I like him a little now. I thought that only people from our Zhang family would be so good at bragging.” Zhang Chunqiu laughed.

Upon hearing Zhou Wen’s words, An Sheng’s heart relaxed, but he was still worried for him.

An Tianzuo frowned and muttered to himself, “What an arrogant brat.”

John’s pupils constricted when he heard that, but he didn’t fly into a rage. He just stared coldly at Zhou Wen and said, “I hope you still have the courage to say those words later.”

With that said, without waiting for Zhou Wen to react, holy light erupted from his body. Six angelic wings extended horizontally as his body suspended in the air like a javelin. He looked like a humanoid cross as his whole body emitted a terrifying glow.

Beams of light erupted from his body, enveloping the entire fighting arena like a storm. Each sword beam contained an unmatchable amount of power of holy.

Zhou Wen’s expression didn’t change as he flapped his six wings behind him. His body fluttered gracefully amidst the rain of light swords. It didn’t seem as though he was fast, but he managed to dodge the rain of light swords.

Rumble!

The light sword rain landed on the ground and blasted the ground. Every light sword had the power of the Mythical stage.

Zhang Chunqiu suddenly looked at Dugu Ge and said, “Is this Zhou Wen your Dugu family’s illegitimate son?”

“What do you mean?” Dugu Ge asked with a frown.

“If not, why would he have such a freakish movement technique? Such a movement technique probably surpasses the other families. Only your Dugu family can compete with

him in terms of movement techniques.” Zhang Chunqiu said.

Dugu Ge stared at Zhou Wen for a long while before saying, “His movement technique is indeed impressive, but it’s not our Dugu family’s style.”

Zhang Chunqiu nodded and said, “Although Zhou Wen is a little arrogant, what he said wasn’t wrong. Compared to him, John’s physical constitution is only slightly better. He’s slightly stronger and faster. If his constitution were at the same level, John would probably be defeated by him in seconds. The An family has really picked up a treasure this time. It’s no wonder they would rather offend the Senate to protect Zhou Wen.”

“That’s right, but you and I know very well that John’s strength is immensely powerful. These techniques aren’t enough to make up for the gap between them. Under such inequality, it’d be fine even if John made a hundred mistakes. If Zhou Wen makes one mistake, he might die,” Dugu Ge said seriously.

“Let’s wait and see. I just find this Zhou Wen more and more interesting. It’s no wonder he can become friends with my sister,” Zhang Chunqiu said.

“Huh? Your little princess actually has a friend?” Dugu Ge and Xia Xuanyue widened their eyes as if they had heard something unbelievable.

Zhang Chunqiu seemed to know that he had said something wrong and could only say, “They only met a few times by chance, but their relationship isn’t bad. I came to see what kind of person Zhou Wen is.”

“You were worried that Zhou Wen would get close to your family’s little princess and are afraid that he has other motives, so you came to investigate, right?” Dugu Ge said with a twitch of his lips.

Zhang Chunqiu smiled and said, “Don’t make it sound so bad. I just came to take a look.”

Seeing that the light sword rain wasn’t able to injure Zhou Wen, the angelic wings on John’s back spewed out terrifying flames, propelling his body to move at high speed as he slashed at Zhou Wen with terrifying power.

Zhou Wen had no intention of retaliating. All he did was constantly use his movement technique to dodge John’s barrage of attacks.

John’s every strike was extremely terrifying, reducing the arena into pieces. The ordinary soldiers guarding here had already retreated from the arena under An Sheng’s orders. They waited outside the arena while only An Sheng and a few Epic experts remained inside to guard the arena.

Xia Xuanyue and the rest had no choice but to retreat a little, before reaching the wall at the back of the arena to avoid being caught in the crossfire of the terrifying battle.

“What a powerful force. The power the six-winged seraphim gave John really makes me envious,” Zhang Chunqiu said.

“No matter how strong the power is, it depends on who’s using it. John clearly doesn’t have the ability to use such power. It’s a complete waste. If it were me, I would have long beaten Zhou Wen to the ground,” said Dugu Ge.

“Not necessarily.” Xia Xuanyue unhappily disagreed.

Zhou Wen’s movement technique had been upgraded alongside her. If Dugu Ge said that Zhou Wen was lacking, wouldn’t it also mean she was lacking?

Zhang Chunqiu praised, “Zhou Wen’s movement technique is truly powerful. Under such a huge disparity in strength, he hasn’t been injured at all. I’ve only seen such movement techniques in your Dugu family before.”

Under John’s storm-like attacks, Zhou Wen’s body flew up. He didn’t seem to be fast, but John didn’t even touch his clothes.

John was very calm in the beginning. He wanted to use various techniques and Essence Energy Skills to hit Zhou Wen, but no matter what technique or Essence Energy Skill he used, he failed to injure him at all.

“Zhou Wen, you should be proud to be able to let me use the power that truly belongs to God.” John stopped his attack as his eyes shimmered. The six angelic wings unfurled behind him like a blooming flower.

“Is it finally coming?” Zhang Chunqiu stopped smiling and stared at John solemnly.

Dugu Ge’s expression turned serious as he stared at John without a word.

Xia Xuanyue did the same. They knew very well that physical constitution was only one aspect of the difference between the Mythical stage and the Epic stage. It wasn’t a very important aspect.

The true gap between the Mythical stage and the Epic stage was the miraculous power of the Wheel of Destiny.

Although the Wheel of Destiny of every Mythical creature was different, there was a commonality. The miraculous power was something that no living creature under the Mythical stage could withstand.

The holy light that erupted from John’s body intensified. The six angelic wings on his back turned into an ancient door of light.

“A miracle… Holy Angel’s Redemption…” With John’s mighty voice, the door of light behind him slowly opened, and a brilliant holy light shot out from it.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 535 - Are There Conditions?

Chapter 535 Are There Conditions?

Zhou Wen wanted to dodge it, but the light that shot out from the door of light was at literally the speed of light. Unless Zhou Wen's speed reached the speed of light, it was impossible for him to dodge.

The light shone on Zhou Wen as his strength erupted. He wore his heavy armor and soft armor as he attempted to forcefully tank the light.

However, the resplendent light didn't harm his body. It only made Zhou Wen feel an irresistible force pulling him towards the door of light.

Others only saw Zhou Wen being illuminated by the door's light before flying towards it.

An Sheng's expression changed. Although he didn't know what was inside the door of light, he knew that he couldn't let Zhou Wen take the risk. He flew into the arena.

A few Epic officers in charge of managing the situation rushed over with An Sheng.

"Please stop. I admit defeat for Zhou Wen." As An Sheng charged at Zhou Wen, he shouted at John.

A cold glint flashed in John's eyes as the door of light opened. The light shot towards An Sheng and company.

An Sheng’s gaze focused. At the instant the light scattered, he reached out and pressed down on the ground. His body instantly drilled underground, but the few Epic officers were illuminated by the light. They couldn’t help but fly into the door of light. No matter how they struggled, it was useless.

An Sheng, who had drilled underground, appeared from another side. The light from the door scattered down again, sucking him up.

“It’s over. John is indeed at the true Mythical stage. That should be the power of the Wheel of Destiny,” Zhao Chunqiu said.

“It’s truly shocking that the creature inside a cocoon is able to make a person who recently had his Essence Energy sea crippled become a Mythical expert,” said Dugu Ge after some thought.

Xia Xuanyue was hesitant, unsure if she should help Zhou Wen.

Zhou Wen tried several methods, but he failed to escape the power of the light. He slowly flew towards the door of light.

There was a bright divine light inside the door of light. Although he couldn’t see what was inside, he was certain that there would definitely be a great horror there. If he was pulled into it, he would probably die.

Truth Listener’s Evil Nullification Life Soul didn’t work. Zhou Wen switched his Essence Energy Art to Dao Body, and Zero Taboo immediately lit up like a light bulb.

Almost at the same time, the irresistible suction force from the light disappeared.

However, Zhou Wen remained unperturbed as he continued slowly flying towards the door of light.

“John, do you really want to kill me?” Zhou Wen asked John.

“You will get off lightly if you just die,” John said coldly.

“If you want to kill me, do it. They have nothing to do with this. Let them go,” Zhou Wen added.

“They deserve death for protecting you. Besides, it’s An Sheng who crippled my sister’s Essence Energy sea. He naturally has to repay the debt,” said John.

“In that case, it’s either you die or I die today!” Zhou Wen gripped the Bamboo Blade tightly.

“There’s only your death. I will not die. You don’t have the right to talk about life and death with God. Go to heaven in peace. That’s your final escape.” John stood in front of the door of light and stretched out his hand like a messenger welcoming a soul into heaven.

“I don’t plan on going to a place like heaven. Can you pass the message to the owner of Heaven? Tell him to visit me in the mortal world when he has the time.” As Zhou Wen spoke, he had already arrived in front of the door of light. With the Bamboo Blade in hand, he pulled out his saber.

With all his Strength, Speed, and Essence Energy erupting, he delivered a full-powered strike. Zhou Wen’s figure streaked across the void.

John’s eyes widened as though he couldn’t believe that Zhou Wen could still launch an attack despite the Holy Angel’s Redemption. He wanted to move and resist the strike.

However, he realized that although he had seen the saber, his brain’s reaction speed was unable to keep up with it. He could only watch helplessly as the saber sliced at his neck, but he could not move. His face was twisted with horror.

Almost at the same time Zhou Wen attacked, a white figure with a blood beam behind him tore through the air and landed on the outer wall of the arena. It was none other than An Tianzuo, who had fused with his Life Soul.

Xia Xuanyue, Dugu Ge, and Zhang Chunqiu also looked at Zhou Wen’s strike in shock. According to what they knew, a creature that wasn’t a Mythical existence should not have the ability to resist a Wheel of Destiny’s miracle. They found it unbelievable that Zhou Wen could actually swing his saber amidst the miracle.

Furthermore, the strike was so fast and stunning. It seemed to exceed the speed of the Epic stage. Only Xia Xuanyue understood that Zhou Wen’s move had reached the level of a Mythical technique.

John was too close to Zhou Wen. Even though he had divine-level speed, he still couldn’t dodge Zhou Wen’s strike.

However, she was also astonished. Even if it was a divine technique, it was impossible for it to violate the miraculous power of the Wheel of Destiny. There had to be other reasons why Zhou Wen could slash out with his saber in the Holy Angel’s Redemption. Even Xia Xuanyue couldn’t guess the reason.

Wherever the blade beam passed, red blood bloomed like flowers on the parts of John’s neck that weren’t protected by the angel armor.

John covered his neck with his hand as he stared at Zhou Wen in disbelief. The six angelic wings on his back had stopped circulating as the door of light shattered and dissipated.

An Sheng and the others who had been sucked up by the light recovered their control and landed in the ruined arena. They looked at Zhou Wen and John in shock.

John held his neck, but blood continued gushing out. He wanted to say something and opened his mouth but did not make a sound. Blood gushed out.

The ferocious-looking John suddenly released the hand that was covering his neck and pounced at Zhou Wen, as though he wanted to fight him to the death.

However, when he pounced at Zhou Wen, the angelic armor on his body automatically dispelled and returned to the six-winged seraphim form as it floated in the air.

Having lost the power of the six-winged seraphim, John, who was already badly injured, fell from the sky before he could reach Zhou Wen.

Boom!

John slammed heavily onto the ground and struggled to get up. His eyes stared intently at the six-winged seraphim who floated in the air. He was filled with confusion, puzzlement, anger, indignation, and many other emotions.

The six-winged seraphim that he had relied on, had betrayed him at the last moment.

“In the name of an angel, I bestow upon you the right to be protected. Human, are you willing to fight me and make me

your guardian?”

John spat out a few mouthfuls of blood when he heard the six-winged seraphim’s words. He never expected such a thing to happen. He had abandoned everything to gain the six-winged seraphim as his guardian. Now, it had abandoned him to pledge its allegiance with Zhou Wen.

“Are there conditions for you to become my guardian?” Zhou Wen’s mind flashed with The Thearch’s words as he subconsciously asked.

“There are no conditions. As long as you are willing, I will become your guardian and bestow you with the power of God,” the six-winged seraphim replied without hesitation.

Pfft!

When John heard this, he could no longer hold it in. He stood up abruptly and widened his eyes. He stretched out his trembling fingers and pointed at the six-winged seraphim in the sky. He opened his mouth as though he wanted to curse, but when he opened it again, blood spewed out and splattered everywhere.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 536 - Guardian

Chapter 536 Guardian

“How do I know that you won’t treat me like you treated John?” Zhou Wen said to the six-winged seraphim.

“Guardians are born to fight. If you lose in battle, what’s the point of me staying with you? As long as you have the ability to fight again, I will always protect you,” the six-winged seraphim said.

“What you said makes sense. Then what should I do to make you my guardian?” Zhou Wen asked again.

“It’s very simple. All you need to do is drip a drop of blood into my palm and then let me complete the ritual,” the six-winged seraphim said as he extended his palm.

“Alright.” Zhou Wen cut his finger and extended his hand towards the six-winged seraphim’s palm. Seeing the drop of blood on his finger about to land on the six-winged seraphim’s palm, the Bamboo Blade in his left hand slashed at the six-winged angel’s neck like a bolt of lightning.

Clang!

The wings behind the six-winged seraphim protected his body like an umbrella, blocking Zhou Wen’s strike. At the same time, he rapidly retreated.

“Human, you are too emotional.” The six-winged seraphim moved backward.

Zhou Wen slashed at the six-winged seraphim again and again. The six-winged seraphim was different from Companion Beasts. Companion Beasts were completely controlled by their owners, but the six-winged seraphim could abandon its master and had its own consciousness. No matter how powerful he was, Zhou Wen wouldn’t take him along with him.

He had too many secrets. In the future, once the six-winged seraphim betrayed him, those secrets would be exposed. Zhou Wen definitely wouldn’t let such a thing happen.

Zhou Wen used Transcendent Flying Immortal in a bid to kill the six-winged seraphim, but he realized that without John’s control, the six-winged seraphim was even stronger than when John used him. His figure moved in midair, leaving behind afterimages. Zhou Wen’s Transcendent Flying Immortal could only slash at his phantom. After slashing several times, he had failed to touch the six-winged seraphim.

“Human, you will soon learn what you have missed. When the time comes, you will regret everything you have done today.” The six-winged seraphim flew backward, but his speed was terrifyingly fast. He flapped his six wings and left the arena as though he had teleported, disappearing very quickly.

Zhou Wen frowned slightly as he looked at John and found that he had already fainted. An Sheng’s men were checking his injuries.

“How do you plan on disposing of him?” An Sheng walked to Zhou Wen’s side and asked.

“What do you think?” Zhou Wen asked.

“The video of your conversation with him was recorded. Even if you kill him, it’s just self-defense. The Cape family can’t say anything. However, killing him is meaningless. If you don’t mind, I hope to let him live and obtain information about the six-winged seraphim from him,” An Sheng whispered.

“Then do as you see fit. Give me a copy of the information if you manage to get anything. I’ll head back now,” Zhou Wen said as he turned and left the arena.

On the outer wall of the arena, Zhang Chunqiu looked at An Tianzuo, who was dressed in military uniform, and said with a smile, “Overseer An, congratulations to your An family for obtaining another powerful general.”

“He’s just an ordinary student at Sunset College. He’s not worthy of Brother Zhang’s claim of general,” An Tianzuo said indifferently before saying, “If the three of you don’t mind, why don’t you come to my place to have some tea?”

“That’d be lovely, I have something to say to you,” Zhang Chunqiu said with a smile.

Dugu Ge and Xia Xuanyue agreed to go as well. They probably knew why An Tianzuo was inviting them.

…

As Zhou Wen was on his way back to school, The Thearch’s ringtone sounded.

“To be able to defeat John, who has the protection of the six-winged seraphim, it seems that I have underestimated you. But why did you reject the six-winged seraphim? Do you know that you have missed a rare opportunity?”

“What’s that six-winged seraphim? He doesn’t appear like a Companion Beast, but he’s different from ordinary dimensional creatures,” Zhou Wen asked.

“You’re right. The six-winged seraphim isn’t a Companion Beast or a pure dimensional creature. To put it simply, he’s just a tool,” replied The Thearch.

“A tool? What tool?” Zhou Wen asked in puzzlement.

“Naturally, it’s a tool for combat. It’s also a tool for humans to advance to the Mythical stage. Due to innate limitations, you humans basically don’t have the ability to advance to the Mythical stage. To advance to the Mythical stage, you have to obtain a guardian similar to the six-winged seraphim. By borrowing the guardian’s body, you can advance to the Mythical stage and continue on your path. The six-winged seraphim’s willingness to follow you is equivalent to giving you a chance to advance to the Mythical stage, but you chased him away. Aren’t you regretting it now?” The Thearch gloated.

“You mean borrowing the guardian’s body? Don’t tell me that human bodies won’t improve any further and can only strengthen the guardian’s body in the future?” Zhou Wen acutely sensed something.

“Didn’t I say just now? Due to the innate limitations of the bodies of you humans, it’s nearly impossible for you to advance to the Mythical stage. At most, you can only reach the peak of the Epic stage. The guardian is your way out. Don’t think that it’s that easy for a guardian to betray you. The reason the six-winged seraphim betrayed John was that John wasn’t qualified to form a contract with him. He only used a special method to temporarily form a contract. If it were you, you could truly form a contract with the six-

winged seraphim. He wouldn’t betray you so easily. Do you regret rejecting him now?”

“What’s a guardian?” Zhou Wen didn’t regret it. All he wanted to know was what it was.

“They can be considered as the representatives of the various species on your Earth. Every species will have a guardian. They will choose a human to rely on and fight alongside humans to grow, helping you resist the invasion of dimensional creatures,” said The Thearch.

You were the ones who created the dimensional creatures to begin with. Why are you talking about helping us fend off the dimensional creatures’ invasion? Zhou Wen lampooned inwardly, but he didn’t say it out loud.

Zhou Wen felt that the guardian wasn’t as simple as The Thearch had described.

“How many guardians are there on Earth?” Zhou Wen asked after some thought. If he knew how many guardians there were, wouldn’t he know how many dimensional species there were?

“I don’t know that, but you can count. Guardians are born from cocoons. Count the number of cocoons on Earth and that will be the number of guardians,” The Thearch teased Zhou Wen.

That equates to not saying anything. Zhou Wen secretly despised The Thearch. She never answered any important questions.

However, The Thearch’s words reminded Zhou Wen that the cocoon protected by the white dragon in Old Dragon Cave

was gone. However, the one in Ant Nest was still around. Perhaps he could target that.

The Ant Nest dungeon on his phone seemed very special. The other cocoons were protected by terrifying Mythical creatures, but there was only a Golden Flying Ant guarding the Ant Nest. The difference was extraordinary.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 537 - Fighting the Golden Trident Again

Chapter 537 Fighting the Golden Trident Again

“Is there a difference in strength between the guardians?” Zhou Wen felt that the six-winged seraphim was slightly weaker than the one he had seen in the Ant Nest.

“Different species naturally have differences in strength. Why? Are you interested in guardians? As long as you beg me, I can help you contract a powerful guardian,” The Thearch replied.

“I appreciate your kindness.” Zhou Wen thought of John’s fate and didn’t dare get The Thearch to help him.

Is it really impossible for humans to break through to the Mythical stage by themselves? Zhou Wen didn’t believe The Thearch’s words, but he had never heard of anyone advancing to the Mythical stage.

After returning to the college, Zhou Wen began grinding Torch Dragon again. A Mythical Transcendent Flying Immortal had greatly increased his speed. Although his Speed stat was only 40, with the augmentation of Transcendent Flying Immortal, his speed was much faster than the dragon wings formed by Sixed-Winged when he used Transcendent Flying Immortal with all his might.

However, that burst of power could only last for a short period of time. It couldn’t last forever under that speed.

It wasn’t because his Essence Energy supply couldn’t keep up, but because his body couldn’t withstand such a huge burden. The burden of a divine skill on his body was too great for any Epic expert.

After grinding Torch Dragon again, Zhou Wen realized that he was much more relaxed. The chances of blocking or dodging the Bright Torch Vision World were even higher. Furthermore, he wasn’t put in such a sorry state as before. He easily lasted for more than three hours, or even more than four hours. If it wasn’t for the fact that he was exhausted, he could have lasted longer.

The problem now was that the toughness of Torch Dragon’s flesh far exceeded Zhou Wen’s imagination. Demonic Neonate’s ancient sword had stabbed it many times, but it had only left a few harmless wounds. They weren’t fatal.

Torch Dragon had a powerful self-healing ability. The wounds on its body healed themselves in battle. Wounds did not have much effect on it.

Zhou Wen had also attempted to use the Poison Dragon Palm to deal with Torch Dragon, but the results weren’t good. Although he left behind a poison palm print, it vanished shortly after. The poison failed to spread in Torch Dragon’s body.

How can I kill Torch Dragon? Finally, he could block Torch Dragon’s Bright Torch Vision World, but he couldn’t kill it. He had to think of another solution.

After some thought, it seemed like no ability was enough to kill Torch Dragon.

There might still be a hope of killing Torch Dragon if Demonic Neonate advances, but she doesn’t eat or drink.

How can I help her advance? Zhou Wen had taken quite a lot of things to feed Demonic Neonate during this period of time, but she ate nothing. Zhou Wen was really afraid that she would starve to death.

If I can’t count on Demonic Neonate, I can only wait for the fruit of the Dead Man Tree and Tyrant Behemoth. Zhou Wen looked at Tyrant Behemoth. It was still evolving, and he didn’t know when it would finish. He couldn’t help but worry.

Instead, it was the fruit of the Dead Man Tree that grew bigger by the day, but the fruit’s appearance made Zhou Wen feel that it resembled a black-gray grenade.

It should be coming out soon. I wonder what kind of Companion Beast will appear. If it has Life Blast and curse powers, I might be able to use it against Torch Dragon. Although Zhou Wen thought this, he didn’t place all his hopes on this Companion Beast.

Without heading to the Zhuolu battlefield again, Zhou Wen went to the Metalwork Temple. There was a golden trident there. The golden trident was definitely a Mythical creature. The Companion Egg that dropped was most likely in the form of a weapon.

Although Overlord Sword was very powerful, it was still at the Epic stage after all. It relied on Ever-Victorious to injure Torch Dragon. Otherwise, it couldn’t even tear through Torch Dragon’s hide.

Zhou Wen felt that he had to think of a way to obtain a Mythical weapon. With a Mythical weapon, the possibility of killing Torch Dragon was much higher. Therefore, he placed his sights on the golden trident.

The golden trident had killed the blood-colored avatar once before, but Zhou Wen felt that there was a way to crack it. He had no other options now. As he waited for the Dead Man Tree's fruit and Behemoth to evolve, he thought of a way to kill the golden trident.

Once again, he arrived at the shrine. The moment the door opened, he saw the golden trident embedded in the furnace. The golden flames burned its body, but it did not cause any reaction.

Just as Zhou Wen took a glance, he saw the golden light shine on the golden trident, as though it wanted to engulf the entire Metalwork Temple.

The blood-colored avatar was instantly killed the last time. It didn't even have a chance to dodge.

However, this time, Zhou Wen summoned the strengthened Six-Winged Guardian Dragon and got it to shield him.

The Six-Winged Guardian Dragon directly used Sanctification. Its body turned as white as jade as it unfurled its six dragon wings. Holy flames burned on its body as it spewed out dragon breath to block the golden light in front of Zhou Wen.

Boom!

The terrifying collision shook the entire temple.

Zhou Wen saw the golden trident fly out of the furnace from behind Six-Winged. It transformed into a golden beam of light that struck at Six-Winged.

Fortunately, its speed was not very fast. However, it had a domineering aura of supremacy. The six dragon wings on the

back of the Six-Winged Dragon turned into blades and slashed at the golden trident that was coming at it from above.

Cracking sounds could be heard as the six wings collided with the golden trident. Many of the six dragon wings were broken by it.

What astonishing destructive power! Zhou Wen wasn't alarmed but delighted. Only with such powerful destructive power could he kill Torch Dragon.

Under Zhou Wen's command, the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon clashed with the golden trident. However, it didn't clash head-on with it. Its speed wasn't as fast as the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon. Although its attack was domineering, it couldn't do a thing to the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon without fighting head-on.

Clang!

The Six-Winged Guardian Dragon took the opportunity and struck out with its two front claws, slamming the golden trident down from the sky and pressing it onto the ground.

The golden trident's body exploded with golden light. It struggled to escape, but it was held down by the Six-Winged. It could not break free no matter what.

Although its destructive power was strong, its strength wasn't stronger than Six-Winged. Instantly, the two Mythical creatures were in a deadlock. One burst out with golden light and the other spewed holy flames, causing the temple to tremble incessantly.

The blood-colored avatar watched the battle from outside the temple. Although Six-Winged held a slight advantage, it

couldn’t kill the trident. Zhou Wen gritted his teeth and got the blood-colored avatar to charge in with the Overlord Sword. He brandished the Overlord Sword and slashed at the golden trident.

The moment he entered the temple, the divine patterns on the blood-colored avatar’s heavy armor flickered. In a few moments, it collapsed. Thankfully, the blood-colored avatar had already rushed in front of the golden trident. Overlord Sword slashed down with a powerful sword beam.

Clang!

There was a deafening sound as a fine crack opened on the golden trident.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 538 - Farming Mythical Creatures

538 Farming Mythical Creatures

The golden trident’s body trembled violently as golden light shot forth from its surface.

Zhou Wen hurriedly used his movement technique to dodge and hide behind Six-Winged so that he was spared from the golden beam’s attack.

The golden light clashed with Six-Winged’s holy flames, slicing apart the holy flames and slicing through its scales, leaving deep wounds that reached to the bone.

As expected of a Mythical creature in the form of a weapon, this destructive power is truly terrifying. Zhou Wen was alarmed. If he was struck by the golden light, even two layers of armor wouldn’t be able to protect him.

It was a pity that no matter how powerful the golden trident’s destructive power was, it was still suppressed by the Six-Winged’s claws. It could not unleash its immense power.

Six-Winged held onto the golden trident tightly. It did not loosen its claws no matter what. Its body was lacerated by the golden light. Fortunately, it was not fatal.

Zhou Wen hurriedly summoned Demonic Neonate and got her to use the ancient sword to attack the golden trident.

Six-Winged was good at almost everything. It could fight, tank, and still survive. The only bad thing about it was that it did not have an offensive Wheel of Destiny. It was also six-winged, but the Six-Winged Seraphim had Holy Angel's Redemption. That was truly a good weapon.

However, there were pros and cons. The life-saving ability provided by the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon was not something the Six-Winged Seraphim possessed. Otherwise, John wouldn't have had his throat sliced by him.

Thankfully, apart from the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon, Zhou Wen still had Demonic Neonate, a pet with relatively strong offensive powers. Demonic Neonate controlled the ancient sword as she sought out an opportunity, slashing at the golden trident again and again. Furthermore, she targeted a particular spot. She hid behind the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon and was even safer than Zhou Wen.

Zhou Wen also found all sorts of opportunities to strike at the golden trident. The two pets and the human worked together in a frenzy to slash at the golden trident, leaving it covered in wounds. The deepest impression of the trident was about to be halved.

The golden trident had already gone berserk. Its entire body was shimmering with golden light. In particular, its tip was glowing with a dazzling divine light, as if it could pierce through everything in the world.

Unfortunately, it couldn't move due to Six-Winged's pressure. The tip couldn't touch Zhou Wen and company, so it was useless no matter how much strength it unleashed.

After about half an hour, Demonic Neonate's ancient sword slashed down again. With a clang, the golden trident was cut in half.

‘Killed Mythical creature, Golden Battle God Halberd. Discovered Dimensional Crystal.’

Zhou Wen couldn’t help but feel somewhat disappointed when he saw that the golden trident didn’t drop a Companion Egg. On careful look, he saw that the dimensional crystal was a Strength +80 crystal. It was high enough, but Zhou Wen’s upper limit was only 40. He couldn’t raise it before breaking through.

Zhou Wen picked up the Strength Crystal and absorbed it. Indeed, his Strength was still at 40. Unless he found a way to raise his Strength to 41 or advance to the Mythical stage, it was impossible for him to raise it any further.

With the experience gained from killing the Golden Battle God Halberd, Zhou Wen kept grinding the Metalwork Temple instance dungeon. He didn’t believe that the Golden Battle God Halberd Companion Egg wouldn’t drop.

After two or three battles, Zhou Wen had roughly figured out the situation with it. Its destructive power was much stronger than the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon. Furthermore, the miraculous power of the Wheel of Destiny was also a destructive power. If one was struck by the miraculous power, even the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon would be penetrated. Its Mythical body would be like paper.

However, the Golden Battle God Halberd’s miraculous powers couldn’t hit its target easily. This was because the miraculous powers were actually unable to pierce through the air and injure the opponent. It was only the tip of the trident that carried a tiny blob of resplendent golden divine light. That golden divine light could almost pierce through everything. It was much more powerful than the Overlord

Sword’s Ever-Victorious but the attack needed to be close range.

Zhou Wen was confident that as long as he had the Golden Battle God Halberd drop, he had more than an eighty percent chance of killing Torch Dragon.

The only regret was that after the Golden Battle God Halberd was killed, even if he respawned the dungeon, he would have to wait 24 hours before a new Golden Battle God Halberd appeared. He couldn’t grind it to his heart’s pleasure. He would still have to wait for some time.

Zhou Wen wasn’t idle. Since he couldn’t grind the Golden Battle God Halberd, he ran to the Curse Demon Palace. There was still Medusa there.

Before it was strengthened, the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon was not Medusa’s match, but it could still fight with her for a while.

Now that Six-Winged had been strengthened, together with Zhou Wen and Demonic Neonate, there was a chance of killing her.

After grinding the rare Epic creatures, Zhou Wen ran to the Curse Demon Palace and charged all the way to Medusa’s hall. He gently touched the beautiful girl and she immediately turned into a terrifying demoness.

The palace was sealed and the blood-colored avatar couldn’t leave. All it could do was fight Medusa in the palace. The Six-Winged Guardian Dragon fought without a fuss as it charged forward with a roar.

With the Sanctification ability, Medusa’s normal Eyes of Petrification was actually much less effective against the

Six-Winged Guardian Dragon. It could only slightly petrify its surface and cause a minimal effect to the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon.

Zhou Wen had the Evil Nullification ability to restrain the Eyes of Petrification, but he could only restrain the ordinary Eyes of Petrification. If he was struck by Medusa's miraculous Eyes of Petrification, he would still be petrified.

Thankfully, the miraculous Eyes of Petrification shot out substantial light beams from her eyes. As long as he dodged the beam, he wouldn't be petrified. If it was like the ordinary Eyes of Petrification, he wouldn't be able to dodge it.

The miraculous Eyes of Petrification was truly invincible. Even the guardian dragon would be petrified upon being hit by the light beam.

What surprised Zhou Wen was Demonic Neonate. This fellow was actually immune to the ordinary Eyes of Petrification despite not having any Evil Nullification abilities.

The human and two pets joined forces to fight Medusa. After spending a great amount of effort, they finally killed Medusa.

Ding!

A crisp sound came from the phone, jolting Zhou Wen. He saw that Medusa had dropped an Essence Energy Skill dimensional crystal. Inside the crystal-like dimensional crystal was a demoness-like Medusa shadow.

I actually have Medusa's skill crystal drop again. Unfortunately, my stats aren't good enough. I can't absorb it at all. Zhou Wen was in a dilemma.

The requirement of 41 Constitution and 21 Cursed attributes was too high for Zhou Wen.

If he did not absorb it, the skill crystal would be gone after the dungeon respawned. However, if his stats were not enough, he would not be able to absorb it.

In the end, Zhou Wen had no choice but to give up on Medusa's skill crystal. After all, he could now kill Medusa. There was still a chance for him to grind skill crystals in the future.

Zhou Wen heard from An Sheng that the chance of a Mythical creature dropping Companion Eggs and Skill Crystals was very high. There was about a third chance. After a few days of grinding, it shouldn't be difficult to obtain the Companion Eggs of Medusa and the Golden Battle God Halberd.

Zhou Wen rested for a while before considering if he should eat something. An Sheng personally came to school and sent over a document that contained John's testimony.

Zhou Wen had already guessed most of what had happened. John had obtained the Six-Winged Seraphim from an ancient cathedral in the West District. However, according to him, the ancient cathedral had a terrifying Mythical Creature protecting it. He had avoided the Mythical creature thanks to the advice of a mysterious person, thus obtaining the Six-Winged Seraphim inside the white cocoon. He never expected the Six-Winged Seraphim to betray him.

When Zhou Wen saw a paragraph, his expression turned odd. When An Sheng and company treated John, they realized that John had a body part missing.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 539 - Baby Tiger“s Fusion

Chapter 539 Baby Tiger“s Fusion

After An Sheng left, Zhou Wen continued grinding. He didn’t know if it was because lady luck had finally smiled at him or because he had spent too much time grinding, but he managed to grind a baby tiger Companion Egg again.

The attributes were about the same, but it didn’t matter. He never expected to have it fight. The key was that the Lucky Baby Tiger’s Life Providence was useful.

However, it was useless bringing two baby tigers with him. Repetition of Life Providences did not stack Luck.

What kind of Companion Beast should I fuse with the tiger? Zhou Wen thought to himself.

This fusion wasn’t easy. If he used the baby tiger as the main pet and used another Companion Beasts to fuse with it, he would still get the baby tiger. The Life Providence obtained from fusion would still be useless.

If he used other Companion Beasts as the main pet and the baby tiger Companion Egg as a supplement, its Life Providence might be the main pet’s Life Providence. Then, there was no point in a fusion.

Therefore, the only way to fuse them was to combine two Companion Beasts without any main or supplement. Then,

the Companion Beasts that were combined would randomly combine the various attributes and skills. Even the Life Providences and Life Souls could be changed randomly, just like the Silver-Winged Sky Spider.

Zhou Wen looked at the Companion Beasts he currently possessed and then at their compatibility with the baby tiger.

The baby tiger’s compatibility with other Companion Beasts was surprisingly high. It was more than 60%. Very few were below 60.

It can even fuse with Mythical pets? Zhou Wen realized that the baby tiger had a compatibility score of 67% with the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon.

However, after trying out the other mythical pets, they all indicated that they could not be fused.

Zhou Wen naturally didn’t fuse the baby tiger with Six-Winged. After taking a look, Zhou Wen realized that one of the Companion Beasts had a compatibility score of 98% with the baby tiger.

However, when he saw the pet’s stats, a dark cloud hung over Zhou Wen’s head.

The Companion Beast with such a high compatibility rate with the baby tiger was actually Ancient Sovereign City’s Skeleton General.

Strange. One is a skeleton while the other is a beast. Why is the compatibility so high? Zhou Wen looked at the stats of the two Companion Beasts and felt somewhat hesitant.

The Skeleton General was obtained when he went to the Fire God Platform to pluck out the stone saber. He wanted to know if there were any changes in the game’s Ancient Sovereign City. He went in to grind a few times before a Companion Egg dropped. Its stats were rather good, so he hatched it and left it for future pet fusion.

However, no matter how good its stats were, it was ultimately a Legendary Companion Beast. It was useless to Zhou Wen.

There was no need to mention the baby tiger. As one of the weakest Epic creatures, any Epic creature could defeat it.

When these two Companion Beasts were fused, they might even form a Legendary Companion Beast. It might not even reach the Epic stage.

However, this was the first time Zhou Wen had encountered such a high compatibility. He carefully observed the stats of the two Companion Beasts and made up his mind to give it a try.

Anyway, what he wanted was the Luck attribute. The level and skills were not that important.

He fused the two hatched Companion Beasts. Amidst a lustrous glow, the fusion succeeded as expected.

Zhou Wen hurriedly looked at the screen and saw that the Companion Beast he had fused looked like the Skeleton General. However, it wasn’t riding a skeleton horse but a skeleton tiger.

A skeleton general riding on a skeleton tiger holding a bone spear in its hand looked quite powerful.

Tiger Soul General: Epic

Life Providence: Malicious Evil

Life Soul: Tiger Soul

Strength: 29

Speed: 27

Constitution: 27

Essence Energy: 24

Talent Skill: Armor Breaker Spear, Jinxes Master

Companion Form: None

Where’s my Luck Life Providence? What the hell is a Jinxes Master? Questions filled Zhou Wen’s mind.

Zhou Wen regretted it terribly. What the hell were these stats and skills? Not only did none of its stats exceed 30 points as an Epic Companion Beast, but there was even a Jinxes Master skill. Wasn’t this going to jinx him?

The Skeleton General and baby tiger didn’t have such a sinister skill. How did they come up with such a thing?

Zhou Wen knew that he had really screwed up this time. Not only did he fail to have the lucky Life Providence inherit, but he had also obtained a skill that jinxed the master. He definitely couldn’t keep this pet.

Zhou Wen had a very deep impression of the Jinxes Husband skill from before. It was a necessary skill to screw one up.

He casually swiped a Companion Beast and placed it with the Tiger Soul General. Zhou Wen didn't even take notice of what Companion Beast it was. All he saw was that the compatibility was rather low—less than 10%.

He was deliberately trying to make the Tiger Soul General disappear through fusion. He would rather not have it than let it harm him.

Although Zhou Wen didn't take a careful look, he roughly knew that the compatibility score was only 7%. He felt that the outcome was doomed to fail, but with a flash of light, a new Companion Beast appeared.

Eh, it succeeded? Zhou Wen was greatly surprised. Although he wasn't happy, he still looked at the pet's appearance.

The skeleton tiger and skeleton general were both wearing heavy black armor. However, their faces were exposed. The black armor had dark tiger stripes that looked like lava. It looked domineering.

What I used to fuse with it should be a Runic Heavy-Armored Warrior, right? Zhou Wen vaguely remembered that the one he had casually selected was likely the Runic Heavy-Armored Warrior. He couldn't help but look at the stats.

Heavy-Armored Tiger Soul General: Epic

Life Providence: Malicious Evil

Life Soul: Tiger Soul Runes

Strength: 34

Speed: 37

Constitution: 38

Essence Energy: 36

Talent Skill: Rampage, Armor Break Spear, Jinxes Master.

Companion Form: None

These stats aren’t bad, but I really can’t keep the Jinxes Master skill. Zhou Wen searched his Companion Beasts again and found one with an even lower compatibility.

The Steel Cauldron Fiend that dropped from the Metalwork Temple was a rare Epic Companion Beast. However, it was too slow and didn’t have any offensive means. It was just a half-fire elemental creature that guarded a steel furnace.

Its compatibility with the Tiger Soul General was only 4%. It was impossible to find Companion Beasts from two different species to have a lower compatibility score.

He placed the Tiger Soul General and the Steel Cauldron Fiend together and pressed the fuse button.

That should be the end of it, right? Zhou Wen thought to himself.

However, with the shimmering light on his phone, Zhou Wen actually heard the notification of a successful fusion. Looking at the new Companion Beast on his phone screen, Zhou Wen’s mouth gaped open for a moment.

He had no idea if it was good or bad luck from succeeding two consecutive fusions with single-digit compatibility.

The newly fused Companion Beast still looked like the Heavy-Armored Tiger Soul General. However, within the

heavy-armored tiger and the heavy-armored general’s armor was a bluish-white flame. It looked even more powerful and domineering, like a mighty being that had charged out from hell.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 540 - Jinxes Master

Chapter 540 Jinxes Master

Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General: Epic

Life Providence: Fierce

Life Soul: Tiger Soul Runes

Strength: 39

Speed: 39

Constitution: 40

Essence Energy: 40

Talent Skill: Tempered Steel Cauldron, Rampage, Armor Breaker Spear, Jinxes Master

Companion Form: None

These stats… It’s almost a top Epic creature… Zhou Wen looked at the stats and his expression changed.

It had to be said that this guy’s attributes were really too good. If he ignored the Jinxes Master skill, its attributes were quite impressive too.

An Epic Armor Breaker Spear was a powerful offensive skill. There was no need to mention Rampage. It was a type of charging Dominance Body.

As for Tempered Steel Cauldron, originally it was not of much use to the Steel Cauldron Fiend as although it was a fire-elemental skill, it could not harm anyone. Instead, it burned flames within the Steel Cauldron Fiend's body. Under the burning of the flames, its steel armor became harder and harder. It was a skill used to tank.

However, this skill was somewhat different on the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General. While he was charging, he could use Tempered Steel Cauldron. It would make the fiend armor on the Tiger Soul General become harder. With Rampage's effects as a Dominance Body and the Armor Breaker Spear ability, as well as the Tiger Soul Runes to augment him, there were probably not many opponents at the same level who could block the Runic-Armored Tiger Soul General's charge.

However, the Jinxes Master Skill was a sore sight. Zhou Wen took the Runic-Armored Tiger Soul General to the Metalwork Temple, hoping to see how powerful his combat abilities were.

Seeing the few Runic Heavy-Armored Warrior loitering in the distance, Zhou Wen ordered the Runic-Armored Tiger Soul General to charge over.

With a command, it roared as the bluish-white flames on its body burned. The lava patterns on the black heavy armor also turned into a strange orange-white color. Like a devil, he charged at the Runic Heavy-Armored Warriors.

Boom!

With the augmentation of the powerful Essence Energy Skill, the Runic-Armored Tiger Soul General sent the few Runic Heavy-Armored Warriors flying. The spear struck a Runic Heavy-Armored Warrior and penetrated his chest with the

bone spear. He slammed into a metal wall and was lifted up by the Tiger Soul General before shattering into pieces in midair.

Then, Zhou Wen saw a shocking scene. They were both at the Epic stage, and they were mainly defense-type beasts. However, the Runic-Armored Tiger Soul General charged forward as though it had entered an invincible state. It killed the Runic Heavy-Armored Warriors one by one. It was like a mighty being that had descended into the mortal world.

What was even more terrifying was that the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General's Essence Energy seemed to be endless. The fire within the Tempered Steel Cauldron kept burning. It made the heavy armor on the Demonized General and Demonized Tiger stronger and stronger. Even the Tiger Soul Runes on them glowed brighter and brighter, becoming stronger as the battle progressed.

Zhou Wen made him charge the entire way as the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General swept through the area. He wasn't afraid of being ganked by many Epic creatures. Instead, he became more and more ferocious as he charged back and trampled on the dimensional creatures. It was as though he had entered an invincible state.

Even though all of them were at the Epic stage, a single charge was enough to smash through the Runic Heavy-Armored Warriors' armor, killing them on the spot.

A Fire Furnace Queen appeared and threw out the fire from a furnace, turning the hall into a sea of flames.

However, the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General showed no fear. He rode on the tiger and charged into the sea of flames. The demonic runes and flames flickered on its body as he stabbed the Fire Furnace Queen to death with one strike.

Ferocious… Too ferocious… Zhou Wen was dumbfounded. It wasn’t an exaggeration to say that this fellow was the strongest Epic pet. Zhou Wen had never seen such a ferocious Epic creature before.

Even the Mutated Demonized General that combined three skills was much weaker than the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General.

However, as the dimensional creatures were killed, the flames on the Tempered Steel Cauldron gradually dimmed. His aura and strength seemed to weaken as he slowly returned to a normal standard.

Zhou Wen found it strange. After trying a few times, he realized that this fellow was a war machine. He needed to constantly fight and kill in order to have unlimited Essence Energy. The more he killed, the stronger his various abilities became, especially with the augmentation of the Tempered Steel Cauldron.

Due to its limited Essence Energy, the Steel Cauldron Fiend could only last for a short period of time when using Tempered Steel Cauldron. However, the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General could use it perpetually, making his heavy armor harder and harder. The Tiger Soul Runes on the heavy armor also became stronger.

Zhou Wen studied it for a while and roughly understood that the combination of his Life Providence, Life Soul, and skills was perfect. It allowed him to become stronger the more he killed. Each one of the three was necessary.

This is indeed a good pet, but why hasn’t the Jinxes Master been removed after so many fusions? Zhou Wen was somewhat conflicted.

The pet was good, but Zhou Wen was still afraid about Jinxes Master rearing its head.

The Ghost King's lesson remained fresh in his mind. He did not want to be screwed by the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General at a critical moment. By then, it would be too late to cry.

However, Zhou Wen couldn't bear to destroy such a powerful Companion Beast.

After some thought, Zhou Wen decided to fuse it again. However, this time, he didn't deliberately choose low-success Companion Beasts. Instead, he chose a Companion Egg with a high success rate and wanted to see if he could eliminate the Jinxes Master skill.

If it could be eliminated, he would never find Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General redundant.

However, if he couldn't eliminate it, Zhou Wen would rather destroy him than keep him by his side.

What kind of pet should I use to fuse with it? Zhou Wen wasn't so rash this time as he carefully chose.

There were a total of six Epic Companion Eggs with a compatibility score above 60 with the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General. Throwing aside those with inferior skills and Life Providences, Zhou Wen was left with three rather satisfactory ones.

After some consideration, Zhou Wen finally chose a Companion Egg that dropped from Curse Demon Palace.

Epic Petrification Beasts had attributes that were more inclined towards their Constitution and Strength. Their

Speed was relatively poor, and their Life Providences and Life Souls were relatively ordinary. The only benefit was that they possessed an Essence Energy Skill that was very compatible with the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General.

This Essence Energy Skill known as the Magic Stone Curse wasn’t considered powerful on the Petrification Beast. The Magic Stone Curse wasn’t a curse on the enemy, but on oneself.

After using the Magic Stone Curse, one’s skin and bones would become as hard as a rock, which would strengthen one’s defense.

Besides that, the Magic Stone Curse had another effect. Once it was used, other people would be affected by the Magic Stone Curse attacking the Petrification Beast’s body. Their bodies would also show signs of petrification.

However, unlike the petrification of the Petrification Beast, the bodies of others would become stiff and their movements would also become slower. It was even possible that they would become stone statues just like Medusa’s Eyes of Petrification.

Of course, the effect of the Magic Stone Curse was far inferior to the Eyes of Petrification. One would suffer complete petrification only if one was injured by the Magic Stone Curse numerous times. Furthermore, the petrification effect was not permanent. There was a time limit.

Zhou Wen believed that if the Magic Stone Curse could replace the Jinxes Master skill, the four-skilled Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General would be invincible. Not only would he become stronger as he fought, but he could even reflect attacks and produce curse effects.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 541 - Infinite Jinxes Master

Chapter 541 Infinite Jinxes Master

The fusion this time had a Petrification Lion Companion Egg as the supplement. This ensured that the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General's Life Providence and Life Soul could be retained. It only replaced skills.

However, it was also risky for such a fusion. It was possible that the skills that he needed would end up replaced, leaving behind skills he didn't need.

In order to minimize the risk, Zhou Wen especially went to Curse Demon Palace to grind for Petrification Lion Companion Eggs. He obtained one before he fused it with the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General. He tried his best to reduce the negative consequences of having many skills.

Feeling a little nervous, Zhou Wen added the Petrification Lion Companion Egg. Luckily, the chances of Magic Stone Curse replacing Jinxes Master was relatively low.

The game lit up as the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General successfully fused. Zhou Wen hurriedly checked his stats.

The Life Providence and Life Soul remained unchanged. His Strength attribute had also increased to 40 points. Only his Speed attribute was still at 39. Other than the Mythical Pets, there were very few pets that could match up to such stats.

Zhou Wen’s gaze quickly shifted down as he saw the skill column.

Tempered Steel Cauldron, Rampage, Armor Breaker Spear, Magic Stone Curse… Zhou Wen’s heart was lifted, but when he saw the words “Jinxes Master,” his heart immediately plummeted.

I’ve already fused so many times. Why is the Jinxes Master skill still here? Zhou Wen felt like crying. Four skills were already the limit of a typical Companion Beast. Although there was a chance of a fusion pet exceeding four skills, the chances weren’t high. Now, the low-probability event of five skills had happened, but Jinxes Master remained.

I need to fuse it again… I have to fuse it again… Although the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General could be considered a perfect Epic pet, Zhou Wen definitely couldn’t keep it thanks to its Jinxes Master skill.

What else can I fuse it with? Zhou Wen was in a dilemma.

Since it had the Magic Stone Curse skill, using Petrification Lion for the fusion would likely result in Magic Stone Curse replacing Magic Stone Curse. It would be difficult to remove the Jinxes Master skill.

Zhou Wen had no choice but to choose from one of the remaining Companion Beasts with higher fusion compatibility. He didn’t care if the skills were suitable or not. He decided to fuse them first. If he could eliminate Jinxes Master, he could slowly fuse the skills again.

This time, he used a Petrification Knight which had multiple skills for fusion. Legend had it that the warrior who defeated Medusa was eventually transformed into a puppet by Medusa after being petrified.

Steeling his mind, Zhou Wen took out the Companion Egg of the four-skilled pet, Petrification Knight. With the four skills of the Petrification Knight and the five skills of the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General, there were a total of nine skills. The chance of eliminating a few skills was definite. He hoped to eliminate Jinxes Master.

He placed the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General with the Petrification Knight Companion Egg and pressed the fusion button.

The pet and egg shone brightly as they combined together.

With a crisp sound, the light dissipated and the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General appeared again. The fusion had succeeded again.

Zhou Wen hurriedly looked at the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General’s stats and realized that all four stats had reached the maximum of 40 points. It didn’t have the foundation of a Mythical creature, so it couldn’t increase to 41.

The Life Providence and Life Soul did not change. They were still Malicious Evil and Tiger Soul Runes.

Upon reaching the skill column, Zhou Wen looked over one skill after another, feeling a little nervous.

Tempered Steel Cauldron, Rampage, Armor Breaker Spear, Magic Stone Curse, Man-Mount As One… Jinxes Master… Zhou Wen was dumbfounded. Another skill had been added to it, but Jinxes Master remained.

Zhou Wen looked at the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General with mixed feelings. For a moment, he didn’t know how to react.

This fellow’s stats and skills were already cream of the crop. Apart from Mythical pets, it would be very difficult to find a pet that was better than it.

But this Jinxes Master… Zhou Wen didn’t have the confidence.

Perhaps a result of having fused too many times, Zhou Wen realized that the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General’s compatibility score with other Companion Beasts was much lower when he checked it. It went from 60-70 compatibility to about 30-40. Most of them were below 10.

With such compatibility continuing, the chance of failing will be too high if I continue fusing. Zhou Wen gritted his teeth and found the one with the highest compatibility. He would rather have it gone than keep Jinxes Master.

Although it was already the highest compatibility score, it was only 42. The success rate was about 40%.

Just as Zhou Wen was about to press the fusion button, he suddenly heard his phone ring.

He picked up his phone and took a look. Seeing that it was An Sheng, he picked up the call with one hand and was about to press the fusion button with the other.

“Young Master Wen, there’s news from Zhuolu. The experts have confirmed Qiongqi’s identity and have come up with some solutions…” An Sheng said.

When Zhou Wen heard Qiongqi’s name, he suddenly had a flash of inspiration. He stopped his finger midway without pressing the button.

Zhou Wen remembered hearing The Thearch say that if he wanted to defeat Qiongqi, it was best to let an evil person go. If a good person were to go, the chances of killing Qiongqi would be very low.

Although Zhou Wen didn't know why such a strange thing would happen, the current Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General had a Malicious Evil Life Providence. Was he considered an evil person?

With this thought in mind, he could not bring himself to press down with his finger.

An Sheng informed Zhou Wen about the results of the experts' research. After hearing it, Zhou Wen felt that their research was rather reasonable. They had determined some of Qiongqi's skills.

However, this did not have a decisive effect on killing Qiongqi. What was truly scary about Qiongqi was not just those few skills.

The experts also mentioned Qiongqi's penchant for bullying good, kind people. However, they believed that it was a character of the legendary Qiongqi. No one expected that this character could be exploited.

After An Sheng hung up, Zhou Wen looked at the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General with a thoughtful expression. In the end, he decided to not continue the fusion. He decided to take him to fight Qiongqi to see if it would be of any use.

After entering the Zhuolu ruins, Zhou Wen didn't go to Torch Dragon. After killing the Aoyin stone statue, he went to Qiongqi.

The moment the temple’s door opened, Zhou Wen summoned his Companion Beasts. The Six-Winged Guardian Dragon took the front, with the other Companion Beasts followed behind. One of them was the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General.

The Six-Winged Guardian Dragon lunged straight at Qiongqi. Qiongqi also rushed forward like before, but something unexpected happened.

It was as if Qiongqi had not had its fill today. Be it in terms of strength, speed, or various skills, it seemed to have weakened significantly.

The Six-Winged Guardian Dragon, which had been suppressed by Qiongqi, was actually able to fight Qiongqi to a standstill.

Does the Malicious Evil Life Providence really work? Zhou Wen was dumbfounded.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 542 - The Effect of the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General

Chapter 542 The Effect of the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General

It was unknown if it was intentional or not, but Qiongqi never took the initiative to attack the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General. The other Epic Companion Beasts were killed by Qiongqi in a short period of time.

Although Qiongqi eventually killed the blood-colored avatar, Zhou Wen saw some hope of killing it.

I wonder if there are any other Companion Beasts with similar Life Providences? After Zhou Wen exited the game, he checked online and found a few.

However, those Companion Beasts were too rare. Furthermore, they weren't any better than the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General. The most famous one was Tai Sui. That fellow had a Great Portent Life Providence and had the attribute of misfortune. He was even more terrifying than the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General.

From the looks of it, the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General is still considered gentle. At the very least, Jinxes Master doesn't appear too obvious. I haven't seen him jinxing yet. Wasn't there an emperor in ancient times who had a horse that jinxed its master. Whoever rode it died. However, the

emperor managed to escape a calamity by riding this horse… Zhou Wen was purely comforting himself.

If he hadn’t discovered that the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General was actually effective against Qiongqi, Zhou Wen wouldn’t have second thoughts about fusing it away. No matter how strong he was, he couldn’t be stronger than a Mythical pet. Keeping him alive was a scourge.

But now, Zhou Wen had the possibility of killing Qiongqi thanks to it. He had no choice but to consider leaving the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General behind.

Zhou Wen was wondering about the possibility of the former principal and company not entering Torch Dragon’s temple, but Qiongqi’s temple. If that were the case, it would be useless even if he killed Torch Dragon. He would have to kill Qiongqi again. When that happened, he would need the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General.

Logically speaking, a Companion Beast will only show its effects when summoned. At most, I won’t summon him. That would prevent any obstacles, right? Zhou Wen felt uneasy. He wasn’t confident, but that was the only way.

Thankfully, it’s just a Tiger Soul General. If there’s another Tai Sui, I’ll be dead. Zhou Wen closed the webpage introducing Tai Sui.

When the Golden Battle God Halberd respawned, Zhou Wen eagerly rushed in-game. After an intense battle with the Golden Battle God Halberd, he finally snapped it with Demonic Neonate’s ancient sword.

Ding!

A crystal dropped. Zhou Wen saw that it was an Essence Energy Skill Crystal. Inside the amber-like crystal was a golden trident's shadow.

He picked it up and took a closer look and the game immediately gave him a notification: 'Insufficient stats… Unmatched Life Providence… Rejected Life Soul…'

The series of notifications left Zhou Wen's head spinning.

Using his phone to check the Essence Energy Skill Crystal's information, he discovered that the Golden Battle God Halberd's Essence Energy Skill Crystal required 41 points of Strength. This requirement was considered the simplest of all the Mythical Essence Energy Skills that Zhou Wen knew. There was no special stat requirement.

Unfortunately, Zhou Wen still couldn't meet the 41 Strength requirement.

Regarding the requirements of having a Constitution-type Life Providence and Life Soul, Zhou Wen attempted by switching to the Small Perfection of Wisdom. The Eight Perfections Wisdom Life Providence was compatible, but his lack of a Life Soul made it a mismatch.

If that's the case, if I can condense the Small Perfection of Wisdom's Life Soul and raise my Strength to 41 points, wouldn't I be able to learn the Golden Battle God Halberd skill? Zhou Wen thought for a moment and felt that there was some hope.

Among all the Mythical Skills that Zhou Wen had seen, this was most likely to be one he could learn.

How can I have my Strength break through to 41 points? Zhou Wen had always been puzzled about the method to

increase his stats.

Now, Zhou Wen had an idea. His Life Soul was formed after absorbing the attributes. Therefore, Zhou Wen was wondering if his Life Soul could affect his stats if it advanced to Perfection.

The postfix of Strength was Sun. Later on, it was absorbed by the Inverse Ancient Sovereign Life Soul. If it advanced to Perfection, he wondered if it could influence the Strength attribute and increase his Strength to 41 points.

Of course, this was only Zhou Wen's speculation. However, he could give it a try. The Inverse Ancient Sovereign was already an Evolved Body. Any further and it would be able to advance to a Perfect Body.

Now, Zhou Wen was facing a choice. If he decided to gain new insights into his Life Soul and wait to absorb the Golden Battle God Halberd Crystal, he couldn't respawn the dungeons. Otherwise, he would lose the skill crystal.

If he wanted to continue grinding Mythical Companion Eggs, he had to give up on the skill crystal.

The drop rate of Mythical creatures is still rather high. I should continue grinding Companion Eggs. Zhou Wen thought for a moment before deciding to grind Companion Eggs first. After all, only with the Golden Battle God Halberd could he kill Torch Dragon. This was of paramount importance.

After putting down the Golden Battle God Halberd Crystal, Zhou Wen went to the Curse Demon Palace again. After killing Medusa with great difficulty, he had two crystals drop. One was a Speed Crystal, while the other was a Constitution

Crystal. All of them exceeded 70 points, but they were useless to Zhou Wen.

After grinding all the rare dimensional creatures, he reserved the Companion Eggs that dropped for pet fusion. Then, he had nothing else to do. He had to wait until tomorrow for the Golden Battle God Halberd and Medusa to respawn.

Since he had nothing to do during this period of time, Zhou Wen took the book he borrowed from the library and continued studying it.

Since Small Perfection of Wisdom hadn’t condensed a Life Soul, Zhou Wen wanted to take this opportunity to study it and condense it so that he could absorb the Golden Battle God Halberd skill crystal.

With the Golden Battle God Halberd and the Golden Battle God technique, he was certain he could kill Torch Dragon.

Wisdom had different types—two, three, and six types.

Shared or Unshared Wisdom, True Insight Wisdom, and Wisdom of Meditative Enlightenment, Mundane Wisdom, and Supramundane wisdom—all of these were Two Wisdoms.

True Insight Wisdom, Wisdom of Meditative Enlightenment, along with Written Wisdom were the Three Wisdoms.

The six Wisdoms were True Insight Wisdom, External World Wisdom, Written Wisdom, Wisdom of Skillful Means, Attendant Wisdom, and Wisdom of Meditative Enlightenment. These combined were also the Diamond Wisdom.

However, Zhou Wen’s Life Providence was Eight Perfections Wisdom. There were two more types of Wisdom. Zhou Wen

did plenty of research, but he couldn’t figure out what the Eight Perfections of Wisdom meant. Therefore, he hadn’t figured out the profundity of the Small Perfection of Wisdom to condense a Life Soul.

Zhou Wen vaguely felt that this Small Perfection of Wisdom was somewhat different from the real Perfection of Wisdom. The three-faced Buddha in Small Buddha Temple was somewhat different from the Buddhas in ordinary monasteries.

Just as he was thinking, his phone rang again. This time, it was from Wang Lu.

“Zhou Wen, I’m hungry,” Wang Lu said.

“Isn’t it noon now?” Zhou Wen asked.

“You owe me so many breakfasts. Didn’t you say you were going to make up with it using lunch? Are you trying to go back on your word? Quickly get me some food to eat. I’m starving,” said Wang Lu.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 543 - Gold Burial Ground

543 Gold Burial Ground

“Since you’ve already come out, why don’t you buy the food yourself?” Zhou Wen handed over the food he had bought from the cafeteria to Wang Lu.

“That’s how I roll, isn’t I?” Wang Lu took the food and sat in a flower bed to eat.

Zhou Wen sat down by the side and began munching on his roujiamo—meat sandwiched in bread.

“Zhou Wen, what plans do you have after graduation? With your relationship with the An family, you should be able to directly enter the Sunset army, right?” Wang Lu asked Zhou Wen as she ate her bread.

“No, I plan on returning to my hometown.” Zhou Wen had never planned on entering the Sunset army.

Zhou Wen really planned on returning to his hometown after graduation. He had seen quite a number of dungeons. He had even cleared two of the West District’s dungeons.

However, dimensional zones like the Ancient Sovereign City were very rare. The strongest creature in the Ancient Sovereign City was only at the Legendary stage. It looked like a very weak dimensional zone.

However, things like stone sabers that could be seen in-game, but untouchable and very rare in dimensional zones.

Chess Mountain also had a similar jade box, but everyone knew how terrifying Chess Mountain was.

Zhou Wen felt that Ancient Sovereign City wasn't that simple. Therefore, he wanted to return to Guide City after graduation.

"Your hometown is Guide City, right? There aren't any overly famous dimensional zones there, so there aren't many opportunities for development." Wang Lu paused for a moment before she said jokingly, "Why don't you consider going to the capital after graduation? That way, you can also repay your debts."

Wang Lu came from the capital's Wang family which was not the same Wang family in Luoyang.

"It's still early. Let's talk about it when the time comes." Zhou Wen felt that graduation was still a long way off. Perhaps, the restrictions of the dimensional zone would fail before he graduated. He wouldn't be at liberty to decide when that happened. All he could do was take things one step at a time.

"Then if you have nowhere to go in the future, remember to look for me in the capital. Our Wang family welcomes talented people very much. Besides, as an old schoolmate of mine, I can still take care of you," Wang Lu said with a smile.

"Alright." Zhou Wen nodded.

Not far away, a few students were resting on the grass.

"Did you hear that someone found a Gold Burial Ground in the Dungeon?"

"What's Gold Burial Ground?"

“You don’t even know what Gold Burial Ground is? It’s those you hear of in legends where a piece of gold is buried. After some time, this kind of Gold Burial Ground turns one piece of gold into two pieces of gold.”

“It must be fake. Only ignoramuses would believe such a ridiculous thing.”

“Don’t you doubt me. I don’t know if Gold Burial Grounds existed in the past, but after the dimensional storms, someone really discovered one. Furthermore, it’s been validated. The Gold Burial Ground does have magical powers. This person is famous in the Federation.”

“Who is it?”

“It’s the Xia family’s hero.”

“Are you serious? Why haven’t I heard of it before? Are you making it up?”

“What do you mean I made it up? There really was such a thing. There was more than one hero present at that time. However, that place was discovered by the Xia family’s hero. Besides, only he believed in the legend of Gold Burial Grounds. Hence, he was the only one who managed to find it.”

“What did he bury?”

“He buried a sword and dug out two swords. Can you guess which two swords they are? You must have heard of the names of those two swords.”

“No way? Could it be the famous Twin Dragon Swords of the Xia family?”

“Not bad. What the Xia family hero buried in the Gold Burial Ground back then was a Dragon Blood Sword Companion Egg. When he dug it out the next day, there were two Dragon Blood Sword Companion Eggs…”

The students were having a good time chatting, pumped as though all of that had happened.

“Senior, you were talking about the Gold Burial Ground being found in the Dungeon? Where is it?” Wang Lu eavesdropped for a while before running over to ask for information.

“If someone asks, I definitely won’t tell them. However, you’re so pretty there’s no harm telling you. That place is in the underground Ancient City that we often go to. However, it’s useless for you to go there now. I heard that the Gold Burial Ground only allows one thing to be buried once. It’s useless if you bury more. According to the senior who discovered the Gold Burial Ground, he accidentally dropped a dimensional crystal when he killed a dimensional creature. When he dug up again, he found two identical dimensional crystals…” The senior was very talkative and explained everything clearly.

“Thank you, Senior.” Wang Lu thanked him.

“Junior, don’t be in such a hurry to leave. Do you want me to take you there?” the senior said warmly when he saw Wang Lu’s beauty.

“There’s no need, Senior. Thank you.” As Wang Lu spoke, she had already returned to the flower bed.

“You don’t have anything else to do this afternoon, right? Let’s go and take a look together. Perhaps there’s really a Gold Burial Ground,” Wang Lu said to Zhou Wen.

“Didn’t they say that the Gold Burial Ground can only be used once? Then what’s the use of going there?” Zhou Wen asked.

“To take a look. It’s just a legend that Gold Burial Ground only allows one burial. Perhaps it can be used again?” Wang Lu pulled Zhou Wen towards the underground Ancient City.

The underground ancient city mentioned by the students was actually the Ancient City dimensional zone which was in the uppermost layer. Although there were many dimensional creatures there, most of them were at the Mortal stage. The strongest was at the Legendary stage. Therefore, ordinary students would usually go there to learn how to hunt dimensional creatures. This meant it was very popular.

However, the dimensional creatures there didn’t produce anything particularly good. Therefore, students with some strength wouldn’t choose to stay there for long.

When Wang Lu and Zhou Wen arrived at the underground Ancient City, they realized that there were many students here. They were all searching for something in the dilapidated Ancient City. They must have heard the legend of the Gold Burial Ground, so they had come here to try their luck.

“There are so many people searching for the Gold Burial Ground. Even if there really is one, it’s already been occupied by countless people. Let’s head back.” Zhou Wen was still thinking about how he could condense his Life Soul with the Small Perfection of Wisdom, so he really didn’t wish to waste time on such an iffy matter.

“That’s not necessarily the case. How do you know there’s no chance if you don’t give it a try?” Wang Lu sized up Zhou Wen and said after looking at his feet, “Give me your shoes.”

“What for?” Zhou Wen looked at her in puzzlement.

“Take off your right shoe and give it to me. You will know in a while,” urged Wang Lu.

Zhou Wen took off his right shoe and gave it to her. Wang Lu picked it up and made a prayer-like action before throwing it into the sky.

After the shoe landed, Wang Lu pointed in the direction of the shoe and said, “Let’s look over there.”

“Will this really work?” Zhou Wen put on his shoes and followed Wang Lu forward.

“Let’s give it a try. Perhaps it will work.” Wang Lu said.

The two of them walked all the way into Ancient City. It was really in ruins. Many of the walls were made of clay bricks. After the passage of time, they were pockmarked and covered in dust. No matter how one looked at it, it did not look like an ancient city but more like a village.

As they walked, one of Wang Lu’s ear studs dropped. After falling to the ground, it bounced into a fist-sized hole.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 544 - Hole

Chapter 544 Hole

“Let me do it.” Zhou Wen squatted down and reached his hand into the hole.

The hole was along a mud wall. It was probably dug out by something like a rat. As there weren’t any powerful dimensional creatures here, Zhou Wen didn’t activate Truth Listener. The hole wasn’t deep either. Zhou Wen extended his hand and touched it. Soon, he touched something. When he touched it, he realized that it was indeed Wang Lu’s ear stud.

However, what was strange was that Wang Lu had dropped one ear stud, but Zhou Wen touched two identical ear studs.

Zhou Wen was somewhat surprised. He looked at Wang Lu’s other ear stud and couldn’t help but ask, “How many ear studs did you drop?”

“One,” Wang Lu replied.

“Why are there two ear studs here? Could it be…” Zhou Wen looked at the hole. He couldn’t believe that it was the legendary Gold Burial Ground.

Wang Lu took the two ear studs and carefully looked at them. Soon, she said with certainty, “These two ear studs are identical. Even the spots I accidentally scratched are identical. From the looks of it, we have really found the

legendary Gold Burial Ground. Quick, take something and give it a try.”

Zhou Wen was somewhat hesitant. Wang Lu’s luck was good enough to discover the Gold Burial Ground, but his luck wasn’t that good. Furthermore, he felt that the Gold Burial Ground was somewhat odd.

“It isn’t easy to find a Gold Burial Ground. Don’t you want to give it a try?” Wang Lu asked Zhou Wen.

Before Zhou Wen could answer, he saw a figure rush over. He was originally searching for the Gold Burial Ground nearby. Upon hearing Zhou Wen and Wang Lu’s conversation, he rushed over. Without waiting for Zhou Wen and Wang Lu to react, he stuffed a Companion Egg into the hole.

“Hey, aren’t you being a little impolite?” Zhou Wen said with a frown.

“You have to share the good stuff with everyone. We’re all schoolmates after all. Why be so petty? At most, you can use it later.” The person raised his head as he spoke.

“It’s you?” Zhou Wen exchanged looks with the person and immediately recognized him.

This person’s name was Li Yu. Previously, Zhou Wen had set up a stall to sell Companion Eggs at the school’s trading market. Back then, there were two students who had set up stalls beside him. One was Huang Ji and the other was Li Yu.

Back then, Zhou Wen had a tiny conflict with Li Yu because of Gu Dian. Li Yu had suffered a little, but he never expected to meet him again today.

“So it’s you, Zhou Wen. You caused me so much pain last time. Let me use the Gold Burial Ground this time and we’re even.” Li Yu grinned and asked, “How long will it take for this Gold Burial Ground to take effect?”

Zhou Wen couldn’t be bothered to argue with him, so he replied, “The ear stud fell moments ago. There were two once I tried taking it out.”

“Legend has it that we have to bury it for one night. I was just wondering how long it would take for us to pass the time. It turns out that it can be done so soon,” Li Yu said as he reached his hand into the hole.

After touching it a few times, Li Yu’s expression changed. His squatting body suddenly turned into a kneeling position. His face was almost pressed to the side of the hole. Most of his arm was stretched in as he groped about.

“Where… where’s my Companion Egg?” Li Yu’s expression was not not a happy one. He searched the hole several times but failed to find anything.

“There’s nothing?” Zhou Wen activated Truth Listener and listened to the hole.

The hole wasn’t too deep to begin with, so he could hear everything clearly.

It was a small hole about forty centimeters deep. There were no forks or Companion Eggs inside.

“Impossible? I just put it in there. It can’t be wrong. Why is it gone?” Li Yu reached in again and groped about anxiously. However, there was nothing inside. He could not touch it.

Zhou Wen also found it odd. He had seen Li Yu put the Companion Egg in with his own eyes. Why was it gone?

“Are you deliberately messing with me? That Companion Egg was from the company and not mine. Stop fooling around and return it to me. I know I was wrong. I’ll compensate you, alright?” Li Yu was anxious. Unable to find it, he stood up to bow to Zhou Wen and Wang Lu.

“Don’t spout nonsense. We didn’t take your Companion Egg. You were the one who insisted on putting it in. Who can you blame?” Wang Lu curled her lips and said.

Li Yu was speechless. He also knew that Zhou Wen and Wang Lu’s statuses weren’t ordinary, so he didn’t dare cause trouble with them.

“Wang Lu, give me an ear stud.” Zhou Wen extended his hand in front of Wang Lu.

Wang Lu handed him an ear stud. Zhou Wen threw the ear stud into the hole and used Truth Listener to listen. However, there was no reaction. It was just an ordinary hole.

He reached in and touched. There was only one ear stud.

“It’s indeed a little strange,” Zhou Wen said with a frown as he looked at the ear stud in his hand.

“This hole clearly replicated my ear studs just now. Why did it suddenly fail? It’s very strange,” Wang Lu added.

Zhou Wen shook his head slightly. “That’s not what I’m talking about. The reason this news spread is because someone discovered the Gold Burial Ground. In other words, that person used the Gold Burial Ground and knew its effects before he could spread the news. However, if it’s

really effective, he should be constantly burying things inside. How can he spread such important news?”

“What you said makes sense. Since he spread the news, it must be that Gold Burial Ground is already useless. Or rather, there’s something wrong with that Gold Burial Ground…” Li Yu also came to a realization. He pounded his chest and stamped his feet, regretting that he hadn’t thought of this in advance. He even took the company’s Epic Companion Egg and stuffed it in. He was truly blinded by wealth.

“My ear studs were clearly replicated, and his Companion Eggs disappeared. Doesn’t that mean that the Gold Burial Ground exists? Furthermore, it’s indeed effective. However, there’s a problem with it?” Wang Lu said as she looked at the hole.

“Is there any way to retrieve my Companion Egg?” Li Yu asked Wang Lu as though he was grasping at straws.

“I don’t know. Try again.” Wang Lu shook her head.

Li Yu could not be bothered anymore. He knelt beside the cave and placed some of his trinkets inside. After a while, he took them out. However, it was useless. They were not replicated, neither had they disappeared.

This was within Zhou Wen’s expectations. It was an ordinary hole. He had been listening for a long time. There was nothing around the hole, nor were there any energy fluctuations.

“Wang Lu, can you search again?” Zhou Wen asked Wang Lu.

“Yes, but this will be the last time for today. Give me your shoe,” said Wang Lu.

“Can’t you use something else?” Zhou Wen had to take off his shoe and give it to Wang Lu.

“No.” Wang Lu took the shoe and threw it into the air.

The shoe landed, but this time, it pointed in a different direction, not in the direction of the hole.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 545 - he Secret of the Hole

Chapter 545 The Secret of the Hole

This time, when the two of them walked forward, Zhou Wen raised Truth Listener’s powers to the limit as he constantly scanned his surroundings.

After walking for a while, Zhou Wen discovered a strange spot. Beneath a mud wall was a place where Truth Listener couldn’t hear. It was as though something had isolated it, preventing him from hearing anything.

The direction the duo were heading in happened to line up with this area.

When Zhou Wen looked, he saw that there was a hole beneath the mud wall. It was similar to the hole just now, but this hole was clearly different. Even Truth Listener couldn’t tell what was going on inside.

Zhou Wen gave Wang Lu a look before looking in the direction of the hole. Wang Lu looked at the hole, but she couldn’t tell what was wrong with it. She only felt that the hole looked very similar to the one from before.

“Could this hole be the legendary Gold Burial Ground? Why don’t we try using something first?” Zhou Wen deliberately said loudly to Wang Lu.

Zhou Wen had a nagging feeling that there was something wrong with the Gold Burial Ground. Not only was it able to move, but it had also swallowed Li Yu's Companion Egg. The thing it had replicated was an ear stud with very low practical value. No matter how he thought about it, there was something amiss.

"What if the thing that's placed inside ends up disappearing like that person's Companion Egg?" Wang Lu said cooperatively.

"It's fine. Let's give it a try first. I remember you have a Mythical Companion Egg on you, right? Try using an unimportant Companion Egg or something first. If there's no problem, put the Mythical Companion Egg inside," Zhou Wen said to Wang Lu while winking.

"Is that so? Alright then." Wang Lu touched her pocket knowingly. She took out something and placed it in the hole.

Zhou Wen kept observing the hole. After Wang Lu placed the item inside, a strange energy fluctuation immediately appeared in the hole. Unfortunately, Zhou Wen could only sense the energy fluctuation and couldn't hear what was happening inside.

However, as long as he could sense something unusual in the hole, he could lock onto it. He wasn't afraid that it would escape. Zhou Wen refused to believe that it was faster than his saber.

After a while, the energy fluctuations in the cave gradually came to a stop. As for the hole, there was still a force that screened his powers. Zhou Wen still couldn't hear what was happening inside.

He gave Wang Lu a look before she squatted down. As she reached out to reach into the hole, she said, “I wonder if this is the Gold Burial Ground. It should be done, right?”

As she spoke, Wang Lu had already taken out the item from the cave. Zhou Wen had seen what she had previously placed inside. It was a very small saber.

Now, Wang Lu took out two sabers.

“Wow, one saber has turned into two. Is this really the Gold Burial Ground?” Zhou Wen extended his hand to take the small saber. The saber looked somewhat strange. The blade was like a piece of pandan leaf, and the scabbard was the same. It was probably made of Essence Gold. From the looks of it, it seemed pretty good.

Zhou Wen pulled the tiny saber out of its sheath, and Wang Lu also unsheathed the tiny saber in her hand. The two sabers had a cold, oppressive glint, making one’s hair stand on end. They looked identical.

Zhou Wen knew at a glance that it was a good saber, and it wasn’t an ordinary one.

“That’s right. This place is really a Gold Burial Ground. Let’s quickly put a Mythical Companion Egg inside.” As Wang Lu spoke, she gave Zhou Wen another look before looking at the tiny saber in his hand.

“Alright, quickly put the Mythical Companion Egg in. That way, we can have two Mythical Companion Eggs. When the time comes, I’ll have one, and you can have one…” Zhou Wen said as though he had thought of something. He suddenly changed his words and said, “Let’s think it through. The item that was placed inside the second time disappeared. To be safe, let’s try again.”

With that said, Zhou Wen placed the tiny saber in his hand into the hole and continued observing the situation inside with Truth Listener.

The strange energy fluctuation in the cave stirred once again, but this time, Zhou Wen clearly felt that the strange energy fluctuation was much weaker. Not only was it weaker, but it was also very unstable.

Gradually, Zhou Wen realized that in the hole where Truth Listener originally couldn’t hear anything, he could vaguely hear some movement. It was as though something was moving inside.

This time, the energy fluctuation clearly lasted longer than before. After a while, the strange power in the cave decreased significantly. Zhou Wen could roughly hear the situation inside.

He realized that there was a tiny beast inside the cave. Zhou Wen couldn’t tell what it was. It looked a little like a squirrel, but it wasn’t exactly the same. It looked much better than a rat. Its body was slender, and its eyes were huge. Its tail was also very large and fluffy.

Is this fellow a ferret? However, a ferret shouldn’t be living in a mud wall. It should be in the forest, right? Could it be a weasel? Zhou Wen had never seen a weasel before, but the more he thought about it, the more likely it was.

At that moment, the tiny beast was holding the small saber with its two glowing paws. Its eyes were wide open like two little light bulbs staring at the empty space in front of it. From its eyes, a strange light shot out. It was like a three-dimensional printer in a science fiction movie. The light actually printed out a small sheathed saber out of nowhere.

Although Truth Listener couldn’t hear the trajectory of the light beams, it could sense an energy fluctuation shoot out from its eyes before gradually molding the tiny saber in midair.

The portion of the saber’s blade had been completed, but it was still short of the handle. The beast seemed to be lacking in Essence Energy. The ripples that shot out from its eyes were intermittent, as though they would disappear at any moment.

The beast’s fur stood up as it seemed to steel itself. It tried its best to shoot out rays of light from its eyes. Finally, it finished the last portion of the saber handle.

Clang!

The small saber fell to the ground together with the small saber in its claws. The two small sabers were identical, with no visible difference.

However, the beast was so tired that it sprawled in the hole with its limbs spread out. It stuck out its tiny tongue and panted. It looked like it had consumed a lot of energy.

“It should be done, right?” Zhou Wen muttered to himself before reaching into the cave.

The beast immediately got up and dragged its tired body to the back of the cave.

Zhou Wen reached in and took out the two sabers. He even unsheathed them and compared them. Indeed, they were identical. It didn’t look any different.

“It’s really identical. Quickly take out the Mythical Companion Egg and put it in.” As Zhou Wen spoke, he

noticed the beast’s eyes lighting up. Even its ears pricked up as it wore an excited and expectant look.

“Isn’t the Companion Egg with you?” Wang Lu retorted.

“No way. I thought it was you. Didn’t you bring it?” Zhou Wen feigned surprise.

“No, I thought you brought it. What do we do now?” Wang Lu asked.

“Then let’s try it next time,” Zhou Wen said as he turned to leave. Wang Lu followed him.

The beast in the hole was stunned for a full second before it suddenly screamed and crawled out of the hole.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 546 - Revenge

Chapter 546 Revenge

The beast transformed into a stream of light as it screamed and charged at Zhou Wen. Unfortunately, it had expended too much Essence Energy. Zhou Wen circulated the Demonic Astral Wheel with one hand and a powerful suction force sucked the beast into his palm. No matter how hard the beast struggled, it couldn’t escape.

Zhou Wen didn’t attack it directly because he felt that the beast was likely to be proficient in underground escaping abilities. If it escaped underground, it would be difficult to capture it.

Now that it had rushed out and left the ground, it was naturally the best outcome for him.

“Forget it. Let it go. It hasn’t harmed anyone. It has only cheated people of things,” said Wang Lu.

Zhou Wen thought for a moment and felt that killing the beast wouldn’t have a high chance of dropping a Companion Egg. After all, he had already obtained two tiny sabers. It didn’t matter if he let it go.

The power of the Demonic Astral Wheel in Zhou Wen’s hand dissipated, and after landing on the ground, the beast immediately vanished.

It really knows how to use Earth Escape. Zhou Wen was somewhat envious. Earth Escape was extremely practical. It was even more practical than flying. Unfortunately, it wasn’t

produced in many places. If he wanted to learn it, he had to depend on luck. He couldn’t buy it even if he had the money.

“That little beast almost died from exhaustion in order to replicate those two sabers. Otherwise, it wouldn’t have been so easily caught by me. What saber is this?” Zhou Wen returned the two tiny sabers to Wang Lu.

“You already have a Bamboo Blade, yet you don’t recognize the Orchid Blade of the Plum, Orchid, Bamboo, and Chrysanthemum Blades?” Wang Lu looked at Zhou Wen in surprise.

“You’re telling me that this tiny saber is the Orchid Blade of the Four Gentlemen Blades?” Zhou Wen immediately knew that he had underestimated the little beast.

Initially, he thought that it was just an ordinary Essence Gold saber. It was not surprising that the little beast could replicate it. However, he didn’t expect it to be the Orchid Blade of the Four Gentlemen Blades.

Zhou Wen had the Bamboo Blade, so he knew that the Four Gentlemen Blades were extraordinary. Their toughness was comparable to a Mythical creature’s body, and they were extremely rare Essence Gold weapons.

Outside the game, Zhou Wen used Bamboo Blade more than the Overlord Sword because although Overlord Sword’s sword beam was powerful, the sword’s blade was too weak. It was very likely to snap when colliding with powerful forces.

As for Bamboo Blade, it didn’t have any problems in this aspect. Even in a battle with Mythical creatures, it had never

been damaged. Just this point alone was enough to prove the value of the Four Gentlemen Blades.

The quality of the Orchid Blade was likely to be the same as the Bamboo Blade; however, it was a little small. Yet, that little beast had actually been able to duplicate the Orchid Blade. This ability was really a little abnormal.

However, Zhou Wen had heard that the Four Gentlemen Blades would bring ill fate to their owners. Now, the Orchid Blade had turned into three. He didn't know if Wang Lu's luck could block the ominous fate brought by three Orchid Blades.

"Two Orchid Blades were replicated. Each of us can have one." Wang Lu handed one of the Orchid Blades to Zhou Wen.

Zhou Wen shook his head and said, "I don't have your luck. I've been unlucky enough recently. How am I supposed to survive if I hold the Orchid Blade? You should keep it yourself."

However, Wang Lu stuffed the Orchid Blade into Zhou Wen's hand. "Take a closer look. Although the replica looks similar to the real one, there are still some differences. This replica Orchid Blade definitely doesn't have the ominous problems that plague the real Orchid Blade."

Zhou Wen picked up the Orchid Blade in his hand and compared it with the real Orchid Blade that Wang Lu had mentioned. However, in terms of external superficialities, it didn't seem any different.

Zhou Wen tested the sharpness and toughness of the replica and realized that it was very similar to the real Four Gentlemen Blades. He couldn't tell what was different.

Seeing Zhou Wen look at her suspiciously, Wang Lu said with a smile, “Don’t worry about using it. I can sense that there’s no ominous power in the replica.”

Since Wang Lu was so certain, Zhou Wen accepted the replica Orchid Blade. Although it was fake, it likely wasn’t inferior to the real deal as a weapon. Furthermore, it wouldn’t be detrimental to its owner like the real one.

The secret of the Gold Burial Ground had been cracked. There was no point in staying here any longer. Zhou Wen and Wang Lu headed for the exit of the underground Ancient City.

After walking for a while, Zhou Wen realized that the little beast had poked its head out from a hole in the distance and was looking at them.

They were walking ahead; yet, the fella continued following them without giving up. It was clearly waiting for an opportunity to take revenge.

Since the little beast wasn’t very aggressive and it hadn’t harmed other students, Zhou Wen ignored it and thought that it wouldn’t be able to keep up after they exited the dimensional zone.

However, he never expected that after leaving the underground Ancient City, the little beast would continue following him. After leaving the dimensional zone, Zhou Wen’s Truth Listener ability discovered that it had been traveling underground all this time. It had actually followed them onto campus.

This fellow can actually break out of the seal? Zhou Wen was somewhat surprised. After all, there weren’t many break-out creatures nowadays.

Zhou Wen remained unperturbed as he pretended that he didn’t notice it. He secretly sent a message to Wang Lu on his phone, telling her to be careful.

When they separated in front of their dorms, Wang Lu made a face at Zhou Wen and sent him a message. “It’s best you be careful. I believe it will definitely seek you out.”

Zhou Wen thought that it made sense. With Wang Lu’s luck, even if the little beast wanted to seek revenge, it would definitely come to him instead of Wang Lu.

After returning to his dorm, Zhou Wen realized that the little beast had indeed followed him in. It furtively hid in his building furtively, but it didn’t dare attack Zhou Wen.

From the looks of it, it knew how powerful Zhou Wen was. It didn’t dare risk its life to fight Zhou Wen. All it did was secretly exact revenge on him.

As it knew how to escape through the earth, it would be difficult to attack it again if he failed to take it down with a single strike. Zhou Wen pretended not to see it and waited for it to leave the ground before attacking.

He got onto bed and gamed on his phone. He also slowly drank the herbal tea that he had brewed. Although his body was in a good condition recently and hadn’t lost much blood, he still needed to maintain his health. He had to be prepared. What if he bled heavily in the future?

As Zhou Wen grinded the dungeons, he waited for the little beast to reveal itself. However, the little beast was very careful. It hid in a wall corner, behind the closet, and various spots. It peeked its head out from time to time without daring to come over.

When Zhou Wen saw that it didn’t dare come over while he gamed, he locked his phone and pretended to be asleep.

The little beast was just too careful. It only began to quietly crawl over and hide under Zhou Wen’s bed after he faked sleep.

Zhou Wen originally believed that the little beast would attack him at once. Once it left the ground, he would grab it.

However, to his surprise, the little beast suddenly changed its target and when it reached the bottom of Zhou Wen’s bed, it pounced at something underneath.

Zhou Wen listened carefully. The little beast had pounced on an iron lump and hugged it with its paws. It opened its mouth and bit it, producing creaking sounds.

Only then did Zhou Wen recall that he had obtained a treasure map from Earth Temple and had dug it up. However, Zhou Wen’s treasure map had led him to a dimensional doll. He didn’t know what kind of plant-type dimensional creature it was.

Later, he had saved the baby. The baby had given him a metal lump that resembled a walnut. Zhou Wen studied it for a long time but failed to figure out what it was. He had thrown it under the bed.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 547 - Three Heads and Six Arms

Chapter 547 Three Heads and Six Arms

The tiny beast originally wanted to launch a sneak attack on Zhou Wen, but after discovering the item that resembled a metal walnut, it gave up. It sprawled on the metal walnut and gnawed at it.

Zhou Wen saw that its teeth were already creating sparks from gnawing on the metal, but it couldn’t tear the outer shell of the metal walnut apart.

This fellow definitely knows something valuable when it sees it. Could it be that the metal walnut is really something good? After studying it for a period of time, Zhou Wen still couldn’t figure out what the metal walnut was. He thought it was a special metal and planned on finding an opportunity to melt it into a saber or something.

But now, looking at how the little beast wanted to eat the metal walnut, Zhou Wen felt that the walnut wasn’t just as simple as a piece of metal.

The tiny beast was good at replicating, and it had definitely seen a lot of treasures. Moreover, it knew how to hide underground. What kind of metal could it not find underground? It definitely didn’t want to eat the metal on the metal walnut’s surface. It was very likely that there was something inside the metal walnut which had made it forget about revenge.

With its cautious personality, it actually dared to cause such a commotion under Zhou Wen’s bed. Clearly, the item in the metal walnut was extremely attractive to it, making it lose its rationality.

Zhou Wen turned over and got off the bed. He lifted the bedsheets and looked inside. He saw that the tiny beast was still chewing on the metal walnut. It was as though it had been possessed. It didn’t even seem to notice that Zhou Wen was looking at it as it continued gnawing.

Zhou Wen reached out and picked it up.

However, the tiny beast’s four paws had the metal walnut in a firm grip. No matter how hard Zhou Wen pulled, it wouldn’t budge. When he pulled out the metal walnut, the tiny beast came out with it, its paws still on the walnut.

From the looks of it, what’s inside this metal walnut is no trifling matter. Zhou Wen released his hand. The tiny beast didn’t run, instead, it sprawled on the metal walnut and continued gnawing.

This fellow sure is greedy. Zhou Wen shook his head. Humans die for wealth, birds die for food. This little beast had sacrificed its life for a metal walnut. Its intelligence was truly worrying.

Since the tiny beast couldn’t bite through it, Zhou Wen ignored it and let it slowly gnaw at it while he carefully studied the metal walnut.

Truth Listener’s powers couldn’t hear what was inside the metal walnut. It seemed to be solid metal at its core. Doctor Darkness’s Light of Penetration couldn’t penetrate the metal either.

Zhou Wen didn’t sense any special energy fluctuations from the metal walnut. This left him puzzled. He didn’t know what could be inside such a metal lump.

He attempted to slash with Overlord Sword, but the sword beam that possessed Ever-Victorious only left a white mark on the metal walnut.

After a while, Zhou Wen realized that the tiny beast had actually produced a shallow bite mark on the metal walnut. At this speed, he didn’t know when it would be able to bite through it.

The tiny beast forgot about running as it greedily nibbled on it. Zhou Wen thought for a moment and placed the metal walnut and the little beast into the chaos space.

In the chaos space, the tiny beast continued nibbling on the metal walnut as if it was possessed.

Before the Golden Battle God Halberd respawned, Zhou Wen took out a Buddhist scripture and pondered as he read it. Could the Eight Perfections correspond to the Eight Consciousnesses?

Six hundred volumes of the Great Perfection of Wisdom Sutra are condensed into the Diamond Sutra. The Diamond Sutra is also condensed into the Heart Sutra. It can be said that the Heart Sutra is the essence of the Great Perfection of Wisdom. And its true meaning lies in the Eighth Consciousnesses. It’s also known as Tathagatagarbha Thought, and it’s also known as Ālayavijñāna. However, this is the concept and essence of the Great Perfection of Wisdom Sutra. The Small Perfection of Wisdom I cultivate seems somewhat different. Zhou Wen thought for a moment and felt that something was amiss. He then looked at the other information.

He failed to figure out anything new even when the Golden Battle God Halberd respawned. He went to grind the Golden Battle God Halberd and Medusa, but they only dropped stat crystals after expending all his efforts. It made Zhou Wen suspect that the Orchid Blade replica had affected the light that shone on him from providence.

Ah Sheng said that there's a one-third chance. It should drop next time, right? Although Zhou Wen was anxious, he didn't have any good ideas. All he could do was wait for tomorrow.

After grinding the rare dimensional creatures again, he was quite lucky this time. Another Three-Eyed Vajra Malla Companion Egg dropped. Zhou Wen hatched it and kept it for future fusions.

After finishing his set of grinding, Zhou Wen began studying his Life Providence, Eight Perfections Wisdom, again. Only by condensing a Life Soul could he learn the Golden Battle God Halberd's skill.

"Zhou Wen, are you busy? Do you have time to come with me to Dragon Gate Grotto?" Li Xuan suddenly came to Zhou Wen.

Li Xuan had been cultivating diligently recently and seldom came out. For him to take the initiative to look for Zhou Wen was definitely something.

"Yes," Zhou Wen agreed.

The two of them arranged to meet in front of Dragon Gate Grotto. When Zhou Wen arrived, he realized that apart from Li Xuan, Feng Qiuyan and Gu Dian from the Xuanwen Club were present as well as Ming Xiu.

“Now that Zhou Wen is here, I’ll make things clear first before we enter.” Li Xuan recounted what had happened.

Li Xuan had been cultivating diligently recently. He had gone to many dimensional zones to hone his combat abilities. He had discovered a strange dimensional creature in Dragon Gate Grotto’s Southernmost Cave. He had never seen it before.

While battling the dimensional creature, Li Xuan had nearly been killed. Thankfully, he had escaped.

The reason he had called them over was to let them take a look and see if there was a chance of killing that dimensional creature.

According to Li Xuan’s description, the dimensional creature was somewhat different from the other dimensional creatures in Dragon Gate Grotto. The Dragon Gate Grotto’s ordinary dimensional creatures were Warriors, Vajra Mallas, Fairies, and Stone Beasts.

However, that dimensional creature looked as ugly and terrifying as a devil.

After arriving outside the southernmost Cave, Li Xuan said to Zhou Wen and company, “You aren’t familiar with that dimensional creature. Don’t attack first. I’ll fight it first. Watch by the side. It’s best if you can think of a way to counter it. It won’t be too late to attack then.”

Zhou Wen, Feng Qiuyan, Gu Dian, and Ming Xiu nodded in agreement. The five of them entered the Southernmost Cave together.

There were some Warriors in the Southernmost Cave, but they were not as strong as the Vajra Mallas of the Myriad

Buddha Cave. The five of them easily stormed their way in. When they arrived at a stone cave, they saw a three-headed, six-armed monster that looked like black iron rush out of the cave.

Zhou Wen looked at the three heads of the dimensional creature. Each face looked more terrifying than the other. All of them looked like evil ghosts. The only difference was that the head in the middle had a single horn while the other two had either two or three horns.

In each of his six hands was a hoop. The hoops were as thick as an infant’s arm and were shimmering with golden light. They looked like they were made of gold and there were many mysterious patterns engraved on them.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 548 - Super Self-Recovery

Chapter 548 Super Self-Recovery

Li Xuan directly used his Life Soul. His body was tightly wrapped by the black carapace, and his eyes had turned red. He looked different from his usual demeanor and looked sinister.

Li Xuan’s speed was very fast, leaving behind afterimages as he rushed in front of the monster. His body swayed left and right as he dodged the monster’s hoop attacks. He held an Epic Companion Beast saber in his hand and slashed at the monster’s body, but it was blocked by a hoop.

The monster was indeed very powerful. The six hoops delivered strange attacks, preventing Li Xuan’s saber from touching him. All he could do was constantly shift his position.

Li Xuan’s moves and movement techniques were exquisite. They looked extremely beautiful. It could be said to be a textbook example, without any flaws.

However, Zhou Wen felt that this wasn’t Li Xuan. The Li Xuan he knew wasn’t someone who pursued perfection.

If he hadn’t seen Li Xuan rush forward, Zhou Wen would have believed that the person inside the carapace was Li Mobai.

Is it really good to have such a change? Zhou Wen frowned slightly. If a person's goal was something he didn't like, Zhou Wen doubted he could go far.

"Li Xuan's moves are very powerful. I can't find any flaws, but I have a nagging feeling that something's amiss," Feng Qiuyan said as he watched Li Xuan battle the monster.

Ming Xiu nodded and said, "I also find it a little strange. It's very strong, but it also feels a little odd. I remember seeing Li Xuan fight in the past. His style isn't like that, right?"

"Coach, what do you think?" Feng Qiuyan asked Zhou Wen.

"Not everyone knows the path to take when they are born. They have to slowly experiment. Some people quickly find their own paths, but some people can walk their entire lives only to end up meandering down the wrong path. In fact, I don't know which path is right or which path is wrong. Li Xuan's path ultimately needs to be taken by him. I believe that no matter how difficult it is, he will definitely be able to continue down the path," Zhou Wen said.

Clang! Clang! Clang!

Li Xuan's saber constantly clashed with the monster's golden hoop, but Li Xuan kept retreating. The monster's strength and speed were above his. His saber was unable to penetrate the golden bangle's defenses. Instead, he was forced to constantly retreat.

After watching for a while, Zhou Wen roughly understood that the monster had Epic levels of Strength and Constitution. Its body was extremely strong, and with its immense strength, even with Zhou Wen's Constitution, he would probably only be able to tie with him.

Li Xuan’s family had plenty of resources, so he had a large number of stat crystals to use. He hadn’t advanced to the Epic stage for long, but his various stats were almost maxed out. However, he couldn’t see his stats. Zhou Wen estimated that his basic stats were about 40 points. Even if it wasn’t, it was probably around 38 or 39.

Logically speaking, Li Xuan cultivated in the Invincible Connate Divine Art, so he shouldn’t have been at a disadvantage in terms of Constitution and Strength. However, he was overly focused on perfection in his moves, causing him to be constantly thrown back by the monster.

“I’m quite aware of its abilities. Let’s go,” Gu Dian said.

“Wait a little longer. I want to watch a little longer.” Zhou Wen stopped them and watched Li Xuan continue fighting.

Gu Dian didn’t ask why. Feng Qiuyan and Ming Xiu also stopped as they continued watching the battle.

“Old Zhou, it’s about time. Hurry up and attack,” Li Xuan shouted at Zhou Wen as he retreated.

“You shouldn’t need our help with such a weak dimensional creature, right?” Zhou Wen said with a smile.

“Bullsh*t. If I didn’t need you, would I have called you here?” Li Xuan cursed.

Zhou Wen said with a grin, “Didn’t you call us here to show us how amazing you are when slaying monsters? I understand.”

“Understand my ass. Hurry up and attack. I can’t hold on any longer.” Li Xuan was already forced to a corner of the cave. There was no way out.

“Are you lying to me again?” Zhou Wen stood firmly outside the cave, refusing to enter.

With Zhou Wen not moving, Feng Qiuyan, Ming Xiu, and Gu Dian didn’t move either. Li Xuan had been forced to the point of having no time to bicker with Zhou Wen.

Ka-Cha!

There was no room for retreat. Li Xuan, who was leaning against the stone wall, had his arm struck by the monster’s golden hoop. The carapace on his body cracked, and his bones seemed to fracture from the impact. His left arm immediately drooped down.

Thankfully, Li Xuan’s movement technique was good enough, or the strike would have smashed on his head.

“Old Zhou, stop fooling around. Are you trying to kill me?” Li Xuan rolled to the side in a sorry state as he yelled.

“I’m not fooling around. The Li Xuan I know doesn’t need help when killing such a dimensional creature, right?” Zhou Wen said with a smile.

Li Xuan fell silent as he constantly changed his movement techniques. He brandished his saber with his other hand to circle around the monster, but he couldn’t put up a fight even with two hands. Now, it was even worse after he had one arm injured. The situation was becoming more and more harrowing.

“Coach, will it be dangerous?” Ming Xiu asked worriedly.

“It’s fine. He still has energy left.” Zhou Wen knew Li Xuan too well.

Zhou Wen didn’t know what Life Soul Li Xuan had, but his Life Providence meant that he wouldn’t be killed so easily. Or rather, he wasn’t using his best strengths.

He was escaping from his past self. He wanted to become as mature and steady as Li Mobai so that he could use his exquisite techniques and schemes to defeat his opponent.

His talent was indeed very good, and his technique was also perfect. However, his personality was not compatible with his technique. This made his technique look powerful, but it lacked the decisiveness.

Crack! Crack!

More and more spots on Li Xuan’s carapace cracked as his injuries worsened.

“Coach, are you sure things will be fine? I think Li Xuan is about to die. Let’s go,” Feng Qiuyan said.

“Alright.” Zhou Wen saw that Li Xuan was still planning on winning using techniques. He knew that if this carried on, he might really die. He nodded and prepared to rush in.

“Stop right there. No one is to enter,” Li Xuan suddenly said.

Zhou Wen and company stopped as they watched Li Xuan battle the three-headed, six-armed monster. He was still persisting with perfecting his techniques, but his injuries were rapidly recovering.

The broken carapace on his body was repaired automatically in just a moment, and the repair speed accelerated. Towards the end, the golden hoops sent him flying upon impact, but in the next second, he stood up again, and the broken

carapace was restored to its original state in the blink of an eye.

His recovery ability is much stronger than when he was at the Legendary stage! Zhou Wen couldn’t help but be surprised. Such a recovery ability virtually meant an undying body. Unless he was hit by a fatal blow, it was nearly impossible to kill him.

Gradually, Zhou Wen felt that Li Xuan’s aura was a little different. His moves were still pursuing perfection, but they were becoming more and more sinister.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 549 - Fated to be Beaten Up

Chapter 549 Fated to be Beaten Up

“Coach, did you notice that Li Xuan’s bizarre armor seems a little strange?” Feng Qiuyan said as he stared at the carapace on Li Xuan.

“It’s indeed a little strange.” Zhou Wen had long discovered it.

Every time Li Xuan’s carapace was shattered and restored, it would become even more resilient. The monster caused less damage when smashing into his self-healing carapace.

Furthermore, this ability seemed to have no upper limit. It could be shattered repeatedly. Every self-recovery made it stronger. After a few consecutive rounds of self-recovery, the monster’s golden hoop could only cause him minimal damage.

Why is Li Xuan learning from Li Mobai? His Life Providence and Life Soul mean he’s born to be beaten up and injured. How can he become stronger without being beaten up? It’s a waste to learn from Li Mobai! Zhou Wen thought.

Li Xuan was clearly the first person to realize that there was something wrong with his Life Soul. This was because his Life Soul had been condensed under Li Mobai’s pressure. He had even absorbed Li Mobai’s Evil King Gu. Even he himself

knew little about his Life Soul. He even believed Li Mobai’s words—his Life Soul was a failed Life Soul.

Indeed, his Life Soul was different from Li Mobai’s expectations, it did not have the Evil King Gu as its primary core; it only absorbed a portion of the Evil King Gu’s characteristics and formed its own Life Soul.

His Life Soul had parts of the Evil King Gu’s characteristics, but they were not completely the same.

Previously, Li Xuan blamed himself. He felt that he needed to mature as soon as possible and become the pillar of support for his family like Li Mobai. Therefore, he deliberately trained himself, hoping to be stronger than Li Mobai.

He wanted to surpass Li Mobai in all aspects, but in the end, he walked a path that was not suitable for him at all. He had been training his skills all this time, trying his best to avoid getting injured. Unbeknownst to him, his Life Soul only became stronger after being injured. He had taken a long detour for nothing.

It was only today that he discovered the secrets of his Life Soul after being injured continuously. He could not help but feel overjoyed.

“To seek victory in defeat, to rebuild a kingdom that belongs to you from ruins. Such strength is similar to a phoenix’s nirvana. It’s a very powerful Life Soul,” Feng Qiuyan said seriously.

Anyone who fought Li Xuan would be under immense pressure. If they couldn’t kill him in one fell swoop, he would become stronger the more they fought. In the end, the opponent might be the one to die.

Zhou Wen looked at Li Xuan and felt that his Life Soul wasn’t just becoming strong from every shattering. Zhou Wen vaguely felt that every time the carapace shattered and healed, it would gain an additional sinister power.

The feeling was very strange. Zhou Wen couldn’t tell what it was, but he kept feeling that something was amiss.

Finally, Zhou Wen knew what was amiss. Li Xuan punched out and he realized that his punch was somewhat similar to a monster’s attack. The way he used it was very similar to the three-headed, six-armed monster.

However, if Zhou Wen didn’t remember wrongly, this move was likely the monster’s Essence Energy Skill. It wasn’t something that could be learned just from watching. One had to know the way to circulate Essence Energy.

Li Xuan definitely didn’t know such an Essence Energy Skill in the past. Now that he had used it, there was only one possibility—he had actually learned the three-headed, six-armed monster’s Essence Energy Skill while battling it.

Zhou Wen couldn’t help but recall something. Li Mobai once said that his Life Soul was called Evil King Gu, a Life Soul formed from cultivating a secret Essence Energy Art from the South District.

Zhou Wen had once heard of some legends. South District’s Gu techniques placed many different kinds of poisonous worms and insects in a jar. They constantly hunted each other out of hunger, and the last poisonous worm to survive was a Gu. Not only was this Gu the strongest poisonous object, but it also possessed the ability to hunt and devour other poisonous worms.

Li Xuan’s Life Soul wasn’t only becoming stronger as it shattered, but it could also learn the enemy’s Essence Energy Skill in battle. It was very similar to the legends of Gu.

How much power has Li Xuan’s Life Soul inherited from Li Mobai’s Evil King Gu? Zhou Wen thought to himself.

Li Xuan had already gained the upper hand. When the golden hoops struck him, there were no longer any cracks on the armor. All it could do was make Li Xuan retreat half a step.

Li Xuan no longer dodged the monster’s golden hoops. While they smashed on his body, his saber slashed at the monster’s body. The battle between the man and monster felt like a battle between two monsters.

Li Xuan was struck by the golden hoops and his injuries rapidly healed. As for the monster’s body, it couldn’t heal from the saber slashes. In this constant battle, the monster that was originally terrifying looked weaker and weaker. It even felt like it was trembling.

Ming Xiu watched with a complicated expression. He wondered if death was the only option if he couldn’t kill Li Xuan with his strike.

Feng Qiuyan frowned as he pondered. If he were to fight Li Xuan, how could he win? After thinking for a long time, there was only one solution. He had to kill him before he became stronger.

Ka-Cha!

Li Xuan’s strength had clearly increased by a lot. After countless slashes, he cut off one of the monster’s heads.

The monster seemed to be a little afraid as it turned around and ran, not daring to fight Li Xuan again.

“Trying to run after hitting me so many times? It’s too late!” Li Xuan refused to give up. With a flash, he chased after the monster like a phantom.

The monster was truly afraid. It didn’t dare turn back to fight Li Xuan. After Li Xuan caught up with it, it took him a few slashes to slice off the remaining two heads.

Seeing the monster collapse at Li Xuan’s feet, Zhou Wen walked over and asked Li Xuan, “Are you alright?”

He had a nagging feeling that Li Xuan’s Life Soul was a little too strange. It gave off a sinister feeling perhaps of the absorption of the Evil King Gu’s characteristics.

Li Xuan dispelled his Life Soul and revealed his body. He sighed softly and said, “From the looks of it, I won’t be able to be a gentleman like Li Mobai in this lifetime. After all, I’m just a foppish guy who doesn’t care about his life.”

“It’s good being foppish.” Zhou Wen laughed. Since Li Xuan could say that, it meant that he was really fine.

“Sigh, so I can be very strong just by casually practicing. I didn’t need to be so serious,” Li Xuan continued sighing.

“That’s a little overboard…” Zhou Wen was rendered speechless.

Just as Li Xuan was about to say something, the three-headed, six-armed monster’s body suddenly moved. It gave Zhou Wen and company a fright as they stared warily at the monster’s corpse. They saw a bright glow in its chest, as though a blob of golden magma was churning.

Boom!

The corpse suddenly exploded, and a golden object emerged from the corpse.

They took a careful look and realized that it was another dimensional creature. It was different from the three-headed, six-armed monster. It was very normal with only one head and a pair of arms.

However, its appearance was even more terrifying than the three-headed, six-armed monster. Its entire body seemed to be made of gold, and its body did not seem human. It had two horns on its head, and there was a row of bone spurs on its spine. Its fingers were like golden hooks. Standing at half the height of a person, its body was burning with golden light.

With a wave of its hand, the six golden hoops that landed on the ground automatically flew over and covered its limbs and neck. The remaining golden hoop landed in its hand.

The golden hoops shrank automatically and became the size of a bracelet and a choker. Only the golden hoop in its hand remained the same size.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 550 - Golden Hoop

Chapter 550 Golden Hoop

The golden hoop in the tiny monster’s hand suddenly flung out. It quickly spun and flew towards Li Xuan, who was closest to it.

Li Xuan didn’t dare be careless. He produced his carapace again and slashed at it with his saber.

Clang!

The saber struck the golden hoop, tipping the front of the golden hoop downwards. However, the backside flipped over and wrapped around Li Xuan’s neck.

This happened so suddenly. In addition to the force from Li Xuan’s strike, the golden hoop’s spin accelerated, preventing Li Xuan from having the time to react. The moment the golden hoop touched his neck, it suddenly contracted, wrapped around his neck, and instantly shrank.

The little monster didn’t sit idle. It flew towards Gu Dian on the other side. Its speed was unbelievably fast, even faster than the three-headed, six-armed monster.

Gu Dian released his strength and threw a punch at the tiny monster. The tiny monster’s claws collided with his fist, and the hook-like claws immediately left several scratch wounds on Gu Dian’s hand.

Zhou Wen and Feng Qiuyan had already unsheathed their sabers and slashed at the tiny monster. Ming Xiu’s sword

slashed out as well.

The tiny monster’s legs kicked at Feng Qiuyan and Ming Xiu respectively. Its calf was short, so it couldn’t reach them. However, the golden hoop on its ankle flew out and expanded in size as it flew towards Feng Qiuyan and Ming Xiu.

Having seen what happened to Li Xuan, Ming Xiu and Feng Qiuyan didn’t dare to forcefully slash the golden hoop as they retreated.

The tiny monster’s claws met Zhou Wen’s Bamboo Blade. With a clang, the Bamboo Blade slashed at the tiny monster’s wrist and collided with the golden hoop. The tiny monster was sent tumbling backward as Zhou Wen took a few steps back.

How can this fellow’s strength be so powerful? Zhou Wen was alarmed. In terms of pure strength, without the enhancement of his Essence Energy Skill, the tiny monster’s strength was stronger than his.

Zhou Wen had 40 Strength. Apart from the Epic creatures like Truth Listener and Banana Fairy, who were stronger than him, he had never seen an Epic creature being able to defeat him in terms of Strength. At most, it was a draw.

If the tiny monster did not have a Life Providence or Life Soul that boosted its Strength, it implied something scary.

Feng Qiuyan and Ming Xiu avoided the golden hoop, but the golden hoop seemed to have a life of its own. It spun in the air and charged at them, forcing the two of them to have no choice but to constantly dodge.

Li Xuan’s neck was bound as the golden hoop tightened. The carapace on his neck showed strangle marks as the golden hoop continued shrinking. If this continued, the carapace would be crushed and his neck would be severed.

He used his saber to slash at the golden hoop, but it was useless. No matter how hard he pulled, he couldn’t stop the golden hoop from tightening. If it wasn’t for Li Xuan’s carapace’s firmness and his body’s toughness, anyone else would have been strangled by the golden hoop.

Gu Dian swung his fist at the tiny monster again and pincered it with Zhou Wen.

The tiny monster’s figure rapidly flashed as it swiped its claws. The two golden hoops on its wrist flew out and wrapped themselves around Gu Dian and Zhou Wen.

Gu Dian quickly retreated. He looked tall and big, but he wasn’t clumsy at all. He was extremely fast.

Zhou Wen’s saber slashed at the golden hoop. The golden hoop flipped over and was about to land on Zhou Wen’s head.

Zhou Wen dodged using Ghost Steps, escaping the fate of being latched on by the golden hoop. At the same time, he brandished his saber and slashed at the tiny monster. It reached out to remove the golden hoop around its neck and attacked Zhou Wen’s saber.

Zhou Wen’s Transcendent Flying Immortal was extremely fast. The tiny monster shouldn’t have been able to withstand it, but when Zhou Wen’s saber slashed down, he suddenly felt a huge suction force just as it was about to hit the monster’s neck. The Bamboo Blade involuntarily shifted its trajectory and slammed into the golden hoop.

The golden hoop was like a super magnet that firmly sucked the Bamboo Blade. Zhou Wen tried his best to pull the saber back, but his strength wasn’t as great as the tiny monster’s. The tiny monster screamed as it pulled the golden hoop. Zhou Wen couldn’t stabilize his body as he moved with it.

As for the other golden hoop, it was already spinning in the air to latch onto his head. Zhou Wen had no choice but to give up on dodging with the Bamboo Blade. At the same time, he took out the Orchid Blade and threw it out as a flying knife.

The Orchid Blade transformed into a cold beam of light as it attacked the tiny monster’s abdomen. However, just as it was about to stab into the tiny monster’s abdomen, it was sucked away by the golden hoop, preventing it from harming the tiny monster’s body.

Feng Qiuyan was already at the Epic stage and his movement techniques were fast enough. He could still dodge the golden hoop’s attacks, but Gu Dian and Ming Xiu had yet to advance to the Epic stage. It was proving difficult for them to dodge.

Ming Xiu dodged twice before he was at his wit’s end. He could only swing his sword at the golden hoop, but then, his sword was suddenly sucked by the hoop. He could only do a flip to avoid being latched onto by the golden hoop.

Gu Dian gripped the golden hoop as it tried to tighten around his body. However, as he resisted using his tight grip, the golden hoop sent his body flying around in the cave. Gu Dian was injured from crashing into the walls.

Li Xuan desperately tugged at the golden hoop around his neck. His carapace had been shattered and the golden hoop had sunken in. He looked like he was about to suffocate.

Zhou Wen didn’t have time to think. All he wanted to do was kill the tiny monster as soon as possible, or they would be in danger.

He summoned the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon, and with a roar, it slapped the tiny monster.

The speed of the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon was far faster than that of the tiny monster. Unable to dodge the attack, it raised its golden hoop to meet the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon’s palm.

Boom!

The tiny monster was slammed into the rocky ground along with the golden hoop.

The Six-Winged Guardian Dragon raised its claws, only to see the tiny monster jump out once again. The Six-Winged Guardian Dragon’s claw was actually unable to smack it to death.

What’s this fellow’s background? Zhou Wen was alarmed as the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon spewed out a mouthful of Dragon Breath Holy Flames.

Under the surge of the Dragon Breath Holy Flames, the tiny monster spun the golden hoop in its hand, absorbing the Holy Flames into the golden hoop. The golden hoop seemed to be a spatial gate. After being sucked in, the dragon breath disappeared without a trace.

Zhou Wen was even more alarmed. He guessed that the tiny monster was likely a Mythical creature. However, its level might not have reached the Mythical stage yet. It was probably similar to Truth Listener and Banana Fairy.

That’s not right. Its situation is more like Demonic Neonate. The six golden hoops are somewhat similar to Demonic Neonate’s ancient sword. What is this fellow? Zhou Wen thought to himself, but he didn’t stop attacking. He summoned the Overlord Sword and slashed his sword beam at the tiny monster.

He didn’t dare to directly slash the golden hoop with his sword again, afraid that the sword would be sucked away.

As the tiny monster dodged the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon’s attack, it used the golden hoop to devour the sword beam that Zhou Wen slashed out.

However, its stats were still too low. It was slapped by the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon, causing its golden body to crack and golden blood to flow out.

The tiny monster screamed again and again, but it was unable to withstand the power of the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon. The golden hoop could only absorb attacks that were in energy form, but it was ineffective against physical attacks.

Although it had the effect of sucking weapons, it wasn’t very effective against the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon’s claws. With a swipe of its claws, the tiny monster’s body cracked and it immediately died.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 551 - Truth Listener“s Chrysalis

Chapter 551 Truth Listener“s Chrysalis

As soon as the tiny monster died, the golden hoop seemed to lose its life. One by one, they returned to their original size and fell to the ground with tinkling sounds.

“Six-Winged Guardian Dragon… So that’s Coach’s Companion Beast…” Ming Xiu recognized the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon at a glance. In fact, everyone recognized the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon. After all, it was the first Companion Beast on the ranking.

“As expected of Coach. He already has a Mythical pet so quickly.” However, Feng Qiuyan felt that it was only natural.

“I’m lucky. I got lucky during a battle between two Mythical creatures.” Zhou Wen was telling the truth. Then, he looked at Li Xuan and asked, “Are you alright?”

The carapace on Li Xuan’s neck had completely shattered. A purple mark lined his neck, and his bones had almost snapped. If he had been any later, his Life Providence probably wouldn’t have been able to save his life. With his head lopped off, no matter how strong his recovery abilities were, it was unlikely he could regrow it.

“I’m fine. I don’t know what weapon that golden hoop is. It was terrifying.” Li Xuan touched his neck and gritted his teeth in pain.

Fortunately, he had powerful recovery abilities. Without the restrictions of the golden hoop, he recovered in moments. There were no signs of injury.

However, this also gave Li Xuan a wake-up call. Although his body and Life Soul were very strong, it didn’t make him truly invincible. Against special attacks, it was useless no matter how strong his body and Life Soul’s self-healing abilities were.

Zhou Wen picked up the Orchid Blade, Bamboo Blade, and a golden hoop. Now that the golden hoop no longer had any magnetic force, the Orchid Blade and Bamboo Blade automatically separated from it. When Zhou Wen touched the golden hoop, there wasn’t any magnetic force.

“Look,” Ming Xiu said, pointing at the tiny monster’s corpse.

They looked across and saw that the tiny monster’s golden body was rapidly melting, quickly turning into a pool of golden liquid. It looked like a pool of blood, but the color was different.

Within that liquid was a crystal.

Zhou Wen and company were somewhat surprised. Reality wasn’t a game where corpses vanished. Typically, after a dimensional creature died, it rotted quickly, but it wouldn’t be that fast. Typically, it would take at least two to three days to decompose.

What was even more strange was that the six golden hoops didn’t disintegrate together. Logically speaking, the golden hoops were part of the dimensional creature. Once a dimensional creature died, the golden hoops should have disintegrated. However, the six golden hoops remained intact. They were still as hard as before.

Zhou Wen extended his hand and sucked the golden dimensional crystal into his palm. He wiped away the golden liquid on it before throwing it at Li Xuan.

They were originally here to help Li Xuan, so they naturally had to give any spoils to him.

Li Xuan didn't stand on ceremony as he caught the crystal and put it away with a grin.

"Do you want these golden hoops?" Zhou Wen pointed at the other golden hoops on the ground and asked.

"Objects on a monster would usually disintegrate. What's the use of having them? They can't be used as weapons," Ming Xiu said.

"These golden hoops seem a little special. Perhaps they won't disintegrate." Zhou Wen tried injecting his Essence Energy into a golden hoop, but there was no reaction.

Ming Xiu shook his head and said, "Regardless of whether they disintegrate, I don't use such ring-type weapons. They're useless for me."

Feng Qiuyan and Gu Dian also shook their heads, indicating their lack of interest in them. Zhou Wen didn't stand on ceremony. He picked up the golden hoops and planned on studying them and figuring out what they were.

This thing was actually so powerful in the hands of an Epic creature. If it didn't disintegrate and disappear, he could study how it could be used. What if it could be used?

After this trip, Li Xuan returned to his former self. He felt a lot more relaxed, unlike the mentally burdened person he was before.

However, he didn’t reduce the amount of training he did. He only changed the training method. In the past, he had been training his skills crazily. Now, he was also practicing his skills. However, he would often challenge stronger dimensional creatures, allowing his carapace to be injured before healing so as to constantly improve.

Zhou Wen returned to his dorm and studied the hoops for a while, but no matter what kind of Essence Energy he injected, the golden hoops didn’t react.

Could it be that humans really can’t use a dimensional creature’s weapon? Zhou Wen had no choice but to place the golden hoops on the table to see if they would disintegrate over time.

Some dimensional creatures disintegrated relatively slowly. Perhaps the hoops would take several days to disintegrate and disappear.

In the chaos space, the tiny beast was still gnawing on the metal walnut with all its might. However, it had not achieved much. There were still shallow teeth marks, and it did not seem to have made much progress.

He released Banana Fairy, Truth Listener, Doctor Darkness, and Demonic Neonate to give them a breather. They had some self-awareness. Usually, if he didn’t release them for a long time, they would become a little irritable, especially Demonic Neonate and Banana Fairy. If it wasn’t necessary, they hated being in tattoo form.

Banana Fairy leaned on Zhou Wen’s shoulder as she curiously watched him game. She was eager to try.

Demonic Neonate stood in a dark corner with the ancient sword in her arms. If one didn’t pay attention, one wouldn’t

be able to sense her existence at all.

Doctor Darkness stood there in a daze. It was unknown what he was thinking about.

Previously, when Truth Listener came out, it liked to jump around in the house. This time, it was abnormally quiet. Zhou Wen didn’t hear its voice.

After a while, Zhou Wen was suddenly blinded by a shimmering golden light in the room. He turned his head and saw the six golden hoops on the table. For some reason, they emitted a golden glow and automatically floated up.

The six golden hoops spun. A strange power surged within them as they became smaller and smaller with every spin.

At first, they were still the size of a necklace or bracelet. But later on, they reduced to the size of a ring; yet, continued shrinking.

Just as Zhou Wen was feeling alarmed and puzzled, he saw the six golden hoops land and fly towards the table.

Only then did Zhou Wen realize that Truth Listener was standing on the table. After the six golden hoops landed, they flew towards Truth Listener’s body.

The six miniature golden hoops were caught onto Truth Listener’s six ears. They looked like six earrings, suiting it in quite a surprising manner.

After the six golden hoops latched on, Truth Listener’s body immediately emitted a golden glow. Wisps of golden light were like silk as they gradually enveloped its body. Soon, it transformed into a golden cocoon.

Is it evolving? Zhou Wen was surprised and delighted. He had never expected the golden hoops to allow Truth Listener to evolve. This was truly a pleasant surprise.

After Truth Listener’s evolution, it would definitely be able to evolve to the Mythical stage. When that happened, Zhou Wen would have another super fighter.

I wonder who will be stronger after the evolution—Truth Listener or Tyrant Behemoth? Zhou Wen was delighted. He had not realized that he would be able to evolve Truth Listener from fighting a monster.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 552 - Benevolence of the Battle God

Chapter 552 Benevolence of the Battle God

Why didn’t I encounter such a dimensional creature despite going to Dragon Gate Grotto so many times in-game? After Zhou Wen returned, he entered the game’s Southernmost Cave to take a look. However, there were only a few Warriors and Stone Beasts. There was no such monster.

Not only wasn’t the tiny golden monster seen, but the three-headed, six-armed fellow was also missing.

Truth Listener was put away by Zhou Wen. The process of advancing from an Epic to a Mythical stage was rather lengthy. Tyrant Behemoth had yet to complete its evolution, so Truth Listener probably would take quite some time. He wouldn’t be able to use it anytime soon.

Without Truth Listener’s ability, it was equivalent to having a cheat that gave him an omniscient view turned off. It made Zhou Wen feel a little unaccustomed.

I was a little too reliant on Truth Listener previously. I should take this period of time to recover. The only thing Zhou Wen was worried about was that Truth Listener had yet to complete its evolution. He needed this to happen before he went to Zhuolu otherwise he would be at a disadvantage.

When the Golden Battle God Halberd respawned, Zhou Wen stormed into the Metalwork Temple again. With the Fire

Furnace Queen and Six-Winged Guardian Dragon, there was basically no need for Zhou Wen to take action.

However, Zhou Wen still attempted to control the blood-colored avatar to fight. He switched his Essence Energy Art to the Small Perfection of Wisdom and sensed the changes that Small Perfection of Wisdom and Eight Perfections Wisdom Life Providence brought to his body.

Without Truth Listener, the Eight Perfections Wisdom Life Providence could make Zhou Wen's six senses extremely sharp. Apart from his hearing being much weaker than Truth Listener's, his other senses were much stronger.

Zhou Wen's nose was even better than a trained police hound. He could distinguish many scents that he couldn't identify before, and his taste buds had become extremely sensitive. When he ate, he used to only know flavors like sour, sweet, bitter, and spicy. After he activated Eight Perfections Wisdom, he could easily distinguish something.

The only bad thing was that back when he drank the seaweed egg soup from the canteen, he felt that it was fresh and delicious.

However, ever since Zhou Wen drank the seaweed egg soup with Eight Perfections Wisdom activated, he never drank it again.

From the soup, he actually detected the flavor of a fly. His sense of taste was just so sensitive. Zhou Wen felt that as long as he trained, it would be easy for him to tell the year of production for alcohol.

Of course, Zhou Wen wasn't that bored. He didn't have the time to dabble in those things either. All he did was constantly practice using the Eight Perfections Wisdom.

Gradually, Zhou Wen sensed the benefits of Eight Perfections Wisdom. With his sharp senses, he could discover many things that he usually couldn’t.

His hearing ability aside, his eyes could see further and more clearly. It was like a telescope that allowed him to see the enemy for any preemptive strikes while his sense of smell allowed him to tell the dangers of different poisonous fog.

Some gaseous poisons could not be seen with the naked eye, so this was when his sense of smell became very important.

However, other than that, the Eight Perfections Wisdom didn’t have any other uses. Compared to the other Life Providences, it was a little too simple. Without any outstanding abilities, it only strengthened Zhou Wen’s basic abilities.

As Zhou Wen practiced, he grinded. When Demonic Neonate slashed at the Golden Battle God Halberd once again, there was a clang as a golden metal egg fell out.

“An Sheng is really accurate about the one-third probability. It dropped at the first expected value.” Zhou Wen was overjoyed as he hurriedly checked the Companion Egg’s stats.

Golden Battle God Halberd: Mythical

Life Providence: Godly Weapon

Life Soul: Golden Divine Light

Wheel of Destiny: Benevolence of the Battle God

Strength: 80

Speed: 72

Constitution: 79

Essence Energy: 68

Talent Skill: Battle God’s Radiance, Unstoppable

Companion Form: Golden Trident.

The Golden Trident’s stats were rather good—much better than the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon before it was strengthened. However, what puzzled Zhou Wen was why its Wheel of Destiny was called Benevolence of the Battle God.

Could it be that it’s not an offensive miracle like Six-Winged? It can’t be. This is a weapon-type Companion Beast. How can it not be an offensive-type miracle? Zhou Wen hurriedly looked at the Benevolence of the Battle God’s introduction.

Benevolence of the Battle God: Benevolence on the battlefield is to end the enemy’s life and reduce the enemy’s pain. This is the pity of God.

When Zhou Wen saw this note, he immediately felt relieved. It looked like an attack-type miracle.

The golden trident only had two skills. There were certainly several skills missing, but these two skills were very useful.

Battle God’s Radiance was the skill that had instantly killed Zhou Wen. The golden trident glowed brightly as it attacked indiscriminately within a certain range. It was a large AOE

attack Essence Energy Skill that was similar to Banana Fairy’s Grand Yin Wind. It consumed a lot of Essence Energy.

Unstoppable was a passive Essence Energy Skill that was similar to Ever-Victorious. Its effects were stronger, and it was exactly what Zhou Wen needed.

Life Providence, Life Soul, and so on needed Zhou Wen’s testing before he knew the specific effects.

He switched back to the Slaughterer Life Soul and used his infinite Essence Energy to hatch the Golden Battle God Halberd.

When Zhou Wen held the golden trident in his hand, he knew that the opportunity to kill Torch Dragon had finally arrived.

He took the golden trident to grind Medusa to test its power.

After entering the Medusa temple, the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon restrained Medusa. The tip of the golden trident aimed at Medusa’s heart with Golden Divine Light.

This strike pierced through Medusa’s heart and killed the terrifying existence that had once nearly taken Zhou Wen’s life.

Zhou Wen could tell that the golden glow at the tip of the golden trident was likely its Life Soul, Golden Divine Light, but he didn’t see the effects of the Wheel of Destiny.

Could it be that Medusa is too weak and doesn’t need the Benevolence of the Battle God? With this in mind, Zhou Wen made the golden trident use its miracle to kill some monsters.

However, Zhou Wen only saw it pierce through the monster's body and kill it without seeing it deliver any powerful move.

How strange. What kind of miracle is the Benevolence of the Battle God? Why doesn't it seem to have any effect? Zhou Wen still remembered how gorgeous and dazzling Holy Angel's Redemption was when John used the miracle. The golden trident was just too disappointing.

Despite such thoughts, Zhou Wen was still very satisfied. The golden trident fulfilled his greatest requirement. It was an excellent weapon that should be able to penetrate Torch Dragon's body.

Unfortunately, Medusa didn't drop a Companion Egg. All she dropped was a Speed Crystal. It was useless for Zhou Wen as he couldn't bring it out.

After familiarizing himself with the Golden Battle God Halberd's abilities and characteristics to the point of using it skillfully, Zhou Wen couldn't wait to take it, along with Six-Winged, to the Zhuolu ruins.

With the Golden Battle God Halberd and Six-Winged, the Aoyin stone statue that was guarding the door wasn't able to stand up to them at all. It was instantly killed by the Golden Battle God Halberd. Its ability to devour was useless against the Golden Battle God Halberd.

Soon, Zhou Wen entered the temple.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 553 - Think of a Way

Chapter 553 Think of a Way

Without Truth Listener, Zhou Wen was at a small disadvantage. However, with the augmentation of Six-Winged's flying speed and the Transcendent Flying Immortal's movement techniques, Zhou Wen still found an opportunity.

The Golden Battle God's halberd stabbed into Torch Dragon's scales with a glimmer of divine light. Even with such a sharp divine weapon, Zhou Wen still felt a great resistance when tearing apart the scales. It was like a blunt knife slicing through flesh. Although he could stab in, it didn't feel clean.

Torch Dragon let out a sharp cry after being injured. The scales on its body stood up diagonally as it raised its head to strike backward.

Seeing that the Golden Battle God Halberd failed to stab it to death, Zhou Wen wanted to take the opportunity to strike again, but in the next second, he saw two rows of lanterns-like eyes appear on both sides of Torch Dragon's body, from head to tail.

Then, that was it. The blood-colored avatar was directly sucked into the Bright Torch Vision World's world, and the game instantly turned black.

Zhou Wen held his phone and lost interest in entering the game again.

Torch Dragon’s entire body was filled with eyes. Unless Zhou Wen’s entire body was covered in mirrors, there was no way he could hide from the activation of the Bright Torch Vision World.

Although the move that covered its body with eyes was only used at the final moment by Torch Dragon, and it was very likely to be greatly limited, no matter how many restrictions it had, as long as it could be used once, Zhou Wen would be doomed. There was no chance of survival.

Suddenly, an idea lit up in Zhou Wen’s mind.

It’s impossible for me to be covered in mirrors. Then, can I turn my armor into a mirror? Zhou Wen thought of this possibility.

The crystal mirror formed by the Sun Beast couldn’t cover his entire body, but if he combined the crystal mirror with another armor-type Companion Beast, would it turn into a mirror-like armor that reflected light?

Although the possibility was very small, he had to give it a try. Otherwise, he would have to find a bigger mirror to completely block his body. If not, it would be impossible for him to dodge Torch Dragon’s final eruption of the Bright Torch Vision World.

However, Zhou Wen only had one Sun Beast on him. The drop rate was pitifully low. After grinding for so long, Zhou Wen had only had one drop.

Zhou Wen did a study and realized that the Sun Beast and Zhou Wen’s armor-type Companion Beasts didn’t have high

compatibility. They didn’t even reach 40%, so the success rate definitely wasn’t good.

Even if he succeeded, the outcome might not become a mirror armor as Zhou Wen wanted. Who knew what would happen after the two Companion Beasts combined?

Zhou Wen thought for a moment and planned on asking if there was any mirror-like Companion Beast armor. That would save him all the trouble.

Zhou Wen sent a message to Li Xuan, but Li Xuan didn’t know where to find such armor.

After asking An Sheng again, An Sheng thought for a while, but he also didn’t think that there would be such an armor. According to him, the armor that was closest to the armor that Zhou Wen mentioned should be an armor made of Ice Nightmares.

However, according to what he knew, Ice Nightmares were Mythical Companion Beasts. Only North District had one, and it belonged to Lance’s family.

However, the armor formed by the Ice Nightmare could not be said to be a complete mirror. It was like a smooth ice surface that could reflect light to a certain extent, but it was not as clear as a real mirror.

So at the end of the day, it’s still impossible? Zhou Wen was somewhat disappointed.

“Young Master Wen, I’ll be away soon. If there’s anything you need, you can call this number.” An Sheng sent a number to Zhou Wen.

“Where are you going?” Zhou Wen asked.

“Didn’t I obtain that Mythical Companion Egg before? However, because I don’t have enough Essence Energy, incubating a Mythical Companion Egg will put my life in danger. Therefore, I can only use some special means. I plan on going to a dimensional zone with rich Essence Energy. Then, I’ll use some special methods to successfully hatch the Mythical Companion Egg. If I’m fast, I’ll be back in a month. If I’m slow, it’ll probably take two to three months,” An Sheng said.

Zhou Wen thought and said, “Ah Sheng, I want to go to Zhuolu in the near future.”

“When?” An Sheng didn’t ask why. He knew that Zhou Wen would give it a try after having the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon.

“I haven’t decided on the time yet. I still need to make some preparations. I’ll contact you when I’m ready. It’ll probably take some time.” Zhou Wen wasn’t sure when he would be able to resolve the problem of the mirror armor.

However, even without the mirror armor, Zhou Wen had to make a trip as soon as possible. He couldn’t wait any longer.

No matter how optimistic he was, the former principal probably didn’t have any hope of survival. Now, Zhou Wen only wanted to go in and take a look, or he wouldn’t be able to feel at ease.

If he really couldn’t obtain the mirror armor, Zhou Wen planned on taking a huge mirror made of tempered glass in. He could place the mirror in the chaos space and use it to block Torch Dragon’s Bright Torch Vision World when it used it.

This move could only be used in reality. Furthermore, it hadn’t been verified. He didn’t know if an ordinary mirror could block Bright Torch Vision World. Unless it was absolutely necessary, Zhou Wen didn’t want to employ this step.

“Alright, I’ll hatch the Mythical pet as soon as possible and rush back.” An Sheng went offline after replying to this message.

Zhou Wen knew that An Sheng’s trip was definitely very dangerous. It wasn’t difficult for Zhou Wen to hatch Companion Beasts that were of a higher level, but to ordinary people, it was a grave matter.

Zhou Wen could only pray that An Sheng would return safely. It was impossible for him to stop him from hatching the Mythical pet.

After entering the temple again, Zhou Wen once again stabbed Torch Dragon with the golden trident. Just like last time, Torch Dragon’s body had countless eyes appear as it used Bright Torch Vision World.

At that instant, Zhou Wen switched to Lost Country and used teleportation to change his location. He wanted to see if he could dodge the Bright Torch Vision World, but it was all in vain. After he appeared from his teleportation, he was directly killed by the Bright Torch Vision World.

From the looks of it, other than finding a sufficiently large mirror, the only way is to do it through pet fusion. Zhou Wen really couldn’t think of any other solution.

However, he only had one Sun Beast. Zhou Wen didn’t immediately fuse with it. Instead, he continued grinding the Music Temple to see if he could get another Sun Beast.

At the same time, Zhou Wen began researching the First Order of Chaos. He wanted to see if he could condense a Life Providence using it.

If the First Order of Chaos could condense a Life Providence, it might allow the Invisibility Cloak Companion Egg to hatch again. With the Invisibility Cloak, it might be able to crack the Bright Torch Vision World.

The First Order of Chaos was somewhat similar to the other Essence Energy Art that Zhou Wen had cultivated—Dao Sutra. Zhou Wen cross-checked them and quickly gained insights into the First Order of Chaos.

However, there were still some differences between the two. After studying it for two to three days, Zhou Wen gained insight into many profound mysteries. He vaguely felt that the First Order of Chaos was undergoing some strange changes, as though it was about to condense a Life Providence.

In the past two or three days, Zhou Wen had farmed Medusa and the Golden Trident a few more times, but nothing good dropped. Medusa dropped a skill crystal that Zhou Wen couldn’t absorb.

Is the one-third drop rate An Sheng mentioned true? Zhou Wen was extremely puzzled.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 554 - Breaking the White Cocoon Again

Chapter 554 Breaking the White Cocoon Again

The one-third probably of what An Sheng said was correct. However, that was the global drop rate across different Mythical creatures. They had never killed the same Mythical creatures consecutively.

In reality, killing a Mythical creature might result in a Mythical creature of the same type taking a long time to come through the dimensional rift. It could take a year or decades. There wasn’t much chance of killing the same Mythical creature.

Some families were rather lucky. They spent very little time researching a Mythical creature. After killing it, they would have Mythical creatures of the same type appear every year for years.

Even after killing many Mythical creatures, the chances of a Companion Egg dropping remained very low. Only when one was extremely lucky would a second Companion Egg of the same type drop.

This was something that only a family with a deep heritage could do. The An family had only just risen to prominence a few years ago. They had killed Mythical creatures, but up till now, they had not seen any Mythical creatures of the same type.

In reality, they hadn’t killed many Mythical creatures. How could they have a lot of experience?

Over time, the An family might have a Mythical Companion Egg of the same type, but the drop rate would probably be less than a third.

This also involved the problem of uniqueness. Mythical Companion Beasts like the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon might produce Companion Beasts of the same type, but for creatures like Banana Fairy and Truth Listener, they were unique. It was impossible to have a completely identical Banana Fairy or Truth Listener appear.

Zhou Wen still didn’t know if the Golden Battle God Halberd and Medusa were unique Mythical Companion Beasts. He could only confirm it after a long time of grinding.

At that moment, Zhou Wen didn’t really care about this problem. He was still studying the First Order of Chaos. Legend had it that it was the Essence Energy Art of the Greek mythology’s Chaos.

Chaos was probably equivalent to the egg that was split apart by Pangu in East District myth. It represented a chaotic world where Yin and Yang had yet to be separated. The Dao Sutra also studied nature.

Although there were some differences between the two, it could be used for reference. It wasn’t difficult for him to understand the profundity of the First Order of Chaos. In just two days, Zhou Wen had a breakthrough.

The Essence Energy in his body circulated continuously, gradually transforming into a strange power that merged with his body and mind.

He couldn’t see the power, but he could sense that it was a Life Providence that Zhou Wen had plenty of experience condensing.

After successfully condensing a Life Providence, Zhou Wen checked his stats. After switching to the First Order of Chaos, there was indeed an additional Life Providence.

Life Providence: Chaos Body

Zhou Wen gave it a try. This Chaos Body was very similar to his Dao Body. It was also extremely effective at recovering Essence Energy. It also strengthened his body, making it similar to his Dao Body.

Zhou Wen tried to use his Chaos Body to inject Essence Energy into the Invisibility Cloak. The Invisibility Cloak vibrated even more intensely, as though it was about to break out of its shell.

But after a long vibration, it still did not come out.

Zhou Wen didn’t manage to get the Invisibility Cloak out after all his hard work. He knew that he was still lacking something. He probably needed to wait for the First Order of Chaos to condense a Life Soul before he could hatch it.

It won’t be that easy to condense a Life Soul. These Essence Energy Arts are simulated by the Lost Immortal Sutra, not something I really mastered. Previously, those Life Souls were condensed by absorbing a special attribute. To condense a Life Soul for the First Order of Chaos, I’m afraid I have to do something similar, right?

Zhou Wen secretly calculated in his heart. Previously, the Dao Body absorbed the Taboo attribute and condensed a Life Soul. And the Taboo attribute was because I absorbed the

blood of the creature inside the Ant Nest cocoon. Could it be that I can help the First Order of Chaos condense a Life Soul if I obtain another drop of blood?

Due to the similarities between the First Order of Chaos and the Dao Sutra, Zhou Wen felt that it was likely easier for the First Order of Chaos to condense a Life Soul than Small Perfection of Wisdom. After all, he had had similar experiences.

What he lacked now was a drop of blood. This was because Zhou Wen didn’t have the physique needed to cultivate the First Order of Chaos. It was purely simulated by the Lost Immortal Sutra. To condense a Life Soul, he needed a foundation.

Having figured this out, Zhou Wen opened the Ant Nest dungeon and went to Ant City.

He hadn’t gone to Ant Nest for days. Now, he suddenly felt like he was in a dream. It was as if he had just obtained the mysterious phone and the time he had come to grind ants was just yesterday.

However, the ants here were completely unable to harm him. Any Companion Beast beside Zhou Wen could finish them off.

The Fire Furnace Queen threw down a ball of molten flames, burning large swaths of ants to death. The notifications of him killing dimensional creatures flooded the screen.

To Zhou Wen, the Golden Flying Ant was something he could kill easily. Six-Winged smacked it to death with a single swipe of its claw, akin to squashing an ant.

Apart from this white cocoon, I've seen two. One is protected by a white dragon while the other is protected by the chick's mother. They are extremely terrifying Mythical creatures. In comparison, the guardian, Golden Flying Ant, is highly lacking in qualifications. Seeing nothing drop from the Golden Flying Ant, Zhou Wen flew straight for the white cocoon.

He summoned the Golden Battle God Halberd. He held the trident in both hands while the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon stood in front to protect him.

The last time Zhou Wen came, he had been killed instantly by the creature inside the white cocoon. Although his strength had improved greatly and he had two authentic Mythical Companion Beasts, he still felt that he was probably no match for the creature inside the cocoon.

Attack! Zhou Wen gripped his trident tightly as he stared intently at the white cocoon.

Upon hearing the command, the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon's wings transformed into streams of light and slashed at the white cocoon like six blades.

The Six-Winged Guardian Dragon was still quite powerful. Its dragon wings sliced open the white cocoon, revealing the creature that was curled up inside.

Zhou Wen didn't hesitate at all. At the instant the white cocoon was torn open, the golden trident stabbed at the creature. He used all his strength. This strike was his fastest attack to date.

Although Zhou Wen felt that he wasn't a match for the creature inside the cocoon, it wasn't difficult to get a drop of

blood. After all, he had succeeded before when he was weaker than he was now.

Moreover, he had previously used the golden trident and coupled it with Lost Country’s teleportation to kill Medusa from behind with one strike. This proved the powerful destructive power of the golden trident.

Zhou Wen thought that if the creature inside the cocoon didn’t defend in time, he might be able to luck out and kill her.

I wonder what will drop if she dies? A thought flashed through Zhou Wen’s mind. It was only an instant.

The Golden Divine Light at the tip of the golden trident was about to stab the creature inside the cocoon, the creature didn’t even raise her head to look at the blood-colored avatar.

Zhou Wen’s heart raced. Just as he thought he was about to succeed, the golden trident suddenly stopped. It moved from extreme motion to extreme stillness. It only took an instant.

A snow-white hand grabbed onto the golden trident’s edge. The incomparably sharp edge was unable to slice through the fair and slender fingers.

The creature in the cocoon finally raised its head. It turned its head and looked at the blood-colored avatar with its demonic eyes.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 555 - The Terrifying Guardian

Chapter 555 The Terrifying Guardian

Zhou Wen’s heart skipped a beat as he sensed something amiss. He subconsciously switched to the Inverse Ancient Emperor and used the Demon Dragon True Body. The Six-Winged Guardian Dragon roared and spewed out dragon breath.

Boom!

The blood-colored avatar and Six-Winged felt as though they had been struck by lightning. The blood-colored avatar’s hands involuntarily released the Golden Battle God Halberd as his body flew backward. Like a cannonball, they slammed into the mountain wall, producing a large and small hole.

Zhou Wen felt that the blood-colored avatar was seriously injured, but thankfully, it wasn’t dead. This time, it wasn’t instantly killed by the creature inside the cocoon. Just as he was about to leave the cave, he saw a golden beam flash in front of him. The Golden Battle God Halberd flew over and nailed the blood-colored avatar’s body. It penetrated its chest and the game screen instantly turned black.

This fellow is a little too strong. The six-winged seraphim should be much weaker than her, right? Zhou Wen was somewhat depressed. He only wanted to get a drop of blood, but he still ended up being killed.

However, Zhou Wen realized something. His encounter with her this time was clearly different from before. Her body seemed to have grown quite a bit.

When he first came, the creature in the cocoon was still sleeping. She only woke up after he had injured her.

This time, it was obvious that she had completely woken up. Her body had also developed more perfectly. Every time he saw her, she was somewhat different. This was clearly different from the other dimensional creatures in-game.

According to The Thearch, the creatures in the cocoons should be the guardians of the various species. Then, can I drip my blood on the cocoon like John? If I can obtain her approval, will she become my guardian? It looks like she's clearly much stronger than the six-winged seraphim. This thought flashed through Zhou Wen's mind.

However, it was only for an instant. He had many secrets. He definitely could not let an intelligent being who could betray him follow him around 24/7.

Since I can't do it by force, I'll have to sneak an attack. Zhou Wen entered Ant City again, but he had learned his lesson this time. He didn't directly face the creature inside the cocoon.

First, he used the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon as bait. The blood-colored avatar and Demonic Neonate hid in the ant honey pool, silently waiting for an opportunity.

The Six-Winged Guardian Dragon blasted open the white cocoon. The creature inside the cocoon only took a glance at it before it was sent flying.

From the perspective of the third party, it was even more shocking. The powerful Six-Winged Guardian Dragon was already considered a top-notch Mythical creature, yet its huge body was actually blasted away by her gaze.

Zhou Wen and Demonic Neonate didn’t sit idle. The blood-colored avatar held the Golden Battle God Halberd and instantly teleported behind the creature inside the cocoon. The tip of the Golden Battle God Halberd was about to touch her back. As long as Zhou Wen thrust it a little further forward, the Golden Divine Light could stab through her skin and cause a drop of blood to drip out.

However, just as Zhou Wen teleported out, he saw the creature turn her head to look at him.

Boom!

Zhou Wen’s body flew out like a cannonball. Soon, the game screen turned black again.

Is the guardian really only at the Mythical stage? Apart from The Thearch whose strength is unknown, she’s many times stronger than any Mythical creature I’ve ever seen. Zhou Wen felt that this fellow wasn’t as simple as a Mythical creature.

The Six-Winged Guardian Dragon was considered a top-notch Mythical creature. Although it did not have any offensive miracle, it should not have been so easily killed by someone of the same level.

Zhou Wen suspected that the guardian could break through the limits of the Mythical stage. If not, it meant that her skills, Life Soul, and other aspects were already heaven-defying.

After dying twice, Zhou Wen didn’t head to Ant City again.

“Thearch, how can the guardian you mentioned last time be contracted?” Zhou Wen sent a probing message to The Thearch.

However, The Thearch didn’t reply. He didn’t know what she was doing. He hadn’t seen her appear recently.

Before Zhou Wen headed to Ant City again, he needed to think of a perfect solution. Making blind attempts was pointless.

I wonder if the crystal mirror transformed from a Sun Beast can reflect her gaze. Zhou Wen thought as he grinded.

Ding!

Suddenly, a strange sound entered Zhou Wen’s ears. He turned his head and saw a Companion Egg drop beside the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon. It was a Sun Beast Companion Egg.

Zhou Wen was delighted as he hurriedly went over to pick up the Companion Egg. After hatching it, he had another Sun Beast Companion Beast. Their stats were about the same.

Unfortunately, the crystal mirror was too small. Even with two crystal mirrors, they couldn’t completely block Zhou Wen’s body.

There are two crystal mirrors. I can try fusion. Zhou Wen decided to give it a try. If he could produce a full-body mirror armor, his entire body would be equivalent to a mirror. Torch Dragon’s Bright Torch Vision World would naturally be useless to him.

However, the crystal mirror’s compatibility with armor beasts was too low. With a fusion compatibility of about 40%, failure was easy.

Typically, armor is made of metal while the crystal mirror is crystal. Could this be the reason why the compatibility is relatively low? Zhou Wen thought for a moment before heading to the Curse Demon Palace and grinding out a Stone Armor Companion Beast.

He placed them together, and indeed, the compatibility was much higher, reaching 61.

Indeed, this is the case. However, the skills and Life Providence of this Stone Armor are lacking. Most importantly, this isn’t a full-body armor. There’s no way to cover my whole body. Zhou Wen searched online and discovered that there were quite a number of jade-type Companion Beasts that could become full-body armor.

After looking through a lot of information, Zhou Wen decided to buy a jade armor-type Companion Beast to fuse.

He still had a large number of Essence Crystals. It wasn’t difficult to buy an Epic Companion Egg. Zhou Wen decided to head to the Companion Egg shop. Whatever Companion Eggs were online might also be on sale at the local Companion Egg shops.However, Zhou Wen didn’t go to Qin Xiyuan’s shop. He had a nagging feeling that there was something wrong with Qin Xiyuan. If he could avoid him, he would rather not interact with him.

Zhou Wen remembered that his classmate, Luo Xuan, owned a Companion Beast shop. Therefore, he contacted Luo Xuan and asked him about jade armor-type beasts.

Luo Xuan said that his shop should have one, but he still needed to take a look at the specific ones before he could tell him in detail. He told Zhou Wen to visit his shop.

When Zhou Wen arrived at Luo Xuan’s pet shop, Luo Xuan rushed back.

“Jade armor-type Companion Beasts are considered quite common. Compared to metal and wood armor, the price of the jade armor is relatively cheap, but not by much. After all, you want an Epic Companion Egg.” Luo Xuan personally led Zhou Wen to his store to see the jade-type Companion Beast.

“Is there jade armor that can wrap the entire body? It’s best if there’s no gap at all.” Zhou Wen asked as he looked around.

“It’s really not easy to find. Jade armor is heavy to begin with. If it’s full-body armor, it’s inconvenient for movement.” Luo Xuan thought for a moment before saying, “However, we do have an Epic Companion Egg like that in our shop, but in terms of price, it might be more expensive than the typical Epic Companion Egg.”

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 556 - Killing Torch Dragon

Chapter 556 Killing Torch Dragon

Zhou Wen left the shop with a crystalline jade-type Companion Egg in his bag.

This Companion Egg was an Epic jade terracotta. It had dropped from an ancient tomb dimensional zone. There were more clay terracotta and bronze terracotta. Jade terracotta was a rare breed.

This type of terracotta had armor as their companion forms. Because jade terracotta was rare, it was much more expensive.

Zhou Wen used his phone to look at the stats of the jade terracotta Companion Egg. It was pretty good and could be considered quite a top-notch Epic stage.

Spirit-Protecting Jade Terracotta: Epic

Life Providence: Unaging Undying

Life Soul: Guardian Spirit.

Strength: 39

Speed: 28

Constitution: 40

Essence Energy: 40

Talent Skill: Clear Jade Shield.

Companion Form: Armor

Apart from speed, the Spirit-Protecting Jade Terracotta was top-notch at the Epic stage. However, Zhou Wen only wanted its companion form. Speed didn’t matter.

He had used his phone to match with the Sun Beast. The Spirit-Protecting Jade Terracotta had a compatibility of 91% with the Sun Beast, which was much higher than the Stone Armor.

After returning to his dorm, Zhou Wen couldn’t wait to hatch the Spirit-Protecting Jade Terracotta. Then, he placed it in the same panel with the Sun Beast.

I hope there will be a good outcome. Zhou Wen had spent all his money to buy the Spirit-Protecting Jade Terracotta.

Although he had a lot of Essence Crystals, he could not cash them out. Naturally, he couldn’t use them for direct payment.

Would fusing the armor and mirror together have a perfect ending—a mirror-surfaced armor—like Zhou Wen’s imagination? Zhou Wen didn’t have any confidence. However, he had no choice but to give it a try.

Seeing the two pets emit a resplendent glow and gradually fuse into one, Zhou Wen’s heart leaped to his throat.

The fusion easily succeeded, but success wasn’t the main point. It was very difficult to fail with 91% compatibility.

Whether it could become what Zhou Wen needed was the crux.

After a while, Zhou Wen felt that something was amiss. Why didn’t the light dissipate? On careful look, it had already been successfully fused. However, the new pet emitted a resplendent glow like the sun, preventing Zhou Wen from seeing it clearly.

After taking a closer look, he realized that the new pet was like a crystal and was emitting a dazzling light. It was still in the form of the jade terracotta.

Please let it be armor… Armor… He was delighted and quickly checked the information about his new pet.

Jade Crystal Spirit: Epic

Life Providence: Unaging Undying

Life Soul: Guardian Spirit.

Strength: 40

Speed: 31

Constitution: 40

Essence Energy: 40

Talent Skill: Jade Crystal Light Shield.

Companion Form: Armor

Zhou Wen was overjoyed as he hurriedly summoned the Jade Crystal Spirit in companion form. Soon, a crystal armor appeared around him, enveloping his entire body.

Zhou Wen looked at himself in the mirror and nearly jumped up in excitement. The armor on his body was like a crystalline mirror, clearly reflecting everything around him. At a glance, he imagined that his body had vanished.

Zhou Wen felt as though he had eaten the Fruit of Life. All his pores effused with pleasure. He had never had such a smooth, successful fusion of pets. To Zhou Wen, it was a miracle.

He could not wait to enter the game and go to the temple in the Jade Crystal Spirit armor. He wanted to see if such armor could block the Bright Torch Vision World.

Just like before, Zhou Wen flew behind Torch Dragon and stabbed the Golden Battle God Halberd into its back. Amidst the pain, rows of eyes appeared on both sides of its body. Each eye had the Bright Torch Vision World ability.

Almost instantly, the dragon wings on Zhou Wen’s back and the Golden Battle God Halberd in his hand vanished. They reflected in Torch Dragon’s eyes, but the blood-colored avatar in the Jade Crystal Spirit armor was fine.

It really works! Zhou Wen felt relieved. He knew that he could finally kill Torch Dragon.

As expected, Torch Dragon’s enraged state did not last for long. In just a minute, other than its pair of snake eyes, the rest of its eyes closed.

However, that minute felt like a century to Zhou Wen.

Without the speed augmentation of the dragon wings, Zhou Wen found it a struggle to dodge using only Transcendent Flying Immortal. He was nearly killed a few times.

Thankfully, with Slaughterer’s infinite Essence Energy supporting him, Zhou Wen maintained his Transcendent Flying Immortal state. At the same time, he used Ghost Steps. Under the high pressure, he fused the two Essence Energy Skills and constantly shuttled through the pillars in the palace. He managed to survive until finally, the eyes on Torch Dragon’s body closed.

After Torch Dragon closed its eyes, its aura weakened greatly. It was as if it had been drained of all energy.

However, without the Golden Battle God Halberd, Zhou Wen couldn’t kill it. In the end, he was still killed by Torch Dragon.

Zhou Wen didn’t feel depressed about the death. He was calm. He knew that he could finally go to the ruins to kill Torch Dragon.

He dripped another drop of blood to revive and entered the game dungeon. Now, Zhou Wen was especially calm because he knew that Torch Dragon was no longer his obstacle.

He came in front of Torch Dragon once again. The instant the Golden Battle God Halberd stabbed Torch Dragon, Zhou Wen unsummoned it and the dragon wings and rapidly retreated.

As expected, Torch Dragon’s eyes opened all across its body like before.

Zhou Wen kept using his movement technique to circle around the metal columns. Torch Dragon, who was covered in eyes, chased after him desperately like a lantern.

Seconds passed. After barely holding on for a minute, the eyes on Torch Dragon completely shut. Its body seemed to shrivel as its massive body seemed to shrink.

Now… it’s my turn… Zhou Wen summoned the dragon wings and Golden Battle God Halberd again as his eyes burned.

After working hard for so long, he had finally overcome this seemingly impossible mountain.

As though sensing the change in Zhou Wen’s aura, Torch Dragon shrank back in fear.

“It’s too late to be afraid now.” Zhou Wen flapped the dragon wings on his back and instantly appeared beside Torch Dragon. The Golden Divine Light at the tip of the Golden Battle God Halberd tore through the poison fog around Torch Dragon and stabbed at its body.

Blood splattered as the Golden Divine Light tore through Torch Dragon’s scales and flesh.

Amidst a sharp cry, Torch Dragon spewed out poisonous smoke as black beams shot out from the scales on its body. However, it was already at the end of its rope. Its might was much weaker than before, making it impossible for him to injure Zhou Wen.

Zhou Wen’s figure flashed as the Golden Battle God Halberd constantly tore apart Torch Dragon’s flesh. The palace was filled with dragon blood.

The powerful Torch Dragon finally collapsed at Zhou Wen’s feet. When the gigantic body collapsed, the entire palace seemed to tremble.

Looking at Torch Dragon’s corpse in the pool of blood, Zhou Wen felt an indescribable sense of joy.

Ding!

As Torch Dragon’s corpse slowly disappeared, a black crystal dropped.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 557 - The Last Day of the Exchange

Chapter 557 The Last Day of the Exchange

‘Killed Mythical Creature, Torch Dragon youngling. Discovered Dimensional Crystal.’

This thing… is a youngling… Zhou Wen couldn’t help but be astonished. If it were an adult Torch Dragon, he wondered how strong it would be.

Only one dimensional crystal dropped. When Zhou Wen saw the number, he thought it was just an ordinary dimensional crystal. He couldn’t help but feel somewhat disappointed. However, upon careful scrutiny, he saw that it was a 37-valued Spatial dimensional crystal.

It’s a rare spatial stat, and it’s 37 points. Zhou Wen was overjoyed as he hurriedly absorbed the Spatial Crystal.

Strands of strange energy fused into Zhou Wen’s body, making him feel like his body had changed, but he couldn’t tell what changes had happened.

After the Spatial Crystal was completely absorbed, Zhou Wen saw the Spatial state of his rare stats reach 37.

Spatial stat of 37. The requirement for the Jade Lute Crystal is 41 Constitution, 21 Spatial stat, and a Spatial Life Providence and Life Soul. In other words, as long as I raise

my Constitution to 41 points, I can absorb the Jade Lute Crystal skill. Zhou Wen was still eyeing the Jade Lute Crystal.

Although no Companion Egg dropped, a special stat was still extremely valuable. Zhou Wen was satisfied and planned on doing it again. Unfortunately, Torch Dragon was the same as the Golden Battle God Halberd. It didn't appear immediately after he respawned the dungeon. It would probably take 24 hours before the Torch Dragon youngling would appear again.

It's time to go to Zhuolu. Zhou Wen planned on heading to Zhuolu while waiting for the dungeon to respawn. As long as he grinded twice and confirmed that he could kill Torch Dragon safely, he would immediately enter the ruins.

He could ignore the chick and antelope. If the two of them didn't see Zhou Wen return, they would definitely head to Wang Lu's place for free food and drink. They wouldn't starve themselves.

Zhou Wen planned on purchasing some items before heading to Zhuolu.

Just as he walked out of Four Seasons Garden, he bumped into Ming Xiu and Tian Zhenzhen, who were looking for him.

"Coach, our exchange is about to end. I came to say goodbye before we leave," Ming Xiu said.

"So fast?" Zhou Wen was somewhat surprised. He didn't think it had been three months since Ming Xiu had arrived. His days of gaming really passed quickly.

"The three months are up the day after tomorrow. I'm afraid that the school will have other arrangements and that I

won’t be able to bid you farewell, so I came ahead of time,” Ming Xiu said.

Zhou Wen didn’t know what to say. He wasn’t good at words, nor did he like to make farewell speeches.

“Coach, if you have the time, can you fight me again before I leave?” Ming Xiu clearly wasn’t the kind of person who would invite others to a farewell dinner. He wasn’t just here to bid Zhou Wen farewell.

“I can do it now,” Zhou Wen said with a nod.

“Then let’s go to the training ground. I’ve improved a lot recently. Although I haven’t advanced to the Epic stage, I already have some insights,” Ming Xiu said excitedly.

The three of them arrived at the training ground and found an empty room. Tian Zhenzhen stood by the side and watched the battle. Zhou Wen and Ming Xiu took their practice weapons and stood there.

“Coach, please give me your guidance.” With the sword in hand, Ming Xiu’s temperament changed instantly. The warmth from before vanished. His being was even more terrifying and cold than the sword in his hand.

Zhou Wen wielded the practice sword and displayed the stance of Transcendent Flying Immortal. Since Ming Xiu specially came to spar with him before leaving, Zhou Wen didn’t want to brush him off.

Ming Xiu held his sword. At the instant his aura reached its peak, he unsheathed his sword and transformed into a stream of light that stabbed Zhou Wen.

It was like the last ray of light on the horizon during sunset. Ming Xiu’s sword was gorgeous and resolute. It was the last ray of light, and also the final bloom.

Although they were both focused on speed, Ming Xiu’s sword techniques and Feng Qiuyan’s saber techniques exuded a completely different feeling.

Tian Zhenzhen watched Ming Xiu’s strike from the side. Her eyes were filled with anticipation, hoping that the strike would surprise Zhou Wen.

She had been practicing with Ming Xiu the entire time. She knew how much hardship Ming Xiu had suffered in order to hone his sword, and she also knew how much Ming Xiu had improved in such a short time. Although she knew that Ming Xiu couldn’t defeat Zhou Wen, she also wished to see a look of surprise on Zhou Wen’s face. That was the greatest reward for Ming Xiu’s hard work.

Tian Zhenzhen knew very well that Zhou Wen’s shocked expression was more important than any other person’s praise for Ming Xiu.

However, Zhou Wen didn’t show any expression. With a slight movement of his practice sword, he blocked Ming Xiu’s sword. Although Ming Xiu’s sword was fast and ruthless, it was still too slow for Zhou Wen.

Ming Xiu couldn’t help but feel a little discouraged when he saw Zhou Wen easily block his sword that was infused with everything. He stood there with his sword in hand.

“What are you waiting for? Continue,” Zhou Wen said when he saw Ming Xiu pause.

Ming Xiu’s eyes narrowed. He gripped the sword in his hand tightly and swung it again. Like before, his sword was as fast as lightning.

However, Zhou Wen still casually brandished his sword and blocked Ming Xiu’s sword. However, this time, Ming Xiu didn’t hesitate or stop as he struck again.

Tian Zhenzhen was filled with disappointment. Ming Xiu had clearly put in so much effort, but Zhou Wen was still able to easily block his sword art.

Ming Xiu constantly attacked Zhou Wen from all directions. His sword technique was like meteors that streaked across the sky, but Zhou Wen didn’t use his strongest strike. He even remained in place. All he did was wave his sword and block Ming Xiu’s incoming strikes.

Tian Zhenzhen could not help but smile bitterly. She knew that the difference between the two of them was too great. It was so great that it left one in despair.

Looking at Ming Xiu, who constantly attacked Zhou Wen but failed to make him even take a single step, Tian Zhenzhen felt her heart almost shatter. She really didn’t wish to see Ming Xiu suffer such a blow.

Ming Xiu had put so much effort into improving his sword techniques that when they failed she wanted to rush forward and stop him from continuing the battle. She didn’t want Ming Xiu to suffer such humiliation again.

“If I were you, I wouldn’t disturb him.” A voice sounded beside her. Tian Zhenzhen was too engrossed and hadn’t noticed someone standing beside her.

“President Wei?” Tian Zhenzhen turned around and realized that the person was the president of the student council, Wei Ge.

Wei Ge looked at the battle between Zhou Wen and Ming Xiu and said, “No one is born to be a winner. Every man will experience countless failures in his life. However, some men will never get up again after failing. As for some men, they will get up and continue advancing after failing, ultimately becoming geniuses in the eyes of others. Trust him. Don’t stand in front of him. Don’t block his path. Just trust him.”

Tian Zhenzhen didn’t understand him, but his words dispelled her urge to rush over.

Ming Xiu’s sword constantly slashed out, but it was also constantly blocked by Zhou Wen.

Wei Ge’s eyes narrowed. He could tell that Ming Xiu’s sword technique was evolving. He was searching for all possibilities. As long as he could get up and continue advancing, he would not lose.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 558 - Tomorrow Sword Ar

Chapter 558 Tomorrow Sword Ar

Zhou Wen’s sword art looked ordinary, but he had already used Transcendent Flying Immortal’s technique. However, he didn’t take the initiative to attack and only used it to defend. No one could tell what was so profound about it.

However, even defense alone gave Ming Xiu a lot of pressure. Just like when Zhou Wen and Xia Xuanyue fought, Xia Xuanyue used the Path to Snatching Heaven to pressure Zhou Wen.

However, Zhou Wen’s movement technique wasn’t the Path to Snatching Heaven. It wasn’t that aggressive. He was only defending, but it made Ming Xiu feel as if he would be killed by Zhou Wen if he didn’t attack.

Therefore, Ming Xiu could only continuously attack and attack. If it was an ordinary person, under such pressure, they would probably be scared out of their wits. Their willpower would soon collapse, and they would give up on resisting or end up risking their lives.

However, Ming Xiu didn’t give up. Under such pressure, he constantly searched for an opportunity to defeat Zhou Wen. He constantly attacked with his sword.

This won’t do… Not this either… Ming Xiu kept trying, but no matter how fast his sword was, no matter how gorgeous his

technique was, or how brilliant his strikes were, they were perfectly parried by Zhou Wen.

What do I have to do to break through the Coach’s defense? Ming Xiu had already tried his best. He had already tried everything he could, but he couldn’t think of any better methods.

Ming Xiu knew that this couldn’t continue. Once his train of thought was severed, his sword’s might would weaken. When that happened, Zhou Wen would counterattack.

This was his last battle with Zhou Wen before he left. He didn’t wish to leave it just like that.

What should I do… what should I do… Countless thoughts flashed across Ming Xiu’s mind.

Ming Xiu suddenly felt that this situation was a little familiar. He seemed to have experienced this before.

Soon, Ming Xiu remembered why this situation was so familiar. It was because he had faced the same predicament when he was young.

At that time, he had only been practicing his sword techniques for a short period of time. He was small and weak in strength—he was only three years old. The other students who practiced with him were already six or seven years old. Therefore, during any sparring, the difference in strength was huge and Ming Xiu was always defeated by his classmates because he was too weak.

He lost terribly in the daily sparrings. With Ming Xiu’s temper, he naturally couldn’t accept it. At that time, he often thought that if he could grow up faster and become as strong as his classmates, he would definitely not lose.

Unfortunately, it was impossible for him to grow up overnight. However, ever since then, Ming Xiu constantly upped the ante when it came to training. He kept honing his skills. Although he was very young, after a few months he was able to fight against his classmates who were a few years older than him. A year later, no classmate was his match.

The predicament back then was the same as the present predicament. Zhou Wen was much stronger than him in every aspect. The difference was that even with technique, he still couldn’t beat Zhou Wen.

When I was young, I couldn’t fulfill that fantasy. But now, it’s not impossible to realize it. I can do it in another way… Ming Xiu seemed to have made a decision in his heart, and his gaze became sharper.

“His gaze is different,” Wei Ge said with narrowed eyes.

“What do you mean his gaze is different?” Tian Zhenzhen asked doubtfully.

“Watch his next move. Perhaps this will be a very important moment in his life,” Wei Ge said without elaboration.

Tian Zhenzhen had no choice but to stare at Ming Xiu. She wanted to know how different his next strike would be.

Ming Xiu held his sword as sword beams flashed like meteors. From Tian Zhenzhen’s point of view, this strike was no different from many of his previous strikes. They were all so fast and furious, but such strikes couldn’t defeat Zhou Wen.

She had already seen it countless times. Such a magnificent sword art had been easily blocked by Zhou Wen. There had

been no exception.

Indeed, Zhou Wen’s sword blocked Ming Xiu’s sword again, but at the instant the two swords clashed, everyone was astonished to realize that Zhou Wen’s sword had missed. It failed to block Ming Xiu’s sword.

As for Ming Xiu’s sword, it acted as a late student. After Zhou Wen’s sword swept over, his sword stabbed towards Zhou Wen’s heart.

“Alright! Zhou Wen made a mistake!” Tian Zhenzhen jumped up in excitement. She thought that it was Zhou Wen’s mistake.

Clang!

However, in the next second, Zhou Wen’s sword hilt slumped downwards and struck Ming Xiu’s sword tip. It sent Ming Xiu’s sword to the side, preventing him from stabbing him.

“That wasn’t Zhou Wen’s mistake, but a result of Ming Xiu’s deliberate actions. The late sword wasn’t even seen by Zhou Wen. It nearly hit him. It’s really interesting.” Wei Ge revealed a teasing expression.

Ming Xiu had already ceased his attack. He did not continue fighting and sheathed his sword.

Zhou Wen’s sword-wielding hand drooped down as he allowed the tip of the sword to stick to the ground.

“Nice sword art. What’s the name of that strike?” Zhou Wen asked Ming Xiu.

“It doesn’t have a name yet. Coach, if you don’t mind, you can give it a name,” Ming Xiu said.

Zhou Wen didn’t decline. After some thought, he said, “Since it’s a late strike, let’s call it Tomorrow Sword Art.”

“Sword of Tomorrow… Tomorrow Sword Art… Alright… I’ll call it Tomorrow Sword Art…” Ming Xiu seemed to like this name very much and decided to go with it.

“Then, let me see how far your Tomorrow Sword Art can go.” Zhou Wen narrowed his eyes as he stared at the sword in Ming Xiu’s hand. He felt his confidence and inspiration erupt due to Ming Xiu’s strike. His mind was at peak activity.

“Coach, please appraise my Tomorrow Sword Art!” Ming Xiu gripped the hilt of his sword. It was as if he had entered a mysterious realm that was surreal.

Ka-Cha!

The practice sword and scabbard in Ming Xiu’s hand actually broke apart. Cracks spread out on the scabbard. In the blink of an eye, the scabbard shattered, along with the sword hilt that Ming Xiu was holding.

It was not strange that the practice sword shattered. The strange thing was that after the practice sword and scabbard crumbled, he still held a sword in his hand. It was a transparent sword of light, and a terrifying sword intent radiated from it.

“Life Soul… Is that a Life Soul?” Tian Zhenzhen could not believe her judgment and asked Wei Ge.

“Yes, that’s a Life Soul. It’s really enviable. He’s still so young, but he has already comprehended a Life Soul,” said Wei Ge. He was truly envious.

If he had met Zhou Wen earlier and come to a realization earlier, he wouldn’t have wasted so much time doing other meaningless things. Perhaps he could have been like Feng Qiuyan and Ming Xiu, with such shocking achievements at a young age.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 559 - Peerless Duo

Chapter 559 Peerless Duo

When the terrifying sword intent reached its peak, it suddenly retracted. In an instant, it completely converged, and the transparent sword beam in Ming Xiu’s hand stabbed out.

This wasn’t a late strike, but a strike from the future. Ming Xiu’s sword was unbelievably fast as though it had broken through his limits. It transcended space and time as it stabbed at Zhou Wen.

The eruption of this strike was so sudden, fast, and bizarre that Tian Zhenzhen was unable to keep up with it. She did not even see how the strike was thrust out when she heard a clang.

The practice sword in Zhou Wen’s hand had already snapped. As for the transparent beam sword in Ming Xiu’s hand, it had been sheathed at some point in time.

“Tomorrow after tomorrow. How many tomorrows would there be? If you have the will, why wait until tomorrow? Live in the moment, and let the Sword of Tomorrow slay all grudges. Good sword technique!” Wei Ge praised.

Tian Zhenzhen only knew that Ming Xiu’s strike was very powerful, but she did not know how strong it was or which aspect of it was strong. She kept staring, but she couldn’t tell.

“Thank you for your guidance, Coach. I’ll be leaving.” Ming Xiu bowed seriously and then turned to leave the practice room.

“Ming Xiu, you have finally won. Furthermore, you have condensed a Life Soul. You are only seventeen years old. It’s great that you reached the Epic stage at seventeen,” Tian Zhenzhen chased after him and said excitedly.

“No, I lost.” Ming Xiu shook his head.

“How can that be? I saw you snap Zhou Wen’s sword. You definitely won!” Tian Zhenzhen exclaimed.

“That’s because Coach used a practice sword, while mine was a Life Soul Sword. That’s why he blocked my sword. It was only because the practice sword was too weak that it snapped. Even so, my sword still failed to injure him, nor was it able to force him to attack. Indeed, I’m still too inferior. However, I now have a direction. There will come a day when I will catch up with Coach,” Ming Xiu said confidently.

“I see. However, you are already very powerful. You are at the Epic stage at 17 years old. If your father knew, he would definitely be overjoyed,” Tian Zhenzhen consoled.

“That’s right. It’s time to go back and make the old man happy. I have to let others decide if the sword art my father passed down is weak or strong.” Ming Xiu’s eyes were filled with excitement. After all, he was only a seventeen-year-old. He had the zeal of youth.

After Ming Xiu and Tian Zhenzhen left, Zhou Wen was about to leave when Wei Ge stopped him.

“Zhou Wen, can we have a chat?” Wei Ge asked.

“President, what’s the matter?” Zhou Wen didn’t feel anything special about Wei Ge. He didn’t have any negative feelings towards him or a good impression of him. He was just a schoolmate he wasn’t familiar with.

“I have a question for you,” Wei Ge said.

“Just say whatever you have to say. However, I might not necessarily answer you,” Zhou Wen said.

Wei Ge smiled and said, “Actually, it’s not a big deal. I just want to ask you. After graduating, do you plan on staying in school or going out to make a name of yourself?”

“Everyone’s choices are different. I only wish to return to my hometown to game,” Zhou Wen said.

When Wei Ge heard Zhou Wen’s answer, he was stunned for a long while before he suddenly laughed. “Not bad, not bad. Everyone’s choices are different. I was overthinking it.”

“Zhou Wen, what game are you playing? I should have a lot of free time in the future. I want to play it too,” Wei Ge asked.

“Recently, Huang Ji and I have worked together to develop a new game. If you’re interested, you can download it to play. This is the download address.” Zhou Wen sent the download address of the game, Dimensional, to Wei Ge.

“Alright, I’ll go back and play.” Wei Ge downloaded the game and waved goodbye to Zhou Wen.

Zhou Wen went to the supermarket to buy what he needed before storing them in the chaos space. Then, he informed Li Xuan and company before leaving the school. He headed to Zhuolu alone.

He didn’t contact An Sheng. Firstly, An Sheng was still hatching the Companion Egg. Secondly, if he contacted An Sheng, he would definitely enter the temple with him. It would be a meaningless risk.

Zhou Wen already had the confidence to kill Torch Dragon, so it was better for him to do it himself.

Before he left the city, his phone suddenly rang. He took a look at the number and realized that it was from Ouyang Lan. He could not help but mutter inwardly, Don’t tell me Ouyang Lan found out so quickly?

“Little Wen, how’s your exchange with your schoolmates at the moment?” Ouyang Lan asked out of the blue after he picked up the call.

“What do you mean?” Zhou Wen was puzzled and didn’t understand what Ouyang Lan was getting at.

“I’m talking about the exchange student from Bright Prospects College. Aren’t you his student tutor? How are you two getting along? Are you close?” Ouyang Lan asked.

Zhou Wen was even more puzzled. Why would Ouyang Lan actually care about this?

He had no idea that Ouyang Lan had arranged for him to become Ming Xiu’s student tutor.

“Our relationship isn’t bad, I suppose?” Zhou Wen felt that their relationship wasn’t bad. At the very least, they hadn’t quarreled.

“That’s good. What do you think if I let you live with Ming Xiu in the future?” Ouyang Lan asked again.

“Wait, Sis Lan, what do you mean? What do you mean by letting me live with Ming Xiu?” Zhou Wen felt that something was amiss.

Ouyang Lan said, “Do you know what Ming Xiu’s Life Providence is?”

“I don’t know.” Zhou Wen had never cared about this.

“Didn’t you say that you have a good relationship with him? Why don’t you even know about his Life Providence?” Ouyang Lan didn’t wait for Zhou Wen to reply before continuing, “His Life Providence is Peerless Duo. Do you know what it means? It means that there will be two peerless geniuses in the same era.”

“And then?” Zhou Wen still didn’t understand what this had to do with him.

“Little Wen, I think that you should read more brain-teasers in addition to your cultivation to strengthen your imagination. That’s a Peerless Duo. Of course, it requires two people to be able to be called a duo. In other words, those who practice with him will be augmented by his Life Providence. Both parties will have their cultivation speed accelerate. Don’t you think that you’ve improved faster in the past three months?” Ouyang Lan said.

“There’s actually such a thing…” Zhou Wen really wasn’t aware. Furthermore, he had never cultivated with Ming Xiu. Instead, it was Feng Qiuyan who practiced with Ming Xiu all day.

“Forget it, forget it. Your emotional quotient and reaction are too slow. My relationship with Ming Xiu’s family elders isn’t bad, so if you can get along well, I can consider letting you live together and cultivate together…”

“Sis Lan… Thank you for your kindness… There’s really no need. I’m more used to living alone…” Zhou Wen finally understood why Wang Fei said that the school had designated him as a student tutor and that he couldn’t reject it. So it was Ouyang Lan’s arrangement.

Unfortunately, he had missed Ouyang Lan’s good intentions.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 560 - Unexpected Discovery

Chapter 560 Unexpected Discovery

After hanging up, Zhou Wen left Luoyang and rode a Chi towards Zhuolu.

He had been to Zhuolu before, so naturally, he still remembered the way. However, compared to the last trip, the probability of seeing people outside the city was lower.

Many of the roads were already abandoned and lush vegetation could be seen everywhere.

Unless there was a large convoy or a pet transport team passing by, it would be hard to see a lone traveler.

On the way, Zhou Wen encountered some break-out creatures. Although they weren't very strong—at the Legendary stage—it made him even more uneasy.

As the level for break-out creatures dropped, it was very likely that the dimensional zones' seals would weaken further. Wang Mingyuan had said that in another ten years, the dimensional zones would completely have their seals released. From the looks of it, it wasn't a lie.

The Chi's speed was rather fast. Although it wasn't as comfortable as sitting in a car, it could traverse complicated terrain, unlike cars that were easily restricted.

Many roads were destroyed by dimensional creatures. It was getting harder and harder to drive outside the city.

There were also many vines and plants that covered the roads. Other than some roads that often had cars drive through them, it was hard to guarantee smooth-flowing roads.

Zhou Wen wasn’t afraid of exhaustion as he traveled day and night. On the third day, he set up a tent and planned on sleeping for a while.

Although he was full of energy and had endless Essence Energy, a person’s body and mind wouldn’t feel good if they did not sleep for prolonged periods.

The path Zhou Wen took wasn’t one visited by convoys, so there weren’t many people around. Furthermore, this was a mountain path in the mountainous area, so the chances of encountering people were even lower.

Zhou Wen set up a tent on a platform by the side of the road. It just so happened that the area was empty. Beside it was a cliff without any obstructions. If any foreign creature appeared, it could be discovered ahead of time.

He summoned Six-Winged, Banana Fairy, Doctor Darkness, and other Companion Beasts and got them to guard him. Only then did Zhou Wen feel at ease to fall asleep.

At midnight, Zhou Wen was sleeping soundly when he was suddenly awoken by a pair of tiny hands.

Opening her eyes, he saw Banana Fairy patting his face with her tiny hands. Upon seeing Zhou Wen wake up, Banana Fairy pulled his hand and pointed outside the tent.

“What happened?” Zhou Wen asked Banana Fairy.

Banana Fairy spoke, but he couldn’t understand what she was saying. It left Zhou Wen somewhat depressed. After all, she was a Mythical pet. It had been so long, yet she couldn’t even learn simple human language.

Zhou Wen could only get up and leave the tent. Six-Winged was sleeping outside the tent, sleeping even more soundly than Zhou Wen.

Doctor Darkness stood at the entrance of the tent without any expression, as though he was in a daze.

These two fellows aren’t reliable when compared to Banana Fairy, Zhou Wen thought to himself.

Banana Fairy flew in the air with her banana leaf and pointed at the bottom of the cliff. She made a series of sounds as though she wanted to tell Zhou Wen something.

Zhou Wen walked to the edge of the cliff and looked down. With the help of the moonlight’s illumination, he saw something glowing in the forest below.

The flickering light looked very regular. It didn’t look like fireflies. Firstly, fireflies weren’t that bright. Secondly, Zhou Wen had never heard of a firefly being able to emit red light.

Looking at it from above, it felt like a red alert alarm was flashing under it.

What’s down there? A dimensional creature? Although Zhou Wen’s eyesight was good, he couldn’t see what was glowing red from so far away.

Banana Fairy pulled Zhou Wen and flew down as though she wanted him to follow her down.

Zhou Wen hurriedly pulled Banana Fairy. The world was too terrifying. Many unknown things could cause people to die without knowing why. It wasn’t that Zhou Wen wasn’t curious, but he couldn’t risk his life out of curiosity.

After grabbing Banana Fairy, Zhou Wen summoned more than ten Poison Bats and made them fly down to take a look.

The dozen or so poison bats quickly flew to the forest below the cliff and tore apart the trees and vines, making the red light even clearer.

Zhou Wen switched to Eight Perfections Wisdom and enhanced his vision. He could vaguely see that there seemed to be a red object glowing underground. As it was buried in the soil, only a tiny portion of it could be seen. Zhou Wen couldn’t tell what it was.

He ordered the Poison Bats to dig up the soil near that object. They lay on the ground, their claws piercing into the soil covered by fallen leaves as they dug up the soil.

Seeing that the object didn’t have any reaction, Zhou Wen heaved a sigh of relief. However, he didn’t dare to be careless. He kept staring at the object and the Poison Bats. Once the Poison Bats had any abnormal reaction, he could immediately react.

Thankfully, the situation that Zhou Wen had expected didn’t happen. After digging for a short while, the Poison Bats had dug out a huge hole.

However, from above, he could only see a red ball that was more than four meters in diameter. It was shining brightly,

but he could not tell what it was.

Before confirming what it was, Zhou Wen didn’t dare let the Poison Bat touch it. After some thought, he put away the tent and other things. Then, he got Six-Winged to fly down the cliff with him.

Looking from the side, it was really a huge ball. It looked like a piece of jade that was half-buried in the soil. The blinking light in it was constantly changing, sometimes strong, sometimes weak. That was why from afar, it looked like it was flickering. In fact, it was constantly glowing.

A dimensional creature? It doesn’t look like it. A Companion Egg doesn’t seem like it either. What is it? Zhou Wen sized it up but couldn’t tell what it was.

Banana Fairy couldn’t help but fly above the red ball. Then, she jumped down from the banana leaf and landed on the red ball.

She jumped on the red ball a few times, then with a pop, the red ball cracked.

Zhou Wen jumped in fright. It was already too late to stop her. Thankfully, there wasn’t any danger after the red ball split open. The red ball turned into a flower.

The jade-like outer shell was actually its petals. After peeling open layer by layer, the pink pistil inside was revealed, and the glowing object was the pistil.

The moment the flower bloomed, Zhou Wen immediately smelled a rich floral fragrance. With the augmentation of the Eight Perfections Wisdom, he felt that the fragrance was refreshing, one that relaxed his mind.

Banana Fairy had already landed in the pistil. Her tiny hand grabbed some pollen and placed it in her mouth, as though she was eating cotton candy. She quickly swallowed it.

There was a lot of pollen in the flower. After Banana Fairy ate one blob, she grabbed another with both hands. She stuffed it into her mouth and stuffed her cheeks.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 561 - Competition for the Pollen

Chapter 561 Competition for the Pollen

A plant-type dimensional creature? Zhou Wen noticed that the flower didn’t show any abnormal reaction. It didn’t react to anything the Banana Fairy did. He found the plant-type dimensional creature rather strange.

When Zhou Wen saw Banana Fairy enjoying the pollen, he wondered if he should get some flower pollen to give it a try, but that was when he suddenly heard a strange sound nearby.

Zhou Wen looked around and his expression changed slightly. He saw that in the nearby forest, snakes, insects, rats, and ants were all approaching.

Zhou Wen recognized rats, caterpillars, venomous snakes, and centipedes. However, there were many insects that he didn’t know at all.

These weren’t likely to be real dimensional creatures. Most of them were ordinary creatures in the forest. Some of them were mutated creatures, but they were still a little far from the level of dimensional creatures. They could only be considered mortal.

The snakes, insects, rats, and ants struggled to crawl over. They all rushed towards the huge red flower. As they stepped over each other, many of them either got injured or died.

However, they still charged at the red flower as if they were possessed.

Is it the fragrance of the red flower that attracted them? Zhou Wen thought.

Many insects flew over, but before they could reach the red flower, even more terrifying creatures appeared. They scared the snakes, insects, rats, and ants away. However, the former were unwilling to leave. They loitered around the area.

A caterpillar coruscating with blue light crawled out of the forest. When the ants saw it, they immediately hid far away. They would rather squeeze together and trample on each other than get near it.

Even the temptation of the floral fragrance didn’t stop them from fearing the blue-light-emitting caterpillar.

Another break-out creature. Is there a dimensional zone nearby? When Zhou Wen looked up, he realized that another dimensional creature had appeared. It was a butterfly that was as large as a crane. Its body and wings were golden in color. As it flew, it scattered golden specks of light and dust. It was rather eye-catching in the dark night as though it was dancing in a golden galaxy.

However, when the golden dust landed on the snakes, insects, rats, and ants, they all died immediately. Their bodies also turned a faint golden color.

Both the blue-light-emitting caterpillar and the gold-dust butterfly rushed toward the red flower. Clearly, their target was the same.

Banana Fairy, who was enjoying the pollen, saw the gold-dust butterfly and blue-light-emitting caterpillar rushing

over. She reached out and grabbed her banana leaf before fanning at them.

The terrifying Grand Yin Wind immediately sent the two flying. However, they remained uninjured, so they quickly rushed over again.

The gold-dust butterfly swooped down at the red flower from the sky. The gold-dust on its body constantly scattered. Unfortunately, it met Banana Fairy and with a wave of her hand, the gold-dust along with the butterfly was sent flying.

Wherever the blue-light-emitting caterpillar crawled, the leaves and soil burned, leaving a blue trail on the ground. However, the blue mark did not seem like a real flame.

However, it shared the same outcome. Before it even approached the red flower, it was blown away by Banana Fairy.

Banana Fairy’s Grand Yin Wind was extremely powerful. The two dimensional creatures were sent flying, but didn’t suffer any serious injuries. They quickly crawled back, shocking Zhou Wen.

Banana Fairy stuffed flower pollen into her mouth as she waved the banana leaf at the two of them. She didn’t allow them to approach the red flower. Clearly, she was afraid that they would snatch the flower pollen from her.

When Zhou Wen saw that the blue-light-emitting caterpillar and the gold-dust butterfly weren’t a threat to Banana Fairy, he didn’t take action and just watched from the side.

Apart from those two dimensional creatures, no other dimensional creatures appeared. Instead, it was the ordinary snakes, bugs, rats, and ants. No one was willing to leave, but

they didn’t dare approach. They just watched helplessly from the side.

The butterfly and the caterpillar tried to charge forward many times, but they were blown back by the Grand Yin Wind. However, they still did not give up and continued charging forward.

It seemed a little boring. After a while, Zhou Wen yawned, feeling a little sleepy.

Just as he was thinking about whether he should go back and take a nap, he suddenly felt that something was amiss. Sweeping his gaze over, he saw that many of the snakes, insects, rats, and ants were lying there motionless as if they were dead.

The insects that were flying in the air also staggered and fell from the sky.

Zhou Wen took a careful look and realized that they weren’t really dead. They were just asleep.

Something’s wrong… Could it be the floral fragrance… Zhou Wen immediately realized the problem.

Zhou Wen hurriedly stopped breathing. Indeed, he felt much less sleepy.

From the looks of it, there is poison in the floral fragrance. Thankfully, my Poison stat is high enough, so I didn’t fall asleep like those snakes, insects, rats, and ants. Zhou Wen saw that Banana Fairy, the butterfly, and the caterpillar weren’t affected by the floral fragrance and were still warring for the flower pollen.

The ordinary creatures around them had all fallen to the ground and were asleep.

Although Zhou Wen wasn’t afraid of the floral fragrance, he felt bored. He drew his saber and slashed at the blue-light-emitting caterpillar and the gold-dust butterfly, killing them.

The gold-dust butterfly didn’t leave anything behind, but the blue-light-emitting caterpillar rolled out a sapphire-like bead. It was a Companion Egg.

I never expected my luck to be so good. Zhou Wen took out his phone and snapped at the blue-light-emitting caterpillar’s Companion Egg.

Netherworld Caterpillar: Epic

Life Providence: Netherworld Envoy

Life Soul: Netherworld Poison

Strength: 26

Speed: 28

Constitution: 27

Essence Energy: 40

Talent Skill: Myriad Poisons Augmentation

Companion Form: Pill

These stats are rather interesting. Zhou Wen looked at its stats. It was an Epic creature with three attributes that didn’t reach 30 points, but its Essence Energy stat was maxed out.

Furthermore, its companion form was something he had never seen before. After some thought, Zhou Wen picked up the Companion Egg and hatched it before turning it into its companion form.

Soon, a blue lotus seed-like pill appeared in Zhou Wen’s hand. It looked like a blue medicine pill. It looked beautiful, but Zhou Wen didn’t know what effects it would have if he ate it.

What’s the use of this thing? I wonder if I can feed it to other dimensional creatures and poison them to death? Zhou Wen stored away the pill and planned on giving it a try when he had the chance.

Banana Fairy was about to finish all the flower pollen. Her stomach swelled. However, she didn’t have any intention of stopping. She only stopped when she had finished all the flower pollen and then she returned to Zhou Wen’s side.

The next morning at dawn, the morning sun shone on the red flower. The flower instantly withered at a speed visible to the naked eye. It didn’t take long before it turned into ashes on the ground and was gone, leaving behind a red crystal.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 562 - Entering the Underground Ruins Again

Chapter 562 Entering the Underground Ruins Again

Before Zhou Wen could see what the red crystal was, Banana Fairy had already flown over. She blew a breath and sent the red crystal flying into her mouth.

The red crystal melted in her mouth and was swallowed by Banana Fairy. She licked her lips as if she hadn’t had enough.

It was only at this moment that those sleeping snakes, insects, rats, and ants woke up. They scattered and returned to the forest.

Seeing that there was nothing else there, Zhou Wen continued on his journey and headed straight for Zhuolu.

It had only been a few months, and this road was very different from the last time he took it. Previously, he had not seen so many break-out creatures on the way, but he could see them now.

Although they were low-level dimensional creatures, it also indicated that the dimensional zones’ sealing powers were rapidly weakening.

When Zhou Wen arrived at Zhuolu again, he didn’t head to the encampment. He headed straight for the battlefield and circled around the soldiers stationed there before arriving at the entrance of the ruins.

Zhou Wen didn’t see the chariot at the entrance of the underground ruins. For some reason, there was a chariot in reality, but there wasn’t a chariot in-game.

After grinding so many Zhuolu instance dungeons, Zhou Wen still couldn’t find the chariot.

He entered the underground ruins which he was extremely familiar with. After passing through the maze-like underground passageway, he went to the Longevity Tree.

There was no Longevity Tree in-game either, but the Longevity Tree in reality was still fine. The fruits on the tree were as many as Zhou Wen had seen before. No one had touched it.

He aimed his phone at them, but there was still no reaction. He knew that it was impossible to store the Longevity Tree on his phone.

This Longevity Tree is so similar to the Dead Man Tree, but it can’t be shown in-game. I wonder what its origins are. Zhou Wen looked at the fruits. Although he knew that eating them would give him immense strength, he wasn’t willing to try.

Lord Alcohol’s fate made it evident. There were definitely unseen consequences of eating it.

Since he couldn’t store away the Longevity Tree, Zhou Wen was preparing to leave when he suddenly felt a burning sensation on his tattoo. Demonic Neonate was throbbing.

Zhou Wen’s heart stirred as he summoned Demonic Neonate. The moment Demonic Neonate landed, she ran towards the Longevity Tree. Before Zhou Wen could call out to her, she had already jumped onto it and opened her mouth to bite the fruit.

Ka-cha! Ka-cha!

One fruit was swallowed by Demonic Neonate in a few seconds. She continued to bite at another fruit.

Zhou Wen was surprised. Ever since Demonic Neonate had been born, she hadn’t eaten or drunk. Even when Zhou Wen fed her the best Epic Companion Egg, she wasn’t moved. She even showed disdain.

Zhou Wen originally imagined that she didn’t eat at all, but who knew that she would eat the fruits of the Longevity Tree? In just moments, she had swallowed three to four fruits.

Back then, Lord Alcohol only ate one fruit and his body was restored to its youth. He almost broke through to the Mythical stage.

Demonic Neonate had eaten three or four fruits, but she still looked fine. She continued crawling around the tree, looking for fruits to eat.

The Longevity Tree was likely a terrifying Mythical creature. It easily turned Lord Alcohol into fertilizer. Demonic Neonate jumped around its body and ate many fruits, but the Longevity Tree didn’t react at all.

Zhou Wen stared at the Longevity Tree for a long time as he thought to himself, Could this tree be waiting for Demonic Neonate to finish eating before dealing with her?

Zhou Wen stood far away and focused. If the Longevity Tree stirred, he would immediately summon Demonic Neonate back and escape.

It was a strange object, and it wasn’t in-game. Zhou Wen didn’t wish to take the risk to fight it.

However, nothing Zhou Wen imagined happened. Demonic Neonate jumped around on the tree and ate many Longevity Fruits, but the tree didn’t react at all.

Demonic Neonate finished more than ten Longevity Fruits and was about to eat more, but she suddenly fell from the tree, giving Zhou Wen a fright.

He immediately summoned her back. Demonic Neonate transformed into a stream of light and returned to Zhou Wen. Zhou Wen felt that Demonic Neonate’s tattoo was burning hot, like a piece of burning iron. It was so hot that Zhou Wen nearly cried out. All he could do was summon her out again.

When Demonic Neonate landed in front of Zhou Wen, the Longevity Tree in the distance didn’t move. It made Zhou Wen heave a sigh of relief as he hurriedly checked Demonic Neonate’s body.

Her face was flushed red, and there was even a hint of white air coming out of her body. It was like steam.

However, Demonic Neonate’s aura was completely uniform, and she didn’t appear to have a problem. Instead, her vital energy was constantly surging, as if she was about to advance.

Don’t tell me she’s about to advance to the Legendary stage? Zhou Wen felt that there was a high chance that he was right. However, he didn’t know what changes would happen if this happened.

She already had a Life Providence, Life Soul, and Wheel of Destiny. If she advanced to the Legendary stage, he didn’t know if she would condense a new Life Providence.

The white gas on Demonic Neonate increased in amount as it enveloped her body. Her temperature was shockingly high, so Zhou Wen could only watch from the side. He could do nothing.

If those Longevity Fruits really can make Demonic Neonate evolve, why don’t I pluck them and keep them for her? Zhou Wen looked at the Longevity Tree as many thoughts flashed through his mind.

It was impossible for him to eat them himself, so in the past he had had no intention of doing anything to the Longevity Tree. However, since Demonic Neonate was willing to eat the fruits, he couldn’t just sit around and do nothing.

After some thought, Zhou Wen summoned a Poison Bat, hoping to see if it could pluck the Longevity Fruit.

The Poison Bat flapped its wings and flew over. Before it could pluck the fruit, a tree root emerged from the ground. It wrapped around the Poison Bat’s body like a flood dragon and pulled it into the ground. Then, nothing else happened.

From the looks of it, not anyone can pluck the fruits. Zhou Wen summoned some of his other Companion Beasts, but the outcome was the same. They were killed by the Longevity Tree the moment they approached. They couldn’t even touch the tree, much less the Longevity Fruit.

Zhou Wen didn’t wish to touch the Longevity Fruit himself, nor did he wish to take the risk with a Mythical pet. All he could do was wait for Demonic Neonate to complete her evolution. If there was nothing he could do, he would get

Demonic Neonate to pluck the fruit herself and take everything away. It would be her food for the future.

After a while, the white gas on Demonic Neonate’s body gradually dissipated, and her body temperature also gradually decreased. However, it didn’t seem like her body had undergone any special changes. She was still tiny, and she was still hugging the ancient sword in her arms.

After Demonic Neonate had fully recovered, she stood up and looked in the direction of the Longevity Tree. However, she seemed to hesitate and did not go over immediately.

“If you can’t eat anymore, why don’t you pluck the fruits now and I’ll help you keep them?” Zhou Wen suggested.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 563 - Take Everything Away

Chapter 563 Take Everything Away

Demonic Neonate thought about it for a moment before finding it feasible and nodding.

Zhou Wen was delighted as he hurriedly took out a huge cloth bag from his chaos space and handed it to Demonic Neonate. He patted her head and said, “Try your best to pick more fruits. I’ll store them for you. You can eat them anytime in the future.”

Demonic Neonate was too short, so she had to drag the cloth bag to the Longevity Tree. Zhou Wen held the Bamboo Blade and stared at the Longevity Tree. If it made any abnormal movements, he would be able to react in time.

However, Zhou Wen’s worry was unnecessary. The Longevity Tree seemed to treat Demonic Neonate exceptionally well. It allowed Demonic Neonate to pluck the Longevity Fruit from its body without any reaction.

Demonic Neonate was even more greedy than Zhou Wen. Regardless of its size or ripeness, she plucked all of them and stuffed them into the cloth bag.

As expected of an existence with a Supreme True Demon Life Soul. She sure is greedy and ruthless. Zhou Wen didn’t find it strange considering how Demonic Neonate dared to bite him and Xia Xuanyue before her death.

Zhou Wen saw Demonic Neonate pluck dozens of fruits from the tree. If the energy of a Longevity Fruit was at the peak of the Epic stage and close to the Mythical stage, these fruits would be impressive.

Demonic Neonate finished plucking all the Longevity Fruits and stuffed them into the large cloth bag before dragging it back. She placed it in front of Zhou Wen, indicating for him to help her put it away.

“Alright, alright. I’ll help you store it away now.” Zhou Wen picked up the cloth bag and threw it into his chaos space. He glanced at the bald Longevity Tree and thought to himself, I wonder when this Longevity Tree will grow new fruits. I’ll bring Demonic Neonate to pluck the fruits when that happens.

After putting away the items, Zhou Wen also unsummoned Demonic Neonate. At the same time, he launched the game on his phone and took a look at Demonic Neonate’s stats.

Demonic Neonate: Legendary (Evolvable)

Life Providence: Child of Dimension

Life Soul: Supreme True Demon

Wheel of Destiny: One Spin.

Strength: 21

Speed: 21

Constitution: 21

Essence Energy: 21

Talent Skill: Demonic Sword

Companion Form: None

Demonic Neonate's stats disappointed Zhou Wen. Apart from her stats increasing to 21, nothing else changed. It was identical to before.

How can this be? She's clearly so special. Why isn't there much difference between her and an ordinary Mythical creature after advancement? Zhou Wen looked over and felt that the problem was most likely her Wheel of Destiny.

The Wheel of Destiny of the other Mythical Creatures were all kinds of miracles. Even if it wasn't a strong Mythical creature like the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon, it still had the miraculous ability to take his place in death.

However, Demonic Neonate's Wheel of Destiny didn't seem to have any miraculous abilities. The words "One Spin" didn't explain anything.

Demonic Neonate had a Life Providence, Life Soul, and Wheel of Destiny from the beginning. This means that she has already evolved to the Mythical stage. However, for some reason, she has returned to the Mortal stage and needed to evolve again. According to the words of the Wheel of Destiny, would One Spin mean that she has re-evolved once? If that's the case, what benefits does it bring her to evolve again? Her Life Providence hasn't increased, and her stats haven't increased. If there are any benefits, they're likely to be on the Wheel of Destiny… Zhou Wen couldn't figure out why. He probably had to wait for her to advance to the Mythical stage before he knew what secrets her Wheel of Destiny had. All he could do was ignore it for now.

Even without a miracle, Demonic Neonate was already quite strong by relying only on the demonic sword.

After leaving the region where the Longevity Tree was, Zhou Wen passed through the Poison Bat Cave and arrived at the underground sea. He didn’t dare provoke the black dragon which pulled the wagon. The black dragon was bound, so it couldn’t catch up to him. Soon, Zhou Wen crossed the underground sea.

He arrived in front of the temple without any danger. After all, Zhou Wen had made countless runs of the Zhuolu underground ruins. Unless there was something that wasn’t in-game, nothing could harm him.

Upon arriving outside the temple, Zhou Wen saw the chariot. It was parked in front of the temple door and people were moving things.

Some of them were wearing military uniforms, while others were wearing ordinary exploration suits or companion beast armor. Judging from their ages, they must be the experts.

“Who’s there?” When Zhou Wen approached, they immediately discovered him. The soldiers all picked up their weapons and aimed at him.

“Battalion Commander Lu, it’s me,” Zhou Wen said when he saw someone he knew.

Lu Yunxian heard Zhou Wen’s voice and took a closer look. He recognized Zhou Wen and immediately said in delight, “It’s Young Master Wen. Lower your weapons. He’s one of us.”

Lu Yunxian had risked his life with Zhou Wen, so their relationship naturally wasn’t ordinary. He welcomed Zhou Wen over and said warmly, “Young Master Wen, why did you come here alone? Didn’t Adjutant An come with you?”

“No, Ah Sheng has something on and can’t come. I came by myself.” Zhou Wen looked at the temple entrance and asked, “How’s the situation inside?”

“It’s not very optimistic. The experts have studied it for a long time and determined some of Torch Dragon’s and Qiongqi’s skills. However, just knowing these skills doesn’t mean we can deal with them. We have attempted to use Companion Beasts to probe. Basically, they are instantly killed. Only some Companion Beasts that are slightly smaller than insects can live longer and obtain some information,” Lu Yunxian explained the situation to Zhou Wen.

“Battalion Commander Lu, this is?” An expert walked over and sized up Zhou Wen.

“Professor Lei, let me introduce you. This is Zhou Wen, Madam Lan’s son. Previously, it was all thanks to Young Master Wen for finding the stone artifact that we were able to open the temple’s door… Young Master Wen, this is Professor Lei Zhiguo, a folklore professor. Now, the research work of the temple is handled by Professor Lei,” Lu Yunxian introduced the two of them.

Lei Zhiguo nodded and said to Zhou Wen, “Zhou Wen, it’s too dangerous for you to walk through the cave passageway alone. Don’t go that way when you return. Go back on the chariot.”

Lei Zhiguo believed that Zhou Wen had come from the passageway Lord Alcohol and company had found, but he didn’t know that Zhou Wen had crossed the underground sea without the chariot.

“I don’t plan on returning. I want to enter the temple to take a look,” Zhou Wen said.

“That won’t do. We haven’t researched the situation inside the temple yet. It’s too dangerous to enter the temple,” Lei Zhiguo refused immediately.

“Didn’t we already conquer the front temple? I’ll just go there and take a look. There won’t be any danger.” Zhou Wen didn’t wish to create unnecessary trouble and planned on entering the temple first.

“Crossing the Aoyin stone statue requires sacrifices to appease it. It’s not easy to make a trip back and forth here. It’s also very troublesome to transport the offerings here. There aren’t many offerings left here, and there’s only enough for one use.” Lei Zhiguo still didn’t agree. He paused for a moment before saying, “If you really want to go in, just wait two more days. We’ll be doing the next round of research then. When the time comes, you can come with us.”

What Lei Zhiguo said was reasonable, but Zhou Wen wasn’t willing to wait another two days.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 564 - Folklore Exper

Chapter 564 Folklore Exper

“I’ll figure out a solution for the sacrifice myself. Battalion Commander Lu, please take me in to have a look,” Zhou Wen said to Lu Yunxian.

Before Lu Yunxian could say a word, Lei Zhiguo shook his head and said, “I’m in charge of this place. I have to ensure the safety of everyone here. If you wish to enter, you have to wait two more days. Otherwise, I will not give you permission to enter.”

Lei Zhiguo was just too stubborn. Zhou Wen and Lu Yunxian couldn’t convince him at all. Furthermore, he was the one in charge here, so Zhou Wen couldn’t barge his way in.

“Alright, I’ll wait another two days then.” Zhou Wen thought that although he had already killed the Torch Dragon youngling a few times on the way, killing it two more times to familiarize himself with the process wasn’t a bad thing. Therefore, he agreed to wait two days before following them into the temple.

Zhou Wen had recently farmed the Torch Dragon youngling, Medusa, and the Golden Battle God Halberd a few times, but the drop rate wasn’t as high as An Sheng had described. Most of the items dropped were stat crystals. Occasionally, an Essence Energy Skill Crystal would drop. Due to the limitations of his stats, Zhou Wen couldn’t use them nor take them out. All he could do was watch them disappear with each respawn.

Up to now, the Companion Egg that had dropped was only the Golden Battle God Halberd.

“Young Master Wen, the conditions here are rather poor. You can rest in my tent now.” Lu Yunxian took Zhou Wen into his tent.

Lu Yunxian didn’t have a tent for himself because space was limited. Typically, it was three people to a tent. Lu Yunxian’s tent originally had two people living in it, so it was perfect for Zhou Wen to stay there.

The two of them chatted for a while about what happened after they had parted previously. It was mainly Lu Yunxian speaking. Zhou Wen mostly listened silently.

Lu Yunxian had been stationed at the ruins all this while, having been responsible for cleaning up the dimensional creatures and protecting the experts.

Those comrades who had been with him previously had been transferred. Most of them were promoted and were deployed to other places.

As the two of them were chatting, a middle-aged man in his thirties walked in. Lu Yunxian introduced, “Young Master Wen, this is Professor Lei’s student, Qu Qingyun. He is also an expert in folklore. During his research on Torch Dragon and Qiongqi, he gave us quite a few valuable opinions.”

Lu Yunxian introduced Zhou Wen to Qu Qingyun. Qu Qingyun only said a few polite words before he went to bed. Clearly, he wasn’t interested in chatting with Zhou Wen.

Zhou Wen and Lu Yunxian didn’t wish to disturb him, so they went out of the tent for a stroll. They slept immediately after they returned.

The next day, when Zhou Wen and company woke up, they heard the commotion outside. They went out to take a look and saw that the logistics team had sent their supplies over. Everyone was busy moving things.

Qu Qingyun also walked out of the tent. When he saw someone in the logistics team, his eyes lit up. He went over with a smile. “Head Nurse Xu, why are you here alone? It’s so dangerous.”

“We got a batch of newly-made medicine which needs to be injected into the soldiers. I’m afraid that they will get the dosage wrong, so I came here myself,” Xu Wen said to Qu Qingyun. When she saw Lu Yunxian, she immediately saw Zhou Wen, who was standing beside Lu Yunxian. She immediately revealed a look of delight.

“Young Master Wen, when did you come to Zhuolu? Why didn’t I see you at the encampment?” Xu Wen quickly walked towards Zhou Wen and asked in pleasant surprise.

“I didn’t go to the encampment because I came straight to the ruins. I only wanted to take a look and leave, but I was delayed by some matters. I still need to stay for another two days,” Zhou Wen said.

“Young Master Wen, that’s not very nice of you. Since you’re here in Zhuolu, how can you not visit us?” Xu Wen and Lu Yunxian were the same. They had been through thick and thin with Zhou Wen, so their relationship with him wasn’t something ordinary comrades could compare with.

Qu Qingyun couldn’t help but frown when he saw how friendly Xu Wen was with Zhou Wen, but he didn’t say a word.

“Xu Wen, deliver the injections to the soldiers first. Young Master Wen will be here for two days. It won’t be too late to catch up later,” said Lu Yunxian with a smile.

“Alright, I’ll get back to work then. Young Master Wen, let’s have a good chat later.” Xu Wen returned to her work.

“Go ahead and busy yourself.” Zhou Wen’s mood improved significantly. To be able to meet such sincere friends in such a dark place made him feel better than getting a treasure.

Two days quickly passed. Zhou Wen had grinded the Torch Dragon youngling twice in this period of time. Although it was a harrowing experience each time, Zhou Wen was confident that he could kill it safely.

Professor Lei and company were already prepared. They brought Zhou Wen and entered the temple. Even Xu Wen followed Lu Yunxian in.

“The dangers in the temple are unimaginable. Remember not to act on your own. You must abide by the arrangements, or you will harm others and yourself.” Lei Zhiguo was a little worried about Zhou Wen as he repeatedly told him.

“I understand.” Zhou Wen agreed seriously.

Only then did Lei Zhiguo feel a little relieved. He was afraid that Zhou Wen was the kind of scion who would disregard everything just because of his temper. He had no idea that Zhou Wen’s understanding of the temple far exceeded his.

Under the lead of Lei Zhiguo and the other experts and professors, Zhou Wen and company finally headed for the passageway where the Aoyin stone statue was.

“Head Nurse Xu, the Aoyin stone statue is extremely evil. If you touch it, it will hurt people. Stay by my side. If there is any danger, I can protect you,” Qu Qingyun said as he walked beside Xu Wen.

Anyone could tell that Qu Qingyun was interested in Xu Wen.

Xu Wen shook her head slightly and said, “Mr. Qu, you must be joking. I’m a soldier. It’s my duty to protect you.”

Qu Qingyun smiled and said, “Outside, you are naturally the one protecting me. However, in such a place, many problems can’t be solved by brute force. I should be the one assuring you.”

He paused for a moment before saying, “Just like this Aoyin stone statue. Even if the Overseer personally came, I’m afraid he wouldn’t be able to do anything to it. A blood sacrifice is needed for safe passage…”

Qu Qingyun kept trying to show off, but he did not know that Xu Wen was not a woman who lacked a sense of security.

On the contrary, she was a qualified soldier. Qu Qingyun’s words were actually questioning her ability as a soldier. This naturally displeased Xu Wen. However, she didn’t say anything.

Lu Yunxian, who was walking at the back, whispered to Zhou Wen, “Qu Qingyun was born into a rich family. His family background isn’t inferior to the An family’s, and he’s rather talented. Unfortunately, he’s too conceited. He’s not the type Xu Wen likes. I’m afraid he’s just wasting his efforts.”

Zhou Wen nodded slightly. Even someone with a low EQ like him could tell that Xu Wen didn’t have a good impression of him.

When everyone arrived in front of the Aoyin stone statue, Lei Zhiguo got Qu Qingyun to use a living creature as an offering to the Aoyin stone statue. Zhou Wen naturally wasn’t unfamiliar with this method. He was the one who had informed An Sheng of the method.

“It’s done. Everyone, please come this way.” Qu Qingyun bowed to the Aoyin stone statue before heading towards the Qiongqi temple.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 565 - No Need for Offerings Anymore

Chapter 565 No Need for Offerings Anymore

Zhou Wen, who was walking behind, said to Lu Yunxian and Xu Wen, “I wish to visit Torch Dragon, so I won’t go with you to Qiongqi.”

“Let’s go with you,” Xu Wen said.

Although their conversation was very low, it still attracted Qu Qingyun’s attention.

“Didn’t Professor Lei say that you have to follow the arrangements and not walk around randomly? Are you sick of living?” When Qu Qingyun spoke, Professor Lei and the rest turned around and looked at them.

“What’s going on?” Professor Lei came over and asked.

“Professor Lei, I’m here to see the Torch Dragon temple. I won’t be going to the Qiongqi temple. Now that there’s an offering, it shouldn’t be a problem to go anywhere, right?” Zhou Wen said.

Professor Lei said, “Although that’s true in theory, the temple is very strange. Anything can happen. It’s best if we act separately. If anything happens, we can still collectively think of a solution. Why don’t we go to the Torch Dragon temple after our work is over?”

Zhou Wen shook his head and said, “Those offerings just now can only last less than an hour. When you return from the Qiongqi temple, I’m afraid there won’t be much time left. I’ll go on my own. I’ll just take a look. Nothing will happen.”

“Don’t pretend to know what you don’t. The offerings we offered can last for at least two hours. If you don’t understand anything, don’t spout nonsense.” Qu Qingyun laughed coldly.

“More than two hours? Professor Lei, is that true?” Zhou Wen ignored Qu Qingyun’s sarcasm and asked Professor Lei with a frown.

“That’s right. For safety reasons, the offerings we provide each time will be enough to last for more than two hours. And our working hours must be controlled to be within one and a half hours. Today, we can end work earlier and take you to the Torch Dragon temple to have a look,” Professor Lei said.

“Professor Lei, I think it’s best if you examine the offerings again. I’m certain that your offerings can only last for an hour at most. If you really wish to stay in there for an hour and a half, I’m afraid it’ll be very difficult for you to come out alive,” Zhou Wen said seriously.

Qu Qingyun sneered and said, “The quantity of the offerings were carefully calculated. It has never gone wrong. As a layman, how can you be so sure?”

The offerings were personally placed by Qu Qingyun. Therefore, wasn’t Zhou Wen’s claim that there was something wrong with the offerings indirectly implying that Qu Qingyun had made a mistake?

Xu Wen couldn’t help but speak up for Zhou Wen. “Young Master Wen isn’t someone who speaks without reason. He definitely has his reasons for saying that there’s a problem.”

“What’s the logic behind this? Could it be that the results of our expert plans are wrong?” Qu Qingyun said disdainfully.

Professor Lei pondered for a moment before asking, “Zhou Wen, why did you say that the offerings can only last for an hour?”

“Professor Lei, the blood you used was obtained from the Poison Bat, right?” Zhou Wen asked after some thought.

“That’s right. In the past, we used living sacrifices. Later on, we discovered that it was also possible to use fresh blood. Because it was too difficult to capture the Poison Bats alive, we switched to using blood. The amount used is calculated precisely, so mistakes usually do not happen,” Professor Lei said.

“There’s nothing wrong with the quantity, but there’s something wrong with the blood. The bat’s blood isn’t pure and has been mixed with other things. Therefore, the time it can last will be much shorter than you expected.” After Zhou Wen said that, he looked at Lu Yunxian and said, “Yunxian, this shouldn’t be a coincidence. Check everyone related to this matter carefully. It might be that someone had tampered with it.”

“What gives you the right to say that there’s a problem?” Qu Qingyun still felt that Zhou Wen was being unreasonable because Professor Lei hadn’t allowed him to go to the Torch Dragon temple.

“Zhou Wen, how did you know that there’s something else mixed in the bat’s blood? This is a very serious problem,”

Professor Lei asked Zhou Wen with a heavy expression.

“Professor Lei, was it Adjutant An who told you about using a live sacrifice?” Zhou Wen asked.

“Yes.” Professor Lei nodded.

“I told Adjutant An the method,” Zhou Wen said.

“You really dare to say anything. How many times have you come to the temple? How dare you say that you discovered the method of the live sacrifices? Why don’t you just say that you have found a way to kill the Mythical creatures?” Qu Qingyun pouted.

“This matter is of paramount importance, but the blood has already been absorbed by the Aoyin stone statue. There’s no way to test it now.” Professor Lei looked at the Aoyin stone statue and pondered for a moment before saying, “Safety first. Since Zhou Wen said there’s a problem with the blood, let’s temporarily cancel the research.”

“Teacher, why do you have to listen to a layman like him spout nonsense? We have used it so many times with no problems. Why would there be a problem with the blood the moment he’s here? Isn’t this nonsense? Wasting the offerings this time and retrieving the bat’s blood again will take a few days. We can’t do a thing for the next few days.” Qu Qingyun said unhappily.

Professor Lei insisted, “Safety first. Since there are doubts, we can’t take the risk regardless of whether it’s true or not.”

Since Professor Lei had already said so, what else could Qu Qingyun say? He could only feel frustrated.

“Since you said that the offerings can last for about an hour and we have given up our plans for today, let’s go to the Torch Dragon temple to take a look. We can return in about ten minutes. Even if there’s a problem with the blood, it won’t hinder us,” Professor Lei said to Zhou Wen.

Zhou Wen thought to himself, I’m going to kill Torch Dragon. If I take you along, I’m afraid Torch Dragon will be able to kill all of you in one breath.

“Professor Lei, I think it’s best you head to the Qiongqi temple. I’ll go to the Torch Dragon temple myself,” Zhou Wen said to Professor Lei.

Qu Qingyun retorted angrily, “You were the one who said that there’s something wrong with the offerings. You are also the one who said we shouldn’t go. Now, you are also the one saying we should go. You are basically playing every possible role!”

Professor Lei frowned and said, “If what you said is true, the offerings can only maintain the passage for less than an hour. Our preparatory work already takes half an hour. There’s no point in going.”

Zhou Wen didn’t say a word as he looked at the Aoyin stone statue and walked in front of it.

No one knew what he was trying to do as they looked at him. Qu Qingyun opened his mouth to say something, but before he could say anything, he saw Zhou Wen standing in front of the Aoyin stone statue. Wielding the Bamboo Blade in hand, he suddenly unsheathed it.

Everyone was shocked. It wasn’t that they hadn’t tried to destroy the Aoyin stone statue, but the result was a terrible loss.

Inside the temple, the Aoyin stone statue was strengthened by some kind of power. Despite being attacked by several Epic Companion Beasts, it could devour all of them.

If Zhou Wen were to alarm the Aoyin stone statue, they would probably die.

Someone had already opened their mouth to stop Zhou Wen, but before they could say anything, the Bamboo Blade in Zhou Wen’s hand flashed and returned to its scabbard.

Boom!

Professor Lei was shocked. The Aoyin stone statue split into two and collapsed on both sides.

“There’s no need for any offerings for the time being,” Zhou Wen said as he took two steps back.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 566 - Killing Torch Dragon

Chapter 566 Killing Torch Dragon

“Yunxian, you should stay here instead. Let’s investigate the problem with the blood offering first. Before we figure it out, don’t let anyone leave the temple. Also, find some reliable people to protect Professor Lei and company. Don’t let others have a chance of sneaking an attack,” Zhou Wen said to Lu Yunxian.

“Yes, Young Master Wen. I’ll do it now.” Lu Yunxian saluted and left.

Professor Lei and company still hadn’t reacted. Zhou Wen’s splitting of the Aoyin stone statue had shocked them greatly.

“Professor Lei, when Yunxian comes again, you can head to the Qiongqi Temple. Xu Wen, come with me.” Zhou Wen walked towards the passageway to the Torch Dragon temple.

Xu Wen hurriedly followed, leaving Professor Lei and the rest standing there looking at each other.

“I’ve only heard of Zhou Wen causing trouble for the An family in the past, causing the relationship between the An family and the Federation’s upper echelons to worsen. From the looks of it, the rumors are unreliable. The An family’s protection of him does make sense. He should still be in school, right?” Professor Lei sighed as he looked at the two halves of the Aoyin stone statue.

“I heard that he’s only in his freshman year,” another professor said.

“That makes him only seventeen or eighteen years old. To have such achievements at this age, if he were in my Lei family, we would be even more protective of him than the An family,” Professor Lei said.

Qu Qingyun snorted coldly. “He’s Wang Mingyuan’s disciple. Who knows what he has done in private? Otherwise, how could a student produce such achievements?”

Professor Lei glanced at Qu Qingyun and said meaningfully, “Qingyun, as researchers, the greatest taboo is to let our emotions affect our judgment.”

Qu Qingyun’s expression changed slightly when he heard that, but he quickly calmed down. He said respectfully, “Teacher is right. I know what to do.”

“Everyone, let’s rest for a while. When Battalion Commander Lu brings his men over, we’ll head to the Qiongqi temple again. Now that there are no restrictions from the Aoyin stone statue, we can work for longer periods. We have to replan our working arrangements…” Professor Lei picked up a notebook and began studying it.

Zhou Wen led Xu Wen into the passageway to the Torch Dragon temple. After walking for a short distance, he stopped and said to Xu Wen, “Help me guard this place. No matter what happens inside, no matter what you hear, don’t come in. Don’t let anyone pass. Do you understand?”

“Young Master Wen, what are you going to do?” Xu Wen was alarmed. She immediately knew that Zhou Wen’s trip wasn’t as simple as taking a look at the Torch Dragon temple.

“To kill Torch Dragon.” Zhou Wen didn’t hide it from her. He couldn’t hide it either. With that said, he headed for the tunnel.

Xu Wen was taken aback. By the time she reacted, Zhou Wen had already walked into the tunnel.

Although he had been in the game countless times, he had a different feeling coming here in real life.

After all, he wasn’t in-game. If he made any mistakes, he might die.

Standing in front of the temple’s metal door, Zhou Wen took a deep breath and closed his eyes, allowing his body and mind to calm down. It wasn’t to adjust himself to an optimal state, but to make himself treat what lay ahead normally.

If one needed to use 120% of their abilities to complete something, it would be a gamble. As for Zhou Wen, he didn’t need to gamble. As long as he completed what he needed to do like he always did, he could obtain the results he wanted.

When he opened his eyes, Zhou Wen had already calmed down. He summoned his armor and Six-Winged and was prepared to release the other crystal mirror at any time.

With the Golden Battle God Halberd in hand, Zhou Wen pushed open the temple’s door.

With the creaking sound of the metal door being pushed open, Zhou Wen saw the snake-like Torch Dragon youngling inside. It was even more ferocious and terrifying than in-game. It was also bigger and more oppressive.

Amidst the swirling poisonous smoke, Torch Dragon opened its mouth and spewed out billowing poisonous smoke.

The six wings on its back flapped as Zhou Wen circled behind Torch Dragon at an unbelievable speed. Torch Dragon swept its tail out, but everything was within Zhou Wen’s

control. His body moved in a perfect trajectory, dodging Torch Dragon’s repeated attacks before he finally approached it.

The Golden Battle God Halberd stabbed into its scales with Golden Divine Light. Blood immediately gushed out from where the Golden Battle God Halberd hit as Torch Dragon let out a terrifying cry.

In an instant, rows of lanterns-like eyes lit up on its body. Their eyes reflected light like mirrors, illuminating the entire metallic temple.

The six wings on Zhou Wen’s back and the Golden Battle God Halberd in his hand were immediately unsummoned. The power of the Bright Torch Vision World shone on his armor and was reflected by the mirror, preventing him from being sucked into the vision world.

With his experience in-game, Zhou Wen knew very well that the next minute was the most critical period. As long as he could withstand this one minute, the Torch Dragon youngling would enter a weakened state. It would be incapable of using the Bright Torch Vision World again and all its assortment of skills would be greatly weakened. That would give him the confidence to kill Torch Dragon.

However, this one minute was difficult even in-game. He had to ensure that he didn’t make any mistakes.

He activated Transcendent Flying Immortal not to kill the enemy, but to escape. Zhou Wen’s speed was raised to the limit as he dodged behind a metal pillar. His every move had been carefully calculated and he knew the optimum way to stall for time.

The Torch Dragon youngling chased after him with all its might and circled around the metal pillar. The beams of monstrous lights shot out from the eyes like laser beams that crisscrossed in the temple.

Without any pause, he constantly moved. With the help of the metal pillar in the metallic temple, Zhou Wen dodged the Torch Dragon youngling's lethal attack time and time again.

As time passed, Zhou Wen remained calm. He knew that he was getting closer and closer to killing the Torch Dragon youngling.

...

Lu Yunxian quickly brought his men over and arranged for them to protect Professor Lei and company. Although it was a form of protection, it was actually a form of surveillance.

This was because those who could tamper with the blood would likely be Professor Lei and the others after excluding the ones who obtained the blood and transported it.

Although it didn't seem likely for them to do that since they had to enter too, who knew if someone among them would find an excuse to leave early?

Therefore, while protecting them, he also had to prevent any spies from harming them.

Lu Yunxian arranged his men and ran over to see Zhou Wen.

However, just as he reached the tunnel, he saw Xu Wen standing alone at the entrance. "Why are you here? Where's Young Master Wen?"

“Young Master Wen went in,” Xu Wen said.

“Why didn’t you go in with him?” Lu Yunxian felt that something was amiss.

“Young Master Wen didn’t allow me to enter. He also said that no one is allowed in. He wants to kill Torch Dragon,” Xu Wen answered truthfully.

Lu Yunxian’s expression changed drastically. “Why didn’t you stop him? You should know how terrifying Torch Dragon is. Although Young Master Wen is very strong, his chances of survival are still very slim when facing a creature like Torch Dragon…”

As Lu Yunxian spoke, he heard a sharp cry from the Torch Dragon temple.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 567 - Metal Block

Chapter 567 Metal Block

“That’s bad; something’s really happened.” Lu Yunxian rushed into the tunnel without any hesitation.

“Young Master Wen said that no matter what happens, we can’t go in…” Xu Wen pulled Lu Yunxian back.

“Do you have any idea what’s happening now? If Young Master Wen dies inside, how are we going to answer to Adjutant An and Overseer An? Furthermore, Young Master Wen saved our lives.” Lu Yunxian shook off Xu Wen and rushed in.

Xu Wen gritted her teeth and charged in as well. She couldn’t be bothered anymore.

As the two of them rushed over, they heard terrifying screams and rumbling crashing. They were even more worried. From the sounds, the dragon was probably enraged.

Terrifying sounds and collisions echoed in the tunnel. Even Professor Lei, who was setting up various equipment, heard them.

“Oh no, it’s Torch Dragon. It has been stirred. Could Zhou Wen have opened the Torch Dragon temple’s door?” Professor Lei’s expression changed as he immediately ran over.

Qu Qingyun gloated when he heard that. “That Zhou Wen is so arrogant. He must have thought that he’s amazing and

opened the door to the Torch Dragon temple.”

As researchers, they knew very well that Torch Dragon was a true Mythical creature. It wasn’t something Aoyin could compare with. It was almost certain death. They had already sacrificed many Epic Companion Beasts in their attempts to kill it.

When Professor Lei and company ran back to the three forks where the Aoyin stone statue was, Torch Dragon’s sharp cries suddenly stopped.

Lu Yunxian and Xu Wen had already run to the Torch Dragon temple and saw the gigantic Torch Dragon inside. This was the first time they had seen it with their own eyes.

Although they knew that Torch Dragon was inside, they weren’t the ones who personally saw Torch Dragon. Instead, it was the Companion Beasts they had placed inside.

At that moment, they saw Torch Dragon’s body. Its massive body and ferocious aura gave them immense pressure.

In front of Torch Dragon, they felt as tiny as ants.

However, in front of Torch Dragon was a man wearing silver mirror-like armor. He had six holy white flaming dragon wings on his back. He held a golden trident in his hand as he levitated in front of Torch Dragon.

And on Torch Dragon’s body, there were bloody wounds everywhere. The most terrifying part was that blood gushed out like a fountain from its head.

Boom!

In front of the god-like figure, Torch Dragon collapsed to the ground, dead. Blood flowed everywhere in the temple.

However, the figure floating above Torch Dragon looked spotless. Its body emitted a holy glow.

After a long pause, Lu Yunxian gulped and asked in disbelief, “Young… Young Master Wen… Is that you?”

“Why are you here? Didn’t I tell you not to enter?” Zhou Wen was certain that Torch Dragon was dead. He unsummoned his Companion Beasts and revealed his body.

“Sorry, it’s my fault.” Xu Wen hurriedly apologized.

“It’s nothing. Since you’re here, help me look around. Is there anything in this temple left behind by the former principal and company?” Zhou Wen had searched the Torch Dragon temple in-game, but he hadn’t found any other way out. If the former principal and company really came here, they would probably leave something behind unless they were eaten clean by Torch Dragon.

For example, paper, backpacks, or instruments. No matter how good Torch Dragon’s appetite was, it probably wouldn’t eat those things.

As for Lu Yunxian and Xu Wen, Zhou Wen didn’t let them come in because he was afraid that they would die when Torch Dragon used the Bright Torch Vision World. Now that Torch Dragon was dead, it didn’t matter if Lu Yunxian and Xu Wen entered.

Lu Yunxian and Xu Wen hurriedly searched the Torch Dragon temple with Zhou Wen.

All his attention had been focused on Torch Dragon, preventing him from observing the temple. Now, Zhou Wen carefully sized up the temple and realized that the layout and decorations were the same as in-game.

However, the game was cartoonish and this place looked even more real. There were metal pillars and metal carvings everywhere, as well as some metal statues.

The carvings depicted monsters. For example, the ChiMeiWangliang that Zhou Wen had encountered outside had its image engraved on the metal wall.

There were many other monsters that Zhou Wen couldn’t name.

This wasn’t the main point of Zhou Wen’s observation. He wanted to find something, even if it was a skeleton, a piece of tattered cloth, or even a piece of paper.

However, there was nothing in the temple. Apart from the metal items, there was nothing else.

Zhou Wen had mixed feelings. He couldn’t see the former principal and company’s belongings. It was possible that they had been swallowed by Torch Dragon, but it was also possible that they hadn’t come here. Therefore, there was still some hope. However, this hope was even more torturous.

“Young Master Wen, if you only look at it with your naked eye, you won’t be able to see any problems. I wish to use some equipment and the powers of our Companion Beasts to examine the area. Perhaps we can discover something.” Lu Yunxian looked around the temple before saying to Zhou Wen. Clearly, he hadn’t discovered anything.

“Alright, go and prepare.” Zhou Wen nodded.

“Xu Wen, help Young Master Wen look around and see if Torch Dragon dropped any Companion Eggs and crystals. If there are, get Young Master Wen to put them away. In a while, there will be too many people and it will inevitably be troublesome,” Lu Yunxian told Xu Wen before leaving.

Xu Wen agreed and went to investigate Torch Dragon’s corpse.

Zhou Wen knew that the chances of Torch Dragon dropping a Companion Egg were very low, so he didn’t deliberately search for it. He just carefully observed the temple and compared it to his memories in-game.

Suddenly, Zhou Wen discovered something. It was identical to the metallic style of the temple. It seemed to be something from the temple, but Zhou Wen had never seen it in-game.

Zhou Wen walked to the side of the temple and saw a metal artifact. It looked cubic like a metal block. It wasn’t too big and was about the size of a brick. Its color was the same as the metallic color of the palace. It was bluish-black.

This metal piece was placed above the head of a monster statue. The metal statue looked like a lion, a tiger, but nothing like them either. However, it looked like a legendary Qilin.

Zhou Wen had seen this statue in-game, but he had never seen the metal piece on its head.

He reached out to push the metal block and realized that it wasn’t one with the statue. It was very easy for him to push

it. Zhou Wen took it down and found it rather heavy. It was likely much heavier than a gold block of the same size.

The surface of the metal piece was very smooth and there was nothing on it. Zhou Wen flipped to the side to take a look, but there was nothing. However, when he flipped to the bottom, he realized that there was something different. There were a few carvings on the metal surface, splitting the metal into nine parts.

Zhou Wen seemed to have seen such a nine-part setup somewhere before. On careful thought, he immediately recalled that in Qin Xiyuan’s shop, the chained silver-haired Companion Beast was connected to a metal block. The metal block had a similar nine-number keypad.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 568 - Torch Dragon Egg

Chapter 568 Torch Dragon Egg

However, the metal block that chained the strange person was many times bigger than this one. Furthermore, there were numbers on the nine-key pad. There were no numbers on the tiny metal block here. Each box was blank.

Zhou Wen thought for a moment and stored the metal piece into the chaos space. He planned on studying it when he returned.

“Young Master Wen… A Companion Egg… It’s Torch Dragon’s Companion Egg…” Xu Wen suddenly said in pleasant surprise.

Zhou Wen was just about to examine the temple again, to see if there was anything else that was different from the game, when he heard Xu Wen’s voice. He couldn’t help but be taken aback. He turned his head and saw Xu Wen holding a soccer-ball-sized crystal in her hand. It seemed to have billions of starlights circulating in it. It looked beautiful and surreal.

“Young Master Wen, quickly put it away. It’s best not to let others see it.” Xu Wen handed the Companion Egg to Zhou Wen.

Zhou Wen took the Companion Egg and looked at it. He couldn’t help but sigh inwardly. I’ve grinded so many times

in-game, but nothing dropped. I never expected it to drop in real life.

…

Outside the tunnel, Professor Lei and company couldn’t hear anything anymore. They were guessing what was happening inside.

From the looks of it, Zhou Wen should have been killed by Torch Dragon. Qu Qingyun gloated inwardly, but he said, “Teacher, Zhou Wen is probably doomed. How do we explain this to Overseer An?”

Professor Lei was also feeling vexed. The An family definitely placed great importance on a cultivation genius like Zhou Wen. Although this matter had nothing to do with him, he was still in charge here. He ultimately had to bear some responsibility.

“Let’s head over to take a look first.” Professor Lei summoned his Companion Beast and planned on figuring out the situation to see if Zhou Wen could be saved.

Although the chances were slim, he had to give it a try.

“There’s really no need. Sending Companion Beasts over is just sending them to their deaths for nothing,” said Qu Qingyun.

Professor Lei was about to say something when he saw someone rush out of the tunnel. It was Lu Yunxian.

“Commander Lu, how’s the situation inside? Zhou Wen didn’t enter the Torch Dragon temple, did he?” Professor Lei hurriedly asked when he saw Lu Yunxian come out.

“Young Master Wen is in the temple,” Lu Yunxian answered.

“It’s over.” When Professor Lei heard Lu Yunxian say that, he felt that Zhou Wen was definitely dead.

“Professor Lei, where’s your scanning equipment? Bring it with you. Follow me to the Torch Dragon temple,” Lu Yunxian said.

“What’s the use of taking in the equipment? Those instruments can only be used to gather data, not save someone,” Qu Qingyun said with a twitch of his lips.

Lu Yunxian said with a smile, “Who are you saving? Young Master Wen has killed Torch Dragon. Hurry up and bring the equipment over. Check the interior of the temple carefully and see if there are any traces left behind by Old Mister Ouyang and the others.”

“What?” Professor Lei and the others thought that something was wrong with their ears.

“Battalion Commander Lu, are you joking with us?” A professor looked at Lu Yunxian in disbelief.

“What do you mean joking? Young Master Wen is waiting for you in the temple. Quickly bring the equipment and follow me,” Lu Yunxian said.

Professor Lei and company were doubtful, but seeing that Lu Yunxian didn’t seem to be joking, they could only gather their equipment and follow him to the Torch Dragon temple.

When they arrived outside the Torch Dragon temple and saw the massive body lying in a pool of blood, everyone was dumbfounded.

They had studied the area for months, but they had never seen Torch Dragon in person. Now, they had seen it with their own eyes, but Torch Dragon had already turned into a corpse.

Qu Qingyun’s expression was even more thoughtful, as if he couldn’t believe it. He was also somewhat horrified.

Zhou Wen looked back and forth at the temple several times. After confirming that it wasn’t different from in-game, he left the temple and handed it over to Professor Lei, Lu Yunxian, and company to deal with it. He returned to the encampment and waited for their results.

Although many electronic devices couldn’t be used in Zhuolu, there were still some more rather practical investigative methods that could be used. For example, blood tests, fingerprint tests, etc.

Some tiny skin tissues could be collected and tested.

The entire team did a carpet sweep of the area. Since Zhou Wen couldn’t do anything, he had to just wait for the results.

…

In Luoyang’s An family, An Sheng had just returned to the office. Just as he was reporting the hatching of his Companion Egg to An Tianzuo, the phone on his desk suddenly rang.

An Tianzuo gestured slightly and An Sheng answered the call.

“What?” An Sheng widened his eyes in shock after hearing a few words.

An Tianzuo frowned slightly as he waited for An Sheng to put down the phone before asking him, “What happened?”

“Young Master Wen… He went to the Zhuolu ruins…” An Sheng put down the phone and said to An Tianzuo with a look of shock.

“What did he do?” An Tianzuo asked with a frown. From An Sheng’s expression, he knew that it wasn’t as simple as going to the ruins. Something must have happened.

“Young Master Wen… He… He… entered the Torch Dragon temple…” An Sheng said with a pained expression.

“Nonsense… What are Lu Yunxian and Professor Lei doing? How could they let him into the temple?” An Tianzuo immediately slammed the table and asked, “How is he now? Is he dead?”

“Dead,” An Sheng whispered.

An Tianzuo sat down on a chair and said through gritted teeth, “That bastard. How can I answer to the person at home? Does he think he’s a hero? What a bullsh*t hero. He’s just an ignorant boor. Does he think his life belongs to him? Thinking he can do whatever he wants. He doesn’t take anyone seriously and is selfish…”

An Sheng hadn’t seen An Tianzuo so angry in a long time. He realized that he had gone overboard.

“That… Overseer… I mean… Torch Dragon is dead…” An Sheng carefully said when An Tianzuo finally stopped.

An Tianzuo was taken aback. After a while, he stared at An Sheng and said, “What did you say? Say it again?”

“It was news from Zhuolu that Young Master Wen killed Torch Dragon. They have already entered the Torch Dragon temple to begin testing. They haven’t found anything yet,” An Sheng said.

An Tianzuo looked at An Sheng and his expression gradually turned cold. “Ah Sheng, it looks like you like you have become rather carefree recently.”

“Overseer, I was stunned by the news of Torch Dragon’s death. I couldn’t think straight. It really wasn’t intentional.” An Sheng immediately felt that things were going south.

“Since you are so carefree, go and guard Chess Mountain. You are not allowed to return without my orders,” said An Tianzuo coldly.

“Do I have a choice?” An Sheng said with a bitter expression.

“What do you think?” An Tianzuo said coldly.

“Yes, I’ll be setting off for Chess Mountain immediately.” An Sheng stood straight and saluted, but he didn’t go out. He said, “Something strange happened over there as well. The blood they used to sacrifice to the Aoyin stone statue seemed to have been tampered with.”

…

Zhou Wen returned to his tent and took out the metal piece he had obtained from the temple to study it. Apart from being a little smaller, it looked very similar to the things that chained the silver-haired Companion Beast.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 569 - Password Box

Chapter 569 Password Box

Zhou Wen tried using the mysterious phone’s camera function to snap the metal block, but there was no reaction. Clearly, he couldn’t store it on his phone.

Zhou Wen tried pressing the nine keys again and realized that although it didn’t sink, there seemed to be a glimmer.

These grids can’t really be buttons, right? Zhou Wen pressed a few other keys. As long as the pressure reached a certain level, each grid would emit a flash.

Could it be that this metal block is really a box with a code? Then what’s the code? Could it be the ten numbers the former principal gave me? Zhou Wen thought for a moment and felt that something was amiss.

There were no numbers on the nine-key grid. Even if the ten numbers given by the former principal were really the passcode, he didn’t know which one corresponded to 1 or 9.

Typically, numbers are arranged in order. 123 is the first row. 456 is the second row. 789 is the third row. However, the nine-key grid is a square. I don’t know which orientation is the first row. Zhou Wen thought for a moment and felt that he could give it a try.

If it was really arranged in order, he should be able to get results from making a few tries.

Therefore, Zhou Wen tried using the ten-digit code. 5156942730. He remembered this number very clearly, but he soon realized that something was amiss.

As the grid only had nine buttons, and with one of the ten numbers being zero, there was no way to press this zero.

It doesn’t work at all. From the looks of it, I’m overthinking things. Zhou Wen looked at the metal piece and suddenly recalled that he had seen a similar grid on the metal block that chained the silver-haired Companion Beast. However, there were numbers on that grid.

Zhou Wen carefully recalled what numbers were on the grid.

Thankfully, he had quite a good memory. Back then, he had looked at it carefully, so he quickly recalled it. He remembered that the numbers weren’t arranged according to the order, but were seemingly random.

249… 715… 603… I remember that the numbers on the metal block should be distributed in this way. Strange, there’s no 8 in the grid. Zhou Wen’s heart stirred as he thought of the ten-digit code. Indeed, there was no number 8.

Although this didn’t mean anything, Zhou Wen suddenly felt that he could give it a try.

If the numbers on this small metal block are the same as the large metal block, then I should press it this way. Zhou Wen followed the numbers in his memory and pressed the ten-digit code, but the metal block didn’t react.

Zhou Wen spun the grid clockwise ninety degrees before continuing his attempts. After he pressed the tenth button, he suddenly heard a very soft click.

He was immediately delighted and hurriedly looked at the metal piece. Indeed, there was a crack on the side of it. With a gentle twist, the metal piece split into two.

It was different from the box Zhou Wen imagined. The metal piece was almost solid. Only in the middle was a circular crystal that was about the size of a small coin.

After the metal piece cracked, the crystal fell out and landed on the table.

The crystal was transparent, but there were many silver spots of light inside. They resembled countless swirling galaxies. It was extremely beautiful.

Zhou Wen picked up the crystal and took a careful look. It was slightly cold, but there weren't any special energy fluctuations from it. On the side he saw, there was a symbol of an anchor engraved on it.

Zhou Wen wasn't unfamiliar with the anchor symbol. He had seen it a few times before. A similar tattoo was on the large metal piece and Gu Dian also had a similar tattoo.

However, the symbol of the anchor was slightly different. There was no woman's side profile on it. It was just a simple anchor symbol.

Perhaps it's just a coincidence? Zhou Wen thought as he flipped the crystal over to take a look. He couldn't help but be stunned when he saw it.

The crystal looked transparent, but when he turned around, he realized that it wasn't the case. There was a woman's head engraved on this side. It was her side profile and she looked extremely beautiful. It was identical to the one Zhou Wen had seen on the anchor symbol.

It’s really related, but what’s the use of this item that looks like a commemorative coin? Why did the former principal tell me the passcode to the box? Why didn’t he give me the box or the crystal coin? If I hadn’t seen the metal block that chains the silver-haired Companion Beast, or if I didn’t come here to obtain the small metal block, it wouldn’t be of any use even if I had the passcode. Countless thoughts flashed through Zhou Wen’s mind, but the more he thought about it, the more suspicious he became.

From the looks of it, I won’t be able to answer these questions unless I find the former principal. I wonder what use this crystal coin has? Zhou Wen studied it for a while, but he failed to find any use for it. All he could do was put it back into the metal block.

When the cracked metal pieces were placed together, it immediately seemed to have a powerful magnetic force that firmly sucked both parts together. Even the gap in the middle could not be seen.

Zhou Wen used his hand to try to pry it open a few times, but it remained solid, as though there was no gap.

This metal block sure is magical. I wonder if the large metal block that chains the silver-haired Companion Beast can be opened with the passcode. Although Zhou Wen felt that it was very likely, he didn’t plan on attempting it.

After putting the metal piece into the chaos space, Zhou Wen was about to take out the Torch Dragon Companion Egg to try hatching it when he suddenly heard someone walk into the tent.

“Young Master Wen, someone has arrived at the encampment. He wants to see you immediately. Adjutant An wants to talk to you,” Lu Yunxian said as he entered.

“Got it. How’s the investigation of the blood offerings?” Zhou Wen asked casually.

“We’re still investigating. There were more than twenty people involved, but we are investigating every one of them. We haven’t found anything yet. Adjutant An said that he will personally investigate this matter. Before he comes, none of the people related to this matter can leave,” Lu Yunxian said.

Zhou Wen was relieved when he heard that An Sheng was personally investigating the matter.

He took the chariot with Xu Wen, who was on her way back, and left the underground ruins. After returning to the encampment, Zhou Wen’s phone finally received a signal.

Before he could call An Sheng, An Sheng had already called. “Young Master Wen, didn’t you agree to wait for me to come back? Why didn’t you wait for me? It’s such a huge contribution. It’s really sad that you took all the credit alone.”

“Weren’t you hatching the Mythical pet? I just didn’t want you to be distracted,” Zhou Wen said with a smile.

“Young Master Wen, you have to remember to take me with you next time if there’s something this good. Look at how hard I’ve worked for so many years. Now, I’m only an adjutant. I also want to make a contribution. I want to be promoted. The next time you go to the Qiongqi temple, you have to take me along. Now that I have Love Letter, I should be able to help you,” An Sheng said.

“Alright, I’ll definitely take you with me next time.” Zhou Wen knew that An Sheng was joking. Although An Sheng was only an adjutant and his official position wasn’t high, his

actual power was immense. He could be said to be a true figure of power in the Sunset army.

An Sheng said this mainly because he didn’t wish for Zhou Wen to take the risk alone.

“Did Torch Dragon drop anything good?” Since he got his intent across, An Sheng didn’t say anything else.

“A Companion Egg,” Zhou Wen answered.

“Young Master Wen, you’re really lucky. Over the past few years, Overseer has also killed some Mythical creatures. However, his luck with Companion Eggs isn’t that good. When you went with us to kill Love Letter, a Companion Egg dropped. Now that you killed Torch Dragon, another Companion Egg has dropped. You’re just so lucky. If I were to kill Mythical creatures again, Young Master Wen, you have to help me,” An Sheng said with a smile.

Zhou Wen thought to himself, My luck is good? Joke’s on you. I’ve killed countless Mythical creatures in-game, but none of them dropped Companion Eggs.

“By the way, Young Master Wen, we’ve obtained some information regarding the cube’s ranking,” An Sheng said solemnly.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 570 - Top Mythical

Chapter 570 Top Mythical

“Currently, there are internal rumors amongst the six families that as long as a Companion Beast enters the rankings, they will have a chance of being further improved in the future,” An Sheng said.

“What do you mean by further improved? Enhanced?” Zhou Wen remembered that The Thearch had told him that only the first Companion Egg on the rankings would obtain the opportunity to be enhanced.

“I don’t know. The rumors are all over the place right now. It’s difficult to determine their authenticity. However, the Xia, Zhang, and Dugu families already have Mythical Companion Beasts on the rankings. Furthermore, there are also some unknown Companion Beasts on the rankings. Haven’t you realized that your Six-Winged Guardian Dragon’s ranking has dropped?” An Sheng asked.

“I really didn’t notice that.” Zhou Wen had no time to pay attention to those things. He had been studying how to kill Torch Dragon.

“Your Six-Winged’s ranking has already dropped to fifth place. The number one pet is no longer the Death of the Underworld. It has been replaced by a Companion Beast named Primordial Sword Immortal. Death of the Underworld is second, Genie is third, Frost Giant is fourth, and your Six-Winged Guardian Dragon is fifth. There are already more than thirty Companion Beasts on the rankings. The number

one Primordial Sword Immortal doesn’t seem to belong to the six families. We haven’t found out who it belongs to. The six families have a real headache now. The number of Companion Beasts that aren’t from the six families on the rankings has increased significantly.” An Sheng explained the situation to Zhou Wen in detail.

“Why didn’t you let Love Letter give it a try?” Zhou Wen didn’t care much about the ranking. After all, it was only a ranking for humanity’s Companion Beasts. Compared to dimensional creatures, humans were still too weak. Just thirty Mythical Companion Beasts were nothing in the massive dimensional Mythical system.

“It doesn’t make a difference even if I put it up on the rankings. The current rankings definitely aren’t final. There are still many Companion Beasts from the six families that haven’t been placed. The truly powerful ones haven’t shown up. Furthermore, the bigwigs from all over the world might not be as rich as the six families, but they should have some Mythical pets. When the time comes, the rankings will definitely exceed a hundred entries. Even if my Love Letter gets on the rankings now, it’ll drop out sooner or later.”

After a pause, An Sheng said, “On the other hand, if you obtain the Torch Dragon Companion Beast, quickly hatch it. Its ranking will definitely be very high. It might even have a chance of reaching first place. Rumor has it that the higher the ranking, the greater the opportunities in the future. However, you have to be careful. The stronger a Mythical Companion Beast is, the harder it is to hatch. It might even kill you. I have a few ways to hatch a Mythical Companion Beast. I’ll send you some information later.”

After chatting with An Sheng for a while, Zhou Wen hung up and found a room to rest. He took out the Torch Dragon

Companion Egg and planned on hatching it.

No one would mind having too many Mythical Companion Beasts. More importantly, every Mythical Companion Beast had different abilities. No matter how strong a Mythical Companion Beast was, it was impossible for it to be invincible. In different situations, it was best to have Companion Beasts with different abilities.

Just like Torch Dragon's Bright Torch Vision World, it could instantly kill Mythical Companion Beasts of the same level, but an Epic Jade Crystal Spirit armor could restrain it.

Zhou Wen had infinite Essence Energy, so he naturally didn't need a special hatching method. He picked up the Torch Dragon egg and began injecting Essence Energy to incubate it.

The moment his Essence Energy touched the Torch Dragon egg, Zhou Wen immediately felt a powerful suction force suck his Essence Energy in like a whale.

Zhou Wen felt his Essence Energy suddenly empty. Thankfully, he quickly replenished it. If it were anyone else, they would probably be sucked dry.

As the Essence Energy surged in, the Companion Egg gradually lit up. It was as though countless stars were swirling around it. When it finally stopped absorbing Zhou Wen's Essence Energy, the Companion Egg transformed into a stream of starlight that flew towards Zhou Wen's left eye and fused into his pupils.

If one took a closer look, there was a Torch Dragon-like dark pattern in Zhou Wen's black pupils. As the color was similar, it was very difficult for ordinary people to tell.

Thankfully, the Torch Dragon tattoo didn’t affect Zhou Wen’s vision, so it didn’t hinder him.

Zhou Wen switched on his phone and checked Torch Dragon’s information. This might be the strongest Companion Beast he currently had. Even the Golden Battle God Halberd would be considered inferior.

Torch Dragon Youngling: Mythical (Evolvable)

Life Providence: Son of a World King

Life Soul: Eye of Spacetime

Wheel of Destiny: Bright Torch Vision World

Strength: 81

Speed: 81

Constitution: 81

Essence Energy: 81

Talent Skill: Torch Eyes, Dragon Breath, World King Transformation

Companion Form: Eye Mirror

Indeed, it’s a top-notch Mythical. All its stats are 81. It’s a pleasure looking at it. It’s even stronger than the strengthened Six-Winged Guardian Dragon. Zhou Wen summoned Torch Dragon in-game.

The gigantic Torch Dragon immediately appeared in the game’s interface. It looked identical to the one in real life. Zhou Wen tried all kinds of skills.

Apart from having a few less skills than the real Torch Dragon, there was basically no difference. The few skills that were lacking were not important skills. The core abilities were all present.

The truly invincible ones were the Bright Torch Vision World and the World King Transformation. The Bright Torch Vision World could reflect all things. Once its gaze landed on someone, they would be sucked into the Vision World and vanish without a trace.

The World King Transformation was Torch Dragon's final transformation skill. With the Eye of Spacetime appearing all over his body and the Bright Torch Vision World, it was practically invincible.

However, after using the World King Transformation, Torch Dragon would enter an overall weakened state. Its combat strength would drop drastically to the same level as the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon in a short period of time. It would take a long time to recover.

Even if it doesn't use World King Transformation, Torch Dragon is still a top-notch combat force. I wonder if Torch Dragon will be ranked first if it enters the rankings? Zhou Wen guessed inwardly.

Bringing Torch Dragon along, Zhou Wen headed for the temple in-game. He wanted to give it a try and see what effects Torch Dragon and the Bright Torch Vision World had against the Bright Torch Vision World. It would definitely be exciting.

Finally, he arrived at the Torch Dragon temple. Without any hesitation, Zhou Wen ordered his Torch Dragon to use the Bright Torch Vision World. Torch Dragon's eyes immediately turned into a mirror that emitted a sun-like glow.

As for the Torch Dragon in the temple, it seemed to sense danger. It also used the Bright Torch Vision World. In the next second, a strange scene happened. The two Torch Dragons vanished into thin air. A strange spatial vortex appeared in the temple, sweeping everything in. The game screen immediately turned black.

The Bright Torch Vision World versus Bright Torch Vision World is an annihilative disaster! Zhou Wen realized something unusual as he had an ominous feeling. After entering the game again, Zhou Wen wasn’t in a rush to head to the Torch Dragon temple. Instead, he headed for the Poison Bat Cave.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 571 - An Sheng“s Arrival

Chapter 571 An Sheng“s Arrival

Groups of Poison Bats flew over. With Torch Dragon’s Bright Torch Vision World, large swaths of Poison Bats and a White Shadow of Poison were reflected into the Vision World, disappearing in the blink of an eye.

The large number of Poison Bats in the cave vanished without a trace.

As expected! Zhou Wen’s expression didn’t look good. This was because at least two hundred Poison Bats had been sucked into the Vision World. They were nowhere to be seen, with no corpses indicating their deaths. The key point was that the game constantly indicated that the Poison Bat had been killed, but nothing dropped.

This was a very troublesome problem. The dimensional creatures that were sucked into the Bright Torch Vision World wouldn’t drop anything, or they might have dropped something, only to have them vanish in the Vision World.

If it doesn’t drop, so be it. Zhou Wen didn’t feel overly conflicted. This time, he took the Torch Dragon to the Qiongqi temple.

Qiongqi was very powerful and Zhou Wen was no match for it with the Six-Winged Golden Battle God Halberd and the

Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General that restrained it. However, Qiongqi was no match for Torch Dragon Youngling.

The trouble was—Qiongqi's speed was too fast—allowing it to constantly avoid Torch Dragon's vision. However, by unleashing World King Transformation, Qiongqi had nowhere to run. It was directly sucked into the Vision World and instantly killed.

Unfortunately, the Bright Torch Vision World prevented anything from dropping despite killing Qiongqi.

From the looks of it, it won't be a problem to use Torch Dragon to kill Qiongqi. Zhou Wen was rather satisfied with the outcome. It didn't matter if anything dropped. As long as he could kill Qiongqi, he could enter the Qiongqi Temple.

If they couldn't find the former principal in the Qiongqi temple, it meant that he had most likely been killed.

In fact, after discovering the metal piece, Zhou Wen already felt that the former principal and company had gone to the Torch Dragon temple. The chances of them heading to Qiongqi temple were relatively low.

As for why he didn't discover the former principal and company's relics, Zhou Wen felt that they might have been sucked into the Bright Torch Vision World, so nothing remained.

Only the metal piece had been left behind for some reason. Or perhaps it was originally something from the temple—the former principal and the others had merely discovered it.

Zhou Wen wasn't in a rush to head to the Qiongqi temple. An Sheng said that he would head over in the next two days, so he planned on waiting for him.

After all, with Torch Dragon around, killing Qiongqi wasn’t too risky. It was fine to wait for An Sheng.

Zhou Wen was somewhat depressed when he took the Torch Dragon with him to grind the Torch Dragon. If Torch Dragon used Bright Torch Vision World, he wouldn’t obtain any benefits even if he killed Torch Dragon.

However, he wasn’t a match for Torch Dragon in the temple without using Bright Torch Vision World. He would still be killed instantly by the Bright Torch Vision World, so Zhou Wen had no choice but to use the old method to kill the Torch Dragon.

When Torch Dragon appeared in his companion form, it gave Zhou Wen a pleasant surprise.

Torch Dragon’s Companion Form was similar to contact lenses. It directly appeared in Zhou Wen’s left eye. Under such circumstances, Zhou Wen’s left eye could also use Bright Torch Vision World.

Although it drained him greatly, it wasn’t a problem for Zhou Wen who had infinite Essence Energy.

Unfortunately, this move can only be used to kill enemies, but it can’t drop dimensional crystals or Companion Eggs. Zhou Wen planned on using Torch Dragon as his trump card. He could also use it when grinding Mythical creatures, but without using the Bright Torch Vision World and World King Transformation, its combat strength was only slightly stronger than the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon.

An Sheng arrived very quickly. Zhou Wen didn’t even wait two days before An Sheng arrived at the encampment.

Zhou Wen told An Sheng about hatching the Torch Dragon Youngling and found an uninhabited place. There, he demonstrated Torch Dragon's abilities to him, telling him that he could kill Qiongqi with Torch Dragon.

"This Torch Dragon Youngling is practically invincible. It's very likely to be first on the rankings. However, I have to do something before we kill Qiongqi," An Sheng said.

"Is it related to the blood offerings?" Zhou Wen guessed.

An Sheng nodded slightly. "I'm constantly updated by the news over here. I've roughly guessed who it is. If I don't deal with this fellow now, I'm afraid something will happen in the future. Let's head to the temple and settle this matter."

Zhou Wen entered the temple with An Sheng. Everyone related to the blood offerings was there.

When Professor Lei saw Zhou Wen and An Sheng, he came over and said excitedly, "Young Master Wen, Adjutant An, our research has made quite a bit of progress recently. From the murals and statues inside the Torch Dragon Temple, that palace should be related to the Mythical Chiyou…"

"Professor Lei, report the details to the Overseer in the future. Please gather everyone. I have something to say," An Sheng said.

"Alright, Little Zhao, call everyone over," Professor Lei said to one of his students.

Soon, the student called everyone over. When everyone was present, Professor Lei frowned and asked, "Where's Qingyun?"

“Senior Brother Qu was a little unwell yesterday and had been resting in the tent. When I called him just now, he seemed to be very sick. He was a little muddle-headed and didn’t wake up,” Little Zhao said.

“In that case, I’ll get him.” An Sheng seemed to realize something as he quickly walked towards Qu Qingyun’s tent.

Everyone followed him. An Sheng pulled open the tent and saw Qu Qingyun sleeping inside with the blanket wrapped around him. His body seemed to be trembling like a patient suffering from a severe cold.

An Sheng walked over and reached out to pull the blanket away. He saw Qu Qingyun curled up into a ball as his body trembled.

“Qingyun, what’s wrong?” Professor Lei saw that Qu Qingyun seemed to be seriously ill and wanted to go up to check on him.

However, An Sheng stopped Professor Lei and pulled out a flying dagger before throwing it at Qu Qingyun.

The flying dagger instantly stabbed into Qu Qingyun’s body. With a bang, a white fog erupted from the body. After the white fog dissipated, they saw the dagger nailing the corpse of a fox to the ground.

“What’s going on?” Professor Lei and the others were dumbfounded.

“Adjutant An, I’ll lead my men to chase after him.” Lu Yunxian’s expression changed. Qu Qingyun slept in the same tent as him, but he had actually failed to notice anything amiss.

“There’s no need. This person isn’t simple. Furthermore, the terrain in the ruins is too difficult. It’s easy for accidents to happen. Watch the vicinity of the temple and investigate the important areas. Don’t let him have another chance,” An Sheng said.

“Yes.” Lu Yunxian went to make arrangements.

The matter was already very clear. Even Professor Lei and the rest had guessed that there must be something wrong with Qu Qingyun’s sudden disappearance and him playing such a trick. It probably had something to do with the blood offerings.

“Adjutant An, I really didn’t expect Qingyun to do such a thing…” Professor Lei said in embarrassment.

“Professor Lei, don’t blame yourself. Everyone has cavities in their teeth. You weren’t to know.” Having settled the matter, An Sheng headed to the Qiongqi temple with Zhou Wen.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 572 - Killing Qiongqi

Chapter 572 Killing Qiongqi

The duo went all the way to the Qiongqi temple. With Torch Dragon as their main force, An Sheng and Zhou Wen didn't even plan on entering.

Before the temple door opened, Zhou Wen summoned Six-Winged and Torch Dragon. At the same time, he summoned the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General.

"Is this tiger-riding Companion Beast also at the Mythical stage?" An Sheng asked curiously as he sized up the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General.

"It's not at the Mythical stage. It's just an Epic Companion Beast. However, his Life Providence has some restraining effects on Qiongqi. It will make killing Qiongqi easier," Zhou Wen said with a smile.

These words were very honest. Without the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General, Torch Dragon could only kill Qiongqi in its World King Transformation state. And with the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General, there was no need to use the World King Transformation. A single Bright Torch Vision World would seal the deal.

"There's actually a Life Providence that can restrain Mythical creatures. Although it's at the Epic stage, it's sufficiently precious," An Sheng commented.

"Yes, it wasn't easy to obtain it. It'll probably be difficult to find a second one," Zhou Wen said as he opened the temple

door.

Qiongqi was inside the temple. The moment the door opened, it pounced forward. However, due to the influence of the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General, its speed decreased significantly.

Under Zhou Wen's orders, Torch Dragon activated the Bright Torch Vision World to which Qiongqi dodged. Unfortunately, its speed was greatly reduced and it failed to escape. Torch Dragon immediately swept its gaze at it, making it disappear.

"Torch Dragon is really too strong! It will be unreasonable if it can't get first on the rankings," An Sheng praised when he saw Qiongqi being settled so easily.

Zhou Wen also felt that Torch Dragon was very strong, but he wondered if it could defeat the guardian of a white cocoon.

"Unfortunately, after being killed by the Bright Torch Vision World, nothing will be left. Even if dimensional crystals and Companion Eggs drop, I won't be able to take them out. There are a lot of limitations," Zhou Wen said.

"That's not too good, but it's still very strong. There are some mysterious dimensional zones with many good things inside, but they are protected by terrifying Mythical creatures. It's almost impossible to get the treasures out. Having this Torch Dragon makes things much simpler. When I'm free later, I'll take you to those places to take a look. After a spin through them, we'll definitely be able to obtain some good things," An Sheng said.

The duo entered the Qiongqi temple. Inside the stone temple, there were also many stone sculptures and murals.

Many of the murals depicted a huge battle. Various creatures that looked like monsters and ghosts were fighting, while humans were just cannon fodder. The monsters were the main combat force.

The two of them carefully explored the temple several times, but they didn't find any passageway or any clues left behind by the former principal.

Zhou Wen didn't discover anything different about the temple versus the in-game temple. It was completely identical.

"Let Professor Lei and the rest come over and study it. They are the professionals in this area. If there are any clues, they will definitely discover them," An Sheng said.

"That's all we can do." Zhou Wen nodded helplessly.

He now knew that the former principal and company were doomed. They had either been killed by Torch Dragon or eaten by Qiongqi. No matter what the possibility was, there was no need to investigate further.

Zhou Wen planned on returning to school. The outcome was no longer important to him. No matter how the former principal died, it was impossible for him to come back to life.

"Wait another two days for me. When I'm done here, we can return together. I can also take you to kill a few Mythical creatures on the way. It's a crime not to use such a powerful Torch Dragon and Six-Winged Guardian Dragon," An Sheng said.

"What will you be doing here?" Zhou Wen looked puzzled as he asked.

“Of course I have to find Qu Qingyun,” An Sheng said.

“Will he still be here?” Zhou Wen felt that Qu Qingyun had definitely escaped Zhuolu.

“According to the time, he was definitely still inside the underground ruins when we entered. The underground ruins only have one exit. I planted some Companion Beasts at the exit, but I haven’t detected his departure. That means he’s definitely still here,” An Sheng said.

“When did you set up the Companion Beasts? Why didn’t I know?” Zhou Wen asked in surprise.

“It’s an ordinary Companion Beast. Apart from being small, it doesn’t have any special abilities. However, it’s very useful for monitoring,” An Sheng said.

“Alright, I also want to know why Qu Qingyun did that. Before I came, he hadn’t done anything. Yet, he took action after I came. This clearly isn’t a coincidence.” Zhou Wen felt that Qu Qingyun was targeting him, not Professor Lei and company. Otherwise, he could have done it long ago.

“If I want to find him, I’ll have to rely on Love Letter,” An Sheng said as he summoned Love Letter.

Although its name was Love Letter, it looked like a huge scorpion. There were many strange blood-colored texts on its body. No matter how one looked at it, it had nothing to do with a romantic love letter.

“Does Love Letter have the ability to find people?” Back when An Tianzuo fought Love Letter, he was also present. He had never seen Love Letter display such abilities.

“It doesn’t have the ability to find people, but its language skills will be useful.” An Sheng left the temple with Love Letter.

Zhou Wen followed beside him and saw that Love Letter would open the wall or the ground at a fixed distance every time. The words quickly fused into the rock.

There were also some words that landed on the plants in the ruins, like grass. It was unknown what they could do.

“Although these words don’t have any offensive power, Love Letter will naturally sense any creature that passes by. I left something in all the necessary areas. Unless Qu Qingyun doesn’t move in the ruins, we will be able to catch him sooner or later,” An Sheng explained.

“Take your time. I wish to visit the underground sea.” Zhou Wen had nothing to do, so he wanted to take a look.

Zhou Wen had already explored most of the Zhuolu underground ruins. Now, he didn’t even have a place to explore. All that was left was the underground sea.

Ignoring the nine black dragons and the cocoon in the war wagon, there was also something strange inside the sapphire sky. Zhou Wen planned on taking this opportunity to take a look. Perhaps, in reality, he could discover something he couldn’t see in-game.

“Alright, I still need a while. You can take your time.”

After separating from An Sheng, Zhou Wen headed for the underground sea. There weren’t many things that could threaten him in the underground ruins. Even against the nine black dragons, Zhou Wen had the strength to fight them.

Of course, that was under the circumstances that the nine black dragons were chained. If their shackles were unlocked, Zhou Wen would have to rely on Torch Dragon.

When he passed the white desert, Zhou Wen saw the tattered flag and the skeleton sitting under it.

Apart from suddenly waking up the first time Zhou Wen passed by, the skeleton didn’t react.

Zhou Wen carefully sized up the symbol on the animal hide flag. It was indeed the symbol of a ship’s anchor. He wanted to ask the skeleton what their flag meant, but unfortunately, the skeleton remained motionless like a dead object.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 573 - Bone Sand

Chapter 573 Bone Sand

I wonder how the skeleton will react if I pull the flag away? Zhou Wen mused. Even if he pulled out the flag, he didn’t know what he could do with it.

After sizing up the vine flag and beast hide, Zhou Wen suddenly realized that the sand beneath the flagpole was different from the white sand elsewhere.

When he walked over to take a closer look, he saw that the sand granules beside the flag pole were rather large. Some of them were about the size of table tennis balls, while the smaller ones were the size of glass beads. Furthermore, the shapes were irregular.

As the graphics in-game were cartoonish, he couldn’t distinguish them clearly. However, when Zhou Wen looked carefully, he realized that the white sand wasn’t sand, but bones.

Could it be that this white desert isn’t a real desert, but made of weathered bones? Zhou Wen looked at the endless white desert and couldn’t help but shiver.

If the sand in the desert were really bone granules, how many creatures had to die here to form such a huge desert?

Furthermore, it was obvious that things weren’t that simple for their bones to become sand.

Zhou Wen grabbed a handful of sand and carefully looked at it. The more he looked at it, the more it looked like it was formed from shattered bones. However, the size and shape of the sand grains were very similar. It was unknown how it was formed.

Could it be that this is actually the main battlefield of Zhuolu back then? The dead creatures in the battle were buried here? Zhou Wen thought for a moment and summoned the Guardian Dragon and Torch Dragon. He made the two huge monsters dig open the sand to see if there was anything underneath.

In the Zhuolu battle back then, other than humans, any creature that participated in it was at the Mythical stage. Furthermore, they had quite a number of treasures. If he could dig up one or two, even damaged relics would have huge value.

Six-Winged and Torch Dragon were huge, and they had immense strength. They were even more powerful than excavators. The Guardian Dragon swiped its front claws and dug out a huge hole.

Torch Dragon plunged into the sea of sand and swam beneath it. Soon, it parted the sand, revealing a ravine.

At the spot Torch Dragon had dug out, something was exposed. It looked like ivory—a sharp horn. Zhou Wen hurriedly ordered Torch Dragon to continue digging.

Torch Dragon and Six-Winged dug a huge pit that was more than ten meters deep. Many parts of the object were revealed. They were not teeth, but a huge skeleton. What he saw was the tip of one of the rib cages. There were two rows of such a sternum on the skeleton. There were at least twenty to thirty bones.

The entire skeleton resembled the bones of a cow, but it was many times bigger than cow bones. Furthermore, it didn’t have a skull.

Apart from the skeleton, there was nothing else. However, this left Zhou Wen somewhat expectant. Since there was really a monster’s bones below, there might be something that had been left behind from the battle or some dimensional crystals left behind.

If he could dig up a few Essence Energy Skill Crystals, he would make a killing.

Zhou Wen got Six-Winged and Torch Dragon to constantly dig in the desert, hoping to find something.

Not long after, he had dug out quite a number of bones under the desert. The bones had different shapes, so they likely didn’t belong to the same creature.

However, the strange thing was that the bones were crystalline, akin to jade. They seemed to have fossilized, but they maintained a moist texture.

Many bones shattered when Six-Winged and Torch Dragon touched them.

Unlike ordinary bones, these bones were like tempered glass. Once they shattered, they would turn into tiny particles that scattered in the white sand, becoming a part of the white desert.

Indeed, this white desert is a bone sand desert. Zhou Wen was alarmed.

From the scale of the white desert, the intense battle back then far exceeded anyone’s imaginations. Many Mythical

creatures had definitely died here.

Six-Winged and Torch Dragon dug holes in the sea of sand, almost turning half the desert over.

Unfortunately, other than some bones, everything seemed to have decayed and melted. The bones remained for some reason, but most of them had already turned into bone sand.

Most likely, those that hadn’t turned into bone sand were terrifying Mythical creatures.

Suddenly, Six-Winged seemed to dig out something as it roared at Zhou Wen.

Zhou Wen went over to take a look and saw a rhinoceros’s head in the sandpit that was split open by the six wings. However, this head was much bigger than a rhinoceros on Earth. It resembled the size of a train engine.

Although it had turned into jade, the rhinoceros’ head remained intact. It was still very lifelike and there weren’t any scars on its head.

Zhou Wen got Six-Winged and Torch Dragon to dig out the rhinoceros’ body. Although there were many bones here, it maintained its complete form like a giant rhinoceros. This was the first one.

However, this gigantic rhinoceros was like a jade statue. Its body had completely transformed into jade and there was no vitality left in its body. It definitely couldn’t come back to life.

Wait, I don’t see any injuries on its body. How did it die? Zhou Wen carefully sized up the rhinoceros and suddenly had an idea.

Perhaps the white desert's bone sand isn't purely bone. Instead, the creatures here are affected by some unknown force. Their bodies are like the rhinoceros, turning into stone. Then, they shatter and become bone sand… The more Zhou Wen thought about it, the more convinced he was.

What kind of terrifying power made so many creatures turn into bone sand? Which faction does the expert who used this power belong to? Yellow Emperor or Chiyou? Zhou Wen guessed.

The rhinoceros was still intact after being fossilized. It didn't turn into bone sand like ordinary creatures. It must have been extraordinary when it was alive.

Even so, it still couldn't escape the influence of the terrifying power, turning into its present state.

Zhou Wen reached out and struck the rhinoceros a few times. With two clangs, the sound was extremely crisp as though he had struck a jade artifact or bone. The rhinoceros' body didn't shatter due to the external force.

Torch Dragon and Six-Winged dug the nearby area, but apart from some weak fossilized bones, they didn't discover anything.

It can't be? Could it be that only some primitive creatures participated in the battle? They only engaged in melee combat and didn't even use divine weapons? Zhou Wen was somewhat disappointed.

Crack! Crack!

Cracks suddenly appeared on the rhinoceros' body. More and more cracks appeared as though it was about to shatter.

Perhaps Torch Dragon and Six-Winged collided into it while they were excavating. What a pity. Bringing it back as a specimen would have been good. After all, it’s an ancient Mythical creature. To be able to participate in such a battle is definitely no trifling matter. Just as Zhou Wen was feeling poignant, the jade-like rhinoceros had already shattered.

Something dropped from the rhino’s cracked abdomen. Unlike the shattered bone sand, the thing was still squirming.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 574 - A Snail

Chapter 574 A Snail

Zhou Wen was surprised that the thing which dropped from the rhinoceros' stomach was a living creature. Furthermore, it looked like a snail.

The fist-sized snail shell was crystalline and translucent.

The snail's body that was exposed was transparent like a flawless crystal. After the snail fell out, it slowly crawled on the sand with its shell.

Zhou Wen retreated as though he was facing a formidable enemy. At the same time, he ordered the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon and Torch Dragon to attack the snail.

Zhou Wen didn't know the origins of the snail, but he knew one thing very well. In such a terrifying ancient battle, even a powerful creature like the rhinoceros had fossilized. Yet, this snail had survived inside the rhinoceros' stomach.

No matter how it did it, it definitely wouldn't have been easy.

Of course, it was also possible that the fellow had crawled in later, but no matter what, Zhou Wen wasn't willing to take the risk.

Torch Dragon and Six-Winged simultaneously spat out dragon breath at the snail. The snail immediately shrank into its shell. Two terrifying dragon breaths sprayed on the

snail’s shell, melting away the surrounding bone sand and forming a huge crater.

However, after the dragon breaths stopped, the snail shell in the pit remained unharmed. The attacks of the two Mythical pets failed to penetrate the snail shell.

Bright Torch Vision World. Zhou Wen increasingly found the snail terrifying. He ordered Torch Dragon to use its Wheel of Destiny powers.

Torch Dragon’s eyes turned into a mirror as it looked at the snail in the pit, but in the blink of an eye, the snail had vanished.

The power of the Bright Torch Vision World absorbed large amounts of bone sand. A large swath of bone sand vanished as though a huge hole had been dug out of the desert.

Zhou Wen carefully observed his surroundings, but he didn’t find the snail.

Was it absorbed by the Bright Torch Vision World or had it escaped? Zhou Wen didn’t dare be careless as he summoned several important Companion Beasts to prevent any mishaps.

If this lineup still allowed it to escape, it would be terrifying.

Torch Dragon and company stood around Zhou Wen and constantly scanned the nearby desert, but they didn’t find any traces of the snail.

Now, Zhou Wen missed Truth Listener a little. If he had Truth Listener’s ability, he wouldn’t be at such a disadvantage. Now, he had to be more careful.

After waiting for quite some time, the snail still didn’t appear. Zhou Wen felt that it was most likely sucked into Bright Torch Vision World with the bone sand. Otherwise, there was no reason for it not to appear.

However, Zhou Wen didn’t dare be careless. He continued watching carefully. At the same time, he didn’t dare stay in the bone sand desert any longer as he headed straight for the underground sea.

Along the way, he didn’t see the snail reappear. When he arrived at the beach, Zhou Wen didn’t head into the sea. Instead, he watched the sapphire sky from the side. It was a spectacular sight.

An Sheng said that they had people who also wanted to study the sapphire sky, but the Companion Beasts they had sent would die for no reason once they approached it. After losing quite a number of Companion Beasts with no results to speak for, they had to give up exploring the sapphire sky.

Zhou Wen looked at it for a while, but he didn’t find anything in the sapphire sky. The gem-like crystal’s body was entirely blue, looking beautiful and profound.

He attempted to summon a Poison Bat Companion Beast and make it fly towards the sapphire sky.

Back in-game, Zhou Wen had already done similar experiments numerous times. He would only see the Poison Bat flash a faint blue light when it approached the sapphire sky. Then, they would die. He saw nothing else.

This time, Zhou Wen wanted to see it happen in reality, hoping to find some clues.

Indeed, the moment the Poison Bat Companion Beast approached the sapphire sky, a blue light suddenly flashed from its body. In the next second, the Poison Bat’s body turned into a blue transparent crystal. After it exploded into powder, it fell into the underground sea.

Zhou Wen looked carefully, but he failed to discover where the blue light had shot out from. From his point of view, the blue light appeared to come from within the Poison Bat’s body.

He tried a few more times, but the results were the same. He couldn’t identify the problem.

Suddenly, Zhou Wen felt his neck itch. He reached out to scratch it, but when his fingers touched his skin, it gave him a fright.

When his fingers touched the itchy spot, he found it extremely hard to the touch. It didn’t feel like skin, but rather like jade.

Not good! Zhou Wen thought of something as he hurriedly summoned the crystal mirror and looked at his neck’s reflection. Upon seeing the reflection, his expression changed drastically.

On the right side of his neck, there was a bulge the size of a fingernail. It was very strange. It was neither red nor swollen. It was translucent like jade and had spiral patterns on it. It was like the shell of a snail.

Is this the snail being up to no good? Without any hesitation, Zhou Wen pulled out his Orchid Blade and slashed at his neck, slicing off the jade-like flesh.

Seeing that the flesh under his skin remained tender flesh and blood, he felt a lot more at ease that it hadn’t turned to jade.

Zhou Wen directly used the Orchid Blade to shatter the sliced piece of flesh. At the same time, he summoned the Fire Furnace Queen and burned it to ashes.

Although the wound on his neck still hurt, it didn’t itch. Zhou Wen felt much better.

With Zhou Wen’s current physical strength, the tiny wound quickly contracted and stopped bleeding. It wouldn’t take long to heal itself.

However, after a while, Zhou Wen felt his wound itch again. He thought that it was the itch from the scab, but when his fingers touched it, his expression immediately turned ugly.

He picked up the crystal mirror and took a look. The wound had completely healed, but a snail shell had protruded out.

Zhou Wen immediately cut it off and summoned Doctor Darkness to inject large amounts of poison into his wound.

Zhou Wen’s body’s poison resistance was already very high, so the poison couldn’t take his life. He wanted to see if it was effective on the wound or rather, be effective on the snail-like lump.

However, he was disappointed. Despite injecting him with a large amount of poison, making him almost unable to take it, it didn’t take long for the wound to automatically heal, producing a spiral-shaped jade lump. A strange itch also triggered Zhou Wen’s nerves, making him have the urge to grab it.

I’m in big trouble. Zhou Wen knew that things were rather serious. It was definitely the snail’s doing, but he didn’t even know where the snail was. It was unknown when the snail had attacked him.

He switched to Zero Taboo and used all sorts of methods to deal with the jade lump, but it was to no avail. No matter how he tried, the jade lump would regrow and become itchier. It made Zhou Wen have the urge to chop off his neck.

Damn it. Truth Listener is still evolving. Otherwise, its Evil Nullification Life Soul might be useful. Zhou Wen felt his neck itch more and more as he clenched his fists. However, he didn’t dare grab it. He was afraid that the more he scratched at it, the worse it would become.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 575 - Cultivation of Small Perfection of Wisdom

Chapter 575 Cultivation of Small Perfection of Wisdom

Zhou Wen knew that he couldn’t delay any further. He had to think of a way to resolve this problem.

Perhaps The Thearch knows what it is. Zhou Wen wanted to leave the Zhuolu battlefield and return to the encampment to contact The Thearch to see if he could obtain any useful information regarding the snail from her.

However, after taking a few steps, Zhou Wen felt his neck itch to the point of being unbearable. He wished he could slice off his neck.

What was even stranger was that Zhou Wen felt his body become heavier as though an invisible boulder was pressing down on him. Every step he took felt extremely difficult. He left deep footprints on the bone sand as his calf sank into it.

Zhou Wen knew that it wasn’t an illusion. There really was something pressing down on him. He could clearly sense the pressure, but there was nothing on him.

Plop!

Zhou Wen’s body was pressed into the bone sand. He struggled to stand up, but he couldn’t move.

Not only could he not move, but his neck was getting itchier. He couldn’t even scratch it.

I have to leave this place as soon as possible. Zhou Wen got Six-Winged and Torch Dragon to pull his body back.

However, even with Six-Winged and Torch Dragon’s immense strength, they were unable to move him. Or rather, they didn’t dare use too much strength, afraid that they would directly snap his body.

Indeed, I’m not suited to enter a dimensional zone in real life. Something happens every time. Zhou Wen was beginning to regret digging around.

Perhaps it was because he had just obtained a powerful Companion Beast like Torch Dragon that it had gone to his head. He believed that with Torch Dragon around, he could deal with any unexpected situation, but he never expected to have no chance of using it.

Zhou Wen could only endure the itch and let Torch Dragon burrow beneath the bone sand to prop him up from above.

However, when Torch Dragon tried to prop up Zhou Wen’s body with all its might, it nearly flattened Zhou Wen. It still failed to lift his body up even a centimeter.

However, Zhou Wen was pressed down on Torch Dragon’s back. As Torch Dragon retreated, Zhou Wen immediately fell into the sandpit, incapable of moving.

Zhou Wen had thought of all the solutions he could, but they were useless. He was trapped there, unable to move.

The pressure on his body was secondary. The itch on his neck was unbearable. It was so itchy that it nearly reached

deep into his soul.

All his strength was useless. All Zhou Wen could do was switch to the Small Perfection of Wisdom and circulate the Eight Perfections Wisdom Life Providence.

It wasn’t that the power of the Small Perfection of Wisdom could reduce the pressure on him, nor was it that the Eight Perfections Wisdom could stop the itch. Instead, the Small Perfection of Wisdom had one benefit—it had a high tolerance.

Daoists cultivated life as it was, while Buddhists cultivated their future incarnation. They pursued the great release of the future.

Although Small Perfection of Wisdom was an Essence Energy Art that cultivated his constitution, it was different from the Invincible Connate Divine Art that directly strengthened one’s body. Small Perfection of Wisdom focused on the mind’s management of one’s body.

The Six Perfections Wisdom had all sorts of wisdoms that allowed one to pursue an epiphany mentally without being limited by one’s body.

Zhou Wen didn’t circulate the Small Perfection of Wisdom to relieve the pain on his body, but to prevent himself from focusing on his pain. He hoped to reduce the itchiness by employing this method.

Although this method didn’t treat the root of the problem, Zhou Wen really didn’t have a better solution. If he didn’t stop the itch, he was afraid that he would go crazy.

If I don’t have Truth Listener with me, I will not touch anything randomly in the future, Zhou Wen thought.

After the Small Perfection of Wisdom Sutra circulated, the Eight Perfections Wisdom made his six senses sharp. It made the itch go deeper into his bones.

Zhou Wen knew that this was only temporary. He had read quite a number of Buddhist scriptures, so he knew that this was an inevitable process. He needed to first experience pain before he could fully gain enlightenment and achieve the liberation of his body.

Ksitigarbha Bodhisattva had once said that one cannot become a Buddha with hell empty. It was a form of great enlightenment and liberation.

Resisting the almost lethal itch, Zhou Wen constantly circulated the Small Perfection of Wisdom, hoping to achieve a great liberation of his mind. At the same time, he had absolute control over his body, preventing it from being limited by his six senses and circumstances.

If it were an ordinary person, they wouldn’t be able to calm down and think about the meaning behind the scriptures when suffering from such an itch. They wouldn’t be able to fully focus on circulating the Essence Energy Art.

However, Zhou Wen was clearly not an average person. His talent at focusing allowed him to think and gain insights without being affected.

The scriptures he had read previously weren’t for nothing. Zhou Wen had taken the right path. With the circulation and comprehension of the Small Perfection of Wisdom Sutra, Zhou Wen’s senses became sharper. The itch on his neck still existed, but the mental effects on Zhou Wen decreased significantly. It made him feel less uncomfortable.

This is indeed feasible! Zhou Wen continued studying from this angle, hoping to break through the Small Perfection of Wisdom's bottleneck and condense a Life Soul.

Unlike ordinary Essence Energy Arts that strengthened one's constitution, the Small Perfection of Wisdom Sutra could not eliminate the pain in one's body. Instead, it used one's wisdom to understand the pain.

Of course, being able to understand something didn't mean that he could resolve it. However, the separation of his body and mind made Zhou Wen feel less pain.

The pressure on him remained as the itch grew more intense. However, despite clearly sensing the pain, Zhou Wen felt that his body wasn't his. The pain wasn't that unbearable anymore.

This feeling was very odd. It was clearly his body, but it didn't feel like it belonged to him. His mind seemed to be taking on an outsider's view.

If this continues, will I really become a Buddha? Zhou Wen could sense that his body was emitting a treasure glow.

And the source of this treasure glow was not from his physical body, but deeper.

Zhou Wen didn't wish to become a Buddha without any desires, but in this situation, he could only continue cultivating. Otherwise, just the itch would drive him crazy.

In such an environment, Zhou Wen quickly separated his mind and body. It sounded contradictory, but it was indeed Zhou Wen's present state.

It could control his body while his mind wasn’t restrained by his body. The pain from the pressure and itch was already nothing to Zhou Wen.

However, even if Zhou Wen was no longer fazed by it, nor had it affected his mind, the pressure on his body still existed. His body had already been pressed into the bone sand and was about to be flattened.

With his body dead, it was useless no matter how powerful his mind was. Wouldn’t he just be waiting for Buddha to take him into Paradise? Zhou Wen clearly didn’t follow this belief.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 576 - Hell King

Chapter 576 Hell King

What should I do? If Small Perfection of Wisdom can’t resolve my predicament, it’s akin to drinking poison to quench my thirst. Zhou Wen racked his brains, hoping to find a complete solution.

Although the Small Perfection of Wisdom Sutra and the Eight Perfections Wisdom couldn’t free Zhou Wen from the pain, it made his mind and six senses sharper. He could observe the details he couldn’t sense before.

His neck protruded. Even without looking in the mirror, Zhou Wen could sense everything that was happening, including the details beneath his skin.

Under the effects of the Eight Perfections Wisdom, Zhou Wen felt as though his body had turned transparent. It allowed him to see many physical details through his consciousness, or it could be said that he could sense the minute parts of his body. That wasn’t a true vision.

This should be the seventh sense mentioned in the Buddhist scriptures, right? Zhou Wen could clearly sense that the spiral jade beneath his neck wasn’t as simple as a lump.

Beneath the lump, there were many invisible silk objects that penetrated his blood vessels and muscles. As they were too minute, one couldn’t see them with the naked eye.

The silk-like objects seeped into his body like a spiderweb and coiled around his flesh and bones. His entire neck was enrooted by the silk as it spread throughout his body. Even his brain was penetrated.

Now, Zhou Wen finally knew why it was useless to slice off the lump. As the saying went, if one didn't remove the roots when cutting grass, the grass would grow again once the spring wind blew.

He needed to get rid of the threads inside to truly resolve the danger.

However, the power of the Small Perfection of Wisdom Sutra and the Eight Perfections of Wisdom could let him see the problem, but not resolve it.

Such a force that directly penetrated his body made formidable powers like Torch Dragon useless. Unless Zhou Wen wanted to be killed by the Bright Torch Vision World, he could only come up with another solution.

Doctor Darkness was the best in this area, but even his poison couldn't destroy the fine threads. This showed how powerful this thing was.

Thankfully, I still have the Substitute Talisman on me. Furthermore, I still have the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon. If I have no choice, I'll perish together with this strange snail. With the Substitute Talisman and the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon, I should be able to survive. It might not be the case for the snail, Zhou Wen thought to himself.

However, that was the final step. As long as there was a way, Zhou Wen didn't want to take that final step.

Since the Small Perfection of Wisdom Sutra can let me see it, is there really no way to resolve it? Furthermore, my comprehension still hasn’t allowed the Small Perfection of Wisdom to advance to the Epic stage or condense a Life Soul. Clearly, it’s because my comprehension isn’t completely correct… Zhou Wen tried hard to meditate.

The treasure glow on his body became more and more crystalline. However, due to the immense pressure, his body was almost unable to withstand it. His bones creaked from the pressure as though they would snap at any moment.

Zhou Wen could sense a huge snail shell pressing down on him. It couldn’t be seen with the naked eye or touched, but the pressure existed. It was extremely odd.

Since my mind can’t control my body, why don’t I do the opposite? If I can’t even live this life, what’s the point of a future incarnation? With a thought, Zhou Wen reversed the Small Perfection of Wisdom Sutra.

Zhou Wen originally believed that reversing the Small Perfection of Wisdom would definitely damage his body, but he soon realized that after the Small Perfection of Wisdom was reversed, it could also smoothly circulate without any obstruction. It was as though it should have been that way from the start.

Zhou Wen’s heart suddenly stirred as he thought of the three-faced Buddha in Small Buddha Temple. The three-faced Buddha had three faces, but they weren’t all smiling benevolently. They were somewhat different from ordinary Buddha statues.

Could it be that the… Small Perfection of Wisdom isn’t a pure Buddhist Essence Energy Art… One body with three

sides… Then what’s the last side? Zhou Wen seemed to figure out something.

As the Small Perfection of Wisdom reversed, the Eight Perfections Wisdom also changed. Zhou Wen, who was originally in a state of separating his mind and body, once again fused his mind and body.

The extremely itchy feeling immediately returned to Zhou Wen, making him nearly go crazy.

However, almost at the same time, this crazy itch made Zhou Wen feel like he was brimming with strength. The more painful and itchy his body was, the more mentally sharp he became. Not only did he not feel the pain, but he also felt a sense of pleasure, as though he wanted to tear apart everything.

Humans have three sides. One side is Buddha, the other side is the devil. When Buddha arrives, I will be Buddha. When the devil arrives, I will be a devil. When Buddha and the devil are not present, I am my true self…

As Zhou Wen constantly gained insights, his essence, vitality, and spirit, as well as his Life Providence, erupted with terrifying power. It made his body glow and emit a shocking treasure glow, as though an indescribable power was building up in his body.

Zhou Wen wasn’t unfamiliar with this power. It was the condensation of a Life Soul.

However, it was different from the previous times when he condensed a Life Soul. This Life Soul was not an incorporeal object in the consciousness like Zero Taboo, nor was it a corporeal entity like Lost Country. It also wasn’t an independent entity like the Inverse Ancient Sovereign.

Zhou Wen’s Life Soul seemed to be his body—his body being the Life Soul. It was probably unprecedented.

Crack! Crack!

As his Life Soul condensed, the jade lump on Zhou Wen’s neck cracked. Wisps of invisible threads peeled out from his body.

It was as though invisible transparent strands of hair had automatically crawled out from his body. However, it wasn’t that the silk that had crawled out by itself. It was because of a strange change in Zhou Wen’s body that prevented any external object from attaching to him. Therefore, the threads had no choice but to leave his body.

The threads separated from Zhou Wen’s body and gathered together. Soon, they transformed into a transparent snail with a milky-white shell on its back. It was the same snail that Zhou Wen had dug out from the rhinoceros’ stomach.

Its tiny eyes sized up the glowing Zhou Wen as though it was pondering over something. However, when it looked at Torch Dragon beside it, it ultimately bowed its head and burrowed into the bone sand. It seemed to be invisible as it disappeared in the blink of an eye.

As for Zhou Wen’s body, it had already turned crystalline, like jade. He looked like a mighty being, as though he was nurturing an immense amount of energy. A vertical eye appeared at his glabella. At the instant the vertical eye opened, it was as though a door to the endless hell had opened. Countless vengeful and ferocious ghosts roared in it.

Zhou Wen himself seemed to have become a demon king as he emitted a terrifying aura of death.

Little Perfection of Wisdom had finally condensed a Life Soul, but this Life Soul looked somewhat odd.

Zhou Wen dispelled his Life Soul and returned to his normal state. The bulge on his neck had vanished, and the pressure on him had vanished. At the same time, he came to realize something.

“Hell King?” Zhou Wen muttered to himself as he read out the name of the Life Soul.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 577 - The Thearch“s Drug

Chapter 577 The Thearch“s Drug

Zhou Wen had naturally sensed the snail’s departure, but he didn’t chase after it.

The Hell King Life Soul could only prevent the tiny threads from clinging onto his body, but if the snail unleashed its strength, it could still destroy Zhou Wen’s body.

The snail’s retreat without fighting Zhou Wen wasn’t due to the Hell King Life Soul.

Although the Hell King Life Soul was good at strengthening his body, even Torch Dragon and Six-Winged’s attacks couldn’t injure the snail. Zhou Wen didn’t believe that the Hell King Life Soul could really threaten it, so he was still somewhat puzzled when the snail retreated.

However, no matter what, he had finally resolved a huge problem. Zhou Wen quickly left the bone sand desert, not daring to stay any longer.

He used his phone to look at his information and realized that the postfix—Guilt—of his Constitution had vanished. The Life Soul that Small Perfection of Wisdom had condensed was also Hell King. It had the effect of strengthening his mind and body, but this wasn’t the most important ability. The strongest aspect of the Hell King Life Soul was turning the body into a Life Soul. Zhou Wen didn’t

know what use it had, for now, so he could only slowly study it.

After returning to the temple, Zhou Wen heaved a sigh of relief when he didn’t see the snail appear.

I should just game in the future. Zhou Wen wasn’t willing to give up. He lay in the tent and launched the game before heading to the bone sand desert to get Torch Dragon and Six-Winged to continue digging.

However, Zhou Wen was somewhat disappointed. He didn’t find the fossilized rhinoceros in-game, neither did he find the snail. He only found a few bones.

There’s no snail in-game? Zhou Wen spent two days searching the bone sand desert, but he still failed to find the snail or encounter any other danger.

As for treasures, he found nothing.

…

The hidden forces An Sheng had set up, failed to capture Qu Qingyun. It was unknown if Qu Qingyun had covered his tracks well or if he had already used some method to escape the ruins.

An Sheng didn’t have the time to be stationed here. All he could do was send someone to guard the ruins and bring Zhou Wen back to Luoyang.

On the way, Zhou Wen used his phone to check the Internet. Indeed, just as An Sheng had said, the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon’s ranking had dropped to fifth place. There were already 37 Companion Beasts on the rankings. There were a few more than what An Sheng had said.

Should I get Torch Dragon on the rankings as well? Zhou Wen had been pondering over this question.

Beep! Beep! A message was sent by The Thearch.

“I have a gift for you. Accept it with the Void Flower.” Zhou Wen immediately had an ominous feeling when he read the message.

Zhou Wen refused to believe that The Thearch would take the initiative to deliver something good to him.

“I’m driving now. The Void Flower isn’t with me. What gift did you send me?” Zhou Wen probed.

“It’s a world-shaking invention that I came up with. You lucked out,” The Thearch replied.

What shocking invention? Zhou Wen heaved a sigh of relief. If it was just an experimental product made of chemicals, Zhou Wen felt that it couldn’t be too dangerous.

“You’ll know when you get back.” The Thearch kept him guessing.

After returning to school, Zhou Wen took out the Void Flower pot from the chaos space. The Void Flower couldn’t open a portal in the chaos space; therefore, when Zhou Wen took it out, a portal appeared on the flower. Something floated out.

Zhou Wen took a careful look and saw that it was a glass bottle. It was one of the items he had bought for The Thearch. It wasn’t dangerous, so he reached out to catch it.

Inside the glass bottle was half a bottle of purple liquid. It was unknown what it was.

He didn’t know what the purple liquid was, but Zhou Wen definitely didn’t dare use it. Just as he was about to put it into the chaos space, he received a message from The Thearch.

“Have you received it? Let your Companion Beast drink it. Then, it’s time to witness a miracle.”

No matter how Zhou Wen looked at it, The Thearch’s tone was like a scammer online.

However, since it wasn’t for him to drink, Zhou Wen didn’t mind. It didn’t matter if he gave it a try. After all, he had plenty of Companion Beasts.

After randomly summoning a Chi and letting it drink The Thearch’s medicine, Zhou Wen stared at it with widened eyes.

According to what Zhou Wen knew, ordinary chemicals didn’t have much use for Companion Beasts. Instead, they had a certain effect on dimensional creatures that could make them mutate.

Unfortunately, Companion Beasts were pure energy bodies, so their composition was relatively stable. The possibility of mutation was very low, so chemicals were useless.

However, after the Chi drank the medicine, its body seemed to be dyed purple—the same color as the drug. Its body also rapidly transformed as it underwent a significant change.

After the transformation ended, its body hadn’t appeared to have undergone many changes. Even the purple color faded.

Zhou Wen took a look at its stats and realized that its stats had greatly increased. It had gained another skill, making it one of the best at the Epic stage.

Ignoring the increase in stats, it had actually allowed the Chi to comprehend a new skill. It went from two skills to three skills; a shocking feat.

“Thearch, what drug did you give me?” Zhou Wen sent a message to The Thearch.

“The Pet Skill Insights Agent I invented can stimulate the potential of a Companion Beast, allowing it to comprehend a hidden talent ability. The effects aren’t bad, right? I’m guessing you didn’t dare give it to your Six-Winged and Truth Listener. Instead, you let an ordinary Companion Beast drink it. Are you regretting it now?” The Thearch seemed to see through Zhou Wen’s thoughts. It was as though she had seen Zhou Wen’s actions with her own eyes.

Zhou Wen knew that The Thearch was deliberately trying to see his regret by not mentioning the effects of the drug in the beginning. Zhou Wen naturally wouldn’t let her wish come true.

“Who knows if your drug is really useful. Perhaps it’s only effective on low-level Companion Beasts and useless for high-level ones?” Zhou Wen deliberately said.

“Goading me on is useless. You’re too old-fashioned. If you want a Pet Skill Insights Agent, you have to exchange it with something.” The Thearch’s words were filled with contempt.

“No thanks then,” Zhou Wen immediately replied.

Who knew if The Thearch’s medicine had any side effects. Zhou Wen found it unreliable no matter how he thought

about it. How could ordinary chemicals allow a Companion Beast to gain insights into a skill? It was highly likely that she had added something else.

“It’s fine if you don’t want the Pet Skill Insights Agent, but you have to return me the items.” The Thearch directly sent a list.

“How much Pet Skill Insights Agent can these items get?” Since he couldn’t reject it, he naturally had to try his best to benefit himself.

“One bottle,” The Thearch replied.

“At least ten bottles. I was the one who bought all the ingredients you used to make the drug, right? It’s not worth that much money.” Zhou Wen deliberately said this to know if The Thearch had added anything else.

However, The Thearch didn’t answer him. “Two bottles. It’s up to you whether you want them or not, but you have to buy and deliver everything on the list in a month.”

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 578 - Nine-Headed Pheasant Spiri

Chapter 578 Nine-Headed Pheasant Spiri

Zhou Wen looked at the list. The items The Thearch wanted this time weren’t very expensive. They were all relatively common items. Most of them were electronic products. He had no idea why she wanted them.

When Zhou Wen was in Chess Mountain, many electronic devices couldn’t be switched on, much less get any reception. Occasionally, he would switch on the phone only to have it crash with a black screen.

The Thearch clearly had a way to resolve these problems, but it was unknown how she did it.

Now that I have Torch Dragon, I might be able to explore Deer Terrace Pavilion. Even if I can’t get anything to drop, storming my way in to see what’s inside would be good too. Zhou Wen decided to head to Deer Terrace Pavilion in-game.

After getting Li Xuan to help get someone to buy the items on the list, Zhou Wen entered Chess Mountain’s instance dungeon and headed for Deer Terrace Pavilion.

With the Demon God Catalog, Zhou Wen successfully ascended the Deer Terrace Pavilion. However, he didn’t sneak up this time. Instead, he summoned Six-Winged and Torch Dragon to kill all the fake fairies and immortals.

After the fake fairies and immortals were killed, they revealed their true forms—foxes, night cats, rats, and wolves. Killing them wasn’t difficult.

With the two pets leading the way, Zhou Wen soon arrived at the ancient building on the Deer Terrace Pavilion. He could see six male and female immortals drinking and enjoying themselves inside the ancient building.

One of them was the fake fairy who had chased after Zhou Wen last time. When she saw Six-Winged and Torch Dragon, the six fake immortals inside were alarmed. However, Zhou Wen didn’t give them a chance. Torch Dragon’s Bright Torch Vision World opened and instantly reflected all six fake immortals into it, instantly killing them.

The phone indicated that he had killed the Mythical Creature, Fox Demon, but unfortunately, they were all pulled into the Vision World. Even if something dropped, it would be impossible to get it out of the Vision World.

Zhou Wen wasn’t too concerned about this. After killing six Mythical fake immortals, he circled the first level without finding anything valuable.

He headed for the second level of the ancient building through the stairs. Upon reaching the second level, he saw a colorfully dressed fairy sitting in the hall.

The fairy looked extremely beautiful, but she wasn’t as otherworldly as an immortal. Instead, she was just extremely beautiful.

When the fairy saw Torch Dragon and Six-Winged, her expression changed. She flicked her sleeve and flew up. At the instant she flicked her sleeve, she let out a cry as a terrifying sound wave blasted out.

Torch Dragon and Six-Winged could still withstand her sound blasts, but the blood-colored avatar’s body wasn’t that strong. It was shattered by it.

The blood-colored avatar didn’t die, but the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon died in its place. However, the sound blast didn’t stop. Unable to escape death, the game screen turned black.

Indeed, I have to launch a preemptive attack. Zhou Wen entered the game again and charged up Deer Terrace Pavilion. He slew six fox demons on the first level and rushed to the second level.

This time, Zhou Wen didn’t give the colorful-robed fairy any chance. He got Torch Dragon to use the Bright Torch Vision World.

The colorful-robed fairy turned into a colorful giant bird. It looked like a colorful phoenix, but there were nine heads on its neck.

The nine-headed phoenix flapped its wings and flew out as though it had teleported, avoiding Torch Dragon’s gaze. Its speed was much faster than Zhou Wen’s peak speed.

Seeing the giant, nine-colored, phoenix-like bird about to cry out again, Zhou Wen ordered Torch Dragon to use World King Transformation as he charged down the second level’s exit and returned to the first level.

Just as Zhou Wen heard a sound wave blast down from the second level, the sound came to a halt as his phone gave a notification.

‘Killed Mythical creature, Nine-Headed Pheasant Spirit.’

The notification was very simple, and there weren’t any indications of dimensional crystals. It was probably stored in the Vision World.

Zhou Wen sent the blood-colored avatar back up to the second level and indeed, he realized that the Nine-Headed Pheasant Spirit was gone. Only the weak Torch Dragon was lying on the ground. Clearly, it was draining for it to use the World King Transformation.

This building has a total of three levels. The second level is the Nine-Headed Pheasant Spirit. Could the third level be the legendary Demon Consort? Zhou Wen really wanted to head to the third level to take a look.

However, Torch Dragon was too weak. Without Torch Dragon, Zhou Wen couldn’t even defeat the Nine-Headed Pheasant Spirit, much less the Demon Consort.

Could The Thearch be that Demon Consort? Zhou Wen guessed inwardly.

Instead of continuing upstairs, he logged out of the game. Zhou Wen planned on heading to the top of Deer Terrace Pavilion after Torch Dragon recovered.

He first went to other dungeons to grind all sorts of rare dimensional creatures. Just as he was grinding Medusa, his phone suddenly rang.

He took a look at the number and saw that it was an unknown number. It continuously rang a few times before Zhou Wen picked up the call.

“Junior Brother, how have you been recently?” A clear and gentle voice came from the phone.

“Jiang Yan…” Zhou Wen nearly jumped up.

Ever since they separated at Holy City, Zhou Wen had not heard of Jiang Yan again. He never expected Jiang Yan to suddenly call him.

“I’ll wait for you at the same old place,” Jiang Yan said before hanging up.

Zhou Wen knew where Jiang Yan was referring to. Unable to hold himself back, he went out and headed for Dragon Gate Grotto.

When Zhou Wen arrived at the former laboratory in Old Dragon Cave, he saw Jiang Yan sitting on a stone slab. He was looking at Zhou Wen with a harmless smile.

Zhou Wen and company had used the stone slab as a table to eat and play cards. When he saw Jiang Yan sitting there, he couldn’t help but recall the times they had spent here.

“Senior…” Zhou Wen called out, but he didn’t know what to say.

Ask him if he was doing well? That was nonsense. How could he be living well while being pursued by the bureau?

Ask him what he had been doing recently? Zhou Wen felt that he shouldn’t ask. That would put Jiang Yan in a difficult position.

If Jiang Yan answered him, he would expose his past whereabouts. If he didn’t answer, it would hurt his feelings.

However, Jiang Yan didn’t seem to mind. He sized up Zhou Wen and said with a smile, “From the looks of it, you have been doing pretty well recently. Your strength has improved

greatly. It seems like you have more than one Mythical Companion Beast.”

“Can you tell?” Zhou Wen asked Jiang Yan in surprise.

Jiang Yan probably didn’t know that he had the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon and Torch Dragon; yet, he was able to tell that he had more than one Mythical pet. If everyone could tell, he wouldn’t have any secrets to speak off.

“Don’t worry. There aren’t many humans like me who can tell that you have Mythical Companion Beasts. Besides, I can’t tell what your Mythical Companion Beasts are,” Jiang Yan said with a smile as though he had seen through Zhou Wen’s thoughts.

Zhou Wen couldn’t help but heave a sigh of relief when he heard Jiang Yan say that.

“I was trying to come up with a solution for a problem I have, but since you already have such strength, help me,” Jiang Yan continued.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 579 - Speedy Solar Lunar Shuttle

Chapter 579 Speedy Solar Lunar Shuttle

“What help do you need?” Zhou Wen asked.

“I’m going to a dimensional zone to do something and need help. There’s a Mythical creature guarding the area and it’s rather powerful. However, with your help, it shouldn’t be difficult to deal with it,” Jiang Yan said.

“Alright.” Zhou Wen agreed.

“Aren’t you going to ask which dimensional zone I’m going to?” Jiang Yan said with a smile.

“There’s no need. No matter which dimensional zone it is, I’ll accompany you.” Zhou Wen shook his head.

“Alright, go back and prepare. See you here tomorrow morning,” Jiang Yan said.

“I don’t have anything to prepare. I can go with you now.” Zhou Wen brought everything he needed with him, so there was nothing to prepare.

“Let’s do it tomorrow. I don’t know if I’ll be able to come back in the future. I want to stay here for the night,” Jiang Yan said as he looked at the dilapidated laboratory.

“Alright.” Zhou Wen didn’t say anything else and returned to his dorm.

The next morning, Zhou Wen arrived at Old Dragon Cave again and saw a strange beast carriage in the laboratory.

The carriage looked ancient. Even the wheels were made of bronze. The carriage's box wasn't sealed with a baldachin over it. Pulling in front of it were two giant rabbits—one black, one white.

The rabbis were even bigger than an ordinary horse. They were almost the same size as an elephant. They sprawled on the ground, their bodies connected to the reins.

Jiang Yan was already in the carriage. When he saw Zhou Wen walk over, he waved at him. "Ah Wen, get in."

"Isn't it too ostentatious to drive this carriage out?" Zhou Wen got into the carriage and asked uneasily.

If they were to drive this carriage out of Old Dragon Cave, it would definitely attract the attention of countless people, even onlookers.

"No." Jiang Yan was very certain. He held a whip and whipped the two giant rabbits.

The two giant rabbits immediately began moving. They moved quickly, and finally, Zhou Wen understood what it meant to start a hare.

The two giant rabbits charged forward like arrows with the carriage in tow.

However, there was a cave wall in front of them. Just as the two giant rabbits were about to slam into the mountain wall, Zhou Wen almost jumped off the carriage to prevent himself from dying in the collision.

However, Zhou Wen ultimately held back the urge to jump. He knew that Jiang Yan wasn’t such a rash person.

Indeed, the black and white giant rabbits slammed into the mountain wall, but the mountain wall didn’t seem to exist. They pulled the beast carriage and charged in.

Zhou Wen watched the black and white giant rabbits pulling the beast carriage forward quickly. Streams of light rushed ahead of him and to his side, as though they had entered a spacetime tunnel. He couldn’t see anything around him at all. There were distorted beams of light everywhere.

“What carriage is this?” Zhou Wen could tell that the beast carriage was extraordinary as he looked at Jiang Yan.

“Speedy Solar Lunar Shuttle.” Jiang Yan continued when he saw that Zhou Wen was still in a daze, “The two rabbits pulling the carriage are Day, and the other is Night. When they are together, they can produce the ability to shuttle through space. Although they aren’t strong enough to reverse the flow of time, they can cross space and travel great distances in an instant. It’s best to travel with them.”

Zhou Wen was alarmed when he heard that. The two rabbits were definitely at the Mythical stage. Otherwise, it would be impossible for them to have such powers.

Although Zhou Wen had long felt that Jiang Yan wasn’t a simple person, he was still somewhat surprised that he had obtained such a Speedy Solar Lunar Shuttle.

After a while, the Speedy Solar Lunar Shuttle stopped.

Zhou Wen looked out of the carriage and realized that he wasn’t anywhere near Dragon Gate Grotto. He wasn’t even in Luoyang. There were towering mountain peaks that

pierced through the clouds everywhere. There were no signs of humans. There were primitive forests everywhere, and the air was so clean and fresh that it felt sweet.

“We must walk on our own for the rest of the journey. Even Day and Night won’t be able to go up.” Jiang Yan alighted the carriage and released the reins. The two rabbits flashed and escaped.

“Aren’t they your Companion Beasts?” Zhou Wen asked in surprise.

Jiang Yan shook his head and said, “No, I only temporarily invited them to pull the carriage. They aren’t Companion Beasts.”

Zhou Wen’s expression turned odd again. To be able to invite wild dimensional creatures to pull carriages wasn’t something an ordinary person could do.

Jiang Yan pointed at the mountain that went straight into the clouds and said, “We have to climb to the top of this mountain. However, this mountain is extraordinary. When we climb it later, we can only advance and not retreat. Under no circumstances are you to retreat. Otherwise, you will be doomed.”

“Why is that?” Zhou Wen asked, puzzled.

“This mountain is called Immortal Seeking. Legend has it that immortals live at the top of the mountain. Anyone who wishes to become an immortal can be reborn as an immortal if they can climb to the top of the mountain. Although this is only a legend, this mountain is indeed different. It has a terrifying taboo protecting it. Once someone steps into this mountain, they will definitely die if they take a step back.

There’s no reason. That’s the rule of this mountain,” Jiang Yan said.

I wonder if my Zero Taboo can restrain the taboo of Immortal Seeking Mountain. Zhou Wen thought to himself, but he didn’t plan on trying. All he did was look around the foot of the mountain, hoping to see if there was a tiny palm symbol.

Unfortunately, he didn’t see one. All he saw was a stone staircase spiraling up the mountain. It was like a heavenly staircase that pierced through the clouds, with no end in sight.

“There are many obstacles along the way, but with your willpower, I believe there won’t be any problems. Just remember that you can’t retreat,” Jiang Yan said as he stepped onto the stone steps.

Zhou Wen followed him. Just as he stepped onto the stone steps, he immediately felt an invisible force tugging at his body. His body sank slightly as he nearly fell onto the stone steps.

With every step Zhou Wen took to climb the stairs, he felt like he was carrying a mountain. After taking a few steps, his clothes were almost drenched in sweat.

Jiang Yan was no different. He could see that his hair was drenched in sweat.

The power on the stone steps was very strange. It didn’t constantly grow stronger, nor would it constantly weaken. This power was just right to reach the limits of Zhou Wen’s body.

In other words, Zhou Wen had to use all his strength to take every step.

After taking a few steps, Zhou Wen felt that he had expended a lot of his strength, but the power on the stone steps seemed to possess intelligence. It would also weaken relatively, but the effort Zhou Wen needed to walk was maintained at maximum.

The first step was the limit. If it was someone with a weak will, their will would quickly collapse and they would have the intention to retreat.

However, Jiang Yan had said that they absolutely could not retreat. Retreat meant certain death.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 580 - Immortal Seeking Path

Chapter 580 Immortal Seeking Path

They trudged up the mountain step by step. Although they could continue walking no matter how tired they were, seeing the stone steps that seemed to have no end threw one into despair.

As Jiang Yan walked in front, he said, “The ancients believe that there are immortals in the sky. Only by meeting immortals on high ground can one obtain the Great Dao’s heritage. Therefore, since ancient times, the East, West, South, and North Districts have myths regarding the Ascension. For example, in the fairy tales of the West District that we are more familiar with, a young man planted magic beans that ended up growing high into the sky. Then, he climbed up the beanstalk to a giant castle in the sky. There’s also the Foundational Tree legend of our East District.”

“Those are plants. It doesn’t seem to have anything to do with mountains, right?” Zhou Wen added.

“There are mountains too. Don’t many deities in myths and legends live on the mountain? Like the gods of Mount Olympus, the Immortal Palace on Kunlun Mountain, and Mount Buzhou that connects the heavens and earth,” Jiang Yan said as he walked.

Zhou Wen and Jiang Yan chatted not because they wanted to conclude anything, but it was a way to kill time. The

mountain was just too tall. They had to do their best with every step and they couldn’t walk fast. They did not know when they would finish climbing. It was really boring.

Furthermore, speaking could also eliminate some negative emotions, making one feel less despair.

“I wonder if these legendary things have corresponding dimensional zones? If there are, I really want to get a few magic beans to plant one. Then, I’ll take a visit to the giant castle in the sky. I want to know if there’s really a goose that can lay golden eggs and the beautiful girl trapped in the cage,” Zhou Wen said.

“I’m not sure if there are any magic beans, but I’ve seen the Fusang divine tree of the three divine trees overseas,” Jiang Yan said.

“Is there really a Fusang divine tree? Are there really ten Sun Golden Crows on that tree?” Zhou Wen asked curiously.

“I don’t know if there are Sun Golden Crows, but that tree grows in the sea. It’s so high that it’s unreachable. It’s covered in sun-like fruits. Just a glance from afar is enough to blind one. No human can approach it.” Jiang Yan paused before continuing, “It’s said that in ancient times, Hou Yi shot down nine suns while standing on the Fusang divine tree. If the legend is true, Hou Yi would definitely be the strongest among humans today.”

“If Hou Yi really exists, doesn’t that mean that the mighty figures in myths like Zhurong, Gonggong, and Kuafu exist as well? If we can also draw a bow and shoot down the sun in the future, drinking a river dry with a mouthful, and destroying a mountain with a single strike, that would be amazing…” Zhou Wen was somewhat excited when he thought of the scene.

“Why wait? If your Mythical pet is an offensive type, it shouldn’t be a problem to slice off a small mountain,” Jiang Yan said with a smile.

“It’s possible, but it’s just a tiny mountain. Even if it’s sliced off, it would be meaningless. At the very least, it should be able to split five famous peaks into two or slice off the entire Mount Everest,” Zhou Wen said.

“It’s probably impossible for an ordinary Mythical stage to reach that level,” Jiang Yan said.

As the two of them climbed up the mountain, they chatted, their stamina draining in the meantime. They panted heavily every few steps. Their clothes were drenched, as though they had just been scooped out of the water.

“What are you going to the mountaintop for? Don’t tell me you want to become an immortal?” Zhou Wen joked.

“I really want to seek immortality,” Jiang Yan said seriously.

Zhou Wen was slightly taken aback as he asked in disbelief, “Seek immortality? Aren’t the so-called immortals dimensional creatures?”

“Not entirely. On this mountain peak, there’s a cocoon. The creature inside the cocoon can be said to be a dimensional creature, but it’s not completely one,” Jiang Yan said.

“Guardian?” Zhou Wen exclaimed.

“I’m surprised you know about Guardians. That makes it easy to explain things. That’s right. Although there aren’t any immortals on this mountaintop, there’s a Guardian. My goal is that Guardian, but there’s a terrifying Mythical creature guarding it. I’m not its match alone, so I have to

find helpers.” Jiang Yan didn’t seem surprised that Zhou Wen knew about Guardians.

“Why are you looking for a Guardian? Kill it? Or is there another way to use it for yourself?” Zhou Wen was somewhat worried. Could Jiang Yan also know of the Spirit Casting Skill? If he knew it as well, would he be following Wang Mingyuan’s path in his search of a Guardian?

This wasn’t impossible. Before Wang Mingyuan tore out of the realm, he had given his research information and experience to Jiang Yan. Perhaps the Spirit Casting Skill was included.

“I’m afraid we won’t be able to kill the Guardian with our current strength. However, I’ve studied the information left behind by Teacher. As long as the method is right, we can obtain the Guardian’s loyalty. Since you know about Guardians, you should have read the information, right?” Jiang Yan said.

“I haven’t seen information about it, but I’ve seen a living Guardian before.” Zhou Wen recounted John and the six-winged seraphim to Jiang Yan.

“Senior Brother, you have to be careful. Those Guardians are probably unreliable,” Zhou Wen said.

Jiang Yan smiled again and said, “What’s absolutely reliable in this world? It’s just like how there are plenty of people who are betrayed by their business partners. There are also quite a number of people who have conflicts. Don’t tell me that one can’t earn money by not doing business? Everyone is just acting in their self-interests. Even blood relatives like parents and brothers can turn against each other and become enemies. Don’t treat the Guardian as personal

property and treat them as a partner. That way, it won’t be so difficult to accept certain developments.”

Zhou Wen was slightly taken aback. Jiang Yan’s words weren’t without reason, but Zhou Wen didn’t plan on choosing that path because he had too many secrets he couldn’t let others know.

Jiang Yan continued, “Since this is a path to break past the Epic stage, be it right or wrong, someone has to pass it before we know. I’ll try it first.”

The two of them chatted as they walked and exchanged some information regarding Guardians.

According to Jiang Yan, there was indeed an azure silk cocoon on the mountaintop. The Guardian inside might be more compatible with his cultivation attributes and he might have a chance of contracting the Guardian inside.

However, according to the information left behind by Wang Mingyuan, the most basic condition to form a contract with a Guardian was to defeat the Mythical creature guarding the cocoon. Otherwise, there was no way to approach the cocoon, much less form a contract.

The Mythical creature guarding the azure silk cocoon on the mountaintop was a white guardian beast that resembled a horse or a sheep. It had two horns and vertical eyes. It could speak the human language. Every word it said could become reality.

Previously, when Jiang Yan went up alone, the guardian beast only glanced at him and said “Scram.” Jiang Yan rolled down from the mountain peak, unable to control his body. He nearly died.

Jiang Yan had done a lot of research and guessed that the guardian beast was the legendary Bai Ze.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 581 - Immortal Opportunity Stone

Chapter 581 Immortal Opportunity Stone

“It’s impossible for us to kill it with our present strength, but I have a way to stall it.” Jiang Yan shared his thoughts.

Jiang Yan had an Epic Companion Beast known as Soundless Snake. It could block sounds from spreading within a small region. As long as they couldn’t hear Bai Ze’s voice, the power in its voice wouldn’t be effective.

Then, Jiang Yan prepared a Mythical Dark Domain Heavenly King. It was a Mythical Companion Beast from overseas. It had the ability to transform a certain area into a region of darkness and could restrain all kinds of vision-type abilities.

As long as Bai Ze was in the darkness, its eyes’ abilities would not be effective either.

Without the ability to speak and see, Bai Ze’s strength would greatly decrease. It wouldn’t even be able to see what Jiang Yan was doing.

At that moment, as long as Zhou Wen could hold back Bai Ze and attract its attention, Jiang Yan could take the opportunity to contract the Guardian in the cocoon.

“Is it impossible to use all vision-type skills in the darkness?” Zhou Wen asked.

“Probably so. I haven’t discovered any vision-type abilities that can be used in the region of darkness,” Jiang Yan said.

I wonder if Torch Dragon’s Bright Torch Vision World can be used in the region of darkness? Zhou Wen thought.

Their stamina consumption was immense, exhausting the duo. They stopped talking and walked forward without a word.

Zhou Wen gave it a try and switched his Life Soul to Zero Taboo. He realized that the strange force acting on him immediately vanished without a trace, making him feel much more relaxed. He couldn’t help but be overjoyed.

Soon, Zhou Wen saw the Zero Taboo crystal emit a terrifying glow, as though it wouldn’t last long before it burned to ashes. He knew that the taboo here was no trifling matter.

He hurriedly deactivated Zero Taboo. The strange force exerted on Zhou Wen again, tormenting him with every step he took.

Although Zero Taboo is useful, it’s only in its Primordial Body form. It can only last for a very short period of time. If I can advance to a Perfect Body, I might really be able to use Zero Taboo. It might even be able to restrain all kinds of taboos in the world, Zhou Wen thought to himself as he wondered how he could raise Zero Taboo to a Perfect Body.

Currently, among Zhou Wen’s Life Soul, only the Inverse Ancient Sovereign was an Evolved Body. The rest were still in their Primordial Body forms, so it was imperative to raise their levels.

The Zero Taboo is used to restrain the taboos of various mysterious lands. Doesn’t that mean that as long as I have

some understanding of those mysterious taboos, I can raise Zero Taboo? Zhou Wen didn’t know if this conjecture was right, but there was nothing wrong with trying it.

It just so happened that the taboo power of Immortal Seeking Mountain was extremely powerful. Zhou Wen had nothing else to do, so he decided to study it.

Zhou Wen switched his Essence Energy Art to Small Perfection of Wisdom. Under the effects of the Eight Perfections Wisdom Life Providence, his senses became extremely sharp, allowing him to sense the taboo powers of Immortal Seeking Mountain.

If the Eight Perfections Wisdom couldn’t resist the taboo powers, Zhou Wen only wanted to make his senses sharper to better understand the effects of the taboo power.

The taboo power of Immortal Seeking Mountain was indeed very strange. This kind of power didn’t harm others. It matched the person’s strength. It just happened to be at the peak that one could withstand. Every step one took required them to use all their strength. One couldn’t hesitate or their legs might go limp and end up falling down the mountain.

Although the path to becoming an immortal was difficult, as long as one’s willpower was firm, it wasn’t a dead end. However, this path seemed to have no end. Every step one took was extremely difficult. Even a person with a firm will would inevitably show signs of weakness over time. Therefore, very few people could reach the top of the mountain.

Zhou Wen felt the changes in the power in his body and found it strange and unpredictable.

If I take a step back, what changes will this taboo power have? Just as this thought surfaced in Zhou Wen's mind, he immediately nipped it in the bud.

Goods of every variety are nothing compared to the value of survival. I definitely can't take risks. Zhou Wen hurriedly steeled his resolve and continued walking forward.

When the sun was about to set, the two of them had only managed to climb around a thousand meters. When they looked up, they still couldn't see the end to the path. The stone steps circled around the clouds like a coiling dragon. Just one look made them feel a little dizzy.

Zhou Wen was just about to take out a bottle of water to hydrate himself when he heard Jiang Yan say, "We're reaching the Immortal Opportunity Stone ahead. You have to be careful after crossing it. If you continue walking up, there will be something that will try to entice you. You have to remember that no matter what happens, you mustn't retreat or you will die."

Zhou Wen knew that it wasn't easy to deal with things that Jiang Yan said with such seriousness, so he asked, "What will happen?"

"That's hard to say. Everyone's situation is different. You have to experience it before you know what it is," Jiang Yan answered.

Zhou Wen looked up and indeed, he saw a small platform beside the mountain path. On it was a huge boulder with the words "Immortal Opportunity."

However, there was nothing special about the stone. It was exactly the same as the ordinary mountain rocks on

Immortal Seeking Mountain. It just had two additional words engraved on it.

Soon, the two of them walked past the Immortal Opportunity Stone and took a few more steps. Zhou Wen didn’t sense anything different from before.

Just as Zhou Wen was about to say something, he saw Jiang Yan suddenly turn and strike at his head. His expression was ferocious as he said coldly, “You’ve been fooled. Die!”

The mountain path was narrow to begin with—it only allowed one person to walk along. Jiang Yan’s palm emitted a resplendent divine light as though a sun had smashed down. Zhou Wen had nowhere to hide. Apart from retreating, he could only take the brunt of Jiang Yan’s palm.

Zhou Wen’s expression didn’t change as he continued moving up the stairs. At the same time, he used his arms to shield himself from Jiang Yan’s palm.

Zhou Wen still remembered that Jiang Yan had warned him not to retreat no matter what happened. Furthermore, he believed that Jiang Yan wasn’t such a person.

With Jiang Yan’s character, even if he really wanted to harm him, he would have clearly explained why he was doing so. It was impossible for him to sneak an attack like this.

Therefore, Zhou Wen continued walking forward without any intention of counterattacking. If it was just an illusion, any counterattack would strike the defenseless Jiang Yan.

Indeed, Jiang Yan’s palm passed through his arm before Jiang Yan’s body dissipated.

Zhou Wen looked up and saw Jiang Yan walking in front of him. He had never turned his head.

If Zhou Wen hadn’t thought things through and allowed his body to automatically counterattack, Jiang Yan would probably have died from his strike.

What crappy immortal opportunity is this? It’s basically luring the demon in one’s heart, Zhou Wen thought.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 582 - Different Methods of Death

Chapter 582 Different Methods of Death

Jiang Yan walked in front while Zhou Wen followed behind. He moved up step by step. After passing the Immortal Opportunity Stone, it was another long and arduous journey.

The two of them drank and ate a little occasionally, almost without stopping. Even so, they took four days to reach the mountainside.

In just four days, the two of them had lost quite a bit of weight. Their eyes and cheeks were sunken, making them look like skin and bones.

The two rather handsome lads looked like hunched old men.

This wasn’t their fault. They used all their strength with every step. Their bodies were exhausted and they couldn’t stop to rest. The reason they were able to last until now was because of their extraordinary physiques. If it were an ordinary Epic stage, they probably wouldn’t be able to withstand it even if they didn’t die of exhaustion on the Immortal Seeking path.

Looking up, they still couldn’t see the mountain peak. All they saw was endless stone steps. Looking down, there was fog lingering around, and they couldn’t see anything. In this godforsaken place that prevented them from seeing the sky or the ground, the reason they knew that this was halfway

up the mountain was that there was the word ‘Half-Cliff’ engraved on a boulder beside them.

“Once we cross Half-Cliff, we still have halfway more to go. However, it’s even more difficult than the first half of the journey. Can you still hold on? If you can’t hold on, you can rest for a day on Half-Cliff’s platform before turning around and leaving the mountain. You won’t be affected by the taboo of Immortal Seeking Mountain. However, once you reach Half-Cliff’s platform, you can never go up the mountain again,” Jiang Yan said.

“We’re already here. No matter what, we have to go up and take a look. It’s impossible for me to give up halfway. I can still persist. Let’s continue,” Zhou Wen said.

“After Half-Cliff, if you continue walking forward, you will see things. When the time comes, no matter what you see, don’t speak or make a sound. Just close your mouth and walk forward, or something bad will happen,” Jiang Yan added.

“No speaking. Got it.” Zhou Wen nodded slightly, but he was somewhat puzzled.

The taboos on Immortal Seeking Mountain weren’t written anywhere. If Jiang Yan knew about these taboos, someone must have tried them. Otherwise, if it was really as Jiang Yan had said, he would have died if he took a step back. Zhou Wen refused to believe that Jiang Yan wouldn’t retreat without knowing about the taboo.

However, Zhou Wen didn’t dig into it since Jiang Yan didn’t say anything more. He continued walking behind Jiang Yan.

The stone steps on the first half of the mountain were very narrow, but after Half-Cliff, the stone steps became much

wider. It was more than enough for two to three people to walk side by side.

But now, the two of them couldn’t speak. If they were to walk side by side, it would be even worse if they accidentally spoke. Therefore, they continued walking one after another without saying a word, like two mutes.

Every step Zhou Wen took made him feel like his legs were trembling. No matter how powerful his Essence Energy Arts and Essence Energy Skills were, they were useless in this godforsaken place. Using external forces to strengthen his body would also increase the strange power. It would still push his body to its limits.

As he walked, Zhou Wen’s gaze accidentally swept across the stone steps in front of him. His pupils constricted as he nearly shouted.

If Jiang Yan hadn’t warned him beforehand, he would definitely have shouted. This was because there was a corpse lying in the stone path above. The corpse’s clothes and looks were identical to Zhou Wen’s.

Zhou Wen was puzzled, but he couldn’t say a word. All he could do was continue walking forward as he sized up the corpse by the side of the road. No matter how he looked at it, it was identical to him. However, the corpse had collapsed on the stone steps and wasn’t breathing.

It’s definitely the same as before—an illusion. Zhou Wen stopped looking at the corpse and continued walking upwards.

After walking for a while, he circled around a mountain ridge and saw another corpse on the stone steps ahead.

This time, he saw it even more clearly. It was Zhou Wen's corpse. What Zhou Wen couldn't tolerate was that it looked like his corpse but without any clothes covering it. Its limbs were spread wide open as it was nailed to the mountain wall by metal nails. It looked like it had died a tragic death.

Everything is an illusion… Everything is fake… I'll endure it… Zhou Wen secretly calmed himself down. Although he knew that it was only an illusion, it still infuriated him. The crux of the matter was that the person resembled him too much. Even the marks and scars on his body were identical.

As he walked further up, Zhou Wen saw several different ways of dying. Some were hanged to death, while others were cleaved into two. All the deaths were tragic.

However, he became immune to it after prolonged exposure. Along the way, he saw at least hundreds or thousands of different ways of dying. He was no longer surprised.

After walking for another seven or eight days, when the sun rose again, the two of them finally saw the top of the mountain. There were no buildings there, only a crooked tree of unknown species. The branches extended to the edge of the cliff.

On one of the branches of the crooked tree hung a huge green cocoon. On careful look, they saw that the cocoon wasn't in contact with the tree branch but was floating.

Beneath the crooked tree was a white beast. It was snow-white and had two horns on its head. There was a vertical eye on its forehead, but the vertical eye was closed. It was likely the Bai Ze that Jiang Yan had speculated.

Zhou Wen and Jiang Yan walked to the top of the mountain. Bai Ze had definitely discovered them, but it completely

ignored them. It continued resting and lying there, completely ignoring them. It didn’t even spare them a glance.

Zhou Wen had heard from Jiang Yan that the white beast wouldn’t take the initiative to attack them. This was also one of the main reasons why he had determined that the white beast was Bai Ze.

Bai Ze was a kind-hearted auspicious beast. It was knowledgeable and capable of human speech. It could identify all kinds of supernatural beings. Legend has it that it had been entrusted by Yellow Emperor to create a map of tens of thousands of supernatural beings for humans to easily identify them and avoid danger. It was one of the ancient divine beasts that were good at exorcism.

“Did you see those strange corpses earlier?” Jiang Yan asked Zhou Wen.

“Yes, all the corpses looked like me,” Zhou Wen answered.

“How many were there?” Jiang Yan asked again.

“I don’t remember. There were so many that I didn’t count them. There should be more than a thousand.” Zhou Wen paused and asked Jiang Yan, “Why are you asking this? Aren’t those illusions?”

Jiang Yan looked at Zhou Wen with a strange smile. “A thousand? That’s impressive.”

“What do you mean?” Zhou Wen didn’t understand what Jiang Yan was getting at.

Jiang Yan said with a smile, “Legend has it that the path to immortality is a process of transcending one’s mortal coils.

Every corpse illusion you see is a crime you once committed. Only by purging the sins you have committed can you not be killed by the Heavenly Tribulation when you become an immortal. You saw more than a thousand corpses—which means that you have committed more than a thousand crimes.”

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 583 - Backup Plan

583 Backup Plan

“It’s just a legend. It might not be accurate. I think any human will see that many corpses, right?” Zhou Wen naturally didn’t believe this. If it was really the process of transcending one’s mortal coils, why hadn’t he become an immortal considering how he finished the journey?

“I don’t know if it’s accurate, but I know a few people who once walked the Seeking Immortality path. One of them only saw three corpses, with the most being a hundred corpses,” Jiang Yan said.

“Then how many corpses did you see?” Zhou Wen asked Jiang Yan.

Jiang Yan glanced at the path they came from and said indifferently, “I don’t know. I didn’t count. The mountain wall along the way was filled with corpses. It’s like a mountain of corpses. All I saw were corpses, without a single part of the mountain exposed.”

“Then it’s even more unlikely to be right. How many people can a student like us kill? How can there be so much sin?” Zhou Wen looked at Jiang Yan. He actually didn’t believe that Jiang Yan could see so many corpses.

“Follow the plan.” Jiang Yan didn’t say anything else as he walked towards the crooked tree on the mountaintop.

As Jiang Yan walked, he summoned two Companion Beasts. The first was a black python with a mouth the size of a bowl. It was more than ten meters long and its entire body was pitch-black.

Strangely, the snake didn’t have eyes. It kept flicking its tongue.

The other Companion Beast was also black, but it was dressed as a warrior in black armor. It wore a black mask and had two sabers on its back. The scabbard and handle were also black. It was probably the Dark Domain Heavenly King.

Zhou Wen didn’t dare be negligent. He summoned Six-Winged and Golden Battle God Halberd while Torch Dragon appeared in the form of an eye mirror. Unless it was absolutely necessary, Zhou Wen didn’t plan on using Bright Torch Vision World.

Firstly, Bai Ze’s reputation was too terrifying. Zhou Wen wasn’t sure if the Bright Torch Vision World was effective against it. If it didn’t work and ended up provoking it, he would ultimately be the one suffering.

Secondly, Bai Ze didn’t take the initiative to attack others. Previously, when Jiang Yan approached the range of the crooked tree, it had only said “Scram”, causing Jiang Yan to roll down the mountain without killing him.

Only then did Bai Ze look up to glance at him. This glance left Zhou Wen alarmed. It didn’t look at Six-Winged or the Golden Battle God Halberd, but straight into Zhou Wen’s eyes.

Could it have already discovered Torch Dragon? Zhou Wen was alarmed.

Seeing that Zhou Wen was already prepared, Jiang Yan immediately ordered the Soundless Snake and the Dark Domain Heavenly King to use their powers.

The Soundless Snake opened its mouth. There were no venomous fangs inside, but visible ripples spread out from the mountaintop.

Almost at the same time, the Dark Domain Heavenly King pulled out the two sabers on his back and crossed them. A black light instantly devoured the entire mountain peak like a black hole.

Zhou Wen immediately felt his vision turn pitch-black. With the augmentation of Eight Perfections Wisdom and the Hell King Life Soul, his vision remained pitch-black. He couldn’t see or hear anything.

Unfortunately, Truth Listener is still evolving. I wonder if Truth Listener’s ability can break through the Soundless Snake’s Soundless Barrier? As Zhou Wen thought about it, he suddenly felt his eyes light up again. He could see and hear.

However, he could see that the entire mountain was enveloped in black. Furthermore, the sound waves produced spread out like water ripples.

“Let’s begin. Use your Companion Beast to attract Bai Ze’s attention. Don’t really fight it. Just attract its attention. It’s best if it can’t see or hear,” Jiang Yan said as he dived towards the crooked tree.

Zhou Wen ordered Six-Winged and Golden Battle God Halberd to surround Bai Ze using a pincer movement. At the same time, he made some noise to attract its attention.

Bai Ze continued lying on a huge rock under the tree, motionless.

Six-Winged and Golden Battle God Halberd lunged from the left and right. One stomped on the ground with its huge feet, leaving huge footprints on the rocks, while the tip of the Golden Battle God Halberd slashed across the ground, leaving a deep mark. Wherever the halberd tip touched the rocks, sparks flew everywhere.

However, due to the Soundless Barrier, their actions failed to produce any sound. Only Zhou Wen and Jiang Yan could hear thanks to the Soundless Snake's special treatment.

Bai Ze still didn't react and continued lying there, but Zhou Wen and Jiang Yan felt that something was amiss.

If Bai Ze really couldn't see or hear anything, then it shouldn't be so calm, right?

Indeed, when the Six-Winged and Golden Battle God Halberd approached the crooked tree, Bai Ze suddenly opened its mouth and spat out a word. "Freeze!"

Then, Six-Winged and Golden Battle God Halberd froze. They stopped there as though someone had pressed a pause button in a movie.

As for the Soundless Snake's Soundless Barrier, it was instantly torn apart by a force and shattered. As though it had suffered a heavy blow, the Soundless Snake collapsed to the ground.

Zhou Wen's face darkened. The Soundless Barrier was completely useless as it was destroyed by Bai Ze.

What was even more depressing was that the Six-Winged and Golden Battle God Halberd were frozen there. No matter how Zhou Wen commanded them, they remained motionless.

Six-Winged's eyes could still move, but its expression remained ferocious with its agape mouth, and its body couldn't move.

The Golden Divine Light at the tip of the Golden Battle God Halberd kept flickering, but the halberd was also unable to move.

Even worse, Zhou Wen and Jiang Yan were also frozen. The Dark Domain Heavenly King couldn't move either. Although his dark domain remained effective, no one could move. What was the use of the dark domain?

"Sorry, I underestimated Bai Ze's strength. I originally thought that the Soundless Barrier would last for a while, I never expected it to break in the blink of an eye," Jiang Yan said.

Zhou Wen made an attempt. Although he couldn't move his body, there was no problem with speaking. "We should have expected this. A famous divine beast like Bai Ze isn't that easily restrained."

"Don't worry. I still have a backup plan," Jiang Yan said.

"What's your backup plan? Why didn't you tell me beforehand?" Zhou Wen hurriedly asked when he heard that there was a way to turn the tables.

"There was no need to prepare for the backup plan. You just need to execute it. If I told you in advance, I'm afraid you

wouldn’t agree to it,” Jiang Yan said with a strange expression.

“We can’t move now. How do we execute it?” Zhou Wen asked.

“We can still move if we think of a solution. I’m just not sure if my backup plan will work,” Jiang Yan said.

“What is your backup plan?” Zhou Wen asked.

“I studied many myths and legends, and I eventually came to a conclusion. Bai Ze… might be a clean freak…” Jiang Yan’s expression turned odder.

“So what if it’s a clean freak?” Zhou Wen was momentarily at a loss as to what Jiang Yan was up to.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 584 - Bacteria

584 Bacteria

“Usually, a clean freak wouldn’t be willing to touch something dirty,” Jiang Yan explained.

Zhou Wen was enlightened. “You mean to say that you want us to dirty our bodies? Then, Bai Ze won’t be willing to touch us. You should have said so earlier. This isn’t anything difficult. It would have been better for me to make preparations earlier though. I’d have got some pot-bottom soot before coming…”

“That’s not the case. No matter how dirty our bodies are, it doesn’t matter to Bai Ze. This is because it doesn’t need to touch us at all. It only needs one word to finish us. If we’re dirty, it might attract its annoyance. It could chase us off the mountain, but after seeing how dirty we are, it might just throw us down the cliff to our deaths,” Jiang Yan said as he shook his head.

“Then what do you mean?” Zhou Wen really couldn’t figure out what Jiang Yan meant.

“What I mean is that perhaps we have a way to make Bai Ze unwilling to even look at us or even say a word to us,” Jiang Yan said.

“How is this possible? No matter how dirty we are, it’s impossible for it to not even look at us, right? Even if it doesn’t wish to look at us, it just needs to close its eyes. Then, it can just say a word to make us scram down the

mountain.” No matter how Zhou Wen thought about it, it was impossible for something like that to happen.

“Of course it’s possible. As long as you do as I say, you can definitely do it,” Jiang Yan said confidently.

“How?” Zhou Wen asked in disbelief.

“You’ll know when you read this.” Jiang Yan’s glabella shimmered with a purple light. His originally immobile body, like Zhou Wen’s, began moving. Then, he threw a book in front of Zhou Wen.

This only lasted for an instant. After doing all of this, the purple light between Jiang Yan’s eyebrows vanished and his body returned to a frozen state.

“Take a good look at the content of the comic book and you will know what to do,” Jiang Yan said.

Bai Ze clearly had absolute confidence in itself. Although it had heard Zhou Wen and Jiang Yan’s conversation and could understand what they were talking about, it didn’t mind at all. It looked at them as though they were two idiots.

From its point of view, no matter what Zhou Wen and Jiang Yan did, it only needed one word to finish off the two idiots.

Zhou Wen couldn’t move his body. Thankfully, his mouth could still move. He blew at the comic book on the ground and used the airflow to flip the pages.

This was one of the volumes of a comic book. There was zero context to what was happening, and Zhou Wen didn’t understand what it meant, but after reading for a while, his expression gradually changed.

The content of the comic book looked very normal, as though there was nothing special about it. It was just that the scene did not seem to contain any unbearable content.

Bai Ze lay there and secretly opened its eyes to steal a glance. Seeing that there was nothing wrong with the drawing, it closed its eyes and leisurely continued resting.

“Are you sure this will work?” Zhou Wen asked Jiang Yan with a strange expression after reading it.

Jiang Yan said with certainty, “Definitely.”

“Will Bai Ze kill us if we do this?” Zhou Wen asked again.

“Definitely not. Your blood will only make it feel that it has tainted its territory,” Jiang Yan said.

“Wait, what do you mean by saying that I’ve tainted its territory? Shouldn’t it be us?” Zhou Wen felt that something was amiss.

“Ah Wen, this matter can only be done by you. I can’t do it,” Jiang Yan said sincerely.

“We are all men. Why can I do it but you can’t?” Zhou Wen immediately retorted. He didn’t believe Jiang Yan’s nonsense.

“Actually, I’m also a clean freak. The severity isn’t any better than Bai Ze’s. That’s why I need your help. Otherwise, I could do it myself. I wouldn’t have to bring you here,” Jiang Yan continued sincerely. “It’s also because I’m a clean freak that I know this method will definitely succeed.”

“I don’t believe you! If you want to do it, we do it together. No way I’m doing it myself,” Zhou Wen said through gritted

teeth.

“Sorry, Ah Wen. I’ll make it up to you in the future.” As Jiang Yan spoke, the purple light on his glabella lit up again, allowing him to temporarily escape Bai Ze’s control.

In the next second, Jiang Yan flicked his hand and shot out a piece of paper. It landed right above Zhou Wen’s head.

After doing this, the purple light between Jiang Yan’s eyebrows dimmed again and he became immobile.

“What are you doing? What’s that on my head?” Zhou Wen looked up diagonally, but he couldn’t see anything above his head.

“This is an Epic Companion Beast named Head Paper Figurine. As long as it lands on your head, it can control your body. Then, whatever it does, your body will follow. Don’t worry. The Head Paper Figurine’s control of your body is similar to the control of a puppet. Your body is still fixed, but it doesn’t affect what you are needed to do…”

As Jiang Yan explained, the Head Paper Figurine stood up. It was a paper figurine cut out of yellow paper. It didn’t have a nose or eyes. It was a human-shaped paper figurine.

However, when it stood above Zhou Wen’s head, his originally immobile body began moving like a puppet, but it looked extremely stiff.

“Don’t worry. I’ve already gotten someone to teach it all the actions. It will complete them in one go at the fastest speed possible. Remember to say the lines…” Jiang Yan closed his eyes. He didn’t even want to look at the scene or even imagine it.

“No… No…” Zhou Wen’s eyes widened as he looked down. He watched helplessly as his hand pulled at his pants like lightning.

“Ah Wen, it will be hard on you. I’ll make it up to you in the future.” Jiang Yan closed his eyes with an ashamed expression.

However, all of a sudden, Jiang Yan’s expression changed drastically as he suddenly opened his eyes. His pupils darted sideways, but he didn’t see Zhou Wen.

The purple light between Jiang Yan’s eyebrows immediately erupted again, but it was already too late. Zhou Wen appeared behind him, revealing a devil-like smile as he held the Head Paper Figurine with one hand as it constantly struggled. However, it couldn’t escape his palm.

As for Zhou Wen’s other hand, he had already grabbed Jiang Yan’s pants and pulled them down. Then, he flew up and kicked Jiang Yan’s buttocks. Jiang Yan’s pupils immediately constricted as he rolled towards Bai Ze with a look of despair.

“Haha, Brother Bai Ze, take a closer look at the spot that this fellow has rolled over. Those places have already been contaminated by his filthy bacteria… The wind will cause the filthy bacteria to constantly spread… Soon, the entire mountain peak will be covered in dirty bacteria… Make sure you don’t let him scram down the mountain… Wherever he rolls will be tainted by dirty bacteria…” Zhou Wen said smugly when he suddenly saw a purple whip wrap around his leg at some point in time.

“Ah!” Jiang Yan, who was rolling towards Bai Ze, gritted his teeth and pulled. Zhou Wen’s pants ruptured as his body fell to the ground and also rolled towards Bai Ze.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 585 - Fairy Burial

Chapter 585 Fairy Burial

What was an obsessive-compulsive disorder patient most afraid of? Of course, it wasn’t something that could be seen. Whatever could be seen could be removed. For a patient with a serious obsession with hygiene, as long as something could be removed, it wasn’t a problem. They could spend a lot of time getting rid of it.

What they really couldn’t tolerate was the psychological hint.

Just like a clean freak who washed his hands after peeing. Turning on the faucet with his hand, he would feel that it was stained with bacteria from the balls. After washing his hands, his hands would be clean, but if he switched it off, he would be touching the balls’ bacteria on the faucet. Such repeated actions made it impossible to feel completely clean.

Unless it was a faucet that had automatic detection, a patient with a severe obsession with cleanliness could struggle in front of the sink for a long time.

Now, two sources of the balls’ dirty bacteria were rapidly rolling on the mountaintop. They tainted wherever they rolled with balls’ dirty bacteria.

If Bai Ze said “scram” now, the two huge sources of infection would continue rolling down the mountain, infecting the entire mountain.

If Zhou Wen hadn’t said the sentence, Bai Ze probably wouldn’t have thought too much into it. However, after Zhou Wen’s psychological cue, Bai Ze felt that no solution was appropriate to deal with the two dirty fellows.

He wanted to fix the two of them in place, but for some reason, it was useless against them.

Kill them? Bai Ze only felt that it would contaminate the entire mountain peak. Furthermore, it wasn’t a creature that could easily kill.

Now, Bai Ze didn’t even want to look at the two dirty sources of infection. It was as if it would be infected by the balls’ dirty bacteria if it looked at them.

Retreat! Slowly retreat!

An existence as powerful as Bai Ze was actually retreating.

We’re about to succeed… Zhou Wen was delighted when he saw that he and Jiang Yan were about to roll to the side of the crooked tree.

Although this move was rather despicable and shameless, it was good as long as it could achieve its goal. There was no one else here to see their sorry state, so there was no need to worry too much about it.

The only hateful thing was that Jiang Yan could clearly use this method himself, but he had dragged him over.

It took longer to describe, but it only took an instant for Zhou Wen to kick Jiang Yan to the point of the duo slamming into the crooked tree. The frightened Bai Ze failed to react in such a short period of time. It retreated from the

mountaintop with a look of horror and contempt, as though it had all been contaminated by them.

When he slammed into the tree, Zhou Wen had already summoned the Jade Crystal Spirit Armor and put it on. At the same time, he shouted at Jiang Yan, “Senior Brother Jiang, don’t put your clothes on. Otherwise, Bai Ze will definitely charge over when he sees you wearing your clothes. You won’t have the chance to contract the Guardian. You mustn’t fail.”

Jiang Yan wasn’t willing to listen to him. He was even faster than Zhou Wen. He had already summoned his armor and put it on. His first reaction wasn’t to pounce at the black cocoon but to smack away the dirt on himself.

This fellow is really obsessed with hygiene… Zhou Wen immediately rushed over when he saw Jiang Yan’s actions. He kicked him away and sent him flying towards the cocoon.

“Senior Brother, I’ll help you…” Zhou Wen shouted at Jiang Yan who had flown out.

Jiang Yan slammed into the cocoon like a cannonball. He held back the extreme discomfort in his heart and the urge to clean his body. He bit the tip of his tongue and spat out a mouthful of blood on the azure silk cocoon.

Zhou Wen watched as Jiang Yan’s blood slowly seeped into the cocoon. This was the first time he had seen someone contract a Guardian. He didn’t know if Jiang Yan’s method would succeed.

Bai Ze stood above a sea of clouds and saw that Jiang Yan’s blood had already fused into the cocoon. The expression on its face was abnormally complicated. It didn’t move. It just stood there, looking at the azure silk cocoon.

The azure silk cocoon absorbed Jiang Yan’s blood. There wasn’t much blood, but it quickly dyed the huge azure silk cocoon completely red before cracks began to appear on it. Pieces of the cocoon that were wrapped in silk fell off.

Azure light shot out from the openings; they looked extremely pure.

As the cocoon constantly shattered, Zhou Wen saw a curled body inside the cocoon. However, it was different from what Zhou Wen had imagined.

It was an azure-robed fairy with fluttering clothes. She didn’t share any characteristics with Bai Ze.

Zhou Wen originally imagined that the creatures inside the cocoon were typically related to the dimensional creatures protecting them. Just like the one in Ant City, she had some characteristics of an ant.

As for John’s six-winged seraphim, he had heard that the Mythical creature guarding the cathedral was an angel.

However, he had used a trick to circle around the angel and formed a contract with the six-winged seraphim. He had never really fought the angel.

Under that situation, John hadn’t truly obtained the six-winged seraphim’s recognition. Now that Jiang Yan had used a trick, Zhou Wen was worried that he wouldn’t be able to obtain the true recognition of the Guardian. It would be terrifying if he had to pay a certain price to contract the Guardian.

Could this guardian also be from the Association of Eunuchs? An indescribable scene flashed across Zhou Wen’s mind as he looked at Jiang Yan with a strange expression.

As Zhou Wen was in thought, the cocoon had completely shattered. Azure vines appeared out of thin air and circled around the azure fairy.

When the azure vines transformed into beams of light that resembled dragons that rose into the sky, they shattered and fell, turning into flower petals that filled the sky.

The azure-robed fairy actually turned pink amidst the petals. The petals that filled the sky danced as the fairy moved.

The fairy's gaze was calm as she walked to Jiang Yan with the flower petals. She extended her hand and said to him, "My name is Fairy Burial. Are you willing to let me become your Guardian and fight with you?"

"I am," Jiang Yan answered seriously.

"As you wish." Fairy Burial's palm pressed on Jiang Yan's forehead. At the point of contact, a pink light spread out.

At that instant, Fairy Burial's body transformed into countless petals that surged towards Jiang Yan, condensing into a floral armor that completely enveloped Jiang Yan's body.

As more and more petals gathered on the armor, the original pink color turned red. The red gradually turned dark red before turning purple. When all the petals fused into the floral armor, the armor turned dark purple. It looked strange, yet gorgeous.

The floral armor looked extremely beautiful as though it was a perfect piece of art, but for some reason, Zhou Wen seemed to sense the aura of a mountain of corpses and a sea of blood from the gorgeous armor. It left him horrified.

As the floral armor fused with Jiang Yan’s body, an unimaginable power erupted from him. This power was no longer at the Epic stage. It was shocking.

The Thearch is right. The Guardian’s power can indeed allow humans to enter the Mythical stage. However, this advancement is mainly due to the Guardian armor, not the human itself, Zhou Wen thought.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 586 - Two Ways to Advance to the Mythical Stage

Chapter 586 Two Ways to Advance to the Mythical Stage

“Sorry for disturbing,” Jiang Yan, who was wearing floral armor, cupped his fists towards the clouds where Bai Ze was.

Bai Ze’s eyes drooped as though it was pondering over something. A moment later, it glanced at Jiang Yan and Zhou Wen before turning around and disappearing in the blink of an eye.

“Senior Brother, congratulations on obtaining the Guardian as you wished.” Zhou Wen hurriedly went forward to congratulate him.

“Do you think I’ll forgive you just like that? What you did to me was unforgivable…” Jiang Yan stared at Zhou Wen as the corners of his mouth gradually curled up.

Zhou Wen cursed inwardly before turning to run down the mountain.

However, it was already too late. Jiang Yan’s finger streaked across the void and a flower that resembled a rose appeared between his fingers. The blood-red flower was beautiful.

“Sixth Sacrifice of the Fairy Burial!” With Jiang Yan’s voice, the flower flew out and instantly vanished.

When the flower appeared again, it was already stuck in Zhou Wen's hair. It stood straight as though it was a lone flower growing above a grave.

Zhou Wen immediately found himself immobilized as though he was a dead person. Not only was his body unable to move, but even his heart and breathing came to a stop. He collapsed flat on the ground.

Although his bodily functions had completely stopped, he was still conscious and could sense everything around him.

Jiang Yan's fingers moved slightly as the flower in Zhou Wen's hair tilted slightly. Zhou Wen opened his eyes and could move his mouth, but his body remained motionless.

"Senior Brother, stop fooling around…" Zhou Wen said.

"How can you call this fooling around? I'm doing this to thank you for your help…" Jiang Yan said through gritted teeth as he kicked Zhou Wen's ass.

…

When Zhou Wen returned to school, it was already half a month since he had left campus.

After Jiang Yan obtained a Guardian, his strength had indeed become very powerful. This strength was somewhat different from having a Companion Beast.

Companion Beasts were ultimately external forces, preventing them from truly improving their basic stats and bodily functions.

However, the armor transformed from a Guardian could fuse with one's body to a certain extent. It allowed a human's

body to possess the attributes and characteristics of the Guardian. This was a fundamental improvement that directly pushed one into the Mythical stage.

However, this improvement was limited to times when fused with the Guardian armor. After separating from the Guardian armor, Jiang Yan would still be at the Epic stage. His body hadn’t advanced to the Mythical stage.

However, Jiang Yan was indeed very strong when he wore the Guardian armor. The Guardian had Essence Energy Skills, Life Providence, Life Soul, and Wheel of Destiny.

With a Guardian, it was equivalent to having an additional Mythical body.

Jiang Yan used all sorts of powerful powers in a way far stronger than when John used the six-winged seraphim. It was unknown if the Fairy Burial was stronger than the six-winged seraphim, or was it because Jiang Yan was stronger than John, or perhaps both.

This left Zhou Wen somewhat tempted, but he quickly rejected this idea. Unless he was at his wits’ end, he wouldn’t be willing to take the path of contracting a Guardian.

Even if there was really no way out, he still had the method of Spirit Casting to try. However, Spirit Casting seemed to be harder and more dangerous than contracting a Guardian.

From what Zhou Wen knew, there were only two paths for humans to advance to the Mythical stage. He had never heard of anyone advancing to the Mythical stage purely with their bodies.

I should first raise my Life Soul to the Perfect Body. Perhaps there will be a solution when the time comes. Unless it’s absolutely necessary, it’s best I don’t take those two paths. This trip to Immortal Seeking Mountain gave Zhou Wen some ideas.

He could definitely use the mysterious taboo power in the dimensional zone to train his Zero Taboo Life Soul.

However, since he couldn’t find the tiny palm symbol on the Immortal Seeking Mountain, Zhou Wen couldn’t run to Immortal Seeking Mountain himself. Therefore, he planned on giving it a try at Small Buddha Temple.

After entering the game, he switched to the Zero Taboo Life Soul. Without using Blood Meditation, the blood-colored avatar ascended the stone steps of Small Buddha Temple.

As expected, Zero Taboo lit up. However, it wasn’t as terrifying as the other places. It was still within the acceptable range.

As Small Buddha Temple’s forbidden power ate into him, Zero Taboo became brighter and brighter as though it was about to ignite.

This level of taboo power was still within the limits of Life Soul’s tolerance. It was like steel that was undergoing tempering in a furnace. Although burning could reduce the crystal’s size, it also became purer.

It’s indeed useful… Zhou Wen was overjoyed. Zero Taboo could be said to be an excellent life-saving ability. In the future, when he headed to various mysterious dimensional zones, he would definitely encounter unimaginable taboo powers. When that happened, he would have to rely on Zero Taboo to save his life.

If Zero Taboo could be upgraded to a Perfect Body, it would undoubtedly be extremely useful to Zhou Wen.

However, Zhou Wen felt that it was a little too slow to raise Zero Taboo that way. Furthermore, staying in-game at Small Buddha Temple prevented him from farming monsters.

Therefore, Zhou Wen decided to head to Small Buddha Temple in real life to train his Zero Taboo Life Soul. At the same time, he could use his phone to farm monsters. This meant that neither action delayed the other.

Zhou Wen was about to pack his things and head to Small Buddha Temple when he heard the doorbell ring.

When he opened the door, he saw Wang Lu bringing the chick and antelope over. When Zhou Wen wasn’t around, the two of them would run to Wang Lu. Zhou Wen couldn’t be bothered to pick them up.

“I’ll return Little Feifei and Little Yangyang to you. You have to take good care of them in the future. Don’t just leave them in the dorm,” Wang Lu said to Zhou Wen.

“Got it,” Zhou Wen answered.

Wang Lu bit her lip and said, “I’m leaving.”

“Where are you going?” Zhou Wen was slightly taken aback. When he snapped to his senses, he said, “Didn’t your uncle agree to let you stay in school to study? Did he go back on his word?”

Wang Lu shook her head and said, “That’s not the case. I’m about to advance to the Epic stage, so I have to return.”

“What does advancing to the Epic stage have to do with returning?” Zhou Wen was somewhat puzzled.

“The Essence Energy Art I cultivate is different from others. Every advancement will result in a regression. After I advance to the Epic stage, I will return to the Mortal stage for a while. Only by cultivating back to the Epic stage can it be stable. During this period of time, my body will be prone to injury. Therefore, Father wants me to return home to advance to the Epic stage,” Wang Lu said.

“So that’s how it is. Then you really should return.” Zhou Wen felt that it was too troublesome for Wang Lu to cultivate this Essence Energy Art. However, the might of such a troublesome Essence Energy Art definitely was extraordinary.

As though it understood Wang Lu’s intention to leave, the antelope walked to her side. The chick also flew to her shoulder as though it was unwilling to part with her.

Wang Lu hugged the chick and stroked the antelope’s head. She said with a smile, “If you can’t bear to part with me, come home with me. After all, your master doesn’t care much about you. I don’t know how much hardship you will suffer if you follow him.”

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 587 - Little Buddha Temple“s Chance Encounter

Chapter 587 Little Buddha Temple“s Chance Encounter

Wang Lu had only jokingly asked. Even if the chick and antelope really followed her, she couldn’t take Zhou Wen’s pets away.

After rearing the chick and antelope for so long, how could she not know that the origins of these two dimensional creatures were extraordinary?

However, just as Wang Lu asked that, the chick that was extremely affectionate to her flapped its wings and flew back to Zhou Wen. It turned its face to the side as though it didn’t know her.

Although the antelope wasn’t that heartless, it had no intention of following her. It slowly walked back to Zhou Wen’s side.

“How infuriating. The pet follows after its owner. They are all heartless cheats. They only know how to scrounge for free food and drink.” Wang Lu angrily pointed at the chick and said, “I dote on you the most. I give you everything that’s good. You little cheat…”

Zhou Wen was somewhat surprised as well. The antelope following him could be reasoned away as having other

motives, but he never expected the chick to be so determined.

This fellow was usually very close to Wang Lu and despised Zhou Wen. He never expected it to stand on Zhou Wen’s side at such a critical moment.

“When are you leaving?” Zhou Wen asked Wang Lu.

“Someone will pick me up tonight,” Wang Lu said.

“I’ll inform the students in the club to wave you off,” Zhou Wen said.

“There’s no need. I don’t like parting scenes.” Wang Lu shook her head slightly before looking at Zhou Wen and saying, “You still owe me a lot of food. I’ve recorded all of it in a notebook. How are you going to repay me?”

“Can I get a discount?” Zhou Wen asked.

“Of course not.” Wang Lu glared at him.

“Then what do you want me to do?” Zhou Wen said as he spread out his hands.

“Just remember this debt.” Wang Lu put away her notebook and turned around to walk out of Four Seasons Garden. After taking a few steps, she stopped and said to Zhou Wen with her back facing him, “If you can’t stand staying in the An family in the future, remember to look for me in the capital. You can work while paying me back.”

With that said, Wang Lu left Four Seasons Garden along the small trail.

Zhou Wen watched her leave and was somewhat puzzled. He originally imagined that the four years in college would be relatively safe, but fate was just so unpredictable with people he was familiar with leaving one by one.

I hope there's still a chance to meet again. Zhou Wen really wasn't sure if he could see Wang Lu again. Once the dimensional zones' restrictions failed, the roads between the major cities would definitely be cut off. To go from Luoyang to the capital would probably be difficult.

At the end of the day, without strength in the future, there was probably nothing one could do. They might not even have the chance to live, so Zhou Wen wanted to raise his strength quickly.

He didn't want to become an existence like Wang Mingyuan or contract a Guardian. He wanted to see if he could forge his own path.

Can humans definitely not advance to the Mythical stage with their bodies? Zhou Wen didn't believe that it was set in stone. Since humans could advance to the Legendary and Epic stage, why couldn't they advance to the Mythical stage?

He went all the way to Small Buddha Temple. This was a restricted zone that prevented outsiders from approaching. However, Zhou Wen had An Sheng's pass, so he wasn't barred from entering.

According to what Zhou Wen knew, there were two Mythical Companion Eggs in Small Buddha Temple. However, no one had managed to master the Small Perfection of Wisdom, so no one had been able to take them away.

An Tianzuo had set this place as a forbidden zone, preventing outsiders from getting close. It was also because he didn’t wish for any enemy faction to master the Small Perfection of Wisdom and obtain the benefits.

Zhou Wen walked up the stone steps in front of Small Buddha Temple and the Zero Taboo Life Soul immediately lit up.

Zhou Wen walked all the way to Small Buddha Temple. He originally planned on finding a place to sit down and game, but just as he entered Small Buddha Temple, he saw a person standing in the yard.

Although he could only see her back, Zhou Wen still recognized her.

Why is An Jing here? Zhou Wen frowned slightly when he saw her back.

An Jing was standing in front of the Small Perfection of Wisdom Sutra’s stone monument, reading the scriptures. When she sensed someone approaching, she turned her head and saw Zhou Wen. She also frowned slightly.

Ever since the coldness in An Jing’s body was melted by Zhou Wen, An Jing hadn’t suffered a relapse again. Her cultivation level had also advanced by leaps and bounds.

In terms of talent, as siblings, An Jing’s talent wasn’t inferior to An Tianzuo’s. However, her congenital ailment made her progress slow when she cultivated the Sun Strafe Art. Otherwise, her achievements would have far exceeded what it was now.

Now that she did not have relapses, An Jing began to seek a breakthrough to the Epic stage.

The Sun Strafe Art was extreme Yang. It was an Essence Energy Art that focused on combat. To figure out its profundity and condense a Life Soul, she had to constantly challenge herself and surpass herself.

This challenge wasn’t only limited to the cultivation of her body, but it also required the cultivation of her mind and will. She had been in Small Buddha Temple for many days to see the Small Perfection of Wisdom Sutra stone monument. It wasn’t to cultivate the Small Perfection of Wisdom Sutra but to use it to train herself.

This training method was very dangerous. If she didn’t control it well, it might cause irreparable damage to her body and mind. However, An Jing was confident that she could control herself.

Upon seeing Zhou Wen, An Jing felt mixed emotions. She was originally angry that Zhou Wen had taken away her qualifications. She had always believed that he was far inferior to her. She even felt that Ouyang Lan was biased, so she had thrashed him. Instead of saying that she was targeting Zhou Wen, it was better to say that she was displeased with Ouyang Lan.

However, what happened after that exceeded An Jing’s expectations. Zhou Wen’s repeated achievements made her look at him in a different light. In just a year, he had advanced from the Mortal stage to the Epic stage, surpassing her in terms of level. He had even accidentally removed her ailment.

Although An Jing didn’t pay much attention to the Sunset Army, she was still a member of the An family. She would still get wind of Zhou Wen’s matters, so she couldn’t help but secretly pay attention to him.

However, many of the rumors regarding Zhou Wen left An Jing in disbelief. She couldn’t believe that Zhou Wen had done those shocking things. She felt as though she had been left behind by him.

If it were anyone else, they might have blamed themselves. They would blame it on the qualifications that originally belonged to her, only to have them taken away by Zhou Wen.

However, An Jing was clearly not such a person. Therefore, she worked harder to become stronger. She believed that even without the qualification, she was still better than Zhou Wen.

Zhou Wen and An Jing had nothing to say. Since An Jing was here, he decided to enter the temple hall. That way they wouldn’t affect each other.

As Zhou Wen already had Truth Listener on him, he didn’t trigger the power of the three-faced Buddha when he entered the temple hall again.

After finding a place to sit, Zhou Wen took out his phone to game.

Although he could get the blood-colored avatar to come to Small Buddha Temple to double the cultivation effects, Zhou Wen didn’t think it was necessary. He still had to grind dungeons and farm the rare dimensional creatures daily.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 588 - Ending the Grudge

Chapter 588 Ending the Grudge

Zhou Wen gamed in the temple hall and didn’t pay much attention to An Jing.

However, An Jing couldn’t ignore Zhou Wen. Although he was inside the temple hall and An Jing couldn’t see him, she had a nagging feeling that there was a pair of eyes looking at her.

I’m not inferior to you. An Jing forced herself to focus and continued reading the Small Perfection of Wisdom Sutra.

Perhaps it was because of the catfish effect. Ever since Zhou Wen had come, An Jing felt that she could persist even more. Her improvement seemed to be faster.

In the past, An Jing would feel that her body and mind had reached their limits after reading the Small Perfection of Wisdom Sutra for an hour. She could hardly withstand any longer.

However, for some reason—perhaps because she felt that Zhou Wen was watching her from inside—An Jing could now last for an hour and a half. She felt that she hadn’t reached her limit.

Zhou Wen had no idea that he had such an effect on her. He leaned against a pillar in the temple hall and gamed.

The blood-colored avatar entered Deer Terrace Pavilion again. The fake immortals on the first two levels had been

eliminated. Zhou Wen controlled the blood-colored avatar to ascend to the highest third level.

Could The Thearch be on the third level? If she's really here, I can find her weakness in-game. Once I can defeat her, I can teach her a lesson in reality. Zhou Wen was somewhat excited. After getting the blood-colored avatar to ascend to the third level, he quickly sized up the situation inside.

It was similar to the second level. There was only one dimensional creature on the third level. It was a cold, white-robed female immortal sitting on a throne.

Could she be The Thearch? Zhou Wen guessed but didn't waste any time. He directly ordered Torch Dragon to use the Bright Torch Vision World and look at the white-robed female immortal.

Zhou Wen also stared at the white-robed female immortal. She waved her hand and a white jade lute appeared in her arms. She strummed the strings with her five fingers and immediately produced a terrifying sound wave.

Thankfully, Zhou Wen was prepared by using the Demon Dragon True Body, but he was still sent flying by the sound wave. He spat out blood and slammed into the stone pillar in the hall.

However, almost at the same time, the white-robed female immortal was pulled into Torch Dragon's Bright Torch Vision World. A notification of the death of a Jade Lute Spirit appeared on the screen.

So it's a Jade Lute Spirit. It's not Demon Consort! Zhou Wen was somewhat disappointed.

Zhou Wen had already seen the first two of the legendary three demons of Xuan Yuan—Nine-Headed Pheasant Spirit, Jade Lute Spirit, and Nine-Tailed Fox, but there was no sign of the Nine-Tailed Fox.

Although a Nine-Tailed Fox's phantom image would appear when flying towards Deer Terrace Pavilion from the sky, it was only a phantom, not the real body. The Bright Torch Vision World could only act on physical bodies, so it was useless against the phantom.

He made the blood-colored avatar search the third level. Logically speaking, Deer Terrace Pavilion wasn't that simple. Furthermore, he was certain that the Jade Lute Spirit was definitely not The Thearch.

However, Zhou Wen searched the three levels of the ancient building thoroughly several times, but he didn't find anything. There weren't any dimensional crystals, much less treasure.

From the looks of it, the true secrets of Deer Terrace Pavilion should be underground, but where's the entrance? There's no hole in-game. How can I enter? Zhou Wen had attempted to use Torch Dragon to attack Deer Terrace Pavilion, but it seemed to have some mysterious power protecting it. Even the Bright Torch Vision World couldn't break through it.

Zhou Wen circled the Deer Terrace Pavilion countless times, but he failed to find the underground entrance.

Since he couldn't find the entrance, Zhou Wen had no choice but to temporarily give up and continue grinding other dungeons. At the same time, he trained his Zero Taboo Life Soul in Small Buddha Temple.

For the next few days, Zhou Wen spent most of his time in Small Buddha Temple. Every time he came, he would see An Jing staring at the Small Perfection of Wisdom Sutra stone monument.

One day, Zhou Wen was grinding when he suddenly saw a bright glow from the yard. The light shone in from the door of the temple hall, illuminating the interior.

Zhou Wen frowned slightly and walked out to take a look. He saw An Jing standing in front of the stone monument, emitting wisps of light. A sun-like projection condensed on her body.

The projection looked somewhat similar to the Ancient Sovereign that Zhou Wen had condensed. They were both light-based projections with an anthropomorphic character.

The difference was that the Ancient Sovereign was a pure human-shaped projection. As for An Jing’s projection, it looked like it was holding a bow made of light. Furthermore, the projection looked more feminine. It wasn’t as brawny as the Ancient Sovereign and was slightly slimmer.

The Sun Strafe Art is indeed somewhat similar to the Ancient Sovereign Sutra, but the difference is still there. Zhou Wen watched for a while and was about to return to the temple to continue grinding when An Jing stopped him.

“Zhou Wen, it’s time to settle our grudge,” An Jing said as she stared at him.

“Is there anything between us that needs to be resolved?” Zhou Wen turned around and asked An Jing.

An Jing’s eyes narrowed slightly. “I once defeated you. Don’t you want to beat me?”

“I’ve never treated you as my opponent.” Zhou Wen shook his head slightly and prepared to return to the temple hall.

“Stop.” Zhou Wen’s words stirred An Jing’s fighting spirit. Her Life Soul fused with her body, causing her body to emit a sun-like glow. A bow condensed from light appeared in her hand.

Zhou Wen’s words could be understood as never treating An Jing as an enemy, but it could also be understood as he had never thought much of An Jing. An Jing clearly believed that Zhou Wen was referring to the latter.

She pulled open the Light Bow in her hand and pointed at Zhou Wen’s back as she continued, “Take this arrow from me. After which, the grudge between us will be written off.”

Just as An Jing said that, she suddenly felt her vision blur. Zhou Wen’s body emitted light that was even more dazzling than the light on her body. As for him, he was already in front of her. His sun-like fist was about to strike her face.

An Jing gritted her teeth and retreated, raising her bow to block.

Boom!

An Jing was sent flying with her bow and arrow by Zhou Wen’s punch. Like a cannonball, she traversed more than ten meters and slammed into the temple’s courtyard wall.

Wah!

She spat out a mouthful of blood as the light on her body dimmed and she fell to the ground.

“As you wish. Don’t bother me again in the future.” Zhou Wen really wasn’t in the mood to play such childish games with An Jing.

After returning to the temple hall, Zhou Wen continued grinding. An Jing sat on the ground in a daze, motionless for quite some time.

She still remembered that she had defeated Zhou Wen with one strike, but now, she couldn’t even withstand a single punch from him.

After a long while, An Jing wiped the blood from the corner of her mouth and stood up. Her eyes gradually turned resolute as she glanced in the direction of the temple hall before turning to head out of Small Buddha Temple.

I have to defeat you. Although her goal was the same as before, An Jing’s attitude was completely different.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 589 - Do You Want to Become a God?

Chapter 589 Do You Want to Become a God?

Luoyang, An family.

“Brother, I wish to join the military,” An Jing came in front of An Tianzuo and said firmly.

“Why?” An Tianzuo asked.

“I’ve already advanced to the Epic stage. What I can learn in school is very limited. I need a place where I can improve faster.”

An Jing hesitated for a moment before saying, “I know this will put you in a difficult position. Mom will definitely not agree, but you will help me, right, Brother?”

“Have you really thought it through? The military isn’t a school. Although it also deals with dimensional zones, those unknown dimensional zones will be hundreds or thousands of times more dangerous than the dimensional zones you’ve come into contact with before,” An Tianzuo stared at An Jing and asked sternly.

“I’ve thought it through,” An Jing answered seriously.

“Alright, you are my precious sister after all.” An Tianzuo stood up and patted An Jing’s head. He said with a smile, “Tell me, where do you want to be deployed?”

“Chess Mountain,” An Jing answered.

An Tianzuo’s expression changed slightly. “Why choose that?”

“Because it’s the most dangerous place,” An Jing answered.

“You can go anywhere other than Chess Mountain.” An Tianzuo firmly rejected An Jing.

“Apart from Chess Mountain, I’m not going anywhere else.” An Jing looked at An Tianzuo without backing down.

An Tianzuo’s gaze softened. He could be ruthless to anyone, but he could do nothing to An Jing and Ouyang Lan.

“I can let you go to Chess Mountain on one condition.” An Tianzuo paused before continuing, ” Little Dao must go with you. During this period of time, she needs to be by your side at all times. You can’t shake her off.”

“Alright.” An Jing knew that this was An Tianzuo’s biggest compromise. If she didn’t agree, An Tianzuo definitely wouldn’t let her go to Chess Mountain.

“How long do you plan on being there?” An Tianzuo asked again.

“I’ll return after my Life Soul advances to a Perfect Body,” An Jing said.

After An Jing left, An Tianzuo called An Sheng over and told him about her going to Chess Mountain before getting him to make the arrangements.

“Isn’t Chess Mountain too dangerous? Although Little Saber is following Miss Jing, no one can guarantee her safety if a

large-scale break-out happens at Chess Mountain," An Sheng said worriedly.

"Don't underestimate my sister. Besides, Chess Mountain shouldn't have any major problems in a short period of time. Just do as I say." An Tianzuo paused before saying, "Have you investigated the origins of the Companion Beasts that have recently been listed?"

"The various factions of the Federation are investigating. We can roughly confirm that most of the Companion Beasts come from overseas. There's also a few that have been secretly nurtured by various local bigshots," An Sheng replied.

"Indeed. From the looks of it, there will be problems with the ranking soon," said An Tianzuo after some thought.

With a large number of Mythical Companion Beasts listed, Zhou Wen's Six-Winged Guardian Dragon ranking had been demoted to seventeenth. As for the hundred ranks, it had already reached 99, leaving only one empty spot.

The number one spot on the ranking board was still firmly occupied by the Primordial Sword Immortal. The Death of the Underworld was still second. The other top ten rankings had suffered some drops.

Many of the Companion Beasts on the rankings had never been heard of by the Federation.

That night, the black cubes around the world lit up again.

As the black cubes had recently lit up more frequently, people were somewhat numb to it. Only people who passed by on the streets would pay attention to which Companion Beasts would appear on the rankings. It wasn't like the past

where many people would especially get up in the middle of the night to take a look.

A peacock appeared on the cubes' screens all over the world. It was gorgeous and elegant. Soon, this Companion Beast named Thousand-Eyed Peacock was ranked in the top twenty. It happened to be in front of the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon, pushing the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon back one spot.

The hundred spots were completely filled. The people who were watching in front of the cube believed that it was about to end. This was what had happened in the past.

However, the cubes didn't turn black again. After the ranking screen disappeared, a new image appeared on the screens.

The scene revolved like countless stars were swirling. As the "camera" zoomed in, the screen seemed to shuttle through billions of light-years before gradually turning black.

Everyone was puzzled as they looked at the cube screen, unsure of what was happening.

When the screen lit up again, it had already turned into an emerald-green grassland. There were colorful flowers embellishing it. All the plants emitted a gentle divine glow as though they were protected by a deity.

On the grassland, there was a huge tree. The tree was like a divine tree, also emitting a divine glow as it produced resplendent fruits.

Every fruit was crystalline and seemed to have billions of stars swirling inside. Through the screen, one could sense the terrifying might emitted by the fruits.

As the camera zoomed in, the screen froze under the tree. There was a handsome man with white hair and a white robe sitting there. On his head was a pair of crystal-like dragon horns.

He sat cross-legged under the tree with his eyes closed. He was like a deity that no one could desecrate. It was as though looking straight at his face was an act of disrespect to a deity.

“So handsome… Who’s the man under the tree? Is he human? Or a Companion Beast?” Many women’s eyes lit up when they saw the man sitting under the tree.

However, the faces of those who knew that man changed drastically, especially the members of the six families. Their expressions were so ugly that they were about to freeze.

An Tianzuo stood in front of the floor-to-ceiling windows on the top floor of a skyscraper. His gaze passed through the night sky and landed on the large square screen in the distance. An Sheng stood beside him and said with a strange expression, “Wang Mingyuan… Could it be that these cubes were his work?”

“I’m not sure if it’s his work, but it looks like something is about to happen,” An Tianzuo said indifferently as he looked at the screen.

The members of the six families began to gather in front of the cubes, including the Special Inspector Bureau.

The originally silent night became rowdy. Countless people who were sleeping were woken up by their ringing phones. The lights that were constantly switched on illuminated the cities’ night sky.

Shen Yuchi, Qiao Siyuan, and company were all staring at the screen. Many of the inspectors were busy with their work. This was the first time Wang Mingyuan had truly appeared since he charged into the dimensional zone.

Although they had not seen Wang Mingyuan in person ever since that fateful night, the bureau had fought Wang Mingyuan for a long time on an intellectual level. Now, there were quite a number of high-level experts in the Federation who had secretly entered a dimensional zone after undergoing mutation. This was clearly Wang Mingyuan’s doing.

Although the bureau had been trying their best to prevent this from happening, the results were minimal.

The citizens around the world also began to focus on the cube’s screen. Although many people didn’t know Wang Mingyuan’s identity, they also felt that something was amiss.

“Do you want to become a god? Then fight.” Wang Mingyuan sat under the tree with his eyes closed. His expression was calm and composed as he slowly extended his right hand that emitted a divine glow. A fruit dropped from the divine tree and landed in his hand.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 590 - Divine Frui

Chapter 590 Divine Frui

Wang Mingyuan held the fruit in his right hand and rubbed his thumb on it a few times. Wherever he rubbed, divine light would flow from the fruit.

In the next second, Wang Mingyuan flipped his palm and the fruit fell onto the grass before rolling to the side.

Wang Mingyuan remained unmoved. He continued sitting under the tree with his eyes closed as though he was in meditation.

And at the spot where the fruit fell, a green worm crawled over the grass and slowly crawled onto the fruit before beginning to eat it.

The worm was very small and looked no different from a caterpillar. Its actions were very clumsy as it crawled onto the fruit with great difficulty and slowly ate it.

The fruit was only the size of a palm, and the worm was even smaller. It was inconspicuous lying on top, but very quickly, the green worm that had only eaten a tiny bit of the fruit started to swell up like a balloon.

When its body grew to the point where it could swallow the fruit, it swallowed it in one mouthful before its body swelled up crazily.

The caterpillar turned into a terrifying behemoth in the blink of an eye. Its body became dozens of meters long.

And this change didn’t stop. The worm that had turned into a giant worm emitted a terrifying divine glow. The divine glow burned like flames which enveloped the giant worm’s body and constantly emitted light.

When the glow reached its limit, the light that it emitted almost made one unable to open their eyes. When the light gradually converged, everyone was surprised to discover that the giant worm had already transformed into a beautiful butterfly.

What was even more shocking was that in the middle of the butterfly wings, there was something akin to a human female’s body. It was wearing green, glass-like armor and had a pair of antennae on its head. Its entire body emitted an unparalleled brilliance, like a descending goddess of light that had butterfly wings.

All the humans were dumbfounded. They watched, stunned, as the worm turned into such a terrifying creature. The gaze they used to look at the fruits on the tree turned fervent.

Many people were considering how such a weak worm could become so terrifying and powerful after consuming the fruit. What if they were the ones eating the fruit?

The worm that had turned into the butterfly girl stared greedily at the divine tree’s fruits. Her butterfly wings flapped and the patterns on the wings began to spread out.

It was brighter closer to the center. When the circular pattern lit up, it was like two suns embedded on her butterfly wings.

Boom!

Two terrifying beams shot out from the center of the butterfly wings, piercing through the void and striking at the divine tree. Such terrifying might made it feel as if it could even penetrate mountains, much less a tree.

However, the two terrifying beams failed to touch the divine tree. Wang Mingyuan, who was sitting cross-legged under the tree with his eyes closed, didn’t move. His body emitted a mysterious glow that shielded the tree from the butterfly girl’s two beams.

The terrifying power of the beam couldn’t even penetrate the glow emitted by Wang Mingyuan. The butterfly girl’s wings shimmered as she gritted her teeth and continued shooting beams, but it was all in vain.

Wang Mingyuan extended his palm as though he was casually extending his finger. However, the light on the butterfly girl’s wings instantly vanished as her body involuntarily flew towards Wang Mingyuan.

The closer she got to Wang Mingyuan, the smaller her body became. In a blink of an eye, she landed in his palm like an ordinary butterfly. No matter how she flapped her wings and struggled, she was unable to fly out of his palm.

A strange light rose from Wang Mingyuan’s palm. The light flowed faster and faster, like streams of light circling the butterfly girl. Finally, it completely enveloped the butterfly girl’s body in the spinning light. By the time the light dissipated, Wang Mingyuan’s palm was empty.

Boom!

The scene on the cube changed. The images of Wang Mingyuan and the divine tree vanished, turning back into

the cube itself. The butterfly girl stood on the cube, and beside her appeared her name: “Radiant Butterfly Queen.”

Perhaps it was because the ranking had already been filled with 100 names, the name of the Radiant Butterfly Queen did not appear on the rankings.

However, everyone soon discovered that the name of the Dark Lord, who was ranked ninth, lit up. Not long after, the Dark Lord’s figure appeared on the cube, confronting the Radiant Butterfly Queen.

When the Radiant Butterfly Queen saw the Dark Lord, the light on her wings lit up again without any hesitation. Circles of light lit up before condensing at the center of the circle. Two beams shot out like lasers, so fast that no one could dodge.

The Dark Lord was a black-armored skeleton with black flames burning over its body. The sword representing darkness broke out of its sheath, and the sky behind it turned dark due to the unsheathed Sword of Darkness. As the Sword of Darkness slashed at the Radiant Butterfly Queen, the darkness devoured the light ahead.

Boom!

Two beams of light shot into the darkness. The Sword of Darkness collided with the power of light. Amidst the clash, the Dark Lord let out a tragic cry. His body and the Sword of Darkness were quickly purified by the power of light, disappearing completely a moment later.

The battle scene disappeared. On the cube screens all over the world, a ranking appeared. The name of the Dark Lord, who was previously ranked ninth, vanished. The name of the

Radiant Butterfly Queen appeared at the ninth place, replacing him.

The people watching the battle were alarmed. Previously, when they saw Wang Mingyuan suppress the Radiant Butterfly Queen with a flip of his hand, they thought nothing of her.

However, to their surprise, she could easily defeat the Dark Lord, who was ranked ninth. Although one could tell that she had an attribute advantage over the Dark Lord, it still meant that Radiant Butterfly Queen was ranked in the top ten.

The scene on the cube changed and Wang Mingyuan appeared on the screen again. He continued sitting cross-legged under the divine tree with his eyes closed.

When they saw him again, many people’s expressions changed. The divine tree and fruits behind him became the focus of human attention.

It was just a worm. After eating one fruit, it had become a powerful existence like the Radiant Butterfly Queen, and there were many fruits on the tree.

“The day of ripening of the next fruit will be three months from now. When that happens, the owner of the Companion Beast that ranks first will have the right to pluck a fruit.”

Wang Mingyuan’s voice traveled through the cube to every corner of the world. It also generated many complicated thoughts and ideas in the minds of all humans.

After this sentence, the cube’s screen dimmed, turning pitch black.

However, their enthusiasm wasn’t extinguished because of the screen shutdown. It became even more fervent. The media constantly released the video they had recorded. In the middle of the night, many people were discussing the matter of the divine tree and fruits, as well as who had the right to pluck the ripened divine fruit in three months’ time.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 591 - Divine Fruit Suspicions

Chapter 591 Divine Fruit Suspicions

An Tianzuo sat back on the sofa and An Sheng poured him a cup of tea before asking, “What do you think of this matter, Overseer?”

“What are your thoughts on the matter?” An Tianzuo placed his finger on the teacup and rubbed it, but he had no intention of raising it.

“Wang Mingyuan is very powerful. He displayed the magical effects of the fruit and proved the power of the Radiant Butterfly Queen. He didn’t say much, but every word he said was filled with irresistible temptation. However, if you think about it carefully, you will realize that he didn’t say a word about the key question,” An Sheng answered.

An Tianzuo raised his teacup and took a sip. After enjoying the aftertaste, he put down the teacup and said, “Tell me. What’s the key?”

“Firstly, we don’t know where the fruit tree is. We can’t be sure if someone can really pluck the fruit. Secondly, the true use of the fruit is unknown. Although he has already shown the fruit’s abilities, we still don’t know if the Radiant Butterfly Queen is a dimensional creature, a Companion Beast, or an ordinary worm. It’s even possible that it was a creature with the strength of a Mythical creature to begin with. The fruit only stimulated it and allowed it to showcase its true strength.”

After a pause, An Sheng continued, “Let’s take a step back. Even if the fruit is really useful, will it be useful for humans? If it’s only useful for Companion Beasts, its value will be greatly reduced. As we can see, there are already a hundred Mythical Companion Beasts on the rankings. With these Mythical Companion Beasts as the foundation, humanity has the ability to kill Mythical creatures. In the future, we will only obtain more and more Mythical Companion Beasts. It doesn’t seem like there’s a need to take the risk to vie for first place.”

“Since it’s something we can figure out, Wang Mingyuan naturally has figured out the same. Yet, he deliberately didn’t say anything. What does this mean?” An Tianzuo pondered.

“It’s not easy to guess. If Wang Mingyuan wants to trigger a battle royale, he shouldn’t have left so much suspicion. It makes people think about it too much. Under such circumstances, I’m afraid not many people will try their best to obtain first place,” An Sheng said.

“Could there be such a possibility? Wang Mingyuan doesn’t want the competition to become too intense?” An Tianzuo said after some thought.

“That doesn’t seem to make sense. What benefits does it bring to him?” An Sheng asked.

The various families were studying Wang Mingyuan’s actions. Most of them had the same thoughts as An Tianzuo and An Sheng.

They were wary of Wang Mingyuan’s goal of delivering the fruit. With such a magical fruit, Wang Mingyuan could have swallowed it himself. Why did he offer it?

There were all sorts of speculations, and ordinary citizens had different opinions. However, most of them were biased towards conspiracy theories, suspecting that this was Wang Mingyuan’s scheme.

Some said that Wang Mingyuan wanted to trigger a war between humans and weaken humanity’s strength. Others said that Wang Mingyuan wanted to use the fruit to lure human experts into a dimensional zone.

In any case, there were all sorts of things to be said. The ranking remained the same. No one challenged it.

When Zhou Wen learned of this matter, it was already the third day since the event. This was because he had spent most of his time at Small Buddha Temple. He didn’t watch the news, so he naturally didn’t know that so many things had happened.

Only when Li Xuan sent a message to Zhou Wen did Zhou Wen realize that something like this had happened. He watched the video on the Internet.

What’s Teacher trying to do? Zhou Wen was also guessing Wang Mingyuan’s intentions. He didn’t have a deep understanding of Wang Mingyuan, but if Wang Mingyuan’s original intentions hadn’t changed, he probably wouldn’t weaken humanity’s combat strength.

However, people were prone to change. No one knew if Wang Mingyuan could still abide by his original intent. It was unknown if it changed with his identity.

“Old Zhou, you are Wang Mingyuan’s student. Based on your understanding of him, do you think those fruits can really help humans advance to the Mythical stage?” Li Xuan asked.

“I really don’t know about that. From beginning to end, Teacher never said that those fruits can allow humans to advance to the Mythical stage. I don’t think you should have too much hope,” Zhou Wen said.

“How can I have any hope? Even if I believe that the fruit is real and Wang Mingyuan isn’t lying, I don’t have any Mythical creatures that can vie for first place! Mythical pets aren’t something you can find on the street. Our Li family doesn’t even have a Mythical Companion Beast,” Li Xuan said.

“There will be. There are a hundred Mythical Companion Beasts on the ranking now. With humanity having more Mythical Companion Beasts, their commonness will only accelerate,” Zhou Wen said.

“Let’s not talk about that. Your Six-Winged Guardian Dragon’s ranking has dropped so much. Do you still have the chance to vie for first place?” Li Xuan asked.

“Probably not.” Zhou Wen knew very well that Six-Winged was mainly a guardian. Compared to the powerful offensive pets, its combat strength was still lacking.

Ignoring everything else, the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon probably couldn’t defend against the terrifying beam of light from the Radiant Butterfly Queen.

“That’s a pity. I heard from some analysis that only Companion Beasts can participate in the ranking battle. Otherwise, you might be able to give it a try.” Li Xuan felt pity for Zhou Wen. He felt that if the owner of the Companion Beast could participate in the battle, Zhou Wen’s ranking might be higher.

The two of them chatted for a while before Li Xuan went to cultivate. His improvement had been extremely fast recently. In the constant battles with dimensional creatures, the carapace formed by his Life Soul was constantly shattered before being reborn and becoming stronger. Now, he had advanced to an Evolved Body.

However, after advancing to an Evolved Body, it was impossible for the Life Soul to continue evolving by just being injured in battle. Li Xuan was also searching for a way to advance.

I wonder if Torch Dragon will be able to obtain first on the rankings. Zhou Wen coveted the divine tree's fruits.

He didn't expect the divine tree's fruit to advance him to the Mythical stage. As long as the fruit could allow a Companion Beast to advance to the Mythical stage, it was already very attractive to Zhou Wen.

He had a few Companion Beasts on him. Although they weren't at the Mythical stage, their combat strength and abilities were excellent. For example, Doctor Darkness, Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General, etc.

If they could advance to the Mythical stage, they would play a very powerful role.

Of course, Zhou Wen didn't dare let a Companion Beast like the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General advance again.

Even if they couldn't be used, it would be good to get the Banana Fairy to advance to the Mythical stage as soon as possible. Now, Banana Fairy's Grand Yin Wind couldn't keep up with his needs.

Tyrant Behemoth has been evolving for a long time. Why hasn’t it completed its evolution? Zhou Wen glanced at the chaos space and couldn’t help but frown when he saw that Tyrant Behemoth still hadn’t evolved.

Suddenly, the mysterious phone vibrated. Zhou Wen took out his phone and saw the Dead Man Tree appear on the screen. The fruit that Ják had formed after absorbing it had finally ripened.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 592 - Explosive Fiend Man

Chapter 592 Explosive Fiend Man

Zhou Wen was delighted as he plucked the grenade-like Companion Egg from the Dead Man Tree and quickly checked its stats.

Explosive Fiend Man: Mortal (Evolvable)

Strength: 11

Speed: 11

Constitution: 11

Essence Energy: 11

Talent Skill: Death List, Time-Blast

Companion Form: Self-detonation Device

Mortal stage! Zhou Wen immediately felt a headache. The time and resources needed to nurture a Companion Beast were astonishing. It was mainly because it was useless for the time being.

Zhou Wen carefully read the Explosive Fiend Man’s skill introductions. The more he read, the more pleasantly surprised he became.

Although he didn’t know what Life Providence and Life Soul Explosive Fiend Man would have in the future, just these two skills alone were terrifying.

Time-Blast was similar to a Life Blast, but it was more flexible. It could turn some life-forms into time bombs, but it needed to be prepared in advance. The stronger the lifeform’s energy was, the more powerful the blast.

This skill was secondary. After all, using Time-Blast required the target to be still. If he used it on living creatures, he had to take down the target first. It was more troublesome.

The truly terrifying skill was Death List. This skill had clearly fused with the Mythical Black Cat’s curse skill. As long as the target signed their name on the Death List, he could control the time of their death, turning the target into a time bomb.

Of course, Death List wasn’t a corporeal existence. It could be cast on any piece of paper, jade, piece of wood, or even walls or floor. As long as the person signed the name, it would be effective.

This Companion Beast was an excellent Companion Beast for assassination.

As for the companion form of the Explosive Fiend Man, it was also terrifying. As the name implied, the self-detonation device allowed it to explode. This skill could only be used once. It would explode with all its force and perish together with the enemy.

To others, this companion form was basically impossible to use. Under normal circumstances, he wouldn’t be willing to let the Explosive Fiend Man self-destruct.

However, Zhou Wen was different. He wouldn’t let the Explosive Fiend Man self-destruct in real life, but he could do it in-game. Thinking of how he could advance Explosive Fiend Man to the Mythical stage before self-destructing it, the energy released would definitely be terrifying.

This was an extreme Companion Beast. If used well, it could kill anything. If used poorly, it might be useless trash.

I wonder what the Life Providence and Life Soul of the Explosive Fiend Man are? Without any second thoughts, Zhou Wen hatched it. He thought highly of this Companion Beast and planned on nurturing it with all his might.

After the Explosive Fiend Man hatched, a black-armored Companion Beast that looked like a Tesla Trooper appeared in front of Zhou Wen. His height and build were about the same as Ják’s, but due to its armor, he couldn’t tell what he looked like.

Zhou Wen tried the Explosive Fiend Man’s skills in-game. Typical dimensional creatures couldn’t sign their names, making the Death List skill practically useless.

Time-Blast could only be used on some plant-type or immobile animals. The power needed depended on the energy contained in the creature itself. It needed to be used in a specific environment, and it wasn’t suitable to be used in combat.

However, the self-explosion device was what surprised Zhou Wen.

When he transformed into the self-detonation device, it was like a lock. It locked onto the target he could touch, preventing it from escaping.

The might of self-detonation was also very powerful. A Mortal-stage Explosive Fiend Man could severely injure Legendary dimensional creatures when self-destructing.

I have to think of a way to raise the Explosive Fiend Man to the Mythical stage. I'll have to rely on him to kill bosses in the future. I'll lock onto a boss and self-destruct. Perhaps I can directly blast a Mythical boss to death, Zhou Wen thought, although he felt a little worried.

It was relatively easy to advance to the Legendary stage and the Epic stage, but advancing to the Mythical stage was extremely difficult.

I'll take my time to rear him. Zhou Wen attempted to feed the Explosive Fiend Man his Companion Beasts. Thankfully, the Explosive Fiend Man wasn't picky with food. Be it Companion Beasts or Companion Eggs, he ate without scruples.

I wonder if I can feed the Explosive Fiend Man with the fruit from the Longevity Tree… Zhou Wen thought.

After Demonic Neonate plucked many Longevity Fruits, she would ask Zhou Wen for one every day. Zhou Wen only dared to use them to feed Demonic Neonate. He didn't dare feed them to his other pets. Who knew if the Longevity Fruit would have side effects?

Despite Demonic Neonate being fine eating the Longevity Fruit, she was quite odd, so it didn't mean that the other pets would be fine after eating it. Therefore, Zhou Wen didn't dare to randomly feed the Longevity Fruit to anything else.

This Explosive Fiend Beast was similarly terrifying. Zhou Wen felt that he could try feeding the Longevity Fruit to him.

If he was willing to eat the Longevity Fruit, his evolution speed would be much faster.

However, this seemed risky. Zhou Wen was somewhat hesitant.

Suddenly, Zhou Wen thought of something. The Longevity Fruit could allow a human to quickly evolve and also allow a Companion Beast to rapidly evolve. This function was similar to the divine fruit.

Although the two trees looked different, their functions were very similar. However, the effects of the Longevity Fruit were not as strong as the divine tree’s fruit.

Back then, Lord Alcohol was already at the Epic stage. He ate a Longevity Fruit, but he didn’t truly enter the Mythical stage.

Zhou Wen thought for a moment and didn’t take the risk with Explosive Fiend Man. There was only one such Companion Beast, and it was impossible for another one to drop. He would rather feed it slowly than cause any problems.

When he arrived at Small Buddha Temple again, Zhou Wen continued cultivating Zero Taboo. After this period of training, the Zero Taboo crystal had already turned fully crystalline and resplendent like a diamond.

The taboo power of Small Buddha Temple was no longer able to hone the crystal as before.

As Zhou Wen walked into the temple, the Zero Taboo crystal suddenly emitted a terrifying glow.

The crystal was like a Rubik’s Cube as it began spinning automatically. The crystal structure was spinning and reforming, making it look extremely mysterious.

Is it evolving? Zhou Wen was delighted. After training it for so long, he had finally waited for Zero Taboo to evolve.

As the crystal spun, a strange light emitted from it. The light was misty like clouds and fog, but it also resembled a nebula.

As the light blob inside changed, the crystal’s body constantly shrank. Before long, the light blob expanded over the crystal’s body and enveloped the crystal within the nebula-like light blob.

Zhou Wen also felt a mysterious power flowing out from the nebula, making his body feel more relaxed. He almost couldn’t sense the taboo power of Small Buddha Temple.

Boom!

Suddenly, the nebula blob shrank and when it reached its limit, it exploded.

The huge explosion in his sea of consciousness didn’t really exist, but it left Zhou Wen momentarily dazed. When he snapped to his senses and looked into his sea of consciousness again, his mouth gaped open in surprise.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 593 - Gods Retrea

Chapter 593 Gods Retrea

Zero Taboo was originally a crystal, but it had transformed into the shape of an infant. It sat cross-legged in Zhou Wen’s mind space like a crystalline jade statue.

Furthermore, the infant’s appearance was very similar to Zhou Wen’s. Zhou Wen vaguely remembered that there was a picture of him when he was young back at his old place. It looked very similar to the baby in the mind space.

Zhou Wen was in Small Buddha Temple, but he didn’t sense the taboo power of Small Buddha Temple. The infant jade statue didn’t emit any light either. Its eyes were closed as though it had fallen asleep.

Zhou Wen opened his eyes and checked the blood-colored avatar’s information on the phone. He saw that the name and annotation had changed in the Life Soul column.

Gods Retreat (Evolved Body): Where the Life Soul is, the Gods flee.

This introduction is more impressive than before, but I wonder what its true effects are? Zhou Wen felt that the annotation was a little too crazy.

It was clearly meaning that wherever the Life Soul went, even gods had to avoid it. How could an Evolved Body Life Soul be capable of this?

Regardless, he could indeed sense the growth of his Life Soul. This was because the taboo of Small Buddha Temple was completely ineffective against the jade infant named “Gods Retreat.”

Zhou Wen knew that staying here was probably useless. He had to search for a forbidden ground that was even stronger than Small Buddha Temple. He wanted to see if he could use Gods Retreat to continue raising his strength.

I wonder what the Perfect Body will be after Zero Taboo and Gods Retreat? Zhou Wen was more curious about the Life Soul condensed by the Dao Body.

Unlike other Life Souls, every evolution of the Dao Body Life Soul seemed to involve a huge change.

Where else has taboo powers that are stronger than Small Buddha Temple? Immortal Seeking Mountain? It’s too far. Besides, I don’t know the way to Immortal Seeking Mountain… Zhou Wen left Small Buddha Temple and thought about where he could continue cultivating the entire way.

After some thought, he felt that the best place to go was probably White Cloud Mountain’s Jade Emperor Peak. There was an extremely powerful taboo power there that might allow Gods Retreat to improve.

Zhou Wen had already downloaded the White Cloud Mountain dungeon on his phone, but its name was Demon Suppression Mountain.

After launching the Demon Suppression Mountain dungeon, the blood-colored avatar appeared outside the Jade Emperor Peak’s entrance. Zhou Wen still remembered that the last

time he stepped into the mountain, Zero Taboo nearly exploded in less than ten seconds.

I wonder how long I can now last? Zhou Wen activated the Gods Retreat Life Soul and controlled the blood-colored avatar to enter the Jade Emperor Peak's entrance.

The moment he passed the entrance, the Gods Retreat Life Soul opened his eyes. The crystalline body emitted a strange glow.

Then, Zhou Wen saw a strange force surge towards the baby jade statue. It was not like when he had Zero Taboo. The Life Soul sucked the mysterious taboo power into his body and made it part of him.

The taboo power of Jade Emperor Peak failed to injure the jade infant statue. Instead, it made the glow over him grow stronger as though it was protected by divine light.

What a powerful Life Soul. If that's the case, wouldn't I be able to come and go freely on Jade Emperor Peak? I wouldn't have to worry about the length of time? Zhou Wen made the blood-colored avatar walk up the stone steps, hoping to figure out what secrets White Cloud Mountain's Jade Emperor Peak held.

After walking up the stone steps, it didn't take him long to see a huge hall. On both sides of the hall was a stone beast statue. It looked rather strange.

The two stone statues were crouching. They looked like stone tigers, but there were curved horns on their heads. Fiery cloud patterns were engraved on their bodies.

What was even more strange was that there was a word engraved on the foreheads of the two stone tigers. On the

left side of the door was the word Suppression. On the right side of the stone tiger was the word “Demon.”

Just as Zhou Wen approached the temple, he saw the words Demon Suppression on the two stone tigers’ foreheads light up.

As the words ‘Demon Suppression’ lit up, Zhou Wen realized that the strange powers had gushed into Gods Retreat’s body like a heavenly river. The jade infant’s face revealed a look of pain, and its body also began to show signs of abnormality, as though there were faint cracks appearing.

Zhou Wen hurriedly controlled the blood-colored avatar to leave Jade Emperor Peak. Although Gods Retreat didn’t have the ability to make all gods retreat, his abilities were indeed much stronger than Zero Taboo. Furthermore, he could absorb the taboo power.

However, the power of the words Demon Suppression was too powerful, preventing the jade infant from digesting it.

Although I can’t enter the temple, I’ve found a way to evolve the jade infant. I’ll just cultivate on Jade Emperor Peak in the future. It’s only a matter of time before I advance to a Perfect Body. Zhou Wen was considering if he should personally make a trip to White Cloud Mountain. Otherwise, he wouldn’t be able to grind other dungeons if he stayed on White Cloud Mountain in-game.

I should make a trip to White Cloud Mountain. I might even have a chance to see the immortal palace phenomenon. Zhou Wen thought for a long time before deciding to make a trip to White Cloud Mountain in reality.

He told An Sheng, Li Xuan, and his friends about his trip to White Cloud Mountain. An Sheng told Zhou Wen to be

careful. Other than that, there was nothing else.

After Li Xuan heard about White Cloud Mountain, he indicated an interest in going with Zhou Wen. He had recently reached a bottleneck and hadn’t been able to continue his breakthrough. He was thinking of heading out for a spin to change his train of thought.

That afternoon, the two of them went to White Cloud Mountain. As it was in Luoyang, the duo rode their Companion Beasts and soon arrived at White Cloud Mountain.

“Put this on. You can’t take it off no matter what. Otherwise, don’t blame me when you see the immortal palace phenomenon.” Zhou Wen threw a balaclava at Li Xuan.

“Why aren’t you wearing one?” Li Xuan asked suspiciously when he saw Zhou Wen prepare a balaclava.

“Let alone the immortal palace phenomenon, even if gods really descend, I wouldn’t need to close my eyes and hide,” Zhou Wen said half-jokingly.

“You’re awesome, aren’t you!” Li Xuan gloomily put on the balaclava. Zhou Wen led the way as the two of them climbed up White Cloud Mountain.

With the Gods Retreat Life Soul, Zhou Wen was still looking forward to seeing the immortal palace phenomenon again. Previously, due to his lacking strength, he hadn’t been able to clearly see what the fairy, who tore out of the entrance, looked like. If she were to come out again, he could see her clearly.

Unfortunately, no immortal palace phenomenon appeared along the way. Even when the two of them arrived at the

entrance of Jade Emperor Peak, they did not see a single dimensional creature, much less any phenomena.

“Old Zhou, why aren’t you walking?” Li Xuan asked Zhou Wen since he couldn’t see a thing.

“Jade Emperor Peak is in front. After passing through the entrance, there’s a terrifying taboo power inside. Even Mythical creatures will die in a short period of time if they enter. I cultivate an Essence Energy Art that can withstand that forbidden power. Furthermore, I need to cultivate inside. Don’t come in,” Zhou Wen said to Li Xuan.

“You’ve mentioned it before. I came here for Jade Emperor Peak’s taboo powers. You can enter by yourself. Don’t mind me,” Li Xuan said as he summoned his Life Soul. The black carapace wrapped around his body as a black evil aura rose from the armor. It looked evil and powerful, completely different from Li Xuan’s usual demeanor.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 594 - Suicidal Farming

Chapter 594 Suicidal Farming

“Don’t do anything rash. The taboo power here is very powerful. It will really kill you,” Zhou Wen said.

“I’m just afraid that it’s not strong enough,” Li Xuan said as he stepped onto the stone steps on Jade Emperor Peak.

Just as he walked in, the carapace on his body crackled. Large amounts of cracks appeared on it, and blood oozed out.

In the next second, Li Xuan leaped out. By the time he landed, most of his carapace had shattered. Only a few remaining pieces were hanging from his body. His body was covered in blood and wounds everywhere, as though he had just been scooped out of a pool of blood.

“Are you alright?” Zhou Wen hurriedly went over to check Li Xuan’s injuries. It was a ghastly sight. There were bone-deep wounds everywhere.

“It’s fine. It’s really strong. This is it. This will be the best training ground for me.” Li Xuan struggled to his feet. The injuries on his body were healing at a discernible pace. Even the shattered carapace was rapidly growing amidst black-gray flames.

In moments, Li Xuan’s injuries and armor had completely recovered, as though he had never been injured.

“Don’t worry about me. Just do what you need to do,” Li Xuan said as he charged into Jade Emperor Peak. In the next second, Zhou Wen saw him thrown out again, covered in blood.

Seeing that he was fine, Zhou Wen walked into the Jade Emperor Peak himself. With the Gods Retreat absorbing the taboo power and protecting his body, he naturally wouldn’t be as miserable as Li Xuan.

Not daring to touch the two Demon Suppression beasts, Zhou Wen sat on the stone steps and gamed. He allowed the jade infant to absorb the taboo powers on the Jade Emperor Peak to slowly become stronger.

“Ah… Bam… Ah… Bam…” On Jade Emperor Peak, screams and sounds of falling could be heard from time to time. Even Zhou Wen was surprised by Li Xuan’s perseverance.

Although his recovery abilities were extremely strong and injuries weren’t a big deal to him, such injuries would definitely put Li Xuan in extreme pain. To endure such pain time and time again and even seek out injuries required immense perseverance. This form of self-torture to grow stronger wasn’t something anyone could withstand.

However, the effects of Li Xuan’s actions were obvious. Every time his body and carapace were repaired, he would last a little longer on Jade Emperor Peak. It was obvious that he was becoming stronger.

Seeing that Li Xuan was fine, Zhou Wen began grinding.

This time, he went straight to the Qiongqi temple. He had an idea. Perhaps he could kill Qiongqi without using the Bright Torch Vision World, but he didn’t know if it would work.

After arriving outside the Qiongqi temple, Zhou Wen wasn’t in a rush to enter. Instead, he summoned Torch Dragon, Golden Battle God Halberd, and Six-Winged Guardian Dragon.

Following that, he summoned Explosive Fiend Man and cast Time-Blast on Torch Dragon, Golden Battle God Halberd, and Six-Winged Guardian Dragon.

Explosive Fiend Man walked in front of Six-Winged Guardian Dragon and extended his palm to press on its stomach.

Zhou Wen watched from the side as the armor on Explosive Fiend Man’s body lit up. It was as though a red stream of light was flowing through a connected tube, eventually flowing into Explosive Fiend Man’s palm.

A red light pattern immediately appeared on the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon’s belly. It had lines like a circuit board that spread across its body.

The light patterns spread very slowly. Two hours later, the red light patterns on the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon occupied one of the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon’s legs.

Explosive Fiend Man is only at the Mortal stage. His Essence Energy is too limited, so he can’t quickly release a Time-Blast. I can only take things slowly. In a real battle, it would be impossible to use the Explosive Fiend Man to fight. Zhou Wen didn’t have a good solution either. All he could do was patiently wait.

After four days, Zhou Wen really couldn’t wait any longer. Thankfully, most of the spots on the Golden Battle God Halberd and Six-Winged Guardian Dragon’s bodies were filled with Time-Blast’s red patterns. Zhou Wen didn’t plan on waiting any longer. He planned on giving it a try with this lineup.

Pushing open the temple door, Zhou Wen ordered Six-Winged and Golden Battle God Halberd to charge in. At the same time, he summoned Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General to restrain Qiongqi.

When Qiongqi saw Six-Winged and Golden Battle God Halberd rush in, it immediately charged forward ferociously. Just as its claws were about to touch Six-Winged Guardian Dragon, Six-Winged and Golden Battle God Halberd emitted a red glow.

Boom!

The entire Qiongqi temple shook as dust fell everywhere. Zhou Wen and company had hidden to the side. After the explosion ended, he hurriedly looked into the temple.

The temple was in a mess. Corpse fragments were everywhere. There wasn’t even an intact bone left of Six-Winged Guardian Dragon. The Golden Battle God Halberd had also been reduced to pieces.

However, it could be seen that their bodies weren’t fully exploded and the energy usage was very low. This might be related to the low level of Explosive Fiend Man.

As for Qiongqi, its head and chest were badly mangled. Its legs had snapped. Although it wasn’t dead, it had been severely injured.

Zhou Wen hurriedly got Torch Dragon to charge in and fight the seriously injured Qiongqi.

Torch Dragon originally could not kill Qiongqi without using the Bright Torch Vision World, but now that Qiongqi was heavily injured and restrained by the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General, Torch Dragon immediately gained the upper hand.

After a bitter battle lasting more than an hour, Torch Dragon finally killed Qiongqi in the temple. It was mainly because Qiongqi's speed was too fast. Even with Qiongqi having its leg injured, Torch Dragon still spent a lot of effort to force Qiongqi into a dead-end before finally killing it.

Ding! As Qiongqi fell, a crisp sound entered Zhou Wen's ears as a dimensional crystal dropped.

Zhou Wen couldn't help but feel somewhat disappointed. Most dimensional crystals were useless to him now. Even if it was a Mythical Essence Energy Skill Crystal, he couldn't absorb it due to his lacking stats. He couldn't bring it out of the game and could only let it disappear during his respawning.

However, when Zhou Wen took a closer look at the crystal, he was somewhat surprised. Beneath the gray crystal was the word "Evil stat 34."

Evil stat? This was the first time Zhou Wen had heard of such an attribute. He had never seen it before.

However, since it was a rare stat, it would definitely be useful in the future. It should be useful when learning Essence Energy Skills.

After picking up the Evil stat crystal and absorbing it, there was indeed an additional Evil stat among his rare stats. Furthermore, it was as high as 34 points.

Although this method can kill Qiongqi, Explosive Fiend Man’s level is too low. It’s really irritating using him. I have to raise his level. Zhou Wen had the urge to feed the Explosive Fiend Man the Longevity Fruit.

However, on second thought, he did not. After all, Explosive Fiend Man wasn’t picky with food. It could evolve by eating anything, but Demonic Neonate didn’t eat anything other than the Longevity Fruits. There were only so many Longevity Fruits, so there would be nothing left after they were finished. Zhou Wen still planned on reserving the Longevity Fruits for Demonic Neonate to eat.

While Zhou Wen and Li Xuan were cultivating on White Cloud Mountain, something huge happened. Finally, someone issued a Companion Beast ranking challenge.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 595 - Primordial Sword Immortal

Chapter 595 Primordial Sword Immortal

The Companion Beast that was challenged wasn’t the number one Primordial Sword Immortal, but Frost Giant that had been pushed down to sixteen.

A Companion Beast named Deep Frost Behemoth appeared on the screen of the cubes. It looked like a giant octopus. It was ice-blue in color, and its position was on a platform above a huge cube. The cube’s surroundings were empty, making it look nothing like a city.

On the right side of the screen, a ranking appeared. Rank 16’s Frost Giant’s name kept flashing as an alarm rung.

Behind the Frost Giant’s name was a 72-hour countdown. People guessed that this was the time given to the owner of Frost Giant to consider accepting the challenge. If the countdown ended and the owner hadn’t accepted the challenge, it would probably be determined as a loss.

Everyone was discussing if Frost Giant would accept the challenge, but this question quickly had an answer. The alarm stopped and Frost Giant’s name was completely lit up. Then, the ranking vanished. Frost Giant also appeared on the cube where the Deep Frost Behemoth was. They stared at each other.

Frost Giant was covered in ice-blue skin. Its head, shoulder, waist, and other parts were covered in frost metal armor. It also had an iron ax in its hand.

Although Frost Giant was huge, it appeared a little shorter in front of the Deep Frost Behemoth.

With a roar, Frost Giant’s ax slashed at the Deep Frost Behemoth. After all, they were all Companion Beasts, so there wasn’t any need for unnecessary communication.

Frost powers tore out of the ax, forming a huge ice streak that spread to the Deep Frost Behemoth.

The tentacles of the Deep Frost Behemoth danced, producing frost as they shattered the ice streaks.

The two gigantic monsters clashed intensely on the cube’s platform. As they were both frost-type Companion Beasts and strength-based, the intense battle between the two terrifying Mythical Companion Beasts sent frost shards flying everywhere, like fireworks formed from frost.

The two Companion Beasts were evenly matched as they used various frost-elemental skills. However, both parties had high resistance against the cold. Their bodies were extremely tough, so they were only slightly injured. Neither of them could do a thing to the other.

The Deep Frost Behemoth finally couldn’t help but take the initiative to launch an attack. The huge tentacles on its body were raised as dark-blue suction cups lit up. Rays of freezing light shot out from them towards Frost Giant.

Frost Giant didn’t give in either. He raised his ax over his head and cleaved down. The ice-like power roared out like

an ice river and collided with the Deep Frost Behemoth’s ice beams.

Cracking sounds constantly rang out as the entire platform began to freeze due to the two extremely terrifying cold forces. In just a moment, Frost Giant and Deep Frost Behemoth were wrapped in ice. The entire platform seemed to be covered by glaciers as everything became silent.

“Who won?” The spectators were puzzled.

Now, the two Mythical creatures were frozen in ice, making it difficult to determine the victor.

Suddenly, cracks appeared on the ice. A moment later, the huge ice block shattered and Frost Giant broke out. He held the ax in his hand and roared as he slashed at the Deep Frost Behemoth.

Just as everyone reeled in excitement and thought that they were about to see the scene of a Mythical Companion Beast being killed, the Deep Frost Behemoth’s body suddenly transformed into a stream of light and vanished. It seemed to have teleported away from the cube platform.

The first Companion Beast challenge ended in failure. Deep Frost Behemoth failed to win over the ranking, but this battle made many people discover something.

It turned out that the challenge didn’t have to be fought to the end. One could even admit defeat and withdraw. This gave a variety of ideas to people.

Many Companion Beasts might not have the qualifications to clinch first place, but they could challenge their opposing faction’s Mythical Companion Beasts to figure out their strength and come up with a counter in the future.

This was especially so for the opposing factions in the Federation and overseas factions. There was very little information about overseas, so the Federation’s knowledge of their Companion Beasts was limited. Perhaps they could take this opportunity to understand the abilities of the Companion Beasts overseas.

Challenges on various Companion Beasts increased after the first battle. The battles of top-notch Companion Beasts were like a visual feast for ordinary people. It allowed many people who might never come into contact with Mythical Companion Beasts in their lifetime to witness their strength and horror.

The challenge wasn’t limited to Companion Beasts that weren’t ranked. The Companion Beasts on the ranking board could also challenge each other, but they could only challenge those ranked higher than them.

To initiate a challenge, one only needed to find a cube and inject Essence Energy from the top. This was how they got onto the rankings. The Companion Beast would then be teleported to a black cube in the void.

The black cube was extremely large. Fighting on it didn’t affect anyone or any city. After the battle ended, Companion Beasts would be teleported back to their respective cubes.

During the battle, the owner could also choose to withdraw their Companion Beast. Withdrawing was equivalent to admitting defeat.

The cube’s initial ranking was determined by the Companion Beasts’ stats, skills, Life Providence, Life Soul, and Wheel of Destiny, but it wasn’t completely accurate, nor did it represent actual combat abilities.

Ever since the beginning of the challenge, there had been quite a number of Companion Beasts, which were ranked at the bottom, defeating those ranked at the top.

The overall combat strength ranking did not mean actual combat strength.

However, the first few challenges were basically from low-ranking Companion Beasts. The top ten Companion Beasts were never challenged.

However, it only took a few days before this changed. A Companion Beast that had never been on the rankings and had never been heard of actually challenged first place—Primordial Sword Immortal.

This battle attracted the attention of the entire Federation and people from overseas. To be ranked first, even if it was only determined by the cubes, the strength of Primordial Sword Immortal was not to be underestimated.

“From the looks of it, someone finally can’t hold back. They want to test Primordial Sword Immortal. Do you think that Dark Demon Snake is from the Federation or from overseas?” An Tianzuo looked at the video and asked An Sheng.

“Both are possible, but I think the possibility of it coming from overseas is higher,” An Sheng replied.

“Why?” An Tianzuo asked An Sheng with interest.

“Although we haven’t found out who the owner of Primordial Sword Immortal is yet, based on its appearance and other aspects, the possibility of it being a Companion Beast in the Federation is very high. Logically speaking, the overseas faction should be more eager to understand its abilities,” An Sheng replied.

“That makes sense. Let’s see how much strength that Dark Demon Snake can force out of Primordial Sword Immortal.” An Tianzuo’s gaze landed on the screen again.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 596 - Azure and Purple Ligh

Chapter 596 Azure and Purple Ligh

All the factions that were interested in the divine fruits were also paying close attention to this battle. In order to obtain the right to pluck a divine fruit, one had to defeat Primordial Sword Immortal.

However, no one knew what kind of abilities Primordial Sword Immortal had for it to be given such an evaluation by the cube. It had always been ranked first; no Companion Beast could pose a threat to it.

Even the powerful Mythical Companion Beast like Death of the Underworld could only rank beneath it.

The Federation knew more about Death of the Underworld. It was considered one of the top Companion Beasts among the six families. Its strength was just terrifying.

Dark Demon Snake was a huge snake. At this moment, it was coiled on the cube’s platform, waiting for Primordial Sword Immortal to accept the challenge.

Thankfully, Primordial Sword Immortal accepted the challenge without letting the spectators wait too long. With a flash, a sheathed stone ancient sword appeared on the platform.

Primordial Sword Immortal was actually just a stone sword. There wasn’t any immortal, so it was a question whether to call it a sword immortal or an immortal sword.

The stone sword was grayish-white in color. The scabbard and hilt were carved from ancient gray stone. Only the guard was embedded with a ruby.

As no one had seen it unsheathed, no one knew what the sword looked like on the inside.

Dark Demon Snake didn’t hesitate when it saw the Primordial Sword Immortal appear. It used its strongest force.

Dark Demon Snake’s master clearly knew that it was no match for Primordial Sword Immortal. They only wanted to force out the strength of Primordial Sword Immortal as much as possible.

Dark Demon Snake opened its mouth and spat out a turbulent Dark Demon Tide. Like a tidal wave, it drowned the cube’s platform. Once one was stuck in it, they would be demonized by it.

Primordial Sword Immortal remained suspended silently in midair. Just as it was about to be drowned by the Dark Demon Tide, the ruby at the guard suddenly lit up.

A red sword beam shot out from the ruby and instantly penetrated Dark Demon Snake’s head. It killed it without giving it a chance of surrendering.

The spectators looked at each other. Although they knew that Primordial Sword Immortal would definitely win, they never expected it to win so easily. The sword wasn’t even unsheathed.

“Who is the owner of Primordial Sword Immortal? We have to find out no matter what.” Senator Cape stared at Primordial Sword Immortal on the screen and issued the strict order.

The other families and even those overseas gave the same order.

On the rankings, Primordial Sword Immortal was indeed very strong. Even though people had yet to see the true strength of Primordial Sword Immortal, just that strike alone was enough to make one feel fear.

The six families did not have absolute confidence in defeating Primordial Sword Immortal on the platform. Even if they could defeat it, they would have to pay a huge price.

However, things were different if they could find the owner of Primordial Sword Immortal. No matter how powerful a Companion Beast was, its owner was at most at the Epic stage. Dealing with an Epic human was naturally much easier than dealing with the terrifying Primordial Sword Immortal.

The rules in the arena were fixed, but in reality, there were many ways to clinch victory. There was no need to defeat Primordial Sword Immortal.

Zhou Wen and Li Xuan were on White Cloud Mountain, so they had no idea what had happened. Over the past few days, they had been constantly training themselves.

The jade infant had absorbed a lot of taboo power and had started undergoing some changes. The treasure glow on its body intensified, but within two days of absorbing the taboo power, not much more happened. It looked like the taboo power here was useless against the jade infant.

Zhou Wen had no choice but to use the Demon Suppression statues to stimulate the jade infant for continual evolution.

This actually worked. However, this way, Zhou Wen joined Li Xuan in his predicament. Li Xuan suffered injuries every time he entered Jade Emperor Peak.

Zhou Wen approached the Demon Suppression statues once and the jade infant nearly exploded. It needed half a day of rest before it could completely digest the powerful taboo power that it had absorbed.

Zhou Wen took the opportunity to continue grinding while the jade infant digested the forbidden power. The time needed for Explosive Fiend Man to cast Time-Blast was just too long. With the time needed, Zhou Wen might as well farm Medusa a few more times. After grinding for so long, he still failed to get a Medusa Companion Egg. He did grind quite a number of Essence Energy Skill Crystals, but his stats were insufficient, so he couldn’t absorb them. In the end, he had to lose them with each respawn.

Ding! When Zhou Wen was farming the Golden Battle God Halberd again, another Golden Battle God Halberd Companion Egg dropped. Its stats and skills were very similar to the first Golden Battle God Halberd.

With the second Golden Battle God Halberd, Zhou Wen held one while the other outside of the game auto-attacked. Killing Mythical creatures became much easier and faster.

However, he felt that having two Golden Battle God Halberds made one of them a little redundant.

If only I could fuse it. Zhou Wen looked at it and realized that the Golden Battle God Halberd could indeed be fused. However, its compatibility with ordinary Epic Companion

Beasts wasn’t very high, so he temporarily didn’t have a good candidate. He had to dispel this thought.

After grinding the rare dimensional creatures, Zhou Wen went to Deer Terrace Pavilion. With the four Mythical Companion Beasts, he could storm his way onto Deer Terrace Pavilion even without using Bright Torch Vision World.

Just as he was about to kill the six Mythical fox demons, he suddenly felt a glow appear in front of him. He looked up and saw the scene of Jade Immortal Palace appear above the sea of clouds.

“The immortal palace phenomenon! Li Xuan, quickly close your eyes,” Zhou Wen hurriedly reminded Li Xuan.

As they hadn’t seen any immortal palace phenomena over the past few days, Li Xuan usually didn’t wear the balaclava.

Thankfully, Li Xuan knew that the immortal palace phenomenon was dangerous, so he usually didn’t look into the sky. He only looked in the direction of the Jade Emperor Peak. At that moment, he was recovering from his injuries, so he had his eyes closed.

When Li Xuan heard that, he hurriedly took out the balaclava and put it on his head to prevent himself from accidentally seeing the immortal palace phenomenon.

Zhou Wen naturally wasn’t afraid of the phenomenon. He stared at the pavilions and buildings in the clouds; there were many fairies circling them. However, the immortal palace he saw this time seemed different from what he had seen the last time. He didn’t see the palace from before, nor did he see the fairy who had broken out of the entrance.

Just as Zhou Wen was feeling disappointed, he suddenly saw a strange scene appear in the immortal palace’s phenomenon. He saw an azure and a purple beam pass through the immortal palace’s phenomenon like two rainbows, constantly circling and dancing.

Zhou Wen carefully looked at the two beams of light, but he couldn’t see them clearly. All he could see was the streams of light dancing in the air. At the same time, two indescribable pressures made his heart tremble. He felt as though his body was about to be penetrated by the two beams of light at any moment.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 597 - Absolute Strength

Chapter 597 Absolute Strength

Two streams of light—one azure and one purple—danced amidst the immortal palace. Even the fairies and immortal children avoided them, afraid that they wouldn’t be able to dodge in time. Instantly, chaos broke out. Even the jade buildings that were touched by the two streams of light cracked.

Zhou Wen couldn’t see what was inside the two streams of light, but just by looking at their auras, he felt an indomitable aura. It was as though everything in the world would be mercilessly sliced apart if they stood in front of these two beams.

Thankfully, Zhou Wen’s willpower was extremely firm. Otherwise, just the aura of the purple and azure light would have left him shuddering.

Just as he was wondering what the two beams of light were, he suddenly saw them separate. The azure light landed on the top of a jade pavilion and the purple light landed on a small building.

Only then did Zhou Wen see that the azure light was an azure bird. The purple light was a purple bird. The two birds looked somewhat similar. They had long feathers and phoenix tails. Their bodies glowed with immortal light and they looked extremely beautiful.

Zhou Wen didn’t know what birds they were, but the moment they spread their wings and took off, Zhou Wen saw their flying stance and was immediately amazed.

This only lasted for an instant. Zhou Wen could only see their taking-off postures. After they took off, he couldn’t see their figures again. All he could see were two streams of light—one azure, one purple—that danced around the immortal palace.

After watching for a moment, the immortal palace phenomenon vanished. However, the flying stance of the azure and purple birds was imprinted in Zhou Wen’s mind, unable to be dispelled.

“Old Zhou, what’s in that phenomenon? Tell me about it.” Unable to see it, Li Xuan was burning with curiosity as he asked Zhou Wen.

“There’s an immortal palace in the phenomenon. There are pavilions and buildings. Fairies and immortal children dance among them. There are two birds—one azure, and one purple bird…” Zhou Wen roughly described it.

After the phenomenon, Zhou Wen kept pondering over the flying stance of the two birds. He had a nagging feeling that the stance was very different from the fairy’s flying stance. It was two completely different styles.

I wonder if I can fuse the flying stances of the two birds into my movement technique. Unfortunately, I only saw their flying postures. There’s too little information I can use for reference. As he was pondering, he felt an intense idea come to mind.

Zhou Wen was delighted when he analyzed it. He hurriedly looked at the chaos space and saw that Tyrant Behemoth

had finally finished evolving. It had already broken out of its shell.

A terrifying beast that resembled a mountain stood in the chaos space. Its body was like black iron. It had two horns on its head and its tail was like a gigantic whip. Its claws were like metal hooks.

A motorcycle that Zhou Wen placed in the chaos space was as tiny as an ant in front of the behemoth. Zhou Wen couldn’t even estimate how big it was.

Zhou Wen was naturally happy that Tyrant Behemoth had advanced to the Mythical stage, but this size put him in a difficult spot. Where could he put such a huge Companion Beast?

It was fine in the chaos space, but if it came out, Jade Emperor Peak probably couldn’t contain its body.

As Zhou Wen was in the middle of this dilemma, he saw Tyrant Behemoth slowly shrink. In just a moment, it changed from a mountain-like beast to about three meters tall.

Can it actually shrink? Zhou Wen was overjoyed. He summoned Tyrant Behemoth back to him and entered the game to check its information.

Tyrant Behemoth: Mythical (Evolvable)

Life Providence: Extreme Strength

Life Soul: Violent Crown

Wheel of Destiny: Absolute Strength

Strength: 81

Speed: 81

Constitution: 81

Essence Energy: 81

Talent Skill: Mountain Consuming

Companion Form: Boxing Glove

Tyrant Behemoth’s stats were very good. Just like Torch Dragon, every stat reached 81 points. Everything else was the same as before it evolved.

However, after advancing to the Mythical stage, he gained the Wheel of Destiny—Absolute Strength. Zhou Wen had only learned that for every action, there was an equal and opposite reaction. He didn’t know what Absolute Strength was, but he carefully checked its description.

Absolute Strength: A miracle that crushes everything with strength.

Strength can crush everything. How far can it go? Zhou Wen launched a game dungeon and it happened to be in front of Deer Terrace Pavilion. He summoned Tyrant Behemoth to see how strong its Wheel of Destiny was.

The blood-colored avatar hid outside with Six-Winged, Torch Dragon, and the two Golden Battle God Halberds by its side. However, it didn’t let them enter the ancient building and only allowed Tyrant Behemoth to charge in.

Tyrant Behemoth entered the ancient building and immediately alarmed the six fox immortals. One of them shot out a rainbow beam that slashed at Tyrant Behemoth.

Tyrant Behemoth didn’t take action. It opened its mouth and bit down, sucking the light into its stomach as though it was drinking cold water.

Holy sh*t, this Mythical Mountain Consuming Skill is quite powerful. It can even devour a Mythical Essence Energy Skill. Zhou Wen was delighted.

The six fox immortals attacked Tyrant Behemoth one after another. Tyrant Behemoth opened its mouth and swallowed all sorts of Essence Energy Skills. It was insolent, violent, and unreasonable.

The six fox immortals weren’t stupid. They attacked Tyrant Behemoth from different directions, but all Tyrant Behemoth did was open its mouth and they were immediately left helpless.

All sorts of colorful light struck Tyrant Behemoth’s body. Tyrant Behemoth roared and a crown appeared on its head. Its physique immediately increased drastically as it forcefully used its body to tank the rainbow light. The fox immortals’ attacks could only leave a shallow wound on its body.

However, the fox immortals specialized in movement techniques and illusions. Tyrant Behemoth’s speed and strength were much stronger than theirs, but it failed to hit them. Often, a fierce claw strike only struck their phantoms.

In its rage, Behemoth finally used its Wheel of Destiny. A black light emitted from Tyrant Behemoth’s body as though all light had been absorbed by it.

Boom!

The floor beneath Behemoth’s feet collapsed, but it wasn’t just the floor. Even space seemed to be crushed by its strength, creating a spatial vortex.

Everything around it flew towards Behemoth. It was like a black hole, sucking everything around it.

The six fox immortals were no exception. They struggled to escape, but the powerful suction force made it difficult for them to move.

Tyrant Behemoth charged forward and smashed the six fox immortals into pieces with one punch after another. The six fox immortals counterattacked with all their might, but their attacks left zero effect when landing on Tyrant Behemoth’s body. It was akin to scratching an itch. When Tyrant Behemoth landed a punch on them, it directly shattered their bodies. Their strengths were on completely different levels.

How mighty! It’s thrashing them despite it being one against six. Zhou Wen was overjoyed. With Tyrant Behemoth, he didn’t need to go through so much trouble to kill Qiongqi.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 598 - There“s a Demon at the Bottom of the Mountain

Chapter 598 There“s a Demon at the Bottom of the Mountain

Zhou Wen was thinking of getting Tyrant Behemoth to ascend to the second and third floor to kill the Nine-Headed Pheasant Spirit and Jade Lute Spirit.

With Absolute Strength, Tyrant Behemoth remained completely immune to their attacks. All sorts of aural attacks landed on Tyrant Behemoth’s body, but they didn’t hurt at all. However, they could only use their movement techniques and speed to circle around Tyrant Behemoth. Otherwise, they would have died from a single punch from it.

What was terrifying was that Absolute Strength caused space to collapse. It produced a suction force that resembled gravity, hindering their movement and speed. They didn’t last long before they were killed by Tyrant Behemoth.

Tyrant Behemoth alone had stormed through three levels of the ancient building. Before that, only Torch Dragon could do it.

Zhou Wen was excited. He was just about to take Tyrant Behemoth to Zhuolu’s underground temples to see if it could kill Qiongqi when he realized that Tyrant Behemoth’s Absolute Strength couldn’t be used again.

What the hell… Does absolute Strength still have a time limit? Zhou Wen was somewhat depressed.

However, on second thought, it made sense. This was equivalent to an invincible state. It was impossible for there to be no restrictions. Otherwise, wouldn’t Tyrant Behemoth really be invincible?

As Zhou Wen grinded dungeons, he waited for Tyrant Behemoth’s Absolute Strength to finish the cooldown. He waited 24 hours before he could use it again.

Charging for twenty-four hours for half an hour of usage. It is a little short, but the pro is that it’s for invincibility. Zhou Wen was satisfied. Half an hour’s invincibility should be enough for him to do many things.

Zhou Wen led Tyrant Behemoth and the other Mythical Companion Beasts into the Zhuolu underground temple with great aplomb. When he arrived at the Aoyin stone statue, for no reason, a sudden thought came to him. He planned on getting Tyrant Behemoth to kill Torch Dragon.

Which one is stronger? Absolute Strength or Bright Torch Vision World? Zhou Wen got Tyrant Behemoth to use Absolute Strength before charging into the Torch Dragon temple.

However, without any room for suspense, Tyrant Behemoth was directly reflected by the vision world. Its Absolute Strength failed to protect its body.

Tyrant Behemoth’s strength can even crush space. Can’t it distort Torch Dragon’s gaze? Zhou Wen had no choice but to use his old method to deal with Torch Dragon. It wasn’t easy for him to kill the Torch Dragon youngling, but nothing dropped.

…

Primordial Sword Immortal remained at the top of the rankings with no one questioning its placing. Ever since the Dark Demon Snake was killed, another two Mythical Companion Beasts had challenged it, but the outcome was the same. They were unable to force the stone sword out of its scabbard. The sword beam from the ruby was something they couldn’t withstand.

However, the Companion Beasts that challenged Primordial Sword Immortal survived. They weren’t killed like the Dark Demon Snake. Their owners were already prepared.

It was naturally a good thing that they could survive, but to not have the qualifications to make Primordial Sword Immortal unsheath itself made many people who wanted to vie for first place, secretly frown.

Unless one sent a top Mythical creature to fight it, it was very difficult to figure out Primordial Sword Immortal’s plethora of abilities.

However, up till now, no one was willing to reveal their top combat strength and fight to the death with Primordial Sword Immortal. Everyone was just watching.

During this period of time, a Companion Beast challenged the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon, but because Zhou Wen was on White Cloud Mountain, he didn’t have the chance to receive the news about him being challenged. Therefore, after 72 hours, the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon automatically admitted defeat and gave up its original position.

An Sheng had also sent a message to Zhou Wen, but because there was no signal on White Cloud Mountain, Zhou

Wen didn’t receive it.

“Haha… I’ve finally succeeded…” A couple of weeks later, on White Cloud Mountain’s Jade Emperor Peak, Li Xuan laughed out loud in excitement.

His body stood on the stone steps as the carapace on his body shattered and healed itself. The self-healing speed was even faster than the shattering. The taboo power on Jade Emperor Peak failed to kill Li Xuan.

“Old Li, your self-healing powers are impressive! It’s an undying body,” Zhou Wen exclaimed. He was indeed envious of Li Xuan’s self-healing abilities.

Although Small Perfection of Wisdom also had Constitution enhancement, it was very different from the typical Constitution enhancement. In terms of self-healing, it was far inferior to Li Xuan.

“It’s indeed good, but it freaking hurts!” Li Xuan retreated out of the Jade Emperor Peak and said with gritted teeth.

The wounds could heal, but the pain from the injuries remained.

“Old Zhou, I have to head back now. Do you want to go back together?” Li Xuan asked Zhou Wen.

“I still need to cultivate here for a period of time. You go back. By the way, remember to prepare the things I asked you to buy for me. I’ll be needing them when I return in a few days.” Zhou Wen still remembered the items The Thearch wanted. They weren’t anything valuable, so there was no need to fall out with her over this.

Furthermore, Zhou Wen was very interested in The Thearch's Pet Skill Insights Agent.

Typically, Companion Beasts that dropped wouldn't have all their skills, especially Mythical pets. Most Mythical creatures had plenty of skills, but Companion Eggs that dropped typically only had four skills. If the Pet Skill Insights Agent was useful, it might allow Mythical Companion Beasts to have all their skills.

Just like the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon, it lacked several skills. If it could comprehend those skills, its combat strength would increase a little.

"I got the purchasing department to buy it. It's almost done. I'll go back and take a look. If there's anything missing, I'll get them to quickly purchase it. I'll head back first." Li Xuan couldn't wait to return home.

Zhou Wen sent him off White Cloud Mountain before returning to Jade Emperor Peak. However, just as he came in front of the door to Jade Emperor Peak, he looked up and trembled.

At the end of the Jade Emperor Peak's stone steps stood a white-robed, white-haired man. He stood in front of the Demon Suppression statues and looked at Zhou Wen with a smile.

"Teacher!" Zhou Wen called out, but he didn't know what to say.

"I've implicated many of you, yet you are still willing to call me teacher. It makes me feel ashamed," Wang Mingyuan sighed.

“You taught me before. It’s only right for me to call you teacher.” Zhou Wen looked at Wang Mingyuan and continued, “Teacher, can I ask you why you are using the divine fruit to initiate the ranking battles?”

“If I tell you that I only wish to give the fruit to someone, would you believe me?” Wang Mingyuan said with a faint smile.

Zhou Wen didn’t say a word, but Wang Mingyuan laughed. “You’re still the same as before. You haven’t changed at all. You’re so stubborn and don’t know how to hide your feelings.”

“Teacher, you aren’t here just to tell me this, right?” Zhou Wen asked.

“I came here to retrieve something, but I never expected to meet you. Since we are fated to meet again and you are still willing to call me teacher, I’ll tell you a secret.” Wang Mingyuan pointed at his feet and said, “There’s a demon at the bottom of the mountain. It can help you break through to the Mythical stage.”

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 599 - Demon Suppression Hall

Chapter 599 Demon Suppression Hall

“What demon?” Zhou Wen asked in puzzlement.

“It’s just a title. You can also call him Guardian,” Wang Mingyuan answered.

“Do you want me to advance to the Mythical stage like you using Spirit Casting on a Guardian?” Zhou Wen asked Wang Mingyuan. He actually wanted to know if Wang Mingyuan had advanced to the Mythical stage using Spirit Casting or not.

“Did Ziya give you the Spirit Casting Skill?” Wang Mingyuan frowned slightly.

“Yes.” Zhou Wen nodded.

Wang Mingyuan sighed and said, “The body of humans is innately lacking. If you wish to advance to the Mythical stage, you must have a way to make up for it. Now, there are two viable paths. First, it’s to form a contract with a Guardian to advance to the Mythical stage with the body of a Guardian. This path looks simple, but in fact, it has extremely high requirements. It’s very difficult to get a Guardian’s acknowledgment if one doesn’t have a compatible physique and talent. Even if one obtains the recognition, they will be abandoned if they fail to meet the Guardian’s requirements in their future growth and in

combat. By choosing this path, it’s equivalent to boarding a train that can’t be stopped. There’s no chance of retreating. Once it fails, one will be left with nothing as they fall to the lowest point possible.”

After a pause, Wang Mingyuan continued, “The second path is Spirit Casting. By borrowing the bodies of powerful creatures to make up for your shortcomings, one can choose Mythical creatures or Guardians as targets for Spirit Casting. Both have their pros and cons, but using a Guardian will make one remain more human. After Spirit Casting, your body will still maintain most of its human form, but that’s all.”

What Wang Mingyuan said was similar to Zhou Wen’s previous guess. He couldn’t help but ask, “Can’t humans really rely on their bodies to advance to the Mythical stage?”

“Difficult.” Wang Mingyuan looked at the churning sea of clouds beyond the mountain and said, “Everything has its limits. Just like many human sports before the dimensional storms, such as a one-hundred-meter sprint. It’s relatively easy to raise the results at the beginning, but when the results reached about ten seconds, the chances of a breakthrough were minimal. This is because ten seconds was the limit of humans. What humans are facing now is the same problem. If the limits of human bodies are 10, then the requirement to advance to the Mythical stage is 100. No matter how hard humanity works, it’s impossible to reach 100. This is a limit we were born with. It’s difficult to resolve it without external help.”

With that said, without waiting for Zhou Wen to say a word, Wang Mingyuan said, “I should go. The demon at the foot of the mountain is a Guardian. If you wish to contract it, you can use this method. Even if your physique and talent aren’t

compatible with him, he will still contract with you. Furthermore, he won’t easily betray you.”

Wang Mingyuan reached out and flicked a piece of paper at Zhou Wen. When Zhou Wen caught it and looked at Wang Mingyuan again, he saw him turn around and walk into a huge spatial door.

After Wang Mingyuan walked in, the spatial door closed with a bang. Jade Emperor Peak returned to normal. There was nothing besides the two Demon Suppression statues as though no one had ever been there.

Zhou Wen stared blankly for a moment before retracting his gaze to look at the note in his hand.

The content on it was somewhat unbelievable. Zhou Wen definitely wouldn’t believe it if it had come from someone else. However, the person who wrote this was Wang Mingyuan, so it was naturally a whole different matter.

Should I give it a try? Zhou Wen looked at the slip of paper with a strange expression. This was because the method on the slip was rather unbelievable.

Gods Retreat has yet to advance to a Perfect Body, so I can’t enter Demon Suppression Hall. If I wish to enter, I can only try using the method on this. Zhou Wen decided to give it a try at night. Even if he failed, he wouldn’t suffer any losses.

There was still a long time before sunset. Zhou Wen sat on the stone steps and thought of what Wang Mingyuan had said to him.

Is there really no way to advance to the Mythical stage with the human body? If I’m really at an impasse, which path

should I choose? Spirit Casting or contracting? Zhou Wen ultimately felt that he didn’t want to choose either path.

I’ll decide after advancing Slaughterer to a Perfect Body. It’s still too early to consider such things now. Zhou Wen thought of the divine fruit again.

Wang Mingyuan said that he only wanted to give the divine fruit away. Although it wasn’t necessarily credible, Wang Mingyuan didn’t need to go through so much trouble to lie to him if he wanted to harm him.

Since Wang Mingyuan said that there are only two ways to advance to the Mythical stage, that meant that the divine fruit isn’t able to advance humans to the Mythical stage. In that case, the divine fruit is only effective against Companion Beasts and dimensional creatures. Zhou Wen felt that he could give it a try to see if he could vie for the divine fruit.

If he could really obtain the divine fruit, he could feed it to either Banana Fairy or Explosive Fiend Man—especially Explosive Fiend Man. Once he advanced to the Mythical stage, he would be of great help to Zhou Wen.

Even if that divine fruit is a trap, Teacher probably won’t cheat me on account of our teacher-student relationship, right? After some thought, Zhou Wen felt that vying for the divine fruit had more pros than cons.

The crux of the matter was whether he could obtain first place as well as decide which Companion Beast to vie for first place.

I wonder if Tyrant can handle Primordial Sword Immortal.

Time passed as Zhou Wen pondered. The sun quickly set and the sky darkened.

I'll give it a try and see if Teacher's method really works. Zhou Wen looked at the sky that had completely darkened and a crescent moon emitted a faint light.

Looking at the two Demon Suppression statues in front of the Demon Suppression Hall, Zhou Wen gritted his teeth and turned his back to them. Then, he pressed his hands on the stone steps and held himself up vertically.

With his hands as his feet, Zhou Wen moved towards the door of Demon Suppression Hall.

Zhou Wen felt a little uneasy as he looked at the two Demon Suppression statues. He didn't feel confident at all.

Gods Retreat was powerful, yet it couldn't even cross the Demon Suppression statues to enter the hall. Yet, Wang Mingyuan said that he could enter just by walking upside down. This was unbelievable.

If Wang Mingyuan hadn't been the one informing him of this method, Zhou Wen wouldn't have even tried it. It sounded like a joke.

Although Zhou Wen was making an attempt, he still found it unbelievable that he could enter the Demon Suppression Hall so easily.

When he was close to activating the Demon Suppression statues, the two words—Demon Suppression—on their respective foreheads lit up again.

Will it really work? Zhou Wen's heart skipped a beat.

However, to his surprise, although the word Demon Suppression on the two statues lit up, Zhou Wen didn’t feel the pressure on the jade infant increase.

Is it really feasible? Zhou Wen continued moving upwards. Indeed, he didn’t feel the pressure from the Demon Suppression words. Just like that, he reached the end of the stone steps and arrived at the entrance of the Demon Suppression Hall.

Zhou Wen still remembered the method on the slip of paper. He didn’t use his feet to kick the door, nor did he push it with his hands. Instead, he used his hands to prop himself up on the ground and slammed his head against the door of the Demon Suppression Hall.

Clang!

With a dull thud, Zhou Wen felt his head spin as he saw stars.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 600 - The Imprisoned Guardian

Chapter 600 The Imprisoned Guardian

What happened to definitely opening when hitting the door with all my might? Zhou Wen gritted his teeth and prevented himself from falling to the ground. Then, he heard a rumbling sound as the door slowly rose. It opened.

Zhou Wen suspected that there was no need for him to slam the door with all his strength as Wang Mingyuan had said. However, Zhou Wen didn’t have any evidence.

After the door rose, Zhou Wen saw the scene in the temple. There weren’t any statues of consecrated deities or predellas. There were many stone monuments scattered in the hall.

There were many strange lines and patterns engraved on each stone monument. He did not know what they meant.

Zhou Wen stood outside the door and counted. Indeed, it was arranged exactly as drawn on the slip of paper.

As he alternated his hands to move forward, Zhou Wen followed the path Wang Mingyuan had described and entered the stone monument’s formation. When he passed some stone monuments, he propped himself up with one hand and pressed the stone monument with the other.

After circling the stone monument array for a while, he finally finished all necessary actions. The stone monument spun, revealing a stone staircase that led underground.

Zhou Wen hurriedly entered the stone steps and finally heaved a sigh of relief. He placed his feet on the ground and returned to his normal state.

He sized up the stone staircase and saw that the stone walls on both sides were engraved with symbols that Zhou Wen knew nothing of. Most of them were simple lines and points that were arranged in a certain way.

He walked down the stone steps all the way. Before long, the stone steps turned a little. They continued downwards, like the stairs in a building.

He walked all the way down. After walking for more than a hundred storeys worth of steps, he still couldn’t see the end. The patterns on the stone wall remained, but he didn’t know what they were for.

When Zhou Wen thought that there was no end, he saw that the stone steps below were somewhat different.

The stone steps below turned into jade and emitted a cold aura.

After stepping onto the jade stairs, he continued walking down. Not long after, he reached the end. Beneath him was a room made of jade. Floating in the middle of the room was a black cocoon.

There were many cracks on the cocoon’s body as black gas seeped out from the cracks. However, the black gas failed to emit as it was absorbed by the white circles on the black cocoon’s body.

There were a total of seven circles on the black cocoon. They looked like they were made of jade and had mysterious incantations engraved on them.

When Zhou Wen looked at the black cocoon, he suddenly realized that a black eye was staring at him through a crack.

“Human, do you want me to become your contractor?” When Zhou Wen saw the eye, he heard an ethereal voice coming from the black cocoon.

“No,” Zhou Wen answered without any hesitation.

He could naturally tell that there was something wrong with the Guardian inside the black cocoon.

There was no Mythical creature guarding him here, and the black cocoon was clearly imprisoned. This was completely different from the Guardians that Zhou Wen had seen before.

“Human, don’t you wish to obtain powerful strength? As long as you form a contract with me, you can obtain immense power and advance to the Mythical stage.” The voice from the black cocoon sounded again.

“If you were really that strong, you wouldn’t have been imprisoned here.” Zhou Wen said, but he thought to himself, Who has the ability to imprison a Guardian here? Is it a human? I’m afraid humans don’t have such powerful abilities.

Upon hearing Zhou Wen’s words, the black cocoon’s Guardian seemed to turn irascible. Large amounts of black demonic aura surged out of the cracks. Due to the massive amount of demonic aura that they absorbed, even the jade hoops turned raven-black.

“Human, I’m the strongest Guardian. No one can imprison me. I was the one who imprisoned myself.” The black cocoon’s voice sounded again.

“Then why did you imprison yourself?” Zhou Wen naturally didn’t believe him.

“You don’t need to know the reason. All you need to know is that after signing a contract with me, you will become the most powerful human, and you will become the most powerful existence in the future. That’s enough. The power I will give you is something you humans can never imagine, even in your dreams,” the voice said again.

“I heard that signing a contract with a Guardian requires a special physique and talent. Are you sure that my physique and talent are what you need?” Zhou Wen asked again.

“You being able to come here proves that you have the qualifications to sign a contract with me,” said the Guardian in the cocoon.

“Sounds good, but isn’t it because you are just looking for any random human to contract with so you can escape?” Zhou Wen curled his lips.

“Human, it looks like you don’t understand how great an opportunity you will miss.” The Guardian continued, “Don’t tell me you don’t wish for strength? Don’t you wish to become the greatest hero of humanity? In the future, there will definitely be a terrifying battle in the human world. When that happens, no one will be spared. Those below the Mythical stage don’t even have the right to struggle for survival. Sign a contract with me and you will still have a chance of survival. Otherwise, you can only wait for death. This is your chance to live.”

“You don’t have to scare me. I don’t believe anything you say.” Zhou Wen looked at the black cocoon and asked, “After talking for so long, I still don’t know your name?”

“Grim Demon,” said the voice from the black cocoon.

“Dim Demon?” Zhou Wen was slightly taken aback. The name sounded a little odd. Was he dim?

Grim Demon clearly heard Zhou Wen’s pronunciation error. Demonic aura spewed out from the black cocoon as though it was furious. “A fiend born to kill, I’m the grim reaper incarnate, Grim Demon.”

“So it’s Grim Demon. This name… is domineering…” Zhou Wen said, but due to his preconceived impression, he couldn’t forget the name “Dim Demon.”

“Human, have you thought it through? As long as you contract with me, not only will you be able to survive in the terrifying battle, you will also have the chance to defeat all the species in the universe and become the strongest existence…” Grim Demon continued.

“I’ve seen many Guardians before, but they weren’t anything impressive either. They weren’t as powerful as you say.” Zhou Wen wore a questioning look.

“Guardians differ in strength too. Which Guardians have you seen?” Grim Demon didn’t believe Zhou Wen.

“I’ve seen a seraphim with six wings. He can open the Door to Heaven. It looks rather impressive,” Zhou Wen said.

“That birdman, I can tear it apart with one hand. It’s not worth mentioning at all. After signing the contract with me, it will be easy for you to defeat him,” Grim Demon said disdainfully.

Zhou Wen thought to himself, Just keep bragging. After all, bragging isn’t against the law. But I can’t verify it either.

However, Zhou Wen didn’t say it out loud. He continued, “I’ve also seen a Guardian named Fairy Burial. She looked pretty impressive.”

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 601 - Grim Demon

Chapter 601 Grim Demon

Grim Demon clearly paused for a moment before saying, “Fairy Burial does have some ability, but she’s not my match either.”

“I’ve also seen a Guardian before…” Zhou Wen described the Guardian of Ant City.

Grim Demon said coldly, “I’ve never heard of such a Guardian. It probably isn’t that strong. I’ll also be able to easily kill it.”

“You said you were powerful, but there’s no way to prove it. How do you want me to believe you?” Zhou Wen didn’t believe in the bragging of Grim Demon. He then asked, “How is the strength of Guardians demarcated?”

“You will find out after contracting me.” Grim Demon didn’t answer Zhou Wen’s question.

“Forget it. The other Guardians have Mythical creatures protecting them. Only you are imprisoned here. It’s obvious that you aren’t that great. You might very well be the weakest Guardian. I think I’ll find another Guardian,” Zhou Wen said, preparing to turn around and leave.

Grim Demon nearly died from exasperation because of Zhou Wen. He gritted his teeth and said, “Human, after I leave, I can naturally prove to you that I’m powerful.”

“Forget it. I heard that a person can only contract one Guardian. I still wish to leave my contract opportunity to a stronger Guardian. Even if it’s not a top-notch Guardian, it needs to be at least average. You don’t meet my requirements.” Zhou Wen shook his head.

Zhou Wen didn’t want to contract a Guardian at all. He only entered to take a look.

The method Wang Mingyuan had given him was to force Grim Demon to sign a special contract. Then, Grim Demon couldn’t easily betray him like the other Guardians.

However, Zhou Wen felt that such a contract wasn’t too safe. Although the special contract prevented the Guardian from defecting, the Guardian could still regain his freedom if his master died.

If Grim Demon really had the intention to betray him, he could plot his death before obtaining freedom.

The demonic aura in the black cocoon surged like a tidal wave. The seven jade hoops were unable to completely block the demonic aura. The mysterious incantations and patterns on the jade room’s walls lit up.

All sorts of patterns lit up on the stone walls of the tunnel. They suppressed the terrifying demonic aura, illuminating the entire mountain belly.

Grim Demon was truly infuriated. He wished he could tear this human to pieces.

He had never suffered such humiliation. If he wasn’t trapped here, even if Zhou Wen knelt down to beg him for a contract, he would have to consider Zhou Wen’s aptitude and talent before making an informed decision.

Now that he was lowering himself and taking the initiative to form a contract with Zhou Wen, Zhou Wen was still so picky. He even said something that he needed one that was at least average. This nearly made Grim Demon go mad.

If he hadn’t been suppressed by Demon Suppression Mountain and unable to use his powers to harm Zhou Wen, he would choose to kill Zhou Wen first to appease his anger even if he had to wait another few decades or a century.

Zhou Wen couldn’t help but be alarmed when he saw how powerful Grim Demon was when in a rage. This fellow isn’t completely bragging. He might really be able to fight Fairy Burial.

“Don’t be angry. If it wasn’t because you were too weak, why would you be imprisoned here by humans?” Zhou Wen wanted to see if he could obtain some secrets.

These Guardians seemed to come from different species. It was unknown why the species of dimensional zones had created them and allowed them to contract with humans.

“You don’t need to know. If you don’t wish to sign a contract, scram. Don’t disturb my slumber,” Grim Demon said coldly.

“Wait, I just said that you were imprisoned here by humans. You didn’t refute me. Could it be that you were really imprisoned here by us humans?” Zhou Wen suddenly realized a problem. When he spoke just now, he had said it subconsciously.

However, from Grim Demon’s point of view, he looked down on humans. He should have retorted when he heard Zhou Wen’s words.

Zhou Wen waited for a while, but Grim Demon didn’t say a word. There was no reaction from the black cocoon.

It can’t be. Was this fellow really imprisoned here by humans? Look at how dim and silly he is. Could it be that he was trapped here because of a human scheme? The more Zhou Wen thought about it, the more he felt that it was right.

However, after saying a few more words, Grim Demon didn’t react at all. From the looks of it, he planned on ignoring him.

Zhou Wen’s hope of learning more insider stories was shattered. Seeing that there was nothing else here, all he could do was retreat and return to Jade Emperor Peak.

Unfortunately, I have too many secrets about me. Otherwise, it would be a good choice to contract with Grim Demon. That fellow’s strength is indeed extraordinary.

With so many secrets about him, he definitely couldn’t let a Guardian with self-awareness and independent behavior follow him.

Zhou Wen used the Demon Suppression power on Jade Emperor Peak to raise Gods Retreat. Occasionally, when he was free, he would run down to take a look at Grim Demon and attempt to chat with him, hoping to obtain more information.

Unfortunately, after Grim Demon realized that he wasn’t willing to contract, he ignored him. Occasionally, he would say a few words, but there were no secrets to speak of.

During this period, Zhou Wen also discovered something. Indeed, there was no need for him to slam the door with all

his might. All he needed to do was gently hit it to have it open.

Is it fun to trick me? Zhou Wen gritted his teeth, but there was nothing he could do.

Now, Zhou Wen finally understood that neither Wang Mingyuan nor his disciples were decent and serious people. He definitely couldn't believe their words completely.

Zhou Wen also tried entering the Demon Suppression Hall in-game. Wang Mingyuan's method was equally effective in-game. There was a black cocoon and Grim Demon down below in-game.

However, Grim Demon didn't speak in-game, so there was no way to communicate.

"Grim Demon, have you heard of a Guardian with the word 'Thearch' in its name?" Zhou Wen had always suspected that The Thearch might also be a Guardian.

Typical Mythical creatures didn't seem as intelligent as The Thearch.

"There are naturally Guardians with Thearch in their names, but compared to me, they are far inferior," Grim Demon said coldly.

Zhou Wen had come many times. Being bored, Grim Demon would chat with Zhou Wen indifferently at times.

"Then are there any women among these Guardians with Thearch in their names?" Zhou Wen asked again.

"Of course. However, even the strongest Netherworld Female Thearch isn't my match," Grim Demon said.

Zhou Wen was already used to the bragging nature of Grim Demon. He wasn’t affected at all as he continued probing, “I’ve been to Chess Mountain before and met a Guardian who calls herself The Thearch. Do you know who she is?”

“What kind of place is Chess Mountain?” Grim Demon frowned.

“It’s probably where ancient Chaoge is. There’s a Deer Terrace Pavilion there…” Zhou Wen revealed some information about Chess Mountain.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 602 - Strange Response of Grim Demon

Chapter 602 Strange Response of Grim Demon

Grim Demon didn’t react when he heard that. When he heard Zhou Wen mention the Power of Wishes, he said, “I don’t know. I’ve never heard of it.”

Zhou Wen was somewhat disappointed. He originally imagined that he would be able to obtain some information regarding The Thearch from him, but he failed to obtain anything.

Zhou Wen attempted to use the jade infant to resist the power of the Demon Suppression statues every day. As he absorbed a large amount of Demon Suppression forces, the treasure glow on the jade infant’s body intensified. Later on, Zhou Wen could hardly see the jade infant in the treasure glow.

Now, the jade infant was almost able to resist the Demon Suppression statues. With the jade infant’s strength, Zhou Wen could rush to the entrance of the Demon Suppression Hall.

However, even so, the jade infant still failed to advance to the legendary Perfect Body.

And at this moment, the power of Demon Suppression was almost negligible to the jade infant. Zhou Wen felt that there

was no point in staying any longer. He planned on leaving White Cloud Mountain and returning to school.

Before Zhou Wen left White Cloud Mountain, he went to inform Grim Demon, “Grim Demon, I’m leaving. Let’s meet again if fate allows it.”

“Are you really not considering signing a contract with me?” There was silence within the black cocoon before the voice of a Grim Demon sounded.

“I don’t have the intention of contracting a Guardian for the time being, but I might be able to help you find someone to become your contractor.” Zhou Wen felt that it was better to find a friend who was willing to contract since he wasn’t willing to do so. It was better than letting an enemy contract Grim Demon.

Although White Cloud Mountain was mysterious and ordinary people couldn’t enter, with the passage of time, the secrets of the various dimensional zones would slowly be resolved. It was difficult to guarantee that no one would enter.

“Do you think I will contract anyone?” Grim Demon said coldly.

“Don’t worry. I’ll definitely help you find an outstanding human.” Zhou Wen felt that he could return and ask An Sheng or Li Xuan if they wanted to contract the Guardian.

“I’ll take a step back and form an eternal contract with you,” Grim Demon said after a moment of silence. At the same time, he explained what an eternal contract was.

Zhou Wen already knew what an eternal contract was. The contract Wang Mingyuan had wanted him to force Grim

Demon to sign was an eternal contract. After signing such a contract, unless Zhou Wen died, Grim Demon wouldn’t be able to obtain freedom.

“I’m really sorry. I just don’t plan on contracting a Guardian at the moment.” Zhou Wen couldn’t accept the circumstances unless he tried advancing to the Mythical stage by himself.

Even though Grim Demon was an excellent choice, Zhou Wen still firmly declined.

“In that case, can you do me a favor before you leave?” Grim Demon said after some thought.

“What favor?” Zhou Wen asked.

“I have an Essence Energy Art here. Help me take it out and find a human who can learn it to be my contractor. As a reward, I can agree to do three things for you after I’m out. As long as it’s within my abilities, I will do anything,” said Grim Demon.

“Sure.” Zhou Wen agreed. It didn’t affect him much.

“I’ll reveal my Essence Energy Art outside the cocoon. You have to remember every word.” Accompanying Grim Demon’s voice, the demonic aura in the black cocoon surged and condensed into words.

Zhou Wen memorized the words one by one, but he was also wary. As he memorized them, he kept controlling his Essence Energy to prevent any accidents.

Grim Demon’s Essence Energy Art was just too long. It was like a sutra. Zhou Wen took two to three hours to memorize everything.

“Recite the Essence Energy Art once and I’ll check to see if you make any mistakes,” said Grim Demon.

“There’s no need. Show me the Essence Energy Art again. I’ll just compare,” Zhou Wen said.

“Alright.” Grim Demon didn’t persist and displayed his Essence Energy Art again.

Zhou Wen read for a while. It had been too long. When it was time to feed Demonic Neonate the Longevity Fruit, he summoned her and handed her one.

The Essence Energy Art on the black cocoon suddenly stopped scrolling. Zhou Wen asked curiously, “Why aren’t you continuing?”

There was still no sound in the black cocoon. The demonic aura also seemed to freeze, motionless.

“Grim Demon, what are you doing?” Zhou Wen asked with a frown, but there was no answer.

Zhou Wen suddenly realized that something was amiss. The abnormal actions of Grim Demon seemed to have begun when he summoned Demonic Neonate.

He glanced at Demonic Neonate who was chewing on a Longevity Fruit and then at the motionless black cocoon. Zhou Wen pulled Demonic Neonate and nudged her towards the black cocoon.

Finally, the black cocoon reacted. Demonic aura spewed out from the black cocoon, but it didn’t spray at Zhou Wen and Demonic Neonate. Instead, it seemed to lunge the black cocoon back to dodge them.

Unfortunately, it was trapped by the seven jade hoops and the entire mountain's Demon Suppression array. It was unable to move.

"Don't come over!" Grim Demon's voice finally sounded again. However, there was a hint of horror in his voice.

Zhou Wen was alarmed. Although Demonic Neonate is powerful, her strength isn't even comparable to the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon. Why is Grim Demon so afraid of her?

"Grim Demon, don't you claim to be the strongest guardian? Why are you so afraid now?" Zhou Wen mocked.

With Grim Demon's temper, he would definitely retort angrily with the way Zhou Wen mocked him.

However, this time, he didn't retort. He fell silent again.

Indeed, there's something odd. Is Grim Demon actually afraid of Demonic Neonate? Is there something on Demonic Neonate that's worth being afraid of? Zhou Wen carefully sized up Demonic Neonate.

He didn't allow Demonic Neonate to continue approaching the black cocoon. If Grim Demon was just pretending to be afraid, but in fact, had ulterior motives towards Demonic Neonate, wouldn't Zhou Wen be harming her if he pushed her over?

Demonic Neonate's strength in every aspect isn't enough to threaten Grim Demon. If there's really something that can make him afraid, I'm afraid it's only her Life Providence, Life Soul, or Wheel of Destiny. Life Providence and Life Soul Wheel seem to have nothing to do with demons. Could it be

that Grim Demon fears the Supreme True Demon Life Soul? Many thoughts flashed through Zhou Wen’s mind.

The more he thought about it, the more likely it was. However, Zhou Wen had no intention of letting Demonic Neonate take the risk. He turned around and left with Demonic Neonate. He planned on letting Demonic Neonate approach the black cocoon in-game after returning.

As Zhou Wen’s Mythical Companion Beasts had increased recently, he seldom used Demonic Neonate in battle. He hadn’t tried getting her to attack the black cocoon.

“Wait.” To his surprise, just as Zhou Wen was about to leave the jade room, the Grim Demon’s voice sounded again to stop him.

Could it be that the Grim Demon really wants to trick Demonic Neonate into going over? Zhou Wen became even more wary as he unsummoned Demonic Neonate to prevent any accidents from happening.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 603 - Master-Slave Contrac

Chapter 603 Master-Slave Contrac

“Please… Please agree to sign a master-slave contract with me…” Grim Demon’s words left Zhou Wen alarmed.

“What’s a master-slave contract?” Zhou Wen learned from Wang Mingyuan the two types of guardian contracts.

One was a Guardian contract. This contract was relatively fair. Both parties could terminate the contract at any time and had the right to give up on each other.

The second was the eternal contract that could only be terminated after one party died. Relatively speaking, it was relatively fair. However, Guardians had unlimited lifespans, so typically speaking, humans would die first before the contract could be terminated.

“I’m willing to sign a contract as a slave. Life and death depend on Master’s will…” Grim Demon explained the effects and methods of the master-slave contract in detail.

After Zhou Wen finished hearing the description, he felt that the contract was excellent. Grim Fiend’s life was at his will. Furthermore, if the master died, the Guardian would also die. It was perfect.

With the master-slave contract, Zhou Wen no longer needed to consider his previous worries. It was just too good.

“Since you are so sincere in your request, it wouldn’t be nice for me not to agree. Alright, I’ll agree to be your master,” Zhou Wen agreed readily.

“Who wants you to be my master? I want to invite… that lady… to be my master…” Grim Demon immediately said.

Zhou Wen’s expression froze as he immediately understood what Grim Demon meant. Grim Demon wanted to sign a master-slave contract with Demonic Neonate, not him.

“You want to sign a master-slave contract with my Companion Beast?” Zhou Wen asked the black cocoon.

“Yes,” Grim Demon replied with certainty.

Could it be that Demonic Neonate really had a huge background when she was alive? Or could it be because of the Supreme True Demon Life Soul she has? Zhou Wen summoned Demonic Neonate again and pointed at the black cocoon, asking her, “Do you know what that is?”

Demonic Neonate looked at the black cocoon and shook her head. Her tiny face was also filled with confusion.

“He wants to be your Guardian. Are you willing?” Zhou Wen asked again.

Demonic Neonate shook her head with a blank expression. It was unknown if she knew what a Guardian was.

“As you can see, she’s unwilling to accept you,” Zhou Wen said to the black cocoon.

There was no sound from the black cocoon. Zhou Wen led Demonic Neonate out of the Demon Suppression Hall, but he didn’t hear Grim Demon’s voice again.

What’s so different about Demonic Neonate? It actually made Grim Demon so reverent to the point of even being willing to sign a master-slave contract? Zhou Wen couldn’t guess.

Thankfully, he had the mysterious phone. He planned on bringing Demonic Neonate here in-game to see the black cocoon’s reaction.

Outside Jade Emperor Peak, Zhou Wen launched the Demon Suppression Mountain instance dungeon and led Demonic Neonate into the Demon Suppression Hall before arriving in front of the black cocoon.

The black cocoon in-game wasn’t as intelligent as the Grim Demon in real life. No one spoke. Zhou Wen attempted to get Demonic Neonate to approach the black cocoon.

Demonic Neonate held the ancient sword and slowly walked to the black cocoon. She extended a tiny hand and pressed it on the black cocoon.

The demonic aura in the black cocoon immediately erupted and sent Demonic Neonate flying. Thankfully, Demonic Neonate seemed to have a high resistance to the demonic aura and wasn’t injured.

That’s strange. Demonic Neonate’s strength isn’t enough to fight Grim Demon. It can’t even withstand the demonic aura he emits. Why does Grim Demon think so highly of her? He even said that he’s afraid of her? Zhou Wen couldn’t figure out the crux of the problem.

However, Demonic Neonate was somewhat odd. After coming into contact with the black cocoon and the demonic aura, she began to take the initiative to attack the black

cocoon. She even opened her mouth as though she wanted to bite the black cocoon.

Although the demonic aura forced her back time and time again, the powerful demonic aura could not harm Demonic Neonate's body. However, Demonic Neonate's strength was still too weak, so she failed to break through the demonic aura's defenses.

There's indeed a problem. Zhou Wen held back Demonic Neonate and summoned her in reality. He stared into her eyes and asked, "Why do you want to attack the black cocoon?"

"Eat," Demonic Neonate answered simply. She didn't know many words. Zhou Wen had tried to teach her how to speak for a long period of time, but she still didn't really speak.

It was already very rare for her to say a word.

"You want to eat that black cocoon?" Zhou Wen confirmed again.

Demonic Neonate didn't say anything this time and only nodded.

Zhou Wen immediately understood why Grim Demon restrained his demonic aura after Demonic Neonate appeared. He didn't dare move because he was afraid of attracting Demonic Neonate's attention.

"What benefits do you get from eating the black cocoon?" Zhou Wen asked again.

Demonic Neonate shook her head with a blank expression. Clearly, this was only her instinct. Even she herself didn't

know why she wanted to eat the black cocoon, or rather, what use Grim Demon had.

“Do you know what a contract means?” Zhou Wen asked her again.

Demonic Neonate nodded slightly. From the looks of it, she knew what the contract was about.

Zhou Wen’s expression changed constantly. There was indeed a chance in front of him, but he didn’t know what would happen if a Companion Beast had a Guardian.

Logically speaking, Demonic Neonate is my Companion Beast. If Grim Demon is her slave guardian, it should be easy to control him, right?

Zhou Wen asked Demonic Neonate again, “If I let you sign a master-slave contract with the creature inside the black cocoon, will it harm you?”

Demonic Neonate thought for a moment before shaking her head.

“If the contract’s initiative is in your hands, you can consider signing a master-slave contract with the guardian inside the black cocoon. In that case, won’t his life be in your hands? If you want to eat him, you should be able to do so at any time, right? Just treat it as a food reserve, alright?” Zhou Wen only suggested, unsure if this method was feasible.

Upon hearing that, Demonic Neonate lowered her head as though she was deep in thought. After a while, she nodded and said, “Okay… Contract… Food reserve…”

Although Demonic Neonate didn’t speak clearly, Zhou Wen still understood the meaning behind her words. In his

delight, he led Demonic Neonate into the Demon Suppression Hall once again.

As he walked, Zhou Wen persuaded, “Don’t be in a rush to eat him after signing the contract. There are still many fruits here. Just treat that as a food reserve. Eat him when the fruits are finished.”

Demonic Neonate thought seriously for a moment before nodding. “Food reserve… No eating…”

“Very good. How smart.” Zhou Wen patted Demonic Neonate’s head and praised her.

Soon, the two of them arrived at the spot where Grim Demon was suppressed. Zhou Wen went up and said to Grim Demon, “Grim Demon, it took me a long time to persuade her before she finally agreed to contract with you, but it has to be a master-slave contract.”

“Of course,” Grim Demon answered quickly. From his tone, it was as though Zhou Wen was spouting nonsense. It was only natural for him to sign a master-slave contract with Demonic Neonate.

Zhou Wen originally wanted to tell Demonic Neonate how to use the master-slave contract and to warn her to be careful when contracting. If she felt something amiss, she should immediately stop the contractual process.

However, to his surprise, Demonic Neonate seemed to be more familiar with the contract than him. She walked straight to the black cocoon and pressed one hand on it.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 604 - Food Reserve

Chapter 604 Food Reserve

The black cocoon automatically cracked, revealing a ghastly face formed from black smoke. Demonic Neonate pressed her tiny hand on the face.

The entire process felt like a guardian contract reversed. When the contractual process was completed, the black cocoon shattered. The seven white jade hoops that bound the black cocoon fell to the ground with tinkling sounds.

Grim Demon escaped and was like a devil formed from black gas that swept towards Demonic Neonate.

Demonic Neonate glared at him, and Grim Demon immediately stopped in midair, not daring to approach her.

Demonic Neonate held the ancient sword in her arms. As though unwilling, Grim Demon eventually flew towards the ancient sword and transformed into wisps of black gas that fused into it.

In the blink of an eye, the black gas formed by Grim Demon completely fused with the ancient sword, causing the ancient sword to undergo some strange changes. The original purple color became darker. At a glance, one would think it was black, but it was actually a dark-purple color.

There were even more runes on the scabbard, making it look even more mysterious and strange than before.

Zhou Wen watched, dumbfounded. He had never seen a Guardian acting so lowly and submissive. Not only had he signed a master-slave contract, but he didn’t even dare possess her. All he could do was attach himself to the ancient sword.

Demonic Neonate carried the ancient sword and returned to Zhou Wen’s side. “Food reserve… acquired.”

“Alright, save it for now.” Zhou Wen calmed down Demonic Neonate before entering the game to take a look. Indeed, the black cocoon in-game was gone. From the looks of it, all the Guardians had a uniqueness.

The seven white jade hoops on the ground were of unknown use, but Zhou Wen stored them in his chaos space.

After leaving White Cloud Mountain, Zhou Wen rode on a Chi and headed for school while grinding the game dungeons.

It happened to be Golden Battle God Halberd’s respawning time, so Zhou Wen wanted to give it a try. After Demonic Neonate had Grim Demon as a Guardian, how much had her strength increased?

A Guardian’s strength was a mystery to Zhou Wen.

Some of the guardians were very strong, just like the one in Ant City and a Guardian like Fairy Burial. They were very powerful.

However, the six-winged seraphim he had encountered previously seemed very weak on John.

Yet, after the six-winged seraphim left John, he seemed to become much stronger.

Zhou Wen guessed that after the guardians fused with humans, the amount of strength they could produce depended on how strong the human was.

He entered the Metalwork Temple where the Golden Battle God Halberd had just respawned. When it saw Zhou Wen and Demonic Neonate, the tip of the trident immediately lit up.

If it was in the past, Demonic Neonate wouldn’t have dared to face the trident’s golden divine light due to her low level. She would have hidden in the dark and released her sword to deal sneak attacks.

However, this time, the ancient sword in Demonic Neonate’s arms broke out of its scabbard. Its surging black-purple demonic aura blocked the golden beam.

The ancient sword’s body appeared above the Golden Battle God Halberd as if it had teleported, slicing the Golden Battle God Halberd into two.

Although Demonic Neonate’s strength hadn’t increased, her Demonic Sword was much stronger than before. It was able to slice through the Golden Battle God Halberd in one strike. Furthermore, she had won cleanly without any scruples.

Not bad… Not bad… Zhou Wen was delighted. The Demonic Sword’s offensive power had greatly increased, and it also had demonic aura effects. It made it much easier for him to kill Mythical creatures in the future.

After the fusion of the Demonic Sword and Guardian, I still have to slowly study how strong it is. Zhou Wen was in a good mood as he rushed back to school.

Although Zhou Wen was in a good mood, Grim Demon was not in a good mood. He originally imagined that Demonic Neonate would sincerely sign a contract with him. He found it acceptable being a slave Guardian.

However, after hearing Zhou Wen and Demonic Neonate's conversation, Grim Demon's heart turned cold. How was he a slave? They were treating him as food reserves. Who knew when Demonic Neonate would eat him if she wasn't happy?

Grim Demon hated Zhou Wen to the core because he knew that Demonic Neonate definitely wouldn't have such complicated thoughts. It had to be Zhou Wen.

However, there was nothing he could do. All he could do was try his best to showcase himself and please Demonic Neonate. He hoped that he could obtain Demonic Neonate's approval so that she wouldn't eat him up for the sake of it.

And what made Grim Demon feel uneasy was that he often found himself appearing in strange dimensional zones. He had no idea how he had entered them.

What was even more terrifying was the fact that after he died in battle once, he imagined he was doomed. However, before long his consciousness returned to normal, it was as though the death had never happened.

What's going on? Grim Demon was alarmed and afraid. He was constantly on tenterhooks.

Zhou Wen experimented several times and realized that the Grim Demon's ability wasn't as powerful as he had claimed. However, it also allowed the Demonic Sword to reach the level of a top-notch Mythical.

In fact, Zhou Wen didn’t know that the ancient sword possessed by Grim Demon wasn’t strong itself and was only a supplementary tool. As the level of its master, Demonic Neonate, was too low, it limited Grim Demon’s abilities. Grim Demon’s strength wasn’t just limited to this. The result was purely because he was restricted.

After returning to the city, Zhou Wen heard everyone discussing the ranking war.

Most people were discussing which Companion Beast was stronger and which one was weaker. They talked about the rising of Companion Beast rankings yesterday and which Companion Beast was defeated.

Zhou Wen had never heard of many of the Companion Beasts they discussed.

However, the one which was discussed the most was Primordial Sword Immortal. Zhou Wen quickly learned that Primordial Sword Immortal remained at the top of the rankings. After several challenges, none of the Companion Beasts could shake its dominance.

Zhou Wen also had the intention to vie for first place. He wanted to get a divine fruit and feed it to his Companion Beast, but he wasn’t in a rush. There were still three months before the deadline. Zhou Wen still wanted to wait a little longer to see if there were any truly powerful Mythical Companion Beasts that could challenge Primordial Sword Immortal. He wanted to understand Primordial Sword Immortal’s abilities before deciding which Companion Beast to send to fight for first place.

When Zhou Wen returned to school, he realized that it was especially lively. It was actually a farewell party. Another class of students had graduated.

Time really flies. Unknowingly, I’ve already been at Sunset College for a year. Zhou Wen couldn’t help but sigh.

These days, schools didn’t have the long winter and summer vacations like in the past. Vacations were at most around ten days. New students would matriculate, and Zhou Wen and company would be promoted to second years.

“Zhou Wen, I didn’t think I would be able to see you before I leave. I never expected you to rush back in time,” Wei Ge walked over and said to Zhou Wen with a smile.

“Senior, aren’t you staying on campus?” Zhou Wen asked Wei Ge in puzzlement.

Wei Ge smiled and said, “The school wants me to stay, but I rejected it. Before I leave, I have a wish. I wonder if you can help me fulfill it?”

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 605 - Hypocritical Facade

Chapter 605 Hypocritical Facade

“What wish? If it’s not too difficult, I can give it a try,” Zhou Wen said.

“It’s nothing difficult. I just want you to help me guess a riddle. Come on.” Wei Ge turned around and led the way.

“Do we still need to go to a special place for guessing riddles?” Zhou Wen asked as he followed behind.

“It took me my entire life to think of such a riddle, so show it some respect. Let’s find a place with the correct atmosphere. It will appear a little ritualistic,” Wei Ge said with a smile.

The two of them arrived at the school’s old campus. Today was convocation. Sunset College didn’t have a commencement ceremony, but there was a convocation ceremony. Students were basically attending the convocation ceremony, leaving the old campus empty.

When they arrived at an empty land, Wei Ge stopped and turned to look at Zhou Wen. “Alright, let’s do it here.”

“What’s your riddle?” Zhou Wen stared at Wei Ge and asked. He naturally understood that Wei Ge’s so-called riddle wasn’t a brain teaser.

“My riddle is actually very simple. Guess which one is real? Which one is fake?” As Wei Ge spoke, he raised his right hand and held a coin between his middle finger and index finger. With a flick, the coin flew towards Zhou Wen.

The coin’s speed was like a meteor, but it wasn’t surprising. Such speed still seemed too slow to Zhou Wen.

However, halfway through, the coin split into two, turning into two coins that flew to Zhou Wen’s sides.

The two coins looked identical. It was impossible to tell which one was real and which one was fake. Even the ripples of air being ripped apart were identical.

Zhou Wen stood still and allowed the two coins to fly past him. This was because he couldn’t tell which coin was real. There was no point in swatting them down.

After the two coins flew past him, they landed on the ground not far away. The coin on the left disappeared, leaving only the coin on the right.

“Senior, you condensed a Life Soul and advanced to the Epic stage?” Zhou Wen looked at Wei Ge in surprise.

Wei Ge nodded and said, “My Life Soul is called Hypocritical Facade. You saw its ability just now, so please help me distinguish which one is the real me. Can you help me tear off that facade?”

With that said, Wei Ge’s figure suddenly moved. He was clearly a single person, but the moment he moved, he split into two and attacked Zhou Wen from both sides.

The speed and strength of the two figures felt very real. It was impossible to tell which was Wei Ge’s real body and which was an illusion.

Zhou Wen moved his feet and dodged Wei Ge’s attack like a ghost. This was because he couldn’t tell which one was the real Wei Ge.

However, this time, the two Wei Ges didn’t vanish. Instead, they split into four. The two Wei Ges transformed into four Wei Ges and attacked Zhou Wen from different directions.

Zhou Wen dodged again. In the next strike, Wei Ge’s figure split into eight and attacked Zhou Wen from all directions, sealing off all his escape routes.

If it were anyone else, they would have no choice but to make a choice. However, Zhou Wen’s movement technique was just amazing, allowing him to pass through the eight Wei Ges.

“As expected of Zhou Wen. Receive my final strike.” Wei Ge’s eyes burned. When the eight figures spoke, they emitted sound waves that made it impossible to tell where the real Wei Ge was.

In the next instant, the eight figures split apart again, transforming into sixteen figures that attacked Zhou Wen again. They sealed off every inch of space, preventing him from dodging.

This time, Zhou Wen didn’t move because he had nowhere to go. Even with his movement technique, it was impossible for him to rush out of this blockade. It was time to make a decision.

Without looking at the sixteen Wei Ges, Zhou Wen closed his eyes and stood rooted to the ground.

The first figure’s fist struck Zhou Wen, but he didn’t move. The figure vanished without a trace. It was only an illusion. It happened a second, a third, and a fourth time. One figure after another struck Zhou Wen in different poses before disappearing one after another.

The fifteen figures vanished. When the last figure charged at Zhou Wen, Zhou Wen finally opened his eyes and moved. However, he didn't look at the figure charging at him. Instead, he turned around.

The last figure slammed into Zhou Wen's back before disappearing.

However, another Wei Ge appeared opposite Zhou Wen.

"How did you discover me?" Wei Ge asked Zhou Wen.

"I didn't discover you. Your illusion is real. I can't tell if it's real or fake," Zhou Wen said.

"Then how did you know that the sixteen phantoms weren't me?" Wei Ge frowned slightly. If Zhou Wen couldn't tell the authenticity of the phantoms, how did he know that the sixteen phantoms weren't his real body?

Zhou Wen smiled and said, "Because I believe in your character."

"What do you mean?" Wei Ge was slightly taken aback as he asked Zhou Wen.

"Because you are a person who likes to play chess. How can a person who likes to play chess treat themselves as a chess piece?" Zhou Wen said seriously.

Wei Ge looked at Zhou Wen in a daze. After a while, he laughed and leaned back, his tears almost flowing out.

"So that's how it is. Life is like a game of chess. What right do I, Wei Ge, have to think that I can transcend a game? I'd forgotten. If I can't enter the game, what right do I have to influence it?" Wei Ge wiped away his smile and looked at

Zhou Wen solemnly. “I’m leaving. I’m going to the capital and starting from the smallest chess piece. If there’s a day when I can change the development of the game, I hope I have the chance to ask you again to guess my riddle.”

“Are you really not staying?” Zhou Wen asked.

Wei Ge didn’t answer. He turned around and left. As he walked, he said, “It’s a pleasure to play chess with other humans, but it will be a bitter battle playing chess with the heavens. In my lifetime, if I am lucky to barely defeat the heavens, it will be enough for me.”

Zhou Wen stood there motionless as he watched Wei Ge leave.

As a chess piece, one can’t even control their fate. Can one really break out of this situation? Zhou Wen didn’t know the answer as he couldn’t help but feel vexed.

Jiang Yan, Zhong Ziya, Hui Haifeng, Wang Lu, Zhang Yuzhi, and Wei Ge were all outstanding people of the present era, but they had no choice but to head to a future they didn’t know of under the influence of fate.

Sunset College’s convocation ceremony was more like a farewell before a warrior went to the battlefield. After leaving the school gates, the students would face the battlefield of life which had no regularity. No one could protect them. Their life and death were in their hands.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 606 - Freshmen Matriculation

Chapter 606 Freshmen Matriculation

When Zhou Wen returned to his dorm, he saw that there were many boxes in the living room. They were likely to be the things Li Xuan had sent over. Apart from him, only Li Xuan and An Sheng had the key to his place. An Sheng probably didn’t have the time to come over.

Bam! Bam!

Zhou Wen had just entered when he suddenly felt two heavy blows on the back of his head. He fell to the ground as his vision turned black.

Alarmed, he didn’t know who could sneak an attack on him without him noticing.

He forced himself to charge forward and make a counterattack.

However, when he turned around, he realized that it was the antelope standing behind him, looking at him angrily. The chick was standing on the door frame, looking at him unhappily.

Oh no… In the past, because Wang Lu was around, I didn’t need to pay attention to the two of them when I was out. They would run to Wang Lu by themselves. Now that she’s gone, they have nowhere to go! How could I have forgotten

about this… Zhou Wen shivered when he saw the angry expressions on the antelope and chick. He hurriedly said with a smile, “Don’t be angry. I went out this time to especially gather delicacies for you. This is something I found for you…”

As Zhou Wen spoke, he searched his body, but he obviously hadn’t prepared anything for the antelope and chick. He failed to find anything despite searching all day.

With an idea in mind, Zhou Wen took out the beef jerky he had prepared from the Chaos Bead. This was part of his food reserves. Zhou Wen planned on eating them when he was trapped in certain places. They were all high-quality goods that were rather expensive. Now, he had no choice but to take them out.

Seeing the antelope and chick eat the bag of dried meat, Zhou Wen couldn’t help but feel his heart ache. He didn’t have many savings left.

Although he had plenty of Essence Crystals, they hadn’t been exchanged for money. Zhou Wen was still a pauper and the remaining money had been used to buy items for The Thearch.

Zhou Wen opened the boxes and carefully checked them. Indeed, it was the items he had asked Li Xuan to buy. The quantity was right.

He called Li Xuan and told him that he had returned and had received the items.

The two chatted for a while before Zhou Wen realized that the antelope and chick hadn’t starved during his absence. An Sheng had been delivering food to them.

Damned antelope. Since you aren’t hungry, why did you hit me? Zhou Wen glared at the antelope, but he didn’t dare say it out loud.

In the past, he had believed that the antelope was an Epic creature, but he was already considered one of the best at the Epic stage. The fact that the antelope could still secretly hoove him twice meant that this fellow definitely wasn’t as simple as an Epic creature.

This fellow is definitely at the Mythical stage, and it’s not any ordinary Mythical stage creature. Otherwise, it would be impossible for him to have such high intelligence. What motives does he have for following me? Zhou Wen was puzzled.

When the antelope followed him, he was still weak. He really couldn’t figure out what it liked about him.

…

The battles on the Companion Beast rankings continued, but most of them were Mythical pets that challenged each other on the rankings. The rankings just shifted and there were very few new Companion Beasts on the list.

As Zhou Wen grinded dungeons, he studied his Life Soul and the First Order of Chaos. He lived a very fulfilling life.

In the blink of an eye, it was time for the freshmen to matriculate. Li Xuan pulled Zhou Wen and company along and set up a stall with the other clubs to recruit new members.

However, the other clubs’ recruitment stands were surrounded by many freshmen, but Zhou Wen and company didn’t even have a single student patronizing their stall.

Even when students passed by, they quickly sped up after taking a look.

Zhou Wen, Li Xuan, and Gu Dian sat in a row behind a table. Li Xuan leaned lazily against the chair and dug his nose. Zhou Wen lowered his head as he gamed. Gu Dian wore a serious expression as he sat there, waiting for the freshmen to make inquiries. However, with his forbidding looks, the freshmen were afraid of him. They didn't dare come over and fled in fright when Gu Dian took a glance at them.

Therefore, Zhou Wen and company's bleakness formed a stark contrast with the popular clubs around them. It was as though they were a vacuum.

"I hereby announce that from today onwards, I, Gulli, will be the king of Sunset College. If you aren't convinced, step forward." A clear voice came from the school's entrance, causing the noisy school gates to fall silent.

The freshmen looked in the direction of the school's entrance and saw a handsome, tall, brown-haired youth standing on the steps of a memorial wall. He looked like the king of the world as he raised his head and loudly announced that the world belonged to him.

However, very quickly, most of the people's attention was attracted to a girl beside him.

The girl was wearing a white dress. She was tall, but her face was exquisite like an angel's. She had long blond hair and green eyes. She looked like she had walked out of an oil painting.

"What excellence. I never expected our school to have such an excellent junior. If we can woo her, I'm afraid others will die of envy," Li Xuan said as he looked at the girl.

Li Xuan was only joking, but many people had already taken action. The freshmen were still very reserved, but the seniors had already mastered the ability to be shameless. This was especially so for the old foxes of the clubs. All of them held their club’s recruitment notices and ran over to the girl, inviting her to join their club. They also asked for the girl’s name and so on. If it wasn’t to maintain their images as seniors, they would have even asked for her vital statistics.

Gulli was originally very satisfied that he had attracted the attention of all the students, but he soon realized that no one was paying any attention to him. Everyone was surrounding the girl, causing the corners of his eyes to twitch. His aura seemed to have become very strange.

This was Sunset College. The older students were already accustomed to it, so how could they care about a freshman like Gulli? They thought nothing of him.

“Get out of the way. We aren’t joining any clubs.” Gulli had no choice but to jump down the stairs and part the crowd around the girl, pushing away the enthusiastic seniors.

The girl’s attitude was friendly, but it was obvious that her thoughts weren’t on those people. She scanned the crowd and when she saw Zhou Wen, she immediately stared at him as though she had found her prey.

“He’s there,” the girl said to Gulli.

Gulli traced the girl’s gaze and saw Zhou Wen. He opened up a path from the crowd of seniors and walked towards Zhou Wen and company.

The girl followed behind Gulli and also walked towards Zhou Wen and company.

Some of the seniors had originally planned on pestering them, but when they saw them walk towards Zhou Wen and company, they could only stop and watch from afar in dismay.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 607 - Little Brother Who Came For Zhou Wen

Chapter 607 Little Brother Who Came For Zhou Wen

Gulli walked to the table and took out his phone. Then, he opened the photo album and found a photo. He looked at it before looking at Zhou Wen. After confirming it, he put away his phone and said to Zhou Wen, “You are the strongest student at Sunset College, Zhou Wen, right? I, Gulli, want to challenge you. Let’s go to the training grounds.”

Li Xuan looked at Gulli with interest, but he didn’t say a word.

Zhou Wen put down his phone and sized up Gulli. “You’ve got the wrong person.”

“The wrong person?” Gulli was taken aback when he heard that. He hurriedly took out his phone and quickly tapped on the photo to compare it with Zhou Wen before saying to Zhou Wen, “Don’t try to lie to me. The person in the photo is clearly you.”

With that said, Gulli rotated his phone to let Zhou Wen take a look at the photo.

Zhou Wen glanced at the photo. It really was him, but it didn’t look like the photo he had taken recently. The clothes were probably the ones he wore when he went to the Holy Land.

“You really have got the wrong person. Take a closer look. The person in the photo has longer hair than me. Furthermore, his pupils are pure black. My pupils are a little brownish-black. Take a closer look. Our facial features are somewhat different,” Zhou Wen said to Gulli.

Upon hearing Zhou Wen’s words, Gulli took a closer look and felt that it was indeed a little different.

In fact, everyone’s photos were slightly different from the person. This was normal.

“Sis, it looks like we got the wrong person,” Gulli said to the beautiful girl.

The girl rolled her eyes at him and said to Zhou Wen, “To be able to defeat a genius like Lance, I thought Zhou Wen was really an impressive figure. But he’s just a coward who doesn’t even dare recognize his name.”

“You know Lance?” Zhou Wen asked the girl.

“My name is Sadie. This is my younger brother, Gulli. Lance is our cousin,” the girl said.

“So it’s Lance’s cousins. Welcome to Sunset College to study. If there’s anything you aren’t used to, feel free to look for me. I’ll try my best to help you within my capabilities.” Although Zhou Wen and Lance were rivals before, Zhou Wen was still very impressed with Lance’s character.

Furthermore, Lance had once helped them leave Holy City. It was only right for him to take care of his cousins.

“Are you really Zhou Wen? Why did you lie?” Gulli stared at Zhou Wen angrily.

Li Xuan said with a smile, “He’s Zhou Wen, but his name isn’t the strongest student at Sunset College, Zhou Wen. Therefore, he’s not lying.”

“Humph, cut the crap. I want to defeat you and avenge Lance,” Gulli said as he stared at Zhou Wen.

“Even Lance lost. Do you think you are stronger than Lance?” Li Xuan asked.

“Lance is naturally the strongest. Zhou Wen was only lucky to defeat him. If you battle again, Lance will definitely win. I will definitely win as well,” Gulli said confidently.

“I see. Seeing how confident you are, I believe you can defeat Zhou Wen. However, Sunset College forbids private duels. Even if you don’t care about being expelled, Zhou Wen won’t fight you,” Li Xuan said with a smile.

Gulli immediately frowned. “Why would Sunset College have such a rule? Wouldn’t that mean our special admission into Sunset College was a waste of time?”

“That’s not the case. Seeing how confident you are, your abilities definitely can’t be bad. I also believe that you can definitely defeat Zhou Wen. To be honest, I’ve long found Zhou Wen an eyesore. Unfortunately, I’m no match for him, so I might as well help you. See this? You and your sister can fill in this application form and sign it. Then, you can join our Xuanwen Club. The Xuanwen Club is a formal club approved by the school. The club’s members are free to spar. You can use the opportunity to defeat Zhou Wen. This way, Zhou Wen and you won’t be punished. He has no way of rejecting the sparring either.”

With that said, Li Xuan stuffed the two application forms into Gulli’s hand. He patted his shoulder and said, “Junior, this is

all I can do for you. Whether or not you can help Lance avenge his humiliation depends on you."

"Are you sure I can challenge Zhou Wen this way?" Gulli asked Li Xuan in disbelief.

"Of course. After joining the club, you'll definitely be able to spar with Zhou Wen. If not, I'll stand there and let you beat me until you are satisfied," Li Xuan said as he patted his chest.

"Alright, I'll be joining." Gulli leaned against the table and began filling in the form.

"Junior Sadie, you also wish to challenge Zhou Wen, right? Fill it out together." Li Xuan handed the other application form to Sadie.

Sadie glanced at Li Xuan as though she had seen through him. However, Li Xuan didn't mind as he continued smiling at her.

Sadie didn't say anything. She picked up the pen on the table and filled in the application form before signing her name.

"Congratulations to the two of you for becoming new members of our Xuanwen Club." After receiving their application forms, he extended his hand out to Sadie.

However, Sadie ignored him and looked at Zhou Wen. "Can we challenge you now?"

"Of course, but you can't do it here, right? Go to your dorms and settle down first. I'll arrange the time and venue for you. Don't worry. With me around, I guarantee that you will have plenty of time to spar with Zhou Wen…" Li Xuan warmly

helped Sadie take her luggage and took them to the matriculation booth.

When members from the other clubs saw that Sadie had been pulled into the Xuanwen Club, they secretly pounded their chests and stamped their feet. Their hearts ached for such a beautiful woman. She had actually entered a beast's nest.

Once Li Xuan left, there was no need for Zhou Wen and Gu Dian to stay. They couldn't recruit new members at all.

With Li Xuan handling them, Zhou Wen didn't pay any attention to this matter. He returned to continue grinding his game dungeons.

...

The next morning, after Gulli and Sadie finished their matriculation procedures, they contacted Li Xuan to arrange the duel with Zhou Wen.

Li Xuan agreed and got Gulli and Shady to wait for him at the training grounds.

Gulli and Sadie arrived at the training grounds. After waiting for a while, they saw Li Xuan bring a boy over. He looked handsome, but he wasn't Zhou Wen.

"Li Xuan, where's Zhou Wen?" Gulli asked with a frown.

"Calm down. Let me introduce him to you. This student's surname is Feng. He is under the tutelage of Zhou Wen and has learned a few saber techniques. I especially invited him over to let you take a look at his saber techniques so that you will have a basic understanding of Zhou Wen. This way,

when you challenge him again, your chances of winning will be much higher," Li Xuan said.

"There's no need. Our strength is enough to defeat Zhou Wen. We don't have to waste time on this," Gulli rejected.

"It's not a big deal taking a look first. I've long found Zhou Wen an eyesore. I sincerely hope that you can beat him. Don't you disappoint me," Li Xuan said as he waved at Feng Qiuyan. "Little Yanyan, spar with Junior Gulli. Use everything you learned from Zhou Wen. Don't disappoint him."

Feng Qiuyan walked silently to the training grounds' arena. Gulli felt that Li Xuan had good intentions and couldn't reject him. Seeing Sadie nod, he walked into the arena.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 608 - Stalking

Chapter 608 Stalking

“I’ll give you a one-hand handicap. Come.” Gulli didn’t pick a weapon from the training rack. He extended his hand and hooked his hand at Feng Qiuyan, gesturing for him to attack.

Feng Qiuyan didn’t stand on ceremony. He picked up a practice saber from the rack, walked to Gulli, and slashed.

Gulli and Lance came from the same family. Among his peers, he was only impressed with Lance. He couldn’t accept the fact that Lance had been defeated by Zhou Wen. He and Sadie shared the same thoughts. They had entered Sunset College together to right Lance’s reputation.

Gulli’s strength was not bad. He wasn’t much weaker than Lance from a year ago. He naturally didn’t take the unknown Feng Qiuyan seriously.

However, when Feng Qiuyan’s saber was unsheathed, his aura instantly exploded as though he had changed into a different person. Gulli’s expression changed drastically as his body tensed up. He quickly moved, hoping to dodge Feng Qiuyan’s saber.

However, just as Gulli raised his toes, Feng Qiuyan’s practice saber was already at his neck. Gulli’s expression turned extremely ugly.

“Who are you?” Now Gulli didn’t believe that Feng Qiuyan was some nobody who had randomly learned a few saber

techniques from Zhou Wen.

“I’m Feng Qiuyan. I learned a few mediocre saber techniques from Coach Zhou Wen. I look forward to our fight,” Feng Qiuyan said as he retracted his saber.

Gulli’s gaze focused as he suddenly attacked to catch Feng Qiuyan by surprise.

However, just as he raised his fist, Feng Qiuyan’s saber was pressed against his neck again. It was so fast that he couldn’t see the saber’s shadow.

Gulli refused to accept it as he pushed away the practice saber and attacked again. However, Feng Qiuyan moved slightly and dodged his fist. At the same time, the practice saber was placed on his neck.

Gulli was alarmed and furious. Feng Qiuyan was about the same age as him, but his saber techniques were so fast that he couldn’t even dodge them. If it was a true life-and-death battle, he wouldn’t have enough limbs for him to cleave off even if he had three heads and six arms.

“Gulli, that’s enough.” Sadie stopped Gulli from continuing the battle. She could tell that Gulli was obviously inferior to Feng Qiuyan. It would be impossible for him to win.

“Your surname is Feng. Are you from the capital’s Feng family or the Sea Return’s Feng family?” Gulli retreated to the side as Sadie asked Feng Qiuyan.

“The Sea Return’s Feng family,” Feng Qiuyan answered.

“With the Sea Return Feng family producing a saber genius like you, there’s hope for it to take back the Divine Wind Blade and become the main Feng family,” said Sadie.

“You’re too kind. My saber techniques aren’t much. I just learned a little from Coach,” Feng Qiuyan said indifferently when he saw that Sadie had no intention of attacking. He placed the practice saber back on the rack.

“Did you really learn your saber techniques from Zhou Wen?” Sadie didn’t believe Feng Qiuyan’s words.

He and Gulli had watched the video of Zhou Wen and Lance’s battle. Zhou Wen would probably not have been a match for Feng Qiuyan back then.

In less than a year, no matter how fast Zhou Wen improved, it was impossible for him to be stronger than Feng Qiuyan. How could he teach Feng Qiuyan such saber techniques?

“Yes,” Feng Qiuyan answered before saying to Li Xuan, “President, I’ll be heading back now. I’ve got an appointment with Coach to do a homework mission together.”

“Little Yanyan, go back now.” Li Xuan sent Feng Qiuyan away with a smile before sighing at Gulli and Sadie. “You can’t even defeat Feng Qiuyan, so how are you going to challenge Zhou Wen? From the looks of it, I can only let that fellow continue his arrogant ways. It’s really heart-wrenching!”

Gulli was momentarily disappointed. Feng Qiuyan’s absolute suppression had already made him lose his confidence.

“However, you don’t have to be too disheartened. Our club still has many activities. When the time comes, you will still have the chance to continue learning and growing. Zhou Wen will often participate in activities. Work hard, and there’s still a chance of defeating him. I think highly of you.” As Li Xuan spoke, he picked up his phone and looked at it. “Alright, that’s all for today. I’ll inform you when the club has an activity.”

“Sis, it’s no wonder Zhou Wen defeated Lance. The disciples he taught are so strong. He must be stronger,” Gulli said in disappointment.

However, Sadie curled her lips and said, “Gulli, you are too gullible. It’s too easy for you to be deceived. Feng Qiuyan’s saber technique already has the inklings of a master saber expert. Even among the six families, there aren’t many people with such saber techniques. How can Zhou Wen teach such a person? It’s more like him teaching Zhou Wen.”

“But Feng Qiuyan said it himself…” Before Gulli could finish, Sadie interrupted him.

Sadie said firmly, “The more that’s the case, the more problematic it is. If Zhou Wen is really that strong, why didn’t he accept the challenge himself? It’s clearly because he’s afraid of losing to us that he joined forces with Li Xuan and Feng Qiuyan to put up such a show for us. It’s to make us give up on challenging him.”

“I see. I was almost fooled by him. Let’s go find Zhou Wen. We can’t let him run again no matter what.” Gulli’s eyes gradually lit up.

However, when he turned his head, Gulli frowned again. “But how can we find Zhou Wen? We have no idea where he lives.”

“That’s not difficult. Didn’t Feng Qiuyan say that he has an appointment with Zhou Wen? As long as we follow Feng Qiuyan, we will definitely be able to find him,” Sadie said indifferently.

“That’s right. With your Eye of Odin, it’ll be easy to keep up with Feng Qiuyan. Let’s go now,” Gulli said as he walked out.

The two of them left the training grounds. Sadie's eyes suffused a faint blue light as she led the way. Soon, the two of them arrived at Dragon Gate Grotto. From afar, they saw Zhou Wen and Feng Qiuyan enter a cave together.

"I see them. They are there. Zhou Wen is indeed here," Gulli said as he pointed to where Zhou Wen and Feng Qiuyan had entered.

Sadie nodded and the two of them arrived in front of the cave. She carefully sized up the cave and said, "This should be the Lotus Flower Cave in Dragon Gate Grotto. There are Legendary Flying Beasts and Epic Fairy-type dimensional creatures inside. With Feng Qiuyan's strength, the Flying Beasts aren't challenging him. I reckon they are here to kill the Fairies."

"It doesn't matter what they kill. They just happened to enter a dimensional zone. Let's chase after them and fight Zhou Wen. As long as we defeat him, it doesn't matter even if we get expelled. After all, we came here to defeat him," said Gulli as he quickly walked towards Lotus Flower Cave. Sadie followed closely behind.

Zhou Wen had been invited by Feng Qiuyan to Lotus Flower Cave. As Feng Qiuyan had discovered a Mutated Fairy there, he had invited Zhou Wen to kill it.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 609 - Slaying Fairies

Chapter 609 Slaying Fairies

The last time Zhou Wen came to kill the Mutated Fairy, he was with Jiang Yan, Zhong Ziya, and Hui Haifeng. Now, the three of them were scattered across the world. He did not know if there would come a day when the four of them would reunite.

“The Mutated Fairy is inside. I’ll be in charge of restraining the Flying Beasts and ordinary Fairies later. I’ll leave the Mutated Fairy to you, Coach,” Feng Qiuyan said.

“Alright.” Zhou Wen nodded slightly.

The two of them walked into one of the caves. Sadie and Gulli also arrived nearby. When they saw Zhou Wen and Feng Qiuyan walk into the cave, Gulli wanted to chase after them, but he was stopped by Sadie.

“Wait a moment.” After grabbing Gulli, Sadie looked in the direction of the cave that Zhou Wen had entered. An eye suddenly flew out of her eye socket and vanished as though it had teleported.

Sadie had one eye closed, but her other opened eye shot out a light beam that formed a three-dimensional projection in front of her. It was a scene of Zhou Wen and Feng Qiuyan.

In the projection, they were facing a group of Flying Beasts. There were at least a few hundred of them. There were also more than a dozen of Fairies, as well as a mutated black-and-white Fairy.

“So many Fairies. Can the two of them deal with so many Fairies?” Gulli asked while looking at the three-dimensional projection.

“Coach, I’ll pave the way for you,” Feng Qiuyan said as he drew his saber to meet the incoming Flying Beasts.

“There’s no need. Didn’t you invite me over to see me take action? Leave it to me.” Zhou Wen knew very well.

If Feng Qiuyan really wanted him to kill the Mutated Fairy, he would definitely try his best. It was impossible for him to seek his help. The reason he had invited him wasn’t to kill the Mutated Fairy at all.

“As expected, nothing can escape your eyes, Coach,” Feng Qiuyan said.

“Then just watch.” Zhou Wen held the Bamboo Blade in hand as he stared at the Flying Beasts and Fairies that rushed over like a swath of dark clouds. However, his focus wasn’t on them. Instead, he passed through the beast horde and stared at the Mutated Fairy floating in the sky.

“What is he trying to do? To fight so many dimensional creatures alone, even an Epic wouldn’t be able to escape unscathed, right?” Gulli said.

“Wait until everything is over,” said Sadie.

Seeing the horde of Flying Beasts and Fairies rush towards Zhou Wen and about to lunge at him, Feng Qiuyan, who was

standing beside him, took two steps back as though he really didn’t plan on helping.

Just as Gulli and Sadie were wondering how Zhou Wen was going to deal with the group of Flying Beasts and Fairies, Zhou Wen finally unsheathed his saber.

A saber beam flashed but Gulli and Sadie only saw the flash dissipate. Before they could see the blade, it had already returned to its sheath.

The Flying Beasts and Fairies that filled the sky didn’t seem to be affected as they charged at Zhou Wen.

“What the hell? It’s useless,” Gulli muttered.

However, in the next second, the Flying Beasts and Fairies were split in half. Hundreds of Flying Beasts spewed out blood as their dismembered corpses fell.

More than ten Fairies were covered in blood, their bodies beheaded. Even a hundred meters away, the Mutated Fairy who hadn’t charged over had its head chopped off.

Instantly, blood splattered everywhere in the cave; not a single Flying Beast or Fairy survived.

Gulli and Sadie’s expressions changed drastically as though someone had stabbed them in the heart. Their faces turned pale and a cold sweat broke out on their foreheads.

The two of them exchanged looks before retreating. They slowly walked out of Lotus Flower Cave.

After exiting Lotus Flower Cave, Gulli took a deep breath and wiped away the cold sweat on his forehead. He asked Sadie

in bewilderment, “Sis, did you see how he slashed out just now?”

“It was too fast. I didn’t see it clearly, but it’s alright. I have the Eye of Odin. I’ll take my time to have a look when I get back.” It was unknown when the eye that flew out had returned to Sadie’s eye socket.

When the two of them entered their dormitory, Sadie closed the door and windows. Only then did her eyes glow with blue light. The light that shot out formed a three-dimensional projection.

The projection was the scene of Zhou Wen and Feng Qiuyan in the cave. The scene was like a video that was played by Sadie’s eyes.

At the moment Zhou Wen drew his saber, Sadie slowed down the projection. The Flying Beasts’ actions slowed down, but they could only see a saber flash. Before they could see what the saber in Zhou Wen’s hand looked like, it had already returned to its scabbard.

“Impossible… How can it be so fast… Even if he has advanced to the Epic stage… it’s impossible for him to advance so quickly…” Gulli’s face was filled with disbelief.

Sadie’s expression was solemn, but she didn’t say anything. She slowed down the speed of the projection once again. This time, after slowing down, the Flying Beasts’ movements were jittery as it reeled forward frame by frame.

This time, they finally saw Zhou Wen’s strike clearly. The saber was like a stream of light, but in fact, it wasn’t just a saber.

Zhou Wen’s body leaned forward as he drew his saber. Instantly, he flew up with the saber and drew an arc as he shuttled through the Fairy beast horde.

Under such slow replay speeds, he remained so fast that it left them dazzled. The saber beam streaked across the Flying Beasts and Fairies’ bodies like lightning before finally slashing across the Mutated Fairy’s neck. After completing a circle, Zhou Wen returned to his original spot. The saber returned to its scabbard as though he had never moved.

The entire process looked pleasing to the eye. The entire process was smooth, as though it was an agile and speedy flash of lightning.

Gulli broke out into a cold sweat as he looked at Sadie with a stiff neck. “Sis, how slow was your Eye of Odin’s replay speed?”

“Seven times,” Sadie replied with a strange expression.

“Impossible!” Upon hearing this answer, Gulli immediately shouted. “When your Eye of Odin lowers the speed by two times, the fastest Legendary expert will become as slow as a snail. At the speed of four times, even an Epic stage will also be like a turtle crawl. At the speed of six times, even a top Epic expert who focuses on speed will become like a super slow motion scene. How can his saber technique and movement technique be so fast at a seven times slowdown? Even if he’s already a top Epic, it’s impossible for him to have such a fast saber and movement technique.”

“Yes, it’s indeed impossible. The Eye of Odin was slowed down seven times. Only the speed of a Mythical stage expert can produce such an effect,” said Sadie.

“How can he be at the Mythical stage? Impossible. Sis, are you mistaken?” How could Gulli believe that Zhou Wen, who was less than two years older than him, be at the Mythical stage?

“It’s impossible for my Eye of Odin to make a mistake. Of course, it’s impossible for him to be at the Mythical stage. Then, there’s only one possibility left. He trained his saber technique to become a divine technique, which is why he has such a fast speed,” Sadie said with a burning gaze.

“Divine saber technique!” Gulli was stunned. This answer was still unacceptable to him, but he knew very well that Sadie’s Eye of Odin couldn’t be wrong.

They had originally come here to right Lance’s reputation. Although Gulli hadn’t advanced to the Epic stage, he was already very close. As for Sadie, she had advanced to the Epic stage and obtained the Life Soul, Eye of Odin, which was almost like a bug in computer programs.

Gulli originally believed that no matter how strong Zhou Wen was, even if he could defeat him, he was definitely not Sadie’s match.

But now, he felt endless despair. A person who had mastered a divine technique at the Epic stage, and him being only seventeen years old—just the thought of it left him dizzy.

Even in the history of the six families, there had never been such a terrifying person.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 610 - Golden Overlord Sword

610 Golden Overlord Sword

Ding!

A crisp sound came from the phone. Zhou Wen saw an item drop in-game and nearly jumped out of bed.

After returning yesterday, Zhou Wen had spent the entire night grinding dungeons. When he finally killed the Golden Battle God Halberd in the morning, a Companion Egg dropped for the third time.

Is the drop rate for the Golden Battle God Halberd that high? Zhou Wen looked at the three identical halberds with slightly different stats and skills. He felt a little depressed.

An additional Mythical Companion Beast was indeed able to greatly enhance Zhou Wen’s strength. However, when facing different situations, the same Companion Beast’s ability made for weaker adaptation.

When restrained, the same Companion Beasts would be restrained together. They would be limited and prevent him from adapting to the situation.

However, for fusion, there’s no suitable Companion Beast to fuse with the Golden Battle God Halberd. Zhou Wen matched his Companion Beasts with the Golden Battle God Halberd again.

In the final match, the compatibility between Overlord Sword and Golden Battle God Halberd was the highest, but it was only 41%. With less than 50% fusion compatibility, the chances of a fusion success were very low.

The only fusion plan with a high compatibility score was the Golden Battle God Halberd and the Golden Battle God Halberd. However, the most important function of the Golden Battle God Halberd was its Life Soul—Golden Divine Light—and Unstoppable.

With these two abilities, the Golden Battle God Halberd's effects could already be considered to be at its peak. Even if he could enhance its attributes or have a few more skills after fusion, the main functions of the Golden Battle God Halberd wouldn't have any qualitative improvement. It would be better to keep two Golden Battle God Halberds so that he could be stronger in battle.

I already have three Golden Battle God Halberds. I can take the gamble with one. With 41% compatibility, the chances of success can't be considered very low. If the Golden Battle God Halberd can fuse with Overlord Sword's abilities, the best outcome will be having two skills—Unstoppable and Ever-Victorious—at the same time. Then, releasing sword beams being augmented by these two skills, that would be really impressive. However, this is only the best outcome. Ignoring the possibility of fusion failure, even if the fusion succeeds, it might not turn out the way I wish. The skills may be retained, but the Life Providence and Life Soul can also be changed. It might not be able to retain its Mythical stage… After some consideration, Zhou Wen decided to give it a try.

Since Overlord Sword isn't of much use anymore and I have three Golden Divine Battle Halberds, so be it if I lose one.

Zhou Wen didn’t hold much hope as he placed the Golden Battle God Halberd and Overlord Sword together into the fusion column before clicking on fusion.

The two Companion Beasts emitted light at the same time before fusing into one, turning the entire screen into a snow-white glow. When the light gradually dissipated, a new Companion Beast appeared in front of Zhou Wen.

I succeeded… Zhou Wen was delighted as he sized up the Companion Beast.

As the two were already incubated Companion Beasts, the newly fused Companion Beast was affected by the two Companion Beasts, causing a change in appearance.

Zhou Wen’s first impression was that it was a tycoon with a shiny, golden blade. However, this blade was extremely odd. From its appearance, it looked like a greatsword.

However, two short blades protruded from the two sides of the greatsword’s hilt. They were like two side blades of the trident, making it look both like a greatsword or a mutated trident.

After pulling out the information on the new Companion Beast, Zhou Wen carefully looked at its stats.

Golden Overlord Sword: Mythical

Life Providence: Sword Sovereign of God

Life Soul: Golden Sword Aura

Wheel of Destiny: Benevolence of the Battle God

Strength: 79

Speed: 72

Constitution: 79

Essence Energy: 68

Talent Skill: Ever-Victorious, Fangwheel Sword Flash

Companion Form: Golden Greatsword

Zhou Wen frowned slightly. It looked like its stats weren't bad and it seemed to have fused well in all aspects, but it lacked an important skill—Unstoppable—a skill that came with Golden Battle God Halberd.

Furthermore, he did not know if the Golden Sword Aura's effect could be compared to the Golden Divine Light.

Zhou Wen took the golden greatsword to try it in-game and realized that the Golden Sword Aura could actually be shot out as a Fangwheel Sword Flash. Furthermore, its might wasn't inferior to the Golden Divine Light.

It was just that it lacked Unstoppable skill. Its destructive power was slightly weaker, but with Ever-Victorious's augmentation, it was not too much weaker.

Although the Golden Overlord Sword's stats and skills were slightly inferior to the Golden Battle God Halberd, its Golden Sword Aura could be released. This was a qualitative leap, raising Zhou Wen's combat ability. If he had to choose out of the two, Zhou Wen would still choose the Golden Overlord Sword.

Looking at the Golden Battle God Halberd Companion Egg that hadn't hatched, Zhou Wen matched it with the Golden

Overlord Sword and realized that the compatibility was higher than before. It was as high as 69%.

With the Golden Battle God Halberd Companion Egg as a supplementary ingredient, I can strengthen it without changing the Golden Overlord Sword's foundation. However, I wonder how much it can increase. It would be great if I could fuse Unstoppable into it. Zhou Wen gritted his teeth and placed the Golden Battle God Halberd Companion Egg on it again. He decided to fuse it again.

Although the Golden Overlord Sword was already very powerful, Zhou Wen felt that something was missing without Unstoppable.

It had to be said that Zhou Wen had some perfectionist inclinations.

Seeing the light engulf the Golden Overlord Sword and Companion Egg, Zhou Wen couldn't help but feel nervous. Although the success rate was close to 70%, Zhou Wen had previously failed at a higher success rate. Failure wasn't impossible.

My heart is in a mess. I need to blank my mind… Just as the fusion began, his phone suddenly rang. It gave Zhou Wen a fright. He picked up his phone and saw that it was Wang Lu's number.

"What are you doing? Why did you take so long to answer the call?" Wang Lu's voice sounded from the phone.

"I'm gaming," Zhou Wen answered. He turned his head and saw that the fusion had ended. The Golden Overlord Sword was still there and hadn't disappeared.

“Can’t you have other activities other than gaming?” Wang Lu said unhappily.

“I don’t want to move,” Zhou Wen answered.

Wang Lu knew that Zhou Wen wasn’t a talkative person, but she still felt indignant. After calming herself down, she continued, “I’ve successfully advanced to the Epic stage. However, due to the problem of cultivating my Essence Energy Art, I’ve degenerated to the Mortal stage. I need time to recultivate again. I won’t be able to return to school anytime soon. When I wasn’t around, the antelope and Little Feifei must have suffered quite a lot. You must have forgotten to feed them. Do you now know that it’s impossible without me?”

“Not at all. When I wasn’t around, An Sheng would feed them. They had plenty of good food to eat,” Zhou Wen answered.

“Goodbye.” Wang Lu decisively hung up. She felt that if she continued chatting, she would be infuriated by Zhou Wen.

Why did you hang up on me? Zhou Wen put down his phone and looked at the post-fusion stats of the Golden Overlord Sword.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 611 - Competition for the Top Rank

Chapter 611 Competition for the Top Rank

Golden Overlord Sword: Mythical

Life Providence: Sword Sovereign of God

Life Soul: Golden Sword Aura

Wheel of Destiny: Benevolence of the Battle God

Strength: 80

Speed: 76

Constitution: 80

Essence Energy: 78

Talent Skill: Ever-Victorious, Unstoppable, Fangwheel Sword Flash, Battle God’s Radiance.

Companion Form: Golden Greatsword

Zhou Wen was delighted when he saw this. Not only was Unstoppable retained, but he had also gained Golden Battle God Halberd’s Battle God’s Radiance. It was an AOE skill, and it was pretty good.

Furthermore, its stats had increased significantly. It could be considered a top-notch Mythical Companion Beast.

Zhou Wen entered the game with the Golden Overlord Sword. Together with his divine skill, Transcendent Flying Immortal, killing dimensional creatures was simple. Even Mythical creatures couldn't withstand its sharpness.

I'm better with swords at the end of the day. The Golden Battle God Halberd's Golden Divine Light couldn't be released, so it was quite flawed. Zhou Wen compared the Golden Battle God Halberd to the Golden Overlord Sword and immediately gave up on the Golden Battle God Halberd, letting it attack in its own form.

"Old Zhou, quick! Check out the livestream." Zhou Wen was still immersed in the joy of the success of the Golden Overlord Sword's fusion when Li Xuan suddenly sent a message.

"What livestream?" Zhou Wen replied.

"It's the cube's ranking. The second-ranked Death of the Underworld is challenging the number one Primordial Sword Immortal. Holy sh*t, Primordial Sword Immortal has accepted the challenge. Quick, take a look," Li Xuan replied.

Zhou Wen hurriedly opened the webpage and immediately saw all kinds of headlines. They were all live-streaming the battle. He randomly clicked on one and the scene that popped up on his phone was that of the cube's arena. Death of the Underworld and Primordial Sword Immortal floated on both sides of the arena.

The battle between the two Companion Beasts alarmed the entire world. It wasn't just the Federation, but even overseas spectators were watching the battle closely.

Death of the Underworld was first on the rankings in the beginning but was relegated to second because of

Primordial Sword Immortal. Ever since then, despite many Companion Beasts joining the rankings, none shook their rankings. From this, it could be seen that these two Companion Beasts were extremely terrifying by the cube's standards.

Strange, how can Death of the Underworld be challenging Primordial Sword Immortal? Zhou Wen was puzzled.

An Sheng had told him that Death of the Underworld was likely a Companion Beast of a West District hero family. However, the tradition of the family was somewhat different from ordinary families. They didn't have any last names. This was similar to Lance's family from the North District. Neither family had a fixed last name.

Typically, people liked to use the Family Clan of Gods to address the West District's family clan. As for Lance's family clan, it was named the Ultimate Family Clan.

Death of the Underworld was one of the top Mythical Companion Beasts in the Family Clan of Gods. Across the six families, there weren't many Mythical Companion Beasts of this level.

Zhou Wen originally believed that the Family Clan of Gods would definitely leave Death of the Underworld to the end before attempting to race to the top of the rankings. He never expected them to take action so quickly.

An Sheng had also once determined that the vile characters overseas couldn't hold back and would end up probing Primordial Sword Immortal's strength first. Clearly, his judgment was wrong.

It wasn't just Zhou Wen and An Sheng who didn't expect it. Even the other families of the six families didn't think that

the Family Clan of Gods would let the Death of the Underworld challenge Primordial Sword Immortal so early.

What are those fellows up to? Senator Cape watched the livestream and frowned.

Among the six families, the Dugu family dominated the South District. The Ultimate Family Clan resided in the North District, and the East District was controlled by the Xia family and the Zhang family. The West District was the Cape family and the Family Clan of Gods.

The relationship between the two was very complicated. Usually, the two families were in competition with each other in the West District. It could be said that they were at loggerheads with each other. However, when faced with external danger, the two families would work together to form an alliance.

Senator Cape also believed that the Family Clan of Gods would only get Death of the Underworld to challenge Primordial Sword Immortal in the last few days. He never expected them to take action so quickly.

In the arena, Primordial Sword Immortal launched an attack. A red sword beam shot out from the ruby on its hilt, instantly arriving in front of Death of the Underworld.

Death of the Underworld didn’t seem to react as it remained standing there. The red sword beam stabbed into its body.

When everyone saw the red sword beam stab into the gray cloak, they were surprised to discover that Death of the Underworld’s body was like a phantom. The red sword beam failed to injure it at all and directly penetrated its body.

The red sword beam seemed to be alive as it automatically flew back and shuttled back and forth from Death of the Underworld’s body, but it was useless.

Death of the Underworld’s body was like a specter. The red sword beam could not touch it.

Death of the Underworld’s body is about the same as my Ghost Bride. Zhou Wen immediately understood what was going on.

With the red sword beam useless, Death of the Underworld finally moved, its figure vanishing into thin air. It wasn’t because it was fast, but because it had undergone true teleportation. When Death of the Underworld appeared again, it had already arrived beside Primordial Sword Immortal. A ghostly hand formed from blue-black flames grabbed at the hilt of Primordial Sword Immortal’s sword. It was almost touching the hilt.

A sword hum shook the surroundings. Primordial Sword Immortal, which had never been unsheathed, finally tore out of the scabbard. The stone sword automatically flew out of the scabbard and slashed at Death of the Underworld’s palm with an immortal-like sword beam.

Death of the Underworld actually seemed to be afraid. It didn’t dare to receive the stone sword’s attack head-on like before. It flashed once again and dodged the terrifying sword beam.

The ancient sword levitated in the air as the sword beam swirled, sweeping towards Death of the Underworld that had appeared after its teleportation. Death of the Underworld teleported several times, but it was unable to shake off the sword beam.

Just as the sword beam was about to slash at Death of the Underworld, Death of the Underworld suddenly pulled open its gray cloak. The blue-black light in its body erupted and instantly enveloped the entire arena.

Instantly, the screen on the phone turned blue-black. It was as though countless stars were circulating between the blue and black colors, like the universe in the night sky.

Apart from that, there was nothing else.

Is this an Essence Energy Skill or a Wheel of Destiny’s power? Zhou Wen looked at the screen and frowned.

Others were as anxious as Zhou Wen. They didn’t know what had happened in the arena, so they could only stare blankly at the blue-black galaxy.

It only took a moment before the blue-black light in the arena suddenly converged. A sword beam tore through the air. It was the stone sword.

It’s finally out… Just as everyone was feeling pleasantly surprised, they realized that Death of the Underworld had already retreated from the battlefield. After the battle ended, Death of the Underworld’s ranking didn’t change. It was still ranked second—clearly, it had lost.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 612 - Activity Division

612 Activity Division

“What’s going on? I didn’t see the most important part!” Li Xuan sent Zhou Wen a message.

“Although we didn’t see the most important part, there’s already plenty to be seen,” Zhou Wen replied.

“What did you see?” Li Xuan asked.

“Death of the Underworld has the power of a spatial domain. If one wants to fight Death of the Underworld, one has to be prepared to engage in an away match. Primordial Sword Immortal was able to defeat Death of the Underworld within the latter’s spatial domain, so perhaps it also has spatial powers, or perhaps its offensive strength is so powerful that it can destroy space itself. Regardless of the possibilities, the strength of Primordial Sword Immortal is already beyond imagination.”

Zhou Wen paused before saying, “The major families should have professional analysts that can provide more professional analysis. Let’s wait for them.”

“What I want to see the most is the Family Clan of Gods’ analysis report. I didn’t get a kick from this battle,” Li Xuan said with a sigh.

“It’s indeed not satisfying.” Zhou Wen had the same thought. Now, the only person who knew more about Primordial Sword Immortal was the Family Clan of Gods.

However, he was certain that they wouldn’t easily leak the information they had.

Indeed, in less than two days, An Sheng received news that the Family Clan of Gods had indeed come up with a comprehensive analysis. They even publicly put the results up for sale. However, the price was just too high. Even the other large families were hesitant about buying their information.

No one could guarantee that their analysis had any decisive use.

It’s a pity that my pets don’t have spatial powers. In a fight, others will see everything. There’s no chance of selling information. Otherwise, I could sell it and earn a fortune. Zhou Wen had an idea, but no matter how he thought about it, there was no way to keep his information confidential.

Beep! Beep! Beep! There was a notification from his phone. Tyrant Behemoth was hungry once again.

After this fellow advanced to the Mythical stage, its demand for food had increased even more. If not for the Essence Crystal mines in the Poison Bat tunnel, Tyrant Behemoth would have long starved to death.

Thankfully, the Essence Crystal mine would respawn together with the dungeon. Every time Tyrant Behemoth entered the Poison Bat Cave, it would eat the bats and Essence Crystal ores. When it finished eating, it would be 70% full. A second meal could last it two to three days.

What a terrifying appetite. In reality, I really can’t afford to rear it. After Zhou Wen took Tyrant Behemoth to have its feast, he went to grind Torch Dragon and Qiongqi.

Ever since the Torch Dragon egg dropped, no Companion Beasts had dropped. Instead, Qiongqi dropped an Essence Energy Skill Crystal. Unfortunately, his stats didn’t meet the requirements, so he could only have it disappear on the next respawn.

Torch Dragon also dropped a rare spatial stat crystal. This was one of Zhou Wen’s motivations to farm it.

…

Li Xuan called everyone over for a Xuanwen Club activity. Zhou Wen came into the activity room and saw Gulli and Sadie. However, today was a little odd. Gulli didn’t insist on challenging him.

Gu Dian, Feng Qiuyan, Fang Ruoxi, and Tian Xiangdong attended the event. Only Huang Ji didn’t come.

Zhou Wen sent a message asking Huang Ji what was going on. Huang Ji said that he had found a huge investor and was discussing some details with them.

If the investment was successful, his “Dimensional” game could be produced by a proper team. Not only could the map be expanded, but the details of the game could also be optimized.

Who has such poor acumen to actually invest in this game? Although Zhou Wen felt that Huang Ji’s game wasn’t bad, the dungeons were too small. Furthermore, they were dungeons that humans were familiar with, so its effects were limited.

Unless someone provided information on new dimensional zones, the game “Dimensional” ultimately wouldn’t be of much use.

Zhou Wen only used this game as an excuse and didn’t think of relying on it to get rich.

However, Huang Ji revealed that not only did the investor bring in funds, but he would also bring large amounts of information regarding relatively new dimensional zones. This was also one of the reasons Huang Ji was tempted and willing to let outsiders invest.

“Information about new dimensional zones? And large amounts of them? This isn’t something ordinary people can obtain. Is it a scam?” Zhou Wen was somewhat worried.

“Don’t worry. The other party has a military background. His backer should be Deputy Governor Qin. There won’t be any problems in this area.” Huang Ji had already made plans, as though he had long found out the other party’s background.

“If it really is Deputy Governor Qin supporting this, the game might really become popular.” Zhou Wen was somewhat surprised. He never expected the game to attract Qin Wufu’s attention.

“That’s right. However, they have a request. If we let them invest, the dungeon access will be split into three levels. There will be dungeons for public downloads on the Internet. College dungeons that only allow students of Sunset College to download. It will be forbidden to share with others. Another will be the military dungeons, open only to the military. All the information is confidential. Without their approval, the contents of the military dungeons cannot be released in other versions, Huang Ji said.

“That’s reasonable.” Zhou Wen felt that there was no problem.

“Yes, we’re in the midst of a discussion. I’ll inform you of the outcome.”

“Alright.” When Zhou Wen made his initial investment, he had mentioned that he didn’t care about these matters. All he did was wait for the money. These problems were to be decided by Huang Ji himself.

Gulli and Sadie were very quiet today. Gulli, who had been so arrogant when he first entered the school, obediently followed Li Xuan’s activity arrangements. He didn’t say anything arrogant, as though he had changed into a completely different person. It surprised Li Xuan.

He originally imagined that he would have to give these two geniuses from the Ultimate Family Clan another lesson or two to make them behave.

“Today, our target is the Demonized Generals of Tiger Cage Pass. By killing the most Demonized Generals, you can obtain a special pass that we have prepared. As Tiger Cage Pass is relatively dangerous, we will be acting in pairs so that you can also take care of each other. The two people in the same group can’t move separately.” Li Xuan paused before saying, “Gulli, you and Little Yanyan will be in the same team. Sadie, you and I are in the same team…”

“President, I wish to be in the same group as Zhou Wen,” Sadie suddenly said.

Li Xuan scratched his nose and said, “That’s fine. It’s ok if you want to follow Old Zhou. Xiangdong, follow me. Ruoxi, you and Gu Dian will be in the same team.”

After the allocation was done, everyone headed for Tiger Cage Pass. As Tiger Cage Pass was very large, they split up into teams to search for Demonized Generals.

Tiger Cage Pass didn’t have any secrets for Zhou Wen. All he did was come out to get some action. It could be considered as letting others know that he still cultivated.

“Zhou Wen, are you interested in competing?” Sadie suddenly asked Zhou Wen.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 613 - Eye of Odin

Chapter 613 Eye of Odin

“Not interested.” Zhou Wen shook his head.

Zhou Wen was considering how to kill Primordial Sword Immortal. He had no interest in an opponent at Sadie’s level. Even if she was a peerless genius, she was at most at the Epic stage.

The Epic stage was already too weak for Zhou Wen. He had condensed five Life Souls which was equivalent to someone advancing to the Epic stage five times. He really didn’t find the Epic stage impressive.

Even the six families wouldn’t randomly give a Mythical Companion Beast to such a young genius. This was because they had too little combat experience and were too young. Their minds weren’t staid enough and with mighty strength, they easily took risks. That way, they would die even faster.

An Epic expert without a Mythical Companion Beast was no challenge for Zhou Wen.

Sadie seemed to have expected that Zhou Wen would reject her, so she wasn’t angry. She continued, “I know you are very strong. If it were a life-and-death battle, I definitely wouldn’t be your match. However, if we compete in the acumen, I believe you aren’t my match.”

“Since you are so confident, I’ll leave the Demonized General hunting mission to you.” Zhou Wen retreated a

little. A group of Demonized Soldiers had already discovered them and were charging over.

Although Sadie felt that Zhou Wen was looking down on her, she didn’t mind.

In the past, she would definitely have thought that Zhou Wen was too arrogant. However, after seeing Zhou Wen’s Transcendent Flying Immortal, she felt that he had the right to be arrogant.

A seventeen-year-old person who had already mastered a divine technique could be as arrogant as he wanted. It wasn’t excessive.

Sadie summoned an ice sword and charged at the Demonized Soldiers. The Demonized Soldiers were naturally not her match and were easily killed by her. They weren’t even considered a warm-up.

Seeing how Zhou Wen ignored her, Sadie tactfully didn’t say anything else. All she did was wait for an opportunity to make Zhou Wen think of her in a different light.

She was very confident in her Eye of Odin Life Soul. In her family’s evaluation, the Eye of Odin Life Soul was S+ rank. It was even stronger than the average S rank, a Life Soul akin to a bug in games.

Although Sadie’s Eye of Odin had only just condensed and was still a Primordial Body, its ability was already excellent.

Previously, it had been used to record videos, but in fact, it was just a trick of the Eye of Odin. What was truly impressive about the Eye of Odin was that it could observe an opponent in battle.

Now, Sadie’s limit was to slow things down by seven times. In battle, if she used this ability, all trajectories would appear seven times slower in her eyes.

This multiplier was calculated according to the standards of the Eye of Odin. It wasn’t slowing down the object by seven times.

In other words, someone’s seemingly fast attacks would become very slow in Sadie’s eyes. It made it easy for her to dodge those attacks or have enough time to think of a way to deal with them.

The Eye of Odin didn’t only strengthen her vision; in fact, the real target of the Eye of Odin was to strengthen her brain. If the brain’s thinking speed and reaction couldn’t keep up, it could easily cause a situation where one couldn’t react in time despite being able to detect it.

However, the Eye of Odin had strengthened her brain, allowing Sadie’s brain to think and react faster. This was the truly terrifying part.

A saber technique that looked as fast as lightning looked like slow motion in Sadie’s eyes when she slowed it down by seven times. At the same time, her mind raced with all sorts of countermeasures at lightning speed.

Now, Sadie’s only flaw was that because her eyesight and brainpower were too strong, her body couldn’t keep up with her brain’s reaction speed, causing her to have synchronization issues.

Under normal circumstances, a speed of four to five times was her limit. Her body’s speed could keep up with her eyesight and brainpower. Any higher, her body’s movement

speed wouldn’t be able to keep up even if her brain issued an order.

In terms of combat abilities, Sadie knew that she was far from Zhou Wen’s match, but in terms of acumen, Sadie didn’t believe that she would lose to him.

As she charged forward, the ice sword in Sadie’s hand mercilessly harvested the lives of the Demonized Soldiers. Even if she encountered Demonized Generals, she could still kill them with one strike.

Her sword techniques didn’t have any unnecessary movements. She could always use the simplest method to kill her enemy.

Zhou Wen followed behind Sadie without making a move. Seeing that Sadie was about to rush into the range of the Tiger Cage Demonized General, he said, “Let’s end here. Stop walking forward.”

“I heard that Tiger Cage Pass has a very powerful dimensional creature guarding it and ordinary people can’t charge in. Why don’t we have a bet? If I can charge into the city and kill the dimensional creature guarding the gates, it’ll be considered my victory. If I can’t charge in, or if I can’t kill the dimensional creature guarding the gates, count it as my loss. If I lose, I can tell you a secret about the cube ranking. If I’m lucky to win, I hope you can officially spar with me. Just the two of us. Let’s see who’s acumen is better,” Sadie said.

“What secret?” Zhou Wen asked.

“It’s not a secret if I tell you, but I guarantee with my character that this secret is definitely worth it,” Sadie said with certainty.

“Alright, I’ll bet with you. Are you sure you want to kill the strongest dimensional creature in Tiger Cage Pass?” Zhou Wen asked.

“That’s right. Let’s smack palms to make an oath. It’s a deal?” Sadie extended her hand.

Zhou Wen didn’t hesitate as he extended his palm and slapped Sadie’s palm.

Tiger Cage Demonized General was already a top Epic creature. No matter how talented Sadie was, killing Tiger Cage Demonized General was not bad.

However, what was truly terrifying in Tiger Cage Pass wasn’t the Tiger Cage Demonized General, but the Elegant Emperor’s Avatar Puppet. Although that fellow was only at the Epic stage, his difficulty was already close to the Mythical stage. Zhou Wen didn’t think Sadie had the ability to kill the Elegant Emperor’s Avatar Puppet.

After retracting her palm, Sadie’s lips curled up slightly. She wore a confident expression as she charged towards Tiger Cage Pass with her ice sword.

Zhou Wen watched from the side, prepared to help at any moment. If Sadie were to fail, he couldn’t watch her die here.

Just as Sadie stepped into the range of the Tiger Cage Demonized General’s shooting range, she saw an arrow shoot over with a strong spiral force. It was shockingly fast.

However, Sadie didn’t panic. When the arrow reached her, she took a slight step to the side and dodged the arrow. At the same time, she slashed the ice sword in her hand, landing the arrow. She continued rushing towards Tiger Cage Pass.

The storm-like arrows immediately shot over.

Zhou Wen watched as Sadie moved in a small area and brandished the ice sword in her hand. She easily passed through the arrow rain and continued charging at Tiger Cage Pass.

This Sadie really has some ability. Zhou Wen realized that when Sadie passed through the rain of arrows, she used a very small movement to dodge a large number of arrows. Every time the ice sword struck out, it struck the most critical arrow.

The entire process was as exact as a computer’s calculated path. There was no waste of stamina through any unnecessary actions.

Even Zhou Wen himself couldn’t do better than Sadie.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 614 - Eye of Hell

Chapter 614 Eye of Hell

Could it be that Sadie has already reached the Minute Subtlety realm at such a young age? Zhou Wen was somewhat surprised.

Back when Lance visited, he had only just reached the edge of Minute Subtlety. Sadie was a little younger than Lance, yet she had completely mastered Minute Subtlety. From Zhou Wen's point of view, this was extremely shocking.

Unbeknown to Zhou Wen, Sadie purely relied on the powers of Eye of Odin. Her true realm was inferior to Lance, so she naturally wasn't as good as Zhou Wen.

However, Eye of Odin was like a bug in games. To outsiders, Sadie was simply at some greater mastery of Minute Subtlety. No matter how intense the battle was, she could always calmly achieve perfection.

Soon, Sadie rushed to the top of the city and began fighting the Tiger Cage Demonized General.

Tiger Cage Demonized General was slightly stronger than Sadie in every aspect, but under the effects of the Eye of Odin, she could counter all his moves. He couldn't injure Sadie at all. Instead, he was severely restrained by Sadie. It was only a matter of time before he was killed.

There's actually such a genius in this world? Zhou Wen looked at Sadie's battle and was increasingly certain that

she had achieved greater mastery of Minute Subtlety. Otherwise, how could she have reached such a stage?

She should be around my age or younger than me. Since she can do it, there's no reason I can't do it. Zhou Wen carefully observed Sadie's actions as he switched his Essence Energy Skill to Small Perfection of Wisdom.

The Eight Perfections Wisdom Life Providence and Hell King Life Soul also worked at the same time, making his senses extremely sharp.

Zhou Wen sat on the Chi's back and watched the battle. At the same time, he put himself in Sadie's shoes. He imagined a battle with the Tiger Cage Demonized General. In this battle, what was the difference between his choices and Sadie's choices?

Soon, Zhou Wen realized that although his choice wasn't wrong, he found them a little crude compared to Sadie. He wasn't as meticulous as Sadie.

What exactly am I lacking? As Zhou Wen thought, he gradually gained some insight.

There's a saying that goes, "Know yourself and know your enemy, and you will never be defeated." The reason why gods are revered is that they have terrifying clairvoyant abilities. From this, one can see the importance of the word "know." What Minute Subtlety needs is clairvoyance. By observing the other party's actions, one can derive information about the other party and exploit the information obtained… As Zhou Wen's mind raced, his Hell King Life Soul also expanded.

The Small Perfection of Wisdom Essence Energy Art was an Essence Energy Art that strengthened one's Constitution.

The Eight Perfections Wisdom and Hell King Life Soul also strengthened his Constitution, but it was different from the typical strengthening. Instead, it was a way to strengthen one's mind first.

The stronger Zhou Wen's mind was, the stronger the feedback his body received.

With Zhou Wen's comprehension, the Hell King Life Soul became stronger. As for the Hell King Life Soul, it was one with Zhou Wen. The growth of the Hell King Life Soul immediately reflected back on Zhou Wen, making him feel increasingly sensitive.

Suddenly, a vertical eye on Zhou Wen's glabella opened. It was the Eye of Hell that belonged to the Hell King. At the instant it opened, it seemed to have countless wraiths howling in pain.

The moment the Eye of Hell opened, the space around Zhou Wen seemed to change. It wasn't a real eye, but a door that led to hell.

When the Eye of Hell opened, Zhou Wen's body experienced a strange feeling. It was as though there was another feeling beyond his senses. This feeling made his sensual organs feel extremely strange.

So this is the Hell King's true ability. This should be the so-called Eighth Sense, right? To break through the understanding of spatial dimension… Under the effects of the Hell King Life Soul, Zhou Wen didn't even need to look to sense the minute changes in his surroundings.

However, he gradually realized that the feeling he had when he was Hell King didn't seem to be as simple as an eighth sense.

Apart from a normal feeling, he also discovered a strange phenomenon in every creature. It was an indescribable feeling.

He seemed to see a transparent flame burning on all the creatures. Some of the transparent flames were bigger than others, burning like a bonfire.

Some of the flames were relatively small, like fire plumes. It was as though the slightest breath could extinguish them.

What was even stranger was that the flames were transparent and colorless. It should have been impossible to see them, but he could. Even if he closed his eyes, he could sense the existence of the flames.

Furthermore, Zhou Wen could vaguely sense that the transparent and colorless flames seemed to have some connection with the Eye of Hell at his glabella.

Could it be that the flames I see are actually the legendary karmic sinflames? Zhou Wen guessed inwardly, but he wasn’t confident.

Legend had it that karmic sinflames were the flames of sins. Every time someone did something evil, he would have more karmic sinflames on him. After he went to hell, he would be burned by the karmic sinflames.

The greater the sins, the more karmic sinflames there were. This also prolonged the burning in hell. One had to wait for the karmic sinflames to burn out before they could reincarnate.

Zhou Wen was only guessing, unsure if what he saw were karmic sinflames.

Sadie was still fighting the Tiger Cage Demonized General. Her Eye of Odin was indeed powerful. Despite fighting someone stronger than herself, she suppressed the Tiger Cage Demonized General and eventually killed him with one strike.

The entire process was smooth and fluid. She didn’t give the Tiger Cage Demonized General a chance. The Tiger Cage Demonized General didn’t even manage to touch her clothes. Even Sadie was very satisfied with her performance.

Standing on the city wall, Sadie said to Zhou Wen who was outside the city with a smile, “Zhou Wen, I won.”

“See what’s behind you first,” Zhou Wen said calmly.

Sadie was slightly taken aback. She turned her head and saw a strange person wearing a mask standing on top of a tower in the city.

Before Sadie could do anything, the strange person held a stack of yellow paper in his hand and threw it into the air. The yellow paper scattered, turning out to be paper figurines.

However, when the paper figurines landed, they turned into Tiger Cage Demonized Generals. There were more than ten of them.

More than ten Tiger Cage Demonized Generals charged forward and immediately surrounded Sadie.

Sadie was alarmed. She could still deal with a single Tiger Cage Demonized General. If these Tiger Cage Demonized Generals had the same combat strength as the previous Tiger Cage Demonized Generals, she was definitely no match for them.

She originally hoped that these Tiger Cage Demonized Generals were only paper tigers and didn’t have any true strength, but after a short battle, she realized that they were equally terrifying.

Sadie fought many alone. Relying on the ability of Eye of Odin, she constantly dodged and moved around, ensuring that she remained safe. However, under the siege of the Tiger Cage Demonized Generals, Sadie’s physical reaction was no longer able to keep up with her acumen and brain’s reactions. All she could do was try her best to find flaws in the siege and use the time difference to dodge.

Zhou Wen watched with relish. Sadie’s speed couldn’t be considered fast, but her ability, which was akin to Minute Subtlety, was indeed very powerful. She wasn’t injured under the siege of more than ten Tiger Cage Demonized Generals. She was indeed extraordinarily strong.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 615 - Benefits of the Ranking

615 Benefits of the Ranking

With the augmentation of his Life Providence and Life Soul, Zhou Wen realized something when he watched Sadie battle.

So it’s not that she has reached the realm of Minute Subtlety, but she’s relying on her Life Soul. What kind of Life Soul is that? It actually allows her to possess the ability of Minute Subtlety? Zhou Wen thought to himself.

Sadie was fighting many alone. Although she was in a sorry state, she wasn’t injured from the gank. This was quite shocking.

Unfortunately, with so many Tiger Cage Demonized Generals surrounding her, Sadie couldn’t rush out of the encirclement. Her Essence Energy and stamina were very limited, so it was only a matter of time before she died.

This proves that no matter how strong one’s ability is, it’s best to be careful. In such a world, who knows what kind of enemy one will encounter? Once restrained, no matter how strong one’s ability is, one won’t be able to deny death. However, Sadie’s ability isn’t bad. If I can obtain her Essence Energy Art, I wonder if I can use the Lost Immortal Sutra to condense the same Life Soul? Zhou Wen was just musing for a moment. Even if he had the same Essence Energy Art, he might not necessarily be able to condense the same Life

Soul. The formation of a Life Soul was determined by a person’s physique and mental strength. Therefore, everyone’s Life Soul was somewhat different. There weren’t two absolutely identical Life Souls.

It was the same for a Life Providence. The functions might be similar, but not completely identical.

Furthermore, even with the Lost Immortal Sutra, condensing a Life Soul wasn’t easy. One needed a special energy with similar attributes as a foundation. Only then could the Lost Immortal Sutra simulate condensing a Life Soul.

Now that I’m thinking about it, my First Order of Chaos hasn’t condensed a Life Soul. I wonder if I can use a drop of Grim Demon’s blood as a foundation to condense a Life Soul? Zhou Wen set his sights on Grim Demon.

With Demonic Neonate as his master, he probably wouldn’t dare to object to having him release some blood.

While Zhou Wen was considering how to condense the Life Soul of the First Order of Chaos with the blood of Grim Demon, Sadie was struggling to remain safe.

She originally imagined that a dimensional zone like Tiger Cage Pass couldn’t have Mythical creatures. With her Eye of Odin Life Soul, it wasn’t difficult to kill Epic dimensional creatures. Even if she couldn’t beat them, she had a chance of escaping.

Who knew that she would encounter a terrifying existence like the Elegant Emperor’s Avatar Puppet. She didn’t even have a chance to escape.

Zhou Wen watched from outside the city. She knew that Zhou Wen definitely had the ability to help her escape, but

her pride prevented her from asking him. All she could do was summon her Companion Beasts and desperately attempt to rush out of the city.

It wasn’t easy for her to kill a Tiger Cage Demonized General and find a gap, but before she could rush out, she saw the Elegant Emperor’s Avatar Puppet throw out another stack of yellow paper. Instantly, more than ten Tiger Cage Demonized Generals landed. Not only did they seal off the way out, but they also made her situation worse.

Sadie immediately fell into despair. She was surrounded by twenty to thirty Tiger Cage Demonized Generals. Even if her Eye of Odin could see the path needed to get out, her body couldn’t keep up.

The reason the six families didn’t let young people use Mythical Companion Beasts was because of this principle. Young people were hot-blooded, especially young geniuses. They were all arrogant and impulsive. Having powerful strength only made it easier for them to fall into danger.

Therefore, even if they had Mythical Companion Beasts, the various families would give them to people who had some experience and had been burnished by reality. They were calm and capable.

Although they were about the same age, Lance would definitely not make such a decision if he were here.

Sadie’s Essence Energy was almost depleted. A Companion Beast beside her was attacked and ended up slamming into her. Immediately, her trajectory deviated. It was too late to dodge the attacks of the Tiger Cage Demonized Generals.

Sadie gritted her teeth and prepared to risk her life. However, she suddenly saw a flash of saber light. The Tiger

Cage Demonized Generals beside her suddenly stopped their attacks. With a poof, white mist emitted from them as they transformed into yellow paper figurines that landed on the ground.

She turned her head and saw Zhou Wen standing beside the masked man. As for the masked man, his head had been chopped off.

Zhou Wen walked to Sadie's side and asked, "What's the secret regarding the Companion Beast ranking you mentioned?"

Sadie looked at Zhou Wen with a complicated expression before saying, "Actually, this isn't really a secret. There should be quite a number of people in the six families who know about it. In fact, obtaining first place on the rankings isn't the only way to get benefits."

"What do you mean? Isn't the one coming in first place qualified to pluck the divine fruit?" Zhou Wen asked with a frown.

"Picking the divine fruit is indeed something first place qualifies for. However, it's still unknown if one can really pluck it. However, as long as one can enter the ranking, they'll be able to obtain the corresponding benefits. It doesn't matter if the ranking is high. Although, if it is high, there are more benefits," said Sadie.

"What benefits?" Zhou Wen had never heard of such a thing.

"I'm not sure yet. I'll only know what benefits we can obtain after the ranking battle ends," Sadie said.

"Where did this news come from?" Zhou Wen frowned slightly. Sadie's words seemed unbelievable.

The ranking had not long appeared, and it was unprecedented. Even if there was really a reward after the ranking battle, how did the six families know of that?

“I’m not sure about the source of the news, but it shouldn’t be wrong. For the six families and overseas factions to be so eager in rushing up the rankings, it’s definitely not without reason,” Sadie said.

Zhou Wen didn’t know if Sadie really didn’t know or if she was just unwilling to say.

“It’s about time. Let’s head back.” Zhou Wen didn’t ask further.

Sadie walked back with Zhou Wen, but her emotions were mixed. Although she was confident that her acumen was better than Zhou Wen’s, the difference in combat experience was just too great. No matter how good her acumen was, it was useless. It was no different from having psychomotor problems. She felt that there was no need to challenge Zhou Wen again.

An opponent she had no way to fend against was easily killed by Zhou Wen. In front of absolute strength, the effects of her acumen were too minute.

I have to become stronger than him. Sadie cursed inwardly as she stared at Zhou Wen’s back.

Could it be that The Thearch is secretly up to no good? Zhou Wen didn’t care what Sadie was thinking. His mind was on the rankings.

Back then, it was The Thearch who had allowed John to obtain the six-winged seraphim Guardian. It wouldn’t be surprising if she had spread the news of the ranking.

There’s also a possibility that it’s Teacher Wang Mingyuan. The news might have come from his side as well. Zhou Wen felt that the possibility wasn’t small.

There were many experts in the Federation who entered the dimensional zones after a mutation. No one knew if there were any people that the Federation had deliberately planted among them.

If there was, it was not impossible to get news from them.

From the looks of it, I have to go back and ask The Thearch. Zhou Wen decided to take the opportunity of delivering items to The Thearch to ask about the ranking.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 616 - Let Out Some Blood

616 Let Out Some Blood

After the Xuanwen Club’s event ended, Zhou Wen returned to his dorm and sent a message to The Thearch. He informed her that the items were ready for her to receive.

“Send them over.” The Thearch replied.

Zhou Wen sent the items through the portal through the Void Flower. Although they weren’t worth much, he had still spent more than 100,000. It made his heart ache slightly.

“The Thearch, you previously said that only the first Companion Beast on the rankings has benefits. Then, what other benefits does first place have in the future?” Zhou Wen probed.

“Why are you asking? Your Companion Beast isn’t capable of ranking first. It’s useless even if you know,” The Thearch replied.

“Even if I can’t obtain first place, I can still try my best to vie for a higher ranking. Will the other rankings benefit me?” Zhou Wen could tell from The Thearch’s tone that it might really be as Sadie had said.

“Yes, but if you can’t enter the top ten, the benefits are very limited. Your Six-Winged Guardian Dragon’s Wheel of Destiny is virtually useless in the pet battle. From the looks of the Companion Beasts on the rankings, it’s not bad if it can eventually reach the top thirty. The one on your ear isn’t

even at the Mythical stage. It’s impossible for it to enter the top hundred.”

Can’t I have other Companion Beasts? Zhou Wen said that inwardly without sending it to The Thearch. He didn’t wish to expose his true strength in front of The Thearch.

“The Thearch, what benefits will there be for getting on the rankings?” Zhou Wen asked again.

“Do you want to know?” The Thearch’s message came quickly. Unfortunately, it wasn’t an answer.

“Yes,” Zhou Wen answered.

“All the more reason why I won’t tell you.” The Thearch even sent a smug expression after the message.

Helpless, Zhou Wen had no choice but to remain silent.

However, he was certain that there was definitely some benefit to being able to enter the rankings. However, if the ranking was too low, the benefits wouldn’t be great.

Just as The Thearch said, the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon isn’t suitable for a one-on-one battle. Its ranking definitely won’t be high. Which Companion Beast should I use to give it a try? Zhou Wen was momentarily hesitant.

To get on the rankings, one definitely needed to fight. In a battle, one would expose the strength of their Companion Beasts, giving others a chance to figure out a way to restrain them.

Zhou Wen was now thinking about which Companion Beast to expose, one that wouldn’t affect him much in the future.

Zhou Wen wasn’t in a rush to make a decision. There was still plenty of time, so he didn’t need to hurry. Furthermore, the rules of the rankings were that one could only challenge high-ranking ones, not the other way round. Zhou Wen didn’t plan on challenging Primordial Sword Immortal from the beginning.

I have to ask An Sheng first if the Companion Beasts from the Special Inspector Bureau and Cape family are on the rankings. I’ll start with them. Zhou Wen planned on catching them by surprise. He planned on killing their Companion Beasts on the rankings before personally settling scores with them.

Zhou Wen sent a message to An Sheng, but An Sheng didn’t reply. He did not know what he was busy with.

Forget it. I’ll give it a try and see if I can use Grim Demon’s blood to advance the First Order of Chaos. Zhou Wen summoned Demonic Neonate out.

“Little Neonate, get Grim Demon out. I need him to do something,” Zhou Wen said to Demonic Neonate.

Demonic Neonate remained silent as she summoned Grim Demon from the ancient sword.

After Grim Demon came out, his entire body was like a black demonic aura. He had an anthropomorphic look, but his looks were indiscernible.

Clang!

Zhou Wen placed a washbasin in front of Grim Demon and said, “I need some of your blood. I don’t need too much. Just half a basin would do.”

Grim Demon’s expression instantly darkened. Thankfully, his body was covered in the black demonic aura, so no expression could be seen.

“No way.” Grim Demon gritted his teeth.

“Little Neonate.” Zhou Wen looked at Demonic Neonate.

Demonic Neonate turned to look at Grim Demon and glared at him.

Grim Demon immediately cowered. He gritted his teeth and said to Zhou Wen, “Our Guardian’s blood is our life essence. It’s impossible for me to give you that much. At most, I can only give you one drop.”

“One hundred drops.” Zhou Wen bargained.

“Two drops. It really can’t be more.” Grim Demon’s voice was trembling as though he was trying his best to suppress the anger in his heart.

“Ninety-nine drops. Not any less,” Zhou Wen said without changing his expression.

After a final round of negotiation, Grim Demon refused to add any more beyond five drops. No matter how threatening Zhou Wen was, it was useless.

“Five drops? So be it then. Produce it.” Zhou Wen felt that Grim Demon was already desperate enough to risk his life in defiance, so he didn’t continue forcing him. If it was really useful, one drop would be enough. Five drops would be more than enough.

Grim Demon reluctantly extended his finger. Five drops of black liquid that resembled ink flew out and floated in front

of Zhou Wen.

Zhou Wen reached out and had the five drops of Grim Demon’s blood float over his hand. Then, he said to Demonic Neonate, “Alright, store him away.”

Demonic Neonate extended the ancient sword in her arms. Grim Demon could only obediently possess the ancient sword.

“Good girl. Go play with Banana Fairy.” Zhou Wen patted Demonic Neonate’s head and carried the five drops of Grim Demon’s blood into the training room.

He circulated the First Order of Chaos in an attempt to absorb the five drops of Grim Demon’s blood, but the First Order of Chaos seemed to reject it. He failed to absorb it.

Can’t I absorb it? Zhou Wen was somewhat disappointed. This proved that their stats were incompatible. Even if he could barely absorb the five drops of Grim Demon’s blood, it wouldn’t be of much use.

Don’t tell me that I really need the blood of the Guardian in Ant City? Zhou Wen frowned as he looked at the five drops of Grim Demon’s blood.

He felt that the five drops of blood couldn’t be wasted. Zhou Wen switched to the other Essence Energy Arts, hoping to see if he could fuse them with Grim Demon’s blood.

In the end, even though there were strong and weak rejections, they were all incompatible.

Just as Zhou Wen was feeling depressed, he suddenly felt a burning sensation in his ears.

Could it be that Truth Listener is about to hatch? Zhou Wen summoned Truth Listener and saw that it was still in its Companion Egg form and hadn’t hatched.

However, the moment Truth Listener came out, the five drops of Grim Demon blood were sucked away by it. The five drops of blood fused into the golden crystal-like Companion Egg, dyeing the flawless golden color with five black impurities.

Isn’t Truth Listener a Buddhist divine beast? Why does it need demonic blood? Zhou Wen was alarmed as he looked at the Companion Egg that had absorbed the demonic blood.

After Truth Listener’s Companion Egg absorbed the demonic blood, the demonic blood’s black colors gradually spread inside the Companion Egg. It was as though a jar of water had been thrown into the ink. The ink gradually spread out in the clear water and quickly dyed the entire Companion Egg black.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 617 - Nirvana of Ultimate Hell

617 Nirvana of Ultimate Hell

After turning into a black Companion Egg, there were still strange changes happening inside.

A golden light spread out from the middle of the Companion Egg. When the black light touched the golden light, it rapidly faded. In a blink of an eye, the black color vanished completely. The entire Companion Egg turned golden again.

However, at this moment, the golden color seemed to gain some thickness and weight. The Companion Egg gradually turned from transparent to gold.

Crack! Crack!

Cracks appeared on the Companion Egg as it rapidly spread across the golden-like Companion Egg. Then, it peeled off bit by bit. The falling fragments turned into golden sand in the air. When it landed on the ground, it turned into black demonic gas that dissipated.

A golden beast jumped out of the Companion Egg. It looked no different from Truth Listener from the past. Its body was small and its fur was dark-gold. Its six ears were wearing six golden hoops, and its eyes seemed to contain golden lightning.

Zhou Wen extended his palm and Truth Listener jumped onto it. Zhou Wen held it in front of his eyes and carefully observed it. Apart from the six earrings, it was indeed no different from before. All he could do was use his phone to look at its stats.

Truth Listener: Mythical (Evolvable)

Life Providence: Heaven’s Senses

Life Soul: Evil Nullification

Wheel of Destiny: Nirvana of Ultimate Hell

Strength: 81

Speed: 81

Constitution: 81

Essence Energy: 81

Talent Skill: Truth Listener, Indestructible Vajra Body, Evil Warding, Nine Extremes

Companion Form: Earring

With stats at 81, it was a top-notch Mythical Companion Beast. Its Life Providence, Life Soul, and Essence Energy Skills hadn’t changed. The only addition was the Mythical Wheel of Destiny.

From the looks of it, the name sounds very powerful. I wonder what use it has? It can’t be that it’s just a supplementary ability, right? Zhou Wen put Truth Listener away and entered the game. He wanted to try out Truth Listener’s abilities in-game.

Looking at the time, Medusa was about to respawn. Zhou Wen opened the Curse Demon Palace instance dungeon and got Truth Listener to lead as he stormed his way in.

The stone statues were naturally not Truth Listener's match. A casual swipe of its claw shattered them into pieces.

However, what was strange was that even after advancing to the Mythical stage, Truth Listener didn't seem to have the ability to release its powers. It still needed to directly touch its opponent to deal damage.

However, because of Truth Listener's high speed and strength, it was almost impossible to see its actions clearly. The group of stone statues shattered and turned into rubble.

They rushed all the way to the palace where Medusa was. After opening the palace, the beautiful girl became the demoness, Medusa.

"Truth Listener, it's time to showcase your strength. Go, let me see how strong your Wheel of Destiny is." Zhou Wen ordered Truth Listener to use its Wheel of Destiny.

Crack!

Just as Zhou Wen gave the order, one of the six golden hoops on Truth Listener's ear shattered and fell. The fragments disintegrated into golden sand in the air before dissipating into a demonic gas.

As the golden hoop shattered, a terrifying demonic aura erupted from Truth Listener's dark golden body. It caused its body to expand with the demonic aura and undergo some strange changes.

In a short period of time, its petite body turned into a huge beast that was several meters tall. Its dark-gold fur also turned into scales like a terrifying giant ape covered in dark-gold scales. Its body also emitted a strange demonic aura, one completely different from the demonic aura of Grim Demon. It felt more evil.

Medusa had already used the Eyes of Petrification to look at Truth Listener, but when the beam of the Eyes of Petrification swept across Truth Listener's body, it was useless. It was unable to petrify its body.

However, Truth Listener's body violently tore through space and instantly arrived in front of Medusa. Its claws grabbed Medusa's head, its dark-gold claws stabbing into it.

In the next second, Zhou Wen saw an extremely brutal scene. Truth Listener's claws tore the demoness's body into two as demonic blood flowed everywhere.

Roar! After throwing the corpse to the ground, Truth Listener roared at the sky as though it was venting its violent desires.

"Come back." Zhou Wen summoned Truth Listener back. This was because he felt that Truth Listener's emotions were extremely unstable, showing signs of losing control.

The ruthless Truth Listener received Zhou Wen's order and leaped towards the blood-colored avatar. Its monster-like body shrank in midair as a golden earring condensed out of thin air and clipped onto its ear. By the time Truth Listener reached the blood-colored avatar's ear, it had already returned to its original size. There was a golden earring on each of its six ears.

The violent emotions from before vanished as well. It landed on the blood-colored avatar's ear, turning into a tiny dark-

gold earring that hung from its earlobe.

Was that Truth Listener’s Wheel of Destiny? Why is it so irritable when the Wheel of Destiny is activated? It has six earrings on its ears, and only one of them shattered. If the other five shatter as well, will there be different changes? Zhou Wen wanted to give it a try, but when he thought of Truth Listener’s ferocious and ruthless appearance, he temporarily gave up on that thought.

As Truth Listener’s master, he could sense Truth Listener’s thoughts. Just now, Truth Listener’s emotions were extremely unstable. If it became more violent, Zhou Wen didn’t know if it would still obey his orders.

What’s wrong with this fellow? Zhou Wen frowned inwardly.

Tyrant Behemoth was famous for being a ferocious beast, but it wasn’t as irascible as Truth Listener.

As for Truth Listener, it was an auspicious beast according to legend. After its Wheel of Destiny was activated, it was truly puzzling why it had become so violent.

Zhou Wen went online to search for mythical information regarding Truth Listeners. Although there were many different versions, Truth Listener was a kind-hearted divine beast in many of the versions.

There were two popular versions. One of them was that Truth Listener was a white dog. It followed Ksitigarbha’s incarnation and was born in the mortal world. After Ksitigarbha’s incarnation died, it loyally protected the corpse, unwilling to leave even if it had to die. Finally, it became a divine beast.

The four Bodhisattvas' mounts each represented a trait. Truth Listeners represented loyalty.

However, Zhou Wen's Truth Listener wasn't in the form of a white dog. It wasn't the traditional look that had the features of nine different beasts, but more like a snub-nosed monkey.

Therefore, Zhou Wen felt that his Truth Listener was unlikely to match Truth Listener's first legend.

There was also a second version of the legend. In the second myth, Truth Listener was a hellspawn born in hell. It was born in the deepest depths of hell and had the responsibility to guard hell.

Zhou Wen was more inclined towards this version's Mythical legend, but even so, Truth Listener, who presided over hell, should be a kind divine beast. Why was it so violent?

Could it be that the six golden hoops or Grim Demon's blood caused Truth Listener to have a problem? Or could it be that Truth Listener was originally like that? Zhou Wen couldn't confirm the reason as he searched for more information to no avail.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 618 - Chimera

618 Chimera

Thankfully, Truth Listener was fine as long as it didn’t use the Wheel of Destiny. Zhou Wen tried it a few times. Even if it used the Nirvana of Ultimate Hell, it would only shatter one earring every time, turning it extremely violent like a ferocious hellspawn.

However, Truth Listener would still carry out Zhou Wen’s orders completely. Only its unstable emotions worried Zhou Wen.

Having activated the Wheel of Destiny, Truth Listener was extremely powerful in combat. It was able to fight Qiongqi head-on without being at a disadvantage. Qiongqi’s attacks couldn’t harm its body. It could only use its speed to circle around Truth Listener. Truth Listener’s speed wasn’t slow either. In the end, Qiongqi was killed.

However, this was only if it activated the Wheel of Destiny. Although Truth Listener wouldn’t end up killed without it, it wasn’t Qiongqi’s match.

Due to Truth Listener’s potent Indestructible Vajra Body, it was only slightly injured at most. Even the Eyes of Petrification that Medusa released at full strength was useless against it. Apart from Torch Dragon’s Bright Torch Vision World, there was no other power that could directly kill it.

Since he couldn’t find any problems, Zhou Wen stopped thinking about it. After careful consideration, he decided to try his best not to let Truth Listener use its Wheel of Destiny. Most of the time, it would appear in the form of an earring as a companion form.

After advancing to the Mythical stage, Truth Listener’s listening ability became even more impressive. Not only was it extensive, but it could also hear weaker movements.

Although he didn’t know what the principle was, Truth Listener could actually hear colors now. Just this alone made it much stronger than before.

…

“You want to snipe the bureau and Capes’ Mythical Companion Beasts on the rankings?” An Sheng didn’t reply, but he personally came to Zhou Wen.

“Yes,” Zhou Wen answered cleanly.

“If you want to use Torch Dragon or Six-Winged Guardian Dragon, I suggest that you don’t do so. You’ve already exposed the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon too many times, so it’s very easy to find out that it belongs to you. Torch Dragon only exists in the Zhuolu battlefield. Now, only we are the ones studying the temples under the Zhuolu battlefield. It’s very easy to deduce who Torch Dragon’s master is. Although you are already very strong, it’s best if you don’t fall out with the six families now,” An Sheng said.

“I understand. I still have a Companion Beast that no one has seen before. I usually don’t use it. Now, I plan on letting it snipe the Capes and the bureau’s Companion Beasts,” Zhou Wen said.

“That would work, but there aren’t many Mythical Companion Beasts from the bureau. They aren’t on the rankings either. If you insist on taking action, you can only start with the Capes. This is the information on the three Companion Beasts that the Cape family has listed. These three are confirmed to be theirs. The others aren’t confirmed. It’s best you don’t kill them randomly. After all, these Mythical Companion Beasts are the foundation of the Federation. It would be a pity if they were destroyed.” An Sheng’s words were actually reminding Zhou Wen not to cause too much trouble.

The Federation’s situation was very bad. In the future, after the seal over the dimensional zones were broken, they would still need these Mythical Companion Beasts to fight to protect humans.

They were not only the Cape family’s private property, but also the Federation’s future hope.

“Don’t worry. I know what to do.” Zhou Wen didn’t plan on wantonly killing, but he definitely had to settle the scores with the Cape family and the bureau.

Out of the Mythical Companion Beasts that could be confirmed to be the Cape family’s, one of them was ranked 91st—Inferno Dragon, while the other was ranked 63rd—Sprite King of Thunder. It was ranked even lower than Zhou Wen’s Six-Winged Guardian Dragon.

Although killing them would make the Cape family feel the pinch, alarming them would make them wary. It was impossible for Zhou Wen to have another chance.

Therefore, Zhou Wen set his sights on the top-ranked Chimera in the Cape family. It was ranked thirteenth.

Chimera’s appearance was very strange. It had a lion’s body, a snake as a tail, and a pair of bat wings.

It also had three heads. One was like a lion, the other was like a goat, and the other was like a single-horned dragon.

Up to now, no other Companion Beast had challenged Chimera, so any understanding of it was limited to its past combat achievements.

More than ten years ago, an evil dragon broke out of the seal and wreaked havoc in the Federation’s coastal cities. It was the territory of the Cape family, so the Cape family mobilized Chimera to kill the evil dragon in that battle.

Legend had it that the dragon had left behind a Companion Egg. It was the Inferno Dragon that had been listed.

According to the information that leaked back then, Chimera had many attributes. Poison and flames were already proven abilities. There were also some other abilities that had not been confirmed. Most of them were just guesses.

After Zhou Wen finished reading the few pieces of information on Chimera, he decided to start with it. He needed to strike at it in one fell swoop. As long as the Cape family dared to accept the challenge, they wouldn’t even have the chance to admit defeat.

I’ll send Tyrant Behemoth. This fellow is clearly a Companion Beast from the West District. It’s difficult for others to suspect me, Zhou Wen thought.

Zhou Wen didn’t know that although Tyrant Behemoth was a dimensional creature in the West District, the Companion Egg was obtained by the Zhang family. Few people knew

about this, but the Zhang family had lost the Tyrant Behemoth Companion Egg. They had been searching for it.

“Ah Sheng, is there a way to prevent others from seeing my Companion Beast in the arena?” Zhou Wen was extremely vexed about this point.

This was because all the major media outlets had set up fixed cameras around the cube. The black cube had been tightly surrounded and was constantly being filmed 24/7. If he were to bring Tyrant Behemoth over to start the battle, he would definitely be captured by the cameras.

If Tyrant Behemoth appeared in Luoyang, it reduced the significance of sending it.

“You will definitely be captured by the cameras if you go to the cubes in the various cities.” An Sheng thought for a moment and said, “How about this? You are already very familiar with the roads around White Cloud Mountain and Mount Laojun. In a 400-kilometer-radius, there’s an ancient town. There’s also a cube in the ancient town. As it’s too remote and there are plenty of dimensional zones around it, there’s no one living there. Very few people will pass by. I’ll draw a map for you. Go there.”

Zhou Wen was overjoyed. After getting the map, he packed his things and headed for the ancient town.

Mount Laojun and White Cloud Mountain were both part of the Funiu Mountain Range. Zhou Wen was indeed very familiar with the roads here. Alone in the mountain range, he had many Mythical creatures protecting him, so there wasn’t much danger.

However, Zhou Wen still avoided the known dimensional zones to prevent himself from falling into unknown danger.

He arrived at the ancient town An Sheng mentioned without any mishaps. Indeed, this place had become a ghost town. Many of the houses in the town had collapsed, and many buildings were covered in green plants.

Zhou Wen walked into the town and walked along the stone path. This had probably been a tourist attraction in the past. Although the town wasn’t big, the architecture was pretty good. Unfortunately, it was already abandoned.

As it was surrounded by mountains on three sides, it got dark rather early. When Zhou Wen walked through the town, the sky was already dark.

Suddenly, Zhou Wen saw a small shop with its lights on in front of him.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 619 - Genie“s Master

619 Genie“s Master

There’s actually someone here? But even if someone lives here, the power supply in the town should have been cut off. How can there be light? Zhou Wen was alarmed as he carefully approached the shop at the corner of the street.

The shop was a minimart. Quite a number of the LED lights on the shop sign were not working. A small portion of them was still lit. In such an environment, it looked a little strange.

Zhou Wen used Truth Listener’s hearing abilities. Although he was still very far away, the situation in the minimart had already projected itself in his mind. It was like a holographic projection that allowed him to see everything clearly. It even had color.

Soon, Zhou Wen saw a young man sitting on a wooden rocking chair in the minimart with his eyes closed.

On the wooden table beside the rocking chair was a mess of snacks and a few opened cans of beer.

The youth rocked in the chair as he closed his eyes in enjoyment. He gulped down beer and occasionally threw a few snacks into his mouth. He looked rather pleased.

And on the counter beside him was an oil lamp. The style of the oil lamp was very similar to that of the Saga of Heroes oil lamp. It was obvious that it wasn’t from the East District.

The oil lamp’s flames shone with white light. Strangely, in the white light, the lights in the minimart lit up. There was also a fan that was spinning.

Zhou Wen had just taken a look when the oil lamp’s flame suddenly expanded. Instantly, white light surged, immediately disabling the effectiveness of Truth Listener’s ability. It couldn’t hear the situation in the minimart.

Zhou Wen was alarmed as he looked at the minimart. He saw that the youth had already walked out and was looking at him.

Beside the youth, the oil lamp floated in the air. As for the flame, it had already turned into what looked like a deity. It was somewhat similar to the mythical Aladdin’s magic lamp.

When the youth saw Zhou Wen, his expression seemed odd. He stood there and sized him up as though he was very curious about him.

Zhou Wen also sized up the youth. He looked 27 or 28 years old. He wasn’t handsome, but he was very stylish. He was the type that was filled with manly charm.

Zhou Wen was certain that he had never seen him before as he looked rather unfamiliar.

As for the lamp beside him, Zhou Wen recognized it. It was Genie which was on the ranking. It had once been ranked third, but it had now fallen to ninth place. It was still quite a respectable ranking.

“Please don’t misunderstand. I don’t have any ill intentions. I just happened to pass by and saw some light, so I came over out of curiosity,” Zhou Wen said.

The youth curled his lips and laughed. “It’s fate that we meet. Apart from us, there’s no one else here. Why don’t you come in and have a drink with me? It will save us the loneliness of the night.”

“Thank you for your kindness. I still have something to do. I’ll continue on my way. I won’t disturb you any further.” Zhou Wen felt that the youth was somewhat odd, so he decided to stay away from him.

To his surprise, the youth said with a smile, “There are mountains surrounding three sides of this area. Apart from the path you took to enter, there’s no other way out. And in such a sh*thole, the only useful thing is probably the black cube in the town square. I’m afraid you are like me. You don’t want others to see your Companion Beast on the rankings, right?”

The youth’s guess was naturally correct. Although Zhou Wen wanted to deny it, he couldn’t find a reasonable excuse.

“Now that you’ve seen my Genie, even if I know that your Companion Beast is on the rankings, you and I have something against each other. No one will be at a disadvantage. I’ve been here for many days and haven’t even seen a fly. I’m really bored. Just stay here and chat with me,” said the youth with a smile.

Zhou Wen didn’t move. Since he had been discovered, he decided not to let Tyrant Behemoth fight here.

Just as he was about to bid farewell and leave, the youth continued, “It doesn’t matter if you don’t want to stay. However, you already know my secret, and I don’t have anything to use against you. It’s naturally impossible for me to let you leave alive.”

As he spoke, the Genie beside the youth had already arrived in front of him. It stared at Zhou Wen and took a deep breath. The body condensed from the flame instantly doubled in size as though a flaming vortex was flowing inside.

“Do you want to fight my Genie or stay behind to drink with me? Make a choice.” The youth leaned against the door frame and took another sip before looking at Zhou Wen with a smile.

“I’m sorry.” Zhou Wen turned around and left.

The youth didn’t have any intention of taking action. He only said indifferently, “You know that my Companion Beast is Genie, but you aren’t moved at all. Yet, you came to this godforsaken place to make it onto the rankings. The Companion Beasts you possess are definitely extraordinary. At the very least, they are higher than my Genie. Even if you aren’t on the rankings, I can guess that any new top Companion Beast that appears on the ranking will be yours.”

Zhou Wen didn’t stop as he continued walking.

The youth’s voice continued, “Your name is Zhou Wen, right? Everyone in the bureau has a photo of you.”

“You’re from the bureau?” Zhou Wen turned to look at the youth. If the youth was really a member of the bureau, he could use all means to kill him, despite not liking the idea of murder.

“Don’t misunderstand. I have nothing to do with the bureau.” The youth shrugged nonchalantly and said, “I’m the same as you. I’m a target of the bureau’s pursuit. I’ve seen your photo in the hands of the bureau’s people and some information. That’s why I recognize you.”

“You came here to attempt getting into the rankings and have a powerful Companion Beast. I’m guessing you are planning on doing something. However, the bureau doesn’t seem to have any Mythical Companion Beasts on the rankings. I remember now. You have quite a deep grudge with the Cape family. Are you trying to challenge the Capes’ Companion Beasts on the rankings?”

The youth thought for a moment and laughed. “Chimera… You want to challenge Chimera, right?”

“Who are you?” Zhou Wen frowned as he looked at the youth. He hadn’t said a thing, but the youth had already guessed so much. It was as though he had read his mind. It left Zhou Wen somewhat alarmed.

“Uncrying Night. First on the bureau’s wanted list, and my bounty is the highest. Have you heard of me?” The youth drank another mouthful of beer before continuing.

Zhou Wen didn’t know who was ranked first on the bureau’s wanted list, but the youth did indeed make him wary.

“I already know your secret. Unless you kill me or give up on your plan, it doesn’t matter where you get to on the rankings. Why don’t you stay and have a few drinks with me? That way, you won’t be alone in this remote mountain range.” The youth threw a can of beer at Zhou Wen.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 620 - Strange Town

Chapter 620 Strange Town

Zhou Wen’s eyes focused as he slashed out with the Golden Overlord Sword in his hand. The golden sword beam instantly destroyed the beer as it shot towards Uncrying Night.

The Genie in front of Uncrying Night spat out a blinding white flame. The golden sword beam struck the flame like a wheel, splitting it apart. At the same time, it split the Genie’s body into two and continued slashing at Uncrying Night.

A look of surprise flashed across Uncrying Night’s eyes as he quickly dodged the golden sword beam’s slash.

However, the sword wheel formed by the golden sword beam suddenly boomeranged and slashed at Uncrying Night’s back at an even faster speed. It was none other than the Boomerang Wind Essence Energy Skill.

Just as the golden sword wheel was about to touch Uncrying Night’s back, he suddenly used a strange stance. As he leaned forward, he spun his left leg as he dodged the golden sword wheel in a contorted fashion.

The Golden Overlord Sword in Zhou Wen’s hand wasn’t idle either. With Transcendent Flying Immortal activated, he fused with the sword beam as his body tore through the void and slashed at Uncrying Night like golden lightning.

Uncrying Night wore a solemn expression as black matter condensed on his hands. It transformed into bracers that

wrapped around his arms and palms as he stared intently at the Golden Overlord Sword that flashed over.

Clang!

Uncrying Night managed to sandwich the Golden Overlord Sword's blade in the middle. However, the golden sword beam on the Golden Overlord Sword was too intense. It pushed Uncrying Night's body back, causing him to slam into the building behind him, collapsing it.

Boom!

Uncrying Night crashed through several buildings and finally slammed into the stone wall. The stone walls behind him were in ruins before he stopped retreating.

The Golden Overlord Sword's blade was still firmly clamped between his hands. The black vortex produced by the bracers constantly absorbed the golden sword beam, but it was unable to completely absorb it. The sword beam sparks produced constantly exploded.

Zhou Wen pushed the blade with all his might, slowly pressing the blade towards Uncrying Night. Just as the golden sword beam on the blade was about to touch his cheek, Uncrying Night pushed with both hands and ducked to the side. The Golden Overlord Sword left a deep mark on the mountain wall behind him.

Zhou Wen brandished his sword and was about to slash again when Uncrying Night waved his hand. "Junior Brother, I'm joking with you. There's no need to fight to the death!"

Seeing that Zhou Wen was completely unfazed, the Golden Overlord Sword in his hand slashed down again. Uncrying Night waved his hand as he retreated. "I'm really your senior

brother. My name is Liu Yun and I'm Teacher Wang Mingyuan's student. You should have heard of my name, right? I'm the same as you. I graduated from Guide High School. Speaking of which, we hail from the same hometown."

Zhou Wen was slightly taken aback when he heard that. He did remember that Wang Mingyuan had such a student, but he had long graduated. He was from a graduating class many years ago.

He had even discussed the senior brother named Liu Yun with Zhong Ziya. Furthermore, Liu Yun was rather famous in Guide City. He was publicly recognized as Guide City's genius. Zhou Wen had heard of his name when he was there.

"Didn't you say that your name was Uncrying Night? Why are you now Liu Yun?" Zhou Wen stared coldly at the youth. He didn't lower his sword as he locked onto him.

"Uncrying Night is my nickname. My real name is Liu Yun." As the youth spoke, he took out something. "You recognize this thing, right? I believe other than Teacher's students, no one else will have it."

Zhou Wen saw that the youth was holding a pendant. It looked like it was carved from ivory, but it was a little green, instead of the yellow tinge that ivory had.

Zhou Wen couldn't help but be taken aback when he saw the pendant. He also had one. It was given to him by Wang Mingyuan and had once helped him tide through danger.

Later, he heard from Wang Mingyuan that the pendant had been carved from the teeth of the white dragon in Dragon's Well. However, Wang Mingyuan said that he had carved four of them and gave them to Jiang Yan, Zhong Ziya, Hui

Haifeng, and Zhou Wen respectively. He didn’t mention anything about Liu Yun.

“There’s no need to doubt it. When Teacher obtained the dragon teeth, I was the one who helped him steal them from beneath Dragon’s Well. Back then, Teacher carved a pendant for me and kept the rest. He said that he would give it to his favorite disciples in the future. I believe you must have one too, right?” said Liu Yun.

“How did you know I would be here?” Although Zhou Wen already believed that he was Wang Mingyuan’s student, he didn’t relax his guard.

Liu Yun spread out his hands and said, “How would I know that you would come here? I was pursued by the bureau and fled here to seek refuge. I didn’t expect to meet you. If it weren’t for the bureau’s constant hunting of the four of you, I wouldn’t have known that you were Teacher’s student.”

Just as Zhou Wen was about to say something, he suddenly heard hurried hooves coming from the north of the town. It was as though thousands of troops were charging towards the town.

“Oh no, I was caught up with pulling your leg and forgot about this matter. Quickly hide. Don’t reveal yourself or make a sound. Otherwise, there will be big trouble.” As Liu Yun spoke, he unsummoned Genie and charged forward. With a bound, he jumped into a water well by the side.

With a thought, Zhou Wen leaped down with Liu Yun with the Golden Overlord Sword in hand.

Splash! Splash!

The duo fell into the well one after another. Liu Yun sank his body into the water, and Zhou Wen followed suit. They dived into the well together, but the Golden Overlord Sword in his hand maintained an offensive stance, guarding against Liu Yun.

As the hooves approached, Zhou Wen used his ears to listen to the situation outside. The projection outside immediately imprinted itself into his mind, allowing him to see a strange scene.

The ones running outside weren’t horses, but creatures that looked like deer. The deer were completely white, and there were crystal-like antlers on their heads. The herd of white deer numbered at least a hundred. Every one of them was abnormally majestic, and the crystal antlers on their heads were extremely large.

On the back of the majestic white deer in front of the herd was a strange creature. It wore white clothes, white trousers, and a white hat. It looked like a human, but its face was also white. It had no mouth, nose, eyes, nor eyebrows—like a piece of white paper.

The white deer carried the white-clothed man and ran through the streets, but they didn’t leave the town. Instead, they circled the streets.

Clang! Clang! Clang! Clang! Every time the herd of white deer walked a distance, the white-clothed man would strike the metal disc in his other hand with a rod. They did not know what he was doing.

After the white deer herd and the white-clothed faceless man circled the town, they sped away and left the town.

Only then did Liu Yun rush out of the well and chase after the white deer herd.

“What are you doing?” Zhou Wen jumped out of the well and asked Liu Yun.

“Flower picking,” Liu Yun answered before chasing in the direction that the white deer herd had disappeared.

Zhou Wen thought for a moment and followed him out of town.

The white deer and the white-clothed man were dimensional creatures, but this town wasn’t a dimensional zone. It was indeed strange for them to appear here.

It was mainly because Zhou Wen was afraid that the fellow who claimed to be Liu Yun would escape. He still couldn’t confirm who he really was. Even if he was Liu Yun, Zhou Wen couldn’t let him spread the news of him coming here.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 621 - Treasure Snatching in the Lake

621 Treasure Snatching in the Lake

The town was surrounded by mountains on three sides, and the direction the white deer herd came from was not the entrance, but the depths of the basin.

When Zhou Wen caught up to Liu Yun outside the town, Liu Yun gestured for him to remain silent before stealthily approaching.

Zhou Wen followed behind him to see what he was up to.

Liu Yun seemed to be very familiar with the path here. He drilled through the forest and grasslands, and soon, he hid in a bush.

Zhou Wen also entered the grassland and realized that there was a lake beyond it. The lake wasn’t very big, and surrounding it was the large grassland and a small portion of a forest.

The white deer herd was on the grass beside the lake. The bright moonlight shone on the grass and the lake, blanketing them with a layer of light. It looked exceptionally beautiful, like an immortal paradise in the mortal world.

Most of the white deer had their heads lowered as they leisurely ate the grass. Only the leading white deer was

standing straight on the bank. The white-clothed man was also staring at the lake.

Although he didn’t have eyes, he gave off the feeling that he was staring intently at the center of the lake.

Clang! Clang! Clang! Clang!

After a while, the white-clothed man used the rod in his hand to strike the metal disc. With that, the grass-eating white deer raised their heads and approached the leading white deer.

The leading white deer walked towards the lake. Magically, it slowly walked over the water. It didn’t sink into the water. Ripples spread under its hooves. Under the moonlight, it was like a ring of light spreading across the water surface.

The white deer behind followed. They stepped on the water surface and followed the leader to the center of the lake.

When the white deer came to a halt, the white-clothed, faceless man’s rod struck at an even higher frequency. He kept striking the metal disc, producing clanging noises.

Amidst the rapid clanging, the white deer herd became uneasy.

It was unknown what kind of power was driving the white deer. One of the white deer raised its head and used its antlers to slam into the white deer beside it.

The crystal-like antlers immediately tore through the other white deer’s stomach and blood gushed out like a fountain.

It was as if the curtain had been drawn. The entire herd became irascible, constantly killing each other on the

surface of the lake. The deer’s blood dyed the lake red in a moment, and the dead white deer’s corpses sank into the water.

Zhou Wen was somewhat curious when he saw this strange scene. He wanted to know what the white-clothed man was doing.

More and more white deer died and sank to the bottom of the lake. Soon, only the leading white deer from the original hundred remained standing on the surface of the lake.

As for the originally crystal-clear lake, it had already been dyed purplish-red by the white deer’s blood. It was like a huge blood-red gem that emitted a rich smell of blood.

Bloop! Bloop!

In the middle of the lake, tiny bubbles surfaced. It was as if the lake had been boiled, but the temperature of the lake didn’t rise.

After a while, Zhou Wen heard a splashing sound. Then, he saw a white flower tear out of the water and float to the surface.

The flower had six petals, blooming in a hexagonal shape, they were as white as snow. There was a circular petal in the middle, but it was bright red like blood. It looked like a Sacred Lily, but its flower pistel’s diameter exceeded a meter.

As the flower appeared, the purplish-red color of the lake water gradually faded. As for the snow-white petals, they gradually turned red as though the petals had absorbed the blood in the lake.

In just twenty minutes, the lake water returned to its crystal-clear state. The huge flower had completely turned blood-red, like a beautiful blood rose.

The white-clothed, faceless man waved his hand and used it like a blade, slicing off the white deer’s head he was riding. Blood spewed out from the white deer’s severed neck like a fountain. It splashed onto the flower, making it even more beautiful.

The deer’s corpse sank into the water, but the white-clothed figure didn’t react at all. He stood on the surface of the water with a face without any facial features. He continued facing the blood flower as though he was staring at it.

From the looks of it, the white-clothed man’s target should be that flower. What’s the use of that flower? Just as Zhou Wen was pondering over it, he saw a red glow shoot out from the flower. It was as though something was shimmering in the petal.

The white-clothed man, who had been standing there motionless the entire time, finally moved. He extended a hand and grabbed the center petal.

Liu Yun, who was lurking beside Zhou Wen, suddenly charged forward like a stream of light towards the flower. At the same time, he threw the oil lamp in his hand at the white-clothed, faceless man.

The oil lamp spewed out flames in the air, turning into a deity-like Genie. It spewed out flames that resembled a tornado towards the white-clothed, faceless man.

While the flames entangled the faceless man in white, Liu Yun reached out to grab the petal.

The white-clothed, faceless man waved his sleeve and immediately extinguished all the flames that the Genie spewed out. At the same time, the white wooden stick in his other hand struck at Liu Yun.

Liu Yun blocked the wooden stick with one hand while his other hand continued its attempt at grabbing the flower. Unfortunately, it was blocked by a metal disc.

In an instant, Liu Yun and the white-clothed, faceless man clashed several times. Liu Yun's hands were extremely fast, leaving behind afterimages when he attacked. It was as though he had transformed into a Thousand-Hand Guanyin. His speed wasn't inferior to Zhou Wen's Transcendent Flying Immortal. It was no wonder he could grab the Golden Overlord Sword with both hands.

However, the white-clothed man was even faster. As he blocked Liu Yun, he struck the metal disc with the wooden staff.

Clang!

Zhou Wen, who was by the riverbank, immediately felt his mind explode when he heard the sound. His soul seemed to waver from the tremors as though it would fly out of his body at any moment. He couldn't help but be alarmed as he hurriedly switched to Gods Retreat. At the same time, he took out the Substitute Talisman and stuck it on his body. He summoned the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon and had it appear in its six-winged form behind him.

He fully activated the Truth Listener earring's abilities, blanketing the entire lake to clearly observe everything that happened.

Without a doubt, the white-clothed man was definitely a Mythical dimensional creature.

Judging by the loud sound, Liu Yun was also thrown into the lake. The situation didn’t look good.

However, when the white-clothed, faceless man looked at the flower, he was enraged. He slammed the metal disc again, causing the surrounding lake water to explode and spray. It rose up more than ten meters.

Zhou Wen also realized the problem. The thing that twinkled in the middle of the flower had vanished. Clearly, it had been taken by Liu Yun, but he hadn’t detected the moment when Liu Yun had taken it away.

He was fast! Just as Zhou Wen reeled in surprise, he saw Liu Yun rush out of the lake and climb ashore. He wanted to escape in the direction of the town.

However, the white-clothed man’s figure flashed. When he appeared again, he was already in front of Liu Yun, blocking his path.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 622 - Orange Ca

Chapter 622 Orange Ca

The white-clothed, faceless man was like a ghost as he drifted over. His figure appeared and disappeared from time to time. Li Yun was struggling to escape, but he couldn’t. He couldn’t beat him either, so he could only rely on the pair of black bracers and the protection of Genie to barely withstand the white-clothed, faceless man’s attacks.

“Junior Brother, quickly help me!” Liu Yun shouted as he fought.

Zhou Wen hid in the distance and didn’t move. He wasn’t familiar with Liu Yun, so it was naturally impossible for him to risk his life. He could take the opportunity to observe what abilities the white-clothed, faceless man had, so he could reap the benefits of the mutually destructive struggle.

The white-clothed, faceless man didn’t seem to have any terrifying skills, but Zhou Wen felt that he was somewhat odd. The clanging sound had actually shaken his soul. Even Truth Listener’s Evil Nullification was useless. It was obvious how terrifying he was.

Although he didn’t strike the metal disc again, Zhou Wen had to be wary.

Seeing Zhou Wen hiding in the distance without making a sound, Liu Yun used Genie to circle around the white-clothed, faceless man, but it didn’t have much of an effect. Although Genie wasn’t afraid of many kinds of destructive

power, there was nothing he could do about the white-clothed, faceless man. Its flames were extinguished by the white-clothed, faceless man with a wave of his sleeve. It wasn't of much use.

"Junior Brother, help me. I'll share the benefits with you," shouted Liu Yun.

"What benefits? What's inside the flower?" Zhou Wen asked.

"I can't explain it in such a short period of time. Let's work together to kill this monster first," shouted Liu Yun.

Zhou Wen didn't say a word as he continued hiding in the shadows.

"Half. I'll give you half the benefits." Li Yun shouted again.

Zhou Wen remained unmoved. He had been observing the white-clothed, faceless man the entire time. The wooden staff in his hand didn't seem to be anything special. Even so, Liu Yun didn't dare let it hit him. All he dared to do was defend with his bracers.

His pair of bracers were definitely transformed from a Mythical Companion Beast. Otherwise, it would have been impossible for him to fend off the Golden Overlord Sword, nor could he block the attacks of the white-clothed, faceless man.

The Genie and the Mythical bracer could barely withstand the white-clothed, faceless man's attacks. From this, it could be seen that although the white-clothed, faceless man looked ordinary, he was actually rather terrifying.

Genie's ranking was still rather high. Yet, despite fighting the white-clothed, faceless man, he didn't show any special

performance. Clearly, he was restrained.

“Junior Brother, at the very least, we studied under the same teacher. You can’t just leave me in the lurch.” Seeing Zhou Wen ignore him, Liu Yun sighed and said, “Fellow disciples should share weal and woe together. Don’t blame me for being heartless. Be careful of the staff in his hand. Don’t let it hit your body. Otherwise, your soul will immediately dissipate. It doesn’t matter how strong your body is.”

As Liu Yun spoke, he retreated while in combat. He ran towards Zhou Wen, clearly hoping to drag him into the fight.

How could Zhou Wen let him have his wish? Although he had many Mythical Companion Beasts and wasn’t necessarily afraid of the white-clothed, faceless man, there was no need for him to be Liu Yun’s shield.

Zhou Wen gradually retreated. As Liu Yun was fighting while retreating, he naturally couldn’t keep up with his speed.

“Junior Brother, I’m sorry. I’ll make it up to you when we meet again.” As Liu Yun spoke, he summoned an orange cat.

The orange cat was like a ball, but after appearing, it was extremely agile. It pounced at Zhou Wen like lightning.

It was strange. The white-clothed, faceless man had been chasing Liu Yun relentlessly, determined to take back the item from the flower.

However, the moment the orange cat appeared, the white-clothed, faceless man seemed to be attracted by a magnet. He gave up attacking Liu Yun and instead chased after the orange cat.

Zhou Wen immediately figured out what the problem was. A mysterious wave emitted from the orange cat's body, as though it was a taunting skill. It attracted the white-clothed, faceless man to chase after it.

Orange Cat was extremely fast as it led the white-clothed, faceless man towards Zhou Wen. Its body was as fat as a ball, but the way it positioned was extremely coquettish. It dodged the white-clothed, faceless man's pursuit time and time again.

Zhou Wen pulled out the Golden Overlord Sword and slashed out a few sword beams at Orange Cat, but it dodged them all. It seemed to know a teleportation skill as it got closer and closer to Zhou Wen.

There was only one way out with mountains surrounding the area. Zhou Wen had no choice but to fly up and escape using the sky.

However, just as he charged into midair, Orange Cat burrowed into the grass and the mysterious waves from its body vanished. The white-clothed, faceless man regained his clarity of mind and happened to see Zhou Wen fly up into the air like a ghost. He instantly caught up to Zhou Wen in midair.

"Junior Brother Zhou, I'll thank you now. See you again if fate allows for it. I'll treat you to a drink." Liu Yun waved at Zhou Wen from afar. It was unknown when Orange Cat had returned to his embrace.

"Junior Brother, you have to be careful. That fellow is the legendary Mountain God. The wooden staff in his hand can directly attack the soul. Using present-day parlance, it can attack one's mind. Once you are hit, you will become an

idiot. You have to be careful.” Liu Yun’s voice sounded from afar. It softened until it was almost inaudible.

Zhou Wen guessed what the white-clothed, faceless man was after hearing Liu Yun’s words. The Mountain God mentioned in ancient times wasn’t an embodiment of a mountain, but a powerful demon spirit in the mountain. There were many types.

One of them was extremely terrifying. It was called Ba. Legend had it that it was the ancestor of hopping zombies. Wherever it went, it could devour clouds and dragons. It was an extremely terrifying existence.

Zhou Wen estimated that the white-clothed, faceless man was probably something similar. It wasn’t as terrifying as the legendary Ba, but it wasn’t a character to be trifled with.

The wooden staff in the white-robed, faceless man’s hand was powerful. It was probably a manifestation of a plant-type Mythical creature. No one knew how the white-clothed, faceless man obtained it.

The metal disc in his other hand wasn’t an ordinary object either.

Faced with such a strange thing, Zhou Wen didn’t give it any chance. He directly summoned Truth Listener.

Truth Listener was a divine beast that kept hell in check. It definitely had the ability to restrain all kinds of demons and ghosts. It was the perfect time to use it.

The moment Truth Listener appeared, the white-clothed, faceless man’s body trembled. His legs seemed to go limp as he turned and ran. The awe-inspiring aura and baneful aura

from before had completely vanished. He looked nervous like a lost dog.

Truth Listener transformed into a stream of light that flashed and caught up to the white-clothed, faceless man. It smashed his head with its claw.

With a clang, the white-clothed, faceless man fell to the ground and died. The wooden staff and metal disc in his hand dropped.

Before Zhou Wen could walk over, Truth Listener had already dug out a crystal from his chest and swallowed it.

Although Zhou Wen thought that Truth Listener could restrain these things, he had not expected it to be so powerful. Truth Listener didn’t even use the Wheel of Destiny to kill the white-clothed, faceless man with a swipe.

Without any delay, Zhou Wen picked up the wooden staff and metal disc and stored them in the chaos space. He got Truth Listener to return to his ear before rushing back to the town.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 623 - Pearl

623 Pearl

Liu Yun escaped back to the town, but he didn’t leave immediately. Instead, he returned to the minimart at the corner of the street and took some things before walking out.

“Junior Brother should be fine, right? He won’t be killed, right?” Liu Yun looked in the direction of the lake and muttered to himself.

However, in the blink of an eye, Liu Yun muttered to himself as though he was comforting himself, “The people that Teacher tutored shouldn’t die so easily. He even has the guts to target Chimera. The Companion Beasts on him are definitely no trifling matter. They aren’t inferior to Genie. Furthermore, with the Golden Greatsword and the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon, he should be able to escape even if he can’t defeat Mountain God.”

After some thought, Liu Yun took a bottle of alcohol from his bag and placed it on the table by the door. He used his finger like a sword and etched a sentence on the wall beside him. “Junior Brother, thank you for your help. This bottle of vintage wine was stolen from the Family Clan of Gods with great difficulty. It’s been aged over a hundred years. Take it as my thanks. Don’t miss me. Let’s meet again if fate allows.”

“What a pity. I wonder if this junior brother of mine is a wine connoisseur. If he doesn’t, wouldn’t it be a waste?” Liu Yun

looked at the bottle and muttered reluctantly.

With that said, Liu Yun prepared to leave.

“You should keep the wine for yourself. Leave the thing you took from the flower to redeem your sins.” A voice sounded from the roof not far away.

Liu Yun’s expression changed drastically as he looked up and saw Zhou Wen standing on the rooftop opposite him. He immediately smiled. “Junior Brother, you sure are outstanding. You killed that Mountain God so quickly. You’re much stronger than me. It’s no wonder Teacher thinks so highly of the four of you. He even called you to his side before he left. You are indeed the cream of the crop.” Liu Yun said as he retreated to the side. It looked like he was about to escape.

“If I were you, I would stay still,” Zhou Wen said indifferently without stopping him.

“I also wish to have a good chat with you, Junior Brother. Unfortunately, the bureau is hounding me. If I were to stay here, I’m afraid I would implicate you. That wouldn’t be nice. I’ll take my leave now.” As Liu Yun spoke, he directed strength into his feet and attempted to rush out.

However, just as he exerted strength, the ground beneath his feet exploded. It was as though he had stepped on a landmine. Liu Yun’s reaction was fast enough as he tumbled away, reducing most of the explosive force. However, wherever his body rolled on the ground exploded.

“Ah!”

Screams and explosions rang out. By the time Liu Yun stopped, his body was already charred black. His hair was

standing up and still smoking.

“Junior Brother, I never expected you to be proficient in Life Blast? That’s not right. You didn’t use a lifeform for the blast, so it shouldn’t be Life Blast. What skill is this?” Liu Yun stood rooted to the ground and didn’t dare move. He forced a smile and asked Zhou Wen.

“I don’t know what skill it is either. If you are interested, why don’t you try taking another step?” Zhou Wen said indifferently.

When Liu Yun was packing up, Zhou Wen had already directed Explosive Fiend Man to set up many Time-Blasts nearby to prevent him from escaping.

“Junior Brother, we are fellow disciples. Why do you have to do this? Why don’t we do this? We’ll split this treasure equally.” Liu Yun took out something from his pocket.

Zhou Wen carefully sized up the item in Liu Yun’s hand. It was a blood-colored bead that was the size of a billiard ball. It was completely blood-red and crystalline, like an alluring red pearl. It flashed with a red glimmer as though something was flowing inside.

“Leave your life or leave that pearl behind. You can choose either one,” Zhou Wen said.

“There’s no need to be so ruthless, right?” Liu Yun smiled bitterly.

“If it wasn’t for Teacher, you would have died the moment you lured Mountain God to me,” Zhou Wen said.

In fact, it wasn’t entirely because of this that Zhou Wen didn’t kill Liu Yun. Firstly, Liu Yun’s abilities and Companion

Beasts were rather odd. He didn’t know what other means he had, so Zhou Wen wasn’t completely confident that he could ensure retaining him while not having the red bead destroyed.

Zhou Wen’s interest in treasures was far greater than killing someone.

Secondly, Liu Yun had also told him about Mountain God when he left. Furthermore, there was a high chance that he was Wang Mingyuan’s student. There was no need for him to fight him to the death.

“Forget it. You are my junior brother after all? I’ll give you this treasure.” As Liu Yun spoke, he threw the red pearl at Zhou Wen.

He summoned Genie at the same time and made it open up a path for him to escape in another direction. The direction he chose wasn’t to leave the town but to go towards the lake.

Liu Yun thought that Zhou Wen had set up a trap to prevent him from escaping. He thought he would have set up a trap in the direction of the town’s exit so he would escape into the forest before scaling a mountain. Naturally, he would be able to escape. After all, there probably hadn’t been enough time for Zhou Wen to set up traps all around him.

Zhou Wen reached out to grab the red pearl, but he realized that it was only a bubble. It shattered with a touch.

“Junior Brother, you’re still too young to fight me.” Liu Yun held the red pearl in his hand and quickly rushed towards the forest outside the town.

Genie charged ahead, and there didn’t seem to be any explosions. Things had developed according to Liu Yun’s expectations. Zhou Wen hadn’t set up a trap in this direction.

Genie charged into the grasses and was fine, but when Liu Yun rushed into the grass, the plants suddenly exploded like bombs. Immediately, a series of tragic cries and explosions sounded.

When everything calmed down, Liu Yun was already lying on the ground covered in injuries. His handsome face had turned black, and most of his hair had been burnt.

“Try running again.” Zhou Wen came to Liu Yun’s side and took a deep breath. The red pearl was sucked out of Liu Yun’s sleeve and landed in Zhou Wen’s palm.

“You and your schemes. There’s nothing impressive about using traps and harming others. If you really have the ability, remove the surrounding traps and fight me openly. Whoever wins the battle will have the treasure,” said Liu Yun with a righteous tone.

Zhou Wen curled his lips in disdain. This wasn’t the first time he had been hoodwinked. Once bitten, twice shy. Wang Mingyuan’s students looked young and handsome, but, including Wang Mingyuan, none of them were decent. Zhou Wen wouldn’t fight him in an open match unless he was crazy.

“Why are you being pursued by the bureau? Is it because of Teacher?” Zhou Wen asked.

“No.” Liu Yun shook his head.

This answer exceeded Zhou Wen’s expectations, so he continued asking, “Then what’s the reason?”

“Because I stole something from the six families and the bureau’s headquarters.” Liu Yun puffed up his chest proudly. However, because he looked as though he had been struck by lightning, he didn’t look that impressive.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 624 - Signature in Hand

624 Signature in Hand

“What did you steal?” Zhou Wen asked.

Liu Yun opened his mouth, but he suddenly closed it again. He was regretting it now. He shouldn’t have been greedy for the alcohol and food. After escaping, he should have left the town.

Liu Yun originally imagined that Zhou Wen wouldn’t return so quickly and would definitely be entangled by Mountain God for a long time. Who knew that Zhou Wen would be able to catch up so quickly and even have the time to set up so many Time-Blasts? If he had known, he wouldn’t have done all those things and would have long fled.

“I didn’t steal anything valuable. They’re all small things.” Liu Yun changed the topic and said, “Junior Brother, you have taken the treasure too. It’s time for me to leave. Can you remove your traps?”

Liu Yun had never seen an Essence Energy Skill like Time-Blast. He had seen Life Blast in the past, and he could also see the traces of Life Blast. However, it wasn’t easy for him to see any flaws with the Explosive Fiend Man’s Time-Blast. Furthermore, it wasn’t just used on living bodies. This made him stumble and suffer.

“Sure. Sign here and you can leave.” Zhou Wen placed a piece of paper and a pen in front of Liu Yun.

“Junior Brother, what are you doing?” Liu Yun had been through a lot, so he knew that things weren’t as simple as signing an autograph.

“You can leave after you sign your signature,” Zhou Wen said.

Liu Yun forced out a smile. “It wasn’t easy for us fellow disciples to meet. As a senior brother, I should stay and accompany you more.”

“Even if you don’t want to leave, you have to sign it,” Zhou Wen continued.

Liu Yun’s expression immediately turned bitter. “Junior Brother, we share the same roots, so why torment each other? Can we negotiate this nicely?”

“Don’t you want to know what Companion Beast I will use to challenge Chimera? Then I’ll let you experience it for yourself.” Zhou Wen looked at Liu Yun and was about to summon Tyrant Behemoth.

“I’ll sign it.” Before Zhou Wen could summon Tyrant Behemoth, Liu Yun quickly picked up the paper and pen and signed his name before handing it to Zhou Wen. “Junior Brother, what’s the use of this signature?”

“As long as you don’t spout nonsense, this signature won’t be of any use. Don’t worry.” Zhou Wen folded and put it away when he saw the words “Liu Yun.”

In fact, the authenticity of the name didn’t matter. As long as he signed it in person, Explosive Fiend Man’s death list would take effect.

Now, with just a thought from the Explosive Fiend Man, he could kill Liu Yun who had signed his name.

“Alright, you can leave now.” Zhou Wen turned around and walked towards the town square.

“Remove the traps first before you leave.” Liu Yun had suffered terribly from the Time-Blast. If it wasn’t for the Time-Blast, he would have fled long ago.

After all, he was only at the Epic stage, and his Mythical pets couldn’t protect his entire body. He really couldn’t withstand the continuous explosions.

“There’s no more left. I didn’t have much time just now. I only had time to set up that many. You have already detonated them all,” Zhou Wen said without turning his head.

Liu Yun’s face looked livid when he heard that. If he had known this would happen, he would have been able to escape even if he was injured. He had been robbed of the red pearl for nothing and had even signed his name for some unknown reason.

“Why aren’t you leaving? Why are you following me?” Zhou Wen asked when he saw Liu Yun follow him from behind.

“Junior Brother, I don’t feel at ease until you explain what that signature is for. It’s better I follow you.” Liu Yun had seen many strange Essence Energy Skills before, so he knew of some special Essence Energy Skills that just needed a name to kill someone thousands of kilometers away.

Liu Yun didn’t know which type of Essence Energy Skill Zhou Wen had, nor did he know what use it had. How could he leave just like that?

“Up to you.” Zhou Wen continued walking towards the town square.

“Junior Brother, why don’t we do this? I’ll tell you a secret of the Cape family. Why don’t you return the paper to me?” Liu Yun said as he walked.

“I hate hearing secrets the most,” Zhou Wen said.

However, Liu Yun continued disapprovingly, “The secret I’m talking about isn’t an ordinary piece of news. A while back, I tried my best to sneak into the Special Inspector Bureau and the few large families and learned quite a lot of secrets. You know the Zhang family, right? The family of the Hero King, the Zhang family’s princess, Zhang Yuzhi. Do you know why the Zhang family dotes on her so much?”

“Why?” Zhou Wen was intrigued.

“Because she’s very special. In recent years, the Zhang family’s strength has increased tremendously. It has something to do with the little princess of the Zhang family. I accidentally discovered this secret when I sneaked into the Zhang family residence to steal something. Other than the few upper echelons of the Zhang family, I’m afraid I’m the only one who knows this secret.” Liu Yun deliberately kept him in suspense.

Zhou Wen didn’t pursue the matter. He walked all the way to the square and saw the black cube.

Seeing that Zhou Wen didn’t pursue the matter, Liu Yun continued, “I’ll treat this secret as a free gift to you. The little princess of the Zhang family has a special Life Providence. With such a Life Providence, she can easily gain the favor of any dimensional creature, allowing them to treat her as one of their own. Think about it, this is such a terrifying ability.

With Zhang Yuzhi, the Zhang family can easily grasp the habits and abilities of those Mythical creatures. Then, killing those Mythical creatures will be much easier. Such a person will be doted on like a princess no matter where they are. They definitely won't let anything happen to her."

"Zhang Yuzhi really has such a Life Providence?" Zhou Wen asked in surprise.

"Don't doubt me. I heard it myself. It's definitely not fake news," Liu Yun swore.

In fact, Zhou Wen was already convinced. This was because he had seen Zhang Yuzhi use her weak body to stop the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon in its rage. The Six-Winged Guardian Dragon actually didn't injure her.

Back then, he felt that there was something odd about Zhang Yuzhi, but he didn't think too deeply about it.

Now that he thought about it, Zhang Yuzhi really must have that ability or something even stronger.

However, Zhou Wen felt that there was still a problem with Zhang Yuzhi's Life Providence. Back when the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon was killed, Zhang Yuzhi's sorrow was definitely not faked.

With this in mind, Zhou Wen's heart suddenly stirred. Could Zhang Yuzhi's Life Providence be two-way? If she can make dimensional creatures treat her as a friend or relative, she might have the same feelings. That might be more reasonable.

Zhou Wen thought for a moment and felt that it was best if his guess didn't come true. Otherwise, Zhang Yuzhi would be too pitiful.

If his guess was true, Zhang Yuzhi had already treated the dimensional creatures as family and friends. Yet, her family wanted to use her to kill them. That was a tragedy in itself.

As he pondered, Zhou Wen walked to the black cube and summoned Tyrant Behemoth.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 625 - Behemoth“s First Battle

625 Behemoth“s First Battle

Boom!

Tyrant Behemoth’s body that seemed to be made of obsidian landed, causing the ground around it to tremble.

This can’t be… Behemoth, right? Liu Yun was knowledgeable. He had once traveled across the world, so he quickly guessed Behemoth’s identity. He was even more alarmed.

Behemoth was a dimensional creature in the West District. Furthermore, it enjoyed a very high status in West District mythology. Many people in the West District guessed that Behemoth existed, but no one had seen it before.

Liu Yun never expected to see a Behemoth Companion Beast in Zhou Wen’s possession. Although he didn’t know if it was a pure Behemoth, it definitely had a Behemoth bloodline.

Zhou Wen didn’t say a word as he controlled Behemoth to mount the black cube. Then, it walked to the middle and injected Essence Energy into the circle.

The black cube immediately lit up. On the cube’s four screens, the top hundred Companion Beasts appeared. Zhou Wen found the thirteenth ranked Chimera and struck its name with Essence Energy.

It was like a touchscreen interface. Chimera’s name on the cube’s screen lit up. Then, a 72-hour countdown appeared behind the name.

If Chimera didn’t accept the challenge within 72 hours, Tyrant Behemoth would replace Chimera’s ranking and squeeze it out of the rankings.

Tyrant Behemoth was pulled into a dimensional combat field by a beam of light from the cube. The images of Tyrant Behemoth appeared on the cubes around the world, as well as the name and countdown of the Chimera.

It’s really Behemoth! Liu Yun saw the name on the cube and knew that his previous guess had been correct.

Tyrant Behemoth’s appearance immediately attracted the attention of the media around the world, especially the West District’s media. They were extremely enthusiastic about its appearance as they guessed who Tyrant Behemoth belonged to.

The people who had the most guesses were either from the Family Clan of Gods or the Cape family, but now, the people from the Cape family were alarmed.

It was fine that Behemoth had appeared, but it had actually challenged their Cape family’s Companion Beast. This made them suspect that the Family Clan of Gods in the West District was up to no good.

However, they didn’t have any evidence. Chimera’s owner didn’t immediately accept the challenge. The Cape family used all sorts of channels and means to begin investigating if Tyrant Behemoth was the doing of the Family Clan of Gods or if others in the West District were secretly enemies with them.

Another family that paid attention to Tyrant Behemoth was the Zhang family. Others didn't know of Tyrant Behemoth's origins, but the Zhang family knew very well that Tyrant Behemoth's Companion Egg had originally belonged to them. It was only because of a traitor that they had lost the Tyrant Behemoth Companion Egg.

"It has finally appeared. The Behemoth Companion Egg that our Zhang family lost." Zhang Xiao stared at Tyrant Behemoth in the video with a dark expression.

There were many brothers and many geniuses in the Zhang family. Mythical Companion Eggs weren't enough for them all. If the Behemoth Companion Egg wasn't lost, Zhang Xiao had a great chance of becoming its master. Therefore, Zhang Xiao paid special attention to this matter.

Zhang Chunqiu patted Zhang Xiao on the shoulder and said, "Don't force yourself when it's destined. There will be stronger Mythical Companion Beasts waiting for you in the future."

"I just want to know who stole the Behemoth Companion Egg and took what belongs to our Zhang family. They must pay the price," Zhang Xiao said.

"According to our previous investigations, it's most likely done by the overseas faction. When I return, I'll accompany you to sea," Zhang Chunqiu said.

Zhang Xiao shook his head slightly. "Brother Qiu, let me handle this matter myself. How are your preparations?"

"Dugu Ge and Xia Liuchuan are already on their way. I hope there will be a result. If the cocoon really has a Guardian like the six-winged seraphim, we will have a new path to continue progressing," Zhang Chunqiu said.

“Is this path really correct?” Zhang Xiao questioned.

“Who knows? Even if it’s the wrong path, you have to walk it before you know,” Zhang Chunqiu said calmly.

Zhou Wen waited for quite some time, but he didn’t see Chimera accept the challenge. All he could do was take out his tent and other items and set them up by the side. Then, he entered the tent and lay down to game while waiting for Chimera to accept the challenge.

With a time limit of 72 hours, it was unknown when the Cape family would accept the challenge. Zhou Wen guessed that they wouldn’t accept the challenge quickly, but they wouldn’t give up either.

The Cape family also wanted to know what kind of power Tyrant Behemoth had. Was it as terrifying as the mythical legends?

Looking at his size, Tyrant Behemoth was only a few meters tall. It didn’t look like a monster that could eat a thousand mountains daily. They definitely had their doubts.

In fact, Tyrant Behemoth still couldn’t eat a thousand mountains a day. However, eating a smaller mountain wasn’t a problem. Its body could change in size freely. This was the most confusing part.

Even if it was just a test, the Cape family wouldn’t let Chimera surrender without a fight.

However, they would definitely be very careful and wouldn’t give Zhou Wen too many chances. Therefore, Zhou Wen had to deliver a death strike to prevent them from even having the chance to admit defeat.

As Zhou Wen expected, Chimera finally accepted the challenge after more than twenty hours and appeared on the cube’s arena.

The media immediately perked up as they live-streamed the battle. Behemoth and Chimera were terrifying existences in legend, but from a Mythical point of view, Chimera was definitely not as strong as Behemoth.

However, Tyrant Behemoth was only a few meters tall. Although it looked very strong, it didn’t seem to have the advantage when compared to Chimera, who was more than ten meters tall.

After Chimera appeared, it immediately ran quickly. However, it didn’t rush towards Tyrant Behemoth. Instead, it quickly circled around the arena and went behind Tyrant Behemoth. It suddenly leaped up and spread its wings. At the same time, its three heads roared together, condensing three different powers. It was like three light spheres were constantly expanding in their mouths.

After the red, yellow, and cyan beams reached an extreme point, they fused together like a volcanic eruption. They transformed into a terrifying white energy beam that struck Tyrant Behemoth in the arena.

That terrifying power appeared to blast through the entire arena.

“The Cape family is really careful. They actually used Chimera’s Wheel of Destiny—Gene Disintegration Ray. Are they thinking of surrendering the moment their single strike fails?” Zhang Chunqiu said with a smile.

“After all, it’s Behemoth. It’s only right for them to be careful,” Zhang Xiao said.

An Tianzuo was also watching this scene inside the Luoyang An family residence.

“Although Chimera isn’t the strongest Mythical pet, its Gene Disintegration Ray is indeed a very domineering Wheel of Destiny. If Tyrant Behemoth underestimates its enemy, I’m afraid it will suffer greatly,” An Tianzuo said.

“Young Master Wen shouldn’t be someone who underestimates his enemy,” An Sheng said with a smile.

“How do you know that the Tyrant Behemoth must be his? Since when did you become so careless?” An Tianzuo sneered.

“Yes, Overseer. I’ve learned my mistake,” An Sheng said, but his eyes remained fixed on the projection.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 626 - Behemoth“s Migh

626 Behemoth“s Migh

Everyone looked at the terrifying beam descending from the sky as though it was a divine punishment that could destroy the world.

Their gazes were focused on the ebony figure beneath the divine punishment. Under such a terrifying beam of light, the somewhat muscular body seemed tiny and minuscule, as though it would be drowned in a terrifying stream of light at any moment.

However, from beginning to end, Tyrant Behemoth didn’t move at all. It didn’t raise its head to look at the beam or at Chimera. It was as though its reaction was slow and had failed to notice the terrifying beam that descended from the sky.

Boom!

The beam directly struck Tyrant Behemoth’s body. The streams of light constantly blasted the arena. The light exploded, drowning the entire arena in an explosion of light. Large amounts of dust rose up.

“How arrogant.” An Tianzuo frowned.

“He’s courting death by tanking the Gene Disintegration Ray.” The Cape family was overjoyed.

The characteristics of the Gene Disintegration Ray was appraised to be impossible to withstand head-on, even for

Mythical Companion Beasts. Otherwise, their bodies' genes would collapse.

"What a waste of a treasure. The person has such a powerful Companion Beast like Behemoth, but his usage of it is so crude. What a waste of such a powerful Companion Beast. No matter how powerful a Companion Beast is, it will still lose if one uses it recklessly," Zhang Xiao said coldly.

"That's not necessarily the case." Zhang Chunqiu narrowed his eyes and muttered to himself.

Right then, in the midst of the explosion of light, a huge black mountain suddenly rose from the ground. The light blast that enveloped the arena turned into a cloud that seemed to linger around a black mountain. Although the light remained blinding, it couldn't cause any substantial damage to the mountain.

As for the beam that shot down, it was like a waterfall of light. The mountain peak went against the waterfall and the waterfall immediately scattered, unable to stop the mountain's rise.

"Not good… Quickly admit defeat and take back Chimera…" Senator Cape's expression changed drastically as he ordered loudly.

However, it was already too late. The mountain-like Tyrant Behemoth opened its huge mouth and swallowed the stream of light along with Chimera. Instantly, the arena fell silent. The light vanished, leaving only a terrifying monster standing there.

The name of Chimera on the ranking vanished—replacing it was Tyrant Behemoth.

“It ended just like that?” Instantly, all the spectators fell silent.

No one expected the battle to end like this. The extremely powerful Chimera, a ferocious beast that had once killed a dragon, was actually devoured in one mouthful.

The terrifying explosion of light was like a volcanic eruption. It was as laughable as useless fireworks.

“Too powerful… It’s really too powerful… As expected of our West District’s divine beast, Behemoth. It’s simply invincible. With such a powerful existence, what creature in the world can withstand it?”

“It’s way too invincible. That’s Chimera. Yet, it was swallowed in one mouthful.”

“How domineering. This is a truly invincible creature. What Primordial Sword Immortal? What Death of the Underworld? They are all weak. True men have to take it all in one mouthful.”

“God, that Tyrant might really be able to destroy the world.”

“I can’t believe my eyes. Tyrant Behemoth is too powerful. If I were its master, I think I would sit at home watching television before destroying the world.”

“That’s the tyrant who rules the world.”

Instantly, the Internet exploded with messages. Countless people were discussing Tyrant Behemoth.

The faces of the Cape family members became uglier by the second. Mythical Companion Beasts were rare to begin with. Now that Chimera, one of the best Companion Beasts in the

Cape family, was dead, they felt their hearts bleed as they were extremely furious.

“Investigate. I want a full investigation. We have to find out who the owner of Tyrant Behemoth is.” Senator Cape was extremely furious as he wished he could smash the television with one punch.

Zhang Xiao’s expression was equally ugly. Seeing Tyrant Behemoth’s strength made him feel even worse. This powerful Companion Beast might very well have belonged to him.

…

“Young Master Wen really has a good life. He already has a powerful Companion Beast like Torch Dragon, yet he has an existence like Tyrant Behemoth. Together with the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon and other Companion Beasts, I think his Companion Beasts alone can challenge a hero family,” An Sheng said.

“Aren’t you underestimating the heritage of the six families? You’re ignoring the fact that Tyrant Behemoth might not be his. Even if it is his, it’s only the Companion Beast that’s strong. With insufficient strength himself, if he really wants to challenge a hero family, it’d be useless no matter how powerful a Companion Beast is,” An Tianzuo said.

“Overseer is right,” An Sheng said respectfully.

…

“Junior Brother, this Behemoth of yours is pretty good. Where did you get it from? I’ll get one later.” Liu Yun’s eyes lit up as he looked at Zhou Wen.

“I got it at an auction.” Zhou Wen took back Tyrant Behemoth and replied in a good mood.

“An auction? Which auction would sell something like that?” Liu Yun didn’t believe Zhou Wen at all. It would be a miracle if someone was willing to sell such a powerful Companion Beast.

“Make a guess.” Zhou Wen had unknowingly been influenced by people such as The Thearch and Wang Mingyuan.

“Junior Brother, are you interested in betting with me?” Liu Yun wasn’t interested in guessing. He didn’t believe Tyrant Behemoth was bought from an auction.

“Not interested.” Zhou Wen ignored Liu Yun and returned to his tent to game.

Zhou Wen didn’t plan on returning for the time being. He planned on getting Tyrant Behemoth to continue making challenges, but he still needed to study the target. It wasn’t suitable for him to directly challenge Primordial Sword Immortal.

However, the Federation and overseas faction were researching Tyrant Behemoth. Many people believed that Tyrant Behemoth’s strength wasn’t as simple as being ranked thirteenth. It was very likely that it had the strength to reach first on the rankings.

However, Tyrant Behemoth didn’t show much. Their analysis didn’t produce many results.

Liu Yun went out alone. After leaving Zhou Wen, he secretly went to a small forest to summon his Genie.

Liu Yun reached out to rub the oil lamp. Soon, Genie appeared in front of him. However, the Genie that appeared this time was different from before. Its entire body emitted a strange blue glow.

“Junior Brother, as your senior brother, let me teach you a good lesson.” As Liu Yun spoke, he made a wish to the Genie. “Genie, I wish for my Life Soul’s power to be greatly enhanced.”

When the Genie heard Liu Yun’s wish, its body, which suffused a magical glow, drilled into Liu Yun’s body. Soon, Liu Yun’s entire body suffused a blue glow.

With the help of Genie and a Life Soul, my Star Stealer can forcefully steal the Companion Beast that has already hatched. That punk will never expect me to have such an ability. Unfortunately, Star Stealer can’t lock onto a target. I can only steal something randomly. However, it doesn’t matter. That punk has so many Mythical Companion Beasts. With the help of the Genie’s wish and Life Soul’s augmentation, I can attempt a theft ten times. No matter how unlucky I am, I should be able to steal a Mythical right? It’s best if it’s Tyrant Behemoth. If not, the Golden Greatsword would do… Liu Yun thought as he carefully took out something.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 627 - Star Stealer

627 Star Stealer

Zhou Wen was grinding in the tent when he felt the jade-like tiny person suddenly open its eyes in his sea of consciousness. Its body emitted a strange treasure glow.

The treasure glow turned corporeal, piercing through his consciousness, causing Zhou Wen’s body to similarly emit a crystalline glow.

What’s going on? Why did Gods Retreat suddenly activate? Zhou Wen was somewhat surprised as he felt a vibration coming from somewhere on his body.

Upon closer inspection, he realized that the spot which was vibrating was actually a Musical Note Sprite tattoo. There was a Musical Note Sprite that seemed to be affected by some unknown force as it struggled to spread its wings.

However, due to the influence of the treasure glow generated by Gods Retreat, it was unable to fly out. It was trapped by the treasure glow like a butterfly trapped in a cage.

What’s going on? Zhou Wen attempted to control the power that Gods Retreat released, preventing the power from isolating the Musical Note Sprite tattoo.

With the power of Gods Retreat, the Musical Note Sprite tattoo immediately vanished under Zhou Wen’s nose. It only took a blink of an eye.

Furthermore, Zhou Wen had completely lost contact with the Musical Note Sprite, as though he had never had such a Companion Beast. If Zhou Wen hadn’t seen it disappear with his own eyes, he wouldn’t have realized that he had lost a Companion Beast.

What power took away the Musical Note Sprite? Zhou Wen’s first reaction was to expand the power of the Truth Listener earring to its limit. He could hear the surrounding areas clearly. Even the falling of a strand of hair to the ground couldn’t escape his ears.

Soon, Zhou Wen discovered Liu Yun, who was hiding outside the town. The fellow was squatting in the grass. At a glance, it looked like he was shitting, but upon careful inspection, the fellow hadn’t even taken off his pants as he mumbled something.

Zhou Wen listened carefully and heard Liu Yun say, “What’s wrong with my Junior Brother? Why does he have such trashy Companion Beasts? Junior Brother, don’t worry. I’m still a gentleman. I’ll stop after stealing a Mythical Companion Beast from you.”

Indeed, this fellow is up to no good. He’s really not afraid of death. Zhou Wen took a careful look and indeed, he saw the tattoo of a Musical Note Sprite on his body. It was identical to the one he had lost.

Zhou Wen remained unperturbed. He wanted to see what Liu Yun was up to.

Liu Yun didn’t know that Truth Listener’s range was that large. He was already so far away; yet, Zhou Wen could still monitor him.

Previously, the reason Liu Yun could make Truth Listener lose its effects was that he had already discovered Zhou Wen and determined that Zhou Wen was observing him. That was why he had allowed Genie to release its power to affect Truth Listener's abilities.

Now, he didn't know that Zhou Wen could monitor him from such a distance. Furthermore, with his Star Stealer's ability, he could usually steal Companion Beasts without anyone noticing. It was impossible for the person he stole from to discover him.

The Companion Beast that Liu Yun had set up to keep watch didn't notice anything from Zhou Wen. He imagined that Zhou Wen hadn't even discovered that his Companion Beast had been stolen.

In fact, he wouldn't have discovered the disappearance of the Musical Note Sprite if Zhou Wen didn't habitually have Gods Retreat activated.

"Anyway, there are still nine chances. I'm sure I can steal a Mythical Companion Beast." Liu Yun gritted his teeth and reached out to grab at the void.

His fingertips shimmered with strange starlight as though something was burning. The starlight tore through the void, causing Liu Yun's hand to vanish as though it was invisible.

When the hand pulled back from the void, there was a lively Musical Note Sprite in his hand. The Musical Note Sprite circled around him and automatically landed on him, turning into a tattoo.

Just like last time, Zhou Wen felt the tattoo of a Musical Note Sprite vibrate. He removed the power of Gods Retreat Life Soul, making the Musical Note Sprite tattoo vanish.

This fellow actually has such an ability! Doesn’t that mean he’s invincible? He can steal any Mythical Companion Beast he likes! Zhou Wen was alarmed as he continued observing silently.

It was better to encounter such a strange ability than to encounter it in the future. Now that he had figured out what was going on, he would have some experience for the future. He would know how to deal with it. This wasn’t a bad thing for Zhou Wen.

“Holy sh*t, why is it still a Musical Note Sprite? Why does that punk have so many trash Companion Beasts with him?” Liu Yun felt depressed when he saw that it was another Musical Note Sprite.

“Although they’re stolen randomly, the chances of obtaining the same Companion Beast in a row shouldn’t be high, right?” Liu Yun didn’t believe it as he reached out to steal again.

So it turns out that the ability to steal Companion Beasts is random. Zhou Wen discovered some problems. On Liu Yun’s fingertip, there was a short strand of hair. When Liu Yun used Star Stealer, the strand of hair would burn.

Zhou Wen knew at a glance that it was his hair.

When did this fellow steal my hair? Zhou Wen had to admit that Liu Yun was indeed top-notch when it came to stealing. He was actually able to steal his hair without him noticing.

Knowing that Liu Yun’s stealing of Companion Beasts was random, Zhou Wen felt relieved. He had been farming Musical Note Sprites for so long. Almost every time he respawned, he would farm the dungeon. Now, the number of Musical Note Sprites he possessed had reached more than

four thousand. Altogether, Zhou Wen had more than five thousand Companion Beasts.

The chance of stealing his Mythical Companion Beasts was about one in a thousand. This would be extremely difficult unless one had Wang Lu's luck.

Zhou Wen realized that he could only discover that Liu Yun had stolen something from him when the Gods Retreat Life Soul was activated. Even Truth Listener's hearing and Evil Nullification were useless.

If Gods Retreat wasn't activated, the Companion Beast tattoo on his body would vanish without a trace. Unless he happened to see the tattoo disappear, it would be very difficult to discover that he had lost his Companion Beast.

What skill is this? Where can I obtain such a skill? Zhou Wen felt that he could learn similar skills.

In the future, anytime he saw people from the Cape family and the Special Inspector Bureau, he could try stealing from them.

"Another Musical Note Sprite?" Liu Yun nearly jumped up in frustration when he saw the Companion Beast he had stolen.

In his rage, Liu Yun quickly grabbed with both hands, constantly using the Star Stealer to grab Companion Beasts one after another.

Musical Note Sprite… Musical Note Sprite… Musical Note Sprite… Another Musical Note Sprite… Liu Yun stole with both hands, but in the end, they were all Musical Note Sprites. He had already stolen seven of them in a row. He only had three chances left out of his ten attempts.

“What the hell? How many Musical Note Sprites did that punk bring with him? How can I be only getting a Musical Note Sprite each time?” Liu Yun was so angry that he nearly vomited blood.

Zhou Wen chuckled inwardly. More than 90% of the Companion Beasts on him were Musical Note Sprites. He wouldn’t find it strange if all Liu Yun’s thefts were Musical Note Sprites.

However, Zhou Wen still carefully used Gods Retreat to confirm that Liu Yun didn’t steal an important Companion Beast. Only then would he release it and let him steal it.

“No, I can’t continue like this. That punk has countless Musical Note Sprites on him. I have to think of a way.” Liu Yun had no intention of giving up. The Genie’s wish had been used. Even if he didn’t continue stealing, he wouldn’t have his wish refunded. He could only continue stealing.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 628 - Life Reversing Spirit Talisman

628 Life Reversing Spirit Talisman

Liu Yun hesitated for a moment. Finally, he made up his mind and took out something from his pocket.

It was a strange jade talisman that was just the size of a palm. It was jade-white in color, but there was a red symbol engraved on it. It looked strange, its meaning was unknown.

“It wasn’t easy for me to get this Life Reversing Spirit Talisman from the Zhang family. This is the only one I have. I originally planned to try my luck after meeting the owner of Primordial Sword Immortal, but I can’t be bothered with that now.” As Liu Yun spoke, he held the jade talisman in his hand and used Star Stealer again.

Crack!

Before Liu Yun’s palm reached into the void, the jade talisman shattered. The blood-colored runes seeped into his palm and shimmered.

“The Zhang family’s Life Reversing Spirit Talisman can flip Yin and Yang and turn the universe on its head. Although it can’t really change fate, it can invert the probability of my Star Stealer. It will allow me to steal the Companion Beast with the lowest probability, the ones that are almost impossible to steal. Although it doesn’t mean that the chances of a Mythical Companion Beast are the lowest,

typically speaking, one only has one Mythical Companion Beast. The chances are definitely not high. Therefore, the chances of stealing a Mythical Companion Beast are definitely very high for me now.”

Liu Yun muttered to himself as he suddenly pulled out his hand. At the same time, he shouted, “Come, Tyrant Behemoth. I have a feeling that it’s definitely you this time.”

Zhou Wen was given a fright when he heard Liu Yun’s words. He was really afraid that Tyrant Behemoth would really be stolen. He focused his attention and circulated Gods Retreat.

However, when Zhou Wen’s Companion Beast tattoo trembled, his expression turned odd.

The trembling tattoo was actually Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General.

Ever since he had obtained the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General, Zhou Wen had been very careful. He didn’t dare release him easily, afraid that he would be affected by the Jinxes Master skill.

Previously, Zhou Wen still needed the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General to restrain Qiongqi. Now, with Tyrant Behemoth, there was no need for him. Zhou Wen had been in a dilemma on how to deal with it.

He never expected Liu Yun to steal the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General.

Without any hesitation, Zhou Wen released the restrictions and got Liu Yun to steal the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General.

I can observe the effects of the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General's Jinxes Master skill on others. Will the Jinxes Master Skill only take effect when released? Zhou Wen thought to himself.

"Come on, my Tyrant Behemoth…" Liu Yun quickly pulled out his palm from the void.

Liu Yun was overjoyed when he saw that it wasn't a Musical Note Sprite that came out of his palm.

However, upon careful inspection, it wasn't Tyrant Behemoth. Instead, it was a heavy-armored warrior riding a tiger. He looked extremely ferocious and domineering, exuding an extraordinary aura.

A humanoid Companion Beast? Its aura is so domineering and ferocious. Could it be a Mythical Companion Beast? Liu Yun watched as the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General transformed into a stream of light that landed on him. At the same time, some information surged into his mind.

Unfortunately, Liu Yun didn't have the mysterious phone. He couldn't check the information regarding the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General. All he could do was obtain some information from the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General to gather some vague details.

"Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General… Epic…" Liu Yun learned the name and level of the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General. He could also sense the Life Providence and Life Soul a little, but it was limited to their names. He didn't know much about it. All he could do was wait until he summoned it out to test its various abilities in combat.

"I never expected that punk to have such a good life." Liu Yun had no choice. After much difficulty, he had only

managed to steal one Life Reversing Spirit Talisman from the Zhang family. Even the Zhang family didn’t have many. It would be impossible to steal one from them again.

Furthermore, it was too late. He only had two thefts left.

He had once again used Star Stealer, but it was still a Musical Note Sprite.

“This is the last time. God, Mother Mary, bless me. Let me steal a big one…” Liu Yun prayed before using Star Stealer again.

When a Companion Beast appeared in his palm, Liu Yun was delighted when he saw that it wasn’t a Musical Note Sprite. However, when he pulled it out, he realized that it was only an Epic Poison Bat. He couldn’t help but be greatly disappointed.

“It’s really a huge loss. I wasted a wish and even used the Life Reversing Spirit Talisman. I only managed to steal these crappy things…” Liu Yun was so depressed that he wanted to vomit blood.

He clearly knew that Zhou Wen had many Mythical Companion Beasts, but he had only managed to steal trash. It was unacceptable.

There was nothing he could do even if he was indignant about it. He had expended a lot of energy this time, so it was impossible for him to use Star Stealer anytime soon.

“Forget it.” Liu Yun got up and prepared to return. He had already made up his mind. He would pretend to lose his Companion Beast and then accuse Zhou Wen of being a villain. It would be fine as long as Zhou Wen thought that the dimensional creatures nearby were fooling around.

“How unlucky. How can I only steal those crappy things?” Liu Yun felt a little depressed. There was a small stone in front of him, so he kicked it.

However, the stone remained motionless despite the kick. Liu Yun felt as though he had kicked a metal plate. He cried out in pain as he hugged his foot.

“With my foot’s strength, even steel should be shattered. How can the stone remain motionless…” Liu Yun felt that something was amiss.

Before he could take a closer look at the stone, he saw the surrounding soil split open. The flowers and trees seemed to have been lifted up by something as they rose out of the soil.

Liu Yun felt the ground beneath his feet rise as he hurriedly retreated.

As he retreated, he saw a huge gray object burrow out of the ground. From its appearance, it looked like a huge Horned Beetle. Its body was the size of a truck. The small stone that Liu Yun had kicked was the tip of the Horned Beetle’s horn.

“What’s this?” Liu Yun had seen many dimensional creatures that resembled Horned Beetles, but this was the first time he had seen such a huge one.

Not only was this Horned Beetle huge, but its body was also like a gray stone. It looked odd and there were many ancient and mysterious patterns on its back.

The instant the Horned Beetle tore out of the ground, it charged at Liu Yun. Its speed was much faster than a real truck. It was like a fast-moving vehicle.

Mythical creature! Liu Yun nearly cried out in surprise. Without any hesitation, he exerted his strength to leap up and dodge the attack of the Horned Beetle.

However, when he exerted strength, he lost his footing. Not only did he fail to jump, but his legs sank in.

Boom!

The front end of the Horned Beetle had already slammed into Liu Yun. The powerful force blasted apart the surrounding soil and trees, forming a huge crater. It was like a meteorite hitting the ground.

Holy sh*t, could this be the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General’s Jinxes Master skill? I didn’t think it was that powerful when I had him with me. Zhou Wen wore a look of surprise when he saw this. He couldn’t be certain that it was because of the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General because Liu Yun hadn’t summoned it.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 629 - Tears of Regre

629 Tears of Regre

Liu Yun grabbed the horn of the Horned Beetle with both hands and pushed upwards with all his might, but his body continued sinking.

His arm was wrapped in a black bracer and surprisingly wasn’t shattered by the Horned Beetle’s terrifying slam. It was just that the other parts of his body couldn’t withstand the powerful shockwave. His armor shattered and many parts of his body were injured. It didn’t look like he was doing well.

He actually managed to withstand such a terrifying collision. He only suffered some superficial injuries. This senior brother of mine does have some capabilities. He’s not only good at stealing things. Zhou Wen watched Liu Yun and the Horned Beetle fight without any intention of helping.

Liu Yun’s muscles tensed up as he suffused a metallic luster. In the clash with the Horned Beetle, his body kept sinking.

He didn’t dare to release his grip and retreat. He was afraid that if he let go, the Horned Beetle’s terrifying power would slam down like a crashing mountain, making it impossible for him to dodge.

Genie had already flown up and spewed out flames to attack the Horned Beetle. However, the patterns on its back only shimmered as the flames failed to approach its body.

“Fat Orange…” Liu Yun gritted his teeth and shouted.

The orange cat darted out of Liu Yun’s body and ran in another direction. At the same time, it emitted a mysterious wave that could lure dimensional creatures to chase after it.

The Horned Beetle was affected by the mysterious waves, reducing its downward pressure significantly. At the same time, it turned to look at Orange Cat.

Liu Yun thought that he finally had a chance to escape. Just as he was about to retreat, the Horned Beetle glanced at the Orange Cat before choosing not to chase after Orange Cat. In a surprise turn of events, it quickly turned around and slammed the horn at Liu Yun.

“Holy sh*t, what’s going on? This dimensional creature isn’t affected by Fat Orange?” Liu Yun was alarmed as he raised his arms to meet the attack.

Bam! Bam! Bam! Bam!

The Horned Beetle lashed out repeatedly as terrifying forces struck Liu Yun’s arms. His body was like a wooden stake as he sank into the soil. Only his chest was exposed.

Blood seeped out of Liu Yun’s seven orifices. Although the pair of bracers were magical and could withstand Mythical strength, his body wasn’t able to withstand such tremors. If this continued, all his bones and organs would be pulverized.

“If a tiger doesn’t show its might, do you really think I’m a sick cat!” A terrifying power erupted from Liu Yun’s hands. A pair of black bracers crossed together, forming a black hole that looked like it was about to swallow the Horned Beetle.

The Horned Beetle crashed into the black hole, but before the black hole could suck it in, the patterns on its body emitted a strange force that turned into a net to seal the black hole.

The Horned Beetle’s horn was inside the black hole, but its body was outside. It formed a stalemate with Liu Yun, with both parties unable to do anything to each other.

Liu Yun hid some of his abilities while fighting me. This black hole-like ability should be the Wheel of Destiny ability of those bracers, right? Zhou Wen watched with relish. Such battles were rare to see. He approached the battlefield, hoping to get a better view.

“Junior Brother, quickly save me!” Liu Yun hurriedly cried out when he saw Zhou Wen.

“Eldest Senior Brother, weren’t you trying to steal my Companion Beasts?” Zhou Wen found a spot to sit down and asked Liu Yun with a smile.

“Junior Brother, how could I steal your Companion Beasts? You think too highly of me. How can I have that ability? My Companion Beast has also been lost. It must have been this Horned Beetle’s doing. Quickly join forces with me and kill it. No matter what drops, it will belong to you,” said Liu Yun.

“It doesn’t matter if you don’t admit it. I’ll wait here for the two of you to decide the victor,” Zhou Wen said calmly.

Liu Yun found it increasingly difficult to persist. He gritted his teeth and said, “Junior Brother, it’s all my fault. I just wanted to pull your leg. I didn’t really want to steal your things. Otherwise, why would I only take a few of your Musical Note Sprites?”

Zhou Wen didn’t expose him as he continued asking, “What’s the name of the skill you used to steal my Companion Beasts? Where did you get it from?”

“That’s Star Stealer. It’s an Essence Energy Skill from an Astral Combat Beast in the Endless Sea of Stars,” Liu Yun said gloomily. “Junior Brother, what’s the matter? Can we wait until we finish this first? What do you want to know? As your senior brother, I’ll definitely tell you everything I know.”

“Where’s the Endless Sea of Stars? What stage is the Astral Combat Beast? How can I find it?” Zhou Wen ignored him and continued asking.

“The Endless Sea of Stars is actually a dimensional zone in the former Taklamakan Desert. I only saw it by accident, so I didn’t dare venture deep into it. I don’t know if there’s anything else inside. The Astral Combat Beast is a Mythical creature,” Liu Yun answered.

“Are you still lying to me?” Zhou Wen said with a cold expression.

“Junior Brother, I’m really not lying to you.” The black hole in Liu Yun’s hand was becoming weaker and weaker, as if it would collapse at any moment.

“You said that Astral Combat Beast is at the Mythical stage, so Star Stealer is a Mythical Essence Energy Skill. How can an Epic like you absorb a Mythical Essence Energy Skill Crystal?” Zhou Wen said coldly.

“Junior Brother, you might not know, but the Essence Energy Art I cultivate is called the ‘Sky-Stealing Sun-Shifting Art’. It’s recorded on a stone monument in the Endless Sea of Stars. It’s because of the Sky-Stealing Sun-Shifting Art that I can absorb that Mythical Essence Energy Skill Crystal.

However, I can only absorb this type of Mythical Essence Energy Skill Crystal. I've tried other types, but it's impossible. I'll die a terrible death if I've lied to you," Liu Yun swore.

"Junior Brother, I really can't take it anymore. Quickly save me!" Liu Yun really couldn't hold on any longer. The black hole in his hand disappeared, and the Horned Beetle regained its freedom. It angrily slammed forward again.

Boom!

Liu Yun's hands were knocked apart. He looked exhausted and couldn't hold on any longer.

Seeing the Horned Beetle slam its head down again, with Genie's flames useless against it, it seemed unstoppable. Orange Cat couldn't help much in battle. Liu Yun believed that he was doomed.

Boom!

Tyrant Behemoth descended from the sky and stepped on the Horned Beetle's back, shattering the stone shell on its back. Its hands clenched into fists as it repeatedly pounded the Horned Beetle's head.

After a few punches, the Horned Beetle's head cracked. The final punch smashed through the Horned Beetle's head, sending fragments flying everywhere.

Exhausted, Liu Yun hurriedly turned around and crawled out of the hole. Just as he crawled out, the Horned Beetle's broken horn shot over at a speed faster than a bullet, hitting Liu Yun's buttocks.

“Ah!” A shrill scream pierced through the night sky of the town.

Zhou Wen looked at Liu Yun, who was sprawled on the ground with tears of regret flowing out of his eyes. The horn was raised over him like a flag. He couldn’t help but shiver.

I’ve had the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General for so long, but nothing major happened. I’m really lucky. I have to offer incense when I return. I have to thank all the deities for their blessings, Zhou Wen thought.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 630 - Unlucky Liu Yun

Chapter 630 – Unlucky Liu Yun

“Eldest Senior Brother, are you dead?” Zhou Wen walked to Liu Yun’s side and asked.

“I have a cockroach’s life. How can I die so easily… Ouch… Junior Brother… Help me… pull that thing out…” Liu Yun wanted to get up, but it immediately pulled his wound, causing him to cry out in pain.

Typically, if one was injured by a weapon, one wouldn’t randomly pull it out. One needed a professional doctor to carry out the procedure. However, an Epic human’s body and vitality far exceeded the average person, so they didn’t worry too much.

Zhou Wen extended his hand and directed a suction force across space, pulling out the broken horn. It made Liu Yun cry out in pain.

“Can you still walk? If you can walk, let’s return to the town.” Zhou Wen planned on asking Liu Yun about the Endless Sea of Stars. No one would find a skill as useful as Star Stealer excessive. He also planned on making a trip to the Endless Sea of Stars to see if he could find the tiny palm symbol.

However, Zhou Wen had heard that many deserts were forbidden grounds for humans. The dimensional zones there were especially terrifying. If one wanted to enter the desert without a guide, one could easily be lost in one terrifying dimensional zone after another.

Without Liu Yun leading the way, Zhou Wen guessed that it would be difficult for him to find the Endless Sea of Stars in the desert.

“Yes.” Liu Yun got up and limped in with an especially strange posture.

After taking a few steps, he missed a step and vanished. All Zhou Wen could hear was a loud cry coming from below before a loud thud.

Zhou Wen turned around and saw a hole in the spot where Liu Yun had been. He looked over and saw that it was originally a well. Due to the earlier battle, it had been covered by branches and soil.

Liu Yun hadn’t noticed it, and due to his injuries, he fell the moment he stepped on it.

By the time Liu Yun climbed up, he was really in a sorry state. Coupled with his injuries, he looked even more miserable.

“Brother, help me up. I’m dying…” Liu Yun stretched out his hand, looking exhausted.

“Walk by yourself.” Zhou Wen immediately dodged far away. Who knew if Liu Yun would implicate others around him when he was being jinxed?

“Are you still human? I’m already so injured; yet, you aren’t giving me a hand…” Liu Yun limped towards the town.

Zhou Wen ignored him and walked towards the town square.

“Junior Brother, be honest. Did you do something to me? I know I was wrong to steal your Companion Beast. I

guarantee that there won’t be a next time. Look at how miserable I am. Please spare me…” Liu Yun said as he walked. He also felt that something was amiss with his situation. He had never been so unlucky.

“Don’t spout nonsense. I definitely didn’t do anything to you. Sometimes, it’s a result of one’s own doing. Even God can’t sit idle,” Zhou Wen said.

“Junior Brother…” Liu Yun wanted to say something, but a bird flew across the sky and pooped on his head.

When Zhou Wen saw this scene, he immediately sped up and distanced himself from him to prevent himself from being implicated.

From the looks of it, I can’t randomly fuse the baby tiger. Otherwise, if I create another one that jinxes its master, I might harm myself, Zhou Wen thought.

After returning to the square, Zhou Wen began studying the Companion Beasts ranked ahead of Tyrant Behemoth, and prepared for the next challenge.

It wasn’t suitable to directly challenge first place—Primordial Immortal Sword. Neither was Death of the Underworld who came in second. Furthermore, Death of the Underworld was a spirit. Zhou Wen didn’t know if a pure Strength-type Companion Beast like Tyrant Behemoth could deal fatal damage to Death of the Underworld, so he didn’t consider it for now.

No matter how powerful Tyrant Behemoth was, he still had to consider the problem of something having an advantage over it. No matter how powerful a Companion Beast was, it couldn’t defy common logic to fight a Companion Beast that had an advantage over it.

Among the twelve Companion Beasts ranked ahead, some of them were from the six families, while the others were from overseas. Zhou Wen wasn’t too sure either.

If possible, Zhou Wen planned on challenging an overseas Companion Beast.

Before Zhou Wen could come to a conclusion, he saw Liu Yun walk back. However, from the looks of it, he was in a worse state than before. His nose was bruised and his face swollen. Zhou Wen did not know what he had done.

“Junior Brother, I really know my mistake. Save me. If this continues, I will definitely die,” Liu Yun said tearfully.

He had never been so unlucky ever since he was born. The unlucky things he had encountered today numbered more than everything he had encountered in life.

“Let me ask you. What’s that Life Reversing Spirit Talisman?” Zhou Wen asked Liu Yun.

In the past, Zhou Wen had fused many pets but had failed to get rid of Jinxes Master. He failed to get rid of the pet even with a fusion with single-digit probabilities.

Back then, Zhou Wen suspected that fusion wouldn’t fail as long as it had Jinxes Master.

However, it was useless even if he didn’t fail. As long as Jinxes Master existed, he definitely wouldn’t dare use it. Liu Yun’s miserable state strengthened his resolve.

To have Liu Yun successfully steal the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General was equivalent to the failure of Jinxes Master. The Life Reversing Spirit Talisman was indeed magical.

“That’s a treasure I stole from the Zhang family. I heard that it was passed down from the Zhang family’s ancestors. There aren’t many of them in total. I was lucky to have stolen one,” said Liu Yun.

“It was passed down by its ancestors? Isn’t it something from a dimensional zone?” Zhou Wen was somewhat surprised.

“No, the Zhang family had a long history before the dimensional storms. Their family was already very famous in ancient times. They controlled a sect, and legend has it that they have the ability to predict the future. I’m not too sure about the details either. After all, this family is very mysterious. Otherwise, they wouldn’t have produced a figure like the Hero King,” explained Liu Yun.

The Zhang family… Could it be that Ancestral Master? Zhou Wen thought for a moment and really thought of one such person.

However, that was history from long ago. Zhou Wen didn’t study history, and he had only heard of such a person. He wasn’t sure of the exact details.

“Junior Brother, if you want the Life Reversing Spirit Talisman, I’ll go to the Zhang family later. I’ll risk my life to steal another one for you. Help me dispel the bad luck on me first. Can you return the signed piece of paper to me?” Liu Yun believed that the reason he was so unlucky was that Zhou Wen had used the signed paper to do something to him after discovering that he had stolen his Companion Beasts.

He had no idea that Zhou Wen hadn’t used the signed paper at all. It was purely because of Jinxes Master.

“Return all the Companion Beasts you stole from me.” Zhou Wen thought for a moment. He still wanted Liu Yun to take him to the Endless Sea of Stars. If he were to continue being so unlucky, he probably wouldn’t be able to reach the Endless Sea of Stars before Liu Yun died.

“If you want a Companion Beast, I’ll think of a way to get a Mythical Companion Egg for you. There’s no need for me to return them, right?” said Liu Yun with a bitter expression.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 631 - Being Challenged

Chapter 631 Being Challenged

The Companion Beasts that Liu Yun stole were equivalent to Companion Beasts that he had hatched. To transfer them to someone else required paying a huge price.

“I only want the things that belong to me. I don’t want anything else. It’s up to you.” Zhou Wen wanted to take back the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul Essence and see if Liu Yun remained unlucky.

If he wasn’t unlucky anymore, then the previous mishaps were undoubtedly due to Jinxes Master.

Of course, Zhou Wen wouldn’t let Liu Yun know where the problem stemmed from. It was fine as long as he mistakenly thought that it was due to his signature. This prevented him from doing anything rash in the future.

“I’ll return them, alright? You’re really my Junior Brother. You’re going to kill me.” Liu Yun said with a bitter expression, “Those low-level Musical Note Sprites are useless. Can’t you give them up?”

“No, not one less,” Zhou Wen said.

Liu Yun had no choice but to return the Companion Beasts he had stolen from Zhou Wen. Every time he transferred a Companion Beast, Liu Yun felt as though a chunk of meat had been ripped off his body. His expression turned uglier and paler. He was as white as a sheet.

Zhou Wen was somewhat surprised. He originally didn't expect Liu Yun to really return all ten Companion Beasts. After all, others might die from transferring a single Companion Beast. A few lives weren't even enough to transfer ten Companion Beasts. Even Zhou Wen himself didn't dare casually transfer his Companion Beasts.

Liu Yun forcefully transferred the ten Companion Beasts. Although he ended up vomiting blood and falling to the ground, almost half dead, he didn't hurt his foundation. It was obvious that there was something strange about him. Otherwise, he would have long died.

Could it be an effect of cultivating the Sky-Stealing Sun-Shifting Art? Zhou Wen was even more expectant of the Endless Sea of Stars.

Typical dungeons didn't attract Zhou Wen much anymore, but he really wanted to visit places like the Endless Sea of Stars. It would be great if he could download it on his phone.

"Junior Brother, I've returned the Companion Beast to you. Quickly return me the autograph," Liu Yun said weakly as he lay on the ground. He was so weak that he didn't even have the strength to stand up.

"Senior Brother, I'll keep your autograph. However, don't worry. As long as you don't have any more nasty thoughts, nothing will happen again. By the way, I want to go to the Endless Sea of Stars to take a look. How long will it take for a return trip?" Zhou Wen asked Liu Yun.

"It'll take at least a month or two." Liu Yun was depressed not to get the autograph back, but thankfully, he didn't continue to be unlucky. He felt much better.

Zhou Wen observed Liu Yun the entire time. Seeing that nothing had happened to him, he was certain that the things he had encountered previously were the problems caused by Jinxes Master.

If it really doesn’t work, I’ll use the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul to Tyrant as food later. Zhou Wen wanted to wait and see if he would be affected by Jinxes Master like Liu Yun.

He felt that the possibility wasn’t too high because he had always taken the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General around with him. He wasn’t as unlucky as Liu Yun.

Furthermore, Zhou Wen had the Bamboo Blades of the Four Gentlemen Blades. Legend had it that they jinxed their masters. Although his luck was lacking, he wasn’t as unlucky as Liu Yun.

If the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General really doesn’t hinder me, can I use the advantage of never having a fusion fail to upgrade Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General? Zhou Wen placed his sights on his Mythical Companion Beasts.

Mythical Companion Beasts had a low chance of success when fusing with ordinary pets, but if it fused with the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General, then a low compatibility didn’t seem to be a problem.

Zhou Wen only had such a thought, but he hadn’t decided if he should carry out the fusion. This was because he didn’t know why he wasn’t affected by Jinxes Master. If the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General advanced to the Mythical stage and Jinxes Master became strong enough to affect him, it wouldn’t be worth it.

He chatted with Liu Yun for a while. With Liu Yun not showing any more problems and Zhou Wen himself being

fine, the two relaxed.

According to Liu Yun, Zhou Wen knew that the Endless Sea of Stars was deep in the Taklamakan Desert. The area was chaotic and there were many strange dimensional zones. Furthermore, the dimensional zones were mobile, meaning they weren't fixed. Finding the Endless Sea of Stars was an extremely difficult task.

Zhou Wen promised Liu Yun that as long as he could safely find the Endless Sea of Stars and safely bring Zhou Wen out, he would return the autograph to him. The two of them reached an initial agreement.

Just as they were discussing how to head to the Endless Sea of Stars, the black cube suddenly lit up. A Companion Beast issued a challenge.

A terrifying Companion Beast projection appeared on the cube's screen.

At a glance, it looked like eight dragons that were entangled together. On careful look, it was a terrifying snake with eight heads and eight tails. Its torso was connected together, but its heads looked like those of a dragon. However, its snake body didn't have any dragon claws.

"Orochi. Who is it challenging?" Zhou Wen read out the monster's name when it appeared on the cube.

Zhou Wen had heard of this Mythical creature before. It was considered one of the more famous Mythical creatures. It appeared in many myths.

Soon, Zhou Wen realized that Tyrant Behemoth's name had lit up on the rankings. Orochi was challenging his Tyrant Behemoth.

Instantly, the entire Federation boiled over. After Tyrant Behemoth killed Chimera with a decisive victory, to have another Companion Beast challenge it was unexpected.

After all, Tyrant Behemoth was only ranked thirteenth, but according to analysis and speculation, its strength was ranked at least in the top five. It was clearly not worth it to challenge Tyrant Behemoth.

Now that someone was challenging it, it meant that it wasn’t just for the ranking. They had either found Tyrant Behemoth’s weakness or wanted to probe its true strength.No matter what the outcome was, this battle would undoubtedly be a spectacle.

Furthermore, people were guessing whether Orochi, which had never been listed on the ranking, was from the Federation or overseas.

The intelligence network of the eight factions began their full machinery. They investigated the origins of Orochi, hoping to find its owner.

However, the final conclusion was that the chances of it being an overseas Companion Beast were higher.

On an island overseas, a youth was standing in front of a cube, staring intently at the screen.

“Why are you taking the risk to challenge Tyrant Behemoth? Your target should be Primordial Sword Immortal. Challenging Tyrant Behemoth will only expose the strength of Orochi ahead of time,” a middle-aged man walked over and said with a frown.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it

as soon as possible.

Chapter 632 - Orochi

Chapter 632 Orochi

The youth stared at the screen and said, “With the characteristics and skills of Orochi, it’s still unknown if it can defeat Primordial Immortal Sword. After all, Primordial Immortal Sword can split apart Death of the Underworld’s domain. Such destructive power happens to be the characteristics of Orochi. When Companion Beasts with the same characteristics meet, the stronger one will have an overwhelming advantage.”

“Do you think Orochi is no match for Primordial Immortal Sword?” the middle-aged man said unhappily.

“At the very least, I haven’t seen the possibility of it winning yet. Rather than leaving the final moment to chance, I might as well occupy a spot first. I can advance and defend. Even if I fail to challenge Primordial Sword Immortal in the end, I can still occupy one of the top spots,” the youth said.

“In that case, you should also challenge a Companion Beast ranked closer to the top. Tyrant Behemoth is only thirteenth, but its actual combat strength can be ranked in the top five.”

The youth said with a smile, “The competition for the top ten will definitely be very intense towards the end. Even if I get Orochi to use all its strength to ascend to the top five, not only will I expose all my strength, but I will still be challenged by the Federation in the end. Although Tyrant Behemoth is strong, from what I can see, Orochi should be able to restrain it. It won’t be that difficult to win.

Furthermore, Tyrant Behemoth’s name has shaken the world. If I kill it now, others will view Orochi in a different light. When the time comes, I’ll rush into the top five. Those who dare challenge Orochi will have to think it through. How does their Companion Beast compare to Chimera or Tyrant Behemoth?”

“Do you have the confidence to easily defeat Tyrant Behemoth?” the middle-aged man asked after some thought.

“How can there be anything in this world with absolute certainty? However, during this period of time, I’ve repeatedly analyzed Tyrant Behemoth’s battle as well as the Tyrant Behemoth found in myths and legends. Without a doubt, it is a pure Strength-type Companion Beast. You should know very well that Orochi has the absolute advantage over such Companion Beasts,” the youth said.

“If that’s the case, then go ahead and do it. It’s also time for those fellows from the Federation to remember we exist. Let’s just treat it as an early heads up for them.” With that, the middle-aged man stopped objecting.

…

Zhou Wen didn’t immediately accept the challenge. Instead, he went online to search for information related to Orochi.

There was no available information regarding the dimensional creature, Orochi. There were only myths and legends.

There were many legends regarding Orochi. The most famous legend was that Orochi was a monster from Outcloud Country.

There were a few other legends, but they weren’t as famous as this. Zhou Wen felt that the Orochi in the arena was similar to this legendary monster.

Liu Yun’s injuries hadn’t healed yet, so he said as he leaned there, looking at the screen, “Junior Brother, what are you hesitating for? Send your Tyrant Behemoth to kill that crappy snake.”

“I don’t plan on accepting the challenge. How’s your injury? If there’s nothing wrong with you, let’s head to the Endless Sea of Stars,” Zhou Wen said.

“You’re giving up? Wouldn’t that mean giving up your ranking?” Liu Yun said in surprise.

“It doesn’t matter. This ranking isn’t my goal anyway.” Zhou Wen looked at Liu Yun and said, “Can you walk or not?”

“Yes. I have to walk even if it hurts. I have an uncomfortable feeling as long as that piece of paper is with you,” said Liu Yun as he forced himself to get up. He summoned an Epic Companion Beast that looked like a turtle, but it was bigger than an SUV.

He sprawled on the turtle’s back which ran as though it had burning wheels at its feet. It was surprisingly fast and very stable.

Zhou Wen didn’t have any Companion Beasts that were especially suitable for riding. It was uncomfortable sitting on Six-Winged, so he chose to sit on the turtle’s back as well.

Zhou Wen didn’t plan on letting Tyrant Behemoth participate in the battle, but the West District’s media overwhelmingly supported Tyrant Behemoth, believing that it would definitely kill Orochi.

“How can an apocalyptic beast like Tyrant Behemoth be comparable to the likes of an overgrown snake?”

“It won’t take more than three minutes. Tyrant Behemoth will definitely defeat Orochi.”

“I don’t think Orochi can even last three minutes.”

The people in the West District believed that Tyrant Behemoth would win, but as the 72-hour countdown ticked by, they didn’t see Tyrant Behemoth choosing to answer the call of battle. People began to sing to a different tune.

There were even media reports that Tyrant Behemoth was no match for Orochi, which was why it didn’t dare accept the challenge.

Immediately, some media outlets objected. As a result, the major media outlets began arguing online. The West District citizens who supported Tyrant Behemoth began to split into two factions.

In the end, after 72 hours, Tyrant Behemoth didn’t choose to participate in the battle. This war of words ended with Tyrant Behemoth’s supporters turning silent in dejection.

Many people from the West District were very disappointed. They believed that Tyrant Behemoth shouldn’t have been afraid of battle and should fight to the death to defend the glory of the West District.

There were even rumors that pointed at the Family Clan of Gods and the Cape family, believing that Tyrant Behemoth was a Companion Beast of their two families. It was a disgrace to the West District to surrender without fighting.

The Cape family was the most wronged. Their Chimera had been swallowed by Tyrant Behemoth, so how could Tyrant Behemoth belong to their family? However, ordinary citizens didn’t know of this situation and included their family in their cussing.

In the end, the Cape family couldn’t withstand the pressure of public opinion. This greatly affected their reputation as a hero family. In the end, they took the initiative to meet the Family Clan of Gods and decided to take down Orochi.In the beginning, they first sent an unknown Mythical Companion Beast to challenge Orochi, hoping to figure out its true strength.

However, it was easily defeated. Following that, the two families sent three Mythical Companion Beasts to challenge Orochi, but all of them failed. They were defeated by Orochi with overwhelming strength. One of the losers was Inferno Dragon.

It may have been a covetous probe at the beginning, but at this stage, the entire Federation knew that the two families were aiming to defeat Orochi.

However, the repeated failures only served to further infuriate the West District media. They blamed the two families for their inaction. They should have sent stronger Companion Beasts to fight and defeat Orochi to defend West District’s honor.

There were even some people from the West District who wanted Tyrant Behemoth to fight again to avenge their humiliation.

Unfortunately, Tyrant Behemoth wasn’t in the hands of the two West District families. Even if they wanted Tyrant Behemoth to fight, it was impossible.

The two families had their own plans. It was impossible for them to engage in an all-out war with Orochi at the moment, but they couldn’t ignore the reputation of the two families. Finally, the Cape family sent out an Angel Companion Beast, hoping to defeat Orochi.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 633 - The Federation is Incompetent

Chapter 633 The Federation is Incompetent

War Angel was a Mythical Companion Beast with golden wings. He wore golden armor and held a sword in one hand and a shield in the other. He was a Companion Beast with extremely powerful offensive and defensive abilities.

Orochi quickly accepted the challenge and appeared in the arena. This battle attracted a large number of spectators.

Because Orochi had won several consecutive battles and made Tyrant Behemoth retreat without a fight, it was placed in the limelight. It was so great that it was almost comparable to top Companion Beasts like Primordial Immortal Sword and Death of the Underworld.

However, its ranking remained at thirteen. It didn’t continue challenging upwards.

The moment Orochi appeared, its eight snake heads spewed out different powers—poison, flames, and smoke. Together with its mountainous form, it looked extremely terrifying.

War Angel raised the golden shield in his hand and formed a barrier of light, blocking the many forces outside the barrier. The wings on his back flapped as he instantly came in front of Orochi. The golden sword in his hand slashed at one of the snake heads with a resplendent and holy sword beam.

Clang!

A snake tail slammed into War Angel’s sword beam like a phantom. It shattered the sword beam and sent War Angel flying.

In terms of strength, War Angel was clearly no match for Orochi.

War Angel wasn’t injured. He raised his shield and sword and constantly circled Orochi while attacking, but it didn’t serve much purpose.

Although his shield could block Orochi’s attack, its sword beam was similarly unable to injure Orochi. Every strike was blocked, causing the battle to enter a stalemate.

The West District citizens naturally hoped for War Angel to win. As for the other districts, they were just watching the fun. This was because no one could confirm that Orochi was a Companion Beast from overseas.

As the battle continued, the golden wings on War Angel’s back suddenly turned into golden feathers that spread out and condensed towards the golden sword. The golden sword turned into a huge golden feather sword that slashed at Orochi with unparalleled light.

This strike was War Angel’s Wheel of Destiny, known as the End of War. It possessed unparalleled destructive power. The Cape family hoped to use the End of War to defeat Orochi.

Many people in the West District knew of the existence of War Angel. When they saw End of War, they were excited, imagining that War Angel was finally about to unleash its maximum strength.

Even people who didn’t know the might of End of War felt that this strike was invincible when they saw the golden

sword beam that resembled divine punishment. Even if Orochi wasn’t killed, it would be severely injured.

However, in the next second, the West District citizen’s fantasy was shattered. Orochi’s tail struck the terrifying golden sword beam with a cold beam.

The golden sword beam was sliced apart along with the feather blade. Even the shield was split in half. Thankfully, War Angel retreated quickly, or his body might have been split in half.

At this stage, War Angel’s owner didn’t dare continue. He chose to admit defeat and leave the battlefield. If he continued fighting, he probably wouldn’t even have the chance to admit defeat.

The people from West District fell silent while the people from the other districts gloated.

“The angels in the West District are nothing much after all. They can’t even defeat a snake.”

“How embarrassing. The two hero families can’t even deal with a snake. They were even beaten up so badly.”

“Thankfully, Tyrant Behemoth was smart and didn’t accept the challenge. Otherwise, it might have been sliced into two if it didn’t escape as quickly as War Angel.”

As for the West District, they were in a frenzy. The Internet was abuzz. There were people requesting Tyrant Behemoth to take the stage again, but there were also people who wanted the two families to send stronger Companion Beasts. Such a failure was intolerable.

As for the pessimists of the West District, they believed that Orochi was invincible.

The two families were in a difficult position, but to send a top-notch Companion Beast into battle now would only expose their strength and affect their plan to achieve first place.

...

When Liu Yun and Zhou Wen arrived at a city closest to the desert, they saw the video of Orochi fighting War Angel. Liu Yun exclaimed, “What a powerful, destructive force. The tail of Orochi is like an invincible divine weapon. It can even shatter End of War. It’s terrifying. It was right for you not to accept the challenge back then. This power is the nemesis of all pure Strength-type Companion Beasts.”

Zhou Wen said, “In myths, there’s a divine sword in the tail of Orochi. It’s an infallible weapon. That should be Orochi’s most powerful trump card.”

After watching Orochi’s battle, Zhou Wen felt more at ease. Orochi was indeed powerful, but it was impossible for it to defeat Tyrant Behemoth.

The destructive power of Golden Overlord Sword was in no way inferior to Orochi. Its attack power was augmented by Golden Sword Aura, Unstoppable, and Ever-Victorious. Yet, it could only injure Tyrant Behemoth when it didn’t use Absolute Strength. Once it used Absolute Strength, the Golden Overlord Sword’s offensive power could only cause a faint sword mark on Tyrant Behemoth.

Of course, that was under Zhou Wen’s deliberate act. In fact, Tyrant Behemoth wouldn’t even give Golden Overlord Sword a chance to hit it when it used Absolute Strength.

Unfortunately, there were too many people in the city. Zhou Wen didn’t wish to be too ostentatious or he would have gotten Tyrant Behemoth to finish Orochi.

The two of them left the city and continued heading towards the desert. Now, all Zhou Wen wanted was to quickly reach the Endless Sea of Stars and see if he could download a game dungeon.

…

While the two families in the West District were hesitating, Orochi, which had not challenged anything of a higher rank, made a move. It challenged fourth-place, Ice Elemental Sprite Queen.

It was a Mythical Companion Beast that belonged to the Ultimate Family Clan. It was currently in fourth place, only inferior to Primordial Sword Immortal, Death of the Underworld, and Fairy Immortal Gu.

Legend had it that Fairy Immortal Gu was from the Dugu family, but up to now, no one had confirmed it.Ice Elemental Sprite Queen was proficient in ice power and could freeze everything. As for the Wheel of Destiny—Extreme Cold—legend had it that it was the power closest to absolute zero.

Unfortunately, Orochi seemed to have very high resistance to ice. When the entire combat arena was frozen, it actually shattered the ice and slashed out with its tail, almost killing Ice Elemental Sprite Queen.

The owner of Ice Elemental Sprite Queen had no choice but to admit defeat. However, after that, Orochi did something unimaginable.

Orochi’s eight heads spewed out eight different powers including ice, fire, and smoke at the same time, condensing eight words in the void.

“The Federation is incompetent. The heroes are shameless.”

Instantly, the entire Federation erupted with rage. To say such words made it very obvious. Orochi was undoubtedly an overseas Companion Beast.

This time, it wasn’t just the West District. The entire Federation’s Four Districts were filled with indignation.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 634 - Sandstorm

Chapter 634 – Sandstorm

“Nao, well done. Since the Orochi has already revealed its strength, let’s maximize its effects and expose the Federation more,” the middle-aged man said to the young man standing beside Orochi.

The youth turned around. She was wearing a Samurai outfit and her hair was tied up. She looked like an ordinary woman without a calm or heroic aura.

“You should call me by my full name, Uesugi Nao,” Uesugi Nao said.

The middle-aged man’s expression stiffened slightly as he continued with a cold expression, “However, it’s best you know your limits. It’s fine to gather information, but Orochi must not be lost.”

“I naturally know what to do,” Uesugi Nao said indifferently without looking at the middle-aged man.

“I hope you really know what should be done.” The middle-aged man snorted and left.

…

The entire Federation was discussing how to defeat Orochi and teach those demons overseas a lesson. They wanted them to know how powerful the Federation was.

Now, the pressure wasn’t only on the Cape family and the Family Clan of Gods. The other families also felt the pressure.

Xia Dongyue looked at the Xia family’s analysis of Orochi and said, “Orochi has multiple attributes and has a high resistance to ice. Its strength is extremely strong. The most terrifying thing is its tail’s destructive power. It can slice through almost everything. The owner of this Orochi is very smart, choosing Ice Elemental Sprite Queen that Orochi has a restraining effect on. This won them fourth place. While enjoying this high-ranking, they prevent Death of the Underworld that is best at restraining Orochi from challenging it because of its higher ranking.”

Xia Xuanyue said, “To deal with a Companion Beast like Orochi, Brother Chuan’s Companion Beast is most suitable. However, he went to the Southern Wilderness with Dugu Ge and Zhang Chunqiu. I’m afraid he won’t be able to return anytime soon.”

“No rush. Someone will be even more anxious than us.” Xia Dongyue smiled.

The person Xia Dongyue was referring to was naturally the Cape family and the Family Clan of Gods. It meant nothing if they were defeated by other hero families.

However, no one was more anxious than them when they were humiliated by the overseas demons.

…

Zhou Wen and Liu Yun had already entered the desert. This place was even more terrifying than Zhou Wen imagined.

Due to the influence of the dimensional storms, the difference between day and night temperatures became even greater. The temperature in the day was nearly 80-90°C. It was almost enough to roast a human. Yet, it was literally freezing at night.

Furthermore, terrifying sandstorms often appeared. According to Liu Yun, the desert's terrain would change with each sandstorm. Dimensional zones would even appear after the change.

It was very likely that they would find themselves in a dimensional zone after a sandstorm.

"Don't worry. With me around, I can avoid danger in the desert. I won't lose my way, nor will I end up inside a dimensional zone because of the sandstorm." Liu Yun's injuries were almost healed. He sat on the turtle's back and introduced the desert to Zhou Wen.

Although the desert temperature couldn't damage Zhou Wen's body, he felt somewhat uncomfortable. Even with an umbrella shielding him, he still felt extremely hot.

The weather in the desert changed without warning. It was burning under the scorching sun a moment ago, and in the next second, black clouds appeared in the sky. In just a moment, they covered half the sky.

The sun was covered up and the sky darkened.

"Oh no, it's a sandstorm. Why are we encountering a sandstorm here?" Liu Yun's expression changed.

"Didn't you say that you wouldn't enter a dimensional zone even if you encountered a sandstorm?" Zhou Wen asked Liu Yun.

After the dimensional storms, sandstorms became especially terrifying. However, the power of the sandstorm wasn’t enough to threaten the safety of Epic experts. What they were most afraid of was the sandstorm sweeping up dimensional zones and causing them to find themselves inside one.

“Under normal circumstances, there shouldn’t be any problems.” Liu Yun clearly didn’t sound confident.

Although Zhou Wen could tell that Liu Yun lacked confidence, there was nothing he could do since he had already come so far.

The black sandstorm arrived in the blink of an eye. The terrifying storm had caught up to them and swept them into a swath of black sand that blotted out the sky.

Liu Yun summoned a wind-elemental Companion Beast and transformed into a windmill. It stood on the turtle’s head.

Strangely, the terrifying sandstorm blew at the windmill, causing it to spin faster and faster. However, the sand around them seemed to be absorbed by the windmill, preventing it from affecting the two people on the turtle’s back.

In the sandstorm, nothing could be seen. Even Truth Listener was affected, reducing its range.

“Did you hear anything?” Zhou Wen suddenly asked Liu Yun one hour into the turtle’s journey in the sandstorm.

“No, did you hear anything?” Liu Yun immediately became nervous. He pricked up his ears to listen, but he couldn’t hear anything.

“I seem to hear a woman crying, but I can’t hear it clearly,” Zhou Wen said to Liu Yun as he listened attentively.

“A woman crying? Listen carefully. Are you sure that’s right?” Liu Yun’s expression turned ugly.

Zhou Wen focused his attention and continued listening, but he couldn’t seem to hear the woman’s cries. After listening for a while, he didn’t hear the same sound again.

“I knew it. You must have heard wrongly.” Liu Yun heaved a sigh of relief when he saw Zhou Wen shake his head.

The terrifying sandstorm blew for more than ten hours. By the time the sandstorm passed, it was already the morning of the next day. The sun had just risen, and the temperature wasn’t too high yet. The surrounding air seemed to have improved significantly, and there was a moist smell.

“See? I told you that with me around, you can freely enter the desert. It’s impossible for you to enter a dimensional zone,” said Liu Yun smugly.

As Liu Yun spoke, he stood up and looked into the distance. His expression suddenly froze.

Zhou Wen knew that something was amiss and stood up. He traced Liu Yun’s gaze and saw an ancient city appear in the desert ahead.The ancient city was made of a yellow jade-like stone. It shimmered under the sunlight like the morning sun.

The architectural style of the ancient city was very strange. It was different from the ancient cities in Zhou Wen’s hometown. The city gates and roofs used large numbers of arches.

Zhou Wen narrowed his eyes and carefully sized it up. He saw that above the city gates were the words ‘Netherworld City.’

This name didn’t sound auspicious. Zhou Wen turned to look at Liu Yun and asked, “Do we need to pass by Netherworld City to reach the Endless Sea of Stars?”

However, Liu Yun didn’t answer Zhou Wen. As though he had gone mad, he ordered the turtle to change directions and run at full speed.

However, not long after running, they saw the ancient city that resembled yellow jade appear in front of them. On it were the words ‘Netherworld City’. It looked like the ancient city they had just seen.

“What’s going on?” Zhou Wen sized up Netherworld City, but his eyes suddenly lit up. This was because he saw a tiny symbol beside the words—a tiny palm symbol.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 635 - Netherworld City

Chapter 635 Netherworld City

“Death Valley, Netherworld City, the Endless Sea of Stars, and Paradise Mountain. These are the four most terrifying dimensional zones that appeared after the transformation of the Taklamakan Desert. If humans enter, it’s highly likely that they won’t be able to survive,” said Liu Yun.

“Then why are you taking me to the Endless Sea of Stars?” Zhou Wen frowned.

“I’ve entered the Endless Sea of Stars before, and I know how to leave. As long as I don’t venture too deep, there won’t be any danger. However, I’ve only heard of Netherworld City and have never seen it before. I heard from the people in the desert that Netherworld City can only be seen at certain times. Many people might not even see it once in their entire lives in the desert, but who knew that it would be such a coincidence for us to encounter it? Is the thing you planted on me still there?” Liu Yun asked Zhou Wen suspiciously.

“Do I look like an idiot? I wouldn’t want to die with you, right?” Zhou Wen curled his lips.

Liu Yun thought that it made sense. If they entered the desert together, Zhou Wen wouldn’t be able to escape the same fate if he died from encountering Netherworld City.

“What kind of place is Netherworld City?” Zhou Wen asked.

“I don’t know. I’ve only heard that none of the people who have seen Netherworld City can return alive. I didn’t believe it in the past, but this city is indeed strange. I’ve already changed directions, and it’s impossible I backtracked; yet, here we are, seeing it again.” Liu Yun’s expression didn’t look too good.

“Since we can’t shake it off, let’s head over and take a look.” As Zhou Wen spoke, he jumped off the turtle’s back. After adhering the Substitute Talisman to himself, he summoned Six-Winged Guardian Dragon and allowed it to appear on his back in its companion form.

He wore Truth Listener the entire time. He directly summoned Tyrant Behemoth and made it scout ahead.

Liu Yun knew that they couldn’t hide from Netherworld City after encountering it, so he decided to take a look first.

He summoned Genie and Orange Cat. He wore the pair of bracers and summoned a few Epic Companion Beasts.

After summoning, he saw that Zhou Wen was still summoning Companion Beasts. Not only did he summon the Golden Overlord Sword, but he also had a Golden Battle God Halberd floating beside him.

“Junior Brother, don’t tell me you’re in the same industry as me?” Liu Yun looked at Zhou Wen’s Mythical Companion Beasts and felt like he had wasted all his years.

He used to think that he was doing pretty well. Among his peers, even the geniuses of the six families might not have as many Mythical Companion Beasts as he did. However, compared to Zhou Wen, he immediately felt like he was a country bumpkin.

Zhou Wen ignored him and summoned some Vajra Mallas that served as cannon fodder. Due to the intense sunlight here, the Poison Bats' combat strength would be greatly weakened, so Zhou Wen didn't use them.

A few Vajra Mallas scouted ahead. Zhou Wen and Liu Yun followed behind as they headed for Netherworld City.

Netherworld City's huge doors were tightly shut. The doors were carved from yellow jade. On each of the two doors, there was a tiny ghost image which looked very sinister.

When they arrived in front of the city gate, nothing happened. While Liu Yun sized up the city gate, Zhou Wen took out his phone and snapped a picture of the tiny palm symbol beside the words 'Netherworld City.'

The palm of the tiny palm symbol didn't hold the symbol of Netherworld City, but a ring. He did not know what it meant.

After taking a picture on his phone, Zhou Wen immediately entered the download interface, making him feel a lot more at ease.

As long as he could download the map, he could explore the secret of Netherworld City in-game. No matter how strange it was, there was no need to be afraid.

With the combat strength of Zhou Wen's current Companion Beast lineup, he should be able to clear anything unless he encountered an unreasonable existence like The Thearch.

Before he could finish downloading the map, he suddenly heard a strange voice coming from the gates of Netherworld City. "Welcome to Netherworld City."

Zhou Wen looked in the direction of the voice and saw that it came from the two ghost faces on the door.

The two ghost faces revealed a strange smile as they stared at Zhou Wen and Liu Yun.

Liu Yun and Zhou Wen looked warily at the two ghost faces on the door, not daring to act rashly.

“Before entering the city, there are three ironclad rules you must not violate. Take heed,” the ghost face on the left said.

“First, murderers in Netherworld City will die,” the ghost face on the right said with a smile.

“Second, anyone whose two feet leave the ground will die,” the ghost face on the left said.

“Third, kill one person for every day you are inside the city, or you will have to commit suicide,” the ghost face on the right said.

“Welcome to the city,” the two ghost faces said the last sentence in unison as the door to Netherworld City opened.

“What kind of bullsh*t ironclad rules are those? The first rule clearly states that we are not allowed to kill. The third rule says that we have to kill one person a day. It’s completely bullsh*t,” said Liu Yun.

However, the two ghost faces had already closed their eyes as though they were asleep. They ignored Liu Yun.

Zhou Wen looked at Netherworld City, but the city was blinding. He couldn’t see anything.

Truth Listener’s ability couldn’t hear any sound in Netherworld City. Zhou Wen did not know what force had affected it.

“Let’s not enter the city now.” Zhou Wen planned on entering the city in-game after the map was downloaded.

However, Zhou Wen soon realized that it wasn’t up to them whether they entered the city.

A raging fire burned outside the city, as though the entire desert had turned into burning hell. The Vajra Mallas beside them were immediately burned to ashes when they touched the flames.It was the same for one of Liu Yun’s Epic pets. When it touched a spark, it immediately burned and was reduced to ashes in the blink of an eye.

Seeing the flames rapidly reach the city gates, it was obvious that they were forced to enter the city. They didn’t have any other choice. If they didn’t wish to die in the sea of flames, they could only enter the city.

“Let’s enter the city now.” Liu Yun saw that the fire was about to reach his feet. Genie, who was a fire-elemental Companion Beast, was helpless against the flames. All he could do was shout and charge into the city gates.

Zhou Wen could only follow by carefully charging into the city.

At the instant they passed through the city gates, they realized that the Companion Beasts they summoned had automatically returned to their bodies, turning into tattoos.

It was a little different from what they had imagined. The city wasn’t hell, but a seemingly normal street. There were all sorts of strange buildings on both sides of the street.

Strangely, there were humanoid creatures standing on the streets. There were only a few of them.

As far as their eyes could see, there were about twenty to thirty people on the long street. However, those people were very strange. All of them stood motionless, as though their feet had been nailed to the ground.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 636 - Strange Street

Chapter 636 Strange Street

Zhou Wen attempted to summon Six-Winged Guardian Dragon, but he couldn’t. It was as though he was restrained by some kind of nomological force.

The few Companion Beasts he had summoned previously had already automatically turned back into tattoos. He couldn’t summon any of them. Only Truth Listener remained in its earring form and wasn’t sealed.

“Can you summon your Companion Beasts?” Zhou Wen asked Liu Yun.

“No, none of my Companion Beasts can be summoned.” Liu Yun shook his head with a heavy expression.

Without Companion Beasts, he and Zhou Wen were only at the Epic stage. It would be difficult to resolve many matters.

Liu Yun took two steps as he spoke, hoping to see if he could use any Essence Energy Skills. However, after taking a step, he realized something strange happening beneath his feet. He immediately stopped.

Zhou Wen also looked at the stone slab beneath Liu Yun’s feet.

At a glance, the entire street was filled with such stone slabs. Every stone slab was uniform—about 40 centimeters wide by 60 centimeters long. At the end of the stone path

was a stone staircase. At the end of the stone steps was a strange building that looked similar to a memorial steele.

Just now, when Liu Yun took a step, the stone slab he stepped on lit up immediately, emitting a faint light. It made the originally grayish-blue stone slab become crystalline like jade.

And on the stone slab, a faint light condensed into a number: 364.

“Do you feel anything wrong with your body?” Zhou Wen asked Liu Yun.

Liu Yun shook his head. “Apart from not being able to summon Companion Beasts, there aren’t any other problems. I’ll take another step.”

With that said, Liu Yun took another step. With that step, Liu Yun’s foot stepped onto the stone slab beside him. After his foot lifted off the stone slab, the light immediately vanished. The stone slab he was stepping on now suffused a faint glow as numbers appeared on it.

However, it wasn’t 364 this time, but 363.

“From the looks of it, the number should decrease by one with every tile. But what does this number mean?” Liu Yun frowned.

“I have a very bad feeling about this. Those people are standing motionless on the streets. The stone slabs beneath their feet are also glowing. I believe it’s not that they don’t want to move, but they don’t dare to because of the numbers,” Zhou Wen said as he took a step forward. He wanted to verify his guess.

The city gates had already closed. Zhou Wen took a step and walked to the stone slab in front of him. Indeed, the stone slab lit up as numbers appeared. It was 365.

“That’s not fair. Why was my number 364 when I took a step? Yet, you’re one step ahead of me?” said Liu Yun.

Zhou Wen ignored him and took another step back. The stone slab beneath his feet lit up as the numbers turned into 364.

“I reckon that no matter where we go now, the number will decrease by one. The ghost face said that both our feet can’t leave the ground, or we will be killed. In other words, it’s impossible for us to fly over. We can only walk across the stone path.”

Zhou Wen glanced at the people ahead and said, “Do you think the numbers on the stone slab represent our remaining steps? If they’re used up, maybe something very bad will happen.”

“From the looks of it, it’s indeed very possible.” Liu Yun agreed with Zhou Wen’s view. After some thought, he said, “What will happen if we stay here forever?”

“I don’t know, but I believe the dimensional creatures in this city wouldn’t make us stand here forever, ” Zhou Wen answered very quickly. Everything in Netherworld City was too strange, so he couldn’t guess what would happen next.

The two of them stood there, looking at each other. Neither of them dared to move.

“Just standing here won’t do. Why don’t we go over and ask the people in front of us and see what’s going on here?” Liu Yun said to Zhou Wen.

“Alright, you can go over and ask them,” Zhou Wen answered.

Liu Yun wanted Zhou Wen to go, but he had made it clear that he wanted him to do it. Therefore, neither of them moved.

Zhou Wen wasn’t idle. He tried summoning his Companion Beasts one by one to see if there were any other Companion Beasts that responded to his summoning other than Truth Listener.

In such a place, having an additional Companion Beast meant an additional chance of survival.

Torch Dragon… No response… Golden Overlord Sword… No response… Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General… No response… Demonic Neonate… Zhou Wen was delighted. Demonic Neonate had actually given him a response. He could sense Demonic Neonate’s consciousness and she was waiting for his summoning.

Demonic Neonate can be summoned! Zhou Wen didn’t summon her. He wanted to determine the situation first.

He tried all the Companion Beasts, but only Truth Listener and Demonic Neonate responded to him. There was nothing from Tyrant Behemoth.

After attempting to summon all his Companion Beasts, Zhou Wen began switching his Essence Energy Arts, hoping to see if his Life Providences and Life Souls were useful here.

Life Providences and Life Souls were normal and weren’t affected. Apart from not being able to summon Companion Beasts, everything else was the same as usual.

When Zhou Wen switched to the Dao Sutra, the jade infant actually opened his eyes. A treasure glow emitted from his body as a terrifying taboo power seeped into his body like a mighty river. In just a few seconds, the jade infant was nearly blasted apart by the terrifying taboo power. Zhou Wen was so frightened that he hurriedly deactivated Gods Retreat.

What a terrifying taboo power! For that split instant, Zhou Wen felt the connection with his Companion Beast again.

Unfortunately, it was impossible for Gods Retreat to last for a long period of time. It was basically impossible to use such a short period of time for combat.

The taboo power of Netherworld City is even more terrifying than the taboo power on Jade Emperor Peak. It’s no wonder no one from Netherworld City can return. I’m afraid it’s a near-death situation this time. Zhou Wen pondered.

However, there was too little useful information at the moment. He had no idea how he could leave Netherworld City.

Liu Yun opened his mouth and shouted. He wanted to catch the attention of the people on the street. Liu Yun’s voice was very loud. With his volume, even if he stood outside the city, one should be able to hear him.

However, the people on the streets didn’t seem to hear his voice at all. They ignored them and continued about their own business.

“Stop shouting. They probably can’t hear you,” Zhou Wen said.

“How do you know they can’t hear?” Liu Yun asked.

“Didn’t you notice? We’ve been standing here for so long. Have you heard any sound on this street?” Zhou Wen pointed at the long street.

Liu Yun was slightly taken aback as he realized that the street was indeed a little strange. Apart from his and Zhou Wen’s voices, there wasn’t a single sound.

Although most people on the streets didn’t move, there were also some people moving around. They could even see them opening their mouths to speak, but they couldn’t hear a single sound. The entire street seemed to have been set to silent mode.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 637 - Reason of Death

Chapter 637 Reason of Death

“That’s not right. If Netherworld City is really muted, why are we able to hear each other’s voices? Could it be that it’s not forbidden for sound to spread, but that sound can only be transmitted within a certain range?” Liu Yun thought for a moment before saying.

“From the looks of it, the possibility is very high. In other words, we have to walk over to communicate with those people,” Zhou Wen said as he looked at the people on the street.

“That’s crazy. The person closest to us is 163 stone slabs away from us. Even if sound can be transmitted within a certain range, meaning that we don’t have to walk right up to him, we still have to take at least a hundred steps.” Liu Yun counted the stone slabs on the street.

“Let’s try walking. Even if we stand here without moving, the third rule might still kill us,” Zhou Wen said.

“What a bullsh*t ironclad rule. If the ironclad rule is really effective, wouldn’t we die without a doubt? Killing people means death. Even if we don’t kill people, we will die. I think there must be something wrong with the three rules,” said Liu Yun.

“Murderers will die. If people aren’t killed in a day, one can only commit suicide. What method is there to satisfy these two conditions at the same time without having to die?” Zhou Wen frowned in thought.

Liu Yun looked at Zhou Wen and said, “I have an idea. If I push you out now and your number drops to zero, you might die because of me. It can be said that I killed you, but I didn’t personally kill you. Does this count as fulfilling two conditions at the same time?”

“That’s one way to look at it.” Zhou Wen nodded slightly.

However, Liu Yun shook his head and said, “This method is useless. Even if I kill you, I’ll only live one more day. The cost is not proportional to the rewards.”

“Now, our understanding of Netherworld City is limited. Let’s head over and ask the people ahead. Perhaps we can obtain some useful information,” Zhou Wen said as he prepared to walk forward.

“Don’t walk yet. Let’s think of a way. Perhaps we can come up with a way to resolve the problem. For example, you can carry me on your back. That way, we might only need to expend one person’s steps,” shouted Liu Yun.

“If I carry you, won’t your feet leave the ground?” Zhou Wen asked.

“I’m just giving an example. There might be other methods,” said Liu Yun.

“Then take your time to think about it. Tell me when you think of it.” Zhou Wen probed as he walked forward.

On the same stone slab, no matter how he moved, the number wouldn’t change. However, as long as he moved to the stone slab beside him, the number would change.

If he crossed two stone slabs with one step, the number would decrease by two.

“You are already walking. What’s the point of me telling you?” Liu Yun gritted his teeth and followed.

The two of them watched as the number on the stone slabs kept decreasing. They were also extremely nervous. No one knew what would happen after the number dropped to zero.

As Zhou Wen walked, he looked at his phone. Netherworld City was still downloading, but it hadn’t finished.

This was because he didn’t know when the game could be downloaded. If the download took more than a day, Zhou Wen might just be waiting for death if he didn’t do anything.

Therefore, Zhou Wen decided to do his best with what he had. If his phone didn’t work, he might still have a chance of survival.

After walking on about seven or eight stone slabs, Zhou Wen suddenly had a bad feeling the moment he stepped onto the next slab. It was as though something was different.

This time, not only did the stone slab show a number, but there were also words.

Cause of death: Death by blades.

Zhou Wen stood motionless as his body tensed up, ready to release his strength at any moment.

Liu Yun also felt that something was amiss. He stopped in front of Zhou Wen and asked him, “What happened?”

Before Zhou Wen could answer, he heard a bang. Not far in front of him, a warrior wrapped in armor appeared with a blade in hand.

After appearing, he slashed at Zhou Wen without a word. The black saber beam instantly appeared in front of him, as fast as an illusion.

Clang! Zhou Wen drew his Bamboo Blade and slashed at the black-armored warrior.

The black-armored warrior’s strength was much weaker than Zhou Wen’s. He was sent flying, but he wasn’t injured. Zhou Wen could tell that he was an Epic dimensional creature, not a human.

Zhou Wen couldn’t move, but the black-armored warrior didn’t have such restrictions. He rapidly moved and slashed from all directions, hoping to slay Zhou Wen by his blade.

Zhou Wen brandished his saber in response to the battle, but he could only stand where he was.

All this while, Zhou Wen had focused on practicing his movement techniques. But now, he couldn’t move at all. He was a little unused to it. However, his realm, reaction, consciousness, and technique remained ever-present. It wasn’t difficult for him to block the black-armored warrior’s attacks.

Liu Yun was too close to Zhou Wen and was also affected by the black-armored warrior. The black-armored warrior even slashed at him. Liu Yun could only take two steps back to prevent himself from being injured in the battle.

However, with his retreat, his number also decreased. He couldn’t help but feel depressed.

It’s clearly a stone slab that I’ve already reached, but the number still gets reduced when I return to it. Damn it. Liu Yun cursed inwardly.

However, when he saw Zhou Wen being constantly attacked by the black-armored warrior, he gloated in delight. “Junior Brother, your saber techniques aren’t bad. If you could move, ten black-armored warriors wouldn’t even make you break a sweat. What a pity.”

“Even if I can’t move, killing him isn’t difficult. However, if I kill him, it’s impossible to predict what will happen next,” Zhou Wen said.Liu Yun nodded when he heard that. “This black-armored warrior should be considered one of the top existences at the Epic stage. His movement techniques and saber techniques are very powerful. His strength is slightly lacking, but he’s first-rate. The first appearance might be at the Epic stage, but if the second one is at the Mythical stage, we would definitely die considering how we can’t use our Companion Beasts or move as we please.”

“That’s not what I’m referring to. I’m thinking if this black-armored warrior is considered a human? If I kill him, wouldn’t that breach the first rule?” Zhou Wen added.

After Liu Yun heard that, his expression turned serious. “If he’s considered a human, then we really don’t have a way out. Killing him means death. If we don’t kill him, we’ll be constantly attacked. Once our stamina is exhausted, we’ll die.”

After a moment of silence, Liu Yun continued, “I don’t think that he comes under the ironclad rules. Otherwise, there’s no way for us to live.”

“From the looks of it, Netherworld City doesn’t plan on giving us a way out,” Zhou Wen said coldly.

Zhou Wen’s mind raced. The black-armored warrior definitely had to be killed. It was impossible for him to

continue fighting him like this. However, he couldn’t kill him casually. He needed to be prepared.

The black-armored warrior appeared behind Zhou Wen like a ghost. He was already very close to him, but Zhou Wen suddenly turned around and slashed out with his Bamboo Blade.

Before the black-armored warrior’s saber could land, his saber had already sliced the black-armored warrior in half.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 638 - Horror

Chapter 638 Horror

“Are you alright?” Liu Yun looked at Zhou Wen nervously. He was really worried that Zhou Wen would die.

If Zhou Wen were to die just like that, he would likely suffer the same fate. He naturally didn’t wish for Zhou Wen to die.

“I’m fine.” Zhou Wen sheathed his Bamboo Blade and shook his head.

At the instant he struck out to kill the black-armored warrior, Zhou Wen switched to Gods Retreat before killing it.

The jade infant absorbed a large amount of taboo power and nearly exploded. However, it was about the same as before. There were no abnormal fluctuations. From the looks of it, killing the black-armored warrior wasn’t considered murder.

Of course, this was only Zhou Wen’s guess. Perhaps the taboo power fluctuations from murder wasn’t obvious.

Zhou Wen looked down at the black-armored warrior’s corpse. His corpse was rapidly disintegrating as a crystal dropped. It was an Essence Energy Skill Crystal.

Zhou Wen extended his palm and sucked it over. The crystal reached Zhou Wen’s hand and he used his phone to snap a picture. It was indeed an Epic Essence Energy Skill Crystal.

Blade Executioner Crystal: Epic

With the Blade Executioner dead, the words on the stone slab beneath Zhou Wen’s feet vanished.

“Do you still want to continue walking? If we encounter a Mythical creature, we will probably be doomed,” said Liu Yun with a heavy expression.

Zhou Wen knew that it was a viable possibility. He wouldn’t believe that there were no Mythical creatures in such a strange dimensional zone.

He looked at his phone. The game was still downloading, and there wasn’t any indication of the progress. He didn’t know when it would finish downloading.

“Let’s continue,” Zhou Wen said as he bit his lip. A day was very short. If they couldn’t untie the dead knot caused by the three ironclad rules, they would probably die.

Thankfully, Zhou Wen still had Truth Listener and Demonic Neonate to use. Even if he encountered Mythical creatures, he wasn’t powerless against them.

However, Zhou Wen was still somewhat worried. He didn’t know if Companion Beasts would be affected by the ironclad rules of Netherworld City. If they were affected as well, they would die if they weren’t summoned with their feet touching the ground. That would be tragic.

But now that things had come to this, he had to fight for his survival. All he could do was walk forward.

“Junior Brother, go ahead. I’ll follow behind you. Since you wish to scout the way, I can help you from behind if you encounter danger,” said Liu Yun.

There was nothing wrong with what Liu Yun said. Furthermore, Zhou Wen hadn’t pinned his hopes on him at all, so he continued walking forward. However, this time, Zhou Wen walked even slower and was even more careful.

Liu Yun waited for Zhou Wen to take a few steps before stepping on the same stone slabs he took to prevent any accidents from happening.

The only thing that worried Liu Yun was if the black-armored warrior that Zhou Wen had killed would appear when he stepped onto the same stone slab.

Although he was worried, Liu Yun was still prepared to take the same path. He wanted to see if the black-armored warrior would appear again. That would give him a better idea for the remaining journey.

However, before Liu Yun reached the black-armored warrior’s stone slab, something went wrong.

He stepped on a stone slab that Zhou Wen had stepped on before. The stone slab lit up as a few words appeared.

Cause of death: Horror

“F*ck, what the hell is this? You clearly stepped on it just now. Wasn’t it fine?” Liu Yun tightened his nerves and looked around.

He didn’t know what horror was. The slab that Zhou Wen had stepped on previously clearly wrote ‘Death by blades.’

Zhou Wen turned his head and saw the words beneath Liu Yun’s feet. He said with a heavy expression, “From the looks of it, the problematic stone slabs aren’t in fixed spots. They

randomly appear or someone is controlling them. Even if there's a pattern, we don't know what it is."

"Junior Brother, I think it's best if we don't meet again in the future. Before meeting you, I lived a happy life. However, ever since I met you, I haven't had a good day. I might even lose my life here. Promise me, if we can survive this time, we won't meet again, alright?" Liu Yun said with a bitter face.

"When you take me to the Endless Sea of Stars, we won't meet again," Zhou Wen said.

"You still want to go to the Endless Sea of Stars when we are already in this situation… Ah…" As Liu Yun spoke, he suddenly felt a chill run down his neck.

A dagger seemed to have appeared out of thin air and stuck to his neck. The blade had already touched his skin.

Liu Yun turned pale with fright, but his reaction was really fast. Almost at the same time the blade appeared, he quickly leaned back, but his feet seemed to be nailed to the ground. He remained motionless.

The dagger slashed across Liu Yun's face, slicing off a portion of his hair. Liu Yun broke out into a cold sweat.

However, the dagger vanished after the slash. If not for the fact that half of Liu Yun's hair had been cut off and there was a faint bloody mark on his neck, he would have thought that it was just an illusion.

Liu Yun listened attentively, but he couldn't hear the sound of the dagger at all. There was no wind in the air.

This is indeed horrifying. I would rather meet the black-armored warrior… Liu Yun felt depressed, but he focused his

mind and didn’t dare relax.

Suddenly, the dagger appeared at Liu Yun’s waist and stabbed at his waist.

Liu Yun immediately dodged to the side. His clothes were pierced, but he still managed to dodge.

Zhou Wen watched from the side as the dagger constantly appeared. It was like a ghost whose trajectory he couldn’t figure out. Every time it appeared, it was as though it had teleported.

When it vanished, Truth Listener couldn’t hear its location.

Liu Yun’s skills were extraordinary. He managed to dodge the various attacks of the dagger time and time again. His body made all sorts of unimaginable poses. At most, he would lift one foot from the ground, never two at the same time. There were certain poses that even a professional acrobat might not be able to do.

“Senior Brother, your movement technique is pretty good. Where did you learn it?” Zhou Wen asked with a smile.

“You’re still gloating at me despite the situation. Hurry up and help me think of a way to deal with this fellow,” Liu Yun said gloomily.“Since you have the ability to dodge, find an opportunity to slash it. Perhaps you can slice it apart with one strike,” Zhou Wen said.

“You make it sound simple. How would I know that I would enter such a crappy place? I usually use Companion Beasts, so I don’t have any ordinary weapons,” said Liu Yun.

“You should have said so earlier. I have a weapon. I can rent it out to you,” Zhou Wen said with a smile.

“Cut the crap. Give it to me quickly.” Liu Yun dodged the dagger’s attack and shouted at Zhou Wen.

“How much will you be paying for rent?” Zhou Wen said in a relaxed manner when he saw that he wasn’t in much danger.

“You can charge however much you want. Junior Brother, can’t you be a little more humane in times like this?” Liu Yun felt like crying.

“Tell me first, what movement technique is that?” Zhou Wen was especially interested in movement techniques. Liu Yun’s movement technique wasn’t as fast as Zhou Wen’s, but his body could make all sorts of strange poses. It was something that ordinary humans couldn’t accomplish. It was definitely a special Essence Energy Skill.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 639 - Fire Burning

Chapter 639 Fire Burning

“This is a combination of contortion, movement technique, and bone-contraction. It’s not a simple Essence Energy Skill. If you want to learn it, I’ll teach you slowly later,” said Liu Yun anxiously. “Give me the blade quickly.”

“Take it.” Zhou Wen took out his Orchid Blade and threw it at Liu Yun.

Liu Yun caught the Orchid Blade. As he waited for the dagger to appear again with full concentration, he said, “What kind of blade is this? Can it be used?”

“Don’t worry. It’s very sharp. It’s not inferior to the one in my hand.” Zhou Wen didn’t tell him that it was the Four Gentlemen Blade’s Orchid Blade, lest he scare him.

He didn’t dare to lend him the Bamboo Blade either. He was afraid that he would end up with even more bad luck and attract more trouble.

Clang!

The dagger appeared behind Liu Yun. He leaned forward and twisted his body at the same time. With a back swing of his hand, he slashed at the dagger.

The dagger was sliced open by the Orchid Blade and disappeared as it flew out.

The dagger clearly didn’t give up on killing Liu Yun. It continued to appear, but it was struck by the Orchid Blade in Liu Yun’s hand.

After slashing more than ten times in a row, he forcefully snapped the dagger. Zhou Wen saw that he had managed to slash at the same spot every time. His technique was excellent and he wasn’t someone to be underestimated.

The dagger landed on the ground and quickly disintegrated, leaving behind a dimensional crystal. It looked like it had added stats.

“This blade isn’t bad. In any case, you still have a big one. Let me borrow the small one for a while. I’ll return it to you when we get out. You can name any conditions you want.” Liu Yun didn’t have any weapons on hand which made him uneasy. He wanted to use Zhou Wen’s Orchid Blade for the time being.

“Take it if you want to use it. Just follow the conditions we agreed on. There’s no need for any additional conditions,” Zhou Wen said.

Seeing how straightforward Zhou Wen was, Liu Yun suddenly felt that something was amiss. From the way he knew Zhou Wen, he definitely wasn’t someone who was easy to negotiate with.

There must be a problem. Liu Yun carefully sized up the Orchid Blade in his hand. After looking at it for a while, his expression suddenly changed. “This… This can’t be the Orchid Blade of the Four Baneful Blades, right?”

“As expected of my senior brother. You are knowledgeable,” Zhou Wen said with a thumbs up.

“It’s no wonder we are so unlucky when you’re carrying such a thing on you. I was fine coming to the desert so many times in the past, but something happened the moment you came. So it’s because of this evil thing. You really aren’t afraid of death… Wait…” Liu Yun said in an extremely foul manner as though he had suddenly thought of something. He looked at the Bamboo Blade at Zhou Wen’s waist and said with widened eyes, “That’s not the Bamboo Blade of the Four Baneful Blades, right? Are the things you have genuine?”

“What do you think?” Zhou Wen asked with a smile.

Liu Yun nearly jumped up, but when he thought about how he would die if his feet left the ground, he stopped himself. He pointed at Zhou Wen and said with a trembling voice, “You really have no concept of death. Just having any one of the Plum, Orchid, Bamboo, and Chrysanthemum Blades will lead to a terrible death. F*ck you. To think you have two. Do you really have a death wish!? It’s fine if you’re tired of living, but don’t drag me with you.”

With that said, Liu Yun was about to throw the Orchid Blade at Zhou Wen. He didn’t want to hold such an item for even a minute. He had already deeply experienced how terrifying it was to be unlucky.

“Senior Brother, you have to consider carefully. Without this Orchid Blade, you would be dead right now,” Zhou Wen said.

Liu Yun was taken aback as his expression turned complicated. Although Orchid Blade was infamous, if he didn’t have any weapons now, the chances of survival were too low.

“Junior Brother, I really have to take my hat off to you. Couldn’t you have brought some normal weapons? Why

have you brought such deadly things? Do you really have a death wish?” Liu Yun said gloomily, but he still held the Orchid Blade and didn’t throw it at Zhou Wen.

“Cut the crap. Tell me how you mastered that movement technique,” Zhou Wen said.

Liu Yun told Zhou Wen the various Essence Energy Skills he needed for his movement technique before saying, “This thing of mine is mainly used when stealing. In terms of speed and exquisiteness, it’s inferior to your movement technique. Why are you learning it? Do you want to be a thief?”

“I’m just interested.” Zhou Wen didn’t believe that Liu Yun’s movement technique was as useless as he had said. His strange movement technique allowed him to adapt to various environments.

In the future, when Zhou Wen entered dimensional zones to fight, it would be impossible for every dimensional zone to have enough space for him to use his full range of movement techniques. If he were in some narrow and rugged area, Liu Yun’s movement techniques would be especially useful.

After silently memorizing Liu Yun’s movement technique methodology, Liu Yun said from behind, “What do we do now? Do we still need to continue moving forward?”

“There’s no way out. All we can do is walk forward,” Zhou Wen said as he continued.

Liu Yun knew that scouting was useless, so he didn’t plan on waiting for Zhou Wen to scout ahead. He walked over and levelled up with him.

When Liu Yun passed the stone slab that the black-armored warrior had appeared in, he didn’t activate it. It looked like the problematic stone slabs were purely random.

After taking a few steps, a stone slab lit up again and new words appeared.

Cause of death: Fire Burning

“How many ways of death are there in Netherworld City?” Zhou Wen focused his attention on his surroundings as he pushed Truth Listener’s ability to its limit.

However, the range Truth Listener could hear only had a radius of ten stone slabs. Everything beyond was silent as though it was muted.

Zhou Wen could roughly tell that this was the maximum area they could hear sounds.

Boom!

With a loud thunderclap, a strange dimensional creature appeared by Zhou Wen’s side. It looked like a crocodile, but it stood there with its hind legs on the ground. It raised its front claws and its tail played a supporting role.

However, due to its short limbs, its body was fat and short. It looked a little adorable and wasn’t very tall. It only reached Zhou Wen’s waist.

Just as Zhou Wen was sizing it up, it opened its mouth and spat out a flame that surged at him.

The flames weren’t ordinary red-yellow in color, nor were they blue in color. Instead, they were white flames that looked like burning ice mist.

Zhou Wen didn’t dare be careless. He drew his saber and slashed out a Demonic Astral Wheel. The blood-red wheel of light tore out like a saw as it slashed at the strange flames.

The Demonic Astral Wheel’s destructive power was indeed very strong. It spun and sliced through the white flames, but the deeper it went, the slower the Demonic Astral Wheel spun. It only managed to slice through less than a meter before completely stopping, as though it had been frozen.

In the next second, the Demonic Astral Wheel shattered amid the white flames, turning into countless fragments. The fragments rapidly burned, causing the white flames to become even more ferocious as they enveloped Zhou Wen.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 640 - Death Knell

Chapter 640 Death Knell

At this moment, Zhou Wen felt that the techniques he had been practicing recently were mainly movement techniques. Now that he couldn’t move, he lacked the means to defeat his enemy.

I’ve had too little time. I don’t have the time to learn so many skills. Zhou Wen’s time was indeed limited. Others only needed to advance one Life Soul, but he needed to advance four.

Furthermore, his training time would be about a year. To be able to train his movement technique to epitome standards, his progression speed was terrifying.

However, at the critical moment, disasters didn’t give Zhou Wen the time to cultivate. Just as the white flames were about to shoot at him, Zhou Wen didn’t slash out again with Bamboo Blade. Instead, he used Demonic Astral Wheel’s suction and struck out with his palm. Using the spinning power, he diverted the white flames to the side.

Despite that, the rotation of the Demonic Astral Wheel gradually slowed down in the white flames. A few seconds later, the spinning force wasn’t enough to divert the white flames. All Zhou Wen could do was deliver another Demonic Astral Wheel.

Zhou Wen sheathed the Bamboo Blade and constantly struck out Demonic Astral Wheel with both hands, diverting the white flames that spewed at him to the side.

Therefore, a magical scene happened. The monster spewed out flames that resembled white fire snakes, but they were diverted to the side by Zhou Wen's Demonic Astral Wheel. It bloomed like flaming chrysanthemums that filled the sky.

"Junior Brother, duck!" At this moment, Liu Yun suddenly shouted.

Without any hesitation, Zhou Wen crouched down and lowered his head. He saw a needle-like cold beam fly over his head.

The monster's attention was on Zhou Wen, so it shifted its gaze downwards as he ducked. It wasn't prepared for the cold beam of light as it instantly nailed into its eyes. The monster immediately let out a tragic cry.

Zhou Wen took the opportunity to draw his saber and slash out. The Demonic Astral Wheel spun and beheaded the screaming monster.

On careful look, Orchid Blade had penetrated the monster's eyes.

"Thanks." Zhou Wen extended his hand and sucked the Orchid Blade back before throwing it at Liu Yun again.

"I won't be able to live for long if you're dead. Two people are better than one. I'm doing this for myself. Instead, I'm more concerned about you. You expended so much Essence Energy just now. It's best you recover your Essence Energy before continuing," said Liu Yun.

Although Zhou Wen didn't really need Liu Yun's help, he would provide him significant help in escaping Netherworld City since Liu Yun had expressed his goodwill and was willing to work together with him to face the problem.

“If you don’t have Essence Energy Crystals, I can sell them to you. How about ten Epic Essence Energy Crystals for your movement technique?” Liu Yun had some ideas about Zhou Wen’s movement techniques.

His movement technique was already fast enough. Few people at his level could catch up to him, but Zhou Wen’s movement technique was even faster than his. He also wanted to know how Zhou Wen had mastered it.

“Don’t you think ten crystals is a tad too little?” Zhou Wen said with a smile.

“You have to know that we are in a dire situation. No one knows when we will be able to leave, nor do we know how many battles we will have to go through. The present value of Essence Energy Crystal is ten times or even a hundred times what it usually is. It’s very possible that an Essence Energy Crystal might save us at the end. If you can use another skill, you might be able to survive. Do you still think it’s expensive?” Liu Yun said seriously.

“It’s still expensive. Even if an Essence Energy Crystal is worth a hundred times more, do you think it can be exchanged for a divine movement technique?” Zhou Wen asked.

“What? Your movement technique is at the divine level?” Liu Yun was shocked.

“As real as it gets. If you really want to know how it’s done, it’s best you show some sincerity and help me obtain Star Stealer,” Zhou Wen said.

“Does the method need Mythical Skill Crystals?” Liu Yun asked.

“There’s no need. All the skills are at the Epic and Legendary stage. There’s no need for Mythical skill crystals,” Zhou Wen answered.

“You comprehended a divine skill yourself?” Liu Yun was even more surprised.

Zhou Wen’s Mythical Companion Beasts could be explained away by him being rich. There might be a faction or massive resources backing him.

However, comprehending a divine skill wasn’t something that could be accomplished with just resources. Although resources were one of the most important conditions, what really mattered was one’s perceptivity.

“Teacher’s eyes are really sharp. A random student he takes in has such standards. Unfortunately, in such a place, your divine movement technique is useless,” said Liu Yun with a sigh.

“Let’s continue walking. We don’t know how long a Netherworld City day is. Perhaps we don’t have as much time as we imagined,” Zhou Wen said as he continued walking forward.

Liu Yun quickly chased after him, clearly wanting to cooperate with Zhou Wen.

After taking a few steps, Liu Yun also encountered dimensional creatures. This time, the dimensional creatures they encountered were the Blade Executioners they had previously seen. The cause of death was naturally death by blades.

Liu Yun had seen Zhou Wen kill the Blade Executioner, so he already had some understanding of it. He didn’t spend much

effort to kill the Blade Executioner.

The two of them walked forward together. There were four types of dimensional creatures they often encountered: Blade Executioners who delivered death by blade, Flaming Evil Spirits who used Fire Burning, Flash Spirit Flying Blade who inculcated Horror, and Water Demon who used Drown.

They were all Epic dimensional creatures with their own characteristics. However, with Zhou Wen and Liu Yun’s cooperation, they killed them one by one, allowing them to smoothly walk over the stone slabs.

With every step the two of them took, Liu Yun would shout at the person ahead, hoping to see if he could hear him.

Zhou Wen naturally knew that it was useless. Unless they came within ten stone slabs of each other, the other party definitely couldn’t hear their voices.

Zhou Wen did some calculations. They needed 153 steps to reach a distance of ten stone slabs from the person. That would leave them with slightly over 200 steps.

This was only enough for them to speak to each other. It was unknown how many steps it would take to leave Netherworld City.

The two of them took 120 steps and could already see that the person closest to them was very close. Just as they were about to continue advancing, they suddenly heard a bell chime.Clang!

The sudden ringing of the bell gave the two of them a fright. The sound was coming from a building at the end of the stone steps. There was a brass bell hanging on it that emitted the heart-shuddering sound.

Clang! Clang! Clang!

The bell constantly rang. Zhou Wen had never heard such a strange bell chime. He felt that it wasn’t auspicious.

“What crappy bell is this? Why does it sound like a death knell?” Liu Yun blurted out.

“Death knell?” Zhou Wen was immediately taken aback.

After Liu Yun said it, he thought about it carefully and was stunned. The two of them exchanged looks and saw the unease in each other’s eyes.

The bell rang seven times before it finally stopped. In front of the building, a throne made of yellow jade slowly rose. There was a person sitting on the throne.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 641 - Bone Die

Chapter 641: Bone Die

Translator: CKtalon

The person was wearing armor carved from white bones. On his head was a skull-like mask. His eyes were shimmering with a strange red light as he casually sat on the yellow jade throne. His gaze was sizing up the people on the long street below.

He didn’t look like he was looking at humans, but more like beasts such as pigs or dogs.

He supported his face with one hand and tilted his head to look at them. Meanwhile, the people on the street below were all ghastly pale. Their bodies involuntarily trembled as though something extremely terrifying was about to happen.

“Who is that guy? Why is he so cocky?” Liu Yun whispered.

The person, far away above the stone steps, seemed to have heard Liu Yun’s words. Looking at him from afar, Liu Yun’s scalp immediately went numb and cold sweat broke out on his back.

Fortunately, that person only glanced at him and didn’t pay much attention to him.

Zhou Wen noticed that in front of the person was a bowl made of a skull. Unfortunately, he didn’t know what was inside.

Truth Listener’s ability had been restricted. He couldn’t sense that far away.

Just as Zhou Wen was pondering over it, the person extended a hand and took some things from the bowl, clamping them between his fingers.

Only then did Zhou Wen see that they were dice—six of them. Each one was crystalline-like jade, but they looked more like the bones of some creature.

The dice didn’t look too special. Just like ordinary dice, there were numbers from one to six engraved on each of the six sides. The colors were red, like blood.

When the person picked up the dice, Zhou Wen and Liu Yun were alarmed because the stone slab beneath their feet lit up.

However, the stone slabs were extremely bright this time. A blood-colored number actually appeared on it.

The number under Zhou Wen’s feet was 19, and the number under Liu Yun’s feet was 18. Neither of them knew what this number represented.

However, Zhou Wen soon realized what the numbers meant. This was because blood-colored numbers lit up beneath the feet of the people in front of him. Everyone’s numbers were different. From 1 to 33, this meant that there were a total of 33 people on the long street. These numbers were their serial numbers.

Zhou Wen had already figured out what would happen next.

That high and mighty fellow would definitely throw the dice. If the number he threw was the same as the number under someone’s feet, that person would definitely be in for a rough time.

From the reactions of the people in front of him, he knew that they must have experienced the same thing, which was why they appeared to be so afraid.

“I wonder what will happen if the points under our feet match the points he throws out?” Liu Yun also noticed something and swallowed his saliva.

“I don’t know, but I’m certain that nothing good can come out of it.” As Zhou Wen spoke, the person waved his hand and threw the dice out.

Zhou Wen originally imagined that he would throw the dice into the bowl, but to his surprise, the person threw the dice down.

Six dice landed on the stone steps and rolled along.

Amazingly, the six dice grew in size as they rolled. When they landed on the long street, they were more than a meter long.

Six huge rolling dice rumbled down the long street at an extremely fast speed. Wherever they passed, the people in front would dodge to the side, not daring to come into contact with the die. They looked extremely afraid.

“What should we do?” Liu Yun looked at the dice that were rolling. Two of the huge dice were likely to pass through the spot they were standing.

If they wanted to dodge, they needed to move at least three stone slabs.

“Let’s dodge it first.” Zhou Wen didn’t know what the dice were, so he decided to avoid them. He would wait until he figured out the situation when he went further forward.

Six dice rolled past them amidst rumbling, and their step counter was reduced by four steps.

Clang!

The dice rolled all the way to the entrance and slammed into it. Then, they bounced back and landed in the open space inside the door. After rolling for a while, they stopped.

One two, three threes, one six, and one five—a total score of 22.

Zhou Wen and Liu Yun’s eyes immediately looked at the street in front of them. The person with the red number, 22, at his feet was around the middle of the long street. He looked like an extremely muscular middle-aged man. He was tall and mighty, and his muscles looked like steel.

Everyone on the long street looked at him, and his face instantly turned pale. He looked extremely horrified as he shouted crazily, but unfortunately, his voice couldn’t be heard. All they could see was his mouth open, but no one knew what he was shouting.

As he shouted, he ran crazily. However, no matter which stone slab he ran to, the stone slab would light up with the blood-red 22.

Boom!

Without any warning, the middle-aged man’s body exploded like a split watermelon. Blood flowed everywhere.

However, the blood very quickly seeped into the cracks on the stone slabs, leaving not a single drop. It was as though the stone slabbed ground could suck blood.

The man on the throne spread his fingers and the six huge dice flew back into the air, shrinking amidst their flight. By the time they reached his hand, they had returned to their original size.

Holding the dice in his hand, the person looked coldly at the people on the long street. The throne slowly descended and eventually disappeared.

“That bastard. What does he treat us as? His toys?” Liu Yun gritted his teeth.

“From the looks of it, there’s nothing wrong with that.” Zhou Wen stared at the building on the stone steps. There was no longer a throne or man there.

After watching for a while, Zhou Wen said, “That fellow should be the most terrifying dimensional creature in Netherworld City. If we can kill him, we might have a chance of escaping.”

“How do we kill him? The rules of Netherworld City are set by him. We are just chess pieces on the board. How can we play chess with the chess player?” Liu Yun said with a bitter expression.

“That depends on whether he abides by the rules or not. If he abides by the rules, we still have a chance of defeating him even if he’s a chess player,” Zhou Wen said.

“What if he doesn’t follow the rules?” Liu Yun asked.

“Then we will have to think of a way to avoid the rules.” Zhou Wen looked at the person closest to them. There was still a look of horror on the person’s face. From the looks of it, he had been frightened by the scene.

“Let’s go and ask them what’s going on here,” Zhou Wen said as he continued walking forward.

They weren’t too far from that person. After killing a few Epic dimensional creatures, they finally arrived within ten steps of that person.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 642 - Chu He

Chapter 642: Chu He

The person’s hair was already gray and he looked to be in his fifties or sixties. He was thin. Although there were many wrinkles on his face, his chiseled edges were still there. It was obvious that he had been a handsome man when he was young.

When the old man was looking at the dice, he saw Zhou Wen and Liu Yun. He also knew that they were walking over, but he didn’t seem to have the desire to communicate with them. All he did was stand there dejectedly.

“How should I address you?” Liu Yun asked.

When the old man heard the voice, it was as if he had just woken up. He subconsciously answered, “My name is Chu He. I’m a professor at Imperial Capital College’s History department.”

“Peasant? Is your wife called noon[1]?” Liu Yun joked.

“It’s not that. It’s Chu He as in the Chu River.” The old man didn’t have any sense of humor. In such an environment, there was nothing that could make him laugh. Therefore, the old man explained seriously.

Zhou Wen’s eyes widened when he heard the elder’s words. He asked in disbelief, “Chu He? How many professors in the Imperial Capital College’s History department are named Chu He?”

“I’m the only one.” Chu He seemed somewhat numb. He didn’t care why Zhou Wen would ask such a strange question.

Zhou Wen looked at Chu He excitedly. In the entire Imperial Capital College, Zhou Wen only knew of one person named Chu He.

The reason Zhou Wen could remember this name wasn’t because Chu He was famous. No matter how famous Chu He was in his field, Zhou Wen couldn’t care less, much less remember his name.

However, this Chu He was different. This was because there was a history professor at Imperial Capital College. He was a member of the former principal’s expedition team.

Zhou Wen had seen Chu He’s name and information on the list, and he had also seen the picture of the expedition team.

However, Zhou Wen had only had a general look back then. Chu He wasn’t his target, so he didn’t pay much attention to him.

Now that he thought about it, this Chu He was indeed somewhat similar to the Chu He in the photo. However, the Chu He in the photo was slightly plumper. He wasn’t this thin and he looked better. He had a ruddy face and black hair. He wasn’t as pale as he was now. Back then, Chu He was in high spirits.

Is he really Professor Chu He from the expedition team? Shouldn’t he have entered the Zhuolu battlefield with the former principal and company? They went missing together, so how could he be here? Zhou Wen believed that the former principal had been killed, but for a person who had

likely been killed with the former principal to appear in Netherworld City made him feel alarmed again.

Could it be that Netherworld City is really the place where humans come to after death? Could it be that the people in this city aren't living humans, but dead ghosts? Then what about Liu Yun and me? Could it be that we are already dead without even realizing it? Did our souls enter Netherworld City? Zhou Wen shook his head and threw this ridiculous thought out of his mind.

"Professor Chu, have you been to the Zhuolu battlefield for research?" Zhou Wen asked as he stared at Chu He. He hoped that Chu He was Professor Chu He from the expedition team.

If they were really the same person, it was very likely that the former principal hadn't been killed if Professor Chu He was still alive. After all, he hadn't found the former principal's corpse in Zhuolu, nor had he discovered any other relics.

Ever since he was young, there hadn't been many people who had treated Zhou Wen well. The former principal was one of them. Zhou Wen felt that a good person like the former principal shouldn't have died so early. At the very least, he didn't wish for the former principal to die so early.

"No." Chu He shook his head.

"How can that be? Think about it carefully. The Federation invited you to participate in the expedition team to Zhuolu. You, Professor Ouyang Ting, and a few other experts and professors went to Zhuolu together," Zhou Wen said.

After speaking for a while, Chu He's thoughts seemed to become more active. After hearing Zhou Wen's words, he

lowered his head and thought for a moment before saying, “I remember. There was such an incident. Back then, an organization under the Federation did invite me to Zhuolu to carry out research work. I remember that there was an old professor Ouyang Ting on the list.”

“If you went to Zhuolu with them, why are you here alone?” Zhou Wen asked in excitement. He had already taken a look at the others on the street, but he hadn’t discovered the former principal or the other members of the expedition team.

To his surprise, Chu He shook his head and said, “No, no, no. I didn’t go to Zhuolu. I had a major discovery at that time and wanted to do research in the Taklamakan Desert, so I rejected the invitation and didn’t go to Zhuolu.”

“You rejected the invitation?” Zhou Wen looked at Chu He with disbelief.

He had read the information on the Zhuolu expedition team. Although there was no more information after they went missing, the records were still very detailed. There were even their punch card records when they were at the encampment.

Many people in the encampment had seen Professor Chu He before. Some had even chatted with him. Now, Chu He had actually said that he hadn’t gone to Zhuolu and had rejected the invitation from the beginning. This made many thoughts flash through Zhou Wen’s mind.

Is this Chu He lying? Or did he really not go to Zhuolu? If he really didn’t go to Zhuolu, then who’s the Chu He in Zhuolu? Is this Chu He fake? Or is the expedition team’s Chu He fake? Or is it the same person? Did the soul enter Netherworld City after Chu He died and he has already

forgotten the past? That’s not right. He still remembers his name and knows that he’s a professor at Imperial Capital College. It doesn’t look like his memories have been washed away. Zhou Wen’s mind was in a mess; he couldn’t figure out what was going on.

“Yes, I rejected it,” Chu He said bitterly. “I was in a dilemma back then. If I had chosen to go to Zhuolu, I wouldn’t have been trapped in this place that’s akin to hell.”

Zhou Wen thought to himself, If you had gone to Zhuolu back then, your outcome might not have been better than now. At the very least, you’re still alive. I’m not even sure if the former principal and company are dead or not.

“Junior Brother, let’s chat about all of that later. We don’t have much time left. Ask the important questions,” said Liu Yun anxiously.

Zhou Wen nodded and asked, “Professor Chu, how did you enter Netherworld City? What’s the situation here?”

Chu He said, “Back then, I was studying the ruins of the Niya civilization in the desert. Who knew that I would encounter a sandstorm? After the sandstorm passed, I saw Netherworld City. Then, there was a huge fire around me. I had no choice but to escape into Netherworld City.”

The experience of Chu He and Zhou Wen’s entering Netherworld City was similar. However, Zhou Wen thought of another important problem.

[1] Chu He can be a homophone for a peasant. There’s a poem that says a peasant toils at noon. The toil here can be regarded as a sexual innuendo.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 643 - Torture Chambers

Chapter 643: Torture Chambers

Translator: CKtalon

“Professor Chu, when did you enter Netherworld City?” Zhou Wen asked directly.

If this Chu He was really Professor Chu He from Imperial Capital College, then the Professor Chu He who went to Zhuolu was likely a fake.

However, since the imposter hadn’t been discovered, this meant that Professor Chu He must have come to the desert a long time ago. That was why no one had seen him again. Otherwise, the imposter would have been discovered long ago.

In that case, Professor Chu He should have entered Netherworld City a while ago. Otherwise, he would definitely have made contact with the outside world. Someone outside should know that he was in the desert and not Zhuolu.

However, the truth was that no one knew of such a situation. Even Chu He’s family believed that he was in Zhuolu. This was extremely odd.

If someone hadn’t deliberately cut off the connection between Professor Chu He and the outside world, it would have been because he had entered Netherworld City a long time ago. That was why no one knew he was here.

However, with the three ironclad rules of Netherworld City, how did Professor Chu He survive?

“When?” Professor Chu He looked at him strangely and said, “Just today. Didn’t you come in today when you encountered a sandstorm?”

“Today? Didn’t you contact your family before you came in?” Zhou Wen asked in disbelief.

“There’s no signal in the desert. How can I contact my family? It was only about a couple of weeks ago. I went to the city outside the desert to contact my family once. At that time, I was very excited to tell them that I had made a huge discovery and that I would be back soon to reunite with them. I never expected…” Chu He’s face was filled with sorrow.

This left Zhou Wen completely dumbfounded. Chu He had contacted his family a couple of weeks ago, so why hadn’t his family mentioned this matter? His family had never mentioned that Chu He had gone to the Taklamakan.

Now, Zhou Wen wished he could return immediately and ask Chu He’s family what was going on.

From Zhou Wen’s point of view, this wasn’t a coincidence. Two Professor Chu Hes had appeared in different places. There had to be someone pulling the strings from behind.

Who’s doing these things? If the Zhuolu expedition team’s Chu He is fake, what did the fake Chu He want to do by joining the expedition team? Could the former principal’s disappearance have something to do with him? With this in mind, Zhou Wen’s mind became active.

If someone really abducted the former principal away, the former principal might still be alive.

Liu Yun was somewhat anxious. Zhou Wen kept asking questions that weren't pertinent. All he could do was ask himself, "Professor Chu, you came earlier than us. Do you know what's going on here? What exactly is that dimensional creature that appeared up there?"

"That's City Lord Netherworld. The bronze bell hanging there will ring every hour. It's the same as the wall clock at home. When the bell rings seven times, he will appear and cast the dice to take a life…" Chu He said with a trembling body.

"Wait, you said that it rings seven times a day. Doesn't that mean you have been here for more than a day?" Zhou Wen discovered the problem in Chu He's words.

Chu He said with a bitter smile, "I heard it from others. As you saw, City Lord Netherworld really appeared and even took a life. Perhaps it will be my turn tomorrow. However, my worries are unnecessary. I don't even know if I can survive today. Why should I be worried about tomorrow?"

Liu Yun was immediately disappointed. He originally imagined that he would find someone who knew what was happening and obtain some information about Netherworld City, but to his surprise, Chu He had entered Netherworld City the same day as them, albeit a little earlier than them.

Taking a closer look at Chu He's feet, he realized that he still had 132 steps left. That was even fewer than Zhou Wen and company.

"Professor Chu, have you learned anything about Netherworld City and City Lord Netherworld?" Liu Yun continued asking unwillingly.

Liu Yun was surprised when he realized that Chu He knew much more than he had imagined.

According to what Chu He had heard, the three ironclad rules of Netherworld City could not be violated. Otherwise, one would immediately die.

Furthermore, the distance between the stone slabs was a number. Be it advancing or retreating, or moving left and right repeatedly, it was part of the count.

Once the number dropped to zero, it meant death.

Chu He saw a person self-destruct because of the number turning zero. It was identical to how the middle-aged man who had died just moments ago.

It was said that there was only one way to leave Netherworld City alive. That was to walk to the end of the long street and step onto the stone steps to reach the Netherworld Divine Throne. Only by sounding the bronze bell on it can one leave Netherworld City.

“That’s impossible. From here to the stone steps, there are at least two to three thousand stone slabs. With just the few steps allocated to us, we can’t even reach the stone steps, much less walk up the stone steps and strike the bell,” Liu Yun said with a frown.

“It’s not impossible to increase the number of steps. Every new hour, the doors on both sides of the long street open. When the time comes, we have a chance to obtain more steps,” Chu He said as he pointed at the tightly-shut doors.

“Are the shops selling steps? What do we use to buy them? Is it money or dimensional crystals?” Liu Yun asked as he sized up the shops on both sides of the street.

“No, those aren’t shops, but torture chambers. You can be punished in the torture chamber in exchange for the number

of steps. The punishment in each torture chamber is different. You can obtain different steps from different punishments…” As Chu He spoke, his eyes revealed fear.

Zhou Wen and Liu Yun were dumbfounded when they heard that. According to Chu He, there were various kinds of punishments in the torture chambers.

Getting branded by a piece of red-hot metal on the chest until the flesh scorched could exchange for five steps.

Having needles stab the ten fingers could be exchanged for ten steps. Having a piece of flesh taken with a blade could obtain one step.

Although these sorts of punishments wouldn’t kill, it left one shuddering in fear.

“In that case, as long as we can endure the pain, we can obtain enough steps to walk up the stone steps?” said Liu Yun.

“That’s not entirely the case. Every punishment only gives steps the first time,” Chu He said.

Zhou Wen immediately counted the number of torture chambers on both sides of the street. According to the information he had obtained from Chu He, one could obtain about ten steps from each torture chamber.

“239 torture chambers. If we can obtain 10 steps from each torture chamber, we can obtain more than 2000 steps. With so many steps, can we walk up the stone steps?” Zhou Wen estimated that it was about there, but this was only an estimate. It wasn’t necessarily accurate.

“Junior Brother, we seem to have made a mistake…” Liu Yun’s expression turned nasty as he thought of the same problem as Zhou Wen.

Steps were scarce. One had to visit all the torture chambers once before they could ascend and reach the Netherworld Divine Throne.

However, as they walked all the way, they had already missed many torture chambers. If they walked back now, it would be a waste of many steps, making their already small number of steps even fewer.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 644 - Punishment

Chapter 644: Punishment

“If we continue like this, I’m afraid we won’t have enough steps to reach the Netherworld Divine Throne. If we backtrack, the number of steps we take will also decrease,” said Liu Yun.

Zhou Wen shook his head and said, “Even if we start with the first torture chamber, I’m afraid we won’t be able to reach the Netherworld Divine Throne.”

“Why? Will there not be enough steps?” Liu Yun was puzzled.

“I don’t know if the number of steps is enough. However, I do know that in the short span of a day, suffering 239 types of punishments might be nothing to our bodies individually, but can we take a total of 239 punishments? I doubt I can. Among the people I know, I’m afraid only one person can complete this street and survive all the punishments. Unfortunately, he’s not here,” Zhou Wen said.

“Although it’s very difficult, we still have to give it a try. We can’t just sit back and wait for death, right?” Liu Yun said.

“Then give it a try later,” Zhou Wen said as he pointed at the shop beside him.

“As you wish.” Liu Yun also knew that at this stage, he had to try his best. Otherwise, there was no way out.

“Do you want to go back first?” Liu Yun looked at the path they had taken, but he quickly rejected it. “I’ll first try entering the torture chamber beside me.”

There was still some time before the next hourly bell. The two of them could only stand there and wait.

Zhou Wen took out his phone to take a look, but he still hadn’t finished downloading it. The dungeon map was clearly very big.

Zhou Wen took the opportunity to cultivate Gods Retreat. Every time he summoned it, he would switch it away when it was about to explode. After repeated cultivation, the jade infant’s body became more transparent. Soon, it became as transparent as crystal.

Zhou Wen vaguely felt that the jade infant was about to break through.

I wonder what a Life Soul’s Perfect Body would be like? Zhou Wen placed all his hopes on the jade infant. Gods Retreat wasn’t enough to resist the taboo power here. If it could advance to a Perfect Body, they might still have a chance of survival.

As for entering the punishment chamber to receive punishment, Zhou Wen didn’t pin much hope on it. His physique was already very strong, but he might not be able to withstand so many punishments in such a short period of time. Unless Li Xuan was here, Zhou Wen didn’t even wish to give it a try.

An hour quickly passed. While the jade infant rested, Zhou Wen chatted with Chu He and deliberately asked about his past.

Chu He was already reeling in horror after being trapped here. Being able to chat with others was also a way to relieve stress. He said a lot.

Chu He remembered everything that had happened in the past very clearly. It didn’t look like there was a problem with him, nor was there any memory loss.

Clang! Clang! Clang!

The bell rang again. This time, the bell rang eight times. After the bell stopped, the torture chambers that had been closed on both sides of the street opened their doors.

Zhou Wen looked at the torture chamber beside him and saw that there was a strange torture device inside. It looked like a wooden horse, and on its back was a long spike that resembled a unicorn’s horn. However, it wasn’t growing on its head, but on its back.

Beside the torture equipment was a sign with the words “Wooden Horse Punishment Twenty Steps” written on it.

“Eldest Senior Brother, you get twenty steps each punishment. The rewards are very high. Do you want to give it a try?” Zhou Wen asked Liu Yun.

Liu Yun’s face turned green when he saw the torture equipment. He immediately shook his head and said, “No way! I’ll try this instead. Punishment by a thousand cuts. Every slice of meat is one step. More slices, more steps. This is a punishment that can be repeatedly undertaken. Perhaps it’s a better opportunity to get more steps.”

“Can you take it?” Zhou Wen looked at the torture chamber and saw that there was an iron chain hanging on the beam. Beside it was a dagger.

With one look, he roughly understood that one was going to be cuffed by the hands and hoisted up before having the dagger slice off pieces of meat.

“As a man, anything can be done to live. I’ll do it.” Liu Yun knew that if he wanted to live, he had to risk it.

Without any hesitation, Liu Yun followed Chu He’s earlier instructions and shouted at the punishment by a thousand cuts chamber, “I want to undertake punishment by a thousand cuts.”

The moment he finished his sentence, his body vanished as though he had teleported. Zhou Wen looked over and saw that his hands had been cuffed and he was hanging in the torture chamber.

The tiny blade was picked up by a white ghost-like creature before it slashed at Liu Yun’s thigh.

The small blade was like a saw as it sliced back and forth, bit by bit. A piece of flesh fell from Liu Yun’s thigh.

It had to be said that the white ghost’s blade techniques were first-rate. The flesh that was sliced off was as thin as a cicada’s wing and was almost transparent. It was comparable to a top chef.

Zhou Wen roughly understood why the flesh sliced off was so thin. It wasn’t because they were afraid of the victim dying, but because if it was too thick, he wouldn’t have enough flesh to cut a thousand slices. It naturally couldn’t be considered a punishment by a thousand cuts.

It was only one slice, but Liu Yun’s face was pale from the pain. Not much flesh had been sliced off, but the wound was nothing in comparison to the pain.

Liu Yun gritted his teeth and didn’t say a word. The small blade continued to slice off another piece of flesh.

When Zhou Wen looked at Liu Yun again, his forehead was breaking out in cold sweat.

Chu He’s heart trembled as he watched from the side. Such a bloody and cruel punishment made one’s hair stand on end.

Liu Yun didn’t even grunt as the blade sliced through his flesh. He was like a classic example of a true man. Even Zhou Wen couldn’t help but be impressed. Liu Yun was truly unyielding.

To Zhou Wen’s surprise, Liu Yun’s wounds didn’t bleed much. Every time the tiny blade sliced off a piece of flesh, the wound would automatically contract without much bleeding.

“Eldest Senior Brother, I couldn’t tell. You’ve also practiced such a powerful self-recovery technique,” Zhou Wen exclaimed.

“Self-recovery my ass. It’s the power of the torture chamber that prevents me from bleeding. It’s afraid I’ll die before I complete the thousand cuts,” cursed Liu Yun.

He wasn’t really such a hot-tempered person. All he wanted to do was to vent his pain through his cursing.

After 23 slices, the unyielding Liu Yun finally couldn’t hold it in any longer. He shouted, “I give up on continuing the torture.”

With a clang, the metal cuff released and Liu Yun’s body fell. However, when he landed, he returned to the stone slab he was on before the punishment.

Indeed, the number on his stone slab increased by 23.

“See, isn’t it simple? I got it to increase by 23 in no time at all. Try a few more torture chambers, and it won’t be a problem for us to reach the Netherworld Divine Throne,” Liu Yun said with a pale face.

Ignoring Zhou Wen, even Chu He could tell that Liu Yun was merely comforting himself.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 645 - Scream Loudly If You Are In Pain

Chapter 645: Scream Loudly If You Are In Pain

“If we have to continue being tortured like this, I’m afraid we will be dead long before we can finish all the punishments.” Zhou Wen looked at Chu He and asked, “Professor Chu, other than being punished, is there any other way to obtain steps? Previously, when we came, we encountered some dimensional creatures. Would they leave anything special after they die?”

Chu He shook his head firmly and said, “There’s no other way. Only by being tortured in the torture chamber can one obtain more steps.”

Zhou Wen turned his head and looked at the long street. Apart from them, the others had entered the torture chambers to be punished.

It was a pity that he couldn’t hear anything beyond ten steps. Otherwise, he would definitely be able to hear the undulating screams.

“Junior Brother, do you want to give punishment by a thousand cuts a try as well? Perhaps you can last longer than me?” Liu Yun encouraged him. He wanted to see how long Zhou Wen could last under such torture.

“I think I’ll forget about it.” Zhou Wen shook his head and looked around. He planned on attempting a less severe punishment.

Although they could enter the torture chamber directly without needing to walk over, they needed to be within ten steps of one. If the torture chamber was too far from them, they wouldn’t be able to undergo the punishment.

Now, there was only one torture chamber to their left and right that were within ten steps away On the left was the punishment by a thousand cuts which Liu Yun had attempted.

On the right was punishment by whipping. On it stated a step per lash.

It was similar to punishment by a thousand cuts. One was hoisted up for the punishment. However, it wasn’t the slicing of flesh but lashing with a whip.

Liu Yun was also looking at the whip. Seeing that it was a vine whip, he said, “Then let me try the punishment. My body is quite tough. I should be able to withstand it a few more times.”

With that said, Liu Yun shouted at the whipping torture chamber, “I want to undertake punishment by whipping.”

Just like the last time, Liu Yun’s body vanished. He was hung in the whipping torture chamber. Then, a white ghost-like figure appeared and picked up the vine whip.

The vine whip was lashed out by the white figure. Sharp spikes appeared on the originally smooth whip, making it appear like a thorny vine.

Pa! With a crisp sound, a bloody whip mark appeared on Liu Yun’s body.

After a few whips, Liu Yun's body was reduced to a bloody mess. It was even more terrifying than punishment by a thousand cuts.

This time, Liu Yun only held on for about ten whips before giving up. After being released, he looked a little shriveled.

"F*ck, this isn't giving us a way out. How can humans withstand such punishment? Death by punishment, death also by not undergoing punishment. Why should we be punished!?" Liu Yun cursed.

"I'll give it a try too." Zhou Wen thought for a moment and shouted at the whipping torture chamber, "I want to undertake punishment by whipping."

The moment he finished his sentence, Zhou Wen felt his vision blur. His body seemed to be teleported by some force. By the time he reacted, he was already hung up in the whipping chamber.

A white ghost appeared in front of him. It had already gripped the vine whip.

"Junior Brother, scream loudly if you are in pain. Don't endure it. The more you endure, the more painful it will be. It will be much better if you shout out loud. The louder you shout, the better," Liu Yun said gloatingly.

He was actually just trying to find pleasure amidst the suffering, hoping to reduce his stress. He didn't really want to hear Zhou Wen scream.

"Alright," Zhou Wen replied as he switched his Essence Energy Art to Dao Body and Gods Retreat before closing his eyes.

However, the Gods Retreat Life Providence didn’t affect the white ghost. Clearly, the punishment in the torture chamber wasn’t a taboo power.

Seeing that Gods Retreat was useless, Zhou Wen hurriedly switched to Small Perfection of Wisdom. At the same time, he activated the Hell King Life Soul. Under the effects of the Hell King Life Soul, Zhou Wen’s control over his body was extremely strong. Not only did his physique strengthen, but he could also eliminate the pain.

No matter how serious his injuries were, Zhou Wen wouldn’t feel any pain. It was as though his pain nerves had been removed.

Zhou Wen didn’t plan on constantly being punished. All he wanted to do was try out the force of the whipping punishment.

However, just as Zhou Wen used the Hell King Life Soul, the white specter that had already lashed out suddenly retracted its whip without striking.

“Junior Brother, what’s going on? Don’t tell me you can’t even withstand a whip and are giving up?” Liu Yun said when he saw the scene before him, imagining that Zhou Wen had given up.

However, what happened next left Liu Yun’s mouth agape.

The white ghost with the whip actually plopped to the ground and kowtowed. It lay prone, trembling.

Crack!

The shackles that bound Zhou Wen’s hands automatically opened, allowing him to land.

However, Zhou Wen hadn’t given up on being tortured, so he didn’t return to the long street. Instead, he landed in the whipping chamber.

His feet landed on the ground, but there were no numbers on the floor. Perhaps it was because the steps didn’t count in the torture chambers.

“Junior Brother… What’s going on…” Liu Yun stared at Zhou Wen with his mouth agape as he looked at the trembling white ghost in front of Zhou Wen.

Zhou Wen never expected his Hell King Life Soul to have such an effect.

Looking at the white ghost sprawled on the ground, Zhou Wen pondered for a moment before saying to it, “Stand up.”

The white ghost was very obedient. It obediently stood up, but its body was still trembling. It looked extremely frightened.

“Don’t be afraid. Come, whip me,” Zhou Wen said gently to the white ghost.

The white ghost trembled again as it collapsed to the ground and kowtowed to Zhou Wen.

“Stand up. I order you to whip me,” Zhou Wen said coldly to the white ghost.

The white ghost crawled up trembling as it held the whip in its hand, but it didn’t dare to whip Zhou Wen.

“It’s fine. I’m giving you permission to whip me, but you have to whip me gently. Just gently touch me,” Zhou Wen instructed the white ghost.

The white ghost held the whip, but it didn’t dare attack. Zhou Wen glared at it before it finally flung the whip and struck Zhou Wen’s body.

The whip whistled through the air, but it only touched Zhou Wen’s clothes and immediately retracted. Zhou Wen felt his skin being touched by his clothes. There was no pain at all.

The white ghost was terrified. It sprawled on the ground and kowtowed again.

“You did well. That’s right. Do it again. Lash me a few more times,” Zhou Wen encouraged.

Only then did the white ghost stand up shakily and lashed at Zhou Wen’s body again. Just like before, it retracted once the whip touched his clothes.

Zhou Wen found a spot to sit down. As he took out his phone, he got the white ghost to torture him.

“This spot… A little heavier here… My shoulders are a little sore… Strike this side… Use more strength…” Zhou Wen kept directing the white ghost to attack the various parts of his body.

“Seriously?” Liu Yun and Chu He were dumbfounded.

The originally terrifying atmosphere was now gone. The white ghost held the vine whip and served Zhou Wen like it was a masseur at a massage parlor.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 646 - Dead Man

Chapter 646: Dead Man

Only when the torture chambers along the entire street closed was Zhou Wen forcefully teleported out, returning him to the stone slab he was on.

Zhou Wen, Liu Yun, and Chu He looked at the stone slab beneath Zhou Wen's feet and saw that the number on the stone slab had changed to 1369. In other words, Zhou Wen had obtained more than a thousand steps during the torture chamber's opening. This was the same number Zhou Wen had secretly taken note of.

So this can really increase the number of steps. Zhou Wen felt a lot more relaxed. With the Hell King's strength, the problem with insufficient steps was resolved.

However, he couldn't completely relax. Although the Hell King's strength could intimidate the torture chamber, it was unable to withstand the rules of Netherworld City.

Zhou Wen took a step while maintaining the Hell King Life Soul's state. The subsequent steps would still decrease, indicating that the rules of Netherworld City were still effective on him.

Now, he had only resolved the problem of the number of steps. He had yet to resolve the three ironclad rules of Netherworld City. He had to think of a way to leave as soon as possible.

“You… How did you do it?” Chu He looked at Zhou Wen in surprise. He had never seen someone undergo such torture like Zhou Wen.

Liu Yun also wanted to know how Zhou Wen had done it. This fellow constantly surprised him.

He originally thought that he was doing pretty well. Although he wasn’t a member of the six families, he had the resources and skills that young geniuses of the six families didn’t have.

However, he never expected Zhou Wen to be even more equipped than him. He had all sorts of abilities, as though he could resolve anything he encountered.

“Perhaps my Essence Energy Art is effective against the white ghosts in the torture chamber,” Zhou Wen said half-truthfully.

“Junior Brother, tell me you won’t leave your adorable and kind eldest senior brother behind, right?” Liu Yun was somewhat worried that Zhou Wen would leave after he had enough steps.

“How can that be? I’m still hoping that you will take me to the Endless Sea of Stars,” Zhou Wen said.

“Junior Brother, you’re right. After we leave, I’ll definitely take you to the Endless Sea of Stars and help you obtain Star Stealer.” Liu Yun paused before saying, “You can walk freely, but I don’t have enough steps. What should I do?”

“When the torture chamber opens again next time, you and I will choose the same punishment room. When the time comes, I’ll get the white ghosts to take care of you. There

you will naturally be given the needed steps,” Zhou Wen said.

“Teacher really has good taste. Junior Brother, you’re really an amazing genius. I think that no one can be as glorious as you even if the six heroes were revived…” Liu Yun said obsequiously.

Zhou Wen didn’t believe a word he said. Although he was someone who seemed truthful, no one knew which sentences were true.

If he hadn’t wanted to go to the Endless Sea of Stars, Zhou Wen really didn’t wish to be with Liu Yun.

Although he was also Fang Mingyuan’s student, perhaps because Liu Yun had entered society a few years earlier than them, he felt that he wasn’t trustworthy like Jiang Yan, Zhong Ziya, and Hui Haifeng.

Of course, it was also possible that this was because Zhou Wen had never interacted with Liu Yun.

The three of them waited for another hour. After the bell rang again, the torture chambers opened again. Zhou Wen chose to enter the torture chamber. Liu Yun and Chu He also chose punishment by whipping.

The three of them hung side by side in the whipping chamber. Immediately, three white ghosts appeared. Each of them had a vine whip and was about to whip them.

The moment Zhou Wen’s Hell King Life Soul appeared, the three white ghosts immediately knelt down and trembled as though Zhou Wen was about to eat them.

Hence, the three of them sat side by side in the whipping chamber to be punished. This was the first time Liu Yun experienced the feeling of being raised on a pedestal. He grunted comfortably and said, “Junior Brother, if I had known that you had this ability, I wouldn’t have suffered the pain of punishment by a thousand cuts so much.”

“I only realized it after entering the torture chamber,” Zhou Wen said casually.

After the torture chamber closed, Zhou Wen had close to three thousand steps. Chu He and Liu Yun had more than a thousand steps.

“As long as we do it again, we should have enough steps to reach the Netherworld Divine Throne,” Liu Yun said happily.

Just as Zhou Wen was about to say something, he saw someone explode on the long street. Blood splattered everywhere and was quickly absorbed by the ground.

“That person’s step count was used up. He couldn’t withstand the punishment and ended his life.” Chu He sighed.

Zhou Wen realized that there were fewer people on the long street. Now, there were only twenty-four people left. The few who had vanished probably died in the torture chambers.

The three of them continued waiting. As for Zhou Wen, he used the taboo power of Netherworld City to constantly train his jade infant.

The jade infant looked cold like a jade statue, but it later turned crystalline. However, with the baptism of the taboo power, the jade infant gradually softened. It was like a transparent jelly as if its body had turned soft.

Is it about to break through? Zhou Wen had a vague feeling that the jade infant was really about to break through. He was only half a step away.

Another hour passed. The three of them were once again tortured. By the time they came out, Zhou Wen's steps had exceeded four thousand. The other two were almost nearing three thousand.

"This should be enough. Let's go." Liu Yun was in high spirits as he led the way.

Chu He naturally followed them. Zhou Wen wanted to bring Chu He out of this place before investigating if he was the real Chu He.

Soon, Zhou Wen discovered some problems. Chu He's combat standards were very poor. He hadn't advanced to the Epic stage and was only at the Legendary stage.

When he encountered dimensional creatures on the way, it was Zhou Wen and Liu Yun who helped him block them.

"Professor Chu, you don't seem to be good at combat. How did you walk so far before we came?" Zhou Wen asked Chu He in puzzlement.

Chu He thought for a moment and said, "Before you came, I didn't step on a stone slab that generated any cause of death."

"Then, Professor Chu, your luck is really good." Although Zhou Wen was somewhat suspicious, he couldn't think of any other possibility other than this explanation.

Soon, Zhou Wen and company caught up to the people in front of them. However, all of them seemed numb. Zhou Wen

and Liu Yun wanted to communicate with them, but all they did was grunt. It was as though they had fallen deep into despair.

“Forget it. There’s no way to communicate like this. Let’s go,” said Liu Yun.

Zhou Wen nodded and continued walking forward. Every time he encountered a person, Zhou Wen would attempt to communicate with them, but the further he went, the number they became. The subsequent ones ignored them like wooden statues.

These people seem to have some problems. When I first met Professor Chu He, he had similar tendencies. However, he was the closest to the city gate and had the mildest symptoms. It’s no wonder I felt that Chu He was a little odd from the beginning. I thought it was a result of not having spoken to others for a long time, but from the looks of it, that’s not the case, Zhou Wen thought to himself. However, he didn’t say anything because Chu He was beside him.

Soon, the three of them reached the end of the long street and stepped onto the stone steps. With every step they took, the consumption of their footsteps tripled. One step was equivalent to taking three steps on the stone slabs.

The 365 stone steps consumed just over a thousand steps.

Only Zhou Wen had enough steps. Chu He and Liu Yun didn’t have enough. Zhou Wen had no choice but to wait for the bell to ring again. He got them to find a torture chamber nearby and obtain enough steps before climbing the stone steps.

Clang!

After Zhou Wen struck the bell, he saw the golden divine throne slowly open. Behind it was Netherworld City's exit, allowing him to see the desert outside.

However, City Lord Netherworld stood in the middle of the Netherworld Divine Throne, blocking their path. He glanced at the trio before his gaze landed on Zhou Wen.

Zhou Wen was already prepared for battle. He didn't believe that he could leave Netherworld City so easily.

"The two of you can leave. He needs to stay." City Lord Netherworld didn't take action. He only extended his index finger and pointed at Chu He.

"He can also ring the Netherworld Bell. Why can't he leave?" Zhou Wen asked with a frown.

"Because he's already a dead person," said City Lord Netherworld indifferently.

"What do you mean? He's clearly a living person. How can he be a dead person?" Liu Yun said.

Zhou Wen suddenly thought of something as he turned to look at Chu He and asked, "Professor Chu, what's the exact date of your entry to Netherworld City?"

"It should be March 8, 28. Why?" Chu He asked in surprise.

Zhou Wen's expression changed immediately. This was because it was the year the old professor and company had gone to Zhuolu. In other words, Chu He had entered Netherworld City that year, but he had always believed that he had only entered Netherworld City today. There was only one possibility.

With Chu He’s ability, it was impossible for him to survive in Netherworld City. Therefore, he had died long ago.

However, Chu He was standing in front of him, looking alive. It was hard to believe that he was a dead person.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 647 - The First Day is also the Last Day

Chapter 647: The First Day is also the Last Day

“No… I’m not a dead person… I’m still alive…” Chu He screamed in terror. His hand was still touching his body all over as though he was trying to confirm if he was really dead.

Liu Yun was abnormally bold. He reached out and pulled Chu He’s face. He said in disbelief, “He’s clearly a normal person. How can he be a dead person?”

Zhou Wen couldn’t tell in what way Chu He was a dead person. His body, heart rate, and temperature were all normal. Apart from appearing a little slow in thought, he couldn’t tell how he looked like a dead person.

However, if Chu He hadn’t died, it was difficult to explain how he entered Netherworld City so long ago only to claim that he had only entered today.

“If you aren’t afraid that his soul will dissipate and vanish forever, take him out of the city,” said City Lord Netherworld as he made way.

“Can we really leave?” Liu Yun looked at City Lord Netherworld with distrust.

In the years he had spent in society, he naturally understood the principle that human words couldn’t be trusted. Also, it was a dimensional creature who said those words.

Furthermore, it was the owner of the netherworld. It sounded like true nonsense.

“As long as he isn’t afraid of his soul dissipating, just walk out of Netherworld City,” City Lord Netherworld said indifferently.

“Professor Chu, what do you think? Do you want to go out with us?” Liu Yun asked Chu He.

“I want to go out. I’m not a dead person,” Chu He hurriedly said.

Zhou Wen looked at City Lord Netherworld and asked, “We also entered Netherworld City. Why are we not dead, but Professor Chu He is?”

City Lord Netherworld seemed to be very patient. He glanced at Zhou Wen and answered, “Didn’t the ghost gates make it clear when you entered the city? None of the three ironclad rules of Netherworld City can be violated. Since he didn’t walk out the city alive on the day he entered, he’s naturally dead.”

“I’m not dead… I’m really not dead… Don’t believe him… Take me away…” Chu He’s eyes were bloodshot and his mental state was very unstable.

It wasn’t Chu He’s fault. Anyone who suddenly heard, in such a straightforward manner, that they were dead would be as nervous as Chu He.

“Professor Chu, don’t worry. I believe you. Leave the city with us,” Liu Yun said as he patted Chu He’s shoulder.

Although Zhou Wen was suspicious, he couldn’t confirm that Chu He was really a dead person. After some hesitation, he

looked at Chu He and said, “Professor Chu, you can choose whether you want to leave this place.”

“I’ll go with you. I’m really not a dead person,” Chu He said immediately.

“Alright, let’s go then.” Zhou Wen stared at City Lord Netherworld and moved his feet towards the entrance formed by the Netherworld Divine Throne.

Chu He and Liu Yun followed Zhou Wen as they walked out of the door. At the same time, they were wary of City Lord Netherworld and prepared for battle.

However, City Lord Netherworld only watched from the side without any intention of stopping them.

Outside, in the desert, the sun was high in the sky. Beyond the Netherworld Divine Throne, there was bright sunlight. However, inside the Netherworld Divine Throne, it appeared eerie and dark.

Liu Yun walked in front and stepped out first, standing under the sun in the desert.

Zhou Wen walked at the back, constantly wary of City Lord Netherworld who didn’t move at all. All he did was look at them coldly.

Chu He stood in the shadows, one step away from the desert and the sun.

However, Chu He was somewhat hesitant. Although he was certain he wasn’t dead, City Lord Netherworld had said it with such certainty. Furthermore, Zhou Wen and Liu Yun had said that he had been in Netherworld City for a long time, making him somewhat afraid.

“I’m definitely not a dead person… I’m definitely not a dead person…” Chu He gritted his teeth and extended his palm towards the sun.

Just as his fingertip touched the sunlight, a blue light suddenly appeared. The tip of his finger that had extended out actually disintegrated and disappeared in the blue light.

“Ah… How is this happening…” Chu He screamed as he retracted his palm. His face was filled with disbelief and despair.

Zhou Wen’s expression changed slightly as he extended his hand and extended it into the sunlight. There wasn’t any problem. All he felt was that the temperature outside was very high and the sunlight was a little scorching, but it was still acceptable.

“Professor Chu, try extending your hand again,” Zhou Wen said to Chu He as he stood in the shadow of the Netherworld Divine Throne, maintaining his hand in the sunlight.

Chu He hurriedly extended his hand, but when his fingertip touched the sunlight, it immediately disintegrated.

“Impossible… I can’t be a dead person… Impossible… I still have to return to see my family… My wife and daughter are waiting for me…” Chu He slumped to the ground as his voice sounded disconsolate. Tears flowed down his face.

Zhou Wen was momentarily at a loss as to what to do. He couldn’t bear to see Chu He’s present state as he looked at City Lord Netherworld and asked, “If he doesn’t leave, what will happen in the future?”

City Lord Netherworld calmly said, “He will receive punishment day after day, dying day after day. In the future,

every day will be his first day. It will also be his last day until his soul reaches absolute purity.”

Zhou Wen thought of the others on the long street. Those people were in much worse condition than Chu He. From the looks of it, what City Lord Netherworld said was true.

“What happens in the future?” Zhou Wen asked again.

“Who knows? If you are interested, you can stay and give it a try,” City Lord Netherworld said with a faint smile.

Zhou Wen looked at Chu He, unsure of what to say.

“Zhou Wen, can you do me a favor?” Chu He wiped his tears and asked Zhou Wen.

“Tell me. I’ll do it if I can,” Zhou Wen said.

“Help me pay my family a visit. If possible, help me take care of my wife and daughter. When they are in trouble, help them as much as you can. I don’t have anything to repay you now. My research on the Niya civilization is all that I have. If you don’t mind, treat it as payment.” Chu He handed the documents in his backpack to Zhou Wen. Many of them were handwritten notes.

“Don’t worry. I’ll take care of them.” Zhou Wen took the documents and nodded seriously.

Even without Chu He’s request, Zhou Wen would have made a trip to Chu He’s place. He still needed to figure out the matter regarding Chu He.

“Don’t tell them that I’m here. They’ve already been saddened once. Don’t let them be sad again,” Chu He said to Zhou Wen again.

“I know what to do.” Zhou Wen nodded.

“Go. Don’t look back,” Chu He said, somewhat disheartened.

Zhou Wen had no choice but to turn around and walk out of the Netherworld Divine Throne.

“If you have the chance to come again, next time you can try to withstand all the punishments. Then, you will see the real Netherworld City.” The moment Zhou Wen walked out of the Netherworld Divine Throne, he heard the voice of City Lord Netherworld.

However, he had already walked out. When he looked back, he saw endless yellow sand behind him. There was no sign of the Netherworld Divine Throne or Netherworld City. It was as though everything that had happened was just a dream.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 648 - Hat City

Chapter 648: Hat City

Translator: CKtalon

Zhou Wen suddenly felt something amiss in his hand. He looked down and saw the notebooks seemingly burn with invisible flames, turning to ashes.

Oh no! Zhou Wen immediately reacted. These notebooks should have long been destroyed with Chu He's death. What Chu He had given him couldn't be kept in the living world.

Before the notebook was completely reduced to ashes, Zhou Wen flipped through a few pages, but he didn't see much content before the information was reduced to ashes. The desert wind blew, leaving no traces behind.

"It's really like a dream. I never expected that I, Liu Yun, would make a trip to the netherworld and come back alive. What great luck," Liu Yun said with lingering fear.

"Don't think about that for now. Just take a look and see if you can tell where we are. Can you still find the way to the Endless Sea of Stars?" Zhou Wen perked up and sized up his surroundings.

There was yellow sand all around them. All he could see was a boundless desert with no end in sight. Zhou Wen couldn't even work out his bearings.

"No problem. Leave it to me. However, do you really want to go to the Endless Sea of Stars? We seem to be a little unlucky. I'm afraid something will happen again…" Liu Yun glanced at the Bamboo Blade on Zhou Wen's waist before

throwing the Orchid Blade back to him. He didn’t want to carry this with him for even an additional moment.

“Does being unlucky mean that we should stay at home all day? What’s the point of living like that?” Zhou Wen took the Orchid Blade and said.

“That’s true. Alright, let’s continue.” Liu Yun didn’t say anything else. He looked around and summoned his Companion Beast to dig a deep hole as though he was observing the sand or something else.

Zhou Wen did not know how Liu Yun figured out his bearings. As he led the way, he observed the plants and sand in the desert before slowly adjusting his direction.

The desert was already boundless. After the dimensional storms, it had become even wider. Even Epic experts would probably be trapped to death if they got lost.

Thankfully, Zhou Wen had brought plenty of water and food. He didn’t have to be afraid of being trapped in the desert.

After repeatedly walking and stopping, on the fourth day, an oasis appeared in front of them.

“We’re here.” Liu Yun pointed at the oasis and shouted in joy.

“Is that oasis the Endless Sea of Stars?” Zhou Wen asked in surprise.

“No, that oasis is where I usually replenish my water. However, we aren’t far from the Endless Sea of Stars once we reach here. It’ll take another two days at most,” said Liu Yun.

Zhou Wen didn’t know whether to laugh or cry. He had plenty of pure water in his chaos space, so he didn’t need an oasis to replenish it.

However, Zhou Wen didn’t tell Liu Yun about the Chaos Bead. He always retrieved water from his backpack. Liu Yun naturally didn’t know about it, so he had been economical along the way and was very thirsty. All he did was take a tiny sip of water to quench his thirst.

This oasis grew much vegetation that Zhou Wen didn’t recognize. There was a tree, but it looked like grass with thick roots. It looked very strange.

What surprised Zhou Wen was that there was actually a city in the oasis.

However, the city was very simple. The city walls were made of clay and looked like crude concrete.

“This is Hat City. Legend has it that it was built by the residents of the desert in the past. Back then, there was plenty of water here, but as the water source decreased, many residents left Hat City, causing it to gradually become abandoned. According to the elders in the desert, Hat City could accommodate tens of thousands of people during its golden years. However, due to the depletion of the water source, the area around the oasis shrank. Most of the buildings have been buried under the yellow sand. Together with the arrival of the dimensional storms, there’s no one here. Apart from some guides in the desert who occasionally come here to replenish their water, you usually wouldn’t even see a soul.”

As he spoke, Liu Yun had already led Zhou Wen into Hat City.

As Liu Yun had said, many of the buildings here were half-buried in the sand.

These buildings should have been used to extract materials from the ground. They used yellow sand to mix with something, creating materials that resembled concrete.

Not long after entering the city, Zhou Wen saw a pitch-black behemoth. On careful look, it was a black cube.

“There’s a black cube in Hat City?” Zhou Wen was somewhat surprised.

“What’s so strange about that? Many human ruins have black cubes,” Liu Yun said disapprovingly as he walked towards the well in the oasis.

The desert well was more like an underground cellar. There were stairs that allowed one to walk down, and deep inside was a pool.

However, the water in the pool wasn’t very clean. Liu Yun excitedly poured it into the water bag, but Zhou Wen stood still. He didn’t want to drink the water.

“Why aren’t you getting some water? In the desert, water is life. You can lack everything else, but you can’t lack water,” Liu Yun said to Zhou Wen.

“It’s ok, I already have some.” Zhou Wen said as he left the well. He wanted to take a spin in Hat City.

However, just as he left the well, he saw the black cube light up. On the screen were two Companion Beasts fighting.

One of them was a golden giant. The other Companion Beast was the Orochi that Zhou Wen had seen before.

The Golden Giant roared like a war god. Every punch emitted a dazzling light that resembled the sun. The Orochi’s eight heads spewed out all sorts of Essence Energy, but they failed to block the Golden Giant’s attack.

However, the lashing of its eight tails made it tie with the Golden Giant.

The fist collided with the snake’s tails, producing the sound of metal clashing. Terrifying shock waves and sparks erupted, as though they were divine weapons clashing.

The Golden Giant seemed to hold the advantage, but it was not enough to kill Orochi.

Zhou Wen watched for a while and found something strange. Orochi had eight heads and eight tails, but when it fought the Golden Giant, there was always a tail stuck to the ground. The other seven snake tails fought the Golden Giant, but that tail never came into contact with it.

Just as Zhou Wen was pondering over it, he saw the Golden Giant’s fists suddenly slam into one other. Under the collision, a golden beam of light appeared.

The Golden Giant grabbed the beam with one hand and transformed it into a gigantic blade of light. It slashed at the body of Orochi. Its might was so powerful that it was most likely the power of the Golden Giant’s Wheel of Destiny. It wanted to end the battle.

At that moment, Zhou Wen saw the snake’s tail which had never taken part in the battle move. It was like the tail of a rattlesnake as it rapidly twitched and slashed out with an unparalleled sword beam.

Clang!

The Golden Giant’s blade beam was sliced apart by the sword beam. Its body was also slashed open, leaving a long gash. It nearly tore through its chest and killed it.

Thankfully, its physique was indeed powerful, so it wasn’t halved. However, it didn’t have much combat strength left. It was summoned back by its master as a show of admitting defeat.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 649 - Behemoth Return

Chapter 649: Behemoth Return

As the Golden Giant was defeated, Orochi's eight heads rose up again and spat out eight words.

"The Federation is incompetent. The heroes are shameless."

This was not the first time the words had appeared. More accurately, it was the third time.

Apart from the time when Ice Elemental Sprite Queen was defeated, there was also a Mythical dimensional creature that challenged Orochi, only to end in defeat. After that victory, Orochi similarly spat out the words.

Now that the Golden Giant was defeated again, the entire Federation seemed to explode. Public opinion turned to question the abilities of the six hero families.

If they couldn't even deal with a single Orochi, how could they uphold the Federation's peace?

There were even some relatively biting media outlets that directly used headlines like "Are the descendants of the heroes still heroes?" to criticize the six families' inaction.

This was especially so for the West District's media. They bombarded the Family Clan of Gods and Cape family with various opinions.

As the Zhang, Xia, and Dugu families hadn't taken action to date, they weren't as miserable as the other three families

even though they were constantly questioned.

After all, they hadn’t been defeated. In theory, they still had the ability to win. They were different from the Cape family and the Family Clan of Gods who had been defeated one after another.

The six families also knew that their various schemes and arrangements were made to win the final championship. Now, an Orochi had stirred up the situation, disrupting their plans.

If they revealed their trump cards, it wouldn’t be difficult to kill Orochi. However, if that happened, they would lose the chance to vie for first place with the other families. Therefore, they could only send inferior Mythical Companion Beasts to fight, but the outcome was defeat.

The Zhang, Xia, and Dugu families were even more depressed. Of all times, the core forces of their three families had gone to the Southern Wilderness’s dimensional zones. Although there were others who could fight, the Companion Beasts were still in their plans. If they were exposed ahead of time, it would trigger a series of chain reactions and disrupt their plans.

As such, the Federation’s situation became very delicate.

None of the six families were willing to expose their top Mythical Companion Beasts, but they ended up being defeated by Orochi three times in a row. It left the entire Federation’s citizens ashamed.

“From the looks of it, we can only expose some things ahead of time. Those few families are shameless, but our Xia family can’t be shameless.” Xia Dongyue was still hesitating as to which Mythical Companion Beast his family was to assign.

Not only was Orochi proficient in various attributes, but its physique was also powerful. With the indomitable sword beam, it could be said to be an extremely comprehensive Mythical Companion Beast. It wasn’t easy to defeat it cleanly and beautifully.

Why did Liuchuan have to go to the Southern Wilderness at such a time? Xia Dongyue thought gloomily. If Xia Liuchuan was here, his Companion Beast would be best at restraining a Companion Beast like Orochi. If the enemy wasn’t prepared, it wouldn’t be impossible to kill it in one strike.

Unfortunately, Xia Liuchuan wasn’t around, causing Xia Dongyue to have a headache.

The Xia family wasn’t the only one with a headache. The other five families were also having a headache. At this stage, if they didn’t defeat Orochi, the reputation of the six families would probably be damaged.

The few families had already planned on sending their top Companion Beasts to battle, but at that moment, the black cube lit up.

The media had been bombarding the six families for their inaction. They hoped that they could step forward as soon as possible. Just as they were in a frenzy, they realized that the black cube had lit up. They thought that the six families had made a move.

However, they soon discovered that the entity who appeared on the cube was Tyrant Behemoth who had previously given up.

“Eh, why is Tyrant Behemoth out again? Didn’t it not dare to accept the battle previously?”

“It should be challenging other Companion Beasts, right?”

“Giving up without a fight means it already knew it was no match for its opponent. Now that it’s back again, it’s definitely not challenging Orochi.”

“Anyone can tell that a Companion Beast like Orochi is the nemesis of Tyrant Behemoth. No matter how strong its physique and strength is, it can’t withstand the indomitable tail of Orochi.”

Everyone believed that Tyrant Behemoth wanted to challenge the other Companion Beasts and board the rankings again, but to their surprise, when the name of the challenger lit up, it was Orochi.

“What’s going on? Didn’t it give up earlier? Why is it making the challenge now?”

“What kind of show is this? Despite knowing that the Companion Beast’s characteristics are restrained, they are still forcefully challenging Orochi?”

“Could it be that our Federation really doesn’t have any stronger Companion Beasts? We can only let the restrained Tyrant Behemoth fight?”

Instantly, voices of doubt and speculation arose. People were discussing why Tyrant Behemoth wanted to challenge Orochi at this moment.

Zhou Wen didn’t think too much about it. He was also a member of the Federation, so he felt uncomfortable being insulted like this.

Of course, it was mainly because Zhou Wen had the intention to get high on the rankings. Furthermore, he could

take down Orochi, who had gotten to its position by kicking Tyrant Behemoth out.

After watching the battle between Orochi and the Golden Giant, Zhou Wen now knew the strength of Orochi. It wouldn’t be difficult for Tyrant Behemoth to defeat Orochi.

It was a piece of cake. Not only could he get a high ranking, but it could also frighten everyone. It could also attack the evil ones overseas. It was killing three birds with one stone. Why not?

Therefore, Zhou Wen summoned Tyrant Behemoth and allowed it to ascend the cube to challenge Orochi.

“Are you finally coming out?” Uesugi Nao looked at Tyrant Behemoth on the cube’s screen and chose to accept the challenge without any hesitation.

She knew that Tyrant Behemoth’s owner must have studied Orochi for a long time. However, she was confident that with Orochi’s characteristics, it could definitely restrain Tyrant Behemoth. Under her command, it definitely wouldn’t lose.

The entire world’s media saw that Orochi had accepted the challenge. Instantly, all the major channels and online platforms were livestreaming the cube’s screen.

A little boy held his mother’s hand and stood in front of the big screen on the street. He asked worriedly, “Can Tyrant Behemoth win?”

“He will definitely win,” his mother consoled him gently.

“But we’ve already lost twice.” The boy was still somewhat worried.

“Don’t worry. No matter how many times we lose, there will always be heroes in the Federation who can step forward to save the world. Perhaps that hero is Tyrant Behemoth,” said his mother.

The boy didn’t say anything. He only clenched his fist and looked at the big screen nervously.

Boom! Orochi landed in the arena. Its huge body was ferocious and terrifying. The eight snakeheads raised together as its eerie snake eyes stared intently at Tyrant Behemoth.

Tyrant Behemoth maintained a height of a few meters and didn’t gigantify. Compared to the massive Orochi, it appeared somewhat weak. However, everyone knew that Tyrant Behemoth could still gigantify. Its body wouldn’t be smaller than Orochi.

To everyone’s surprise, Tyrant Behemoth didn’t transform. Instead, it leaped up and punched one of Orochi’s heads.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 650 - What Others Think of a Tyrant

Chapter 650: What Others Think of a Tyrant

Orochi didn’t underestimate its enemy. The eight snakeheads spewed out Essence Energy projectiles of different attributes at the same time. The seven tails also danced wildly as they lashed at Tyrant Behemoth.

“Roar!” A roar shook the world. A crown appeared on Tyrant Behemoth’s head. Although it didn’t expand, its entire body was bathed in bloody red light as though it had been enhanced by some magical power.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

Tyrant Behemoth constantly threw out its fists like a storm. The Essence Energy projectiles that Orochi spewed out were blasted apart by Tyrant Behemoth’s fists akin to exploding fireworks.

When the seven snake tails touched its fist, they emitted a terrifying metallic clang as they were sent flying. The scales on its tail shattered.

Bam!

Tyrant Behemoth rushed in front of Orochi and punched its head, sending its entire body flying.

Orochi tumbled far away before stopping. As for the snakehead which had been hit, it was mostly crushed by the terrifying augmentation of the crown.

“Impressive, it’s even stronger than the Golden Giant. As expected of Behemoth!”

“Such strength is really amazing. I’m afraid no Companion Beast can match it in terms of strength.”

The boy pulled his mother’s hand and exclaimed excitedly, “Mommy… Tyrant Behemoth is amazing… It’s really powerful…”

“That’s right. It’s really very powerful.” His mother smiled and nodded, but she was still somewhat worried.

This was because she knew very well that Orochi’s true trump card had yet to be used. And the snake tail with a terrifying sword beam was the nemesis of Strength-type Companion Beasts like Tyrant Behemoth.

Many people were equally worried. Orochi’s tail sword beam was just too powerful. Up to now, no Companion Beast had been able to withstand a strike from that tail.

Although Tyrant Behemoth displayed overwhelming strength, it was difficult to say if one could withstand the attack of the snake tail.

Uesugi Nao didn’t keep them hanging in suspense. At the instant Tyrant Behemoth charged over again, that snake tail suddenly raised. It tore through the void with a cold sword beam, slashing at Tyrant Behemoth’s body.

Everyone knew that the moment to decide victory was coming. If Tyrant Behemoth couldn’t withstand the snake tail’s slash, it would definitely lose.

Everyone wanted to know if Tyrant Behemoth, who could swallow Chimera, could swallow the terrifying sword beam.

When the boy saw the sword beam formed by the snake's tail, he nervously grabbed the corner of his mother's clothes. He had already seen the same scene once. The Golden Giant was defeated by the snake tail's sword beam despite holding the advantage. All it could do was escape with its tail in between its legs and admit defeat.

However, to everyone's surprise, Tyrant Behemoth didn't use the Mountain Consuming Skill. Instead, it continued brandishing its fist once again to meet the shocking sword beam formed by the snake's tail.

At that instant, Tyrant Behemoth's body seemed to shrink again. The strange red glow on its body also turned black-red. Tyrant Behemoth's entire body seemed to turn into a black hole. The light couldn't escape when it landed on its body.

Clang!

Tyrant Behemoth collided with the sword beam and the sword beam immediately shattered. The fist directly collided with the snake's tail.

The indestructible snake tail wasn't able to cleave apart Tyrant Behemoth's fist. It only left a sword mark.

"Heavens, ladies and gentlemen, did you see that? Orochi's killer blow wasn't able to cleave apart Tyrant Behemoth's fist! The terrifying killing technique that nearly killed the Golden Giant only left a sword mark on Tyrant Behemoth's fist. Such injuries can't affect Tyrant Behemoth's combat strength at all…" Some of the more emotional commentators shouted.

"Mommy, it blocked it! It blocked the huge snake's tail!" The boy cried out excitedly.

Before his mother could reply, Tyrant Behemoth had already grabbed the snake's tail and used all its strength to fling Orochi away.

Bam!

Orochi was slammed to the ground. Before Orochi could react, Tyrant Behemoth slammed it left and right using its tail, smashing Orochi's body to the ground like a sandbag.

In a few moves, it shattered most of its bones, as though it had turned into a pool of soft flesh. The snake heads went limp.

"It's too violent and too bloody. Orochi isn't a match for Tyrant Behemoth at all. It's constantly being ravaged."

"Oh my God, I can't believe my eyes. Is that still the terrifying Orochi? In front of Tyrant Behemoth, it's nothing."

"Yes, that's right. Kill it and let those overseas fellows know our Federation's true strength."

"It's too tragic. After this battle, I don't think those reptiles will be able to open their mouths and spit out words again. I can't tell how many heads it has left or if they have all been smashed by Tyrant Behemoth."

All the media's announcers began to cheer up. One by one, they began to tease each other. They no longer had the stern expression they had during their previous criticism. Their choice of words also began to become humorous as all sorts of coquettish comments flew around.

In comparison, there were more people in the audience. Many people who were watching online posted a large number of comments.

“Orochi is considering which head to use to call for help. Oh, I’m sorry. I forgot that it has no hands. What should it do?”

“Daddy, stop beating me. I know I’m wrong.”

“Mommy, love me again.”

“Please make way. I don’t want to just watch the bullet comments. Give me some screen estate. I want to see if Orochi is dead.”

Everything happened too quickly. Uesugi Nao never expected that the power of Orochi’s Wheel of Destiny could not even slice apart Tyrant Behemoth’s fist.

She wanted to admit defeat and retrieve Orochi, but she felt as though it was being sucked in by a terrifying force. She was unable to summon it back.

Bam!

Another heavy blow was delivered as Orochi’s body slammed into the arena. Orochi already seemed completely boneless as it collapsed to the ground.

Tyrant Behemoth roared as its body instantly expanded to the size of a small mountain. It was even taller and more majestic than Orochi. It raised Orochi’s tail and threw it into its mouth.

A strange spirit body appeared over Uesugi Nao. Her entire body emitted a demonic glow as she suddenly spat out a mouthful of blood. Her face instantly turned pale, but she finally retracted Orochi.

In the arena, Tyrant Behemoth’s fangs bit into nothing. Orochi’s body vanished, but this no longer affected the

Federation’s citizens’ revelry.

“Dear viewers, thank you for witnessing this great moment with me. Tyrant Behemoth lives up to its name as a tyrant. It is deserving of its title as the king of Companion Beasts, the nightmare of all enemies. What others think of a tyrant, I think of as a king. Your Majesty, Tyrant Behemoth, thank you for bringing us such an exciting battle…”

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 651 - Endless Sea of Stars

Chapter 651: Endless Sea of Stars

Translator: CKtalon

My Behemoth... My Behemoth... That's my Behemoth... Zhang Xiao's resentment increased to infinite proportions. That should have been his Companion Beast.

The entire Federation was guessing who Tyrant Behemoth's owner was. Most people guessed that Tyrant Behemoth might be from the Family Clan of Gods or the Cape family.

The people from the West District were also proud of this, indicating that they could still rely on their West District Companion Beasts at critical moments.

Upon seeing Tyrant Behemoth win, its name replacing Orochi's fourth place, the boy jumped up and cheered. He tugged his mother's hand and shouted, "Mommy, it won. It really won."

"Yes, it won." His mother smiled and nodded.

"Mommy, I also want to have a Tyrant Behemoth." The little boy looked at his mother with a look of longing.

His mother rubbed the boy's head. "Strong Companion Beasts are unique. Tyrant Behemoth is such a Companion Beast. When you grow up, you will definitely have a powerful Companion Beast like Tyrant Behemoth."

"Definitely. I can't wait to grow up. But before that, Mom, can you buy me a Tyrant Behemoth plushie?" The boy looked at his mother with anticipation.

His mother laughed. “Of course. If you can’t buy it, we’ll produce it ourselves. You can help with the design.”

“Really? That’s great. I will definitely design the perfect Tyrant Behemoth plushie.” The boy’s eyes lit up with excitement.

The major media outlets reported Tyrant Behemoth’s victory using all sorts of praises. They didn’t hesitate to use plenty of exaggerated words.

The titles of the strongest Companion Beast in the world, the ultimate violent battle pet, the strongest pet on the surface, and so on were bestowed to Tyrant Behemoth.

Although everyone knew that the Primordial Sword Immortal was still the strongest Companion Beast at present, most of the Federation acknowledged Tyrant Behemoth psychologically because it had won a special battle in a special period of time. This psychological recognition was related to its strength, but it wasn’t absolutely equal.

Therefore, even if there were three Companion Beasts like Primordial Sword Immortal and Death of the Underworld ranked ahead of it, it didn’t affect the Federation’s citizens to view Tyrant Behemoth as the Federation’s number one battle pet.

As for the six families, they increased their investigations, hoping to find the owner.

This battle made them see how terrifying Tyrant Behemoth was. It was a terrifying strength that could really vie for first place.

“Young Master Wen’s Tyrant Behemoth is really terrifying. It looks like he has the chance to vie for first place,” An Sheng

said with a smile.

An Tianzuo sat there reading the documents as though he hadn’t heard An Sheng.

Zhou Wen naturally didn’t know much of the developments. He retracted Tyrant Behemoth and entered the desert under Liu Yun’s guidance.

Not long after leaving Hat City, the mysterious phone vibrated. Zhou Wen took out his phone to take a look and realized that the download of Netherworld City had been completed. The icon of Netherworld City appeared on the home screen.

Liu Yun led the turtle forward while Zhou Wen sat at the back. Without anything to do, he launched the dungeon to see what was different between the game’s Netherworld City and the real one.

The blood-colored avatar appeared at the entrance of Netherworld City. The door’s ghost faces said identical words to the ones in real life. Then, the door automatically opened.

He controlled the blood-colored avatar to enter Netherworld City and stepped on the stone slabs on the long street. He saw the number “366” appear on the stone slab. It was the same as entering Netherworld City in real life.

The only difference was that in-game, the blood-colored avatar was the only one on the long street of Netherworld City. No one else existed.

Zhou Wen attempted to activate Gods Retreat. Just like in reality, a large number of taboo powers were immediately sucked into the jade infant’s body, allowing its evolution.

Since he didn’t have to worry about death in-game, Zhou Wen decided to give it a try and see if he would really die after using up all his steps.

It didn’t disappoint Zhou Wen. After the number of steps on the stone slab dropped to zero, Gods Retreat could only keep the blood-colored avatar safe for a few seconds before it exploded and died. The power was completely unreasonable and there was no way to defend against it.

After entering Netherworld City again, the blood-colored avatar appeared at the beginning of the long street. Before the torture chamber opened, Zhou Wen controlled the blood-colored avatar to farm dimensional creatures.

Although the dimensional creatures here were only at the Epic stage, their skills were rather interesting. Zhou Wen planned on grinding some Companion Eggs so that he could use them for pet fusion in the future.

Or perhaps he could grind some Essence Energy Skill Crystals. If he could use them, it wouldn’t be a bad idea to learn the skills himself.

Zhou Wen’s movement technique was considered top-notch among humans, but it was still lacking in other aspects. Apart from the Demonic Astral Wheel, there was no special skill that could be used.

City Lord Netherworld said that one can see the real Netherworld City after experiencing all the punishments. What does that mean? Zhou Wen was still guessing the meaning of the sentence.

An hour later, the torture chambers opened, but Zhou Wen realized a problem.

Although the white ghosts in-game were afraid of the Hell King Life Soul, they didn’t have any intelligence. It was impossible for them to help Zhou Wen cheat like in reality.

After all, a game is just a game. It has its limitations. It’s too rigid. Zhou Wen was somewhat helpless. There was no way to cheat. If he wanted to reach the end of Netherworld City, he could only suffer the punishment himself.

However, the blood-colored avatar shared a special relationship with him. He also felt pain when the blood-colored avatar was tortured.

After some thought, Zhou Wen gave up on his previous plan. He only treated Netherworld City as a place to grind Companion Eggs and Essence Energy Skills.

Thankfully, no accidents happened this time. Two days later, Zhou Wen finally saw the Endless Sea of Stars that Liu Yun had mentioned.

“Are you sure this is the Endless Sea of Stars?” Zhou Wen looked ahead in disbelief. He couldn’t believe that this was the Endless Sea of Stars.

In front of him was a small lake. Although it looked clear, artificial lakes in parks were much bigger than it. How could such a place be called the Endless Sea of Stars?

Zhou Wen didn’t see any stars here. There wasn’t even a fish in the water. Furthermore, the lake was very shallow, so he could see the bottom at a glance. There was sand below, nothing else.

No matter how one looked at it, it didn’t look unfathomable like Liu Yun described—a place where most people died if they entered.

Liu Yun sat by the lake and took off his shoes. He extended his feet into the lake and said with a pleasant expression, “Calm down. Wait till night time and take another look. You will then know how magical the Endless Sea of Stars is.”

At night, the stars in the sky twinkled. The sky was especially clear, and the stars looked as though they would fall at any moment.

Suddenly, Zhou Wen saw a star really fall from the sky. Furthermore, it was falling towards them.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 652 - Sky-Stealing Sun-Shifting Monument

Chapter 652: Sky-Stealing Sun-Shifting Monument

A meteor descended from the sky and landed on the lake, illuminating the entire lake.

What was strange was that the seemingly blazing-fast meteor rushed into the lake without causing any ripples on the water.

Before Zhou Wen could clearly see what was happening underwater, he saw stars fall from the sky. A meteor shower ensued as the meteors headed for the tiny lake, forming a magnificent scene.

“Are those really meteors?” Zhou Wen couldn’t be sure. The starlight fell into the lake, but the surface of the lake was calm. It was like a boundless starry sky that could envelop everything.

“Aren’t you going to make a wish? Isn’t it said that if you can tie a knot in the corner of your clothes before the meteor disappears, the wish you make will come true? Junior Brother, you can give it a try,” said Liu Yun.

Zhou Wen shook his head and said, “In our hometown, there’s no such thing as making wishes under a shooting star. Furthermore, there are taboos that shooting stars are jinxes. It’s inauspicious to see them. It might be unlucky.”

“Pui, pui, pui. Can’t you say something auspicious?” Liu Yun said gloomily.

Zhou Wen shrugged and didn’t say another word as he looked at the lake.

The starlight that resembled a river of stars cascaded down and fell into the lake, forming points of light in the lake. It was as though countless stars were inside the lake. It was really like a sea of stars.

As Zhou Wen focused on the points of light, he was surprised to discover that they were tiny orbs that resembled planets—miniature planets. The entire lake was like a starry universe with countless celestial bodies.

What was even stranger was that the planet-like orbs were still revolving according to a certain pattern.

It’s no wonder this place is called the Endless Sea of Stars! Looking at the starlight that kept falling into the lake, Zhou Wen finally knew the reason behind this tiny lake’s name.

Liu Yun said with a smile, “Don’t underestimate such a lake. There are countless stars inside. If you enter the lake now, you will be sucked into the sea of stars. It’s very likely that you will forever be lost in it and never come out again.”

Zhou Wen looked around, but he didn’t see the tiny palm symbol. Therefore, he asked Liu Yun, “How are you going to enter the Endless Sea of Stars? Where is the Astral Combat Beast?”

“The Astral Combat Beasts are on those orbs. They look small, but once we enter the lake, we will discover that they are planets. There are all sorts of terrifying Astral Beasts on them, ranging from the Mortal stage to the Mythical stage. The Astral Combat Beast is one of the Mythical Astral Beasts.”

After a pause, Liu Yun continued, “After the meteor shower stops, we can go down. However, you have to follow me. Don’t fall, otherwise, you will be lost in the sea of stars and enter some strange planets. It will be difficult for you to come out again.”

“I’ll just look around outside for now then.” Zhou Wen slowly walked around the lake, hoping to see if there was a tiny palm symbol.

As the lake was very small, he circled it in half an hour, but he didn’t find the tiny palm symbol. Now that the sea of stars had appeared, he might discover something.

The interior of the lake was like a starry universe, but it was still the same size outside. It felt rather enthralling.

Zhou Wen circled the lake and carefully looked at every inch of land, but he still couldn’t find the tiny palm symbol.

Just as he was feeling disappointed, his gaze suddenly swept across a stone monument at the bottom of the lake. It was lying flat with many star patterns on it, like a star chart.

Zhou Wen pointed at the stone monument at the bottom of the lake and asked Liu Yun, “What’s that?”

“That is the Sky-Stealing Sun-Shifting Monument. As long as you can figure out the profundity of the star chart on it, you will be able to comprehend the Sky-Stealing Sun-Shifting Art. This is also the key to me comprehending Star Stealer,” said Liu Yun.

Liu Yun knew that it wasn’t that easy to comprehend the Sky-Stealing Sun-Shifting Monument. Not only did he need extremely high perceptivity, but he also needed a special physique.

Zhou Wen didn’t have a special physique that matched the Sky-Stealing Sun-Shifting Art, even if he did, he was already at the Epic stage. He probably couldn’t change his Essence Energy Art and try again.

Zhou Wen wasn’t too interested in Essence Energy Arts. He couldn’t finish cultivating too many Essence Energy Arts. Simulating them wasn’t difficult, but it was very difficult to level them up.

However, since the Sky-Stealing Sun-Shifting Art was necessary for Star Stealer, Zhou Wen planned on giving it a try to use the Lost Immortal Sutra to simulate it.

After circulating the Lost Immortal Sutra, Zhou Wen carefully sized up the stone monument. The star chart on the stone monument kept changing, making it difficult to figure out what it meant.

Furthermore, there were no words on it. It was perplexing.

Liu Yun actually managed to figure out an Essence Energy Art from such a star chart. He’s really a genius. When Zhou Wen carefully sized up the star chart, he had an unexpected discovery.

On the corner of the stone monument, there was a tiny palm symbol. The stars on the stone monument were shimmering but the palm symbol was engraved in a corner, covered in moss. With the lake water separating them, Zhou Wen wouldn’t have been able to see it if it wasn’t for the starlight’s illumination.

“Eldest Senior Brother, can we see the Sky-Stealing Sun-Shifting Monument during the day?” Zhou Wen asked Liu Yun.

“The stone monument is naturally still there during the day, but you can’t see the starlight flowing on it during the day. It’s just a blank stone monument. It’s useless even if you see it.” Seeing that the meteor shower had ended, Liu Yun said to Zhou Wen, “Alright, let’s head down now.”

“I’ve thought about it. The Endless Sea of Stars is so dangerous. My luck has been very bad recently. I’ve seen an ominous phenomenon, so I think I won’t head in. If you go down, help me see if you can obtain the Astral Combat Beast’s Essence Energy Skill Crystal,” Zhou Wen said.

“Junior Brother, that wasn’t what you said before? Didn’t you say that people shouldn’t hide at home just because of bad luck… Why are you suddenly superstitious?” Liu Yun looked at Zhou Wen with a puzzled expression.

Zhou Wen thought to himself, *I didn’t have the tiny palm symbol previously, so I naturally had to take the risk. Now that I’ve found the tiny palm symbol, I can return home to comfortably grind dungeons after downloading the game. Why would I take the risk?*

Of course, Zhou Wen couldn’t tell Liu Yun that. Therefore, he said, “Actually, I just wanted to take a look at this Sky-Stealing Sun-Shifting Monument. Since I can see it from here, there’s no need for me to enter. If you want to head in, go ahead. If you don’t wish to enter, just stay around to look at the Sky-Stealing Sun-Shifting Monument with me.”

Liu Yun cursed inwardly. *I don’t know how many thousand times I’ve stared at this crappy monument, so why would I continue looking at it? You don’t have my Heavenly Star Veins Body, so what will you be able to figure out? Even if you were to look at it for ten thousand years, you wouldn’t be able to comprehend the Sky-Stealing Sun-Shifting Art.*

The reason Liu Yun was able to comprehend the Sky-Stealing Sun-Shifting Art back then was that the star chart on the stone monument had triggered his Heavenly Star Veins. Only by allowing the Heavenly Star Veins sense the trajectories of the stars could one gain insight.

Without the Heavenly Star Veins, just looking at the star chart was useless.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 653 - Planet Devourer

Chapter 653: Planet Devourer

Translator: CKtalon

“Alright then. Take your time. However, don’t go down to the lake alone. It wasn’t easy for me to make the trip here. I’ll go down and hunt some Astral Beasts. If I’m lucky, I’ll be able to have an Essence Energy Skill Crystal drop from killing Astral Combat Beasts. I’ll exchange it for my autograph.” Liu Yun walked into the lake.

“Eldest Senior Brother, be careful,” Zhou Wen said.

“I wouldn’t be so unlucky without you by my side,” Liu Yun said as he went into the water.

Zhou Wen watched as Liu Yun entered the lake. The lake appeared shallow, but when Liu Yun stepped into the water, his body kept sinking as though the bottom was nowhere in sight.

Furthermore, his body shrank as he descended. Finally, he floated towards the orbs like a speck of dust, disappearing in the blink of an eye.

What a magical dimensional zone. When it’s daytime, I’ll go down to the lake to take a picture of the tiny palm symbol. After downloading the Endless Star Sea dungeon, I’ll be able to farm it as I wish. Zhou Wen sat down by the lake and carefully observed the star chart on the Sky-Stealing Sun-Shifting Monument.

After looking at it for a while, the Lost Immortal Sutra showed its effects. The circulation of Essence Energy became slower and slower before completely stopping.

After that, his Essence Energy suddenly surged and circulated in Zhou Wen’s body in a new way.

The Sky-Stealing Sun-Shifting Art was different from the Essence Energy Arts Zhou Wen had cultivated in the past. It was a very magical feeling. It felt as though the Essence Energy in his body had transformed into countless stars that circulated in his body. Furthermore, when it circulated, it wasn’t a linear movement. Instead, it was like a true celestial body’s trajectory that formed a galaxy.

It didn’t take long for Zhou Wen to gain a basic mastery of the Sky-Stealing Sun-Shifting Art. However, it wasn’t that simple to level it up.

Zhou Wen wasn’t in a rush to cultivate. It was useless to be anxious. This wasn’t something that could be mastered in a day or two.

He found a rock by the lake and sat down. He took out his phone and started to grind. He would head down to the lake to take a picture of the tiny palm symbol during the day.

There was still plenty of time until daybreak after Zhou Wen cleared one dungeon. Liu Yun hadn’t returned.

He stood up and stretched his body. He looked at the Endless Sea of Stars and realized that there was something strange in it.

During the day, Zhou Wen had observed it very carefully. The lake was somewhat odd. There were no creatures inside. There were no worms or water plants, much less fish or shrimp. The entire lake was as clean as pure water.

But now, Zhou Wen saw a creature that resembled a jellyfish in the lake. Its body was transparent like crystal, and it

emitted light like a light bulb.

The jellyfish-like creature rose and fell in the lake. When it passed the tiny planet-like orbs, it would actually swallow them into its body.

Although the jellyfish wasn’t big and was only one size bigger than an adult’s clenched fist, if the celestial bodies were considered planets, then the size of the jellyfish was somewhat terrifying.

This thing can actually devour planets? Zhou Wen felt that something was amiss. This was because he realized that the jellyfish was very close to the region where Liu Yun was.

If the orb where Liu Yun is gets swallowed by the jellyfish, would Liu Yun die? Zhou Wen looked at the jellyfish moving in the water. Although it was very slow, it was moving closer and closer to Liu Yun.

Could Eldest Senior Brother end up dying just like that? Zhou Wen was somewhat worried, but there was nothing he could do.

There are just too many orbs in the lake; it’s like a sea of stars. I only know the general direction Liu Yun took, but I don’t know which orb he’s on. It’s too late even if I head in now.

After some thought, Zhou Wen summoned the Golden Overlord Sword and slashed out a sword beam at the jellyfish in the lake.

However, the moment the sword beam entered the lake, it became smaller and smaller. In the end, it was as tiny as a needle tip. It vanished when it was still a distance away from the jellyfish.

Furthermore, the sword beam had become so tiny. Even if it struck the jellyfish, it wouldn’t be of much use.

Eldest Senior Brother, Eldest Senior Brother… It’s not that I don’t want to save you, but I really can’t. Zhou Wen slashed a few more times, but to no avail. All he could do was watch helplessly as the jellyfish approached the area where Liu Yun was.

It’s over! The jellyfish soon arrived at the area where Liu Yun was and swallowed the nearby orbs.

When the orbs entered its body, they were like glowing jelly beans that spun around its body before slowly melting until they vanished.

“Eldest Senior Brother, Eldest Senior Brother, I didn’t expect you to die like this. You didn’t even leave any clothes behind. I can’t even make a cenotaph for you…”

Just as Zhou Wen was sighing, he suddenly heard a whoosh. Liu Yun emerged from the lake, looking extremely disheveled. His clothes looked as though they were made of paper, turning into paste when touching the water.

“Junior Brother, are you messing with me again? Are you trying to burn bridges and make me die down there?” Liu Yun jumped onto the shore and questioned Zhou Wen angrily.

“Eldest Senior Brother, what do you mean? I saw the monster in the water devouring the orbs and wanted to save you, but all the attacks that hit the water became insignificant. I had no choice,” Zhou Wen said.

“If you weren’t behind this, why would I be so unlucky to encounter a Planet Devourer? That thing doesn’t usually

appear,” Liu Yun said with widened eyes.

“Eldest Senior Brother, you’ve really misunderstood me. I’m not familiar with this area. I still need you to take me out of this desert. Even if I wanted to do something to you, I wouldn’t choose this moment. Besides, if I wanted to mess with you, I don’t need to secretly do it, right? I knew it. It’s not auspicious after seeing an ominous phenomenon,” Zhou Wen said.

Liu Yun found that what he said made sense and couldn’t help but say gloomily, “Why am I so unlucky at the moment? I clearly didn’t see the Planet Devourer before I went down. Thankfully, I have deceptive skills. Otherwise, I would have died even if I had ten lives.”

“What is that Planet Devourer? It should be a Mythical creature, right? Can it really devour a planet?” Zhou Wen was rather curious about the jellyfish-like Planet Devourer.

“I don’t know if it can devour a planet in real life, but in the Endless Sea of Stars, that fellow is an overlord. No matter what kind of Astral Beast it is, it can devour them in one mouthful. Even the celestial bodies inside the Endless Sea of Stars are no exception. However, the celestial bodies in the Endless Sea of Stars are much smaller than real planets. I reckon that the Planet Devourer can only devour mountains outside the Endless Sea of Stars,” said Liu Yun.

“Do you think my Tyrant Behemoth can kill it?” Zhou Wen pondered.

“Probably not. Tyrant Behemoth isn’t good at aquatic warfare, right?” Liu Yun looked at the Planet Devourer in the lake and said.

“I really don’t know.” Zhou Wen planned on letting Tyrant Behemoth try after he downloaded the dungeon.

As there was a Planet Devourer, Liu Yun didn’t dare enter the Endless Sea of Stars again. All he could do was stay by the lakeside with Zhou Wen.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 654 - Sky-Stealing Sun-Shifting Art

Chapter 654: Sky-Stealing Sun-Shifting Art

Translator: CKtalon

“Junior Brother, you’ve been staring at it for so long. Have you figured out anything?” Liu Yun sat beside him and asked in boredom.

“A little,” Zhou Wen said.

“How much is a little bit?” Liu Yun continued asking.

There was no way he could figure it out without having a physique that was compatible with the Sky-Stealing Sun-Shifting Monument. Therefore, Liu Yun didn’t believe Zhou Wen’s words.

This had nothing to do with whether he was a genius or not. It didn’t even have much to do with his perceptivity. Without the Heavenly Star Veins, it was impossible to figure it out. This was the foundation, just like how one couldn’t build a skyscraper without a foundation. Zhou Wen had no chance of figuring out the Sky-Stealing Sun-Shifting.

“Just a little,” Zhou Wen said with a smile.

Liu Yun curled his lips and didn’t ask any more. Zhou Wen kept staring at the Endless Sea of Stars, hoping to see what else there was in the sea of stars other than the Planet Devourer.

Unfortunately, apart from the Planet Devourer, there were no other dimensional creatures.

“Besides this Planet Devourer, is there no other dimensional creature in the Endless Sea of Stars?” Zhou Wen asked.

“There are Astral Beasts on those small planets, but they are only active on the planets and are unable to leave them. Outside the small planets, there’s only one Planet Devourer. It’s the king here. It pops a planet with each bite, devouring even the dimensional creatures on it. It’s an invincible existence. I am good at deception, so I managed to escape. If it were another person—even if the six heroes were revived—they wouldn’t be able to escape its devouring,” Liu Yun said smugly.

Zhou Wen watched for a while and felt bored. He took out his phone and gamed, grinding Mythical creatures and rare dimensional creatures.

“If you are done watching, let’s go back. Although we won’t encounter danger if we do not enter the Endless Sea of Stars, who knows when something might happen in a place like a desert. The two of us have been unlucky recently. It’s best we return soon,” said Liu Yun.

“I want to go underwater to take a look at the Sky-Stealing Sun-Shifting Monument during the day. Perhaps I might discover something,” Zhou Wen said half-truthfully.

Liu Yun curled his lips and said, “Junior Brother, don’t blame me for being blunt. If you can’t figure it out at night, what would you figure out in the day? There will not be any starlight chart in the day, it’ll be a bare and dilapidated monolith.”

“I came all the way here. I’m not willing to give up if I don’t take a look,” Zhou Wen said, unmoved.

“Alright, let’s wait until you are done looking at it in the morning. I’ll sleep for a while. Wake me up later.” Liu Yun lay down and fell asleep. He was asleep in less than three seconds.

His sleeping posture was very strange. Zhou Wen felt that he was like a cat that could bounce up from the ground at any moment.

After taking a closer look, he realized that Liu Yun’s sleeping posture was extraordinary. No matter which direction he was attacked from, his posture allowed him to easily react to it.

To be able to develop such a sleeping posture, Liu Yun must have experienced many things in the past. How could a normal person be so wary when sleeping?

Zhou Wen’s senses were very sharp, but he wouldn’t maintain a combat-ready sleeping posture while sleeping because he didn’t have such a realization.

Of course, with Truth Listener around, it was impossible for ordinary people to get close to him without being discovered.

Although he had obtained quite a number of Companion Eggs after gaming the entire night, Zhou Wen didn’t get any he wanted. Medusa, Qiongqi, Torch Dragon, and company hadn’t dropped Companion Eggs.

That shouldn’t be the case. Every time I kill them, I bring the baby tiger with me. After killing them so many times, logically speaking, there should be one dropping? Zhou Wen was somewhat depressed.

The night quickly passed. In the morning, the starlight in the lake surged into the sky like a stream and vanished into the

void. The lake returned to normal.

It looked like an ordinary lake. It was unimaginable that it would turn into a starry sky at night.

Liu Yun didn’t lie to him. The Sky-Stealing Sun-Shifting Monument was still in the lake. Zhou Wen woke Liu Yun up and asked if there was anything to take note of when entering the lake.

“There’s nothing. As long as you aren’t going into the lake at night, this lake isn’t much different from ordinary lakes.” Liu Yun shook his head.

Zhou Wen tried going into the water. Indeed, it wasn’t as miraculous as last night. He stepped into the lake, and the water only reached his waist.

Zhou Wen had learned the Nine Dragons Art from the black dragon. He dived into the water and quickly arrived at the Sky-Stealing Sun-Shifting Monument.

Just as Liu Yun had said, in the day, this was a worn stone monument that was covered in moss. There were only scratches on it, and there was no starlight pattern. If it wasn’t for the tiny palm symbol engraved on it, it wouldn’t be eye-catching at all.

At a close distance, the mysterious phone vibrated. Zhou Wen picked up his phone and snapped a picture of the stone monument. The phone immediately entered the download interface.

After putting away his phone, Zhou Wen touched the stone monument again. It felt cold like it was made of metal.

Not daring to do anything excessive, he turned around and swam back to the shore.

“How is it, Junior Brother? Did you figure out anything?” Liu Yun asked Zhou Wen with a smile.

“A little,” Zhou Wen said with a nod.

“You figured out a little yesterday, and you figured out a little today. Added together, it will be impressive. You should have gained basic mastery, right?” Liu Yun teased Zhou Wen.

“Yes, I’ve gotten basic mastery,” Zhou Wen answered.

Liu Yun, who was drinking water, nearly choked. He looked at Zhou Wen in disbelief and asked, “Are you for real? You really gained basic mastery?”

“It’s just basic mastery. What’s so difficult about it? Haven’t you long obtained basic mastery?” Zhou Wen said casually.

Liu Yun refused to believe him. He reached out and grabbed a handful of sand from the ground. With a squeeze, the sand condensed into a ball that looked like a huge grain of sand.

Liu Yun’s hand relaxed again. The huge sand scattered and turned into yellow sand.

“If you really gained basic mastery, you should be able to do this, right?” Liu Yun said to Zhou Wen.

“I’ll give it a try.” Zhou Wen also grabbed a handful of sand from the ground. He circulated the Sky-Stealing Sun-Shifting Art and pinched the sand. The sand stuck together like magnets, turning into a ball. However, it wasn’t as round as Liu Yun’s.

“Holy sh*t… You’ve really gained basic mastery of the Sky-Stealing Sun-Shifting Art?” Liu Yun widened his eyes as he looked at Zhou Wen as though he had seen a ghost.

“Why would I lie to you?” Zhou Wen released his hand and the sand scattered.

“Alright, I’ve already achieved my goal. Let’s head back. After we leave the desert, I’ll return the autograph to you,” Zhou Wen said.

“Junior Brother, you’re really a genius in cultivation, but how did you do it? According to what I know, cultivating the Sky-Stealing Sun-Shifting Art requires a special physique. You don’t look like you have a special physique.” Liu Yun was puzzled. He had the Heavenly Star Veins himself, so he naturally knew what characteristics one needed to have. Zhou Wen didn’t have those characteristics.

“Do I need a special physique? I don’t know about that. I just casually practiced it and attained basic mastery. I didn’t find it difficult,” Zhou Wen said.

Liu Yun felt something stuck in his throat and couldn’t say another word.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 655 - Heart Lunar Fox

Chapter 655: Heart Lunar Fox

Translator: CKtalon

Their journey back to the city was rather smooth. They didn’t encounter any sandstorms or Netherworld City when they walked by the areas they had previously passed.

After leaving the desert, Zhou Wen returned the autograph to Liu Yun.

“Junior Brother, I’m afraid the entire world is looking for Tyrant Behemoth’s master. Aren’t you afraid that I will leak your secret?” Liu Yun looked at Zhou Wen with a complicated expression after confirming that it was his signature.

“Although we haven’t spent much time together and I don’t know you well, I believe you aren’t the type of person to do such things.” Although Zhou Wen said that, he was thinking, It doesn’t matter if it’s really exposed. I don’t only have one trump card in my hand. Since I’ve placed it on the rankings, I’m already mentally prepared to expose myself.

“I like hearing what you said. Don’t worry. After all, you are my junior brother. As a senior brother, I won’t harm you. I will help you keep the secret,” said Liu Yun with a smile. It was unknown if he was telling the truth.

“Alright, let’s go our separate ways here. I should return as well.” Zhou Wen planned on going separate ways with Liu Yun and returning to the town as soon as possible.

The ranking battle hadn’t ended. Tyrant Behemoth was only ranked fourth, so it should still have a chance to make

further challenges.

Liu Yun clearly didn’t wish to continue being with Zhou Wen. Ever since he met Zhou Wen, his luck had been terrible. He seriously suspected that it was a result of the two blades on Zhou Wen.

“Junior Brother, I don’t know when we will meet again after today. Here’s a farewell song…” Liu Yun said generously.

“Alright.” Zhou Wen nodded. He never expected Liu Yun to actually know how to sing.

“Beautiful ladies… Ladies… Ladies have walked into[1]…” Liu Yun sat on the turtle’s back and sang loudly. The turtle ran quickly and soon vanished from sight. Only his delicate voice echoed in Zhou Wen’s ears.

Zhou Wen was rendered speechless. He originally imagined what kind of song it was, but it turned out to be such a folk song.

Needless to say, Liu Yun’s singing was really charming. It made one have the urge to beat him up.

After Liu Yun’s voice could no longer be heard, Zhou Wen summoned Six-Winged and rode it back. Although it was uncomfortable, he had to make do with it.

As he traveled, Zhou Wen launched the downloaded Endless Sea of Stars dungeon.

In fact, the dungeon had long been downloaded. However, with Liu Yun around, Zhou Wen didn’t dare launch it.

After opening the Endless Sea of Stars dungeon, the blood-colored avatar appeared in a starry sky. There were planets

around it, but they didn’t look as huge as real planets.

These planets were about the same size as mountains. However, on these small planets, there was no distinction between the top and bottom, left and right. On a nearby planet, a group of mutated beasts could be seen running across it. Many of them looked like they were running upside down, appearing as though they would fall off at any time.

If it was a real planet, it wouldn’t be too obvious because of a planet’s immense size.

On such a small planet, the visual impact of seeing a group of mutated beasts standing upside down was extremely strong.

Zhou Wen controlled the blood-colored avatar and flew towards the planet. At the same time, he summoned Six-Winged and other Companion Beasts before charging at the mutated beasts.

The mutated beasts looked like humanoid mantises. After seeing the blood-colored avatar, they charged forward, but they were mostly killed by Six-Winged and Torch Dragon.

‘Killed Legendary Fiend Star Mantis… Killed Legendary Fiend Star Mantis…’

The notifications kept coming in. Many dimensional crystals dropped, including a few Companion Eggs.

However, such dimensional crystals and Companion Eggs weren’t of much use to Zhou Wen.

He went to a few nearby small planets and realized that there were quite a number of Astral Beasts here, but most of

them were at the Mortal and Legendary stage. Even Epic creatures were rare.

I forgot to ask Eldest Senior Brother Liu Yun which planet has the so-called Astral Combat Beast. There are thousands of planets here. I wonder how long it'll take me to go through them one by one. Zhou Wen was somewhat depressed. This was different from what he had imagined. He imagined that there were Mythical creatures everywhere in the Endless Sea of Stars.

There was no choice. It was impossible to find Liu Yun now. Zhou Wen could only slowly search each planet.

Thankfully, his Companion Beasts were very powerful. Killing a tiny planet's Astral Beasts wasn't difficult.

He didn't find the Mythical Astral Combat Beast, but he discovered a strange Astral Beast.

It was a fox with crescent-shaped starlight shimmering on its chest. After Zhou Wen killed it, according to the notification, it was said to be a Mortal-stage Heart Lunar Fox.

Even if a Mortal dimensional creature dropped something, Zhou Wen usually didn't think much of it.

The chances of a Mortal Companion Egg dropping were extremely low. It was almost the same as winning the lottery. Furthermore, it was useless for Zhou Wen to get a Mortal Companion Beast.

The Heart Lunar Fox didn't drop a Companion Egg either. All it dropped was an Essence Energy Skill Crystal, but it was also very rare to drop one at the Mortal stage.

Zhou Wen hadn’t paid attention to the Mortal stage Essence Energy Skill, but when he saw its name, he was somewhat surprised.

The Essence Energy Skill Crystal dropped by the Heart Lunar Fox wasn’t a Heart Lunar Fox Crystal, but an Azure Dragon Heart Crystal.

Heart Lunar Fox… I think I’ve heard of this name somewhere… Zhou Wen checked online and couldn’t help but be alarmed.

Few modern people knew the name of the Heart Lunar Fox, but in ancient times, it was one of the twenty-eight Lunar Mansions.

The twenty-eight Lunar Mansions were split equally amongst the Eastern Azure Dragon, the Northern Black Tortoise, the Southern Vermilion Bird, and the Western White Tiger—each having seven palaces.

The Heart Lunar Fox was one of the seven palaces of the Eastern Azure Dragon. It represented the heart.

This Heart Lunar Fox is only at the Mortal stage. Logically speaking, it shouldn’t be related to the twenty-eight Lunar Mansions. They are extremely powerful existences in myths and legends. They should at least be at the Mythical stage. Even if they aren’t at the Mythical stage, they shouldn’t be at the Mortal stage, right? However, the Essence Energy Skill Crystal dropped by the Heart Lunar Fox is actually called the Azure Dragon Heart Crystal. It doesn’t seem right if it’s unrelated.

Zhou Wen thought for a moment and let the blood-colored avatar absorb the Azure Dragon Heart Crystal to see what Essence Energy Skill he would learn.

Typically, Mortal-stage Essence Energy Skill Crystals could be absorbed easily, but when Zhou Wen absorbed them, he realized that the Essence Energy Art wasn’t compatible.

A Mortal stage Essence Energy Skill actually requires an Essence Energy Art to match? This was the first time Zhou Wen had encountered something like this. He couldn’t help but feel intrigued.

After some thought, he changed his Essence Energy Art to Sky-Stealing Sun-Shifting and absorbed the Azure Dragon Heart Crystal. This time, he successfully absorbed it.

This Essence Energy Skill was somewhat odd. Typical Essence Energy Skills opened up an Essence Energy circulation path in one’s body.

However, after the Azure Dragon Heart was absorbed, it condensed into a point in his body. It was motionless like a nail.

‘Absorbed the Azure Dragon Heart Crystal. Attained Essence Energy Skill: Heart Lunar Fox.’

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 656 - Blood Oxypetalum

Chapter 656: Blood Oxypetalum

Translator: CKtalon

Zhou Wen attempted to activate the Heart Lunar Fox skill, but there was no reaction.

If this skill really has something to do with the twenty-eight Lunar Mansions, could it be that I have to gather all the skills of the twenty-eight Lunar Mansions before I can use it? Or could it be that I can use it just by gathering the Azure Dragon's seven palaces? Zhou Wen was just guessing. Up to now, there was no way to prove the relationship between the two.

As he had nothing to lose, Zhou Wen paid special attention to the Essence Energy Skill Crystal drops when grinding.

After grinding for half the day, he didn't see any similar Mortal-stage Essence Energy Skills drop.

After respawning the dungeon, Zhou Wen went to the place where he discovered the Heart Lunar Fox, but he didn't see it again.

Having had the experience of grinding the baby tiger, Zhou Wen knew that such matters couldn't be forced. Therefore, he didn't deliberately search for it. He only paid a little attention when grinding low-level monsters, with his main focus on finding Astral Combat Beasts.

After another day, Zhou Wen surprisingly discovered that he had obtained another Azure Dragon Heart Crystal. After absorbing it, he obtained the Room Solar Rabbit Essence Energy Skill.

However, just like the Heart Lunar Fox, the Room Solar Rabbit skill was useless.

It looks like there's no mistake about the Heart Lunar Fox and the Room Solar Rabbit. It's really related to the twenty-eight Lunar Mansions, but why are the twenty-eight Lunar Mansions such low-level dimensional creatures? Zhou Wen couldn't figure out the reason, but he paid more attention when grinding.

By the time he returned to the town inside the Funiu Mountain Range, Zhou Wen had obtained some skill crystals related to the twenty-eight Lunar Mansions.

Among them, the number of Heart Lunar Foxes and Room Solar Rabbits were the highest. He had three of each, but they couldn't be taken out, so they were useless.

Furthermore, these skills had no rank. There was no discernment between the same skills in terms of levels.

Zhou Wen had also obtained the skill crystals of the Horn Wood Scaly Dragon, Root Earth Raccoon Dog, Tail Fire Tiger, and Winnowing-basket Water Leopard. These Mortal-stage dimensional creatures were also strange. There were very few of them, but as long as he found them, they would definitely drop skill crystals. Nothing else would drop.

The skill crystals that Zhou Wen had obtained were all from the Azure Dragon seven Lunar Mansions. He had already learned six skills and was only short of the Azure Dragon's Neck Gold Dragon.

After reaching the small town, Zhou Wen looked at the ranking again and realized that no one had challenged Tyrant Behemoth. It was still ranked fourth.

In front of Tyrant Behemoth, there were still three Companion Beasts—Primordial Sword Immortal, Death of the Underworld, and Fairy Immortal Gu.

Why is no one challenging Primordial Sword Immortal? There should be less than a month left in the three-month deadline, right? Zhou Wen didn't wish to be the trailblazer. He planned on returning to school first. It wouldn't be too late for him to come again after someone challenged the Primordial Sword Immortal.

When he reached the town's entrance, he suddenly heard a sound coming from outside. Using Truth Listener to investigate, he realized that a few people were heading for the town.

Eh… What are they doing here? Zhou Wen realized that Qiao Siyuan and Liz were among the people who had come.

Although they weren't wearing the Special Inspector Bureau uniform, Zhou Wen had a deep impression of them, so he recognized them at a glance.

The others looked like they were from the bureau as well. Zhou Wen didn't know why he had such a judgment, but he had a feeling that the people from the bureau seemed to have a special aura. This aura was very rare to find on ordinary people.

It was just like how soldiers could easily be identified. It was the same for the people from the bureau. However, their auras were different from ordinary soldiers.

This was originally a good opportunity to take revenge, but Zhou Wen wanted to figure out their reason for coming here. Therefore, he retreated into the forest and used Truth Listener to monitor their every move.

“Clear the area.” After entering the valley, Qiao Siyuan gave the order. Immediately, people took out various instruments and summoned their Companion Beasts. They began to busy themselves.

Zhou Wen recognized a few Companion Beasts that were probably reconnaissance types. From the looks of it, they wanted to ensure that there were no outsiders here.

With a thought, Zhou Wen sneaked into the lake and hid in the water. Then, he used the Dao Body to converge his aura and blend with the surrounding natural environment.

Qiao Siyuan and company busied themselves for a few hours, taking control of the entire valley. Only when they seemingly confirmed that there was no one else here did they transport quite a number of things from outside the town.

Zhou Wen saw Companion Beasts carrying buckets into the town. He didn’t know what was inside.

“Minister, we have finished counting the items,” Liz reported to Qiao Siyuan.

“Set up a sentry post and split into three shifts to monitor the situation outside. Everyone else, rest immediately,” Qiao Siyuan ordered.

“Yes.” Liz accepted the order and began dividing the group.

When Liz returned to Qiao Siyuan’s side, he had already sat down in a small building.

“Minister, is the Blood Oxypetalum really as magical as the legends say?” Liz poured a cup of tea for Qiao Siyuan and asked curiously.

Qiao Siyuan took a sip of tea and said indifferently, “You should have heard of how instantaneous an oxypetalum blooming is, right?”

“I’ve heard of it, but I heard that it’s just an exaggerated metaphor from the people of the East District. In fact, oxypetalum will bloom for a few hours. It’s not as exaggerated as if it only bloomed for an instant,” Liz said.

Qiao Siyuan nodded. “It’s true that a normal oxypetalum blooming isn’t as exaggerated as being instantaneous, but it’s different if it’s a Blood Oxypetalum.”

After a pause, Qiao Siyuan continued, “To get a Blood Oxypetalum to bloom, one has to pour a large amount of blood. Typical blood isn’t enough. It has to be the blood essence of dimensional creatures. The more blood the Blood Oxypetalum absorbs, the purer it becomes. The flower that blooms will also become more beautiful. Furthermore, it can give birth to a Blood Oxypetalum seed.”

When Zhou Wen heard that, he recalled the ruby he had obtained.

Previously, many white deer had been sacrificed by the mountain god. Only then did a blood flower bloom in the lake, giving birth to a ruby. It sounded like the seed that Qiao Siyuan had mentioned.

If the flower in the lake is really a Blood Oxypetalum, then why did Qiao Siyuan and company come here? Are they planning to offer a blood sacrifice to obtain the Blood Oxypetalum seed? What’s its use? As Zhou Wen was thinking, Liz had already given him an answer.

“Minister, can a Blood Oxypetalum seed really change a person’s bloodline and talent?” Liz asked.

“That’s not something I know. I’ve never used a Blood Oxypetalum seed before, so I can’t make any judgment. However, since the director-general wants to do this, he must have his reasons,” Qiao Siyuan said indifferently.

“Minister, you’re right. The Director-General has put in so much effort this time to specially prepare this blood. If it really succeeds, the seed produced by the Blood Oxypetalum will definitely be extraordinary,” Liz said enviously.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 657 - Snatching the Seed Again

Chapter 657: Snatching the Seed Again

Translator: CKtalon

Zhou Wen originally imagined that Qiao Siyuan and company would take action soon, but to his surprise, they had only set up the place to appear air-tight. Even when a fly flew in, they had zero intention of taking action.

They are waiting for someone. Will Shen Yuchi come personally? Zhou Wen felt that it would be perfect if Shen Yuchi really came personally.

Zhou Wen didn't dare barge into the Special Inspector Bureau's headquarters, but if Shen Yuchi dared to come, Zhou Wen could try his best to see if he could retain him.

As there were many surveillance Companion Beasts and instruments placed by the lakeside, Zhou Wen hid in the water and didn't dare move. Any abnormalities might be discovered.

After enduring more than two days, he finally realized that someone had come to the town. What disappointed Zhou Wen was that the person who came wasn't Shen Yuchi, but a man he didn't know.

Qiao Siyuan and Liz addressed him as Censor Cai very respectfully. Zhou Wen immediately realized the person was Cai Jin, one of the four Censors.

Cai Jin held a metal alloy box in his hand. There was a metal alloy chain on the box that connected to Cai Jin's wrist.

The last time the Essence Crystal mine was robbed, the bureau suffered huge losses. Shen Yuchi had only punished Cai Jin lightly, making Cai Jin extremely grateful.

This time, he had been ordered to secretly come to Funiu Mountain. Cai Jin had also made sufficient preparations. No matter what, he couldn't screw up this work trip.

"Minister Qiao, how's the defense set up here?" Cai Jin asked.

"We already have a whole range of defenses in place. We didn't find any outsiders," Qiao Siyuan replied.

"Very good. Let's begin tomorrow," Cai Jin said.

Liz asked curiously, "Censor, why aren't you taking action tonight?"

"I've traveled a distance. I need to rest for the night to maintain my optimal condition. So it's better to take action tomorrow," Cai Jin explained.

However, after Cai Jin left Qiao Siyuan's temporary office, he didn't rest. Instead, he summoned numerous bee-like Companion Beasts that flew in all directions.

Clearly, Cai Jin wasn't at ease with their defense. He had to do it again.

The people from the bureau are really very cautious. Zhou Wen saw Cai Jin circling the valley. He paid special attention to the woods and lake. He even summoned a water snake-like Companion Beast to search underwater.

Thankfully, Zhou Wen was prepared. He had dug a hole in the lake ahead of time and hid inside like a loach. It wasn't

easy for him to escape Cai Jin’s search.

Liz was very displeased with Cai Jin’s actions. “Censor Cai is doubting our abilities?”

However, Qiao Siyuan said indifferently, “It’s a serious matter. Better be safe than sorry.”

Cai Jin put up new defenses before returning to the temporary encampment to rest. It wasn’t until nightfall the next day that he got up and rushed to the lake with Qiao Siyuan and company.

The inspectors and various Companion Beasts had already surrounded the lake.

Zhou Wen suddenly thought of something. *Their blood sacrifice would only last for a short period of time. That would mean that they would have to bring a lot of blood into the lake?* Just the thought of the pool of blood made Zhou Wen feel uncomfortable.

However, there were inspectors and Companion Beasts surrounding the lake. It was too late for Zhou Wen to leave.

“Minister Qiao, let’s begin,” Cai Jin said to Qiao Siyuan after arriving by the lake and summoning his Companion Beasts to search the area again.

“Liz.” Qiao Siyuan gestured at Liz.

Liz immediately got the inspectors to take action. The inspectors opened the buckets and poured the blood into the lake from different spots.

The buckets of blood quickly dyed the lake water red. Each bucket weighed five kilograms. They brought more than

three hundred buckets of blood. If so much blood were to be poured in, the surroundings would be filled with a pungent smell of blood.

Zhou Wen felt terrible hiding in the water, but he could only endure it.

Thankfully, not long after, Zhou Wen saw the blood surge towards the center of the lake as though it was attracted by something.

Splash!

The Blood Oxypetalum surfaced out of the water. It greedily absorbed the blood in the water, and the snow-white petals quickly turned into the color of blood.

The blood in the lake was completely drained in less than an hour, restoring the lake to its former clarity.

However, the petals of the Blood Oxypetalum didn’t open, but there was a red glow in the flower bud.

Only then did Cai Jin open the box in his hand. Inside the huge box was a small bottle the size of a palm.

Cai Jin picked up the bottle and carefully opened it. A pair of eagle wings unfurled behind him as he flew to the sky above the Blood Oxypetalum. He aimed the blood in the bottle at the Blood Oxypetalum and poured it down.

There was only a drop of blood in the palm-sized metal alloy bottle. The drop of crystalline blood landed on the Blood Oxypetalum and quickly seeped in. Instantly, the blood-red color of the Blood Oxypetalum completely faded. The petals turned back to snow-white and it began to bloom.

The Blood Oxypetalum had already become as pure as a snow lotus without any tinge of blood. And within its petals, a sanguine light shot up into the sky carrying with it a rich sanguine aura.

Why is this different from the Mountain God's blood sacrifice? Zhou Wen was somewhat surprised when he saw this.

"Success." Cai Jin, Qiao Siyuan, and Liz were overjoyed.

Cai Jin flapped his wings and flew towards the Blood Oxypetalum. He wanted to snatch the seed produced by it.

Thorny flower vines shot out of the water and swept towards Cai Jin in the air. Cai Jin was truly capable, living up to his reputation as one of the four Censors.

His body circled around like an eagle as a sword of light flashed in his hand, severing the flower vines one by one.

What sword is that? Zhou Wen sized up the sword in Cai Jin's hand curiously.

The sword didn't have a corporeal blade—it was completely condensed from light. It looked a little like the legendary lightsaber, but a lightsaber would have a device that beamed out the laser. However, the sword was completely condensed from light without any equipment.

The flower vines had been sliced off, and Cai Jin successfully approached the petals. The Blood Oxypetalum was no longer able to resist, and Cai Jin was on the cusp of success.

Just as Cai Jin was about to remove the seed from the Blood Oxypetalum, the lake beside him suddenly exploded. A blurry figure tore out of the water and reached out into the

Blood Oxypetalum ahead of him, snatching away the ruby-like seed.

Cai Jin, Qiao Siyuan, and the other’s expressions changed drastically. Cai Jin roared angrily as the blade beam in his hand transformed into a shooting star that he thrust at Zhou Wen.

Zhou Wen wore the Jade Crystal Spirit Armor and held the Golden Battle God Halberd in his hand as he faced the sword of light.

Crack!

The sword of light was shattered by the Golden Battle God Halberd. The Golden Battle God Halberd’s Golden Divine Light tore through the void and stabbed Cai Jin in the chest.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 658 - Different Seeds

Chapter 658: Different Seeds

Translator: CKtalon

“Mythical weapon!” Cai Jin was alarmed as he summoned a Companion Beast to shield himself. At the same time, he quickly retreated.

Unfortunately, he was still too slow. The Golden Battle God Halberd pierced through the Companion Beast’s body and continually slammed into Cai Jin’s chest, piercing through it and impaling in the air.

“Who are you? Why are you antagonizing the Special Inspector Bureau?” Cai Jin glared at Zhou Wen as he coughed out blood.

Zhou Wen didn’t answer. With a flick of the Golden Battle God Halberd, Cai Jin’s body was instantly torn apart like a rag. He died and fell into the lake.

Liz turned pale with fright. She was dumbfounded. Cai Jin, one of the four Censors, had been killed in one strike. He didn’t even have the ability to resist, making her feel immense horror.

“Minister…” Liz turned her head and realized that Qiao Siyuan had disappeared. She had no idea when he had escaped.

Liz was instantly alarmed as she turned and ran.

The other inspectors also reacted. Seeing that Qiao Siyuan had run out of sight, they scrambled to escape.

Zhou Wen didn’t chase after the inspectors. He didn’t like killing, but this wasn’t why he didn’t chase after them.

The Special Inspector Bureau was a department. Even if he killed the inspectors, they could still recruit new inspectors. Killing them was meaningless.

Zhou Wen’s body moved and instantly appeared in front of Liz, blocking her path. The Golden Battle God Halberd pointed at her chest as the Golden Divine Light flickered, illuminating her pale face.

“I’m Liz from the Cape family. Let me go. You can receive anything you want,” Liz said in horror, not daring to move.

Zhou Wen looked at Liz and said indifferently, “Your red convertible sports car isn’t bad. It can still be driven, even after such a heavy collision.”

Liz’s pupils immediately constricted when she heard that. She looked at Zhou Wen in disbelief and shouted, “You are…”

Before she could finish her sentence, the Golden Battle God Halberd had pierced through her chest, causing blood to gush out of her mouth. She couldn’t finish her sentence.

Liz glared at Zhou Wen as though she couldn’t believe that she was about to die.

“Rest in peace. I’ll get the Cape family to accompany you soon.” Zhou Wen raised the Golden Battle God Halberd in his hand and Liz’s body was ripped apart.

Zhou Wen used Truth Listener to search his surroundings, but he didn’t find Qiao Siyuan. He did not know how he had escaped.

Knowing that he couldn’t stay here any longer, Zhou Wen ignored the ordinary inspectors and quickly left the Funiu Mountain Range.

After taking a detour out of Funiu Mountain Range, Zhou Wen secretly returned to campus.

After returning to his dorm, he realized that the chick and antelope were eyeing him covetously. Zhou Wen hurriedly took out the items he had prepared and handed them over. “I brought you something good. Take a look and see if you like it. It’s a desert specialty…”

After placating the two of them, Zhou Wen returned to his room and took out the two ruby-like Blood Oxypetalum seeds to compare them.

The two seeds looked about the same, but their sizes were different. The one he had just obtained was slightly bigger, and the color was deeper.

The color of the first one was relatively light, making it crystal clear.

Banana Fairy’s eyes lit up when she saw the two seeds. She flew to Zhou Wen’s side and looked at him pitifully.

“You want this?” Zhou Wen moved one of the seeds in his hand in front of Banana Fairy.

Banana Fairy shook her head and pointed at the Blood Oxypetalum seed in Zhou Wen’s other hand.

“Aren’t these two seeds the same?” Zhou Wen was somewhat surprised. The one Banana Fairy wanted was from Mountain God’s blood sacrifice.

After handing the seed to Banana Fairy, Banana Fairy immediately hugged it happily.

After she hugged the seed, the Blood Oxypetalum seed turned into red beams of light that surged towards Banana Fairy's body. Soon, it completely enveloped Banana Fairy and formed a red cocoon.

Is this an evolution? Zhou Wen was delighted. After Banana Fairy's evolution, she would advance to the Mythical stage.

Zhou Wen had a lot of feelings for Banana Fairy who had been following him for a long time. To be able to advance to the Mythical stage, no matter how much her combat strength improved, was a good thing for Zhou Wen.

It's the same Blood Oxypetalum seed. Why does Banana Fairy only want the one that Mountain God obtained from its sacrifice and not the other? Zhou Wen looked at the remaining Blood Oxypetalum seed in his hand and couldn't guess the reason.

He summoned the other Companion Beasts that hadn't evolved to see if they were interested in the Blood Oxypetalum seed. However, Demonic Neonate and Doctor Darkness weren't interested in the Blood Oxypetalum seed either.

Doctor Darkness didn't have an Evolvable attribute, but Zhou Wen felt that Doctor Darkness was very useful. He had always wanted him to evolve, but he couldn't find a way.

Instead, it was an Explosive Fiend Man. He was very interested in the Blood Oxypetalum seed and was eager to try it out.

“It’s your lucky day.” Zhou Wen threw the remaining Blood Oxypetalum seed at the Explosive Fiend Man.

Without any hesitation, the Explosive Fiend Man swallowed the Blood Oxypetalum seed. Not long after, his body underwent a strange change. It looked like he was about to begin evolving.

Explosive Fiend Man’s level was too low. Typically, it should be able to complete its evolution very quickly, but who knew that the Explosive Fiend Man had actually transformed into a Companion Egg? It looked like it would take some time before it completed its evolution.

Is it a problem with Explosive Fiend Man, or is there something wrong with the Blood Oxypetalum seed that the bureau produced? Zhou Wen was momentarily unsure as he could only store Explosive Fiend Man and Banana Fairy into the chaos space.

…

“The Blood Oxypetalum seed was snatched away. Cai Jin died in battle, and Liz’s fate is unknown? Qiao Siyuan, you still have the audacity to return?” Shen Yuchi looked at Qiao Siyuan with a sullen expression. He was livid.

The Special Inspector Bureau’s present situation wasn’t good to begin with. He had spent immense effort to obtain the blood essence of dimensional creatures, especially that one drop of divine blood. It was impossible for him to obtain a second drop. Not only was it gone, but Cai Jin and Liz’s lives were also lost.

Cai Jin’s death was fine, but Liz was a member of the Cape family. It would be troublesome to explain this matter to them.

“Director-General, I deserve death. However, if I didn’t bring back the enemy’s information, my death would be of zero value,” Qiao Siyuan said as he played a video. It was the video of Zhou Wen snatching the Blood Oxypetalum and killing Cai Jin.

“A Mythical weapon? It looks like something from the West District,” Shen Yuchi said as he looked at the Golden Battle God Halberd in Zhou Wen’s hand.

“I’ve already investigated it. This is the Mythical creature, Golden Battle God Halberd of the Metalwork Temple in the Peninsula of Gods. The members of the Family Clan of Gods had previously killed the Golden Battle God Halberd,” Qiao Siyuan said.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 659 - Fiend Man Evolution

Chapter 659: Fiend Man Evolution

Translator: CKtalon

“Are you telling me that this person comes from the Family Clan of Gods?” Shen Yuchi frowned.

“That’s not what I meant. Based on the information we currently have, the Family Clan of Gods has the highest chance of possessing the Golden Battle God Halberd,” Qiao Siyuan said.

Shen Yuchi looked at Qiao Siyuan for a while before saying meaningfully, “Your intelligence is timely.”

Qiao Siyuan’s expression didn’t change as he said, “It’s my job. Director-General, you handed such an important mission to me, but I screwed it up. I deserve death. Please mete out your punishment.”

Shen Yuchi looked at Qiao Siyuan and said with a smile, “Then go to the Cape family and explain this matter clearly.”

“Yes, I screwed up. I will definitely explain it to Senator Cape. It has nothing to do with our Special Inspector Bureau.” After bowing, Qiao Siyuan left Shen Yuchi’s office.

After Qiao Siyuan left, a person walked out of an inner room.

It was a woman in a suit and she looked very capable. However, she was wearing a hat that was pulled very low. With large sunglasses covering half of her face, it was almost impossible to tell her looks. However, her full, fair chin and red lips left a deep impression.

“Button, what do you think of this person?” Shen Yuchi asked the woman.

The woman called Button said calmly, “Do you mean the person in the video or Minister Qiao?”

“Both.” Shen Yuchi tapped his fingers rhythmically on the table as though he was thinking about something.

“The person in the video wears an unknown type of armor. The weapon is just as Minister Qiao said; it’s the Golden Battle God Halberd. The Metalwork Temple is a reserved area of the Family Clan of Gods. Their family does have a Golden Battle God Halberd, but that doesn’t mean anything. As for Minister Qiao, he’s very smart. He gave himself a chance to live and has given the Cape family an excuse. The Cape family probably won’t make things difficult for him when he goes to them,” said Button.

Shen Yuchi nodded. “Among the many ministers, Qiao Siyuan is the most capable. Furthermore, he keeps a low profile and doesn’t fight for fame or fortune. At the same time, he doesn’t even have many hobbies.”

“Do you think there’s something wrong with him?” Button asked.

“The operation this time was highly confidential. Very few people knew about it. Only Cai Jin, Qiao Siyuan, and Liz knew the details. Cai Jin was an extremely careful person. Under such circumstances, he was actually ambushed and had the Blood Oxypetalum seed snatched from him. There’s a high chance that there’s a traitor in our midst,” Shen Yuchi said after some thought.

“Do you want me to investigate?” Button asked.

“You don’t have to worry about that. Help me make a trip to the Family Clan of Gods and send a copy of the video to them,” Shen Yuchi said.

…

Zhou Wen grinded dungeons in his dorm the entire time, but strangely, he obtained plenty of the six skills such as the Room Solar Rabbit, but he failed to obtain a single Neck Gold Dragon.

With one of the Azure Dragon seven palaces missing, the other six were useless.

In the boundless Endless Sea of Stars, he also failed to find the Astral Combat Beasts. This dungeon was just too huge. Zhou Wen guessed that it would take him a month or two to clear it.

However, he could do nothing else if he continued grinding like this. It would take up all his time. Most of the dimensional creatures in the Endless Sea of Stars were useless. This left Zhou Wen vexed.

Wait a minute. There are actually twenty-eight Lunar Mansions in the Endless Sea of Stars. Then, is the distribution of the planets here related to the twenty-eight Lunar Mansions? Zhou Wen decided to check.

The twenty-eight Lunar Mansions was the ancient way of dividing the cosmos. They divided the area around the celestial sphere’s ecliptic plane and celestial equator into twenty-eight regions.

If the Endless Sea of Stars was really arranged in such a pattern, one could determine the location of the twenty-eight Lunar Mansions.

However, Zhou Wen's understanding of such knowledge was very limited. He only knew the name, but he knew nothing about the distribution.

He went online to search for some information, but there were many contradictory points on the Internet. Furthermore, they explained things unclearly. After reading for a long time, Zhou Wen roughly figured out the approximate distribution and locations of the twenty-eight Lunar Mansions.

After comparing it with the Endless Sea of Stars dungeon, he realized that some of the star charts in the Endless Sea were indeed similar to the twenty-eight Lunar Mansions. And the place where he had obtained the skills like the Room Solar Rabbit and Heart Lunar Fox was none other than the region of the Azure Dragon's seven palaces.

This region was extremely huge. After grinding for so long, Zhou Wen still failed to leave the range of the Azure Dragon's seven palaces.

It's indeed so. It's no wonder I only managed to obtain the Azure Dragon's seven palaces' skills. Zhou Wen roughly analyzed the situation and rushed to the stellar domain where the Neck Gold Dragon was. He planned on farming the Neck Gold Dragon to see what use those skills had.

However, the Neck Gold Dragon didn't appear that easily. He swept the entire area but saw nothing of the Neck Gold Dragon.

Don't tell me this is as difficult to farm as Poison Dragon Palm 3! He felt that things weren't looking good. He had six but was still lacking one. If it was really that difficult to farm for it, he didn't know when he would be able to have it drop.

How can I find Liu Yun? I have to ask which small planet the so-called Astral Combat Beast is on. Zhou Wen was extremely vexed. His knowledge of Liu Yun was very limited. He didn't have his phone number or address, so he didn't know how to find him.

After grinding for a few days, Zhou Wen was on the brink of giving up. It was indeed difficult to farm for Neck Gold Dragons.

Crack!

The evolving Explosive Fiend Man finally broke out of its shell. The evolved Explosive Fiend Man was still like a Tesla Trooper. It wore heavy armor, and even the pipes were black. There was also a crystal cylinder on its back. One could see something red inside, making it look very strange.

Zhou Wen looked at the Explosive Fiend Man's stats.

Explosive Fiend Man: Legendary (Evolvable)

Life Providence: Unlawful

Strength: 21

Speed: 21

Constitution: 21

Essence Energy: 21

Talent Skill: Death List, Time-Blast

Companion Form: Self-detonation Device

His stats didn't change much just as Zhou Wen had expected. Zhou Wen focused on studying the Explosive

Fiend Man’s Life Providence.

Unlawful: Unrestricted by laws for a period of time.

Zhou Wen couldn’t help but be alarmed. This Life Providence wasn’t restricted by rules or laws. This annotation implied that he was rather powerful, but Zhou Wen didn’t know what the actual effects were.

Before Zhou Wen could experiment with the Explosive Fiend Man’s Life Providence, the Explosive Fiend Man began evolving again, turning into an egg once more.

From the looks of it, the power of the Blood Oxypetalum seed is a little too potent. It actually allowed Explosive Fiend Man to continuously evolve. I wonder where the bureau’s blood came from. Zhou Wen also wanted to get one himself when he saw how effective the Blood Oxypetalum seed was.

Just as he was thinking, his phone suddenly rang. It was Li Xuan.

“Old Zhou, quickly go online and watch the battle. A Companion Beast is challenging Primordial Sword Immortal. It’s the Xia family’s Companion Beast,” Li Xuan said excitedly.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 660 - Count of the Wind

Chapter 660: Count of the Wind

Has the Xia family finally taken action? Zhou Wen hurriedly unlocked his phone and randomly found a video website. He found the live broadcast.

The scene was of the cube's screen where a white-haired man in black levitated above the cube's arena.

However, the man's lower body was a snake. The black clothes on his body flapped amidst zero wind. Even his long white hair slowly fluttered in the air.

Count of the Wind... Zhou Wen was immediately shocked when he saw the humanoid Companion Beast's name.

Count of the Wind and the Lord of the Rain were famous existences who had participated in the Zhuolu battle. He never expected the Xia family to have a terrifying Companion Beast like Count of the Wind.

That's not right. I didn't find Count of the Wind and the Lord of the Rain in Zhuolu. Where did the Xia family's Count of the Wind come from? Zhou Wen frowned in thought.

Logically speaking, Count of the Wind should be in Zhuolu, but it wasn't to be found. Furthermore, the Xia family's possession of Count of the Wind made Zhou Wen feel that something was amiss.

"Old Zhou, I'm here. Quickly open the door," Li Xuan shouted from outside.

“Why are you here now?” Zhou Wen opened the door and saw Li Xuan holding his phone, watching the live stream as well.

“It’s boring to watch such a battle alone. Did you see Count of the Wind? Although I don’t know his combat strength, his looks way too cool. As expected of a famous existence in the mythical battle,” Li Xuan said as he looked inside. Seeing the antelope sleeping on the sofa, he carefully walked in and pulled a chair to sit down.

“It’s definitely not as simple as a probe if the Xia family is taking action.” Just as Zhou Wen was speaking, he suddenly saw a flash on the combat platform. Primordial Sword Immortal had already charged over and accepted the challenge.

Primordial Sword Immortal was straightforward. After appearing, the ruby on its hilt emitted sword beams that transformed into a rain of swords that charged at Count of the Wind.

Count of the Wind floated in the air as a formless wind thrust his body. He fanned the sword rain with the peacock feathered fan in his hand.

The formless wind immediately reversed the sword rain’s direction and collided with the sword beams behind it. Immediately, an explosion sounded as the sky was filled with sword flashes.

A sword hum resounded through the void as Primordial Sword Immortal automatically unsheathed its scabbard and slashed at Count of the Wind with terrifying speed.

Count of the Wind’s body drifted as though he was being carried by the wind. He easily dodged Primordial Sword

Immortal’s attack.

However, Primordial Sword Immortal refused to give up. It slashed at Count of the Wind again and again as sword beams crisscrossed, as though they were about to tear the world apart.

The Golden Overlord Sword and Primordial Sword Immortal were considered similar Companion Beasts, but the Golden Overlord Sword was much weaker in comparison.

Primordial Sword Immortal wasn’t just slashing. Its every move was a profound sword technique.

It was a real sword technique, not an Essence Energy Skill. Zhou Wen could even sense the astonishing sword intent. Just the sword intent alone made Zhou Wen sigh at his inferiority.

Even his Transcendent Flying Immortal was inferior to that sword’s realm.

“Holy sh*t, how can this be? A sword actually has such a terrifying sword technique and sword intent. Who can beat it?” Li Xuan also noticed the uniqueness of the situation as he exclaimed in surprise.

Zhou Wen nodded with a heavy expression. Although Li Xuan appeared as carefree as usual, Zhou Wen could sense that he cared a lot about Count of the Wind.

Zhou Wen also understood why Li Xuan cared so much about it. Li Mobai had once said that the reason their talented eldest brother died so early was because of the Xia family.

Li Xuan treated the Xia family as a conjectured enemy, which was why he was so concerned.

Count of the Wind rode the wind and floated amidst the shocking barrage of sword techniques. The terrifying Primordial Sword Immortal was unable to injure him at all.

From beginning to end, Count of the Wind only dodged and didn't counterattack. He seemed to be observing the strength of Primordial Sword Immortal.

What a powerful movement technique... Zhou Wen's eyes lit up when he saw Count of the Wind's movement technique.

Count of the Wind's movement technique was different from his Transcendent Flying Immortal despite all of them being called movement techniques.

Count of the Wind's movement techniques were extremely elegant. No matter how fast Primordial Sword Immortal's sword techniques were, they were unable to even touch his clothes.

Count of the Wind looked like a god of the wind. The sword winds brought by Primordial Sword Immortal made his body drift about with the sword wind. Therefore, no matter how fast Primordial Sword Immortal was, it couldn't touch him. Count of the Wind was simply riding the wind.

I wonder if Banana Fairy will be as strong as Count of the Wind when she evolves to the Mythical stage. Zhou Wen was somewhat looking forward to evolving Banana Fairy who was of the same type.

After failing to hit Count of the Wind, Primordial Sword Immortal suddenly stopped attacking and flew back into its scabbard.

Ever since the stone sword was unsheathed, the scabbard had been floating there without any movement. At this moment, the scabbard spewed out immortal beams.

Soon, the immortal glow condensed into a humanoid immortal figure. The immortal figure held the scabbard in one hand and the stone sword in the other. It looked at Count of the Wind from afar.

So this is the true face of Primordial Sword Immortal. The previous battles weren't enough to force out his true body. Zhou Wen stared at Primordial Sword Immortal. Although he could only see an immortal silhouette that resembled a sword spirit, the powerful sword intent on him was enough to shock anyone.

Just by standing in midair with the sword in hand, he gave off an aura of supremacy. It was as if he could slice apart the entire world with just one strike.

What domineering sword intent... Zhou Wen stared at Primordial Sword Immortal. Such domineering sword intent was very similar to Transcendent Flying Immortal's domineering aspect.

However, it was even more domineering than Transcendent Flying Immortal. It was also more natural and had a higher realm.

On the other side, Count of the Wind remained calm and composed. He seemed to be walking leisurely as though he didn't care about the terror that Primordial Sword Immortal was unleashing.

However, Zhou Wen could sense that Count of the Wind wasn't underestimating Primordial Sword Immortal. It was

just that his realm was as such—a complete disregard of everything in the world.

Even if all the deities in the world were his enemies, he could still remain ever so calm even on the brink of death.

Zhou Wen looked at Primordial Sword Immortal before looking at Count of the Wind. He seemed to have figured something out, that he felt two eyes were insufficient.

Suddenly, Primordial Sword Immortal moved. The sword moved like a ray of light, as though it had sliced through half the sky. It was so fast that one could only see the sword’s glow and not see his movements.

Count of the Wind also moved. He transformed into a gust of wind that could no longer be seen with the naked eye. He rushed to face off with Primordial Sword Immortal’s sword glow.

Boom!

A cool breeze met the sword glow as a terrifying shockwave rose up.

The fan and sword constantly clashed, but most people only saw light blasts. They couldn’t see the two Companion Beasts, much less their techniques.

Zhou Wen couldn’t even keep up despite his eyesight. All he could do was switch to the Small Perfection of Wisdom Sutra and use the Eight Perfections Wisdom and Hell King Life Soul to strengthen his vision. Even then he could barely make out what was happening.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it

as soon as possible.

Chapter 661 - Evenly Matched

Chapter 661: Evenly Matched

Translator: CKtalon

Li Xuan couldn’t see the trajectory of the battle either. All he could do was summon his Life Soul. His body was immediately covered by the carapace, and his eyes had an eye mask similar to that of a certain insect.

With the augmentation of the Life Soul, the battle scene Li Xuan saw slowed down significantly.

“Amazing. One doesn’t need to be afraid of potent strength or ruthless skill, but one needs to be afraid of such a highly-intelligent Companion Beast. For a Companion Beast to have such high intelligence, it’s impossible for a Mythical Companion Beast of the same level to win against them. It’s similar to a bug-like existence in games,” Li Xuan said.

“That’s right. Intelligence is indeed a hidden attribute of a Companion Beast. A Companion Beast with high intelligence is indeed at an advantage in battle.” Zhou Wen nodded in agreement.

He also liked to use highly-intelligent Companion Beasts like Banana Fairy, Demonic Neonate, and Doctor Darkness. Even if Zhou Wen didn’t give them orders, they knew when and what to do.

Sometimes, their decisions exceeded Zhou Wen’s expectations.

As for the brainless representatives, like Tyrant Behemoth, Six-Winged, and Golden Battle God Halberd, they relied on their instincts to fight. Their intelligence was much lower.

It couldn’t be said that this was bad. If one’s strength was strong enough, such combat instinct could push their strength to the limit and erupt with 120% of their combat strength.

However, if one were to encounter an evenly matched opponent, such brainless Companion Beasts would be at a disadvantage.

However, Zhou Wen’s mind wasn’t on these Companion Beasts. He was even more interested in Primordial Sword Immortal’s sword techniques and Count of the Wind’s movement techniques. He was completely immersed in them as he sensed the two completely different approaches.

One was about claiming supremacy, while the other was about being calm and composed. The two were extremes.

And these two extremes were similar to the one Zhou Wen had when he first understood the divine Transcendent Flying Immortal.

Count of the Wind and Primordial Sword Immortal were evenly matched. Neither of them had the upper hand, but up to now, they had yet to use their Wheel of Destiny.

Ordinary citizens were fidgeting in anxiety because they could only see the glow. They couldn’t see the details of the battle. Only a few Epic experts with visual abilities could see the battle clearly.

Thankfully, modern filming equipment was already very advanced. There would be slow-motion replays in the future. Coupled with the commentary, most people would be able to understand it clearly.

Zhou Wen was engrossed in watching when Count of the Wind suddenly retreated from the battle. Without any warning, he admitted defeat and left the battlefield.

“Why did he admit defeat? The victory clearly wasn’t decided yet,” Li Xuan said in a daze.

As Zhou Wen had been taking in their sword techniques and movement techniques, he had a deeper understanding of them than Li Xuan. He shook his head and said, “Count of the Wind and Primordial Sword Immortal are very close in every aspect. If they continue fighting, they can only use their Wheels of Destiny. The Xia family clearly doesn’t want to go all out yet. It’s just a probe, so they have chosen to give up.”

“What a pity. Such a divine-level battle is much more interesting than watching those Strength-type Companion Beasts fight,” Li Xuan said.

Zhou Wen also felt that he hadn’t had enough. He got up and said, “Let’s go to the training grounds. I gained some insight from watching their battle. I liked to experiment to see if I’m right or wrong.”

Upon hearing Zhou Wen’s words, Li Xuan agreed immediately. The two of them went to the training grounds and found an independent training room.

“I will try to imitate Primordial Sword Immortal’s sword techniques. Help me check to see if it’s correct.” Zhou Wen picked up a practice sword and recalled Primordial Sword Immortal’s sword intent as he slashed at Li Xuan.

“Interesting, but it’s not domineering enough. You still have some reservations about this strike. You should be more

resolute.” Li Xuan didn’t take out his weapon as he used his carapace to block the practice sword.

“Is this enough?” Zhou Wen slashed out again. At the same time, he tried his best to fuse his emotions into the Primordial Sword Immortal’s sword intent realm.

“Not enough… Not enough… It’s still not enough…” Li Xuan constantly fought Zhou Wen. As Zhou Wen’s sword techniques became faster and faster, he no longer had the time to say that it was inadequate. Every time Zhou Wen attacked, Li Xuan would only say no.

Zhou Wen gradually became one with the will, as his intent fused with the sword. The feeling of using the sword grew stronger and stronger. He gradually realized that the dominance of Primordial Sword Immortal wasn’t because his sword techniques were fast and ruthless, but because it attacked the key spots. It prevented the opponent from counterattacking, so there was no need for defense.

Clang!

Zhou Wen’s practice sword slashed at Li Xuan. Although he had only used a practice sword, he had actually left a sword mark on Li Xuan’s carapace because the sword beam was too powerful.

“Interesting. Again.” Li Xuan was very excited.

Zhou Wen was also feeling excited as he brandished his sword without any hesitation to slash at Li Xuan. The more he fought, the more he reveled in the feeling of this sword technique.

Defense? What the hell was that? I’ll slash out with my sword. Those who follow me will live, those who oppose me

will die. There was no need for defense. With one sword in hand, I'm the best in the world.

The more Zhou Wen fought, the more arrogant he became. He wasn't usually an arrogant person, but under the influence of the sword intent, his attacks became more and more violent.

Crack! Crack!

Li Xuan wasn't able to completely block Zhou Wen's sword technique. Sword marks appeared over his carapace, but the armor was immediately restored to its original state upon cracking. Its self-healing speed was unbelievably fast.

Clang!

Zhou Wen slashed at Li Xuan again. The practice sword made of special rubber couldn't withstand the domineering sword beam and shattered.

"My turn." Li Xuan leaped up and drew a practice sword from the weapon rack. He slashed at Zhou Wen, using an identical sword technique that Zhou Wen had just used.

Zhou Wen was alarmed. He knew that Li Xuan's Life Soul could sense the enemy's techniques and gain experience from suffering injuries, but he never expected that he could learn the techniques that humans used.

Li Xuan's strike wasn't much worse than the one he had used.

However, this made Zhou Wen even more excited. "Don't worry about me. Use all your strength."

Zhou Wen didn’t have a carapace protecting him. Although Li Xuan’s sword technique was right, it didn’t have that domineering aura. That was why Zhou Wen felt confident.

“Alright.” Li Xuan didn’t hold back any further. He used all the experience he had just absorbed from his injuries in battle. A domineering sword beam immediately filled the sword.

Zhou Wen recalled Count of the Wind’s movement technique and concept and began mimicking his movement technique to circle around Li Xuan.

Movement techniques were Zhou Wen’s forte. They were easier to use than sword techniques, so he got into the groove faster than with the sword technique.

…

Gulli and Sadie had just finished watching the battle between Count of the Wind and Primordial Sword Immortal. Sadie’s Eye of Odin had seen more things. She wanted to study the battle between Count of the Wind and Primordial Sword Immortal with Gulli, so they had come to the training grounds.

They also wanted to find a private training room, but they realized that there were already people inside. Just as they were feeling depressed, they suddenly heard the whistling sound of sword aura coming from the training room beside them.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 662 - The Talented Xuanwen Club

Chapter 662: The Talented Xuanwen Club

“This sword aura sound…” Sadie was alarmed when she heard the sound of the sword aura. She turned around and walked to the door of the training room. She tried pushing the door, only to realize that it was locked.

However, through the crack in the door, she could see the situation inside.

Sadie approached the door crack and looked inside. She was immediately alarmed.

“Sis, what are you doing? This isn’t good, right?” Gulli looked at Sadie strangely.

“Come and take a look.” Sadie pulled Gulli over and got him to stand in front of the door crack. He looked inside and saw two people sparring.

“Why does this sword technique look so familiar…” Gulli muttered when he saw Li Xuan’s sword technique.

“What’s with that brain of yours? That sword technique is the sword technique of Primordial Sword Immortal. And the movement technique Zhou Wen uses is Count of the Wind’s movement technique. Have you forgotten them after just watching them?” Sadie said.

“Ah, it’s true. That’s the Primordial Sword Immortal’s sword technique. But how could that person use Primordial Sword

Immortal’s sword technique? Could he be the owner of Primordial Sword Immortal?” Gulli said in surprise.

“My dear brother, you are really hopelessly stupid. Zhou Wen is using Count of the Wind’s movement technique. Does that make him Count of the Wind’s master?” Sadie said helplessly.

“That’s right. Isn’t Count of the Wind from the Xia family? How did he become Zhou Wen’s?” Gulli was puzzled.

Sadie was immediately rendered speechless. All she could do was say to Gulli, “Zhou Wen isn’t Count of the Wind’s master. The other person isn’t the owner of Primordial Sword Immortal either. They are the same as us. They watched the battle between Primordial Sword Immortal and Count of the Wind and learned Primordial Sword Immortal’s sword technique and Count of the Wind’s movement technique.”

“They learned the sword technique and movement technique from simply watching the battle? How is this possible? Even you have to do plenty of analysis and simulation to learn a portion of it despite having the Eye of Odin. How long has it been? Yet, they have already learned the sword technique and movement technique. Isn’t this too unbelievable?” Gulli widened his eyes in disbelief.

“It’s indeed hard to believe, but they’ve done it.” Sadie looked at Zhou Wen and Li Xuan with a complicated expression.

Before coming to Sunset College, she was confident that she could defeat Zhou Wen and avenge Lance.

However, after coming here, Sadie realized that she was far from Zhou Wen’s match. Not only was she no match for him,

but she couldn’t even defeat Feng Qiuyan, who claimed to be learning from him.

The person who was fighting Zhou Wen inside was similarly no weaker than her, and the person was clearly not Feng Qiuyan.

How many terrifying geniuses are there hidden in Sunset College? Sadie’s expression was extremely complicated. The more she watched the battle, the more terrified she felt.

Although Li Xuan’s sword technique and Zhou Wen’s movement technique weren’t at the level of Primordial Sword Immortal and Count of the Wind, they already possessed the charm of the two. They had truly understood the meaning behind the sword technique and movement technique. It wasn’t just a simple imitation.

Boom!

The practice sword in Li Xuan’s hand failed to withstand the powerful explosion of the sword aura. The two of them could only stop.

“Old Zhou, are you going to continue training?” Li Xuan retracted his Life Soul and revealed his true body.

Gulli and Sadie widened their eyes. They never expected that the person who used such a sword technique was actually the frivolous-looking, foppish Li Xuan.

“Forget it. It’s pointless. I’m not continuing,” Zhou Wen said as he shook his head.

Zhou Wen had already understood the profundity of the movement technique and sword technique. However, just imitating them was useless. He needed to fuse the

movement technique and sword technique into his system. This wasn’t something that could be done in a short period of time. He needed time to think.

Sadie and Gulli clearly misunderstood Zhou Wen’s intentions. They believed that Zhou Wen was saying that this sword technique and movement technique were too simple that they were boring him.

If anyone else had said that, Sadie and Gulli would think that they were arrogant and ignorant.

Zhou Wen had only just watched the battle between Count of the Wind and Primordial Sword Immortal. Yet, in such a short period of time, he had already comprehended the charm of Count of the Wind’s movement technique. Such a genius could say anything without going overboard.

Seeing that the two of them were about to come out, Sadie and Gulli hurriedly hid to the side. After the two of them walked out of the training grounds, Sadie said, “Sunset College is really filled with all kinds of hidden talent, especially the Xuanwen Club. I never expected that the usually frivolous Li Xuan would have such strength and talent. In the past, when we were in the North District, we were like frogs in a well, looking down on young people who weren’t from the six families. However, Zhou Wen, Feng Qiuyan, and Li Xuan aren’t any worse than the top geniuses of the six families. I wonder how many geniuses there are in Sunset College.”

“They’re really too strong. We made no mistake coming. With such opponents, I think we can improve faster,” Gulli said excitedly.

Sadie nodded with a heavy expression. In the past, the Federation’s geniuses came from the six families. However,

with the development of the times, more and more geniuses emerged from the ordinary families. The influence of the six families was gradually declining.

…

After this battle, all the major media outlets gave a slow-motion video of the battle. Furthermore, there were explanations and professional analyses. It left everyone watching with relish.

The popularity of Tyrant Behemoth and Orochi’s battle was completely overshadowed.

Although Tyrant Behemoth was strong, its intelligence was lacking. Its battle with Orochi was too simple and crude. It was far inferior to the battle between Primordial Sword Immortal and Count of the Wind.

People were discussing who would have been stronger if they had fought to the end—Count of the Wind or Primordial Sword Immortal.

Some people supported Uncle Feng, but more people believed that Primordial Sword Immortal was the strongest. Otherwise, why would Count of the Wind admit defeat?

The other families understood the Xia family’s intent. The Xia family had already probed the strength of Primordial Sword Immortal. They probably wouldn’t make a move for the time being. It was up to them now.

Including the overseas demons and the six families, the various factions were analyzing the abilities of Primordial Sword Immortal and Count of the Wind. They were already eager to try.

Now, other than not knowing what Primordial Sword Immortal’s Wheel of Destiny was, Primordial Sword Immortal’s abilities were mostly analyzed.

Furthermore, based on all sorts of evidence, its Wheel of Destiny was very likely an offensive miracle.

On this basis, the various families came up with a strategy to deal with the situation. It was only a matter of time before they challenged Primordial Sword Immortal’s number one spot.

Zhou Wen wasn’t idle either. When he returned, he informed An Sheng of his encounter with Chu He in Netherworld City and got him to help investigate Chu He and his family.

An Sheng placed a lot of importance on this matter and personally went to Chu He’s hometown. Now, An Sheng had finally sent the news back.

According to An Sheng’s investigations, Chu He’s wife and daughter had always believed that Chu He had gone to Zhuolu. They had no idea that Chu He had gone to the desert.

Furthermore, ever since Chu He had left home and gone to Zhuolu, he had never contacted them again. He hadn’t communicated with them, nor had he written any letters.

After various investigations, An Sheng came to the conclusion that Chu He had gone to Zhuolu and had never been to the desert.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 663 - Metal Walnut Gets Gnawed Through

Chapter 663: Metal Walnut Gets Gnawed Through

Translator: CKtalon

“Are you saying that the Chu He I met in Netherworld City is a fake?” Zhou Wen asked after some thought.

“No, it’s the opposite. I think the Chu He who went to Zhuolu is a fake,” An Sheng said with certainty. “From the information I obtained, everything about the Chu He that went to Zhuolu is perfect. However, this ends up making me feel that something is amiss.”

After a pause, An Sheng continued, “According to my investigations, Professor Chu He studied the Taklamakan desert in the past. In the beginning, he indeed rejected the invitation from the expedition team, but for some reason, he later agreed. He then went to Zhuolu. However, during his time in Zhuolu, he never contacted his family. This makes me find it a little abnormal.”

“In other words, someone really did some tampering?” Zhou Wen asked.

“We can’t be sure yet. If someone really is behind this, their force is definitely extraordinary. The other party has done it so cleanly that we can’t find any problems. If you hadn’t encountered Chu He, who had already died, in Netherworld City, I’m afraid no one would have expected that Chu He, who went to Zhuolu, would be a fake,” An Sheng said.

“How’s Chu He’s wife and daughter?” Zhou Wen asked.

“Their situation will become very dangerous after our investigations. To ensure their safety, I’ve already brought them back,” An Sheng said.

From An Sheng’s tone, Zhou Wen knew that An Sheng had definitely used some extreme means.

“If it’s possible, take good care of them. As long as it’s not an unreasonable request, try your best to satisfy them. I’ll be in charge of all expenses,” Zhou Wen said.

“Don’t worry. They have already been brought into the manor by Madam. Madam values them very much,” An Sheng said.

“That’s good.” Zhou Wen knew that Ouyang Lan was as concerned about the former principal as he was. Since Chu He’s wife and daughter had gone to her, Ouyang Lan definitely wouldn’t let anything happen to them.

After ending the call with An Sheng, Zhou Wen was considering what he could do.

I’m far inferior to An Sheng when it comes to investigating such matters. It’s useless even if I go. If someone really is doing something behind our backs, they are definitely a powerful force to do it so seamlessly. Even if we find out the truth, we will need a powerful force to resolve the problem. It’s better for me to raise my strength first. Zhou Wen felt that what he needed to do now was to become stronger.

Ding! Just as he cleared the Metalwork Temple dungeon, another Golden Battle God Halberd dropped.

How easily does this thing drop? It’s already the fourth one. Zhou Wen was somewhat speechless.

However, being able to have another Mythical Companion Beast was also an increase in combat strength. If he really managed to obtain a few hundred Golden Battle God Halberds, he might be able to flatten the six Federation families with just Golden Battle God Halberds.

Just as he was about to continue grinding, his phone rang. He opened it and saw that it was from The Thearch.

“I’ll make a deal with you. Are you interested?”

“What deal?” Zhou Wen replied.

“I can let you obtain a Companion Beast. That Companion Beast can help you defeat Primordial Sword Immortal and Companion Beast, but in exchange, you have to give me the divine fruit after obtaining it.” The Thearch sent another message.

“What benefits do I have if I give you the divine fruit?” Zhou Wen asked.

“Isn’t it enough for you to obtain a Companion Beast that can help you defeat Primordial Sword Immortal?” The Thearch asked.

“What kind of Companion Beast is that?” Zhou Wen asked.

“Come to Chess Mountain. You will know when you get it,” said The Thearch.

“Don’t tell me you want me to enter Deer Terrace Pavilion again?” Zhou Wen deliberately sent a message in an unwilling tone.

In fact, Zhou Wen did want to enter Deer Terrace Pavilion. In-game, he could only enter the ancient building in Deer

Terrace Pavilion, but he couldn’t enter the platform below.

Now, Zhou Wen really wanted to find another way to enter Deer Terrace Pavilion other than the gap in reality.

“How can you obtain benefits without entering Deer Terrace Pavilion?” The Thearch asked.

“It’s too disgusting to enter Deer Terrace Pavilion underwater. Is there no other way of entry?” Zhou Wen wanted to find out other ways to enter Deer Terrace Pavilion so that there was no need for him to trade with The Thearch.

To his surprise, The Thearch was tight-lipped. She only replied, “Don’t worry. I’ll let you enter Deer Terrace Pavilion easily this time.”

Zhou Wen asked a few more questions, but The Thearch didn’t say a word. She only said that he would know when the time came.

Zhou Wen was somewhat hesitant. He naturally wanted a Companion Beast that could defeat Primordial Sword Immortal, but he wasn’t willing to take the risk at Deer Terrace Pavilion in reality.

The Thearch was just too mysterious. Zhou Wen wasn’t willing to have too much contact with her.

Forget it. I won’t go. Even without The Thearch’s Companion Beast, I have a chance of defeating Primordial Sword Immortal. Zhou Wen had carefully studied the battle between Count of the Wind and Primordial Sword Immortal.

Tyrant Behemoth still had a chance of defeating Primordial Sword Immortal, but that was under the premise that

Primordial Sword Immortal’s Wheel couldn’t kill Tyrant Behemoth.

As he was pondering, he suddenly felt fluctuations in the chaos space.

Could it be that Explosive Fiend Man’s evolution has completed? Zhou Wen hurriedly checked the chaos space.

However, he realized that Explosive Fiend Man hadn’t evolved. It was still in its egg form.

That fluctuation was actually coming from the metal walnut.

The tiny beast had been nibbling at the metal walnut all this time. After so long, it had left a deep bite mark on the metal walnut. From where it was nibbling, it seemed to have been bitten through. A crack as thin as a strand of hair appeared on the surface of the crack, revealing a white color.

As for the fluctuations Zhou Wen felt, they were actually emitted from the metal walnut. The fluctuations seemed to be felt through his consciousness, but Zhou Wen actually felt as though it was asking for his help.

Could it be that there’s a dimensional creature in this metal walnut? Zhou Wen took it out from the chaos space.

The little beast continued to bite at the metal walnut. It looked like it wouldn’t stop until it bit right through.

Zhou Wen used his hand to pull it, but its claws gripped the metal walnut tightly, unwilling to let go.

Zhou Wen had no choice but to knock it out. After the beast fainted, its paws continued holding on tightly. Zhou Wen

had to let it hold the metal walnut as he reached out to touch the crack that the beast had bitten open.

White matter emerged from the crack. Zhou Wen touched it and immediately felt his Essence Energy flow into the metal walnut. The feeling was similar to incubating a Companion Egg.

The thing inside the metal walnut is actually a Companion Egg? Zhou Wen was alarmed as he allowed the metal walnut to absorb his Essence Energy.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 664 - Dragon Gate Anomaly

Chapter 664: Dragon Gate Anomaly

Translator: CKtalon

Crack!

As the Essence Energy was absorbed, the outer shell of the metal walnut split into two along the crack. A white ball-shaped object rolled out and transformed into a stream of light that shot at Zhou Wen's body, turning into a white, circular tattoo.

When he summoned the Companion Beast, it was about the size of a football. He held it in his hand and pinched it. It was soft and bouncy, similar to the feeling of a bouncy ball. Maybe even softer.

Zhou Wen casually pinched the Companion Beast into various strange shapes. Once he released his grip, it would return to its original state.

This Companion Beast is rather fun. I wonder what use it has? Zhou Wen didn't receive any information regarding the Companion Beast, so he felt somewhat puzzled.

Typically, after contracting a Companion Beast, one would receive some vague information, such as the name, level, etc.

However, this one didn't give any of that. Zhou Wen could only take out his phone to read its information. He was still thinking, *Such a special Companion Beast must have a very special ability, right? However, it absorbed rather little Essence Energy. Its level shouldn't be high.*

After placing the white Companion Beast in the viewfinder, Zhou Wen clicked on its information and ended up petrified.

Tai Sui: Mortal (Evolvable)

Strength: 11

Speed: 11

Constitution: 11

Essence Energy: 11

Talent Skill: Earth Escape

Companion Form: Mimicry

*Holy sh*t, this darn thing is Tai Sui…* Zhou Wen regretted it so much that he felt a kick in his guts. If he had known this would happen, he wouldn't have asked for trouble. He would have let the little beast eat it.

Thankfully, it's only at the Mortal stage. It doesn't seem to have any Life Providence or skills like a Jinxes Master or Misfortune. Zhou Wen carefully looked at the introduction and realized that it wasn't as bad as he imagined.

However, Tai Sui could actually evolve. This was basically the specialty of a Mythical Companion Beast. If he continued evolving it, it was unknown if it would have abilities like a Jinxes Master or Misfortune.

I read online that Tai Sui has a Life Providence like Misfortune and Bad Luck. However, it seems like the photos taken online of those Tai Sui are a little different from this one. Zhou Wen searched the pictures online and compared

them to the Tai Sui in front of him. They were indeed different.

Those Tai Suis looked ugly and were either black or yellow. They weren't as smooth and white as Zhou Wen's—it looked like white jade.

It's also possible that my Tai Sui is different from theirs. Mine doesn't bring misfortune, Zhou Wen thought.

Tai Sui bounced around on the ground like a white bouncy ball. Its fleshy look made it very interesting.

Just as Zhou Wen was looking at Tai Sui, the tiny beast woke up. When it got up and saw the two halves of the metal walnut on the ground, it immediately rushed over.

However, when it realized that there was nothing inside, it was stunned. It turned its head and saw Tai Sui in front of Zhou Wen and immediately pounced over.

Tai Sui seemed a little afraid of it as it immediately jumped behind Zhou Wen.

Zhou Wen reached out to grab the fur on the tiny beast's back and lifted it up. The little beast desperately brandished its tiny claws as though it wanted to fight Zhou Wen to the death.

However, its claws were just too short. No matter how hard it tried, it couldn't touch Zhou Wen.

"Come, be good. This is for you to eat… You're not eating it? What about this?" Zhou Wen took out something to coax the little beast.

Finally, when Zhou Wen gave it an Epic Companion Egg, the little beast angrily sprawled on it and ate it. As it chewed, it glared at Zhou Wen and Tai Sui as though it was indignant.

Zhou Wen fed some Companion Eggs to Tai Sui. Tai Sui didn’t seem picky at all, but its eating speed was very slow.

Its body wrapped around the Companion Egg like liquid. It didn’t manage to digest it even after a long time.

After trying out Tai Sui’s Earth Escape skill, he realized that it was very useful. As long as it touched the ground, it could instantly move anywhere.

However, because Tai Sui’s level was too low, it couldn’t escape too far.

As for its companion form, it was somewhat magical. It could simulate the companion form of other Companion Beasts. It could transform into armor, weapons, and other forms. It could even simulate the appearance of a Companion Beast.

However, it only simulated its appearance, its essence didn’t change. It didn’t possess the ability of other Companion Beasts. It looked like a plasticine toy.

Although Tai Sui doesn’t have the legendary Misfortune, it doesn’t seem to be of any use. Realizing that Tai Sui was useless, Zhou Wen let it slowly eat and evolve. He wanted to see if it would be of any use in the future.

“Young Master Wen, are you at school?” An Sheng called.

“Yes,” Zhou Wen answered.

“It’s best you don’t leave the school for the next few days,” An Sheng said.

“What happened?” Zhou Wen was somewhat puzzled.

“Recently, Dragon Gate Grotto has been a little abnormal. According to Chancellor Leng’s judgment, Dragon Gate Grotto might encounter a large-scale breakout of creatures. When the time comes, we will do our best to prevent the breakout creatures from entering the city. As we don’t know how many breakout creatures will appear, we might need your help as a last resort,” An Sheng said.

“Alright, I’ll stay in school for the next few days.” After a pause, Zhou Wen asked, “Does this mean that the other dimensional zones will also experience a large-scale breakout?”

“We are closely monitoring them. From the looks of it, we haven’t discovered anything similar. The situation in Dragon Gate Grotto has changed. Perhaps something special is affecting them,” An Sheng said. “According to Chancellor Leng, some of the break-out creatures outside also came to Dragon Gate Grotto. It’s still a mystery what’s attracting them.”

When Zhou Wen heard that, he immediately thought of the giant golden bird above Dragon Gate Grotto. Back then, it was only when Chancellor Leng personally appeared that the giant golden bird retreated.

Not long after Zhou Wen received the news, Dragon Gate Grotto was sealed off by the military. In the next two days, the school had organized a mobilization meeting. The students had also been assigned some logistic work to assist the military in preventing the large-scale breakout.

The entire school’s atmosphere became abnormally tense. Zhou Wen, Li Xuan, and company were assigned work. In such a situation, no one could stay out of it.

That night, a roar that sounded like a cow’s moo came from Dragon Gate Grotto. The sound was soul-stirring. The ground near Dragon Gate Grotto shook as though there was a slight earthquake. The roar lasted the entire night, but nothing came out.

However, this cast a shadow on everyone’s hearts. This was because they were certain that something had really happened to Dragon Gate Grotto.

“Old Zhou, if all of these dimensional zones suffer a breakout, do you think our Luoyang will still hold?” Li Xuan asked Zhou Wen as he moved the supplies.

“I’m afraid it can’t be defended.” Zhou Wen knew very well that humans were much weaker than dimensional creatures.

There appeared to be a hundred Mythical Companion Beasts on the ranking, but the number of Mythical creatures in the dimensional zones was far more than that. It might be a hundred or a thousand times more.

Zhou Wen even suspected that there were even more terrifying existences above the Mythical stage. Otherwise, Torch Dragon’s stats wouldn’t have the evolvable attribute.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 665 - The Battle Begins

Chapter 665: The Battle Begins

Translator: CKtalon

Over the next few days, many strange things happened in Dragon Gate Grotto.

A huge Buddha shed tears of blood for no reason. After careful inspection, it was discovered that there was a crack in the Buddha's eye. Red spring water surged out from it.

In the river beside Dragon Gate Grotto, there were creatures that resembled flood dragons churning. However, the back they saw was dozens of meters long. It was extremely terrifying.

Inside a Buddhist temple, a Buddhist glow bloomed. Through a pair of binoculars, one could see a skeleton dressed in monk robes sitting inside the temple hall. Every inch of its skeleton emitted a Buddhistic glow.

The entire Grotto was filled with strange sights. The military had completely sealed off the nearby area. The area near Dragon Gate Grotto on campus had been evacuated.

The matter at Dragon Gate Grotto seemed to be even more terrifying than expected. Malla and Stone Beasts had already walked out of the cave. Many of the Malla and Stone Beasts were the students' usual hunting targets—most of them were at the Mortal and Legendary stage.

However, they now had a strange halo enveloping them. Their Strength and Speed had increased greatly. The power that erupted at the Mortal stage could reach the peak of the

Mortal stage. Those at the Legendary stage could produce strength at the peak Legendary stage.

There were also Flying Beasts and Fairies circling above Dragon Gate Grotto, making the originally mysterious cave even more bizarre.

Any dimensional creature that stepped out of the defense line was killed by the soldiers, but the situation kept worsening. There were more dimensional creatures that surged out with each day.

Boom! Boom!

Zhou Wen, Li Xuan, and Feng Qiuyan were responsible for transporting the ammunition to the front line. This was a mission An Sheng had specially arranged for them so that they could participate in the battle at any time.

The school's tutors were also prepared. When the battle really broke out, these Epic tutors were to be the main combat force.

Qin Wufu had already arrived at the battlefield to commandeer the troops, but An Tianzuo was nowhere to be seen.

"Young Master Wen, you have to be careful. The anomaly in Dragon Gate Grotto is too terrifying. There might be a fierce battle when the time comes." After An Sheng arrived on the battlefield, he warned Zhou Wen and company with a heavy expression.

Zhou Wen was somewhat alarmed. An Sheng knew that he had several Mythical Companion Beasts in his possession, but even so, he had solemnly warned him to be careful. It was obvious that the situation was extremely terrifying.

Li Xuan said, “Why don’t I see Overseer?”

An Sheng sighed softly and said, “Overseer has gathered all the noble families in Luoyang City for a meeting and is mobilizing them to participate in the battle.”

“It isn’t going well?” Zhou Wen looked at An Sheng’s expression and knew that things weren’t going well.

An Sheng said, “Sunset College is closest to Dragon Gate Grotto, but Sunset College has always been a home ground of the An family. They feel that helping this situation is helping the An family, so they are quite unwilling.”

“Don’t they know that once Sunset College fails, all of Luoyang will suffer?” Zhou Wen frowned.

Even someone like him who had a bad relationship with An Tianzuo was participating in this battle. This was because he knew that this wasn’t the An family’s business. It concerned the survival of Luoyang.

“Some have already planned on leaving Luoyang to seek refuge,” An Sheng said.

“Escape without fighting? Those people are even abandoning their homeland?” Feng Qiuyan frowned.

“That’s only human nature. If we manage to hold the line, they will naturally return. If we can’t, they will be able to preserve their strength and wealth. They will also be able to live free and mighty in other cities. However, ordinary citizens won’t share the same fate. Only death awaits them,” An Sheng said.

“How’s my family’s situation?” Li Xuan hadn’t received any news from his family. He didn’t know what was happening at

home.

“Old Master Li didn’t say anything, but he didn’t leave Luoyang either. He seems to be taking a wait-and-see approach,” An Sheng replied.

“Adjutant An, I would like to make a remark on that.” Suddenly, they heard someone speak. They turned their heads and saw Li Mobai walking over with a dozen soldiers.

“Second Young Master Li, you’re finally here. We’ve been waiting for you for a long time.” An Sheng saw Li Mobai and the people behind him.

“All the Epic experts that the Li family can contribute are here. Including me, I’ll be at the Overseer’s disposal,” Li Mobai said.

“If the Li family is willing to help, why is Old Master Li unwilling to speak up for the Overseer during the meeting?” An Sheng asked.

Li Mobai smiled and said, “Our Li family is willing to fight to protect Luoyang. That’s our decision, but we can’t stop other families from seeking a chance to live.”

An Sheng immediately understood what he meant. All he could do was shake his head and sigh helplessly.

From this, one could tell that very few people from the major families in Luoyang were willing to participate.

“Second Young Master, please follow me. After registration, Governor Du will deploy you centrally,” An Sheng said as he prepared to lead them to the register.

“Second Brother…” Li Xuan called out with a strange expression when he saw Li Mobai looking at him.

Li Mobai said indifferently, “You don’t have to speak to me with such an attitude. I’ve never placed you in my heart. Among the Li brothers. I, Li Mobai, only acknowledge one elder brother. I only gave you the Evil King Gu as a tool for revenge. Since you can’t even be a tool, there’s no value in using you. You can do whatever you want.”

With that said, Li Mobai left with An Sheng.

Li Xuan gritted his teeth and didn’t say a word. All he did was clench his fists.

Zhou Wen patted Li Xuan on the shoulder. Li Xuan relaxed and shook his head. “Don’t worry. I know what I should do. I won’t lose myself because of his words.”

Over the next two days, some rich Luoyang families sent people to participate in the battle. However, most of them only sent one or two Epic experts. Apart from the Li family, there were only two other families who sent a formidable force.

On this day, just as Zhou Wen and company were loading the supplies, they suddenly heard an ear-piercing alarm. All the soldiers quickly rushed to their posts before they heard the rumbling sounds of cannons and gunshots.

Zhou Wen and company pushed the resources to the front lines and saw that in the direction of Dragon Gate Grotto, a large number of stone beasts and Malla were rushing out. There were also a number of flying beasts dancing in the air.

The tide of dimensional creatures charged at the defensive fortifications. The soldiers followed the commands and kept

firing. The dimensional creatures fell, but more dimensional creatures took their fallen brethren and charged over.

Boom!

A cannonball exploded in front of a Vajra Malla, but it failed to kill him. He charged over with the fragments of the cannonball still embedded in him and pounced ferociously at a soldier in the trench.

The soldier didn’t retreat. He summoned a Companion Beast saber and struck the Vajra Malla, forcing it to take two steps back.

The soldiers beside him shot at the Vajra Malla. They peppered it with a rain of bullets, blasting apart his head.

A Fairy swooped down from the sky. On the battlefield that was filled with flames of war, the beautiful figure turned into a killing machine. She gracefully charged into the soldiers and blood immediately dyed the trench red.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 666 - Thousand-Handed Bull-Headed Creature

Chapter 666: Thousand-Handed Bull-Headed Creature

The symphony of death and slaughter played crazily. A loud boom resounded through the sky as a three-headed, six-armed Vajra that stood more than ten meters tall charged out of Dragon Gate Grotto.

Bullets and artillery fire blasted him, but to no avail. With a wave of the monster-subduing phurba in his hand, a laser-like beam blasted a huge hole in the defensive fortification. Several soldiers died on the spot.

An Epic expert summoned his Companion Beasts to face it in battle. The Vajra fought four of them alone but managed to force all four Epic Companion Beasts into a retreat.

Boom! Boom!

Amidst the flood of stone beasts, multiple three-headed, six-armed Vajras rushed out of Dragon Gate Grotto. Groups of Fairies also flew out into the sky. They were true Fairies, not Fairy Beasts.

There were also the black-clothed, white-haired Mutated Fairies. Furthermore, there were more than two of them.

Epic officers, tutors, and people from Luoyang’s major families took part in the battle. There were war cries and explosions everywhere on the battlefield as soldiers constantly fell.

“Are you interested in warming up?” An Sheng wore a smile, but his eyes were extremely cold.

“More than happy.” Feng Qiuyan summoned his saber.

“I’ve been waiting.” Li Xuan summoned out his carapace.

Zhou Wen gripped his Bamboo Blade tightly and nodded slightly. He knew that this was really just a warm-up. The truly terrifying creatures had yet to come out.

An Sheng led them to the leftmost side of the defense line. The defense there was the weakest and had been repeatedly breached by the Fairies.

“Guard this place until the retreat order is given, you can’t retreat even in death,” An Sheng said to Zhou Wen and company before leaving.

The soldiers were crazily fending off the dimensional creatures’ attacks, but there were still three-headed, six-armed Vajras charging at them. It was something ordinary soldiers couldn’t deal with. The bullets that were imbued with Essence Gold couldn’t penetrate the Vajras’ bodies, nor could they hit the Fairies.

“Leave the sky to me. I’ll leave the ground to you.” Zhou Wen looked at the Fairies in the sky as they constantly charged down to cull the soldiers’ lives.

“Alright.” Feng Qiuyan and Li Xuan responded loudly at the same time before rushing out. Each of them faced a three-headed, six-armed Blackiron Vajra.

When the soldiers saw the two students rush out to fend off the Vajras, they were both surprised and delighted. They

hurriedly opened fire to provide them cover, clearing the ordinary Vajras and stone beasts.

A few Fairies descended from the sky and flew over. The machine guns on the sentry post fired at them, but they failed to hit their bodies.

Zhou Wen soared into the sky as he unsheathed his Bamboo Blade and slashed out the Demonic Astral Wheel.

The blood-colored Demonic Astral Wheel flashed across the sky, killing several Fairies. Blood splattered everywhere.

The nearby soldiers were first taken aback before they cheered. At the very least, they saw a temporary hope. There were still humans who could fight these terrifying dimensional creatures.

Gunfire, the roars of dimensional creatures, the roars of Companion Beasts, the screams of death—the collision of blood and fire were everywhere.

Zhou Wen kept killing Fairies. He lost count of the number he killed, but he was already beginning to feel numb. He usually couldn’t find so many Fairies, but now, there were as many as crows in the sky.

Zhou Wen even killed two Mutated Fairies.

Feng Qiuyan, Li Xuan, and company were already covered in blood. It was impossible to distinguish the blood on their bodies—theirs or the dimensional creatures’.

Boom! Boom!

In the direction of Dragon Gate Grotto, it was as though a mountain had exploded. A thousand-hand Buddha that was

more than ten meters tall on the stone wall emitted a resplendent golden glow. It came to life and walked out of the mountain wall.

The thousand-hand Buddha looked extremely strange. Zhou Wen had never seen it before.

His body was shimmering with golden light. He had an ox head and a human body. He had eight arms and countless arms that resembled wheels on his back. He looked extremely demonic.

An Epic Companion Beast went forward to fight it off, only to see the thousand-handed, bull-headed beast shoot out a golden beam of light that blasted the Epic Companion Beast to pieces.

Then, the arms behind its back raised up and transformed into different spells. Golden light crisscrossed and instantly killed the nearby Companion Beasts and humans.

Mythical creature! Zhou Wen's eyes narrowed. A Mythical creature had appeared so quickly, and one that was especially terrifying.

The dense bombardment of bullets and attacks struck the thousand-handed, bull-headed beast, but they were nothing but a tickle. They failed to hurt it at all.

It even blocked an Epic Companion Beast's attack. As the thousand hands changed in form, the ground was sliced apart by the crisscrossing golden light. Amidst the golden light, a tank was sliced into two like paper.

Instantly, everyone was horrified. Such an invincible dimensional creature made it impossible for anyone to think of putting up a resistance.

Just as Zhou Wen was about to summon the Golden Overlord Sword to slay the thousand-handed, bull-headed beast, he saw a figure tear through the air. It was a flying sword that resembled a blue rainbow.

The flying sword circled the creature as it attempted to grab it with its thousand hands. However, it failed. Instead, the sword beam slashed out by the flying sword cleaved down on its numerous arms.

Zhou Wen turned his head to look at the spot where the flying sword had come from and saw a figure standing on the roof. It was none other than Sunset College's chancellor, Leng Zongzheng.

Zhou Wen couldn't help but have a thought when he saw that the flying sword didn't manage to slice through the thousand-handed, bull-headed creature despite having the advantage. He summoned the Golden Overlord Sword and sneaked behind the creature.

Taking advantage of the fact that it was attracted by the flying sword, he leaped above its head. The Golden Overlord Sword slashed down at the ox head with a resplendent sword beam.

Boom!

The thousand-handed, bull-headed creature collapsed to the ground. At the same time it died, the stone beasts, Fairies, and Vajras attacked even more crazily.

Leng Zongzheng glanced at Zhou Wen and summoned his sword back before turning to sit on a chair. He had no intention of coming down to clean up the battlefield.

Zhou Wen naturally didn’t stand on ceremony. He went to the thousand-handed, bull-headed creature’s corpse to see if it had left anything good.

However, before he could reach the corpse, its body exploded. A terrifying blast instantly rushed towards Zhou Wen.

Zhou Wen hurriedly summoned the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon to block him. The Six-Winged Guardian Dragon roared as it spewed out dragon breath to block the terrifying blast.

And at the spot where the thousand-handed, bull-headed corpse was, a huge golden bull appeared. Its golden eyes were staring straight at him, and golden flames spewed out from its nostrils.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 667 - Battling the Golden Bull

Chapter 667: Battling the Golden Bull

Translator: CKtalon

Leng Zongzheng was sitting on a chair on a skyscraper. He looked at the entire battlefield and his gaze landed on Zhou Wen, who was confronting the golden bull. He asked An Sheng, “Ah Sheng, is that student Zhou Wen?”

“Yes, Chancellor. He’s our Young Master Wen. What do you think of him?” An Sheng said respectfully.

“He’s a slippery one. He actually wanted to pick up freebies on the battlefield. He’s really greedy,” Leng Zongzheng said.

“Young Master Wen only wants to help. He didn’t mean to snatch anything from you,” An Sheng hurriedly explained.

Leng Zongzheng didn’t say anything else. It was impossible to tell if he was angry or not.

Zhou Wen faced the golden bull-headed creature head-on and didn’t dare be careless. This was a battlefield. If he died, that would be it. Therefore, he didn’t charge at the golden bull-headed creature himself. Instead, he got Six-Winged Guardian Dragon to charge forward first.

Six-Winged Guardian Dragon didn’t fear death as it transformed into a black bolt of lightning and charged over. The six dragon wings slashed at the golden bull like blades.

The golden bull was massive, about the same size as a mammoth. It wasn’t at a disadvantage facing the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon. When it saw Six-Winged Guardian

Dragon charge at it, it roared and lowered its head to slam into it.

Boom!

Due to the terrifying collision, a huge crater formed on the ground. The golden bull and Six-Winged Guardian Dragon were evenly matched and neither of them retreated.

Six-Winged's front claws grabbed the horns on the golden bull's head as the two monsters locked themselves in a stalemate.

Golden flames constantly spewed out from the golden bull's nose. The dragon wings on Six-Winged's back flapped wildly, but neither was able to gain the upper hand. It looked like their strength was about the same.

Zhou Wen held the Golden Overlord Sword and was about to lop off the golden bull's head.

To his surprise, the golden bull's head suddenly shook. A golden bell hanging around its neck rang the moment it shook its head.

Zhou Wen immediately felt his mind go blank when he heard the sound. He was momentarily dazed.

Six-Winged Guardian Dragon looked as though it was drunk. It staggered and involuntarily dispersed all the strength it exerted.

The golden bull roared as a pair of thick and huge golden horns slammed into Six-Winged Guardian Dragon's chest, piercing through its dragon scales and deeply impaling it.

Six-Winged… Zhou Wen was alarmed as he hurriedly summoned Six-Winged back.

Although Six-Winged's combat strength was only considered average among Mythical creatures, its Life Protection was a rare protective Wheel of Destiny. Having it for so long, Zhou Wen wasn't willing to see it die.

Six-Winged transformed into a stream of light and returned to Zhou Wen. Zhou Wen heaved a sigh of relief. As long as it wasn't dead, it was good. Companion Beasts could slowly recover with their owner's Essence Energy.

Now, Zhou Wen didn't have time to think too much. The golden bull was now targeting him. Zhou Wen hurriedly retreated and threw the Golden Overlord Sword in his hand.

The ringing of the golden bull's bell had actually caused him and Six-Winged to suffer a mental blow, causing them to instantly feel dizzy. If he had been the one charging forward to fight the golden bull, he would probably have been killed.

Before figuring out the meaning of the bell, Zhou Wen didn't dare approach the golden bull.

Although releasing Torch Dragon or Tyrant Behemoth was likely enough to finish it off, Zhou Wen didn't wish to expose his two trump cards.

When the golden bull saw Zhou Wen retreat, it immediately charged forward. It looked like it hated Zhou Wen who had ambushed it.

The Golden Overlord Sword slashed at the golden bull autonomously. The golden sword beam was extremely sharp, but the golden bull managed to block the Golden Overlord

Sword’s attack with its horns. The beams only left a shallow mark on the horns.

Zhou Wen was somewhat dumbfounded when he saw this. The Golden Overlord Sword was augmented by Ever-Victorious and Unstoppable; yet, it only left a very shallow sword mark on the horns. The toughness of the horns was rather shocking.

Clang! Clang! Clang!

The Golden Overlord Sword and the horns constantly clashed. The shockwave produced by the collision shattered everything around them. Even Zhou Wen could only retreat a second time.

The golden bull wanted to catch up to Zhou Wen, but it couldn’t escape the Golden Overlord Sword’s entanglement. Therefore, it shook its neck again, ringing the bell once more.

Zhou Wen was already dozens of meters away from the battlefield. When he heard the bell, his mind jolted as he felt momentary dizziness. Thankfully, the dizziness was short-lived. Zhou Wen reacted and staggered two steps on the ground without falling.

As for a brainless Companion Beast like the Golden Overlord Sword, it actually showed signs of dizziness. Unguarded, it was sent flying by the golden bull’s horn.

The Golden Overlord Sword flew out like a meteor and slammed into the Dragon Gate Grotto’s stone wall. The sword immediately embedded itself into the stone wall.

What the hell is that bell? Does it actually have such a strange power? I used the Gods Retreat, but it was useless.

From the looks of it, it isn't a nomological force. Could it be a pure aural power? As Zhou Wen retreated, he summoned the Golden Overlord Sword back. He saw that there were many cracks on the Golden Overlord Sword's blade.

Without the Gold Overlord Sword's entanglement, the golden bull roared as it charged at Zhou Wen like a golden train that had gone amok.

An Sheng wanted to render his assistance, but he was stopped by Leng Zongzheng. "Don't worry. That punk hasn't done his best. Let's wait and see."

An Sheng also knew that Zhou Wen hadn't used his full strength. After all, Tyrant Behemoth hadn't appeared. However, it was best if he didn't expose Tyrant Behemoth.

With Leng Zongzheng's extraordinary status, An Sheng couldn't refute him. All he could do was stand by the side and continue watching.

Must I summon Torch Dragon to deal with it? Zhou Wen rushed out, but he couldn't think of a way to deal with the bell on its neck.

In terms of combat abilities, the golden bull, Six-Winged, and Golden Overlord Sword were about equal. However, the bell on its neck was too bizarre, preventing Truth Listener and Gods Retreat from showing any effect.

If it's only an aural power, Truth Listener should have reacted. Why isn't even Truth Listener reacting? Zhou Wen was depressed.

After some thought, Zhou Wen led the golden bull closer to Dragon Gate Grotto to prevent any further human casualties.

When the golden bull saw that it couldn’t catch up to Zhou Wen, it shook its head again. The bell rang again.

This time, Zhou Wen was already prepared. He charged into the sky and switched to the Godfiend Era Essence Energy Art.

His head spun again, but due to the Godfiend Era’s spatial powers, Zhou Wen remained suspended in midair and didn’t fall.

When the golden bull saw that Zhou Wen didn’t fall, it leaped up and charged at him like a gigantic golden cannonball.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 668 - Bull Fight

Chapter 668: Bull Fight

Translator: CKtalon

Zhou Wen had already recovered from his dizziness. Seeing the golden bull already in front of him, he hurriedly flew higher.

Boom!

The golden bull's leap lost its momentum as its body fell to the ground heavily, smashing a huge crater on the ground.

This fellow can't fly? Zhou Wen was overjoyed. He pulled out his Bamboo Blade and slashed at the golden bull beneath him with Demonic Astral Wheel.

The golden bull defended with its horn, slamming into the Demonic Astral Wheel and shattering it. With a roar, it leaped up and lunged at Zhou Wen.

Zhou Wen hurriedly flew higher, preventing the golden bull from touching him before it landed on the ground.

Zhou Wen knew the principle of kiting in gaming terms—retreating when the enemy advanced and chasing when the enemy retreated. The moment the golden bull landed, he swooped down and slashed out Demonic Astral Wheel with his Bamboo Blade.

The golden bull was infuriated. After landing on the ground, it leaped up once again and began to ring the bell in midair. However, Zhou Wen had already flown to a high altitude. Although his head was dizzy, he didn't fall. The golden bull couldn't jump high enough, so it couldn't touch him.

Zhou Wen’s heart stirred as he engaged in guerilla warfare with the golden bull. At the same time, he lured the enraged golden bull towards Dragon Gate Grotto’s dimensional creatures.

When the infuriated golden bull landed, it immediately squashed many dimensional creatures. When it rang the bell, the dimensional creatures that were more than a hundred meters nearby were affected and became momentarily dizzy.

As such, the dimensional creatures’ offensive slowed down significantly, greatly reducing the pressure on the frontline soldiers.

Zhou Wen lured the golden bull as it charged through the monster horde, causing great chaos.

A large number of Fairies flew towards Zhou Wen. Zhou Wen held the Bamboo Blade in one hand and the Overlord Sword in the other. Wherever the saber beams and sword beams went, blood splattered everywhere, unleashing pandemonium on the dimensional creatures at the rear.

The soldiers who were engaged in an intense battle saw that someone had stormed into the dimensional creatures’ horde alone. It was as though he had entered no man’s land. The blood in them pumped with zeal as they unleashed greater firepower.

Many Epic officers and tutors, who were in the midst of killing, felt their spirits lift. The pressure they felt seemed to lessen significantly.

Zhou Wen lured the golden bull and constantly stormed through the dimensional creatures, but he failed to find a way to nullify the bell’s ringing.

Thankfully, the golden bull couldn’t fly, so it couldn’t threaten Zhou Wen’s safety.

The bell chimes from time to time only made Zhou Wen momentarily dizzy. By the time the Fairies surrounded him, Zhou Wen was already awake.

Even if he didn’t wake up in time, with the Golden Overlord Sword by his side, no matter how many Fairies came, they would all be killed with a single strike.

It’s definitely not an aural power. Otherwise, there’s no reason for me to be unable to withstand it at all. Even if it’s a spatial-type power, it’s impossible for me to have zero resistance. Could it be that the bell’s power is actually directly attacking the soul? Zhou Wen thought to himself as the golden bull went crazy from Zhou Wen’s teasing.

Clang! Clang! Clang!

The golden bull leaped up and repeatedly vibrated the bell in midair. Zhou Wen immediately felt as though his brain was about to explode as he hugged his head and moaned in pain.

Thankfully, the bell’s range was huge. The surrounding Fairies were also affected in worse ways than Zhou Wen. They screamed and fell from the sky.

After the golden bull landed, it took a few steps back and pawed its hoof on the ground a few times. With a sudden run, it leaped up and reached a record-breaking height. The thick horns on its head slammed into Zhou Wen, who was hugging his head in midair. The bell kept ringing.

Zhou Wen felt as though his brain had been struck by a hammer. The pain left his mind blank.

However, Zhou Wen also knew that the golden bull would definitely deliver a fatal strike at this moment. His willpower was much stronger than that of the average person. Furthermore, when he cultivated the Lost Immortal Sutra in the early days, the Lost Immortal Sutra kept chanting incantations into his ears all day, making his mind more resilient.

Under such circumstances, Zhou Wen could persist by sheer willpower alone and use Lost Country's teleportation ability.

Almost at the instant Zhou Wen teleported out, two bodies rushed to where he was.

One figure was naturally the golden bull, and the other figure was Li Xuan, who was wearing his carapace. He had insect wings on his back.

"Holy sh*t, what's going on?" Li Xuan had originally rushed over to save Zhou Wen, but to his surprise, Zhou Wen had vanished. The raging golden bull charged at Li Xuan.

The insect wings on Li Xuan's back flapped as he narrowly avoided the golden bull's horns. He somersaulted and ended up landing on the golden bull's back. He hugged the ox head and cried out, "Old Zhou, I'm in deep shit because of you. Why didn't you run earlier when you could?"

After Zhou Wen teleported into the distance, he used Ghost Steps to widen the distance again. When he heard Li Xuan, he turned his head and saw Li Xuan sprawled on the golden bull, shouting.

The golden bull angrily jumped around, trying to shake Li Xuan off, but Li Xuan seemed to be stuck to its back. It couldn't shake him off.

What was strange was that the golden bull’s bell was useless against him.

“Li Xuan, are you immune to the bull’s bell?” Zhou Wen asked in surprise.

“I just find it a little noisy. Nothing else. I say, quickly think of a way to get me down…” Li Xuan shouted.

“I heard that insects don’t have brains. Could it be that the bell’s strength is really a mental attack? That’s why it’s useless against the brainless Li Xuan?” Zhou Wen muttered to himself.

Of course, Zhou Wen didn’t really think that Li Xuan was brainless, but that his Life Soul was problematic. After all, he had absorbed the Evil King Gu’s Life Soul. It could be said that it was a fusion of two Life Souls. It was indeed stronger than the mental strength of an average person’s Life Soul, so it was very likely the reason it could withstand the bell’s soul-stirring chimes.

“Hold on a little longer. I’ll soon think of a way to resolve the golden bull.” Zhou Wen didn’t immediately rush back when he saw that Li Xuan’s life wasn’t in danger.

It was mainly because it was useless for him to rush back now unless he summoned his Companion Beasts like Truth Listener, Torch Dragon, and Tyrant.

“Bro, can you hurry up? I’m getting a little cowsick…” Li Xuan cried out with a long face. He didn’t dare get off the bull’s back, afraid that he would be killed by it the moment he got off.

Zhou Wen saw that the golden bull was extremely irritated and didn’t chase after him. It wanted to throw Li Xuan down

and kill him. Immediately, his heart stirred as he gripped the Golden Overlord Sword tightly and secretly changed his direction.

The Golden Overlord Sword and Bamboo Blade constantly slew the nearby dimensional creatures, reducing them to rivers of blood.

“Li Xuan, agitate it a little,” Zhou Wen shouted.

Li Xuan steeled his mind and reached out his hands to grab the bull’s ears, yanking at them ruthlessly.

The golden bull flew into a rage as it raised its hind legs and twisted its body in midair, hoping to throw Li Xuan off.

Zhou Wen finally saw an opportunity and threw the Golden Overlord Sword like a javelin.

The Golden Overlord Sword transformed into a golden bolt of lightning. At the moment the golden bull raised its hind legs to shake Li Xuan off, the sword pierced through it, slicing something off.

“Ow!” The golden bull’s eyes widened to the limit, but its pupils shrank into needle-like slits. It opened its mouth and let out a strange cry.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 669 - Resentful Chancellor

Chapter 669: Resentful Chancellor

Translator: CKtalon

After being severely injured, the golden bull seemed to lose all its strength. It fell to the ground and let out a tragic cry as though it had lost the ability to resist.

“Get out of the way!” Zhou Wen roared as he cleaved down the Bamboo Blade at the golden bull’s neck.

Li Xuan ducked to the side. The golden bull seemed to be in so much pain that it forgot how to dodge. When Zhou Wen’s Bamboo Blade slashed at its neck, a metallic clang sounded. A long gash appeared on its neck as blood immediately gushed out.

Zhou Wen’s other hand had already grabbed the Golden Overlord Sword and slashed. The golden bull was completely at Zhou Wen’s mercy. It didn’t resist as Zhou Wen’s cleaved through more than half its neck.

“No good. Retreat quickly!” Zhou Wen felt a sense of danger when he saw a strange aura emit from the golden bull. As he shouted, he flew backward.

Li Xuan wasn’t slow either, but before the duo could run far, the golden bull’s body exploded like a nuclear bomb. The terrifying power destroyed everything in a radius of two to three hundred meters.

Zhou Wen and Li Xuan were sent flying by the shockwave. They tumbled far away before stopping. The armor on their bodies was in shambles, and blood stained their backs.

Zhou Wen got up and looked in the direction of the golden bull’s self-detonation. He saw a crystal and a Companion Egg drop on the ground. He couldn’t help but be delighted.

Ignoring the injuries on his body, Zhou Wen quickly rushed towards the crystal and Companion Egg. The golden bull was so awesome that it had dropped two items at once. It was the best.

Furthermore, its bell had a strange power. If he could hatch such a golden bull and make it his pet, it would be quite useful.

However, before Zhou Wen could reach the Companion Egg, he saw a white figure flash past. Then, the golden bull Companion Egg on the ground vanished.

Zhou Wen hurriedly turned his head and saw a white parrot hold the Companion Egg in its claws as it flew through the air. Its speed was shockingly fast, and in an instant, it had already flown to the top of a skyscraper and landed on Leng Zongzheng’s shoulder. The Companion Egg in its claw had landed in Leng Zongzheng’s hand.

Leng Zongzheng held the Companion Egg in his hand as he looked at Zhou Wen with a faint smile. It was as though he was saying: ‘Since you snatched from me once, I’ll snatch from you too.’

What kind of chancellor is this? Is he that petty? Zhou Wen muttered inwardly as he rushed over to pick up the dimensional crystal.

The dimensional crystal was like a golden crystal. Inside was the shadow of a bull. It was clearly an Essence Energy Skill Crystal.

Although he didn’t obtain the Companion Egg, obtaining an Essence Energy Skill Crystal was a form of consolation.

With the death of the golden bull, humanity’s counterattack began. The firepower became more intense. The human Epic experts also used their Companion Beasts to fight, executing dimensional creatures on the spot.

As no new dimensional creatures rushed out, the terrifying dimensional creatures were finally suppressed. All the dimensional creatures that charged out of Dragon Gate Grotto were killed.

Although they had obtained victory, there was very little joy on their faces. Many soldiers and officers had sacrificed themselves, so most wore solemn expressions.

The soldiers began clearing the battlefield. Zhou Wen, Li Xuan, and Feng Qiuyan retreated and returned to their temporary encampment to rest. They still needed to continue delivering the supplies in a while.

Li Xuan’s injuries had already healed, but Zhou Wen couldn’t recover that quickly. Although the wounds on his back weren’t bleeding, they had a burning sensation. All he could do was lie in the tent and rest.

Feng Qiuyan was so tired that he fell asleep the moment he collapsed onto the blanket. He had killed so many dimensional creatures that his stamina and Essence Energy were severely drained.

“It’s already so terrifying with Dragon Gate Grotto suffering a breakout. If all the dimensional zones in Luoyang were to encounter a breakout, it would be unimaginable. There’s no way humans can survive,” Li Xuan said.

Zhou Wen shared the same thoughts. Up to now, the difference between humans and dimensional zones was still huge.

“Old Zhou, do you think another dimensional creature will rush out of Dragon Gate Grotto?” Li Xuan asked again.

“It’s hard to say so, but this matter definitely isn’t over. The giant golden bird on the mountaintop, as well as the monsters in the water, and the skeleton in monk robes in the temple haven’t moved yet,” Zhou Wen said as he used his phone to snap a picture of the Essence Energy Skill Crystal he had just obtained.

Great Might Vajra Bull Crystal: Mythical

Absorption Requirement: Constitution 41, Essence Energy 41, Buddhist Essence Energy Art

Zhou Wen looked at the requirement. Although it didn’t have any special stat requirements, he couldn’t meet the two 41 stat requirements. All he could do was put the Essence Energy Crystal away.

After the battle, Dragon Gate Grotto temporarily calmed down. Without any dimensional creatures rushing out, Zhou Wen and company could rest.

“Young Master Wen, how are your injuries? I’ve brought you some medicine.” An Sheng walked in with a smile, holding a small bottle in his hand.

“There’s no need. I’ve almost recovered. I’ll be fine after some rest.” Zhou Wen was wearing Runic Heavy-Armor during the battle, so his injuries weren’t serious. He just needed some time to recover.

After all, he wasn’t Li Xuan. He didn’t have such potent self-recovery abilities.

“This medicine is good. It’ll heal you quickly once it’s applied. I’ll apply some for you.” An Sheng opened the medicine bottle and dripped the liquid on Zhou Wen’s wound. Zhou Wen immediately felt a refreshing feeling envelop his wound, making him feel much better.

An Sheng applied the medicine evenly on his wound and said, “Today, the three of you were amazing. Many of the men are talking about the three of you. All of you are considered famous now. If any of you wish to enter the Sunset Army in the future, you will definitely be protected by the soldiers.”

Zhou Wen didn’t say a word as Li Xuan said with a smile, “That’s for sure. When I was young, a fortune-teller told me that I had the life of a general. I’ll definitely become a senior official in the future.”

“Third Young Master, if you wish to join the Sunset Army, I guarantee that I’ll leave a good position for you,” An Sheng said.

“We’ll see when the time comes. There are still two to three years before graduation,” Li Xuan said.

An Sheng naturally understood that Li Xuan was only making small talk. The Li family might not be willing to let him enter the Sunset Army.

An Sheng was about to say something when a soldier hurriedly came over and said, “Adjutant An, there’s something happening at Dragon Gate Grotto. Deputy Governor Qin requests your presence.”

“Do you want us to go with you?” Zhou Wen asked.

“There’s no need. All of you can rest. If something really happened, Deputy Governor Qin wouldn’t be so at ease to get someone to invite me over,” An Sheng said as he left Zhou Wen’s tent.

Although Zhou Wen and company didn’t go, they soon learned what had happened. A strange scene appeared in Dragon Gate Grotto’s Alchemy Cave. A black smoke surged out and enveloped the entire entrance of the Alchemy Cave. Furthermore, they could hear the screams of wraiths and resentful ghosts in the black smoke.

However, that was all. No dimensional creatures rushed out.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 670 - Invisible Enemy

Chapter 670: Invisible Enemy

When Zhou Wen was resting, he summoned a few Companion Beasts to guard the inside of the tent. Tai Sui was restlessly emitting a burning sensation, so Zhou Wen had no choice but to release it.

“Old Zhou, where did these strange Companion Beasts come from?” Li Xuan curiously sized up the Companion Beasts Zhou Wen had summoned.

“Some of them were bought. Some were obtained when I was out training,” Zhou Wen said as he lay down to rest.

Feng Qiuyan had already fallen asleep and didn’t chat with Li Xuan. All he could do was lie down and sleep as well.

He slept until midnight when he suddenly heard a commotion outside. He didn’t know what was happening.

“Why is it so noisy in the dead of the night? Could it be that the dimensional creatures in Dragon Gate Grotto have rushed out again?” Li Xuan said gloomily when he was woken up from his beauty sleep.

Zhou Wen and Feng Qiuyan sat up as well. Just as they were about to head out to take a look, they suddenly saw the tent door open. Then, they saw An Sheng barge in. He asked anxiously, “Young Master Wen, are you alright?”

“We’re fine. What can happen to us?” Li Xuan asked An Sheng in puzzlement.

An Sheng carefully sized up the three of them and heaved a long sigh of relief after a long while. “It’s good that you’re fine. Stay here and don’t go out. Something happened outside. After it’s settled, you can leave.”

“What happened?” Zhou Wen asked An Sheng.

“See for yourself.” An Sheng pointed outside.

Zhou Wen and company looked out through the crack and were immediately so shocked that their jaws nearly dropped to the ground.

On the ground, walls, and tents outside, there were all kinds of mushrooms of different colors.

“Holy sh*t, when did this place become a mushroom base?” Li Xuan asked.

“Take a closer look at the soldiers outside,” An Sheng said with a heavy expression.

As An Sheng said that, Zhou Wen noticed that a soldier’s face was covered in what seemed like a pimple breakout. It was filled with many tiny mushrooms.

Although the mushrooms looked pretty, they made one’s hair stand on end when they were sprouting from a person’s face.

The soldier’s face was filled with horror. He was clawing at the mushrooms on his face, but just as he pulled out one, another mushroom would emerge.

He kept pulling them out, leaving his face covered in blood, but the little mushrooms kept popping out. He was so

frightened that he was already crying. He was plucking the mushrooms from his face as he cried.

There were many people like him. Although there were already officers controlling the situation, this fear made them lose their usual calm. The scene was very chaotic.

Zhou Wen and company's legs turned limp as they subconsciously touched their faces. Thankfully, there weren't any mushrooms growing on their faces.

"What's going on?" Zhou Wen asked An Sheng.

"I don't know yet. We're investigating. In the entire encampment, only a handful of people haven't been infected with that strange thing. It's probably related to the phenomena at Alchemy Cave. You guys stay here for now. In a while, I might need you to cooperate with me for the investigations. I hope we can find out why some aren't growing mushrooms." An Sheng's expression was solemn as he rushed out.

"It's really a blessing from the heavens that it didn't infect us. Otherwise, I wouldn't know how to live if my handsome face was destroyed," Li Xuan said with lingering fear as he zipped up the tent.

"I don't think it's as simple as heaven's blessing. There must be something that prevented us from being infected by those mushrooms." Zhou Wen looked around and didn't see anything amiss.

There weren't any mushrooms in their tent. The three of them and his few Companion Beasts were fine. Tai Sui was lying near the tent's entrance, doing something there.

Since it was something invisible to the naked eye, Zhou Wen used the Truth Listener earring’s ability to listen. Furthermore, he pushed it to its limits.

Upon hearing his surroundings, he immediately discovered a problem.

At the tent’s entrance, there were many microbial things that humans couldn’t see with the naked eye. They were undergoing random walks in the air.

Those tiny objects were even smaller than dust. If Zhou Wen hadn’t deliberately used Truth Listener to observe them, he wouldn’t have discovered them. Even using Truth Listener’s hearing, Zhou Wen hadn’t noticed them in the beginning.

The reason why he discovered their existence was that Tai Sui was actually devouring those little things. He looked like he was enjoying himself.

Zhou Wen expanded Truth Listener’s range and soon discovered that there were many such tiny objects in the air outside. They were even smaller than dust, so humans couldn’t see them at all. However, when they landed on the skin or something else, they would burrow into their pores and quickly sprout to grow tiny mushrooms.

As they were so small, no one discovered them. The entire encampment was filled with such tiny objects, as though it was snowing.

However, there were very few people who could see them apart from Zhou Wen. All the soldiers were at a loss as danger floated around them.

Zhou Wen reached out and tried grabbing them, but he realized that his palm couldn’t grab them at all. They were

too small, so it was useless to grab them. They were like bacteria. Despite knowing that they were there, it was very difficult to eliminate them.

Tai Sui was actually able to discover them and even eat them. It's quite impressive. Zhou Wen saw that Tai Sui had already finished all the tiny objects in the tent. He was eager to head out to eat more.

Zhou Wen realized that the three of them were fine because Tai Sui was here. It had eaten all the little things that had invaded their quarters, preventing them from being infected.

The military had clearly realized the problem as well. Some soldiers in antibacterial suits were spewing chemicals to remove bacteria and fungus from the encampment.

However, it was useless. Those things were clearly not something ordinary chemicals could deal with.

"Don't go out yet. I'll take a look at the entrance," Zhou Wen said to Li Xuan and Feng Qiuyan before opening the tent door.

The moment the door opened, many of those little creatures entered with the gust of wind that entered. Tai Sui immediately jumped around excitedly and devoured the little creatures that humans couldn't see.

Zhou Wen used an Essence Energy Skill, Small Fireball, that dropped from the Metalwork Temple. A scarlet flame ball flew out from his fingertip and hit the invisible things in the air.

The tiny objects were burned to ashes by the flames. They didn't appear very strong, but because they were so tiny,

they couldn’t be discovered. That was also why they were so dangerous.

After burning a few tiny objects to death, Zhou Wen suddenly realized in surprise that a tiny Companion Egg dropped. The Companion Egg was even smaller than the tiny objects. If not for Truth Listener’s ability. Zhou Wen wouldn’t have seen it at all.

He took out his phone and snapped a picture of the tiny Companion Egg. It was immediately stored on his phone.

Those little things are really dimensional creatures! After Zhou Wen saw the Companion Egg’s stats, he realized the true origins of the little creatures.

Parasite Spore: Mortal

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 671 - The Weakest Companion Beast in History

Chapter 671: The Weakest Companion Beast in History

Translator: CKtalon

Parasite Spore: Mortal

Strength: 0

Speed: 1

Constitution: 1

Essence Energy: 1

Talent Skill: Parasitizing

Companion Form: None

These stats are so weak, aren't they? Zhou Wen had never seen a Companion Beast with such weak stats. However, although they were very weak, they had their own advantages. Even Epic experts would be in great pain and trouble if they got parasitized by not being careful.

Tai Sui had already rolled out and jumped around excitedly, devouring all the Parasite Spores it could see.

Zhou Wen didn't continue killing the spores. Firstly, there were too many. Ordinary skills couldn't kill them all. Secondly, there were still many soldiers and officers in the encampment, so it wasn't appropriate for him to use large-scale skills to kill the spores.

I can still remove the Parasite Spores outside, but how can I deal with the Parasite Spores that have already parasitized people? Zhou Wen pushed Truth Listener's powers to the limits as he wanted to observe if all the spores were the same.

Soon, Zhou Wen realized that most of the spores were transparent and slightly white. These were identical to the Companion Egg which dropped.

A small portion of the Parasite Spores was light red in color. There were very few of them. Zhou Wen tried killing some of them, but the dimensional crystals that dropped were all at the Legendary stage and their stats were very low.

It was very rare for Mortal spores to drop Companion Eggs. Zhou Wen had killed many, but no Companion Eggs dropped. The Mortal Companion Egg from before could only be attributed to luck.

Zhou Wen walked behind Tai Sui. Wherever Tai Sui passed, the spores dodged it as though they were avoiding the plague. Most of them failed to dodge in time and were swallowed by Tai Sui.

As he walked, Zhou Wen discovered another golden spore but killing it was as simple as the others. A tiny fireball killed the golden spore.

There were extremely few golden spores. Among the countless spores, it was probably a one in a billion existence. Zhou Wen found a few and after killing them, a Companion Egg dropped.

Golden Parasite Spore: Epic

Life Providence: Microbe

Life Soul: Parasitizing Spirit

Strength: 18

Speed: 20

Constitution: 17

Essence Energy: 20

Talent Skill: Parasitizing

Companion Form: None

This Epic Companion Beast has also broken the record for the lower limits of an Epic Companion Beast. I originally imagined that the weakest one would be the baby tiger, but I never expected there to be an Epic Companion Beast weaker than it. Furthermore, it's much weaker. Zhou Wen realized that the spores were indeed weak. They could survive simply because of their microscopic bodies.

Ordinary Legendary humans could easily kill such Epic creatures. The real difficulty wasn't killing them, but how to discover them.

The higher the level of the spores, the smaller their sizes. Even Truth Listener's ability could barely see the Golden Parasite Spore.

Suddenly, Zhou Wen discovered a tiny purple dot floating around. It appeared and disappeared at times. Even with Truth Listener's ability, it nearly failed to detect its existence. It was just too small.

Could it be a Mythical spore? Zhou Wen's heart stirred as he hurriedly got Tai Sui to roll over.

Even the Mythical spore was afraid of the Mortal Tai Sui. Just as it was about to run, it was burned by Zhou Wen's fireball.

However, this time, the purple spore wasn't burned to death. It continued floating far away. Zhou Wen pulled out the Golden Overlord Sword and slashed with a powerful sword beam.

Although it was very small, the sword beam's area was large enough, so it still managed to strike the tiny creature.

To Zhou Wen's surprise, the Golden Sword Aura failed to kill it.

This spore is interesting. Zhou Wen used a few more skills and realized that he couldn't kill the purple spore.

At that moment, Tai Sui had already rolled over. It leaped up and pounced at the purple spore.

The purple spore that couldn't even be killed by weapons trembled as though it had encountered a nemesis. It was sucked up by Tai Sui.

Seeing that the purple spore had been sucked into Tai Sui's body, Zhou Wen couldn't help but sigh. *It's true that one object bests another. For a Mortal-stage Tai Sui to be able to restrain a Mythical spore, this guy is quite useful. In the future, with Tai Sui by my side, I won't be afraid of being ambushed by microbial Companion Beasts and dimensional creatures.*

"I say, Tai Sui, don't just focus on eating. Did it leave behind any Companion Eggs or dimensional crystals?" Zhou Wen didn't hold much hope as he asked casually.

To his surprise, Tai Sui really understood him. It reluctantly spat out a microscopic purple object.

Even with Truth Listener’s ability, he nearly missed it. After falling to the ground, he searched for quite a while before finding the tiny point.

He hurriedly pulled out his phone and took a picture of the purple point.

Primordial Spore: Mythical

Life Providence: Eternal Immortality

Life Soul: Parasitizing Spirit

Wheel of Destiny: Soul Parasitizing

Strength: 41

Speed: 41

Constitution: 41

Essence Energy: 41

Talent Skill: Parasitizing

Companion Form: None

Without a doubt, this was the weakest Mythical Companion Beast that Zhou Wen had ever seen. There was nothing worse. Its extreme weakness could be seen just by looking at its stats.

However, such Companion Beasts weren’t meant for combat. Their effects might be even more terrifying than combat-type Companion Beasts.

He directly hatched the Primordial Spore and expended very little Essence Energy. It was about the same as the Essence Energy needed for Epic Companion Beasts.

Thankfully, as its owner, Zhou Wen could sense its location. Otherwise, he wouldn’t have known where his tiny Companion Beast was if he only looked at it with his eyes.

After testing it out, he used the Primordial Spore to kill the ordinary spores. Although it was feasible, the combat ability of the Primordial Spore wasn’t high. It wasn’t killing as fast as Zhou Wen’s fireballs, much less competing with Tai Sui’s devouring.

Tai Sui jumped around in the encampment and swallowed countless spores. Its body clearly became bigger, and the spores in the encampment decreased significantly.

Zhou Wen used Truth Listener to search the entire time, hoping to find another Primordial Spore. However, he was somewhat disappointed and didn’t discover a second one.

“Young Master Wen, why did you come out? The situation outside is terrible. You shouldn’t have come out.” An Sheng arrived in front of the clearing. Qin Wufu, Leng Zongzheng, as well as the military’s generals and tutors, were with him.

However, despite there being so many people, other than An Sheng and Leng Zongzheng, there were mushrooms on everyone’s faces. They looked extremely terrifying.

Even Deputy Governor Qin succumbed to it? Zhou Wen saw a golden mushroom on Qin Wufu’s face. It was likely an Epic Golden Spore that parasitized his face.

Although Ah Sheng’s body was covered in spores, the spores didn’t drill into his body for some reason.

Leng Zongzheng didn’t have any spores on him. His body seemed to be protected by an invisible force, preventing the spores from approaching him.

“It’s not difficult to remove the spores in the encampment, but the spores that have already parasitized people require another solution.” Leng Zongzheng looked at the mushrooms in the encampment and summoned his Demonic Organ Throne.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 672 - Tai Sui's Evolution

Chapter 672: Tai Sui’s Evolution

Translator: CKtalon

Leng Zongzheng played the Demonic Organ Throne with his long, slender fingers, immediately producing magical music. It was grand and solemn, imbued with a holy feeling that other musical instruments didn’t possess.

Invisible ripples spread out across the encampment. Zhou Wen was surprised to discover that with the music, the invisible spores were gathering in front of the Demonic Organ Throne like soldiers that had received an order.

The spores were originally barely visible, but due to their numbers, one could gradually see a faint white mist as more and more spores gathered.

The fog became thicker and thicker, and soon, people could see it more clearly.

Originally, Tai Sui couldn’t eat many spores despite bouncing around. Now that the spores had gathered in a region, it became excited. It bounced amidst the white mist formed by the spores. As it consumed a large number of spores, it also grew in size.

The organ music continued as large amounts of spores gathered in a spot. They gradually turned corporeal, like snowflakes.

Finally, the snowflakes gathered together and turned into a white ball that resembled cotton candy.

Tai Sui bounced over and swallowed the cotton candy-like spores in no time. No one knew how many spores it had eaten as the number was already impossible to estimate.

When Zhou Wen vaguely felt that Tai Sui was about to evolve, he hurriedly summoned it back.

Leng Zongzheng didn’t stop Tai Sui from devouring the spores. He only glanced at Zhou Wen before saying to An Sheng, “The mushrooms in the encampment must be burned. They can’t be left behind at all to ensure that there are no latent dangers.”

“Yes, I’ll do it now.” An Sheng received the order and led his men to clear the mushrooms in the encampment.

“Chancellor, the mushrooms in the encampment are easy to deal with. What should we do with the ones on the soldiers?” Qin Wufu asked worriedly.

Leng Zongzheng said, “If these spores hadn’t parasitized a body, it wouldn’t be difficult to remove them. However, once they carried out the parasitization, they became a part of the body. It’s like the flesh and blood of the body. Even if one slices off the flesh, the self-healing ability of the body will regrow it. It’s very difficult to remove it at the root.”

Qin Wufu and company revealed looks of worry when they heard that.

“You, come with me,” Leng Zongzheng suddenly said to Zhou Wen before he left.

It can’t be, right? Don’t tell me Chancellor Leng is such a petty person. Is he going to settle scores for letting Tai Sui eat the spores? Zhou Wen followed Leng Zongzheng to his office in a somewhat depressed manner.

“Take a seat.” Leng Zongzheng’s office was different from the offices of ordinary chancellors. Instead of calling it an office, it was more like a tea room.

“Chancellor Leng, it’s my fault for letting my Companion Beast eat the spores without your permission…” Zhou Wen first admitted his mistake to prevent Leng Zongzheng from lecturing him.

Leng Zongzheng didn’t mention this matter. He sat at the tea table and said as he brewed tea, “Do you hate me for snatching the Companion Egg?”

Zhou Wen shook his head and said, “That was originally your prey. It’s only right for you to take the Companion Egg. Why would I have such thoughts?”

Zhou Wen really meant it. It was Leng Zongzheng who had attacked the thousand-handed, bull-headed creature first. He was trying to scoop up the benefits but ended up being taken advantage of by Leng Zongzheng. There was nothing to be said. He could only blame himself for not being fast enough.

Upon hearing Zhou Wen’s words, Leng Zongzheng smiled and placed a cup of brewed tea in front of him. Then, he continued, “Do you know the origins of that golden bull?”

Zhou Wen only knew that the bull was called the Great Might Vajra Bull. As for its origins, he really didn’t know anything. All he could do was shake his head.

“The golden bull’s former thousand-handed form is an imitation of Great Might Virtue Vajra. Great Might Virtue Vajra was a guardian Vajra of Tantric Buddhism. It was able to subdue evil demons, so it was known as having great might. It had the virtues of defending the good, so it was

also known as having great virtue. There are also titles such as Yamāntaka, Vajrabhairava, and Bull-Headed Wisdom King. Previously, Tibetans believed that the Great Might Virtue Vajra was the wrath of Bodhisattva Mañjuśrī, so it had great might and terrifying power," Leng Zongzheng said as he put down his teacup.

"Does that mean that the golden bull is the true body of the mighty Great Might Virtue Vajra?" Zhou Wen said in surprise. He never expected the golden bull to have such a huge background.

However, Leng Zongzheng said with a smile, "If it was the real Great Might Virtue Vajra, it wouldn't have been so easy for you to kill it. At most, it can only be considered an embodiment."

Zhou Wen thought to himself, *It's no wonder that the golden bull is called the Great Might Vajra Bull. So it's related to the Great Might Virtue Vajra. However, why is Principal Leng telling me this?*

As though he had seen through Zhou Wen's thoughts, Leng Zongzheng took out an item from the drawer beside him and placed it on the table. It was the Great Might Vajra Bull Companion Egg.

However, the Great Might Vajra Bull Companion Egg was somewhat different from before. There were thin lines drawn on it. They crisscrossed and looked like a more popular magic circle in the West District, but there were some symbols that looked like something from Tantric Buddhism that emitted strange energy fluctuations.

"I've already dealt with this Companion Egg. Even at the Epic stage, you will be able to incubate it. Do you want it?" Leng Zongzheng said with a faint smile.

“Will you believe me if I say I don’t, Chancellor?” Zhou Wen asked.

Leng Zongzheng laughed. “Since you want it, take it.”

“Really?” Zhou Wen felt that there was no free lunch in this world. How could anyone be so kind? They had paid such a huge price to deal with the Mythical Companion Egg only to give it to him.

Leng Zongzheng said, “I’m afraid there’s no way to resolve the problems in Dragon Gate Grotto from outside. In the end, we can only enter. That’s a Buddhist land. When the time comes, this Companion Egg will definitely be of great use. Perhaps it can save lives, so those who have it have to enter Dragon Gate Grotto. You contributed to its birth, so you are the first person I’m asking. If you are going, just hatch it. If you aren’t going, I hope you can leave it to others.”

Zhou Wen was somewhat hesitant when he heard that. He naturally wanted the Great Might Vajra Bull, but Dragon Gate Grotto was extremely dangerous. If he entered it during this period of time, something ominous would definitely happen.

Leng Zongzheng didn’t hurry him, nor did he say a word. All he did was drink his tea and wait for Zhou Wen’s decision.

“If I don’t go, will you use this Companion Egg?” Zhou Wen asked after some thought.

Leng Zongzheng shook his head. “I have other things to do. I don’t have the time to control it.”

“Then who do you plan on getting?” Zhou Wen asked again.

“If you don’t want it, the next candidate should be Tianzuo. I believe he won’t reject it,” Leng Zongzheng said.

“Alright, I’ll go.” Although Zhou Wen had some guesses, he couldn’t help but feel a little moved when he heard that An Tianzuo might obtain the Companion Egg. After some thought, he agreed to enter Dragon Gate Grotto.

“Take the Companion Egg and hatch it as soon as possible. The opportunity to enter Dragon Gate Grotto should be in the next few days,” Leng Zongzheng said with a smile.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 673 - Clearing the Parasite Spores

Chapter 673: Clearing the Parasite Spores

Translator: CKtalon

Zhou Wen returned to his dorm with the Great Might Vajra Bull Companion Egg. He originally considered entering Dragon Gate Grotto, but when he saw Feng Qiuyan in the tent, he was shocked.

He saw two mushrooms growing on Feng Qiuyan's face.

"Why are there mushrooms on your face?" Zhou Wen asked in puzzlement.

Before he left, he had already gotten Tai Sui to clean up the spores in the tent. After sealing the tent, there shouldn't have been any problems.

Feng Qiuyan said with a smile, "I'm fine. I was just curious. I unzipped the tent and wanted to take a look at the situation outside, but who knew that I would succumb to it? However, it's not a big deal. There should be a way to resolve it."

"In your dreams. The military experts and tutors are studying the Parasite Spores, but they still haven't found a way to eliminate the mushrooms. Do you know that many soldiers have fainted because of the mushrooms? They might be like vegetative humans that won't wake up again." Zhou Wen was somewhat anxious.

"Then what should we do? I originally imagined that Brother Sheng was fine when he came. We just wanted to see the situation outside and didn't even go out. I originally

imagined that nothing would happen, but I never expected Little Yanyan to fall victim," Li Xuan said gloomily.

"You're fine?" Zhou Wen sized up Li Xuan. Feng Qiuyan had fallen victim. Logically speaking, with the numerous spores, it was impossible for only two to float in. It was odd that Li Xuan hadn't succumbed to it.

"It should be because I'm wearing my carapace. I don't have any mushrooms growing on me," Li Xuan said.

"That's very likely." Zhou Wen nodded slightly.

"It's fine. With so many tutors and military experts researching day and night, it's only a matter of time before they can come up with a treatment," Feng Qiuyan ended up consoling them.

Zhou Wen thought for a moment and said to Feng Qiuyan, "I have something that could work, but it's not guaranteed to be effective. It might end up completely useless. Do you want to give it a try?"

Feng Qiuyan didn't ask Zhou Wen what method he had and said, "Coach, feel free to try. It's best if it works. It's fine if it's useless."

Zhou Wen didn't stand on ceremony as he summoned Doctor Darkness. Then, he got Doctor Darkness to use Fight Poison With Poison to inject some poison into the mushrooms.

The mushrooms quickly withered and fell off automatically.

Zhou Wen and Li Xuan waited for a while longer. Seeing that there weren't any mushrooms growing on the wound on Feng Qiuyan's face, they were overjoyed.

…

An Tianzuo had arrived at Leng Zongzheng’s office. He was brewing tea for Leng Zongzheng while An Sheng stood silently to the side.

“Teacher, isn’t it a little too hasty for you to give Zhou Wen the Great Might Vajra Bull Companion Egg?” An Tianzuo held the teacup with both hands and said.

Leng Zongzheng said with a smile, “I’ve already seen some of his abilities. He should be able to control the Great Might Vajra Bull.”

“Teacher, you think too highly of him. Although he does have some talent and is quite lucky to have obtained some Mythical Companion Beasts, he’s still a student after all. His experience and mental state aren’t mature enough. He hasn’t experienced much, so I’m afraid he won’t be able to deal with sudden and unknown crises. Instead, he will be a burden on us,” An Tianzuo said.

“I remember that when you were his age, you had already led the Sunset Army to battle everywhere. You engaged in a slaughter in many dimensional zones, right? In that case, he’s not young anymore,” Leng Zongzheng said as he sipped his tea.

“How can that be the same? I was trained from a young age. I’ve experienced countless life-and-death situations, but he hasn’t experienced any setbacks. Relying on him for this matter is unreliable. Why don’t you reconsider?” An Tianzuo said.

Leng Zongzheng smiled at An Tianzuo and said, “Are you afraid that he won’t do well, or are you afraid that he will be in danger?”

“Of course I’m afraid that he screws up and implicates us,” An Tianzuo immediately answered.

“So that’s how it is. Then, it’s fine. Even if he can’t help much, it’s not a problem for him to control the Great Might Vajra Bull. As for whether he will die in there or not, it doesn’t matter since you aren’t concerned,” Leng Zongzheng said with his eyes narrowed as he sipped his tea.

“Teacher, you should have heard that the empress dowager in my family dotes on him very much. If he were to die inside, I wouldn’t mind, but I’m afraid that the person back home wouldn’t agree to it. When that happens, not only will I have a headache, but you will also have a headache, right?” An Tianzuo said.

“So that’s how it is.” Leng Zongzheng looked enlightened as he took a sip of tea and said, “However, I think Zhou Wen has quite a lot of combat experience. His adaptability isn’t bad either, and he has quite a number of Companion Beasts. With the Great Might Vajra Bull’s protection, there shouldn’t be much of a problem.”

An Tianzuo was about to say something when a soldier reported, “Overseer, there’s news from the research institute. The problem of the Parasite Spores has been resolved.”

An Tianzuo was overjoyed when he heard that. He got up and asked, “Excellent, that’s great. Which expert or tutor came up with the solution?”

Although the Parasite Spores were very weak, the effects they brought gave even An Tianzuo a headache. If they weren’t resolved in time, the Sunset Army and the college would suffer a heavy blow.

The soldier answered, “According to the news we received, a student’s Companion Beast can restrain the Parasite Spores. The unconscious soldiers who he helped have already woken up. The mushrooms automatically peel off and stop growing. Currently, the student is clearing out the Parasite Spores on the soldiers and tutors.”

“Student?” An Tianzuo frowned slightly.

Leng Zongzheng smiled and asked, “What’s the student’s name?”

“His name is Zhou Wen. He was the one who rushed into the dimensional creature horde yesterday to kill the golden bull,” the soldier immediately answered.

Leng Zongzheng turned his head to look at An Tianzuo and said, “What did I say? This Zhou Wen is still alright. He resolved a problem that so many people couldn’t. If you say he’s unsuitable, who else is more suitable?”

…

Zhou Wen used Doctor Darkness to remove the Parasite Spores on everyone. Doctor Darkness’s Fight Poison With Poison was indeed useful. As long as he injected it into the spores, the spores would quickly die and there wouldn’t be a relapse.

“Little Wen, well done.” Qin Wufu was the last to receive Zhou Wen’s treatment. He patted Zhou Wen’s shoulder and said, “Think about it again. Join me after graduation. You can name any conditions you want.”

“It’s still a long time before graduation. I haven’t considered these matters,” Zhou Wen said.

“It’s about time to consider it carefully. The situation in the various parts of the Federation isn’t too good right now. I wonder how many more years we can last,” Qin Wufu said with a sigh.

After busying himself for more than a day, he finally removed all the spores that had parasitized people. When Zhou Wen returned to the tent, he originally wanted to take out the Great Might Vajra Companion Egg and hatch it.

However, he realized that Tai Sui had completed its evolution. He hurriedly summoned it to see what changes it had.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 674 - Clashing Tai Sui

Chapter 674: Clashing Tai Sui

Tai Sui was still fair and tender. From its size, it had slimmed down from what it had eaten previously and returned to its original appearance. It looked no different from when it was at the Mortal stage. Zhou Wen had no choice but to look at its information.

Tai Sui: Epic (Evolvable)

Life Providence: Clashing Tai Sui

Life Soul: Twelve Tai Sui Gods

Strength: 41

Speed: 41

Constitution: 41

Essence Energy: 41

Talent Skill: Earth Escape

Companion Form: Mimicry

After Zhou Wen finished reading the stats, his expression turned odd. People in the East District probably knew about the words ‘Clashing Tai Sui’. It meant that one was in for some unlucky times.

As for the Twelve Tai Sui Gods, Zhou Wen had never heard of them. He carefully looked at the information on the Life

Providence and Life Soul.

Clashing Tai Sui: One’s characteristic clashes with Tai Sui

Twelve Tai Sui Gods: Zodiac Twelve Tai Sui Gods

Although he didn’t understand it clearly, Zhou Wen already felt that it was definitely not some lucky Life Providence. What good could come from having a characteristic clash with Tai Sui?

If I had known this would happen, I might not have let it evolve! Zhou Wen was somewhat speechless as he hurriedly put Tai Sui away. He was afraid that he would be in trouble if he were to clash with it. He might be in trouble in the blink of an eye.

Zhou Wen was momentarily at a loss as to how to deal with Tai Sui. He really couldn’t bear to part with it by fusing it with something else. This was an existence that could advance to the Mythical stage in the future. What was even rarer was that this fellow was extremely effective against microscopic dimensional creatures.

When it was at the Mortal stage, it could kill the Mythical Primordial Spore. It was probably difficult to find another Companion Beast like that.

Let’s wait and see. If it really brings bad luck, I’ll think of a way to deal with it. After some thought, Zhou Wen decided to keep it for now.

After putting away Tai Sui, Zhou Wen carefully sized up the Great Might Vajra Bull Companion Egg. There were many mysterious magic circles and incantations on it. Furthermore, the magic circles and incantations emitted intense Essence Energy fluctuations. Clearly, someone had

used a strange power to inject Essence Energy into the magic circle and incantations.

With the Essence Energy that was stored ahead of time, the difficulty of incubating it would decrease greatly. To be able to do something that amazing, it probably wasn't done by the typical Epic stage expert.

Zhou Wen studied it for a long time, but he couldn't figure out how the magic circles and incantations were produced. It was as though they had already entered deep into the Companion Egg.

Such an ingenious method is like a precious treasure to an ordinary Epic, but it's useless for me. Even without the pre-injected Essence Energy, I can still incubate a Mythical Companion Egg. Zhou Wen tried injecting his Essence Energy to incubate the Great Might Vajra Bull.

The Essence Energy didn't enter the Companion Egg directly. Instead, it circulated along the magic formation and incantations before entering the Companion Egg. Apart from the supplementary stored Essence Energy, it also slowed down the Essence Energy absorption speed of the Mythical Companion Egg.

The entire process was very smooth. Even an ordinary Epic could incubate it with the help of the magic circles and incantations.

I wonder if this technique is easy to learn. If I can learn it, it will be a good way to earn money. Many people will definitely be willing to pay to incubate high-level Companion Beasts. Zhou Wen thought.

Zhou Wen didn't know that using this method was extremely difficult. There weren't more than ten people in the entire

Federation who could use such techniques. Furthermore, to carve the magic formation and incantations on it required expending a large number of precious resources.

Unless it was a Mythical Companion Egg, it wasn’t worth spending such a huge price on the hatching of a typical Companion Egg.

Back when An Sheng hatched Love Letter, he couldn’t bear to use this method. Instead, he found a dimensional zone with abundant Essence Energy and used the special Essence Energy environment, along with some Essence Energy Crystals and mystical techniques to incubate it.

Great Might Vajra Bull: Mythical

Life Providence: Extreme Might, Extreme Strength

Life Soul: Bull-Headed Wisdom King

Wheel of Destiny: Soul Suppression Bell

Strength: 80

Speed: 78

Constitution: 80

Essence Energy: 80

Talent Skill: Great Might Divine Horns, Fury of Thunder, Infallible Vajra, Buddha Flames.

Companion Form: Mount

Its skills and attributes were very strong, and it had four skills. They looked pretty good. It had all the abilities it should have. The golden bell was the Great Might Vajra

Bull’s Wheel of Destiny, which was also the skill that Zhou Wen valued the most.

However, what’s with it being a mount? This was the first time Zhou Wen had seen one. He imagined that a Companion Beast in companion form would be a mount—no different from the typical Companion Beast form.

I’ll give it a try. Let’s see how different this mount is from simply riding it. Zhou Wen took out his phone and entered the game dungeon before summoning the Great Might Vajra Bull.

Soon, Zhou Wen realized that the Great Might Vajra Bull in its mount form was indeed different. When Zhou Wen rode the Six-Winged, he needed to command it.

However, the Great Might Vajra Bull in its mount form didn’t need Zhou Wen’s commanding. It was as though it had become Zhou Wen’s limb. It could move according to his wishes. The only difference was that the Great Might Vajra Bull didn’t grow on him.

Professional mounts are indeed different. Zhou Wen finally understood what the ancients meant by human and horse as one.

Now, his riding skills—human and bull as one—was pretty good. At the very least, it was much more comfortable than riding Six-Winged.

If there was any weakness of the Great Might Vajra Bull to point out, it would be its inability to fly. It was indeed extremely powerful on the ground, but it couldn’t fly or go into water.

However, it doesn't matter. In any case, the skill I need the most is the Great Might Vajra Bull's Soul Suppression Bell. The other skills are secondary. Zhou Wen took the Great Might Vajra Bull to the Qiongqi temple. The moment Qiongqi appeared, the Great Might Vajra Bull used the Soul Suppression Bell, causing Qiongqi to feel dizzy.

Zhou Wen's Golden Overlord Sword cleaved down, severely injuring Qiongqi with his sword. Following that, it was a one-sided slaughter. Soon, Qiongqi fell under his sword.

Awesome. That's what a real man is. A cowboy! Zhou Wen felt extremely delighted. Killing monsters in such a manner was much easier than charging forward on his own.

Since he had nothing to do, Zhou Wen summoned the Primordial Spore to see how useful it was.

As the stats of the Primordial Spore were too poor, Zhou Wen didn't dare use it against Mythical creatures. Instead, he went to the bat cave to test it out.

The Primordial Spore slowly floated towards the ceiling of the cave. The poisonous bats hanging upside down didn't realize the impending danger.

They didn't have the ability to discover a tiny existence like the Primordial Spore, so they had no idea that the danger was near them.

The Primordial Spore landed on the head of a Poison Bat. The Poison Bat didn't even realize its existence as the Primordial Spore vanished in the blink of an eye.

Zhou Wen originally imagined that the Primordial Spore would grow a tiny mushroom over the Poison Bat's head like ordinary spores, but nothing like that happened. The Poison

Bat suddenly opened its eyes, but the look in its eyes turned odd as it flapped its wings and moved towards Zhou Wen.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 675 - Soul Parasitizing

Chapter 675: Soul Parasitizing

Could it be… Zhou Wen was delighted when he saw the Poison Bat fly over.

Indeed, the Poison Bat flew in front of Zhou Wen and circled him. Zhou Wen could sense the thoughts of Primordial Spore in the Poison Bat's brain.

With a thought, Zhou Wen issued an order to Primordial Spore. The Poison Bat flew up according to Zhou Wen's orders before charging at the group of Poison Bats and engaging the other Poison Bats in battle.

The other Poison Bats were still somewhat puzzled, unsure what had happened. A few of them had been killed by the Poison Bat controlled by Primordial Spore before it was killed by the other Poison Bats.

After the Poison Bat died, the Primordial Spore floated out and slowly returned to Zhou Wen's side.

Zhou Wen was alarmed when he saw this, but he was pleasantly surprised. *Is this Soul Parasitizing? This fellow can actually control other dimensional creatures through parasitizing. Then, can it control Mythical creatures?*

Zhou Wen couldn't wait to give it a try. He went to the Torch Dragon temple, hoping to see if he could get Primordial Spore to control Torch Dragon.

Unfortunately, Torch Dragon had great eyesight. It immediately discovered the Primordial Spore and didn't give it a chance. It directly used the Bright Torch Vision World and sucked Primordial Spore into the Vision World.

From the looks of it, it's still a little difficult to parasitize Torch Dragon. I'll try someone with poorer eyesight. Zhou Wen went to the Metalwork Temple to see if he could parasitize the Golden Battle God Halberd, but it didn't have any effect.

The Primordial Spore was unable to penetrate Golden Battle God Halberd's body. Although it was not killed by Golden Battle God Halberd, it failed to parasitize it successfully.

From the looks of it, Primordial Spore can only parasitize animals or plant-type dimensional creatures. Zhou Wen's heart stirred as he took it to the underground sea to test it out with the nine black dragons.

Primordial Spore successfully entered a black dragon's body, but the black dragon was clearly formidable. Primordial Spore was unable to control it given the short period of time. It only rooted itself in the black dragon's head, and it was unknown when it would completely gain control.

From the feedback from Primordial Spore, it was not a matter of a few days.

Primordial Spore's powers are pretty good, but it takes too long to control Mythical creatures. It's not very useful in-game. Zhou Wen had to respawn dungeons every day, so it was impossible for him to use Primordial Spore to slowly parasitize creatures.

Although it's not very useful in-game, if I can get Primordial Spore to parasitize a powerful dimensional creature in real

life, wouldn’t I have an extremely powerful fighter… Who should I parasitize? There are already many terrifying dimensional creatures in Dragon Gate Grotto. Why don’t I find an opportunity here… Zhou Wen thought to himself as he planned how to use Primordial Spore to maximize his benefits.

…

Over the next few days, many strange dimensional creatures rushed out of Dragon Gate Grotto. Although many dimensional creatures were ferocious, the damage they caused wasn’t as great as the Parasite Spores.

Sometimes, powerful dimensional creatures were not as terrifying as the weak spores.

As Zhou Wen had treated almost every soldier and officer, the soldiers and officers were very respectful to him when he delivered the supplies.

Li Xuan and Feng Qiuyan had also gained the respect of the soldiers and officers because of their achievements in the previous battle.

Although the dimensional creatures that rushed out of Dragon Gate Grotto were destroyed, the situation didn’t improve. The golden robes of the skeleton in the mountain temple became even more resplendent. Even in the dark night, it illuminated the entire Dragon Gate Grotto.

The river beside Dragon Gate Grotto hadn’t been peaceful for the past few days. The temperature of the river was extremely high. In the beginning, it only emitted white steam, but it had begun boiling over the past two days.

The fish and shrimps inside died and floated to the surface of the river.

No one dared to fish up the shrimps. In the end, they fell apart from the river's boiling and sank.

"What's the origins of the monk-robed skeleton in the mountain seal? Do you think the anomaly in Dragon Gate Grotto is because of the monk-robed skeleton?" After Li Xuan and Zhou Wen finished transporting the supplies, they stood by the river's defense line and looked at Dragon Gate Grotto. All they could see was golden light enveloping it. And the source of the golden light was the monk-robed skeleton.

"That's possible." Zhou Wen also felt that it was possible.

However, up to now, no one could clearly tell the source of Dragon Gate Grotto's anomaly.

Leng Zongzheng hadn't looked for Zhou Wen since his private conversation with him. Therefore Zhou Wen wasn't kept abreast of the situation.

There was one thing that Zhou Wen was more concerned about. For so many days, the giant golden bird that had lived above Dragon Gate Grotto hadn't revealed itself. It was unknown what it was waiting for.

Boom! Boom!

As the two of them were watching Dragon Gate Grotto, a terrifying sound suddenly came from the other side of the river bank. The ground seemed to quake with the sound.

The river also produced ripples due to the shock. The ripples pushed forward ripple by ripple before finally creating a

wave.

Zhou Wen and Li Xuan looked in the direction of the sound. Under the moonlight, they saw a gigantic white elephant walking along the river bank. It was likely heading to Dragon Gate Grotto based on the direction it was traveling.

“What a huge white elephant. Where did this fellow come from?” Li Xuan asked in surprise.

The white elephant was indeed massive. An ordinary elephant probably didn’t even reach its knees. Not only was its body huge, but it also emitted a strange glow as though it was bathed in holy light.

Its pair of tusks were pure and white as if they were made of jade.

The gigantic white elephant walked over step by step. Every step it took made a huge print in the ground, causing the ground to tremble. The houses in the encampment seemed to sway with every step.

The white elephant was clearly not a dimensional creature from Dragon Gate Grotto. It walked to the opposite side of Dragon Gate Grotto and directly entered the river. It looked like it wanted to cross the river and enter Dragon Gate Grotto.

The river was boiling and the temperature was extremely high. However, the white elephant didn’t seem to notice it. The moment it stepped in, the river overflowed.

Leng Zongzheng, An Tianzuo, Qin Wufu, and company had already come out. They were also watching the white elephant.

The soldiers guarding the front line couldn’t help but heave a sigh of relief when they saw that the white elephant wasn’t heading towards the encampment. The pressure the white elephant gave them was just too strong.

The elephant parted the river’s water; its might left one shuddering.

Just as the elephant was about to reach the center of the river, a hook-like black claw suddenly reached out from the river.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 676 - Monk-Robed Skeleton

Chapter 676: Monk-Robed Skeleton

The white elephant didn’t seem to notice the black claw as it continued walking forward. However, when the black claw touched its body, white smoke emitted.

As if charcoal had encountered water, the black claw retreated back into the river.

The huge white elephant continued walking towards Dragon Gate Grotto as though nothing had happened. It was as though it only had one goal in its eyes.

The black claw never appeared again even when the white elephant stepped onto the river bank.

When it tore out of the water and got ashore, the water droplets on his body automatically slid off, leaving nothing behind.

Zhou Wen and company watched helplessly as the white elephant walked towards Dragon Gate Grotto and headed for the mountain temple.

Li Xuan looked at where An Tianzuo and company were. Seeing that they were only standing high above and watching without giving any orders, he turned back to look at the white elephant.

The white elephant walked on the mountain rocks. Wherever the giant foot passed, the rocks cracked, leaving behind huge footprints.

The dimensional creatures in Dragon Gate Grotto didn’t dare approach the white elephant. All of them hid in the cave and trembled, not daring to walk out of the cave.

The huge white elephant walked all the way to the temple before stopping to look at the monk-robed skeleton that emitted a resplendent golden light. It raised its trunk and let out an elephant’s trumpet.

“Not good! Quickly cover your ears!” Zhou Wen shouted at Li Xuan.

However, it was already a little too late. Everyone felt a thunderclap in their ears, causing their minds to buzz. The soldiers with weaker cultivation levels fell to the ground. Even Epic officers saw stars.

“Help… Help me up… Why do I feel like I’m in front of gold ingots…” Li Xuan seemed drunk as his body swayed violently.

Zhou Wen was fine as he hurriedly held him up.

After a while, Li Xuan, the Epic officers, and tutors came to their senses. As for the soldiers, they were still lying on the ground, unable to stand up as though they were drunk.

When Zhou Wen looked at the temple, he saw that the white elephant had already stepped into it.

The moment it stepped into the temple, the golden light on the monk-clothed skeleton suddenly flared up brightly like the sun. The golden light shone on the white elephant’s body, causing it to falter.

The white elephant paused for a moment, but it quickly walked towards the monk-robed skeleton again. Under the

suppression of the terrifying golden light, it found it extremely difficult to take a step forward.

However, it had no intention of giving up. It continued walking towards the monk-robed skeleton. The closer it was to the skeleton, the slower its speed became.

When it was only a few steps away from the skeleton, it took each step like it was carrying a mountain.

Finally, the white elephant walked in front of the monk-robed skeleton. Just as Zhou Wen was guessing what it was about to do, it raised its trunk and swept it at the monk-robed skeleton as though it was a huge pillar that emitted terrifying holy light.

“It wants to destroy the monk’s remains?” Li Xuan said in surprise.

Just as he said that, the white elephant’s trunk slammed into the monk-robed skeleton. However, the monk-robed skeleton wasn’t smashed to bits. It continued sitting there cross-legged.

It suddenly raised its bony hand and grabbed the white elephant’s trunk.

In the next moment, everyone saw an unbelievable scene. With a wave of the skeleton’s hand, the gigantic elephant’s body was easily thrown away.

Under Zhou Wen and company’s horrified gazes, the massive elephant fell into the river beneath Dragon Gate Grotto.

Boom!

Water splashed up hundreds of feet high as the huge elephant’s body smashed into the river, creating a huge crater at the bottom. Instantly, the water level around the river bank increased drastically, almost reaching the encampment.

“That monk-robed skeleton is alive? Did he throw the terrifying elephant flying with one hand? What kind of crazy strength is that?” Li Xuan exclaimed.

Zhou Wen was alarmed and uncertain. It could fling such a massive and powerful white elephant easily. Such immense strength was probably something only Tyrant Behemoth could achieve when it used Absolute Strength.

However, no matter how Zhou Wen looked at it, the monk-robed skeleton didn’t look like it had powers like Absolute Strength.

What’s his background? Why is the white elephant attacking him? Zhou Wen sized up the monk-robed skeleton in surprise.

The skeleton was crystalline and it emitted an intense golden glow, like a Buddha’s golden body.

Although the monk robe was tattered, it couldn’t conceal the Buddhist light.

He sat in a lotus position with a stone door behind him. There were no words or patterns on the door, and behind it was an extremely simple squarish stone house.

The stone house was less than two meters tall, and the stone door was even shorter. The monk-robed skeleton was sitting in front of the door which was only twenty to thirty

centimeters taller than him. A normal adult would probably have to bend to enter.

Could it be that there's something strange in the stone house behind the monk-robed skeleton? Zhou Wen was guessing when he heard a tumultuous sound.

Turning his head, he saw the white elephant fighting a similarly gigantic black creature in the river. As the river water churned, Zhou Wen finally saw what the black object was.

"What a huge turtle! Such a huge turtle must have lived for hundreds of thousands of years. Killing it to make a stew will definitely be nutritious," Li Xuan exclaimed with widened eyes.

The black creature was actually a huge turtle. It was pitch-black and its shell was like black iron. Its body wasn't much smaller than the white elephant.

It fought the white elephant in the river and bit its neck, refusing to let go. The white elephant couldn't shake it off no matter how hard it tried. Its holy flesh and blood couldn't defend it from the turtle's teeth. Blood gushed out from the bite, dyeing the river red.

Terrifying power constantly erupted from the elephant's body, but it couldn't do anything to the huge turtle. The turtle's shell was just too hard. Even with the elephant's strength, it couldn't smash it open.

The holy light on the white elephant's body grew dimmer. Just as the huge turtle was about to kill it in the river, a bird's cry suddenly resounded.

A golden light descended from the sky. It was the giant golden bird.

It tore through the air like a bolt of lightning as its pair of talons grabbed at the tortoise’s turtle shell. It managed to penetrate the black iron-like turtle shell. The pain made the turtle release its grip.

However, the golden bird didn’t stop. It flapped its wings and lifted the huge turtle high into the sky. It brandished its sharp claws and tore it to pieces in the blink of an eye. Blood splattered across the sky.

The people in the encampment were dumbfounded. The golden bird was so ferocious that it left them terrified.

This giant bird’s strength is probably comparable to Tyrant Behemoth! Zhou Wen was also alarmed. Only now did he realize how impressive Leng Zongzheng’s feat of getting the giant golden bird to retreat was.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 677 - The Tragic Death of a Mythical

Chapter 677: The Tragic Death of a Mythical

The turtle shell was extremely hard, but it couldn’t withstand the golden bird’s sharp claws at all. In a moment, it was torn to pieces. The golden bird then ate it in midair, killing it in the blink of an eye.

How horrid. To think I actually fought it before. It’s really lucky that I didn’t die. Zhou Wen was secretly alarmed. Back then, he wasn’t as strong as he was now.

Of course, that wasn’t a real battle. The golden bird’s target wasn’t him, or Zhou Wen wouldn’t have been able to escape so easily.

When the huge turtle was killed by the golden bird, the white elephant finally crawled out of the river. The wounds on its body rapidly healed.

The strength of the huge white elephant was originally above the huge turtle’s, but it had been thrown out by the monk-clothed skeleton, rendering it completely defenseless. This produced an opening for the huge turtle to take advantage of the situation.

The golden bird tore and ate up the turtle, but it had no intention of touching the elephant. It flapped its wings and shot straight into the clouds like a bolt of golden lightning, disappearing behind the mountain peak.

After the wounds on the elephant’s body healed, it charged towards the monk-robed skeleton in the temple again. Its holy light surged crazily, but it was barely able to reach the skeleton.

As it had been severely injured, it didn’t even have the ability to attack the monk-robed skeleton.

After persisting for a long period of time, the strength of the elephant slowly dwindled from the clash with the golden light. Finally, it couldn’t withstand the impact of the golden light as its massive body appeared to be struck by rapids. It rolled down Dragon Gate Grotto and fell into the river, triggering a huge wave.

“That monk-robed skeleton is really too powerful,” Li Xuan exclaimed.

“Did you see the object that the skeleton seems to be holding in its hand?” Zhou Wen had been observing the skeleton.

He had managed to throw the white elephant away with one hand, but his other hand never moved. It had always been covered by the monk robes.

Zhou Wen saw that there seemed to be an abnormal bulge. Unfortunately, Truth Listener’s ability was affected by the golden light. He couldn’t tell what was happening around the monk-robed skeleton, or he would have known if there was anything in his hand.

Li Xuan used his Life Soul’s insect eyes to look, but he only saw something vague. He couldn’t tell what it was either.

“Do you think the white elephant is so desperate for the item in his hand?” Li Xuan guessed.

“I’m not sure yet. Let’s wait and see.” Zhou Wen saw the white elephant crawl out again as it panted by the riverside. However, it was unwilling to give up. After resting for a while, it charged towards the monk-robed skeleton for the third time.

Li Xuan said to Zhou Wen, “If the elephant falls again, it will have even weaker stamina. I wonder if we can take advantage of it?”

“I’m just afraid that the golden bird and the white elephant are in cahoots. You’ve seen the outcome of that huge turtle. If you aren’t afraid of death, give it a try.” Zhou Wen definitely wouldn’t give it a try.

He wouldn’t even try it with his pets. After all, each of his Mythical pets had been obtained with great difficulty. Every one of them was obtained through blood and tears. Every death made his heart ache.

“That makes sense. That golden bird is too terrifying. It’s probably an existence that can match Primordial Sword Immortal and Tyrant Behemoth. From its abilities, it seems to be focused on speed and offensive strength. Could it be the legendary Golden-Winged Roc?” Li Xuan guessed.

“That’s very likely.” Zhou Wen also felt that the golden bird resembled the legendary Golden-Winged Roc.

As the two of them spoke, the white elephant rushed into the temple again and trudged towards the monk-robed skeleton.

This time, the white elephant was different from before. Its tusks lit up like two bright lamps. It resisted the golden light, making it rush towards the monk-robed skeleton in a seemingly easier manner than the first two times.

However, Zhou Wen realized that the elephant’s tusks were constantly burning. Its strength seemed to be exchanged from burning the tusks.

Finally, the huge white elephant charged in front of the monk-robed skeleton with the brilliance produced by burning the tusks. It lowered its head and used its burning tusks to slam into the monk-robed skeleton.

Before the tusks reached the monk, the force produced by thrust blew at the monk robes.

Zhou Wen had been paying constant attention to the monk-robed skeleton. When the monk robe fluttered, he saw that the other skeleton hand was placed above his thigh bone.

In that hand was a golden crystal that was about the size of a chicken egg. It looked slightly oval.

The moment the crystal appeared, it immediately emitted a golden glow that illuminated the entire mountain temple. Nothing could be seen.

Even with Zhou Wen and Li Xuan’s eyesight, they couldn’t see anything.

After a while, the golden light vanished. When everyone saw the scene inside the temple again, they widened their eyes in horror.

The white elephant was still in front of the monk-robed skeleton. It hadn’t been thrown down this time, but its flesh and organs had completely vanished. All that was left was a skeleton standing in front of the monk-robed skeleton, maintaining the posture of lowering its head to strike. It was the last scene Zhou Wen and company had seen.

A gust of wind blew and the huge skeleton suddenly scattered like flour. It landed on the ground and covered the entire mountain temple.

Everyone felt a chill run down their spines as they broke out in cold sweat.

In the middle of the afternoon, everyone felt their bodies turn cold.

“What was that bead just now?” Li Xuan stared at the monk-robed skeleton in the temple. The monk robe fell again, covering the bead. They couldn’t see anything anymore.

“I don’t know, but there’s a Companion Egg on the ground,” Zhou Wen said as he pointed towards the temple.

In the pile of bone powder, there was a white Companion Egg. It was about half as tall as a person. It was clearly left behind by the white elephant after its death.

“The white elephant’s Companion Egg is good stuff, but who would dare enter to take it?” Although Li Xuan’s self-healing ability was very strong, he wasn’t so foolhardy to believe that he could withstand the terrifying golden light.

Zhou Wen had some ideas. Although the elephant wasn’t a top-notch Mythical creature, it was still a Mythical creature.

I wonder if I can send an Epic Companion Beast in and get it out? Just as Zhou Wen had this thought, someone had already done so.

Among the Epic experts sent by the local major families in Luoyang, an Epic expert summoned an Epic immortal crane. It flew into the temple, hoping to get the Companion Egg out.

However, just as the immortal crane flew into the mountain temple, its body came into contact with the golden light emitted by the monk-robed skeleton. It immediately disintegrated and died.

Everyone was alarmed. Only then did they realize that not anyone could enter the mountain temple. The white elephant could travel against the golden light in the mountain temple, but that didn’t mean they could do the same.

“Thankfully, I didn’t enter.” Li Xuan broke out into a cold sweat. He had really wanted to rush into the temple to retrieve the white elephant’s Companion Egg.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 678 - Determining Its Attributes

Chapter 678: Determining Its Attributes

No one dared to act rashly. They just watched.

Everyone wanted the white elephant Companion Egg, but no one dared to send a Companion Beast into the mountain temple. The death of the Epic immortal crane was truly shocking.

Although Zhou Wen felt that his Mythical Companion Beast was likely capable of withstanding the golden light emitted by the monk-robed skeleton, he was afraid that the golden light from the crystal would erupt again. When that happened, even a Mythical might not be able to withstand it. To sacrifice a Mythical Companion Beast for a Mythical Companion Egg, with the possibility of not getting it back made it too risky.

An Tianzuo and Leng Zongzheng didn’t let their Companion Beasts enter the mountain temple. Clearly, they had the same qualms.

Two Mythical creatures had died. No one dared to enter the temple to grab the Companion Eggs. There were no new changes in Dragon Gate Grotto.

Qin Wufu had already ordered the troops to disperse and rest. The soldiers and officers returned to their respective positions. As for the Epic experts from the noble families,

they sized up the Companion Egg unwillingly and tried to think of ways to get it out.

In the end, they lost several Epic Companion Beasts and failed to enter the mountain temple.

Zhou Wen ultimately held back his urges and didn't let his Mythical Companion Beast enter. Before figuring out the origins of the monk-clothed skeleton and the crystal, taking risks meant death.

"Young Master Wen, Chancellor Leng wants to see you," An Sheng said as Zhou Wen was loading the supplies.

Zhou Wen put down his work and followed An Sheng to Leng Zongzheng's office.

When Zhou Wen arrived, he realized that An Tianzuo and Qin Wufu were there. Zhou Wen pretended not to see An Tianzuo and only greeted Chancellor Leng and Qin Wufu.

"Little Zhou, come and have a seat." Qin Wufu warmly invited Zhou Wen to take a seat.

Only then did Leng Zongzheng say, "You all saw what happened in the mountain temple. What are your thoughts?"

Qin Wufu said, "Chancellor, do you think the golden crystal in the skeleton's hand is the legendary Relic?"

"There's a possibility, but Relics are Buddhist treasures. Logically speaking, they shouldn't have such destructive force," said Leng Zongzheng.

An Tianzuo thought for a moment and said, "I do have an idea. Perhaps that monk-robed skeleton isn't a dimensional

creature from Dragon Gate Grotto.”

“Go into the detail.” Leng Zongzheng gestured for An Tianzuo to continue.

An Tianzuo continued, “When we saw him sitting cross-legged in his monk robes, we thought he was a dimensional creature from Dragon Gate Grotto. However, the power he used, including the crystal, looks different from the Buddhist-type creatures I’ve seen before.”

“That’s right.” Leng Zongzheng nodded calmly.

An Tianzuo added, “From my point of view, he’s the same as the white elephant and the golden bird. They are all eyeing the things inside Dragon Gate Grotto’s mountain temple. However, he entered rather early, so he occupied the spot. The white elephant’s target isn’t him, but the stone house behind him. In conclusion, the thing that caused Dragon Gate Grotto to mutate might very well be inside that stone house.”

“Tianzuo’s guess coincides with mine. The golden-winged bird and the monk-robed skeleton are top Mythical creatures. If we want to achieve anything, I’m afraid we won’t be able to avoid competing with them. We need to make early preparations.” After Leng Zongzheng said that, he looked at Zhou Wen and said, “When the time comes, you can enter the mountain temple with us. You have to be prepared to fight the golden-winged bird and the monk-robed skeleton. If you have any worries, tell me ahead of time.”

“Yes, I’ll prepare well,” Zhou Wen answered.

Leng Zongzheng nodded and continued, “Let’s say that the monk-robed skeleton isn’t a dimensional creature from

Dragon Gate Grotto, nor is he a Buddhist-tye creature. Which type do you think it is?”

Qin Wufu pondered and said, “I’ve seen quite a number of dimensional creatures over the years, but this is the first time I’ve seen such power.”

Seeing Leng Zongzheng look at him, An Tianzuo shook his head and said, “I’ve never seen it before.”

Seeing that everyone was unsure of the skeleton’s strength, Leng Zongzheng said, “Since that’s the case, let’s start from judging the skeleton’s Strength stat.”

Zhou Wen listened to their discussion from the side and didn’t say a word. After all, he was still too young. The dimensional zones and dimensional creatures he had come into contact with were limited. His experience couldn’t compare to the few people present, so all he could do was listen to their discussion. It would also broaden his knowledge.

Leng Zongzheng and company planned on using the most primitive and most effective method to probe what kind of dimensional creature the monk-robed skeleton was.

The method was very simple. It was to use the principle of attribute strengths and weaknesses. They would send Companion Beasts of similar strength but of different types into the mountain temple.

Then, they could observe the reactions after being attacked by the golden light in the mountain temple. If they were strong or weak against it, they would definitely have different reactions. They might die quickly or last a little longer.

By using these minute differences, one could roughly deduce the monk-clothed skeleton’s type.

Of course, this method had a premise. Among the Companion Beasts used for testing, there had to be existences that were strong or weak against the monk-robed skeleton or they would be useless.

After the discussion ended, An Sheng was in charge of the probe. Zhou Wen didn’t receive any assigned missions as he continued his preparations.

The test didn’t go smoothly. An Sheng used nineteen different Legendary Companion Beasts to test, but he didn’t find anything abnormal.

Finally, he felt that it was likely that a Legendary Companion Beast was too weak. Even if it was strong or weak against it, it was difficult to show it. They had to use Epic Companion Beasts in the second round of testing.

The results of the second round of tests were the same. Despite sacrificing more than ten Epic Companion Beasts, they still failed to figure out the attributes of the monk-robed skeleton.

The only thing they could confirm was that the monk-robed skeleton wasn’t a Buddhist-type.

Zhou Wen kept thinking about how he could safely get the white elephant Companion Egg out, so he was also studying the attributes of the monk-robed skeleton.

Unfortunately, there wasn’t an anomaly in Dragon Gate Grotto in-game, nor was there a mountain temple or monk-robed skeleton. There was no way to test it in-game.

After some thought, Zhou Wen had an idea.

Primordial Spore’s Life Providence was Eternal Immortality. Although its stats weren’t high, it wasn’t easy to kill it.

Even the Golden Overlord Sword’s golden sword beam, which had the augmentation of Ever-Victorious and Unstoppable, couldn’t kill Primordial Spore. This showed how powerful the Eternal Immortality Life Providence was.

At present, Zhou Wen only knew that there were two types of skills that could directly kill Primordial Spore—Bright Torch Vision World and Tai Sui’s innate talent.

Therefore, Zhou Wen thought of letting Primordial Spore enter the temple to give it a try. Perhaps he might discover something.

Having made up his mind, Zhou Wen didn’t hesitate any further. He released Primordial Spore and allowed it to float slowly towards the mountain temple.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 679 - It's Here for Me

Chapter 679: It’s Here for Me

Primordial Spore slowly floated over the river and headed for the mountain temple.

Although there were many Fairies and Mallas wandering around, none of them noticed the existence of Primordial Spore.

Zhou Wen realized that using Primordial Spore to scout the way was extremely effective. Few dimensional creatures could discover its existence.

Primordial Spore made its way to the temple without any obstructions. However, the moment Primordial Spore entered the temple, something went wrong.

Although Primordial Spore wasn’t killed by the golden light that enveloped the entire mountain temple, its body emitted a blinding light when it clashed with the golden light. It was like a firefly’s glow.

Although the light wasn’t eye-catching, it made Primordial Spore lose the advantage of being virtually invisible.

Primordial Spore flew through the golden light and soon arrived beside the white elephant Companion Egg. As it had the Eternal Immortality Life Providence, it wasn’t killed by the golden light.

Having been exposed, it was too risky to let Primordial Spore fly towards the monk-robed skeleton. Under such

circumstances, Zhou Wen wasn’t greedy. He got Primordial Spore to land on the white elephant’s Companion Egg before getting it to push the Companion Egg. He wanted to see if he could push the Companion Egg out of the temple.

Primordial Spore’s Strength was very weak, but that was when compared to other Mythical creatures. At the very least, it had 41 Strength. It was more than enough to push the white elephant’s Companion Egg.

Now, Zhou Wen was only a little worried. He didn’t know if the monk-robed skeleton would interfere.

Zhou Wen constantly observed the monk-robed skeleton’s movements. As long as he made any abnormal movements, Zhou Wen would immediately get Primordial Spore to escape and leave the Companion Egg behind.

However, the monk-robed skeleton didn’t react. Primordial Spore stuck to the white elephant Companion Egg, pushing it and making it slowly roll out of the temple.

The soldiers monitoring the mountain temple discovered the phenomenon of the white elephant Companion Egg and immediately reported it to their superiors. Soon, An Tianzuo, Qin Wufu, and company came out. Indeed, they saw the white elephant Companion Egg roll out of the mountain temple.

“What’s going on? Why is the Companion Egg rolling out?” Qin Wufu said in surprise as he held a pair of binoculars.

This was because after leaving the mountain temple, Primordial Spore no longer produced any light from resisting the golden light. Qin Wufu and company couldn’t see Primordial Spore at all.

An Tianzuo was also somewhat puzzled as he ordered the soldiers, “Be on high alert to prevent any incidents.”

After issuing the order, An Tianzuo carefully observed the Companion Egg, but he couldn’t figure it out. It was as though the Companion Egg had gained sentience and was rolling down the mountain.

The tutors and Epic experts from the rich and powerful families were also attracted over. Although they all wanted the white elephant Companion Egg, they found it odd to see it roll out. No one dared to snatch it.

“It’s coming… It’s coming to the encampment…” Someone realized that after the Companion Egg rolled down, it jumped into the river and leisurely crossed the river. It then rolled up to the river bank and rolled towards the encampment.

“Everyone, be careful…” A group of soldiers, tutors, and Epic experts were all waiting solemnly. They stared at the Companion Egg as though they were facing a great enemy. An Tianzuo and Leng Zongzheng were also staring at it.

Zhou Wen only wanted to get the Companion Egg out, having never expected to cause such a grand lineup. It didn’t seem right to take the Companion Egg in front of everyone.

Zhou Wen was still hesitating about what to do when the Companion Egg rolled to the encampment. The soldiers aimed their guns at it, as though they would shoot at it with everything they had once the order was given.

The Epic experts had also summoned their Companion Beasts. It looked like they were preparing for battle.

“That… I’m sorry… It’s fine, it’s fine… Don’t worry… It’s here for me…” Zhou Wen had no choice but to bite the bullet and walk out. He raised his hands and waved at the soldiers, gesturing for them not to shoot.

Everyone was taken aback when they heard him say that. An Tianzuo’s expression was even stranger.

“What do you mean it’s here to look for you?” An Tianzuo and company found it odd. A Companion Egg came down from the mountain temple to find Zhou Wen?

Could it be that it had rested in the temple for too long and wanted to come down the mountain to chat with Zhou Wen? Wasn’t that ridiculous?

Everyone stared at Zhou Wen with odd expressions. The soldiers didn’t lower their guns. The Epic experts’ Companion Beasts were still staring at the Companion Egg. Clearly, they couldn’t believe Zhou Wen’s words.

Zhou Wen had no choice but to bite the bullet and wave at the Companion Egg. He said, “It’s fine. I’ll take it now. Everyone, you may return to your work.”

Everyone was alarmed when they saw the Companion Egg roll towards Zhou Wen.

Could it be that something like a Companion Egg would find someone they knew? Many people had mixed expressions.

Zhou Wen carried the Companion Egg and walked back. At that moment, An Tianzuo waved his hand, gesturing for the soldiers to return to their positions before they lowered their guns.

“From the looks of it, Young Master Wen has quite good social relations. Even a Companion Egg delivers itself to him,” An Sheng said with a smile.

An Tianzuo said with a cold expression, “It’s just a lowly trick.”

With that said, he ignored everyone and returned to his office.

“This Little Zhou is getting more and more interesting.” Leng Zongzheng looked at Zhou Wen with a smile before turning to leave.

The news of Companion Eggs coming down the mountain to chat with Zhou Wen immediately spread in the encampment. The more it spread, the crazier it became.

“You might not know about this. It was a cold, windy day. Countless heroes used all kinds of Companion Beasts, but none of them were able to extract the Companion Egg from the mountain temple. It could be said that there were countless deaths and injuries. However, who would have expected that the Companion Egg of the huge white elephant couldn’t withstand the loneliness in the middle of the dark, windy night? It went down the mountain to chat with Young Master Zhou… Speaking of Young Master Zhou, he’s no ordinary person. At Chess Mountain’s encampment, he is known as Doctor Little Zhou. He healed the strange ailment of the Chess Mountain. Now, at Dragon Gate Grotto’s encampment, he showed his might and wiped out the mushroom monsters that left many helpless…” A soldier, who had seen Zhou Wen while being stationed at Chess Mountain, explained to his colleagues who had missed the development because they were resting.

“Do you know why Young Master Zhou Wen has so many magical abilities? To be honest, my third uncle’s niece’s second aunt’s cousin-in-law is the gardener of the An family. According to his reliable sources, Young Master Wen is Madam Lan’s son, the Overseer’s younger brother. If you ask me why Young Master Wen’s surname is Zhou and not An, then we will have to talk about a tragic past. You might not believe it, but the Overseer and Young Master Wen are twins. Back when Madam Lan was giving birth, a great enemy attacked. After Madam Lan gave birth to the Overseer and Young Master Wen, Young Master Wen was snatched away by the bad guys…”

Ordinary soldiers didn’t know about the An family and the Zhou family. However, when they heard that Zhou Wen was Madam Lan’s son, and after making some additional associations, the rumors became crazier and crazier.

When the rumors reached An Tianzuo’s ears, the corners of his eyes twitched for a long time, but he remained silent.

An Sheng didn’t dare say a word as he stood at the side with a solemn expression. His face was taut, but for some reason, he looked very uncomfortable.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 680 - An Opportunity

Chapter 680: An Opportunity

“Old Zhou, how did you do it?” Li Xuan widened his eyes as he looked at the Companion Egg that Zhou Wen had carried back.

Feng Qiuyan had also seen the Companion Egg come down the mountain to look for Zhou Wen. After some thought, he came to a realization. “Coach, you must be proficient in the language of eggs. You can communicate with the Companion Egg, right?”

Zhou Wen was instantly rendered speechless. All he could do was explain, “I used a microscopic Companion Beast to push the Companion Egg down. I know nothing about egg language.”

“I see.” Li Xuan and Feng Qiuyan were immediately enlightened.

Zhou Wen took some time to look at the stats of the huge white elephant’s Companion Egg and realized that its stats were rather good.

White Elephant: Mythical

Life Providence: Guardian Elephant

Life Soul: Holy Tusks

Wheel of Destiny: Holy Guardian

Strength: 80

Speed: 72

Constitution: 79

Essence Energy: 80

Talent Skill: Saint Energy Augmentation, Heaven Pillar Strike, Holy Impact

Companion Form: Mount

Another mount? Zhou Wen was immediately depressed. He only had one butt, so how could he ride two Companion Beasts at the same time?

After some thought, Zhou Wen didn't store White Elephant into his phone, nor did he hatch it.

White Elephant and Great Might Vajra Bull were considered Companion Beasts of the same type. Furthermore, its stats couldn't compare to the Great Might Vajra Bull. Even if he hatched it, it wouldn't be of much use to Zhou Wen.

As for using it as an ordinary Companion Beast, Zhou Wen felt that it wasn't necessary. Now that he had the ability to grind Mythical Companion Eggs, there would definitely be many Mythical Companion Beasts with such stats in the future. Furthermore, he couldn't take those Mythical Companion Eggs out for sale.

Why don't I sell this White Elephant Companion Egg or exchange it for something? It's useless to me anyway. Zhou Wen thought for a moment and realized that selling it didn't seem appropriate.

Mythical Companion Beasts were rare. There were probably only about a hundred of them in the entire Federation. They

were no longer things that money could measure.

Furthermore, it was useless for Zhou Wen to have so much money. He was not at all materialistic.

“Old Zhou, your luck is too good. How old are you, and you’ve already obtained another Mythical Companion Beast. I reckon the old fellows from the six families don’t have as many Mythical Companion Beasts as you,” Li Xuan said enviously.

“If you want it, you can buy it,” Zhou Wen said.

“For real?” Li Xuan was slightly taken aback. He never expected Zhou Wen to say that.

“Of course it’s true. I’m short of money. You can’t cheat me on the price.” Zhou Wen felt that letting Li Xuan have a Mythical Companion Beast wasn’t a bad idea.

“I appreciate the thought, but I can’t take this Companion Egg. I want my first Mythical Companion Egg to be something I killed myself,” Li Xuan said seriously.

“Qiuyan, what about you? Are you interested?” Zhou Wen asked Feng Qiuyan again.

“The white elephant doesn’t suit me.” Feng Qiuyan was even more direct.

Zhou Wen was depressed. He wanted to give the Companion Egg away, but no one wanted it.

“Since you aren’t interested, I’ll get An Sheng to help me sell it,” Zhou Wen said as he called An Sheng.

“Young Master Wen, is there something urgent? If not, I’ll come over to you after I’m done with my matters,” An Sheng carefully said as he glanced at the sullen An Tianzuo.

“It’s nothing serious. It’s just the White Elephant Companion Egg. I want to sell it. Help me see if anyone wants it,” Zhou Wen said.

An Sheng was immediately alarmed when he heard that. “Young Master Wen, you want to sell the White Elephant Companion Egg? Why are you doing this? If there’s a problem with the incubation, we can help you.”

“No, I just feel that it’s useless. It’s a waste having it with me. I want to exchange it for something useful,” Zhou Wen said.

An Sheng was immediately rendered speechless. Zhou Wen was the only one who claimed that Mythical Companion Beasts were useless.

However, on second thought, it made sense. Zhou Wen had too many Mythical Companion Beasts. Furthermore, with terrifying existences like Torch Dragon and Tyrant Behemoth, a White Elephant was nothing to him.

“Young Master Wen, wait for me. I’ll come to you. Let’s talk in person,” An Sheng said before hanging up.

“Overseer, Young Master Wen wants to sell the White Elephant Companion Egg,” An Sheng said to An Tianzuo.

An Sheng had said it loudly just now, so An Tianzuo had naturally heard it. He said with a deadpan expression, “Foolish. He’s beginning to become arrogant just because he has some wealth. Since he wants to sell it, buy it. Give him whatever he wants. Don’t miss a single cent.”

“Young Master Wen isn’t a greedy person. He might say that he wants to sell it, but he just wants to give it to us,” An Sheng explained on Zhou Wen’s behalf.

“There’s no sincerity at all. Is this how a gift is given to someone? Furthermore, even if it’s a gift, it’s for you. I have nothing to do with him, nor will I take his things. Therefore, it should be you, not us. Be more precise with your words in the future. As my adjutant, you aren’t even precise with your words. What kind of adjutant are you?” An Tianzuo waved his hand and said, “Don’t bother me. Go back to work.”

An Sheng had no choice but to leave the office and head to Zhou Wen.

“Young Master Wen, what do you want to exchange it for?” An Sheng asked as he looked at the White Elephant Companion Egg.

“I want five million,” Zhou Wen said.

“That’s nothing. Mythical Companion Eggs are worth far more than that,” Zhou Wen said.

“As for the rest, I want some rather special Epic Essence Energy Skill Crystals,” Zhou Wen said after some thought. His offensive means were still too uniform. He wanted to try and see if he could develop a divine offensive skill.

“Be specific,” An Sheng said.

“It’s best if it’s an attack skill with special effects. It’s best if it’s a palm technique.” Zhou Wen had always wanted to advance his Ashen Palm, but he had no suitable direction.

“How about this? I don’t think you’ve thought it through. I’ll give you a catalog later for you to choose,” An Sheng said.

“Alright, that’s settled then. Take the Companion Egg away.” Zhou Wen was rather satisfied with the deal.

An Sheng didn’t stand on ceremony as he took the White Elephant Companion Egg back and quickly returned with a catalog for Zhou Wen. There were many Epic Essence Energy Skill Crystals listed on it.

However, the catalog only had the names of Essence Energy Skill Crystals. He didn’t know what kind of skills they were.

“You probably can’t tell what kind of Essence Energy Skills they are just by their names. What you can choose is probably the attributes. It’s best if you choose an Essence Energy Skill Crystal that matches your Essence Energy Art,” An Sheng suggested.

Zhou Wen read for a while, unsure what Essence Energy Skill he should choose.

He had dropped quite a number of Essence Energy Skill Crystals and had learned quite a number of skills, but there were very few that he could usually use.

“Young Master Wen, if you can’t make up your mind, I have a suggestion,” An Sheng said.

“What’s the suggestion?” Zhou Wen asked.

“Rather than exchanging the egg for Essence Energy Skill Crystals, why don’t you exchange it for a chance?” An Sheng said with a serious expression.

“What chance?” Zhou Wen looked at An Sheng in puzzlement.

“Previously, I entered a mysterious dimensional zone with the Overseer…” An Sheng explained.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 681 - Treasure Chest in a Maze

Chapter 681: Treasure Chest in a Maze

According to An Sheng, he and An Tianzuo had accidentally fallen into a mysterious dimensional zone. It was like a maze. Furthermore, there were many treasure chests in the maze. Opening the treasure chest could give them Companion Eggs, dimensional crystals, or strange objects. It was also possible not to receive anything.

An Tianzuo's first Mythical Companion Egg was obtained from there. However, one person could only open three treasure chests in the maze.

An Sheng's luck wasn't too good. He opened three treasure chests, but he didn't obtain any Mythical Companion Eggs. However, it wasn't as though he didn't get anything.

In the maze, An Sheng obtained a mysterious pill from a treasure chest. After using it, his physique underwent some changes. In the past, An Sheng had told Zhou Wen that he was especially sensitive to Spirit Bodies. It was thanks to the mysterious pill.

"In this era, there's really nothing out of the ordinary. To think that there's actually such a good place. There are countless strange dimensional zones around the world. I wonder how many people have obtained fortuitous encounters. The fortuitous encounters of wuxia novels in the past are too common in this era," Zhou Wen said wistfully.

However, Zhou Wen had a slight advantage. Other people's fortuitous encounters were life-threatening. As for him, all he needed to do was download the dungeon and slowly encounter them. He was bound to encounter one.

Other people's fortuitous encounters could be deemed as Heaven selecting them, but the mysterious phone made Heaven's selection inevitable.

"The world is changing, and humans are changing as well. It's the same for the Federation. However, no matter how the world changes, there's one thing that won't change," An Sheng said.

"What?" Zhou Wen really couldn't think of anything in this world that wouldn't change.

"The winner is king," An Sheng said seriously.

Zhou Wen was taken aback. This didn't sound like An Sheng's style. He imagined that An Sheng would say something about family.

An Sheng smiled and said, "Let's talk about the maze. The maze itself changes automatically. To walk out of it, one needs to understand the Book of Changes and Chinese divination. Last time, we found a total of twelve treasure chests when Overseer took me through the maze. We opened six and left the remaining six for Madam and Miss Jing. However, in the maze, one needs the strength of an Epic to survive. Miss Jing hasn't had the chance to go. Madam has been investigating Mr. Ouyang's matter, so she hasn't had the time to go either. Now, she's investigating Chu He. I reckon she won't be going. Why not use the White Elephant to exchange for a chance to enter and try your luck?"

“Since this is Sis Lan’s chance, it’s not nice of me to exchange for it, right?” Zhou Wen was somewhat hesitant.

“There’s nothing wrong with it. The treasure chests have at best Mythical Companion Eggs. If you’re unlucky, there might be nothing. It’s very reasonable for you to exchange a Mythical Companion Egg for an opportunity. Besides, if Madam isn’t going, having you take this opportunity is better than letting others benefit,” An Sheng said.

Zhou Wen thought that it made sense. Since Sis Lan wasn’t going, it was fair for him to use the White Elephant Companion Egg to exchange for this opportunity.

“Alright.” Zhou Wen nodded slightly.

“After the matter at Dragon Gate Grotto is resolved, I’ll take you there. That place isn’t in Luoyang. Besides, before you go, you have to remember the maze’s possible path changes. I’ll give you the map of the maze later,” An Sheng said with a smile.

After An Sheng left, Zhou Wen continued grinding dungeons.

He got nothing from entering Dragon Gate Grotto and grinding the baby tiger. Zhou Wen was already numb with disappointment.

Why doesn’t the dungeon in-game change as well? If the game dungeons can intrinsically change, I can try cracking the golden light’s secret in-game, Zhou Wen thought greedily.

Ding!

When Zhou Wen was grinding the Endless Sea of Stars, an Essence Energy Skill Crystal dropped. On careful look, it was the Neck Gold Dragon Essence Energy Skill he had been looking forward to.

It finally dropped! Zhou Wen was overjoyed. He had been grinding for many days. He had already obtained quite a number of the other six palaces of the Azure Dragon's seven palaces, but only the Neck Gold Dragon eluded him. He had finally fulfilled his wish today.

After impatiently absorbing the Essence Energy Skill Crystal, Zhou Wen felt another nail-like Essence Energy acupoint appear on his body. When the Essence Energy acupoint formed, the other six Essence Energy acupoints that were like dead acupoints suddenly came to life. They formed an Essence Energy circulation between the seven Essence Energy acupoints.

Horn, neck, root, room, heart, tail, winnowing basket. The seven palaces were identical to the shape of a dragon. The horn was the horn of a dragon, and the neck was a dragon's neck. Root was the stem of the neck. Room corresponded to the arms, the heart was the heart, and the winnowing basket was the tail.

Essence Energy flowed through the seven Essence Energy points like an Azure Dragon. Zhou Wen could even hear the Azure Dragon's long roar.

Zhou Wen looked at his stats in-game and realized that the seven Essence Energy Skills had vanished, turning into an Essence Energy Skill.

Eastern Azure Dragon Seven Lunar Mansions (Mortal): Horn Wood Scaly Dragon, Neck Gold Dragon, Root Earth Raccoon

Dog, Room Solar Rabbit, Heart Lunar Fox, Tail Fire Tiger, and Winnowing-basket Water Leopard.

Zhou Wen saw that the Essence Energy Skill was still at the Mortal stage, having not leveled up just because of the fusion of seven skills. However, the Essence Energy Skills that he couldn't use previously could now be used.

He attempted to use the skill of the Azure Dragon's Seven Lunar Mansions in-game. The Essence Energy in his body surged and transformed into an invisible force that coiled around his body, protecting him.

This feels a little similar to the Lotus Flower Buddha Body's functions. They are all protective Essence Energy Skills, but they seem much weaker than the Lotus Flower Buddha Body. Zhou Wen couldn't help but be in a dilemma. He hadn't used the Lotus Flower Buddha Body for a long time because it wasn't strong enough.

Now, the Eastern Azure Dragon's Seven Lunar Mansions was only at the Mortal stage, so the effects were even weaker.

When Zhou Wen used it, he realized that the Azure Dragon Seven Nights could transform into the seven different forms —Heart Lunar Fox, Room Solar Rabbit, and so on. But he didn't notice anything special.

After grinding for so long, it's only a protective Essence Energy Skill? Zhou Wen felt that something was amiss. With an Essence Energy Skill named after the twenty-eight Lunar Mansions and one that was so difficult to grind, it shouldn't be so weak.

Should I try gathering the twenty-eight Lunar Mansions Essence Energy Skill and give it a try? Zhou Wen wasn't

willing to give up. He decided to grind the other Lunar Mansion skills if he had the time.

However, Zhou Wen didn't plan on deliberately grinding them any further. It was just that he would farm them if he saw them during his search for Astral Combat Beasts. It was best if he could gather all of them but it was not necessary.

He controlled the blood-colored avatar to constantly search for Astral Combat Beasts in the endless sea of stars. After heading to other stellar zones, he indeed obtained other Lunar Mansion skills.

After grinding for some time, Zhou Wen realized the pattern.

In the four Lunar Mansion regions of north, south, east, and west, every Lunar Mansion region had one Essence Energy Skill that was especially difficult to obtain. Furthermore, one couldn't use it unless one gathered all seven Essence Energy Skills.

Azure Dragon, Vermilion Bird, White Tiger, and Black Tortoise are in the four Lunar Mansion zones. I wonder what effects they will have if I gather all of them. It was only a passing thought for Zhou Wen; he didn't deliberately complete the twenty-eight Lunar Mansions.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 682 - Stone House

Chapter 682: Stone House

While Zhou Wen and company were busy guarding Dragon Gate Grotto, another Companion Beast challenged Primordial Sword Immortal. It was a Companion Beast named Heavy-Armored Titan.

Heavy-Armored Titan and Tyrant Behemoth were considered Companion Beasts of the same type. They had powerful physiques and formidable strength and had especially terrifying defenses.

Heavy-Armored Titan's entire body was enveloped by heavy armor. When it used the power of the Wheel of Destiny, almost no one could break its heavy armor.

Primordial Sword Immortal wasn't able to slice apart the heavy armor of the Titan. However, Primordial Immortal Sword's intelligence was much higher than Heavy-Armored Titan. Furthermore, its speed was very fast, so it didn't clash head-on with Heavy-Armored Titan that had activated its Wheel of Destiny. Once its Wheel of Destiny ended, it was completely defeated by Primordial Sword Immortal. It still couldn't force Primordial Sword Immortal into using its Wheel of Destiny.

Zhou Wen also watched the video of the battle later. Heavy-Armored Titan and Tyrant Behemoth were indeed similar, but it wasn't as agile as Tyrant Behemoth. The Wheel of Destiny was purely a defensive force, unlike Tyrant Behemoth's Absolute Strength that was offensive.

I wonder if Tyrant Behemoth's Absolute Strength will be able to produce a suction force on Primordial Sword Immortal. If I can suck it and force it to fight head-on, Tyrant Behemoth will have a chance of winning. If I can't, Tyrant Behemoth will face an awkward situation like Heavy-Armored Titan, Zhou Wen thought to himself and felt that the chances of Tyrant Behemoth defeating Primordial Sword Immortal were relatively low.

It wasn't that his strength wasn't enough, but that his intelligence was too low. He wasn't at an advantage even with his formidable strength.

There's not much time left of the three-month deadline. No one can force out Primordial Sword Immortal's Wheel of Destiny. I'm afraid it won't be easy to vie for first place, Zhou Wen thought for a moment. Unless he got Torch Dragon to use Bright Torch Vision World, it would be difficult to snatch first place.

Why am I thinking so much? Who knows if the problem with Dragon Gate Grotto can be resolved before the three-month deadline. Perhaps I don't have the time to participate in the battle. It's useless no matter how much I think about it. Zhou Wen had to stop thinking about it. He would grind dungeons when he had the time, but most of the time, he needed to help the Sunset Army fight the dimensional creatures that had rushed out of Dragon Gate Grotto. In fact, he didn't even have much time to grind dungeons.

Large numbers of dimensional creatures rushed out of Dragon Gate Grotto every day, but most of the time, no Mythical creatures appeared. They were dispatched by Chancellor Leng the few times they did appear. However, no Mythical Companion Egg dropped. Instead, a Mythical Essence Energy Skill Crystal dropped.

“It’s gone… The monk-robed skeleton is gone…” A soldier monitoring Dragon Gate Grotto discovered something strange. The monk-robed skeleton had vanished.

As for the stone house’s door, it opened, revealing pure white light from inside.

Just as everyone was feeling bewildered, the golden bird tore through the air and flew into the stone house.

It was huge, and the stone house was short and small. The door was even shorter, but when the golden bird flew in front of the stone house, its body gradually shrank to almost the size of a pigeon as it flew in.

Leng Zongzheng got Zhou Wen to join him before deciding that Leng Zongzheng, An Sheng, and Zhou Wen should enter the stone house to investigate.

An Tianzuo still had to guard Luoyang, so he couldn’t easily take the risk.

This was especially so now. Mythical creatures could rush out of Dragon Gate Grotto at any time and someone was needed to guard it. Otherwise, if they all entered, no one would be able to suppress the Mythical creatures that appeared. When that happened, Luoyang would be doomed.

“Although we can’t determine the attributes of the monk-robed skeleton, we can only take things one step at a time now. After entering the stone house, safety first. If you discover anything amiss, you have to leave immediately,” Leng Zongzheng exhorted Zhou Wen and An Sheng.

The two of them expressed their understanding before Leng Zongzheng led them to the stone house.

An Tianzuo watched them go up the mountain, but he didn’t say a word.

Leng Zongzheng summoned a tiny beast to scout ahead. Without the monk-robed skeleton, the golden light in the mountain temple no longer existed. There was no danger.

The three of them successfully entered the mountain temple and arrived in front of the stone house.

Zhou Wen constantly tried observing the situation inside the stone house, but be it his vision or Truth Listener’s ability, neither of them could penetrate the white light inside.

“Follow behind me. If anything happens, retreat immediately. Don’t hesitate,” Leng Zongzheng exhorted again.

Zhou Wen took out the Substitute Talisman and stuck it on his body. At the same time, he switched his Essence Energy Art to Dao Body. He had Gods Retreat Life Soul on standby.

Unfortunately, the door was too small. If he summoned Six-Winged, it wouldn’t be able to enter. Therefore, Zhou Wen temporarily didn’t summon Six-Winged. He planned on summoning it immediately after entering.

Leng Zongzheng had already gotten the little beast to enter the stone house. After confirming that there was no danger of death, he led Zhou Wen and An Sheng into the stone house.

Zhou Wen walked in and entered the white light. He found it very strange as though he was walking in water, but the white light was something he couldn’t touch.

Due to the white light, Zhou Wen couldn’t see anything. However, this feeling didn’t last long. After taking three steps, the white light in front of him vanished as his eyes regained clarity.

However, the scene in front of him left Zhou Wen alarmed.

The scene in front of him wasn’t a stone house. In front of him was a mysterious kingdom. The architectural style was very strange. The towers, buildings, monuments, and rooftops all had various Buddha statues.

What was even more surprising was that this nation was made of gold bricks. All the buildings and statues were made of gold. They looked resplendent and dazzling.

All sorts of mysterious Buddha statues dazzled the eyes. Zhou Wen had never seen many of them before, and they didn’t match the style of Dragon Gate Grotto.

In the center of the Buddhist kingdom, there was a huge golden Buddha statue that was more than ten thousand feet tall. From afar, the Buddha statue’s body tore through the clouds. Its eyes were lowered as though it was looking down at everything.

Zhou Wen looked at the Buddha statue’s shape and realized that it resembled the Lochana Buddha. According to what Zhou Wen knew, Lochana Buddha was a Buddha who had obtained the Buddha Fruit of Absolute Truth. He was a symbol of wisdom in Buddhism.

Legend had it that in Dragon Gate Grotto, there was a Lochana Buddha carved to the likes of an ancient female monarch.

Of course, that was only a legend.

Zhou Wen heaved a sigh of relief when he saw An Sheng and Leng Zongzheng beside him. When he looked at them, he saw them looking towards the front of the street.

The skeleton in monk robes was walking on the long street. With the golden crystal bead in hand, it walked towards the huge Buddha step by step like it was holding a miniature sun.

For some reason, the monk-robed skeleton walked very slowly as though it was treading on thin ice.

In the sky, the golden bird spread its wings and also flew in the direction of the huge Buddha. Its body was like a great Roc as it spread its wings for 500 kilometers, but for some reason, it failed to close the distance between it and the huge Buddha.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 683 - Urna

Chapter 683: Urna

Zhou Wen had already summoned the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon and had it appear on his back in the form of dragon wings. He didn't dare be careless when entering such a strange place in reality.

He turned his head and realized that there was no longer a stone door behind him. Behind him was an endless void. The huge golden Buddha nation was floating in the void like an island while they were standing at the edge of the golden Buddha nation.

Zhou Wen looked around and failed to find a way back. He looked at An Sheng and asked, "Ah Sheng, can you tell the way back?"

An Sheng shook his head and said, "I can't tell. It's probably going to be troublesome. Young Master Wen, you have to be careful at all times."

Leng Zongzheng said, "Look at the spot between the giant Buddha's eyebrows."

Zhou Wen and An Sheng looked over and saw a huge piece of sun-like glass between the Buddha's brows that emitted a strange glow.

"In Buddhism, that's an Urna. It's one of the thirty-two aspects of Gautama Buddha. It represents the source of all religions," An Sheng said.

Leng Zongzheng nodded and said, “An Urna is one of the original forms of Buddha. It shrinks between the eyebrows. And when a craftsman carves a Buddha statue, there’s no way to depict the true appearance of an Urna. They usually just carve a circle or spiral to represent it. Look carefully at the Urna. Do you find anything odd?”

Zhou Wen and An Sheng looked over and felt that the Urna was blinding, as though it was clear glass.

As Truth Listener’s power couldn’t reach such a distance, Zhou Wen didn’t sense any danger descending. He switched to the Small Perfection of Wisdom and the Hell King Life Soul to strengthen his senses before carefully looking at the Urna.

Upon doing so, Zhou Wen immediately realized something. The Urna wasn’t glass. It was clearly a cocoon formed from crystal threads.

“That’s… the cocoon of a Guardian…” Zhou Wen said in surprise.

Leng Zongzheng said with a heavy expression, “It’s probably a cocoon of a Guardian. I originally thought that Dragon Gate Grotto only had one in Dragon’s Well, I didn’t expect there to be another one.”

“Could it be that everything that happened in Dragon Gate Grotto is due to the cocoon of the Guardian? But that doesn’t make sense. Doesn’t a Guardian only choose humans as contractors? Why are the monk-robed skeleton and the golden-winged bird here?” Zhou Wen frowned.

No one could answer his question. The three of them watched from afar as the monk-clothed skeleton walked towards the Buddha and the golden-winged bird flew at high speed.

However, be it the skeleton in monk robes or the golden-winged bird, they couldn’t close the distance. It was as though they were running on the spot.

“There’s a huge terror hidden in this Buddhist kingdom. It’s not something ordinary creatures can pass through. Little Zhou, summon that Great Might Vajra Bull and see if it can approach the Buddha statue,” said Leng Zongzheng.

Zhou Wen hurriedly summoned the Great Might Vajra Bull and made it try walking in the direction of the Buddha.

It was odd. The golden-winged bird’s flying speed was tremendous. It could fly hundreds of kilometers with a flap of its wings, but it was unable to approach the huge Buddha.

However, the Great Might Vajra Bull easily closed the distance by slowly walking on the golden bricks. It was about to catch up to the monk-robed skeleton.

“As expected. Only Buddhist-type creatures can travel through the Buddhist kingdom. That monk-robed skeleton isn’t a Buddhist-type creature after all. It’s probably relying on the crystal in its hand to slowly walk towards the Buddha. As for the golden-winged bird, it can’t approach it no matter what. It’s worse than the monk-robed skeleton.” As Leng Zongzheng spoke, he got Zhou Wen to summon the Great Might Vajra Bull back to prevent it from meeting the monk-robed skeleton.

At that moment, a bird’s cry rang through the clouds. The golden-winged bird’s body expanded like a golden cloud that blotted out the sky. It nearly enveloped the entire Buddhist kingdom in its shadow.

It flapped its wings as a terrifying power tore through space and rapidly approached the Buddha. It actually broke

through the restrictions of the Buddhist kingdom’s strange powers.

What terrifying might. Only the gigantified Tyrant Behemoth can match it. Zhou Wen was alarmed.

Soon, the golden-winged bird arrived in front of the Buddha statue. As Leng Zongzheng had expected, it had indeed come for the cocoon of the Guardian. It flew to the top of the Buddha’s head and grabbed at it.

The monk-robed skeleton also noticed the golden-winged Bird’s actions. A strange glint flashed in its eyes as it lifted the crystal in its hand. A golden beam shot out from the crystal and instantly struck the golden-winged bird.

The golden-winged bird didn’t dare let the golden beam of light strike it. It gave up on the cocoon of the Guardian and flapped its wings to dodge.

The crystal in the skeleton’s hand constantly emitted golden beams, preventing the golden-winged bird from approaching the cocoon.

The golden-winged bird’s actions were interrupted a few times. It immediately turned ferocious as it flapped its wings and transformed into a golden beam that charged at the monk-robed skeleton. Its eyes flashed with lightning.

As the skeleton advanced, it raised the crystal in its hand and emitted a golden glow that fought the golden-winged bird.

The golden-winged bird seemed to be afraid of the crystal in its hand. It was forced back by the crystal’s light repeatedly.

Leng Zongzheng stared at the monk-clothed skeleton and the crystal in its hand for a long time as though he was thinking about something. After a while, Leng Zongzheng suddenly turned to Zhou Wen and said, “Little Zhou, get the Great Might Vajra Bull to carry us to the Buddha.”

Although Leng Zongzheng didn’t explain why he was doing so, Zhou Wen hurriedly summoned the Great Might Vajra Bull when he saw his solemn expression.

Thankfully, the Great Might Vajra Bull was huge. It was more than big enough to seat three people.

The three of them sat on the bull’s back. The Great Might Vajra Bull immediately ran towards the Buddha.

The monk-robed skeleton needed to walk towards the Buddha step by step. As for the Great Might Vajra Bull, it ran very quickly. Soon, it caught up with the monk-robed skeleton. While it was fighting the golden-winged Roc, it charged past it.

When the monk-robed skeleton saw the Great Might Vajra Bull rush over with three people on it, the strange light in its eyes immediately lit up. The crystal in its hand immediately emitted a golden glow that resembled the one in the mountain temple. It enveloped a large area, including the Great Might Vajra Bull, Zhou Wen, and company.

Zhou Wen immediately felt the Runic Heavy Armor on his body melt like bubbles. Even the Great Might Vajra Bull’s body couldn’t withstand the terrifying golden light. It was like a melting candle as its golden flesh melted.

Leng Zongzheng and Ah Sheng’s situation was the same. The armor on their bodies was melting, and in an instant, their armor was about to collapse.

Zhou Wen pulled out the Golden Overlord Sword and slashed at the monk-robed skeleton. At the same time, he ordered the Great Might Vajra Bull to use the Soul Suppression Bell.

Clang!

The moment the Soul Suppression Bell sounded, the monk-robed skeleton was stunned. The golden light emitted from the crystal in its hand also dimmed.

Taking this opportunity, Leng Zongzheng and Ah Sheng attacked at the same time. Leng Zongzheng summoned the Azure Rainbow Flying Sword that Zhou Wen had previously seen and slashed at the monk-robed skeleton. As for Ah Sheng, he used Love Letter’s text ability and sent a text to the monk-robed skeleton.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 684 - Obstruction

Chapter 684: Obstruction

The duration of the dizziness caused by the Soul Suppression Bell was too short. When the golden sword beam slashed at the monk-robed skeleton, the skeleton had already reacted. It held the crystal in one hand and waved its other hand.

The golden sword beam was immediately shattered. The Azure Rainbow Flying Sword was sent flying almost simultaneously.

An Sheng’s text came in front of it. It opened its mouth and blew out a strange cold wind that scattered the power of the text.

Despite fighting three alone, the skeleton still had the upper hand. It held up the crystal in its hand again and shot out a golden beam.

However, the golden beam wasn’t directed at Zhou Wen and company. It transformed into a beam that shot into the sky, targeting the golden-winged bird.

It turned out that the golden-winged bird had taken advantage of the battle between the monk-robed skeleton and the trio to fly towards the Buddha, hoping to snatch the cocoon of the Guardian from the Buddha’s glabella.

“Let’s go to the Buddha quickly.” Leng Zongzheng didn’t seem to be in the mood to fight the monk-robed skeleton as he shouted loudly.

Zhou Wen hurriedly got the Great Might Vajra Bull to rush towards the Buddha. The monk-robed skeleton and the golden-winged bird were occupied with fighting, so they couldn’t be bothered with them.

Soon, the Great Might Vajra Bull ran to the foot of the Buddha, but it couldn’t fly. It was difficult to ascend the Buddha.

“It should be fine now. Let’s head up,” Leng Zongzheng said as he leaped up from the bull’s back. He stepped onto the Azure Rainbow Flying Sword and flew towards the cocoon of the Guardian.

Zhou Wen unsummoned the Great Might Vajra Bull and flapped his wings to catch up.

Ah Sheng quickly jumped up the Buddha statue. He was slightly slower. Leng Zongzheng seemed to be very anxious. Without waiting for them, he charged forward alone.

The golden-winged bird and the monk-robed skeleton, who were originally fighting, realized that Leng Zongzheng and company were charging towards the cocoon of the Guardian. They stopped their tussle simultaneously and attacked Leng Zongzheng.

“Help me hold them back. Don’t let them come up.” Leng Zongzheng was extremely bold. He leaped up from the Azure Rainbow Flying Sword and lunged towards the cocoon of the Guardian. As for the Azure Rainbow Flying Sword, it headed straight for the monk-robed skeleton.

Another white beam flew out. It was the white parrot that Zhou Wen had seen before. It flapped its wings and faced the golden-winged bird.

After some thought, Zhou Wen brandished his sword and slashed at the monk-robed skeleton. The crystal in the skeleton’s hand was too terrifying. If he held it back, he could give Leng Zongzheng greater opportunities.

However, with a flash of golden light from the monk-robed skeleton’s crystal, the golden sword beam shattered. The Azure Rainbow Flying Sword automatically flew aside, not daring to be illuminated by the golden light.

“Go!” Zhou Wen summoned Tyrant Behemoth and made it charge at the monk-robed skeleton while he charged at the golden-winged bird.

Boom!

Tyrant Behemoth landed on the ground and roared at the skeleton.

The crystal in the monk-clothed skeleton’s hand emitted a golden glow as it struck Tyrant Behemoth. Tyrant Behemoth raised its arm to block, but its arm was penetrated by the golden light.

In the next second, Tyrant Behemoth activated Absolute Strength. Its body turned into a black hole, causing the surrounding space to distort and form a strange suction force.

The monk-clothed skeleton’s body was sucked towards Tyrant Behemoth, but it refused to be outdone. It raised the crystal in its hand again and shot out a terrifying golden light towards Tyrant Behemoth.

However, the golden light was suppressed by Tyrant Behemoth’s Absolute Strength. Tyrant Behemoth charged

forward, tanking the golden light before punching the monk-robed skeleton.

Boom!

Tyrant Behemoth blasted open a huge pit in the gold-bricked ground. As for the monk-robed skeleton, it used some unknown method to dodge Tyrant Behemoth’s attack and moved a few hundred meters away.

Tyrant Behemoth roared and immediately chased after it.

In the sky, the white parrot actually spoke the human language. As it flew, it cursed, “Little eagle brat, go back and ask your mother. See who’s son you are? How dare you not kneel down and call me daddy when you see me? You’re worse than a beast. If I had known, I would have ejaculated you towards the wall…”

Zhou Wen had never seen a Companion Beast being so vulgar and offensive. Its strength was inferior to the golden-winged bird, so it could only flee for its life. However, as it fled, it kept on cursing the golden-winged bird. This infuriated the golden-winged bird, making it abandon its attacks on Leng Zongzheng as it directed its sights on the white parrot. It wanted the parrot dead.

Even Zhou Wen felt his head spin after hearing its words. He really wanted to slap it.

“A son killing his dad… Aren’t you afraid of heavenly punishment… You’ll be fried into a fragrant, mala eagle…” the white parrot cried as it fled.

It was vulgar, but its flying speed wasn’t slow at all. It was actually comparable to the golden-winged bird.

Furthermore, this fellow’s flying trajectory clearly had some technique involved. It wasn’t as simple as relying on speed.

When Zhou Wen rushed forward, the golden-winged bird was already enraged. Its body emitted a golden glow as mysterious ancient text appeared on its feathers, causing its body to emit a terrifying divine glow. With a flap of its wings, its body tore through the void and appeared above the white parrot. Its claws, that resembled sharp blades, were about to grab the white parrot.

The white parrot’s figure phased away as it used a teleportation skill to avoid the golden-winged bird’s talons.

“No matter how awesome a son is, he’s still a son. If you want to capture me, spend another ten thousand years training and there might still be hope,” the white parrot cursed as it fled in the opposite direction of the Buddha statue.

Unfortunately, its teleportation skill was the same as Zhou Wen’s Lost Country. It couldn’t be used continuously. The golden-winged bird that had already gone berserk instantly caught up to it and grabbed it in midair.

“Let go of your daddy. There’s nothing impressive about flying fast. If you have the guts, let’s fight on the ground.” The white parrot had already been caught, but its mouth didn’t stop.

Zhou Wen flapped his wings and slashed at the golden-winged bird’s claw, hoping to save the white parrot.

To his surprise, the golden-winged bird hated the white parrot to the core. It ignored the golden sword beam and retracted its claw, about to tear the white parrot’s body into pieces.

Clang!

When the golden sword beam struck the bird’s claw, white feathers flew everywhere. The golden-winged bird’s claws were covered in white feathers, but the parrot’s body was gone.

“Little eagle brat, let daddy teach you one more move. This is slough off the cicada’s golden shell from the Thirty-Six Stratagems. Learn it…” The white parrot had a few feathers left on its body. It was like a featherless chicken, but it was still making bold claims.

The fellow wasn’t stupid either. As it shouted, it fled behind Zhou Wen. The wings that were without feathers could still fly very quickly.

What the hell is this bird! Zhou Wen was rendered speechless. If he were the enemy of this crappy bird, he would wish to slaughter it immediately.

The golden-winged bird clearly had the same thought as well. It rushed over immediately as the golden light on its body flashed like lightning. Its speed was unbelievably fast.

However, Zhou Wen was right in front of the parrot. He immediately bore the brunt of the attack. He had already used Transcendent Flying Immortal to dodge the golden-winged bird’s attack, but the divine-level Transcendent Flying Immortal was like an electric tricycle against a sports car in front of the golden-winged bird. It was overtaken before it even started.

As Zhou Wen retreated, he slashed out Golden Sword Aura. However, when it struck the golden feathers, it bounced off. Ignoring the fact that he failed to injure the golden-winged bird, he couldn’t even obstruct it for a moment.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 685 - Buddha Annihilation

Chapter 685: Buddha Annihilation

A strange glint flashed in Zhou Wen’s eyes as he was about to activate Torch Dragon Youngling’s eye mirror. He wanted to use Bright Torch Vision World to kill the ferocious golden-winged bird.

To his surprise, he suddenly heard a loud boom. It came from the Buddha’s glabella.

The golden-winged bird seemed to be jolted awake as it stopped pursuing Zhou Wen. It looked up at the Buddha.

Zhou Wen also looked over and saw that Leng Zongzheng had already arrived in front of the cocoon of the Guardian. He held a saber in his hand as he stabbed it at the cocoon.

However, in the cocoon of the Guardian, a hand broke out and grabbed the tip of Leng Zongzheng’s saber.

The hand suffused a Buddhistic glow. It was fair and clean, and it didn’t look powerful. However, the sharp blade failed to injure the hand at all.

Could the sound just now be from the palm tearing out of the cocoon? Just as Zhou Wen was feeling alarmed, he heard a crack.

The hand snapped the saber in Leng Zongzheng’s hand.

Leng Zongzheng retreated and stared at the cocoon of the Guardian with a solemn expression. He muttered to himself,

“It’s still too late. Has it already developed to such a stage?”

Apart from Tyrant Behemoth, who was still chasing the monk-robed skeleton and hammering down, everyone stopped and looked at the cocoon of the Guardian.

Crack! Crack!

The Guardian’s cocoon constantly shattered as crystalline fragments fell off, emitting a clean Buddhistic glow from the cocoon.

The Buddha statues in the Buddhist kingdom seemed to come to life at that moment. Golden Buddha statues, be it sculptures or carvings on the walls, emitted the sound of chanting.

In the entire Buddhist kingdom, the mysterious murmurs reverberated like a chant. It was as though they were praying or welcoming something.

Amidst the murmurs, a golden Buddhistic glow rose from all the Buddha statues. The Buddhistic glow gathered at the Buddha’s glabella and flowed into the cracked cocoon.

Crack! Crack!

Most of the cocoon formed by the crystal threads had shattered. Zhou Wen and company could already see the creature inside the cocoon.

It was bhikkhu, who was dressed in white monk robes. He looked no different from a human, but there was an Urna on his forehead. It was crystalline-like jade and had spiral patterns.

He sat cross-legged in the cocoon as an infinite Buddhistic glow converged in front of him. They transformed into Buddha beads that automatically joined together, turning into a string of golden Buddha beads.

As the Buddhistic glow intensified, Buddha's figure appeared on the Buddha beads.

When the cocoon of the Guardian completely shattered, the string of Buddha beads finally condensed and landed in the bhikkhu's hand.

With the Buddha beads in hand, the entire Buddhist kingdom fell silent. The chanting sounds vanished as the Buddhistic glow on the Buddha statue vanished.

"Buddha is annihilated with my birth…" The bhikkhu slowly opened his eyes. His eyes were so clear that it made people feel as though looking at him was desecrating him.

However, with the bhikkhu's voice, all the Buddha statues in the Buddhist Kingdom shattered. Even the thousand-foot-tall giant Buddha statue collapsed.

The Buddha statue crumbled as it slowly sank into the void.

The monk-robed skeleton and the golden-winged bird trembled as they took on a pleading pose to the bhikkhu who held Buddha beads in his hands and pressed down with his other hand.

A huge palm print appeared above the Buddha kingdom. Tyrant Behemoth, who continued attacking the skeleton, was slammed into the ground.

Zhou Wen was alarmed as he hurriedly unsummoned Tyrant Behemoth. Thankfully, Tyrant Behemoth wasn't killed. It was

only slightly injured.

However, despite being in its Absolute Strength state, it had been forcefully suppressed and had even suffered some injuries. The bhikkhu's strength was unimaginable.

"Chancellor, do we retreat?" An Sheng asked in horror as he rapidly moved through the collapsing Buddha kingdom.

"There's nowhere to retreat to. I'll deal with him. The two of you will do as you see fit," Leng Zongzheng answered without looking back. Then, he looked at bhikkhu and asked, "What's your name?"

"Buddha Annihilation."

Leng Zongzheng didn't say a word. However, divine beams rose from his body one after another. The divine beams condensed in front of him, turning into a beautiful black-clothed goddess with a harp in her arms.

Guardian? Does Chancellor Leng actually have a Guardian? Zhou Wen saw the black-clothed goddess holding a harp in front of Leng Zongzheng and immediately recognized her identity. She was actually a Guardian.

"Name?" The bhikkhu asked as he looked at the harp-holding goddess.

"Divine Harp." When the goddess answered, her body had already transformed into streams of light that fused into Leng Zongzheng's body. At the same time, a black suit formed over him.

Leng Zongzheng's aura also underwent an earth-shattering change due to the fusion of the Divine Harp. He was like a devil in a suit.

Leng Zongzheng sat in midair as the Demonic Organ Throne appeared in front of him. The vertical tubes that resembled a castle and the rows of keys emitted a solemn and mysterious aura.

It was different from the Demonic Organ Throne that Zhou Wen had seen the last time. This time, because Leng Zongzheng had broken through to the divine level with the help of Divine Harp, he became even more terrifying. Every note emitted a terrifying glow.

Leng Zongzheng pressed his hands on the keys as harp music came from the huge vertical tubes that resembled a castle.

Zhou Wen didn't think that the harp tones were anything special, but the Buddha beads in Buddha Annihilation's hand glowed brightly as though it was resisting some kind of power.

Zhou Wen didn't have the time to figure out what was so special about the harp music. This was because the golden-winged bird had already charged at Leng Zongzheng, as though it was helping Buddha Annihilation.

Zhou Wen immediately released two Golden Battle God Halberds and attacked the golden-winged bird from the side. The Golden Overlord Sword in his hand slashed over.

The bald parrot stood on Zhou Wen's shoulder and shouted at the golden-winged bird, "Little eagle brat… Your daddy is here…"

The monk-robed skeleton also wanted to charge at Leng Zongzheng. An Sheng rushed over and stopped him, but An Sheng only had one Mythical creature—Love Letter. Love Letter was far from being the monk-robed skeleton's match.

All it could do was constantly retreat and use various strange skills to delay the monk-robed skeleton’s advance.

Seeing that An Sheng was in danger, Zhou Wen summoned Tyrant Behemoth again to help An Sheng fight the monk-robed skeleton.

Tyrant Behemoth had suffered some injuries, but thankfully, it wasn’t seriously injured. After charging into the collapsing Buddhist kingdom, it immediately activated its Absolute Strength again.

For some reason, the monk-clothed skeleton fearlessly faced Tyrant Behemoth and stuffed the crystal in its eye socket.

The moment the crystal entered his socket, it emitted a golden glow. It made the skeleton’s bones burn with golden flames as though it was bathing in Nirvana Flames.

Boom!

The monk-clothed skeleton’s bone fist collided with Tyrant Behemoth’s fist. They were evenly matched and neither of them managed to gain the upper hand. The terrifying shockwave produced from the collision of strength caused the already damaged streets to be further destroyed.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 686 - Violent Annihilation

Chapter 686: Violent Annihilation

Tyrant Behemoth was extremely violent and ferocious as it constantly attacked. Its Absolute Strength had a time limit, and it had already used it for nearly ten minutes, Now that it was activated again, it only had about twenty minutes remaining. It needed to determine the victor in twenty minutes.

An Sheng didn't attack the monk-robed skeleton with Tyrant Behemoth. He watched from the side as though he was observing and searching for an opportunity.

As Zhou Wen fought the golden-winged bird, the dragon wings on his back trembled. The two Golden Battle God Halberd attacked from both sides as the Golden Overlord Sword in his hand constantly slashed out Golden Sword Aura.

However, the golden-winged bird's speed was just too fast. It was so fast that Zhou Wen's eyes couldn't keep up with its actions. Before he could see what was happening, he heard a crack. One of his Golden Battle God Halberds had been grabbed by its claws. Once it exerted strength, the Golden Battle God Halberd immediately snapped into several pieces.

Zhou Wen didn't have the time to worry about the Golden Battle God Halberd's death. He pushed Transcendent Flying Immortal's speed to its limits and quickly escaped into the distance.

If Tyrant Behemoth had absolute strength, then the golden-winged bird had absolute speed. Zhou Wen didn’t fly for long before it caught up.

Without thinking, the eye mirror in Zhou Wen’s eye condensed a strange luster, making one of his eyes look like a mirror as he looked at the golden-winged bird.

The golden-winged bird seemed to sense danger. The mysterious ancient text on its wings shimmered as it vanished from Zhou Wen’s sight.

Boom!

Zhou Wen felt a heavy blow on his back. His body slammed into the ground like a meteor, leaving a huge hole in the golden palace.

The golden-winged bird’s might was even more ferocious. With a flash, it grabbed the Golden Battle God Halberd that was flying in the air and instantly snapped it into several pieces.

Zhou Wen crawled out of the ground and felt unbearable pain, but he wasn’t seriously injured. As for the Substitute Talisman, it had already dissipated into ashes.

Thankfully, I brought the Substitute Talisman. If I had known, I would have drawn a few more. Zhou Wen was alarmed. If not for the Substitute Talisman, even if he didn’t die, the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon would have died.

Unfortunately, Substitute Talismans were too difficult to draw. Success or failure depended on fate. Zhou Wen had drawn so many of them, but he had only succeeded once when his heart and mind were one.

Later, he drew many more times, but none of them succeeded. Zhou Wen was too frustrated to continue drawing.

After the golden-winged bird snapped the Golden Battle God Halberd, its bloody, cold eyes looked into the palace's hole. It flapped its wings again and instantly vanished.

*F**k you.* Zhou Wen's heart palpitated as goosebumps rose. Knowing that danger was approaching, he didn't dare hesitate any further as he summoned Torch Dragon Youngling.

Torch Dragon Youngling's massive body appeared and burst through the palace. It looked up angrily at the sky.

Zhou Wen stood on its head and used the Truth Listener earring's ability to observe his surroundings. He realized that the golden-winged bird had already flown into the sky. Clearly, it was afraid of Torch Dragon's appearance.

However, in just an instant, the golden-winged bird turned ferocious again. It flapped its wings and transformed into a stream of light that vanished. It was so fast that he couldn't see its trajectory.

"Torch Dragon!" Zhou Wen called out.

In fact, without Zhou Wen's order, Torch Dragon had already moved. The scales on its body converged like eyelids as rows of Torch Dragon Eyes appeared. It was its World King Transformation.

Countless Torch Dragon Eyes used Bright Torch Vision World at the same time, opening up like countless mirrors.

Suddenly, Zhou Wen felt something amiss. He turned his head and saw the golden-winged bird appear behind Torch Dragon. Its body flashed like a bolt of lightning as its wings flapped wildly. Its face was filled with horror as though it was resisting some invisible terrifying force.

However, it only struggled for a moment before its figure suddenly vanished.

Zhou Wen saw the golden-winged bird's figure appear in the eyes on Torch Dragon's back. It struggled and churned inside before disappearing.

The Torch Dragon Vision World ended as Torch Dragon Youngling was taken out of its World King Transformation state. Torch Dragon Youngling was exhausted and its strength was greatly reduced. Its combat strength dropped drastically to the level of Six-Winged Guardian Dragon. It couldn't even use Bright Torch Vision World again.

Zhou Wen hurriedly unsummoned Torch Dragon Youngling. He couldn't let it take the risk. This was Zhou Wen's strongest trump card.

What a huge loss. Zhou Wen felt his heart ache.

He originally wanted to see if he could find an opportunity to kill the golden-winged bird, but he ended up losing a Substitute Talisman and two Golden Battle God Halberds.

Although Bright Torch Vision World was powerful, it didn't leave anything behind after killing its opponent. This was a fatal flaw. Zhou Wen wasn't willing to use the skill unless it was absolutely necessary.

Elsewhere, Tyrant Behemoth kept bombarding the monk-robed skeleton. Its powerful strength forced the monk-robed

skeleton to retreat as its bones cracked.

However, the golden light on its body burned like flames, making its body seem like an immortal body. It immediately recovered from any injuries. Although Tyrant Behemoth had the upper hand, it ultimately failed to kill it.

Is Absolute Strength about to run out of time? Zhou Wen did the math and realized that there were about ten minutes left. However, from the looks of it, Tyrant Behemoth probably wouldn’t be able to kill the monk-robed skeleton in ten minutes.

Suddenly, An Sheng, who had been observing from the side, pressed his palm on the ground and vanished like a ghost.

At this moment, Tyrant Behemoth sent the monk-robed skeleton retreating a few steps with one punch, leaving it staggering.

An Sheng strangely crawled out from the ground behind the skeleton and leaped up. His finger was like a venomous scorpion’s stinger as he tapped at the back of the skeleton’s head.

He imprinted a mysterious character on the back of the monk-robed skeleton’s head. Zhou Wen recognized that it was the word “Quake,” one of Love Letter’s abilities.

Boom!

The crystal in the skeleton’s eye sockets was actually jolted out because of An Sheng’s finger strike. It flew out and landed on the ground.

The golden flames on the monk-robed skeleton’s body immediately vanished. Tyrant Behemoth’s attack followed

up the chain of attacks. The monk-robed skeleton raised its fist in a panic to receive the attack.

Crack!

Without the augmentation of the crystal, the skeleton’s bony hand was shattered by Tyrant Behemoth and its body staggered backward.

The berserk Tyrant Behemoth pummeled the monk-robed skeleton repeatedly. It only took a few punches to shatter the skeleton’s hands.

The monk-clothed skeleton was sent tumbling to the ground. Tyrant Behemoth pressed one of its claws on its sternum, while the other struck its skull. With a few punches, the skull shattered.

Tyrant Behemoth lifted the skeleton’s cracked body with one hand and placed it into its mouth. It chewed a few times before swallowing it.

“Bro… Take a look to see if there are any Companion Eggs left behind…” Zhou Wen was somewhat speechless. What kind of pet was this? It ate anything it killed without leaving anything behind.

However, since it had swallowed and couldn’t spit it out, all Zhou Wen could do was quickly run over and pick up the crystal that An Sheng had forced out of the skeleton’s eye socket.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 687 - : Buddhistic Glow Cleansing

Chapter 687: Buddhistic Glow Cleansing

In the sky, the music was demonic.

Zhou Wen couldn’t tell what was so special about it. The music didn’t seem to have any effect on them, but for some reason, when he heard it, he still felt a shiver from the bottom of his heart. It was as though there was a fear that stemmed from the depths of his soul.

As for Buddha Annihilation, it seemed to be enveloped by a dark force. It was like a devil hidden in the darkness, allowing people to sense his existence but not see it.

However, the power of darkness was blocked by the golden light emitted by the Buddha beads. The devil-like power failed to penetrate its body, and the two forces remained in a stalemate.

The golden-winged bird and the monk-robed skeleton were killed. Buddha Annihilation glanced at Zhou Wen and An Sheng, who were rushing over. The Urna between its brows revolved as though a Buddhistic glow had descended upon the Buddhist kingdom.

Zhou Wen and An Sheng were just about to rush over to help Leng Zongzheng when they saw the Buddhistic glow fall. They were alarmed as they used their Essence Energy Skills and Companion Beasts to block the Buddhistic glow.

However, they soon realized that the Buddhistic glow didn’t affect them at all. However, wherever the Buddhistic glow descended, it illuminated the crumbling Buddhist kingdom like it was cleansing it.

Zhou Wen and An Sheng suddenly widened their eyes. Amidst the cleansed area, the golden-winged bird and the monk-robed skeleton, that had just been killed, were reborn and bathing in the Buddhistic glow.

Zhou Wen was dumbfounded as he said to An Sheng in bewilderment, “Ah Sheng, pinch me. I want to know if I’m hallucinating.”

“I think I’m hallucinating as well.” An Sheng swallowed his saliva and said with great difficulty, “Young Master Wen, your Companion Beasts were able to kill them just now. They should still be capable of doing so now, right?”

“No way. My Companion Beast is enervated from earlier. If those two fellows really come back to life, the method from before definitely won’t work,” Zhou Wen said.

Torch Dragon Youngling was greatly enervated after using World King Transformation. It was useless for the time being. Even if he released it, it only had about the same combat strength as the Six-Winged Guardian Dragon. Fighting the golden-winged bird was courting death.

Tyrant Behemoth had almost used up all the time for its Absolute Strength. Without the suppression of Absolute Strength, it was probably no match for the monk-robed skeleton.

The only good news was that the monk-robed skeleton, which was bathed in a Buddhistic glow, did not have the crystal in its hand. From the looks of it, the crystal wasn’t

part of the monk-robed skeleton. The only one was the one in Zhou Wen’s hand.

Zhou Wen had already studied it, but he hadn’t figured out how to make it emit the golden light to injure the enemy.

The skeleton in monk robes and the golden-winged bird had returned to life. They looked no different from when they had first entered the Buddhist kingdom. They were brimming with energy as four pairs of eyes stared at Zhou Wen and An Sheng.

“Young Master Wen, do you have any other Companion Beasts that can kill them?” An Sheng asked.

“I do have Companion Beasts, but I don’t know if I can kill them,” Zhou Wen said with a bitter smile.

“Then let’s prepare to risk our lives,” An Sheng said through gritted teeth.

“Son, come here. Your daddy is here…” The bald parrot was still alive. It jumped onto Zhou Wen’s shoulder and shouted at the golden-winged bird.

Boom!

Zhou Wen punched it to the ground and thought to himself, *Why would Leng Zongzheng raise such a Companion Beast?*

The monk-robed skeleton and the golden-winged bird rushed towards Zhou Wen. The monk-robed skeleton’s target was the crystal in Zhou Wen’s hand, and the golden-winged bird clearly hated Zhou Wen and the parrot to death. It wanted to kill Zhou Wen and the parrot first.

Zhou Wen hurriedly summoned Tyrant Behemoth and allowed it to clash with the monk-robed skeleton again. Although Tyrant Behemoth was unable to defeat the skeleton without Absolute Strength's suppression, it wasn't a problem for it to hold out for some time.

Now, the most difficult thing to deal with was the golden-winged bird. It was too fast—so fast that Zhou Wen couldn't dodge its attack. If he couldn't kill it, Zhou Wen would be the one to die.

Truth Listener and Demonic Neonate were summoned by Zhou Wen at the same time. Zhou Wen quickly retreated while An Sheng consciously retreated to the other side and ran towards Tyrant Behemoth.

After Demonic Neonate landed, she hid herself as she took in the situation. Under Zhou Wen's orders, Truth Listener's earring shattered as its body instantly transformed into a terrifying dark-gold ferocious beast.

Zhou Wen grabbed the bald parrot and threw it at Truth Listener. "Quick, scream. Use all your strength to curse all its ancestors."

"What the f**k do you take me for? I must curse just because you want me to do so? Whether or not I want to scold my son depends on my mood. Now that I'm in a good mood, I'm not going to be petty with that young eagle brat." The bald parrot was still mumbling, but the golden-winged bird had already charged over with a shriek. It was so fast that no one could see its figure clearly. All they saw was a flash of golden lightning in the sky.

Truth Listener seemed to have discovered the golden-winged bird's location as it phased away and extended its claw.

However, its body’s reaction speed failed to keep up with the golden-winged bird’s speed. It failed to grab the golden-winged bird that flashed past. Instead, the golden-winged bird’s blade-like wings sliced past its chest.

Truth Listener retreated as its legs tore open two long ditches on the golden-bricked ground.

The golden-winged bird’s attack only left shallow marks on the dark golden scales on Truth Listener’s chest. It failed to cut through the scales.

Truth Listener had the Indestructible Vajra Body skill. Even Tyrant Behemoth had to use Absolute Strength to match Truth Listener’s physical toughness.

Truth Listener’s speed was already very fast. It was considered one of the best at the Mythical stage, but it was still slightly inferior to the golden-winged bird.

The golden-winged bird constantly flashed about and attacked Truth Listener, causing it to be overwhelmed. Truth Listener, who was originally extremely agile, appeared somewhat clumsy in front of the golden-winged bird. Its body was constantly being attacked by the bird’s wings and claws. Although it wasn’t severely injured, it made Truth Listener, who was already in an abnormal state of mind, become increasingly irritable.

However, what delighted Zhou Wen was that although Truth Listener couldn’t touch the golden-winged bird, it wasn’t anywhere close to being killed. It managed to stabilize the situation for the time being.

Zhou Wen looked at Tyrant Behemoth and saw that it was also suppressed by the monk-robed skeleton. Without

Absolute Strength, Tyrant Behemoth also lost its absolute dominance at the Mythical stage.

The situation had completely reversed; Zhou Wen’s pets were at a disadvantage. The situation was extremely bad.

What worried Zhou Wen the most was that even if they could finish off the skeleton and the golden-winged bird this time, what about the next time?

If Buddha Annihilation could revive them, no matter how powerful Zhou Wen’s Companion Beasts were, they would still end up dying.

The only way was to kill Buddha Annihilation first.

The situation on Leng Zongzheng’s side wasn’t smooth. The Demonic Organ Throne’s strength clearly wasn’t able to completely suppress Buddha Annihilation. Otherwise, Buddha Annihilation wouldn’t have the time to revive the monk-robed skeleton and the golden-winged bird.

Zhou Wen gritted his teeth and flapped his wings as he flew into the sky. He wanted to see if he could help Leng Zongzheng destroy Buddha Annihilation.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 688 - Rampage

Chapter 688: Rampage

Just as Zhou Wen approached the battlefield, he immediately felt that something was amiss.

Looking from afar, he felt that Leng Zongzheng was playing the organ while Buddha Annihilation was listening to his organ music.

However, when Zhou Wen entered a certain range, what he saw was completely different. Leng Zongzheng's Demonic Organ Throne had turned into a terrifying demonic castle.

With Leng Zongzheng's organ music, demons flew out of the demonic castle one after another, circling around Buddha Annihilation as though they were trying to lure him into the castle.

Buddha Annihilation was surrounded by demons as he looked down. He held the Buddha beads in his hand and chanted scriptures. The Buddhistic glow on his body bloomed like a lotus flower, resisting the temptation of the demons.

Zhou Wen only took a glance from afar and it was enough to make his heart tremble. He couldn't help but have the urge to throw himself into the devil's embrace—the urge to dance with the devil.

Zhou Wen's heart skipped a beat as he hurriedly composed himself and eliminated the distracting thoughts.

His willpower was firm to begin with. Once he entered a focused state, he immediately felt the illusions vanish. There were no demons or the demonic castle, nor were there any Buddhistic glow or lotus flowers. All he saw was Leng Zongzheng playing the organ while Buddha Annihilation listened.

Zhou Wen didn't continue walking forward. He felt that what he had just seen wasn't as simple as an illusion. It was so far away that it made him hallucinate. If he really entered, Zhou Wen might not be able to withstand it with his Epic body.

If he didn't end up helping and ended up being killed by friendly fire, that would be a tragic death.

If I could advance to the Mythical stage myself, I wouldn't have so many reservations. I wouldn't need to rely solely on my Companion Beasts to fight. Zhou Wen had the intention to advance to the Mythical stage, but he had no clue how.

Leng Zongzheng and Jiang Yan had advanced to the Mythical stage by contracting with Guardians. Zhou Wen didn't wish to take this path.

This path seemed to be the simplest, but the disadvantages were too great. It was impossible for him to fuse with the Guardian during his daily life. If he encountered any sudden danger, he might die without even having the chance to fuse.

Do I really have to use Spirit Casting? Zhou Wen was considering if he should take Wang Mingyuan's path.

Although the path was difficult, it was a true advancement to the Mythical stage. However, one's body would no longer resemble that of a human. It was closer to a dimensional creature, and he might even be rejected by humans.

It’s really a dilemma. It’s better I first advance my Life Soul to the Perfect Body and see if there’s a third option. These thoughts flashed through Zhou Wen’s mind. Since he couldn’t help Leng Zongzheng, Zhou Wen planned on returning to deal with the monk-robed skeleton and the golden-winged bird.

Without the crystal, the monk-clothed skeleton’s strength had decreased significantly. However, the crystal was ultimately an external force. The monk-clothed skeleton’s Wheel of Destiny’s strength was still present. Compared to Tyrant Behemoth, it had the advantage. Tyrant Behemoth was suppressed by the monk-clothed skeleton in a frontal collision.

However, Tyrant Behemoth was just too ferocious. Even though it was suppressed, it still attacked without fear of death and caused trouble for the monk-clothed skeleton. Even if it was injured, it wouldn’t be in any serious danger for the time being.

Furthermore, An Sheng and the Azure Rainbow Flying Sword were constantly harassing it, giving the monk-robed skeleton a headache. It was unlikely that there would be any problems anytime soon.

Zhou Wen looked at the golden-winged bird and Truth Listener again. Truth Listener looked a little pathetic. It resembled a clumsy bear. The golden-winged bird made it go in circles, but it ultimately failed to touch the golden-winged bird. Instead, it had many wounds on its body—all inflicted by the golden-winged bird. Although they were minor injuries, Truth Listener nearly went berserk.

The golden-winged bird’s speed is too fast. How can I help Truth Listener? With my speed, I definitely won’t be able to

catch up to it. Even if it has powerful offensive powers, it won't be of much use against it. Should I use the Great Might Vajra Bull's Soul Suppression Bell? However, the Soul Suppression Bell is an area-of-effect attack. It affects both the enemy and me. If the golden-winged bird and Truth Listener were to faint together, that doesn't seem to be of much help to the battle… As Zhou Wen was thinking about how to help Truth Listener, he saw the enraged Truth Listener shatter another earring.

As the earring shattered, Truth Listener's body underwent a strange change. This time, it didn't grow bigger, but the first scale on its body vaguely produced strange black symbols. The symbols burned with black flames, like the devil's mark from hell.

Due to the appearance of the symbol, Truth Listener's dark golden body seemed to become dark. Under the envelopment of the black flames, coupled with its ferocious and violent eyes, it was like a demonic beast that had rushed out of hell.

Zhou Wen could sense that Truth Listener's emotions had become even more irritable and unstable. It was showing signs of madness, making Zhou Wen almost unable to sense the soul connection between them.

The golden-winged bird once again flashed past Truth Listener's side, but this time, Truth Listener's claw grabbed the golden-winged bird's leg.

Boom!

Truth Listener exerted strength in its arm and pulled the golden-winged bird down from the sky. It slammed heavily onto the ground, creating a huge crater in the golden ground.

Then, Truth Listener grabbed the golden-winged bird's legs with both claws and let out a violent roar. It suddenly exerted strength and was about to rip the golden-winged bird into two.

The golden-winged bird's body shimmered with golden light as its legs were torn apart. The mysterious symbol on its feathers kept trembling. It turned its head in horror and pecked Truth Listener.

However, Truth Listener ignored it. It allowed the golden-winged bird to tear apart the scales on its head. Blood gushed out, but it didn't seem to notice it. It continued tearing at the golden-winged bird's legs.

The golden light shattered as blood flowed out. The golden-winged bird let out a tragic cry as one of its legs was ripped off by Truth Listener. It struggled even more violently as it used its wings to strike Truth Listener's head.

Truth Listener ignored it. It threw away the bird leg in its hand and grabbed one of its wings with one hand and the other leg with another before tearing it apart.

Golden blood splattered onto the feathers. The golden-winged bird let out a heart-wrenching cry, but it was useless.

Zhou Wen looked at the golden-winged bird in horror. It had its wings and legs torn off by Truth Listener. In the end, it even ripped off its head and threw it to the ground.

Truth Listener roared at the sky like a bloodthirsty demon king from hell.

An Sheng was already dumbfounded. This was the first time he had seen such a ruthless and ferocious Companion Beast. It wasn't a massacre, but torture.

Ignoring Companion Beasts, even dimensional creatures seldom had such ferocious tendencies.

Zhou Wen himself wore a look of shock. He had only seen one of Truth Listener’s earrings shatter in the past. It was so ferocious and ruthless now that two earrings had shattered. If the six earrings were to shatter together, he didn’t know how terrifying it would be.

Zhou Wen didn’t attempt it, nor did he wish to try. He felt that the connection between him and Truth Listener had become extremely weak. It was like a taut fishing line that could snap at any moment.

He attempted to summon Truth Listener back. Thankfully, Truth Listener sensed Zhou Wen’s will and its emotions slowly stabilized. The shattered earring returned to its ears. When Truth Listener returned to Zhou Wen’s ear, the violent emotions vanished.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 689 - Invisible Fire

Chapter 689: Invisible Fire

Thankfully, nothing happened. Zhou Wen couldn’t help but heave a sigh of relief when he felt Truth Listener’s emotions slowly calm down.

Every time Truth Listener’s earring shattered, it gave Zhou Wen an ominous feeling. If not for the fact that he had no choice, Zhou Wen wouldn’t be willing to let Truth Listener shatter the earring to fight.

However, in this situation, there was nothing else he could do. Zhou Wen had already used all the combat strength he could muster, so there was no way he could hold back.

With the golden-winged bird dead, Zhou Wen no longer had any worries. Unfortunately, he didn’t discover any Companion Eggs or dimensional crystals.

Gripping the Golden Overlord Sword tightly, Zhou Wen charged at the monk-robed skeleton. At the same time, he summoned the Great Might Vajra Bull and used the Soul Suppression Bell as support to attack the monk-robed skeleton.

Without the help of the crystal, the monk-clothed skeleton’s strength decreased significantly. Under the siege, it was stunned by the Soul Suppression Bell. Zhou Wen took the opportunity to slash at it, slicing off one of its legs, causing its movement to slow down significantly.

An Sheng also took the opportunity to use the fixing incantation. Although it couldn’t completely freeze the skeleton’s body, it made it pause for a moment.

Tyrant Behemoth’s body expanded as it used the Mountain Devouring Skill to swallow the monk-robed skeleton.

Knock! Knock! Knock!

Zhou Wen saw Tyrant Behemoth’s stomach twitch like a drum, but it didn’t last long.

It’s finally done! Zhou Wen didn’t dare relax as he turned to look at Buddha Annihilation. Indeed, he saw the Urna on his forehead glow once again. Immediately, another Buddhistic glow descended.

In the Buddhistic glow, the monk-robed skeleton and the golden-winged bird were born once again as their bodies gradually condensed.

Although he had expected it, Zhou Wen’s expression was still ugly. He turned his head to look at the golden-winged bird’s corpse that he had just killed and saw that it was still scattered across the ground. It hadn’t disappeared.

Damn it. What kind of power does that Buddha Annihilation’s Urna have to revive a Mythical creature out of thin air… Just as Zhou Wen was feeling depressed, something even more shocking happened.

It wasn’t just the skeleton and the golden-winged bird that were reborn in the Buddhistic glow. The two Golden Battle God Halberds that were killed were in the lineup as well.

However, the two Golden Battle God Halberds that had been revived had no connection to Zhou Wen, much less be under

his control.

They are both Guardians, so why is Buddha Annihilation so much stronger than the six-winged seraphim? What kind of ability is this? Could it be that any creature or Companion Beast that dies near him, can be revived and used by him? Zhou Wen guessed inwardly. *If that's the case, what's the point of fighting? Just surrender and commit suicide. It's impossible to win unless I kill Buddha Annihilation first.*

Zhou Wen was somewhat tempted. Thinking of such a bug-like ability, he felt quite delighted if he could obtain it.

Unfortunately, Buddha Annihilation might not be willing to contract with him. Even if it was willing, Zhou Wen wasn't willing to do so.

His Companion Beast, Demonic Neonate, had signed a master-slave contract. If he signed a Guardian contract, wouldn't that be too lame in comparison?

As Zhou Wen pondered over, the skeleton, the golden-winged bird, and the two Golden Battle God Halberds rushed over. It was obvious that the Golden Battle God Halberds were completely heartless and wanted to destroy Zhou Wen and company.

Zhou Wen had no choice but to summon Truth Listener. He got it to remove the restrictions of one earring and continue fighting.

Zhou Wen faced the Golden Battle God Halberds himself. With his understanding of the Golden Battle God Halberds, he quickly used the Golden Overlord Sword to snap the two Golden Battle God Halberds.

Truth Listener was still fighting the golden-winged bird to the death. Tyrant Behemoth was dragging its exhausted body as it fought the monk-robed skeleton. An Sheng, the Azure Rainbow Flying Sword, and the bald parrot were all helping.

Zhou Wen originally wanted to rush forward to help, but he thought that even if he killed them, it would be useless. Buddha Annihilation would still revive them.

These revived Mythical creatures look no different from the former Mythical creatures or even Companion Beasts. Are they really identical to their original forms? Zhou Wen activated the Hell King's Eye and glanced at the golden-winged bird and the monk-robed skeleton, hoping to see if he could discover any differences.

A vertical crack appeared on Zhou Wen's glabella. It looked like a third eye, but there were no pupils in it. It was as though it was connected to hell as ghostly cries sounded.

Even with the Hell King's Eye, he couldn't tell how different these resurrected Mythical creatures were from their original bodies.

They looked no different from real creatures. They also had invisible flames on them, and they looked rather thick.

While Zhou Wen was observing, Truth Listener was already on the brink of going berserk.

Zhou Wen thought for a moment and charged at the monk-robed skeleton. He planned on dealing with it before getting Tyrant Behemoth to help Truth Listener alleviate some of the pressure.

Where did Demonic Neonate go? Why haven't I seen her attack? Zhou Wen was somewhat surprised. He sensed Demonic Neonate's location and realized that she was hiding in a pile of ruins. She was secretly looking at Buddha Annihilation, who was sitting cross-legged in the sky.

So she's targeting Buddha Annihilation? I wonder if it's possible. Although Grim Demon is also a Guardian, it feels so weak. It feels weaker than the six-winged seraphim. Zhou Wen was somewhat worried.

If Demonic Neonate attacked Buddha Annihilation and ended up being killed by it, it would be a huge loss.

Zhou Wen was still optimistic about Demonic Neonate's future. He had been waiting for the day she returned to the Mythical stage, so he was unwilling for her to risk her life.

If Grim Demon knew what Zhou Wen was thinking, he would probably vomit blood and faint in the bathroom.

Grim Demon wasn't weak. It was only because it was limited by the master-slave contract. Furthermore, as the master, Demonic Neonate was too weak, which greatly reduced its combat strength. Otherwise, it wouldn't be so weak.

Zhou Wen rushed forward to help Tyrant Behemoth fight and summoned the Great Might Vajra Bull and Torch Dragon to help. He wanted to kill the monk-robed skeleton as soon as possible.

While fighting, Zhou Wen kept his Hell King's Eye open. He wanted to see if there was anything different between the monk-robed skeleton and the monk-robed skeleton that would be revived later.

Before Truth Listener went berserk again, Zhou Wen finally managed to kill the monk-robed skeleton. However, this time, Zhou Wen had cleaved apart the skeleton’s head with his sword.

At this moment, something strange happened. After the monk-robed skeleton was killed, the invisible flames on its body floated towards the Hell King’s Eye as though they were attracted by some force.

Zhou Wen was pleasantly surprised, unsure if he had accidentally discovered the advancement method for Hell King.

The formless fire that resembled a stream of water was constantly sucked into the Hell King’s Eye. At the same time, Zhou Wen felt that his Hell King body was silently changing.

So Hell King evolves by absorbing these invisible flames? If I had known, I would have raised Hell King’s level a long time ago. Zhou Wen was pleasantly surprised.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 690 - Resurrection No More

Chapter 690: Resurrection No More

With the monk-robed skeleton dead, Zhou Wen commanded Tyrant Behemoth to reinforce Truth Listener. The Companion Beasts and the others didn’t head over.

Apart from top-notch Companion Beasts with especially powerful bodies like Tyrant Behemoth and Truth Listener, the other creatures would die if they went up. The golden-winged bird’s speed was just too fast. One had to withstand its attacks head-on, but its attack power was especially powerful. Even ordinary Mythical Companion Beasts couldn’t withstand it.

With Tyrant Behemoth joining the fray, Truth Listener’s pressure decreased significantly, but the battle became even more intense.

It was similar to Truth Listener’s situation. Without the suppression of Absolute Strength, Tyrant Behemoth couldn’t touch the golden-winged bird. It was only an additional target to take a beating, sharing half the brunt of the firepower.

Zhou Wen had been using his mind to control Truth Listener, preventing it from shattering the second earring.

Firstly, it was easy to lose control when it was in its berserk state due to the shattering of the earring. Secondly, even if it killed the golden-winged bird, it would still be revived by Buddha Annihilation. It was useless to kill it. It was better to drag it out.

I’m really stupid. I should have thought of a way to kill the golden-winged bird first and leave behind the easier monk-robed skeleton. Zhou Wen suddenly realized that he had done something wrong.

“Chancellor Leng’s situation doesn’t seem too good,” An Sheng came to Zhou Wen’s side and said as he looked up into the sky.

Zhou Wen could also tell that Leng Zongzheng’s situation wasn’t good. His Demonic Organ Throne had been unable to suppress Buddha Annihilation despite all this time. Under such circumstances, the party taking the initiative to attack would suffer.

Once the opponent found a chance to counterattack, Leng Zongzheng would be in danger.

“The battle between the two of them is almost at the peak of the Mythical stage. Our strength isn’t enough to interfere in the battle. Even if we rely on Companion Beasts to influence the direction of the battle, we need to find an appropriate opportunity.” Zhou Wen sighed and said, “If my Torch Dragon Youngling hadn’t expended too much energy, it might have the ability to forcefully change the battle’s trajectory, but it won’t work now.”

An Sheng smiled and said, “Young Master Wen, don’t worry. The quality and quantity of your Companion Beasts are enough to stand tall amongst the Federation. Even the people with the most Companion Beasts in the six hero families are probably inferior to you. If you can’t even leave this place, no one in the Federation will be able to.”

Zhou Wen knew that An Sheng was trying to relieve the pressure on him, so he said with a smile, “That’s not necessarily the case. At the very least, Primordial Sword

Immortal and Death of the Underworld aren’t weaker on the rankings than my Behemoth.”

“Those kinds of Companion Beasts are rare even among the six families. Whoever has one is already considered extremely lucky. How could one have so many like you? Let me do a count. Torch Dragon, Behemoth, and that Companion Beast that looks like a golden ape. Ignoring the other ordinary Mythical creatures, you already have three top-notch Mythical creatures that can attempt first place. You can be considered unprecedented,” An Sheng sighed.

Zhou Wen shook his head. Now, these top Companion Beasts weren’t able to help him rush out of the Buddhist kingdom. Life and death remained unknown.

Sometimes, miracles happen in this world.

Behemoth and Truth Listener couldn’t keep up with the golden-winged bird’s speed. They were originally getting beaten up, and Zhou Wen only wanted them to hold back the golden-winged bird.

To his surprise, Truth Listener had actually gotten lucky. It had accidentally caught the golden-winged bird’s wings when it was clawing wildly.

This surprise was unexpected to the golden-winged bird and Truth Listener. This was also a testament to the benefits of having low intelligence. Under the same circumstances, Truth Listener, who wasn’t intelligent, had a reaction that exceeded its brain. It instinctively grabbed the golden-winged bird’s wings and threw it over its shoulder, slamming it to the ground.

Boom!

Having seized this opportunity, how could the two terrifying creatures give up? Behemoth sat on the golden-winged bird's body and slammed its head. Truth Listener stood in front of the golden-winged bird and ripped off its wings.

The golden-winged bird had a huge advantage in speed, but its body wasn't stronger than Truth Listener or Behemoth's. Under the two beasts' barrage of attacks, it was quickly killed.

Zhou Wen was chatting with An Sheng when he realized that it was too late to stop them from killing the golden-winged bird.

Seeing that the golden-winged bird's head had been smashed in, it was no longer able to live.

Zhou Wen wanted to retrieve the golden-winged bird's invisible flames using the Hell King's Eye, but he realized that he couldn't. After the golden-winged bird died, the invisible flames on its body automatically dissipated into the world.

Could it be that I have to kill a creature myself to absorb the invisible flames on its body? Zhou Wen guessed the reason.

Upon dying, Buddha Annihilation once again used its power to revive them.

The Buddhistic glow illuminated and purified the golden Buddha kingdom with no way of stopping it.

Just as Zhou Wen thought he had to kill the monk-robed skeleton and the golden-winged bird again, he realized something strange.

The golden-winged bird and the two Golden Battle God Halberds were reborn, but the monk-robed skeleton didn’t reincarnate this time. It was nowhere to be seen.

Strange, why hasn’t the monk-robed skeleton been reborn? Could it be that Buddha’s Annihilation’s strength is insufficient to revive the monk-robed skeleton? That’s not right. The golden-winged bird is even stronger than the monk-robed skeleton; yet, it can be revived. The two Golden Battle God Halberds can also be reborn. There’s no reason for the monk-robed skeleton to not have the strength to be reborn…

Zhou Wen’s eyes lit up as he suddenly thought of a possibility. *Previously, when the monk-robed skeleton died, I used the Hell King’s Eye to absorb the invisible flames on its body. Could this be the reason why it couldn’t be reborn again?*

“Young Master Wen, look. That monk-robed skeleton didn’t revive this time. Did Buddha Annihilation expend too much of its energy and have no way of reviving the monk-robed skeleton?” An Sheng couldn’t see Zhou Wen absorbing the invisible flames with the Hell King’s Eye, so his conclusion was similar to Zhou Wen’s first thought.

“I think I might know how to prevent them from being revived,” Zhou Wen said as he impatiently charged at the two Golden Battle God Halberds.

Tyrant Behemoth and Truth Listener also charged at the golden-winged bird and began their painful battle again.

Zhou Wen opened the Hell King’s Eye and snapped the two Golden Battle God Halberds. At the same time, he absorbed the invisible flames from their bodies. This time, the process was very smooth. He absorbed all of them in one go.

Zhou Wen couldn’t wait to know if they would revive later.

An Sheng seemed to sense something when he saw Zhou Wen slice through the Golden Battle God Halberd, but he didn’t know what Zhou Wen had done.

Be it the Hell King’s Eye or the invisible fire, they were invisible to the naked eye. An Sheng had no idea that Zhou Wen had absorbed the invisible fire with his Hell King’s Eye, so he naturally had no way of guessing.

Now, there’s only the golden-winged bird left. Zhou Wen thought for a moment and summoned the Great Might Vajra Bull. He took the opportunity and made it use the Soul Suppression Bell, causing the golden-winged bird to instantly feel dizzy.

Zhou Wen originally wanted to rush over, but to his surprise, Behemoth became dizzy but Truth Listener didn’t. It immediately grabbed the dizzy golden-winged bird.

Following that, it carried out another round of battery. The two monster-like Companion Beasts beat the golden-winged bird until it was half dead before Zhou Wen went up and killed it in one strike.

After absorbing the invisible flames from the golden-winged bird, Zhou Wen looked at Buddha Annihilation again.

However, this time, Buddha Annihilation didn’t use its resurrection ability. It appeared to be as Zhou Wen had expected. Buddha Annihilation’s resurrection wasn’t done without reason; it needed the invisible fire as its foundation. Now that the invisible fire was gone, Buddha Annihilation no longer had a target to use the skill.

“Young Master Wen, how did you do it?” An Sheng asked Zhou Wen in surprise.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 691 - Advancement Initiated

Chapter 691: Advancement Initiated

“I just realized that there’s an Essence Energy Skill that can restrain them, preventing them from being revived,” Zhou Wen said as he looked at Leng Zongzheng and Buddha Annihilation in the sky.

He didn’t know music and didn’t know much about space. However, he had a nagging feeling that Leng Zongzheng’s organ music was weakening.

“Ah Sheng, do you know music? Do you know the extent of this song? Is it about to end?” Zhou Wen asked.

An Sheng understood Zhou Wen’s meaning and said with a heavy expression, “I only know a thing or two about music. However, I’ve heard from Overseer that Chancellor Leng’s Demonic Symphony has a total of seven movements. It should have reached the sixth movement. If this chapter can’t suppress Buddha Annihilation, I’m afraid the last movement will require him to go all out.”

“What do you mean?” Zhou Wen asked.

“No one knows what the last movement of the Demonic Symphony is. Everyone who has heard it is already dead. Overseer had only heard Chancellor Leng mention it. If the heart doesn’t die, the seventh movement won’t make a squeak,” An Sheng explained.

After Zhou Wen heard that, he immediately knew that things weren’t looking good. Since the heart doesn’t die naturally,

it meant that one still had the desire to live. If one’s heart died, they could even abandon their lives. The final movement’s dangers were obvious.

Now, Buddha Annihilation had already heard the end of the sixth movement, but he remained composed. Perhaps victory could only be determined by the seventh movement.

As the two of them spoke, the sixth movement came to an end. Although the first six musical movements had some ups and downs, in general, they were all gentle tunes that spurred one to improve themselves.

When the first note of the seventh movement sounded, everything changed.

The musical note seemed to have an irresistible charm. The moment it sounded, Zhou Wen and An Sheng felt an illusion appear in front of them.

The crumbling Buddhist kingdom seemed to have turned into hell. Death filled the air as countless vengeful souls extended their palms from underground and let out painful cries.

The Demonic Organ Throne in the sky didn’t change at all. It was still the Demonic Organ Throne, but Leng Zongzheng, who was sitting in front of the organ, emitted a terrifying demonic aura. He looked like a devil dressed in a suit. The demonic aura around him surged into the sky as his fingers danced. He pressed on the keys in a frenzy. His eyes were burning with zeal as he seemed to be possessed.

“The organ hasn’t changed, but the person has been possessed. This movement is too dangerous and evil.” Even Zhou Wen, who didn’t know music, couldn’t see the horror of Chancellor Leng’s movement.

In the past, it could be said that it was enticing one into entering a demonic state, but now, it was becoming one with the devil. The dangers involved only could be imagined.

Buddha Annihilation was still sitting cross-legged in the void. He closed his eyes and chanted. He held the Buddha beads with his fingers and emitted a supreme Buddhistic glow to block the terrifying demonic music.

However, when the seventh movement sounded, even Buddha Annihilation showed a change in expression. The Buddha beads in his hand scattered and fell into the void. The Buddha patterns on the Buddha beads revealed smiling faces. However, the smiles looked as ferocious as a devil's smile. It was as crazy and evil as Leng Zongzheng's expression.

Buddha Annihilation opened its eyes as the Urna on its forehead emitted a crystalline glow to resist the demonic music. On his body, black-red patterns that represented the devil appeared as they constantly spread across his body. The final target was the Urna.

Zhou Wen and An Sheng felt their hearts tremble. They couldn't help but be alarmed when they saw the demonic patterns on their bodies.

"Young Master Wen… Quickly retreat…" An Sheng pulled Zhou Wen back.

The two of them retreated again and again before they felt much better. Zhou Wen used the Small Perfection of Wisdom Sutra to resist the hellish demonic music and it immediately had an effect. The demonic patterns on his body gradually receded.

An Sheng gradually returned to normal. The two of them looked at each other in horror. Despite being so far away, they were still affected. Buddha Annihilation, who faced Leng Zongzheng directly, experienced an indescribable pressure.

“Chancellor Leng is indeed worthy of being known as the strongest existence beneath the Mythical stage. Even Buddha can become a devil. I’m afraid there aren’t many people in the world who can withstand such organ music.” Zhou Wen couldn’t help but praise Leng Zongzheng, who was like a devil.

More and more demonic runes appeared on Buddha Annihilation’s body, almost covering his entire body. Only his Urna shone with a Buddhistic glow.

Zhou Wen and An Sheng were nervous, but Leng Zongzheng’s organ music was getting crazier. They knew that it was probably the final critical moment.

Suddenly, the Urna between Buddha Annihilation’s eyebrows glowed brightly, illuminating the world like a sun.

“It’s coming!” Zhou Wen and An Sheng’s hearts were in their mouths. They knew that victory or defeat depended on this strike. Anyone who retreated would probably be severely injured.

At the instant Buddha Annihilation’s Urna released a blinding light, a dark purple beam of light silently passed through the hellish scene and stabbed into Buddha Annihilation’s back.

Buddha Annihilation’s pupils constricted as the Urna on his forehead dimmed. The demonic organ music immediately invaded his Urna.

A trace of black demonic aura appeared in the originally flawless Urna. Furthermore, wisps of the demonic aura continued to seep into it, weakening the Urna’s glow.

Demonic Neonate! Zhou Wen immediately recognized the sword that had stabbed into the Buddha Annihilation’s back. It was the demonic sword in Demonic Neonate’s arms.

The demonic sword inched into Buddha Annihilation’s heart. With him severely injured and the invasion of the demonic music, the situation changed drastically.

As its Urna was gradually corroded by the demonic music, Buddha Annihilation’s peaceful face also began to distort. Red light flashed in its eyes as the Buddha-like face gradually turned devilish.

Buddha Annihilation stood up abruptly as the power in its body erupted like a volcano. It wanted to send the demonic sword on its back flying, but the demonic sword seemed to be nailed into its bones. Not only did it fail to send it flying away, it even stabbed into Buddha Annihilation’s heart at an even faster rate, piercing right through it.

If Buddha Annihilation could maintain its Buddhist nature, the demonic sword might not have been capable of penetrating its heart that easily. However, the moment it became demonized, Grim Demon on the sword played a significant role. It made Buddha Annihilation unable to put up a resistance.

Under the pincer attack of the demonic sword and the organ music, the extremely terrifying Guardian ultimately couldn’t withstand the attack. Its eyes gradually dimmed.

The Buddhistic glow on Buddha Annihilation’s body gradually extinguished. It also meant that his vitality was

like a candle in the wind, about to extinguish at any moment.

Just as Buddha Annihilation was at the end of the ropes, its eyes regained clarity. The demonic patterns on its body gradually receded and it returned to its crystalline Buddha body. It sat down cross-legged and closed its eyes as it said slowly, “Annihilation of Buddha tonight is like the snuffing out of fire.”

With that sentence, the Buddha body burned like a piece of paper, turning to ash.

At that moment, Zhou Wen suddenly felt his Slaughterer Life Soul tremble as though an invisible force was injected into it, rapidly evolving it.

Zhou Wen was alarmed and delighted. He hadn’t been able to find an advancement method for Slaughterer, but now, it had inexplicably advanced.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 692 - Evolved Body

Chapter 692: Evolved Body

With Buddha Annihilation dead, the Buddhist kingdom also collapsed. The Buddha statue completely shattered, turning into fragments that fell into the void. At the foundation of the Buddha, a stone door was revealed.

“The exit is there. Let’s go.” Leng Zongzheng led Zhou Wen and An Sheng towards the door.

When they went through the door, they realized that they were already outside the stone house. The stone house was wobbling and crumbling. Before long, it collapsed with a boom, reduced to a ruin.

Zhou Wen looked at the tiny pile of rocks and felt as though he was dreaming.

I’ve finally come out alive. Zhou Wen decided that he had to draw a few Substitute Talismans when he returned. No matter how low the success rate was, he had to draw them.

In the past, he had always gamed and seldom ventured into dimensional zones. Furthermore, he had plenty of Mythical Companion Beasts. With a Substitute Talisman and Six-Winged Guardian Dragon, he felt that it was enough to deal with any danger.

However, the battle in the Buddhist kingdom made Zhou Wen realize how terrifying the Guardians were. An uncontracted Buddha Annihilation was already this terrifying. It was probably more dangerous to encounter a

contractor who already had an owner—as long as it wasn't a rookie like John.

After the stone house collapsed, the phenomenon in Dragon Gate Grotto vanished and everything returned to normal.

However, problems with the Dragon Gate Grotto's seal seemed to ensue after this. Often, some creatures would break out of the seal, making it much more frequent than before.

Thankfully, most of them were Malla or Fairies. Furthermore, there weren't many of them. The troops stationed there could deal with them.

"Tianzuo, your family's Little Zhou is indeed not bad. He's worth grooming. You should spend more time on him," Leng Zongzheng said to An Tianzuo before he left.

The corners of An Tianzuo's eyes twitched, but he couldn't retort his teacher. All he could do was lower his eyes and say yes.

Zhou Wen, Feng Qiuyan, and Li Xuan returned to their campus dorm and received a commendation. Feng Qiuyan and Li Xuan had fought with their lives on the line and killed many dimensional creatures. Although they didn't kill any Mythical creatures, they won plenty of illustrious merits.

The military handed out medals to the students who had made contributions. However, An Tianzuo didn't come. Qin Wufu handed out the medals on his behalf.

After Qin Wufu gave Zhou Wen the medal, he patted him on the shoulder and said, "Zhou Wen, if you wish to join the military, remember to come to me. There's freedom with me. No one can control you."

Qin Wufu’s words seemed to imply something, but Zhou Wen had no intention of joining the military at the moment. All he could do was give an excuse.

When he returned to his dorm, he realized that there were many messages on his phone. Some were from Wang Lu, some from The Thearch, and many from Lucas.

Wang Lu and Lucas had sent messages to ask Zhou Wen about the situation after hearing about the anomaly in Dragon Gate Grotto.

The Thearch asked Zhou Wen for any updates—if he was willing to accept her conditions.

He replied to the messages one by one. He didn’t receive a reply from The Thearch. Wang Lu and Lucas quickly replied and Zhou Wen explained his situation.

Only when he was free did Zhou Wen have the time to carefully observe Slaughterer.

After killing Buddha Annihilation, Slaughterer had automatically evolved. However, Slaughterer had always been mysterious. Zhou Wen’s connection with Slaughterer was somewhat odd—he knew very little about it.

He switched on his phone and switched to Slaughterer. Zhou Wen carefully studied Slaughterer’s information.

Slaughterer: Evolved Body

The information was simple, but it was equivalent to not saying anything. He only knew that he had advanced to an Evolved Body, but even the name hadn’t changed at all.

This was identical to the time when he condensed Slaughterer. Other Life Souls could be summoned to be used, but Slaughterer could only be used passively. It was completely different from the other Life Souls.

Zhou Wen later experimented with some of Slaughterer's abilities, such as infinite Essence Energy recovery or stat strengthening.

Now that he had advanced to an Evolved Body, there was still no information. Zhou Wen could only figure it out himself.

After entering a game dungeon and switching to Slaughterer, Zhou Wen attempted to use all sorts of skills to fight dimensional creatures. He wanted to see what new capabilities Slaughterer's Evolved Body had.

Soon, Zhou Wen realized that Slaughterer's augmentation of his stats had increased significantly, and his Essence Energy recovery was faster. However, these were abilities that he already had in the past, so it wasn't surprising for them to be enhanced.

Don't tell me there's no other ability? Zhou Wen attempted to communicate with Slaughterer, but unfortunately, just like before, Slaughterer didn't respond. It was like a lifeless machine that clung to his body.

It's impossible to not have any new abilities, right? Zhou Wen felt that it was definitely not that simple, but after trying for a long time, he failed to discover any extraordinary abilities.

I'll test it out slowly in the future. Zhou Wen thought for a moment before switching to the Hell King Life Soul. He planned on grinding it to a Perfect Body.

He only needed to slay dimensional creatures to advance. The Hell King Life Soul was probably the easiest to advance.

Just as Zhou Wen was about to begin a massacre in-game, he suddenly realized that the Poison Bats in front of him didn't have any invisible flames.

Why is this happening? Zhou Wen frowned and looked at the horde of Poison Bats. He realized that there were no invisible flames on them.

Zhou Wen exited the dungeon and logged into a few more dungeons. The outcome was the same. None of the dimensional creatures in-game had invisible flames.

Could it be that there are no invisible flames because they are simulated creatures in-game? But that's not right. If the creatures in-game are different from the creatures in real life, why would a Companion Beast that drops have the invisible flame? For instance, an existence like the Golden Battle God Halberd has the invisible flames? What's the reason? Zhou Wen couldn't understand the reason why and planned on heading to a dimensional zone in real life to take a look.

Zhou Wen planned on heading to Tiger Cage Pass. Every time he entered a dimensional zone in real life, something would happen, so he deliberately chose to head to Tiger Cage Pass.

Tiger Cage Pass's final boss was the Elegant Emperor Puppet's avatar. Zhou Wen could easily kill it now, so no matter what happened, it wouldn't be too much for him.

I have to think of a way to get a Companion Beast that augments luck or good fortune to neutralize the bad luck I have. Otherwise, I have a nagging feeling that something

will go wrong having Bamboo Blade, Tiger Soul General, and Tai Sui on me, Zhou Wen thought to himself.

Since Tiger Cage Pass wasn’t too dangerous, Zhou Wen took the chick out with him to let it get some fresh air. It had been recently eating and sleeping all day in the dorm, making it look much fatter.

An Sheng got someone to deliver food to them every day, so the antelope and chick ate like kings.

The chubby chick stood on Zhou Wen’s shoulder with its round face. At a glance, it looked like an owl.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 693 - Guidance

Chapter 693: Guidance

On the way to Tiger Cage Pass, he encountered many students. Unlike before, many of them took the initiative to greet Zhou Wen.

In the past, due to Zhou Wen’s relationship with Wang Mingyuan and the problem with the bureau, many students weren’t willing to interact with Zhou Wen. They were afraid of being implicated.

Things were somewhat different now. The anomaly at Dragon Gate Grotto allowed many students to witness how terrifying break-out creatures were. At the same time, they deeply realized that only the strong could survive and protect the human cities in the future.

As for Zhou Wen, who had illustrious feats on the battlefield, many students had no choice but to reconsider their interactions with him.

However, Zhou Wen looked at them in a somewhat odd manner. It wasn’t because of their actions, but because he had activated his Eye of Hell and saw the invisible flames on them. It was as though he was looking at EXP treasures.

Thankfully, Zhou Wen’s mind was relatively normal. If he were Ják, he would have long culled them for the experience.

“Zhou Wen, what are you doing here?” Zhou Wen had just arrived at the entrance of Tiger Cage Pass when he saw Li Weiyang leading a group of girls outside.

“Senior Weiyang, I’m here to kill Demonized Generals,” Zhou Wen answered.

Li Weiyang joked, “Dear Almighty Zhou, shouldn’t you be killing Mythical creatures? Why are you here in Tiger Cage Pass to snatch the mere Demonized Soldiers and Demonized Generals from us? Is there any justice in this world?”

Zhou Wen didn’t know what to say as Li Weiyang continued, “We also have to enter Tiger Cage Pass to kill Demonized Soldiers and Demonized Generals. These juniors aren’t experienced enough. Why don’t you join us? You can give the juniors a demonstration.”

Li Weiyang’s invitation didn’t conflict with Zhou Wen’s intentions, so he nodded and said, “Actually, killing ordinary Demonized Generals isn’t difficult. Previously, Li Xuan and I made a strategy. If one follows the strategy, they only need four or five at the Mortal stage to kill a Demonized General.”

“Senior, teach us please,” a female freshman said to Zhou Wen.

The girls immediately turned rowdy, clamoring for Zhou Wen to teach them how to kill Demonized Generals.

“Of course.” Zhou Wen agreed readily. After all, his goal was to farm invisible flames. He wouldn’t waste much time teaching them.

The group of girls happily followed Zhou Wen into Tiger Cage Pass. Some of the girls even pulled him along and to teach them how to kill Demonized Soldiers.

Li Weiyang didn’t stop him. All she did was watch with a smile. However, she thought to herself, *Do you little vixens really think that this is some treasured meat? If it was really a treasure, I would have called dibs long ago. Would you even have a chance? It’s just a piece of titanium-alloyed bone. Ignoring the possibility of eating it, just attempting to bite on it will spoil your teeth.*

Indeed, as Li Weiyang had expected, the girls originally imagined that Zhou Wen would gently teach them. He might even hold their hands and teach them. This way, they could have some intimate contact with this famous senior. It might even lead to a romantic beginning.

However, when Zhou Wen really started teaching them, they realized how ridiculously wrong they were.

Zhou Wen simply used the standards of a soldier on them. No, it should be said that he requested inhuman standards of them.

“That’s not right. Your foot has to stretch out three centimeters more. Lower your head a little more and punch with more strength. Can you not draw circles with your sword? Be more efficient. Why are you twisting your waist over there? Stand straight…” Zhou Wen spoke to them as though he was lecturing a recruit.

Zhou Wen felt that there was nothing wrong with this. On the battlefield, a tiny mistake could cost them their lives. They needed to be absolutely correct.

Furthermore, if they wanted to kill a Legendary Demonized General at the Mortal stage, they needed to be precise in everything. Otherwise, problems would easily arise.

Zhou Wen had taught them according to the standards he had been shown during his practices with Li Xuan and Feng Qiuyan. He had even lowered his standards to the minimum.

Even so, they failed to meet the requirements. Zhou Wen couldn’t help but frown.

The girls realized that this was different from what they had imagined. They originally thought that it would be a pleasant interaction with their senior, but they ended up being treated as animals.

Seeing many girls leave silently, Li Weiyang laughed inwardly. These girls have finally seen how clueless a man can be.

Sometime into Zhou Wen’s lesson, he realized that the number of girls who listened to his explanations and guidance was decreasing. Furthermore, they were all over the place. They couldn’t meet his standards.

However, there was a first-year junior who surprised Zhou Wen. She had meticulously completed all the techniques that Zhou Wen had taught. Although there were some mistakes, she was much better than the other girls.

Furthermore, the junior was rather talented. She seemed to realize her mistakes and would fix many of them in her next practice.

“Senior, can I kill a Demonized General alone at the Mortal stage?” The other girls had already distanced themselves from Zhou Wen, but this girl took the initiative to ask him.

“It’s not impossible. Show me what you’ve learned.” Zhou Wen felt that the girl was rather talented and hardworking. He wasn’t stingy with teaching this junior.

The girl showed Zhou Wen what she had learned. Although Zhou Wen saw that she hadn't learned any Essence Energy Skills, her basics were very solid. It was obvious that she had worked hard and was an all-rounder.

Zhou Wen couldn't help but recall the time he cultivated Ascetic Meditation. Like the girl, he had been silently cultivating, doing his best to do what he could.

"With your present skills, it's a little difficult to kill a Demonized General. I can slightly change your movement technique's positioning. That might allow you to kill a Demonized General. However, before that, you still need to train your strength. Your present strength isn't enough. Furthermore, this will require a lot of practice and actual combat. It's not something that can be done in a short period of time," Zhou Wen said.

"If it's not troublesome, can you teach me? If it's too troublesome, forget it," the girl asked in embarrassment.

"It's not troublesome." Zhou Wen explained how to change her movement technique.

In fact, it was just adding some basic techniques of Transcendent Flying Immortal. Zhou Wen demonstrated it once and guided the girl several times.

Li Weiyang couldn't help but be surprised when she saw the girl learning from Zhou Wen. It was really surprising that there was a girl who wasn't frightened away by him.

Zhou Wen guided the girl a few times and when he saw that she wasn't making any more mistakes, he said to her, "Your movement is right, but you need to spend time practicing. When you can use it freely in battle, along with a raise of your strength, you can kill a Demonized General alone."

“Thank you, Senior. I know what to do.” After thanking him, the girl went to the side to silently practice.

Seeing that no more girls were asking him for advice, Zhou Wen began his Hell King advancement plan.

The Demonized Soldiers in reality were no different from the Demonized Soldiers in-game. However, these Demonized Soldiers had the invisible flames on their bodies.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 694 - Holy Hell King

Chapter 694: Holy Hell King

When Zhou Wen drew his saber to kill the Demonized Soldiers and Demonized Generals, the girl watched from the side as though she was observing Zhou Wen's movement technique. Then, she compared it to her own movement technique and continued practicing.

After Zhou Wen killed the Demonized Soldiers, invisible flames were immediately sucked into the Hell King's Eye. However, the quantity was lacking. It was much less than the invisible flames he had obtained from killing the monk-robed skeleton and the golden-winged bird. It was like the difference between a drop of water and a pool of water.

However, a tower could be formed simply by piling sand. By killing more Demonized Soldiers and Demonized Generals, he could accumulate a significant amount of invisible flames.

Perhaps it was because he had obtained a lot of invisible flames from before, Zhou Wen felt his body begin to undergo a strange change after killing a few Demonized Soldiers.

Invisible flames flowed out of the Hell King's Eye, enveloping his body in invisible flames. Under the baptism of the invisible flames, the Hell King Life Soul underwent a complete transformation.

However, the invisible flames couldn't be seen. The students nearby couldn't tell the changes in Zhou Wen's body.

The Hell King Life Soul was Zhou Wen’s body. When the Hell King Life Soul evolved, Zhou Wen’s body also changed.

His body became extremely sensitive. Zhou Wen could even sense a speck of dust landing on him, and this level of spiritual perception and touch made him feel uncomfortable.

This feeling wasn’t very good because the air was filled with dust and bacteria. It was fine back when he couldn’t feel or see them.

But now, he could only watch as the dust landed on his face, eyes, and even on his lips. There were also the worm-like bacteria. As they entered Zhou Wen’s nose and mouth through his breathing, he felt terrible.

The invisible flames couldn’t injure any creature, nor could it stop anything from approaching Zhou Wen. The invisible flames didn’t seem to exist at all.

However, it made Zhou Wen’s Hell King Life Soul become stronger and stronger. Finally, even the Hell King’s Eye changed.

In the past, the Hell King’s Eye was only a spatial rift. There was no pupil inside, but as the Hell King’s Life Soul transformed, a pupil-like bead gradually condensed in the Hell King’s Eye.

The bead was condensed from invisible flames. It was formless and corporeal, making it look extremely strange. It was like a transparent pupil that floated in the Hell King’s Eye.

Finally, the Hell King Life Soul completed its evolution. The Hell King’s Eye also had a transparent pupil. The pupil

burned with invisible flames, making it look strange and mysterious.

The invisible flames on his body subsided as some mysterious information surged into Zhou Wen’s mind, allowing him to gain some information regarding the evolution of the Hell King Life Soul.

However, Zhou Wen still switched on his phone and read the blood-colored avatar’s information.

Holy Hell King (Evolved Body): The King of Hell who cleanses away sin.

Zhou Wen roughly knew that the Hell King’s Eye had the effect of cleansing sin, but he still needed to give it a try to know its exact power.

Zhou Wen gave it a try to see how powerful the upgraded Holy Hell King was.

He looked at a Demonized Soldier with the Hell King’s Eye. The invisible karmic sinflames in his eyes immediately burned.

The invisible karmic flames on the Demonized Soldier’s body were triggered. It burst into flames as the invisible karmic sinflames on its body became even thicker.

It looked very powerful. The invisible karmic flames on the Demon Soldier’s body grew thicker, but they didn’t seem to affect the Demonized Soldier at all.

The Demonized Soldier looked normal. It didn’t seem to hurt in any spot. It didn’t even blink.

*Holy sh*t, how can it be useless? Could it be that the Demonized Soldier has already been secretly injured and will die after taking seven steps?* Zhou Wen stared at the Demonized Soldier for a while to see if it would suddenly collapse.

As Zhou Wen watched, he counted the Demonized Soldier's steps. *One step... Two steps... Three steps...*

He watched as the Demonized Soldier finished seven steps. Suddenly, the Demonized Soldier's body paused.

No way! I actually guessed right. It'll die in seven steps? Zhou Wen was pleasantly surprised.

However, to his surprise, the Demonized Soldier stopped and farted before continuing to wander.

Zhou Wen's face immediately darkened. Without any hesitation, he killed the Demonized Soldier with one strike and swallowed the invisible flames on its body.

What the hell. After all this trouble, this Holy Hell King's ability is useless, Zhou Wen thought gloomily.

Although Zhou Wen knew that the Eye of the Holy Hell King was definitely useful, it didn't seem to be suitable for mainstream use. He didn't know what its exact use was.

Forget it. I'll continue absorbing the invisible flames. I'll advance the Hell King to a Perfect Body first. Zhou Wen continued killing monsters to obtain the invisible flames.

For the next few days, Zhou Wen absorbed the invisible karmic flames at Tiger Cage Pass. Finally, he charged into Tiger Cage Pass and killed the Tiger Cage Demonized General and the Elegant Emperor's Avatar Puppet.

However, the invisible karmic flames that these Demonized Soldiers and Demonized Generals could provide were far inferior to the monk-robed skeleton and the golden-winged bird. Despite Zhou Wen absorbing so much, the Holy Hell King didn’t react at all. It showed no signs of advancement again.

Reality wasn’t a game. After killing the Demonized Soldiers and Demonized Generals inside, he had no choice but to slowly wait for new Demonized Soldiers and Demonized Generals to come out of the dimensional rift. He didn’t know how many days he would have to wait, so Zhou Wen naturally wanted to head out. He planned on changing locations to continue grinding the invisible karmic sinflames.

Just as he was about to leave, he saw a female student enter deep inside Tiger Cage Pass and kill many Demonized Soldiers. Finally, she encountered a Demonized General and was fighting it.

Zhou Wen didn’t pay her much attention and was about to leave when he realized that her movement technique looked familiar. He took a careful look.

He immediately realized that the girl was someone he knew. She was the female freshman who had come here with Li Weiyang a few days ago. Zhou Wen had even taught her some basic techniques of Transcendent Flying Immortal.

After not seeing her for a few days, the girl had already mastered the techniques. She fought the Demonized General alone and used the techniques that Zhou Wen had taught her to constantly move about, preventing the Demonized General from touching her. Instead, she constantly injured it.

Unfortunately, she was only at the Mortal stage. She didn’t even have a Companion Beast, nor did she learn any Essence Energy Skills. Every strike on the Demonized General only dealt limited damage.

Zhou Wen couldn’t help but frown slightly. He had told the girl that she lacked strength and needed to raise her strength to kill the Demonized General, but to his surprise, she had come alone.

She also knew that her attacks were lacking, so she wasn’t greedy. She wanted to cause severe damage by constantly accumulating damage.

However, she had neglected the fact that her Essence Energy and stamina were lacking. After a prolonged battle, her speed and strength declined.

Finally, the girl’s speed decreased drastically. She failed to dodge the Demonized General’s charge and was about to be hit.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 695

Chapter 695: Butterfly

With a flash of the saber beam, the Demonized General was cleaved into two.

The girl barely survived. When she saw Zhou Wen beside the Demonized General, she revealed a look of pleasant surprise.

“Didn’t I tell you that you lack strength and that you need to raise your strength before you can attempt killing the Demonized General?” Zhou Wen said with a frown. He was a little angry and his tone was nasty.

The reason Zhou Wen was angry wasn’t that the girl hadn’t listened to him. In the event something happened to the girl, wasn’t he harming her by teaching those movement techniques?

When the girl heard Zhou Wen, she lowered her head and said uneasily, “I’m sorry. It’s my fault. I shouldn’t have ignored your advice.”

“It’s not that you let me down, but that you let yourself down. You were lucky that I happened to be here. You might not be so lucky next time,” Zhou Wen said.

“Senior, don’t worry. There won’t be a next time,” the girl said seriously.

“That’s good. I’ll escort you back to prevent any accidents.” Zhou Wen walked out as the girl followed behind him.

“Your movement technique isn’t bad. Here are some movement technique notes. You can take a look. They should be of some help to you.” Zhou Wen thought for a moment and handed a notebook to the girl.

They were some of the notes Zhou Wen had made when he first comprehended Transcendent Flying Immortal Skill. They were just random thoughts and techniques, nothing systematic.

After Zhou Wen truly gained an epiphany, he didn’t use them again.

This girl was rather talented in movement techniques, and her personality was somewhat similar to Zhou Wen’s. Zhou Wen casually handed the notebook to her to see if she could figure out anything useful from his random thoughts and techniques. It all depended on her perceptivity.

“I… I don’t have money…” The girl shook her hand immediately.

“It’s not worth much. I just wrote it in passing. Just take a look. There’s no need to take it seriously.” Zhou Wen threw the notebook to the girl and left.

After Zhou Wen returned to his dorm, he began studying which dimensional zone to continue grinding for invisible sinflames.

Although he already knew the method needed to advance Slaughterer, killing a Guardian to advance Slaughterer was just too difficult.

Zhou Wen already knew that he couldn’t beat the Guardian in Ant City.

He might not even be capable of killing the nine black dragons who pulled the wagon in the underground sea.

There was also another one—it was guarded by the chick's mother. Ignoring the question of whether Zhou Wen could defeat it, even if he could, he didn't think it was right to kill the chick's mother.

Of course, he might not be its match in the first place.

After some thought, he realized that there was only one Guardian he could kill—Grim Demon who possessed the demonic sword.

Every time Grim Demon saw Zhou Wen, it felt that Zhou Wen was looking at him with a look resembling how a hungry wolf looked at a sheep. It made his heart tremble.

Although Zhou Wen had the intention to kill Grim Demon in an attempt to advance Slaughterer to another level, Grim Demon was Demonic Neonate's reserve rations. Zhou Wen couldn't bring himself to do the deed, so he could only give up.

Furthermore, Demonic Neonate's successful sneak attack during the Buddha Annihilation battle was all thanks to Grim Demon who was attached to the demonic sword. Otherwise, the ordinary demonic sword wouldn't have been able to injure Buddha Annihilation, much less kill it.

If he killed Grim Demon, Demonic Neonate's might would be greatly reduced. It didn't seem worth it.

After much selection, Zhou Wen finally chose a dimensional zone that few people went to. It was the underground Pool City. In the past, Zhou Wen had farmed dimensional creatures like the Poison Wyrm. There were actually quite a

number of dimensional creatures there, but because most of them were underwater and weren’t easy to kill, very few people went there.

Zhou Wen went to Pool City and grinded for a few days, but he didn’t make much progress. Typical dimensional creatures had very few invisible sinflames on them. Furthermore, after advancing to the Holy Hell King, the invisible sinflames he needed for another advancement seemed to increase significantly. He didn’t know how long it would take to advance Holy Hell King by killing ordinary dimensional creatures.

Where can I kill a few dimensional creatures like the monk-robed skeleton and the golden-winged bird? Zhou Wen finally gave up on the idea of grinding ordinary dungeons to obtain the invisible sinflames.

Zhou Wen returned to his dorm and found Li Xuan sitting in the living room. Seeing Zhou Wen return, Li Xuan walked over with a smile and was about to put his hand on Zhou Wen’s shoulder.

Whoosh!

Zhou Wen immediately placed the sheathed Bamboo Blade against Li Xuan’s neck. He asked coldly, “Who are you?”

“Old Zhou, are you crazy? Don’t you even recognize me?” As Li Xuan spoke, he was about to touch Zhou Wen’s forehead.

The Bamboo Blade in Zhou Wen’s hand slashed at Li Xuan’s neck.

Boom!

Before the Bamboo Blade struck Li Xuan’s neck, white smoke emitted from his body, causing Zhou Wen’s Bamboo Blade to miss.

After the white smoke dissipated, he saw a woman standing there. She looked at Zhou Wen in surprise and said, “How did you discover that I’m not Li Xuan? I believe even Li Xuan himself wouldn’t be able to see through it.”

“I’ll give you one last chance. Who are you?” Zhou Wen stared coldly at the woman as he tightened his grip on the scabbard. He wouldn’t use a sheathed saber for the next strike.

Zhou Wen had not noticed any flaws. The woman impersonating Li Xuan was indeed enough to make it look real. Even if she was placed beside the real Li Xuan, Zhou Wen wouldn’t have been able to tell which was real and which was fake.

However, women shouldn’t have come here. This was because Li Xuan didn’t dare enter his dorm randomly when Zhou Wen wasn’t around, much less sit on the sofa so daringly.

This was because Li Xuan knew very well that it was the antelope’s territory. What he was most afraid of was the antelope. Every time he came, he would only sit on a small sofa or a stool.

Therefore, Zhou Wen only needed a glance to know that this Li Xuan was fake.

“My name is Butterfly. I’m Second Young Master Li Mobai’s servant. Master wants me to invite you over,” the woman said.

“Is this your idea of an invitation?” Zhou Wen said with a cold expression.

“That’s because the Master said that I definitely can’t fool you. I didn’t believe it, so I made a bet with him. Now that I’ve lost, you can kill me now if you’re not satisfied. I have no complaints,” Butterfly closed her eyes and said.

“Why is Li Mobai looking for me?” Zhou Wen didn’t have the habit of killing. Furthermore, he actually knew of Butterfly. When Li Xuan told him about Li Mobai and the Evil King Gu, he had told him about this woman.

Li Weiyang couldn’t tell even when Butterfly pretended to be Li Weiyang. He had nearly lost his will to live because of her ruse.

“Master has something important to discuss with you,” Butterfly said.

“Not interested. Leave,” Zhou Wen said.

“As the Master expected. However, Master got me to ask you if you are interested in Guardians? If you are interested, he will wait for you at Elegant Peace Restaurant,” Butterfly said.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 696

Chapter 696: Li Mobai’s Information

In a private room at Elegant Peace Restaurant.

“After you.” Li Mobai carefully brewed a cup of tea and placed it in front of Zhou Wen, gesturing for him to drink it.

“Just say it directly,” Zhou Wen said to Li Mobai without drinking it.

Li Mobai didn’t mind. As he continued brewing tea, he said, “Zhou Wen, do you know what the most terrifying power in this world is?”

“I don’t know,” Zhou Wen answered.

Li Mobai continued, “The most terrifying power in this world is to be able to see something but not be able to obtain it. For example, having an enemy who killed your father and stole your wife right in front of you. You can see him every day. You can see him smile, watch him go crazy, and watch him enjoy all the riches and glory in the world. However, you can’t hurt even a single strand of his hair. This is more unbearable than any physical pain.”

“Second Young Master, I’m an ordinary student. I don’t understand such profound principles. If you wish to discuss philosophy, I’m afraid you’ve found the wrong person,” Zhou Wen said.

Li Mobai brewed a cup of tea for himself and took a sip before pouring away the remaining tea.

“Now, there are two things I can see but can’t obtain. One thing is the life of my enemy, and the other is a cocoon.” Li Mobai put down his cup and continued, “Ever since John challenged you with the six-winged seraphim, I’ve been trying my best to figure out what kind of power it is. In the end, I managed to find the answer, the cocoon of a Guardian.”

Zhou Wen silently waited for Li Mobai to continue. Li Mobai definitely didn’t invite him here to talk about this.

“Perhaps the heavens pitied a half-crippled person like me and allowed me to find a Guardian cocoon. However, there are terrifying Mythical creatures guarding it. I spent a lot of effort and paid a huge price, but I failed to even approach it.” Li Mobai looked at Zhou Wen and said, “But you are different. You have the ability to help me approach it.”

“Why should I help you?” Zhou Wen asked.

“Because you can bet on a one-third possibility,” Li Mobai said with a smile.

“What do you mean?” Zhou Wen didn’t understand what Li Mobai meant.

“According to what I know, a Guardian like the six-winged seraphim wouldn’t casually reach an agreement with a human. Instead, it depends on whether that person manages to obtain their recognition. I know where the Guardian cocoon is, and you have the ability to get us near it. Each of us will have one chance. I’ll have a go first. If I don’t succeed, it will be your chance. Of course, it’s also possible that we won’t be able to obtain its recognition, but you have at least a one-third chance, right?” Li Mobai said.

Zhou Wen fell silent. He was naturally interested in the Guardian cocoon. Not only was he interested, but he also wished he could immediately find one.

However, he didn’t want to obtain the Guardian’s recognition, but to kill it.

However, Zhou Wen knew very well that every Guardian had terrifying strength. They were top-notch existences among Mythical creatures. He didn’t know if his strength could kill the Guardian.

Li Mobai continued, “The Guardian cocoon I discovered is in the South District. It’s where I obtained my Essence Energy Art. According to my speculation, since I could obtain the Essence Energy Art there and condense the Evil King Gu Life Soul, perhaps it might be compatible with the Guardian cocoon, elevating my chances of success. Unfortunately, my foundation has been destroyed and I’ve already cultivated another Essence Energy Art. This is also where I’m at a disadvantage. In short, my chances are very high. It’s not like you don’t have a chance. Do you want to take a gamble? The decision lies with you.”

“Aren’t you afraid that I’ll snatch your chance?” Zhou Wen said to Li Mobai.

Li Mobai laughed. “Just as I said, I can’t do anything while watching my enemy live a carefree life. Now, I’m living a life worse than death. If it were you, would you be willing to take the risk?”

“I need time to consider it,” Zhou Wen said after some thought.

“That’s fine. You can take your time to consider it. I can wait.” Li Mobai said to Butterfly, “Take Zhou Wen back.”

“There’s no need. I can go myself.” Zhou Wen got up and left Elegant Peace Restaurant.

On the way back, Zhou Wen kept considering the proposal.

A Guardian cocoon was difficult to find. If what Li Mobai said was true, it was worth taking a look. Li Mobai had a chance, but he might not succeed.

However, Li Mobai was someone who could do anything for revenge. Zhou Wen didn’t dare trust him.

When he returned to school, he realized that An Sheng was waiting for him outside.

“Young Master Wen, the selection of treasure chests in the maze has been prepared. When do you plan on going?” An Sheng directly explained his intentions.

“Let’s do it now.” Zhou Wen also wanted to resolve this matter as soon as possible.

The world was changing at an increasing pace. Who knew if there would be a chance to go in the future? It was best to go early before the dimensional zone’s seals completely collapsed.

“I share the same thoughts. Get in.” An Sheng opened the car door and let Zhou Wen in before taking the driver’s seat.

“Young Master Wen, why did Li Mobai want to see you?” An Sheng clearly knew that Li Mobai had met Zhou Wen.

Zhou Wen didn’t hide it as he recounted the matter.

“Ah Sheng, there’s something I don’t quite understand. Why did Chancellor Leng kill Buddha Annihilation and not choose

to attempt a contract?” Zhou Wen asked.

“I’m not too sure about that. I’m afraid only Chancellor Leng can answer you.” An Sheng shook his head.

After a pause, An Sheng continued, “What Li Mobai said might be true, but it’s probably too late to go now.”

“Why do you say that?” Zhou Wen was puzzled.

“According to reliable intelligence, Zhang Chunqiu, Xia Liuchuan, and Dugu Ge have gone to the South District together. Furthermore, their target is a Guardian egg. The place they’ve gone to is very close to the region Li Mobai mentioned,” An Sheng said.

“Li Mobai didn’t say where the Guardian egg is. How do you know where it is?” Zhou Wen asked.

“The An family has naturally been secretly paying attention to people like Li Mobai. He used to stay in the South District for a period of time. We’ve checked the areas he has been to and can determine a general area,” An Sheng explained.

“I see. That’s a pity.” Zhou Wen was originally tempted, but after hearing An Sheng’s words, he felt that his hopes were most likely dashed.

The roads these days were difficult to navigate. An Sheng stopped the car inside a service station before the two of them rode their Companion Beasts forward.

Zhou Wen rode the Great Might Vajra Bull as though he was walking on flat ground in the forest. His speed wasn’t slower than driving.

“Young Master Wen, you have to memorize the map of the maze. Although I’ll lead the way for you, you’ll have to come out by yourself if you get lost inside,” An Sheng exhorted Zhou Wen again.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 697

Chapter 697: Treasure

The maze map was very complicated. Even with Zhou Wen’s memory, it took him a long time to memorize it.

Apart from the maze being overly complicated, it was also because the maze was constantly changing. The degree of change was so complicated that it far exceeded the limits of what ordinary humans could imagine.

Memorizing the map didn’t only require memorizing the routes, but it also required some formulas. When one really got lost, one didn’t have to rely on their brains’ memory of the routes. Instead, one had to use formulas to calculate the way out.

Zhou Wen had spent quite a bit of time on this. To be safe, he had put in a lot of effort.

Two days later, Zhou Wen and An Sheng arrived at an inconspicuous field. It was originally a cornfield, but it was very remote. After the dimensional storms, there was an anomaly here.

The corn here grew extremely tall; each of them was as tall as a tree. The corn on them was golden and even bigger than a person’s head.

Furthermore, ever since the dimensional storms, the corn here hadn’t withered. They kept growing.

The entrance to the maze was in the cornfield. Back then, An Tianzuo and An Sheng had fled from a Mythical break-out creature. In their panic, they escaped into the cornfield and ended up falling into the maze. As a result, they escaped the calamity.

An Tianzuo obtained his first Mythical Companion Beast there.

An Sheng circled the cornfield for a while before finally finding a spot. He used a shovel to dig up the soil on the ground, revealing a metal plate.

He lifted the metal plate and revealed an ancient well.

An Sheng patted the soil in his hand and said, “Overseer and I disguised this place to prevent others from accidentally entering. Firstly, it was to prevent the treasure chests from being opened by others. Secondly, it was to prevent humans from entering. It’s impossible for people to come out of such a complicated maze. Death would be the only outcome in that event.

“Young Master Wen, you have to follow me closely after we go down. Don’t take the wrong path,” An Sheng exhorted before heading down the well.

Zhou Wen followed An Sheng down the ancient well. There was still water at the bottom. An Sheng dived down, and before long, there was a horizontal tunnel.

Soon, the two of them passed through the underwater tunnel and appeared in a squarish stone room.

An Sheng kept leading Zhou Wen through the stone room. Every stone room looked identical. There was almost no difference.

Every stone room had six exits in all directions—up, down, left, right, forward, and back. Ordinary people wouldn’t be able to walk far before getting lost.

Furthermore, the stone house here could move on its own. It made it even harder for ordinary people to leave.

The only thing worth rejoicing about was that there were no dimensional creatures in the maze. All they needed to do was identify the path and ensure that they didn’t get lost.

An Sheng kept walking and stopping, occasionally doing some calculations. After three or four hours, he finally found a treasure chest with Zhou Wen.

This stone house was a little special because there was no exit at the bottom. There was a stone chest in its place.

It was different from the treasure chest inlaid with gold and silver that Zhou Wen imagined. It was an ordinary stone chest that didn’t look anything special.

“The treasure chests here are very strange. A person can only open three treasure chests. Once you open three, it will be difficult to touch any more, even if you use all your strength. According to our past experience, the treasure chests might be empty. There might also be Companion Eggs, dimensional crystals, and some strange items. They are all dimensional items,” An Sheng said.

Zhou Wen walked forward and held the lid of the treasure chest, lifting it up.

There was no golden light, nor was there any treasure aura. In the huge chest, there was only a palm-sized crystal hourglass.

“What’s this? What’s its use?” Zhou Wen took out the hourglass and sized it up.

The sand in the hourglass was slowly flowing from one end to the other.

The sand was a type of white sand, not common yellow sand. It looked even finer.

“It’s possible to obtain something strange in the treasure chest. It’s hard to tell if it’s of any use. Perhaps this hourglass will be of some use,” An Sheng said.

Zhou Wen nodded and was about to put away the hourglass when he discovered something strange.

As he was about to put it in his backpack, Zhou Wen held the hourglass horizontally. Strangely, when the hourglass became horizontal, the sand didn’t stop flowing. It continued falling in another direction.

Strange! Zhou Wen picked up the hourglass and sized it up again. He saw that the sand was flowing horizontally, completely violating the laws of physics.

Zhou Wen overturned the hourglass. The sand that should have flowed down flowed upstream without any intention of falling. It looked extremely strange.

This hourglass sure is extraordinary! Zhou Wen fiddled with the hourglass curiously. No matter how he oriented the hourglass, the sand inside stubbornly flowed in the same direction.

However, other than that, there was nothing special about it. Zhou Wen injected his Essence Energy, but it didn’t affect

the hourglass. It was as though it was an Essence Energy insulator.

Seeing that the hourglass didn’t have any special effects, Zhou Wen placed it in his backpack and continued searching for other treasure chests with An Sheng.

During the time they were here, the stone house’s location changed again. An Sheng kept calculating, and after doing so, he continued walking with Zhou Wen.

After walking for about half an hour, Zhou Wen suddenly heard a “ding” that sounded like the notification of an electric oven.

Zhou Wen and An Sheng jumped in fright before realizing that the sound came from the backpack.

Zhou Wen opened his backpack with a strange expression. There weren’t any mechanical objects inside, nor were there any clocks.

Zhou Wen suddenly realized that the sand in the hourglass had been completely emptied. All the sand had entered one chamber.

Could it be that the sound was produced by it? Zhou Wen felt that there was no other possibility.

He kept looking at it. Apart from the sand beginning to flow in reverse, nothing happened.

After putting the hourglass back into his backpack, the two of them continued walking. However, just as they stepped into the next stone house, they suddenly realized that a beam of light had lit up inside.

All the stone houses Zhou Wen and An Sheng had passed through previously were the same. They didn’t differ from one another, nor were there any carvings on the walls.

However, there was a mural that resembled a phoenix on the wall of the stone house. It was still emitting light as though it was about to come to life.

Just as the phoenix mural lit up, the tunnel in the stone house automatically sealed shut.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 698

Chapter 698: Magical Hourglass

A petite fire phoenix flew down from the wall. With terrifying flames, it instantly turned the entire stone house into a sea of flames.

Despite wearing armor, the red-hot flames were still scorching hot.

Zhou Wen summoned Tyrant Behemoth and swallowed the flames, along with the fire phoenix.

Although it was only for a short moment, An Sheng and Zhou Wen broke out into a cold sweat. White smoke was billowing from their armor. If it had been a little longer, their armor would have been burned red, and their flesh would have been cooked.

Once the fire phoenix died, the six doors automatically opened and returned to their previous state.

“Ah Sheng, did you encounter such a situation when you came before?” Zhou Wen felt that something was amiss and asked An Sheng.

“Never. Young Master Wen, do you think the fire phoenix from before has something to do with this hourglass?” As An Sheng spoke, he looked at the backpack that had been burned to a crisp. The things in the backpack had already been dropped across the ground. Many things had been destroyed, but the crystal hourglass remained intact. It lay horizontally on the ground, the sand still flowing.

“I also think it might be related. Nothing happened last time you came here, and nothing happened when we were walking. However, after the hourglass reversed, an incident occurred. Apart from it, I really can’t think of any other reason,” Zhou Wen said.

“Let’s use our Companion Beasts to scout ahead and see if the other stone houses have the same problem.” As An Sheng spoke, he summoned a lion and let it enter the next room An Sheng planned on entering.

The moment the lion entered, the stone house suddenly sealed shut. Soon, An Sheng’s expression changed.

Zhou Wen used Truth Listener’s powers to figure out what was happening next door, but he couldn’t hear anything. There seemed to be a force blocking Truth Listener from hearing past the stone house’s wall.

Soon, the tunnel door opened and the lion Companion Beast that had entered vanished. From the looks of it, it had been killed.

“These stone houses have indeed become a little strange. After my Companion Beast entered, it quickly had its connection with me severed. I couldn’t sense what happened inside either,” An Sheng said with a heavy expression.

Zhou Wen looked in from the door, but he didn’t discover any murals in the stone house. It was no different from an ordinary stone house.

“If the changes in the maze are related to this crystal hourglass, do you think the maze will return to normal when we wait for the crystal hourglass’s sand to reverse?” Zhou Wen said as he looked at the hourglass in his hand.

“That’s very likely.” An Sheng stared at the sand in the hourglass and said, “From the speed at which the sand flows, it should reverse every hour. Let’s wait here for an hour.”

“Alright.” Zhou Wen also felt that it was better to wait.

God knew what other strange things were in this maze. Although he had Mythical pets, his body was still at the Epic stage. If anything happened in such a small stone house, he might not be able to dodge it. It was useless no matter how strong his Companion Beasts were.

The two of them waited in the stone house as time ticked by. When the sand from the hourglass completely flowed out, they heard a chime that was identical to the sound they had heard previously.

In the next second, the sand in the hourglass began to flow in reverse.

“I’ll give it another try.” An Sheng summoned another Companion Beast and let it enter the room the lion had entered.

Indeed, the stone house’s passageway didn’t close this time. The Companion Beasts inside didn’t show any signs of trouble.

“We were right.” An Sheng carefully entered the room, but there weren’t any incidents.

Therefore, Zhou Wen and An Sheng used their Companion Beasts as scouts and continued proceeding towards the next treasure chest in the maze. They passed many stone houses, but nothing happened.

When the hourglass reversed, the two of them stopped and didn’t continue advancing. They stayed in place for an hour, waiting for the hourglass to reverse again before continuing.

It was unknown what kind of relationship the hourglass had with the maze. It could actually control it. The situation inside the maze was completely different when the sand flowed in the different directions.

When he was forced to rest, Zhou Wen studied the hourglass. He wanted to see if he could control the flow of sand in the hourglass.

If he could control it, wouldn’t he be able to control this maze?

However, after studying it for quite some time, Zhou Wen didn’t discover how to control the hourglass. The main reason he didn’t dare act rashly was that he was afraid that he would damage the hourglass. That would only make things worse.

I’ll think of a way to study it after we leave. Zhou Wen temporarily gave up the idea of controlling it.

“Young Master Wen, I seem to have discovered something,” An Sheng said.

“What did you discover? Is it a secret regarding the maze?” Zhou Wen hurriedly asked.

“No.” An Sheng shook his head and said, “After so many experiences with you, I realized that as long as you enter a dimensional zone, it’s easy for unexpected things to happen…”

“Coincidence… It must be a coincidence…” Zhou Wen said firmly. Although he also felt that something would happen every time he entered a dimensional zone, he definitely wouldn’t admit that he was a jinx.

Even if there’s a problem, it’s definitely because of the Tiger Soul General, Bamboo Blade, and Tai Sui. It’s definitely not my problem, Zhou Wen thought.

An Sheng laughed and said, “Actually, this isn’t bad either. At the very least, it won’t be that boring. It’s always so thrilling every time I enter a dimensional zone with you.”

“It really has nothing to do with me,” Zhou Wen said with a sullen expression.

The two of them kept walking and stopping. After traveling for more than thirty hours, they finally arrived at the room where the second treasure chest was.

“Young Master Wen, open it and take a look,” An Sheng said with a heavy expression.

“Do I really have to open it?” Zhou Wen asked, somewhat worried.

The crystal hourglass appeared in the first treasure chest. Who knew what was inside this chest.

It would be fine if a Companion Egg or dimensional crystal dropped, but if a bomb appeared and blasted them to death, it would be terrible.

Although it was just an analogy, Zhou Wen couldn’t rule out the possibility of a bomb inside.

“Open it. Even if there’s a Buddha Annihilation inside, we can just fight it again. There’s nothing to be afraid of,” An Sheng said with a smile.

Zhou Wen swallowed his saliva and reached out to lift the lid of the treasure chest. His heart was beating rapidly like a drum.

An Sheng and Zhou Wen looked into the treasure chest and were taken aback.

There was actually another chest in the treasure chest. The material and style were the same as the treasure chest, but it was a little smaller.

Zhou Wen frowned slightly as he opened the lid. He saw that there was an even smaller treasure chest inside. After opening seven or eight treasure chests, all he saw were even smaller ones.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 699

Chapter 699: Strange Treasure Chest

“Are you kidding me? Don’t tell me that it will be an empty box in the end?” Zhou Wen said gloomily.

An Sheng laughed. “As expected of Young Master Wen. The Overseer and I opened six treasure chests, but none of them were as interesting as a single one of yours.”

“This really has nothing to do with me. You were the ones who picked the good treasure chests. The remaining treasure chests are all so strange,” Zhou Wen said gloomily.

“Quickly open it and take a look. I’m really looking forward to seeing what’s inside,” An Sheng urged.

Zhou Wen had no choice but to continue opening the treasure chests. One after another, he opened at least twenty. The treasure chest also changed from a huge chest to a tiny chest the size of a palm.

Zhou Wen tried and wanted to take out the treasure chest, but although it was tiny, it remained motionless no matter how hard he tried.

Zhou Wen had no choice but to continue opening them chest after chest The treasure chest had already become the size of a finger. Yet, there was still a treasure chest inside.

“I’m very certain now that the owner of the maze must be pulling a prank on us. There’s definitely nothing in the final

treasure chest.” Zhou Wen felt that he had definitely been fooled.

“At this stage, even if it’s empty, you have to open the last box to take a look,” An Sheng encouraged.

Zhou Wen continued opening the chest silently. The treasure chest went from the size of a finger to the size of a fingernail.

“F**k, why are there more? I can’t believe it.” Zhou Wen continued opening a few more chests. The treasure chest was already about the size of the jewel on a ring.

Just as Zhou Wen was about to open it, he realized that the square stone treasure chest that resembled a ring’s gem was locked. Although the lock was very small, he could tell that it was a lock.

“Isn’t this a scam? I’ve opened all the way to this point, yet, it’s telling me that it needs a key…” Zhou Wen wished he could smash the treasure chest.

However, it was unknown if the treasure chests were protected by nomological powers. Even Mythical-stage power was unable to damage them.

“Could this small treasure chest be the prize in this treasure chest?” An Sheng said as he looked at the small treasure chest.

“No way?” Zhou Wen was slightly taken aback as he reached out to pick up the tiny treasure chest. He had opened so many treasure chests and of them could be moved. Yet, this time, he could pick it up.

“I can actually take it out!” Zhou Wen immediately realized that the fellow who had placed the treasure chest here was definitely doing it on purpose.

Zhou Wen took a careful look and didn’t find a way to open the treasure chest. He handed it to An Sheng to take a look. After studying it, An Sheng returned it to Zhou Wen. “The structure inside the keyhole is somewhat different from our human locks. It might require a special key to open it. Young Master Wen, put it away now. Think of a way to open it after we are out.”

Zhou Wen had no choice but to put away the mini treasure chest. With such a small treasure chest, there was probably nothing inside. Even if there was something, what could be inside?

He had opened two treasure chests which only contained strange items. Zhou Wen was beginning to miss Wang Lu. If he could get her to help him open the treasure chests, he definitely wouldn’t be so unlucky to have such strange items.

The two of them set off again. Due to their previous experience, An Sheng was afraid that this small treasure chest would trigger a change in the maze, so he walked even more carefully.

However, nothing unexpected happened. Just like before, as long as they waited for the hourglass’s safe period, they could successfully pass through the stone rooms.

Finally, Zhou Wen and An Sheng arrived at the location of the third treasure chest. Zhou Wen stood in front of it and pressed his palms together. He prayed in every direction. “Gods from every denomination, please bless me. I don’t wish to become rich overnight. I just want something normal

to come out. Mythical Companion Beasts or something, just one will do. I'm really not picky…"

While praying, Zhou Wen summoned the baby tiger, hoping to increase his luck.

An Sheng held back his laughter when he heard Zhou Wen mutter to himself. He said in all seriousness, "Young Master, it's all determined by fate. Open it quickly."

Zhou Wen gritted his teeth and opened the lid.

"It's indeed very normal…" An Sheng looked into the box and immediately laughed. This was because the box was empty. There was nothing inside.

"That's it?" Zhou Wen was somewhat depressed.

"Why don't I take you to find another box? What if you're born different and can open a fourth box?" An Sheng said.

"Don't trouble yourself. Let's return," Zhou Wen said with a shake of his head.

He decided that he would never open any cursed chests or other items that depended on luck again unless he could come with Wang Lu.

An Sheng led Zhou Wen out. It was impossible to return the way they came. As the stone room's location kept changing, he could only find a new path.

Thankfully, nothing happened on the way back. The two of them successfully exited the maze.

An Sheng used the metal plate to seal the well's entrance again. He covered it with soil as a disguise. Unless it was a

coincidence, it would be difficult to discover the entrance to the maze.

Zhou Wen realized that the crystal hourglass in his hand had appeared to freeze. The sand inside which should still be flowing was frozen. It looked like time had stopped. It was extremely magical.

“Young Master Wen, it’s not as though you didn’t gain anything. Even if the small treasure chest is empty, this crystal hourglass is rather magical. It might really be a treasure,” An Sheng consoled.

Zhou Wen wasn’t in the mood to say anything. He put away the crystal hourglass and the mini treasure chest and planned on thinking of a way to open it when he returned.

The two of them returned to Luoyang, but they realized that there were very few people on the city streets. Soon, they realized that most people were watching a livestream.

“Someone actually challenged Primordial Sword Immortal again. It’s no wonder so many people are watching the livestream.” Zhou Wen used Truth Listener to search and discovered the problem.

“That’s not surprising. There aren’t many days left for the three-month deadline. There must be someone who can’t hold back. Let’s see who’s challenging Primordial Sword Immortal,” An Sheng said as he took out his phone and turned on the livestream. He ended up somewhat surprised.

In the arena, Primordial Sword Immortal had already revealed his sword immortal body. He stood in the arena with the stone sword in hand, but there was no sign of a challenger.

Suddenly, the sword immortal’s head seemed to suffer a heavy blow as his body flew out horizontally.

“What was that?” Zhou Wen and An Sheng failed to see what had happened.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 700

Chapter 700: The Last 72 Hours

After Primordial Sword Immortal was sent flying, he immediately flew into the air and slashed out rows of sword beams in all directions.

However, other than Primordial Sword Immortal and his sword beams, Zhou Wen and An Sheng saw nothing.

“An invisible Companion Beast?” Zhou Wen and An Sheng could see the surprise in each other’s eyes.

Invisibility Companion Beasts were rare. Zhou Wen had an Invisibility Cloak Companion Egg, but it was a problematic Companion Egg. He hadn’t managed to hatch it yet.

Apart from that, he had also heard of some Companion Beasts that could be invisible. However, they weren’t absolutely invisible.

For example, a Companion Beast named Chameleon could fuse with the environment through Chameleon Transformation and reach the goal of invisibility.

However, this kind of invisibility was basically useless against top-notch experts.

Ignoring Mythical creatures, even Epic experts like Zhou Wen’s Hell King Life Soul could sense minute changes in the airflow.

To just be visually invisible wasn’t of much use against top-notch experts.

It was only when dealing with special skills like the Bright Torch Vision World that invisibility had some effect.

What was truly terrifying wasn’t visual invisibility, but complete invisibility. Even one’s body could be concealed. It wouldn’t cause any airflow, emit heat, or produce a lifeforce field. It was as if one had vanished into thin air.

Only then could an existence like Primordial Sword Immortal not discover its location.

In the battle arena’s situation, Primordial Sword Immortal clearly hadn’t discovered the enemy’s location. All he could do was continuously slash out large swaths of sword beams, hoping to use the dense sword beams to force the enemy out.

This was clearly useless. Soon, Primordial Sword Immortal suffered another baffling strike and flew out again.

The battle scene in the arena was very strange. It was as though Primordial Sword Immortal was fighting the air, but he was constantly being attacked. The sword immortal’s spirit body was also flickering from time to time. It didn’t look good.

“There are still limitations to a livestream. Let’s go to the cube to take a look,” An Sheng said as he drove towards the cube.

There was almost no one on the other streets. The streets that could see the cube’s screen were packed with people. People couldn’t even squeeze through, never mind cars.

Even the buildings on both sides of the street were filled with people.

Zhou Wen and An Sheng had no choice but to find a place to park the car before finding a relatively closer spot to watch the battle.

The cube's big screen could perfectly enact the real battle. It was the same as a real scene. This was something that even high-speed cameras weren't capable of.

No matter how powerful the camera's functions were, there were still limitations. For example, no matter how high the resolution was, it was impossible to reach the standards of the real world.

Just like the scene on the phone, Primordial Sword Immortal was still being thrashed unilaterally.

His opponent seemed to be deliberately humiliating Primordial Sword Immortal. Every strike was like an invisible fist striking Primordial Sword Immortal's face, sending him flying.

Again and again, it struck. It wasn't in a rush to finish off Primordial Sword Immortal. It was as though it wanted to appreciate Primordial Sword Immortal's sorry state.

Ever since Primordial Sword Immortal appeared out of nowhere and suppressed the rankings for a few months, accepting the challenges of many powerful Companion Beasts, he had always appeared invincible. He was practically synonymous with invincibility. When had he ever been in such a sorry state?

Primordial Sword Immortal attempted to force his opponent out by using many methods, but the outcome was not as he

wished. He was completely unable to determine his opponent’s location.

Zhou Wen looked at the name on the ranking. The Companion Beast that challenged Primordial Sword Immortal was named “Origin Realm King”, but he didn’t see the image of Origin Realm King.

Could it be that Origin Realm King is invisible? Zhou Wen thought to himself.

The battle continued in a one-sided manner. The invincible Primordial Sword Immortal was helpless against an invisible opponent. All he could do was passively take a beating.

“It looks like the number one spot on the rankings will finally be changed.”

“Origin Realm King, why have I never heard of it before?”

“Indeed, invisible opponents are the most terrifying. Origin Realm King is too powerful. To be able to beat Primordial Sword Immortal to such a state, it’s practically invincible.”

“I wonder who the Origin Realm King belongs to?”

“That’s hard to guess. I’ve only heard of legends about the Divine Realm, the Immortal Realm, the Fiend Realm, the Spirit Realm, the Ghost Realm, the Demon Realm, and so on. I’ve never heard of the Origin Realm.”

“Could it be from overseas?”

“Probably not. If the Origin Realm King is from overseas, I’d rather support Primordial Sword Immortal taking first place.”

The entire Federation was abuzz with discussion. Primordial Sword Immortal was clearly at a disadvantage. Although he hadn’t used his Wheel of Destiny and still had the ability to deliver a final blow, his chances of winning were much lower.

This was because most people determined that Primordial Sword Immortal’s Wheel of Destiny was an offensive skill. He didn’t even know where his opponent was, so the effects of the Wheel of Destiny were too limited. Unless Primordial Sword Immortal’s Wheel of Destiny had a huge area of effect, it was difficult to turn defeat into victory.

Zhou Wen watched the battle the entire time. He had even used the Holy Hell King’s Eye, but he still couldn’t see where Origin Realm King was.

What powerful invisibility. It can even hide the sinflames on its body? Zhou Wen was somewhat surprised.

“From the looks of it, we should be able to see Primordial Sword Immortal’s Wheel of Destiny.” An Sheng also believed that Primordial Sword Immortal had been forced into a corner.

It wasn’t only An Sheng. The six families and many experts also believed so. At this stage, Primordial Sword Immortal couldn’t sit idle.

Just as everyone was hoping that Primordial Sword Immortal would release his Wheel of Destiny, something unexpected happened.

Primordial Sword Immortal actually chose to forfeit and gave up the throne of first place. He didn’t use the power of his Wheel of Destiny.

The entire Federation was in an uproar. After occupying the rankings for months, the invincible Primordial Sword Immortal had been defeated just like that. First place was given to someone else, and Primordial Realm King became the strongest Companion Beast in the world.

Since Primordial Sword Immortal didn’t use his Wheel of Destiny, it meant that he knew that he couldn’t win even if he used it.

There were less than four days left before the three-month deadline Wang Mingyuan mentioned was reached.

All the major media outlets in the Federation were reporting on the matter of Origin Realm King taking first place. They were also guessing who its owner was.

Just like Primordial Sword Immortal, the owner of Origin Realm King had never appeared. All the speculation was nothing but speculation.

However, according to the deductions of the six families, it was very likely that Origin Realm King was an overseas Companion Beast. This was because, in the legends of the Federation’s four districts, there didn’t seem to be a place like the Origin Realm.

While people were guessing the origins and true colors of the Origin Realm King, the cubes around the world underwent a strange change. Each cube displayed a 72-hour countdown.

Anyone with a smidgen of intelligence could roughly guess what it meant. There were less than 72 hours left before the three-month deadline.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 701

Chapter 701: Light Beast’s Challenge

All the major factions who wanted to vie for first place mobilized their forces to study what kind of Companion Beast the Origin Realm King was, as well as its various abilities.

Without a doubt, the Origin Realm King’s most terrifying ability was invisibility. Even Primordial Sword Immortal couldn’t find it. This was an extremely terrifying ability.

In addition, it was also probably very fast. Otherwise, even if it was invisible, it would be difficult for it to dodge Primordial Sword Immortal’s high-speed sword beams.

Based on these two points, professionals began to study and analyze various possibilities.

Everyone was constantly paying attention to the rankings. As there were less than 72 hours left, there was a chance that someone could challenge the Origin Realm King at any time.

In fact, other than first place, there were already many people with lower rankings challenging those with higher rankings. They hoped to obtain a better spot before the ranking matches ended.

In the final 72 hours, there was only an hour to accept the challenge. If one didn’t accept the challenge within the hour, they would automatically be declared the loser.

Zhou Wen was also studying Origin Realm King. After watching the battle between Origin Realm King and

Primordial Sword Immortal, he had a nagging feeling that something was amiss.

After getting the video to watch carefully, he still failed to see any problems.

Origin Realm King's invisibility ability could be said to be perfect. He couldn't find any flaws. No matter how strong Primordial Sword Immortal was, no matter how strong he was, it was useless against an enemy who could casually appear beside him.

All Companion Beasts have their weaknesses. Is the invisibility ability of the Origin Realm King really that perfect? Zhou Wen didn't believe in absolute perfection.

Just like Torch Dragon's Bright Torch Vision World, such a powerful skill could be nullified with just a mirror.

Origin Realm King's invisibility was indeed very powerful, but Zhou Wen felt that it definitely had a weakness. It was just that he hadn't discovered it yet.

Just as the various factions were nervously studying it, a Companion Beast named Light Beast suddenly challenged the first-ranked Origin Realm King.

"Light beast? Isn't that a Companion Beast of the Family Clan of Gods? I heard that it has the power of light, but its combat strength isn't strong. At best, it's about the level of Inferno Dragon? It's far inferior to Primordial Sword Immortal. How can it challenge Origin Realm King?"

"Could it be that the Family Clan of Gods has found the weakness of the Origin Realm King?"

"Can Light Beast restrain Origin Realm King?"

Everyone was puzzled as they waited for the battle to begin. They wanted to know from this challenge if the Family Clan of Gods had really found the weakness of Origin Realm King or if they had other motives.

Li Xuan organized the members of the Xuanwen Club to watch the battle in front of a cube. Zhou Wen followed them to the cube. He had a nagging feeling that Origin Realm King's invisibility wasn't that perfect.

"Holy sh*t, don't tell me everyone in Luoyang is here?" Li Xuan said gloomily as he looked at the crowd.

They were still a few streets away from the cube, but they were already unable to proceed forward. They could only see human heads bobbing about. They couldn't see the cube at all.

"That's not surprising. The various Companion Beasts that appeared before, including Primordial Sword Immortal, might be very powerful, but they could at least be clearly seen. However, this Origin Realm King is completely different. You can't even see it. The unknown has a fatal attraction to human curiosity. Everyone wants to know what kind of Companion Beast Origin Realm King is," Li Weiyang said.

"At this distance, we can't see a thing. We might as well stay at home and watch from our phones." It was rare for Huang Ji to join them. He was actually very interested in the abilities of various Companion Beasts, so he participated in the Xuanwen Club's excursion.

Of course, he mainly wanted to reproduce the data and abilities of these Companion Beasts in-game.

After the ranking battles began, Huang Ji had been analyzing the abilities of the Companion Beasts. He planned on using them as prototypes to create some game bosses.

“If there’s really no other way, let’s find a quiet restaurant and watch the livestream,” Gulli suggested. He felt that watching the livestream was no different from watching from the cube’s screen.

Zhou Wen also felt that they were too far away. Even Truth Listener couldn’t reach such a distance, but they couldn’t barge through the crowd.

Li Xuan’s heart suddenly stirred as he said to the silent Gu Dian who was at the rear, “Old Gu, walk ahead of us.”

Zhou Wen and company’s eyes lit up as they knew what Li Xuan was thinking. They hurriedly made way for Gu Dian to take the lead.

“Stop squeezing! You… Ah…” A fierce-looking man felt that someone was trying to squeeze past him. He opened his mouth and wanted to curse, but just as he did so, he turned his gaze over. When he saw the person, his legs trembled in fear and he nearly fell to the ground. He hurriedly shut his mouth and retreated in fear.

He looked fierce himself, but when he saw the person squeezing through, he was so frightened that his heart pounded and cold sweat broke out on his back.

He had never seen such a ferocious person in his entire life. He was very worried that the other party would directly stab him to death. Therefore, he kept retreating, forcing out some space to make way for the person.

Gu Dian ignored him and continued walking forward.

Zhou Wen and company lined up and followed closely behind Gu Dian. For some reason, they felt the thrill of cutting through a line that spanned several streets.

The streets were extremely crowded. Everyone wanted to squeeze in, but no one was willing to give in. There were even quite a number of people who had verbal disputes.

However, Gu Dian successfully passed through the crowd. It didn’t look difficult at all.

Before long, Zhou Wen and company arrived at a suitable distance. It was equivalent to the best seats in a theater—around the sixth or seventh row. They waited for Origin Realm King to accept the challenge.

As it only had an hour to accept the challenge, and it took Zhou Wen and company quite a bit of time to rush over, there were less than ten minutes left. Yet, Origin Realm King still hadn’t accepted the challenge.

“It can’t be. Origin Realm King hasn’t accepted the challenge? Could it be that Light Beast is really its nemesis?”

“It’s really possible. Under the light, darkness has nowhere to hide. Perhaps it’s really the nemesis of invisibility?”

“No matter how great a nemesis it is, Origin Realm King is an existence that can fight Primordial Sword Immortal. It would be odd if Light Beast could have an effect on it.”

As people were arguing, they saw the name on the arena flash. Origin Realm King had accepted the challenge, but they didn’t see its figure.

Everyone knew that Origin Realm King had already appeared in the arena, but they just couldn’t see it.

Light Beast clearly knew this, so it didn’t hesitate to launch an attack. Light emitted from its body like a sun, illuminating the entire arena. This was its Wheel of Destiny’s power, Light Ray.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 702

Chapter 702: Perfect Companion Beast

“I see. This Light Beast is using attacks indiscriminately to force out Origin Realm King. No matter how invisible Origin Realm King is, it can’t really disappear. Such an attack is very likely to find its traces,” Gulli said.

Sadie nodded and said, “Light Beast is a Mythical Companion Beast of the Family Clan of Gods. Its Wheel of Destiny is called Light Ray. Although its offensive power isn’t strong, its range is very large. Furthermore, it can last for a long time. It’s suitable for restraining invisibility. From the looks of it, the Family Clan of Gods didn’t find a way to restrain Origin Realm King. They just want to use this method to figure out what kind of Companion Beast Origin Realm King is.”

Zhou Wen and company stared at the cube’s huge screen. The light illuminated the entire arena. If anything was in the arena, even if it couldn’t be seen, it would be injured by the light rays.

Even if it couldn’t be injured, it would have some reaction.

Strangely, nothing happened across the entire arena. The light rays didn’t meet any obstacles, nor did they collide with any forces. Neither did the light refract.

“That’s strange. Could it be that Origin Realm King is really an invisible and intangible spirit body?”

“Impossible. If it’s really an invisible and incorporeal spirit body, how could Origin Realm King directly attack Primordial Sword Immortal during the battle? It definitely has a form.”

“As you can see, Light Ray has already enveloped the entire arena. If it really has a body, it’s impossible for it to not react to the Light Ray.”

“Perhaps it’s some temporarily incorporeal skill. It shouldn’t last long.”

The various families were discussing how Origin Realm King had dodged Light Ray, but they couldn’t make an accurate guess.

Light Beast continued shooting out Light Ray. It could do so for several hours, so there was no need to worry about it being ambushed by Origin Realm King.

Just as everyone was discussing, they suddenly saw the nose and face of the Light Beast crater as though it had been smashed by an invisible fist.

Then, Light Beast flew out, bleeding from its seven orifices. It died immediately without even having the chance to surrender.

Instantly, everyone broke out into a cold sweat. Many people had guessed that Light Beast was no match for Origin Realm King.

However, no one expected Light Beast to lose so tragically. Not only did it fail to force out Origin Realm King, but it was even killed in one strike.

Clearly, the difference between the two was too great. Light Beast couldn’t even withstand one strike. The Family Clan of

Gods' plan had failed and they had even lost Light Beast.

"It's really too powerful. It has invincible invisibility and invincible strength. It's practically a perfect Companion Beast."

"If Origin Realm King wants to assassinate someone, I'm afraid no one in this world can escape its assassination, right? Just the thought of it is terrifying."

"What Primordial Sword Immortal? What Death of the Underworld? Compared to Origin Realm King, they are so weak."

"I wonder who was so lucky to obtain a Companion Beast like Origin Realm King."

The ordinary citizens of the Federation were discussing the topic of Origin Realm King. In the battle against Primordial Sword Immortal, people were still doubtful of Origin Realm King's strength. However, killing Light Beast in one strike had allowed Origin Realm King to truly ascend to the throne. It left a deep mark in the history of human Companion Beasts.

The various families began their intense research and analysis work. They had used all sorts of high-tech equipment to record videos, so they repeatedly studied and analyzed them.

However, no matter how they analyzed and studied it, Origin Realm King's invisibility was perfect.

Light Beast's indiscriminate Light Ray couldn't touch its body at all. It was even killed in a frontal attack. This capability was terrifying and made one feel uneasy.

Just as the man on the street said, having Origin Realm King was equivalent to having the most terrifying assassin in the world. Even the members of the six families were worried that they would be assassinated by Origin Realm King.

If Origin Realm King was from overseas, the Federation would be in even more danger.

Even if it was a Companion Beast of the Federation, it would be equally intolerable. It was like a sharp blade hanging over one's neck. It was unknown when it would land; furthermore, the person holding the blade wasn't them.

Repeated studies and analysis ensued as everyone in the world wanted to find out the weakness of Origin Realm King.

"I wonder if the power of Origin Realm King can augment its master," Feng Qiuyan said in thought.

"I don't think so. It's already invincible in this state. If it can augment its owner, wouldn't it be like a bug in games?" Li Xuan curled his lips.

"It's not impossible. Just like the Invisibility Cloak that once caused a stir, it can make people perfectly invisible. No reconnaissance method can see its existence," said Huang Ji.

Sadie seemed to know something about the Invisibility Cloak as she continued, "Although the Invisibility Cloak can result in complete invisibility that can't be detected, there's a time limit. It can only maintain an invisible and formless state for a period of time. Usually, it's just invisibility, but it can still be detected by special means. Just like the Light Ray from Light Beast just now, it can expose the Invisibility Cloak under normal conditions. If not for that, the Zhang family wouldn't have been able to successfully return the Invisibility Cloak to its Companion Egg form back then."

The few of them discussed as they walked. Zhou Wen didn’t say a word. He had a nagging feeling that something was amiss, but he couldn’t tell what was wrong.

After this battle, no Companion Beasts challenged Origin Realm King again. This was because no one wanted to risk having their Companion Beasts killed.

No Mythical Companion Beast was easy to come by. Knowing that it was suicide, no one was willing to do it.

The various factions could only keep researching and analyzing, hoping to find the weakness of Origin Realm King. However, in the blink of an eye, there were only 48 hours left. No one could figure out the weakness of Origin Realm King.

They watched the video so many times, but they couldn’t even tell where Origin Realm King was, much less figure out what it looked like and what weaknesses it had.

Now, many people believed that Origin Realm King was probably going to take first place in the ranking battle. Up to now, no Companion Beast could restrain it and there wasn’t much time left.

Zhou Wen had been studying the video the entire time as well. After repeatedly watching it, he failed to find the location of Origin Realm King.

Could it be that the Invisibility ability of Origin Realm King is really that perfect? How many modes of invisibility are there? Spirit Bodies are considered one of them. Origin Realm King is most likely a Spirit Body. However, from its attack patterns, it seems to have a corporeal body. Also, total invisibility is impossible. If it’s just total invisibility, it will definitely be detected by Light Ray. Then, there’s the

type akin to Invisibility Cloak that can temporarily turn into nothingness. From the looks of it, this possibility is the highest. Also, it could be as small as Primordial Spore, so it can't be seen. However, no matter how small it is, it should react when it's shot by the omnipresent Light Ray… Wait… That's not right… Zhou Wen seemed to think of something.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 703

Chapter 703: Zhou Wen’s Speculation

Zhou Wen carefully recalled Origin Realm King’s two battles and specially watched a few important parts of the recording. The things that he originally felt were amiss gradually became clearer.

If I view Origin Realm King as a Companion Beast similar to Primordial Spore, or something even smaller than Primordial Spore, so small that even the Holy Hell King’s eyes can’t see the sinflames on its body, wouldn’t that explain why Primordial Sword Immortal’s sword beam can’t hit it? It’s not because its speed is so fast that Primordial Sword Immortal can’t hit it, but because it’s too small. In that case, its strength definitely can’t be too strong. Therefore, although it looked like it was thrashing Primordial Sword Immortal in all sorts of ways, it was actually unable to kill Primordial Sword Immortal due to its insufficient strength.

Zhou Wen continued surmising. *The battle with Light Beast proved this point even more. Light Ray was everywhere. If Origin Realm King was really in the arena, it would probably trigger a reaction to Light Ray. Even if it can turn into nothingness, at the instant it attacked Light Beast, it should have collided with Light Ray. However, despite repeatedly watching the recordings, nothing whatsoever happened. Light Ray didn’t collide with anything from the beginning to the end. Then, there’s only one explanation. Ever since Origin Realm King entered the arena, it had already drilled into the body of Light Beast. Therefore, Light Ray couldn’t illuminate it no matter how vast the rays were. It wasn’t in the arena at all.*

Furthermore, Origin Realm King used this ability to destroy Light Beast's body or brain. Then, it used an ingenious opportunity to come out of its nostrils and strike Light Beast. It looked like it was extremely powerful and instantly killed Light Beast. In fact, it had already wreaked havoc in Light Beast's body. The Light Beast was almost dead.

Not only did it kill Light Beast, but it also made everyone believe that Origin Realm King's destructive power was extremely powerful. It concealed its greatest weakness, preventing others from easily challenging it. What a good plan. The more Zhou Wen thought about it, the more he felt that it was right. He brightened up.

Although he had guessed the various possibilities of Origin Realm King, defeating it wasn't an easy task.

Even Truth Listener's ability and the Holy Hell King's Eye couldn't discover its existence. Its body was definitely much smaller than Primordial Spore. It had probably reached the level of an atom.

Primordial Spore can parasitize large creatures, but it's not that effective against those that are smaller than it. Torch Dragon's Bright Torch Vision World should be able to kill it, but if it enters Torch Dragon's body before Torch Dragon activates Bright Torch Vision World, then Bright Torch Vision World will be useless... After some thought, Zhou Wen realized that the Origin Realm King wasn't easy to deal with.

It was very easy to fight Origin Realm King to a draw. With the strength it displayed during its battle with Primordial Sword Immortal, Zhou Wen only needed to use Tyrant Behemoth to challenge it. No matter how it attempted to drill into Tyrant Behemoth, it couldn't cause any injuries.

However, it wouldn’t be easy for Tyrant Behemoth to find and kill it.

I wonder what kind of Companion Beast Origin Realm King is. If it’s a fungal or bacterial type, perhaps I can send Tai Sui to deal with it, Zhou Wen thought to himself, but he didn’t immediately attempt it.

After all, everything was just Zhou Wen’s speculation. Tai Sui was only at the Epic stage. If his speculation was wrong, or if the Origin Realm King was just small in size and wasn’t a Companion Beast like a fungus, Tai Sui wouldn’t be able to restrain it. Wouldn’t that lead to a tragic death?

There were still more than two days left. There would definitely be Companion Beasts challenging Origin Realm King, so Zhou Wen planned on taking a wait-and-see approach before deciding if he should send Tai Sui.

Even if he were to send Tai Sui, he would have to wait until the time was almost up. Otherwise, with Tai Sui being so weak, it would be easily defeated by other Mythical Companion Beasts even after he defeated Origin Realm King.

While waiting for Origin Realm King to be challenged, Zhou Wen didn’t idle. He continued grinding in-game.

Ever since he knew that killing Guardians could advance Slaughterer, Zhou Wen had been targeting them.

Unfortunately, the one in Ant City was just too powerful. After some thought, Zhou Wen decided to target the nine black dragons in the underground sea.

I have quite a number of Mythical Companion Beasts now. I have the ferocious pair, Behemoth and Truth Listener, and

Torch Dragon's Bright Torch Vision World. Together with the Great Might Vajra Bull, Golden Overlord Sword, and Demonic Neonate, who specializes in sneaking attacks on others, I can try to see if I can deal with the nine black dragons, Zhou Wen thought to himself.

After arriving at the underground sea, Zhou Wen first summoned his Mythical Companion Beasts. Together with Demonic Neonate, the lineup was rather powerful.

Six-Winged Guardian Dragon was still the same as before. It appeared behind the blood-colored avatar in its six-winged form to prevent it from being instantly killed.

I still have to find time to draw more Substitute Talismans in the future, Zhou Wen thought.

With Zhou Wen's order, Truth Listener and Behemoth charged into the underground sea.

The Great Might Vajra Bull was actually afraid of water. It could only provide support on land and didn't enter the sea.

However, this wasn't a big deal. All he needed to do was lure the nine black dragons to a spot near the coast and let the Great Might Vajra Bull's Soul Suppression Bell work.

Before long, the nine black dragons appeared with the war wagon. After they saw Behemoth and Truth Listener, the chains on their bodies automatically released.

The nine black dragons immediately perked up as they transformed into ferocious dragons that charged at Behemoth and Truth Listener with a roar.

Zhou Wen made the two of them fly back and return to the shore. The two giant beasts stood in the shallow water,

where the seawater only reached their calves.

When the nine black dragons charged over, Zhou Wen immediately realized that something was amiss. The strength and speed of the black dragons were even stronger than Truth Listener when it had shattered an earring.

Zhou Wen originally imagined that Truth Listener and Behemoth could each fight three or four black dragons alone, but now, he realized that without using Absolute Strength and shattering the other earrings, fighting two alone was somewhat difficult.

Roar!

Behemoth roared and used Absolute Strength to suppress the nine black dragons.

The nine black dragons were beginning to be affected by the suction of Absolute Strength, but soon, they forcefully escaped its restraints.

Boom!

Behemoth, who had used Absolute Strength, threw a punch and collided with a black dragon horn.

To Zhou Wen’s surprise, Behemoth, who had Absolute Strength, was forced to take a few steps back by the collision with the black dragon. It plopped into the seawater, stirring up huge waves.

Truth Listener was in a worse state. It clashed with a black dragon and was sent flying into the sea.

Something’s amiss… How can the nine black dragons be so powerful… Zhou Wen was alarmed as he carefully looked at

the nine black dragons, but he didn’t see anything.

Zhou Wen’s heart stirred as he switched to the Holy Hell King Life Soul. With the Holy Hell’s Eyes, he was immediately alarmed. There were chains that couldn’t be seen with the naked eye connecting the nine black dragons to the war wagon.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 704

Chapter 704: Battling the Nine Dragons

The chains weren’t corporeal, but they were like soul chains. The nine black dragons were connected by them, and at the same time, the chains combined their powers.

The power unleashed by a black dragon was equivalent to the power of nine black dragons unleashing their might at the same time.

It’s no wonder Tyrant Behemoth, who has used Absolute Strength, can’t suppress the black dragon. This is fighting nine alone… Zhou Wen thought.

Tyrant Behemoth stood up again and roared as it charged at the nine black dragons.

Its strength was unparalleled, but it was still difficult to deal with them when it was actually equivalent to single-handedly fighting nine. The black dragon was a Mythical creature with immense strength, and with the nine of them combined as one, the explosive power they released suppressed Tyrant Behemoth.

Every clash of strength forced Tyrant Behemoth to retreat.

Thankfully, Tyrant Behemoth was indeed extremely powerful when using Absolute Strength. It wasn’t severely injured even under the combined forces of the nine black dragons.

Truth Listener rushed out and attacked the black dragon from another direction.

The nine black dragons' movements were not affected at all despite being connected by invisible chains. Furthermore, the powers circulated among them extremely quickly.

As one side sent Tyrant Behemoth retreating, the other side fought Truth Listener, who had gathered its strength, again. The terrifying dragon claws broke through normal speed limits and blasted Truth Listener away.

Zhou Wen had already controlled the blood-colored avatar to slash at the black dragon. The Great Might Vajra Bull also released the Soul Suppression Bell at the same time. When the bell rang, the invisible chain trembled. The Soul Suppression Bell didn't work, nor did it make the black dragons faint.

Truth Listener looked like it was about to go berserk and shatter another earring. Zhou Wen hurriedly summoned it and Behemoth back before turning around to escape to the Bat Cave.

Demonic Neonate hadn't attacked all this time, so it looked like she hadn't found a chance.

The nine black dragons didn't dare come ashore. They roared in the water, causing huge waves to surge into the sky. The commotion was extremely terrifying.

The nine black dragons are so terrifying. I wonder how powerful the Guardian in the war wagon is? I'm afraid it's another Buddha Annihilation... Zhou Wen looked at the nine black dragons that surged with ferocious flames as he secretly calculated his chances of killing the Guardian in the war wagon.

I finally understand why the Lost Immortal Sutra can imitate so many Essence Energy Arts and obtain many benefits so

easily. Even with such an abnormal ability, killing a Guardian is still as difficult as ascending to the heavens. Zhou Wen had already realized that the Lost Immortal Sutra was indeed an unparalleled Essence Energy Art.

Ignoring the question of whether the Lost Immortal Sutra could advance to the Mythical stage, just killing the Guardian to advance to the Life Soul realm was probably unprecedented.

Unless I think of a way to sever the connection between the nine black dragons, preventing them from gathering the power of nine dragons to attack together, killing them is just a pipe dream. Zhou Wen began to miss the six-winged seraphim.

Among the Guardians that Zhou Wen had seen, he was the easiest to kill.

Unable to kill the nine black dragons, Zhou Wen had no choice but to vent his frustration on the other dimensional creatures. He killed all the rare dimensional creatures in the dungeons and also killed some Musical Note Sprites.

Now, Zhou Wen's Musical Note Sprites numbered nearly ten thousand. Under the control of the Golden Harp, they could be of some use. However, they were still a distance away from the million-strong army that Zhou Wen had expected.

I heard that there's an Undead Scourge in the West District which sent millions of Undead rampaging across the land. In the future, I'll control the million-strong Musical Note Army and create a Musical Scourge. It will be much cooler than the Undead Scourge. At the very least, they look better than them, Zhou Wen thought.

Despite leaving a wake of destruction, his luck today seemed to be especially bad. He didn’t have any rare Companion Beasts drop.

It was time for Medusa to respawn. Zhou Wen planned on farming Medusa once. When he arrived at the Curse Demon Palace, he suddenly thought of something.

Every time he came to the Curse Demon Palace, the beautiful girl would become the demoness, Medusa. Therefore, Zhou Wen killed Medusa in her demoness form every time.

What will happen if I kill the beautiful girl before she becomes Medusa? Zhou Wen couldn’t hold back his emotions when he had this thought.

How can I kill her before she transforms? Zhou Wen didn’t open the door to Medusa’s palace.

In the past, Zhou Wen had attacked her when she was a beautiful girl, but once he attacked her, she would immediately become Medusa. Killing her before she became Medusa was clearly not an easy task.

In terms of speed, my Transcendent Flying Immortal is fast enough, but I can’t kill the beautiful girl before she becomes Medusa. In that case, I can only rely on her. Zhou Wen’s heart stirred as he looked at Demonic Neonate, who was standing there with a cold expression like a doll.

As long as Zhou Wen didn’t take the initiative to attack, the beautiful girl wouldn’t become Medusa even if he entered the palace.

After Zhou Wen finished his plans, he carried Demonic Neonate into the palace. Indeed, he saw Medusa sitting

there quietly. The current Medusa was still a beautiful and pure girl. Just one look at her made him pity her.

If it wasn’t in-game but in the real world, Zhou Wen really couldn’t bear to attack her.

However, this was the game world. No matter how beautiful she was, she was still an NPC. He didn’t have any qualms.

Zhou Wen walked towards the beautiful girl step by step without gathering any Essence Energy or using his Companion Beasts.

However, Demonic Neonate was slumped on his back. Her black eyes were secretly looking at the beautiful Medusa.

When he arrived in front of the beautiful girl, Zhou Wen didn’t continue walking forward. If he continued walking forward, even if Zhou Wen didn’t attack her, the beautiful girl would become Medusa.

At that moment, Demonic Neonate, who was on Zhou Wen’s back, suddenly moved. A black-purple sword beam drilled out from beneath the blood-colored avatar’s crotch.

Without giving the beautiful girl a chance to react, the demonic sword had already stabbed her in the chest, causing her blood to splatter everywhere. Demonic aura invaded her body, causing her to fall to the ground.

It’s done! Zhou Wen was delighted as he looked at the beautiful girl’s corpse, only to see it disintegrating and disappearing.

Ding!

Soon, something dropped.

Zhou Wen took a closer look and was immediately overjoyed. The thing the beautiful girl dropped was a Companion Egg that was crystalline like a sapphire.

A Companion Beast dropped! Zhou Wen found it unbelievable. It hadn’t been a day or two since he started farming Medusa. Dimensional crystals had dropped, but there had never been a Companion Egg drop.

Could it be that only Medusa in her beautiful form can drop a Companion Egg? Zhou Wen guessed as he picked it up.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 705

Chapter 705: Medusa Companion Beast

Medusa: Mythical

Life Providence: Tragic Beauty

Life Soul: Eyes of Enticement

Wheel of Destiny: Demon God Transformation

Strength: 41

Speed: 41

Constitution: 41

Essence Energy: 41

Talent Skill: None

Companion Form: None

Zhou Wen was immediately alarmed when he saw Medusa's stats. The weakest Mythical that Zhou Wen had seen was Primordial Spore.

However, Primordial Spore still had the Eternal Immortality Life Providence that made it invincible. It also had a parasitic skill that was very useful.

Medusa was ridiculously weak in contrast. She didn't have any skills. Her Life Providence was Tragic Beauty—a negative

skill that actually reduced her stats.

The only useful ones were probably the Eyes of Enticement and the Demon God Transformation.

The Eyes of Enticement were very similar to the Eyes of Petrification. They could petrify people, but the limitations of the Eyes of Enticement were much greater than the Eyes of Petrification.

The Demon God Transformation was even more ridiculous. It was actually a single-time use Wheel of Destiny. The annotation was very clear. Once used, it would forever transform into a Demon God, making it impossible for her to be restored to her human body.

From the looks of it, after using the Demon God Transformation, Medusa should become a snake-haired demoness. Although becoming a snake-haired demoness will definitely be much stronger than she is now, she's just too ugly in that form. She still looks good now… However, good looks can't be eaten or used to block bullets. What's the point?

Although he had such thoughts, Zhou Wen still couldn't bring himself to do it when he thought about how such a beautiful Medusa would become an ugly snake-haired demoness.

Forget it. I'll keep her for now. Who knows what special effects she might have? Zhou Wen planned on farming Medusa tomorrow to see if Medusa in her girl form would continue dropping Companion Eggs.

If a Companion Egg dropped, he would try to see what would happen after the Demon God Transformation.

…

Before Medusa respawned again, a Companion Beast challenged Origin Realm King on the rankings. This time, it was none other than Death of the Underworld.

Li Xuan invited Zhou Wen to watch the duel at the cube. When they arrived, the Origin Realm King still hadn’t accepted the challenge.

“Old Zhou, who do you think will win this battle?” Li Xuan asked.

“It’s hard to tell,” Zhou Wen said with a shake of his head.

The battle between Origin Realm King and Death of the Underworld was worth watching. Zhou Wen couldn’t predict the final outcome.

Death of the Underworld had a Spirit Body, rendering physical damage virtually ineffective. It was useless even if Origin Realm King entered its body.

However, it was also unknown if Death of the Underworld’s attacks were effective against Origin Realm King. Therefore, Zhou Wen was very curious about the outcome of the battle.

Soon, only ten minutes were left for the countdown. Just like the last time, the name on the ranking flashed at the end. Origin Realm King had accepted the challenge.

Everyone, including Zhou Wen, widened their eyes. They wanted to know how Death of the Underworld would deal with Origin Realm King. With the experience gleaned from Light Beast’s lesson, Death of the Underworld would definitely do something. It might even use its Wheel of Destiny to transport the Origin Realm King into the

Underworld for the final battle, just like with Primordial Sword Immortal.

However, to everyone’s surprise, after Origin Realm King accepted the challenge, Death of the Underworld did nothing but float in the air.

“What’s going on? Why isn’t Death of the Underworld moving? Does he want to be passive and end up getting beaten?”

“Shouldn’t he strike first to force out the invisible Origin Realm King?”

“What is he trying to do?”

People discussed as they guessed what Death of the Underworld was planning.

Zhou Wen’s heart skipped a beat when he saw the motionless Death of the Underworld. It was as though it had fallen asleep while floating there. It was not good.

That’s bad. Someone has guessed that Origin Realm King is a microscopic Companion Beast just like me. They know that its strength is insufficient to kill a top Mythical Companion Beast, so they want to use the characteristics of Origin Realm King to stall for time. They want to wait until the countdown ends before defeating Origin Realm King… Zhou Wen already understood Death of the Underworld’s strategy.

In fact, Zhou Wen had thought of a similar method. For example, if Tyrant Behemoth challenged Origin Realm King, Origin Realm King wouldn’t be able to kill Tyrant Behemoth, so he could continue delaying until the time was up.

However, as Tyrant Behemoth might not be able to kill Origin Realm King, Zhou Wen gave up on this plan. Now that Death of the Underworld had used this plan, it meant that its master was confident that he could defeat Origin Realm King at the final moment.

Zhou Wen originally imagined that Origin Realm King would definitely take this opportunity to kill Death of the Underworld. However, to his surprise, Origin Realm King didn’t take any action.

Zhou Wen thought for a moment and immediately understood that Origin Realm King’s master was indeed smart.

It was the best choice for him not to let Origin Realm King move.

If Origin Realm King was really as Zhou Wen and company had guessed—a microscopic Companion Beast that wasn’t very strong—then if it were to attack now, not only would it fail to kill Death of the Underworld, but it would also expose its true strength, allowing the master of Death of the Underworld to understand its weakness.

However, Origin Realm King remained motionless, giving Death of the Underworld immense pressure.

If it didn’t move, Death of the Underworld’s master wouldn’t be able to confirm if his judgment was correct. This would raise doubts.

Could it be that Origin Realm King also wants to stall for time? Could it be that it’s different from my conclusion? Could it be confident that it can defeat Death of the Underworld at the end of the countdown?

All sorts of guesses appeared in people’s minds. It was originally Death of the Underworld who was stalling for time, but it devolved into both sides stalling for time. No one could be sure whether Origin Realm King had the ability to defeat Death of the Underworld.

If this continued, there would be no time or chance in the event Death of the Underworld was defeated.

If Death of the Underworld were to attack now, the previous plan would fail. It would also expose Death of the Underworld’s strength. It was equivalent to shooting oneself in the foot.

Although the two Companion Beasts in the arena didn’t move, the battle had already begun. Such a battle was no longer limited to the confines of the arena. Instead, the owners of the two Companion Beasts were having a psychological game.

Ordinary people couldn’t figure out the mystery behind it. After waiting all day, people who were originally looking forward to a huge battle ended up surprised to watch a battle in which one of the Companion Beasts couldn’t be seen while the other Companion Beast remained motionless. It left them depressed.

“What the hell? Wasn’t this supposed to be a challenge? Why aren’t they fighting?”

“Hurry up and fight. Let us see which is the best—Origin Realm King or Death of the Underworld.”

“Can’t you tell? Death of the Underworld doesn’t even dare to move. It must be afraid of Origin Realm King. When Origin Realm King makes a move, Death of the Underworld will die like Light Beast.”

“Bullsh*t. It’s obvious that Origin Realm King is afraid of Death of the Underworld. Don’t you see that it doesn’t dare to attack? Death of the Underworld is almost falling asleep waiting for it to attack.”

The arena remained still. The fans of the two Companion Beasts and the streamers who supported them were the first to engage in a war of words.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 706

Chapter 706: Quick Battle

The silent battle continued, greatly displeasing many onlookers.

By standing there for a few hours without moving, how was this a duel? It was a punishment.

Questions that this was a rigged match began to spread. Some people were already suspecting that Origin Realm King and Death of the Underworld came from the same faction. They were stalling for time to directly obtain first place.

In fact, even many of the six families had such doubts.

Zhou Wen also felt that something was amiss. Although Death of the Underworld might not be from the same faction as Origin Realm King, if they were to continue wasting time like this, either one of them would definitely end up coming first.

All the factions that still had hope for coming in first were paying attention to the battle situation. At the same time, they were secretly gathering information.

Although they didn’t know who Origin Realm King belonged to, Death of the Underworld was undoubtedly from the Family Clan of Gods. Therefore, all sorts of probing and pressure targeted towards the Family Clan of Gods continued.

“Old Boll, if you can’t beat it, hurry up and admit defeat. Don’t end up letting that Origin Realm King reap all the benefits later,” Rhaego Cape said with a smile while on a video call with the Family Clan of Gods.

Boll said indifferently, “There’s no need for you to worry.”

Rhaego continued, “Old Boll, if you have a hundred percent chance of defeating Origin Realm King, it doesn’t matter if you wait until the end. But if you don’t have a hundred percent chance, why don’t you leave a chance?”

Boll naturally understood what Rhaego was getting at. He was also very conflicted.

He had originally planned on dragging it out to the end before letting Death of the Underworld defeat Origin Realm King. Just as Zhou Wen had guessed, he believed that Origin Realm King was a microscopic Companion Beast.

As long as Death of the Underworld opened the path to the Underworld and pulled the microscopic Companion Beast in, it would no longer be able to hide. When that happened, killing it wouldn’t be difficult.

But now, Origin Realm King was also stalling for time. This worried Boll a little.

Many people already knew about the abilities of Death of the Underworld. The owner of Origin Realm King definitely knew some, but he still chose to remain still. This made Boll suspect that the Origin Realm King might have the ability to defeat Death of the Underworld, but it could also be a psychological battle.

After hanging up the call, Boll was thinking about what to do next. However, Feia said, “Father, if we don’t have full

confidence in winning, why don’t we do as Rhaego said and leave a way out? We can still grasp the opportunity in our hands.”

“Tell me about it,” Boll said to Feia.

Feia said, “Since we can’t be sure if Death of the Underworld can defeat Origin Realm King, why don’t we complete the battle before the final time limit? It’s naturally best if we can win. If we can’t, we’ll find a chance to forfeit. When the time comes, our Companion Beasts has the initiative to pose the challenge. It’s equivalent to having another chance.”

“I’m just afraid that this opportunity will be snatched away by others,” Boll muttered.

“There can only be one challenger. It depends on who poses the challenge first. We are the ones deciding when Death of the Underworld admits defeat, so we can also apply for the challenge at the same time. How can others be faster than us?” said Feia.

“That’s right. Then let’s do it this way. Prepare your Companion Beast. If Death of the Underworld fails, you will be the one to complete the final battle,” said Boll after some thought.

As there was no battle in the arena, many spectators lost their patience after waiting for several hours. Many people chose to return to work or to do other things. They planned on watching the results nearer to the end of the countdown.

Zhou Wen watched as time ticked by. Neither side had any intention of taking action. It was apparent that both sides wanted to drag it out until the countdown ended. They knew that there was no hope of vying for first place.

However, Zhou Wen still held onto a sliver of hope as he rushed to the town in Funiu Mountain. He wanted to wait there for the countdown to end. If there was a chance, he could try again.

In fact, there were many people with the same thoughts as Zhou Wen. Many people from large families were standing guard in front of the cube. Once the battle ended or one side gave up, they would immediately initiate a challenge. Regardless of whether they could win, it was better to try than have no chance at all.

Time slowly passed. When there were only two hours left before the countdown, more and more people returned to the cube. Most of them returned just to see the results.

However, Death of the Underworld and Origin Realm King remained still. One couldn’t be seen, while the other was motionless.

An hour and a half… an hour and fifteen minutes… an hour and ten minutes…

Suddenly, Death of the Underworld, who had been silent all this while, finally moved. Its cloak spread out, and the strange Underworld domain was about to devour the entire arena.

This was identical to when it fought Primordial Sword Immortal. However, Origin Realm King wasn’t Primordial Sword Immortal. If it were to be trapped, there would be a question if it could storm its way out.

Everyone’s spirits were lifted. Death of the Underworld’s sudden attack meant that the two Companion Beasts weren’t from the same faction. They still needed to determine a victor.

Although there was less than an hour and ten minutes left, having some time left meant that there was a chance.

The only thing they were afraid of was that there was too little time left. If one side lost and there was less than an hour left, then even if they chose to challenge the victor, the other side would still have an hour to prepare for battle. Before the challenge was accepted, the countdown would be over.

Please decide the victor before the hour mark! Many people were praying.

However, no one expected the outcome to be far faster than they had imagined.

At the instant Death of the Underworld activated its Underworld domain, a strange scene suddenly happened.

Inside the Death of the Underworld's grayish smoke-like spirit body, a flower suddenly grew out of its head. The flower was beautiful like snow, and there was lightning circulating over it. It was like an electric flower.

The flower rapidly grew. In an instant, the flower bud bloomed. As the flower bloomed, Death of the Underworld's Spirit Body seemed to be pulled by some force as it rapidly flowed into the flower, as though it had been devoured by the flower.

Before the Underworld domain could fully activate, half of Death of the Underworld's body had been sucked into the flower.

Not good! Boll was shocked. He quickly wanted to give up and admit defeat, but it was too late.

The remaining half of Death of the Underworld’s body was completely absorbed by the flower in the blink of an eye. As for the flower, it bloomed and shimmered with a strange electric light. Then, it quickly withered and vanished as though nothing had happened.

Everyone was stunned. No one dared to believe that the nearly invincible Death of the Underworld had died just like that. Old Boll’s face was ashen, and even Feia, who was about to issue the challenge, was stunned.

It was just too shocking that Death of the Underworld was instantly killed. It made him hesitate, afraid that his Companion Beast would suffer the same outcome if he entered.

It wasn’t just Feia. Everyone who was prepared to issue the challenge hesitated. Death of the Underworld’s death shocked them greatly.

Origin Realm King… is too powerful… The spectators also had such thoughts.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 707

Chapter 707: The Dust Settles

Just as everyone was in a daze, a Companion Beast almost immediately issued a challenge. The cube's screen lit up again as a name and a Companion Beast appeared on the screen.

"Tai Sui…" Everyone was slightly taken aback when they saw the Companion Beast and name.

The people from the East District knew what Tai Sui was, but the people from the other districts weren't aware. However, when they saw a white and tender ball appear on-screen, it didn't look like a particularly powerful Companion Beast.

"No way? Is that thing a slime? Can such a Companion Beast challenge an invincible Companion Beast like Origin Realm King?" someone from the West District commented.

"Is that a legendary blob monster?" The people from the North District were puzzled.

"How can such a Companion Beast challenge Origin Realm King? Isn't that guaranteeing Origin Realm King's first place? Don't tell me they are in cahoots?" Many people guessed.

Although the people of the East District knew about Tai Sui, they didn't know much about its abilities. They only knew that Tai Sui brought bad luck. As the saying went, "Messing with Tai Sui incurs disaster." It was a very popular saying in the East District.

Even if it could bring bad luck, it was impossible for it to defeat a powerful existence like Origin Realm King with bad luck in a duel, right? That was a terrifying existence that could kill Death of the Underworld!

However, Zhou Wen didn’t think so. Origin Realm King killed Death of the Underworld, Zhou Wen didn’t dare release Tai Sui to challenge him.

However, after seeing how the Origin Realm King killed Death of the Underworld, Zhou Wen was finally certain that Tai Sui would be able to restrain it. In essence, Origin Realm King was still a type of microorganism, not some special physical entity.

As for Tai Sui, it was extremely effective against all kinds of microbes. It could devour the Mythical Primordial Spore back at the Mortal stage. What’s more, it was now at the Epic stage. It had a high chance of defeating Origin Realm King.

Time ticked by. Origin Realm King hadn’t accepted the challenge. In the blink of an eye, less than an hour was left.

“What? Origin Realm King is just stalling for time. It looks like there’s zero suspense left. First place will undoubtedly go to Origin Realm King.”

“Origin Realm King is really too powerful. An existence like Death of the Underworld was actually killed by it. It didn’t even have the chance to forfeit. Did you see what happened? What’s up with that flower? The moment it appeared, it sucked in Death of the Underworld. I wonder what kind of ability it is.”

“I should have known. Even Primordial Sword Immortal isn’t a match for Origin Realm King, much less Death of the Underworld.”

Almost everyone believed that there was no longer any suspense in this battle. Without a doubt, Original Realm King was first, and the remaining time would be wasted.

After Tai Sui was defeated, there wouldn’t be enough time left to challenge it. Even if one had a Companion Beast that could fight Origin Realm King, they wouldn’t be given the chance.

However, some people didn’t think so. Leng Zongzheng had seen Zhou Wen’s Tai Sui before and knew that Tai Sui was very effective against microorganisms. Furthermore, he had clearly determined that Origin Realm King was a microorganism.

“From the looks of it, he got lucky. Your family’s Zhou Wen sure is lucky,” Leng Zongzheng said to An Tianzuo as he watched the livestream.

An Tianzuo replied expressionlessly, “Humans can’t just rely on luck. If we only rely on luck, we will suffer a huge loss sooner or later.”

Leng Zongzheng said with a smile, “Actually, luck is similar to money. Money isn’t omnipotent, but it’s impossible without money.”

…

There was less than half an hour left. Origin Realm King still hadn’t accepted the challenge. Everyone believed that Origin Realm King would accept the challenge at the last moment. Then, with less than ten minutes left before the countdown ended, its first place would then be secured.

Origin Realm King still didn’t accept the challenge in the final moments. Despite having less than ten seconds on the

clock, it still didn’t make a move. It made people feel that something was amiss.

“What’s going on? Why hasn’t it accepted the challenge?”

“There’s no need to keep our hearts racing, right? Does it want to accept the challenge at the last second?”

“Could it be afraid of Tai Sui?”

“What a joke. How is that possible? That’s Origin Realm King!”

“Seven… Six… Five… Four…”

Everyone counted silently with the countdown in their hearts, but even at the last second, Origin Ream King didn’t accept the challenge.

Upon seeing the first ranked Origin Realm King’s name being squeezed out and replaced by Tai Sui’s name, the entire Federation and those overseas were in an uproar.

“Origin Realm King doesn’t dare accept the challenge? Is Tai Sui that strong?”

“Tai Sui… What kind of Companion Beast is this?”

“I knew that Tai Sui was extraordinary, but I didn’t say anything.”

“Facing Primordial Sword Immortal and Death of the Underworld, Origin Realm King can definitely suppress them, but it didn’t dare accept Tai Sui’s challenge. It doesn’t even have the courage to fight. That Tai Sui is too terrifying. I really want to know what kind of abilities it has!”

“What bullsh*t is this Tai Sui? I think it’s all a scam. They’re in cahoots.”

“I don’t think so. Origin Realm King was already first. If they are in cahoots, there’d be no need to admit defeat and let Tai Sui take first place.”

As everyone was discussing, they saw another Companion Beast issue a challenge. However, Tai Sui ignored it. It didn’t accept the challenge even when the 72-hour countdown on the cube ended.

The scene on the cube turned into a ranking. Tai Sui was first, and the defeated Origin Realm King was second. Third was Primordial Sword Immortal, and fourth was Zhou Wen’s Tyrant Behemoth.

This continued until the hundredth spot. The names of the Companion Beasts emitted a resplendent glow. It made the entire world know that they were the strongest hundred Companion Beasts among humans.

However, most people did not realize that Tai Sui, who was ranked first, had yet to advance to the Mythical stage.

“Mommy, Tai Sui is so cute. I want a Tai Sui doll. Can our family’s factory produce one?” A little boy hugging a Tyrant Behemoth doll looked at his mother with anticipation.

“This…” His mother was somewhat hesitant. Although Tai Sui looked adorable, it seemed a little ominous.

“Mommy, our Tyrant Behemoth doll has been very popular. I believe Tai Sui will also sell very well. Pretty please?” The boy pulled his mother’s hand and wheedled.

“Alright… Let’s give it a try…” His mother stroked the boy’s head dotingly.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 708

Chapter 708: Reward

The hundred names on the cube lit up. Zhou Wen suddenly felt a huge amount of energy appear out of nowhere in the bodies of his three Companion Beasts on the rankings—Tai Sui, Tyrant Behemoth, and Six-Winged Guardian Dragon.

The least energy appeared in Six-Winged Guardian Dragon's body. It didn't result in much of a change. The energy in Tyrant Behemoth's body was extremely huge, causing Tyrant Behemoth's body to constantly stir.

The most powerful energy was inside Tai Sui's body. The immense power turned Tai Sui into an egg and it began to evolve.

So there are benefits for all the Companion Beasts on the rankings. They can obtain a strange energy. However, the higher the ranking, the stronger the energy obtained. As Zhou Wen thought about it, he looked at Six-Winged Guardian Dragon's situation.

As it had obtained very little energy, it had completely absorbed it.

Zhou Wen took out his phone and checked Six-Winged Guardian Dragon's stats. To his surprise, Six-Winged Guardian Dragon's Strength stat had reached 81 points.

After being strengthened by the cube the last time, all of Six-Winged Guardian Dragon's stats had reached 80 points,

but that was all. They were still within the limits of Mythical creatures.

This time, the energy obtained by Six-Winged Guardian Dragon allowed its Strength to break through to 81 points. Although it was only one point, it was very significant. This was because only a top Mythical creature had stats with 81 points.

As Six-Winged Guardian Dragon had never accepted challenges, its ranking kept dropping when it was challenged by other Companion Beasts. It had ended up in the seventies. For such a ranking to increase its stat by one point was amazing enough.

Zhou Wen couldn’t wait to see Tyrant Behemoth. He wanted to know what kind of strengthening it had obtained. It was ranked fourth, so the energy it obtained would be immense. It was incomparable to the energy that Six-Winged Guardian Dragon had received.

When Zhou Wen looked at Behemoth, he realized that the power in its body was constantly erupting. Its stats hadn’t changed for the time being.

After more than an hour, the energy in Behemoth gradually stopped erupting. Zhou Wen hurriedly looked at its stats.

Behemoth’s stats were top-notch to begin with. Now, it remained unchanged at 81 points.

Zhou Wen carefully looked at Tyrant Behemoth’s Life Providence, Life Soul, and Wheel of Destiny. There were no changes either. When Zhou Wen saw Behemoth’s talent skills, he was immediately overjoyed.

Originally, Tyrant only had one talent skill—Mountain Consuming. But now, Tyrant Behemoth had an additional skill. The skill's name was "Rampage."

After reading the introduction of the Rampage skill, Zhou Wen was even more excited. This skill could enhance its Speed and Strength for a short period of time. It was very useful for Tyrant Behemoth, allowing its strength to improve further.

If I had known that there would be so many benefits, I would have gotten all my Companion Beasts to get a ranking. Even if I can't obtain any talent skills, it's good to increase their stats.

Of course, Zhou Wen was only musing. It wasn't worth it to expose his Companion Beast's abilities to exchange for stats.

The skills obtained by Tyrant Behemoth were just icing on the cake. It didn't have an absolute effect on Tyrant Behemoth's strength. The one with the greatest influence was Tai Sui who was evolving.

The immense energy allowed Tai Sui to directly evolve. By the time it completed its evolution, it would be at the Mythical stage.

In addition, Tai Sui had obtained first place. He likely had a chance of plucking the divine fruit, but Zhou Wen didn't discover the passageway that led to the divine tree.

Just as he was feeling suspicious, he saw a pillar of light rise from the center of the cube, leading straight into the void.

Zhou Wen was hesitating about walking towards the pillar of light when he suddenly realized that a figure was slowly

descending from it. It was none other than the Mythical Wang Mingyuan.

Wang Mingyuan slowly landed on the cube and said to Zhou Wen, “I never expected the Companion Beast that obtained first place to be yours, Little Wen.”

Zhou Wen looked at Wang Mingyuan and was momentarily at a loss for words.

Wang Mingyuan was his teacher and had treated him pretty well. In this aspect, Zhou Wen should respect him.

However, at the same time, Wang Mingyuan had caused great harm to the Federation. From this angle, Wang Mingyuan was already an enemy of humanity. Zhou Wen was a part of humanity, so he should treat Wang Mingyuan as an enemy.

Therefore, Zhou Wen’s emotions were extremely complicated. He looked at Wang Mingyuan and opened his mouth before calling out, “Teacher.”

Wang Mingyuan could tell that Zhou Wen was struggling internally, but he thought nothing of it. He smiled slightly and said, “I’m already very gratified that you can call me teacher again. Come, pluck the reward you deserve.”

With that said, Wang Mingyuan walked up the pillar of light. At the end of the pillar of light, a phenomenon of a divine garden appeared. The divine tree also appeared.

Zhou Wen followed behind Wang Mingyuan and walked into the pillar of light. Immediately, he felt a gentle force envelop his body as he slowly rose up and headed for the divine garden at the end of the pillar.

Soon, Zhou Wen followed Wang Mingyuan into the garden and immediately smelled a fruity fragrance.

The air in the divine garden was clean and pure. Even with the Holy Hell King’s eyes, he couldn’t sense any impurities. There was no dust or bacteria. It was like the legendary Paradise.

Here, even if one wanted to get sick, it was probably very difficult. There was no way to get infected.

“Do you know the name of this tree?” Wang Mingyuan walked to the divine tree and stared at it with a complicated expression.

“Is its name important?” Zhou Wen asked.

“To ordinary people, its name isn’t important, but to me, its name is very important,” Wang Mingyuan said.

“What’s its name?” Zhou Wen asked curiously.

“Its name is Samsara,” Wang Mingyuan said slowly.

Samsara? Zhou Wen looked at the Samsara Tree with mixed feelings as he thought to himself, *If there’s really samsara in this world, will Teacher make the same choice in this life if he were to live again?*

“Little Wen, go pluck that divine fruit. This is the only ripened divine fruit in the past year. It can allow any Companion Beast to advance to the Mythical stage. Even if it’s just a Mortal Companion Beast, as long as it consumes the divine fruit, it can still advance to the Mythical stage,” Wang Mingyuan said.

Although he had guessed it, Zhou Wen still asked, “What if a human eats it?”

“I don’t think you will like that outcome.” Wang Mingyuan smiled and continued, “Of course, you can also give it a try. There are some things that you have to experience before you know whether they’re good for you. There’s not much time left. Quickly pluck the divine fruit and don’t let it fall to the ground. Otherwise, it will be useless.”

Zhou Wen walked to the Samsara Tree and reached out to grab the ripened fruit. With a gentle tug, he plucked off the fruit.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 709 - Dimensional Axis

Chapter 709: Dimensional Axis

The fruit that emitted a divine glow felt similar to a peach when held in his hand.

“Teacher, have you realized your dream?” Zhou Wen put away the fruit and asked Wang Mingyuan.

“If it’s so easy to realize it, it wouldn’t be called a dream.” Wang Mingyuan pondered for a moment and pointed into the distance. “Look over there.”

Zhou Wen looked in the direction Wang Mingyuan had pointed and saw a huge building in the void. It was extremely strange, like a pillar that emitted a divine glow. It was unimaginably huge.

“What’s that?” Zhou Wen asked.

“The Dimensional Axis. Its existence connects Earth to dimensional zones,” Wang Mingyuan said.

Zhou Wen’s eyes lit up. “If we can sever the connection to the Dimensional Axis, will we be able to stop the invasion of dimensional creatures?”

“In theory, it’s indeed feasible. However, there’s more than one Dimensional Axis. It connects different dimensional spaces. Every Dimensional Axis is the core of a dimensional space. Almost all the most terrifying dimensional creatures will gather here, making it very difficult to reach it. Besides,

a Dimensional Axis can connect to dimensional zones. It’s not that easy to destroy it,” Wang Mingyuan said.

“Teacher, you have already thought of a solution, right?” Zhou Wen asked.

“I’ve indeed thought of a way to sever the Dimensional Axis, but I don’t plan on severing it,” Wang Mingyuan said.

“Why?” Zhou Wen was stunned.

“I thought of a solution, but it takes too long to implement it. I’m afraid Earth would already be occupied by dimensional creatures before I can ever sever a Dimensional Axis. Therefore, I don’t plan on severing it,” Wang Mingyuan said as he narrowed his eyes at the Dimensional Axis.

“Why?” Zhou Wen asked in puzzlement.

No matter how difficult it was, there was still a chance as long as it was done. As for Wang Mingyuan, didn’t he enter the dimensional zone to stop the dimensional invasion? Why was he giving up now?

“In ancient times, floods were a perennial threat. Humans wanted to control floods. In the beginning, they tried building tall levees to block the flood. Do you know the outcome?” Wang Mingyuan asked.

Zhou Wen had heard of this myth before. The people who tried to stop the floods naturally failed. The higher the levee was, the stronger the flood. Once it breached the levee, it would cause a destructive force that was ten times or a hundred times greater.

Zhou Wen’s eyes lit up as he looked at Wang Mingyuan and said, “Teacher, do you mean to think of a way to guide

dimensional creatures to other dimensional zones instead of rushing to Earth?”

Wang Mingyuan looked at the Dimensional Axis calmly and said indifferently, “No, what I mean is that I want to control the flood. I want the flood to obey my orders. They will go wherever I tell them to go. They will do whatever I tell them to do. I will dominate everything.”

“Dominate the dimensional zones”? Zhou Wen’s heart stirred. If it was really as Wang Mingyuan had said, he would one day be able to ascend to the top of the myriad races and become an existence that controlled the dimensional zones. How delightful would that be?

However, this path was just too difficult. Even with Wang Mingyuan’s shocking talent, it was difficult for him to reach that stage.

“Little Wen.” Wang Mingyuan’s gaze landed on Zhou Wen’s face as he said with a strange tone, “Don’t take my path. There’s only death at the end of this path.”

Zhou Wen was alarmed as he hurriedly asked, “Is there a problem with Spirit Casting?”

He was somewhat worried. With Zhong Ziya’s personality, there was a high chance that he would take this path. If there was really a problem with the Spirit Casting Art, Zhong Ziya would be in danger.

“There’s no problem with Spirit Casting, but this path isn’t for humans.” Wang Mingyuan sighed and waved his hand. A force swept towards Zhou Wen as he said, “Don’t come again next time. You shouldn’t be in a place like this.”

Zhou Wen was about to say something when his body was sent into the void by an invisible force. The light in front of him changed and by the time his body returned to normal, he had already fallen onto the town’s cube.

He stood up and looked up into the sky, but the pillar of light was gone. He found it indescribable.

Wang Mingyuan’s last sentence had hinted at something. If he wasn’t Wang Mingyuan’s student, he might not have plucked the divine fruit so easily.

Unfortunately, Zhou Wen still didn’t know what the person who obtained the divine fruit in his place would do or what they needed to do.

…

After Zhou Wen left, Wang Mingyuan sat on the tree’s root and closed his eyes as though he was deep in thought.

In the void above the pure land, lightning and thunder suddenly flared. It was as though the end of the world had arrived. A terrifying divine voice sounded from the void.

“Wang Mingyuan, you actually dared to violate the agreement. You should know the consequences.”

Wang Mingyuan’s eyes remained closed as he said indifferently, “Since I’ve done it, I’ll naturally bear all the consequences.”

“Very good. Then prepare to suffer divine punishment.” A terrifying lightning bolt descended along with the divine voice.

Bolts of lightning descended from the void and stabbed into Wang Mingyuan’s body like sharp swords. Thrust after thrust, they filled his entire body with lightning.

However, Wang Mingyuan sat there without any change in expression. It was as though the lightning bolts that stabbed into his body didn’t exist at all. However, blood-red spots appeared on his white clothes like blooming peach blossoms.

“The divine punishment will continue until the next divine fruit ripens. I hope you will still be alive when that happens.” The voice in the void faded and the lightning in the sky vanished.

The paradise returned to its original silence. Only the lightning on Wang Mingyuan’s body sparked like countless lightning needles as they trembled.

…

Zhou Wen returned to school and took out the divine fruit, but he was somewhat hesitant.

There was only one divine fruit, and its use was to raise a Companion Beast to the Mythical stage. He naturally didn’t need to consider the Companion Beasts that had already advanced to the Mythical stage.

Among the Companion Beasts that had yet to advance to the Mythical stage, Demonic Neonate had the greatest potential.

However, Demonic Neonate had the ability to evolve. It was only a matter of time before she advanced to the Mythical stage. And the greatest use of the divine fruit was to allow any Companion Egg to advance to the Mythical stage.

From this point of view, it was best to choose a low-level Companion Beast with immense potential to advance to the Mythical stage.

Zhou Wen really had a few Companion Beasts with such potential. For example, Doctor Darkness, Golden Harp, Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General, and so on. All of them had immense potential.

Of course, Zhou Wen wouldn’t dare raise the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General again. He eliminated it.

Zhou Wen’s idea was to choose between Doctor Darkness and Golden Harp. However, this was also risky. This was because he didn’t know if the Wheel of Destiny they condensed after advancing to the Mythical stage would be of any use. If it condensed a useless Wheel of Destiny, he might as well directly advance Demonic Neonate to the Mythical stage. Her being at the Mythical stage was definitely going to be extraordinary, allowing her to immediately possess powerful combat strength.

Zhou Wen was somewhat hesitant as he was momentarily at a loss.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 710 - Darkness Right Hand

Chapter 710: Darkness Right Hand

Explosive Fiend Man hasn't advanced to the Epic stage yet. He would be a pretty good choice for advancing to the Mythical stage. However, Explosive Fiend Man has the ability to evolve. He still has a chance of advancing to the Mythical stage in the future... After some thought, Zhou Wen summoned Doctor Darkness.

Doctor Darkness's abilities were rather outstanding. Furthermore, with his Fight Poison With Poison ability, he could resolve many problems that ordinary powers couldn't resolve. More importantly, Doctor Darkness's companion form was a soul. It could directly raise Zhou Wen's strength. This was very useful to him.

If Doctor Darkness could advance to the Mythical stage, he would probably be more helpful.

Without any hesitation, he handed the divine fruit to Doctor Darkness.

Doctor Darkness took the divine fruit and his eyes flashed with excitement as he swallowed it.

His body immediately emitted a divine glow. The glow grew stronger and stronger before finally turning Doctor Darkness into an egg.

Unlike the evolution of typical Companion Beasts in which ordinary Companion Beasts took a long time to evolve, Doctor Darkness immediately completed the evolution after

transforming into an egg and hatching. In a moment, he completed the evolution from the Epic stage to the Mythical stage.

The Doctor Darkness in front of him didn’t seem much different from before. He was still as dark and terrifying, like a puppet without a shred of humanity.

Zhou Wen hurriedly took out his phone and read the information regarding Doctor Darkness post-evolution.

Doctor Darkness: Mythical

Life Providence: Golden Left Hand

Life Soul: Dr. Soul

Wheel of Destiny: Darkness Right Hand

Strength: 79

Speed: 81

Constitution: 67

Essence Energy: 81

Talent Skill: Scalpel, Fight Poison With Poison, Light of Penetration

Companion Form: Soul

Indeed, Doctor Darkness had advanced to the Mythical stage. His skills, Life Providence, and Life Soul hadn’t changed. His stats had increased to the Mythical stage, albeit a little extreme.

Typically, a Mythical Companion Beast’s limit was 80 points. Doctor Darkness’s Speed and Essence Energy had broken through the limit to 81 points.

However, his Strength and Constitution hadn’t even reached 80. It was very strange.

The Wheel of Destiny’s name was Darkness Right Hand. It seemed to match his Life Providence, Golden Left Hand, but the ability was unknown.

Darkness Right Hand: A place where even divine light can’t reach. That is the forbidden zone of the Gods.

From the introduction, it didn’t seem to have anything to do with his right hand.

Zhou Wen entered the game and planned on testing the power of Darkness Right Hand.

He brought Doctor Darkness to the Zhuolu battlefield and encountered a Chi. Zhou Wen immediately ordered Doctor Darkness, “Use Darkness Right Hand.”

Doctor Darkness stood there and watched as the Chi ran over. He slowly raised his right hand.

Doctor Darkness had the Golden Left Hand Life Providence. Be it his Strength or Speed, his left hand was much stronger than his right hand.

When Zhou Wen got Doctor Darkness to attach himself to him as a soul, he could clearly sense that the Strength and Speed of his left hand had been enhanced.

During that period of time, Zhou Wen had deliberately practiced striking with his left hand because it was much

faster than striking with his right hand.

All along, Doctor Darkness's right hand had been weaker, but when Doctor Darkness raised his right hand, it seemed to have the power of a devil burning over it like black flames.

The Chi had already rushed in front of Doctor Darkness, but Doctor Darkness remained motionless. Only when the Chi was about to collide with him did Doctor Darkness slightly tilt his body and dodge the Chi's charge, allowing it to brush past him.

Zhou Wen kept staring at Doctor Darkness's hand, but he didn't see any movement from it. When he saw Doctor Darkness brush past the Chi, he was puzzled as to why he hadn't attacked.

However, when Doctor Darkness turned around, Zhou Wen's pupils constricted upon seeing his right hand.

In Doctor Darkness's right hand was a bloody heart that was still beating.

The Chi ran a few steps before letting out a tragic cry. It suddenly fell to the ground and convulsed. Soon, it died.

Zhou Wen looked at the Chi's corpse and didn't see any injuries. He had no idea how Doctor Darkness had plucked its heart out.

Even I couldn't see how Doctor Darkness did it. Furthermore, its strength is too strange. It can actually pluck out a heart without dealing any injuries... No... I have to watch it again... Zhou Wen continued proceeding forward with Doctor Darkness.

Before long, he encountered a Wangliang.

This time, Zhou Wen didn’t only maximize the Truth Listener earring’s abilities, but he also switched to the Holy Hell King Life Soul, raising his senses to their limits.

Zhou Wen got Doctor Darkness to rush over and quickly he brushed past the Wangliang.

At that instant, Zhou Wen felt his devil-like right hand move.

As it was too fast, Zhou Wen only felt it move a little. He didn’t see it clearly.

However, Zhou Wen was certain that the right hand had definitely moved. This was because there was something white on the right hand. It was like a pig’s brain, and the blood vessels on it were still squirming.

How terrifying! Zhou Wen was pleasantly surprised.

The power of Darkness Right Hand could actually remove organs in an invisible manner. It was so fast that even Zhou Wen couldn’t see it clearly. Such an ability made his scalp tingle.

In the future, if Zhou Wen didn’t like anyone, he could get Doctor Darkness to pluck at their waist. If anyone pissed him off, he could pluck out their hearts, livers, and brains. It would scare him to death.

However, Zhou Wen wasn’t sure if Darkness Right Hand’s ability was merely fast or if it had any special effects.

The Chi and Wangliang weren’t injured; yet, their heart and brain had been removed. Perhaps Doctor Darkness’s Darkness Right Hand wasn’t as simple as being fast.

Zhou Wen wanted to experiment further, so he went to the Metalwork Temple to find a Runic Heavy-Armored Warrior with extremely powerful defense. The outcome was the same. After Doctor Darkness used Darkness Right Hand, he easily plucked out the heart. The Runic Heavy Armor was useless. Even the runic patterns on it didn't light up.

Amazing. The Darkness Right Hand actually has the ability to penetrate through space. It can ignore defense and directly pluck out organs... Zhou Wen was even more excited.

With Doctor Darkness's ability, Zhou Wen could ignore dimensional creatures with powerful defense.

More importantly, Doctor Darkness's companion form was a soul. He could attach himself to Zhou Wen and allow him to use his abilities. In other words, Zhou Wen could also use Darkness Right Hand. This was equivalent to strengthening Zhou Wen's strength and abilities.

Zhou Wen still wanted to give it another try, but he was depressed. He couldn't use Darkness Right Hand again. After some research, he learned that Darkness Right Hand could only be used three times in twenty-four hours.

Three times is enough. I'll pluck the kidney before plucking the heart. If that still doesn't work, I'll pluck the brain. I don't believe anyone can survive, Zhou Wen thought.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 711 - Snatching Blood, Condensing Soul

Chapter 711: Snatching Blood, Condensing Soul

Translator: CKtalon

He attempted to get Doctor Darkness to attach himself to the blood-colored avatar as a soul. Zhou Wen immediately felt his physical attributes increase, especially his left hand. After advancing to the Mythical stage, the Golden Left Hand Life Providence augmented Zhou Wen's left hand even more.

After using all of Doctor Darkness's skills, he realized that the effects of his skills had increased significantly. Fight Poison With Poison's poison became even more potent. A single milliliter of poison could instantly kill an Epic creature, even when it was a venomous creature like the Chi.

The destructive power of Scalpel became stronger and it was sharper.

The enhancement of the Eyes of Penetration was the greatest. The ability to see through things had been enhanced. It wasn't as troublesome as before; yet, the effects had increased significantly. It was very easy to see through every minute detail inside a creature's body.

As long as Zhou Wen used the Eyes of Penetration, he could see the creatures' meridians and blood vessels clearly. However, he could only see through lifeforms; his ability to see through objects like metal was very poor.

All that's left is to experiment with Darkness Right Hand. If everything goes well, I might be able to enter Ant City and

obtain the blood of that Guardian. Zhou Wen was somewhat excited.

Since Darkness Right Hand could dig out hearts across space, it might be able to dig out a Guardian's heart. When that happened, it wouldn't just be a drop of blood.

After waiting for twenty-four hours, it was finally time for Darkness Right Hand to be used again. Zhou Wen got Doctor Darkness to possess the blood-colored avatar and he carefully studied the abilities of Darkness Right Hand.

After Zhou Wen experienced it personally, he concluded that Darkness Right Hand was indeed extremely powerful. It augmented his right hand's speed greatly. At the same time, this augmentation wasn't on speed alone, it also had the ability to pass through matter.

From his tests, there was nothing that could block or prevent Darkness Right Hand from entering.

The ability of Darkness Right Hand didn't only remove organs. As long as it was a region the right hand could enter, it could pluck anything.

However, Darkness Right Hand also had a flaw. Just like the Poison Dragon Palm, it required the palm to touch the opponent's body to be of use. This skill couldn't be used as a long-range attack.

I thought I could pluck hearts from afar using my right hand to reach into the Guardian's body. I wonder if I can do it with the speed of Darkness Right Hand? Zhou Wen wasn't confident.

Although Darkness Right Hand was very fast, the Guardian of Ant City was also extremely fast.

Even if there’s no way to pluck the Guardian’s heart, the ability of Darkness Right Hand is very useful. If a dimensional creature like Primordial Spore invades the body and can’t be resolved with Fight Poison With Poison, I can rely on Darkness Right Hand to extract it from the body. Also, this ability is undoubtedly a divine skill for doctors. Surgery can be performed without cutting up bodies. Unfortunately, I’m not a doctor.

Zhou Wen gave his last usage of Darkness Right Hand to Medusa.

After Medusa respawned, Zhou Wen entered Medusa’s palace. This time, he didn’t get Demonic Neonate to help. With the speed of Darkness Right Hand, he managed to pluck out her heart before Medusa’s Demon God Transformation.

Unfortunately, Medusa didn’t drop a Companion Egg this time. All she dropped was a Speed Crystal.

With my hand’s speed, I might really have a chance of obtaining the blood of a Guardian. I don’t need a heart. Just a drop of blood will be enough. Zhou Wen felt hope again.

After waiting for another twenty-four hours so that Darkness Right Hand could be used again, Zhou Wen entered Ant City and arrived at the familiar ant nest.

With the Golden Flying Ant easily killed, Zhou Wen arrived in front of the Guardian cocoon. However, this time, he had no intention of cracking open the cocoon. Instead, he got Doctor Darkness to possess him and directly used the Eyes of Penetration.

With his penetrative vision, Zhou Wen immediately saw the situation inside the cocoon.

The Guardian was curled up in the cocoon. Her body was already rather mature, and the thin wings on her back had completely taken form. Her body emitted a strange glow.

The Guardian sensed that she was being looked at and moved.

Zhou Wen didn’t dare hesitate as he used Darkness Right Hand. His right hand seemed to be enveloped by a devilish power as it instantly vanished.

Zhou Wen felt that everything in front of his right hand seemed to turn to water. His right hand easily passed through the cocoon and reached for the Guardian’s heart.

Darkness Right Hand was just too fast, but the Guardian opened her eyes first and grabbed at it.

However, the Guardian missed as Darkness Right Hand passed through her palm.

Changing his plans, Zhou Wen didn’t aim for her heart. He directly took a drop of blood from her palm and quickly retracted.

Without any hesitation, Zhou Wen retracted his Darkness Right Hand and switched to Lost Country. He teleported to distance himself before rushing out of Ant City at full speed.

Boom!

Just as Zhou Wen rushed out of Ant City, the underground space in Ant City exploded, instantly turning into ruins.

Not daring to turn his head, he controlled the blood-colored avatar to run as he circulated the First Order of Chaos, the drop of blood in hand. He hoped to see if he could absorb it.

The drop of blood was immediately absorbed when the First Order of Chaos circulated. As the First Order of Chaos circulated, it gradually underwent a strange change.

Can I finally condense a Life Soul? In that case, I might be able to rehatch the Invisibility Cloak's Companion Egg. After Zhou Wen absorbed the blood, he switched instance dungeons to prevent the Guardian from chasing after him.

The First Order of Chaos constantly circulated. With the drop of Guardian's blood as its foundation, it fused with Zhou Wen's essence, vitality, and spirit, nurturing a strange power.

Zhou Wen originally imagined that the First Order of Chaos would be similar to the Life Soul condensed by the Dao Sutra. After all, both of them used the blood of the same Guardian. Furthermore, the type of Essence Energy Art was very similar.

However, when the First Order of Chaos truly condensed a Life Soul, Zhou Wen realized that his guess wasn't accurate. Although the two shared similarities, they were two different Essence Energy Arts after all.

Boom!

Zhou Wen's essence, vitality, and spirit, as well as Essence Energy fused together. Like a terrifying explosion, it made Zhou Wen's body and mind tremble.

In the next second, Zhou Wen realized that the blood-colored avatar's body had turned into an egg.

No, it wasn't that the blood-colored avatar had turned into an egg, but that a barrier that resembled an eggshell had formed around it.

An eggshell? What Life Soul is this? Zhou Wen felt odd as he looked at the information on his phone. He saw the words “Chaos Egg” written in his Life Soul column.

It’s really an egg! Zhou Wen was somewhat curious. He didn’t know what special effects the Chaos Egg Life Soul would have.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 712 - Incubating the Invisibility Cloak

Chapter 712: Incubating the Invisibility Cloak

Zhou Wen summoned the Chaos Egg in reality, and an eggshell immediately enveloped his body, making him appear as a newborn baby constrained within.

Inside the Chaos Egg, there was a mysterious force flowing. It was like water, but it wasn't corporeal.

Zhou Wen couldn't move, nor did he know what use this eggshell had.

Under such circumstances, Zhou Wen couldn't even move, much less fight. Such a Life Soul was probably useless in battle.

I'll ignore it for now. I'll try hatching the Invisibility Cloak. Zhou Wen took out the Invisibility Cloak's Companion Egg and attempted to hatch it.

In the chaos egg, Zhou Wen's Essence Energy stirred, and the Invisibility Cloak Companion Egg reacted. What was even more magical was that the strange power in the Chaos Egg also flowed into the Invisibility Cloak egg.

The life force in the Invisibility Cloak Companion Egg increased in intensity. Before long, the Companion Egg transformed into a stream of light that entered Zhou Wen's body.

It's done! Zhou Wen was overjoyed. After waiting for so long, he had finally hatched the Invisibility Cloak. It would be much easier for him to go anywhere in the future.

With the Invisibility Cloak, he could freely enter the dimensional zones controlled by the various families. He had long wanted to visit a few dimensional zones, but because they were controlled by the six families, he had no chance of entering them.

Zhou Wen already knew the Invisibility Cloak's stats which remained unchanged. He summoned it and put it on. A magical scene happened as Zhou Wen's body vanished into thin air. It was true invisibility.

Zhou Wen experimented and realized that the Invisibility Cloak's ability only made him visually invisible. To truly be invisible, he needed to activate the Wheel of Destiny.

Once the Wheel of Destiny was activated, Invisibility Cloak lived up to its name and reached an intangible state. No one could discover Zhou Wen's presence.

However, the Wheel of Destiny had a time limit. He could only be truly invisible for three minutes.

Three minutes is about enough. With Doctor Darkness's Darkness Right Hand, it won't be difficult to assassinate someone. Zhou Wen's heart suddenly stirred.

In the past, he couldn't kill the nine black dragons because they could combine their powers. Now, with the power of the Invisibility Cloak and Darkness Right Hand, he could completely conceal himself and aim to kill three black dragons first. He could mostly rely on the strength of Tyrant Behemoth, Truth Listener, and the other Companion Beasts to deal with the remaining six black dragons.

With this in mind, Zhou Wen couldn't wait to give it a try. Unfortunately, he had just used Darkness Right Hand once,

so he only had two chances to use it. He had to wait for some time before the cooldown ended

“Young Master Wen, something happened to Deputy Governor Qin. Can you come over?” An Sheng spoke over the phone in a heavy tone.

“What’s wrong with Deputy Governor Qin? Is there anything I can help you with?” Zhou Wen had a rather good impression of Qin Wufu, so he hurriedly asked.

An Sheng said, “Deputy Governor Qin returned to Chess Mountain to preside over it the past few days. He happened to encounter a break-out creature that rushed out of Chess Mountain and engaged in an intense battle. Deputy Governor Qin was heavily injured. We have done everything we can but to no avail. We hope to use your strength to save Deputy Governor Qin.”

“I don’t know any medicine. I used the power of a Companion Beast back when I treated the parasitic spores,” Zhou Wen said.

“We want to borrow your Companion Beast’s strength. That’s our only hope. I’ll pick you up now. We’ll talk on the way.” As An Sheng spoke, he had already arrived outside the school.

Zhou Wen left school and got into An Sheng’s car. As An Sheng drove, he told Zhou Wen the general situation.

In fact, many experts in the Sunset Army had already made a diagnosis of Qin Wufu’s injuries and found the reason for his serious injuries, but no one could save him.

A strange dimensional creature had drilled into Qin Wufu’s brain. It was like a tumor that extended out blood vessels that intertwined with Qin Wufu’s brain matter.

Unless Qin Wufu’s brain was sliced open, it was impossible to extract the dimensional creature from his brain.

However, the brain was fragile. The dimensional creature had already penetrated deep into it and was entrenched in his brain. Even Chancellor Leng was unable to get it out without damaging Qin Wufu’s brain.

Many experts and specialists in the Sunset Army had thought of many solutions, but none of them would be effective.

However, if they ignored the dimensional creature, it would continue invading Qin Wufu’s brain. It was very likely that it would completely control Qin Wufu’s brain and turn him into a puppet.

An Sheng’s idea was to let Zhou Wen take a look and see if he could use the method of treating the parasitic spores to inject poison into the dimensional creature, causing it to die automatically.

“The poison itself might affect Deputy Governor Qin’s brain. Furthermore, I wonder how poison resistant the dimensional creature is. There’s no way to accurately apply the dosage with the poison. If too much poison is used, it will damage the brain. If too little is used, the dimensional creature’s final struggle might destroy the entire brain…” Zhou Wen pondered.

An Sheng nodded and said, “Actually, the experts have already analyzed this plan of treatment. Just as you said, it’s very dangerous, but at this stage, we can only give it a try. We can’t just watch idly as Deputy Governor Qin gets destroyed, right?”

“Let’s take a look at the situation first. There might be a way.” Zhou Wen surmised that Darkness Right Hand might be useful, but it was situation-dependent.

“Alright, let’s head over now.” An Sheng drove all the way to the military hospital.

Zhou Wen saw Qin Wufu, who was already unconscious, on the bed. He was connected to all sorts of instruments, and some strange Companion Beasts were by his side.

A Companion Beast that resembled a jellyfish wrapped around his head. Its tentacles connected to his brain, but it was unknown what use it had.

Beside the bed were a few doctors and nurses. Many officers were in the room next door, looking at Qin Wufu through the glass window. An Tianzuo was among them, and his expression looked terrible.

“Overseer, Young Master Wen is here.” An Sheng led Zhou Wen into the room.

Zhou Wen and An Tianzuo subconsciously glanced at each other before they involuntarily looked away.

An Tianzuo looked at An Sheng and was about to say something when the room was pushed open again. An officer walked over with an elder.

“Overseer, Mr. Dugu is here,” the officer reported.

“Mr. Dugu, please take a look at Deputy Governor Qin’s injuries,” An Tianzuo said to the elder.

The elder didn’t refuse. He looked at all the diagnostic information and some x-ray photos before saying, “It’s not

impossible to eliminate the dimensional creatures in Deputy Governor Qin’s brain, but…”

“What conditions do you have?” An Tianzuo asked.

“Since Overseer is so straightforward, I won’t beat around the bush. I can revive Deputy Governor Qin given ten tonnes of refined Essence Gold,” the elder said confidently.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 713 - Extracting An Object From the Brain

Chapter 713: Extracting An Object From the Brain

The expressions of the officers changed. The An family might not even produce ten tonnes of refined Essence Gold in three years.

An Sheng said, “Mr. Dugu, can you reduce it a little? Or can we use money and dimensional crystals to make up for the rest? As you know, the production of refined Essence Gold is very low. It’s really difficult for us to hand over ten tonnes of refined Essence Gold.”

The elder said with a smile, “Adjutant An, there’s no need to act poor in front of an old man like me. Who doesn’t know that the An family’s Essence Gold mine is the richest mine in the Federation? Ten tonnes of refined Essence Gold might be a huge sum to others, but it shouldn’t be much to the An family, right? I can guarantee that Deputy Governor Qin will enjoy a full recovery. You can rest assured about this. The Dugu family is an expert in this aspect. There’s no one else in the entire Federation who can guarantee you that.”

“Mr. Dugu…” An Sheng was about to say something when he was interrupted by the elder.

“Ten tonnes of refined Essence Gold, not one bit less. Why don’t you discuss it again? However, you have to be quick. If that dimensional creature injures the brain, even my Dugu family will be helpless,” the elder said.

Everyone knew that the Dugu family was trying to take advantage of the situation, but there was nothing they could do.

No one in Luoyang could treat Qin Wufu's injuries. If they wanted Qin Wufu to live, this was probably the only way.

An Tianzuo's eyes were resolute. Just as he was about to say something, An Sheng spoke first. "Overseer, let Young Master Wen take a look at Governor Qin's injuries before making a decision."

An Tianzuo fell silent as the elder beside him smiled confidently. "It's fine. You can get anyone to come and take a look. I don't dare say anything else, but in the field of microscopic Companion Beasts, no one will dare claim first if our Dugu family claims second. This dimensional creature that invaded his brain can only be eliminated by our Dugu family."

"Young Master Wen." An Sheng looked at Zhou Wen.

Zhou Wen nodded and said, "I need to observe Governor Qin's situation up close."

An Sheng hurriedly led Zhou Wen to the ward. On the way to the ward, An Sheng whispered to Zhou Wen, "Young Master Wen, using ten tonnes of refined Essence Gold to save Governor Qin's life is nothing. As long as we can save him, Overseer will be willing to pay anything. However, the research on the new Essence Gold weapons in the military factory is at a critical juncture. A large amount of refined Essence Gold is needed for experiments. Without this batch of Essence Gold, the research progress will be delayed for a year or more. This will deal a severe blow to Luoyang and the An family…"

“I’ll try my best,” Zhou Wen said.

After reading the information, he had a general idea of what to do. However, the images taken by the instruments weren’t very clear. He still needed to use his Eyes of Penetration to take a clear look himself to ensure that nothing went wrong.

Standing beside Qin Wufu’s bed, Zhou Wen used his Eyes of Penetration to look at his brain.

A strange dimensional creature that looked like a blood vessel had invaded Qin Wufu’s brain. The blood vessels extended out like a fishing net that wrapped around a portion of his brain. Furthermore, it was still spreading.

Many blood vessels seemed to be part of the brain. It was difficult not to hurt the fragile brain if one wanted to remove it.

After watching for a while, Zhou Wen deactivated his Eyes of Penetration.

“Young Master Wen, what do you think?” An Sheng hurriedly asked.

“I can do it.” Zhou Wen nodded.

An Sheng was immediately overjoyed. He hurriedly turned and said to An Tianzuo, who was on the other side of the glass window, “Overseer, Young Master Wen said that he can be saved. Governor Qin, shall we get Young Master Wen to immediately rescue him?”

At this moment, the elder beside him said, “Overseer, you have to think carefully. That dimensional creature has already merged with Governor Qin’s brain. To eliminate it

requires an extremely meticulous job. It also requires the cooperation of special microscopic Companion Beasts. Are you sure you want such a young man to do it? Ignoring the fact that he can't eliminate it, even if he can, Governor Qin might end up a cripple if his brain is injured."

An Tianzuo didn't say a word after hearing the elder's words. He walked to the glass window and stared at Zhou Wen. "Zhou Wen, can you ensure Governor Qin's recovery?"

"I can only guarantee that I can eliminate the dimensional creature without harming Deputy Governor Qin's brain. I can't guarantee anything else," Zhou Wen answered.

"Young man, don't be too blindly confident. Do you know what that dimensional creature is called? Do you know what kind of ability it has?" the elder said with a smile.

"I don't know, nor do I need to know. I just need to know that I can eliminate it," Zhou Wen said.

"Overseer, did you hear that? What kind of statement is that? Do you really want to use such a person?" The elder laughed.

But soon, the elder's smile froze. An Tianzuo directly said to Zhou Wen, "Immediately treat Deputy Governor Qin."

"Overseer, isn't your decision a little too rash? Or do you think Deputy Governor Qin's life is more important than ten tonnes of refined Essence Gold? Wouldn't this demoralize your subordinates?" the elder said with a smile. His words were clearly provoking the other officers.

He wanted to use the officers' emotions to pressure An Tianzuo. Ten tonnes of refined Essence Gold were very important resources for the Dugu family.

The elder wasn’t afraid that Zhou Wen could treat Qin Wufu because he didn’t believe that Zhou Wen had the ability to do so. He was afraid that he would have no hope of obtaining the batch of refined Essence Gold if Zhou Wen killed Qin Wufu.

An Tianzuo didn’t answer the elder. He looked at an officer beside him and asked, “If you were Governor Qin, who would you choose to treat you?”

“Young Master Wen,” the officer answered without hesitation.

The elder’s expression changed slightly. Things seemed to be different from what he had imagined.

“What about you?” An Tianzuo asked another officer.

“Young Master Wen,” the officer immediately answered.

An Tianzuo asked one by one, and all the officers chose Zhou Wen without any hesitation. There was no exception. From their expressions, it seemed like a forgone conclusion.

“Overseer, your methods of subordination are truly brilliant.” The elder held back the surprise in his heart. He had imagined that An Tianzuo had given strict orders, making them be willing to risk their lives without any complaints.

Although he said that, he couldn’t help but look at Zhou Wen in the ward. He thought to himself, *Does he really have that ability?*

However, when his gaze landed on Zhou Wen, his pupils constricted. He saw a strange dimensional creature formed from red threads in Zhou Wen’s hand. It was the dimensional creature in Qin Wufu’s head. Zhou Wen had already taken

out the dimensional creature at some point in time, and it was alive.

“That’s impossible!” The elder wore a look of disbelief as he pressed his hands against the glass window. His eyes yearned to reach out to Zhou Wen, hoping to see if the dimensional creature in his hand was fake.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 714 - Worm Dugu

Chapter 714: Worm Dugu

Translator: CKtalon

The dimensional creature contorted as it attempted to burrow into Zhou Wen’s hand, but it was blocked by a force that prevented it.

The doctor brought over a specially tempered piece of glassware that he had prepared and Zhou Wen placed the dimensional creature inside.

It constantly twisted and slammed into the glass container, hoping to rush out. Unfortunately, it was too weak and couldn’t break through the tempered glass. Furthermore, there was an instrument made of Essence Gold above the glass container. It had a weakening effect on dimensional creatures.

The elder didn’t believe that Zhou Wen had really taken out the dimensional creature. He ran into the ward and wanted to examine Qin Wufu to confirm if the dimensional creature in his brain had really been taken out.

However, there was no need for a checkup. The elder knew that Zhou Wen wasn’t faking it. When he entered the ward, he saw that Qin Wufu had already woken up.

“Sorry for making everyone worry.” Although Qin Wufu was still weak, his brain seemed to be functioning normally. He could already speak.

“You are Young Master Wen, right? Can you tell me how you did it?” the elder asked Zhou Wen.

“No,” Zhou Wen answered bluntly.

The elder was slightly taken aback as he carefully sized up Zhou Wen before continuing, “With Young Master Wen’s abilities, it would be a pity if he doesn’t join my Dugu family. Our Dugu family needs talented people. Young Master Wen, why don’t you consider it?”

“Mr. Dugu, isn’t it inappropriate for you to poach one of ours in front of our Overseer?” An Sheng said.

“The Federation is a family. Young Master Wen, you really should consider our Dugu family. Otherwise, your ability will be wasted.” As the elder spoke, he cupped his hands at An Tianzuo and said, “I’ve broadened myself today. Thank you for the Overseer’s invitation. However, with Young Master Wen around, I’m afraid we won’t have many opportunities to cooperate in the future.”

“Mr. Dugu, you’re being too polite. There are still many opportunities for cooperation in the future,” said An Tianzuo.

Before the elder left, he gave Zhou Wen an additional glance.

Qin Wufu chatted with Zhou Wen for a while until the doctor told him to rest. Only then did Zhou Wen leave.

When Zhou Wen arrived at the entrance, he saw An Sheng waiting for him in the car, but he didn’t see An Tianzuo.

“Overseer has something to attend to. He told me to take you back,” An Sheng said with a smile.

“It’s not far. I can go back myself,” Zhou Wen said as he got into the car.

“It’s mainly because there’s something I need to tell you. The person you saw just now is called Worm Dugu. He’s a member of the Dugu family. In terms of seniority, Dugu Ge has to call him second uncle. The Dugu family is adept at microscopic Companion Beasts, and this person is an expert in Gu-type Companion Beasts.” An Sheng explained the origins of Worm Dugu in detail.

“Why are you telling me this so solemnly? Could it be that there’s something wrong with this Worm Dugu?” Zhou Wen asked.

“Young Master Wen, you are getting sharper. Although Governor Qin was injured because of the break-out creature at Chess Mountain, we still have our suspicions. Firstly, we haven’t seen such a dimensional creature in Chess Mountain before. Secondly, the Dugu family lives far away in the South District. It’s a coincidence that Worm Dugu happened to be in Luoyang. Although it might be a coincidence, it’s best to be careful,” An Sheng explained.

Zhou Wen understood what An Sheng meant. If the thing in Qin Wufu’s head was really put there by Worm Dugu, then with Zhou Wen ruining the plans, Worm Dugu probably wouldn’t give up easily.

“Young Master Wen, that white ball-like Companion Beast of yours is quite fun. Why don’t you let it out for some fresh air? Perhaps there will be an unexpected gain,” An Sheng said casually.

“I will.” Zhou Wen knew that An Sheng wanted him to use Tai Sui to prevent the invasion of Gu-type Companion Beasts.

Unfortunately, Tai Sui was still evolving. It was probably useless for the time being.

After returning to school, Zhou Wen summoned Primordial Spore and made it stand guard. Tai Sui was still evolving, so it was the only weapon that could deal with microscopic Companion Beasts.

...

Under the surveillance of An Sheng's men, Worm Dugu checked into a hotel. After dinner, he returned to his room to rest. He didn't do anything strange.

Through the surveillance cameras, one could even see that Worm Dugu was sleeping in bed.

However, in a place they couldn't see, a mosquito secretly flew out of the room, passing through the streets and heading for Sunset College at an unbelievable speed.

As Worm Dugu flew, he thought to himself, *How can those fools from the An family defend against me? I want to see how capable Zhou Wen is to be able to extract the Blood Thread Brain-Eating Gu that was connected to his brain. Even if I were to take action, it would be impossible for me to pull it out as cleanly as him. With his ability, he's practically a genius at raising Gu worms.*

The mosquito-shaped Worm Dugu quickly arrived at Sunset College. After getting his bearings, he headed for Four Seasons Garden.

Others might not be able to find Zhou Wen's location, but Worm Dugu had a smell-seeking Companion Beast. It could find Zhou Wen by searching for his remnant smells.

Soon, the mosquito-shaped Worm Dugu arrived outside Zhou Wen's building. He sniffed and confirmed that this was Zhou Wen's residence.

Worm Dugu landed in the grass on the yard and thought to himself, *Let's get my baby to test his strength first.*

With a thought, he summoned a Companion Beast that looked like a spider. The spider was only the size of a fingernail and it was gray. One wouldn't be able to see it if one didn't pay attention.

The spider accepted the order from Worm Dugu and crawled towards Zhou Wen's building. It crawled in through the crack in the door in a seemingly easy manner.

Just as Worm Dugu wanted to use the perspective of his spider Companion Beast to take a look at the situation inside the building so that he could pick up a strand of hair or a skin flake to proceed with the next step of the plan, the spider suddenly lost contact with him. Worm Dugu Worm didn't even see a thing.

He's indeed prepared. However, if he thinks that he can defend against me just because of some preparations, he is severely underestimating my Dugu family. Worm Dugu didn't seem surprised. With a thought, he summoned some Companion Beasts.

This time, it wasn't a spider, but an even smaller insect. It was like a black sesame seed, so small that it was almost indiscernible. There were many of them.

Under the control of Worm Dugu, the black sesame-like flying insects flew into the dormitory through the cracks in the door, windows, and so on.

Although my hundred or so Black Blood Gu are only at the Legendary stage, they can enter the bloodstream the moment they see it. As long as one is bitten by it, they will quickly reproduce in the blood. They can only be cured by

me. I want to see if you have the ability to get these Black Blood Gu out as well, thought Dugu Gu.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 715 - Magical Hair Gu

Chapter 715: Magical Hair Gu

Translator: CKtalon

However, very quickly, Worm Dugu's expression turned ugly. After the tiny Black Blood Gu entered the dorm, he lost contact with them one after another.

Originally, Worm Dugu believed that even if a portion of the more than a hundred Black Blood Gu was discovered, there would definitely be quite a number of them which successfully infiltrated. One was enough as long as it succeeded.

However, by the time Worm Dugu realized that something was amiss, more than a hundred Black Blood Gu was almost wiped out. He didn't even know who killed the Black Blood Gu.

In the dorm, a golden chick flew around. As long as a Gu worm crawled in, it would eat them. No worm could come in alive.

Worm Dugu refused to believe it as he released his Companion Beasts one after another, trying his best to infiltrate Zhou Wen's dorm.

However, no matter what kind of Companion Beast he released, he immediately lost contact with them the moment they entered Zhou Wen's building. It was like a rock sinking into the sea.

I don't believe that you can even kill my Magical Hair Gu. Worm Dugu had sacrificed many Companion Beasts, but

he refused to have his beliefs shaken. He just wanted to win once in his competition with Zhou Wen.

He did not realize that Zhou Wen had no idea what was happening in his dorm. He was lying in his bedroom on the second floor, grinding instance dungeons.

The moment Worm Dugu's Companion Beasts entered the building, they entered the chick's stomach without alarming Zhou Wen.

Worm Dugu's Magical Hair Gu was extraordinary. It was a Mythical dimensional creature.

That's right. It was a dimensional creature, not a Companion Beast.

The truly powerful thing about the Dugu family was that they could tame dimensional creatures. Companion Beasts were secondary.

Magical Hair Gu was a dimensional creature that Worm Dugu had tamed himself. He had spent a lot of effort and nearly lost his life to subdue and tame it.

This Magical Hair Gu was a Mythical dimensional creature. Its abilities were very special. As long as it came into contact with the enemy's body, it could parasitize their hair and use the power of their hair.

It could control the growth of hair in reverse, causing the hair to grow inside the brain and body, taking root in the brain and flesh. It was terrifying.

The hair absorbed the nutrients of the body, and in the end, all the flesh and blood in the body would be sucked dry. The interior would be filled with hair, leaving only a layer of

human skin on the outside. This way of dying was extremely painful.

When Worm Dugu caught the Magical Hair Gu, he had almost died. It was only by chance that he had managed to subdue it.

A black thread thinner than a strand of hair appeared in front of Worm Dugu. As though it was a strand of hair that was blown by the wind, it swept into the building through the crack in the door.

Punk, when you know how powerful my Magical Hair Gu is, won't you end up following me back to the South District and be my disciple? Dugu Gu felt that he could definitely deal with Zhou Wen by releasing such a powerful weapon.

He didn't really want to do anything to Zhou Wen. All he wanted was to take him in as a disciple of the Dugu family and raise worms with him.

The main reason was that Zhou Wen's method of extracting the Blood Thread Brain-Eating Gu was so shocking. Worm Dugu felt that such talent made him gifted at rearing Gu worms. It would be a pity if he didn't do so.

The Dugu family was a true presence in the South District. However, the Dugu family didn't just rear worms. In fact, they raised too many things.

As the drop rate of Companion Beasts was too low, especially Mythical Companion Eggs which were also difficult to find, the Dugu family did the opposite.

Killing a Mythical creature only gave one a certain chance of obtaining a Companion Egg. But, the chances weren't high.

However, if they could tame a Mythical creature, it was equivalent to having a 100% chance of obtaining a pet.

Coupled with the research of ancient spells and generations of people, the Dugu family was unmatched in the Federation when it came to rearing strange dimensional creatures.

However, taming dimensional creatures was very dangerous. Furthermore, the dimensional creatures that the Dugu family domesticated were strange, making them even more dangerous. Many members of the Dugu family were killed by the dimensional creatures they domesticated.

In the eyes of Worm Dugu, Zhou Wen was born to nurture Gu worms. Therefore, he wanted to recruit him into the Dugu family.

Of course, if he was recruited into the Dugu family to learn the art of taming dimensional creatures, he had to first implant a Gu in Zhou Wen to prevent him from learning the Dugu family's abilities only to end up dealing with the Dugu family.

However, Worm Dugu never expected that all the Companion Beasts he had sent in would die for no apparent reason. This was why he released his most precious Magical Hair Gu.

When it comes to worms, I, Worm Dugu, am an expert. Worm Dugu was thinking about what he would do when Zhou Wen came crying to him with black hair overgrowing everywhere.

The moment the Magical Hair Gu entered the building, it was discovered by the chick. However, this time, it didn't immediately fly over. It stood on the table and watched as

the Magical Hair Gu rolled towards the stairs on the second floor. It seemed to be hesitating.

Just as the Magical Hair Gu was about to roll to the side of the stairs, the chick finally moved. Like a golden bolt of lightning, it landed in front of the bedroom door and pecked at the Magical Hair Gu, hoisting it up. It raised its neck and swallowed the Magical Hair Gu.

The Magical Hair Gu twisted in the chick's stomach, but a golden flame burned in its stomach, gradually melting the Magical Hair Gu.

Pfft!

On the grass outside, Worm Dugu suddenly spat out a mouthful of blood. He returned to his original form, dispelling his mosquito-like form. His face was terrifyingly pale and filled with disbelief.

Impossible... The Magical Hair Gu is almost invulnerable... It grows once it enters the flesh... How can this be... Worm Dugu's face was pale as he broke out into a cold sweat.

He had been raising worms for so many years, but this was the first time he had encountered such a terrifying opponent —one who could even easily kill a Magical Hair Gu.

Could this Zhou Wen really be my nemesis? He can even easily kill a Magical Hair Gu. It's probably easy for him to take my life... If I had known this would happen... I shouldn't have come... The more Worm Dugu thought about it, the more terrified he became. He gritted his teeth and got up from the ground to knock on Zhou Wen's door.

Zhou Wen was grinding dungeons when he heard the doorbell ring. He thought it was a classmate, but when he

opened the door, he saw an old man standing at the door. It was none other than Worm Dugu.

Zhou Wen was secretly wary. *Could it be as An Sheng said? Worm Dugu is here to settle scores?*

Just as Zhou Wen was thinking about how to deal with Worm Dugu, the latter suddenly bowed at him. “Young Master Wen, it’s all my fault. I was blind. I shouldn’t have offended you. According to the rules of our Dugu family, I’ve lost this match. Feel free to punish me, even if it takes my life. I’ll do whatever you want.”

Zhou Wen was puzzled when he heard that. He had indeed been wary of Worm Dugu, but he didn’t discover anything entering his room. What was this Worm Dugu talking about?

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 716 - Master

Chapter 716: Master

“Do you know how you lost?” Zhou Wen asked Worm Dugu.

He had no idea what had happened, so he wanted to figure it out.

Worm Dugu ended up misunderstanding Zhou Wen. He said bitterly, “Young Master Wen, you are indeed brilliant. I used the Blood-Sucking Spider, Black Blood Gu, and seven other types of miniature Companion Beasts. Each one was smaller than the last, but none of them escaped your notice. All the Companion Beasts were killed by you. In the end, I had no choice but to use the Magical Hair Gu. I originally thought I could use the Magical Hair Gu to teach you a lesson, but I never expected that I would be the one being taught a lesson.”

“Why did you attack me?” Zhou Wen asked again.

Worm Dugu blushed and stammered, “When I saw your technique at the hospital, I felt that you were more suited to learning my techniques of raising insects and worms, so I wanted to take you to the South District to learn how to raise insects and worms from me.”

“You mean that you want to take me in as your disciple?” Zhou Wen asked Worm Dugu in a daze.

Worm Dugu’s face flushed red. “Young Master Wen, I’m really sorry. I’ve really embarrassed myself. Only today did I realize that there’s always someone better out there. What a joke

about you being my disciple; I’m not even qualified to be your disciple. If you wish to kill me, just give the word. I won’t dirty your hands.”

“Did the dimensional creature in Governor Qin’s brain have anything to do with you?” Zhou Wen asked directly.

Worm Dugu immediately said with a serious expression, “Definitely not. Although our Dugu family does need a batch of Essence Gold, we wouldn’t go to such an extent, much less harm Deputy Governor Qin who defends against a dimensional zone.”

“In that case, leave,” Zhou Wen said after some thought.

However, Worm Dugu had no intention of leaving. He gritted his teeth and said to Zhou Wen, “Young Master Wen, I’ve raised worms my entire life. This is the first time I’ve suffered such a terrible defeat. I don’t even know how I failed. Can you tell me how you killed the Magical Hair Gu?”

“I don’t know,” Zhou Wen said casually. He really didn’t know how the Magical Hair Gu died. He didn’t even see it.

On second thought, the chick had been flying around without him knowing why. He could roughly guess that the chick had resolved the miniature Companion Beasts and the Magical Hair Gu. However, it wasn’t appropriate for him to tell Worm Dugu.

“You don’t know how the Magical Hair Gu died?” Worm Dugu naturally didn’t believe such an answer.

“It was dead before I even saw it. How would I know how it died?” As Zhou Wen spoke, he prepared to close the door. He wasn’t in the mood to say anything more to Worm Dugu.

If it wasn’t for the fact that he didn’t wish for Worm Dugu to die in school thus causing a conflict between the Dugu family and Luoyang, he would have taken action.

Although he didn’t plan on taking action now, Zhou Wen had no intention of letting Worm Dugu off the hook. He planned on using the Invisibility Cloak to tail Worm Dugu and see if he had any accomplices before deciding what to do.

Zhou Wen was only making a passing remark, hoping to send Worm Dugu on his way. It also gave him an opportunity to test the effects of the Invisibility Cloak.

However, when Worm Dugu heard that, he was alarmed. “You killed the Magical Hair Gu without seeing it?”

“Yes. If there’s nothing else, leave. Don’t disturb me again,” Zhou Wen said as he closed the door.

To his surprise, Worm Dugu rushed over and held the door open. “Young Master Wen, can you let me see your Companion Beast. A Companion Beast that can easily kill a Magical Hair Gu must be extraordinary…”

Just as he was about to say something, Worm Dugu suddenly saw the chick standing on the table. He immediately widened his eyes in shock.

“What’s wrong with you? Do you really think I don’t dare kill you?” Zhou Wen said with a cold expression. If Worm Dugu continued pestering him, he would have no choice but to attack.

“That… That can’t be…” Worm Dugu didn’t seem to hear Zhou Wen’s reprimand as he stared intently at the chick and

stammered," Could that be the legendary phoenix fledging?"

"You recognize it?" Zhou Wen looked at Worm Dugu in surprise.

The chick had been with him for quite some time, but not many people recognized its origins. Now, the chick looked like a tiny golden eagle. It didn't look anything like a phoenix.

"I recognize it, of course I recognize it. How can a person who plays with worms and insects not recognize a phoenix? A phoenix is the nemesis of insects and worms. No matter how powerful a Gu worm is, they are powerless against it… No wonder… No wonder…" As Worm Dugu spoke, he tore off its clothes, revealing his dry chest muscles.

"What are you trying to do?" Zhou Wen took two steps back and looked at Worm Dugu in surprise.

However, Worm Dugu turned around, allowing Zhou Wen to see his back. On his back was a huge blood-colored phoenix tattoo. It looked extremely realistic as though it could flap its wings and fly out at any moment.

"You have a phoenix Companion Beast?" Zhou Wen was alarmed.

Worm Dugu said in embarrassment, "How can I have a phoenix Companion Beast? The teacher who taught me how to raise worms tattooed this on me. It's called the Phoenix-Hooking Evil Painting. This is a rule passed down from my ancestors. It uses a mixture of special avian blood and medicinal herbs for the tattooing. It can be used to ward off insects and evil. It's to prevent me from being injured when catching insects and raising Gu. In my lineage, there are

also ancient books regarding phoenixes. The phoenix fledging described in them is very similar to yours. It's just slightly different… Young Master Wen… Is this really a phoenix fledgling?"

"I see." Zhou Wen didn't answer as he nodded and said, "If there's nothing else, go back. I won't let you off so easily the next time I see you."

However, Worm Dugu didn't move. He said to Zhou Wen in a fawning manner, "Young Master Wen, do you lack any errand boys? Do you want me to be your assistant?"

"I don't need an assistant," Zhou Wen said with a frown.

"That's right. Men usually find young ladies to be their assistants… Then, what do you think about you becoming my master?" Worm Dugu's eyes darted around as he suddenly said something unexpected.

"How old are you? Why are you still taking me as your master? I…" Before Zhou Wen could finish his sentence, Worm Dugu had already plopped to the ground.

"Master, please accept a bow from your disciple, Worm Dugu…" Worm Dugu didn't hesitate at all. He was about to pay his respects to his master by kowtowing.

Zhou Wen was dumbfounded. He had no idea what was happening. Before he could react, Worm Dugu had already finished kowtowing.

"What are you trying to do?" Zhou Wen stared at Worm Dugu and frowned.

Worm Dugu crawled up and said, "From now on, you are my master. Master, when are you going to teach me how to raise

a phoenix?”

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 717

Chapter 717: Worm Dugu’s Plan

Translator: CKtalon

Zhou Wen took out his saber and prepared to slash at him. After all this back and forth, Worm Dugu was actually targeting the chick.

Worm Dugu hurriedly retreated out of the yard when he saw Zhou Wen take out his saber. As he retreated, he shouted, “Master, I’ll visit you another day. Call me if there’s anything you need. I’ll be there anytime.”

Zhou Wen closed the door and immediately summoned the Invisibility Cloak. Then, he jumped out of the window at the back of his residence and tailed Worm Dugu from afar to see what he was up to.

Zhou Wen saw Worm Dugu secretly arrive at an uninhabited spot before turning into a mosquito. He then flew out of the school.

Zhou Wen wore the Invisibility Cloak and had Truth Listener on his ear. He kept monitoring the movements of Worm Dugu and soon followed him to a dilapidated warehouse.

There’s indeed an accomplice. Zhou Wen used Truth Listener to listen and realized that there was another person in the warehouse besides Worm Dugu.

Zhou Wen listened attentively, hoping to gather some useful information.

With Truth Listener around, he didn’t need to risk entering the warehouse.

“Second Grandpa, what took you so long? How did the matter regarding Essence Gold go?” The person who spoke to Worm Dugu was a girl. She appeared rather young. She had a round face and huge eyes. She looked to be about sixteen or seventeen years old at most.

“I screwed up. The Blood Thread Brain-Eating Gu in Qin Wufu’s body was extracted by someone else,” said Worm Dugu.

“Apart from our Dugu family, there’s actually someone who can extract a Blood Thread Brain-Eating Gu that has entrenched a brain?” the girl said in disbelief.

“I didn’t believe it either, but it was indeed extracted. Furthermore, Qin Wufu was completely unharmed,” said Worm Dugu helplessly.

“What about the Essence Gold? Is the An family willing to sell so much refined Essence Gold to us?” the girl asked worriedly.

“Probably not.” Dugu Gu smiled and said, “But don’t worry. Even if we don’t use Essence Gold, I’ve already thought of a way to capture the Myriad Poison Gu King.”

“Second Grandpa, didn’t you try that the last time? Even the Magical Hair Gu is helpless against the Myriad Poison Gu King. It was almost destroyed. Do you have any more powerful Gu?” The girl looked at Worm Dugu in disbelief.

Dugu Gu chuckled and said, “I don’t have one, but I’ve just become a disciple to a master. If I can get his help, I’ll definitely be able to capture that Myriad Poison Gu King.”

“Second Grandpa, didn’t you say that the master you had is already dead? Where did this master come from?” The girl’s

face looked puzzled.

“Didn’t I just say that I just became a disciple of this master? He has a phoenix fledging. With the help of the phoenix fledgling, we don’t need to forge an Essence Gold Worm Nurturing Furnace to still capture the Myriad Poison Gu King,” said Worm Dugu.

“Then, Second Grandpa, quickly get your new master to help,” the girl said.

“Cough, cough. There’s no rush.” Worm Dugu knew very well that it wasn’t that easy to get Zhou Wen to use the phoenix fledgling to help him capture the Myriad Poison Gu King.

The girl sighed and said, “I originally thought that our luck was good and we happened to encounter the situation of Qin Wufu having his brain invaded by a Blood Thread Brain-Eating Gu. I thought we could exchange for enough Essence Gold, but I never expected that we wouldn’t even get a single bit of Essence Gold. I wonder when we will be able to capture the Myriad Poison King.”

“Mi’er, don’t worry. With Second Grandpa around, I guarantee that I’ll help you obtain the Gu King of Myriad Poison Valley. Furthermore, other than me, no one else has the ability to take the Gu King away. Just relax.” Worm Dugu changed the topic and said, “Stay in Luoyang and have some fun for a few days. When we are to return to the South District, I’ll naturally seek you out. Don’t run around. You can’t leave Luoyang City, understand?”

“Got it, Second Grandpa.” Mi’er agreed seriously.

After some thought, Mi’er asked again, “Second Grandpa, should I visit your master? Second Grandpa, how should I address your master?”

“No need, no need. You don’t have to worry about this matter.” After Worm Dugu sent Mi’er away, he muttered to himself, “I don’t know if there’s a second phoenix fledgling. I reckon the possibility of there being a second one is very low. Even if there is one, I’m afraid it won’t be easy to obtain it. I should think of a way to invite Master to follow me to Myriad Poison Valley, but how can I move him? From the looks of it, I have to think of a way.”

Zhou Wen listened outside all this time. He heard them talking about Gu, but he didn’t hear any plans. From Mi’er’s tone, Qin Wufu’s injuries didn’t seem to have anything to do with them.

Although I don’t know if the chick is a real phoenix, it does seem to be able to restrain dimensional creatures like Gu worms. In the future, I have to bring it along if I have to go to the South District, Zhou Wen thought to himself.

After Worm Dugu left the dilapidated warehouse, he returned to the hotel and didn’t come out again.

Zhou Wen eavesdropped for a long time, but he didn’t gather any useful information. Finally, he gave up on monitoring Worm Dugu and returned to the school dorm.

The ability of the Invisibility Cloak is really useful. Even if I walk on the streets during the day, I don’t need to worry about being seen by others. Even if I don’t use the Wheel of Destiny, it’s enough to remain invisible under normal circumstances. Zhou Wen thought about how he could use the Invisibility Cloak to do something big.

Before the dimensional zones are fully unlocked, I should download some game dungeons. I’ll download the famous dimensional zones first. I wonder what dimensional zones Primordial Immortal Sword, Origin Realm King, and Death of

the Underworld Companion Beasts come from. After some thought, Zhou Wen decided to start with the nearest dimensional zones.

The famous dimensional zones closer to Luoyang should be the Xia family's dimensional zones, right? Zhou Wen looked up the information and quickly made up his mind. He planned on heading to the Xia family's territory.

The Xia family controlled many mysterious dimensional zones. Zhou Wen had always wanted to go to a few of them.

One of the most famous dimensional zones was named Ancient Sword Tomb. It was said that there were many legendary swords there. The Xia family's old hero had once obtained a Mythical sword-type Companion Egg from Ancient Sword Tomb and used it to reign supreme.

However, that was decades ago. The Xia family had controlled the Ancient Sword Tomb for so long, so they definitely had more than one Mythical Companion Beast sword.

Zhou Wen suspected that the demonic sword that Demonic Neonate snatched from Xia Xuanyue was from the Ancient Sword Tomb.

After I'm done with the Xia family, I'll tour the six families' territories and download the dimensional zones they control. When that happens, I can grind for any Companion Beast I want. There's no need for me to risk my life. Zhou Wen did as he said. He planned on informing An Sheng before setting off for the Xia family.

This time, Zhou Wen didn't dare leave the chick and antelope behind. He was mainly afraid that the Dugu family would target the chick. Although the possibility of the

antelope being stolen was very low, Zhou Wen still planned on taking them with him to prevent any accidents.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 718 - Teacher Square

Chapter 718: Teacher Square

Translator: CKtalon

The chick stood on Zhou Wen’s shoulder and looked around curiously.

However, the antelope looked listless; it didn’t seem to like walking.

Zhou Wen wasn’t in a rush. This trip was also a form of training. He planned on taking a look at all the dimensional zones along the way. He planned on taking a picture of all the dimensional zones with the tiny palm symbol to prepare for a full-scale break-out of dimensional zones in the future.

Ancient Sword Tomb was in Imperial Capital. Zhou Wen could also take this chance to visit Wang Lu and repay his debt.

Imperial Capital was also known as Capital. Unlike the Holy City that was jointly controlled by the six families, Imperial Capital was basically controlled by the Xia family. However, to everyone’s surprise, the Special Inspector Bureau’s headquarters was also in Imperial Capital, not Holy City.

Zhou Wen had plans of making a trip to the bureau’s headquarters on his visit to the Imperial Capital.

As many roads were blocked by dimensional zones, all he could do was circle around them. He had to travel further. Even with Zhou Wen’s present strength, he didn’t dare barge into unexplored dimensional zones to prevent any accidents.

The route Zhou Wen chose was the one An Sheng had planned for him. Although it was a little further, it was safe and reliable.

After carefully studying the information, the first relatively famous dimensional zone he encountered was called Five Dragons Mouth.

It was originally a scenic spot. After the dimensional storms, the Five Dragons Mouth turned into a complicated, stacked dimensional zone that had multiple dimensional zones within.

One of the most famous dimensional zones of the Five Dragons Mouth was called Mount Confucius. There was a Teacher Square in the western Mount Confucius, and Mount Laojun was in the east. Legend had it that the Confucian and Daoist families had competed here, leaving behind many moving tales.

After the dimensional storms, Mount Confucius became even stranger. One could often hear the sound of reading from Teacher Square, but when one really looked over, there wasn’t a single soul.

There was also Arrow Atop. It was the highest peak of Five Dragons Mouth. It had many legends related to Hou Yi.

There were also other dimensional zones that had their own specialties. Zhou Wen planned on heading to the Five Dragons Mouth to take a look. If he could download the dimensional zones, it wouldn’t be bad to keep them for future research.

…

Worm Dugu didn’t know that Zhou Wen had left Luoyang, so he went to look for him early in the morning.

“Master, are you awake? I’m here to pay my respects to you. When are you free? Teach me, your disciple, how to raise a phoenix.” In order to learn the way to raise a phoenix, Worm Dugu didn’t care about his reputation at all. He kept using the words, “master” and “disciple,” without any hesitation.

“Why are you making such a din so early in the morning?” Li Xuan walked out of Zhou Wen’s dorm.

Before Zhou Wen left, he got Li Xuan to take all the food in the fridge to prevent it from spoiling.

“Who are you? Where’s my master?” Worm Dugu glared at Li Xuan.

“How would I know who your master is?” Li Xuan sized up Worm Dugu and saw that the old man was already in his seventies or eighties. To think he still had a master.

“You walked out of my master’s dorm, and you still say that you don’t know who my master is?” said Worm Dugu.

“Zhou Wen is your master?” Li Xuan widened his mouth as he sized up Worm Dugu in disbelief.

Zhou Wen was only seventeen or eighteen years old. How could he have such an old disciple?

“That’s right. Zhou Wen is my master. Has he woken up?” Worm Dugu said matter-of-factly.

“If Zhou Wen is your master, then wouldn’t I, Zhou Wen’s classmate, be your martial uncle? Disciple-Nephew, there’s

no need to continue shouting. Zhou Wen has gone out and isn’t on campus,” Li Xuan joked.

Worm Dugu narrowed his eyes. He recognized Zhou Wen as his master because he wanted to learn how to rear a phoenix from Zhou Wen. It didn’t mean that others could use him as a joke.

“Sure. That depends on whether you have the fortune to be my martial uncle.” Worm Dugu remained unperturbed as he secretly released a Black Blood Gu, hoping to teach Li Xuan a lesson.

However, when the Black Blood Gu crawled to Li Xuan’s side, it suddenly stopped moving. It sprawled on the ground and trembled. No matter how the Worm Dugu urged it, the Black Blood Gu didn’t dare approach Li Xuan.

“Eh?” Worm Dugu was slightly taken aback. He had never encountered such a situation.

He summoned a few more Gu, but the moment they approached Li Xuan, they immediately curled up in horror, not daring to touch him.

Worm Dugu wore a look of surprise. *What’s going on? Why are my Gu worms afraid of him? Does he have a phoenix too?*

…

Zhou Wen continued forward and didn’t encounter any danger. Along the way, he saw a Companion Beast caravan that transported goods.

As motor transportation became increasingly difficult, many transportation companies had chosen to use Companion

Beasts to transport goods.

He successfully arrived at Five Dragons Mouth. Zhou Wen walked along the mountain path, hoping to find the tiny palm symbol. After searching for a long time, he didn’t find it.

Instead, he saw many people fighting a monkey-type dimensional creature. The monkey was muscular and had a short tail. It looked rather ferocious.

Zhou Wen took a look at the information and knew that this dimensional creature was called a macaque. It was a relatively common dimensional creature at Five Dragons Mouth. There were many of them, and they were typically at the Mortal stage. Occasionally, one could see a Legendary Monkey King. Legend had it that the macaque here had the bloodline of the Handsome Monkey King. He didn’t know if it was true.

The Macaque King’s combat strength was considered quite powerful among Legendaries. Furthermore, the Macaque King Companion Beast’s companion form was very special, giving it a rather high value. The nearby Legendaries would often come here to hunt the Macaque King, hoping to gain something.

Zhou Wen wasn’t interested in hunting the Macaque King. He just searched for the tiny palm symbol.

Suddenly, Zhou Wen heard a strange sound coming from a nearby mountain. It sounded like children reading textbooks. The sound was drawn out, making it sound odd.

However, those voices were clearly not children’s voices. They were the voices of adults.

Zhou Wen looked at the source of the sound and then at the map. He immediately knew that it was the legendary Teacher Square.

The legends are true. There's actually the sound of reading in broad daylight at Teacher Square. Zhou Wen's interest was piqued as he walked towards Teacher Square to see what was so magical about it.

However, Zhou Wen couldn't help but be taken aback when he reached Teacher Square and saw the scene in front of him.

There were many people sitting on Teacher Square. They were all twirling their heads as they read. The voice Zhou Wen had heard wasn't a phenomenon, but a result of actual people reading.

These people were engrossed in their reading. They twirled their heads and read loudly, as though they were primary school students who were seriously reciting their textbooks. They also resembled scholars from ancient times. Their voices were especially charming as they dragged out their last words.

Could this be a reading activity that's hosted here? Zhou Wen thought as he climbed onto Teacher Square.

However, just as he stepped onto Teacher Square, he couldn't help but open his mouth and emit the same voices as the others. He began reading with them, but he had never heard the content that he was reading.

There's something odd about this place! Zhou Wen was alarmed.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 719 - Injured

Chapter 719: Injured

Zhou Wen couldn’t help but sit down and become one of them. He began reciting with them.

Zhou Wen recited in a rhythmic manner as though he was very familiar with it, but he had no idea what he was reciting.

Thankfully, the mysterious power of Teacher Square wasn’t harmful. All he did was sit there and read. There was no further development. Zhou Wen wasn’t in a rush to escape the mysterious power’s control. He wanted to figure out what the mysterious power was up to.

There were more than a hundred people sitting on the huge Teacher Square. They looked like people who cultivated. Zhou Wen felt that it wasn’t a coincidence that they were here.

Why isn’t there any mention of such a strange power on Mount Confucius? Zhou Wen recited whilst studying the content he was reciting.

The content was very esoteric. The language and words were very different from what modern people were used to. It was clearly an ancient article.

Zhou Wen’s level of literacy was very ordinary. He could still understand some simple ancient texts, but he really couldn’t understand such obscure ancient texts.

Previously, Zhou Wen had studied the ancient texts of Daoism and Buddhism, but this ancient text was clearly different from the two. He had never heard of many terms, so he couldn’t figure out what it meant, even after listening for a while.

Zhou Wen originally wanted to memorize the article he was reciting and slowly study it later, but he soon realized that no matter how hard he tried, he couldn’t remember a single word.

After reciting a sentence, it was as if it had vanished from his memory. He couldn’t memorize it at all.

From the looks of it, I can only try recording it. Zhou Wen wanted to take out his phone to record his voice.

However, he realized that his body wasn’t listening to him. All he could do was sit there and chant. He couldn’t do anything else.

With a thought, Zhou Wen switched his Essence Energy Art to the Dao Sutra. He wanted to use the power of Gods Retreat to break the rules of Teacher Square and take out his phone to record the recital.

Bam!

Just as Zhou Wen switched to the Dao Sutra, he suddenly felt a terrifying force strike him like lightning. The jade infant nearly cracked.

Zhou Wen’s body tumbled down Teacher Square like a balloon. Thankfully, after leaving Teacher Square, Zhou Wen regained control of his body and quickly found his footing.

He spat out a mouthful of blood as his organs were severely injured. Some of his bones had even fractured. Zhou Wen was alarmed. *Is the taboo power of Teacher Square that domineering?*

However, on second thought, he felt that something was amiss.

The taboo power in Netherworld City was already extremely terrifying, but it wasn't as potent as this. The taboo power in Teacher Square was no longer something that could be explained by the word "potent." Zhou Wen felt that the taboo power of Teacher Square was targeting him.

Wait, I think I understand. Zhou Wen immediately recalled.

Legend had it that Mount Confucius was the place where the Confucian and Daoist practitioners fought for supremacy, and Teacher Square was the territory of Confucianism. It was highly likely that he had been targeted when he used the Dao Sutra on Teacher Square.

In that case, I should head to Mount Laojun to take a look. That's Daoist territory. Zhou Wen wanted to stand up, but his injuries were too severe. The moment he moved, he grimaced in pain.

I should heal my injuries first. Zhou Wen switched to the Inverse Ancient Sovereign Life Soul and used its powerful lifeforce to heal his injured organs and bones.

However, the Inverse Ancient Sovereign only had a powerful lifeforce. Its self-healing speed was far inferior to Li Xuan's Life Soul.

The antelope looked at Zhou Wen gloatingly, as though it already knew the mystery of Teacher Square.

The chick skipped about on the rocks beside him. It was filled with curiosity about everything.

“Are you alright?” A woman in her thirties walked over and squatted down to ask Zhou Wen.

“I’m fine. It’s just a small injury.” Zhou Wen shook his head.

The woman smiled and said, “You aren’t from around here. It’s your first time at Mount Confucius’s Teacher Square, right?”

“How did you know?” Zhou Wen asked.

“The locals know that you can’t use Daoist Essence Energy Arts on Teacher Square. You must have used the Daoist Essence Energy Art just now to be struck out,” the woman explained.

The recital had ended, and the people sitting on Teacher Square had returned to normal. They were walking down in twos and threes.

They looked at Zhou Wen with a smile. Clearly, they, like the woman, knew why Zhou Wen had been expelled.

“Teacher Square is a holy land for cultivating Confucian Essence Energy Arts like Righteousness. If you cultivate in Daoist Essence Energy Arts, you should head to Mount Laojun.”

The woman thought for a moment and reminded him, “Teacher Square has an hour of recital daily. If you want to tour the area, you can go up after that hour.”

“Thank you for your advice. I wonder if Mount Laojun has any taboos?” Zhou Wen hurriedly asked.

“Not really. There’s a Dao book on the top of Mount Laojun, but it requires self-enlightenment. There’s no force that can force you.” The woman sized up Zhou Wen and said, “Your injuries don’t seem light. Do you want me to take you to the hospital?”

“There’s no need. I’ll be fine after resting for a while.” Zhou Wen hurriedly thanked the woman for her kindness.

After the woman left, Zhou Wen sat there to recuperate. However, his injuries were too serious. On the second day, the woman and many people who cultivated in Confucian Essence Energy Art came to Teacher Square again. Yet, Zhou Wen hadn’t completely recovered from his injuries.

“Why are you still here? Are you really fine?” the woman asked Zhou Wen in surprise.

Typically, even if someone was expelled, they wouldn’t be too heavily injured.

“It’s fine, it’s fine. I just like the scenery here. I want to take a break here,” Zhou Wen said with a smile.

The average person’s injuries wouldn’t be that serious, but not only did Zhou Wen use the Dao Sutra, but he had also used Gods Retreat, hoping to nullify the taboo power of Teacher Square. That was why he was so heavily injured.

Seeing that Zhou Wen’s expression was much better than yesterday, the woman didn’t say anything else. Like the others, she got onto Teacher Square and sat down. Soon, Zhou Wen heard the familiar recital.

Those people basically came to Teacher Square to read every day. Zhou Wen chatted with the woman a few times and knew that everyone called her Sister Gui.

According to Sister Gui, reading on Teacher Square accelerated one’s cultivation efficiency of Confucian Essence Energy Arts. However, there were very few people cultivating the Confucian Essence Energy Arts now. Therefore, the people who came to Teacher Square for the daily recital were basically acquaintances. They had known each other long ago.

After a few days, Zhou Wen finally recovered from his injuries. However, his injuries were secondary. The primary reason was that it took until now for the jade infant to recover from its injuries.

After recovering, the jade infant gave Zhou Wen a strange feeling as though it was about to break through.

Could it be that being injured helps the jade infant break through? Zhou Wen had a thought.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 720 - Comfort Only When Thrown Out

Chapter 720: Comfort Only When Thrown Out

Zhou Wen decided to give it another try. Gods Retreat had already reached its peak. It couldn’t continue improving even in Netherworld City.

If the power of Teacher Square could really allow Gods Retreat to advance to a Perfect Body, it would be Zhou Wen’s first Perfect Body Life Soul.

When it was the recital session at Teacher Square, Zhou Wen gritted his teeth and walked towards it.

When Sister Gui saw that Zhou Wen had mostly recovered from his injuries, she said with a smile, “This time, make sure not to circulate a Daoist Essence Energy Art when you step into Teacher Square.”

Zhou Wen didn’t know what to say.

The others laughed. After recuperating here for a few days, they had basically recognized Zhou Wen and knew about his embarrassing use of a Daoist Essence Energy Art on Teacher Square.

Just as she was about to say something, the recital session began.

A mysterious force enveloped Teacher Square. Everyone suddenly sat down and began to recite an article in all seriousness—one that they didn’t understand.

Zhou Wen was one of them, but just as he started reciting, he switched his Essence Energy Art to Dao Sutra.

Boom!

As though he was struck in the soul, Zhou Wen felt his soul tremble as his body involuntarily flew out. He slammed onto the stone steps and rolled a distance before he managed to control his body.

His injuries were worse than before, but Zhou Wen was pleased to discover that the jade infant's injuries were much lighter than the previous time. After the previous injury, his resistance seemed to have improved significantly.

Could it be that this method really works? Zhou Wen was pleasantly surprised.

An hour later, Sister Gui and company came down from Teacher Square and passed by Zhou Wen, who was recuperating. Sister Gui said in a speechless manner, "Little Zhou, didn't I tell you that you can't use Daoist Essence Energy Arts on Teacher Square? Why didn't you listen to me? I won't harm you."

Zhou Wen hurriedly said, "Sister Gui, I know that I can't use Daoist Essence Energy Arts on Teacher Square, but I have a bad temper. The more I'm not allowed to do it, the more I have to do it."

"Child…" Sister Gui was instantly rendered speechless.

"Sister Gui, don't bother about him. There's something wrong with this kid's brain."

"That's right. Who cares what he's doing? He's just looking for trouble. I think it's because life in the Federation is too

good that there are so many young people out there looking for trouble.”

“Young people have never endured suffering. It’s understandable why they want to seek out excitement. I was the same when I was young. My mom said that girls will have children when they sleep with men. I didn’t listen to her, and I ended up giving birth…”

From then on, there was an additional young man with an antelope and chick on Mount Confucius’s Teacher Square. In the beginning, he was sent flying every two to three days.

Later on, it became worse. He was sent flying daily during the recital session on Teacher Square because of his circulation of a Daoist Essence Energy Art as though he would feel uncomfortable if he didn’t get thrown out.

Sister Gui tried persuading him at first, but Zhou Wen didn’t listen. She got used to it over time.

After the recital, a young girl left with Sister Gui. When they passed by Zhou Wen who was lying by the roadside, the girl looked at him and said to her, “Sister Gui, do you think that Little Zhou is silly? Why does he have to go against Teacher Square for no reason? Isn’t he just looking for trouble? He really has nothing better to do.”

Sister Gui smiled and said, “How is Little Zhou silly? He’s such a good lad. I think he has his reasons for doing so.”

“What reason could there be? I think he’s just bored.” The young girl paused before continuing, “Why is there such a senseless person? If everyone was like Xu Tong, the Federation’s land wouldn’t be constantly devoured by dimensional zones.”

As she spoke, the young girl couldn’t help but look at the youth in front of her.

The young man had an imposing appearance. He had sword-like eyebrows and bright eyes. He was indeed a very handsome young man.

Xu Tong was very famous at Five Dragons Mouth. He cultivated Righteous Energy and had advanced to the Epic stage at the age of twenty-seven. In this region, no one was better than Xu Tong.

It was understandable that Xu Tong could win the girl’s admiration.

Sister Gui said with a smile, “Xu Tong is not bad, but there are many outstanding girls around outstanding men. Why don’t you consider Little Zhou? I think that young lad is pretty good. He looks quite handsome and is about the same age as you. No one is vying with you for him yet.”

“Tch, I don’t fancy such a senseless man. If I want to find a boyfriend, I have to find an outstanding man like Xu Tong.” The girl curled her lips and turned her head to look at Zhou Wen who was lying on the mountain path. No matter how she looked at him, he was far inferior to the dignified and refined Xu Tong.

Sister Gui said with a faint smile, “It’s understandable that little girls like men like Xu Tong. When you reach my age, you might feel that some special men might be more interesting.”

“Perhaps. However, I won’t find such a man interesting at any time.” The girl didn’t find Zhou Wen interesting when she saw him sleeping on the mountain path. His clothes

were disheveled and there was a chick skipping around him. He resembled a wandering performer.

Days passed. Every time the jade infant was struck, Zhou Wen would have the illusion that he was about to break through. Although this feeling was very real, no matter how realistic it was, it was still an illusion. He couldn’t advance to a Perfect Body.

Strange. I clearly feel that I can advance to a Perfect Body, so why haven’t I advanced? What’s the difference? Zhou Wen kept pondering over this question.

After some thought, Zhou Wen thought of a possibility.

Back then, Zero Taboo was a crystalline body. After the crystal exploded, the Gods Retreat jade infant was born.

Zhou Wen was wondering if it was possible that the jade infant needed to be destroyed before it could advance to a Perfect Body. This explained the reason why he felt that he was about to break through every time the jade infant was injured.

However, as the jade infant’s body healed, the feeling of a breakthrough vanished.

After some thought, Zhou Wen realized that there was only one possibility. However, it was too risky to shatter the jade infant. If his guess was wrong and the jade infant was really destroyed, he would be doomed. He would have to condense the Life Soul again.

Therefore, Zhou Wen was still hesitant about giving the jade infant a try.

It was time for the recital session again. When Sister Gui and company arrived at Teacher Square, many people greeted Zhou Wen. As Zhou Wen had been here for more than two weeks, the people who often came to Teacher Square were already familiar with him.

However, most people felt that Zhou Wen was a little silly and only wanted to joke with him. They didn’t have any ill intentions.

Sister Gui got Zhou Wen to head to Teacher Square with her as she asked, “Little Zhou, are you still circulating the Daoist Essence Energy Art today?”

“Yes.” Zhou Wen nodded.

Everyone waited on Teacher Square for the recital session to begin. Zhou Wen wasn’t in the mood to chat, so Sister Gui and the girl beside her chatted.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 721 - Reconstitution after Collapsing

Chapter 721: Reconstitution after Collapsing

When it was time for the recital, everyone involuntarily sat down and began reciting.

Although everyone was conscious, they couldn’t control their bodies or mouths. They could only move freely after the recital session ended.

During this period of time, they could do nothing but recite.

Zhou Wen was considering if he should use the power of Teacher Square to shatter the jade infant and reconstitute it when he suddenly saw a figure rushing across the mountain path at an astonishing speed.

Upon closer inspection, it was actually a macaque. However, this macaque seemed to be a little different from ordinary macaque. The average macaque was only about 1.5 meters tall. Even a Legendary Macaque King maxed out at 1.9 meters. That would make it look majestic.

However, this macaque was nearly three meters tall. It looked even more ferocious than a macaque. Its eyes were glowing red, and its fur appeared metallic black. It looked like a ferocious wrath from afar.

Sister Gui and the others also noticed the blood-eyed black macaque. They were somewhat surprised, but no one was worried.

Even if this blood-eyed black macaque was an Epic dimensional creature, as long as it entered Teacher Square, it would be affected by Teacher Square’s power. Like all humans, it would sit on the ground and recite ancient texts.

Something similar had happened in the past. A macaque that accidentally entered Teacher Square ended up sitting down and reading like the humans. It wouldn’t threaten the scholars here.

However, the moment the blood-eyed black macaque entered Teacher Square, everyone’s expression changed drastically, revealing shock.

The blood-eyed black macaque actually didn’t sit down to recite. Its eyes were glowing with blood-red light as it walked step by step towards the humans sitting on Teacher Square. It exposed its fangs and looked like it was going to devour someone.

The color drained from everyone’s faces, but they couldn’t move. All they could do was watch as the blood-eyed black macaque walked over as they recited.

Everyone wore odd expressions. Their faces looked prim and proper as they swirled their heads while reciting. However, their eyes and voices were filled with fear. There was even the sound of sobbing in their voices.

If they could move now, they would have run as far away as they could.

It was especially so for the three people who were closest to the blood-eyed black macaque. Their expressions were as if they had been tied up and fed feces. It was as uncomfortable as it could be.

The blood-eyed black macaque walked over step by step. From its heavy footsteps, Zhou Wen knew that it was still affected by the power of Teacher Square. However, it didn't suffer as significant an effect as them.

Just as the blood-eyed black macaque was about to reach the crowd, a man suddenly stood up and shouted at the macaque, "How can we allow you to taint the Holy Land of Teacher Square? Leave!"

Zhou Wen was somewhat surprised. He never expected someone to be able to stand up while reciting. On careful look, he saw that it was Xu Tong.

At that moment, Xu Tong's entire body was emitting a kind of aura. That aura was formless and intangible. It wasn't as resplendent as divine light, nor was it as grand as Buddhistic light. It was an indescribable aura.

Everyone was overjoyed. They had thought that they were doomed for sure, but they didn't expect Xu Tong to stand up to resist the blood-eyed black macaque. They felt that there was hope.

Xu Tong was already an Epic expert, so he should be able to kill the blood-eyed black macaque. After all, no high-level dimensional creature had ever appeared near Mount Confucius.

The blood-eyed black macaque didn't retreat because of Xu Tong's berating and imposing manner. Instead, it became even more ferocious. A bloody light flashed in its eyes as its majestic body broke through the sound barrier. With a sonic boom, it threw a violent punch at Xu Tong.

"Pervading Heaven and Earth is the aura of righteousness. A righteous heart empowers…" Xu Tong's words seemed to be

augmented by a magical power. As he spoke, the righteous aura in his body became even stronger. It was as if his entire being was enveloped by the righteousness that pervaded the world.

At the instant the blood-eyed black macaque rushed in front of him, Xu Tong's palm also struck it with a terrifying force that was akin to the sea or dragon.

What a powerful Essence Energy Skill... Zhou Wen was somewhat surprised. The power of Xu Tong's palm strike was extremely powerful at the Epic stage.

Boom!

Xu Tong's palm collided with the blood-eyed black macaque's claw, producing a terrifying shockwave that sent the people beside him staggering. Meanwhile, Xu Tong flew out like a runaway kite and slammed into the mountain rocks, causing him to vomit blood. After struggling a few times, he got up and sat there. As he vomited blood, he chanted ancient texts.

Everyone felt a chill in their hearts. In their eyes, Xu Tong was already an invincible existence since he was able to forcefully resist the power of Teacher Square. However, such a powerful Xu Tong was severely injured by the blood-eyed black macaque's attack. He even lost the ability to resist the mysterious power of Teacher Square. No matter how serious his injuries were, he had to sit there and recite.

Everyone was horrified, but they could only sit there and recite. No words to describe their feelings any longer.

The blood-eyed black macaque roared and extended its claws to grab a person in front of it. Its nails were as sharp as

daggers. If one were to be swiped by them, five bloody holes would probably appear on their head.

Zhou Wen frowned slightly. He couldn’t use any Companion Beasts on Teacher Square. Even his Essence Energy Art and body were suppressed, preventing him from summoning any Companion Beasts.

“What are those two fellows doing outside? Why aren’t they coming over to help?” Zhou Wen realized that the antelope and chick were standing on a distant mountain path. They were looking over, but they had no intention of coming over to help. It was as though they were watching a show.

Zhou Wen couldn’t help but curse inwardly. I raised you all this while for nothing. *To think you are there watching this with relish. Don’t you know that people will die? It’s fine if others die, but I’m here. Wouldn’t I end up dying with them later?*

That’s not right. They cultivate in Confucian Essence Energy Arts, but I’m different. I can switch to the Dao Sutra and be sent out by the power of Teacher Square. With a thought, Zhou Wen didn’t hesitate to switch to Dao Sutra.

Zhou Wen originally wanted to think of a way to save them after he left, but he realized that Sister Gui and company were too close to the blood-eyed black macaque. It would probably be too late by the time he returned.

Forget it. I was planning on trying to see if the jade infant can be reconstituted after collapsing anyway. I’ll give it a try now. At the instant Zhou Wen switched to the Dao Body, he unleashed the power of the jade infant.

Boom!

The terrifying power on Teacher Square struck Zhou Wen like divine lightning from the nine heavens. The jade infant suffered an extremely terrifying taboo attack.

Zhou Wen sat motionless on the ground as he forcefully endured the terrifying taboo force. Taking advantage of the instant his body could move, he drew his saber and slashed at the blood-eyed black macaque.

Everyone was already in despair. The people who were going to bear the brunt of the attack in the first wave had already closed their eyes in resignation.

However, a blood-colored saber beam suddenly flashed. The blood-eyed black macaque’s body was split into two as both pieces fell to the sides.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 722 - Heaven-Opening Scripture of the Highest Elder

Chapter 722: Heaven-Opening Scripture of the Highest Elder

As they watched the blood-eyed black macaque die, everyone felt as though they had escaped death. They were still in disbelief.

Even Xu Tong wasn’t a match for the blood-eyed black macaque. Who had halved it?

Their heads couldn’t move, but their eyeballs could. Everyone looked in the direction of the saber beam and saw Zhou Wen sitting on the ground with a saber in hand. The blade had already returned to its scabbard.

It’s him? The girl sitting beside Sister Gui was taken aback. She couldn’t believe that Zhou Wen was the one who had killed the blood-eyed black macaque.

Zhou Wen had returned the saber to its scabbard, but he sat there motionless with his eyes closed. He wasn’t sent flying by the power of Teacher Square, nor did he continue reciting.

As Zhou Wen forcefully resisted the rules of Teacher Square, the jade infant suffered the brunt of the terrifying taboo power. It didn’t last long before shattering.

With the jade infant shattered, Zhou Wen originally imagined that he would be severely injured. At best, he would vomit blood, but the worst situation would be having his Dao Sutra crippled.

However, that wasn’t the case. After the jade infant shattered, the power that formed the Life Soul didn’t dissipate. Instead, it reformed again and completed the restructuring in an instant.

The reassembled Life Soul looked extremely strange. Its appearance was completely different from the jade infant’s. It had turned into something extremely strange.

Now, his Life Soul looked like a book, but he couldn’t open it. There were no words on the cover.

Zhou Wen couldn’t sense any powerful force from the ancient book-like Life Soul, but he knew that the Dao Sutra Life Soul had successfully advanced.

This was because he was currently in Teacher Square. The Dao Sutra in his body was still circulating, but the taboo power in Teacher Sutra seemed to have vanished. It was completely useless against him.

When he opened his eyes and looked around, he saw that Sister Gui and company were still reciting under the power of Teacher Square. Zhou Wen knew that he had really succeeded.

With his Life Soul complete, Zhou Wen wasn’t in the mood to continue listening to their recital. He got up and said to Sister Gui, “Sister Gui, thank you for taking care of me these past few days. I’m leaving.”

Zhou Wen didn’t really like farewells. Coincidentally, Sister Gui was still reciting, so she couldn’t speak to him. Zhou Wen waved at her before turning around and walking out of Teacher Square. He quickly left Mount Confucius with the antelope and chick.

When everyone saw that Zhou Wen could move freely on Teacher Square without being affected by its power, they were convinced that he was the person who had killed the blood-eyed black macaque.

When the recital ended, everyone regained their freedom.

“I could tell long ago that Little Zhou is extraordinary. I was right.”

“Bullsh*t. You always liked to call him silly.”

“What do you know? I was just joking with him. How can an ordinary person have such great perseverance? He’s clearly not an ordinary person. I’ve long seen how different he is.”

“I don’t think he’s even twenty years old. To have such a cultivation level, he probably comes from the families of the six heroes, right?”

“I think it’s very likely. Apart from the families of the six heroes, which family can nurture such a young talent?”

Sister Gui couldn’t take it anymore. She rolled her eyes at them and said, “Which of the six hero families have the surname Zhou?”

“Apparently none!” Everyone looked at each other, momentarily unable to guess Zhou Wen’s origins.

The girl looked in the direction Zhou Wen had left with mixed feelings.

Zhou Wen left Five Dragons Mouth. His identity had definitely been exposed this time, so he didn’t head to the other dimensional zones.

The main reason was that he hadn’t found the tiny palm symbol at Five Dragons Mouth. If he were to stay here to study it, it would probably take him more than a year to figure out the entire Five Dragons Mouth dimensional zone.

When he arrived at an uninhabited spot, he summoned the Great Might Vajra Bull. As Zhou Wen rode the bull, he checked the game’s information.

The Dao Body’s Life Soul was no longer Gods Retreat. It had changed again.

Heaven-Opening Scripture of the Highest Elder (Perfect Body): Before the chaos was separated, there was no heaven or earth, no Yin or Yang, no sun or moon, no crystal or light, no east or west, no south or north, no front or back, no source or sink. Infinite changes, grand and majestic, formless and intangible, natural and mysterious. Destitution to the limits, boundless and immeasurable, only the Highest Elder…

Zhou Wen didn’t understand what the introduction meant, but it sounded very impressive even though he didn’t know what it was for.

In the past, Zero Taboo and Gods Retreat could only exist in his consciousness and not be summoned.

Now that it had transformed into the Heaven-Opening Scripture of the Highest Elder, Zhou Wen’s mind stirred. The Life Soul that resembled an ancient jade scripture appeared in front of him. Despite it clearly being named Heaven-Opening Scripture of the Highest Elder, there wasn’t a single word on it. Zhou Wen couldn’t open it either. After studying it for a while, he realized that its use was only to resist taboo powers. He didn’t discover any other effects.

Zhou Wen tried in Netherworld City again and realized that the taboo power in Netherworld City was useless against the Heaven-Opening Scripture of the Highest Elder. Only now could Zhou Wen be said to be truly a person of zero taboos.

The jade infant from Gods Retreat couldn’t last long in Netherworld City. Zhou Wen wasn’t willing to be tortured, so he hadn’t been able to reach the Netherworld Divine Throne in-game.

Now that he had the Heaven-Opening Scripture of the Highest Elder, none of the taboos were effective against Zhou Wen and the blood-colored avatar. Zhou Wen controlled the blood-colored avatar to walk along the stone path that didn’t even reveal the numbers.

However, when he stepped onto the stone slab, punishment ghosts would still appear. Zhou Wen casually killed them and quickly reached the Netherworld Divine Throne.

Yet, he didn’t see City Lord Netherworld in-game. After Zhou Wen sounded the Golden Bell, the Golden Divine Throne automatically separated, revealing the door to leave.

After leaving the door, the blood-colored avatar came out of the Netherworld City dungeon.

Is this all there is to the Netherworld City dungeon? There isn’t even a Mythical boss? Zhou Wen felt that something was amiss.

Thinking back to what City Lord Netherworld had said to him, Zhou Wen’s heart stirred. *Could it be that I really have to pay a visit to all the torture chambers as City Lord Netherworld said and endure all the punishments before I can see the real Netherworld City? What is the real Netherworld City?*

Zhou Wen was very interested in the secrets of Netherworld City, but he gave up when he thought of the punishments.

When I have the chance in the future, I'll take Li Xuan to Netherworld City in real life and let him suffer the punishments. Then, I'll know what the real Netherworld City is like. Zhou Wen placed his sights on Li Xuan.

After Zhou Wen left Five Dragons Mouth, his deeds spread around the area. Everyone nearby knew of this young man, but they didn't know his name. All they knew was that his surname was Zhou.

Even so, this matter was still detected by the bureau.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 723 - The Antelope Leads the Way

Chapter 723: The Antelope Leads the Way

“Minister Qiao, are you sure the person who appeared at Five Dragons Mouth is Zhou Wen?” Shen Yuchi asked with a frown as he looked at the report delivered by Qiao Siyuan.

“I’ve confirmed his age and appearance. It matches Zhou Wen in many areas,” Qiao Siyuan answered respectfully.

“It’s normal for young people at this age to have similar looks,” Shen Yuchi said.

“Director-General, you’re right. However, I still think that the young man who appeared at Five Dragons Mouth is Zhou Wen,” Qiao Siyuan said.

“What evidence do you have?” Shen Yuchi asked.

“We’re still investigating, but there’s nothing new for the time being. However, my intuition tells me that it’s Zhou Wen,” Qiao Siyuan said with certainty.

Shen Yuchi wasn’t angered by Qiao Siyuan’s seemingly irresponsible words. In fact, in their line of work, their intuition was sometimes very accurate.

Intuition wasn’t just a blind guess. It was a sharp sense of an event’s systematic development that they had honed after experiencing countless incidents.

“If that young man is Zhou Wen, why do you think he went to Five Dragons Mouth? What’s his next destination?” Shen Yuchi said after some thought.

“According to intelligence, someone has been seeing Zhou Wen in the vicinity of Luoyang recently. However, I feel that this may be a ruse from the An family. Their goal is to cover Zhou Wen. According to this inference, Zhou Wen’s goal isn’t as simple as staying at Five Dragons Mouth for a period of time.”

Qiao Siyuan paused before continuing, “I’m guessing that Zhou Wen won’t be returning to Luoyang next. According to his current trajectory, he should be heading north. I think he might come to the Imperial Capital.”

“There are so many cities in the north. Why do you think that he will definitely come to the Imperial Capital?” Shen Yuchi frowned.

“I don’t have any evidence yet, but it’s best to make some preparations,” Qiao Siyuan said.

“That’s right. However, Zhou Wen has already reached a certain level of attainment. Even without the An family’s protection, it won’t be easy to touch him,” Shen Yuchi said after some thought.

“Director-General, why don’t you discuss it with the Xia family? Perhaps they are also interested in Zhou Wen,” Qiao Siyuan said.

Shen Yuchi naturally understood what Qiao Siyuan was referring to. He glanced at Qiao Siyuan and said meaningfully, “Then help me make a trip to the Xia family and inform them of this matter.”

“Yes, sir.” Qiao Siyuan received the order.

After Qiao Siyuan left, the woman Shen Yuchi called “Button” walked out. Shen Yuchi looked at the documents and said, “What’s your take?”

“Qiao Siyuan’s attention on Zhou Wen seems to have exceeded the attention he places on Wang Mingyuan’s other disciples,” said Button.

“Are you saying that he has ulterior motives for Zhou Wen?” Shen Yuchi looked up at Button.

“I don’t know. I’ve investigated him. Just as you said, Director-General, this person is too simple. His life seems to revolve around nothing but work. He doesn’t have any obvious personal hobbies, no wife, children, family, or friends. He doesn’t even have a lover. He doesn’t eat, drink, prostitute, or gamble. It’s hard to imagine how he does it given his age and status,” said Button.

“Perhaps he’s a workaholic,” Shen Yuchi said.

Button’s red lips curled up slightly as she continued, “You can say that, but as a workaholic, he doesn’t seem to be so focused on other parts of his work.”

“Then why do you think Qiao Siyuan mentioned the Xia family?” Shen Yuchi continued.

“There’s no way to deduce it for the time being. However, from what I know, in the past few decades, there have been many young geniuses who died young, and all of them have something to do with the Xia family. If the Xia family learns of Zhou Wen’s arrival in the Imperial Capital, perhaps there’s really no need for you to think about it, Director-General.”

“Then let’s take a wait and see approach for now.” Shen Yuchi lowered his head and continued working.

…

Zhou Wen traversed mountains and forests. Although the dimensional storms had brought a huge calamity to humanity, Earth was brimming with vitality. It was unlike the past where everywhere was filled with buildings made of concrete and steel.

“What are you doing? It’s not over there. We’re going this way.” When they reached a fork in the road, Zhou Wen was supposed to take the left fork, but the antelope actually walked to the right.

The antelope ignored him and bit Zhou Wen’s sleeve as it walked to the right, forcing him to follow.

“What’s here? Why do you have to walk this way?” Zhou Wen found it odd. Although the antelope had been very willful and aloof in the past, it had never interfered with Zhou Wen’s actions.

This time, the antelope had taken the initiative to alter his path. This left Zhou Wen somewhat puzzled.

The antelope didn’t answer as it walked ahead as though it hadn’t heard Zhou Wen.

If Zhou Wen stopped and didn’t leave, it would come over to pull him back.

Zhou Wen studied the map. The right fork was originally a road, but because there were too many dimensional zones there, as well as the appearance of many break-out creatures, it was abandoned due to the danger.

Zhou Wen felt that there was definitely something going on and he was somewhat intrigued. He wanted to know what the antelope was up to, so he followed it.

However, Zhou Wen summoned Six-Winged to prevent any accidents.

He hadn’t managed to successfully create a Substitute Talisman yet. He had drawn quite a number of them whenever he was free, but unfortunately, he hadn’t succeeded. The success rate of producing a Substitute Talisman was just too low.

Due to the encroachment of the plants on both sides of the originally spacious road, many branches and roots were strewn across the road. Green vines crawled everywhere.

The trees on both sides of the road were extremely tall. The tree crowns were squeezed together, blocking out the sunlight. Zhou Wen felt that walking on the road was no different from walking in a forest.

As he walked, Zhou Wen suddenly felt that something was amiss. There were trees everywhere, but there wasn’t a single bird or insect in the huge forest. The entire forest was terrifyingly quiet.

Zhou Wen had already expanded Truth Listener’s range to its limits, but he still didn’t discover any animals. There wasn’t even an ant.

How can this be? Zhou Wen couldn’t help but frown as he secretly became wary.

The antelope remained oblivious as it continued walking ahead. The chick stood on Zhou Wen’s shoulder and looked around curiously.

“Where are you going?” Zhou Wen asked the antelope in front of him.

The antelope didn’t know how to speak at all. Even if it could speak, it had no intention of answering Zhou Wen. Just as Zhou Wen was hesitating about following it down, it suddenly left the road and burrowed into the grass beside it.

It was a dense grass patch and many vines coiled together. After the antelope entered, it immediately vanished. Thankfully, Zhou Wen had Truth Listener and could see the situation in the grass.

After the antelope burrowed into the grass, it continued walking in. Soon, it arrived at an empty spot.

The empty spot was rather strange. There were dense plants all around, but there was not a single blade of grass growing in that small area. It was as if a strong weed killer had been used.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 724 - 100% Head Turner

Chapter 724: 100% Head Turner

Translator: CKtalon

The antelope walked to the clearing and began digging with its hooves.

Could there be some treasure buried there? Zhou Wen was curious as he burrowed into the grass and quickly arrived beside the clearing.

The antelope dug very quickly. By the time Zhou Wen arrived, it had already dug more than a meter deep. The soil dug out was piled up beside it.

When Zhou Wen saw the soil, he immediately knew why there weren't any plants growing here. The antelope wasn't digging out soil, but grayish-black ash. It looked like it was mixed with some form of metallic powder.

He looked into the pit and saw that there was indeed metallic powder underneath.

"Ol' Ante, what are you digging?" Zhou Wen asked curiously.

The antelope ignored him and continued digging.

Zhou Wen thought to himself, *This antelope usually acts like a big shot. It sees everything beneath it and is the laziest. It's like a lord that enjoys life and doesn't do anything. Now that it's digging a hole by itself, there must be something good down there.*

With this in mind, Zhou Wen said with a smile, "Ol' Ante, it's not convenient for you to dig with your hooves. Why don't I

help you dig? If there’s anything good down there, why don’t you share half with me?”

The antelope glanced at him and after some thought, it raised its front hooves and gestured at Zhou Wen.

Zhou Wen was puzzled as he thought to himself, *You only have a hoof. There aren’t any fingers. What does your gesturing mean?*

Seeing that he didn’t understand, the antelope wrote “20%” on the ground.

Only then did Zhou Wen understand what the antelope meant by its hoof gesture. There was a groove in front of its hooves, making it look like a V. It could also represent two.

“Twenty percent is too little. How about forty-sixty?” The antelope ignored him and continued digging.

“So be it. 20%. I’ll help you dig.” Zhou Wen felt that he had nothing better to do. He could help dig and save time. Furthermore, he could split the benefits. Why not?

The antelope jumped out of the hole and pointed down, indicating for him to dig.

Why would Zhou Wen dig it himself? He summoned Tyrant Behemoth. The two horns on Tyrant Behemoth’s head were like spinning electric drills as it dug at a fast speed.

What surprised Zhou Wen was that the metallic powder below was indeed extraordinary. Despite Tyrant Behemoth’s immense strength, it failed to easily penetrate the metallic powder.

After drilling for a while, it had dug a hole more than ten meters deep. The metallic powder it dug out turned darker and darker like coal.

Furthermore, the metallic powder had a smell. It wasn’t pungent, but it resembled the smell of ink on a newspaper.

“Ol’ Ante, what’s down there? How deep do we have to dig?” Zhou Wen knew that the antelope was very intelligent and could definitely answer him. It depended on its willingness to speak.

The antelope extended its hoof and drew two words on the ground: “Eight meters.”

“There are still eight meters to go? It looks like this digging will go on for a little while longer.” Zhou Wen did some calculations. The metallic powder was getting harder to dig the deeper it went. He estimated that it would have to dig for another forty to fifty minutes.

After some thought, he decided to take out his phone to grind dungeons for a while. He would wait until Tyrant Behemoth dug out the item.

After grinding dungeons for a while, he didn’t get anything good.

The antelope suddenly nudged him with its hooves. Zhou Wen knew that something had been dug out. He walked to the side of the deep pit and looked down. He saw that Tyrant Behemoth had dug a twenty to thirty-meter deep pit.

However, Tyrant Behemoth’s body was too huge. It nearly blocked the entire mouth of the pit. Zhou Wen had no choice but to let it out before looking down.

This time, he saw something in the deep pit. It looked like a wooden stake with a diameter of about fifty to sixty centimeters. It was completely black, but there were tree lines on the surface. It was probably wood.

The antelope pointed at the log and nudged Zhou Wen. Clearly, it wanted Zhou Wen to bring the log up.

Although the log looked huge, Zhou Wen had plenty of strength too. Even if it weighed several tons, it wouldn’t be a problem for him.

However, Zhou Wen didn’t wish to take the risk. He got Tyrant Behemoth to go down and pull out the wooden stake.

Tyrant Behemoth hugged the wooden stake with its claws and pulled with all its might. The wooden stake wasn’t pulled straight out. It only moved a little and rose by ten to twenty centimeters.

Tyrant Behemoth pulled it out bit by bit, revealing more and more of the wooden stake. When the wooden stake was completely out, it was about three meters long.

Tyrant Behemoth placed the wooden stake on the ground. Zhou Wen carefully sized it up and realized that it was indeed a log. It was likely a segment of a certain tree, and the bark was rather pristine.

Zhou Wen didn’t know what kind of log it was. The bark and tree core were black, about the blackness of charcoal, but it wasn’t dirty at all when touched. It was a little cold.

“Ol’ Ante, is this the treasure?” Zhou Wen asked the antelope.

The antelope nodded and circled the log a few times as though it was examining something.

What's the use of this log? Zhou Wen didn't discover anything special about it. Apart from being a little black and heavy, it didn't seem to be anything special.

The antelope pointed at the log and then at Zhou Wen's shoulder, indicating for him to carry it.

"If you don't have a place to put it, I'll help you store it. Ask me when you need it," Zhou Wen hurriedly said.

The antelope glanced at Zhou Wen, making him feel a little uncertain. However, he never expected the antelope to nod in agreement.

Zhou Wen was overjoyed as he reached out to lift the log. He realized that it wasn't as heavy as he imagined. He could still lift it.

Zhou Wen originally imagined that he wouldn't be able to lift it since Tyrant Behemoth had exerted so much strength to pull it out.

After opening the chaos space, Zhou Wen placed the large log piece inside.

"Ol' Ante, what's the use of that log? Tell me." Zhou Wen wanted to obtain some information from the antelope. Otherwise, it would be useless even if the entire log was his.

The antelope ignored him and crawled out of the grass before returning along the path. Clearly, it was here to dig up the log and didn't plan on disturbing Zhou Wen's advance.

After returning to the fork, Zhou Wen took the correct path and continued heading for Imperial Capital.

After walking for a while, Zhou Wen suddenly felt something amiss. He felt uncomfortable, but he couldn’t tell what was wrong.

Am I reading too much into it? Zhou Wen carefully checked his surroundings with Truth Listener, but he didn’t discover any problems.

After a long journey, he entered a city. That’s when Zhou Wen realized that something was amiss. This was because the people walking towards him, be they men or women, were looking at him with strange eyes. Some women were even giggling at his face.

What’s going on? Zhou Wen was puzzled. Although he felt that he was good looking, his handsomeness wasn’t to the point of being loved by everyone. To be such a head-turner with a 100% rate creeped him out a little.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 725 - Riding A Bull and Carrying Wood

Chapter 725: Riding A Bull and Carrying Wood

Translator: CKtalon

Zhou Wen hurriedly found an empty spot and took out a mirror from his chaos space to take a look at his face.

Zhou Wen was immediately stunned.

There was a pitch-black word, “slave,” on his originally smooth forehead. It looked as if it had been written in ink, and was written beautifully.

“Ol’ Ante, what’s going on? Are you up to no good?” Zhou Wen hurriedly rubbed it with his hand, but no matter how he rubbed it, the word “slave” seemed to be embedded into his flesh. Despite abrading his skin, the word “slave” was still clearly visible.

The antelope wore an innocent expression like a human. Then, it wrote a line on the ground with its hooves. “I told you to carry it, but you didn’t. You can’t blame me.”

“You mean that piece of wood?” Zhou Wen was slightly taken aback.

The antelope nodded with a faint smile as it looked at the word “slave” on Zhou Wen’s head with an admiring gaze.

Zhou Wen hurriedly took out the wooden log from the chaos space and placed it on the ground. He asked the antelope in an extremely distrustful tone, “Tell me honestly, what is this?”

The antelope looked at Zhou Wen with an innocent look as though it was saying: “I’m just an antelope. I can’t speak.”

Zhou Wen had no choice but to grit his teeth and ask, “Will the word on my forehead disappear if I carry it?”

The antelope quickly nodded as though it was waiting for Zhou Wen to say that.

Zhou Wen had tried all sorts of methods to remove the mark on his forehead to no avail. All he could do was give it a try. He raised one end of the log with both hands and lifted it with his shoulder.

The log was really heavy. Even with Zhou Wen’s strength, he found it difficult to lift it up.

However, when Zhou Wen looked into the mirror, he realized that the slave word on his forehead had really vanished.

Zhou Wen placed the log on the ground and the word “slave” appeared again. When he lifted it up, it vanished.

“Ol’ Ante, what the hell is this? Are you expecting me to carry it all the time?” Zhou Wen felt like killing the antelope, but he was no match against it.

Antelope didn’t give excuses. It drew another line of words on the ground with its hooves. “Go to the Imperial Capital and terminate the contract.”

“You mean that as long as we get it to the Imperial Capital, we can terminate this contract?” Zhou Wen asked.

Seeing the antelope nod, Zhou Wen asked, “Then can I put it away and take it to the Imperial Capital?”

Zhou Wen planned on wearing a hat to cover the word “slave” on his forehead. The log was just too heavy. He could forget about doing anything while carrying it.

“If you aren’t afraid of death, sure.” The antelope wrote a few succinct words.

Zhou Wen immediately felt his balls ache as he thought to himself, *If I had known this would happen, I wouldn’t have shot my mouth and tried to share the benefits with the antelope.*

Suddenly, Zhou Wen realized that something was amiss.

With the antelope’s usual lazy personality, it wouldn’t have dug itself. It would definitely have gotten Zhou Wen to help it.

However, it had started the digging itself and at an extremely slow pace. Zhou Wen realized from recalling the sequence of events that the antelope was clearly trying to entice him into offering his help.

What kind of society is this? Even an antelope will lie? Zhou Wen was somewhat depressed. It was too late to say anything now. If he were to question the antelope now, not only would it not help matters, but he would also be making a fool of himself.

“Isn’t it just carrying a log to the Imperial Capital? What’s the big deal? I, Zhou Wen, have nothing else but strength,” Zhou Wen said as he lifted the piece of wood.

How freaking heavy! Zhou Wen took a few steps and felt his body break out in sweat.

The log was about three meters long and was about fifty to sixty centimeters in diameter. Its density and weight were about the same as steel. Zhou Wen found it taxing.

After walking half a street, Zhou Wen felt that he couldn’t let things continue. He would probably die of exhaustion on the way before he reached the Imperial Capital.

After some thought, Zhou Wen summoned the Great Might Vajra Bull. He carried the wooden log and got the bull to carry him. This way, he could save some strength.

“This isn’t against the rules, right?” Zhou Wen looked at the antelope.

The antelope nodded and didn’t object.

Zhou Wen heaved a sigh of relief and ordered the Great Might Vajra Bull to continue traveling. He was in no mood to carry such a piece of wood. All he wanted to do now was rush to the Imperial Capital and get rid of the slave word on his forehead.

“Is that person a fool? He’s riding a bull and carrying a piece of wood? Doesn’t he know that he can place the piece of wood on the bull’s back?”

“You don’t understand. He’s just showing off.”

“In what sense?”

“He’s showing off his great strength that he’s able to carry such a huge log. He’s showing off his ferocious mount that’s capable of lifting him and the log together.”

“Haha, that makes sense, but no matter how I look at it, I find him a little foolish!”

Wherever Zhou Wen passed, people wagged their tongues at him as though they were looking at a fool. The number of heads turning became even higher than before.

Zhou Wen ignored them and urged the Great Might Vajra Bull to speed up. He hoped to leave the city as soon as possible. Once he entered the wilderness, there wouldn’t be so many people gawking at him.

“Interesting!” On the second floor of a cafe, three men were sitting by the window and drinking coffee. One of the men saw Zhou Wen riding the Great Might Vajra Bull.

The other two men looked towards the street and immediately discovered Zhou Wen.

One of the men’s eyes suddenly lit up as he said to the other two men, “Dugu Ge, Zhang Chunqiu, why don’t we use that person as a bet and decide the ownership of that thing?”

“Tell me about it,” Dugu Ge said expressionlessly.

Zhang Chunqiu also smiled and nodded. “As long as it’s fair, I have no objections.”

“It’s definitely fair. Let’s guess when that person will put down the log on his shoulder. Whoever guesses the closest time will get the thing. What do you think?” Xia Liuchuan said.

“Sure,” Dugu Ge said directly.

“I have no objections,” said Zhang Chunqiu.

“Eh, you guys actually didn’t suspect that I arranged this person? Could it be that you guys know him?” Xia Liuchuan asked, a little surprised.

“Wang Mingyuan’s disciple, adopted son of Madam Lan of the An family. It’s quite difficult to not know him these days,” Zhang Chunqiu said.

“So he’s Zhou Wen.” Xia Liuchuan thought for a moment before smiling again. “That’s good. None of us will be at a disadvantage by using a third party as a bet. It’ll be fair and square. No one will complain even if they lose.”

After a pause, Xia Liuchuan continued, “If it were an ordinary person, after hearing so much from wagging tongues, he would probably put down the log very quickly. Since he’s not an ordinary person, it depends on when he plans to put down the log to rest. I guess it won’t take long. It should be around seven in the evening. What do you think?”

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 726 - Sister Return Lightning Pool

Chapter 726: Sister Return Lightning Pool

“With the bull’s gait, it should arrive at the nearest city around seven or eight in the evening. If Zhou Wen doesn’t wish to sleep in the wilderness, the chances of him spending the night there is very high. It makes sense to guess seven,” Zhang Chunqiu said with a smile.

“I can’t compare to Brother Zhang’s clairvoyance. It’s just a random guess,” Xia Liuchuan said with a smile.

“Then I’ll make a random guess too. 7:01,” Zhang Chunqiu said in all seriousness.

“Since you are guessing 7:01. Then I’ll guess 6:59,” Dugu Ge added.

“Hey hey, aren’t you guys going overboard?” Xia Liuchuan said unhappily.

Zhang Chunqiu replied with a smile, “Actually, it’s too easy to guess the time. Why don’t we change what we are betting on?”

“What else can we guess other than time?” Xia Liuchuan couldn’t think of anything else.

“Let’s guess which city he’s taking that piece of wood to. What do you think?” Zhang Chunqiu said.

“Alright, let’s bet on that. I’ll let you guys guess first this time,” Xia Liuchuan said.

“There’s no need. Let’s write it on paper and open them together.” Zhang Chunqiu handed paper and pen to Xia Liuchuan and Dugu Ge.

The three of them gave their answers and opened them together.

After looking at each other’s answers, the three of them looked at each other in dismay. Among the three of them, two of them wrote the Imperial Capital, while Xia Liuchuan wrote the Capital.

However, the Imperial Capital and the Capital were basically the same. It was just that the locals of the Imperial Capital were more used to calling it the Capital.

“It looks like we can’t bet on this either.” Xia Liuchuan smiled.

“Why don’t we make it simpler? We’ll bet on whether he can reach the Imperial Capital alive,” Dugu Ge said.

“There are only two answers—yes or no. How are the three of us going to bet?” Xia Liuchuan said.

“That’s simple. Reaching the Imperial Capital alive, reaching the Imperial Capital after he’s dead, and not being able to reach the Imperial Capital. Isn’t that three options? The time limit is a month. What do you think?” Dugu Ge said.

“That makes sense. Who will choose first?” Xia Liuchuan looked at Dugu Ge.

“Since I was the one who suggested the rules, I’ll make the final choice,” Dugu Ge said.

Zhang Chunqiu wore a heavy expression as he did some calculations. After a while, he said, “If no one wants to snatch the option from me, I’ll choose the option that he reaches the Imperial Capital after he’s dead.”

“I won’t vie with you for that choice. I’ll choose the option that he reaches the Capital alive,” Xia Liuchuan said.

“Then the remaining choice is mine. I guess he won’t be able to reach the Imperial Capital,” Dugu Ge said.

“In that case, let’s travel together and follow him. Let’s see the outcome,” Zhang Chunqiu suggested.

“Fine with me.” Dugu Ge stood up.

The three of them left the cafe and chased after Zhou Wen.

Zhou Wen carried the wooden log and left the city. Although he was riding the Great Might Vajra Bull, he still needed to expend a lot of stamina to carry the wooden log. When he left the city, Zhou Wen’s forehead was already beading with sweat, and his clothes were drenched.

Helpless, Zhou Wen could only switch to the Ancient Sovereign Sutra and fuse with the Defy Ancient Sovereign Life Soul. With the augmentation of the powerful lifeforce, he could continue while carrying the log.

The Great Might Vajra Bull wasn’t having an easy time either. It slowed down significantly and its speed was nothing like usual. It ran like an old bull dragging a cart.

Not long after leaving the city and entering the mountains, the sky suddenly darkened. Dark clouds covered the sky as lightning bolts flashed like divine dragons. Occasionally, ferocious shadows would appear in the dark clouds.

Is it going to rain? Zhou Wen couldn't help but frown when he heard the thunder. He stared at the thick, dark clouds.

Dugu Ge, Zhang Chunqiu, and Xia Liuchuan followed behind Zhou Wen from afar. They didn't chase too closely. With Zhang Chunqiu, who was clairvoyant, there was no need to be afraid of losing him, nor did they need to get too close.

At that moment, they also saw the dark clouds and lightning that filled the sky. However, they weren't as optimistic as Zhou Wen.

"Chunqiu, what do you think?" Xia Liuchuan stared at the dark clouds in the sky with a serious expression.

Zhang Chunqiu did a simple divination and said, "An ominous omen…"

"Don't try to fool me with those charlatan methods. I want to hear the truth." Xia Liuchuan interrupted Zhang Chunqiu.

"To be honest, a break-out creature is about to appear. Furthermore, it doesn't look too weak. From the looks of it, you will be busy," Zhang Chunqiu said with a smile.

Among the three of them, only Xia Liuchuan needed Zhou Wen to reach the capital alive to win the bet. He naturally wouldn't let Zhou Wen die here. As long as he could win, Xia Liuchuan didn't mind helping Zhou Wen.

As they spoke, Zhou Wen sped up, hoping to reach the city earlier.

Unfortunately, the log was too heavy. Even if the Great Might Vajra Bull ran with all its might, it couldn’t run fast.

Zhang Chunqiu pinched his fingers, divining as he walked. He looked around and suddenly, his expression changed as he shouted, “That’s not right!”

“What’s wrong?” Xia Liuchuan asked curiously.

Before Zhang Chunqiu could answer, he heard an explosion in the sky. A bolt of lightning descended from the sky and struck a nearby forest.

Strangely, when the lightning struck the forest, there were visible electric arcs. The forest that was enveloped by the lightning only flashed with lightning, but there was no fire.

And this was only the beginning. Large swaths of lightning kept striking the forest, covering all the plants with a layer of lightning. However, the plants didn’t die. Instead, they became more spirited.

“Thunder-trigram above, lake-trigram below. It’s Sister Return Lightning Pool. It looks like things aren’t looking good,” Zhang Chunqiu said as he did the calculations.

After spending some time with Zhang Chunqiu, Xia Liuchuan had a basic understanding of divination. Upon hearing that, he said, “I don’t think it’s a dangerous divination, right? I remember hearing you say that Sister Return Lightning Pool means that in order to obtain greater benefits, one needs to pay a certain price in exchange. It’s just like marrying off one’s sister.”

“Although what you said isn’t entirely correct, it’s not too far off. However…” Before Zhang Chunqiu could finish his sentence, he suddenly saw the plants that were covered in

lightning seem to come alive. Their leaves and branches trembled as they shot out bolts of lightning.

Instantly, the criss-crossing lightning enveloped Xia Liuchuan and company.

This level of lightning naturally didn’t affect them much. Xia Liuchuan shattered the lightning with a wave of his hand.

Thunder boomed in the sky again. This time, the thunder was especially loud, causing the entire mountain range to tremble. And in the dark clouds in the sky, a ball of green lightning fell like a meteor.

Boom!

A large area of the forest was destroyed as a figure emitting lightning appeared in the ruins.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 727 - Hotel

Chapter 727: Hotel

Translator: CKtalon

Xia Liuchuan looked over and saw that it was a tiger with wings on its back. Azure lightning danced on its body as though every cell was flashing with lightning.

The tiger immediately saw Xia Liuchuan and the other two. It flapped its wings and instantly transformed into lightning.

“Not good!” Xia Liuchuan’s expression changed as he summoned an ancient sword. The ancient sword split into two at every turn until there were eight. It transformed into a sword formation that resembled a metallic wall of copper and iron that defended Xia Liuchuan.

Dugu Ge rapidly retreated like a ghost. He was unbelievably fast. Zhou Wen’s all-out use of Transcendent Flying Immortal was not much better.

Zhang Chunqiu flicked his sleeve and talismans appeared in front of him, turning into a talisman formation that protected his body.

At that instant, an azure bolt of lightning tore through the sky and transformed into a lightning net. Instantly, it enveloped the sword formation and the talisman formation. No matter how fast Dugu Ge’s movement technique was, he wasn’t as fast as the lightning. He was also enveloped.

Rumble!

The sword formation shattered and the talismans were burned. The might of the lightning was like heavenly

punishment that could destroy everything.

“Ah!” The three of them cried out tragically as their bodies convulsed from the lightning. Their hair was smoking.

Zhou Wen, who was riding with the wooden log on his shoulder, looked in the direction behind him in puzzlement. He saw lightning striking in the distant mountain, producing incessant rumbling sounds. He couldn’t help but mutter to himself, “Why is this lightning so terrifying? Could it be that the lightning and rain have mutated? From the looks of it, I should rush to the city ahead and find a place to stay.”

Zhou Wen urged the Great Might Vajra Bull, hoping that it could run faster.

However, the big guy was panting in exhaustion. It had no way of running any faster.

Zhou Wen was somewhat worried. The dimensionalization was still limited to Earth itself and didn’t involve the satellites outside. Therefore, the Federation could still guarantee basic communication with artificial satellites.

If the artificial satellites were affected in the future, the means of communication would be even weaker.

Thunder rumbled in the distance as bolts of lightning descended from the sky. The sound of thunder was terrifying.

Thankfully, Zhou Wen wasn’t struck by lightning. He rushed all the way and finally arrived at a nearby city at 6 p.m.

The lightning in the mountains rumbled, but it wasn’t that terrifying in the city. It was just a little cloudy. There was a

drizzle that didn’t feel cold. It felt refreshing when the rain landed on his skin.

This city was relatively small. After the dimensional storms, it had suffered a serious loss of population. Now, very few shops opened on both sides of the streets. There were very few pedestrians. Most of them had probably moved to a large city.

This was a good thing for Zhou Wen. At the very least, there weren’t many onlookers wagging their tongues at him as he rode on a bull and carried a log. Occasionally, pedestrians would pass by and look at him in surprise.

Not long after Zhou Wen entered the city, he saw a small hotel. The door of the hotel was open, but there was no one inside. The tables and couches were in a mess and there was quite a bit of dust on them. From the looks of it, the owner had already left.

Zhou Wen went in and found a room. He realized that there was a bed with a blanket in there, so he chose to stay.

In any case, he only needed to rest for a while before continuing on his journey. He didn’t have too high a requirement for a place to stay. All he needed to do was shield himself from the elements.

Shortly after Zhou Wen entered the hotel, it began pouring heavily outside. The rain seemed to be water from an overturned basin. In just a short period of time, rainwater began to pool on the roads. The sewers were unable to keep up with the quantity of rainwater.

From the looks of it, I can only continue on my journey after the rain stops. Just as Zhou Wen was about to put down the

log on his shoulder, the antelope suddenly tugged at him, indicating for him to look at the ground.

Zhou Wen looked down and saw a few words on the ground. It was obvious that the antelope had written them with its hooves.

“Body must remain inseparable from the log. Separation means certain death.”

“What do you want? This place is still far from the Imperial Capital. I can’t keep carrying it, right?” Zhou Wen said gloomily.

“Can’t you read? Do you not know what it means for your body to remain inseparable from the log” The antelope gave Zhou Wen a disdainful look before writing a line on the ground.

So that’s how it is. Is it fine as long as my body doesn’t leave the log? Zhou Wen placed the log on the ground and sat on it.

With his body greatly enervated, Zhou Wen could finally heave a sigh of relief.

This piece of wood was heavy. Even after using the power of the Defy Ancient Sovereign Life Soul, he still felt that his body couldn’t take it.

Since he couldn’t leave the log, he didn’t even need to sleep on the bed. Zhou Wen pulled a blanket over himself and slept on the log.

The antelope slept comfortably on the bed; so did the chick. It even covered itself with a blanket by pecking a rug over.

With the heavy rain outside, Zhou Wen didn’t dare rashly set off. He planned on leaving after the rain stopped.

“That’s not how you kick a ball…”

Zhou Wen was sleeping soundly when a voice suddenly sounded. It nearly made him jump up in fright.

Thankfully, Zhou Wen still remembered the words that the “body must remain inseparable from the log.” He forcefully stopped himself from leaping off the log.

When he opened his eyes and took a closer look, he realized that the television in the room had turned on and it was playing an old movie.

I was nearly scared to death. How did this crappy television switch on by itself? Zhou Wen turned his head and saw that the chick had woken up at some point in time. It was fiddling with a remote control with its claws.

“I’m sleeping. Stop fooling around.” Zhou Wen reached out and sucked the remote control over. Then, he used the remote control to turn off the television. Seeing that it was still early and that the rain was still pouring outside, Zhou Wen lay down and continued sleeping.

He had just fallen asleep when he was suddenly woken up by a sound.

“This move is clearly called An Old Man Pushing A Cart. Don’t write me off as ignorant…”

Zhou Wen was woken up again and saw the television turn on again. It was playing the old movie.

“Little Feifei, stop fooling around, alright? Let me rest for a while. I’m really tired.” Zhou Wen was just about to take the chick’s remote when he realized that the chick wasn’t holding the remote at all. The remote was still beside him. The chick crawled out of the blanket and looked at him blankly.

What’s going on? Did I touch the remote control myself? That’s not right… That’s not right… This hotel has been abandoned for some time. There’s no electricity. How can the television be switched on? Zhou Wen finally snapped out of his daze and sat up to carefully watch the television.

At this glance, Zhou Wen couldn’t help but change his expression. This was because the television’s power cable was hanging down. It wasn’t plugged in at all. Even if there was electricity in the hotel, it was impossible for the television to be switched on.

“Watch and see…” The old movie on the television was still playing. Zhou Wen frowned as he stared at the television and used Truth Listener to inspect it.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 728 - Concerned Person

Chapter 728: Concerned Person

Truth Listener's ability allowed Zhou Wen to hear the internal structure of the television.

However, Zhou Wen didn't know much about circuit boards, nor did he notice anything amiss. He didn't discover any Companion Beasts or dimensional creatures inside, but he realized that there was an electric current flowing inside.

It's impossible for there to be no problems. Zhou Wen checked several times, but he failed to find anything wrong.

He tried turning the television off with the remote control, and it was switched off again. It looked no different from a normal television.

What the hell? Could it be that the electric current produced by the thunderstorm has run into the television, giving it electricity? Zhou Wen studied it for a long time, but he still couldn't figure out why there was electricity in the television. However, even he couldn't come to terms with his guess.

I want to see what's messing around. Zhou Wen used Truth Listener to monitor the entire hotel and the nearby area. Nothing could escape his ears even in the heavy rain.

Zhou Wen sat on the log and stared at the television.

Boom!

After a while, thunder sounded in the sky again. It felt like the lightning was very close, as though it had exploded outside the building.

Suddenly, the television lit up and the movie started playing.

“Cut the crap. Take off… Ah, take off your clothes… Hey, what are you doing… Are you trying to kill me… You’re really amazing. I don’t even mind you beating me to death…”

Zhou Wen kept staring at the television, while Truth Listener kept monitoring all its components. However, for some reason, there was suddenly electricity in the television.

There were no suspicious signs inside or outside the inn. There was no one, nor were there any dimensional creatures.

Strange. Could it be that the lightning outside has entered the television? Zhou Wen felt that this matter was odd. Ignoring the fact that the lightning couldn’t be transmitted in, even if it could, it would only damage the components. It was impossible for the television to work normally.

This time, Zhou Wen didn’t switch off the television. He sat there watching. The television had plenty of power. It continued playing even after quite some time.

“Who can be more miserable than me!” A person on the television tragically cried out at the sky before collapsing to the ground.

Zhou Wen couldn’t help but laugh when he saw this.

Although he found it odd, this old movie was still quite funny.

Even if there’s really someone causing trouble, I might only end up falling for someone’s scheme if I were to leave this place and enter the heavy rain. I’ll just take a wait and see approach for now. Zhou Wen decided to turn off the television and sleep on the log.

He kept Truth Listener’s ability active the entire time. Zhou Wen would immediately know of any movement. He also switched his Essence Energy Art to Dao Sutra. With the Heaven-Opening Scripture of the Highest Elder Life Soul, he could be somewhat safe.

The television kept playing old movies, one after another, but other than that, nothing else happened.

After sleeping deep into the night, Zhou Wen suddenly heard footsteps coming from the entrance of the hotel. He immediately woke up. With Truth Listener’s ability, he immediately saw a strange person run in.

The person’s clothes were tattered and his hair was charred black. He looked like he had just been struck by lightning.

He finally can’t hold back? Zhou Wen sat up and monitored the person’s every move.

After the person entered, he sniffed around before walking towards Zhou Wen’s room.

He’s indeed coming for me, Zhou Wen thought.

When the person arrived at the door, Zhou Wen was waiting for him. He wanted to see what tricks he had up his sleeve, but he never expected the person to knock on the door a few times.

“Who is it?” Zhou Wen was somewhat surprised as he asked after some thought.

The person outside said, “Zhou Wen, I’m here to snitch. You have to be careful along the way. Someone wants you dead, and it’s not just one.”

“Who wants me dead?” Zhou Wen asked.

“You should know the Dugu family and the Zhang family of the Federation’s six families, right? The Dugu family’s Dugu Ge and the Zhang family’s Zhang Chunqiu both want your life,” the person outside the door answered.

“I have no grudge with them. Why do they want me dead?” Zhou Wen asked again.

This time, the person outside didn’t answer. Instead, he asked, “You’re going to the Imperial Capital, right?”

“What has my whereabouts got to do with them wanting to kill me?” Zhou Wen didn’t quite believe the person in front of him. This person looked problematic.

“They don’t want you to enter the Imperial Capital alive,” the person outside said.

“Why?” Zhou Wen frowned.

“Don’t worry about the reason. Just be careful.” The person prepared to leave.

“Who are you? Why are you telling me this?” Zhou Wen hurriedly asked.

“Just call me Concerned Person,” the person said firmly and turned to go downstairs.

If it wasn’t for the fact that his clothes were tattered and his hair was charred black, he would have looked rather cool.

Zhou Wen found the name Concerned Person familiar. After being stunned for a while, he recalled that wasn’t the name used frequently in primary school composition?

Who is this person? Zhou Wen frowned.

He naturally wouldn’t completely believe this person’s words, but from the looks of it, he really didn’t have any ill intentions.

Is he behind the television? Zhou Wen was somewhat unsure.

The television was still playing, so Zhou Wen didn’t think too much about it. He decided to sleep first and wait for the rain to stop. After all, he was determined to make this trip to the Imperial Capital. He would deal with whatever came his way. There was no use worrying.

Not long after he fell asleep, Zhou Wen heard someone enter the hotel again.

Tap! Tap! Tap!

After the person entered the hotel, he didn’t even take a sniff before heading to the second floor and running towards Zhou Wen’s room.

His appearance was similar to the person from before. He was also wearing tattered clothes and his hair was charred black. However, it was obvious that he wasn’t the same person. This person was taller.

Could it be that the person in question is here? Just as Zhou Wen was thinking, the person had already arrived at the door. He had actually raised his hand to knock.

“Who is it?” Zhou Wen asked patiently.

“Are you Zhou Wen?” the person at the door asked.

“I’m Zhou Wen. Who are you?” Zhou Wen asked.

“I’m just a nobody. If you’re happy, call me Nameless. I’m here to tell you that someone wants to harm you on your way to the Imperial Capital. You have to be careful,” the person outside said.

Zhou Wen felt that something was amiss as he asked calmly, “Who wants to harm me?”

“It’s the Dugu family’s Dugu Ge and the Zhang family’s Zhang Chunqiu. You have to be careful of them.” The person outside said the exact same thing as the person who had just come.

“Who are you?” Zhou Wen asked.

“There’s no need for us to know each other. Let’s meet again if fate allows for it.” With that said, the person went downstairs.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 729 - Messy Information

Chapter 729: Messy Information

What the hell is up with these people? They were all struck by lightning, but they still came running to tell me to be careful of a sneak attack? In this day and age, has the human mind reached such a sublime level? Zhou Wen doubted such good things existed.

The two of them shouldn't be from the same faction. Otherwise, they would only need to come once. There's no need for the two of them to run over. However, from the lightning wounds on their bodies, they seem to have experienced similar injuries. What's going on? Zhou Wen thought about it and couldn't figure it out.

If it were anyone else, they definitely wouldn't be able to sleep after suffering such a disturbance.

Thankfully, Zhou Wen wasn't someone who was afraid of trouble. He lay down before falling asleep again.

After Concerned Person and Nameless came, the thunderstorm became much smaller and gradually dissipated.

When Zhou Wen woke up in the morning, the rain had already stopped. The television had also switched off by itself.

Could it be that it's really because of the thunderstorm that the television was running on its own? Although Zhou Wen didn't believe it, there was no better explanation.

The phone suddenly rang. Zhou Wen took out his phone and saw that it was An Sheng.

“Young Master Wen, are you in Weihui now?” An Sheng asked directly.

“Yes, how did you know?” Zhou Wen asked in puzzlement.

“The bureau has already found your whereabouts. It might not be the best choice to make this trip,” An Sheng said.

“I have to make a trip to the Imperial Capital. Don’t worry, I’ll be careful.” Zhou Wen had no choice. If it was any other time, he would definitely have turned around and returned to Luoyang. At most, he wouldn’t go to the Imperial Capital.

But now that he had the log on him, if he didn’t go to the Imperial Capital and couldn’t separate from the log at all, how was he going to pass his days?

What was worse was that being inseparable from the log was only when he was resting. If Zhou Wen wanted to move, he had to carry it. Who could stand that?

“Young Master Wen, if you insist on going, it’s best you change your route and progress speed. I’ve revised the routes for you.” An Sheng sent a document to Zhou Wen.

Zhou Wen chatted with An Sheng for a while before opening the document An Sheng had sent him. He wanted to know what to do next, but when he opened the document, his eyes widened.

The content of the document wasn’t a map at all, but a dynamic emoji. It was a picture of two tall and muscular men wearing only briefs. One of them had his arms around the

other’s neck while the other was hugging his waist as they danced together.

Zhou Wen was immediately dumbfounded as his expression turned odd. *It should have been sent wrongly… However, why would An Sheng have such a picture… Could it be…*

Zhou Wen shivered and hurriedly shook his head to deny his thoughts. He sent a message to An Sheng and asked, “Ah Sheng, did you send the wrong document?”

“Wasn’t it a map of the routes?” An Sheng quickly replied.

“No, it’s an animated picture.” Zhou Wen sent the picture along with the message.

After a while, An Sheng sent another message. “There’s something wrong with the message. I didn’t make a mistake, but the message you received isn’t right. The reason isn’t clear. It’s no longer safe to use my route. I’ll send you a few routes later. You shall choose the route yourself. Don’t tell anyone, including me.”

“Alright.” Zhou Wen nodded.

An Sheng sent a simple sketch over. It was obvious that it was hand drawn. It showed the routes from where he was to the Imperial Capital. He could choose one of them.

As the communication line could be compromised, An Sheng didn’t say much. He exhorted Zhou Wen to be careful before ending the call.

Zhou Wen studied the map before choosing a path to continue his journey.

In a cave on Chess Mountain, a seductive woman chained up was fiddling with some experimental equipment as though she was doing some research.

The phone beside her rang. The woman glanced at the phone screen and realized that the message was from Zhou Wen. With a thought, an invisible force immediately controlled the phone to tap open the message.

The phone automatically flew to the woman, allowing her to see the message.

The woman frowned.

“Baby, I want you to be my slave tonight…”

“Zhou Wen, you sure are gutsy! You want me to be your slave? I’ll satisfy you immediately.” The woman narrowed her eyes as a strange glint flashed in them.

With a thought, the woman automatically sent a message to Zhou Wen.

“I’ll fulfill your wish tonight.”

Zhou Wen was walking when he heard his phone ring. He took it out and saw that it was from The Thearch. He immediately clicked it open and was momentarily at a loss. He sent a message over.

“What do you mean? Did you send the wrong message?”

“Wrong message? Then who did you plan on sending your message to?” The Thearch quickly replied.

“How would I know who your message was meant for?” Zhou Wen felt even more puzzled.

The Thearch didn’t reply. Zhou Wen muttered to himself, “Crazy.”

After putting away his phone, he continued his journey. Zhou Wen changed his previous route and took another detour. He didn’t take the same old route.

Although taking the original path might have an unexpected effect, the probability of Zhou Wen changing his route and not changing his route was one in two. However, the chances of accurately determining which one of the new routes that Zhou Wen would take were much lower. Therefore, Zhou Wen decided to change his route.

An hour after Zhou Wen set off, Xia Liuchuan and company set off from another hotel in Weihui and continued following Zhou Wen.

They looked much better now. The day before, they had encountered the mysterious dimensional creature that nearly killed them. Although they had managed to escape in the end, they had suffered minor injuries.

With Zhang Chunqiu’s deduction, they slowly followed behind. They weren’t afraid of losing Zhou Wen.

“We were really unlucky yesterday to encounter such a terrifying dimensional creature. Thankfully, I’m smart enough and ran fast enough,” Xia Liuchuan said gloomily.

Zhang Chunqiu pondered and said, “I did some divinations when I came out today.”

“What do they say?” Xia Liuchuan asked.

“Today’s divination is still Sister Return Lightning Pool,” Zhang Chunqiu said.

“No way! Something similar will happen today?” Xia Liuchuan frowned.

“I hope not. Logically speaking, this Sister Return Lightning Pool isn’t a bad divination, but this matter seems a little odd. It’s best to be careful,” Zhang Chunqiu said.

The trio left the city and followed Zhou Wen’s path for less than two hours before feeling that something was amiss. In the wilderness, there seemed to be pairs of eyes peeping at them, but upon careful inspection, they didn’t discover any dimensional creatures or humans.

“Don’t tell me something is up again!” Xia Liuchuan felt uneasy.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 730 - Loving You for Ten Thousand Years

Chapter 730: Loving You for Ten Thousand Years

“I’m afraid it’s already happened,” Zhang Chunqiu said as he sized up the dark forest.

Dugu Ge didn’t say a word, but many tiny worms flew into the forest.

Although the Gu worms weren’t at the Mythical stage, they had hidden techniques. Furthermore, they were small in size, making it difficult for ordinary creatures to discover them.

However, after the Gu worms entered the forest, they simultaneously lost contact with Dugu Ge. No matter how Dugu Ge summoned them, he couldn’t obtain their memories. This made Dugu Ge’s expression turn ugly.

“Quick, let’s go…” As Dugu Ge spoke, he spread open a pair of insect wings, wanting to retreat along his original path.

Xia Liuchuan also summoned his ancient sword to use Sword Kinesis Flight. His straight line speed wasn’t slower than Dugu Ge’s. Zhang Chunqiu wasn’t slow either. He took out a talisman and was about to escape underground.

However, just as the trio was halfway through their actions, they saw a pair of ghostly eyes open in the pitch-black forest. The eyes stared at them, and they felt their minds blur. They were so tired that they couldn’t even open their eyes.

Bam!

The three of them fell to the ground in a daze. No matter how they struggled, their eyelids slowly closed.

As Zhou Wen walked in front, all he felt was that the surrounding forest was especially quiet.

However, it was different from the path the antelope had taken him. Although this path was quiet, there were many animals. However, they seemed especially lazy and were still sleeping.

Zhou Wen felt that something was amiss. He walked carefully, but he didn’t encounter any problems along the way. By the time he arrived at the next city, the sky had already darkened.

After a day of carrying the log, Zhou Wen felt exhausted. He found a hotel in the small city and settled down.

This small city was similar to the previous city. Almost everyone had left. Zhou Wen randomly found an empty hotel, and no one asked him for money.

That night, Zhou Wen slept very soundly. When he woke up, he stretched his back and was filled with energy.

Nothing strange happened that night, unlike the hotel the night before. The television didn’t automatically switch on.

However, Zhou Wen felt that something was amiss. His chest seemed especially heavy. He looked down and immediately screamed.

For some reason, the clothes in front of his chest were lifted up as though there were two huge papayas stuffed inside.

Zhou Wen hurriedly pulled open his clothes and immediately discovered two things that shouldn’t have appeared on him.

“How did this happen?” Zhou Wen realized that his voice had become extremely feminine. He hurriedly took out a mirror and looked at himself. He immediately realized that he had become a woman.

Zhou Wen immediately thought of the message The Thearch had sent him. He hurriedly took out his phone and sent The Thearch a message. “The Thearch, did you turn me into a woman?”

“Yes.” The Thearch quickly replied and admitted it readily.

“Why? I haven’t offended you recently, right?” Zhou Wen held back his anger and asked.

“Don’t you know why?” The Thearch asked.

“I really don’t know. Tell me clearly, what’s the reason?” Zhou Wen felt that something was amiss. From The Thearch’s tone, it seemed like he had provoked her first, but he hadn’t contacted The Thearch recently. The Thearch hadn’t contacted him either.

“Have you forgotten the message you sent so quickly? Do you still need me to remind you?” The Thearch replied.

“I really don’t know what’s going on. I’m begging you, alright? Tell me. What message did I send you?” Zhou Wen increasingly felt that there was definitely something wrong.

When The Thearch heard Zhou Wen’s words, she seemed to realize that something was amiss. With Zhou Wen’s

character being so afraid of death, how could he tempt fate by sending such a teasing message?

The Thearch thought for a moment before sending a screenshot of the message to Zhou Wen.

“Baby, I want you to be my slave tonight…” Zhou Wen’s head turned livid when he saw the screenshot.

He originally wanted to say that it wasn’t posted by himself, but looking at the chat history on the screenshot, it was indeed sent from his account.

It’s no wonder The Thearch is so angry. So that’s how it is. However, I’ve never sent such a message. If The Thearch wants to mess with me, there’s no need to go through so much trouble to send me a fake message. Could it be that my account has been hacked? Did someone send a message to The Thearch using my account? Zhou Wen was suspicious.

“The Thearch, I really didn’t send that message. How could I send you that message? Someone must have hacked my account and sent you that message.” Zhou Wen wanted to explain the matter clearly and get The Thearch to quickly transform his body back. He really had no way of going out to meet anyone.

“What do you mean it’s impossible for you to send me such a message?” The Thearch replied.

“You are a flower. How can I have any thoughts about a flower? The Thearch, just believe me. Even if I were to tease a sow, I wouldn’t dare tease you. Quickly change me back,” Zhou Wen explained.

It was fine if Zhou Wen didn’t give his explanations, but his explanations only served to make The Thearch even angrier. She replied coldly, “Just wait. You will recover on your own.”

Then, The Thearch didn’t reply to any more of Zhou Wen’s messages. Despite thinking hard, Zhou Wen couldn’t figure out what had gone wrong. She was fine just moments ago, so why was she suddenly unhappy?

Thankfully, recovery was still possible. It was probably similar to the last time he transformed into a cat. He would recover after some time.

Zhou Wen didn’t leave. He planned on staying in the hotel and waiting for his transformation to end.

During this period of time, Zhou Wen restored his phone to its factory settings. Then, he redownloaded the apps and changed the password. He used all the available methods to prevent his account from being hacked again.

…

Feng Qiuyan was practicing his saber techniques as usual.

Suddenly, his phone rang. Feng Qiuyan usually didn’t pick up his phone or read messages when he was practicing with his saber. However, when he heard that the message was a ringtone that he had specially set, he guessed that it was from Zhou Wen. Feng Qiuyan stopped practicing with his saber and picked up his phone to take a look.

Indeed, the message was from Zhou Wen. Feng Qiuyan opened the message and his expression immediately turned odd.

“There was once a sincere love that was placed in front of me, but I didn’t cherish it. I only regretted it when I lost it. This is the most painful thing in the world. If the heavens can give me another chance, I will say three words to you: I love you. If you must add a deadline to this love, I hope it will be… ten thousand years!”

Feng Qiuyan stared blankly at the message as he looked extremely confused.

How did this happen… Why would Coach treat me… How can I reject Coach without hurting his pride? Feng Qiuyan was conflicted.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 731

Chapter 731: Coach, You’re a Nice Guy

Beep… Zhou Wen was grinding while sitting on the log when he suddenly heard his phone ring. He picked it up and realized that it was from Feng Qiuyan.

“Coach, you’re a nice guy. I believe you’ll meet the best person in the future. I just want to focus on practicing my saber. I don’t plan on considering personal problems. It’s not you, it’s me…”

Zhou Wen was confused, unsure of what was going on.

Feng Qiuyan was usually cool. Apart from practicing his saber techniques, he seldom spoke to others. Why would he suddenly send such a strange message to him? It didn’t seem like his style at all.

Could it be that he was hacked like me? As Zhou Wen thought about it, he sent Feng Qiuyan a message: “Little Yanyan, have you been hacked?”

When Feng Qiuyan received Zhou Wen’s message and saw the way he addressed him as Little Yanyan, he suddenly shivered for some reason.

This nickname was given to him by Li Xuan. He was used to being called that, so he didn’t feel anything. He didn’t mind it either.

However, for some reason, when he saw this nickname today, he found it a little strange. It weirded him out in an

indescribable manner.

“I wasn’t hacked. Coach, we are still students. We should prioritize our studies. Besides, the Federation is in a dire situation now. Everyone has a responsibility for the Federation’s rise and fall…” Feng Qiuyan thought about how to reason with Zhou Wen without making him lose his dignity and not be sad about being rejected. He also hoped that it could be an impetus for him to work even harder.

Zhou Wen felt that something was amiss as he suddenly realized something. He immediately sent a message to Feng Qiuyan. “Before this message, did I send you a message? If there’s one, send me a screenshot.”

Zhou Wen took a screenshot of the first message Feng Qiuyan had sent him and sent it over. He felt that something was amiss.

Indeed, it didn’t take long for Feng Qiuyan to send a screenshot over. He even added, “Coach, it’s really not that you aren’t good enough, but that I really just want to focus on practicing my saber.”

When Zhou Wen saw the screenshot, he wished he could immediately find a hole to burrow in.

*F**k your sister. Who the hell is behind this?* Zhou Wen felt like killing someone. If this continued, he would definitely go crazy.

Left with no choice, Zhou Wen sent a message to Feng Qiuyan to explain the theft of his account.

“Yes, yes. I understand, Coach. I won’t tell anyone about this,” Feng Qiuyan replied.

“F**k that, what are you thinking? My account has really been hacked.” Zhou Wen felt like crying, but Feng Qiuyan’s words reminded him of something.

Zhou Wen hurriedly sent a message to all his friends, telling them that his account had been hacked. If there were any abnormal messages from him, they mustn’t believe it.

Not long after, people replied to him with all sorts of messages. Some said that he had cheated them of their money and wanted them to return it. Others said that they had confessed to her and wanted him to take responsibility. However, they were all joking. Zhou Wen heaved a sigh of relief when he learned that the rest hadn’t received any special messages.

Zhou Wen switched off his phone before considering the matter. He felt that something was amiss, as though it wasn’t as simple as being hacked.

This seems to have happened after I entered the hotel which had the television automatically switched on. Could it be that something has happened to my phone? Zhou Wen felt that the two matters were related.

He checked his phone and didn’t find any problems. Everything inside was normal.

For this, Zhou Wen even especially found the internal structure of the phone and compared it to his own. However, there was nothing abnormal. No special components were installed inside.

After switching on the phone again, Zhou Wen wiped his phone again and restored its factory settings. He did it again, but he didn’t know if it was of any use.

That’s not right. Zhou Wen looked at the screen and suddenly discovered a problem.

The phone was normal, but the only abnormal thing was the battery.

In the past two days, Zhou Wen hadn’t charged his phone at all. Although he didn’t usually use the phone, it had been on standby for a few days. Furthermore, he had been using it for quite some time; yet, the battery was still at 100% charge. This was clearly abnormal.

Zhou Wen discovered this anomaly and immediately thought of the television that had automatically switched on in the hotel.

I don’t know why there was an electric current in the television previously that allowed it to automatically switch on. Now, the battery in my phone doesn’t run out of charge. Could it be caused by the same thing? Zhou Wen used Truth Listener to check the phone’s battery, but he didn’t find any problems. He just found plenty of charge in the battery.

Although smashing the phone might resolve the problem, it was only a possibility. Zhou Wen thought for a moment and didn’t smash the phone. He switched it off.

Not long after, his body finally returned to normal. Zhou Wen continued on his journey with his phone.

On the way, Zhou Wen paid close attention to the phone. Truth Listener’s ability was constantly paying attention to the interior of the phone, especially the battery. However, he didn’t discover anything amiss.

When he arrived at the next city, Zhou Wen stopped to rest again. His phone remained silent.

However, in the middle of the night, something abnormal happened. The phone that had been switched off, automatically switched on.

When the phone was switched on, an app automatically started playing the old movie. Zhou Wen had already seen this old movie in the hotel.

The problem is indeed there. Zhou Wen was now certain that something had happened at the hotel in the thunderstorm.

Zhou Wen switched off his phone again, but not long after, the phone automatically switched on again. It was still playing the old movies. Furthermore, no matter how long it played them, the phone’s battery didn’t decrease.

Zhou Wen switched it off a few times, but his phone would automatically switch on. Therefore, he decided not to turn it off.

Nothing happened to the phone until the morning.

Zhou Wen observed the battery in his phone the entire night. He could sense that there was a fluctuation in the battery, and it was extremely abnormal.

Could it be that the electric current is a special dimensional creature? Zhou Wen felt that the possibility was very high.

If the electric current inside was a Companion Beast, no one would use a Companion Beast like this. Although it created some trouble for him, it wasn’t fatal.

If his enemy had such a Companion Beast, they wouldn’t have used it in such a manner. It could definitely deal him a lethal blow and throw him into eternal damnation.

How can I get the electric current out? Zhou Wen looked at his phone and thought about how to confirm if there was a dimensional creature inside.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 732 - Disappeared

Chapter 732: Disappeared

Smash my phone? It's probably not of much use. It could silently run from the television into my phone, so it should be able to move elsewhere. That would make it even harder to find it. Now that it's in my phone, at least I know where it is, Zhou Wen thought to himself.

What kind of dimensional creature is this? A pure electric creature? Zhou Wen used Truth Listener to monitor it and could only sense electric waves. He couldn't tell anything else.

Zhou Wen thought about it carefully. The electric-elemental creatures he had heard of in the past had powerful destructive powers. They were especially ferocious when it came to roasting meat.

However, this was the first time Zhou Wen had seen an electric-type creature that could enter electronic products, control electronic products, and use his software to send messages. He had never even heard of it before, much less seen it.

If it was a traditional electric-type creature, Zhou Wen could blast it apart even if it was at the Mythical stage.

However, such a sneaky fellow was not easy to deal with.

Zhou Wen was momentarily at a loss for a good solution. He wanted to use his phone to contact The Thearch to ask if she knew the origins of this strange electric-type creature, but

he was afraid that the information would be tampered with. He didn’t know what trouble it would cause.

After daybreak, Zhou Wen carried the wooden log to the phone shop. There were very few people in the small city. After circling the city for some time, he finally found a phone shop and bought a few new phones and a new SIM card.

After returning to the hotel, Zhou Wen placed the new phones in front of him and used Truth Listener to monitor the internal electric current in them.

Only his first phone had a strange electric current fluctuation. Zhou Wen left it on the table and took out a new phone. He went to the yard outside and called The Thearch.

Thankfully, The Thearch didn’t reject the call because it was an unknown number. Zhou Wen heaved a sigh of relief and recounted what he had encountered in detail.

“To think I’ve never seen such a dimensional creature before.” The Thearch actually didn’t know the origins of this dimensional creature.

After pausing for a moment, The Thearch continued, “However, from your description, it should have an electromagnetic attribute. It might even have a magnetic field ability. It’s probably impossible to destroy it by simply destroying the phone. It can easily transfer elsewhere.”

“That’s what I think too. I just can’t think of a good way to deal with it,” Zhou Wen said.

The Thearch curled her lips and said, “Were your studies for nothing? Waves need to be transmitted through matter, and particles will be affected by a force field. Even if it’s formed from pure electric energy, it can’t break these laws. Why

don’t you try using the power similar to a black hole created by Tyrant Behemoth’s Absolute Strength?”

Zhou Wen was immediately taken aback. He had been considering how to restrain the electric-type creatures that existed in myths and legends. He never expected that a dimensional creature like The Thearch would take to him using human scientific knowledge.

“How do you know that Tyrant Behemoth is mine?” Zhou Wen suddenly reacted. He hadn’t told The Thearch that Tyrant Behemoth belonged to him.

“What do I not know?” The Thearch said disdainfully.

After hanging up, Zhou Wen returned to his room. Just as he was about to test if Tyrant Behemoth’s Absolute Strength was effective, he suddenly realized that the special electric current in his phone had vanished.

Zhou Wen carefully checked the other phones and checked everything in the hotel that could be connected to electricity. He didn’t discover any abnormal electric waves.

Why is it gone now? Zhou Wen pondered for a moment and thought of a possibility.

It was very likely that the strange electric creature had overheard his conversation with The Thearch and had escaped.

Unwilling to give up, he searched the entire night without discovering any problems. In the day, Zhou Wen had no choice but to set off.

After this, nothing abnormal happened on the phone. Everything returned to normal.

Has that electric-type creature really escaped? Zhou Wen found it unbelievable that such a strange and cunning dimensional creature would be frightened away by a few words.

Not long after Zhou Wen left, three men entered the small city where he had stayed. The three of them looked haggard and they had dark eye circles. They looked like they had stayed up all night for a week and were about to die.

These three people were naturally Xia Liuchuan, Zhang Chunqiu, and Dugu Ge.

“Don’t you think that there’s something wrong with this matter? The first time we encountered that terrifying electric beast, we were nearly electrocuted to death. The second time, we encountered a Nightmare and almost lost ourselves in a dreamland forever. Why did we encounter such powerful Mythical creatures?” Xia Liuchuan said.

Dugu Ge said with certainty, “It’s definitely not a coincidence.”

Zhang Chunqiu pondered for a moment and said, “I think this matter might have something to do with Zhou Wen. Wherever he goes, nothing happens. But he leaves a wake of problems behind him.”

“Are you saying that Zhou Wen is secretly up to no good and wants to harm us?” Xia Liuchuan frowned.

“That’s not it. He probably doesn’t know that we are here. After all, it was a coincidence that we met him previously,” Zhang Chunqiu said.

“Then what do you mean?” Xia Liuchuan looked at Zhang Chunqiu in confusion.

Zhang Chunqiu pondered for a moment and said, “Did you notice that there’s something wrong with the piece of wood Zhou Wen has been carrying?”

“Of course there’s a problem. I’ve never seen such a block of wood before. It looks a little like a Gloomy Wood, but it looks even more solid than the Gloomy Wood,” Xia Liuchuan said.

“No, I’m not talking about that.” Zhang Chunqiu reorganized his thoughts before saying, “Do you feel that the log is a little sinister?”

“Sinister?” Xia Liuchuan and Dugu Ge exchanged looks, puzzled.

Seeing that they were silent, Zhang Chunqiu guessed that they had not noticed it before. He continued, “I think there’s something wrong with that piece of wood. It seems a little sinister. It doesn’t feel like a simple log.”

“If it doesn’t look like a log, what does it look like?” Xia Liuchuan asked in confusion.

“How should I put it? Nowadays, we carry out cremation or promession. In ancient times, land burials were popular. It used a wooden coffin to store a person’s corpse before burying it in the ground. Although that piece of wood looks different from a coffin, the sinister aura emitted from it makes me think of a coffin.” Zhang Chunqiu shared his feelings.

“A coffin? Are you saying that there might be a dead person’s corpse in that piece of wood? Zhou Wen is traveling with a dead person’s corpse on his back? Why is he carrying that thing?” Xia Liuchuan widened his eyes.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 733 - Sister Return Lightning Pool Again

Chapter 733: Sister Return Lightning Pool Again

“I’m only saying that the piece of wood gives me the feeling of a coffin, but I didn’t say that it’s definitely it. Perhaps it’s not. Even if it’s real, there might not be a corpse inside. Even if there’s a corpse, it might not be a human corpse,” Zhang Chunqiu said as he beat around the bush.

“Then isn’t it as good as not saying anything? Are we still following?” Xia Liuchuan asked.

“Yes, of course. This concerns the Guardian’s ownership. It doesn’t matter if you follow or not, but I have to see the outcome with my own eyes,” Zhang Chunqiu said.

“In that case, what are we waiting for? Let’s go,” Xia Liuchuan said.

The three of them set off again, but this time, they deliberately lagged far behind, trying to keep a greater distance from Zhou Wen.

However, after walking for a while, they felt that something was amiss. The surrounding fields seemed to be filled with a cold wind that made their hearts tremble.

“Old Zhang, why do I feel that something is amiss? Try divining again,” Xia Liuchuan said.

As he said, Zhang Chunqiu did another divination before his expression turned odd.

Seeing his expression, Xia Liuchuan and Dugu Ge knew that the situation wasn’t good. They hurriedly asked, “What’s going on?”

“The divination is still Sister Return Lightning Pool,” Zhang Chunqiu said with a bitter smile.

Xia Liuchuan and Dugu Ge’s expressions changed as well. During the first Sister Return Lightning Pool, they had encountered an electric beast. They met a Nightmare the second time. Now, they were encountering it again.

“Is this sister never getting married?” Xia Liuchuan said gloomily.

Xia Liuchuan’s words suddenly gave Zhang Chunqiu a flash of inspiration. He said in surprise, “Do you think that the divination of Sister Return Lightning Pool refers to that piece of wood?”

“What do you mean?” Xia Liuchuan and Dugu Ge didn’t understand.

“If my previous guess wasn’t wrong, that piece of wood is really something like a coffin. Do you think there’s a woman inside?” Zhang Chunqiu said in a bold and unconstrained manner.

“What woman? If it’s really a coffin, there should be a female corpse inside,” Xia Liuchuan corrected.

“It doesn’t matter if it’s a woman or a female corpse. Over the past few days, no matter how I divine, the results are always Sister Return Lightning Pool. I think this matter definitely has something to do with that piece of wood.” The more Zhang Chunqiu spoke, the more convinced he was.

Xia Liuchuan was about to say something when he suddenly heard a roar. The fields beside them split open and a huge earth dragon crawled out.

Zhou Wen walked ahead. Although he felt that the atmosphere was somewhat odd his entire journey, he didn't encounter any other strange things other than the electric-type dimensional creature.

Zhou Wen was in no mood to visit other dimensional zones. He walked whenever he could and rested when exhausted. He kept rushing towards the Imperial Capital, hoping to rid the crappy piece of wood from him as soon as possible.

Zhou Wen himself was fine, but Xia Liuchuan and company, who were following behind him, suffered. They experienced all sorts of difficulties along the way, almost losing their lives several times.

Xia Liuchuan ultimately couldn't take it anymore and decided to take a detour back to the Xia family in the Imperial Capital.

Zhang Chunqiu decided to continue, but Brother Dugu didn't plan on following.

"Young Master, everyone is here. When are we going to take action?" The members of the Dugu family came in front of Dugu Ge and bowed.

"Abort the plan for now," Dugu Ge said.

Everyone was taken aback. One of them asked in puzzlement, "Young Master, why are you aborting it? This concerns your contractual with a Guardian."

“It’s a long story. I’ll explain this matter to the elders in the clan. Just do as I say,” Dugu Ge said.

“Yes.” The group had just arrived and didn’t even get to rest. All they could do was turn back.

Xia Liuchuan rushed back to the Xia family. He wasn’t really afraid that he would encounter danger if he followed behind, but he had already received the news that the Xia family was prepared to attack Zhou Wen before he entered the capital. Xia Liuchuan wanted to rush back and convince Xia Dongyue to give up on this operation.

The wooden log Zhou Wen was carrying was indeed odd. Xia Liuchuan was afraid that the Xia family would end up dying as a result.

Xia Liuchuan embarked on his journey with light gear. He chose the shortest path and returned to the capital much earlier than Zhou Wen.

“Liuchuan, why are you back? Didn’t I tell you to follow Zhou Wen?” Xia Dongyue couldn’t help but frown when he saw Xia Liuchuan.

“Uncle Yue, can we abort this operation?” Xia Liuchuan was in a hurry to rush back because he might not be able to convince Xia Dongyue over the phone.

“Why should we abort it?” Xia Dongyue asked Xia Liuchuan.

“Zhou Wen is carrying a strange piece of wood to the Imperial Capital. That piece of wood has a strange background and is very sinister. I’m afraid something will happen if we touch him now,” Xia Liuchuan said.

“A piece of wood?” Xia Dongyue was a little puzzled. Xia Liuchuan had always been fearless, so how could a piece of wood make him so cautious? This was completely different from the Xia Liuchuan that Xia Dongyue knew.

Xia Liuchuan recounted what had happened when the three of them followed Zhou Wen.

“Zhang Chunqiu guessed that the terrifying Mythical creatures we encountered along the way are related to that piece of wood. I think it’s very likely,” Xia Liuchuan said.

“It sounds reasonable, but even so, it doesn’t mean that we can’t touch Zhou Wen. We can choose to carry out the operation near the capital. The dimensional zones there are under our control. We don’t have to worry about any break-out creatures causing trouble,” Xia Dongyue said after some thought.

“Uncle Yue, why take such a risk? The grudge between Zhou Wen and the bureau is known by the entire Federation. It’s highly likely that he came to the capital this time for the bureau. Why should we be used by the bureau?” Xia Liuchuan continued with his persuasion.

Xia Dongyue shook his head and said, “This is Old Master’s idea. You know his temper. No one can change what he has decided.”

When Xia Liuchuan heard the words “Old Master,” his heart sank. He knew that this operation was already a foregone conclusion and could not be changed.

“Liuchuan, you don’t have to worry too much. Although that piece of wood might be a little strange, with our Xia family’s heritage, there’s no need to worry about it. It’s just Zhou Wen. Taking him down isn’t difficult.” Xia Dongyue patted

Xia Liuchuan on the shoulder and said, “Since you’re back, stay home and get some rest. I’ll get someone from the East Courtyard to handle this matter.”

“I hope so.” Xia Liuchuan felt that this matter wouldn’t succeed so easily, but there was nothing he could do.

The Old Master of the Xia family was the supreme existence in the Xia family. Even Xia Dongyue, who had become a member of the Senate, didn’t dare disobey his words. No one could change his mind.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 734

Chapter 734: Erected on the Peak of the Forbidden City

Although Xia Liuchuan was a little worried, he had no choice but to leave Xia Dongyue’s office.

“Brother, you seem to have something on your mind. Is it because you didn’t obtain the Guardian cocoon?” Xia Xuanyue asked with concern when she saw Xia Liuchuan frowning.

“Zhou Wen is on his way to the Imperial Capital. Old Master has already ordered the people from the East Courtyard to bring him back before he enters the Imperial Capital,” Xia Liuchuan said.

“Why is Old Master taking Zhou Wen into custody?” Having not heard of this, Xia Xuanyue’s expression changed slightly when she learned of it.

Xia Liuchuan hurriedly stopped Xia Xuanyue from continuing. He looked around and seeing that no one was passing by, he said softly, “You should be the only person to know about this. Don’t mention it again, and don’t tell anyone. Also, don’t ask too much about the Old Master. Do you understand?”

“Why?” Xia Xuanyue was still confused.

In fact, Xia Xuanyue’s impression of the Old Master was very vague. Although the Old Master was the true head of the Xia

family, Xia Xuanyue had only seen him a handful of times despite having grown up in the Xia family.

In her impression, the Old Master was a stern old man in a white robe. He occasionally appeared at important Xia family ceremonies. He usually lived in the East Courtyard.

The East Courtyard was also a restricted area in the Xia family. Without the Old Master’s summoning, even Xia Dongyue couldn’t enter and leave the East Courtyard freely.

Only those who were in charge of taking care of the Old Master’s daily needs could enter the East Courtyard.

Most of the people who were in charge of taking care of the Old Master’s daily needs were not from the Xia family. However, they were all loyal to the Old Master and wouldn’t hesitate or doubt his orders.

When Xia Xuanyue was young, she had seen an elder of the Xia family who was seized by the people from the East Courtyard for some unknown crime. After entering the East Courtyard, he never came out again.

“Don’t ask why. Trust me. I’m your brother. I won’t harm you,” Xia Liuchuan said as he looked into Xia Xuanyue’s eyes.

“I understand.” Xia Xuanyue nodded slightly.

“Get some rest. Since this matter has already been handed over to the East Courtyard, we don’t have to bother about it anymore.” Xia Liuchuan seemed to have something on his mind. After saying that, he returned to his residence.

However, before he could open the door, someone sent a message saying that the Old Master wanted to see him.

Xia Liuchuan’s heart quaked. He had already guessed why the Old Master was looking for him.

Xia Liuchuan took a deep breath and followed the butler to the East Courtyard.

If it wasn’t necessary, Xia Liuchuan would rather not enter the East District ever again.

When he was young, he had actually liked visiting the East Courtyard. The Old Master doted on him very much. The other members of the Xia family were not allowed to enter the East Courtyard, but he was specially permitted by the Old Master to enter freely.

At that time, Xia Liuchuan could be said to be able to get whatever he wanted. Even if he plucked the flowers personally planted by the Old Master, the Old Master would only laugh and never punish him.

However, after he turned fifteen, Xia Liuchuan seldom went to the East Courtyard. Although he still had the privilege of doing so, he was unwilling to go again.

As he stepped into the familiar garden and saw the familiar decorations and flowers, Xia Liuchuan had mixed feelings.

“Little Chuan, Dongyue has already told me about your matters. Don’t worry, I’ll let Zhou Wen enter the Imperial Capital alive. I’ll let you win the bet and obtain the chance to contract the guardian.” A white-robed elder sat in a stone pavilion with a pond by its side, feeding the carp in it.

“Sorry to trouble you.” Xia Liuchuan bowed slightly.

He was a fearless person who dared to do anything, but in front of this Old Master, he didn’t dare to do anything rash.

As the elder fed the fish, he continued, “It’s nothing much. It’s just a matter of time. After you contract the Guardian, I want you to personally bring Zhou Wen back to me. Can you do it?”

“Old Master, everyone around you is stronger than me. Why must I go?” Xia Liuchuan said.

“If you aren’t willing, let Xuanyue go,” the elder said indifferently.

Xia Liuchuan gapped his mouth as though he wanted to say something, but he didn’t say anything in the end. He only nodded. “Got it. I’ll bring Zhou Wen back.”

“Remember, you are the future master of the Xia family. No matter how strong the people under you are, they are ultimately servants,” the elder said.

“I understand,” Xia Liuchuan lowered his head and said.

…

Zhou Wen rushed all the way to the Imperial Capital and didn’t encounter anything strange. Apart from the fact that the log was especially heavy and making it difficult for him to go any faster, there wasn’t much trouble.

When Zhou Wen saw the two words—Imperial Capital—from afar, he couldn’t help but heave a sigh of relief.

“Ol’ Ante, where should I place this log when I reach the Imperial Capital?” Zhou Wen asked the antelope.

The antelope wrote on the ground with its hooves, “Erect it on the peak of the Forbidden City.”

Zhou Wen saw the words written by the antelope and immediately widened his eyes.

The Imperial Capital's Forbidden City was now a very special dimensional zone. It was also one of the dimensional zones that the Xia family valued the most. Its importance was no less than that of the Ancient Sword Tomb.

According to what Zhou Wen knew, ever since the dimensional storms, the Xia family had sealed off the Forbidden City dimensional zone, preventing anyone from approaching.

If he wanted to enter, it shouldn't be difficult for him to do so with the Invisibility Cloak's ability.

However, it was impossible for him to enter the city without anyone noticing while carrying such a huge object. He had to clash with the Xia family.

"Ol' Ante, are you deliberately setting me up?" Zhou Wen seriously suspected that the antelope had deliberately set him up because he had forcefully dragged it out to come with him on this trip.

The antelope ignored him and stepped across the Imperial Capital's Boundary Stone.

Zhou Wen had to follow. He had no other choice at this point in time.

Zhou Wen seldom went out, so he had never seen a city as big as the Imperial Capital. Compared to it, Luoyang appeared rather small in scale and numbers.

As there were too many people, Zhou Wen didn't ride the Great Might Vajra Bull. He walked forward while carrying the

wooden log.

Although this was the Imperial Capital, people still gawked when they saw Zhou Wen walking on the streets with such a huge block of wood.

Zhou Wen originally planned on contacting Wang Lu when he arrived in the Imperial Capital. However, it wasn’t appropriate for him to treat her to a meal while carrying a huge log. Therefore, he decided not to contact her. It wouldn’t be too late to contact her after resolving the matter with the log.

He found a hotel and checked in. The room was rather expensive, but Zhou Wen still paid for it without any hesitation. Furthermore, he booked the room for a week.

This place was relatively close to Forbidden City. Through the floor-to-ceiling windows in the room, one could see the distant Forbidden City. This was also why Zhou Wen chose to stay here.

How can I sneak this log in? Zhou Wen stood in front of the window and stared at the ancient Forbidden City in the distance as many thoughts flashed through his mind.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 735 - Creditor Comes Knocking

Chapter 735: Creditor Comes Knocking

Translator: CKtalon

Ever since he entered the Imperial Capital, Zhou Wen felt all sorts of gazes staring at him. Furthermore, there were definitely more than one or two people staring at him.

It was almost impossible to enter the Forbidden City without anyone noticing.

Do I have to barge my way in? Zhou Wen was somewhat hesitant.

Although his present strength could be considered top-notch in the Federation and he had many Mythical Companion Beasts, he probably wouldn't be able to gain an advantage against a hero family.

After all, they had been operating for decades. Even if they didn't have a phone to grind for resources, they definitely had a lot of resources in real life.

What puzzled Zhou Wen was that despite a large number of spies staring at him, no one attacked him despite him being in the capital for so long.

When did the bureau become so good-tempered? They actually haven't come looking for trouble? Zhou Wen felt that there was something amiss.

Zhou Wen was right. Something had happened on the way.

However, due to an accident, the Dugu family, who had originally planned to attack him, aborted the operation. The bureau was waiting for the Xia family to take action, and because the Xia family wanted Xia Liuchuan to win the bet, they allowed him to arrive at the Imperial Capital safely.

Now that the Xia family was waiting for Xia Liuchuan to sign a contract with the Guardian, everything was calm.

As he was thinking, he felt a fluctuation from a Companion Beast. Explosive Fiend Man that had evolved again had finally completed its evolution.

Zhou Wen checked Explosive Fiend Man’s stats in-game.

Explosive Fiend Man: Epic (Evolvable)

Life Providence: Unlawful

Life Soul: Destroyer

Strength: 41

Speed: 41

Constitution: 41

Essence Energy: 41

Talent Skill: Death List, Time-Blast

Companion Form: Self-detonation Device

His stats had risen in a normal fashion. His skills hadn’t changed, but he had gained a Life Soul.

Zhou Wen summoned Explosive Fiend Man in-game. It didn’t look much different from when it was at the Legendary

stage. It looked like a very modern armored soldier.

Let me see what use your Life Soul has. Zhou Wen got Explosive Fiend Man to use the Destroyer Life Soul.

With a thought, the red liquid in the glass tubes on Explosive Fiend Man's back injected into his body through the pipes. Then, Zhou Wen saw Explosive Fiend Man's armor emitting strange red flames. Its body was filled with a dangerous aura.

Explosive Fiend Man seemed to have been injected with stimulants. His Speed and Strength had greatly increased, and his skills had also been strengthened.

Previously, he needed at least thirty seconds to complete a Time-Blast. However, with the augmentation of the Destroyer Life Soul, he only used less than three seconds to complete a Time-Blast. His efficiency had increased by ten times.

This Destroyer Life Soul is quite strong! Zhou Wen was overjoyed. In the past, Explosive Fiend Man's skill cast time was too slow, so it wasn't convenient to use it.

Although the speed of a skill at three seconds was still a little slow, much slower than an instantaneous skill, considering Explosive Fiend Man's special skill, three seconds was considered rather powerful.

I can consider using Explosive Fiend Man to set up some time bombs nearby. If anyone tries to sneak up on me, I'll make sure they have no chance of returning. Zhou Wen only had this thought. After all, this was a hotel. It wouldn't be good if he injured the workers who were cleaning up the room.

If Explosive Fiend Man advances to the Mythical stage, I might be able to instantly release a time bomb. That would be awesome. Zhou Wen looked forward to Explosive Fiend Man's growth.

The doorbell rang. Zhou Wen used Truth Listener to take a look and was immediately stunned. The person standing outside the door was Wang Lu.

Zhou Wen hurriedly opened the door. When Wang Lu saw him, she said unhappily, "You didn't inform me, your debtor, despite coming to the Imperial Capital? Are you trying to renege on your debt?"

"Sorry, I encountered some trouble. I originally planned on contacting you after resolving it, but I never expected you to come here yourself. By the way, how did you know that I was in the Imperial Capital?" Zhou Wen asked.

"What's so strange about that? After all, our Wang family has some influence in the Imperial Capital. For a famous person like you to come to the Imperial Capital, I have no choice but to know. This news keeps buzzing around my ears. It's so irritating that I can't sleep," Wang Lu said.

"As you know, I'm in a lot of trouble now. I don't have the time to eat with you for the time being. Go back now and I'll look for you when I'm done with my matters," Zhou Wen said.

Zhou Wen mainly didn't want his matter to implicate Wang Lu, but when Wang Lu heard that, she curled her lips and said, "If you want to renege on your debt, just say so. Why do you have to come up with so many excuses? Since I came looking for you, I'm naturally not afraid of trouble. Why are you being so wishy-washy? Don't tell me you don't even have time to go downstairs to eat?"

“It’s not that I don’t have time, but it’s really inconvenient.” Zhou Wen pointed at the wooden log under his buttocks and said, “I have to carry this with me at all times. Where do you think I can eat conveniently when I have to take it with me?”

“What’s this? Why are you carrying it? Just leave it in the room. If you find it unsafe, I’ll get someone to look after it for you,” Wang Lu said.

“It’s not about safety. I can’t leave it. I have to carry it with me. It’s a long story,” Zhou Wen said helplessly.

Wang Lu thought for a moment and said, “It doesn’t matter. Just take it with you and follow me. I’ll find a place. It’s very quiet there. That place can easily accommodate a few more logs of the same size.”

“That’s not very nice, right? You know that my relationship with the bureau isn’t good. This is where the headquarters of the bureau is…” Zhou Wen really didn’t wish for Wang Lu to be embroiled in his matters.

“Cut the crap. I don’t like hearing that. Just follow me.” Having known him for so long, Wang Lu knew Zhou Wen’s temper quite well. There was no need to waste her breath on him. All she needed to do was drag him away.

“I’m afraid it will affect your family.” Zhou Wen had no choice but to make things clear.

“I’ve already said it. Since I dared to come, I’m naturally not afraid. Although the bureau is very powerful, they can’t do anything to me. Don’t worry. Quickly follow me. I didn’t eat anything the entire morning just to eat this meal of yours. I’m starving,” Wang Lu said.

The chick smartly flew onto Wang Lu’s shoulder. Even the antelope took the initiative to approach her and fawned over her. Zhou Wen had no choice but to carry the wooden log and follow Wang Lu.

Looking at Wang Lu teasing the chick in front of him, Zhou Wen’s mood improved significantly. Under such circumstances, it was indeed rare for Wang Lu to be willing to seek him out. Typical schoolmates would probably keep their distance from him.

Zhou Wen originally imagined that Wang Lu was taking him to a restaurant, but to his surprise, Wang Lu brought him all the way to a traditionally-styled ancient building complex.

After circling the alley for a while, he entered one of the ancient buildings’ courtyard.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 736 - The Geniuses' Accidents

Chapter 736: The Geniuses' Accidents

After entering the yard, Wang Lu's expression turned solemn. "Do you know that you are in grave danger now?"

Zhou Wen nodded. "I know."

"Why are you still here when you know? Do you feel uncomfortable if you don't get beaten up for a day?" Wang Lu rolled her eyes at him.

"I didn't plan on coming here like this." Zhou Wen originally planned on using the Invisibility Cloak to enter the Imperial Capital, preventing others from knowing that he had been here.

But now, he was carrying a huge log. It was useless even if he was invisible. The Invisibility Cloak couldn't cover such a huge log. Anyone would know that something was amiss when they saw a log floating in midair.

"I'm afraid you still don't know the current situation. If it was just the bureau finding trouble with you, that would be fine. With your abilities and me acting as your informant, it shouldn't be difficult to deal with it. However, the person who wants to touch you isn't just the bureau. There's also the real master of the capital, the Xia family. It's easy for you to come to the Imperial Capital, but I'm afraid it won't be easy for you to leave," Wang Lu said.

"Why does the Xia family want to deal with me?" Zhou Wen asked in puzzlement.

He didn’t have any deep feud with the Xia family, so there was no reason for them to kill him, right?

“The intricacies are very complicated. I’ll get my grandmother to tell you later.” As Wang Lu spoke, she walked towards the main room.

“Grandma, I’ve brought a friend,” Wang Lu shouted into the hall as she walked.

“Crazy girl, just come. What are you shouting for?” A voice came from the backyard and an old woman walked over.

The woman looked quite old. Her hair was already white, but for some reason, there weren’t any wrinkles on her face. She looked very elegant, and it was easy to guess that she must have been a beauty when she was young.

“This lad is the Zhou Wen you often mention, right?” the old woman said as she sized him up.

“When did I? It’s just that he owes me so much and hasn’t paid me back that I occasionally mention him. I’m afraid that I’ll forget the debt,” Wang Lu said as she tugged the old woman’s arm.

“I see.” The old woman smiled at Zhou Wen and said, “Lad, you look so young. Why did you get yourself in debt? Furthermore, your debtor is a female student. Don’t tell me you want to be a freeloader?”

“Grandma Wang, it’s not like that.” Zhou Wen wanted to explain.

However, before he could finish his sentence, he was interrupted by the old woman. “But it doesn’t matter. Our Wang family doesn’t have much of anything else, but we

have plenty of money. There’s no way to spend it all eating. Just treat it as doing a good deed and come often to have a bite. It doesn’t matter if you stay here. Our Wang family happens to be lacking a live-in son-in-law…”

“Grandma, what are you talking about?” Wang Lu’s face flushed red. “Zhou Wen is only my classmate. It’s not what you think.”

After a pause, Wang Lu added, “Grandma, you must already know about Zhou Wen’s situation. Tell him how dangerous his current situation is.”

Upon hearing Wang Lu’s words, Grandma Wang retracted her smile. “Let’s talk inside.”

Zhou Wen followed them into the hall. Wang Lu gestured for him to sit down before she brewed tea for them all.

“Grandma Wang, I heard from Wang Lu that the Xia family wants to find trouble with me, but I don’t have much of a grudge with the Xia family. Why are they targeting me?” Zhou Wen couldn’t help but ask.

Grandma Wang nodded and said, “The crazy girl is right. The Xia family might really attack you. You shouldn’t have come to the Imperial Capital.”

After a moment of silence, Grandma Wang continued, “The crazy girl is willing to bring you here because she doesn’t treat you as an outsider. So I won’t say things meant for outsiders. What I’m about to say next is just speculation. It’s not necessarily the truth. So don’t take it too seriously.”

“Grandma Wang, don’t worry. I’m not a talkative person,” Zhou Wen said.

“It’s fine even if you are talkative. Anyway, I won’t admit to what I said today, nor will the Wang family.” Grandma Wang said with a smile, “According to my guess, the reason the Xia family is targeting you isn’t because your teacher was Wang Mingyuan, nor is it because you crippled the Xia family’s juniors’ Essence Energy sea in the Holy Land.”

“Then what’s the reason?” Apart from these two reasons, Zhou Wen really couldn’t figure out what connection he had with the Xia family.

Although Demonic Neonate’s demonic sword was snatched from Xia Xuanyue, Xia Xuanyue herself didn’t know that it was done by Demonic Neonate. The Xia family shouldn’t pin the blame on him.

Grandma Wang said with a strange expression, “If there’s a reason, there’s only one. You are too talented.”

Zhou Wen was slightly taken aback. He found it difficult to believe that the Xia family wanted to kill him just for this reason.

There were many talented youths nowadays, and he wasn’t the only one. Even if the Xia family were to suppress the other wealthy families, it shouldn’t have to resort to such means.

After all, the dimensional zones’ seals weren’t stable. The six families alone probably wouldn’t be able to withstand the dimensional army. To suppress the local factions would only make them appear short-sighted.

As if she had seen through Zhou Wen’s thoughts, Grandma Wang continued, “In the past, there were precedents of geniuses disappearing or encountering accidents in the Federation. Furthermore, there has been more than one

incident. Similar incidents happened every once in a while. It’s fine if it’s just ordinary geniuses, but most of these geniuses are targets that the various families focused on grooming. With the protection of the various families, it’s almost impossible for them to take such a huge risk. Yet, something happened to them.”

“In Luoyang, you should know that there’s a Li family in Luoyang. The Li family once had a talented youth. His talent wasn’t inferior to the current Overseer An, but before he truly grew in strength, he died because of some problem,” said Grandma Wang with a sigh.

“You mean that the disappearance of these geniuses has something to do with the Xia family?” Zhou Wen had already heard Li Xuan mention the matter regarding his elder brother’s demise.

However, Li Xuan had learned about it from Li Mobai. He never expected Grandma Wang to know about it.

Grandma Wang declined to comment and continued, “In the past, our Wang family also had such a genius. Similarly, he died because of some matters. That matter looked like an accident, but I didn’t think it was that simple. Therefore, I secretly did investigations, but I didn’t manage to find anything. However, during this period of time, I discovered something. The accidents of those young geniuses seemed to have something to do with the Xia family.”

“Is the Xia family resorting to every means possible, to the point of attacking their competitors, just to consolidate their forces?” Zhou Wen frowned.

“This is also what I found strange back then. The Xia family didn’t target their opponents who had conflicts of interest with them. They seemed to be only interested in those

outstanding geniuses and didn’t differentiate between friend and foe. Therefore, when I investigated in the beginning, I was also confused and didn’t think about the Xia family. Later, after investigating for a long time, I realized that it appeared to be the Xia family behind this matter,” Grandma Wang said.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 737 - Where Is the Highest Spot?

Chapter 737: Where Is the Highest Spot?

Translator: CKtalon

After Zhou Wen left the yard, he kept thinking about what Grandma Wang had said.

Although there was no evidence that the Xia family was related to the geniuses' demise, Zhou Wen also felt that there was something amiss.

It didn't seem right to explain it away as the Xia family deliberately suppressing ordinary families as a way to strengthen their status.

According to Grandma Wang's investigations, some of the young geniuses who had gotten into trouble didn't belong to the East District, much less the Xia family's circle of influence.

The situation in the other regions was chaotic. It was a happy outcome for the Xia family, but they clearly didn't think so.

Regardless, I have to think of a way to get this crappy piece of wood into the Forbidden City. Otherwise, it won't be convenient for me to do anything. When Zhou Wen was with the Wang family, he had also asked some questions regarding Forbidden City.

Wang Lu and Grandma Wang didn't know much about Forbidden City. This was because the Xia family had occupied it from the beginning of the dimensional storms.

They never allowed outsiders to enter, so no one knew what had happened inside after the dimensional storms.

However, Grandma Wang told Zhou Wen something very interesting. She had lived through the dimensional storms, so she had entered Forbidden City quite often before they occurred.

She said that she had once visited the Forbidden City when she was young. Back then, the weather suddenly turned bad and thunder rumbled in the sky.

She originally wanted to return home quickly, but when she passed a certain spot in the city, she suddenly saw some strange shadows.

The shadows wore ancient clothes as they walked in the alley of Forbidden City. They looked like ancient consorts and palace maids.

What was even stranger was that their figures were transparent like spirit bodies.

Spirit bodies weren’t rare now, but before the dimensional storms, they were terrifying.

At that time, Grandma Wang was still very young. She was quite frightened and immediately ran away. However, her youth made her curious. Later on, she went to the same place a few times, but she didn’t see those shadows again.

Grandma Wang checked the information on the Internet. It said that the magical phenomenon might be a result of lightning during a rainy day. It was like a camera that recorded past scenes. Under identical weather conditions, the footage would be played.

Of course, this was only a guess. No one could verify its authenticity.

However, this wasn’t strange. What was strange was that after the dimensional storms, every time there was a thunderstorm, strange sounds would come from the Forbidden City.

Although outsiders couldn’t enter Forbidden City, one could still hear some sounds from it during a thunderstorm if they lived close.

After Grandma Wang heard about this matter, she waited for a thunderstorm. Indeed, she heard some strange sounds coming from inside.

Some of the sounds reminded her of the palace maids and concubines she had seen back then.

This had all been personally experienced by Grandma Wang, so it was naturally true.

Zhou Wen had previously searched for information about the Forbidden City on the Internet. In fact, compared to the other ancient cities, the history of Forbidden City wasn’t too long. From its establishment, it had only experienced two feudal dynasties.

However, its scale was incomparable to the other ancient cities.

Forbidden City also had the title of Eight-Armed Nezha Demonic City. If one were to mention the tallest building in the city, it would be the Hall of Supreme Harmony. It was nearly forty meters tall.

Zhou Wen looked up the information mainly to confirm the location of the so-called peak of Forbidden City. It was to prevent him from having to seek it out after entering. That would be troublesome.

However, when Zhou Wen looked over from the hotel's top floor, he discovered a strange place. The tallest building he saw from the hotel wasn't the Hall of Supreme Harmony, but a Corner Tower in the corner of the city.

Zhou Wen didn't know if it was because he was too far away or if it was because of the angle, he could only see the Corner Tower and not the Hall of Supreme Harmony.

Despite this, Zhou Wen still searched for information on Corner Towers. This search left him alarmed. Although Corner Towers were inconspicuous, the meaning it represented was extraordinary.

These Corner Towers were not meant for mortals to live. It was similar to Deer Terrace Pavilion. Their purpose was to guide immortals down to the mortal world and protect the safety of the imperial city. The reason they were named Corner Towers was that the immortals which were meant to be received were the corner mansions of the twenty-eight Lunar Mansions.

The corner mansion wasn't unfamiliar to Zhou Wen. He even had it as a skill, so when he saw the information, Zhou Wen felt that this place was extraordinary. It might really be the peak of Forbidden City.

Furthermore, the architectural standards of the Corner Tower were extremely high. It had three eaves, nine beams, eighteen pillars, and seventy-two spines. Such an architectural style was unique in the Forbidden City.

Zhou Wen originally imagined that the famous Hall of Supreme Harmony was at the peak of Forbidden City, but the more he looked at it, the more he felt that a Corner Tower was the true peak of the Forbidden City.

Corner Towers are built on the city walls of Forbidden City, so it might indeed be taller than the Hall of Supreme Harmony, but there are four of them. Which Corner Tower should I erect the log on? Zhou Wen thought to himself.

Without any accurate information, Zhou Wen could only wait until he entered Forbidden City before comparing them to the Hall of Supreme Harmony Hall.

Zhou Wen also asked the antelope, but the antelope only said to erect it on the peak of Forbidden City. It didn't know the exact location of the erection.

Could it be that I can just randomly erect it on a higher spot? Zhou Wen thought.

What Zhou Wen was most worried about was how to enter Forbidden City.

If he barged in, it would only give the Xia family an excuse to attack him. However, on the other hand, he would be free once he rushed into the city and erected the log.

With the Invisibility Cloak, who could stop him from escaping?

This plan looked perfect, but the premise was that he could really abandon the log. If he still couldn't abandon it when the time came, he would be in trouble.

Just as Zhou Wen was hesitating, he heard someone walking towards his room.

Through the door, Zhou Wen could sense that the person's bearing was extraordinary. He was in his twenties and probably not much older than An Tianzuo.

Zhou Wen found the person somewhat familiar, but he couldn't recall where he had seen him.

"Is Zhou Wen around?" Xia Liuchuan knocked on the door and asked.

When Zhou Wen heard the voice, he immediately recalled where he had seen him. This fellow was the Concerned Person who had tipped him off on that stormy night.

Zhou Wen opened the door and asked Xia Liuchuan, "Concerned Person, are you here to tip me off again?"

Xia Liuchuan said calmly, "I don't understand what you're talking about. My name is Xia Liuchuan. I'm here to challenge you. This is my challenge letter. I hope you can give me an answer now."

"Why are you challenging me?" Zhou Wen asked as he looked at Xia Liuchuan's challenge.

"Don't tell me you've forgotten that you once crippled the Essence Energy sea of my Xia family members in the Holy Land?" Xia Liuchuan said.

"I see. I accept your challenge." Zhou Wen actually agreed without any hesitation, surprising Xia Liuchuan.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 738 - Decisive Battle at the Peak of the Forbidden City

Chapter 738: Decisive Battle at the Peak of the Forbidden City

“Did you read it carefully? This isn’t an ordinary challenge. We have to fight until one person falls,” Xia Liuchuan reminded him.

“I’ve read it carefully. I can agree to a life-and-death duel with you, but on one condition. The location of the duel has to be chosen by me,” Zhou Wen said.

“Don’t tell me you want to have the duel in Luoyang?” Xia Liuchuan said with a smile.

Xia Liuchuan would have done such a thing himself. If Zhou Wen also did the same, Xia Liuchuan could have agreed if he had any say. However, he had no choice in this duel. He couldn’t agree to Zhou Wen’s request.

“No, it’s in the Imperial Capital,” Zhou Wen said.

“Where do you want it to happen?” Xia Liuchuan asked.

To be able to fight an expert like you can be considered a boon in life. I probably won’t have many opportunities like this in life, so I naturally have to choose a place that matches you and me. How about we fight at the peak of Forbidden City? Just as Zhou Wen was worrying about how he could enter the Forbidden City, Xia Liuchuan came knocking on his door.

Zhou Wen didn’t care about life-and-death duels at all. As long as he could settle the crappy piece of wood, he would immediately put on the Invisibility Cloak and leave. It didn’t matter if he won.

“This…” Xia Liuchuan was in a difficult position.

It was fine to have the duel elsewhere, but Forbidden City was under the Old Master’s control. Without the Old Master’s orders, even the Xia family members couldn’t enter.

“What? Are you still worried when it’s your Xia family’s territory?” Zhou Wen asked.

“Alright, I promise you. Since you decided on the location, I’ll decide on the time,” Xia Liuchuan said.

“Sure. When?” Zhou Wen asked.

“Wait for my news.” Xia Liuchuan turned around and left.

This fellow is really odd. He was clearly the Concerned Person that night. Why isn’t he admitting to it? Zhou Wen was puzzled.

However, as long as nothing unexpected happened, the matter of entering Forbidden City had been resolved by accident. With the opportunity of a duel with Xia Liuchuan, Zhou Wen could try erecting the log at higher spots.

Dealing with Xia Liuchuan was better than dealing with the Xia family’s gank.

While waiting for Xia Liuchuan’s reply, Zhou Wen stayed in his room to grind. He didn’t go anywhere.

Since he had nothing to do, Zhou Wen planned on trying to kill the nine black dragons. He could use Doctor Darkness's Darkness Right Hand to kill the three black dragons.

After bringing all his Mythical Companion Beasts, Zhou Wen arrived at the underground sea again.

With Behemoth on the left, Truth Listener on the right, Six-Winged on his back, he held a golden sword in his hand. Along with the old bull under his crotch and a Torch Dragon coiled behind him.

Zhou Wen had even summoned the extremely weak Medusa. Perhaps it would be of some use if she stood by the shore to provide support.

Demonic Neonate naturally didn't need to be mentioned. She had already joined the battle. However, she found a cave beside the underground sea and hid there. She had no intention of participating in the battle head-on.

"Come, my Doctor Darkness." Zhou Wen summoned his most important Companion Beast and made Doctor Darkness transform into a soul that fused with him.

Zhou Wen immediately felt his physique improve significantly. He was almost comparable to a Mythical stage entity.

This was the benefit of Doctor Darkness. Not only could his Companion Form bestow Zhou Wen with skills, but it could also raise Zhou Wen's basic stats, allowing him to have the ability to fight against Mythical creatures. This was something no other Companion Beast could do.

Unfortunately, Banana Fairy hasn't completed her evolution. Otherwise, I would have a greater chance. Zhou Wen

prepared everything and summoned some Poison Bat Companion Beasts to use as bait to lure the nine black dragons over.

In a short while, he saw a huge wave stir above the surface of the sea. Nine black dragons tore through the waves and wiped out the horde of Poison Bats in the blink of an eye.

“Fight, my pets.” After Zhou Wen issued the order, Torch Dragon, Behemoth, and Truth Listener rushed into the sea.

As the Great Might Vajra Bull was afraid of water, it didn’t dare enter the water to fight. On the bank, it transformed into the thousand-armed, bull-headed state. Golden light shot out from its palm as it attacked the nine black dragons.

Torch Dragon didn’t use Bright Torch Vision World. Although using Bright Torch Vision World could instantly kill the black dragons, nothing would be left behind. That would make killing the black dragon useless.

In a one-on-one battle, Torch Dragon was unable to gain the upper hand without using Bright Torch Vision World. It was obvious that the black dragons were top Mythical creatures.

The moment Tyrant Behemoth’s Absolute Strength was unleashed, the invisible chains between the nine black dragons produced effects. They condensed the power of the nine dragons and collided with Tyrant Behemoth’s Absolute Strength. Tyrant Behemoth immediately fell into a disadvantage.

Truth Listener constantly harassed them from the side, but it didn’t dare clash head-on with the black dragons.

Zhou Wen had been waiting for an opportunity to use Darkness Right Hand. All he needed was for his hand to

touch one black dragon.

However, the black dragon’s body was too huge. It was probably unrealistic to pull out its heart with a single palm, so Zhou Wen’s target was their brains.

He didn’t expect to dig out their brains. All he needed to do was stir them up.

Although the nine black dragons were independent Mythical creatures, they were connected by invisible chains. In battle, they were like one. Their attack and defense were flawless. Zhou Wen watched for a while, but he failed to find an opportunity to attack.

These nine black dragons are really difficult to deal with. Zhou Wen activated Doctor Darkness’s Eyes of Penetration to see if there were any weaknesses in the black dragons’ bodies.

If Doctor Darkness hadn’t advanced to the Mythical stage, he wouldn’t have been able to see so far with his Eyes of Penetration. His ability to see through things wasn’t that strong either, so he definitely wouldn’t be able to see through the black dragon’s body. Now, all he needed to do was approach it a little and he could clearly see the situation inside the black dragon’s body.

This glance left Zhou Wen slightly taken aback. In the black dragon’s brain, there was a crystal-like bead with a faint dragon-shaped stream of light swirling inside.

That thing can’t be the legendary dragon pearl, right? Zhou Wen carefully sized up the pearl in the black dragon’s brain and quickly made a new discovery.

The black dragon’s brain had the pearl as its core. Although there were parts similar to the brain, it looked like those parts were just supplementary. It was somewhat different from a human’s brain.

What was even more magical was that when the dragon-shaped stream of light in the dragon pearl circulated, it looked like a word. Zhou Wen carefully identified it as the word “Kan.”

Could it be… Zhou Wen hurriedly looked at the other eight black dragons and indeed, he found a dragon pearl in their heads. However, the words in the dragon pearls were different.

Qian, Kun, Zhen, Xun, Kan, Li, Gen, Dui, and Wu. The nine black dragons’ dragon pearls each had these words. The first eight words were from the Eight Trigrams, and the last word was Wu. Zhou Wen guessed that it represented Wuji—Limitless.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 739 - Killing the Nine Dragons

Chapter 739: Killing the Nine Dragons

Zhou Wen observed for a long period of time. By the time he was done, his luxurious lineup of Mythical pets had been destroyed by the nine black dragons. Torch Dragon was heavily injured, and despite Tyrant Behemoth roaring repeatedly, it was unable to reverse the situation.

Truth Listener showed signs of going berserk. The Great Might Vajra Bull onshore had been killed at some point in time.

Demonic Neonate apparently failed to find a chance to attack. She had been hiding all this time.

Zhou Wen directly unsummoned Truth Listener, preventing it from shattering another earring. Torch Dragon was also unsummoned. The heavily injured Torch Dragon basically didn’t have any combat strength left.

Torch Dragon, who couldn’t use Bright Torch Vision World, could only be considered top-notch in combat, but being top-notch wasn’t enough in such a battle.

Only Tyrant Behemoth was at the front line. It was being tortured by the nine black dragons as it roared angrily, but it remained completely suppressed.

Not only was Zhou Wen not discouraged, he even felt happy.

This was because, after his long period of observation, he discovered a secret of the nine black dragons.

If one looked at their appearance and abilities, the nine black dragons were no different. Their offensive methods were also similar, so they could be seen as nonuplets.

Therefore, Zhou Wen’s initial plan was to kill them one by one.

However, when Zhou Wen used his Eyes of Penetration to see the dragon pearls in their bodies, he discovered a special phenomenon.

Although the power in the nine dragons’ bodies could be transferred freely without any problems during the transfer, Zhou Wen realized that the Wu dragon pearl would light up every time their powers were transferred.

For example, when the Li dragon attacked by gathering the power of the nine dragons, the Li dragon pearl would light up, but the Wu dragon pearl would also light up. The other dragon pearls didn’t light up.

However, when the Kan dragon pearl attacked, the Kan dragon pearl would light up along with the Wu dragon pearl.

In other words, no matter which dragon condensed the power of the nine dragons, the Wu dragon pearl would light up along with it. Only when the Wu dragon pearl’s dragon attacked would only its dragon pearl light up.

From this vantage, Zhou Wen suddenly realized that perhaps the Wu dragon pearl’s dragon was the core of the nine black dragons, or rather, a transit station. Perhaps it was because of its existence that the nine black dragons could freely transfer their powers.

If I kill the black dragon with the Wu dragon pearl first, will the ability to combine the nine dragons’ strength as one be

ineffective? Zhou Wen decided to give it a try.

After quitting the game and respawning the dungeon, Zhou Wen entered the game again and summoned his luxurious lineup of Mythical pets. However, this time, after getting Doctor Darkness to possess him, he switched his Essence Energy Art to the Godfiend Era. The Lost Country Life Soul ring also appeared on his finger.

Since I can't find an opportunity, I'll create one myself. Zhou Wen stared intently at the nine black dragons in the middle of the battle and locked onto the black dragon with the Wu dragon pearl.

The six wings on his back flapped gently as Zhou Wen gradually approached the battlefield. When the nine black dragons noticed him and were about to attack, Zhou Wen suddenly vanished.

The black dragon that was about to attack was slightly taken aback as Zhou Wen's figure appeared above another black dragon.

He genuflected on the dragon's head. With his left hand pressing on the dragon's skull, his right hand stabbed into the dragon's head with a devil-like force.

The hard dragon scales and dragon bones failed to block the ghostly palm. In an instant, Zhou Wen retracted his palm from the dragon's head. And between his slender fingers was a crystalline dragon pearl.

After losing the dragon pearl, the black dragon was like an empty shell that had lost its brain. Its body lost its vitality and fell to the bottom of the sea.

What surprised Zhou Wen even more, was that after he crushed the dragon pearl, the invisible chain that connected the nine black dragons shattered. The nine black dragons were immediately in a state of disunity.

Two black dragons roared as they charged at Zhou Wen. With Transcendent Flying Immortal, Zhou Wen's speed wasn't any slower than the black dragons'. Without the augmentation of the nine dragons' collective strength, the black dragons couldn't catch up to Zhou Wen.

A blackish-purple sword beam streaked across the sea and stabbed into the eye of a black dragon, piercing through the dragon pearl in its head. Demonic Neonate had finally taken action and dispatched one.

Meanwhile, Tyrant Behemoth was even more excited. Without the suppression of the nine dragons' collective strength, its Absolute Strength unleashed, snapping the dragon horn off a black dragon. Then, it threw punch after punch, shattering the black dragon's head.

The nine black dragons that originally had the absolute advantage immediately became the ones being ravaged after losing the key black dragon with the Wu dragon pearl.

There was no need for Zhou Wen to do anything else as the luxurious lineup of Mythical pets killed the remaining black dragons.

Indeed, it's difficult for those who aren't in the know, but it's not difficult for those who do. Knowledge is power. If I had known that these nine black dragons had such a relationship and weakness, I wouldn't have waited until today to kill them. The saying of the forefathers is right. Know yourself and your enemy, and you will never be defeated. Zhou Wen sighed at the importance of knowledge.

‘Killed a Mythical Creature, True Blood Demon Dragon. Discovered Dimensional Crystal.’

After the True Blood Demon Dragons were killed, notices kept coming in. Finally, a True Blood Demon Dragon dropped a dimensional crystal with 80 Strength. It was very high-level and valuable, but Zhou Wen couldn’t use it now.

There are only two black dragons left! Zhou Wen was still looking forward to having a black dragon Companion Egg drop.

However, even when the last black dragon was penetrated by Demonic Neonate’s sword, it failed to drop a Companion Egg. Instead, another dimensional crystal dropped, an Essence Energy Skill Crystal.

Zhou Wen picked up the Essence Energy Skill Crystal and realized that the stat requirement was 41 Strength and 21 Fire stat. It was different from the True Blood Demon Dragon Crystal he had previously obtained.

With his Strength and Fire stat lacking, Zhou Wen had no choice but to give it up.

Zhou Wen was already used to it, so he didn’t feel the pinch. Seeing that his Companion Beasts weren’t injured, he led them towards the war wagon.

Now that the nine black dragons weren’t disturbing him, Zhou Wen wanted to give it a try to see if he could kill the Guardian in the war wagon. This was the hope for Slaughterer Life Soul’s advancement.

After opening the door, Zhou Wen entered with his Companion Beasts and saw the cocoon floating in the void.

He wasn’t in a rush to approach it. Zhou Wen used his Eyes of Penetration to look at the cocoon, hoping to see what the creature inside looked like.

Something strange happened. The white cocoon was clearly right in front of him, but the Light of Penetration seemed to be separated from the white cocoon by a massive distance. No matter how hard he tried, his vision couldn’t reach the white cocoon.

Zhou Wen immediately recalled that he had encountered the same situation when he first entered. Back then, he had wanted to pierce through the white cocoon to extract the blood, but he couldn’t touch the white cocoon no matter what. It was only because of the characteristics of the Overlord Sword that he could tear through space and touch the white cocoon in the void.

Light of Penetration clearly didn’t have such characteristics, so it was impossible to reach the white cocoon.

Since we are going to fight, there’s no point in watching. Zhou Wen summoned the Golden Overlord Sword and slashed out a sword beam that tore through the void and headed straight for the white cocoon.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 740 - Six Fingers

Chapter 740: Six Fingers

With the augmentation of Ever-Victorious and Unstoppable, the golden sword beam tore through the white cocoon's shell.

As the cocoon cracked, Zhou Wen saw a palm extend out of the white cocoon.

It was a man's palm with long and powerful fingers. Zhou Wen could clearly see that there were six fingers on the palm, but the layout of the six fingers didn't seem out of place. It was about the same as a normal palm.

There was a different ring on each of the six fingers. The design and material seemed to be different. As he could only see the palm, he didn't know what the rings looked like from the front.

Just as the Golden Sword Aura was about to strike the palm, an invisible fluctuation seemed to ripple from one of the rings.

Wherever the fluctuations passed, time and space seemed to freeze. Countless dust fragments froze as the Golden Sword Aura stopped in front of his palm.

Although the Golden Sword Aura was less than an inch away from the palm, it was unable to advance any further.

It wasn't just the Golden Sword Aura. Zhou Wen's pets were affected by the fluctuations. Although they tried to resist the

fluctuations, it was to no avail.

Apart from Tyrant Behemoth being able to move thanks to Absolute Strength, most of the Companion Beasts were in a frozen state.

Companion Beasts at Torch Dragon and Truth Listener's level found it difficult to move amidst the fluctuations.

The blood-colored avatar was also immobilized. Zhou Wen felt that the blood-colored avatar's bodily functions had stopped circulating. Its Essence Energy seemed to freeze as it was completely unable to move according to commands.

Tyrant Behemoth roared as it charged at the white cocoon and threw a punch at the palm with six fingers.

The frozen dust and Golden Sword Aura were shattered by Tyrant Behemoth's fist. Just as Tyrant Behemoth was about to strike the palm, another ring on the palm flickered.

Boom!

Tyrant Behemoth punched Torch Dragon's body and immediately sent Torch Dragon's huge body flying. It caused blood to spray out of Torch Dragon's body.

Zhou Wen was somewhat surprised. Tyrant Behemoth had clearly struck the white cocoon, but for some reason, its fist struck Torch Dragon's body. It looked like a spatial dislocation skill.

From the looks of it, the guardian in the white cocoon has spatial skills, Zhou Wen thought to himself.

Tyrant Behemoth continued its violent attacks, but every time its fists struck the white cocoon, it would strangely

strike a companion. After a few punches, the palm in the white cocoon didn’t suffer any damage. Instead, Zhou Wen’s Companion Beasts were beaten up by Tyrant Behemoth.

After watching for a while, Zhou Wen was certain that the Guardian was definitely a spatial expert.

Once Tyrant Behemoth’s Absolute Strength timer ran out, it was immobilized by the spatial fluctuations.

At that moment, a void that resembled a black hole appeared in the palm of the palm. It sucked in the Companion Beasts and the blood-colored avatar before the game screen went black.

A Guardian with spatial attributes has abilities like spatial solidification, spatial fold, and black hole. Tyrant Behemoth can fight it while using Absolute Strength… Zhou Wen organized the clues he knew, hoping to find a way to counter it.

I wonder if Lost Country’s spatial powers will be of some use. After some thought, Zhou Wen realized that unless Torch Dragon used Bright Torch Vision World from the beginning, it would be very difficult to kill the Guardian.

Why are Guardians so strong? Are there no weak Guardians that can allow me to kill for the advancement of my Life Souls? Zhou Wen waited for some time. After all his cooldowns were over, he dripped his blood to respawn and enter the game again.

The nine black dragons in the underground sea had yet to respawn. The war wagon was still parked at the bottom of the sea, but the door had been closed. Zhou Wen didn’t summon any other pets other than Explosive Fiend Man.

Tyrant Behemoth’s Absolute Strength couldn’t be used yet. Therefore, Zhou Wen didn’t think of killing the Guardian this time. He just wanted to see if his Godfiend Era was useful when fighting the Guardian.

Zhou Wen got Explosive Fiend Man to plant time bombs all over the war wagon one after another. After more than an hour, the war wagon was covered with time bombs.

Under Zhou Wen’s orders, the huge war wagon exploded like an atomic bomb. It formed a terrifying shockwave at the bottom of the sea, producing a huge jellyfish-like cavity.

Zhou Wen had severely underestimated the might of the explosion. He had already retreated to a hundred meters away, but he still died from the blast. The game screen went black.

Is the war wagon’s energy so massive? Zhou Wen was somewhat surprised.

When he arrived in front of the war wagon again, it had already recovered to its original state. Zhou Wen began getting Explosive Fiend Man to plant time bombs around the entire wagon.

This time, Zhou Wen had experience. He retreated far away and watched from a distant bank.

With a command, Explosive Fiend Man ignited all the time bombs. Zhou Wen, who was standing by the bank, saw the waves churning before they stirred up a tsunami-like wave.

Ignoring the winds and shock waves, Zhou Wen immediately dived into the sea. However, when he saw the war wagon, he was slightly taken aback. Such a terrifying explosion had failed to blast through it. The war wagon’s outer shell was

damaged, but it was undergoing automatic self-repair. It didn’t take long for it to recover to its original state.

Seeing that it was impossible to blast the war wagon and the Guardian inside to death, Zhou Wen had no choice but to open the door and rush in.

This time, Zhou Wen used the Godfiend Era Essence Energy Art. The Lost Country ring appeared on his finger before he slashed at the white cocoon.

After the white cocoon was sliced apart, the palm appeared again. The spatial fluctuations caused everything around it to fall silent again. The blood-colored avatar’s body was no exception.

However, it was somewhat different this time. Although the blood-colored avatar couldn’t move, the Godfiend Era’s Essence Energy Art continued flowing. This meant that Zhou Wen could still use Essence Energy Skills and other abilities.

Without any hesitation, Zhou Wen used Lost Country’s spatial teleportation ability and teleported into the white cocoon. He wanted to see what the Guardian inside the white cocoon looked like.

However, when Zhou Wen teleported, he realized that he wasn’t able to teleport into the white cocoon as he wished. Instead, he appeared in front of the palm.

What awaited him was a black hole that had already opened in the palm. In the next second, the game screen went black again.

Zhou Wen thought for a moment and understood what was going on. The other party was a spatial expert, and his Lost Country was only a Primordial Life Soul. The difference in

level was too great. It was already pretty good that he hadn’t been sent into the black hole when he used spatial teleportation.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 741 - Duel

Chapter 741: Duel

However, Zhou Wen wasn’t discouraged. Instead, he felt that this might be an opportunity.

With this Guardian around, it was equivalent to having another spatial expert as a sparring partner. Perhaps there was a chance to improve Lost Country.

Zhou Wen dripped his blood to revive and once again entered the game to challenge the Guardian. He naturally suffered a crushing defeat, but Zhou Wen also sensed the influence the other party’s spatial powers had on him.

Through watching and personally experiencing the various spatial-type skills of the Guardian, Zhou Wen gained a lot more insight into spatial-type skills. No matter how much he had studied in the past, it was only theoretical knowledge. It was very rare to have such an opportunity to experience it.

…

While Zhou Wen was repeatedly dying from gaming, Xia Liuchuan came to the East Courtyard again and mentioned the battle he had scheduled with Zhou Wen on the peak of Forbidden City.

“You should know that Forbidden City is a forbidden zone of our Xia family. Outsiders are not allowed to enter,” said Old Master Xia.

“I know, but I also wish to fight him there.” Xia Liuchuan didn’t explain much.

“In that case, so be it. However, defeat is not an option. No matter what, Zhou Wen can’t leave Forbidden City again,” said Old Master Xia indifferently.

Xia Liuchuan didn’t say anything and just bowed slightly.

“Let’s set it to be in four days. There are still problems in Forbidden City that need handling. You should head back and prepare for now,” Old Master Xia said.

…

Zhou Wen was grinding when he suddenly heard his phone ring. It was none other than Wang Lu.

“You really agreed to battle Xia Liuchuan?” Zhou Wen heard Wang Lu’s voice the moment he picked up the phone.

“Yes,” Zhou Wen replied.

“To battle a Xia family member in the Imperial Capital, and in the Forbidden City which they control? Are you ignoring what Grandma said to you?” Wang Lu said anxiously.

“Don’t worry. I have my own plans. Nothing will go wrong… Alright, let’s just end it here. I have a call coming in. I’ll answer it first…” Zhou Wen picked up the other call as he spoke. It was from Ouyang Lan.

“Little Wen, did you really agree to a duel with Xia Liuchuan in Forbidden City? Don’t be afraid. If you were forced by the Xia family, I’ll be able to help you,” Ouyang Lan said.

“Sis Lan, the Xia family didn’t force me. I did it willingly. Don’t worry. I can handle it.” Zhou Wen felt touched when he heard Ouyang Lan.

Although they were not related by blood, Ouyang Lan was indeed very concerned about him.

“Little Wen, your father only has you as a son. We won’t be able to have children in the future. You need to think twice before doing everything. Don’t risk your life. Tell me if there are any problems. I’ll help you resolve them.” Ouyang Lan didn’t quite believe Zhou Wen. She remained very worried.

“Sis Lan, there’s really no need for you to worry. It’s not convenient to speak on the phone. However, I have the ability to protect myself. Nothing will go wrong.” Zhou Wen was afraid that his phone was bugged, so he didn’t dare inform Ouyang Lan about his possession of the Invisibility Cloak.

Ouyang Lan pleaded with Zhou Wen a few more times before his phone rang, bringing an end to his phone call with Ouyang Lan.

It was An Sheng. He was clearly aware that Zhou Wen was going to duel with Xia Liuchuan. However, he didn’t persuade Zhou Wen not to fight.

“I’m already on my way to the Imperial Capital. Is there anything I need to do in advance?” An Sheng said simply.

“Don’t come. I’m leaving the Imperial Capital soon,” Zhou Wen hurriedly said.

“I’ll wait for you outside the Imperial Capital,” An Sheng said.

“Don’t do it near the Imperial Capital. Let’s have it somewhere far away.” Zhou Wen knew that he couldn’t stop An Sheng.

“Alright, I’ll think of a way to inform you when the time comes.” An Sheng hung up after saying that.

…

This news quickly spread in the Imperial Capital. Anyone who was in the know felt that Zhou Wen was courting death.

Ignoring the fact that Xia Liuchuan was a rare genius in the Xia family, just the fact that he was dueling someone from the Xia family in their territory made people place their bets against Zhou Wen.

Dugu Ge and Zhang Chunqiu were in the Imperial Capital, so they naturally heard the news.

“This battle will give us a perfect opportunity to see how much strength that Guardian raised Loser has,” Zhang Chunqiu said with a smile.

“It looks like your divination wasn’t accurate at all. You actually let Xia Liuchuan get the Guardian,” said Dugu Ge.

Zhang Chunqiu smiled and said, “Destiny is unpredictable. Don’t take my divinations seriously. I’m just spouting nonsense.”

“Then do some more divinations. Who will win in the duel between Zhou Wen and Loser?” Dugu Ge said.

“Based on my divination, the Xia family will definitely not lose,” Zhang Chunqiu said.

Dugu Ge glanced at Zhang Chunqiu in contempt before returning to his room.

Zhou Wen had already received Xia Liuchuan's notice to fight in Forbidden City in four days. However, only Zhou Wen was allowed to enter.

Zhou Wen had no choice but to contact Wang Lu, hoping to leave the antelope and chick with her.

"You hung up so quickly just now. Why am I in your sights again?" Wang Lu said angrily.

"It was my stepmother. Do you think I could reject her call?" Zhou Wen consoled.

"Zhou Wen, you know about the Xia family. You really shouldn't have agreed to the duel with Xia Liuchuan. Xia Liuchuan might not be famous and his fame might not be comparable to the younger generation's John and Lance, but this person is definitely much more terrifying than Lance. He's someone who has truly survived countless life-and-death situations. He's different from those elites who were brought up in safe environments."

Wang Lu continued, "Although Xia Liuchuan is known as the most profligate scion of the Xia family, his talent and social connection aren't inferior to An Tianzuo's. My grandmother met him when he was six. Back then, Old Master Xia took him to the Ancient Sword Tomb to play. At that time, a Mythical sword happened to appear. Xia Liuchuan, who was only six years old, saw the battle between the Mythical sword and humans and actually comprehended a Mythical sword technique. His talent in combat is terrifying."

"If he's not strong, it would be meaningless," Zhou Wen said with a smile. He just didn't want Wang Lu to be too worried.

“If it were anywhere else, it wouldn’t be a problem for you to fight Xia Liuchuan. However, that’s Forbidden City. How can you fight Xia Liuchuan there? Even if you defeat him, it will be difficult for you to walk out,” Wang Lu sighed.

“Don’t worry. If I, Zhou Wen, want to leave, no one in the Federation can stop me,” Zhou Wen said with certainty.

Wang Lu knew that it was too late to say anything now. Zhou Wen had already accepted the challenge, so it was too late for regrets.

Four days quickly passed. The Xia family took the initiative to send a car to pick Zhou Wen up, but Zhou Wen rejected them. He carried the wooden log and walked towards Forbidden City.

It wasn’t that he didn’t want to take the car, but the car couldn’t fit the log.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 742 - Pure Hook Evil-Slaying

Chapter 742: Pure Hook Evil-Slaying

Zhou Wen arrived in front of Forbidden City's city gates and saw many people gathered outside. They were all here to watch the battle, but because the city gates were sealed, no one could enter.

The Meridian Gate was tightly shut with people from the Xia family standing guard outside. Forbidden City had four city gates, but usually, only Meridian Gate could be opened. The other three city gates needed a certain opportunity for their opening, so the only way to enter and exit Forbidden City was through the Meridian Gate.

"Zhou Wen, Young Master Xia is already waiting for you in the city. Please enter," a Xia family guard said to Zhou Wen.

Zhou Wen was about to walk in with the log when he was stopped by the guard.

"People can enter, but things have to be left outside," the guard said as he pointed at the log on Zhou Wen's shoulder.

"Does your Xia family have to take away their opponent's weapons before a battle?" Zhou Wen said indifferently.

The moment Zhou Wen said that, the onlookers roared with laughter. Although they didn't believe that Zhou Wen really used such a huge club as a weapon, it didn't stop them from feeling contempt towards the Xia family's high-handedness.

“Let him in,” a middle-aged man on top of the city gates said to the guard.

Only then did the guard let Zhou Wen enter the city with the log.

“Old Master, is it really a good idea to let him in like this? If there’s really something wrong with the log as Liuchuan said, wouldn’t it be very disadvantageous for him?” the middle-aged man said to Old Master Xia, who was sitting at the top of the city gate to watch the battle.

“It’s fine. This is Forbidden City. Even if Leng Zongzheng is hidden in that log, he won’t be able to escape unscathed today,” Old Master Xia said calmly.

…

On a tall building in the distance of Forbidden City, Shen Yuchi was looking at the situation around Meridian Gate with his binoculars.

He couldn’t enter Forbidden City; he probably wouldn’t be able to see anything even if he went to the Meridian Gate.

“Siyuan, what’s your take regarding this battle’s outcome?” Shen Yuchi asked Qiao Siyuan when he saw Zhou Wen enter the Meridian Gate.

“I believe regardless of the outcome today, it will be very difficult for Zhou Wen to walk out of Forbidden City,” Qiao Siyuan replied.

Shen Yuchi didn’t comment as he continued using his binoculars to observe the situation inside Forbidden City.

However, there was a mysterious interference from Forbidden City. They could only see the area above the buildings, but not the actual situation inside.

…

Zhou Wen walked through the Meridian Gate and saw five white compounds leading to the Gate of Supreme Harmony. Xia Liuchuan was standing in front of it.

Passing through the Gate of Supreme Harmony was the Hall of Supreme Harmony. However, it was unknown if the layout of the city had changed after the dimensional storms.

Zhou Wen looked around but didn’t see any dimensional creatures.

“There’s no need to look around. There are no dimensional creatures in Forbidden City. You can fight me with all your might without worry,” Xia Liuchuan said.

“That’s great. However, since it’s the final battle at the peak of Forbidden City, let’s fight at a higher spot. I think it’s quite high there. Why don’t we head there?” Zhou Wen said as he pointed in the direction of a Corner Tower.

“There’s no need to go through so much trouble,” Xia Liuchuan said as a sword appeared in his hand. “This sword’s name is Ancient Pure Hook. It’s a Mythical Companion Beast. I believe you also have a Mythical Companion Beast, so I won’t hide it.”

With that said, Xia Liuchuan thrust his sword at Zhou Wen. He was a straightforward person who fought without any hesitation.

The sword beam was like snow. His body and sword seemed to instantly appear in front of Zhou Wen at an unbelievable speed.

Although Zhou Wen was proficient in movement techniques, it was impossible for him to dodge such a fast sword while carrying such a heavy log. Therefore, he could only draw his saber to fend off the attack.

Clang!

The saber and sword collided. Zhou Wen’s body remained motionless, but Xia Liuchuan was forced to take a few steps back.

It wasn’t that Zhou Wen’s strength was stronger than Xia Liuchuan’s, but that the log he was carrying was too heavy. It pressed down on his body, stopping him from retreating.

Although Xia Liuchuan retreated, he didn’t lose his balance. He tapped the ground with his toe and thrust his sword forward again. His sword technique was swift and fierce like a ghost.

Zhou Wen’s saber techniques weren’t slow either. He held the log with one hand and brandished his saber with the other. The saber and sword constantly clashed, and Zhou Wen advanced step by step, gradually approaching the Gate of Supreme Harmony.

Zhou Wen wanted to try his luck at the Hall of Supreme Harmony. After all, it was the most honorable place in the city. It was most likely the peak of Forbidden City.

Furthermore, there was only one Hall of Supreme Harmony, but there were four Corner Towers. If the Hall of Supreme

Harmony didn’t work, it wouldn’t be too late for him to consider trying the Corner Towers.

“To be able to master such a mature and steady saber technique at such a young age, this Zhou Wen is indeed extraordinary.” Old Master Xia narrowed his eyes as though he was admiring a treasure.

“Zhou Wen once defeated John who had a contract with the Guardian. His strength is indeed extraordinary. Furthermore, according to our investigations, he definitely has more than two Mythical Companion Beasts,” the middle-aged man said.

“The stronger he is, the better.” Old Master Xia smiled.

Zhou Wen originally hoped to fight all the way to the front of the Hall of Supreme Harmony, but Xia Liuchuan clearly wouldn’t be suppressed by him the entire time.

Xia Liuchuan’s figure suddenly changed as he appeared behind Zhou Wen like a phantom, stabbing at his back.

Zhou Wen was just too slow while carrying the wooden log. He didn’t have the time to turn around, but he didn’t plan on doing so anyway. He swung his saber and blocked Xia Liuchuan’s strike.

“The log on your body is too heavy. Why don’t you put it down so that we can fight?” Xia Liuchuan didn’t continue attacking as he looked at Zhou Wen’s back.

“I’ll naturally put it down when it’s time to put it down,” Zhou Wen turned around and said to Xia Liuchuan.

Xia Liuchuan didn’t say anything else. However, the Pure Hook Sword in his hand emitted a strange glow. It was like a

holy sword that made people have the urge to prostrate themselves in worship.

This time, Xia Liuchuan attacked again, but it wasn't that easy to deal with. When the Bamboo Blade and the Pure Hook Sword met, Zhou Wen felt his palm shake as he involuntarily took a few steps back. The Bamboo Blade nearly flew out of his hand.

"The Pure Hook Sword is known as the Exalted Peerless Sword. It can bestow me with power at the Mythical stage," Xia Liuchuan said as he brandished his sword again.

With a thought from Zhou Wen, Doctor Darkness transformed into a soul and attached to him. Zhou Wen brandished his saber to fend him off again. Although he was still sent retreating by the Pure Hook Sword, he wasn't as pathetic as before.

"Just show me what you've got. There's no need to hide it," Zhou Wen said as he held his saber.

"As you wish." Xia Liuchuan waved his left hand and another sword appeared in his hand.

This sword was different from the Pure Hook Sword. It was a small sword that was about sixty centimeters long. It wasn't as beautiful as the Pure Hook Sword, as though it carried a sense of resentment.

"The sword's name is Evil-Slaying. It's also a Mythical Companion Beast. I've cultivated for so many years, and most of my techniques are delivered through these two swords," Xia Liuchuan said as he glanced at the sword in his hand with a glazed look.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 743

Chapter 743: Sword Warp

Zhou Wen felt that Xia Liuchuan’s aura changed once he had two swords in hand. His expression couldn’t help but turn solemn.

The sword in Xia Liuchuan’s hand finally moved, but his body didn’t move. The Evil-Slaying Sword flew over and stabbed at Zhou Wen in a flash, as though it was about to penetrate his right eye.

Zhou Wen brandished his saber and slashed, sending the Evil-Slaying Sword flying. However, Xia Liuchuan and his Pure Hook Sword arrived in front of Zhou Wen.

The Bamboo Blade had just slashed out, preventing it from being retractable in time. Zhou Wen abruptly crouched and dodged the Pure Hook Sword’s thrust. At the same time, the log smashed down on Xia Liuchuan’s head.

Suddenly, Xia Liuchuan’s figure flashed and vanished in front of Zhou Wen. As for the Pure Hook Sword, it turned from a stab into a slash that was aimed at Zhou Wen’s neck.

Xia Liuchuan arrived beside the Evil-Slaying Sword through some unknown means. He grabbed it with one hand and stabbed it down at Zhou Wen’s back.

Zhou Wen brandished his saber to fend off the Pure Hook Sword, but he no longer had the time to block the Evil-Slaying Sword behind him.

Clang!

A scalpel appeared behind Zhou Wen and blocked the Evil-Slaying Sword's attack as Doctor Darkness separated from Zhou Wen's body.

As for Zhou Wen, he had also switched to the Ancient Sovereign Sutra and fused with the Defy Ancient Sovereign. His body became filled with energy as he used the Demon Dragon True Body, allowing him to gain Mythical combat strength for a short period of time. He forcefully sent the Pure Hook Sword flying.

After sending the Pure Hook Sword flying, Zhou Wen turned around and slashed at Xia Liuchuan. Xia Liuchuan's expression remained unchanged as the Evil-Slaying Sword in his hand continued stabbing at Zhou Wen. It was as though he hadn't seen Doctor Darkness's scalpel or Zhou Wen's Bamboo Blade.

If the two of them continued the trajectories of their thrust, the scalpel and Bamboo Blade would hit Xia Liuchuan while the Evil-Slaying Sword would pierce through Zhou Wen's chest.

Zhou Wen used Bamboo Blade to block the Evil-Slaying Sword, but Xia Liuchuan's figure vanished. He appeared beside the Pure Hook Sword that had been sent flying and grabbed it for another midair slash.

Xia Liuchuan's figure kept moving about as though he was performing a magic trick. He appeared beside the Evil-Slaying Sword one moment and appeared beside the Pure Hook Sword the next moment.

This teleportation wasn't as simple as being fast. It was similar to Lost Country's teleportation, but there were no restrictions on the teleportation.

However, he didn’t have as much freedom as teleportation. It could be seen that Xia Liuchuan could only move between the two swords.

Although that was the case, it was already difficult for Zhou Wen to deal with him. Xia Liuchuan used two swords and constantly moved back and forth like a ghost. It made Zhou Wen feel that it was harder than fighting three Mythical opponents at the same time.

The most uncomfortable thing was that he couldn’t fight Xia Liuchuan because Xia Liuchuan could move to the side of another sword at any time. If he attacked, he wouldn’t be able to injure Xia Liuchuan and would only end up being injured by him.

Zhou Wen and Doctor Darkness joined forces, but they were still suppressed by Xia Liuchuan. They had no chance of charging to the Gate of Supreme Harmony.

If I wasn’t carrying such a huge object, I wouldn’t be at such a disadvantage. Zhou Wen was best at movement techniques. However, the log prevented him from using the movement techniques he was good at. It was extremely uncomfortable fighting.

“Liuchuan’s Sword Warp technique has improved,” the middle-aged man praised.

“Sword Warp requires talent, and it’s easy to learn but difficult to master. Little Chuan likes such techniques, but there’s actually not much need for it. The time spent would be better spent on Guardians,” Old Master Xia said calmly.

Although Old Master Xia didn’t approve of Xia Liuchuan spending all his time on the Sword Warp technique, Zhou Wen was now quite depressed from being suppressed by it.

This Sword Warp technique was like an illusion. Under Xia Liuchuan's usage, it was unpredictable and dazzling.

Zhou Wen thought to himself, *Letting this continue wouldn't work. Since I've already entered Forbidden City, there's no need to fight him. I should quickly place the log on the Hall of Supreme Harmony and give it a try.*

Without any hesitation, Zhou Wen summoned the Great Might Vajra Bull.

The moment the Great Might Vajra Bull came out, it shook the bell on its neck. Once the Soul Suppression Bell rang, Xia Liuchuan immediately felt dizzy. The two swords fell from the sky with him.

Zhou Wen took this opportunity to get Doctor Darkness to possess him again as he charged in the direction of the Gate of Supreme Harmony.

However, after running a few steps, a sword beam flashed. Zhou Wen tilted his head and saw the Evil-Slaying Sword fly past his ear. Xia Liuchuan instantly moved to the side of the Evil-Slaying Sword and slashed at Zhou Wen's face with it.

Zhou Wen swiped up his saber and clashed with Xia Liuchuan's Evil-Slaying Sword several times. Xia Liuchuan's sword techniques were unpredictable, so Zhou Wen wasn't able to gain any advantage.

The Great Might Vajra Bull turned around to help Zhou Wen, but the moment it turned around, Xia Liuchuan appeared behind the Great Might Vajra Bull like a phantom. He held the Pure Hook Sword and stabbed the Great Might Vajra Bull's buttocks.

“Moo!” The Great Might Vajra Bull’s pupils constricted as it raised its hind legs and kicked Xia Liuchuan.

In response, Xia Liuchuan waved his hand and threw the Pure Hook Sword at Zhou Wen. At the same time, he warped to the side of the Evil-Slaying Sword and continued fighting Zhou Wen with it. The entire process was like a magic show. If not for the Great Might Vajra Bull’s powerful physique, any ordinary person would have been killed by Xia Liuchuan.

As Zhou Wen blocked the Evil-Slaying Sword, he summoned the Golden Overlord Sword. However, he didn’t have any spare hands to use it. All he could do was let the Golden Overlord Sword attack autonomously in its original form.

The Great Might Vajra Bull used its Life Soul and transformed into the thousand-handed, bull-headed state. Golden light shot out from its palm as it attempted to kill Xia Liuchuan.

However, Xia Liuchuan was one with his two swords. He constantly teleported and fought, making it seem harder to fight him than simultaneously fighting three people. Zhou Wen, together with the Great Might Vajra Bull and the Golden Overlord Sword, failed to gain the upper hand.

What swordplay do you practice? Why aren’t you a magician? Zhou Wen was somewhat depressed. He originally didn’t want to be too ostentatious, but now that he couldn’t escape Xia Liuchuan, he had no choice but to think of other solutions.

Should I let Tyrant Behemoth fight? Zhou Wen considered Tyrant Behemoth. It had already appeared on the rankings, so exposing it didn’t matter much.

Carrying such a heavy piece of wood, Zhou Wen really couldn’t escape Xia Liuchuan. Without any hesitation, he

summoned Tyrant Behemoth.

Boom!

Tyrant Behemoth landed on the ground out of thin air, causing the ground to tremble.

“Tyrant Behemoth? It’s actually Zhou Wen’s Companion Beast?” Old Master Xia and the middle-aged man revealed looks of surprise.

Many people were investigating the identity of Tyrant Behemoth’s owner. Most people believed that Tyrant Behemoth was a Companion Beast of an expert in the West District, but they never expected it to be in Zhou Wen’s hands.

Outside Forbidden City, there was someone who was even more surprised than Old Master Xia and company. It was Zhang Chunqiu. Zhang Chunqiu had used his Heavenly Eye to see Tyrant Behemoth in Forbidden City. Furthermore, he knew very well that the Tyrant Behemoth Companion Egg had originally belonged to the Zhang family, but it had been smuggled out by a traitor.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 744

Chapter 744: Myriad Sword Formation

After Tyrant Behemoth appeared, it directly activated Absolute Strength. Space distorted as the Pure Hook and Evil-Slaying swords were attracted towards Tyrant Behemoth.

Although Xia Liuchuan had tried his best to escape this situation, Tyrant Behemoth’s Absolute Strength was just too powerful. He couldn’t escape the two Mythical swords as he flew towards Tyrant Behemoth with his sword.

Zhou Wen didn’t stop as he ran towards the Gate of Supreme Harmony without waiting for the outcome.

Zhou Wen couldn’t run fast while carrying the wooden log. Before he reached the Gate of Supreme Harmony, he suddenly heard a terrifying sound. The shock wave broke through the sound barrier and produced a terrifying sonic boom.

Zhou Wen turned his head and saw Xia Liuchuan levitating in midair. He was wearing a strange black armor that resembled some kind of black jade. It also emitted a mysterious black light.

Xia Liuchuan held Pure Hook and Evil-Slaying with both hands as he crossed them in front of him, blocking Tyrant Behemoth’s punch. He wasn’t sent flying.

That’s... Guardian... Zhou Wen could tell that the armor was somewhat odd. Its aura didn’t seem like a Companion Beast

but resembled more of a Guardian.

Furthermore, Xia Liuchuan was able to withstand Tyrant Behemoth in its Absolute Strength state. This wasn't something an ordinary Companion Beast armor could do.

Xia Liuchuan wasn't at a disadvantage when fighting Tyrant Behemoth. The two swords in his hands criss-crossed as he fought Tyrant Behemoth.

When Zhou Wen saw that Xia Liuchuan didn't have the upper hand, he immediately continued running towards the Gate of Supreme Harmony. He had to first escape the log. Otherwise, even if the Guardian was in front of him, he wouldn't be able to kill the Guardian while carrying it.

Zhou Wen rushed past the Gate of Supreme Harmony and couldn't help but stop. This was because after passing the gates, there were many people standing in the open space. There were probably more than ten thousand of them.

The ten thousand people stood in a square formation on the empty ground. Each of them held a sword in their hands, but no one spoke. They were silent.

Upon seeing Zhou Wen walk over, the eyes of the ten thousand people looked at him in unison.

In front of the square formation stood a woman in black. She was none other than the Xia Xuanyue whom Zhou Wen knew.

"Zhou Wen, why are you here instead of dueling Xia Liuchuan?" Xia Xuanyue asked Zhou Wen.

"Ahem, I'm just taking a stroll. It's rare to come to the legendary Forbidden City. I want to see the legendary Hall of

Supreme Harmony,” Zhou Wen said with a light cough.

“It’s best you go back and fight. Forbidden City isn’t a place outsiders can enter as they wish,” Xia Xuanyue said.

“Since I’m already here, let me take a look.” Zhou Wen naturally wasn’t willing to retreat. Although the Xia family was already wary of him, he had to make an attempt on the Hall of Supreme Harmony regardless.

Just as Zhou Wen took two steps forward, Xia Xuanyue raised the ancient sword in her hand. The ten thousand people raised the sword in their hands at the same time. In an instant, countless sword beams surged into the sky and condensed towards the ancient sword in Xia Xuanyue’s hand.

With the augmentation of more than ten thousand ancient swords, the sword beam produced by the ancient sword in Xia Xuanyue’s hand was already terrifying beyond imagination. Even the Golden Overlord Sword paled in comparison.

Zhou Wen could roughly tell that the ancient sword in Xia Xuanyue’s hand was similar to the Golden Harp. They could gather some kind of power.

The difference was that the Golden Harp allowed sound waves to resonate, while the ancient sword in Xia Xuanyue’s hand could condense the sword beams of other sword-type Companion Beasts.

Every sword in the sword formation of more than ten thousand people was probably an Epic Companion Beast. With the augmentation of more than ten thousand sword beams, and the fact that the ancient sword might be at the

Mythical stage, the might of the sword was probably not inferior to a top-notch Mythical creature.

“Zhou Wen, you should return to fight Xia Liuchuan,” Xia Xuanyue said to Zhou Wen.

“What if I insist on touring Forbidden City?” Zhou Wen walked towards the sword formation.

Xia Xuanyue slashed with her sword as a terrifying sword beam slashed down like a heavenly river. It was difficult for Zhou Wen to dodge, so he could only use the Golden Overlord Sword’s Golden Sword Aura to meet it.

The Golden Sword Aura was indestructible. In the beginning, it had indeed sliced through the sword beam that resembled a heavenly river, but the sword beam seemed to pour down endlessly. Soon, it drowned the Golden Sword Aura.

Xia Xuanyue didn’t really slash down. She retracted the ancient sword in her hand and the sword beam circled back like a dragon before returning to the sword formation.

“Please return,” Xia Xuanyue said expressionlessly.

With a thought, Zhou Wen turned around and left the Gate of Supreme Harmony. The ten-thousand sword formation was just too powerful. It would probably take quite some time to storm through it. Zhou Wen planned on heading to the unguarded building to give it a try to prevent any delays.

When Xia Liuchuan saw Zhou Wen come out, he had no intention of attacking him. He continued fighting Tyrant Behemoth.

When Tyrant Behemoth used Absolute Strength, it could only fight Xia Liuchuan to a draw. Once Absolute Strength

ran out, it probably wouldn’t be Xia Liuchuan’s match.

Zhou Wen rushed to the Corner Tower and, when he arrived in front of it, he leaped up and jumped onto the city wall before jumping to the top of the Corner Tower.

It wasn’t that he didn’t want to complete the jump in one try, but the log was too heavy. He couldn’t do it with a single jump.

Zhou Wen erected the log at the top of the Corner Tower and realized that there was no reaction. He tried to release the log and the word “slave” immediately appeared on his forehead.

It’s not here? Zhou Wen was somewhat disappointed as he carried the log down Corner Tower. He knew that this time, he could only attempt the Myriad Sword Formation led by Xia Xuanyue.

It was highly likely that the peak of Forbidden City was the top of the Hall of Supreme Harmony.

After this ordeal, Absolute Strength didn’t have much time left. There were probably only about ten minutes left.

Xia Liuchuan clearly wanted to defeat Tyrant Behemoth first, so he wasn’t in a rush to chase after Zhou Wen.

Zhou Wen passed through the door again and could already see the Hall of Supreme Harmony in front of him. However, with the Myriad Sword Formation obstructing him, it was impossible to gain passage without destroying it.

The ten-thousand sword formation’s might is too powerful. Among my Companion Beasts, probably only Torch Dragon’s Bright Torch Vision World can match it. If Truth Listener

breaks two earrings, it might be able to put up a fight, but it’s not convenient for either of them to be exposed… Zhou Wen thought of something as his eyes suddenly lit up.

“Zhou Wen, why are you back?” Xia Xuanyue asked with a frown when she saw Zhou Wen running over.

“Xia Liuchuan isn’t my match. There’s no point in fighting him. I still want to visit the Hall of Supreme Harmony,” Zhou Wen said as he walked towards Xia Xuanyue.

Xia Xuanyue raised her sword again without any hesitation. The sword formation regenerated as a terrifying sword beam emitted a terrifying might. From afar, it made one’s scalp tingle.

With a thought, Zhou Wen summoned a Companion Beast.

This Companion Beast wasn’t Torch Dragon or Truth Listener, nor was it Demonic Neonate. Instead, it was a beautiful girl. She was unbelievably beautiful. She had long hair that made all women envious, and her eyes were extremely charming. It was as though a single glance would entrance one, preventing them from moving their eyes away.

The Xia family disciples in the Myriad Sword Formation couldn’t help but look at the beautiful girl.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 745 - Eyes of Enticement

Chapter 745: Eyes of Enticement

Previously, Medusa had caused a stir on the Peninsula of Gods, letting the entire Federation know of her existence.

However, all the videos that people saw were of Medusa—the snake-haired demoness. Not many had seen her maiden form.

Furthermore, ever since Medusa had been killed, no new Medusa had passed through the spatial rift to enter the Curse Demon Palace.

Therefore, the Xia family members didn’t recognize the maiden Medusa. If they knew her, they definitely wouldn’t dare to look at her or her eyes.

Unlike the snake-haired demoness, Medusa did not have the ability to petrify others. Her Eyes of Enticement needed others to see her eyes before they could be of use.

At this moment, more than ten thousand Xia family disciples saw Medusa’s eyes. Immediately, their bodies petrified as they turned pale with fright.

Xia Xuanyue’s expression changed drastically as she immediately realized the problem. She closed her eyes and slashed at Medusa.

However, because many owners of Epic swords had seen Medusa’s eyes, their bodies slowly petrified. They were unable to circulate their Essence Energy, nor could they use

the Epic swords in their hands to cooperate with Xia Xuanyue. This greatly reduced the might of Xia Xuanyue's sword beam.

Zhou Wen held the Golden Overlord Sword and slashed out a sword beam to clash with Xia Xuanyue's sword beam.

The ancient sword in Xia Xuanyue's hand was also transformed from a Mythical Companion Beast. It wasn't inferior to the Golden Overlord Sword, but the stats of the Golden Overlord Sword were too domineering. When the sword beams collided, the ancient sword beam shattered due to the loss of the Myriad Sword Formation's augmentation. The Golden Overlord Sword's sword beam continued slashing at Xia Xuanyue.

Xia Xuanyue closed her eyes and shifted her body, dodging the Golden Sword Aura. At the same time, she brandished her sword and attacked Zhou Wen. Her movement technique was the Path to Snatching Heaven that Zhou Wen had seen before.

Back then, Zhou Wen had fought Xia Xuanyue, giving him the chance to advance the Transcendent Flying Immortal to the divine level. In that battle, Xia Xuanyue had also comprehended the profundity of the Path to Snatching Heaven, allowing it to advance to the divine level as well.

Now, Xia Xuanyue's Path to Snatching Heaven had become more mature, giving her the boldness to snatch a path from heaven Just her movement technique alone gave others a huge sense of oppression.

As Zhou Wen was carrying the log, he was unable to use Transcendent Flying Immortal to compete with Xia Xuanyue's Path to Snatching Heaven. The Golden Overlord Sword was a little clumsy and wasn't suitable for fighting Xia

Xuanyue. Zhou Wen threw the Golden Overlord Sword out and allowed it to attack autonomously. He drew his Bamboo Blade and clashed with Xia Xuanyue’s sword.

Medusa retreated to the side under Zhou Wen’s control. Her combat strength was very weak, so he was afraid that Xia Xuanyue’s sword beam could kill her. It wasn’t suitable for her to participate in the battle.

However, Zhou Wen couldn’t summon her back. This was because the Eyes of Enticement couldn’t permanently petrify people. It required them to see her to remain petrified.

If Zhou Wen were to unsummon her, those people would shortly recover from their petrified states.

Although they were both petrification skills, Medusa’s skill was Eyes of Enticement. Its nature was different from the Eyes of Petrification.

Previously, when Zhou Wen had fought Medusa, Truth Listener’s Evil Nullification could restrain the snake-haired demoness’s Eyes of Petrification, but it couldn’t restrain the Eyes of Enticement. This was because the two had different attributes.

Xia Xuanyue thought that Zhou Wen had killed the ten thousand swordsmen. She was filled with grief as she no longer held back with the ancient sword in her hand. Together with the Path to Snatching Heaven, she slashed at Zhou Wen again and again.

…

“Although my Xia family is big, among the younger generation, only Liuchuan and Little Yue are promising

talents. To be able to cultivate the Path to Snatching Heaven to such a level, I'm afraid even Liuchuan couldn't do it at her age, right?" On the city gates, the middle-aged man sighed.

A strange look flashed across Old Master Xia's eyes and he said calmly, "Little Yue is very talented, but it's a pity that she's a girl and can't inherit the Xia family's business."

The middle-aged man said, "However, our Xia family can be considered extremely lucky since Little Yue can support Liuchuan in the future."

…

Zhang Chunqiu was also paying attention to the battle in Forbidden City. When he saw Xia Xuanyue's movement technique, he couldn't help but praise, "Excellent movement technique. Dugu, your movement technique isn't much better, right?"

"Her movement technique isn't inferior to mine." Dugu Ge nodded.

Dugu Ge couldn't see the situation inside Forbidden City, but when Zhou Wen entered the city, he had already secretly released some Gu worms to sneak in. Using the information transmitted by the Gu worms, he was also aware of the situation inside.

…

Shen Yuchi and the others from the bureau had been using their binoculars to observe the situation inside the city. However, there was a mysterious force inside the city that prevented ordinary binoculars from seeing anything. They could only occasionally see terrifying sword beams shoot out, but nothing else.

…

Zhou Wen was rather familiar with the Path to Snatching Heaven. Although he couldn’t dodge, the Bamboo Blade in his hand blocked Xia Xuanyue’s sword again and again. As he fought, he retreated in the direction of the Hall of Supreme Harmony.

“This Zhou Wen is really impressive. He can actually withstand such an amazing movement technique and sword technique despite carrying such a heavy piece of wood,” praised Dugu Ge.

“Don’t you think that Zhou Wen seems to know Xia Xuanyue’s movement technique very well? It looks like he can predict the future,” Zhang Chunqiu said with narrowed eyes.

“Is it a special ability? I heard that there’s a girl in the Ultimate Family Clan who has the Eye of Odin and can see through everything,” Dugu Ge mused and said.

“No, I think it’s more like Zhou Wen knows Xia Xuanyue’s movement technique very well,” Zhang Chunqiu said.

“Are you saying that Zhou Wen and Xia Xuanyue have something between them?” Dugu Ge said straightforwardly. He wasn’t like Zhang Chunqiu who spoke half-truths.

“I only know that Zhou Wen definitely knows Xia Xuanyue’s movement technique very well. I don’t know if there’s anything between them,” Zhang Chunqiu said with a shrug.

…

Up on the city gates, Old Master Xia and the middle-aged man also frowned. Clearly, they shared the same thoughts

as Zhang Chunqiu. Xia Xuanyue's amazing Path to Snatching Heaven was actually blocked by Zhou Wen's saber. It was as though he had predicted the future. This was definitely not something that could be explained by just having powerful saber techniques.

"Little Yue once represented our Xia family to be the witness for Zhou Wen's battle in Luoyang. Perhaps she crossed paths with him back then. Perhaps she fought Zhou Wen before and not because she deliberately leaked the Path to Snatching Heaven," the middle-aged man said.

"Zhou Wen's understanding of the Path to Snatching Heaven isn't as simple as exchanging blows," Old Master Xia said indifferently. "Ah Cheng, go and settle this matter."

"What about Liuchuan…" The middle-aged man, Ah Cheng, was somewhat hesitant.

"I've given him too much time," Old Master Xia said expressionlessly.

"I know what to do." Ah Cheng bowed slightly before jumping down the city gates and walking towards the Gate of Supreme Harmony.

When Xia Liuchuan, who was fighting Tyrant Behemoth, saw Ah Cheng coming down, his expression changed slightly.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 746 - Great Array

Chapter 746: Great Array

“Uncle Cheng, I can handle it myself. You don’t have to do anything,” Xia Liuchuan said.

“Sorry, Old Master can’t wait any longer.” As Ah Cheng spoke, he continued walking towards the Gate of Supreme Harmony. Soon, he passed through it and saw Zhou Wen fighting Xia Xuanyue.

“Little Yue, you can stand down. Leave this to me,” said Ah Cheng.

“Uncle Cheng, I can handle it myself,” Xia Xuanyue replied.

“This is Old Master’s order,” Ah Cheng said.

When Xia Xuanyue heard the words “Old Master,” she had no choice but to back out from the battle and go to Ah Cheng’s side.

Ah Cheng extended his hand and a strange yellow talisman appeared. The moment it appeared, golden runes lit up on the ground in front of the Hall of Supreme Harmony. It blanketed the huge space in golden light instantly.

Zhou Wen immediately felt as though he had fallen into a huge vortex. The Essence Energy in his body was sucked out before rapidly flowing into the vortex.

It wasn’t just Zhou Wen himself. Even the Companion Beasts he summoned suffered the same fate. The Golden Overlord

Sword and Medusa were rapidly drained of their Essence Energy.

The petrified Xia family disciples and their Epic Companion Beast swords didn’t receive any special care.

Zhou Wen hurriedly retracted Medusa and the Golden Overlord Sword. At the same time, he switched his Essence Energy Art to the Dao Sutra. The Heaven-Opening Scripture of the Highest Elder also appeared in his consciousness.

Such an array formation was similar to the Explosive Fiend Man’s time bomb. It needed to be prepared ahead of time. Clearly, the Xia family was very careful and had prepared everything. Even if Xia Liuchuan couldn’t win, they could still kill Zhou Wen.

With the appearance of the Heaven-Opening Scripture of the Highest Elder, Zhou Wen immediately felt the Essence Energy in his body stop leaking. With a thought, he retracted Tyrant Behemoth who was fighting Xia Liuchuan.

Tyrant Behemoth’s Absolute Strength was almost up. There was no need to continue fighting.

“We agreed on a duel. Isn’t your Xia family being too shameless?” Zhou Wen pretended to be alarmed as he struggled to retreat.

Ah Cheng said indifferently, “You were the one who didn’t duel. How can you blame our Xia family for not honoring our promise?”

“Alright, count yourselves lucky. I’ll admit defeat, alright? Stop your array formation,” Zhou Wen shouted as he retreated. He was already very close to the Hall of Supreme Harmony—less than fifty meters away. Any closer and he

would be able to jump onto the top of the Hall of Supreme Harmony.

Unfortunately, Zhou Wen didn't know if the Hall of Supreme Harmony was the peak of Forbidden City or if it could help him escape the log.

"It's already too late," Ah Cheng said.

"It's easy for you to want my life. But don't tell me you have zero concern about the lives of the ten thousand Xia family members?" Zhou Wen pointed at the petrified Xia family members.

As Medusa had been unsummoned by Zhou Wen, their petrified bodies were gradually recovering.

Seeing that they weren't dead, Xia Xuanyue couldn't help but heave a sigh of relief. She had thought that Zhou Wen had killed all of them and was extremely furious. Only now did she realize that Zhou Wen hadn't really killed them.

However, just like Zhou Wen, they were trapped in the array. Furthermore, they didn't have the protection of the Heaven-Opening Scripture of the Highest Elder. Their Essence Energy was constantly devoured by the array. Before the petrification on their bodies completely subsided, their Essence Energy was nearly sucked dry.

Xia Liuchuan walked over and said, "Uncle Cheng, stop. If this continues, they will all die."

Ah Cheng shook his head. "Before dealing with Zhou Wen, the array can't be deactivated."

Zhou Wen was still retreating. Having already retreated to the edge of the array, the light barrier formed at the edge of

the array blocked his path. The thin layer of golden light was like a metal wall. Zhou Wen tried his best several times, but he failed to slam through it.

Furthermore, as long as Essence Energy struck the barrier, it would immediately be absorbed by the barrier, making its defense even stronger.

Zhou Wen was still fine. His Essence Energy hadn't really been sucked away.

The Xia family's disciples didn't share his prowess. They were nearly drained dry. Some of them had already recovered from the petrification. They rushed to the edge of the array formation, but like Zhou Wen, no matter how hard they tried, they couldn't break through the barrier.

Soon, their Essence Energy was sucked dry. After their Essence Energy was sucked dry, the array didn't let them off. Their essence, vitality, and spirit were extracted after their Essence Energy was drained.

Their bodies aged at a speed visible to the naked eye. They looked extremely terrifying.

Many Xia family members shouted in horror as they struggled to escape the hellish array.

Xia Xuanyue's expression was complicated. She never expected to see such a scene. Furthermore, she was part of the reason why these people ended up like this.

If she hadn't failed to stop Zhou Wen, Ah Cheng wouldn't have taken action—the ten thousands of Xia family members wouldn't have been trapped in the array.

“Uncle Cheng, I’m sorry!” Xia Xuanyue gritted her teeth and suddenly brandished her sword, stabbing the yellow talisman in front of Ah Cheng.

Ah Cheng never expected Xia Xuanyue to unsheathe her sword beside him. He was caught off guard as the yellow talisman was pierced by the sword beam.

As the yellow talisman shattered, the array’s golden light immediately cracked. The light barrier vanished as the golden runes on the ground dimmed.

“Little Yue… You…” Ah Cheng’s expression changed drastically. He wasn’t worried that the array formation would release Zhou Wen after breaking, there was another reason.

Xia Liuchuan was also shocked. He turned to look in the direction of the city gate tower and his body immediately trembled. Old Master Xia, who was sitting on the city gate tower watching the battle, had already disappeared.

When he turned around, he realized that Old Master Xia was already standing in front of the Hall of Supreme Harmony with his hands behind his back.

Zhou Wen was just about to forcefully break through the light barrier when he realized that it had suddenly vanished. Just as he was overjoyed and was about to rush up the Hall of Supreme Harmony, a figure appeared in front of it as though he had teleported. He stood at the end of the stairs and blocked his path.

Zhou Wen took a careful look and saw that the person’s body was majestic. He was about two meters tall and his hair was completely white. He looked like an elder, but his aura was extremely powerful. He didn’t look like an elder at all.

Zhou Wen’s heart palpitated as though he had sensed an extremely dangerous aura. He couldn’t help but feel alarmed.

“Who allowed you to destroy the array without permission?” Old Master Xia didn’t look at Zhou Wen, but his gaze landed on Xia Xuanyue.

“Old Master, Xuanyue didn’t do it on purpose. She just couldn’t bear to see the Xia family’s members die…” Xia Liuchuan hurriedly pulled Xia Xuanyue to kneel down and admit her mistake.

“Is that so?” Old Master Xia glanced expressionlessly at the Xia family members who had been drained of their vitality and had luckily escaped.

Suddenly, Old Master Xia extended his hand and grabbed. Xia Xuanyue’s body seemed to be grabbed by an invisible hand as she was instantly pulled in front of Old Master Xia. He had his hand on her head.

On the ground, the golden runes appeared once again. The array was activated again, trapping everyone inside once more.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 747 - Heaven and Earth Origin-Returning Formation

Chapter 747: Heaven and Earth Origin-Returning Formation

The first to bear the brunt was the Xia family members. Their Essence Energy was already depleted and they had been enervated of their essence, vitality, and spirit. With the array's sudden suction, their bodies immediately bled as many of them collapsed to the ground.

Apart from Zhou Wen and Old Master Xia who weren't affected, even Xia Xuanyue's Essence Energy began to drain.

"Old Master, please let Xuanyue off. She won't make the same mistake again," Xia Liuchuan pleaded.

Old Master Xia had Xia Xuanyue's head in one hand; yet, she couldn't move at all. Even the Mythical sword in her hand dropped to the ground as her eyes were filled with horror.

Old Master Xia said calmly, "Don't think that you can do whatever you want just because you were born into the Xia family. The world is cold and heartless. Any mistake can lead to the downfall of a family. As the future leader of the Xia family, if you don't even understand this, you have no right to lead the Xia family."

"Please give Xuanyue another chance." Xia Liuchuan slammed his head on the ground.

“Rules are rules. A volcano won’t stop erupting because of your pleas, and time won’t stop flowing because of pity. Rules have no feelings, and they are the most straightforward. It looks like you still don’t understand what kind of cruel world you will face as the future leader of the Xia family.” Old Master Xia didn’t have any intention of letting Xia Xuanyue off—Xia Xuanyue’s Essence Energy was almost drained dry.

Xia Liuchuan’s body trembled as he suddenly looked up. The Evil-Slaying Sword in his hand erupted with extreme strength as he stabbed at the golden light of the array.

“Liuchuan!” Ah Cheng’s expression turned even uglier. He wanted to stop Xia Liuchuan, but it was already too late.

Clang!

The power of the Evil-Slaying Sword and the augmentation of Xia Liuchuan’s protective armor failed to slice through the light barrier.

Xia Liuchuan was alarmed, but in the next second, the Pure Hook Sword in his other hand slashed out as well. The two swords slashed at the array in a frenzy, but it only caused the golden barrier to sway. It failed to slice through it.

Instead, his Essence Energy was absorbed by the array, causing the golden light barrier to become even more terrifying.

Old Master Xia looked at Xia Liuchuan coldly and asked, “Little Chuan, I dote on you the most. Are you going to betray me now?”

“I only hope that you can spare Xuanyue. She’s my sister.” Xia Liuchuan’s swords didn’t stop as he continued slashing

at the barrier.

“Seems like I need to reconsider the heir to the Xia family.” A cold glint flashed across Old Master Xia’s eyes as he clenched his fists.

Suddenly, a sword beam slashed over. Old Master Xia raised his hand and grabbed it. The golden sword beam was sucked into his palm and vanished instantly. Instead, the Essence Energy on Old Master Xia’s body became even more majestic.

At the same time, a suction force pulled Xia Xuanyue out. It was Zhou Wen’s Demonic Astral Wheel.

“You people from a large family sure know how to have fun. You can even make it sound so dignified by killing your descendants. You’ve really broadened my horizons today.” Zhou Wen pulled Xia Xuanyue to his side, but she wasn’t in a good state. Her Essence Energy was constantly depleting, and she was almost drained dry.

Zhou Wen summoned the Heaven-Opening Scripture. The scripture floated above his head, emitting an invisible force that blocked the array’s suction force, preventing any Essence Energy in a tiny area around him from being sucked into the array.

“To be able to withstand the power of the Heaven and Earth Origin-Returning Array, your talent and the Essence Energy Art you cultivate, as well as your Life Providence and Life Soul, are indeed extraordinary.” Old Master Xia didn’t mind the sarcasm in Zhou Wen’s words. All he did was stare at the Heaven-Opening Scripture above Zhou Wen’s head and ask, “That’s your Life Soul, right? What’s its name?”

“Why should I tell you, you old sicko?” Zhou Wen said with a smile.

“It’s fine. Even if you don’t tell me, I’ll find out soon,” Old Master Xia said as he spread out his palm. All the Essence Energy in the Heaven and Earth Origin-Returning Array gathered towards his palm.

Instantly, there were tragic cries. Many of the Xia family disciples who were struggling died as they spat out blood. Their bodies were instantly sucked dry as they lost their essence, vitality, and spirit.

As for Old Master Xia, after absorbing so much Essence Energy, his aura became extremely terrifying. The Essence Energy that seeped out of his body seemed to condense into something corporeal as it swayed on his body. The cracked Essence Energy made his skin seem transparent.

Be it Xia Liuchuan and Ah Cheng, who were outside the Heaven and Earth Origin-Returning Array, or Zhou Wen and Xia Xuanyue inside the array, they all felt their blood run cold.

It wasn’t that they had never seen a dead person, but more than ten thousand Epic experts had died tragically. Furthermore, they were members of the Xia family. They had never seen anyone so crazy.

“Old Master… Why are you doing this… This is destroying the Xia family…” Xia Xuanyue really couldn’t understand why Old Master Xia would do this.

There were more than ten thousand Epic experts. Even among the six families, there weren’t many who could gather that number of Epic experts.

Furthermore, they had been nurtured by Old Master Xia himself. Now, he had personally killed them. Xia Xuanyue couldn’t figure out why.

“With me around, the Xia family will never be destroyed. So what if there are more than ten thousand Epic experts? I spent such a huge price to nurture them. They were originally only used as a stepping stone for my advancement to the Mythical stage. Now that their mission has been completed, they have died a worthy death.” The Essence Energy in Old Master Xia’s body was as terrifying as a volcanic eruption. Furthermore, his body seemed to be becoming younger. Even his white hair was gradually turning black.

“Advance to the Mythical stage?” Xia Xuanyue couldn’t comprehend. Was it right to sacrifice so many people just to advance to the Mythical stage? Furthermore, among the ten thousand Epic experts, although most of them didn’t share the Xia surname, many of them were blood-related members of the Xia family.

“If one doesn’t enter the Mythical stage, they will ultimately be mortal. No matter how powerful they are, there will be a day when they die. Only by advancing to the Mythical stage can one break through the shackles of life-like dimensional creatures and become a higher life form… Unfortunately, the human body is too weak. Their talent is too poor. Even someone as talented as me can’t rely on the strength of a single person to advance to the Mythical stage.”

Old Master Xia explained indifferently, “I’ve studied many Essence Energy Arts and combined them with the Great Emperor Sutra passed down in our Xia family. I’ve finally found a path to advance to the Mythical stage. It’s to pile up sand into a tower and refine rocks into gold. I gathered the

bloodlines, talents, Life Providences, and Life Souls of many geniuses into one, allowing me to break through the limits of humanity and advance to the Mythical stage. This is the only path I can take now.”

Zhou Wen was dumbfounded when he heard that. He finally knew why the Xia family had secretly attacked so many talented youths. It was all because of Old Master Xia.

Zhou Wen originally imagined that Wang Mingyuan’s advancement to the Mythical stage was already very ruthless, but compared to Old Master Xia’s method, Wang Mingyuan’s advancement was as holy as an angel.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 748

Chapter 748: Old Master Xia

“By killing so many people, what’s the difference between you and a devil-like Jing Daoxian? Aren’t you afraid that the other five Federation families will join forces to attack you?” Zhou Wen asked.

Old Master Xia sneered and said, “You killed these people. What has it got to do with me? I’ll naturally kill you to avenge them. You will also become an important step in my advancement to the Mythical stage.”

With that said, Old Master Xia extended his hand and grabbed at Zhou Wen and Xia Xuanyue. At the same time, he continued, “As a member of the Xia family, you should contribute to the Xia family. Return your bloodline’s talent to me.”

A terrifying suction force was produced as Xia Xuanyue and Zhou Wen involuntarily headed for Old Master Xia.

This was the first time Zhou Wen had seen a human use such terrifying strength. His strength couldn’t withstand the suction force. Together with the Heaven-Opening Scripture, he moved in Old Master Xia’s direction, his feet leaving two marks on the stone slabs on the ground.

Xia Xuanyue had expended too much Essence Energy and was in an even worse state. Her body had already flown up.

Zhou Wen placed the log down with one hand and stabbed it into the ground. He used his other hand to hold Xia

Xuanyue back and thanks to the log, they finally stopped.

The enemy of an enemy was a friend. Now, Xia Liuchuan and Xia Xuanyue were probably going to completely fall out with Old Master Xia. Perhaps he could use their strength later.

Although Xia Xuanyue no longer had any combat strength, Xia Liuchuan was still outside. Furthermore, he had a Guardian with him. Perhaps he could use his strength to rush out of the Heaven and Earth Origin-Returning Array.

Otherwise, in this array, any Companion Beast's Essence Energy would be drained. The more Companion Beasts summoned, the stronger the augmentation Old Master Xia would receive. He had to rush out first.

"That old sicko has absorbed the Life Providence and Life Souls of countless geniuses. He has also absorbed the Essence Energy and life essence of more than ten thousand Epic experts. His strength is unfathomable. Speaking of which, even a tiger will not eat its cubs; yet, this old sicko wants to devour his descendants. Why doesn't the heavens strike him to death with lightning?" Zhou Wen placed Xia Xuanyue behind the log and got her to hug it. He held the Golden Overlord Sword and slashed out sword beams at the old sicko, hoping to temporarily stop his suction force so that he could rush out of the Heaven and Earth Essence Origin-Returning Array with the log.

However, the Golden Sword Aura that Zhou Wen slashed out was sucked in by the old sicko. Not only did it fail to injure him, but it also became a tonic for him.

"I refuse to believe that you can suck everything." Zhou Wen summoned the Great Might Vajra Bull and made it shake the Soul Suppression Bell.

However, the Soul Suppressing Bell’s chime couldn’t stir Old Master Xia’s soul. It didn’t make him dizzy at all. Instead, as the Great Might Vajra Bull was too big in size, the power of the Heaven-Opening Scripture couldn’t envelop it completely. Its Essence Energy quickly drained as its body moved towards Old Master Xia’s palm.

The Great Might Vajra Bull struggled with all its might, but it was unable to stop itself from sliding towards Old Master Xia. Its four hooves sank into the stone slab, but it didn’t stop its slide towards Old Master Xia, scaring the Great Might Vajra Bull into mooing.

Zhou Wen hurriedly summoned it back and didn’t dare release it again.

“Don’t use Companion Beasts. He has absorbed countless Life Providences and Life Souls. He can absorb any type of Essence Energy for his own use. Companion Beasts are condensed from Essence Energy. The power of any Companion Beast will be of help to him…” Xia Liuchuan warned Zhou Wen loudly from outside.

“How can I rush out without a Companion Beast?” Zhou Wen hurriedly asked.

“Since you insist on dying, come in and join them.” Old Master Xia snorted coldly. Xia Liuchuan had already used his fists to strike the light barrier of the array, but he suddenly felt the area in front of him empty out. He had already fallen into the array.

Old Master Xia used his other hand to grab and suck at Xia Liuchuan. Xia Liuchuan’s body immediately slid towards him.

Xia Liuchuan didn’t retreat. He gritted his teeth and threw a punch at Old Master Xia.

Guardians were lifeforms and not pure energy. They were somewhat different from Companion Beasts. The Guardian’s strength should be able to be of some use against Old Master Xia.

Boom!

Old Master Xia’s palm collided with Xia Liuchuan’s fist and was forced back a few steps. The suction force immediately vanished.

“I’ll hold him back. Take Xuanyue and leave.” Xia Liuchuan threw another punch at Old Master Xia and shouted.

“Brother, I’m counting on you.” Zhou Wen picked up the log and ran with Xia Xuanyue.

Xia Xuanyue was still somewhat hesitant, but Zhou Wen immediately said, “It’ll be easier for your brother to run if we run. If you stay a minute longer, your brother will be in greater danger.”

Xia Xuanyue naturally understood this principle. She gritted her teeth and ran to the edge of the array formation with Zhou Wen.

Zhou Wen attacked the array, but when his strength struck the barrier, it was absorbed by the barrier, preventing it from cracking.

Essence Energy-related skills won’t do, but I wonder if pure physical strength works? Zhou Wen didn’t think too much about it as he forcefully switched to the Defy Ancient Sovereign Life Soul. He used the Demon Dragon True Body

and endured the loss of Essence Energy as he threw a punch at the barrier.

Boom!

The barrier trembled. Although it wasn’t shattered, it gave Zhou Wen hope. Pure physical strength was indeed effective against the Heaven and Earth Origin-Returning Array.

Zhou Wen didn’t hesitate as he punched the barrier, again and again, hoping to penetrate it and escape the Heaven and Earth Origin-Returning Array.

Xia Liuchuan was attacking Old Master Xia crazily, but all his attacks were easily dodged by Old Master Xia, like a cat teasing a mouse.

“I gave you everything you have, and I taught you all your techniques. How dare you attack me?” Old Master Xia easily dodged Xia Liuchuan’s attack and stared at him coldly.

Xia Liuchuan didn’t say a word and just kept attacking.

In the past, Old Master Xia had indeed doted on him. In the past, he had indeed treated Old Master Xia as his closest kin, even closer than his own parents.

It wasn’t until the year he turned fifteen that he accidentally saw Old Master Xia suck his talented cousin dry. From then on, he rarely went to the East Courtyard.

“I originally thought that you were a little different from the others, but it looks like you’re just a beast that will ultimately remain mortal. Forget it. With you as my last cornerstone, my raising of you for so many years wasn’t in vain.” Old Master Xia actually made a move. His palm

actually passed through Xia Liuchuan’s fist and struck his chest.

Xia Liuchuan was wearing the Guardian armor. Although he wasn’t seriously injured, he still took a few steps back.

“Although a Guardian is strong, it’s a pity that you don’t have the time to truly control his power. Furthermore, do you really think that after contracting with the Guardian, he will really belong to you?” Old Master Xia retracted his palm. There was a wound on his finger and blood was dripping out.

There was also a smear of blood on Xia Liuchuan’s armor. Clearly, the blood did not belong to him.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 749 - The Strong Are Respected

Chapter 749: The Strong Are Respected

Crack! Crack!

The Guardian armor on Xia Liuchuan's body cracked. It wasn't shattering, but the armor was automatically disintegrating.

The black jade-like armor quickly disintegrated from Xia Liuchuan's body and condensed into a figure in the air.

It was a black jade golem. It looked very strange. It had the appearance of a human, but its body was black jade.

Old Master Xia looked at Xia Liuchuan and said coldly, "In this world, only strength is the eternal truth. The so-called Guardian only wants to protect humans who can make it stronger. I'm far stronger than you, so it abandoned you and chose me. The rules of the world are just that cruel. The strong are respected."

As Old Master Xia spoke, the black-jade-like Guardian had already transformed into armor again. However, this time, it was on Old Master Xia.

Old Master Xia's white hair had already turned completely black. Wearing the black jade Guardian armor, he looked even more majestic and heroic. His nose was slightly aquiline, giving him the look of the ruthlessness of an ambitious and ruthless character. It made people fear him.

Without the protection of the black jade armor, Xia Liuchuan's Essence Energy began to leak out as it was absorbed by the Heaven and Earth Origin-Returning Array.

Old Master Xia already had terrifying Essence Energy and vitality. Now, with the power of the black jade armor, his strength was unimaginable. With a punch, Xia Liuchuan only had time to raise his arm to block before he was sent flying. He slammed into the light barrier and spat out a mouthful of blood.

Zhou Wen was still striking the barrier, but he hadn't blasted it open. When he turned his head and saw this scene, he was somewhat alarmed.

Although I knew that Guardians are unreliable, I never expected them to be so unreliable. It actually betrayed its owner just like that. Thankfully, I didn't contract a Guardian. Zhou Wen was secretly glad that he didn't contract with Guardians.

Zhou Wen secretly decided that unless it was a master-slave contract like Demonic Neonate, even if he couldn't advance to the Mythical stage, he definitely wouldn't contract a Guardian.

Now, there was no time for Zhou Wen to think too much. Xia Liuchuan was already at his limits. If he didn't leave, he would only be able to fight Old Sicko Xia in the Heaven and Earth Origin-Returning Array. Fighting him here would be too disadvantageous.

However, the barrier was too hard. The power of the Demon Dragon True Body couldn't blast it open in a short period of time. By the time he blasted it open, Old Sicko Xia would have already charged over.

Suddenly, Zhou Wen thought of an idea. Although he didn’t know if it would work, he had to give it a try.

Looking at Xia Xuanyue, who had expended all her Essence Energy and was losing her essence, vitality, and spirit, Zhou Wen switched to the Dao Sutra and summoned the Heaven-Opening Scripture of the Highest Elder to protect himself and Xia Xuanyue. Then, he hugged the log to his waist and slammed it into the light barrier of the Heaven and Earth Origin-Returning Array.

I’ve carried you for so long. If you don’t give me some help, I’m going to die here, Zhou Wen thought as the log slammed into the barrier.

Zhou Wen originally wanted to try using the heavy mass of the log to aid him, but to his surprise, he heard a loud thud.

The entire Heaven and Earth Origin-Returning Array’s barrier shattered like glass. It stopped operating as the golden runes beneath dimmed.

Everyone was stunned as Old Master Xia gave up on attacking Xia Liuchuan. He turned his head and looked at Zhou Wen, staring at the log in his arms with a puzzled look.

Xia Xuanyue, who was sitting beside him, looked at Zhou Wen with a look of surprise. She never expected Zhou Wen to crack the Heaven and Earth Origin-Returning Array.

Zhou Wen never expected the log to be so powerful. If he had known this would happen, he would have long cracked open the Heaven and Earth Origin-Returning Array. He wouldn’t have needed to wait until now.

However, Zhou Wen didn’t waste any time being dazed. He ran towards the Hall of Supreme Harmony with the log in

hand.

Old Master Xia's figure moved as he attempted to stop Zhou Wen. Although he didn't know what Zhou Wen was up to, he didn't think it was anything good, nor did he wish for anything to happen.

Just as he moved, he saw a sword beam stab at him. Old Master Xia dodged slightly and the Evil-Slaying Sword flew past his face. Xia Liuchuan held the Pure Hook Sword with both hands and cleaved down from behind.

Old Master Xia snorted and flicked the Pure Hook Sword with his finger, sending it flying.

Xia Liuchuan's figure appeared beside the Evil-Slaying Sword that had already flown over. He held onto the Evil-Slaying Sword and slashed at Old Master Xia's neck.

"I told you, I taught you everything. Your tricks are useless against me." Old Master Xia seemed to have expected Xia Liuchuan to appear there and punched him in the abdomen.

This punch carried unparalleled power. If one was hit, even a steel castle would be blasted open, much less a person. It was evident that Old Master Xia really wanted to kill Xia Liuchuan.

However, Xia Liuchuan's person disappeared again. Old Master Xia's fist missed again.

Clang!

A sword stabbed into Old Master Xia's back. It was the ancient sword that Xia Xuanyue used. At that moment, Xia Liuchuan held it in his hand and pierced through Old Master Xia's black jade armor.

“Very good… Really good… I never expected your Sword Warp technique to reach such a stage. You can use the sword of others to warp. From the looks of it, you never planned on following my orders to kill Zhou Wen from the beginning…” Old Master Xia lowered his head as his eyes turned terrifying. Without turning around, he enunciated each word with a heavy tone.

The ancient sword had penetrated three inches in and the sword beam erupted like a volcano. However, no matter how Xia Liuchuan exerted his strength, he was unable to move the sword tip any further.

Old Master Xia’s figure suddenly turned blurry and vanished in front of Xia Liuchuan as though he had teleported. Xia Liuchuan cursed silently and used Sword Warp. When he appeared again, he was already beside the Evil-Slaying Sword.

However, just as Xia Liuchuan appeared, Old Master Xia appeared beside the Evil-Slaying Sword and punched him to the ground.

Boom!

Xia Liuchuan’s body slammed heavily to the ground, creating a huge crater. Blood spewed out of his mouth as countless bones fractured.

“Brother!” Xia Xuanyue struggled to stand up and wanted to rush over.

“Don’t come over… Leave quickly…” Xia Liuchuan gritted his teeth and shouted. At the same time, he used Sword Warp with all his might again. When he arrived beside the Pure Hook Sword, his body clearly staggered, but his grip on the sword remained immensely firm.

However, the moment he held the Pure Hook Sword, Old Master Xia had already appeared in front of him. Without waiting for Xia Liuchuan to swing his sword, his fists had already struck Xia Liuchuan’s chest at an indiscernible speed. Xia Liuchuan vomited blood and his sternum collapsed.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 750 - Freakish Monster

Chapter 750: Freakish Monster

Translator: CKtalon

While Xia Liuchuan held back Old Master Xia, Zhou Wen finally reached the top of the Hall of Supreme Harmony's roof. When he raised the log to the highest point, Zhou Wen knew that he was at the right spot.

After the log was erected on the roof, it seemed to be sucked by a magnet. Zhou Wen didn't need to support it to prevent it from falling.

It's done! Zhou Wen was delighted as he took two steps back. The word "slave" didn't appear on his forehead again.

Zhou Wen didn't have the time to see what changes the log had undergone because Xia Liuchuan was about to be sucked dry.

Old Master Xia's hand grabbed Xia Liuchuan's head, causing his Essence Energy, essence, vitality, and spirit to rush into Old Master Xia's body.

Originally, Xia Liuchuan's life had nothing to do with Zhou Wen, but if he allowed Old Master Xia to absorb Xia Liuchuan's powers to advance to the Mythical stage, it would be even harder to deal with him.

Furthermore, if Xia Liuchuan hadn't held back Old Master Xia just now, it would have been very difficult for him to escape Old Master Xia and erect the log above the Hall of Supreme Harmony.

Without the restriction of the log, Zhou Wen felt much more relaxed. Doctor Darkness possessed him as he drew Bamboo Blade. He used Transcendent Flying Immortal and instantly appeared in front of Old Master Xia and slashed at his hand that was grabbing Xia Liuchuan.

Old Master Xia's other hand blocked the Bamboo Blade at the last moment.

With the protection of the black jade armor, Bamboo Blade failed to injure his hand. However, this was within Zhou Wen's expectations. He held the Orchid Blade in his other hand and slashed at Old Master Xia's neck from a strange angle.

Old Master Xia had no choice but to let go of Xia Liuchuan and grab the Orchid Blade with his other hand.

Zhou Wen's movement technique changed as he danced in the air, preventing Old Master Xia's hand from touching his saber. With one long and one short blade in hand, he slashed at Old Master Xia from all sorts of strange angles.

He didn't dare use his Essence Energy Skills and only relied on his strength to attack. Although the Heaven and Earth Origin-Returning Array had been destroyed, Old Master Xia had the ability to absorb all sorts of Essence Energy. Even an Essence Energy Skill with powerful offensive strength like the Golden Sword Aura would be directly absorbed by him and augment him. The other Essence Energy Skills were even more useless.

Thankfully, Zhou Wen was best at movement techniques. He didn't need to release his Essence Energy, or he would have been sucked in by Old Master Xia.

Outside Forbidden City, Zhang Chunqiu and Dugu Ge were already dumbfounded. With the Heaven and Earth Origin-Returning Array enveloping the area, they had no idea what was happening inside.

After the array was destroyed by Zhou Wen, they could finally see the situation inside.

However, they ended up seeing that Xia Liuchuan had been beaten up by Old Master Xia and how Zhou Wen had helped to resolve the situation and was fighting Old Master Xia. In addition, more than ten thousand Xia family members had collapsed to the ground. It left them momentarily shocked, unsure of what had happened.

Zhou Wen pushed Transcendent Flying Immortal to its limits. With Doctor Darkness strengthening his body, his speed was much faster than a Mythical creature like Six-Winged.

However, his two sabers did not touch Old Master Xia at all.

Path to Snatching Heaven! Zhou Wen recognized that the movement technique Old Master Xia was using was the Path to Snatching Heaven.

Zhou Wen didn’t find it strange that Old Master Xia could use Path to Snatching Heaven. Furthermore, Old Master Xia’s Path to Snatching Heaven was stronger than Xia Xuanyue’s. Clearly, he had long cultivated it to the divine level.

However, this movement technique was somewhat different from Xia Xuanyue’s—it was several times stronger. Even Zhou Wen’s divine Transcendent Flying Immortal paled in comparison.

What was even more terrifying was that not only did Old Master Xia have a good movement technique, but he

seemed to have made terrifying achievements in his various techniques. Every ordinary move was like a finishing touch. It was as if every move had reached a divine level.

Zhou Wen was completely suppressed in a short period of time. Be it in terms of technique or strength, he was unable to fight Old Master Xia head-on.

If not for the fact that he already knew the profundity of the Path to Snatching Heaven, he would have been injured by Old Master Xia.

With his understanding of Path to Snatching Heaven and the wonders of Transcendent Flying Immortal, Zhou Wen was barely able to maintain an undefeated stance.

This sicko is a monster. How can someone cultivate all the techniques to the divine level? Is he still human? Zhou Wen knew very well how difficult it was to cultivate a technique to the divine level.

After cultivating for so long, he had only cultivated Transcendent Flying Immortal to the divine level. Xia Liuchuan was about ten years older than him, but he had also only cultivated Sword Warp to the divine level.

As for Old Master Xia, he gave Zhou Wen the feeling that he was omnipotent. It was as though any technique would become an unparalleled divine technique in his hands.

Although he didn’t use any Essence Energy Skills, he was already suffocating from the pressure.

Thankfully, Zhou Wen was a person who was calmer and less prone to mistakes in times of adversity. He kept searching for an opportunity to defeat Old Master Xia.

Typical Companion Beast attacks weren’t of much use against someone like Old Master Xia who could absorb Essence Energy Skills. Physical attacks were relatively effective against him.

However, now that he had the Guardian armor, he was like a tiger with wings. Typical Mythical Companion Beasts were probably not a threat to him.

Tyrant Behemoth was originally a better choice. Unfortunately, its Absolute Strength had run out not long ago, so it couldn’t be used for the time being.

After some thought, Zhou Wen realized that among his Companion Beasts, the only ones that might pose a threat to Old Master Xia were Torch Dragon’s Bright Torch Vision World, Demonic Neonate’s Demonic Sword, and Truth Listener that had activated multiple earrings.

However, they might only be effective and not necessarily useful. Therefore, Zhou Wen had to find an appropriate opportunity to use Torch Dragon’s Bright Torch World. He only hoped to kill Old Master Xia in one strike and not give him any chance.

His flesh tore as Old Master Xia’s fingertip brushed past Zhou Wen’s arm. Immediately, his flesh was sliced open and blood flowed out. If Zhou Wen had dodged any slower, his arm would have been severed.

To fight someone whose movement techniques weren’t slower than them, whose attacks were more ruthless than them, and whose moves were more ingenious than them, anyone would feel immense pressure. If they weren’t careful, they might be killed in one strike.

In reality, there was no rewind option like in-game, so Zhou Wen didn’t dare be careless. He would rather be injured than take the risk of being killed in one strike.

“You are indeed different from the rest. I wouldn’t be surprised if I saw such a movement technique and endurance from an old man in his seventies or eighties, but you are only seventeen or eighteen years old. To be able to do this much, your future achievements will definitely not be inferior to An Tianzuo’s if you don’t die,” Old Master Xia said calmly as he attacked.

Actually, he shouldn’t be called Old Master Xia anymore because his current appearance was almost the same as a man in his thirties. There were no signs of aging on his body.

His majestic figure, domineering aura, and invincible combat strength made him seem invulnerable.

Blood splattered as another wound appeared on Zhou Wen’s back.

“I’ll help you.” Xia Liuchuan struggled to stand up, but his injuries were too serious. He staggered as he walked. Only his hand that held the sword remained steady.

Xia Liuchuan wanted to throw his sword at Old Master Xia, but before he could do so, Old Master Xia had already struck out with his palm, sending Xia Liuchuan flying along with his sword.

Now. Zhou Wen instantly unleashed his strength. He pushed Transcendent Flying Immortal to its limits as the two blades transformed into streams of light that criss-crossed with Old Master Xia.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 751

Chapter 751: Connate Dominance Body

Clang! Clang! Clang!

The fully-unleashed Transcendent Flying Immortal was blocked by Old Master Xia's hands.

The divine physique given to him by the Guardian, together with the powerful Essence Energy he had accumulated, was truly terrifying.

Zhou Wen had no intention of finishing Old Master Xia off with this strike. As the two sabers slashed crazily, Torch Dragon's mirror eye also caused Zhou Wen's pupils to undergo a strange change. It was as though it had turned into a mirror as it looked at Old Master Xia.

However, Old Master Xia suddenly vanished into thin air. Almost at the same time, he appeared behind Zhou Wen and struck his head with his palm.

Teleportation! Zhou Wen immediately realized that it was true teleportation. It had an extremely similar effect to Lost Country.

Without any time to turn around or dodge, Zhou Wen raised Bamboo Blade above his head and blocked Old Master Xia's palm.

However, the palm strangely turned transparent as though it had transformed into a ghostly hand. It passed through the

Bamboo Blade and continued striking at Zhou Wen’s head.

Zhou Wen was alarmed as he twisted his head to the side. He gathered his strength with his other hand and struck towards Old Master Xia’s palm.

When the two palms clashed, Zhou Wen immediately felt a powerful suction force suck his palm, sucking the Essence Energy in his body towards Old Master Xia.

Zhou Wen wanted to shake off Old Master Xia’s hand, but he couldn’t. His other hand held Bamboo Blade and slashed at Old Master Xia, but he was grabbed by his other hand. His Essence Energy was sucked even faster.

Zhou Wen immediately realized the problem. Not only had Old Master Xia absorbed the Essence Energy of those geniuses, but he had also robbed them of their bloodline talent, Life Providence, and Life Soul.

Zhou Wen was certain that Old Master Xia definitely had multiple Life Providences and Life Souls. Otherwise, it was impossible for him to use so many different Essence Energy Skills.

In that short moment, Old Master Xia had used three powers of different attributes and categories. Furthermore, each of them was a rare ability.

Zhou Wen’s Essence Energy was drained as his expression turned livid. He suddenly activated his mirror eye and looked at Old Master Xia.

“Don’t use the same trick twice in front of me,” Old Master Xia said coldly. He opened his eyes and there seemed to be a devil roaring in his pupils. It was an eye-type Life Soul.

At the instant he saw the Life Soul in the eye, Zhou Wen's eyelids closed uncontrollably. He couldn't open them no matter what.

How many terrifying Life Providences and Life Souls did this bastard plunder? How did he do it? Zhou Wen was alarmed as the Essence Energy in his body surged towards Old Master Xia like a river.

I'll fight it out with you. Zhou Wen struggled with all his might, hoping to escape Old Master Xia's grasp, but it was to no avail.

Just as Old Master Xia was about to say something, a purple-black ancient sword suddenly emerged from the ground and stabbed at Old Master Xia's crotch.

This strike was too strange and sinister. Before Old Master Xia could react, the sword had already stabbed into his body.

Bam!

After being penetrated by the demonic sword, Old Master Xia's body exploded like a ball of water, turning into a pool of water. As for his true body, it appeared behind Zhou Wen and twisted his arms.

He even has an avatar Life Soul. This old sicko… Zhou Wen cursed inwardly.

"No matter how strong you are, you're just a…" Before Old Master Xia could finish his sentence, his pupils constricted.

Zhou Wen's right hand, which he had grabbed, suddenly vanished like a ghost. It passed through Old Master Xia's Guardian armor and body and instantly flashed three times.

Zhou Wen wasn’t afraid of having his Essence Energy sucked away. His Slaughterer Life Soul allowed him to have unlimited Essence Energy. No matter how much Old Master Xia absorbed, it wouldn’t harm him.

Zhou Wen had waited so long for this opportunity. When Old Master Xia believed that he was at the end of his rope and his final trump card had failed, he used Doctor Darkness’s Darkness Right Hand.

Without giving Old Master Xia any chance, Zhou Wen’s Darkness Right Hand plucked out Old Master Xia’s heart, liver, and one of his kidneys. Even the Guardian armor couldn’t block the Darkness Right Hand.

Zhou Wen held Old Master Xia’s bloody organs in his hand. The heart was still beating violently. Every time it beat, blood would spew out from the severed arteries. It looked extremely terrifying.

Old Master Xia looked down at his body and didn’t find any injuries. However, blood seeped out from his mouth and nose.

Xia Liuchuan and Xia Xuanyue watched this scene with mixed feelings.

“It’s been a long time… It’s been a long time since someone injured me… You are the first in nearly twenty years…” Old Master Xia said as he stared at Zhou Wen.

Zhou Wen immediately felt that something was amiss. Old Master Xia’s vitality didn’t weaken after his organs were removed. Instead, it became stronger.

A white flame burned over Old Master Xia’s body. It wasn’t a flame, but a condensation of immense lifeforce.

Zhou Wen used his penetrative vision to stare at Old Master Xia and saw that the organs that had been plucked out of his body had grown again.

“Connate Dominance Body… How is this possible… This is impossible…” Xia Xuanyue exclaimed.

“What is the Connate Dominance Body?” Zhou Wen hurriedly asked.

The heavily injured Xia Liuchuan answered, “The Connate Dominance Body is a Life Providence derived from the Invincible Connate Divine Art. Only by cultivating the Invincible Connate Divine Art can one condense a Connate Dominance Body. However, not everyone who cultivates the Invincible Connate Divine Art can condense a Connate Dominance Body. It depends on one’s physique and talent. Our Xia family abandoned the Invincible Connate Divine Art long ago. The only person in the records who could condense a Connate Dominance Body was our Xia family’s hero… However, he died many years ago…”

Zhou Wen had heard of the Xia family’s hero. As Li Xuan cultivated in the Invincible Connate Divine Art, he had heard a lot about it from him.

However, in Zhou Wen’s impression, the Xia family’s hero’s Life Providence didn’t seem to be called the Connate Dominance Body. Furthermore, in order to get married and have children, he had nullified the Invincible Connate Divine Art. He had lost both his Life Providence and Life Soul. Even if he revived, it was impossible for him to have another Connate Dominance Body.

It was also because of this that the Xia family’s hero died in a dimensional zone.

However, Xia Liuchuan and Xia Xuanyue were real Xia family members. They naturally wouldn’t make a mistake. Old Master Xia definitely had the Connate Dominance Body.

“From the looks of it, he has absorbed a Xia family member with a Connate Dominance Body Life Providence,” Zhou Wen said.

“That’s impossible. Apart from the Xia family’s hero, even if one cultivates in the Invincible Connate Divine Art, no one has condensed a Connate Dominance Body…” Xia Xuanyue said.

“Then you must be mistaken. What he has isn’t the Connate Dominance Body, but another powerful self-healing ability…” Zhou Wen saw that Old Master Xia’s body had already recovered. After his organs were regenerated, they were no different from his previous organs.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 752 - Dark Clouds

Chapter 752: Dark Clouds

Translator: CKtalon

Old Master Xia clearly wasn’t in the mood to continue listening to them. With a flash, he appeared in front of Zhou Wen like a devil and struck out at him.

The flames on his palm were like a blazing sun that burned everything. When Zhou Wen saw that the flames could even burn through the void, he immediately knew that it wasn’t an ordinary fire-elemental power. He didn’t dare take it head-on as he spread out his six wings and rapidly retreated.

However, a pair of Golden-Winged Roc Life Soul wings appeared behind Old Master Xia, greatly increasing his speed. Zhou Wen wasn’t able to open the distance between them, so the flames were about to strike his chest.

Zhou Wen had no choice but to slash out his Bamboo Blade at Old Master Xia’s palm.

When Bamboo Blade came into contact with the flames, the flames spread along Bamboo Blade and instantly enveloped his body.

The flames spewed out before extinguishing. The six wings on Zhou Wen’s back vanished as his face turned pale.

If not for Six-Winged’s Life Guardian, Zhou Wen would have died from this strike.

However, Six-Winged was also killed because of this, making it impossible for it to be revived.

“To think you have a Companion Beast that can die in your place. Your luck sure is extraordinary. However, your luck ends here.” Old Master Xia stared coldly at Zhou Wen, prepared to continue attacking.

Suddenly, a clap of thunder sounded in the sky, shocking everyone.

At some point in time, the sky was filled with dark clouds. Lightning flashed amidst the dark clouds.

Zhang Chunqiu, who was peeping outside, felt a sharp pain in his eyes. Blood tears flowed out of his eyes as he hurriedly retracted his Heavenly Eye. He didn’t dare look inside again as he looked at Forbidden City’s general direction in horror.

A storm was brewing above Forbidden City. The whole of Imperial Capital’s sky was covered in dark clouds, but Forbidden City seemed to be the center of the storm. It was especially gloomy.

Almost at the same time, Dugu Ge lost contact with his Gu worm. The two of them looked at each other and saw the shock in each other’s eyes.

Up to now, they had yet to figure out what had happened in Forbidden City. They had some ideas based on what they had seen, but they didn’t know if they were right. However, just the mere speculation left them shocked.

“Do you know what’s going on?” Dugu Ge pointed at the dark clouds in the sky and asked.

Zhang Chunqiu pinched his fingers to divine. The more he did so, the more he shook his head. “The heavenly secrets are in chaos. Nothing can be divined. The outcome is different every time, so there’s no point in divining. From the

looks of it, something big is about to happen. Let’s leave this place quickly to avoid being implicated.”

“What about Loser?” Dugu Ge asked.

“I’ve previously told his fortune. He’s not destined to die. He should be able to survive this calamity.” As Zhang Chunqiu spoke, he turned around and left, as though he was being chased by a dog. He was afraid that he would be bitten by a dog if he ran too slowly.

Dugu Ge glanced in the direction of Forbidden City before leaving with Zhang Chunqiu.

…

In Forbidden City, Zhou Wen summoned Torch Dragon and said to Xia Xuanyue and company, “Leave now.”

He knew that he could only risk his life. Otherwise, he might really not be able to leave Forbidden City today.

Zhou Wen suspected that the Old Master Xia in front of him might be one of the six heroes, the invincible hero from the Xia family.

However, the Xia family’s hero had long lost his virginity. Otherwise, there wouldn’t be the Xia family now.

Wait, what if the present Xia family doesn’t have the true hero’s bloodline? Zhou Wen was alarmed as he suddenly felt that it was very possible.

As the saying went, even a vicious tiger wouldn’t eat its cubs. However, Old Master Xia was as cold-blooded and heartless to the Xia family. If they went against him in any way, he would kill them immediately. Even geniuses like Xia

Xuanyue and Xia Liuchuan could be ruthlessly killed. This was definitely not something an ordinary person could do.

However, if Old Master Xia was really the hero of the Xia family and he hadn't really lost his virginity, then all of this could be explained. This was because the Xia family didn't have the bloodline of the hero, so he didn't need to have any familial concerns.

Of course, all of this was just Zhou Wen's guess. Perhaps Old Master Xia had nothing to do with the Xia family's hero. His nature was just that ruthless.

"Ah Cheng, take Little Chuan and Little Yue back," Old Master Xia said as he stared coldly at Zhou Wen.

He wasn't killing Xia Liuchuan and Xia Xuanyue out of goodwill; instead, the array's destruction meant he couldn't prevent outsiders from spying on them. He wasn't willing to kill Xia Liuchuan and Xia Xuanyue in front of others.

"Yes." Ah Cheng ran towards Xia Liuchuan and Xia Xuanyue.

Zhou Wen didn't stop him. Xia Liuchuan and Xia Xuanyue being taken away was better than them dying here. As long as they weren't dead, there was still hope.

"Zhou Wen, live on," Xia Xuanyue shouted at Zhou Wen as she was taken away.

I'll live, Zhou Wen thought.

Old Master Xia glanced at Torch Dragon and said, "This should be Torch Dragon from the Zhuolu temple, right? At such a young age, you actually have so many Mythical Companion Beasts and have such attainments in martial arts. It's enough for you to dominate the Federation. In the

history of the Federation, there’s no one who had such achievements at your age.”

“I’m still inferior to you,” Zhou Wen said sincerely.

He originally believed that he was sufficiently omnipotent and could handle all kinds of crises.

Even if he was inferior to others in some aspects, Zhou Wen had always felt that he was one of the best in the Federation when it came to overall combat strength.

However, Old Master Xia was more comprehensive than him. Not only did he have multiple Life Providences and Life Souls, but he could also use them freely. He also had a Guardian. What was even more terrifying was that he didn’t plan on purely relying on the Guardian’s powers to stay at the Mythical stage. Instead, he wanted to advance to the Mythical stage with his own strength.

He had divine skills and immense strength. Furthermore, he definitely had Mythical Companion Beasts which were definitely not ordinary ones. His strength could be described as unfathomable.

Boom!

The lightning in the sky constantly interweaved as thunder boomed one after another.

Xia Liuchuan and Xia Xuanyue no longer had the ability to fight. They were forcefully taken out by Ah Cheng. Only Zhou Wen and Old Master Xia were left in front of the huge Hall of Supreme Harmony.

“You are indeed inferior to me now, but if we were born in the same era, I might not be your match. With you as the

last cornerstone of my advancement to the Mythical stage, I’m very satisfied. Don’t worry. After today, I’ll take your talent, Life Providence, and Life Soul for myself and make it famous. You should be able to feel comforted in the afterlife,” Old Master Xia said as he took a step forward and arrived in front of Zhou Wen as though he had tunneled through the void.

Zhou Wen was already prepared as he put on the Jade Crystal Spirit armor. At the same time, Torch Dragon used World King Transformation. Torch Dragon’s eyes all across its body opened wide as they turned into mirrors. It was the Bright Torch Vision World in the World King Transformation state.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 753 - Invisibility Strike

Chapter 753: Invisibility Strike

The power of the Bright Torch Vision World enveloped the entire area.

However, at the instant the Bright Torch Vision World activated, Old Master Xia suddenly vanished. Truth Listener couldn’t sense his location within its range, making Zhou Wen feel uneasy.

When the power of the Bright Torch Vision World stopped, he saw Old Master Xia’s figure appear not far from him as though he had never moved.

“Universe Shifting, Yin and Yang Interconnect. There aren’t many abilities that can achieve this level. I only obtained the Yin Yang Universe Ring Life Soul after searching for nearly ten years. Using this Life Soul, I can temporarily reverse Yin and Yang, preventing any force from injuring or seeing me,” Old Master Xia said calmly as he stroked the ring with a Taiji symbol on his finger.

“How many people have you killed and how many Life Souls have you plundered? Don’t you think that those Life Souls are like the ghosts of those people, pestering you every day and night?” Zhou Wen unsummoned Torch Dragon to prevent it from being killed by Old Master Xia.

After the World King Transformation, Torch Dragon entered a weakened state, greatly reducing its strength. It could no longer play a decisive role in such a battle.

Old Master Xia said calmly, “In this era, if I’m still afraid of the supernatural, how can I defy the heavens and change my fate? I’m not afraid of ghosts or gods. I’m afraid I won’t be able to make all dimensional creatures prostrate before me.”

“It’s about time. As one of the nine main Life Souls of the Connate Great Emperor Sutra, help me advance to the Mythical stage.” The black jade armor on Old Master Xia’s body emitted a terrifying black light. As Old Master Xia threw a punch, space tore apart, forming a black sun.

However, upon careful inspection, the black sun was a black hole. It produced a huge suction force that pulled Zhou Wen in.

As Old Master Xia blasted the black hole at Zhou Wen, Zhou Wen felt the suction force grow stronger, as though it was about to pull his soul in.

Zhou Wen’s figure flashed as he suddenly vanished.

Old Master Xia frowned slightly as he looked around, but he didn’t find Zhou Wen. It was as though he had vanished into thin air.

Almost instantly, Old Master Xia condensed a ball of sun-like radiance in his palm. The light illuminated all of Forbidden City. Wherever it shone, hot smoke would emit. No matter where one hid, they would be forced out by this indiscriminate attack.

However, Old Master Xia didn’t sense anything amiss as though Zhou Wen had really vanished into thin air.

Does he have an ability similar to the Yin Yang Universe Ring? Old Master Xia frowned slightly.

Zhou Wen naturally didn’t have the Yin Yang Universe Ring, but he had the Invisibility Cloak. With the Invisibility Cloak’s Wheel of Destiny activated, he had three minutes of complete invisibility. Attacks were useless against him.

After Zhou Wen used the Invisibility Cloak, he unsummoned Demonic Neonate, who was hiding behind the roof of the Hall of Supreme Harmony, and charged towards the entrance of Forbidden City.

The invisible ability could only last for three minutes. After three minutes, he could only remain physically invisible. That way, he would be easily discovered. Therefore, Zhou Wen wanted to use this time to escape Forbidden City.

However, when he rushed to the entrance of Forbidden City, he realized that the door had already closed.

However, the invisibility force made him invisible and intangible during the three minutes. He could directly penetrate matter as Zhou Wen charged straight for the door.

Bam!

Zhou Wen’s body was repelled by a strange force, preventing him from rushing out.

How did this happen? Zhou Wen was alarmed as he felt that something was amiss.

The force that repelled him wasn’t the door itself, but a force that resembled lightning. His body was still feeling numb.

The black clouds and lightning that filled the sky had already made Zhou Wen feel that something was amiss. It felt even more so now. Zhou Wen looked up and carefully observed Forbidden City. He realized that the Corner Tower

on the city wall was emitting a faint glow. Although the light wasn't strong, it was especially eye-catching with the dark clouds covering the sun.

Zhou Wen flew into the air and looked at the other three Corner Towers in the city. Indeed, they were glowing.

Zhou Wen didn't have the time to think about the reason. He didn't have much time left. It had been nearly twenty seconds since he rushed over. Since he couldn't leave now, Zhou Wen had to think of a way to kill Old Master Xia. Otherwise, he would be the one to die.

The Connate Dominance Body is probably similar to Li Xuan's Immortal God of Combat. Its self-healing ability is even stronger. It's probably very difficult to kill him by simply injuring his body. How can I kill him? Zhou Wen was momentarily at a loss, but he couldn't sit idle.

He quickly rushed towards Old Master Xia who was still standing in his spot. He used all sorts of methods to find Zhou Wen, but it wasn't of much use. The eight Life Providences and Life Souls he already had, as well as all sorts of Essence Energy Skills, failed to be of any use. He failed to find the invisible Zhou Wen.

Zhou Wen came in front of Old Master Xia and pointed at his mouth. Then, he summoned the Primordial Spore and allowed it to enter his body. Regardless of whether it was useful or not, he had to give it a try.

After the Primordial Spore entered Old Master Xia's body, Zhou Wen pulled out the Orchid Blade and released it from invisibility. He stabbed it into Old Master Xia's mouth.

The Orchid Blade entered his mouth and penetrated Old Master Xia's brain, but it couldn't penetrate his skull from

the other end.

Zhou Wen didn’t care as he twisted the Orchid Blade.

Old Master Xia’s strength erupted like a volcano, sending Zhou Wen flying. He didn’t even manage to pull the Orchid Blade out from his mouth.

Zhou Wen’s body tumbled in the air as he finally managed to dissipate the terrifying force. However, he still spat out a mouthful of blood.

Zhou Wen wasn’t concerned about his injuries. Such injuries couldn’t kill him. All he wanted to know was if this strike was of any use.

Old Master Xia stood there with the Orchid Blade in his mouth. His brain had been severely damaged by Zhou Wen, but when Zhou Wen looked at him, he saw Old Master Xia extend his palm, grab the Orchid Blade, and pull it out of his mouth.

As for his injuries, they were rapidly recovering.

How can he still self-heal like this? Zhou Wen’s heart chilled. He still couldn’t kill Old Master Xia despite delivering such an attack. He couldn’t think of any power that could kill him.

Old Master Xia held the Orchid Blade, but there was no anger in his eyes. Instead, there was some fanaticism. “You really surprise me. Although I haven’t advanced to the Mythical stage, with the augmentation of a Guardian, I’m already a Mythical creature. Furthermore, I’m much stronger than ordinary Mythical creatures. Under such circumstances, you can still injure me, and not just once. It’s enough to prove that your Life Providence and Life Soul are very powerful.

“However, this also means that after absorbing your talent, Life Providence, and Life Soul, I will become stronger after advancing to the Mythical stage. I should be thanking you.” Old Master Xia walked towards Zhou Wen step by step, his killing intent burning to the extreme.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 754 - Connate Great Emperor Sutra

Chapter 754: Connate Great Emperor Sutra

Translator: CKtalon

Zhou Wen stood up and stared at Old Master Xia. He silently switched his Essence Energy Art to the most primitive Slaughterer and used Sigh of the King's power.

Immediately, an explosive force filled his body, almost blasting it apart. Furthermore, the force was rapidly becoming stronger.

It had been a long time since Zhou Wen used the Sigh of the King's power. This was because the force was just too powerful. Even with his present Constitution, he couldn't last long. If time went on, he would explode from his own strength without the enemy doing a thing.

But at this stage, he had to use it no matter what.

Old Master Xia's figure flashed as he appeared in front of Zhou Wen as though he had teleported. The Orchid Blade in his hand stabbed at Zhou Wen's eyes. Even at the Mythical stage, his speed was extremely terrifying. It was almost impossible for anyone to react.

Clang!

However, Zhou Wen reacted in time. His Bamboo Blade struck the Orchid Blade and forced Old Master Xia to take half a step back. It left Old Master Xia's eyes filled with surprise.

With the augmentation of the Guardian, his Speed and Strength were at the Mythical stage. Furthermore, he was a top existence among Mythical creatures.

Zhou Wen had actually blocked his saber and sent him retreating. This was enough to shock him.

After all, Zhou Wen didn’t have a Guardian. Even if he had a Mythical Companion Beast, that didn’t make him a true Mythical.

However, Zhou Wen didn’t have the time to think too much. His body was swelling uncomfortably, and it wouldn’t be long before he exploded. He had to do something before his body failed to withstand the Sigh of the King’s power.

He slashed at Old Master Xia with Bamboo Blade like a tsunami.

Old Master Xia raised the Orchid Blade and absorbed the terrifying Essence Energy from the Bamboo Blade.

However, he was surprised to discover that the Essence Energy from the Bamboo Blade seemed endless. No matter how he absorbed it, the Essence Energy from the Bamboo Blade showed no signs of weakening.

Zhou Wen delivered a few consecutive strikes that sent Old Master Xia retreating. The strength multiplied with every strike.

How is this possible? Old Master Xia was alarmed. He had the augmentation of a Guardian. Together with the power of the Connate Great Emperor Sutra, there weren’t many who could compete with him even at the Mythical stage.

Zhou Wen was at the Epic stage, but the power he unleashed was able to suppress him. This left him shocked and delighted.

The stronger Zhou Wen was, the stronger the Wheel of Destiny he would condense when he advanced to the Mythical stage with the help of the nine Life Souls.

“Show me your strength. This is your life’s final moment of glory. Let me see how strong you are.” Old Master Xia’s figure flashed as he dodged Zhou Wen’s saber attacks, the excitement in his eyes intensifying.

Zhou Wen’s expression didn’t change. Now, he was completely focused on combat. He didn’t have any other thoughts as he drove the violent forces in his body to the limits.

The blade became faster and faster, and the force became more and more violent.

As for Zhou Wen’s saber techniques, they also became stronger.

Transcendent Flying Immortal was actually a movement technique, not a saber technique. The present Zhou Wen was unable to injure Old Master Xia with Transcendent Flying Immortal alone as the latter’s Path to Snatching Heaven wasn’t inferior to Transcendent Flying Immortal.

Therefore, Zhou Wen could only seek a breakthrough. Since his movement technique couldn’t threaten Old Master Xia, he could only make the saber in his hand faster and stronger.

Zhou Wen didn’t have the time to use many fancy moves. He was only pursuing faster speeds.

Quick! Quick! Quick!

Zhou Wen only aimed to increase his speed. Be it his movement technique or the blade in his hand, they had infinite possibilities due to the nearly infinite forces in his body.

Bam!

When Zhou Wen felt that his body was about to explode from the violent forces, he finally reached a point where even Old Master Xia couldn't dodge his attacks. He slashed at Old Master Xia's chest.

However, Old Master Xia's body exploded like water. He had only slashed at a clone—Old Master Xia's body had appeared elsewhere.

"How interesting. Your Epic body actually possesses such immense strength. However, your body shouldn't be able to withstand such immense strength, right?" Old Master Xia sized up Zhou Wen with a fervent gaze.

He wanted to know how strong he would be if his Mythical body could possess such power.

Old Master Xia carefully selected seven talented youths and plundered their talent, Life Providences, and Life Souls. Together with his Life Providence and Life Soul, he was just short of one Life Providence and Life Soul to reach the extremity of nine for the Connate Great Emperor Sutra, allowing him to change his fate and advance to the Mythical stage.

The Connate Great Emperor Sutra was created by combining the Xia family's Great Emperor Sutra and the Invincible Connate Divine Art he obtained from the Connate Divine

Temple. He believed that he could definitely use this Essence Energy Art to advance to the Mythical stage.

However, it was difficult to gather nine Life Providences and nine Life Souls. Typical Life Providences and Life Souls, such as the ten thousand Epic swordsmen, only existed as nutrients for the nine Life Providences and Life Souls. They didn’t truly become his Life Providences and Life Souls.

It was very rare for someone to become one of the nine main Life Providences and Life Souls. Up to now, Old Master Xia was still lacking one.

In fact, Xia Liuchuan was originally the ninth person that Old Master Xia had deliberately nurtured. However, for some reason, Old Master Xia ultimately didn’t absorb Xia Liuchuan.

It was only when Zhou Wen appeared that Old Master Xia planned on using Zhou Wen as his ninth Life Providence and Life Soul. At the same time, he would use the Life Providences and Life Souls of more than ten thousand people as nutrients to push himself to the Mythical stage and condense the Wheel of Destiny.

However, Zhou Wen’s performance left Old Master Xia alarmed. Zhou Wen was much stronger than the eight he had absorbed previously. It was a rare sight.

It was indeed as Old Master Xia had said. Zhou Wen’s body couldn’t withstand the power of the Sigh of the King. His flesh ruptured as bloody marks appeared on his skin. His muscles were torn apart as blood dripped. Cracks also appeared on his bones. If this continued, he would probably self-destruct.

However, Zhou Wen was still as calm as before. He carefully sensed the forces that were pushing his body towards destruction.

Zhou Wen had seen many powerful creatures—Torch Dragon, Tyrant Behemoth, Primordial Sword Immortal, Truth Listener, and the even stronger Guardians. They were all very powerful, forces that others looked up to.

However, no matter what kind of power it was, it couldn’t compare to the power in Zhou Wen’s body. Zhou Wen could sense that this power was a level higher than any power he had ever seen. It might even be on a higher level.

“If God opposes me, I will slay God… If an immortal opposes me, I will cull the immortal… No exchanges with god… No acquaintances with immortals… I am me…”

Zhou Wen recalled the impudent and savage voice in his dream. It left him shuddering in fear, but it also made his blood boil.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 755 - The Might of One Saber Strike

Chapter 755: The Might of One Saber Strike

Translator: CKtalon

His body ruptured as his flesh split open. Blood constantly flowed out, but Zhou Wen remained calm. He gripped the Bamboo Blade tightly with both hands as he focused his insights into it. He raised the Bamboo Blade high above his head.

Old Master Xia's heart palpitated as though he sensed danger. His expression turned solemn as he stared intently at Zhou Wen.

The wounds on Zhou Wen's body kept cracking, but his expression was as calm as before. He exerted strength with both hands and slashed down, aiming for Old Master Xia.

With this strike, the crazily erupting power in Zhou Wen's body was instantly drained. It gathered on the blade, causing Bamboo Blade's body to tremble.

Old Master Xia couldn't see the trajectory of the saber when it landed. He was shocked and his body immediately phased away.

Bam!

Old Master Xia's body was split into two, turning into clear water that splattered on the ground.

Elsewhere, Old Master Xia's true body appeared. However, the Guardian armor on his body was shattering. From his helmet to his armor, a saber gash appeared.

An invisible saber force continued to press down on the armor, causing it to crack from top to bottom. Old Master Xia’s blood was also gushing out.

Crack!

The Guardian armor on Old Master Xia’s body had shattered due to the blow. It turned into pieces of black jade that scattered to the ground, revealing Old Master Xia’s true body.

His body phased away again and appeared again shortly after. He must have used the Yin Yang Universe Ring’s ability.

However, when he appeared, the saber marks on his body were still spreading. It went from his head to his chest and then to his abdomen. The bloody mark constantly expanding as more and more blood oozed out.

Old Master Xia’s almost immortal Connate Dominance Body couldn’t stop the saber marks on his body from deepening, nor could it heal his wounds.

Old Master Xia watched as the saber marks on his body continued to tear, and his skull was about to split open. His expression turned somewhat crazy and in disbelief.

“Impossible… No power can take my life… My Connate Great Emperor Sutra is the strongest…”

Zhou Wen had converged the Sigh of the King’s power. His Slaughterer Life Soul had automatically turned still. During the slash, the Slaughterer Life Soul had automatically fused into Zhou Wen’s strike. Slaughterer, which had only been passively augmenting Zhou Wen, had actively shown its effects for the first time.

After shattering the Guardian armor, a strange force fused into the Slaughterer Life Soul, but it failed to advance as it did before.

Zhou Wen didn’t find it strange. The advancement of a Life Soul at higher levels was difficult to begin with. The last time he killed a Guardian, he had allowed Slaughterer to advance to an Evolved Body. It was obvious that killing one Guardian wasn’t enough to advance to a Perfect Body.

The strike had already drained Zhou Wen of all his combat strength.

In particular, his body had been severely damaged by the Sigh of the King. It was difficult for him to even stand.

Zhou Wen stared at Slaughterer as the power of the strike continued to work wonders. It was about to rip Old Master Xia’s bones into two.

Without the Guardian’s power, no matter how strong Old Master Xia was, he was only at the Epic stage. Zhou Wen believed that it was impossible for him to withstand the terrifying saber force.

The saber force wasn’t only limited to the Sigh of the King; it also had Slaughterer’s strength embedded within. Zhou Wen felt that the strength of the strike wouldn’t vanish unless it killed its opponent.

Boom!

At this moment, a sudden bolt of lightning struck the top of Old Master Xia’s head.

The purple lightning bathed Old Master Xia’s body and actually shattered the saber force in Old Master Xia’s body.

The strange purple lightning also fused into his body at the same time, as if a purple shadow was flashing across his body.

The moment the saber shattered, Old Master Xia's injuries began to rapidly recover. What was even more terrifying was that his body was rapidly transforming. It looked like he was transforming from the Epic stage to the Mythical stage.

*Are you f*cking kidding me? I carried you all the way here and suffered so much, but you actually helped that old sicko deal with me?* Zhou Wen felt indignant.

He could clearly see that the purple lightning didn't smite down from the void, but shot out from the log on the roof of the Hall of Supreme Harmony.

"Haha, I'm indeed a person blessed by the heavens. Even the heavens want to help me advance to the Mythical stage. It used divine lightning to condense another soul for me so that I can advance to the Mythical stage. Who in the world can stop me? I, Xia Jiuhuang, am the Emperor of Heaven. No one can stop me from becoming a god." Old Master Xia threw his head back and laughed. The nine Life Souls on his body were faintly discernible as terrifying power spewed out from his body. His body was rapidly transforming.

As if responding to Old Master Xia, the thunder in the sky rumbled like a 21-gun salute.

Zhou Wen sat weakly on the ground. He didn't have the strength to continue fighting. If Old Master Xia really managed to advance, Zhou Wen wouldn't have the strength to fight him.

However, the name Xia Jiuhuang finally made Zhou Wen know who Old Master Xia was. This name wasn't only known

to the Xia family, but it was also famous in the entire Federation. He was one of the six heroes who founded the Federation, the founder of the Xia family, the supposedly deceased legendary hero, Xia Jiuhuang.

At that moment, Xia Jiuhuang's aura had reached its peak. His body had almost turned crystalline jade as his Essence Energy spewed out like a volcanic eruption. The nine Life Providences and the power of the nine Life Souls fused as one, and an ancient 'Emperor' word gradually surfaced on his forehead.

The 'Emperor' word shimmered with purple lightning as though it was a supreme existence.

Zhou Wen could naturally guess that the purple word "Emperor" was likely the Wheel of Destiny condensed by Xia Jiuhuang. Once the Wheel of Destiny stabilized, he would have successfully advanced to the Mythical stage.

Zhou Wen summoned Demonic Neonate and Truth Listener. At this point, all he could do was risk his life and strike Xia Jiuhuang down to the mortal world before he completed the transformation to the Mythical stage.

Just Demonic Neonate's strength was clearly insufficient. Zhou Wen could only consider letting Truth Listener shatter more earrings. He needed to shatter at least three of them, but Zhou Wen couldn't predict the outcome.

Just as Zhou Wen was about to order Truth Listener to shatter the earrings, he realized that something was amiss with Xia Jiuhuang's condition. There was a faint power throbbing in his body, like a rhythmic heartbeat.

Although this power wasn't powerful and seemed to be a part of Xia Jiuhuang's body, it was sending Zhou Wen some

kind of message.

Primordial Spore! Zhou Wen immediately knew what it was. It was the Primordial Spore that Zhou Wen had previously sent into Xia Jiuhang’s body.

Zhou Wen was pleasantly surprised. Typically, Primordial Spore would take a long time to parasitize a Mythical creature, but the information sent by Primordial Spore seemed to be telling Zhou Wen that it was already sprouting.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 756 - Three-Sided Struggle

Chapter 756: Three-Sided Struggle

Zhou Wen immediately realized what the problem was. Previously, Xia Jiuhuang had a Guardian who had fused with him, taking his body to the Mythical stage. However, Zhou Wen had just killed the Guardian. Without a Guardian, Xia Jiuhuang—who hadn't advanced to the Mythical stage—was only at the Epic stage, and he had nearly been killed by Zhou Wen's saber strike. He was in a weakened state, so the Primordial Spore was able to succeed in such a short period of time.

Once the parasitism succeeded, it could quickly sprout before Xia Jiuhuang really advanced to the Mythical stage, unlike when it parasitized Mythical creatures.

From the information transmitted by the Primordial Spore, it wouldn't take long to completely control Xia Jiuhang.

Zhou Wen was pleasantly surprised. He originally believed that there was only one way to fight to the death, but he never expected that after reaching a dead end, a tiny Primordial Spore would turn the situation around.

Boom!

At the most critical moment of Xia Jiuhuang's evolution, bolts of lightning struck down from the dark clouds and struck him continuously like a waterfall of lightning.

Not only did the lightning not injure Xia Jiuhuang, but he also used the power of lightning to help him evolve, allowing

his body to become closer and closer to a Mythical physique.

According to what Zhou Wen knew, all Mythical creatures' original stats were 11. As for humans, their original stats were estimated to be 1. It was even possible that they didn't reach 1.

After all, human infants were too weak. They were far inferior to ordinary Legendary creatures, much less Mythical creatures.

Even ordinary Legendary creatures and Epic creatures seldom advanced to the Mythical stage; therefore, it was almost impossible for humans to advance to the Mythical stage.

Xia Jiuhuang had condensed nine supreme-grade Life Providences and Life Souls. He also needed a large amount of energy to advance to the Mythical stage. The ten thousand Epic humans from before were prepared by Xia Jiuhuang for this very purpose.

However, from the looks of it, it was still insufficient. With the help of the heavenly lightning, he was able to take the final step as his body rapidly transformed.

Unlike the combination of a Guardian, Xia Jiuhuang's entire body emitted a mythical power. Every cell and strand of hair contained terrifying energy.

The present Xia Jiuhuang didn't show any signs of an old man. His body was filled with the vitality of youth and terrifying explosive power. It was as though he could shatter mountains and rivers with a casual flick of his finger.

Xia Jiuhuang, who had long black hair dancing in the wind, was bathed in lightning. He looked like a resurrected ancient

demon god.

On his forehead, the ‘Emperor’ word grew brighter and brighter like a purple star.

Boom!

With the final bolt of lightning striking him, Xia Jiuhuang completed the transformation from a human to a Mythical. It wasn’t a Mythical advancement with the help of a Guardian, but a true advancement with a human body. This was likely the first in human history.

“Finally… I’ve finally advanced to the Mythical stage…” Xia Jiuhuang floated in midair and raised his palm. He admired his transformed body as his excited voice trembled.

He had racked his brains and even faked his death to secretly scheme for so many years. Now, he had taken the final step.

Zhou Wen didn’t move because he could sense that the Primordial Spore was about to complete its soul parasitization. As long as the soul parasitization succeeded, it would be useless no matter how strong Xia Jiuhuang was.

“Zhou Wen, you should feel honored to be the first person to die under the power of a human Mythical.” Xia Jiuhuang wanted to use Zhou Wen to test how powerful his Mythical powers were. The ‘Emperor’ character on his forehead lit up as he prepared to attack Zhou Wen.

However, Xia Jiuhuang suddenly screamed. He hugged his head and yelled. His voice was extremely shrill, as though someone had drilled into his brain with an electric drill.

Zhou Wen was first taken aback before he saw the purple ‘Emperor’ character. He immediately understood what had happened.

That crappy piece of wood isn’t helping Xia Jiuhuang at all. Instead, it wants to enslave or even occupy Xia Jiuhuang’s Mythical body. Zhou Wen recalled the slave word on his forehead and connected it to the ‘Emperor’ character on Xia Jiuhuang’s forehead. Although the words were different, the form was surprisingly similar.

Looking at the screaming Xia Jiuhuang, Zhou Wen also received a message from the Primordial Spore. It was as though a force was vying for control of Xia Jiuhuang’s soul from Primordial Spore.

Xia Jiuhuang kept screaming. Now, his body could be considered a power struggle between powers—Xia Jiuhuang, Primordial Spore, and the “Emperor” on his forehead.

The three parties wanted to control Xia Jiuhuang’s body, but his will was the weakest. Even the Primordial Spore failed to gain an absolute advantage. The strongest was the ‘Emperor’ word.

“Why… Why is this happening… Jing Daoxian clearly said that as long as I can advance to the Mythical stage with a nine-life body… I will have the destiny of a Great Emperor… Why is this happening…” Xia Jiuhuang roared with a tragic cry. He wanted to slam his head into the ground, but his body didn’t listen to him. It left him alarmed and furious.

Zhou Wen was slightly taken aback when he heard Xia Jiuhuang’s roar. *Jing Daoxian is actually involved in this matter?*

Zhou Wen felt that he had seen this scene somewhere before. After some thought, he recalled that Lord Alcohol had said something similar after eating the Longevity Fruit.

Looking at Xia Jiuhuang who was in excruciating pain, Zhou Wen suddenly felt a chill run down his spine. He had a bad feeling.

Lord Alcohol and Xia Jiuhuang were people who wanted to break through to the Mythical stage. Furthermore, they had listened to Jing Daoxian's words to reach this stage.

As for the Lost Immortal Sutra that Zhou Wen cultivated, it was also from Jing Daoxian. Now that Zhou Wen wanted to advance to the Mythical stage, he felt that he was somewhat similar to Xia Jiuhang and company.

However, Zhou Wen didn't have the time to think too much about it. The Primordial Spore wasn't able to gain the upper hand. Its control over Xia Jiuhuang's body was weakening, and Xia Jiuhuang's will was about to vanish. Only the 'Emperor' word's glow was getting stronger. It was only a matter of time before he gained control of Xia Jiuhuang's body.

Before Xia Jiuhuang's body was completely controlled, Zhou Wen drew his saber and slashed forward. At the same time, Truth Listener and Demonic Neonate attacked under Zhou Wen's orders.

With the Primordial Spore restraining him, Xia Jiuhuang couldn't move at all. Demonic Neonate didn't need to find another opportunity as she unsheathed her demonic sword and stabbed forward.

Zhou Wen's injuries were too serious, preventing him from using Sigh of the King. His strength was extremely limited,

so when he slashed at Xia Jiuhuang’s body, not only did he fail to injure him, but he was sent flying by Xia Jiuhuang’s strength.

Zhou Wen fell to the ground as his wounds tore open. He grimaced in pain.

Thankfully, Truth Listener was more powerful. It shattered two earrings and brutally stabbed its claws into Xia Jiuhuang’s chest. The demonic sword stabbed into Xia Jiuhuang’s head, inch by inch.

The ‘Emperor’ word shimmered as it attempted to blast the demonic sword out, but Truth Listener violently struck Xia Jiuhuang’s forehead, causing the ‘Emperor’ word to tremble violently.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 757 - Scram

Chapter 757: Scram

Translator: CKtalon

Due to the restraint of the Primordial Spore, the ‘Emperor’ character was unable to stop Xia Jiuhuang’s body from counter attacking. The demonic sword stabbed into Xia Jiuhuang’s head inch by inch. At the same time, a black demonic aura invaded Xia Jiuhuang’s body, weakening his vitality.

The ‘Emperor’ word was a Wheel of Destiny condensed by Xia Jiuhuang. Its foundation was Xia Jiuhuang. As Xia Jiuhuang’s vitality weakened, the light on the ‘Emperor’ word dimmed, no longer having the same aura as before.

“How dare you…” Just as Zhou Wen was feeling delighted, he suddenly heard a cold woman’s voice coming from above the Hall of Supreme Harmony. The source of the voice was none other than the log erected there.

There’s a woman inside the log? Zhou Wen was alarmed.

As the woman’s voice sounded from the log, the stars in the sky shimmered. Starlight cascaded down, passing through the dark clouds and illuminating Forbidden City.

Zhou Wen took a careful look and saw that the lit stars were clearly the twenty-eight Lunar Mansions. Apart from the twenty-eight Lunar Mansions, no other starlight penetrated the dark clouds.

The starlight shone down, causing Forbidden City to emit resplendent starlight. The four Corner Towers in particular emitted a divine glow.

Be it the twenty-eight Lunar Mansions in the sky or the four Corner Towers, they were all centered around the log. Starlight gathered on the log, causing the log to emit purple starlight as though there were countless stars swirling inside.

Under the illumination of the starlight emitted by the purple log, Zhou Wen felt a pain in his forehead. Immediately, he felt that something was amiss. He took out a mirror and saw purple light and lines appear on his forehead. From the parts that had condensed, it looked like he was about to condense the word “slave” again.

The layout of Forbidden City is the Purple Forbidden Enclosure. The Purple Star is also known as the Emperor Star. It’s the Life Star of an emperor. Now that the twenty-eight Lunar Mansions have appeared and the four Corner Towers have submitted, could it be that Emperor Polestar is in the log? Zhou Wen guessed.

If it was really the legendary Emperor Polestar, Zhou Wen felt that he was doomed today. Unlike ordinary Mythical creatures, Emperor Polestar was an existence that controlled all immortals. He was an immortal’s emperor and not something ordinary Mythical creatures could compare with.

The slave word on his forehead became more and more obvious. Zhou Wen switched several Life Souls, but he was unable to stop the formation of the slave word.

Suddenly, Zhou Wen felt a force surge out of his body. It was the power of the Sigh of the King. However, this time, it wasn’t under Zhou Wen’s control, but an autonomous act of the Sigh of the King. It was somewhat similar to the time he knelt.

In an instant, the incomplete ‘slave’ word on Zhou Wen’s forehead shattered and dissipated. The power of the Sigh of the King enveloped his body as though he had been placed in a warm embrace.

“Scram!” Zhou Wen felt a voice coming from him.

The voice was indiscernible, but it seemed to possess a supreme might. The dark clouds that enveloped Forbidden City instantly dissipated, revealing the clear sky and sun. There was no longer any cloud.

The starlight of the twenty-eight Lunar Mansions instantly dimmed and vanished without a trace. The starlight of Forbidden City also dissipated as the four Corner Towers collapsed. The log fell from the Hall of Supreme Harmony and slammed into the ground.

The log trembled incessantly as though it was about to collapse. It left Zhou Wen alarmed.

Crack!

Xia Jiuhuang’s body finally couldn’t withstand the power of the demonic sword and was split into two. Demonic aura surged through his corpse as though it wanted to destroy his body.

The mysterious phone suddenly vibrated. Zhou Wen took out his phone and saw that the game screen of the Dead Man Tree had automatically switched on. When he snapped a picture of Xia Jiuhuang’s corpse, it was sucked in without leaving a drop of blood behind.

Without having the time to take a careful look at the Dead Man Tree, Zhou Wen unsummoned his Companion Beasts and put on the Invisibility Cloak before running.

The log that had collapsed in front of the Hall of Supreme Harmony trembled more and more violently, like a volcano that was about to erupt. As for Zhou Wen, the Sigh of the King's power had already receded, making him feel uneasy. He wanted to escape from Forbidden City.

Perhaps due to the absence of the dark clouds and starlight, Zhou Wen successfully rushed out of Forbidden City. However, just as he rushed out, he saw a purple beam shoot into the sky.

Then, all of Forbidden City emitted a terrifying purple glow, like an immortal city condensed from starlight.

Zhou Wen didn't dare look any further. He turned around and ran, hoping to get as far away from Forbidden City as possible.

After running for a short distance, he saw Wang Lu looking at Forbidden City with the chick and antelope not far away. The anomaly in Forbidden City worried Wang Lu. She closed her eyes and pressed her palms together in front of her chest as she muttered something.

"Goddess of Luck, please help Zhou Wen and let him return safely."

Zhou Wen was greatly touched when he heard that. He thought to himself, *Wang Lu is really kind-hearted.*

The antelope's eyes stared at Zhou Wen. Clearly, the Invisibility Cloak's ability wasn't effective against it.

The chick was also staring in Zhou Wen's direction, but its eyes were somewhat puzzled. It seemed to have discovered Zhou Wen, but it didn't see him.

“Wang Lu, let’s go.” Zhou Wen appeared and ran out with Wang Lu.

Now that there was an anomaly in Forbidden City, no one knew what would happen. The further away they were, the better.

Wang Lu jumped in fright. Seeing that Zhou Wen was covered in injuries and many of his wounds were still bleeding, his clothes still drenched in blood, she couldn’t help but worry. “Are you alright?”

“It’s fine. I won’t die yet. Let’s leave Forbidden City first. It’s too dangerous here.” Zhou Wen summoned the Great Might Vajra Bull and jumped up with Wang Lu before running away.

When he was far from Forbidden City, Zhou Wen made the Great Might Vajra Bull stop.

Only then did he feel the excruciating pain in his body. He had been in a highly-strung state and hadn’t paid any attention to his injuries. Now, he felt pain all over his body as though he was about to die. Every move he made hurt so much that he wanted to cry for mommy.

“Your injuries are serious. I’ll take you back to treat them now.” Wang Lu summoned a vine that crept onto Zhou Wen’s body and wrapped around him. At the same time, the bud burrowed into his wounds and emitted a faint glow to treat his injuries.

Then, she summoned a mount and brought Zhou Wen back like he was a vined mummy.

Zhou Wen’s injuries were too serious. He didn’t know when he would recover, so he allowed Wang Lu to take him back.

Now, Zhou Wen was somewhat worried. He didn’t know how Xia Liuchuan and Xia Xuanyue were doing, but he was injured. He didn’t have the strength to save them.

With Xia Jiuhang dead, there shouldn’t be anyone in the Xia family who wants their lives, right? Zhou Wen thought for a moment and felt that they wouldn’t be in any danger. He would get Wang Lu to help him gather information later.

The anomaly in Forbidden City made the Xia family and the Special Inspector Bureau very concerned. They had set up a large number of people to monitor the situation inside, but no one could enter. They had no idea what was happening. All they could see was that Forbidden City was enveloped by clouds like an immortal city, making it even more unfathomable.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 758 - Immortal Slaying

Chapter 758: Immortal Slaying

Zhou Wen was wrapped in gauze like a mummy as he lay in bed. A winged pixie danced around Zhou Wen as it tried its best to spew out green light to nourish his injured body.

According to the information Wang Lu had obtained, although the changes in Forbidden City were intense, it was limited to the city's interior. No dimensional creatures broke out.

What was different from before was that strange sounds could be heard coming from inside even though it wasn't a stormy day. This used to happen inside Forbidden City during thunderstorms.

Unfortunately, no one could enter Forbidden City, so no one knew what was happening inside.

Due to Old Master Xia's disappearance, the Xia family was in a mess. Nothing had happened to Xia Liuchuan and Xia Xuanyue. They had even appeared near Forbidden City in the past two days.

Zhou Wen had roughly guessed the outcome. Apart from Xia Jiuhang, few people in the Xia family wanted them dead. After all, they were the Xia family's hope.

The death of more than ten thousand Epic experts was a huge blow to any of the six hero families. It would definitely affect the Xia family greatly.

However, it wasn’t as serious as Zhou Wen imagined. The ten thousand Epic experts were mostly nurtured by Xia Jiuhuang himself to be sacrificed for his advancement to the Mythical stage. Therefore, these people were from the East Courtyard and didn’t affect the Xia family’s normal system.

From this, it could be seen that Xia Jiuhuang still had some feelings for the Xia family. Otherwise, he wouldn’t have separated these people from the Xia family and set up a separate East Courtyard.

There was also Xia Liuchuan and Xia Xuanyue. Their talent, Life Providences, and Life Souls were top-notch. Xia Jiuhuang could have used one of them as his ninth Life Soul, but he didn’t do so in the end. Perhaps there were some emotional factors involved.

No matter what, the destruction of Xia Jiuhuang and the East Courtyard had dealt quite a blow to the Xia family, greatly reducing their influence in the Federation.

The Xia family and the bureau were searching for Old Master Xia and Zhou Wen’s whereabouts, but no one saw Zhou Wen come out of Forbidden City. They imagined that Zhou Wen was trapped in the mutated Forbidden City like Old Master Xia, so they didn’t search the Imperial Capital.

Zhou Wen had been recuperating in Grandma Wang’s yard for the past two days. It was odd. In such a huge yard, other than Grandma Wang, there were only a few old ladies and a butler. He didn’t see any younger members of the Wang family.

Zhou Wen asked Wang Lu and learned that this was where Grandma Wang recuperated. The other members of the Wang family didn’t live here, and the Wang family’s real residence wasn’t nearby.

Zhou Wen held his phone with his stiff wrapped hand and saw a purple flower sprout grow on the Dead Man Tree. It was likely the flower that had absorbed Xia Jiuhuang.

Zhou Wen was somewhat looking forward to seeing what fruit the flower would bear.

Xia Jiuhuang had advanced to the Mythical stage with nine supreme-grade Life Providences and Life Souls. Furthermore, he had the power of the log condensed in his body, so the fruit produced from him definitely wouldn’t be too bad.

It’s a shame about my Six-Winged. Zhou Wen sighed softly. Six-Winged had been with him for so long, so he wasn’t used to suddenly losing it.

Lying in bed with nothing to do, Zhou Wen used his phone to grind dungeons. He originally imagined that he could happily farm the nine black dragons, but to his surprise, they hadn’t respawned.

The other Mythical creatures respawn every day. Don’t tell me these nine black dragons respawn after nine days? Zhou Wen guessed.

Since he couldn’t farm the black dragons, Zhou Wen placed his sights on the Guardian again. During his battle with Xia Jiuhuang, Zhou Wen had gained some insight into the concept of power from the Sigh of the King. He had also found a way to use Slaughterer Life Soul. The might of that move was immense, so it might pose a threat to the Guardian.

Zhou Wen called that move Immortal Slaying. It was basically a single-use attack. If he couldn’t kill the enemy with one move, Zhou Wen would be crippled.

The main reason was that Immortal Slaying was based on the Sigh of the King and the Slaughterer Life Soul.

It wasn’t that the Slaughterer Life Soul couldn’t be powered, but the amount of power needed to drive it was too great. Without the massive power of the Sigh of the King as a foundation, it was impossible to power the Slaughterer Life Soul.

Unfortunately, using the Sigh of the King would place a huge burden on Zhou Wen’s body. Furthermore, Immortal Slaying would drain him of all his strength instantaneously, so Zhou Wen basically didn’t have any combat strength after a single strike.

The might of this strike was something that even Xia Jiuhuang, who was wearing Guardian armor, couldn’t withstand. He had even killed the black jade guardian with one strike. Such strength might be of some use against the Guardian in Ant City and the war wagon.

It was too dangerous to use Immortal Slaying in real life. Perhaps he would die before injuring the enemy.

However, in-game, he didn’t have so many qualms. He just had to do it.

Zhou Wen’s two arms were held in place by a splint. He could only lie on the bed as he raised his arms straight like a zombie. He held his phone and began gaming.

Before the nine black dragons respawned, the war wagon remained at the bottom of the sea. Zhou Wen went straight to the underground sea, hoping to see if Immortal Slaying could kill the Guardian inside.

Before Zhou Wen arrived at the underground sea, he heard a sound from the window.

The windows here weren't glass windows, but windows that were made of ancient wood paper. They were opened by rolling them up and propped up with a wooden stick.

Zhou Wen turned his head to look at the window and saw two ponytails sticking out. Then, he saw a little girl's head slowly extend out. She was sprawled on the window sill, staring at Zhou Wen with her big, limpid eyes as she looked curiously at him.

Zhou Wen saw that the girl was only about eleven or twelve years old. She was very cute and looked a little like Wang Lu.

"Hey little one, what's your name?" Zhou Wen asked her.

"Wang Chan," the little girl answered.

Just as Zhou Wen was about to ask another question, his hand suddenly slipped and the phone smashed down on his face. Zhou Wen's eyes bruised as his nose ached.

Zhou Wen wanted to pick up the phone, but he couldn't bend his arm.

"Let me help you." Wang Chan pushed open the door and ran in. She reached out to pick up the phone on Zhou Wen's face and handed it to him.

"Thank you, Little Chan…"

Zhou Wen reached out to take the phone when he suddenly heard someone shouting outside the yard. "Miss Little Chan, where are you? Come out quickly!"

Little Chan jumped in fright as she looked back at the door and handed the phone to Zhou Wen.

However, Zhou Wen’s arm was too stiff. Before he could grab the phone, it fell with a thud and smashed into Zhou Wen’s face. He grimaced in pain.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 759 - Wang Chan

Chapter 759: Wang Chan

Translator: CKtalon

Zhou Wen was about to cry when Wang Chan gestured for him to keep quiet before quickly hiding under the bed.

Soon, an old woman walked in and looked into the room. She didn't see Wang Chan, so she said to Zhou Wen that she was sorry for disturbing him before closing the door.

Only then did Wang Chan crawl out from under the bed and swat away the dust on her body. She then picked up the phone beside the pillow and handed it to Zhou Wen. "Sorry, who are you? Why are you lying here?"

Zhou Wen took the phone and said, "My name is Zhou Wen. I'm Wang Lu's classmate."

"Oh, you're that Numbskull Wen? I heard my sister mention you before," Wang Chan said in enlightenment.

"What Numbskull Wen?" Zhou Wen was slightly taken aback, but he knew that Wang Chan was Wang Lu's younger sister. He just didn't know if she was his biological sister or his cousin.

Wang Chan didn't answer. She only sized him up curiously and said, "Why are you so heavily injured? Why don't I help you heal?"

"Actually, it's just a superficial wound. With the life pixie's treatment, I'll be fine in a few days," Zhou Wen said.

Wang Chan curled her lips and said, “Life pixie’s healing effects are too poor. I have better Companion Beasts here that can quickly heal your injuries. Since you are my sister’s friend, you are also my friend. It’s only right that I help you. You don’t have to stand on ceremony.”

With that said, Wang Chan summoned a Companion Beast. It looked very strange. No matter how Zhou Wen looked at it, it looked like a syringe with wings.

Although the syringe had cute little wings and was pink in color, similar to Cupid’s Arrow of Love, it was a syringe. Zhou Wen, who had been seriously ill when he was young, often had injections. He just couldn’t bring himself to love something like a syringe.

“This… There’s no need…” Zhou Wen couldn’t bear to reject Wang Chan’s kindness, but he didn’t wish to be injected.

“Don’t stand on ceremony with me. You will recover quickly,” Wang Chan said as she ordered the syringe to fly down and stab Zhou Wen in the arm.

The liquid in the syringe was injected.

This syringe Companion Beast looked rather intelligent. It was actually able to accurately inject intravenously.

Zhou Wen felt heat enter his blood vessels. It was warm and didn’t hurt much. Furthermore, when the medicinal essence spread within his blood, Zhou Wen immediately felt energized and even felt his blood boil.

“Little Chan… Where are you… We are going back…” At that moment, a woman’s voice sounded from outside the wall. When Little Chan heard the voice, her expression changed slightly. She turned her head and said to Zhou Wen, “My

mom is looking for me. I'll come and see you tomorrow. Goodbye, Numbskull Wen."

With that said, Wang Chan ran out without waiting for Zhou Wen's reply.

She already has a Companion Beast at such a young age. Wang Lu's sister's talent isn't bad. She's quite kind. Zhou Wen felt his vitality surge as his injuries seemed to heal much faster.

Just as Zhou Wen was about to continue gaming, he felt something amiss. He felt his body heat up as though there was a furnace in his body.

It's so hot... It's so hot... Not long after, Zhou Wen felt like he was about to die. He tore open the gauze on his body, allowing the heat in his body to emit.

Even so, he still felt uncomfortable. It was as though there was a force pushing him, making him involuntarily move.

He first ran, but he realized that running vented too little heat. Zhou Wen sprawled on the ground to do push-ups. It was as though he had installed an electric motor as his body rapidly rose and fell while he emitted hot air.

The heat was really helpful to Zhou Wen's injuries, accelerating the healing of his wounds. However, Zhou Wen's crazy exercise ruptured his wounds again.

When Zhou Wen finally stopped, he realized that not only had his injuries not healed, but some areas that had already healed had ruptured.

What Companion Beast is that? Why are its effects so domineering? Zhou Wen was somewhat helpless.

Although Wang Chan’s Companion Beast had a healing effect and the effects were very good, he couldn’t withstand the heat and had crazily exercised, resulting in the opposite effect.

After lying in bed again, Zhou Wen couldn’t be bothered to get someone to wrap him in gauze. He got the life pixie to treat his injuries as he lay in bed gaming.

The blood-colored avatar entered the underground sea and opened the door to the war wagon. He saw the white cocoon floating in the void.

Zhou Wen held the Golden Overlord Sword and activated the Sigh of the King. He waited for the Sigh of the King to reach a certain intensity before activating Slaughterer and striking with Immortal Slaying.

The blood-colored avatar’s body trembled because the Sigh of the King’s strength was just too powerful. It caused the blood-colored avatar’s body to crack as blood seeped out.

This level of strength was still insufficient to activate Slaughterer. When the blood-colored avatar’s body was about to collapse, Slaughterer was finally activated. Zhou Wen held the Golden Overlord Sword and activated Immortal Slaying as he slashed at the white cocoon.

The void was cleaved apart as spatial powers were unable to withstand the power of Immortal Slaying. The white cocoon was split open almost instantly, revealing the Guardian inside.

This was the first time Zhou Wen had seen the Guardian’s full appearance. It was somewhat different from what he had imagined. The Guardian inside the cocoon wasn’t a dragon. It looked more like an ancient emperor.

Dressed in an imperial robe with a crown on his head, a hand extended out. It had six fingers, and each finger wore a ring.

Immediately, the six rings emitted intense spatial fluctuations as one hand reached towards the Golden Overlord Sword.

Crack!

Wherever the Golden Overlord Sword passed, the Guardian's arm was severed. Blood splattered as the spatial power failed to change the trajectory of Immortal Slaying.

At first, Zhou Wen was delighted when he saw the Guardian extend its other hand. It also had six fingers and wore six rings. With a smack of its hand, it destroyed the blood-colored avatar that had entered a weakened state after using Immortal Slaying. The game screen went black.

From the looks of it, Immortal Slaying is still useful against Guardians. However, next time, I should directly sever the Guardian's neck. Zhou Wen dripped his blood to revive and entered the game again.

Soon, Zhou Wen realized that although the Immortal Slaying strike could tie with the Guardian, he lacked the ability to fight after a miss since it drained him of all his combat strength. As for the Guardian, it had very powerful spatial powers. It was clearly very difficult to kill him with one strike. Zhou Wen tried a few times, but he could only injure him, not kill him.

The power of Immortal Slaying deals damage over time. If I can guarantee that the blood-colored avatar won't be killed by the counter attack, the Guardian might die if I wait a little longer. Zhou Wen continued his attempts.

He realized that this was similarly difficult to do. This was because, after the Immortal Slaying strike, the blood-colored avatar’s body would be almost at its limits. It had no combat ability at all. It was impossible for it to escape in front of a Guardian who was proficient in spatial powers.

My level is still too low. If I were also at the Mythical stage, killing this Guardian with one strike wouldn’t be a problem. Zhou Wen was momentarily at a loss.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 760 - An Essence Energy Art Story

Chapter 760: An Essence Energy Art Story

After many attempts, Zhou Wen realized that a better choice was to find a weaker Guardian to kill. For example, the black-jade Guardian he had killed or the previous six-winged seraphim.

I wonder where that six-winged seraphim went. It'll be good if I can find him, Zhou Wen thought to himself.

The Guardians in Ant City and the war wagon were probably the strongest among the Guardians. At the very least, none of the Guardians that Zhou Wen had seen had displayed strength stronger than theirs.

The next morning, Wang Chan surprisingly came again.

The wounds on Zhou Wen's body had already been rebandaged. Wang Lu had rebandaged him yesterday afternoon.

However, Zhou Wen didn't mention Wang Chan. After all, Wang Chan was just being nice. There was no need for him to mention the matter and make the sisters unhappy.

When Wang Chan saw Zhou Wen's state, she asked in surprise, "Are your injuries not healed yet? Didn't I already treat you yesterday?"

“It’s almost healed. I wish to recuperate further,” Zhou Wen said.

“Why don’t I give you another injection?” As Wang Chan spoke, she summoned the syringe-like Companion Beast again.

“There’s no need, no need at all.” Zhou Wen hurriedly waved his hand. “Don’t treat my injuries. I just want to be lazy and lie here for a few days. If you treat all my injuries, I’ll have to continue working.”

“So you are just trying to skive.” Wang Chan was enlightened. She didn’t insist on treating Zhou Wen’s injuries and unsummoned the syringe Companion Beast.

“I heard from Sis that you are a genius. You can become very powerful just by casually learning a skill. Is that true?” Wang Chan asked Zhou Wen.

“Your sister is exaggerating. I also have to spend serious efforts practicing,” Zhou Wen said.

“I knew it. How can there be anyone so awesome in this world who can learn something so casually? I’ve already tried so hard, but I still can’t figure things out.” Wang Chan seemed to heave a sigh of relief as she pulled a chair and placed it in front of the bed. She leaned against the back of the chair and looked at Zhou Wen. “Do you have some secret trick to learning? Can you teach me?”

“It’s not a secret trick, but I still have some experience to share. What do you want to learn?” Zhou Wen thought that since Wang Lu had helped him so much, it was only right for him to help her sister.

“Essence Energy Arts, sword techniques, movement techniques, and so on are all difficult to learn. No matter how hard I try, I can’t meet their standards. I keep getting scolded,” Wang Chan said with a bitter expression.

“Why do you find it difficult?” Zhou Wen asked Wang Chan.

“Because it’s very difficult to remember. My memory isn’t too good. I keep memorizing the front and forgetting the back. After memorizing the back, I forget the front,” Wang Chan said.

“Actually, it’s very simple. Just tell me any Essence Energy Skill you have learned. I’ll tell you how to memorize it in an easier manner,” Zhou Wen said.

“This is an Essence Energy Art that I’ve been memorizing recently. I’ll recite it to you.” Wang Chan began reciting.

Zhou Wen listened for a while before his expression gradually turned awkward. The Essence Energy Arts that Wang Chan recited were all unfamiliar and obscure ancient texts. Furthermore, they were very long. She had recited a few thousand words in one go, but it sounded like there was still a long way to go.

Even with Zhou Wen’s memory, it was difficult for him to memorize everything without understanding the meaning of the article.

“Eh… Little Chan, stop for a moment. How many words do you have left for this Essence Energy Art?” Zhou Wen stopped Wang Chan and asked.

“There are a total of 134,467 words. I’ve memorized them for days, but I still forget the back after memorizing the front. I keep making mistakes,” Wang Chan said in distress.

Zhou Wen thought to himself, It would be a miracle if you could memorize all of them. If you can't figure out the meaning of such an obscure ancient text, just relying on your memory to memorize the words correctly, you wouldn't be a genius, but a god.

This ancient text was actually about the same as a foreign language. Thinking about it, it would be too harsh to require someone to memorize a work of more than a hundred thousand foreign words in a few days and not make a single mistake.

"Has anyone explained the content of this Essence Energy Art to you?" Zhou Wen asked.

"Yes, but it sounds very difficult to understand and I don't really remember it," Wang Chan said.

Zhou Wen thought for a moment and said to Wang Chan with a smile, "Then do you like stories?"

"I like them. I love hearing my sister tell me stories about the Federation's six heroes. They fight and explore in unknown dimensional zones. I also hope that I can be like them one day—going to unknown places to fight unknown powerful creatures and obtain magical Companion Beasts…" Wang Chan wore a look of anticipation.

Zhou Wen said to Wang Chan with a smile, "Actually, the Essence Energy Art you recited was a story of a hero's adventure."

"Tch, can you not try to coax me like I'm a little girl?" Wang Chan curled her lips and said.

"If you don't believe me, recite it and I'll translate this heroic adventure story for you," Zhou Wen said.

Wang Chan naturally didn’t believe him as she began reciting the Essence Energy Art. “The Great Dao has no form, yet it creates the Heaven and Earth. The Great Dao is lawless, but it rules the Sun and Moon. The great Dao is nameless, but it nourishes all things…”

As Wang Chan recited, she looked at Zhou Wen. No matter how she thought about it, she couldn’t tell what relationship the Essence Energy Art had with a hero story.

“Alright, let me translate this sentence for you.” Zhou Wen gestured for Wang Chan to stop reciting.

Wang Chan stopped reciting and blinked at Zhou Wen, not believing that it could be translated into a story.

Zhou Wen pondered for a moment before saying, “There’s a beautiful and adorable girl. She’s extremely talented. She became a Legendary at the age of three, an Epic at the age of six, and she advanced to the Mythical stage at the age of nine. At the age of twelve, she’s already invincible in the Federation…”

“How can there be such a powerful girl? Are you spouting nonsense? Furthermore, this has nothing to do with Essence Energy Arts, right?” Wang Chan curled her lips and said.

“Listen to what I have to say. That young heroine was invincible when she was twelve years old. She was just too lonely and wanted to suffer defeat. But on this day, a youth about her age appeared and challenged her. In the end, he defeated her with one strike.”

Wang Chan interrupted again. “Why is your story contradictory? You previously said that the girl was invincible. How could she be defeated in one strike?”

“Do you still want to hear the story?” Zhou Wen glared at her.

“Continue.” Wang Chan smiled.

“After being defeated by the youth, the girl asked the youth, ‘Why are you so powerful?’ The youth answered her, ‘Because I obtained a treasure in a mysterious dimensional zone. That treasure can nurture the Heaven and Earth and control the movement of the Sun and Moon… From then on, the girl embarked on her journey to find the treasure…”

As Wang Chan recited, Zhou Wen translated the content she recited into a hero story. Wang Chan was gradually attracted by the content of the story and forgot to pick up on Zhou Wen’s plot holes.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 761 - Invisibly Downloaded A Dungeon

Chapter 761: Invisibly Downloaded A Dungeon

Translator: CKtalon

In any piece of knowledge, the most difficult to remember were the unfamiliar professional terms and descriptions. As such words and descriptions were not usually used, there were not many ways to connect these terms to one’s knowledge system.

Just like a person from the West District, he didn’t know what the Dao was even if you let him read the scriptures. He also didn’t know what the Eight Trigrams was if you let him read the Iching. These words were very difficult for foreigners to form memories.

When Zhou Wen told the story, he turned these esoteric words into treasures in the story. It made Wang Chan find these treasures novel and interesting, allowing her to remember them.

“The story you made up is rather interesting, but the treasures in the story are different from the true meaning of the Essence Energy Art, right?” After Wang Chan finished hearing Zhou Wen’s story, she felt somewhat unsatisfied that it was over, but she also realized a problem.

“Although it’s different, it made you remember those words that were originally difficult to remember, right?” Zhou Wen said with a smile.

Wang Chan thought about it and realized that she had memorized it. When she thought of those words, she found

them a lot more vivid.

“In the future, when you learn those obscure Essence Energy Arts and Essence Energy Skills, treat them as a story. Treat the things you don’t understand as battles with various unknown dimensional creatures. After defeating them, the knowledge you obtain will be treasures,” Zhou Wen said.

“I’m not as delusional as you,” Wang Chan said.

“If you don’t even dare think about it and only learn to walk the path of others, what’s the point of such a life?” Zhou Wen said.

Wang Chan looked at Zhou Wen in a daze. All the experts in her family that taught her would tell her how powerful so-and-so Essence Energy Arts and Essence Energy Skills were, as well as their origins. They would talk about what it would be like if she mastered them.

No one had ever told her that no matter how powerful the Essence Energy Arts and Essence Energy Skills were, they were left behind by others. No matter how strong she became from cultivating them, she was ultimately inferior to others.

“Is it really okay to fantasize like this?” Wang Chan looked at Zhou Wen in a daze as though she was asking him, but also muttering to herself.

“Of course. There’s nothing in this world that you can’t think of or do. As long as you dare think of it, you will eventually think of a solution. The most important thing is that you dare think of it,” Zhou Wen said.

“I’ll give it a try in the future.” Wang Chan was about to say something when she heard her phone ring. It wasn’t

someone calling her, but an alarm she had set.

“I need to return, but I’ll remember your story. I’ll also remember your words.” Wang Chan thought for a moment and said, “You are indeed as my sister said. You are a very special person.”

After Wang Chan left, Zhou Wen finally got some peace and began grinding.

However, when Zhou Wen lay on the bed, he suddenly heard a crack. The wooden bed then collapsed.

This was an ancient carved wood bed with a flower-engraved rack on it. The entire bed fell apart and immediately, Zhou Wen fell to the ground as the shattered wood hit him.

Zhou Wen’s injuries hadn’t healed. The wood couldn’t injure him, but when it hit him, the corners of his mouth twitched in pain.

What’s going on? My luck hasn’t been good recently. I can even break a bed? Zhou Wen was depressed.

Upon hearing the sound, the butler came over and was alarmed when he saw Zhou Wen. He hurriedly helped him up and got someone to tidy up the bed before changing it to a new bed.

In the next few days when Zhou Wen was recuperating, Wang Chan often secretly came to play with him.

However, for some reason, Zhou Wen was very unlucky every time Wang Chan came.

One time, Wang Chan ran over while Zhou Wen was eating. Just as Zhou Wen was about to finish the bowl of rice, he

realized that there was half a worm in it. It nearly made him vomit all the rice he had eaten.

Zhou Wen suspected that his bad luck had something to do with Wang Chan. This was because Wang Chan would be beside him every time he was unlucky.

However, he thought for a moment and found it unlikely.

Wang Lu was Wang Chan’s sister. It was impossible for the people around her to be unlucky when she was such a lucky person.

However, there was something strange. Wang Chan always came to him when there was no one around. It was as if she didn’t want anyone to see her.

Zhou Wen only believed that the Wang family was strict and that they placed a lot of emphasis on her studies, so they didn’t give Wang Chan time to play. This resulted in her sneaking out, so he didn’t tell Wang Lu and Grandma Wang about this.

After a few days, Zhou Wen’s injuries healed significantly. Although he couldn’t engage in an intense battle, ordinary movements were no longer a problem. He left the Wang family and had a stroll.

Zhou Wen didn’t plan on returning to Luoyang. He had yet to settle the most important matter of his trip to the Imperial Capital.

Zhou Wen put on the Invisibility Cloak and walked on the streets without anyone seeing him. He headed for the Ancient Sword Tomb.

The Ancient Sword Tomb was one of the Xia family's important dimensional zones. Many sword-type Companion Beasts were obtained from the Ancient Sword Tomb. Therefore, Zhou Wen planned on heading to the Ancient Sword Tomb to take a look. If there was a tiny palm symbol, he could download an Ancient Sword Tomb dungeon.

Apart from the Ancient Sword Tomb, there were many dimensional zones in the Imperial Capital. Zhou Wen planned on making a trip to all of them.

The Ancient Sword Tomb was guarded by the Xia family's guards, but they were useless against Zhou Wen. With the Invisibility Cloak, the guards couldn't see him.

Zhou Wen used the power of the Godfiend Era and floated over without making a sound.

After searching outside the Ancient Sword Tomb for a while, he easily found a tiny palm symbol and snapped it.

My luck today is pretty good. Zhou Wen turned around and left the Ancient Sword Tomb in delight as he headed for the next dimensional zone.

On the way to his next destination, Ancient Sword Tomb finished downloading. However, it was inconvenient to use the phone while wearing the Invisibility Cloak. If he were to leave the phone unexposed, passersby would see a phone flying in the air. Timid ones would probably wet their pants in fright.

Zhou Wen's second dimensional zone was the Thirteen Mausoleum.

It was an ancient royal cemetery. After the dimensional storms, it had also become a dimensional zone. It was rather

magical inside with many good things available.

Furthermore, the Thirteen Mausoleum was a dimensional zone under the bureau. It forbade outsiders from entering. Zhou Wen had had a bad impression of the bureau. If it wasn’t for his serious injuries, he would definitely have made a trip to the bureau’s headquarters.

Now that he had yet to recover from his injuries, he couldn’t go to the bureau’s headquarters for the time being. However, it wasn’t a bad idea to take a picture of their dimensional zones.

His luck today was unexpectedly good. After Zhou Wen arrived at the Thirteen Mausoleum, he found the tiny palm symbol and successfully downloaded another game dungeon.

After leaving the Thirteen Mausoleum, Zhou Wen continued heading to the next dimensional zone. This time, the dimensional zone Zhou Wen went to was rather famous. It was the legendary Great Wall.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 762 - Goddess of Misfortune Life Providence

Chapter 762: Goddess of Misfortune Life Providence

Translator: CKtalon

There were Great Wall dimensional zones in many places, not just in the Imperial Capital.

Zhou Wen didn’t have the chance to go anywhere else for the time being. He decided to head to the local one first, hoping to find the tiny palm symbol to download it as a game dungeon.

The various Great Wall dimensional zones were mostly the same. The dimensional creatures in them were creatures called Battle Souls. However, the Battle Souls differed by district.

The most common Battle Soul here was called the Undying Battle Soul. It was said that no matter what method was used, one could not kill the Battle Souls here. Therefore, as time passed, no one visited.

Zhou Wen was most interested in these strange dimensional creatures, so he wanted to download the dungeon into his phone and study them.

Just as Zhou Wen arrived in front of the Great Wall and before he could begin searching for the tiny palm symbol, he saw two people walk over. One of them was Wang Chan.

“Little Chan, where are you going?” A silver-haired youth walked beside Wang Chan as he asked.

“It’s my freedom to go wherever I want. It’s none of your business,” Wang Chan said without turning her head.

“How are you not my business? Your father wants me to take care of you. I can’t let anything happen to you. If anything happens to you, how am I to answer your father?” the silver-haired youth said with a smile.

“You don’t need to explain it to him. Xiao Si, I can tell you now that I definitely won’t go to the South District with you. I want to be like my sister and enter Sunset College to study,” Wang Chan said.

Xiao Si’s expression remained unchanged as he continued following Wang Chan. He said casually, “Little Chan, don’t joke around. Your sister has the Life Providence of the Goddess of Luck, so she can naturally go wherever she wants. However, your Life Providence is the Goddess of Misfortune. Apart from me, who has the Traversing Misfortune Buddha Body, who else can turn your misfortune into a blessing? Only with me by your side can you reverse fate and enjoy fortune. The heavens have destined me to protect you for the rest of your life.”

“I don’t need any luck, much less your protection. Don’t think I don’t know that you want to use this to threaten my family to help your family,” Wang Chan said.

“I need your family’s help, but you also need my help. Isn’t that good?” Xiao Si said.

“No, not at all. I’ve said it before. I don’t need your help, nor do I need any luck,” Wang Chan said.

“You can shrug it off, but have you considered your family? If I do not resolve your bad luck, your family will be affected by it. Don’t tell me you don’t know that? Your Wang family

originally had a great opportunity to advance the Wang family further and even become an existence comparable to the Xia family. However, it was because of your birth that the Wang family failed. If not for your sister's strong luck, the Wang family might have rapidly declined. Would you wish for that to happen again?" Xiao Si said slowly.

Wang Chan curled her lips and said, "Don't try to scare me. With my sister around, my bad luck won't affect my family. Furthermore, I'll be studying at Sunset College soon, so it won't affect my family."

"Then what about the people from Sunset College? You will have classmates, friends, and people you like there, but the better your relationship with them and the closer you are to them, the more they will be affected by your bad luck. They will constantly be unlucky and they might even lose their lives because of you. Have you really decided to study at Sunset College without my company?" Xiao Si said calmly.

When Wang Chan heard Xiao Si's words, she seemed to hesitate. However, she still said, "Don't try to scare me. My Life Providence isn't that terrifying. Even if you and my sister aren't around, my Life Providence won't kill anyone. It will only bring a little misfortune."

The invisible Zhou Wen listened for a long time before he finally understood two things. Wang Lu's luck wasn't some form of metaphysics, but because she had the Goddess of Luck Life Providence. Zhou Wen had long guessed that.

To Zhou Wen's surprise, Wang Lu's sister, Wang Chan ended up having a completely opposite Goddess of Misfortune Life Providence. It was unbelievable that sisters born from the same parents would have such different Life Providences.

However, on second thought, the bad luck he encountered every time he met Wang Chan convinced him of her having such a Life Providence.

The smile on Xiao Si's face vanished as he looked at Wang Chan and said, "The reason why you want to study at Sunset College isn't because of your sister, am I right?"

"What has this got to do with you? Anyway, I definitely won't return to the Xiao family in the South District with you," Wang Chan said.

Xiao Si laughed. "It's fine. You can try to find that person and see what kind of effect your Life Providence will have on him. Then, it won't be too late to make a decision. I believe that other than me, no man in the world can withstand the bad luck you bring."

"I've already tried. There's no problem," Wang Chan said.

"Then did you take him to a dimensional zone?" Xiao Si asked.

"Why must I go to a dimensional zone?" Wang Chan asked.

"If you really go to Sunset College to study, it's inevitable that you will enter a dimensional zone to complete your homework missions. Isn't that normal? Or are you afraid that he will lose his life because of you?" Xiao Si said with a smile.

"So be it. It's no big deal." Wang Chan turned around in a huff and left.

Xiao Si stood there without moving. After watching Wang Chan leave, he took out his phone and made a call. "An outsider approached Wang Chan and gained her trust. That

person might be a student at Sunset College. Find out who that person is. I don’t wish for him to affect our plans of having Wang Chan enter our Xiao family.”

After hanging up, Xiao Si slowly left.

Zhou Wen watched Xiao Si leave and pondered for a moment before taking out his phone to call Wang Lu and ask her about Wang Chan and Xiao Si.

When Wang Lu heard that Zhou Wen had already met Wang Chan, she sighed and recounted the details regarding Wang Chan and Xiao Si.

When Wang Chan was young, her luck was a little bad, but she was still very talented and hardworking. The family had placed high hopes on her.

However, a few months ago, Wang Chan condensed her Life Providence. Unexpectedly, her Life Providence was Goddess of Misfortune. It was the opposite of Wang Lu’s Life Providence.

Her Life Providence brought quite a bit of trouble to the people around her. Only when Wang Lu was by her side would the situation improve.

However, it was impossible for Wang Lu to stay by her side forever. Therefore, the Wang family had always hoped to resolve the problem of Wang Chan’s Life Providence. They came up with many solutions, but none of them worked well.

The Xiao family in the South District had somehow heard of this matter. It made Xiao Si, who had a Traversing Misfortune Buddha Body, go to the Wang family. Under the influence of his Traversing Misfortune Buddha Body, not only did Wang

Chan’s Life Providence not trigger any more misfortune, but she also became lucky.

This made Wang Chan’s parents, Wang Lu, and everyone else very happy. The Xiao family didn’t make any excessive requests. They only hoped that Xiao Si could stay in the Wang family and spend more time with Wang Chan. If the two of them could get along well, they might be able to become husband and wife when Wang Chan reached the legal age of marriage.

Their Life Providences complemented each other. If they could really become husband and wife, it would be beneficial to both of them.

Although the Wang family felt that the Xiao family was deliberately trying to curry favor with them and definitely needed their help, Xiao Si’s Life Providence was too important to Wang Chan. It was worth it even if the Wang family had to pay a price.

Therefore, they allowed Xiao Si to stay in the Wang family to accompany Wang Chan. Firstly, it could resolve the danger of the Goddess of Misfortune Life Providence, and secondly, they could let them spend some time together and see if anything blossomed.

Perhaps what the Xiao family wants isn’t the Wang family’s help, but Wang Chan herself, Zhou Wen thought. However, as he didn’t have any evidence, it wasn’t his place to tell Wang Lu his thoughts.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 763 - Pulling Out Swords in Ancient Sword Tomb

Chapter 763: Pulling Out Swords in Ancient Sword Tomb

Zhou Wen searched the Great Wall for a long time but failed to find the tiny palm symbol. He wasted the afternoon just like that.

The sky had already darkened by the time he returned to the courtyard.

When Zhou Wen opened the door, he realized that Wang Chan was sitting on a stool in his room in a daze. Upon seeing Zhou Wen return, Wang Chan opened her mouth as though she wanted to say something, but in the end, she only said, “You’re back?”

“What’s the matter?” Zhou Wen sat by the table and poured himself a cup of water.

“I-it’s nothing. I wanted to chat with you, but it’s already so late. I should be leaving. Let’s chat another time.” Wang Chan hesitated for a moment and ultimately didn’t say anything. She got up and prepared to leave.

She had been engaging in an intense psychological battle today. Although Wang Chan wanted to prove that Zhou Wen wouldn’t meet with misfortune because of her even if Xiao Si and Wang Lu weren’t by her side, Wang Chan still lacked confidence in herself after struggling internally for so long. She wasn’t willing to let Zhou Wen take the risk.

“Are you free tomorrow?” Zhou Wen suddenly asked Wang Chan.

“I’m free,” Wang Chan answered subconsciously.

“I want to visit the nearby dimensional zones tomorrow, but I’m not familiar with the roads. Can you take me there?” Zhou Wen asked with a smile.

“To a dimensional zone?” Wang Chan was first delighted before her expression dimmed. She shook her head and said, “It’s best you get my sister to accompany you.”

“Your sister isn’t free. Aren’t you free? Can’t you accompany me?” Zhou Wen asked.

“My luck isn’t too good. I’m afraid that going to a dimensional zone with you will bring you bad luck,” Wang Chan said with her head lowered.

“What a coincidence. My luck isn’t good either. Two negatives make a positive. Perhaps my luck will improve,” Zhou Wen said.

“My luck is really bad. If you were by my side, you would be very unlucky and might die. I’m serious. I’m not joking,” Wang Chan said as she bit her lip.

Zhou Wen laughed and raised the saber in his hand in front of Wang Chan. “Do you know the name of this blade?”

Wang Chan sized up the Bamboo Blade in Zhou Wen’s hand in puzzlement. After a while, she said in surprise, “Could it be that this is the Bamboo Blade of the Four Gentlemen Blades? Is this a replica?”

“Of course not. This is the authentic Bamboo Blade. Previously, its owner died. Perhaps it’s because I’m so unlucky that it ended up being compatible with me. I’ve always been safe. Don’t worry. I’m hardy, so I’m not afraid of these things. Go back and rest. We’ll head to the Great Wall tomorrow morning to take a look,” Zhou Wen said.

“Then… Alright…” Wang Chan thought for a moment and felt that it was safer to go to the Great Wall.

There were Undying Battle Souls at Great Wall City, and they ranged from the Mortal stage to the Epic stage. However, dimensional creatures like Undying Battle Souls were very strange. They only wandered the Great Wall. Humans couldn’t harm them and they didn’t seem to have any consciousness either. They only wandered on the Great Wall and wouldn’t attack humans.

In fact, even if they attacked humans, it was useless. Just like how humans couldn’t touch them, they also couldn’t touch humans.

Wang Chan heaved a sigh of relief when she heard that Zhou Wen wanted to go to the Great Wall. Even if something unfortunate happened there, it wouldn’t be too bad.

After Wang Chan returned, Zhou Wen lay in bed and launched his newly downloaded Ancient Sword Tomb dungeon.

The Ancient Sword Tomb dungeon looked desolate. At a glance, it was a series of undulating hills. However, upon closer inspection, one would realize that they weren’t hills at all. Instead, they were graves of all sizes.

Some graves were relatively small, like small mounds. Some of them were hundreds of feet tall, like continuous hills.

However, it was different from ancient human graves. There were no tombstones in front of the graves. At the highest point of each grave was a sword.

The swords on every grave were different. There were short swords, long swords, heavy swords, metal swords, jade swords, swords carved from bones, and porcelain swords made of mud.

There were all sorts of swords that dazzled one’s eyes. Every sword was embedded into a grave, a tombstone in some uncommon fashion.

Although few outsiders had the chance to enter the Ancient Sword Tomb other than Xia family members, it was a famous dimensional zone.

Xia Jiuhuang’s first Mythical Companion Beast came from the Ancient Sword Tomb.

Back then, there were only a handful of Mythical pets in the hands of humans. Xia Jiuhuang dominated the world with his sword and fought for the Federation citizens.

The six heroes were like gods to humans.

Of course, no one knew of the existence of Mythical Companion Beasts back then. They only knew that Xia Jiuhuang’s sword was very powerful, but they didn’t know that it was a Mythical Companion Beast.

Later on, the Xia family became famous for using swords. Most sword-type Companion Beasts came from the Ancient Sword Tomb.

Some people even suspected that Primordial Sword Immortal came from the Ancient Sword Tomb, but no one

from the Xia family had admitted to it.

There was something else that left Zhou Wen puzzled. For some reason, he hadn’t seen Xia Jiuhuang use a Mythical Companion Beast when he fought him.

As he walked in the Ancient Sword Tomb, Zhou Wen looked around. He had only heard An Sheng mention that unless one reached out to pluck a sword in the Ancient Sword Tomb, they would remain dead objects. The swords didn’t emit any aura or power, making it impossible to gauge their levels.

Only by pulling them out could one know their true level and strength.

Drawing a sword was also a skill. This was because one didn’t know the stats, abilities, and level of a sword. If one was lacking in strength, pulling out a high-level sword might very well result in death.

However, if one was strong, killing a low-level dimensional creature as a result of their draw would be useless.

Zhou Wen didn’t know much about swords, nor did he plan on choosing one. He reached out and grabbed the vine sword stuck in the tiny grave beside him, hoping to pull it out.

This was because the sword grave had a strange force field that protected the swords embedded in the grave. If he wanted to destroy the swords here, he had to pull them out first.

However, after Zhou Wen exerted his strength twice, the vine sword seemed to have taken root and wasn’t pulled out by Zhou Wen.

Zhou Wen couldn’t help but carefully size up the vine sword. He saw that it looked like it was carved from a grayish-black ancient vine. The blade was slightly curved, and it didn’t look sharp. It had a very odd shape.

Could it be that I encountered a big guy for my first draw? Zhou Wen spread his legs apart and gripped the hilt with both hands. Then, he gathered all his strength and pulled it upwards.

However, the vine sword remained motionless as though it had become one with the small grave.

Zhou Wen was alarmed. His strength was already considered top-notch in the Epic stage, but even he couldn’t pull it out. This meant that the vine sword was definitely extraordinary. It might even be a Mythical dimensional creature.

Zhou Wen summoned Tyrant Behemoth and got it to pull out the vine sword.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 764 - Light Concealment Sword

Chapter 764: Light Concealment Sword

Tyrant Behemoth’s immense strength was boundless. As it held the vine sword in one hand, the vine sword appeared no different from a chopstick in its hand.

Tyrant Behemoth exerted strength, but the vine sword remained motionless. It remained intact.

After exerting its strength twice, Tyrant Behemoth failed to move the sword. It lost its temper and grabbed the vine sword with both hands. It was as though it was plucking a river sprout as it used its pushed its feet down and its hands to pull upwards.

Zhou Wen was surprised to discover that Tyrant Behemoth, who had used all its strength, was still unable to pull out the vine sword. Even though the tiny grave shook from its pulling, the vine sword remained motionless.

What’s going on? Zhou Wen was alarmed. He knew that he had definitely been lucky to encounter an extraordinary sword.

However, as he knew too little about the Ancient Sword Tomb, he didn’t know what this meant.

After some thought, Zhou Wen got Tyrant Behemoth to activate Absolute Strength to forcefully pull out the vine sword with brute force.

Boom!

With Absolute Strength activated, Tyrant Behemoth's body became even heavier as its feet sank into the ground.

Tyrant Behemoth exerted strength in its arms and pulled.

Boom! Boom!

Zhou Wen was dumbfounded to discover that the surrounding sword graves of all sizes were trembling violently as though there was an earthquake.

However, despite the veins on Tyrant Behemoth's body protruding as it pulled at the sword with all its might, the vine sword remained stuck in the tiny grave. It didn't come out as though it had been entrenched.

Tyrant Behemoth constantly exerted strength. Under the infusion of Absolute Strength's terrifying and boundless strength, the surrounding sword graves shook more and more violently. The various embedded swords emitted sword hums. Instantly, ten thousand swords resonated as their humming reverberated everywhere.

Only the vine sword remained silent and was still intact.

Zhou Wen saw that Tyrant Behemoth had exerted its strength to its limits. The entire Ancient Sword Tomb was almost on the brink of being overturned by an earthquake; yet, the vine sword remained intact. He knew that the possibility of pulling it out was very low.

Zhou Wen's heart stirred as he ordered Tyrant Behemoth to give up on the vine sword. He ran to a sword tomb to the side and pulled out the claymore from it.

The moment the claymore appeared, terrifying red flames spewed out from the sword. However, the flames were nothing in front of Tyrant Behemoth. They couldn’t even burn its fur. Tyrant Behemoth stuffed it into its mouth and chewed it a few times before swallowing it.

“Killed Epic creature, Fiery Claymore…”

Zhou Wen saw the game notification, but the sword was swallowed by Tyrant Behemoth without leaving anything behind.

After Tyrant Behemoth released the vine sword, the Ancient Sword Tomb’s earthquake stopped and the ancient swords stopped buzzing. Tyrant Behemoth pulled out two ancient swords at the same time before smashing them together and snapping them.

Tyrant Behemoth charged forward as it frantically drew swords and snapped them. There was no sword that could withstand a single strike from it. Soon, it had snapped almost forty swords.

Zhou Wen kept looking at the game’s notifications. Some dimensional crystals dropped, but the highest was at the Epic stage. He didn’t discover any Mythical swords.

There were tens of thousands of swords in the Ancient Sword Tomb. Tyrant Behemoth pulled them out one by one without encountering a situation with the vine sword again. They were all easily pulled out.

Zhou Wen was now certain that it wasn’t a problem with the Ancient Sword Tomb in-game, but that he had struck the lottery. The first sword he encountered was actually an extraordinary sword.

Unfortunately, Zhou Wen didn’t know much about swords. No matter how he looked at it, the vine sword wasn’t outstanding. It looked similar to a withered vine.

After snapping nearly a hundred swords, Zhou Wen got Tyrant Behemoth to turn around and pull the vine sword again, but the outcome was the same. Tyrant Behemoth used all its strength, causing an earthquake in the Ancient Sword Tomb, but the vine sword remained motionless.

Zhou Wen had no choice but to temporarily give up on the vine sword. He got Tyrant Behemoth to continue pulling the other swords to see if he could gain anything.

As the swords were pulled out, one of the swords wasn’t snapped by Tyrant Behemoth. The sword flashed a divine light as it scratched Tyrant Behemoth’s palm and escaped.

Zhou Wen was alarmed. Tyrant Behemoth still had Absolute Strength active; yet, the sword managed to injure Tyrant Behemoth. Although it had only scratched the surface, that was enough to prove its sharpness.

After the sword struggled free, it quickly circled around Tyrant Behemoth and occasionally released sword beams to attack it.

However, the sword beams were shattered by Tyrant Behemoth. They couldn’t injure it at all.

Zhou Wen carefully looked at the sword. He could only see sword beams, but not the sword’s body. This surprised him even more. When he used Truth Listener’s power to observe it, he immediately realized that the sword was invisible.

The sword seemed to be transparent. He could only see the sword beam, but he couldn’t see the blade. However, Zhou

Wen was certain that the sword had a physical body. It wasn’t a Spirit Body, nor was it a pure sword beam.

A transparent sword? Interesting. As Zhou Wen was sizing up the sword, he heard Tyrant Behemoth roar angrily.

The transparent sword flew very quickly. Tyrant Behemoth failed to catch up to it no matter how many times it attacked. In its rage, it unleashed the full might of Absolute Strength. The suction force that resembled a black hole immediately reduced the sword’s speed.

Tyrant Behemoth charged over and grabbed the transparent sword. The transparent sword was extremely sharp as it sliced through Tyrant Behemoth’s palm, causing blood to drip down from the gaps between its fingers.

However, Tyrant Behemoth ignored it. It grabbed the transparent sword with both hands and used all its strength to snap it.

Zhou Wen couldn’t see what the transparent sword looked like, but he could see Tyrant Behemoth’s hands slowly descending. When the two claws were about to touch each other, there was a boom as though a tenacious steel plate had snapped.

In the next second, Zhou Wen saw a notification appear in-game.

‘Killed Mythical creature, Light Concealment Sword. Discovered Companion Egg.’

Zhou Wen was overjoyed. He had expected to encounter a Mythical sword, but to have a Companion Egg drop surprised him. After all, his luck wasn’t that good.

He sized up the area where the Light Concealment Sword snapped, but he didn’t see any Companion Eggs. He immediately came to a realization that perhaps Light Concealment Sword’s Companion Beast was also transparent and invisible.

He hurriedly swept the area with Truth Listener and immediately discovered the Companion Egg. It was beside Tyrant Behemoth’s huge foot, but he couldn’t see it with his eyes.

I already have the Invisibility Cloak, and now I’ve obtained a Light Concealment Sword. Could it be that I’m destined to become a peerless assassin? Zhou Wen thought happily as he picked up the Light Concealment Sword Companion Egg.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 765 - Three Swords of Ancient Times

Chapter 765: Three Swords of Ancient Times

Light Concealment: Mythical

Life Providence: Invisible Sword

Life Soul: Invisible Sword Aura

Wheel of Destiny: Light Concealment

Strength: 81

Speed: 81

Constitution: 80

Essence Energy: 81

Talent Skill: Sword Light Slash, Sword Light Wheel, Sword Light Rain, Integration Strike.

Companion Form: Sword

Although he didn’t know how the skills or Life Providence were, he knew solely from the stats that the Light Concealment Sword was a top-notch Companion Beast.

Apart from the one-point difference in Constitution, all of its stats were top-notch at the Mythical stage. They were stronger than the Golden Overlord Sword’s stats.

In-game, he tried out the Light Concealment Sword's skill and slashed out a condensed sword beam. Its single-target destructive power was extremely powerful.

The Sword Light Wheel was a multitudinous light attack. It was considered a small AOE attack.

Sword Light Rain covered a large area, but its offensive strength was much weaker than a single Sword Light Slash.

However, if he used Slaughterer's infinite Essence Energy to complement Sword Light Rain, it would be somewhat ludicrous.

Typical Sword Light Rain could only be used once before one was depleted of their Essence Energy. Even a Mythical creature's Essence Energy stores were unable to withstand two or three rounds of expenditure.

However, Slaughterer's infinite Essence Energy recovery allowed him to cast Sword Light Rain constantly. It was like a submachine gun with infinite bullets.

Zhou Wen studied the final Integration Strike for a while, but he failed to figure out what skill it was. It wasn't an active offensive skill, so Zhou Wen didn't understand its main effects.

The Invisible Sword Life Providence was the invisibility ability of the Light Concealment Sword. The Invisible Sword Aura Life Soul was rather interesting. Apart from a sword beam, the Light Concealment Sword could also emit an invisible sword aura. Others could only see the sword beam, but not the invisible sword aura. If one only blocked the sword beam, they would succumb to the Invisible Sword Aura. It was a very sinister Life Soul.

The effects of the Wheel of Destiny—Light Concealment—were somewhat strange. Zhou Wen needed to continue studying it. After using it, the Light Concealment Sword's sword beams and sword aura would converge, causing its destructive power to decrease. He had yet to figure out its true use.

In short, Zhou Wen was very satisfied with the Light Concealment Sword. Coupled with the Invisibility Cloak, it was the best weapon to secretly defeat others.

In the past, if Zhou Wen had used the Golden Overlord Sword while wearing the Invisibility Cloak, he would be exposing a huge, golden sword. Even a blind person could see it.

Now that he had the Light Concealment Sword, the possibility of being seen was much lower.

The Light Concealment Sword is known as one of the Three Ancient Swords. From top to bottom grade, it went: Light Concealment Sword, Shadow Containment, and Night Training. If one can gather all three ancient swords and attack with all three in a fight, how impressive would that be? Zhou Wen got Tyrant Behemoth to continue drawing the swords.

With this ferocious beast around, there was no need for the blood-colored avatar to do a thing. Zhou Wen released his luxurious Mythical pet lineup and got them to draw swords on their own.

The outcome wasn't that good. Apart from obtaining the Light Concealment Sword in the beginning, the Companion Eggs that dropped had relatively low levels. He didn't encounter any Mythical creatures.

Apart from that, quite a number of sword Essence Energy Skills dropped. Most of them were at the Legendary stage, with three at the Epic stage.

Zhou Wen absorbed all the Essence Energy Skills. It was better than nothing.

...

The next morning, Wang Chan left the manor and prepared to head to the old courtyard to visit Zhou Wen.

However, just as she walked out of the Wang manor, she saw Xiao Si walking over.

“Little Chan, where are you going?” Xiao Si asked politely.

“As you wish. To a dimensional zone,” Wang Chan said with a cold expression.

“In that case, I’ll accompany you to prevent any accidents,” said Xiao Si.

Wang Chan curled her lips and said, “There’s no need. Don’t you claim that it was thanks to your Traversing Misfortune Buddha Body when nothing happens.”

“Don’t worry. My Traversing Misfortune Buddha Body can be controlled freely. I’ve already temporarily sealed him today. It won’t affect your Goddess of Misfortune Life Providence. Furthermore, by going with you, if there’s really excessive bad luck, I can stop it in time to prevent unnecessary casualties, especially your friend,” Xiao Si said.

“Up to you.” Wang Chan hesitated for a moment and didn’t stop Xiao Si from following.

She was really afraid that something would happen to Zhou Wen because of her. Furthermore, with Xiao Si around, if she could really prove that her bad luck wouldn’t affect Zhou Wen, she could also make Xiao Si see the truth and give up on the idea.

As she was taking Xiao Si with her, Wang Chan didn’t go to the old courtyard again. That was where Grandma Wang rested. Not to mention outsiders, even members of the Wang family weren’t allowed to go there for no reason. Wang Chan naturally wouldn’t take Xiao Si with her.

After agreeing to meet Zhou Wen at the Great Wall, Wang Chan quickly headed to their meeting point.

Xiao Si followed Wang Chan mainly because he wanted to know who was influencing her. He had already gotten the Xiao family to investigate, but they hadn’t found out anything due to the short amount of time provided. Furthermore, no one from Sunset College had come to the Wang family recently.

When he messaged Wang Chan, Zhou Wen knew that she would be bringing Xiao Si along. Zhou Wen wasn’t surprised. Even if Wang Chan refused to bring Xiao Si along, Xiao Si would probably still meet them by accident.

“Brother-in-law, you’re here.” Zhou Wen arrived at the appointed spot. When Wang Chan saw him, she immediately ran over. However, her form of address left Zhou Wen slightly taken aback.

However, Zhou Wen immediately understood why Wang Chan called him that without using his name.

Now, the Xia family and the bureau were still investigating the changes in the Forbidden City. If they knew that Zhou

Wen had left the Forbidden City, it would naturally be very troublesome.

Wang Chan deliberately didn't call Zhou Wen by his name because she didn't want Xiao Si to know his true identity as a way to prevent him from causing trouble.

It's quite impressive to be aware of such things at such a young age. Zhou Wen marveled inwardly. He wasn't so meticulous back when he was as old as Wang Chan.

"Little Chan, is he your brother-in-law?" Wang Chan's address of Zhou Wen left Xiao Si slightly taken aback as he asked in puzzlement.

"My sister's boyfriend. If I don't call him brother-in-law, what else can I call him?" Wang Chan curled her lips and said.

Xiao Si sized up Zhou Wen and saw that his face was still covered in bandages and he was wearing a hat. It was impossible to tell what he looked like.

"I'm Xiao Si from Chiang Rai…" Xiao Si took the initiative to introduce himself. He mainly wanted to know who this man was.

Wang Lu was different from Wang Chan. Wang Lu could be said to be the heir apparent of the Wang family. It was impossible for the Wang family to let her marry outsiders, much less allow her Goddess of Luck Life Providence to go to waste.

The Wang family would definitely carefully filter the people who could become Wang Lu's partner.

Now that Wang Chan had called Zhou Wen brother-in-law, Xiao Si was momentarily unsure of Zhou Wen's origins.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 766 - Undying Battle Soul

Chapter 766: Undying Battle Soul

“Wei Ge, most people call me Brother.” Zhou Wen extended his hand and shook Xiao Si’s hand.

Xiao Si secretly remembered this name, but he naturally wouldn’t call him “Brother.” He planned on investigating Wei Ge’s background after he returned.

…

In an office of the Imperial Capital Special Inspector Bureau’s headquarters, Wei Ge, who was drinking tea, suddenly sneezed. He rubbed his nose and muttered to himself, “Who’s thinking of me?”

…

“Cut it out. Brother-in-law, didn’t you want to go to the Great Wall? Let’s go.” Wang Chan pulled Zhou Wen towards the stairs at the entrance of the Great Wall.

Zhou Wen had been searching outside the Great Wall for a long time, but he couldn’t find the tiny palm symbol. However, he remained adamant about giving up—he wanted to search while on the Great Wall.

After all, dimensional creatures like Undying Battle Souls had very rare characteristics. Such dimensional creatures might be very useful.

Wang Chan was still somewhat uneasy, afraid that her Goddess of Misfortune would endanger Zhou Wen.

Xiao Si tailed them while constantly wearing a smile on his face. However, he was sneering inwardly. *Do you think you'll really be safe after coming to a place like the Great Wall? How naive.*

Zhou Wen hadn't ascended the Great Wall yesterday and had only searched its exterior. Therefore, he hadn't seen the Undying Battle Souls. After ascending the Great Wall, he finally knew what kind of existence the Battle Souls were.

On the ancient city wall, soldiers in armor wandered aimlessly as though they had no mind or soul.

Their attire looked ancient. Furthermore, these soldiers were like virtual projections. Their bodies were translucent. When Zhou Wen reached out to grab an Undying Battle Soul's arm, his palm passed through the Battle Soul's body as though it was only an illusion and not a real creature.

Zhou Wen condensed his Essence Energy and attempted to attack the Undying Battle Souls but to no avail. All sorts of Essence Energy Skills penetrated the Undying Battle Soul's bodies, leaving them unaffected.

An Undying Battle Soul wandered over and passed through Zhou Wen and company as it continued wandering forward.

These Undying Battle Souls are quite interesting. They look similar to the Ghost Bride that has a Spirit Body, but they seem a little different. Zhou Wen sized up the Undying Battle Souls with interest.

This was clearly the first time Wang Chan had seen an Undying Battle Soul. She was very curious and reached out

to grab it, but it was naturally futile.

“I’ve only heard that Undying Battle Souls were very magical in the past. I’m finally seeing it today.” Wang Chan was very happy. This was because Undying Battle Souls indeed couldn’t harm anyone, so she didn’t have to worry about Zhou Wen being affected by her bad luck.

Xiao Si looked at the Undying Battle Souls, his eyes flashing with a strange, indiscernible look.

Zhou Wen searched for the tiny palm symbol along the way, but Wang Chan treated it as a vacation. However, the scenery of the Great Wall was too monotonous. All there was to see other than the city walls were Undying Battle Souls.

Such a scenery became a little boring after a long time.

As they walked, they suddenly saw black smoke rising in front of them.

Looking in the direction of the rising black smoke, they saw that it was coming out from a beacon tower.

The so-called beacon towers were actually the place where signals were transmitted in ancient times.

In ancient times, there were no modern signaling stations, nor were there any radio or satellites to transmit signals over distances. They could only rely on producing smoke to allow people in the distance to see the signal.

Therefore, there would be a beacon tower built at certain distances on the Great Wall to deliver information quickly.

This was also the main purpose of the Great Wall. Although the Great Wall was tall and majestic, its main purpose wasn’t

for war. Apart from the beacon tower's ability to transmit information, the Great Wall's main purpose was to block trade and information transmission.

However, in modern times, the Great Wall was basically useless. After the dimensional storms, there were very few humans who could reach the Great Wall, much less ignite the flames of war.

To suddenly have smoke rising from the beacon tower on the Great Wall made Wang Chan's heart skip a beat as she felt that something was amiss.

Rising smoke from the nearby beacon tower looked like a black tornado rushing into the sky from afar.

What was even stranger was that the soulless Battle Souls seemed to awaken all of a sudden. Their eyes glowed red as they swarmed towards the beacon tower.

"Brother-in-law, something seems amiss. Let's leave quickly." Wang Chan pulled Zhou Wen and wanted to leave the Great Wall. She was really afraid that something would happen.

However, when they retreated, they didn't see any stairs that led them away from the Great Wall.

The Great Wall had already transformed into a dimensional zone. It was impossible to jump off the city wall. Although one could also jump out of the city wall, the dimensional zone's power would take effect. One would be bound by a mysterious force. The further one was from the Great Wall, the greater the force.

It would be as if one had a powerful spring attached to them. In the end, they would be pulled back to the Great Wall.

Only by taking the stairs could one truly leave the Great Wall.

“No… How can it not be here… It was clearly here…” Wang Chan looked left and right, almost crying from anxiety.

“It’s fine. Since we can’t get out, I might as well see what’s on the beacon tower,” Zhou Wen said as he walked towards it.

Although Wang Chan was very worried, she had no choice but to follow Zhou Wen to the beacon tower.

Xiao Si said from the side, “I’ve already said that only my Traversing Misfortune Buddha Body can give you peace of mind. No one else can.”

Wang Chan pretended not to hear him as she quickly walked to Zhou Wen’s side.

Soon, the trio came to a nearby beacon tower. They saw a strange container emitting copious amounts of black smoke. The nearby Undying Battle Souls were throwing themselves into the container.

Zhou Wen was somewhat surprised to discover that the black smoke was produced by seemingly burning the Undying Battle Souls.

He turned around and looked at the other beacon towers nearby, but he didn’t see any smoke from them. Only this one had smoke rising from it.

He carefully sized up the container. It was a two-handled pot. It was completely black, but it wasn’t made of gold or jade. It looked more like a lacquered container.

There were some mysterious patterns engraved on the pot, but Zhou Wen couldn’t understand them.

As more and more Undying Battle Souls threw themselves into the pot, the patterns on the pot gradually lit up as though there was some evil aura flowing through them.

All the nearby Undying Battle Souls had already thrown themselves into the pot. The black smoke stopped spewing out and the pot shook violently.

Suddenly, something shot out from the pot. When Wang Chan saw what it was, her expression changed.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 767 - Silver-Winged Yaksha

Chapter 767: Silver-Winged Yaksha

“Silver-Winged Yaksha! Why is there a Silver-Winged Yaksha on the Great Wall!?” Wang Chan cried out in horror.

Zhou Wen frowned as he stared at the creature that came out of the pot. He saw that it was an evil ghost with wings on its back. Its entire body seemed to be forged from silver, but its blood-red eyes shimmered. It looked extremely sinister and bizarre.

He was certain that it was a dimensional creature and not a Companion Beast.

Zhou Wen had actually heard of Silver-Winged Yakshas. Not long after the dimensional storms, a few Silver-Winged Yakshas had appeared in some coastal cities.

As Silver-Winged Yakshas were extremely bloodthirsty, they would bring a terrifying calamity to humanity every time they appeared. Some places suffered massacres.

However, in the past twenty to thirty years, Silver-Winged Yakshas rarely appeared. It was even more so in a place like the Imperial Capital.

Zhou Wen had only heard that Silver-Winged Yakshas were terrifying. It was possible that it was a Mythical creature, but he had never seen one before.

“Brother-in-law, run!” Wang Chan pulled Zhou Wen and ran. She knew very well how terrifying Silver-Winged Yakshas

were.

This was because the Wang family had a video of the Silver-Winged Yaksha's massacre of a small city. Not only was the Silver-Winged Yaksha a Mythical creature, but it was also extremely fast. Its physique and strength were equally terrifying. Typically, humans wouldn't even be able to see it before they were beheaded.

Now, Wang Chan regretted bringing Zhou Wen into the dimensional zone. If they had not come here, they wouldn't have encountered such trouble.

"I've already said that you shouldn't have come out with others. Only I can stop you from being embroiled by bad luck," said Xiao Si.

At that moment, Xiao Si was feeling very pleased with himself. The Silver-Winged Yaksha naturally didn't appear here for no reason. Although it wasn't a Companion Beast but a genuine dimensional creature, this didn't mean that no one could control it.

In fact, the person who released the Silver-Winged Yaksha was Xiao Si himself. However, the Silver-Winged Yaksha wasn't his pet. He couldn't command the Silver-Winged Yaksha, so the reason for its appearance was the two-handled pot.

The pot itself was a magical item. It had the title of Devil's Pot in the South District. It was a treasure that was obtained from a mysterious dimensional zone in the South District before it ended up in the Xiao family's hands.

There were no true devils in the Devil's Pot, but they could seal certain types of dimensional creatures inside.

The Xiao family had paid a considerable price to find a Silver-Winged Yaksha and place it inside the Devil’s Pot.

Although they couldn’t control the Silver-Winged Yaksha, they could selectively release or seal it.

In other words, after Xiao Si controlled the Devil’s Pot, he had the ability to release or retrieve the Silver-Winged Yaksha.

Silver-Winged Yakshas were extremely bloodthirsty. They would engage in wanton slaughter the moment they were released. Their only weakness was that they didn’t distinguish between friend and foe. Typically, they would only choose humans and souls as their targets.

Although the Devil’s Pot wasn’t of much help in cracking dimensional zones, it was a great weapon when used against humans.

Although Xiao Si told Wang Chan that he could control his Life Providence, it was actually impossible. Therefore, as long as he was by her side, Wang Chan’s Goddess of Misfortune Life Providence wouldn’t have much effect.

Xiao Si had no intention of letting Wang Chan’s Life Providence take effect. He didn’t like uncertain factors and wanted everything to be under his control.

Roar! After the Silver-Winged Yaksha came out of the Devil’s Pot, it let out a shocking roar. Silver light erupted from its body as a terrifying shockwave blasted out hundreds of meters away, causing Wang Chan and Xiao Si to fall to the ground.

In the next second, the Silver-Winged Yaksha spread its wings and instantly traversed a distance of hundreds of

meters. It appeared in front of Zhou Wen who was still standing there. Its aura was extremely violent, like a devil from hell.

“No…” Wang Chan was extremely regretful. She regretted bringing Zhou Wen out. She regretted having the extravagant hopes of making friends at school like an ordinary girl.

Xiao Si pretended to fall to the ground, but his eyes were filled with killing intent. *No one knows that the Devil’s Pot and the Silver-Winged Yaksha belong to our Xiao family. No matter who this fellow is, no one will be able to pin the blame on me if he’s killed by the Silver-Winged Yaksha. Without him, everything will return to normal… Wang Chan will eventually join my Xiao family…*

As the two of them had different thoughts, they suddenly saw Zhou Wen draw the saber at his waist and slash at the Silver-Winged Yaksha.

Xiao Si sneered inwardly. *A terrifying existence like the Silver-Winged Yaksha has devoured so many Undying Battle Souls. How can a human’s saber match it…*

“Brother-in-law, I’m sorry…” Wang Chan shouted loudly. Her heart was filled with regret and frustration. Tears fell from the corners of her eyes as she thought sadly, *I shouldn’t have had such extravagant hopes…*

However, in the next second, Xiao Si and Wang Chan widened their eyes in shock.

The Silver-Winged Yaksha was split into two by the Bamboo Blade as it slammed to the ground.

“No… Impossible…” Xiao Si’s mouth gaped open as he looked at Zhou Wen and the Silver-Winged Yasha’s corpse at his feet in disbelief. He couldn’t believe that the Mythical Silver-Winged Yaksha had died just like that.

Wang Chan was also stunned. Her face was still covered in tears, but her expression had turned extremely odd. She hadn’t completely restrained her sorrowful expression, yet it was mixed with a flabbergasted look.

“What did you say?” Zhou Wen picked up a silver egg-shaped object from the Silver-Winged Yaksha’s corpse and turned to ask Wang Chan.

“N-nothing… Brother-in-law… You’re amazing… Is this the Silver-Winged Yaksha’s Companion Egg?” Wang Chan’s forlorn look turned into a smile as she jumped up from the ground and tugged at Zhou Wen with a look of joy.

“I guess so. However, such a weak dimensional creature is probably very weak as a Companion Beast. It’s useless. If you like it, you can have it.” Zhou Wen casually threw the Silver-Winged Yaksha Companion Egg towards Wang Chan.

The corners of Xiao Si’s eyes twitched. He wished he could slap Zhou Wen twice.

That was the Silver-Winged Yaksha. The Xiao family had sealed the Silver-Winged Yaksha for so long, but they had failed to come up with a way to kill it. They never expected such good luck to have the Silver-Winged Yaksha drop a Companion Egg after its death.

Ignoring the fact that Zhou Wen had killed the Silver-Winged Yaksha and had a Companion Egg drop, he even complained that the Silver-Winged Yaksha was too weak. This left Xiao Si gnashing his teeth in anger.

However, Zhou Wen wasn’t in the mood to care about Xiao Si’s expression. His figure phased away and vanished.

Not good! Xiao Si was alarmed. He had already guessed where Zhou Wen had gone.

Although the Silver-Winged Yaksha was difficult to seal, there was still a chance of sealing another in the future. It didn’t matter if it died, but if Zhou Wen took away the Devil’s Pot, everything would be over.

Xiao Si hurriedly ordered his Life Soul to retrieve the Devil’s Pot. He was still very confident in his Life Soul. After all, he had used his Life Soul to silently place the Devil’s Pot on the beacon tower.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 768 - Kuman Thong Life Soul

Chapter 768: Kuman Thong Life Soul

Zhou Wen’s Transcendent Flying Immortal was extremely fast, allowing him to instantly arrive at the beacon tower.

The two-handled pot was still on the beacon tower, but it was swaying as though it had been moved by something before disappearing.

Truth Listener could hear the sounds of motion and determine where an object was, but it couldn’t outline an exact shape.

Zhou Wen activated the Holy Hell King Life Soul and opened the Eye of the Holy Hell King. Immediately, he saw a child running with the two-handled Devil’s Pot.

The child was much smaller than Demonic Neonate, but the sinflames on his body were very rich.

The child turned his head to look at Zhou Wen, leaving him slightly taken aback. The child’s facial features were very blurry as though he hadn’t grown up. His body was also very strange. His stomach was huge, but his limbs were tiny. He was indescribably terrifying and bizarre.

Activating the Eye of the Holy Hell King, a force swallowed the invisible child into the Eye of the Holy Hell King. The child seemed to be made of pure sinflames so he was directly absorbed and refined to nothingness.

Zhou Wen could even sense that his Holy Hell King Life Soul had made significant progress. If he could have more of these Life Souls, he might be able to successfully evolve a Perfect Body.

Clang!

After the child was absorbed and refined, the Devil's Pot that had disappeared immediately dropped to the ground. At the same time, Zhou Wen heard a tragic cry. He saw Xiao Si spew out a mouthful of blood as the color in his face drained. It was as though he had suffered a fatal blow.

The destruction of Xiao Si's Life Soul was naturally a severe blow to him. He had dropped from the Epic stage to the Legendary stage, astounding and infuriating him.

Zhou Wen grabbed the Devil's Pot and with a flash, he returned to Wang Chan's side. He stared at Xiao Si, who was about to escape, and said, "This is yours, right?"

"What are you talking about? How can that crappy pot be mine?" Xiao Si immediately shook his head and said.

"I originally wanted to give you a chance to live. Since you aren't appreciating it, there's no need to say anything else," Zhou Wen said as he prepared to draw his Bamboo Blade.

"Wait! What do you want?" Xiao Si was terrified, but he still pretended to be calm.

He had seen Zhou Wen kill the Silver-Winged Yaksha with a single blow and knew how terrifying Zhou Wen's strength was. As for the Life Soul that Xiao Si had relied on and others couldn't see, it had been killed by Zhou Wen. He had lost his composure.

“Answer a few of my questions. If your answers satisfy me, I can consider letting you live,” Zhou Wen said.

“Ask whatever you want to know. However, that Devil’s Pot has nothing to do with me,” Xiao Si said through gritted teeth.

“Alright, so you were the one behind this. I thought it was me…” Wang Chan also understood what had happened and glared at Xiao Si angrily.

Zhou Wen pulled her behind him and looked at Xiao Si. “I don’t care if it has anything to do with you. Tell me the origins of this pot and what use does it have?”

“This pot is named Devil’s Pot in the South District. You’ll know once you ask around. It can seal certain special dimensional creatures.” As Xiao Si answered, his fingers moved in his sleeve.

“How can I control this pot?” Zhou Wen asked again.

“It’s very simple.” Xiao Si explained the usage of the Devil’s Pot.

“That child was your Life Soul, right? What’s his name? What’s his use?” Zhou Wen asked again.

He was very interested in Xiao Si’s Life Soul. For a Life Soul to have so many sinflames—even more than the sinflames on Xiao Si’s body—made no sense.

“Kuman Thong. It’s a relatively common Life Soul in Chiang Rai. As long as one cultivates the Kuman Thong Essence Energy Art, they will have a Kuman Thong Life Soul. However, their abilities will be slightly different,” Xiao Si said.

Zhou Wen’s eyes lit up when he heard that. He stared at Xiao Si and asked, “Does that mean that many people in Chiang Rai have Kuman Thong Life Souls?”

“It’s not just Chiang Rai. Many Epic experts in the nearby regions have Kuman Thong Life Souls,” Xiao Si answered readily.

“One last question. Why do you want to take Wang Chan to the Xiao family?” Zhou Wen stared at Xiao Si and asked.

“Of course, I wish to obtain the Wang family’s help to make our Xiao family…” Before Xiao Si could finish his sentence, Zhou Wen had already unsheathed his Bamboo Blade.

A saber beam flashed. Before Xiao Si and Wang Chan could see what was happening, the Bamboo Blade had already returned to its scabbard.

“You… You said you wouldn’t kill me…” Xiao Si’s expression changed drastically as he hurriedly covered his neck with his hand. However, the moment his hand touched his neck, a bloody mark appeared on his originally normal neck. Then, blood gushed out. He couldn’t stop the blood no matter how hard he tried.

“I said that I could let you live if I was satisfied with your answer. Now, I’m very unsatisfied with your answer, so I refuse to give you a way out,” Zhou Wen said matter-of-factly.

“You…” Xiao Si opened his mouth, but at that moment, his mouth was filled with blood. He couldn’t say a word. He fell to the ground and twitched a few times before he died.

Zhou Wen used the sheathed Bamboo Blade to pry open his palm and saw a strange plaque in his hand. It was black, but

it looked like the bone of some creature. The plaque had a mysterious engraving, and the necklace connected to the plaque was made using many strange materials. He was unsure what it was.

“This is a Buddha plaque.” Wang Chan recognized what it was.

“What’s a Buddha plaque? One used to honor Buddha?” Zhou Wen really didn’t know what a Buddha plaque was.

“No, a Buddha plaque is a dimensional artifact created by some Epic experts in the South District using dimensional materials. Typically, it’s made from the bones of a dimensional creature before forcefully sealing a Companion Beast inside the Buddha plaque. This way, the Buddha plaque will have the power of a Companion Beast, but it doesn’t have a master. As long as a special method is used, anyone can use the power of the Companion Beast inside the Buddha plaque. This will allow some Mortal stage or even ordinary people who have never cultivated to borrow the power of a Companion Beast,” Wang Chan said.

“There’s actually such a magical technique. Why hasn’t the Federation promoted such a technique?” Zhou Wen was somewhat surprised.

It allowed ordinary people to use the power of high-level Companion Beasts. This technique was just extremely powerful.

“Companion Beasts sealed in the Buddha plaque can only use a portion of their strength. Furthermore, when used by ordinary people, there will be many taboos. A single mistake will result in a backlash. The average person wouldn’t choose such a method to control a Companion Beast. This is similar to the Kuman Thong Life Soul. The Kuman Thong Life

Soul is also a Life Soul that allows quick formation. As long as the correct method is used, it’s very easy to condense a Kuman Thong Life Soul. However, the method of condensing the Kuman Thong is very cruel. Furthermore, like the Buddha plaque, it’s easy for it to negatively affect its owner. Therefore, other than a certain area in the South District, there are very few people who cultivate the Kuman Thong Life Soul. I never expected that this b*stard, Xiao Si, would cultivate the Kuman Thong Life Soul. Furthermore, it’s in the form of a child. Damn it.” Wang Chan kicked Xiao Si’s corpse hatefully.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 769 - Cherish the Opportunity

Chapter 769: Cherish the Opportunity

Zhou Wen picked up the Buddha plaque in Xiao Si’s hand with his sword. For Xiao Si to use the Buddha plaque against Zhou Wen despite having seen his strength, it was likely that the Buddha plaque had extraordinary strength, so Zhou Wen was rather careful.

After the dimensional storms, there were too many mysterious powers in the world. Zhou Wen wasn’t arrogant enough to believe that he was invincible just because he had some achievements.

If he was not careful, this tiny Buddha plaque might become his death warrant.

Zhou Wen carefully sized up the Buddha plaque and couldn’t see anything amiss. All he felt was that there was some invisible evil aura lingering on it.

However, this evil aura didn’t seem to have any effect.

This was because the Buddha plaque needed a special method to be used. Zhou Wen didn’t know how to use it, nor was he able to activate the Companion Beast in the Buddha plaque. After fiddling with it for a while and seeing that it was useless, he put it away.

He searched Xiao Si’s body again. Apart from a few Buddha plaques, there was nothing else of value.

Zhou Wen put away the Buddha plaques and summoned the Fire Furnace Queen to burn Xiao Si’s corpse to ashes.

“Let’s return.” Zhou Wen took Wang Chan back to the Wang family’s courtyard and went to see Grandma Wang. He recounted the entire process in detail, but he didn’t explain much.

Grandma Wang listened attentively without saying a word. After she finished listening, she asked Zhou Wen and Wang Chan a few questions.

“Little Zhou, you’ve done well. You’ve helped our Wang family greatly and saved Little Chan. I’ll just keep it short. I need to gather the core members of the Wang family to discuss our response. Although the Xiao family’s forces aren’t comparable to our Wang family and are far away in the South District, their Companion Beasts and various skills are somewhat special. We have to be wary of them. Also, don’t tell anyone about this matter. Just treat it as though it never happened. Leave everything to our Wang family,” Grandma Wang said to Zhou Wen after some thought.

“I killed him. If there’s anything you need me for, just tell me,” Zhou Wen said.

“Good child, since you call me Grandma, I won’t stand on ceremony with you. I’ll think of you when I need you. Go back with Little Chan now. Do what you need to do and pretend nothing has happened,” Grandma Wang said.

Zhou Wen and Wang Chan left the hall. Wang Chan looked at Zhou Wen in delight and said, “Zhou Wen, thank you. If it

weren’t for you, I would have been fooled by that detestable fellow. Now, I can finally be at ease.”

Zhou Wen shook his head and said, “Your sister helped me a lot. In comparison, what I did was nothing. You don’t have to take it to heart.”

With that said, Zhou Wen turned around and returned to his room.

Since the Wang family already knew of the Xiao family’s intentions towards Wang Chan, they would naturally be wary in the future. Zhou Wen didn’t need to continue interfering.

As Wang Chan watched Zhou Wen enter the room, she held the Silver-Winged Yaksha Companion Egg in hand. She wanted to stop him, but when she opened her mouth, she closed it again.

“Humph, Sister is right. This Numbskull Wen is pretty nice, but he isn’t good with words.” Wang Chan put the Silver-Winged Yaksha Companion Egg back into her pocket.

She originally wanted to return it to Zhou Wen. After all, she had no way of incubating such a Mythical Companion Egg. It was useless even if she took it. Furthermore, she wasn’t someone who would take things from others.

If she really wanted a Mythical Companion Egg, it wouldn’t be difficult for her with her having an elder sister like Wang Lu around.

Despite that, Wang Chan changed her mind and didn’t return the Companion Egg to Zhou Wen. Instead, she returned to the Wang family with it.

…

Wang Lu already knew what had happened. After Wang Chan returned, she asked her in private, “Little Chan, are you alright?”

“I’m fine. Thankfully, Zhou Wen was there. Otherwise, I would have been fooled by that b*stard Xiao Si. Now, I finally know that my misfortune Life Providence might not necessarily bring misfortune to everyone. At the very least, Zhou Wen isn’t affected by my misfortune,” Wang Chan said.

Wang Lu smiled and said, “It’s good that you think that way. Your Life Providence is nothing much.”

“By the way, Sister, do you like that Numbskull Wen?” Wang Chan asked.

“How can that be? We are just classmates with a better relationship,” Wang Lu hurriedly said.

“I see. Then, sister, you have to cherish this opportunity,” Wang Chan said.

“What do you mean cherish the opportunity? No one wants such a boring man. It would be strange if he had a girlfriend,” Wang Lu said with a twitch of her lips.

“That might be the case. I think Numbskull Wen isn’t bad. If you don’t want him, I’ll be his girlfriend when I grow up.” With that said, Wang Chan carried the Companion Egg back to her room.

Wang Lu was taken aback. She hadn’t expected Wang Chan to say that.

…

After Zhou Wen returned to his room, he continued grinding the Ancient Sword Tomb. He was still thinking about the Shadow Containment Sword and Night Training Sword.

However, the Ancient Sword Tomb was just too huge. Most ancient swords were at the Mortal and Legendary stage. It wasn’t easy to find an Epic, much less a Mythical.

After grinding for a few hours, none of the ancient swords destroyed were at the Mythical stage.

On the other hand, the vine sword was still there. Zhou Wen had tried all sorts of methods to pull out the sword, but the outcome was the same. He couldn’t pull it out no matter what.

Zhou Wen didn’t take out the Buddha plaques to study them because he was afraid that there were special settings on them. It wouldn’t be good if the Xiao family traced the clues to him.

Placing them in the chaos space was equivalent to them being in another space. It severed all connections with the outside world. No matter how powerful the Xiao family was, it was impossible for them to find those Buddha plaques.

Zhou Wen planned on studying the Buddha plaques after leaving the Imperial Capital.

His only regret in coming to the Imperial Capital was that he couldn’t download the Great Wall instance dungeon. However, Zhou Wen already roughly knew that the Undying Battle Soul was a soul-type creature. It wasn’t that he couldn’t kill it, but he needed some special powers.

…

The anomaly in Forbidden City continued as lightning continued to fall from the heavens, turning Forbidden City into a city of lightning. However, the lightning was limited to the city, so it didn’t affect the Imperial Capital much.

Some people had already attempted to enter Forbidden City to explore the situation inside, but the outcome was terrible. Be it Companion Beasts or humans, people immediately lost contact with them upon their entry into Forbidden City. Up to now, no one had survived.

What exactly is the woman inside that log? What’s her relationship with the antelope? Why would it let me carry her into Forbidden City? Zhou Wen thought for a long time but failed to come up with an answer.

He asked the antelope, but it kept looking at him with a strange expression. He couldn’t tell what it meant. It looked a little like pity, regret, contempt, and a hint of gloating. In short, Zhou Wen’s hair stood on end every time he looked at it, but the antelope didn’t give him an answer.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 770 - In front of the Earth Temple

Chapter 770: In front of the Earth Temple

In the next few days, Zhou Wen went to some dimensional zones in the Imperial Capital, but he didn’t gain anything. He didn’t discover the tiny palm symbols.

The Wang family had already settled the matter regarding the Xiao family. Although they had temporarily appeased the Xiao family, it was ultimately a hidden danger.

The Xiao family’s interest in Wang Chan probably wouldn’t stop because of Xiao Si’s death. The Wang family also wanted to figure out the cause of this matter. If possible, they even wanted to directly eliminate the Xiao family and eliminate this future trouble.

However, the Xiao family wasn’t weak. Furthermore, they were far away in the South District. The Wang family’s influence couldn’t reach that far yet.

Only the Dugu family, the ruler of the South District, could easily destroy a local wealthy family like the Xiao family.

The Wang family could only placate the Xiao family before slowly plotting in secret to figure out why they wanted Wang Chan.

The matters in the Imperial Capital had basically come to an end. Zhou Wen planned on returning to Luoyang. Before he left, Grandma Wang sent him off with Wang Lu and Wang Chan. She even urged him to visit her often in the future.

…

Zhou Wen left the Imperial Capital and arrived at an abandoned village. He saw An Sheng sitting on a tree root waiting for him.

“Young Master Wen, how’s Old Master Xia?” An Sheng had been here for so long. Although he hadn’t entered the Imperial Capital himself, he knew the situation inside the Imperial Capital like the back of his hand. He had already contacted Zhou Wen, but for the sake of safety, he didn’t ask for certain information.

“He won’t appear again in the future.” Zhou Wen recounted what had happened to Xia Jiuhuang, leaving An Sheng shocked.

“Old Master Xia is Xia Jiuhuang. Furthermore, his Invincible Connate Divine Art remains intact. In that case, the Xia family isn’t actually his bloodline?” An Sheng immediately had the same thought as Zhou Wen.

“Who knows? In theory, if the Invincible Connate Divine Art remains intact, it’s unlikely that Xia Jiuhuang has any descendants. However, his Invincible Connate Divine Art has already fused with the Great Emperor Sutra into the Connate Great Emperor Sutra. Perhaps he can have descendants. Now that he’s dead, I’m afraid no one will ever know this secret,” Zhou Wen said.

“How’s Forbidden City now?” An Sheng asked another important question.

“I don’t know either. You have to ask it.” Zhou Wen looked at the listless antelope.

An Sheng clearly knew that it was impossible for him to obtain an answer from the antelope, so he changed the topic. “Li Xuan went to the South District.”

“Why did he suddenly go to the South District?” Zhou Wen was taken aback. Li Xuan had not informed him about this.

“Did Li Mobai get him to go?” Zhou Wen suddenly thought of something as his expression changed drastically.

“No, he went with Worm Dugu. Worm Dugu wanted to take him in as a disciple, but Li Xuan didn’t agree. In order to move Li Xuan, Worm Dugu told him some secrets, so Li Xuan wanted to try his luck in the South District. He was afraid that you would be anxious, so he didn’t let me tell you.” An Sheng recounted the entire matter.

Zhou Wen was really worried. Li Xuan might look carefree on the surface, but in fact, he was someone who was easily swayed by emotions. This was Li Xuan’s weakness and his strength. Zhou Wen was really afraid that something would happen to him in the South District.

There were many strange things in the South District. Gu worms, Kuman Thong, black magic, etc. Even if Li Xuan had an indestructible body, it wasn’t absolutely safe in such a place. Furthermore, Li Xuan hadn’t reached the indestructible realm.

It was too late to say anything now. Zhou Wen only hoped that Li Xuan would return safely.

“There’s a rather famous Earth temple ahead. Do you want to take a look?” An Sheng asked Zhou Wen when they arrived at a small town.

“Earth Temple? No harm visiting.” Zhou Wen still remembered that he had obtained a treasure map when he went to the Earth Temple. However, he didn’t manage to dig up any treasure. A baby-like dimensional creature had given him a metal walnut, and inside the metal walnut was Tai Sui.

All the Earth temples in the East District had similar functions. If a native were to pay respects to the Earth Lord, they might obtain a treasure map.

However, if one wasn’t native, Earth Lord would, unfortunately, ignore them even if they cracked their head kowtowing.

An Sheng took Zhou Wen to the nearby Earth temple. The Earth temple here was indeed much bigger than the one Zhou Wen had previously visited. Furthermore, the main god of this temple was land. It didn’t share temples and incense offerings with other gods.

“Treasure maps for sale. They are treasure maps obtained by authentic locals. Just one Legendary Companion Egg.”

“Newly produced treasure maps for only two Legendary Strength Crystals. They just need to be above a 6.”

“An ancestral treasure map…”

It was very lively in front of the Earth temple as though it was a market. Many stalls were selling treasure maps and some were selling crystals and Companion Eggs.

“Why aren’t these locals digging for treasures themselves?” Zhou Wen found it odd.

An Sheng said with a smile, “Do you really believe that these people are selling treasure maps? It’s been decades since

the dimensional storms. The locals have long finished kowtowing. Only newborn infants have the right to pray to Earth Lord to get a treasure map. How many babies are born every year?”

Zhou Wen immediately understood that these people who sold treasure maps were similar to those who sold antiques and Buddha statues at a temple’s entrance. Most people knew that they were fake, but they still held onto the hope that they could be lucky.

“Unfortunately, we aren’t locals. It’s useless even if we kowtow. Otherwise, it wouldn’t be bad to get a treasure map to try our luck,” An Sheng said.

“That might not be the case. Although we aren’t locals, it’s very likely that Earth Lord will give us a treasure map if he appreciates our good character,” Zhou Wen said with a smile.

“Lad, you sure are optimistic. Instead of having such unrealistic dreams, why don’t you buy two treasure maps from me to try your luck?” an old man selling treasure maps said with a smile.

“Buying a treasure map from you? We might as well kowtow to Earth Lord.” Zhou Wen shook his head and walked towards the Earth temple.

“Lad, take a look again. Perhaps my treasure map is really more useful than Earth Lord’s?” The elder didn’t give up as he held Zhou Wen back.

Zhou Wen’s expression changed slightly as he looked at the elder.

His reaction was extremely fast. Even a Mythical creature wouldn’t be able to touch Zhou Wen, much less an elder.

The elder’s seemingly casual tug had grabbed his arm, preventing Zhou Wen from reacting. This was definitely abnormal.

However, Zhou Wen didn’t sense anything special about the elder. His ability to sense danger, which he had honed over time, didn’t work.

The more Zhou Wen looked at the elder, the more he felt as though he had seen him somewhere before. Although his looks were different, his eyes were very familiar.

These eyes… These eyes… Jing Daoxian… There’s no mistake… These are Jing Daoxian’s eyes… Zhou Wen nearly cried out.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 771 - Meeting Jing Daoxian Again

Chapter 771: Meeting Jing Daoxian Again

Translator: CKtalon

Zhou Wen seemed to have his hair stand on end as he tried to gather his strength to escape the old man's grasp. An Sheng also realized that something was amiss as he stared intently at the old man, prepared to attack at any moment.

To Zhou Wen's surprise, the elder released his hand and picked up a treasure map in the shape of a wooden plaque. He handed it to Zhou Wen and said with a smile, "Lad, this treasure map is on the house. Dig it up and take a look. If you can dig up a treasure, it won't be too late to buy treasure maps from me."

Zhou Wen stared at the old man and sized him up, but apart from his eyes, there was nothing about the old man that resembled Jing Daoxian. He couldn't even sense the Essence Energy fluctuations and exuberant vitality that a cultivator should have. If the old man hadn't grabbed him, Zhou Wen would have imagined that he was an ordinary person.

"There's no need to stand on ceremony with an old man like me. Dig it up. Who knows, you might be able to dig up an immortal's treasure? However, not everyone can take this immortal's treasure. Without the Lost Immortal art, I'm afraid you won't be able to return." The old man stuffed the treasure map into Zhou Wen's hand.

When Zhou Wen heard that, he felt that the old man in front of him was highly likely Jing Daoxian. Otherwise, why would he say the word "Lost Immortal?"

“Young Master Wen?” An Sheng walked to Zhou Wen’s side, but his eyes were still warily staring at the old man squatting behind the stall.

Zhou Wen originally didn’t want to take the treasure map, but he failed to avoid it. The treasure map was stuffed into his hand as he clenched it. Zhou Wen’s Essence Energy was ready to erupt at any moment.

The old man slowly packed his things and put everything on the stall into a bag. Then, he got up and left. As he walked, he shook his head and sighed. “It’s getting harder and harder to survive in this world.”

“Young Master Wen, do you know that old man?” An Sheng couldn’t help but ask when he saw that Zhou Wen was still staring at the old man’s back despite him having walked half a street.

“I suspect that he’s Jing Daoxian,” Zhou Wen whispered.

An Sheng’s body trembled when he heard that. He said in disbelief, “You know Jing Daoxian?”

“I’ve met him once. Although he looked different back then, I think it should be him.” Zhou Wen was somewhat hesitant, unsure if he should chase after him.

Zhou Wen really wanted to figure out the Lost Immortal Sutra, but the person in front of him was the most legendary devil in the Federation’s history.

Many devils had appeared in the early stages of the Federation and all sorts of devils had appeared later, such as Ják and company. Although they might have killed more people than Jing Daoxian, none of them were as legendary as Jing Daoxian.

Zhou Wen knew very well how terrifying Jing Daoxian was. Lord Alcohol and Xia Jiuhuang were shrewd old men, but they had been toyed by Jing Daoxian.

Even though Zhou Wen had impressive achievements, he didn’t dare underestimate such a person.

Previously, Zhou Wen had secretly investigated Jing Daoxian, but the information he obtained was very limited. All he knew was that Jing Daoxian had been severely injured in a dimensional zone and was nearly crippled. Therefore, the bureau had taken the opportunity to pursue him.

Even so, the Special Inspector Bureau’s pursuit failed. They failed to capture the crippled Jing Daoxian.

Zhou Wen had encountered Jing Daoxian during that period of time and obtained the Lost Immortal Sutra.

Gritting his teeth, Zhou Wen got up and chased after him. Although Jing Daoxian was terrifying, avoiding him wasn’t an option. Some things could only be answered by Jing Daoxian.

An Sheng chased after Zhou Wen, but when they took the turn which the old man had taken, they realized that there was no sign of the old man. It was as though he had vanished into thin air.

Zhou Wen kept using Truth Listener to monitor the old man, but he failed to discover how he had vanished. It was as though he had teleported.

After searching his surroundings and not finding any traces of the old man, Zhou Wen’s heart stirred as he looked at the treasure map in his hand. He saw that the treasure map was a wooden plaque. In front of the wooden plaque was a

simple map, and behind it was a time. It was obvious that it had just been written.

“From the looks of it, it might really be Jing Daoxian. Young Master Wen, are you going?” An Sheng asked as he looked at the time on the treasure map.

“I have some questions that only Jing Daoxian can answer.” Zhou Wen handed the treasure map to An Sheng. “Help me take a look. Where is the location marked on this map?”

“It’s in front of the Earth temple. Converting the time to local common time, it should be 3:30 in the morning,” An Sheng said after looking at it for a while.

“Alright, let’s wait until night,” Zhou Wen said.

“Young Master Wen, find a place to rest first. I’ll make some preparations,” An Sheng said.

Zhou Wen wasn’t in the mood to visit the Earth temple to pay his respects to Earth Lord. He found an inn in town and stayed there, waiting for night to arrive.

An Sheng didn’t return until three in the morning. When he returned, he said to Zhou Wen, “There was too little time. I tried my best to make some preparations. However, if the other party really is Jing Daoxian, my preparations might not be of much use. Young Master, you have to be careful.”

Zhou Wen nodded and didn’t say a word.

Seeing that it was about time, Zhou Wen headed to the Earth temple with An Sheng.

The front of the Earth temple was naturally not as lively as in the day. There was no one around, but at the same spot, the

elder had his stall set up.

“The surveillance Companion Beasts I set up didn’t work. I didn’t even notice when he entered the Earth temple,” An Sheng whispered to Zhou Wen.

“It’s fine.” Zhou Wen shook his head slightly before walking towards the elder.

As he walked towards the elder, Zhou Wen also activated the Slaughterer Life Soul. At the same time, he prepared to summon his Companion Beasts. As long as there was anything amiss, he would immediately attack with all his might.

“You came after all,” the elder said with a smile.

“Since you came looking for me, what’s the point of hiding?” Zhou Wen said as he walked towards the elder.

The elder didn’t comment as though he was admiring a treasure. He sized up Zhou Wen and said, “I originally thought that you would be dead. Even if you didn’t die, you should be a lunatic now. However, not only are you not dead or crazy, you seem to be living very well.”

“Because of the Lost Immortal Sutra?” Zhou Wen asked. This was the problem he wanted to figure out. He didn’t know the origins of the Lost Immortal Sutra.

Now, he was basically certain that the elder in front of him was Jing Daoxian.

“That’s right.” Jing Daoxian nodded and said, “I found you pleasing to the eye back then. I originally wanted to give you the Skyfiend Treatise that I had researched for fun, but to my surprise, you actually dared reject me. No one in this

world can reject me. Even if they do, they will have to pay a price. Therefore, I gave you the Lost Immortal Sutra. In fact, the Lost Immortal Sutra had already changed owners several times before you. Every owner either died or went mad. Even I was tortured by it. If not for this Sutra, I wouldn’t have suffered heavy losses in the dimensional zone.”

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 772 - Your Life Belongs to Me

Chapter 772: Your Life Belongs to Me

Zhou Wen had no intention of interrupting Jing Daoxian as he continued listening.

“Back then, I was heavily injured and most of my Companion Beasts had died. I was also affected by the Lost Immortal Sutra’s powers. If this continued, I might have really been driven mad by the Lost Immortal Sutra. I happened to encounter you back then and you left me in a bad mood. Therefore, I used a method to transfer the Lost Immortal Sutra to you. It could eliminate you and reduce my burden. It was killing two birds with one stone.”

With that said, Jing Daoxian stared at Zhou Wen and asked, “I never expected you to master the Lost Immortal Sutra. There have been many owners of the Lost Immortal Sutra, and although they aren’t all peerless elites, they are all outstanding people with their own amazing traits. However, you managed to master the Lost Immortal Sutra despite so many people not being able to. I really want to know how you are better than them and how you are better than me.”

If an ordinary seventeen-year-old student heard Jing Daoxian’s words, they would definitely be delighted.

Even a devil like Jing Daoxian admitted that he was inferior to him. How glorious was that?

Unfortunately, Zhou Wen didn’t think so. He had witnessed Lord Alcohol’s death and knew that the reason Xia Jiuhuang was so crazy was because of Jing Daoxian.

Zhou Wen suspected that Jing Daoxian had given him the Lost Immortal Sutra for the same reason.

“I don’t think there’s anything special about the Lost Immortal Sutra. I mastered it from simply cultivating it,” Zhou Wen answered ambiguously.

This answer clearly wasn’t enough to satisfy Jing Daoxian. He wasn’t in a rush as he said slowly, “Why don’t we make a deal? Answer one question and I’ll answer one. What do you think?”

“I have no questions for you,” Zhou Wen said.

“Don’t you want to know why the world has become like this? What kind of place is another dimension? How’s your teacher, Wang Mingyuan? Where did the Lost Immortal Sutra come from?” Jing Daoxian offered a few questions that Zhou Wen wanted to know.

“I’ll naturally know the answer to these questions after defeating you.” Zhou Wen suddenly thought of something.

Regardless of whether the Lost Immortal Sutra had been deliberately given to him by Jing Daoxian, he could at least confirm one thing—Jing Daoxian wanted to know the process or results of his cultivation.

Just like Lord Alcohol and Xia Jiuhuang, Jing Daoxian might have treated him as an experimental subject.

Since he was an experimental subject, regardless of whether the experiment succeeded or failed, Jing Daoxian probably wouldn’t want him dead before the experiment ended.

Since Jing Daoxian didn’t wish for him to die, why should he have so many qualms? Zhou Wen also wanted to know how

much strength the legendary devil still had.

Jing Daoxian seemed to see through Zhou Wen’s thoughts as he said indifferently, “Do you think you can be presumptuous in front of me just because I don’t want to kill you?”

“That’s what I think.” Zhou Wen didn’t hide his thoughts.

“Haha, you are right. I really don’t wish to kill you now because you have shown me some interesting possibilities. Compared to killing you, I’m more willing to see the answer.” Unexpectedly, Jing Daoxian had admitted that he wouldn’t kill Zhou Wen.

However, Jing Daoxian changed the topic and said coldly, “Although I won’t kill you, I can lock you up and slowly study you. It’s best you consider carefully before taking action.”

“I’ve thought it through. Before that, I’ll slice you up,” Zhou Wen said as he drew his saber and slashed.

Transcendent Flying Immortal was unbelievably fast, but this wasn’t Zhou Wen’s trump card. At the same time he attacked, the Great Might Vajra Bull and Behemoth appeared beside him. One used the Soul Suppression Bell, while the other used Absolute Strength.

And this was still Zhou Wen’s form of restrainment. The true trump card was in his pupils. The Torch Dragon’s eye mirror lit up as it prepared to activate the Bright Torch Vision World.

“We will meet again. Remember, your life belongs to me.” Jing Daoxian looked at Zhou Wen with a strange look in his eyes as his figure suddenly burrowed underground. Even the things on the ground burrowed underground with him and instantly vanished.

Earth Escape! Zhou Wen frowned slightly as his saber beam slashed the ground, leaving a deep ravine. However, he didn’t see any signs of Jing Daoxian.

Pushing Truth Listener to its limits, he found no sign of Jing Daoxian.

“Young Master Wen, perhaps I can track him. During the day, I’ve already scattered some water mixed with a special scent on the ground. The water has evaporated, but the scent remains in the ground. Jing Daoxian has already been stained with this scent. I can try and see if I can track him,” An Sheng said.

“Then quickly give it a try.” Zhou Wen was overjoyed.

He suspected that Jing Daoxian’s injuries hadn’t fully healed. Perhaps now was a chance.

An Sheng summoned a strange little beast. It looked like a rat, but it was much fatter than a rat. It was as fat as a ball and had no eyes. However, there were many fleshy antennae on its nose.

“Ordinary creatures can’t smell the scent. Only Companion Beasts with an extremely developed sense of smell can detect it.” As An Sheng spoke, he got the Companion Beast to leave the Earth temple and search the nearby area, hoping to find the scent Jing Daoxian had left behind.

However, after searching the entire town and its vicinity, he failed to find anything. It was unknown if Jing Daoxian’s Earth Escape was too powerful, allowing him to escape more than fifty kilometers away, or if he hadn’t touched the lingering scent in the ground.

“As expected of the number one devil in the Federation. It’s no wonder he can still be carefree despite being pursued by the Federation for so long. I’ve made so many preparations ahead of time, but none of them worked. Young Master Wen, you have to be especially careful now that you are targeted by such a person,” An Sheng said with a heavy expression.

Zhou Wen nodded. “I’ll be careful.”

Not daring to stay in the town any longer, Zhou Wen and An Sheng headed straight for Luoyang. They didn’t stop at all.

However, after that incident, Jing Daoxian didn’t appear again. The journey went very smoothly.

After returning to Luoyang, An Sheng’s tense nerves relaxed a little. “Young Master Wen, it’s best you don’t return to school. I’ll arrange a residence for you. It can block any entry via Earth Escape.”

Zhou Wen shook his head and said, “It’s impossible for me to hide forever. Besides, Jing Daoxian might not be able to touch me.”

After rejecting An Sheng’s kind intentions, Zhou Wen returned to school. The antelope and chick returned to the building they were used to living in, appearing very comfortable.

With the antelope and chick watching over him, it wouldn’t be easy for Jing Daoxian to secretly take action.

There were no traces of Jing Daoxian three days after his return to campus. Instead, Li Mobai came looking for him again, hoping that Zhou Wen could make a trip to the South District with him to attempt contracting a Guardian.

“Are you sure that the Guardian is still there?” Zhou Wen asked Li Mobai.

This was because he had always suspected that the Guardian Li Mobai mentioned was Xia Liuchuan’s black jade Guardian.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 773 - Flower River

Chapter 773: Flower River

“Why do you ask?” Li Mobai was an intelligent person. Upon hearing Zhou Wen’s question, he immediately had some ominous thoughts.

“I heard that Dugu Ge, Zhang Chunqiu, and company discovered a Guardian cocoon somewhere in the South District. Furthermore, they have successfully contracted it,” Zhou Wen said half-truthfully.

Li Mobai heaved a sigh of relief when he heard that. “I’m aware of what you just mentioned. The two aren’t in the same place. Up to now, no one has entered the place I discovered. It’s surrounded by extremely dangerous dimensional zones. The most famous dimensional zone is called the Valley of No Return. Even the Dugu family doesn’t dare enter it. Back then, I only managed to see the cocoon of the Guardian by chance. The chances of others seeing it are extremely low.”

To be honest, Zhou Wen was somewhat tempted. There were too few Guardians, and the two Guardians he could come into contact with were just too powerful. There was not much he could do to them.

If there was time for Zhou Wen to slowly develop, it was only a matter of time before he killed them. However, now that Jing Daoxian had come knocking on his door, Zhou Wen felt the pressure.

Just as Xia Jiuhuang had said, if one didn’t enter the Mythical stage, they were ultimately mortal. As their foundation was too weak, they could easily be considered a weakness when facing a Mythical opponent. It was useless even if they had Mythical Companion Beasts.

“According to the agreement, if you can’t contract a Guardian, the Guardian will belong to me, right?” Zhou Wen said to Li Mobai.

“Of course. Happy cooperation.” Li Mobai smiled and extended his hand.

Zhou Wen extended his hand and shook Li Mobai’s hand, having reached an agreement. It was useless to write such an agreement in black and white, so there was no need to sign a contract.

“When can you set off?” Li Mobai asked Zhou Wen.

“Anytime,” Zhou Wen answered.

“Pack up your things. We’ll set off tonight. After we reach the South District, we need to make a trip to Mong Hsat and find a friend surnamed Gu for help. With him leading the way, we can safely reach the Valley of No Return,” Li Mobai said.

“Is there any trouble we can’t resolve on the way?” Zhou Wen asked with a frown.

Li Mobai said, “The South District is very different from the other districts. The other districts mostly respect the big and strong. However, in the South District, there are many miniature and evil dimensional creatures. There are even some places where the small are king. The smaller a dimensional creature is, the greater the destructive power it can cause. Just like the Fairy Undying Gu on the rankings.

It’s only the size of an ant, but its destructive power isn’t weaker than any dimensional creature on the rankings. In the South District, there are many evil and microscopic dimensional creatures. If one isn’t familiar with the local situation, they might not even know how they died. Although I know a little about it, I’m ultimately not a local. It’s much safer having a local guide.”

“Alright.” Zhou Wen nodded and asked, “Do you know that Li Xuan went to the South District?”

“It doesn’t matter where he goes.” Li Mobai left after saying that.

Zhou Wen went back to make preparations and informed his friends that he was heading to the South District.

In the evening, Zhou Wen set off with Li Mobai for Mong Hsat.

Li Mobai brought two others with him. One of them was Butterfly whom Zhou Wen had seen before. The other was a mute. His name was Mute.

The two of them were responsible for Li Mobai’s food and lodging along the way as though they were servants.

Zhou Wen was still wary of Li Mobai. He had his guard up along the way, but nothing happened.

As flights were no longer possible to Mong Hsat, it wasn’t easy to proceed. After the dimensional storms, the journey had become even more difficult.

Thankfully, Mute, who was very familiar with the jungle path, led the way. Along the way, they climbed mountains

and crossed ridges. It was all thanks to him scouting ahead that they were able to avoid most dangers.

Occasionally, they would encounter break-out creatures which were easily dispatched.

Mong Hsat was similar to a lone island on land these days. Too few people could reach this place. Only the nearby natives and people like the Gu family who wanted to develop themselves in Mong Hsat would continue staying here.

On the streets, there were many men and women wearing monk robes. The men’s robes were purple-red, while the women’s were pink.

The locals originally believed in Buddhism. After the dimensional storms, faith became even more important. Be it the indigenous or foreign families, as long as they were people who had settled down in Mong Hsat, they would believe in Buddhism. Otherwise, it would be difficult for them to integrate into the local society.

The friend Li Mobai was looking for was called Gu Shanshui. Although he wasn’t a monk, he was a Buddhist. However, Zhou Wen saw that he was wearing many chains. They didn’t look like something from Mong Hsat. Instead, they looked like the Buddha plaques he had obtained from Xiao Si.

Apart from the Buddha plaques, there were many tattoos on Gu Shanshui’s body. The tattoos were clearly not formed by Companion Beasts, but man-made.

“Li, my friend, I’m afraid there’s no other way to go to the Valley of No Return,” said Gu Shanshui.

“Master Gu, what happened?” Li Mobai knew that something must have happened. Otherwise, with Gu Shanshui’s personality, as long as he agreed, no matter how dangerous the journey to the Valley of No Return was, he would still make the trip.

“There’s only one way to go to the Valley of No Return—Flower River. However, there’s a large-scale break-out there. There have already been many people who wished to travel between Mong Hsat and Chiang Rai using the Flower River. After entering the Flower River, they were not seen again. There’s no lack of Epic experts among them.” Gu Shanshui explained the situation in detail.

The Flower River wasn’t actually a real river. Instead, after the dimensional storms, a type of flower appeared in a large area between Chiang Rai and Mong Hsat. The flower grew in large numbers, forming an endless river, so it was called Flower River by the locals.

Due to the dimensional zones, the transportation between Mong Hsat and Chiang Rai was basically cut off. Only by walking through the Flower River could one avoid all the dimensional zones.

However, in the past half a month, there had been an anomaly in Flower River. Many people who entered the Flower River vanished. No one dared to enter Flower River again.

Previously, an Epic expert from the Gu family had brought people into the Flower River, but there was no news of them. The people sent by the Gu family to investigate had gone missing, but they failed to find anything.

“Do we have to take the Flower River to go to the Valley of No Return?” Li Mobai asked after some thought.

“There’s a stretch that requires us to use the Flower River. We have to travel at least 25 kilometers in the Flower River,” said Gu Shanshui.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 774 - Jellyfish Fungus

Chapter 774: Jellyfish Fungus

Translator: CKtalon

Zhou Wen and Li Mobai looked at each other. If they wanted to go to the Valley of No Return, they had to traverse the Flower River. However, before figuring out the Flower River's situation, the chances of dying if they entered rashly were too high.

"Master Gu, can you take us to the Flower River's banks to take a look?" Li Mobai asked.

"No problem, but please forgive me. I can't take you into the Flower River." Gu Shanshui made himself clear. Even if they reached the Flower River, he definitely wouldn't enter.

Li Mobai agreed to only get him to take them to the Flower River's banks. He wanted to have a look at the Flower River first.

Zhou Wen also wanted to take a look at the Flower River's situation. It hadn't been easy for him to make this trip, so he wasn't willing to return empty-handed.

Gu Shanshui led them to the Flower River. Along the way, they walked through forest trails. There were no roads at all. Gu Shanshui led two young adults from the Gu family ahead to open up a path while Zhou Wen and Li Mobai followed behind.

Zhou Wen had been using Truth Listener's ability to monitor everything nearby. Furthermore, he made Tai Sui use its mimicking ability to transform into the chick.

After Tai Sui transformed, it looked identical to the chick, but it was white. It stood on Zhou Wen’s shoulder just like the chick.

Zhou Wen was afraid that the antelope would cause trouble again if it came out. Therefore, he didn’t bring it out this time. He had already contacted An Sheng to get someone to deliver food to it to prevent it from causing trouble in school.

According to Worm Dugu, the chick should have the phoenix bloodline. It had a very good restraining effect on Gu worms. Tai Sui also had a strong restraining effect on microscopic dimensional creatures. This was why Zhou Wen had dared to come to the South District.

“Put on your gas masks.” Gu Shanshui stopped and handed them gas masks.

Zhou Wen and company put on the gas masks. Gu Shanshui looked at the two birds on Zhou Wen’s shoulder and said, “Put away your Companion Beasts.”

Zhou Wen placed them in his backpack instead of unsummoning them. Firstly, the chick wasn’t a Companion Beast which he could unsummon. Secondly, Tai Sui needed to be outside to ensure that Zhou Wen wouldn’t be attacked by microscopic Companion Beasts, so it naturally couldn’t be unsummoned.

Gu Shanshui naturally saw this scene, but he didn’t say a word. Instead, the two youths from the Gu family curled their lips as though they viewed Zhou Wen’s actions in contempt, but they didn’t say a word either.

Everyone continued walking forward. Zhou Wen soon realized why Gu Shanshui wanted them to wear gas masks.

There were many fungi here, and there were so many floating spores everywhere that it appeared like fog.

These bacteria were originally creatures from Earth. They had mutated due to the dimensional storms. Although they hadn’t reached the level of dimensional creatures, the spores they emitted would cause great damage to the human body if they entered the respiratory tract. The main problem was that it was difficult to treat them when they were inside the body.

Tai Sui naturally wasn’t afraid of these spores. It didn’t have much appetite for them either. Perhaps the energy of these spores was so low that they didn’t catch Tai Sui’s eye.

The chick wasn’t afraid of these spores either. Any foreign microscopic organism that entered its body would be refined by the phoenix flames in its body. Otherwise, the phoenix wouldn’t be the nemesis of Gu.

Zhou Wen got the two of them to stay in his backpack and not come out. As the group walked through the forest, their bodies were quickly covered in a layer of dust. They were actually a large number of spores.

Various fungi could be seen everywhere on the ground and withered trees. Many of the trees here had already withered and turned into a paradise for fungi growth.

Thankfully, the spores here were somewhat different from the parasitic spores in Dragon Gate Grotto. The parasitic spores were independent dimensional creatures, and these spores were only a part of a parent body.

Even so, if an unprepared person entered this area and inhaled large amounts of spores, their lungs and respiratory system would be doomed.

Suddenly, Zhou Wen realized that there was a corpse on the ground in front of him. From the looks of it, it wasn’t a local. His corpse had already rotted and there was a strange fungi creature growing on it.

Growing on the corpse was something that looked like an egg-sized jellyfish. It was translucent and colorless. Although the mushroom looked beautiful, it made one’s hair stand on end.

“Don’t move. Gu Lou, go take a look,” Gu Shanshui said to one of the young men.

The young man responded and summoned a palm-sized black scorpion Companion Beast. He made it slowly approach the corpse and crawl to the jellyfish-like mushroom.

Gu Lou got Gu Shanshui’s affirmative node before ordering the black scorpion to stab the jellyfish-like mushroom with its tail.

Bam!

After the mushroom was pricked, it exploded like a ball filled with water. However, what exploded wasn’t water, but countless transparent spores.

“Retreat!” Gu Shanshui grabbed Gu Lou and another young man named Gu He and threw them behind him. He took a step forward and spat out flames at the spores.

When the flames encountered the spores, they expanded as though they had encountered gasoline. Most of the spores were immediately destroyed, but a few spores still spread out.

Gu Lou and Gu He also used fire-elemental Companion Beasts to burn the spores that escaped their net.

However, the black scorpion Companion Beast had already been invaded by spores. It ignored Gu Lou's orders and crawled crazily towards the other jellyfish mushrooms, hoping to prick them.

Gu Shanshui spewed out flames, incinerating the corpse along with the scorpion Companion Beast. The jellyfish mushrooms exploded in the flames, along with the spores.

After confirming that none had escaped, Gu Shanshui said to Li Mobai with a heavy expression, "Li, there's something amiss. That person clearly died from being infected with the spores of fungi dimensional creatures. There must be a parent of the fungi dimensional creatures nearby. Furthermore, its level isn't low. It's at least at the Epic stage. This has never been discovered in the past. Are you still going to the Flower River?"

Li Mobai looked at Zhou Wen and asked, "What do you think?"

"Let's continue." Zhou Wen had been observing the jellyfish mushrooms and spores on the corpse. These things weren't much of a threat to him.

Even if Tai Sui didn't take action, he could deal with them himself. There was naturally no need for him to retreat.

"Master Gu, please continue leading the way. If you feel that you can't continue, please tell me ahead of time," Li Mobai said to Gu Shanshui.

"Alright." Master Gu didn't say anything else and continued leading Gu Lou and Gu He.

Their most commonly used means available to them was a fire-elemental Companion Beast, but this fire-elemental Companion Beast was very strange. The flames it spewed out were a bluish-white color that had a strong restraining effect on fungi and poisonous insects.

After walking for a distance, Zhou Wen suddenly said, “Wait!” This was because he had already discovered with Truth Listener that there were many corpses ahead. Each corpse was covered in jellyfish mushrooms.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 775 - The Chick Spews Fire

Chapter 775: The Chick Spews Fire

Translator: CKtalon

“Zhou Wen, what did you discover?” The people in front stopped and Li Mobai looked at Zhou Wen.

“There’s something amiss up ahead,” Zhou Wen said as he pointed ahead.

Gu Shanshui looked ahead, but he didn’t seem to notice anything. However, he quickly summoned a Companion Beast. The Companion Beast transformed into a mirror eye that appeared in his left eye, making it look like his left eye was completely occupied by the iris.

Gu Shanshui used his left eye to look ahead for a while before saying, “There’s indeed a problem ahead. Stay here and don’t move. I’ll go take a look.”

As Gu Shanshui spoke, he dived forward. Before long, he returned and said to Li Mobai, “Zhou is right. There’s indeed something wrong ahead. There are many corpses with jellyfish fungi growing on them. There are too many of them. We can’t deal with them.”

Butterfly said, “We also have fire-elemental Companion Beasts. We can help you clean them up.”

Gu Shanshui shook his head and said, “You must not use fire-elemental Companion Beasts here. Otherwise, there might be trouble. Although the fire-elemental Companion Beasts we use aren’t of a high level, their fire-elemental attributes are very special. It’s called Corpse fire. It’s a type

of Yin fire that is most effective against parasitic fungi on rotting corpses.”

“Master Gu, is there any other way?” Li Mobai asked.

“We can only take a detour. If we take a detour, it will take us an additional 30 to 40 kilometers. Furthermore, we might have to pass through a dimensional zone known as the Spirit Absorption Valley. Our speed won’t be fast. We will have to walk for at least ten hours more than we expected. Furthermore, the Spirit Absorption Valley is somewhat dangerous. If we are unlucky, we might have to retreat again,” said Gu Shanshui after some calculations.

“Is there no other way? Spirit Absorption Valley is too dangerous. Furthermore, we might not be able to reach it.” Li Mobai had heard of the famous Spirit Absorption Valley and didn’t wish to go there.

“If we don’t take a detour, we must get rid of the jellyfish fungi. However, we can only slowly deal with them from the periphery. It will probably take two days to clean up all the jellyfish fungi along the way. Furthermore, we don’t know if there are any more,” Gu Shanshui said.

Li Mobai thought for a moment and said, “Then let’s clean up the jellyfish fungi. It’s better not to go to the Spirit Absorption Valley.”

“I have a fire-elemental pet here. Master Gu, can you help me see if it can be of any help?” Zhou Wen released the chick from his backpack.

After Tai Sui advanced to the Mythical stage, it didn’t seem to have much appetite for ordinary microbes. As for these jellyfish fungi, they were only grown from the spores emitted

from the parent fungus’ body and not dimensional creatures’ bodies. Tai Sui was even less interested.

Tai Sui: Mythical (Evolvable)

Life Providence: Clashing Tai Sui

Life Soul: Twelve Tai Sui Gods

Wheel of Destiny: Longevity Seed

Strength: 81

Speed: 81

Constitution: 81

Essence Energy: 81

Talent Skill: Earth Escape

Companion Form: Mimicry

Zhou Wen had tried Tai Sui’s Wheel of Destiny, but he hadn’t discovered any special effects as though it was useless. Tai Sui’s body didn’t undergo any changes, leaving Zhou Wen depressed.

“Didn’t Master Gu say that ordinary fire-elemental creatures can’t be used here? Didn’t you hear him just now?” Gu Lou said unhappily.

Zhou Wen hadn’t listened to Gu Shanshui’s words to store the chick and Tai Sui away. From the looks of it, he didn’t trust them. This made Gu Lou have a bad impression of Zhou Wen.

Now that Zhou Wen had taken out a fire-elemental pet, Gu Lou felt even more irked.

However, Gu Shanshui didn’t share the same thoughts. Zhou Wen had discovered the jellyfish fungi ahead of time, making him feel that this young man wasn’t simple.

Furthermore, people like Li Mobai seemed to respect Zhou Wen, making Gu Shanshui even more afraid of underestimating him.

Gu Shanshui stopped Gu Lou and looked at the chick. “Does your pet’s flame belong to the Yin fire type?”

“I’m not too sure about that, but its flames can be released and retracted freely. It should be of some use,” Zhou Wen said.

“What’s the point of releasing and retracting freely? Whose Companion Beast’s ability can’t do that? Don’t you have any common sense? There are a lot of spores here. When gathered together, they are like powder. Using ordinary flames can easily trigger a dust explosion. Even without the dust explosion, igniting a large area of spores will trigger a forest fire. It’s very easy to alarm the dimensional creatures in the forest…” said Gu Lou.

“Gu Lou, don’t be rude to guests.” Gu Shanshui frowned.

Upon hearing Gu Shanshui’s words, Gu Lou could only shut up and not say another word. However, from his expression, it was obvious that he wasn’t convinced.

Gu Shanshui bowed at Zhou Wen and said, “Zhou, Gu Lou is young and insensible. Please don’t take his rude words to heart. However, what he said is right. Typical flames will indeed cause many problems. If you are confident, you can

get your pet to give it a try. If you aren’t confident, let us be in charge of cleaning up. It doesn’t matter if we spend more time.”

“Master Gu, I know a little about the taboos of using flames. Didn’t I just say that my pet can control its flames without triggering an explosion or fire?” Zhou Wen had seen the chick’s flames before, so he naturally knew that it had such an ability.

“Then let’s give it a try. Let it spew out some flames,” said Gu Shanshui.

Zhou Wen gestured for the chick to spew out its flames, but the chick’s temper wasn’t as good as Zhou Wen’s. Its intelligence wasn’t inferior to humans. Although it didn’t speak the human language, it could understand them.

Gu Lou’s words displeased it. Just as Zhou Wen gestured, the chick flapped its wings and didn’t spew out any flames for Gu Shanshui to verify. It flew straight to the corpses and spat out a swath of golden flames.

“Not good!” Gu Shanshui, Gu Lou, and Gu He were all shocked.

There were nearly a hundred corpses there. Countless jellyfish fungi of various sizes grew on them. Once they were burned by the flames, large numbers of jellyfish fungi would explode. Even if they didn’t produce dust explosions, large numbers of spores would spread out.

However, what happened next left them stunned.

The chick’s golden flames landed on the corpses, igniting the corpses along with the jellyfish fungi. Strangely, the

jellyfish fungi didn’t explode when they were burned. They quickly turned to ashes amidst the golden flames.

Nearly a hundred corpses, along with the jellyfish fungi on them, were instantly reduced to ashes. Nothing was left behind.

Furthermore, the golden flames only burned the corpses and jellyfish fungi. They didn’t affect the nearby creatures at all. Even the other spores in the air weren’t ignited.

Gu Lou and Gu He were stunned. Even the Corpse fire they used didn’t have such a good effect, much less be capable of removing all the jellyfish fungi and corpses so quickly.

Gu Shanshui stared at the chick as his expression turned odd. After staring at it for a while, he suddenly turned to Zhou Wen and bowed. “Mr. Zhou, if I’m willing to send you through the Flower River to enter the Valley of No Return, can you do me a favor?”

Gu Lou and Gu He were alarmed. The foreigners didn’t know the bow that Gu Shanshui was giving, but they knew very well that it was a very high-level etiquette. Typically, such a bow would only be used for accomplished monks with great merit.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 776 - Flower of Life

Chapter 776: Flower of Life

Li Mobai and company looked at Gu Shanshui in a puzzled manner. They didn't know why he had suddenly changed his mind and was willing to take the huge risk to help them cross the Flower River.

"I wonder how I can help you, Master Gu?" Zhou Wen didn't agree easily. Gu Shanshui had clearly noticed something from the chick.

Gu Shanshui said, "To be honest, our Gu family is also good at nurturing Gu and taming them. I discovered a Mythical dimensional creature somewhere and wanted to tame it into a Gu, but I failed because it was too powerful. If you are willing to help me, Mr. Zhou, you will definitely be able to subdue it."

As Gu Shanshui spoke, he glanced at the chick. Clearly, his real goal was to seek the help of the chick.

"If it's within our abilities, it's only right for us to help each other. However, we are in a rush to head to the Valley of No Return. I'm afraid…"

Before Zhou Wen could finish his sentence, Gu Shanshui said, "Mr. Zhou, don't worry. I'll help you head to the Valley of No Return first. It won't be too late for you to help me after we return."

"Master Gu, I still have to ask what kind of Mythical creature you want to tame. What kind of abilities does it have? What

do you want me to do?” Zhou Wen asked seriously.

Zhou Wen wasn’t willing to go back on an agreement, so he had to ask first.

“Mr. Zhou, may I have a word with you in private?” Gu Shanshui clearly didn’t want others to know about the dimensional creature.

Zhou Wen and Gu Shanshui went to the side before Gu Shanshui said, “The dimensional creature I want to tame is a Corpse Silkworm. It’s in an extreme Yin dimensional zone. It’s extremely dangerous for ordinary people, but Mr. Zhou, you have a Phoenix divine bird. It won’t be difficult for it to subdue the Corpse Silkworm.”

“I can agree to help, but I am only able to do my best when the time comes. I can’t guarantee that it will succeed.” After all, Zhou Wen had never seen the Corpse Silkworm before. He didn’t know how powerful it was, so he was being very conservative.

“That’s good enough.” Gu Shanshui was very open-minded.

After the two of them finished their discussion, they walked back. The few of them set off again. Gu Shanshui led Gu Lou and Gu He to open up the path ahead.

Along the way, they discovered some corpses with jellyfish fungi. Gu Shanshui’s expression turned solemn.

On the way, Gu Lou and Gu He secretly sized up the chick from time to time. Even Li Mobai and company took a few more glances at it. Clearly, they knew that the actions Gu Shanshui had taken had something to do with the chick.

The chick stood on Zhou Wen’s shoulder and looked around smugly.

Zhou Wen kept using Truth Listener to observe his surroundings, hoping to find the parent body of the jellyfish fungi. However, he didn’t find the mother. All he saw were the parasitized corpses.

Suddenly, Tai Sui emerged from his backpack. It flapped its wings and flew towards the foliage nearby.

“What happened?” Li Mobai and company looked at Zhou Wen.

“It’s fine. My Companion Beast has been in my backpack for too long. It wants to take a walk,” Zhou Wen said casually.

He didn’t wish to be perfunctory, but even he didn’t know what Tai Sui wanted to do. There was no way to explain it clearly.

Zhou Wen kept using Truth Listener to observe the direction Tai Sui had flown in, but there was nothing there.

Tai Sui flew nearly a kilometer before diving into the ground and disappearing.

Tai Sui knew Earth Escape, so Zhou Wen couldn’t hear where it went. After a while, he saw Tai Sui burrow out of the ground and quickly fly back.

However, its stomach was clearly bulging. Zhou Wen did not know what it had eaten.

Everyone set off again when they saw Zhou Wen’s Companion Beast return.

On the way, although they encountered some corpses, they didn’t find any jellyfish fungi on them. When Zhou Wen saw this, he guessed that Tai Sui had burrowed into the ground and eaten the jellyfish fungi’s parent body.

Zhou Wen felt a little regretful. He didn’t even get to see what the parent body looked like before it was eaten by Tai Sui.

Without the interference of the jellyfish fungi, everyone moved much faster. Zhou Wen had gained some knowledge. Many of the strange creatures here were things he had never seen or heard of before.

Thankfully, with Gu Shanshui and company leading the way, they avoided the dimensional zones. Otherwise, if they were to enter a dimensional zone, there was no knowing how many terrifying unknown creatures they would encounter.

Zhou Wen saw a sea of flowers in the distance. The white petals and red stamens looked like a white river speckled by blood from afar.

“That’s the Flower River,” said Gu Shanshui as he pointed at the winding river-like flowers in the distance.

Everyone’s eyes were already focused on the Flower River. Zhou Wen was also using Truth Listener to search the Flower River, but apart from the flowers, there were no living creatures.

The locals called these flowers the Flower of Life. Wherever the Flower of Life appeared, there was no space for other creatures to live. Even weeds wouldn’t grow there.

In the past, it was very safe for humans to enter the Flower River. As there were no other creatures in there, much less

dimensional creatures, the Flower River became an important route that connected nearby cities.

However, since a couple of weeks ago, none of the people who entered the Flower River had come out alive. They had all gone missing, and this route had been severed.

Zhou Wen carefully sized up the Flowers of Life. The flowers weren't big and looked somewhat similar to the peach blossoms. They were beautiful.

"These Flowers of Life don't look like dimensional creatures," Li Mobai said as he sized up the distant Flowers of Life.

Gu Shanshui nodded and said, "The Flowers of Life existed before the dimensional storms. It's a type of poisonous flower. After the dimensional storms, the poisonous flower mutated. Furthermore, the numbers increased, forming Flower River. However, for some reason, the mutated Flowers of Life don't have any poison. Many people have experimented with the Flower of Life. It no longer contains any poison. Even if it's eaten, it won't cause any harm to humans. However, it might be different now. Everyone, please wait a moment. I need to do some experiments."

Zhou Wen and company stopped and waited for Gu Shanshui to carry out the experiments. As no one knew what the danger in Flower River was, they could only start by analyzing the Flowers of Life.

Unlike what Zhou Wen had imagined, Gu Shanshui opened a bamboo tube and released a worm that looked like a silkworm. It was fair and plump. The worm crawled towards the Flower River and first nibbled at the Flower of Life's leaves and roots before chewing on the flower. It didn't seem to have any problems.

“This is White Silkworm. It’s very sensitive to poison. If it absorbs poison, its body will show different colors,” Gu Shanshui explained.

“Now that White Silkworm hasn’t changed color, does that mean that the Flower of Life remains non poisonous?” Butterfly asked curiously.

Just as she said that, she suddenly saw the white silkworm straighten its body and fall from the flower. It died, but its body remained white without any changes.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 777 - Entering the Flower River

Chapter 777: Entering the Flower River

Translator: CKtalon

“Master Gu, what’s the situation now?” Li Mobai asked Gu Shanshui.

Gu Shanshui didn’t answer. All he did was summon a butterfly Companion Beast and bring back White Silkworm’s corpse.

Then, Gu Shanshui cut off a portion of White Silkworm’s corpse and fed it to another spider. The spider was fine after eating the silkworm’s corpse.

Gu Shanshui picked out a strange Buddha plaque from his various Buddha plaques. It looked like a transparent glass bottle with yellow liquid inside. Inside the liquid was a baby-like figurine.

Gu Shanshui opened the glass bottle and poured some yellow liquid on the remaining White Silkworm corpse. When the liquid touched White Silkworm’s corpse, it immediately seeped in.

Gu Shanshui held the Buddha plaque and muttered something as he injected his Essence Energy into it.

However, after a while, there was nothing from White Silkworm’s corpse.

Gu Shanshui put away his Buddha plaque and looked at the spider that had eaten a portion of the white silkworm’s corpse. He said with a heavy expression, “There’s no poison

in White Silkworm’s corpse. It didn’t die from poison. I tried using Spirit Control to condense the remnant spiritual consciousness left in the white silkworm, but I failed.”

When Li Mobai heard this, he understood what Gu Shanshui meant. “In other words, the Flower of Life isn’t poisonous. Did White Silkworm die because it lost its soul?”

“That’s probably the case. However, spiritual consciousness isn’t completely equivalent to a soul,” said Gu Shanshui.

“Can you find out what sucked White Silkworm’s spiritual consciousness?” Li Mobai asked.

“No other creatures have been discovered. The greatest possibility is that the Flowers of Life have sucked away its spiritual consciousness. However, this is only a guess,” Gu Shanshui said.

This made Li Mobai and Zhou Wen’s hearts sink. If the Flowers of Life were really up to no good, it would be very dangerous for them to cross the Flower River. If they weren’t careful, their spiritual consciousness might be sucked away.

“This seems to be similar to the Spirit Absorbing Valley’s Spirit Absorbing Worms. Could they be related?” Li Mobai asked.

“I’m not sure yet. I need to further study it.” Gu Shanshui summoned many avian Companion Beasts and made them fly across the Flower River and into the distance.

The Companion Beasts flew over the Flower River a few times without any problems. This made Zhou Wen and company feel better.

If they could cross the Flower River by flying, it could save them a lot of trouble.

After unsummoning his Companion Beasts, Gu Shanshui got Gu Lou and Gu He to open the bamboo cages on their backs. Inside the bamboo cages was a hive with countless wasps entering and exiting.

Zhou Wen sized up the hive curiously. He hadn’t noticed it before, but he never expected Gu Lou and Gu He to be carrying such an item.

The wasps inside were clearly not Companion Beasts, nor could they be considered dimensional creatures. They were likely mutated wasps from Earth.

Driven by Gu Lou and Gu He, the wasps flew out of the hive and into the sky above the Flower River. However, not long after they flew, they fell from the sky as though they were drunk and fell into the flowers.

None of the wasps survived; all of them fell into the flower field.

Everyone’s hearts were covered in a shadow. The Companion Beasts were fine, but the wasps died. It was likely that people would end up like the wasps if they entered.

Gu Shanshui did some more experiments. He had many strange things on him that dazzled the eyes.

After Gu Shanshui stopped, Li Mobai asked, “Master Gu, is there a way to cross the Flower River?”

“There’s a way, but we can only prevent our spiritual consciousness from being sucked away. We don’t know if

there are other dangers inside," Gu Shanshui said after some thought.

"We've already come this far. There's no reason to return," Li Mobai said.

Gu Shanshui nodded and took out a few Buddha plaques from his pocket and handed them to Zhou Wen. "Hang these Buddha plaques around your necks. They will naturally protect you from having your spiritual consciousness sucked away. However, there are a few taboos that you need to abide by. Firstly, don't take them off casually after wearing them. I'll help you take them off when we are in the clear. Secondly, you need to drip a drop of blood on the Buddha plaque every day. Thirdly, you can't eat meat. You have to abide by these three rules or you will be in trouble."

After Li Mobai received the Buddha plaque, he put it around his neck. Then, he pricked his finger and dripped a drop of blood onto it.

Strangely enough, the drop of blood instantly seeped into the Buddha plaque.

"What Companion Beast is sealed in this Buddha plaque?" Zhou Wen held the Buddha plaque and asked curiously.

This Buddha plaque was very similar to the one used by Gu Shanshui. It was split into three levels. One layer was transparent crystal, while the second layer was yellow liquid. Right in the middle was a black baby figurine.

"The Buddha plaques that seals Companion Beasts are now called Orthodox Buddha Plaques. I made this myself. What's sealed inside isn't a Companion Beast, but a Gu. Although it's a little odd, as long as you abide by the rules, there won't be any problems. Remember, you have to abide by the

rules. Otherwise, you will be in big trouble," Gu Shanshui warned them repeatedly.

Li Mobai said, "Master Gu's family used to rear Gu. Later, the Gu family moved to the vicinity of Chiang Rai and learned the local techniques. They have a deep understanding of Buddha plaques and Kuman Thong. Now that they have formed their own style, there aren't many people in Chiang Rai who can compare to Master Gu."

Zhou Wen followed Gu Shanshui's instructions and fed a drop of blood to the Buddha plaque before hanging it around his neck.

Everyone hung the Buddha plaques around their necks and entered the Flower River under the guidance of Gu Shanshui.

As Gu Shanshui had said, with the Buddha plaques, they didn't suffer the problem of having their spiritual consciousness absorbed. The group traversed the Flower River and saw nothing but a sea of flowers. Although they looked beautiful, they also exuded a sense of loneliness.

Zhou Wen originally wanted to get Gu Shanshui to help him see what use the Buddha plaques he had obtained from Xiao Si were, but after some thought, he decided against it. This place wasn't far from Chiang Rai. If the Xiao family knew that Xiao Si's Buddha plaques had landed in his hands, it would inevitably cause trouble.

The sky gradually darkened as the moon rose into the sky.

Under the moonlight, the Flower River seemed to be covered in a mysterious veil. It looked beautiful and terrifying.

“Ah!” Gu Lou suddenly let out a tragic cry as he fell into the bushes. His eyes turned white as his body convulsed violently. White foam seeped out of his mouth as though he had epilepsy.

Everyone was alarmed. Gu Shanshui reacted the fastest. He grabbed Gu Lou’s mouth and forced it open. Then, he took out a small bottle and poured its contents into Gu Lou’s mouth.

Zhou Wen originally imagined that there was medicine in the bottle, but to his surprise, he saw a centipede-like bug crawl out of the bottle and into Gu Lou’s mouth.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 778 - Nether Butterfly

Chapter 778: Nether Butterfly

Gu Lou’s abdomen swelled up as he rolled over and vomited.

Zhou Wen saw that Gu Lou had vomited quite a number of white objects. A careful look made him almost vomit as well. Gu Lou had vomited out maggots that squirmed on the ground.

Gu Lou kept vomiting more and more maggots. The few of them felt their scalps tingle, worried that they would end up like Gu Lou.

After vomiting for a while, Gu Lou spat out the centipede-like worm as well. His swollen abdomen shrank and he looked much better. His face remained ghastly pale.

“Master Gu, what’s wrong with Gu Lou?” Li Mobai asked.

They had paid attention to their surroundings just now and hadn’t discovered any problems. The sudden incident with Gu Lou made them equally uneasy.

“Don’t worry. It’s not a problem with the Flowers of Life. He was poisoned by a Gu and I killed it.” Gu Shanshui extended his hand and the centipede-like bug flew into his hand. Something dropped from its claws.

It was a worm the size of a rice grain. Ordinary people couldn’t tell that it was a worm.

“This is a relatively common Rice Gu. Although it’s only at the Legendary stage, it’s easy to mistakenly eat it when mixed with rice grains. After entering the body, it can quickly reproduce and destroy the body from the inside. It’s very difficult for outsiders to understand.”

Gu Shanshui paused for a moment before continuing, “The Rice Gu isn’t fast, and its offensive strength isn’t very strong. It’s very difficult for it to enter the body directly. It would have been mixed into the bamboo rice that Gu Lou brought. It was only after he ate that the Rice Gu invaded his body.”

With that said, Gu Shanshui got Gu Lou and Gu He to check the things they had brought. Indeed, in their bamboo rice, they found some Rice Gu. They also found a Gu that was thinner than a strand of hair in the kettle.

Gu Shanshui told them that it was also a Legendary Gu named Bone Drilling Worm. It could easily take a person’s life when it invaded their bodies. It burrowed into bone cavities and reproduced in large numbers. It would gnaw on the bones until all the bones were eaten.

Zhou Wen heaved a sigh of relief. The few of them hadn’t eaten the bamboo rice or drank any water. Now, they had even less desire for eating or drinking.

The few of them handed their things to Gu Shanshui for inspection. Thankfully, their food and water were fine.

“From the looks of it, someone did this before we set off. Master Gu, do you know who did it?” Li Mobai asked.

Gu Shanshui shook his head and said, “Members of our Gu family probably wouldn’t do such a thing because they know that these Gu won’t succeed against me.”

Li Mobai fell into deep thought. If it wasn’t someone from the Gu family, it was possible that it wasn’t targeted at Gu Shanshui and company. There were a myriad of possibilities, making it difficult to guess.

“Master Gu, is there any way to guard against these Gu?” Butterfly asked.

After all, she was a woman. She was extremely disgusted when she saw Gu Lou vomiting maggots. She would rather die than vomit.

“There are countless Gu in the South District. It’s easy to defend against one or a few, but to defend against all of them, one can only rely on one’s experience and judgment. However, if you have a legendary divine item that can restrain all Gu, then no Gu will dare approach you.” As Gu Shanshui spoke, he glanced at the chick on Zhou Wen’s shoulder.

“What kind of divine item is that?” Butterfly asked.

“The most famous one is the Mythical Ice Silkworm Gu. If you have an Ice Silkworm Gu with you, basically no Gu will dare approach you. Even if they dare approach you, they will be discovered by the Ice Silkworm Gu and be directly killed. Most Mythical Gu have similar effects, but that’s provided that you can tame them,” Gu Shanshui said.

“Can’t we just kill it and have it drop a Companion Beast?” Butterfly said.

“It works for some, but not all,” Gu Shanshui said ambiguously.

“Why?” Butterfly was puzzled.

“This is because living Gu have experienced many battles. They have very strong instincts, experience, and a certain level of intelligence. They also have territorial awareness. However, when it comes to Companion Beasts, their intelligence might not necessarily be up to standard. They also don’t have combat experience or territorial awareness. Most of them need their owners to control them in order to unleash their might. They are much weaker when it comes to taking precautions. Furthermore, Mythical Gu might not drop Companion Beasts. The chances of taming them are higher,” said Gu Shanshui.

“Master Gu, do you have a Mythical Gu on you? Let it out for us to broaden our horizons,” Butterfly said.

“If I had one, I wouldn’t need to request Mr. Zhou to help me capture the Corpse Bug. There are many people in the South District who rear Gu, but there are very few who have Mythical Gu. Furthermore, most of them should be in the Dugu family.” Gu Shanshui seemed to be in a good mood as he continued, “If Mr. Zhou can help me catch the Corpse Bug this time, I will have a Mythical Gu. In the future, the Gu family will be considered a top faction in the South District.”

They continued after Gu Shanshui checked everyone’s belongings and didn’t find any more Gu.

The Flower River under the moon was so beautiful that it made one’s heart tremble. A breeze blew and the flowers swayed like ripples in a river.

Gu Shanshui sniffed hard and suddenly stopped. He made a gesture for everyone to stop before looking at the distant Flower River.

Zhou Wen and company stopped and looked in the direction of his gaze. They saw a huge sea of flowers ahead, but they

didn’t discover anything.

However, the wind became stronger. Not long after, they saw some lights dancing above the distant Flower River.

Zhou Wen’s Truth Listener was extremely powerful, so he quickly saw what it was.

It wasn’t a light at all, but a crystal-like butterfly. The butterfly’s body was transparent, and there were many patterns on its wings. The patterns emitted an icy-blue cold glow, making it look even more dazzling.

When the icy-blue butterfly flapped its wings, it triggered a strong wind that caused ripples through the Flower River.

“That’s… Nether Butterfly…” When Gu Lou saw that it was a butterfly, his originally pale face drained of whatever color it had.

Gu He wasn’t any better. His expression was ugly.

“No wonder none of the people who entered the Flower River survived. There’s actually a Nether Butterfly here…” Gu Shanshui said with a heavy expression.

Although Zhou Wen didn’t know what the Nether Butterfly was, he could tell from its Essence Energy fluctuations that it was definitely a Mythical dimensional creature.

“The legendary netherworld envoy, the Nether Butterfly that guides souls into the Underworld?” Li Mobai had clearly heard of the Nether Butterfly as he stared at the butterfly and frowned.

Gu Shanshui whispered, “In the past, I’ve only heard of people encountering the Nether Butterfly. However, it’s in a

mysterious dimensional zone that humans are almost unable to reach. I never expected Flower River to have a Nether Butterfly. We sure are down on our luck.”

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 779 - Evolution Again

Chapter 779: Evolution Again

Translator: CKtalon

The Nether Butterfly flew over. Large numbers of Flowers of Life produced specks of light that gathered on the Nether Butterfly’s body.

Soon, the entire Flower River seemed to become a fluorescent river. Fluorescence was rising from every corner.

Zhou Wen and company were already retreating, but their bodies underwent the same process as the Flowers of Life. They emitted specks of light, and every bit of light emitted from their bodies weakened their minds. They felt exhausted and wanted to fall to the ground to sleep.

They tried stopping the radiance from flowing from their bodies, but to no avail.

“Quick, let’s go. We can’t stop. If we stop, death awaits us.” Gu Shanshui led the way as he ran through the Flower River. Some of the Buddha plaques on his body shimmered with a strange light, causing him to emit radiance at a much slower pace. However, it only slowed down. He didn’t stop the radiance from emitting.

Bam! Bam!

The Buddha plaques on Zhou Wen and company exploded as yellow liquid splattered out. The baby figurine shattered as it transformed into specks of light that scattered out.

Many of the Buddha plaques on Gu Shanshui’s body exploded as well. Zhou Wen summoned the Golden Overlord

Sword and slashed at the Nether Butterfly.

The Nether Butterfly’s flying speed was extremely fast. Even if Zhou Wen could escape, the others definitely couldn’t.

However, when the Golden Sword Aura slashed at the Nether Butterfly, it penetrated its transparent body without causing any damage.

“The Nether Butterfly is a Netherworld creature. It can travel between reality and the Netherworld. Typical Essence Energy attacks are useless against it.” As Li Mobai spoke, he summoned a Companion Beast. The Companion Beast was a white-dressed girl holding up a black paper umbrella, but the white-dressed girl had no facial features. She looked extremely strange.

However, the moment the girl came out, the black paper umbrella opened and blocked Li Mobai’s head. Li Mobai immediately stopped emitting light.

Unfortunately, the black paper umbrella was too small. It only allowed shelter for two and was unable to envelop everyone.

“Zhou Wen, try killing the Nether Butterfly,” Li Mobai said as he ordered the white-dressed girl to float towards Zhou Wen with the black umbrella.

The white-dressed girl floated to Zhou Wen’s side like a ghost and used the black paper umbrella to shelter him, preventing him from emitting any more radiance. Zhou Wen immediately felt much better and no longer felt exhausted.

Without any hesitation, Zhou Wen held the Golden Overlord Sword and turned to charge at the Nether Butterfly.

“Wait!” Gu Shanshui stopped Zhou Wen and extended his hand. A golden child appeared in front of him. The golden child was somewhat similar to Xiao Si’s Kuman Thong, but it didn’t have such a terrifying evil aura.

“Take my Life Soul and your sword will be capable of touching the Nether Butterfly. You don’t have much time. My Life Soul can only last ten minutes at most.” As Gu Shanshui spoke, the golden child transformed into a golden beam of light that fused into the Golden Overlord Sword. It added a golden image that resembled a baby or Buddha on the Golden Overlord Sword. The golden aura from on the sword also became stronger.

Zhou Wen took a step forward and activated Transcendent Flying Immortal. The Golden Overlord Sword in his hand slashed out a golden sword beam that instantly appeared in front of the Nether Butterfly.

Strangely enough, the white-dressed girl with the black umbrella seemed to stick to Zhou Wen. No matter how fast Zhou Wen was, she stuck close to him and used the black paper umbrella to cover his head.

The Nether Butterfly seemed to sense that something was amiss with this strike. With a flap of its wings, its figure seemed to penetrate the Netherworld and vanished. When it reappeared, it was already on the other side of the Flower River.

The Golden Overlord Sword in Zhou Wen’s hand slashed out sword beams one after another, criss-crossing in the air like golden lightning. However, the Nether Butterfly’s figure flickered as it vanished and appeared elsewhere. Zhou Wen’s sword ultimately failed to hit its body.

Zhou Wen had the black paper umbrella protecting him, so he was fine. However, Li Mobai and company were already exhausted and had no strength to escape. All of them fell to the ground. Gu Lou and Gu He, who were weaker, were about to fall asleep.

Even so, Li Mobai didn’t unsummon his Companion Beast, nor did Gu Shanshui dispel his Life Soul. He continued augmenting Zhou Wen.

Since Zhou Wen couldn’t hit it after repeated attempts, he knew that he probably couldn’t kill the Nether Butterfly with his speed alone. He immediately switched his Essence Energy Art and the Holy Hell King Life Soul appeared. The Eye of the Holy Hell King at his glabella opened as well.

Zhou Wen originally wanted to see if the Eye of the Holy Hell King could allow him to see the Netherworld Butterfly pass through the Underworld, but to his surprise, the moment it opened, the light emitted from the Flowers of Life changed directions. It no longer flew towards the Nether Butterfly and instead surged towards the Eye of the Holy Hell King.

What was even more terrifying was that the light on the Nether Butterfly’s body also scattered and flew towards the Eye of the Holy Hell King.

In just an instant, the Nether Butterfly’s body glowed brightly as ice-blue incantations appeared. The incantations prevented the light from scattering from its body.

Boom!

As the wings flapped, a terrifying icy-blue light wave spread out from Zhou Wen like spatial ripples.

Zhou Wen’s eyes focused as he slashed out with the Golden Overlord Sword in his hand without any hesitation. It transformed into a golden sword beam that slashed apart the ice-blue beam.

The Nether Butterfly escaped into the Netherworld again, but under the Eye of the Holy Hell King, Zhou Wen could see the Nether Butterfly. Unfortunately, he couldn’t touch it.

The moment it left the Netherworld, the Golden Overlord Sword slashed at its body. The indomitable sword beam killed the Nether Butterfly and tore its body into two.

Ding!

A dimensional crystal dropped. It resembled a sapphire with the shadow of the Nether Butterfly within. It was an Essence Energy Skill Crystal.

Once the Nether Butterfly died, its body immediately transformed into countless beams of light that surged towards the Eye of the Holy Hell King. At the same time, the light from the Flowers of Life was sucked away by the Eye of the Holy Hell King.

Li Mobai and company only saw the light that filled the sky surge towards Zhou Wen’s glabella from all directions, but they couldn’t see the Eye of the Holy Hell King.

Even the white-dressed girl and the golden child were no exception. Their bodies emitted a glow that surged towards Zhou Wen’s glabella. However, Li Mobai and company no longer emitted any radiance.

Li Mobai and Gu Shanshui hurriedly dispelled the white-dressed girl and the golden child. Only then did they prevent their bodies from leaking radiance.

As a large amount of light was sucked into the Eye of the Holy Hell King, Zhou Wen vaguely felt that the Holy Hell King Life Soul was about to evolve again. He couldn’t help but be delighted.

When Holy Hell King evolved again, it would reach the Perfect Body. It would be Zhou Wen’s second Life Soul to reach the Perfect Body.

The originally beautiful Flowers of Life lost their luster as a large area withered. The originally beautiful Flower River instantly turned into a withered land of death.

When all the light was absorbed by Zhou Wen, the Holy Hell King Life Soul evolved almost simultaneously.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 780 - Supreme Hell King

Chapter 780: Supreme Hell King

The sinflames in the Eye of the Holy Hell King bloomed like a lotus flower. Invisible sinflames surged out like layers of petals that enveloped Zhou Wen’s body.

Others could only see Zhou Wen levitating in mid-air and not the invisible sinflames on his body, but they could sense that his aura was constantly rising.

When his aura reached its peak, Zhou Wen’s body underwent a tremendous change. The Holy Hell King Life Soul completed its final evolution amidst the sinflames.

Instantly, Zhou Wen felt his entire body enter a higher dimension, separating himself from reality.

Reality became extremely filthy in his eyes, like a junkyard. And despite being in such an environment, his body remained untainted.

As the sinflames in the Eye of the Holy Hell King were consumed, the Eye of the Holy Hell King gradually closed and vanished.

“When Buddha closes his eyes, every inch of the world will be separated from purity. All life in the tainted world will be abandoned by Buddha and the final purification will descend.”

Looking at the filthy world, Zhou Wen seemed to gain some insight. Although the Eye of the Holy Hell King was closed,

his eyes remained open. He did not completely separate himself from reality. Instead, he allowed himself to return to the world.

The condensation of a Life Soul not only had to do with talent, bloodline, and Essence Energy Art, but it also had to do with a person’s concepts and insights. No two people’s Life Souls were identical. That was because everyone’s thoughts were different. It was impossible to be completely the same.

If Zhou Wen had been bent on leaving this filthy world, the Holy Hell King Life Soul would have evolved in the direction of a saint, eventually becoming a Buddha or a god.

However, Zhou Wen didn’t have any thoughts of transcending. He stayed in the filthy world. Therefore, the Holy Hell King Life Soul evolved in another direction.

Li Mobai and company looked at Zhou Wen in the air. They originally felt that Zhou Wen’s body emitted a holy pressure as though he was the reincarnation of a Buddha.

However, in the blink of an eye, Zhou Wen’s entire body turned dim. It was as though a true immortal had been struck down to the mortal world, reducing to a mortal. They could no longer sense the otherworldly aura from him, as though he was an extremely ordinary youth.

Zhou Wen landed on the ground and stretched his back. He picked up the Essence Energy Skill Crystal that the Nether Butterfly had dropped and looked at Li Mobai and company. “There’s only one crystal. How do we split it?”

“I’m only here for the Guardian’s cocoon. I don’t want anything else,” Li Mobai said.

Gu Shanshui shook his head and said, “I only hope that you can help me catch the Corpse Bug after this matter is resolved. These things are useless to me.”

“In that case, I’ll take it.” Zhou Wen didn’t stand on ceremony as he took the crystal.

Everyone set off again. The Flower River’s Flowers of Life had already withered. The originally beautiful Flower River had turned into a barren land. There were no creatures left, allowing them to advance much faster.

While on the way, Zhou Wen took out his phone to take a look. Indeed, he discovered that the Holy Hell King Life Soul had evolved again, becoming a Perfect Body.

However, to Zhou Wen’s disappointment, the Constitution that corresponded to the Holy Hell King Life Soul remained at 40 points. It didn’t increase to 41 points.

This was the same as the advancement of the Heaven-Opening Scripture of the Highest Elder. The Essence Energy attribute it corresponded to didn’t increase to 41 points and remained at 40.

My Life Soul has advanced to a Perfect Body, but my stats haven’t reached 41. How can I advance my stats? Zhou Wen was somewhat vexed.

He had been looking forward to it for so long. His Life Soul had advanced to a Perfect Body, but his stats hadn’t increased. This meant that his chances of advancing to the Mythical stage were still very slim.

However, on second thought, Xia Jiuhuang had used the power of nine Life Providences and Life Souls, as well as absorbing the life essence of more than ten thousand Epic

experts. With the help of the lightning, he advanced to the Mythical stage as a human. It didn't seem reasonable for him to advance to the Mythical stage with just four Perfect Life Souls.

With this in mind, Zhou Wen's heart suddenly stirred. *Xia Jiuhang used nine Life Providences and Life Souls to advance to the Mythical stage. Doesn't that mean that Life Souls and Life Providences are helpful in advancing to the Mythical stage? I didn't take the wrong path. Is it simply because a single Life Soul isn't enough to break through the limitations of the attributes?*

Zhou Wen thought of his Dao Sutra and the First Order of Chaos. They were very similar and had strengthened his Essence Energy.

If I were to advance the Chaos Egg Life Soul, which also augments Essence Energy, to a Perfect Body, would the two Life Souls augment my Essence Energy stat to 41 points? With this in mind, Zhou Wen felt a glimmer of hope.

His mood improved significantly as he carefully looked at his newly advanced Perfect Body Life Soul.

Supreme Hell King (Perfect Body): The supreme existence in hell, the final faith of the source of sin.

Zhou Wen could sense the stark differences between the Supreme Hell King and Holy Hell King. He no longer had the Eye of the Holy Hell King and he didn't have the lofty authority like the Holy Hell King.

Now, the Supreme Hell King Life Soul made Zhou Wen feel like he truly belonged to hell. He could enter it with his body, not only establish a connection using the Eye of the Holy Hell King.

However, Zhou Wen hadn’t tried it to see what would happen if he really used the Supreme Hell King Life Soul to enter Hell.

Zhou Wen planned on finding an opportunity to give it a try in-game. It was best not to give it a try in reality.

Even if he didn’t enter Hell, the Supreme Hell King’s augmentation of his senses wasn’t something that the Holy Hell King could match. When the Supreme Hell King Life Soul augmented him, Zhou Wen’s senses became terrifyingly powerful.

However, there was something wrong with this. Under such sharp senses, no matter what he looked at, he found everything filthy. It was as though he was in a garbage dump. It was unbearable.

If it wasn’t necessary, Zhou Wen wasn’t willing to activate the Supreme Hell King Life Soul.

Before long, the group passed through the Flower River and arrived near the legendary Valley of No Return. The Guardian cocoon that Li Mobai mentioned wasn’t in the Valley of No Return, but they had to pass through it.

In order to master the Evil King Gu Life Soul, Li Mobai had accidentally fallen into a stone cave in the Valley of No Return while he was chasing after a Gu King. He passed through the stone cave and arrived at an underground cave behind the Valley of No Return. That was where he discovered the Guardian cocoon.

Now, Li Mobai led Zhou Wen and company through the underground tunnel again. They circled around the Valley of No Return, which everyone in the South District would turn pale at the mention of, and arrived at an underground cave.

They saw the Guardian cocoon. It was gray in color and emitted an evil aura. It was different from any Guardian Zhou Wen had seen before.

“We can’t go any further. There’s a terrifying Mythical creature guarding it.” Li Mobai pointed to the side of the gray cocoon.

Zhou Wen and company looked over and saw a calabash vine growing there.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 781 - Gu Pool

Chapter 781: Gu Pool

Translator: CKtalon

The calabash vine was very strange. Its roots and leaves were the color of limestone—the color of rocks. It didn’t look like a living creature, and more like something carved from stone.

Above the calabash vine that was twenty to thirty meters long, there was a total of one calabash. It was also grayish-green in color.

“Is that a plant-type dimensional creature?” Zhou Wen asked.

Li Mobai shook his head and said, “I’m not sure yet. It looks like a plant, but it might be able to spew out a Gu King from inside the calabash. I can’t be sure if it’s a plant or an animal.”

Li Mobai explained his understanding of the calabash vine in detail so that everyone could be prepared.

Back when Li Mobai accidentally entered this cave when chasing a Gu King, the Gu King had been sucked into the calabash just as he was about to catch up to it.

Li Mobai felt that something was amiss with the calabash vine, so he didn’t rush over. Instead, he used a Companion Beast to make probes. However, just as the Companion Beast rushed over, the Gu King that had entered the calabash crawled out again.

The Gu King was the king of bloodsucking Gu. It was at the Epic stage. If Li Mobai wanted to advance to the Evil King Gu Life Soul, he needed to hunt such a Gu King.

Back then, Li Mobai had the Evil King Gu Life Soul. It could be said that other than Mythical Gu, he was invulnerable to all Gu. It wasn't difficult to deal with a Bloodsucking Gu King.

However, to his surprise, after the Bloodsucking Gu King came out of the calabash, it became extremely ferocious. Its strength underwent a drastic change, as though it had advanced to the Mythical stage, and killed Li Mobai's Companion Beast easily. If Li Mobai hadn't fled quickly when he saw that the situation wasn't looking good, he would have died.

Later, Li Mobai came a few more times, but he returned empty-handed. He was no match for the Bloodsucking Gu King.

Li Mobai suspected that the calabash vine was odd. He wanted to remove it and think of a way to lure the Bloodsucking Gu King away before getting a fire-elemental Companion Beast to burn the calabash vine.

However, to his surprise, before the fire-elemental Companion Beast could approach the calabash vine, a Gu King crawled out of the calabash again and killed Li Mobai's fire-elemental Companion Beast.

Later, Li Mobai tried many methods, but they were all useless. Even when his Evil King Gu Life Soul reached the Perfect Body, he still failed to deal with the calabash vine.

After John used the six-winged seraphim to fight Zhou Wen, Li Mobai carried out a lot of investigations and learned about

Guardians. Only then did he realize that the truly precious thing wasn’t the calabash vine, but the gray cocoon it protected.

Unfortunately, he didn’t have the ability to deal with the calabash vine. Even though he knew that there was a Guardian there, he couldn’t contract it. All he could do was cooperate with Zhou Wen.

After hearing Li Mobai’s explanation, Gu Shanshui was alarmed. “You mean that there’s a Mythical Gu in that calabash, and it’s not just one?”

“That’s what I think.” Li Mobai looked at Zhou Wen and said, “Do you want me to use my Companion Beast to lure out the Gu King inside?”

“Alright.” Zhou Wen nodded and summoned Doctor Darkness to fuse with him in his soul form.

Be it ancient wars or modern battles, intelligence was one of the most important factors. Therefore, when Li Mobai summoned his Companion Beast and charged at the calabash vine, Zhou Wen used Doctor Darkness’s Eyes of Penetration to look at the limestone calabash.

Thankfully, the calabash wasn’t a real stone. Through his Eyes of Penetration, he saw through it and was immediately alarmed.

Inside the calabash, there were more than ten different-looking Gu. Their appearances were strange and they looked creepy.

What was even stranger was that the Gu in the gourd were actually fighting each other.

When the Companion Beast Li Mobai summoned approached the calabash, a force controlled one of the Gu and spat it out.

The Gu looked like a scorpion, but it had dragonfly-like wings on its back. It had fine teeth in its mouth, making it look terrifying.

The Companion Beast Li Mobai released was an Epic black tiger, but when it flew close to the Gu, the Gu's tail stabbed into its body and it died instantly.

After killing the target, the Gu was sucked back into the calabash.

"I've seen three different Gu Kings from all my experiments. This is one of them," Li Mobai said.

"Strange." Gu Shanshui frowned and said, "That Gu looks like a Snake Scorpion Gu, but it has many characteristics that the Snake Scorpion Gu doesn't have. Furthermore, its strength is much stronger than a Snake Scorpion Gu. It has indeed reached the Mythical stage."

"This is also what I'm puzzled about. If the Gu only entered the calabash at a later time, there must be some benefits inside that can improve their strength greatly. After the Bloodsucking Gu King entered, its strength increased greatly and its body underwent a huge change," Li Mobai said.

"I suspect that the calabash is likely a natural Gu Pool," Gu Shanshui said with a solemn expression.

A so-called Gu Pool was to place many Gu inside and let them fight each other. Finally, the last surviving one would be the strongest Gu. And not only was that Gu the strongest,

but it would also absorb the abilities and strengths of other Gu in battle. Its strength far exceeded ordinary Gu.

Although it was only a guess, Zhou Wen could see it clearly. The Gu inside were indeed fighting each other. Furthermore, it looked like several of them had Mythical strength.

Although the other Gu hadn't reached the Mythical stage, they were considered extremely powerful existences at the Epic stage.

This is practically a super Gu Pool. If the Gu inside fight to the end and produce a Gu King, I wonder how powerful it will be. It will probably be comparable to a top Mythical creature, right? Zhou Wen couldn't help but be tempted. If he could obtain this calabash, it would be excellent for raising Gu.

The only pity was that Zhou Wen didn't know how to raise Gu. Even if a powerful Gu King really appeared, Zhou Wen could only kill it to see if a Companion Egg dropped.

"Zhou Wen, what do you think?" Li Mobai asked Zhou Wen.

"I think Master Gu is right. That calabash is likely a natural Gu Pool. There might be more than one Mythical Gu inside, but where did these Gu come from?" Zhou Wen said.

"There are Gu everywhere in the Valley of No Return. There are many at the Mythical stage. I reckon the Gu from the Valley of No Return crawled here and were sucked in by the calabash," said Gu Shanshui.

"What's your plan?" Zhou Wen asked Li Mobai.

"There's no particular solution. We can only lure out the Gu Kings inside and kill them one by one. We'll have to rely on

your strength,” Li Mobai said.

Zhou Wen thought for a moment and felt that it would be a waste to lure out all the Gu Kings inside and kill them.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 782 - One Thing Subdues Another

Chapter 782: One Thing Subdues Another

Translator: CKtalon

“From the looks of it, that’s the only way.” Although he found it a pity, Zhou Wen didn’t know how to rear Gu. It was useless even if he kept them.

Li Mobai had a plan. Mute and Butterfly each summoned a Companion Beast. Together with Li Mobai’s own Companion Beast, the three Companion Beasts looked identical. They were three bronze men.

The three bronze men were Epic Companion Beasts. Although they moved slowly, their defenses were extremely strong. Furthermore, they weren’t afraid of the poison that Gu were good at, nor were they afraid of them invading their bodies.

It was impossible to use them to kill Mythical Gu, but using them as bait was an ideal choice.

“Could these be the Bronze Men in the Founding Emperor Tomb?” Zhou Wen asked in surprise.

Li Mobai nodded and said, “Yes, they are the Bronze Men in the Founding Emperor Tomb. In order to obtain these three Companion Eggs, I spent a lot of money to buy them from the Zhang family.”

Zhou Wen wasn’t unfamiliar with the Founding Emperor Tomb because it was very famous. He had long wanted to

see if there was a tiny palm symbol there, but he hadn’t had the chance to go.

As there were many evil powers in the Founding Emperor Tomb, ordinary people couldn’t enter. Only the Zhang family, who were experts in this area, could enter to hunt dimensional creatures. Therefore, very few Companion Beasts from the Founding Emperor Tomb were produced. Furthermore, they were much more expensive than Companion Eggs at the same level.

However, the Companion Beasts in the Founding Emperor Tomb were indeed unique. For example, a Bronze Man was very resistant against Essence Energy and had a strong body. He wasn’t afraid of various toxins and microorganisms. He was an ideal scout.

However, due to the low production, it wasn’t easy to obtain three Bronze Men. It was obvious that Li Mobai was determined to obtain them.

After the three Bronze Men approached the calabash vine, the Gu inside was indeed spat out. However, the one that came out this time was not the previous one, but a mosquito-like Gu with a carapace protecting its body.

Li Mobai told Zhou Wen that this was the Bloodsucking Gu King he had previously chased. However, the prior Bloodsucking Gu King wasn’t that powerful. Now, with the Bloodsucking Gu King around, it was imperative not to have any injuries.

As long as there was a wound, even if it was a very small wound, the Bloodsucking Gu King would be able to expand the wound, causing blood to spray out until the person died.

Unfortunately, the Bronze Men didn’t have blood, so the bloodsucking ability of the Bloodsucking Gu King was useless against them. However, the Bloodsucking Gu King didn’t only have bloodsucking abilities.

The Bloodsucking Gu King flapped its wings and flew quickly. The Bronze Men couldn’t keep up with it and one of them was stabbed in the head by its proboscis.

If it were an ordinary Companion Beast, it would definitely have been severely injured from this strike.

However, the Bronze Man wasn’t afraid. It was just a hole on his head that didn’t affect him at all.

The Bloodsucking Gu King even burrowed into the Bronze Man’s head and came out from the other side. However, it only injured the Bronze Man and wasn’t fatal.

Just as Zhou Wen was about to take action, the chick on his shoulder suddenly flapped its wings and flew over.

The mighty Bloodsucking Gu King was like a mouse seeing a cat when it saw the chick. Its body went limp as though it didn’t even have the strength to resist.

Although the chick was powerful, it was still growing. As for the Bloodsucking Gu King, it was already Mythical. If it fought the chick with all its might, the chick might not be able to gain much of an advantage.

However, in this world, everything had a weakness. The chick’s resistance against Gu was just too strong. The Bloodsucking Gu King’s legs went soft. It didn’t even dare to escape, much less fight.

The chick flew over and pecked at the Bloodsucking Gu King. The Bloodsucking Gu King's carapace was hard, so the chick needed to peck at it a few times before tearing it open and eating it.

From beginning to end, the Mythical Bloodsucking Gu King didn't resist too intensely. A Mythical Gu was eaten just like that. Li Mobai and company were dumbfounded.

Apart from Gu Shanshui who knew about the chick, everyone else watched in surprise as the chick unleashed its might. Although they knew that it was very powerful when it spewed out the flames to kill the jellyfish fungi, they never expected it to be this powerful.

The Mythical Bloodsucking Gu King didn't even have the courage to resist. This wasn't something that could be described as powerful. It was practically a strike on a whole different plane.

After the chick finished eating the Bloodsucking Gu King, it seemed unsatisfied as it flew towards the calabash, wanting to peck open the calabash and eat the Gu inside.

However, after pecking a few times, the calabash remained unharmed. Even the golden flames it spewed out failed to burn the calabash.

The calabash seemed to know how powerful the chick was. No matter how the chick tortured it from the outside, it didn't dare spit out the Gu inside.

Zhou Wen got the chick to return and got Li Mobai and company to release the Bronze Men to entice it, but it was useless. The calabash refused to spit out the Gu inside no matter what.

Zhou Wen held the Golden Overlord Sword and slashed out a Golden Sword Aura at the calabash. The Golden Sword Aura's Ever-Victorious and Unstoppable worked, causing a crack to appear on the calabash.

However, the Golden Sword Aura vanished the moment it entered the calabash. The crack automatically healed and quickly disappeared.

"If I had known that inviting you would save me so much trouble, I would have invited you over long ago, even if I had gone bankrupt." Li Mobai and company walked over.

Although he wasn't able to chop down the calabash or kill all the Gu inside, the calabash didn't dare take any abnormal action. Li Mobai had achieved his goal. Ignoring the calabash that had turtled up, he walked towards the gray cocoon of the Guardian.

Seeing how magical the calabash was, Zhou Wen wanted to remove it, but after slashing a few times, all his strikes were absorbed. He failed to slice off the calabash.

With the chick standing by the side like a tiger eyeing its prey, ready to eat the Gu that could come out at any time, the calabash didn't dare do anything out of the ordinary. It didn't make any abnormal movements and stood still.

Li Mobai had already walked in front of the Guardian cocoon. Without any hesitation, he cut his finger and let his blood drip onto the cocoon.

Everyone looked at the blood that dripped onto the Guardian cocoon. Even Zhou Wen temporarily stopped attacking the calabash and looked over.

Zhou Wen naturally didn’t wish for Li Mobai to succeed. If Li Mobai succeeded, there would be nothing for him.

Blood slowly flowed down the Guardian’s cocoon, but it left Li Mobai very disappointed. The drop of blood flowed down the Guardian’s cocoon and dripped to the ground, unable to penetrate it.

“Master…” Butterfly wore a look of disappointment. She wanted to console Li Mobai, but she didn’t know what to say.

“A single failure isn’t a big deal. If it doesn’t work this time, there will be a next time. Since this path doesn’t work, let’s switch paths. As long as we continue walking, there will always be a path that leads to our destination.” Li Mobai didn’t look too disappointed. He sorted out his emotions and said to Zhou Wen, “Zhou Wen, according to our previous agreement, it’s your turn now. If you don’t succeed, I hope you can give them a chance.”

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 783 - Phoenix Might

Chapter 783: Phoenix Might

“Sure.” Zhou Wen nodded in agreement. If he couldn’t kill the Guardian, there was no harm in letting others give it a try.

However, Zhou Wen didn’t immediately take action. He had a nagging feeling that the calabash was a hidden danger.

Now that the chick was suppressing it, the calabash didn’t dare act rashly. However, if he were to fight the Guardian, it would be troublesome if the calabash released the Gu inside.

“Wait a moment. I’ll think of a way to pluck this calabash,” Zhou Wen said to Li Mobai and company.

Butterfly joked, “Just drip some blood on the cocoon. The calabash won’t hinder you. There’s no need to go through so much trouble, right? Are you afraid of not obtaining the Guardian’s recognition?”

Zhou Wen didn’t answer her as he continued studying the calabash in front of him.

This calabash was indeed something good. It could even control Mythical Gu. Furthermore, it could make them fight each other and evolve through devouring the others.

This was actually very similar to the phone’s Companion Beast fusion function. However, it was a more primitive and

crude version. It wasn’t as modern as the phone’s fusion function.

Zhou Wen thought to himself, *If I can obtain this calabash, I’ll have an explanation if I take out some strange fusion pets in the future. But how can I obtain it? Does this thing count as a dimensional creature? If I slice off the calabash, will it drop a Companion Egg?*

The chick pecked and scratched at the calabash, but it wasn’t effective. Even its golden flames didn’t have much effect on the calabash.

Zhou Wen slashed out a few times with the Golden Overlord Sword. Although he could split the calabash, the space in the calabash seemed to have the characteristic of spatial extension. The sword beam would rush in and gradually dissipate, dealing very little damage. Furthermore, the calabash could rapidly recover.

Since I can’t slice apart the calabash, I’ll eliminate it at its roots. Zhou Wen glanced at the roots of the calabash vine and planned on attacking from there.

The Golden Overlord Sword slashed down with an indestructible sword beam. Before the sword beam could strike the roots of the calabash vine, the calabash suddenly spewed out more than ten Gu.

One strange Gu after another charged at Zhou Wen. Some were as tiny as sesame seeds, while others were as large as ferocious beasts. Furthermore, their abilities were different.

Everyone was given a fright. They never expected the calabash to have so many Gu inside. Gu Shanshui and Li Mobai were reflexively prepared to do battle.

A bird’s cry sounded—it was the chick. The Gu that were charging at Zhou Wen immediately turned limp from fright as they fell from the sky.

Only a few Mythical Gu continued charging at Zhou Wen. However, from their trembling bodies, it was obvious that they were extremely afraid. They had no choice but to rush over because of the calabash’s control.

Seeing that they still dared to charge over, the chick immediately flew into a rage. It flapped its wings and leaped up, rushing over to peck at the Gu.

The chick’s strength wasn’t as strong as the Mythical Gu, but for some reason, the Mythical Gu didn’t dare resist. They were pecked by the chick until bloody, and a small Mythical Gu was swallowed by the chick.

The chick wasn’t afraid of the Gu parasitizing its body. Instantly, it looked mighty, resembling an emperor that was dealing with a group of eunuchs. The eunuchs didn’t dare fight back.

It’s no wonder Worm Dugu said that phoenixes are the nemesis of Gu. After seeing the chick, Gu Shanshui also treated it with reverence. This phoenix’s ability to restrain Gu is just too strong. Zhou Wen originally imagined that there would be a fierce battle, but from the looks of it, the chick could finish off all the Gu without him needing to do anything.

Li Mobai looked at the awe-inspiring chick and seemed to be in thought. It looked like he had guessed the chick’s origins.

It’s no wonder Zhou Wen dared to take the risk to come to the South District. So he has such a divine item on him. Li Mobai was enlightened. He knew that it wasn’t because he

had moved Zhou Wen, but because Zhou Wen had the confidence to ensure his safety that he had followed him to the Valley of No Return.

The chick unleashed its might, and in a short while, it swallowed more than ten Gu. Its body clearly swelled up and its stomach became round.

Zhou Wen suddenly recalled that the antelope had taken the chick to Mount Laojun's Golden Peak. The chick had suddenly lost weight after returning.

Back then, Zhou Wen was puzzled as to why the chick had suddenly lost weight. Now that he thought about it, the chick must have benefited from Mount Laojun's Golden Peak and digested the accumulated energy in its body.

It's no wonder I felt that the chick had grown significantly after that time. It's not because of time, but because it received some benefit. Zhou Wen now understood why the phoenix had given the chick to him.

This thing had eaten several Mythical Gu and nearly ten Epic Gu, but it was only as fat as a ball and did not immediately grow up.

If he wanted to raise it to adulthood, he didn't know how many resources he would have to expend. He guessed that the phoenix couldn't afford to rear so many baby phoenixes, so it wanted to help the chick choose a good family to live with—a place it could eat and sleep for free. However, for some reason, it had chosen him.

After losing all the Gu, the calabash trembled. However, it was only a calabash after all. It couldn't escape like an animal-type dimensional creature.

Zhou Wen didn’t stand on ceremony as he drew his sword and slashed. With a few strikes, he severed the roots of the calabash vine.

When the roots of the calabash snapped, the calabash vine immediately withered. The grayish-blue leaves also shrank and fell. The color of the calabash also gradually became lighter. The original grayish-blue color gradually turned grayish-white.

Zhou Wen slashed at the grayish-white calabash vine, reducing it to ashes. Only the calabash remained intact.

Zhou Wen extended his hand and sucked the calabash into his hand. He pinched it and realized that the calabash was still as hard as before. It didn’t turn to powder like the vines or leaves.

Although the calabash remained, it didn’t have any vitality left in it. Zhou Wen didn’t know if it could still be used. He decided to put it away.

The chick was so stuffed that it was staggering as it walked. It looked like it would fall to the ground and roll away at any moment.

“Stay away for now. I’m going to attack,” Zhou Wen said to Li Mobai and company.

Guardians were generally very strong. Even if Zhou Wen could kill the Guardian inside, it would definitely result in a huge battle. In order not to implicate them, he made them walk far away to give them a chance of escaping if things went south.

“It’s just a drop of blood. There’s no need to go through so much trouble, right?” Butterfly said.

“Let’s go.” Li Mobai seemed to notice something as he instructed Butterfly and Mute to retreat far away with him.

Although Gu Shanshui didn’t know why Zhou Wen wanted them to retreat, he retreated with Gu Lou and Gu He.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 784 - Assassinating the Guardian

Chapter 784: Assassinating the Guardian

“Don’t tell me Zhou Wen is thin-skinned and is afraid of being mocked by us if he fails?” Butterfly said as she walked.

“I’m afraid it’s not that simple.” Li Mobai had his speculations, but he didn’t know what Zhou Wen was up to.

From his point of view, Zhou Wen wasn’t going to do something as simple as dripping a drop of blood for a contract. It was very likely that he would use some method to increase the success rate of the contract.

In fact, Li Mobai had previously thought of a similar method, but because he had transferred the Evil King Gu Life Soul to Li Xuan, his physique was much weaker now. He didn’t dare use any of the methods he could have used in the past.

Li Mobai was very interested in what method Zhou Wen wanted to use. He hoped that Zhou Wen would succeed. This way, he could use Zhou Wen’s method as a reference and still have a chance in the future.

Zhou Wen waited until they were far enough away before he moved. However, he didn’t walk towards the Guardian cocoon. He also distanced himself from it.

However, while keeping a distance, he summoned Tyrant Behemoth.

Boom! Tyrant Behemoth was more than three meters tall, but its body was heavier than steel. When it landed in the cave, the entire cave trembled.

“That’s… Tyrant Behemoth… Tyrant Behemoth that’s ranked fourth… That’s actually Zhou Wen’s Companion Beast…” Butterfly cried out in surprise when she saw Tyrant Behemoth.

Gu Lou and company were also alarmed as their eyes nearly popped out. Tyrant Behemoth’s name was probably known to everyone. Many experts in the Federation had been asking about Tyrant Behemoth’s owner, but they never expected it to be Zhou Wen’s Companion Beast.

Previously, Gu Lou had thought that Zhou Wen was young and frivolous, but now, with his terrifying pets, he was probably not weaker than the top experts of the Dugu family. He indeed had the right to be frivolous.

“What’s he trying to do by summoning Tyrant Behemoth?” Li Mobai looked at Zhou Wen in surprise. He felt that something was amiss. Zhou Wen didn’t seem to be using a trick to contract the Guardian.

Indeed, under everyone’s horrified gazes, Tyrant Behemoth roared and threw a punch at the Guardian cocoon.

“He wants to kill the Guardian, not contract it?” Butterfly’s eyes widened in disbelief. This was beyond her imagination.

Boom!

Tyrant Behemoth shattered the gray cocoon with a punch, revealing the Guardian inside.

As for Zhou Wen, he had already used the Invisibility Cloak to hide himself. At the same time, he summoned Demonic Neonate and hugged her in his arms, using the Invisibility Cloak to cover her. After all, reality wasn't a game. Everything would be over if he died. Therefore, Zhou Wen was much more careful than usual.

If he could find a Guardian he could kill in-game, he wouldn't have taken the risk in reality.

Even in his invisible state, Zhou Wen had no intention of approaching the Guardian. He wanted to figure out what abilities the Guardian had.

The Guardian in the gray cocoon was covered in black carapace. There were ant-like antennas on its head, cicada-like wings on its back, snake-like eyes, and four scorpion-like tails on its back.

This Guardian looked like a humanoid Gu, its body filled with an evil aura.

Just as Tyrant Behemoth's fist was about to hit the Guardian, the Guardian's figure suddenly blurred. Tyrant Behemoth's fist only hit an illusion.

Looking up, he saw the Guardian standing upside down at the top of the cave-like a bat. Its snake-like eyes stared at Tyrant Behemoth. The ten fingers on its hands spread open as thin silk blades crisscrossed like a spiderweb, enveloping Tyrant Behemoth below.

Tyrant Behemoth exerted strength with its legs, tearing the rocks apart. Its body rose into the air as it raised its fist and punched at the spiderweb in the air, hoping to blast the spiderweb and the Guardian to death.

However, when its fist struck the spiderweb-like thin blade, the thin blade was able to withstand the force. It was as though it had punched the air.

As for the silk net blade, it retracted and enveloped Tyrant Behemoth’s body.

Tyrant Behemoth was like a huge fish that had fallen into a fishing net. The more it struggled, the tighter the silk blades wrapped around it. Furthermore, the silk blades had a very strong elasticity. Tyrant Behemoth used its strength in an attempt to break the thin silk blades, but all it could do was expand the net a little. When Tyrant Behemoth relaxed, the thin silk net blades tightened.

The Guardian, who was standing upside down at the top of the cave, flashed and appeared behind Tyrant Behemoth as though it had teleported. Its barbed palm and feet hooked onto Tyrant Behemoth’s back. At the same time, it opened its mouth and stabbed its tongue into Tyrant Behemoth’s neck like a blood-colored arrow.

Roar! Tyrant Behemoth directly activated Absolute Strength, but the powerful force failed to help it tear apart the web blades. Even though it moved the web blades away from its body, it was unable to tear the web apart.

“Guardians are indeed stronger than Mythical creatures. A Mythical Companion Beast like Tyrant Behemoth is basically the peak of Mythical creatures, but it’s still inferior when fighting Guardians… Zhou Wen will probably suffer greatly this time… Master… Let’s quickly retreat…” Butterfly said to Li Mobai.

Li Mobai didn’t answer. He looked around and couldn’t seem to find his target. He frowned and asked, “Where did Zhou Wen go?”

Everyone was taken aback. Their gazes were attracted by Tyrant Behemoth and the Guardian. They were watching the battle and didn’t notice where Zhou Wen had gone.

They looked around, but they didn’t see Zhou Wen. All they saw was a golden and white bird on a stone not far away. They were watching Tyrant Behemoth and the Guardian fight.

At that moment, Zhou Wen was wearing the Invisibility Cloak and had activated the Sigh of the King. Not long after, his strength reached the level of activating Slaughterer. Without any hesitation, he activated the Wheel of Destiny of the Invisibility Cloak and secretly approached the Guardian with Demonic Neonate.

The invisibility ability of the Invisibility Cloak was just so useful. The Guardian failed to discover the invisible Zhou Wen. It was lying on Tyrant Behemoth’s back and using its tongue to devour the energy in Tyrant Behemoth’s body.

Zhou Wen had already reached its back, but it still failed to notice him. Without any hesitation, Zhou Wen summoned the Light Concealment Sword and slashed at the Guardian’s neck with Immortal Slaying.

Almost at the same time, Demonic Neonate in his arms unsheathed her demon sword and slashed at the Guardian’s neck. The two swords slashed down like scissors. At such a close distance, the Guardian had no time to react.

Li Mobai and company didn’t discover any traces of Zhou Wen, but they suddenly heard a tragic cry. When they turned their heads, they realized that Zhou Wen was floating in the air. The Guardian had been beheaded and its head had fallen to the ground.

Plop!

The Guardian’s headless corpse fell from the sky and collapsed to the ground.

The fine web blade on Tyrant Behemoth’s body vanished as well. Zhou Wen carefully floated in the air and flicked his palm as though he was flicking away the blood.

Butterfly, Gu Lou, and company were already shocked speechless. This was because they couldn’t see the invisible Light Concealment Sword. They imagined that Zhou Wen had cleaved off the Guardian’s head with one palm.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 785 - Valley of No Return

Chapter 785: Valley of No Return

“Is this person… a devil?” Butterfly looked at Zhou Wen and felt a chill run down her spine.

They had painstakingly come here to sign a contract with the Guardian and obtain greater strength.

As for Zhou Wen, he had chopped off the Guardian’s head with one palm. Although they knew that this person wasn’t an enemy, the difference in strength still left them in despair. They even trembled in body and mind.

Li Mobai didn’t think so. His eyes burned as he stared intently at Zhou Wen as though he had discovered new land.

So this is a possible route? Li Mobai felt as though a ball of fire was burning in his body.

There was no fire in Zhou Wen’s body, but as the Guardian’s body disintegrated and vanished, energy surged into his body, causing Slaughterer Life Soul to automatically switch over. After absorbing the energy, it became stronger.

To Zhou Wen’s disappointment, although Slaughterer became stronger, it didn’t advance to a Perfect Body even after the energy was completely absorbed.

How many Guardians do I have to kill to advance Slaughterer to a Perfect Body? Zhou Wen sighed inwardly.

Li Mobai, Gu Shanshui, and company had already returned. Zhou Wen said, “Sorry for not giving you guys an attempt.”

Li Mobai smiled and said, “It’s fine. It’s not important. If it’s convenient, can you tell me why you killed the Guardian? Why didn’t you sign a contract with him?”

“There’s no need for a contract.” Zhou Wen couldn’t explain too much.

“That’s right. You really don’t need it anymore,” Li Mobai said.

Butterfly, Gu Lou, and company felt that Zhou Wen’s words were too arrogant, but when they recalled the scene of the Guardian’s head falling, they felt powerless at refuting him.

“Since we’re already here, why don’t we take a look at the entrance of the Valley of No Return?” Zhou Wen was still wondering if he could find the tiny palm symbol there. With the Valley of No Return, he would have a place to grind for Gu-type Companion Beasts in the future.

“Alright. With you around, the Valley of No Return shouldn’t be able to do much to us. It’s good to broaden our horizons,” Li Mobai said with a smile.

“I’m just taking a look outside. I don’t plan on entering.” Zhou Wen shook his head.

Although he had the chick that could suppress Gu, the chick hadn’t grown up yet. If there were too many Gu, it wouldn’t be able to deal with all of them. Or perhaps there were Gu that weren’t afraid of the chick. If they were to come to blows, the chick might not be able to defeat a Mythical Gu.

Zhou Wen was very surprised that the chick could kill those Mythical Gu. He didn’t know if the chick’s noble phoenix bloodline was working or if it had some special power.

Furthermore, after delivering Immortal Slaying, Zhou Wen’s strength had been drained. His body was still in a weakened state. Although he wasn’t as miserable as when he used the Immortal Slaying skill in the past, his combat strength was now greatly affected. Zhou Wen didn’t wish to take the risk at such a time.

The group left the underground cave and arrived at the periphery of the Valley of No Return.

Zhou Wen saw that the valley was stacked layer by layer. There was a valley in a valley, but he didn’t know how big the space was. However, he had heard from locals like Gu Shanshui most people who entered the Valley of No Return never returned. It was what gave it its name.

However, it wasn’t that no one returned alive. There were still exceptions. However, those people didn’t venture deep into the valley. Most of them only circled around the valley entrance before coming out.

Zhou Wen only wanted to circle around the valley’s entrance to find the tiny palm symbol, but he had no intention of entering.

His luck seemed to be surprisingly good. After circling the valley for a while, he found an extremely inconspicuous palm symbol on a mountain wall.

The tiny palm symbol was covered by dense grass and was covered in moss. If Zhou Wen didn’t have Truth Listener’s ability, he wouldn’t have discovered it.

He took a picture with his mysterious phone and saw it downloading. Zhou Wen heaved a sigh of relief.

I've gained quite a lot this time. I downloaded the Valley of No Return instance dungeon and killed a Guardian. I even made the chick eat quite a number of Gu. I reckon it should be able to grow a little after digesting them, right? Zhou Wen felt that the trip had been quite useful.

However, Li Mobai had come for nothing. He hadn't obtained any benefits.

Since Gu Shanshui wanted to go to Chiang Rai to capture the Corpse Bug, Zhou Wen had no choice but to accompany him to Chiang Rai. Li Mobai thought for a moment and said, "Master Gu, if you don't mind, let's go take a look."

"Li, it's great that you can go with us." Gu Shanshui happily accepted.

Everyone walked along the Flower River towards Chiang Rai. After walking for two to three hundred kilometers, they saw Flowers of Life that hadn't withered.

Zhou Wen rode the Great Might Vajra Bull at the back of the team and played with his phone. The dungeon in the Valley of No Return had been downloaded, so Zhou Wen went in to familiarize himself with the environment.

The Valley of No Return was actually surrounded by mountains on all sides. Only a sliver of an opening allowed entry.

The mountain walls on both sides were very close, allowing only one person to pass through sideways.

The blood-colored avatar walked in sideways as Truth Listener's ability was constantly activated. At the same time, it switched its Essence Energy Art to Small Perfection of Wisdom. With the augmentation of the Eight Perfections Wisdom Life Providence and Hell King Life Soul, Zhou Wen's senses became extremely sharp. Even without Truth Listener, he could see everything around him clearly.

After walking for a short while, Zhou Wen discovered a problem. There were many tiny holes on the walls on both sides. As they were so tiny, one would imagine that they were simply the stone walls' textures.

However, Zhou Wen could tell that it wasn't the texture of the stone. Instead, it was a series of tiny holes. In those tiny holes, there were extremely tiny worms and insects that would occasionally rear their heads. As they were so small, if an ordinary person wasn't careful, they would end up having these creatures crawl into their body through their pores.

Since the chick couldn't be brought in-game, Zhou Wen didn't have a good way to restrain the bugs. All he could do was summon Tai Sui and see if it could eat the bugs.

Although Tai Sui wasn't very interested in these bugs, it still devoured them under Zhou Wen's orders.

A large number of notifications appeared on the game screen. They were all indications of him killing Mortal creatures. Occasionally, there would be a notification about him killing Legendary creatures.

There were very few items that dropped, and what did drop was basically useless. With Tai Sui's help, Zhou Wen passed through the crack and arrived in the valley.

As this was a valley in a valley, Zhou Wen could see a circular valley that wasn’t too big. Inside was grassland that looked verdant.

However, if one had extraordinary vision, they would discover that there were many green caterpillars in the grassland. They were almost one with the grassland, making it difficult to distinguish them.

Zhou Wen summoned the Fire Furnace Queen and turned the grassland into a sea of fire. This only served to produce constant notifications of him killing Legendary Green-Haired Gu.

There seem to be quite a number of Gu. It’s a good place to grind. I wonder if there will be groups of Epic Gu inside? Zhou Wen had already seen the notification of a Companion Egg dropping from a Green-Haired Gu.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 786 - Ancient Tadpole

Chapter 786: Ancient Tadpole

Large swaths of Green-Haired Gu were killed, dropping more than ten Green-Haired Gu Companion Eggs and quite a number of dimensional crystals. The valley became narrow again as he walked further in.

Further in, there was another small valley that was shaped like a horse's hoof. It was even smaller than the valley ahead.

The valley's terrain was much lower and the ground was covered in clear water. The water level was very shallow, reaching only Zhou Wen's calf. He could see the bottom at a glance.

There were many water plants growing, making it look very beautiful. It was like a clean paradise.

However, in Zhou Wen's eyes, such a beautiful and clean place wasn't that great. There were many leech-like Gu on the rocks and water plants at the bottom. If he rashly entered, he would probably have his blood drained.

Zhou Wen summoned a Water Snake Companion Beast he had obtained in the past. It was a water-elemental snake he had obtained from the island where Six-Winged Guardian Dragon resided. Its body was condensed from water, so it naturally wasn't afraid of poison or blood-sucking abilities.

After it entered the water, it directly devoured the leeches. When the leeches entered its body, they were immediately

sucked dry, turning into small blobs of dried meat.

‘Killed Legendary Leech Gu…’

Notifications kept popping up on-screen. The water snake swam quickly in the water. Wherever it passed, Leech Gu would be sucked dry.

It’s no wonder so few people can come out alive despite so many people entering the Valley of No Return. Not only are there many dimensional creatures here, but their abilities are also extremely sinister. If one isn’t careful, they will succumb to it. It’s not easy to leave alive. Zhou Wen wasn’t excited about the Leech Gu. He didn’t let the water snake continue killing as he flew through the air and headed for the next valley.

The valley ahead had split roads. One path led to the left, while the other led to the right. Zhou Wen chose the left path and entered the next valley.

This valley was clearly much bigger than the previous valley. The water in the valley from before flowed in from here. He could see a waterfall cascading.

There were still many Leech Gu in the water, but he also saw a type of black tadpole swimming around. Groups of tadpoles could be seen everywhere in the water.

However, these tadpoles were extremely large, so large that one likely needed both hands to lift up a tadpole.

Zhou Wen was somewhat curious about the kind of Gu the tadpoles were, so he got the water snake to charge at them.

Just like before, the water snake went forward to devour the tadpoles in a bid to suck dry the water in their bodies.

However, after the tadpoles were devoured, their bodies immediately exploded, blasting the water snake apart.

The tadpoles didn’t die after the explosion. Instead, they turned into a group of tadpoles that continued swimming in the water.

The water snake’s body was originally condensed from water. After being blasted apart, it quickly condensed again and devoured a large number of tadpoles once more.

The tadpoles exploded again, exploding the water snake’s body once again. At the same time, their numbers increased as their sizes shrank. Yet, there was no sign of death.

After a few repeated attempts, the tadpoles had already become the size of sesame seeds. It looked like they could continue exploding and splitting.

This dimensional creature is rather interesting. It can actually explode and split infinitely. I wonder how small it can go? Zhou Wen got the water snake to continue devouring the tadpoles to see what their limits were.

Finally, he realized that when the tadpoles became the size of a needle hole, their bodies wouldn’t continue splitting apart after the explosion.

They split and self-destruct five times in total. Unfortunately, the power of self-destruction is a little weak. Zhou Wen silently calculated.

‘Killed Legendary creature, Ancient Tadpole.’ A notification appeared in the game.

Although the skill was pretty good, Zhou Wen wasn’t interested because its level was a little low and its self-

destruction wasn’t powerful enough.

However, soon, a rather special Ancient Tadpole attracted Zhou Wen’s attention. Among the group of Ancient Tadpoles was a dark-gold tadpole that was clearly different from the others.

Zhou Wen got the water snake to rush over and devour the Ancient Tadpole, but with a boom, a huge wave rose from the water. The water snake’s body was blasted apart, along with the water-elemental core in its body. It died just like that.

This self-destruction is quite powerful! Zhou Wen was somewhat surprised as he looked at the dark-gold tadpole that had split apart in the water. He summoned another Companion Beast.

This was the Epic Electric Eel that Zhou Wen had obtained in the underground Pool City. After the Electric Eel charged over, it spewed out an electric current. The dark-gold tadpole immediately split apart and exploded once again.

The Electric Eel was very fast. It escaped quickly in the water and dodged the explosive force of the dark-gold tadpole. It spat out another electric current at the even smaller dark-gold tadpoles.

Clearly, the dark-gold tadpole was at the Epic stage. Its explosive power was extremely powerful, enough to kill most Epic creatures of the same level.

Furthermore, after Zhou Wen’s experiments, he realized that these dark-gold tadpoles had exploded more times than the Ancient Tadpoles. They could explode a total of seven times.

‘Ding… Killed Dark Gold Ancient Tadpole. Discovered Companion Egg.’

Zhou Wen realized that there was a dark-gold Companion Egg in the water. He was delighted as he picked it up and hatched it.

Soon, there was an Ancient Dark Gold tadpole in the Companion Beast column.

Dark Gold Ancient Tadpole: Epic

Life Providence: Split

Life Soul: Combine

Strength: 34

Speed: 31

Constitution: 31

Essence Energy: 36

Talent Skill: Self-detonation

Companion Form: Grenade

This thing is really special! Zhou Wen summoned the Dark Gold Ancient Tadpole in-game and a dark-gold grenade appeared in his hand.

Zhou Wen threw it out. When the Dark Gold Ancient Tadpole landed in the water, it immediately exploded, splitting into a group of Dark Gold Ancient Tadpole grenades.

As for the tiny dark-gold tadpoles, they continued exploding upon undertaking the pressure.

However, the difference from the Legendary Ancient Tadpoles was that after the Dark Gold Ancient Tadpoles self-destructed, they would automatically gather together as long as they were not suppressed by external forces for a period of time. They would become the big Dark Gold Ancient Tadpole again, and the number of possible splits would return to normal.

Unless it self-destructed seven times, the Ancient Dark Gold Tadpole would slowly recover and not die.

This is good stuff. If many Dark Gold Ancient Tadpoles self-destruct at the same time, the might will be quite impressive. Zhou Wen searched the valley again and realized that there was a Dark Gold Ancient Tadpole in every group of Ancient Tadpoles.

Zhou Wen specifically targeted the Dark Gold Ancient Tadpoles in a bid to have more Companion Eggs drop, but after killing more than ten of them, no Companion Egg dropped. Zhou Wen had already arrived near the waterfall and was about to continue searching when he realized that there was an especially huge Ancient Tadpole in the pool beneath the waterfall.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 787 - Mythical Tadpole

Chapter 787: Mythical Tadpole

Translator: CKtalon

The tadpole was more than a meter long, and its head was dozens of centimeters in diameter. When it wriggled its tail, it stirred the water, creating tiny whirlpools.

Its color was relatively light and wasn’t as black as the Legendary Ancient Tadpoles, nor was it similar to the dark-gold colors of the Dark Gold Epic Ancient Tadpoles. It was a light gray color that leaned towards white.

When Zhou Wen saw it, it had already discovered the Electric Eel. With a flick of its tail, it tore through the waves like a torpedo and rapidly slammed into the Electric Eel.

The Electric Eel launched an electric current attack, but when the electric current struck the huge tadpole, it didn’t cause it to explode.

Boom!

The giant tadpole slammed into the Electric Eel against the electric current’s surge. Then, Zhou Wen saw a terrifying explosion detonate the ancient tadpoles in the valley.

The explosion of the giant tadpole was already terrifying, and the tiny tadpoles that were produced from the explosion slammed into the other Epic and Legendary tadpoles, causing a chain reaction.

Zhou Wen realized that something was amiss. He condensed a protective Essence Energy Skill to resist the explosion, but the terrifying explosion blasted apart the blood-colored

avatar’s protective Essence Energy. The armor was also penetrated as the tadpoles that burrowed into his body exploded again. After a series of explosions, the blood-colored avatar died.

Isn’t this explosion a little too powerful? Zhou Wen was somewhat alarmed. The tadpole was clearly a Mythical existence. The explosion caused it to split and explode again, causing all the Ancient Tadpoles in the valley to explode. Unless it was a Mythical creature with extremely powerful defense, it was impossible to withstand the blast.

After respawning, Zhou Wen knew better. He didn’t enter the valley himself and summoned Tyrant Behemoth to charge into the valley where the Mythical tadpole was.

Soon, Zhou Wen heard a chain of explosions outside the valley. The explosion sent water splattering everywhere, and the water level in the valley outside rose significantly.

The explosion lasted for quite some time before it finally stopped. Zhou Wen roughly counted that there were nine highly intense explosions. It was likely that the Mythical tadpole had experienced nine splits and explosions.

Notifications of various Ancient Tadpoles’ deaths had already flooded the game screen. The last message was especially eye-catching.

‘Killed Mythical Creature, Ancient Splitting Tadpole. Discovered Companion Egg.’

Zhou Wen entered the valley and saw Tyrant Behemoth standing in the water, covered in wounds. He was somewhat astounded.

Despite using Absolute Strength, Tyrant Behemoth had still been injured from the blast. Although it was only slightly injured, the Ancient Splitting Tadpole’s self-destruction power was extremely terrifying.

The Companion Egg had dropped into the water. Apart from the Mythical Companion Egg, there were many dimensional crystals and tiny Companion Eggs scattered everywhere in the water. They were likely left behind by the Legendary and Epic tadpoles.

Zhou Wen picked up the Mythical Companion Egg and chose to hatch it.

Soon, the Mythical Ancient Splitting Tadpole appeared in his pet column. It looked no different from before.

Ancient Splitting Tadpole: Mythical

Life Providence: Split

Life Soul: Combine

Wheel of Destiny: Parasitizing Death

Strength: 81

Speed: 76

Constitution: 77

Essence Energy: 81

Talent Skill: Self-detonation

Companion Form: Grenade

The Ancient Splitting Tadpole's attributes were already rather terrifying. Two attributes had reached the top 81 points, but he didn't know what kind of ability Parasitizing Death was.

However, just the nine splits and self-destruct abilities were rather terrifying. To be able to injure Tyrant Behemoth while it had Absolute Strength activated meant extreme potency.

It's a pity that once the Ancient Splitting Tadpole self-destructs nine times, it will really die. It can't be used randomly outside the game, but I don't need to have such qualms in-game.

Zhou Wen thought of Explosive Fiend Man, who also had the ability to self-destruct. His self-destruction was even more ruthless. He could only self-destruct once before dying. He didn't even have a second chance.

The Splitting Tadpole could self-destruct at least nine times. As long as it didn't self-destruct nine times in a row, it wouldn't really die. Controlling it allowed him to use it in reality.

I wonder if I can fuse Splitting Tadpole with Explosive Fiend Man. If Explosive Fiend Man also has such a splitting ability... Zhou Wen didn't dare continue thinking.

Just the thought of the Explosive Fiend Man self-destructing, splitting into small Explosive Fiend Men, and then exploding everywhere made his scalp tingle.

Looking at the compatibility between Explosive Fiend Man and Splitting Tadpole, he realized that it was only a pitiful 24%. If it was a fusion, the chances of failure were nearly 80%.

Although they both have similar self-destruction abilities, it looks like the two aren’t the same type. Zhou Wen had no choice but to dismiss the idea of fusion.

He reached a dead-end in the Valley of No Return with no way to go further, so Zhou Wen had no choice but to retreat to the fork and walk towards the valley on the right to see what was inside.

The valley on the right was completely different from the valley on the left. After entering the valley on the right, the temperature suddenly dropped. After taking a few steps, frost and snow appeared on the ground.

The valley on the right was a snow valley. The deeper he went, the thicker the snow became. After taking a few steps, the phone screen suddenly turned black. The blood-colored avatar had died for some reason.

From the looks of it, there’s a problem with the snow. Zhou Wen roughly understood the problem, but to be able to make his Hell King Life Soul fail to discover the problem, the things in the snow had to be extremely extraordinary.

Just as he was about to drip his blood to revive and continue grinding in the Valley of No Return, he suddenly heard Gu Shanshui say, “We’ve reached the end of the Flower River. We’ll reach the periphery of Chiang Rai in another ten kilometers.”

“Before the dimensional storms, this area was situated at the borders of three countries—the famous Golden Triangle. In the past, it was chaotic, and it’s not any better now. Not only are there many dimensional zones, but there are also all sorts of evil Essence Energy Arts. Gu, Kuman Thong, voodoo, witchcraft, Buddhist scriptures, and the other districts’ Essence Energy Arts which can be seen here. It’s messy.

Furthermore, there are all sorts of people here. It’s very easy for something to happen. You have to be careful here. It’s best you don’t eat anything randomly or take anything from others.”

Gu Shanshui paused for a moment before continuing, “Chiang Rai is in this area. Now, there are three most famous families in Chiang Rai. The biggest one is the Xiao family. The Xiao family isn’t only proficient in Buddha plaques and Kuman Thong, but they also have deep attainments in Gu and voodoo magic. Rumor has it that they have a Mythical Kuman Thong that’s extremely powerful. Anyone who offends this family ends up in a terrible state.”

Zhou Wen was puzzled and asked, “Isn’t Kuman Thong a Life Soul?”

Gu Shanshui explained, “Kuman Thong was originally witchcraft that nurtured spirit babies. There were Heaven Babies, Earth Babies, and Man Babies. After the dimensional storms, someone used the method of raising Kuman Thong to obtain a quick Life Soul. They used the Kuman Thong they nurtured as their Life Souls.”

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 788 - Unexpected Reunion

Chapter 788: Unexpected Reunion

With Gu Shanshui leading the way, they quickly arrived at Chiang Rai.

Gu Shanshui found them a place to stay. The place he wanted to go was near Chiang Rai.

Chiang Rai and Mong Hsat were a little different. There were many people like Gu Shanshui who had tattoos and Buddha plaques.

After dinner, Li Mobai, Butterfly, and company went out to stroll around Chiang Rai. Zhou Wen stayed put, having no intention of heading out.

As Chiang Rai's dimensional zones weren't in the city, he wouldn't be able to see them even if he went out.

Gu Shanshui came to Zhou Wen's room and said, "Mr. Zhou, we are going to catch the Corpse Bug tomorrow. There are some things we need to make clear today to prevent any future trouble."

"Master Gu, please speak." Zhou Wen let him in.

"The place where I'm going to catch the Corpse Bug is called Dragon Corpse River. Legend has it that a dragon died there, its veracity unknown. However, Dragon Corpse Valley is extremely dangerous. The Gu inside are at least at the Epic stage. Occasionally, there will be Mythical Gu appearing.

Even the Dugu family has to be careful when entering Dragon Corpse Valley.”

After pausing for a moment, Gu Shanshui continued, “The Corpse Bug I want to capture is in the most dangerous area of Dragon Corpse River. There are many taboos inside. Furthermore, that Corpse Bug is very special. I suspect that the corpse worm is a Mythical Gu born inside the dragon corpse. When the time comes, even with the help of the phoenix divine bird, I’m afraid it won’t be easy for us to subdue it. You mustn’t be careless.”

Following that, Gu Shanshui took out a self-made map and explained the details to Zhou Wen.

There weren’t many people who knew of the existence of the Corpse Bug. Furthermore, it wasn’t an easy task to lure it out. It required some special methods.

Gu Shanshui explained his plan and means in detail so that Zhou Wen could help him when the time came.

“Mr. Zhou, only the two of us know the secret of the Corpse Bug. You mustn’t leak it out. Otherwise, others will definitely vie for it,” Gu Shanshui exhorted.

“Master Gu, don’t worry. My mouth is sealed,” Zhou Wen said.

“That’s good. I won’t disturb your rest any further, Mr. Zhou.” Gu Shanshui bade farewell and left.

Zhou Wen continued grinding as the nine black dragons in the Zhuolu underground sea respawned. Zhou Wen farmed the nine dragons again.

Due to his previous experience, the operation went very smoothly. After killing the black dragon with the Wu dragon pearl, the other eight black dragons immediately became disunited, allowing Zhou Wen’s Companion Beasts to slaughter them.

When he was slaughtering the sixth black dragon, Zhou Wen heard a chime as a black Companion Egg dropped.

A Companion Egg! Zhou Wen was overjoyed as he turned invisible and picked it up to check its stats.

Demon Blood True Dragon (Kun): Mythical

Life Providence: Demon Dragon Bloodline (Incomplete)

Life Soul: Kun Dragon (Incomplete)

Wheel of Destiny: Dragon Domain (Incomplete)

Strength: 80

Speed: 80

Constitution: 80

Essence Energy: 80

Talent Skill: Dragon Breath, Demon Dragon Transformation, Demon Dragon True Body, Dragon Wrath

Companion Form: Dragon Scale Armor (Incomplete)

Why are there so many incomplete traits? Zhou Wen couldn’t help but feel greatly disappointed when he saw the Demon Blood True Dragon. Its Life Providence, Life Soul, Wheel of Destiny, and Companion Form were all incomplete. Its stats were only 80.

Could it be that I have to gather all nine black dragons to unleash the power of the Demon Blood True Dragon? Zhou Wen hatched the Demon Blood True Dragon and summoned it in its companion form.

Although the Dragon Scale Armor was incomplete, it covered the blood-colored avatar's entire body. It was impossible to tell what was missing.

Regardless, I finally have a Mythical armor. Zhou Wen looked at the black Dragon Scale Armor on the blood-colored avatar. It looked like its defense was pretty good.

Just as Zhou Wen was sizing up the Dragon Scale Armor, he suddenly heard a familiar voice coming from the nearby corridor.

"Old Worm, are you sure you are up to the task?"

"Of course. This was an accident. The next time I take you there, I'll definitely be able to capture that Mythical Gu."

"I don't know how many times I've heard that. Can't you say something new?"

"Don't worry. I have my own plans. You should have trust in your master."

"Don't say that. You're not my master yet."

"It's only a matter of time."

"I really wonder if you are from the Dugu family. What's so hard about capturing a Mythical Gu. If it wasn't for Mi'er being so beautiful and not looking like a bad person, I would have suspected that you are a cheat."

Worm Dugu and Li Xuan? Zhou Wen listened carefully and immediately knew who the two people were.

Zhou Wen hurriedly opened the door and walked out. Indeed, he saw Worm Dugu and Li Xuan talking as they walked, preparing to enter the room.

“Li Xuan,” Zhou Wen hurriedly called out to him.

“Zhou Wen? Why are you here?” Li Xuan was surprised and delighted when he saw Zhou Wen. He ran over and wrapped his arm around Zhou Wen’s shoulder. “As expected of my good brother. You came to me because you were worried after hearing that I had come to the South District, right?”

“You aren’t a chick. Why would I be worried? I came here because I had something to do in Chiang Rai. I didn’t know you were here,” Zhou Wen said.

“Brother, you need to work on your words. They hurt my young heart, do you get it?” Li Xuan held his chest with his hand as he wore a stifled expression of heartache.

Zhou Wen ignored him and continued, “Your brother is here.

After Zhou Wen said that, he couldn’t help but be taken aback.

Originally, Li Mobai hadn’t needed to come to Chiang Rai, but he had followed. Zhou Wen wondered if he knew that Li Xuan was there.

However, after some thought, it didn’t seem likely. No one knew where Li Xuan had gone with Worm Dugu.

When Li Xuan heard that Li Mobai had come, the smile on his face vanished as his expression turned solemn.

“What’s he doing here?” Li Xuan asked.

Zhou Wen recounted how Li Mobai had invited him to the Valley of No Return to find the Guardian cocoon. When Li Xuan heard that Li Mobai had failed to make a contract, his expression darkened.

From the looks of it, he was still very concerned about Li Mobai transferring his Life Soul to him.

“By the way, there’s something else I need to tell you.” Zhou Wen wanted to tell Li Xuan about Xia Jiuhuang. It was very likely that Li Xuan’s eldest brother was Xia Jiuhuang’s victim.

Now that Xia Jiuhuang was dead, this matter had nothing to do with the Xia family. There was no need for Li Xuan to risk his life against the Xia family.

“Eldest disciple, have you thought it through and specially come to take me as your master?” Worm Dugu walked over and said with a smile as he sized up the chick on Zhou Wen’s shoulder.

“No,” Zhou Wen answered.

“Ahem, don’t be shy. Li Xuan has already agreed to be my disciple. However, I handle matters in a very clear manner. I took a fancy to you first. You are my eldest disciple. This seniority cannot be messed up,” Worm Dugu said without a change in expression.

Zhou Wen was somewhat puzzled. Worm Dugu, who had wanted to acknowledge him as his master, suddenly changed his attitude and turned hostile.

“Don’t spout nonsense. I didn’t agree to be your disciple. You have to beat me in a bet. Perhaps if you lose the bet, you will have to take me as your master in the future? When that happens, you will have to call Old Zhou Uncle-Master,” Li Xuan said with a twitch of his lips.

“What’s going on?” Zhou Wen was puzzled.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 789 - Gu God's Reincarnation

Chapter 789: Gu God’s Reincarnation

Translator: CKtalon

Worm Dugu beat him to it and said, “I think Li Xuan’s talent is passable, so I plan on taking him in as a disciple. You should also consider it. It’s not too late to regret being my eldest disciple.”

Zhou Wen immediately understood what was going on. Li Xuan’s Life Soul had fused with Li Mobai’s Evil King Gu, so he had some Gu characteristics.

Worm Dugu must have taken a fancy to this point, so he wanted to take Li Xuan in as his disciple.

However, Li Xuan and Zhou Wen were good friends. Worm Dugu was afraid that Li Xuan would find it embarrassing if he knew that he wanted to acknowledge Zhou Wen as his master. Therefore, he refused to acknowledge him any further.

“Cut it out. I wonder who stood in front of Zhou Wen’s dorm back then, claiming to be looking for his master.” Li Xuan curled his lips and said, “Don’t worry. I, Li Xuan, am a man of my word. As long as you can beat me in a bet, I’ll definitely acknowledge you as my master. However, if you lose…”

To Zhou Wen’s surprise, Li Xuan already knew that Worm Dugu wanted to acknowledge him as his master.

“Stop. It’s impossible for me to lose,” Worm Dugu immediately said.

Zhou Wen asked Li Xuan what was going on and Li Xuan explained the situation in detail. Only then did Zhou Wen know why Worm Dugu had persuaded Li Xuan to come to the South District.

After Zhou Wen left, Worm Dugu happened to bump into Li Xuan, who was taking something from Zhou Wen's place. The two sides had a verbal clash. Worm Dugu wanted to use his Gu to deal with Li Xuan, but his Gu didn't dare approach Li Xuan. This left Worm Dugu alarmed.

After many tests, Worm Dugu realized that Li Xuan's Life Soul was the nemesis of Gu.

Raising a phoenix was also to restrain Gu. As for Li Xuan himself, he could restrain all sorts of Gu. With such talent, Worm Dugu was tempted to make Li Xuan his disciple and learn how to rear Gu from him.

Li Xuan obviously wasn't willing but Worm Dugu didn't give up. He showed Li Xuan the magical effects of many Gu and even said that he wanted to help Li Xuan capture Mythical Gu.

Li Xuan was truly tempted when he saw the strange and magical abilities of the Gu. However, because Worm Dugu had wanted to take Zhou Wen as his master, Li Xuan wasn't too willing to be Worm Dugu's disciple. Therefore, he made a bet with Worm Dugu.

If Worm Dugu could capture the famous Ice Silkworm Gu King, Li Xuan would agree to be his disciple and learn how to rear Gu from him. The Ice Silkworm Gu King would be Worm Dugu's greeting gift to his disciple.

If Worm Dugu couldn't capture the Ice Silkworm Gu King, he would have to take Li Xuan as his master and teach him how

to rear Gu.

Regardless of the outcome, Li Xuan won't suffer a loss. For Worm Dugu to be willing to suffer such a huge loss, does he really think highly of Li Xuan, or does he have other motives? Zhou Wen thought to himself, momentarily unsure.

"If not for someone causing trouble, I would have long captured the Ice Silkworm Gu King and taken him in as a disciple," said Worm Dugu.

Li Xuan curled his lips and said disdainfully, "If someone hadn't barged in and diverted the attention of the Ice Silkworm Gu King, we would probably have died there. To think you call yourself the number one expert in Gu rearing in the South District. How embarrassing."

Li Xuan recounted what had happened. Originally, Worm Dugu had taken Li Xuan to capture the Ice Silkworm Gu King with the intention of using Li Xuan's Life Soul to restrain the Ice Silkworm Gu King. With his abilities, he could capture it in one fell swoop.

However, to their surprise, the Ice Silkworm King Gu wasn't just one, but two. Just as they were about to succeed in trapping one Ice Silkworm King Gu, another Ice Silkworm King Gu suddenly appeared, catching Worm Dugu off guard. The two of them nearly died there.

Thankfully, at that time, there was a group of people who wanted to capture the Ice Silkworm Gu King as well. They diverted the attention of one of the Ice Silkworm Gu Kings, allowing them to escape.

"Now, that group of people is still setting up a trap to capture the Ice Silkworm Gu Kings. I think they have more

tricks up their sleeves than this old man. I reckon they have most likely succeeded," Li Xuan said.

"Bullsh*t. Do you think it's that easy to capture the Ice Silkworm King Gu? With those few useless bums from the Xiao family, they won't be able to capture the Ice Silkworm King Gu even if they were given another ten years. It's more like they will all die there," Worm Dugu shouted as he jumped.

"The Xiao family? Which Xiao family?" Zhou Wen's heart stirred as he asked Worm Dugu.

"Which Xiao family could it be? Only in a small place like Chiang Rai can the Xiao family stand firm," Worm Dugu said disdainfully.

"I heard that the Xiao family is very powerful. Not only are they good at nurturing Gu, but they also use black magic and Kuman Thong. The Xiao family also has a Mythical-level Kuman Thong…" Zhou Wen said.

Worm Dugu seemed to view the Xiao family with great contempt. When he heard that, he pulled at his beard and said, "There are many bigwigs who know black magic, Kuman Thong, and Buddha plaques in the South District. The Xiao family doesn't even rank high. They were able to gain a foothold in Companion Beast not because of their excellent techniques, but because they don't abide by the rules and are ruthless. Do you know how the Xiao family's Mythical Companion Beasts came about?"

"How did it come about?" Zhou Wen and Li Xuan looked curiously at Worm Dugu.

"More than twenty years ago, there was a family in Chiang Rai. The couple raised Gu and they were rather famous in

the South District. They raised Gu, but they never harmed others with them. Later, the wife got pregnant. Ever since she got pregnant, wild Gu often appeared around her house. Those Gu only guarded outside her house, but not a single Gu entered. It was as if they were guarding something. The closer to the wife's delivery date, the more Gu appeared around her house. There were even Mythical Gu."

After taking a deep breath, Worm Dugu continued, "Back then, everyone said that the child the wife was carrying was the reincarnation of the Gu God. That was why she attracted all the Gu to protect her. Although the Gu wouldn't harm them, they caused a lot of trouble for the neighbors nearby. Therefore, the couple had no choice but to move to a remote place to live. Not long after, someone discovered that the couple had died tragically at home. The wife's abdomen had been sliced open and the baby was nowhere to be seen."

Zhou Wen and Li Xuan felt their blood run cold when they heard that. They heard Worm Dugu continue, "Most people believe that the Gu harmed the couple and took away their child. However, a member of our Dugu family had a good relationship with the couple. According to him, the head of the Xiao family had a good relationship with the couple. When he went to meet the couple, he even met the head of the Xiao family. Furthermore, more than a year after the couple died, the Xiao family produced a powerful Kuman Thong. Furthermore, ever since then, the Xiao family, who originally only knew Kuman Thong and black magic, began to rear Gu. Don't you think it's too much of a coincidence?"

"It does sound like a coincidence, but it might not be related. Does your Dugu family have any evidence?" Li Xuan asked.

“If there was evidence, we would have wiped out the Xiao family long ago. How could we let them live until now? However, I think that the matter was most likely done by the Xiao family,” said Worm Dugu.

Zhou Wen felt that Worm Dugu’s words made sense. Although he didn’t know much about the Xiao family, he had seen Xiao Si before and knew how ruthless he was. He was definitely capable of such a thing.

Wait a minute. The Xiao family wants Wang Chan. Don’t tell me they want to use her to cultivate Kuman Thong? Zhou Wen hurriedly asked Worm Dugu. “Do you need a baby to refine Kuman Thong? Can older people be refined into Kuman Thong?”

“Typically, children between the ages of 0 and 12 can be used to create Earth Babies and Man Babies. That was the method of the past, but the method now is even crueler.” Worm Dugu didn’t elaborate.

“From 0 to 12 years old?” Zhou Wen thought for a moment. Wang Chan seemed to be around 11 or 12 years old. Furthermore, she had the Goddess of Misfortune Life Providence, making her extraordinary.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 790 - Dragon Corpse River

Chapter 790: Dragon Corpse River

Translator: CKtalon

“If an eleven- or twelve-year-old child has already condensed a Life Providence and it’s very special, will it be helpful in refining a Kuman Thong?” Zhou Wen asked again.

“I’m not too sure about that. After all, I specialize in nurturing Gu, and I only know the basics regarding Kuman Thong. You should ask a professional,” said Worm Dugu.

Zhou Wen chatted with them for a while before bidding them farewell. He wanted to figure out if Wang Chan’s Life Providence would affect Kuman Thong.

After knocking on the door of Gu Shanshui, Zhou Wen roughly recounted the matter, but he didn’t mention the Xiao family or Wang Chan.

“Apart from Heaven Babies, Earth Babies and Man Babies are actually unorthodox. Typically, fetuses that die early or were aborted are used to make Earth Babies and Man Babies. This way, the resentment will be greater and the spirituality will be stronger. Babies that are born will have weaker spirituality as they grow older. The older they are, the more unsuitable they are as Kuman Thong. Twelve years old is the theoretical limit, but very few people would really use such an old child to make Kuman Thong. Unless the child is very special and possesses a special Life Providence, it can be used to make some special evil Kuman Thong or Kuman Nee…”

After hearing Gu Shanhe’s explanation, Zhou Wen was even more certain that the reason the Xiao family wanted Wang

Chan was likely related to the refinement of Kuman Thong.

If that's the case, this Xiao family really deserves death. Zhou Wen was somewhat furious.

Zhou Wen planned on visiting the Xiao family after returning from the Dragon Corpse River to see if they really had such plans. If they really had such plans, Zhou Wen didn't mind helping Wang Chan eliminate future troubles. It was also considered returning a favor to Wang Lu.

When Li Mobai returned, Zhou Wen told him that Li Xuan was also here. Li Mobai said indifferently that it had nothing to do with him before returning to his room.

The next morning, Zhou Wen, Gu Shanshui, Li Mobai, and company headed to Dragon Corpse River. As for Li Xuan and Worm Dugu, they had to make some preparations before catching the Ice Silkworm Gu King.

"People without the ability should just stay at home and await death. Why do you have to come out and court death?" Li Mobai said coldly as Zhou Wen and company parted ways with Li Xuan.

Li Xuan didn't say a word as he left with Worm Dugu.

Zhou Wen didn't know what to say. All he could do was pretend not to hear as he walked ahead with Gu Shanshui.

The Dragon Corpse River got its name because of a dragon dying in the river.

Before the dimensional storms, this was only a legend. No one had really seen a dragon corpse or dragon bones. However, after the dimensional storms, the Dragon Corpse River became a dimensional zone with many taboos.

For example, after entering the Dragon Corpse River, one absolutely could not touch the water of the Dragon Corpse River. Otherwise, one would become a zombie.

There was also the taboo of not being able to fly over Dragon Corpse River and not being able to drip blood in it. Also, women who were on their period could not enter the Dragon Corpse River.

Therefore, Zhou Wen and company could only enter the Dragon Corpse River by boat. The boat they were on was purchased by Gu Shanshui from a nearby family. According to Gu Shanshui, the materials on the boat had been specially processed. Gu didn't like the smell of the wood on the boat and typically wouldn't approach it.

"Li, the Dragon Corpse River is very dangerous. Are you sure you want to join us?" Before boarding the ship, Gu Shanshui asked Li Mobai again.

"With Zhou Wen around, it won't be too dangerous. Just treat it as me broadening my horizons," Li Mobai said with a smile.

Gu Shanshui didn't say anything else and led everyone onto the boat. They left the riverbank and headed upstream of the Dragon Corpse River.

The Dragon Corpse River wasn't very large, but the moment the ship left the riverbank, it felt extremely wide. Furthermore, there was a thick fog over the surface of the river. If it wasn't for someone with experience like Gu Shanshui, it would have been very easy to lose one's way in the fog.

Zhou Wen originally wanted to help Gu Shanshui row the boat, but Gu Shanshui told him that on the Dragon Corpse

River, the eyes could be fooled. He needed to sense where the Corpse Bug was, so only he could row the boat himself.

After the boat entered the fog, Gu Shanshui took out a container made of clay. He filled the container with river water before placing the container at the bow. Finally, he took out a Gu that looked like a loach and placed it inside.

Zhou Wen wasn't in the mood to game in such a place. He kept his mind focused as Truth Listener constantly scanned his surroundings to prevent any possible danger.

Zhou Wen used Truth Listener to sense that there were many dimensional creatures swimming in the nearby waters. However, they didn't approach the wooden boat. It was unknown if it was thanks to the wooden boat or the Gu placed in the clay jar.

The wooden boat slowly rowed across the dark river. Zhou Wen and company abided by the Dragon Corpse River's taboos, so there wasn't any danger.

As the wooden boat slowly sailed, Zhou Wen suddenly felt cold sweat drip down his back. A terrifying palpitation made his heart pound.

With Truth Listener's ability, Zhou Wen realized that at the bottom of the Dragon Corpse River, there seemed to be a huge shadow staring at them.

Plop... Plop... The Gu in the clay jar suddenly jumped as though it had been startled, making Gu Shanshui's expression turn solemn.

Gu Shanshui grabbed the Gu from the clay container and placed it into the river. The Gu swam desperately into the

distance, but before it could swim far, it suddenly vanished, leaving only ripples on the river surface.

When the Gu vanished, Gu Shanshui heaved a sigh of relief.

The wooden boat slowly rowed, but the shadow at the bottom of the river was too huge. After rowing for more than ten minutes, the wooden boat still remained above the shadow, unable to row away from it.

Zhou Wen's mind was tense. He didn't dare use Truth Listener to scan the shadow, afraid that he would alarm it. If the wooden boat were to capsize, Zhou Wen wasn't afraid of his safety, but the others on the boat would probably die.

Thankfully, the shadow didn't move. Ever since it ate the Gu, it had only been watching them from the bottom of the river. After rowing for more than half an hour, the wooden boat finally rowed out of the shadow's range.

Zhou Wen secretly heaved a sigh of relief when the feeling of being watched vanished. *I wonder what's at the bottom of the river? Could it really be a dragon? However, it feels different from the dragons I've seen in the past. Its aura is completely different.*

Zhou Wen didn't wish to cause trouble in such a place. It was naturally best if he didn't need to fight.

After rowing for about four or five hours, a small island appeared on the river in front of them. The island was at most the size of a soccer field. On it was a small mountain that was less than a hundred meters tall. It was a typical volcano. In addition, large amounts of thick fog spewed out from the volcanic crater—probably the source of the thick fog over the river.

“There it is. The Corpse Bug is in the volcano. After we reach the mountain, I’ll lure the Corpse Bug out. Mr. Zhou, please follow the plan.” Gu Shanshui steered the wooden boat to the bank and got everyone to the shore.

Zhou Wen already knew of Gu Shanshui’s plan. All he needed to do was wait by the side. After the Corpse Bug was lured out by Gu Shanshui, he would take action.

Gu Shanshui got everyone to stay at the foot of the mountain. He only took Gu Lou and Gu He up the mountain. They practically crawled forward. When they arrived at the volcanic crater, they took out some small bottles that they had prepared. Every once in a while, they would pour a bottle of yellow liquid into the volcanic crater.

Zhou Wen had heard from Gu Shanshui that the liquid was called Corpse Oil. It was extracted from corpses. Only by using it could one lure the Corpse Bug out of the volcano.

This was something that required extreme patience. After seven to eight hours and pouring more than a hundred bottles of Corpse Oil, there was finally movement inside the volcano.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 791 - Battling the Corpse Bug

Chapter 791: Battling the Corpse Bug

Translator: CKtalon

Zhou Wen and company heard the splattering sounds coming from the volcanic crater.

After Gu Shanshui and company heard the sound, they slowly retreated from the volcanic crater. As they retreated, they poured Corpse Oil on the ground, forming a thin line.

Soon, the trio retreated and hid behind the rocks with Zhou Wen and company.

A commotion at the volcanic crater soon happened as a bug crawled out.

“Isn’t this a horned beetle?” Zhou Wen sized up the bug from afar and saw that it looked like a horned beetle. It had a black carapace and a split horn on its head.

The worm crawled out bit by bit and crawled down towards the Corpse Oil, licking it clean.

Seeing the bug slowly climb down, Gu Shanshui’s expression turned solemn. Gu Lou and Gu He also looked very nervous.

Gu Shanshui looked at Zhou Wen who nodded slightly. In response, Gu Shanshui took out a metal container. It looked like a furnace and also like a tripod. It was an unknown item.

While the Corpse Bug was still licking the Corpse Oil, Gu Shanshui placed the metal container in a crack in the rocks.

Then, he poured in dozens of bottles of Corpse Oil, almost filling the metal container.

The smell of the Corpse Oil immediately attracted the attention of the bug. It spread its translucent wings and flew towards the metal container.

It landed on the edge of the metal container and extended its head to suck the Corpse Oil inside.

The container was a little deep. After the bug finished half of it, it couldn’t reach the Corpse Oil below. All it could do was crawl into the container.

“Now.” Gu Shanshui immediately gestured for Zhou Wen to take action as he ran towards the metal container.

Zhou Wen got the chick to fly over and land on the edge of the container.

When the Corpse Bug saw the chick, it wasn’t as afraid as ordinary Gu. It immediately bared its fangs and brandished its claws to confront the chick. However, it could be seen that it was still somewhat afraid of the chick and didn’t immediately charge out from the inside.

While it was hesitating, Gu Shanshui had already rushed to the metal container. He held the lid in one hand and sprinkled some unknown powder into the container with the other. Then, he covered the container with a click.

Gu Shanshui pressed down on the metal container with one hand and wrapped a red rope around it with the other, trying to tie it up.

The metal container suddenly shook violently. Zhou Wen summoned Tyrant Behemoth and got it to help him hold

down the lid.

With Tyrant Behemoth’s help, the metal container immediately stopped shaking. However, there were continuous clangs coming from inside.

Gu Shanshui didn’t care much. He wrapped a red rope around the metal container several times.

According to Gu Shanshui’s plan, he had already trapped the Corpse Bug. All he needed to do was bring it back and slowly tame it.

However, to his surprise, there was a cracking sound coming from the metal container. Gu Shanshui’s expression changed drastically as he knew that something was amiss. He immediately stopped and threw the metal container out.

The metal container exploded in midair, and the red string snapped inch by inch. The Corpse Bug flew out and bared its fangs and brandished its claws. It opened its mouth and spat out a mouthful of thick fog that swept towards Gu Shanshui.

“Quickly retreat. That’s corpse fog,” Gu Shanshui shouted and quickly retreated. At the same time, he summoned dozens of strange Gu.

After the Gu came out, they tried their best to absorb the corpse fog, but they died after absorbing a little.

The chick let out a strange cry and spat out a mouthful of golden flames. When the golden flames met the corpse fog, the corpse fog immediately burned and was reduced to nothing.

The chick also charged at the Corpse Bug and pecked at it.

However, to everyone’s surprise, the Corpse Bug was even faster than the chick. With a flap of its wings, its horn slammed into the chick, sending it flying. The chick landed on the ground and rolled far away before stopping.

Ever since it was born, the chick had never suffered such a huge loss. It flew up as though it was enraged. It spat out large amounts of golden flames at the Corpse Bug, wanting to burn it to death.

The Corpse Bug seemed to be a little afraid of the golden flames. It didn’t dare touch them as it flapped its wings to dodge the golden flames and flew towards the retreating Gu Shanshui.

From the looks of it, the Corpse Bug’s intelligence wasn’t low. It knew the principle of bullying the weak and fearing the strong.

Gu Shanshui hurriedly summoned his Gu to face the Corpse Bug, but when his Gu touched the Corpse Bug’s corpse fog, they immediately fell to the ground and died twitching. His efforts were futile.

Zhou Wen watched from the side and realized that the corpse fog spewed out by the Corpse Bug wasn’t a poisonous fog, but a mass of bacteria or viruses.

Once the bacteria and virus entered the Gu’s bodies, even the Gu couldn’t take it and quickly died.

Those bacterial viruses should also be considered Gu, right? This Corpse Bug is basically a parent body of Gu. Just a mouthful of mist from it contains a massive number of Gu. Apart from the chick’s flames that can restrain it, it’s really difficult for others to deal with it. Zhou Wen saw the chick fly

over and spew out golden flames that burned the corpse fog away.

Zhou Wen didn’t let Tyrant Behemoth charge forward. Although Tyrant Behemoth was very powerful, it was too huge. No one knew what would happen if it inhaled the bacteria in the corpse fog.

Corpse Bug was the first Gu that dared to fight the chick, but it was still very afraid of the chick’s golden flames. It didn’t dare to be touched by the golden flames. It used its speed to constantly change its position, wanting to rush over and bite the chick.

The chick wasn’t as fast as it was, but its flight trajectory was very strange. Zhou Wen watched for a while before his eyes widened. This fellow’s flight trajectory looked like his Transcendent Flying Immortal.

Damn it. A bird actually learned my Transcendent Flying Immortal movement technique? Zhou Wen was dumbfounded.

The chick used Transcendent Flying Immortal and was actually on par with the Corpse Bug. Its golden flames failed to hit the Corpse Bug, and the Corpse Bug failed to touch it.

“Master Gu, do you have a Plan B?” Zhou Wen asked Gu Shanshui while the Corpse Bug was fighting the chick.

He had many Companion Beasts on him, so it wasn’t impossible for them to kill the Corpse Bug. However, it was meaningless for him to kill it since Gu Shanshui wanted it alive.

“Even the Gu flask made of Pure Essence Gold and the Blood Thread Rope made from Blood Thread Gu can’t trap it. It’s

useless even if I have a way to lure it over.” Gu Shanshui shook his head and smiled bitterly.

Upon hearing those words, Zhou Wen recalled something. He took out the calabash and handed it to Gu Shanshui. “Try and see if you can use this to trap the Corpse Bug.”

Gu Shanshui knew the origins of the calabash and was overjoyed when he saw it. However, he couldn’t find any holes despite flipping the calabash around.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 792 - Encountering Danger

Chapter 792: Encountering Danger

Translator: CKtalon

“Inject your Essence Energy into it and it will automatically open a hole. However, it doesn’t seem to have the ability to control Gu. You must think of a way to get the Gu inside,” Zhou Wen said.

Gu Shanshui gave it a try. Indeed, as long as he injected Essence Energy, a gray fog would appear at the top of the calabash, allowing him to put things through the gray fog.

Holding the calabash, Gu Shanshui gritted his teeth and said, “Then we can only risk it.”

Gu Shanshui summoned his Golden Child Life Soul and got him to rush at the Corpse Bug with the calabash.

When the Corpse Bug saw the Golden Child, it was like a bee seeing honey. It abandoned the chick and rushed towards the Golden Child as if it wanted to devour him.

Zhou Wen was greatly surprised. He didn’t know that the Golden Child Life Soul was that attractive to the Corpse Bug.

Golden Child could also use Essence Energy. It injected its Essence Energy into the calabash and took the opportunity when the Corpse Bug rushed over to store it inside the calabash.

Unfortunately, Golden Child was only an Epic Life Soul. Its speed was much slower than the Corpse Bug. Just as the Corpse Bug’s figure flashed, it circled around the calabash and charged at Golden Child’s head.

“No good!” Gu Shanshui’s expression changed drastically. If his Life Soul was destroyed, it wouldn’t be easy to condense another Life Soul.

In particular, his Golden Child Life Soul was also a type of Kuman Thong. However, his was a Heaven Baby and not an unorthodox Earth Baby or Man Baby. It was very rare.

Just as the Corpse Bug was about to slam into the Golden Child’s head, a bamboo suddenly slammed into the calabash, tipping the calabash’s mouth. It happened to hit the Corpse Bug, causing it to vanish and be stored in the calabash.

Zhou Wen extended his hand and retracted the sheathed Bamboo Blade.

Gu Shanshui was overjoyed as he hurriedly got Golden Child to withdraw his Essence Energy. The gray fog on the calabash vanished without a trace.

A faint sound of a collision came from the calabash. It was likely that the worm had slammed into the calabash and wanted to rush out. However, it didn’t seem to show any effects against the calabash.

“Mr. Zhou, it’s all thanks to you that I was able to catch the Corpse Bug. I really don’t know how to thank you,” Gu Shanshui said excitedly.

“I’m just fulfilling my previous promise. Master Gu, don’t take it to heart. However, you still have to think of a way to find a container when we return. I still have other uses for this calabash,” Zhou Wen said.

“I’ll think of a way to resolve it when we get back,” Gu Shanshui said hurriedly.

“Congratulations on fulfilling your wish, Master Gu.” Li Mobai walked over with Butterfly and Mute, congratulating Gu Shanshui on finally catching the Corpse Bug.

“It’s all thanks to you and Mr. Zhou.” Gu Shanshui was very happy, but he wasn’t blinded by his emotions. “Let’s leave Dragon Corpse River now. It’s not safe here.”

Everyone pushed the wooden boat down the river and rowed back the way they came.

Not long after, Zhou Wen felt that something was amiss.

Previously, when they had come, the Gu in the Dragon Corpse River didn’t get too close to the wooden ship. However, when they returned, the nearby Gu slowly approached the wooden boat.

Furthermore, there were more and more of them. If the chick wasn’t on the boat, they would have long charged forward.

“Master Gu, something seems amiss,” Zhou Wen said to Gu Shanshui.

Gu Shanshui had also noticed the abnormality. He nodded with a heavy expression and said, “It looks like the Gu in Dragon Corpse River are gathering because of the Corpse Bug. However, they don’t dare approach because of the divine bird. But…”

With that said, Gu Shanshui paused before continuing, “However, there might be a terrifying creature in Dragon Corpse River. If it is affected like these Gu, even the aura of the divine bird might not be able to intimidate it. When that happens, we will be in big trouble.”

Zhou Wen immediately thought of the huge shadow at the bottom of the river when they came.

“Is there any other solution?” Zhou Wen asked.

Gu Shanshui shook his head slightly. “Even the calabash and wooden boat can’t block the signal emitted by the Corpse Bug. I’m afraid there’s no good solution.”

After some hesitation, Gu Shanshui said, “If it really doesn’t work, I’ll return the Corpse Bug.”

Gu Lou and Gu He were alarmed as they hurriedly said, “Master Gu, you can’t. You finally caught the Corpse Bug after so much difficulty. This Corpse Bug is too important to you. You shouldn’t let it go so easily. Perhaps Dragon Corpse River doesn’t have that terrifying creature, or perhaps that creature isn’t affected by the Corpse Bug at all…”

Gu Shanshui shook his head and sighed. “I never expected the Corpse Bug to be able to trigger the Gu in Dragon Corpse River. Rearing a Corpse Bug is indeed my wish, but I can’t gamble the lives of so many of us. If we were on land, we could still think of a solution, but now, we are on Dragon Corpse River. There are too many taboos here. Once that creature appears, we will definitely die.”

With that said, Gu Shanshui prepared to open the calabash and release the Corpse Bug.

Zhou Wen suddenly said, “Master Gu, even if you release the Corpse Bug now, I’m afraid it won’t be able to quell the agitation of the Gu in Dragon Corpse River. We’ve already captured the Corpse Bug. With its intelligence and personality, do you think it will let us leave Dragon Corpse River safely even if we release it?”

Gu Shanshui said with a bitter smile, “I also know that Gu are the most vengeful, but what else can we do?”

Li Mobai said, “Master Gu, I think Zhou Wen is right. Since Gu bear grudges, it’s impossible to avoid its revenge whether we release it or not. Why don’t we leave it as a hostage… Perhaps there’s a chance of leaving Dragon Corpse River.”

Gu Shanshui gritted his teeth. “Now that things have come to this, I can only take a gamble. I didn’t think things through properly this time, so I made everyone suffer with me. If I don’t die today, I’ll make amends to everyone in the future.”

“We’ll talk about those things in the future. Let’s do some preparatory work first. Even if there are creatures in Dragon Corpse River that even the divine bird can’t stop, we won’t be sitting back and doing nothing,” Li Mobai said.

They discussed things for a while and began making preparations.

Unfortunately, the range of their activity was limited to the wooden boat. They couldn’t leave the wooden boat and fly into the sky, nor could they touch the water. They couldn’t even be injured. This was too restrictive for them.

Zhou Wen thought for a moment and summoned the Primordial Spore. He got it to enter the water to probe the situation. No matter how powerful the Gu in the water were, it was difficult to discover such minute Companion Beasts.

After the Primordial Spore entered the water, it followed Zhou Wen’s instructions and dived forward.

Everyone did everything they could to ensure that the wooden boat continued forward. More and more Gu gathered in the surrounding waters, and they were getting closer and closer to the wooden boat. They could see the churning water in the distance with their naked eyes. There were all sorts of Gu around them, squeezed together. It was strange and nauseating.

And under Zhou Wen’s observation, there was a huge shadow at the bottom of the river approaching the wooden boat.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 793 - Dragon King Gu

Chapter 793: Dragon King Gu

Translator: CKtalon

Gu Shanshui’s fears came to live. The huge shadow slowly rose from the bottom of the river.

Due to its arrival, the Gu that were crowding around the wooden boat scrambled to escape and quickly disappeared. The originally calm river surface also had burgeoning layers of waves appear.

With such obvious signs, Li Mobai, Gu Shanshui, and company clearly realized the seriousness of the problem. They stared at the river with heavy expressions.

Splash!

A huge wave pushed the wooden boat to the side. If Gu Shanshui hadn’t tried his best to control it, the wooden boat would have capsized.

Li Mobai, Butterfly, and company used their Companion Beasts to block the river water that splashed into the wooden boat. They ensured that the people on the wooden boat wouldn’t be drenched by the river water or have the river water fill the boat.

But soon, everyone’s eyes were attracted by the scene in front of them. They saw a huge body extend out of the river, staring at them like a god. In front of it, the humans and even the wooden boat were as tiny as ants.

Although most of its body was still in the river, preventing one from seeing its full appearance, just the exposed parts

were shocking enough.

It was a dragon, but it wasn’t completely one. It had the appearance of a dragon, but its body wasn’t made of flesh and blood. It didn’t have dragon scales or flesh. It looked like a dragon condensed from coral, making it dazzling and strange.

Zhou Wen had seen many dragons—the white dragon in Old Dragon Cave, the black dragon in the underground sea, Torch Dragon in Torch Dragon temple, and even the western dragons.

However, no dragon could be as strange and beautiful as the dragon in front of him.

The coral-like body’s colors changed according to its emotions. It was sometimes as white as jade, sometimes as red as blood, and sometimes rainbow-colored. It was like a huge piece of art.

“Could… Could this be the legendary Dragon King Gu… Heavens… There’s no dragon corpse in the Dragon Corpse River… There’s actually a Dragon King Gu…” Gu Shanshui’s eyes widened as he stared at the gorgeous and terrifying creature in front of him and cried out involuntarily.

Gu Lou and Gu He were even worse off. They collapsed on the boat and even prostrated themselves before the Dragon King Gu.

A person like Zhou Wen who didn’t rear Gu might not understand what the Dragon King Gu meant to people who reared them, but Gu Shanshui and company had already lost their fighting spirit from fear. They were like lambs waiting to be slaughtered.

Legend had it that phoenixes were the nemesis of Gu, while dragons produced all the Gu in the world.

Some regions treated dragons as gods. If humans angered the gods, they would mete down punishment with diseases, plagues, and other disasters.

These disasters were actually caused by Gu, and Gu were living beings that parasitized the Dragon God. They would punish humans who did wrong in the Dragon God’s stead.

From the point of view of modern humans, Gu were parasites on the Dragon God.

Of course, this was only a legend in a certain region. It was unknown if it was true.

However, in the legends of these regions, if the parasites on the Dragon God’s body were extremely powerful, they could turn the situation around, transforming the Dragon God into Gu, then it would form the legendary King of Gu, Dragon King Gu.

This was actually just a local legend. No one had seen a Dragon King Gu before. Even in this era, no one believed that the Gu could really turn the situation and transform the Dragon God into a Gu.

However, this lifeform in front of them undoubtedly possessed the characteristics of dragons and Gu.

It looked like a divine dragon and had a terrifying dragon might, but its body was similar to the structure of coral.

As for the coral itself, it was condensed from many coral worms. The creature in front of them could also be seen as a fusion of countless Gu.

These characteristics were extremely similar to the legendary Dragon King Gu.

Furthermore, ever since this creature, suspected to be the Dragon King Gu, appeared, the Gu on Gu Shanshui, Gu Lou, and Gu He's bodies began trembling. They could no longer move. It was even more terrifying than the chick's suppression.

To people who raised Gu, this was undoubtedly fatal.

The chick stood at the bow and chirped at the Dragon King Gu. It looked extremely ferocious, but Zhou Wen, who knew the chick very well, could tell that it was lacking confidence.

Otherwise, with the chick's personality, it would have spat out phoenix flames and burned the creature in front of it.

The Dragon King Gu stared coldly at the chick and Zhou Wen. It clearly wasn't as afraid of the chick as the other Gu. It didn't even treat the chick as a threat.

Although the chick had the phoenix bloodline, it had yet to fully mature. It could restrain ordinary Gu, but an existence like the Dragon King Gu was not something the chick could match.

Zhou Wen noticed that the Dragon King Gu's gaze was constantly staring at the calabash containing the Corpse Bug. Clearly, it had been attracted by the Corpse Bug.

Gu Shanshui picked up the calabash with trembling hands and offered it to the Dragon King Gu. As a person who nurtured Gu, no one dared to resist the Dragon King Gu because it was the supreme god in his heart.

With a flash, Zhou Wen arrived at the bow and took the calabash from Gu Shanshui. He held it in his hand and looked at the Dragon King Gu.

As he was not a Gu-rearing professional, he did not fear the Dragon King Gu. Furthermore, even if he handed over the Corpse Bug in the calabash, the Dragon King Gu might not let them off.

Roar! The Dragon King Gu seemed to be infuriated by Zhou Wen's actions as it let out a strange roar.

Unlike the dragon's roar that Zhou Wen had heard before, the Dragon King Gu's voice was very strange. It had a strange resonance.

Amidst the roar of the Dragon King Gu, Gu Shanshui and company revealed looks of pain. They wrapped their heads with their hands as though bugs were biting at their brains.

Zhou Wen also felt as though an extremely tiny creature had drilled into his ears and was about to invade his brain.

"This is a Sound Gu that uses sound… Quickly block your ears… Don't listen to that sound…" Gu Shanshui shouted in pain.

In fact, under the effects of Truth Listener and Supreme Hell King Life Soul, Zhou Wen had already discovered the Sound Gu hidden in the sound waves. He used the Supreme Hell King Life Soul's control over his body to seal his hearing and bar the Sound Gu from entry.

"I know you can understand me. Let us leave the Dragon Corpse River and we'll return the Corpse Bug inside to you. If one of us dies, I'll reduce it to ashes," Zhou Wen said to the Dragon King Gu as he raised the calabash in his hand.

The Dragon King Gu was enraged as it spat out dragon breath at Zhou Wen.

The dragon breath was like a tidal wave that looked extremely terrifying.

The chick opened its mouth and spewed out golden flames. When the golden flames came into contact with the dragon breath, although a portion of the dragon breath was burned away, it was suppressed by the dragon breath. The dragon breath was about to blanket the wooden boat.

Gu Shanshui, Gu Lou, and Gu He’s faces were ashen. They didn’t dare resist at all. Although Li Mobai, Butterfly, and Mute had tried their best to block the dragon breath, their efforts were in vain. Their expressions turned ugly.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 794 - Tai Sui's Might

Chapter 794: Tai Sui’s Might

Suddenly, the white chick on Zhou Wen’s shoulder flapped its wings and flew in front of the dragon breath. It opened its mouth and sucked in the dragon breath. The dragon breath that filled the sky was sucked into the white chick’s mouth, leaving nothing behind.

Gu Shanshui, Butterfly, and company looked at the white chick in a daze. They knew how powerful the chick was and guessed that it was a phoenix descendant.

However, the white-chick form that Tai Sui took on didn’t appear too conspicuous. Furthermore, it didn’t look like a fire-elemental creature. It couldn’t be a descendant of a phoenix.

Furthermore, phoenixes were rare. One was extremely lucky to have one. It was hard to imagine that a person could have two phoenixes.

In addition, Tai Sui usually seemed to be in a daze and didn’t move much. Most of the time, it stood motionless on Zhou Wen’s shoulder. They didn’t pay much attention to the silly white chick, believing that it was only an ordinary Companion Beast at the Epic stage.

However, to their surprise, Tai Sui opened its mouth and swallowed the dragon breath of the Dragon King Gu, as though nothing had happened. They were pleasantly surprised.

Although Tai Sui was powerful, it wasn’t really invincible. The main thing was that the dragon breath of the Dragon King Gu was different from real dragon breath.

The dragon breath of the Dragon King Gu was somewhat similar to the corpse fog of the Corpse Bug. It was formed from a large number of miniature Gu, and Tai Sui was the nemesis of these things.

In fact, it wasn’t just the dragon breath. Even the Dragon King Gu itself was a complicated microscopic agglomerate. To Tai Sui, the Dragon King Gu’s body was a feast.

Tai Sui flapped its wings and charged at the Dragon King Gu. The Dragon King Gu clearly didn’t know how powerful Tai Sui was. It opened its mouth and swallowed Tai Sui who was flying towards it.

Everyone was alarmed. They originally thought that the white bird could fight the Dragon King Gu, but to their surprise, it was swallowed in one mouthful.

The Dragon King Gu was the king of all Gu. Its body contained all kinds of microscopic Gu. If one was swallowed by it, they would be invaded by large numbers of Gu. Even a Mythical creature might not be able to withstand it.

But at that moment, Gu Shanshui and company suddenly saw the Dragon King Gu roar at the sky as though it was in extreme pain. Then, they saw a small hole appear in its abdomen. Tai Sui crawled out and pecked at the Dragon King Gu’s body.

The Dragon King Gu’s body was filled with Gu. Ignoring the fact that it had just been eaten, ordinary creatures would be parasitized by the Gu just by touching it. Even Mythical creatures would probably die tragically.

The white bird’s casual pecking at the Dragon King Gu’s body was unbelievable.

“Is that really the Dragon King Gu? It can’t be fake, right?” Gu Lou had a look of doubt. How could the legendary king of innumerable Gu, Dragon King Gu, be casually eaten by a small white chick?

Tai Sui circled around the Dragon King Gu and pecked at it, leaving holes in its body.

The Dragon King Gu released terrifying dragon breaths and might, but they were useless against Tai Sui. Tai Sui was the nemesis of microscopic creatures. Even Tyrant Behemoth might be parasitized by the Gu on the Dragon King Gu. Even Torch Dragon found it difficult to withstand the Dragon King Gu’s power. After all, the Dragon King Gu was transformed from a Gu that devoured a true dragon. It was naturally effective against dragons.

Tai Sui happened to be the nemesis of the Dragon King Gu. No matter how powerful the Dragon King Gu was, it was still pecked by Tai Sui.

Gu Shanshui and the rest watched in a daze as the Dragon King Gu was eaten by the small white chick. In the end, it escaped into the water and tore through the bottom of the river. The legendary king of innumerable Gu had actually escaped just like that.

Tai Sui’s body swelled up as it couldn’t eat any more. Furthermore, it wasn’t fast, so it couldn’t catch up to the Dragon King Gu underwater. It flew back and landed on Zhou Wen’s shoulder.

Gu Shanshui and company looked at Tai Sui on Zhou Wen’s shoulder in surprise. They originally imagined that the chick

with the phoenix bloodline was already a god-like existence, but they never expected the nameless, white chick which definitely wasn't a phoenix was even more terrifying. Even the Dragon King Gu could only be trampled by it. It even fled in such a sorry state. It was unbelievable.

Unlike the chick, although Tai Sui looked similar to the chick, it didn't have the aura or ability of a phoenix. Gu Shanshui and Li Mobai couldn't deduce its origins.

Zhou Wen handed the calabash back to Gu Shanshui. "Master Gu, let's leave this place now."

Gu Shanshui didn't reach out to take the calabash. "Mr. Zhou, if it weren't for you, we wouldn't even be alive. How would I have the nerve to take this Corpse Bug? It's best you keep it."

Zhou Wen said with a smile, "I don't know how to tame Gu. What's the point of keeping it? Master Gu, if you feel apologetic, teach me a few Gu nurturing techniques when we return."

"Mr. Zhou, it's my honor that you are willing to learn how to rear Gu from me. I will definitely teach you everything and not hide anything," Gu Shanshui said seriously.

"Let's talk when we get back. This isn't a place to talk," Zhou Wen said as he handed the calabash to Gu Shanshui.

Gu Shanshui didn't decline. After carefully putting away the calabash, he steered the boat towards the exit of Dragon Corpse River.

Zhou Wen looked in the direction the Dragon King Gu had vanished with a strange look in his eyes.

If not for Tai Sui, even with a Mythical Companion Beast, defeating the Dragon King Gu wouldn’t be easy. Furthermore, it was very likely that they would be parasitized by the Gu before the battle began.

However, even Tai Sui only managed to injure the Dragon King Gu. The energy contained in its body was too immense. Tai Sui couldn’t digest it all.

What caught Zhou Wen’s attention was that the Primordial Spore that he had placed in the river had taken the opportunity to enter the Dragon King Gu’s body, as though it wanted to parasitize it.

However, Zhou Wen could sense that the Primordial Spore had yet to succeed. Now that it had been taken away by the Dragon King Gu, Zhou Wen could only sense that the Primordial Spore was still alive due to the distance. The connection between them had become very weak. He didn’t know how the Primordial Spore was doing in the Dragon King Gu’s body.

If I can successfully parasitize it and take the Dragon King Gu for my own, I’ll have nothing to be afraid of in the South District, Zhou Wen thought.

Zhou Wen wasn’t too worried about the safety of the Primordial Spore. It had an Eternal Immortality Life Providence, so killing it wasn’t an easy task.

However, it would take a long time to parasitize a Mythical creature. Zhou Wen couldn’t wait for it in Dragon Corpse River, so he could only leave.

Without the threat of the Dragon King Gu, the other Gu were afraid of the chick, so none of them dared to rush over. The group successfully left Dragon Corpse River.

Zhou Wen could also sense the existence of Primordial Spore outside Dragon Corpse River. Although the connection was very weak, it was enough to determine whether Primordial Spore was still alive and its location.

Zhou Wen didn’t see any tiny palm symbols along the way and couldn’t help but find it a pity. The Dragon Corpse River had no fewer Gu than the Valley of No Return. If he could download it into a game dungeon, it would be a good place to grind. Unfortunately, he couldn’t find the tiny palm symbol.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 795 - Discovered

Chapter 795: Discovered

Translator: CKtalon

After returning to Chiang Rai, he didn't see Li Xuan and Worm Dugu. Presumably, the two of them had yet to return from the Ice Silkworm Gu King's place.

Gu Shanshui wanted to think of a way to get a container to rear the Corpse Bug. Therefore, he returned to Mong Hsat overnight.

Zhou Wen didn't follow Gu Shanshui to Mong Hsat. He decided to get the calabash back at Mong Hsat in a few days.

He chose to stay because he wanted to visit the Xiao family and figure out the matter between Xiao Si and Wang Chan.

Li Mobai also planned on staying in Chiang Rai for a few more days before heading off with Zhou Wen to Mong Hsat.

That night, Zhou Wen used the Invisibility Cloak and headed for the Xiao family. He planned on infiltrating the family to see if he could find out anything.

The Xiao family lived in an exotic manor. Before he arrived, Zhou Wen realized a problem. There were many Gu lurking in the grass on both sides of the road. If it wasn't for Zhou Wen's Supreme Hell King Life Soul and Truth Listener's ability, heightening Zhou Wen's senses, it would be difficult for ordinary people to discover the Gu.

The Xiao family sure is careful. They even planted Gu outside the manor. Zhou Wen didn't know much about Gu,

so he didn’t know which Gu relied on smell to distinguish the enemy or sound. Therefore, he flew into the manor from the sky to avoid alerting the Gu.

However, after entering the manor, Zhou Wen realized that although the manor’s layout was very dense, this was only the periphery of the Xiao family. Behind the manor was a valley which was a dimensional zone. The Xiao family’s true headquarters was built in a dimensional zone.

Using Truth Listener’s ability to constantly scan the area, he found the various hidden mechanisms and traps of the Xiao family.

With the Xiao family’s guards guarding the entrance to the dimensional zone, that was secondary. It was impossible for four Legendary humans to see through Zhou Wen’s invisibility.

What caught Zhou Wen’s attention was that there was a statue at the entrance of the dimensional zone. The statue looked very odd. It was a Buddha statue, but it was different from the Buddha statue Zhou Wen had seen in Dragon Gate Grotto. Not only did it look ferocious and terrifying, but it also had a vertical eye at its glabella and a strange fork in its hand.

Zhou Wen had never seen such a Buddha statue before, but the statue’s carvings were similar to the ones used in Buddhism. A Buddhistic glow was engraved on its back.

Zhou Wen could vaguely sense an aura similar to a Gu Mantong from the Buddha statue.

The Spirit Body’s vision is somewhat different from humans. It’s not just about the form. It’s probably impossible to fool that Buddha statue with ordinary invisibility. Zhou Wen

decided to activate the Wheel of Destiny of the Invisibility Cloak and completely conceal his body before entering the dimensional zone.

As expected, the guards and Buddha statues didn't notice him and Zhou Wen successfully entered the valley. The moment he entered, he found it difficult to breathe as though there was no oxygen in the valley.

Zhou Wen didn't discover any Gu and immediately knew that it was the taboo power of this dimensional zone. He had to switch to the Heaven-Opening Scripture of the Highest Elder and immediately, the suffocating feeling vanished.

Although he didn't have the keen senses of the Supreme Hell King, it didn't make a difference with Truth Listener around. Zhou Wen used Truth Listener to scan the entire valley before quickly moving in.

As the Invisibility Cloak's Wheel of Destiny only had three minutes, he had to figure out the situation in the dimensional zone in those three minutes.

Zhou Wen originally imagined that such a valley would have all sorts of Gu, but in fact, there weren't any. There was only one temple in the valley, but the style was very different from the one in Luoyang. It was obvious that it was the local style of Chiang Rai.

There was no one outside the temple, but there were many people inside. They were likely members of the Xiao family. Some were practicing their techniques, while others were directing Gu. It was rather lively.

When Zhou Wen entered the temple's yard, he felt that there was no reaction from the Heaven-Opening Scripture of

the Highest Elder. He knew that there was no taboo power here.

As they trusted the guards outside the manor and the taboo power in the valley, the temple's internal defenses weren't as strict. Zhou Wen looked inside and realized that the deities in the temple hall weren't the Buddhist eminences he was familiar with. Instead, they were dolls of all shapes and sizes.

Are all the ones consecrated here Kuman Thong and Kuman Nee? Zhou Wen scanned the area and saw many dolls in the shapes of boys and girls. He roughly knew what they were.

Zhou Wen wasn't interested in them and he rushed straight to the backyard. He didn't have much time left. Although he wasn't afraid of being exposed, it would be impossible for him to eavesdrop if he was.

The temple was rather large and there were quite a number of courtyards inside. Each courtyard had different Kuman Thong, making it look sinister and terrifying.

Zhou Wen had always felt that these religious buildings weren't aesthetically pleasing. Regardless of the religion, they gave him an uneasy feeling.

Along the way, he encountered quite a number of people from the Xiao family, but they didn't say anything that piqued Zhou Wen's interest. Seeing that the three minutes were up, Zhou Wen realized that there wasn't anyone in the nearby yard, so he decided to enter the yard first.

After entering the yard, the three minutes of invisibility ended. Zhou Wen wore the Invisibility Cloak and could only achieve the effects of visual invisibility. His body didn't vanish completely.

Thankfully, there weren’t many people here. The yard wasn’t big, and there was only a temple hall inside. The door was open, and strangely, there was a black cloth hanging in front of the door.

Zhou Wen used Truth Listener to scan the interior and realized that the tiny temple hall was eerie and terrifying. The decorations inside were very simple. There was a wooden table with a Kuman Thong on it.

The Kuman Thong was jade-like and curled into a ball. There was a crystal container outside, and the yellow liquid inside wrapped around the Kuman Thong. Zhou Wen now had a vague idea that it was Corpse Oil.

Seeing that there was nothing inside, Zhou Wen didn’t enter. Just as he was about to continue searching the temple, he suddenly saw a girl standing in front of him.

The girl didn’t look too old. She was at most eighteen or nineteen years old. She wore strange clothes and looked rather delicate, but for some reason, she had a sinister look as she stared coldly at Zhou Wen.

Zhou Wen felt his hair stand on end when the girl stared at him.

She can see me? Zhou Wen was thinking of how to deal with such a situation.

The other party was only a girl whom he had no grudges with. Zhou Wen couldn’t bring himself to draw his saber to kill her.

However, the girl was strange. She only stared coldly at Zhou Wen without shouting or screaming.

Could it be that she didn’t see me? Zhou Wen was suspicious as he attempted to take two steps to the left.

The girl’s pupils moved to the left as he moved. Zhou Wen took a few steps to the right and the girl’s pupils shifted to the right again. She kept staring at him, clearly able to see the invisible Zhou Wen.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 796 - Strange Girl

Chapter 796: Strange Girl

The girl kept looking at Zhou Wen, but she didn’t shout or scream. Neither did she look flustered.

This left Zhou Wen in a dilemma. If the girl had shown a hostile stance or screamed, he would have long taken action to put her down.

However, with her looking at him without making a fuss, it wasn’t appropriate for Zhou Wen to attack.

There are so many people in the Xiao family that the girl might not recognize all of them. Could it be that she doesn’t know that I’m not from the Xiao family? After some thought, Zhou Wen realized that it was very likely. Otherwise, there was no reason for the girl not to call for help.

If he were someone who had a glib tongue, he might be able to fool the girl and get some information from her.

Unfortunately, Zhou Wen wasn’t eloquent, so he only gave the girl a friendly smile. He pretended to be strolling around and wanted to leave the yard.

Zhou Wen took a few steps to the side, hoping to circle around the girl, but she took two steps to block his path. Clearly, she wasn’t willing to let him go.

“Ahem, sorry. I got lost. Sorry for disturbing you,” Zhou Wen said as he took a few steps to the other side, hoping to circle around the girl.

The girl blocked his path again, but she had no intention of attacking. She didn’t seem to have any intention of shouting.

“Why are you stopping me? Is there anything I can help you with?” Zhou Wen planned on trying to convince the girl with his bad eloquence.

The girl remained silent as she continued looking at him, sizing him up.

Is the Xiao family that odd? Zhou Wen found the girl odd.

Ignoring the fact that her actions were incomprehensible, Zhou Wen hadn’t seen her when he entered the yard. With Truth Listener’s ability, it was impossible for Zhou Wen not to notice that there was someone in the yard.

However, when the girl stood behind him, Zhou Wen really couldn’t work out where she had come from.

Could it be that this girl isn’t human but a ghost? Zhou Wen carefully sized up the girl, but he didn’t discover anything wrong with her. She looked like a normal human girl.

The girl remained silent. Just as Zhou Wen was about to say something, he realized that someone was walking towards the yard.

Zhou Wen looked into the yard. Apart from the temple hall, there were no other obstructions.

After glancing at the girl, Zhou Wen gestured for her to remain silent before heading deeper into the temple hall.

The girl being able to see him didn’t mean that others could see him. Zhou Wen planned on hiding and giving it a try.

Since he had already been exposed, the situation couldn’t be any worse.

There was an offering table in the temple hall without any additional decorations. Just as Zhou Wen was thinking about where to hide, he saw the girl walk in.

With the girl following Zhou Wen, even if others couldn’t see the invisible Zhou Wen, they would discover his existence because of her.

Just as Zhou Wen was about to take action and put the girl down, he saw her point at a cloth curtain in the corner of the temple hall, indicating for him to hide behind it.

The two people had already arrived at the yard’s entrance. Zhou Wen didn’t dare say another word, afraid that they would hear him. All he could do was look at the girl and point at himself before pointing at the curtain.

The girl seemed to understand what he meant and nodded.

Zhou Wen tiptoed to the back of the curtain.

Just as Zhou Wen steadied himself, he heard the door to the yard open. The two people walked in and quickly entered the temple hall.

Zhou Wen wasn’t afraid of being discovered. If he was discovered, he could just storm his way out. However, that would mean a failure to obtain any information.

The two of them walked into the room and didn’t pay attention to the back of the curtain. Clearly, they hadn’t expected someone to be hiding here. Furthermore, Zhou Wen was invisible. It was difficult to discover him with the naked eye.

However, what puzzled Zhou Wen was that they ignored the girl as though she wasn’t there.

The two people who entered the temple hall were no longer young. They were probably at least fifty years old.

After entering the temple hall, one of the men placed something on the offering table. It was a small metal furnace with many tiny holes on it. Wisps of smoke emitted from the tiny holes.

The smoke didn’t rise vertically. It seemed to be attracted by some force and floated towards the Kuman Thong on the offering table.

The man bowed to the Kuman Thong before walking to the side.

“Liuqi, have you investigated the matter regarding Si’er?” the man who had placed the incense asked.

“According to the intelligence sent by the spies in the Imperial Capital, Xiao Si went to the Great Wall with Wang Chan. There was likely another person with them. This person has a good relationship with Wang Chan, so we haven’t found out who it is yet,” Xiao Liuqi answered.

“In your opinion, could it be that the Wang family discovered our goal and deliberately eliminated Si’er?” Xiao Tianfang said with a frown.

“From the looks of it, it shouldn’t be. If the Wang family really discovered our goal, they definitely wouldn’t only target Xiao Si alone. They also wouldn’t give us any explanation about Xiao Si and might have even severed relations with our Xiao family. But there aren’t any signs of that,” Xiao Liuqi said.

Xiao Tianfang sighed and said, “The Wang family is a family clan in the East District after all. Even if they are stronger than our Xiao family, it won’t be easy for them to come to the South District to touch our Xiao family. I’m not afraid that they will fall out with us. Unfortunately, with Si’er’s death, I’m afraid our plan won’t have a chance.”

“Tianfang, is there nothing else that can replace Wang Chan’s Life Providence?” Xiao Liuqi asked.

“If there was a replacement, we wouldn’t have taken such a huge risk to target the Wang family.” Xiao Tianfang explained, “We’ve studied the Gu Lady Kuman Nee for so many years. Although she successfully advanced to the Mythical level, she still can’t be controlled freely. In recent years, our control over her has become weaker and weaker. Refining her into a Life Soul is even more impossible.”

“Now that she’s already at the Mythical level, it’s impossible to refine her into a Life Soul. However, using Wang Chan’s Goddess of Misfortune Life Providence, we can create a Misfortune Kuman Nee and let her suppress and influence the Gu Lady Kuman Nee. This way, we can take the opportunity to firmly grasp them both,” Xiao Tianfang said.

“Can a Heaven Baby replace the Misfortune Kuman Nee?” Xiao Liuqi asked.

“It’s not that simple. Gu Lady Kuman Nee is the reincarnation of a Gu God. Before she was born, we forcefully refined her into a Kuman Nee. Although she’s not a real god, she’s not something an ordinary Kuman Thong can compare to. Only some especially powerful Kuman Thong can influence her. Currently, the best chance we have is to refine Wang Chan into a Misfortune Kuman Nee. The other

methods are even more difficult and impossible to realize,” Xiao Tianfang said.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 797 - Gu Lady

Chapter 797: Gu Lady

Having heard their conversation, how could Zhou Wen not understand what was happening? The Dugu family's guess was right. Back then, the ones who killed the mother and dug out the fetus weren't Gu, but the members of the Xiao family.

They cultivated the fetus into a Kuman Nee and raised it to the Mythical level.

Zhou Wen's understanding of Kuman Nee was very limited. He didn't know how Kuman Nee matured, but he believed that the Xiao family had tried their best.

Now that they couldn't control the Kuman Nee anymore, they wanted to refine Wang Chan into another Kuman Nee to restrain Gu Lady Kuman Nee.

What a diabolical Xiao family. In such an era, it's not wrong to desire becoming stronger. It's not wrong to use all sorts of means, but to be so vicious, one has to be prepared to be treated the same way by others. Zhou Wen's heart was filled with killing intent.

Zhou Wen wanted to summon the Light Concealment Sword and kill Xiao Liuqi and Xiao Tianfang first. The two of them definitely weren't innocent. He could make a judgment on the other members of the Xiao family when the time came.

Just as he was about to make a move, he suddenly realized that the girl was standing in front of him, seemingly trying

to stop him from making a move on Xiao Liuqi and Xiao Tianfang.

Zhou Wen looked at the girl in front of him and suddenly understood something. He thought to himself, *Could this girl be the Gu Lady they refined into a Kuman Nee?*

The more Zhou Wen thought about it, the more he felt that it was possible. The person enshrined in the temple hall was likely Gu Lady Kuman Nee. Then, this strange girl might very well be the Gu Lady after growing up.

Typically, Kuman Nee wouldn't grow, but after combining a Kuman Nee and an Essence Energy Art, anything was possible.

She's now under the Xiao family's control. If I kill the Xiao family, she will definitely become my enemy. With this in mind, Zhou Wen temporarily didn't take action.

Gu Lady was a pitiful person. If she wasn't born magical, she wouldn't have been harmed by the Xiao family. Even her parents died tragically. She was refined into Kuman Nee before she was born. It could be said that she was extremely tragic.

Zhou Wen wasn't sure if she could survive if he killed her master, so he decided not to take action.

Xiao Tianfang thought for a moment and continued, "Regardless of whether the Wang family has noticed it or not, let's put Wang Chan's matter aside for now. Let's try our best to capture the Ice Silkworm Gu King. If we have the Ice Silkworm Gu King, we won't have to rely too much on Gu Lady's strength."

“It’s not easy to capture the Ice Silkworm Gu King. I originally thought that with Gu Lady’s help, we would be able to capture the Ice Silkworm Gu King. After knowing that the Ice Silkworm Gu King isn’t just one, but a pair, Gu Lady probably isn’t a match for the pair of Ice Silkworm Gu Kings either. I still need to think of something else,” Xiao Liuqi said.

“How’s the taming of the Mythical Blood Scorpion Gu going? Can it be put to use?” Xiao Tianfang asked after some thought.

Xiao Liuqi said with a bitter smile, “I don’t know why, but the Mythical Gu that we used Gu Lady to capture are especially difficult to tame. The three from before were domesticated for so long, but they refuse to yield no matter what. This one is slightly better, but it’s barely under our control. It can’t be controlled freely.”

“That’s enough. Let’s take it with us to distract the Ice Silkworm Gu Kings. As long as the pair of Ice Silkworm Gu Kings are separated, Gu Lady should be more than enough to deal with one.” Xiao Tianfang looked at Kuman Nee on the offering table and continued, “Prepare the Blood Scorpion Gu. We’ll go tomorrow to prevent any delays. Worm Dugu is also eyeing the pair of Ice Silkworms. We can’t let him succeed ahead of us.”

“I understand. I’ll prepare now,” Xiao Liuqi replied.

“Do a good job. In the future, the position of family head will be taken over by you. However, as family head, you need to have strength that can convince everyone. If you can successfully capture the pair of Ice Silkworm Gu Kings, you can tame and control one of them,” Xiao Tianfang said.

“Tianfang, you are still in your prime…” Xiao Liuqi was immediately overjoyed, but he didn’t dare show it.

Xiao Tianfang waved his hand. “I know myself. All these years, in order to suppress Gu Lady, my body has been deteriorating day by day. My mind is also failing. In the future, the Xiao family will have to rely on you. You should also shoulder the responsibility.”

“Tianfang, don’t worry. I definitely won’t let you down,” Xiao Liuqi hurriedly said.

“Alright, make the preparation. I hope that capturing the Ice Silkworm Gu King will go smoothly.” Xiao Tianfang gestured for Xiao Liuqi to leave.

After Xiao Liuqi left, Xiao Tianfang stood in front of the Kuman Nee. He reached out to touch the crystal barrier outside and said with a strange expression, “It’s been so many years, but I still haven’t been able to completely tame you. Now, my plan to capture Wang Chan and refine her into a Misfortune Kuman Nee has also failed. If you still don’t submit, I can only take the final step. My body really can’t take it anymore. After I obtain the Ice Silkworm Gu King, I’ll completely erase your consciousness. Although that will greatly reduce the Kuman Nee’s spirituality and abilities, you’ve forced me into a corner. I can only take such measures…”

Xiao Tianfang looked at the Kuman Nee for a while before leaving the yard.

From beginning to end, the girl stood in front of Zhou Wen, preventing him from harming Xiao Tianfang.

“Why are you protecting him when he caused you to be in this state?” Zhou Wen asked.

The girl remained silent, but Zhou Wen seemed to think of a reason. He asked, “Is it because he’s your master? If he dies, will you be injured?”

Surprisingly, the girl nodded, as though confirming Zhou Wen’s words.

Zhou Wen was overjoyed when he saw the girl finally react. He asked, “Then is there a way to prevent you from being injured?”

The girl just looked at him without answering.

Zhou Wen snapped to his senses and knew that the girl couldn’t speak. Therefore, he pointed at Kuman Nee on the offering table and said, “If he transfers that to me, will you be ok after he dies?”

The girl reacted this time and nodded again.

“Alright, I know what to do. Wait a few days. I’ll quickly rescue you,” Zhou Wen said to the girl before turning to leave the temple hall.

The girl seemed to understand what he meant and didn’t stop him. After Zhou Wen left the yard, he temporarily left the Xiao family.

Gu Lady was very magical, so Zhou Wen didn’t wish to see her die with Xiao Tianfang. He planned on getting her transferred to him before settling Wang Chan’s score with the Xiao family.

After Zhou Wen left the Xiao family, he returned to his residence and gave Gu Shanshui a call. Thankfully, he had already arrived at Mong Hsat and had a phone signal. He quickly answered the call.

Zhou Wen asked some questions about Kuman Thong and Kuman Nee and confirmed that his plan was feasible.

That night, Worm Dugu and Li Xuan returned together. The situation didn’t look good. Worm Dugu’s expression was especially nasty.

Li Xuan didn’t jibe either. Zhou Wen knew that Worm Dugu’s failure must have been tragic, so Li Xuan didn’t say a word.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 798 - Ice Silkworm

Chapter 798: Ice Silkworm

“Why don’t we forget our bet? It was just a joke to begin with,” Li Xuan said to Worm Dugu.

“What joke? I, Worm Dugu, am a man of my word. If I can’t capture the Ice Silkworm Gu King for you, I’ll be your disciple,” Worm Dugu said angrily.

Li Xuan said with a smile, “I’ve seen your abilities. If there was only one Ice Silkworm Gu King, you would definitely be able to capture it. But now, there are two. This is unexpected. Just count ourselves even. No one is losing to anyone. Isn’t that fair?”

“No, a man’s word is worth its weight in gold. If I can’t capture the Ice Silkworm Worm, I’ll acknowledge you as my master. I won’t go back on my word.” With that said, Worm Dugu turned to Zhou Wen and said, “If Li Xuan is my master, Zhou Wen, you will be my uncle-master. It’s not too much for an uncle-master to teach me some skills, right?”

Zhou Wen looked at Worm Dugu with his mouth agape. He found it unbelievable that this fellow was from the Dugu family—one of the six hero families. He was too shameless.

“Nice, was this your plan from the beginning?” Li Xuan was taken aback when he heard that. Only then did he realize that he had been fooled.

Worm Dugu chuckled and said, “My motto as a human is to be pragmatic. So what if I acknowledge you as my master?

You still need me to teach you how to rear Gu. On the surface, you are my master, but in reality, I'm still your master. It's just a title. It doesn't matter. If Zhou Wen can teach me how to rear a phoenix, don't mention me calling him uncle-master, I can even call him grandmaster."

Zhou Wen and Li Xuan were dumbfounded. This was the first time they had seen someone like Worm Dugu. It was an eye-opener.

"I really don't know how to rear a phoenix. This silly bird insisted on following me. I usually don't care about it. It eats whatever it gets. I can't teach you," Zhou Wen said.

Worm Dugu immediately shook his head and said, "No, no. I've long read about the phoenix's habits and eating habits in ancient books. If I had a phoenix divine bird, I would know how to feed it myself. You don't have to teach me."

"Then what can you learn from me? Don't tell me you want me to help you find another phoenix? I don't have that ability," Zhou Wen said, puzzled.

"I know how to feed one, but I don't have a phoenix. I just want to learn from you. How can I make a phoenix be willing to follow me?" Worm Dugu said.

"I already said that this silly bird is naturally willing to follow me. There aren't any tricks involved. Perhaps it's because of my relatively good character," Zhou Wen said.

"Old Zhou is right. Back when the three of us encountered the chick, only Old Zhou was chosen," Li Xuan added.

"Everything in this world follows cause and effect. It's impossible for there to be no cause. If there's no cause, it means that you haven't discovered the cause. It might be

because the Essence Energy Art you cultivate is rather special, or it might be because you have a hidden special physique. It might also be because something on you attracted it. In short, there must be a reason. That's the reason I need to know."

Worm Dugu wasn't serious for long before he said to Zhou Wen with a cheeky smile, "Anyway, it's highly likely that I won't be able to catch an Ice Silkworm this time. In the future, you will be my Uncle-Master Zhou. If you like teaching, teach. If you don't like teaching, let me follow by your side while I self-study…"

Zhou Wen didn't wish to speak to Worm Dugu again. He turned to Li Xuan and said, "I'll help you capture the Ice Silkworm Gu King tomorrow. However, after capturing it, lend it to me for two days."

"Lend? How?" Worm Dugu curled his lips and said, "Gu can't be transferred once it recognizes its owner. How can you return it after borrowing it?"

"I don't want the Ice Silkworm Gu King to recognize me as its master. I just need to borrow it to do something. I'll return it to you when I'm done," Zhou Wen said.

"No problem at all. You can even take it, much less borrow it," Li Xuan said with a smile.

Worm Dugu was a little displeased when he heard that. "If you want to use the phoenix to capture the Ice Silkworm Gu King, I advise you not to go. Although the phoenix is powerful, it's only a baby. The Ice Silkworm Gu King won't be afraid of it. If you aren't careful, you might even kill the phoenix. That would be a huge loss."

“We’ll see how to do it when we are there tomorrow.” Zhou Wen also knew that it wouldn’t be easy to capture the Ice Silkworm Gu King. However, the Xiao family was going to capture it tomorrow. This was the opportunity he wanted.

He wanted to snatch the Ice Silkworm Gu King from the Xiao family before using it to exchange for Gu Lady.

Offering an exchange of two Ice Silkworm Gu Kings for a Kuman Nee which might kill Xiao Tianfang, Xiao Tianfang would definitely do so as long as he wasn’t a fool.

After all, he had already planned on wiping out Gu Lady’s spiritual consciousness. When that happened, Kuman Nee’s ability would be greatly reduced. She would probably be inferior to an Ice Silkworm. With such a comparison, anyone would know what to choose.

“Alright, I’ll see how you capture the Ice Silkworm Gu King tomorrow. If you can capture it, I, Worm Dugu, will immediately acknowledge the two of you as master and uncle-master,” said Worm Dugu. Clearly, he wasn’t optimistic about Zhou Wen’s chances.

“Forget it. There’s no sense of accomplishment being your master,” Li Xuan said.

“You can’t say that. You might not feel a sense of accomplishment now, but if you were to travel in the South District and meet someone from the Dugu family and say that you are Worm Dugu’s master, how awesome would that be? You wouldn’t have a feeling of zero accomplishment,” Worm Dugu said with a smile.

Zhou Wen and Li Xuan looked at him in contempt. With his personality, it was unknown how many masters and uncle-

masters he had acknowledged outside. It would be odd if the Dugu family was willing to take that into account.

The next day before dawn, Zhou Wen woke up Li Xuan and Worm Dugu and got them to lead him to the place where the Ice Silkworm Gu Kings were.

He had heard Xiao Tianfang and Xiao Liuqi's conversation and knew that the Xiao family was going at this time. If he went late, the Xiao family might have already succeeded.

It wasn't good to go early either. If they captured the Ice Silkworm Gu King before the Xiao family arrived, the Xiao family wouldn't know that the Ice Silkworm Gu Kings were in Zhou Wen's hands.

Although Worm Dugu was somewhat puzzled as to why Zhou Wen had to go so early, he still took the two of them to Yin Wind Ridge.

When they arrived, they realized that someone was already fighting the Ice Silkworm Gu Kings. The two people spearheading the attack were none other than Xiao Liuqi and Xiao Tianfang.

In front of Xiao Tianfang was an ice-blue silkworm the size of a football. Wherever it crawled, the ground was immediately covered in frost. It was obvious how low the temperature was.

It's no wonder Worm Dugu said that the chick probably can't restrain the Ice Silkworm. With such ice-elemental powers, the chick's phoenix flames will definitely be much less effective against it, Zhou Wen thought.

Xiao Liuqi noticed Zhou Wen and company. When he saw Worm Dugu, his expression changed slightly. Clearly, he was

afraid that Worm Dugu would snatch the Ice Silkworm Gu Kings.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 799 - Gu Lady in Battle

Chapter 799: Gu Lady in Battle

“Strange, why is there only one Ice Silkworm? Where did the other Ice Silkworm go?” Worm Dugu frowned.

“Could it be that the Xiao family lured the two Ice Silkworms apart?” Li Xuan asked.

Worm Dugu shook his head and said, “These two Ice Silkworms are a pair. They have something akin to telepathy abilities. It’s not that easy to separate them. If I could separate them, I would have long ago. The Xiao family wouldn’t even stand a chance.”

“Perhaps you don’t have the ability to do so. Just because you can’t lure them apart doesn’t mean they can’t either,” Li Yue said deliberately.

Surprisingly, Worm Dugu wasn’t angry this time. He thought for a moment and said, “That’s very possible.”

Li Xuan looked at Worm Dugu in surprise. Every time he mentioned Gu, Worm Dugu would proudly act as though he was number one in the world. It was unbelievable that he would admit that he was inferior to the Xiao family.

“You don’t have to look at me like that. Have you forgotten what I told you? If the Xiao family’s Mythical-level Kuman Thong is really refined from the baby reincarnated from a Gu God, it’s not surprising that they can lure the Ice Silkworm away,” said Worm Dugu.

Zhou Wen knew that what Worm Dugu said was right. It was likely that Gu Lady had lured the Ice Silkworm away.

Xiao Tianfang held the Kuman Nee that was placed in the temple hall, but Gu Lady was nowhere to be seen. She must have lured the other Ice Silkworm away.

This Ice Silkworm was trapped here by the Xiao family and was fighting a blood-colored scorpion.

The Blood Scorpion was clearly no match for the Ice Silkworm. Its body was almost frozen by the ice mist that the Ice Silkworm spewed out. It survived thanks to the Xiao family's people using all sorts of Gu and Companion Beasts to barely hold back the Ice Silkworm.

As a result, the Xiao family sacrificed a large number of Gu and Companion Beasts. Furthermore, the Xiao family was still using Kuman Thong to augment the Blood Scorpion. This only allowed them to stall the Ice Silkworm.

The Ice Silkworm's ice aura was extremely powerful. Zhou Wen had seen some ice-elemental Companion Beasts before, but this was the first time he had seen one as powerful as the Ice Silkworm.

As long as one touched its ice aura, be it Gu or Kuman Thong, their bodies would gradually freeze.

The ice aura seemed to have a spreading attribute. As long as one touched it, one's body would become colder. Many Gu only touched a tiny bit of the ice aura. In the beginning, it wasn't too big a problem, but after a while, they would freeze into ice and eventually shatter.

"Should we take action? Now that the two Ice Silkworms have been separated, it's a great opportunity," Li Xuan

asked Worm Dugu.

“There’s no rush. Let’s wait and see. They aren’t a match for the Ice Silkworm.” Worm Dugu paused before saying, “After all, our Dugu family is the king of the South District. We can’t behave excessively. Otherwise, I’ll be nagged by those fellows at home. It will be a headache.”

When the Xiao family saw that Worm Dugu and company only stayed in the distance and had no intention of going forward, they couldn’t help but heave a sigh of relief.

“Tianfang, do you think Worm Dugu will snatch our Ice Silkworm?” Xiao Liuqi whispered to Xiao Tianfang.

Xiao Tianfang said with a heavy expression, “The Dugu family controls the South District. On the surface, they do things fairly, so they might not openly snatch it. However, we still have to be on guard. I hope that Gu Lady can quickly capture the other Ice Silkworm.”

“How’s the situation on Gu Lady’s side?” Xiao Liuqi asked.

“It’s very vague. I only know that they are fighting,” Xiao Tianfang said.

“Tianfang, your perception of Gu Lady is getting weaker and weaker. Will there be a problem?” Xiao Liuqi asked worriedly.

“As long as her main body is in my hands, she won’t be able to resist me. If I let her die, she can only die,” Xiao Tianfang said coldly.

Xiao Liuqi sighed and said, “Gu Lady is really too special. We’ve been rearing her for so many years, but we can’t even see her spirit body. She even implicated you and caused you to suffer a backlash from the Kuman Nee. If we could really

make her our own, our Xiao family wouldn’t be limited to a tiny area like Chiang Rai.”

“As long as we can capture this pair of Ice Silkworms and tame them, our Xiao family will also be able to soar,” Xiao Tianfang said.

Xiao Liuqi nodded and said, “Thankfully, there are detailed records of the Ice Silkworm Gu King in the Gu nurturing technique I obtained from the couple. Otherwise, even with the help of Gu Lady, it would be difficult for us to separate the two Ice Silkworms…”

Xiao Tianfang’s expression turned cold. “Didn’t I tell you not to mention that matter again?”

Xiao Liuqi hurriedly said, “Sorry, I misspoke.”

Zhou Wen was very far away from Xiao Tianfang, but Truth Listener’s ability allowed him to hear their conversation clearly.

I should find Gu Lady and the other Ice Silkworm first. Zhou Wen used Truth Listener to conduct a large-scale search and soon found an Ice Silkworm in a distant swamp, but he didn’t find the Gu Lady.

“Keep an eye on that Ice Silkworm for now. I’ll find the other Ice Silkworm,” Zhou Wen said to Li Xuan before secretly retreating.

Soon, the Xiao family realized that one person was missing from Worm Dugu’s group. However, Worm Dugu was still around. There was only a youth missing, so they weren’t too worried.

After all, even Worm Dugu hadn’t been able to capture the Ice Silkworm. Even if he was a member of the Dugu family, it was impossible for him to capture the Ice Silkworm alone. Furthermore, they had set up mechanisms that would inform Xiao Tianfang and the others if someone approached.

After Zhou Wen left, he put on the Invisibility Cloak and quickly approached the other Ice Silkworm.

In the area closest to the Ice Silkworm, he discovered some Gu that had been placed in the swamp. Zhou Wen flew over the Gu without alerting them.

When he arrived at the Ice Silkworm, he saw an ice-blue Ice Silkworm. This Ice Silkworm was slightly bigger than the previous one.

Strangely, Zhou Wen didn’t discover any traces of Gu Lady with Truth Listener, but when he looked with his eyes, he realized that she was confronting the Ice Silkworm.

This is really strange. Truth Listener’s ability can’t discover Gu Lady. Even Xiao Tianfang, the owner of Lady Gu, can’t see her. Why can I see her? Zhou Wen was somewhat perplexed.

If he had used the Supreme Hell King Life Soul, it wouldn’t be strange for him to see a Spirit Body. However, Zhou Wen wasn’t using it. He didn’t even use any special powers to see Gu Lady whom others couldn’t see. This left him very puzzled.

It was a little different from what Zhou Wen had imagined. Xiao Tianfang said that Gu Lady was fighting the Ice Silkworm, but the scene he saw was completely different.

Gu Lady was squatting on the ground and using her fingers to tease the Ice Silkworm. The terrifying Ice Silkworm was like a pet dog, circling around her as the Gu Lady played with it. However, it had no intention of attacking her.

Zhou Wen watched as the Ice Silkworm rolled on the ground in amusement. He thought to himself, *It's quite terrifying for such a terrifying Ice Silkworm to be played by Gu Lady. Thankfully, the Xiao family doesn't really control Gu Lady. Otherwise, with her abilities, the Xiao family's strength would have long exceeded their present limits.*

Upon seeing Zhou Wen approach, Gu Lady stood up and looked at him. His invisibility was clearly useless against her.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 800 - Grabbing a Silkworm With One Hand

Chapter 800: Grabbing a Silkworm With One Hand

“I need this Ice Silkworm Gu King to exchange for your freedom,” Zhou Wen said as he pointed at the Ice Silkworm on the ground.

Gu Lady nodded before tapping the Ice Silkworm. The ferocious and domineering Ice Silkworm obediently crawled towards Zhou Wen and stopped by his feet, but it had no intention of attacking him.

From the looks of it, the Xiao family has really underestimated Gu Lady’s strength. If they knew that Gu Lady could easily make a top-notch Gu like the Ice Silkworm obey her orders, I wonder what expression they would have.

Zhou Wen took out the Essence Gold Pot that Worm Dugu had prepared and placed it on the ground. The Ice Silkworm jumped in like a tamed pet.

Zhou Wen’s heart stirred as he looked at Gu Lady and asked, “Can you secretly control the other Ice Silkworm Gu and make it look like I’ve captured it?”

Gu Lady nodded again. It looked like she could do it.

“Then control the Ice Silkworm Gu later and let it pretend I’ve caught it.” Zhou Wen recounted his plan to Gu Lady. After confirming that she could understand, Zhou Wen took the Ice Gu in the Essence Gold Pot and sneaked back to Li Xuan and company.

…

“Oh no, Gu Lady failed. Someone stole the Ice Silkworm.” Xiao Tianfang’s expression suddenly changed.

“How is that possible? Who can snatch the Ice Silkworm away from Gu Lady without anyone noticing?” Xiao Liuqi jumped in fright as he said in disbelief.

“I don’t know. The Gu we planted didn’t react at all, and Gu Lady didn’t find any traces of him.” Xiao Tianfang’s expression was ugly as he continued, “I’ve already summoned Gu Lady back. Now, we can only use all our strength to capture this Ice Silkworm.”

Just as Xiao Tianfang said that, he saw Zhou Wen return to Worm Dugu’s side. He exchanged a few words with Worm Dugu before walking towards the Ice Silkworm.

“Could he have snatched the other Ice Silkworm?” Xiao Tianfang’s heart skipped a beat.

Xiao Liuqi had already led his men to block Zhou Wen, preventing him from approaching the battlefield. At the same time, he shouted at Worm Dugu, “Old Master Dugu, we are capturing this Ice Silkworm. Isn’t it inappropriate for you to interfere?”

Worm Dugu said with a smile, “I’m still here! I didn’t even move. When did I interfere with your matters?”

“The Dugu family has always been open and aboveboard. Old Master Dugu, are you trying to say that this friend isn’t a member of the Dugu family?” Xiao Liuqi pointed at Zhou Wen.

“I really wish he was a member of our Dugu family, but unfortunately, he’s not.” Worm Dugu didn’t wait for Xiao Liuqi to say anything before continuing, “But you can’t say that he has nothing to do with our Dugu family. Although he’s not a member of our Dugu family, he’s my uncle-master.”

Xiao Liuqi, Xiao Tianfang, and company were alarmed. Although Worm Dugu wasn’t an authoritative figure in the Dugu family, his seniority was rather high. Furthermore, he was very famous for raising Gu. He was a famous master in the South District.

Yet, Worm Dugu said that the youth in front of them was his uncle-master. It was somewhat unbelievable, but a figure like Worm Dugu clearly wouldn’t joke about such matters.

Could it be that this person has already cultivated to the point of returning to his youth? He looks young, but he’s actually an old monster? Xiao Tianfang thought to himself.

“Since he’s your Uncle-Master, do you think it’s appropriate for him to do something like this?” Xiao Liuqi said.

Worm Dugu continued smiling as he said, “It’s useless saying that to me. Only uncle-masters discipline their disciples. When have you seen a disciple manage an uncle-master?”

“Sir…” Xiao Liuqi looked at Zhou Wen and was about to say something when he suddenly saw Zhou Wen extend his hand and grab. A blood-red vortex appeared in his palm and sucked in the Ice Silkworm that was fighting the Blood Scorpion.

The majestic Ice Silkworm couldn’t withstand the suction force of the blood-colored vortex and was sucked into the

Essence Gold Pot.

“How is that possible?” It wasn’t just the Xiao family. Even Worm Dugu widened his eyes as though he had seen a ghost.

Although he had thought that it was very likely that Zhou Wen would subdue the Ice Silkworm, he never expected him to use such a method.

Worm Dugu originally imagined that Zhou Wen would use the chick’s restraining effect before using various means and Mythical Companion Beasts to fight the Ice Silkworm to finally subdue it.

However, to his surprise, Zhou Wen extended his hand and sucked the Ice Silkworm into the Essence Gold Pot as though he wasn’t taking in a Gu King but an ordinary worm.

The Xiao family members’ eyes nearly popped out. They had fought the Ice Silkworm for so long, so they naturally knew how terrifying it was.

Up to now, they had lost hundreds of Gu and Kuman Thong, but they were still helpless against the Ice Silkworm. Even the Mythical Blood Scorpion Gu had been about to be killed.

Yet, Zhou Wen had managed to capture the Ice Silkworm with one hand. How terrifying was this power? It was unbelievable.

As expected of Worm Dugu’s uncle-master. He’s indeed an old monster. Xiao Tianfang was secretly alarmed as his expression turned extremely ugly.

After spending so much effort and paying such a huge price, the Ice Silkworm was actually caught by someone else. Xiao

Tianfang didn’t even need to guess to know that the other Ice Silkworm had definitely been taken by Worm Dugu’s uncle-master.

He wanted to snatch it, but Worm Dugu was already someone he didn’t have the guts to attack. Furthermore, the person in front of him was Worm Dugu’s uncle-master, an existence who had subdued the Ice Silkworm with one hand.

Only then did Xiao Tianfang feel a sinister aura return and enter the Kuman Nee in his hand.

“You came back too late.” Xiao Tianfang was somewhat exasperated.

“The Kuman Nee in your hand is rather interesting,” Zhou Wen said as he looked at the Kuman Nee in Xiao Tianfang’s hands.

The expressions of the Xiao family members changed. If an existence that could capture an Ice Silkworm with one hand wanted to snatch their Kuman Nee, they probably wouldn’t have a chance to resist.

Even a Mythical Kuman Nee wouldn’t be able to fight against such an existence.

“Old Master Dugu, the Dugu family is the head of the South District. You aren’t going to watch your uncle-master snatch our Kuman Nee, right?” Xiao Liuqi was nervous as he looked at Worm Dugu and said through gritted teeth.

Before Worm Dugu could say a word, Zhou Wen said, “Who said I wanted to snatch something of yours? An old man like me just finds it a little special and asked casually. Even if I really wanted it, I wouldn’t snatch something from juniors

like you. At most, I'll buy your Kuman Nee. Why do I have to snatch it?"

"This Kuman Nee is our Xiao family's heirloom. It's not for sale," Xiao Liuqi said.

"Aren't you willing to sell it if I use the Ice Silkworm as an exchange?" Zhou Wen said indifferently.

"You want to exchange the Ice Silkworm for the Kuman Nee?" Xiao Tianfang and Xiao Liuqi were stunned.

"Why? Isn't the Ice Silkworm enough? What about the two Ice Silkworms?" Zhou Wen continued.

"Old sir, are you really going to exchange two Ice Silkworms for a Kuman Nee?" Xiao Tianfang and Xiao Liuqi looked at each other and saw the pleasant surprise in each other's eyes.

In their opinion, Kuman Nee was indeed very strong, but she was only slightly stronger than an Ice Silkworm. The two Ice Silkworms were much more pragmatic than the Gu Lady Kuman Nee.

Furthermore, Gu Lady Kuman Nee would bite her master. Xiao Tianfang would even consider exchanging her away for a single Ice Silkworm, much less two.

"Uncle-Master, you can't do that." Worm Dugu was shocked. Using two Ice Silkworms to exchange for Kuman Nee was a losing transaction.

However, what they didn't know was that the two Ice Silkworms were far inferior to Gu Lady. They weren't on the same level at all. Even if the exchange was really made, Zhou Wen would have the upper hand. Furthermore, he had

no intention of really giving the Ice Silkworms to the Xiao family.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 801 - Exchange

Chapter 801: Exchange

“Do you really want to exchange the Ice Silkworm for my Kuman Nee?” Xiao Tianfang hurriedly asked, afraid that Zhou Wen would be persuaded otherwise by Worm Dugu.

“That depends on whether your Kuman Nee can interest me. She looks a little special to me, different from the Kuman Nee I’ve seen before. Tell me what’s so special about her.” Zhou Wen firstly wanted to bait Xiao Tianfang into the scam, and secondly, he wanted to know more about the Kuman Nee.

“This…” Xiao Tianfang was somewhat hesitant. After all, he wasn’t sure if Zhou Wen would use two Ice Silkworms to exchange for Kuman Nee. If he explained Kuman Nee’s origins and Zhou Wen didn’t make the exchange, he would suffer a great loss.

“Uncle-Master, if you want a Kuman Nee, our Dugu family has plenty. How about this? Come back with me. You can exchange the Ice Silkworms with our Dugu family. We can offer to exchange two Ice Silkworms for two Kuman Nee. Whatever species you want, you can choose all the Kuman Thong in the Dugu family,” said Worm Dugu.

“Tianfang.” Xiao Liuqi was a little anxious as he looked at Xiao Tianfang.

Xiao Tianfang gritted his teeth and said to Zhou Wen, “I don’t dare say that my Kuman Nee is unprecedented, but she’s indeed extraordinary. She can be said to be unique.

You won’t find another one in all of the Federation. If you really want it, can we have a private chat?”

“There aren’t any outsiders here. Is there anything you can’t say out loud?” Zhou Wen asked.

Xiao Tianfang said, “You won’t necessarily exchange for my Kuman Nee. Even if you do the exchange, you wouldn’t want outsiders to know her secret, right?”

“That makes sense. Alright then.” Zhou Wen nodded slightly.

“Uncle-Master, that Kuman Nee really isn’t worth two Ice Silkworms. Why don’t you exchange it with me? Our Dugu family has all kinds of Kuman Nee, so why do we have to go so far to get one?” Worm Dugu had the urge to hold Zhou Wen back.

“Cut it out. I’ve seen all those Kuman Nee at your place. I’m sick of them. They are nothing interesting. I think this Kuman Nee is a little different,” Zhou Wen said.

“You really have good taste. This way, please.” Xiao Tianfang made an inviting gesture.

“Wait for me here. I’ll be back after taking a look,” Zhou Wen said to Li Xuan and Worm Dugu before following Xiao Tianfang to the temporary camp they had set up in a nearby cave.

Xiao Tianfang and Xiao Liuqi saw that Zhou Wen seemed totally unfazed along the way, as though he didn’t care if they had set up an ambush. This made them feel that Zhou Wen was definitely very terrifying.

“How may I address you?” When they reached the cave, Xiao Tianfang got Xiao Liuqi to personally guard the door while

he conversed with Zhou Wen alone.

“My surname is Zhou,” Zhou Wen said casually.

“Elder Zhou, you must be an expert at Kuman Thong. You must know a lot about this. You know that some Kuman Thong and Kuman Nee have very special refinement methods…” Xiao Tianfang probed.

Zhou Wen waved his hand and said disapprovingly, “I don’t care how this Kuman Nee came about. I just want to know what’s so special about her. I only want something unique. If it’s not unique, it’s meaningless.”

Seeing that Zhou Wen didn’t mind the method of refining the Kuman Nee, Xiao Tianfang said with a smile, “Elder Zhou, you are indeed an expert. Your insight isn’t something an ordinary person can compare with. My Kuman Nee was refined by a Buddhist master. The abilities this Kuman Nee has are also different from ordinary Kuman Nee. She doesn’t have ordinary abilities like luck enhancement, but she has a way of dealing with Gu. She can capture Mythical Gu independently.”

“Is that all?” Zhou Wen revealed a look of disappointment.

Xiao Tianfang gritted his teeth and continued, “To be honest, the baby used to refine the Kuman Nee is the reincarnation of the legendary Gu God. It has a natural restraining effect on Gu. Our Xiao family was too incompetent and couldn’t nurture her well. If an expert like you were to nurture her, you might be able to unleash her full strength. When that happens, she will definitely be of great use.”

“The reincarnation of a Gu God? That’s interesting. I heard that there’s a couple who reared Gu and their child was the

reincarnation of a Gu God. Are these two matters related?” Zhou Wen asked.

“Well…” Xiao Tianfang neither admitted nor denied.

“I’ve only heard of that matter as well. I originally wanted to rush over to see if I could refine a Kuman Nee, but I was a step too late. If this Kuman Nee’s material was that fetus, I’ll do the exchange,” Zhou Wen said.

“You’re really a kindred spirit. Do you really want to do the exchange? Two Ice Silkworms for this Kuman Nee?” Xiao Tianfang was still worried and wanted to make another confirmation.

“From the looks of it, this Kuman Nee was really refined by that baby. It’s no wonder you are so careful.” As Zhou Wen spoke, he placed the Essence Gold Pot on the stone platform and pushed it in front of Xiao Tianfang. “If it’s really refined from that fetus, I want it. You can have the Ice Silkworms.”

“Do you mind if I take a look at the Ice Silkworms inside? It’s not that I don’t believe you, but this concerns the future of our Xiao family…” Xiao Tianfang asked carefully. At this stage, he was still very careful.

“Just open it. My Essence Gold Pot is extraordinary. As long as I trap a Gu, even a Dragon King Gu won’t be able to escape,” Zhou Wen said indifferently.

When Xiao Tianfang heard that the Essence Gold Pot was so powerful, he picked it up and observed it carefully. He felt that it was indeed a good pot, but he didn’t know what was good about it.

The Xiao family only started raising Gu recently and they weren’t as proficient as nurturing Kuman Thong. How could

he recognize a Gu pot made by Worm Dugu?

Xiao Tianfang didn’t dare open it for fear that the Ice Silkworm would escape. He wasn’t confident of escaping in front of two Ice Silkworms.

However, on second thought, Kuman Nee was connected to his life, so it was impossible for Zhou Wen to harm him if he wanted her.

When Xiao Tianfang thought of this, he carefully opened a sliver of the Gu pot. Through the crack, he saw the two Ice Silkworms inside, but they were restrained by the Essence Gold Pot. No matter how hard they struggled, they couldn’t rush out.

Xiao Tianfang was relieved. He opened the lid completely and the two Ice Silkworms inside only circled around the pot, unable to crawl out.

“I didn’t expect such a Gu pot to exist in this world. My horizons have really been broadened today.” Xiao Tianfang thought for a moment and said, “Since you are so sincere, I won’t hide it from you. This Kuman Nee of mine was refined from that fetus. It has a very strong restraining effect on Gu worms. It is also an extremely powerful existence among Kuman Nee. It can be considered a fusion between Gu and Kuman Nee. It is a unique existence in this world. You definitely wouldn’t regret the exchange.”

“As expected. I knew I wouldn’t be wrong. In that case, the two Ice Silkworms are yours. Remove her Intrinsic Lock and give her to me,” Zhou Wen said.

Xiao Tianfang said in embarrassment, “Elder Zhou, your pot is amazing, but our Xiao family can’t compare to you. Without a pot that can store the Ice Silkworms, we aren’t

able to take them back. We originally wanted this Kuman Nee to control them, but now that Kuman Nee is to be transferred to you, there’s really no other way. Can you lend us the Gu pot for a while? Once it’s successfully tamed, we’ll definitely return it immediately.”

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 802 - Growing Flesh

Chapter 802: Growing Flesh

Zhou Wen thought to himself, *This Xiao Tianfang sure is greedy. He's already eyeing the Gu pot.*

However, this was exactly what Zhou Wen wanted. Zhou Wen said indifferently, "It's just a Gu pot. I have plenty of them. It's nothing. Just take it back. There's no need to return it."

"Elder Zhou, are you serious?" Xiao Tianfang was overjoyed. He even had the urge to kneel and kowtow to Zhou Wen.

"The premise is that your Kuman Nee is really the reincarnation of the Gu God. If I discover anything amiss, I'm afraid your Xiao family won't be able to remain safe, much less continue possessing the Ice Silkworms and Gu pot," Zhou Wen said indifferently.

Xiao Tianfang was alarmed. The joy in his heart subsided a little as he said solemnly, "Don't worry. This Kuman Nee is definitely refined from the Gu God's reincarnation. Furthermore, it was personally refined by me. There's no mistake. If I lied, I'm willing to have ten thousand Gu drill through my heart."

Xiao Tianfang swore and told the truth.

"Then I'm relieved. Unlock her Intrinsic Lock," Zhou Wen said.

“Do I do it directly? Do you want me to transfer the Intrinsic Lock directly to you?” Xiao Tianfang asked in puzzlement.

“There’s no need. If I can’t even suppress a Mythical Kuman Nee, I would have wasted all my years studying Kuman Thong,” Zhou Wen said indifferently.

“Alright.” Xiao Tianfang felt that Zhou Wen was indeed a big shot. He didn’t even think much of the Mythical Kuman Nee. It was no wonder he could be Worm Dugu’s uncle-master.

Thinking of how Zhou Wen could easily subdue the Ice Silkworm Gu Kings, he didn’t hesitate any further.

He handed the Kuman Nee to Zhou Wen and took out a pouch. Holding it, he bit his tongue and spat out a mouthful of blood onto it.

The moment his blood touched the pouch, the pouch burst into flames. As the pouch was destroyed, the Kuman Nee in Zhou Wen’s hand trembled.

Xiao Tianfang’s expression turned nasty as well. His face was pale as cold sweat instantly covered his forehead. He looked to be in extreme pain.

Zhou Wen had consulted Gu Shanshui and knew that this Intrinsic Lock connected Kuman Nee to his life. If it was removed, it would also cause great damage to him.

Xiao Tianfang was willing to release the Intrinsic Lock likely because he was unable to completely control Gu Lady. Instead, he had suffered a backlash from Gu Lady’s power. He had been tormented over the years.

Now that he could finally be liberated of Gu Lady, he was even more eager than Zhou Wen.

With the two Ice Silkworm Gu Kings and the Gu pot, the Xiao family's future would definitely be better than before. The pain of Gu Lady's backlash would also be a thing of the past.

Crack!

After the pouch was completely burned, something on Kuman Nee's skull seemed to shatter. Zhou Wen took a look and saw a drop of blood seeping out from the top of the skull.

Xiao Tianfang let out a cry and spat out a mouthful of blood. It looked like his injuries weren't light.

"Elder Zhou, quickly suppress Kuman Nee. Don't let her escape," Xiao Tianfang said as he endured the pain.

He wasn't afraid that Gu Lady would escape. After all, he had already sold her to Zhou Wen. It didn't matter if she ran or not. He was just afraid that she would find trouble with him.

"The deal is closed. It's time for me to leave." Zhou Wen grabbed the Kuman Nee and injected a stream of Essence Energy into her. Kuman Nee was immediately enveloped by Essence Energy before he placed her in the bag and stood up.

"Someone, take Elder Zhou back." Xiao Tianfang called for someone and said, "Elder Zhou, take care. I'm not feeling well, so I won't be sending you off."

"Recuperate well. You are quite injured after breaking the Intrinsic Lock." With that said, Zhou Wen left with the Kuman Nee.

Xiao Liuqi came over and asked nervously and excitedly, “Tianfang, did we really close the deal? Did we really exchange for the two Ice Silkworm Gu Kings?”

“Yes. It’s those two Ice Silkworm Gu Kings without a doubt. There’s still the mark we left on them. There’s no mistake.” Xiao Tianfang was also very excited. “That Elder Zhou doesn’t know that there’s something wrong with Gu Lady and thinks that he got the better deal. Now that we have two Ice Silkworm Gu Kings, and I’ve removed the backlash from my body, the two of us will each have one Ice Silkworm Gu King. In two to three years, after we tame them, our Xiao family will have a chance to advance further. By the way, look at this Gu pot. It’s an amazing Gu pot.”

Xiao Tianfang opened the Gu pot and showed Xiao Liuqi see the Ice Silkworms. He even demonstrated the functions of the Gu pot.

“Elder Zhou casually gave us such a treasure. What a fool,” Xiao Liuqi sighed.

Zhou Wen had already walked far away, but Truth Listener still allowed him to hear the conversation between the two brothers clearly. He couldn’t help but sneer inwardly. I wonder who’s the fool.

Gu Lady could easily make the Ice Silkworms obey her orders, making her a truly terrifying existence. The Xiao brothers didn’t know the precious treasure they had and imagined that they got the better deal from exchanging two Ice Silkworm Gu Kings.

As for the so-called treasure Gu pot, although it was indeed extraordinary, it was impossible to restrain the Ice Silkworm Gu Kings.

The reason they obediently remained inside was that Gu Lady was making them cooperate. Otherwise, they would have long rushed out.

The Xiao brothers treated them as treasures, but they didn’t know that they would be taking their lives.

After Gu Lady obtained freedom, she wanted to attack the Xiao brothers, but Zhou Wen held her Kuman Nee down, preventing her from taking revenge.

After all, Zhou Wen was trading with the Xiao brothers in the name of the Dugu family. If he killed them now, it wouldn’t be good for the Dugu family’s reputation.

Worm Dugu had already helped him in the act, so he didn’t want to implicate the Dugu family.

“There’s no rush. You are already free. There are still two Ice Silkworm Gu Kings by their side. Are you still afraid of not getting your revenge?” Zhou Wen touched the agitated Kuman Nee in his backpack and whispered.

The Kuman Nee slowly calmed down. After the Intrinsic Lock was removed, Gu Lady entered the Kuman Nee.

Previously, due to the restriction of the Intrinsic Lock, she couldn’t even return to her body. She could only listen to Xiao Tianfang’s orders and work for him. Otherwise, Xiao Tianfang could easily have killed her.

However, it was different now. The Intrinsic Lock was removed and Gu Lady was no longer restricted.

After meeting up with Li Xuan and Worm Dugu, the trio returned to their residence.

On the way back, Worm Dugu asked with a smile, “Uncle-Master, my acting isn’t bad, right?”

“Not bad. It’s just a little exaggerated,” Zhou Wen said with a smile.

“Only exaggerated acting can be acknowledged by others. Didn’t Xiao Tianfang end up believing it? On account of my age and how hard I’ve worked to participate in your act, shouldn’t you consider teaching me a few tricks on how to adopt a phoenix?” Worm Dugu said.

“The trick is to find a phoenix and be fancied by it.” Zhou Wen was speaking the truth, but his honest words left Worm Dugu depressed.

On the way back, Zhou Wen felt that something was amiss with the Kuman Nee. The jade-like bones were slowly growing. Not only was the bone expanding, but there were also flesh and blood vessels growing on it.

What’s going on? Could she have come back to life? Zhou Wen was alarmed as he hurriedly stored her into the chaos space. Otherwise, it would be too shocking if others saw her.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 803 - Ya'er

Chapter 803: Ya’er

Translator: CKtalon

Crack!

The crystal container outside the Kuman Nee shattered and the Corpse Oil inside flowed out.

Kuman Nee was already too big for a container. Her flesh was full, and her skin grew out. This was followed by her hair and nails.

In just a moment, the originally shrunken and blurry Kuman Nee became a healthy-looking baby.

The fair and tender baby looked no different from a normal baby, but upon careful inspection of her body, one would discover that her heart wasn’t beating, and the blood in her body wasn’t circulating.

She could be said to be dead, but everything about her was normal. There was life in her body, and even her eyes were open. She was like a normal baby, but she didn’t even have a heart. It was difficult to understand if she was dead or alive.

When Zhou Wen returned to his residence, the baby had already grown to the size of a one-year-old toddler. However, it looked like it had stopped growing.

Zhou Wen originally imagined that it would grow to the size of Gu Lady, but to his surprise, it stopped growing.

Could it be that she was affected by the chaos space when I placed her inside? Zhou Wen took the girl out and bathed her. He washed the Corpse Oil off her body and placed her on the bed.

However, the female toddler didn’t continue growing. She remained as big as before as she sat on the bed and looked at Zhou Wen expressionlessly.

Zhou Wen took out a set of clothes he had bought for Demonic Neonate from the chaos space. He had originally planned on letting Demonic Neonate wear them when she had nothing to do for fun, but now, they came in handy.

However, she was slightly smaller than Demonic Neonate, so the clothes would be oversized when she put them on. However, these were the most suitable clothes Zhou Wen could find for her. She would have to make do with them and wait till he bought more for her in the future.

“Do you know how to put clothes on?” Zhou Wen asked the girl.

The girl shook her head and continued looking at Zhou Wen.

Could it be that she has become a child, and even her intelligence has regressed? Zhou Wen had no choice but to help her put them on. Then, he looked at the girl sitting on the bed and asked, “Do you still remember me?”

Zhou Wen didn’t know what was happening. The knowledge he learned from Gu Shanshui didn’t include this.

According to Gu Shanshui, if there were no restrictions, the spirit body could return to its original body, but it wouldn’t revive. It only had autonomy.

Typically, Kuman Nee, who had autonomy, were very dangerous. As they died unjustly, their resentment wouldn’t dissipate, and they would constantly harm others.

Zhou Wen didn’t wish to rear Gu Lady like Xiao Tianfang, so he didn’t plan on turning her into his Kuman Nee. Instead, he planned on using another method to take her away.

However, to his surprise, before Zhou Wen used that method, Gu Lady came alive and turned into a baby. The method Gu Shanshui had taught him was probably useless.

The girl nodded. It looked like she still remembered him.

“From the looks of it, you still have your memories.” Zhou Wen heaved a sigh of relief. It was easy if she still had her memories.

“Now that you are free, what plans do you have?” Zhou Wen asked the girl.

The girl looked at Zhou Wen without answering, as though she didn’t know what he meant.

“I mean, where do you want to go in the future?” Zhou Wen was afraid that she wouldn’t understand, so he changed his phrasing.

The girl continued looking at him without saying a word. It was unknown if she understood him.

“Well… What’s your name?” Zhou Wen wanted to call her by name, but he realized that he definitely didn’t know her name. He couldn’t call her Gu Lady like Xiao Tianfang, right? She probably wouldn’t like that form of address.

The girl finally reacted and shook her head at Zhou Wen.

“You don’t have a name?” Zhou Wen asked.

Seeing the girl nod, Zhou Wen knew that he had guessed correctly. After some thought, he said, “Shall I give you a name then?”

The girl nodded again. This made Zhou Wen know that she could understand him. Her intelligence didn’t regress, but for some reason, she couldn’t speak.

Zhou Wen seriously considered for a while before sizing up the girl. Then, he carefully asked, “What do you think of the name Xiaoli?”

The girl remained expressionless, but she subtly turned her face away.

“Don’t like it? How about Xiaona?” Zhou Wen asked after some thought.

The girl was expressionless as though she hadn’t heard Zhou Wen. She raised her arm and pointed at Zhou Wen’s chest.

Zhou Wen looked down and realized that there was nothing but clothes on his chest. There were no patterns or words.

Could it be… She’s referring to this… Zhou Wen reached into his collar and took out a pendant akin to ivory.

This was a pendant carved by Wang Mingyuan. It was said to be carved from the tooth of the White Dragon in Old Dragon’s Well. As for the origins of the dragon’s tooth, it was said that Eldest Senior Brother Liu Yun had stolen it from Old Dragon’s Well. However, Wang Mingyuan said that he had picked it up himself.

She can still see through things. From the looks of it, she still has her powers. Zhou Wen knew that he had guessed correctly when he saw the girl's finger track the pendant as he moved it.

"You want to use this pendant as a name? Got it. It's carved from a dragon's tooth, so you want to be called Xiaolong, right?" Zhou Wen was enlightened.

The girl was expressionless as she stared at him without any reaction. After staring at him for quite some time without blinking, Zhou Wen felt a little creeped out.

"That's not it? What about Xiaoya?" Zhou Wen asked guiltily.

The girl looked at Zhou Wen with a strange look before slowly nodding.

Zhou Wen looked at the girl's eyes and felt that she was about to give up. He also didn't feel too good about it, so he thought for a moment and said, "Xiaoya doesn't sound nice. It doesn't sound like a girl's name. Why don't we call you Ya'er? This 'ya' means sprouting. I hope you can grow up quickly."

The girl nodded slightly. Although it was still a little forced, she didn't have the look of giving up like before.

"Alright, I'll call you Ya'er from now on." Zhou Wen wiped the sweat off his forehead and looked at Ya'er. "Ya'er, can you still control the Ice Silkworm Gu Kings?"

Ya'er nodded and Zhou Wen felt relieved. If Ya'er couldn't control the Ice Silkworm Gu Kings, his plan would fail. Although the outcome might still be the same, Zhou Wen didn't like things that he couldn't control.

“Can you still make others not see you?” Zhou Wen asked again.

This time, Ya’er shook her head. Clearly, she could no longer exist in her spirit body state.

Zhou Wen asked some more questions and roughly gained an understanding of Ya’er, but what he knew remained limited. She couldn’t speak, so Zhou Wen could only probe.

Now, he only knew that Ya’er’s ability, memory, and intelligence hadn’t changed. It was the same as before, but for some reason, her body had stopped growing.

Is she considered a living person now? Zhou Wen couldn’t determine Ya’er’s situation, so he could only ask her, “What do you want to do now?”

“Kill.” Ya’er actually said one word.

“So you can speak?” Zhou Wen looked at Ya’er in shock. He had been gesturing for so long, but it turned out that Ya’er could speak.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 804 - Annihilation

Chapter 804: Annihilation

However, when Zhou Wen asked her again, she only nodded and shook her head without saying another word.

Could it be that she only knows one word? Although Zhou Wen felt that it was unlikely and there was no reason for her to only say one word, there was nothing he could do if Ya'er didn't wish to speak.

Ya'er suddenly stood up and walked out. However, after taking two steps, her legs went limp and she fell to the ground. From the looks of it, her body's strength was about the same as an ordinary toddler's.

Ya'er frowned slightly as her eyes narrowed, causing her body to levitate.

How strange. Her mental strength is still as strong as before. It's at the Mythical level, but her body is as weak as a baby. Zhou Wen found it odd.

Just as Zhou Wen was about to say something to her, he saw her fly out the window and head for the Xiao family.

Zhou Wen was afraid that something would happen, so he put on the Invisibility Cloak and followed.

Inside the Xiao family, Xiao Tianfang and Xiao Liuqi were preparing to tame the Ice Silkworms. They couldn't wait to tame them successfully.

“What a treasure. A powerful Gu like the Ice Silkworm Gu King is actually trapped inside without the ability to rush out. It’s much easier for us to tame them,” Xiao Liuqi said as he looked at the Ice Silkworms inside.

Xiao Tianfang was also observing the two Ice Silkworms. The two Ice Silkworms seemed to be tired from crawling around inside. They were motionless inside, probably resting.

Xiao Liuqi took out a Gu and tied it to a rope before throwing it into the Essence Gold Pot. This was food that Ice Silkworms liked to eat. He had to use this method to entice the Ice Silkworms, but he wouldn’t let them eat it. Then, he would gradually train them.

Xiao Liuqi placed the Gu inside and was about to pull the Gu out when the Ice Silkworm took action. However, to his surprise, an Ice Silkworm swallowed the Gu. Its speed was shockingly fast, giving him no time to pull out the Gu.

“The Ice Silkworms are too fast. I doubt it will be easy taming them.” Xiao Liuqi was just about to pull out the rope and get another Gu when the Ice Silkworm inside the pot phased away suddenly, appearing on the edge of the pot.

Alarmed, Xiao Liuqi and Xiao Tianfang quickly retreated.

“How did that happen?” Xiao Tianfang was alarmed. He felt that something was amiss.

Before Xiao Liuqi could say anything, another Ice Silkworm crawled out as though the Essence Gold Pot had lost its effect.

The two of them ran out without any hesitation. After they left the secret chamber, they were stunned by the scene in front of them.

In the huge temple, there were all sorts of Gu crawling everywhere. The Xiao family members were fighting with their Gu. What was even more terrifying was that the Gu they had domesticated now betrayed their masters and attacked them. There were screams and blood splattering everywhere.

“How did this happen? What happened?” Xiao Tianfang’s eyes turned red. The entire temple seemed to have turned into hell.

“There’s a problem. There must be a problem. It must be that Zhou guy. He didn’t want to give us the Ice Silkworms at all…” Xiao Liuqi felt despair. The Xiao family already had many Gu. Now, all of them had betrayed them. Even the Mythical-level Blood Scorpion Gu had rushed out and was engaging in wanton slaughter.

There were also a few Mythical Gu they had previously captured that were doing the same.

Any one of them was already very difficult to deal with, much less with so many Gu. It was already impossible for them to rush out of the temple.

“Zhou, even if I become a ghost after death, I won’t let you off,” Xiao Tianfang shouted in grief and indignation.

In the sky, a figure slowly descended. Xiao Tianfang and Xiao Liuqi looked over and realized that it was a one-year-old girl.

However, the girl’s face didn’t have the innocence and cuteness a child should have. She was completely expressionless other than her cold expression. She floated in the air and looked down coldly at Xiao Tianfang and Xiao Liuqi.

The surrounding Gu killed wantonly, but no Gu attacked Xiao Tianfang and Xiao Liuqi.

Xiao Tianfang carefully sized up Ya'er and suddenly pointed at her as he shouted in horror, "Gu Lady… You're Gu Lady… How is this possible…"

After all, he had once been connected to Ya'er at an intrinsic level. He was all too familiar with her aura. Although the Intrinsic Lock had been removed, he could still sense the unique aura from Ya'er.

"How can she be Gu Lady? That's impossible, right?" Xiao Liuqi naturally didn't believe that the girl in front of him was Gu Lady.

Kuman Nee couldn't be revived. The little girl in front of them was clearly a living person.

"Liuqi, are you silly? Apart from Gu Lady, who else can control so many Gu? Who can make all our Gu betray us? Also, the aura from her is definitely Gu Lady…" Xiao Tianfang said in horror.

At that moment, the two Ice Silkworms crawled out as transparent wings grew from their backs. They flew to the side of Gu Lady as though they were protecting her.

Xiao Tianfang suddenly seemed to understand something as his body trembled. He gritted his teeth and said, "I get it. I get it now. So that Zhou fellow isn't capable at all. The treasure pot and the ease at subduing the Ice Silkworms were all fake. Gu Lady was able to subdue the Ice Silkworms. She was the one controlling the Ice Silkworms… We actually didn't realize that her strength had already reached such a level…"

Xiao Liuqi was also horrified. His face was filled with despair. “It’s over, Tianfang. We’re doomed this time… We shouldn’t have targeted her back then… Now, she’s here for revenge…”

Everyone in the Xiao family was dead. Gu swarmed over like a tidal wave, surrounding the two of them in the middle. The entire temple was drowned by Gu, leaving only the spot where they stood without any Gu.

“You… deserve death…” With her voice, the tidal-like Gu rushed towards them.

The Xiao brothers fought with all their might, but they were quickly drowned by Gu. Countless Gu drilled into their bodies and tore at their organs and flesh.

Amidst the inhuman screams, the Xiao brothers were eaten until there was nothing left.

Zhou Wen remained in midair and couldn’t help but frown when he saw the Xiao family’s tragic state. He was also somewhat worried.

It was understandable that Ya’er wanted revenge, but it was indeed a little too ruthless to kill everyone without any discrimination. It wasn’t necessarily true that everyone in the Xiao family was bad, and not everyone had done evil.

Zhou Wen didn’t pity the Xiao family, but he was afraid of Ya’er’s character. If he kept her by his side in the future, if he or the people around him angered her one day, would she treat him and his friends the same way she treated the Xiao family?

While Zhou Wen was still pondering over it, the Gu began to disperse. Moments later, not a single one was left. Only Ya’er

flew over with two Ice Silkworms.

Zhou Wen took out the Essence Gold Pot that Worm Dugu had given him and the two Ice Silkworms obediently crawled in.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 805 - Dragon Gods

Chapter 805: Dragon Gods

Translator: CKtalon

“Now that you’re free, you can go anywhere you want to go or do whatever you want,” Zhou Wen said to Ya’er.

However, Ya’er just looked at Zhou Wen without saying a word. She clearly knew how to speak, but for some reason, she didn’t say a word.

“Do you have anywhere you want to go or anything you want to do?” Zhou Wen asked again.

Ya’er shook her head slightly. She had been refined into a Kuman Nee by the Xiao brothers before she was even born. She probably didn’t know where she wanted to go or what she wanted.

“Then follow me. However, if you follow me, I have a few requests. If you can do it, you can follow me. If you can’t, you should head off by yourself,” Zhou Wen said to Ya’er.

Ya’er didn’t say a word as she looked at Zhou Wen.

“Firstly, you are to follow my orders. Without my orders, you are not to injure others. Secondly, you are not to use Gu to harm others without my permission. Thirdly, you can reason with me, but you have to listen to me in the end. Fourthly, don’t casually show your strength in front of others… Can you do it?” Zhou Wen asked Ya’er.

Ya’er looked at Zhou Wen and nodded without any hesitation. He did not know if she had really understood.

Zhou Wen felt odd seeing Ya’er nod. Although he was somewhat happy, he was also somewhat worried.

Even Zhou Wen wasn’t sure if Ya’er could be considered a human. If she still had the taboos of a Kuman Nee, she would probably spell trouble in the future.

However, at this point, Zhou Wen had no choice but to take her back.

He brought Ya’er along to buy some clothes. Although she didn’t say a word, she was very obedient. She did whatever Zhou Wen said. She looked like an ordinary, obedient child. She didn’t show any of the ruthlessness she had when destroying the Xiao family at all.

“Old Zhou, where did you abduct this child?” Li Xuan asked in surprise when he saw Zhou Wen return with a child.

“I picked her up on the way,” Zhou Wen answered.

“Could she be lost?” Li Xuan asked.

“No, I went to a dimensional zone where Gu appear. No one will take a child there,” Zhou Wen said.

“Who’s so heartless to abandon such a cute little girl?” Li Xuan looked at the girl with pity.

“I don’t know, but I plan on adopting her and bringing her with me.” Zhou Wen took out the Gu pot and handed it to Li Xuan. “The two Ice Silkworms are inside.”

“How’s the Xiao family?” Li Xuan asked with an odd expression as he held the Gu pot.

“It was destroyed by the Kuman Nee.” Zhou Wen didn’t elaborate because the scene was too tragic.

“They deserved it. How were they unafraid of the wrath of heaven to actually kill someone and dig out the baby?” Li Xuan said.

“Does this child have a name?” Li Xuan asked as he stroked her head.

“Ya’er, a name I gave her.” Zhou Wen felt relieved when he saw Ya’er not exhibiting any special reactions towards Li Xuan’s stroking of her head.

“What kind of name is this? How can such a cute little girl use such a name? You should at least call her Crescent or something. Even the common Xiaoya is way better than Ya’er, right? No, no, you have to give her a new name.” Li Xuan immediately shook his head when he heard Ya’er’s name.

“Let’s talk about it when I register her in the future. Let’s just treat Ya’er as a nickname.” Zhou Wen really didn’t know how to give names. It gave him a headache.

…

Soon, the Xiao family’s overnight destruction was discovered. Many people went to take a look and realized that there were traces of a large number of Gu. They guessed that the Xiao family had been destroyed by Gu, but no one knew the exact details.

The number one Xiao family in Chiang Rai was destroyed overnight. This became a legend in Chiang Rai. There were all kinds of stories.

Li Xuan planned on visiting the Dugu family with Worm Dugu to learn about Gu, but Zhou Wen stayed behind. As there was still no concrete news from Primordial Spore, he wanted to wait and see.

The Primordial Spore hadn’t successfully parasitized the dragon, but it hadn’t died either. Zhou Wen didn’t know what was happening.

Li Mobai also returned to Luoyang with Butterfly and Mute. Gu Shanshui even called and said that he had found a way to trap the Corpse Bug and wanted Zhou Wen to retrieve the calabash.

Zhou Wen was temporarily unable to head to Mong Hsat, so Gu Shanshui got Gu Lou to deliver the calabash to him.

Zhou Wen waited for news of the Primordial Spore while grinding.

Ancient Sword Tomb and Valley of No Return were excellent dungeons that produced many good items. Zhou Wen focused on grinding these two dungeons. Together with the Mythical creatures and rare creatures in other dungeons, he had to grind them all every time he respawned.

Zhou Wen went to the snow valley on the right side of the Valley of No Return a few times, but the blood-colored avatar would quickly die every time he entered. It was fine flying in the air, but when he was in the air, he could only see the snow-covered valley with no Gu to be seen.

Up to now, Zhou Wen still didn’t understand why the blood-colored avatar would die in the snow.

With Truth Listener and Supreme Hell King’s abilities, if a Gu is hidden in the snow, I should be able to sense it no matter

how tiny it is. Furthermore, there's no reaction from the Heaven-Opening Scripture of the Highest Elder. This means that it's not a taboo power. What killed the blood-colored avatar? Zhou Wen studied it for a while but failed to find the secret of the snow valley.

Zhou Wen guessed that most of the people who entered the Valley of No Return had died in the snow valley.

After all, those who dared to go there were experts at nurturing Gu. Many would have the means to deal with the Gu in the first few areas of the valley. However, the snow valley was not something that could be simply dealt with using Gu knowledge.

While Zhou Wen was gaming, Ya'er sat on the stool and watched him. She didn't make a fuss.

Although Ya'er didn't have a heartbeat, she wasn't much different from a normal child. She also needed to eat to grow. Zhou Wen could sense that she was slowly growing at a speed similar to a normal child.

...

In a world that resembled a mystic realm, there was a huge palace that stood at the peak of a mountain. At the top of the palace was a huge statue that looked like a snake or a dragon, but it wasn't either of them.

On the mountain that resembled a heavenly pillar, there was only a stone staircase that led up the mountain. It extended from the foot of the mountain all the way to the top of the mountain.

At that moment, a white-robed man with lightning bolts running through his body walked to the stone steps.

“Wang Mingyuan, you’re not guarding the divine tree and have actually dared to leave without permission. You’ve even come to Dragon God Mountain. Don’t you know that this is the place where the Dragon Gods live? It’s not a place a mixed-breed like you can come. Are you tired of living?” A monster with a human torso and a snake tail blocked Wang Mingyuan’s path.

“From now on, I’m the king of the Dragon Gods,” Wang Mingyuan said calmly.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 806 - Calamity Grade

Chapter 806: Calamity Grade

The snake-tailed monster guarding the stone steps appeared to have heard the funniest joke in the world. It laughed to the point of having tears stream down its face.

“You really think too highly of yourself. Don’t tell me you really think that advancing to the Mythical stage is that impressive? In the dimensional wars, the so-called Mythical stage of you humans is just cannon fodder. This is because only by reaching that level can one cross dimensions without being killed by the barriers of the different dimensions. Only ancient forbidden zones like Earth will treat the Mythical stage as something important.”

The monster continued contemptuously, “Just like how humans on Earth can’t survive in space because it doesn’t have the oxygen and other conditions you need to survive there. Becoming a Mythical stage merely means that you humans have learned how to survive in an environment without oxygen.”

“There’s naturally hope if one can learn to breathe and end up surviving,” Wang Mingyuan said.

“You need hope only for the impossible. There’s no way you can fathom what kind of existence the Dragon King is. If an ant like you hadn’t come out of the ancient forbidden land, you wouldn’t even be qualified to be a servant for the Dragon Gods, much less guard the divine tree. Yet, you actually dare to challenge the Dragon King? You’re tempting fate. There’s no need to look for the Dragon King. I’ll show

you what true strength is today," the monster said as a strange power arose from its body. It struck out at Wang Mingyuan with its hand.

The terrifying power transformed into a giant snake that tore towards Wang Mingyuan in a bid to devour him. This casual strike was so powerful that it could match Tyrant Behemoth in its Absolute Strength state.

Wang Mingyuan continued walking towards the stone steps, ignoring the terrifying snake attack.

However, when the giant snake came in front of him, it automatically disintegrated and turned into nothingness in the blink of an eye.

"You actually broke through the dimensional barrier? However, do you think that you have the right to fight our Dragon Gods? Aren't you being too arrogant?" Although the monster was arrogant, its expression turned solemn. It no longer wore a supercilious look.

Seeing Wang Mingyuan walk over step by step, the monster clasped its hands together and presented a strange offensive stance, like a venomous snake that could devour its enemy at any moment.

"I'll show you the true power of us Dragon Gods… Dragon God Descent…" As the monster roared, the strange power on its body was pushed to its limits. A terrifying power immediately swept through the entire space. Giant snakes of light shot out with apocalyptic might, bombarding Wang Mingyuan from all directions.

Countless giant snakes tried to devour Wang Mingyuan, but when they reached him, they automatically disintegrated.

They couldn’t touch his body at all as though his body was protected by a deity.

“How… How is this possible…” The monster was alarmed when it saw that its Dragon God Descent, which had been unleashed to its limits, failed to touch Wang Mingyuan’s clothes.

As for Wang Mingyuan, he was less than three meters away from him. The stone steps leading up the mountain were already right in front of him.

“Dragons aren’t like that.” Wang Mingyuan glanced at the monster and waved his hand gently. The monster’s body seemed to be grabbed by an invisible hand as it was thrown.

Boom!

Its body slammed into the stone wall, creating a crater. Its bones seemed to have shattered and its body was covered in blood. It struggled a few times but failed to stand up. It only spat out a mouthful of blood.

“You advanced to the Calamity grade?” The monster looked at Wang Mingyuan in horror as though it had seen a ghost.

It hadn’t been long since Wang Mingyuan advanced to the Mythical stage and used the powers of the six Holy Temples to break through the dimensional barrier and enter the dimensional zone. He had even suffered the punishment of lightning smiting. Yet, he had advanced to the Calamity grade so quickly. This was just too shocking.

Even among the Octokind, which were born Mythical, there was only a handful who could advance to the Calamity grade so quickly.

Wang Mingyuan didn’t answer as he stepped onto the stone steps and walked towards the Dragon God Temple.

“Even if you’ve advanced to the Calamity grade, you are just an ant in front of the mighty Dragon King…” The monster roared, but it didn’t get a response.

…

Zhou Wen waited for the news of the Primordial Spore’s success or failure. As it was too far away, he couldn’t retrieve it. He couldn’t help but feel anxious.

From the looks of it, I’ll have to make another trip to Dragon Corpse River and find the Dragon King Gu. Even if I can’t successfully parasitize it, I have to take back Primordial Spore. With Tai Sui, the chick, and Ya’er beside him, Zhou Wen wasn’t afraid of Gu at all, so he planned on making a trip to Dragon Corpse River himself.

Zhou Wen didn’t know the family that built the boats, nor did he plan on spending a large sum of money to buy a special boat. He bought an ordinary speedboat and got it transported to Dragon Corpse River.

“Friend, why did you bring a speedboat to Dragon Corpse River?” A person who was prepared to enter Dragon Corpse River to capture Gu saw Zhou Wen’s speedboat and asked curiously.

“To enter the river to catch Gu,” Zhou Wen answered.

The person sized up Zhou Wen and asked, “Friend, are you from overseas?”

“I just came to Chiang Rai a few days ago,” Zhou Wen answered truthfully.

“Then it’s no wonder. I’m afraid you don’t know the taboo of Dragon Corpse River. Typical boats will be attacked by Gu when they enter the river. You have to first get a special Gu-proof boat,” the person warned.

“Typical Gu probably wouldn’t attack my boat,” Zhou Wen said as he picked up Ya’er and boarded the speedboat. He started the speedboat’s engine and set off into Dragon Corpse River.

The person said to the disciple beside him, “That young man has really gone mad. He has actually driven a speedboat into the Dragon Corpse River. Although the engine won’t stall in Dragon Corpse River, the Gu in Dragon Corpse River will be attracted by the sound of the engine. When they crawl into the engine and cause damage to the engine, it will be impossible for him to come out again. To think he brought a child with him. He’s really hopeless.”

“This person is clearly from the East District and is very arrogant. If he wants to die, we can’t stop him,” the disciple said with a twitch of his lips.

Zhou Wen steered the speedboat while the chick and Tai Sui stood on each side of the boat. As for Ya’er, she sat beside Zhou Wen and sized up Dragon Corpse River curiously.

The Gu in Dragon Corpse River sensed the chick’s aura and didn’t dare approach the speedboat.

However, with a wave of her hand, a few Gu approached and swam beside the speedboat as though they were protecting it.

Since I’ve gotten the calabash back, should I use Ya’er to subdue some Gu? Zhou Wen thought to himself.

Zhou Wen naturally wasn’t interested in ordinary Gu. If he really planned on subduing any, they would at least be Gu at the level of the Ice Silkworms. It would be even better if he could subdue the Dragon King Gu.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 807 - Collecting Dragon King Gu

Chapter 807: Collecting Dragon King Gu

The speedboat was much faster than the wooden boat as it sped across the river. Zhou Wen could clearly sense that he was getting closer and closer to Primordial Spore as the connection was getting stronger.

To people who reared Gu, the Dragon Corpse River was as dangerous as hell, but it was nothing to Zhou Wen. As he sped forward, he quickly sensed the location of Primordial Spore.

Zhou Wen could sense that Primordial Spore was beneath the boat. Furthermore, he could sense that the massive creature, Dragon King Gu, was also below.

As they were very close, Zhou Wen could sense it more clearly. Primordial Spore had been trying to parasitize the Dragon King Gu and control its body.

However, the Dragon King Gu was different from ordinary Mythical creatures. Its body was an agglomerate; likewise for its soul—countless souls gathered together. Primordial Spore attempted to parasitize the Dragon King Gu’s soul only to realize that it could only control a portion of the souls. No matter which part it parasitized, it couldn’t completely control the Dragon King Gu. This resulted in the current deadlock.

It was easy to parasitize a soul, but it was impossible to control the Dragon King Gu. Unless Primordial Spore split into thousands of small Primordial Spores and proceeded with a complete parasitization, it was possible to truly control the Dragon King Gu.

“Ya’er, can you control the Dragon King Gu below?” Zhou Wen placed his hopes on Ya’er.

However, Ya’er shook her head. She couldn’t control the Dragon King Gu.

“Is it because it’s too powerful?” Zhou Wen asked Ya’er.

Although Ya’er had the ability to control Gu, there was a limit. The Dragon King Gu was already a top-notch Mythical creature, so it was normal for Ya’er to be unable to control it with her mind.

To his surprise, Ya’er shook it again. However, this time, she finally spoke. “Can’t communicate.”

“You mean that you control Gu because you can communicate with them, and you can’t control Gu that can’t you communicate with or those that are unwilling to cooperate?” Zhou Wen immediately understood Ya’er’s ability.

Ya’er nodded. From the looks of it, Zhou Wen’s guess was right.

However, for some reason, Ya’er and the Dragon King Gu couldn’t communicate. As such, Zhou Wen’s hope of using Ya’er’s ability to subdue the Dragon King Gu was dashed.

Is there any other way? After some thought, Zhou Wen still couldn’t think of any good solution. Even if he made Tai Sui

transform into a fish and enter the river, it would at most eat a portion of the Dragon King Gu's body. It was impossible to kill it.

With this in mind, Zhou Wen's heart suddenly stirred. *Since I can't subdue it, I wonder if I can store it in the calabash. If I can store it in the calabash, I can feed Tai Sui even if I can't use it. But how can I store such a huge Dragon King Gu in the calabash?*

After plucking it from the vine, the calabash no longer had the ability to take the initiative to store Gu. However, although Gu wouldn't resist entering the calabash, they wouldn't take the initiative to enter either.

From the looks of it, I can only use the tactic of cornering it. Zhou Wen used Truth Listener's ability to scout the terrain at the bottom of the river before summoning Tai Sui.

Zhou Wen first got Tai Sui to use its mimicking ability to turn into a tiny Ancient Tadpole. However, the Ancient Tadpole that Tai Sui transformed into was white. It was different in color from the real Ancient Tadpole, but its external appearance was no different.

After lowering Tai Sui into the river, it swam towards the bottom of the river.

Zhou Wen put on the Dragon Scale Armor formed by Demon Blood True Dragon. He also put on the Invisibility Cloak and went down the river with the calabash, but he headed in another direction.

The Dragon King Gu had suffered greatly from Tai Sui. It would definitely be afraid if it saw Tai Sui.

However, Tai Sui was previously in the form of the chick. Now that it had turned into an ancient tadpole, the Dragon King Gu failed to recognize it.

Seeing a tadpole dare approach it, the Dragon King Gu unleashed its might and swallowed Tai Sui.

When Tai Sui entered the Dragon King Gu's body, it immediately bit left and right and began devouring the Dragon King Gu's body.

When the Dragon King Gu realized that the tadpole it had swallowed wasn't dead and was still devouring its body, it was alarmed and wanted to get Tai Sui out of its body.

It wasn't a real dragon but condensed from countless tiny Gu. It could control its body freely, so it opened a hole in its abdomen. Tai Sui was devouring its body when it was thrown out.

After Tai Sui came out, it immediately used its mimicking ability and transformed into the Dragon King Gu. The two Dragon King Gu appeared at the bottom of the river and it was almost impossible to tell which was the real one.

However, the real Dragon King Gu could change its color, but Tai Sui remained white the entire time. People in the know could easily tell.

Unfortunately, Tai Sui's mimicking ability was only superficial. No matter how big and fierce it became, its strength was still as weak. It didn't have the abilities of the Dragon King Gu; only its appearance was more frightening.

However, the Dragon King Gu was frightened. Tai Sui was its nemesis to begin with. Now that it had become so huge, the

Dragon King Gu was afraid that it would be swallowed by Tai Sui, so it immediately fled.

Tai Sui’s speed couldn’t keep up with the Dragon King Gu, so it could only chase after it slowly. Looking like the Dragon King Gu was useless, and it didn’t have the speed of the Dragon King Gu, so it couldn’t catch up.

The Dragon King Gu was quite frightened. It fled in a panic, hoping to stay as far away from Tai Sui as possible.

Zhou Wen used Primordial Spore to take advantage of a portion of the Dragon King Gu’s soul, allowing it to have some effect and affect the direction of the Dragon King Gu’s escape.

The Dragon King Gu chose the correct direction. Zhou Wen was just making sure that things followed his plan.

He stood in invisibility at the narrow mouth at the bottom of the river and watched the Dragon King Gu rush over. When it was close, he suddenly took out the calabash from under the Invisibility Cloak and opened the mouth of the calabash.

The Dragon King Gu immediately slammed into the calabash and half its head drilled in.

Zhou Wen was originally afraid that the Dragon King Gu would resist, but to his surprise, after the Dragon King Gu discovered the space in the calabash, it continued burrowing in. Soon, the entire body of the Dragon King Gu was inside. Zhou Wen capped the calabash and the Dragon King Gu remained inside.

The Dragon King Gu didn’t seem to have any intention of coming out. It stayed inside the calabash and coiled inside obediently when it didn’t see Tai Sui chase after it.

Zhou Wen never expected things to go so smoothly. To his surprise, when he saw Tai Sui swim over, Zhou Wen was somewhat curious. He rode on Tai Sui’s back and got it to rush out of the water with him.

The people that he had encountered previously happened to be nearby. They saw Zhou Wen’s speedboat parked on the river. The girl was still sitting on the boat, but Zhou Wen was nowhere to be seen. They imagined that Zhou Wen had been killed and were about to rescue the girl when they suddenly heard a loud splash.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 808 - Legend of the Gu God

Chapter 808: Legend of the Gu God

Translator: CKtalon

“I’ve already warned that fellow not to drive the speedboat into the Dragon Corpse River, but he refused to listen. I’m afraid he’s dead. That little girl sure is lucky to still be alive. However, without her family, how can she survive at such a young age? What a sin!” As the man spoke, he was about to rush over to help when he suddenly saw a huge creature rush out of the water.

“Heavens… Dragon King Gu… That’s the Dragon King Gu…” The men immediately trembled when they saw the huge creature. They were so frightened that they forgot to escape. Their legs went limp and they couldn’t move at all.

To people who reared Gu, the Dragon King Gu was almost a god-like existence.

But at this moment, they saw the Dragon King Gu lower its head in the direction of the speedboat.

That girl is doomed! They all thought that the Dragon King Gu was going to eat that little girl.

To their surprise, after the Dragon King Gu lowered its head, they saw a person standing on its head. That person jumped down from the Dragon King Gu’s head and landed in the boat.

The group of people couldn’t believe their eyes. Someone actually dared to stand on the Dragon King Gu’s head. Furthermore, the Dragon Corpse River’s river water was

extraordinary. Humans couldn’t touch the river water at all, or they would have the possibility of turning into zombies.

Yet, this person came out with the Dragon King Gu. Clearly, his entire body had already come into contact with the river.

They were even more shocked when they identified the person. That person was actually the young man they had seen previously. He didn’t seem to have suffered any injuries. What was even more exaggerated was that he even patted the head of the Dragon King Gu as though he was comforting his pet.

“Oh my god… Is he the reincarnation of a Gu God? How can the Dragon King Gu let a human touch its noble head…” Everyone was dumbfounded.

Zhou Wen also saw them and got Tai Sui to retreat into the river. It transformed back into an Ancient Tadpole at the bottom of the river and followed beside the speedboat.

Zhou Wen started the speedboat, causing a long wave to ripple across the river as it headed for the Dragon Corpse River’s exit.

“Gu God… That must be the Gu God…” A man shockingly watched the speedboat leave and muttered to himself. “How can humans treat the Dragon King Gu like a pet? Only a god could have such power, and it has to be a Gu God.”

From then on, there were legends of the Dragon King Gu and Gu God in the vicinity of the Dragon Corpse River. Someone even built a Gu God statue near the Dragon Corpse River.

A mysterious young man, holding a little girl’s hand, stood on the head of the Dragon King Gu, as though he was about to ride the dragon to fly away.

Later on, the legend of the Gu God was accepted by more and more people who reared Gu. Many of them in the South District would worship the Gu God, but that was something far into the future.

After taking the Dragon King Gu out of the Dragon Corpse River, Zhou Wen set off for Mong Hsat. After meeting Gu Shanshui, he returned to Luoyang.

Although Mute wasn't around to lead the way, Zhou Wen had already memorized the route. With the chick, Tai Sui, and Ya'er around, he didn't encounter any danger.

On the way back, Zhou Wen kept studying the fusion problem of Ancient Splitting Tadpole. Zhou Wen's ideal combination was to fuse the Ancient Splitting Tadpole and Primordial Spore. If he could produce a Primordial Spore that could split through fusion, he would be invincible.

However, the compatibility between the two was just too low. It wasn't even 20%. Furthermore, he didn't know what the outcome would be after the fusion, so he didn't dare try it.

He matched the few Mythical Companion Beasts he already had with the Ancient Splitting Tadpole and realized that their compatibility was very low. The only one with a higher compatibility was Tai Sui, reaching a compatibility score of 69%.

This made Zhou Wen even more afraid of carrying out the fusion. Although the compatibility was very high, Tai Sui had the ability to restrain microorganisms. Even the Dragon King Gu was afraid of it. If it lost this ability after fusion, it wouldn't be worth it.

Don’t tell me there’s no other fusion choices? Zhou Wen matched the few rare Epic Companion Beasts with the Ancient Splitting Tadpole and realized that the compatibility wasn’t high. The only one that was higher was the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General.

Why is this thing so odd? Those that have a high compatibility with it are strange Companion Beasts. I should wait and see. If there’s really no other choice, I can try the fusion using Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General. Zhou Wen was somewhat depressed as he gave up on the idea of fusing the Ancient Splitting Tadpole.

In fact, Zhou Wen hadn’t spent much time grinding recently because he was studying the First Order of Chaos, hoping to advance his Chaos Egg Life Soul to a Perfect Body.

The First Order of Chaos was like the Dao Sutra. They were Essence Energy Arts that mainly enhanced Essence Energy attributes. Zhou Wen wanted to give it a try and see if the Chaos Egg could raise his stats to 41 points if he advanced to a Perfect Body.

After Zhou Wen’s research, he discovered some ways to use the Chaos Egg. It had a very strong defense. Although it was only a Primordial Body, its defense was comparable to an ordinary Mythical creature’s.

Zhou Wen used Light Concealment Sword to cleave at the Chaos Egg and required two strikes to leave a mark.

If he used the Golden Overlord Sword, he could cleave it apart with one strike.

This was already rather sick. After all, it was only a Primordial Body. If it advanced to a Perfect Body, it might be able to withstand a Mythical attack without any injuries.

Also, Zhou Wen could rapidly recover from his injuries and replenish his Essence Energy inside the Chaos Egg. It was like a high-level recovery device.

The only pity was that the Chaos Egg didn't have any offensive abilities. All it could do was defend and allow self-repair.

As the Chaos Egg's ability was somewhat similar to Li Xuan's Life Soul, Zhou Wen questioned the possibility of the Chaos Egg needing to be shattered before advancing.

He made a few attempts at injuring the Chaos Egg, but it quickly healed without becoming stronger.

Instead, the Chaos Egg seemed to become stronger after it helped treat his wounds.

It can't be… Could it be that this thing can only evolve after treating my injuries? Could it be that I have to seek a beating for no reason? Zhou Wen was extremely depressed when he came to this conclusion.

However, the facts proved that the Chaos Egg was indeed becoming stronger when it healed his body.

Furthermore, the Chaos Egg was very strange. It would only become stronger after it treated different kinds of injuries that Zhou Wen sustained.

If it was the same kind of injury, although it would heal Zhou Wen, it wouldn't become stronger.

I have to choose the style in which I'm beaten up. Isn't this Life Soul too sick? Zhou Wen was so depressed that he nearly gave up on the Essence Energy Art.

However, after some thought, he couldn’t find any other substitute. All he could do was attempt to suffer different injuries in-game before getting the Chaos Egg to help him recover.

Bit by bit, the Chaos Egg grew stronger. By the time Zhou Wen returned to Luoyang, the Chaos Egg was already showing signs of advancing to an Evolved Body.

“Little Wen, did you bring an illegitimate daughter back? Am I going to be a grandmother?” Not long after Zhou Wen returned to Luoyang, Ouyang Lan suddenly visited him. She looked at Ya’er, who was sitting on the sofa, in pleasant surprise.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 809 - Puzzlement

Chapter 809: Puzzlement

Zhou Wen's face darkened as he explained, "Why would I have an illegitimate daughter? I picked her up."

"Picked her up? I thought she was your daughter. I thought my life would be more fun with her in the future." Ouyang Lan was greatly disappointed as though she wished Zhou Wen had ten illegitimate children.

"If you like children, why not adopt one yourself?" Zhou Wen said.

Ouyang Lan rolled her eyes at him. "I have two sons and a daughter. Wouldn't it be embarrassing if I adopted a grandchild? That punk, Tianzuo, is a disappointment. He only knows how to work every day and doesn't even have a partner. I'm counting on you and Little Jing now. Don't be like Tianzuo. Find a wife early and give me a grandchild to play with."

"Sis Lan, I'm only a sophomore. There's no rush, right?" Zhou Wen was rendered speechless.

"Why not? Girls in school are most gullible. If you can't even fool them in school, it will be even harder to find a partner in the future," Ouyang Lan said.

"Uh!" Zhou Wen didn't know what to say.

"Anyway, give it some thought. I think that Wang Lu is quite good. Unfortunately, she will definitely be in charge of the

Wang family in the future. It’s impossible for her to marry out of the family. By the way, didn’t you have a female classmate from Guide High School who was admitted together with you? Her name is Fang Ruoxi, right? I think she’s quite a nice person. She has a huge butt, a sign of being fertile…”

“Sis Lan… Have some tea…” Zhou Wen hurriedly poured a cup of tea for Ouyang Lan, finally stopping her.

Ouyang Lan drank a mouthful of tea and glanced at Ya’er who was sitting there. She asked, “This girl looks pretty good but too bad she’s not your biological daughter. What’s her name?”

“She doesn’t have a name yet. I gave her a nickname—Ya’er,” Zhou Wen answered.

Ouyang Lan sighed and said, “In this era, too many people have died. There are also many orphans. It’s still alright in Luoyang because of the orphanages. At the very least, they still have a way out. If their parents were to die in smaller cities, the orphans would really have no way out. They might be able to live if they were adopted by good people, but in this world, how can there be so many good people?”

“You still need to cultivate and study now. Furthermore, you are still a child yourself. What do you know about bringing up a child? I’ll help you take care of her. If you have the time, come home and visit her,” Ouyang Lan said as she walked in front of Ya’er wanting to hug her.

“Sis Lan, Ya’er isn’t an ordinary child. She’s very sensible. There’s no need for me to take care of her. She knows everything and will do it herself.” Zhou Wen hurriedly stopped Ouyang Lan.

Zhou Wen had seen how ruthless Ya’er was in destroying the Xiao family. He didn’t dare let Ya’er follow Ouyang Lan to the An family. If someone from the An family made her unhappy, the consequences would be unimaginable.

“What can a young child like her know? Don’t worry. I raised Tianzuo and Little Jing myself. I have experience,” Ouyang Lan said as she revealed an amiable smile. She spread open her arms and said to Ya’er, “Ya’er, be good. Come home with Pretty Sister, alright? Pretty Sister has many delicious sweets and beautiful clothes at home.”

Ya’er sat on the sofa and looked at Ouyang Lan before turning her head to the side.

The corners of Ouyang Lan’s eyes twitched before she took two steps to be in front of Ya’er’s face again. She continued, “Follow Pretty Sister, and there’ll be many toys and delicious food.”

Ya’er turned her face to the other side and Ouyang Lan followed.

Zhou Wen was rendered speechless when he saw this. Ouyang Lan had just said that it was meaningless taking care of another person’s children, but now, she was insisting on taking Ya’er back.

“Sis Lan, how’s the investigation on Chu He?” Zhou Wen was afraid that this awkward situation would continue, so he hurriedly changed the topic. Furthermore, Zhou Wen really wanted to know if the Chu He who went to Zhuolu was real or fake.

“On the surface, there’s nothing wrong with the Chu He who went to Zhuolu. All the chronological events matched. If you hadn’t discovered Chu He in Netherworld City, no one would

suspect that there was anything wrong with Zhuolu's Chu He."

Ouyang Lan paused before continuing, "However, because everything about this Chu He is too perfect, it makes me feel that something is amiss, but our investigations have been fruitless. Therefore, I changed the direction of my investigation and investigated all the members of the team. All of them were clean and looked fine on the surface. However, I realized that all of them have something in common."

"What was that?" Zhou Wen immediately asked.

"After these people arrived in Zhuolu, most of them didn't or seldom contacted their families. Although communication isn't very convenient now and there's no signal in Zhuolu, they will return to the encampment at times. It's only natural for them to want to call their family and friends. Even if there are a few workaholics or heartless people among them, it can't be that most of them are such people. I went to visit their relatives and confirmed this matter. They rarely receive calls. Even if there were calls, they were the ones who called. Furthermore, the other party said that they were very busy. They hurriedly hung up after a few sentences."

Zhou Wen frowned when he heard that. "Could it be that many of the people in the former principal's team were impersonated like Chu He?"

"From the looks of it, it's very likely." Ouyang Lan nodded.

"Who did this? What motives does he have?" Zhou Wen said after some thought.

“This is also what puzzles me. Many of those people are authoritative figures in their respective fields. It’s not easy to get someone to impersonate them. Furthermore, they have to do it flawlessly. Such a huge setup isn’t something an ordinary person can do. Doing all of this should be a ploy, but what are they plotting? Zhuolu has already been mostly explored. From the looks of it, there doesn’t seem to be anything that’s worth going to such great lengths,” Ouyang Lan said.

Zhou Wen felt that Ouyang Lan was right. The motive behind such a huge scheme was definitely extraordinary, but what was worth such a setup in Zhuolu?

The former principal and company were only studying Zhuolu. They didn’t have the ability to kill Torch Dragon and Qiongqi. Ignoring Torch Dragon and Qiongqi, even Aoyin could kill them all.

If the other party had the ability to set up such a grand scheme, he could have organized an expedition team himself. There was no need for him to follow the former principal.

“What does the former principal and company have that others don’t?” Zhou Wen asked.

“I’m also thinking about this question. Based on the information we have so far, there’s no valid answer,” Ouyang Lan said helplessly.

Zhou Wen suddenly thought of the passcode left behind by the former principal and the metal slab that contained a strange coin.

Could it be that what they want is that coin? Zhou Wen thought.

On second thought, Zhou Wen thought of the silver-haired Companion Beast locked in Qin Xiyuan’s shop. The huge metal piece connected to the chain had a corresponding relationship with the small metal piece Zhou Wen had obtained. If he hadn’t seen the huge metal piece, Zhou Wen wouldn’t have imagined that the string of numbers the former principal had given him was a passcode.

Could there be something inside that huge metal slab? Zhou Wen thought to himself.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 810 - I'll Wait for You Here

Chapter 810: I’ll Wait for You Here

Should I give it a try and see if the passcode can open the huge metal slab beside the silver-haired Companion Beast? Zhou Wen couldn’t help but think.

If it were in the past, Zhou Wen wouldn’t have had the chance to approach the metal slab, but things were different now. With the Invisibility Cloak, he should be able to avoid the various surveillance cameras in the shop and reach the metal slab without anyone noticing.

Zhou Wen could have openly headed there and even bought the silver-haired Companion Beast, but he had a nagging feeling that there was something wrong with Qin Xiyuan. He wasn’t willing to let Qin Xiyuan know that he was interested in the metal slab.

In the end, Ouyang Lan failed to take away Ya’er and returned indignantly.

Zhou Wen thought about it for a while before finally deciding to head to Xiyuan Shop to take a look. Now that Ouyang Lan’s investigations had reached a bottleneck, it was unlikely for her to make any further progress. Perhaps the metal slab that chained the silver-haired Companion Beast could give Zhou Wen new ideas.

He packed up and fed all the Companion Beasts that needed to be fed. When he fed Demonic Neonate a few Longevity Fruits, she suddenly began evolving again.

She should be able to advance to the Epic stage this time, right? Zhou Wen was delighted. Demonic Neonate was one step closer to the Mythical stage.

However, looking at the remaining number of Longevity Fruits, he felt that these Longevity Fruits were probably insufficient to support Demonic Neonate's evolution.

Thankfully, there's still Grim Demon as backup rations. If there's really no other way, it can be used to make do. Zhou Wen put away Demonic Neonate.

Before she completely evolved, there was no need to pin any hope on her strength in combat.

Banana Fairy was still evolving. She had been evolving for quite some time. Based on the time taken, she should be about to advance to the Mythical stage.

After packing his things, Zhou Wen set off for Qin Xiyuan's shop.

Zhou Wen didn't directly enter the shop. Instead, he went to a cafe near Xiyuan Store and ordered a cup of coffee. He sat by the window and planned on using Truth Listener to scan Qin Xiyuan's shop while drinking coffee.

This cafe was relatively close to Xiyuan Store. Sitting here, Truth Listener's range covered the entire store. He had to figure out the situation inside first.

"Sir, here's your coffee." The waiter served the coffee and politely placed it in front of Zhou Wen.

"Thank you." Zhou Wen's attention was focused on Xiyuan Store and he hadn't noticed the waiter. When he heard a

familiar voice, he looked up and couldn’t help but be taken aback. The person who had brought the coffee was Gu Dian.

Zhou Wen subconsciously looked around. Indeed, it was as he had imagined. The cafe was empty; there weren’t any customers.

Does the boss of this shop have a grudge with money? He actually hired Gu Dian as a waiter? Zhou Wen felt that the boss must be crazy.

“Gu Dian, why are you here?” Zhou Wen asked Gu Dian in puzzlement.

“Working to earn some money,” Gu Dian answered.

“Can working here be more profitable than fighting dimensional creatures and selling the dropped Companion Eggs?” Zhou Wen was still somewhat puzzled.

Gu Dian was considered one of the strongest figures in Sunset College. If he were to sell Companion Eggs he obtained, his income was definitely not something ordinary people could compare with. Furthermore, he was only a waiter at a cafe, so his salary couldn’t be much.

“Yes.” There weren’t many customers in the cafe, so Gu Dian didn’t leave.

“No way? This cafe can give you such a high salary?” Zhou Wen found it unbelievable that a waiter could earn so much.

Furthermore, this cafe didn’t have any business at all. It was impossible for it to pay a high salary.

“150,000 a month,” Gu Dian answered.

Pfft! Zhou Wen spat out the mouthful of coffee he had just drunk. He widened his eyes and looked at Gu Dian. “The boss here gives you 150,000 a month?”

Zhou Wen felt that the boss must be nuts. Otherwise, there was no way he would give Gu Dian such a high salary.

Gu Dian nodded and saw a customer enter. He said, “I need to get back to work.”

Zhou Wen watched Gu Dian head over and say politely, “Welcome.”

When the young couple saw Gu Dian, they seemed to be frightened as they immediately took two steps back. Without even entering, they turned around and quickly walked away.

I knew it. With Gu Dian around, how can business be good? Zhou Wen couldn’t figure out why the boss of this shop would hire Gu Dian.

After drinking a mouthful of coffee, he felt that it tasted pretty good. It was actually hand-made coffee.

Unable to figure out the reason, Zhou Wen had no choice but to stop thinking and begin scanning Xiyuan Store.

Truth Listener’s ability enveloped the vicinity of Xiyuan’s shop. It was as though it had turned transparent. Zhou Wen could hear every corner of the building clearly.

To Zhou Wen’s surprise, the floor where the silver-haired Companion Beast was located was enveloped by a mysterious force, as though it was enveloped by a thick fog.

Zhou Wen raised Truth Listener’s strength to its limits as the fourth level within the fog slowly became clearer.

The various Companion Beasts imprisoned inside could be seen clearly. Zhou Wen focused his attention on the room where the silver-haired Companion Beast was. Indeed, he saw the silver-haired Companion Beast sitting beside the large metal slab with its head lowered as though it was asleep.

When Zhou Wen’s attention landed on him, the silver-haired Companion Beast looked up and clearly glanced in Zhou Wen’s direction. It was as though it was looking into his eyes, shocking him.

Can he see me? Or is it a coincidence? Zhou Wen frowned slightly.

Suddenly, beneath the silver hair that covered most of the Companion Beast’s face was a grin. Then, its lips moved as though it was saying something.

However, he didn’t make a sound. However, from the shape of his mouth, he seemed to be saying, “I’ll wait for you here.”

He can indeed see me. Zhou Wen was somewhat alarmed.

After Truth Listener advanced to the Mythical stage, its abilities were already very powerful. Furthermore, observing someone through hearing and vision was different. One’s gaze was active, so it wasn’t surprising for those with sharp senses to notice it when someone looked at them.

Truth Listener’s hearing was passive. It was only gathering information. Yet, the silver-haired Companion Beast was

actually able to discover his location. This ability was a little too powerful.

What’re the origins of that silver-haired Companion Beast? Zhou Wen was puzzled as he wondered about entering.

Now, Zhou Wen was somewhat worried. If the chains that bound the silver-haired Companion Beast were unlocked after entering the passcode, could he be doing something foolish?

What does he mean by waiting for me? Could it be that he knew I would come? Zhou Wen was alarmed and puzzled. The entire matter was odd.

From the moment the former principal sent him the passcode, Zhou Wen felt that something was amiss. As the matter developed, Zhou Wen realized that it wasn’t as simple as he had imagined.

At the very least, the silver-haired Companion Beast in front of him was definitely a terrifying existence. If the former principal had placed the silver-haired Companion Beast in the store, how could he have caught such a Companion Beast? The former principal probably didn’t have such strength.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 811 - Mythical Rank

Chapter 811: Mythical Rank

Zhou Wen decided to enter Xiyuan's shop to take a look at the silver-haired Companion Beast. No matter how strong the Companion Beast was, since he was locked up in a way that a Companion Beast shop could trap him, there was no reason for anything to happen to him. After all, Qin Xiyuan and company were fine.

As long as I don't touch the metal slab or enter the passcode, I should be fine. Zhou Wen made up his mind. After paying the bill, he left the cafe and found an empty spot. He put on the Invisibility Cloak and walked towards Xiyuan Store.

Zhou Wen had already figured out the situation in the shop. Since Qin Xiyuan wasn't there, he avoided the places that might expose him and slowly approached the elevator that led to the fourth level.

The building held no secrets for him. Zhou Wen passed through some ventilation ducts and quickly arrived at the top level.

It wasn't that he didn't want to go directly to B4, but B4 was completely sealed. No ventilation duct could reach there.

However, this wasn't difficult for Zhou Wen. There was only one entrance to the fourth level, and it was a special elevator. It was in Qin Xiyuan's office.

Zhou Wen remembered that the last time he came with Ouyang Lan, she could take him to B4. Now, the public elevator had been sealed. Only this place could reach B4.

Without Qin Xiyuan around, Zhou Wen found an opportunity to release Primordial Spore and allowed it to enter the lock. It opened the lock from the inside and easily allowed Zhou Wen to gain access to the office.

Following the steps from his experience, he activated the sealed elevator and successfully reached the empty B4.

The various seals naturally didn’t pose a problem for Zhou Wen. Miniature Companion Beasts like Gu could enter the locks, making it easy to open them.

The invisible Zhou Wen could do whatever he wanted in the shop. Soon, he arrived at the room where the silver-haired Companion Beast was.

Zhou Wen didn’t enter directly because there were many cameras in the room. Even the opposite side of the room had several cameras installed. If he opened the door in invisibility, people in the surveillance room would notice it.

Just as Zhou Wen was considering how to enter, he suddenly realized that the entire building’s electricity had been cut. This was somewhat different from a blackout.

In the event of a blackout, it only meant that the power supply had been cut. There would still be stored electric power in some equipment, such as electronic watches, phones, and electrical appliances with batteries that allowed them to continue operating.

However, the electricity in the entire building seemed to have been sucked away. There was nothing left, and all the

electronic devices had lost their effects.

Zhou Wen immediately knew that it was the handiwork of the silver-haired Companion Beast inside. Although there was a door between them, the silver-haired Companion Beast was smiling at him as though the door didn’t exist.

“You’re finally here,” the silver-haired Companion Beast said. This time, not only did he open his mouth, but he also spoke. It was different from when he had only used lip-reading.

“You knew I would come?” Zhou Wen didn’t push open the door and spoke to the silver-haired Companion Beast through the door. In fact, they could see each other without opening the door.

“When I first saw you, I knew that you were Ouyang Ting’s chosen one, so I knew you would definitely come,” the silver-haired Companion Beast said.

“Why was I chosen?” Zhou Wen didn’t ask what he was chosen for. This was because the other party would know that he didn’t know anything. When the time came, he would reconsider revealing some truths.

Now that Zhou Wen had asked why he was chosen, the other party would say something. Perhaps he could obtain some useful information from him before continuing the conversation.

“Because you aren’t smart enough,” said the silver-haired Companion Beast.

Zhou Wen looked at the silver-haired Companion Beast in a daze. He had imagined many possibilities, but he never expected such an answer.

The silver-haired Companion Beast continued with a smile, “There are some things that overly smart people can’t do. The person we need is someone who isn’t too smart but isn’t stupid. At the same time, he has to be very talented, occasionally having bouts of inspiration. The person also has to be highly focused.”

“And then?” Zhou Wen asked.

“Then, you were chosen by Ouyang Ting. I think he has good taste. You are indeed someone who’s highly focused,” the silver-haired Companion Beast said with a smile.

“Then what can I do?” Zhou Wen asked again.

“I don’t know.” The silver-haired Companion Beast’s answer once again exceeded Zhou Wen’s expectations.

“How can you not know?” Zhou Wen frowned.

“Because I don’t know how far you can go, I don’t know what you can do in the end. The differing ability levels dictate the different things you can do. When you are still a child, your parents won’t let you work to earn money. When you are a man, no one will request to use you as a surrogate mother. Therefore, what you can do doesn’t depend on anyone else. It only has to do with your abilities,” the silver-haired Companion Beast said.

“I’m not here to listen to you talk about philosophy. If that’s all you want to say to me, I think I should leave,” Zhou Wen said.

“Alright, then I’ll say something that you’re interested in. Do you know the Mythical stage?” The silver-haired Companion Beast changed the topic, but Zhou Wen didn’t understand why he would suddenly say that. Under the present

circumstances, with people possibly coming to check on the fourth level at any time, shouldn’t he say something related to himself?

“You mean the level above the Mythical stage?” Zhou Wen asked patiently.

“That description isn’t right. In fact, Mythicals contain many different grades. The Mythical you are talking about now is just the threshold when stepping into the Mythical stage,” the silver-haired Companion Beast said.

“Then what grades are there to the Mythical stage?” Zhou Wen asked.

“If you want to know what grades there are to a Mythical creature, you first need to know what a god is. Do you know what a god is?” the silver-haired Companion Beast said calmly.

“Can our communication be simpler and more effective? I don’t think I’ll have much time to listen to your stories here. The people in this shop won’t give me that much time,” Zhou Wen said.

However, the silver-haired Companion Beast continued without batting an eyelid. “In ancient times, humans in a primitive society became afraid of unknown things and dangers. And by manifesting this fear, gods were born. For example, humans were afraid of lightning, so they imagined lightning as a terrifying life form. Hence, there was the Thunder God. Humans were afraid of the heavy rain because it would make humans sick, so there was the Rain God. Other examples include powerful creatures like tigers, wolves, snakes, eagles, etc. Human strength was incomparable to them. They were worshiped because of fear as humans hoped to be as powerful as those ferocious

beasts. Therefore, they created totem worship. That is also a form of god.

“Therefore, the first grade of the Mythical stage is the Terror grade. Any Mythical creature that can cause terror belongs to this level. This is also the weakest level among Mythical creatures. The Mythical Companion Beasts on the ranking all belong to this grade.”

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 812 - The Final Victor

Chapter 812: The Final Victor

“Such a gradation isn’t right, isn’t it? Many Legendary and Epic creatures can also instill terror in people, can’t they?” Zhou Wen said.

“Sorry, there’s a problem with how I’m conveying it. This level is based on dimensional civilizations as reference. Legendaries and Epic on Earth aren’t qualified to enter the ranks of dimensional civilizations,” the silver-haired Companion Beast said.

“Alright, continue.” Zhou Wen shrugged helplessly.

“Floods, earthquakes, hurricanes, volcanic eruptions, etc. These are things that humans are unable to control, nor can they resist them. Once they happen, they can only wait for death. They are known as calamities, and they are also known as the Calamity grade. This is the second level of Mythical creatures. Mythical creatures that can reach this level are considered accomplished in dimensional civilizations,” the silver-haired Companion Beast said.

Calamity grade? Zhou Wen silently repeated the name.

“Although natural disasters are terrifying, they will ultimately come to an end. Yet, some forces are enough to destroy everything. In ancient times, some people were worried that the sky would collapse, while others were worried that the land they lived in would be destroyed. Such a force that can destroy the world is known as the Apocalypse grade amongst dimensional civilizations.”

The silver-haired Companion Beast smiled and said, “Of course, the so-called apocalypse is only relative to Earth. In fact, in dimensional civilizations, there aren’t any existences that can truly destroy worlds. Furthermore, there aren’t any so-called gods in dimensional civilizations. There are only indescribable things. The so-called Apocalyptic power doesn’t cause much destruction in dimensional civilizations. This has something to do with the composition of the world. Compared to dimensional civilizations, Earth is just too weak.”

“What’s after the Apocalypse grade?” Zhou Wen asked.

“There hasn’t been such a life form so far, so it’s unknown,” the silver-haired Companion Beast said.

“Then, what’s your grade?” Zhou Wen stared at the silver-haired Companion Beast and asked.

“I’m only at the Terror grade. It’s impossible for an existence above the Terror grade to appear in an ancient forbidden land like Earth.”

“Why?”

“That’s because this is an ancient forbidden land. There’s no reason to speak of. That’s the rule of an ancient forbidden land. Even if those terrifying Apocalypse-grade creatures enter an ancient forbidden land, they will be reduced to the Terror grade.”

“What’s an ancient forbidden land?” Zhou Wen wanted to know as much as possible. If he missed this opportunity, who could tell him this?

“I don’t know. This is the name dimensional civilizations have given Earth since ancient times. Only a place like Earth

has such weak lifeforms. Therefore, many dimensional civilizations want to explore Earth and find out the secrets here. In the past, there were several Mythical wars on Earth because of this. There were dimensional civilizations backing them."

The silver-haired Companion Beast paused for a moment before continuing, "This is because there have been too many divine wars on Earth. The dimensional creatures that had their strength reduced entered, only to end up dying here. The losses were heavy. Now, the various dimensional civilizations have already reached an agreement. They won't send a large number of manpower into Earth, nor will they trigger divine wars on Earth. Every species will only send a Guardian to Earth and sign a contract with the humans on Earth. They will fight each other. The final victor and the dimensional civilization that he represents will have the rights to Earth for a hundred years. A hundred years later, new Guardians will enter Earth and begin the battle of Guardians again, deciding the ownership of Earth for the next hundred years."

"Why must Guardians decide who Earth belongs to? We humans are the masters of Earth," Zhou Wen said.

The silver-haired Companion Beast curled its lips and said, "This is typical human thinking. In fact, humans are only one of the millions of lifeforms on Earth. Humans used their powerful strength to conquer other lives and became the rulers of Earth. Now, there are even stronger lifeforms entering Earth and becoming the new rulers. Isn't this something that's only right? If you want to blame someone, you can only blame yourself for being too weak. You can't even advance to the Terror stage. That is a sin by itself."

Zhou Wen felt that something was amiss with the silver-haired Companion Beast's words, but he couldn't think of any reason to refute him.

"Why do Guardians have to contract with humans? Can't they just fight each other?" Zhou Wen changed the topic.

"This is because Guardians have great growth potential, but the rules of Earth don't allow existences above the Terror grade to appear on Earth. However, there's one exception. If you humans are used as carriers, they can erupt with powers above the Terror grade level for a short period of time without being restricted by the rules of the ancient forbidden land. Therefore, Guardians can only continue growing by contracting with you humans and come one step closer to victory," explained the silver-haired Companion Beast.

"I see." Zhou Wen finally understood why the powerful Guardians chose to contract with humans. It was all for victory.

With this in mind, it wasn't unreasonable for a Guardian to choose to betray weaker contractors.

After all, with a weak contractor, there was almost no chance of them winning. They could only constantly seek out stronger contractors.

Of course, as a human, Zhou Wen didn't like the Guardians, much less them treating Earth as a gambling table, battlefield, and dimensional civilization.

"What if all the Guardians fail in the end?" Zhou Wen's heart stirred as he asked the silver-haired Companion Beast.

“Haha, well asked. Back then, Ouyang Ting asked the same question. However, there’s still no answer because no one other than the Guardian has obtained the final victory,” said the silver-haired Companion Beast.

Zhou Wen saw that someone was coming down on the elevator, so he quickly asked, “Someone’s here. Speak quickly. What do you want me to do?”

“Ouyang Ting wants to know the answer to your question, so he has been searching for a way to win. However, his body can’t take it anymore. He’s too old, so it’s impossible for him to participate in such a battle again. Therefore, he wants to find someone who can win the answer for him. From the looks of it, he chose you,” the silver-haired Companion Beast said.

“Has he found a way to win?” Zhou Wen asked.

“The method is in this metal box. Open it and you will get the answer,” said the silver-haired Companion Beast as he pointed at the metal slab connected to the chain.

Zhou Wen looked at the metal slab, but he wasn’t sure if the silver-haired Companion Beast’s words were trustworthy.

The elevator door opened and someone entered B4. He headed straight for the silver-haired Companion Beast’s room. It was Qin Xiyuan, who had rushed back.

Upon realizing that the silver-haired Companion Beast was still around and that the metal slab was fine, Qin Xiyuan heaved a sigh of relief. However, he still ordered the people around him to search all of B4.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it

as soon as possible.

Chapter 813 - Continuously Looking for Trouble

Chapter 813: Continuously Looking for Trouble

Translator: CKtalon

Zhou Wen used the Invisibility Cloak's three minutes of invisibility to leave the Xiyuan Shop. He didn't enter the password to open the metal slab.

Firstly, there wasn't enough time. Secondly, what the silver-haired Companion Beast had said was only one-sided. Before he got a clear understanding of the situation, Zhou Wen wasn't willing to casually open the metal slab.

At the very least, Zhou Wen still didn't know what the anchor and woman's picture meant. Since the symbol was engraved on the metal slab, there had to be a reason.

Zhou Wen planned on finding an opportunity to ask the silver-haired Companion Beast again in the future. It wouldn't be too late to open the metal slab after figuring things out.

Anyway, he was the only one who knew the passcode now. It was impossible for others to open it.

After returning to his dorm, Zhou Wen heaved a sigh of relief when he saw that the antelope, Ya'er, and chick were watching television.

The chick wasn't a problem, but Zhou Wen was afraid that something might happen if the antelope and Ya'er clashed.

Zhou Wen didn't wish to see the school being besieged by a sea of Gu. However, on careful thought, Gu-type Companion

Beasts were typically in the South District. Not every place had Gu. Ya’er could only communicate with Gu. In such a place without Gu, it was impossible for her to summon a large number.

With this in mind, Zhou Wen became afraid that Ya’er would be at a disadvantage against the antelope.

In contrast, Zhou Wen felt that Ya’er was better. The antelope was quite an asshole. Zhou Wen didn’t trust it.

However, as the antelope was somewhat unfathomable and too powerful, Zhou Wen was momentarily helpless against it. All he could do was silently acknowledge its existence.

If the silver-haired Companion Beast isn’t lying, the strongest creature on Earth is only at the Terror stage. Only after those Guardians and humans combine will they have a chance of breaking past the Terror stage. I should think of a way to advance to the Mythical stage first. Otherwise, it’s useless thinking about this. Zhou Wen launched the game and grinded monsters while getting injured so that he could use the Chaos Egg to treat him.

The heavier and more bizarre the injuries were, the faster the Chaos Egg grew. Zhou Wen even attempted to fight Mythical creatures to suffer serious injuries so that he could get the Chaos Egg to treat him.

Unfortunately, the same type of injury could only allow the Chaos Egg to grow once. It was useless if he suffered the same injuries again. Therefore, Zhou Wen had to find a way to torture himself. Finally, four days later, the Chaos Egg began to evolve while treating Zhou Wen.

At that moment, the blood-colored avatar was still inside the Chaos Egg. When the Chaos Egg evolved, it remained in this

state. Zhou Wen could clearly sense that the Essence Energy inside the Chaos Egg was rapidly transforming. It became purer and more concentrated. The healing effects were clearly enhanced.

Not long after, the Essence Energy in the Chaos Egg condensed into mist. The mist then turned into droplets. With the increasing amount of droplets, they became a water body that filled the entire Chaos Egg.

At this moment, the Chaos Egg's evolution was finally completed.

Zhou Wen could clearly sense that the liquid inside the Chaos Egg was a type of high-level Essence Energy. It was much stronger than ordinary Essence Energy in all aspects.

After taking a look at the Chaos Egg's information, he realized that the Chaos Egg had indeed evolved to an Evolved Body. However, its name hadn't changed. It was still Chaos Egg and was somewhat different from other Life Souls.

Zhou Wen suffered injuries again and entered the Chaos Egg to recuperate. As expected, the healing speed was much faster this time.

Could it be that the Chaos Egg's ability is just healing? Zhou Wen wasn't too disappointed. After all, such crazy healing ability was almost comparable to Li Xuan's self-healing.

However, Li Xuan could heal himself while fighting. The moment he used the Chaos Egg, Zhou Wen couldn't do anything else. All he could do was hide inside to recuperate.

Zhou Wen didn't care too much. After all, he had to raise the Chaos Egg to a Perfect Body first. Zhou Wen crazily looked

for trouble in-game and suffered almost all the injuries he could.

Although it still hadn’t advanced to a Perfect Body, it gave Zhou Wen a deeper understanding of the abilities of various dimensional creatures.

After all, experiencing their various skills personally was different from seeing with his eyes.

Now, Zhou Wen knew the effects of various skills like the back of his hand. He knew very well what kind of skills were most powerful and the effects when they hit him.

Even so, the Chaos Egg failed to advance to a Perfect Body. Zhou Wen felt that it was becoming stronger, but it was too slow.

There’s no place left for me to be injured. What should I do? Should I find a new dimensional zone? Zhou Wen thought for a moment. Finding a new dimensional zone wasn’t that easy.

Finally, Zhou Wen gritted his teeth. *From the looks of it, I can only go there.*

Zhou Wen reluctantly launched the Netherworld City dungeon and entered. When the torture chambers opened, he entered the first one.

“Ah… Ah… Ah…” Not long after, Zhou Wen came out of the torture chamber and used the Chaos Egg to treat his injuries. Then, he went to the next torture chamber and tragic cries sounded. Soon, Zhou Wen came out again and continued treating his injuries.

Zhou Wen shuttled back and forth on the long streets of Netherworld City and suffered all sorts of punishments. Being whipped and burned was nothing to him. What was even more perverse was getting fried in a pot of oil, having nails impaling his body, etc. Such inhuman pain was something ordinary people couldn’t tolerate.

However, Zhou Wen endured all of them and the effects were excellent. After every treatment, he could clearly sense that the Chaos Egg was rapidly growing.

Zhou Wen carried on in the midst of pain and happiness. The pain in his body couldn’t hide the joy in his heart.

However, even Zhou Wen couldn’t accept a few punishments. He skipped the torture chambers, such as the Wooden Horse Punishment that Zhou Wen had previously recommended to Liu Yun.

There were also some punishments that were even more terrifying than the Wooden Horse Punishment. Zhou Wen consciously didn’t choose them.

Zhou Wen waited for the torture chamber to open every day before experiencing new punishments. These punishments needed at least half a month before he could finish them all.

City Lord Netherworld said that I have to try all the punishments before I can see the real Netherworld City. I wonder what it means. Zhou Wen was somewhat curious, but he couldn’t accept some of the punishments. In the end, he gave up.

Days passed as Zhou Wen tried most of the punishments in Netherworld City. He vaguely felt that the Chaos Egg was about to advance, but it was just a little short.

No, I have to find another place to get beaten up. After some thought, Zhou Wen felt that it was too dangerous to go to unfamiliar dimensional zones. It was better to find someone to beat him up.

I wonder how Feng Qiuyan's saber techniques have been recently. I'll get him to spar with me. Zhou Wen contacted Feng Qiuyan by phone.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 814 - Wanting to Know the Feeling of Being Injured

Chapter 814: Wanting to Know the Feeling of Being Injured

Zhou Wen said that he wanted to spar with Feng Qiuyan, but he couldn’t invite him to beat him up because he wanted to be beaten and injured.

When he arrived at the training grounds, Feng Qiuyan was already waiting for him.

To Zhou Wen’s surprise, Gulli and Sadie were also there. Only after chatting did he realize that Feng Qiuyan had been practicing with Gulli and Sadie recently.

Feng Qiuyan sure is a martial arts fanatic. In the past, it used to be Ming Xiu, then Li Xuan. Now, he doesn’t even let Gulli and Sadie off, Zhou Wen thought.

“My saber techniques have improved recently. Coach, please guide me,” Feng Qiuyan said as he picked up a practice saber.

“Why don’t you use the Life Soul Saber?” Zhou Wen asked in puzzlement.

In the past, when Feng Qiuyan fought, be it in practice or in actual combat, he used the Life Soul Saber. Today, for some reason, he suddenly used the practice saber.

If it were any other time, Zhou Wen wouldn’t have any problems with Feng Qiuyan using a practice saber, but Zhou

Wen was here to get injured. How could Feng Qiuyan injure him with a practice saber?

“I’ve been practicing with Sadie recently. In order to crack her abilities, I can only make some attempts with my saber techniques. I can’t always release without being able to withdraw in time, so…” Feng Qiuyan explained.

“I see. However, you should switch to the Life Soul Saber. I want to find the feeling of actual combat. It’s best if I can suffer some injuries,” Zhou Wen said.

Feng Qiuyan looked at Zhou Wen in puzzlement. “Coach, why do you want to be injured?”

Zhou Wen had no choice but to explain. “If a person doesn’t make mistakes, he will never know what’s right. If he has never been injured, he naturally wouldn’t know how to deal with injuries when he suffers one. Therefore, I want to suffer some injuries and have a taste of being injured.”

Feng Qiuyan was enlightened when he heard that. “You’re right, Coach. I get it.”

With that said, Feng Qiuyan placed the practice saber back and summoned his Life Soul Saber.

However, when Gulli and Sadie heard Zhou Wen’s words, they had different thoughts.

Getting injured when entering a dimensional zone to hunt dimensional creatures was actually very normal. Otherwise, the school wouldn’t have been equipped with specialized hospitals.

Even Sadie, who had the Eye of Odin, would sometimes be injured. After all, anything could be found in a dimensional

zone. A person’s strength didn’t determine everything.

However, Zhou Wen’s words made it seem as though he had never been injured. He actually wanted to find the feeling of being injured, making Gulli and Sadie wonder what he was up to.

“Although Zhou Wen is indeed very strong, Feng Qiuyan’s saber techniques are so fast that even my Eye of Odin can only see them but not dodge them. If Zhou Wen isn’t careful, he might really be injured,” Sadie said.

Gulli had been practicing with Feng Qiuyan for the past few days. He had a deep understanding of how good Feng Qiuyan was and felt that Zhou Wen would definitely suffer if he underestimated him.

Zhou Wen didn’t use a practice saber. Firstly, the practice saber couldn’t block the Life Soul Saber. Secondly, Zhou Wen was here to get injured, so he didn’t plan on blocking.

“Coach, be careful.” With that said, Feng Qiuyan drew his saber and slashed.

Before he saw the saber beam, Zhou Wen felt a chill streak across his chest. He immediately moved his feet and saw Feng Qiuyan’s saber slice past his shoulder.

What a fast saber! Feng Qiuyan’s saber speed was comparable to his Mythical Transcendent Flying Immortal, surprising Zhou Wen.

Before Feng Qiuyan’s strike landed, his saber’s might slashed down like a raging river.

This was a saber technique that Sadie couldn’t dodge even if she could see it. Zhou Wen needed to focus all his

attention when using Transcendent Flying Immortal. If he made any mistakes, he might be struck by the saber.

Zhou Wen’s original intention was to spar with him, get injured, and return to recuperate.

However, Feng Qiuyan’s saber techniques surprised him. He couldn’t help but have another look. The more he looked, the more interesting he found them. For a moment, he forgot about getting injured, eager to take another look at Feng Qiuyan’s saber techniques.

Sadie was alarmed when she saw Zhou Wen dodge Feng Qiuyan’s attack without retaliating.

Under normal circumstances, a person with the same physique definitely wasn’t as fast as a saber. Yet, Zhou Wen was able to dodge Feng Qiuyan’s saber. This meant that Zhou Wen was faster than Feng Qiuyan.

Feng Qiuyan’s explosive saber techniques ultimately failed to injure Zhou Wen. However, his fighting spirit surged as he unleashed his full strength, accelerating his saber.

His Life Providence was Swift Saber Heavenly King, allowing his saber to become faster and faster. However, he had had to control his saber in the past to prevent it from escaping his control.

Now, he was doing the opposite, allowing his saber to become faster and faster. Without deliberately controlling it, the upper limit of his saber speed was much higher. However, under such circumstances, even Feng Qiuyan couldn’t control his saber. He was completely going with the flow.

If he wasn’t in a dire situation, Feng Qiuyan wouldn’t have used such a saber technique. This was a saber technique meant for risking his life in a hopeless situation.

Even so, Feng Qiuyan’s saber failed to touch Zhou Wen from beginning to end. In the end, the saber’s speed was so fast that Feng Qiuyan couldn’t control it. The saber in his hand flew out.

Just as Zhou Wen was feeling excited from the battle when he suddenly saw the saber fly out. Realizing that he hadn’t been injured, he immediately felt depressed.

He had come here to get injured, so this meant that he had come for nothing.

Zhou Wen steeled his heart and flew towards the saber. He used his body to catch Feng Qiuyan’s saber as the Life Soul Saber stabbed into his ribs.

Zhou Wen’s actions stunned Sadie, Gulli, and Feng Qiuyan. Feng Qiuyan couldn’t control his saber from slipping out of his hand. He couldn’t injure Zhou Wen at all; yet, Zhou Wen had chosen to slam into the saber.

“Coach, are you alright?” Feng Qiuyan went forward to check Zhou Wen’s injuries as he unsummoned his Life Soul Saber.

“I’m fine. Do you have any other techniques? I want to try them all out and see how the other types of injuries feel,” Zhou Wen said to Feng Qiuyan.

“I only know how to use a saber.” Feng Qiuyan felt relieved when he saw that Zhou Wen’s wound wasn’t bleeding profusely.

“Why don’t the two of you give it a try?” Zhou Wen placed his sights on Sadie and Gulli. They came from the Ultimate Family Clan of the North District, so the techniques they knew were different from the people of the East District. The injuries they caused should have some effect.

“Coach, you must be joking. How are we your match?” Sadie shook her head and refused to fight Zhou Wen.

Helpless, Zhou Wen could only return to use the Chaos Egg to recuperate.

“Is that fellow really human? He actually slammed himself into the saber!” Gulli said with a strange expression.

Sadie sighed and said, “Just as he said, he wants to know how it feels to be injured, but he’s just too strong. No one can injure him.”

“Even the Dugu family, which is best at movement techniques, probably doesn’t have many people who can reach that level, right?” Gulli exclaimed.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 815 - Perfect Chaos Egg

Chapter 815: Perfect Chaos Egg

Zhou Wen returned to his dorm and used the Chaos Egg to treat his injuries, but he realized that the improvement it had on the Chaos Egg wasn't good enough.

From the looks of it, human strength is still too weak. The injuries they cause are very limited in raising Chaos. I still have to go to those dimensional zones to find Mythical dimensional creatures. Zhou Wen gave up on the idea of finding humans to fight. Currently, there were only a handful of humans at the Mythical stage. Most of them had relied on Guardians to advance to the Mythical stage.

However, it wasn't easy to find a new dimensional zone. Zhou Wen thought for a moment and suddenly thought of something. *I wonder if the injuries I suffered under taboo powers count? Those are the rules of a dimensional zone. It's different from the injuries of dimensional creatures, but it's an injury, right?*

With this in mind, Zhou Wen entered the game and headed to Small Buddha Temple to give it a try. This time, Zhou Wen didn't use any Buddhist Essence Energy Art or any Essence Energy Skills to prevent himself from being injured. He directly stepped onto the stone steps.

Not long after he walked up the stone steps, Zhou Wen felt something amiss with his body. Just as he was about to vomit blood and collapse, he hurriedly summoned the Chaos Egg to envelope the blood-colored avatar.

The Chaos Egg was really useful. When Zhou Wen was inside, the taboo power outside couldn’t injure him. When the Chaos Egg began to heal Zhou Wen’s body, Zhou Wen could clearly sense that the Chaos Egg was rapidly becoming stronger while treating him.

It really works… Zhou Wen was overjoyed. After treating his injuries, he continued walking. However, when he was injured again, although the Chaos Egg could still treat him, it didn’t become stronger again.

A taboo power can only raise it once. Let me see which dimensional zones have taboo powers… Zhou Wen thought about it and went to the dimensional zones to experience all the taboo powers.

The Chaos Egg’s improvement was extremely fast. The effects of the taboo power were abnormally good. It was even more powerful than being injured by Mythical creatures. When Zhou Wen walked around Netherworld City without any regard for the rules, the taboo power activated and nearly killed him. Before he was killed, he entered the Chaos Egg and successfully healed his body.

During the restoration process, the Chaos Egg began to evolve again. The liquid in it that resembled spring water underwent a tremendous change.

The liquid seeped into Zhou Wen’s body and he felt as though his body had melted into the liquid, becoming a part of it.

This feeling was very subtle. Furthermore, the liquid was gradually solidifying. As part of the liquid, Zhou Wen could still move freely.

This feeling was indescribable because it was impossible for a person to move in ice or jade. Now, Zhou Wen was experiencing this feeling, so he found it difficult to describe. In short, it was a magical experience.

In the beginning, the Chaos Egg only had a shell. When it evolved, its insides were filled with liquid. Now, the entire Chaos Egg was one, turning into jade. There were no gaps inside.

The Chaos Egg successfully advanced to a Perfect Body. At the same time, a notification appeared in-game.

‘Chaos Egg Life Soul has advanced to Perfect Body. Essence Energy+1.’

When Zhou Wen saw the word+1, he immediately felt refreshed as though he had drunk honey. He hurriedly took a look at the blood-colored avatar’s stats. Its Essence Energy stat had indeed increased to 41 points.

Although it was only a one-point difference, it was something Zhou Wen had been looking forward to for a long time.

This didn’t just mean that his stats had increased. It also meant that Zhou Wen could absorb the Mythical Essence Energy Skill Crystals that required 41 Essence Energy points.

The Mythical Essence Energy Skill Crystals he had obtained in the past could not be used due to insufficient stats. He felt it such a waste.

Chaos Egg: Perfect Body

Zhou Wen looked at the Chaos Egg's stats and realized that there weren't any changes. However, after advancing to a Perfect Body, the self-healing effects were even stronger. There didn't seem to be anything special about it.

Could it be that Chaos Egg really only has healing abilities? Zhou Wen found it unbelievable.

This was a Life Soul condensed from the First Order of Chaos. Its functions shouldn't be so monotonous, but Zhou Wen had tried many experiments. Apart from self-healing, he didn't discover anything special.

Forget it. I'll think of a way to raise the other Life Souls to a Perfect Body as soon as possible. Two Essence Energy Arts with similar attributes can allow the corresponding stat to reach 41 points. Are there any other Essence Energy Arts that have similar attributes? Zhou Wen began considering his Essence Energy Arts.

The Dao Sutra and First Order of Chaos could be excluded. These two had already enhanced his Essence Energy stat.

The Small Perfection of Wisdom Sutra was an Essence Energy Art with a Constitution attribute. The Ancient Sovereign Sutra was Strength, and the Godfiend Era was Speed. Apart from these three, Zhou Wen had also cultivated the Sky-Stealing Sun-Shifting Art. However, he had only just gained basic mastery of the Sky-Stealing Sun-Shifting Art and hadn't even condensed a Life Providence.

However, Zhou Wen could roughly sense that the Sky-Stealing Sun-Shifting Art was somewhat similar to the Godfiend Era. It seemed to have some spatial attributes that were inclined towards Speed.

Next, I'll cultivate the Sky-Stealing Sun-Shifting Art and the Godfiend Era. Zhou Wen made up his mind to raise the Life Soul of the Godfiend Era before cultivating the Sky-Stealing Sun-Shifting Art.

The Life Soul condensed by Godfiend Era was Lost Country. Zhou Wen had actually studied it for a long time. He had read many books on space and fought spatial dimensional creatures. He had vaguely figured out how to advance.

However, there had been too many things happening recently, so he hadn't had the time to do the advancement.

The advancement method of Lost Country could hardly be described as difficult or easy. Zhou Wen usually used Lost Country's teleportation function. Every time he used teleportation, Lost Country would actually improve a little.

However, teleportation could only be used once every twenty-four hours, so its growth was extremely slow. According to Zhou Wen's estimates, he needed to use teleportation more than a thousand times to evolve Lost Country.

At this speed, it was impossible for him to advance to an Evolved Body for a few years. Then, the Evolved Body needed to be advanced to the Perfect Body. It definitely needed him to use teleportation more, something that Zhou Wen didn't have the time for.

It wasn't that there was no solution. After studying it for so long, Zhou Wen had come up with a solution. He had discovered a Mythical creature that could teleport. The Companion Egg that dropped was a mount type, and it could teleport with its owner.

As long as he could teleport, Lost Country should be able to advance.

Zhou Wen felt that if he could obtain such a Companion Beast, he could greatly reduce the time it took for Lost Country to advance to a Perfect Body.

However, the Companion Beast named Mystic Bird was the Hero King's Companion Beast. It was said that when the Hero King knew that he was about to die, he had forcefully transferred the Mystic Bird to his descendant. The Mystic Bird could be said to be the most precious Companion Beast in the Zhang family.

Zhou Wen didn't have much of a relationship with the Zhang family. He only knew Zhang Yuzhi and didn't have a particularly great relationship with her. Zhou Wen thought it would be unrealistic to borrow the Mystic Bird from the Zhang family.

It's probably unrealistic to farm the Mystic Bird Companion Beast myself. I'll ask Zhang Yuzhi first to see if she knows where the Mystic Bird can be found. If there's a chance, I'll give it a try. If there's no chance, I'll have to take an unorthodox path. Zhou Wen tried sending Zhang Yuzhi a message, but he wasn't sure if she would read it. He heard that Zhang Yuzhi didn't always use her phone.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 816

Chapter 816: Getting Accustomed to Death After Plenty of Deaths

After a while, Zhang Yuzhi unexpectedly sent a message: “Don’t you know the origins of the Mystic Bird?”

“I only know that it’s your Hero King’s Companion Beast,” Zhou Wen replied.

“Isn’t your hometown in Guide City? You don’t even know about the Mystic Bird?” Zhang Yuzhi was somewhat surprised.

“What’s so strange about that? Could it be that the Mystic Bird Companion Egg was obtained in Guide City?” Zhou Wen asked in surprise.

“The Mystic Bird was in Guide Ancient City,” Zhang Yuzhi said.

“Impossible,” Zhou Wen immediately replied. Guide Ancient City was called Ancient Sovereign City in-game. He had grinded it countless times in the past, but there were no Mythical creatures inside, much less the Mystic Bird.

“How is that impossible? Do you know that the Mystic Bird is a divine bird that represents merchants? And Guide City has a place called Three Merchants. If the Mystic Bird doesn’t appear in Guide Ancient City, where else can it appear?” Zhang Yuzhi asked.

Zhou Wen was taken aback when he heard that. He had forgotten about it.

The Mystic Bird was indeed the divine patron of merchants. Legend had it that it was born into merchants. The merchants had always considered themselves to be the descendants of the Mystic Bird, but Zhou Wen didn't associate it with the Zhang family's Mystic Bird.

"But I've almost swept Guide Ancient City clean. There's no Mystic Bird at all. Forgetting the Mystic Bird, there's not even an ordinary Mythical creature," Zhou Wen replied.

Zhou Wen naturally knew what was inside Guide Ancient City. It was impossible for him to be mistaken.

"I heard it from my elders. Back then, my great-grandfather, who is also the Hero King you mentioned, passed by Guide Ancient City. On a whim, he brought his wife through Guide Ancient City. In the end, he saw a black divine bird in a place called Fire God Platform. My great-grandfather killed the divine bird with great difficulty and obtained the Mystic Bird Companion Beast. As a result, it has been passed down… However, I heard that after that, no one saw the Mystic Bird appear in Guide Ancient City again. Later on, the Zhang family went to look for it and they couldn't find it," Zhang Yuzhi explained.

"Isn't that equivalent to having none?" Zhou Wen was helpless.

"Why are you asking this? Don't tell me you have designs on our Mystic Bird?" Zhang Yuzhi joked.

"Companion Beasts can't be traded. It's useless even if I have designs on it," Zhou Wen replied.

“That means you really want the Mystic Bird. What do you want it for?” Zhang Yuzhi asked.

“The Mystic Bird’s teleportation ability is amazing. I just want to use it as a mount. It can save my life at critical moments. As you know, there are quite a number of people who want my life, especially the people from the bureau. I have to be wary.” Zhou Wen found an excuse.

“Then I can’t help you. You can try your luck at Guide Ancient City. Perhaps if you are lucky, another Mystic Bird will appear? However, even if a Mystic Bird appears, how are you going to kill it? Its teleportation ability is too powerful. No matter how fast your saber is, you probably won’t be able to touch it.”

“There’s no need to try my luck. It definitely doesn’t exist. I’ll think of another way.” Zhou Wen changed the topic. “Do you have any plans to come out for a walk soon? You can come visit Luoyang.”

“I can’t come out.” There was nothing from Zhang Yuzhi after her reply.

Zhou Wen sent a few more messages to her, but she didn’t reply.

The Zhang family’s Mystic Bird was actually produced from Guide Ancient City. Could it be that Guide Ancient City is really extraordinary? Zhou Wen thought of the stone saber on the Fire God Platform.

The Mystic Bird was also discovered on Fire God Platform. The stone saber was also on Fire God Platform. If he pulled out the stone saber and completely unsealed Ancient Sovereign City, it was unknown if a dimensional creature like the Mystic Bird would appear.

Zhou Wen was tempted and wanted to draw the saber.

However, after some thought, he realized that Guide City didn’t have many experts to begin with. If something really happened after he pulled out the stone saber, there would be tens of thousands of deaths.

From the looks of it, it’s impossible to obtain the Mystic Bird Companion Beast. I can only use Plan B. Zhou Wen still had another method, but it was even more unreliable. He did not know if it would work.

Teleportation was actually a type of spatial teleportation. In theory, the Bright Torch Vision World was also a type of spatial teleportation that transported what Torch Dragon saw into its vision world.

However, being teleported into the Vision World meant death, so no one was willing to be teleported in.

Zhou Wen’s solution was to use the blood-colored avatar’s death as a way to get the blood-colored avatar to experience teleportation with Torch Dragon’s Bright Torch Vision World.

After entering the game, Zhou Wen couldn’t be bothered to run to the Torch Dragon temple. He summoned Torch Dragon Youngling and got it to use Bright Torch Vision World to look at the blood-colored avatar.

In one look, the game screen immediately turned black.

Zhou Wen dripped his blood to revive and got Torch Dragon Youngling to kill the blood-colored avatar wearing the Lost Country ring again and again. Zhou Wen didn’t know how much blood he used.

He could sense that the Lost Country ring was growing, but its growth speed was much slower than teleportation. At this speed, it was probably impossible for it to evolve without at least a thousand tries. It might even require tens of thousands of deaths.

Thankfully, the Chaos Egg had the healing ability. Otherwise, Zhou Wen would be worried if he had enough blood.

Zhou Wen kept courting death in his dorm the entire time. He was already numb to death, but the effects were terrible. A single teleportation could raise Lost Country's stats equivalent to dozens of Bright Torch Vision World deaths.

How nice would it be if I had the Mystic Bird! Why isn't there a Mystic Bird in Ancient Sovereign City? Zhou Wen was rather depressed.

Now, Zhou Wen had a deep understanding of how difficult it was for humans to advance to the Mythical stage.

It was impossible for an ordinary person to cultivate eight Essence Energy Arts at the same time, and it was impossible for them to raise all four basic stats to 41. This also prevented them from advancing to the Mythical stage.

Even if one could cultivate eight Essence Energy Arts at the same time, the cultivation methods of the Essence Energy Arts were different. Without the help of the mysterious phone, it was equally difficult to master them.

For instance, Chaos Egg needed constant injuries. In the event an ordinary person died accidentally, there was no point in cultivating.

The advancement of Slaughterer was even better. Was killing a Guardian something an ordinary person could do? Even with a Mythical pet, killing a Guardian was as difficult as ascending to the heavens.

Unless I'm like Xia Jiuhuang and forcefully plunder the talent bloodlines of others for my own use, it's too difficult for humans to advance to the Mythical stage. Zhou Wen felt a headache when he thought of the few Essence Energy Arts he needed to cultivate.

Furthermore, Zhou Wen didn't have a complete set of Essence Energy Arts. He had complete Essence Energy Arts for Speed and Essence Energy. There was the Demon God Catalog of an unknown attribute. As it was difficult to determine its corresponding attribute, Zhou Wen didn't plan on cultivating it for the time being.

If the Demon God Catalog added Strength and Constitution, he was still lacking at least one Essence Energy Art.

He got used to the deaths after repeatedly dying. Zhou Wen was somewhat numb to it anyway. All he wanted now was to quickly advance Lost Country.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 817 - Civilized Country

Chapter 817: Civilized Country

In front of Chess Mountain’s mountain wall, there was a strange flower with a flower bud hanging down, as though it was looking at a girl beneath.

“An Jing, you should already have gotten the answer, right?” A voice sounded from the flower. It was The Thearch’s voice.

“Yes, I already have an answer. I promise you,” An Jing said calmly.

“A wise decision. With my help, not only can you obtain powerful Mythical Companion Beasts, but you can also obtain the Guardian’s favor. Soon, you will be stronger than the person you want to defeat,” The Thearch said.

“I don’t believe that I’ll be stronger than him just because I have these,” An Jing said.

The Thearch asked with piqued interest, “In that case, why did you agree?”

“Just because I want to become stronger,” An Jing said.

“Alright, as you wish. You will become stronger than all humans.” With The Thearch’s voice, a passageway opened up on Chess Mountain’s mountain wall. An Jing walked in.

…

Zhou Wen didn’t know that An Jing had also encountered The Thearch. At that moment, he was still desperately being

killed by the Bright Torch Vision World. The blood-colored avatar had died countless times. It had died repeatedly for days.

Finally, after Zhou Wen used Lost Country's teleportation ability, the Lost Country ring suddenly produced a powerful spatial fluctuation.

Half of the ghost face on the Lost Country ring looked very ugly, while the other half looked very beautiful, like an angel and devil coexisting.

At that moment, eyes on the ghost face emitted a strange spatial fluctuation as they shimmered with a strange light.

Click... Click... Click... Click...

A sound suddenly came from the eyes, like the sound produced when a mechanical needle spun. Zhou Wen took a careful look and saw that there was a wheel in each of the ghost face's eyes. There were markings on the wheel, but the markings were very strange. It wasn't the marking of time which Zhou Wen was familiar with, nor was it a unit of length. He didn't know what it meant.

The two wheels in the ghost face's eyes kept spinning. The clicking sounds came from the spinning wheels.

When both wheels finished one revolution, they stopped. A notification appeared in the game.

'Lost Country Life Soul has advanced to Civilized Country. It's currently an Evolved Body.'

Civilized Country (Evolved Body): A lost country, but the origins of civilization.

During his advancement, Zhou Wen had also gained some information about Civilized Country. He had a simple understanding of it. To truly understand it, he needed to figure it out himself.

Compared to Lost Country that could only allow him to teleport once every twenty-four hours, Civilized Country was much better. The markings in the ghost face's eyes represented coordinates.

After adjusting the coordinates, he could do a long-distance teleportation once every twenty-four hours.

There was also the short-distance teleportation he had used previously. He could use it ten times in twenty-four hours.

I'm one step closer to infinite teleportation. Zhou Wen was rather satisfied with Civilized Country's abilities, but he didn't know how to determine the coordinates.

The markings in the ghost face's eyes were different. They looked very strange.

Could it be longitude and latitude? Zhou Wen still didn't understand how to set the coordinates. It wouldn't be good if he made a mistake and was teleported into a pot of boiling oil or a female bathroom.

Forget it. I'll study it in the future. It wouldn't be too late when I raise Civilized Country to a Perfect Body. Zhou Wen continued letting Torch Dragon use Bright Torch Vision World to kill the blood-colored avatar.

However, Zhou Wen realized that the energy obtained from the blood-colored avatar's death was nearly indiscernible.

I can only obtain this much energy every time I die. When will Civilized Country advance to the Perfect stage? I'm afraid it won't be enough even if I drain all my blood. Zhou Wen knew that he couldn't continue down this path. He had to think of another solution.

"Young Master Wen, have you seen the news?" Just as he was thinking, An Sheng called.

"What news?" Zhou Wen asked in puzzlement.

Recently, he had been grinding dungeons. At best, he would take some time out to buy some food and daily necessities for Ya'er. He didn't have the time to watch the news.

"Take a look at the headlines in Luoyang today," An Sheng said.

Zhou Wen didn't know what major event had happened. He looked online and immediately saw a striking picture. It was a seraphim with six wings. To be precise, it was a woman wearing angel armor. She was killing a break-out creature.

Eh, isn't this the six-winged seraphim John contracted in the past? He found a new contractor? Zhou Wen was delighted as he asked An Sheng, "Is this a picture of Luoyang?"

Zhou Wen thought that if the six-winged seraphim was still in Luoyang, there was hope for his Slaughterer advancement.

If he wanted to kill a Guardian, he had to do so as soon as possible. According to the silver-haired Companion Beast, Guardians could continue growing. After contracting with humans, they could even reach the Calamity grade with the help of humans.

Killing them would only become harder in the future.

“Yes, it’s in a dimensional zone near Luoyang. I originally thought that the Guardian had already left, but I never expected it to still be nearby. Furthermore, there’s a new contractor,” An Sheng said.

“Can you still find him now?” Zhou Wen asked.

“I’ve already sent someone to investigate. I’ll keep you informed,” An Sheng said again. “Madam wants you to take Ya’er home for a meal.”

“Alright.” After spending so much time in his dorm, Zhou Wen had reached a bottleneck with Civilized Country. He planned on heading out to take a breather.

While he played games every day, Ya’er sat alone in his dormitory. He wondered if she would develop any psychological problems over time.

After getting An Sheng to make the appointment, Zhou Wen took Ya’er to visit Ouyang Lan.

It was rare for Zhou Lingfeng to be here today. As Zhou Wen seldom came to the An family home, he seldom saw him.

However, Zhou Wen was used to it. Before Zhou Lingfeng married Ouyang Lan, he was often away, so he didn’t find it a problem.

During the meal, Ouyang Lan mentioned what Zhou Lingfeng had been doing. Only then did Zhou Wen know that he had been translating a book for a long time. He was almost done.

“What kind of book is it?” Zhou Wen asked curiously.

With Ouyang Lan around, Zhou Lingfeng shouldn’t need to do any ordinary translation work. The books he was translating weren’t just for money.

Zhou Lingfeng said, “It’s a book from a small country in the South District before the dimensional storms. As that language wasn’t very developed and was mixed with many symbols, the translation work wasn’t progressing smoothly…”

Zhou Wen listened for a while but failed to figure out anything. He wasn’t too interested in language work.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 818 - Earth Elemental Beast

Chapter 818: Earth Elemental Beast

On the way back, Zhou Wen walked along the streets of Luoyang with Ya’er. He could clearly sense that Luoyang was much more desolate than when he had first arrived.

Life was difficult to begin with, and there were often break-out creatures appearing. In such chaotic times, having a stable home was already difficult. Raising children was even harder. Many people chose not to have children.

Even though the Federation had been promoting childbirth, the birth rate of newborns continued to decrease.

Ya’er looked around curiously. Everything here was new to her. Although she wasn’t a real child, her inner world wasn’t much more mature than a child’s.

After all, she had always been trapped near the Kuman Nee. Xiao Tianfang wouldn’t take her out unless she was needed in a fight.

Zhou Wen thought that since he was out today, he should relax and take Ya’er shopping nearby. He bought some things for her and let her try out some normal entertainment.

Although Ya’er didn’t say anything, it was obvious that she was happy.

Should I take her out more often in the future? Zhou Wen thought to himself.

Zhou Wen felt that he was taking care of Ya’er, but he didn’t realize that without Ya’er, he might have become more and more accustomed to being alone.

While Ya’er was playing a VR game, Zhou Wen’s phone rang. It was Zhang Yuzhi.

“You previously asked about the Mystic Bird. Do you only want a Mystic Bird, or do you want any Companion Beast that can help you escape?” Zhang Yuzhi asked.

“Actually, I want a mount that can teleport. Do you have a way?” Zhou Wen asked doubtfully.

Zhang Yuzhi said, “Not at all. If you only want to escape, our Zhang family will be selling an Earth Escape Companion Beast recently. Perhaps you can try to obtain it.”

“Earth Escape Companion Beast? Is it a mount-type?” Zhou Wen hurriedly asked.

If it was a mount, it would be very attractive to Zhou Wen if it could use Earth Escape with its owner.

Apart from teleportation, Earth Escape was almost the best escape skill. Zhou Wen naturally wanted a mount that knew Earth Escape. However, if it wasn’t a mount and it couldn’t bring along others while using Earth Escape, its value would be much lower.

Take Tai Sui for example. Although it could also use Earth Escape, it wasn’t of much use when it couldn’t bring people along with it.

“It’s a mount, and it’s at the Mythical stage. However, there are many people competing this time. I reckon it will fetch a high price,” Zhang Yuzhi said.

“Why would your Zhang family sell such a Companion Beast?” Zhou Wen was somewhat puzzled.

No one would find such a Companion Beast excessive. Zhou Wen found it unbelievable that the Zhang family wanted to sell it.

If Zhou Wen had such a Companion Beast, he definitely wouldn’t sell it.

“The reason is very complicated. It’s a long story, but the Companion Beast is definitely genuine. If you are interested, you can come over to take a look. When the time comes, I can do my best as a host,” Zhang Yuzhi said.

“Alright, what Companion Beast is it?” Zhou Wen asked.

“It’s an Earth Elemental Beast of the Five-Elemental Beasts.” Zhang Yuzhi thought for a moment and said, “There are a total of five Five-Elemental Beasts. They are the five types of Metal, Wood, Water, Fire, and Earth. They each have different abilities. They are obtained from a dimensional zone. One needs a corresponding special physique to obtain Companion Eggs of different attributes. There’s no problem with the origins of the Earth Elemental Beast, but there are many people who want it. The price might be very high.”

Zhou Wen immediately understood that the Earth Elemental Beast was likely the same as Banana Fairy. They were Companion Eggs obtained from special dimensional zones and not dropped from killing dimensional creatures.

After chatting with Zhang Yuzhi for a while, he knew that the auction would be held next month, so there was no rush.

It’s good to take a look when the time comes. With my present strength, I don’t need to worry about the bureau. I’ll

use that batch of Essence Crystals I have. Zhou Wen thought for a moment and felt that he couldn't directly use the Essence Crystals directly at the auction. Therefore, he asked An Sheng if he had any channels to sell them.

"Sunset Army's weapons factory requires a large number of Essence Crystals. Just sell them to the weapon factory. We will definitely not fleece you," An Sheng said.

"Alright," Zhou Wen agreed.

After discussing the details of the deal with An Sheng, An Sheng suddenly said, "Are you interested in coming to the factory to take a look?"

"That's not appropriate, right?" Zhou Wen was slightly taken aback.

"There's nothing inappropriate about it. To others, the factory is a secret, but you are different. Furthermore, there's something I want you to see," An Sheng said.

Zhou Wen didn't wish to go, but since An Sheng had said so, he had no choice but to agree.

After setting a time, Zhou Wen took Ya'er to the factory.

The weapon factory itself was in a dimensional zone. It used the dimensional zone's rules to effectively ensure that outsiders couldn't enter. Furthermore, the weapon factory itself had tight security measures.

It was different from what Zhou Wen had imagined. The weapon factory was modern and the various instruments were very advanced. It looked like a high-tech laboratory from a movie.

It was rare to see such a laboratory in this era.

“Overseer searched for a long time before finding this dimensional zone. The taboo rules here are very special. They won’t affect the operation of the apparatus,” An Sheng introduced as he walked.

Zhou Wen saw many of the Sunset Army’s equipment, such as Essence Gold bullets, Essence Gold shields, Essence Gold armor, etc.

There were also some that Zhou Wen had never seen before. They were likely still in development. The entire factory was built in an underground space, divided into several levels.

Zhou Wen was surprised to see an engine and accelerator made of Essence Gold.

“Overseer has put in a lot of effort in the weapon factory. Every year, he will invest a large amount of money. The expenses on materials are huge. Thankfully, scientists aren’t valued by society these days. Otherwise, it wouldn’t be easy to hire so many high-end professionals,” An Sheng said.

“How powerful are the Essence Gold weapons now? Can they resist Mythical creatures?” Zhou Wen asked.

“Pure Essence Gold weapons are still lacking, but just like the Bamboo Blade you use, some high-level Essence Gold weapons can fight Mythical creatures if the user is strong enough. However, this isn’t absolute. The item we are researching might be a breakthrough.” As An Sheng spoke, his eyes seemed to glow. It was obvious that he was very proud of that item.

“What’s that?” Zhou Wen asked curiously.

“You should see for yourself.” An Sheng didn’t answer Zhou Wen directly. Instead, he took him to the lowest level of the factory.

When the door to the independent experimental zone opened, Zhou Wen was immediately alarmed by what he saw.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 819 - Essence Energy Compression Accelerator

Chapter 819: Essence Energy Compression Accelerator

Translator: CKtalon

In the huge warehouse-like laboratory, there was a strange device placed horizontally. It looked like a rocket launcher that could be held over the shoulder.

However, this thing was just too big. It was placed horizontally, and it almost spanned across the entire laboratory. Furthermore, it looked even more high-tech. There were circles of crystal rings on it.

In short, it was a rod-shaped object that combined metal and crystal.

“Are these all made of Essence Gold? The crystals on them should be Essence Crystals, right?” Zhou Wen asked in surprise.

If this thing was really made of Essence Gold and Essence Crystals, the amount of materials needed was unimaginable. Zhou Wen had a lot of Essence Crystals, but they would only take up a small portion of the huge machine.

“59% is Essence Gold. 28% Essence Crystals. The remaining consists of supplementary materials,” An Sheng said.

“What’s this? Don’t tell me it’s a large rocket launcher?” Zhou Wen asked.

“You can view it as a super-large rocket launcher. Its effects are similar, but it’s not exactly the same. This is an Essence Energy compression accelerator,” An Sheng explained. “Its

main function is to compress Essence Energy, accelerate it, and shoot it out."

"How powerful can it be?" Zhou Wen asked curiously.

An Sheng thought for a moment and said, "This is a very complicated problem. The power depends on the amount of Essence Energy and the enhanced speed. Based on the current technology, we can only compress the Essence Energy contained in 4.5 tonnes of Essence Crystals at a time. Then, we can accelerate it to supersonic speed."

"I don't know about that. Is there any obvious analogy?" Zhou Wen asked.

"This is because we haven't used that many Essence Crystals during our experiments. Therefore, the strength I'm talking about now is only in theory. According to the calculations, the might of a full-powered Essence Energy launch should be stronger than Tyrant Behemoth's full-strength strike. Of course, this is only in theory. In fact, a launch requires a large number of Essence Crystals. Furthermore, the extraction of Essence Crystals before the launcher compresses the Essence Crystals takes a long time. Even if all the materials are prepared beforehand, the launch will still take more than ten hours to reach its maximum power."

"It sounds troublesome," Zhou Wen said.

"It is. That's because we were building on very weak foundations in the beginning. Many of the technologies were figured out bit by bit. We don't have the optimal solution yet. However, from the looks of it, the idea is right. Essence Energy can be compressed and accelerated before being shot out. The energy explosion produced is indeed very strong. Furthermore, it will deal great damage to

dimensional creatures. It’s much stronger than ordinary Essence Gold bullets.”

Upon saying this, An Sheng appeared somewhat excited. “The greatest difficulty now is how to more effectively compress Essence Energy. If we can compress Essence Energy ahead of time and create compressed Essence Energy Bullets similar to ordinary bullets, then miniaturize the acceleration mechanism, we might be able to produce Essence Energy compression accelerators that can be used by a single person. However, there are many technical problems that need to be resolved. The Essence Energy compression accelerator that can be produced now is just that big.”

“It’s good, but it won’t be of any use at the moment, right?” Zhou Wen couldn’t imagine how such a huge item could be used.

If they used it to deal with Mythical creatures, the Mythical creatures were very fast. Before the accelerator could have them in the line of fire, they would probably have fled.

Unless it was a Mythical creature with a problematic intelligence, one that would only stand there and let the Essence Energy compressor hit it.

The fatal flaw was it having more than ten hours of preparation time. A fight had to be scheduled before it could happen. The restrictions were too great.

“In fact, the original goal of such a large-scale Essence Energy compression accelerator wasn’t to kill Mythical creatures in dimensional zones. It was mainly prepared for the scenario when dimensional creatures break out on a large scale in the future,” An Sheng said.

Zhou Wen immediately understood. An Tianzuo had originally carried out this research to defend Luoyang in the future. It was very useful to deal with large numbers of dimensional creatures that were attacking the city.

“However, the development direction now is still mainly miniaturization. We hope that a single launcher can be developed in the next few years, but this is very difficult. Not only are there funding and raw material problems, but there are also many technical problems that require the experts to solve. Sometimes, a small problem might take years…”

Zhou Wen could tell that An Sheng had high hopes for the launcher.

Indeed, humans were unable to advance to the Mythical stage, so they could only rely on external forces. Companion Beasts were external forces; likewise for Guardians. As for An Tianzuo and An Sheng, they clearly wanted to try taking another path.

“We are still studying Essence Energy armor. It’s still in R&D and hasn’t obtained any substantial results. In the future, if the studies on Essence Energy armor and Essence Energy launcher are successful, even a Mortal-stage human could use this equipment to fight high-level dimensional creatures or even kill Mythical creatures…”

“I hope that day comes sooner.” Zhou Wen felt that it would be great if they could succeed. This might be the bedrock for the stability of human society.

Just like in primitive societies humans slowly learned how to use tools and create cold weapons to eventually become the owners of the land. Then, they created hot weapons, cars, ships, rockets, and so on, becoming the rulers of the entire Earth.

Perhaps Essence Energy armor and Essence Energy launchers were the weapons that would allow humans to regain their rule over Earth in the future. The premise was that the research was successful.

A launcher of this size was too useless in actual combat.

“Overseer has always been looking forward to that day. He said that even if humans can’t advance to the Mythical stage and their physical strength can’t match those powerful creatures, we will definitely become the rulers of the world again,” An Sheng said.

Looking at the busy workers in the laboratory, Zhou Wen suddenly felt that there might be hope for humanity’s future.

Many people were secretly working hard to prepare for the large-scale breakouts of dimensional zones. Even if a dimensional zone broke out, humans might not be crushed.

The only thing they lacked now was time. Be it humans who were cultivating hard to advance to the Mythical stage or people who were researching new weapons, they all needed time.

Zhou Wen left all the Essence Crystals with An Sheng. He originally planned on selling only a portion, but he was ultimately persuaded by An Sheng to sell all the Essence Crystals to him. Furthermore, a portion of them were exchanged for items.

When he left, Zhou Wen realized that An Sheng had brought him to see the Essence Energy compression accelerator because he wanted those Essence Energy Crystals.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 820 - Returning to Chess Mountain

Chapter 820: Returning to Chess Mountain

“There’s something else I want to show you.” After leaving the laboratory, An Sheng took Zhou Wen to the Sunset Army’s military camp.

An Sheng took Zhou Wen to a hall where there was a large amount of VR equipment.

“Try it,” An Sheng said with a smile as he handed a VR helmet to Zhou Wen.

Puzzled, Zhou Wen put the helmet on before entering a game. Soon, he nearly cried out in surprise.

This game was actually very similar to what Huang Ji was doing. However, Huang Ji was making a mobile game, while this one was much more high-end. The VR game with a full field of vision looked very similar to the real Tiger Cage Pass. Even the Demonized Soldiers and Demonized Generals could almost pass off as real.

However, the settings and modes were very similar to the mobile version.

“This game looks a little familiar,” Zhou Wen said to An Sheng after taking off his helmet.

“You have a part in this game as well. It’s the game that you and Huang Ji worked together to create. Overseer got Huang

Ji to work with him. This is the latest result. It's used to train new recruits," An Sheng said.

So the sponsor Senior Huang Ji mentioned is An Tianzuo! Zhou Wen really never expected An Tianzuo to invest in a game that Huang Ji had made.

Zhou Wen remembered that An Tianzuo disliked him gaming. He never expected An Tianzuo to invest in this game, so it was extremely surprising.

"Overseer isn't actually a bad person. He's just a little more stubborn than others," An Sheng said.

"What kind of person he is isn't important. After all, we aren't the same type of people. It's impossible for us to have too many interactions in the future," Zhou Wen said.

An Sheng shook his head and didn't continue the topic. Zhou Wen told An Sheng about the Earth Elemental Beast's auction.

"The Zhang family is actually auctioning the Earth Elemental Beast? Is this news accurate?" An Sheng was alarmed.

"Zhang Yuzhi told me. It shouldn't be fake, right?" Zhou Wen said.

"What Zhang Yuzhi says definitely won't be fake. I never expected the Zhang family to auction the Earth Elemental Beast. I reckon the other five families and some wealthy families will participate in this auction." An Sheng's expression changed as though he was thinking about something.

“Do you know the origins of the Earth Elemental Beast?” Zhou Wen could tell from An Sheng’s expression that he knew something.

An Sheng said, “A little. In fact, Earth Elemental Beasts are only one of the Five-Elemental Beasts. These Companion Beasts were brought out from the Founding Emperor Tomb by the six heroes. There are a total of five—Metal, Wood, Water, Fire, and Earth. The Zhang family obtained the Earth Elemental Beast, but I don’t know where the other four went.”

“Weren’t they brought out by the six heroes? Shouldn’t the other four be in the hands of the other families?” Zhou Wen asked in puzzlement.

“In theory, yes. But the other families claim to not have the Five-Elemental Beasts. Only the Zhang family has the Earth Elemental Beast. It’s said that this matter made the six heroes very unhappy, but outsiders don’t know the truth. Now that the Zhang family is suddenly offering the Earth Elemental Beast for sale in an auction, there must be some unknown reason. By the way, did Zhang Yuzhi say why they are auctioning the Earth Elemental Beast?” An Sheng pondered.

“No.” Zhou Wen shook his head slightly.

“If you are interested, you can go take a look. However, it will probably be a little difficult to obtain the Earth Elemental Beast. The auction won’t be that simple,” An Sheng said.

Zhou Wen nodded. He was indeed very interested, but he was more interested in a dimensional zone like the Founding Emperor Tomb. If there was a chance, he wanted to see if there was a tiny palm symbol.

“Adjutant An, the six-winged seraphim has appeared again.” As the two of them were speaking, a soldier came over to report.

“Where is it?” An Sheng asked.

“It’s near Chess Mountain.” The soldier handed the information he had just received to An Sheng.

“Near Chess Mountain? Why did she go there?” An Sheng frowned slightly.

Zhou Wen didn’t find it strange. The six-winged seraphim had been released by The Thearch after fooling John. Now, it was very normal for people who had contracted the six-winged seraphim to go to Chess Mountain.

“Do you have a specific location? I want to take a look,” Zhou Wen asked.

“According to the intelligence, the few times we discovered her recently were near the Qihe River. If you want to find her, there should be a chance if you head over there.” An Sheng handed the information to Zhou Wen.

“Alright, I’ll go take a look now.” Zhou Wen read the intelligence and realized that it was indeed written in this manner. He decided to head over to take a look.

“I still have some matters to settle, so I won’t take you there. After all, you know the place well. Deputy Governor Qin is still there. Just look for him when you get there,” An Sheng said.

…

After leaving the military camp, Zhou Wen went to Chess Mountain.

Most of the Guardians didn’t have an owner yet, so he didn’t have many choices. He would kill every single one he found, and the six-winged seraphim was a Guardian that Zhou Wen had a higher chance of killing.

The only person he needed to worry about was The Thearch. If it wasn’t necessary, Zhou Wen didn’t wish to see her.

The Thearch was definitely not as simple as an ordinary Mythical stage. Zhou Wen suspected that she was very likely at the Calamity grade. However, after arriving on Earth, her strength was weakened by the laws of Earth, reducing her to the level of an ordinary Mythical.

Even so, The Thearch was much stronger than ordinary Mythical creatures.

Ya’er was also taken to Chess Mountain by Zhou Wen. There were many strange creatures in Chess Mountain, such as Blood Threadworms. Zhou Wen suspected that they were also considered Gu, so taking Ya’er along might be of some use.

“Doctor Zhou, you’re finally here. We were just talking about you.” Before Zhou Wen arrived at Chess Mountain’s encampment, he encountered the patrolling soldiers who greeted him in surprise.

In the military camp, An Jing was training. She had been stationed inside Chess Mountain’s encampment for quite some time. Every time she fought, she did her best.

However, no matter how well she did or how many contributions she made, others would only take her for

granted. This was because she was from the An family; she was An Tianzuo’s sister.

As for Zhou Wen, he had only spent a short period of time in the military camp, but he had already obtained the support of the soldiers and officers.

When others mentioned Zhou Wen, they wouldn’t talk about his relationship with the An family. They would only talk about how good Doctor Zhou was and how much they idolized him.

An Jing didn’t understand why everyone still treated her as An Tianzuo’s sister despite her having done no less than Zhou Wen at Chess Mountain.

How am I inferior to him? An Jing trained very hard because she wanted to defeat that fellow. She couldn’t lose.

Just as she was practicing, she suddenly heard a commotion coming from the military camp. An Jing thought that something had happened, but when she went out to take a look, she saw many soldiers and officers surrounding a person. It was the Zhou Wen she wanted to defeat even in her dreams.

An Jing’s heart tightened, but she quickly relaxed as she thought to herself, *Perfect timing. It’s time to settle this.*

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 821 - Six-Winged Seraphim's New Master

Chapter 821: Six-Winged Seraphim's New Master

Seeing the way the soldiers looked at Zhou Wen, An Jing felt mixed emotions. It was something she wanted but couldn't obtain.

Zhou Wen, I'll surprise you this time, An Jing thought.

Even Qin Wufu came out to take a look when he heard the commotion. When he realized that it was Zhou Wen, he got someone to call him over.

"Little Zhou, have you thought it through and decided to join us as a soldier?" Qin Wufu poured a cup of water for Zhou Wen.

"I heard that the six-winged seraphim appeared near the Qihe River, so I came to take a look. Will it be possible for you to get someone to take me there?" Zhou Wen asked.

"That's easy, but that six-winged seraphim's strength is extremely terrifying. I don't know if he's friend or foe. If we encounter him, you have to be careful." Qin Wufu exhorted before saying to his adjutant, "Call Little Jing over."

"Governor, are you looking for An Jing?" Zhou Wen hurriedly asked.

"That's right. You are family. She's currently in charge of monitoring that area. She's the perfect choice to take you there," Qin Wufu said.

“There’s no need to trouble her. Just find a soldier to take me there.” Zhou Wen didn’t wish to get into trouble with An Jing.

“It’s not trouble at all. It’s her job,” Qin Wufu said with a smile.

Seeing that the adjutant had already left, Zhou Wen didn’t say anything else. After all, it wasn’t a big deal to just lead the way.

Zhou Wen originally imagined that An Jing wouldn’t be willing to take him, but to his surprise, after An Jing came and listened to Qin Wufu’s orders. She didn’t make any outlandish show of expression. She was like an ordinary soldier who chose to carry out orders.

From the looks of it, she hasn’t come to the military for nothing. She has indeed matured and is no longer as childish as before. Zhou Wen felt that this trip wouldn’t be troublesome when he saw An Jing treating him like an ordinary person.

The two of them left the encampment and An Jing led Zhou Wen all the way to the Qihe River.

An Jing didn’t say much on the way, but Zhou Wen was happy with that as well. He had no intention of making small talk with her.

However, Zhou Wen soon discovered a problem. According to the intelligence, the location of the six-winged seraphim was near the Qihe River, but An Jing had already reached the nearby mountains and was a little far from the Qihe River.

“Didn’t the six-winged seraphim appear near the Qihe River? Why are we in the mountains?” Zhou Wen had no choice but to ask.

“You are looking for the six-winged seraphim, right?” An Jing asked expressionlessly.

“Yes.” Zhou Wen nodded.

“There’s no mistake then. Just follow me.” An Jing continued leading the way, but she thought to herself, *You never expected me to be the current owner of the six-winged seraphim, right? Although you once defeated John, who possessed the six-winged seraphim, John was unable to use the true strength of a six-winged seraphim. And I can already use more than 90% of the six-winged seraphim’s strength. It should be enough to fight you.*

Seeing how confident An Jing was, Zhou Wen continued following her into the mountain.

After walking for quite some time, An Jing finally stopped at a cave. She guessed that even if a battle happened here, the camp wouldn’t be able to hear anything.

“Have we arrived? Did the six-winged seraphim appear nearby?” Zhou Wen looked around and didn’t find any traces.

Truth Listener was activated the entire time, but there was no sign of the six-winged seraphim nearby.

“Yes, the six-winged seraphim is here,” An Jing said, pretending to be calm.

“What do you mean?” Zhou Wen had already noticed that An Jing’s tone was odd.

Holy light rose from An Jing’s body as white feathers condensed, forming a six-winged seraphim that floated behind her. It was the six-winged seraphim Zhou Wen had seen before.

“So you are the new contractor of the six-winged seraphim.” Zhou Wen frowned slightly.

He had come to kill the six-winged seraphim, but now, the six-winged seraphim was An Jing’s Guardian. It didn’t seem right for Ouyang Lan to know that he had killed her Guardian.

“Ever since I joined the military, I’ve been working hard. I work when others are working, and I train hard to make myself stronger when others are resting. Now, I’m at the same starting point as you. I have an Epic Perfect Life Soul, a Mythical Companion Beast, and a Guardian. What you have, I already have. Now, we can have a fair battle,” An Jing said to Zhou Wen.

“Did The Thearch help you contract the six-winged seraphim?” Zhou Wen asked An Jing.

“You know The Thearch?” An Jing was slightly taken aback.

Zhou Wen immediately smiled bitterly when he heard An Jing’s reply. “I’d rather not know her. Does she have any conditions for helping you contract the six-winged seraphim?”

“This has nothing to do with you,” An Jing said.

“It’s true that your matter has nothing to do with me, but you are Sis Lan’s daughter. I don’t wish for Sis Lan to be sad, so I hope you understand that The Thearch is a very

dangerous person. Think about John’s outcome and you should know what kind of person she is,” Zhou Wen said.

An Jing looked at Zhou Wen and said, “You don’t have to worry about my mother. I’m already an adult. I know what needs to be done and what shouldn’t be done. I didn’t agree to do anything for The Thearch. She didn’t ask me to do anything for her either. Her only request was for me to try my best to clinch first place in the next Companion Beast ranking battle and obtain a divine fruit for her.”

“In that case, you obtained a Mythical Companion Beast in Chess Mountain, right?” Zhou Wen never expected The Thearch to place so much importance on the divine fruit. She didn’t manage to obtain it from him and instead got An Jing to do it.

“How did you know?” An Jing was even more surprised.

“Because The Thearch came to me before, but I rejected her. She’s too dangerous. It’s best not to have anything to do with her,” Zhou Wen said truthfully.

“If one wants to become stronger, one naturally has to take the risk. I know what choice to make. There’s no need for you to teach me.” An Jing looked at Zhou Wen and slowly said, “Regardless of victory or defeat today, the grudge between us ends here.”

“Do you really have to fight me?” Zhou Wen asked An Jing.

“Of course. Otherwise, why would I train so hard? I have to beat you this time,” An Jing said.

“Even if it means losing the Guardian?” Zhou Wen asked again.

This time, without waiting for An Jing to answer, the six-winged seraphim said, “The only one who can defeat a Guardian is a Guardian. Last time, John was too weak and couldn’t even use a tenth of my strength. Now, with An Jing as my Guardian, my true strength can be exhibited. You have no chance of winning. An Jing’s compatibility with me is virtually perfect, so I won’t betray her.”

The six-winged seraphim had clearly misunderstood, believing Zhou Wen meant that he would betray An Jing like he had betrayed John.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 822 - Ending Before Starting

Chapter 822: Ending Before Starting

Zhou Wen ignored the six-winged seraphim and looked at An Jing as though he wanted her to answer him personally.

“I contracted the Guardian to defeat you. If I can’t defeat you, what’s the point of having a Guardian?” An Jing’s eyes were resolute as she stared at Zhou Wen and continued, “Over the past few days, I’ve been constantly seeking a breakthrough. Even in my dreams, I’ve been thinking about how to make myself stronger. No matter what problems I encounter, as long as I can defeat you, I can…”

An Jing was still speaking, but Zhou Wen had already drawn his saber when she said her first sentence.

Immortal Slaying!

Back when he fought John, Zhou Wen already had a good understanding of the six-winged seraphim’s abilities. He knew what skills he had, so there was no need for him to hesitate.

The only thing he needed to consider was the effects on An Jing after killing the six-winged seraphim. Since An Jing said that contracting a Guardian was meaningless if she couldn’t defeat him, Zhou Wen didn’t have any qualms.

Immortal Slaying was unbelievably fast. It wasn’t domineering because it was too fast. It was impossible to sense any domineering aura.

By the time An Jing sensed Zhou Wen’s strike, his saber had already returned to its scabbard.

As for the six-winged seraphim in the air behind her, his pupils constricted. His mouth moved as though it wanted to say something, but this movement only served to misalign his mouth. His body split into two as it fell to the sides, turning into white feathers that dissipated.

An Jing stood there in a daze. There was no surprise on her face, only confusion and shock. She stopped her words midway.

She never expected Zhou Wen to strike without much warning. Zhou Wen was still hugging Ya’er in his arms. She originally wanted to say that they would only begin the battle after Zhou Wen placed the child to the side, but Zhou Wen held the child in one hand and drew his saber with the other. He killed the six-winged seraphim so casually that it felt like they hadn’t even begun the battle.

I… haven’t even started yet… This was the only thought that remained in An Jing’s mind. She didn’t know what to say next.

After slaying the six-winged seraphim with one strike, Zhou Wen felt a strange energy infuse into the Slaughterer Life Soul, causing it to grow again. He had a faint feeling that it was turning corporeal.

However, even after the energy was exhausted, Slaughterer still failed to advance to a Perfect Body.

Is it still not enough? How many do I have to kill? Zhou Wen was somewhat depressed.

It probably wouldn’t be easy to find another Guardian that was as easy to kill as the six-winged seraphim.

Firstly, the six-winged seraphim couldn’t be considered especially powerful among the Guardians. Secondly, Zhou Wen knew the various abilities of the six-winged seraphim like the back of his hand, allowing him to kill him so easily.

If it were an unfamiliar Guardian, even if its strength was about the same as the six-winged seraphim, it would be difficult for him to kill it so easily.

“Let’s call it a day. If you really want to defeat me, use your own strength. The strength bestowed by others unto you won’t be able to defeat me.” Zhou Wen turned around and walked back with Ya’er in his arms.

An Jing stood there without moving for quite some time. Before this battle, she had thought about many things. She had thought about the possible winning and losing outcomes, but no matter how she imagined the possibilities, she never expected that she would lose before the battle even began.

She originally thought that this would be an evenly matched battle, but now, she suddenly realized that she didn’t seem to have the qualifications to stand in the arena.

Just like an amateur challenging a professional boxer, she fell to the ground before the bell rang.

…

I hope she won’t look for The Thearch again. Zhou Wen didn’t wish for An Jing to have anything to do with The Thearch.

An Jing was Ouyang Lan’s daughter after all. Although Zhou Wen didn’t like her much, he didn’t wish for anything to happen to her.

After returning to the encampment, Zhou Wen met a few acquaintances and gathered with them before setting off for Luoyang the next day.

Qin Wufu had been encouraging Zhou Wen to give up on his studies and come over to work with him. Zhou Wen politely declined.

It wasn’t that Zhou Wen wasn’t willing to contribute to protecting humans, but that he felt that making himself stronger was the most important. As long as he was the strongest, he could completely eliminate the uncertainties and not be forced into a passive position of defense.

Zhou Wen was willing to stay on campus because the college would give him plenty of free time and provide him with plenty of resources and information. It allowed him to walk the path he wanted and quickly become stronger.

However, if he entered the military, he needed to carry out missions. That could indeed help a portion of people, but Zhou Wen wanted to help more than just a portion.

After returning to school, Zhou Wen began studying the Sky-Stealing Sun-Shifting Art. This was because it was very difficult for Civilized Country to advance by relying on Bright Torch Vision World. He had to think of other solutions, and he couldn’t think of one at the moment unless he could obtain a pet like the Mystic Bird. However, that wasn’t easy, so Zhou Wen could only study other Essence Energy Arts.

The Sky-Stealing Sun-Shifting Art was a rather interesting Essence Energy Art. Zhou Wen had only just gained basic

mastery of it. Although he didn’t sense any powerful strength from it, just the way the Essence Energy was circulated was very interesting.

Typical Essence Energy Arts mostly had a sea of energy, but Essence Energy Arts like the Lost Immortal Sutra didn’t have an Essence Energy sea. However, the Sky-Stealing Sun-Shifting Art had countless Essence Energy seas.

When the Sky-Stealing Sun-Shifting Art circulated, his body was like a tiny universe with countless revolving stars. Every star was an Essence Energy sea, and the entire tiny universe was a huge Essence Energy sea.

As Zhou Wen felt his Essence Energy circulate, he pondered over the profundity of the Sky-Stealing Sun-Shifting Art, hoping to condense a Life Providence.

Condensing a Life Soul required the blood essence of a Mythical or Guardian. Otherwise, the simulation of the Sky-Stealing Sun-Shifting Art couldn’t condense a Life Soul without a foundation. However, a Life Providence wasn’t that particular. All one needed to do was gain insight into the Essence Energy Art.

Why does this Sky-Stealing Sun-Shifting Art’s pocket universe feel a little similar to the Endless Sea of Stars? Zhou Wen suddenly discovered something amiss.

The layout of the miniature universe’s stars was very similar to the Endless Sea of Stars. If Zhou Wen hadn’t spent a long time grinding Essence Energy Skills in the Endless Sea of Stars, he wouldn’t have discovered this similarity.

Could it be… Zhou Wen’s heart stirred as he stopped practicing and took out his phone to enter the Endless Sea of Stars dungeon.

Zhou Wen looked up at the stars in the Endless Sea of Stars. After watching for a while, he heaved a sigh of relief and revealed a look of delight. *As expected, the circulation method of the Sky-Stealing Sun-Shifting Art is a replica of the Endless Sea of Stars.*

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 823 - Devourer

Chapter 823: Devourer

The pocket universe formed by the Sky-Stealing Sun-Shifting Art wasn’t as complicated as the Endless Sea of Stars. It lacked a portion of the details, but the general outline was the same.

Zhou Wen explored the Endless Sea of Stars as he grinded. Through his observations of the Endless Sea of Stars, he gained insight into the profundity of the Sky-Stealing Sun-Shifting Art.

Since Zhou Wen wanted to search for Astral Combat Beasts in the Endless Sea of Stars, it wasn’t considered a waste of time.

He had been too busy recently, so Zhou Wen didn’t have the time to grind the Lunar Mansion skills and Astral Combat Beasts. The twenty-eight Lunar Mansion Skills were still lacking three key skills, so the Star Stealer’s Essence Energy Skill Crystal hadn’t dropped.

Now was the perfect opportunity to explore the Endless Sea of Stars and find Astral Combat Beasts.

Zhou Wen roamed the Endless Sea of Stars and watched the stellar transposition. Every time he gained some insight, the tiny universe in his body would become more similar to the Endless Sea of Stars.

Zhou Wen had a vague feeling that when his pocket universe became identical to the Endless Sea of Stars, it

would be the time he condensed his Life Providence.

The Endless Sea of Stars wasn’t just limited to the twenty-eight Lunar Mansions. Outside the twenty-eight Lunar Mansions covered a large area. Zhou Wen killed countless Astral Beasts along the way, but he didn’t find any Astral Combat Beasts.

In fact, there were very few Mythical Astral Beasts. Most of them were between the Mortal and Epic stage.

Just as he was feeling puzzled, he suddenly saw something flash in the cosmos ahead.

When Zhou Wen focused, he didn’t discover anything.

Were my eyes playing tricks on me? Zhou Wen took a closer look and still didn’t discover anything. He couldn’t help but find it odd.

Suddenly, something flashed in the cosmos. Zhou Wen only saw a flash, but he didn’t see what it was.

However, when Zhou Wen looked carefully at the spot where the figure was flickering, he immediately felt his scalp tingle. This was because a planet that was originally there had vanished. When he confirmed that there was nothing there, he clearly saw a planet.

Devourer! Zhou Wen immediately thought of something.

Previously, when he had gone to the Endless Sea of Stars in real life, Zhou Wen had seen a Devourer. However, the Devourer back then looked like a jellyfish in a lake. It ate planets like eating candy, so it didn’t feel too shocking.

However, now that he was in the Endless Sea of Stars, it was somewhat different. Although the planet was much smaller than the planets in real life, it was still as huge as a mountain. It was truly shocking to see it disappear.

What was even more terrifying was that Zhou Wen didn’t see the Devourer in-game. He only saw something flash when it devoured the planet.

Zhou Wen summoned Tyrant Behemoth and raised Truth Listener’s ability to its limits to monitor the nearby area.

Soon, he realized that a nearby planet had been devoured, and he finally saw the Devourer.

With Truth Listener’s ability, Zhou Wen outlined the appearance of the Devourer in his mind, but he still couldn’t see it with his eyes.

It was similar to what Zhou Wen had seen in real life—a transparent jellyfish-like monster. However, its size was far more exaggerated in-game. It directly swallowed the entire planet; the smaller planets in the Endless Sea of Stars were about the size of a bean.

This body is much bigger than Tyrant Behemoth after its transformation! When Zhou Wen looked at it, the Devourer had already wandered over.

Zhou Wen ordered the gigantic Tyrant Behemoth to charge forward, hoping to see how powerful the Devourer was.

After receiving Zhou Wen’s order, Tyrant Behemoth activated Absolute Strength and pounced over.

The Devourer was really like a jellyfish. The countless tentacles below shook as its body rose at an unbelievable

speed, dodging Tyrant Behemoth’s attacks.

After Tyrant Behemoth struck, it didn’t continue pursuing. It stood there in a daze.

Zhou Wen immediately understood. He could see the Devourer with Truth Listener, but Tyrant Behemoth couldn’t. It naturally couldn’t attack enemies it couldn’t see.

Zhou Wen commanded Tyrant Behemoth to fight, but Tyrant Behemoth relied on its instincts to fight. With Zhou Wen commanding it, there was a delay.

Before long, the Devourer swallowed Tyrant Behemoth’s body.

It was unknown what the Devourer’s body was made of. Tyrant Behemoth, which possessed Absolute Strength, failed to escape after being swallowed.

This is really troublesome. Tyrant Behemoth can’t see it, so it’s disadvantageous in battle. Furthermore, if it can’t be seen, Torch Dragon’s Bright Torch Vision World will be useless. I’ll probably have to rely on Truth Listener to kill the Devourer. Zhou Wen summoned the Golden Overlord Sword and relied on Truth Listener’s ability to lock onto the Devourer’s position. He gathered all his strength and used Immortal Slaying to slash at the Devourer without holding back.

However, in the next second, Zhou Wen felt the blood-colored avatar’s body sink into a vortex before the phone screen went black.

GAME OVER!

Devourer is amazing. Tyrant Behemoth and Torch Dragon probably can't do anything about it. The only one who can fight it is probably Truth Listener. Zhou Wen thought for a moment and realized that he didn't have a good solution to deal with the Devourer.

However, the danger of Truth Listener removing multiple earrings was too high. If it only removed one or two, it probably wouldn't be enough to kill the Devourer.

He once again entered the Endless Sea of Stars. This time, Zhou Wen circled around the area. He couldn't think of a way to kill the Devourer for the moment, so he ignored it and strolled through the Endless Sea of Stars to condense the Life Providence of the Sky-Stealing Sun-Shifting Art.

However, the Devourer's whereabouts was unpredictable. Zhou Wen had already circled around it, but to his surprise, it would appear in different star systems. Every time Zhou Wen wanted to escape, he was devoured by its black hole-like power.

The only time Zhou Wen ran away was when he used the long-distance teleportation skill of Civilized Country to reach a spot where the Devourer couldn't see him. However, he was eventually found and killed by the Devourer.

At first, Zhou Wen imagined that it was a problem with the respawning of the game. Every time he respawned the Devourer would be in a different star system, but with repeated dying, Zhou Wen began to suspect something.

Every time I enter the Endless Sea of Stars, as long as I leave the twenty-eight Lunar Mansions, I will encounter it at about the same time. This definitely isn't as simple as a random respawn. Could it be that the Devourer has the

ability to teleport? Zhou Wen was pleasantly surprised when he thought of this possibility.

He didn’t have much hope of obtaining the Mystic Bird. If the Devourer also had spatial teleportation abilities, he could attempt to kill it. If a Companion Egg dropped, perhaps the problem of advancing Civilized Country would be resolved.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 824 - Pocket Universe

Chapter 824: Pocket Universe

How can I kill the Devourer? Behemoth and Torch Dragon aren't suitable for such battles. Demonic Neonate is still evolving. Who is more suitable?

After some thought, Zhou Wen realized that there were only three Companion Beasts that stood a chance. He could use Truth Listener with many earrings released or Primordial Spore's Parasitizing.

The other Companion Beasts couldn't see the Devourer, so it was useless no matter how powerful they were.

As for the last method, Zhou Wen would have to wear the Invisibility Cloak so that the Devourer couldn't see him and attempt an assassination.

Zhou Wen began with the simplest method. He first used the Invisibility Cloak to attempt an assassination. While visibly invisible, the Devourer could still see him. He had to use the three minutes of complete invisibility to prevent the Devourer from seeing him.

However, the assassination failed. The Devourer's entire body was like a black hole. Zhou Wen went over while invisible and used Immortal Slaying on it only to be sucked in. The game instantly ended.

Therefore, Zhou Wen attempted the second method, hoping to let Primordial Spore parasitize the Devourer. However,

after the Primordial Spore entered the Devourer’s body, it was sucked inside and the connection was broken.

With the two methods failing, Zhou Wen could only risk sending Truth Listener. After undoing two earrings, Truth Listener became extremely violent as it tore through space and charged at the Devourer.

The Devourer’s invisibility couldn’t affect Truth Listener. Truth Listener moved like lightning and wasn’t sucked in.

However, when Truth Listener’s claws swiped across the Devourer’s body, it was as though it had sliced through water. No traces of harm were left behind.

Truth Listener failed to gain an advantage in its battle with the Devourer, but it wasn’t devoured either. The situation seemed to be in a stalemate.

However, Truth Listener needed to constantly move at high speeds to avoid being sucked in by the Devourer. Its stamina and Essence Energy expenditure were rather intense. It would definitely not be the Devourer’s match if this dragged on.

Zhou Wen gritted his teeth and ordered Truth Listener to undo the third earring while its stamina was still at its peak.

Another earring on Truth Listener’s ear shattered. As it shattered, Truth Listener’s body underwent a strange change.

Before Zhou Wen could see Truth Listener’s exact changes, he felt an extremely violent and painful thought. It made him feel as though Truth Listener was about to explode.

And on Truth Listener’s body, black flames were rising like a bomb that could explode at any moment.

Zhou Wen directed Truth Listener to attack, but it didn’t listen to his orders. It roared at the sky as though it was resisting Zhou Wen’s orders.

Zhou Wen felt that the connection between him and Truth Listener was about to be severed. It was almost impossible to see, and Truth Listener could already resist his orders.

Return! Zhou Wen forcefully summoned Truth Listener back, but it was still useless.

Thankfully, while Truth Listener was resisting Zhou Wen’s will, the Devourer took the opportunity to devour it and kill it.

Zhou Wen exited the game. The Truth Listener earrings in reality were still there, allowing him to heave a sigh of relief.

After summoning Truth Listener, the dark-gold Six-Eared Golden Silk Monkey appeared in Zhou Wen’s hand. Thankfully, nothing happened.

Indeed, I can’t undo the earrings again. He was still reeling in fear and didn’t dare try again.

Zhou Wen had already tried all the methods he could think of, but there was nothing he could do about the Devourer. He had to think of a way to deal with it. Now, Zhou Wen could only use his invisibility to escape. If he was found again, he would let Truth Listener, who had shattered two earrings, hold it back while Zhou Wen continued exploring the Endless Sea of Stars to comprehend the Sky-Stealing Sun-Shifting Art.

Using Truth Listener to hold back the Devourer wasn’t too much of a problem.

As Zhou Wen entangled himself with the Devourer, he traveled the Endless Sea of Stars. After some time, he got used to it.

What puzzled Zhou Wen was that apart from the Devourer, he didn’t see a single Mythical Astral Beast in the Endless Sea of Stars.

Could it be that all the Mythical Astral Beasts have been devoured by the Devourer? Zhou Wen guessed.

The Sky-Stealing Sun-Shifting Art’s pocket universe became closer to perfection. Zhou Wen vaguely felt that he was about to condense a Life Providence.

Indeed, in less than two days, the Sky-Stealing Sun-Shifting Art began condensing a Life Providence. The pocket universe in his body emitted resplendent starlight.

After everything was over, the Life Providence of the Sky-Stealing Sun-Shifting Art condensed successfully. Zhou Wen hurriedly looked at the Life Providence’s information.

Life Providence: Pocket Universe

This Life Providence is really called Pocket Universe? Zhou Wen was slightly taken aback. He never expected the Life Providence to match the Essence Energy Art’s situation.

I wonder what Life Providence Eldest Senior Brother Liu Yun condensed? Zhou Wen wanted to ask Liu Yun, but he couldn’t find him.

Although the two of them had cultivated the Sky-Stealing Sun-Shifting Art, their bloodlines and minds were different, so the Life Providences they condensed would be different.

Pocket Universe: Producing the universe with one’s body.

What does it mean by producing the universe with one’s body? Zhou Wen was momentarily at a loss. What did this Life Providence mean?

However, when Zhou Wen switched to the Pocket Universe Life Providence and used the Sky-Stealing Sun-Shifting Art, he came to a slight realization.

Zhou Wen didn’t know about the other functions for the time being, but he definitely wouldn’t get lost again. The Pocket Universe Life Providence was like a GPS. No matter where he went, he would know his position in the universe.

Ignoring the fact that he wouldn’t get lost on Earth, Zhou Wen guessed that he wouldn’t even get lost in the universe.

It turns out that this Life Providence is just a locator? Zhou Wen was already suspicious of his previous guess, wondering if the Sky-Stealing Sun-Shifting Art was an Essence Energy Art that increased Speed.

The next step is to condense a Life Soul. I’ll first try to see if the Guardian’s blood in the underground sea can help the Sky-Stealing Sun-Shifting Art advance. Although Zhou Wen wasn’t the Guardian’s match, it wasn’t difficult to obtain a drop of blood. He could also farm the nine dragons.

The Guardian had a spatial attribute, so Zhou Wen felt that its compatibility with the Sky-Stealing Sun-Shifting Art was very high. It was highly likely to work.

The nine dragons didn’t drop anything useful as Zhou Wen forcefully extracted a drop of blood from the Guardian. To his surprise, the drop of blood couldn’t be absorbed by the Sky-Stealing Sun-Shifting Art.

It doesn’t work? Zhou Wen’s heart skipped a beat as he had no choice but to head to Ant City to give it a try.

This time, Zhou Wen was still praying that he wouldn’t be compatible with the guardian of Ant City. Otherwise, the Sky-Stealing Sun-Shifting Art might be an Essence Energy Art that enhanced his Essence Energy. Zhou Wen no longer needed such an Essence Energy Art, so cultivating it was a waste of time.

Zhou Wen tried it in fear, but thankfully, he was unable to absorb it. While Zhou Wen was delighted, he was also somewhat depressed.

Now that the blood from these two Guardians wasn’t working, he didn’t know where to find another drop of Guardian’s blood.

This sure is troublesome. Zhou Wen only knew a few Guardians. Furthermore, once a Guardian contracted a human and truly broke out of the cocoon, their blood would be useless. He had to find a Guardian that had yet to leave its cocoon and then extract their blood essence.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 825 - Lady of the Stars

Chapter 825: Lady of the Stars

Translator: CKtalon

Is there any Guardian related to the stars or the universe? Zhou Wen sat on the sofa and muttered to himself. It was too difficult to find a suitable Guardian. The key problem was that Zhou Wen didn’t know where the Guardians were.

Zhou Wen had the urge to take the chick back to the phoenix’s nest to discuss with the phoenix. He wanted to see if he could obtain a drop of blood essence from the cocoon protected by the phoenix.

Just as he was considering it, the antelope walked over and stood opposite Zhou Wen, writing on the ground with its hooves.

Zhou Wen was somewhat surprised. The antelope usually ignored him, so he wasn’t sure why it had suddenly come over. He hurriedly looked at the ground.

“You want to find a Guardian related to the stars?” The antelope wrote on the ground.

“So what if I do? Do you know where to find one?” Zhou Wen asked.

“Didn’t you already see it before? Why are you asking where it is?” the antelope continued writing.

“When did I see it?” Zhou Wen frowned. He couldn’t remember when he had seen such a Guardian.

“Not only have you seen it, but you have also carried it.” The antelope looked at Zhou Wen in a teasing manner and continued writing.

“When did I carry… it…” Zhou Wen suddenly reacted as he widened his eyes and asked the antelope, “Are you saying that there’s a Guardian inside the log?”

The antelope smiled at Zhou Wen and wrote: “That’s a Guardian with the Life Providence of the Lady of the Stars. She’s also a top existence among Guardians. You originally had the chance to contract her, but unfortunately, you screwed up. Not only did you fail to contract her, but you even became an enemy. Do you regret it now?”

“Why didn’t you say so earlier? How would I know?” Zhou Wen said helplessly.

“How do I tell you? You had to keep carrying that log. Did you want me to tell you in front of her that you have to lie to her and think of a way to cheat her?” The antelope curled its lips.

“You could have told me in advance.” Zhou Wen paused before continuing, “Let’s not talk about this first. Do you have a way to help me obtain a drop of her blood essence?”

“Why do you want her blood essence?” The antelope looked at Zhou Wen in puzzlement.

“I’m cultivating an Essence Energy Art, but I don’t have a special physique that matches it. I need a drop of Guardian’s blood with the same stats as a foundation,” Zhou Wen said.

“What Essence Energy Art is it?” the antelope asked.

“Sky-Stealing Sun-Shifting Art.” Zhou Wen had no intention of hiding it. Having followed him for so long, the antelope naturally knew that he knew many Essence Energy Arts. There was nothing to hide.

“So it’s the Sky-Stealing technique. It’s possible to use her blood essence as a foundation…” When the antelope said that, it pondered for a moment before continuing, “Now that she has returned to Forbidden City, Forbidden City has experienced a recovery in Essence Energy, so it will definitely be extremely terrifying. Furthermore, she probably doesn’t have a good impression of you. Even if you have a Companion Beast like Tyrant Behemoth, you will probably die after entering. It’s basically impossible to obtain her blood essence.”

“Is there no other way?” Zhou Wen was somewhat disappointed.

Even the antelope said that there was no hope, so Zhou Wen felt that there was no need to take the risk.

To his surprise, the antelope changed the topic and continued writing. “However, your luck isn’t bad. I happen to have some of her blood essence.”

“You have her blood essence? When did you obtain it?” Zhou Wen didn’t believe the antelope.

The Guardian had always been inside the log. The log had never been opened, and the antelope had never touched the log. How could it obtain the blood essence?

“Of course it wasn’t obtained recently. The one in the log is one of the few Guardians that survived the last Guardian Battle. This blood essence was obtained in the past.” After

the antelope finished writing, it shook its body and a small jade bottle dropped from the fur around its neck.

This fellow is actually hiding something? Zhou Wen sized up the antelope's fur in surprise.

The antelope's fur was very short. Only the fur around its neck was slightly longer. However, it couldn't hide a bottle no matter what, so he had no idea how it had hidden the bottle.

Zhou Wen reached out to take the jade bottle, but he was stopped by the antelope's hooves.

"You can have the blood essence, but I have a condition," the antelope wrote.

"You live off me, and you still want to negotiate with me?" Zhou Wen frowned.

"Do you want it?" The antelope had no intention of reasoning with Zhou Wen.

"Alright, tell me. What are your conditions?" Zhou Wen had no choice but to ask patiently.

"In the future, if you have the ability, you have to make another trip to Forbidden City and get something from her. Originally, as long as you contracted with her, that thing would have been ours, but it ended up in this state. Now, there's no other way but to use force," the antelope wrote.

"What's that?" Zhou Wen asked.

"You'll know when the time comes. Don't worry, I'll help you. When the time comes, we'll split it according to our agreement—20-80."

“That won’t do. In the past, we said 20-80 because you were the one who found the log. Now that we are cooperating, we naturally can’t do 20-80 again. 40-60, I’ll get 60% while you get 40%. After all, I know nothing about it. The risk is rather high.” Although Zhou Wen didn’t know what it was, he wasn’t willing to suffer a loss.

He wanted the blood essence anyway, so he definitely had to agree to the antelope’s conditions. It wasn’t a bad idea to fight for some benefits.

“Impossible.” The antelope rejected it directly.

Seeing its firm attitude, Zhou Wen said, “Then split it 50-50. It can’t be any lower.”

“You don’t want the blood essence?” The antelope pointed at the small jade bottle.

“40-60. You get 60% while I get 40%. That’s my bottom line. Besides, you have to put in some effort. You can’t let me take it all alone,” Zhou Wen said.

“Deal.” The antelope handed the jade bottle to Zhou Wen.

Zhou Wen took the jade bottle and opened it. He saw a tiny blob of blood inside. The blood was a strange purple color that suffused faint purple starlight. It was as though there was purple star sand inside. It looked beautiful and mysterious.

Zhou Wen had come into contact with the blood essence of many Guardians, so he knew at a glance that it was the blood essence of a real Guardian. However, its attribute was different from anything he had seen before. It was very similar to the aura in the log, so it was likely real.

After returning to the training room with the blood, Zhou Wen attempted to use the Sky-Stealing Sun-Shifting Art to absorb the blood in the jade bottle, and he successfully refined it.

Zhou Wen immediately felt the Pocket Universe in his body erupt. The purple blood essence provided the Pocket Universe with terrifying energy, causing it to emit terrifying starlight.

Zhou Wen felt his essence, vitality, and spirit condense inside the pocket universe. This was the precursor to condensing a Life Soul.

Perhaps it was because he had absorbed too much blood essence this time—possibly about eight drops—compared to a single drop in the past, the energy contained was much more than before, causing the Life Soul to condense at an abnormally fast speed.

A speck of starlight condensed in between Zhou Wen’s brows as it shimmered with a purple glow.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 826 - Fine Dust

Chapter 826: Fine Dust

It was a purple star that resembled a particle. It emitted a resplendent divine light that floated between Zhou Wen’s brows like a gem.

Life Soul: Fine Dust (Primordial Body)

Fine Dust: Millions of galaxies are just the dust of the boundless universe. A tiny speck of dust can also be a trichiliocosm.

Zhou Wen looked at the Fine Dust Life Soul and felt its body emit powerful stellar forces. A tiny bit of information surged into Zhou Wen’s mind, allowing him to gain a rough understanding of Fine Dust.

Although it was called Fine Dust, it was actually a miniature star. With the Fine Dust Life Soul and the Pocket Universe Life Providence, Zhou Wen could travel through space.

This was somewhat similar to the ability of Civilized Country. The difference was that the Fine Dust Life Soul could only be used to travel between planets. As long as there were stars in the Pocket Universe, Zhou Wen could use Fine Dust’s ability to travel to that planet.

For example, planets that were relatively close to Earth like the Moon, Venus, Jupiter, Mercury, Mars, Saturn, as well as the planets in the twenty-eight Lunar Mansions, or even planets that were even further away. As long as they were

within the Pocket Universe, he could teleport over using Fine Dust.

However, Fine Dust had a longer cooldown period. It could only be used once a month.

Zhou Wen originally wanted to try heading to the moon to take a look, but on second thought, he immediately gave up on such plans. His current body didn't have the ability to survive in space. He could only teleport once a month. If he were to teleport out now, he wouldn't be able to return. If that happened, wouldn't he die of suffocation in space?

Fine Dust's ability looks impressive, but it doesn't seem to be of much use. This thing can only be used for interstellar travel and doesn't allow free teleportation within a planet. However, humans have yet to discover any habitable planets outside Earth. Wouldn't teleporting to them be courting death? Zhou Wen was somewhat depressed.

However, thankfully, apart from the interstellar teleportation ability, Fine Dust also had enhancement effects on Speed, Strength, and Essence Energy. On a bright night with stars, he could also enjoy the augmentation of the stellar forces.

It could also be done during the day, but because the sunlight during the day was too strong, the augmentation from the other stars weakened. The main augmentation came from the sun.

Thankfully, after advancing to the Mythical stage, typically speaking, one should have the ability to survive in space. This ability would definitely be of great use in the future.

This was the basic function of Fine Dust. Zhou Wen still needed to figure out the other methods and abilities himself.

How can I advance Fine Dust? Zhou Wen continued studying the method to advance his Fine Dust Life Soul.

After entering the game, Zhou Wen tried out Fine Dust's interstellar teleportation ability. It was really effective. The Fine Dust on his forehead flashed with a purple light as it took him across more than half the Pocket Universe to a tiny planet that he had never been to.

Then, he entered cooldown mode and had to wait a month until he could use it again.

This cooldown time is too long! Interstellar teleportation felt great, but it could only be used once a month. It was too much of a scam.

Thankfully, Zhou Wen didn't plan on using it in real life. If he had used it in a rush, it would have been too late when he realized he had to wait for a month.

After studying his Life Soul in-game for a long time, he didn't find any way to level up Fine Dust. The method of observing the Pocket Universe to condense a Life Soul clearly wasn't of any help to Fine Dust.

"Zhou Wen, are you coming to the auction?" Zhang Yuzhi sent Zhou Wen a message.

"Of course," Zhou Wen replied.

Although Civilization Country could also teleport, the restrictions were too great. An Earth Escape mount was more useful. Even if he failed to win the bid, he could still broaden his horizons.

It wasn't usually easy to see the six families together.

“Remember to inform me before you arrive. I’ll arrange a place for you to stay. There are too many people participating in the auction this time, so it’s not convenient for you to stay outside. You can stay in my family’s courtyard,” Zhang Yuzhi said.

“Alright.” Zhou Wen didn’t plan on standing on ceremony.

It was rare for Zhang Yuzhi to chat with him for a while, but it didn’t last more than ten minutes before there was suddenly no message. It was as though she had gone offline.

Could she be using her phone behind her family’s back? Zhou Wen thought of this possibility.

To the Zhang family, Zhang Yuzhi was too important. Her every action was closely protected by them. Many things were out of her control.

From the looks of it, it’s not necessarily a good thing to be too special. People like Zhang Yuzhi and Wang Lu have abilities that others dream of, but they might not necessarily be happy, Zhou Wen thought.

In the morning, Zhou Wen took Ya’er out for a stroll. Zhou Wen took the time to take her out every morning to interact more with human society.

Sunset College also had students who had children, but they were basically graduate students. He was probably the first sophomore to have a child.

Thankfully, everyone in school knew of Zhou Wen’s relationship with Ouyang Lan, so no one said anything.

Zhou Wen led her to the activity room of the Xuanwen Club. When Fang Ruoxi saw her, she pointed at Ya’er’s clothes and

said, “Zhou Wen, Ya’er’s clothes seem to be small. It’s time to buy her new clothes.”

Only then did Zhou Wen realize that the clothes on Ya’er’s body were indeed a little small. Children grew very quickly. In just a month, she had grown quite a lot.

“You’re still a boy. How can you take good care of Ya’er? Why don’t you hire a nanny to take care of her?” Fang Ruoxi suggested.

“There’s no need. I’ll slowly learn how to take care of her.” Zhou Wen naturally wouldn’t let others take care of Ya’er. Who knew what would happen?

“Old Zhou, could Ya’er really be your daughter?” Tian Xiangdong asked.

“It would be good if that was the case.” Zhou Wen was somewhat helpless.

If Ya’er was really his daughter, Zhou Wen could still get Ouyang Lan to help him take care of her. Unfortunately, no matter how troublesome it was, Zhou Wen had no choice but to take care of her himself.

“How old is this girl? My relative’s child is a little younger than her, but she can already call her parents. Why can’t she say a word? Didn’t you teach her?” Tian Xiangdong teased Ya’er as he spoke. “Ya’er, call Uncle… Uncle…”

Ya’er sat on the stool and looked at Tian Xiangdong without any change in expression. Tian Xiangdong felt like a fool. He laughed dryly and stopped teasing her.

“Ya’er, wait for me here for a while. Don’t mess around, alright?” Zhou Wen wanted to go to the bathroom and

couldn’t take Ya’er with him. He believed that it would be fine to let her stay here.

Before leaving, Zhou Wen even exhorted Fang Ruoxi to help take care of Ya’er and not let anyone tease her.

Not long after Zhou Wen left, someone came to the activity room. He couldn’t help but be taken aback when he saw Ya’er sitting on a stool.

“Why is there a child here?” the person asked.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 827 - Yun Niu

Chapter 827: Yun Niu

Translator: CKtalon

“This is Zhou Wen’s adopted child,” Tian Xiangdong said when he saw that it was Yun Niu.

Yun Niu was a freshman who had just joined the Xuanwen Club. Zhou Wen had never met him before.

“Ah, so it’s the famous Senior Zhou’s child. I didn’t expect him to be extremely talented in cultivation and very caring. He’s both morally and technically good.” As Yun Niu spoke, he went forward to pinch Ya’er’s face. “This child is really cute. What’s her name?”

However, Ya’er took two steps back and dodged Yun Niu’s hand.

“This child is afraid of strangers. Don’t scare her,” Fang Ruoxi pulled Ya’er back and said to Yun Niu.

“Children should be more lively. Once they start seeing more people, they naturally won’t be afraid.” As Yun Niu spoke, he searched his body and took out a handful of candies from his pocket. “Come, these candies are high quality stuff. They are delicious. Call me uncle and I’ll give them all to you.”

Ya’er only looked at Yun Niu silently.

Seeing that Ya’er wasn’t moved, Yun Niu peeled a piece of candy and placed it in its mouth to chew. As he chewed, he said, “It’s fragrant and sweet. This piece is for you. Try it first.”

However, Ya’er didn’t reach out to take it. She continued to look at him expressionlessly.

“What’s wrong with this child?” Yun Niu frowned slightly. He had seen many children, but none of them were like Ya’er.

Some introverted and timid children would show some expression even if they didn’t dare to take it or were frightened by him. They wouldn’t be so expressionless.

However, Ya’er was clearly not afraid of him. She looked at him but ignored him.

“Don’t you like candy? I still have many treasures here. Let’s see if you like them.” Yun Niu opened his backpack and took out a rattle drum, a small pistol, a doll, a bell, and other toys. He placed them on the table one by one.

“Look at how fun this is. Here you go.” Yun Niu shook the rattle drum in front of Ya’er.

However, Ya’er still looked at him and had no intention of reaching out to take it.

“Is this child deaf and mute?” Yun Niu asked gloomily.

“What do you mean by deaf and mute? She’s young and can’t even speak. By the way, why do you have so many children’s toys on you? Where did you get them?” Tian Xiangdong asked.

“I bought this. I’m planning on taking it back for my niece to play during the holidays. However, it looks like these things can’t attract a little girl,” Yun Niu said in frustration.

“I never expected you to be so meticulous. You actually have your niece on your mind,” Tian Xiangdong said with a smile.

“I just didn’t know what to buy, so I bought a little of everything. It looks like it won’t work.” As he spoke, Tian Xiangdong picked up the toys and handed them to Ya’er. “How about this? Do you like this?”

Yun Niu tried many things, but Ya’er didn’t react.

Just as Yun Niu was giving up hope, Ya’er suddenly pointed at Yun Niu’s backpack.

Yun Niu was delighted. “What do you want? Uncle will give it to you.”

Ya’er still pointed at the backpack with her tiny hand. Yun Niu poured out all the things inside and said to Ya’er, “Which one do you like? Take it yourself.”

Ya’er reached out and grabbed something. When Yun Niu saw what Ya’er was grabbing, he couldn’t help but be slightly stunned. “Strange, why is that thing in the backpack? Could it be that it was accidentally stuffed inside when I was putting things in?”

“This…” Yun Niu wanted to stop Ya’er, but after some thought, he allowed Ya’er to grab it.

It was a necklace with many rubies embedded in it. It looked very beautiful.

Although the value of gems wasn’t as expensive as before, this necklace was clearly a high-quality item. Before the dimensional storms, it could probably have been sold for hundreds of millions.

Even now, it was probably worth some money. After all, such gemstones were still very rare.

“A girl is a girl. They know beauty from a young age. She chose such a beautiful necklace. Yun Niu, is this necklace real?” Tian Xiangdong asked.

“How can it be real? It’s a replica. If she likes it, let her play with it,” Yun Niu said.

“That’s good.” Fang Ruoxi pulled Ya’er to the side and said, “Ya’er, I’ll put it on for you.”

Ya’er released her hand. After Fang Ruoxi took the necklace, she put it on Ya’er’s neck and said, “Ya’er, you’re so beautiful.”

However, Ya’er didn’t react. She wore the necklace and remained expressionless, as if she was facially paralyzed.

Yun Niu took out a pearl necklace from the toys and said to Ya’er, “Is the necklace nice? Do you still want it? Uncle has something even more beautiful. Let Uncle hug you and I’ll give you a lot of beautiful jewelry.”

However, Ya’er remained unmoved. She turned her head to the side as if she was impatient with him.

The corners of Yun Niu’s eyes twitched as he thought to himself, Alright, you ingrate. You’re turning your back on me after taking my stuff.

However, no matter how Yun Niu coaxed her, she ignored him.

“Yun Niu, it looks like you aren’t very popular with children. Stop teasing her,” Tian Xiangdong said.

“It looks like that’s the case.” Yun Niu nodded, but he suddenly reached out and forcefully picked up Ya’er.

“Yun Niu, don’t do that. You’ll scare Ya’er.” Fang Ruoxi frowned and was about to take Ya’er back.

Yun Niu took two steps back and with a poof, his body emitted white smoke. When the smoke dissipated, Yun Niu and Ya’er were gone.

“Tell Zhou Wen that if he wants this girl to live, he has to come to Mount Dragon Tiger alone.” A voice sounded, but there was no sign of him.

Fang Ruoxi and Tian Xiangdong’s expressions changed drastically as they quickly rushed out. However, there was no sign of Yun Niu or Ya’er.

Zhou Wen happened to walk over at this moment. Tian Xiangdong immediately said, “Zhou Wen, bad news. Ya’er has been abducted…”

Fang Ruoxi said anxiously, “Let’s chase after him. He shouldn’t have escaped the campus grounds yet.”

“There’s no need to chase. We won’t be able to catch up. That person’s name is Yun Niu?” Zhou Wen had already seen the development. He was afraid that something would happen to Ya’er, so he kept using Truth Listener to monitor her.

Zhou Wen had seen everything that had happened in the activity room. However, he never expected Yun Niu to suddenly pull off such a trick. Even he didn’t have the time to stop him.

“Yes, his name is Yun Niu. He’s a freshman. He just joined the club not long ago. I never expected… Zhou Wen, I’m sorry… I’ll go with you to Mount Dragon Tiger. No matter what, I have to save Ya’er.” Fang Ruoxi felt terrible. Zhou Wen had

requested that she take care of Ya’er, but someone had abducted Ya’er under her nose.

“There’s no need. I know who took away Ya’er. It’s fine. Don’t blame yourself. Even the six families couldn’t stop him from stealing something, much less you,” Zhou Wen said.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 828 - Cupid's Gift

Chapter 828: Cupid’s Gift

Translator: CKtalon

Liu Yun led Ya’er out of Luoyang and rode an eagle into the forest. Even if An Tianzuo personally gave the order to capture him, it was probably too late.

“Hehe, little girl, with you in my hands, I’m not afraid that bastard Zhou Wen won’t come to Mount Dragon Tiger.” Liu Yun glanced at Ya’er who was sitting beside him.

Ordinary children would cry from fright if they encountered such a situation. Yet, to his surprise, there was no expression on Ya’er’s face. It was as though nothing had happened. She was no different from before. She sat obediently on the eagle’s back. She wasn’t afraid of heights either.

Is she an idiot? Liu Yun felt that there was definitely something wrong with Ya’er’s brain.

How can a normal child be so calm? Not to mention a one-year-old child, even an eleven or twelve-year-old child would probably cry from fright.

“Come, give me the necklace. I’ll change it for you.” Seeing that Ya’er was a little silly, Liu Yun wasn’t in the mood to say anything to her. He reached out and wanted to take the necklace from her neck.

This necklace was extraordinary. It was a treasure of the Cape family. Although it wasn’t a dimensional item, it was very famous before the dimensional storms.

This necklace was known as Cupid’s Gift. Before the dimensional storms, the queens of several countries had worn it. It was a priceless treasure.

However, this necklace had another name. It was called “Widow Queen.” In the beginning, this necklace was a gift from a king to his queen. The king expressed his love for the queen and searched for the best ruby back then. After the forging and setting was done by a master artisan, Cupid’s Gift was created.

However, who knew that good times wouldn’t last long. Not long after giving away the necklace, the king died from illness, and the queen became a regent queen.

Later, the necklace switched hands a few more times. Many of its owners were queens, and they all lost their husbands.

When Liu Yun went to the Cape family to steal something, he accidentally discovered Cupid’s Gift and stole it.

Although this item wasn’t a dimensional item, many women liked it, especially those who were rich, powerful, and married. Many were willing to buy it at a high price.

Liu Yun knew that there was a rich lady of a local family who had been looking for this necklace for a long time. If he took it to her, he could exchange it for many resources.

Liu Yun originally planned on auctioning this necklace in the future, so he naturally couldn’t really give it to Ya’er.

When Liu Yun tried to take the necklace off, Ya’er naturally refused and retreated.

However, they were now sitting on the eagle’s back. Once Ya’er retreated, her body would fall.

Liu Yun hurriedly pulled her back, preventing her from falling.

Forget it. You can wear it for now, Liu Yun thought to himself. After all, Ya'er was in his hands and she couldn't escape. It wouldn't be too late to take it back when she was sick of wearing it. There was no need to force her to take it off.

Zhou Wen, that bastard. You made me suffer so much the last time. I'll teach you a lesson this time. Liu Yun had been planning this for a long time.

He had disguised himself as a student and sneaked into Sunset College. He had even joined the Xuanwen Club to think of a way to get Zhou Wen to Mount Dragon Tiger.

The Earth Elemental Beast was being auctioned at the Zhang family's Mount Dragon Tiger. Liu Yun was also very interested in the Earth Elemental Beast, but he naturally wouldn't use money to bid for it. He wanted to steal it before the auction.

Liu Yun had already made an attempt before, but ever since he had stolen from the Zhang family, the Zhang family had implemented measures against him. They nearly captured him alive.

Liu Yun knew that it wouldn't be easy for him to steal the Earth Elemental Beast, so he planned on finding someone to help him. Therefore, he thought of Zhou Wen and planned on using Ya'er to force him to steal it.

That bastard caused me so much trouble the last time. I can't let him have it easy this time. I'll let him do all the dirty work. In the end, after I take the Earth Elemental Beast, I'll disavow him... Liu Yun couldn't help but laugh out

loud when he thought of the smug look he would be wearing.

“Haha… Haha… Haha… Haha…” Liu Yun laughed heartily, but as he laughed, his expression turned ugly.

This was because he realized that he couldn’t stop laughing.

“I… Haha… I… Haha… What’s going on… Haha… What’s going on… Haha…” Liu Yun couldn’t stop laughing. His mouth was about to deform from laughing, but he couldn’t stop.

He covered his mouth with his hand, but he couldn’t stop himself from laughing. Instead, he looked even more wretched as though he was secretly laughing.

After a while, Liu Yun finally stopped laughing.

What’s going on? Could it be that Zhou Wen has something up his sleeve? He knows that I stole Ya’er, so he’s messing with me? Liu Yun checked his body but didn’t discover any curse-like powers.

There’s no curse. Could it be that I’m too happy? Liu Yun’s ring didn’t react so he couldn’t help but be puzzled.

Ever since he had succumbed to Zhou Wen’s move, Liu Yun had thought of many solutions to prevent himself from being cursed. He had obtained many Companion Beasts to resolve this problem, and this purification ring was one of them.

Although the purification ring couldn’t remove all curses, it would react if he suffered from one. It was very convenient to use it to detect curses.

Now that the purification ring didn’t react, it meant that Liu Yun wasn’t cursed.

Liu Yun carefully checked his body again and didn’t find any problems. He had stopped laughing.

From the looks of it, it might be because I was too happy just now. Liu Yun thought for a moment and felt that it was plausible. He had seen people who couldn’t stop laughing.

“Hungry,” Ya’er suddenly said some time into the flight.

“So you can speak?” Liu Yun looked at Ya’er in surprise.

However, Ya’er didn’t say anything else. She only looked at Liu Yun.

“Alright, I’ll take you to eat when we reach the city ahead.” Liu Yun controlled the giant eagle and flew towards a nearby city.

After arriving in the city, Liu Yun took Ya’er window shopping.

Ya’er stopped in front of a dessert shop and pointed inside, indicating her desire to eat some desserts.

However, Liu Yun curled his lips and said, “What’s so good about these non-nutritious things? Furthermore, as a godly thief, how can I pay for food? I’ll let you have a free meal.”

Ya’er followed Liu Yun expressionlessly. This was what Liu Yun was most satisfied with. Although Ya’er was a little strange, she didn’t cry or make a fuss. It saved Liu Yun trouble.

After walking for a while, Liu Yun brought Ya’er to a hotel. The hotel looked rather high-end and was very lively.

However, there was one thing. At the entrance of the hotel, there were many flower wreaths and couplets. It was as if someone had died and they were having a funeral.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 829 - Don't Hit The Face

Chapter 829: Don’t Hit The Face

“Ya’er, here’s a life lesson. Nothing else is important in life, but when it comes to eating, never compromise; otherwise, you will have come to this world for nothing. Although this small city isn’t famous, its Eight Bowl Dish is very authentic. It’s difficult to find it elsewhere. Let’s head in to have some now.” Liu Yun led Ya’er inside.

When he arrived at the reception area at the entrance, he waved his hand like he was doing a magic trick, producing a white bag. He then swaggered inside with Ya’er.

The receptionists didn’t know him, but this place was huge. There were more than a hundred tables, so it was normal for there to be unfamiliar people. Soon, someone arranged for Liu Yun to sit down.

“There will be delicious food in a while. You will definitely suffer if you follow Zhou Wen. You haven’t eaten anything delicious. It’s different if you follow me. Be it the things on mountains, in the sea, or on land. you’ll have the best to eat. Just follow me obediently. I guarantee you that you won’t regret it,” Liu Yun whispered to Ya’er.

When the people beside him heard Liu Yun, although they didn’t know him, someone who was very friendly said, “Lad, from what you said, you’ve been to many places?”

“That’s for sure. I’m not bragging. I’ve basically visited all the cities in the Federation’s four districts, big and small.” Liu Yun was even better at conversations than him. In a

while, he was having a good chat with the people at his table. At the same time, he figured out who was the one having the funeral.

From the looks of it, it was obvious that the funeral wasn't held by an ordinary family, but one of the most powerful families in the area. Three of the four brothers were at the Epic stage and were known as the Three Heroes of the Chen family. In such a small city, they could be considered top wealthy families.

Not long ago, their father had passed away. They were having the funeral for the father, and all the famous people in the area had come to pay their respects.

The deceased had many friends when he was alive, and he had good social relations. Many people came, and those who sat far away were sitting at the extra tables that were set up. Those who had invitations were all sitting in front.

Not long after, an emcee went on stage to speak.

"Dear friends and guests: Today, we are gathered here today in memory of our dear Old Master Chen…"

While the emcee was reading from his script with a sorrowful expression, everyone had solemn and sorrowful expressions. As they waited silently, they suddenly heard someone laugh. "Haha…"

Instantly, everyone's eyes focused on the source of the laughter.

Liu Yun's face turned livid. He didn't know why he had suddenly laughed. He didn't want to laugh either. He covered his face with an innocent expression.

The eldest son of the Chen family gestured for the emcee to continue. At such a time, it was not suitable to cause trouble. Even if there was something, he had to wait until the funeral was over.

“Our dear Old Master Chen was generous and helpful. He was a good boss at the company, a good husband and father at home…”

“Haha…” Laughter sounded again. This time, everyone’s eyes quickly looked at the spot where Liu Yun was sitting. The eyes of the Chen family members were murderous.

Liu Yun felt like crying. He really didn’t want to laugh, but he couldn’t help it. It worked when he covered his mouth just now, but he couldn’t stop laughing despite doing so now. Instead, it made his expression look even more wretched, as though he was snickering while covering his mouth.

“Are you f** king here to cause trouble?” The three Chen brothers couldn’t tolerate it any longer. Their friends and family were also indignant. Instantly, hundreds of people in the hall stood up and surrounded Liu Yun. All of them had ugly expressions.

“I… Haha… I really don’t want to laugh… Haha… I… Haha…” Liu Yun laughed as he spoke. He really couldn’t control himself.

“Beat him to death.” The three Chen brothers were truly enraged. The others couldn’t stand it any longer and rushed forward to beat him.

“Ah!” A tragic cry sounded in the hall.

When Liu Yun escaped with a swollen face, he saw that Ya’er had followed him without him realizing it. They were outside

the hotel.

Liu Yun picked up Ya’er and fled. There was a group of people shouting to have him killed behind him.

“Haha… Gosh… Haha… Don’t hit me in the face… These people don’t even know the rules… Haha… They know nothing…” After escaping the pursuit, Liu Yun was still laughing despite his swollen face. When he laughed, it even pulled at the injuries on his face, causing him to grimace in pain.

“What the hell. Why can’t I stop laughing?” As Liu Yun spoke, he realized that he wasn’t laughing. He was even more alarmed.

“What’s going on?” Liu Yun glanced at Ya’er and saw her pointing at a cake shop. “Hungry.”

How old is this brat? It’s impossible that it’s because of her. Could it be that I didn’t notice that I committed some taboo when I was in school? Liu Yun thought to himself.

Since he was already in this state, it was impossible for him to freeload. Liu Yun had no choice but to take Ya’er to the cake shop to buy some desserts for her.

As Ya’er ate, she looked at the injuries on Liu Yun’s face. Liu Yun took a bite of the cake and it tugged at the wound at the corner of his mouth. The corners of his mouth twitched in pain as he said gloomily, “What are you looking at? Don’t think that I’m not their match. I can kill them all with a flick of my finger, but I’m a professional and not a bandit. Do you understand?”

Ya’er lowered her head and continued eating the desserts. He did not know if she had understood him.

…

Zhou Wen knew that Liu Yun had taken away Ya’er and was forcing him to go to Mount Dragon Tiger. He wasn’t worried that Liu Yun would harm Ya’er. Liu Yun wasn’t someone who would harm a child.

Furthermore, he was going to Mount Dragon Tiger anyway, so it was fine for him to head there early.

Liu Yun wants me to find him at Mount Dragon Tiger. From the looks of it, he has his sights on the Earth Elemental Beast. Zhou Wen was still somewhat worried. It wasn’t because he was worried about Ya’er, but because he was afraid that Liu Yun would be a dead person by the time he found him.

Liu Yun didn’t know Ya’er’s origins and only treated her as a child. He probably didn’t have his guard up against her, but Ya’er wasn’t a real child. Offending her would really kill him.

Zhou Wen wasn’t wrong. If Zhou Wen hadn’t set those rules for Ya’er, Liu Yun would have been in a terrible situation if Ya’er hadn’t obeyed.

Even if Ya’er didn’t want to kill anyone, Liu Yun’s situation was equally bad.

Liu Yun originally thought that he could easily rush to Mount Dragon Tiger and wait for Zhou Wen to arrive, but to his dismay, the journey wasn’t easy at all.

Failing to freeload the previous time, Liu Yun was indignant. After arriving in another city, Liu Yun planned on freeloading at another banquet.

Liu Yun thought to himself, *My bad habit of suddenly laughing should be fine at a wedding banquet. Even if it flares up, people will just think that I'm happy.*

Liu Yun's idea was pretty good, but at the wedding banquet, just as the bride and groom were about to exchange rings, Liu Yun suddenly couldn't help but cry out loud. He cried so sadly that those who didn't know would think that there was something between him and the bride and that he couldn't bear to let the bride get married.

Instantly, everyone's eyes focused on Liu Yun.

"Boohoo… I… I really don't want to cry… Boohoo… Don't hit my face…"

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 830 - Dragon Tiger Town

Chapter 830: Dragon Tiger Town

Zhou Wen set off for Mount Dragon Tiger, wanting to know what Liu Yun was up to.

After walking for a while, Zhou Wen was pleasantly surprised to discover that the Fine Dust Life Soul was growing.

What happened? Why would the Fine Dust Life Soul grow on its own? Zhou Wen didn't know what he had done to make it grow.

After some thought, he narrowed it down to one possibility. When he walked, he triggered Fine Dust's growth.

Zhou Wen hurriedly experimented again and realized that it was true. The further he went, the faster Fine Dust grew. When he didn't walk, Fine Dust would stop growing.

Furthermore, it was useless to take a repetitive path. He had to go to places he had never been before. Only then would Fine Dust obtain the energy needed to grow.

The advancement method of the Fine Dust Life Soul is quite interesting. I can actually grow it by walking. This is very easy. Zhou Wen couldn't help but be delighted. He could evolve it simply by walking. The Fine Dust Life Soul could be considered the easiest to advance.

"If this continues, I might be able to advance to an Evolved Body by the time I reach Mount Dragon Tiger."

As he had something on his mind, Zhou Wen wasn’t in the mood to visit the dimensional zones on the way. He headed straight for Mount Dragon Tiger without stopping.

Before the dimensional storms, Mount Dragon Tiger was a Daoist sacred land. The founder of the orthodox path, Perfected Orthodox Unity, cultivated and did alchemy on Mount Dragon Tiger.

Legend had it that the Zhang family was the descendant of Perfected Orthodox Unity. After Mount Dragon Tiger became a dimensional zone, the Zhang family, who had always lived there, naturally became the owner of Mount Dragon Tiger.

It was said that after the mutation at Mount Dragon Tiger, there were dragon and tiger roars coming from within. It was a terrifying place. Apart from the Zhang family, no one usually dared to approach it.

The Zhang family was good at alchemy and Sword Seal Talismans. It was said that not only did they benefit from dimensional zones, but they also had the legacy of Orthodox Unity.

The Hero King’s rise to prominence back then was definitely not due to luck. Orthodox Unity’s legacy was indispensable.

Although the Hero King was very famous, the Zhang family was relatively low-key among the six families. They weren’t as arrogant as the Cape family, nor did they seize power like the Xia family. They only guarded the area near Mount Dragon Tiger and rumors about the Zhang family were rare.

However, no one dared to underestimate the Zhang family because of this. In fact, there were many times when the other five families needed the Zhang family’s help.

Furthermore, the Zhang family controlled the most important servers in the Federation. Much information and data had to go through the Zhang family before they could retrieve it.

With the Zhang family's way of doing things, it wasn't easy to get information from them. To get them to do something wasn't something that could be done with a small sum of money.

Zhou Wen rushed all the way to the vicinity of Mount Dragon Tiger and had no choice but to marvel at the wonderland. It was a perfect paradise. The scenery was picturesque and the fog filled the air like a paradise on earth.

Legend has it that back when Celestial Master Zhang was refining pills on Mount Dragon Tiger, a dragon and tiger appeared after the pill was formed. That's why it was named Mount Dragon Tiger. I wonder if the current Mount Dragon Tiger also has a Dragon Tiger Pill? Zhou Wen was very interested in the Mount Dragon Tiger dimensional zone.

The Zhang family had been guarding Mount Dragon Tiger all this time and had even built this place to be the headquarters of the Zhang family. Outsiders were not allowed to enter, so Mount Dragon Tiger was definitely no trifling matter. If he could download it as a game dungeon, there might be great benefits awaiting him.

However, the auction wasn't to be held in the Dragon Tiger dimensional zone. Instead, it was going to be held in a small town outside the mountain. The town's name was Dragon Tiger Town.

Although it was called a town, Dragon Tiger Town was comparable to a large city.

Due to the Zhang family's existence, many people moved their families to the vicinity of Mount Dragon Tiger, causing the nearby town to expand greatly. The Zhang family also protected the peace in the vicinity, preventing them from being ravaged by dimensional creatures.

After Zhou Wen arrived at Dragon Tiger Town, he originally imagined that Liu Yun would take the initiative to contact him, but to his surprise, Liu Yun was nowhere to be seen.

Little did he know that although Liu Yun had left early, he had encountered many things on the way. He had traveled very slowly, allowing Zhou Wen to arrive at Dragon Tiger Town first.

Could Liu Yun be dead? Zhou Wen was somewhat worried, but there was nothing he could do. All he could do was wait.

Zhou Wen didn't contact Zhang Yuzhi because he didn't know what Liu Yun was up to. If Liu Yun wanted to force him to go to the Zhang family to steal the Earth Elemental Beast, it wouldn't be appropriate for Zhou Wen to stay at the Zhang family's residence.

Just as he was about to find a hotel to stay in, he saw a group of people walking across the street. From their looks, they were likely from the West District.

People from the Family Clan of Gods? Zhou Wen carefully sized them up and recognized the logo on them.

Although the members of the Family Clan of Gods only had surnames and no names, they would usually use a symbol to let others know that they were members of the Family Clan of Gods. They would also be proud of being members of the Family Clan of Gods.

Zhou Wen saw that the middle-aged man in the lead was tall and handsome. His figure and facial lines were as angular as a marble statue. It was unforgettable.

As though sensing Zhou Wen’s gaze, the person looked over as well. He clearly recognized Zhou Wen. After taking a glance, he walked over.

The middle-aged man came in front of Zhou Wen and said with a smile, “Hello, Zhou Wen. My name is Moses and I’m a member of the Family Clan of Gods. I’ve wanted to meet you for a long time, but I couldn’t find time to go to Luoyang. To be able to meet you here, it looks like we are destined to meet.”

The other members of the Family Clan of Gods also stared at Zhou Wen as they sized him up. Clearly, they were rather curious about him.

A young man who wasn’t from the six families and didn’t even have a decent family background was actually able to make such a name for himself in the Federation. This was very eye-catching.

Furthermore, Zhou Wen was Wang Mingyuan’s disciple. Just this alone was enough to raise an eyebrow.

“How may I help you?” Zhou Wen asked Moses.

His relationship with the six families wasn’t too good. After all, the six families were the actual rulers of the Federation, but he had challenged the authority of the Federation. It would be strange if their relationship was good.

“If possible, I hope to have a fair battle with you,” said Moses.

“Moses, aren’t you being a disgrace? You actually want to challenge a young man.” As he spoke, Zhang Chunqiu walked over.

This was Mount Dragon Tiger. It would have been odd if the Zhang family did not know that figures like Zhou Wen and Moses had come to Dragon Tiger Town.

Moses smiled and said, “The rules of the Family Clan of Gods are different from your East District. The strong are respected. Zhou Wen is strong enough to be my opponent.”

Zhang Chunqiu said with a smile, “Then you can challenge Zhou Wen when he goes to your Family Clan of Gods. He’s our guest now.”

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 831 - Fiend Tomb

Chapter 831: Fiend Tomb

“I’ll naturally follow our host’s arrangements,” Moses said with a smile.

Zhang Chunqiu bowed slightly and said, “I’ve already prepared a place for you to stay. Zhang Xiao will take you there. I hope you don’t mind.”

“Thank you,” Moses said.

Zhang Xiao took Moses and company to their residence. Before he left, he glared fiercely at Zhou Wen.

Zhou Wen found it baffling. Although he had taken Zhang Yuzhi out on a trip the last time, he had ultimately sent her back safely. Was there a need to hold a grudge?

Zhou Wen didn’t know that his Tyrant Behemoth had actually been lost by the Zhang family. Zhang Xiao already knew that Tyrant Behemoth was his and wasn’t angry with him because of Zhang Yuzhi.

“Zhou Wen, come with me. Celestial Master Manor has already prepared a guest room. Yuzhi is waiting for you there,” Zhang Chunqiu said with a smile.

Zhou Wen originally didn’t wish to head to the Zhang family so early, but since Zhang Chunqiu was already here, he had no choice but to make a trip.

The Celestial Master Manor was situated beside a mountain and a river. It was an excellent place. The Zhang family had lived here for generations. They were good at geomancy so they naturally chose the right place.

Upon seeing Celestial Master Manor, Zhou Wen thought of a legend regarding Celestial Master Zhang.

Legend had it that Celestial Master Zhang's father was a geomancy expert. He had found an excellent cave with great traits according to geomancy for his father and wanted to bury him there.

The cave was located along an Emperor Dragon vein. This implied that there would definitely be an emperor among his descendants in the future.

However, during the burial, a burly man who was carrying the coffin couldn't hold back his bladder. He ran nearby and peed. He happened to pee on the dragon vein. A bolt from the blue sounded; dissipating the dragon aura and eliminating the possibility of a human emperor.

Celestial Master Zhang's father sighed at the Zhang family's lack of fortune, but he didn't blame the burly man. He still buried his father in the cave and left a message saying that the cave had lost its dragon aura, but the layout was still fine. The Zhang family would definitely produce a master in the future.

Indeed, his son, Zhang Daoling, eventually became Celestial Master of the Orthodox Unity. He wasn't just a master, but an immortal-like figure back then.

Zhang Chunqiu led Zhou Wen into Celestial Master Manor and led him into the main hall.

“Where’s Yuzhi?” Zhou Wen asked when he didn’t see Zhang Yuzhi.

Zhang Chunqiu said, “I’ve already gotten someone to call her over. She should be here soon. There’s no rush. Let’s have a chat first.”

Zhou Wen thought to himself, *There’s nothing to chat about between us. I don’t know you at all, right?*

However, Zhang Chunqiu said, “That Tyrant Behemoth is your Companion Beast, right?”

Zhou Wen was slightly taken aback. He didn’t know how Zhang Chunqiu knew, but he had no intention of denying it. He looked at Zhang Chunqiu and said, “Why are you suddenly asking about this?”

Zhang Chunqiu said, “Tyrant Behemoth was originally a Companion Egg from the West District. An elder of our Zhang family went to the West District to cultivate and obtained a Tyrant Behemoth Companion Beast in a dimensional zone named Genesis Garden. He originally planned on leaving it for talented juniors to use, but to his surprise, a spy appeared among us. He ingeniously did a swap and brought it out of Celestial Master Manor.”

“Our Behemoth shouldn’t be the same one, right?” Zhou Wen naturally didn’t admit it. He didn’t know if Zhang Chunqiu was telling the truth. Even if it was, Zhou Wen couldn’t return Tyrant Behemoth.

“Don’t worry. Since it has been lost, it means that Tyrant Behemoth isn’t fated with our Zhang family. Furthermore, you have already hatched it, so we won’t make things difficult for you by asking you to return it.” Zhang Chunqiu continued, “Behemoth is unique. It wasn’t obtained by

killing a dimensional creature, but from an opportunity. It’s impossible for there to be a second one. We don’t plan on getting it back either. We just want to know how you obtained the Companion Egg so that we can know how it was swapped. That way, we can be on guard in the future.”

“I got it at an auction. I originally thought it was a Minotaur, I never expected it to be a Behemoth.” Zhou Wen recounted the process of obtaining Tyrant Behemoth.

“So that’s how it was. I know how the Behemoth Companion Egg was swapped and taken out. Zhou Wen, you are indeed someone with great luck. The other party must have been prepared to bid for the Behemoth Companion Egg, but it ended up being intercepted by you. There must have been an accident, but we just aren’t aware of it.” Zhang Chunqiu really had no intention of pursuing the matter.

“If it’s possible, can I ask you to help our Zhang family with Tyrant Behemoth? Of course, we won’t scrimp on compensation. The spirit talismans created by our Celestial Master Manor are still rather useful. I’ll use a Life Reversing Spirit Talisman as payment. What do you think?” Zhang Chunqiu continued.

“What do you want me to do?” Zhou Wen looked at Zhang Chunqiu in puzzlement.

He had heard of the Life Reversing Spirit Talisman before. Furthermore, he had heard of it from Liu Yun. A while ago, Liu Yun had used the Zhang family’s Life Reversing Spirit Talisman to steal his Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General. It was obvious that the spirit talisman was quite impressive.

If the Zhang family was willing to offer such a good item as a reward, it would definitely not be an easy task.

“Have you heard of the Fiend Tomb?” Zhang Chunqiu asked.

Zhou Wen shook his head. He had never heard of it.

“It’s not your fault. Few outsiders know about the Fiend Tomb. Over the years, our Zhang family has been guarding the Fiend Tomb and suppressing the dimensional creatures inside, preventing them from rushing out. We paid a huge price for this. It’s unimaginable to outsiders,” Zhang Chunqiu said with a serious expression.

“What kind of place is Fiend Tomb?” Zhou Wen asked.

“Have you heard of the story of my Zhang family, the one about the search for a special cave to bury a father?” Zhang Chunqiu didn’t answer and instead asked.

“I’ve heard of it. I heard that the grandfather of the Celestial Master of the Orthodox Unity found a treasure cave for the burial. The extraordinary Celestial Master of the Orthodox Unity was a result of this geomancy augmentation,” Zhou Wen said.

Zhang Chunqiu nodded. “That’s probably what the rumors say. Do you think they’re reliable?”

“I don’t know much about this.” It wasn’t appropriate for Zhou Wen to say that he believed it, nor did he say that he didn’t.

If he said that he believed it, it would be as though he was saying that the Zhang family relied on luck. If he said that he didn’t believe it, wouldn’t it mean that the Zhang family was lying? They didn’t obtain any mandate at all.

Zhang Chunqiu smiled and didn’t say if the legend was true. He only said, “That cave is where the Fiend Tomb is.”

“Ah!” Zhou Wen widened his eyes as he looked at Zhang Chunqiu in disbelief.

The legendary cave that could give birth to an emperor and produce a Celestial Master was actually the Fiend Tomb that Zhang Chunqiu mentioned. It was unbelievable.

“Under the influence of the dimensional storms, the anomaly in the already extraordinary Fiend Tomb worsened. Our Zhang family has tried everything we can to deal with the Fiend Tomb, but the situation has only worsened. If possible, I hope you can use Tyrant Behemoth to help us temporarily suppress it.” Zhang Chunqiu explained what he needed Zhou Wen to do in detail.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 832 - Pill Essences

Chapter 832: Pill Essences

He originally imagined that the Zhang family needed him to do something very dangerous, but after hearing this, he realized that there was no need for him to fight. They mainly needed Tyrant Behemoth’s strength.

At the entrance of the Fiend Tomb, there was a type of Fiend Stone that could keep growing. Wherever the Fiend Stone grew, the creatures in the Fiend Tomb could reach it. It was equivalent to a break out.

Dealing with Fiend Stones was very troublesome. One couldn’t shatter them, much less place them anywhere. This was because even if Fiend Stones were shattered into powder, they would continue to grow as though they were alive.

Shattering Fiend Stones or taking them elsewhere would only make them occupy more places.

These Fiend Stones didn’t pose much of a threat, but wherever it was, the creatures in the Fiend Tomb could pass through.

Of course, this was only one of the problems with the Fiend Tomb. Zhou Wen wasn’t from the Zhang family after all, so he wasn’t briefed about the Fiend Tomb’s other problems. All he needed to do was control Tyrant Behemoth to have it eat the additional Fiend Stones.

“If that’s the case, I naturally won’t shirk my duty. However, we still have to see if Behemoth will eat those Fiend Stones when the time comes. If it doesn’t, there’s nothing we can do,” Zhou Wen said.

“Of course. I’m just afraid that it won’t be able to finish all the Fiend Stones.” Zhang Chunqiu was in a better mood when he saw Zhou Wen agree.

Zhou Wen wasn’t worried about that. He had seen Behemoth’s appetite before, so eating a small mountain wasn’t a problem.

The two of them chatted for a while before Zhang Yuzhi walked in. She was very happy to see Zhou Wen. After all, she seldom had friends visiting her.

In fact, even if someone wanted to look for her, they probably wouldn’t be able to enter Celestial Master Manor. Even Moses, who was a member of the six families, had to stay in a courtyard instead of Celestial Master Manor.

“There are many interesting things about Mount Dragon Tiger. Let Yuzhi take you around.” Zhang Chunqiu bade farewell and left.

Zhang Yuzhi led Zhou Wen out of the Celestial Master Manor and as they walked, said , “You must have been to many dimensional zones, but we have a dimensional creature here that you definitely haven’t seen elsewhere.”

“What dimensional creature is it?” Zhou Wen asked curiously.

“You’ll know when we get there.” Zhang Yuzhi acted all mysterious and refused to explain.

She took Zhou Wen on a boat and they drifted down a river. The scenery on both sides of the river was like a fairyland. There were no ferocious dimensional creatures to be seen. It was no wonder the Zhang family could live here.

If there were dimensional creatures everywhere, it would probably be difficult for the Zhang family to live in peace.

Not long after the boat set off, Zhou Wen saw red rocks that made the area appear to have a red bed with steep cliffs along its sides. And in between the mountains and rivers was a strange hill.

The hill was situated alone in the water, revealing itself over the surface of the water. It looked like a huge pill furnace, and the red color suited the scenery.

“The dimensional creature is over there,” Zhang Yuzhi said as she pointed at the hill.

“You mean that hill is a dimensional creature?” Zhou Wen asked in puzzlement.

“Just wait and see,” Zhang Yuzhi said as she summoned a bow and shot an arrow at the hill.

When the arrow flew to the cauldron-like hill, it spewed out a beam of light. A red pill flew out and struck the arrow, shattering it.

The pill circled the hill a few times before charging at Zhou Wen and company.

“It’s very difficult for you to see the pill essences from Pill Furnace Mountain elsewhere. This red color is at the Legendary stage, while the golden one is at the Epic stage. If you can see a pill essence with dragon patterns or tiger

patterns, it will be at the Mythical stage. However, they are very rare.” As Zhang Yuzhi spoke, she reached out and grabbed the red pill essence. No matter how it struggled, it couldn’t escape.

Zhang Yuzhi had no intention of killing it. She touched it with her hand and the pill essence calmed down. It obediently stayed in her palm. Even when Zhang Yuzhi released her grip, it didn’t escape.

“What’s the use of these pill essence Companion Beasts? Can they treat injuries?” Zhou Wen asked curiously.

“Some pill essences have healing abilities, but different pill essences have different abilities. For example, Poison Avoidance Pill Essence can detoxify, Rejuvenation Pill Essence can treat injuries, and some pill essences have poison-elemental abilities. They are all different.”

Zhang Yuzhi pointed at the pill essence hill and continued, “If you’re interested, you can give it a try. If you can find a Mythical Rejuvenation Pill Essence or Resurrection Pill Essences, that would be awesome.”

“What uses do they have?” Zhou Wen asked.

“How stupid. You can tell from the name. Any one of them has the ability to revive the nearly dead. No matter how serious their injuries are, as long as they still have a breath left, they can be saved,” Zhang Yuzhi said.

“Is it that powerful?” Zhou Wen was somewhat tempted.

“Of course it’s powerful. However, pill essence Companion Beasts are single-use. They are gone after being used. Our Zhang family didn’t obtain many of them. It’s rare to see pill

essences of such stages pass through a spatial rift, so to see it requires some luck," Zhang Yuzhi said.

"Alright, I'll try my luck. Perhaps I'll be lucky." Zhou Wen was interested and asked Zhang Yuzhi what to do.

"The pill essences that come through the dimensional rift are all in Pill Furnace Mountain. You just need to lure them out. It's not complicated. Just make some noise. However, don't keep your hopes up. It's rare to see a Mythical pill essence," Zhang Yuzhi said.

"Alright." Zhou Wen summoned a Poison Bat and made it fly towards Pill Furnace Mountain.

Indeed, just as the Poison Bat approached the Pill Furnace Mountain, it alarmed the pill essences inside. Another pill essence flew out. It was also a pill essence that was as red as fire. It looked like it was at the Legendary stage.

The pill essence's combat strength was lacking. It could only emit Pill Aura attacks that were similar to Essence Energy waves. Its might wasn't very strong either, so it was instantly shattered by the Poison Bat.

The Poison Bat circled around the Pill Furnace Mountain for quite some time, causing pill essences to fly out one after another. However, most of them were at the Legendary stage. Even Epic ones were rare, much less Mythical ones.

Despite finally killing an Epic pill essence, nothing dropped.

"Haha, it looks like you are also down on your luck. Not even a Legendary Companion Beast dropped much less a Mythical pill essence," Zhang Yuzhi said with a smile.

Zhou Wen was somewhat indignant as he used Truth Listener’s ability to see if there were any Mythical pill essences in Pill Furnace Mountain.

However, after giving it a try, he realized that Truth Listener’s hearing couldn’t penetrate deep into Pill Furnace Mountain. Inside Pill Furnace Mountain was an independent dimensional zone.

From the looks of it, this Mount Dragon Tiger is similar to Dragon Gate Grotto. It’s a dimensional zone formed by many small dimensional zones. Zhou Wen’s heart stirred as he wanted to see if he could find the tiny palm symbol.

If he could download the Dragon Tiger Mountain dungeon, he wouldn’t have to worry in the future. He could slowly grind for Mythical pill essences.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 833 - Free Labor

Chapter 833: Free Labor

Translator: CKtalon

Although the Chaos Egg was useful, it could only be used by himself and not others.

If his family and friends were seriously injured, the pill essences were far more useful than the Chaos Egg.

Zhou Wen sized up Pill Furnace Mountain and couldn't help but be delighted. There was a tiny palm symbol on the rocks.

There really is one! Zhou Wen was overjoyed as he looked at Zhang Yuzhi and asked, "Can I take a picture closer to Pill Furnace Mountain?"

"Definitely not for outsiders. However, just be quick. Don't let others see you do it," Zhang Yuzhi said as she blinked.

Zhou Wen hurriedly took out his phone and flew towards Pill Furnace Mountain. When he reached a distance that his phone could sense it, he snapped a picture of the tiny palm symbol and immediately the download screen appeared.

"Do you still want to continue trying your luck?" Zhang Yuzhi asked when she saw Zhou Wen return to the boat.

"My luck isn't that good. Forget it. Let's go somewhere else to take a look." Zhou Wen thought of searching elsewhere. Perhaps he could find other dungeons.

After downloading Pill Furnace Mountain, Zhou Wen realized that it was only the Pill Furnace Mountain instance dungeon

and not the entire Mount Dragon Tiger instance dungeon.

From the looks of it, this is different from Dragon Gate Grotto. I can't download the entire dimensional zone at once. Zhou Wen followed Zhang Yuzhi and browsed through several important dimensional zones near Mount Dragon Tiger.

However, to Zhou Wen's disappointment, apart from the Pill Furnace Mountain, he didn't find the tiny palm symbol anywhere near the other dimensional zones.

However, having Pill Furnace Mountain is enough. After all, these pill essences are rare elsewhere.

"By the way, I heard that Earth Elemental Beast is very precious. Why is your family willing to auction it?" Zhou Wen asked.

Zhang Yuzhi hesitated for a moment before saying, "The Earth Elemental Beast is indeed very precious. It's very likely that there's only one in the world. It's impossible for there to be a second one. However, this Earth Elemental Beast was obtained through the efforts of the six heroes back then. Due to the unhappiness caused by it, my great-grandfather didn't hatch it, nor did he let any of his descendants hatch it. Because of this, he's auctioning it off. I'm not too sure about the details."

After a pause, Zhang Yuzhi continued, "I know that the other five families want it very much, so the price will be very high. I'm afraid you won't have a chance."

"Then why did you get me to come here to bid for it?" Zhou Wen said gloomily.

“Can’t you just treat it as a vacation and to visit a friend?” Zhang Yuzhi smiled.

The two of them walked on the mountain path. Just as they were talking, they saw a huge immortal crane fly over from the mountains. On the back of the immortal crane was a youth with a cold expression.

“Brother, why are you here?” Zhang Yuzhi said when she saw that it was Zhang Xiao.

“I have something to discuss with Zhou Wen.” When Zhang Xiao spoke to Zhang Yuzhi, his tone was very gentle, but when he turned to Zhou Wen, his tone immediately turned stiff. “Zhou Wen, do you know that Tyrant Behemoth originally belonged to our Zhang family?”

“So?” Zhou Wen asked Zhang Xiao.

Zhang Xiao was slightly taken aback and was momentarily at a loss for words. Zhou Wen had already hatched Tyrant Behemoth and fed it until it had advanced to the Mythical stage. It was clearly unrealistic for Zhou Wen to return Tyrant Behemoth.

The reason Zhang Xiao had come was because he was furious. He didn’t plan on doing anything to Zhou Wen. If Zhou Wen were to take a softer stance, Zhang Xiao’s anger would have dissipated.

However, Zhou Wen wasn’t someone who would take a soft stance. The moment he shot back his retort, the two of them entered a frozen deadlock.

“Brother, forget it. You can’t blame Zhou Wen for this.” Zhang Yuzhi also spoke up for Zhou Wen, leaving Zhang Xiao even more depressed.

Zhou Wen thought for a moment and said, “How about this? Please help me feed Tyrant Behemoth. I won’t ask for any payment during this period of feeding. Just treat it as free labor for you.”

“What if I keep feeding it?” Zhang Xiao asked coldly.

“Then I’ll let it continue working for your Zhang family for free.” Zhou Wen paused before saying, “However, I have a condition. You have to feed it until it’s full. You can’t let it starve. Furthermore, you have to feed it until I leave Mount Dragon Tiger.”

“That’s more like it. Then it’s settled. Summon Tyrant Behemoth. I’ll feed it now,” Zhang Xiao said to Zhou Wen, afraid that he would go back on his word.

“Sure.” Zhou Wen summoned Tyrant Behemoth and got it to follow Zhang Xiao.

“You don’t have to do this,” Zhang Yuzhi said apologetically.

“It’s fine. If he’d like to raise it, let him try it.” Zhou Wen felt pity for Zhang Xiao when he saw him leave excitedly with Tyrant Behemoth.

Tyrant Behemoth was indeed powerful. It even had a chance of advancing in the future. Others only saw its strength, but they didn’t know how much food it consumed every day.

If it wasn’t for the fact that there was an endless Essence Crystal mine in-game, Tyrant Behemoth would have long starved to death. Zhou Wen knew very well how much one had to pay to feed it in real life. Ordinary people couldn’t afford such a price.

Since Zhang Xiao wanted to feed Tyrant Behemoth, there was no need for Zhou Wen to stop him.

Zhang Xiao happily took Tyrant Behemoth back. As long as he fed Tyrant Behemoth, he could use it for free. Where could he get such a deal?

Zhang Xiao was secretly delighted. *If Zhou Wen goes back on his word, he won't have to be shamed even if I don't disparage him. If he doesn't go back on his word, I'll keep feeding Tyrant Behemoth until Zhou Wen dies. I won't return him no matter what.*

"Zhang Xiao, what's going on?" Zhang Chunqiu asked in puzzlement when he saw Zhang Xiao bring Tyrant Behemoth over.

Zhang Xiao recounted the matter proudly. "Zhou Wen knows that he's in the wrong, so he lent it to us for free. There's no need to give him the Life Reversing Spirit Talisman now."

Zhang Chunqiu frowned when he heard that. He sized up the three to four-meter-tall Tyrant Behemoth and said, "I don't think it's that simple. That Zhou Wen isn't such a thin-skinned person. Why would he be so kind as to lend us Tyrant Behemoth for free?"

"Tyrant Behemoth is here. If he goes back on his word, he will be embarrassing himself," Zhang Xiao said.

However, Zhang Chunqiu didn't think so. After some thought, he said, "Legend has it that Tyrant Behemoth eats mountains daily. Although the legend might be a little exaggerated, Tyrant Behemoth is definitely a glutton. Did you ask Zhou Wen what Tyrant Behemoth eats?"

“I did. He said that it eats Essence Crystals, Essence Gold, and anything else that contains Essence Energy. So what if it can eat? Aren’t we letting Tyrant Behemoth eat Fiend Stones? This is equivalent to free labor,” Zhang Xiao said with a smile.

“Perhaps.” Zhang Chunqiu had a nagging feeling that Zhou Wen wasn’t such a nice person.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 834 - Pill Furnace Mountain Dungeon

Chapter 834: Pill Furnace Mountain Dungeon

Despite hanging out with Zhang Yuzhi for a day, Zhou Wen only managed to go to a few famous places as Mount Dragon Tiger was just so huge. There were just too many dimensional zones.

After returning, Zhang Yuzhi arranged a place for Zhou Wen to stay in Celestial Master Manor. Zhou Wen lay in bed and took out his phone, hoping to see if he could get a pill essence to drop in Pill Furnace Mountain in-game.

When he launched the game, the scene he saw was the entire Pill Furnace Mountain. He controlled the blood-colored avatar to come to the top of Pill Furnace Mountain and saw nine bowl-sized holes.

When he approached Pill Furnace Mountain, a pill essence immediately spewed out from one of the holes. It was a scarlet pill essence, undoubtedly at the Legendary stage.

Zhou Wen summoned the Golden Overlord Sword and allowed it to slay the pill essence before landing on the mountaintop.

The nine holes immediately spewed out pill essences—red and yellow ones—but they were no match for the Golden

Overlord Sword. They were shattered the moment they appeared.

‘Killed Legendary creature, Venom Pill Essence… Killed Epic creature, Rejuvenation Pill Essence…’

Although they looked similar on the surface, the pill essences had slight differences.

Ding!

With a crisp sound, a Companion Egg finally dropped. On careful look, it was a golden pill with the words “Rejuvenation Pill Essence.”

An Epic Rejuvenation Pill! Zhou Wen couldn’t help but be overjoyed. Although this wasn’t as good as the Resurrection Pill, he had heard from Zhang Yuzhi that the Rejuvenation Pill’s healing effects were very good. They were extremely effective treating typical internal organ, flesh, and bone injuries.

He hatched the Rejuvenation Pill and checked its stats.

Rejuvenation Pill Essence: Epic

Life Providence: Land Rejuvenation

Life Soul: Pill Spirit

Strength: 21

Speed: 21

Constitution: 22

Essence Energy: 39

Talent Skill: Miraculous Rejuvenation

Companion Form: Pill (One-time use)

These stats are quite odd. However, Zhang Yuzhi said that the other stats don't matter. The quality of a pill essence depends on its Essence Energy. A pill essence with high Essence Energy has stronger effects. This has 39 Essence Energy. It's considered excellent, Zhou Wen thought.

The Golden Overlord Sword was still killing the pill essences. All sorts of pill essences spewed out from the nine holes as they were killed by the Golden Overlord Sword.

These pill essences were odd. Apart from Companion Eggs, nothing else dropped. Zhou Wen didn't even see a single stat crystal. Instead, two more Legendary Companion Eggs dropped.

Suddenly, a white pill essence flew out from the hole. It was about the size of a fist and was crystalline like a ball of jade with misty clouds inside.

What was even stranger was the white dragon-shaped mist flowing in the pill. The entire pill essence emitted an abnormally powerful lifeforce.

A pill essence with a dragon form? Could it be the Mythical Resurrection Pill Essence that Zhang Yuzhi mentioned? Zhou Wen was delighted as he immediately ordered the Golden Overlord Sword to slash at it.

Clang!

The Golden Overlord Sword slashed at the Resurrection Pill Essence, but it failed to split it into two. It only left a sword mark.

Almost instantly, the wounds on the Resurrection Pill Essence healed.

The Golden Overlord Sword slashed several times, each strike leaving a deep mark on its body. However, it failed to slice through it fully. In the next instant, the Resurrection Pill Essence would recover.

The Rejuvenation Pill Essence's recovery ability is so strong. It's even stronger than Li Xuan's recovery ability. Zhou Wen was secretly surprised.

Unfortunately, Tyrant Behemoth was still with Zhang Xiao and couldn't be used. Zhou Wen had to unsummon it to have it projected in-game.

Now, Zhou Wen naturally couldn't take it back, so he had no choice but to let the blood-colored avatar hold the Golden Overlord Sword and use Immortal Slaying.

The Golden Overlord Sword combined with Immortal Slaying cleaved the Life Regeneration Pill Essence into two at once.

'Killed Mythical Creature, Rejuvenation Pill Essence.'

Zhou Wen was taken aback when he saw the game notification. That's it?

It was the first kill of a Mythical creature in this dungeon, but nothing dropped—not even a single strand of hair.

Although Zhou Wen was somewhat depressed, he didn't mind as there were plenty of opportunities in the future. He continued letting the Golden Overlord Sword kill the pill essences.

Ding!

After killing a Legendary pill essence, a Companion Egg dropped. Zhou Wen took a careful look and realized that it was called a Virility Strengthening Pill.

There’s actually such a pill essence! Zhou Wen was somewhat surprised. After incubating the Virility Strengthening Pill, he realized that its stats were ordinary. However, its talent skill was different from the Rejuvenation Pill. Its name was “Virility Strengthening.”

Zhou Wen kept counting. There were only eighty-one pill essences in Pill Furnace Mountain. After killing them, no more pill essences came out.

Apart from the Resurrection Pill Essence, no other Mythical pill essence appeared.

He dripped his blood to respawn in the dungeon, but the pill essences on Pill Furnace Mountain didn’t respawn.

From the looks of it, the respawning pattern of this Pill Furnace Mountain should be the same as other Mythical creatures. It respawns once every 24 hours. Zhou Wen had no choice but to give up on grinding pill essences and switch to grinding other Mythical creatures and rare dimensional creatures.

Ding!

After killing the Golden Battle God Halberd again, another Companion Egg dropped.

This thing has such a high drop rate! Is this the fourth or fifth? Zhou Wen couldn’t remember how many times it had dropped.

What’s the point of dropping so many? Quickly have the nine black dragons’ Companion Beast drop. Let me see what effects they have. Zhou Wen suddenly thought of something.

Previously, Liu Yun could transfer his Companion Beast to others by paying a small price. Now that I’ve also practiced the Sky-Stealing Sun-Shifting Art, can I be like him? If I can do it, won’t I be able to sell those useless Companion Beasts? Zhou Wen really wanted to sell his Companion Beasts in exchange for the resources he needed.

Even if he didn’t sell them, he could give the Companion Beasts he had no use for to his close friends to ensure their safety.

However, Zhou Wen still didn’t understand how to use the Sky-Stealing Sun-Shifting Art to transfer Companion Beasts.

I’ll think of a way to get the method from Liu Yun. Is this fellow here or not? As Liu Yun couldn’t enter Celestial Master Manor, Zhou Wen planned on visiting Dragon Tiger Town tomorrow to prevent Liu Yun from failing to find him.

While Zhou Wen slept, Zhang Xiao didn’t sleep. He was reeling in excitement. He led Tyrant Behemoth to the Fiend Tomb today to see if Tyrant Behemoth would eat the Fiend Stones.

The outcome excited him. Not only did Tyrant Behemoth eat them, but it also ate at an astonishing speed. In less than half a day, it had already eaten a large number of Fiend Stones.

At this rate, it will only take five days at most. The Fiend Stones that spread out from the Fiend Tomb will probably be eaten clean. Considering how much it has eaten, it definitely

won’t digest it all so easily. Considering the digestion time, it will probably take more than a month to resolve the problem of Fiend Stone growth… Zhang Xiao thought excitedly.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 835 - The Insatiable Behemoth

Chapter 835: The Insatiable Behemoth

Translator: CKtalon

Zhang Xiao wasn’t wrong. Unfortunately, he had underestimated Tyrant Behemoth’s appetite. He originally imagined that after the first day, Tyrant Behemoth would definitely need a few days to rest and digest.

To his surprise, Tyrant Behemoth didn’t have any intention of resting every two days. It continued eating, and it ate even more than the first day.

It should be full this time, right? Zhang Xiao already felt that something was amiss.

However, Tyrant Behemoth continued eating on the third day. It was like a black hole that couldn’t be filled as it constantly devoured the Fiend Stones.

In just three days, Tyrant Behemoth resolved the problem of the Fiend Stone proliferation that had plagued the Zhang family.

However, Zhang Xiao couldn’t be happy. The problem with the Fiend Stones was temporarily resolved, but how was he to feed Tyrant Behemoth?

There was still nearly a month left until the auction. Just the thought of Tyrant Behemoth eating like this every day made his knees go weak. How many Essence Energy Crystals did he have to get to feed Tyrant Behemoth like this?

I don’t believe that Tyrant Behemoth doesn’t need digesting. It definitely needs time to digest after eating so many Fiend

Stones. Even if it isn't fed for half a month, it shouldn't be hungry. Zhang Xiao still had some hope.

But soon, Zhang Xiao realized that he was too naive.

After not feeding it for half a day, Zhang Xiao realized that Tyrant Behemoth was showing the symptoms of hunger that Zhou Wen had mentioned.

Zhang Xiao gritted his teeth and took out the dimensional crystals in his small vault to feed Tyrant Behemoth. However, only after half of the small vault was finished the hungry did Tyrant Behemoth's hunger symptoms vanish.

Zhang Xiao's expression was extremely ugly. If Tyrant Behemoth ate like this, his little vault could only feed it for four or five days at most, but what would happen after that?

Zhang Xiao suddenly realized that he had probably been tricked by Zhou Wen. Zhou Wen had said that he had to feed him until he left Mount Dragon Tiger. How could Zhang Xiao have so many Essence Crystals to feed Tyrant Behemoth?

That's not right. If Tyrant Behemoth can eat so much, how can Zhou Wen afford to rear it? If I can't afford it, it's even more impossible for Zhou Wen. Zhang Xiao felt that Zhou Wen definitely had a way to prevent Tyrant Behemoth from eating, such as letting Tyrant Behemoth sleep to reduce its expenditure.

However, Zhang Xiao didn't know what to do. All he could do was discuss it with Zhang Chunqiu.

When Zhang Chunqiu heard Zhang Xiao, he shook his head and said, "What else can we do? Apologize and get him to take back Tyrant Behemoth. Otherwise, what else can we

do? Don’t tell me you really want to rear it for a month? Anyway, I won’t lend you any dimensional crystals.”

“What I mean is that there must be a way to make Tyrant Behemoth not need to eat. Otherwise, no one could afford to feed it. It’s impossible for Zhou Wen to feed it like this every day. Do you think there’s a way?” Zhang Xiao had his pride, so he naturally wasn’t willing to return Tyrant Behemoth.

“I have no solution. You can ask Zhou Wen,” Zhang Chunqiu said as he spread out his hands.

Zhang Xiao couldn’t help but be dumbfounded that even someone as resourceful as Zhang Chunqiu was helpless. However, he couldn’t bring himself to apologize to Zhou Wen.

I don’t believe that Zhou Wen can raise it, but I can’t. There must be a way. Zhang Xiao brought Tyrant Behemoth back to think of a solution.

However, if it wasn’t full, it wasn’t full. Tyrant Behemoth’s appetite was real. There was no way to fool it into not being hungry.

Zhang Xiao thought of many solutions. He even wanted to hypnotize Tyrant Behemoth to temporarily enter hibernation.

It was useless. Even if it fell asleep, Tyrant Behemoth’s hunger symptoms remained. As long as the symptoms appeared, Zhou Wen would definitely sense them.

Zhang Xiao really couldn’t afford to embarrass himself. Once Tyrant Behemoth was hungry, he had to feed it. After a few days, his little vault had been emptied, so he had to borrow from others.

Zhang Xiao was a person who cared about his reputation. He would rather sell everything to raise Tyrant Behemoth until Zhou Wen left. He definitely couldn’t send him back now.

However, Zhang Xiao was filled with regret. If he had known that Tyrant Behemoth could eat that much, he wouldn’t have agreed to help Zhou Wen raise it.

Now, as long as he saw Tyrant Behemoth, he felt his heart turn cold. Just a slight movement from Tyrant Behemoth made his legs go limp.

How the hell is this a Companion Beast? It’s a bottomless pit. How did that bastard Zhou Wen raise it to the Mythical stage? Zhang Xiao felt extremely depressed.

But he knew that Zhou Wen had definitely invested heavily. Even if there was a way to make Tyrant Behemoth not eat or drink after advancing to the Mythical stage, he definitely had to invest a large amount of resources to advance it.

The amount of resources was unimaginable.

Zhou Wen had spent the past few nights in Celestial Master Manor and spent the days shopping nearby. He mainly wanted Liu Yun to find him, but unfortunately, he hadn’t seen Liu Yun. This made Zhou Wen worry if Liu Yun had really been killed by Ya’er.

When he returned to Celestial Master Manor at night, he realized that Zhang Chunqiu was sitting in the garden he had to pass through. He looked like he was waiting for him.

“Looking for me?” Zhou Wen asked when he saw Zhang Chunqiu stand up.

Zhang Chunqiu handed a small paint box to Zhou Wen. “This is the Life Reversing Spirit Talisman we agreed on previously.”

“Didn’t I agree to lend Tyrant Behemoth to Zhang Xiao for free? There’s no need to give me this,” Zhou Wen said.

Zhang Chunqiu said with a smile, “Zhang Xiao was wrong in this matter. I apologize on his behalf. Take the Life Reversing Spirit Talisman. There’s still a little something here. Consider it a token of my appreciation. On account of Yuzhi, how about we call it quits?”

“You are being too serious. It’s inevitable for young people to have disputes. I’ll accept the Life Reversing Spirit Talisman. There’s no need for anything else. I’ll take back Tyrant Behemoth and pretend nothing happened,” Zhou Wen said.

“Don’t take it back yet. Let Zhang Xiao feed it for another two more days. It might not be a bad thing to let him suffer a little,” Zhang Chunqiu said.

“Alright, as you wish,” Zhou Wen said as he took the box containing the Life Reversing Spirit Talisman.

However, Zhang Chunqiu stuffed the other box into Zhou Wen’s hands. “Take this too. It has nothing to do with anything else. Just treat it as a token of my appreciation. You might need it during the auction.”

“Then I’ll accept it.” Zhou Wen didn’t decline.

After chatting for a while, Zhang Chunqiu left. Zhou Wen returned to his room and opened the two boxes. One of them contained the Life Reversing Spirit Talisman, and in the other box was a card. The card was carved from jade. It was

the size of a name card without any patterns. Only the word “Celestial Master” was engraved on it.

What’s the use of this thing? Zhou Wen looked at it for a while and realized that it was an ordinary jade carving. It wasn’t a dimensional item.

In the courtyard of Dragon Tiger Town, Moses and the rest were discussing something.

“We have to obtain the Earth Elemental Beast. If we can’t obtain it, we can only use forceful means.” The elder looked at Moses and said, “You have to be mentally prepared. You might need to take action when the time comes.”

Moses smiled and said, “My Guardian and I are ready. We can take action at any time.”

“Let’s wait until the auction results are out. Mount Dragon Tiger belongs to the Zhang family after all,” the elder said. “Even if we want to make a move, we have to wait until the item leaves Mount Dragon Tiger.”

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 836 - Fiend Stone Rebirth

Chapter 836: Fiend Stone Rebirth

After two days, Zhou Wen unsummoned Tyrant Behemoth. Zhang Xiao didn’t come looking for him; it was considered a tacit understanding.

When Tyrant Behemoth vanished, Zhang Xiao heaved a sigh of relief. If he reared it for a month, he would really go bankrupt.

Zhou Wen had been waiting for Liu Yun, but before he arrived, Zhang Chunqiu rushed over to find him.

“Zhou Wen, there’s a problem with the Fiend Tomb. Can you lend me your Tyrant Behemoth again?” Zhang Chunqiu’s expression was solemn. It looked like things were really serious.

“What happened?” Zhou Wen needed to know more due to the severity of the matter. He couldn’t risk Tyrant Behemoth.

“The Fiend Stones that grew out of Fiend Tomb had already been eaten by Tyrant Behemoth. Nothing happened in the past few days, but just now, the Fiend Stones have begun to grow again. Furthermore, their growth speed is even faster than before. I want to borrow your Tyrant Behemoth to try eating them up again,” Zhang Chunqiu said.

“Is it convenient for me to go with you?” Zhou Wen asked.

“Of course. Follow me.” Zhang Chunqiu didn’t say anything else as he turned around and led the way.

After leaving the town, Zhang Chunqiu summoned an immortal crane and set off with Zhou Wen.

Zhou Wen originally imagined that the vicinity of Mount Dragon Tiger was like a fairyland, but after arriving at the Fiend Tomb, he realized that it wasn’t the case.

There was a place in the mountain where all vegetation died. Nothing grew. In broad daylight, the sun could clearly release its rays down, but the area felt extremely dark and eerie.

In an inconspicuous spot, Zhou Wen saw a tiny grave without a tombstone. If Zhang Chunqiu hadn’t said that it was a Fiend Tomb, Zhou Wen wouldn’t have imagined that this tiny grave would have such a huge back story behind it.

The only strange thing about this grave was its material. The graves of ordinary people were made of mud. Higher-level ones were made of rocks or bricks. Even higher-level ones were made of jade or even metal.

Although the grave was made of stone, the stone wasn’t man-made. It was as though the grave had grown out of stone.

The grayish-white stone seemed to emit a sinister aura. And near the grave, a large number of rocks appeared to have the same texture. They looked out of place with the mountain wall beside them, as though a layer of frost had covered the valley.

In every direction of the grave, there was a man-made stone platform. On each stone platform were members of the Zhang family. They monitored the Fiend Tomb from different angles.

Zhang Chunqiu landed on one of the stone platforms with Zhou Wen and pointed at the grayish-white Fiend Stones beside him. “Please get Tyrant Behemoth to eat the grayish-white Fiend Stones over there.”

“Alright.” Zhou Wen summoned Tyrant Behemoth and got it to eat the grayish-white Fiend Stones.

According to Zhang Chunqiu’s instructions, Tyrant Behemoth stopped after eating a portion of the Fiend Stones.

“Alright, we are now waiting for the outcome. If you have the time, you can stay and take a look. If you don’t have time, I can get someone to take you back now,” Zhang Chunqiu said.

“If it’s convenient, I want to stay and take a look.” Zhou Wen also wanted to see what was so special about the Fiend Tomb that the Zhang family had protected for so many years.

“You can stay, but remember not to leave this platform, especially at night,” Zhang Chunqiu exhorted Zhou Wen repeatedly.

Zhou Wen naturally wouldn’t joke around with his life and agreed readily.

The Fiend Stones didn’t seem to grow in that short period of time. It had been a few days since Tyrant Behemoth ate the Fiend Stones last time before they grew again; therefore, they wouldn’t grow back so quickly.

Zhou Wen didn’t stare at that spot. Instead, he looked around the Fiend Tomb to see if he could find the tiny palm

symbol. After carefully searching the vicinity, Zhou Wen's eyes suddenly lit up.

Behind the tiny grave, Zhou Wen saw a tiny palm symbol with Truth Listener. It was engraved on the grave's stone. As the stone wasn't very flat, it looked like a natural pattern. However, Zhou Wen had seen many tiny palm symbols, so he definitely wouldn't mistake them.

However, Zhou Wen was in trouble again. Although he had found the tiny palm symbol, Zhang Chunqiu had repeatedly exhorted him not to leave the platform. How could he walk to the Fiend Tomb to take a picture?

Furthermore, it was already an exception for the Zhang family to let him come here. It was impossible for him to take pictures with his phone.

How can I take a picture? Zhou Wen thought for a while but failed to come up with a good solution.

Just as he was fretting, he suddenly heard someone shout, "It's growing… It's growing again…"

Zhou Wen was alarmed as he hurriedly looked at the Fiend Stone hole that Tyrant Behemoth had produced from taking a big mouthful. He saw Fiend Stones appear on the ground that had been completely cleared.

The Fiend Stones were like bamboo shoots after the rain, rapidly growing.

This was the first time Zhou Wen had seen a stone grow.

"This time, the regrowth time is even shorter. It regrew in less than half an hour," a member of the Zhang family said worriedly.

“Has this happened before?” Zhou Wen asked.

The Zhang family had been guarding the Fiend Tomb for so many years. They should have come up with means to deal with the Fiend Stones in the past.

To his surprise, Zhang Chunqiu shook his head and said, “In the past, the growth speed of the Fiend Stones was very slow. After the dimensional storms, the speed of growth gradually increased. In recent months, the speed of growth was much faster than before. In the past, the Fiend Stones only extended less than ten meters around the Fiend Tomb. Look at it now. In just a few months, it will probably reach almost a hundred meters.”

“In other words, you haven’t dealt with the Fiend Stones before?” Zhou Wen found it unbelievable.

“Of course. However, we only took a small portion of the Fiend Stones and took them back for research. We didn’t dig up the Fiend Stones on such a large scale. There has never been such a situation in the past. Although the place where the Fiend Stones were dug out still grew new Fiend Stones, it happened very slowly. It has never been this fast,” Zhang Chunqiu said.

“What’s that?” Suddenly, someone pointed at the spot where the Fiend Stones grew and exclaimed in surprise.

Zhou Wen and Zhang Chunqiu looked over and saw a human face symbol appear at the spot where the Fiend Stones grew. The symbol grew on the Fiend Stone as though a person was embedded in it. It looked extremely strange.

“Has this happened before?” Zhou Wen asked Zhang Chunqiu.

This time, Zhang Chunqiu only shook his head as he stared at the face on the Fiend Stone. At the same time, he ordered, “Everyone, enter an emergency state.”

Everyone tensed up. Everyone in the Zhang family knew how terrifying the Fiend Tomb was. Zhou Wen, who had no concept of the Fiend Tomb, had an ominous feeling.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 837 - Ba

Chapter 837: Ba

Translator: CKtalon

The human face had all five facial features and its eyes were closed. Unlike ordinary stone masks, the face on the stone didn’t have any vibes. It was as though it could open its eyes and come alive at any moment.

Everyone looked warily at the face on the stone. On the stone platform beside them, someone from the Zhang family suddenly leaped down.

It was unexpected, no one had the time to react. By the time they realized what had happened, the person had already jumped from the platform to the ground.

The ground was filled with Fiend Stones. The moment the person landed on the ground, the shoes on his feet strangely turned into Fiend Stone. Even his calves rapidly turned into Fiend Stone. It just took all of two seconds before both calves turned into Fiend Stone.

Everything happened too quickly. Only Zhang Chunqiu reacted. Using his hand as a saber, he slashed out a saber beam in midair, severing the petrified legs. He extended his hand and pulled him back to the stone platform.

At that moment, the person seemed to regain consciousness. He screamed as his legs kept bleeding.

“Stop the bleeding and treat his injuries,” Zhang Chunqiu instructed as he stared at the leg that had been completely petrified.

The legs remained standing on the ground and became one with the Fiend Stones as though they were part of them. It was so strange that it made one’s scalp tingle.

Although Zhou Wen really wanted to ask what was going on, it was clearly not the time to ask such questions. He had been using Truth Listener to scan the Fiend Tomb and the Fiend Stones, but he didn’t discover anything abnormal. All he could sense was that there was Essence Energy flowing within the Fiend Stone; nothing else was special.

“Zhou Wen, go back now. The situation at the Fiend Tomb has changed. It’s too dangerous. We need to prevent any accidents,” Zhang Chunqiu said to Zhou Wen.

Although Zhou Wen really wanted to take a picture of the tiny palm symbol of the Fiend Tomb, it was impossible for him to request to take a picture in such a situation. He had to listen to Zhang Chunqiu and leave.

The Fiend Tomb looked a little troublesome. When the Zhang family evacuated Zhou Wen, he could see members of the Zhang family constantly rushing towards the Fiend Tomb as reinforcements.

Zhou Wen didn’t know what the Fiend Tomb was like. He couldn’t help even if he wanted to.

When he returned to Celestial Master Manor, Zhou Wen kept thinking about the Fiend Tomb. He didn’t know what that strange face was.

It looked like a part of the Fiend Stone or some dimensional creature. Zhou Wen couldn’t be sure.

And this seemed to be the beginning of a nightmare. In the next few days, it was obvious that the entire Zhang family

was in a tense state. There were constantly people leaving the Celestial Master Manor, and there was a high chance that they were heading for the Fiend Tomb.

“Yuzhi, how’s the situation at the Fiend Tomb?” Zhou Wen couldn’t help but ask when he saw Zhang Yuzhi again.

“The situation isn’t good. Over the last few days, there have been people who attempted to jump into the Fiend Tomb every day. Although they were saved in the end, it’s becoming more and more frequent. No reason has been found, and questioning them comes up empty. If they still can’t find the reason, they will probably be in big trouble.

“Have you tried shattering the face on the Fiend Stone?” Zhou Wen asked.

“It’s useless. It will regrow if it’s shattered. After the face on the Fiend Stone was shattered, stone faces grew in other places. Now, there are seven stone faces around the Fiend Tomb.

Zhou Wen knew that the Zhang family had really encountered trouble this time. If they couldn’t resolve it, people would keep jumping in. In the end, the entire Zhang family might be wiped out.

“Can you tell me what’s going on with the Fiend Tomb? If it’s inconvenient, forget it,” Zhou Wen asked.

Zhang Yuzhi hesitated for a moment before whispering to Zhou Wen, “I’ll tell you about this, but don’t tell anyone. Legend has it that our Zhang family’s ancestor was buried in a special cave. With the help of the cave, a Celestial Master was born. Actually, that’s not the case. Our Zhang family found the special cave, but we didn’t find it to bury

ourselves inside, but to prevent the things inside from coming out."

"What do you mean? Do you mean that someone was already buried inside?" Zhou Wen asked in puzzlement.

"To be precise, it's not a person, but a Ba," Zhang Yuzhi said.

"Ba? Is it a type of zombie?" Zhou Wen seemed to have heard of such monsters, but he wasn't too sure. He felt that it had something to do with zombies.

"Ordinary people often mix Ba and zombies together. In fact, the two are not the same thing. In myths, a Ba is the goddess of the heavens. She descended to the human world to help Yellow Emperor defeat Chiyou. However, because she exhausted her divine power, she couldn't return to the heavens. Therefore, she can only sleep beneath the ground and wait for the day she recovers her divine power to return to the heavens."

Zhang Yuzhi paused for a moment before continuing, "Ba descended to the mortal world to deal with Count of the Wind and Lord of the Rain. Even the storm they produced was incinerated in front of Ba. Even when Count of the Wind and Lord of the Rain joined forces, they weren't a match for Ba. It's obvious how powerful her divine power was. Ba slept underground, but once her divine power recovered, she woke up from her long slumber. Or perhaps someone disturbed her and woke her up. Her divine power spread out, causing the land to be dry and barren. That's why she's known as God of Drought, or Hiderigami in other places. It's an extremely terrifying existence.

"Back then, my family's ancestor discovered that the Ba that was sleeping underground was about to revive. That's why he guarded the area to prevent the Ba from appearing. He

was mistaken as having found a treasure cave. Over the years, our Zhang family has been guarding the Fiend Tomb to prevent the Ba from coming out. However, with the arrival of the dimensional storms, the power in the Fiend Tomb has become stronger. How long can our Zhang family guard it? Even we don’t know. The break out is only a matter of time.”

“It existed in the world before the dimensional storms. Is there really such a creature as a Ba?” Zhou Wen was somewhat alarmed.

After the dimensional storms, it wasn’t surprising for any creature to appear. However, the Zhang family had already begun guarding against Ba since ancient times. This was truly surprising.

“I don’t know if there’s really a Ba, but there’s definitely something unbelievable in the Fiend Tomb. Over the years, strange things have frequently appeared in the Fiend Tomb. If it wasn’t for my Zhang family risking our lives to guard the area, I’m afraid the area around Mount Dragon Tiger would have long been plunged into misery and suffering,” Zhang Yuzhi said.

After saying that, Zhang Yuzhi got up and prepared to leave. “I have to go out for a few days. Don’t just wander around when I’m not in the Celestial Master Manor, lest others misunderstand.”

“Where are you going?” Zhou Wen was puzzled as to why Zhang Yuzhi was heading out.

The Fiend Tomb was already extremely dangerous. Logically speaking, Zhang Yuzhi should have stayed inside Celestial Master Manor to help.

“I’m going to kill dimensional creatures with my brothers,” Zhang Yuzhi said.

Zhou Wen recalled the matter regarding Zhang Yuzhi’s Life Providence and said to her, “Actually, I have a golden apple that can change a person’s Life Providence without any side effects. Do you want to give it a try?”

Zhang Yuzhi was first delighted before shaking her head. “There’s no need. This is all the useless me can do to help everyone.”

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 838 - Three Realms' Best Wind

Chapter 838: Three Realms’ Best Wind

Zhou Wen remained silent. Zhang Yuzhi was lucky, but at the same time, she was unlucky. She had to withstand the pros and cons of her ability and pain.

Zhou Wen could understand Zhang Yuzhi’s feelings. She wasn’t willing to become best friends with dimensional creatures before killing them.

However, the Zhang family was in such a difficult situation. It was even possible that they would be wiped out. What she did might be saving the lives of all her family members.

Every family has its hardships. It’s not easy for a large family like the Zhang family either. Zhou Wen sighed inwardly.

After Zhang Yuzhi left, Zhou Wen didn’t stay in Celestial Master Manor. He went to an inn in Dragon Tiger Town. On the one hand, he didn’t want to trouble the Zhang family, and on the other hand, it was also convenient for Liu Yun to contact him when he arrived.

That afternoon, Demonic Neonate completed her evolution and became an Epic. Her various skills didn’t change, and only her stats increased to 41. Zhou Wen could only continue to look forward to the pleasant surprise the Wheel of Destiny would bring when she evolved to the Mythical stage.

Demonic Neonate’s return made Zhou Wen feel a lot more at ease. Although she was only at the Epic stage, her combat strength was greatly beneficial to Zhou Wen.

Just as Zhou Wen was feeling gratified that Demonic Neonate had completed her evolution, Banana Fairy, who hadn’t advanced to the Mythical stage, successfully advanced to the Mythical stage on the same day.

Zhou Wen was overjoyed. He had been waiting for Banana Fairy for too long. Seeing Banana Fairy break out of her egg and transform into a young girl in a jade-silk dress, Zhou Wen couldn’t wait to see her stats.

Banana Fairy: Mythical (Evolvable)

Life State: Great Yin Spirit Root.

Life Soul: Divine Wind Immortal

Wheel of Destiny: Three Realms’ Best Wind (Yin)

Strength: 81

Speed: 81

Constitution: 81

Essence Energy: 81

Talent Skill: Grand Yin Wind

Companion Form: Fan

There weren’t many changes to the other skills, but her basic stats had increased to 81 points of a top Mythical. The additional Wheel of Destiny was actually called the Three

Realms’ Best Wind. This name was very domineering, but he didn’t know how effective it was.

Why is there the word Yin behind the Wheel of Destiny? Could it be that there’s the Three Realms’ Best Wind with the word Yang? Zhou Wen found it odd.

Summoning Banana Fairy in reality, he saw a girl in green clothes with a light veil. She looked to be about fourteen or fifteen years old. Her snow-white legs were bare as she sat on a banana leaf.

At that moment, the banana leaf was much bigger than before. The girl sat there, floating. Her veil was lithe and she looked uncomfortable.

Although Zhou Wen didn’t mind the appearance of a Companion Beast, he was naturally in a good mood with such a beautiful and adorable Companion Beast by his side.

He launched a game dungeon and entered the Metalwork Temple dungeon. Zhou Wen wanted to see how powerful Banana Fairy’s Wheel of Destiny was.

There were furnaces everywhere in the Metalwork Temple and the temperature was rather high.

Banana Fairy sat on the banana leaf and floated beside the blood-colored avatar. Under Zhou Wen’s orders, she puffed up her cheeks and blew at the Metalwork Temple.

Whoosh!

Large swaths of Fire Elemental Sprites and various dimensional creatures were blown away. Anything that could move was blown away. As for the huge furnaces, they were all extinguished.

As though a hurricane had passed, Zhou Wen saw the game's notification column being flooded. Notices of various dimensional creatures dying kept popping up.

Zhou Wen quickly walked into the Metalwork Temple and realized that the flames at the back of the temple had also been extinguished. It was a mess.

The Metalwork Temple that was originally filled with furnaces no longer had any flames. The temperature had returned to normal and he no longer felt hot.

What left Zhou Wen somewhat depressed was that the dimensional creatures that had been blown to death by the Three Realms' Best Wind had been sent flying. The dimensional crystals and Companion Eggs that dropped couldn't be found.

That's way too strong. As expected of the Three Realms' Best Wind! Just as Zhou Wen was feeling excited, he saw Banana Fairy looking somewhat exhausted. Her Essence Energy had been drained, and even the Three Realms' Best Wind had entered a cooldown state.

What a pity. If I could get her to do it a few times in a row, this thing would be better than nuclear bombs, Zhou Wen thought greedily.

Even without the Wheel of Destiny's augmentation, Banana Fairy's Grand Yin Wind was considered a powerful divine technique. Ordinary Mythical creatures couldn't withstand a single strike from her. Even if they weren't blown away, they would be frozen.

Demonic Neonate and Banana Fairy's complete evolution delighted Zhou Wen.

After grinding Pill Furnace Mountain again, no Mythical Companion Egg dropped.

Zhou Wen went out for a stroll that day. When he returned, he realized that Liu Yun was sitting in his room. Zhou Wen had no idea when he had arrived.

Liu Yun didn’t look well. He had dark circles under his eyes and he looked cranky. His hair was greasy and messy. He looked like he hadn’t washed his hair for weeks.

The stubble on his face had grown out and his clothes weren’t clean. If not for his good looks and branded clothes, he would have been mistaken as a beggar.

“Where’s Ya’er?” Zhou Wen asked Liu Yun.

“Ya’er is fine. Don’t worry. It’s very easy to see her. Help me do something,” Liu Yun said through gritted teeth.

It hadn’t been easy for him all this while. Now, he could finally extort Zhou Wen.

“Do you want me to help you steal the Earth Elemental Beast Companion Egg?” Zhou Wen asked.

“That’s right.” Liu Yun nodded smugly. “As long as you do as I say, I’ll naturally return Ya’er to you after everything is done. Otherwise…”

“There’s no need to say otherwise. If you like it, continue having her,” Zhou Wen said.

“What? Aren’t you afraid that I’ll kill…” Liu Yun was furious. He had suffered so much just for this moment. To his surprise, Zhou Wen actually said such a thing? It infuriated him.

“If you dare kill her, do it,” Zhou Wen said indifferently.

“What do you mean? Do you think I don’t dare?” Liu Yun said angrily.

“Did you find your journey extremely problematic?” Zhou Wen asked.

“What has that got to do with you?” Liu Yun’s heart skipped a beat as he asked Zhou Wen suspiciously.

“It has nothing to do with me, but you can think about when your bad luck started,” Zhou Wen said.

“Are you saying that all of this was caused by Ya’er?” Liu Yun was immediately enraged. He had always thought that it was his fault, but he never expected the problem to be with that little girl.

“Do you know Wang Lu from the Wang family? Some people are born different. Ya’er is such a person, but she’s different from Wang Lu. She won’t bring you luck… Do you understand what I mean? Anyway, if you like her, continue taking her around. It saves me trouble,” Zhou Wen said.

Liu Yun was dumbfounded. He never expected such a thing to happen. Of course he knew Wang Lu from the Wang family. He even knew Wang Chan, but he never expected Ya’er to be such a person as well.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 839 - Nutrition Fee

Chapter 839: Nutrition Fee

Translator: CKtalon

“This… Why don’t I return her to you?” Liu Yun felt a little guilty.

He originally didn’t believe it, but when he thought of what he had encountered along the way, Liu Yun felt that he had to believe it.

“I’ve been very busy recently. I don’t have time to take care of a child. Why don’t you help me take care of her for a few more days? Let’s talk when I return to Luoyang,” Zhou Wen said with a smile.

“Take care my ass,” Liu Yun said gloomily.

“Eldest Senior Brother, don’t be anxious. At most, I’ll pay you for your labor. How about one Epic Companion Egg a day? It won’t be a problem to hire a female celebrity as a nanny for this price. It’s a bargain. What do you think?” Zhou Wen said.

Liu Yun slammed his palm on the table and said righteously, “Who do you think I, Liu Yun, am? I’m the great God of Theft, Liu Yun. Am I someone who takes care of children? Ignoring the fact that you give me an Epic Companion Egg every day, even if you give me a Mythical Companion Egg every day, I won’t do it. Just you wait. I’ll send Ya’er back to you now. Take care of her yourself.”

“Eldest Senior Brother, this isn’t appropriate. Look at how you brought her all the way here only to return her to me.

Aren’t you losing out? I suggest that you continue taking care of her for a few more days,” Zhou Wen said.

“Why would I believe you? You are terrible. Wouldn’t it be worse if I took care of her?” Liu Yun said.

“Are you really returning her to me?” Zhou Wen asked.

“Of course. I, Liu Yun, never go back on my word,” Liu Yun said through gritted teeth.

“Alright, but you’ve been taking care of Ya’er for so many days. She must have lost weight from your hunger. You have to give her some nutrition money so that I can buy her some delicious supplements, right?” Zhou Wen extended his hand in front of Liu Yun.

Liu Yun was dumbfounded. He had seen shameless people, but he had never seen someone so shameless.

“You’re still demanding nutrition fees from me?” Liu Yun was extremely angry and aggrieved. His hands were trembling. “I’m the one who’s skinny because of hunger, alright? Damn it, I shat out everything I ate and vomited everything I drank along the way. I didn’t eat or say anything. I cried and laughed all day. In the middle of the night, I laughed until the entire hotel thought that it was haunted. Do you think it was easy for me? Let me tell you, that brat had a great time eating and drinking. I’m about to die, do you know that? Why are you asking me for nutrition fees?”

“Eldest Senior Brother, you shouldn’t be shirking your responsibility in this matter. You were the one who abducted her. You make it sound as though Ya’er abducted you. Don’t you feel ashamed?” Zhou Wen was finally completely at ease. He held back his laughter and said, “It’s fine if you don’t want to give it to me. Anyway, I plan on staying at

Celestial Master Manor for a few days. If you have the ability, send Ya’er there.”

“If you don’t want her, I’ll kill her,” Liu Yun said ruthlessly.

“You dare to kill such a person? As long as you aren’t afraid of being unlucky your entire life, go ahead,” Zhou Wen said as he spread out his hands.

When Liu Yun thought of the days he had spent and how he would be spending the rest of his days in that manner, he immediately shivered.

Suddenly, Liu Yun’s angry face lit up with a smile. “Junior Brother, we’re all brothers. Why are you treating me like an outsider? Just tell me what my disciple-niece likes to eat. I’ll buy it for her. She can eat whatever she wants.”

“That’s more what an Eldest Senior Brother should be like.” Zhou Wen gave him a thumbs up. “By the way, Eldest Senior Brother, how do you transfer a Companion Beast to someone else with the Sky-Stealing Sun-Shifting Art? I’ve studied it for a long time, but I don’t understand how it works.”

“Junior Brother, if you want to learn, I’ll definitely teach you. However, you have to condense a Life Soul with the Sky-Stealing Sun-Shifting Art first.” Liu Yun thought to himself, *You don’t mainly cultivate the Sky-Stealing Sun-Shifting Art. It would be strange if you could condense a Life Soul.*

“The Life Soul of the Sky-Stealing Sun-Shifting Art has already been condensed. Tell me, how should I use it?” Zhou Wen said.

Liu Yun’s eyes widened as he asked in disbelief, “What? Your Sky-Stealing Sun-Shifting Art has condensed a Life Soul?”

“I just condensed it not long ago. It’s too difficult to cultivate. It’s still a Primordial Body,” Zhou Wen said.

Liu Yun wanted to slap Zhou Wen in the face and smash his irritating face, but after some thought, he didn’t dare do it.

“Junior Brother, you must not joke. If you haven’t condensed a Life Soul of the Sky-Stealing Sun-Shifting Art and try using my method, you will die.” Liu Yun still found it unbelievable.

“What’s your Life Soul’s name?” Zhou Wen asked Liu Yun.

“There’s no harm in telling you. My Life Soul is called Astral Soul. It means the soul of the stars in the heavens.” As Liu Yun spoke, he summoned a bit of starlight. The starlight flowed as though it was condensing thousands of stars.

“My Life Soul isn’t as resounding as your name. It’s called Fine Dust, but it should be similar.” Zhou Wen summoned his Fine Dust Life Soul.

Liu Yun was immediately stunned when he saw Zhou Wen’s Fine Dust. Although Life Souls were different and their abilities might be different, he could sense that it was undoubtedly a Life Soul condensed from the Sky-Stealing Sun-Shifting Art. There was no mistake.

“Junior Brother, won’t there be a problem with dual cultivating Essence Energy Arts?” Liu Yun swallowed his saliva and asked.

“Of course not. Are you going to tell me your method or not? If not, I’m going to Celestial Master Manor,” Zhou Wen said.

“Don’t be anxious. This method is a little complicated, but since you already have the Life Soul of the Sky-Stealing Sun-

Shifting Art, it shouldn’t be difficult for you to learn it.” Liu Yun explained his method to Zhou Wen.

Zhou Wen was originally worried that his Life Soul was different from Liu Yun’s. He thought the abilities wouldn’t be completely the same, so he might not be able to learn Liu Yun’s method.

However, after hearing Liu Yun’s explanation, he realized that his worries were unnecessary. He could also use Liu Yun’s method. In fact, he didn’t rely on the Life Soul’s ability, but the ability of the Sky-Stealing Sun-Shifting Art itself.

Soon, Zhou Wen grasped Liu Yun’s method. He was just short of executing it.

“Junior Brother, continue practicing. I’ll fetch disciple-niece over.” With that said, Liu Yun ran off, afraid that Zhou Wen would ask him for something else.

He had always been a person who refused to suffer losses, but every time he encountered Zhou Wen, he would suffer losses. Now, he only wanted to distance himself from Zhou Wen.

Zhou Wen didn’t really want anything from Liu Yun, so he didn’t stop him.

After a while, an employee knocked on Zhou Wen’s door and said that someone was looking for him.

Zhou Wen went out to take a look and saw Ya’er standing outside, but he didn’t see Liu Yun. Liu Yun was definitely afraid that Zhou Wen would extort him again, so he didn’t even dare show his face.

“Ya’er, did you suffer any grievances along the way?” Zhou Wen asked as he stroked her head.

Ya’er shook her head and took off the necklace around her neck before handing it to Zhou Wen.

Zhou Wen was slightly taken aback. He knew that this was the necklace that Ya’er had obtained from Liu Yun, but he didn’t understand why it was handed to him.

“Do you want me to help you put it away?” Zhou Wen asked as he took the necklace.

Ya’er shook her head again and pointed at the gem on the necklace. It looked like there was something wrong with the gem on the necklace.

Zhou Wen checked the gem on the necklace in puzzlement. After taking a closer look, he really found a problem.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 840 - Red Heart Gu

Chapter 840: Red Heart Gu

The naked eye couldn’t see anything wrong with the ruby necklace, but when Zhou Wen activated the Hell King Life Soul, he realized that there was a blood-colored shadow in the largest ruby in the middle of the pendant. It looked like a spider.

“What’s this? A Spirit Body?” Zhou Wen asked Ya’er.

“Gu,” Ya’er said.

This is also a Gu? Zhou Wen was somewhat surprised. No matter how he looked at it, there was a Spirit Body inside the ruby.

However, on second thought, it made sense. No one stipulated that Gu with a spirit body could not exist. The spider in the ruby was likely a spirit-type Gu.

It’s no wonder Ya’er took this necklace. So there’s such a strange Gu inside. I wonder what stage it is. Zhou Wen took out his phone and snapped a picture of the ruby with the spider.

To Zhou Wen’s surprise, the stats appeared. Furthermore, it wasn’t a dimensional creature, but a Companion Beast.

Red Heart Gu: Mythical

Life Providence: Widow

Life Soul: Queen of Hearts

Wheel of Destiny: Love Gu

Strength: 72

Speed: 80

Constitution: 71

Essence Energy: 80

Talent Skill: Neurotoxin

Companion Form: Pendant

This is a Companion Beast that has already hatched, but why is it here? Where did its owner go? Zhou Wen was somewhat puzzled.

Logically speaking, once the owner of a Companion Beast died, the Companion Beast would vanish.

This Red Heart Gu had clearly hatched, but it was trapped in the necklace. Its owner had not unsummoned it, so this was somewhat strange.

Zhou Wen wanted to ask Liu Yun about the necklace's origins, but he couldn't find him. All he could do was search for pictures online to see if there were any clues.

It was very easy to find the origins of the necklace. Zhou Wen couldn't help but be surprised. *This necklace has been circulating since ancient times before the dimensional storms. Furthermore, from the looks of it, the culprit behind the fates of those who possessed it was likely the Red Heart Gu. This makes things strange. Did they already have Companion Beasts in that era?*

Zhou Wen couldn’t figure it out. He asked Ya’er, but she couldn’t answer.

“You can control the Red Heart Gu inside, right?” Zhou Wen asked Ya’er.

Ya’er nodded. In fact, all the pain Liu Yun had suffered along the way was because of this Red Heart Gu.

“Then keep it. If you encounter danger in the future, you can protect yourself.” Zhou Wen returned the necklace to Ya’er.

Ya’er shook her head and said a few words. “For you… Raise me… Don’t… throw me away…”

Zhou Wen suddenly realized that Ya’er was a human and not his Companion Beast when he heard that. His attitude towards her seemed to make her feel insecure.

Zhou Wen picked up the necklace and put it on Ya’er. He stroked her head and said, “I gave you your name. Do you know who’s qualified to give others a name?”

Ya’er shook her head. Clearly, she didn’t understand because she didn’t have a name previously.

Zhou Wen said, “Only family members can give their children names. I gave you your name. You are my family and my sister, so you don’t have to worry about me abandoning you. That kind of thing will never happen. Do you understand?”

Ya’er looked at Zhou Wen and shook her head. She didn’t seem to understand the concept of family.

“It’s fine. You will slowly understand in the future. A family member doesn’t need you to give them anything. I will treat

you well. I will accompany you, sharing sadness and joy with you…” Zhou Wen tried his best to make Ya’er understand. Unfortunately, he was a person with a low EQ, so he just couldn’t express it well.

As the necklace was too eye-catching, and Zhou Wen wasn’t someone who loved antiques, he ended up dismantling the necklace and separated the pendant embedded inside.

The gems outside were just decorations. The ruby in the middle and a thin thread were the main body of the Red Heart Gu. Zhou Wen only needed the main body of the Red Heart Gu to be worn around Ya’er’s neck. He kept the gem necklace to prevent any unnecessary trouble.

As he had noticed Ya’er’s psychological problems, Zhou Wen clumsily wanted to treat her better, but he didn’t know what to do.

As Zhou Wen had been very independent since he was young, he had never experienced how his elders protected and loved him. Therefore, he didn’t know how to treat others well.

Zhou Wen could only do his best. He took the time to take Ya’er out for a walk and buy her some food or toys. However, Zhou Wen didn’t know what girls played. In fact, he didn’t know what boys played either because he had never played with any toys when he was young.

After some thought, Zhou Wen bought a phone for Ya’er and taught her how to use it. He also added his account to her friend’s list. This way, Ya’er could send him a message or call him when he wasn’t around.

Ya’er seemed very happy and fiddled with her phone for a long time.

However, she wasn’t interested in games or movies. She only learned how to use her phone to send messages to Zhou Wen, but she didn’t know how to type or write. Even when she sent voice messages, she didn’t say much. It was very troublesome.

However, Ya’er worked hard to learn language and how to type.

Zhou Wen took out his phone and continued grinding. His luck today was pretty good. Just as the nine dragons respawned, another Companion Egg dropped after killing them.

Demon Blood True Dragon (Zhen): Mythical

Life Providence: Demon Dragon Bloodline (Incomplete)

Life Soul: Zhen Dragon (Incomplete)

Wheel of Destiny: Dragon Domain (Incomplete)

Strength: 80

Speed: 80

Constitution: 80

Essence Energy: 80

Talent Skill: Dragon Breath, Demon Dragon Transformation, Demon Dragon True Body, Dragon Wrath

Companion Form: Dragon Scale Armor (Incomplete)

If it wasn’t for the fact that the word “Zhen” behind the Demon Dragon True Dragon was different, Zhou Wen would

have imagined that it was the same Companion Egg that had dropped. Its stats and skills were identical.

I wonder if this thing can be fused? Zhou Wen tried matching it and realized that the compatibility between the two was 99%. It was almost impossible to fail.

Zhou Wen directly clicked on the fusion. After all, he couldn't wear two sets of Dragon Scale Armor alone. He could try fusing them. Perhaps there would be a pleasant surprise.

However, a notification suddenly popped up in the game: 'Incomplete. Lacking main body, unable to fuse.'

What's the meaning of this? Zhou Wen didn't know what the so-called main body was. He could only guess that he needed to obtain all nine different Demon Blood True Dragons before fusing them.

Zhou Wen had been grinding on Pill Furnace Mountain, but he didn't obtain any Mythical Companion Eggs.

The dragon-patterned Rejuvenation Pill and the Tiger-Patterned Resurrection Pill would randomly spawn one every time. However, Zhou Wen hadn't had a Companion Egg drop in the past few days.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 841 - Entering the Fiend Tomb Again

Chapter 841: Entering the Fiend Tomb Again

Translator: CKtalon

When it was time for Pill Furnace Mountain to respawn pill essence, Zhou Wen went to farm them again. The Golden Overlord Sword killed the pill essence that spewed out one by one. As he killed them, he suddenly saw a strange pill essence spew out from Pill Furnace Mountain.

The pill essence wasn’t the common red and golden color. Although it was white, it wasn’t a dragon-patterned Rejuvenation Pill. It had black colors, but it wasn’t a tiger-patterned Resurrection Pill either.

It was a pill that was half white, half black, half dragon-patterned, and half tiger-patterned. It looked strange and strangely harmonious. From the pill essence, one could faintly hear dragon and tiger roars.

Clang!

The Golden Overlord Sword slashed at the pill essence, but a white dragon-shaped Essence Energy rushed out of the pill, blocking the Golden Overlord Sword’s sword beam.

Although the dragon-shaped Essence Energy was ultimately shattered by the Golden Overlord Sword, the latter did not then have the strength to injure the pill essence.

Before the Golden Overlord Sword could deliver a second attack, a tiger’s roar sounded from the pill essence’s body. A

black-colored Essence Energy condensed into a ferocious tiger and pounced at the blood-colored avatar.

Zhou Wen summoned Tyrant Behemoth and slammed down with his claw, shattering the Essence Energy tiger.

Tyrant Behemoth took another step forward, wanting to shatter the pill essence as well. However, a dragon and tiger's roar sounded from the pill essence's body. The shadow of a dragon and tiger rose and actually blocked Tyrant Behemoth's attack.

Tyrant Behemoth struck out several times, but it failed to shatter the dragon-tiger shadows. All it could do was activate Absolute Strength and roar as it struck out again. After more than ten punches, it shattered the dragon-tiger shadows.

The pill essence was also repeatedly struck by Tyrant Behemoth's punches. Finally, it shattered into pieces. Its healing speed couldn't keep up with the shattering speed.

'Killed Mythical creature, Dragon Tiger Pill Essence. Discovered Companion Egg.'

When Zhou Wen saw the game notification, he saw a Companion Egg drop. He couldn't help but be delighted as he hurriedly picked it up and hatched it.

Dragon Tiger Pill Essence: Mythical

Life Providence: Dragon Spirit Tiger Feracity

Life Soul: Dragon Tiger Combat

Wheel of Destiny: Resurrection

Strength: 80

Speed: 80

Constitution: 80

Essence Energy: 81

Talent Skill: None

Companion Form: Pill (One-time use)

What a powerful pill essence. Can this thing really resurrect the dead? Zhou Wen couldn’t help but be overjoyed when he saw the information on the Dragon Tiger Pill Essence.

Ignoring the other attributes, its Wheel of Destiny was somewhat powerful. In the introduction, it said that it had the ability to revive the dead. He didn’t know if that was true.

However, without a doubt, this was a life-saving item. Even if it was difficult to resurrect the dead, it would definitely have miraculous effects when used on serious injuries.

With such a treasure, Zhou Wen was even more motivated. Unfortunately, he didn’t gain anything after grinding the 81 pill essences.

During this period of time, there was no news from the Zhang family. Zhang Yuzhi didn’t return. The date of the auction was approaching.

This morning, Zhou Wen took Ya’er out for a stroll as usual. When he walked to the nearby river, he saw Zhang Chunqiu sitting on a bench by the river.

“What a coincidence.” Zhou Wen walked over with Ya’er to greet him.

“It’s not a coincidence. I came here specially to wait for you,” Zhang Chunqiu said.

Zhou Wen was slightly taken aback. “Why didn’t you go to the hotel to look for me?”

Zhang Chunqiu’s face was filled with exhaustion, but he still said with a smile, “It’s been stifling these past few days. I wanted to come out to take a breather, so I decided to wait for you here.”

“What’s the matter?” Zhou Wen asked.

“The matter with the Fiend Tomb is very troublesome. More than ten people from the Zhang family have died. They have all jumped into the Fiend Tomb and become Fiend Stone statues,” Zhang Chunqiu said.

“Hasn’t someone been watching?” Zhou Wen was alarmed.

“It’s useless. No one knows who will be the next one to jump. Perhaps the next one to jump will be the person guarding it. We have already thought of many solutions and even evacuated everyone from the Fiend Tomb, but there are still people who have walked to the Fiend Tomb themselves and become Fiend Stone statues,” Zhang Chunqiu said with a sigh.

“Is there anything I can help you with?” On account of Zhang Yuzhi, Zhou Wen didn’t mind helping if he could.

Zhang Chunqiu shook his head and said, “Up to now, I haven’t figured out a solution. I’m not here because of Fiend Tomb.”

“Then why are you looking for me?” Zhou Wen asked in puzzlement.

The Zhang family had encountered such a huge problem, but Zhang Chunqiu still took the time to meet him. It was probably something important.

“I came here to ask you a favor. The Zhang family is in contact with Sunset College. If there aren’t any problems, Yuzhi should be able to be a tutor at Sunset College. When the time comes, I hope you can take care of her. She doesn’t have many friends, so I can’t beg others,” Zhang Chunqiu said.

“Is the matter with the Fiend Tomb really that dangerous?” Zhou Wen knew that if they weren’t doing it out of desperation, how would the Zhang family let Zhang Yuzhi leave Mount Dragon Tiger to go to Sunset College?

The Zhang family must have reached a helpless state before making such a decision.

“It’s just a precaution. After the auction ends, I’ll get Yuzhi to accompany you to Luoyang. If the Zhang family can successfully pass this trial, I’ll bring her back,” Zhang Chunqiu said.

Zhou Wen felt that this was an opportunity. Therefore, he looked at Zhang Chunqiu and said, “Although I don’t know much about the Fiend Tomb, I have some special abilities. Perhaps they can be of some help to the Fiend Tomb. If your Zhang family doesn’t mind, can you let me do a comprehensive survey of the Fiend Tomb?”

“The Zhang family is extremely grateful that you are willing to help us, so why would we mind? However, the Fiend Tomb is too dangerous. Anyone who has come into contact with

the Fiend Tomb might subconsciously walk into it. I'm afraid…" Zhang Chunqiu didn't continue, but his meaning was very clear.

"I've already been to the Fiend Tomb. If there's really a problem, I won't be able to escape. I'm doing this for myself." Zhou Wen's last sentence was the truth.

Surveying was only an excuse. What he really wanted to do was take a picture of the tiny palm symbol and download the Fiend Tomb dungeon.

After Zhou Wen downloaded the Fiend Tomb dungeon, he could enter the Fiend Tomb in-game. Perhaps he could resolve the Zhang family's problems.

"When do you want to go?" Zhang Chunqiu asked after some thought.

"The sooner the better. This matter can't be delayed," Zhou Wen said.

"In that case, come with me now." Zhang Chunqiu led Zhou Wen to the Fiend Tomb again.

Zhou Wen was delighted. This time, he could finally approach the Fiend Tomb and take a picture of the tiny palm symbol on it.

When they arrived at the Fiend Tomb again, there were clearly more people from the Zhang family stationed here. On every stone platform, there were four people sitting facing each other. If anything happened, the other three would immediately know to prevent any accidents.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it

as soon as possible.

Chapter 842 - Digging the Fiend Tomb

Chapter 842: Digging the Fiend Tomb

“Chunqiu, why did you bring him here?” an elder said with a frown when he saw Zhang Chunqiu bring Zhou Wen over.

“Uncle, Zhou Wen is proficient in many special reconnaissance-type Essence Energy Skills. As he might be able to help us discover the problem with the Fiend Tomb, I invited him over to take a look.” Zhang Chunqiu didn’t say that Zhou Wen had requested to come.

“Hurry up. Don’t affect the others.” The elder frowned slightly but didn’t say anything else.

Zhang Chunqiu led Zhou Wen into the region of the Fiend Tomb. Zhou Wen could clearly see that the situation with the Fiend Stone Petrification had worsened. A small portion of the nearby mountain walls had already been petrified. The last time he had come, the Fiend Stones hadn’t covered such a large area.

Furthermore, there were more than ten Fiend Stone stone statues on the ground. They had different expressions and appearances. They were likely the Zhang family members who had run into the Fiend Tomb.

“How do you plan on investigating? Do you have any special needs?” Zhang Chunqiu asked Zhou Wen.

“I need to observe the Fiend Tomb up close. If possible, I would like to take a few photos,” Zhou Wen said.

“You can take pictures, but you have to be fast. Furthermore, when you approach the Fiend Tomb, you can’t exceed those lines or touch the Fiend Stones. Otherwise, you will end up like them.” Zhang Chunqiu pointed at the red lines in the sky. They were about ten meters away from the Fiend Tomb.

“Alright, can I go now?” Zhou Wen agreed immediately. At a distance of about ten meters, his phone could lock onto the tiny palm symbol and download the dungeon.

“Go. I hope you can discover something,” Zhang Chunqiu said.

Zhou Wen leaped into the air and used the Godfiend Life Providence to fly towards the Fiend Tomb. At the same time, he got Doctor Darkness to attach himself to him in his soul form and used his Eyes of Penetration to look at the Fiend Tomb.

In fact, the Eyes of Penetration didn’t have a good effect on things like metal and stone. Zhou Wen was only putting on a show for the Zhang family to prove that he had such abilities and wasn’t here to mess around.

When the Zhang family saw Zhou Wen’s eyes shoot out two beams at the Fiend Tomb like two searchlights, they looked at him curiously.

Zhou Wen pretended to take a look before taking out his phone to take a picture. In fact, the Eyes of Penetration couldn’t see the interior of the Fiend Tomb through the thick Fiend Stones. Zhou Wen circled the Fiend Tomb and took the opportunity to snap a picture of the tiny palm symbol.

The game immediately entered the download screen, allowing Zhou Wen to relax.

After pretending to look around the Fiend Tomb seriously for a while, Zhou Wen returned to the stone platform.

“How is it?” When Zhang Chunqiu asked Zhou Wen, the other Zhang family members looked at him.

“I can’t tell anything for the time being. I’ll go back and think about it. Perhaps I can figure out something,” Zhou Wen said.

“Alright.” Zhang Chunqiu took Zhou Wen back without another word.

After Zhou Wen returned to his residence, he couldn’t wait to open the Fiend Tomb dungeon that he had just downloaded. Firstly, he was very curious about the Fiend Tomb dungeon, and secondly, he hoped to help the Zhang family. He didn’t wish to see Zhang Yuzhi’s family destroyed and for her to be sent to Sunset College.

The game had successfully downloaded. A picture of a white grave appeared on the phone’s screen. Under it were the words “Fiend Tomb.”

Zhou Wen clicked on the program and entered the game. What appeared in front of him was the crater in the mountain where the Fiend Tomb was. The tiny Fiend Tomb stood there, and the grayish-white Fiend Stones looked like snow under the moonlight.

Zhou Wen saw that there were many strange faces just like in real life on the Fiend Stone-filled ground. There were more than ten faces, but none of them belonged to the Zhang family who had transformed into Fiend Stones.

According to Zhang Chunqiu, humans would only be petrified when they touched the Fiend Stones after the fiend

faces appeared. They hadn’t discovered any similar problems back when they touched the Fiend Stones.

Zhou Wen believed in this. Tyrant Behemoth had previously eaten a Fiend Stone, and it wasn’t a problem.

Zhou Wen summoned a few different types of pets and made them land on the ground. As expected, they were all petrified.

Zhou Wen summoned Tyrant Behemoth again to see if it would be petrified. After all, it had eaten Fiend Stones before.

Tyrant Behemoth landed on the Fiend Stones, but its feet also showed signs of Fiend Stone Petrification. However, it was at a slower speed.

It’s actually suffering from Fiend Stone Petrification as well? After Zhou Wen ordered Tyrant Behemoth to use Absolute Strength, the Fiend Stone Petrification stopped.

Zhou Wen heaved a sigh of relief. Thankfully, Tyrant Behemoth was still strong enough. Otherwise, it wouldn’t be easy for him to enter the Fiend Tomb.

As there was no entrance to the Fiend Tomb, he could only dig it open with brute force. This heavy responsibility could only be placed on Behemoth.

The Zhang family had an ancestral rule that the Fiend Tomb couldn’t be dug open. Otherwise, the Goddess Ba would awaken. When that happened, everything would be incinerated. Humans would have no chance of survival.

In reality, Zhou Wen definitely didn’t dare dig either, but in-game, there were naturally no taboos.

Under Zhou Wen’s command, Behemoth, who had activated Absolute Strength, slammed into the Fiend Tomb. The two horns on its head spun like an electric drill, immediately causing sparks to splatter everywhere on the Fiend Tomb. Fiend Stone powder splattered everywhere.

Just as Behemoth began digging the grave, the fiend faces on the ground suddenly seemed to come to life. They burrowed out from the ground and transformed into Fiend Stone statues.

The Fiend Stone statues pounced at Tyrant Behemoth without a word. Zhou Wen hurriedly sent out a few Companion Beasts to fight, preventing them from disturbing Tyrant Behemoth’s grave digging.

As it was only a test, the Companion Beasts Zhou Wen sent out weren’t his main combat pets. They were all Epic Runic Heavy-Armored Warriors. The only Mythical Companion Beast was a Golden Battle God Halberd.

The speed and strength of the Fiend Stone statues looked like they were at the Epic stage. However, after their bodies were shattered, they quickly revived inside the Fiend Stones. They couldn’t be killed no matter how hard he tried.

Furthermore, anything touched by the Fiend Stone statues would be petrified. It was very difficult to deal with them.

As the Fiend Tomb was dug open, more and more fiend faces appeared around it. They transformed into Fiend Stone statues that rushed to Behemoth’s side.

Thankfully, Behemoth in Absolute Strength was indeed an invincible existence. The Fiend Stone statues grabbed at its body, but they were unable to petrify it. They wrapped around Behemoth like a nest of ants.

Is there no way to completely kill them? Zhou Wen frowned slightly. He had already tried many Strength attributes, but they were useless. He could shatter the Fiend Stone statues, but he couldn’t stop them from reviving inside the Fiend Stones.

Furthermore, the game didn’t have any indication of successfully killing them. Clearly, shattering them wasn’t enough to kill them.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 843 - Ghoul Mask

Chapter 843: Ghoul Mask

Translator: CKtalon

Clang!

While Tyrant Behemoth was digging the Fiend Tomb, its horn seemed to have touched something, emitting a metallic clang. As for Tyrant Behemoth, it automatically took two steps back and stared at the dug up Fiend Tomb.

Inside the Fiend Tomb, there was a huge human face. It was identical to the fiend faces that had appeared on the Fiend Stones. However, this face was much bigger, and it emitted a grayish-white strange aura.

Zhou Wen was staring at the face as he sized it up, but it floated up by itself. Only then did he realize that it wasn’t a face, but a stone mask.

From the looks of it, the problem of the fiend face appearing lies with this mask. Zhou Wen ordered Tyrant Behemoth to deliver a punch. He wanted to see what abilities this mask had.

Bam!

Tyrant Behemoth’s Absolute Strength strike shattered the mask. This left Zhou Wen slightly taken aback. Although he felt that there weren’t many Companion Beasts in this world that could fight Tyrant Behemoth head-on, it was blasted apart with a single punch. It was too weak—even inferior to the Dragon Tiger Pill Essence.

Just as Zhou Wen was feeling puzzled, he saw the dust that filled the sky float towards Tyrant Behemoth. Before Zhou Wen could react, the dust from the shattered mask touched Tyrant Behemoth’s face, turning into a complete mask.

However, this time, the mask matched the size of Tyrant Behemoth’s face, enveloping it completely.

Zhou Wen immediately felt that something was amiss. Indeed, Tyrant Behemoth roared and struggled, trying to tear off the mask on its face, but it failed. Furthermore, its struggling slowed down. Soon, Zhou Wen realized that Tyrant Behemoth was no longer under his control.

Boom!

Tyrant Behemoth threw a punch at the blood-colored avatar who dodged to the side. Its fist smashed a huge hole in the mountain wall.

Tyrant Behemoth’s terrifying strength was unleashed as it attacked the blood-colored avatar repeatedly. Zhou Wen’s strength wasn’t enough to fight Tyrant Behemoth, so he could only dodge.

As Zhou Wen dodged, he observed the mask and mentally contacted Tyrant Behemoth.

The mental connection was no longer working. The mask completely controlled Tyrant Behemoth. The mask’s ability surprised Zhou Wen.

From the looks of it, I can only give it a try. After shattering the mask, can I liberate Tyrant Behemoth? Zhou Wen put on the Invisibility Cloak and instantly vanished.

Tyrant Behemoth was a Companion Beast that employed brute force. It had never been afraid of anyone in a head-on battle.

However, Zhou Wen had vanished. It could only stand there in a daze. Its masked face looked around, but there was no sign of Zhou Wen.

Suddenly, an invisible sword beam flashed. The mask on Tyrant Behemoth’s face was cleaved into two and fell from Tyrant Behemoth’s face.

However, Tyrant Behemoth didn’t regain its freedom. The mask automatically shattered and condensed on Tyrant Behemoth’s face, forming a new mask. Tyrant Behemoth was still under its control.

Zhou Wen continued forward invisibly as the Light Concealment Sword in his hand rapidly flashed. Countless strikes instantly shattered the mask, but the outcome was still useless.

The shattered mask returned to Tyrant Behemoth’s face and reformed. It still firmly controlled Tyrant Behemoth.

It’s impossible for there to be no weakness. What’s the weakness of the mask? Still invisible, Zhou Wen used the Hell King Life Soul’s ability and Truth Listener’s hearing to constantly scan the mask.

Coupled with Doctor Darkness’s penetrative vision, the mask had almost no secrets in front of Zhou Wen.

The mask itself was flawless. It was made of gray rocks, so he didn’t discover anything special.

It was unlike the Water Elemental that Zhou Wen had seen before. The Water Elemental could be scattered and reformed. However, there was a water element core in the Water Elemental's body. As long as the core was destroyed, the Water Elemental could be killed.

However, this mask was different. It didn't have a core in its body. No matter how he sliced its body or even blasted the mask to dust like Tyrant Behemoth, he couldn't kill it.

Could it be that it really doesn't have a weakness? Zhou Wen observed for a long time but failed to discover the weakness of the mask.

Demonic Neonate, who was hiding in the Invisibility Cloak, hadn't taken action. Clearly, she hadn't found the flaw in the mask, so she had no intention of taking action.

Even Demonic Neonate and I can't discover the flaws in the mask. Then, is it possible that there aren't any flaws? Or perhaps, its flaws aren't on its body? Zhou Wen's heart stirred as he focused his attention on the Fiend Tomb where he had discovered the mask.

Inside the Fiend Tomb were grayish-white Fiend Stones. After the mask flew out, the Fiend Stones below formed the shape of human faces, perhaps because they were compressed by the Fiend Stones above. However, they only looked a little similar in shape. They didn't have the vibrancy of the other Fiend Stones. They didn't seem to be living creatures.

However, Zhou Wen didn't care. He had to give everything a shot. He immediately went over in his invisible state and quickly slashed out with Light Concealment Sword, slashing at the human-faced Fiend Stones in the Fiend Tomb.

Pfft!

Wherever the sword mark appeared, black blood spewed out like a fountain. As for Tyrant Behemoth's mask, it suddenly distorted as cracks similar to the sword marks appeared.

When the black blood spewed out, the mask shattered with a crack and fell to the ground.

'Killed Mythical creature, Ghoul Mask.' A notification appeared in-game.

Nothing dropped? Zhou Wen was somewhat depressed. The Dragon Tiger Pill Essence that had recently dropped seemed to have expended all his luck. It had been days since anything good had dropped.

After the Ghoul Mask was dispatched, Zhou Wen recovered his connection with Tyrant Behemoth. Furthermore, the ghost faces in the Fiend Stone shattered. When the Companion Beasts touched the Fiend Stones again, they didn't get petrified again.

From the looks of it, the problem with Fiend Stone Petrification was triggered by the Ghoul Mask. I wonder if the Zhang family's people ran towards the Fiend Tomb because of the Ghoul Mask. If that's the case, the Zhang family's problem should be resolvable, Zhou Wen thought to himself as he got Tyrant Behemoth to continue digging the Fiend Tomb to see what else was down there.

Without the interference of the Fiend Stone statues, Tyrant Behemoth dug even faster. It directly swallowed the Fiend Stones it dug out to replenish its expended Essence Energy.

As it dug, Tyrant Behemoth stopped as though it had lost its soul. It stood in front of the Fiend Tomb, motionless no matter how Zhou Wen ordered it.

What's wrong now? Zhou Wen frowned slightly as he focused his gaze at the Fiend Tomb that had been dug seven to eight meters deep. He saw that apart from the Fiend Stones, there was another living creature in the pit.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 844 - Ba

Chapter 844: Ba

The creature looked very strange. Its lower body was like a snake, but it was also like a fish. Its upper body had two dragon claws, and its head resembled a dragon, but it didn’t have horns. It was a very strange creature.

It lay silently in the grave. For some reason, Tyrant Behemoth stood outside the pit and stared at it as though it was possessed.

Zhou Wen’s heart stirred as he summoned the Golden Battle God Halberd to attack the monster in the grave.

However, when the Golden Battle God Halberd approached the grave, it lost control and landed beside the pit.

Zhou Wen hurriedly sent a few Companion Beasts over, but the outcome was the same. As long as they approached the grave, they would stand there motionless as though they had been possessed.

Be it animals or weapons, all Companion Beasts shared the same fate.

The dimensional creatures in this Fiend Tomb are really strange. First, it’s the Ghoul Mask, and now, it’s such a monster. Their abilities are so strange. Zhou Wen thought for a moment and summoned Truth Listener to the graveside.

However, Truth Listener didn’t stand there in a daze. It broke two earrings and, after descending, grabbed the monster with its claws, tearing it into two.

By the time the monster wanted to resist, it was already too late. It died an unnatural death, and only then did Tyrant Behemoth and the other Companion Beasts regain their lucidity.

Thankfully, I have enough Companion Beasts that have well-rounded abilities. Otherwise, I really wouldn’t be able to do anything to this Fiend Tomb, Zhou Wen thought.

‘Killed Mythical creature, Ghost Hornless.’ A game notification popped up.

It’s another Mythical creature. What’s hidden underneath? Could it really be Ba? Zhou Wen wondered how powerful Ba would be if it was really Ba.

After eliminating Ghost Hornless, Zhou Wen ordered Tyrant Behemoth to continue digging. He wanted to see if there was a Ba in the Fiend Tomb.

Tyrant Behemoth received the order and continued digging. Not long after, the Fiend Stones below emitted a scorching aura. The deeper it went, the hotter the Fiend Stones became. Towards the end, the Fiend Stones turned into magma.

Tyrant Behemoth wasn’t afraid of the magma as it sucked the magma into its stomach. As the magma vanished, something gradually revealed itself.

Zhou Wen finally saw something that wasn’t a Fiend Stone. It was a type of black metal that had been forged into the

shape of a bed. There was a canopy on the bed with a transparent curtain hanging down.

The magma formed by the Fiend Stones was blocked by the veil, preventing it from entering the bed.

And on the bed, there was a stunning woman sleeping. Just sleeping there with her eyes closed she was beautiful beyond description. It was difficult to imagine how beautiful she would be if she opened her eyes.

The woman was dressed in red, making her figure look enchanting and charming. Even though the game's style was cartoonish, it was already very provocative.

If it was in reality, he wondered how sexy and alluring she would be.

However, Zhou Wen wasn't in the mood to admire her beauty. His expression was still solemn because he felt a familiar aura from this woman.

That aura wasn't from a dimensional creature, but the aura of a Guardian.

However, typical Guardians were in cocoons, but this woman was sleeping on the bed. This only meant one thing; she had long broken out of the cocoon.

According to what Zhou Wen knew, it wasn't possible for a Guardian to break out of the cocoon just because they were strong enough. Unless someone forcefully broke the cocoon of the Guardian, or someone contracted them, the Guardian couldn't break out no matter how strong they were.

Now that this woman wasn't in the cocoon, it could only mean that she had already contracted a human, or that

someone had forcefully torn open the cocoon.

The Zhang family has protected the Fiend Tomb for so long it's unlikely that someone else dug up the Fiend Tomb and contracted the Guardian. Then, there are only two possibilities. One is that the Zhang family has someone who contracted the Guardian. Another possibility is that this woman is the same as the fellow in the log. She's one of the surviving Guardians from a previous era, Zhou Wen thought as the woman on the bed suddenly opened her eyes.

It wasn't as beautiful as Zhou Wen imagined. It was a pair of eyes that were as red as fire. Although they didn't look ugly, they were terrifying. There wasn't a hint of feminine charm in them.

Her red eyes stared coldly at Zhou Wen as though she was looking at a thief who dared disturb her dreams.

Zhou Wen's heart chilled as he broke out into a cold sweat. A sense of danger arose spontaneously.

Suddenly, Zhou Wen recalled that he was still wearing the Invisibility Cloak. Yet, she could actually see him. Didn't that mean that the Invisibility Cloak was ineffective against her?

Zhou Wen chose to strike first to gain the upper hand. Tyrant Behemoth roared and charged at the woman on the bed. After it expanded, a fist that was bigger than the bed slammed down violently in a bid to smash the bed and the woman to pieces.

However, before Tyrant Behemoth's fist landed, the woman on the bed had already sat up and lifted the transparent veil over the bed.

At the instant the veil was lifted, terrifying flames instantly filled the entire world. Zhou Wen failed to react in time and only saw flames fill the screen before the blood-colored avatar died.

What the hell is this? A full-screen instant kill? Zhou Wen launched the game dungeon and wanted to reenter the Fiend Tomb to take a look, but the program icon of the Fiend Tomb dimmed. There was no reaction from tapping it. There was a 24-hour countdown below. The meaning was obvious. He needed 24 hours to enter the Fiend Tomb dungeon again.

Zhou Wen felt somewhat unsatisfied. It wasn't easy for him to find another Guardian. This might be the opportunity for Slaughterer to advance to a Perfect Body.

I have Banana Fairy, so I might be able to restrain the Guardian's flames. There's still a chance of killing her. Zhou Wen thought again. *There's actually a Guardian in the Fiend Tomb. In that case, the Ba that the Zhang family mentioned is actually a Guardian?*

The more Zhou Wen thought about it, the more he felt that it was possible. When he connected the origins of Ba, Zhou Wen increasingly felt that she might be the surviving Guardian of the last Guardian battle.

Now, Zhou Wen was beginning to suspect that the battle between Yellow Emperor and Chiyou might have been a battle between Guardians. There must have been many Guardians involved.

The former principal went missing after studying the Zhuolu battlefield. The things he left behind seem to be related to the Zhuolu battle. Could it be that the things the former principal left behind really give people a chance to defeat the Guardians? Zhou Wen thought about the connection.

He first went to grind other dungeons. After a painful wait of twenty-four hours, Zhou Wen entered the Fiend Tomb dungeon again. By then, the Fiend Tomb had returned to its original state.

Zhou Wen ordered Tyrant Behemoth to dig up the Fiend Tomb before drawing out the Ghoul Mask. He held the Golden Overlord Sword and slashed at the face in the Fiend Tomb.

However, just as the blood-colored avatar arrived in front of the Fiend Tomb, it collapsed and died on the spot.

Zhou Wen couldn’t help but be taken aback as the game screen went black. It would take another twenty-four hours to enter the Fiend Tomb.

What the hell? Do I have to wait 24 hours after a single death? Isn’t this dungeon too odd? Zhou Wen was extremely helpless.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 845 - Goddess Ba

Chapter 845: Goddess Ba

Previously, I was fine slashing the human face in the grave while invisible. Now, just walking over means immediate death. From the looks of it, that human face still has some tricks up its sleeve. However, it couldn't see me the last time I went invisible, so it didn't trigger its ability, Zhou Wen thought to himself.

It looks like it's rather difficult to crack Fiend Tomb. The necessary Companion Beasts need Behemoth, Invisibility Cloak, and Truth Listener. If I want to kill the Guardian, I need Companion Beasts that can restrain flames. I need at least four top-notch Mythical Companion Beasts. Where would the typical person get these Companion Beasts? Even the Zhang family will probably find it difficult to have such a lineup that can perfectly counter the Mythical creatures in the Fiend Tomb.

However, I don't think I need to fight the Guardian to resolve the Zhang family's problem. I just need to kill the Ghoul Mask and the Ghost Hornless. Just as Zhou Wen was thinking of how to help Zhang Yuzhi, she called.

"When did you return?" Zhou Wen asked.

"I just came back." Zhang Yuzhi's voice revealed her exhaustion before she said apologetically, "Zhou Wen, I'm sorry. I'm afraid things will change at this Earth Elemental Beast Auction."

“Is the Earth Elemental Beast not going to be auctioned?” Zhou Wen could understand. With such a huge matter happening in the Zhang family, it would be normal for them to not be in the mood to hold an auction.

“The auction will continue and will even be held ahead of time. However, the auction this time won’t be bid using money. Whoever can resolve the problem of the Fiend Tomb can take the Earth Elemental Beast Companion Egg,” Zhang Yuzhi said.

“So that’s how it is. This isn’t a bad idea.” Zhou Wen was delighted. He already had a certain understanding of the Fiend Tomb. Although he wasn’t certain that he could completely resolve the problem with the Fiend Tomb, there shouldn’t be too much of a problem if he tried a few more times.

He didn’t need to kill the Guardian to resolve the Zhang family’s problem, so he was still very confident. However, he still needed to do a few dungeon runs to confirm it. After ensuring that there were no problems, it wouldn’t be too late to participate in the auction.

“I hope that someone from the other families can resolve the problem with the Fiend Tomb. Otherwise, our Zhang family will really be in danger.” Zhang Yuzhi wasn’t in a good mood. She didn’t chat with Zhou Wen for long before hanging up.

The auction will begin in two days. Time is a little tight, but it should be enough to confirm certain matters. Zhou Wen had already made up his mind to obtain the Earth Elemental Beast Companion Egg.

Ignoring the fact that he wanted to help Zhang Yuzhi, even if it was just for the Companion Egg, he had to take action.

However, I have to think of a way. I can't expose my Companion Beasts, Zhou Wen thought about how to handle this matter to prevent too many Companion Beasts from being exposed.

After all, he needed to use many Companion Beasts for the endeavor. At the very least, Tyrant Behemoth, Truth Listener, and Invisibility Cloak were necessary.

When the Fiend Tomb dungeon could be launched again, Zhou Wen eagerly charged in. This time, Zhou Wen strictly adhered to the procedure.

Tyrant Behemoth dug out the grave to lure out the Ghoul Mask. Zhou Wen went invisible and approached the grave to kill the ghost face. Then, he dug out the Ghost Hornless and used Truth Listener to kill it.

The entire process went perfectly without any problems.

Then, Zhou Wen waited for a period of time. After confirming that the Fiend Stone no longer grew in copious amounts and the ghost face no longer appeared, the Companion Beasts no longer suffered Fiend Stone Petrification, nor did they walk towards the Fiend Tomb by themselves, he felt relieved.

It's not easy for me to come here. I can't waste it. I'll try to see if Banana Fairy can restrain the Guardian's flames. Zhou Wen got Tyrant Behemoth to continue digging.

Soon, Tyrant Behemoth dug out Ba again. Just like the last time, when the veil was lifted, terrifying flames immediately burned around the Fiend Tomb.

However, this time, Banana Fairy was beside the blood-colored avatar. Just as the flames lit up, Banana Fairy parted

her cherry lips and spat out the Grand Yin Wind augmented by the Three Realms' Best Wind.

In an instant, the flames that filled the screen vanished. The speed at which they were extinguished was as though the flames had never appeared.

Even the magma in the Fiend Tomb was wiped out by the Grand Yin Wind and solidified into rocks.

As for the metal bed, it was sent flying by the Three Realms' Best Wind. It tumbled into the distance and quickly became a black dot before disappearing. It was unknown how far it was sent flying, but it had already exceeded the limits of what could be seen in-game.

As expected of the Three Realms' Best Wind. It's too powerful! Zhou Wen was overjoyed. Even the Guardian couldn't withstand a blow from Banana Fairy. It was truly terrifying.

'Warning… Warning… Goddess Ba transforms into her Terror form… Goddess Ba transforms into her Terror form…' Just as Zhou Wen was feeling delighted, a red warning suddenly appeared in-game. It was like a warning siren that constantly flashed, giving people a visual sense of danger.

Terror form… What is it? Zhou Wen was momentarily taken aback. He felt that this Terror form had something to do with the Mythical stage's Terror grade.

He remembered that the silver-haired Companion Beast had said that most Mythical creatures that appeared on Earth were likely at the Terror grade, but it hadn't said anything about the Terror form.

Just as Zhou Wen was puzzled, he saw the scarlet flames burn half the sky red. A red figure that resembled a ghost god tore through the air at an unbelievable speed.

Wherever the red figure went, everything around it turned into flames. Even the air and mountains burned.

As he was extremely far away, Zhou Wen didn't manage to see the figure clearly at first. However, she came too quickly and could be seen in the blink of an eye. It was likely Goddess Ba, but the current Goddess Ba was very different from before.

Now, Goddess Ba's entire body was burning with terrifying flames. These flames weren't burning outside her body, but through her entire body. Every inch of her muscles, every bone, and every tiny cell seemed to be burning with blood-red flames.

It was as if her entire body was condensed from flames. Her hair was like fire threads, and her eyes were like fire pupils. She was like a fire demoness that had walked out of a myth, emitting a terrifying and dangerous aura. Due to her arrival, the entire valley burned. The river instantly dried up, and the ground was red like purgatory.

Zhou Wen could sense that the power in her body was unimaginably terrifying. It was something he had never seen on any creature or Companion Beast.

Tyrant Behemoth roared as it soared into the sky. Its huge fist struck at the levitating Goddess Ba. With the augmentation of Absolute Strength, its strike could shatter mountains.

However, Goddess Ba only looked coldly at Tyrant Behemoth without any intention of attacking. Tyrant Behemoth's

terrifying strike failed to touch her body. It didn’t even break the flames outside the Goddess Ba’s body as invisible flames held back its fist.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 846 - Terror Transformation

Chapter 846: Terror Transformation

The flames on Goddess Ba's body surged as Tyrant Behemoth's huge body immediately transformed into a fireball. Terrifying flames rapidly burned its body. Tyrant Behemoth couldn't withstand the flames even with its physical strength.

The entire valley plunged into a sea of flames. Due to Banana Fairy blowing out the Grand Yin Wind, she was barely able to prevent the blood-colored avatar from being burned by the flames.

However, without the augmentation of the Three Realms' Best Wind, the Grand Yin Wind was clearly no match for the flames. It was being rapidly devoured by the flames.

Seeing that Tyrant Behemoth was about to be burned to death, Zhou Wen hurriedly summoned Torch Dragon Youngling and used Bright Torch Vision World on Goddess Ba. However, in Torch Dragon Youngling's eyes, there was only a sea of fire with no sign of Goddess Ba. Goddess Ba stood there without being sucked into the Vision World.

*Holy sh*t, what's this? Even Bright Torch Vision World is useless? Is it because of the Terror form?* Zhou Wen was alarmed. Without waiting for him to think further, the sea of flames had already devoured the blood-colored avatar and the game screen went black.

What a terrifying Terror form. Is this the true power of a Terror-grade Mythical creature? Zhou Wen felt that Goddess

Ba was the most terrifying creature he had ever seen.

Even the two Guardians of Ant City and the underground sea aren't that terrifying. I wonder if they have a Terror form. Zhou Wen guessed that they didn't have one. At the very least, he had never seen them before.

If there is anyone else with a Terror form, it's probably the one inside the Forbidden City's log. She might have a Terror form.

The chances of new Guardians who hadn't come out of the cocoons having a Terror form were relatively low.

How did this Terror form come about? Can Companion Beasts have such a form? Zhou Wen thought about it but couldn't figure it out.

He suddenly thought of The Thearch and thought to himself, *Could The Thearch also have a Terror form?*

After some thought, Zhou Wen sent a message to The Thearch: "The Thearch, can I ask you a question? Are you a Terror-grade expert?"

He originally didn't expect a reply, but The Thearch surprisingly replied shortly after. "Not bad. You even know about the Terror-grade. What else do you know?"

"I also know the existence of the Terror form. You should be an existence at that level, right?" Zhou Wen said after some hesitation.

"A Terror form is nothing. To you humans, the Terror grade means invincibility, but in front of me, the Terror grade is trash," The Thearch said in contempt. "You must have

encountered a fellow with a Terror form. Otherwise, you wouldn’t have asked me.”

“You are wise.” Zhou Wen flattered her, hoping that she would say more.

The Thearch didn’t disappoint and sent another message. “In theory, Mythical creatures with a Terror form are considered true Mythical creatures. However, the Terror form isn’t something all Mythical creatures can possess. It depends on their bloodline talent and comprehension abilities. Typical Guardians can have a Terror form as long as they continue fighting and evolving. However, for dimensional creatures, only the top ones can have a Terror form.”

“What exactly is a Terror form?” Zhou Wen asked.

The Thearch replied, “What do you think the difference between the Mythical stage and the typical Epic and Legendary stages is?”

“Basic stats and Wheel of Destiny,” Zhou Wen said.

“The Wheel of Destiny can indeed allow Mythical creatures to possess a powerful ability, but no matter how powerful it is, it’s only an ability. This isn’t a qualitative difference. From the perspective of dimensional creatures, being able to undergo a Terror transformation is the most important indicator of the differentiation between the levels of creatures. There’s no distinction between Legendary and Epic in dimensional zones because such creatures are too weak. They don’t have the qualifications to be categorized. There are only two ways to be truly categorized. A dimensional creature that can undergo Terror transformation and a dimensional creature that can’t. This is the first level of categorization for dimensional creatures.”

“I still don’t understand what kind of power the Terror form is.” Zhou Wen still didn’t understand.

The Thearch added, “Of course you don’t understand. That’s because that’s the true Mythical realm. If you haven’t reached that realm, you naturally won’t understand. To put it simply, the so-called God is an indescribable thing. It’s an unknown thing that makes humans feel terrified. If humans can defeat creatures with their strength, they won’t be called gods. The Terror form is an indescribable state. After the Terror transformation, no matter how strong a mortal is, it’s impossible for them to injure the body that has undergone Terror transformation. Only a Terror form can defeat a Terror form.”

“Then how can Terror transformation be achieved?” Zhou Wen asked.

“It’s impossible for you humans to undergo Terror transformation. Only by signing a contract with a Guardian and using the Guardian’s power to advance to the Mythical stage will you have the qualifications to undergo a Terror transformation,” The Thearch said.

“Why can’t humans advance to the Mythical stage?” Zhou Wen couldn’t understand why only humans couldn’t advance to the Mythical stage.

“Let me give you an analogy. Don’t you humans have something called comics? The characters in those comics are called two-dimensional creatures by you. As for you humans, you are three-dimensional creatures. No matter how powerful the characters in the comics are, do you think they can become three-dimensional creatures like humans? Of course, this is just an example. It’s not completely accurate, but the actual situation isn’t much different. Therefore, no

matter how powerful the characters in the comics are, they can't injure three-dimensional creatures. As for three-dimensional creatures, they can easily destroy two-dimensional creatures. This is why only the Terror grade can defeat the Terror grade. After the Terror transformation, they are no longer existences on the same level. There's no comparison," The Thearch explained.

Is humanity really hopeless? Zhou Wen couldn't believe that humans couldn't advance to the Mythical stage. At the very least, Xia Jiuhuang had succeeded, although his methods were very cruel.

The Thearch replied, "Of course there's hope. Contracting a Guardian or becoming one with a Guardian like Wang Mingyuan. Only these two paths are possible."

"I've seen a human before. He relied on himself to advance to the Mythical stage," Zhou Wen said.

The Thearch's reply was filled with contempt. "You're talking about the one in Forbidden City, right? Do you think that he could have advanced to the Mythical stage by his strength alone if it wasn't for the help of Providence Starlady?"

Zhou Wen was slightly taken aback. Back then, Xia Jiuhuang had indeed used the power in the log to condense the final Life Providence and Life Soul. With the help of the purple lightning, he had advanced to the Mythical stage.

"There are only these two paths for humans. Have you considered which one you want to take? If you want to contract a Guardian, I can help you. I can help you contract an extremely powerful Guardian. It's definitely not inferior to Providence Starlady," The Thearch said.

“I still want to see if I can advance to the Mythical stage with my own strength,” Zhou Wen said.

“Then take your time. It won’t be too late to find me when you reach a dead end.” The Thearch wasn’t angry this time. She seemed to be certain that Zhou Wen couldn’t advance to the Mythical stage with his own strength.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 847 - Gathering at Fiend Tomb

Chapter 847: Gathering at Fiend Tomb

Translator: CKtalon

After waiting for twenty-four hours, Zhou Wen entered the Fiend Tomb dungeon again. This time, he naturally didn't dare provoke the Goddess Ba. All he did was eliminate the Ghoul Mask and Ghost Hornless. Then, he didn't take further action. He maintained this state and observed if there were any other abnormalities around the Fiend Tomb.

There were no more problems with the Fiend Tomb even when Zhang Yuzhi invited him to participate in the so-called auction. As long as he didn't continue digging, Goddess Ba wouldn't wake up.

The auction was originally planned to be held in Dragon Tiger Town, but it had been changed to a temporary encampment near the Fiend Tomb.

Those who were invited were basically the best in the Federation. The members of the six families were all present, so the Cape family naturally didn't look happy when they saw Zhou Wen.

The other families didn't have much of a relationship with Zhou Wen. Instead, people from the North District's Ultimate Family Clan took the initiative to greet him.

"Lance often mentions you and wishes to have a serious battle with you. If you have the time in the future, why don't you pay a visit to the North District?" the elder from the Ultimate Family Clan said to Zhou Wen with a smile.

“I’ll definitely go if I have the chance in the future.” Zhou Wen had long had thought about the dimensional zones in the North District, but they were too far away, so he hadn’t gone.

However, now that Fine Dust needed him to take untaken paths to advance, he couldn’t avoid heading out more often in the future. It was a good opportunity to make a trip to the North District.

After chatting for a while, the person in charge of the Zhang family came over and began speaking.

It was similar to what Zhang Chunqiu had said. It roughly meant that the Zhang family wouldn’t charge any form of money for the Earth Elemental Beast Companion Egg. As long as they could help the Zhang family resolve the problem of the Fiend Tomb, they could take away the Earth Elemental Beast Companion Egg.

In fact, most people already knew the news in advance, so they weren’t surprised. After all, such a huge matter had happened to the Zhang family. It was impossible to keep it under wraps.

“Brother Zhang, we roughly know about the situation in the Fiend Tomb. However, there are some things that we can’t produce a solution for unless we see them with our own eyes,” the Dugu family’s representative, Dugu Wenxin, said.

“In a while, I’ll take all of you to the Fiend Tomb to view it. However, there’s something I want to make clear to everyone. The Fiend Tomb is extremely strange. Anyone who goes there might be struck by some unknown power. Who knows when they might unknowingly walk towards the Fiend Tomb and become a lifeless Fiend Stone Statue. Therefore, the people who go will face certain danger. We leave it up to

you to decide. If something happens because of this, the Zhang family will not be held responsible," the person in charge of the Zhang family said.

"Of course," said Moses.

Most people expressed their willingness to take the risk. Only a small number of people stayed back.

The Zhang family produced a contract and got all who were willing to take the risk to sign it. Only then did they take the people who had signed the contract to the Fiend Tomb.

Zhou Wen was one of them. He was determined to obtain the Earth Elemental Beast Companion Egg, so he naturally couldn't let go of this opportunity.

"You've already been there. It's not like you don't know the dangers there. Why are you still going?" When the others set off for the Fiend Tomb, Zhou Wen was stopped by Zhang Yuzhi.

"I've thought of a way. Perhaps it can eliminate the influence of the Fiend Tomb, so I want to give it a try," Zhou Wen said.

"What method is it?" Zhang Yuzhi asked doubtfully.

Zhou Wen didn't hide it. "I want to dig open the Fiend Tomb and eliminate the dimensional creatures inside. That way, I can naturally eliminate the negative effects."

Zhang Yuzhi immediately shook her head and said, "You can't do that. My ancestral Celestial Master said that if we release the creatures in the Fiend Tomb, it will definitely cause a calamity for the Zhang family. Our Zhang family has suppressed the Fiend Tomb for so many years, precisely

because we do not want that to happen. How can we dig open the Fiend Tomb for our own selfish reasons?”

“According to my observations, there shouldn’t be only one terrifying creature in the Fiend Tomb. The one that’s affecting your Zhang family shouldn’t be the Ba that the ancestral Celestial Master mentioned. As long as we don’t alarm the Ba, we can dig shallowly into the Fiend Tomb and kill the dimensional creatures that are affecting your Zhang family,” Zhou Wen explained.

Zhang Yuzhi shook her head with a bitter smile. “Who knows what will happen if we touch the Fiend Tomb? Perhaps the terrifying creatures inside will escape. The consequences would be unimaginable. I’m afraid my family’s elders won’t agree to that.”

Zhou Wen fell silent. He was already having so much difficulty convincing Zhang Yuzhi, so it would probably be even more difficult to convince the elders of the Zhang family. He couldn’t reveal the fact that he knew about the Fiend Tomb’s situation, so it would be troublesome to convince them.

Now, Zhou Wen could only take one step at a time. He was unwilling to give up the Earth Elemental Beast Companion Egg no matter what.

After witnessing the horror of the Terror transformation, if one encountered such a terrifying existence before they had the strength to fight it, the only option was to run.

As for the Earth Elemental Beast, it was undoubtedly the best weapon for escaping. It was highly likely that he would have to rely on it.

Of course, it was best if he didn’t encounter a creature that was capable of Terror transformation. However, if he did, he needed a way to survive.

In the future, more and more Guardians would appear. There would definitely be more Guardians with the ability of Terror transformation. Even more terrifying dimensional creatures might appear as well.

If it was really as the silver-haired Companion Beast said, the combination of a human and a Guardian might produce a Calamity-grade powerhouse, it would be even more terrifying.

To be so terrifying at the Terror grade, Zhou Wen couldn’t imagine what kind of power a Calamity had.

As Zhang Yuzhi wasn’t allowed to go to the Fiend Tomb, Zhou Wen had no choice but to chase after the group alone and follow the others.

Zhang Chunqiu had been guarding the Fiend Tomb recently. When Zhou Wen and company arrived, Zhang Chunqiu welcomed them and took them to the stone platform.

This stone platform had a huge backstory. It had been built by the ancestral Celestial Master. Up to today, it hadn’t been petrified by the Fiend Stones. The ground and mountain walls beneath the stone platform had long been petrified by the Fiend Stones. Only these eight stone platforms were safe.

Most of the people who had come were from the other five families. Some of them were from famous local wealthy families and famous freelance hunters.

Zhou Wen looked at them for a while, but he didn’t find Liu Yun.

Liu Yun probably won’t give up easily. If he’s not here, does he plan on stealing the Earth Elemental Beast Companion Egg? Zhou Wen was somewhat suspicious.

The others had already begun studying the problem of the Fiend Stones. They had already obtained detailed information from the Zhang family. Now was the time to showcase their abilities.

Some people summoned their Companion Beasts and tried to see if they could avoid being petrified. Others wanted to use some kind of power to cleanse the mountain walls and people.

An elder of the Cape family summoned a crucifix. After praying, the crucifix emitted a holy light and shone it at the Zhang family members who had turned into Fiend Stone statues. However, it was useless. The Fiend Stones weren’t purified.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 848 - Fighting for an Opportunity

Chapter 848: Fighting for an Opportunity

Translator: CKtalon

It had to be said that the six families and the local wealthy families had rich heritage. Their means and various Companion Beasts broadened Zhou Wen's horizons.

Some of the Companion Beasts and abilities really worked.

An elder from the Cape family summoned a book-shaped Companion Beast. When the book's page flipped open, a shadow appeared on it. It was the blurry shadow of the Ghoul Mask.

There were also some Companion Beasts that could move across the Fiend Stones without being petrified. Everyone was trying their best to find a solution to the problem.

These fellows sure are capable. Don't tell me they can really resolve the problem with the Fiend Tomb? Zhou Wen immediately felt a sense of danger.

He had worked so hard for the Earth Elemental Beast Companion Egg. It would be terrible if someone else beat him to it.

Zhou Wen thought for a moment and found Zhang Chunqiu. He whispered, "I've thought of a way to resolve the problem of the Fiend Tomb. I just need to dig it up."

Zhang Chunqiu shook his head and said, "You can't dig up the Fiend Tomb. Even if I agree, the elders in my family won't agree, much less the Celestial Master."

“If we don’t dig open the Fiend Tomb, I’m afraid it will be very difficult to resolve the problem. However, you can rest assured. After my investigations, there’s not only a Ba in the Fiend Tomb. There are other dimensional creatures on the periphery. We just need to dig open a portion of the Fiend Tomb and eliminate those dimensional creatures. I’m confident that I won’t disturb Ba,” Zhou Wen said.

Zhang Chunqiu pondered for a moment and said, “It’s useless even if I believe you. This is the teachings of the ancestral Celestial Master. The Zhang family has protected it for generations, and we won’t dare violate it, or the Zhang family will definitely be wiped out. Even for the Zhang family, the elders in the family will never allow anyone to touch the Fiend Tomb.”

“But the Zhang family will also suffer if we don’t touch the Fiend Tomb. At this point in time, we have to take the risk, right?” Zhou Wen still wanted to move Zhang Chunqiu.

Zhang Chunqiu stared at Zhou Wen and asked, “Are you really confident? You have to be absolutely certain. If any accident happens, our Zhang family will be doomed.”

Zhou Wen knew that Zhang Chunqiu hoped that he could produce some powerful evidence, but how could Zhou Wen produce any? He couldn’t just switch on his phone and farm the Fiend Tomb for them to see.

Zhou Wen thought for a moment and said, “To be honest, I have a special ability to see through things. I can see the situation in the Fiend Tomb clearly, so I’m very confident about this matter.”

“You can see through the Fiend Tomb?” Zhang Chunqiu looked at Zhou Wen in surprise.

In fact, the Zhang family also had Companion Beasts with penetrative vision. Furthermore, it wasn't just one. However, none of the Companion Beasts' penetrative vision worked on the Fiend Tomb. They were unable to see its interior.

This didn't mean that the Companion Beasts' penetrative vision wasn't strong, but that the sleeping Goddess Ba was too powerful. It wasn't easy to see through the Fiend Tomb.

Even some Companion Beasts with the ability to predict the future could only roughly predict the Ghoul Mask at the top. Furthermore, the scenes they predicted were blurry, just like the one produced by the Cape family's elder.

"There are a total of three levels in the Fiend Tomb. The first level is the mask. I reckon that the ghost face and the power of the Fiend Stone Petrification are produced because of that ghost face. The second level is a strange creature. It looks like a snake and dragon, but it's neither. The reason behind the Zhang family members involuntarily walking towards the Fiend Tomb is probably due to its enticement. The third level is the Ba that your Zhang family is suppressing and protecting, but we don't have to alarm her. All we need to do is dig up the Fiend Tomb and eliminate the two dimensional creatures. Then, we can resolve your family's problem." Zhou Wen explained the general situation.

He wasn't afraid that the Zhang family would go back on their word. Even if he told them what was down there, it wouldn't be easy to kill the Ghoul Mask and Ghost Hornless. Many people might even die.

Even Zhou Wen needed to use Tyrant Behemoth, Truth Listener, and the Invisibility Cloak to kill them.

Seeing how detailed Zhou Wen was, Zhang Chunqiu couldn't help but believe him. After some thought, he said,

“That may be the case, but no one can guarantee that opening the Fiend Tomb won’t alarm the Ba at the bottom. Furthermore, we know nothing about the two dimensional creatures above. It won’t be easy to kill them.”

After a pause, Zhang Chunqiu continued, “To be honest, our Zhang family can also deduce that there are dimensional creatures in the Fiend Tomb. However, due to the orders of the ancestral Celestial Master, no one dares to touch the Fiend Tomb. Therefore, this matter will probably be very difficult to facilitate. How about this? Give me some time and let me give it a try. I’ll think of a way to convince my elders.”

“Alright.” Zhou Wen could only wait for Zhang Chunqiu’s news.

The Zhang family’s current Celestial Master was Zhang Chunqiu’s second uncle, Zhang Siyou. At this moment, Zhang Siyou was talking to the Cape family and the Family Clan of Gods.

“Chunqiu, you came at the right time. Old Mister Charlie and Moses have found a way to eliminate the influence of the Fiend Tomb. Come and listen too.” Zhang Siyou beckoned Zhang Chunqiu over.

Zhang Chunqiu bowed slightly and stood behind Zhang Siyou.

Although he wanted to talk about Zhou Wen, it wasn’t convenient for him to say it in front of so many people. All he could do was wait patiently.

“Celestial Master, as I said just now, all the strange things in the Fiend Tomb are a result of that mask. To remove the mask without digging open the Fiend Tomb, only our Cape

family’s Great Divination Theurgy can do it…” Charlie Sr. said slowly.

Zhang Siyou listened quietly without commenting. After Old Charlie finished speaking, he looked at Moses and the other members of the Family Clan of Gods.

Moses said, “I can’t agree with Old Mister Charlie. There’s indeed a mask in the Fiend Tomb, but the Great Divination Theurgy might not be useful. If you are willing to let me do it, I definitely won’t disappoint you.”

“Then I want to hear what abilities you have that are better than our Cape family’s Great Divination,” Charlie said coldly.

Moses didn’t say anything. He summoned a terrifying giant.

Unlike the typical barbaric and primitive giant, this giant was wearing glorious armor. He was like a giant god that protected the world. He had an incomparable aura as though he could crush the earth with a single step and shatter the stars with a single punch.

“This is my Guardian, the Giant God Sovereign. With his strength, it won’t be difficult for him to kill the mask in the Fiend Tomb,” said Moses.

Everyone’s gaze was attracted by the Giant God Sovereign. Although many people already knew of the existence of Guardians, not many had actually seen one.

“No matter how strong a Guardian is, it’s impossible for them to destroy the mask inside the Fiend Tomb, right? You still have to dig open the Fiend Tomb in the end, isn’t that so?” Charlie remained unmoved as he sneered.

Moses said unhurriedly, “That might not be the case. The power that the Giant God Sovereign possesses is unimaginable to ordinary people. Even if we don’t dig open the Fiend Tomb, we can still destroy the mask inside. I can guarantee that I won’t damage the Fiend Tomb. If the Fiend Tomb is damaged in any way, the Celestial Master doesn’t have to pay me with the Earth Elemental Beast Companion Egg.”

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 849 - My Method

Chapter 849: My Method

Translator: CKtalon

Although Moses and the rest were not on the stone platform, Giant God Sovereign was so huge that the people on the stone platforms also saw the terrifying body of Giant God Sovereign.

When Zhou Wen saw Giant God Sovereign, his eyes lit up. He could already smell the aura of the Guardian. Without a doubt, it was another Guardian.

Zhou Wen was still no match for the super powerful Guardians, but not every Guardian was that strong. Perhaps this Giant God Sovereign was about the same strength as the six-winged seraphim?

Zhou Wen wanted to take another look, but Moses had already unsummoned the Guardian.

Zhou Wen thought for a moment and suddenly frowned. *Don't tell me that fellow wants to use the Guardian's power to touch the Fiend Tomb? Isn't that courting death?*

When Guardians descended on Earth, they represented different dimensional races in battle. They were enemies against each other. Now, they were using one Guardian to blast the place where another Guardian was sleeping. It was obvious what would happen next.

Without a doubt, Goddess Ba sleeping in the Fiend Tomb would most likely go berserk. When that happened, the

Zhang family wouldn’t be the only ones to suffer. Everyone would die.

Zhou Wen didn’t wish to die, nor did he wish for Zhang Yuzhi’s family to be destroyed. Therefore, he was already considering how he could stop the Zhang family if they really agreed to let the Guardian attack the Fiend Tomb.

Zhang Siyou was still considering Charlie’s and Moses’s suggestions. Two different solutions seemed to be worth a try, but at the same time, it was difficult to say which method would really work.

Both arguments had their merits. They hoped that the Zhang family could use their plans.

“Chunqiu, what do you think?” Zhang Siyou looked at Zhang Chunqiu and asked.

When Zhang Chunqiu was young, he had already helped his family to guard the Fiend Tomb. Furthermore, Zhang Siyou had the intention of grooming him into the Zhang family’s next Celestial Master. By asking Zhang Chunqiu now, not only did he want to know his opinion, but he also wanted to test him.

Zhang Chunqiu thought for a moment and bowed to Zhang Siyou. “Celestial Master, if possible, I wish to hear more plans before making a decision.”

“Unfortunately, other than our two families, no one has discovered the mask in the Fiend Tomb, much less come up with a solution to getting rid of it without damaging the Fiend Tomb,” said Moses.

Zhang Siyou looked at Zhang Chunqiu thoughtfully and asked, “Are there any other plans?”

Zhang Chunqiu hurriedly said, “Zhou Wen, who represents Luoyang’s An family, also has a plan that can resolve the problem of the Fiend Tomb. Why don’t you listen to it first?”

“Is that Yuzhi’s friend?” Zhang Siyou clearly knew who Zhou Wen was.

“Yes, Yuzhi has a good relationship with Zhou Wen. She even saved Zhou Wen before. He has no ill intentions towards the Zhang family,” Zhang Chunqiu said.

“Then invite him over to get him to tell me his plan,” Zhang Siyou said after some thought.

Zhang Chunqiu hurriedly agreed and went to look for Zhou Wen. Just as Zhang Chunqiu left, Charlie said, “Celestial Master, that Zhou Wen is just a kid with some luck. Don’t tell me you really believe him and are leaving such an important matter to him? This concerns the fate of the Zhang family. Please be careful!”

“There’s no harm in listening to more opinions. In the end, we’ll use the proposal that’s better,” Zhang Siyou said calmly.

Seeing that Zhang Siyou had made his decision, Charlie and Moses didn’t say anything else.

When Zhang Chunqiu saw Zhou Wen, he explained the situation in detail. He still believed Zhou Wen. After all, not only did Zhou Wen see the mask, but he also knew that there was a monster beneath it, as well as Ba further down.

As for Charlie and Moses, they had only discovered the topmost mask.

If he really wanted to give it a try, Zhang Chunqiu was more willing to believe Zhou Wen.

“They only discovered the mask. Ignoring the question of whether they can remove the mask, even if they can, the monster below is still there. It’s useless to remove the mask.” Zhou Wen paused for a moment and said to Zhang Chunqiu with a heavy expression, “Furthermore, I suspect that the Ba down there is actually a Guardian. We don’t know what the relationship between the Guardians is. If they are enemies, it will probably cause huge trouble if Moses uses a Guardian to attack the Fiend Tomb.”

Zhang Chunqiu frowned when he heard that. He asked, “Are you sure Ba is a Guardian?”

“I can’t be sure. After all, I can only see a portion of it through my penetrative vision. However, Ba does look like a Guardian,” Zhou Wen said.

“If there’s really such a possibility, we can’t let Moses try regardless. We can’t take such a risk.” Zhang Chunqiu had already made up his mind. He brought Zhou Wen along and said, “Follow me to the Celestial Master. Try your best to fight for an opportunity. I’ll help you from the side.”

“Alright,” Zhou Wen agreed and followed Zhang Chunqiu to Zhang Siyou’s side.

“Greetings, Celestial Master. I’m Zhou Wen.” Zhou Wen bowed at Zhang Siyou.

In the past, the Zhang family’s Hero King was the leader of the six heroes. Now, every Zhang family’s Celestial Master had a very special status in the Federation. Even the Senators of the six families were respectful in front of the Celestial Master, not daring to slight him.

“Since you are Yuzhi’s friend, there’s no need to stand on ceremony with me. I often hear Yuzhi mention you. I can tell that you are indeed a young hero.” Zhang Siyou sized up Zhou Wen and continued, “I heard that you also have a way to eliminate the influence of the Fiend Tomb. Can you elaborate?”

“My method is actually very simple. It’s to dig open the Fiend Tomb and kill the dimensional creatures inside. Only then can I completely resolve the problem of the Fiend Tomb,” Zhou Wen said.

When he said that, not only did many members of the Zhang family frown, but Charlie even said disdainfully, “If we could dig up the Fiend Tomb, why would the Zhang family invite you over with their means and abilities?”

Zhang Siyou didn’t directly object to Zhou Wen’s suggestion. All he did was look at him and say, “Why don’t you tell me why you insist on digging up the Fiend Tomb?”

Zhou Wen said calmly, “I have a penetrative skill. I can roughly tell that the Fiend Tomb is split into three levels. The first level has a mask, the second level is a monster, and the third level is the creature that your family has been guarding. If I want to completely resolve the problem of the Fiend Tomb, I have to eliminate the mask on the first level and the monster on the second level. If I don’t dig up the Fiend Tomb, I really don’t have the ability to eliminate both.”

“What a joke. The Zhang family has the power of the Heavenly Eye. Even the Zhang family can’t see through the Fiend Tomb, but you can see it clearly. You even know that it’s split into three levels. Could it be that your ability to see through things is even more powerful than the Zhang family’s Heavenly Eye? I’m afraid you heard what we said

and know that there’s a mask in the Fiend Tomb. You are using this information to be an alarmist, hoping to benefit from it, right?” Charlie said with a sneer.

“The Celestial Master will be able to determine the veracity of my information.” Zhou Wen didn’t argue with Charlie. He turned to Zhang Siyou and said, “Celestial Master, if you want me to do it, I have to dig open the Fiend Tomb. There’s no other way.”

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 850 - Killing the Ghoul Mask

Chapter 850: Killing the Ghoul Mask

“Celestial Master, I don’t think there’s a need to waste time, right? It’s naturally impossible to dig up the Fiend Tomb. It looks like you can only choose between me and Old Mister Charlie,” said Moses.

After hearing Moses say that, Zhou Wen suddenly said, “Celestial Master, if I were you, I definitely wouldn’t choose to use the power of a Guardian.”

“Zhou Wen, what are you trying to imply?” Moses and the members of the Family Clan of Gods glared at Zhou Wen.

“Why?” Zhang Siyou looked at Zhou Wen with interest.

“It’s not convenient for me to explain the exact reason in public. I’ve already told Zhang Chunqiu. It’s best if he explains it to you in private,” Zhou Wen said as he deliberately glanced at Moses.

Originally, he had thought of a better solution, but he chose the easiest method to anger Moses and the Family Clan of Gods. This was because he needed an excuse to kill Giant God Sovereign.

Now, Moses and the members of the Family Clan of Gods looked at Zhou Wen with extremely unfriendly gazes.

Zhang Chunqiu used a secret message to convey the reason Zhou Wen had mentioned to Zhang Siyou. After hearing it,

Zhang Siyou looked at Zhou Wen and asked, “Are you sure about the matter regarding Giant God Sovereign?”

“I can’t be sure, but if it were me, I wouldn’t take such a risk,” Zhou Wen said.

“Celestial Master, please don’t listen to his nonsense. I know my Guardian best. There definitely won’t be a problem,” Moses explained. Although he didn’t know what Zhou Wen had said to the Zhang family, he knew that there was nothing good about it.

“Please calm down. We need some time to discuss. Please wait for a moment.” After Zhang Siyou finished speaking, he got someone to lead the three parties away, leaving only the members of the Zhang family behind to begin a discussion.

…

“Zhou Wen, do you dare accept my challenge?” Moses asked Zhou Wen coldly.

“You are just relying on a Guardian. It’s nothing impressive. Why wouldn’t I dare?” Zhou Wen replied arrogantly.

“Very well. After this matter is over, I will definitely fight you. You won’t escape then,” Moses said with a sullen expression.

“I’m afraid you will be the one to escape when the time comes.” Zhou Wen remained as arrogant as ever.

Moses didn’t say anything else. After all, this was an important area in the Zhang family. It was impossible for him to fight Zhou Wen here. It was useless to say anything now. All he could do was wait until he left.

…

The Zhang family was in an intense discussion. Naturally, Zhang Chunqiu strongly recommended Zhou Wen, but due to the teachings of the ancestral Celestial Master, many elders of the Zhang family didn’t agree to digging up the tomb.

Zhang Chunqiu’s uncle was especially against it.

“If we really want to dig up the tomb, our Zhang family has countless experts. Why would we need to rely on outsiders?” This was what most of the Zhang family members thought.

The reason they were willing to hire someone’s help with the Earth Elemental Beast as compensation was because they hoped to resolve the problem without touching the Fiend Tomb.

“Uncles, Zhou Wen can see through the Fiend Tomb. Only he knows where the Fiend Tomb can be dug and where it can’t be dug. Uncles, you should know the dangers of the Fiend Tomb better than me. We can’t take such risks,” Zhang Chunqiu said.

“There are also risk-free solutions. Charlie and Moses do not need to dig open Fiend Tomb, so there’s no risk at all. Even if it’s really as Zhou Wen said and there’s a Guardian down there, making it inconvenient to use a Guardian to blast open Fiend Tomb, we can still choose Charlie. Furthermore, saying that Ba is a Guardian isn’t believable at all. When he first came, he couldn’t see any problems. Now that he’s here, he has figured everything out. It’s a little unbelievable,” Uncle Zhang said.

“Uncle…” Zhang Chunqiu wanted to say something, but he was interrupted by Uncle Zhang.

“There’s no need to say anything else. The ancestral teachings are unbreakable. Ancestral Celestial Master has already made it clear that if the Fiend Tomb is touched, our Zhang family will definitely perish. No matter what, I don’t agree to digging up the tomb.”

Zhang Chunqiu was helpless. No matter what he said, he couldn’t move the elders of the Zhang family.

After waiting for a while, the Zhang family finally finished their discussion. Zhang Siyou led the Zhang family out and said to the three of them, “After our discussion, we have decided to get Mr. Charlie to help us solve the problem of the Fiend Tomb. If Mr. Charlie can’t solve the problem of the Fiend Tomb, we will trouble the other two to help us.”

“Celestial Master, that’s a wise choice.” Charlie smiled like a gentleman, but he couldn’t hide the smugness in his eyes.

Moses and company glared at Zhou Wen, clearly believing that he had hindered them. Otherwise, they would have been the ones to obtain this opportunity.

“Sorry, I’ve tried my best,” Zhang Chunqiu walked to Zhou Wen’s side and said apologetically.

“It’s fine. The Cape family might not be able to succeed. There might still be a chance.” Zhou Wen felt that since Charlie couldn’t even see the Ghost Hornless below, the chances of him resolving the problem with Fiend Tomb were slim.

Furthermore, if he wasn’t careful, he might even lose his life there. After all, the Ghoul Mask and the Ghost Hornless’s abilities were too strange. Even Zhou Wen would be killed if he wasn’t careful. It probably wouldn’t be easy for Old Mister Charlie to return alive.

As the two of them spoke, Uncle Zhang walked past them and glanced at Zhou Wen. Then, he said to Zhang Chunqiu, “Don’t mention digging up the tomb again. As long as my old bones are still around, I won’t let anyone harm our Zhang family.”

“Uncle…” Zhang Chunqiu wanted to say something, but Uncle Zhang had already waved his hand and gone.

“Don’t worry about it. My uncle was only afraid that something would happen to the Zhang family because of the ancestral Celestial Master’s orders. He doesn’t have any intention of targeting you,” Zhang Chunqiu said helplessly to Zhou Wen.

“That’s nothing. However, I think your uncle seems to have some misunderstanding about me. I’m afraid that if Charlie doesn’t succeed, they will be willing to give Moses a chance and not me,” Zhou Wen said.

“I definitely won’t let that happen,” Zhang Chunqiu said with a firm expression.

However, Zhou Wen couldn’t figure out when he had offended the old man to make him look down on him.

Zhang Chunqiu thought for a moment and said, “Didn’t you happen to bump into my uncle the last time you were here? I think this might have something to do with you saying that you didn’t discover anything.”

Zhou Wen was enlightened. The elder originally imagined that he was here to mess around and didn’t have any true abilities.

…

On the other side, Charlie had already begun taking action. Zhou Wen and Zhang Chunqiu went to the stone platforms. Zhou Wen also wanted to see what the Great Divination Theurgy was.

Charlie produced a pair of angel wings on his back and flew to the front of the Fiend Tomb. He stopped outside the demarcating line and summoned two Companion Beasts. One was a crucifix, and the other was a book.

As the book opened, light beams shot out from the book's surface, gradually condensing into the shape of a Ghoul Mask. Although it was a little blurry, Zhou Wen could tell that it was undoubtedly the Ghoul Mask.

This old man is quite capable, Zhou Wen thought.

Without any hesitation, the moment the Ghoul Mask's shadow condensed, the crucifix in his other hand emitted a terrifying holy light. He used the crucifix as a sword and stabbed into the Ghoul Mask's shadow.

The Ghoul Mask's shadow immediately shattered the crucifix, turning into specks of light that dissipated. At the same time, there was a cracking sound from the Fiend Tomb as though something had shattered.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 851 - One Person Is Enough

Chapter 851: One Person Is Enough

Translator: CKtalon

When Zhou Wen saw this scene, he knew that Charlie was doomed.

His book and the crucifix's abilities were indeed powerful, but he didn't know that the mask wasn't the crux of the problem. Destroying the mask alone was useless. Instead, it might put him in danger.

Indeed, after a commotion in the Fiend Tomb, grayish-white dust spewed out.

When Charlie saw the dust, his expression changed slightly. The book and crucifix in his hand glowed again. He wanted to repel the dust, but the dust was like smoke. Repelling the smoke on one side would have the smoke on the other side sweep over and spray on Charlie's face.

Everything happened so quickly that even the Cape family couldn't stop it. By the time they reacted, the dust had already condensed into a mask on Charlie's face.

When the Cape family rushed forward to help Charlie, the crucifix in Charlie's hand had a shocking glow. It stabbed the two Cape family members who wanted to help him.

The two of them were caught off guard. After being injured by Charlie, they fell to the ground and their bodies quickly turned into Fiend Stones. Everyone was shocked.

However, Charlie, who was controlled by the Ghoul Mask, didn't care. He waved the book and crucifix in his hand and

charged at the humans on the stone platform.

Zhang Chunqiu suddenly attacked. His sword slashed like a stream of light, instantly shattering the mask on Charlie's face. However, it didn't injure Charlie's face. The precision of his sword technique was shocking.

However, it was useless. The shattered mask quickly reformed and covered Charlie's face again.

Everyone fought Charlie, but it wasn't good enough to injure him. Even attacking the mask on his face was useless. Instantly, everyone was in disarray.

In the end, Zhang Siyou produced a talisman and stuck it to the Ghoul Mask, causing Charlie to stand there motionless. However, the mask could not be removed from his face.

The Cape family thought of many ways, but they were unable to remove the mask. They could only seek help from Zhang Siyou.

Zhang Siyou said, "My Mythical Ghost Suppression Talisman can only suppress it, but it can't completely be eliminated. Furthermore, this mask is very strange. It's useless to shatter it. I'm helpless as well. We must think of other solutions."

This outcome was naturally within Zhou Wen's expectations. The Ghoul Mask wasn't the main point. No matter how strong one was, it was impossible to kill it. They had to dig up the grave and destroy the human-face symbol below.

The Zhang family looked at Moses, hoping that he could remove the mask. However, Moses shook his head and said, "If I had attacked from the beginning and completely destroyed the mask, I might have had a chance. Now, the mask is already on Charlie's face. My Guardian is too

powerful. Even if I can destroy the mask with one strike, Charlie won't be spared."

The Zhang family and the Cape family were in a dilemma. No one could solve the problem of the Fiend Tomb without harming Charlie.

When Zhang Chunqiu saw Zhou Wen standing by the side and watching all of this happen, his expression remained abnormally calm. With a thought, he asked Zhou Wen, "Zhou Wen, do you have a way to remove the mask without harming Charlie?"

As everyone fell silent, they looked at the two of them when they heard Zhang Chunqiu's question.

Zhou Wen answered, "Sure, but I'll say it again. I'm not as capable as Charlie and company. If you want me to resolve the problem, you have to dig open the Fiend Tomb."

"Why are you still spouting nonsense at a time like this? The mask has already been lured out. Why are you still digging up the Fiend Tomb?" Uncle Zhang said.

As a conservative of the Zhang family, the last thing he wanted was to dig up the Fiend Tomb.

Zhou Wen was helpless as well. This was the result of unequal information. It was common sense from his point of view, but to the Zhang family, it was a mysterious and unfathomable unknown force. They were too afraid of the Fiend Tomb and were afraid that the Zhang family would be wiped out if the Fiend Tomb was dug up. Therefore, they were extremely against it.

"Uncle, Zhou Wen isn't someone who speaks without reason. He must have his reasons for saying that." Zhang Chunqiu

and Dugu Ge had seen Zhou Wen's strength from outside Forbidden City and knew that he was extraordinary.

Furthermore, back then, everyone believed that Zhou Wen and Old Master Xia had been trapped in Forbidden City. No one had seen him come out, but to their surprise, he had returned to Luoyang unscathed while Old Master Xia had vanished without a trace. Zhang Chunqiu knew that he himself couldn't do such a thing.

"The truth is right in front of us. What reason do we need?" Uncle Zhang said coldly.

"Celestial Master, the Fiend Tomb's influence on our Zhang family is getting more and more serious. If we can't resolve it completely, I'm afraid our Zhang family will die in a few years, even if there are no disasters or calamities. Now that things have come to this, rather than being sitting ducks, why don't we let Zhou Wen give it a try? I believe he can resolve the problem without alarming Ba. Celestial Master, please give him a chance and also give our Zhang family descendants a chance," Zhang Chunqiu said as he bowed in front of Zhang Siyou.

"Chunqiu, what are you doing? Getting rid of that mask doesn't require digging up the Fiend Tomb. We are only helpless because we are worried about Charlie's life…" Uncle Zhang was immediately enraged.

"Now that things have come to this, I don't think I can hold back anymore. Celestial Master, if you are willing to let my Guardian take action, I guarantee that I can destroy the mask. However, I can't guarantee Charlie's life," Moses said.

"Moses… How dare you…" The Cape family members glared at him.

“Enough.” After Zhang Siyou spoke, everyone quietened down and looked at him. It was still Zhang Siyou who called the shots here.

“Zhou Wen, how confident are you?” Zhang Siyou looked at Zhang Chunqiu who was kneeling in front of him before asking Zhou Wen.

“I was only 70% confident previously, but now that I’ve seen the mask’s ability, I’m 90% confident,” Zhou Wen said.

“Do you need anything?” Zhang Siyou asked again.

“No, one person is enough,” Zhou Wen answered.

“Alright, then do it. If you succeed, the Earth Elemental Beast Companion Egg will be yours,” Zhang Siyou said with a nod.

“Celestial Master, we can’t dig up the Fiend Tomb…” Uncle Zhang said anxiously.

“Brother, I’ve already made my decision. There’s no need to speak further,” Zhang Siyou said calmly.

Uncle Zhang stomped his feet in anger. “Have you forgotten the teachings of the ancestral Celestial Master? Digging open the Fiend Tomb is a calamity for our Zhang family!”

“Zhou Wen, what are you waiting for?” Zhang Chunqiu pretended not to hear his uncle’s indignant words as he stood up and nudged Zhou Wen.

Zhou Wen no longer had any qualms as he summoned Tyrant Behemoth. With a boom, Tyrant Behemoth’s majestic body landed in front of the Fiend Tomb.

“Tyrant Behemoth… That’s actually Zhou Wen’s Companion Beast…” Apart from the Zhang family, the other families were alarmed.

After all, it was a powerful existence ranked fourth on the previous rankings. In fact, although Tyrant Behemoth was ranked fourth, it had never lost.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 852 - Expelling Evil

Chapter 852: Expelling Evil

Under Zhou Wen’s orders, Tyrant Behemoth activated Absolute Strength and slammed into the Fiend Tomb, digging it open.

“The Zhang family… is finished…” Uncle Zhang was shocked, angry, and afraid. His face was pale.

The other members of the Zhang family also wore looks of nervousness. After all, the teachings of the ancestral Celestial Master remained fresh in their minds. It would be a lie to say that they weren’t worried. Even Zhang Chunqiu’s palms were sweating.

However, the Fiend Tomb was slowly dug open by Tyrant Behemoth. Nothing strange happened.

“I thought that Tyrant Behemoth was a Companion Beast from the West District, but I never expected it to be in Zhou Wen’s hands.” The elder from the Ultimate Family Clan looked at Tyrant Behemoth with envy. Anyone would want to have such a violent battle pet, but there weren’t many violent battle pets of such level and quality in the entire Federation.

Moses had been watching coldly from the sidelines. Although Tyrant Behemoth was powerful, it wasn’t stronger than his Giant God Sovereign. The Giant God Sovereign was also a Strength-type. Furthermore, it had an extremely powerful restraining effect on Companion Beasts of the same type.

If Zhou Wen wanted to rely on Tyrant Behemoth to fight him, Moses would definitely make him suffer.

As everyone had different thoughts, Tyrant Behemoth suddenly stopped digging and retreated a distance.

The Zhang family was puzzled as to why Tyrant Behemoth wasn't digging. However, they suddenly saw Zhou Wen wave his hand as though something had flashed.

There was a cracking sound in the Fiend Tomb. Before they could see what was happening, black blood spewed out like a fountain, splattering everywhere.

At that moment, everyone could clearly see that there was an abstract human face symbol in the dug up Fiend Tomb. There was a sword mark on the human face symbol. It was unknown how it had been slashed, but it was spewing black blood.

Crack!

As the black blood spewed out, a hairline crack appeared on the mask on Charlie's face. More and more cracks appeared. When the black blood spewed out, the mask shattered and turned to dust.

It wasn't just the mask on Charlie's face. Even the fiend faces on the Fiend Stones shattered. The people who had been petrified gradually recovered.

Unfortunately, they were already dead. Even with the Fiend Stone Petrification dispelled, it was impossible for them to be revived.

When the Zhang family saw this, they were overjoyed. Zhang Chunqiu secretly heaved a sigh of relief. He had also

been gambling, but thankfully, he had won.

“Thankfully, I didn’t fail.” Zhou Wen didn’t continue digging because if he continued digging, he would have to use Truth Listener when he reached Ghost Hornless. This was something he didn’t wish to expose.

He could use Light Concealment in place of Invisibility Cloak to kill the Ghoul Mask, but Ghost Hornless needed Truth Listener’s help. The Invisibility Cloak was useless.

“My young friend, you saved our Zhang family from danger. I don’t know how to thank you. Come with me to retrieve the Earth Elemental Beast Companion Egg.” After Zhang Siyou said that, he said to Zhang Chunqiu, “Invite everyone back to have a rest. Don’t be negligent.”

“Yes,” Zhang Chunqiu answered.

Zhang Siyou took Zhou Wen back to Celestial Master Manor. When they arrived, he waited for him to take his seat before saying, “My young friend, you still have something to say, right?”

Zhou Wen was slightly taken aback. He never expected Zhang Siyou to see that he had something to say. Without any hesitation, he said, “I’ve already said before that apart from Ba, there are two dimensional creatures in the Fiend Tomb. Now, only one has been eliminated. There’s still one below. If we don’t eliminate it, I’m afraid the Zhang family’s problem won’t be completely resolved.”

“Young friend, you didn’t attack immediately. You must have some scruples?” Zhang Siyou said.

“It’s not difficult to eliminate that dimensional creature, but I need some special Companion Beasts. I don’t want too many

people to see my Companion Beasts, so I hope that you can permit me to head to the Fiend Tomb alone. If you are worried, you can watch from the side. I just hope that there won't be a third person present," Zhou Wen said.

"It's not a problem, and there's no need for me to be present. I'll get Chunqiu to accompany you later. Other than you and Chunqiu, no one else will know about this matter. Even I won't ask too much." Zhang Siyou paused before continuing, "However, there's something I hope you can help the Zhang family keep secret."

"Please speak, Celestial Master," Zhou Wen said.

"Since you can see through the Fiend patterns, it's very likely that Ba is a Guardian. I hope no one else knows that Ba is a Guardian," Zhang Siyou said.

Zhou Wen was slightly taken aback. He never expected Zhang Siyou to request this, but he still agreed. "I can guarantee that this matter will never be spread from me."

Zhang Siyou understood Zhou Wen's underlying meaning and nodded. "That's good. If the Zhang family were to spread the news, it would be the Zhang family's life on the line."

After Zhang Siyou called Zhang Chunqiu over, he got him to accompany Zhou Wen to the Fiend Tomb again.

After the two of them left, Uncle Zhang walked over. "Celestial Master, why did you do that? Since we've already decided to dig up the Fiend Tomb, why don't we do it ourselves? Why did you hand our fate over to an outsider?"

Zhang Siyou poured him a cup of tea and slowly said, "Brother, why has our Zhang family been able to prosper for

so many years? It’s not because our Companion Beasts are more powerful than others, nor is it because our Zhang family is powerful enough. It’s because we see further than others, think more than others, and take fewer detours than others.”

“In this era, resources might be important, but the importance of information and knowledge is sometimes even more important than resources. Just like Zhou Wen. He can see through the Fiend Tomb and discover the information inside. If we were to do it ourselves, although we might succeed, we might have to pay a huge price. There’s no need to do so.” Zhang Siyou paused before continuing, “Besides, don’t you think this outcome is better than expected for us to hand the Earth Elemental Beast to someone who isn’t from the six families?”

Uncle Zhang was taken aback before saying, “That’s true. However, Zhou Wen is really impressive. Even Old Master Xia was defeated by him. Now that he has the Earth Elemental Beast, I’m afraid…”

“Now that the Guardians have all appeared, it’s hard to predict what will happen in the future. However, do you still remember the last part of the ancestral Celestial Master’s last words?” Zhang Siyou said with a strange expression.

“You mean that we might have a chance…” Uncle Zhang didn’t dare continue as though there was some taboo.

“Let’s take it one step at a time. Our generation is already old, so we don’t have the chance to take another step forward. However, Chunqiu and the others are different. Perhaps they still have hope,” Zhang Siyou said indifferently.

…

Zhou Wen and Zhang Chunqiu arrived at the Fiend Tomb again. Zhang Chunqiu brought the Celestial Master Token and got the Zhang family guarding the area to temporarily retreat.

“I’ll leave this place to you. I’ll come back after the matter is done,” Zhang Chunqiu said as he left.

The Zhang family sure is straightforward. They actually didn’t leave a single person behind, Zhou Wen thought to himself. Such a decision wasn’t something anyone could make. After all, it concerned the life and death of the family. No one would be at ease leaving it in the hands of an outsider, but the Zhang family had chosen to do so.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 853 - Incubating Earth Elemental Beast

Chapter 853: Incubating Earth Elemental Beast

Zhou Wen followed the steps and easily eliminated Ghost Hornless. When he dug up the Fiend Tomb, he was very careful, afraid that he would alarm the Goddess Ba.

Thankfully, nothing unexpected happened. After killing Ghost Hornless, Zhou Wen used the Fiend Stones to fill up the dug up Fiend Tomb before meeting up with Zhang Chunqiu.

As for Zhang Chunqiu, he had already prepared the Earth Elemental Beast Companion Egg. When they met, he gave it to Zhou Wen.

“Aren’t you afraid that I didn’t complete the mission?” Zhou Wen said with a smile.

“What’s there to be afraid of? You can run but you can’t hide. Could you not return to Luoyang for the rest of your life?” Zhang Chunqiu curled his lips and said.

“Thankfully, I’ve already completed the mission,” Zhou Wen said.

Zhang Chunqiu thought for a moment and said, “You have to be careful of the other families, especially Moses. He won’t let it go easily.”

Zhou Wen nodded. “I know.”

“Let’s not talk about anything else. If there’s anything you need from my Zhang family, just say the word. If there’s anything you need, you can stay in Celestial Master Manor for a year or so,” Zhang Chunqiu said with a smile.

“That will be unnecessary. I still have some matters to attend to. After I’m done here, I plan on returning. Can you help me make arrangements to bid farewell to Yuzhi?” Zhou Wen asked.

“She’s waiting for you at Celestial Master Manor.”

…

“I never expected the Earth Elemental Beast to fall into Zhou Wen’s hands. Your Cape family has worked for nothing,” Moses said to Charlie with a smile.

“Didn’t your Family Clan of Gods end up empty-handed as well?” Charlie’s face was somewhat pale. Although he had escaped death, he had suffered some hidden injuries due to the Evil Ghost Mask’s control.

Moses smiled and said, “That might not be the case. He definitely needs external help to incubate a Mythical Companion Egg. I don’t think Zhou Wen can hatch the Earth Elemental Beast Companion Egg quickly. We still have a chance of getting it back.”

“You want to snatch the Earth Elemental Beast Companion Egg?” Charlie stared at Moses and asked.

“Zhou Wen previously agreed to fight me. If I win the Earth Elemental Beast Companion Egg fair and square, how can this be called snatching?” Moses said indifferently.

“Hmph, then what do you mean by coming here to tell me this?” Charlie said thoughtfully.

“I’m afraid that Zhou Wen won’t dare to accept the challenge and will run away at the last moment. Therefore, I wish to ask you to help me. If Zhou Wen wants to escape or doesn’t dare to accept the challenge, help me intercept him. With your Book of Prophecy, it will be difficult for him to escape even if he has wings,” said Moses.

“Why should I help you?” Charlie said coldly.

“No, no, no. You aren’t helping me, but helping yourself. Even if you can track him, are you confident of defeating Tyrant Behemoth? And I can defeat Tyrant Behemoth. If we work together, we can definitely snatch back the Earth Elemental Beast Companion Egg. When the time comes, our families will explore the Founding Emperor Tomb together and split the benefits equally. What do you think?” Moses said.

“Hmph, you make it sound nice. There’s only one Earth Elemental Beast. Without it, you can’t enter the Founding Emperor Tomb. How can we cooperate?” Charlie naturally didn’t believe Moses’s nonsense.

“To show my sincerity, after we retrieve the Earth Elemental Beast Companion Egg, your Cape family will be responsible for incubating it. This way, you should believe me, right?” Moses smiled.

“Do I have your word?” Charlie looked at Moses in disbelief.

Without the Earth Elemental Beast, one couldn’t enter the Founding Emperor Tomb. Previously, the six heroes had nearly fallen out because of this Earth Elemental Beast

Companion Egg. Now, Moses was willing to take the initiative to give it up. He found it unbelievable.

“Our families are from the West District. Although there are occasional conflicts, we are still family. The Founding Emperor Tomb is an important dimensional zone in the East District. If we cross districts like this, I’m afraid the Xia and Zhang families won’t sit back and do nothing. If our two families cooperate, we might be able to bring back everything inside. Otherwise, it’s very likely that we will get out the items and only serve to benefit the Zhang and Xia families. I’m not sure if the Xia family will participate, but the Zhang family took the initiative to give the Earth Elemental Beast away. Do you think they are really so kind as to give up the things in the Founding Emperor Tomb?” Moses asked.

After some thought, Charlie nodded and said, “What you said makes sense. We are also willing to cooperate, but the premise is that the Earth Elemental Beast Companion Egg must be incubated by our family.”

“Of course. I’ve already said that the Earth Elemental Beast Companion Egg is yours, but you have to split the spoils 50-50,” said Moses.

“Deal.” Charlie extended his palm.

While they were discussing how to snatch back the Earth Elemental Beast Companion Egg, Zhou Wen was already prepared to incubate it.

Typical Epic humans needed external help to hatch Mythical Companion Eggs if they wanted to incubate them. They needed plenty of preparation in the early stages, but Zhou Wen didn’t need it at all. He didn’t even need Slaughterer’s

infinite Essence Energy. Dao Sutra, and First Order of Chaos could help him incubate Mythical Companion Beasts.

Earth Elemental Beast: Mythical

Life Providence: Earth Life

Life Soul: Essence of Earth

Wheel of Destiny: Earth of the Five Elements

Strength: 80

Speed: 80

Constitution: 80

Essence Energy: 80

Talent Skill: Earth Escape

Companion Form: Mount

From the looks of it, the Earth Elemental Beast is purely a mount-type Companion Beast. It doesn't have any special offensive skills, but just the Earth Escape mount makes it excellent. After Zhou Wen saw its stats, he hatched it.

Soon, a Companion Beast that resembled a pangolin but was as large as a dinosaur appeared in front of Zhou Wen.

Zhou Wen tried it in-game and realized that the Earth Elemental Beast lived up to its name. Although it didn't have any offensive skills, this Earth Escape skill could be activated repeatedly as long as one had Essence Energy. The cooldown time was very short.

With the Earth Elemental Beast's Essence Energy maxed out, it could instantly carry out Earth Escape for more than fifty kilometers with Zhou Wen. It was truly a life-saving weapon.

It was also useful for assassination. In the midst of an army of ten thousand, an Earth Escape could allow him to appear in front of the enemy commander and kill him with one strike. Then, he could escape easily via Earth Escape. No matter how many enemies there were, they couldn't stop the Earth Elemental Beast.

As long as I'm on the ground, I won't have to be afraid of being besieged in the future. Zhou Wen was delighted, but on careful thought, there were also the four similar mounts of Metal, Wood, Water, and Fire. If he could obtain them all, he wondered if he could use the phone's functions to fuse them into one.

While Zhou Wen was still studying how to use the Earth Elemental Beast, Moses sent someone to deliver a challenge letter. He wanted to have a fair duel with Zhou Wen to determine who was better.

After reading the invitation, Zhou Wen rejected it without any hesitation. Firstly, it was because he didn't know what abilities Giant God Sovereign had. Secondly, he didn't need to give Moses an excuse to openly snatch the Earth Elemental Beast.

If Moses wasn't willing to give up on the Earth Elemental Beast Companion Egg, he could only secretly snatch it. When that happened, Zhou Wen would be taking the moral high ground. No matter what he did to Moses or what methods he used, no one could blame him.

Zhou Wen wasn’t afraid of being criticized, but there was no need for him to take the risk of fighting the unknown Giant God Sovereign. It would be too dangerous if the Giant God Sovereign was comparable to Ant City’s Guardian.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 854 - Pursuit?

Chapter 854: Pursuit?

Translator: CKtalon

Zhou Wen packed his things and prepared to leave Mount Dragon Tiger.

He had previously rejected Moses, and now that he had packed his things and fled, it was very likely that Moses would chase after him and intercept him. When that happened, it would be Zhou Wen's homeground.

Even if the Giant God Sovereign really had the strength of the Ant City Guardian, Zhou Wen wasn't afraid of employing guerrilla tactics.

Earth Escape, teleportation, invisibility, and with his excellent movement techniques, it could be said that Zhou Wen was best at guerrilla warfare.

Zhou Wen packed his things and was about to leave with Ya'er when he saw Zhang Chunqiu rush over.

"Zhou Wen, are you planning on leaving Mount Dragon Tiger?" Zhang Chunqiu asked directly.

"That's right," Zhou Wen answered.

"It's best you don't leave now. We realized that Moses and Charlie have reached a tacit agreement. If you leave now, you definitely won't be able to escape the pursuit of the two families. Charlie's Book of Prophecy is best at finding people. You have already shown yourself in front of him. As long as you aren't too far from him, he will be able to find you no matter where you hide," Zhang Chunqiu said.

“It’s fine. It’s perfect that way,” Zhou Wen said.

Zhang Chunqiu was slightly taken aback, unsure what Zhou Wen meant. He stared at Zhou Wen with an odd expression and said, “Don’t tell me you want to attack Moses and company as well?”

“Why not?” Zhou Wen said with a smile.

“At least make a trip to Celestial Master Manor. We have already prepared the resources needed to incubate the Earth Elemental Beast. It can help you incubate the Earth Elemental Beast in three days. When the time comes, you will be much safer,” Zhang Chunqiu said.

“If that’s the case, will Moses still chase after me?” Zhou Wen paused and said, “Besides, I’ve already hatched the Earth Elemental Beast.”

With that said, Zhou Wen summoned the Earth Elemental Beast.

Zhang Chunqiu was dumbfounded. When he snapped to his senses, he said with a bitter smile, “It looks like Moses and the rest are destined to not be able to gain an advantage.”

“Who can they blame for their greed?” Zhou Wen put away the Earth Elemental Beast and bade Zhang Chunqiu farewell before secretly leaving Mount Dragon Tiger with Ya’er.

Looking at Zhou Wen’s departing back, Zhang Chunqiu muttered to himself, “This Zhou Wen is even more terrifying than An Tianzuo was. I’m afraid he will really turn the Federation upside down. In this era, I wonder if it’s a blessing or a curse.”

..

The news of Zhou Wen secretly leaving Mount Dragon Tiger naturally couldn’t be hidden from Moses and Charlie.

Charlie had already predicted Zhou Wen’s departure as he said with a sneer, “It hasn’t even been twenty-four hours since he obtained the Earth Elemental Beast Companion Egg. He definitely won’t be able to hatch it in time. As long as we catch up to him, we will have a chance of getting the Companion Egg back.”

“Then what are we waiting for? Before he returns to Luoyang, we have to stop him and snatch the Companion Egg from him,” said Moses.

“Not only do I want the Companion Egg, but I also want his life.” A cold glint flashed in Charlie’s eyes. The grudge between Zhou Wen and the Cape family naturally wouldn’t be resolved with Zhou Wen’s shattering of the Ghoul Mask on his face. He wouldn’t consider how Zhou Wen had saved his life.

With the two families mobilizing their forces together, the originally lively Dragon Tiger Town suddenly became much quieter.

“Celestial Master, Zhou Wen has already left Dragon Tiger Town. Moses and Charlie have also led their men to chase after him.” An intelligence officer from the Zhang family reported to Zhang Siyou.

“Should we send someone over and wait for an opportunity to snatch the Earth Elemental Beast back? If we can snatch it back this time, we can prevent others from knowing that the Earth Elemental Beast is in our Zhang family.” Uncle Zhang’s eyes lit up. Zhang Chunqiu hadn’t returned to report that Zhou Wen had already hatched the Earth Elemental Beast, so he wasn’t aware.

“There’s no need. Moses and company aren’t Zhou Wen’s match,” Zhang Siyou said indifferently.

“That might not be the case, right? After all, Moses has a Guardian. His strength can’t be underestimated. With Charlie’s Book of Prophecy, Zhou Wen probably won’t be able to escape that easily.” Uncle Zhang didn’t think so.

Zhang Siyou said, “So what if he has a Guardian? What kind of person is Old Master Xia? Even he wasn’t able to kill Zhou Wen, much less a mere Moses who relies on a Guardian. They will probably be doomed if they attack him.”

Although the eldest uncle of the Zhang family didn’t quite believe Zhang Siyou’s judgment, he couldn’t refute it. After all, Zhang Siyou’s knowledge and judgment far exceeded his. Otherwise, he would have taken over as Celestial Master instead of Zhang Siyou who was the second eldest in the family.

Zhou Wen ran all the way. He didn’t really want to escape, but to create the illusion that he was escaping.

Moses and company kept chasing after Zhou Wen. With Charlie’s Book of Prophecy tracking Zhou Wen’s location, they got closer and closer.

“That bastard Zhou Wen is actually running so fast. We have to speed up,” Charlie said through gritted teeth. They had chased for hundreds of kilometers, but they still hadn’t caught up to Zhou Wen.

“It’s just a trapped beast’s struggle. He can’t escape…” Just as Moses spoke, a person on his left suddenly touched a tree. The tree exploded and sent the person flying. Several people nearby were affected.

“What happened?” Moses quickly checked the man’s injuries and saw that he was nearly half-dead.

“It’s a Life Blast-type Essence Energy Skill. It must have been left behind by that bastard, Zhou Wen,” said Charlie as he observed the destroyed tree.

“Damn it, Bayh. Stay and take care of them. The rest of you, follow me. I want that bastard dead,” Moses said angrily.

Everyone chased, but this time, they were much more careful. They didn’t touch the trees or grass.

After chasing for a distance, they arrived at a grassland. Just as they approached, they alarmed a group of insects in the grassland. Large swaths of them flew up.

“No good! Be careful of those insects!” Charlie shouted, but it was already too late. Someone had already waved their hands at the insects, hoping to drive them to the side.

However, when their powers hit the insects, it immediately triggered a series of explosions.

Due to the low life force of the worms, a large number of them exploded together, leaving them in a sorry state. Some people who weren’t paying attention had their eyes injured from the explosion, while others were covered in blood.

In their panic, they stepped on the grass. The grass also exploded, immediately causing a series of explosions.

“That bastard!” Moses saw that many people were injured. Although their injuries were not very serious, they looked pathetic.

When they continued chasing after Zhou Wen, they realized that the forest had turned into a huge minefield. Anything they touched could turn into a mine. This made them suspicious. Not only were many people injured, but their progress was also much slower.

“If this continues, that bastard will escape. Someone with a flying pet, chase after him with me. The others will circle around and take the main road and see if they can intercept him.” After Moses and Charlie discussed the plan, the two of them continued chasing with flying pets.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 855 - Giant God Sovereign

Chapter 855: Giant God Sovereign

They no longer needed to fear skills like Life Blast in midair. Moses and company sped up and chased after Zhou Wen crazily, but when Charlie predicted Zhou Wen's location again, he realized that Zhou Wen was behind them.

"No good!" Charlie and Moses's expressions changed drastically. This was because Zhou Wen's current location was where they had separated from the others.

"Let's go back quickly." After Moses led his men back, they discovered the corpses of their companions not far from where they had parted. They had been blasted into pieces, and there were almost no complete corpses.

The surrounding forest was also in a mess. Clearly, a powerful explosion had happened. It wasn't an ordinary Life Blast. The typical self-destruction of trees didn't have such power.

"Zhou Wen, I'll tear you to pieces." Moses's expression was livid as he urged Charlie to continue tracking Zhou Wen.

This time, Moses directly summoned Giant God Sovereign. After he fused with Giant God Sovereign, the armor transformed by Giant God Sovereign still remained huge. Moses was inside Giant God Sovereign's body as the core existence inside Giant God Sovereign armor.

Moses, who was like a giant, grabbed Charlie and charged forward without caring if there were any Life Blast

mechanisms nearby.

Indeed, large swaths of trees and grass exploded, but it was useless against the huge armor that Giant God Sovereign had transformed into. It was unable to injure it at all.

When Moses ran to the nearby water, tadpole-like things suddenly rushed out of the water. The tadpoles constantly exploded.

However, such power failed to injure Moses. All of Giant God Sovereign's armor blocked the explosions.

"These things killed them." Moses could tell from the tadpoles' explosive mode that these were the things that killed their companions.

"Zhou Wen, your tricks are useless in front of absolute strength. Come out and die," Moses said coldly.

Charlie had already predicted that Zhou Wen was less than five kilometers away and could definitely hear him.

Zhou Wen had already seen everything clearly with Truth Listener. He thought to himself, *From the looks of it, Giant God Sovereign should be a Strength- and Defense-type Guardian. Tyrant Behemoth is also of the same type. It shouldn't be weaker than Giant God Sovereign. However, Moses knows that Tyrant Behemoth is in my hands, yet he's still so confident. He probably has a way to restrain Tyrant Behemoth.*

Zhou Wen's figure flashed as he continued pulling away from Moses and company. However, after Moses donned the Giant God Sovereign armor, his speed was too fast. Not only was Zhou Wen unable to pull away, but the gap between them kept shrinking.

Zhou Wen didn’t mind. As he fled, he summoned a large number of Musical Note Sprites and Golden Harp. There were now tens of thousands of Musical Note Sprites. Together with the power of the Golden Harp, the sound waves produced were enough to kill an Epic expert.

Most importantly, it was very difficult for sound wave attacks to be completely blocked by armor. No matter how strong the defense of the Giant God Sovereign armor was, it could be penetrated by the sound waves and killed.

Moses chased after him with Charlie in a frenzy. Suddenly, he saw a large number of Musical Note Sprites and a Golden Harp. Before he could react, the Golden Harp suddenly sounded.

Hum!

With the sound of the Golden Harp, all the Musical Note Sprites sounded. The sound waves emitted were like a tidal wave that surged towards Moses.

“Ah!”

The sound wave failed to break through the armor of Giant God Sovereign, but Charlie, who was held in Moses’ hand, was bleeding from his seven orifices because of the sound wave. His Book of Prophecy and the crucifix could not defend against the sound blast.

Moses was alarmed. A golden barrier lit up over the Giant God Sovereign armor, protecting Charlie inside and thus, saving him.

The sound blast was unable to penetrate the barrier and was blocked outside. Just as Moses was about to destroy the

Musical Note Sprites and harp, he realized that the Musical Note Sprites and harp had disappeared.

Moses rushed over at full speed, but he didn’t find Zhou Wen.

“Where did Zhou Wen escape to?” Moses asked Charlie. Charlie wiped the blood from his face and used the Book of Prophecy to predict Zhou Wen’s location again.

“Impossible… He’s here…” When Charlie saw the prediction, his eyes widened in disbelief.

At that moment, Zhou Wen’s figure appeared above Moses out of thin air. He held a golden broadsword in his hand and slashed at the golden barrier with an indomitable golden sword beam.

Clang!

A three-foot gap was slashed open in the golden barrier, but Zhou Wen’s sword couldn’t continue. The barrier wasn’t as simple as a shell. It also seemed corporeal. If not for the Golden Overlord Sword having the augmentation of Ever-Victorious and Unstoppable, it would have been impossible for it to slice open the barrier.

“You’ve finally appeared!” Moses wasn’t alarmed but delighted. He controlled the Giant God Sovereign armor and threw a punch at Zhou Wen.

However, Zhou Wen’s figure flashed in midair before suddenly disappearing.

Moses originally imagined that Zhou Wen was fast and had moved elsewhere, but when he looked around, he didn’t see Zhou Wen.

“Damn it, why are his skills so wretched? Where did he go? Quickly find him,” Moses gritted his teeth and said to Charlie.

Charlie used the Book of Prophecy to predict again, but he realized that Zhou Wen was already several kilometers away. He pointed in surprise and anger and said, “He’s over there. Don’t let him escape.”

With the virtually invincible ability of the Giant God Sovereign armor, Moses did not care if there was an ambush. He charged forward crazily. The tall trees were knocked away by the Giant God Sovereign armor like a huge humanoid machine.

Its defense is comparable to Tyrant Behemoth with Absolute Strength activated, but its strength is much weaker. However, in that case, it shouldn’t be able to defeat Tyrant Behemoth. What kind of power does Giant God Sovereign have that makes Moses so confident? Zhou Wen thought of various possibilities.

From the looks of it, I can only let Tyrant Behemoth give it a try. When Zhou Wen saw Moses chasing after him, he summoned Tyrant Behemoth.

Not daring to be careless, Zhou Wen got Tyrant Behemoth to activate Absolute Strength before charging at Moses.

“Good timing.” Moses finally had a combat target. His speed didn’t decrease but rose as he charged at Tyrant Behemoth.

Tyrant Behemoth also gathered all its strength and threw a punch at Moses, who was wearing the Giant God Sovereign armor.

A ruthless glint flashed in Moses’s eyes. He didn’t swing his fist to meet it. Instead, he used the golden barrier of the Giant God Sovereign armor to slam into Tyrant Behemoth.

Tyrant Behemoth’s fist struck the golden barrier, but it failed to send Moses retreating. Instead, it was sent flying as its fist bones shattered.

A repulsion barrier! With his experience, Zhou Wen immediately saw through the trick. Tyrant Behemoth wasn’t sent retreating by Giant God Sovereign, but was defeated by its own strength and the power of Giant God Sovereign.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 856 - I Just Want to Set Off Fireworks

Chapter 856: I Just Want to Set Off Fireworks

“Die! My Giant God Sovereign is invincible.” Moses controlled the Giant God Sovereign armor and threw a punch at Tyrant Behemoth.

Zhou Wen’s heart stirred as Tyrant Behemoth returned to him. Since he knew that Moses’s Guardian was good at reflecting strength, a Strength-type Companion Beast like Tyrant Behemoth wasn’t suitable for battle.

“Without Tyrant Behemoth, how are you going to fight me? Zhou Wen, come out and die. I’ll leave your corpse intact.” Moses chased after Zhou Wen while using words to agitate him.

Zhou Wen wasn’t moved at all. As he rapidly moved, he also thought of a way to kill Giant God Sovereign.

Giant God Sovereign’s defense wasn’t weaker than Tyrant Behemoth’s Absolute Strength. It also had the ability to reflect strength. It was difficult to break through Giant God Sovereign armor’s defense.

It was not difficult to kill Moses, but killing him was useless. As an equal in the contract, Giant God Sovereign could escape and choose another person to contract.

Zhou Wen’s main target was Giant God Sovereign, not Moses.

The only thing worth rejoicing about is that this Giant God Sovereign shouldn't have the ability to undergo Terror transformation. There's still a chance of killing him, Zhou Wen thought.

If it were an ordinary Guardian, Zhou Wen would have killed it long ago if he sneaked an attack with Invisibility Cloak. However, Giant God Sovereign's defense was just too powerful. This wasn't a problem that could be resolved with a sneak attack.

Moses was getting closer and closer to Zhou Wen. Just as he was about to catch up to him, his eyes burned with killing intent. "Zhou Wen, you can't escape."

"Don't waste your breath on him. Kill him and snatch back the Earth Elemental Beast Companion Egg," Charlie shouted with red eyes. With so many people dead, they finally had a chance to kill Zhou Wen.

As long as they could kill Zhou Wen and retrieve the Earth Elemental Beast Companion Egg, everything would be worth it.

Just as they were about to catch up to Zhou Wen, they suddenly saw Zhou Wen summon a Companion Beast. It looked like a huge pangolin as Zhou Wen rode on its back.

They only knew of the Earth Elemental Beast Companion Egg, but they didn't know what it looked like.

Seeing Zhou Wen summon such a Companion Beast, they imagined that Zhou Wen wanted to risk his life. Without any hesitation, Moses threw a punch. Even Tyrant Behemoth couldn't fight Giant God Sovereign head-on, much less such an inconspicuous Companion Beast.

Boom!

Moses punched down, blasting a huge crater in the ground, but Zhou Wen and the Companion Beast were nowhere to be seen.

Could it be! Moses and Charlie had a bad feeling.

Turning their heads, they realized that Zhou Wen was already dozens of meters away. Moses threw another punch. This time, he saw it clearly. The pangolin that Zhou Wen was sitting on burrowed into the ground and vanished. When they emerged again, they were already a hundred meters away.

“Earth Elemental Beast… He actually hatched Earth Elemental Beast… How is this possible…” Charlie shouted indignantly.

No matter how strong Giant God Sovereign was, it was useless if he couldn’t catch up to the Earth Elemental Beast. It was already impossible for him to kill Zhou Wen today, much less snatch the Earth Elemental Beast Companion Egg. Even if they killed Zhou Wen, the Companion Beast that had already hatched would vanish with its master.

Moses was stunned. He did not expect such an outcome.

“Count yourself lucky.” Seeing that the situation was hopeless, Moses wanted to retreat.

“Who said you can leave?” Zhou Wen rode on the Earth Beast’s back and blocked Moses’s path.

“If you didn’t have the Earth Elemental Beast to escape, you would have long been killed by me. How dare you say such things in front of me?” Moses said coldly as he walked

towards Zhou Wen, hoping to stomp him and the Earth Elemental Beast to death.

Zhou Wen remained unmoved as he summoned Tyrant Behemoth. At the same time, he fed the Rejuvenation Pill he had recently obtained to Tyrant Behemoth, allowing its injured fist to rapidly heal.

“What’s the point of summoning a defeated opponent? No matter how many times you summon it, it will be suicide,” said Moses.

Zhou Wen didn’t say a word as he continued the summoning. Truth Listener was summoned and it shattered two earrings. It descended like a ferocious beast and glared at Moses.

“Another Strength-type Companion Beast? It doesn’t matter. Attack together.” Moses didn’t care.

Zhou Wen continued summoning and summoned the Great Might Vajra Bull and Torch Dragon. One bull and one dragon surrounded Moses.

“That’s… Torch Dragon… That’s Torch Dragon from the Zhuolu temple…” Charlie recognized Torch Dragon and his expression changed drastically.

Moses didn’t look too good either. Zhou Wen had actually summoned five Mythical Companion Beasts alone. This was very rare among the six families.

“No matter how many Companion Beasts you summon, it makes no difference for Giant God Sovereign. If you don’t break through my defense, you will ultimately be defeated.” Although Moses said that, he was no longer confident.

Zhou Wen ignored him and continued summoning his Companion Beasts.

The Golden Overlord Sword and Golden Battle God Halberd appeared beside him, floating in the air. At the same time, the Mythical Kun Dragon and Zhen Dragon appeared. The two black dragons also joined the battlefield as Moses was surrounded in the center.

“That’s… the Golden Battle God Temple of the Metalwork Temple, the black dragon in the Zhuolu underground sea… How is that possible… How can he have so many Mythical Companion Beasts…” Charlie’s voice was trembling. He had never seen a person have so many Mythical Companion Beasts.

Even in recent years, the six families had many more Mythical Companion Beasts than before, but it was already not bad for the core upper echelons to have one. Only top figures could have two or three Mythical Companion Beasts. Those who had five or six Mythical Companion Beasts were considered the family’s top combat strength, the true pillar of the family.

Now, Zhou Wen had summoned more than ten Mythical Companion Beasts alone. Furthermore, they included top-notch terrifying existences like Tyrant Behemoth and Torch Dragon. How could Charlie not be alarmed?

At that moment, Moses’s mind was filled with curses. He never expected that Zhou Wen, who wasn’t even a direct descendant of the An family, would have so many Mythical pets on him. Mythical Companion Beasts were summoned out as though they were nothing.

Moses was already regretting it. Although Giant God Sovereign’s strength was powerful and his defense was

almost invincible, who could guarantee that none of Zhou Wen's Companion Beasts could restrain him?

According to what Moses knew, Torch Dragon's Bright Torch Vision World's power could devour all living beings. Giant God Sovereign might not be able to withstand it.

"It's useless. No matter how many Companion Beasts you have, it's ultimately a joke if you can't break through Giant God Sovereign's defense." Moses' tone was no longer as confident as before.

"Is that so?" Zhou Wen finally spoke. At the same time, he summoned two Companion Beasts. Charlie and Moses didn't recognize the two Companion Beasts, but from the looks of them, they were undoubtedly at the Mythical stage.

Zhou Wen had summoned Doctor Darkness and Explosive Fiend Man.

"Of course. If you can break through Giant God Sovereign's defense, why did you need to summon so many Mythical Companion Beasts?" Moses seemed to be speaking to Zhou Wen and himself.

"You will soon know the use of having so many Mythical Companion Beasts." Zhou Wen waved his hand as the terrifying Mythical Companion Beast army charged at Giant God Sovereign.

When Moses saw so many terrifying Mythical Companion Beasts rush over, he felt his scalp tingle, but he had no choice but to bite the bullet and accept the challenge.

However, how could a single Giant God Sovereign deal with so many Mythical Companion Beasts? Although Tyrant Behemoth and company couldn't break through Giant God

Sovereign’s defense, it didn’t stop them from rushing forward to hold down the armored Moses.

Tyrant Behemoth and Truth Listener each held onto an arm, while the two black dragons each pulled at a leg. Torch Dragon wrapped around its neck and pulled Giant God Sovereign down.

Giant God Sovereign had powerful defense, but in terms of strength, it was inferior to Tyrant Behemoth, much less be able to resist so many Mythical creatures at the same time.

The Great Might Vajra Bull stomped on his chest as the Golden Overlord Sword and Golden Battle God Halberd stabbed at his body. Although they failed to penetrate the barrier, they pressed him firmly to the ground. No matter how he struggled, he couldn’t escape.

Charlie fell to the ground. Moses couldn’t be bothered with him anymore. He stood up and wanted to run, but he saw a scalpel suddenly appear and slice across his throat. Doctor Darkness gracefully walked past him and returned to Zhou Wen’s side without looking back.

Charlie covered his neck in horror, but blood kept gushing out of the gaps between his fingers. His eyes widened as he opened his mouth to say something, but all he spat out was blood.

Plop!

Charlie’s body fell to the ground; he was dead.

“What a pity,” Zhou Wen said indifferently when he saw that the Dead Man Tree didn’t react.

“Zhou Wen, it’s useless no matter how many Mythical Companion Beasts you have. You can’t break through my defense. You can’t injure me.” Moses was pressed to the ground by so many Mythical Companion Beasts, but he wasn’t injured. Although he couldn’t move, he still roared.

“Why should I break your defense?” As Zhou Wen spoke, Explosive Fiend Man walked over.

Explosive Fiend Man, whose eye mask was shimmering with an evil glow, pressed its palm on Giant God Sovereign’s barrier, leaving strange marks on it that gradually covered every corner of the barrier.

The Time Bomb skill could only be used on objects that could not resist. It was basically impossible to use it on a Guardian like Giant God Sovereign. However, Giant God Sovereign couldn’t even move.

“What are you trying to do?” Moses’s face was pale, and his eyes were filled with fear. Although he did not know what those imprints did, he knew that things weren’t looking good.

“It’s nothing. I’m just in a good mood and want to set off fireworks to celebrate,” Zhou Wen said indifferently.

“Let go of me… You bastard…” Moses struggled with all his might. He already felt that something was amiss. Even Giant God Sovereign was struggling to escape as though he was terrified.

However, it was useless. Under the suppression of so many terrifying Mythical creatures, even the Guardian—Giant God Sovereign—couldn’t escape.

After all, it had only broken out of its cocoon not long ago. Although it was strong, it wasn’t capable of Terror transformation and didn’t have overwhelming strength.

More and more imprints appeared on the golden barrier, emitting a dangerous purple glow. It was like a spiderweb that covered the entire barrier.

Finally, Zhou Wen unsummoned all his Companion Beasts and quickly retreated.

“No…” Moses finally regained his freedom. His first reaction was to remove the armor, but it was too late.

Explosive Fiend Man snapped his fingers and there was a bang.

Like a hydrogen bomb exploding, a golden sun rapidly expanded its radius with Moses at the center. Everything that was devoured instantly turned to ashes.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 857 - Perfect Slaughterer

Chapter 857: Perfect Slaughterer

Due to the Explosive Fiend Man detonating Giant God Sovereign's strongest barrier, the powerful force made it so that Moses didn't even have the chance to scream. He was directly reduced to ashes, and Giant God Sovereign himself was blasted apart.

With the death of Giant God Sovereign, Zhou Wen felt a strange force enter his body, causing Slaughterer to evolve again.

I'm finally about to evolve a Perfect Body! Zhou Wen heaved a sigh of relief. He had killed several Guardians. If he didn't evolve, he didn't know where he could find Guardians to kill.

The Slaughterer that enveloped Zhou Wen's body had always been an invisible existence. After advancing to an Evolved Body, Zhou Wen could sense its existence and take the initiative to control it.

However, Zhou Wen still didn't understand it much. It was limited to powering Immortal Slaying.

This evolution allowed Slaughterer's form to gradually appear. Although it was only a blurry shadow, like a silhouette, it was many times stronger than back when it was invisible and untouchable.

As he watched the light gradually appear, Zhou Wen realized that the light was somewhat familiar, as though he had seen it before.

He couldn’t see the facial features or figure, but the aura was very familiar.

Is it the woman in my hallucination? Zhou Wen suddenly recalled where he had seen such an aura. The woman who had defied the heavens to slay immortals and made all races bow down to her seemed to have such an aura.

When the evolution was completed, Zhou Wen could only see a silhouette-like shadow. The Slaughterer’s appearance hadn’t completely surfaced, nor had it been able to condense a corporeal body.

Zhou Wen glanced at the information in-game and realized that Slaughterer had indeed advanced to a Perfect Body. However, its name and introduction remained the same.

The only thing that made Zhou Wen feel that Slaughterer had indeed grown was that he could finally maintain contact with Slaughterer. He still needed to slowly experiment with its other abilities.

Is that it? Is this the final appearance of the Slaughterer Life Soul? Zhou Wen looked at the figure of light and found it unbelievable that Slaughterer ultimately looked like this. It was too abstract.

Although Zhou Wen wasn’t willing to believe it, the truth was that Perfect Body was the final form of a Life Soul. It was impossible to change it.

After cleaning up the battlefield, Zhou Wen rode the Earth Elemental Beast again with Ya’er. This time, he wasn’t in a rush. However, his speed wasn’t slow. Furthermore, the path he was taking wasn’t the way back to Luoyang.

Zhou Wen didn’t plan on returning to Luoyang right away. He wanted to circle around and walk through the relatively safe human districts to advance Fine Dust.

After walking for less than two days, Fine Dust began to evolve. The dust-like planet began to burn like a tiny sun, emitting a strange glow.

Although he didn’t know if it was of any use, the stat augmentation provided by the Fine Dust was much stronger than before.

Glimmer: Evolved Body

The evolution of the Sky-Stealing Sun-Shifting Art is indeed easy. If I take more steps, it shouldn’t be difficult for me to reach the Perfect Body. Instead, Civilized Country needs a large number of spatial teleportations to evolve. What should I do? Zhou Wen couldn’t think of a good solution.

The Zhang family’s Mystic Bird could rapidly teleport, but the Zhang family had already hatched it. It was impossible for them to transfer it to Zhou Wen. Zhou Wen didn’t have enough benefits to move them.

I’ll take it one step at a time. Zhou Wen didn’t idle along the way. He was studying the Demon God Catalog, hoping to figure out what kind of Essence Energy Art it was and how to condense a Life Providence and Life Soul.

Condensing a Life Providence wasn’t difficult. With the Essence Energy Art and his talent, as long as he had sufficient perceptivity, success wasn’t a distant thing.

However, a Life Soul needed a foundation. Typically, a Guardian’s drop of blood was needed as a foundation.

However, the Guardian’s attribute had to be compatible with the Demon God Catalog.

I wonder if The Thearch’s blood can be used as a foundation of the Demon God Catalog. Zhou Wen thought to himself.

Up to now, Zhou Wen still couldn’t figure out what kind of existence The Thearch was. He didn’t know if she was a dimensional creature or a Guardian, or if she was neither.

However, The Thearch was trapped in Chess Mountain, and the Demon God Catalog was obtained from there. The possibility of the two being compatible was naturally higher.

It probably won’t be that easy to obtain a drop of blood essence from The Thearch, but it’s not like there’s no chance. Compared to the Guardians who I have to fight to obtain their blood, it’s possible to negotiate with The Thearch. However, I don’t know what price I will have to pay. Zhou Wen didn’t think too much about it. He wanted to condense the Demon God Catalog’s Life Providence first.

Zhou Wen only did his research when he walked. He didn’t do any training because switching to other Essence Energy Arts prevented Glimmer from obtaining energy.

When he stopped to gather information, he exacted his thoughts and insights on the Demon God Catalog. In just a few days, he had obtained a huge improvement and condensed a Life Providence.

Life Providence: Demon Bloodline

Zhou Wen felt that when he used the Demon Bloodline, his basic stats were greatly augmented. Among all his Life Providences, the Demon Bloodline augmented his physical stats the most.

From the looks of it, this Demon God Catalog is likely an Essence Energy Art that corresponds to one's Constitution. The other Essence Energy Art corresponding to Constitution is Small Perfection of Wisdom. The Supreme Hell King Life Soul is already a Perfect Body. Then, if I advance the Demon God Catalog's Life Soul to a Perfect Body, won't my Constitution reach 41 points?

Zhou Wen was vexed about how he could obtain a Guardian's blood that corresponded to the Demon God Catalog and condense a Life Soul.

"The Thearch, are you interested in making a deal?" Zhou Wen planned on probing The Thearch's intentions. If he could obtain a drop of her blood, he could give it a try.

"How rare. You actually took the initiative to make a trade with me. Weren't you deathly afraid of me and kept hiding from me?" The Thearch replied in a teasing tone.

"I'm not avoiding you. I'm just too busy and don't have time. Otherwise, I would have come to Chess Mountain to visit you," Zhou Wen said in a hypocritical manner.

"Alright, then come. I'll wait for you," The Thearch said.

"I'm near the South District now. I really can't return. When I return, I'll definitely visit you." Zhou Wen sent another message. "Are you interested in the deal I'm talking about?"

"What do you want?" The Thearch asked straightforwardly.

"I want a drop of your blood essence." Zhou Wen gritted his teeth and sent the message. He was somewhat nervous, unsure if The Thearch would end up falling out with him.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 858 - Qiongqi

Chapter 858: Qiongqi

“Sure.” The Thearch’s message delighted Zhou Wen.

“What do you want? I’ll exchange it with you,” Zhou Wen hurriedly said.

“Didn’t you want to see me? Then come. If you come to see me, I’ll give you a drop of blood essence. I don’t want anything else,” The Thearch replied.

Zhou Wen was immediately depressed. He had only said it in passing. He really didn’t dare go to Chess Mountain to see The Thearch.

“I really can’t come back now. Do you want to exchange for something else? There are many new and interesting things here. Shall I send some to you? Otherwise, I’ll buy any experimental equipment or apparatus you want,” Zhou Wen said.

“I don’t want anything. If you come, there will be blood essence. If you don’t, nothing.” The Thearch’s reply left Zhou Wen somewhat helpless.

“Let’s talk when I get back. I can’t fly back now.” Zhou Wen replied before switching off his phone.

Typically, when Guardians are in the cocoon, their bodies will be flowing with blood essence. When they come out of the cocoon, the blood essence will have already fused into their bodies. It won’t be that easy to obtain more blood

essence. Perhaps The Thearch's blood essence isn't useful. After some thought, Zhou Wen felt that it was best not to head to Chess Mountain.

Since it's the Demon God Catalog, the nine black dragons are demon dragons. The Guardian they are guarding might be compatible with the Demon God Catalog. Zhou Wen launched the game and ran to the underground sea to obtain a drop of the Guardian's blood. However, it was useless. The Demon God Catalog didn't absorb it.

He went to Ant City to give it a try, but the outcome was the same. The blood essence of the two Guardians was useless for the Demon God Catalog. However, this also meant that the Demon God Catalog wasn't an Essence Energy stat.

This path doesn't seem to work. Zhou Wen had to think of other solutions to see if he could find other Guardians that hadn't broken out of their cocoons.

Ding!

This was because most of his Life Soul and Essence Energy Art had reached a bottleneck. Zhou Wen could only game and grind dungeons on the way. This time, he had cleared all the Vermilion Bird's Seven Mansions while grinding in the Endless Sea of Stars.

The seven Essence Energy Skills were the same as the Seven Mansions of the East. They combined into one Essence Energy Skill. When used, a Vermillion Bird's shadow surrounded him. Just like the Seven Mansions of the East, they were all Essence Energy barrier-type skills. The level of the Essence Energy Skill didn't increase.

Could it be that I really have to gather all the 28 Lunar Mansion skills to reveal their true might? Zhou Wen had no

choice but to continue grinding.

The Northern Black Tortoise’s Seven Mansions and the Western White Tiger’s Seven Mansions each lacked a skill. They were especially difficult to grind. Zhou Wen had no idea how many times he had tried only to fail.

Zhou Wen deliberately grinded a few more times. In a stroke of luck, he managed to gather all the seven Essence Energy Skills of the Western White Tiger’s Seven Mansions.

The Essence Energy Skill that combined the seven skills was the same as Azure Dragon and Vermillion Bird. They were all protective Essence Energy Skills but its level didn’t increase.

Zhou Wen went all out as he farmed the Endless Sea of Stars again and again. He had to grind out the last skill to see what would happen after he gathered all the 28 Lunar Mansion skills.

However, Zhou Wen grinded for nearly ten days and dripped his blood to revive countless times but the last Mansion’s skill never appeared.

Thankfully, during this period, Zhou Wen obtained another Demon Blood True Dragon Companion Egg. Its stats were almost identical to the first two, but this one was a Qian Dragon.

Zhou Wen already had Qian, Kun, and Zhen of the nine Demon Blood True Dragons, but the three black dragons failed to fuse. No matter how he matched them, it would indicate that they lacked a main body.

What’s this main body? Could it be that the Demon Blood True Dragon with the Wu dragon pearl is the main body of the nine black dragons? Zhou Wen guessed.

However, if he couldn’t obtain a Wu True Dragon Companion Egg, his guessing was pointless.

Every time Zhou Wen respawned, he would grind the baby tiger, but after grinding for so long, no Companion Egg dropped. It was the same for some Mythical creatures. It was very difficult for the Companion Eggs to drop.

Even if Qiongqi is like Torch Dragon, a Companion Beast with only one attribute, Qiongqi should have produced one after farming it so many times, right? Or could it be that my way of grinding for it is wrong? Just like Medusa, Qiongqi needs a special method to have a Companion Egg drop?

After some thought, Zhou Wen thought of a possibility. *Don’t tell me it only drops a Companion Egg when someone with a ferocious Life Providence kills Qiongqi?*

With this possibility in mind, Zhou Wen planned on giving it a try.

The Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General’s Life Providence was extremely ferocious, but it was still at the Epic stage. It was definitely unrealistic for it to kill Qiongqi.

Thankfully, Zhou Wen had enough Mythical Companion Beasts. He summoned the Mythical pet team and had them charge into the Qiongqi temple. They ganked Qiongqi and beat it to a pulp.

The Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General then charged over and stabbed again and again. After striking for more than half an hour, it managed to kill Qiongqi.

Ding!

‘Killed Mythical creature, Qiongqi. Discovered Companion Egg.’

This really works? Zhou Wen’s mouth gaped open for a long time.

It was just a flash of brilliance that he gave a try. Who knew that it would really work?

If I had known this would happen, I would have had Qiongqi dropped a long time ago. Why would I have to wait so long? Zhou Wen could only sigh. Sometimes, brute force was really unacceptable. Intelligence was most important.

Qiongqi: Mythical (Evolvable)

Life Providence: Punishing Kindness and Raising Evil

Life Soul: Companion with Evil

Wheel of Destiny: Ferocious and Evil

Strength: 81

Speed: 81

Constitution: 81

Essence Energy: 81

Talent Skill: Evil Deeds Like Wind, Evil Deeds Everywhere, Devouring Whole, Badlands.

Companion Form: Mount

A top Mythical mount! Zhou Wen was first delighted, but when he carefully looked at Qiongqi’s skills and various abilities, his face darkened.

This thing was something that bullied the weak and feared the strong. When encountering evil people, due to the effect of the Companion with Evil Life Soul, not only would its stats decrease, even its skills would weaken.

However, when it came to fighting good people, it was ferocious. When it did good deeds, its stats would drop drastically. When it did evil deeds, its various stats would increase greatly. It was a wonder.

The skill that Zhou Wen couldn’t tolerate the most was Badlands. This skill was a passive skill that didn’t have any lethality. Its only use was that wherever it was, it would make the local area terrible, making people poor and evil. As its owner, he would naturally be the first to bear the brunt. Sooner or later, he would be poor, ferocious, and starving. He wouldn’t even have food to eat.

If I had known this would happen, why would I have spent time grinding for it? Zhou Wen was at a loss whether to laugh or cry as he looked at Qiongqi’s Companion Egg. It was too sinister for incubation.

But if he didn’t incubate it, he would be missing a top-notch mount Companion Beast. In terms of combat strength, it was top-notch. It would be a pity to throw it away.

Zhou Wen looked at the Companion Egg with an expression that kept changing. He was in a dilemma.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 859 - Mythical Tiger Soul General

Chapter 859: Mythical Tiger Soul General

After some hesitation, Zhou Wen still couldn’t make up his mind whether to incubate it. He first matched the Companion Egg with his pets.

In fact, Zhou Wen really wanted to throw it away. None of its skills and abilities made Zhou Wen find them especially useful. They all had various flaws.

The only thing that made it better was that it was especially fierce when it did evil. It was especially powerful when dealing with good people.

If Zhou Wen was a devil, Qiongqi would be an excellent-grade demon apart from its Badlands skill. It could unleash extremely powerful combat strength.

The problem was that Zhou Wen didn’t like to do evil, nor did he plan on killing good people. With such a thing and the risk of being poor while having nothing to eat, Zhou Wen really didn’t want to incubate it.

After watching for a while, he realized that Qiongqi’s compatibility with the other Companion Beasts wasn’t high. Just as Zhou Wen was about to throw it away, he thought of the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General he had summoned and matched it.

The 93% compatibility surprised Zhou Wen.

Birds of a feather flock together. The compatibility between these two fellows is astonishingly high. Zhou Wen thought for a moment and felt that it was a pity to throw away the Mythical Qiongqi, a top-notch Mythical creature, and its evolutionary ability.

From the looks of it, Jinxes Master doesn't seem to do much to me. Why don't I try fusing them? Perhaps there will be a good outcome after the two flawed Companion Beasts fuse? Even if they do not change for the better, it won't be any worse. Zhou Wen decided to give it a try as he placed the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General on the Qiongqi Companion Egg and chose to fuse them.

The 93% compatibility was as genuine as it could be. As a supplementary ingredient, the Qiongqi Companion Egg transformed into a stream of light and entered the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General's body, quickly completing the fusion.

The Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General that had been successfully fused didn't look much different. However, the tiger under the Tiger Soul General looked a little like Qiongqi.

Zhou Wen hurriedly looked at its stats and thought to himself, If only I could erase Jinxes Master.

Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General: Mythical (Evolvable)

Life Providence: Malicious Evil

Life Soul: Tiger Soul Runes

Wheel of Destiny: Ferocious and Evil

Strength: 81

Speed: 81

Constitution: 81

Essence Energy: 81

Talent Skill: Tempered Steel Cauldron, Rampage, Magic Stone Curse, One with Horse, Armor-Piercing Spear, Evil Deeds Everywhere, Badlands, Jinxes Master.

Companion Form: None

“…”

After seeing the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General’s stats, Zhou Wen was dumbfounded.

These stats were considered excellent. It was basically impossible to be stronger. It was the first time Zhou Wen had seen a Companion Beast with eight skills. Furthermore, there was a possibility of further improvement in the future. Perhaps it could achieve Terror transformation.

With Jinxes Master still around, Zhou Wen could still accept it. However, what the hell was that wretched Badlands? It actually fused with the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General.

With Jinxes Master and Badlands, it’s like it’s afraid I won’t die from a single strike. It follows up with execution from a thousand cuts! Zhou Wen had the urge to euthanize the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General.

However, on second thought, Zhou Wen held back. After all, Jinxes Master probably included being poor. It didn’t matter if there was the additional Badlands.

In the past, Jinxes Master had no effect on him. It didn’t make sense that Badlands could do anything to him.

I’ll observe it first. If I really can’t withstand it, I’ll have to think of a way to euthanize it as soon as possible. Zhou Wen thought to himself and quickly unsummoned Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General. He decided to try his best not to let it out.

At the same time, Zhou Wen summoned his baby tiger and got it to follow him, giving him some luck.

After doing all of this, Zhou Wen felt much more relaxed.

As he carefully continued on his way, Zhou Wen heightened his focus. Thankfully, nothing bad happened, allowing him to heave a sigh of relief.

Glimmer was much more difficult to evolve than Fine Dust. After walking for so long, Zhou Wen realized that although Glimmer was growing, its growth was very slow. At this rate, he didn’t know how many places he needed to visit to advance Glimmer to a Perfect Body.

The path Zhou Wen took was one that humans were still on; therefore, he didn’t encounter much danger.

On this day, Zhou Wen rode on the Great Might Vajra Bull and walked on a winding mountain road. At night, he had yet to walk out of the mountainous area. In front of him were unending mountains. The winding mountain roads were like snakes coiled around the mountain.

As he walked, he suddenly saw many trucks parked on the road ahead. They looked like a convoy, but he didn’t know why they were parked there.

Typically, convoys would stop at a fixed service area. They wouldn’t usually stop on this mountain road in the middle of the night.

Behind the convoy were many soldiers in military uniforms. When they saw the Great Might Vajra Bull, they were shocked. Immediately, many soldiers ran over from the front of the army. Many soldiers raised their guns and aimed at the Great Might Vajra Bull.

When they saw Zhou Wen sitting on the Great Might Vajra Bull’s back, they heaved a sigh of relief. However, they didn’t let down their guard. The dozens of guns were still aimed at Zhou Wen and the Great Might Vajra Bull.

“We are the Federation’s transport team. Who are you?” The officer in the lead shouted at Zhou Wen from afar.

Zhou Wen didn’t rashly head over. He stopped the Great Might Vajra Bull and asked, “I’m a student of Sunset College. I’m preparing to rush back to Luoyang. What happened here?”

“For some reason, a large portion of the Panshan Road ahead has collapsed. Our vehicles can’t drive over, so we are trying to think of a solution. If you don’t have the ability to fly, I’m afraid you can only reroute,” the officer said.

“I have some flying abilities, but I can’t fly too far. Can you let me take a look?” Zhou Wen asked.

The officer discussed with the person beside him for a while before saying to Zhou Wen, “Alright, you can come over, but put away the Companion Beast first.”

Zhou Wen put away the Great Might Vajra Bull and walked over with Ya’er in his arms.

“It’s already very dangerous for a student like you to take mountain paths at night. Why are you carrying a child?” the officer said as he looked at Ya’er in Zhou Wen’s arms.

Perhaps it was because of a girl like Ya’er that they were willing to let Zhou Wen approach the convoy.

“Bad things are happening to this world. Her parents are gone, so I can only take her to school,” Zhou Wen said.

The soldiers revealed looks of sympathy, and the atmosphere eased a lot.

“This world… Sigh…” The officer sighed and led Zhou Wen forward.

Indeed, a large portion of the mountain road ahead was blocked. It was estimated that several hundred meters of the mountain road had collapsed. The Epic experts in the operations team were using their flying pets to slowly transport the goods and vehicles separately.

However, as there were only three flying pets working, the goods that could be transported at once were very limited, so the progress was very slow.

Zhou Wen looked at the broken mountain road and couldn’t help but frown.

The mountain road had almost completely collapsed. Even the mountain wall had collapsed. Zhou Wen looked at it for a while and felt that they had not collapsed naturally, nor did they look like they had been smashed by something heavy. It was more like something had bitten into them.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it

as soon as possible.

Chapter 860 - Slaying With One Strike

Chapter 860: Slaying With One Strike

Zhou Wen sized up his surroundings and looked at the map. He didn't discover any dimensional zones nearby.

The closest dimensional zone was about sixty kilometers away.

Is there a break-out creature nearby? Zhou Wen didn't dare let his guard down. He used Truth Listener's ability to scan the vicinity, but he didn't find any dimensional creatures.

To be able to cause such damage, it should be very large. Why didn't I discover it? Zhou Wen was puzzled.

However, on second thought, it made sense. After such a thing had happened, the transport team would definitely have checked the surroundings. If there was such a huge dimensional creature, it was impossible not to have found it, nor would they have been transporting goods here in the middle of the night.

"Lad, can you fly over?" the officer beside him asked Zhou Wen.

"This distance shouldn't be a problem," Zhou Wen answered with a nod.

"You should only do so if you are confident. Don't take any risks with a child," the officer exhorted.

“Thank you. I’m confident.” After Zhou Wen thanked her, he leaped up with Ya’er in his arms. After leveraging himself off the mountain wall, he arrived at the mountain pass opposite.

“The students of Sunset College are indeed extraordinary. This movement technique is truly impressive. If I had been able to get into Sunset College back then, I would have long been a section commander after toiling for so many years,” a soldier said enviously when he received the news that Zhou Wen was coming.

Zhou Wen didn’t want to be too ostentatious, or he would have flown over. He never expected such a movement technique to be praised by the typical soldier.

“When you got here, was the road already like this?” Zhou Wen asked one of the soldiers.

“That’s right. When we were about forty to fifty kilometers away, we heard a loud bang. At that time, we were wondering what had happened. Only when we arrived did we realize that the road had collapsed,” the soldier answered.

If it were anywhere else, it might be difficult to hear sounds. However, this was a mountain road. The distance of forty to fifty kilometers was the travel distance; the actual straight-line distance wasn’t that far.

It won’t take long to travel forty to fifty kilometers here. If there really are break-out creatures, theoretically speaking, they shouldn’t be able to go far. Zhou Wen constantly used Truth Listener to scan the area. This time, he focused on scanning the forest at the foot of the mountain.

This was because Zhou Wen previously felt that the dimensional creature was likely very large. It was impossible

for it to be hidden in the forest.

Furthermore, there were no signs of the forest being destroyed. It didn’t look like a behemoth had passed by.

However, for safety’s sake, Zhou Wen carefully scanned the forest.

As there weren’t any dimensional zones nearby, the forest below didn’t undergo much mutation. The trees weren’t too tall either. Zhou Wen scanned the area for a while, thinking that he wouldn’t find anything, but suddenly, he discovered a creature rushing through the forest.

The creature looked like a centipede. It was huge and its body was probably the thickness of a bucket. Its upper body had a human torso, legs, and head. It looked extremely strange.

It advanced through the forest and was almost at the mountain path.

What dimensional creature is this? Was the mountain path destroyed by it? Zhou Wen didn’t have time to think as he said to the soldiers, “There seems to be a dimensional creature in the forest below. Quickly evacuate the gap. Don’t get too close.”

The soldier was taken aback. He looked down and didn’t see anything. He used the walkie-talkie to pass Zhou Wen’s words to the officer across him.

The officer hurriedly got someone to carefully observe the situation below. While they were still observing, they saw the monster with a centipede tail crawl out of the mountain wall.

“Dimensional creature. Prepare to fire.” The officer immediately gave the order to shoot. Essence Gold bullets rained down on the dimensional creature.

The hard bullets appeared to shoot into rubber and stuck in its body. The terrifying thing was that the bullets quickly melted into its body as though they had been absorbed by its body.

Seeing that the Essence Gold bullets were ineffective, the Epic officer ordered a giant eagle Companion Beast to release a claw beam from the sky to attack the monster.

The monster looked up and glanced at the giant eagle. A blood-red beam shot out from its eyes. When the beam touched the giant eagle’s body, it immediately plummeted from the sky. While still in midair, it had already melted into a pool of blood.

The officer was alarmed. Their transport team had two Epic officers. Together, they had five Epic Companion Beasts. With such strength, they could deal with ordinary emergencies unless they encountered Mythical creatures.

Now, an Epic Lightning Eagle had been killed in one strike. Such strength seemed to have exceeded the Epic stage.

“Retreat, everyone fall back.” The officer gave the order, but it was too late.

Before the soldiers could board the vehicle, the monster had already climbed up the mountain wall. Its eyes suffused with a red glow. When the beam of light landed on the truck, it melted.

Everyone’s hearts were covered in a shadow. Having encountered such a terrifying dimensional creature, they

were probably doomed.

“Retreat! Retreat immediately! Commander Yan and I will provide cover. The rest of you retreat immediately. Ignore the goods. Retreat immediately!” As the officer roared, he summoned his Companion Beasts to hold back the monster and cover the others’ retreat.

The monster’s body, which was dozens of meters long, climbed up the mountain wall and let out a strange roar. Its red eyes shot red beams at the officer.

The officer quickly dodged. At the same time, he slashed out a sword beam with an Epic Companion Beast sword in his hand, hoping to slice through the monster’s centipede-like body.

However, just as he moved, the centipede-like body swept over. The countless centipede feet were about to grab his body.

The officer’s sword beam slashed at the centipede, but the sword beam scattered like glass after shattering. It failed to deal any damage.

“It’s over!” The officer’s face was pale. He had already tried his best to retreat, but the difference in speed was too great. He was unable to dodge the centipede’s attack.

Suddenly, a golden sword beam descended from the sky like a bolt of lightning, illuminating everyone’s eyes.

In the next second, they saw the golden sword beam cleave the monster’s body in half. The monster split into two and fell down the cliff.

At that moment, they saw the spot where the golden sword beam had vanished. A figure held a golden sword in one hand and a girl in the other. He was floating above the broken road. It was naturally Zhou Wen.

The officer and soldiers were dumbfounded as they looked at Zhou Wen in disbelief.

“Thank you for your help,” the officer said as he saluted Zhou Wen.

“I’m afraid it’s not safe here. There are other dimensional creatures. It’s best you leave quickly,” Zhou Wen said as he summoned Tyrant Behemoth and made it grow in size.

“Tyrant Behemoth… That’s Tyrant Behemoth… So Tyrant Behemoth isn’t a Companion Beast from the West District…” the soldiers immediately shouted when they saw Tyrant Behemoth.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 861 - Mountain God Temple

Chapter 861: Mountain God Temple

Zhou Wen directly ordered Tyrant Behemoth to help the transport team take their trucks and goods to the other side of the broken road.

The trucks were like toys in front of Tyrant Behemoth. It could pick them up with one hand.

Soon, all the trucks, goods, and people had been moved to the other side of the broken road.

“May I know your name?” the officer asked Zhou Wen.

“Zhou Wen,” Zhou Wen answered before saying to the officer, “Leave quickly. This isn’t just the only dimensional creature. There are even more terrifying existences. There might be danger if you continue delaying.”

The officer bowed at Zhou Wen and didn’t dawdle. He immediately instructed all the soldiers to board the vehicle and leave with the goods.

“Commander Jin, I never expected Tyrant Behemoth to be a Companion Beast of our East District. Furthermore, it’s owned by such a young student. That Zhou Wen is really impressive. Not only are his Companion Beasts powerful, but he’s also powerful. He killed such a terrifying dimensional creature with a single strike. If humanity’s students are as powerful as him, would we need to be afraid of dimensional creatures in the future?” the soldier beside him said excitedly to the officer.

Jin Shihao shook his head and said with a bitter smile, “I’m afraid there might not even be one such person in a billion people. It’s just impossible for them to protect all of humanity. We soldiers are also very important. Therefore, we have to work hard to become stronger. Even if we can’t reach their level, we can still protect our compatriots who are weaker than us.”

“Although that’s the case, I’m afraid we won’t be able to possess such strength for the rest of our lives.” The soldier sighed.

Jin Shihao cursed, “If everyone thinks like you, humanity is probably doomed. If we can’t do it now, it doesn’t mean that we won’t be able to do it in the future. Did the humans of ancient times imagine that everyone would have a phone one day? Back in times of peace, would people have thought that everyone would be holding a gun to do battle? People like Zhou Wen are the pioneers of the times. One day, pioneers like them will bring powerful Companion Beasts, Essence Energy Arts, and Essence Energy Skills to everyone. When that happens, humanity will truly be able to change the world. We have to work hard to become stronger. If that day really comes and we don’t even have the ability to helm those powers, we will really be doomed.”

“Commander, I understand what you mean. By standing on the shoulders of giants we can see further. However, seeing it with our own eyes is still too shocking. He’s clearly so young, but he actually has such strength. Is the difference in talent between humans that huge?” the soldier said wistfully.

Zhou Wen constantly scanned the forest below. The collapse of the mountain path was definitely not something the dead

dimensional creature could do. There had to be stronger dimensional creatures nearby.

However, he scanned the forest repeatedly and didn't discover anything else.

With a thought, Zhou Wen put on the Invisibility Cloak and wrapped Ya'er in it before heading in the direction the centipede monster had come from.

The dense forest was dark and eerie under the moonlight. Zhou Wen didn't enter the forest, afraid that something would happen, so he flew above it.

With the Invisibility Cloak on him and the Earth Elemental Beast ready to fight at any moment, Zhou Wen's escaping ability was at its peak. With Truth Listener's ability, he could escape even if he couldn't defeat the adversary.

He didn't discover anything along the way. Thankfully, the smell from the centipede monster was still present. Zhou Wen followed the smell and turned towards a mountain before discovering something.

There was a hill over there, standing at less than two to three hundred meter, but it was rather steep. On the mountain's peak, there was a building that resembled a temple.

There's actually an Earth Temple in such a place? Zhou Wen was somewhat surprised. He observed the hill and didn't find any stone steps leading up.

Strange, there aren't any stone steps. How did the ancients build it? Zhou Wen carefully sized up the temple and realized that there was incense burning inside.

There was a wooden plaque hanging above the temple's entrance. On the wooden plaque were the words "Mountain God Temple."

So it's not an Earth Temple, but a Mountain God Temple. Zhou Wen frowned slightly.

If it was an Earth Temple, there was no need to worry too much. This was because the nature of Earth Temples in the East District were similar. Typically, there wouldn't be too much danger. They even provided benefits at times.

However, Mountain God Temples were different. Mountain God Temples were divided into temples that consecrated orthodox and evil gods. Orthodox Mountain God Temples were similar to Earth Temples, so they weren't very dangerous.

However, it was difficult to say for the Mountain God Temples that consecrated evil gods.

Some so-called mountain gods were actually demons that had developed sentience in the mountains. There were good and bad demons, and their personalities were completely different. It was because of their magical abilities that humans treated them as mountain gods to worship.

However, these mountain gods might not protect humans. There were even many mountain gods who wantonly killed humans. They made humans so afraid of them that they were worshiped.

Although the Mountain God Temple on the mountain wasn't big, it was rather exquisitely built. It was made of pure wood, and there was incense burning inside. As the words "Mountain God Temple" were written, Zhou Wen didn't know what the Mountain God inside looked like.

That centipede monster should have come from the Mountain God Temple. From the looks of it, the Mountain God here is most likely an evil god. The collapsed mountain path probably has something to do with this Mountain God, Zhou Wen thought to himself.

Zhou Wen focused Truth Listener's power on the Mountain God Temple, wanting to know what was inside.

As a mysterious force enveloped the Mountain God Temple, he previously couldn't clearly hear the situation inside. Now that Truth Listener was doing its best, the scene inside the Mountain God Temple gradually surfaced in Zhou Wen's mind.

The temple hall was simple. On an offering table, there was something consecrated. There was an incense burner in front of it. There was incense in the burner, and there were candles on both sides. He did not know who had lit the incense.

When Zhou Wen saw what was in the temple, his expression turned odd.

It's indeed an evil god's Mountain God Temple. I've seen offerings for Snake Immortals, Fox Immortals, and Yellow Immortals. This is the first time I've seen someone giving offerings to a toad. Zhou Wen looked at the Mountain God Temple and couldn't help but be curious.

What was consecrated in the Mountain God Temple looked like a toad. The fat statue was sprawled on the table with its eyes closed, as though it was enjoying itself.

Its entire body seemed to be made of copper. There were many spots on its body, making it look ugly. If it were Zhou

Wen, he definitely wouldn’t consecrate such a mountain god.

However, after taking a closer look, Zhou Wen felt that something was amiss.

It looked like a toad lying there, but upon closer inspection, he discovered that this fellow was somewhat different from a toad.

Just as Zhou Wen was carefully observing it, he saw it open its eyes and look at him.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 862 - Fortune Devouring

Chapter 862: Fortune Devouring

Zhou Wen wore the Invisibility Cloak. Although he wasn't completely invisible, he was still visually invisible. The toad-like mountain god stared straight at Zhou Wen, clearly able to see him.

The mountain god looked at Zhou Wen and opened his mouth to let out a strange cry.

Zhou Wen was alarmed as he quickly retreated. At the same time, he drew the Golden Overlord Sword to prevent any possible attacks.

Zhou Wen didn't discover any terrifying forces rushing out of the Mountain God Temple, but his pocket twitched before everything turned still again.

What happened? Zhou Wen was somewhat confused. He knew that something must have happened as he reached into his pocket and his expression immediately turned odd.

His pocket was as good as before, but the change he had inside was gone. There were only a few hundred bucks in total. Zhou Wen had kept it on him as a backup if he needed to get a ride or for daily necessities.

Now, not a single cent remained. It had vanished into thin air.

Is it that mountain god's doing? But how did it do it? As Zhou Wen was alarmed, the mountain god cried at him

again.

Zhou Wen hurriedly flew to dodge. He didn’t know what the mountain god’s strength was, so he could only try his best to distance himself from it to prevent any more losses.

Unfortunately, Zhou Wen was still too late. With the mountain god’s strange cry, Zhou Wen felt his wrist lighten as the bracelet he had been wearing vanished.

Not good! Zhou Wen was alarmed. The bracelet wasn’t worth much to begin with. It was fine if he lost it, but it was embedded with Chaos Bead. There were many things inside the Chaos Bead that couldn’t be lost.

Zhou Wen immediately summoned Tyrant Behemoth and made it gigantic. He threw a huge fist at the Mountain God Temple on top of the hill, hoping to smash it to pieces.

Boom!

The toad-like Mountain God Temple rushed out. Its body rapidly expanded to the point of being comparable to Tyrant Behemoth. Its head collided with Tyrant Behemoth’s fist.

It was unknown what its head was made of, but it was extremely hard. Tyrant Behemoth’s fist seemed to strike steel. It failed to injure the mountain god.

Only then did Zhou Wen see that although the fellow was ugly, it wasn’t a toad. Its body was like a lion, its feet were like a Qilin, and its head was like a dragon. The spots on its body weren’t spots, but copper coin-shaped scales.

The copper coin-shaped scales covered its body. When its body shrank, it looked like a lump on a toad’s body.

Could this thing be the legendary Pixiu? Zhou Wen looked at it and connected it to its previous abilities. He immediately thought of a legendary mythical beast.

Legend had it that the mythical beast, Pixiu, was also known as Tianlu, Evil Warding, and Hundred Cures. It was an auspicious beast that could exorcise evil and ward off calamity. It ate the wealth from everywhere, and it only ate without excreting. It could attract wealth and treasures, only allowing entry and not exit.

Anyone who wanted to get rich would have a divine beast like a Pixiu in their home or shop.

The more Zhou Wen looked at this fellow, the more it resembled the legendary Pixiu. It wasn't at a disadvantage when fighting Tyrant Behemoth when it came to Strength, Speed, or Constitution.

It bit down and bit off a piece of a hill beside it. Its combat strength was extremely terrifying.

It's definitely the one who gnawed off the mountain path. Zhou Wen ordered the Golden Overlord Sword to slash at Pixiu, hoping to help Tyrant Behemoth kill it and see if he could get the Chaos Bead from its stomach.

Seeing the Golden Overlord Sword fly over, Pixiu opened its mouth and let out a strange cry. It sucked the Golden Overlord Sword into its stomach.

*Holy sh*t, this fellow's ability is a little sick. It can even devour a Mythical weapon?* Zhou Wen was dumbfounded. He didn't attack blindly and instead distanced himself from it. He observed its battle with Tyrant Behemoth from afar, hoping to find its weakness before attacking.

Tyrant Behemoth couldn’t gain the upper hand. It roared and used Absolute Strength. Its powerful strength immediately suppressed Pixiu as it punched at it, sending it rolling around the mountain.

However, Pixiu had thick skin and flesh. It was only slightly injured, so Tyrant Behemoth couldn’t kill it anytime soon.

This infuriated Pixiu. It opened its mouth and, like a monster that was devouring the world, let out a strange cry that sounded like a bull.

Zhou Wen, who had retreated far away, felt his body tremble. Some of his valuable items had vanished. Even the accessories he had bought for Ya’er had vanished.

What was even more exaggerated was that the ground beneath cracked open, revealing a gold mine. Large amounts of gold ore surged into the Pixiu’s mouth, causing its body to glow with golden light as though it was made of gold.

Clang! Clang! Clang!

Perhaps because it had devoured a large amount of gold ore, Pixiu was actually on a par with Tyrant Behemoth, who had activated Absolute Strength. Even if it was inferior, it was difficult for Tyrant Behemoth to severely injure it.

Not long after, the golden light on Pixiu’s body dimmed significantly, perhaps a result of expending all the energy from devouring the gold mine. This was when it suddenly rushed out.

Tyrant Behemoth chased after it relentlessly. After crossing several mountains, Pixiu roared again. The ground split open, revealing a silver mine beneath.

A large amount of silver ore flew into Pixiu’s mouth, causing its body to emit a silver glow. Its combat strength increased once again as it fought Tyrant Behemoth.

Thankfully, Tyrant Behemoth had never been afraid of anyone in a melee battle. It fought Pixiu crazily, causing the surrounding mountains to collapse. Large craters appeared on the ground as large swaths of the forest were destroyed.

Before long, the silver light on Pixiu’s body dimmed again. It fled towards the mountainous area again. Soon, it found another copper mine and devoured it to fight Tyrant Behemoth.

After a long struggle, the light on Pixiu’s body slowly dimmed. Tyrant Behemoth’s Absolute Strength time was up as well. The two ferocious beasts had passed their peak, but they were still battling each other in exhaustion. They looked extremely ferocious.

This fellow has the ability to devour wealth and sense wealth. As long as I have something related to wealth on me, I’ll be sensed if I approach it. If I want to kill it, I can only lightly equip myself. With a thought, Zhou Wen first sent Ya’er to a safe place before placing all the items that were worth something beside her. Then, he put on the Invisibility Cloak and used its Invisibility ability to secretly approach Pixiu.

Zhou Wen didn’t use the Light Concealment Sword. Such a sword might be considered a treasure. If Pixiu were to discover it and devour it, it wouldn’t be worth it.

He approached Pixiu from behind, but this time, it didn’t discover him. Zhou Wen didn’t use a weapon and only summoned Doctor Darkness to get him to fuse his soul with him.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 863 - Three Copper Coins

Chapter 863: Three Copper Coins

After fusing, Zhou Wen arrived behind Pixiu. His Eyes of Penetration activated, allowing him to see through Pixiu's body.

The Golden Overlord Sword had already been melted and absorbed by Pixiu, making Zhou Wen's heart ache. Such a divine weapon had been destroyed by it.

The gold, silver, and copper ore that it had devoured had mostly melted. Thankfully, Zhou Wen saw that the Chaos Bead hadn't been melted and absorbed. The bracelet was gone, leaving only a bead.

Thankfully, the Chaos Bead is still here. Zhou Wen took the opportunity to use Doctor Darkness's Wheel of Destiny while Pixiu and Tyrant Behemoth were fighting.

Darkness Right Hand was activated as Zhou Wen's right hand reached into the back of Pixiu's head and stirred it, tearing a huge chunk of its brain apart.

As it was too big, Darkness Right Hand couldn't pluck out its entire brain. It could only do its best to cause damage.

Pixiu let out a tragic cry. Tyrant Behemoth took the opportunity to press it to the ground. It rode on its body and pummeled it with its fists.

Zhou Wen didn't stay idle either. He used the remaining two Darkness Right Hand abilities consecutively, turning its

brain into a mess.

With problems arising in Pixiu’s brain, it no longer had the ability to resist. It was repeatedly struck in the chest by Tyrant Behemoth, and its struggles weakened.

Seeing that it no longer had the ability to suck wealth, Zhou Wen summoned the Light Concealment Sword and slashed its neck.

Tyrant Behemoth extended its claws into the wound and forcefully ripped open the wound. Finally, it tore off its head. A divine beast had died.

Zhou Wen summoned Truth Listener and let the mini Truth Listener enter its stomach to take out the Chaos Bead.

Soon, Truth Listener crawled out again. It held the Chaos Bead in one claw, but there was something else in the other claw.

Zhou Wen took a careful look and saw that the item Truth Listener had pulled out was three copper coins tied with a red string. The copper coins were circular on its outer rim, but there was a square hole in the middle. As they were too ancient, the patterns and words on them couldn’t be seen clearly. They were strung together by a red string, making them look inconspicuous.

However, this item wasn’t digested or absorbed by Pixiu’s stomach. Clearly, it wasn’t an ordinary item.

Truth Listener placed the Chaos Bead and copper coins in Zhou Wen’s hand. Zhou Wen took the copper coins and looked at them, but he didn’t find anything special. He first put away the copper coins before using his penetrative vision to look at Pixiu’s body.

There aren’t any Companion Eggs or dimensional crystals? Zhou Wen couldn’t help but be disappointed. Pixiu’s abilities were very special. It would have been good to obtain a Companion Egg.

Unfortunately, Pixiu didn’t drop anything. He even lost the Golden Overlord Sword, making Zhou Wen feel like he had suffered a huge loss.

From the looks of it, I’ll have to think of a way to fuse a new weapon that’s similar to the Golden Overlord Sword, Zhou Wen thought.

However, Ever-Victorious was too difficult to farm. The success rate of fusion wasn’t high either. The chances of fusing an identical Golden Overlord Sword were very low.

Thankfully, Zhou Wen didn’t have OCD. All he needed to do was fuse Ever-Victorious and Unstoppable into one weapon.

I wonder if I can fuse those skills onto the Light Concealment Sword. Zhou Wen had that thought. He could only slowly try it in the future.

After searching the area and finding no other dimensional creatures, Zhou Wen left with Ya’er.

These copper coins don’t seem to be anything special. Why weren’t they digested by Pixiu? On the way back, Zhou Wen studied the three copper coins, but no matter what Essence Energy Art he injected, he couldn’t activate them.

Apart from being harder than the typical copper coin, Zhou Wen didn’t see any use for them.

I should think of a way to get a weapon. Zhou Wen also had a Mutated Overlord Snake that he had previously obtained.

It had the Ever-Victorious ability.

Unfortunately, when Zhou Wen matched it with the Light Concealment Sword, he found the compatibility to be pitifully low—less than twenty.

The Golden Battle God Halberd's compatibility with the Light Concealment Sword wasn't high either. It was only 31. Zhou Wen didn't dare mess around with such a success rate.

It doesn't seem realistic to fuse these two skills with the Light Concealment Sword. What if I fuse them with a sword-type Companion Beast before fusing them with the Light Concealment Sword? Zhou Wen decided to give it a try.

After grinding the Ancient Sword Tomb for so long, he didn't obtain any other Mythical swords. However, he obtained quite a number of Epic and Legendary swords.

Zhou Wen used the swords to match the Overlord Snake and Golden Battle God Halberd and quickly found one with a higher compatibility score.

He first used a sword to fuse with the Overlord Snake, but with a high compatibility of 63, the fusion ended up failing.

He used the Golden Battle God Halberd and another Epic sword to fuse. This time, the fusion succeeded, but the Unstoppable skill was deleted from the fusion.

Why is my luck so bad? Zhou Wen thought of the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General's newly added Badlands skill and felt a little uneasy. *Could it be that the skill is showing its effects? I've suffered quite a loss this time...*

Without the Golden Battle God Halberd and Mutated Overlord Snake as ingredients, it was impossible to continue

any fusion. Zhou Wen had no choice but to temporarily give up on his previous plans and wait for a Companion Egg to drop.

Along the way, Zhou Wen focused his attention on grinding dungeons. He focused on the Endless Sea of Stars and the Ancient Sword Tomb. He wanted to obtain the complete 28 Lunar Mansion skills from the Endless Sea of Stars. He also wanted to obtain another Mythical Sword from the Ancient Sword Tomb.

The Light Concealment Sword was very powerful when used for assassination, but it wasn’t suitable in a head-on battle. Zhou Wen still needed a weapon for melee battles.

It was unknown if his luck had really changed for the worse. After grinding for a few days, nothing decent dropped. Instead, quite a number of useless Companion Eggs dropped.

Since he had to walk around to advance his Glimmer Life Soul, Zhou Wen took a detour to the Founding Emperor Tomb. He wanted to see if there was a tiny palm symbol to download the dungeon.

Before reaching the Founding Emperor Tomb, Zhou Wen saw a bustling town-like market. Many people were selling dimensional crystals and Companion Eggs produced in the Founding Emperor Tomb.

There were many unique Companion Eggs in the Founding Emperor Tomb, such as the Bronze Men that Zhou Wen had seen before and the Earth Elemental Beast. They were all from the Founding Emperor Tomb.

However, the Founding Emperor Tomb that humans knew of was actually only the periphery of the Founding Emperor

Tomb. It was impossible to enter the tomb’s interior.

If the Founding Emperor Tomb was considered a huge underground city, the area that humans were in contact with now wouldn’t even reach the city gates.

Besides the legendary six heroes, no one had entered the true Founding Emperor Tomb.

Zhou Wen was just about to pass through the bazaar and head to the periphery of the Founding Emperor Tomb to search for the tiny palm symbol when he saw a commotion in the bazaar. He didn’t know what the group was doing.

After paying a little attention, Zhou Wen realized that Liu Yun was in the crowd, arguing with an old man.

Liu Yun doesn’t do anything unless there are benefits involved. What’s he doing here? Zhou Wen’s interest was piqued as he found a corner that no one was paying attention to and secretly observed Liu Yun’s every move.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 864 - Selling the Sword

Chapter 864: Selling the Sword

Zhou Wen watched from the side for a while before finally understanding the reason behind Liu Yun's argument with the old man.

Liu Yun insisted on buying the old man's bronze sword, but the old man refused to sell it no matter what. One insisted on buying while the other refused to sell. Therefore, they began arguing.

It wasn't that the old man really wasn't selling it, but that the old man insisted on using the bronze sword to exchange for a Mythical Companion Beast. Otherwise, he wouldn't sell it no matter how much money was given.

The old man also said that his bronze sword had been dug out from the Founding Emperor Tomb before the dimensional storms. It was the Founding Emperor's sword.

No one believed him. Even if it was really the Founding Emperor's sword, it wasn't worth much in modern times. At most, it was an antique.

However, the old man insisted on exchanging the sword for a Mythical Companion Beast. It was unknown what Liu Yun was up to. He insisted on buying the sword, but he couldn't produce a Mythical Companion Beast.

Something's amiss. How can a thick-skinned fellow like Liu Yun buy a sword so honestly? It's even more impossible for him to make a din here. If he really wanted that sword, he

should have secretly stolen it... What is this fellow trying to do? Zhou Wen thought to himself.

“I’ll give you three Epic Bronze Man Companion Eggs in exchange for your sword,” Liu Yun said to the old man.

“I won’t exchange even for ten, much less three.” The old man was very stubborn. He hugged the bronze sword and refused to let go. He was dead stubborn.

When others heard that Liu Yun wanted to exchange three Bronze Man Companion Eggs for a crappy bronze sword, they were alarmed.

“How about five? This is all I have,” Liu Yun said as he placed five Companion Eggs in front of the old man.

Everyone was alarmed when they saw this. There were very few locals who didn’t know the Bronze Man Companion Egg. Even if they hadn’t personally obtained one, they had definitely seen one.

The five Companion Eggs that Liu Yun took out were undoubtedly Bronze Men.

“Dude, you have five Bronze Man Companion Eggs. Why don’t you exchange them for something good? Why do you have to exchange them for his crappy sword?” a person beside him said.

Everyone agreed. Bronze Man Companion Eggs were very famous, but there weren’t many of them, so their prices were very high. To be able to produce five at once was something even the elderly who had been setting up stalls here had never seen.

“Nothing else. I just like that sword. I think it might be a treasure,” Liu Yun said casually.

“This is obviously a treasure. If you want it, you can exchange it using a Mythical Companion Beast. Otherwise, it’s useless no matter what you say,” the old man said firmly.

Everyone found Liu Yun and the old man crazy. Liu Yun was a prodigal, and the old man was a fool.

A burly man squeezed forward and looked at the five Bronze Man Companion Eggs on the ground. He swallowed his saliva and said to Liu Yun, “Brother, I have a sword that’s about the same as his. If you want it, I’ll sell it for five Bronze Man Companion Eggs.”

“I want a treasure sword dug out from the Founding Emperor Tomb. Do you think I want any sword?” Liu Yun curled his lips.

“Hey, what the hell are you saying. This sword of mine was a treasure my great-grandfather dug out from the Founding Emperor Tomb,” the man hurriedly said.

“For real?” Liu Yun looked at the sword in his hand in disbelief.

Indeed, the two ancient swords were very similar with only slight differences. From a comprehensive take of the two swords, they likely originated from the same period.

“Of course it’s real. It’s definitely more real than that old man’s,” the man said as he patted his chest.

However, the old man said coldly, “Don’t be greedy for small gains. If you are greedy, you will suffer a huge loss. What’s the point of buying a fake with five Companion Eggs?”

“Old man, whose goods are you calling fake? You are the one selling a fake,” the man said angrily.

Liu Yun laughed and said to the old man, “Old man, don’t tell me you are regretting it? It’s too late for regrets now. I won’t buy your sword. Let’s see who else will offer such a high price.”

With that said, Liu Yun pushed the five Companion Eggs towards the man and said, “I don’t care if yours is genuine or fake. I’ll buy yours. I want to let that old fool regret it.”

The burly man was overjoyed as he hurriedly took the Bronze Man Companion Eggs. He was still worried, so he got someone to check them for him. After confirming that they were Bronze Man Companion Eggs, he handed the ancient sword to Liu Yun.

“Old Man, just wallow in regret.” As Liu Yun spoke, he left.

Zhou Wen put on the Invisibility Cloak and secretly followed.

Liu Yun didn’t go to the town. After making a turn, he ran to a nearby forest and sat on a large tree root to smoke.

After a while, he saw the old man who was trying to sell the sword sneak into the forest.

When Zhou Wen saw the elder, he immediately came to a realization. The two of them were in cahoots. They had caused a commotion just to make the burly man sell his sword.

The burly man was a freelance hunter who had entered a dimensional zone. He wasn’t selling things at a stall. They definitely wanted the burly man’s sword, but it wasn’t

convenient for them to just buy it from him, so they had set up such a trap.

What's that ancient sword? Is it worth Liu Yun spending so much effort on? Zhou Wen secretly sized up the ancient sword in Liu Yun's arms.

"How is it? Is it real?" the old man asked Liu Yun after entering.

"There's no problem. It's real. With this sword, we can enter the Founding Emperor Tomb," said Liu Yun.

"Let me take a look," the old man said as he went to take the sword.

However, Liu Yun retracted his hand and didn't let the old man touch the sword. He said with a smile, "Why are you in such a rush? Didn't we agree that I'll hold the sword and open the door? When we return, we'll split the items equally. With the sword with me, don't worry because nothing will go wrong."

"I'm just afraid that you'll be cheated. I'll help you take a look and see if that's really the Emperor Qin Sword," the old man said without changing his expression.

"I have always been the scammer, not the other way. Don't worry." Liu Yun held the ancient sword and asked the old man, "When are we going to take action?"

"The sooner the better. If you're ready, we'll take action tonight," the old man said.

"Alright, it's settled then. We'll meet outside the Founding Emperor Tomb tonight." Liu Yun turned around and left.

The old man watched Liu Yun’s back disappear before turning to leave.

Zhou Wen secretly looked in the direction the old man had left and fell into thought. He had a nagging feeling that the old man was somewhat familiar, as though he had seen him somewhere before. However, from his face and figure, he didn’t seem to have any impression of him.

This old man… Don’t tell me he’s Jing Daoxian… An idea suddenly flashed in Zhou Wen’s mind as he thought of that familiar feeling.

This was because the aura the old man occasionally exuded was very similar to Jing Daoxian’s, but his appearance and figure were different.

Changing his looks and figure shouldn’t be difficult for Jing Daoxian. I think it’s most likely him. However, why is he with Liu Yun? Why do the two of them want to enter the Founding Emperor Tomb? Zhou Wen was filled with curiosity.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 865 - Xie Yukun

Chapter 865: Xie Yukun

Zhou Wen thought for a moment and felt that this had nothing to do with him. He didn't plan on entering the Founding Emperor Tomb, so he stopped making wild guesses.

After circling around, he returned to the periphery of the Founding Emperor Tomb. He searched for the tiny palm symbol at the edge of the tomb, hoping to gain something.

Zhou Wen had no intention of entering the Founding Emperor Tomb to begin with. Now that he knew that Liu Yun and Jing Daoxian were entering, he was even less likely to enter. All he did was walk around the periphery.

There were terracotta soldiers on the periphery. They were basically at the Legendary stage, and further in were Epic Bronze Men. It was said that there were also Mythical Gold Men, but they were extremely rare. Zhou Wen didn't see them.

When he was about to reach the Founding Emperor Tomb, Zhou Wen slowed down. He definitely wouldn't enter the imperial mausoleum. All he needed to do was look for the tiny palm symbol.

In the dungeon that Zhou Wen had downloaded, there was already a Thirteen Mausoleum. It was the only game dungeon that Zhou Wen had yet to enter.

The main reason was that there were some mysterious things in that dungeon. If one didn’t handle it well, problems would arise. More importantly, he couldn’t find the entrance and could only circle around the periphery.

A place like a mausoleum was not meant for entry to begin with, so it was naturally impossible for there to be an entrance. If one wanted to enter, they could only dig their way in.

It was the same for the Founding Emperor Tomb. There were no doors, but there were numerous holes dug nearby. It was said that many people wanted to enter, but things would happen midway. Up to now, only the six heroes had successfully entered.

Using Truth Listener’s ability, Zhou Wen carefully searched the area. His luck wasn’t bad. He found the tiny palm symbol on a stone beast that was half buried in the ground.

Zhou Wen was delighted as he hurriedly snapped a picture of the tiny palm symbol. The game entered the download screen.

After waiting for a while, it still hadn’t downloaded successfully. This dungeon was probably a more important one.

Having had the phone for so long, Zhou Wen realized that the speed at which he downloaded the game had nothing to do with the size of the map. Typically, when the download took longer, there would be something especially powerful or mysterious inside.

It was getting late and he had already obtained the instance dungeon. In order not to bump into Liu Yun and Jing

Daoxian, Zhou Wen planned on leaving and continuing his travels.

To his surprise, when he reached the main road, he saw Liu Yun leaning against a tree by the side of the road and looking at him with a faint smile.

“Junior Brother, I never expected us to meet again so soon,” Liu Yun said with a smile.

This fellow must have spotted me long ago. Zhou Wen knew very well. He looked at Liu Yun and said, “Eldest Senior Brother, have you thought it through and want to help me take care of Ya’er?”

When Liu Yun heard Ya’er’s name, his heart couldn’t help but tremble. He looked at Ya’er, who was in Zhou Wen’s arms, and hurriedly shook his head. “I came to discuss something with you. You should have heard my conversation with that old man. Are you interested in entering the Founding Emperor Tomb together? This sword is the key to entering the Founding Emperor Tomb. With it and your Earth Elemental Beast, we can safely enter and take whatever we want.”

“No,” Zhou Wen said bluntly.

“Don’t you want to know what’s inside the Founding Emperor Tomb? It’s…” Liu Yun was slightly taken aback. He was about to say something when Zhou Wen interrupted him again.

“I don’t want to know or go,” Zhou Wen said as he circled around Liu Yun and continued walking forward.

Ignoring the fact that there might be danger in the Founding Emperor Tomb, Zhou Wen definitely wouldn’t go with the

suspected Jing Daoxian around.

Even Liu Yun had discovered him, so Zhou Wen didn't believe that Jing Daoxian hadn't discovered him. It was best not to get involved.

"I heard that there's an Elixir of Immortality in the Founding Emperor Tomb. One can become immortal after eating it." Liu Yun refused to give up as he followed Zhou Wen, hoping to persuade him.

"Not going." Zhou Wen's attitude was firm. Even if Liu Yun gave the best pitch, he wouldn't enter the Founding Emperor Tomb.

"There's still a Guardian cocoon in the Founding Emperor Tomb. If you enter, you might have a chance of contracting a Guardian," Liu Yun continued.

"Not going." He never expected such good news. However, even if there were Guardians inside, Zhou Wen wouldn't go.

Since his phone was already downloading the game dungeon, he could still fight the Guardian in-game. There was no need for him to take the risk.

"Do you know who that old man is?" Liu Yun suddenly asked when he saw that Zhou Wen was determined not to go to the Founding Emperor Tomb.

"Yes," Zhou Wen answered.

He never expected Zhou Wen to answer in such a manner. Liu Yun was taken aback before he asked in disbelief, "You know who that old man is? That's impossible, right? You shouldn't have seen him. He's a dead person."

“Who do you think he is?” Zhou Wen felt that something was amiss when he heard Liu Yun’s words. He stopped and asked him.

Everyone knew that Jing Daoxian wasn’t dead. Even when he was injured the last time and had nearly lost his ability to fight, the bureau’s setting up of a virtually inescapable net had failed to capture him.

“You shouldn’t be unfamiliar with the Zhuolu expedition team, right? That old man is one of the members of the expedition team,” Liu Yun said mysteriously.

“Impossible. I’ve seen all the members of the expedition team. There’s no such person,” Zhou Wen said.

Seeing Zhou Wen’s reaction, Liu Yun knew that there was a chance. He chuckled and said, “As long as you have read the information on the experts and staff members of the expedition team, it’s not surprising that you know them. But have you ever thought that there might be some people who aren’t in the records?”

“I don’t have time to listen to your nonsense. It’s impossible to let an outsider stay in the team for such a large-scale inspection,” Zhou Wen said.

“He’s not an outsider. After reading so much information, don’t you think that there’s something missing?” Liu Yun said solemnly.

Zhou Wen frowned in thought. He didn’t feel that there was anything missing from the information. All the information on the staff and experts had been available.

Seeing that Zhou Wen didn’t understand him, Liu Yun said, “Don’t you think it’s missing the information of the people

who organized the expedition team?”

Zhou Wen was slightly taken aback as he thought about the information he had read before saying, “Why? Isn’t there information on those officers and soldiers?”

“Are those officers and soldiers qualified to organize such an expedition team? They are only responsible for security,” Liu Yun asked.

“Think about it. For such an important expedition, they invited so many top experts, but they only used the power of some low-ranking officers to protect them. Don’t you think that there’s something wrong if there’s no one monitoring the progress of the work?” Liu Yun continued.

“Are you saying that the Federation deliberately concealed some information? That elder is one of them?” Zhou Wen asked Liu Yun.

“Actually, I’ve investigated this matter before. I even entered the department that initiated the expedition and read through their information. However, the information was done perfectly. I couldn’t see any problems at all. However, I looked at some other information and realized that a few people in that department had mysteriously vanished when the expedition team was established. They never appeared again. Later, I did a lot of investigations, so I’m certain that those people must have gone to Zhuolu.” Liu Yun paused and said, “That old man’s name is Xie Yukun. He’s one of them.”

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 866 - Ancient Mirror

Chapter 866: Ancient Mirror

“Where did you find him?” Zhou Wen sized up Liu Yun. He was somewhat puzzled as to why Liu Yun was so concerned about this matter.

“It’s quite a coincidence. I originally came here to wait for you. I guessed that after you obtained the Earth Elemental Beast, you would most likely come to the Founding Emperor Tomb. To my surprise, I didn’t see you despite waiting for ages. Instead, I recognized Xie Yukun who was selling things at the market. Therefore, I secretly followed and monitored him, but he discovered me.”

Liu Yun paused for a moment before continuing, “But who am I? He was naturally not my match. In order to save his life, this old fellow told me some things. Only then did I know that he had indeed gone to Zhuolu back then and had been in charge of supervising the expedition team with a few others. However, later on, the others vanished with the expedition team. And he said that he escaped calamity because he was sick and returned to the encampment that day. I naturally don’t believe him.”

“And then?” Zhou Wen increasingly found the matter odd.

He felt that the old man was most likely Jing Daoxian, but Liu Yun said that he was Xie Yukun and was related to the Zhuolu expedition team. This was somewhat odd.

“Then, he rattled on about some nonsense, saying that there’s something good in the Founding Emperor Tomb.

Furthermore, he has a way to enter. I felt that he knew a lot about the Founding Emperor Tomb. Furthermore, I'm very curious as to why he's in such a rush to enter the Founding Emperor Tomb. Therefore, I agreed to cooperate with him and temporarily keep him at bay while waiting for you to come," Liu Yun said.

Zhou Wen sized up Liu Yun for a while before asking, "Why are you interested in the expedition team?"

"Ahem, of course it's because I'm concerned about you, Junior Brother. I know you're very concerned about this matter, so I helped you investigate it." Liu Yun changed the topic and said, "If you don't believe me, we'll capture that Xie Yukun later and torture him personally. Then you'll know if I lied to you."

"Me? Beat him? I'm afraid that the two of us will be the ones getting crippled later," Zhou Wen said with a twitch of his lips.

"Don't worry. Although that old man has some ability, he's far from our match. I can deal with him alone," Liu Yun said smugly.

Zhou Wen saw that Liu Yun didn't seem to be faking it, so he said to him, "I don't know why you're interested in this matter, but I don't know if that old man is Xie Yukun. I just feel that he's someone else."

"Who?" Liu Yun hurriedly asked when he saw Zhou Wen's solemn expression.

"Jing Daoxian," Zhou Wen said.

Liu Yun's expression changed when he heard that. He said in disbelief, "That's impossible! How can he be Jing Daoxian?"

“In any case, I won’t be going to the Founding Emperor Tomb. Watch your back,” Zhou Wen said as he prepared to leave. However, when he walked past Liu Yun and looked ahead, his expression changed.

At some point in time, the old man had arrived and was now standing in front of them. He smiled at the two of them as cold sweat immediately broke out on Zhou Wen’s back.

Liu Yun wanted to stop Zhou Wen, but when he turned his head and saw the old man, his expression changed.

“Old Man Xie, when did you come?” Liu Yun also knew that something was amiss. Xie Yukun had appeared so close to them, but he hadn’t sensed anything.

The old man ignored him and smiled at Zhou Wen. “I never expected you to recognize me. It’s somewhat unexpected.”

“It’s difficult not to recognize a figure like you,” Zhou Wen said to Jing Daoxian. The old man had clearly admitted that he was Jing Daoxian.

Jing Daoxian declined to comment. “Since you are interested in the Founding Emperor Tomb, why don’t you enter with us? You should know that even if I were to kill everyone in this world, I won’t be willing to let you die. There’s no need for you to be wary of me.”

“Are… Are you really Jing Daoxian?” Liu Yun widened his eyes as he looked at Jing Daoxian in disbelief.

The number one devil in the Federation. He had actually beaten the number one devil in the Federation previously and lived to talk about it. Even Liu Yun felt his legs go limp.

“From the looks of it, you were also waiting for me?” Zhou Wen stared at Jing Daoxian.

“I originally planned on taking the Earth Elemental Beast after the Zhang family auctioned it off. However, since you took the Earth Elemental Beast, I naturally wouldn’t take it from you. I could only wait for you here,” Jing Daoxian said.

“I’m sorry, but I’m not interested in the Founding Emperor Tomb. I’m leaving. Since you and my Eldest Senior Brother are so interested in it, it’s best you go together,” Zhou Wen said.

Liu Yun’s face turned livid as he forced a smile. “I’m not interested either. I was just fooling around. Old Master, don’t take it to heart.”

Jing Daoxian’s expression remained unchanged as he sighed. “It doesn’t matter if the two of you aren’t going, but now, one of you has the Earth Elemental Beast and the other has the Emperor Qin Sword. These two items are necessary to enter the Founding Emperor Tomb. Therefore, no matter what, I will need the two of you to accompany me.”

“What if I say no?” Zhou Wen was already prepared to fight or escape.

Jing Daoxian said with a smile, “You don’t have to be so nervous. I’ve said it before. Even if everyone in the world dies, I’ll ensure your survival. Therefore, you don’t have to treat me as an enemy. However, you have to accompany me on this trip to the Founding Emperor Tomb. I’m just too old and my body is too weak. I need external help to continue living.”

“That’s your problem. What has it got to do with me?” Zhou Wen retreated as he spoke. Although Jing Daoxian treated

him as an experimental subject and the chances of him killing him weren’t high, who knew what kind of scheme Jing Daoxian would come up with? It was best to stay away from him if possible.

Zhou Wen had seen Lord Alcohol and Xia Jiuhuang’s outcome with his own eyes. The two of them were also Jing Daoxian’s test subjects. There was no doubt about that.

“Since Zhou Wen isn’t going, It’s useless even if I go. I’ll leave this sword for you. I’ll be leaving now. If you have anything to say, have a good chat with my junior brother.” Liu Yun placed the ancient sword on the ground as he retreated.

Jing Daoxian didn’t stop them. He slowly took out something. It was an ancient bronze mirror. The mirror’s surface was blurry, and its reflections were also blurry.

When Zhou Wen saw the ancient mirror, he felt that something was amiss. He summoned the Earth Elemental Beast and attempted to escape.

Liu Yun’s speed wasn’t slow either. Like a meteor, he quickly rushed into the forest.

Jing Daoxian had no intention of stopping them. He held the ancient mirror and slowly turned it. Then, a strange scene happened. Zhou Wen, who had already escaped through the ground, and Liu Yun, who had rushed into the forest, returned as though things were being played back.

“Follow me!” Jing Daoxian carried the ancient mirror as he walked. Zhou Wen and Liu Yun couldn’t control their bodies as they were pulled towards the Founding Emperor Tomb like puppets.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 867 - Yin Yang Mirror

Chapter 867: Yin Yang Mirror

Zhou Wen felt as though his body was uncontrollable as he followed Jing Daoxian in the direction of the Founding Emperor Tomb.

His various bodily functions seemed normal. He could also use his various abilities, but for some reason, he couldn’t help but follow Jing Daoxian.

Zhou Wen didn’t counterattack blindly. He used Truth Listener to observe the ancient mirror in Jing Daoxian’s arms and realized that he and Liu Yun’s shadows were inside.

The problem was that Jing Daoxian’s back was facing them. It was impossible for the ancient mirror to directly reflect them. Why were their shadows inside?

Liu Yun was also led away. He gathered strength in his hand, but after some hesitation, he didn’t dare attack Jing Daoxian.

Although Jing Daoxian had his back facing them and didn’t seem to be on guard, he was Jing Daoxian. Even Liu Yun had to consider the consequences of attacking.

Zhou Wen didn’t take action. Instead, he secretly circulated his Essence Energy Art and switched his Life Souls to see if he could escape the ancient mirror’s control.

If he couldn’t escape the ancient mirror’s control, he would be limited in every aspect if he really were to fight Jing

Daoxian. It was almost impossible for him to gain the upper hand.

Truth Listener's Evil Nullification ability didn't have any effect. The ancient mirror's ability clearly didn't belong to an evil power like a curse. Switching to the Dao Sutra, the Heaven-Opening Scripture of the Highest Elder that had the ability to break taboos failed to free Zhou Wen from the ancient mirror's control.

It's not a curse or a taboo power. What kind of power is the ancient mirror? Zhou Wen suddenly realized a problem.

Ya'er was in his arms, but there was no sign of her in the ancient mirror.

Why is Ya'er's shadow missing? Is it because Jing Daoxian didn't attack Ya'er, or is Ya'er special? Is that ancient mirror useless against her? If it's because Ya'er is special, what's special about her? Zhou Wen thought for a moment and felt that the biggest difference between Ya'er and him was that Ya'er had already died once and couldn't be considered a real living person.

Zhou Wen thought again and switched his Essence Energy Art to Small Perfection of Wisdom. He wanted to see if he could use Supreme Hell King to escape the ancient mirror's control, but it was useless.

When Zhou Wen switched to Supreme Hell King, he was stunned when he saw Jing Daoxian.

He rubbed his eyes in disbelief and carefully looked at Jing Daoxian's body. However, the outcome was the same. He couldn't see any sinflames on Jing Daoxian's body.

Zhou Wen had seen many humans, but he had never seen anyone without sinflames. At most, it was a matter of how many sinflames they had.

However, Jing Daoxian didn't have any flames on him. He was unbelievably clean.

That's impossible... The more evil a person does, the more sinflames they have. Jing Daoxian is the number one devil in the Federation. He has committed countless crimes and killed countless people. How can he not have any sinflames? Ignoring the fact that he's the number one devil in the Federation, even an ordinary person who hasn't done any evil in his entire life wouldn't be without sinflames... Zhou Wen thought for a moment and felt that Jing Daoxian must have used some special method to extinguish the sinflames on him. However, he didn't know how he had done it.

Since the Supreme Hell King's powers were useless, Zhou Wen had to think of other methods. He switched several Essence Energy Arts, but he was unable to break the influence the ancient mirror had on him.

Liu Yun was clearly making various attempts, but like Zhou Wen, he didn't have any good results.

When they arrived in front of the Founding Emperor Tomb, the two of them were still unable to escape the ancient mirror's control.

Jing Daoxian stopped and waved the ancient mirror in front of the two of them. The two of them immediately regained their freedom. Jing Daoxian said with a smile, "This ancient mirror is called the Yin Yang Mirror. You might not have heard of it, but in ancient times, this Yin Yang Mirror once left all the gods in the world in awe. It can wipe out souls and kill people. I only used it to lock up one of your souls. If you

follow me into the Founding Emperor Tomb, I'll naturally release the soul trapped in the Yin Yang Mirror. Of course, you can choose not to go. However, this soul will always be locked in the Yin Yang Mirror. Over time, it will probably dissipate."

"What will happen to someone without a soul?" Liu Yun asked.

"To put it simply, the Yin Yang Mirror divides a person's soul into three souls and seven senses. Losing a soul isn't a big deal. You'll still have two souls and seven senses. Your bodies aren't damaged, so it won't kill you. At most, your memory will worsen. Over time, you might become an idiot," Jing Daoxian said with a smile.

Liu Yun and Zhou Wen exchanged looks. Zhou Wen knew that Jing Daoxian wasn't being an alarmist. The shadows in the ancient mirror weren't born out of thin air. They had some connection to their bodies.

Liu Yun suddenly thought of something. He stared at the Yin Yang Mirror and said, "Could it be that the ancient mirror is the legendary Yin Yang Mirror, the supreme treasure in the battle between the gods during the Shang and Zhou dynasty period?"

"You are quite knowledgeable, but it's not considered a supreme treasure. It's just a manifestation of a Mythical Companion Beast. However, it's slightly stronger than ordinary Mythical creatures," Jing Daoxian said.

"A Terror-grade Companion Beast?" Zhou Wen stared at the Yin Yang Mirror.

Jing Daoxian narrowed his eyes. "To think that you already know about the Terror-grade. That's right. The Yin Yang

Mirror is indeed at the Terror-grade. If I wanted to kill you, it’s just a matter of thinking about it. Therefore, you don’t have to worry about me killing you. This is because I can kill you anytime I want. There’s no need to trick you into entering the Founding Emperor Tomb. As long as you help me enter it to retrieve something, you can regain your freedom. Furthermore, I’ll only take one item from the Founding Emperor Tomb. The rest will be yours.”

“You have the strength, so it’s naturally up to you,” Liu Yun said.

Zhou Wen didn’t say a word as a tacit agreement.

However, he thought to himself, *Since the Yin Yang Mirror Companion Beast can advance to the Terror grade, Companion Beasts like Torch Dragon with the Evolvable attribute should be able to advance to the Terror grade. How can I advance them?*

Zhou Wen remembered that The Thearch had said that only those at the Terror grade could defeat the Terror grade. Although he had many pets, none of them were at the Terror grade. It was probably not easy to defeat the Yin Yang Mirror.

It’s too late to think of a way to advance to the Terror grade. Is there a way to bypass the Yin Yang Mirror and kill Jing Daoxian? Zhou Wen felt that he might have a chance.

Jing Daoxian had been severely injured. Furthermore, he had said that his body wasn’t in good condition. Without external help, he probably wouldn’t live long.

“Summon your Earth Elemental Beast and let it take us into the Founding Emperor Tomb. You have to use Earth Escape according to the coordinates I mentioned. It has to be

precise, nothing more, nothing less. Otherwise, the three of us will die inside. No one will be spared,” Jing Daoxian said.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 868 - Underground Imperial City

Chapter 868: Underground Imperial City

He needed to deal Jing Daoxian a fatal strike and not give him a chance to counterattack; otherwise, Zhou Wen wouldn’t be able to withstand the Terror-grade Yin Yang Mirror.

Without full confidence, Zhou Wen could only feign civility and listen to Jing Daoxian’s instructions.

The three of them sat on the Earth Elemental Beast’s back. Zhou Wen controlled the Earth Elemental Beast and used the coordinates Jing Daoxian had mentioned to let it drill into the Founding Emperor Tomb.

The Earth Elemental Beast phased away with the trio and burrowed into the ground. When Zhou Wen’s vision recovered, he realized that the Earth Elemental Beast’s body had landed atop a huge stone pillar.

The stone pillar was more than four meters in diameter and more than thirty meters tall. Beneath the stone pillar, there was silver liquid flowing slowly.

In the huge underground world, there was a huge stone pillar every few hundred meters. However, the stone pillars were connected to the stone ceiling. Only the stone pillar they were standing on was halved.

In the entire underground world, other than the stone pillar, there was only silver liquid. If the Earth Elemental Beast’s

Earth Escape had deviated slightly, they would have fallen into the silver liquid.

Seeing Zhou Wen and Liu Yun look at the silver liquid below, Jing Daoxian said, “That liquid is mercury. It’s very poisonous to humans, but this mercury shouldn’t be much considering our physiques. It can’t harm our bodies. However, after the dimensionalization, there’s a now terrifying dimensional creature in the mercury. If we fall into the mercury, even I might not be able to come out alive.”

“What dimensional creature is that?” Zhou Wen asked.

“See for yourself,” said Jing Daoxian. He summoned a mouse-like beast and let it fall into the mercury.

The little beast bobbed up and down over the silver liquid’s surface twice. The surrounding mercury suddenly gathered towards the little beast, turning into a strange creature that looked like a snake with wings on its back. It swallowed the little beast in one mouthful.

When the little beast touched its saliva, its body immediately festered as though it had melted.

Zhou Wen and Liu Yun were alarmed when they saw the instant devouring of the tiny beast. The mercury-like monster’s aura was extremely shocking. It was definitely at the Mythical stage.

“You don’t have to worry too much. As long as you don’t touch the mercury, you won’t alarm it.” As Jing Daoxian spoke, he summoned a bird and sat on its back before flying deep into the underground world.

Zhou Wen unsummoned the Earth Elemental Beast and summoned a flying mount just like Liu Yun did. They flew

deep into the underground world with Jing Daoxian.

“Legend has it that the Founding Emperor Tomb is extremely dangerous. From the looks of it, it’s nothing much.” Liu Yun looked around but didn’t find anything dangerous.

“We haven’t even entered the Founding Emperor Tomb’s main entrance,” Jing Daoxian said indifferently.

Zhou Wen kept using Truth Listener to scan the area in front of him. He could already see a huge metal door at the end of the Mercury Sea. In the middle of the metal door was a flat opening that looked like it would fit an ancient sword.

Soon, the three of them arrived at the door. Jing Daoxian pointed at the gap and said, “Insert the Emperor Qin Sword in. After opening this door, we will truly enter the Founding Emperor Tomb.”

Liu Yun was somewhat hesitant, but his life was still in Jing Daoxian’s hands. He had no choice but to walk over with the Emperor Qin Sword. After ensuring that he was 100% protected, he carefully inserted the Emperor Qin Sword.

When the Emperor Qin Sword was completely inserted, the three of them heard a cracking sound.

Liu Yun flew back like lightning, but the door slowly opened, revealing the scene behind it.

Zhou Wen couldn’t help but feel shocked when he saw the scene inside. Behind the door was a huge ancient city. There was a stretch of ancient palace complexes in the ancient city, and there were many bronze men with weapons standing on both sides of the street. There were even a few bronze carriage statues standing in the middle of the street.

At the end of the long street, there were twelve golden men sitting in front of the majestic temple-like palace. Each golden man was thirty feet tall when sitting, as though they were golden divine generals guarding the palace.

Whoosh!

The moment the trio stepped through the door, the bronze men on the long street raised their weapons and looked at Zhou Wen and company.

These bronze men were very similar to the Bronze Men at the periphery of the mausoleum. However, the Bronze Men at the periphery of the mausoleum were typically bare-handed and did not carry any weapons. As for the bronze men here, each of them held a spear or sword.

With the sound of the bronze swords being unsheathed, groups of bronze men charged at Zhou Wen and company.

“Leave the mere bronze men to me.” Liu Yun took the initiative to charge forward.

Bronze Men Companion Eggs were rare to begin with, and these bronze men had weapons. If a few Companion Beasts dropped, their value would definitely be rather high.

However, after Liu Yun rushed in, he realized that the bronze men were like warriors who had been battle-hardened. They advanced in rows and formed a battle formation, constantly attacking the encircled Liu Yun.

Thankfully, Liu Yun’s movement technique was extremely powerful. His fast hands flashed repeatedly as he snatched the white blades with his bare hands, snatching all the weapons from the bronze men nearby.

Crack!

A bronze man was beheaded by Liu Yun with a bronze sword. Liu Yun charged all the way as though he had entered a no man’s zone. Be it his movement techniques or offensive techniques, they were all excellent. Even an army of thousands seemed unable to trap him.

After killing dozens of bronze men, a Companion Egg dropped.

Liu Yun’s was really fast. Before the Companion Egg landed, he had grabbed it.

Just as Liu Yun was about to kill more bronze men, he suddenly saw one of the golden men stand up. The golden man, who was thirty feet tall when sitting, looked even more majestic when he stood up.

The golden man stepped on the stone steps and walked down the long street. His speed became faster and faster. After a few steps, he was like a charging lion. When he was a hundred meters away from Liu Yun, he leaped up and struck down at him.

Liu Yun didn’t hesitate either. He summoned his Companion Beast and transformed it into a bracer that wrapped around his fist and arm. Then, without retreating at all, he clashed with the golden man’s huge fist.

Boom!

When the two fists collided, Liu Yun immediately flew back and fell to the ground. He rolled far away and slammed into the city wall behind him before stopping.

“Junior Brother… That’s the end of the road for me… I’ll leave the rest to you… You have to get out alive…” Liu Yun struggled a few times but failed to get up. Blood kept flowing out of his mouth. Just as he finished speaking, he fell to the ground. There was no heartbeat or breathing. It looked like he was dead.

Jing Daoxian grabbed the Emperor Qin Sword and stabbed it into his thigh. Liu Yun remained motionless; there was no reaction from his muscles.

“From the looks of it, he’s really dead. Don’t waste a perfectly good body. Dig out his heart and use it for food.” As Jing Daoxian spoke, he was about to stab Liu Yun’s chest.

“Cough, cough… I… I can still be saved…” Liu Yun suddenly sat up again. His heartbeat and breathing were back as he laughed dryly.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 869 - Twelve Gold Men

Chapter 869: Twelve Gold Men

“Zhou Wen, I’ll leave this to you,” Jing Daoxian said as he pointed at the golden man walking over.

“Isn’t your Yin Yang Mirror very powerful? Can’t you just use it? Why go through so much trouble?” Zhou Wen said.

“Unfortunately, the Yin Yang Mirror is only useful against lifeforms with flesh and blood. It’s not very useful against such Gold Men.” Jing Daoxian didn’t seem to have any qualms as he revealed the Yin Yang Mirror’s weakness.

Zhou Wen didn’t know if what he said was true, but he could only summon Tyrant Behemoth and let it fight the Gold Man.

The Gold Man’s strength and defense were very strong. It wasn’t at a disadvantage when fighting Tyrant Behemoth. Zhou Wen had no choice but to get Tyrant Behemoth to activate Absolute Strength to quickly finish off the Gold Man.

Under the suppression of Absolute Strength, the Gold Man was immediately sent retreating by Tyrant Behemoth. Just as he was about to withstand heavy damage after failing to put up a defense, another Gold Man rushed down and joined the battle.

With the addition of this Gold Man, the first Gold Man became much stronger. However, it was still no match for Tyrant Behemoth.

The Gold Men came down one after another. They attacked Tyrant Behemoth together, and their cooperation was almost flawless.

Not good! Zhou Wen saw the problem. The twelve Gold Men were similar to the nine black dragons in the underground sea. They could share each other's powers.

After seven Gold Men joined the battle, their strength was already on par with Tyrant Behemoth, who had activated Absolute Strength. It was difficult for Tyrant Behemoth to gain an advantage.

"Tyrant Behemoth is about to be overwhelmed. You should do something, right?" Zhou Wen said to Jing Daoxian.

Jing Daoxian smiled and said, "All you need to do is lure the twelve Gold Men in front of the palace down. I'll enter the temple to take something and we'll leave immediately. It won't take long."

Zhou Wen knew that Jing Daoxian had ulterior motives for bringing him to the Founding Emperor Tomb. It wasn't as simple as borrowing the Earth Elemental Beast.

More and more Gold Men came down the stairs. When ten Gold Men besieged Tyrant Behemoth, Tyrant Behemoth was already in a losing position. It looked like it couldn't hold on much longer.

"I'm afraid that Tyrant Behemoth won't be able to last until all twelve of the Gold Men are down before it's killed. It's best you make plans early." Zhou Wen was telling the truth. Although Tyrant Behemoth was powerful, it was still impossible for it to fight twelve alone.

The strength and physique of these Gold Men were very strong to begin with. Furthermore, they could borrow each other's strength. Even Tyrant Behemoth with Absolute Strength was about to be defeated.

"Forget it. I'll settle the remaining two myself," Jing Daoxian said as he charged towards the palace guarded by the twelve Gold Men.

Zhou Wen saw him rush over the battlefield like a strange bird with the Yin Yang Mirror in hand. He wanted to rush into the palace.

The two Gold Men who had yet to come down immediately realized Jing Daoxian's intentions. They stood in front of the palace door and threw punches at him.

Jing Daoxian's body was in midair as a ring on his finger spun. Then, Zhou Wen saw his figure vanish. When he appeared again, he was already in front of the palace door.

Teleportation ability. Could it be that the Essence Energy Art Jing Daoxian cultivates in is spatial? As Zhou Wen guessed, Jing Daoxian had already slammed into the palace door.

Strangely enough, the palace door was clearly closed, but when Jing Daoxian slammed into it, he seemed to be able to penetrate the wall. The door failed to stop him at all.

The fists of the two Gold Men slammed heavily onto the door, causing it to rumble. However, they failed to move the door at all.

Unable to find Jing Daoxian, the two Gold Men turned around and rushed into the battlefield, joining in the fight against Tyrant Behemoth.

Tyrant Behemoth was already having a hard time holding on. With the addition of the two Gold Men, it immediately lost the strength to resist. It received several punches on its body, causing its bones to crack.

“These twelve Gold Men are too powerful. Even Tyrant Behemoth isn’t their match. Let’s retreat now.” Liu Yun retreated as he spoke, but when he arrived at the city gates, he was blocked by a strange force. He couldn’t leave no matter what.

Liu Yun gathered his strength and struck again and again, but he still couldn’t charge out.

“There’s no need for you to try. I’ve already gotten the Earth Elemental Beast to try. It can’t even escape with Earth Escape.” Zhou Wen had already tried. If he could escape, he wouldn’t have let Tyrant Behemoth withstand the twelve Gold Men’s attacks.

“Jing Daoxian rushed into the palace to take the treasures, but he made us wait here for death. He’s clearly trying to scam us,” said Liu Yun.

“That might not be the case. Although the twelve Gold Men are powerful with extremely powerful Strength and Constitution, they aren’t fast. As long as we don’t fight them head-on, it won’t be easy for them to kill us in a short period of time. The problem now is how do we enter the palace? We can’t really just wait for Jing Daoxian to come out, right?” Zhou Wen said as he unsummoned Tyrant Behemoth.

Having lost their important target, Tyrant Behemoth, the twelve Gold Men immediately charged at Zhou Wen and Liu Yun.

Zhou Wen didn’t wait for them to come over as he started using his movement technique and charged towards the twelve Gold Men.

He had been watching from the side for a while and had a general understanding of the abilities of the twelve Gold Men. Although it wasn’t easy to kill them, it wasn’t difficult to stay alive.

Zhou Wen used Transcendent Flying Immortal and constantly shuttled through the twelve Gold Men. Although the twelve Gold Men were powerful, they appeared somewhat clumsy and failed to touch Zhou Wen.

Liu Yun also quickly dodged the twelve Gold Men’s attacks. He was also good at movement techniques and wasn’t much weaker than Zhou Wen.

“When the two Gold Men smashed their fists into the palace door, they failed to budge it at all. I’m afraid that the door can’t be opened with brute force. Otherwise, Jing Daoxian wouldn’t have needed to pass through the wall. We don’t know how to pass through walls, so it won’t be easy to enter,” Liu Yun said as he dodged.

“You have to give it a try even if it’s not easy. Aren’t you the best thief in the world? Can’t a thief like you even open a door?” Zhou Wen said.

“It’s not difficult to open the door, but it needs time. We are now being chased by these twelve Gold Men. There’s no way out. How do I have the time to open the door?” Liu Yun said gloomily.

“I’ll hold them back. Take the opportunity to open the door,” Zhou Wen said after some thought.

“How are you going to hold them back? Even Tyrant Behemoth couldn’t withstand it. Do you have any stronger Companion Beasts?” Liu Yun asked in puzzlement.

“I don’t have any stronger Companion Beasts, but if I want to hold them back, I don’t need powerful Companion Beasts. I just need to tank the beating,” Zhou Wen said as he summoned a Companion Beast.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 870 - Tiger General's Might

Chapter 870: Tiger General’s Might

Liu Yun took a careful look and realized that he recognized the Companion Beast Zhou Wen had summoned.

Not only did he know it, but he had once owned it. Later, he took the initiative to return it to Zhou Wen.

“No way? You want to use it to block the twelve Gold Men? Are you crazy?” Liu Yun had once stolen the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General from Zhou Wen. He had some understanding of the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General and knew that it was an Epic Companion Beast.

It was impossible for Zhou Wen to use the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General to fight the twelve Gold Men.

“I’ll give it a try. Perhaps it will work?” Zhou Wen carried Ya’er and constantly moved around the city, dodging the Gold Men’s attacks.

The strongest thing about the twelve Gold Men wasn’t their strength, but their defense. Even Tyrant Behemoth, who had Absolute Strength, wasn’t able to leave a fatal wound on them. It was obvious how powerful their bodies were.

The moment the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General appeared, he was surrounded by the Bronze Men on the street. However, the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General didn’t care about that. The tiger beneath him charged at the Bronze Men crazily. The spear in his hand instantly pierced through the three Bronze Men like a skewer of candied haws.

He lifted them up and threw them out, tearing them apart in midair.

The Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General was like a tiger that had entered a flock of sheep. The Bronze Men with astonishing defense had no chance of turning the tide under its spear. In just a moment, he had killed twenty to thirty Bronze Men.

A Gold Man charged at the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General and threw a huge metal fist at him.

The Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General showed no signs of weakness. The spear in his hand stabbed out with the momentum of an armor-piercing spear, colliding with the Gold Man's fist.

Clang!

The Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General remained motionless, but the Gold Man was forced to take a few steps back.

In a one-on-one situation, the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General's Strength was stronger than the Gold Man, but he wasn't much stronger.

That's impossible!? Liu Yun's eyes nearly popped out. When he stole the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General, he didn't find the latter that strong.

After the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General landed on the ground, it continued charging through the Bronze Men. Its body gradually burned with strange purple flames.

Zhou Wen knew that the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General's skill combination that resembled a perpetual motion machine was beginning to take effect.

The Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General was a Companion Beast that became stronger as he fought. He could condense killing aura to strengthen himself. The flames that were ignited by killing aura were transformed by the Tempered Steel Cauldron skill, making his body stronger and stronger.

As long as the twelve Gold Men failed to kill him in the beginning, he would become stronger and stronger. Perhaps when he reached a certain level of strength, he could fight the twelve Gold Men.

Zhou Wen wasn't sure if the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General's body could be strengthened to that level. He could give it a try now.

As the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General unleashed his might, more and more Gold Men were attracted to it. The pressure on Zhou Wen and Liu Yun decreased significantly.

As for Liu Yun, he wore a look of disbelief. He really couldn't believe that the Companion Beast he had stolen and returned to Zhou Wen was so powerful.

The Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General was fighting against five Gold Men alone, and in such a spectacular manner without being at a disadvantage.

If I had known that this thing was so powerful, I wouldn't have returned him to Zhou Wen! Liu Yun felt his heart bleed.

"Let me give him a boost." Zhou Wen summoned three Fire Furnace Queens and got them to release a large amount of flames at the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General.

Two of the other Fire Furnace Queens were obtained by Zhou Wen later. Now, there were only three of them.

With the augmentation of the flames, the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General became even more ferocious. The purple flames on the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General became more and more intense. It was like a Fiend Tiger and Fiend General that had rushed out of hell.

Seven or eight Gold Men surrounded it and temporarily suppressed the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General's ferocious might. However, under their pressure, the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General became stronger the more it fought. It had no intention of retreating.

Soon, all twelve Gold Men were attracted by it.

No way! This fellow is even more ferocious than Tyrant Behemoth? Liu Yun felt as though someone had stabbed him in the heart a few times. He had stolen such a ferocious Companion Beast and ended up returning it to Zhou Wen. However, when he thought of this matter, he had the urge to bang his head against the wall or slap himself.

The Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General staggered under the siege of the twelve Gold Men. However, it continued to brandish the spear in its hand to fight them. The ferocious tiger beneath it roared and pounced forward.

Although it looked a little tragic, even Tyrant Behemoth couldn't restrain the twelve Gold Men.

Upon seeing the sparks fly off the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General's body, Zhou Wen wasn't alarmed. Instead, he was delighted and began to feel relieved.

If the twelve Gold Men had attacked together from the beginning, perhaps only eight or nine Gold Men would have been needed to kill Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General.

However, the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General’s skills had already formed a cycle. He became stronger and stronger in battle. It was already impossible for the twelve Gold Men to kill him.

As long as the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General’s body could withstand it, he might eventually become stronger than the twelve Gold Men.

“Why are you still watching? Open the door,” Zhou Wen said to Liu Yun.

Only then did Liu Yun snap out of his daze. He looked at the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General with a pained expression before turning to run to the palace door to open it.

The Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General stormed through the city, attracting the attention of the twelve Gold Men. They had no time to care about Zhou Wen and Liu Yun.

Some Bronze Men rushed over, but Zhou Wen casually killed them, preventing them from approaching Liu Yun who was opening the door.

Zhou Wen kept using Truth Listener to scan the palace, but the palace was enveloped by a strange force that Truth Listener’s power couldn’t penetrate.

Unless Zhou Wen got Truth Listener to break its earrings, it would be very difficult for it to make a breakthrough.

“It’s open!” After a while, Liu Yun, who was sprawled in front of the door, shouted happily. Then, he pushed the door with both hands, and the palace door opened.

Zhou Wen focused his gaze inside, but what he saw left him and Liu Yun stunned.

He originally imagined that Jing Daoxian was plundering the palace, but the situation was completely different. Jing Daoxian stood inside the door, holding the Yin Yang Mirror with both hands. His body was covered in sweat as though he had just been fished out of water.

The Yin Yang Mirror emitted divine light. And in the hall opposite the Yin Yang Mirror, there was a five-foot-long sword hanging.

The divine light emitted by the sword collided with the Yin Yang Mirror's divine light. It was not at all inferior. It even seemed to be suppressing the Yin Yang Mirror.

"Holy sh*t, what sword is that? It can actually suppress the Yin Yang Mirror?" Liu Yun was alarmed. He didn't dare enter the palace and only sized up the sword from the outside.

Zhou Wen was also sizing up the sword. The Yin Yang Mirror was already a Companion Beast at the Terror grade. For the sword to be able to suppress it, it was clearly extraordinary.

The ancient sword was simple and unadorned. It was actually a stone sword. Although it didn't look eye-catching and there weren't any beautiful gems embedded on the sword or scabbard, the sword beam it emitted left one shuddering in fear.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 871 - Art on the Door

Chapter 871: Art on the Door

Zhou Wen only glanced at the stone sword before his gaze went past it and landed on the hall behind it.

With the stone sword used as the dividing line, there were only some murals and sculptures in the hall ahead. And in the hall behind the stone sword, there were rows of bamboo slips.

Bamboo slips were tools used in ancient times for records. Back then, before paper was invented, people would engrave words on pieces of bamboo. Then, they would string the bamboo together for easy storage and reading.

Looking in from the outside door, there were rows of shelves in the hall behind. All sorts of bamboo slips were placed on them. The number was shocking. Even the Federation's library might not have such a large scale.

This wasn't the main point of Zhou Wen's observation. The main point was that the bamboo slips seemed to emit a strange power. It was thanks to the power emitted by the bamboo slips that the stone sword could emit such terrifying might, allowing it to withstand the Yin Yang Mirror.

How strange. That stone sword can actually use the power of the bamboo slips. This is unheard of. Zhou Wen was somewhat puzzled.

Books and swords were originally two incompatible things, but now, the sword had borrowed the aura of books. It was

very strange.

Liu Yun gave Zhou Wen the nod before looking at Jing Daoxian, who was struggling against the stone sword in the hall.

Zhou Wen immediately understood Liu Yun’s intentions. He wanted to kick him while he was down. Now, Jing Daoxian was using all his strength to resist the stone sword. This was the best opportunity to kill him.

Zhou Wen was somewhat tempted. If he could kill Jing Daoxian here, he wouldn’t have to be on guard against Jing Daoxian in the future. He was afraid that he would follow in the footsteps of Lord Alcohol and Xia Jiuhuang.

Just as he was considering taking a gamble, the Yin Yang Ancient Mirror in Jing Daoxian’s hand suddenly spun. The divine light on the mirror turned from white to black as it spewed at the stone sword.

With a sword hum, the stone sword unsheathed and transformed into a peerless sword beam that slashed at Jing Daoxian.

The Yin Yang Ancient Mirror’s mirror beam was completely unable to withstand the stone sword as it was cleaved apart. The stone sword was about to strike the Yin Yang Ancient Mirror.

Zhou Wen and Liu Yun were delighted. If the Yin Yang Ancient Mirror could be destroyed, their imprisoned souls would naturally be able to escape.

Clang!

At the instant the stone sword was about to slash at the ancient mirror, Jing Daoxian suddenly retracted in his hand. Another item that looked like a jade seal smashed into the stone sword.

The stone sword landed on the ground with a clang and was suppressed by the jade seal. It struggled to flip the jade seal but was close to doing so.

Jing Daoxian ignored the jade seal and stone sword as he quickly rushed into the hall behind and vanished in a flash.

Almost at the instant he rushed into the hall where the bamboo slips were piled up, the jade seal was sliced into two by the sword beam on the stone sword and shattered.

The stone sword circled in the air, but it didn’t chase towards the back of the hall. It only returned to the scabbard.

“Damn it. We should have done it earlier,” Liu Yun said regretfully.

However, Zhou Wen shook his head and said, “It would have been useless. Jing Daoxian only risked his life because he sensed our killing intent towards him. It wouldn’t have mattered if we attack earlier or later.”

“What do we do now? With that stone sword guarding the hall, I’m afraid we won’t have the chance to rush in like Jing Daoxian,” said Liu Yun.

“Since we can’t enter, we can only wait.” Zhou Wen left the door and looked at the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General who was fighting the twelve Gold Men.

The Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General became braver the more he fought. Although he was still at a disadvantage, he was already able to stand firm under the siege of the twelve Gold Men. It wasn’t as pathetic as before.

Looking at the purple flames that were burning like a furnace in his body, as well as the armor that was burning like an amethyst, Zhou Wen couldn’t help but have a thought.

The Ancient Sovereign Sutra is a battle-type Essence Energy Art. The Defy Ancient Sovereign Life Soul is also the type that grows stronger the more one fights. It’s somewhat similar to the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General. Can I use the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General’s model to advance the Defy Ancient Sovereign Life Soul? Zhou Wen thought to himself.

Although the Defy Ancient Sovereign Life Soul doesn’t have the ability to condense killing aura into flames, it comes with a powerful life essence. If I can use the Defy Ancient Sovereign’s life essence to burn myself… Zhou Wen considered this possibility.

However, now wasn’t the time to study this. He took out his phone and opened the downloaded Founding Emperor Tomb dungeon before entering.

There was no entrance to the Founding Emperor Tomb dungeon, but Zhou Wen already knew the way in. He summoned the Earth Elemental Beast in-game and quickly arrived at the pillar in the Mercury Sea.

He easily passed through the Mercury Sea and arrived outside the city. However, he didn’t have the Emperor Qin Sword in-game. All Zhou Wen could do was attempt to use the Earth Elemental Beast to enter the city.

Unfortunately, the mysterious city seemed to be protected by some mysterious force, preventing the Earth Elemental Beast from entering.

From the looks of it, I can only try using force. Zhou Wen ordered the blood-colored avatar to strike the door, but it was useless. No matter how powerful the attack was, it couldn’t budge the door at all.

Could it be that I really can’t enter without the Emperor Qin Sword? Zhou Wen used Truth Listener to carefully observe the door and the structure of the keyhole, hoping to use the power of a miniature Companion Beast to open it.

Unfortunately, there was no special structure inside the keyhole. It was like a scabbard that was only compatible with the Emperor Qin Sword.

Just as Zhou Wen was feeling disappointed, he suddenly realized that there were words on the door.

Strange, why didn’t I see these words before? Puzzled, Zhou Wen looked at the ancient city’s door in real life. He didn’t see any words on the door.

He clearly remembered that those words didn’t exist on the door when the blood-colored avatar first arrived in-game.

Zhou Wen looked at the words on the door in-game. They were ancient words from the East District. Zhou Wen had learned some when studying the Dao Sutra, so he recognized the words on the door.

This is an Essence Energy Art? After carefully reading the words on the door, Zhou Wen was somewhat surprised.

He never expected that there would be an Essence Energy Art on the entrance of the Founding Emperor Tomb. However, this Essence Energy Art came out of nowhere. Zhou Wen didn’t know what Essence Energy Art it was.

While Zhou Wen was reading the Essence Energy Art on his phone, Liu Yun looked into the hall and then at the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General who was fighting the twelve Gold Men. He was extremely anxious. When he turned his head, he saw Zhou Wen sitting there playing with his phone. He couldn’t help but say, “Junior Brother, you’re still in the mood to play with your phone at such a time? We have to quickly think of a way to enter and see what Jing Daoxian is doing.”

“With that stone sword around, I don’t have the ability to enter. If you have a solution, feel free to give it a try.” After Zhou Wen finished reading the Essence Energy Art on the door, the Lost Immortal Sutra played its role again, simulating the Essence Energy Art.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 872 - Old Man

Chapter 872: Old Man

This Essence Energy Art was also strange. There weren’t many changes. It was purely an Energy Refinement technique.

With every circulation of the Essence Energy Art, a portion of the impurities in the Essence Energy would be removed, allowing the Essence Energy to become purer. It was as though it was a technique that specialized in extracting Essence Energy.

Zhou Wen originally imagined that by cultivating this Essence Energy Art, he could enter the Founding Emperor Tomb, but he realized that it was useless. After he gained basic mastery of the Essence Energy Art, Zhou Wen used it to push open the door, but the door remained firmly locked. It didn’t open.

Zhou Wen was somewhat disappointed that he couldn’t enter the Founding Emperor Tomb in-game.

He originally wanted to try entering the palace in-game to see if there was a way to pass through the temple guarded by the stone sword, but now, he had to give up.

The Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General became stronger the more it fought. It was already capable of contending against the twelve Gold Men. He constantly charged back and forth in the ancient city. Most of the Bronze Men had been killed by him, leaving only the twelve Gold Men to fight him.

However, there was no way to suppress the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General.

This fellow's abilities are really impressive. As long as he has enough time, he's even stronger than Tyrant Behemoth. Zhou Wen was somewhat gratified, but he was also somewhat worried.

Jinxes Master and Badlands still existed, making Zhou Wen feel uncomfortable.

"Junior Brother, I remember that this Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General should be an Epic Companion Beast, right? Why is it so terrifying?" Liu Yun couldn't help but ask.

"Don't you know that some Companion Beasts can evolve?" Zhou Wen asked casually.

Liu Yun had already guessed it, but when he heard Zhou Wen admit it, he couldn't help but regret returning the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General to Zhou Wen.

There were very few Companion Beasts that could evolve. Typically, only Companion Beasts that hatched from bestowed Companion Eggs obtained from special dimensional zones could have the ability to evolve.

From Liu Yun's point of view, the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General was likely such a Companion Beast.

In the intense battle, a Gold Man couldn't withstand the powerful collision. Cracks appeared on his body as he was beheaded by the Tiger Soul General.

The Gold Man's massive body fell to the ground. Its originally extremely hard body suddenly became as weak as porcelain. It shattered into pieces.

Zhou Wen saw a dimensional crystal drop from the Gold Man’s remnant body.

After losing a Gold Man, the combat strength of the Gold Men was further weakened. As for the Tiger Soul General, its strength became even stronger. Under this situation, the Tiger Soul General’s might became even more ferocious. The remaining eleven Gold Men were completely suppressed by him.

The Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General was like a killing machine that didn’t know fatigue on the battlefield. The more it fought, the more ferocious it became. It forced the remaining eleven Gold Men to retreat. Soon, another Gold Man was killed.

As such, the Gold Men’s combat strength was even weaker. The remaining Gold Men were killed by the Tiger Soul General. When the last Gold Man collapsed, there were no longer any living dimensional creatures in the ancient city.

Zhou Wen went down to clean up the battlefield and pick up the Companion Eggs and dimensional crystals that had dropped from the Bronze and Gold Men.

The twelve Gold Men only dropped one dimensional crystal, but it was an Essence Energy Skill Crystal.

Zhou Wen secretly used his phone to take a look and realized that the requirement for the Gold Man Essence Energy Skill Crystal was relatively simple. It required 41 Essence Energy and 41 Constitution, without any special stat requirements.

Unfortunately, Zhou Wen only had 41 Essence Energy, so he couldn’t absorb and refine it. All he could do was put it away.

Without an opponent, the flames on the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General's body gradually dissipated. The fire in its body also slowly extinguished as its strength rapidly dissipated.

Zhou Wen didn't order the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General to rush into the palace. Although he was powerful, he hadn't advanced to the Terror grade. He would probably suffer greatly if he fought the stone sword.

"Could it be that we can only wait here for Jing Daoxian to return?" Liu Yun was very indignant, but there was nothing he could do.

He had already attempted to summon a few Epic creatures to rush into the palace, but the moment they entered, they were instantly killed by the sword beam emitted by the stone sword. The stone sword didn't even leave its scabbard.

Zhou Wen had also looked at the stone sword, but his gaze was mainly focused on the bamboo slips.

*Although the stone sword is powerful, its energy source seems to be from the bamboo slips. If I can destroy the bamboo slips, the stone sword's strength might be greatly weakened, making it possible to rush ove*r, Zhou Wen thought to himself.

Unfortunately, the bamboo slips were in the hall behind the stone sword. To touch the bamboo slips, one had to pass the stone sword. It was not an easy task to get rid of the bamboo slips.

Zhou Wen thought for a moment and summoned the tiny Blood Threadworm Companion Beasts. He got them to crawl into the palace to see if they could escape the stone sword's protection and crawl into the hall to destroy the bamboo slips.

However, just as the Blood Threadworms entered the palace, they were killed by the sword beam emitted by the stone sword.

Not even a miniature Companion Beast works? Zhou Wen frowned slightly.

It wasn’t that Zhou Wen didn’t have any other solutions, but those solutions needed him to enter the temple himself to know if they were useful.

He wasn’t willing to take the risk. A stone sword that could use Terror transformation was too dangerous for him.

“What’s that?” Liu Yun suddenly pointed into the ancient city and shouted in horror.

Zhou Wen turned his head and saw a pillar of light shoot out from the city. It reached the stone dome of the underground world, illuminating the entire underground tomb.

Zhou Wen frowned inwardly. Just as he was about to use Truth Listener to scan the pillar of light, he saw a figure walk out.

Human? That’s not right. Guardian? That’s not right either. Zhou Wen looked at the figure in surprise.

The figure looked like a human. His appearance and clothes were very similar to a human’s, but his aura had the aura of a Guardian.

Could it be… Zhou Wen thought of Wang Mingyuan. The creature in front of him looked like a fusion of a human and a Guardian.

However, he was somewhat different from Wang Mingyuan. Wang Mingyuan had absorbed and fused with a Guardian, but Wang Mingyuan’s will was still dominant.

As for the creature in front of him, it made him feel that it was closer to a Guardian.

Liu Yun also looked warily at the creature who walked through the air step by step. The ancient clothes on his wide sleeves and robe fluttered despite a non-existent wind.

When he got close, Zhou Wen and Liu Yun saw his appearance clearly. It was an old man with white hair and beard. He was wearing ancient traditional clothes.

The only difference between this elder and a normal human was his skin. It had jade-like skin that was crystalline and transparent.

Seeing the elder walk towards the palace door, Zhou Wen and Liu Yun retreated.

The elder ignored them as though he hadn’t seen them and walked straight though the palace door.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 873 - Purple Bronze Pill Furnace

Chapter 873: Purple Bronze Pill Furnace

As soon as the elder entered the hall, the stone sword immediately emitted a terrifying sword beam that wanted to kill the elder on the spot.

The elder looked at the stone sword's sword beam as his body underwent an earth-shattering change. His flesh, blood, skin, and clothes instantly took on the form of jade. It was as though his entire body had turned into a strange jade statue.

The sword beam struck the elder's jade-like body, but it was shattered by a single wave of his hand.

Terror transformation! Zhou Wen was alarmed. The elder could shatter the stone sword's sword beam. It clearly meant that he was a Terror grade expert.

The stone sword unsheathed itself without any hesitation and slashed at the elder with an invisible sword beam.

The jade-like elder suddenly extended his hands to grab the stone sword. For a moment, there was a stalemate. The stone sword couldn't stab any further, but the elder couldn't repel the stone sword either. The man and sword were in a stalemate.

"Who is this old fellow? He can actually withstand the power of the stone sword!" Liu Yun said in surprise.

However, Zhou Wen didn’t say a word. With a flash, he charged into the palace.

Liu Yun also reacted and gritted his teeth before rushing into the palace.

The stone sword and the jade-like elder were in a stalemate. They had no strength to stop Zhou Wen and Liu Yun. In the blink of an eye, the two of them had rushed into the hall with the bamboo slips.

Seeing that the elder was still in a stalemate with the stone sword, Zhou Wen wasn’t in a rush to rush further in. He casually took down a bamboo slip from the rack and opened it.

When he saw the content was laws and regulations, he randomly picked a few bamboo slips on different shelves to take a look. They were all the same. He couldn’t help but find it odd.

I heard that back then, Emperor Qin believed in the Art of Longevity that warlocks advocated. I originally imagined that the books he buried with him were related to alchemy and the Art of Longevity. I never expected them to be law books. Zhou Wen casually flipped through them as he walked and realized that there were no records related to alchemy. They were all about laws.

“Junior Brother, why aren’t you leaving? What’s so interesting about those bamboo slips?” Liu Yun also flipped through a few scrolls. Seeing that they were all laws and regulations, he lost interest.

Zhou Wen put down the bamboo slips and quickened his pace. He and Liu Yun walked to the back of the palace and

saw another door. However, it had already been opened. It was clearly Jing Daoxian’s work.

There was a jade screen blocking the door. The two of them circled around the screen, and the scene that greeted them left them surprised.

There were shattered bronze and jade fragments everywhere on the ground, as though a huge battle had ensued. However, there was no sign of anyone, nor were there any doors that led to other places.

“There might be a secret door,” Liu Yun said as he searched the walls, hoping to find a secret door.

“Stop looking. Look at the water in the pool. Is there a problem?” Zhou Wen pointed at a pool.

The water in the pool was black like ink, but there was no strange smell. It probably wasn’t black because of a change in water quality.

“Are you saying that there’s a path beneath the pool?” Liu Yun sized up the pool, but the water in the pool was too dark. He couldn’t see anything clearly.

“I don’t know if there’s a path down there, but there shouldn’t be a secret door in this palace.” Zhou Wen had already scanned the entire palace with Truth Listener. If there was a secret door, it was impossible for him not to have discovered it.

“Should we go down?” Liu Yun was somewhat hesitant.

“I’m afraid that’s our only choice.” As Zhou Wen spoke, he looked outside and saw that the elder had rushed in.

The stone sword chased after him unlike its reaction to Jing Daoxian’s entry. Wherever the sword beam went, almost everything was destroyed.

Without any hesitation, Zhou Wen jumped into the pool with Ya’er in his arms.

The Azure Dragon’s Seven Mansions Essence Energy Skill activated as though an Azure Dragon was circling his body, repelling the black liquid outside.

Liu Yun gritted his teeth and jumped down with Zhou Wen.

Strangely enough, the black water in the pool didn’t seem to have any buoyancy. They rapidly plummeted the moment they entered. Furthermore, their speed increased as though there was a force pulling them down.

Bam!

When Zhou Wen’s and Liu Yun’s feet touched solid ground, the powerful impact nearly fractured their legs.

Before they could see their surroundings clearly, two more shadows descended from above. One of them was the jade-like elder, while the other was the stone sword.

The moment the stone sword landed, thousands of sword beams shot out from the sword, enveloping the area.

Zhou Wen and Liu Yun quickly dodged. Zhou Wen somersaulted and hid behind a huge object. The object blocked the stone sword’s sword beam. The storm-like sword beams struck the object, but they failed to shatter it.

Only then did Zhou Wen realize that the thing he was using to seek refuge was a huge pill furnace. It was more than ten

meters tall and looked like it was made of copper.

However, it wasn’t the commonly-seen bronze of that era, but a type of purple bronze.

The sword beam struck the purple bronze pill furnace, causing it to produce a din. However, it failed to damage the pill furnace at all.

Zhou Wen looked into the pill furnace and realized that it was filled with flames. The flames inside were already burning white, and the temperature was unimaginably high. However, the purple bronze pill furnace only felt warm, not scorching hot.

Strange, I’ve never heard of a pill furnace having flames inside. The flames should be beneath it to heat the furnace’s interior. Why is this furnace burning on the inside? Zhou Wen found it odd.

As the stone sword fought the elder, Zhou Wen took the opportunity to size up the surrounding environment. Only then did he discover in surprise that this was the peak of a mountain.

In the huge, pitch-black underground space, a mountain peak occupied a large space. They stood at the top of the mountain, only twenty to thirty meters away from the stone dome above them.

The surroundings were pitch-black. As the space was so large and there was no light, only the flames that emitted from the purple bronze furnace’s ventilation hole emitted light. This made the distant areas even darker.

The area that Truth Listener could sense was empty. However, a cold wind blew from afar. Furthermore, the wind

was very strong, causing Zhou Wen’s clothes to stick to his body as the cold wind drilled into his bones.

Where did Jing Daoxian go? Zhou Wen carried Ya’er and turned his back to the cold wind. After searching for a while, he didn’t find Jing Daoxian.

Liu Yun rushed behind the pill furnace and rendezvoused with Zhou Wen. He said, “There’s nothing on this mountaintop. There’s only a pill furnace. Do you think the pill furnace contains the Elixir of Immortality refined by the emperor?”

“I don’t think so. Otherwise, why isn’t Jing Daoxian here?” As Zhou Wen spoke, he suddenly heard a loud rumbling sound from afar as though it was thunder.

</di

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 874 - Wind and Fire

Chapter 874: Wind and Fire

“Why is there thunder underground?” Liu Yun frowned slightly before his expression gradually turned ugly. “No, it’s not thunder. It’s wind…”

Thunder and lightning was a very terrifying power. In contrast, most people might not understand how terrifying the wind was, but to Liu Yun, who often traveled the world, he knew that sometimes, wind was much more terrifying than thunder and lightning.

Zhou Wen had long sensed the turbulent airflow. He was even more sensitive to wind than Liu Yun, so he naturally knew how terrifying the impending storm would be.

Truth Listener’s ability had already been pushed to its limits, but other than this mountain peak, the surroundings were extremely empty. There was nothing, not even a place to hide.

“Go to the back of the mountain.” As Zhou Wen spoke, he flew down. The airflow became more and more turbulent. He couldn’t estimate how terrifying the storm would be when it touched down. All he could do was make some preparations.

Liu Yun also went down. He took many grappling hooks and threw them into the cracks in the mountain wall. Using the criss-crossing rope locks, he fixed his body to the side of the mountain.

On the mountaintop, the stone sword was still fighting the elder. The battle between two Terror-grade experts caused space to crack. It was not a battle that ordinary people could interfere with.

Boom!

The terrifying storm roared and broke through the sound barrier. The continuous sonic booms were like a thunderstorm.

A hurricane blew past. On the back of the mountain, not facing the storm, Zhou Wen’s and Liu Yun’s clothes were fluttering in the wind. They struggled to grab the mountain rocks and were almost blown away.

The ropes on Liu Yun’s body lodged into his flesh, preventing him from being blown away by the wind.

Zhou Wen had already summoned Tyrant Behemoth. After it gigantified, it hugged the mountain peak and protected him and Ya’er inside, blocking the terrifying storm.

The wind was even more terrifying than a blade. The Epic armor that Liu Yun was wearing had been sliced open by the wind. Blood gushed out.

“Come on out, Little Orange.” Liu Yun roared in the wind as an orange cat appeared on him. It opened its mouth and sucked in the wind that blew on Liu Yun. The orange cat’s stomach expanded and became like a balloon.

Just as Zhou Wen was worried that the orange cat would explode, the orange cat spat out the air it had sucked into its stomach to resist the airflow.

The terrifying wind was mostly blocked by the mountain peak. They were only suffering the remnant winds.

When Zhou Wen and Liu Yun thought that they had finally survived the brunt of the wind, they realized that they had been too naive.

This was because they quickly realized that the wind that blew past had formed a flow that circled around the mountain peak.

The extremely violent airflow formed a vortex in the underground space. As the airflow constantly blew in, the wind vortex became stronger.

The orange cat on Liu Yun's body could no longer swallow the wind. His body was swaying crazily from the wind as ropes snapped one after another. His armor had already shattered and he was about to be killed by the terrifying wind.

Starlight flashed in Liu Yun's eyes as his figure transformed into a stream of light that flashed and appeared beneath Behemoth.

At that moment, Behemoth hugged the mountain and resisted the terrifying vortex. Even its fur was sliced open by the airflow.

"What the hell? What wind is this? How can it be so terrifying?" Liu Yun hid beneath Behemoth and finally heaved a sigh of relief. He couldn't help but grumble.

I'm just afraid that the truly terrifying wind hasn't arrived. Zhou Wen wore a look of worry.

The hurricane in the underground space strengthened as though it would never stop. If the wind speed continued to increase, even Tyrant Behemoth might not be able to withstand it.

The elder and the stone sword were still fighting on the mountaintop. The stone sword seemed to have an irreconcilable grudge with the elder as it held him back, preventing him from escaping.

The mountain peak was the eye of the storm, but at the top of the mountain, the wind speed wasn’t that strong. The elder and the stone sword fought in the center of the vortex, and the battle remained intense.

The pill furnace suffered countless attacks from the man and sword, but it remained intact. However, when the wind vortex rushed into the pill furnace’s ventilation hole, the wind aided the fire, causing the flames inside to burn even more vigorously. Blazing white flames spewed out from the ventilation hole at the top of the pill furnace.

Then, Zhou Wen and Liu Yun saw a powerful wind constantly blow into the pill furnace, causing the flames inside to spew out before being sucked into the vortex.

The flame was like a fire dragon as it rapidly spread in the vortex. It was about to turn the vortex into a fiery vortex.

If it was just the wind, Behemoth could still last for a period of time. However, with the combination of wind and fire, the might was like an annihilative force. Behemoth probably couldn’t withstand such terrifying strength.

“To the top of the mountain.” Zhou Wen put away Tyrant Behemoth and carried Ya’er as he rushed to the top of the mountain.

Now that the vortex of wind and fire had formed, the mountaintop had become the eye of the storm. There was no wind or fire there, forming a vacuum.

All the wind that reached the top of the mountain blew into the pill furnace and spewed out from the top. It formed a tiny safe zone beside the pill furnace. Only there could one avoid the pain of the wind and fire.

However, the mountaintop was already surrounded by flames. If he wanted to rush in, he had to pass through the hundred-meter thick vortex of flames.

Zhou Wen wore the Demon Blood True Dragon Armor and could still withstand it, but Ya'er, who was in his arms, didn't have the protection of the divine armor. She probably couldn't withstand the heat of the flames.

Without any other choice, Zhou Wen switched to Civilization Country and used its teleportation ability to teleport to the mountaintop.

Without Behemoth's protection, Liu Yun could only follow Zhou Wen to the top of the mountain. He summoned new armor, and the Essence Devouring Beast fused with his arm. Instantly, he transformed into a shooting star and charged through the vortex of fire.

Liu Yun's entire body was charred black. Many parts of his armor had melted, and his hair had been burned away. There were blisters on his body, making him look extremely disheveled.

Just as he entered the top of the mountain, he was nearly slashed by a sword beam. Thankfully, he reacted quickly. He rolled to a spot near the pill furnace.

Zhou Wen also hid beside the pill furnace. The stone sword and elder were still fighting, ignoring the terrifying wind and fire vortex around them.

Soon, the flames in the pill furnace spread to the entire space. Terrifying tornadoes of wind and fire spun around the mountain. The stronger the wind, the stronger the flames in the pill furnace. The stronger the flames, the more terrifying it made the fiery tornadoes.

However, it was strange. The flames were extremely terrifying. When the rocks touched the flames, they instantly melted. However, the pill furnace and mountain didn’t show any signs of melting.

The mountain still felt a little hot, but the pill furnace remained the same. No matter how hot the flames in it were, the furnace was only warm to the touch.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 875 - Snatching the Treasure from the Pill Furnace

Chapter 875: Snatching the Treasure from the Pill Furnace

The huge underground space had already become a world of wind and fire.

Zhou Wen didn’t pay attention to the battle between the stone sword and the elder. His attention was focused on the pill furnace.

No matter how one looked at it, the terrifying wind was prepared for the pill furnace. The pill furnace borrowed the wind’s might to fan the flames in the furnace such that it became extremely hot.

Could this pill furnace really be refining the Pill of Immortality? Zhou Wen suspected as he used Truth Listener to observe the situation inside the pill furnace.

However, because the wind and fire inside were too violent, he couldn’t hear much information.

Just as Zhou Wen was observing the pill furnace, a beam of light suddenly lit up inside. Even in the surging furnace flames, the beam of light was still very obvious.

“Is it finally coming out? I’ve waited so long for this day.” The elder was immediately excited when he saw the light in the furnace.

His body emitted a jade glow as he forced the stone sword to retreat. He flew towards the pill furnace and grabbed the lid

with one hand, wanting to open it.

However, the stone sword refused to be outdone. It flew up again and slashed at the elder's arm, forcing him to release the lid. Due to the pressure from the stone sword, the elder failed to open the lid several times.

"You've fought with me for so many years, but you still aren't willing to give up?" The elder was furious. He suddenly retreated and temporarily broke away from the stone sword. The jade light on his body condensed on his right hand, causing his jade-like right hand to become even more crystalline.

The stone sword seemed to sense the danger as well. It no longer charged forward blindly. The stone sword also began to condense its strength as runes appeared on the stone's blade.

The runes carried a strange power. The appearance of each rune made the sword seem heavier.

Zhou Wen took a careful look and realized that the runes that appeared on the stone sword was a law.

"Defiance of a superior… shall result in execution…"

With the appearance of the law, the stone sword seemed to possess unparalleled power as it slashed at the elder with a suppressive might.

The elder's crystal-like right hand extended out almost at the same time.

The moment he extended his right hand, time and space seemed to condense. It was as though only his hand was moving. Everything else stopped.

Clang!

The stone sword was actually sent flying by the elder's right hand. The law on the sword was also destroyed.

Although the stone sword wasn't injured, it couldn't help but fly into the vortex of flames. It was unknown how it was doing.

After the elder sent the stone sword flying, he immediately rushed towards the pill furnace. Without the stone sword's obstruction, he lifted the heavy lid with one hand and extended his other hand to grab the resplendent item inside.

Just as the elder was about to grab the item inside the furnace, a white light suddenly shone out from the furnace.

The elder was caught off guard and was hit by the white light. He immediately screamed and fell.

The resplendent light in the furnace resembled a sun as it rose from the pill furnace. After leaving the pill furnace, the item's light slowly dimmed. Only then did Zhou Wen see that it was Jing Daoxian's Yin Yang Mirror.

Jing Daoxian also jumped out of the furnace and stood on it. He held the Yin Yang Mirror and smiled at the elder.

"Who are you? How dare you scheme against a king like me?" The elder struggled to stand up, but when Jing Daoxian waved the Yin Yang Mirror in his hand, the elder lost control of his body like a puppet. He fell off the mountain, falling into the flames.

"You are a mere alchemist. Do you think you are worthy of being called a king?" Jing Daoxian said disdainfully.

“Boss Jing, you are still the best. That old man looks rather powerful. I never expected him to be unable to withstand a single strike from you,” Liu Yun flattered.

Jing Daoxian said, “Not really. I only took the opportunity to launch a sneak attack. Otherwise, I wouldn’t be his match either. Although he’s only an alchemist, he has fused with the Guardian of the Founding Emperor Tomb. After so many years, he has already evolved to the Terror grade. Few humans are his match now.”

Seeing Jing Daoxian admit that he wasn’t the elder’s match and that he had relied on a sneak attack to gain the upper hand, Zhou Wen and Liu Yun’s fear of him deepened.

The elder’s body was truly terrifying. He rushed out of the vortex of flames and angrily wanted to kill Jing Daoxian.

However, he had already been injured by the Yin Yang Mirror. The Yin Yang Mirror had already locked onto his soul. With just a turn of the Yin Yang Mirror, the elder’s body flew out again.

The stone sword had originally treated the elder as its mortal enemy, but it didn’t take the opportunity to kill him. Instead, it charged at Jing Daoxian.

Jing Daoxian raised the Yin Yang Mirror to fight the stone sword. The elder charged back as well, but unfortunately, he was controlled by the Yin Yang Mirror and involuntarily slammed into the stone sword’s sword beam.

As such, it became a battle between the elder and the stone sword again.

However, the elder had willingly fought the stone sword previously, while this time, he was being controlled by Jing

Daoxian.

“What’s going on? Just now, the stone sword wished to slay the elder. Why is it dodging all the time when there’s now a chance?” Liu Yun was puzzled.

Zhou Wen said, “If I’m not wrong, the stone sword should have the power of a law. It’s the true existence that guards this place. Previously, the stone sword didn’t do its best to stop Jing Daoxian because it probably believes that Jing Daoxian can’t obtain the item in the pill furnace, and that old man was the real threat. That’s why it continued guarding the palace.”

“But now, the stone sword has realized that Jing Daoxian is a greater threat than that elder. And it can’t deal with Jing Daoxian by itself. It can’t stop Jing Daoxian from taking the thing inside the pill furnace. That’s why it doesn’t kill the elder. It hopes that the elder can escape Jing Daoxian’s control and form a tripartite situation,” Zhou Wen said after some thought.

Liu Yun’s eyes lit up as he lowered his voice and used a mystic technique to transmit his voice, allowing Zhou Wen to hear him. “Now that they are restraining each other, do you and I have a chance to snatch the item in the pill furnace?”

At that moment, another blob of light lit up in the furnace. It was different from the light that Jing Daoxian had faked with the Yin Yang Mirror. It was as warm as jade, but it gave off a refreshing feeling in the scorching furnace.

“The wind and fire outside the pill furnace are already so powerful. The flames inside the pill furnace are even more terrifying. I’m afraid even Mythical armor can’t withstand it.

If we enter, we will be reduced to ashes. How can we take the thing inside?” Zhou Wen said.

“My Star Stealer is unparalleled. What can’t I get?” Liu Yun didn’t believe that he couldn’t get what was inside the pill furnace. “Why don’t we join forces? I’ll be responsible for stealing the things inside the pill furnace. You can use your teleportation ability and the Earth Escape to help me escape. After we leave, we’ll split the items equally.”

Zhou Wen looked at Jing Daoxian, who was engaged in an intense battle with the stone sword and the elder. Seeing no reaction from him, as though he hadn’t heard their conversation, he nodded and said, “Okay.”

</di

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 876 - Treasure in the Furnace

Chapter 876: Treasure in the Furnace

Liu Yun saw that Jing Daoxian was doing his best to deal with the stone sword and the elder, and that he didn't have the time to pay attention to him. Without any hesitation, a mysterious starlight lit up at the tip of his fingers. At the instant he directed them, it was as though they had passed through a black hole and vanished.

"Ah!" Liu Yun's hand retracted as he let out a tragic cry. White flames burned at the tips of his fingers. The flesh on his fingertips had been burned away, revealing white bones.

Furthermore, the flames were still spreading rapidly. Almost instantly, the flames were about to reach Liu Yun's palm.

Liu Yun was a decisive person who immediately sliced off his flaming fingers as he chopped down with his other hand.

When the five fingers landed on the ground, they were instantly burned to ashes. If he had been any slower, he probably wouldn't have been able to keep his arm.

Jing Daoxian chuckled and said, "Even top fire-elemental Mythical creatures don't dare touch the flames in the furnace. You actually dared to reach in to grab it? You have guts."

Liu Yun's right hand had all his five fingers severed. Upon hearing Jing Daoxian's mockery, he realized that Jing Daoxian had been watching their every move. The reason he hadn't stopped them was because he was certain that they couldn't take out the item inside the pill furnace.

Liu Yun wasn’t angry. All he did was secretly send a voice transmission to Zhou Wen. *“I touched the thing in the pill furnace with my hand. It’s definitely not a pill.”*

“What is it?” Zhou Wen asked secretly.

“I don’t know. I only touched a portion of it. It feels like a handle, but I don’t know what it is. My hand turned to this from just touching it. I didn’t dare hold it tightly,” said Liu Yun.

“Could it be something like a sword or saber?” Zhou Wen asked.

“It’s possible.” Liu Yun nodded.

He had originally wanted to pull out the item inside. Even if he couldn’t take it out, he could have threatened Jing Daoxian to release his soul that was locked in the Yin Yang Mirror.

Now, he had injured his hand instead of taking out the item; there was naturally no hope.

“Let me give it a try.” Zhou Wen summoned the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General, but he didn’t rush towards the pill furnace immediately.

The flames in the pill furnace were just too powerful. Even the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General probably couldn’t withstand them.

Zhou Wen got the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General to charge into the wind and fire vortex. The Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General was blown around by the wind and fire vortex.

However, the Fiend armor on his body gradually lit up. The purple flames in his body burned brighter and brighter. The power of the flames couldn’t injure him, but instead made him stronger.

Only when the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General’s Fiend armor had burned into something akin to amethyst and its entire body was enveloped by the purple flames did Zhou Wen get him to rush towards the pill furnace.

Jing Daoxian only glanced coldly and did not stop the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General. As he blocked the elder and the stone sword, he allowed the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General entry.

When the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General touched the flames, the Fiend armor immediately lit up. The originally amethyst-like Fiend armor turned purple-white due to the rapidly rising temperature. There was even magma-like liquid slowly flowing down the armor.

With the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General’s powerful body, it was still unable to withstand the flames in the furnace despite being able to borrow the power of the flames.

Zhou Wen could sense the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General’s soul roaring in pain. Although he hadn’t been burned to ashes, he was still in extreme pain.

If he continued entering, the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General’s body would completely melt before he touched anything inside. Therefore, Zhou Wen could only order him to leave the pill furnace.

However, Zhou Wen didn’t unsummon him. Instead, he made him stand beside him. The flames on his body were

still burning crazily, and the melting situation improved slightly.

“Even if a Mythical Fire Elemental King were to come, they would melt in this Sun True Flames Furnace. It’s a fool’s dream to rely on a Mythical Companion Beast to take out what’s inside,” Jing Daoxian said indifferently. “The thing inside isn’t something you can take.”

Jing Daoxian had no intention of taking it himself, as though he was waiting for something.

The elder and the stone sword kept trying to kill Jing Daoxian, but Jing Daoxian was toying with them using the Yin Yang Mirror. The elder wanted to escape the Yin Yang Mirror’s control, but the effects weren’t ideal.

Suddenly, a sound came from the pill furnace.

“Wa… Wa…” Zhou Wen listened carefully and his expression changed. He looked at Liu Yun and asked, “Didn’t you say that the thing inside might be a weapon? Why is there the sound of a baby crying?”

Liu Yun also heard the voice inside and was alarmed. *That’s not right. I clearly grabbed something that resembled a handle with my hand. How can there be a baby’s voice? Could it be that the weapon has become a spirit?*

Impossible. It’s probably a Companion Beast, right? Zhou Wen thought.

At that moment, Jing Daoxian finally took action. With the Yin Yang Mirror in one hand to stop the stone sword and the elder, he used his other hand to reach into the pill furnace’s interior.

The elder and the stone sword seemed to know that the critical moment had arrived. Rows of laws suddenly appeared on the stone sword. Instantly, they tore through the void and stabbed towards Jing Daoxian’s heart.

The elder began to risk his life. His entire body transformed into a crystalline state as he charged at Jing Daoxian like a crystal man.

The power of the Yin Yang Mirror failed to control the elder.

Jing Daoxian frowned slightly. He didn’t have the spare strength to retrieve the item in the furnace. As he held the Yin Yang Mirror to block the stone sword’s strike, he used the stone sword’s power to retreat and dodge the crystallized elder’s strike.

When the crystallized elder saw Jing Daoxian dodge, he charged into the cauldron, hoping to take out the item inside.

However, the stone sword suddenly switched sides and slashed at the elder’s head, forcing him to retreat.

Jing Daoxian charged towards the pill furnace again, but he was stopped by the joint forces of the elder and the stone sword.

The two men and sword fought above the pill furnace, dazzling Liu Yun and Zhou Wen. Even with Zhou Wen’s eyesight, he could barely see their trajectories. There were many details that he couldn’t see clearly.

The stone sword’s sword techniques were nothing out of the ordinary. Every strike seemed to be within expectations, but it made one have no choice but to face its existence. There was no way to use tricks against it.

The elder’s moves were very strange. His entire body was like crystal, but his movement techniques were varied. He looked like a ghost.

Jing Daoxian was very good at borrowing the strength of others. His strength was far inferior to the stone sword and the elder, but with the help of the Yin Yang Mirror, he could also divert the stone sword’s and the elder’s strength to hold them back. No one could take out the thing inside the pill furnace.

Bam!

The three forces clashed, sending Jing Daoxian, the crystallized elder, and the stone sword flying into the vortex of wind and fire.

“Now.” Zhou Wen didn’t hesitate to order the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General to charge at the Sun True Flames Furnace again. At the same time, he flew close to the furnace’s mouth.

Under Zhou Wen’s orders, the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General plunged in. His body began to rapidly melt amidst the terrifying flames. He was unable to withstand the Sun True Flames inside. It looked like he wouldn’t be able to touch anything inside before turning into a pool of magma.

Jing Daoxian and the elder knew that it was impossible for Zhou Wen and company to take out the item inside the pill furnace, so they ignored them.

Seeing that Zhou Wen still wanted to use the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General to try his luck, they weren’t too worried despite not being able to rush back in time to stop him.

Just as the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General was about to melt, Zhou Wen, who had already reached the furnace’s mouth, suddenly summoned a banana fan and fanned at the furnace’s mouth.

</di

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 877 - Miscalculation

Chapter 877: Miscalculation

At the instant the Supreme Yin Wind, augmented by the Three Realms' Best Wind, swept into the pill furnace, the flames inside the pill furnace that was originally roaring with wind and fire immediately converged. The airflow also became much calmer.

Something appeared where the wind and fire converged.

Zhou Wen saw what it was and revealed a look of surprise. However, he didn't hesitate. The Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General had already rushed over and grabbed the item before rushing out of the pill furnace.

In the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General's hand was a golden banana fan. It was golden and resplendent like the sun.

The shape of the banana fan was somewhat similar to Banana Fairy's fan shape, but it wasn't completely the same. There was a strong flow of wind and fire Essence Energy on it, making it different from Banana Fairy.

Jing Daoxian, the elder, and the stone sword never expected Zhou Wen to take out the item in the pill furnace. After a moment of surprise, the stone sword and the elder rushed towards the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General holding the banana fan, hoping to snatch it back.

With a thought, the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General returned to Zhou Wen. The Sun Banana Fan also landed in

front of him. Zhou Wen held the fan’s handle and could feel the heat through the Dragon Scale Armor.

With the elder and the stone sword rushing over, Zhou Wen held the Sun Banana Fan and fanned at them. Immediately, a scorching wind blew out. Wherever the hot wind went, flames would ignite.

What was even more terrifying was that the wind and fire in the entire underground space moved with the Sun Banana Fan, turning into a terrifying fire dragon that swept towards the elder and the stone sword.

The elder and the stone sword used their powers of Terror transformation to meet the fire dragon.

Boom!

The entire underground world shook. Although the fire dragon was defeated by the elder and the stone sword, they were also sent flying by the power of wind and fire.

Jing Daoxian silently arrived near Zhou Wen. With a flash of the Yin Yang Mirror in his hand, Zhou Wen’s soul projection appeared. He wanted to control Zhou Wen’s body.

Before Jing Daoxian could control Zhou Wen’s body, Zhou Wen threw the Sun Banana Fan in his hand. At the same time, the other banana fan in his hand flew out and transformed into a girl sitting on a banana leaf in midair. She reached out and grabbed the Sun Banana Fan.

“Jing Daoxian, you can use your soul to control my body, but you can’t control my Companion Beast. At most, we can just break ranks. If I can’t defeat you, I’ll just destroy that fan. No one can have it,” Zhou Wen said.

Zhou Wen originally believed that he had the means to negotiate, but what happened next completely exceeded his expectations.

After Banana Fairy grabbed the Sun Banana Fan, it turned into golden wind and fire that fused into the banana leaf beneath Banana Fairy.

Golden veins appeared on the emerald-like green banana leaf.

Before Zhou Wen could react, a violent gust of wind erupted from Banana Fairy's body, enveloping her before returning to Zhou Wen.

It evolved... Zhou Wen was somewhat dumbfounded.

He originally wanted to use the power of the Sun Banana Fan to resist Jing Daoxian, the elder, and the stone sword. In this land of wind and fire, the Sun Banana Fan had a natural advantage. It could be said that this was its home ground.

However, the Sun Banana Fan had been absorbed by the banana leaf and had entered an evolutionary state. Instantly, Zhou Wen's previous plans failed.

Seeing Jing Daoxian, the elder, and the stone sword staring at him, Zhou Wen felt somewhat awkward.

He had held back on using Banana Fairy's ability to restrain wind and fire, hoping that she could deliver a shocking effect at the critical moment. Now, she had indeed delivered a shocking effect, but this was just too much of a shock. Even Zhou Wen didn't expect this to happen. He felt his lips turn bitter.

With the Sun Banana Fan gone, the stone sword was enraged. Laws appeared on the sword as it charged at Zhou Wen.

Zhou Wen didn’t dare take the attack head-on. He used the Civilized Country ring to teleport elsewhere, but just as he teleported out, the elder’s crystalline palm had already grabbed at his neck, forcing Zhou Wen to teleport again.

Civilized Country was much stronger than Lost Country, but it could only teleport ten times. It was absolutely impossible to finish off the elder and the stone sword in ten teleportations.

Furthermore, with Jing Daoxian eyeing him covetously, Zhou Wen’s chances were even slimmer.

“Give me your Companion Beast and I’ll help you tide through this calamity,” Jing Daoxian said with a smile.

Zhou Wen didn’t believe Jing Daoxian at all. Seeing the elder and the stone sword charge at him again, he didn’t hesitate to activate the Civilized Country. However, he wasn’t using teleportation this time, but the positioning teleportation function.

The markings in the ghost face’s eyes spun as Zhou Wen instantly vanished with Ya’er in his arms.

Bam!

The positioning teleportation ability of Civilized Country required him to specify a location in advance. In the future, no matter where he was, he could return there by activating the positioning teleportation function.

As Zhou Wen had recently figured it out, he had set the coordinates not far from Mount Dragon Tiger.

He originally wanted to escape from the Founding Emperor Tomb and think of a way to retrieve his soul controlled by the Yin Yang Mirror in the future. However, to his surprise, he failed to teleport out and appeared at the Founding Emperor Tomb entrance.

Damn it. Even teleportation can't leave the Founding Emperor Tomb? Zhou Wen didn't have the luxury of time. If he couldn't leave, Jing Daoxian and company would catch up to him sooner or later.

He directly put on the Invisibility Cloak and switched his Essence Energy Art to the Ancient Sovereign Sutra, allowing the Defy Ancient Sovereign to fuse with him. Then, he charged towards the beam of light that the elder had walked out of.

After taking a few steps, he felt as though some force was summoning his body, making him want to rush in the direction of the palace. Zhou Wen immediately got the Defy Ancient Sovereign to take over his body and forcefully control it to continue charging forward without being affected by the soul in the Yin Yang Mirror.

The pillar of light vanished. Zhou Wen found himself near an inconspicuous building in the ancient city. He didn't hesitate to rush in.

The stone house wasn't big, and it looked very simple. There were no beds or tables. There was only a stone platform with many bamboo slips on the rack beside it.

After passing through the room, there was another room inside. Zhou Wen walked in and saw that it was an alchemy

room. There were all kinds of pill furnaces and other equipment. There were also many refined pills stored in bottles.

Zhou Wen didn’t stand on ceremony as he stored everything inside the Chaos Bead, regardless of whether they were useful or not.

Zhou Wen also stored the bamboo slips. It was a waste not to take them. Perhaps they would be useful in the future.

Just as he finished, he heard a whistling sound from the ancient city. It was likely the stone sword that had rushed out of the temple. However, the stone sword didn’t discover Zhou Wen. It knew that Zhou Wen definitely couldn’t leave, so it constantly flew around the city, hoping to find him.

</di

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 878 - Jing Daoxian's Conditions

Chapter 878: Jing Daoxian's Conditions

Soon, the elder rushed out as well. After he came out, he went straight to his room. When he rushed in, he saw that the stone house was in a mess. There was nothing left. Even the pill furnace, medicinal pestle, and other tools were gone. He was so enraged that he nearly vomited blood.

"It will be difficult to appease the hatred in my heart if I don't tear you to pieces!" The elder roared at the sky and rushed out to search for Zhou Wen like a madman.

Jing Daoxian and Liu Yun rushed out one after another. They were also searching for Zhou Wen, but he seemed to have vanished into thin air. They couldn't find him no matter how hard they tried.

"Could Zhou Wen have already escaped?" Liu Yun asked Jing Daoxian.

"Impossible. Without this Emperor Qin Sword, it's impossible for him to leave. He must still be in the Founding Emperor Tomb," Jing Daoxian said as he held the Emperor Qin Sword.

The stone sword and the elder also knew that it was impossible for Zhou Wen to escape, so they searched every corner of the ancient city and swore to find him.

When the elder rushed out, Zhou Wen had already used the Invisibility Cloak's three minutes of complete invisibility. He went in the opposite direction and rushed back into the

palace, passing through the black water and returning to the mountain peak in the underground space.

The wind in the underground space had stopped, and the fire in the Sun True Flames Furnace had extinguished.

From the looks of it, the flames in the Sun True Flames Furnace were emitted from the Sun Banana Fan. The furnace itself doesn't have any flames. Zhou Wen was sizing up the Sun True Flames Furnace, hoping to see if he could take it away.

However, Zhou Wen's heart suddenly palpitated as he stared intently at the Sun True Flames Furnace in front of him.

Jing Daoxian crawled out of the Sun True Flames Furnace and smiled at Zhou Wen.

"Didn't you already leave?" Zhou Wen stared at Jing Daoxian.

"It's just an illusion. You can't leave the Founding Emperor Tomb, so you can only hide. I've been here waiting for you," Jing Daoxian said.

"You relied on the soul in the Yin Yang Mirror to sense my location, right?" Zhou Wen asked Jing Daoxian.

"That's not important. What's important is that the alchemist and Grand Qin Dharma Sword want to kill you. The only person who can save you from Emperor Qin's mausoleum is me," Jing Daoxian said.

"Conditions?" Zhou Wen asked bluntly.

"That Companion Beast." Jing Daoxian said.

“Impossible.” Zhou Wen knew that even if he transferred Banana Fairy to Jing Daoxian, she might not survive. Therefore, he hadn’t considered doing so.

“I’m not asking you to transfer the Companion Beast to me, but to promise me the usage of the Companion Beast’s abilities in the future to do something for me,” Jing Daoxian said.

“What is it?” Zhou Wen asked.

“Naturally, it’s pill refinement. Although there aren’t any true Elixirs of Immortality in this world, there are some pills that can extend my life. Refining those pills not only requires special materials, but the furnace and fire also have special requirements. Since the Sun Banana Fan has been absorbed by your pet, your pet must have similar powers. I’ll use her as a replacement,” Jing Daoxian said as he summoned a cloth bag and sucked the Sun True Flames Furnace into the tiny cloth bag.

Zhou Wen was still hesitating when Jing Daoxian said, “You don’t have time. The Grand Qin Dharma Sword is easy to fool, but that alchemist isn’t that easy to fool. He will quickly react and come back to capture you. I don’t think you can teleport a second time.”

“Alright, I agree. However, other than helping me leave, you have to release Liu Yun and my soul,” Zhou Wen said.

Jing Daoxian didn’t say a word as he threw the Emperor Qin Sword in his hand at Zhou Wen. Then, with a flip of the Yin Yang Mirror, Zhou Wen’s blurry figure in the mirror vanished.

Zhou Wen could sense that his mind had relaxed significantly. He felt indescribably relaxed.

“With that Emperor Qin Sword, I believe you will be able to leave the Founding Emperor Tomb,” Jing Daoxian said.

“What about you?” Zhou Wen asked with a frown.

“If I wish to leave, there’s nowhere that can retain me,” Jing Daoxian said indifferently. “He’s here. You don’t have time.”

Zhou Wen had already sensed the entity rushing into the underground space, so he asked Jing Daoxian, “When are you refining the pill?”

“I’ll naturally look for you when the time comes,” Jing Daoxian said with a smile. “You’ve grown faster than I imagined. Or rather, the Lost Immortal Sutra has exceeded my expectations. I’m really looking forward to how far it can take you. Before that, you mustn’t die.”

With that said, Jing Daoxian spun the Yin Yang Mirror in his hand and shot it at the elder who had already charged into the underground space. “Go. I’ll keep looking forward to our next meeting. I hope that you can give me more surprises the next time we meet.”

Zhou Wen glanced at Jing Daoxian and used teleportation to rush to the exit of the underground space. As for the furious elder, he was entangled by Jing Daoxian and was unable to proceed with a pursuit.

Zhou Wen turned invisible and rushed out of the palace, heading for the ancient city’s entrance.

Just as he left the palace, he saw the Sword of Law rush back into the hall. From the looks of it, it had figured out what had happened. Unfortunately, it was already too late.

When Zhou Wen rushed to the ancient city's entrance, he realized that Liu Yun was standing at the entrance. He was somewhat surprised.

Seeing Zhou Wen's figure appear, Liu Yun said with a smile, "I knew it. If you want to leave, you definitely have to come here."

Zhou Wen wasn't in the mood to chat with him. He stabbed the Emperor Qin Sword into the hole in the door. The barrier that separated the ancient city and the outside immediately vanished. The two of them rushed out without any hesitation.

After passing through the Mercury Sea, Zhou Wen used the Earth Elemental Beast to take Liu Yun out of the Founding Emperor Tomb.

"We've finally come out alive." Liu Yun looked at the starry sky outside and let out a long sigh.

"Farewell. I hope we won't meet again in the future." Zhou Wen rode the Earth Elemental Beast and was about to escape. He was afraid that the elder would chase after him again, so he wanted to get as far away from the Founding Emperor Tomb as possible.

"You got Jing Daoxian to release my soul, right?" Liu Yun stopped Zhou Wen.

"It was probably released by Jing Daoxian in passing," Zhou Wen said.

Liu Yun didn't say a word as he extended his hand and threw something at Zhou Wen. "This is something I took out from the pill furnace. There are two in total. I'll give one to you. Have fun with it."

“I didn’t think you touched anything,” Zhou Wen caught the item and said in surprise.

Zhou Wen sized up the item in his hand. It was a purple bronze ball. It looked like it was made of the same material as the Sun True Flames Furnace. It was about the size of a billiard ball. There were strange mysterious patterns on it, making it look ancient and mysterious.

“A thief doesn’t leave empty-handed. I don’t dare say anything else, but I’ve never returned empty-handed in my life. I didn’t take out that crappy fan, but I didn’t return empty-handed.” Liu Yun waved his hand and turned around to quickly walk away. Moments later, he vanished.

This fellow… When did he take it out… Even Jing Daoxian didn’t discover it. This thing should be from the Sun True Flames Furnace, right? I wonder what it’s used for. Zhou Wen sized it up for a while, but he couldn’t figure out what use it had. He put it away.

</di

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 879 - Ranking Reboot

Chapter 879: Ranking Reboot

Zhou Wen rode the Earth Elemental Beast and left the Founding Emperor Tomb with Ya’er.

On the way, Zhou Wen attempted to use his phone to take a picture of the Emperor Qin Sword to see if he could get it into the game. Otherwise, having the dungeon but not being able to enter was useless.

After the phone entered its camera mode, it automatically locked onto the Emperor Qin Sword. With a click, the Emperor Qin Sword vanished into thin air, and an Emperor Qin Sword appeared in-game.

However, in-game, Emperor Qin Sword wasn’t its name, but ‘Key to the Imperial Mausoleum.’

After Zhou Wen inserted the Emperor Qin Sword into the ancient city’s door, it automatically vanished. The game’s door opened and didn’t close again. Even if Zhou Wen respawned in the dungeon again, he didn’t need to use the Emperor Qin Sword to open the door.

As Zhou Wen rushed in, he grinded the Founding Emperor Tomb dungeon. The monster in the Mercury Sea was extremely difficult to kill. Typical attacks were useless against it. Its body was somewhat similar to water-elemental creatures. Even if its body was severed, it could reform.

Furthermore, as long as it was in the Mercury Sea, it seemed to possess infinite power. Zhou Wen momentarily couldn’t

think of a way to kill it.

Zhou Wen killed the Bronze Men and the twelve Gold Men in the city again. However, this time, Zhou Wen didn't just use the power of the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General. He summoned Tyrant Behemoth, Torch Dragon, and other Companion Beasts. Together with the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General, the speed at which he killed the twelve Gold Men was much faster.

When he killed the seventh Gold Man, another dimensional crystal dropped. Furthermore, it was an Essence Energy Skill Crystal. The requirements were the same as the previous one.

Apart from that, the twelve Gold Men didn't drop anything.

Zhou Wen's Constitution failed to meet the requirements of 41 Essence Energy and 41 Constitution, so he could only give it up in pain.

After circling the ancient city, he went to the stone house where the old alchemist lived. However, he didn't see anything there. Clearly, the old man wasn't a creature from the dungeon.

Could it be as Jing Daoxian said? That old man was a human alchemist from the Founding Emperor's era? Then how did he survive in the mausoleum to the present day and how did he fuse with a Guardian? Zhou Wen was somewhat worried. If that fellow escaped the mausoleum, he would probably seek him out.

I hope Banana Fairy will quickly evolve to the Terror grade. Without the power of the Terror grade, it will be difficult for me to face the existence of the Terror grade head-on. Zhou

Wen looked at his Banana Fairy tattoo and saw that it was still chaotic. Clearly, she hadn’t completed her evolution.

The door to the palace opened with a push. However, the Grand Qin Dharma Sword inside was just too powerful. Even Tyrant Behemoth was killed. Its Absolute Strength was virtually useless.

The Thearch really didn’t lie to me. Only a power at the Terror grade can resist a power at the Terror grade. This is no longer a matter of stats. Zhou Wen couldn’t resolve the problem of the Great Qin Dharma Sword. All he could do was wait for the invisibility ability of the Invisibility Cloak cooldown to end. He could first use the Invisibility Cloak to pass through the hall and see if it was different from reality.

After finally waiting for the cooldown of the Invisibility Cloak’s Wheel of Destiny to finish, Zhou Wen invisibly passed through the hall without triggering the attack of the Grand Qin Dharma Sword.

After passing through the hall filled with bamboo slips, he realized that this place was somewhat different from reality. Where there should have been a black pool, there was a strange bronze artifact instead. The bronze artifact was more than two meters tall, like a huge jar. It completely covered the spot where the black pool should have been. It was unknown if there was a pool below.

At the mouth of the jar, there was red soil and a man’s head. The man was like a flower planted in the bronze jar.

Just as Zhou Wen was sizing up the human head on the bronze altar, it’s eyes suddenly opened. It shot a glance at the blood-colored avatar and the blood-colored avatar died. The game screen went black.

Jing Daoxian likely shattered the bronze jar in real life after he entered the Founding Emperor Tomb. How did he do it? Zhou Wen didn’t have the Yin Yang Mirror, so he naturally couldn’t attempt it.

Zhou Wen tried a few times, but every time, he was killed by the strange man inside the bronze jar. He knew that the strange man was most likely a Terror-grade existence, so he had no choice but to give up on the idea. All he did was grind the Bronze Men and the Gold Men outside.

The nine black dragons in the underground sea respawned once every nine days. These Gold Men respawned once every twelve days. The pattern was very clear. It took a day to respawn a Mythical creature. The more there were, the slower the respawn.

Devourer, Grand Qin Dharma Sword, and the strange person in the jar. If I want to kill these fellows, I’ll probably have to wait until Banana Fairy’s evolution is complete. I wonder what Banana Fairy’s Terror transformation will be like? Zhou Wen was momentarily unable to imagine it.

Terror transformed creatures basically had obvious body characteristics. They were different from normal creatures.

…

Zhou Wen took Ya’er to an unfamiliar city. He originally wanted to take her to eat some delicacies and buy some clothes, but when he walked to the street, he saw the black cube in the middle of the street light up.

The ranking battle began again. However, this time, Zhou Wen didn’t see Wang Mingyuan on the cube’s screen. The one guarding the divine tree was a snake-tailed monster.

Where did Teacher go? Was he implicated because I took away the divine fruit? Zhou Wen had a bad feeling.

Just as Zhou Wen was pondering over it, he suddenly saw the cube's screen light up as a creature appeared.

That's... Zhou Wen's pupils constricted when he saw the creature's appearance.

Even if Companion Beasts like True Dragon and True Phoenix were on the rankings, Zhou Wen wouldn't find it strange. However, the creature on the rankings was a human.

To be precise, it was a human who had contracted a Guardian and was wearing Guardian armor.

Can humans and Guardians participate in the battle? Does that mean that a single Companion Beast can no longer reach the top? Zhou Wen sized up the human on the screen and saw a name appear first on the rankings.

Great Skyfiend! Zhou Wen silently repeated as his gaze returned to the human.

Unfortunately, his entire body was covered in black armor. It was impossible to see what he looked like. It was even impossible to tell if he was male or female.

I wonder if pure humans can participate in the ranking battle without contracting a Guardian? Zhou Wen wanted to know why Wang Mingyuan wasn't under the divine tree.

However, if he couldn't participate in the battle himself, he couldn't use multiple Companion Beasts. Even an existence like Primordial Sword Immortal wouldn't be able to obtain first place.

Teacher, what happened? Zhou Wen looked at the Great Skyfiend on the screen, but he was distracted. He still remembered that the last time he went to retrieve the divine fruit, Wang Mingyuan had secretly warned him not to go there again.

</di

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 880 - Transferring the Baby Tiger

Chapter 880: Transferring the Baby Tiger

It was somewhat different from the first ranking battle. The ranking had just started not long ago. In less than an hour, all sorts of pets filled the rankings. Many Companion Beasts on the rankings had been seen in the previous ranking battle.

However, Primordial Sword Immortal and Fairy Immortal Gu, who had performed extremely well the last time, weren’t on the rankings. Zhou Wen’s Tyrant Behemoth naturally wasn’t on the rankings.

The person ranked first was still Great Skyfiend. No matter which Companion Beasts appeared on the rankings, they couldn’t shake his position.

This was also within Zhou Wen’s expectations. Great Skyfiend wasn’t just referring to a Guardian. There was also the human who had fused with him, as well as various Companion Beasts that the human had. Their combined combat strength far exceeded a single Companion Beast.

Unless there was someone else who had similarly contracted a Guardian on the rankings, in terms of overall combat strength, it was almost impossible for ordinary Companion Beasts to surpass Great Skyfiend.

Various areas of the Federation were also discussing what Great Skyfiend was. Most humans didn’t know of the

existence of Guardians, but anyone could tell that Great Skyfiend didn’t look like a Companion Beast.

…

Zhou Wen didn’t dare stay in one place for too long. After staying for a night, he left the city.

It’s already the fourth day. Even if that alchemist comes out, he shouldn’t be able to find me, Zhou Wen thought as he walked. Suddenly, he was taken aback as his expression turned odd.

My first thought is that I’m actually worried about that alchemist and not Jing Daoxian. This is too dangerous. Now, Zhou Wen suddenly understood why Lord Alcohol and Xia Jiuhuang believed in Jing Daoxian, who was known as a devil.

This person was a very complicated contradiction to begin with. He did whatever he wanted and killed people without a care. But sometimes, he had a charm that made it obvious that he was evil, but it was impossible to associate him with the word evil.

Zhou Wen was alarmed. He knew that such a thought was very dangerous. He needed to be more alert. Jing Daoxian was even more dangerous than the old alchemist.

Ding!

As Zhou Wen was pondering over it, a pleasant chime sounded in-game.

Looking down, Zhou Wen couldn’t help but be overjoyed. A baby tiger had dropped in-game.

Finally, another baby tiger has spawned. Zhou Wen looked at its stats. It wasn't much different from the two baby tigers from before.

"What should I combine the baby tiger with?" As the baby tiger's luck couldn't be stacked, it could only be used for fusion.

However, with the lesson learned from the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General, Zhou Wen didn't dare randomly fuse it. He first matched the baby tiger with his various Companion Beasts to check their compatibility.

There were quite a number of Companion Beasts with high compatibility, but Zhou Wen didn't immediately decide on fusing them.

I'll put it aside for now. Zhou Wen decided to consider it later. After all, getting the baby tiger to drop was just too difficult.

Suddenly, Zhou Wen thought of the method he had learned from Liu Yun. He thought to himself, *It's fine if I don't fuse the baby tiger. I can try transferring it, but who should I transfer it to?*

Now, there was only Ya'er beside Zhou Wen, but it was still difficult to say if Ya'er was considered a living person. He didn't know if she could use Companion Beasts like ordinary people.

Zhou Wen thought for a moment and decided to ask her, "Ya'er, can you use Companion Beasts?"

Ya'er looked at Zhou Wen blankly. Clearly, she didn't know either.

“Let’s do this. Let’s give it a try.” Zhou Wen decided to head to the city to buy a Mortal Companion Egg for Ya’er to see if she could hatch it.

If she could incubate and use Companion Beasts, Zhou Wen could give her some Companion Beasts that he didn’t need. While giving her the ability to protect herself, she could also control the Companion Beasts to help him.

After arriving in the city, Zhou Wen found a Companion Egg shop and bought the weakest Mortal Companion Egg. It was much more expensive than Legendary Companion Eggs.

The reason he chose the weakest was that Zhou Wen was afraid that incubating a Companion Egg would require too much Essence Energy and Ya’er’s body wouldn’t be able to withstand it.

Although she had divine-level mental strength, her body was still that of a child. If her body lacked the Essence Energy needed, something bad might happen.

“Try injecting your Essence Energy into the Companion Egg.” Zhou Wen handed the Companion Egg to Ya’er.

“Do you know what Essence Energy is?” Zhou Wen thought for a moment before asking her. As Ya’er was a Kuman Nee in the past, he didn’t know if she cultivated in Essence Energy Arts.

Ya’er nodded and took the Companion Egg. Soon, the Companion Egg in her hand hatched and transformed into a stream of light that transformed into a tattoo on Ya’er’s body.

So she can really use Companion Beasts! Zhou Wen thought for a moment. He wanted to first transfer the baby tiger to

Ya’er. He wanted her to be luckier and passively increase his luck. After all, Ya’er would always be with him.

He successfully transferred the baby tiger to Ya’er, and Zhou Wen had only sacrificed a star in the Pocket Universe.

Furthermore, with the evolution of the Pocket Universe, that star could still be reborn in the future.

This Sky-Stealing Sun-Shifting Art is really awesome. With this Essence Energy Art, won’t I be able to exchange Companion Beasts? Unfortunately, not everyone knows the Sky-Stealing Sun-Shifting Art. Otherwise, I could exchange Companion Beasts at will. Zhou Wen marveled inwardly as he increasingly liked this Essence Energy Art.

Zhou Wen transferred a few Companion Beasts to Ya’er before telling her how to use their abilities.

Ya’er was very smart. As long as Zhou Wen told her what to do, she could use them perfectly without making any mistakes.

“Ya’er, you’re really smart.” Zhou Wen stroked Ya’er’s head.

Zhou Wen took a huge detour and when they arrived at a city again, the first on the ranking was still Great Skyfiend. Apart from Great Skyfiend, no other Guardian had entered the rankings.

There shouldn’t only be one Guardian. At the very least, Jiang Yan has Burial Immortal. Why didn’t he participate in the battle? Zhou Wen was puzzled.

However, he realized that the ranking battle had only recently started. There was still plenty of time. It was also

possible that some Guardians wanted to secretly hide their strength and hadn’t chosen to fight.

From the looks of it, the Battle of Guardians is about to officially surface. Zhou Wen continued on his journey with Ya’er. After walking so much and going to so many unfamiliar places, Glimmer’s evolution speed remained stagnant. Although it kept improving, its progress was rather slow.

Zhou Wen headed north, planning on heading to the North District where the Ultimate Family Clan was. There were many dimensional creatures he had never seen before, as well as many novel dungeons. Since he had to walk around, he might as well download some new dungeons.

However, before he could even walk out of the East District, Zhou Wen saw an elder slowly walking over from the opposite side on a flat road.

Although he was still a distance away from the elder, Zhou Wen had already identified the elder as the alchemist in the Founding Emperor Tomb. Not only had he got out, but he had also found Zhou Wen after so many days.

</di

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 881 - Crazy Escape

Chapter 881: Crazy Escape

Without a word, Zhou Wen rode the Earth Elemental Beast and used Earth Escape to get far away.

However, after the Earth Elemental Beast's Earth Escape ended, he realized that the elder had also appeared beside him. He had also used Earth Escape to follow him.

Zhou Wen cursed inwardly as he made the Earth Elemental Beast use Earth Escape again. This time, Zhou Wen chose to let the Earth Elemental Beast expend all its Essence Energy in one go and use a long-distance Earth Escape that spanned hundreds of kilometers.

Just as he came out of the Earth Escape, he saw the elder walk out from a tree beside him. He was like a ghost hidden in the tree.

Wood Escape Art? Zhou Wen's heart chilled.

Not only did the elder know the Earth Escape technique, but he also knew the Wood Escape technique. If not for the fact that he couldn't use it in the imperial mausoleum, Zhou Wen wouldn't have escaped so easily.

"You won't be able to escape," the elder said coldly as he stared at Zhou Wen. He wasn't anxious at all as he slowly approached Zhou Wen like a cat chasing a mouse.

Without any hesitation, Zhou Wen used the teleportation ability of the Civilized Country. At the same time that the

teleportation ended, he activated the invisibility power of Invisibility Cloak.

After activating the Invisibility Cloak, he teleported several times and changed the direction of his escape.

However, soon, Zhou Wen realized that the elder had followed him again. In front of the elder was something that resembled a hairpin. No matter where Zhou Wen fled in, the hairpin would point in his direction.

The elder clearly couldn’t see Zhou Wen, but under the hairpin’s guidance, Zhou Wen couldn’t shake off his tail.

Zhou Wen was extremely anxious. He only had three minutes of complete invisibility. If he couldn’t shake off the elder in three minutes, ordinary invisibility was useless against such an expert.

There’s less than two minutes left of complete invisibility. If I don’t destroy that hairpin-like thing, it’s impossible for me to escape. Zhou Wen made a prompt decision and stopped running. He suddenly changed his position and exploited his invisibility to slash at the hairpin floating beside the elder.

The elder chased in the direction the hairpin pointed, but the hairpin could only point in a direction, not the location. He never expected Zhou Wen to have the guts to turn around and charge back.

By the time he realized it, Zhou Wen was already in front of the hairpin. The Light Concealment Sword slashed at the hairpin with the power of Immortal Slaying.

Almost at the same time, the elder with the cold eyes threw a crystalline palm at Zhou Wen’s chest. It was so fast that it was difficult for him to dodge.

Zhou Wen had no intention of dodging. The Light Concealment Sword slashed at the hairpin, slicing it into two.

As for Zhou Wen’s chest, it was destroyed by the elder’s palm, turning into white smoke.

When the white smoke dissipated, Zhou Wen had already vanished. A shattered paper talisman floated to the ground.

He actually has a Substitute Talisman. The elder frowned slightly as he searched for Zhou Wen’s tracks, but he didn’t find anything.

Without the hairpin, the elder couldn’t determine Zhou Wen’s location.

“You won’t be able to escape.” The elder took out a few copper coins and condensed his Essence Energy. He threw them to the ground and began calculating with his fingers, as though he was trying to divine Zhou Wen’s location.

However, after calculating for a while, a look of puzzlement appeared on his face. *Strange. My six lines of insight can’t divine his location?*

Zhou Wen was frantically running for his life when he suddenly felt something tremble. On a second look, he realized that it was something Ya’er was wearing.

It was the three copper coins and red string that Zhou Wen had taken out of the Pixiu’s stomach when he had killed it.

Later on, he gave it to Ya’er who wore it on her wrist. At that moment, the copper coin actually trembled automatically for some reason.

Zhou Wen didn’t dare stop as he continued fleeing with Ya’er. Thankfully, the elder didn’t chase after him again. The invisibility time limit had passed as Zhou Wen heaved a sigh of relief.

All this time, he drew Substitute Talismans whenever he had the time. Up to now, he had only succeeded in drawing two. He had just used one, leaving him with only one.

Zhou Wen didn’t dare stay any longer. He summoned the Great Might Vajra Bull and made it rush into the mountainous area at its fastest speed.

Zhou Wen wasn’t afraid of getting lost since he had the Pocket Universe’s positioning. He was just afraid of encountering an unknown dimensional zone. However, at this stage, he couldn’t care less. All he could do was escape in the direction of the more concealed areas.

After crossing one mountain after another, Zhou Wen didn’t know how far he had run. There were no more roads and he found himself by a small river.

Zhou Wen followed the river. There was a large peach blossom forest on both sides of the river. The peach blossoms landed in the river and flowed along it, making the river appear especially beautiful.

After walking for more than five kilometers, he reached the end of the river. The area ahead was blocked by a mountain. Just as Zhou Wen was about to go around the mountain, he saw a gap that allowed him to pass through. He could vaguely see the light from the other side of the mountain.

Zhou Wen didn’t hesitate as he passed through the mountain crack.

The mountain crack was extremely narrow when he first entered. After walking for a short distance, it gradually widened. Soon, Zhou Wen passed through the mountain and saw a beautiful valley in front of him.

There were many wooden houses and bamboo buildings in the mountain valley. There were bamboo forests and flowers everywhere. Similarly, there were large peach trees. The wooden houses and bamboo buildings dotted the area, like a paradise on earth.

What's going on? Zhou Wen felt that something was amiss. This was because after he passed through the mountain crack, he failed to determine his location with Pocket Universe.

This place... Could it be that legendary place? Zhou Wen sized up the valley with a strange expression as he suddenly thought of an essay he had read in school.

The essay was called "Peach Blossom Spring." It mentioned that a fisherman had accidentally entered a peach blossom garden. There he saw a beautiful village that was isolated from the world. However, after he left, he couldn't find the peach blossom forest or the village no matter how hard he tried.

No matter how Zhou Wen looked at it, it seemed to be identical to the place described in Peach Blossom Spring. The only difference was that in the Peach Blossom Spring in the essay, there was a group of Pre-Qin villagers who had taken refuge in war. However, although there were wooden houses and wooden buildings here, Zhou Wen didn't see anyone. He didn't even see a chicken or dog.

Using Truth Listener's ability to scan the valley, he felt as though there was a fog enveloping the valley. He could see it

with his eyes, but he couldn’t see anything with Truth Listener’s ability.

It doesn’t matter if this is Peach Blossom Spring, it’s definitely a dimensional zone. Zhou Wen was somewhat curious as he summoned a group of Poison Bats and got them to fly into the village to scout and see what was inside.

However, after the Poison Bats left Zhou Wen’s line of sight, he suddenly lost contact with them. This made Zhou Wen’s expression turn nasty.

“Is anyone there?” Zhou Wen called out to the depths of the valley, but no one answered him. Instead, his voice echoed in the valley repeatedly.

“Is anyone there… Is anyone there… Is anyone…”

</di

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 882 - The Man in White

Chapter 882: The Man in White

This place was strange, very strange. Zhou Wen wanted to backtrack, but when he turned around, the mountain wall crack he had come from had vanished. Behind him was a complete mountain wall. There was no way out.

Zhou Wen reached out to touch the mountain wall. It was made of real stone, not an illusion.

Feeling that something was amiss, Zhou Wen summoned a Poison Bat and attempted to have it fly out through the sky. However, when the Poison Bat flew out of the valley, it seemed to hit something and fell from the sky.

This outcome didn’t surprise Zhou Wen. If this was really a dimensional zone, it was normal that it couldn’t fly out.

How can I leave this dimensional zone? Seeing that there was no way out, Zhou Wen had no choice but to walk deeper in, hoping to find a way to leave the dimensional zone.

He summoned different Companion Beasts to scout ahead. There were Runic Heavy-Armored Warriors, Flying Ants, and some small green-furred Gu.

The valley was as beautiful as a fairyland, but there was no living creature. There was no aura of a living person in the wooden houses and bamboo buildings.

Under Zhou Wen’s control, a green-furred Gu burrowed into the wooden hut closest to him. It realized that there were all

sorts of daily necessities used by humans in the wooden hut. However, those things looked ancient, unlike those used by modern humans. Furthermore, there was no one inside, nor were there any dimensional creatures.

Zhou Wen had no choice but to continue exploring. Strangely, there were no creatures in the valley. The Poison Bats that he had lost contact with had vanished.

After circling the entire valley, he realized that it wasn’t small at all. There was even a stream circling it, and the scenery was especially beautiful.

Beside the stream was a huge peach tree. The tree was covered in flowers, making it look gorgeous.

However, for some reason, there were no other peach trees beside the huge peach tree. The other peach trees were a distance away from the huge peach tree, making it look a little lonely.

After circling the valley twice—a place that looked like paradise—he would have found this place a great place if not for suddenly losing contact with his Companion Beasts after they went beyond a certain range.

There must be something in this valley. Where are they hiding? Zhou Wen searched for a long time but failed to find a way out. Similarly, he failed to find the Companion Beasts that had lost contact with him.

It was useless to walk around. Zhou Wen sat down to rest as he thought of various possibilities.

Zhou Wen didn’t know if this was the legendary Peach Blossom Spring as everything here was slightly different from the legendary Peach Blossom Spring.

Time ticked by. Zhou Wen failed to come up with a way to leave this place. Although he had tried to force his way out, it was useless.

The Earth Elemental Beast’s Earth Escape technique could only circle around the valley, preventing it from escaping.

The mountain wall seemed to have a life of its own. The hole that Tyrant Behemoth dug out would be quickly filled up.

The sky gradually darkened as a moon rose into the sky.

A strange sound suddenly appeared in the originally silent valley. Zhou Wen tilted his head to listen. It was the sound of a flute.

After determining the direction, the sound of the flute seemed to come from the stream.

Zhou Wen had been searching the valley the entire day, but he hadn’t found any clues. Now that there was a sudden sound of a flute, he naturally wanted to take a look.

Even if it was a dimensional creature, he would at least gain some understanding of what to do. He wasn’t as aimless as he was now.

Zhou Wen carefully walked to the stream and, from afar, saw a person in white sitting under a huge peach blossom tree. He held a flute in his hand, and the sound was coming from it.

From where Zhou Wen was, he could only see the person’s side profile. He was dressed in white with his long hair tied up. Wherever the peach blossoms fell, he would gently blow into the bamboo flute, making him look like a deity.

It’s impossible for someone to really be here. It should be a humanoid dimensional creature. I wonder how strong he is? Zhou Wen stood motionless as he sized up the white-robed man from afar.

After the tune ended, the white-robed man put down the bamboo flute in his hand and turned to look at Zhou Wen. “Since you’re here, why don’t you have a drink with me?”

Only then did Zhou Wen see that the white-robed man was handsome. On the ground beside him was a jade alcohol flask and wine cups.

Is he really not a human? Zhou Wen was somewhat puzzled when he saw that his appearance and actions resembled a human.

Seeing a motionless Zhou Wen, the white-robed man picked up the alcohol flask and wine cup and poured himself a cup. As he drank, he looked at the moon in the sky and said, “Life is so short. Why seek frustrations?”

The white-robed man was enjoying the moon and drinking, but Zhou Wen couldn’t help but ask, “Who are you?”

“Immortal,” the person in white answered.

“What immortal?” Zhou Wen asked with a frown.

“Immortals are immortals. They are carefree, happy, and comfortable,” the white-robed man said.

Seeing that he couldn’t get an answer, Zhou Wen asked, “Do you know how to get out of here?”

“Why do you want to leave? Isn’t this place good? It’s aloof from worldly affairs and there are no worries. Is there any

place better than this in this world?” the person in white said as he drank.

“This place is very good, but I don’t like it here,” Zhou Wen said.

“You can’t leave. This is an immortal realm, a place isolated from the mortal world. Unless one dies, no one can leave this place,” the white-robed man said.

Zhou Wen naturally refused to believe the white-robed man’s words. As long as it was a dimensional zone, there was definitely a way to leave.

Zhou Wen was somewhat hesitant, unsure if he should immediately attack the white-robed man. This white-robed man looked like a human, but he was likely a dimensional creature. However, with his high intelligence, his strength was definitely extraordinary. Zhou Wen was wondering if he should wait for Banana Fairy to complete her evolution before taking action.

After some thought, Zhou Wen looked at the white-robed man and wanted to say something, but he was surprised to discover that the white-robed man had vanished under the peach blossom tree.

Zhou Wen called out a few times, but no one responded. He searched the valley again, but he didn’t see the white-robed man again.

He waited until daybreak, but he didn’t see any living creatures again.

What kind of dimensional zone is this? Zhou Wen was somewhat depressed.

If a horde of dimensional creatures were to pounce at him, Zhou Wen knew what to do. But his current situation left him at a loss.

No, the next time I see that white-robed person, I have to think of a way to subdue him and figure out how to leave this place. Zhou Wen thought for a moment and summoned Explosive Fiend Man to make some arrangements in the valley.

With such a highly-intelligent dimensional creature, it was definitely not easy to deal with. Zhou Wen had no choice but to make preparations in advance—just in case.

</di

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 883 - Thirteen Moves Sword Technique

Chapter 883: Thirteen Moves Sword Technique

However, in the next few days, Zhou Wen didn’t see the white-robed man again. The entire valley was empty, making Zhou Wen suspect that this dimensional zone was a prison specially used to hold people.

Thankfully, Ya’er was by Zhou Wen’s side. Although she seldom spoke, having someone by his side made him feel much better.

As Zhou Wen set up the traps in the valley, he grinded his phone as he waited for the white-robed person to appear again.

This wait lasted for seven days. Seven nights later, Zhou Wen finally heard the familiar sound of a flute. He hurriedly ran to the peach blossom tree by the stream and saw the white-robed man sitting at the spot where he had been playing the flute.

The sound of his flute was quiet and ethereal, making one feel relaxed after hearing it. It gave one a sense of freedom that allowed one to forget their worries.

Zhou Wen’s mind was firm and he wasn’t affected by the flute’s sound. He only thought about how to subdue the white-robed man and ask him how to leave.

“We meet again.” After the tune, the white-robed man looked at Zhou Wen and said, “Do you want a drink this time?”

“I just want to know how to leave this place.” Zhou Wen stared intently at the white-robed man. No matter what, he couldn’t allow him to disappear like the previous time.

“It looks like you’ve already made up your mind,” the person in white said as he held his wine glass.

“Yes.” Zhou Wen nodded slightly as he gripped the Bamboo Blade in his hand.

“Alright then. I can tell you how to leave this place, but I have a condition,” the white-robed man said, surprising Zhou Wen.

“What condition?” Zhou Wen looked at the white-robed man in surprise.

“Do you know how to use a sword?” the person in white said as he fiddled with the wine cup.

“Not really. I’ve only learned a few sword techniques,” Zhou Wen answered.

“It’s fine even if you don’t. I have a sword technique here. As long as you can learn this sword technique, I’ll tell you the way to leave this place,” said the white-robed man.

“Why?” Zhou Wen was somewhat alarmed. He had never seen such a dimensional creature.

“No reason. Do you want to learn it?” The person in white didn’t explain.

“I’ll learn.” Zhou Wen thought for a moment and nodded in agreement.

“My sword technique has a total of thirteen moves. It’s not too difficult. No matter how stupid you are, you should be able to learn it in five days.” As the white-robed man spoke, he stood up and casually picked up a withered branch from the ground before performing his swordplay.

He used the branch as a sword and demonstrated the set of sword techniques. The sword technique was ethereal and elegant, without any killing intent.

Most sword techniques in the world pursued the ability to injure enemies, but this sword technique of his didn’t have any oppression. Instead of saying it was for killing enemies, it was more like a swordplay that was for entertainment.

Soon, the white-robed man finished demonstrating the thirteen sword moves. He looked at Zhou Wen with a faint smile. “Have you memorized them?”

“Got it.” Zhou Wen had an excellent memory, and the thirteen moves weren’t too complicated. He remembered every move clearly.

The person in white smiled. “Find me after you’ve mastered it.”

“There’s no need to go through so much trouble. I’ll show it to you now. It shouldn’t be too difficult to master it in a night. As long as I can demonstrate the complete sword technique, it’ll count as me mastering it, right?” Zhou Wen said to the white-robed man.

“That’s right. As long as you can completely use that sword technique once, I’ll count you as mastering it.” The bamboo flute in the white-robed man’s hand spun between his fingers.

“Alright, I’ll demonstrate it to you now,” Zhou Wen said as he summoned a Legendary thin sword. It was a Companion Egg that had dropped from the Ancient Sword Tomb. It wasn’t usually of much use. Based on its size, it was more suitable for this sword technique, so Zhou Wen casually summoned it.

Zhou Wen held the sword and recalled the white-robed man’s sword technique in his mind. After confirming that he hadn’t forgotten any details, Zhou Wen began striking.

With his combat experience and talent, it was too easy for him to imitate a set of sword techniques. Even if it were more than a hundred moves, Zhou Wen could replicate them with just one look; what’s more thirteen moves.

However, when Zhou Wen stabbed out with his sword, he was stunned. He couldn’t continue the swordplay after the thrust.

It wasn’t that the sword technique’s moves were difficult. With Zhou Wen’s present physique, he could carry out any movement as long as a human body was capable of doing it.

However, Zhou Wen couldn’t continue the thrust no matter what he did. This was because he realized that the sword technique in his memories was somewhat different from the one the white-robed man had demonstrated.

Strange! How is it different? Zhou Wen frowned slightly as he retracted the sword he had thrust out and carefully recalled the white-robed man’s sword techniques.

Memories of the sword technique appeared clearly in Zhou Wen’s mind, but his expression gradually changed.

This was because the sword technique in his mind was completely different from the one he had just memorized.

This feeling was very strange. It was like a person clearly remembering someone in red clothes, but when they recalled it again, the color of the person’s clothes turned white.

The clashing of memories was something Zhou Wen had never encountered before.

He turned to look at the white-robed man and wanted to ask him what was going on, but there was no one under the peach blossom tree. The white-robed man had long vanished.

Zhou Wen frowned slightly as he recalled the thirteen moves. This time, it was different from the previous two memories.

It was like Zhou Wen had memorized three different sword techniques. Although the sword techniques all had thirteen moves, the styles were completely different.

The sword technique demonstrated by the white-robed man was elegant, but the sword technique in Zhou Wen’s memory was ferocious and domineering in his second memory. The sword technique in his third memory was mild and mysterious, making Zhou Wen doubt his own memories.

Then, when Zhou Wen wanted to carefully recall it again, he realized that the sword technique had changed again. The sword technique he recalled every time seemed different.

What’s going on? Zhou Wen’s expression changed constantly. He was certain that there was nothing wrong

with his memory, but why was his memory constantly changing? Zhou Wen couldn’t figure it out.

Is it an illusion? Zhou Wen quickly rejected this thought. He was very focused. Even an illusion couldn’t shake his will. If it was purely an illusion, it was impossible for it to affect his brain.

If it’s not an illusion, then there’s something wrong with the sword technique itself. Zhou Wen recalled the thirteen moves again and again. He wanted to try and see how many different memories he had.

The night passed as the sun rose and set. When night came again, Zhou Wen had already recalled more than a hundred times, but the sword techniques he recalled were different every time. None of them were repeated.

With the moon above the branches, the white-robed man appeared under the peach blossom tree again. He sat on a tree root and held a wine flask in one hand and a wine cup in the other. As he poured himself wine, he asked, “Have you memorized it?”

</di

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 884 - Three Thousand Sword Intent

Chapter 884: Three Thousand Sword Intent

Translator: CKtalon

“What sword technique is this?” Zhou Wen asked the white-robed man.

Previously, he hadn’t been interested in the white-robed man’s sword technique. He only wanted to memorize the sword technique and get the white-robed man to tell him the way to leave. Therefore, he didn’t even ask for the name of the sword technique.

Now, Zhou Wen had no choice but to take this unassuming sword technique seriously. This was because he couldn’t confidently tell the white-robed man that he had memorized the sword technique.

“It doesn’t have a name. Whatever you think it is will be its name,” the person in white said.

Zhou Wen frowned as he looked at the white-robed man. He didn’t say a word for a while. Although he had long imagined that the white-robed man wouldn’t tell him the way to leave so easily, the strangeness of the sword technique exceeded his imagination.

“Do you want me to demonstrate it to you again?” the white-robed man asked Zhou Wen with a smile.

“There’s no need.” Zhou Wen shook his head and gestured with the sword in his hand. At the same time, he kept

recalling the white-robed man’s thirteen-move sword technique.

The white-robed man’s sword technique seemed to contain infinite changes. Every time Zhou Wen recalled something, it was different. For the next few days, Zhou Wen kept recalling and gesturing with his sword, but there was no result.

Now, Zhou Wen’s eyes were bloodshot as though he was possessed.

Under the pure moonlight, the white-robed man sat under the peach blossom tree. As he watched Zhou Wen practice his swordplay, he fiddled with the wine cup in his hand and muttered to himself, “Why try to fix something that was not broken in the first place?”

As he spoke, the white-robed man downed the wine in his cup.

The stream under the moonlight reflected the figure of the white-robed man, but the reflection wasn’t that of a handsome man, but a skeleton in ragged clothes.

After another two days, Zhou Wen felt as though he had been possessed. He sat under the peach blossom tree in a daze, his eyes turning blood-red. He was in a terrible state.

Ya’er continued following Zhou Wen obediently. She didn’t say a word or disturb him.

Night descended upon the valley again as the white-robed man appeared under the peach blossom tree. He looked at the bedeviled Zhou Wen as a strange glint flashed in his eyes. Then, he looked at Ya’er, who was sitting beside Zhou Wen. “Young lady, do you want to learn sword techniques?”

Ya’er looked at the white-robed man expressionlessly without any reaction. It was as if she couldn’t understand him.

“Is he your father? It looks like your father doesn’t have a good memory. He can’t even remember such a simple sword technique after learning it for so many days. I find you smart. If it’s you, you should be able to learn it quickly. When the time comes, you can leave with your father,” the white-robed man said to Ya’er.

Ya’er continued looking at him expressionlessly without any reaction.

“Forget it. You are still young. I’m afraid you still don’t know what a sword is. It’s fine if you don’t learn it. Let me personally deliver you to freedom. Just like your father, you will forever stay in this carefree place,” the white-robed person muttered to himself.

With that said, the white-robed man stood up. He held the bamboo flute in his hand as he walked towards Ya’er.

Just as he was about to reach Ya’er, the bamboo flute in his hand stabbed at Ya’er’s heart like a blade.

Clang!

A saber beam flashed as the bamboo flute in the white-robed man’s hand was instantly sliced into two. Zhou Wen held the Bamboo Blade in his hand as he stood up and stared coldly at the white-robed man.

“How is that possible?” The white-robed man looked at Zhou Wen in shock as though he had seen a ghost.

“I’ve already memorized your sword technique,” Zhou Wen said as he held the Bamboo Blade and stared at the white-robed man.

“Impossible. It’s impossible for you to memorize it.” The white-robed man didn’t believe Zhou Wen at all.

“Why?” The blood vessels in Zhou Wen’s eyes slowly receded as he pointed the Bamboo Blade in his hand at the white-robed man.

“Because…” The person in white was speechless.

“That’s because it’s not a thirteen-move sword technique at all. It’s a combination of three thousand sword intents. Every time I recall it, I will sense a different sword intent. No matter how good my memory is, it’s impossible for me to memorize all three thousand sword intents, right?” Zhou Wen said.

“That’s right. It’s a sword technique that humans can’t master to begin with. You actually didn’t fall into the endless cycle of sword intent. You do have some ability. Unfortunately, you failed to learn my sword technique, so you naturally can’t leave this place. You will ultimately die here. It’s just the difference between early and late death,” said the white-robed man.

“Who said I didn’t master it?” Zhou Wen said indifferently.

“It’s useless no matter what you say. It’s impossible for you to master it,” said the white-robed man.

“Then watch carefully.” Zhou Wen used his saber as a sword and stabbed at the white-robed man. It was the first move the white-robed man had demonstrated.

The white-robed man was slightly surprised as he quickly retreated. However, Zhou Wen kept unleashing an endless stream of techniques. In a moment, he used all of the sword techniques demonstrated by the white-robed man. It was identical to the sword technique used by the white-robed man.

“Is that all? Then I’m sorry to tell you that you didn’t master my sword technique,” the person in white said with a sneer.

However, Zhou Wen didn’t say a word as he continued delivering the sword technique. One sword strike after another surged out like a river. At times, it was ferocious, but at times, it was brisk. After every thirteen moves, the style of the sword technique would change.

“No… Impossible…” The person in white seemed to have thought of something, but he couldn’t believe it. The expression on his face was mixed with fear, suspicion, disbelief, and other emotions.

However, Zhou Wen’s sword technique continued. He used all the sword techniques he had once recalled, and he used them in perfect order.

“How can there be such a thing… Impossible… Three thousand sword intents… How can you memorize all of them…” The expression on the white-robed man’s face had already become ferocious and twisted. He no longer had the elegance and confidence from before.

“I don’t have any other strengths; my only strength is that I’m sufficiently focused. I can remember things that others can’t. It’s indeed difficult to remember three thousand sword intents, but I still memorized them.” Zhou Wen constantly used sword moves.

As Zhou Wen’s sword moves changed, the surrounding space seemed to distort and change. The originally beautiful valley gradually turned into ruins filled with withered branches and charred wood.

The elegant white-robed man gradually turned into a ragged skeleton.

After Zhou Wen demonstrated all his sword techniques, the skeleton collapsed and leaned against the tree which looked like it had been struck by lightning. The tree no longer had any leaves and was charred black.

“Impossible… It’s impossible for anyone to memorize… Impossible…” The skeleton was still muttering to itself as though it was possessed. In the end, the soul fire in its eyes gradually extinguished, becoming lifeless.

Zhou Wen looked around and realized that the valley was completely different from the one he had seen before. There was scorched earth everywhere. It was no peach blossom spring, but a dead zone.

There was no longer any water in the stream. There were bones everywhere, like a river of bones from hell.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 885 - Great Skyfiend Master's Challenge

Chapter 885: Great Skyfiend Master’s Challenge

It was unknown what had happened here. It was as though a thunderstorm had struck it. All the trees were charred black, and so were the houses.

The skeleton under the tree no longer had any vitality. His clothes were tattered and there were charred marks in many places. It looked like he had been struck by lightning.

And the crack appeared on the mountain wall where Zhou Wen had entered.

Zhou Wen glanced at the skeleton and turned to walk out of the valley. After walking out of the crack in the mountain, his Pocket Universe locating ability was immediately restored.

What a strange dimensional zone. Zhou Wen looked at the mountain wall behind him and realized that the crack had vanished as though it had never appeared.

Zhou Wen had seen many dimensional zones, but this time, it was a wonder. Although he hadn’t been able to kill a dimensional creature, it wasn’t without benefits. The 3,000 sword intents were genuine. It was extremely beneficial for Zhou Wen’s swordplay practice.

After being trapped in the valley for so many days, Zhou Wen was worried that the old alchemist would have caught up. After leaving the valley, he left with Ya’er in one direction at full speed.

This time, Zhou Wen tried his best to choose a path that humans were still using to prevent himself from falling into a strange dimensional zone like Peach Blossom Spring.

When he arrived at a human city, he realized that everyone in the city was talking about Great Skyfiend.

After searching online, he immediately knew what had happened.

A Mythical Companion Beast ranked in the top ten had challenged Great Skyfiend, but it was instantly killed. It didn’t even have the chance to escape or admit defeat.

This was not the most shocking thing. The most shocking thing was that the Great Skyfiend actually said that she was called Uesugi Nao and was from the Overseas Federation.

Humans could actually participate in the ranking battle. Furthermore, she was from overseas, and had actually obtained first place on the rankings. Such explosive news immediately spread throughout the Federation. The Federation’s upper echelons had no way of controlling it.

There were cubes everywhere. Many people had seen Uesugi Nao’s speech, so there was no way to hide it.

Furthermore, Uesugi Nao even admitted that she was Orochi’s master. In front of the entire world, she officially challenged Tyrant Behemoth’s master in a bid to avenge her humiliation.

Most of the Federation’s citizens hoped that Tyrant Behemoth’s owner would participate in the battle and defeat the overseas Uesugi Nao.

However, most people didn’t know who Tyrant Behemoth’s owner was. They only guessed that it was likely someone from the six families. Therefore, many media outlets were exerting pressure on them, hoping that the six families could get Tyrant Behemoth to fight.

However, on the fourth day, the six families didn’t respond. This left the Federation citizens very displeased.

Zhou Wen had just learned of this matter, so it was naturally impossible for him to challenge Uesugi Nao. Even if he had known earlier, he wouldn’t have challenged her.

Without a Guardian, there was no way to enter the cube to participate in the battle. A pure human body couldn’t meet the requirements of being at the Mythical stage, nor could it activate the cube to enter the rankings.

“Old Zhou, are you going to participate in the battle? That Uesugi Nao is very arrogant. Go and teach her a lesson.” Zhou Wen unlocked his phone and realized that many people had left him a message. This message was from Li Xuan.

“Do you have any plans to fight? If you plan on fighting and need any help, our Zhang family is willing to support you. This is what my brother wants me to tell you.” This was from Zhang Yuzhi.

There were also some messages from other people. Basically, they were all related to the matter of Uesugi Nao.

“I’m not fighting.” Zhou Wen sent a group message and replied en masse.

“That’s such a pity. If you defeat Uesugi Nao, you will be a true national hero,” Li Xuan replied.

“I’m not suitable to be a hero.” Zhou Wen paused before asking, “How are you? When are you coming back?”

“I’m almost done learning here. I’ll be back in a couple of weeks. Why? Do you miss me, your handsome eldest senior brother?” Li Xuan joked.

“That’s right. I miss you dearly. When you return, you have to inform me immediately.” Zhou Wen had recently gained new insights into the Defy Ancient Sovereign Life Soul. He needed a sufficiently strong opponent to be his sparring partner and help him advance to the final Perfect Body. After some thought, he realized that Li Xuan was the most suitable candidate.

“Haha, definitely.” Li Xuan was still very happy. He had no idea what awaited him when he returned.

After a while, An Sheng also sent a message. “Young Master Wen, Madam has already investigated the matter regarding Xie Yukun that you mentioned. It’s true that six people in that department, including Xie Yukun, vanished at the same time. That period was when Old Mister Ouyang set up an expedition team to Zhuolu.”

“In that case, this matter might be related to that department?” Zhou Wen asked.

“That’s hard to say. Due to all sorts of reasons, those people have resigned. It’s still unknown if their actions are related to that department. We are still investigating further,” An Sheng said.

“How can there be such a coincidence? Six people from a department resigned at the same time, and it happened to be related to the expedition team?” Zhou Wen naturally refused to believe that there was no connection.

“Let’s wait for the results of the investigation. It’s very easy to make wrong judgments without any evidence.” An Sheng paused before saying, “Young Master Wen, Madam wishes that you visit.”

“What’s happened?” Zhou Wen asked in puzzlement.

“It’s not a big deal. Madam just wants to introduce a girlfriend to you,” An Sheng said.

Zhou Wen couldn’t help but be taken aback. *I’m still schooling. Why would Sis Lan think of introducing a girlfriend to me?*

An Sheng smiled and said, “There’s nothing we can do about that. Madam previously arranged a blind date for Overseer, but he made it uncomfortable for everyone. Madam has already given up on him. She plans to place all her hopes on you.”

Zhou Wen broke out into a cold sweat. “Help me tell Sis Lan that I probably won’t be able to return any time soon.”

An Sheng said, “Actually, I think the girl Madam is introducing is pretty good. Not only is she smart, but she’s also very reasonable. Her background isn’t bad, and she’s beautiful…”

“I’ll consider it when I need it…” Zhou Wen said helplessly.

“I think you should come back,” An Sheng said.

“I really can’t go back. I still have something to do. Let’s talk about it another day.” Zhou Wen wasn’t willing to return. He wasn’t in the mood to consider such matters. The elder was still pursuing him. Who knew when he would catch up.

When that happened, the people around Zhou Wen would probably be implicated.

How can I finish off a Terror-grade expert? Zhou Wen thought about it and couldn’t come up with a good solution.

Although I have many Companion Beasts, none of them are at the Terror grade. It’s impossible for me to kill that elder. Only the Terror grade can deal with the Terror grade... Wait... Although I don’t have a Terror-grade Companion Beast... It doesn’t mean that there’s no Terror grade that can deal with him... Zhou Wen seemed to think of an idea.

</di

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 886 - Deer Terrace Pavilion's Lower Level

Chapter 886: Deer Terrace Pavilion's Lower Level

Just as Zhou Wen was considering how to deal with the old alchemist, his phone suddenly rang. He picked it up and saw that it was Ouyang Lan.

Having had An Sheng's warning, Zhou Wen roughly knew why Ouyang Lan was calling him, but he had no choice but to answer.

"Little Wen, where have you been? Why haven't I seen you recently?" Ouyang Lan asked.

"I've been to the Zhang family's auction. I'm on my way back now," Zhou Wen said.

"How many days has it been? Let's not talk about participating in the Zhang family's auction. Even if you went overseas, you should be back by now, right?" Ouyang Lan curled her lips and said.

"I planned on visiting a friend's place on the way," Zhou Wen said.

"Friend? Male or female?" Ouyang Lan immediately asked.

"Male," Zhou Wen answered.

"What's so nice about a man? Come back quickly. I'll introduce you to a girl. She's not bad. If you miss this opportunity, there won't be another." Ouyang Lan praised

the girl. She made it sound as though Zhou Wen would suffer a huge loss if he didn't marry her.

"Sis Lan, I really can't come back any time soon." Zhou Wen had no choice but to find an excuse.

"I don't care. You have to come back on the 16th of this month. I helped you arrange a meeting with her. Just do it for me and meet her. If you really don't like her, I won't force you." Ouyang Lan had steeled her heart to hook Zhou Wen up on a blind date.

"I'll try my best to return." Zhou Wen had no choice but to brush her off.

"I don't want you to try your best. You have to." Ouyang Lan changed the topic and said, "By the way, you can't accept the challenge from Uesugi Nao. We don't know what abilities and Companion Beasts the overseas people have. What if something happens? I'm still hoping that you can give me a grandchild."

Zhou Wen's face darkened. "Don't worry. I definitely won't accept the challenge."

After Ouyang Lan finally hung up, Zhou Wen heaved a long sigh of relief.

Looking at his itinerary, Zhou Wen felt that he should be able to make it back to Luoyang on the 16th. After some thought, he decided to return.

Firstly, he didn't want to disappoint Ouyang Lan and didn't want to embarrass her. Secondly, Zhou Wen needed to return as well.

With his abilities, he couldn’t kill the old alchemist. It looked like Banana Fairy wouldn’t be able to evolve anytime soon. He had to think of another way to eliminate the old alchemist.

Otherwise, Zhou Wen felt like there was a ticking time bomb hanging over his head. It made him uncomfortable.

Zhou Wen planned on luring the old alchemist to Chess Mountain. He might be able to get him and The Thearch to suffer a mutually destructive fight.

Of course, this was only Zhou Wen’s fantasy. In reality, the execution involved many difficulties. The Thearch might not be willing to be used by him.

If it were in the past, there really wasn’t much I could do. However, now that I have the Earth Elemental Beast, I can directly escape into Chess Mountain. Even if The Thearch doesn’t want to help, she can’t tolerate others wreaking havoc in Chess Mountain, right? Zhou Wen rode the Great Might Vajra Bull back and returned to revise Chess Mountain’s instance dungeon.

This time, Zhou Wen had the Earth Elemental Beast. He wanted to see if he could use it to enter Chess Mountain and the lower levels of Deer Terrace Pavilion.

After entering the game, Zhou Wen didn’t wait for the flower to open the path into the mountain before riding the Earth Elemental Beast in.

After arriving at Deer Terrace Pavilion, Zhou Wen killed all the dimensional creatures inside. Finally, he used the Earth Elemental Beast to attempt to enter the treasure vault beneath Deer Terrace Pavilion.

The Earth Elemental Beast was indeed very useful. It led Zhou Wen past the foundation of Deer Terrace Pavilion and quickly arrived in a room. There was a large amount of gold, silver, and jewelry in the room, piled up like a hill.

These treasures were nothing to Zhou Wen. Furthermore, he couldn’t take out the items in-game, so he couldn’t be bothered to take a look. He pushed open the door and walked out of the room, continuing his search through the passageway outside.

Soon, Zhou Wen discovered another room. This time, he pushed it open and saw that there was no gold, silver, or jewelry inside. Instead, there was a huge wild boar sleeping inside.

The blood-colored avatar’s pushing open of the door immediately stirred the huge boar. It glared at him and got up to charge at Zhou Wen.

Zhou Wen summoned Tyrant Behemoth and got it to rush forward to finish the boar.

Although the wild boar was very strong, it was clearly much weaker than Tyrant Behemoth. Soon, its skull was shattered by the Tyrant.

‘Killed Mythical creature, Pig Demon.’

Nothing dropped, leaving Zhou Wen somewhat depressed.

The interior of Deer Terrace Pavilion was like a huge maze with many rooms. Some of the rooms had dimensional creatures or treasures, but most of the rooms had nothing.

Previously, when I entered this place in reality, the environment there was somewhat different from here. It

should be at the bottom of the foundation. Zhou Wen rode the Earth Elemental Beast and made it use Earth Escape to continue heading down.

Splash!

After the Earth Elemental Beast escaped, it fell into water. On careful look, it was a canal in the palace.

Back when I entered this place in reality, I swam in from the canal. I'm probably not far from that area now. Zhou Wen looked around and didn't find any dimensional creatures. There weren't any important areas nearby either. Zhou Wen continued swimming upstream, hoping to find an area similar to the one in reality.

Zhou Wen still remembered that there were many high-level dimensional crystals here. Perhaps there were many divine skill crystals.

He followed the canal to another room. The scene he saw delighted him. Although he had never been here before, there were many dimensional crystals piled on the stone platform in the room. It was like a small mountain.

As he was in-game, Zhou Wen could easily see the stats of the dimensional crystals. Most of them were at the Epic stage, but there were quite a number of Mythical ones. Zhou Wen had already seen a few of the 70-80 stat crystals, including Mythical Essence Energy Skill Crystals.

However, Zhou Wen soon noticed a strange dimensional creature lying on the mountain-like dimensional crystal.

It was a leopard-shaped dimensional creature. It had already stood up and was glaring at the blood-colored avatar.

Zhou Wen decided to strike first. He summoned Tyrant Behemoth and charged at the dimensional creature.

Tyrant Behemoth was indeed a top existence at the Mythical stage. It finished off the leopard-shaped dimensional creature with a single punch.

These are all mine... Zhou Wen looked at the dimensional crystals on the ground and had the urge to laugh out loud.

However, on careful thought, unless he absorbed the crystals himself, he couldn’t take them away. It seemed like his joy was a little premature.

</di

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 887 - Xu Ai

Chapter 887: Xu Ai

In the An family in Luoyang, Ouyang Lan pulled a girl and said, “Little Ai, stay here for a few more days. Don’t be in a rush to return.”

“That’s not too good, right?” Xu Ai said hesitantly.

“What’s wrong with that? Your mother and I were childhood friends. If your mother hadn’t gone so far away with her husband, I would have long taken you as my goddaughter. We are family, so you can rest assured and stay here. If you were to come to Luoyang and still stay outside, I really couldn’t face meeting your mother,” Ouyang Lan said with a smile.

“Sis Lan, I won’t stand on ceremony then,” Xu Ai said.

“Child, what’s there to be polite with me? Stay here for now. When Little Wen returns, I’ll introduce you to him. You are about the same age, so you should have something in common,” Ouyang Lan said with a smile.

“Is Zhou Wen Uncle Lingfeng’s son?” Xu Ai asked.

Ouyang Lan nodded. “Although he’s Lingfeng’s son, his personality is completely different. He’s just too shy…”

After Xu Ai left, Ouyang Lan asked An Sheng, who was beside her, “Ah Sheng, what do you think of Little Ai and Little Wen? I think Little Ai is pretty good. She’s quite compatible with Little Wen.”

An Sheng thought for a moment and said, “Miss Xu is Old Master Xu’s daughter. The Xu family doesn’t have a son and only has two daughters. I heard that Xu Ai is especially doted on by Old Master Xu. Will they let her marry out?”

“Madam Xu and I are childhood friends. They are worried about Xu Ai marrying off to someone else’s family, but would they be worried about marrying into my family? You don’t have to worry about that. Just tell me if you think they are suitable,” Ouyang Lan said.

“Miss Xu is knowledgeable, gentle, and virtuous. She’s also very smart, so she’s naturally an excellent candidate,” An Sheng said.

Ouyang Lan glared at An Sheng. “Why are you beating around the bush when you’re talking to me? Do you think there’s something wrong with Xu Ai’s personality?”

An Sheng shook his head and said, “That’s not it. I just think that Miss Xu is a little too smart. I wonder if she can get along easily with a simple-minded person like Young Master Wen.”

Ouyang Lan said with a smile, “You don’t understand. It’s best to find a smart and scheming woman. With Little Wen’s straightforward personality, it’ll be impossible for him to coax a woman. It’ll probably be very difficult to find a silly woman. However, for a smart and sensible woman like Xu Ai, as long as she’s willing, she will think of a way to get Little Wen to coax her. Only then can they live on happily.”

“Madam, you’re right,” An Sheng echoed.

“When Little Wen comes back, let them meet first. I think Little Ai is quite a nice child.” Ouyang Lan thought for a moment and said, “We should have someone there, right?”

“We do,” An Sheng answered.

“Then let them investigate what hobbies Xu Ai usually has. It will also allow Little Wen to understand her better,” Ouyang Lan said.

“Yes, I’ll do it now.” An Sheng naturally understood that what Ouyang Lan wanted him to investigate wasn’t as simple as Xu Ai’s hobbies. Therefore, he didn’t dare be negligent.

The next morning, Xu Ai went to Luoyang’s dimensional zone. Her personal female guard followed her.

“Miss, we have successfully entered the An family. Should we act according to plan?” the female guard whispered when they arrived at an uninhabited spot in the dimensional zone.

“Don’t be anxious. Don’t be fooled by Ouyang Lan’s appearance. She won’t believe us so easily. We can’t rush this matter. Let’s stay in the An family for a while,” Xu Ai said.

“But Ouyang Lan seems to be trying to matchmake you with that Zhou Wen. That’s not very nice, right?” the female guard said.

“There’s nothing bad about it. If I’m unwilling, Ouyang Lan can’t force me, right? Besides, I want to meet Zhou Wen. I want to know what kind of person he is, considering he has caused so much trouble in the Federation alone,” Xu Ai said.

“It’s best to be careful. According to the information we obtained, the Xia family has suffered greatly because of him. The Cape family and the Family Clan of Gods seem to have suffered quite a blow because of him. It’s best not to come

into contact with such a person if possible to prevent your identity from being exposed," the female guard said.

"Don't worry. It won't be exposed. No one will expect that the Xu family's second daughter, Xu Ai, is the master of the Great Skyfiend, Uesugi Nao," Xu Ai said indifferently.

"In short, it's better to be careful. After all, we aren't overseas. Also, Miss, you are now the Xu family's second daughter, Xu Ai. Don't mention the other name in the Federation," the female guard reminded again.

"I know." Xu Ai nodded and didn't say anything else.

...

As Zhou Wen traveled, he used his phone to explore Deer Terrace Pavilion. The space beneath Deer Terrace Pavilion was much bigger than he imagined. He encountered several Mythical creatures inside, but unfortunately, none of them dropped Companion Eggs.

He found quite a number of dimensional crystals, but not many could be used.

Now, Zhou Wen's situation was rather awkward. He couldn't absorb the Mythical dimensional crystals, and even if he could, they were useless.

Epic crystals were no longer of much use to him, so despite having so many dimensional crystals, he actually didn't need much.

"Since I can't use it myself, you guys are lucking out." Zhou Wen summoned his main Companion Beasts, such as Tyrant Behemoth, Demonic Neonate, and the like. He got them to choose crystals and eat whatever they wanted.

Zhou Wen planned on seeing if the crystals here would respawn the next time he came. If they could, he would really be rich.

Explosive Fiend Man and Doctor Darkness were very interested in some of the Essence Energy Skill Crystals, but Demonic Neonate remained the same. The Mystical crystals were unable to move her. She usually only ate the Longevity Fruits, and there weren't many of them left.

Tyrant Behemoth and Truth Listener weren't picky with food. As long as they could provide energy, they would directly swallow most crystals.

Zhou Wen constantly searched Deer Terrace Pavilion. Apart from searching for the treasures there, he also wanted to see if he could find The Thearch's true body.

He refused to believe that The Thearch was that flower.

When Zhou Wen returned to Luoyang, he still couldn't find The Thearch's true body under Deer Terrace Pavilion. The interior of Deer Terrace Pavilion was just too complicated. Zhou Wen had explored less than half of it.

According to the parts he had explored, Zhou Wen felt that there was definitely a Terror-grade existence inside Deer Terrace Pavilion. This was because he had already seen six Mythical dimensional creatures inside.

For dimensional zones like the Metalwork Temple, there was only one Mythical creature in the entire dimensional zone. Now, there were more than ten Mythical creatures found in the ancient buildings in Deer Terrace Pavilion. This was just too terrifying. It was definitely not something ordinary dimensional zones could compare with.

After returning to Luoyang, Zhou Wen planned on returning to school, but on the way, he suddenly saw a cube light up on the street. A Companion Beast had issued a challenge, so he took Ya’er to take a look.

“Coach, when did you return?” Just as Zhou Wen arrived near the cube, Feng Qiuyan, Sadie, and Gulli saw him. They waved as they squeezed over.

</di

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 888 - Too Weak

Chapter 888: Too Weak

“I just arrived in Luoyang. I haven’t even managed to return to campus.” Zhou Wen stood to the side when he saw that it was Feng Qiuyan and company.

“Coach, look at those two Companion Beasts. Which one of them can win?” Gulli often heard Feng Qiuyan call him Coach, and now, he was also very comfortable with addressing him the same way.

“I don’t know. I’ve never seen these two Companion Beasts before,” Zhou Wen said with a shake of his head.

“You can make a guess even if you haven’t seen it before. With your standards, you should be close to the mark just by looking,” Gulli said with a smile.

Gulli’s words were a little exaggerated, attracting the attention of others.

Xu Ai, who wasn’t far away, heard Gulli’s words and turned to look at Zhou Wen and company.

Are all Federation students so arrogant and conceited? Xu Ai thought to herself. She sized up Zhou Wen and company and didn’t pay much attention to them. She only imagined that they were a group of students bragging.

She had seen Zhou Wen’s information and photo before coming, but back then, he was wearing Sunset College’s uniform and looked very spirited.

Now that Zhou Wen had been on the run for so many days, he didn’t have the time to groom himself. He looked a little sloven and his condition made him look older than his actual age. Furthermore, he had Ya’er in his arms. Those who didn’t know him would think that he was a young father who didn’t know how to take care of his daughter.

Therefore, Xu Ai didn’t think of Zhou Wen immediately. She only believed that Zhou Wen was Feng Qiuyan and company’s tutor.

Zhou Wen looked at the challenger and the challenged. The challenged was a Thunderbird, and the one challenging the Thunderbird was a Windthunder Raven. Both of them had lightning attributes and were birds. They were considered relatively similar Mythical pets.

“They both have lightning-elemental powers. The Windthunder Raven also has wind-elemental powers. Its speed is also faster than the Thunderbird. I think the chances of the Windthunder Raven winning are higher. Coach, what do you think?” Gulli said again.

“I think the Thunderbird will win,” Zhou Wen said.

“Why?” Gulli asked in puzzlement.

In fact, it wasn’t only Gulli who was puzzled. Xu Ai, who had heard their conversation, thought otherwise. She also believed that the Windthunder Raven would win.

As the Windthunder Raven was an overseas Companion Beast, Xu Ai was very familiar with it. The Windthunder Raven had the power of wind and lightning. It was somewhat different from pure lightning-elemental beasts. It could even be said to restrain pure lightning. Therefore, although Xu Ai

didn’t know much about the Thunderbird, she still felt that the Windthunder Raven had a higher chance of winning.

Since Zhou Wen was so certain that the Thunderbird would win, Xu Ai naturally thought nothing of it.

Zhou Wen looked at the Thunderbird on the screen and said, “That’s because that Thunderbird has the aura of inevitable victory. When meeting face to face, the bravest wins. If the difference in strength between the Thunderbird and the Windthunder Raven isn’t too great, the Thunderbird will definitely win.”

“So it’s because of the aura,” Feng Qiuyan said as he fell into deep thought, as though he had understood something.

“Unfortunately, there’s no way to place a bet here. Otherwise, I would place my bet on Thunderbird’s victory and earn some pocket money,” Gulli said regretfully.

To think that such a person can be a tutor at Sunset College. From the looks of it, Sunset College doesn’t deserve its reputation. When Xu Ai heard their words, she stopped paying attention to them. She felt that Zhou Wen was spouting nonsense. *If he could determine victory based solely on aura, what was the point of having strength?*

As the few of them conversed, the battle between the Thunderbird and the Windthunder Raven had already begun. The Windthunder Raven immediately launched an attack. Its flying speed was extremely fast, and with the sound of wind and thunder accompanying it, it was much faster than the Thunderbird.

After using its speed to bypass the Thunderbird’s line of sight, the Windthunder Raven launched a violent bombardment. With a flap of its wings, wind and lightning

transformed into blades of light that attacked the Thunderbird from behind like a storm. The Windthunder Blades that filled the sky blocked the Thunderbird’s path.

The Thunderbird had no intention of retreating. Lightning surged from its body as it faced the storm.

Boom!

Lightning flashed and thunder crackled as the wind blades shattered. Sparks flew as the Thunderbird went against the wind, piercing through the wind blades that filled the sky and rushing in front of the Windthunder Raven.

The Windthunder Raven wanted to use its speed to dodge the Thunderbird’s attack before counterattacking.

However, to everyone’s surprise, the Thunderbird charged forward without any hesitation. It didn’t dodge the Windthunder Raven’s Windthunder Blades at all. It would rather suffer some injuries to forcefully close the distance.

Although the Windthunder Raven was faster, it could only dodge under the pressure of the Thunderbird. As for the Thunderbird, it became braver as it charged. The lightning on its body condensed as it streaked across the sky in the shape of a bird. If it managed a hit, even the hardest steel would probably explode.

In the beginning, the Windthunder Raven could still use its speed to dodge, but as the lightning powers on the Thunderbird grew stronger, its flying speed also increased. It was very difficult for the Windthunder Raven to dodge the Thunderbird’s attacks.

Before long, the owner of the Windthunder Raven saw that there was no chance of victory, so he directly admitted

defeat and retracted it.

“As expected of Coach. You have keen eyes.” Gulli gave him a thumbs up.

Xu Ai thought otherwise. She didn’t believe that Zhou Wen had determined the victor based on aura. She thought to herself, *If it wasn’t for his good luck, he would have long known the abilities of the Thunderbird and Windthunder Raven. That’s why he made such a judgment.*

After watching the battle, Xu Ai was about to leave when she suddenly heard Sadie ask Zhou Wen, “Coach, what do you think of Great Skyfiend that’s ranked first?”

Upon hearing Sadie’s words, Xu Ai couldn’t help but slow down. Her ears pricked up as she felt a little smug. These people from the Federation should be afraid of Great Skyfiend’s invincibility and strength, right?

“What do you mean?” Zhou Wen asked.

Sadie thought for a moment and said, “Coach, do you think Great Skyfiend can maintain first place until the end of the ranking battle?”

“No,” Zhou Wen answered directly.

“Why?” Sadie asked in surprise when she saw Zhou Wen’s straightforward answer.

“Because it’s too weak,” Zhou Wen answered truthfully.

He had seen too many powerful Guardians. If one couldn’t reach the Terror grade, they were naturally weak in Zhou Wen’s opinion. It was impossible for it to obtain first place, and Great Skyfiend clearly hadn’t reached the Terror grade.

Too… weak… When Xu Aai heard this, she nearly exploded from anger. If this were overseas, she wouldn’t hesitate to summon Great Skyfiend to let Zhou Wen know how terrifying the so-called weak Guardian was.

Unfortunately, this was the Federation. Xu Ai could only endure it. She thought to herself, *I can’t lower myself to the level of these ignorant Federation people.*

Upon hearing Zhou Wen’s answer, Gulli gave him a thumbs up and said, “Sis, aren’t you asking an unnecessary question? In front of Coach, Great Skyfiend or whatever is definitely weak. Unfortunately, pure humans can’t participate in the battle. Otherwise, if Coach were to go up, he would be able to beat up the Great Skyfiend and Uesugi Nao to a pulp. They’d kneel and call him daddy.”

</di

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 889 - Three Immortal Swords

Chapter 889: Three Immortal Swords

Translator: CKtalon

I'll bear with it... I'll bear with it... The corners of Xu Ai's eyes twitched as she felt like killing someone.

However, this was the Federation, and Xu Ai had a special mission. She couldn't expose her identity, so she forcefully resisted the urge to slap Gulli.

"Are you heading back to campus?" Zhou Wen asked Gulli and company.

"Yes, let's go together." The few of them returned to school.

...

Ouyang Lan was well-informed. Zhou Wen had just returned to school when he received a call from her asking him to have dinner with her.

Zhou Wen agreed. It had been a long time since he had seen Zhou Lingfeng and Ouyang Lan. He could take the opportunity to meet them while eating.

He changed Ya'er into new clothes and took her along.

However, when he arrived, Zhou Wen realized that Zhou Lingfeng wasn't around. Apart from Ouyang Lan, there was a girl who looked to be in her twenties.

The girl was naturally Uesugi Nao, who had impersonated as Xu Ai. She was slightly taken aback when she saw Zhou Wen

and Ya’er. Only then did she recognize that Zhou Wen was the fellow who had said that Great Skyfiend was too weak.

“Come, Little Wen, let me introduce you. This is my childhood friend’s daughter, Xu Ai…” Ouyang Lan pulled Zhou Wen to sit beside her.

Ouyang Lan didn’t deliberately make Zhou Wen sit beside Xu Ai because she knew him too well. She knew that Zhou Wen didn’t know how to chat with girls, so he wouldn’t say anything if she made him sit beside Xu Ai.

1

“Little Ai, this is Ya’er, an orphan that Zhou Wen adopted. Although he looks cold, he’s actually very caring.” Ouyang Lan explained Ya’er’s origins and beautified Zhou Wen.

“Such caring people are rare in such an environment,” Xu Ai said with a smile.

“That’s right. Not only is my Little Wen compassionate, but he’s also talented. He can master anything he picks up…” Ouyang Lan’s praises of Zhou Wen made him blush.

“Zhou Wen, I heard that your cultivation talent is extremely high. Even the peers of the six families are far inferior to you. I wonder if you can teach me?” Xu Ai said to Zhou Wen with a smile.

“I don’t…” Before Zhou Wen could finish his sentence, Ouyang Lan interrupted him.

When Ouyang Lan heard Zhou Wen’s opening, she knew that he wanted to say that he didn’t have the time. She knew Zhou Wen too well, so she didn’t hesitate to say, “It’s still early. After dinner, you young adults can head out for a

walk. If you have any cultivation questions, feel free to ask Little Wen. He’s an absolute genius in this aspect.”

Ouyang Lan thought to herself that it wasn’t easy to find a girl that wasn’t frightened away by Zhou Wen and was willing to understand him. She felt that she couldn’t let go of this opportunity.

She was really worried that with Zhou Wen’s personality, he wouldn’t be able to find a wife in the future.

“Ya’er, can the beautiful Sis Lan take you out to play?” After the meal, Ouyang Lan wanted to take Ya’er away to prevent Ya’er from interfering with their interaction.

Ya’er turned her head and leaned her face on Zhou Wen’s shoulder, completely ignoring Ouyang Lan.

“It’s fine, Sis Lan. I’ll take her. She’s afraid of strangers,” Zhou Wen said.

“You’ll spoil her like this.” Ouyang Lan was helpless. Although she had a sharp tongue, she couldn’t bear to forcefully take Ya’er away. All she could do was let Ya’er follow Zhou Wen.

“Sis Lan, I like children too. I’ll take care of her. Don’t worry,” Xu Ai said.

“Then I’m relieved.” Ouyang Lan couldn’t help but praise Xu Ai for being sensible.

Zhou Wen and Xu Ai left the restaurant together. Seeing that Zhou Wen wasn’t speaking, Xu Ai took the initiative to say, “Zhou Wen, I have some questions regarding cultivation that I would like to ask you. Is it convenient to go to the training grounds?”

“Sure.” Zhou Wen saw that it was still early. Furthermore, Ouyang Lan had already agreed for him to help. It wouldn’t be appropriate for him to leave, so he nodded.

Seeing Zhou Wen agree, a crafty glint flashed in Xu Ai’s eyes as she thought to herself, *I’ll let you know today what it means by there’s always someone better. Let’s see if you dare be arrogant in the future. You actually dare say that Great Skyfiend is too weak. I’ll let you know who’s too weak later.*

The reason she had taken the initiative to ask Zhou Wen out was naturally not to build a good relationship with him.

The target of Uesugi Nao’s visit wasn’t Zhou Wen, but the An family’s weapon factory and the new Essence Energy weapons the An family researched. These had nothing to do with Zhou Wen, so she didn’t need to deliberately approach him.

If it wasn’t for Zhou Wen’s evaluation of Great Skyfiend and Gulli’s words in front of the cube, she would probably have politely eaten with Zhou Wen and never taken the initiative to ask him out again in the future.

Zhou Wen’s thoughts were even simpler. He wasn’t interested in Xu Ai. Furthermore, there was still the problem of the alchemist that hadn’t been resolved. He wasn’t in the mood to think about anything else.

If it wasn’t for Sis Lan, Zhou Wen would have returned to grind dungeons.

The two of them had their own thoughts and soon, they arrived at a nearby training ground.

Xu Ai didn’t want anyone to see them, so she paid for a private training room. Soon, the staff took them in.

“What do you need me to teach you?” Zhou Wen asked Xu Ai.

These words sounded awkward to Xu Ai’s ears. She thought to herself, *You really think too highly of yourself. If you want to teach me, teach me in your next life. In a while, you will know who’s teaching who.*

Xu Ai’s thoughts didn’t show on her face. She looked at Zhou Wen with a smile and said, “Do you know sword techniques? I’ve been practicing a sword technique recently, but no matter how much I practice, I can’t grasp the key point. I want you to help me see what’s wrong.”

1

“A little. How about this? Demonstrate the sword technique for me first. I’ll try to see if I can find the problem,” Zhou Wen said seriously.

He didn’t know that Xu Ai had other intentions and thought that she really wanted to seek his help. He felt that it was fine to help her. After all, she was the daughter of Sister Lan’s childhood friend.

“Alright, I’ll demonstrate it first. Help me take a look. If there’s anything wrong, just say. There’s no need to worry.” After Xu Ai said that, she took a sword from the rack and stood in the middle of the training grounds.

She naturally wouldn’t let Zhou Wen guide her in her sword practice. Not only was the sword technique she demonstrated without a problem, but it was also very profound.

This sword technique was named “Three Immortal Swords.” It was obtained by Uesugi Nao in a mysterious dimensional zone overseas. She was the only person in the world who knew the Three Immortal Swords. Furthermore, she had never displayed it to outsiders before.

Now that she was demonstrating the Three Immortal Swords, the practice sword in her hand drew a profound trajectory. It looked like a casual move, but in fact, it was very profound.

Back when Uesugi Nao practiced the Three Immortal Swords herself, she had put in a lot of hard work. After a year of arduous cultivation, she had finally mastered the Three Immortal Swords and comprehended the sword intent of the Three Immortal Swords.

2

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 890 - Your Sword Art Is Very Problematic

Chapter 890: Your Sword Art Is Very Problematic

The most difficult part of the Three Immortal Swords was the three forces delivered with one strike. It was hard and soft at the same time. It had three different ways of utilizing the forces and three different concepts.

One needed to combine the three forces and concepts ingeniously to be able to use the Three Immortal Swords well. If they didn’t do it well, not only would they fail to achieve the effect of defeating the enemy, but they would only fall flat on their face. It would be a good outcome if they weren’t injured, much less injure the enemy.

Uesugi Nao had trained for so long to master the Three Immortal Swords. How could someone who had never seen the Three Immortal Swords teach her?

Uesugi Nao’s goal for demonstrating this sword technique was to embarrass Zhou Wen. She wanted to let him know who was truly weak.

As no one had seen the Three Immortals Swords, Uesugi Nao wasn’t afraid of being recognized.

Zhou Wen didn’t know that so many thoughts were running through Uesugi Nao’s head. He only believed that Uesugi Nao was really asking him for advice, so he watched very seriously as he searched for anything amiss with the Three Immortal Swords.

Soon, Uesugi Nao finished demonstrating the Three Immortal Swords. Then, she looked at Zhou Wen and asked with a smile, “Do you need me to demonstrate again?”

“Alright,” Zhou Wen said with a nod.

A smile appeared on Uesugi Nao’s face before she demonstrated the sword art again. However, she thought to herself, *Forget about demonstrating it once. Even if I demonstrate it a hundred times, you won’t be able to understand it.*

Unlike straightforward and domineering sword arts, the Three Immortal Swords were mainly about the use of force and concepts. These non-superficial things couldn’t be understood just by looking at the sword moves.

Uesugi Nao had already made up her mind. After this round, she asked Zhou Wen if he wanted her to demonstrate again. If Zhou Wen overestimated himself and wanted to watch it a third time, she would directly ask Zhou Wen if he had found any problems after three rounds of demonstrations.

If you know what’s good for you, you should admit early that you can’t tell anything. That way, you wouldn’t be so embarrassed, Uesugi Nao thought.

Soon, Uesugi Nao demonstrated the Three Immortal Swords again. After stopping, she held the practice sword and asked Zhou Wen with a smile, “Do you want me to demonstrate again?”

“There’s no need.” Zhou Wen shook his head.

Uesugi Nao thought to herself, *At least you have some self-awareness. If I were to demonstrate it a third time and you*

couldn’t see anything, it would only be even more embarrassing.

Uesugi Nao smiled at Zhou Wen, waiting for him to bow his head to her and admit that he couldn’t tell anything.

“There’s indeed a huge problem with your sword art.” However, Zhou Wen’s words left Uesugi Nao stunned.

“Oh, tell me. What’s the problem with my sword art?” Uesugi Nao looked at Zhou Wen with a faint smile. She imagined that Zhou Wen was just trying to put on a front.

From Uesugi Nao’s point of view, Zhou Wen’s actions would only embarrass him further.

“There’s a very serious problem with your sword art. The sword art you practice is incomplete,” Zhou Wen said.

“The sword art I’m practicing is actually incomplete?” Uesugi Nao pretended to be surprised, but she was sneering inwardly. *Not complete my ass. The Three Immortals Sword Art is complete. I’ve already mastered it completely, yet you still dare to say it’s incomplete. Keep making up lies. Let’s see what you can come up with.*

“Yes, the sword art is indeed incomplete. It’s also possible that you failed to grasp the essence of the sword art when you were practicing. You failed to draw inferences and comprehend the true meaning of the sword art,” Zhou Wen said.

“I see. Then can you give me some pointers on the true meaning of this sword art?” Uesugi Nao looked at Zhou Wen and teased him.

She was already so well-versed with the Three Immortal Swords to the point of being able to use them in reverse, but Zhou Wen had actually said that she hadn’t understood its true meaning. All Uesugi Nao wanted to know was how Zhou Wen was going to continue making up stories.

“Give me the sword.” Zhou Wen extended his hand in front of Uesugi Nao.

Uesugi Nao handed the practice sword to Zhou Wen before standing to the side with her arms crossed. She waited to watch Zhou Wen’s clumsy performance. Now, she was somewhat curious as to how Zhou Wen had managed to smooth over his ridiculous words.

Zhou Wen got Ya’er to stand by the side and walked to the center of the training grounds with the practice sword in hand. He said, “This sword art of yours has three uses of force and concepts. You have already used the three types of force and concepts very well. However, your method isn’t right, so you are only stuck at that stage. There’s no way to improve further and master a complete sword art.”

To be able to tell that the Three Immortal Swords is a combination of three forces and concepts, this Zhou Wen isn’t completely blind, thought Uesugi Nao.

However, Zhou Wen’s attitude still displeased her. Therefore, she asked with a faint smile, “Then how can I improve further and master a complete sword art?”

“That’s not difficult.” The practice sword in Zhou Wen’s hand began moving. The sword moves he released were actually Uesugi Nao’s Three Immortal Swords.

Uesugi Nao was surprised that Zhou Wen could use the sword moves of the Three Immortal Swords. Although he had

only used one force, he was still able to produce the corresponding sword intent. She was already rather surprised and couldn’t help but raise her opinion of Zhou Wen.

“This is the first force and concept of the sword art,” Zhou Wen said as he used another move. It was the Three Immortal Swords sword move that Uesugi Nao had used. This time, Zhou Wen’s sword move contained the two forces and concepts of hardness and softness.

This surprised Uesugi Nao. To be able to use both hard and soft forces in one strike at the same time, she had practiced for nearly a month back then to master it.

“According to Daoist teachings, the so-called ‘one begets two’ can be seen as Chaos giving birth to Yin and Yang, or it can be said to be a division of hardness and softness.” As Zhou Wen spoke, he struck out with his sword. It was still the sword move of the Three Immortal Swords, but this time, he had already used all three forces.

Uesugi Nao widened her eyes as she looked at Zhou Wen in disbelief. She secretly suspected, *Could it be that Zhou Wen has also practiced the Three Immortals Sword Art in the past? That’s impossible. The Three Immortals Sword Art was engraved on the stone wall of the Three Cave Immortal. After I saw it, the stone wall was destroyed. How could Zhou Wen have learned the Three Immortals Sword Art?*

“One begets two, two begets three, and three begets all things. Your sword art stopped at three and didn’t continue expanding. It’s like the basic colors of red, green, and blue. You can use the three primary colors, but when the three colors are combined, they can form an even richer and more colorful color, forming a colorful world. I don’t know if your

sword art is incomplete or if it’s because you haven’t figured out the true meaning of the sword art, but it has stopped at the three primary colors realm. You haven’t been able to demonstrate the true meaning of the world of the sword…” Zhou Wen demonstrated as he spoke. As for Uesugi Nao, she was already dumbfounded. Her face was filled with shock and disbelief.

Four types… Five types… Six types… Uesugi Nao saw more and more types of sword intent in Zhou Wen’s sword technique, but they were extremely harmonious. It was as though the Three Immortals Sword Art was supposed to be exactly what he demonstrated.

The first time she heard what Zhou Wen said did seem to make sense, but Uesugi Nao felt a deep sense of helplessness. Even if she understood this principle, she didn’t have that many sword intents to fuse together.

</di

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 891 - Nine-Tailed Fox

Chapter 891: Nine-Tailed Fox

Nine… Ten… Eleven… Is this fellow a monster? Uesugi Nao stared intently at Zhou Wen, feeling extremely shocked.

Zhou Wen casually waved his hand and used more than ten sword intents. And at his age, how could he comprehend so many sword intents?

Zhou Wen's sword intents were naturally not something he had mastered himself. In fact, Zhou Wen had never practiced sword arts before. What he was truly good at was movement techniques. At most, he could add the Immortal Slaying move to his list.

These sword intents were what Zhou Wen had learned in the peach blossom mystic realm. The white-robed man's sword art contained three thousand sword intents. This was just a drop in the ocean.

Although Zhou Wen hadn't fully comprehended the three thousand sword intents, he had already memorized them. It wasn't enough to use it against a true top-notch swordsman, but he could still use it casually.

"That's the general problem. There's nothing wrong with the rest. Go back and train slowly. I still have something on, so I'll be leaving now." Zhou Wen handed the practice sword back to Uesugi Nao before carrying Ya'er out of the training room.

Uesugi Nao watched Zhou Wen leave. She was in a daze for a long time before coming to her senses. After the door to the training room closed, she snapped to her senses. *Training… What training can I do… That's not the Three Immortals Sword Art at all… There aren't so many sword intent training methods in the Three Immortals Sword Art. What the hell am I to train with!*

Although she said that, Uesugi Nao was still shocked by Zhou Wen's sword art. To be able to casually unleash more than ten sword intents mixed together was something only a few top sword masters overseas could do.

"Miss, are you alright?" The female guard walked in. She had been secretly protecting Uesugi Nao, but with Zhou Wen around, she didn't dare approach. She only came over after Zhou Wen left.

"It's fine. From the looks of it, I've underestimated the young experts of the Federation. It's indeed reasonable for Zhou Wen to be able to stir up such a storm in the Federation," Uesugi Nao said.

"What happened?" the female guard asked.

"It's nothing. I've seen Zhou Wen's sword art and it's indeed very strong. Unfortunately, no matter how strong his sword art, it's useless. Without a Guardian, humans will ultimately not be able to step into the stage of being a human god. No matter how strong his sword art, he's only mortal." Uesugi Nao slowly regained her confidence.

Although Zhou Wen was strong, he was stuck below the Mythical stage. She had Great Skyfiend and was already in the Mythical stage. She still had the right to look down on him.

I can study the world of swords that Zhou Wen mentioned, Uesugi Nao thought.

“I’ve already said that a person like Zhou Wen definitely has something extraordinary about him,” the female guard said.

Uesugi Nao didn’t say anything else. She looked at the female guard and asked, “How’s the information I asked you to gather coming along? Did you find out who Tyrant Behemoth’s owner is?”

“There’s nothing for now. Our men are already investigating,” the female guard said.

“Find him as soon as possible. I must avenge the slaying of Orochi,” Uesugi Nao said.

Zhou Wen returned to his dorm and began grinding again. Now, he only wanted to quickly figure out the Chess Mountain dungeon. If the alchemist came to him again, he could lure the alchemist to Chess Mountain.

The interior of Deer Terrace Pavilion was bigger than Zhou Wen had imagined. As he needed to explore it, it wasn’t like he could directly use Earth Escape. He wouldn’t know what he might miss in the middle.

After entering Deer Terrace Pavilion again, Zhou Wen continued exploring.

Not long after, an arched door suddenly appeared in front of Zhou Wen. After passing through the arch, there was a huge space inside.

This space looked like the interior of a tower. There were arched doors all around, and there was water flowing in many of them.

The bottom of this space was occupied by water, like a huge circular pool. And in the middle was a huge bronze tripod cauldron.

And inside the bronze tripod cauldron, there was a white fox. It was different from ordinary foxes. The fox had nine snow-white tails on its back.

As for its body, it was trapped by the chains that passed through the bronze tripod cauldron. It seemed to be imprisoned in the bronze tripod cauldron.

Is that... a nine-tailed fox? Zhou Wen couldn’t help but recall the legend of Deer Terrace Pavilion—the peerless demon concubine who could topple kingdoms and bring disaster to the people.

Although the Nine-Headed Pheasant Spirit and Jade Lute Spirit were ranked equal, the first impression people had of a demon concubine was that of a nine-tailed fox. There wouldn’t be a second one.

Could she... be The Thearch? Zhou Wen was puzzled as he stared at the Nine-Tailed White Fox inside the bronze tripod cauldron.

Suddenly, the Nine-Tailed White Fox opened her eyes and looked in the direction of the blood-colored avatar.

They were fox’s eyes, but in Zhou Wen’s eyes, they were indescribably charming. It even made Zhou Wen feel tempted to run towards the white fox in the bronze tripod cauldron.

Zhou Wen was alarmed as he hurriedly focused.

He originally had the ability to focus. At that moment, he focused his mind and immediately regained his clarity. When he looked at the nine-tailed fox again, he didn’t feel anything.

However, the demonic glint in the nine-tailed fox’s eyes intensified. Perhaps due to the demonic glint in its eyes, the nine-tailed fox in Zhou Wen’s eyes gradually transformed into a beautiful woman in white.

Zhou Wen had seen plenty of beauties, but he had never seen such a seductive woman. Her eyes seemed to hook onto people, as though any man in the world would be willing to die for her from the mere move of her gaze.

The blood-colored avatar walked towards the extremely seductive woman in a daze as though it had lost its soul. It seemed to only have eyes for the woman, unable to contain anything else.

The blood-colored avatar quickly walked to the bronze tripod cauldron and looked at the girl inside. Without any hesitation, it jumped in.

However, there was no white-robed woman in the bronze cauldron. It was clearly the evil and demonic Nine-Tailed White Fox. It opened its bloody mouth and bit at the blood-colored avatar’s head.

Just as the nine-tailed fox was about to bite the blood-colored avatar, the dazed blood-colored avatar suddenly flashed and dodged the fox’s bloody mouth. At the same time, an invisible sword beam slashed across the nine-tailed fox’s neck, dyeing the snow-white fur red.

Zhou Wen thought to himself that it was a pity. As he had to pretend to be charmed by the nine-tailed fox, he couldn’t

condense his Essence Energy ahead of time, so he couldn’t use Immortal Slaying. Otherwise, this strike might have beheaded the nine-tailed fox.

The nine-tailed fox was alarmed and furious. It found it unbelievable that its charm was useless against Zhou Wen.

In fact, Zhou Wen was afraid of many things, but powers like bewitchment were useless against him. Previously, even the Lost Immortal Sutra couldn’t bewitch him, much less a nine-tailed fox.

</di

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 892 - Li Xuan's Return

Chapter 892: Li Xuan’s Return

Translator: CKtalon

The nine-tailed fox’s eyes suffused a demonic glint as its nine tails danced wildly. Essence Energy spewed out from its body like a volcanic eruption.

Zhou Wen hurriedly summoned Tyrant Behemoth and got it to charge forward. However, when Tyrant Behemoth met the nine-tailed fox’s eyes, it was immediately charmed by it. It turned around and charged at the blood-colored avatar.

Zhou Wen hurriedly dodged and retreated as Tyrant Behemoth chased after him.

Even a Mythical creature like Tyrant Behemoth can be bewitched? Zhou Wen turned his head to take a look. Thankfully, the nine-tailed fox was locked inside the bronze tripod cauldron and couldn’t chase after him.

Tyrant Behemoth chased Zhou Wen for quite some time before the effects of the bewitchment on it gradually vanished. Zhou Wen regained control of it and unsummoned Tyrant Behemoth.

I can resist the bewitchment myself, but my Companion Beasts can’t. From the looks of it, I can only personally kill that nine-tailed fox. Zhou Wen felt that the nine-tailed fox didn’t seem like The Thearch.

Even if The Thearch in-game wasn’t as intelligent as in real life, it wasn’t to the point of having such a low IQ. Furthermore, it felt like the nine-tailed fox’s abilities were somewhat different from The Thearch’s.

At the very least, the nine-tailed fox didn’t seem to have the ability to make wishes, nor did it have the invisible pressure of The Thearch.

Furthermore, Zhou Wen didn’t see the nine-tailed fox reveal its Terror state. If it used its Terror state, Zhou Wen’s strike probably wouldn’t be able to injure it.

After returning to the nine-tailed fox, Zhou Wen wore the Invisibility Cloak and activated its invisibility. He approached without the nine-tailed fox noticing him.

The Light Concealment Sword combined with the Immortal Slaying Sword cleaved off the nine-tailed fox’s head. The nine-tailed fox didn’t even have time to react.

From the looks of it, this nine-tailed fox can’t be The Thearch. Zhou Wen was somewhat disappointed, but he suddenly realized that something was amiss.

The nine-tailed fox was already dead. Logically speaking, there should be a game notification, but there was no notification of him killing the nine-tailed fox.

Crack! Crack!

The chains that bound the nine-tailed fox automatically unshackled because it was dead.

However, after the chains were released, the nine-tailed fox’s corpse floated in the air as its head grew out again. As its nine tails swayed, its Essence Energy burned like flames. Wherever the flames passed, the nine-tailed fox’s body underwent a strange change. It gradually transformed from a fox into a beautiful woman in white palace robes.

Furthermore, this white-robed woman’s body suffused a demonic glow. She looked like a ghost. This time, it wasn’t an illusion, but a woman.

‘Warning… Warning… Nine-Tailed Fox has entered a Terror form… Nine-Tailed Fox has entered a Terror form…’ A red warning popped up in the game.

Terror transformation! Zhou Wen turned around and ran without a word. He didn’t have the means to kill a Terror-grade opponent. If he didn’t run, he could only wait for death.

Thankfully, the Invisibility Cloak’s effects were still present. The Nine-Tailed Fox couldn’t see Zhou Wen, allowing him to escape.

Although I can’t be sure if the Nine-Tailed Fox is The Thearch, if that alchemist pursues me again, I can lure him to it. Zhou Wen had seen the abilities of the Nine-Tailed Fox and had some ideas.

The strongest ability of the Nine-tailed Fox was still bewitchment, but bewitchment was useless against Zhou Wen. Therefore, in comparison, the Nine-Tailed Fox was a Terror-grade creature that Zhou Wen was least afraid of.

Zhou Wen avoided the location of the Nine-Tailed Fox and went to other places in Deer Terrace Pavilion to hunt dimensional creatures. However, no matter where he went, he would eventually reach the space where the Nine-Tailed Fox was.

From the looks of it, only by killing the Nine-Tailed Fox will I be able to reach the area behind. Zhou Wen could only temporarily give up on the idea of grinding Deer Terrace Pavilion.

After grinding all the dungeons that he could, he didn’t obtain much. When he was grinding the Ancient Sword Tomb, he discovered a Mythical ancient sword.

The ancient sword was wide and had extremely powerful destructive power. After killing it, he learned that it was named Great Destroyer. It was a Mythical sword, but unfortunately, it didn’t drop a Companion Egg.

After returning to Luoyang for a few days, he didn’t find any traces of the alchemist. This made Zhou Wen feel uneasy.

An Sheng had already gotten people to carry out surveillance, hoping to discover the alchemist before he entered Luoyang. Unfortunately, there was no news. It was unknown if he hadn’t come to Luoyang or if he had avoided all the surveillance.

…

Xuanwen Club’s training grounds.

“Your wise and mighty President has returned. Aren’t you very happy and surprised?” Li Xuan returned much earlier than expected.

According to Li Xuan, he had already learned most of Worm Dugu’s Gu nurturing techniques. All that was left was practice. He had found it boring and ran back alone.

Due to the pair of Ice Silkworms, Li Xuan’s combat strength was considered very strong. However, when he was in the Dugu family, Worm Dugu didn’t let him use the Ice Silkworms. He insisted that he fight all sorts of Gu, causing him to suffer quite a bit.

However, because of this, he had a deep understanding of Gu, and it had helped his growth tremendously.

“I realize that you seem to have become much more handsome recently?” Zhou Wen sized up Li Xuan.

“Is that so?” Li Xuan stroked his chin and said smugly, “I’ve always been handsome. You just didn’t realize it in the past. There’s nothing to be alarmed about.”

“No, I really think you are much more handsome than before. Come, let me take a closer look.” Zhou Wen circled Li Xuan a few times and nodded in thought. “I see. I understand…”

“What do you understand?” Li Xuan asked curiously.

“I understand why you look so much more handsome,” Zhou Wen said.

“Why?” Li Xuan hurriedly asked.

“Because you…” Zhou Wen deliberately lowered his voice. When Li Xuan approached to hear him clearly, he punched him in the eye. “Because you haven’t suffered a beating in a long while.”

Li Xuan immediately flew into a rage after being punched in the eye. “Zhou Wen, how dare you sneak an attack on me? You’re dead.”

Seeing Li Xuan rush over, Zhou Wen summoned the Defy Ancient Sovereign Life Soul and fused it with himself, taking on a battle stance.

When Li Xuan charged over, the Life Soul carapace had already enveloped his body. At the same time, he swung his

fist.

Zhou Wen dodged Li Xuan’s fist and chopped at the back of his neck.

Li Xuan strangely circled around with his movement technique. Not only did he dodge Zhou Wen’s chop, but he also stabbed at Zhou Wen’s waist like a sharp blade.

“What’s with your movement technique?” Zhou Wen was somewhat surprised.

When Li Xuan was injured, he could quickly learn the other party’s skills and moves, but he couldn’t learn movement techniques.

As movement techniques couldn’t hurt him, Li Xuan’s movement technique had always been his weakness.

However, Li Xuan’s movement technique had clearly improved significantly. Furthermore, it looked rather strange and fast.

“Hehe, this is the Dugu family’s movement technique. It originally wasn’t taught to outsiders, but my talent is too great and my character is excellent. They made an exception and I got to learn it from the Dugu family…” Li Xuan said smugly.

“Then let me see how much you have learned.” Zhou Wen became serious as he pushed the Defy Ancient Sovereign’s strength to its limits.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 893 - Battle for Advancement

Chapter 893: Battle for Advancement

Translator: CKtalon

Gu Dian, Feng Qiuyan, Sadie, Gulli, Fang Ruoxi, and the other members of the Xuanwen Club watched the two of them fight from the side.

Feng Qiuyan watched for a while before his eyes lit up. “President has become much stronger after returning. Be it his movement techniques or skills, he has already reached the limits of a human. In addition, he can constantly recover and become stronger in battle. Coach might really be in trouble this time.”

Sadie nodded slightly. “What’s terrifying about Li Xuan is that he has countless chances of failure. As for others, if they make one mistake, they might never have another chance. This ability is really enviable.”

Gulli said enviously, “Why don’t I have such a sick Life Soul?”

Zhou Wen and Li Xuan kept fighting. Zhou Wen coupled Transcendent Flying Immortal with Defy Ancient Sovereign, but the pressure from the battle remained immense.

Li Xuan’s movement technique was strange and inexplicable. It looked like he had inherited the Dugu family’s best teachings. Although he hadn’t reached the level of Transcendent Flying Immortal’s divine technique, he couldn’t be underestimated.

Most importantly, when Zhou Wen’s attack struck Li Xuan’s carapace, he could at best shatter it. It didn’t affect Li

Xuan’s ability to continue the battle. Furthermore, after the carapace shattered, it would become even sturdier. It wouldn’t be easy for Zhou Wen to shatter it again.

Not only was the carapace becoming stronger, but Li Xuan was also constantly becoming stronger. His various techniques became more and more bizarre, and the changes became more and more unpredictable. Many stances didn’t look like something which were humanly possible.

Zhou Wen knew that this was definitely a technique and skill that Li Xuan had learned from dimensional creatures.

Zhou Wen had already pushed the Defy Ancient Sovereign’s strength to its limits. Transcendent Flying Immortal couldn’t be any faster, but he still couldn’t take down Li Xuan.

Li Xuan became more and more accustomed to the battle with Zhou Wen as he became stronger.

“Among his peers, the only one who can fight Coach to such an extent is probably President,” Feng Qiuyan said.

Sadie thought for a moment and said, “Perhaps some people might have the ability to determine the outcome of the battle with Coach in a short period of time, but there aren’t many people who can fight Coach head-on in such a manner.”

“Sis, do you think President has a chance of defeating Coach?” Gulli asked with interest.

“It’s hard to say. From the looks of it, Li Xuan is invincible. It’s not like there’s no chance,” Sadie said after some thought.

Feng Qiuyan also said, “Coach’s technique, abilities, and timing are undoubtedly top-notch. If it were an ordinary person, they would have long been defeated. However, President is the type of person who can’t be killed. Coach’s dominance will slowly decrease due to the expenditure of stamina and Essence Energy. As for President, as long as he doesn’t die, he will slowly become stronger. Time is on President’s side, so there’s indeed a chance unless Coach can defeat President in a short period of time.”

“Imagine the look on Coach’s face when he is defeated. That would definitely be interesting. I’m really looking forward to it,” Gulli said excitedly.

In fact, many people had such expectations. It wasn’t that Zhou Wen had a worse relationship with them compared to Li Xuan, but deep in the hearts of humans, they sympathized with the weak and hoped that the myth would be shattered.

In recent times, Zhou Wen was almost synonymous with invincibility. In comparison, Li Xuan was the person who could take down the legend.

Li Xuan was very serious. Although he gave off an indecent feeling, he was also someone who refused to admit defeat. Even if his opponent was Zhou Wen, he didn’t wish to lose.

In the crazy battle, the Defy Ancient Sovereign gave Zhou Wen endless energy, virtually making him a tireless machine. However, his suppression of Li Xuan continued to decrease.

Li Xuan became more and more familiar with Zhou Wen’s various moves and techniques. Although Zhou Wen was also familiar with him, he lacked the ability to self-repair and become stronger the more injured he was.

Bam!

When the fists met, Zhou Wen's strength, which could originally suppress Li Xuan, now resulted in Zhou Wen taking two steps back uncontrollably. As for Li Xuan, his body only swayed.

"President has gained the upper hand," Gulli said.

"From the looks of it, the situation has begun to reverse." Sadie looked seriously at Li Xuan.

In the beginning, she didn't have a good impression of Li Xuan. She felt that Li Xuan was a typical foppish scion, but as she constantly interacted with him, Sadie's impression of him had changed drastically.

At this point, Sadie had no choice but to admit that Li Xuan might be one of the top few people of their generation. Even the strongest Lance in the Ultimate Family Clan might not be able to defeat him.

Outside the six families, more and more young geniuses have appeared. Existences like Zhou Wen, Li Xuan, and Feng Qiuyan might be existences that can influence the fate of the Federation in the future... I have to work harder... Sadie carefully watched the battle between the two.

At that instant, Li Xuan switched from defense to offense and launched a barrage of attacks.

Previously, Li Xuan defended more than he attacked, but now, he wasn't defending at all. He was completely devoted to attacking.

Every part of his body seemed to turn into a lethal weapon. Many of his offensive means were unimaginable to others,

but Li Xuan used them without any trouble.

Zhou Wen was finally suppressed. His Strength, Speed, and Constitution began to decline. Although it wasn’t obvious, it was exactly what was happening. As for Li Xuan, he was still growing stronger.

Zhou Wen had many means to turn the situation around, but that required switching to other Essence Energy Arts. Zhou Wen had no intention of doing so. He continued using the Defy Ancient Sovereign to fight Li Xuan.

Bam! Bam!

Zhou Wen’s body began to be struck. This was the first time he had been struck since the beginning of the battle.

Once there was a first, there was a second and third time. Zhou Wen felt the pain from his body, but his mood wasn’t that bad. Instead, he became more and more excited.

That’s it… Deliver something more violent… Zhou Wen felt the power fluctuations of the Defy Ancient Sovereign in his body as he attempted to control and drive the power fluctuations.

Badump! Badump!

Zhou Wen’s heart beat crazily, like a piston that was going all out.

However, this wasn’t enough. Zhou Wen guided the infinite vital essence produced by the Defy Ancient Sovereign to constantly compress the explosive force.

The Defy Ancient Sovereign could only produce powerful vitality, but it couldn’t be used in a virtuous cycle. What

Zhou Wen needed to do now was mimic Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General’s circulation chain, constantly compressing and burning his vital force in his body instead of radiating it.

Boom! Boom!

Zhou Wen felt his heart heat up as though it was about to ignite. At the same time, he could sense that the Defy Ancient Sovereign was transforming.

Come on, make the battle crazier. Zhou Wen also abandoned defending and dodging as he brandished his fist to meet Li Xuan’s crazy attacks.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 894 - Ancient Sovereign Advancement

Chapter 894: Ancient Sovereign Advancement

Translator: CKtalon

Bam! Bam!

The clash of fists and flesh, the clash of blood and fire.

Zhou Wen and Li Xuan seemed to be nailed to the ground. Their legs didn't move, but their arms flailed wildly as they punched each other's faces and chests.

Feng Qiuyan, Sadie, and company felt their hearts turn cold. This wasn't a battle, but a life-and-death battle. Those who didn't know better would think that Zhou Wen and Li Xuan had a deep grudge.

"Coach seems to be using his weakness to fight President's advantage. Why is he doing this?" Feng Qiuyan frowned in thought.

Sadie said, "He probably wants to take a final gamble, right? His stamina and strength are declining. If he were to fight under normal circumstances, he would have to admit defeat after his stamina and strength drop drastically. Therefore, he needs to make the final impact before that happens, in a bid to reverse the situation."

Feng Qiuyan shook his head and said, "That's not right. There's no chance of turning the situation around with such a desperate attempt. Coach wouldn't make such a foolish decision. He definitely has his reasons."

“His injuries are getting worse, but Li Xuan’s injuries have automatically healed. Furthermore, such injuries will only make Li Xuan’s Life Soul carapace stronger. I really can’t tell what other chances Coach has. He can only reverse the situation by using external forces like Companion Beasts.” Sadie had the Eye of Odin’s ability to see the situation clearly.

Although Zhou Wen’s body was powerful, his injuries weren’t light after suffering so many blows. However, he still had no intention of retreating as he continued attacking Li Xuan crazily.

Just a little more… Why can’t I advance yet… What’s the difference… Zhou Wen could clearly sense that the Defy Ancient Sovereign in his body was like a volcano that was about to erupt due to the accumulation of the excess vital essence. However, for some reason, the energy just didn’t erupt which prevented the Defy Ancient Sovereign from completing its final evolution.

Why? What went wrong? The Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General can constantly accumulate and burn using killing intent and flames, making him constantly become stronger. Why can’t the accumulation of vital essence push the Defy Ancient Sovereign to evolve? What’s the difference? As Zhou Wen fought, he thought hard.

Crack!

Cracks appeared on Zhou Wen’s ribs as blood seeped out of the corner of his mouth. Even his organs began to rupture as fine cracks appeared. Blood was seeping out.

“Think of a way to make them stop. If this continues, Zhou Wen’s body won’t be able to withstand it.” Sadie could tell

that Zhou Wen’s injuries were already rather serious. If this continued, it would be troublesome if his organs shattered.

“They can’t be serious, right? At such a time, President should be the one stopping, right? Could it be that President is really angry?” Gulli said.

Feng Qiuyan shook his head and said, “Impossible. President isn’t that kind of person. There must be a reason for not stopping.”

“His opponent is already so injured, but he still isn’t stopping. I really can’t think of a reason,” Gulli said.

“Pressure,” Gu Dian, who usually didn’t speak much, suddenly said.

“What?” Sadie and company didn’t hear Gu Dian clearly.

“Pressure,” Gu Dian repeated, but he had no intention of explaining.

This time, Sadie and Gulli heard it clearly, but they didn’t understand what Gu Dian meant.

“I understand. That’s right. It’s pressure…” Feng Qiuyan’s eyes lit up as he said in appreciation.

“What do you mean?” Gulli asked Feng Qiuyan in puzzlement.

Feng Qiuyan looked at Zhou Wen in battle and said, “Coach wants to break through. He wants to fight President using his weakness. That’s because he wants to surpass himself. He wants to make up for his flaws and become stronger. He wants to break through his shackles under pressure…

President clearly understands this, so he's trying his best to exert pressure on Coach…"

"Is that so? But from the looks of it, Coach will be beaten to death if this continues…" Gulli looked at Zhou Wen in disbelief.

Sadie also found it difficult to accept Feng Qiuyan's explanation. Everyone had their own traits and weaknesses. No one could be perfect. To forcefully use their weakness to fight, could one really break through under heavy pressure? Sadie had great doubts about this.

"Coach should be able to do it," Feng Qiuyan said matter-of-factly while he was inwardly considering: *What's my weakness? Should I try to break through my weakness?*

If Zhou Wen knew what Feng Qiuyan was thinking, he would definitely be at a loss whether to laugh or cry.

He only wanted his Life Soul to advance to a Perfect Body. How could he think of any weakness to break through? With that time, he might as well farm more powerful Companion Beasts.

Zhou Wen wasn't a perfectionist, nor had he ever thought of making himself perfect.

Why isn't it working… What's wrong? Zhou Wen clearly felt that the Defy Ancient Sovereign's vital essence was about to erupt, but it just didn't do so.

Zhou Wen carefully thought through the similarities and differences between the Defy Ancient Sovereign and the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General and constantly compared the differences between the two.

Suddenly, an idea flashed in Zhou Wen's mind. *Yes, I'm lacking a catalyst. The Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General uses flames to ignite killing intent to use it to burn Fiend Armor. No matter how much vital essence the Defy Ancient Sovereign gathers, it lacks a catalyst to ignite the vital essence, so it's unable to convert it into an effective energy to push the Defy Ancient Sovereign to evolve... A catalyst... What do I use as a catalyst... to ignite the Defy Ancient Sovereign's vital essence?*

Although the Ancient Sovereign Sutra was inclined towards the fire element, it was in essence not the power of fire, but the fire of life. It was still somewhat different from pure fire-elemental powers.

From the looks of it, the fire of life wasn't enough to act as a catalyst. It could even be said that the heat wasn't strong enough.

The Defy Ancient Sovereign... Ancient Sovereign Sutra... Ancient Sovereign... Zhou Wen suddenly recalled that The Thearch had once mentioned that the Ancient Sovereign Sutra was an Essence Energy Art of the Human Sovereign. It was an Essence Energy Art that was impossible to advance to the Mythical stage because there was no path ahead for humans. Even the head of the Three Sovereigns, Suirenshi, was unable to defy the heavens and change his fate of making the Ancient Sovereign Sutra break through to the Mythical stage.

Defy... So that's how it is... If I don't have the determination to defy the heavens and change my fate... How can I fight against the heavens... The Defy Ancient Sovereign Life Soul in Zhou Wen's body emitted a glow like the sun, making the glow on Zhou Wen's body grow stronger.

Boom!

The light suddenly converged, and shortly after it converged, it quickly exploded. The terrifying light instantly devoured the entire training grounds, temporarily blinding everyone’s eyes.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 895 - Primordial Human Sovereign

Chapter 895: Primordial Human Sovereign

Translator: CKtalon

Only one's life can ignite vital essence. Zhou Wen already understood the true meaning of the Ancient Sovereign Sutra. He forcefully used his life force as a catalyst to detonate the boundless vital life essence which Defy Ancient Sovereign had gathered.

As his vital essence erupted, the Defy Ancient Sovereign rapidly transformed and was instantly pushed to a Perfect Body.

The Defy Ancient Sovereign's Perfect Body fused at a deeper level with Zhou Wen's body. The effects on his body were even more direct and intense.

Primordial Human Sovereign? Zhou Wen had already sensed the information gained from the new Life Soul and knew its name.

Badump! Badump!

The beating of his heart combined with the power of the Primordial Human Sovereign. His heart was like a sun that emitted infinite light and heat. The light and heat made Zhou Wen's entire body seem to burn. Every inch of his cells was filled with intense vital essence, like a humanoid sun of vital essence.

Even Feng Qiuyan and company, who were by the side of the arena, could sense the intense vitality emitted by Zhou

Wen after he burned his vital essence. When the light of life shone on them, not only did it not make them feel uncomfortable, but it also gave them an indescribable sense of comfort. It was as though their bodies had been rejuvenated. All their fatigue and discomfort were swept away.

Even Li Xuan's injuries that had yet to fully recover began to rapidly recover under the illumination of Zhou Wen's humanoid sun.

The only injury that hadn't recovered was Zhou Wen's own injuries.

The Human Sovereign defied the heavens and killed, forging a way out for humans. However, he burned his own life in exchange for that.

Suirenshi observed lightning and obtained fire. Shennongshi tasted every plant. Fuxi deduced the changes in the world. All of them used their own strength to fight for a chance of survival.

And this chance of survival wasn't for themselves.

Looking at Zhou Wen who was emitting light and heat like the sun, Li Xuan looked at him and said, "It's fair now. Everyone has a Perfect Body Life Soul. No one will suffer a loss. Fight with all your might. Let me see how strong you are."

"As you wish." Zhou Wen's body lit up as though he had turned into a burning body of energy. His fist broke through the speed of sound and blasted at Li Xuan.

"Nicely done." Li Xuan wasn't to be outdone. The black demonic aura on the carapace expanded as he similarly

brandished his fist at Zhou Wen like an evil god.

Bam!

At the instant the two fists collided, Li Xuan’s body was sent flying by Zhou Wen’s terrifying strength. Even the carapace on his fist shattered.

While Li Xuan’s body was still in the air, Zhou Wen had already followed up like a beam of light. He punched Li Xuan repeatedly with his fists.

Crack! Crack!

Li Xuan’s carapace shattered piece by piece. Without waiting for his carapace to heal, Zhou Wen’s fist had already struck his flesh.

The maximum power unleashed with Primordial Human Sovereign seemed to explode with life. It exceeded its original limits. Even something as powerful as Li Xuan’s carapace found it difficult to withstand it.

“What powerful strength, but your strength is still insufficient to kill me. Such an injury will only make me stronger faster.” Li Xuan wasn’t alarmed by Zhou Wen’s continuous attacks. Instead, he was delighted.

“Is that so?” Zhou Wen remained unperturbed. The power of the Primordial Human Sovereign constantly erupted, shattering Li Xuan’s bones.

“It’s useless… It’s useless… It’s useless… Although this kind of power is strong… it still can’t deal fatal damage to me… It will only make me stronger and stronger… Let the tempest come strike harder…” Li Xuan was in pain and happy.

Zhou Wen didn’t say a word as his fists rained down on Li Xuan, nearly shattering his entire carapace. While the carapace rapidly healed, he also broke many of Li Xuan’s bones.

Finally, Zhou Wen punched Li Xuan in the abdomen, sending him flying.

However, while Li Xuan’s body was flying, his bones and carapace completely healed. When he landed on the ground, there were no wounds on his body. Even the carapace had completely recovered.

“Haha, didn’t I say so? Your attacks are useless against me. I feel that I’ve become stronger. My healing factor has sped up. It’s so fast that even I’m surprised. I really have to thank you… Strange… Why do I feel a little dizzy…” Li Xuan wanted to rub his eyes with his hand, but when he extended his left hand, he realized that his left hand couldn’t reach his face. He couldn’t help but feel strange. “What’s going on?”

“President… Your… Your body…” Gulli pointed at Li Xuan’s body in horror.

The others beside him had similar expressions as they looked at Li Xuan in horror as though they had seen a ghost.

“What’s wrong with my body?” Li Xuan looked down at his body and when he saw it, he screamed in fright.

He wasn’t injured at all, but all his bones were not in their right positions. His leg bones were overturned, and his arm was twisted like a fried dough twist. His eyes were askew from each other, and his neck was slanted. Li Xuan could almost see his back with one of his eyes.

Now, Li Xuan looked like a deformed monster. Although he wasn't injured and his carapace was intact, there was nothing right with his body.

"Holy sh*t, Old Zhou, what did you do to me?" Li Xuan was frightened as he asked with a trembling voice.

"It's nothing. I just broke your bones and made them heal faster," Zhou Wen said with a smile.

"Holy sh*t, you are screwing with me. Quickly fix me…" Li Xuan felt like crying.

Li Xuan's self-healing had a memory characteristic that allowed him to recover to his normal state. However, Zhou Wen's Power of the Primordial Human Sovereign also had the ability to heal others.

Therefore, Li Xuan's fractured bones were healed before they returned to normal. This resulted in such a deformity.

"Then I must break your bones again," Zhou Wen said with a smile.

"Quick… Quick beat me…" Li Xuan said through gritted teeth. All he wanted now was to quickly recover his handsome appearance.

"You are the one asking for the beating. Don't you retaliate," Zhou Wen said as he walked in front of Li Xuan.

"Absolutely not." Li Xuan gritted his teeth so hard that they nearly shattered.

Zhou Wen once again unleashed the power of Primordial Human Sovereign, but this time, shattering Li Xuan's bones was much more difficult than the last time. His carapace and

bones had become harder, and his healing factor had improved.

It wasn’t easy for him to break all the deformed bones again, allowing them to return to their normal states and heal themselves. Eventually, Li Xuan finally returned to normal.

Li Xuan, who had returned to normal, wanted to sneak an attack on Zhou Wen, but Zhou Wen nimbly dodged.

“If you do that again, I won’t help you recover next time,” Zhou Wen took a few steps back and said to Li Xuan with a smile.

When Li Xuan thought of his appearance, he couldn’t help but shiver. Although he wasn’t afraid of being injured, he couldn’t tolerate such a deformed look.

“F*ck, what kind of f*cking Life Soul is that? It’s freaking sinister.” Li Xuan didn’t dare attack again as he cursed indignantly.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 896 - Essence Energy Pill

Chapter 896: Essence Energy Pill

Translator: CKtalon

After Zhou Wen returned, he carefully studied the Primordial Human Sovereign's powers and realized that it was indeed very powerful. It was expected of a Life Soul condensed from an Essence Energy Art with the Strength attribute.

After the Perfect Body's Perfect Body Human Sovereign fused with Zhou Wen, the strength it could produce was almost comparable to a weaker Mythical creature.

What was ridiculous was that this power came from the explosion of powerful vital essence. In other words, after the power of the Primordial Human Sovereign produced destructive power, the power of the burning vital essence would also heal the destroyed lifeforms.

Therefore, after Zhou Wen injured someone, he would automatically treat their injuries. Apart from causing them some pain, it was basically useless.

What the hell is this? It wasn't easy for me to have a powerful destructive Essence Energy Art and Life Soul, but this is what I get!? Zhou Wen didn't know if he should be happy or worried.

He never expected that the Essence Energy Art that represented Strength would form a Life Soul ability that healed. What was even worse was that this healing ability was useless for him.

From the looks of it, I can only place my hopes on another Strength-attribute Essence Energy Art. Zhou Wen could only

hope that another Strength-attribute Essence Energy Art could bring him pure destructive power.

Regardless, the Ancient Sovereign Life Soul had finally advanced to a Perfect Body. He was one step closer to advancing to the Mythical stage.

Now, I still need to cultivate Glimmer, Civilized Country, the Demon God Catalog, and that unknown Essence Energy Art. Zhou Wen thought to himself as to which Essence Energy Art he should focus on.

Glimmer needs me to walk out to advance. Civilized Country requires teleportation. These two aren't things that can't be cultivated just because I want to. As the Demon God Catalog doesn't have the corresponding Guardian's blood, it can't condense a Life Soul. I can't cultivate it now either. Now, I can only cultivate that unknown Essence Energy Art. After Zhou Wen thought it through, he began studying the Essence Energy Art.

The Essence Energy Art was learned from the entrance of the Founding Emperor Tomb. Now, Zhou Wen didn't know what its stats were. If it was Strength, it would correspond to the Ancient Sovereign Sutra. Then, all the Essence Energy Arts would be considered complete.

However, he couldn't be certain yet. All he could do was cultivate it first. Once he condensed a Life Providence, he would probably be able to make a judgment.

This Essence Energy Art was very strange. It solely extracted and compressed Essence Energy. Every circulation would purify some of the Essence Energy and increase its concentration. Apart from that, it was useless.

Could it be that as long as this Essence Energy Art purifies the Essence Energy to a certain extent, it can automatically evolve a Life Providence? Zhou Wen studied it and felt that it seemed to be the only possibility.

Therefore, Zhou Wen obtained some high-level Essence Energy Crystals in-game. As he absorbed them, he practiced his Essence Energy Art.

This method actually worked. With the help of a large number of high-level Essence Energy Crystals, it was very easy to cultivate the Essence Energy Art. The Essence Energy in Zhou Wen's body also became purer.

This thing seems to be specially used for Qi Refinement. Could it be an Essence Energy Art with an Essence Energy attribute? If that's the case, I can only find another Essence Energy Art that corresponds to Strength or Constitution. The more Zhou Wen looked at the Essence Energy Art, the more it resembled an Essence Energy attribute.

In just a few days, the nameless Essence Energy Art automatically produced a Life Providence.

Life Providence: Qi Refinement Cultivator

After the Life Providence appeared, Zhou Wen's Essence Energy recovery and Essence Energy purity were greatly augmented. This chilled Zhou Wen's heart.

From the looks of it, this Essence Energy Art is most likely of the Essence Energy attribute. Zhou Wen thought for a moment. Since he had already condensed a Life Providence, he might as well condense a Life Soul to see if it was of any use.

The Guardian’s blood that corresponded to Essence Energy wasn’t difficult to obtain. Zhou Wen went to Ant City and obtained a drop of it.

What surprised Zhou Wen was that the Essence Energy Art that Zhou Wen called Qi Refinement Art didn’t absorb the blood essence of the Ant City Guardian.

It’s not an Essence Energy attribute? Zhou Wen was slightly taken aback as hope rose in his heart.

Zhou Wen went to the underground sea again and obtained a drop of the Guardian’s blood essence. He attempted to use the Qi Refinement Art to absorb it.

With the Qi Refinement Art activated, the drop of blood was sucked in. Zhou Wen immediately felt his Essence Energy begin to condense towards the drop of blood. His essence, vitality, and spirit also stirred as he vaguely showed signs of condensing a Life Soul.

The Guardian of the underground sea seems to have a spatial attribute. Then what’s his corresponding basic attribute? Will it be Strength? Zhou Wen was somewhat nervous.

This was because he had already confirmed that the Qi Refinement Art wasn’t of the Essence Energy attribute. As for the Guardian of the underground sea, its attributes had nothing to do with Speed. Zhou Wen had already confirmed that the most likely possibility was Strength or Constitution.

The Demon God Catalog couldn’t condense a Life Soul with the blood of the underground sea Guardian. Furthermore, it was very likely to have a Constitution attribute, so the Qi Refinement Art was likely of the Strength attribute.

As his essence, vitality, and spirit condensed, the Essence Energy in Zhou Wen's body that had been purified and refined by the Qi Refinement Art quickly gathered together, gradually forming a core that was purely formed from Essence Energy.

It was still constantly purifying. The Essence Energy in the pill became more and more condensed, turning from gaseous to liquid before turning from liquid to solid.

The form of this Life Soul looks a little similar to the Primordial Life Soul of the Dao Art. Is it really not of the Essence Energy attribute? Zhou Wen was rather suspicious.

However, the two were still somewhat different. The Life Soul of the Dao Sutra was born in the Sea of Consciousness, while the Life Soul of the Qi Refinement Art was born in the Essence Energy Sea. The two were different.

Finally, when the pill was crystalline and almost without any impurities, the Life Soul condensed.

Zhou Wen had already sensed some of its information, but he habitually checked its information with his phone.

Life Soul: Essence Energy Pill (Primordial Body)

Is this something like a pill? Zhou Wen could sense the terrifying Essence Energy in the Essence Energy Pill, but such Essence Energy seemed a little too domineering. It was different from things like the Rejuvenation Pill.

Zhou Wen extended his hand and beckoned. The resplendent diamond-like Essence Energy Pill appeared on his fingertip. With a thought, he controlled the Essence Energy Pill to fly into the air. It was very fast, but he didn't discover any special abilities.

Could it be that I’m to use this Essence Energy Pill to smash others? Zhou Wen randomly entered a dungeon and came to the Metalwork Temple. When he saw a Metal Golem with a hammer approaching, he ordered the Essence Energy Pill to rush over.

The Essence Energy Pill transformed into a stream of light that penetrated the Metal Golem’s head. The Metal Golem immediately died as the system produced a notice of its death.

This thing is really used for smashing others! Zhou Wen was greatly surprised as he found some Epic dimensional creatures to test with his Essence Energy Pill.

The Essence Energy Pill easily penetrated the bodies of Epic creatures. Even the Runic Heavy-Armored Warrior’s Runic Heavy Armor failed to block it. The shimmering heavy armor was forcefully penetrated and he was stabbed in the chest.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 897 - Possibility

Chapter 897: Possibility

Translator: CKtalon

I never expected the destructive power of a tiny Essence Energy Pill to be so powerful. If I can advance it to a Perfect Body, its destructive power should be comparable to a relatively low-level Mythical weapon, right? Zhou Wen was somewhat delighted.

His Life Soul didn't have a pure destructive Life Soul. The downside was that the Life Soul was only a pellet and couldn't be used as a weapon.

How can I advance the Essence Energy Pill to a Perfect Body? Should I continue absorbing Essence Energy? Zhou Wen attempted to continue absorbing the Essence Energy in the Essence Energy Crystals, and it turned out to be useful.

The Qi Refinement Art is really unique. As long as I have enough Essence Energy, I can resolve all problems. Such an Essence Energy Art can be quickly mastered as long as I have the resources. It's very suitable to be popularized among humans. Zhou Wen was still thinking of promoting Essence Energy Arts in the future.

The Essence Energy Pill can slowly absorb Essence Energy. Glimmer requires me to walk outside. The advancement of these two Life Souls only requires time. However, the Civilized Country and the Demon God Catalog are somewhat troublesome. Civilized Country needs a large number of teleportations. I have to think of a way to get a pet that can teleport. The Demon God Catalog needs the blood of a Guardian. From the looks of it, I must think of a solution

using The Thearch. Zhou Wen thought about how he could obtain The Thearch's blood essence.

The Thearch wants me to meet her at Chess Mountain. This is a chance. Perhaps I can settle that alchemist when I obtain the blood essence. Zhou Wen thought of all sorts of possibilities.

Unfortunately, there was no news of the alchemist. He didn't know if the alchemist had given up on pursuing him.

…

"Young Master Wen, haven't you been searching for Companion Beasts that can teleport?" An Sheng called with good news.

"There's news?" Zhou Wen was delighted.

"It's not easy to find such a Companion Beast. However, recently, a break-out creature that's suspected to be able to teleport has appeared on the eastern coast. If you are interested, you can try your luck. You can also do me a favor as a result," An Sheng said.

"What happened?" Zhou Wen asked.

An Sheng roughly explained the situation. Due to the appearance of the break-out creature, the nearby cities suffered heavy losses. A local wealthy family there had business dealings with the An family.

The An family's Essence Energy compression accelerator required an important supplementary material. It was mainly provided by that family.

They were now asking the An family for help. If the An family could help them eliminate the break-out creature, not only would they obtain the materials at low prices, but the family would also prioritize providing them the materials in the future.

There were very few materials produced. Many places in the Federation needed them. The An family wasn’t the only family that was willing to help them eliminate the break-out creatures. However, no one had succeeded so far.

The main reason was that the break-out creature had a powerful spatial ability. It could teleport continuously and it was very difficult to trap it. Even if one had the ability to kill it, they wouldn’t be able to catch up to it.

An Sheng then transmitted the detailed information about the break-out creature to Zhou Wen. In the video he received, Zhou Wen discovered that it was a dimensional creature that looked a little like a Qilin. Its body was as colorful as colored glass, and it ran extremely fast. Furthermore, it could instantly vanish. It would then appear elsewhere. It was undoubtedly a spatial teleportation ability.

Zhou Wen carefully studied the video. As the break-out creature was too fast, even high-speed cameras couldn’t capture a complete image. If he slowed down the video, there would be some missing parts.

However, from the video, it could be seen that the break-out creature’s combat strength was very strong. Apart from its spatial teleportation abilities, its physical combat strength was also tremendous. It also had powerful single-target and group-target Essence Energy Skills. It was a very comprehensive Mythical creature with almost no obvious weaknesses.

In terms of combat strength, Tyrant Behemoth is definitely not inferior to it. The main point is that its spatial teleportation ability is too powerful. It won't be easy to kill it. Zhou Wen was already tempted. If not for such powerful spatial teleportation abilities, it wouldn't be worth him taking the risk.

However, before the problem of the alchemist was resolved, Zhou Wen was afraid that the alchemist would find him after he left Luoyang. When that happened, it wouldn't be easy for him to run to Chess Mountain.

"I'm very interested in that break-out creature, but I'm afraid I won't be able to go over before resolving the alchemist problem," Zhou Wen said to An Sheng.

"There's no rush. No one can deal with that break-out creature yet. There's still a chance if you go later." An Sheng paused before continuing, "We can't wait for the alchemist to come. Why don't we think of a way to lure him over?"

"How? Don't tell me you want to use me as bait?" Zhou Wen immediately guessed An Sheng's intentions.

An Sheng said, "According to what you said, the banana fan in the Sun True Flames Furnace has already been absorbed by your Companion Beast. It's useless even if that alchemist kills you, but he is still stubbornly chasing after you. There should be another reason for this. Think about it carefully and you should be able to come up with something. Perhaps we can use this point to lure him over and let him have a taste of the Essence Energy compression accelerator."

"Forget it. Your accelerators require too much preparation time. Energy is also a problem." Zhou Wen rejected An Sheng's good intentions.

However, An Sheng’s suggestion gave Zhou Wen some inspiration.

It wasn’t reliable to rely on the An family’s accelerator to eliminate the alchemist, but it was a good way to lure him to Chess Mountain.

If it wasn’t for the sun banana fan, why would the alchemist chase after me? Zhou Wen thought of the purple bronze ball that Liu Yun had given him before he left, as well as the things he had taken from the stone house.

It should be these things, right? After some thought, Zhou Wen realized that there was only one possibility. Apart from that, he didn’t take anything out of the Founding Emperor Tomb.

I can give it a try. Zhou Wen didn’t know if these things could lure the alchemist over, but he could give it a try. After all, he could only wait.

Zhou Wen decided to take the purple bronze ball and pill-related items to Chess Mountain to see if he could lure the alchemist over.

Xu Ai hadn’t been in a good mood the past few days. She had come to the An family mainly because she wanted to obtain information on the An family’s Essence Energy weapons. However, after arriving, she had only seen An Tianzuo once. She didn’t even have the chance to speak to him, much less go to the An family’s weapon factory.

“Miss, I’ve found out that the An family values the material—Magic Dust. As for the Lu family, which mainly produces Magic Dust, they have been seeking help everywhere recently because of a break-out creature. Furthermore, the Lu family is willing to use large amounts of Magic Dust as

payment. At the same time, they are also willing to provide Magic Dust’s priority purchase rights. If we can obtain these rights, the An family will likely take the initiative to cooperate with us.” The female guard sent the news to Xu Ai.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 898 - Purple Bronze Ball

Chapter 898: Purple Bronze Ball

Translator: CKtalon

“It’s not convenient for us to appear, right?” Xu Ai frowned.

“Our family has already found someone to step in. However, we still need you to personally deal with that break-out creature. No one else can do it,” the female guard said.

“There’s no progress here. It’s not appropriate for me to stay in the An family for too long. I don’t want them to notice anything. It’s good to go out for a walk,” Xu Ai said after some thought.

…

Zhou Wen took Ya’er to Chess Mountain. He didn’t head to the encampment but took a detour to somewhere around Chess Mountain and found a hidden spot.

I wonder if this thing can lure that alchemist over. Zhou Wen took out the pill furnaces and pills, opened the lid, and placed them on the ground.

Then, he took out the purple bronze ball and injected Essence Energy into it.

After the purple bronze ball absorbed the Essence Energy, it began to light up. Soon, it was like a red-hot metal ball.

The copper ball itself seemed to be fire-elemental. As long as Essence Energy was injected into it, the copper ball would produce heat, but that was all. It didn’t have any special use.

Zhou Wen had already experimented many times in the past. Now that he thought about it, it was very likely that the alchemist was able to find him because of the copper ball. It was as though the alchemist had come knocking on his door not long after he had taken it out to experiment.

Sitting on the ground, Zhou Wen constantly injected Essence Energy into the copper ball to maintain its burning state.

Essence Energy was nothing to Zhou Wen. It was nearly inexhaustible in his Slaughterer state.

Although he didn't know if the alchemist would be attracted or when he would arrive, Zhou Wen was still prepared to escape at any time.

Earth Elemental Beast and Truth Listener were already on standby. Zhou Wen sent Explosive Fiend Man out and set up a large number of time bombs nearby.

In some hidden places, Zhou Wen even set up many Gu Companion Beasts.

He had farmed quite a number of Gu in the Valley of No Return, so it came in handy. He even threw many Ancient Tadpoles into the riverbed of Chess Mountain.

He didn't need to kill the alchemist. All he needed to do was stall him or discover him in advance.

Eh, what's this? Zhou Wen suddenly realized that something strange had happened to the purple bronze ball.

Due to the prolonged infusion of Essence Energy to keep it burning, the entire purple bronze ball had turned golden. And in the golden color, there was a hint of purple flowing.

The purple color was like smoke and also light as it constantly flowed in the purple bronze ball. Furthermore, its flow was very regular.

Zhou Wen looked at it for a while and increasingly felt that the purple color was very strange. It seemed to have a life of its own. Wherever it flowed, the Essence Energy would vanish, causing the originally golden copper ball to cool down significantly.

Zhou Wen attempted to inject more Essence Energy, but the outcome was the same. No matter how much Essence Energy Zhou Wen injected, the purple swath would absorb most of it, allowing the purple bronze ball to maintain a temperature that wasn't too high or too low.

Could it be that the purple color is also a dimensional creature? Or could it be that this purple bronze ball is a dimensional creature? Zhou Wen wasn't sure. After observing for a while, he saw that the purple color was only swimming in the purple bronze ball. Furthermore, it was extremely regular. It didn't seem like it would rush out.

What's the use of the purple bronze ball? Is it part of the Sun True Flames Furnace? Zhou Wen was puzzled. He wanted to ask Liu Yun, but unfortunately, he didn't know where Liu Yun was.

Liu Yun said that there were two purple bronze balls. If I can find him, I might be able to figure out what use this thing has. Zhou Wen observed for a while and seeing no special reaction, he stopped paying attention.

He had more or less set up his traps. Zhou Wen got Truth Listener to pay close attention to his surroundings. The Earth Elemental Beast was beneath him, allowing him to escape at any time.

Holding his phone, he continued grinding.

Ya’er held the phone Zhou Wen had bought for her and was learning human language and words.

“Ah… Oh… Uh… Y… Uh… Fish…” Ya’er studied diligently with the phone software. She wasn’t impatient.

Nothing happened for two days. Just as Zhou Wen thought that the purple bronze ball and pill furnace were useless, he suddenly felt his heart palpitate as he felt that something was amiss.

Without any hesitation, Zhou Wen picked up Ya’er and charged into the sky.

Just as Zhou Wen leaped into the air, he saw the Earth Elemental Beast’s body bounce up from the ground as though it had been struck by lightning. Lightning crackled around its body as it emitted smoke.

Beneath the Earth Elemental Beast, the elderly alchemist tore out of the ground and stared coldly at Zhou Wen in midair. As though he had teleported, he grabbed at him.

Zhou Wen unsummoned the injured Earth Elemental Beast immediately and turned the Civilized Country ring on his finger before rushing towards Chess Mountain’s mountain wall.

Zhou Wen didn’t know what had taken effect, but he couldn’t be bothered to consider it. When he teleported out, he was already above the riverbed of Chess Mountain.

The elderly alchemist ignored the pill furnaces and pills on the ground. With a flash, he vanished into the ground as though he was in pursuit.

Zhou Wen thought to himself that no matter how powerful his Earth Escape was, it was impossible for him to directly come out of the water and fly towards Chess Mountain along the river.

To his surprise, the river below suddenly exploded with waves. The elderly alchemist's figure condensed from the waves and grabbed at Zhou Wen again.

This fellow actually knows Water Escape... Could it be that he's proficient in the Five-Elemental escape techniques? Zhou Wen hated encountering these fellows who were proficient in Dao techniques.

An Epic Elegant Emperor's Avatar Puppet was already very difficult to deal with, but the elderly alchemist was much harder to deal with than that.

Thankfully, the elderly alchemist wasn't powerful enough to interrupt teleportation. Zhou Wen teleported six times in a row and arrived near Chess Mountain's mountain wall. He could already clearly see the flower on the mountain wall.

"The Thearch, save me." Zhou Wen felt that it was best to be honest in front of The Thearch. If she refused to appear, it wouldn't be too late to rush into Deer Terrace Pavilion.

However, the flower on the mountain wall didn't react. As for the alchemist behind him, he had already caught up. All Zhou Wen could do was teleport again.

This time, Zhou Wen had already arrived in front of the mountain wall when he teleported. However, the flower on the mountain wall remained motionless. Zhou Wen had no choice but to summon the Earth Elemental Beast. He planned on forcefully passing through the mountain wall

and using Earth Escape to enter Deer Terrace Pavilion to lure the elderly alchemist to the Nine-Tailed Fox.

The elderly alchemist seemed to be somewhat afraid of Chess Mountain, but when he saw that nothing happened around him, he chased after Zhou Wen.

At that moment, the flower on the mountain wall suddenly raised its flower bud. A petal dropped and dissipated.

As the petal vanished, the elderly alchemist who was charging at Zhou Wen suddenly came to a halt. He was like a horse that was galloping at full speed only to be nailed to the spot. From motion to stillness, there was no buffer.

“Wish spell! Which race are you from? I’m Yin Talisman King of the Immortals. I didn’t mean to offend you,” said the elderly alchemist as he looked at the flower on the mountain wall in horror.

“Do you think you are worthy of calling yourself an Immortal? You are just a lowly rat.” The Thearch’s voice sounded from the flower.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 899 - Confrontation

Chapter 899: Confrontation

Translator: CKtalon

“I am indeed an Immortal…” The elder who called himself the Yin Talisman King already had the intention of retreating. He slowly retreated and wanted to use escape techniques to leave, but he realized that they were completely useless.

“Take another step and you shall perish right here,” The Thearch said indifferently.

Yin Talisman King’s expression changed, but he didn’t dare move. He stood there and said with a bitter smile, “I have no grudge with you, nor did I mean to offend you…”

“Are you worthy of having a grudge with me?” The Thearch said indifferently, “Not to mention a thief like you, even the first Contractor, Yellow Emperor, wouldn’t dare call himself an Immortal, much less a thing like you.”

When Yin Talisman King heard that, fear flashed in his eyes. He hurriedly bowed and said, “Please forgive me, Great One. I inherited the legacy of Yellow Emperor and thought of myself as part of the Yellow Emperor’s lineage. I definitely didn’t dare be disrespectful to the Immortals…”

The Thearch said disdainfully, “You can’t even master the Yin Talisman Sutra and forcefully fused with a Guardian. If Yellow Emperor really has a successor like you, I’m afraid he will be so angry that he will kill himself. Slice off your own arm and scram. If you dare to touch one of mine in the future, there will be no place for you in the world—Heaven, Earth, or Hell.”

Yin Talisman King gritted his teeth and slashed off his left arm. Without looking at the arm that had landed on the ground, he bowed in the direction of the flower and quickly left.

Zhou Wen was dumbfounded. He had originally planned on luring the Yin Talisman King here to let him engage in an internecine battle with The Thearch, but he never expected such an outcome.

Yin Talisman King, who already had the ability of Terror transformation, didn't even dare resist. The Thearch only needed to say one sentence to make him slice off his arm.

The flower looked at Zhou Wen and said sinisterly, "Were you thinking of luring him to me so that he could fight me so that you could take advantage of the situation?"

Zhou Wen immediately shivered and hurriedly said, "Misunderstanding… It's really a misunderstanding… I was driven into a corner by him, so I had no choice but to seek your help. I'm really indebted to you for saving my life. I have nothing to repay you with. I'll go back and prepare some new research equipment for you…"

"Try taking another step," The Thearch said coldly. "Do you think I really don't know what you did at the river?"

Zhou Wen had no choice but to stop and look at The Thearch. "Ahem, I just wanted to use your fame to scare him away. I never expected him to really dare come. By the way, The Thearch, why did you get me to come last time?"

"Who did you give that divine fruit to?" The Thearch asked.

Zhou Wen had no choice but to summon Doctor Darkness and say, "I fed him the divine fruit. If I had known that you

wanted it, I would have given it to you.”

“Cut the useless crap.” The Thearch sized up Doctor Darkness before saying to Zhou Wen, “I saved your life today and helped you defeat a powerful enemy. How are you going to repay me?”

“Feel free to instruct me. As long as I can do it, I’ll definitely do my best.” Zhou Wen didn’t have any room for negotiation.

“Use this Companion Beast of yours to help me do something. I won’t treat you unfairly. Don’t you want my blood essence? If you do it, I’ll give you a drop of blood essence,” The Thearch said.

“The matter you mentioned must be very dangerous, right?” Zhou Wen asked carefully.

“It depends. This Companion Beast of yours can barely be considered up to the mark. With him doing this, the difficulty shouldn’t be too high,” The Thearch answered casually.

“Can I know what you want me to do?” Zhou Wen asked.

“I want you to steal something from the dimension,” The Thearch said straightforwardly.

“Stealing? My eldest senior brother is especially good at stealing. Furthermore, he’s an expert with the Sky-Stealing Sun-Shifting. No one in this world can match him. Why don’t I introduce him to you?” Zhou Wen hurriedly said.

The Thearch smiled and said, “Only your Companion Beast can steal it unless there’s another Companion Beast that ate the divine fruit.”

“What’s that?” Zhou Wen asked curiously.

“Once I tell you what it is, you have to go,” The Thearch said with a smile.

“Can’t I go now?” Zhou Wen asked.

“Of course not,” The Thearch said firmly.

“Then tell me. What do you want my Doctor Darkness to steal?” Zhou Wen asked the flower.

“I want you to help me steal a bell…” The Thearch pondered for a moment before saying.

“What kind of bell? Which dimensional zone?” Zhou Wen continued asking.

“It’s a bell the size of a fist. It’s made of bronze and looks like a small bell. There’s the ancient word ‘Shang’ engraved on it. When you look at it, you will naturally know that it’s it.” After a pause, The Thearch continued, “Didn’t I just say that the small bell is in the dimension, not a dimensional zone? Otherwise, there wouldn’t be a need for a Companion Beast that has eaten a divine fruit.”

“The place where I took the divine fruit?” Zhou Wen’s expression turned odd.

“Not far from there.” The Thearch nodded.

“I don’t have the ability to go there,” Zhou Wen said.

“Don’t worry about that. Since I’m getting you to go, I naturally have a way to ensure your safe return. You just need to follow the plan and steal that bell back,” The Thearch said.

Zhou Wen gritted his teeth and said, “I can give it a try, but I need some time to prepare. Besides, you have to give me the drop of blood essence first.”

“Sure. Make an oath and I’ll give it to you,” The Thearch said.

Zhou Wen knew that if he swore, it wouldn’t be as simple as empty words. There would definitely be some restrictions if he swore in front of The Thearch.

“Alright, I swear that if I can’t bring that bell back to you, I’ll be severely condemned by my conscience…” Zhou Wen raised his hand and swore solemnly at the flower.

Boom!

A thunderclap suddenly sounded in the sky, giving Zhou Wen a fright.

Zhou Wen originally believed that he couldn’t bluff his way out of this oath, but to his surprise, The Thearch didn’t make him swear again. She said meaningfully, “Conscience is sometimes very important.”

With that said, a crystalline drop of water suddenly flew out from the flower’s stamen without waiting for Zhou Wen to say a word. It flew in front of Zhou Wen and floated in front of him.

“This is the blood essence you want. I’ll give you a month to prepare. Come here in a month and I’ll tell you the detailed plan,” The Thearch said.

Could it be that The Thearch’s true body is really this flower? Zhou Wen looked at the drop of blood essence in front of him and had his suspicions.

He extended his hand towards the water droplet and secretly circulated the Demon God Catalog. The moment Zhou Wen’s palm touched the water droplet, the water droplet seemed to be absorbed by a sponge. It seeped into his skin and was absorbed by the circulating Demon God Catalog.

I actually managed to match it! Zhou Wen was pleasantly surprised.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 900 - Mirror Eyes

Chapter 900: Mirror Eyes

As the blood was absorbed, the Demon God Catalog in his body circulated crazily. His essence, vitality, and spirit also circulated with the Demon God Catalog.

Essence, vitality, and spirit gradually gathered together, but they didn't form an independent Life Soul. Instead, they fused into Zhou Wen's eyes, making them gradually become crystal-clear.

This transparency was abnormal. Before long, Zhou Wen's eyes turned into what Torch Dragon looked like when it activated the Bright Torch Vision World. They were like two eye-shaped mirrors.

When Zhou Wen's eyes completely turned into mirrors, his Life Soul was finally condensed. Zhou Wen blinked and his eyes returned to normal.

However, when he activated the Demon God Catalog, his eyes turned into mirrors again. From afar, he looked like a blind person without pupils.

Could it be that the Demon God Catalog's ability is similar to Torch Dragon's? Zhou Wen found it odd, but he didn't dare look at his phone here.

However, regardless of what Life Soul it was, the Demon God Catalog's ability to condense a Life Soul was enough for Zhou Wen. This Essence Energy Art was most likely used to strengthen his Constitution. It wouldn't overlap with the Qi

Refinement Art, so the eight Essence Energy Arts was likely complete.

“The Thearch, I’ll head back now. I’ll come back in a month.” Zhou Wen left Chess Mountain with Ya’er, but he was still thinking, *Is The Thearch really Nine-Tailed Fox? Why do I feel that it’s unlikely to be the case?*

After returning to school, Zhou Wen dared to take out his phone to look at the information on his new Life Soul.

Life Soul: Mirror Eyes (Primordial Body)

The Small Perfection of Wisdom Sutra that enhances Constitution also had an eye as a Life Soul, but it was a third eye. This Mirror Eyes overlaps with my eyes. I wonder what use it has. Zhou Wen switched on his phone, hoping to give it a try in-game to see if it had an ability similar to Bright Torch Vision World.

Soon, Zhou Wen was disappointed. He used the Mirror Eyes to look at the dimensional creatures, but it was useless. It didn’t produce the effects of Bright Torch Vision World.

Not only was there no vision, there was no light emitted at all. When he used the Mirror Eyes to look at things, it was no different from ordinary eyes.

It didn’t have the ability of vision, lethality, petrification, or charm. Zhou Wen tried all the visual abilities he could think of, but they were useless. It was as though his Life Soul didn’t exist.

What’s the use of this Life Soul? Could it be an ability that reflects the eyes? Zhou Wen’s heart stirred as he went to Medusa’s Curse Demon Palace.

Zhou Wen didn’t kill Medusa. Instead, he used his eyes to meet Medusa’s eyes.

The girl, Medusa, activated her Eyes of Enticement. When Zhou Wen’s eyes met hers, Zhou Wen, who should have been petrified, didn’t show any abnormalities. Instead, after the girl-formed Medusa was slightly jolted, her body gradually petrified.

It really works! Zhou Wen was delighted. Although it seemed to be a passive ability, there were many terrifying existences with Eye-type abilities. It would be a good Life Soul if it could restrain all Eye-type abilities.

Medusa had only just begun petrifying when she activated her snake-haired demoness form. After she transformed into a demoness, she used the Eyes of Petrification to look at Zhou Wen.

Zhou Wen continued using Mirror Eyes to fend her off, and the snake demoness’s eyes showed signs of petrification, but it wasn’t obvious.

Even the Eyes of Petrification can be reflected. I wonder what will happen when I face the Bright Torch Vision World? After killing the demoness and seeing that nothing useful dropped, Zhou Wen eagerly switched maps to Zhuolu. He wanted to head to the Torch Dragon temple to see if he could restrain Bright Torch Vision World.

When Zhou Wen stood in front of Torch Dragon Youngling and fought it, he forced it to use the Bright Torch Vision World.

Zhou Wen used Mirror Eyes to meet Torch Dragon Youngling’s gaze. Zhou Wen clearly felt that he wasn’t being sucked into the Vision World, but it only lasted for a short

period of time. Then, the blood-colored avatar was sucked into the Vision World as the game screen went black.

Although he failed to restrain the Bright Torch Vision World, he was rather pleasantly surprised.

This was because Mirror Eyes had some influence on the Bright Torch Vision World. However, due to its weak strength, it was ultimately cracked by Bright Torch Vision World.

If Mirror Eyes can reach a Perfect Body, or even advance to the Mythical stage in the future, it might be able to resist the Bright Torch Vision World. With this possibility in mind, Zhou Wen became excited again as he began studying how to evolve Mirror Eyes.

However, despite trying many methods, Mirror Eyes didn't show any changes. Be it using Mirror Eyes to reflect the power of Eye-type powers or using Essence Energy to strengthen Mirror Eyes, the outcome was useless.

Unable to find a way to advance Mirror Eyes for the time being, Zhou Wen was out of options. All he could do was go online and read up on some information regarding Eye-type powers. He hoped to obtain inspiration to find a way to advance Mirror Eyes.

Zhou Wen worked hard for two days and came up with all sorts of ideas, but they were useless.

It's not a solution if this continues. I should make a trip to the East Sea first. I can raise Glimmer and also see if I can kill that dimensional creature that's proficient in spatial teleportation. Zhou Wen took Ya'er along.

Zhou Wen guessed that Yin Talisman King wouldn't come looking for trouble with him anytime soon. He didn't expect

Yin Talisman King to be that afraid of The Thearch that he wouldn’t dare cause trouble for him.

However, Yin Talisman King had lost an arm and looked to be seriously injured. It wouldn’t be easy for him to recover anytime soon.

It’s a pity that I didn’t get Yin Talisman King to hand over the Yin Talisman Sutra. That’s Yellow Emperor’s Essence Energy Art. It must be extraordinary, Zhou Wen thought regretfully.

The battle between Yellow Emperor and Chiyou back then was undoubtedly a battle between Guardians. Now, it was almost certain that Yellow Emperor and Chiyou had contracted Guardians. Furthermore, the Guardians they had contracted were definitely top-notch.

From the conversation between Yin Talisman King and The Thearch, the Guardian that Yellow Emperor contracted should be the Guardian of the Immortals. Then, which race did Chiyou’s Guardian come from? Zhou Wen couldn’t figure it out.

Zhou Wen didn’t dare waste too much time on the way. He headed straight for the East Sea’s city, hoping to resolve the dimensional creature as soon as possible. If a Companion Egg dropped, it was very likely that he could resolve the advancement problem of Civilized Country.

Along the way, Zhou Wen was still extremely careful and wary of Yin Talisman King. Thankfully, Yin Talisman King didn’t appear, saving Zhou Wen a lot of trouble.

…

The Lu family’s Sea Gazing City was a newly-established city after the dimensional storms. As there were some good

dimensional zones nearby, many powerful families migrated here, turning the originally small fishing village into the present Sea Gazing City.

The Lu family was a family that had migrated here. Now, the Lu family was basically the only major family in Sea Gazing City.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 901 - Turtle Tomb

Chapter 901: Turtle Tomb

Translator: CKtalon

When Zhou Wen arrived at the Lu family residence, the Lu family warmly welcomed him.

However, when Zhou Wen mentioned the dimensional creature, the Lu family members who received him only gave him a general summary of the situation. Then, they told Zhou Wen that they hoped he could stay with them for two days. After everyone arrived, the Lu family's patriarch would personally take them to the place where the dimensional creature appeared.

After inquiring, he learned that the An family wasn't the only one that had accepted the Lu family's invitation. The Xia and Zhang families had also sent people. There were also many famous freelance hunters.

The Lu family planned on taking everyone over together. When the time came, whoever had the ability to kill the dimensional creature on the spot would receive the Lu family's offered conditions.

Zhou Wen felt that this was fair. The Lu family only hoped to resolve the problem. As for who killed the dimensional creature, they didn't care.

However, Zhou Wen didn't plan on staying in the Lu family residence. Since they would set off in two days, he left the Lu family and planned on visiting the nearby dimensional zones. He might be able to find the tiny palm symbols.

There were four or five famous dimensional zones in Sea Gazing City. The most famous one was half on land and half in the sea. That dimensional zone was named Turtle Tomb.

In fact, Turtle Tomb wasn’t a tomb, but a dimensional zone with countless turtles. It included a large area of beach and shallow sea.

The reason for the name Turtle Tomb was related to an ancient myth.

As ancient people didn’t understand the principle of the water cycle, and only saw rivers flow into the sea day and night, as the seawater never overflowed, they therefore believed that there was a huge abyss to the east of the sea. All the seawater eventually flowed into the bottomless abyss.

This abyss was known as the Sinkhole by the ancients.

Above the East Sea, there were five immortal mountains—Daiyu, Yuanqiao, Fanghu, Yingzhou, and Penglai. Due to the impact of the water, the immortal mountains constantly drifted in the direction of the Sinkhole, making both humans and deities worry.

One of the Sea Gods was afraid that the immortal mountains would slip into the Sinkhole, so he sent fifteen gigantic sea turtles. Three sea turtles formed a group as they held back the five immortal mountains, preventing them from sliding into the Sinkhole.

Everything was originally fine, but after countless years, a few giants came to the beach and used bait to capture six of the turtles. They also untied the ropes on the turtles’ back.

This resulted in a huge disaster. Daiyu and Yuanqiao lost the pull from the sea turtles and eventually sank into the Sinkhole. Only Fanghu, Yingzhou, and Penglai remained.

Legend had it that Turtle Tomb was where the giants had cooked the six sea turtles. Furthermore, they had thrown the turtle shells into the seaside. At high tide, the huge turtle shells would be submerged. And when the tide receded, the turtle shells would be revealed.

Zhou Wen didn't know the veracity of the legend, but in Turtle Tomb, large swaths of reefs would appear after the tide fell. They were like tiny islands numbering a total of six. On each island, there were many different types of dimensional sea turtles.

All the sea turtles in Turtle Tomb had one Companion Form—armor. It had extremely strong defense. Among Companion Beasts of the same level, the sea turtles' defense was considered top-notch.

Some special types of turtle armor had insane defense.

Furthermore, it produced a very famous Essence Energy Skill, Turtle Breath. It was available from the Mortal stage to the Epic stage. After cultivating Turtle Breath, one could temporarily stop their heartbeat and breathing. The higher the level, the longer Turtle Breath could last. It was a necessary skill for faking death.

Liu Yun had faked his death before. He had used Turtle Breath, and it was at the Epic stage.

Of course, the true use of Turtle Breath wasn't to feign death, but to converge one's aura. It prevented dimensional creatures, that relied on aura to determine where humans

were, from detecting humans. The effect was equivalent to invisibility.

As for the Mythical Turtle Breath, legend had it that someone had once had it drop, but no one had seen it.

It wasn’t even noon when Zhou Wen arrived at Turtle Tomb. From afar, he could see many people fighting the sea turtles on the beach. And not far away, he could see several huge reef islands. There were fewer humans on them.

The sea turtles on the beach weren’t of high levels. They were basically at the Mortal stage. Most of the people who came here to hunt sea turtles were people who hadn’t cultivated for long.

Zhou Wen wasn’t interested in the sea turtles here, but he continued walking slowly along the beach as he searched for the tiny palm symbol.

Before coming, An Sheng had told Zhou Wen a legend. Some people said that if the islands formed from the six turtle shells floated away one day, they would definitely head to the Sinkhole to continue fulfilling their mission. Following them might lead to the Daiyu and Yuanqiao immortal islands that had sunk into the Sinkhole.

On the beach of the turtle tomb, two men saw Zhou Wen. One of them said in puzzlement, “Why is he here?”

“The An family likely sent him to hunt that dimensional creature and help the An family obtain the rights to Fiend Dust,” another man said.

These two men weren’t real men. Instead, they were Uesugi Nao and the female guard who had used Body Transformation. It wasn’t convenient for them to use their

identities to visit Sea City, so they could only use Body Transformation to change their appearances and come to Sea City incognito.

Just like Zhou Wen, they had to stay in Sea Gazing City temporarily because of the Lu family. Since they had nothing to do, they came to Turtle Tomb to take a look.

This was an open dimensional zone. Anyone could come here without any identification. They naturally didn't fancy the sea turtles on the beach. Just as they were about to head to Turtle Island, they unexpectedly saw Zhou Wen.

Uesugi Nao rolled her eyes and said to the female guard, "Let's go over and greet him."

"Why invite trouble?" The female guard was somewhat unwilling.

"He's our competitor by coming here. Isn't it more advantageous for us to find out more about our competitor? Don't worry, I have a way to obtain information from him," Uesugi Nao said as she walked towards Zhou Wen.

Although the female guard didn't agree with Uesugi Nao's actions, she still followed.

"Hello, are you Zhou Wen?" Uesugi Nao approached Zhou Wen and greeted him with a man's voice.

Zhou Wen had already sensed that someone was looking at him. He had discovered Uesugi Nao and the female guard, but he didn't recognize them. He only felt that one of them had a somewhat familiar gaze.

Seeing them come over and greet him, Zhou Wen looked at them in puzzlement and said, "I'm Zhou Wen. Who are

you?”

“You’re really Zhou Wen. That’s great. We are your fans and especially admire you. I never expected to meet you here.” Uesugi Nao pretended to be excited as she took out a notebook and pen and handed them to Zhou Wen. “Can I have your autograph?”

“No.” Zhou Wen turned around and left.

His Explosive Fiend Man had the Death List skill. By signing it, it was equivalent to giving his life to the Explosive Fiend Man. Ever since he learned of such a skill, Zhou Wen basically stopped signing autographs, much less giving autographs to strangers.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 902 - Black Iron Gold Thread Turtle

Chapter 902: Black Iron Gold Thread Turtle

Translator: CKtalon

Zhou Wen quickly left without looking back. Uesugi Nao stood there in a daze with a notebook and pen.

From Uesugi Nao's point of view, Zhou Wen's reaction was clearly unreasonable. Even if he wasn't willing to give his fans autographs, a normal person wouldn't have such an attitude.

"Forget it. Let's go," the female guard said to Uesugi Nao.

"I know the reason. Go back now. I have my ways," Uesugi Nao said to the female guard as she walked in another direction.

When she reached an empty spot, Uesugi Nao returned to her original appearance and changed back into female clothes before heading to the beach again.

Although Uesugi Nao had never liked men who treated women as accessories, she had to admit that women had a huge advantage in certain aspects.

Ordinary people might be impatient with male fans who clamored for autographs, but they would be much more patient towards female fans, especially beautiful and cute ones.

Uesugi Nao was very confident in her appearance and figure. It was much better than her transformation as Xu Ai.

1

Since I have the qualities, it's not a bad thing to occasionally use them, Uesugi Nao thought as she walked up the beach and walked towards Zhou Wen.

Zhou Wen was still strolling on the beach, his main goal to search for the tiny palm symbol. As he walked, he felt someone watching him.

He turned around and looked at the source of his gaze, but he realized that it wasn't the two men from before. Instead, it was a beautiful girl who looked less than twenty years old. There was a hint of charm in her beauty. She was a rare beauty.

Seeing Zhou Wen staring at her, Uesugi Nao revealed a charming smile. From her point of view, it was a very advantageous weapon.

Zhou Wen stared at Uesugi Nao's eyes and found them somewhat familiar. However, it was difficult to tell with just one look. He wanted to take a closer look to determine where he had seen a woman with such eyes.

Uesugi Nao thought to herself, *Indeed, men are all the same.*

With this in mind, Uesugi Nao walked towards Zhou Wen. Her beautiful hair fluttered under the sea breeze as her thin clothes clung tightly to her body, revealing her exquisite figure.

Such a style was comparable to a model on the runway. It was more natural and delightful, something that models lacked.

“My name is Hai’er. I seem to have seen you somewhere before. Can you tell me your name?” Uesugi Nao came in front of Zhou Wen, tidied her hair, and said to him with a smile.

“You remembered wrongly. I don’t know you.” Zhou Wen thought carefully and indeed, he didn’t know this woman. With that said, he turned around and left.

1

Uesugi Nao was slightly taken aback. Seeing that Zhou Wen had already turned around and left, she calmed herself down and chased after him. She stood in front of him and said, “It’s fine if you don’t know me. I think you’re very special. Can we get to know each other?”

“No, please make way.” Zhou Wen brushed Uesugi Nao’s hand aside and glanced at the reef behind her before walking to the other side.

Uesugi Nao stood there in a daze for quite some time. By the time she snapped to her senses, Zhou Wen had already walked far away.

Is this guy… a woman who used Body Transformation? Uesugi Nao thought with a strange expression.

Zhou Wen circled the beach but didn’t find the tiny palm symbol. Instead, he killed a few sea turtles that crawled out of the sea.

Unfortunately, they were all at the Mortal stage, so nothing dropped.

Zhou Wen summoned the Great Might Vajra Bull and rode it towards the islands in the sea. The six islands in Turtle Tomb could only be seen when the tide receded.

According to the information Zhou Wen had obtained, there would occasionally be Mythical sea turtles on the six turtle shell islands, but there were very few of them. Instead, there were quite a number of Legendary and Epic sea turtles.

Zhou Wen wasn’t interested in ordinary sea turtles. He mainly wanted to head to the island to see if there was a tiny palm symbol.

There were also people hunting sea turtles on Turtle Shell Island. These people were clearly much stronger. Most of them were at the Legendary stage, and occasionally, Epic existences could be seen.

Zhou Wen wasn’t interested in them. He circled the first Turtle Shell Island and didn’t find the tiny palm symbol. Just as he was about to leave, he suddenly saw a behemoth rush out from the seawater beside him.

It was a sea turtle that was the size of an elephant. The turtle shell looked about the same as the typical iron-armored turtle. It was black, but it looked darker.

Furthermore, the patterns on the turtle’s back were golden. They were like golden threads that outlined a strange pattern on the turtle shell.

“Mythical Black Iron Gold Thread Turtle!” Not far away, someone exclaimed.

His shout attracted the attention of the people nearby. Some people retreated the moment they saw the Black Iron Gold Thread Turtle, while others rushed over.

Those who dared to rush over were basically at the Epic stage.

As the Black Iron Gold Thread Turtle wasn’t fast, Epic creatures had the chance to dodge. Furthermore, with several Epic entities attacking from different directions, it made it difficult for the Black Iron Gold Thread Turtle to deal any damage.

The sea turtles in Turtle Tomb had very strong defenses, but their combat strength wasn’t very strong. This was probably the only Mythical creature that could be bullied by a few Epic entities.

However, the Epic humans’ offensive strength was useless against the Black Iron Gold Thread Tortoise. All sorts of Essence Energy Skills and Companion Beasts’ abilities struck it, producing metallic clangs, but they hardly left a mark.

Zhou Wen watched from the side for a while but didn’t immediately attack the Black Iron Gold Thread Turtle.

Uesugi Nao also went to the island. When she saw the Black Iron Gold Thread Turtle, she had an idea. *I can use the excuse of competing with Zhou Wen for the Black Iron Gold Thread Turtle to test his strength.*

After seeing Zhou Wen’s sword technique, Uesugi Nao didn’t dare underestimate him despite believing that she had the Great Skyfiend Guardian that made her better than Zhou Wen.

Uesugi Nao felt that Zhou Wen might be a key opponent if she wanted to obtain the Lu family’s Fiend Dust rights. Furthermore, Zhou Wen represented the An family. It would

be best if she could think of a way to get Zhou Wen to quit before the dimensional creature hunting began.

I might not be as good as you in sword arts, but you might not be able to beat me in actual combat. As Uesugi Nao thought about it, she approached the Black Iron Gold Thread Turtle.

The Epic humans clearly didn’t have a good way to deal with the Black Iron Gold Thread Tortoise. Their attacks couldn’t penetrate its defense.

After watching for a while, Zhou Wen gained a general understanding of the Black Iron Gold Thread Turtle. This Mythical creature basically had all its talent in defense. It was very weak in other aspects. As long as he could break through its defense, it would be very easy to kill it.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 903 - Fighting Uesugi Nao

Chapter 903: Fighting Uesugi Nao

Zhou Wen summoned the Golden Battle God Halberd that had recently dropped and stabbed at the Black Iron Gold Thread Turtle's head.

The Black Iron Gold Thread Turtle's turtle shell was the hardest. Comparatively speaking, its extended limbs and head didn't have such strong defense. The Golden Battle God Halberd also had Unstoppable. With this strike, it was very likely that it could pierce through its neck.

However, just as the Golden Battle God Halberd was about to pierce the Black Iron Gold Thread Turtle's neck, a blade beam suddenly slashed out and struck the Golden Battle God Halberd.

The blade beam was fast and ruthless. It actually sent the Golden Battle God Halberd in Zhou Wen's hand to the side, preventing him from stabbing the Black Iron Gold Thread Turtle.

Zhou Wen turned his head and saw a beautiful girl from where the blade beam flew over. She held a strangely-shaped narrow blade in her hand. Zhou Wen remembered that Sei Gasakai had used a similar blade. However, they also called such a blade a sword.

"Why did you attack me?" Zhou Wen asked with a frown when he saw that the girl was the girl who had spoken to him previously. She seemed to be named Hai'er.

Uesugi Nao held the Kusanagi-no-Tsurugi and said, “It’s rare to chance upon a Black Iron Gold Thread Turtle. Of course, it belongs to whoever has the ability. Is that wrong?”

The Kusanagi-no-Tsurugi was also known as the Ame-no-Murakumo-no-Tsurugi. It was formed by Orochi.

“That’s true.” As Zhou Wen spoke, he suddenly thrust the Golden Battle God Halberd at Uesugi Nao.

Uesugi Nao was delighted as she didn’t hesitate to welcome him with her Kusanagi-no-Tsurugi. She thought to herself, Zhou Wen, I’ll let you know how powerful I am today.

Just as the Kusanagi-no-Tsurugi was about to collide with the Golden Battle God Halberd, she suddenly heard a bell ring. Uesugi Nao immediately felt her head buzz as she felt dizzy for a moment.

Zhou Wen wasn’t in the mood to deal with Uesugi Nao. The Golden Battle God Halberd stabbed into the head of the Black Iron Gold Thread Turtle and killed it. Then, it lifted its massive body and threw it into the air.

The Golden Divine Light at the tip of the Golden Battle God Halberd quickly streaked across the turtle’s abdomen, slicing it open. A dimensional crystal dropped and Zhou Wen grabbed it. It was an Essence Energy Skill Crystal.

By the time Uesugi Nao recovered from her dizziness, the Black Iron Gold Thread Turtle’s corpse had landed on the ground. As for the people who had been attacking the Black Gold Thread Turtle, they had also recovered from their dizziness and were dumbfounded.

A young-looking youth had actually killed the Black Iron Gold Thread Turtle in the blink of an eye. It was truly

shocking.

Uesugi Nao was alarmed and furious. She was alarmed because if Zhou Wen had attacked her while she was dizzy, he might not have been able to kill her, but he would have made her suffer quite a bit. She was furious because Zhou Wen didn’t seem to treat her as an opponent at all. He had only used a feint to kill the Black Iron Gold Thread Turtle. He had been fooling her from the beginning.

“Leave the dimensional crystal behind.” Uesugi Nao didn’t dare underestimate Zhou Wen again. She slashed at Zhou Wen with the Kusanagi-no-Tsurugi at lightning speed as the blade beam tore out like a wheel.

The Great Might Vajra Bull beneath Zhou Wen rang the bell again. Almost at the same time, the Golden Battle God Halberd in Zhou Wen’s hand stabbed at Uesugi Nao’s heart.

Hum!

Uesugi Nao was once again stunned, but the moment the Golden Battle God Halberd stabbed her chest, her body vanished. What the Golden Battle God Halberd stabbed was only her robe.

Having escaped her clothes, Uesugi Nao was wrapped in white clothes. Only her eyes were exposed, making her look like she was wearing an ancient ninja costume.

Uesugi Nao held the blade with both hands and slashed down with astonishing speed. The blade beam descended like a wheel.

Clang!

Zhou Wen brandished the Golden Battle God Halberd and blocked Uesugi Nao’s blade beam and blade. Uesugi Nao’s blade left a mark on the Golden Battle God Halberd.

What a sharp blade. It’s probably even sharper than the Golden Overlord Sword. Zhou Wen was somewhat interested in the blade in Uesugi Nao’s hand, but he didn’t know that it was transformed from Orochi.

Uesugi Nao landed on the ground as white fog emitted from her body. She suddenly vanished and when she appeared again, she was already behind Zhou Wen. She slashed down again.

The Great Might Vajra Bull’s cooldown was up. It rang the bell again.

Uesugi Nao had already predicted the bell’s ringing. At the same time the bell rang, her body suddenly exploded, turning into a mist that vanished, preventing Zhou Wen from attacking her while she was dizzy.

By the time she appeared again, she had already appeared beside Zhou Wen. She slashed at the Great Might Vajra Bull’s leg with her Kusanagi-no-Tsurugi.

Zhou Wen brandished his halberd to block Uesugi Nao’s blade. Uesugi Nao did a roll and disappeared into the sand.

Suddenly, the Kusanagi-no-Tsurugi stabbed out of the sand, straight at the Great Might Vajra Bull’s abdomen.

An escape technique? It’s a little similar, but it’s also a little different. Zhou Wen put away the Great Might Vajra Bull and leaped into the air with Ya’er in his arms. He dodged Uesugi Nao’s blade beam and retracted the Golden Battle God Halberd.

The Golden Battle God Halberd blocked twice, but it had two blade marks left on it. If it was slashed a few more times, it would probably have snapped.

Uesugi Nao swept her blade upwards. The blade beams were so fast that they seemed to have no shadows. Each strike was faster and more ruthless.

Zhou Wen's figure was elegant. No matter how fast and ruthless Uesugi Nao's blade techniques were, no matter how sinister they were, they couldn't touch Zhou Wen's clothes.

How could a Mythical Transcendent Flying Immortal be struck so easily?

Uesugi Nao pushed her skills to the limit. She constantly changed positions and used different skills, but nothing worked.

Zhou Wen used Truth Listener to observe Uesugi Nao's every move and realized that although her skill was very similar to the Five-Element escape technique, there were still some differences.

The Five-Element escape technique was to assimilate one's body with the five elements. It required one to possess the physique of the five elements. Furthermore, her technique didn't assimilate her body with the five elements. It only enveloped the power of the five elements. Such an escape technique could be used for short distances, but it definitely couldn't be used for long-distance escaping.

Furthermore, her body was still present. She hadn't completely assimilated the five elements. Even when using the escape technique, Truth Listener could still hear her.

Once Uesugi Nao escaped into the sand again, Zhou Wen used his finger as a sword and stabbed out a sword beam. It was the first move of the Thirteen Swords of the Peach Blossom Valley’s white-robed man—Immortal Guides the Way.

Uesugi Nao was just about to rush out when she saw the sword beam land. It was too late to change positions, so she could only brandish her blade to block Zhou Wen’s sword beam.

The Kusanagi-no-Tsurugi was very sharp and it forcefully sliced open the sword aura from the middle. However, to Uesugi Nao’s horror, the sword aura that was split into two didn’t disperse. It continued to stab at her, and Uesugi Nao no longer had the strength to resist.

Boom!

A crazy power surged out from Uesugi Nao’s body like a fountain.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 904 - Punching Great Skyfiend

Chapter 904: Punching Great Skyfiend

A black armor appeared on Uesugi Nao's body. When the sword beam struck the armor, it failed to injure it. Instead, the sword beam completely shattered.

Great Skyfiend? Don't tell me my luck is that good. I just randomly encountered someone, and she's actually the contractor of Great Skyfiend? Zhou Wen immediately recognized the armor on Uesugi Nao's body. It was identical to Great Skyfiend on the cube's rankings.

Uesugi Nao was forced to use Great Skyfiend, so she no longer hid it. She leaped up from the sand. With the augmentation of the Great Skyfiend armor, Uesugi Nao had the speed of a Mythical creature. She was much faster than before.

The Kusanagi-no-Tsurugi slashed at Zhou Wen like a phantom. It was so fast that almost no one could see the trajectory of the blade. With a flash of light, the blade was about to hit Zhou Wen.

Zhou Wen's movement technique was elegant like a flying immortal. It didn't seem fast, but he dodged the blade by a hair's breadth. The Kusanagi-no-Tsurugi brushed past his ear.

Gale Slash… Multi-Slash… Samsara Slash… Boomerang Wind Slash…

Uesugi Nao used her blade techniques again with the augmentation of the Great Skyfiend armor.

However, this time, due to her Mythical Speed and Strength, her blade techniques seemed to have activated an acceleration switch. They were unbelievably fast.

Wherever the blade beam passed, terrifying ditches appeared on the surrounding reefs. The humans on the island had long fled in horror. Even the sea turtles on the island scrambled to escape into the sea.

“That’s Great Skyfiend! Great Skyfiend who’s ranked first!”

“Holy sh*t, it’s really Great Skyfiend. I think I saw an extremely beautiful girl before she transformed into Great Skyfiend. That girl should be Uesugi Nao, right?”

“I never expected the owner of Great Skyfiend to be such a beautiful girl. She’s just a little too ruthless. That blade technique is really lethal!”

“Who’s the young man fighting Great Skyfiend? How impressive. He actually managed to dodge Great Skyfiend’s attack with just his movement technique.”

“I think he has no choice but to dodge. He has no chance of retaliating.”

“I don’t think so. Look at that young man. He’s still holding a little girl in his arms. Look at how calm that little girl is. If that young man is really dodging in a sorry state, he would definitely scare the little girl in his arms. The little girl’s calmness can only mean one thing. The young man is completely composed.”

“Speaking of which, who is that young man? He’s so young. I’m afraid he’s not even twenty, right? To be able to fight Great Skyfiend without using a Companion Beast is a little terrifying.”

Zhou Wen’s name and looks were well known among the six families and some wealthy families, but there weren’t many ordinary citizens who knew him.

If someone from the six families or the bureau were here, they wouldn’t be surprised to see this scene.

Zhou Wen used the Godfiend Life Providence and Glimmer Life Soul to complement Transcendent Flying Immortal, pushing his movement technique to its limits.

Although Uesugi Nao had the augmentation of Great Skyfiend and her Speed and Strength had reached the Mythical stage, she still failed to touch Zhou Wen.

Impossible… I have Great Skyfiend augmenting me. My speed is already at the Mythical stage. He’s only at the Epic stage. There’s such a huge difference in basic Speed. How can he dodge my attacks time and time again? Uesugi Nao found it unbelievable.

She had always felt that unless it was a human who had contracted a Guardian, no one could resist her after she obtained Great Skyfiend.

However, Zhou Wen’s appearance shattered the pride in her heart. Ignoring everything else, Zhou Wen’s movement technique was actually able to match her Mythical speed. She found it unacceptable.

Uesugi Nao couldn’t accept such an outcome. She constantly stimulated Great Skyfiend’s strength, allowing

her movement techniques and blade techniques to become faster and faster. She had to defeat Zhou Wen no matter what.

However, her blade still couldn’t touch Zhou Wen. She could clearly sense that Zhou Wen wasn’t as fast as her, but her blade was always dodged by him.

As Zhou Wen dodged Uesugi Nao’s attack, he observed Great Skyfiend’s abilities.

His movement technique was indeed not as fast as Uesugi Nao’s, but at least Uesugi Nao wasn’t so fast that he couldn’t react.

Zhou Wen was best at movement techniques. Transcendent Flying Immortal had been trained by him from when it was a low-level skill. Be it technique or compatibility with Zhou Wen, they were incomparable to other skills.

Amidst the terrifying blade shadows, Zhou Wen tapped his toes and floated in the air like a fallen leaf dancing in the wind. No matter how fast Uesugi Nao’s blade techniques were, they couldn’t touch him.

Speed should be at the top of the Mythical stage, so is Strength. Although I don’t know what Great Skyfiend’s skills are, just from his augmentation of Uesugi Nao’s stats, he’s undoubtedly an extremely powerful Guardian. Zhou Wen deduced Great Skyfiend’s abilities to gain more information.

However, Zhou Wen also knew that Uesugi Nao had only used Great Skyfiend’s stats and hadn’t used his abilities. The strength of a Guardian depended on their abilities.

Zhou Wen kept waiting to see what abilities Great Skyfiend had. What were his Life Providence, Life Soul, Wheel of

Destiny, and skills?

However, Uesugi Nao never used Great Skyfiend's abilities. She only wanted to use her blade techniques to defeat Zhou Wen.

From the looks of it, I have to give her some pressure so that she can use Great Skyfiend's powers. With a thought, Zhou Wen watched as Uesugi Nao slashed out again. This time, he didn't dodge.

A roar alarmed the world as Tyrant Behemoth descended out of nowhere and transformed into a boxing glove that appeared in Zhou Wen's hand. Zhou Wen brandished his fist to meet Uesugi Nao's Kusanagi-no-Tsurugi.

Tyrant Behemoth! Uesugi Nao's pupils constricted. She never expected Zhou Wen to be Tyrant Behemoth's owner.

In the last cube ranking battle, Orochi had been defeated by Tyrant Behemoth and nearly devoured by it.

It wasn't just Uesugi Nao. Everyone watching the battle on the beach also saw the terrifying light and roar before Tyrant Behemoth condensed into a boxing glove.

However, before they could react, Zhou Wen's fist had already struck Uesugi Nao's blade.

Boom!

With Tyrant Behemoth's Absolute Strength augmentation, the power of Zhou Wen's punch was extremely terrifying at the Mythical stage.

The extremely sharp Kusanagi-no-Tsurugi slammed into Tyrant Behemoth's boxing glove. Not only did it fail to slice

open the boxing glove, but it was also sent flying by the shockwave. Uesugi Nao also retreated a few steps from the terrifying force. The reef beneath her feet shattered as shocking cracks appeared.

“Holy sh*t, so it’s Tyrant Behemoth’s owner. It’s no wonder he’s so strong.”

“So Tyrant Behemoth’s owner is from our East District. He’s so young!”

“Haha, I knew it. Great Skyfiend isn’t anything impressive. It’s just that the previous top four didn’t participate in the battle. Otherwise, how could she have arrogantly taken first place? The people overseas are this and nothing more.”

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 905 - Won't Do It a Third Time

Chapter 905: Won’t Do It a Third Time

Uesugi Nao stared intently at Zhou Wen as both new and old grudges surged in her heart. She extended her hand and beckoned for the Kusanagi-no-Tsurugi that had flown out to rush forward to fight Zhou Wen again.

Suddenly!

A strange bird-like cry sounded from afar. When Uesugi Nao heard the sound, she glared hatefully at Zhou Wen. White mist exploded from her body before she vanished.

“What Great Skyfiend? That’s all? She was sent running with one punch. She even said on the cube that she wanted to kill Tyrant Behemoth to avenge her humiliation. Is she sure she’s not trying to become a joke?”

“Tyrant Behemoth is still the best. Tyrant Behemoth’s owner is also powerful.”

“Does anyone know who that young man is? Is he from the six families?”

“No… He’s not from the six families…” At that moment, a middle-aged man held back his excitement and muttered to himself.

On his shoulder was a high-speed camera. He had already taken a video of Zhou Wen’s battle with Uesugi Nao.

He was a reporter. He had originally come to Turtle Island to try his luck and see if he could encounter the break-out creature that had recently wreaked havoc nearby. To his surprise, he happened to capture this battle.

As a news reporter, he was rather well-informed and happened to know Zhou Wen. After all, many people knew that Zhou Wen was Wang Mingyuan's disciple. He only knew about Zhou Wen because of this matter.

He originally wanted to interview Zhou Wen, but after Uesugi Nao escaped, Zhou Wen quickly vanished.

The reporter had no choice but to rush back. After getting his colleagues to process the footage, he quickly wrote the news article and posted it along with the footage.

Ever since Great Skyfiend took first place on the rankings, its ranking had been unmoved, but not many people had seen her fight.

When this video was released, it quickly caused a huge commotion. It wasn't just the average person. Even the six families wanted to study Great Skyfiend's abilities. This video became precious information for studying Great Skyfiend.

The ordinary citizens didn't care about Great Skyfiend. They only cared about two things.

Zhou Wen was Tyrant Behemoth's master, and Great Skyfiend was sent flying by Zhou Wen's Tyrant Behemoth punch.

"Tyrant Behemoth is really too powerful. Unfortunately, in the last ranking battle, Tyrant Behemoth didn't have the

chance to challenge Tai Sui. Otherwise, Tyrant Behemoth might have been first."

"I thought Great Skyfiend was something impressive, but it turns out he's nothing much. He couldn't even defeat Tyrant Behemoth, who was ranked fourth. If he were to encounter the first Tai Sui, wouldn't he have no chance of escaping?"

"Those fellows overseas always think that they are very strong. From the looks of it, they are really weak."

"Tyrant Behemoth's owner seems to be Zhou Wen. I remember that he's Wang Mingyuan's student."

"Wang Mingyuan is Wang Mingyuan, and Zhou Wen is Zhou Wen. It's completely different. I heard that Zhou Wen is from Luoyang's An family."

"I'm just afraid that he will be like Wang Mingyuan. When that happens, our Federation will be in an even more difficult situation."

...

Uesugi Nao nearly vomited blood when she saw these reports.

If her female guard hadn't used the emergency signal to make her retreat, she wouldn't have retreated without a fight. In the end, it was unknown which b*stard had created the video as though she had fled after being sent flying with a punch. The editing was clearly biased towards Zhou Wen and it was deliberately edited to give such an illusion.

*B*stard, don't let me know who edited this video. I'll skin him alive and pull out his bones.* Uesugi Nao was furious.

She never expected Zhou Wen to be Tyrant Behemoth's owner. That already left her depressed, but to be written in such a manner as though she was afraid of Zhou Wen and Tyrant Behemoth made her feel indignant.

"Miss, you shouldn't have used Great Skyfiend at that time. Now that Great Skyfiend has been exposed ahead of time, we are at a disadvantage," said the female guard.

"There's nothing disadvantageous about it. Great Skyfiend has the strength to kill the break-out creature. This is a fact that can never be changed," Uesugi Nao said.

The female guard said, "Although that's the case, everyone knows that you and Great Skyfiend are here. I'm afraid that the An family will suspect that you are related to the death of the break-out creature…"

Uesugi Nao naturally knew that she shouldn't have exposed Great Skyfiend. She said helplessly, "I didn't want to either. I was forced to do so back then. If I didn't use Great Skyfiend, I'm afraid I would have been heavily injured by Zhou Wen. I underestimated his strength. I never expected him to be Tyrant Behemoth's master."

The female guard pondered for a moment before saying, "Miss, you end up suffering every time you encounter Zhou Wen. Perhaps his Life Providence jinxes you. I think it's best not to have too much contact with him in the future."

Uesugi Nao said, "You're thinking too much. I won't be careless next time. I'll use Great Skyfiend's abilities with all my might. Even if he has Tyrant Behemoth, he's not my match."

The female guard still wanted to say something, but Uesugi Nao continued, "Besides, even if I avoid him, he's here for

the break-out creatures and the Fiend Dust. How can I avoid him?”

The female guard thought that it made sense, but she still exhorted Uesugi Nao. “Miss, I have a nagging feeling that this Zhou Wen is somewhat odd. He has a bad influence on you. If you encounter him again, you have to be careful.”

“Don’t worry. I definitely won’t make the same mistake a third time,” Uesugi Nao said through gritted teeth.

…

Zhou Wen originally wanted to see what abilities Great Skyfiend had, but Uesugi Nao had escaped. This left him somewhat disappointed.

Although Slaughterer had already advanced to a Perfect Body and didn’t need to kill Guardians, killing every Guardian made sense. From the perspective of humans and Earth, Guardians were undoubtedly invaders.

Unfortunately, I didn’t find the tiny palm symbol. I wonder if I’ll have the chance to visit Turtle’s Tomb again. Zhou Wen felt a little regretful.

He definitely couldn’t go to Turtle Tomb for the next few days. It was unknown if he could return after killing the break-out creature.

Thankfully, it’s not completely fruitless. Zhou Wen took out the Black Iron Gold Thread Turtle’s dimensional crystal and used his phone to take a picture.

Black Iron Gold Thread Turtle Crystal: Requires 41 Constitution, 41 Essence Energy, Essence Energy-type Essence Energy Art.

It’s the stats requirement of Constitution and Essence Energy again. This isn’t difficult. After I have 41 Constitution, I can absorb it. It probably won’t take long. Zhou Wen stored the crystal in the Chaos Bead.

He found a hotel nearby and when the hotel owner, who was reading the news on his phone, saw Zhou Wen, he looked at the photo on the news before looking at him. He immediately pointed at him in surprise and shouted, “You’re Zhou Wen!”

Zhou Wen was slightly taken aback as he looked at the news on his phone. He realized that he had become famous because of his battle with Great Skyfiend.

The boss warmly welcomed Zhou Wen and even arranged the best room in the hotel for him.

“Boss, can you give me a discount?” Zhou Wen asked as he looked at the room prices.

“Anything will do. If you are unhappy, you can even beat me up, but no discounts,” the boss said firmly.

“Then change it to a standard room for me,” Zhou Wen said.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 906 - Sudden Challenge

Chapter 906: Sudden Challenge

In the end, the boss gave Zhou Wen a 20% discount and allowed him to stay in the VIP room. However, even with a 20% discount, it was still much more expensive than the standard room.

Zhou Wen looked around the VIP room. It was as though it had been a long time since someone had lived there. There was even dust on the television.

The boss wiped the television in embarrassment and said to Zhou Wen, “My idol, feel free to stay. Breakfast is also provided. It’s quite a sumptuous meal.”

Zhou Wen took a look and saw that the blanket was clean, so he didn’t say anything else.

After the boss left, Zhou Wen took out milk and other food from the chaos space. After heating it up for Ya’er, he got her to eat some nutritious food.

Now was the time for her to grow. She grew a little every day. It showed after some time that she was outgrowing her shoes and clothes.

It was a magical feeling to watch Ya’er grow up day by day.

He switched on his phone and read the news regarding him. The discussion on the Internet was intense, but he wasn’t the focus of discussion. Instead, it was Tyrant Behemoth.

As the reporter only managed to record the second half of the battle by the time he arrived, and it had been deliberately edited, it looked like Zhou Wen was hugging Ya’er and gracefully dodging Uesugi Nao’s attacks. Then, he summoned Tyrant Behemoth and transformed it into a boxing glove before sending Uesugi Nao flying with her blade.

Most people were amazed at Tyrant Behemoth’s strength. The East District people were glad that Tyrant Behemoth’s owner was from the East District, while the West District people claimed that Zhou Wen was only able to defeat Great Skyfiend because of the powerful Companion Beast from their district.

Tyrant Behemoth’s popularity was much higher than its master, Zhou Wen. This made Zhou Wen extremely indignant. *Do these people have any taste? If I hadn’t used it well, what’s the use of Tyrant Behemoth no matter how strong it is? If I really let it fight alone, it wouldn’t have been able to touch Uesugi Nao, alright?*

Zhou Wen had only said it in passing. He didn’t really care about it.

Just as he was about to close the window and continue grinding dungeons, he suddenly saw that the news that was playing was being interrupted.

“Good evening, viewers. I’m Reporter Yourong from the Imperial Capital TV Station. I’m now live in front of the Imperial Capital’s cube. Just a moment ago, a new creature challenged the first ranked Great Skyfiend. From the cube’s screen, we can see that we are no strangers to the Companion Beast that has challenged Great Skyfiend. It’s the Heavy-Armored Titan that once challenged Primordial

Sword Immortal in the previous ranking battle. Heavy-Armored Titan is very similar to Tyrant Behemoth. They are both Companion Beasts that focus on Strength and Constitution. Shortly after Great Skyfiend was defeated by Tyrant Behemoth, Heavy-Armored Titan suddenly challenged Great Skyfiend. Its goal is obvious…"

Zhou Wen was amused when he saw the news. *Some people really believed that they could defeat Great Skyfiend and Uesugi Nao with just Strength and Constitution.*

In fact, during Zhou Wen's battle with Great Skyfiend, Uesugi Nao hadn't used Great Skyfiend's abilities. Otherwise, it wouldn't have been so easy for Tyrant Behemoth to defeat her.

I wonder if Uesugi Nao will accept the challenge. Zhou Wen decided not to switch off his phone. As he played the news on his phone, he used his mysterious phone to grind dungeons.

Just as he finished grinding the 81 pill essences on Pill Furnace Mountain, he heard the excited voice of Reporter Yourong from the phone. "Dear viewers… Dear viewers… Great Skyfiend has accepted the challenge and is entering the arena…"

Zhou Wen put down the mysterious phone and looked at the live broadcast. Indeed, he saw Uesugi Nao, who was wearing Great Skyfiend armor, slowly descend into the cube arena in the void.

This is going to be good. Perhaps I'll be able to see a portion of Great Skyfiend's abilities. Zhou Wen could tell from Uesugi Nao's aura that she was definitely in a bad mood. This spelled bad news for Heavy-Armored Titan.

The owner of Heavy-Armored Titan clearly didn’t think so. He felt that since Tyrant Behemoth could defeat Great Skyfiend, and although Heavy-Armored Titan wasn’t as strong as Tyrant Behemoth, his defense was more outstanding than Tyrant Behemoth’s.

Even if he couldn’t defeat Great Skyfiend, he could use the defense of Heavy-Armored Titan to force Great Skyfiend to use some abilities and employ other means. It would be very helpful in researching Great Skyfiend.

The moment Great Skyfiend entered the arena, Heavy-Armored Titan roared. Its heavy armor lit up as red magma-like demonic patterns appeared on its surface. With the augmentation of the demonic patterns, the already powerful defense of the Heavy-Armored Titan became even crazier.

In the previous ranking battle, the powerful Primordial Sword Immortal failed to break through its defense when the Heavy-Armored Titan used this move.

Roar! Roar! Roar!

After three consecutive roars, two halos appeared beneath the feet of Heavy-Armored Titan. A white light barrier also appeared over his body. One could roughly guess that it was a skill that augmented his body.

After doing all of this, Heavy-Armored Titan suddenly charged towards Uesugi Nao, who was levitating in midair. Its body was extremely huge, and every step it took was akin to a horizontally-moving mountain, causing the ground to quake.

Just as it was about to reach Uesugi Nao, Heavy-Armored Titan leaped up and its huge body rose into the air. It clasped its palms together as a fist and struck at Uesugi

Nao, who was floating there, with the might of a crushing mountain.

Uesugi Nao floated there without moving. She only looked coldly at the massive creature through the Great Skyfiend armor's visor.

When the Heavy-Armored Titan's fist was about to reach her, Uesugi Nao finally raised her arm.

The moment she raised her arm, demonic flames spewed out of the Great Skyfiend armor, enveloping Uesugi Nao's entire body.

Boom!

The Heavy-Armored Titan's hands struck Uesugi Nao's tiny palm, but the mountain-like strike was blocked by the tiny palm. Despite using all its strength, Heavy-Armored Titan failed to move its fist forward at all.

From the audience's perspective, the scene was even more shocking.

Uesugi Nao was as tiny as an ant in front of the Heavy-Armored Titan. The Heavy-Armored Titan that was crashing down like a mountain was blocked by an ant-like palm. The impact such a scene left on their minds was too great.

However, in the next second, an even more unbelievable scene happened.

The demonic flames on Uesugi Nao's body rose and instantly enveloped Heavy-Armored Titan's huge body. Furthermore, the demonic flames quickly entered Heavy-Armored Titan's body through the gaps in the armor.

The owner of Heavy-Armored Titan clearly realized that something was amiss and wanted Heavy-Armored Titan to admit defeat before summoning it back.

However, it was too late. There was a loud bang.

Heavy-Armored Titan exploded like a watermelon above Uesugi Nao’s palm. Fragments and flesh splattered like blood-colored fireworks.

Seeing the name of Heavy-Armored Titan disappear, the entire world fell silent.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 907 - Fatal Temptation

Chapter 907: Fatal Temptation

“That can’t be real, right? Heavy-Armored Titan and Tyrant Behemoth shouldn’t be too different. How did it get instantly killed?”

“What was that? Am I seeing things?”

“Is Heavy-Armored Titan so inferior to Tyrant Behemoth?”

…

Everyone broke into a flurry of discussion. The scene of Great Skyfiend instantly killing the Heavy-Armored Titan was too shocking. Even the members of the six families did not expect that Heavy-Armored Titan, who specialized in defense, would die so quickly.

Uesugi Nao’s mood finally improved a little. She had helped Great Skyfiend redeem himself. At the same time, she had also exposed part of Great Skyfiend’s abilities.

However, there was nothing she could do about it. If she took too long to finish off Heavy-Armored Titan, the other families would think that Great Skyfiend was easy to deal with. They would constantly send Mythical creatures to test Great Skyfiend’s strength. That would be even more troublesome.

Now that she had killed Heavy-Armored Titan in one strike, anyone who wanted to test Great Skyfiend’s strength had to

consider whether they could afford to lose their Mythical creature.

Even if the number of Mythical Companion Beasts in the six families kept increasing, few people would be willing to lose their Mythical Companion Beasts.

…

What kind of power was that strike? Zhou Wen thought about the crux of Great Skyfiend's strike.

It was clearly not a simple clash of strength. Even Tyrant Behemoth's Absolute Strength couldn't blast through the Heavy-Armored Titan's armor in one strike, much less shatter it into pieces.

The power of Great Skyfiend clearly had a special effect. That was why Heavy-Armored Titan couldn't even block a single strike.

However, even if he saw the process with his own eyes, he couldn't accurately determine what kind of power it was because there were too many possibilities.

It could be the power to something akin to Life Blast. As long as he touched his opponent, he could detonate the opponent's energy.

It could also be a penetrative power that directly penetrated the heavy armor and destroyed the heavy titan's body from the inside, preventing it from putting up a resistance.

There were several possibilities that he could think of, and there were also possibilities that he couldn't think of.

However, after witnessing Great Skyfiend's attack, he definitely couldn't let the demonic flames on Uesugi Nao's body touch him when he fought her again.

…

"Although Heavy-Armored Titan isn't bad, it's still much weaker than Tyrant Behemoth. Tyrant Behemoth can defeat Great Skyfiend, but Heavy-Armored Titan can't even withstand one strike. The difference is too great."

"I hope Tyrant Behemoth can step forward to challenge Great Skyfiend and snatch back first place. Let those fellows overseas know how powerful we from the Federation are."

Many people hoped that Tyrant Behemoth could step forward to fight, but Zhou Wen had no intention of doing so.

He hadn't figured out Great Skyfiend's exact abilities, and Zhou Wen couldn't participate in the battle himself. Sending Tyrant Behemoth to challenge Uesugi Nao was no different from sending himself to his death.

I should quickly advance to the Mythical stage. Zhou Wen constantly absorbed Essence Energy Crystals in-game, hoping to quickly raise the Essence Energy Pill's level.

Ding! After killing Medusa in her demoness state, an Essence Energy Skill Crystal dropped.

Zhou Wen deliberately waited for Medusa to become a demoness before killing her. He had killed Medusa several times while she was in her maiden form, but nothing dropped.

As for Zhou Wen, he had seen Medusa drop two Essence Energy Skill Crystals when he was previously grinding.

One required 41 Constitution and 21 Cursed stat, while the other required 41 Essence Energy and 21 Poison stat. Zhou Wen's Essence Energy and Poison stat had already met the requirements, so he had been grinding Medusa recently in hopes of obtaining the skill crystal that needed 41 Essence Energy.

Two days ago, he had also obtained a Medusa crystal. Unfortunately, it was the type with a 41 Constitution requirement. Zhou Wen wasn't able to absorb it, so he had to give it up during a respawn.

Give me the 41 Essence Energy one! Zhou Wen prayed inwardly as he picked it up and was immediately overjoyed. It was the skill crystal that required Essence Energy and Poison stats.

I can finally absorb a Mythical skill! Zhou Wen couldn't wait to absorb the Essence Energy Skill Crystal.

The crystal transformed into a grayish-white Essence Energy stream that entered the blood-colored avatar's body. Zhou Wen immediately felt as though his body was being pricked by needles wherever the Essence Energy stream passed.

The Essence Energy constantly circulated in Zhou Wen's body, forcefully opening up his meridians. After more than an hour, the Essence Energy formed a circulation and finally, all the Essence Energy flowed into Zhou Wen's hair.

'Absorbed Medusa Crystal. Attained Mythical Essence Energy Skill: Fatal Temptation.'

It's indeed not the Eyes of Petrification… Zhou Wen had long guessed that the Essence Energy Skill Crystal that required Constitution and Cursed was the Eyes of Petrification.

What skill is this Fatal Temptation? It has a Poison stat requirement. Don’t tell me it turns my hair into venomous snakes? Zhou Wen couldn’t help but feel uneasy when he thought of his head full of venomous snakes. Such a skill felt a little odd and difficult to accept.

He nervously looked at the introduction of Fatal Temptation and realized that it was indeed a hair skill. He was alarmed, but after carefully reading the introduction, he heaved a sigh of relief.

Legend had it that Medusa had the most beautiful long hair in the world. As a result, she became too proud and looked down on Athena, and was turned into a snake-haired demoness.

Fatal Temptation was a skill that allowed one’s hair to be tainted with poison. However, it didn’t turn into venomous snakes. If anyone touched the poisonous hair, they would be poisoned.

Zhou Wen tried using the Fatal Temptation skill. With a move of his Essence Energy, Zhou Wen’s hair immediately grew crazily and in a blink of an eye, it reached the ground.

However, Zhou Wen knew that it wasn’t real hair, but hair condensed from Essence Energy.

With a thought, Zhou Wen realized that it was extremely difficult to control the Poison Hair condensed from Essence Energy. It was unrealistic to use it as a weapon.

Could it be that I can only passively wait for others to touch my hair? Zhou Wen was somewhat depressed. Such a skill wasn’t something he needed.

However, on second thought, Zhou Wen had an idea. He pulled out a strand of Essence Energy Poison Hair and placed it in water. The Essence Energy Poison Hair immediately dissolved into the water.

Soon, many dimensional creatures in the water were poisoned to death.

So this skill can also be used as poison. In that case, it's not bad. However, I wonder how potent the poison of Fatal Temptation is. Can it poison a Mythical creature to death? Zhou Wen studied it for a long time and roughly learned how to use Fatal Temptation.

In fact, there was no need for it to be in water. Even in air, Fatal Temptation could emit poisonous fumes, just like perfume. Any creature that smelled it would be poisoned.

However, the poison wasn't as potent as Zhou Wen imagined. It was somewhat difficult to poison a Mythical creature to death unless a Mythical creature directly swallowed a large amount of Essence Energy Poison Hair.

If he could do that, Zhou Wen had a high chance of killing the Mythical creature himself. There was no need for him to go through so much trouble.

However, if this skill was used against humans, the effects would be very powerful. This was because humans were at the Epic stage at best. Just the poisonous gas emitted from the Poison Hair was enough to deal great damage to humans.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 908 - Landing on the Island

Chapter 908: Landing on the Island

However, Zhou Wen felt that this Fatal Temptation skill was a little uncomfortable. Therefore, he secretly wondered.
I *wonder if I can combine the Poison Dragon Palm and Fatal Temptation?*

Zhou Wen carefully studied the two Essence Energy Skills. Apart from using different body parts, they were very similar in other aspects.

They were all using poison in the form of Essence Energy, and they both used poison to obtain victory. It didn’t seem impossible to combine them.

It will be great if I could use the poison power of Fatal Temptation on my hands. Zhou Wen was still used to using his hand rather than his hair.

Therefore, Zhou Wen began the corresponding research and experimentation, hoping to combine the two.

The process wasn’t that easy. Although it was the same conversion of Essence Energy into poison, the circulation method between Essence Energy Skills was still very different. After studying it for a long time, Zhou Wen realized that it wasn’t impossible to fuse the two Essence Energy Arts into one. All he could do was give it a try and add some Essence Energy circulation techniques from another Essence Energy Skill.

At the appointed time, Zhou Wen arrived at the Lu family residence again. This time, the Lu family was still very warm, but they were much more polite and hospitable than the first time he had come.

The current head of the Lu family, Old Master Lu, personally came out to welcome Zhou Wen. Furthermore, from his words, he didn't treat Zhou Wen as a junior because of his age.

Zhou Wen knew that it was most likely because of his battle with Uesugi Nao that the Lu family paid special attention to him.

After entering the Lu family residence, Zhou Wen saw the others invited by the Lu family. Zhang Xiao was from the Zhang family, but Zhou Wen didn't know anyone from the Xia family.

However, the Xia family looked at Zhou Wen with a strange expression. It didn't appear like hatred, but there was no intention of getting close to him.

Zhou Wen could understand why. He had killed Xia Jiuhuang, and to the Xia family, Xia Jiuhuang was the founder of the Xia family. However, the latter had nearly destroyed the Xia family, so their attitude towards Zhou Wen was very odd.

Old Master Lu didn't say anything else. After explaining the situation of the break-out creature in detail, he led everyone to the place where the break-out creature had recently appeared.

Half a month ago, the break-out creature had frequently appeared in the vicinity of Sea Gazing City, causing a large number of casualties. There was even one time when it

charged into the city and started a massacre, causing unimaginable losses.

However, in the past half month, the break-out creature had seldom approached the coast. Most of the time, it had appeared in the shallow waters, and the number of times it appeared decreased.

The Lu family had been sending people to monitor the movement of the break-out creature. Although they didn’t dare to get too close, with the Lu family’s understanding of this area, they could still determine that the break-out creature should be residing on a nearby island.

The island wasn’t too far from Sea Gazing City, but it was different from Turtle Tomb’s six islands. It was a real island, and it wasn’t a dimensional zone.

The Lu family used a team of sea turtles to take Zhou Wen and company to the island. One by one, the Epic experts of the Lu family controlled the Epic Blackrock Turtles to rapidly swim across the sea.

Zhou Wen stood on the back of a Blackrock Turtle and looked into the distance. Zhang Xiao led the Zhang family’s white crane team and rode their own white cranes to fly in the sky. They didn’t ride the Blackrock Turtles.

In just over an hour, the island was right in front of them.

“I’ve already informed everyone of the information our Lu family knows. If you are confident, you can head to the island to hunt the break-out creature. If you aren’t confident, I hope you won’t take the risk. After all, life is precious. Also, although this island isn’t a dimensional zone, there have been break-out creatures appearing here often in the past. Therefore, there might be more than one break-out creature

on the island. Please be careful. If you discover anything amiss, please retreat over here immediately. Our Lu family will be responsible for evacuating you.” With that said, Old Master Lu turned to Zhou Wen and asked, “Zhou Wen, do you want us to help you take care of the child?”

“There’s no need. The child is afraid of strangers.” Zhou Wen saw that the others had already headed towards the island. He transformed the White Shadow of Poison into wings and flew towards the island.

Before reaching the island, Zhou Wen had already expanded Truth Listener’s monitoring range to its limits, hoping to understand the situation there.

This island wasn’t too big. It was typical of an island formed by volcanic eruption. In the middle was a volcano that occasionally emitted smoke. Although it didn’t erupt, it wasn’t a good place.

The volcano was surrounded by forests. The terrain wasn’t complicated, but the forests were dense. There were many creatures inside, so there might be problems.

Zhou Wen used Truth Listener’s ability to envelop the entire island and monitor it. However, to his surprise, he didn’t find any traces of the break-out creature on the island.

He also didn’t discover any of the other break-out creatures mentioned by the Lu family. Apart from some insects and birds, there wasn’t a single dimensional creature on the island.

When Zhou Wen reached the coast, he stopped and scanned the entire island again. The outcome was the same. He didn’t discover any dimensional creatures.

Did the Lu family make a mistake, or did that break-out creature happen to leave? Zhou Wen frowned in thought.

Just as Zhou Wen was pondering over it, someone walked over. The person was a freelance hunter. To be invited by the Lu family, he was probably very famous, but Zhou Wen didn't know him.

The person came in front of Zhou Wen and introduced himself. "My name is Bida. I was born and raised in Sea Gazing City. I'm quite famous among the local freelance hunters."

Zhou Wen sized up Bida and didn't say a word. This person's aura was very strange. He looked like he was at a Mortal stage and had a weak vital aura. However, the Lu family naturally wouldn't invite a Mortal stage human to participate in such an operation.

Bida continued, "As a native of Sea Gazing City, my understanding of this area isn't inferior to the Lu family's. I even know some information that the Lu family doesn't know. I can say with certainty that it's impossible for them to find the break-out creature on the island."

"Why?" Zhou Wen asked curiously.

"If you are willing to cooperate with me, I will tell you why. Furthermore, I can lead you to the break-out creature," Bida said.

"Since you know everything, why don't you deal with that break-out creature yourself?" Zhou Wen asked.

"If I had that ability, I wouldn't be cooperating with you." Bida paused for a moment before continuing, "If you don't

believe me, you can look for it and verify my words before working with me.”

“How do you want to cooperate?” Zhou Wen asked directly. He naturally knew that the break-out creature wasn’t on the island.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 909 - Egg

Chapter 909: Egg

Translator: CKtalon

“Let’s work together to kill the break-out creature. After the matter is done, the benefits given by the Lu family will belong to you. If the break-out creature drops anything, it will belong to me. If nothing drops, I’ll just blame it on my bad luck,” Bida said.

“From the looks of it, there’s no way we can cooperate.” Zhou Wen was mainly here for the Companion Egg that might drop. Helping An Sheng was only in passing, so it was naturally impossible for him to agree to such conditions.

Bida couldn’t help but be stunned. “Aren’t you satisfied with the Lu family’s Fiend Dust ores and priority purchase rights?”

Zhou Wen didn’t explain as he constantly scanned the island with Truth Listener. Apart from Zhou Wen, the Zhang and Xia families and the free hunters were also using their own methods to search for the break-out creature.

Unfortunately, they came up empty-handed like Zhou Wen. Some people began suspecting that the break-out creature wasn’t on the island.

Zhou Wen thought for a moment and carried Ya’er towards the volcanic crater. If the break-out creature was really on this island, it could only be inside the volcano.

“Zhou Wen, are you really not considering it? The chances of a break-out creature dropping a Companion Egg are very low…” Bida tried persuading Zhou Wen.

“Since the chances of a Companion Egg dropping are very low, why are you trying your luck?” Zhou Wen asked casually.

“I don’t have the ability to kill the break-out creature, so I can only try my luck,” Bida said.

“Then there’s no other way. I also want to try my luck.” As the two of them spoke, they approached the volcanic crater. Many people had already gathered at the volcanic crater. Zhang Xiao and the Xia family were also here.

From the looks of it, their judgment was the same as Zhou Wen’s. They believed that the break-out creature was hidden in the volcano.

“Don’t tell me you think the break-out creature is inside the volcano like them?” Bida whispered to Zhou Wen, “No offense, but now that they believe that the break-out creature is inside the volcano, it’s the best opportunity for us to kill it. If we waste too much time, I’m afraid something unexpected will happen again.”

“I can’t agree to your conditions.” Zhou Wen stopped some distance away from the volcano.

The Zhang and Xia families had already used fire-elemental Companion Beasts to enter the volcano to search. Zhou Wen used Truth Listener to scan the volcano, but he didn’t find any traces of the break-out creature inside. Instead, he saw plenty of magma inside the volcano. It was an active volcano that was extremely unstable.

That break-out creature should have a spatial attribute, not a fire attribute. It shouldn’t be resting in the magma, right? Zhou Wen thought.

Truth Listener had a hard time hearing the situation in the magma. Unless a Companion Beast was allowed to go down, it was very difficult to obtain results.

When Zhang Xiao and company saw Zhou Wen, they were somewhat nervous. Zhou Wen's reputation was too resounding, and they knew how powerful he was. Amongst so many people, Zhou Wen had the greatest chance.

Seeing Zhou Wen remain unmoved, Bida gritted his teeth and said to Zhou Wen, "How about this? The items dropped by the break-out creature will be yours. The Lu family's priority purchase rights towards Fiend Dust will also be yours. As for the portion of the Fiend Dust that is rewarded, I'll only take 30%. How about that?"

"In that case, I can consider it," Zhou Wen said after some thought.

"There's no time to lose. Let's hunt the break-out creatures while they are still searching the volcano," Bida said.

"Alright, then we'll do as you say. Apart from 30% of the Fiend Dust, everything else will belong to me. Do you have any objections?" Zhou Wen asked Bida.

"It can't be helped. I don't have the ability to kill that dimensional creature. I'll just write it off as me selling information," Bida said helplessly as he spread out his hands.

Zhou Wen nodded and left the volcano with Bida.

After Bida led Zhou Wen away from the volcano, they passed through the forest and arrived at the shore on the other end of the island.

Bida walked along the coast for a while before stopping at a spot. He pointed at the coast below and said, “There’s a limestone cave below. We have to pass through the seawater. How’s your swimming? What about this child?”

“I’m from inland. I’m not good at swimming. Does that break-out creature live in water?” Zhou Wen asked.

“Not really. However, the karst cave has a long stretch underwater. If your swimming ability is good, it won’t be difficult to pass through. If you don’t know how to swim, you can only hold your breath and walk over,” Bida said.

“Then there’s no problem. Let’s go.” Zhou Wen carried Ya’er and walked towards the sea.

Bida got into the water first as Zhou Wen used the Black Tortoise’s Seven Mansion’s Essence Energy Skill. After entering the water, the seawater was isolated a foot away, preventing it from touching Zhou Wen’s body.

Zhou Wen carried Ya’er and sank to the bottom of the sea. Indeed, he saw a black cave below. Bida had already swam inside.

Zhou Wen walked along the bottom of the cave and followed behind Bida.

Bida was good at swimming, but Zhou Wen walked too slowly. All he could do was control his speed and lead Zhou Wen into the karst cave.

The underwater world was extremely magical, especially in the karst cave. There were all kinds of creatures and fish.

The Black Tortoise’s protective Essence Energy Skill had a certain ability to repel water. Ya’er curiously sized up the

schools of fish. When she saw the fish approach, she extended her hand out of the Black Tortoise’s barrier, but she wasn’t stopped by it.

1

Although the twenty-eight Lunar Mansions’ barrier wasn’t of a high level, it was somewhat different from ordinary Essence Energy barriers.

The biggest difference was that it could be controlled freely. Typical Essence Energy barriers forcefully formed Essence Energy barriers, but the barrier formed by the twenty-eight Lunar Mansions’ Essence Energy Skills was different. It could be produced as he wished. Furthermore, it wasn’t just a simple barrier, but a liquid that enveloped his entire body.

The barriers of different Lunar Mansions had different attributes. For example, the Black Tortoise had the water attribute, the Vermillion Bird had the fire attribute, the Azure Dragon had the wood attribute, and the White Tiger had the metal attribute.

Now, Zhou Wen was still lacking an Essence Energy Skill. Without gathering the twenty-eight Lunar Mansion Skills, he didn’t know if it would have any special abilities in the future.

The underwater karst cave was winding and strange. As they didn’t travel in a straight line, they often had to pass through narrow gaps. Furthermore, Zhou Wen wasn’t walking fast. After more than half an hour, the two of them passed through the underwater karst cave and emerged from the water.

Outside the water surface was still a karst cave, but this karst cave was somewhat different from before. The karst

cave here was like a crystal mine, filled with green crystals.

Zhou Wen quickly discovered that there was an egg half the height of a person in a cave surrounded by crystals.

“Don’t tell me it’s the egg of that break-out creature?” Zhou Wen looked at the egg in surprise.

“I think it’s highly likely. Your luck is really good. I never expected that break-out creature to have an egg. This is a Mythical egg. Although it’s not a Companion Egg and can’t be incubated as a Companion Beast, such a dimensional creature can be easily tamed from a young age,” Bida said with envy.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 910 - Blue Sky Crystal Beast

Chapter 910: Blue Sky Crystal Beast

Zhou Wen looked around and didn’t find the break-out creature. There was only one egg in the crystal cave.

“How regretful. If I had known, I would have come alone to take the egg for myself. The value of this Mythical egg far exceeds the Fiend Dust,” Bida said regretfully.

Zhou Wen didn’t say a word as he walked towards the egg. As the dimensional creature inside hadn’t been born, it wasn’t dangerous.

He walked to the crystalline egg and reached out to lift it up.

This egg was much heavier than a rock. Although it wasn’t big, its weight was a little terrifying. If Zhou Wen wasn’t strong enough, he probably wouldn’t be able to lift it with one hand.

At the instant Zhou Wen touched the egg, he suddenly saw a spatial ripple appear beside him. It was a sign of a long-distance spatial teleportation.

Then, Zhou Wen saw a dimensional creature that resembled a Qilin rush out of the spatial ripples. Its glass-like body shimmered with resplendent light as it roared and pounced at Zhou Wen, its claws having the power to tear through the void. Before it reached Zhou Wen, the void in front of him had already cracked.

Zhou Wen’s heart palpitated as he stuffed the egg into the Chaos Bead. At the same time, he quickly dodged the break-out creature’s attack.

Almost at the same time, Zhou Wen summoned Tyrant Behemoth and blocked the break-out creature that continued charging at him.

Boom!

Tyrant Behemoth collided with the break-out creature’s force, producing a terrifying force that blasted the crystal cave apart. Immediately, large amounts of seawater poured down from above. This cave was actually underwater.

As for the people on the island, they suddenly heard a thunderclap-like rumble. Then, they saw an explosion in the seawater not far from the island. The water pillar rose dozens of meters and they immediately knew that something had happened.

Just as they were observing, they saw someone rush out of the water. First, it was Zhou Wen who was hugging Ya’er, followed by Tyrant Behemoth and the break-out creature.

The break-out creature pounced at Zhou Wen crazily. Tyrant Behemoth immediately brandished its fist to stop it, but before Tyrant Behemoth’s strength touched the break-out creature, it suddenly vanished and appeared above Zhou Wen’s head. Its sharp claws were about to touch Zhou Wen’s scalp.

Zhou Wen instantly vanished, causing the break-out creature’s attack to miss.

Tyrant Behemoth chased after the break-out creature, but unfortunately, before it could catch up to it, the break-out

creature had already teleported away and caught up to Zhou Wen who had just appeared from his teleportation.

If it wasn't for Zhou Wen's excellent movement techniques and fast reflexes, he would have been torn into two the moment he appeared again.

Zhou Wen was wearing Dragon Scale Armor as he grabbed the middle of the Golden Battle God Halberd with one hand, blocking the terrifying claw.

Crack!

The Golden Battle God Halberd was sliced into several pieces by the claw. Although Zhou Wen took the opportunity to dodge the strike, it was hopeless for the Golden Battle God Halberd.

It wasn't easy for another Golden Battle God Halberd to drop, but it's gone just like that. Zhou Wen felt his heart ache. In the past, he had disparaged the fact that the Golden Battle God Halberd dropped way too often, but now, he realized that it wasn't enough.

The terrifying offensive strength of the break-out creature left Zhou Wen alarmed. If he wasn't wrong, this fellow was likely proficient in spatial slicing skills. Typical Mythical weapons found it difficult to withstand spatial slicing. Otherwise, the Golden Battle God Halberd wouldn't have been destroyed so easily.

I have to think of a way to get a weapon that's indestructible in the future. Otherwise, there's no way to guarantee that the weapon won't be destroyed when facing some terrifying skills, Zhou Wen thought.

Zhou Wen dodged a few more attacks and didn’t dare clash head-on with the break-out creature.

“Zhou Wen, if you can’t do it, move aside.” Zhang Xiao had already led the White Crane team over.

“That’s what I was thinking. I’ll leave this fellow to you.” Zhou Wen’s figure flashed as he rushed to the back of the White Crane team.

Under Zhang Xiao’s command, the many Zhang family members on the white cranes struck out spirit talismans at the same time. There were many of them, instantly enveloping a large area of the sky and the break-out creature was caught in the middle.

Mysterious rays of light emitted from the spirit talismans. The rays intertwined and turned into a spirit energy net that trapped the break-out creature.

The break-out creature charged at the spirit energy net, but it failed to tear it apart. Instead, the spirit talismans stuck to its body, and the spirit energy net also bound its body.

When the break-out creature teleported, it couldn’t escape the spirit energy net. It could only teleport within the confines of the spirit energy net; it was ultimately trapped within when it appeared again.

Under Zhang Xiao’s lead, the members of the White Crane team circulated their Essence Energy Arts, causing the spiritual light on the spirit talismans to become stronger and stronger. The break-out creature seemed to be in extreme pain as it roared and attempted to tear open the spirit energy net, but to no avail.

The spirit energy net didn’t look like a real net. Instead, it appeared on the break-out creature like a tattoo. No matter how the break-out creature struggled, it was unable to escape.

“The Zhang family sure is impressive. That Essence Energy Art can actually combine different people’s Essence Energy Skills into one. It’s rather magical.” Zhou Wen felt like his horizons had been broadened. He had never seen such an Essence Energy Art or Essence Energy Skill before.

Zhang Xiao said coldly, “Don’t be ridiculous. How can you know everything of the Zhang family’s heritage?”

Zhou Wen didn’t say a word as he watched the Zhang family fight the break-out creature.

The Xia family and the other freelance hunters came over as well. However, now that the Zhang family was fighting the break-out creature, it wasn’t appropriate for them to interfere.

Offending the Zhang family for a break-out creature and Fiend Dust was not worth it to most people.

However, not everyone had the same mindset. If the Zhang family couldn’t deal with the break-out creature and even ended up with an internecine outcome, they would be able to scoop up the benefits.

While everyone was watching the battle, someone arrived at the volcanic crater. He lowered his head and looked inside before carefully climbing down.

This person quickly arrived at the magma pool inside the volcano. It was none other than Bida, who had led Zhou Wen to seek out the break-out creature.

“Those idiots, let them risk their lives. Without them holding back the Blue Sky Crystal Beast, I won’t be able to obtain what’s down there.” Bida looked at the magma and summoned a Companion Beast. It was a Black Iron Gold Thread Turtle.

The Black Iron Gold Thread Turtle transformed into a full-body armor that enveloped Bida completely. Not a single part of him was exposed. Then, he walked towards the magma pool, looking like he wanted to dive into it.

“According to our agreement, everything except 30% of the Fiend Dust will belong to me. Don’t tell me you want to secretly take some treasure behind my back?” Just as Bida stepped into the magma pool, he suddenly heard a voice. His body trembled as he turned his head in surprise. Indeed, he saw Zhou Wen standing not far behind him.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 911 - Balrog

Chapter 911: Balrog

“Ahem, what are you doing here?” Bida retracted his foot and looked at Zhou Wen gloomily.

“We are partners. Of course I have to follow you,” Zhou Wen said with a smile.

He hadn’t really been following Bida all this time. However, Zhou Wen had left Primordial Spore here as his informant when he first came to the volcanic crater. If it discovered anything here, he would be first to know.

To his surprise, he realized that Bida had sneakily come here. Zhou Wen felt that this fellow was somewhat odd from the beginning, so he used Truth Listener to listen carefully. He roughly knew what was happening, so he stopped him before he went down. He wanted to figure out what was beneath the magma.

“Didn’t I already help you find that break-out creature? Our cooperation is over. Why are you looking for me instead of killing it?” Bida said.

“You can’t say that. You used me to lure the break-out creature and people away. This means that we are still cooperating. I should have a share of the treasure here, right?” Zhou Wen said slowly.

Bida knew that it was impossible to shirk Zhou Wen off again. He gritted his teeth and said, “Alright, so be it. We’ll

split the items below equally, but you have to go down with me and bring the items up.”

With that said, Bida wanted to walk into the magma.

“Wait. Tell me what’s down there first.” Zhou Wen naturally didn’t believe Bida’s words. He extended his Bamboo Blade and stopped him.

Bida suddenly threw a punch and struck the Bamboo Blade’s scabbard, causing it to tilt to the side before plunging into the magma.

Zhou Wen looked at the magma below and summoned the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General to follow Bida, but he didn’t go down himself.

After the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General entered the magma, it immediately became excited. The purple flames in its body ignited as it ran rapidly through the magma, chasing after Bida.

“This fellow is really difficult to deal with…” Bida was somewhat depressed when he saw that the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General was not afraid of the high-temperature magma.

It wasn’t easy for him to have a Black Iron Gold Thread Turtle Armor drop, allowing him to enter the magma layer. Yet, just any random Companion Beast of Zhou Wen’s could achieve the same effect, leaving Bida displeased.

Thankfully, Bida was very fast in the magma. The Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General was momentarily unable to catch up to him.

The deeper into the magma, the hotter it became. After a few hundred meters, the bottom suddenly became empty. After the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General rushed down, it realized that it was in magma. There was magma all around it without any support, but there was an invisible force that blocked out the surrounding magma. In the middle of the space, there was a black cocoon with magma patterns.

Through the thoughts transmitted by the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General, Zhou Wen knew the situation there. His expression immediately changed. *A Guardian cocoon. There's a Guardian here? In that case, that break-out creature is actually protecting the Guardian cocoon*.

I thought there was something good, but it's actually a Guardian. Zhou Wen found it meaningless. He no longer needed a Guardian to advance his Life Soul, nor did he need the blood of a Guardian. Guardians were no longer of much use to him. At most, they were meant for killing.

Bida quickly rushed towards the Guardian cocoon. It looked like he was planning on trying to contract the Guardian here.

Zhou Wen made the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General halt and didn't stop him from making the contract. Guardians would appear sooner or later anyway. Killing a Guardian without a contract was about the same difficulty as a contracted Guardian. It might even be easier to kill a Guardian after a contract, so there was no need to stop him.

Bida rushed to the Guardian cocoon and dripped his blood on it. Soon, the black-red Guardian cocoon absorbed Bida's blood. Then, crimson magma cracks appeared on the cocoon. As the cracks spread, a fiend formed from magma rushed out.

“My name is Balrog. From today onwards, I’ll fight with you and pledge my life to follow you.” The magma on Balrog’s body splattered as he pressed a large hand on Bida’s head.

Balrog’s body transformed into magma that swept towards Bida’s body. Layer after layer of magma wrapped around Bida’s body, quickly turning into a magma armor. The terrifying fire-elemental power also filled Bida’s body.

Zhou Wen had already unsummoned the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General and left the volcano.

Boom!

Not long after Zhou Wen came out of the volcano, he heard a terrifying rumbling sound coming from the volcano. Then, he saw a scarlet pillar of fire rush into the sky with plumes of black smoke. The volcano had erupted.

Zhang Xiao and company, who were fighting the Blue Sky Crystal Beast, also noticed the situation on the volcano’s side. They didn’t know what had happened or why the volcano had suddenly erupted.

When Bida rushed out wearing Balrog armor, everyone’s hearts skipped a beat.

Greed was the original motivation for humans. Clearly, Bida was also a greedy person. After obtaining Balrog, Bida rushed out with the eruption of the volcano and charged straight at the Blue Sky Crystal Beast. Clearly, he wanted to snatch it.

The White Crane team members were all fighting the Blue Sky Crystal Beast with all their might, so they didn’t have the capacity to deal with Bida. Bida’s body carried magma-like flames that swept towards the Blue Sky Crystal Beast.

The Blue Sky Crystal Beast was trapped by the spirit energy net. It failed to dodge the terrifying flames even after teleporting as its entire body was ignited.

Even the Zhang family’s spirit talismans and spirit energy net were consumed by the flames.

The Blue Sky Crystal Beast lost the restriction of the spirit energy net and constantly teleported. It charged into the sea, hoping to use the seawater to extinguish the flames on its body.

However, after the Blue Sky Crystal Beast entered the sea, the flames on its body didn’t extinguish. It continued burning its body rapidly.

Bida had already rushed into the sea like a fire dragon, chasing after the Blue Sky Crystal Beast.

Zhang Xiao was peeved and furious. They had done so much, but they ended up benefiting another. However, the White Crane team wasn’t good at water battles. Looking at Bida’s might just now, they knew they probably didn’t have the chance of being the ones to take down the Blue Sky Crystal Beast today.

The Xia family and a few freelance hunters chased into the sea, but they quickly lost them. With their speed in the sea, they couldn’t catch up to the teleporting Blue Sky Crystal Beast and Bida.

Bida was also a strange person. He clearly cultivated a fire-elemental Essence Energy Art and contracted a fire-elemental Guardian, but he was surprisingly good in water.

Furthermore, Balrog didn’t seem to be afraid of water. Its flames could burn in the water without any obstruction.

The Blue Sky Crystal Beast constantly teleported. It wasn’t difficult for it to pull away from Bida, but the flames on its body couldn’t be extinguished. As the flames burned, the Blue Sky Crystal Beast’s vitality became weaker and weaker. The distance it could teleport became narrower and narrower, and eventually, Bida caught up to it.

Seeing that the Blue Sky Crystal Beast was already on the brink of collapse, Bida blasted out a magma-like fire dragon and devoured its already charred body. In a moment, its body was burned to ashes as a crystal dropped.

“Essence Energy Skill Crystal!” Bida was delighted and was about to grab the crystal.

Suddenly, a figure slid across the water. His posture was like a dragon or a wyrm, and he was even faster than Bida in the water. He snatched the Blue Sky Crystal Beast’s crystal before Bida did.

Bida was slightly taken aback. On careful look, he realized that the person who had snatched the crystal was Zhou Wen.

“Didn’t you f*cking say that you are from inland and don’t know how to swim?” Bida wished he could slap Zhou Wen in the face. The finesse in water that Zhou Wen displayed was even better than his. To think that he had pretended to be a non-swimmer in the beginning. He was just too shameless.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 912 - Slaying Balrog

Chapter 912: Slaying Balrog

Translator: CKtalon

“I originally thought that swimming was difficult, but it turns out it’s not that difficult.” Zhou Wen played with the crystal in his hand and said, “According to the agreement, this dimensional crystal should belong to me, right?”

“It’s yours. Everything is yours,” Bida said as he suddenly struck out with a hand. Terrifying flames transformed into a dragon’s roar as it charged at Zhou Wen.

Zhou Wen dodged and the flames landed at the bottom of the sea, turning it into a sea of fire.

“I’ve already given you the stuff. The partnership is over. Now I’m going to snatch them back. There’s nothing wrong with that, is there?” Bida said, looking at the huge fire at the bottom of the ocean.

“No problem.” Zhou Wen nodded and summoned the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General again.

The Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General was like a knight from hell as it stood in the deep sea fire. The purple flames in its armor also began burning.

“With both of them being fire-elemental, Balrog is supreme. You are too naive if you want to use a fire-elemental Companion Beast to fight me,” Bida said as flames spewed out from his body and swept towards Zhou Wen.

The Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General dashed forward without any hesitation. It did not dodge the flames that Bida

blasted out and charged straight into the roaring magma and flames.

Bida was somewhat surprised to discover that Balrog's flames did not burn the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General to death. A shocking flame erupted from his body once again as the magma-like Balrog armor turned golden.

"I'll show you the true power of fire." Along with Bida's voice, Balrog's body had already turned into a sun. Terrifying flames instantly evaporated a large amount of seawater. The seawater in the distance also boiled from the heat. Large amounts of seabed sand and rocks turned into magma, making the seabed look like a magma-like hell.

Bida, who was emitting heat like the sun, threw a punch at the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General, hoping to melt it into molten iron.

The Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General grabbed the two ends of the spear with both hands and blocked Bida's fist. The terrifyingly high temperature on his fist made the spear appear like a red-hot iron pole or spear.

"Melt!" The temperature on Bida's body rose again. He wanted to melt the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General directly.

Under the terrifying high temperatures, the armor on the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General's body was burned red. However, the strange thing was that it was still emitting purple flames.

Bida originally thought that he could melt the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General into molten iron as long as he exerted more strength. However, he soon realized that something was amiss.

Balrog’s high temperature did not melt the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General. Instead, the purple flames in its body became stronger.

Bam!

The Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General exerted strength with both hands and forcefully sent Bida flying. The ferocious tiger on the ground roared as it leaped forward. The burning spear carried purple flames as it stabbed towards Bida.

Bida was astonished. He used the various skills and abilities of Balrog to fight the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General.

Balrog was indeed ferocious. Its flames were different from ordinary fire-elemental powers as they had a burning effect. Upon contact, they would continuously burn until the opponent was burned to death.

Furthermore, Balrog’s flames didn’t purely rely on the flames. The most important thing was the high temperature. Even if one didn’t touch the flames, they would still be injured by the high temperature.

However, these abilities were useless against the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General. This was because with the existence of the Tempered Steel Cauldron skill, the higher the temperature and the more intense the burning, the stronger the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General became.

In the beginning, Bida could still suppress the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General by using Balrog’s powers. However, through Bida’s efforts to burn it to ashes, he finally threw himself into a disadvantageous position.

What the hell is this Companion Beast? Bida had already discovered that something was amiss, but he still found it

unbelievable. Not only was Balrog’s power unable to injure the Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General, it was instead used by the other party.

However, he had no choice but to believe the increasingly powerful Fiend-Armored Tiger Soul General. Bida knew that Balrog had met his nemesis and turned to run. He wanted to escape before considering anything else.

How could Zhou Wen let him do as he wished? He continued chasing.

Seeing that he couldn’t escape Zhou Wen in water, Bida fled towards the shore. After rushing to the shore, a circular hole similar to a rocket propeller appeared behind the Balrog armor. Demonic flames spewed out from it, pushing Bida’s body into the distance at a terrifying speed.

Bida rushed into the mountainous area and looked back. When he didn’t see Zhou Wen behind him, he heaved a sigh of relief and landed.

However, just as he landed on the mountaintop, he saw Zhou Wen riding a gigantic pangolin-like Companion Beast. He was looking at him from the opposite mountaintop.

Bida was extremely shocked, and he hurriedly used Balrog’s ejection force to shoot into the sky again before fleeing in another direction.

However, no matter how fast Bida was, every time he stopped, he would see Zhou Wen carrying Ya’er and riding the Companion Beast nearby.

After a few consecutive attempts, Balrog’s strength was almost exhausted. Bida was also on the verge of tears.

“What do you want?” After landing again and seeing Zhou Wen, Bida stopped running and shouted at him while panting.

“What I want to do is what you just said,” Zhou Wen said.

“What did I say?” Bida asked, gasping for air.

“Didn’t you say that our partnership has ended and you want to snatch the items back? This is also what I want to do,” Zhou Wen said.

“You took the Blue Sky Crystal Beast’s egg and dimensional crystals. You took everything. What else do you want?” said Bida.

“And the Guardian on you,” Zhou Wen said calmly.

“You don’t cultivate a fire-elemental Essence Energy Art. Even if I give him to you, you won’t be able to contract him. Besides, I’ve already contracted him. I can’t give him to you even if I wanted to,” said Bida.

“That’s simple. Just kill him,” Zhou Wen said as he gripped his Bamboo Blade tightly, prepared to strike at any moment. With an additional Guardian in the world, the battle between Guardians would cause additional damage to Earth. He would kill one whenever he could.

“Then you might as well take my life. I’ll fight it out with you.” As Bida said that, he angrily pounced over from the sky. The Balrog armor on his body burst out with shocking demonic flames. Like the flames of a burning heaven, it covered the sky and descended.

Looking at Bida pouncing at him like a flaming giant, Zhou Wen’s expression didn’t change at all. However, his aura

instantly turned terrifying.

The Bamboo Blade was unsheathed, followed by the release of Immortal Slaying’s might.

The demonic flames that filled the sky suddenly split into two. Zhou Wen’s figure appeared behind Balrog as though he had teleported. By then, Bamboo Blade had already returned to its sheath. When Bamboo Blade was fully sheathed, Balrog split into two in midair. Its body transformed into magma that scattered across the ground like piles of bonfires.

Meanwhile, Bida’s figure appeared in the sky. However, he no longer had the Balrog armor on him. Instead, a pair of crow-like wings appeared on his back. There was also a black mask that looked like a ghoul on his face. The aura from his entire body had become very strange.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 913 - Mirror Eyes' Advancement Method

Chapter 913: Mirror Eyes' Advancement Method

Translator: CKtalon

Zhou Wen frowned as he sized up Bida. This was because Bida's aura had become extremely strange. Furthermore, this was the first time he had seen a human use a Guardian as a shield. He had screwed over the Guardian.

"Wang Mingyuan is right. You are indeed very powerful," Bida said to Zhou Wen from midair.

Upon hearing Wang Mingyuan's name, Zhou Wen's pupils constricted slightly as he stared at Bida and asked, "Who are you?"

"Bida, the man who is about to become Yaksha King, remember this name." As Bida spoke, the wings on his back flapped and a spatial rift opened in the void. He flapped his wings and retreated into the spatial rift.

Zhou Wen watched the spatial rift disappear, but it was too late to chase after him.

That fellow... He's like Teacher... but he also seems a little different... Countless thoughts flashed through Zhou Wen's mind. Although Bida had only displayed his true strength for a moment, he could sense the dual auras of a human and a dimensional creature. He was very similar to Wang Mingyuan and Yin Talisman King.

Zhou Wen also knew that there were humans like Wang Mingyuan who had charged into different dimensions. He

was very suspicious that Bida was one of the humans who had rushed into one.

Zhou Wen wanted to ask Bida what had happened to Wang Mingyuan, but unfortunately, Bida had already escaped through the spatial rift. It was impossible for him to catch up to him.

He returned to the Lu family with the Blue Sky Crystal Beast's crystal and used it as evidence in exchange for the Lu family's promise. Zhou Wen then asked Old Master Lu about Bida.

However, Old Master Lu told him that there was no freelance hunter named Bida in Sea Gazing City, and none of the people he invited were called Bida.

"But I did see him." Zhou Wen drew Bida's appearance for Old Master Lu to see.

Old Master Lu looked at it for a while before saying, "This is a freelance hunter from another city. I saw that he knew a lot about the habits of the break-out creature, so I invited him to stay. But his name is not Bida. He said his name is Ah Ye."

Zhou Wen didn't have any hopes of finding out anything else. After settling the matter here, he left Sea Gazing City.

Uesugi Nao did not participate in the hunting operation this time. As she was exposed ahead of time, the overseas federation gave up on the plan and allowed her to go elsewhere as Xu Ai, so as to prevent the An family from suspecting the relationship between Xu Ai and Uesugi Nao.

Zhou Wen originally wanted to return to Luoyang, but before he left Sea Gazing City, another Guardian appeared on the

rankings. The Guardian named Starry Night challenged the second-ranked Companion Beast.

Zhou Wen watched the battle and saw Starry Night standing in the void. The stars in the sky rained down like a meteor shower. After a bombardment lasting more than ten minutes, it nearly killed the Companion Beast. Finally, the latter had no choice but to forfeit and admit defeat.

More and more Guardians have appeared. I wonder how many there are? Zhou Wen thought to himself.

After taking second place, Starry Night didn't continue the challenge. It seemed like it didn't intend to fight the first Great Skyfiend.

Zhou Wen left Sea Gazing City and played with the Blue Sky Crystal Beast's Essence Energy Skill Crystal on the way.

Blue Sky Crystal Beast: Mythical stage. Requires 41 Constitution, 21 Spatial Attribute, Spatial Essence Energy Art.

It's 41 Constitution again. From the looks of it, I have to think of a way to raise Mirror Eyes to the Perfect Body as soon as possible so that my Constitution can reach 41. This way, I can absorb several Mythical techniques. Zhou Wen was somewhat helpless. Up to now, he still hadn't found a way to advance Mirror Eyes.

However, although he wasn't able to obtain a Blue Sky Crystal Beast Companion Egg during his trip to Gazing Sea City, he had obtained an egg. If he could hatch a baby Blue Sky Crystal Beast, he might be able to use it in place of a Companion Beast.

Now, Zhou Wen's problem was that even if the baby Blue Sky Crystal Beast was born, he wouldn't tame it since he didn't know how to make it obedient.

I wonder if I can raise it like a Gu? Zhou Wen thought.

As Zhou Wen rode the Mighty Vajra Bull, he used his phone to grind the game dungeons.

This time, Zhou Wen chose Deer Terrace Pavilion. He couldn't kill the Nine-Tailed Fox inside, but it was different for the other Mythical creatures. Perhaps he could farm something good.

After farming all the dimensional creatures that he could, Zhou Wen went to challenge the Nine-Tailed Fox when there was nothing left.

At any rate, he had to refresh the instance dungeon, so he took the opportunity to test the Nine-Tailed Fox's strength.

Just like last time, after killing the fox body, the Nine-Tailed Demon Fox did not die. Instead, it entered its Terror transformation form and became a beautiful demon consort.

Seeing the demon consort attack, Zhou Wen's heart stirred as he attempted to use Mirror Eyes to glance at her. To his surprise, his glance made the demon consort's face turn into that of a fox.

Perhaps it was because Mirror Eyes was still relatively weak, only her face had turned into that of a fox, and the rest of her body remained human.

Moreover, the face that had turned into that of a fox quickly recovered its devastatingly beautiful human features.

To Zhou Wen’s disbelief, Mirror Eyes grew.

Before Zhou Wen could get excited, he saw the screen turn black. The game was over. He had been too pleasantly surprised to notice how demon consort had killed the blood-colored avatar.

Mirror Eyes actually has the ability to see through things. From the looks of it, I have to use Mirror Eyes to see through the disguise of dimensional creatures that use transformation techniques to advance. I wonder if destroying a human’s transformation technique can allow Mirror Eyes to advance? Zhou Wen was somewhat excited after finding the method to advance Mirror Eyes.

As long as his Constitution reached 41 points, he could absorb several Mythical Skill Crystals, and his strength would definitely improve greatly.

The most important thing was that he could absorb the Skill Crystal of the Blue Sky Crystal Beast. Perhaps that was a skill that could allow him to teleport indefinitely.

Where can I find dimensional creatures that can transform? Visiting the demon consort each time is too difficult. I’ll die every time I take a look. The advancement speed is just too slow. Zhou Wen couldn’t think of any dimensional creatures that were good at transforming, so he could only search for information online.

He never expected that there were actually quite a number of dimensional creatures that were good at transforming. Among them, the most common Fox Immortal in East District seemed to have a transformation skill.

How could I have forgotten about this? Aren’t there many lesser demons impersonating immortals on Deer Terrace

Pavilion? Zhou Wen smacked his head and cursed himself for being foolish.

This couldn’t be blamed on Zhou Wen. This was because fake immortals like fox demons had always looked like immortals. He momentarily forgot about them.

He eagerly entered Deer Terrace Pavilion and used Mirror Eyes to look at the fake fairies and immortals. When Zhou Wen looked at an Epic fake fairy, she revealed her true form and turned into a fox. Zhou Wen immediately felt that the Mirror Eyes had grown.

Seeing that this move was indeed effective, Zhou Wen immediately looked around. Any lesser demon that was seen by Mirror Eyes was immediately reduced to its original form.

Although this would expend large amounts of Essence Energy, Zhou Wen could switch back to the Slaughterer Life Soul, giving him unlimited Essence Energy at any time. Then, he could switch back and activate Mirror Eyes.

As he swept his gaze and killed along the way, Mirror Eyes grew rapidly. It was only a matter of time before it broke through to the Evolved Body or even the Perfect Body.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 914 - : Feng Qiuyan's Weakness

Chapter 914: Feng Qiuyan’s Weakness

Zhou Wen had recently absorbed many Essence Energy Crystals. There was no lack of Mythical crystals. He felt that the Essence Energy Pill had reached its limits and was about to break through.

However, for some reason, every time he reached a critical moment, he couldn’t take that final step. It was as if something was missing.

What’s missing? Zhou Wen looked at the diamond-like Essence Energy Pill in front of him and frowned in thought.

What was lacking was clearly not energy, as the Essence Energy Pill’s Primordial Body had already absorbed quite a number of Mythical Essence Energy Crystals. Be it the quality or quantity of energy, they far exceeded the requirements needed for the Primordial Life Soul to evolve.

If it’s not lacking energy, why can’t the Essence Energy Pill evolve? Zhou Wen racked his brains over it but couldn’t figure it out.

Just as he was thinking, his phone suddenly rang. He took out his phone and realized that it was Feng Qiuyan.

Feng Qiuyan seldom spoke, and even if he did, most people couldn’t understand what he was saying.

“Coach, thank you for your guidance. I’ve already overcome my weakness and have some achievements in my saber art.

If you have the time, can you help me take a look at my saber art?”

Zhou Wen found Feng Qiuyan’s message baffling as usual. However, he was already used to it. He casually replied: “The earliest time for me to return to school is the day after tomorrow. I’ll look for you when the time comes.”

“I can’t wait. Coach, which path are you taking? I’ll find you,” Feng Qiuyan replied.

Zhou Wen sent his route to Feng Qiuyan. Since he had nothing to do on the way, it wasn’t a bad idea to have someone welcome him.

After unsummoning the Essence Energy Pill, Zhou Wen continued grinding Deer Terrace Pavilion. The advancement of Mirror Eyes went very smoothly. At this rate, he could probably advance to an Evolved Body in a few days.

Zhou Wen was gaming when he suddenly felt a tattoo on his body tremble. Before he could summon it, the Companion Beast automatically left his body.

“Neo, what happened?” Zhou Wen asked in surprise when he saw Demonic Neonate staring at a lake by the side of the road.

“Food,” Demonic Neonate answered as she continued staring at the lake.

Zhou Wen really didn’t know what the food Demonic Neonate mentioned was because her diet was too strange. Even Guardians were treated as food by her—she was probably the only one that did so.

The lake by the side of the road wasn’t too big. Truth Listener’s senses could directly envelop it, but it didn’t discover anything amiss.

The lake was filled with ordinary creatures. There were quite a number of fish and shrimps, but there were no dimensional creatures. There were no dimensional zones nearby.

He looked at the map on his phone and realized that there was no sign of a lake here.

“Where’s the food?” Zhou Wen had no choice but to ask Demonic Neonate.

Demonic Neonate extended her finger and pointed at the center of the lake.

Zhou Wen noticed that she was referring to the surface of the lake, not inside. Therefore, he narrowed his eyes and looked over.

In the middle of the lake was a bamboo pole. There was a scarecrow hanging on it.

“The food you mentioned is that scarecrow?” Zhou Wen pointed at the scarecrow and asked.

Demonic Neonate nodded as she continued looking at the scarecrow.

As Demonic Neonate had already finished the Longevity Fruits she had previously obtained, she hadn’t eaten anything in the past few days. She was probably a little hungry.

“I’ll help you get it,” Zhou Wen said.

“Dangerous.” Demonic Neonate shook her head and said seriously.

Demonic Neonate seldom spoke to begin with. It was the first time he had heard her mention danger. He couldn’t help but seriously size up the scarecrow in the middle of the lake.

Looking at its body, there was nothing special about it. The scarecrow’s internal structure was made of straw—it could be clearly heard with Truth Listener. Apart from straw, there was nothing.

Apart from its straw body, it also had tattered clothes and a straw hat. It didn’t look anything special. The scarecrow was likely placed here in the past to prevent the shorebirds from eating the fish in the lake.

It had been here for quite some time. Its straw hat and clothes had already faded and rotted. Its straw body was also somewhat moldy. No matter how one looked at it, it was just an ordinary scarecrow.

Demonic Neonate bit her lip and glanced at the scarecrow. She actually jumped back onto the Great Might Vajra Bull’s back and said, “Go.”

Zhou Wen was alarmed as he turned to look at the scarecrow. It was still standing there like a dead object, without any signs of being terrifying.

However, Zhou Wen believed Demonic Neonate’s judgment. He didn’t stay any longer and got the Great Might Vajra Bull to leave the lake.

After leaving the lake, Demonic Neonate looked back, clearly still having some thoughts.

“What’s that?” Zhou Wen wanted to figure out what the scarecrow was.

“Food.” Demonic Neonate couldn’t explain it clearly either. She only said that it was food.

Zhou Wen secretly memorized this place to prevent himself from provoking the scarecrow when he passed by in the future. Something that even Demonic Neonate had some qualms about was definitely no trifling matter.

After walking for half a day, he suddenly saw a green bird flying at an extremely fast speed in the distant sky. Soon, it arrived above Zhou Wen.

The huge green bird circled a few times before landing from the sky. A figure floated down. It was none other than Feng Qiuyan.

“Coach, I’m here.” Feng Qiuyan landed in front of the Great Might Vajra Bull. The green bird transformed into a tattoo and returned to Feng Qiuyan.

“You really didn’t waste a moment,” Zhou Wen said with a smile.

Feng Qiuyan said seriously, “After I overcame my weakness, my saber technique improved a little. Coach, I really want you to help me take a look at it, so I immediately rushed over.”

“Then let me see what improvement your saber technique has made.” Zhou Wen placed Ya’er on the back of the Vajra Bull and flew to the grass beside him.

Feng Qiuyan didn’t stand on ceremony as he summoned his Life Soul Saber and held it in his hand, preparing to attack.

“Hold on. You said that you overcame your weakness, so what do you think is your weakness?” Zhou Wen stopped Feng Qiuyan’s attack.

Feng Qiuyan said seriously, “I’ve thought about this problem for a long time. Although my saber art has many problems, those problems can be resolved through cultivation. Therefore, it can only be said to be a flaw, not a weakness. After much thought, I only have one weakness—loneliness.”

“Loneliness?” Zhou Wen didn’t understand what Feng Qiuyan meant.

“Yes, loneliness. This is because my saber art is a saber art meant for me to fight alone. Therefore, if I were to encounter experts of the same level ganking me, it’s very easy for me to lose due to a lack of stamina or from being overwhelmed,” Feng Qiuyan said.

Zhou Wen thought to himself, *Is this considered a weakness? If this is a weakness, then all creatures in this world have such a weakness.*

“Then how did you overcome this weakness?” Zhou Wen was somewhat curious.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 915 - Infinite Saber Pilgrimage

Chapter 915: Infinite Saber Pilgrimage

Translator: CKtalon

Feng Qiuyan answered, “Firstly, I have to resolve the problem of stamina and Essence Energy. This problem can be resolved with some skills that can recover Essence Energy. However, even if it’s a skill that can recover Essence Energy, it’s impossible to make a complete recovery. The expenditure of stamina is also a problem. Thankfully, after reading many manuals, I finally thought of a solution. It’s to use resources obtained in combat to support the combat.”

“How do you use resources obtained in combat to support the combat?” Zhou Wen knew what the phrase meant, but using resources obtained in combat to support the combat worked because there was time to regroup.

After a single person was surrounded, there was no time to regroup. How was he going to use resources obtained in combat to support the combat?

“First, I reduce my expenditure, then I snatch the enemy’s Essence Energy…” As Feng Qiuyan spoke, he waved the Life Soul Saber in his hand. The Life Soul Saber seemed to produce some strange magical power that sucked the nearby Essence Energy into the saber.

“You… That’s good…” Zhou Wen didn’t know what to say. This ability to devour other people’s Essence Energy was very rare.

Zhou Wen had only seen Xia Jiuhuang use it before, and Feng Qiuyan was the second. He didn’t know how he had learned it.

Feng Qiuyan continued, “The second step is to resolve the problem of being ganked. For this, I spent a long time before coming up with a new saber art. Coach, please give me your advice.”

“Then let’s do it.” Zhou Wen was somewhat looking forward to Feng Qiuyan’s saber art.

Feng Qiuyan held the Life Soul Saber with an extremely solemn expression. After telling him to be careful, he raised his saber and slashed at Zhou Wen. The saber beam tore out like an invisible blade that cleaved down at Zhou Wen.

Although this strike was strong enough and much stronger than Feng Qiuyan’s saber techniques in the past, there weren’t any qualitative changes. Zhou Wen used Transcendent Flying Immortal and dodged Feng Qiuyan’s saber strike.

However, Feng Qiuyan didn’t care about that. He slashed out repeatedly, his saber beams pouring down like a surging river. Each strike was more ruthless and faster than the last.

Zhou Wen had to admit that Feng Qiuyan’s saber art was indeed top-notch. If it wasn’t for him being restricted to the Epic stage, this saber art might have even had a chance of advancing to the Mythical stage.

Feng Qiuyan had completely shed his former naivety, hesitation, and lack of confidence. The saber seemed to have become one with him. He could be passionate and unrestrained, and he could also be calm like water flowing beneath a bridge.

Like being able to split a mountain with a single strike, yet also carve out flowers in tofu.

Fast and slow, light and heavy—everything was controlled adequately. When it was time to risk his life, he could unleash an infinite amount of power. When it was time to restrain himself, he could completely restrain his sharpness.

Zhou Wen felt that if Feng Qiuyan continued practicing this saber art, his saber art would probably advance to the Mythical stage like his Transcendent Flying Immortal.

However, no matter how Zhou Wen looked at it, he couldn’t tell how Feng Qiuyan’s saber art could deal with a group fight. His saber art only supported one-on-one combat.

That’s not right! Zhou Wen sensed something. When he used Transcendent Flying Immortal to dodge Feng Qiuyan’s attack, he switched to the Hell King Life Soul, allowing his eight senses to become extremely sharp.

I see. What an amazing fellow. Zhou Wen had already discovered the secret of Feng Qiuyan’s saber art.

Feng Qiuyan’s saber beams crisscrossed, each strike stronger than the last. After countless slashes, Feng Qiuyan suddenly retracted his saber and retreated. He stared at Zhou Wen with a sharp gaze and said, “Coach, you have to be careful.”

With that said, Feng Qiuyan held the hilt of his saber with both hands. The saber aura on his body was abundant, and his long hair and clothes fluttered with the saber aura.

The shattered saber beams from before rapidly condensed around Feng Qiuyan, condensing into complete saber beams

that formed a huge saber array. All the saber beams pointed at Zhou Wen, densely packed together.

“What’s this move called?” Zhou Wen asked Feng Qiuyan.

“This was inspired from watching an ancient movie. I then added to it with my own research and modification. In the movie, that move is called Infinite Sword Convergence. I call this move Infinite Saber Pilgrimage.” Feng Qiuyan’s hand that held the saber began to tremble.

The Life Soul Saber in his hand was connected to all the saber beams. It was equivalent to carrying the power of infinite sabers.

Although it sounded a little exaggerated, there were still more than a thousand sabers.

“Do your best. Let me see how powerful this Infinite Saber Pilgrimage technique of yours is,” Zhou Wen said seriously.

“Coach, please be careful.” Feng Qiuyan couldn’t hold on any longer as he slashed at Zhou Wen.

With the strength of his strike, dense saber beams descended like a river of sabers from the sky.

Dense saber beams rained down as Zhou Wen phased left and right in the saber river. Like a ghost, his figure left behind afterimages in the air. The saber beams slashed through the afterimages, but they failed to touch Zhou Wen’s body.

The violent saber beams failed to touch his body. All of them flew over and slashed at the mountain rocks behind Zhou Wen.

Boom! Boom!

The mountain rocks that were dozens of meters tall were shattered by the dense saber beams, turning into countless fragments. However, Zhou Wen remained standing in front of the collapsed mountain rocks without suffering any damage.

Feng Qiuyan didn’t feel discouraged just because Zhou Wen had dodged his Infinite Saber Pilgrimage. Instead, he stared at Zhou Wen with a burning gaze. His mind was completely occupied by Zhou Wen’s movement technique for dodging the Infinite Saber Pilgrimage.

With the saber in hand, Feng Qiuyan stood there and stared at Zhou Wen. The aura that should have declined after the Infinite Saber Pilgrimage didn’t decline. Instead, it increased.

Zhou Wen’s expression turned solemn as he pressed his hand on the handle of Bamboo Blade.

When Feng Qiuyan’s aura reached its peak, he suddenly relaxed. The ferocious and domineering aura on him seemed to vanish, as though he had become an ordinary person. There was a strange smile on his face.

At that moment, Feng Qiuyan was like a pious believer. He wanted to use the saber in his hand to commemorate the holiness in his heart. Apart from being pious, Zhou Wen couldn’t sense any killing intent or evil aura from him.

It was as if he wasn’t holding a lethal weapon, but a holy artifact that consecrated gods.

Finally, the saber in Feng Qiuyan’s hand moved again. There was no domineering saber beam, nor was there a ferocious

saber beam. Zhou Wen had never seen anyone use a saber art in such a clean and holy manner. It was very artistic.

It was as if he wasn’t killing, but completing a redemption.

Almost at the instant Feng Qiuyan unsheathed his saber, Zhou Wen’s hand that held the Bamboo Blade moved. Transcendent Flying Immortal didn’t have any mortal aura as it crossed Feng Qiuyan like an elegant immortal.

A saber hum that resembled a dragon’s roar lasted for a long time. If one were to carefully distinguish it, they would realize that the saber hum came from two different sabers. Bamboo Blade and the Life Soul Saber in Feng Qiuyan’s hands were trembling and humming.

Crack!

A saber mark split open on the Dragon Scale Armor across Zhou Wen’s chest. Almost at the same time, a saber mark appeared on Feng Qiuyan’s chest. On his exposed muscles, there was a thin line of blood that seeped out.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 916 - Fighting the Yin Talisman King Again

Chapter 916: Fighting the Yin Talisman King Again

“Congratulations on mastering a Mythical saber technique. It’s very strong,” Zhou Wen said sincerely as he looked at the shattered Dragon Scale Armor on his chest.

Feng Qiuyan put away his saber, but he shook his head and said, “Even though it’s a Mythical saber technique, I was still defeated. Coach, if you hadn’t retracted your saber in time, I would have been beheaded.”

Zhou Wen had already sheathed the Bamboo Blade in his hand. He said with a smile, “It’s a draw. I’m wearing Mythical armor, so I knew that you couldn’t injure me, so I could consider retracting my saber. Otherwise, both sides would have suffered.”

Feng Qiuyan still shook his head and said, “To be able to release and withdraw freely under such circumstances, Coach, you are indeed much stronger than me. I still need to continue working hard.”

Zhou Wen blushed with shame. Feng Qiuyan’s strike already had the qualifications to match Transcendent Flying Immortal. However, other than Transcendent Flying Immortal, Zhou Wen also had Immortal Slaying. It made him accustomed to higher-level battles, so he still had the strength to react more under such circumstances.

In terms of saber arts, Feng Qiuyan's strike was in no way inferior to Transcendent Flying Immortal.

"That final strike shouldn't be a part of the Infinite Saber Pilgrimage, right?" Zhou Wen asked.

Feng Qiuyan said, "It wasn't in the past, but it is now. This strike is the new Infinite Saber Pilgrimage. The Infinite Saber Pilgrimage before can just be considered a prelude."

Zhou Wen didn't have any concept of names to begin with. Feng Qiuyan could name anything he wanted, so he didn't have any thoughts on it.

Just as he was about to return to Ya'er's side, he suddenly heard a voice. "How exciting. Young men who aren't even twenty can actually use such movement techniques and saber art. Is this era too powerful, or were the humans from the past too weak? How enviable."

When Zhou Wen heard this voice, he immediately knew that something was amiss. He turned his head and saw the Yin Talisman King slowly walking over. He was clearly very far away, but with every step he took, he rapidly approached Zhou Wen and company. In a few steps, he was less than a hundred meters away from them.

"Yin Talisman King, you dare appear in front of me? Aren't you afraid that it would infuriate The Thearch?" Zhou Wen glanced at the Yin Talisman King's arm and saw that his severed arm had already recovered.

Yin Talisman King said with a sinister smile, "No matter how strong The Thearch is, she's still trapped in a dimensional zone and can't leave. As long as I don't approach Chess Mountain, how can she do anything to me? Trying to use her to reel me in? Don't be ridiculous."

“Are you really that sure that she can’t come out of a dimensional zone?” Zhou Wen said indifferently.

However, Yin Talisman King said disdainfully, “Don’t try to scare me. The seal won’t be broken. Even if she’s a Calamity goddess, she can forget about rushing out of a place like Chess Mountain. Without that person today, I want to see who can protect you.”

With that said, Yin Talisman King appeared in front of Zhou Wen like a ghost. A crystal-like palm grabbed at Zhou Wen.

Feng Qiuyan didn’t hesitate to draw his saber and slash at Yin Talisman King. It was none other than the Infinite Saber Pilgrimage Technique he had just figured out.

Zhou Wen lamented inwardly when he saw Feng Qiuyan take action. All he could do was draw his saber and slash at Yin Talisman King.

The two of them slashed at Yin Talisman King from both sides. They were extremely fast, but Yin Talisman King grabbed a saber with one hand. The sharp blade couldn’t even tear through the skin of his crystallized palm.

Zhou Wen released Bamboo Blade and struck Yin Talisman King’s head. Feng Qiuyan also retracted his Life Soul Saber and slashed at his waist.

Yin Talisman King turned slightly, threw away Bamboo Blade, and extended his hand to strike Zhou Wen. At the same time, he raised his leg and kicked Feng Qiuyan.

Bam!

Zhou Wen and Feng Qiuyan were sent flying almost at the same time. Zhou Wen shouted, “Split up and run!” Then, he

spun in midair and flew to Ya’er’s side before rapidly flying into the distance.

Feng Qiuyan held back the churning blood in his chest and ran in another direction.

“This place is very far from Chess Mountain. You won’t be able to run there.” Yin Talisman King sneered as he chased after Zhou Wen. He almost instantly appeared behind him.

Seeing that he was chasing after him, Zhou Wen didn’t hesitate any further. He summoned Earth Elemental Beast and used Earth Escape several times.

The reason Zhou Wen didn’t use Earth Escape’s maximum distance was that he hoped that Yin Talisman King would chase after him and not chase after Feng Qiuyan.

Thankfully, Yin Talisman King was very confident and had no intention of using Feng Qiuyan as a hostage.

Clang!

The Earth Elemental Beast was in the midst of Earth Escape when it suddenly seemed to slam into an iron wall. It became dizzy from the collision and bounced out of Earth Escape. It sprawled on the ground and nearly fainted. A portion of its skull had shattered. From the looks of it, its injuries weren’t light as Zhou Wen unsummoned it.

Yin Talisman King chased after him with a smile. “If I wasn’t completely confident, would I have taken action? Even if immortals came today, they wouldn’t be able to escape either.”

Zhou Wen didn’t answer as he summoned the Invisibility Cloak and used the three minutes of invisibility to escape

this area.

Bam!

Zhou Wen wanted to fly away, but he felt his body slam into an invisible barrier and rebound.

Yin Talisman King couldn’t see Zhou Wen, but he could hear the sound. He rushed over and said with a sinister smile, “It’s useless no matter how you struggle. Even if you turn into a ghost, you won’t be able to escape this area.”

Zhou Wen didn’t know how large the area was, so he stood there without moving. At the very least, he knew that there was an invisible barrier beside him.

Yin Talisman King couldn’t see him. All it could do was fly into the sky and look down at the entire forest. At the same time, it took out something as though it wanted to figure out Zhou Wen’s location.

Zhou Wen didn’t move as he activated his Mirror Eyes and looked at the invisible barrier, but he didn’t see anything.

After switching to the Supreme Hell King Life Soul, he looked at the invisible barrier again, but he still couldn’t see anything. Clearly, it wasn’t some kind of soul power.

If there’s a barrier in such a huge area, even a Terror-grade can’t do it with their own strength, right? With this in mind, Zhou Wen switched to the Dao Sutra and the Heaven-Opening Scripture appeared in his sea of consciousness. Then, he charged straight at the invisible barrier.

Zhou Wen held the Light Concealment Sword in his hand, but when the Light Concealment Sword touched the invisible barrier, it passed right through.

As expected. Yin Talisman King relies on the power of the Heaven and Earth laws to form such a powerful barrier. Zhou Wen rushed out of the barrier and immediately flew at full speed.

At the instant Zhou Wen rushed out of the barrier, Yin Talisman King sensed something as his expression changed. *Damn it, how did he rush out of the Mystic Heaven Array?*

However, very quickly, Yin Talisman King took out something that resembled a compass. There were many intersecting points and lines on it. After Yin Talisman King injected his Essence Energy, the compass pointed in the direction Zhou Wen had fled.

Yin Talisman King used Earth Escape to chase after Zhou Wen.

Just as Zhou Wen came out of invisibility, he was discovered by Yin Talisman King. All he could do was dodge with his movement technique and constantly pull open the distance with teleportation.

Unfortunately, the last time he had used fixed-position spatial teleportation was less than a month ago. He couldn’t use it again. It was almost impossible to shake off Yin Talisman King by teleporting a great distance.

As for the ten teleportation opportunities in a day, they were quickly expended. Earth Elemental Beast was severely injured and it’s mind was muddled, so it was impossible for it to help Zhou Wen escape.

Zhou Wen wasn’t running towards Chess Mountain because it was too far away. It was impossible for him to escape.

Seeing that Zhou Wen had already fled, Yin Talisman King could also tell that Zhou Wen’s teleportation ability could no longer be used.

“Continue fleeing,” said Yin Talisman King coldly as he looked at Zhou Wen who had been chased to a lake.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 917 - Scarecrow

Chapter 917: Scarecrow

Translator: CKtalon

Zhou Wen stopped and stood by the lake. He suddenly took out the purple bronze ball.

When Yin Talisman King saw the purple bronze ball in Zhou Wen's hand, he slowed down and didn't immediately rush over.

"This is what you want, right?" Zhou Wen asked as he slowly walked over.

In fact, Zhou Wen already knew the answer without needing Yin Talisman King to answer. This was because Yin Talisman King's eyes were glowing when he saw the purple bronze ball.

"Give it to me and I shall give you a quick death. Otherwise, I'll let you suffer so much that you'll wish you were dead," said King Yin Talisman.

"What's this? Is it worth you risking your life to chase after me? You didn't chase after the person who took away the Sun True Flame Furnace, but you chased after me for this. I believe this thing must be extraordinary, right?" Zhou Wen held the copper ball and slowly retreated. He had already retreated to the edge of the lake and was about to step into it.

Yin Talisman King was also sizing up his surroundings, especially the lake behind Zhou Wen. He didn't dare underestimate Zhou Wen. Although it looked like Zhou Wen was unable to escape, Yin Talisman King was still very

careful when Zhou Wen chose to stop here. He didn’t dare charge forward, hoping to figure out if there were any problems here.

Just like Zhou Wen, Yin Talisman King didn’t discover any problems. He believed that this was only an ordinary lake and that there was nothing special nearby. Therefore, he focused his attention on Zhou Wen.

In fact, this was where Zhou Wen had discovered the scarecrow. It was erected in the lake.

“You don’t need to know what this is. Where’s the other one?” Yin Talisman King asked.

“There’s two of these?” Zhou Wen saw that Yin Talisman King had already approached him. He suddenly flew up and flew across the lake.

Yin Talisman King tore through the air at a speed faster than Zhou Wen’s. He was just moments from grabbing Zhou Wen from behind.

Zhou Wen suddenly threw the purple bronze ball into the lake, and it landed near the scarecrow.

Zhou Wen originally imagined that Yin Talisman King would chase after the purple bronze ball first. If he approached the scarecrow, the scarecrow wouldn’t be indifferent.

However, to his surprise, Yin Talisman King was more ruthless than Zhou Wen had imagined. He seemed to think that it didn’t matter even if the purple bronze ball fell into the lake. He could quickly return to retrieve it later.

Therefore, Yin Talisman King didn’t chase after the purple bronze ball. Instead, he continued attacking Zhou Wen,

hoping to kill him first.

Zhou Wen was somewhat depressed, but he had also thought of this possibility. His body suddenly sank as he burrowed into the lake, allowing Yin Talisman King to rush past him.

The moment Zhou Wen entered the water, he switched to the Demon God Catalog and dived deep into the lake.

Without any hesitation, Yin Talisman King chased after Zhou Wen and rushed into the lake. He wanted to kill Zhou Wen quickly and not give him any chance of survival.

However, just as Yin Talisman King was about to rush into the water, he suddenly saw a strange scene.

Yin Talisman King had been paying attention to the purple bronze ball with a sliver of his mind. He needed to know where the purple bronze ball had landed so that he could search for it later.

However, before the purple bronze ball landed in the water, it suddenly changed its trajectory. Yin Talisman King saw the purple bronze ball land in the hands of the scarecrow on the lake.

The scarecrow that originally looked like an ordinary object was now holding the purple bronze ball in its moldy straw palm. It tilted its head and looked down at the purple bronze ball.

Yin Talisman King was alarmed. If the purple bronze ball was taken away, it would be useless even if he killed Zhou Wen. He immediately made a prompt decision and spun like a strange eagle, striking at the scarecrow with his palm.

Zhou Wen originally imagined that he would be in a bitter battle, but to his surprise, Yin Talisman King changed directions and charged at the scarecrow.

Zhou Wen lay in the lake and looked up at the scarecrow.

The scarecrow's face was the same as the rest of its body. It was already moldy, but on its face—under the cover of the hat—was a pair of red eyes and a crescent-shaped mouth that emitted an evil red glow.

At that moment, the scarecrow was completely different from when Zhou Wen had observed it. It emitted a terrifying evil aura that resembled black demonic smoke. It rose from its body as though it was wrapping its body like its clothes and a hat.

One of Yin Talisman King's hands had already slammed in front of the scarecrow. Yin Talisman King was clearly very careful. His entire body had turned into a crystalline state as he entered his Terror form. His hand was almost transparent.

Just as Yin Talisman King's hand was about to strike the scarecrow's head, the scarecrow finally looked up. The eyes and mouth that were covered by the brim of the hat were revealed to Yin Talisman King.

"Ah!" Yin Talisman King suddenly screamed as he retreated.

Zhou Wen saw that Yin Talisman King's eyes were like the eyes of a scarecrow, turning blood-red. Furthermore, the redness was still spreading around his eyes like protruding blood vessels. It made Yin Talisman King's eyes look extremely strange. Furthermore, his eyes protruded and shimmered with red light. It gave off the feeling that his eyes were about to burst.

Zhou Wen’s heart trembled as he thought to himself that it was a close call. Thankfully, he thought that the scarecrow might be a dimensional creature like a demon. As for the Demon God Catalog, it had a bewitchment effect on such dimensional creatures. It made them mistake Zhou Wen for one of their kind, so he switched over.

From the looks of it, he had escaped a calamity. If not for the protection of the Mirror Eyes Life Soul in the Demon God Catalog, he would probably have suffered the same outcome as Yin Talisman King when he saw the scarecrow’s eyes.

Yin Talisman King was impressive as well. He gathered his strength with both hands and pressed it on his eyes that were about to burst. Two beams of Yin energy were injected into his eyes, forcefully suppressing the red light in them.

However, the red light didn’t disappear. It was suppressed and remained in his eyes, preventing him from opening his eyes to see.

“Who are you?” Yin Talisman King used his ears as his eyes and listened in the direction of the scarecrow with a heavy expression.

The only one who could injure a Terror-grade was a Terror-grade creature. The scarecrow had nearly crippled his eyes. Clearly, it was also a Terror-grade creature.

However, the scarecrow had no intention of answering. Its body dissipated like black smoke as it silently condensed in front of Yin Talisman King. The finger that carried black smoke and demonic aura stabbed at Yin Talisman King’s blind eyes.

Just as Zhou Wen thought that Yin Talisman King was about to be crippled, he suddenly saw a jade light on Yin Talisman

King’s body glow. His palm was like a jade claw as it penetrated the scarecrow’s chest. He had actually discovered the scarecrow’s location.

However, the scarecrow didn’t seem to feel any pain. Its hand continued reaching out, wanting to grab Yin Talisman King’s neck.

Yin Talisman King raised his other hand and grabbed the scarecrow’s palm.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 918 - Soul Cage

Chapter 918: Soul Cage

Translator: CKtalon

“Ah!” Another tragic cry came from the lake. Zhou Wen originally imagined that it would be the scarecrow, but to his surprise, he realized that it was Yin Talisman King.

Yin Talisman King’s hand had penetrated the scarecrow’s chest and grabbed one of its hands. However, the scarecrow stood in front of him expressionlessly. The Essence Energy in Yin Talisman King’s body quickly flowed into the scarecrow’s body.

Yin Talisman King wanted to shake off the scarecrow, but it seemed to be sucked in. No matter how hard he tried, he couldn’t shake it off. As for the scarecrow, it approached his body as though it was about to cling to him.

Boom! Zhou Wen saw an immortal glow circulate over Yin Talisman King’s palm. A strange symbol swirled in his palm and forcefully blasted the scarecrow’s body.

The scarecrow’s body slid across the lake like a skater, but its actions were extremely strange. As it contorted its body and slid towards Yin Talisman King, it reached out to grab at him.

Yin Talisman King and the scarecrow fought above the lake, but neither gained an advantage. If it wasn’t for the mysterious symbols on his hands that could restrain the demonic aura on the scarecrow, Yin Talisman King would have long been sucked dry by the scarecrow.

Even so, Yin Talisman King wasn’t having it good either. He couldn’t see, so he could only rely on his other senses to make up for his shortcomings. At the same time, he didn’t dare touch any other spot of the scarecrow.

The scarecrow was like an elegant figure skater. Its body moved strangely on the surface of the lake as it attacked Yin Talisman King in all sorts of elegant and strange poses.

The spot on Yin Talisman King’s crystalline Terror form where the scarecrow had touched immediately turned black, as though ink had seeped into his flesh.

What a terrifying scarecrow! Zhou Wen was alarmed. The powerful Yin Talisman King was actually suppressed to such a sorry state in front of the scarecrow.

Yin Talisman King’s Five-Elemental Escape technique didn’t seem to be of much use in front of the scarecrow. As he moved in the water, the scarecrow’s figure turned into black smoke and dissipated. By the time he escaped from the water, the scarecrow had already condensed beside him.

The two invincible existences at the Terror grade didn’t seem to erupt with earth-shattering strength, but their battle was extremely harrowing. If it were an ordinary Mythical creature, they probably wouldn’t be able to withstand a single strike and would die tragically.

Strength wasn’t purely based on one’s destructive power. Some forces might not look very destructive, but could lead to death upon contact.

Zhou Wen originally wanted to take the opportunity to escape, but after hiding in the water and peeping for a while, he dispelled the thought of immediately escaping.

Yin Talisman King was proficient in the Five-Elemental Escape technique. If he really wanted to escape, he could escape far away. It was likely that the scarecrow wouldn’t be able to catch up to him so easily.

However, Yin Talisman King only escaped in a small area and didn’t go far. It was obvious that he hadn’t given up on the purple bronze ball and wanted to snatch it back from the scarecrow.

In fact, the scarecrow only used one hand to fight. Its other hand held the purple bronze ball tightly. Clearly, it also valued the purple bronze ball.

Zhou Wen secretly summoned Demonic Neonate and hid in the lake with her, hoping to wait for an opportunity.

Demonic Neonate’s large eyes sized up the scarecrow and Yin Talisman King. Clearly, she was also judging the situation and looking for an opportunity.

Although Yin Talisman King was suppressed by the scarecrow, his life wasn’t in danger. During the battle, Yin Talisman King was still shouting sternly, “Who are you? Are you a fiend? I was once a peer of the fiends’ Guardian…”

However, the scarecrow ignored him. It circled around Yin Talisman King like a ghost and attacked him, putting him in grave danger.

Seeing that Yin Dark Talisman King seemed to have the intention of retreating, Zhou Wen thought to himself, *If I let him escape, I won’t be the scarecrow’s match. I’m afraid I won’t be able to retrieve the purple bronze ball. How can I stop Yin Talisman King from running and fight the scarecrow to an internecine outcome?*

However, after some thought, there seemed to be nothing he could do. Unless he sealed off all the five elements when dealing with a person who was proficient in the Five-Elemental Escape technique, it was impossible to stop him from escaping.

Indeed, when Yin Talisman King realized that he couldn’t turn the tables and gradually couldn’t withstand the scarecrow’s attacks, he already had the intention to retreat.

After dodging the scarecrow’s attack, Yin Talisman King used Water Escape to reach the edge of the lake and leaped towards the shore. Half of his body had already touched the ground he wanted to escape through. He wanted to leave this place and wait for his injuries to heal before seeking revenge on the scarecrow.

However, Yin Talisman King’s expression suddenly changed. He felt as though a force that came from his soul was sucking at his soul, pulling him into the lake.

Just as Yin Talisman King had landed on the ground, he fell back into the lake.

“Soul Cage!” Yin Talisman King turned pale and couldn’t help but shout.

Zhou Wen also saw an extremely strange scene. The scarecrow stood on the surface of the lake, its body wrapped in a black-robed demonic smoke, but its body made of straw emitted a soul-like holy brilliance.

The entire lake emitted a white soul glow like a holy lake.

Yin Talisman King rushed out of the lake, but a transparent shadow was locked inside. Then, Yin Talisman King’s body seemed to be pulled back by a rubber band.

The transparent shadow also fused with his body, and the scarecrow transformed into demonic smoke again and gracefully attacked.

Zhou Wen was alarmed as well. Taking advantage of their battle, he swam towards the bank, hoping to leave the lake.

However, just as he climbed ashore, he felt something in the lake affecting him, making him want to throw himself into the lake uncontrollably.

Could the Soul Cage that Yin Talisman King mentioned really imprison souls? Zhou Wen realized that Demon God Catalog and Mirror Eyes were useless, so he switched to the Supreme Hell King Life Soul.

The moment Supreme Hell King Life Soul appeared, Zhou Wen's entire body transformed into a Hell King state. The force that was pulling him suddenly vanished as Zhou Wen finally rushed ashore.

When he turned his head, he saw that the lake wasn't glowing at all. He couldn't even see the lake. Countless bones sank to the bottom of the lake, and in the lake were countless wailing, struggling, and entangled wraiths. The lake was like a living hell, and the scarecrow that emitted demonic aura was the king of this purgatory.

Countless wraiths entangled Yin Talisman King's soul. His body could leave the lake, but his soul was entangled by countless wraiths.

Some wraiths wanted to entangle Zhou Wen, but the moment they touched Zhou Wen's Supreme Hell King body, they were immediately burned by invisible flames. One of their hands turned to ashes.

As for the invisible flames, they remained undying. They spread across the wraith’s body until it completely turned to dust before disappearing.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 919 - First Mountain Bronze

Chapter 919: First Mountain Bronze

Translator: CKtalon

A wraith tried to pull Ya’er from Zhou Wen’s arms, but Zhou Wen casually waved his hand and reduced it to ashes.

Demonic Neonate remained hidden in the lake and didn’t come out with Zhou Wen. Zhou Wen looked in surprise at where Demonic Neonate was and realized that the wraith-like objects didn’t entangle Demonic Neonate as though she didn’t exist.

Demonic Neonate isn’t leaving because she probably thinks there’s a chance. There’s no harm in observing. Zhou Wen thought for a moment and hid in the nearby forest to observe the battle in the lake.

Soon, Zhou Wen realized that the wraith-like objects couldn’t leave the lake. It was as though there was a barrier outside the lake.

Could it be that the scarecrow can’t leave the lake? Zhou Wen guessed.

The last time he passed here, the scarecrow hadn’t attacked him. Back then, he had walked on a small path by the lake, less than two meters away from the lake.

Such a distance was probably nothing to a terrifying existence like the scarecrow. There were only two possibilities for it not to attack Zhou Wen.

One was that it didn’t want to attack, and the other was that it couldn’t leave the lake.

If the scarecrow really can’t leave the lake, there might be a chance of snatching the purple bronze ball back. Just as Zhou Wen was pondering over it, he suddenly heard Yin Talisman King’s voice.

“Zhou Wen, let’s make a deal. Help me leave the lake and I’ll help you contract the strongest Guardian.” Yin Talisman King was pleasantly surprised when he realized that Zhou Wen had rushed out of the lake.

What surprised him was that Zhou Wen was able to escape the lake. This person had always exceeded his expectations. He had lived for so many years, but he had never suffered such a huge loss at the hands of an uncontracted human.

He was naturally happy that Zhou Wen could escape the lake. This might be his chance of survival.

Zhou Wen thought for a moment and shouted in the direction of the lake, “Tell me what that purple bronze ball is. What’s its use?”

As Yin Talisman King fought the scarecrow, he said, “That’s First Mountain Bronze.”

Zhou Wen couldn’t help but be slightly taken aback when he heard the name First Mountain Bronze.

First Mountain Bronze wasn’t a name for a type of bronze. First Mountain was a name for a place. In myths and legends, Yellow Emperor went to First Mountain to mine bronze and cast a tripod cauldron to stabilize the light from providence that shone on China.

There were all sorts of theories as to where First Mountain was. Many regions claimed that it was the true First Mountain. Zhou Wen didn’t know which was true.

However, even if the legends were true, First Mountain Bronze was only a metal used to forge cauldrons. Was it worth it for existences like Yin Talisman King and the scarecrow to fight for it?

“Don’t tell me you want to forge a tripod cauldron by snatching the First Mountain Bronze,” Zhou Wen said.

King Yin Talisman was in a perilous situation after being attacked by the scarecrow. Upon hearing Zhou Wen’s words, he felt a little depressed, but he had no choice but to say patiently, “The true value of First Mountain Bronze isn’t because of the material itself. The so-called First Mountain isn’t really called First Mountain. It’s the place where Yellow Emperor and Chiyou deployed their troops to battle. Countless experts from both sides died. The blood of human immortals and demons dyed the mountain range red and soaked through the mountain’s bronze mine. The blood-stained bronze cauldron that Yellow Emperor made could suppress the light from providence for ages. What kind of treasure is that? Emperor Qin went through all the trouble to find First Mountain Bronze in hopes of using the human immortals and demons’ blood essence in First Mountain Bronze to refine the Elixir of Longevity.

“Unfortunately, even after Emperor Qin passed away, the First Mountain Bronze couldn’t be refined. Instead, the blood essence in it became more and more condensed. It also absorbed the essence energy in the pill furnace and turned into two bronze balls. These two bronze balls can be said to be a kernel of the Elixir of Immortality, and they can also be said to be the strongest forging material for humanity.”

“Is that all?” Zhou Wen felt that Yin Talisman King hadn’t finished explaining the matter of First Mountain Bronze.

If that was the case, why would the scarecrow snatch it? It was immortal to begin with, and it couldn’t use tools forged by humans.

The situation on Yin Talisman King’s side wasn’t optimistic. His crystalline body was already tainted with the scarecrow’s demonic aura. He couldn’t last much longer.

“If you are willing to help me out of the lake, we can settle our past grievances. I can also help you refine the First Mountain Bronze. Only I know how to refine it…” Yin Talisman King attempted to convince Zhou Wen.

“I want to help you too, but I’m not capable enough to help.” How could Zhou Wen be willing to help Yin Talisman King? It would be good if such an old fellow died.

“Even if you don’t need to refine the First Mountain Bronze, you should still need a Companion Beast, right? I know where the Companion Beast used by Yellow Emperor Huang is. That Companion Beast has already returned to its Companion Egg form. With my help, you will definitely obtain it.” Yin Talisman King continued throwing out his chips.

However, Zhou Wen was completely unmoved. He ignored Yin Talisman King’s nonsensical words and pretended not to hear him.

When Yin Talisman King saw that Zhou Wen clearly wanted him dead and that it was useless to say anything else, he immediately steeled his heart and didn’t waste his breath. Taking advantage of his remaining strength, he suddenly advanced and slammed into the scarecrow.

Inside the crystal jade-like body of Yin Talisman King, there were dark-gold mysterious symbols flowing. The mysterious

symbols suddenly collided with something.

Boom!

A golden beam shot into the sky like a nuclear explosion. It formed a huge golden mushroom cloud that blew up the entire lake.

The powerful shockwave shattered the nearby forest and caused the mountain walls to collapse.

Zhou Wen summoned Tyrant Behemoth to block the blast. Truth Listener kept monitoring the battlefield as the scarecrow’s body scattered amidst the golden explosion.

However, it was different from what Zhou Wen had imagined. After the scarecrow’s body scattered, it transformed into countless wraiths. It was as though its body didn’t have any corporeal form—the straw was made of wraiths.

The wraiths closest to Yin Talisman King were disintegrated by the terrifying golden light. Many of them died.

A cold beam flew out of the explosion. After rushing out of the lake, it landed on the ground and vanished.

Zhou Wen knew that it was definitely a trump card that Yin Talisman King had kept close to his chest, but he didn’t have the time to stop him from escaping. By the time Zhou Wen rushed over, the cold beam had already fled into the distance. It was probably kilometers away.

Even this can’t kill him? Zhou Wen was somewhat depressed as he turned to look at the lake.

The remaining wraiths in the lake were condensing towards a spot. There was a black core there, and all the wraiths were condensing towards the core. The numerous wraiths turned into a part of the outer core, gradually forming the scarecrow’s body.

Before it could condense into a scarecrow again, a black-purple sword beam flashed as Demonic Neonate’s demon sword pierced through the black monster core.

At the moment the monster core was pierced, the wraiths in the lake let out ear-piercing screams. Then, soul light brightly bloomed as wraiths rose into the sky amidst the light. The number was terrifying, and the scene was extremely spectacular.

After all the wraiths vanished into the sky, Demonic Neonate flew back to the bank with the purple bronze ball in one hand and the demon sword in the other.

The black monster core was still skewered to the demon sword. It was shaped like a walnut, but its texture was like obsidian. It also beat like a heart.

If not for Grim Demon’s power suppressing the monster core, it would have long fled.

Before Zhou Wen could ask Demonic Neonate what it was, Demonic Neonate had already opened her mouth and bit off the monster core like she was eating from a skewer. After chewing a few times, she swallowed it.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 920 - The Weapon Zhou Wen Likes

Chapter 920: The Weapon Zhou Wen Likes

Translator: CKtalon

Seeing Demonic Neonate swallow the scarecrow's monster core, Zhou Wen opened his mouth, wanting to ask something, but he saw Demonic Neonate emit demonic aura as though she was about to evolve.

Demonic Neonate leaped towards Zhou Wen and returned to him in the form of a tattoo. However, the tattoo was different from usual. It had already transformed into a blob of dense demonic aura that couldn't be dispelled. It was impossible to tell its outline.

Is she finally going to be a Mythical? Zhou Wen was somewhat delighted. After this evolution, he might be able to find out the secret of Demonic Neonate's Wheel of Destiny.

Unfortunately, I failed to kill Yin Talisman King. Zhou Wen glanced at the lake regretfully before leaving with Ya'er.

When he arrived at a place with a signal, Zhou Wen's phone rang. It was a message from Feng Qiuyan.

"I'm in Taihang Mountain District. There's a dimensional zone here that allows us to take refuge. Lure him here…"

Unfortunately, Zhou Wen hadn't seen the message. He had fled too quickly and there was no signal.

"It's been resolved. I'm rushing back to Luoyang. Quickly return." Zhou Wen sent him a message before rushing back.

Although he failed to kill Yin Talisman King, he was definitely severely injured. Even his body had self-destructed. It was difficult to say if he could recover his strength. It was unlikely he could return anytime soon.

If he dared to come again, Banana Fairy would probably have completed her evolution. When that happened, it would be difficult to say who would be the pursuer.

1

Unfortunately, I can't find him. Otherwise, this would be a great opportunity to eliminate him. Zhou Wen took out the purple bronze ball and played with it. Yin Talisman King had said that it was First Mountain Bronze and that it had absorbed the blood essence of the three races—humans, immortals, demons.

Zhou Wen felt that it wasn't as simple as Yin Talisman King had said. If it was the pure blood of ordinary humans, immortals, and demons, it wouldn't be of much use even if he absorbed it. If it was really as Yin Talisman King had said, the blood absorbed by the First Mountain Bronze would probably be extraordinary.

However, Zhou Wen tried many methods, but he failed to figure out how to use it. No matter how he heated it, it only burned red. He could see a hint of purple flowing inside.

I don't think it's possible to call such a huge bronze ball a pill kernel. If it's really refined into a pill, it might be able to gorge someone to death. It's more reliable using it to make weapons. This thing is so hard, so it definitely won't be easily destroyed by weapons. However, if it's so hard, it won't be easy to turn it into a weapon. I can't use a ball as a weapon, right… Wait… Zhou Wen suddenly thought of something and summoned his Essence Energy Pill.

I’ve been wondering if the Essence Energy Pill will advance into a pill or something in the future, but I neglected the fact that this thing is more like a weapon. If it’s a weapon, will it have a weapon form after advancing? Could it be that the reason the Essence Energy Pill hasn’t advanced is because it doesn’t have a fixed weapon form? The more Zhou Wen thought about it, the more he felt that it was right.

1

The Life Soul was a fusion of bloodline talent and essence, vitality, and spirit. Its growth not only required energy, but also its master’s will.

Zhou Wen didn’t have any special preferences for weapons. He could use any weapon. To him, weapons were just tools that he didn’t devote any feelings to.

Zhou Wen felt that this was likely the reason why the Essence Energy Pill hadn’t advanced.

If it’s a weapon, what kind of weapon do I need? A saber, a sword, or a spear? Zhou Wen thought for a moment and felt that they were about the same. Apart from the fact that he seldom used a spear, swords and sabers were basically the same to Zhou Wen. However, swords were mainly focused on thrusting, while sabers were more focused on slashing.

Since they’re about the same, I’ll choose the sword. Zhou Wen thought about the form of the sword before circulating the Qi Refinement Art again, hoping to advance his Essence Energy Pill.

However, the outcome was useless. At the final step, the Essence Energy Pill remained infinitely stable. It refused to break through.

Could I be wrong? The Essence Energy Pill doesn't evolve towards weapons? Zhou Wen was somewhat depressed.

When Zhou Wen returned to Luoyang, Feng Qiuyan had already returned ahead of time. As he had suffered some injuries, he was being treated at the hospital. He probably wouldn't be able to return to campus for a couple of weeks.

After visiting Feng Qiuyan, Zhou Wen returned to campus.

Zhou Wen had been considering the problem of the Essence Energy Pill along the way. He felt that his idea was correct, but for some reason, the Essence Energy Pill couldn't evolve.

Could it be that I really have to like a certain weapon for it to be able to sense my will for evolution? Zhou Wen thought for a moment and decided to seriously study the various weapons to see if he could find a weapon he really liked.

The first weapon Zhou Wen learned about was the sword. It wasn't because he liked swords the most, but because he had an Ancient Sword Tomb dungeon. There were all kinds of swords there, so Zhou Wen planned on taking a closer look.

After returning to his dorm, he opened the door and Chick flew over. It had grown a little bigger—from the looks of it, An Sheng had sent it quite a number of good things recently. It hadn't starved.

The antelope lay on the couch and when it saw Zhou Wen return, it lazily opened its eyes and glanced at him before closing its eyes to continue sleeping.

This fellow eats and sleeps all day. Will its strength regress? Should I try to kill it and roast some venison skewers? Zhou Wen looked at the antelope and thought to himself.

However, this was only a thought. Zhou Wen suspected that this fellow was at the Terror grade. If they really fought, he might not be able to kill it.

After summoning Truth Listener and the other Companion Beasts that liked to play outside, he distributed the snacks he had brought back to Chick and got Ya’er to play with them. Only then did Zhou Wen return to his bedroom and lie in bed. He took out his phone and entered the Ancient Sword Tomb dungeon.

The vine sword was still stuck there. Every time he respawned, the location of the vine sword would be different. However, he could see it. Zhou Wen had tried many times to pull it out, but he failed.

This vine sword’s shape is too strange. It’s not the kind I would like. Zhou Wen looked at the vine sword before shaking his head and looking at the ancient sword beside him.

In the Ancient Sword Tomb, there were quite a number of beautiful ancient swords. Zhou Wen quite liked the shapes of some ancient swords, but no matter how much he liked them, he only treated them as tools. He had no way of developing the feelings that Feng Qiuyan had for sabers.

After circling the Ancient Sword Tomb for some time, Zhou Wen knew that it was impossible for him to be a swordsman who loved swords as much as his life. Therefore, he gave up on searching.

I should take a look at sabers. Perhaps I’m a natural saber user? Zhou Wen decided to change his train of thought.

It wasn’t as convenient to look at sabers as looking at swords. There were no instance dungeons like Saber Tomb, but in Sunset College, there was a showroom where many Essence Gold weapons were stored. Sabers took up a large potion of them.

Why did sabers take up the largest portion? That was because sabers were the most practical. While a sword had two sharp edges, making it seem to have more functions than a saber, this didn’t mean that it was better. A sword had high requirements for the craftsmanship and user. It wasn’t as simple and practical as a saber.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 921 - Practice Comes Before Saber

Chapter 921: Practice Comes Before Saber

Translator: CKtalon

As long as the showroom was open, the college's students could enter freely with their student identification.

The moment the showroom opened, Zhou Wen swiped his student ID and entered.

There weren't many students here usually, and it was still early. When Zhou Wen entered the showroom, the staff were still organizing the items. There wasn't a single student.

Since he was already here, Zhou Wen wasn't in a rush to look at the sabers. He looked at the first item on display.

What was displayed here were all Essence Gold weapons produced by humans after the dimensional storms. However, most of them were replicas for show.

Sabers were mainstream, followed by spears and bows. Swords and other weapons were non-mainstream. There were also shields and armor made of Essence Gold. However, there were very few of them because the effects weren't very good.

Then, there were all kinds of Essence Gold bullets and firearms. Most bullets were gilded or mixed with a certain amount of Essence Gold. Pure Essence Gold bullets were relatively rare, and they were usually only assigned to high-ranking officers.

Rockets and shells were also made of Essence Gold, but they could only be used to attack large groups of dimensional creatures, so they weren’t suitable for ordinary battles.

Most of them were used to repel large-scale dimensional creature tides or deal with immobile plant-type dimensional creatures.

There were even more types of sabers. They could be as small as being only palm-length. The big ones were like Steed Slaying Saber. It left Zhou Wen dazzled. However, no matter how he looked at them, he felt that they were just tools without much difference.

In terms of something that was pleasing to the eye, they were inferior to the Bamboo Blade that Zhou Wen often used.

However, Zhou Wen had already tried. Even though he was thinking about Bamboo Blade, he had no way of advancing the Essence Energy Pill.

“Don’t tell me there’s no weapon that can make one fall in love at first sight?” Zhou Wen was somewhat helpless. He wasn’t a hot-blooded person to begin with. He really couldn’t see a weapon as something more important than his life.

No matter how good a weapon was, no matter how valuable it was, Zhou Wen would definitely abandon it when his life was at stake.

“Lad, there are no weapons in this world that can make you fall in love at first sight. There are only veterans that remain alive,” a staff member said when he heard Zhou Wen mutter to himself.

Zhou Wen turned his head and saw that the person speaking was a man in his forties. Although he was wearing sunglasses, Zhou Wen could tell that it was because one of his eyes was blind. One leg was a prosthetic limb.

“Can you elaborate on the meaning of that sentence?” Zhou Wen asked.

As the man wiped the weapons on display, he said, “Most people don’t really like weapons, but in times of danger, they need to use them to protect themselves and their families. Apart from a small number of people who like weapons, weapons are just tools to ordinary people.”

Zhou Wen nodded. He shared the same view as the man.

“But—” The man wiped a saber clean and carefully placed it on the saber rack. He straightened it and continued, “—once you pick up a weapon and fight with it, no matter if you love it or not, or no matter how much you despise it, it will become your most important companion. This thing is even more important than your woman or brothers. On the battlefield, it’s the only one you can truly trust.”

“That’s right.” Zhou Wen nodded.

The man continued, “That’s why, on the battlefield, no matter if you like it or not, no matter how proud you are, you have to understand it and familiarize yourself with it. You have to constantly practice and get used to it. You have to put in more effort than chasing women. Otherwise, on the battlefield, it might take your life. If you want to become a veteran, you have to get along with it no matter how terrible it is. After some time, you will realize that the weapon is already a part of your body, a tool that can’t be easily abandoned. Because without them, your body seems to be missing a part, making you appear like a disabled person.

The chances of a crippled person dying on the battlefield are naturally higher than a normal person.”

Zhou Wen fell into thought when he heard the man’s words.

“Why do we have the verb ‘practice’ come before the noun ‘saber?’ Young man, practice well.” The man patted Zhou Wen on the shoulder and continued cleaning.

“Thank you. How should I address you?” Zhou Wen asked.

“I’m just a crippled veteran. My name isn’t important.” The man ignored Zhou Wen and continued his work.

Zhou Wen felt a little upset. War had brought misfortune to most people. No one liked war, but sometimes, war was inevitable.

He didn’t continue looking at the exhibits because he knew very well that he wasn’t a person who liked weapons. Therefore, no matter how he looked at it, he couldn’t treat a tool as his life.

Just as the veteran had said, when it came to practicing sabers, practice was more important than the saber.

Zhou Wen already had an idea as he walked out of the showroom and prepared to return to his dorm.

Halfway there, he saw Li Xuan, Sadie, and Gulli walking towards the Xuanwen Club.

“Old Zhou, what a coincidence. Where are you going?” Li Xuan greeted.

Zhou Wen’s eyes lit up when he saw Li Xuan. He went over and tugged at Li Xuan. “Come, practice with me.”

“No, you should find someone else. I’m dizzy. I won’t do…” Li Xuan held his chest as though he was about to faint.

He wasn’t afraid of being beaten, but he couldn’t accept being beaten into a deformed person by Zhou Wen.

“Coach, what do you want to practice?” Sadie asked.

“I’d like to practice my sword technique,” Zhou Wen said.

“If you don’t mind, I can be your sparring partner,” Sadie’s eyes lit up as she said to Zhou Wen.

“Alright, let’s go to the training room.” Zhou Wen nodded.

Sadie’s combat abilities were inferior to Li Xuan’s. If she really fought with her life on the line, she wasn’t Li Xuan’s match. However, in practice, she had the Eye of Odin. Her performance in combat was stronger than Li Xuan’s, making her more suitable as Zhou Wen’s sparring partner.

After all, with the Eye of Odin’s ability, Sadie could crack all sorts of moves in battle without risking her life like Li Xuan.

The four of them went to the training room together. Sadie picked up a sword.

There were two types of swords in the North District. One was a broadsword-type heavy sword, while the other was a narrow and thin armor-piercing sword. The two swords had their own specialties and their usage was completely different.

Sadie was originally good at armor-piercing swords. With her Eye of Odin, it was very easy for her to find the other party’s weakness and deliver a fatal strike.

However, ever since she came to Sunset College to study, Sadie had learned quite a number of East District sword techniques. Furthermore, she had fused the East District sword techniques into her own.

As she had never competed with a true East District sword expert, Sadie didn’t know how well she had mastered her sword techniques. When she heard that Zhou Wen wanted to practice, she wanted to test how well she had mastered her sword techniques.

The practice sword she chose was naturally the commonly seen armor-piercing sword in the North District. The blade was long and thin, much narrower than the swords from the North District.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 922 - Sword Practice

Chapter 922: Sword Practice

Translator: CKtalon

Zhou Wen randomly chose a practice sword. It was the commonly seen three-foot-long sword in the East District. It was straight and light.

The type of sword was actually not important to Zhou Wen. He wasn’t planning to focus on a particular sword technique, but the thirteen sword techniques he had learned in the Peach Blossom Spring.

Strictly speaking, the sword stance wasn’t important. What was truly important was the three thousand sword intents.

After hearing the veteran’s words, Zhou Wen realized that the appearance of the sword wasn’t important. He needed to know what he could do with the sword.

“Draw your sword,” Zhou Wen said to Sadie.

Sadie didn’t hesitate as she stabbed out with her armor-piercing sword at lightning speed.

Zhou Wen struck out at almost the same time. He was as fast as lightning, just like Sadie. They were both fast-attack sword techniques.

She won! Gulli saw Sadie’s sword reach Zhou Wen’s chest first. As for Zhou Wen’s sword, it was still a distance away from Sadie. He couldn’t help but be overjoyed and nearly jumped up.

To him, being able to defeat Coach once was something worth being happy about.

Sadie never expected to win. She found it unbelievable.

“Again.” Zhou Wen’s expression didn’t change as he retracted his sword.

After Sadie retracted her sword, she used the same move again. Zhou Wen did the same speed versus speed clash, but the outcome was the same. Sadie’s sword touched Zhou Wen first.

“Again,” Zhou Wen retracted his sword and continued.

Zhou Wen had only memorized the three thousand sword intents, but he hadn’t actually practiced them. Now, Zhou Wen wanted to practice using the three thousand sword intents himself to truly understand the subtlety of the sword intents.

Sadie defeated Zhou Wen for a few consecutive rounds, but she was somewhat shocked.

Sadie had the Eye of Odin, so Zhou Wen’s actions looked like slow motion to her. Therefore, as long as her sword’s speed could keep up, Sadie could crack Zhou Wen’s sword techniques.

The same move against Sadie was almost doomed to failure. There was no chance of winning.

However, that wasn’t the case. Every time Zhou Wen unsheathed his sword, the sword technique seemed to become much stronger than before. It wasn’t just an improvement in technique and speed, but more importantly,

the sword intent in his sword technique became stronger and stronger.

After more than ten strikes, Sadie had no choice but to use her movement technique to dodge Zhou Wen’s sword because her sword couldn’t hit him first anymore.

However, once she retreated, there was no chance of winning. Zhou Wen’s sword techniques accelerated with every strike. Soon, Zhou Wen’s sword pointed at Sadie’s chest.

“I lost.” Sadie was convinced of her defeat.

After more than ten strikes, Zhou Wen’s sword technique had actually improved greatly. It was unimaginable.

Just imagine a person who was easily defeated by you more than ten times. Then, after more than ten strikes, you were no longer their match. How terrifying was that?

However, Sadie wasn’t too surprised that such a thing had happened to Zhou Wen. Gulli and Li Xuan weren’t surprised either. This was because he was Coach. It wasn’t unacceptable that he could defeat Sadie.

Zhou Wen retracted his sword and seemed to ponder for a moment before saying, “Continue.”

Sadie didn’t know what was the point of continuing practicing. Zhou Wen’s fast sword was something she could see, but not dodge. There was no point in continuing.

However, since Zhou Wen wanted to continue, Sadie had no choice but to continue.

However, this time, Sadie realized that Zhou Wen's sword art was different. This time, Zhou Wen's attack wasn't that fast or offensive. It seemed to have become a defensive sword art.

Strangely, the sword move Zhou Wen used was still the same.

The same sword move but with a completely different sword intent. The effects of the sword art seem to have completely changed. How did he do it? Sadie was somewhat surprised as she knew why Zhou Wen wanted to continue.

However, this time, Zhou Wen was quickly defeated. This was because he was focused on defending and counterattacking, but due to the existence of the Eye of Odin, it was very difficult to defend against Sadie's attacks.

"Continue." Zhou Wen's expression didn't change as he fought Sadie again.

After repeated failures, it became more and more difficult for Sadie to defeat Zhou Wen. Almost in the same manner as before, Sadie realized that she had no way of breaking through Zhou Wen's defensive sword technique.

In the end, Sadie lost again.

However, Zhou Wen still wanted to continue. Furthermore, the sword art he used was still the same, but the sword intent had changed.

"What's going on? Coach used a sword art with three different sword intents? How did he master it?" Gulli was dumbfounded.

“I don’t know, but from the looks of it, there are more than three types of sword intents,” Li Xuan said.

Gulli was slightly stunned. “More than three? Are you joking? Mastering three or more sword intents for one sword art isn’t something a human can do, right?”

“He’s Zhou Wen,” Li Xuan said as he stared intently at Zhou Wen.

Just as Li Xuan had said, Zhou Wen didn’t just have three sword intents. In fact, it wasn’t a human sword art. The white-robed man from the Peach Blossom Spring was no longer human, so his sword art was naturally not a human sword art. Even the white-robed man couldn’t believe that Zhou Wen could memorize three thousand sword intents. It was obvious how unbelievable the sword art was.

“Four… Five… Six… Heavens… How many sword intents has Coach mastered?” Gulli felt like he was dreaming.

From the beginning until now, Zhou Wen had already used more than ten sword intents. He was basically beating Sadie in all kinds of fancy ways.

Regardless of which sword intent it was, it would gradually become stronger in Zhou Wen’s hands before defeating Sadie.

Sadie felt terrible, but at the same time, she was very excited. She was also a sword practitioner. To be able to face so many types of sword intents was of great help to her. Her understanding of the sword deepened as her sword techniques became stronger.

However, the speed at which she became stronger clearly couldn’t keep up with Zhou Wen. As Zhou Wen used

different sword intents, Gulli was already dazzled. He couldn’t remember how many sword intents Zhou Wen had used.

“Is this fellow really human?” Gulli looked at Zhou Wen as though he was looking at a monster.

“Without a doubt, Zhou Wen is physiologically human. Since he can do it, it means that this path is feasible,” Li Xuan said.

“I don’t know if this path will work. In any case, I won’t be capable of doing it. Besides, there’s no need for that, right? Just cultivating a single sword intent to the extreme is enough to defeat an opponent. Why do you have to cultivate so many different sword intents?” Gulli gave up. He had seen so many sword intents and felt that his mind was in a mess.

“Zhou Wen naturally has his reasons for doing so. I haven’t figured it out yet,” Li Xuan said seriously.

“Forget it. Take your time. Anyway, I’m only a human. I won’t get involved with monsters like you guys.” Gulli felt that he had come to the wrong place.

In the past, when he was in the Ultimate Family Clan, he was still considered a genius. Apart from existences like Lance and Sadie, he was always basking in the limelight.

However, ever since he had entered the Xuanwen Club, he felt like he had entered a perverted concentration camp, and he was one of the more normal ones.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 923 - Sword Pill

Chapter 923: Sword Pill

For the next couple of days, Zhou Wen practiced with Sadie. He wanted to practice all three thousand sword intents to see which sword intent was suitable for the Essence Energy Pill. Perhaps that would be the time when the Essence Energy Pill advanced.

After he was discharged, Feng Qiuyan surprisingly didn't practice his saber for the next few days. He came to watch the two fight every day.

Sadie went from initially surprised to the subsequent shock and finally numbness. She no longer thought about anything. All she did was focus on taking in the battle with Zhou Wen and use the Eye of Odin to record the battle.

She didn't wish to master so many sword intents like Zhou Wen, but as long as she could master a few sword intents that suited her, she could make great progress.

In fact, Sadie did the same as Zhou Wen. During the battle with him, she gradually infused her insights into her sword art.

Perhaps even Sadie didn't realize that her sword art was undergoing a tremendous change thanks to Zhou Wen's influence.

Zhou Wen powered the 13 stances using the Qi Refinement Art to constantly gain insight into the 3,000 sword intents,

but the Essence Energy Pill showed no signs of advancing despite him gaining insight into all the sword intents.

Zhou Wen wasn’t in a rush as he continued practicing. Without realizing it, he had already practiced all three thousand sword intents.

After using the last sword intent, Zhou Wen sheathed his sword and stood there motionless.

When Sadie saw Zhou Wen suddenly retreat, the sword in her hand stabbed at him. However, before the sword could plunge into him, Sadie found herself unable to do so.

Zhou Wen seemed to be standing there casually, but his body seemed to emit infinite sword intent.

It was different from any of the previous sword intents. Every sword intent Zhou Wen had used previously had distinct characteristics. They were either firm or soft, offensive or defensive, fast or slow, domineering or kingly. Every sword intent had its advantages and disadvantages.

However, the sword intent emitted by Zhou Wen was completely different.

Sadie couldn’t figure out what the sword intent on Zhou Wen’s body was. All she felt was an infinite sword intent surge from Zhou Wen’s body. It was indescribable, like a sword furnace.

Sadie felt that no matter how she struck out, she would receive Zhou Wen’s fatal counterattack. However, if she retreated, she would similarly be pursued. Instantly, she was petrified as cold sweat constantly seeped out of her forehead. She stood motionless, as though she would be killed by Zhou Wen if she moved.

Hum!

A sword hum sounded from Zhou Wen’s body, but the practice sword in his hand had already shattered.

The sword hum lasted for a long time, but no sword appeared. It was as though the sword was inside Zhou Wen’s body, and Zhou Wen was like a sword furnace that had fused with the swords in the world.

Zhou Wen was delighted. The Essence Energy Pill had finally advanced to an Evolved Body. Its Essence Energy had been further purified and compressed, becoming smaller and purer. However, it didn’t transform into a sword form. It was still an Essence Energy Pill.

However, the Essence Energy Pill contained infinite sword intent.

After the Essence Energy Pill advanced successfully, the sword hum on Zhou Wen’s body vanished. The boundless sword intent also vanished.

Sadie’s entire body was drenched with sweat. When the sword intent vanished, Sadie’s legs went limp as she fell to the ground, panting heavily.

Feng Qiuyan, who was watching from the side, wiped the cold sweat from his forehead. Although he wasn’t facing the boundless sword intent like Sadie, he could sense how terrifying it was.

“Sorry, are you alright?” Zhou Wen asked Sadie, who had fallen to the ground.

Sadie shook her head slightly, but there was a smile on her face. “Coach, don’t say that. I should be thanking you. If not

for the past couple days of practice, I wouldn’t have been able to comprehend the true Sword Dao and find my true path. I should be thanking you.”

“I’m glad you’re fine.” Zhou Wen took out his phone and glanced at the Essence Energy Pill Life Soul.

Sword Pill (Evolved): Heaven and Earth as a furnace, Essence Energy as a sword, three thousand swords fused in one pill.

There’s still one last step, Zhou Wen thought.

With Sword Pill completed, Zhou Wen didn’t need to continue sword practice. He hadn’t thought of a way to advance Sword Pill. All he could do was continue absorbing Essence Energy Crystals, allowing Sword Pill’s Essence Energy to constantly strengthen, purify, and compress in wait for the opportunity to advance to a Perfect Body.

Mirror Eyes, on the other hand, had finally advanced to the Evolved Body after he continuously revealed the demons for what they were.

The evolved Mirror Eyes still only strengthened the eyes, but the name changed.

Eyes of Legacy (Evolved): Demon God Eyes of Legacy.

The introduction was very simple. Zhou Wen had obtained very little information during his evolution, but after some experiments, he finally knew what use the Eyes of Legacy had. Furthermore, its use left him pleasantly surprised.

The Eyes of Legacy had inherited the Mirror Eyes’ ability to see through demons. At the same time, it had another function. Zhou Wen could use the Eyes of Legacy to scan

dimensional creatures before taking on the guise of a dimensional creature.

This transformation wasn’t purely an illusion. It was more like a replica. For example, Zhou Wen could scan and transform into Torch Dragon Youngling. After transforming, Zhou Wen had a body that was identical to Torch Dragon Youngling. He also had various abilities and skills. He was like a replica of Torch Dragon Youngling.

It was a very powerful and terrifying ability, but the problem was that using the Eyes of Legacy to transform into Torch Dragon Youngling required a large amount of time and Essence Energy to scan Torch Dragon Youngling’s body. Furthermore, it required a large amount of Essence Energy to support the transformation. After transforming, he would also expend a large amount of Essence Energy to maintain the Torch Dragon Youngling form.

With Zhou Wen’s present Essence Energy, he couldn’t even scan and transform into Torch Dragon Youngling. All he could do was temporarily transform into some Epic dimensional creatures or lower. Furthermore, this required a certain amount of scanning time.

If only Slaughterer Life Soul could be used together with the Eyes of Legacy. With infinite Essence Energy, I’ll be truly invincible if I can scan a powerful dimensional creature at the Terror grade, Zhou Wen thought to himself.

Unfortunately, this was impossible at the moment. Different Life Souls couldn’t be used at the same time. And if he switched Life Souls, the Eyes of Legacy’s transformation would vanish.

How can I use multiple Life Souls at the same time? Zhou Wen had been considering this problem, but he couldn’t find

a solution.

To use different Life Souls, he had to switch to different Essence Energy Arts. It was naturally impossible for different Essence Energy Arts to be circulated at the same time.

Is it possible to simulate two Essence Energy Arts at the same time? Zhou Wen had made similar attempts in-game, but he had failed.

Simulating two Essence Energy Arts at the same time was like an ordinary person cultivating two Essence Energy Arts. It would immediately cause a conflict and destroy Zhou Wen’s body.

From the looks of it, I can only wait until I advance to the Mythical stage to see if there’s a possibility of using multiple Essence Energy Arts. Zhou Wen had no choice but to temporarily give up on the idea of using multiple Essence Energy Arts at the same time.

Time passed as Zhou Wen practiced. Soon, it was time for him to meet The Thearch.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 924 - Theft

Chapter 924: Theft

Translator: CKtalon

There are only a few days left before the appointment with The Thearch. I need to prepare. Zhou Wen thought about his trip to another dimension to steal something.

The reason he agreed to The Thearch wasn't entirely because he wanted her blood essence. Zhou Wen also wanted to go to the dimension to see what had happened there and why Wang Mingyuan wasn't under the divine tree.

Although The Thearch said that she had already arranged everything, and that there would definitely be no danger as long as he followed her plan, Zhou Wen didn't believe in absolute safety, so he had to make preparations.

As it was too dangerous, he definitely couldn't take Ya'er with him. After all, her body wasn't strong. Even if her body could keep up with her mental strength, she was only at the Mythical stage. The Mythical stage was only a bottom feeder in the dimension. It was too dangerous.

Zhou Wen explained his trip to the dimension to Ya'er and got her to stay at Ouyang Lan's place for a few days. He would pick her up when he returned.

Ya'er finally nodded in agreement. Seeing that she didn't show any signs of violence, Zhou Wen felt relieved to leave her alone.

Zhou Wen called Ouyang Lan in advance and she happily agreed. She even urged Zhou Wen to take Ya'er over as soon as possible.

On the day of departure, Zhou Wen took Ya’er over before heading to Chess Mountain alone.

He came in front of Chess Mountain’s mountain wall again and saw the flower on it. Zhou Wen said, “The Thearch, I’m here for the appointment. Now, you can tell me what I should do, right?”

The flower twisted the flower bud towards Zhou Wen and said, “It’s very difficult for humans to cross the dimensional barrier to reach the dimension. Therefore, you need a lot of preparation work.”

“Isn’t it very easy to reach there through the cube?” Zhou Wen asked.

“It’s different. The cube is equivalent to an official door. It’s naturally easy for you to enter through the main door. However, if you want to steal something, it’s naturally impossible for you to walk through the main door. You have to climb over the wall or dig a hole to enter. The difficulty is naturally different. Just like Wang Mingyuan previously. He used the power of the six Holy Temples to successfully break through the dimensional barrier. If you want to enter, you have to do it without anyone noticing. The difficulty is even greater.”

The Thearch paused and said, “However, with me around, this isn’t a difficult task. At most, it will be a waste of time. However, after you enter the dimension, you have to be careful. Apart from acting according to the plan, if you encounter an emergency, you have to resolve it yourself. Remember, don’t use force unless it’s absolutely necessary. Your combat strength is too weak there.”

With that said, The Thearch opened the mountain wall and allowed Zhou Wen to enter Chess Mountain.

This was the second time Zhou Wen had entered Chess Mountain in real life. He was very familiar with everything here, but he had seen a cartoon version in-game. It had a beautifying effect that masked the more sinister and terrifying appearance in real life.

As Zhou Wen walked into Chess Mountain, The Thearch explained what Zhou Wen needed to do and the steps to take.

The process wasn’t complicated, but the problem he encountered was troublesome. Zhou Wen entering a dimensional zone to steal things was no different from a child entering a pack of wolves to steal their wolf cubs. If he was discovered, the chances of survival were slim.

When The Thearch explained the plan to Zhou Wen, he confirmed that The Thearch wasn’t Nine-Tailed Fox. This was because to enter the dimension, he had to use the bronze tripod that chained the Nine-Tailed Fox.

The Thearch got Zhou Wen to use some means to fool the Nine-Tailed Fox, allowing him to borrow the power of the bronze tripod. If the Nine-Tailed Fox was The Thearch, there was no need to go through so much trouble.

Furthermore, from his previous visit to Deer Terrace Pavilion and the actions of The Thearch this time, she didn’t have much control over the interior of Deer Terrace Pavilion. She seemed to be different from the dimensional creatures inside.

What’s her background? Among the people related to Deer Terrace Pavilion, other than the three demons, what other women are there? Zhou Wen thought about it but couldn’t figure it out.

According to The Thearch’s plan, Zhou Wen went to the ancient building on Deer Terrace Pavilion and killed the fake immortals on the first level. He got a few jars of alcohol and entered the lower level of Deer Terrace Pavilion through a secret tunnel in the ancient building.

So the passageway to Deer Terrace Pavilion is here. Only then did Zhou Wen know the true way to enter the lower level of Deer Terrace Pavilion. Previously, he had relied on the Earth Elemental Beast to enter.

With The Thearch’s guidance, Zhou Wen circled most of the dangerous areas. Along the way, he killed some dimensional creatures that appeared.

When he arrived at a spot that Zhou Wen had never been to in-game, he placed the jars of alcohol in front of a stone door. Then, he pushed open the stone door by a sliver and immediately hid.

Soon, Zhou Wen saw a tiny, white beast crawl out from the crack in the door. It was a ferret-like creature. It looked around intelligently and discovered the opened wine jar on the ground. Its eyes immediately lit up as it rushed towards it.

In a short while, the tiny beast finished one jar after another. After it finished the last jar, it was extremely drunk. It curled up in the jar and fell asleep.

Seeing that the time was ripe, Zhou Wen tiptoed to the stone door and slowly pushed it open. He looked back at the little beast and saw that it was still sleeping soundly in the wine jar. Zhou Wen quickly walked in.

Behind the stone door was a huge hall. There were four statues consecrated in the hall. These four statues looked

different from ordinary statues. They were more like generals in the human world and not immortals in heaven. Not only were they wearing armor, but their faces were extremely ferocious.

Zhou Wen still remembered The Thearch’s words as he looked at the third statue.

The statue looked ferocious like a general from a demonic realm. He held a strange umbrella in his hand. There were many pearls embedded in the umbrella, and on it were the words “Cosmic Bag.”

Zhou Wen tiptoed to the statue and carefully flew to the side of the pearl umbrella. He reached out and pressed down on a pearl before gently tapping on it three times.

The pearl dropped by itself. Zhou Wen hurriedly caught it and quickly left the door. He glanced at the sleeping white beast and quickly left.

Zhou Wen heaved a sigh of relief as The Thearch’s voice sounded in his mind. “Well done. Now, take the pearl to the bronze tripod cauldron and give it to the Nine-Tailed Fox. It won’t stop you from using the bronze tripod. Remember, after you enter the dimension, you only have 36 hours. Once the time is up, the bronze tripod’s passageway will automatically close. When that happens, your chances of survival will be very slim. You have to steal the bell in 36 hours.”

“Got it. Are you sure there won’t be any problems with the place the tunnel opens up to?” Zhou Wen asked.

“There won’t be any problems there. Don’t worry,” The Thearch said with certainty.

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.